The Great Ruler

(大主宰)

Chapter

001-885

Tian Can Tu Dou

(天蠶土豆)

Story Description:

The Great Thousand World. It is a place where numerous planes intersect, a place where many clans live and a place where a group of lords assemble. The Heavenly Sovereigns appear one by one from the Lower Planes and they will all display a legend that others would desire as they pursue the road of being a ruler in this boundless world.

In the Endless Fire Territory that the Flame Emperor controls, thousands of fire blazes through the heavens.

Inside the Martial Realm, the power of the Martial Ancestor frightens the heaven and the earth.

At the West Heaven Temple, the might of the Emperor of a Hundred Battles is absolute.

In the Northern Desolate Hill, a place filled with thousands of graves, the Immortal Owner rules the world.

A boy from the Northern Spiritual Realm comes out, riding on a Nine Netherworld Bird, as he charges into the brilliant and diverse world. Just who can rule over their destiny of their path on becoming a Great Ruler? In the Great Thousand World, many strive to become a Great Ruler.

Original Story can be found here: Link

Chapter 1: Northern Spiritual Academy

The scorching sun was like a flame. The burning sunlight poured down from the sky, causing the entire land to be in transpiration. The slightly drooped willows and the disappearing leaves made it seem like it was sickly in appearance.

Within the clearingwhere the sunlight projected through the branches and leaves, several hundred figures were quietly sitting cross-legged. It was a group of young men and women. At that time, all of them have a serious expression while they closed their eyes. They would let out their breaths periodically, showing a rhythmic beat. As they breathe in and out, subtle lights which are difficult to be seen with the naked eye would appear in their surroundings.

The gentle breeze blew quietly and caused their clothes to flutter. It was quite a spectacular sight.

In front of the hundreds of shadows, there is a stone platform. On top of the stone platform, there, too, wasa figure quietly sitting cross-legged. His hands were attuned to each other; his fingers were overlapping as he closed his eyes. It was as if he had entered a certain state of cultivation.

The figure also had a youthful appearance. He had a soft and slightly disheveled black hair, yet his seemingly innocent face was a little thin. It gave off a very comfortable feeling when others looked at him.

At this moment, many lights that could be seen with the naked eye were surrounding the boy. And from those lights, a mysterious energy seemed to be rushing into his body.

Below the stone, many youths suddenly opened their eyes. They looked at the lights surrounding the boy on the stone platform and could not resist licking their lips. An envious expression appeared on their faces and whispers began to destroy the earlier silence.

“Brother Mu really is amazing. All of us are still sensing the Spiritual Aura within the world, but he has already successfully entered the Spiritual Movement Stage. As expected from the number one person in

our East Branch Earth Class."

"Heh, that's of course. Don't just mention the East Branch, I think that there aren't many people of the same age who can compare with Brother Mu in the entire Northern Spiritual Academy."

A boy in grey clothes that was close to the front seemed to be quite familiar with the boy on the stone platform. He could hear everybody's whispers and could not help but smile. He lowered his voice and said "Brother Mu is a person who was selected and participated in the "Spiritual Road". Within the entire Northern Spiritual Realm, only Brother Mu obtained the right to participate in it. You should know that the ones who participate in the "Spiritual Road" are all monsters, right? Back then, the entire Northern Spiritual Realm was bustling because of that matter. The people that came out from there will basically be accepted by the "Five Great Academies."

"Five Great Academies?" Many youths heard the words which were extremely dazzling to them and could not help but swallow. A boiling desire filled their eyes. That place could be regarded as the ultimate dream for all the youths. Not only was the selection for the "Five Great Academies" harsh, the ones that could enter them were all geniuses. No matter who enters it, they would have a promising future.

"Brother Mu really is amazing...B...But Brother Mu only seemed to have participated in it for a year...I heard others say that Brother Mu is the first person to be kicked out of the "Spiritual Road" before the time was over..."

A boy hesitated and quietly said that. However, he soon added: "All of us know Brother Mu's abilities, even those geniuses that came from all over the world and are inside the "Spiritual Road", Brother Mu will not be inferior to them. He must have been kicked out because he received an unfair treatment!"

Many boys and girls looked at each other. This matter was not something secret within the Northern Spiritual Academy and even within the entire Northern Spiritual Realm. While they felt regret from it, they were also quite curious. They wanted to know the reason why the brilliant

and slightly arrogant Brother Mu that they believed in would be kicked out of the “Spiritual Road”.

The boy in grey clothes pouted his lips and said in disapproval: “Hmph, it must be that the people in the “Spiritual Road” were jealous of Brother Mu and they used various means to force him out. But’s that’s fine, with Brother Mu’s abilities, he will be able to enter the “Five Great Academies” eventually. At that time, people will naturally understand.”

The youths all understood the message. Although they knew that the Brother Mu that they were talking about was extremely talented, but the Five Great Academies wasn’t that easy to enter. After all, he had only trained in the “Spiritual Road” for one year. It cannot be mentioned as a successful training. Compared to the geniuses that truly came out of the “Spiritual Road”, there should be quite a bit of a difference.

“BAM!”

However, just when they were discussing about this, a piece of shattered wood suddenly flew down from the stone platform and hit the forehead of the boy in grey clothes. A scolding voice soon followed: “Su Ling, did you really just treat me as a decoration? You don’t think I will inform Teacher Mo and make all of you stay in the East Branch for Tutorial Training during the next vacation?”

Many boys and girls hurriedly looked up. They could see that the boy, who was training on top of the Stone Platform, had opened up his eyes. The pair of pitch-black eyes were like the night sky. The place where the Spiritual Aura was at the fullest was at the mouth. It was showing a slight smile. The smile was warm and bright and like a finishing touch, it made the boy’s face appear to be more handsome.

They must admit that the boy had quite the taste.

“Hehe, Brother Mu, don’t. We finally have a break, I still want to head back for some fun. If my father knew that I did something this disgraceful, he would definitely beat me to death.” The boy in grey clothes clutched his forehead and let out a smile.

The boys and girls in the surrounding all let out sounds of laughter,

causing the atmosphere to become quite lively.

"You also know that your father is quite vicious. If you are not able to advance into the Spiritual Movement Stage in 3 months, you're just waiting to be hit." The boy called Mu Chen shook his head and said with a sigh.

"How is it that easy to advance into the Spiritual Movement Stage. I am not a monster like you, Brother Mu, who could casually participate in the "Spiritual Road"." Su Ling pouted his mouth and immediately blocked his mouth. Although this matter was not a secret within the entire Northern Spiritual Realm and Mu Chen did not forbid it, the matter of being kicked out was not a glorious act.

The boy called Mu Chen let out a smile. His expression did not change much and he raised his head slightly. He stared at the branches that were mangled with light spots and his eyes clearly showed a complex and nostalgic appearance.

The Spiritual Road, huh...

I wonder how those people are doing, they should have finished their training already. If that's the case, they will soon be able to enter the "Five Great Academies".

She, too...

Mu Chen bit his lips. A girl in black dress with a cold and pretty face as well as a slim figure; who would carry a dark black long sword on her back at any time, flashed through his mind.

As the image of the beautiful girl moved, her bright silver hair that shone like the milky way danced along with the wind.

It was this mysterious and cold girl, who would make others feel like she was insane once she started training, who chased him for over half a year in the Spiritual Road in order to kill him. The reason behind it was that he saved her once. This wasalso the reason why Mu Chen bit his lips.

However, when he was finally forced to leave, she was the first one to wield her sword and block the person in front of him without any

hesitation.

Thinking about the face, which never helda hint ofexpression and had the potential to cause a disaster, display a slight, cold killing intent, Mu Chen could not resist and fell into a trance.

How nostalgic.

“Ohhh, isn’t it little Brother Mu, who was the only one in the Northern Spiritual Realm to participate in the “Spiritual Road”? You were bringing others to train again? No wonder Teacher Mo would think highly of you.”

Just when Mu Chen was immersed in these complex feelings, a slightly stingy voice rang out. His calm face looked up and he could see a dozen figures walking over slowly. The leader was a boy with an arrogant face. At this moment, he was chewing on some grass and smiled as he looked at Mu Chen.

“Liu Che, what are the West Branch people planning to do over here at the East Branch? Are you looking for a beating?!” The boy, who Mu Chen referred to as Su Ling, stood up and sneered when he saw the group of people.

The hundreds of East Branch students in the open space also stood up. They showed an unwelcoming gaze towards the people that are approaching. With numbers, they had quite the momentum.

Within this Northern Spiritual Academy, it is divided into East Branch and West Branch. The two Brancheswould often have many competitions. But overall, the West Branch has always been stronger than the East Branch in the past. In front of the West Branch, many East Branch Students would avoid them. However, during this one year, the situation changed a lot. The reason behind this change was because of the presence of Mu Chen.

Three months ago, in a competition between the two Earth Class Students of the Two Branches, the number 3 of the West Branch, Xue Dong, had lost to Mu Chen. This allowed many East Branch students to finally vent out their feelings and also caused the West Branch to become less arrogant.

And now, the people from the West Branch actually ran over to provoke Mu Chen. Su Ling and the others could not endure this.

“Oh, so the East Branch is actually becoming more and more cocky. Did you think that with just Mu Chen, you can challenge the West Branch?”

Liu Chen saw the group of people from the East Branch, yet he did not show any fear. Instead, he lifted up the corner of his mouth and pointed at a high platform nearby and said as he grinned: “Do you dare to test it out with a fight?”

Su Ling and the others looked over. They could see many figures standing at the high platform. These figures were all looking over towards this side and after seeing the familiar faces, the expression of Su Ling and the others changed.

“It’s the West Branch’s Heaven Class seniors...”

Within the Northern Spiritual Academy, it is not only split into East and West Branch. It is also divided into Earth and Heaven Class and Mu Chen and them were only in the Earth Class. The people standing on the high platform were all seniors of the West Branch Heaven Class. Their strength is naturally much more powerful than them.

The moment the expression of Su Ling and the others changed, the Heaven Class seniors all laughed at them from above and began to talk with each other.

“So that is the East Branch’s Mu Chen? He is currently someone famous within the Northern Spiritual Academy and even within the Northern Spiritual Realm. I can’t believe he advanced to the Spiritual Movement Stage at such an age. Although it is only the Initial Phase of the Spiritual Movement Stage, but he has the qualifications to ascend to Heaven Class. That’s quite amazing.”

“That’s pretty good. So a talent finally appears out of the East Branch. When he ascends to the Heaven Class, there will probably be a bit of pressure for us, West Branch Heaven Class.”

“It was said that this boy was selected to participate in the “Spiritual

Road". However, he was kicked out for an unknown reason. It's quite funny, it's the first time I've heard of such a thing."

"Could it be that it selected the wrong person, so it threw him out?"

"Haha"

Among the group, there was a girl in red clothes. She had a slender figure and skin that was just like snow. Her beautiful oval shape face was somewhat charming. She leaned against the railing and looked at the open space with her beautiful eyes. Then, her gaze stopped at the boy called Mu Chen as if she had great interest in him.

"Ah, Hong Ling, you seem to know Mu Chen right?" A senior from the Heaven Class smiled as he asked. From everyone's position, it is evident that she was the central figure of this small group.

"Yes, his father is one of the Territory Lords within the Northern Spiritual Realm. It can be considered that we have some relationship with each other. We played together when we were young." The girl called Hong Ling said casually.

"It was said that he seemed to like you at first?"

Hong Ling blinked. She looked at the boy that was sitting straight-legged nearby. At this moment, a beam of sunlight pierced through the branches and leaves and landed directly on the boy's face. It formed a faint light arc and it was extremely pleasing to the eyes. This caused the girl to stare blankly for a bit. She seemed to vaguely recall the boy that chased after her butt when she was little. Only back then, he did not have any compelling features. She, too, did not pay much attention to him. However, who would have imagined that this boy, who had grown apart from her, would actually become the only one to receive the qualifications to participate in the "Spiritual Road" in the Northern Spiritual Realm. Back then, Mu Chen was quite the celebrity, but that too, began to fade when he was suddenly kicked out of the "Spiritual Road".

"That was when we were young, how could that be considered as liking me?" Hong Ling let out a smile as if she did not care, but her eyes stared at Mu Chen once more. Right now, the latter had followed her and entered

the Northern Spiritual Academy. He then began to reveal his outstanding talents. Although he has not become the number one in the Northern Spiritual Academy, the fact that this excellent person liked her gave her some face. Even if she knew that deep inside, this matter was more like a rumor, but a girl would still feel some pride in it at this age.

"Haha, Hong Ling's taste isn't that normal. Although this Mu Chen is quite good, but he still hasn't made Hong Ling fall for him. Could it be that you didn't see that even Lin Xiu failed? That is a superb individual who is ranked seventh in the Northern Spiritual Academy. He has already advanced to the Spiritual Movement Middle Phase. There is quite a gap between him and Mu Chen."

"It seems that the only one within the Northern Spiritual Academy, who could make Hong Ling take a second look, is Big Brother Liu Mubai."

The moment the name Liu Mubai was mentioned, even the expressions of the Heaven Class seniors paused for a bit as if they felt a little pressure.

Ranked first in the Northern Spiritual Academy, Liu Mubai, his father is also the largest Territory Lord in the Northern Spiritual Realm and he was famed for his great strength.

Whether it was appearance or strength or even his background, it is a name that would easily attract a number of infatuated girls within the Northern Spiritual Academy.

In the eyes of the West Branch students, everybody knew that Liu Mubai and Hong Ling were quite close. Although he has not yet plucked the prideful flower of the West Branch, but it should just be a matter of time before that happens.

If Mu Chen were to successfully pass through the trial of the "Spiritual Road" and obtain the qualifications to enter the "Five Great Academies", that fame would naturally surpass Liu Mubai. Unfortunately, he was somehow kicked out of there.

As a result, no matter who, when they compared the two of them, they would only laugh at Mu Chen.

Chapter 2: The Boy Kicked Out From the Spiritual Road

Su Ling and the others stared at the west branch seniors on the high platform. Their imposing manner also became slightly weaker, especially when they saw the girl known as Hong Ling. Their eyes became passionate at first, then shrank down. She is a truly influential person within the Northern Spiritual Academy. There are quite a few followers even within the east branch for her.

“Oi, Brother Mu, that is the west branch’s senior Hong Ling. There was a rumor that you liked her as a child...” Su Ling leaned over to Mu Chen and whispered as he chuckled.

After hearing this, Mu Chen could not help but bat an eye towards him. He, indeed, had some sort of relationship with Hong Ling when he was young, but at that age, who would know what love is? He simply wanted to find a playmate. However, his father and Hong Ling’s father started to getin a discord quite often for the past few years. The relationship between both sides had gradually grown apart. It was unknown how this kind of rumor came up.

Mu Chen could only helplessly shake his head. Then, he stared at Liu Che, who had a provocative look on his face. A faint light of Spiritual Energy began to come out of his body and he slowly clasped his palms.

“If you have something to say, then hurry up and say it.”

Mu Chen looked at the few individuals standing at the high platform nearby. His gaze stopped for a moment on that slender figure, then he retracted his sight: “Even though they are here, but if I want to beat you up, you would still suffer pain on your flesh even if they stop me.”

Towards the arrogant bastards from the west branch, he did not like them as well.

“You!”

After Liu Che heard Mu Chen’s words, his eyes suddenly showed fury.

However, just after he shouted out angrily, he noticed that Mu Chen's mouth lowered slightly. The originally soft and brilliant face suddenly had a cold feeling coming out of it. This cold feeling was like a wild and ice-like knife.

This feeling was like the awakening of a storm and it, inadvertently, revealed an extraordinary sharpness.

This feeling wasabsolutelysomething that an innocent youth would not be able to possess at this age.

Liu Che swallowed the cry within his mouth. He stared in surprise at Mu Chen and his facial color changed. He was definitely slightly afraid of the latter's strength. When Mu Chen defeated Xue Dong from the West Branch Earth Class, he was there at the scene.

"Oh, he really is quite insolent."

The seniors of the West Branch Heaven Class, who were standing at the high platform, heard these words as well. They immediately began to frown and felt thatthey lost some face, especially because Hong Ling was present.

HongLing also looked a little surprised at Mu Chen. She did not imagine that the seemingly gentle boy would also have such a masculine side to him. He seemed to be quite different than the boy back then.

A couple of the West Branch Heaven Class Seniors could not endure it, jumped down the high platform and walked over slowly. Seeing them come over, Su Ling and the others all took a step back and were completely alert.

Noticing this, Hong Ling did not stop them. After all, she was a person from the West Branch and she, too, wanted to see whether the boy, who seemed ordinary to her before, would truly be dazzling after leaving his childhood.

"Brother Tong." After Liu Che noticed that these people were walking over, he felt happy. Then, his eyes showed off a prideful feeling again as he looked at Mu Chen and the others.

Seeing this, Mu Chen frowned slightly. However, there was not much fear within his expression. Although they were Heaven Class Seniors, their strength was only at the Spiritual Movement Stage Initial Phase. If they were to really fight, then they wouldn't be in an advantage either.

The leading senior called Brother Tong nodded his head. His eyes stared at Mu Chen. But just when he wanted to speak, a sudden shout rang out from nearby.

"Tong Guan, you, West Branch Heaven Class people, actually came to the East Branch to bully our Earth Class Students. You really don't put the East Academy within your sights, huh?"

The sudden shout made everybody freeze. After turning their heads around, they could see many figures rapidly coming from nearby. In the very front was a tall girl. Her black clothes were like ink and it outlined a graceful curve. Her face was extremely pretty and her long bluish black hair was tied into a ponytail. Her long legs were slender and slim and her beauty was in no way inferior to Hong Ling.

At this moment, the girl had a cold expression as she stared at Tong Guan and the others. The people behind her also had an unwelcoming expression.

"It's Senior Qian'Er"

When Su Ling saw the girl in black clothes, he immediately became excited. A little bit of his innocent, youthful face turned slightly red. This person was known as one of the two flowers of the northern spiritual academy along with Hong Ling. Their suitors were numerous, he did not imagine that he would actually meet her here.

"Ohh, so it's Qian'Er."

When Tong Guan saw the girl in black clothes, he was also startled. His expression did not seem natural. Not only did Tang Qian'Er have many suitors within the Northern Spiritual Academy, her strength had also reached the Spiritual Movement Middle Phase. Within the Heaven Class of the Northern Spiritual Academy, she was considered to be quite excellent.

The girl named Tang Qian'Er came to the side of Mu Chen. Her narrow eyes looked at Tong Guan, then she looked at Hong Ling, who was at the high platform. The two girls stared at each other unyieldingly and sparks seemed to fly from their eyes.

"Why did you come over here?" Tang Qian'Er retracted her gaze and coldly asked.

"Look at this point. Although we are people from the west branch, the west branch is still part of the northern spiritual academy. Thus, it shouldn't be illegal for us to come over here, right." Tong Guan shrugged and smiled.

Tang Qian'Er issued out a cold hmph sound, then she extended her slender hands and patted on Mu Chen's shoulders. She lowered her pointed chin and said: "Mu Chen is one of the east branch's people, if you dare to cause trouble for him, then don't blame me for not being polite."

As she talked, her black ponytail bounced valiantly and she seemed to have a style of a Big Sister.

"It seems that your luck with the ladies is quite good." Tong Guan smiled at Mu Chen. The smile had a bit of mockery and a bit of jealousy. He also had some thoughts towards Tang Qian'Er, only that he never obtained any good intentions from her.

"Having luck with the ladies is also a type of strength." Mu Chen smiled as if he did not hear the mockery within his words. Compared to those guys from the Spiritual Road, Tong Guan was really too inexperienced.

From the high platform, Hong Ling looked at Mu Chen. She was somewhat disappointed and retracted her gaze. Was he still so lazy and cowardly like before?

"Forget it, we did not come here to cause trouble to you today. We only wanted to inform you of one thing."

Seeing that he would not be able to incite Mu Chen's fury, Tong Guan also felt bored. He waved his hand towards Liu Chen and the latter, let out a cold smile and said: "Mu Chen, I am representing Big Brother Liu Yang

to deliver you a message. Ten days later, during the competition between the two branches, he will select you as his opponent."

"Liu Yang?"

Hearing this name, the color on Su Ling and the others' faces changed. Liu Yang is the true number one within the west branch earth class. It was said that he recently advanced to the spiritual movement stage.

"Ah, that's right. I'll tell you something else as well. Three days ago, when Big Brother Liu Yang was tested, they discovered that he possesses a Spiritual Pulse. Although it is only Human Level..." Liu Chen gloated as he stared at Mu Chen and smiled.

"Human Level Spiritual Pulse?!"

When these words were said, not only did Su Ling and the other's facial complexion change, even Tang Qian'Er was slightly moved. Within the entire Northern Spiritual Academy, there will never be more than a handful of students who possess a Spiritual Pulse. Who would have imagined that Liu Yang actually had it too?

"Human Level Spiritual Pulse..." Tong Guan smacked his lips and gave a pitiful stare at Mu Chen. Liu Yang also had the strength of a Spiritual Movement Initial Phase, but if you include the Human Level Spiritual Pulse, it would be difficult for a Spiritual Movement Middle Phase to defeat him. It appears that Mu Chen was out of luck.

"Big Brother Liu Yang said that it is fine if you do not dare to accept it. But just don't show up on that day, then he would not embarrass you." Liu Chen had a strange smile. If Mu Chen did not appear on that day, then his reputation within the East Branch would shatter instantly.

"You're bullying him way too much!" Tang Qian'Er frowned as she shouted.

"Senior Qian'Er, you shouldn't blame us. A person should always maintain a low-profile. He shouldn't believe that he could be proud because he obtained the qualification to the "Spiritual Road" due to luck." Liu Chen said and curled his lips up.

“You!”

Tang Qian’Er flew into fury. But just before she headed forward, a hand gripped onto her shoulder. She turned her head around and saw that a brilliant smile appeared on Mu Chen’s face: “Yes, go tell Liu Yang that I will be waiting for him.”

“How courageous! Then we will wait to see your excellent performance.”

Liu Chen gave a thumbs up to Mu Chen and grinned. He then laughed as he turned away. With his expression, it was evident that he could not wait until the competition ten days later.

After Liu Chen, Tong Guan and the others left, Hong Ling, who was on the high platform, stared at him for a while before turning around leaving as well.

“Brother Mu, are you really going to accept that Liu Yang’s challenge? It won’t be easy to deal with him now since he has a Spiritual Pulse.” Su Ling and the others stared at the departing Tong Guan and asked in concern.

“I’ll do my best.” Mu Chen casually said.

“Oi, you’re so stupid. They were obviously provoking you. Now, you must accept the challenge!” Tang Qian’Er said with an irritated voice.

“Relax, Sister Qian’Er, I know what I’m doing.” Mu Chen smiled.

Tang Qian’Er frowned in puzzlement. Her eyes stared at his innocent face. He seemed to have a bright and gentle smile, but she did not know why she felt something hidden deep inside his eyes.

“Hmph, anyways, I won’t be the one to be disgraced when that happens.” Tang Qian’Er let out a sigh and said with dissatisfaction.

“Sister Qian’Er seems to be very concerned about me?” Mu Chen stared at the irritated, yet beautiful face and could not help but laugh as he said that.

“I don’t care if you are dead.” Tang Qian’Er’s face flushed for abit. She immediately batted her eye at Mu Chen and said: “I was only worried that you were beaten half to death and will disgrace the East Branch’s face.”

Mu Chen smiled. Tang Qian'Er's father is also one of the Territory Lords within the Northern Spiritual Realm and had an excellent relationship with his father. The two families always contacted each other, so his relationship with Tang Qian'Er was also very good.

"That's right, there was one news that I heard recently." Tang Qian'Er waved at Su Ling to move them out of the way and then her eyes stared at Mu Chen: "I heard it from the principal. It seems that the "Spiritual Road" has finally ended."

Mu Chen's body trembled and he looked up. He let out a breath, so it was finally over...

"It was said that there were many insane individuals that appeared in the Spiritual Road this time. Among them, there is one that is extremely terrifying. He seemed to have the Heaven Level Spiritual Pulse that is rarely seen even within ten thousand years. The Five Great Academies were fighting so much for him that they were bleeding."

The Spiritual Pulse is divided into 3 types: Heaven, Earth and Human. It will bring numerous benefits to their training. In general, a person who possesses a Spiritual Pulse would have a much faster training speed compared to normal individuals. They would also experience many shortcuts. And for so many years, there was never an Earth Level Spiritual Pulse that appeared within the Northern Spiritual Academy, not to mention even a Heaven Level Spiritual Pulse. From this, you can see just how rare a Spiritual Pulse is.

Tang Qian'Er stuck out her red tongue and was extremely cute and lovely: "A Heaven Level Spiritual Pulse. I've never seen one before. As expected, the ones that participated in the Spiritual Road are all insane people. That's right, that's right, you also participated in the Spiritual Road, do you know who that person is?"

"He should be ...Ji Xuan, right? Mu Chen said in a faint voice. It was a name that was etched deeply into his memory.

"You know him?" Tang Qian'Er said in surprise.

"Yes, I know him. He is indeed quite an amazing person." Mu Chen

smiled, lowered his eyes and said: “I nearly killed him”.

Tang Qian’Er’s beautiful eyes widened up. She stared at the innocent face in front of her that suddenly turned cold. She stammered as she asked: “Is that true?”

“It’s a lie, you actually believed in it? I was a person who was kicked out in the middle, how could I compare with the superb individual that the Five Great Academies were fighting over to get?” Mu Chen’s cold expression vanished instantly. He stared at Tang Qian’Er with a surprised expression and could not resist laughing.

Tang Qian’Er bit her teeth in resentment. She seemed to want to bite him twice, but she still endured it. She said with a sigh: “You only advanced to the Spiritual Movement Stage, you haven’t learned any Spiritual Arts yet, right? I heard that Liu Yang has already been practicing.”

“Spiritual Arts, huh. I will learn some when I go back this time. It’s just the right time, my dad told me to find him after I advanced to the Spiritual Movement Stage.” Mu Chen smiled as he spoke.

“Yes, then I’m leaving first.” Tang Qian’Er nodded. Mu Chen’s father was still one of the Territory Lords within the Northern Spiritual Realm. He should be able to prepare a decent Spiritual Art for Mu Chen. Thus, she did not say much more and waved her hand. Her ponytail swung as she twisted her body to leave.

“That’s right.”

Tang Qian’Er walked gracefully for a bit then turned her head back to stare at Mu Chen. She thought for a while and said: “If you do not think that you have any chance of winning, how about I beat that guy Liu Yang for you? Although his Big Brother Liu Mubai would be a bit troublesome...”

“Can’t you believe in me a bit more? Mu Chen said helplessly. How did she even think of such a method?

“Hmph, you fail to understand a person’s kindness.”

Tang Qian'Er said angrily. If other people in the Northern Spiritual Academy wanted her help, she would refuse to do so. But yet why would this guy be the only one to have a detestable expression. After thinking up to this point, she stormed away in anger.

Mu Chen watched Tang Qian'Er's moving figure disappearing. He also let out a smile and immediately muttered: "Since the Spiritual Road has ended, she should have entered the Five Great Academies as well, right? I wonder which one she has entered?"

Thinking back when he had to leave, among the lush forest, a girl with long, silver hair used a pair of green eyes and watched him quietly.

"I will wait for you at the Five Great Academies, if you do not come..."

Within the girl's slender hand, she was holding a sword. She lifted it up until it was in front of his chest and gently poked him at the location of his heart. "I will kill him, but..."

The girl stared at him with her eyes as clear as glass.

"I do not like people who readily admit their failure, but this time, it can't be considered as your loss, at least I liked it."

The gentle wind blew and raised the girl's proud and bright silver hair. On her cold, white face, a slight tint of red appeared. Although it was faint, it was still dazzlingly beautiful.

"So, you must come!"

Chapter 3: Mu Territory

The Northern Spiritual Realm is split into Nine Territories. Each one is controlled by a lord and between these nine territories, they are either allied or oppose each other. That is also how the Northern Spiritual Realm has always maintained the situation of Nine Territories.

Aside from the Nine Territories, there is still a powerful force to be reckoned with in the Northern Spiritual Realm. That is the Northern Spiritual Academy. However, compared to the Nine Territories that caused many disputes, the Northern Spiritual Realm has always maintained neutral. They do not have any ambition for competing over the land. They would only stick to their area and attract students over. It is because of this that the Northern Spiritual Academy has such a high status within the Northern Spiritual Realm.

And the Northern Spiritual Academy also holds the spots which will allow them to enter the “Five Great Academies”. This is something that all the various lords want. Because they all understood, although they had a decent position within the Northern Spiritual Realm, but they could not compare to the “Five Great Academies”. Thus, they would send their children, once they are of age, to the Northern Spiritual Academy to train in order to obtain these spots.

Therefore, the force that one must not offend within the Northern Spiritual Realm is the Northern Spiritual Academy.

Mu Territory, Mu City.

The moment that Mu Chen walked out of the Transfer Spiritual Array, a bustling sound entered his ears. He looked at the prospering Mu City and let out a slight smile.

The Mu City is the main city within the Mu Territory and his father Mu Feng is the Mu Territory’s Lord.

“Little Lord?”

“Little Lord, you came back from the Northern Spiritual Academy?”

“Hurry and report to the Territory Lord!”

Near the Transfer Spiritual Array, there were a few Mu Territory guards protecting it. The instant that they saw the boy walking out of the Spiritual Array, they were surprised for a moment, but soon they suddenly rejoiced and came over.

“I’ve troubled all of you, but it’s fine if I go back myself.” Mu Chen directed a smile towards the guards. He grew up in this place and was familiar with many people. Although he was the son of the Territory Lord, his attitude was excellent. Thus, he was quite welcomed within the Mu Territory.

He said farewell to the passionate guards and flew off towards the center of the city. Shortly after, a large Estate appeared within his eyes. In front of the Estate, there were two large words “Mu Estate”.

It was evident that the Mu Estate was heavily guarded. However, Mu Chen did not care about it all and directly ran inside. The guards also let out a warm smile after they recognized him and bowed down to him. Following that, they no longer cared about it.

“Dad!”

Mu Chen charged into the Estate and stormed into the Living Room. He then noticed that there were two figures. On the seat of the host was a man with a black robe. He had an upright body and a determined expression on his face. The only thing that made him look slightly old was the white hair floating out of his head, but you could see vaguely that he must have been a handsome person when he was young.

That person is Mu Chen’s father, Mu Feng. He is also the Lord of the Mu Territory.

At the right-hand seat of Mu Feng, there was a slim, middle-aged man. Within that man’s pupil was a hint of trouble and he seemed to be a little bit dark. His tiny lips revealed a stern atmosphere. But that stern atmosphere dispersed a lot after he saw Mu Chen rushing into the Living Room. Between his two brows, a gentle smile surfaced.

“It’s fine if you come back, why did you have to shout?” Mu Feng placed down the things in his hand and looked at the boy that came in through the door. He could not help but scold him gently. However, there was warmth coming out from the depths of his eyes.

“Territory Lord, it is rare for Little Mu to come back. It is naturally that we would feel happy.” The skinny middle-aged man smiled as he spoke.

“It seems like only Uncle Zhou understands.” Mu Chen sat down on a chair and grinned at the skinny man. Through the way they spoke, you could tell that they were quite close. Uncle Zhou is named Zhou Ye, he is also a lifetime friend of his father. Back then, he followed his father and killed within the Northern Spiritual Realm and finally helped and supported him to become the Lord of the Mu Territory. He also watched as Mu Chen grew up and so, he has always treated Mu Chen as his own child. The feelings they shared between them were naturally superb.

“Huh? You advanced into the Spiritual Movement Stage?” Mu Feng smiled and said in surprise when he looked at Mu Chen.

Hearing this, Zhou Ye also looked at Mu Chen in surprise. As expected, he could detect the Spiritual Aura being emitted within Mu Chen’s body.

“I advanced into it a while back then.” Mu Chen nodded his head. Talking about this matter was a bit dull, there wasn’t many exciting things about it.

“It seems that you came back for Spiritual Arts then.” Mu Feng smiled. Only after you advance into the Spiritual Movement Stage will you be able to learn Spiritual Arts. And by learning Spiritual Arts, you will then be able to release the true power of the Spiritual Energy.

“I have to fight against someone ten days later. It might be a little troublesome if I do not learn Spiritual Arts.” Mu Chen curled his lips and explained the matter about Liu Yang’s challenge when Mu Feng and Zhou Ye threw a suspicious gaze towards him.

“None of the people from the Liu Family are any good.”

After Zhou Ye heard about it, his eyes became a bit vicious and he said:

“The Liu Family has become more and more arrogant these years. Although the Liu Territory can be considered as the Number One in the Northern Spiritual Realm, do they think that the Mu Territory is weak?”

Mu Feng let out a smile without care and said: “I can’t imagine that Liu Yang would actually have a Spiritual Pulse, the Liu Family truly is blessed.”

“It’s only a Human Level Spiritual Pulse.”

Zhou Ye said. However, he frowned a bit as he said this. He looked at Mu Chen and said: “That Liu Yang’s strength is also at the Spiritual Movement Stage Initial Phase. With the help of the Spiritual Pulse, it wouldn’t be easy for someone in the Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase to deal with him. Little Mu, do you think you can do it?”

Mu Chen smiled. He had already attacked someone with the Heaven Level Spiritual Pulse. Why would he care about a mere Human Level Spiritual Pulse? Compare to the insane individuals within the Spiritual Road, Liu Yang appears to be too inexperienced.

Mu Feng looked at the innocent face of Mu Chen. He could feel that his son changed after he came back from the Spiritual Road. Although this little guy would seem gentle and modest, Mu Feng was still able to detect a cold and sharp aura hidden underneath that gentle and innocent face due to his experiences of killing people.

That sharp aura was like a dormant dragon. It’s fine when it does not roar, but once it explodes out, it will definitely finish everything swiftly.

That change made Mu Feng a little bit surprised and also a little bit pleased. He was greatly concerned about his only son. As for why Mu Chen would be kicked out halfway through the Spiritual Road, he was puzzled, but he did not ask for more. He believed that his son would not do anything that would disappoint him.

“Let’s go. I’ll bring you over to select some Spiritual Arts.” Mu Feng stood up and waved his hand to Mu Chen. Then, he walked towards the backyard. After Mu Chen greeted Zhou Ye, he swiftly followed.

He followed Mu Feng and passed through the backyard. In the end, they

stopped near a heavily guarded stone door. A forceful Spiritual Aura spread out from Mu Feng's palms, turned into rays of light and filled the Stone Door.

Behind Mu Feng, Mu Chen was able to feel the forceful Spiritual Energy fluctuations. He could not help but lick his mouth. Dad is indeed a powerful individual at the Spirit Stage. The fluctuations were actually this strong.

Within the training, you will first start off at the Sensing Stage. You will sense the Spiritual Aura within the world. Following that is the Spiritual Movement Stage. At this level, you will be able to absorb the Spiritual Aura into the body. After the Spiritual Movement Stage is the Spiritual Rotation Stage. You will be able to condense the Spiritual Aura within the body into a cycle. The degree of Spiritual Energy would far surpass the Spiritual Movement Stage.

Passing through the Spiritual Rotation Stage, you will reach the Spirit Stage. This could be considered as the dividing level. Mu Feng is at this level. Once you stepped into the Spirit Stage, you could be considered to be a powerhouse within the Northern Spiritual Realm. The powerhouses at this level have battle power far beyond the Spiritual Rotation Stage. This is because you will be able to obtain a unique ability after reaching the Spirit Stage. It is the ability to ingest a Beast Spirit.

The so-called Beast Spirit is the Spirit of the million beasts of the world. Once you ingest it, you will be able to obtain some power from the Spiritual Beast. By combining it with your own Spiritual Energy, your combat strength will naturally soar.

Within this Heaven and Earth, there is a "Beast Record". It divides the numerous Spiritual Beasts within the world into two rankings: Heaven and Earth. And the Spiritual Beast Spirit that Mu Feng had ingested was one that he found due to a lucky coincidence. It is known as the Dragonfire Bird. Within the Earth Ranking of the Beast Record, it is ranked 85. During the years when Mu Feng travelled throughout the Northern Spiritual Realm and becoming the Mu Territory Lord, the Spirit of the Dragonfire Bird has contributed a lot.

“Creak.”

While Mu Chen was distracted, the heavy stone door slowly opened up and the heavy, creaking sound rang out.

After the Stone Door opened up, a smell of dust rushed into their face. Mu Feng fanned using his hand and walked in. Mu Chen also hastened to keep up.

A chamber appeared after passing through the Stone Door. Within the chamber, there were many dim firelights and rows of Stone Shelves began to appear in front of one’s eyes. On the Stone Shelves, many scrolls of scripts began to flash faintly.

Mu Chen’s eyes shone as he looked at the various scripts within the chamber. It was obvious that they were all Spiritual Arts...

Mu Feng clapped his hand. He looked at the chamber and stared at the deepest part for a moment. Then, he immediately said with a faint smile: “All the stocks of Spiritual Arts that your father has are here. You can pick any of them, I want to see which one you will select.”

Chapter 4: The Great Pagoda Art

Mu Chen's black eyes shone as he stared at the inside of the Stone Chamber. As the Lord of the Mu Territory, Mu Feng could be considered as one of the strongest individuals within the Northern Spiritual Realm. The collection that he kept over the years would naturally not be weak.

Towards his father, Mu Chen did not act polite at all. He hurried into the Stone chamber and randomly picked up a script. He took a glance at it. Words of light emerged from the script.

Common Tier Middle Rank Spiritual Art, Cloud Flare.

Mu Chen blinked. A Spiritual Art will normally be divided into Gong Fa Spiritual Arts, Attack Spiritual Arts and Defense Spiritual Arts, etc. And these various Spiritual Arts will be divided into three tiers. Deity Tier, Spiritual Tier, Common Tier. Moreover, each of these Tiers will be divided into High, Middle, Low Rank. The Cloud Flare in front of his eyes is a Common Tier Middle Rank Gong Fa Spiritual Art.

Mu Chen fiddled with the script for a while before lowering it down. It was obvious that he was interested in it. He slowly wandered into the depths of the chamber, occasionally picking up a scroll, but immediately putting it down again.

Mu Feng followed behind Mu Chen slowly, allowing him to select any of the Spiritual Arts here.

Hundred Sword Spiritual Art, Common Tier High Rank.

Book of Broken Mountains, Common Tier High Rank.

The numerous Spiritual Arts filled Mu Chen's eyes. Although the majority of them were Common Tier, Mu Chen knew that these Spiritual Arts would attract many individuals if they were brought out. Mu Feng's collection isn't something ordinary within the Northern Spiritual Realm.

After walking around for quite a bit of time, Mu Chen finally reached the very depths of the stone chamber. However, he has not found the right Spiritual Art for him. He raised his head and stared at the final stone shelf.

Three open Jade Boxes were displayed there.

"You're quite ambitious, your dad risked his life in order to obtain these three Spiritual Arts." Mu Feng saw the three jaded box that Mu Chen set his gaze upon and could not help but smile.

Hearing this, Mu Chen walked over curiously. He then removed a scroll from one of the jaded box. The script was glistening and there was a bit of heat coming from it when he touched it. It was clearly not a Common Tier.

"Dragonblaze Art..." Mu Chen scanned through the script. His eyes let out a tint of surprise: "It's actually a Spiritual Tier Low Rank Spiritual Art?"

He understood the value of a Spiritual Tier Spiritual Art. If it was brought to an auction, it cannot be obtained unless they are willing to spend at least a million Spirit Coins.

"Yes, I train in this Dragonblaze Arttoo. It was something I obtained the Dragonfire Bird's Spirit." Mu Feng nodded as he spoke.

Mu Chen fiddled around with this script for a moment, then he took out the two other scrolls. One of the scrolls was called "Trembling Heaven Tactic" and the other scroll was called "Animate Appraisal". Both of them belong to the Spiritual Tier Low Rank.

Mu Chen did not want to let go of those three scrolls. He hesitated for a moment as he decided which one he should pick.

"Have you chosen yet? These three Spiritual Arts are equal to each other. You can train in one of them first and switch if you find a more suitable Spiritual Art. Mu Feng said with a faint smile.

Mu Chen hesitated for a while. His hand floated on top of the three scrolls. In the end, it landed on the "Animate Appraisal". Although this Spiritual Art wasn't specialized in attacking, it had quite an effect on building the foundations.

Mu Chen's hand was suspended on top of the "Animate Appraisal", but just when he was about to make his selection, his heart suddenly trembled

for a bit. Then, his gaze drifted unconsciously towards the shadow of the three jaded boxes. He noticed that there was a black script covered with dust.

"What is this?"

Mu Chen was startled for a moment. His hand extended out and grabbed onto the black script. He scrolled through it and only notice that a few blurred words floated up from the rough surface of the script.

"The Great Pagoda Art?"

Mu Chen stared at the four blurry words. His eyes were filled with doubt. Why did it not mention the Rank of the Spiritual Art?

Mu Chen gave a puzzled look towards Mu Feng, but he was surprised. At this moment, Mu Feng had a complex expression as he stared at the black script within his hand. It was an expression filled with yearning.

"Dad?" Mu Chen asked, he then waved the script in his hand: "What is this Spiritual Art? Why does it not state the Rank?"

"It's just an ordinary Spiritual Art, you should pick another."" Mu Feng retracted his gaze and said slowly.

Mu Chen frowned for a bit. His hand played around with the black script. After a short silence, he smiled and said: "I want this!"

Mu Feng's body trembled. He stared at Mu Chen. He noticed that there was a stubborn expression within that boy's innocent face.

"Do you really want to select this?" Mu Feng asked after a pause.

Mu Chen nodded his head and said: "I don't know why but I feel that I would regret it if I do not pick this. Dad, just how did you get this Spiritual Art?"

Mu Feng had a complicated gaze as he stared at the script. After a moment, he let out a long sigh and let out a bitter laugh. Then with a voice that was only audible to him, he muttered: "Jing, he really is your son."

"That script was left behind by your mother. To be accurate, she left it for you. However, she also mentioned that I should let it gather dust if you

do not select it." Mu Feng gently spoke.

"Mom?"

Mu Chen could not help but tremble a little bit. He muttered the unfamiliar, yet heart-shaking word. He has never seen his mother before. There was only a vague, but gentle figure within the depths of his heart.

Ever since he began to understand things, he did not inquire about his mother from Mu Feng. Mu Feng, too, did not mention her. It was as if the father and son tried to avoid the topic regarding a person important to them.

"Mom should still be alive, right? W...Where is she?"

Mu Chen held the script tightly. He hesitated for a moment before finally asking the thing he wanted to know the most. When he was young, he had carved many wooden sculptures. The wooden sculptures were exactly the same, but there wasn't a clear face on them. This is because the origin of the wood sculpture came from the gentle figure within his heart.

Every single one of the wooden sculpture had traces of hope and longing.

"The matter regarding your mother is extremely complicated. It does not help if I tell you now. However, if you want to know about it, then you should train in this. Once you reached a certain level in it, you will naturally know." Mu Feng was silent for a long time and he finally clenched his hands as he stared at Mu Chen.

"Did Mom leave because of me?" Mu Chen suddenly asked.

"You were the person that she was most worried about. Because of you, she was willing to throw away everything."

Mu Feng did not give a direct answer. He only rubbed Mu Chen's head and said with a self-deprecating voice: "It's all because your father did not have the ability. I was not able to let your mother stay together with you."

"I had tried before, but...I still failed. I'm sorry."

Mu Chen nodded. A brilliant smile appeared on his innocent face: “Dad, do you want to see mom again?”

“I want to, I really want to, I really want our family to finally reunite.” Mu Feng lifted his head and murmured. A sense of longing also existed within it.

Mu Chen gripped his hands tightly. The rough, black script emitted a warm temperature. Shortly after, he lifted his head and gave a slight smile towards Mu Feng. “I’ll select this. Don’t worry dad, I will help you complete what you have failed at. If you believe in me, then I will let our family reunite with each other one day, nobody will be able to stop it!”

Mu Feng stared at the boy with an innocent face, but firm eyes. A rippling surge of bitterness appeared within his chest, causing his eyes to become red. He, then, nodded his head.

Jing, our son will not be someone ordinary.

Chapter 5: The Great Thousand World

The sun shined into the courtyard with lush branches. It formed a beam of light. Within the beam, many tiny lights danced along with it. It made the whole courtyard seemed very transparent.

Mu Chen sat cross-legged on a stone chair. One of his hands was on his face; the other was fiddling with the black script. In the end, he selected the “Great Pagoda Art”. It was also a commitment that he made to his own father.

However, even Mu Feng did not know what rank this “Great Pagoda Art” was. He could only vaguely tell that this thing was extremely powerful. As to why he said it was very powerful, the reason he gave was that it was because your mother was very, very powerful...

Mother was very, very powerful?

Mu Chen blinked his eyes. Mu Feng was able to lift up the entire family and create this Mu Territory within the Northern Spiritual Realm. He became a famous powerhouse within the Northern Spiritual Realm. In fact, he could be considered as quite amazing. But if even he said that she was powerful, just how powerful was mother?

“If mother was that powerful, why did she fancy dad?” Mu Chen grinned. It looks like dad had a wonderful encounter with mom when he was young. It should be a good story.

Mu Chen organized his chaotic feelings for a while. Then he gazed at the black script within his hand. He would have to fight Liu Yang ten days later. That guy is also a person at the Spiritual Movement Stage Initial Phase and possesses the Human Level Spiritual Pulse. Although he had met monsters with a much more powerful Spiritual Pulse at the Spiritual Road, but the Spiritual Road was somewhat peculiar.

The so-called Spiritual Road is, in fact, a very enormous stage for a trial. The creators of the Spiritual Road are the “Five Great Academies”. Every three years, the Spiritual Road will activate. The entry selection for the Spiritual Road was also quite strange. It was not selected through human

means, but it was searched out by a Divine Artifact known as the “Mirror of Judgment”. This search was quite strange, but the people that were selected by this Divine Artifact were mostly people with excellent talents. In general, they would be able to enter and train at the “Five Great Academies” once they successfully pass the Spiritual Road’s trial.

The Spiritual Road is formed in a world. In this strange world, nobody is able to use any energy. In other words, whether it is Spiritual Aura or Dou Qi and Yuan Li from Lower Planes, nobody can use them within the Spiritual Road.

The selected person would face many life and death experiences when they enter the Spiritual Road. Under the circumstance that they could not use Spiritual Energy, they could only use their own physical body and their own dexterity and wisdom to resolve a variety of dangers. This method of forcing them to a corner is the best way of tempering their willpower.

When entering the Spiritual Road, the selected person would be told that if they want more power, then they must have an unshakable resolve. Only by controlling this resolve, will they be able to become someone truly strong.

In the ten million years, 70-80% of the strongest powerhouses that came out of the “Five Great Academies” had participated in the Spiritual Road’s trial. Thus, you can see how important the Spiritual Road’s trial is. This is also why many geniuses would go after it like ducks.

“The Five Great Academies...”

Mu Chen clenched his fist tightly. He must enter that place. Not only did he promise her, but he would only obtain the qualifications to stand in the outside world if he comes out from the “Five Great Academies”.

Towards the outside world, Mu Chen was not aware of it that much. However, he would occasionally hear about it from Mu Feng. The Great Thousand Worlds he currently resides in is a vast, endless place. Many clans live here. The Northern Spiritual Realm is just like a tiny speck of sand within an ocean. It is an insignificant place. Moreover, the Great Thousand Worlds interweaves with numerous worlds. However, those

worlds could only be called Lower Planes. This is because this world seemed to be at a higher level than those worlds. The Great Thousand Worlds is the center of numerous planes.

However, the ones that were able to come from a Lower Plane to the Great Thousand Worlds all possess amazing talent. They must be the strongest individuals in their world. Otherwise, they would not be able to break through the shackles of the world.

Mu Chen had once overheard a conversation about the overpowered people that came from the Lower Planes in a higher up meeting at the Northern Spiritual Academy. There were two that were the most well-known. Mu Chen did not hear their names, but he could hear their titles.

Flame Emperor.

Martial Ancestor.

They were both domineering titles. They came from the Lower Planes, but according to Mu Chen's speculation, they were probably considered as a true Sovereign within the Great Thousand World. That Martial Ancestor had once caused an enormous ruckus in the Great Thousand World. It was said that he charged into a rather powerful clan, the Ice Spirit Clan, within the Great Thousand World by himself. The Ice Spirit Clan could not stop the man, who was holding a Lightning Staff. That one battle trembled the heavens. When that was known, the entire Great Thousand World was shocked. And it was rumored that he had done all of this in order to save the person he loved.

In contrast, the unworldly Flame Emperor kept a low-profile. However, it was rumored that he had gone to the Fire Spirit Clan and the Fire Spirit Clan even asked an Old Ancestor, who had lived for numerous years, to come out. Yet, he was not able to get the upper hand against the Flame Emperor and had to let the Flame Emperor leave. This stunned everyone from the Fire Spirit Clan.

The powerhouses that came from the Lower Planes would still be as amazing as before and were overbearing even after they came to the Great Thousand Worlds.

The outside world was really filled with excitement, making one extremely thrilled.

However, Mu Chen also understood that he has not reached that level yet. However, he truly believed that he would be able to reach it if he had enough time.

Mu Chen stared at the black script in front of his hand. A smile emerged on his innocent face. Then, everything should begin from this...

Mu Chen placed his hands together and slowly closed his eyes. The black script within his palm let out a warm glow.

His eyes were filled with darkness. Mu Chen moved using his mind and urged the Spiritual Aura within his body to flow through the meridians in his arm and eventually into the script within his hand.

Bzzzzt.

Soon after the Spiritual Aura was inserted inside, the script let out a subtle buzzing sound. Then the darkness began to be torn up and something seemed to enter Mu Chen's body through his palms.

"Use your body as a Pagoda to witness the Road of a Spirit..."

The mysterious and obscure chant seemed like an ancient bell sound. It quietly echoed in Mu Chen's mind. Then, he quickly protected his mind and firmly memorized these chants.

The ringing sound gradually dispersed. The training chant contained way too many things. Many of them were things that Mu Chen had not touched before. Thus, he wisely decided to put it aside for now and accept the parts that he could understand. However, the chant was so obscure that his brain was still in pain. He had never seen such a mysterious and complex chant.

It was obvious that Mu Chen had extraordinary talents. Otherwise, he would not have qualified for the Spiritual Road. Within the mysterious chant, he understood the secret within it. Shortly after, he finally began to move the Spiritual Aura. Based on the chant, the route circulation within the meridians were all quite strange. If you were able to trace the lines,

you would be able to discover that the path that it travels seemed like a strange tower shape formed within his body.

The Spiritual Aura followed this weird meridians route and began to circulate. The first circulation obviously uses up an enormous about of energy. However, Mu Chen was able to fight back the tiredness and tried to maintain and complete the Spiritual Aura circulation.

The strange meridian route was extremely difficult to circulate. Even if Mu Chen tries to desperately control, he would still fail repeatedly. However, he did not feel rash about it and maintained a calm state as he circulated it over and over again.

This process lasted an entire afternoon. After repeated failures, a tiny portion of the Spiritual Aura finally passed through the final meridian under Mu Chen's careful control.

When the Spiritual Aura passed through the final meridian, the originally transparent Spiritual Aura began to change. The color gradually became a dark and deep color.

Only now can the Spiritual Aura be truly called Spiritual Aura. And although this dark Spiritual Aura seemed quiet and reserved, Mu Chen could vaguely feel that underneath this quietness is a hidden overbearing an fierce feeling.

It was evident that the quality of the Spiritual Aura that came out through the Great Pagoda Art was extremely high. It was not something that an ordinary Spiritual Art could compare with.

The thing that mother left behind was truly amazing! Mu Chen secretly thought to himself in excitement while he was completely sweaty.

This dark Spiritual Aura quietly occupied Mu Chen's aurasea. As long as he insisted on training this Spiritual Aura, it would definitely become massive.

And in the moment that the dark Spiritual Energy occupied his aurasea, Mu Chen's body violent shook. A sudden burst of dizziness appeared within his mind. He could feel that something was resonating with it

inside his body. It was a wonderful feeling. It started from within Mu Chen's heart, but it soon vanished.

"What was that all about?"

Mu Chen recovered quickly. He was quite alarmed and quickly began to probe around within his body. However, he did not find anything wrong with it. It was as if the early feeling was just an illusion.

However, Mu Chen firmly believed that it wasn't an illusion.

"Was it because of the Great Pagoda Art?"

Mu Chen thought quickly, then he looked at the dark Spiritual Energy within his aurasea. He pondered about it for a moment, but he did not find any clues related to it. Thus, he could only give up. The Great Pagoda Art was left behind personally by his mother. Although he had never seen her before, he believed one truth. His mother would not leave behind anything dangerous to him!

"Or is it because of this?"

Mu Chen suddenly moved his mind. He could only see that there was a black glow floating on top of the dark Spiritual Energy within his aurasea.

The black glow flashed and then it returned back to its original appearance. It was actually a piece of black paper. On top of the black paper, there wasn't any writing, but you could vaguely see some extremely fuzzy lines.

The black paper quietly floated within his aurasea and let that dark Spiritual Energy warm it up. Within that simple and unadorned paper, a mystery that could not be described was revealed.

Mu Chen stared at the piece of mysterious, black paper. He was quite confused. That item was something that he obtained during the Spiritual Road. However, he did not see any effects from it ever since then. He was able to faintly tell that the mysterious, black paper wasn't something ordinary. It was just that he didn't have the strength to unlock its secrets now.

Was the previous resonance because of it?

Mu Chen thought for a moment, but he shook his head. Although the black paper was mysterious, it was obvious that it did not cause the earlier commotion...

He pondered seriously about it but to no avail. Mu Chen could only finally give up and put aside this issue. He stared at the dark Spiritual Energy within his aurasea again. Based on the chant, the Great Pagoda Art was divided into 3 Levels. First being Foundation, Second being Shape-Condensation and Third being Towerform.

However, he had not even reach the Foundation level yet. He could only be regarded as just entering the initial phase. If he wanted to advance to the Foundation Level, it would require quite a bit of effort.

Inside the courtyard, Mu Chen slowly opened his closed eyes. He looked at the sweat on his body and could not help but shake his head. The Great Pagoda Art was definitely difficult to train in. It was already this difficult considering that it was just at the starting line. He really did not know when he would be able to train it into the Towerform Level and just how difficult it would be.

“I wonder by how many levels will this Great Pagoda Art amplify my Spiritual Energy?”

Mu Chen’s heart trembled for a bit. He was curious about it. A Spiritual Art had another important role. That is to amplify the Spiritual Energy. In general, a Common Tier High Rank Gong Fa Spiritual Art would be able to amplify the Spiritual Energy by 5 levels. A Spiritual Tier Low Rank Gong Fa would be able to amplify the Spiritual Energy by 10 levels. The more levels it could amplify, the stronger the Spiritual Energy would be when it was released.

You could also use this method to roughly distinguish just what rank the Spiritual Art is.

Thinking up to this point, the curiosity within Mu Chen’s eyes began to increase. He spun his hand around and a dark Spiritual Aura emerged from his palm. Then he slowly gripped his palm and his eyes began to boil

up.

He was going to test just how powerful this Great Pagoda Art is!

Chapter 6: Spiritual Energy Amplification

Inside the courtyard, Mu Chen's body stood up straight. His palms bent slightly and a dark Spiritual Energy gathered quickly within his palms. A faint and sharp fluctuation came out from it.

Mu Chen sensed the Spiritual Energy within his palms. He could feel that subtle changes were happening within it. In the next moment, his eyes suddenly froze for a moment and the gentle, dark Spiritual Energy within his palms suddenly trembled violently.

It was like dropping a few water droplets into a boiling pan.

Within that quaking vibration, the Spiritual Aura fluctuations also rapidly increased.

Mu Chen's palms trembled slightly. He could feel that the Spiritual Energy was speedily amplifying...

One Level...Three Levels...Five Levels...Eight Levels...

When the Spiritual Energy had amplified to the Ninth Level, the vibrations within his hand became even more intense and there were signs that the Spiritual Energy was escaping his control.

"It's only the Ninth Level. This isn't enough."

Mu Chen frowned as he wrinkled his brow slightly. He could faintly feel that a wild horse-like Spiritual Energy was about to explode outwards!

The Thirteenth Level!

The black Spiritual Energy covered Mu Chen's palm. He solemnly looked at it. At the next moment, he moved his hand violently and bent all but two fingers. He then stabbed at the stone pillar in front of him at lightning speed.

The sound of the wind breaking could be heard!

Common Tier Middle Rank Attack Spiritual Art, Bone-Shatter Finger!

Mu Chen's two fingers had penetrated the stone pillar deeply. Cracks began to appear from where his finger had stabbed into.

Mu Chen stared at the cracks as he retracted his fingers from within. He muttered to himself: “Thirteenth Level.”

He nodded. He is only at the starting line for the Great Pagoda Art, yet he was already able to amplify his Spiritual Energy by thirteen levels. It was enough to prove how powerful the Great Pagoda Art is and Mu Chen could sense it that the amplification would only increase as he gets more skilled in it.

“The Great Pagoda Art is at least a Spiritual Tier High Rank Spiritual Art.”

Mu Chen grinned. The item left behind by his mother really isn’t something ordinary. It was probably difficult to find a Spiritual Tier High Rank Spiritual Art within the entire Northern Spiritual Realm. However, this Spiritual Art was quite difficult to train in. Mu Chen was confident in his cultivation talent, but even so, it would still be difficult to train in this Great Pagoda Art.

“However, I do not lack time.” Mu Chen muttered and immediately clapped his hands as he turned back to return to his home. It looks like he must put all his effort into training this Great Pagoda Art.”

Not far away from the courtyard, Mu Feng witnessed the events that happened. He could not help but let out a smile. Within that smile, you could see that he was quite satisfied: “Little Mu’s cultivation talent truly is outstanding. I had once trained in the Great Pagoda Art before, but I was only able to the first batch of Spiritual Energy to circulate through after 5 days. And the first batch of Spiritual Energy only reached the Seventh Level of amplification.”

“That boy actually successfully trained in it within half a day and the level of amplification was that shocking. He really hurt my pride.” Although he said this, Mu Feng could not conceal the prideful and delighted feelings within his eyes.

“Ohoho, Little Mu’s talent is truly amazing. He would definitely be someone that far surpasses the outdated fellows like us in the future.” Zhou Ye also smiled as he nodded his head. His voice held a bit of longing.

“That’s right. The Northern Spiritual Realm may seem very significant to us, but for Little Mu, it is way too small...”

In the next few days, Mu Chen focused all his efforts on training the “Great Pagoda Art”. The boy may occasionally look like he was lazy, but deep down inside, he was extremely stubborn. It was this stubbornness that allowed him to have a distinguished reputation within the Spiritual Road. In the end, he even caused the massive event, which even numerous geniuses were stunned about.”

By focusing all his efforts, the Spiritual Energy within Mu Chen’s aura sea had rapidly become thicker in just seven short days. He was able to obtain a deeper insight regarding about the Great Pagoda Art. However, it seems that he was still some distance before he reached the Foundation Level. This made him let out a sound of disapproval. The Great Pagoda Art was truly something extraordinary.

As his training in the Great Pagoda Art was going well, Mu Chen relaxed a bit. Then, he began to multi-task and searched through numerous scrolls to find a few suitable Attack Spiritual Arts for him to learn.

Although he has strengthened the base of his Spiritual Energy, it is still essential to have a few Attack Spiritual Arts to enhance his combat abilities.

And Liu Yang was not an ordinary person as well. He is ranked first in the Northern Spiritual Academy Earth Class. This was enough to prove just how powerful he is. At the same time, his father was the Liu Territory’s lord. The Liu Territory is the strongest territory within the Northern Spiritual Realm. It is even slightly stronger than the Mu Territory. They often had many disputes with the Mu Territory over the past few years and did not like each other. Although the Liu Territory could not extend their reach to the Northern Spiritual Academy, they would still be able to give the best support to Liu Yang...

However, was it really that easy to step on Mu Chen? Even the numerous geniuses within the Spiritual Road couldn’t do that, a mere Liu Yang was far from being able to.

At the training ground filled with stone blocks, a figure caused the dust to scatter around. Within his hands, a dark Spiritual Energy was constantly rotating and it emitted faint fluctuations.

Only two of his fingers weren't bent. Under the dark Spiritual Energy, an extremely sharp, black stab landed onto a block of stone.

KACHA!

The shattered rock pieces exploded outwards and cracks quickly spread through the block of stone. Within the boy's black eyes, a cold atmosphere passed through. The two fingers that were deep inside the block of stone moved violently and with a muffled ringing sound, the waist-sized block was directly pierced through.

The block of stone shattered. The boy did not stop and changed his hands from just fingers to a palm. With a faint sound of thunder, the Dark Spiritual Energy surged through and he hit a stone block using his backhand.

The moment the palm landed onto the stone bloc, the boy stood on just one leg. The other leg lashed out with power at another block of stone.

BANG! BOOM!

The two muffled sounds rang out. Two stone blocks shattered and crashed straight down. The gravel from it flew off to the open space. The boy slowly lowered his leg and maintained a calm atmosphere. The dark Spiritual Energy within his palms quietly dispersed.

Clap Clap.

Sounds of applause rang out from the side. Mu Chen looked and saw Mu Feng standing outside of the training ground with a smile. He was quite satisfied with the performance that Mu Chen had done earlier. It was like a tempest, the killing intent was hidden within the sharpness. It was in no way inferior to those his men that had honed it through battles of life and death. It looks like his son did not waste the year when he entered the Spiritual Road.

"Dad."

Mu Chen patted the dust off his arm and walked towards Mu Feng.

“Are you returning to the Northern Spiritual Academy tomorrow?” Mu Feng asked with a smile.

Mu Chen nodded.

“If you are able to pass through the competition this time, you should be able to advance to the Heaven Class of the Northern Spiritual Academy. At that time, you will be qualified to compete for a place within the “Five Great Academies”. Mu Feng patted Mu Chen’s shoulder as he spoke with a smile.

“A place within the Five Great Academies, huh.”

Mu Chen stretched his waist and a smile emerged on his face. “Dad, relax. I will definitely obtain that place...”

Chapter 7: Mu Yuan

Northern Spiritual City. A city that was born because of the Northern Spiritual Academy. The city is basically like the Northern Spiritual Academy and it maintains absolute neutrality within the Northern Spiritual Realm. Furthermore, the one in control of this place is the Northern Spiritual Academy.

This is why none of the disputes within the Northern Spiritual Realm would spread over here. Thus, the Northern Spiritual City is a bustling location. Aside from a few cities in the major territories, it could be considered as one of the top cities within the Northern Spiritual Realm.

As the Northern Spiritual City was born due to the Northern Spiritual Academy, it was naturally a heavenly-like location for the students of the Northern Spiritual Academy. In this city, very few individuals would go against the Northern Spiritual Academy's students even without mentioning about the status of the Northern Spiritual Academy. After all, many of the students that came to train at the Northern Spiritual Academy would have some sort of a background. Furthermore, the sons and daughters of various territory lords would be among them. It would not be a pleasant thing if they offended these youths.

When Mu Chen stepped out of the Transfer Spiritual Array, he saw the scene of a bustling city. He rubbed his head, which was slightly dizzy due to the transfer, and then looked at the Transfer Spiritual Array behind him.

The arrangement of the Transfer Spiritual Array is extremely troublesome. There are only a handful of large cities that had the ability to position it. It was obvious that the Northern Spiritual City had the ability to do so with the Northern Spiritual Academy's power.

Mu Chen walked away from the Transfer Spiritual Array and passed through a lively street. He went straight to the Northern Spiritual Academy located at the center of the city.

On both sides of the street, there were many stores. Amongst them, the

Spiritual Arts vendors shouted out. However, Mu Chen did not have the slightest idea of staying there. His father is one of the nine Territory Lords within the Northern Spiritual Realm. His collection would naturally be decent. Thus, the Spiritual Arts from these places naturally would not enter Mu Chen's sights.

After turning around a couple of street corners, the magnificent Northern Spiritual Academy could be seen. Many groups of students from the Northern Spiritual Academy could be seen on the streets. As the boys and girls gathered together, sounds of laughter could be heard. It was filled with youthful vitality.

In his surroundings, many people would gaze toward Mu Chen. A couple beautiful girls would send a curious and shy gaze towards him. Within the Northern Spiritual Academy, Mu Chen could be considered as a celebrity.

Without mentioning anything else, it would already cause others to tremble slightly within their hearts just by the fact that he had once obtained the qualifications to the Spiritual Road. After all, he was the only one to have obtained a spot for it.

Although they did not know why Mu Chen was kicked out after being in the Spiritual Road for one year, but how could a person be ordinary if they obtained an entry for the Spiritual Road?

Mu Chen did not care about the gazes that were thrown to him, he even smiled back. He had a handsome appearance. A gentle and brilliant smile and eyes that were as black as the evening sky. Although he was roughly the same age as the other students, he possesses a unique disposition that the other innocent teenagers did not have.

It was this disposition, coupled with the comforting face, that made the girls' cheeks slightly hot as they looked at him in secret.

All of a sudden, a commotion rang out in the street in front. Many students quickly dispersed and a couple figures with a depressed expressed ran over. They looked anxiously at the surroundings and an astonished expression appeared shortly after.

"Brother Mu!" Several surprised shouts escaped from their mouth.

“Luo Dong, what are you guys doing?” Mu Chen saw a few familiar people and was slightly bewildered. They were in the same cultivation class as him and their daily relationship was quite good.

“Brother Mu, hurry and help out Su Ling. He was hit by Mu Yuan!” The boy named Luo Dong quickly responded.

“Mu Yuan?”

The surrounding students were shocked when they heard that name. The one that was Number 2 in the Northern Spiritual Academy Earth Class, Mu Yuan? He was an aggressive fellow who was only slightly weaker than Liu Yang. Why would Su Ling dare provoke him?

“What happened?” Mu Chen frowned. Su Ling could be considered to be his best friend within the Northern Spiritual Academy.

“A while ago, Mu Yuan came over to talk about nonsense. He said that Brother Mu would definitely lose tomorrow. Su Ling could not endure it and said a few things back at him. Then, he was hit by Mu Yuan. The West Branch really is too arrogant...” Luo Dong said bitterly.

Mu Chen’s lip creased slightly. This made Luo Dong, who was beside him, shocked. He was quite familiar with Mu Chen and naturally knew that once Mu Chen did this action, he was probably quite angry.

“Bring me there.” Mu Chen said.

“Ah” Luo Dong and the others were stunned. They quickly said: “Brother Mu, we should still find a Teacher first. There are many people over by Mu Yuan’s side. Xue Dong, who you defeated before, and the Xiao Kun who is ranked number 6 in the Earth Class is also...”

“It’s alright. Lead the way.” Mu Chen smiled and gently patted Luo Dong’s shoulder.

Seeing Mu Chen’s smile, Luo Dong and the others looked at each other. They immediately bit their teeth and nodded. At most, they would only be hit, but how could they allow those guys from the West Branch to think that the East Branch were all softies?

Several people surrounded Mu Chen as they headed over there. Only a few stunned students were left on the street. However, they soon recovered and stared at the direction that Mu Chen and the others have departed for with a fiery passion. They quickly followed them and flew off.

Judging from Mu Chen's earlier appearance, could he be planning to pick a fight against three violent individuals within the Top Ten of the West Branch Earth Class by himself? This was quite an explosive event.

A muffled sound rang out and a figure was blown away fiercely. His body stopped only after it left a long trace on the ground.

"The people from the East Branch seem to be bursting with too much self-confidence now. Even an unknown person would dare to yell in front of me, Mu Yuan. I really want to know just who gave you guys that confidence."

A boy in black clothes crossed his arms and sneered at the ten helpless individuals on the ground. The one that was leading those ten men was Su Ling. At this moment, he was staring at the boy in black clothes as he gritted his teeth.

Behind the boy in black clothes were two similarly aged boys. They, too, had a sneer on their face. They could not conceal the arrogance within their eyes.

Surrounding them was a circle of students. However, they did not dare to speak. It was obvious that there weren't many who would dare to provoke these three individuals.

"Bah, Mu Yuan, stop acting so proud. You were lucky that Brother Mu wasn't here today, otherwise, your second rank in the Earth Class would disappear!" Su Ling said in anger.

"Mu Chen" Mu Yuan raised an eyebrow as if he was challenging him and a boy behind him let out a cold harrumph. He was the one that lost to Mu Chen, Xue Dong.

"That guy has a bit of skill, but I'm not afraid of him. Ohoho, I can't wait until tomorrow when the competition between the two Branches is over.

The East Branch would behave themselves then." Mu Yuan grinned and said: "Brother Liu would let him know that it would be better off if he remained a low profile. Within the Northern Spiritual Academy, we, the WestBranch, is the strongest!"

"I really can't wait to see his appearance when that guy loses." Xue Dong said with a sneer.

"Only before that, I think I want to take care of you East Branch trashes." Mu Yuan interweaved his fingers and gently gripped it. It issued out a clear cracking sound and he headed towards Su Ling and the others with an evil expression.

Noticing that Mu Yuan refused to stop, Su Ling and the other looked slightly pale. He soon shouted out: "Let's desperately fight against him"

"Fight!"

These boys were still a bit courageous. If they showed no resistance in front of such a big crowd, it would be too shameful. They gritted their teeth and lifted their body as they charged towards Mu Yuan.

"A group of guys, who haven't even advanced to the Spiritual Movement Stage, dare to attack me? How overly confident." Mu Yuan laughed as he saw this. A faint Spiritual Energy rose from his palms.

"BANG!"

He stomped heavily on the ground and darted out like an arrow. He jumped over the numerous charging figures and appeared directly in front of the panicking Su Ling. With a sneer, his fist brought a sharp wind and he smashed directly at Su Ling's face.

Su Ling stared at the swift wind coming from Mu Yuan's fist, yet it was simply too late to resist. He could only watch as the fist rapidly became bigger in his eyes. He closed his eyes as if he gave up and thought to himself that it looks like he had to lie down for a few days...

Ah...

Just when he closed his eyes, he seemed to hear a few screams coming

from the surroundings. Then a muffled sound rang out and the blast shook his face a bit. It didn't hurt as much as he imagined.

He opened a tiny bit of his eyes and was stunned. A long white arm suddenly appeared from behind him and it easily stopped the blast of wind coming from Mu Yuan's fist.

Su Ling hurriedly turned around. He, then, saw the boy who made him feel relaxed.

"Brother Mu!" Su Ling shouted in joy.

"You did a good job. At least, you did not disgrace the East Branch's face."

Mu Chen smiled at him. Then, he looked at Mu Yuan and the others, whose expression changed slightly, and said: "I was the one that gave them that confidence, is there a problem?"

Chapter 8: Liu Yang

“I was the one that gave them that confidence, isthere a problem?

When Mu Yuan and the others looked at the smiling boy in front of him, their expressions changed slightly. The sneer that they had in their eyes became a little bit more dignified. Apparently, they still held a bit of fear towards Mu Chen.

“Hmph, how arrogant.”

However, Mu Yuan was the first to recover. He stared at Mu Chen and let out a cold hmph. He also advanced to the Spiritual Movement Stage Initial Phase seven days ago. The two individuals behind him, Xue Dong and Xiao Kun, was also about to advance. What would Mu Chen dare to do when there was such a formation against him?

Xue Dong and Xiao Kun also quickly thought of this point. A tint of fierceness passed through their eyes and the fear within them was weakened by a lot.

“I was only teaching them a little lesson today. In the Northern Spiritual Academy, it isn’t the turn of the East Branch to butt in when we, the West Branch, are talking.” Mu Yuan clapped his hands and let out a sneer towards Mu Chen: “As for you, I think you would not dare to say such words after tomorrow.”

The surrounding students were all frozen and did not dare let out a sound. They stared at the arrogant Mu Yuan. The group of East Branch students were all furious within their hearts, yet they kept the resentment to themselves.

After he said these words, he waved his hand as if he wanted to left together with the others. He had already displayed their authority and power today in order to weaken the authority and power that the East Branch had.

Su Ling and the others were extremely angry and clenched their fists. However, the other side had a powerful momentum now. Even if Mu Chen

had finally arrived, he would not dare to fight back against him now.

"I'm going to ask..."

A sound came from behind them. Mu Yuan and the others paused for a moment and turned back to stare at the boy standing in front of Su Ling. At this moment, Mu Chen had a smile on his face.

"Are you not intending...to apologize before you leave?

The surrounding sounds seemed to have become quiet. Many boys and girls stared at the smiling boy in a daze. Although Mu Chen had a brilliant smile on his face, they could feel a sharp chill from it.

Su Ling and the others also froze for a moment. Then their face turned red. They did not believe that Mu Chen would still come forward for them when it was like this.

"Apologize?"

MuYuan's face turned grim. He let out a mocking smile and said: "Why?"

He was used to being arrogant in the Northern Spiritual Academy. Is this guy crazy for asking him to apologize?

"Looks like it's useless to talk."

Mu Chen nodded his head. Without saying anything more, he slowly walked towards Mu Yuan and the others.

Mu Yuan and the others stared at the approaching Mu Chen with a dismal expression. Their eyes made contact for a moment and they could see a hint of coldness within those eyes.

Within the Northern Spiritual Academy, Mu Chen had always remained relatively low profile. Aside from defeating Xue Dong, he had not done any remarkable deeds. However, no students within the Northern Spiritual Academy Earth Class would dare to underestimate him. Even unruly people like Mu Yuan would still fear him. How could a person, who qualified to participate in the Spiritual Road, be an ordinary person?

That's why...

“Do it!”

A cry came out from Mu Yuan’s mouth. The Spiritual Energy violently surged through his arms. He stomped onto the ground and charged directly to Mu Chen. Behind him, Xue Dong and Xiao Kun followed him and kept to his side. These movements had quite the chemistry.

A commotion broke out from the surroundings. It was evident that they did not imagine Mu Yuan and the others to be so straightforward. They did not hesitate to let out a combined attack. Moreover, they were all aggressive individuals within the top ten ranks of the West Branch Earth Class.

Mu Yuan was the strongest out of the three. He had already advanced to the Spiritual Movement Stage Initial Phase. Thus, his offensive was also the most ferocious. The Spiritual Energy wrapped around his palms and the winds coming from it were like blades. He hacked angrily at Mu Chen.

However, just when the palm winds were about the hit Mu Chen, he gently took half a step to the side and his body passed by Mu Yuan. The eyebrows on his handsome face were slightly lowered and just like a sharp sword become unsheathed, the originally gentle face instantly became cold and aggressive.

He did not directly go against Mu Yuan and instead went straight to the Xue Dong and Xiao Kun, who were slightly behind Mu Yuan, as he avoided Mu Yuan. The dark Spiritual Energy surrounded his fingers as he opened up his palm. A sharp sound of the wind could be faintly heard as the Spiritual Energy surged. He let off a smack towards Xue Dong and Xiao Kun.

Xue Dong and Xiao Kun were surprised by this move of Mu Chen. However, they did not have any time to avoid it. They immediately bit their teeth and fired off a punch with all their strength.

As long as they were able to stop Mu Chen for an instant, Mu Yuan would be able to turn back and aid them. When that happens, Mu Chen would be completely surrounded and opened to attacks.

Xue Dong and Xiao Kun had a ranking within the West Branch Earth

Class. Naturally, they weren't just any ordinary individuals. However, they still slightly misjudged the strength of the boy in front of them and the proficiency in his attacks.

When the two fists exploded outwards, Mu Chen's palm suddenly skimmed through the surface of their punches. It violently went further down and landed on their wrists. He, then, pulled powerfully.

The two of them had their bodies fly forward due to being pulled and the momentum of their punch. Their bodies became unstable. Mu Chen's palm wind passed through their arms and like a snake charging out of a hole, it landed directly on their chest without any mercy.

A deep sound rang out. Xue Dong and Xiao Kun's body suddenly flew backwards when they let out an astonished expression. They landed heavily on the ground and issued out a scream. The clothes in front of their chest were completely destroyed.

Just by exchanging blows once, Xue Dong and Xiao Kun lost with ease.

After Xue Dong and Xiao Kun let out a cry, the surrounding students finally recovered. They could not help but grin carelessly. Wasn't it too fast?

"Mu Chen!"

An angry roar came from behind. When Mu Yuan noticed this scene, he was so angry that his face turned red. He did not imagine that Mu Chen would actually avoid him and take care of Xue Dong and Xiao Kun first.

"Flame Palm!"

A fiery red Spiritual Energy erupted above Mu Yuan's palms. As the Spiritual Energy rise, it was like a fire and made the air become a little bit hotter.

The surrounding students exclaimed loudly. Is this the strength of the second rank of the West Branch Earth Class?

Mu Chen also turned around at this moment. He stared at the fierce Mu Yuan as he approached. His fingers clenched into a fist. There wasn't the

slightest evasive action done and a punch surrounded by a dark Spiritual Energy was fired out.

The fist and palm bombarded heavily with each other. A surge of air expanded from it. The Red and Dark Color intersected. However, Mu Yuan's face instantly turned blood red. His body violently trembled and with a Puchi sound, he spat out fresh blood from his mouth. He staggered a few steps backwards and finally sat down on his butt.

With just one move, the victory was decided.

Although they were both at the Spiritual Movement Stage Initial Phase, but it was evident that Mu Chen's Spiritual Energy was more condense and sharp. Mu Yuan could not compare to it at all.

Xue Dong and Xiao Kun, who was beaten to the ground earlier, let out an astonished expression. Mu Yuan had the strength of a Spiritual Movement Stage Initial Phase, why couldn't he even receive one of Mu Chen's punches?

"How is this possible!" Mu Yuanalso had a look of disbelief as he sat on the ground awkwardly. He did not even remember to wipe off the blood from his mouth.

"Brother Mu is amazing!"

Su Ling and the others were completely stunned. Soon, they let out a face filled with ecstasy. They did not expect Mu Chen would still be able to achieve an overwhelming advantage when he was fighting against three of them.

However, Mu Chen had a calm expression. He stared at the awkward Mu Yuan and smiled: "Now, can you apologize?"

Mu Yuan's face changed slightly. He gritted his teeth and shouted: "Dream on!"

Mu Chen seemed to have expected that he would say that. The smile on his face became even more splendid. He nodded his head and strode off towards Mu Yuan. A dark black Spiritual Energy slowly appeared once again on his palms.

Mu Yuan stared at Mu Chen who was approaching. He did not know why he could feel a chill when he looked at Mu Chen's magnificent smile.

Mu Chen approached Mu Yuan. The dark black Spiritual Energy above his palm became more and more dense. However, when his foot stopped in front of Mu Yuan, a gentle clapping sound rang out beside him.

"Ohoho, as expected from a person that had participated in the Spiritual Road before. However, your actions seemed like you do not care about the West Branch at all?"

Mu Chen tilted his head. He looked at the crowd as it separated. From there, a figure slowly came forward with a smile. When the nearby students saw him, they could not help but take a step back and fear appeared within their eyes.

Under the fearful gazes, the boy stood in front of Mu Chen. He had a somewhat handsome appearance. However, the corner of his lips revealed a sense of stubbornness as well as pride that could not be concealed. At this moment, he crossed his arms and within the gaze that stared at Mu Chen, there was a disposition as if he was looking at his prey.

It was the number one person of the West Branch Earth Class, Liu Yang.

Chapter 9: Confrontation

“Liu Yang...”

Mu Chen glanced at the boy who crossed his arms.He did not seem surprised and only calmly said: “You’ve watched the show for half a day now. So you finally couldn’t resist coming out?”

Mu Yuan, Xue Dong and Xiao Kun looked at Liu Yang. They were overjoyed and immediately shouted Brother Liu. When they turned their gaze at Mu Chen again, it had become a little bit more arrogant and aggressive.

Mu Chen’s reputation was not weakwithin the Northern Spiritual Academy Earth Class. Furthermore, he had defeated the three of them together just a while ago. However, there was still a bit of a gap between the person who was Number One in the Earth Class. With Liu Yang backing them up, they naturally did not feel afraid of Mu Chen.

Liu Yang stared at the humiliated trio. He frowned and gave a cold stare at Mu Chen: “Mu Chen, you probably have to give an explanation to the West Branch about this matter today?”

“An explanation?”

Mu Chen stared at the boy, who had the largest reputation in the West Branch Earth Class, and smiled: “They harmed the students from the East Branch for no reason. From what I see, you should be the one that gives an explanation to us.”

The surrounding student secretly grinned as they noticed the two of them confronting each other. These two individuals were probably the most outstanding ones within the Northern Spiritual Academy Earth Class. They originally planned on deciding the victor tomorrow; nobody expected that they would face off each other today.

Liu Yang narrowed his eyes slightly. A cold chill appeared in his eyes. Nobody would dare to be so rude to him within the Northern Spiritual Academy Earth Class. Although he had heard stories about Mu Chen, he

is still the number one person among the Northern Spiritual Academy Earth Class.

"You're still so arrogant..."

Liu Yang revealed a mocking smile. He stared at Mu Chen: "I'm really curious. For a person who obtained the Spiritual Road's qualification by luck and was kicked out forcibly, where did this arrogant spirit of yours come from?"

Anger appeared in Su Ling and the others' eyes as they heard these harsh words. However, they knew that Liu Yang wasn't someone that they could defeat. They could only hold in their hatred and gritted their teeth.

"You will know whether it is luck when you test it out." Compared to their anger, Mu Chen only gently smiled as he spoke.

Liu Yang's pupil shrank. It was evident that he did not think that Mu Chen would dare speak to him like this. His voice gradually became colder: "I originally planned on fighting against you during the competition between the two Branches tomorrow. However, it seems that you are impervious to the situation you're in. I will take care of you now so I don't have to waste time tomorrow."

After saying this, Liu Yang took a step forward. The Spiritual Energy that arise was many times stronger than Mu Yuan in terms of density.

Seeing Liu Yang's imposing manner, Su Ling and the others were surprised. That Liu Yang actually dared to attack now?

They looked at Mu Chen worriedly, yet they were only able to see a similarly aged, innocent face without the slightest fear. The black eyes reflected off dark light that people could not see through.

Seeing Mu Chen's calm appearance, Su Ling and the others' concerns faded a bit. Although Liu Yang was the number one individual of the Northern Spiritual Academy Earth Class, Mu Chen was not someone that weak as well. It would not be easy for him to take care of Brother Mu.

"You really are...pushing your luck too much."

Mu Chen shook his head and curled his lips. The brilliant smile on the innocent face gradually became cold. On his palm, a dark black Spiritual Energy began to circulate around his fingertips.

The atmosphere between the two of them became tense. Many students could not help but widen their eyes. The two individuals in front of them were the strongest within the Northern Spiritual Academy Earth Class. They, too, were curious about who was stronger.

“Stop!”

Just when they were about to fight, a cry came out from a distance. Afterwards, the sound of the wind breaking rang out and a burly figure appeared in between the two of them.

“Teacher Mo!”

When the students saw the person that arrived, they were suddenly surprised and hurried to let out their greetings.

The middle-aged man that was referred to as Teacher Mo had a determined expression. Within his body, a striking amount of Spiritual Energy fluctuations were looming. It caused the nearby students to feel a little bit of pressure.

And when they noticed him, even the arrogant Liu Yang straightened up a bit. The person in front of him is a genuine Spirit Stage powerhouse. Even within the Northern Spiritual Academy and Northern Spiritual Realm, he could be considered as a first-class individual. Naturally, he did not dare to offend him.

“If you want to fight within the academy, you can do so at the Martial Stadium. Do you want to be punished for disgracing others outside?” Teacher Mo looked around and said in a stern voice.

“Oh, what is Teacher Mo saying? We were just doing an exchange.”

Liu Yang smiled. He knew that he would not be able to take any actions today. He looked at Mu Chen and extended a finger towards him. He gave a faint nod and said: “I’ll be waiting for you at the competition between the two branches tomorrow.”

After he said that, Liu Yang turned around and brought the people away with him. However, you could hear a faint murmur: “He’s only just a person who was kicked out of the Spiritual Road halfway...”

Su Ling and the others heard the deliberate murmur from Liu Yang. They face turned pale and they said as they gritted their teeth: “Brother Mu, isn’t he being too arrogant? At least you were able to qualify for the Spiritual Road, who the f*ck does he think he is?”

Mu Chen looked at the angry Su Ling. He could not help but let out a smile as he patted his shoulder. He said: “Why are you getting so angry? If a dog bites you, do you have to bit him back?”

“Even so, it doesn’t feel good at all.”

“True, it feels pretty terrible.” Mu Chen chuckled and a coldness appeared on the boy’s innocent face. “Although I won’t bite him, but I enjoy beating them to death with a stick. I will beat him up so that he will not dare to make such noise again.”

“That boy from the Liu Family is truly shameful like his father.”

Teacher Mo stared at the direction where Liu Yang departed to. He frowned as if he was slightly dissatisfied. He then turned to Mu Chen and let out a smile and said:

“Well said, that suits my taste as well.”

“However, it was said that Liu Yang is also at the Spiritual Movement Stage Initial Phase currently. He also possesses the Human Level Spiritual Pulse, so his strength is comparable to a Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase. Are you certain that you would defeat him at the competition between the two branches tomorrow?”

“Teacher Mo, please rest assured. I will not disgrace you.” Mu Chen smiled. Teacher Mo managed the East Branch. If the East Branch lost too poorly at the competition, he would lose some face.

“We’re going to head back first, Teacher Mo.”

Teacher Mo stared at Mu Chen, who was leaving together with Su Ling

and the others, and waved his hand. He also smacked his lips. That boy is still quite young, yet there is something that could not be seen by others within him. You could not see the slightest bit of arrogance within the boy, but you are able to vaguely feel the sharpness hidden within his gentleness. That boy...

"He is indeed someone that can overwhelm the individuals from the Spiritual Road...If he was to successfully complete the Spiritual Road's trial, he would probably be like hotcakes to the Five Great Academies. How would he still be here..."

Teacher Mo sighed. He was actually looking forward to the competition between the two branches tomorrow. It was said that the guy from the Liu Family had made sufficient preparations. Who knows who would be the one to have the final laugh at the competition to determine the Number One of the Earth Class?

The color of the night became darker. Within his room, Mu Chen quietly sat in a cross-legged position. His hands formed a seal. It was obvious that he had entered the state of cultivation. Near his body, the Spiritual Aura within the world fluctuated. Then, they followed his breath and entered his body.

As more and more of the Spiritual Aura entered Mu Chen's body, a faint, dark black light flashed on the surface of his body.

Within his aurasea, the dark black Spiritual Energy flowed. The density of it was many times stronger than what he had first started to train. It was evident that Mu Chen had placed quite the effort in cultivating it during this period of time.

A trace of the Spiritual Energy circulated through the cultivation route of the Great Pagoda Art. In the end, it turned into a dark black Spiritual Energy and entered his aurasea. It caused a vigorous feeling as it became more intense.

Currently, Mu Chen had gradually become skilled in the Great Pagoda Art, but he has not been able to reach the Foundation Level yet. However, he could faintly feel that step would not be very far away...

Mu Chen did not become rash or impatient. He quietly exerted restraint on the Spiritual Energy that was being infused to his aurasea. When the final traces of the Spiritual Energy entered his aurasea, he could feel a tremble within it. The dark Black Spiritual Energy within his aurasea surged. It actually swelled up at an alarming rate and strength began to flow through his limbs.

Mu Chen was a little bit startled by the change within his aurasea. He could not help but chuckle loudly. It really was unexpected that he actually broke through at this moment...

Chapter 10: Academy Competition

The following day. When the hot sunlight showered down onto the Northern Spiritual City, gradual signs of hotheadedness appeared within the Northern Spiritual Academy.

The Northern Spiritual Academy is divided into East and West Branches. There is considerable competition between the two branches. However, it must be mentioned that there will only be growth when there is competition. This is why the Northern Spiritual Academy had produced many outstanding students during the past two years.

Among the competition between the two branches, the Academy Competition, held once every couple of months, was the most fiery and fierce. The rankings of many individuals within the Academy would be decided during the Academy Competition. A youth will ultimately seek to prevail over others. In addition, who wouldn't want to show off in front of the many beautiful female seniors and juniors? Because of this, many students would put in a lot of effort to obtain decent results at the Academy Competition.

At the west area of the Northern Spiritual Academy, there was a vast arena-like space. Many rings for martial competition were distributed through it. Near the rings, there were many stone staircases that acted as seats. Right now, these seats were all completely filled with a sea of humans.

All kinds of sound such as conversation and whispers gathered together. Moreover, it was mixed with a tinkling sound of laughter from the young girls and it filled the atmosphere with a youthful vigor.

Within the large stadium, there were many people. However, it was clearly divided into two sections. That is the West Branch and the East Branch students. Because of the competitive relationship they shared, the two sides would occasionally provoke each other, making the atmosphere particularly lively.

"We, the East Branch, only occupied four seats out of the top ten within

the Earth Class. Moreover, the top three were all occupied by the West Branch. I really don't know if there will be any changes after this Academy Competition."

"We the East Branch also have a number of powerful individuals. Liu Feng and Tan Qingshan are rumored to soon reach the Spiritual Movement Stage. If they succeeded, then it would be possible for them to reach the top five.

At the seats of the East Branch, a few students talked to each other. On the side, Su Ling heard the conversation and pouted his lips. He said: "You're not even aware of the main point of the Academy Competition. It doesn't matter how many seats the East Branch is behind, as long as Brother Mu obtains first place, the West Branch would not dare to bark at us."

The East Branch students looked at each other and immediately sighed. Although what he said was correct, Mu Chen would still need to defeat Liu Yang in order to become number one of the Earth Class. It was rumored that he possesses a Human Level Spiritual Pulse...

"Brother Mu, this time, we, the East Branch, are all counting on you." Su Ling grinned at the boy in front of him as he spoke.

Mu Chen only smiled but his eyes remained at the stadium. Although it had not officially begun, there were already a few students beginning to fight in the ring.

Just when Mu Chen stared at the stadium, a ruckus sounded out from behind him. Then, a fragrance came over as a graceful and slender figure appeared by his side. A sweet voice appeared: "Oi!"

Mu Chen tilted his head to stare at Tang Qian'Er, who appeared beside him. The latter wore a jaded green outfit. Her bouncing black ponytail and extremely pretty face attracted many fervent stares over from the surroundings.

Tang Qian'Er was a student from the East Branch Heaven Class and she was extremely beautiful. She had an amazing personality as well. Thus, so there was no shame for her to be considered as one of the Flowers within

the East Branch. No matter where she goes, she would naturally attract a variety of envious eyes.

"Why did you come?" Due to Tang Qian'Er appearing here, Mu Chen was a little surprised. This should be the period when the Heaven Class students are training, right?

"I came here to cheer for you." Tang Qian'Er smiled. She joked around and said: "And in case you were beaten down completely, I can still carry you back."

"Why thank you." Mu Chen shook his head sourly.

"Hey, will you be fine? You had a conflict with Liu Yang yesterday, so he probably made up his mind to cause trouble for you today." Concern filled Tang Qian'Er's eyes. Although teasing is just teasing, she also understood the importance of today's events. Otherwise, she would not throw aside her cultivation course and run over here.

"I'll do my best." Mu Chen smiled. Just when he started to speak, his expression suddenly changed. He raised his head up to stare at the other side. In the center of the West Branch's seats, a cold gaze stared directly at him. It was Liu Yang.

Others such as Mu Yuan and Xue Dong gathered near Liu Yang's side. At this moment, they were all sending out challenging sneers over to this side.

Mu Chen and Liu Yang exchanged gazes from afar. At the place where the gazes intersect, sparks seemed to flash over there.

The two of them were both well-known individuals within the two branches. And many people knew what the main show was for today. This is why their confronting gazes made them grin. It seems like the today's show would not escape them.

Liu Yang stared at Mu Chen. Then his attention turned to Tang Qian'Er, who was beside him. He could not help but grit his teeth. When he looked at Mu Chen again, the gaze turned colder again.

"How troubling..." Mu Chen was able to discover all these subtle

changes. He then looked at Tang Qian'Er as he spoke. Everybody in the Northern Spiritual Academy knew that Liu Yang liked Tang Qian'Er. However, he had never gotten a good look from her. Aside from the grudge held between their fathers, Mu Chen would sometimes think that Liu Yang was against him so often because of the jealousy that Tang Qian'Er was close to him.

"If you dislike me giving you trouble, then I'll leave." Tang Qian'Er said with a straight face.

Mu Chen could not resist laughing. His black eyes stared at Tang Qian'Er. The boy's bright eyes made the girl blush slightly, but, as a stubborn person, she still managed to stare directly at Mu Chen.

"If it's him...He shouldn't be considered trouble." Mu Chen said with a smile.

"Hmph, you just know how to boast. Say that after you won."

Tang Qian'Er pouted her lips and she glanced at the stadium with her beautiful eyes. Her pretty face suddenly changed and she whispered: "That guy actually came as well..."

Mu Chen's line of sight followed hers over. His expression was also startled for a moment. Not only him, the entire East Branch seats instantly became a little quieter.

Their gaze landed at the West Branch seats. There were a couple individuals at the age of 17 to 18. They were older than the other Heaven Class students by a bit. At this moment, these individuals were all leaning on the rail and lazily stared at the ring within the stadium and would occasionally crack jokes. It was obvious that their attention was not on the stadium.

At the center of those individuals, there were two figures that stood out the most. A boy and a girl. The girl had a bright red dress and her peach-like eyes were extremely attractive. It was Hong Ling from the West Branch.

The other figure was a person dressed up in white. He had a tall stature

and a handsome appearance. At this moment, he vaguely glanced through the West Branch area. The areas that he glanced upon instantly became quiet, it was evident that their momentum was oppressed.

"Kuh...It's actually Liu MuBai. I didn't think that he would come as well..." Su Ling gulped and said with a dry voice.

If they were facing Liu Yang, they would still be able to have a bit of fighting spirit within their heart. However, in front of Liu MuBai, they were not able to produce the slightest bit of courage.

Because Liu MuBai is the true number one within the Northern Spiritual Academy. Ever since he entered the Northern Spiritual Academy, nobody was ever able to shake his number one position.

Mu Chen's gaze stared at the dazzling figure in white. His black eyes exchanged gazes with him. Even from a distance, it still seems that there was an oppression enveloping them.

The four eyes exchanged gazes. However, within Mu Chen's eyes, the fear that the other students have did not appear. This calm exchange of gazes made the figure in white a little surprised and he frowned.

"Oh, that boy has quite the charisma." Beside Liu Mubai, the seniors from the West Branch actually noticed that Mu Chen was not afraid of Liu Mubai and was a little shocked.

Hong Ling's eyes also stared at Mu Chen when he exchanged gazes with Liu Mubai. The boy's face seemed to be slightly immature, but it made others feel calm. It felt that even the genuine number one of the Northern Spiritual Academy was not able to impact him.

She could not help but become entranced. The timid boy that had follow her back then really changed a lot...

"Big Brother!"

A sound came over from nearby. Liu Yang stared happily over to this side.

Liu Mubai gave a nod towards Liu Yang. Then, his hands clenched onto

the railing. He did not say anything, but the atmosphere at the East Branch shrank a bit. On the other hand, the West Branch's momentum expanded by taking advantage of this.

It was evident that Liu Mubai purposely came over to subdue their momentum. With his position in the Northern Spiritual Academy, even the East Branch Heaven Class seniors would not dare to confront him.

And just when Liu Mubai's imposing manner oppressed the audience, a crisp bell sound rang out suddenly. This made many students recover their focus. The Academy Competition was finally about to begin.

Chapter 11: Tan Qingshan

The crisp sound of the bell rang out through the skies. Beneath it, the lively atmosphere also reached its peak.

Directly at the north of the stadium, three figures were sitting side by side. The person at the left was Teacher Mo that appeared yesterday. The person at the right was a middle-aged man with a skinny face. His face was tense and his eyes were slightly sunken. He seemed to be quite strict.

“Oh, the Academy Competition this time seemed to be livelier than ever.” In the main seat between the two individuals was a white-haired old man. He smiled as he stared at the fiery atmosphere below and laughed.

“The situation was mostly clear for the past Academy Competitions, but this one is somewhat difficult to predict.” Teacher Mo said with a smile.

“Why is it difficult to predict? Liu Yang is currently at the Spiritual Movement Stage Initial Phase. Coupled with his Human Level Spiritual Pulse, he would probably be ranked rather high up even within the Heaven Class. Although that Mu Chen is pretty good, there is still a bit of a difference between him and Liu Yang. “The stern middle-aged man seated at the right curled his lips. He was the highest level instructor for the West Branch. He naturally wanted the West Branch students to get the best results.

“Teacher Xi, it is not wise to look down on a person who qualified for the Spiritual Road.” Teacher Mo muttered.

“Unfortunately, that is only said for the ones that successfully passed through the trial within the Spiritual Road.” The stern middle-aged man shook his head as he spoke.

The white-haired old man heard the dispute between the two of them and smiled. Apparently, he had long been accustomed to it. His muddle eyes looked at the seat within the East Branch and stopped at a boy with a thin body. He said: “It’s a pity. Our Northern Spiritual Realm haven’t had a person who qualified for the Spiritual Road for over ten years...This Mu Chen obtained the qualifications, yet he was kicked out halfway. He never

experienced the final stage of the Spiritual Road, so his one year trial within the Spiritual Road was considered in vain. This even wasted one year's time of training for him.

Teacher Mo nodded regretfully. They weren't able to cultivate Spiritual Energy within the Spiritual Road. However, they were able to obtain Spiritual Energy Empowerment if they successfully passed through the final stage of the trial. If they were extremely talented individuals, it wasn't impossible for them to advance to the Spiritual Rotation Stage or even the Spirit Stage within one night. Originally, Mu Chen would have become the strongest individual within the younger generation in Northern Spiritual Realm if he passed through the trial. The space for the Five Great Academies would also be properly delivered to his hand and nobody would be able to compete against him for the qualifications.

At that time, even a person like Liu Mubai could only be below him.

However, who would have expected this unforeseeable event of being kicked out halfway. Mu Chen failed to obtain the most valuable Spiritual Energy Empowerment from the Spiritual Road and was kicked out halfway. Because of this, he had wasted an entire year of time to cultivate Spiritual Energy.

"Principal Xiao, what on earth did Mu Chen do in the Spiritual Road? Why would he be kicked out halfway through? I know that boy's talents, his disposition is also excellent. He would never have been kicked out due to poor results." Teacher Mo frowned, he could not help but ask. He only knew that Mu Chen caused some sort of commotion within the Spiritual Road, but he was not aware of the details.

When he heard this question, the stern middle-aged man also looked at the Principal of the Northern Spiritual Academy. It was obvious that he was also curious about it.

On the other hand, Principal Xiao gently stroked his beard and gave a bitter smile when he heard this question. He said: "I'm not too sure about it either, but I heard that the commotion that he caused in the Spiritual Road was not small...It even startled the higher ups of the Five Great

Academy."

Teacher Mo and the stern middle aged man were both stunned. Their eyes had suspicion within them. They never imagined that Mu Chen caused an event that would startle the entire world.

"Well, let's not talk about this now. The bell has rung already, it is time to announce that the Academy Competition has started." It was obvious that Principal Xiao did not want to say any more about it and immediately waved his hand as he spoke.

Teacher Mo nodded after he heard him speak. He stood up and glanced at the entire place. A deep, forceful voice echoed within every student's ears.

"It is time now, the Academy Competition has started. Remember, you are not allowed to kill during the duel between the two branches!"

"You should all know the rules already. The ones that step onto the ring have an opportunity to challenge their opponents. However, you only have one chance, so you should know your limits and pick a suitable opponent."

"Yes!"

Within the venue, the dense pack of human respectfully replied.

"Since it's like this..." Teacher Mo nodded and waved his hand: "Let it begin."

Right after his hand was lowered, another loud bell sound rang out. It almost spread through the entire Northern Spiritual Academy.

"Liu Xiong, hurry and come down here. I've disliked you for a long time!"

"Chen Tong, you should also come out as well. This time, I'll pay you back from last time!"

Mu Chen stared at the messy scene within the venue. He could not help but smile. However, the majority of these duels were rather ordinary, so he did not care too much about it. He would only occasionally look in the direction of the West Branch's Liu Yang. Liu Yang, too, was staring coldly at him.

By now, everybody in the Northern Spiritual Academy knew that Liu Yang had mentioned about selecting Mu Chen as his opponent during the Academy Competition. Thus, nobody in the West Branch dared to challenge him first. Of course with Mu Chen's strength, the West Branch students also knew that the only one who was qualified to be his opponent was Liu Yang.

They were quite looking forward to the duel between the two most excellent students from the East and West Branch Earth Class.

Mu Chen did not care about the cold stare that Liu Yang gave towards him. He would occasionally talk softly with Tang Qian'Er who was beside him. However, this action only caused Liu Yang to grit his teeth even more.

The duels within the stadium were quite lively. However, the ones that attracted the most interest were the students ranked rather high up within the Earth Class. Because only those duels would be able to change the rankings.

"That's our East Branch's Tan Qingshan. Sure enough, he took action..."

Su Ling, who was beside him, suddenly let out an excited shout. Mu Chen's gaze also followed it over and looked. Not far away from them, a boy in black clothes stood up and walked towards a ring.

The boy looked quite skinny and his face looked slightly pale. However, he pursed his lips tightly to show his determination. He did not speak or smile. It was as if he didn't hear the sounds from his surroundings.

"Tan Qingshan..."

Mu Chen stared at the boy in black clothes and was slightly startled. He was somewhat familiar with him. Tang Qingshan was considered to be the strongest person within the East Branch Earth Class before he came to the Northern Spiritual Academy. Even now, he would be able to reach the top five among the Earth Class students.

Tan Qingshan also noticed Mu Chen's gaze. His body paused for a moment and he raised his head to glance at him. A faint smile appeared

on his silent and unsmiling face.

"Good luck."

Mu Chen gave a smile to him. Although he was not particular close to him, they were still East Branch students. And so, he did not dislike Tan Qingshan.

Tan Qingshan nodded. Then, he jumped onto a ring. Suddenly, many eyes shot straight towards him. Within the East Branch, Tan Qingshan had quite a bit of reputation.

"I wonder who he is going to challenge..."

A few people whispered and their eyes were filled with curiosity. There probably aren't many individuals within the West Branch that Tan Qingshan would regard as an opponent, right?

"Liu Yang."

Under the many gazes, Tan Qingshan's gaze stared directly at a figure in front of the West Branch. His quiet voice caused a large uproar.

"He actually wants to challenge Liu Yang?"

Many students looked at each other. Although Tan Qingshan was considered to be someone ranked high up within the Earth Class, but there was still a large gap between him and Liu Yang. Nobody even imagined that he would take the initiative to challenge him.

Within the West Branch's seats, Liu Yang was also startled for a moment. His eyes soon became depressed. Currently, Mu Chen hasn't been challenged by anyone, yet he was already challenged. Wouldn't that make others feel that Liu Yang's intimidation was weaker than Mu Chen?

"Conceited guy."

Liu Yang stood up. That gloomy atmosphere caused the West Branch students nearby to shudder. It was obvious that Liu Yang was quite terrifying at this moment.

Liu Yang jumped straight into the ring. He stared at Tan Qingshan , then he looked at Mu Chen. He said with an expressionless appearance: "Did

you find someone to test me out first?

When his voice dropped, he did not wait for Mu Chen's response and stared down at Tan Qingshan. The smile he gave was a bit ghastly: "Ignorant trash, do you still think that you're the number one person within the East Branch Earth Class?"

Tan Qingshan stared at Liu Yang. His eyes became a lot more serious. He was once the strongest student within the East Branch Earth Class. Although that title was transferred to Mu Chen later, his prideful self continued to work hard and train. The relationship he shared with Mu Chen was more like a competitive relationship. After all, they were both East Branch students, so he would not cause trouble for Mu Chen. However, if he was able to defeat Liu Yang here, he should be able to retrieve back his first place.

Tan Qingshan grasped his palms tightly. A deep yellow Spiritual Energy surged throughout his body and finally wrapped around his arms. A fierce, imposing manner slowly emitted out from his body.

"This Spiritual Energy..."

Su Ling and the others were surprised as they stared at the Spiritual Energy above Tan Qingshan's arms.

"He also advanced to the Spiritual Movement Stage!"

Chapter 12: Action

"Spiritual Movement Stage?"

Many individuals issued a cry in surprise as they looked at the ring. Following that, astonished gazes began to gather at Tan Qingshan. No wonder he dared to challenge Liu Yang, so he, too, had advanced into the Spiritual Movement Stage.

"Amazing..." Su Ling also had a shocked expression. He stared enviously at Tan Qingshan's back. Currently within the Earth Class, there were only three individuals that advanced to the Spiritual Movement Stage: Mu Chen, Liu Yang and Mu Yuan. And now, Tan Qingshan was the fourth.

Mu Chen also nodded his head slightly. It was evident that Tan Qingshan was quite talented as he was able to become the number one individual within the East Branch Earth Class before. Most importantly, his family environment wasn't that good. All his achievements was something that he obtained through desperate training. Thus, Mu Chen actually had a favorable expression towards him. A person, who earned his own right to be arrogant, was someone worthy of respect.

"Oh, so this is why you have such courage. It turned out you also advanced to the Spiritual Movement Stage." Liu Yang was slightly stunned by Tan Qingshan's aura for a moment, he soon let out a sneer.

Tan Qingshan remained silent. His gaze towards Liu Yang gradually became sharp and the deep yellow Spiritual Energy on his arm exuded a heavy fluctuation as it rise.

Liu Yang stared coldly at Tan Qingshan, he extended a hand and gently curved it: "Let's do this. Don't say that I didn't give you the chance."

"How arrogant!"

Seeing Liu Yang act like this, Su Ling and the others cursed at him in anger.

Just when Su Ling cursed at him, Tan Qingshan's legs violent stomped onto the ground. His figurerushed out like a cheetah and the deep yellow

flow mixed with a heavy force headed straight towards Liu Yang's chest.

Liu Yang stared at the approaching Tan Qingshan and issued out a sigh. The fiery red Spiritual Energy exploded out from his arms. He did not try to avoid and instead, his fingers clenched into a fist as it bombarded heavily against Tan Qingshan's palms.

A deep voice sounded out and blast enveloped the two individuals. Dust immediately stirred above the ground and the two bodies trembled. However, Liu Yang did not move at all while Tan Qingshan took a step back.

A serious expression helped stabilize Tan Qingshan's body. The deep yellow Spiritual Energy on his arms became denser and his entire arm showed a deep yellow color as if it was a rock.

"Mountain Fist!"

Tan Qingshan rushed out again. The speed that the arms lashed out was slightly slower, but the heavy force was like a rockslide. This made many people's faces stiffened with dismay.

BOOM!

Tan Qingshan's arms were like a rock. It let out a fast and sharp blast and waves of offensive were hurled towards Liu Yang. Yet Liu Yang's face remained cold. The fiery red Spiritual Energy seemed to wrap around his arms like a fire and he forcibly blocked all of Tan Qingshan's attacks.

The blast formed by the two Spiritual Energies as they collide cleared the entire ring. The people who were nearby even felt pain on their face.

"Tan Qingshan is pretty good. He is able to fight neck to neck against Liu Yang!" Su Ling and the others let out a cry of joy as they watched the fierce battle.

"However, Tan Qingshan had only reached the Spiritual Movement Stage, it would not be easy for him to defeat Liu Yang." Tang Qian'Er gently shook her head. Although she disliked Liu Yang, she still had to admit that he had quite the skill.

“What Tan Qingshan trained in should be the Mountain Art. It is a Common Tier High Rank Spiritual Art from the Northern Spiritual Academy. However, Liu Yang might have trained in the Spiritual Tier Low Rank Spiritual Art Solarflame...” Mu Chen said as he stared at the ring.

Su Ling suddenly let out a sigh of regret when he heard those words. Apparently, he hoped that Tan QIngshan would be able to win. If that were to have happened, then Liu Yang probably wouldn’t dare to act so arrogant from now on, right?

As they held a conversation with each other, the battle within the ring also became more intense. Tan Qingshan’s face seemed to have turned dark red. It was obvious that he had pushed his strength to the limits. The attacks were also become more and more wild.

A rock-like punch suddenly soared and smashed heavily towards Liu Yang’s belly. However, just when the fist was about to come into contact with Liu Yang’s body, Liu Yang moved backwards using a strange step. He avoided the sharp blow that Tan Qingshan had been plotting for a long time.

When his fist was avoided, Tan Qingshan felt that he was careless. He, then, noticed that the corner of Liu Yang’s lips went up and formed a cold smile.

“Solarflame Fist!”

Liu Yang’s fingers formed into a palm. He suddenly let out a shot. The fiery red Spiritual Energy exploded outwards like a flame and a powerful force and heat erupted out. It directly passed through Tan Qingshan’s defense and fiercely landed on his chest.

The flame-like Spiritual Energy exploded outwards when Liu Yang’s palms made contact with Tan Qingshan’s chest. That enormous energy directly blasted away Tan Qingshan. Under many watchful gazes, Tan Qingshan fell heavily on the ring and immediately spat out blood.

Seeing that the situation changed instantly, an uproar suddenly burst out from the surroundings.

Tan Qingshan wiped the blood from his mouth and gritted his teeth. Liu Yang's Spiritual Energy was blazing and domineering. It was many times stronger than the Spiritual Energy that he had cultivated.

Liu Yang stared coldly at the helpless Tan Qingshan. He did not have any intentions of stopping. He pushed off with the tip of his toe and he charged out like an eagle. A leg lashed out at Tan Qingshan.

Tan Qingshan weaved around awkwardly and narrowly avoided Liu Yang's attack. His face was a little bit pale. It was obvious that he did not expect Liu Yang to pursue him relentlessly after he gained the upper hand.

However, he also had a stubborn attitude. Since Liu Yang acted so overbearing, he refused to admit his defeat. He only stared fiercely at Liu Yang.

"So there really is a bit of pride left within you?

Seeing this, Liu Yang shook his head and sneered. Hostility appeared within his eyes and he moved and appeared to the right of Tan Qingshan. Mixed with a blazing Spiritual Energy, the shadow of his leg flashed and he kicked directly at Tan Qingshan's chest.

Tang Qinshan's body skimmed along the ground for about ten meters. Blood swelled up from his throat again, but he forcibly swallowed it back down.

"Motherf*cker, do you have any sense of shame? You hit him even after he lost!"

When they saw Liu Yang acting so oppressive, many East Branch students rallied their anger and shouted furiously as well.

"You bastard!" Su Ling also cursed angrily.

When Liu Yang heard the condemning shouts from the East Branch, his eyes darkened. Not only did he not stop, he took a big step towards Tan Qingshan and kicked with his leg again. He fired it towards Tan Qingshan as he retreated awkwardly.

A deep voice rang out. However, this time, Tan Qingshan did not move

backwards. This is because a slender figure suddenly appeared in front of him. Liu Yang's sharp leg strike was grasped tightly by that figure's hand.

"Mu Chen?"

Tan Qingshan saw the familiar figure and was startled.

"Are you alright?"

Mu Chen turned around and asked him.

Tan Qingshan shook his head and the eyes that stared at Liu Yang were still fierce like a wolf.

"You are already very strong for being able to fight with him when you had just advanced into the Spiritual Movement Stage. If you train for a while longer, it would not be difficult to catch up to him." Mu Chen said as he smiled.

He knew that Tan Qingshan may remain silent on the surface, but his personality was quite stubborn and prideful. This is why he did not tell him to surrender. If he blurted out those words, it would give a considerable blow to Tan Qingshan instead.

"Thank you."

Tan Qingshan's heart calmed down because he heard Mu Chen's words. He stared at the handsome face covered with a brilliant smile and whispered with gratitude: "I'll leave this guy to you. However, I will personally defeat him by myself in the future."

After he said up to this point, he paused for a moment. He stared at Mu Chen and said: "You are stronger than me, so...please help the East Branch win the Number One place back!" When he finished saying these words, he did not stay here longer. He turned around and jumped off the ring.

Mu Chen stared at Tan Qingshan as he jumped off the ring. Afterwards, he turned his head towards Liu Yang, who had a sullen expression, and said: "Next up, I will be your opponent."

Liu Yang stared at Mu Chen. His mouth cracked open and revealed a sinister smile. Within his eyes, it was filled with ruthlessness and cruelty.

“I will entertain you well!”

On the ring, the atmosphere instantly became tense as the two of them confronted each other. Many students directed their gaze over to this side as well. This, right now, is the match between the strongest individuals within the Northern Spiritual Academy Earth Class.

Chapter 13: Fighting Against Liu Yang

Around the ring, countless eyes gathered on the two juvenile figures on the ring. Their eyes were filled with expectation. So this is the strongest two individuals within the Northern Spiritual Academy Earth Class.

“That Mu Chen is finally willing to go onto the ring. I am quite curious if he would be a worthy opponent for Liu Yang.”

At the corner of the West Branch seats, a few boys from the West Branch Heaven Class stared at the two figures on the ring. They could not help but laugh. In fact, they were quite curious about Mu Chen. After all, he was the only one who qualified for the Spiritual Road within the Northern Spiritual Realm.

If it wasn’t for the fact that he was somehow kicked out of the Spiritual Road, Mu Chen would probably be at a level, where they would not be able to reach, right now. Perhaps even a genius like Liu Mubai would be inferior to him.

After they thought about this point, they snucka glance at Liu Mubai, who was in front of them. However, they did not dare to say these words out loud.

Hearing those words, the handsome youth let out a faint smile. Within his eyes that stared at the thin boy, a cold radiancewas hidden deep inside.

“The Spiritual Road is completely based on luck, so there are times that it would make a mistake. It could be possible that the place should have belonged to Brother Liu instead. In the end, a mistake was made and the place was given to Mu Chen. Otherwise, why would that person be kicked out?” A person, who was quite compatible with Liu Mubai, curled his lips and sneered.

The nearby West Branch Heaven Class students nodded their heads as they caught word of this. Although they did not agree within their hearts, it was evident that it was irrational to offend Liu Mubai, who was at the summit of the Northern Spiritual Academy, for Mu Chen, who was kicked out of the Spiritual Road halfway through.

“Hong Ling, who do you think have a higher chance of victory?” Liu Mubai smiled and asked the charming girl with a red dress beside him.

The girl called Hong Ling stared at the ring. Her pretty eyes remained for a moment at Mu Chen’s body. At this moment, the boy has straightened his body like a spear and the previously seen laziness seemed to have disappeared a little. It was replaced by a gradually exposing sharp edge.

The little boy back then had definitely changed a lot.

“They are both at the Spiritual Movement Stage Initial Phase. Liu Yang trained in the Spiritual Tier Low Rank Solarflame that belongs to the Liu Territory. However, Mu Chen’s father is also a Territory Lord. The Spiritual Art that he gave him must not be something ordinary. In this case, they are equal in this category...”

Hong Ling’s eyes wavered, her somewhat lazy expression was even more charming: “However, Liu Yang possesses the Human Level Spiritual Pulse. If he were to activate it, he would have the strength comparable to a Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase. Mu Chen would be in a disadvantaged position due to it.”

Liu Mubai smiled when he heard those words. He stared at Mu Chen, who was inside the ring, and said: “Liu Yang’s abilities aren’t bad. It wouldn’t be injustice if Mu Chen loses to him. Actually, I was curious why he was able to obtain the Spiritual Road’s qualifications.”

Hong Ling glanced at him for a moment. It seems that Liu Mubai harbored ill-feelings to Mu Chen for obtaining the Spiritual Road’s qualifications. He had always been proud of himself and believed that he was the most outstanding person among the young generation within the Northern Spiritual Realm. The Spiritual Road’s qualifications should have landed on him instead. But the final results was somewhat beyond everyone’s expectations.

“If he cannot even defeat Liu Yang here, then the selection of the Spiritual Road will have truly disappointed me.”

Liu Mubai gently said as he gripped his hands tightly. A deep hand imprint was actually kneaded onto the railing made by fine iron and a

chill flowed deep within his eyes.

He could not tolerate a useless person for stealing something that originally belonged to him.

“Brother Mu, good luck!”

“Brother Mu, take back the Earth Class Number One for the East Branch!”

The surrounding East Branch students all had an excited expression as they stared at the two individuals facing off. For the past two years, the East Branch has always been suppressed by the West Branch. It did not matter whether it was the Heaven Class or Earth Class, they were pressured by the West Branch and could not lift their heads up. And right now, a person finally appeared within the East Branch that could fight against the West Branch.

“A group of whimsical fellows.”

When Liu Yang heard these voices, a hint of hostility appeared on his smile. He stared and Mu Chen and said in a mocking voice: “I really want to know what splendid expressions they would have when you lose.”

Facing his taunt, Mu Chen did not have the slightest anger within the face. He only extended his hand out and said as he gave off a shallow smile: “You probably don’t have that ability.”

“You should know your limits!”

Anger flashed through Liu Yang’s eyes. He grasped his hands tightly and the flame-like, fiery red Spiritual Energy wrapped around his arms. In the next moment, he took a step forward and a subtle sound rang out from below his feet. His body charged out like a cheetah.

Wrapped in fiery red Spiritual, his fist instantly approached Mu Chen. The Spiritual Energy oppressed the air and let out a strange crunching sound.

Mu Chen’s body moved towards the side. The moment the wind from Liu Yang’s punch passed through his body, his right hand sprang up. A

dark black Spiritual Energy surrounded his fingertips and like a sharp knife, it chopped Liu Yang's wrist mercilessly.

Mu Chen did not hold back, but Liu Yang definitely had some ability as he was able to become the West Branch Earth Class Number One. He immediately changed his fist into a palm and slashed heavily at Mu Chen using a backhand hand blade.

A deep sound rang out. The two of them took half a step back when the two Spiritual Energies collided.

"You actually want to compete with me in terms of density of Spiritual Energy?!"

Liu Yang let out a cold laugh and stomped with his feet. A fiery red Spiritual Energy actually wrapped around his legs as well. The strength of this Spiritual Energy was many times more powerful compared to Tan Qingshan earlier.

"Swish!"

Spiritual Energy was infused into Liu Yang's legs and his speed instantly increased. His figure shifted and others were able to see his body vaguely. By relying on this speed, he was able to let out an extremely ferocious offensive in an instant.

Bang, Bang, Bang!

Liu Yang's blurry figure seemed to surround Mu Chen like a whirlwind of fire. Fist, Leg, Elbow. A mixture of brutal attacks, coupled with a savage Spiritual Energy overwhelmingly enveloped Mu Chen.

Outside of the ring, many students made a commotion as they saw Liu Yang instantly let out fierce attacks. Even Tan Qingshan, who was defeated earlier by Liu Yang, had a serious expression. This density of Liu Yang's Spiritual Energy was probably about to reach Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase. Along with the fact that the Spiritual Art that he trained was not a Common Tier, his combat ability was definitely shocking.

The excitement on Su Ling and the others' face faded a lot and a touch

of concerned appeared within their eyes. They only recovered from their surprise now. That Liu Yang is truly a powerful individual.

"Don't worry. Mu Chen won't lose that easily."

Tang Qian'Er's beautiful eyes stared at the ring. After a while, she let out a smile. She had the strength of a Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase, so naturally, she would be able to see Liu Yang's speed clearly. Although Liu Yang's attacks were like a tempest, but a blue rock was standing firmly within that tempest.

Many eyes were firmly fixed onto the figure within the whirlwind of fire. The figure either avoided or countered the attacks and actually managed to counter all the violent attacks that Liu Yang sent out. That appearance of his seemed to have seen through every single hidden offensive of Liu Yang.

"As expected from a person that experienced the Spiritual Road's trial..." Within the main seat, Principal Xiao stared at this scene and a hint of admiration passed through his eyes.

"Mu Chen has an accurate vision and remained calm as he fought against his opponent. This disposition will not be inferior to veterans, who have fought hundreds of battles." Teacher Mo also nodded. His words were filled with praise. If his Spiritual Energy was weak, he would always be able to cultivate it. However, that strong heart and mind isn't something that could be easily honed.

"His vision is indeed pretty good. He knows the weakness of Liu Yang's offensive. It could be considered as breaking through strength using techniques. However, there is also a phrase known as "A Power Breakthrough Ten Users" 1. By avoiding like this, it is obvious that his Spiritual Energy isn't as strong as Liu Yang. As long as Liu Yang gathers his energy for one attack, it would be difficult for Mu Chen to deal with it." The thin middle-aged Teacher Xi said nearby. As an instructor, they weren't just powerful, they also had accurate visions.

Principal Xiao and Teacher Mo also nodded when they heard these words. The situation was indeed like this, but...is Mu Chen currently just

taking evasive action?

Within the flame whirlwind, a cry suddenly rang out. They could only see Mu Chen suddenly taking action. His two fingers were sharp like an unparalleled dagger and surrounding it was a dark black Spiritual Energy. Like a lightning bolt, it penetrated the whirlwind and stabbed onto the swift figure.

A cry sounded out. As the whirlwind suddenly became still, a figure staggered back a dozen steps. The clothes located at his shoulder was already destroyed, it was evident that this was caused by Mu Chen's finger.

The large commotion suddenly intensified around the ring. Both the East Branch and West Branch students had an astonished expression. It was clear that nobody expected Liu, who was still letting out a fierce offensive earlier, would be repulsed by Mu Chen.

"You!"

Liu Yang's face suddenly became depressed as if tears were about to come out. He stared at Mu Chen and took a deep breath. On his right palm, a fiery red Spiritual Energy surged out.

The fiery red Spiritual Energy rose like a flame as it gathered on Liu Yang's palm. The Spiritual Energy quickly shrank and a palm-sized sun slowly appeared.

A violent fluctuation gradually emitted out.

The commotion outside of the ring quickly faded away. Many students watched in shock at this scene. It was obvious that Liu Yang has pushed the Spiritual Energy within his body to its very limits.

Mu Chen looked at Liu Yang, who had gone all out. He curled his lips and his eyes instantly turned cold.

His two palms swirled and he began to circulate the Great Pagoda Art. Within the aurasea in his body, the dark black Spiritual Energy quickly trembled and the levels of amplification ripped as it came out.

"First Level...Fifth Level...Tenth Level...Thirteenth Level...

The dark Spiritual Energy wrapped around Mu Chen's palms. A domineering atmosphere exploded outwards. There were faint signs that it had already surpassed Liu Yang's violent Spiritual Energy fluctuations.

When the Spiritual Energy amplification has reached the thirteenth level, Mu Chen did not stop. As he gradually got used to the Great Pagoda Art, the amplification limit of the Great Pagoda Art wasn't just this much!

Mu Chen narrowed his eyes. A razor sharp edge appeared within them.

Within the aurasea, a slight buzzing sound came out. Mu Chen's body violently shook.

The Eighteenth Level!

The dark Spiritual Energy violently stormed out of Mu Chen's body. The pressure from this powerful Spiritual Energy instantly suppressed Liu Yang's Spiritual Energy.

"What a powerful Spiritual Energy!"

Principal Xiao, Teacher Mo and Teacher Xi all had a surprised expression. This degree of Spiritual Energy is almost equal to the Spiritual Energy of a Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase. And they could feel that the dark Spiritual Energy pouring out of Mu Chen's body contained an overbearing intention. It was clear that this wasn't something that an ordinary Spiritual Art would possess.

"Mu Chen, you're seeking your death!"

When his Spiritual Energy was actually suppressed, Liu Yang's face also showed some surprise. Then, he let out a angry roar and took a step forward. Afterwards, many of the audiences saw that fiery red lights actually lit up on his body. These lights spread throughout his entire body. They could vaguely see a strange vital energy channel rushing out like a snake.

"Spiritual Pulse?!"

Voices broke out around the ring again. They did not imagine that Liu Yang would actually be forced to activate his Spiritual Pulse. But with this,

the situation should be reversed by him again!

Chapter 14: Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase

Following the appearance of the fiery red lights, the fiery red Spiritual Energy violently expanded on top of Liu Yang's palms and the originally palm-sized sun doubled in size. At the same time, the Spiritual Energy surrounding the world seemed to attracted to these lights on Liu Yang's body. It further increased his momentum.

Surrounding the ring, many students' expression became serious as they watched this scene. It was obvious that Liu Yang has exhausted all his strength right now. This offensive would definitely be as powerful as a wild lightning.

He plans on defeating Mu Chen with this one move.

As Su Ling and the others stared at the ring, their expression was filled with nervousness. Beside them, Tang Qian'Er's beautiful eyes also became more solemn. Liu Yang's strength was not weak even within the Heaven Class.

"I would like to see how you counter this!"

Liu Yang's face became dark as he directed a smile towards Mu Chen. His body stormed out and the sun-like, fiery red Spiritual Energy was so violent that it was glaring.

Liu Yang's speed was extremely fast. He seemed to have instantly appeared in front of Mu Chen and fired off a palm. The sun-like Spiritual Energy on his palm was relentlessly smashed towards Mu Chen.

"Solarflame Palm!"

The violent Spiritual Energy brought over a gust of wind. It made Mu Chen's clothes flutter as his black hair constantly danced in the sky. Yet, there were no signs of anxiety within the black eyes that stared at Liu Yang.

"Despite all this, you're still trying to pretend at this moment! Go to

hell!”

Under Mu Chen’s calm gaze, Liu Yang’s heart trembled. The fury within him grew even further. I wonder if you would remain this calm after I step on you in front of everybody here?!

“You still want to step on me?”

Mu Chen looked at the quickly approaching Liu Yang. He could see the latter’s eyes clearly and his lips slowly erected an arc.

It was cold like a blade.

“Unfortunatelyfor you, you don’t have the qualifications to do so...”

Mu Chen lifted his head boldly. The dark Spiritual Energy furiously rushed out from his body as he clenched his hands tightly together. The domineering black lights traveled back and forth at his fingers.

A powerful fluctuation erupted out.

“This Spiritual Energy fluctuation...” At the main seats, Principal Xiao and the two other instructors revealed a surprised expression.

“Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase?”

A fierce uproar broke out from the surroundings. This Spiritual Energy fluctuation revealed that it had truly entered into the level of the Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase. Mu Chen had actually broken through and advanced to the Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase.

“That boy...really has quite the skill.”

At the West Branch seats, the students from the West Branch Heaven Class also had a grave complexion. With the strength of a Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase, hewould be rather high up among the Northern Spiritual Academy Heaven Class. They lamented within their hearts as they never imagined that an Earth Class student would be able to achieve it. To be able to obtain the Spiritual Road’s qualification, Mu Chen really had some ability.

Liu Mubai’s handsome face did not show much movement. His eyes only stared at the ring calmly and others could not tell whether he is happy or

angry.

The dark black Spiritual Energy seemed to flow out of Mu Chen's body like a stream. It wrapped around his right arm completely. He extended his ape-sized arm and a powerful fluctuation was formed by this fist as it blasted out!

Collapsing Fist.

Mu Chen's arm was like a spear that was stretched out to its extreme. It exploded out the most powerful energy it could muster at this short distance. Due to this, the air seemed to be collapsing due to this fist.

Although it was only just a Common Tier Low Rank Attack Spiritual Art, it was like a landslide under Mu Chen's use as it was mixed with the flowing Spiritual Energy. Under Liu Yang's slightly changing gaze, it collided fiercely against the violent palm winds.

A deep sound suddenly exploded out from the ring. The black and red lights collided viciously with each other and the air waves produced by it seemed to make the air tremble.

All the eyes were fixed to the point where the Spiritual Energy intersected. Over there, the black and red lights flashed rapidly. Then soon after this, everybody witnessed two figures retreating a few steps after they made contact with each other.

The two figures confronted each other on the ring. One had a dark expression while the other had a calm expression.

They were evenly matched?

Everybody looked at each other. The earlier collision was so powerful, yet it did not decide the victor?

While everybody was stunned about this, Liu Yang's dark face suddenly became pale. His body curved and fresh blood sprayed out onto the ring.

As the fresh blood was expelled out, Liu Yang's imposing manner seemed to have instantly become dispirited. The pale white face made everybody in the surroundings cry out.

Liu Yang lost!

After they stared at the pale Liu Yang and the calm Mu Chen, everybody was aware of the results of this match!

“Brother Mu won!”

“Good going, Brother Mu!”

“Haha, we, the East Branch, has finally retrieved back the title of Earth Class Number One!”

At the East Branch’s side, Su Ling and the others stared at this scene. Then, a surprised and excited expression emerged on their faces. Cheers resounded out from the sky and instantly suppressed the silent West Branch.

Even Liu Yang has lost. This time, the West Branch, had really lost to the East Branch.

Mu Yuan, Xue Dong and the others from the West Branch Earth Class gritted their teeth as they were not able to accept it. However, they had to admit that Mu Chen was definitely powerful. They originally thought that he was only at the Spiritual Movement Stage Initial Phase, how would have imagined that...this guy would have advanced to the Middle Phase.

After hearing the deafening cheers from the East Branch, Mu Chen also smiled and his tense body gradually relaxed. He stared at the extremely sullen Liu Yang and asked: “There’s no need to fight anymore, right?”

Liu Yang slowly raised his head and his darken eyes focused onto Mu Chen. These cheers were like knives that stabbed into his heart and it trampled on his pride. His mouth twitched as savageness began to accumulate within his eyes.

Mu Chen stared at Liu Yang’s expression and frowned. Through the immensely vicious trial within the Spiritual Road, he was able to detect a hint of danger.

“I’ll kill you!”

A hideous expression suddenly appeared on Liu Yang’s face. He gripped

his hand and a red light seemed to appear within it. An extremely shocking Spiritual Energy fluctuation began to erupt out violently.

At the main seats, the expression on Principal Xiao, Teacher Mo and Teacher Xi changed. Then, Teacher Mo shouted out: “Liu Yang, what are you planning to do?!”

However, the instant that Teacher Mo shouted out, Mu Chen had dashed over with a cold expression. He charged directly in front of Liu Yang and a powerful wind appeared from his two fingers, which was wrapped with a dark black Spiritual Energy. He directly stabbed towards Liu Yang’s throat.

“You!”

Liu Yang never thought that Mu Chen’s reaction would be this fast. It seemed that Mu Chen did not show any signs of defending against him. Within Mu Chen’s cold eyes, there was actually a cold intent to kill.

This killing intent made Liu Yang understood immediately. If the thing within his hand were to activate and kill Mu Chen, Mu Chen would also take away his life in the moment before he died.

He’s using his life to trade for another.

A surge of panic appeared within Liu Yang’s eyes. Apparently, he did not have the courage to truly tradelife with Mu Chen. Thus, he could only grit his teeth and protect his throat using his palms.

Mu Chen’s fingers were like a sharp dagger. It stabbed directly at Liu Yang’s palms and blood splattered out. As Liu Yang screamed, the red light held within his hand also fell out.

Mu Chen’s body jumped and caught the red light into his hand.

“Return it to me!”

When Liu Yang noticed Mu Chen seizing the red light, his face suddenly became pale.

Mu Chen ignored his outburst and retreated. Suddenly, the sound of the wind breaking could be heard and a vigorous Spiritual Energy fluctuation shot violently towards him like an arrow.

The sudden attack made Mu Chen frown. His toes touched the ground and he nimbly retreated back a dozen steps to avoid the attack. Then he asked at the slender figure appearing from outside the ring with a cold expression: “What are you doing?”

That handsome and slender figure landed beside Liu Yang. It was Liu Mubai. At this moment, he held out his hand and stared expressionlessly at Mu Chen: “Hand over that item.”

Mu Chen let out a cold laugh. He lowered his head to look at the red light within his hand. But when he saw the item within the red light, his mouth gently lifted up.

“As expected from the Little Young Master of the Liu Territory, you are able to bring out even this item...”

Chapter 15: Spirit Destruction Bead

The change in the ring occurred in a split second. When many people recovered, they noticed that Liu Mubai had already appeared in the ring. Their facesinstantly became surprised. What is this situation?

Mu Chen did not care about the expressionless Liu Mubai. He only lowered his head to stare at his hand. The red light faded away and it revealed a fiery red bead at the size of a longan. The surface of the bead was filled with an obscure pattern. Within it, a violent Spiritual Energy seemed to flow like a tidal stream.

“Spirit Destruction Bead...”

Mu Chen’s slender fingerspressedagainst the smooth red marble. He let out a faint smile, only that the smile was a little bit cold. The Spirit Destruction Bead was not something that is used for self-cultivation. It was an extremely destructive Spiritual Artifact. When apowerhouse reached a certain degree of strength, they would be able to compress that immense Spiritual Energy within this tiny bead. Then, the user would only need to activate it and an extremely powerful Spiritual Energy attack would burst out.

Creating the Spirit Destruction Bead requires a special metal called Spirit Gold. This metal is extremely expensive. Coupled with the fact that creating the Spirit Destruction Bead requires precise control and it has a high rate of failure, the Spirit Destruction Bead was rather rare. Looking at the one within Mu Chen’s hand, the extent of the Spiritual Energy being condensed was strong even to cause a grave injury to a person at the Spiritual Rotation Stage.

This Liu Yang wanted to kill him.

“Return it back to me!”

Liu Yang became clear-headed at this moment and his face became even paler. He knew that his behavior broke the rules and if he was punished, it would not be light. Therefore, he immediately glared fiercely at Mu Chen and extended his hand.

“Big Brother, hurry and snatch that item back, don’t let him have the evidence!

When he heard Liu Yang’s words, Liu Mubai’s eyes flashed. After all, their status wasn’t low. If there wasn’t any evidence within Mu Chen’s hand, they would be able to get through it.

“If you dare move recklessly, this Spirit Destruction Bead might explode on your body.” Before Liu Mubai was able to take any action, Mu Chen smiled and said with the Spirit Destruction Bead tucked between his fingers.

“This time, Liu Yang was indeed a bit too reckless. Return the Spirit Destruction Bead back to him. You should do others a favor sometimes and it would benefit both of you, wouldn’t you say?” Liu Mubai’s eyes became serious and he stared at Mu Chen as he slowly spoke.

Mu Chen declined to commit on it and let out a smile.

“What is this all about?” At this moment, Teacher Mo also stepped onto the stage. He stared at the three people and shouted out.

When Liu Yang noticed Teacher Mo appearing over here, his face instantly became white. He stared fiercely at Mu Chen and attempted to threaten him to keep his mouth shut.

However, Mu Chen completely ignored his threat. He lifted up the Spirit Destruction Bead towards Teacher Mo.

Teacher Mo stared at the Spirit Destruction Bead within Mu Chen’s hand. His face instantly turned grim and he turned his sight towards Liu Yang. Anger could be heard within his voice as he shouted: “You actually dared to use the Spirit Destruction Bead during the match?”

“Spirit Destruction Bead?”

Many students were paying attention to this side. When they heard the words, Spirit Destruction Bead, they instantly made a big commotion.

“He really is shameless. He actually brought out the Spirit Destruction Bead!”

“As expected from the young master from the largest territory in Northern Spiritual Realm, how rich, ohoho.”

Sounds of fury and sneers came from the surrounding audience. Liu Yang’s face also became unusually hideous. This time, he really shamed his own family as well.

At this moment, Principal Xiao and the West Branch’s Teacher Xi also rushed over here. Teacher Mo went over to explain the situation a bit and everybody noticed Principal Xiao’s expression becoming more disgusted.

“Principal, Liu Yang only did this on an impulse. However, he did not harm anyone. This matter should be excusable.” Liu Mubai hurried and said when he noticed this.

“Senior Liu, are you trying to say that it should be considered inexcusable only after I was seriously wounded by his Spirit Destruction Bead?” Mu Chen let out a slight smile and said.

Liu Mubai’s eyes glanced coldly at Mu Chen and he said: “What do you want then?”

“It is not what I want, but the Northern Spiritual Academy has rules within it. We should deal with this matter in accordance to the rules.” Mu Chen said with a casual smile.

Liu Mubai’s eyes flashed. But just when he was about to speak, he was interrupted by Principal Xiao. Principal Xiao looked at Teacher Mo and Teacher Xi and asked: “How should we deal with this situation?”

“Based on the rules, Liu Yang would be disqualified from ascending to the Heaven Class this time.” Teacher Mo thought for a while and said.

Liu Yang’s face instantly changed. If he could not ascend to the Heaven Class, he would not be able to compete for a place within the Five Great Academies. This would be a fatal blow to him.

“Isn’t this a bit too serious? There aren’t many individuals within our Northern Spiritual Academy that has the qualifications to compete for the Five Great Academies spots...” Teacher Xi pondered for a moment. Then he lowered his voice and said: “And if this were to happen, Liu Yang’s

father probably would not let it go. Although we, the Northern Spiritual Academy may not fear this, but it would still be troubling if we form a bad relationship with the number one Territory within the Northern Spiritual Realm."

"However, Mu Chen's father is also the Mu Territory's Lord. If we let this go, the Mu Territory might be quite angry with us." Teacher Mo also said out loud.

Principal Xiao shook his head helplessly. If they were just ordinary students, then it would not be so troubling. However, both of them are the sons of Territory Lords within the Northern Spiritual Realm. It would not be good for them to favor one over the other.

"Ohoho, Mu Chen."

Principal Xiao suddenly looked at Mu Chen, who was beside them. He smiled and said: "About this matter right now, would you say..."

Mu Chen saw Principal Xiao's smile and he knew what the latter was trying to say. He immediately smiled and said: "Principal, Liu Yang was indeed quite rash this time. However, I am willing to forgive since I wasn't hurt..."

After they heard Mu Chen's words, not only was Principal Xiao stunned, even Liu Yang was shocked. It was evident that he did not expect Mu Chen would let him go like this. However, when he saw Mu Chen's smile, his heart suddenly calmed down. This boy may look mild normally, but his methods were extremely ruthless. He still remembered about the ruthlessness he showed when Mu Chen snatched away his Spirit Destruction Bead through the act of trading lives.

"However, he still violated the rules. How about this, I'll treat this Spirit Destruction Bead as an apology gift and will not return it to him. Then, I will not make a fuss about this issue." Mu Chen smiled as he said.

He knew that this matter was troubling to Principal Xiao and the others. However, he also knew that it wouldn't have much effect if he were to keep at it. If that's the case, he might as well take advantage of this and sell a favor to Principal Xiao at the same time.

"You!"

When Liu Yang heard that Mu Chen actually wanted to take his Spirit Destruction Bead, his eyes popped out in anger. The Spirit Destruction Bead was made personally by his father and was something left to him in order to protect his life when necessary. It was an extremely valuable item.

"You're not willing? Then let's just punish you according to the rules." Mu Chen glanced at Liu Yang and said helplessly.

The corner of Liu Yang's eyes jumped. He could only hold it in. Although the Spirit Destruction Bead was valuable, it was nothing compared to a place within the Five Great Academies.

"Oh, since you've taken a fancy to this Spirit Destruction Bead, we will give it to you." It was apparent that Liu Mubai was more calculating than Liu Yang. He took a deep look at Mu Chen and said with a faint smile.

Mu Chen smiled as he glanced at him. Although Liu Mubai hid it very well, he could see a hint of resent within his eyes. This guy is definitely more troubling than Liu Yang.

"Since Mu Chen would not make a fuss about it, then this matter will be over now. However, if Liu Yang dares to do this again in the future, the Northern Spiritual Academy will not care who your father is and handle it according to the rules!" When Principal Xiao noticed that Mu Chen was willing to remain silent on this, his heart was slightly relieved. Since he did not have to be troubled about this matter, his favorability towards Mu Chen increased slightly. Then, he immediately said in a strict voice towards Liu Yang.

Liu Mubai's face changed from red and green alternately. He did not dare say anything more. Although the Northern Spiritual Academy maintains neutral within the Northern Spiritual Realm, they were not afraid of the Liu Territory.

"Thank you, Principal."

Liu Mubai smiled. Then, he extended a hand towards Mu Chen and said: "I have to thank you as well, Junior Mu Chen. That's right, you will be a

Heaven Class student soon. I am quite interested in you, so I hope that I would have an opportunity to have an exchange with you in the future."

His handsome face had a smile plastered on it. However, a few individuals were able to perceive a dark cold chill swirling in the depths of his eyes.

"Senior Liu, you're joking with me."

Mu Chen stared at Liu Mubai. A sunny smile emerged on his thin and handsome face as well. He extended his hand to shake with Liu Mubai. Then, he retracted it back. His eyes still showed calmness deep inside.

Liu Mubai was indeed outstanding and he also knew how to endure it silently. However, he was still inferior to the monsters within the Spiritual Road, who would smile harmonious for one moment and would not hesitate to kill in the next moment.

In the ring, the two of them shook hands. Although both of them had a smile, the ones that are sensitive were able to faintly feel a confrontation underneath this peacefulness.

"That Mu Chen...really is quite amazing. He actually did not retreat back in front of Brother Liu."

Not far away, the West Branch Heaven Class Seniors watched the scene. They could not help but mutter this. Even without mentioning about Mu Chen's strength, just by having the courage to stand against Liu Mubai was shocking enough.

"In the future, this person will rise up in our Northern Spiritual Academy Heaven Class. It will probably become livelier..."

Hong Ling rolled her black hair a bit. She stared at the boy standing in front of Liu Mubai in the ring. The boy's slender body, handsome face and disposition was completely different than the lazy boy in the past. This gap entranced her slightly.

Without her knowing, the person that she neglected had actually become this outstanding.

After the matter about Liu Yang had calmed down, Principal announced the results of this Academy Competition on the spot. The East Branch naturally was in the center of attention. Mu Chen, Liu Yang, Tan Qingshan and the others Earth Class members that had advanced into the Spiritual Movement Stage successfully ascended to the Heaven Class.

Mu Chen watched as the Academy Competition ended and he stretched his waist. He was getting closer to the Five Great Academies. The grudge that he had not settled in the Spiritual Road, he will resolve it during the Five Great Academies.

Mu Chen lifted his head and stared at the blue sky. He let out a chuckle.

Ji Xuan...This time, let us have a good fight.

Chapter 16: Heaven Class

The curtains gradually closed for the Academy Competition. However, the aftereffects created by the Academy Competition continued to envelop the Northern Spiritual Academy. For a few days, the entire Northern Spiritual Academy was discussing about that fierce battle at the Academy Competition.

In the Northern Spiritual Academy, Mu Chen would always remain modest. If it wasn't because of the matter regarding about the Spiritual Road, perhaps many students wouldn't even pay attention to him. Although he had quite a powerful background, there was still a bit of gap in terms of reputation when you compare it with a dazzling figure like Liu Yang. Before the match between Mu Chen and Liu Yang, many individuals did not feelthat Mu Chen was promising.

But something unexpected appeared in front of their eyes.

Mu Chen, who seemingly remained a low profile, triumphantly defeated Liu Yang. He managed to successfully ascend to the Heaven Class with the title of Earth Class Number One. Moreover, everybody knew that he would be able to have a decent rank in the Northern Spiritual Academy Heaven Class with his Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase strength.

This shocked many individuals. Only now, they felt that it wasn't so unbelievable for Mu Chen to be able to obtain the only one Spiritual Road's qualification within the Northern Spiritual Realm.

At the Northern Spiritual Academy, the Heaven Class could be considered the gathering place for all the outstanding students. In other words, the weakest members of the Heaven Class would still have the strength of a Spiritual Movement Stage Initial Phase.

Every single student would treat Heaven Class as their goal. This is because it was the only path to enter the "Five Great Academies". They would only be qualified to compete for a place within the "Five Great Academies" if they ascend to the Heaven Class.

The selection for the "Five Great Academies" was extremely harsh. The

first condition was that the student must have reached the Spiritual Rotation Stage before the age of 18. Just this one condition, many youth's dreams were stopped.

Within the current Heaven Class in the Northern Spiritual Academy, there are probably no more than five individuals who reached this requirement.

Therefore, you could see how terrifying the acceptance conditions are for the "Five Great Academies". Despite the harsh conditions, many talented youths would flock to it like moths flying towards a flame. This is because of the powerful might of the "Five Great Academies". Even Mu Chen knew clearly about it. Even this vast Northern Spiritual Realm was less than an ant in the eyes of the "Five Great Academies". The Territory Lords at this place were at most at the level of a Spirit Stage. This strength would probably be easily surpassed by any instructor inside the Five Great Academies.

Moreover, genuine Sovereign powerhouses exists in the "Five Great Academies". These individuals are big shots that could easily upturn the world.

If they would like to emerge out of the countless geniuses throughout the Great Thousand World, even gifted youths like Mu Chen would not be able to become someone big without proper guidance. Even the most unrefined diamond would only shine through a master's careful engraving. This high-end cultivation guidance was something that neither the Northern Spiritual Academy nor Mu Chen's father could give him.

Based on Mu Feng's description, if Mu Chen's mother was by his side, perhaps she could do it, but unfortunately...

So the Five Great Academies was a stepping stone for becoming strong.

"Oi, the two of you should hurry...You're heading for the first time to train at the Heaven Class today, yet you are still fooling around." At a gravel road covered by tree's shadows inside the Northern Spiritual Academy, Tang Qian'Er muttered as she stared in dissatisfaction towards the two boys behind her.

Mu Chen looked at the slim figure of Tang Qian'Er and said lazily: "Why are you so impatient...Isn't there still some time?"

"You idiot, all the good locations would be taken at the Cultivation Field since you're so slow." Tang Qian'Er batted an eye at Mu Chen and spoke.

Mu Chen helplessly shook his head. Beside him, Tan Qingshan scratched his head and said: "Mu Chen, let's listen to Senior Qian'Er and speed up a bit."

He stared at the graceful and exquisite figure of the girl and his stern expression turned slightly red.

Mu Chen glanced at his red face in surprise. He could not help but laugh and say: "Do you like Sister Qian'Er?"

Tan Qingshan's face instantly turned red. Sweat began to emerge on his forehead.

"BANG!"

Before Mu Chen had a chance to say more, he noticed Tang Qian'Er turning back and walking over here in anger. Her slender leg was raised and she directly kicked Mu Chen's knee.

"If you keep talking nonsense, do you believe that I will hit you?" Tang Qian'Er raised her eyebrow and asked.

The pain coming from his knee made Mu Chen grin. However, he seemed to have noticed that the girl was a bit angry from the fact that she raised her eyebrow. He immediately let out a dry cough and quickly said: "Let's go. Let's hurry to the Cultivation Field."

Tang Qian'Er let out a quiet hmph. She walked forward again while she talked: "You two have only just entered the Heaven Class, so you are still considered to be newbies. In the future, you should be more attentive. The Heaven Class is quite troublesome and there are many irritating individuals. Although your father may be the Mu Territory Lord, many individuals would not care about it within the Northern Spiritual Academy."

“Sister Qian’Er, do I look like a person who enjoys using my father’s identity to oppress others?” Mu Chen chuckled and said.

Tang Qian’Er thought for a moment, then she nodded. Mu Chen never did mention about his father’s identity. The reputation he had within the Northern Spiritual Academy was earned by himself.

“It’s best if you know it…” Tang Qian’Er chided.

“You should also know that you should not tease those old farts in the Heaven Class. They are not qualified to continue higher, but this is why it is a hassle.”

Mu Chen nodded. He knew what Tang Qian’Er was referring to by those old farts. It was the veteran students that have not left the Northern Spiritual Academy and are already disqualified from entering the “Five Great Academies”.

Because these students failed to reach the Spiritual Rotation Stage by 18, they lost the qualifications to enter the “Five Great Academies”. Without this goal, there were some that muddle around aimlessly like a mixed taste that hasn’t departed from your mouth yet. It was these individuals who do not care about the Northern Spiritual Academy’s rules. Thus, in most cases, very few were willing to provoke them.

“I do not like to provoke others.” Mu Chen shook his head and did not say anything more. However, Tang Qian’Er understood the meaning behind those words as they were quite close. He would not provoke others, but if others were to provoke him, this seemingly good-natured boy would let them understand a person isn’t like their appearance.

“Relax, I will protect you. Within the East Branch Heaven Class, I was never afraid of anyone.” Tang Qian’Er smiled tenderly. The girl’s smile was like a flower, it was quite moving.

Seeing their informal conversation, Tan Qingshan could not get a word in and he could only just follow them.

The three of them walked towards the east side of the Northern Spiritual Academy. Ten minutes later, they finally stopped. They stared directly in

front. Located there was an enormous Great Hall. Outside of the Great Hall, there was a crowd of students hurrying inside.

Mu Chen stared at the Great Hall and a touch of surprise passed through his eyes. At the location, he could feel that the Spiritual Aura within the World seemed to be attracted and gathered at the center of the Great Hall continuously. The Spiritual Aura within the world seemed to be many times denser compared to the outside.

"Is this a...Spirit Convergence Array?" Mu Chen asked.

Tang Qian'Er nodded and said with a prideful voice: "This Cultivation Hall is an important location for the Northern Spiritual Academy. Only the Heaven Class students are qualified to enter this place. The Northern Spiritual Academy paid a great price in order to invite a Spirit Array Master from the Five Great Academies to arrange a Third Rank Spirit Convergence Array inside this Cultivation Hall. This is also the only Third Rank Spirit Convergence Array in the Northern Spiritual Realm."

"A Third Rank Spirit Convergence Array."

Mu Chen smacked his lips. A Spirit Convergence Array was a Spiritual Array that is extremely beneficial for cultivation. As the Young Master of the Mu Territory, he naturally understood the value of a Third Rank Spirit Convergence Array. This level of Spiritual Array was not something that the Mu Territory could arrange. Without mentioning about the enormous amount of rare ingredients it required, even a Spiritual Array Master wasn't something that many forces could afford in the Northern Spiritual Realm. The Northern Spiritual Academy must have performed many favors in order to invite one over.

"It is said that there are Spirit Convergence Arrays at the Sixth Rank or higher in the Five Great Academies. The cultivation speed at those locations is simply incomparable." Tan Qian'Er said with a longing voice. A Third Rank Spirit Convergence Array was already this amazing, then it was impossible to imagine how amazing a legendary Sixth Rank Spirit Convergence Array would be.

"When you enter the Five Great Academies, you will naturally be able to

experience it. Come on, let's enter now." Mu Chen smiled and he led them inside the most precious hall within the Northern Spiritual Academy.

After passing through the heavily guarded doors, a vast plaza appeared in their eyes. Many stone pillars with complex spirit engravings were positioned inside the plaza. As the lights flashed, the Spiritual Aura within the World was gathered at this location.

"Huuu."

Mu Chen gently let out a light breath. He could feel the rich Spiritual Aura entering his body through his breath and could not help but letting out a praise. It truly is a Third Rank Spirit Convergence Array.

"The cultivation time is about to come. Let's hurry inside. The closer you are to the Spiritual Array, the denser the Spiritual Aura would be. We must find a good position." As she pulled Mu Chen, Tang Qian'Er walked quickly with Tan Qingshan to the inside off the Cultivation Field.

There were already numerous Heaven Class students at the Cultivation Field. It was apparent that Tang Qian'Er's reputation was quite big within the East Branch Heaven Class. Many people shot a gaze over as they saw her actions.

"Who is that boy? He's actually getting so close to Tang Qian'Er."

"Oh, you don't even know him? He is that Mu Chen. A few days ago at the Academy Competition, he defeated Liu Yang and ascended to the Heaven Class with the title of the Earth Class Number One. It is said that this Mu Chen has already reached the Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase."

"Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase? That's quite amazing, he would be rather high up within the Heaven Class with that level of strength..."

"He's pretty good. However, it is not enough to become fearless within the Heaven Class... Heh, who knows how many people like Tang Qian'Er over here? Jiang Li, Teng Yong are also both at the Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase. This boy will probably cause a lot of trouble."

While these people spoke, they stared at the other direction within the Cultivation Field. A few figures were quietly sitting cross-legged over there. However, their face seemed to have slightly darkened and they stared sullenly at the source that caused this. It was Tang Qian'Er pulling Mu Chen.

As Mu Chen was pulled by Tang Qian'Er, he glanced around the location and saw the numerous gazes. He immediately let out a helpless smile, it seems that he underestimated Tang Qian'Er's popularity within the East Branch Heaven Class.

Chapter 17: Rank 3 Spirit Convergence Array

“Let’s sit over here.”

Tang Qian’Er ignored the gazes coming from the Cultivation Field as she pulled Mu Chen directly inside the Cultivation Hall. Then, she stopped at a location near a golden stone pillar. Beside the stone platform that extended from the Stone Pillar, there were three jade-likerock cushions.

Mu Chen looked around, but his eyes still remained at the golden stone pillar. Following this, he was shocked. This is because he could feel a dense Spiritual Aura emitting from the golden stone pillar. It was evident that this golden stone pillar should be one of the many Spirit Convergence Pillars of the Rank 3 Spirit Convergence Array. The effects of a place near the Spirit Convergence Pillar were definitely better than anywhere else.

“This Spirit Convergence Pillar was probably created by Spirit Convergence Rocks. It, indeed, is a Rank 3 Spirit Convergence Array.” Mu Chen let out a praise. The Spirit Convergence Rock was a material beneficial to cultivation and the price was not cheap. The cost of creating aSpirit Convergence Pillar completely through Spirit Convergence Rocks would be quite high. No wonder many people would treat Spirit Convergence Array as a sign of wealth.

Tang Qian’Er nodded and sat down cross-legged. Then, she extended her slender arms and puffed up her chest slightly. As her clothes showed a charming curve, it made many individuals sneak a peek at her.

“Qingshan, you should also start cultivating over here.”

Mu Chen also sat down and directed a smile at Qingshan. He knew this cultivation spot was probably pretty good and many would want to fight for it. However, he was not afraid. Although he did not want to be overly well-known, he would not act low-key purposely and insult himself.

Mu Chen’s butt sat onto the jade rock cushion. He felt the surrounding Spiritual Aura become more and more dense. This made him immediately

circulate the Great Pagoda Art. Traces of Spiritual Aura were absorbed into his body continuously. It turned into dark black Spiritual Power after it was refined by the Great Pagoda Art and flowed into his aura sea. The Spiritual Aura inside gradually became more vigorous.

Even with Mu Chen's calmness, this clear increase of Spiritual Energy made him feel joy within his heart. Then, he was immersed completely in cultivation.

Beside him, Tang Qian'Er noticed that Mu Chen had directly entered into the cultivation state. She pouted slightly and then closed her eyes and began the cultivation process.

But their cultivation state did not last long before it was disrupted by a noisy sound from the outside world. Mu Chen was the first one to open his eyes. He looked at his left towards Tan Qingshan. However, he noticed that the boy had a ghastly pale face. His hands were clenched tightly and it was obvious that he was suppressing his anger greatly.

In front of the boy, there were two slightly old youths. They were laughing and would point at Tan Qingshan from time to time.

"What are you doing?!" Mu Chen frowned and said with a cold voice as he looked at the two youths.

The two youths noticed Mu Chen and frowned as well. One of them let out a faint smile and extended a hand over: "So you're Mu Chen? I've heard your name a long time ago, I'm Jiang Li and he's Teng Yong."

Mu Chen stared at the hand extended by Jiang Li. However, he did not stretch his hand to shake it. From the latter's eyes, he noticed a hint of hostility.

"What do you want?"

Seeing that Mu Chen did not react, Jiang Li and the Teng Yong's faces were quite unnatural. They immediately pointed at Tan Qingshan and smiled: "Nothing, we only wanted to exchange locations with him."

"We're not changing. Next time, you should come here earlier and take it." Mu Chen faintly spoke.

"Jiang Li, what are you doing!" At this moment, Tang Qian'Er also woke up. When she saw this scene, her beautiful eyes revealed anger. She shouted out as she lifted her eyebrow.

Jiang Li shrugged his shoulders and said: "Qian'Er, you should know the rules of this Cultivation Field. This location isn't a recently arrived newbie can sit in. In order to avoid others from being jealous, I was doing this for his own good."

Jiang Li said and glanced at Mu Chen. Although they disliked Mu Chen, they also knew that Mu Chen wasn't someone they should provoke. His strength wasn't any bit inferior to them and his background was not weak. Therefore, they did not cause trouble for Mu Chen directly and instead picked on Tan Qingshan, who was beside him. It was evident that he was planning to strike at Mu Chen indirectly through this.

"You!"Ch

Tang Qian'Er's eyes were filled with rage. She was about to speak, but was interrupted by Mu Chen. The latter frowned at Jiang Li and Teng Yong. He seemed to have thought for a moment before saying: "I know that only powerful individuals are qualified to sit in this position, I believe that I possess this right. Tan Qingshan is my friend so that is why he sat over here. If you have any opinions regarding about this or if you want to show off your strength in front of me, I'll accompany you."

Their movements made many people watch them. Thus, Mu Chen's remarks also entered their ears completely. A commotion rang out instantly. This newcomer sure was amazing.

Jiang Li and Teng Yong's faces gradually turned unsightly as the commotion rang out. It was evident that they did not expect the seemingly mild Mu Chen would act so tough.

They stared furiously at Mu Chen's serious expression, but they did not dare to shout at him. They heard about the battle between Mu Chen and Liu Yang. Liu Yang, who possesses a Spiritual Pulse, was someone that they weren't sure that they could beat, yet Mu Chen succeeded. Therefore, they did not have any confidence that they would be able to defeat Mu

Chen.

"Oh, as expected from the Mu Territory's Young Master. He really is prideful when he speaks."

Just when Jiang Li and Teng Yong had no way of backing down, a uncomforting laughter sound suddenly came from behind. Jiang Li and Teng Yong looked and a hint of happiness lit up in their eyes.

"Big Brother Luo!"

When he heard their surprised voices, Mu Chen also tilted his head. He only noticed a figure slowly walking over. That figure was around 18 years old with sunken eyes and his thin lips revealed a hint of mercilessness.

"Luo Tong!"

Tang Qian'Er stared at this person and her face sank slightly as she spoke.

"Luo Tong?"

Mu Chen frowned. This name was not new to him. This is because this guy's father was also a Territory Lord within the Northern Spiritual Realm. However, Luo Tong already passed 18 years old last year, yet his current strength remained at Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase. In other words, he had already lost the right to enter the Five Great Academies.

This also means that he was an old fart that Tang Qian'Er mentioned before and was an extremely troubling individual.

"Mu Chen, it's been a while."

Luo Tong arrived in front of Mu Chen and smiled. However, this smile was not kind and gentle. The two of them knew each other from a long time ago, but they disliked each other.

Mu Chen glanced at him and said: "So you also came here to put on the airs? "

"How could I possibly dare to do that? You are a genius that obtained the qualifications for the Spiritual Road." Luo Tong curled his lips and pretended to be surprised. However, the jealousy within his voice could

not be concealed. When he first heard that Mu Chen obtained the qualifications for the Spiritual Road, he was so jealous that his eyes turned red. Moreover, he is currently 18, yet he failed to reach the Spiritual Rotation Stage. This cut apart his wish of entering the Five Great Academies. When he thought about Mu Chen's talent and that it wouldn't be difficult for him to enter the Five Great Academies, the flames of jealousy raged within his heart.

Mu Chen retracted his gaze and was too lazy to care about this jealous and pitiful guy. Compared to Liu Mubai, this Luo Tong was nothing.

"Hand over your seat."

When Luo Tong saw that Mu Chen ignored him, the anger in his eyes grew. However, he did not directly challenge Mu Chen. Instead, he let out a cold shout towards Tan Qingshan.

Whether it was strength or background, it was obvious that he did not put Tan Qingshan in his eyes.

"Luo Tong, you shouldn't go too far." Mu Chen's voice became colder.

"What? You're unwilling to listen? You want to fight with me?" Luo Tong also let out a cold smile as he spoke. He was at the Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase. Therefore, he was not afraid of Mu Chen at all. Instead, he wanted to stir up Mu Chen's fury and take care of this person, who made him jealous.

Mu Chen's black eyes stared at Luo Tong. When Luo Tong saw those unfathomable black eyes, Luo Tong's imposing manner actually paused for a moment. It did not matter how jealous he got, he still understood what it represent when Mu Chen obtained the qualification for the Spiritual Road. If it wasn't because Mu Chen was suddenly kicked out of the Spiritual Road, he probably wouldn't have the qualification to yell in front of Mu Chen.

His imposing manner paused for a moment, but Luo Tong quickly recovered. No matter what Mu Chen experienced, he was still a person at the Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase. He simply wasn't his opponent.

“Do you dare?” Luo Tong turned his embarrassment into fury and said.

“Luo Tong, what are you doing?!”

Before Mu Chen replied, a deep voice rang out from nearby. Everybody looked over and noticed a tall, burly figure approaching quickly. He, then, stood in front of Luo Tong and shouted out.

“Mo Ling, don’t you think you’re too controlling?” Luo Tong stared at the burly boy in front of him and frowned.

The person in front of him was a celebrity in the Northern Spiritual Academy. His ranking is only second to the West Branch Heaven Class’s Liu Mubai. Right now, he is also at the Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase, but he would most likely break through to the Spiritual Rotation Stage in half a year. When that happens, he would be eligible to compete for a place at the Five Great Academies. He is someone who was the Northern Spiritual Academy would focus on nurturing.

“It will soon be the Cultivation Lesson. If you cause trouble here, Teacher Mo would not forgive you!” It seemed that Mo Ling did not like Luo Tong as well and he lifted an eyebrow as he spoke.

Luo Tong’s face instantly became ugly. However, he knew that Mo Ling did not fear him, so he could only bitterly grit his teeth. At this moment, a figure slowly entered the Cultivation Field. Everybody fell silent when they saw that figure. This is because it was Teacher Mo.

When Luo Tong noticed Teacher Mo’s appearance, he did not dare to keep at it and raised a fist toward Mu Chen. Then, he returned back to his seat unwillingly.

“Are you okay? That person is quite annoying, you just have to get used to it.” When Mo Ling noticed that Luo Tong departing, he smiled and asked Mu Chen.

“We’re fine. Thank you.” Mu Chen smiled kindly and replied.

“It’s fine, I’ve heard about you before. You are the only one that qualified for the Spiritual Road. Ohoho, it seems like I’ll have some pressure from now on.” Mo Ling smiled and waved his hand. Then, without saying

anything more, he turned around and left.

Mu Chen stared at the back of Mo Ling and smiled. He had a good impression of that burly boy.

“Mu Chen, thank you.” Tan Qingshan also showed some gratitude as he spoke.

“We came here together, so we should take care of each other. Just ignore those individuals, you will become stronger than them soon.” Mu Chen gave a faint smile.

Tan Qingshan nodded strongly.

At this moment, Teacher Mo had always walked leisurely into the Cultivation Field. He glanced at Mu Chen, but he did not say anything at all. He only waved his hand and numerous lights flew directly into the stone pillars. Afterwards, everybody was able to feel that the Spiritual Aura within the Cultivation Field becoming denser. It was obvious that Teacher Mo had completely activated the Spirit Convergence Array.

Mu Chen felt the rich Spiritual Aura and smiled. Without saying anything, he closed his eyes and entered the cultivation state again. He absorbed the Spiritual Energy into his body and refined it.

The cultivation time of half a day quickly passed. Just when Mu Chen absorbed the final trace of Spiritual Energy into his aura sea and was about to end his cultivation, his body suddenly trembled violently. A wonderful feeling emitted from his aura sea.

Mu Chen was startled by this sudden feeling for a moment. Shortly after, a surprised feeling surged through his mind. Did the...Great Pagoda Art reach the Foundation Level?

Chapter 18: Foundation

Surprise surged through Mu Chen's mind, it was evident that this sudden breakthrough was completely outside his expectation. He originally thought that it would take at least ten days before hebroke through to the Foundation Level...

Mu Chen was surprised for a while. However, he graduallycalmed down and did not dare to be careless. He hurried to recover his focus and began to sense the wonderful feeling vigilantly.

Within his aura sea, the dark black Spiritual Energy was bubbling. While it was bubbling, Mu Chen was able to feel that the density of the Spiritual Energy was increasing rapidly. Moreover, Mu Chen was able to sensethat a powerful absorption seemed to have erupted inside his body and it greedily sucked in the Spiritual Aura outside. After being refined by the Great Pagoda Art, traces of dark black Spiritual Energy entered his aura sea.

While he was sensing the rapidly increasing Spiritual Energy within his aura sea, a comfortable feeling flowed through Mu Chen's four limbs.

And while Mu Chen was immersed in the pleasurable feeling of the Spiritual Art's breakthrough, the entire cultivation field also suddenly stirred. This is because everybody was able to feel a powerful suction erupting from within Mu Chen's body. It used an arrogant and forceful attitude to steal the dense Spiritual Aura within the cultivation field.

This movement instantly attracted everybody's attention. Many individuals glanced through the field with astonished eyes and it landed at Mu Chen's body in the end.

"What's happening?!"

"It was caused by that Mu Chen, what is he doing?"

"What a domineering absorption, he is actually to absorb the spiritual aura of the world this outrageously. Is he not afraid of dying?"

Numerous whispers exploded throughout the cultivation field.

Everybody had an alarmed expression. It was evident that it was their first time seeing this situation.

"Mu Chen."

Tang Qian'Er also widened her eyes and stared worriedly at Mu Chen.

"Do not panic."

At this moment, Teacher Mo's calm voice rang out. It overshadowed the whispers and calmed many Heaven Class students. Then, he turned his gaze towards Mu Chen and frowned slightly as he said: "It's not a big deal, the Spiritual Art he trained in had a breakthrough."

""The Spiritual Art he trained in?"

Many students were stunned once again. A Spiritual Art's breakthrough would actually cause such a commotion, just what is the level of the Spiritual Art that Mu Chen trained in? It seems to be a Spiritual Art that it is at least Spiritual Rank Middle Tier?

Jiang Li and Teng Yong both had a shocked expression as they stared at Mu Chen, who caused this great commotion. A hint of panic flowed through their eyes. Although they were also at the Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase, they could feel the enormous pressure coming from Mu Chen's body.

"Hmph, it seems that his father prepared a pretty good Spiritual Art for him."

Luo Tong let out a cold hmph. His words were filled with unwillingness and jealousy. The Spiritual Art that he trained in wasn't weak, it had reached the Spiritual Rank Low Tier, but it seems that there was still a gap between the one that Mu Chen trained in.

This made Luo Tong extremely frustrated. Compared to Mu Chen, he did not have any points that he would excel at, aside from...age.

Teacher Mo carefully watched Mu Chen, who was greedily sucking in the Spiritual Aura. He could not help but let out a sound of praise. He was able to sense that the Gong Fa Spiritual Art Mu Chen trained in was not

something ordinary. However, he was different than a shallow person like Luo Tong. As the Spiritual Art becomes higher in rank, it would become harder to train. A breakthrough would be something even harder. Mu Chen had probably only trained in this Spiritual Art for no more than a month, yet he was able to have a breakthrough, this talent...is quite extraordinary.

"As expected from a person who obtained the qualifications for the Spiritual Road."

Teacher Mo smiled. Although he lost a year of training when he was at the Spiritual Road, it would not be hard for Mu Chen to chase up with his talents. It seems that the West Branch's Liu Mubai had finally met his opponent.

Mu Chen naturally did not know about the commotion in the cultivation field. He was still immersed in the wonderful feeling as his Spiritual Art made a breakthrough. The Spiritual Aura that flowed into his body turned into traces of dark black Spiritual Energy and entered his aura sea. This refreshing feeling made Mu Chen feel completely relaxed.

Mu Chen's mind entered the aura sea. The traces of dark black Spiritual Energy had now become a small form. The Spiritual Energy would wrap around each other in spirals. It was like a black nebula, mysterious and unpredictable.

Above the Spiritual Energy, a piece of black paper quietly floated there. It let the Spiritual Energy flow around it and remained motionless as if it was a dead object.

The dark black Spiritual Energy circulated inside Mu Chen's aura sea. Suddenly, a buzzing sound rang out in the depths of his soul. This made him shocked and he immediately scanned inside his body. He actually discovered that dark black lights suddenly lit up in his body...

Swoosh.

The Spiritual Energy in his aura sea also seemed to activate at this moment. It surged out of his aura sea and flowed through his meridians smoothly. When the Spiritual Energy passed through the dark black lights,

Mu Chen was able to feel vaguely that the black color lights absorbed some of the Spiritual Energy.

"What is this all about?"

This sudden turn of events shocked Mu Chen. These black lights appeared too suddenly and it seemed to be out of his control. He was not able to detect them as well.

"Could it be because of the Great Pagoda Art?"

Mu Chen thought quickly, then an idea flashed through his mind. It was obvious that this change was related to his Great Pagoda Art reaching the Foundation Level.

"These lights..."

Mu Chen's mind swept through the mysterious black lights across his body. He pondered for a while and then he violently trembled. He noticed that if he was able to connect the black lights, it seemed to be a bit like a... Spiritual Pulse?!

Spiritual Pulse?

This phrase flashed through Mu Chen's mind and flooded his mind with questions. He knew that he did not possess even the lowest level Human Level Spiritual Pulse. To confirm this result, he checked it many times. However, what on earth are these black lights that appeared in his body and seemed like a Spiritual Pulse?

When Mu Chen's mind was completely filled with shock, these black lights seemed to vanish quietly like an Epiphyllum. No matter how Mu Chen tried to sense it, he could not perceive it at all. It was as if had never existed in the first place.

"How could this be..."

Mu Chen muttered inside his heart and was completely confused. After a long time, he began to carefully analyze it. The scene earlier was definitely not an illusion. In the depths of his body, something that he could not detect was definitely hidden inside. And this concealment might

have some relationship to the Great Pagoda Art.

"The Great Pagoda Art...Could it be mother?"

Mu Chen's heart trembled. The Great Pagoda Art was left behind by his mother. If that's the case, then it must be related to his mother. Perhaps his mother hid something within his body.

But why would she do that?

Mu Chen thought for a while, but he could not come up with any answers. He had too little memories about his mother. There was only a vague, yet gentle existence in the depths of his heart. However, he did not understand much about it, the hidden Spiritual Pulse feeling did make Mu Chen believe one point doubtlessly. His mother would never do anything that would harm him.

When he thought about this, Mu Chen's heart gradually calmed down. No matter how irrational his prediction was, it would be fine if he believed that it would not harm him.

As for the other points, he could ask his dad when he returned back home. He felt that his dad should know a bit about this, but he had not mentioned it to him yet.

While thinking about this, Mu Chen also circulated his state of mind. He allowed the traces of dark black Spiritual Energy to be absorbed into his aura sea and left the cultivation state. His tightly closed eyes also slowly opened up.

When he opened his eyes, Mu Chen could feel that something was off. He was immediately surprised when he saw the numerous gazes fixed onto his body.

"What is it?"

Mu Chen blinked his eyes. He was quite puzzled about the gazes staring at him.

When the surrounding students heard his words, their faces were quite strange. You've caused such a big commotion, yet you didn't even know?

“Mu Chen, are you alright?” Tang Qian’Er asked worriedly. Then, she explained the situation that previously occurred.

“I’m fine.” Mu Chen suddenly smiled as he shook his head. This Spiritual Art breakthrough must have been related to the Spirit Convergence Array. Otherwise, it would take a bit of time before he reached the Foundation Level. A Third Rank Spirit Convergence Array was definitely quite extraordinary.

“Today’s cultivation lesson will end now. You can make your own arrangements for the time, afterwards.” When Teacher Mo noticed that Mu Chen had woken up, he gave him a nod before he spoke to the crowd.

“Yes!”

Many students respectfully responded.

Teacher Mo waved his hand and he did not wait as he walked leisurely out.

As Teacher Mo left, the atmosphere within the cultivation field gradually relaxed. Sounds of laughter spread out, but many gazes were still fixed on Mu Chen.

Perhaps it was because the commotion caused by Mu Chen was too shocking, even after Teacher Mo left, Luo Tong, Jiang Li and the others did not come looking for trouble with him. Instead, they glanced sullenly at him in fear and immediately shifted their gaze away.

“Let’s go as well.” Mu Chen stood up and clapped his hands as he spoke.

“Where are we going?” Tang Qian’Er asked.

“Let’s go take a stroll to the Spiritual Art Room.”

Mu Chen stared at the other side of the cultivation field and smiled slightly: “I am quite interested in a few Attack Spiritual Arts there, right now, I can finally train in them...”

Chapter 19: Limitless Death Seal

The Spiritual Arts Room. It is the place where the Northern Spiritual Academy's Spiritual Art collection is located at. The Spiritual Arts Room is also divided into Heaven Level and Earth Level. An Earth Class student can only enter the Earth Level to search for Spiritual Arts; if they want to enter the Heaven Level, then they must ascend to the Heaven Class.

The Spiritual Art that Mu Chen wanted was in the Heaven Level collection. He had entered the Heaven Level once under Teacher Mo's guidance approximately half a year ago. There, he discovered a Spiritual Art that he liked. However, he couldonly temporarily give it up as he did not reach the requirements.

And now, Mu Chen, who had satisfied the requirements, would naturally think about this Attack Spiritual Art right away.

Mu Chen and Tang Qian'Er headed off to the Spiritual Arts Room. On the other hand, Tan Qingshan did not follow as he said that he wanted to train for a bit longer. He was a man of few words, but he was quite stubborn. When he was still in the Earth Class, he was considered quite outstanding, but once he entered the Heaven Class, he suddenly fell to the bottom. This difference became his motivation.

In the spacious Spiritual Arts Room, many Northern Spiritual Academy's students were reading the Spiritual Arts. After all, not every single person had a Northern Spiritual Realm's Territory Lord as their father. Therefore, many students could only obtain Spiritual Arts through the Spiritual Arts Room. However, it was naturally worse than the carefully prepared Spiritual Arts that Mu Chen and the others could access.

Of course, this does not mean that the Northern Spiritual Academy's collection is inferior to the Territory Lords within the Northern Spiritual Realm. It was the exact opposite. Based on what Mu Chen knew, the true collection within the Northern Spiritual Academy was probably something that his father's collection couldn't compare with. However, those Spiritual Arts were not something that a common student can see.

The Spiritual Arts Room's Earth Level was lively and bustling. When Mu Chen and Tang Qian'Er entered, they attracted a lot of attention. It was evident that Mu Chen was known throughout the Northern Spiritual Academy after thebattle during the Academy Competition.

"Brother Mu!"

It was fine when the West Branch students saw Mu Chen. Their eyes would be filled with fear and curiosity. However, the East Branch students would have thrilled expression and greeted him with excitement. A few charming girls would even peek at the boy with black hair and black eyes, handsome face and a brilliant smile which emitted warmth to their hearts as they flipped through the Spiritual Arts. Then, their faces would turn slightly red.

Mu Chen directed a gentle smile towards the East Branch students, but he did not remain there for long. He directly passed through the Earth Level with Tang Qian'Er and headed to the Spiritual Arts Room's second level, Heaven Level.

As the two individuals departed, whispers erupted in the Earth Level.

"Brother Mu really ascended to the Heaven Class. He is actually able to enter the Spiritual Arts Room Heaven Level."

"Haha, Brother Mu's performance at the Academy Competition was so perfect. Would it even be difficult for him to enter the Heaven Class?"

"There are many powerful individuals in the Heaven Class. It was said that the Heaven Class's Luo Tong tried to trouble Brother Mu today. That guy is at the level of a Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase."

"Luo Tong? He's only a person who would flaunt his father's title around. How could he compare to Brother Mu? And that guy isn't even eligible to enter the Five Great Academies."

"Yes, the one, who is best qualified to compete with Liu Mubai in the Northern Spiritual Academy, is probably Brother Mu. Ohoho, I think that there would be a good show when they compete for a place in the Five Great Academies."

“I didn’t expect you to be that popular in the Earth Class.” As the two of them walked up to the Heaven Level, Tang Qian’Er glanced below and said with a tender smile.

Mu Chen also smiled, but he was not willing to say anything about it. He turned his gaze towards the Heaven Level. This place was not as spacious as the Earth Level, there were also far less people here. However, they would still be able to see a figure walking around from time to time.

“What Spiritual Art did you want? I think that a Mu Territory’s Young Master would not care about a Common Tier Spiritual Art?” Tang Qian’Er’s eyes swept through the Heaven Level as she playfully asked.

“However, if it’s the Spiritual Tier Spiritual Arts, then based on what I know, there are only six of them in the Heaven Level. They are all Spiritual Tier Low Rank Spiritual Arts. Which one did you like? And if you want to read the Spiritual Tier Spiritual Art, you must have Teacher Mo’s consent.”

“It seems that you know this place quite well. However, the one I want aren’t the Spiritual Arts that you mentioned.” Mu Chen let out a mysterious smile and he walked to the west corner of the Spiritual Arts Room.

Tang Qian’Er was a bit puzzled as she followed him over. This location wasn’t where the High Rank Spiritual Arts were located at in the Spiritual Arts Room. They were all just Common Tier Spiritual Arts. Although it included a few powerful Spiritual Arts, with Mu Chen’s viewpoint, there should be many within the Mu Territory if he only wanted Common Tier Spiritual Arts.

“They are just a few ordinary Common Tier Spiritual Arts, it can’t be that you wanted these Spiritual Arts, right?” Tang Qian’Er’s slender hand picked up a jaded script and asked with a frown.

Mu Chen’s face had a smile on it. His long fingers went across the cold stone surface and extended into the depths of the stone cabinet. When he pulled out his fingers, a dark red jaded script was stuck between his fingers.

“This is?”

Tang Qian'Er was stunned when she saw that. Her eyes immediately turned serious when she saw the color of the jaded script. This is because the Spiritual Arts with that color has a special title to it. It was known as Hazard Potential Spiritual Arts.

The so-called Hazard Potential Spiritual Arts represents that there is quite a bit of danger when training in this Spiritual Art. It might even harm the practitioners as well.

"Let me see that."

Tang Qian'Er extended her hand and snatched the dark red jaded script away from Mu Chen's hand. She glanced across it and saw that it emitted a few cold-blooded words on its surface.

Common Tier High Rank, Limitless Death Seal.

"Limitless Death Seal?"

Tang Qian'Er's face finally changed. Her eyes widened up and she stared furiously at Mu Chen as she spoke: "What are you playing? You dare practice this Spiritual Art?

The name of the Limitless Death Seal, she had naturally heard of it before. Although it was a Common Tier High Rank Spiritual Art, it was a Spiritual Art that was extremely vicious within the Northern Spiritual Academy. This is not because it was incredibly amazing, but because two gifted and outstanding students had once trained in it. The result ended with their meridians snapping and they nearly became useless. Since then, nobody dared to train in this Spiritual Art.

"I've investigated this Spiritual Art before. It is actually quite amazing. However, there's a condition for you to train in this Spiritual Art. That is it requires a domineering Spiritual Energy. The Spiritual Energy of the two seniors that trained in it before did not reach that level of domination. This is why they failed." Mu Chen explained.

The dark black Spiritual Energy he had was far from any ordinary Spiritual Energy. With its overbearing nature, the Great Pagoda Art that he trained in right now should be capable of this Limitless Death Seal.

“Not allowed!” Tang Qian’Er had a straight face and she batted an eye towards Mu Chen and said: “And you don’t have the qualifications to read this Spiritual Art anyways.”

There were also rules regarding about reading the Spiritual Arts within the Spiritual Arts Room. If it was just any ordinary Common Tier, any students could read it, but if it was Spiritual Tier, you must ask for permission from the Teachers.

Although this Limitless Death Seal only seemed to be a Common Tier High Rank, it was classified as a Hazard Potential Spiritual Art. If you wish to read this Spiritual Art, you must be a student, who had stayed in the Heaven Class for half a year. Since Mu Chen had just ascended up, he clearly wasn’t qualified.

Mu Chen’s black eyes contained traces of a smile as he stared at Tang Qian’Er. He jokingly said: “That is why I brought you over here. I wanted you to help me borrow this Spiritual Art.”

Tang Qian’Er’s beautiful eyes could not help but widen up. She stared at Mu Chen, gritted her teeth as she tilted her head away: “You want me to help you? No way!”

“Sister Qian’Er, help me out please.”

Mu Chen’s body leaned slightly forward. His handsome face was close to the girl’s pretty face. The hot air that came from his breath landed on her bouncy cheeks.

Tang Qian’Er was startled by his action and retreated a few step backwards. Her face was like a sunset and she embarrassingly said:” You rascal!”

Mu Chen shrugged his shoulders and his black eyes stared at Tang Qian’Er. He softly said: “I really want to train in this Spiritual Art. Believe in me, it will be fine, okay?”

Tang Qian’Er nibbled her red lips as if she was hesitating. After all, this Spiritual Art had quite the vicious name. If Mu Chen also became like the two seniors from before, she really couldn’t imagine how dire the

consequences would be...

"Huh? Mu Chen, you're also here?"

And just when Tang Qian'Er hesitated, a soft voice rang out suddenly from behind. Mu Chen and Tang Qian'Er lifted their heads. They saw Hong Ling, who was extremely charming, in a red dress standing there.

When Mu Chen noticed Hong Ling, he was stunned for a bit. This seemed to be the first time that Hong Ling had greeted him since he had entered the Northern Spiritual Academy. Although they were rather close when they were young, they drifted apart later. Right now, she felt more like a stranger.

"Hello, Senior Hong Ling."

Mu Chen also smiled and called out Senior Hong Ling. This made Tang Qian'Er relaxed her straightened face. By greeting her this way, it was evident that they weren't close. It was more like being polite.

Hong Ling's beautiful eyes flashed for a moment. She immediately looked at the dark red jaded script held within Tang Qian'Er's hand and seemed to understand something. She smiled and said: "What is it? You want to borrow this Hazard Potential Spiritual Art? Do you need my help?"

Mu Chen glanced at Tang Qian'Er for a moment. These two girls disliked each other. Sure enough, the latter had a cold expression. He turned his head back and smiled as he spoke: "Thank you for your kindness, senior. But Sister Qian'Er has already promised to help me."

Hong Ling nodded. She looked at boy with a gentle smile, handsome appearance and a long body. Her heart felt slightly sour. The ordinary boy that she did not pay attention to had suddenly become outstanding without her knowing.

"Then, that's okay. I won't disturb you."

Hong Ling directed a smile to Mu Chen. Then, she did not remain at this location. She turned her body around and left. Her slim and charming body attracted countless gazes from nearby boys, who were reading the Spiritual Arts. In the end, the boys all gave a jealous glance towards Mu

Chen. This guy is really too lucky, he had some sort of relationship with both flowers of the Northern Spiritual Academy.

“When did I agree to help you? Seeing that Hong Ling departed, Tang Qian’Er let out a sigh and spoke.

“I guess I can only ask Senior Hong Ling then.” Mu Chen said helplessly.

“You dare do that!” Tang Qian’Er hurried and said it out loud. But seeing Mu Chen’s playful expression, her face turned red and she gritted her teeth in anger. She said: “I can help you, but you have to promise me this. If you find anything wrong with it, you must immediately stop training in it!”

Mu Chen nodded his head.

“Also.”

Tang Qian’Er’s beautiful eyes swept across Mu Chen and her pretty face revealed a sweet smile.

“You have to form a team with me during the Northern Spiritual Field Training half a month later.”

Chapter 20: Seal Formed

"The Northern Spiritual Field Training?"

When Mu Chen heard these words, he was slightly stunned. The Northern Spiritual Field was a famous danger zone within the Northern Spiritual Realm. It had a vast territory and a variety of fierce Spiritual Beasts were spread across it. There would be many Adventurer Teams that entered it to hunt Spiritual Beasts. Also, there were many rare materials and elixirs within the Northern Spiritual Field. It could be considered as a treasure place. Of course, if you want to take the treasure out, you must have sufficient strength to do so. Otherwise, you might not be able to obtain any treasure and lose your life there.

Because the Northern Spiritual Field was filled with resources, even Mu Chen's father would personally lead his men into the Northern Spiritual Field from time to time. Every time they entered, they were bound to have many tragic fights.

"That's right. We, the Northern Spiritual Academy's Heaven Class, would organize the students and head to the Northern Spiritual Field for training every now and then. This is because only a true battle would have the effects of tempering oneself."

Tang Qian'Er nodded and smiled as she spoke: "For the training, we are permitted to form a two-man team. And the top three teams that have the best results would have a special reward."

"Reward? What is it?" Mu Chen lifted an eyebrow.

"It's said that it would be Accumulation Elixir this time." Tang Qian'Er thought for a moment and said.

"Accumulation Elixir?" Mu Chen was astonished. This elixir was said to be extremely beneficial for beginners like them, who had only started their training. The elixir's medical effects were mild and it would not leave any aftereffects. With their Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase strength, they would soon charge at the Spiritual Movement Strength Late Phase if they were to take it.

“Yes. If I am able to obtain an Accumulation Elixir, I should be able to advance into Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase. And I would begin my preparations to enter the Spiritual Rotation Stage in the future.” Tang Qian’Er said.

“How would they judge the results?” Mu Chen asked curiously. It was obvious that the Accumulation Elixir had piped his interest.

“It’s simple. They will look at who killed the most Spiritual Beasts and which ones is the highest rank.” Tang Qian’Er continued to speak: “Because all the students in the Heaven Class are allowed to participate, therefore, there is quite a bit of competition. This is also why I want to get you.”

“I only reached the Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase. Shouldn’t you look for someone stronger when you form a team? With Sister Qian’Er’s charm, I believe that many powerful individuals in both the East Branch and West Branch would want to form a team with you, right?” Mu Chen smiled and asked.

“You’re not willing?” Tang Qian’Er let out a slight hmph, then she waved the dark red jaded script within her hand.

“That’s something that I would wish for. However, if we fail to obtain the Accumulation Elixir, please do not blame me for dragging you down.” Mu Chen smiled. The words he said weren’t just common courtesy. After all, he only had the strength of a Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase. There are many candidates that were more suitable than him in the Northern Spiritual Academy.

Tang Qian’Er thought for a moment, then she let out a light laugh. “It doesn’t matter if we fail to obtain it. I am confident that I would reach the Spiritual Rotation Stage within a year even if I do not rely on the elixir.”

As she said this, her slender fingers gently twirled the jaded script. She glancedtowards Mu Chen and said: “And I don’t like forming teams with others.”

“Since Sister Qian’Er thinks so highly of me. I will sacrifice my life and accompany you. Don’t worry, Sister Qian’Er. Even if I have to risk my puny

life, I will definitely help you obtain the Accumulation Elixir." Mu Chenhad a smile on his face as he pretended to be heroic and patted his chest.

"What a sweet talker." Tang Qian'Er blushed as she stared at him.

"Then, what about this Spiritual Art?" Mu Chen smiled as he stared at the jaded script in Tang Qian'Er's hand.

"Don't do this again next time."

Tang Qian'Er grunted. She held onto the Spiritual Art as she turned around and headed towards the outside of the Spiritual Arts Room. When Mu Chen noticed this, he immediately followed.

At the door of the Spiritual Arts Room, Tang Qian'Er registered the Spiritual Art. When the old man that manages the Spiritual Arts Room noticed the dark red Spiritual Art, he glanced at Tang Qian'Er and hesitated for a moment. After all, this "Limitless Death Seal" had a vicious name attached to it. Although Tang Qian'Er met the requirements, he still did not want to see a beautiful girl being harmed by this Spiritual Art.

When Mu Chen noticed the old man hesitating, his heart was slightly anxious. He knew that the Spiritual Arts Room's Old Man Qin was an extremely inflexible person. As long as he did not like a person, then that person would not be able to bring any Spiritual Arts away from his place. Also, don't judge based on his appearance. He may seem like he is about to die, but his strength is at the level of Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase. He is just a step away from reaching the Spirit Stage. In the past, many cocky students suffered because of him.

Fortunately, Tang Qian'Er seemed to have some method on dealing with this old man. Her pretty face let out a pure smile and she called him "Grandpa Qin". This made the old man nod his head cheerfully. After he warned her repeatedly, he still handed the Spiritual Art to Tang Qian'Er.

Mu Chen followed Tang Qian'Er out of the Spiritual Art Room silently. The latter let out a triumphant smile and threw the jaded script towards him.

“It’s all thanks to you!”

Mu Chen caught the jaded script and fiddled around with it for a moment. Joy appeared in his black eyes. Then, he gave a smile towards Tang Qian’Er. If it wasn’t for Tang Qian’Er today, then it would still be difficult to borrow it out from that Old Man Tai even when he qualified for it.

Tang Qian’Er smiled. She stared helplessly at the jaded script in Mu Chen’s hand. “You should be careful, if anything is wrong, you should immediately stop training in it.”

“Yes, then I’ll head back first.” As Mu Chen held the jaded script, he already couldn’t wait to start deep down inside. He waved towards Tang Qian’Er and quickly left.

The girl stared at Mu Chen’s figure as it quickly vanished. She could not help but pout. That blockhead.

The cold moonlight poured down from the sky and turned into a beam as it landed in the quiet room. Inside this room, a boy was quietly sitting cross-legged. His black eyes stared at the dark red jaded script that was gripped tightly in his hand.

Mu Chen stared at the jaded script for a moment. Then, he gently let it touch his forehead. As the Spiritual Energy circulated, the jaded script’s surface also flashed a dark red light.

And as the light flashed, a large amount of information flowed out from the jaded script and directly injected itself into Mu Chen’s brain.

Mu Chen closed his eyes tightly and accepted the training method for the “Limitless Death Seal”. Shortly after, he opened his eyes and let out a breath. Within his black eyes, it was filled with theories.

After all, the “Limitless Death Seal” had an extremely vicious name before. Therefore, Mu Chen did not dare to be too careless. Instead, he repeatedly looked at the training method before he began to start training in it.

Mu Chen sat down cross-legged and his hands were attuned to each

other. His fingers wounded and formed an exquisite seal. He moved his mind and dark black lights flashed on his body. A trace of dark black Spiritual Energy began to linger around his palm.

The dark black Spiritual Energy was like a black snake. It would constantly twist in his palm as Mu Chen changed the seals. It gradually formed into a faint, black light seal.

However, condensing this light seal was not easy. Thus, a faint sound rang out and the twisting dark black Spiritual Energy shattered before the seal was condensed.

Mu Chen did not mind this first failure of his. If this "Limitless Death Seal" was successfully learned this easily, he would not have that big of an interest in it.

Mu Chen refocused his mind and began again.

Failed.

And failed.

The time passed by quickly, yet Mu Chen continued to train in it tirelessly. The seal that was formed in his hands were gradually becoming more proficient and the condensing speed of the Spiritual Energy also increased rapidly.

His slender hands were like a butterfly passing through flowers. It changed at a curve. Within his palm, the dark black Spiritual Energy was being twisted. The black light seal was a lot clearer than before. A faint cold fluctuation emitted out from it.

Mu Chen firmly fixed his eyes onto the dark light seal that was about to be formed. His mind was strained to its limit. He had failed at this final step many times.

Mu Chen's fingers changed once again and a dark black Spiritual Energy flowed into the black light seal.

The black light seal suddenly trembled. A humming sound came from it. Afterwards, the black light began to converge and it directly formed into a

dark black light seal and was imprinted onto Mu Chen's palm.

When the light seal was imprinted onto Mu Chen's palm, his entire body tensed up. This is because the next step was the most dangerous one. The two seniors that trained in the "Limitless Death Seal" had snapped their meridians at this step.

As the black light seal was imprinted onto his palm, Mu Chen was quickly aware of a violent fluctuation emitting from the light seal. Then, it rushed ferociously through the meridians at his palm.

This appearance was like it was trying to destroy the meridians.

"Hummm!"

However, it was lucky that Mu Chen was prepared for it. A dark black Spiritual Energy rumbled and rushed out from his aura sea. It then collided with the violent fluctuations.

A low humming sound erupted from within Mu Chen's body.

The fluctuations from the "Limitless Death Seal" were abnormally violent. It was like a wild beast as it charged towards the dark black Spiritual Energy which sealed it off. It attempted to destroy it.

However, the dark black Spiritual Energy that came from the Great Pagoda Art was not like it imagined. It was obvious that it was not easy to deal with it.

Facing against the violent impact, the dark black Spiritual Energy completely exposed its domineering nature. It used an extremely powerful oppression and completely resisted the impact.

BAMMMM.

Waves of impacts continued. However, Mu Chen did not dare to relax the slightest bit. Cold sweat appeared on his forehead. If he failed to block them, he would probably be gravely injured.

Mu Chen drew out all the Spiritual Energy within his aura sea and tried his best to defend against the impacts. The impacts lasted approximately for ten minutes, then it finally began to weaken.

When Mu Chen discovered that the impact had completely vanished. His tensed body limped down. Sweat covered his clothes and he was breathing heavily.

Although his body was abnormally tired, Mu Chen still held excitement within his eyes. He trembled slightly as he opened his right hand. At the center of his palm, there was a dark seal engraving that made others feel a chill.

“Did I succeed?”

Mu Chen stared at the black seal engraving in the center of his palm. The corners of his lips were raised and a smile of relief appeared.

Chapter 21: Disturbance at the Training Grounds

Northern Spiritual Academy, Training Ground.

Many students were sweating as if it had rained. A loud and clear cry, mixed with vitality, spread out far away.

Mu Chen was sitting under the shades of a tree. He lazily leaned on the trunk as he stared idly at the various heated duels. It was obvious that these duels did not interest him.

“Oi, although you have excellent results right now, you shouldn’t be so sloppy, right?” A slender figure suddenly blocked Mu Chen’s view. Then, Tang Qian’Er’s voice playfully rang out.

Mu Chen stared at the slim waistline in front of him. Then, he slowly moved his eyes up. The girl’s apricot color dress, slightly lifted up soft chest and slender figure made her quite attractive.

As he looked at the girl’s beautiful face, Mu Chen did a stretch and said: “It’s not that I’m acting sloppy, but these duels are useless to me.”

In the Spiritual Road, he did not know how many times he experienced battles of life and death. At that location, nobody was able to use any Spiritual Energy, thus they must push their minds to the limit and use their wisdom. Just a little bit of negligence and the cruel fate of being disqualified would occur. Then, they would only be able to wait at the safety zone until the trial was over.

And compared to that place, the gentle duels between students in the Northern Spiritual Academy would have no effects on Mu Chen.

“Hmph, you only know how to boast.” Tang Qian’Er hummed softly. Yet her beautiful eyes could not help but look at the comforting face of his. There was a gentle smiling intent in his black eyes as well as a sense of calmness deep inside that not many people possess at his age. It made others slightly immersed in them.

Tang Qian'Er also sat down beside Mu Chen. She then stretched out her slender hands and unlocked her ponytail. Her bluish black hair suddenly poured down like a waterfall. The scene was so touching and it instantly attracted a lot of attention over. Envious looks were thrown to Mu Chen in the end. This person really is great to have such a treatment.

"That's right, how did your training in the Limitless Death Seal go? There weren't any problems, right?" Tang Qian'Er tilted her head and she asked with her eyebrow lifted.

Mu Chen smiled. He extended his palm over towards Tang Qian'Er. In his palm, a looming black seal slowly came out while emitting a cold chill.

"You succeeded?" Tang Qian'Er gently opened her mouth as she made a shocked expression. She could not help but immediately grabbed onto Mu Chen's hand and stared at the black seal on his palm. Her fingers poked at the black seal. A cold chill penetrated through it and made her body shiver.

"It can only be considered as succeeding the first step. But it must be continuously nurtured by my Spiritual Energy." Mu Chen shook his head and he moved his gaze. He noticed that a lot of eyes were heating up in the surrounding and immediately let out a soft cough. He said: "You'll pull in a lot of hatred for me if you continue to do this."

Only then did Tang Qian'Er recover, her face instantly turned red and she quickly let go of Mu Chen's hand.

Not that far away, Luo Tong stared at this scene. His eyes were a bit sulky. Tang Qian'Er was the East Branch's flower. He naturally liked her as well. Moreover, Tang Qian'Er's father was also one of the Northern Spiritual Realm's Territory Lord. His father had once mentioned that if he was able to obtain Tang Qian'Er's love, then their strength would increase tremendously after the Luo Territory and Tang Territory teamed up.

This idea was definitely good, but Luo Tong did not manage to obtain this girl's heart like his father had wished for. Instead, Tang Qian'Er treated him quite cold. This made him extremely frustrated. And now, he saw how close Mu Chen and Tang Qian'Er were and he was naturally

jealous.

“Brother Luo, that guy really is insolent.” Jiang Li and Teng Yong stood beside Luo Tong and jealously stared at Mu Chen as they spoke.

Although they were unhappy seeing this scene, they knew that Mu Chen wasn’t that easy to deal with. Therefore, they did not act arrogantly as they would usually and pick a quarrel with him.

“He is only just a newbie that recently entered the Heaven Class. Yet he dares put on airs in front of me.”

Luo Tong’s eyes were dark and his eyes immediately turned around. He stared at Tan Qingshan, who was sweating like mad as he trained nearby, and let out cold smile: “Jiang Li, go find Tan Qingshan and have a duel with him, remember, you must take good care of the newbies.”

Jiang Li was startled for a moment. He hesitated and said: “That Tan Qingshan has a good relationship with Mu Chen. If I were to cause trouble for Tan Qingshan, then Mu Chen would probably…”

“I’m here, what are you afraid of?” Luo Tong frowned as he asked.

When Jiang Li noticed the dissatisfaction within Luo Tong, he did not dare to say anything more. He immediately got up and walked quickly towards Tan Qingshan.

Tan Qingshan, who was in the middle of his training, noticed that Jiang Li was coming for him. He frowned for a bit, but he did not say anything as he was not very talkative. He continued to practice a fist technique.

“Tan Qingshan, I’ll have a duel with you for a bit. This way, you will be able to improve much faster. As an old hand, I should take care of you newbies.” Jiang Li said as he directed a malicious smile towards Tan Qingshan.

After the surrounding students witnessed this, they immediately understood what Jiang Li wanted to do. However, nobody dared to say anything because of Luo Tong’s dark gaze coming from nearby. This kind of duel was definitely quite normal.

“These guys are really going too far!” When Tang Qian’Er saw this scene, she immediately frowned. She tried to get up, but her wrist was pulled by Mu Chen.

“What is it?” Tang Qian’Er looked at Mu Chen suspiciously. It was obvious that Luo Tong and the others troubled Tan Qingshan in order to allow Mu Chen to see it. It could be regarded as a deliberate show of strength as a warning.

“Although Tan Qingshan is silent, he has a stubborn personality. Sometimes, he does not need any help. Do not underestimate a man’s pride.” Mu Chen said faintly.

“The act of old hands bullying newcomers would appear everywhere. If I were to come forward and help him, it might allow him to be less troubled. However, this isn’t something that he needs. Moreover, in extreme situations, he might even drift apart from me. So in order to avoid this kind of trouble, he must use his own abilities to tell the others that he isn’t someone that everybody can just bully.”

“But he isn’t Jiang Li’s opponent.” Tang Qian’Er said.

“Victory isn’t just about beating down the other.” Mu Chen smiled slightly and said: “As long as he is able to let the others know that he isn’t a pushover and that they would have to pay some sort of price in order to push him around, it is fine.”

Tang Qian’Er thought for a moment. She felt that there were some truths within Mu Chen’s words. However, she still hesitated and said: “Hmph, even though you’re younger than me by a year, why did you pretend to be so old?”

Mu Chen smiled. He looked at Tan Qingshan whose face color changed. The latter clenched and loosened his hands in a cycle. He seemed to struggle for a bit before he stared towards Mu Chen.

Mu Chen gave a smile to Tan Qingshan and gently nodded.

Seeing Mu Chen’s smile, Tan Qingshan gripped his hands tightly. Fierceness appeared within his eyes and he coldly said: “Then, senior Jiang

Li, please advise me!”

Jiang Li was startled when he saw that Tan Qingshan actually accepted and immediately let out a sneer. He really is a boy who had no idea of his own limitations.

The two individuals slowly retreated backwards and many students surrounded them. However, it was obvious that many of them felt that Tan Qingshan was really unlucky this time.

Under the crowd’s gaze, the duel instantly began.

It was just like everyone had expected. This duel was simply one-sided as their strength was at different levels. However, everybody’s sympathy gradually changed shortly after.

Because they saw Tan Qingshan continued to charge at Jiang Li without the slightest fear of death. Even when he was repeatedly kicked down by Jiang Li, he did not show any signs of surrendering. The crazy imposing manner coming from his red eyes even shocked Jiang Li.

Bang Bang Bang!

The two figures interweaved at the grounds. Although Tan Qingshan was quite helpless, he risked being hit by Jiang Li a few times in order to bite at him.

When Jiang Li blew away Tan Qingshan again with his fist, the latter continued to pounce forward and bit into his arm. It left a bloodstain. Jiang Li finally could not stand the mad wolf-like imposing manner and retreated a few steps. He shouted out: “You’re crazy!”

Tan Qingshan ignored it and he pounced forward again with his red eyes.

“I quit!” Jiang Li hurriedly escape. He screamed out loud as he stared at Tang Qingshan’s red eyes.

The surrounding students rushed forward and pulled at Tan Qingshan. However, the latter was overly crazy right now and they failed to stop him for a moment. This scene made many students tremble. This Tan

Qingshan was truly crazy.

Under the surrounding students' shouts, Tan Qingshan gradually calmed down. He had cracked lips, his entire body was filled with pain and a bruise was even on his face. However, his eyes were filled with excitement.

In front of him, Jiang Li's clothes were also ripped a lot. Although he did not have any injuries, his filthy face and the horror in it were visible to everyone.

Tan Qingshan might have lost in strength, but he won in terms of imposing manner. This was enough to make the other Heaven Class students look at him with new eyes.

Tan Qingshan wiped the blood from his mouth and looked towards Mu Chen. The latter smiled and gave him a thumbs up: "Amazing."

Tan Qingshan rubbed his head and smiled. He felt gratitude towards Mu Chen as he had given him a chance to win back his pride with his own efforts. In the future, there aren't many old hands that would probably come to bully him.

"That guy has quite a crazy nature." Tang Qian'Er also smiled. Tan Qingshan's craziness earlier even made her slightly alarmed.

Mu Chen smiled as he nodded his head. Then, he stood up.

"What are you doing?" Tang Qian'Er asked suspiciously.

"Tan Qingshan did what he was supposed to do. Next, it's my turn. Others tried to show their strength as a warning, so I must pay them back. Otherwise, it would be quite troublesome." Mu Chen smiled and he gripped his right hand tightly: "Also, I wanted to find a person to test how powerful the "Limitless Death Seal" is."

Mu Chen slowly walked forward. Then under many people's gazes, he entered the grounds and stared at the gloomy Luo Tong.

"Senior Luo Tong, I recently learned a Spiritual Art and I wanted to invite senior over to give me some guidance. I hope that you would advise me as well."

Chapter 22: Might of the Death Seal

When Mu Chen's voice rang out in the training ground, the lively atmosphere suddenly quieted down. Then, countless astonished eyes remained fixed on him.

Who would have imagined that Mu Chen would actually take the initiative to fight with Luo Tong? Could it be that he did not know that the latter was always finding an opportunity to trouble him? Why would he go on his own and charge at him now?

"Qian'Er, what is Mu Chen doing? That Luo Tong isn't that easy to deal with." Mo Ling went up to Tang Qian'Er and asked with a serious expression as he stared at Mu Chen's back.

Tang Qian'Er shook her head. Although her eyes showed a bit of worry, she did not reveal it. She only let out a shallow laughand said: "It's fine, he knows what he is doing."

Mo Ling could only give a bitter smile as he nodded. This duel followed the rules. Even if he wanted to speak out and help him, he could not step in. He can only hope that Mu Chen had a bit of skill. Otherwise, Luo Tong probably would not let go of this opportunity of tormenting him.

"Ho ho"

While being surrounded in many gazes from nearby, Luo Tong was stunned. His originally overcast face slowly turned cold. From his mouth, a cold laugh slowly escaped his lips.

"Looks like you believe that you've gotten used to the place after staying at the heaven class for the past few days. So you can finally begin to act arrogant?" Luo Tong stood up, his eyes were coldly fixed on Mu Chen.

"What are you saying? I simply want to have a little duel with you." Mu Chen chuckled with a gentle smile as he spoke: "Also, isn't it something natural for a senior to have a little duel with newcomers? That's what Jiang Li said earlier.

Over at the side, Jiang Li's facial color changed unnaturally after he

heard Mu Chen mentioning him. However, he deliberately pretended to be fierce as he glared at Mu Chen. In his heart, he wondered why this guy would dare to cause trouble for Luo Tong. Could it be that he didn't know that Luo Tong had the strength of a Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase?

Luo Tong stared at Mu Chen's handsome face which wore a gentle smile. In his heart, however, he was extremely furious. That smile seemed like it was mocking him, but he also coldly grinned, and said: "Since you have that desire, then as your senior I should agree to it, might as well, might as well..."

After saying those three words, the coldness in Luo Tong's eyes, was undisguised. From the surface of his body, a tyrannical fluctuation was emitted as spiritual energy slowly entwined and escaped from his body.

The students nearby spectating, all quickly moved back a bit as if they were afraid that they would be caught in it.

Mu Chen extended his fists: "Please"

Luo Tong did not hold back at all. As the color of his face darkened, he released his spiritual energy without reservation. He took a step forward and shot forward like an arrow. Accompanied with the sound of an explosion, his fist blasted outwards and it relentlessly charged towards Mu Chen.

When the spectators saw how ferocious Luo Tong was, they were shocked. How was this a little duel? Luo Tong obviously had the intention to beat up Mu Chen.

Mu Chen looked at the quickly approaching Luo Tong. However, he did not have any intention of fleeing or hiding, a dark black spiritual energy wrapped around his fist. He then took on a stance to take the blow head on and collided directly against Luo Tong.

He wanted to get a good grasp on the strength of a Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase.

A low sound reverberated out as their fists collided heavily. Both parties' spiritual energy smashed against each other and formed energy waves. It

instantly caused strong whirls of air to appear around them.

The energy waves swept across the area and the two figures were both shaken. Mu Chen trembled and was pushed back a number of steps. On the other hand, Luo Tong was only pushed back one step. It was evident that Luo Tong had the upper hand in a direct confrontation.

“Regardless of how impressive your spiritual energy is, there will still be this difference in level when facing against me; even if I suppress you, I can suppress you to death!” Luo Tong’s eyes were cold. He was in the Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase while Mu Chen was only in the Middle Phase. Although it might seem like a small difference, the difference was enough to oppress the other.

“Didn’t your father tell you to just swallow your pride and behave if you don’t have the capability? Since you’ve taken the initiative to come, you’re bound to lose face!”

After hearing this, Mu Chen gently laughed as he said: ”While I was learning how to endure, you were still in school being a good little boy. And the reason why I need to endure is because I met someone I couldn’t beat at that point of time. But how regretful, in my eyes, you don’t amount to much.”

“Then let me tell you, what kind of price you will need to pay today!”

A hint of dreariness appeared in Luo Tong’s eyes. He extended two fingers, forming it into a blade as a dark green energy violently surged out. At his fingertips, a sword blade seemed to appear and disappear as it emitted out a sharp fluctuation.

“Great Luo’s Sword Technique?” Upon seeing the glowing green sword tip emerging from Luo Tong’s fingers, their expression changed and they shouted in shock.

“The Luo Territory’s Great Luo’s Sword Technique?”

Mu Chen’s gaze swept past the glowing green blade. Spiritual Tier Low Rank, Great Luo’s Sword Technique. This is the technique that made the Luo Territory’s Territory Lord famous. He never imagined that Luo Tong

would have trained in it. However, judging from its appearance, it wasn't up to standard yet. However, it was already a very impressive feat to execute it at the Spiritual Movement Stage.

"Swoosh!"

Luo Tong didn't give Mu Chen any time to think. He had a cold gaze as his body charged forward. His fingers were like a long sword. As his fingers cut through the air, he violently stabbed towards Mu Chen.

Where ever the blade passed, the air seemed as if it was torn apart.

Mu Chen's eyes were focused solely at sword tip coming from the violent stab. This sharpness was enough to give someone goose bumps. He slowly clenched his right hand.

A dark black Spiritual Energy circulated through his body. It was infused endlessly into the center of Mu Chen's right palm. The looming black Seal in his palm gradually emerged at this moment.

A cold fluctuation poured out.

A dark black light fiercely emitted out from Mu Chen's palm. At this moment, Mu Chen seemed to be holding a black sun. The cold fluctuation coming from it made others alarmed.

Mu Chen stamped with his foot and his figure leaped forward like a leopard. He chose not to dodge and met directly against Luo Tong's fierce and aggressive move. The spectators were all dumbfounded when they saw this scene.

"Go to hell!"

Luo Tong shouted out gravely. The glowing green sword did not slow down as it streaked forward like a lightning towards Mu Chen's throat.

The fist which contained a dense black light was also thrusted forward at the same time. A black light, which was like a sun, directly collided against the glowing green sword tip.

Violent Spiritual Energy Fluctuations exploded out. It felt as if the ground quivered as well. However, the eyes of the students remained

fixated at the place where the green sword tip collided with the black light.

"Break!"

Mu Chen's eyes flashed a cold light. Within his aurasea, spiritual energy was being poured out without restrain. The black seal also violently trembled in the centre of the palm. It actually appeared in front of his fist and landed heavily onto the glowing green sword tip.

Kacha!

The black seal blasted out, causing the glowing green sword tip to pause for a moment. Then, everybody heard a slight breaking sound. Soon after that, they widened their eyes as cracks appeared on the glowing green sword tip.

In the end, the glowing green sword tip shattered completely. A hint of horror appeared within Luo Tong's eyes as his body shot back helplessly.

Mu Chen did not follow up with an attack. The black seal vanished as he flipped his palm. Moreover, the fluctuations also gradually dissipated. However, the spectators didn't make a single sound. They stared in astonishment at the slender figure. It was obvious the unthinkable had just happened. Mu Chen not only blocked Luo Tong's greatest skill, he even managed to force him to pull back.

"How could this be..."

Jiang Li and Teng Yong were stunned as watched this scene happen. Luo Tong, who was a Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase, actually lost to Mu Chen, who was only a Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase.

"This..." As Mo Ling witnessed this scene, his heart was flustered.

Tang Qian'Er let out a breath of relief and she relaxed her slender hand. This guy is truly impressive.

"Senior Luo Tong, thank you."

Mu Chen cupped his hands at Luo Tong as he chuckled. However, his eyes were fixed on his own palm. The black seal has faded quite a bit. If it's just based on power, this Limitless Death Seal would not be at the level

of a Common Tier High Rank. It might only be a Common Tier because the requirement on having a certain degree of domineering Spiritual Energy was too high.

However, the consumption of Spiritual Energy was enormous for the Limitless Death Seal. The earlier attack had consumed half of his aurasea's spiritual energy. Although it was his first time controlling it so it was not perfect, even a Spiritual Tier Low Rank Spiritual Arts can't compare to its consumption.

Luo Tong's face turned pale. He didn't think that the results would end up like this, so he couldn't speak for a few moments. Mu Chen's earlier aggressive attack shocked him greatly. In that instant, he felt a great danger.

"This guy actually had such a powerful Spiritual Art. Did his father prepare this for him?" Luo Tong gritted his teeth as he thought. He had practiced this Great Luo's Sword Technique for a very long time before it came to fruition. Yet, he still lost to Mu Chen. Just how many tricks did he have?

Mu Chen did not care about Luo Tong, who was reading too much in it. He achieved his goal of frightening Luo Tong. This guy will probably restrain himself in the future. Therefore, he clapped his hands and turned away to leave.

"Mu Chen, come with me for a bit."

As he turned away, a faint voice suddenly appeared from nearby. He was slightly shocked and he saw Teacher Mo standing not so far away from him as he tilted his head over.

Mu Chen was stunned. He exchanged gazes with Tang Qian'Er for a moment. Under the watch of many students, he hesitated for a moment before following Teacher Mo.

Upon nearing a quiet forest, Teacher Mo stopped walking. Then, he turned his body and narrowed his eyes. His voice gradually became more severe and he said: " You've trained in the Limitless Death Seal?"

Chapter 23: The True Power of the Limitless Death Seal

“You’ve trained in the Limitless Death Seal?”

Mu Chen stared at the serious expression on Teacher Mo’s face. He could not help but let out a hollow laugh. Then, he nodded his head. With the latter’s Spirit Stage strength, it was obvious that he could not hide it from him.

“You shouldn’t have the right to train in it yet?” Teacher Mo said in a deep voice.

Mu Chen blinked, but he did not speak. He had already trained in it already. Could it be that he’ll make him return it back?

Teacher Mo stared at Mu Chen’s face. His serious expression faltered for a moment. It seems that this boy did not care about his authority. He could only shake his head helplessly and say: “Can you not be this reckless?”

“I only wanted to try it out. If there are any problems, I will immediately stop training in it. I care about my life more than anyone else.” Mu Chen smiled and replied.

Teacher Mo could only stare at him sourly. He hesitated for a moment before saying: “Did you succeed?”

“I succeeded in its initial step.” Mu Chen stretched out his hand. In the center of his palm, a black seal appeared vaguely.

Teacher Mo stared at the black seal in Mu Chen’s hand. The corner of his lips twitched slightly. Although he was aware of it earlier, his heart could not help but tremble when he saw that Mu Chen was able to successfully train in this Limitless Death Seal in such a short period of time.

This talent, as expected from the person who obtained the qualifications for the Spiritual Road.

“Are you interested in this Limitless Death Seal?” Teacher Mo glanced at Mu Chen. Ever since he brought Mu Chen to the Spiritual Arts Room Heaven Level, he discovered that Mu Chen took a fancy to this Spiritual Art.

“I could feel that this Spiritual Art isn’t that simple.” Mu Chen thought for a moment before he spoke. Although this Spiritual Art may only seem to be a Common Tier High Rank, he could faintly feel that something was a bit off with it.

“Oh?” Teacher Mo lifted an eyebrow and stared at Mu Chen.

“It feels that this Limitless Death Seal seems to carry a great potential. The training on the surface seems to be the initial step...I feel that there should be some sort of method to make this Limitless Death Seal even stronger.” Mu Chen muttered to himself.

Teacher Mo slightly narrowed his eyes. A trace of surprise surged through his eyes.

Mu Chen stared at Teacher Mo and suddenly let out a smile. He said with a cunning voice: “Teacher Mo should be quite familiar with the Limitless Death Seal, right? From what I can tell, you seem to be quite interested in it.”

Teacher Mo glanced at Mu Chen, who was like a sly fox. He helplessly nodded his head and said: “I, too, have trained in this Limitless Death Seal.”

As he said this, he extended out his palm. In the center of his palm, a black seal also appeared on it. However, the one that came from Teacher Mo was a lot more completely and darker than the black seal at the center of Mu Chen’s hand. The cold chill fluctuation also far surpassed the one that Mu Chen formed.

Mu Chen stared at the black seal in Teacher Mo’s hand in shock. He gently smiled as he said: “It really is just like I expected. This Spiritual Art really isn’t that simple. Otherwise, why would Teacher Mo select it?”

Teacher Mo is a genuine powerhouse at the Spirit Stage level. He is

ranked high up in the Northern Spiritual Realm. If the Limitless Death Seal was only just an ordinary Common Tier Spiritual Art, he would not go train in it.

"You rascal..."

Teacher Mo gave off a bitter laugh. This boy is quite slippery. He thought for a moment and slowly said: "Do you want to know how to let the Limitless Death Seal reveal its true power?"

Mu Chen's eyes lit up. He nodded his head heavily.

"It's simple." Teacher Mo chuckled and he extended his left hand over as well. Then, Mu Chen was astonished as he noticed that there was an exactly the same black seal at the center of Teacher Mo's left palm.

So with the Limitless Death Seal, you could form more than one Death Seals!

Mu Chen's eyes glowed. A touch of excitement suddenly appeared on his face. He stared heatedly at Teacher Mo and murmured: "The reason why there weren't any other steps for training the Limitless Death Seal isn't because there weren't any. It is because the amazing point of the Death Seal is that you could form multiple Death Seals. By overlapping the Death Seals, you will be able to reveal its true power?"

Teacher Mo nodded and said: "However, the Limitless Death Seal has a harsh requirement for Spiritual Energy. I have tried my best, yet I was only able to form two seals. As for the Death Seals, the more you have, the more terrifying the backlash from the impact would be. I had once attempted to form the third Death Seal, but I was nearly gravely injured by its shock. After that, I did not dare to try it again."

Mu Chen also had the same feeling. When he formed the first Death Seal, he went through great lengths just to withstand the impact coming from the formation of the seal. He really did not know if he could endure the second seal being formed.

"Right now, you have successfully formed the first Death Seal, do not rush to condense the second seal. Just so an accident wouldn't occur."

Teacher Mo warned him.

Mu Chen nodded. Although he longed for the true power of the Limitless Death Seal, he also understood there were no benefits for being too ambitious.

Seeing this, Teacher Mo did not say anything more and waved his hand. Mu Chen immediately turned and left. The moment he turned his head around, he saw Tang Qian'Er waiting for him.

"Are you alright? Did Teacher Mo do anything to you?" Tang Qian'Er immediately asked these questions when she say Mu Chen coming out. After all, Mu Chen did break the rules a bit when he learned the Limitless Death Seal. Therefore, she was worried that he would be punished.

Mu Chen smiled as he shook his head. Then, he lowered his head and looked at the black seal in his palm. His heart heated up. This Limitless Death Seal was truly extraordinary. It looks like he would have to put more effort into it in the future.

In the middle of the night, Mu Chen was quietly sitting cross-legged. His hands were changing seals again. A trace of dark black Spiritual Energy circulated at the tips of his fingers.

Kacha.

However, when the dark black Spiritual Energy weaved together and attempted to form a seal, the Spiritual Energy suddenly went out of control and the fluctuation dissipated away.

Mu Chen stared at his empty palm. He shook his head helplessly. Just earlier, he attempted to see if he could form the second seal, but the results were obvious. He failed.

It seems that the difficulty for the second Death Seal was much harder than the first one.

"Looks like I can only slowly do this."

Mu Chen muttered to himself. Then, he recovered his mind and closed his eyes. He began to circulate the Great Pagoda Art and absorbed the

Spiritual Aura from the world. In the end, the Spiritual Aura turned into dark black Spiritual Energy and entered his aurasea.

In addition to this, Mu Chen would also separate a bit of his Spiritual Energy and let it flow down the meridians in his arm in order to nurture the black Death Seal. It made the color of the black seal become deeper.

Because of the fight with Luo Tong yesterday at the training grounds, Mu Chen's reputation also spread out within the East Branch Heaven Class. The veteran students did not dare underestimate this newbie, who just rose up. Also, Tan Qingshan made others understand that that he wasn't a seemingly quiet boy, who would be pushed around, with his fierce attitude yesterday. Therefore, nobody came to trouble him in the days after. Mu Chen had truly obtained peace and quiet.

During this peaceful time, Mu Chen began to focus his efforts into cultivation. He would be at the cultivation field to borrow the Third Rank Spirit Convergence Array at daytime. The Spiritual Energy within his aurasea become denser and denser as the days passed.

When it was nighttime, he would nurture the Limitless Death Seal on his palm. He also gradually attempted to form the second Death Seal. But without any exception, he failed.

But despite the repeated failures, Mu Chen did not give up. He could vaguely feel that he was getting more proficient in the Seal Method for forming the Limitless Death Seal through the repeated failures. His control at the Limitless Death Seal became more and more smoothly.

The feeling of him getting closer and closer to success made Mu Chen experience a little bit of joy.

The time quietly went on and in a blink of an eye, approximately half a month passed.

During this half a month, the Spiritual Energy inside Mu Chen's aurasea became denser and denser. Although he had not advanced to the Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase, it was definitely more powerful than half a month ago.

While his Spiritual Energy progressed, Mu Chen's training in the Limitless Death Seal also became more proficient. His control over the first Death Seal reached a certain degree of precision. It was not like when he was facing against Luo Tong and would cause unnecessary consumption.

As for the condensation of the second Death Seal, Mu Chen could faintly feel that he had reached it. However, his Spiritual Energy wasn't enough so he was not able to condense it successfully. This made him feel a bit regretful.

In the cultivation field, when Mu Chen heard that the bell ringing, which represented that the class was over, he opened his eyes and began to feel the Spiritual Energy surging in his aurasea. He smiled gently and stretched.

"Hey."

A sweet voice came from beside him. Mu Chen tilted his head. He only noticed Tang Qian'Er smiling as she stared at him with anticipation.

"What is it?" Mu Chen asked.

"We will be heading for training at the Northern Spiritual Field tomorrow." Tang Qian'Er smiled as she said.

"We're heading out tomorrow?"

Mu Chen paused for a moment before he smiled and nodded his head. He was completely immersed in his training during this time, so he nearly forgot about the time. However, it was still fine. Seeing that he could not form the second Death Seal because he did not have enough Spiritual Energy, if he was able to find some Elixirs in the Northern Spiritual Field, it would solve his pressing problem.

"You have to work harder during this time's Northern Spiritual Field training. It is said that the West Branch's Liu Mubai will also participate. The one that formed a team with him is the West Branch's Hong Ling. We can't lose to them." Tang Qian'Er said seriously.

"Liu Mubai, huh..."

Mu Chen let out a slight smile. That person is the genuine number one in the Northern Spiritual Academy. And are they going to confront each other for the first time during this Northern Spiritual Field Training?

How interesting.

Mu Chen's black eyes shined. He was not afraid of anyone in the Spiritual Road and it was exactly the same in the Northern Spiritual Realm.

Chapter 24: Promise

The Northern Spiritual Field is located at the northwestern side of the Northern Spiritual Realm. It is approximately a day away from the Northern Spiritual Academy. This vast territory could be considered as the mostpopular place within the Northern Spiritual Realm. Although the Northern Spiritual Field is filled with many dangers, the higher the risk, the higher the rewards. To obtain these rewards, many individuals would let their successors take their position before entering the Northern Spiritual Field. Some individuals would be able to obtain the rewards, but some would be buried under the rotten leaves.

Heading towards the Northern Spiritual Field for training was considered a rather significant event in the Northern Spiritual Academy. Almost half of the Heaven Class students would participate.As they would quietly train inside the Academy, they knew that they needed real combat the most.

And only real combat would toughen a person's mind. This is an essential thing required on the path of becoming strong.

Not only was the Northern Spiritual Field filled with a variety of Spiritual Beasts, there were also a diverse group of disreputable individuals, including some notorious characters.

Compared to the bloody and ruthless characters, the Northern Spiritual Academy's students were like a sheep. Even though they weren't weak, but they would not be a decent opponent for these ruthless individuals if a fight really happened.

Therefore, the Northern Spiritual Academy also sent out a powerful guard force in order to protect the students. The East Branch's Teacher Mo and the West Branch's Teacher Xi would also follow. These two individuals were genuine powerhouses at the Spirit Stage. There shouldn't be many souls that would dare harbor evil intentions in front of two Spirit Stage powerhouses.

In the early morning, the Northern Spiritual Academy's Field Training

Team began to leave. However, they only reached the outskirts of the Northern Spiritual Field when it was sunset. Since it was getting darker, they set up their camp when they got there.

As the darkness enveloped the place, a campfire rose from the camp. It was evident that many of the Northern Spiritual Academy's students would not come to such a place. Thus, many of them were excited and a lively atmosphere surrounded the camp. This lively atmosphere made others stare at them in the darkness. A majority of them were Adventurers and they knew that these individuals were hot-headed individuals from the Northern Spiritual Academy. They only pouted in the darkness as they walked away.

In their eyes, these student goody-two-shoes would probably be trembling in fear when they face a vicious Spiritual Beast.

Mu Chen sat cross-legged beside the campfire. He stared at the darkness outside of the camp. In the far distance, there were a variety of bloody roars echoing from beasts.

This scene was somewhat familiar to him.

But only the atmosphere was much less brutal and bloody compared to his memories of the Spiritual Road.

Mu Chen trembled for a moment. Then, a slender hand suddenly extended from behind and patted his shoulder.

When the hand landed on Mu Chen's shoulder, his black eyes instantly turned cold. His entire body tensed up like a jaguar coming in for its prey. His hand shot out and clenched the hand tightly.

"Ouch."

A cry of pain rang out. Only then did Mu Chen recover and he turned around to look at Tang Qian'Er, who was behind him. The coldness within his eyes quickly disappeared as he touched his head awkwardly and let go of the hand.

"What are you doing? It hurts." Tang Qian'Er angrily complained at Mu Chen as she sat down beside him and rubbed her wrist.

“Sorry.” Mu Chen let out a bitter laugh. The one year trial in the Spiritual Road made his body remain alert instinctively. This vigilant instinct was always suppressed by him when he returned to the Northern Spiritual Realm. However, he returned back to a familiar environment again, so he actually awakened this vigilance again.

“What is it?”

Tang Qian’Er pouted, but her eyes remained fixed on Mu Chen. After all, girls are always quite attentive. She felt a cold chill when Mu Chen gripped her wrist earlier. If she did not let out a sound of pain, Mu Chen might have directly crushed her wrist.

Mu Chen stared at the campfire in front of him and was silent for a moment. He said: “If someone did the same action as you earlier in the Spiritual Road to me, perhaps I would have killed him. Because if I don’t kill him, I might be the one that will be killed.”

Tang Qian’Er froze for a moment and she stared at the calm boy. When he said the word “kill”, his face did not change much. It was as if he was accustomed to it.

“Then the Spiritual Road seems to be quite terrifying.” Tang Qian’Er muttered. In their eyes, the Spiritual Road was quite mysterious. It is said that many individuals who left the Spiritual Road would not talk about that matter. However, the people that came out of the Spiritual Road were all extremely powerful. Thus, it made many young boys and girls like Tang Qian’Er to yearn for that place.

However, as naïve individuals, they did not know that they must walk out from this insane place to obtain an abnormal strength.

Mu Chen gently smiled and muttered to himself: “At that place, everybody is considered a competitor. They are all extremely cruel competitors as well. There are a few crazy individuals, who would smile peacefully towards you, yet they would plunge a dagger into your chest in the next moment.

“Therefore, trust is something rare at that place. However, if you are able to find it, it will be something that you will cherish for the rest of your

life."

Mu Chen quietly breathed out. His face looked gentle as he recalled the girl with silver hair. She was a crazy person that even he felt troubled about. During the half a year when she chased him, Mu Chen fought with her three times. He won twice, but for the last time, the girl reversed the situation and a black long sword, which was like a ghost in the night sky, stopped at his throat.

It was obvious that she won that time completely. She only needed to gently stab at him and he would have remained in the Spiritual Road forever.

However, she did not stab at him. In the darkness, her glass-like eyes stared at him for a long time. Then, she slowly retracted her sword and said in a low voice: "I won't kill you. You should come with me."

At that moment, Mu Chen was stunned for a while. Then, he asked the question he wanted to know since six months ago: "Why did you chase after me for so long? If I didn't save you, you would have died a long time ago."

When he first met her, she was caught in a dangerous situation. Five cunning crazy individuals wanted to kill her. Originally, Mu Chen did not plan on helping her, but maybe because those individuals were annoying or perhaps it was the sadness that appeared in her glass-like eyes, he gave in.

He saved her, yet he also got into trouble with the five of them. For a week after that, Mu Chen brought the injured her as they escaped. However, Mu Chen gradually defeated the five troublesome individuals in the following ten days after that. He killed three of them and the remaining two gave up.

But just when he finally got rid of the five troublesome individuals, he could not relax at all. The girl, who had never spoken a single word to him, pulled out her sword and pursued him for half a year.

When the girl heard Mu Chen's question, she seemed to ponder for a moment. Then, she hesitated before he heard the answer, which nearly

made Mu Chen puke out blood: “I don’t want to have a good opinion of you. I only wanted to focus on my training. If I have a favorable opinion of you, I will be distracted.”

“You’re crazy.”

At that moment, Mu Chen could not endure it and blurted out these words.

“Then, what are you doing now?” Mu Chen powerlessly asked.

“I planned on killing you before, but it feels like I can’t do it.”

The girl considered this seriously. Faint moonlight illuminated the beautiful face that would eventually cause a disaster. She frowned and said: “It feels that I still have a favorable opinion of you after these six months.”

Mu Chen wordlessly stared at the sky. They had hunted each other for half a year now, yet you actually say that you have a favorable opinion of me?

“I did not kill you just now, so you owe me your life. Therefore, you will form a team with me. I’ll kill you when I don’t have a favorable opinion of you.”

“Are you trying to raise a dog?”

“If I don’t kill you by then, I’ll let you go.”

Mu Chen shook his head helplessly. He turned around and said: “I’m not interested.”

“I can protect you from all the backstabs. As long as you do not harm me, I will protect you whether it is in the Spiritual Road or in the Great Thousand World.” The girl hesitated for a moment before she gently said towards Mu Chen, who turned around.

Mu Chen’s footsteps stopped. The girl’s gentle voice seemed to penetrate the space and directly hit his heart. It made his eyes become warmer.

“You usually do not speak, yet I never thought that it would be so

touching when you do."

Mu Chen turned around and smiled. He let out a sigh and he stretched out a hand towards her as he walked over.

"Then, let's cooperate happily."

The girl's face, which always remained calm and emotionless, suddenly let out a faint smile. At that moment, her beauty actually made the moonlight lusterless.

Afterwards, she stretched out her cold hand and gently shook Mu Chen's hand.

This is my promise to you.

Chapter 25: Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence

The warm firelight from the rising campfire illuminated Tang Qian'Er's body. However, she still felt quite chilly. This chill came from Mu Chen's description of the Spiritual Road that she had once longed to enter.

"It seems that the Spiritual Road isn't a wonderful place, it's lucky that I didn't go. Otherwise, not even my bones would remain." Tang Qian'Er's heart beat irregularly as she spoke. She did not imagine just how anxious she would be if she had to survive in a place where she could not trust anyone.

"It wasn't a nice place from the start."

Mu Chen smiled and lifted his head. He noticed that Teacher Mo was waving to everyone and many students turned their gaze over.

"For this time's Northern Spiritual Field Training, this place will be our camp. All of you will head out tomorrow from this place and venture into the Northern Spiritual Field for training, where you will confront directly against Spiritual Beasts. Before this happens, I would like to remind you that the Spiritual Beasts are divided into three ranks: High, Middle, Low. Most of the ones at the outskirts of the Northern Spiritual Field will be Low Rank Spiritual Beasts. However, you will still need to team up in order to deal with it.

Teacher Mo looked around as his calm voice echoed throughout the camp. Every single student was listening carefully. They knew that this isn't a mock battle, but a true fight. A single mistake would cause them to become food for Spiritual Beasts.

"The Low Rank Spiritual Beasts are approximately at the strength of a Spiritual Movement Stage; The Middle Rank Spiritual Beasts are Spiritual Rotation Stage; The High Rank Spiritual Beasts are comparable to the Spirit Stage. In the depths of the Northern Spiritual Field, High Rank Spiritual Beasts exist. Therefore, you should definitely not enter depths of the Northern Spiritual Field!"

When Teacher Mo said to this point, his voice had already become quite

severe. Even he would find it a hassle to deal with the High Rank Spiritual Beasts in the depths of the Northern Spiritual Field. These students that just came out from the academy would be like a defenseless sheep.

Everybody nodded their heads. They weren't foolish enough to joke around with their own lives. Not to mention a High Rank Spiritual Beasts, they would run far away if they encounter a Middle Rank Spiritual Beast.

"At the end of this training, the each member of the top three teams would be able to obtain an Accumulation Elixir."

Teacher Mo relaxed his expression slightly. He stared at the boys and girls, whose eyes lit up, and smiled as he said: "So, in order to obtain an excellent result, you should work together with your companion. With your strength right now, you must cooperate in order to survive in the outskirts of the Northern Spiritual Field."

"Yes!"

The students replied in unison.

"After you hunted down the Spiritual Beasts, you should remember to collect the Soul Essence. Although the Low Rank Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence isn't something that a Spirit Stage powerhouse would ingest, it will be used to evaluate your performance."

Mu Chen nodded his head slightly. A Spirit Stage powerhouse has the ability to ingest Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence. With their strength, they naturally wouldn't take a fancy to a common Spiritual Beast.

"Teacher Mo, you are also a Spirit Stage powerhouse, what Beast Spirit did you ingest?" A few students asked in curiosity. They were quite interested in the special ability of ingesting a Beast Spirit that a Spirit Stage possesses.

When Teacher Mo heard these words, he hesitated a bit. Then, he immediately formed a seal with one hand and a powerful Spiritual Energy erupted from his body. The golden light condensed behind him and it actually formed into a giant golden wolf that cried into the sky. On the surface of the giant wolf's body, a lightning pattern seemed to be there. It

seemed very powerful and extraordinary.

"WOW!"

Surprised sounds erupted from the camp. Even the West Branch students that were located at the other side of the camp turned their gaze over. They were slightly shocked by the giant golden wolf behind Teacher Mo.

Teacher Xi, who was also explaining the rules to the West Branch, noticed this and pouted his lips. His body shook and a mighty Spiritual Energy exploded out. Behind him, a black lion figure appeared. On the back of the lion, a grey turtle shell was there.

All of the students looked at the Spiritual Beast Soul Essence that the Spirit Stage powerhouses ingested and summoned. They were envious. This power was something that they wanted.

"I ingested the High Rank Spiritual Beast Golden Thunderwolf's Soul Essence. The Golden Thunderwolf is ranked in the Myriad Beast Record. However, it is not ranked up high. It is only at the 382th place of the Earth Ranking. Teacher Xi ingested the High Rank Spiritual Beast Rockturtle Lion's Soul Essence. It is ranked at the 390th place of the Earth Ranking." Teacher Mo smiled when he saw Teacher Xi's action. Afterwards, he waved his hand and the golden wolf vanished from behind him.

"It's such an amazing Spiritual Beast, yet it is only ranked somewhere in the 300s of the Myriad Beast Record's Earth Ranking? Then won't the top 100 Earth Rank Spiritual Beast be even more insane? There is also the legendary Heaven Ranking for the MyriadBeast Record... Wouldn't it be too overpowered?" A few students exclaimed. Just the Earth Ranking was this amazing, just how terrifying would the Heaven Ranking for the Myriad Beast Record be?

"The Spiritual Beasts that are able to enter the top 100 in the Myriad Beast Record's Earth Ranking are not any ordinary Spiritual Beast. Their strength surpasses a Spirit Stage powerhouse greatly and are comparable to a powerhouse at the level of Three Heavens Stage. Therefore, they are known as known as Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts, in short Heavenly

Beasts." After he said to this point, Teacher Mo suddenly glanced at Mu Chen. Mu Chen understood what he meant. This is because Mu Chen's father ingested the Dragonfire Bird, which was ranked in the top 100 of the Earth Ranking. Thus, the Dragonfire Bird should have achieved the Heaven Rank. Normally speaking, it should be quite difficult for a Spirit Stage powerhouse to ingest the Soul Essence of a Spiritual Beast that is stronger than them. For Mu Feng to be able to ingest it, he must have been quite lucky. Mu Feng's strength is definitely in the top three even among the Nine Territory Lords within Northern Spiritual Realm because of this.

After reaching Spirit Stage, the strongest attacking method is ultimately the Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence that they ingested. It is considered a powerful fighting force. Therefore, it was natural that their strength will be stronger if they ingested a stronger Spiritual Beast.

"As for the existences in the Myriad Beast Record's Heaven Ranking...." Teacher Mo paused for a moment and immediately smiled: "Even the powerful individuals at the Sovereign Stage in the Great Thousand World wouldn't dare to easily attack them."

"Okay, it's about time now. You should all rest earlier today. The Northern Spiritual Field's training will officially begin tomorrow morning!" Teacher Mo felt that he said enough. He waved his hand to stop the excited youths.

When everybody heard these words, they dispersed as they carry a bit of excitement back with them. Mu Chen also returned to his tent and closed his eyes to train. He, once again, tried to see if he could condense the second Limitless Death Seal.

A peaceful night passed by.

The following morning. When morning arrived, many students were already prepared at the camp. They stared excitedly at the inside of the vast forest.

Mu Chen was together with Tang Qian'Er. He swept his eyes around and noticed Tan Qingshan nearby. Mo Ling was actually next to him. It seems that the two of them have formed a team. This surprised Mu Chen a bit.

After all, Mo Ling had the strength of a Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase. If he wanted to find someone to team up with, there are many people more suitable than Tan Qingshan.

"Mu Chen, you formed a team with Qian'Er?" Oh, I formed a team with Qingshan. Since he is a newcomer, it would be a bit risky to come here. I thought that I should take care of him a bit." Mo Ling said as he noticed Mu Chen and he brought Tan Qingshan over.

Mu Chen smiled slightly and nodded his head. From Mo Ling's words, he could tell that he wanted to form a good relationship with him. It seems that the majority of the reason why Mo Ling wanted to take care of Tan Qingshan was because he wanted to form a good relationship with him.

"Senior Mo Ling sure is thoughtful." Mu Chen smiled. He did not have any ill feelings towards Mo Ling. Therefore, he did not object in forming a relationship with him.

They talked and laughed for a while. Then, their voices suddenly stopped. From their right, a group of individuals suddenly separated and a few familiar figures appeared in front of Mu Chen. The one that led the group was Liu Yang, who lost to Mu Chen at the Academy Competition.

Liu Yang stared at Mu Chen. His eyes were a bit cold. The battle during the Academy Competition had impacted his reputation quite a bit. Although his big brother was Liu Mubai, he was secretly scoffed at when he entered the Heaven Class. Thus, his heart was still filled with rage.

Mu Chenonly took a glance at Liu Yang before he tilted his head away to the one beside him. There, a tall and burly boy was staring at him in interest.

"You are that Mu Chen? I heard that your reputation isn't that small recently." The boy in yellow clothes smiled as he stared at Mu Chen and spoke in a careless manner.

"Chen Tong, what do you want?" When Mo Ling saw these two boys, he lifted an eyebrow and asked in a deep voice.

Mu Chen's face remained calm. Chen Tong. This name was quite well-known in the Northern Spiritual Academy. Although he could not compare to Liu Mubai, he is still ranked third overall in the Northern Spiritual Academy. He is at the Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase and is like Mo Ling, an important individual that the Northern Spiritual Academy focuses on nurturing.

"Before, you were always the one that tries to make a show of authority. Why do you have to bring someone over now before daring to come over?" Mu Chen glanced at Liu Yang and he smiled as he spoke.

"Oh, you're quite arrogant. Let us introduce ourselves? I am the West Branch's Chen Tong. I wanted to meet the only one, who qualified for the Spiritual Road, a long time ago." Chen Tong held out his hand and chuckled.

"Let's go."

Mu Chen let out a slight smile. He was too lazy to care about these two individuals. He passed straight through Chen Tong's side. Then, he stopped his footsteps and stared into the distance. At that location, Liu Mubai, who was wearing white clothes and looked exceptionally handsome, was staring over to this side.

The two of them exchange glances. A faint chill seemed to flow in the air and it made the surrounding students quietly closed their mouth.

"If you dislike me, then come at me by yourself. These people are not up to my standard." Mu Chen gently laughed. He did not stay at that place longer and brought Tang Qian'Er out of the camp. They moved quickly towards the Northern Spiritual Field.

Liu Mubai narrowed his eyes slightly as he stared at Mu Chen. A cold light flashed through his eyes.

"That bastard!" Liu Yang gritted his teeth as he spoke.

Chen Tong let out a grin, but his eyes were quite dark.

"It's fine. We'll let him show off for now. There's always a chance of meeting in the Northern Spiritual Field. At that time, nobody will be

watching so I'll teach him what manners are. He really is...a boy, who doesn't respect his seniors."

Chapter 26: Veteran Hunter

"The West Branch people sure are annoying."

Inside the forest filled with shade, Tang Qian'Er had an angry expression on her face. These people keep coming to trouble Mu Chen, so even a clay figurine would be angry within its heart.

"Only a mediocre individual will not be hit by jealousy." Mu Chen only chuckled. He looked far behind him and said: "However, that Liu Mubai seems to be quite jealous of me. I don't think I've interacted with him a lot."

"Liu Mubai?" Tang Qian'Er frowned and said: "He wants to deal with you?"

"Or why would you think that Liu Yang, a newcomer who recently ascended the Heaven Class, would bring Chen Tong over? This was probably incited by Liu Mubai. That guy...He is quite similar to the crazy individuals in the Spiritual Road, but he only lacks a bit of attainment." Mu Chen said in a faint voice.

"That guy is also really annoying." Tang Qian'Er's face turned slightly cold, but she instantly became worried: "It isn't that easy to deal with Liu Mubai. Liu Yang isn't the same level as him. Ever since he entered the Northern Spiritual Academy, Liu Mubai had always dominated the title of the strongest within the Northern Spiritual Academy. It seems that he had never lost during these years."

"Ah, right. Mu Chen, you should be careful about that Liu Mubai. I can't seem to see through that guy. Although I fought against him before, I still lost badly. Even then, Liu Mubai did not use his full strength." Mo Ling said solemnly beside him.

"Senior Mo Ling, you are already at the Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase, if Liu Mubai was able to defeat you..." Tan Qingshan was astonished and he could not resist blurting out these words.

Mo Ling slowly nodded his head and said: "It is likely that Liu Mubai has

already advanced into the Spiritual Rotation Stage. That guy... is indeed powerful."

Tang Qian'Er's face became serious. If this was true, then it would definitely be troublesome. The gap between Spiritual Movement Stage and Spiritual Rotation Stage was too great.

When she thought up to this point, she stared at Mu Chen. The boy's face was still as calm as before and he had a gentle smile. That wordless silence and calmness suddenly weakened the worries within Tang Qian'Er, Mo Ling and Tan Qingshan's heart.

The boy in front of them seemed to have some sort of magic power. It made others believe that he could do many extraordinary things in the eyes of ordinary people.

"Although the Spiritual Rotation Stage is amazing, it isn't an existence that could not be deal with. It might be troublesome, but if Liu Mubai was to take action, he will have to pay a certain price." Mu Chen gently said. There was no vaunting within his words. Only, it did not matter whether it was in the Spiritual Road or the Great Thousand World. If anyone has any ideas towards him, he would definitely make them pay the price regardless of the outcome.

"Forget it. Let's not talk about this right now. The Northern Spiritual Field Training has begun. We should also officially start now. The two of you are considered our competitors." Mu Chen looked at Mo Ling and Tan Qingshan as he smiled.

"Then we should take the advantage by striking first!"

Mo Ling and Tan Qingshan exchanged gazes with each other and fiercely stomped the ground as they dashed forward. They were currently at the outermost area of the Northern Spiritual Field. Here, the Spiritual Beasts were quite scarce. Only by venturing in further will they be able to meet them.

Mu Chen stared as the two of them departed. He could not endure letting out a laugh. Then, he gently rubbed his palms and a tiny bit of excitement appeared in his black eyes.

It's been a long time since he hunted others. If he did not move now, he was afraid that he would become rusty.

"Let's go as well."

Mu Chen directed a wave towards Tang Qian'Er and his pace suddenly accelerated. However, he did not follow Mo Ling's route and instead, went on a slightly different route. During the trial within the Spiritual Road, he understood how to track the Spiritual Beasts' trails.

The two of them sped up. Within 10 minutes, they gradually entered the outskirts of the Northern Spiritual Field. Sounds of roars would occasionally came from a distance.

Tang Qian'Er followed closely behind Mu Chen. The girl's pretty face was slightly nervous. She knew that they would lose their life if they were surrounded by Spiritual Beasts in this kind of dangerous place.

And just when she was nervously staring at her surroundings, Mu Chen's body suddenly stopped. She smashed straight onto him without any guard up. The girl's soft and delicate body pressed onto Mu Chen's back. This soft feeling made Mu Chen blink. Behind him, Tang Qian'Er blushed and quickly tried to step back. However, her hand was caught by Mu Chen.

"Shhhhh."

Before Tang Qian'Er needlessly struggled, Mu Chen had already waved his hand slightly. His eyes pierced through the forest and stared straight ahead. Tang Qian'Er also followed that gaze and she saw a patch of open space. She noticed that there were two blood red bodies with a black horn on its forehead. These two creatures were similar to a tiger and a pig. It leisurely strolled around while emitting piercing endlessly.

"It's the Low Rank Spiritual Beast Bloodswine Tiger.

Mu Chen said softly. These two Bloodswine Tiger seems to be at the strength of a Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase. However, this beast has a thick skin so it should be able to endure an all-out attack from a Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase. If it were to enter in a frenzy, it

would be exceptionally fierce.

"One for each person, is that okay?"

Mu Chen looked at Tang Qian'Er. The girl's pretty face was slightly pale, but she still managed to nod her head. This was probably the first time that she was going to face a Spiritual Beast head on.

"Don't worry. I'm here." Mu Chen smiled as he comforted her.

"Yes." Tang Qian'Er gently gritted her teeth and her slender hand gripped onto a short sword. She did not want to drag down Mu Chen. She must work hard for their results.

"Let's go."

Mu Chen gently said as his body rushed out.

Roar!

When Mu Chen appeared, the two Bloodswine Tiger turned their red eyes over towards him. They let out a roar and a bloody light emitted from their body.

Bang.

With quaking steps, one of the Bloodswine Tiger charged violently like a streak of red light towards Mu Chen. When the other one planned on following it, a sharp, shattered rock wrapped in Spiritual Energy hit its nose heavily. This made it falter and its blood red eyes stared at the delicate girl. It let out a roar and charged over.

Mu Chen stared at the Bloodswine Tiger that was charging towards him. His eyes did not panic and, instead, a hint of excitement flashed through. He stomped and actually charged straight at it.

A human and a beast skimmed by each other. The fierce winds raised the leaves on the ground. The instant that the two of them were about to collide, Mu Chen's body suddenly took a diagonal step. His right hand gripped onto a sharp dagger and dark black Spiritual Energy quickly wrapped around it.

Mu Chen's right hand drew an arc. The black light appeared right as the

Bloodswine Tiger passed by and a cold light flashed through the Bloodswine Tiger's eyes as it sputtered out blood.

!

The Bloodswine Tiger crashed severely at the large tree behind him. The giant tree toppled down and the ground shook. The Bloodswine Tiger seemed to cry out in berserk. Its pair of blood red eyes was stabbed by Mu Chen and it became blind.

"Roar!"

The pain almost made the Bloodswine Tiger become crazy. It used the smell in the air in order to switch directions and charge recklessly at Mu Chen. The mane that covered its body was like barbed wire as it stood up. It was like a steel fortress.

However, Mu Chen seemed to be quite calm as he faced the berserk Bloodswine Tiger. He took a step that allowed the Bloodswine Tiger to charge recklessly by his side. Every time the Bloodswine Tiger rushed passed his body, the razor sharp dagger would bring fresh and hot blood.

The hot blood slowly rolled down the dagger. In the end, the Bloodswine Tiger let out a shrill howl and its body stopped moving.

Mu Chen drew the dagger calmly and cut the enormous Bloodswine Tiger apart. That experienced approach would shock even the Adventurers, who hunted Spiritual Beasts for a living. It wasn't something that a boy at this age should possess.

After he dealt with the Bloodswine Tiger, Mu Chen looked towards Tang Qian'Er. At this moment, the girl was in a slightly difficult position. Although there were many blood trails on the Bloodswine Tiger's body, it was basically uninjured for a Bloodswine Tiger with thick skin.

Roar!

Just at this moment, the Bloodswine Tiger that was entangled by Tang Qian'Er might have heard the cries of its dying companion. Its blood red eyes instantly flushed red and its originally huge body actually swelled up.

“It went in a frenzy?” Mu Chen saw this and lifted his eyebrow.

“Ah.”

Tang Qian’Er issued out a surprised cry. When the short sword cut onto the Bloodswine Tiger’s body, an impact shocked her instead and the sword flew away. She immediately retreated a few steps and felt a shadow covering her. A smell of blood charged towards her. The Bloodswine Tiger jumped up high into the sky and firmly squashed down like a little mountain.

Facing the shadow coming down, Tang Qian’Er’s face became pale and her body felt as if it couldn’t move.

Shuaaa.

A figure suddenly appeared from the side. Its arm wrapped around her slender waist and a dark black Spiritual Energy expanded through the dagger in his hand. Like a dark light, it cut across the belly of the Bloodswine Tiger from below.

Smash.

Fresh blood fell down. However, this also includes smelly intestines and internal organs.

Mu Chen held onto Tang Qian’Er as they rolled on the ground in order to avoid the heavy press from the Bloodswine Tiger. The Bloodswine Tiger struggled for a moment, before it stopped moving. It was obvious that it has lost its life.

Whew.

When Mu Chen noticed that they successfully got rid of the two Bloodswine Tiger, he let out a light breathe out. Then, he felt the girl’s struggles within his arm and he released her as he smiled. He said: “Are you alright?”

Tang Qian’Er shook her head as her face was flushed red. She looked at the two dead Bloodswine Tiger and amazement appeared within her beautiful eyes. She understood that it was basically all Mu Chen’s credit

for taking out these two dead Bloodswine Tiger this swiftly.

"Why are you so amazing? I fought against the Bloodswine Tiger for so long, yet I failed to kill it." Tang Qian'Er could not help saying this out.

"It's best to directly aim at its vital parts. You'll get used to it after you kill a few more." Mu Chen smiled before he went up to the two Bloodswine Tiger. His dagger cut across its head and a red light flew out. Two fist-size clumps of light slowly ascended. Inside the clump of light, you could vaguely see a miniature Bloodswine Tiger and a faint violent Spiritual Energy fluctuation emitted from it.

This is the Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence.

Mu Chen recovered the two Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence and threw it towards Tang Qian'Er. The latter caught it in curiosity. She looked at it back and forth as if she was quite satisfied with their first reward in their life.

Mu Chen could not help but laugh as he witnessed this scene. He wiped off the blood from his dagger and stared further into the deeper areas. His tongue licked his lips gently. It seems that the earlier bloody events reawakened his suppressed desire.

"Let's go. This is only the beginning..."

Mu Chen tilted his head as he spoke to Tang Qian'Er. Then, he took large strides again. This level of Spiritual Beast still lacks a bit of challenge...

Chapter 27: Plunder

In the forest covered with leaves, the ground suddenly trembled. A violent cry spread outwards. When looking in the direction of the cry, a giant yellow bear, which was roughly a few meters tall, was currently swinging its hammer-like palms around. It recklessly smacked at the petite body in front of it in anger.

Facing against the slap from the giant bear, the petite body retreated backwards. Spiritual Energy wrapped around the short sword in her hand. Like a snake bursting out a hole, a red blood trace appeared across the giant bear's white fur.

The pain coming from its chest made the giant bear a little mad. The giant palm was filled with yellow Spiritual Energy. Every time the slap comes down, it would leave deep imprints on the ground. If a single slap were to hit the petite body, it would definitely be enough to cause a severe injury.

Fortunately, the petite body was extremely agile. It constantly dodged and the dagger would leave bloodstains in front of the bear's chest whenever the bear slipped up.

The large and small figures continued to fight with each other. After approximately ten minutes, the giant bear finally could not endure this kind of fight and its enormous body crashed down to the ground like a boulder.

The beautiful girl finally saw that the bear could not endure it and died. She also let out a sigh of relief and wiped the cold sweat on her forehead with her hand. She turned her head away while panting heavily. Under a nearby tree, a boy with a long body smiled at he looked at this scene.

"Not bad."

Mu Chen walked forward and stared at the Mountain Bear's body. Then, he pointed at the white mark filled with bloodstains and said: "However, your attacks are still not decisive enough. That is your weakness. As long as you find a flaw, you should completely kill it. The method you used

earlier wasted too much effort. If the Mountain Bear was slightly stronger, perhaps it would be able to mentally exhaust you.

Tang Qian'Er glanced at the location where another Mountain Bear was killed. However, there was only a single bloody hole at the white mark on the Mountain Bear's chest. The location of the bloody hole was extremely precise. It directly pierced through the Mountain Bear's heart and it was obvious that the Mountain Bear died in one attack.

This Mountain Bear was the results of Mu Chen's battle. Tang Qian'Er previously saw the sharp blow. It was fierce, accurate and without any hesitation...The calmness and horrifying Mu Chen showed when he killed was many times more natural than her.

"You're an insane person, how could I compare with you!" Tang Qian'Er pouted her lips. Although she had never really killed any Spiritual Beasts, she could still feel that Mu Chen's actions weren't any inferior to the Adventurers, who would always be muddled in between life and death. How could she compare to him?

However, she still had a bit of admiration in her heart even when she said that. Under Mu Chen's guidance, she had begun to get rid of the initial fear that she felt along the way. She even had the ability to kill a Low Rank Spiritual Beast at the Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase by herself. As for Mu Chen, his handsome face had maintained a quiet and gentle smile. This was enough to frighten her. In his eyes, it was an insignificant act.

Tang Qian'Er's gaze wandered around and she stared at the boy, who was retrieving the Mountain Bear's Soul Essence. A shattered point of light landed on his body. His profile had a serious expression and possesses an quality that ordinary youths would not possess. This made her blush slightly.

"Today's rewards aren't that bad. Up until now, we have already collected 8 Low Rank Spiritual Beasts' Soul Essences." Mu Chen collected the Mountain Bear's Soul Essence and stood up as he directed a smile towards Tang Qian'Er.

When she heard this excellent result, Tang Qian'Er's face was also smiling. She was quite satisfied with the harvest today.

"Let's go. We should continue. The result is only a trivial matter, we should take advantage of this opportunity to improve ourselves." Mu smiled. But just when he was about to venture in deeper, he suddenly frowned and stared off to the right.

"What is it?" Seeing this, Tang Qian'Er asked.

"There was a movement over there. Let's go check it out." Mu Chen thought for a moment before he beckoned his hand towards Tang Qian'Er. His pace accelerated and he headed in that direction. When Tang Qian'Er noticed this, she hurried and followed.

In the dense forest, dozens of Northern Spiritual Academy students were grouped up together. At this moment, they were looking in front with a pale expression. At that location, there were a dozen figures leaning lazily at the tree trunk. The gazes that stared at the students had a bit of ridicule within them.

Although the behavior of the figures seemed quite lazy, they still gave off a highly trained feeling. Their eyes were bright and sharp. A bloody smell even emitted from their body.

It was actually an Adventurer's Team.

"What are you trying to do?!"

In front of the Northern Spiritual Academy students, there were a few familiar figures there. Mo Ling, Tan Qingshan, Jiang Li and Teng Yong were all there. However, the color of their faces was the same as the other Northern Spiritual Academy students. They furiously stared in fear at the Adventurers in front of them.

After all, they were still young youths. They would feel fear from the fierce Spiritual Beasts and the Adventurers in front of them are all individuals whose blade would often taste blood. The viciousness that they would occasionally reveal was enough to make them shudder.

"You are all a group of brats that haven't grown any hair yet..."

A young man dressed in leather armor smiled as he stared at the Northern Spiritual Academy students. He said lazily: “Didn’t I say it earlier? Hand over the Soul Essences that you possess.”

“You want to rob us!” A boy roared out in anger.

“That’s correct!” The young man laughed. Sounds of laughter appeared from his comrades behind him. It seems that they treated this as some sort of entertainment.

“We are students from the Northern Spiritual Academy. Our two teachers are here and they possess Spirit Stage strength! A student tried to use Teacher Mo and Teacher Xi and attempted to shock the Adventurer Team in front of them.

“I know that you are students from the Northern Spiritual Academy, you came here for training right? Then didn’t your teacher tell you that being robbed is also a type of training?” The young man curled his lips and said: “As long as we do not kill you, your teachers won’t care about it.”

“So...Hand them over. Don’t make me take action since I am quite brutal.” The young man grinned and his white beast-like teeth made others feel a chill.

“You!”

Mo Ling could not endure holding back his anger and clenched his hands tightly.

“You want to take action and test it out? You are also at the level of Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase. The same as me. Why don’t we see who is more powerful?” The young man glanced at Mo Ling, but his smile was slightly bloodthirsty.

When Mo Ling noticed the young man’s gaze as if he was staring at a prey, he felt a faint chill in his heart. Although they were both at the Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase, the latter’s imposing manner wasn’t something that he could compare with. Also, the comrades behind him weren’t any weaker than him.

Mo Ling’s eyes flashed. In the end, he slowly released his clenched

hands. With a painful laugh, he helplessly shook his head towards Tan Qingshan, Jiang Li and the others.

Tan Qingshan also sighed. They also knew that they weren't at the same level as the Adventurer Team in front of them. They could only admit that they were unlucky and lose their wealth in order to avert the trouble in front of them.

"Now, that's a good child."

When the young man noticed that Mo Ling and the others gave up their resistance, he laughed in satisfaction. Yet the corner of his lips was a bit mocking, this is the Northern Spiritual Academy's students? It really is disappointing.

"What are you doing?"

Just when Mo Ling and the others were about to toss over the Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence that they managed to obtain, a puzzled voice rang out from behind them. They instantly turned their head over and saw Mu Chen and Tang Qian'Er watching them nearby.

"Mu Chen?"

When Mo Ling and the others saw Mu Chen, they reflexively became joyful. Then, they immediately thought about something and had a gaze that told him to quickly leave.

"What is it?" Mu Chen seemed to ignore their gazes and smiled as he brought Tang Qian'Er over.

"Shhh, so there's another fat prey."

The young man smiled at Mu Chen and then his gaze suddenly landed on Tang Qian'Er beside him. His eyes instantly lit up and he whistled. He said humorously: "And also a beauty!"

Tang Qian'Er glared angrily at the young man, but the lovely angry expression made the young man fell into a trance slightly.

When Mo Ling noticed the two of them walking over, he shook his head helplessly. Then, he began to explain the situation.

“Robbery? You’re quite unlucky.” When Mu Chen heard this, he could not help but smile as he spoke.

“Aren’t you the same now?” Jiang Li and the others rolled back their eyes. How can this guy still laugh in this kind of situation?

“Oi, the boy over there. Since you also came, you should hand over some of your Spiritual Beast’s Soul Essences. Then, hand over the beauty. After all, we shouldn’t show favoritism.” The young man beckoned as he laughed.

“You want mine as well?” Mu Chen frowned as he said.

“Who told you to be so unlucky and walked over here. You brats sure are stupid. Although you are quite talented, you guys aren’t good enough if we were to fight.” The young man said helplessly.

“I only have one Spiritual Beast’s Soul Essence, I’ll give you that.”

Mu Chen rubbed his head and pulled out a Spiritual Beast’s Soul Essence from his arms. Then, he walked towards the young man.

“Are you deaf? I told you to bring that beauty over as well. You’re quite an annoying boy.” The young man frowned and chattered on endlessly.

As he was chattering, Mu Chen had already arrived in front of him. He handed the Spiritual Beast’s Soul Essence over.

The young man stretched out his hand to grab the Spiritual Beast’s Soul Essence. His other hand seemed to slap towards Mu Chen’s head in dissatisfaction. However, before he touched the Spiritual Beast’s Soul Essence, the boy’s black eyes, which originally contained a smile, instantly turned cold.

He turned his palm up right and a sharp black light flashed. It created an arc as it fiercely and cunningly slashed across the young man’s palm. Fresh blood suddenly splattered out.

This scene happened in a split second. Hardly anyone could react to it. A few of the comrades behind the young man stared at the splattering blood in a daze.

In front of many stunned gazes, the handsome boy suddenly smiled.

“Sorry, I suddenly don’t feel like giving it to you.”

Chapter 28: Cooperation

In the dense forest, the young man stared in a daze at his hands filled with blood. After a moment, pain surged from his palms and he recovered from the shock. His originally smiling face suddenly turned a bit dark.

Behind Mu Chen, Mo Ling and the others were dumbfounded as they stared at this scene. They never imagined that Mu Chen would suddenly launch an attack and that he would be so ruthless when he did it.

“Boy, are you seeking death?”

The young man’s body trembled. His sullen face was a bit grim.

Mu Chen glanced at him and said: “As an experienced Adventurer, you don’t understand the principle of “You reap what you sow”? You’ve never seen someone fail miserably at such a easy task?

“Ohoho, damn brat.”

After hearing that remark, the young man smiled angrily. His companions behind him wanted to come forward, but were stopped by his signal. He casually tore his clothes in order to wrap his bleeding hand as he stared coldly at Mu Chen and said: “You should know what will happen next right?”

“We’ll fight?” Mu Chen laughed as he spoke.

“To be honest, I wasn’t too angry when you suddenly attacked me. Instead, I admire your courage. If a person doesn’t have any guts, he would still be a trash no matter how talented he is. You are different from those kids.”

The young man stared at Mu Chen and said: “I’m Lin Zhong. Although I admire you, that is a different matter. Right now, I’ll give you a chance. If you are able to defeat me, you and your comrades can leave, I will not care about that slash you fired at me either. However, if you lose, you’ll leave a finger behind as punishment.”

“Of course, you don’t have to accept. However, you and your companions would probably suffer pain on their flesh. We won’t kill you, but believe

me, I have plenty of ways to make you feel so much pain that you'll rather die."

"Are there any other choices?" Mu Chen shrugged and said.

"What do you think?" Lin Zhong sneered.

"If that's the case, then let's...fight!"

Just when these words exited Mu Chen's mouth, his eyes narrowed and he dashed fiercely forward. Two of his fingers remained straight and a dark black Spiritual Energy wrapped around his fingertips. It brought out a extremely fierce wind as it violently stabbed towards Lin Zhong's throat.

"You still want more?!" However, Lin Zhong wasn't like the Northern Spiritual Academy's students, who had little combat experience. Moreover, he had already suffered earlier, so he remained alert against Mu Chen. Therefore, he did not panic when Mu Chen took action. Although he was slightly shocked, he still raised his arm as the Spiritual Energy surged and protected his throat.

Mu Chen's two fingers stabbed into Lin Zhong's arm. However, it was like hitting steel and his fingers felt slightly numbed. Lin Zhong's strength wasn't bad, it was evident that he had reached the limits of the Spiritual Movement Stage. He would be able to reach the Spiritual Rotation Stage if he managed to take one more step.

This thought flashed through Mu Chen's mind, but he did not slow down at all. His fingertips immediately retracted and it formed into a fist. The Spiritual Energy wrapped around his fist and he fiercely smashed towards Lin Zhong's temple.

Bang!

Lin Zhong also fire out a fist and it collided against Mu Chen's fist. The two fists bombarded each other and a wave of Spiritual Energy spread out. It blew the leaves on the ground into the air.

When the two fists collided, Mu Chen took a few steps backwards due to the impact. However, Lin Zhong also retreated one step. A hint of surprise appeared within his eyes. When they connected with each other, he could

feel the overbearing force from the dark black Spiritual Energy. It seems that the boy in front of him trained in a extraordinary Spiritual Art.

"Damn, brat!"

Lin Zhong let out a cry and darted forward. His dense Spiritual Energy erupted out and his palms drew an arc through the air as if it was a blade. It relentlessly headed towards Mu Chen's vital points.

In the rear, Tang Qian'Er, Mo Ling and the others saw such a brutal offensive coming from Lin Zhong and were covered with cold sweat. These guys were definitely desperate criminals.

However, Mu Chen did not panic while facing against Lin Zhong's fierce attack. He moved slightly and his black eyes stared at the offensive from Lin Zhong. He would occasionally change his fists to palms and made contact with Lin Zhong's fists. But once it touched, he would retreat back and Lin Zhong was not able to do anything to him.

Behind Lin Zhong, his companions originally had a playful attitude as they watched the entertainment. However, the color of their faces became more and more serious. They exchanged gazes with each other and were quite surprised.

"That boy is pretty good. Lin Zhong actually can't do anything to him even when he is only at the Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase."

In front of the crowd, a burly man watched as the two individuals fight. His originally unfocused gaze became serious. Shortly after, he muttered slowly: "He is quite an amazing boy, he saw through all Lin Zhong's attacks. Every time he attacks, it is the instant when Lin Zhong became exhausted. It seems like he is retreating step by step, but Lin Zhong would probably be the one that is in trouble."

What?"

The Adventurers were surprised. This boy could actually see through Lin Zhong's offensive? What kind of vision is that? Lin Zhong isn't like those Academy's kids!

"Captain, could you have seen wrong?" A person asked in surprise.

The burly man glanced at them and said: “If that boy was also at the Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase, none of you will be his opponent. When have the Northern Spiritual Academy students become this amazing?”

“That can’t be?” A few adventurers said in astonishment.

“Lin Zhong can’t bear it anymore.” The burly man let out a faint smile and said.

All of them heard this and quickly looked over. They only noticed Lin Zhong’s face was a little flushed and a silver light was flashing on his fist. A muffled thunder sound rang out.

“He is actually going to use Thunderstorm Fist? This is Lin Zhong’s trump card! It seems that he was forced back quite ruthlessly.”

“Boy, try receiving this move of mine!” Lin Zhong’s face reddened and the silver light on his fist became even more dazzling. A violent fluctuation emitted out from it.

Mu Chen stared at the silver light on Lin Zhong’s fist. His eyes turned slightly cold and he clenched his right hand tightly.

“Shuaaa!”

Lin Zhong’s body darted forward like an arrow. He fired off a punch and an air blast swept over. A rumbling thunder sound rang out deeply.

“Thunderstorm Fist!”

The violent punch carried an alarming amount of power as it directly headed to Mu Chen. The leaves flew up and it wrapped around Lin Zhong’s fist like a tornado. It viciously blasted towards Mu Chen.

This astonishing punch made Tang Qian’Er and the others nervous.

Mu Chen took a deep breath and a dark black light erupted from his palm as well. In the next instant, he took a step forward and fired off a punch wrapped in black light.

Limitless Death Seal!

The black light condensed at the surface of Mu Chen's fist and turned into a black light seal. It also carried an domineering Spiritual Energy and it collided head on against Lin Zhong's fist in front of many surprising eyes.

A deep sound resounded throughout the sky. Cracks appeared where they stood as the ground shook. That violent wave of air destroyed the surrounding leaves.

The faces of the two figures instantly turned slightly white. When the air blast exploded, the two of them staggered backwards due to the impact and nearly fell down on the ground.

In this head-on collision, they weren't able to determine the victor!

The surrounding individuals were all stunned. The Adventurers were stunned because Lin Zhong's powerful attack was not successful in defeating Mu Chen, while Tang Qian'Er and the others were shocked since Mu Chen actually blocked such a fierce attack.

"You!"

Lin Zhong stabilized his body and his face constantly changed as he stared at Mu Chen. It was obvious that he could not accept this result. Behind him, his companions also stepped forward and stared unfriendly at Mu Chen.

When Mu Chen saw this, he let out a cold laugh. His two fingers clamped and a fiery red bead appeared between his fingers. An extremely violent fluctuation emitted from it.

"What? You want to outnumber me now?"

Lin Zhong's companions also noticed the violent Spiritual Energy fluctuation coming from between Mu Chen's fingers and their faces changed instantly: "Spirit Destruction Bead?"

They did not dare to take a step further and stared at Mu Chen in surprise. No wonder that boy was not afraid of them, he actually had this item in his hands. From the Spiritual Energy fluctuations coming from the Spirit Destruction Bead, even a Spiritual Rotation Stage powerhouse would

be severely injured by it if they were careless.

The surrounding atmosphere instantly became tense. Tang Qian'Er, Mo Ling and the others hurried behind Mu Chen and stared at the Adventurers cautiously.

"Stop!"

A cry suddenly came from behind Lin Zhong and the others. The tall burly man slowly walked forward as he frowned: "What are you all doing? You may not be as good as others, but at least you're not last. Are you planning to disgrace the Thunderstorm Team's face?"

A few Adventurers smiled embarrassedly.

Then, the tall burly man turned towards Mu Chen and said as he smiled: "Little Brother, you are quite amazing. Let's settle today's matter like this. If we offended any of your companions, we hope that you would forgive us."

"You're welcome."

Mu Chen smiled and his fingers flashed as he pocketed the Spirit Destruction Bead. He could feel that the burly man loosened up when he pocketed the Spirit Destruction Bead. It was obvious that he was somewhat fearful of the Spirit Destruction Bead.

"Boy, you're quite capable." Lin Zhong's face finally returned back to normal. He stared at Mu Chen and said as he curled his lips.

Mu Chen also smiled and said: "Since everything is alright now, then we'll say our goodbyes now."

After he said this, he was prepared to bring the crowd to leave. These Adventurers weren't in the same group as them. It was better for them to leave as soon as possible.

"Wait a minute!"

When the burly man saw this, he anxiously took a few steps forward and cried out.

Mu Chen stared at him vigilantly. His hands slowly entered his sleeves

and prepared to pull out the Spirit Destruction Bead again. He said: “Is there something else?”

The burly man noticed Mu Chen’s vigilant eyes and let out a bitter laugh. He hesitated for a moment and said: “Little Brother, I want to cooperate with you for a bit. I wonder if you are interested?”

“Cooperate?”

When Mu Chen heard these words, he raised up eyebrow slightly.

Chapter 29: Jaded Essence Tree

"Cooperate?"

Mu Chen was slightly shocked as he stared at the burly man in front of him. The latter had a uprightface with thick eyebrows and looked a bit rugged. However, the thing that surprised Mu Chen the most was the Spiritual Energy fluctuation emitting from his body. It was evident that he had already advanced to the Spiritual Rotation Stage.

The strength of this Adventurer's Team was acceptable.

"Ohoho, Little Brother, I am the Captain of the Thunderstorm Team, Lei Cheng." The burly man stretched out his hand and said as he smiled.

"Northern Spiritual Academy's student, Mu Chen."

Mu Chen chuckled as he shook hands with him. Then, he retracted his hand without changing expressions. Lei Cheng's hands were quite rough and they were many blade callus. It seems that this person specializes in blades.

"I am only an ordinary student in the Northern Spiritual Academy. I probably won't be able to help you out. Let's forget about cooperating." Mu Chen shook his head. Although he did not know the specifics about the cooperation that Lei Cheng was talking about, he knew that these Adventurer Teams were quite crooked. They had many grudges and it would be troublesome if they suddenly got involved in it.

Seeing Mu Chen refuse, Lei Cheng stared at the surroundings and whispered: "Little Brother Mu Chen, to be honest, I want to cooperate with you because I saw the Spirit Destruction Bead in your hands."

"We, the Thunderstorm Team, were searching in a valley within the Northern Spiritual Field two days ago. At that place, we discovered something good."

Mu Chen's expression did not change. He did not say a word and only smiled slightly.

Seeing this, Lei Cheng knew that this boy wasn't someone simple. A boy

should normally have a curious and arrogant attitude. However, Mu Chen did not show the slightest interest when he talked about this. It was clear that he controlled his heart well.

"In that valley, we discovered a mature "Jaded Essence Tree"." Lei Cheng knew that Mu Chen wasn't someone who would act without some incentive. He became silent for a moment before he said softly.

"Jaded Essence Tree?"

Mu Chen's eyes finally flashed slightly. He stared at Lei Cheng and said: "It's matured? Did it bear any Jaded Essence Fruit?"

Jaded Essence Tree. It is a rare natural treasure. The tree itself did not hold much appeal to humans, but the Jaded Essence Fruit that comes from the Jaded Essence Tree is filled with gentle Spiritual Energy. It is extremely beneficial to practitioners below the Spirit Stage.

Right now, Mu Chen was trying to form the second Limitless Death Seal. However, his Spiritual Energy was still too weak. If he doesn't have enough Spiritual Energy, he must borrow the power of a foreign object to do it. And this Jaded Essence Fruit was the solution to his urgent problem.

"Although we did not approach it closely, we still observed it for a bit. The Jaded Essence Tree is reasonably mature." Lei Cheng nodded his head as he spoke.

"Is there a Spiritual Beast protecting it?" Mu Chen asked.

"It is because of those rascals..." Lei Cheng let out a bitter laugh and said: "Inside that valley, there are at least 100 Conflagration Apes. And the most trouble thing is that there is also a Conflagration Ape King, which reached the Middle Rank Spiritual Beast level. Its strength is approximately at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Middle Phase. It is even slightly stronger than me."

"100 Conflagration Ape? 1 Conflagration Ape King?"

Mu Chen was startled. Although the Conflagration Apes were only Low Rank Spiritual Beasts, a few of the matured ones would reach the level of a Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase. With such numbers gathered

together, it would not be easily to deal with it. And there is even a Conflagration Ape King...

"The Conflagration Ape King's strength isn't the most difficult part to handle, but rather it is the fact that it can command the other Conflagration Apes." Mu Chen said softly. Although there were a lot of Conflagration Apes, they were still Spiritual Beasts without much wisdom. It would be easy to deal with once they were in a state of disunity. However, if they have the commands from the Conflagration Ape King, it was a different story. The Conflagration Ape King has already started to have a bit of wisdom. It might not be as cunning as humans yet, but the Thunderstorm Team would probably be destroyed if it commanded the hundred Conflagration Apes to assault them together.

Lei Cheng looked in surprise at Mu Chen. It was obvious that he did not imagine that this seemingly young boy would know as much as them, hunting veterans, about the Spiritual Beasts.

"Yes. However, you don't have to worry about this. We have a method that could hypnotize a few of the Conflagration Ape. The one that we have to deal with is the Conflagration Ape King. Thus, we hope to have this Little Brother cooperate with us and you will use the Spirit Destruction Bead to kill the Conflagration Ape King when you have the opportunity to do so."

"Although my Spirit Destruction Bead can gravely injure a Middle Rank Spiritual Beast, it would probably be quite difficult to kill it." Mu Chen pondered for a moment before he spoke.

"It's fine. As long as you are able to severely injure the Conflagration Ape King, the chances of us winning will increase significantly." Lei Cheng let out a confident smile. After all, he was at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Initial Phase. He might not be able to defeat a Conflagration Ape King when it was at its strongest, but if it's gravely injured, he should be able to do so.

"Since it's like this..."

Mu Chen smiled slightly. His smile was like a cunning fox and he said:

“Then, let’s talk about the payment shall we? You should know, I would have to invest at least a Spirit Destruction Bead in order for the matter to work. The Spirit Destruction Bead’s price isn’t cheap. Sometimes, you won’t be able to obtain it even if you have money.”

Lei Cheng let out a bitter laugh. He did not treat Mu Chen as a boy anymore. Therefore, he did not attempt to deceive him and said: “Little Brother, make your offer. If it is appropriate, I will naturally accept it.”

Mu Chen thought for a moment before he said: “I want 30% of the Jaded Essence Fruits on the Jaded Essence Tree. This price is quite reasonable. I know that the Thunderstorm Team would be the main force, so that is why I gave the majority of it to you.”

“You’re quite black-hearted.” Lei Cheng grinned. However, he thought for a moment and still nodded. This price wasn’t unacceptable. After all, they would obtain the bulk of it.

“Then let’s do it.”

“I will also need a few companions, is that okay?” Mu Chen smiled as he said. Although they only exchanged talks for a while, Lei Cheng gave him a pretty good feeling. However, he should always stay on his guard. After all, there weren’t much insurance if he went by himself.

“That’s fine. However, you should know the strength of the Conflagration Ape. If they do not have the ability to protect themselves, it would be troublesome if they went.” Lei Cheng said.

Mu Chen nodded his head. Then, he turned around. Although Tang Qian’Er Mo Ling and the others did not know what Mu Chen and Lei Cheng was discussing about, it seems that they had a friendly atmosphere between them. It was great that they did not fight.

“Next up, there will be quite a bit of danger. However, it will also bring quite the benefits. I will team up with the Thunderstorm Team for a task. If you are interested, you can follow me. The payment will definitely be satisfying. Of course, there are two conditions. First, you must listen to my commands and second, you must reach the Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase. Is there anyone that wishes to come?” Mu Chen stared at

Mo Ling and the others and spoke.

Mo Ling and the others were stunned. Mu Chen would actually cooperate with these people?

“I’ll go.” Tang Qian’Er was the first to raise her slender hands and laughed as she spoke.

“I’ll also come with you.” Mo Ling thought for a moment. In the end, he still nodded. He was at the level of the Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase and he completely met the conditions. He understood Mu Chen’s vision. If he said that the rewards would be quite satisfying, then it should be quite excellent.

Tan Qingshan was a bit regretful, but it couldn’t be helped. His strength was only at the Spiritual Movement Stage Initial Phase. He would only be a bother if he headed there.

Jiang Li and Teng Yong looked at each other. They hesitated for a moment before they gritted their teeth and said: “We’ll come as well.”

Shortly after, another three boys with Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase strength also participated. With this, Mu Chen’s side had 8 people. This lineup was pretty good. If anything were to occur, there will be room for maneuver.

“Qingshan, you should bring the others back to the camp. Also, please inform Teacher Mo that we followed the Thunderstorm Team to do a task. There is no need for him to worry.” Mu Chen turned over to look at Tan Qingshan again and said with a smile. His voice was quite loud. Therefore, Lei Cheng and his team were able to hear it clearly.

“This boy is even more experienced than us...When did such a student come out from the Northern Spiritual Academy?”

Lei Cheng shook his head. Mu Chen’s earlier words were obviously said to them. If they dared to do anything to them, then those Spirit Stage powerhouses wouldn’t give them the chance to escape the Northern Spiritual Field.

Tan QIngshan nodded. He saw Mu Chen waved and he did not stay at

this place any longer. He quickly left together with the other students.

"We should also leave now." Mu Chen turned around and stared at Lei Cheng as he spoke.

"Yes, let's go."

Lei Cheng nodded. He made a gesture towards the Thunderstorm Team and began to lead the way. A group of people quickly dove into the dense forest and vanished swiftly.

As they were on their way, Mu Chen told the matter about the "Jaded Essence Tree" to Tang Qian'Er, Mo Ling and the others. When they heard the three words "Jaded Essence Fruit", their eyes clearly shined. It was evident that they knew just how beneficial the Essence Fruit would be to them.

"Hehe, it's great that Mu Chen is quite honorable. He did not forget about us for such an excellent matter." Mo Ling said in excitement.

Beside him, Jiang Li and Teng Yong's faces were slightly red. Their attitude towards Mu Chen weren't exactly good before. Yet, they owe such a favor to him. Therefore, they felt quite unnatural right now.

"You think that I brought you here to pick some for free? It is important to listen to my commands then. If something happens, we might lose our lives." Mu Chen gently smiled as he spoke.

"Relax, we will definitely listen to you!" Mo Ling laughed. Even Jiang Li and Teng Yong nodded their heads.

When Mu Chen noticed this, he also smiled. Then, he focused on heading there.

The group of people crossed through a thick forest. Along the way, they met a few Spiritual Beasts blocking them. However, these Low Rank Spiritual Beasts were completely wiped out by the Thunderstorm Team before Mu Chen and the others could attack them. This smooth and clean method of killing made Mo Ling and the others shocked. They were able to feel the difference between the two sides.

They rapidly moved and after half an hour, the traces of human became exceedingly little. Beast roars would occasionally sounded out. When they got to this place, even the Thunderstorm Team became cautious.

A group of a dozen or so people darted through the forest again. The view in front of them suddenly widened up. A stream followed through the shattered rocks on the ground. At the opposite of that, there was a little valley. Sharp ape cries could be heard from inside the valley.

When they saw the valley, Lei Cheng's pace finally stopped. He turned his head around to Mu Chen and nodded. This allows Mu Chen to understand that they have reached their destination.

The Jaded Essence Tree is in this valley.

Chapter 30: Hunting Apes in Valley

The valley in front of them was quite narrow. At the entrance of the valley, dense tree branches extended from both sides. Even stones were piled up as if it was trying to conceal this valley. The Thunderstorm Team must have wasted a lot of effort in order to discover this location.

“There is quite the amount of Conflagration Apes inside.”

Mu Chen stood at a location slightly away from the entrance. He gently sniffed a bit and smelled a thick, foul smell. It was evident that there could only be more Conflagration Apes than what Lei Cheng had said, but not any less.

“Let’s begin our preparations.”

Lei Cheng gestured with his hand. Lin Zhong and a few other companions swiftly found some firewood from the surroundings and ignited them as they piled it outside of the valley.

“All of you should cover your nose and mouth. You should try to hold your breath.”

Lei Cheng pulled out a couple of grey pills from his arms and a rich fragrance emitted out. It made others feel slightly drowsy when they smelt a bit of it.

Beside him, Lin Zhong and the others pulled out torn rags and made them wet in the stream. Then, they distributed them to everyone.

Seeing that everybody was ready, Lei Cheng threw the pills into the fire. A rich fragrance instantly spread out.

“Everybody should utilize our Spiritual Energy and push this smoke into the valley!”

Lei Cheng let out a soft cry and was first to take action. His cuffs moved and a powerful Spiritual Energy burst out. It brought forth a fierce wind and swept the smoke into the valley.

Mu Chen and the others also copied him. Fierce winds were created by

the Spiritual Energy and the smoke quickly enshrouded the valley. Sounds of excitement from the apes gradually began to fade.

Lei Cheng stared at the valley. After a short moment, he tilted his head to the side as he listened to the movements within the valley. Only then did he let out a sigh of relief. He gestured with his hand and said: “Let’s go, be careful everyone!”

“Let’s go!”

When they heard these words, everybody nodded their heads in excitement. Then, they directly went through the entrance and charged into the valley.

When Mu Chen and the others charged into the valley, the valley was already somewhat foggy. When they looked over, they could see many giant red apes lying down on the ground. However, these Conflagration Apes were almost all in a deep sleep. It was evident that Lei Cheng’s hypnotic drug was extremely effective.

“The Jaded Essence Tree is in the depths of the valley. We should hurry. This drowsiness will not last long.” Lei Cheng urged them as his speed accelerated again. He jumped over the Conflagration Apes and went straight into the depths of the valley.

Mu Chen also brought the others and followed. However, when they reach the depths of the valley, a low roar sounded out from the top of the cliff. Then, a bloody howl came down. An enormous Conflagration Ape pounced towards Tang Qian’Er, who was behind Mu Chen.

This sudden attack shocked Tang Qian’Er. She hurriedly swung her hand around and the short sword flew out as it was wrapped in Spiritual Energy. However, this still left a shallow bloodstain on the Conflagration Ape’s body.

Although it did not cause much damage to the Conflagration Ape, the short sword was able to stop it for a moment. At the same time, Mu Chen’s feet touched the ground and he charged over like a nimble money. His hand gripped onto a sharp dagger that fell down from his sleeves. As the dark black Spiritual Energy wrapped around the dagger, he swiftly

slashed across the Conflagration Ape's eyes.

Fresh blood spattered out and the Conflagration Ape let out a shrill cry. However, just when the cry came out, the dagger flashed as it stabbed directly into its throat and stopped the cry.

The Conflagration Ape's huge body fell down heavily onto the ground. It crushed the rocks into pieces. At the same time, Mu Chen's body landed on the side. He wiped the blood off his dagger and asked Tang Qian'Er, who was shaken: "Are you alright?"

"I'm fine." Tang Qian'Er shook her head. At the side, Mo Ling and the others were completely stunned. It was evident that they have not recovered from the fact that Mu Chen actually killed a Conflagration Ape this smoothly.

Of course, it wasn't only them. Even the people from the Thunderstorm Team were startled. This Mu Chen had a quick reaction and attacked effectively...

"Amazing, this Conflagration Ape is probably at the level of Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase." Lei Cheng gave a thumbs up to Mu Chen and smiled as he said.

"Its speed has dropped due to the smoke. Otherwise, it wouldn't be that easy for me to take care of it." Mu Chen shook his head. Although this Conflagration Ape was able to endure through the drowsiness from the smoke, it was still affected.

"The effects of the Bewitching Drug are limited. A Conflagration Ape could resist it if it reached the Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase. Inside this valley, there are probably no more than 20 Conflagration Apes with this strength. However, even if they did not fall asleep, they should still have been weakened. It shouldn't be hard to deal with them."

Lei Cheng nodded. Then, he suddenly lowered his body and stared off into the distance. His expression became serious and said: "Our trouble is that guy over there."

Mu Chen's eyes also narrowed as he looked into the distance. At the end

of the valley, the smoke has already faded a lot. A giant fiery red figure that was even bigger than a Conflagration Ape was over there.

The giant figure's body was like a fire. Its body glowed as if it was covered by a layer of red armor. Although it was half-sitting on the ground, an ominous aura spread out from there. This violent Spiritual Energy fluctuation far surpasses an ordinary Conflagration Ape.

This was obvious the boss of the valley, the Conflagration Ape King.

Mu Chen felt the oppression of Spiritual Energy coming from there. His eyes became a bit more serious. At the side, Mo Ling and the others had a hint of fear in their eyes. That is a Middle Rank Spiritual Beast.

Mu Chen stared at the Conflagration Ape King for a moment. Then, he turned and stared at the rear of that giant ape. Near the mountain walls, there was a crack that was approximately 20 feet. A tiny tree approximately 10 feet wide extended out from the crack.

The body of this tiny tree seemed like it was made from jade. On this tree, an emerald color was revealed among the green leaves. It was a round fruit. Even from this distance, you would still be able to smell the fragrance that it emits. It was extremely refreshing.

"It really is the Jaded Essence Tree!"

Mu Chen stared at the little tree. A hint of joy flashed through his eyes. From the looks of it, the Jaded Essence Tree was obviously mature. It seems that there would be no less than 30 Jaded Essence Fruits. If this cooperation succeeds, it would be quite moving.

"Little Brother, I will lead five team members to deal with the Conflagration Ape King. The other five members would deal with the awakened Conflagration Apes nearby with your companions. When that happens, you should wait for an opportunity to use the Spirit Destruction Bead and try to kill the Conflagration Ape King in one attack!" Lei Cheng observed for a moment and said in a low voice.

"Okay."

Mu Chen nodded. He pondered for a moment and said: "If something

unexpected occurs, I suggest that we should immediately retreat. If you are still greedy for the Jaded Essence Fruit, then I will bring my companions and leave. As for the ruined Spirit Destruction Bead, I'll just consider it my loss. After all, our lives are more important than the Jaded Essence Fruit.

When Lei Cheng heard these words, he let out a bitter laugh. Then, he nodded. If it really became like that, then it could only be considered as bad luck.

"Let's prepare."

Lei Cheng waved his hand. Five members of the Thunderstorm Team including Lin Zhong had their Spiritual Energy rising up. Then, each of them carefully approached the Conflagration Ape King in the depths of the valley.

Although the valley still contained a faint mist, the Conflagration Ape King was not something that a common Conflagration Ape could compare. When Lei Cheng and the others was within 100 feet of it, it was aware of them. The blood red eyes stared at the crowd and viciousness appeared within its eyes. It was clear that it was outraged by the humans that dared to enter its territory.

An angry roar spread out from its ferocious jaws. The Conflagration Ape King extended its long arm and directly picked up a huge boulder. Then, it fiercely threw it over towards Lei Cheng. The sound of the winds breaking showed that it contained a great amount of power.

"Kill!"

Lei Cheng cried out and his figure dashed out. He gripped the blood red machete in a reverse grip as his Spiritual Energy stormed out. A sharp blade flash came out from the blade and instantly shattered the huge boulder. Lei Cheng's speed did not slow down at all and he charged straight at the Conflagration Ape King. The rest of the Thunderstorm Team hurriedly followed.

Bang!

The instant that the two sides made contact with each other, a fierce

battle broke out. Spiritual Energy gushed out and flashes of blades headed swiftly towards the Conflagration Ape King's body.

While Lei Cheng and the others were tangled up with the Conflagration Ape King, Mo Ling and the others followed the other five members of the Thunderstorm Team and blocked the remaining awakened Conflagration Apes. They did not let them interfere with the battle inside.

Mu Chen stood at a place not far away and firmly fixed his eyes at the battle. A fiery red Spirit Destruction Bead was once again held tightly between his fingers and a violent Spiritual Energy emitted out from it constantly.

This Spirit Destruction Bead possesses the power to gravely injure Spiritual Rotation Stage powerhouses. However, there is only one. Therefore, he must seize the best opportunity or this mission would fail if it was wasted.

The situation with the Conflagration Ape King was quite tragic. The five members of the Thunderstorm Team used all their strength and attacked. Although they left many wounds on the Conflagration Ape King's body, their hands were also covered with blood. It was obvious that they were injured in the backlash.

From the looks of it, if Lei Cheng did not directly block the majority of the attacks from the Conflagration Ape King, they would not be able to approach this big guy's body.

"Constricting Lightning Blade!"

After fighting a while, Lei Cheng also felt that his arms becoming numb and immediately shouted out.

"BOOM!"

As his cry appeared, Lin Zhong and the others suddenly stepped forward. A lightning flash appeared on their long blades. They used all their strength and fire off slashes. These five lightning lights flashed and grazed the Conflagration Ape King as it hacked onto the back of it.

The Conflagration Ape King's metal-like back actually split open

through the combined attacks from them. Fresh blood oozed out from its back.

The pain coming from its back instantly made the Conflagration Ape King roar out in fury. Its arm fiercely extended out and a violent Spiritual Energy engulfed it. Lin Zhong and the others instantly flew backwards while spitting blood.

"Asshole, go to hell!"

Lei Cheng took a single step forward and let out a vicious howl. Spiritual Energy surged out and a ten feet long Spiritual Energy sword light actually appeared from the blade. He slashed angrily towards the Conflagration Ape King.

The Conflagration Ape King's speed was extremely fast. It felt the ferocious attack coming from Lei Cheng and crossed his arms together like a shield. It blocked the sharp blade forcibly and the sword light cut into its flesh. However, it did not cut its arms apart.

"Mu Chen!" At this moment, Lei Cheng cried out.

The moment he cried out, Mu Chen, who was accumulating power for the side, had already darted out. He nimbly appeared behind the Conflagration Ape King and a dark black Spiritual Energy wrapped around his fingers. It inserted itself into the wound of the Conflagration Ape King like a sharp dagger.

Fresh blood shot out and Mu Chen instantly retreated. A violent Spiritual Energy suddenly came out from inside the Conflagration Ape King's wounds.

When the Spiritual Energy appeared, a gigantic Spiritual Energy shockwave broke out. The back of the Conflagration Ape King exploded like a bomb. Its flesh scattered and the rocks on the ground were shattered due to the impact.

The Conflagration Ape King let out a maddening howl. However, blood continued to flow out of its back. It seems that a hole was blown out. It struggled for a few steps and finally crashed onto the ground.

Mu Chen landed on the ground. He was relieved as he stared at the Conflagration Ape King on the ground.

“We did it!”

When Lin Zhong and the others witnessed this scene, their eyes were filled with happiness. Even Lei Cheng had a relieved smile on his face.

“No, something’s wrong!”

However, the instant that they relaxed, Mu Chen’s face suddenly changed colors. This is because a red light emitted out from the Conflagration Ape King’s body.

“Be careful!” Lei Cheng also noticed this change and instantly tensed up.

The red light surrounded the Conflagration Ape King’s body and the fresh blood on its back actually stopped flowing out. Afterwards, Lin Zhong and the others were shocked as they noticed the Conflagration Ape King rising up unsteadily and the fiery red hairs on its body actually grew a tiny bit.

The Conflagration Ape King roared to the sky. A faint emerald color flashed inside the red lights on its body. This light was the same color as the Jaded Essence Fruit.

As the Conflagration Ape King roared, its aura suddenly became many times stronger.

“Damn it, it actually made a break through at this moment!”

When Lei Cheng felt the growing aura from the Conflagration Ape King, the color on his face changed.

Mu Chen’s face also became serious. It seems that this beast had eaten many Jaded Essence Fruit. Now, it is really troubling...

Chapter 31: Rouse the Tiger to Eat the Wolf

Buzz.

The valley seemed to tremble all of a sudden. The Conflagration Ape King's enormous body seemed to becoming increasingly fierce. Its ugly face was filled with violence and it was obvious that it was extremely ferocious.

Mu Chen, Lei Cheng and the others became serious as they stared astonished at the Conflagration Ape King. Who would have thought that the Conflagration Ape King would actually make a breakthrough at this critical moment. From its aura, the Conflagration Ape King had probably reached the peak of the Middle Rank Spiritual Beast. It is equivalent to a powerhouse at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase!

Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase?

Mu Chen exchanged gazes with Lei Cheng. They secretly let out a bitter sound. It was extremely rare to meet such a event. Their luck was quite bad.

"Captain, what should we do?!" Lin Zhong and the others' faces were pale and they quickly asked.

Lei Cheng thought for a moment and gritted his teeth as he said: "The Conflagration Ape King is about to make its breakthrough. However, it is also seriously injured. Let's try once more. If we fail to get rid of it, we will immediately retreat!"

Lin Zhong and the others heard this and nodded. This was a surprising turn of event. Although they wanted the Jaded Essence Fruit, their lives were more important than that.

Mu Chen also made a gesture towards Tang Qian'Er and the others, who were far away. He signaled them to retreat if the situation turns out poorly.

When Mu Chen reminded Tang Qian'Er and the others, the Conflagration Ape King suddenly issued out a furious roar. The violent eyes firmly fixed itself onto Mu Chen's body. It was obvious that it clearly remembered Mu Chen, who had injured it.

The Conflagration Ape King has an extremely vengeful heart. It was not his wisdom that made it view Mu Chen as a definite target to rip apart. Therefore, it attacked first and its huge ape arm picked up a massive boulder. It treated the boulder as a weapon as it smashed it towards Mu Chen.

When Mu Chen noticed this, his toes touched the ground and he jumped back agilely. He completely avoided the Conflagration Ape King's violent attack. With the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase strength, Mu Chen did not dare to let this big guy touch him at all. He was afraid that he would either be dead or gravely injured if he was touched.

Seeing that the Conflagration Ape King pounced towards Mu Chen, Lei Cheng hurried to help him. But what surprised them was that the Conflagration Ape King completely ignored their attacks and would only smash towards Mu Chen in berserk. It forced Mu Chen to be in a slightly helpless position.

Roar!

The Conflagration Ape King became furious when it noticed that Mu Chen avoided it swiftly. It suddenly let out a sharp howl, which resounded within the valley. Then, Lei Cheng and the others were horrified when they noticed that there were signs of awakening on the Conflagration Apes that they hypnotized.

This discovery made their faces turn pale. If the hundreds of Conflagration Apes wake up inside the valley, there were no chances of escaping today.

"Captain, all the Conflagration Apes would definitely wake up if the Conflagration Ape King continues to howl!" Lin Zhong and the others said in shock.

Mu Chen also noticed this situation. His face became more and more

serious. His eyes flashed and he stared at the Jaded Essence Tree inside the crack of the mountain walls. He bit his teeth furiously and said: “Big Brother Lei Cheng, I’ll lure their Conflagration Ape King away, you guys should use your speed to take away the Jaded Essence Fruit!”

“What?”

Lei Cheng was surprised when he heard that. The Conflagration Ape King is at the level of Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase while Mu Chen was only at the Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase. It would be extremely dangerous if he were to lure it away by himself.

“There’s no time. The Conflagration Ape King is targeting me. You won’t be able to pull it away.”

As Mu Chen’s voice rang out, a dark black Spiritual Energy has already wrapped around his legs. His speed increased exponentially and he darted to the outside of the valley like an arrow. Behind him, the Conflagration Ape King did not hesitate at all and it chased after him as it howled.

Lei Cheng and the others were stunned as they watched Mu Chen luring away the Conflagration Ape King. In the end, Lei Cheng gritted his teeth and said: “Hurry, we have no time to lose. Lin Zhong, you should bring a group to stop the Conflagration Apes that are beginning to awaken. I’ll go get the Jaded Essence Fruit!”

“Yes!”

Lin Zhong and the others wiped the blood off their mouth. They quickly nodded and charged towards the Conflagration Apes that stumbled as they stood up.

Lei Cheng stared once again out of the valley. He could only let out a bitter laugh and pray that Mu Chen would be alright. Otherwise, the people from the Northern Spiritual Academy would come find them and they would suffer.

...

Bang Bang!

Inside the forest, the earth trembled. A giant red shadow with a violent atmosphere charged around in berserk. Many trees on the way were completely destroyed by it. Yet it did not care about it all right now. Its blood red eyes were only focused on the nimble and tiny figure in front of it.

This commotion naturally attracted the attention of some Spiritual Beasts inside the forest. However, the Conflagration Ape King had already reached the peak of the Middle Rank Spiritual Beast. It is considered the top existence in the outskirts of the Northern Spiritual Field. Therefore, these Spiritual Beasts were shocked by its ominous pressure and did not dare to approach. They only stared as the human and beast headed into the depths.

“This damn beast, it really is tenacious!”

They fiercely ran for nearly ten minutes, yet Mu Chen discovered that the Conflagration Ape King showed no traces of giving up. He could not help but curse at it.

Swoosh!

As he cursed, a powerful wind suddenly blew behind him. He noticed that the Conflagration Ape King picked up a large tree and threw it at him fiercely. His body hurriedly jumped forward and he spun a few times on the ground. Only through this way was he able to avoid the giant tree.

When he was rolling across a cluster of weeds, he suddenly pulled out a batch of black grass and shoved it into his arms before bolting off again.

While he was running away, Mu Chen’s black eyes continuously flashed. He did not actively request to lure away the Conflagration Ape King because he wanted to show off his strength, rather it is because he had experience in it. In the Spiritual Road, he would often meet with this kind of situation.

“I should reach the inner part of the Northern Spiritual Field soon. There should be Spiritual Beasts that could fight against this Conflagration Ape King. Since Spiritual Beasts have a powerful concept of territory, it would not let the Conflagration Ape King go that easily when they discovered it.

When that happens, it would be a chance for me to escape from this guy."

An idea flashed through Mu Chen's mind. He forced all of his Spiritual Energy out from his body and circulated the Great Pagoda Art. Maybe it was because it was a situation of life and death, the Great Pagoda Art's circulating speed became faster. Spiritual Energy continued to flow endlessly into his four limbs and energized him.

No matter how powerful the Great Pagoda Art was, he was still only in the Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase. His strength was too different compared to a Middle Rank Spiritual Beast, whose strength had reached Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase. Therefore, as the time passes on, Mu Chen gradually felt that he was getting weaker.

"Roar!"

Just when Mu Chen felt that the situation was getting pretty bad, a low howl came from a distant forest. It felt that this howl contained a sense of warning.

"It finally came!"

When Mu Chen heard this howl, joy filled his eyes. He accelerated and charged towards that distant forest. The moment he rushed into the forest, he quickly pulled out the black grass from within his arms and squeezed it using his palms. A repulsive black liquid flew out and covered his entire body.

After Mu Chen finished doing this, a black shadow appeared from in front of him. Its eyes clearly showed that it did not notice the tiny human and it stared menacingly at the Conflagration Ape King, who was approaching.

"It's a One-Horned Panther Dragon!"

Mu Chen looked at the figure and saw that it was like a black panther with a horn on its head. However, it was wearing an extremely hard carapace. It even had a steel thorn-like crocodile's tail on its back. A surge of violent Spiritual Energy emitted from within its body.

Mu Chen glanced at this One-Horned Panther Dragon and frowned. This

guy is also a Middle Rank Spiritual Beast, but its strength was only in the Spiritual Rotation Stage Initial Phase. The difference between it and the Conflagration Ape King was too great.

Roar!

The One-Horned Panther Dragon kept a close eye at the approaching Conflagration Ape King and it attempted to frighten it to retreat by using a threatening roar.

But by this moment, the Conflagration Ape King's eyes had already turned completely red. It would shred anything to pieces if they dared to stop it from ripping apart Mu Chen. Because it saw that the One-Horned Panther Dragon daring to stop him, he instantly issued out a fierce roar and his enormous body bounced up. Fiery red Spiritual Energy was formed under its beast palms and it fiercely smashed onto the One-Horned Panther Dragon's waist like a meteorite.

BOOM!

The earth was blasted apart and left an enormous hole. The surrounding trees were completely swept apart and destroyed. Then, Mu Chen witnessed in shock as the One-Horned Panther Dragon let out a painful howl. Its entire waist was completely destroyed by the Conflagration Ape King's brutal blow. Even the carapace was completely shattered.

"What a vicious beast."

Mu Chen could not help but breath in cold air when he noticed that the One-Horned Panther Dragon being killed in one attack from the Conflagration Ape King. This fellow sure can't take a hit, yet he was hoping that it could stall for some time.

After the Conflagration Ape King killed the One-Horned Panther Dragon, its blood red eyes turned towards Mu Chen. The latter felt that it was pretty bad and was about to flee. However, an extremely furious roar came out from the depths of the forest.

ROAR!

An amazing Spiritual Energy fluctuation was wrapped within the roar.

Wind appeared where the roar passed by and Mu Chen's face instantly changed due to this Spiritual Energy pressure.

A High Rank Spiritual Beast?! The strength of a Spirit Stage!

BOOM!

A silver shadow stormed out of the depths of the forest in berserk. After a few seconds, it appeared in this open space. Mu Chen hurriedly lowered his body and looked over. He saw that the silver shadow was actually exactly the same as the One-Horned Panther Dragon. Aside from the fact that its body was larger, the horn on its head was a silver color.

This is the...High Rank Spiritual Beast, Silver-Horned Panther Dragon?

Mu Chen's heart jumped. He stared at the dead One-Horned Panther Dragon before looking at the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon, who was staring with hatred at the Conflagration Ape King. He finally understood. The Conflagration Ape King actually killed the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon's child...

Mu Chen quietly laid down on the ground. He painted his body with the pungent black liquid in order to cover his smell and held his breath. Then, he stared pitifully at the Conflagration Ape King.

"Buddy, it's over for you."

Chapter 32: Spoils of War

Deep inside the forest, a violent Spiritual Energy swept through like a fierce wind. Under this powerful Spiritual Energy, the entire forest became silent. In the distant, a few Spiritual Beasts desperately fled as they felt the rage from the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon.

The fury within the Conflagration Ape King's eyes subsided slightly under the Spiritual Energy's pressure. The ugly beast's face revealed a slight hint of fear. Although it had just reached the peak of a Middle Rank Spiritual Beast, the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon in front of it was a genuine High Rank Spiritual Beast!

Conflagration Ape King's enormous body curled up slightly. It stared in fear at the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon. The body showed traces of backing off and it was obvious that it planned on escaping.

"Roar!"

But the grieving Silver-Horned Panther Dragon would not let this murderer escape that easily. Rage and ruthlessness filled its cold beast eyes. As its sharp claws slowly rubbed the ground, an extremely violent Spiritual Energy Fluctuation emitted out from it constantly.

Boom.

The Conflagration Ape King suddenly turned around and ran. The fierceness it showed earlier as it chased Mu Chen had completely vanished. Under the threat of death, it was obvious that it had forgotten about Mu Chen.

The Silver-Horned Panther Dragon stared coldly at the escaping Conflagration Ape King, its massive body lowered slightly. In the next instant, Spiritual Energy flooded out like a waterfall and dazzling silver light completely wrapped around the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon. After a muffled sound, the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon turned into a silver streak of light as it darted forward.

Swoosh!

With a speed that the naked eye cannot perceive, the silver light pierced through the air. A sound of tearing rang out before Mu Chen was able to react. He turned his gaze over to that direction and noticed that the Conflagration Ape King had already stopped running. A 1-meter wide hole appeared on its back. The organs within its body had completely vanished as well.

The Silver-Horned Panther Dragon shook its body lightly in front of the Conflagration Ape King. It flung away all the bloodstains on its body before it slowly walked back.

Bang.

The Conflagration Ape King's body collapsed onto the ground. Fresh blood continued to flow out, but it was obvious that it had died already.

One hit. An instant kill.

Mu Chen's heart jumped. He thought inside his mind. Is this the power of a High Rank Spiritual Beast? How terrifying! However, he remained motionless as he laid on the ground. He even minimized his breathing and the Spiritual Energy, which was circulating within his body, returned back to his aurasea.

If he was discovered by the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon, he probably wouldn't be much better off than the Conflagration Ape King.

Luckily, the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon was not in a mood to search for a human like him. Instead, it walked beside the One-Horned Panther Dragon and pushed the corpse around. It issued out a lament howl and slowly walked back to the depths of the forest with its corpse.

Mu Chen watched as the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon disappeared. He did not immediately stand up. Instead, he waited patiently for approximately ten minutes before he carefully stood up.

He stared vigilantly at his surroundings. Then, he hurried quickly to the Conflagration Ape King's corpse and used a dagger to cut its head apart. All of a sudden, a red light floated out.

This was the Conflagration Ape King's Soul Essence. This fiery red light

had a miniature-sized Conflagration Ape in it. A powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuation radiated from it.

Mu Chen used his backhand to collect the Conflagration Ape King's Soul Essence. Then, he used the dagger and cut the Conflagration Ape King's head completely off. After this was done, he suddenly paused and pondered for a moment. Then, he walked to the place where the One-Horned Panther Dragon had died. A large puddle of thick red blood was at that spot.

Mu Chen took out a bottle and carefully loaded the blood inside. Then, he placed it back within his arms and swiftly left this place.

...

While Mu Chen got rid of his dilemma, a trouble also appeared within the valley.

Roar Roar!

The silence within the valley was completely shattered at this moment. Groups of giant red apes stared furiously at the humans within the depths of the valley. They picked up giant boulders and threw them fiercely at them. With their numbers, they managed to force everyone in the valley into a helpless position.

"Damn it, all of these beasts regained their consciousness."

Lin Zhong and the others dodged the giant boulders helpless. They stared at the group of Conflagration Apes as they showed an exceeding ugly expression. After Mu Chen had lured away the Conflagration Ape King, they picked up the speed. However, they did not imagine that the Conflagration Apes would wake up in succession. Right now, they were stuck at this location due to them.

"What should we do?" Tang Qian'Er, Mo Ling and the others had a pale expression. After all, their psychological qualities weren't as good as Lin Zhong and the others. This scene made their legs feel slightly weak.

"Prepare to charge out." Lei Cheng said in a deep voice. He was carrying a bag behind him. Emerald lights continued to penetrate outwards from

within the bag while a fragrance was released into the air.

"Lin Zhong, bring some people to take care of them. Don't let anything happen to them."

Lei Cheng said. After all, they were veterans and they had bountiful experience in this. However, Tang Qian'Er and the others were just rookies without any experience. If an accident occurs and they were caught among the group of Conflagration Apes, they would probably be ripped into shreds instantly.

"Yes."

Lin Zhong and the others nodded. They did not make fun of these students, who had not guts. After all, the courage displayed by Mu Chen earlier when he lured away the Conflagration Ape King by himself was something that they were stunned about. They understood that they would have probably died today if it wasn't for Mu Chen's actions.

"Let's go!"

Lei Cheng gripped onto his long blade and his eyes became serious. A powerful Spiritual Energy emitted out and he led the charge towards the Conflagration Apes. His blade flashed and he forcibly teared open a path.

The Thunderstorm Team followed closely. Tang Qian'Er and the others were in the center and were protected by them. The group of people pushed their Spiritual Energy to the extreme and blade lights formed into a defensive line. It knocked back the Conflagration Apes that tried to lunge over.

Bang Bang Bang.

Although there was Lei Cheng, a Spiritual Rotation Stage Initial Phase powerhouse, who was leading the team, there were just too many Conflagration Apes. Therefore, some of the members of the Thunderstorm Team were injured shortly after they charged out. However, they gritted their teeth and endured it as fresh blood constantly flowed down the arms holding the blade.

"Damn it!"

Lei Cheng split a Conflagration Ape into half. However, he could only curse as numerous Conflagration Apes lunged over. He gradually started to panic. It seems that they would be buried within this valley today.

Tang Qian'Er, Mo Ling and the others stared at the vicious Conflagration Apes with a pale expression. However, the Conflagration Apes suddenly created a commotion when they felt despair within their hearts. The Conflagration Apes seemed to have noticed something terrifying and they retreated backwards while letting out fearful cries.

"What is this all about?"

Lei Cheng and the others watched in astonishment at this scene. Not far away, they noticed a thin boy's figure suddenly jumping out.

"It's Mu Chen!"

Tang Qian'Er and the others instantly became overjoyed when they noticed this familiar figure. They did not understand why, but the confidence that the latter gave far surpassed Lei Cheng even when he wasn't as strong as Lei Cheng.

"What is he holding in his hand?" Lin Zhong and the others could see clearly. The thing that Mu Chen was holding on seemed to be the source of fear for the nearby Conflagration Apes.

"It's a head..."

Lei Cheng was stunned. His eyes immediately showed an astounded expression and he cried: "It's the head of the Conflagration Ape King!"

"What?!" Lin Zhong and the others were startled. Horror began to fill their eyes. Did Mu Chen really kill the Conflagration Ape King?

"Hurry!"

Just as they were horrified, Mu Chen shouted at them. At the same time, he raised the head of the Conflagration Ape King and the nearby Conflagration Apes retreated backwards due to fear. In their eyes, the Conflagration Ape King was an extremely terrifying existence. Then, the one who killed the Conflagration Ape King, just how powerful would he?

Without a sharp wisdom, they weren't able to think clearly about this. They could only rely on the fear that they felt from their instincts.

"Hurry and run!"

Lei Cheng rejoiced and he quickly gestured with his hand. He led the crowd and accelerated to leave the Conflagration Ape's siege. Finally, they made it to Mu Chen's side. As they approached, they were able to see clearly the ugly head that was constantly dripping blood. It was indeed the Conflagration Ape King's head...

Lei Cheng and the others exchanged gazes. They could see the shock within their eyes. How in the world did Mu Chen do it?

Mu Chen did not care about their thoughts and led them out of the valley quickly. Then, he placed the head of the Conflagration Ape King outside of the valley and scared the Conflagration Apes, so that they did not dare to come out.

The group of people turned around and rushed fiercely away. Only after they were far away from the valley, they fell down exhausted. Even Lei Cheng was panting heavily and his body was covered with sweat.

Mu Chen also sat down below a tree. It feels that his bones were about to shatter. It was quite frightening this time, he nearly died.

"Are you alright?" Tang Qian'Er walked beside Mu Chen. Her beautiful eyes stared at the boy. It was obvious that this person had given her many shocks today.

"I'm fine."

Mu Chen smiled and he raised his head. He noticed that Lei Cheng and the others were all dumbfounded as they stared at him. It was evident that they had not recovered from the shock that Mu Chen had saved them using the head of the Conflagration Ape King.

"Stop staring. I was just lucky. I still don't have the strength to kill a Conflagration Ape King."

Mu Chen shook his head helplessly. Then, he turned and looked at Lei

Cheng as he smiled: “However, Big Brother Lei Cheng, the task is finished. We should divide the spoils now, right?”

“Haha.”

When Lei Cheng heard these words, he could not help but laugh. He lowered the bag behind him and spread it open. A dazzling emerald light flowed out instantly along with a thick fragrance, which made everybody’s eyes lit up.

Mu Chen also stared at the round and juicy Jaded Essence Fruit inside the bag. A satisfied smile appeared on his face. At least he did not lose out after this tiring ordeal.

Chapter 33: Returning to Camp

The bag was spread out on the ground and a dazzling emerald light emitted from it. Every single jaded-colored Jaded Essence Fruit was round and shiny. An irresistible aroma made all of them gulp as they stared feverishly at it.

"There's a total of 30 Jaded Essence Fruits. Originally, we should have more of an harvest, but the Conflagration Ape King wasted many Jaded Essence Fruit." Lei smiled and separated 15 of the Jaded Essence Fruit. He said: "Little Brother Mu Chen. Although you said that you would only take 30%, it was all thanks to you regarding about the matter today. You deserve these 15 Jaded Essence Fruit. We cannot be greedy after all the work that you've done."

"We should just do 30% like we agreed upon...Fine, then thank you, Big Brother Lei Cheng."

Mu Chen shook his head. He was about to refuse, but he noticed the resolute expression that Lei Cheng had. He could only helplessly smile and did not act pretentious as he accepted the 15 Jaded Essence Fruit. Then, he looked at Mo Ling and the others, who were staring at him, and said: "You guys worked hard as well. Let's have everybody take 1 Jaded Essence Fruit, is that okay?"

"Hehe."

Mo Ling and the others could not help but grin. Even Jiang Li and Teng Yong had emotional faces. As they obtained the Jaded Essence Fruit from Mu Chen, their faces turned red as if they wanted to say something, but they didn't have the nerve to do so. Thus, they could only keep grinning.

"Yo, you also have one." Mu Chen handed a Jaded Essence Fruit to Tang Qian'Er. The girl let off a sweet smile as she held onto the Jaded Essence Fruit.

When Mu Chen finished distributing the 15 Jaded Essence Fruit, he still had 6 remaining in his hand. Even he could not endure it and grinned as he stared at the cold, jade-like Jaded Essence. With this Jaded Essence

Fruit, he should be able to condense the second Limitless Death Seal, right?

The group of people rested in the forest. Because they came back with fruitful results, every single one of them had a joyous expression. They also got closer with each other. Mo Ling and the others even took the opportunity to ask for guidance from the Thunderstorm regarding about methods of hunting Spiritual Beast. Moreover, Lin Zhong and the others even shared some of the dangerous experiences they had in their adventures. As they were listening, Mo Ling and the others' eyes lit up as if they were extremely excited.

Mu Chen watched the harmonious atmosphere and smiled. At this moment, Lei Cheng walked over with a bottle of hard liquor and thrusted it towards Mu Chen. He smiled and said: "How is it? Can you drink?"

Mu Chen was not good with the item inside the bottle. However, he did not refuse and took a swig from it. The spicy feeling made the handsome boy's face turned red and he coughed a few times.

"Don't drink that much." Seeing this, Tang Qian'Er hurriedly patted Mu Chen's back and said reproachfully.

"Ohoho, I've met many youths over all these years, but I've never met one as amazing as Little Brother Mu Chen. If you have time in the future, you can come play around with the Thunderstorm Team." Lei Cheng joked as he said.

"His father is the Mu Territory's Lord. Uncle Mu will not forgive you if you drag him in becoming an Adventurer." Tang Qian'Er batted an eye towards Lei Cheng and said sourly.

"Mu Territory's Lord?" Lei Cheng was stunned. He immediately stared at Mu Chen in surprise: "So Little Brother Mu Chen is the Young Master of the Mu Territory. It was an oversight. Ohoho, I've had once followed my Big Brother and met the Mu Territory's Lord before. Truly, a wild goose will never lay a tame egg."

Mu Chen glared at Tang Qian'Er as the girl stuck out her tongue. She only mentioned it because she did not think carefully about it.

“Little Brother Mu Chen, we will stay at the Northern Spiritual Field for a while. If you need any help, feel free to call us. This time, we owe you a favor.” Lei Cheng said.

“Big Brother Lei, there’s no need to be this polite. Naturally, I would have to give it my all since we were cooperating.” Mu Chen smiled and said.

“Cooperation is Cooperation. However, it is also true that you’ve saved us, the Thunderstorm Team.” Lei Cheng said seriously.

Mu Chen could only shake his head helplessly. However, he had a better opinion of this straight-forward and burly man.

After they chatted for a while, the color of the sky gradually darkened. When Mu Chen noticed this, he said farewells to the Thunderstorm Team together with Tang Qian’Er and the others. Afterwards, they rushed towards the direction of the camp.

Along the way, Mo Ling and the others were still immersed in excitement. Although they were in a dangerous situation today, the emotional moments after the danger made them extremely excited. They talked constantly about the fierce battle within the valley.

Mu Chen did not feel anything about the excitement they were talking about. After all, he had experienced this many times within the Spiritual Road. Therefore, he was able to maintain a calm heart when facing this kind of situation.

As there weren’t many obstacles on the way back, they reached a location close to the camp after half an hour. The youths all let out a sigh of relief when they saw the camp out in the distance.

Mu Chen stared in the direction of the camp and frowned. This is because a dozen figures were at the entrance of the forest. The leading figure was fairly familiar as it was Liu Yang and Chen Tong. It was clear that the people behind these smiling individuals were all West Branch students.

“It’s Chen Tong and a few others.” Mo Ling was startled when he noticed Liu Yang and the other students. His face immediately turned

disgusted: “Mu Chen, it seems that they are coming for you.”

Just when Mu Chen and the others discovered Chen Tong’s group, the other group also noticed the group that was returning. A nasty expression appeared instantly in their faces and they intercepted Mu Chen and the others.

“Chen Tong, what are you guys doing?” Mo Ling frowned when he noticed this.

“Oh, nothing. I only want to talk with him for a while. Mo Ling, this is unrelated to you, so you best not intervene, okay? If you offend Brother Liu, you’ll have an unpleasant time as well.” Chen Tong laughed.

The Brother Liu that Chen Tong was talking about was obviously Liu Mubai. When Mo Ling heard this, his face changed slightly. It was obvious that he was afraid of Liu Mubai.

“Jiang Li, Teng Yong, the two of you can leave as well. I know that you bear grudges with Mu Chen, we’ll help you vent off your feelings.” Chen Tong stared as he spoke to Jiang Li and Teng Yong.

He calculated it quite accurately. Aside from Tang Qian’Er, the other people weren’t familiar with Mu Chen. Moreover, Jiang Li and Teng Yong both disliked Mu Chen, so they wouldn’t help him for sure.

However, just when he believed that he had calculated the situation accurately, Jiang Li and the others only stared at him coldly. They did not show any traces of leaving and instead let out a sneer: “If you want to hurt Brother Mu, you have to ask us first.”

Although Jiang Li and Teng Yong disliked Mu Chen earlier, the matter today completely changed their opinions on him. Not only did Mu Chen rescue them, his actions in the valley completely made these prideful individuals respect him. The hatred they had against him had vanished already. Therefore, they did not feel the slightest psychological burden when they called him Brother Mu.

“You!”

Chen Tong and the others were stunned. Their faces instantly turned

grim as they stared malevolently at Mo Ling and the others, who were protecting Mu Chen. They felt incredulously. Why would these old students be that protective of an East Branch Heaven Class newcomer?

Mu Chen watched the scene undisturbed and did not say anything. He only patted Jiang Li and the other's shoulders and said: "Let's leave."

He did not say anything towards Chen Tong and Liu Yang. This ignoring attitude made Chen Tong's face become disgusted. He let out a low cry: "You want to leave? You're acting too arrogant!"

His hand stretched straight out towards Mu Chen's collar as soon as he said those words.

Swoosh!

However, when he took action towards Mu Chen, a cold chill passed through Mu Chen's eyes. Mu Chen turned his hand around and a black light flashed. Before Chen Tong's hands touched his collar, a bloody dark dagger already appeared next to Chen Tong's throat.

The coldness coming from his throat made Chen Tong's pupil contract violently. He shuddered and gritted his teeth as he said: "What do you want?"

"You don't believe that I'll kill you?" Mu Chen said softly as he looked at Chen Tong.

Although Mu Chen's words were light, Chen Tong and the others all felt a bone-chilling cold. This was a true killing intent...

The youths behind Chen Tong were stunned by the emotionless black eyes of Mu Chen. They were afraid and did not dare to speak.

"What are you doing?"

A deep voice broke the silence and many youths hurriedly looked over. They saw Teacher Mo staring severely at them nearby.

"Teacher Mo!"

Mo Ling and the others immediately bowed when they noticed him.

When Mu Chen saw that Teacher Mo, he withdrew his dagger. A gentle smile reappeared on his handsome face. When you look at him, it seems that he was harmless.

“Teacher Mo, Mu Chen wanted to kill me!” Chen Tong stared at Mu Chen with a flushed face.

“You really believe that I didn’t see it at all?” Teacher Mo glanced at Chen Tong as he said faintly.

Chen Tong was startled and he bitterly touched his nose. Then, he glared fiercely at Mu Chen and brought everyone away with a depressed expression.

“All of you should return back to the camp as well.” Teacher Mo said this towards Mo Ling, Tang Qian’Er and the others. The latter hesitated for a moment before leaving one after another.

After seeing them leave, Teacher Mo walked towards Mu Chen. He could not help but shake his head as he stared at the boy’s gentle face. He said: “Boy, you really dare do such a dangerous thing with an Adventurer’s Team.”

“Teacher Mo, you know what we did?” Mu Chen was slightly stunned as he asked.

“After Tan Qingshan returned and informed me, I rushed over immediately. However, I did not show up, but I’ve witnessed your actions.” Teacher Mo stared at Mu Chen while he was slightly overwhelmed. He originally planned on saving Mu Chen when he noticed Mu Chen luring away the Conflagration Ape King. However, who would have expected that the boy would actually lure out a Silver-Horned Panther Dragon. This act of rousing the tiger to eat the wolf even made him sigh with amazement.

“So Teacher Mo was secretly protecting me. If I knew that earlier, I wouldn’t need to be hunted down that helplessly.” Mu Chen said helplessly. If they knew that a Spirit Stage powerhouse was protecting him in secret, just who would be willing to run around the forest while being chased?

“Boy, you…” Teacher Mo smiled as he shook his head. He knew that Mu Chen was quite cautious even though he was still quite young. He must have cooperated with the Thunderstorm Team because he was convinced that the other side would not dare do anything wicked to them: “Forget it, it’s great that you’re back. Let’s head back to the camp first.”

Teacher Mo waved his hand and turned around towards the camp. Mu Chen followed him with a smile.

The two of them passed through the forest and entered the camp. Mu Chen immediately swept a glance around the camp when he entered. He suddenly stared at the dozen burly figures near the camp. The powerful and ominous aura that came from the figures showed that they were any ordinary individuals.

“This is…”

Teacher Mo also frowned as he stared at the unfamiliar team. Then, he noticed the badge on these men’s chests and muttered: “It’s the people from the Liu Territory? What are they planning to do by coming here?”

Chapter 34: Liu Ming

A group of strangers appearing within the camp would naturally attract the gazes of many students. However, none of them dared to approach. The ominous aura that emitted from their bodies made the young boys and girls slightly afraid.

“The people from the Liu Territory?” Mu Chen frowned as he stared at these unfamiliar men. Why did these individuals run over to the Northern Spiritual Field?

It was obvious that Teacher Mo was also puzzled. He slowly walked towards the group and a middle-aged man stepped forward. He cuffed his hands as he smiled and said: “Surely, this must be the Northern Spiritual Academy’s Teacher Mo? Liu Territory’s Liu Ming. I apologize for coming here uninvited, but I hope you will forgive me.”

“Oh, so it’s the Third Masterof the Liu Territory, Liu Ming.” Teacher Mo let out a faint smile when he heard those words.

“How could I allowTeacher Mo call me like this, that’s only a rumor caused by outsiders.” The middle-aged man hurriedly shook his head and maintained a low-profile.

“Liu Ming? The Third Master of the Liu Territory, huh…”

Behind Teacher Mo, Mu Chen glanced at the middle-aged man again. The latter was slightly skinny, yet he seemed strong. Moreover, he had a pair of claw-like hands. At this moment, the skinny face was filled with smiles.

Mu Chen wasn’t unfamiliar with the name, Liu Ming. He had often heard it from his father and Uncle Zhou. This person was the younger twin brother of the Liu Territory’s Territory Lord, Liu Qingtian and was also the right-hand man for him. His strength had already reached the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase and was only a step away from reaching the Spirit Stage. Furthermore, he was considered a relatively well-known figure within the Northern Spiritual Realm.

“You guys are?” Teacher Mo stared at the group led by Liu Ming, which did not fit with the atmosphere around the camp. He had a slightly unhappy expression. After all, this place was a training location for the students. With these ominous people around here, it might disturb the student’s training.

“Teacher Mo, my Third Uncle is currently on a mission. He noticed that Liu Yang and I were here, so he came over to see us. He did not intend to disturb us.” Behind Liu Ming, Liu Mubai gave a slight smile as he spoke.

“Mission?”

Liu Ming sighed: “We, the Liu Territory, had an important item that was stolen by the “Blood Slaughter Group” while we were transporting it back. Although we, the Liu Territory, managed to encircle them and annihilate them, the captain of the “Blood Slaughter Group” , Xue Tu, still escaped. He fled into the Northern Spiritual Field under our chase, so we came here this time to capture him.”

“Xue Tu?”

Hearing this name, Teacher Mo frowned. He was an extremely ruthlessly individual within the Northern Spiritual Realm. It was unknown how many lives died in his hands. If this wicked individual entered the Northern Spiritual Realm, wouldn’t it be a threat to the students training here?

The other law-abiding Adventurer Teams and Adventurers would fear the Northern Spiritual Academy. Thus, they would not dare do anything overboard to these students. However, this wicked individual would not hesitate at all. As long as they made him unhappy, he would kill without hesitation.

“Ohoho, yes. This time, we came over here because we wanted to inform Teacher Mo as well. Try and allow the students to be more careful, so that nothing unpleasant would occur. After all, everybody knows how crazy that person is.”

As Mu Chen was standing beside Teacher Mo, he naturally heard this and was a little surprised. Obviously, he had heard of the name Blood

Slaughter Group before. It was an extremely vicious name. However, these individuals weren't idiots, why would they dare to trouble the Liu Territory?

It seems that those people stole something amazing from them. Otherwise, why would the Liu Territory be so angry? Not only did they massacre the Blood Slaughter Group, they even cause Xue Tu to flee to this place.

"Third Master Liu, what item did the Blood Slaughter Group steal from the Liu Territory? You would actually mobilize this many troops for it." Mu Chen's eyes flashed. He suddenly asked as if he was naïve.

This kind of stupid question startled Liu Ming. He let out a dry chuckle and said: "Little Brother, I can't tell you this."

Mu Chen smiled slightly. Within his heart, he understood just how important that the item stolen by Xue Tu is.

"Mu Chen, this matter is unrelated to your Mu Territory." Liu Mubai glanced at Mu Chen and said.

"Mu Chen?" When Liu Ming heard this name, he was stunned. His eyes narrowed as he stared at Mu Chen and said: "So you're Mu Feng's son. The only one who obtained the qualifications for the Spiritual Road within the Northern Spiritual Realm?"

Mu Chen smiled as he nodded. They were many disputes between the Liu Territory and the Mu Territory. It could be said that they were enemies. Therefore, he was not surprised by Liu Ming's reaction.

"Ohoho, I have heard of your name a long time ago. Originally, I thought that the spot for the Spiritual Road would belong to Mubai." Liu Ming let out a faint chuckle and said this out.

Mu Chen smiled, but he did not respond.

"Thank you for informing us about the matter of Xue Tu, we will be careful." Seeing that Liu Ming's words have a sting in them, Teacher Mo frowned. Liu Ming was ultimately a well-known figure within the Northern Spiritual Realm, how could he speak so rudely to a young boy?

“Teacher Mo, we wanted to rest in the camp tonight, so we hope that Teacher Mo will accept it. Ohoho, although Teacher Xi had already accepted it, I still feel that it is necessary that Teacher Mo accepts it as well. Of course, we will take care of protecting the camp tonight and guarantee that nothing will happen.” Liu Ming quickly said.

When Teacher Mo heard this, he pondered for a moment. Since Teacher Xi had already accepted it, then it wouldn’t be quite honorable if he refused. He immediately nodded and brought Liu Ming to arrange a place.

“I heard from Chen Tong earlier that you wanted to kill him?” Seeing that Mu Chen was planning to leave, Liu Mubai suddenly called out faintly.

Mu Chen tilted his head and glanced at Liu Mubai for a moment. He smiled and said: “To those individuals that come to trouble me, I don’t know how to be merciful to them. If you enjoy that, you can come at me by yourself. But if you allow those dogs of yours to come over again, I do not mind teaching them a lesson.”

Liu Mubai stared coldly at Mu Chen as Mu Chen smiled and exchanged gazes with him.

“If I have the chance, I will personally test out how powerful you, a person who qualified for the Spiritual Road, are. I hope that you would not disappoint me.” Liu Mubai stared deeply at Mu Chen. Then, he left without saying anymore.

When Mu Chen saw this, he smiled as well. Then, he turned around and headed to the camp for the East Branch students. Seeing him walk over, Tang Qian’Er pouted her lips and said: “Those fellows from the Liu Territory, what is there to be proud of now? They still act this arrogant when their item was stolen.”

She had always been looking over there. Thus, she was slightly unhappy when she heard the stingy words from Liu Ming and Liu Mubai.

“Since they are unhappy, they needed somewhere to vent off their feelings.” Mu Chen smiled and beckoned Tan Qingshan to come over. After he walked over, he quietly thrusted a Jaded Essence Fruit into his

hands.

"This is the payment for passing on the message."

Mu Chen patted Tan Qingshan's shoulder while he was in a daze.

"This...Is this really for me?" Tan Qingshan's face turned red because he was emotional. When they came back, Mo Ling and the others talked about the events in the valley to him. Naturally, Tan Qingshan became envious when they were all holding a Jaded Essence Fruit. However, he knew that Mo Ling and the others worked hard for it, so that is why they obtained it. He could only blame his own strength as he could not go with them.

His family environment wasn't that good. He could not afford a Spirit Fruit like the Jaded Essence Fruit. The Jaded Essence Fruit that Mu Chen gave him would be able to save a lot of time for training.

"If you did not pass back the message, we would not have the confidence to follow them and do the task with them." Mu Chen smiled and said.

"B...Brother Mu, thank you." Tan Qingshan held onto the Jaded Essence Fruit and said in an appreciative voice.

"Go train well now."

Mu Chen shook his head. Afterwards, he headed towards his own tent. Right now, he was left with 5 Jaded Essence Fruits. With such sufficient preparations, he should be able to condense the second seal of the Limitless Death Seal this time, right?

When he thought about this, even with his calmness, Mu Chen could not help but be excited about it.

Night gradually enveloped the Northern Spiritual Field. As the color of the sky darkened, the camp became bright again and was extremely lively.

However, Mu Chen did not go out. Instead, he sat quietly within his tent with his eyes closed. He circulated the Great Pagoda Art and dark black lights glowed on the surface of his body.

This quiet training lasted for approximately 30 minutes. Then, Mu Chen

opened his eyes suddenly and pulled out a round Jaded Essence Fruit from his arms. Under the faint firelight, the Jaded Essence Fruit's bright reflection was extremely enchanting.

Mu Chen licked his mouth. Then, he opened his mouth and directly shoved the Jaded Essence Fruit into this mouth. Next up, it was finally the time to condense the second seal for the Limitless Death Seal.

Chapter 35: The Second Limitless Death Seal

Hong!

The Jaded Essence Fruit instantlydissolved when it enteredMu Chen'smouth and a thick, sweet taste spread out within. Next, pureSpiritual Energy flowed out like water and infused into Mu Chen's body.

The Spiritual Energy was extremely powerful. Thus, he pursed his lips as the Spiritual Energy caused Mu Chen's body to tremble slightly.

Without the slightest hesitation, Mu Chen overlapped his ten fingers and swiftly changed between complicated seals. As his seals changed, a richSpiritual Energy began to condense in the center of his palms.

Mu Chen had always been attempting to form the second Limitless Death Seal for a while now. Although he had never succeeded, it still allowed him to get increasingly skilled in the condensation method.

Permeated with black lights, the dark black Spiritual Energy nearly wrapped around Mu Chen's arms completely. The density of the Spiritual Energy was not something that Mu Chen would normally able to achieve.

Mu Chen's eyes were fixed on the Spiritual Energy condensing at the center of his palm. The black light seemed to form a whirlpool and it devoured the surrounding Spiritual Energy endlessly.

He was completely focused on it and did not dare to be distracted at all. After all, when he attempted to condense one normally, he would use the Spiritual Energy that he could control. Even if it failed, it would not cause much damage to him. However, the situation right now was completely different. The Spiritual Energy that came from the Jaded Essence Fruit made the Spiritual Energy within Mu Chen's body reach a considerably dense level. If he fails, the backlash from the Spiritual Energy would probably be quite troublesome for Mu Chen.

Buzz.

As Mu Chen concentrated, the black lights condensed more rapidly. It was possible to see a black light to slowly condense into the shape of a black light seal.

“All of you, go in!”

Mu Chen let out a cry within his heart and activated the Spiritual Energy within his body with all his strength. It flowed endlessly into the black light seal. The speed of the black light extending increased again. Approximately a minute later, the black light quietly retracted and a black light seal appeared above the center of Mu Chen’s left hand.

He finally condensed the second Limitless Death Seal!

Mu Chen stared at the Limitless Death Seal floating above the center of his palm, but he did not relax. Instead, his eyes became increasingly serious because he knew that succeeding in forming the Limitless Death Seal was only the first step...

Next up, he must absorb this second Limitless Death into his body. But when this Limitless Death Seal enters his body, it would burst out an extremely powerful force. If he was not careful, the meridians within his body would be destroyed.

Mu Chen had already suffered from the powerful backlash from the Limitless Death Seal when he formed the first one. He understood that the backlash would only be more terrifying when he formed more of them. Even someone like Teacher Mo, who was at the Spirit Stage Level, could not form the third Limitless Death Seal. Although the power of the backlash would increase based on the practitioner’s own strength, he was still able to differentiate just how powerful the backlash would be.

Huuu.

Mu Chen took a deep breath and the Spiritual Energy within his aurasea began to surge out. It formed a protective membrane around the meridians as it prepared for the violent impact.

When the inside of his body was fully prepared, Mu Chen did not hesitate and the second Limitless Death Seal imprinted itself onto Mu

Chen's left palm.

Bang!

The moment that it touched Mu Chen's palm, his body trembled suddenly. Then, the color of his face changed as a violent impact surged forward through his meridians like a raging flood from his left palm.

The power of the impact was filled with destructiveness. Along the way, the Spiritual Energy membrane was smashed instantly and his meridians could not endure the impact. It became slightly distorted and a terrible pain came from it.

Cold sweat appeared at Mu Chen's forehead. However, he did not dare to get distracted. He hurriedly mobilized his Spiritual Energy and contained it again.

Bang Bang Bang!

Mu Chen's body seems to have turned into a battlefield. The backlash from the Limitless Death Seal destroyed the many defenses and wreaked havoc within his body. The pain made Mu Chen's body twitch slightly.

"Damn it!"

The pain had twisted Mu Chen's face a bit. He gritted his teeth and cursed loudly as he struggled to resist it. If he fails to withstand it now, then his hard work would be wasted. Moreover, he would suffer a grave injury within his body.

A terrible pain constantly emitted out from his meridians. Mu Chen was completely drenched in cold sweat and he was slightly dizzy from the pain.

Only at this moment did he truly understand how difficult it was to form the second Limitless Death Seal.

The power of the backlash had already breakthrough the outer meridians and it charged straight towards Mu Chen's aurasea without stopping. This made Mu Chen's heart turn cold. If his meridians were injured, he could still restore them. However, if his aurasea was destroyed,

it would definitely be so painful that he would want to die.

"Stop!"

When Mu Chen thought about this, even he couldn't remain calm and he let out an angry roar within his heart.

Buzz!

When the low cry rumbled within his body, he noticed that a few lights lit up within his body. These lights were distributed throughout Mu Chen's limbs and seemed quite peculiar.

As these lights appeared, Mu Chen felt that an energy gushing out from his body and it collided with the raging impact directly.

Boom!

A sound of bombardment rang out within his body and buzzed within Mu Chen's ears. He only managed to recover after a while. When he recovered, the first thing that he did was to sense within his body. However, he was startled.

Because he discovered that the raging backlash was actually blocked!

"How could this be..." Mu Chen muttered at a loss. He stared in his mind at the fading lights within his body. Could this really be a Spiritual Pulse? But why couldn't he control it or even just sense it?

After thinking for a while, he could not think of any reason why and he could only let out a bitter laugh. It seems that there was some sort of secret within his body.

Mu Chen suppressed these thoughts within his heart and circulated the Great Pagoda Art. He gathered the Spiritual Energy that was spread throughout his limbs into his aurasea. However, after the Spiritual Energy entered his aurasea, he could feel that the originally quiet Spiritual Energy begin to rumble. A strange fluctuation rumbled within Mu Chen's heart.

When he sensed this fluctuation, Mu Chen was stunned. Then, a pleasant surprise could not be concealed as it gushed out from his heart.

This is...a sign of the Spiritual Energy making a breakthrough!

Mu Chen opened his eyes in surprised. He immediately pulled out another Jaded Essence Fruit and shoved it into his mouth. Then, he circulated the Great Pagoda Art and refined the warm and cool Spiritual Energy. It eventually turned into a dark black Spiritual Energy as it endlessly entered his aurasea.

The two Spiritual Energies quickly converged together and a joyous cry rang out within Mu Chen's aurasea. As this joyous cry rang out, Mu Chen was able to feel the Spiritual Energy within his body becoming denser rapidly.

This increase lasted for quite a while before it stopped. The star cluster-like dark black Spiritual Energy within Mu Chen's body seemed to have doubled compared to before.

Inside the tent, Mu Chen opened his eyes and his handsome face was filled with joy. He stretched out his hands and a dark seal flickered within both his palms.

He succeeded in forming the second Limitless Death Seal!

Mu Chen grinned and clenched his hands tightly. Not only did he condense the second Limitless Death Seal, he even took advantage of this opportunity and broke through again. He advanced to the Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase!

Sensing that the Spiritual Energy within his body had become denser, Mu Chen could not help but smile.

Tonight's harvest had far surpassed his own expectations.

Just when Mu Chen was delighted due to his breakthrough, Teacher Mo also opened his eyes in another tent. His eyes stared in surprise in the direction of Mu Chen's tent and he immediately smiled.

This little guy is truly impressive.

Chapter 36: Predicament

The following day. The camp, once again, became lively. Many boys and girls surrounded each other excitedly as they talked about their harvests of yesterday. Sounds of laughter from the girls echoed in the camp. It was filled with youthful vitality.

The people from the Liu Territory, led by Liu Ming, had temporarily left in the early morning. They probably went to search for traces of Xue Tu. Without the existence of these individuals, the camp's atmosphere relaxed. After all, these boys and girls had some resistance towards these ominous individuals.

Teacher Mo and Teacher Xi did not stop the training because of Xue Tu. However, they reminded the students to not venture in too deep and to not be too dispersed.

"Let's go, we should also set off."

Mu Chen gestured towards Tang Qian'Er and she trotted over. The curvy, slender petite body attracted many boys' gazes and they stared jealously towards Mu Chen. This guy was really lucky since he was able to form a team with Tang Qian'Er.

"Brother Mu, are you going out for training again? Haha, don't lose to us." Jiang Li and Teng Yong greeted Mu Chen when they noticed him.

"You want to defeat us as well, dream on." Tang Qian'Er said in a sweet voice.

"Haha, if anything happens feel free to call us, Brother Mu. If anyone wants to trouble you, we're not afraid of them." Jiang Li and Teng Yong laughed as they talked. Beside them, the East Branch students that had accompanied Mu Chen yesterday to perform the task hurriedly nodded.

Mu Chen waved at them with a smile. Without saying anything more, he brought Tang Qian'Er away from the camp and headed to the Northern Spiritual Field.

Within the camp, Liu Mubai stared at the disappearing figure. A hint of

coldness that was hard to detect flashed through his eyes.

Boom!

Within the forest, Mu Chen's hand shot off as dark black Spiritual Energy surged out from his palms. He darted passed a Low Rank Spiritual Beast, whose strength was at the Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase, and directly knocked it a dozen meters away. The Spiritual Beast could only whine as it landed on the ground.

Behind him, Tang Qian'Er watched this scene and was startled. Although Mu Chen could kill a Low Rank Spiritual Beast with this level of strength yesterday, he could not kill it using such a brutal method like he showed today.

"Your strength?" Tang Qian'Er could not help but ask.

"Thanks to the Jaded Essence Fruit, I managed to break through to the Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase yesterday night." Mu Chen crouched down and obtained the Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence as he explained.

"Crazy."

When Tang Qian'Er heard this, she suddenly muttered this cry. However, she immediately lifted her face and proudly said: "I will also reach the Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase within five days!"

"Amazing."

Mu Chen smiled and raised his thumb. Then, he continued heading to the depths of the forest: "Let's go, it's your turn next. You're not allowed to be lazy, otherwise it won't be beneficial to your training."

"I know!"

Tang Qian'Er replied as she quickly followed him while she smiled.

At the west side of the Northern Spiritual Field, a dozen shadows were searching vigilantly. Liu Mubai was also within this group. With his position and strength, it was obvious that he was capable to lead a team by himself.

From Liu Ming, he understood just how important the item that Xue Tu

had stolen was to the Liu Territory. The Liu Territory had paid a great price in order to obtain it. Therefore, they must capture Xue Tu and obtain the item back regardless of the cost.

"Little Master, we detected traces of that Xue Tu earlier. However, that guy is extremely cunning, he slipped away from our team again." An expert from the Liu Territory reported to Liu Mubai.

"Continue to search."

Liu Mubai nodded his head and said a command.

"Yes!" That team immediately replied and brought its men to increase the search radius.

This search lasted for half an hour. Just when Liu Mubai frowned, a buzzing sound rang out in front. It was a signal sent out by the Liu Territory's men.

"They found him, let's go!

Liu Mubai's eye lit up. He gestured with his hand and his body charged forward. When his body passed through the forest, a man covered with blood rushed towards him awkwardly. From his appearance, it seems that he was a person from the Liu Territory.

"Where's Xue Tu?" Liu Mubai hurried and asked as he stared at that person.

"Little Master, Xue Tu fled towards the north. Should we immediately notify the Third Master?" The expert from the Liu Territory replied.

"The north?"

Liu Mubai's eyes flashed when he heard this. He waved his hands and said: "Wait for a moment."

"Big Brother? Why should we wait?" Liu Yang asked as he was puzzled. If they waited, what would they do if Xue Tu escaped?

"He can't escape. We already forced Xue Tu into a dead end." Liu Mubai smiled dainty and said: "Right now, he is only a caged beast. He will die eventually. However, we should let him vent off his frustration on some

unlucky fellows before we let him die."

"Big Brother, you mean?" Liu Yang was confused.

"Mu Chen is in that direction." Liu Mubai laughed softly.

"Oh?" When Liu Yang heard this, a hint of excitement flashed through his eyes. However, he immediately frowned again and said: "We can't guarantee that Xue Tu would attack Mu Chen."

"Xue Tu is fond of girls. Since a beauty like Tang Qian'Er is beside Mu Chen, he wouldn't be able to endure it. With Mu Chen's personality, he would not throw aside Tang Qian'Er and escape by himself, so" Liu Mubai smiled, but this smile was filled with a cold chill.

"Haha, Big Brother sure is thoughtful. If Mu Chen dies at the hands of Xue Tu, others can't complain at all and can only consider him as unlucky!" Liu Yang said excitedly. He knew how vicious that Xue Tu is. If Mu Chen fell into his hands, he would definitely die.

Liu Mubai only smiled and muttered as he stared at the north: "I originally planned on taking care of him by myself, but it seems that he is fortunate enough."

"Oi, Mu Chen. Hurry and help, this guy's strength is at the Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase, I can't win!"

Within the forest, Tang Qian'Er hurriedly avoided a ferocious Spiritual Beast, which lunged towards her. Her black ponytail danced as she let out a cry from time to time.

Standing on a branch, Mu Chen stared at the figure below who was constantly dodging the Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase Spiritual Beast. He could not help but smile as he swept down like a wild goose. His right hand formed a fist as a dark black light condensed itself within his palm and formed a black light seal.

"Stop being so savage, you beast!"

Mu Chen dashed out while revealing a slight smile. The black light seal carried a tremendous fluctuation as it fiercely bombarded the Spiritual

Beast.

Boom!

The Spiritual Beast let out an angry roar and its huge claws filled itself with Spiritual Energy. It violently smashed it against Mu Chen's fist.

The Spiritual Energy impact exploded and swept the surrounding leaves away. A low growl came out from the Spiritual Beast as it was actually pushed back by Mu Chen forcibly.

Shuaaa!

When the Spiritual Beast was still unstable, Mu Chen's body moved and he darted towards the Spiritual Beast again. His hand flashed and a dagger appeared within it. The Spiritual Energy wrapped around the dagger and brought forth an extremely sharp light as it stabbed fiercely into the Spiritual Beast's throat.

Dong!

Hot blood squirted out from the Spiritual Beast. Even the earth trembled slightly when the Spiritual Beast crashed onto the ground.

Mu Chen smiled as he wiped the blood away from his dagger. The boy's tall body was quite attractive as it was bathed by the warm sunlight that penetrated through the forest.

"What an irritating guy. He doesn't know how to be kind to woman and let me be chased for so long." Tang Qian'Er said bitterly before she walked towards the Spiritual Beast. She pulled out a short sword and stabbed it into the beast's head. While she tried to take out the Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence, she was still chattering about Mu Chen's crimes.

Mu Chen stared at her and could not help but smile. But just when he wanted to say something, his face changed and he darted forward. He wrapped his arms around Tang Qian'Er's waist as she was about to take out the Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence. The two of them tumbled away.

And just when Mu Chen grabbed onto Tang Qian'Er and charged away, a bloody shadow charged out suddenly from the forest. The hands that

were originally planning to hold onto Tang Qian'Er missed and it let out a surprised sound.

Mu Chen held onto Tang Qian'Er as they rolled on the ground. Then, he quickly got up and stared in alert at the figure that appeared. His eyes narrowed slightly.

Seeing the corpse of the Spiritual Beast in the open space, the figure stood up. He was wearing a blood red robe and his face was extremely vicious. Craftiness flashed within his narrow eyes.

"Hehe, that boy actually has quite the skill."

The blood shadow stared at Mu Chen and let out a strange laugh. Then, his eyes landed on the girl who was behind Mu Chen. The girl had a soft, slender body. Her chest was quite bountiful and she had a waist that could be held within one arm. The youthful and energetic taste of hers made him lick his mouth.

"I never expected to find such an outstanding item over here."

The blood shadow smiled and said. The eyes that stared at Tang Qian'Er made it seem that he wanted to swallow her into his stomach. This made the young girl tremble and she hid her body behind Mu Chen.

"Boy, hand her over to me and I'll let you go. Otherwise, I'll let you experience some of my methods." The blood shadow smiled and he stared at Mu Chen like a viper.

Mu Chen kept a close eye at the blood shadow in front of him. Cold sweat appeared on the palm that held onto Tang Qian'Er's hand. If he did not guess incorrectly, the guy in front of him must be the captain of the Blood Slaughter Group, Xue Tu, whom Liu Ming and the others were chasing.

He never thought that he would meet with this murderer here. This time, he really was in trouble.

Chapter 37: Setting a Trap

In the open space of the forest, the three figures facedeach other. The atmosphere made one feel slightly suffocated. Of course, this was only to Tang Qian'Er, who was behind Mu Chen. Xue Tu's smile and narrow eyes were filled with craftiness and coldness.

Mu Chen vigilantly stared at him while the Spiritual Energy within his body rushed out. This Xue Tu seemed to give him a dangerous feeling. The degree of danger seemed to be far beyond the Conflagration Ape King that he met yesterday.

Whether it is in strength or in wisdom, the Conflagration Ape King cannot compare with Xue Tu. The Conflagration Ape King had only just broke through to the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase, but Xue Tu, on the other hand, had almost stepped into the Spirit Stage.

"Boy, I don't have much time to play this game of confrontation with you. You have ten seconds to decide. If you hand her over, I'll let you live." Xue Tu said this again as he stared at Mu Chen with a smile.

"You aren't afraid of attracting the two Spirit Stage Instructors from the Northern Spiritual Academy if you attack us here?" Mu Chen said slowly.

"You're running out of time."

Xue Tu grinned and his pure white teeth made the other people shudder.

Mu Chen took a deep breath and tilted his head to stare at Tang Qian'Er. Then, he grabbed onto her smooth wrist and shoved her over towards Xue Tu.

"At least you understand, boy." When Xue Tu noticed this, his smile became more brilliant.

Mu Chen furiously circulated the Spiritual Energy in his arms and immediately took a step forward. He directly used the back of his hand and smashed towards Tang Qian'Er's shoulder. This powerful impact blew her away.

"If you don't want to hurt me, then leave!"

After Tang Qian'Er was blown away, Mu Chen's shout quickly followed.

When Tang Qian'Er fell into the forest, her beautiful eyes stared at the tall boy's figure and her eyes became wet by the fog. She suppressed her foolish thought of not casting him aside as she turned and ran.

"You think you can get away?"

Xue Tu stared coldly at this scene. These two Spiritual Movement Stage brats actually were so naïve that they thought they could escape him?

"Boy, I'll let you taste what is called a living death later on!" Xue Tu smiled and his body darted over. However, he did not charge towards Mu Chen, but rather to Tang Qian'Er, who was escaping to the outside of the forest.

When Mu Chen noticed this, he also lunged over. However, Xue Tu completely ignored his lunge.

"Spirit Destruction Bead!"

Just when he planned on ignoring Mu Chen's charge, Xue Tu noticed that the boy suddenly grasped something within his hand. A light seemed to appear within his hand and a violent sound rang out.

"Spirit Destruction Bead?"

Hearing this name, Xue Tu's heart trembled. Although Mu Chen, who was in front of him, was pretty weak, it was definitely possible that he could obstruct him, if he had a Spirit Destruction Bead. Moreover, if the Spirit Destruction Bead was to hit him, it would probably cause some degreeof injury. This was something that Xue Tu could not afford to suffer while he was surrounded.

Xue Tu's eyes flashed and eventually stopped. He stared at the powerful and sudden mass of black light and let out a cry, as vigorous Spiritual Energy erupted out and enveloped his body.

Crack!

The instant that the black light was about to touch his body, it suddenly burst open. Unexpectedly, the violent Spiritual Energy did not appear.

Instead, a strong stench suddenly presented itself. A sticky item burst out from the black light and covered Xue Tu's body.

This sudden turn of events completely stunned Xue Tu. He lowered his head and stared at his body covered with blood. The fresh blood was quite viscous and had a pungent smell. It completely bathed his body and made him look extremely awkward.

"You dare trick me?!"

The corner of Xue Tu's mouth twitched slightly. A chill exploded out from his eyes as he stared at Mu Chen.

However, Mu Chen ignored him and instantly retreated.

"Boy, since you want to let her get away this much, then I won't let that wish of yours happen!" Although Xue Tu was extremely angry due to Mu Chen's act, he was still a sinister and ruthless individual. He immediately let out an eerie laugh.

"Trash, do you want this thing?" When Mu Chen noticed that he actually refrained his anger and wanted to capture Tang Qian'Er, he smiled instead. Then, he pulled out an emerald, round fruit that emitted a rich Spiritual Energy from his arm.

"Jaded Essence Fruit?!"

When Xue Tu noticed this Jaded Essence Fruit, his eyes narrowed. Greediness appeared within his eyes. He was currently at the peak of the Spiritual Rotation Stage and was only a step away from advancing to the Spirit Stage. If he was able to obtain the Jaded Essence Fruit, he would be able to take a risk. Furthermore, if he really succeeded in his breakthrough, he would be able to successfully get rid of Liu Ming and escape!

He would be able to break out of this dilemma!

"You're a really surprising boy, now I have some interest in you."

Xue Tu grinned. His eyes instantly turned cold and turned his body over. He darted furiously towards Mu Chen. Compared to letting go of a beauty

temporarily, it was worth it if he manages to breakthrough to the Spirit Stage.

Mu Chen seemed to have expected this reaction from him. Within his body, the Spiritual Energy gushed out and wrapped around his legs. He seemed to have pushed his speed to the limits as he fled in madness towards the depth of the forest.

With Tang Qian'Er's speed, it would probably take some time before she would manage to notify Teacher Mo. During this time period, he must ensure that he survives against Xue Tu, who is at the peak of the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase.

With Xue Tu's strength, it was extremely easy to kill him.

"Boy, you really believe that you can escape? You would actually use your own life to lure me over for just a little girl. Ohoho, to be honest, I respect you quite a bit. How about this? If you were to hand the Jaded Essence Fruit over, I would only break your limbs and let you survive. What do you think?"

Xue Tu chased after the desperately escaping figure. A strange cackle sound rang out constantly.

"Plaything of a homeless cur, you should take care of yourself instead." Mu Chen did not look back and instead sneered at him.

"You really don't know how to appreciate other people's favors!"

Xue Tu's eyes turned cold. His Spiritual Energy stormed out and his speed suddenly accelerated. The distance between Mu Chen's figure and him was quickly shortening.

Mu Chen could feel the chill coming closer and closer behind him. His heart sank slightly. In the end, he still underestimated Xue Tu's strength.

However, if he were to relax even the slightest bit, he would probably die at the hands of this guy.

Mu Chen gritted his teeth and a low roar seemed to erupt within his heart. His Spiritual Energy circulated at a high speed through his

meridians. Perhaps they were aware that Mu Chen was in a situation of life and death, the hidden lights within the depths of his body slowly lit up again.

The lights emerged one after another. If Mu Chen were to observe the inside of his body with his mind right now, he would discover that the lights wereconnecting and forming something similar to a mysterious tower.

Boom.

Unfortunately, Mu Chen did not have the time to split up his mind right now. He could only feel the Spiritual Energy suddenly become a lot violent and his speed also accelerated. He was actually able to pull a little bit of distance away from Xue Tu.

“What? This boy’s speed is actually this fast!”

When Xue Tu noticed this, he was stunned. Then, he frowned again and immediately circulated his Spiritual Energy as he hurriedly chased after Mu Chen. After all, he had extraordinary eyesight that surpassed others. Mu Chen’s sudden explosiveness should only be temporarily and could not compare to his endurance.

Within the forest, one of them was chasing while the other was fleeing. As they passed through, the leaves on the ground were swept clean as if a tornado had passed.

Under this extreme speed, Mu Chen and Xue Tu quickly reached the depths of the Northern Spiritual Field. Xue Tu looked in this direction and was slightly impatient. After all, there were quite a bit of tricky Spiritual Beasts at this place and it was easy for the situation to change.

“Boy, I had enough of you!”

Xue Tu fiercely gritted his teeth. He did not care if he had to expend a lot of Spiritual Energy. His feet violently stomped the ground and his body suddenly laid down like a cheetah. His palms smashed onto the ground and the Spiritual Energy that wrapped his body seemed to have turned into the shape of a cheetah. His body instantly turned into a light figure

and he stormed towards Mu Chen at an extremely surprising speed.

"Go to hell!"

This sudden burst of speed made Xue Tu appear behind Mu Chen in around ten breathes of time. A violent Spiritual Energy fluctuation was on Xue Tu's fist as it was fired out.

This attack was enough to instantly kill a person at the Spiritual Movement Stage.

At the same time, Mu Chen felt the surprising attack behind him. He would probably suffer grave injuries if he were to take it head on.

Mu Chen's eyes flashed crazily. He stared at the depths of the forest as if he was calculating his position. Then, he turned his body violently around and opened his palm. A black light emerged and he noticed a mysterious black paper suddenly appear from within it.

Boom!

After that mysterious black paper appeared in Mu Chen's palm, Xue Tu's fierce fist smashed heavily onto the black paper.

Dong!

A violent Spiritual Energy exploded outwards. Mu Chen's body seemed to be struck by lightning and fresh blood sprayed out from his mouth. That page of black paper returned back to his body and his body flew backwards. In the end, he fell into the depths of the forest.

Xue Tu was surprised when he noticed that this fist didn't kill Mu Chen. However, his speed wasn't slow. He charged straight into the forest and stared at Mu Chen coldly as Mu Chen lay underneath a large tree.

"Are you going to continue to run?"

Xue Tu stared cruelly at Mu Chen as he was collapsed on the ground and laughed.

"There's no need..."

However, Mu Chen wiped off the blood from the corner of his lips when

facing Xue Tu's merciless smile. Instead, a mocking smile appeared on the boy's handsome face.

"Now it's your turn to escape, trash."

When Xue Tu heard this, his pupil retracted. As he was about to speak, a furious howl burst out from the depths of the forest. A silver light charged out like lightning. This extremely violent Spiritual Energy seemed to directly cause a storm within the forest.

"A Silver-Horned Panther Dragon?!"

When Xue Tu saw this majestic Spiritual Beast, his face instantly changed. He stared ferociously at Mu Chen and said: "What a ruthless boy, you plan on dying together with me? However, you're still too inexperienced. As long as I escape from his territory, this Spiritual Beast will not chase after me. Instead, you will be the one that becomes is food."

After Mu Chen heard his words, the mocking smile became even more intense.

"Your body is covered with the blood of his cub. You think that it would let you escape this easily?"

When he heard this remark, Xue Tu hurriedly looked down at the sticky and fresh blood covering his body. His face changed dramatically. He finally understood that this seemingly innocent boy was actually setting up a trap for him since the very beginning!

Pretending to throw out a Spirit Destruction Bead, yet hiding a bottle of fresh blood instead. He was escaping while planning along the way...

As Xue Tu stared at the boy's mocking look, his heart shuddered. Was this really something that a reckless young boy would do?

Mu Chen stared at Xue Tu, whose face was changing color. He gently smiled and stared at the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon, who was letting out an immense killing intent. He let out a sigh of relief.

Boss Panther Dragon, I'm relying on you again this time. Please block this for me...

Chapter 38: Revenge Kill

Roar!

Aviolent Spiritual Energypervaded the inside of the forest. The Silver-Horned Panther Dragon stared at Xue Tu, who was nearby and covered in blood, with its red eyes. A low roar filled with hatred and killing intent emitted constantly out from his mouth.

From this human's body, it smelled the fresh blood of its cub. Could this abominable human hurt its cub before?

Although a High Rank Spiritual Beast were many times more intelligent than a Low Rank Spiritual Beasts, it was still incomparable to a humans. While it was angry, it only wanted to tear apart any human or Spiritual Beast that was tainted with its cub's smell.

"Bastard!"

Xue Tu stared at the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon as his body emitted a cold chill. He glanced venomously at Mu Chen. Who would have imagined that this boy, who he could have captured easily, would be this cunning.

He knew that this was a terrible situation for him, but he had a lustful nature. This is why he wanted to vent out fiercely before trouble arrived. Then, he found a beauty that was as beauty as a flower and it instantly made his heart twitch. But how would we have known that this tiny twitch would bring forth such a large trouble to him.

"I will never forgive you!"

Xue Tu shouted out maliciously. As he stomped on the ground, a powerful Spiritual Energy suddenly erupted from his body. The man instantly retreated violently and passed through the thick woods. It was evident that he was planning on running.

Roar!

However, the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon did not intend to let him go this easily. In an instant, his powerful body lowered and it turned into a silver streak of light as it charged out.

The Silver-Horned Panther Dragon possesses the strength of a Spirit Stage powerhouse. Its speed naturally surpassed Xue Tu and it appeared behind him after a short moment. This violent Spiritual Energy fluctuation made Xue Tu's face change.

"Spirit Leopard Slaughter!"

Nevertheless, Xue Tu wasn't an ordinary person. He forcibly twisted his body in midair and Spiritual Energy gushed out as he let out a cry. The Spiritual Energy on the surface of his body actually turned into the shape of a Spirit Leopard and he fired off a punch. It was as if the leopard and human had fused when he smashed his fist over angrily at the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon.

The Spirit Leopard wrapped around Xue Tu's body as it collided fiercely with the silver light. A cry instantly rang out and violent Spiritual Energy shock waves expanded out, smashing the surrounding trees.

Bang.

As the Spiritual Energy impact expanded out, Xue Tu's body flew back helplessly. He let out a painful scream, as his body fell heavily onto the ground and his right arm covered with blood. The center of his palm even had a bloody hole and fresh blood was pouring out.

When Mu Chen noticed this, he lifted an eyebrow slightly. After all, he saw it clearly yesterday. The Conflagration Ape King was instantly killed by the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon. Yet, Xue Tu only lost an arm today to it. This guy was definitely powerful.

"Shuaaa!"

The Silver-Horned Panther Dragon fell down on the ground and its beastly eyes stared coldly at Xue Tu. Without any delay, its muscular body darted forward again and the silver light was filled with the scent of death.

When Xue Tu noticed, he hurriedly rolled back awkwardly a few rounds. Although he managed to avoid the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon's rush, he was still hit by the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon's steel-like tail.

Puchi.

The Silver-Horned Panther Dragon's tail swept and hit Xue Tu's chest. He instantly spat out blood from his mouth and his fierce eyes slowed down. After enduring these two attacks from the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon, he was already gravely injured. The injuries were much more severe than when he was fighting against Liu Ming and the others.

"If this continues, I'll be killed by the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon!"

Xue Tu gritted his teeth and he stared maliciously towards the direction of Mu Chen. However, he was stunned. This is because the boy, who was lying on the ground earlier, had suddenly disappeared without him knowing.

"That little as*hole! Just wait until I catch you, I will definitely make it so that you can neither live nor die!" Xue Tu was so anger that his face turned blue as he let out a howl within his heart.

Just when he was distracted, the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon charged over like lightning again. It's sharp claws left a deep blood trail on his body and the terrible pain made him see stars.

"This damn beast!"

Xue Tu cursed loudly and a strange red light flashed through his face suddenly. Fierceness surfaced within his eyes and his body hurriedly retreated backwards. Afterwards, his hands began to quickly form seals and a rampaging Spiritual Energy surged out from his body. As the Spiritual Energy poured out, a thunderstorm sound rang out.

Boom!

The sounds of thunder suddenly intensified and Xue Tu spat out fresh blood. His sluggish aura rapidly increased all of a sudden and his speed also accelerated. He turned into a vague shadow as he turned to the other way and desperately tried to escape.

Roar!

The Silver-Horned Panther Dragon also let out a roar when it noticed the desperately escaping Xue Tu. Its body turned into a silver light and it chased after him as if it was not planning to spare him.

A human and a beast crazily darted through the forest . Xue Tu was secretly resentful as he noticed the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon in hot pursuit of him. The method of stimulating his Spiritual Energy would hurt himself gravely. The aftereffects were not small either. But in this current situation, did he have any other options? If he fails to escape from the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon, he would definitely die today!

While he was being chased, Xue Tu spat out five mouthfuls of blood. His originally dark face was pale like a sheet of paper. The sense of frailness that came from his body made his head dizzy.

However, he was finally able to relax. After chasing Xue Tu for approximately ten minutes, the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon gradually slowed down. In the end, it let out a roar and turned away leisurely.

He watched as the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon gave up, but he did not dare stop. He held a breath as it fled for another few minutes before rolling awkwardly to a cluster of bush.

Xue Tu's body became limp when he rolled into the bushes. His Spiritual Energy was almost completely exhausted. He constantly panted heavily before he looked down at the injuries on his body. He wanted to weep, yet there were no tears. Who would expect that he would suffer such a helpless fate because he wanted to hunt down a Spiritual Movement Stage brat.

This was something that even Liu Ming and the others couldn't do!

"Little trash, I'll never forgive you!" Xue Tu gritted his teeth as he said out maliciously.

Swish!

Just when these words were blurted out, the hairs on his body trembled. His many memories of life and death lingered in his head and emptied his mind.

Shuaa!

A cold chill erupted out from the forest behind him. Then, a sharp coldness flashed by his head and a deep bloodstain appeared on his face.

This sudden attack made Xue Tu's face change instantly. He shouted out: " Who?!"

"The person you wanted to see the most!"

A cheerful laughter rang out from the forest. Afterwards, a figure slowly came out. It was Mu Chen, with a tall height and brilliant smile seen on his handsome face.

"Little trash, you dare come over here!" Xue Tu suddenly cried out when he saw Mu Chen coming out from the forest.

Mu Chen stared at him with a half-smile and Spiritual Energy surged out from his body. However, the black eyes did not have any hint of smiling intent and was instead filled with a chill.

"Boy, what are you planning to do? Although my condition isn't great right now, you would probably still lose your life if I do a desperate counterattack!" Xue Tu quickly shouted when he saw Mu Chen's appearance.

"After all, we should mind our own businesses. Why don't we just cancel everything that happened today?"

Mu Chen suddenly stopped moving and frowned. He said: "You really won't search for me to look for trouble?"

Xue Tu quickly said: "I can hardly protect myself now. I can swear. After all, why would I dare trouble you after you returned to the Northern Spiritual Academy?"

"What you said was true..." Mu Chen seemed to hesitate as he nodded slightly.

Xue Tu's heart jumped with joy, but before he revealed his happiness. The corner of Mu Chen's mouth revealed a mocking smile: "But I still want to kill you!"

Shua!

Mu Chen's body darted over violently and the Spiritual Energy within his body surged rapidly. A black light emitted out from his fists and two black

light seals emerged faintly.

“Little trash, you just ruined your chance of saving yourself from the disgrace. You have a death wish!”

Xue Tu’s eyes turned dark when he saw Mu Chen charging over. He pushed out the remaining Spiritual Energy within his body and filled his arms with it. He let out a cry within his heart and his arms stabbed out like spears.

“Limitless Death Seal!”

Mu Chen clenched his fists tightly and let out a cry in his heart. The two black light seals erupted out a powerful black light. An overbearing and violent fluctuation emitted from the black light.

Boom!

The four fists collided against each other fiercely. The grass at their locations were forcibly destroyed due to the shock wave. As the Spiritual Energy impact burst out, the two figures flew backwards as fresh blood came out from their mouths.

When Mu Chen landed on the ground, he did not stop at all. His body darted forward like a cheetah and a powerful suction-like power appeared in his hand. He recovered the dagger that he threw earlier back into his hands.

Shuaa!

At this moment, Xue Tu’s body was already extremely sluggish. A cold chill flashed through his black eyes when Mu Chen approached instantly and a black light flashed across his eyes.

Fresh blood scattered everywhere.

Painful screams resounded through the sky from Xue Tu. His arms danced wildly as if it was attempting to kill Mu Chen.

However, Mu Chen’s body faded and reappeared behind Xue Tu. The dagger within his hand was like a venomous snake and he stabbed fiercely into Xue Tu’s vital points. The entire dagger entered the man’s body.

Fresh blood flowed through the dagger endlessly dripped out. Xue Tu, who was frantically swinging his body around, suddenly froze and collapsed down to the ground. His pale face still had an incredulous expression.

He was a Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase powerhouse, yet he would actually plummet to his death against a Spiritual Movement Stage boy?

When Xue Tu fell onto the ground, Mu Chen's legs also grew weak and he sat down on his butt. A sweet taste emerged within his throat and he spat out fresh blood again.

After Mu Chen rested on the ground for a while, he gritted his teeth and approached Xue Tu's corpse. His hands probed around Xue Tu's body. He had nearly lost his life, so he should definitely obtain some spoils of war. He wondered if the item that Xue Tu stole from the Liu Territory people was on his body or not.

Chapter 39: Mustard Seed Bracelet

Mu Chen's hand probed around Xue Tu's corpse. He was not that interested in Xue Tu, but he was extremely interested on the item that Xue Tu stole from the Liu Territory.

The Blood Slaughter Group was considered a relatively well-known force within the Northern Spiritual Realm. Although it cannot compare with the nine territories, it was still quite capable. They were quite bossy with their daily actions, but they wouldtake note not to cause trouble for the nine territories. This was because they knew that the Blood Slaughter Group was no match for the nine territories. Therefore, Mu Chen was curious. Just what item would make the Blood Slaughter Group take such a high risk and attack the Liu Territory?

Moreover, the reaction that the Liu Territory gave made Mu Chen somewhat surprised. They actually massacred the Blood Slaughter Group and were unwilling to give up as they chased Xue Tu into the Northern Spiritual Field.

It was obvious that the item that Xue Tu stole was something that they cared deeply about.

Would an item that even the Liu Territory was greatly concerned about be ordinary?

Within the Northern Spiritual Realm, the Liu Territory was the strongest amongst the Nine Territories. Moreover, the Liu Territory had always wanted to become the true boss of the Northern Spiritual Realm. They used various means such as bribing and threatening to increase their strength among the Northern Spiritual Territories. Furthermore, they would often reveal a position as if they were the strongest force within the Northern Spiritual Realm. Towards the Liu Territory, who were displaying their strength like this, the other Territory Lords weren't acknowledging it. Especially Mu Chen's father, Mu Feng.

Mu Feng had bashed against the Liu Territory's Territory Lord, Liu Qingtian, a long time ago. There was a lot of friction between the two

territories and both sides disliked each other. Although they would smile on the surface towards each other, they would be ruthless towards the other when they had the chance.

Because of this relationship the two Liu brothers were always against him, Mu Chen naturally disliked the Liu Territory as well. He was quite happy to do something that would harm the Liu Territory.

While these thoughts floated within Mu Chen's heart, his hand did not slow down. However, he did not discover anything strange on Xue Tu's body even after searching for a long time. He immediately frowned. Did this guy really hide the item?

Mu Chen did not give up and directly removed Xue Tu's clothes. Just when Mu Chen took off the last piece, an item finally fell down from the clothes.

Mu Chen's eyes immediately looked over. He only saw a silver-grey circle like a bracelet and it flashed a faint silver light as it dropped down to the ground.

Mu Chen quickly bent down to pick up the silver-grey circle. He turned it back and forth and did not see anything special to it. He pondered for a moment before his eyes lit up: "This...Could this be a Mustard Seed Bracelet?"

The so-called Mustard Seed Bracelet is a rather special Spiritual Artifact. It's how a Sacred Mountain can conceal a mustard seed, yet a mustard seed could store a Sacred Mountain1. This Spiritual Artifact has the power of constructing space and was an extremely valuable storage device. However, this item was rather expensive. Mu Chen had only saw it in his father's hand before. He did not expect that Xue Tu would also have it.

Mu Chen fiddled with the grey Mustard Seed Bracelet. It was said that this item could be imprinted by the owner's Spiritual Energy. If others were to touch it, the owner would immediately be aware of it. However, Xue Tu was dead now, the Spiritual Energy imprint must have disappeared by now.

Mu Chen's hand grabbed onto the Mustard Seed Bracelet and allowed

his Spiritual Energy to flow into the Mustard Seed bracelet. A sudden space appeared within Mu Chen's perception. This was the Mustard Seed Bracelet's storage space

Inside the Mustard Seed Bracelet, Mu Chen definitely found many items. However, there was all kinds of items. He fumbled around roughly, yet he was not able to discover anything special.

"How could this guy have so much trash? He is still the Blood Slaughter Group's Captain." Mu Chen let out a sigh and began to carefully search.

After searching for a while, Mu Chen's mind suddenly moved. A light appeared within his hand and an ancient copper piece appeared. When Mu Chen's Spiritual Energy swept through the Mustard Seed Bracelet, the other items would react to the Spiritual Energy. However, only this item did not move at all...

For being this ordinary, it attracted Mu Chen's attention.

Mu Chen stared at the ancient copper piece and noticed that an obscure copper engraving covered the copper piece. These engravings were so complicated that it made him slightly dizzy when he looked at it.

At the back of the copper engravings, the engraving lines were slightly clearer. He could roughly see a giant black bird flying with its wings. Underneath the giant bird was a mountain stream. However, the mountain stream seemed to be embraced by the giant bird.

The wings covered the mountain.

"Just what Spiritual Beast is this?"

Mu Chen was somewhat surprised. Although the copper piece was quite vague, he was still able to feel a sense of awe from the engravings. This was what made him astonished. Just what Spiritual Beast was able to make him feel a sense of awe just through an engraving?

Could it be a Heaven Ranking Beast?

Mu Chen frowned and turned the copper piece around. However, he did not find anything else and could only shake his head. His instincts told

him that it was highly possible that this item was the item that Xue Tu stole from the Liu Territory.

But as to what use this thing had, he would probably know only after letting his father check.

Mu Chen shrugged. Just when he was about to continue looking around in the Mustard Seed Bracelet, his mind suddenly moved. He heard the sound of winds breaking. Based on the direction, it was obvious that they were coming towards him.

Mu Chen quickly placed the copper piece within the Mustard Seed Bracelet. Afterwards, he quickly wore the Mustard Seed Bracelet and used his sleeves to cover it up. Then, he swiftly made Xue Tu wear back his clothes.

Just when he finished with all this, a few figures emerged nearby. In a short moment, these figures appeared in the open space. Mu Chen glanced over and let out a sigh of relief. It was Teacher Mo and the others.

"Mu Chen!"

When Teacher Mo appeared, he saw Mu Chen standing nearby. His tensed face became delighted. His body moved and appeared next to Mu Chen and asked: "Are you alright?"

Mu Chen smiled as he nodded with his head. Although he was slightly pale, his condition was still fine.

"I heard from Qian'Er that you two met Xue Tu. Thus, I immediately chased all the way over. I finally met you here." It was evident that Teacher Mo was relieved when he saw Mu Chen safe and sound. However, he immediately frowned and looked at the surroundings: "That's right, where's Xue Tu? That guy really has guts, he actually dares to attack our Northern Spiritual Academy's students!"

Mu Chen let out a hollow laugh and pointed to the bush in front of him. He said: "That guy's dead."

Teacher Mo's expression showed that he was clearly stunned. At the same time, Teacher Xi, who was behind him, was also startled. Afterwards,

he waved his sleeves and a powerful Spiritual Energy directly blew away the bush. The cold corpse was exposed from it.

"This..."

Teacher Mo and Teacher Xi stared at the cold corpse. Their expressions changed and they stared incredulously at Mu Chen: "What exactly happened?"

Just when Mu Chen was about to speak, the sound of wind breaking could be heard from another direction. He saw Liu Ming bringing a group of men as they approached quickly. Behind him were Liu Mubai and Liu Yang. They showed a surprised expression when they noticed that Mu Chen was actually safe and sound.

"Xue Tu?"

Liu Ming instantly noticed the corpse on the ground. His expression immediately changed and he urgently said: "What happened?"

As he spoke, his sharp eyes stared at Mu Chen. This gaze made Mu Chen feel quite uncomfortable.

"Did you do it?"

Mu Chen faced his glare and shook his head. He said: "I was getting chased by him earlier and nearly lost my life. Luckily, I met an old man who killed Xue Tu."

"An old man?"

Liu Ming's eyes narrowed slightly and he stared suspiciously at Mu Chen. He waved his hand and two of his men approached Xue Tu's corpse. After searching for a while, they shook their heads towards Liu Ming.

When Liu Ming noticed this, his eyes twitched. He stared at Mu Chen again and a gentle smile emerged on his face: "Mu Chen, did you see the item that Xue Tu was holding?"

"What item?" Mu Chen blinked and asked with a smile: "The old man searched around after taking care of him. However, I was hiding far away

and did not dare approach. I don't know what he took."

Liu Ming's expression instantly turned cold.

"Mu Chen, enough with your nonsense. You must have taken the item on Xue Tu's body. As for that old man, you probably just made it up!" Liu Yang yelled out.

"You're saying..." Mu Chen looked at him strangely and said: "I was the one who killed this Xue Tu?"

Liu Yang dawdled and was speechless. Xue Tu was at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase and was only a step away from reaching Spirit Stage. It was basically like a dream for Mu Chen to kill him.

Liu Mubai stared coldly at Mu Chen. A dark and cold flame surged in the depths of his eyes.

"Ohoho, Mu Chen. There's no need to joke with me. If you really took his item, I would definitely be grateful if you hand it over to me. Moreover, I will personally head to the Mu Territory and talk to your father about this matter." Liu Ming tried his best to make his expression look gentler as he spoke.

"Third Master Liu, I really didn't see anything on his body. I was already quite afraid when I was being chased by him. Why would I dare to take the initiative and approach him?" Mu Chen shook his head. His face looked quite honest and genuine.

The corners of Liu Ming's eyes jumped. He finally could not suppress the rage within his heart. Although he did not believe that Mu Chen was able to kill Xue Tu, he was still the prime suspect. He immediately took a step forward and grasped at Mu Chen. He coldly said: "Since you refuse to tell the truth, then let me personally search your body!"

When Mu Chen noticed Liu Ming stretching his hand over, he gripped his hand for a moment and a black dagger appeared within his hand.

However, just when Liu Ming's hand was about to grasp onto Mu Chen, another hand suddenly extended out and blocked it. Teacher Mo glanced at Liu Ming and a faint voice made Liu Ming's body tremble.

“Liu Ming, you’re going too far.”

Chapter 40: Result

“Liu Ming, you’re going too far.”

When Liu Ming heard thehint of anger within Teacher Mo’s voice, his face instantly stiffened. He was wary as, Teacher Mo was a genuine Spirit Stage powerhouse. Moreover, he had the identity of a Head Instructor in the Northern Spiritual Academy. Even the Liu Territory wouldn’t dare to carelesslyoffend him.

“Ohoho, Teacher Mo, please don’t be angry. I was just a bit impatient. However, Teacher Mo should understand that we, the Liu Territory, have suffered a terrible loss. We naturally want to obtain the item that was lost now that Xue Tu was killed.” Liu Ming cuffed his hands towards Teacher Mo and said politely.

Teacher Mo said faintly: “I understand your feelings, but this isn’t a reason for you to search my student’s body so freely in front of me. If it wasn’t because of the fact that you forced Xue Tu into the Northern Spiritual Field, Mu Chen wouldn’t have met a situation where he nearly lost his life. Now that he managed to escape, you are acting like this. Thus, I’m afraid I won’t agree to it.”

Liu Ming noticed that Teacher Mo was insistent on protecting Mu Chen. The smile on his face became a bit more forced and he said: “This matter was indeed caused by us. Speaking of which, if he is willing to hand it over to us, we will give him a satisfactory compensation. We only hope that we can get our item back.”

Mu Chen placed away the dagger within his hand and faced Liu Ming, who had dark and cold eyes, as he shook his head. He said: “Third Master Liu, I really didn’t take your item.”

That’s because that’s my war spoil. This phrase flashed through Mu Chen’s heart. He was nearly killed by Xue Tu today. How could it be possible for him to hand the item over?

“You!”

Liu Ming gritted his teeth and his expression became darker. However, he did not dare do anything to Mu Chen since Teacher Mo was beside him.

"If you want it, then just keep the item. However, be careful since some items will kill you!" Liu Ming glanced at Mu Chen somberly and could not endure the flames of rage burning within his heart. He gestured with his hand and turned around as he brought Liu Mubai and the others away.

Mu Chen stared at Liu Ming and the others as they stormed away angrily. He acted as if he didn't even hear the threats towards him.

"Thank you, Teacher Mo." Mu Chen turned to look at Teacher Mo and expressed his gratitude.

"You are one of the Northern Spiritual Academy's students. Right now, we are participating in a training organized by the Northern Spiritual Academy. Naturally, I would have to protect you." Teacher Mo gave a faint smile and smiled as if there was some sort of profound meaning to it.

"Okay, let's head back to the camp."

Mu Chen gave a hollow laugh as he was being stared at by Teacher Mo. Then, he did not say anything and turned around as he quickly walked towards the outskirts of the Northern Spiritual Field.

Teacher Mo and Teacher Xi stared at each other behind him. Afterwards, they stared once again at the cold corpse of Xue Tu. Teacher Xi frowned and said: "How could this boy be so lucky? To actually meet an expert and berescued by him?"

This possibility was indeed quite low. However, wasn't the possibility of Mu Chen killing Xue Tu, who was at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase, with his own strength even lower?

Teacher Mo let out a laugh as if he didn't want to comment on it. He stared at the boy's figure in front of him. After all, he had witnessed Mu Chen tricking a Conflagration Ape King to death. Thus, he understood that if anyone dares to view him as ordinary, they would probably pay a large price for it.

Others might believe that it was an incredulous situation if Mu Chen was able to personally kill an expert like Xue Tu. However, he himself, didn't think that it was impossible.

The seemingly gentle sunshine that was the boy had a heart that was calmer and sharper than ones that Adventurers hone in life and death situations. His means of dealing with things weren't something that an ordinary person could compare.

He really is an interesting little guy. No wonder he became the only one who qualified for the Spiritual Road within the Northern Spiritual Realm.

...

When Mu Chen returned to the camp, a large commotion rang out. Mo Ling, Tan Qingshan and the others immediately surrounded him. It was obvious that they knew the news about Mu Chen meeting with Xue Tu.

Mu Chen smiled towards them and indicated that he was fine. He tilted his head and looked at the pretty girl who had red eyes.

"Sorry, it was all my fault."

Tang Qian'Er said while she had red eyes. If it wasn't because of her, Mu Chen would not have met with Xue Tu and beforced into a dangerous situation.

"We are teammates, and I formed a team with such a beautiful girl. If no trouble were to occur, wouldn't it fail to live up to good fortunes of mine?" Mu Chen teased her as he spoke.

When the girl heard this, her face instantly turned red. She playfully hit Mu Chen and the sad expression faded slightly.

Teacher Mo and the others also returned quickly. Then, news of Xue Tu being killed spread out. At this moment, many students were stunned and they stared in surprise at Mu Chen, who had an innocent look on his face.

"Could it be that you were the one that did this?" Tang Qian'Er approached Mu Chen and secretly asked.

"Do you think that it's possible?" Mu Chen smiled. He knew how

unbelievable this situation sounds, yet the truth was just that. If Xue Tu wasn't gravely injured by the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon and consumed his Spiritual Energy desperately in order to escape, it was basically impossible for Mu Chen to kill him.

"If it's the others, it might be impossible. However, you are so cunning... Who knows." Tang Qian'Er playfully smiled. She had a strange confidence towards Mu Chen. Others might believe that it was impossible, but she felt that it might be possible for the boy in front of her.

Mu Chen smiled and stretched his body. While stretching, he was thinking about the ancient copper piece within the Mustard Seed Bracelet. It seems that he must find a time to return back to the Mu Territory. Since this item was valued greatly by the Liu Territory, it must not be a simple item. Therefore, he must let his father personally take a look at it...

Since Xue Tu was killed, Teacher Mo and the others were less alert during the following days. Therefore, they did not end the training earlier and instead let the students hone themselves in the outskirts of the Northern Spiritual Field.

Liu Ming brought his men away on the day after Xue Tu was killed. However, the cold gaze that stared at Mu Chen before he left allowed Mu Chen to know that this matter wasn't over so easily.

Because of this warning, Mu Chen became more careful during the next few days. Although he did not believe that Liu Ming would dare to attack him while Teacher Mo was guarding him, it was still best if he was a little bit more cautious.

While he remained vigilant, the half a month training gradually reached the end.

In the camp, there was a lively atmosphere. All the students had faces filled with expectations and excitement. This was because today was the day for grading the results of this training.

Mu Chen stood in front of the East Branch students. Beside him was Tang Qian'Er. The girl had also broken through to the Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase a week ago due to the Jaded Essence Fruit. Right now, her

beautiful eyes were filled with light. She wanted to know what kind of results she would get together with Mu Chen after all this time.

In front of everybody, Teacher Mo and Teacher Xi looked around at the many students as they nodded in satisfaction. Compared to half a month ago, the students seemed to have become more capable. It was evident that the training had quite the effect on them.

"As of today, the Northern Spiritual Field Training is officially over. Next up, it is time to grade the results. Each team should bring the Spiritual Beast's Soul Essences that they collected over to us during this period. We will record it and grade the results."

Teacher Mo nodded towards the recording staff member beside him and said: "Let's begin."

Chapter 41: Cheating

“Team Deng Lei, three Low Rank Middle Phase Spiritual Beast’s Soul Essence. Eight Low Rank Initial Phase Spiritual Beast’s Soul Essence...”

“Team Liu Yun, two Low Rank Middle Phase Spiritual Beast’s Soul Essence...”

“Team Ying Zong...”

The atmosphere within the camp became livelier. Many excited students constantly walked up to the recording staff member and brought out their spoils of war during this period of time.

“Mu Chen, do you think that we’ll be able to get first?” Tang Qian’Er’s eyes flashed brightly as she watched this lively scene and said hopefully.

“Won’t the top three have the same treatment?It’s fine if we don’t get first place.” Mu Chen smiled and said. It was obvious that he did not care about the so-called first place result.

“Although that’s true, the only one that could surpass us is probably Liu Mubai. The two brothers havealways been staring at you for the past few days. If we lose to them, it would feel a bit uncomfortable.” Tang Qian’Er muttered.

When Mu Chen heard this, his eyes looked at a nearby place. At that location, Liu Mubai was currently staring at him coldly and beside him was the charming Hong Ling, who was wearing a red dress. However, she was currently spacing out and would stare at Mu Chen occasionally with her watery eyes.

“These guys...”

Mu Chen let out a faint laugh within hisheart. Ever since he killed Xue Tu, the gaze that Liu Mubai used to stare at him was strange. It seems that there was a bit of regret and anger within it. This made Mu Chen sense that Liu Mubai was probably involved with Xue Tu finding him on that day.

“Mu Chen, it’s our turn.”

Tang Qian'Er suddenly touched Mu Chen and said in a low voice.

"Then you should go. Aren't you the one holding everything?" Mu Chen faintly smiled as he spoke.

Tang Qian'Er nodded her head. She quickly headed over and many gazes projected over from the surroundings. Mu Chen was currently well-known in this place. The event where he brought Mo Ling and the others to hunt Conflagration Apes had unknowingly spread out. This made the other students a bit shocked. After all, Mu Chen already dared to do something that they would not dare to do when they were still coping with Low Rank Spiritual Beasts one by one.

Moreover, the incident with Xue Tu made Mu Chen even more mysterious. Although they did not believe that Mu Chen could really defeat Xue Tu, who was a Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase, by himself, the students, who viewed him as a newcomer before, did not dare reveal these emotions anymore.

Therefore, many people were curious about the results of Mu Chen's team.

Under many people's gazes, Tang Qian'Er walked over to the recording staff member and extended her slender hand over. She first pulled out tiny clumps of light and these clumps of light let out a dazzling lustre.

"35 Low Rank Middle Phase Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence." The recording staff member glanced at themand was shocked. These Spiritual Beasts should have the strength of a Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase when they were alive. Other students would have to form teams in order to kill Spiritual Beasts at this level of strength. It would be quite an excellent harvest if they were able to obtain one every day, so he did not expect Tang Qian'Er to pull out this many at once.

Tang Qian'Er's hands extended out again and 15 brighter clumps of light emerged out.

"15 Low Rank Late Phase Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence."

A commotion finally appeared in the surroundings. After all, they would

often avoid the Spiritual Beasts who had the strength of a Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase. Mu Chen really was amazing for being able to kill this many.

Tang Qian'Er heard the noise from the surroundings and was slightly proud. She thought for a while before carefully pulling out a flame-like clump of light from her arms again.

Inside the clump of light, a mini-sized flame ape seemed to be howling. The surprising Spiritual Energy fluctuation made many students fall silent.

"This is...a Conflagration Ape King's Soul Essence?!"

Mo Ling, Jiang Li and the others stared in shock at that Soul Essence. They had personally witnessed the Conflagration Ape King and saw Mu Chen returning with the Conflagration Ape King's head. Thinking about it now, the Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence should have ended up in his hand.

"That's too crazy. Who can compete with them afterthey pull out a Conflagration Ape King's Soul Essence?" Mo Ling and the others muttered. This was a Middle Rank Spiritual Beast at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase. How was it possible for students to kill them?

Teacher Mo and Teacher Xi also stared at the Conflagration Ape King's Soul Essence. The latter's eyes was filled with astonishment while the former was completely fine. After all, Teacher Mo had personally watched as Mu Chen got rid of the Conflagration Ape King through rousing a tiger to eat the wolf. [^1]

The recording staff member was stunned for a moment. It was evident that he did not expect that a Soul Essence of this level would be brought out by a student.

"Middle Rank Late Phase Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence...One..."

Shortly after, the recording staff member suppressed the surprise within his voice and spoke. But when these words resounded out, it undoubtedly caused an uproar.

"Teacher Xi, I won't accept this. Mu Chen definitely does not have the ability to hunt down a Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase Spiritual Beast.

He must be cheating!" An unfriendly voice rang out. The crowd looked and noticed Liu Yang walking over as he spoke with doubt.

"I was there when Mu Chen killed the Conflagration Ape King. Although he did use a little trick, it was still an experience itself. Therefore, it isn't considered cheating." Teacher Mo said faintly.

Liu Yang's face instantly turned red and was bitter when he heardTeacher Mo saying this.

"Ohoho, what Teacher Mo said was right. No matter what means you used, as long as you managed to kill the Spiritual Beasts, that is your own ability." Liu Mubai gently smiled and said.

His voice resounded out as he walked over. Afterwards, he pulled out many clumps of light from his arms. These were all Spiritual Beast's Soul Essences. And within these Soul Essences, there were two that were Middle Rank Spiritual Beasts. Their strength had reached the Spiritual Rotation Stage Initial Phase when they were alive.

From a certain point of view, Liu Mubai would have directly won if Mu Chen and Tang Qian'Er hadnot pulled out the Conflagration Ape King's Soul Essence to secure their spot. However, there were no ifs. Liu Mubai's results, the Soul Essences, were slightly dim compared to the flame-like Soul Essence.

When Tang Qian'Er noticed this scene, her beautiful eyes had a hint of joy flashing by it. She did not like this Liu Mubai pressuring Mu Chen.

Although the joy within Tang Qian'Er's eyes was quite vague, it was still perceived by Liu Mubai. His lips immediately twitched slightly and he strength his hand into his arms again.

Everybody watched him closely. Was Liu Mubai still hiding something?

"Ohoho, I had met two Spiritual Beasts at the Spiritual Rotation Late Phase a while ago. Their strength were greatly weakened so I got lucky.

Liu Mubai smiled slightly and stretched out his hand. Within his hand were two clumps of light. One of them was blue and the other was deep yellow. As these clumps slowly jumped, a powerful Spiritual Energy

fluctuation emitted out from within them.

These two Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence had actually reached the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase!

Wow!

A sudden commotion erupted out from the surroundings and incredulous eyes stared at Liu Mubai. He actually killed two Spiritual Beasts that had reached the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase?

"Y...You're cheating!" Tang Qian'Er's face turned completely pale and she immediately let out an angry cry. Although Liu Mubai was pretty strong, it was absolutely impossible for him to be able to kill Spiritual Beasts at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase level. Nobody would believe the excuse that he managed to find two greatly weakened Spiritual Beasts!

"Could it be that you think that you're the only one with tricks? Not every good thing would happen to you."Liu Yang coldly smiled.

Teacher Mo and Teacher Xi watched this scene and frowned. Yet they did not say anything. Normally, this kind of result was easy to evaluate. They were actually more concerned if the students were able to hone themselves and not the final result.

Tang Qian'Er clenched her hands. It was evident that she was quite furious. However, she had nothing that she could do so she stomped on the ground bitterly.

Mu Chen quietly watched this scene. When Liu Mubai pulled out the two Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence, he glanced at Hong Ling for a moment. The latter's face was obviously unnatural and she immediately evaded his gaze when she noticed it.

"Forget it, since the top three willbe able to obtain the Accumulation Elixir."

Mu Chen let out a faint smile and pulled Tang Qian'Er away while she was angry.

“But they’re obviously cheating.” Tang Qian’Er let out an angry cry. Mu Chen nearly lost his life when he killed the Conflagration Ape King. However, she did not believe that Liu Mubai would be able to obtain two Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase Soul Essences with his own strength.

“Ohoho, it’s just a little competition. What’s wrong with losing once? You’ll still have a chance in the future.” Liu Mubai smiled at Mu Chen. However, his smile was cold and provocative.

Mu Chen touched his nose and felt a little helpless. I originally didn’t plan on playing these childish games with you, but who told you to jump into it yourself...

“Teacher Mo.”

Mu Chen suddenly turned towards Teacher Mo and smiled. He said: “I forgot earlier, but I still have some Spiritual Beast’s Soul Essence on me. Can I add onto it now?”

Teacher Mo glanced at Mu Chen. He knew that this little guy was about to do something that would make people’s jaws drop and immediately nodded.

When Mu Chen noticed this, he shrugged towards Liu Mubai, who had a dark expression, and his hands dug around.

Everybody’s gazes were concentrated at Mu Chen’s body. Is it possible that this guy could still bring out more?

Under everybody’s gazes, Mu Chen finally extended his arm. Everyone was stunned as they watched the scene. Five clumps of light rose up from Mu Chen’s hand and every single one of them emitted a Spiritual Energy fluctuation that was comparable to the Conflagration Ape King’s Soul Essence.

These five clumps of light were all Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase Soul Essences!

Mu Chen scratched his head and stared at the pale–faced Liu Mubai. He let out a faint smile and said: “My apologies, a few days ago, five Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase Middle Rank Spiritual Beasts were duking it out.

All five of them were injured due to it, so I went to kill them all."

The crowd all vomited blood. This guy, this reason, was it all done to mock Liu Mubai?

Everybody's gazes turned over and watched as Liu Mubai's handsome face became abnormally ugly.

It was obvious that, this time, Liu Mubai was in trouble.

Chapter 42: Interception

Because of Liu Mubai and Mu Chen, the evaluation of the results had become somewhat amusing. The Soul Essences that they pulled out were far too powerful for the many students.

Moreover... Whether it was Liu Mubai's two Soul Essence or Mu Chen's five Soul Essence, it was simply impossible. Furthermore, the latter did not even tried to care when he made up the excuse. He was basically telling everybody that he was cheating...

However, many of the people knew that Mu Chen was deliberately doing this against Liu Mubai. This is because it was unclear how Liu Mubai obtained the two Soul Essences.

The recording staff member also stopped and stared helplessly at this scene. Then, he turned over to look at Teacher Mo and Teacher Xi.

"The two of you, stop playing around now."

Teacher Mo helplessly shook his head. Then, he became straight-faced. He waved his hand and said: "Put your items away, this training was to hone your real combat abilities. It was not done so you can show off. Both of you shouldn't get the orders reversed!"

Mu Chen gave off an indifferent smile. He never expected that the five Soul Essences would have any effect in the first place. Moreover, the Soul Essences weren't hunted by him. He found them inside Xue Tu's Mustard Seed Bracelet...

He only did this because he didn't like Liu Mubai going against him and wanted to make him feel disgusted.

Liu Mubai's face was a little pale. It was obvious from Teacher Mo's words that he did not believe that Liu Mubai had hunted the Soul Essence himself personally. Although that was true...He was still played around by Mu Chen.

"The results this time, Mu Chen and Liu Mubai's team are both tied for first."

Hearing Teacher Mo's judgement, the camp instantly became lively. It was evident that Teacher Mo and the others did not want to dwell on this matter. For the first place winners, the top three rewards were the same. Therefore, they were too lazy to pull off the two thorns, Liu Mubai and Mu Chen. 1

But this made it apparent that Teacher Mo did not believe that the Soul Essences they pulled out in the end were hunted by Liu Mubai or Mu Chen personally.

A few students glanced at each other. They pondered for a moment and decided to judge who the true number one was. After excluding the unreliable Soul Essences, it was evident that the Conflagration Ape King had the most worth. Not only did Mo Ling said and the others that Mu Chen had lured away the Conflagration Ape King, but even Teacher Mo said that he personally witnessed it. Therefore, the Conflagration Ape King's Soul Essence was definitely related to Mu Chen.

And Mu Chen, who held this Soul Essence, naturally defeated Liu Mubai.

When Liu Mubai heard the surrounding uproar, his eyes turned grim. He knew what everybody was thinking about. Not only was he suppressed by Mu Chen, he was even disgraced.

Tang Qian'Er's mood was elevated. Although Mu Chen and Liu Mubai were tied this time, many students knew who the true number one was.

Thus, the evaluation of the results came to an end.

Mu Chen and Liu Mubai's team were tied for number one, Mo Ling's team made it to number two and the third place was achieved by West Branch's Chen Tong's team.

As they saw the results, those that failed let out a regretful sigh.

"Since the results have come out, we should give out the rewards as well."

Teacher Mo smiled. He flicked his finger and numerous lights passed through his hand as it went towards Mu Chen and the others. It peacefully landed within their hands.

Mu Chen stared at his hand as the light faded away. It revealed a tiny and exquisite jaded box. He gently opened the box and saw a fingernail-sized, jaded-blue elixir quietly lying within it. A powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuation slowly emitted out from it.

This fluctuation was many times stronger than the Jaded Essence Fruit. After all, this elixir could only be formed after refining a variety of Spiritual Medicines together and the medical effects would complement with each other. Therefore, it was naturally better than the Jaded Essence Fruit.

The surrounding crowd stared at the Accumulation Elixir within Mu Chen and the other's hand and had jealous expressions. It was said that the Accumulation Elixir could speed up the time to reach the Spiritual Rotation Stage.

"Since this training session is over, we will head back to the Northern Spiritual Academy. In addition, we will have a month of vacation time. You can decide whether or not you want to head back home or stay within the academy." Teacher Mo waved his hand and smiled.

When the young boys and girls heard that there would be a month of vacation, they instantly became excited. They were at the Northern Spiritual Academy for so long and were getting slightly homesick.

Among the joyful atmosphere in the camp, the students began to pack up the camp and reunited with the main force. They left according to the time and headed leisurely back to the Northern Spiritual Academy.

...

After returning to the Northern Spiritual Academy, Mu Chen could finally relax and did not have to be composed. The Northern Spiritual Academy was considered an extremely safe place within the Northern Spiritual Realm. Even with their strength, the Liu Territory did not dare to cause trouble within the Northern Spiritual Academy's grounds.

He completely rested for a day in order to allow him to gradually stop being on guard. Then, he began to prepare for his trip back to the Mu Territory.

But before heading back to the Mu Territory, Mu Chen went to find Su Ling. He first handed that guy a Jaded Essence Fruit and asked the elated guy to help him do one thing.

On the following day, Mu Chen packed up his things and left the Northern Spiritual Academy. He went straight towards the Northern Spiritual City's Transfer Spiritual Array in order to rush back to the Mu Territory.

Mu Chen walked down a familiar street within the city. The streams of people walking around revealed how bustling and lively the city was. He did not plan on staying here for long. Thus, he calculated a shortcut and headed straight through it.

Mu Chen's body turned around a corner and the street became slightly deserted. A light drizzle began to gently fall down from the sky.

Mu Chen sped up within the drizzle and the cold rain landed on his face. It made him shiver slightly and then he suddenly stopped. His keen perception that he had honed within the Spiritual Road made his skin feel a sense of chill.

Unknowingly, the street had become deserted. Not even a single voice was present at the scene.

Mu Chen's face slowly became serious. He lifted his head and stared at the hazy sky. He could vaguely see a few lights flashing as if there were some sort of subtle fluctuation within the air.

"Consciousness Mesmerizing Array..."

Mu Chen clenched his hands tightly. His pitched-black eyes became exceptionally sharp. Soon after, he raised his head and stared in front. A cold voice emitted out from him: "You actually dare to arrange a Consciousness Mesmerizing Array against a Northern Spiritual Academy's student in the Northern Spiritual City. You really have guts!"

However, not a single response came out from the entire street.

"Are you a mouse? When did the Liu Territory people started to enjoy hiding the head and show the tail2?" Mu Chen let out a cold sneer. He

could not think of anyone aside from the Liu Territory, who would attack him before he reached the Mu Territory.

"You are Mu Chen?"

A faint voice finally came from in front. Mu Chen lifted his head suddenly and saw a figure with an umbrella gradually appeared within his vision.

"Hand the item over to me."

Chapter 43: The Person within the Rain, Ji Zong

"Hand the item over to me."

Under the drizzle, Mu Chen's body tensed up. His eyes were firmly fixed in front. From that place, a figure that was holding an umbrella gradually appeared. It was a slightly skinny man with a feminine face. His thin lips were like blades and carried a chilling sense.

Mu Chen stared at this unfamiliar feminine man, yet he felt a dangerous feeling fill his heart. His eyes narrowed as he said: "You shouldn't be a person from the Liu Territory, right? Why are you finding me?"

"Ohoho, I am, indeed, not a person from the Liu Territory. However, someone paid a considerable price in order for me to take action." The feminine man gently smiled and softly turned his umbrella within his hand. He put his thin lips together as he said: "You can call me Ji Zong."

"Ji Zong? The Person within the Rain, Ji Zong?!" Mu Chen's eyes narrowed. This name was as prominent as Xue Tu in the Northern Spiritual Realm. Of course, this does not mean that Ji Zong was stronger than Xue Tu. His own strength should be at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Initial Phase. However, he holds another identity that others are fearful of.

He was a Rank 1 Spiritual Array Master.

The Great Thousand World was a place where numerous planes intersect. It was so vast that even the super powerhouses, Sovereigns, would consider themselves as exceptionally small beings. Therefore, the Great Thousand World was dazzling and splintered a place where many would contend for hegemony.

Spiritual Array Master, Spiritual Artifact Master...Aside from the orthodox Spiritual Energy cultivation, these special professions were extremely dazzling. Moreover, these professions required a demanding amount of talent. Even individuals, who were talented in the path of cultivation, may not necessarily be able to walk smoothly on these paths.

Instead, individuals, who may be mediocre in the path of cultivation, may show surprising talent in these paths. The heavens would close a window for you, then, it must open another one for you. This phrase was suitable used in the Great Thousand World.

Overall, the Spiritual Array Master was a highly regarded profession. This is because many forces require the help of the Spiritual Array Master. Whether it was creating a defensive battle array or an offensive battle array, or even maybe an array that is beneficial to cultivation, these would require Spiritual Array Masters. Therefore, a high rank Spiritual Array Master was considered extremely desirable in the Great Thousand World.

Moreover, the Spiritual Array Masters, who had achieved a certain degree of level in Arrays, would be able to instantly arrange an Array and use the might of the Array to shake the heavens and earth.

Ji Zong, who was in front of Mu Chen, was able to become well-known in the Northern Spiritual Realm because he was a Rank 1 Spiritual Array Master. His Spiritual Rotation Stage Initial Phase's strength had no relationship to his fame.

A Rank 1 Spiritual Array Master was extremely frightening if they were in an array. They would not be inferior to a Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase powerhouse.

"Although you are an Northern Spiritual Academy student, I never expected you to know my title." Ji Zong smiled and said. His voice was extremely feminine, just like a woman. However, he was genuinely a man. This contrast made others feel highly uncomfortable.

"If you dare attack in the Northern Spiritual City, you would have committed a taboo from the Northern Spiritual Academy. If they were to know this, you probably would not have a good ending." Mu Chen's eyes flashed while he spoke.

"This is why I worked hard to arrange a 'Consciousness Mesmerizing Array'. Nobody on the outside will know about the events that happened here." Ji Zong pointed at the empty street as he spoke.

"So you should just hand over the item obediently. I don't want to kill

you, because Mu Feng wouldn't become crazy due to it. Wouldn't it be great if we were to act friendly with each other?"

Mu Chen's eyes turned cold. The Spiritual Energy within his body quietly surged out. Although he was caught under Ji Zong's Array, he was not the type of person who would easily compromise with others.

"You truly aren't obedient after all"

Ji Zong smiled and flicked his finger. The rain within the sky suddenly began to gather and a dense Spiritual Energy fluctuation emitted quietly out from it.

"You are quite fortunate to be able to personally experience my "Spiritual Rain Array"."

Ji Zong's sleeves waved and the rain within the sky suddenly poured down. It was like a torrent of blades as it enveloped Mu Chen.

When Mu Chen saw such an amazing offensive, he was a little surprised. The Spiritual Array Master was definitely powerful. This offense would be quite binding even for a Spiritual Rotation Stage user.

"Condensing Light!"

Mu Chen hurriedly retreated and the dark black Spiritual Energy within his bdoy surged out. It seemed to form a thin black light screen, which protected the body behind it.

Bang Bang Bang!

The steady stream of rain landed on the black light screenand the light screeninstantly began to tremble. Ripples quickly spread out from it and it was obvious that it was quite unstable.

After all, Mu Chen was only a Spiritual MovementStage Late Phase. It was extremely difficult for Mu Chen to resist the power of the array activated by Ji Zong.

"I can't let this drag on, I must break this array!"

Mu Chen stared at the rapidly collapsing black light and an idea quickly flashed through his mind. With his current strength, he was not a match

for Ji Zong in a direct confrontation. His only way out was to break the Array. Once the array was destroyed, it was like snapping a tooth off a tiger for Ji Zong. The threat would be greatly reduced and he would not dare to attack within the Northern Spiritual City after losing the array's cover.

However, how would it be easy to break a Rank 1 Spiritual Array Master's arranged array?

Mu Chen took a deep breath. He gradually calmed down during this dangerous and critical moment as his eyes shimmered. Ji Zong was only a Rank 1 Spiritual Array Master. With this level of strength, it was obvious that he could not control the array with just his heart. In other words, he would require the help of a foreign object in order to cooperate and control the array.

This foreign object was the weakness of the Spiritual Array Master. They must put it at a place where they could easily protect it.

Mu Chen's eye quietly swept through Ji Zong's body. After a moment, he focused at the umbrella that Ji Zong was holding...

His strength was far inferior to Ji Zong. Moreover, Ji Zong was controlling an array. The fortunate thing was that Ji Zong also knew this point, so...he would underestimate him. This would soon become Mu Chen's best chance.

"Kacha!"

The black light that was formed by Mu Chen's Spiritual Energy finally shattered completely. The rain passed through his face and left trails of blood. However, Mu Chen's eyebrows also became like swords at this moment. He stomped on the ground as the rain splashed and charged straight towards Ji Zong like a cheetah.

"What an aggressive young boy." Ji Zong saw this and let out a faint smile. He immediately waved his hand and the rain condensed together. It actually formed a spear of rain as it stabbed violently towards Mu Chen.

Mu Chen's body lunged forward and his hand pushed out on the ground.

His body jumped up and he dodged the sharp rain spear like a nimble monkey.

"Pretty good skill."

Ji Zong complimented him as he watched. However, he began to attack more viciously. His hands swept through the air and numerous spears of rain were formed. All of them drew a tricky arc as they enveloped Mu Chen's vital areas.

Mu Chen dodged agilely, but a spear still managed to sweep through his chest. It tore apart his clothes and left a trail of blood. Fresh blood immediately surged out from that location.

However, he did not care about the fresh blood on his chest. He charged forward a few steps and finally approached Ji Zong. When the latter noticed this, he narrowed his eyes and said in his feminine voice: "You actually know that you should charge directly at the owner of the array. Boy, you really have a keen eyesight. However, although the idea was correct, you still overestimate your own strength and underestimated the gap between the two of us."

Ji Zong faintly smiled and gripped his hand. The rain began to converge at his palms and directly formed a liquid-like rain long sword. A powerful Spiritual Energy flowed out from the long sword.

Mu Chen clenched his hands into fists and a black light flowed out. Two black light seals immediately emerged while carrying an overbearing Spiritual Energy fluctuation and he did not hesitate as he punched fiercely towards Ji Zong.

The fist howled through the air and actually tore apart the rain. The howling sounds of the winds breaking made Ji Zong shudder. It was evident that he did not expect that Mu Chen would be able to demonstrate such a fierce offensive with his Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase strength.

If he wasn't a Spiritual Array Master and was only a normal Spiritual Rotation Stage Initial Phase person, it would probably be difficult for him to catch Mu Chen, and yet...

“That’s still not enough!”

Ji Zong’s eyes turned cold. The water sword in his hand trembled and let out a humming sound. The water sword surged out like an anaconda and heavily collided with the two black light seals. A massive and violent Spiritual Energy exploded out!

As the Spiritual Energy exploded out, Mu Chen’s body was forced back a bit. Even his two Limitless Death Seals were gradually forced back. Although Ji Zong was only at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Initial Phase, he was still able to compete against Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase with the help of the Spiritual Array. It was apparent that Mu Chen would not be able to obtain the upper hand in a direct confrontation.

Mu Cheng gritted his teeth as he stared at the two Limitless Death Seals being forced back. He, then, glanced at the razor sharp sword tip. A chill directly pierced through his heart and made him skin feel numb.

“Take this!”

A sense of threat enveloped his heart and Mu Chen glared fiercely. He let out a violent cry and it resounded within his heart. At the same time, the Great Pagoda Art began to circulate.

Through testing it a few times, he already understood that there was a hidden power within his body. However, this power could only be activated when he was in a life-and-death situation.

And now...It was the best opportunity.

“Come out!”

Mu Chen’s cry resounded and echoed within his heart. Sudden lights lit up on the surface of Mu Chen’s body. A faintly discernible tower of light emitted its brightness, which penetrated through Mu Chen’s skin, as it vaguely appeared within his body.

Chapter 44: Breaking the Array

Buzz!

The moment the faintly discernible light tower appeared within Mu Chen's body, a special fluctuation gushed out.

This fluctuation was not particularly powerful, but it caused Ji Zong to tremble when it reached him. His eyes seemed to have instantly entered a trance.

Hmph.

However, this trance only lasted a moment and Ji Zong quickly recovered from it as he let out a cold hmph. This Mu Chen was definitely different fromthe ordinary youths. No wonder the Liu Territory paid him to come. However, no matter how much he struggled, it was not easy for him to make up for the humongous gap between them.

Swish!

Ji Zong's arm trembled and the longsword formed from the rain instantly expanded. A violent Spiritual Energy surged out and forcibly shattered the two Limitless Death Seals as it stabbed towards Mu Chen's shoulder with lightning speed.

Don!

Ji Zong's attack was extremely vicious and it passed through the open gaps of the two Limitless Death Seals. Mu Chen was late in defending due to this and the rain longsword pierced into Mu Chen's shoulder. But the moment it made contact with Mu Chen, the vague light tower began to tremble within Mu Chen's body and caused the rain longsword to stop. Thus, the sword tip was the only part that stabbed into Mu Chen's shoulder and allowed the blood to flow out.

"Shuaa!"

Ji Zong watched the scene and let out a faint smile while thinking that the situation was already over. His eyes stared at the boy. Yet, under the drizzle, the pair of black eyes stared at him like a deep black hole. From

those eyes, a wordless sense of danger unexpectedly filled Ji Zong's heart.

Shuaa!

The boy in front of him did not care about the longsword that stabbed into his shoulder. The pain didn't even manage to make his eyebrows tremble. His hands shook and a cold light flashed by. In the end, the umbrella that Ji Zong was holding in his left hand flew away under his astonished eyes.

The umbrella landed on the ground powerlessly and caused a little splash. Ji Zong stared as he watched the scene before turning around to look at the boy, who retreated backwards. Blood constantly flowed out from the boy's shoulders.

"You actually saw through it..."

Ji Zong's mouth muttered and his face became serious. The boy in front of him had actually managed to notice the flaw of his array. Not only did he make him tremble, the boy had the courage to use his own body as a lure in order to make him reveal an opening. Moreover, he even managed to take advantage of this opening and cut apart his umbrella without any hesitation. At the same time...It also cut apart his connection to the array.

"You lost."

Mu Chen said to Ji Zong as he grinned and laughed.

Amongst his laughter, the rain suddenly stopped. The surrounding air seemed to flash and Mu Chen began to hear vague human sounds entering his ear.

It was still the same street. However, there were no traces of rain on the ground. The sun even shone brightly in the sky and in the distance, a few figures began to emerge.

It was evident that the "Consciousness Mesmerizing Array" that he had enveloped this place with had been destroyed.

Mu Chen stared in front of him. At that place, Ji Zong was examining him with a serious expression. Then, he let out a laugh as he said: "You're

quite an amazing boy. I never expected that Mu Feng would actually have such an excellent son."

Mu Chen smiled, but his eyes remained on alert: "Next up, do you still plan on attacking?"

"The array has already been destroyed. I can't kill you know. The following events have nothing to do with me, but you should behave yourself from now on." Ji Zong said as he let out a faint smile and stared deeply at Mu Chen. After he finished speaking, he turned around immediately and slowly walked away.

Mu Chen's eyes remained fixed on Ji Zong as he disappeared in the distance. However, his eyebrows were still tense. This was because the sense of danger he was feeling did not completely disappear. It was evident that the Liu Territory had made up their mind and did not plan on letting him return safely to the Mu Territory.

"This Ji Zong, he really is useless!"

Juts when Mu Chen surveyed the surroundings vigilantly, two cold gazes penetrated through the gap of a certain street and watched the young boy's figure.

"Third Uncle, what should we do now?" A handsome boy beside the middle-aged man asked. From the familiar appearance, it was obvious that it was Liu Mubai and the middle-aged man was Liu Ming.

"Hmph, it was lucky that I never fully trusted that Ji Zong. I only wanted to use him to test Mu Chen. Naturally, if he managed to kill him, it would be the best. However, since he failed, we will have to do it ourselves!

Liu Ming let out a cold hmph and said: "No matter what, we cannot let Mu Chen bring that item back to the Mu Territory. Otherwise, the Liu Territory's long-prepared plan will be disrupted!"

"However, if you were to attack him now, you would probably cause the people from Northern Spiritual Academy to come." Liu Mubai said softly.

"Then we must get rid of him quickly."

Liu Ming's eyes flashed. He gestured with his hand and ten figures appeared behind him. These people were covered with an ominous aura and judging from the Spiritual Energy fluctuation, they were all people at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Initial Phase!

"Move in!"

"Yes!"

The ten figures responded quietly and their bodies flashed as they disappeared into the darkness.

On the street, Mu Chen, who was glancing at his surroundings, focused his gaze in front of him. He saw ten figures suddenly appearing and surrounding him.

"Ten Spiritual Rotation Stage Initial Phase experts."

Mu Chen noticed the ten figures and his heart trembled slightly. The Liu Territory really wanted to kill him. Although Liu Ming and the others did not dare to personally attack since it was the Northern Spiritual City, they still prepared a big meal for him.

"I must not fight against them, I must escape from this situation!"

This idea flowed through Mu Chen's mind and he hurriedly backed away. No matter how strong he was, he did not believe that he would be able to defeat ten Spiritual Rotation Stage veterans by himself.

Swish!

However, these ten individuals charged straight at him. Their Spiritual Energy erupted out and a killing intent emitted out from them. Because of this commotion, a ruckus appeared in the distance. It was evident that the commotion here was discovered.

"Damn it!"

Mu Chen cursed loudly within his heart when he noticed how swift these fellows were. The Spiritual Energy within his body gushed out and the two black lights flashed on his arm. It was apparent that he was planning to take a risk and desperately stall for time.

“Swish!”

The ten figures quickly approached and they were highly in sync. When they split up, they had already formed an encirclement and completely blocked all routes of escape for Mu Chen. Two sharp longswords directly rushed towards Mu Chen’s vital points.

Mu Chen’s eyes firmly gazed at the violent attacks and the dark black light on his arms became even denser. However, just when he was about to take a step forward and attack first, a sudden cry rang out. It was like thunder as it resounded out: “Just where did these gangsters come from, they actually dared to hurt out Mu Territory’s Little Lord. Die!”

Accompanying the thundering sound, a figure swept over like lightning. In a few seconds, he appeared in front of Mu Chen and waved his sleeves around. A powerful Spiritual flowed out like a stream and the ten figures flew backwards as they were all gravely injured.

“Uncle Zhou!”

Mu Chen stared at the familiar figure in front of his eyes and was instantly overjoyed. They have finally arrived.

The thin, middle-aged man in front of Mu Chen was Zhou Ye. At this moment, his hawk-like eyes were fixed at the ten figures that were blasted away. However, he did not pursue them and remained beside Mu Chen in order to protect him.

“Go and kill them all for me!”

Zhou Ye stared coldly at the ten figures and immediately let out a cry. A response quickly erupted out from nearby and dozens of figures flew over quickly towards the ten figures.

Seeing this, the ten figures gritted their teeth and swung their sleeves. Smoke began to appear and it concealed their body as they retreated.

“Bastard!”

From a certain location on that street, Liu Ming watched as Zhou Ye suddenly appeared. He instantly became furious and his face became

ashen. He didn't expect that Zhou Ye would suddenly appear and deal with the situation right when it was a critical moment for Mu Chen!

"Third Uncle?" Liu Mubai frowned. He did not expect that the successive plans would have failed.

"Return back to the Liu Territory and tell everything to your father. I want to see whether or not Mu Feng has the guts to interfere with the Liu Territory's plans!"Liu Ming said sullenly and immediately waved his hand. He turned around and left.

Liu Mubai could only sigh helplessly when he saw this. His gaze passed through the gap and watched as the people from the Mu Territory protected Mu Chen. A cold chill passed through his eyes. Lucky boy, consider yourself lucky this time. Because, next time, I probably won't give you a chance.

Chapter 45: Nine Nether Bird

On the street, Zhou Ye was in front as he protected Mu Chen. His hawk-like eyes glanced around at the surroundings. After a while, his body gradually relaxed as he could feel the killing intent beginning fading away.

Shuaa!

Dozens of figures suddenly appeared and surrounded Mu Chen and Zhou Ye: “Little Lord, Master Zhou.”

“Little Mu, are you alright?” After feeling the killing intent disappear, Zhou Ye was relieved and asked Mu Chen as he turned around.

Mu Chen shook his head with a smile and said: “It was great that Uncle Zhou arrived quickly.”

“What happened? I received a message that Su Ling brought over and immediately rushed to the Northern Spiritual City. Just who were those people? Why would they attack you?!” Zhou Ye’s face was a bit grim. Mu Chen was the Little Lord of the Mu Territory. Just which kind of people would be so courageous to actually attack him in the Northern Spiritual City?

“It’s probably the men from the Liu Territory.” Mu Chen said.

“Liu Territory?” Zhou Ye’s face changed. He immediately asked suspiciously: “Although we aren’t in friendly terms with the Liu Territory, we were always fairly restrained towardseach other. Why would they...”

“Uncle Zhou, we’ll talk about this after we get back to the Mu Territory. I’ve ruined something important of theirs.” Mu Chen said with a slight smile. The commotion here wasn’t small. Thus, the Northern Spiritual Academy people would soon be here. Although Mu Chen knew that it was done by the Liu Territory, hedid not have any evidence to prove it. Therefore, this matter could only be dropped.

“Yes.”

When Zhou Ye heard this, he nodded and waved his palms. He brought Mu Chen with him directly to the Transfer Spiritual Array. With Zhou

Ye's protection, no trouble occurred. It seems that the Liu Territory understood that the matter of killing Mu Chen was impossible now and temporarily gave up.

...

Mu City, Within the Mu Estate.

"The Liu Territory attacked Little Mu?"

Inside the living room, Mu Feng's smiling face instantly turned cold ashe heard Zhou Ye talk about it. He fiercely stood up:

"What are the people of the Liu Territory thinking of doing? Do they want to completely rip open their faces to the Mu Territory?!"

"Right now, they probably don't want to completely rip open their faces. Otherwise, they wouldn't have invited Ji Zong first. Only, after that, they had no choice but to attack me by themselves." Mu Chen smiled beside him.

"Ji Zong?" Mu Feng's face sank. Beside him, Zhou Ye also frowned and asked: "He also attacked you?"

"Yes, I was caught in the array that he arranged. However, I broke through it later on and he left." Mu Chen nodded.

"You broke his array?" Mu Feng and Zhou Ye were stunned. They looked in surprise at Mu Chen. Naturally, they have heard of Ji Zong's name. Although his Spiritual Rotation Stage Initial Phase strength wasn't much, his identity of a Rank 1 Spiritual Array Master was still quite troubling. However, the array that he formed was actually broken by Mu Chen?

"Anyhow, I am still someone at the Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase, okay?" Mu Chen laughed when he saw their surprised expressions.

"Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase?" Mu Feng was surprised again. He nodded immediately with satisfaction. Although Mu Chen had lost a year of time for cultivation due to the Spiritual Road, his talents were definitely great. Right now, he was catching up.

"So what if you're at the Spiritual Movement Stage. If Ji Zong was to

activate his array, even a person at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase would find it tricky. You were able to break his array with your strength?" Even though Mu Feng was quite pleased, he still scolded Mu Chen immediately when he noticed his proud face.

"Ji Zong probably thought the same way as you, dad. That's why I was able to break through his array." Mu Chen pouted and said.

"It seems that Mu Chen utilized Ji Zong's thoughts of underestimating him." Zhou Ye smiled and said: "This wisdom is definitely hard to have."

"Just whatpart of this boy is praiseworthy?" Mu Feng smiled for a while before turning serious again. He said: "Why would the Liu Territory attack you? And they even chose to do it in the Northern Spiritual City. If they were discovered, they would incite the rage of the Northern Spiritual Academy. With their usual style of doing things, they would not commitsuch a reckless act. Moreover, the spots for the "Five Great Academies" are coming soon. It isn't wise ofthem to offend the Northern Spiritual Academy now."

"A while back, the Blood Slaughter Group seemed to have stolen something from the Liu Territory. Then, they were hunted down by the Liu Territory all the way to the Northern Spiritual Field..." Mu Chen carefully explained the events that he had met in the Northern Spiritual Field to them. He then revealed the Mustard Seed Bracelet on his wrist and said: "This item was stolen by me and they probably know it. Therefore, they were afraid of me bringing it back to the Mu Territory, so that's why they planned on attacking me in the Northern Spiritual City."

"Oh?"

Mu Feng and Zhou Ye exchanged glances with each other. A hint of seriousness could be seen from their eyes. They had, in fact, heard of the matter between the Blood Slaughter Group and Liu Territory, but they weren't too concerned about it. However, it seems that it wasn't that simple now since the Liu Territory valued it that greatly.

"Although the Mustard Seed Bracelet is quite valuable, it isn't something that the Liu Territory would place a high value on it." Mu Feng smiled and

said: “Is it something inside of it?”

Mu Chen nodded. He gripped his hand as an ancient copper piece appeared and said: “It’s probably this item. However, I’ve taken a look at it but I didn’t find anything special.”

Mu Feng received the old copper piece from Mu Chen’s hand and his palm brushed pass the engravings. He pondered for a moment before flipping it over. When he noticed the black giant bird engraving, he paused for a while as if he was thinking about something.

“This thing…It seems a little like…” Mu Feng muttered and his eyes narrowed: “It seems a little like…the Nine Nether Bird?”

“Nine Nether Bird?” Zhou Ye was shocked and said: “It can’t be?”

“Nine Nether Bird…” Mu Chen was also astonished. He could not help but ask: “Is it the Nine Nether Bird that is ranked 11thon the Myriad Beast Record’s Earth Ranking?”

“Judging from the appearance, it is quite similar.” Mu Feng nodded. He thought for a moment and gripped his palm tightly. A blazing light gathered in his hand and finally formed into a palm-sized Fire Bird. The Fire Bird’s eyes were extremely sharp. Its wings were like a dragon’s wings and fiery red dragon scales covered its razor sharp talons. A powerful, imposing manner emitted out from it.

“Is this the Dragonfire Bird’s Soul Essence that dad ingested?” Mu Chen looked curiously at the exquisite fire bird. This was a true Heavenly Beast. It was ranked 85thon the Myriad Beast Record’s Earth Ranking. It was many times stronger compared to Teacher Mo’s Golden Thunderwolf and Teacher Xi’s Rockturtle Lion.

The Dragonfire Bird stood on Mu Feng’s palm and gently approached the ancient copper piece. When it saw the engraving of the black bird, fear appeared in its sharp eyes. It retreated back a step as if it was extremely terrified and fearful of it.

“To be able to make the Dragonfire Bird this afraid and with this appearance, it is probably the Nine Nether Bird.” Mu Feng finally

confirmed it when he saw this scene.

Nine Nether Bird. It was born in the Northern Lands. Its wings could cover the mountains and the netherworld light could devour the sun and the moon.

This phrase that described the Nine Nether Bird flowed into Mu Chen's heart. He could not resist in smacking his lips. This power was rather hard to imagine.

"If it truly is the Nine Nether Bird, it's no wonder that the Liu Territory would think so highly of it...If a Spirit Stage powerhouse was to obtain the Nine Nether Bird's Soul Essence, their strength... would probably become quite insane." Mu Feng exclaimed.

"However, if it is truly a Nine Nether Bird, would the Liu Territory really be qualified to challenge it with their strength?" Mu Chen frowned. If it was truly a Nine Nether Bird, it was impossible for the Liu Territory to hunt it even with all their strength.

"The secret behind that should be within this copper piece."

Mu Feng let out a faint smile and a powerful Spiritual Energy gushed out suddenly. It flowed into the copper piece like a flood. Mu Chen had also done this action before, however, there was no response.

However, it did not mean that Mu Feng would fail when Mu Chen failed. After all, Mu Feng was a genuine Spirit Stage Late Phase powerhouse. He was considered as one of the strongest within the entire Northern Spiritual Realm.

The powerful Spiritual Energy gushed in and the silent copper piece finally made a commotion. The light was released out and formed a screen of light in mid-air.

A vast black forest seemed to appear within the light screen. At the same time, a humongous black bird was currently crying to the sky in the depths of the barren hills and turbulent waters. An overwhelming black light swept out from its body. Moreover, the black light seemed to enshroud that location and even covered up the lights.

The black light became denser and finally turned into a black flame as it wrapped the bird with it. The sounds of its cry became more and more shrill. Then, the scene changed. The giant black bird's body was rapidly turning small within the dense flame. With a final sorrowful cry, it turned into a giant black egg and landed in the depths of the black forest.

The scene ended at this location. Then, a complex route appeared. It seemed to be a map.

"It is indeed the Nine Nether Bird..."

Mu Feng took a deep breath and his eyes could not conceal his shock as he said: "And this Nine Nether Bird was actually attempting to evolve... However, it failed..."

Mu Chen's eyes jumped. The Nine Nether Bird was already quite amazing. If it were to evolve further, then wouldn't it qualify in the Myriad Beast Record's Heaven Ranking?

"It seems that the Liu Territory is really planning to head for the Nine Nether Bird. We must not let them get it." Zhou Ye's face turned serious as he spoke. If the Liu Territory managed to obtain the Nine Nether Bird, their strength would definitely increase. At that moment, they probably wouldn't endure the Mu Territory anymore with their personality.

"Then, we must seize it as well!"

Mu Chen's eyes flashed. His eyes remained firmly fixed on the ancient copper piece.

"Dad, what place is this? It seems quite familiar."

When Mu Feng heard this, he let out a gentle smile and said with sharp eyes.

"Of course it's familiar. This is because it is within the Northern Spiritual Realm. This place should probably be the Northern Spiritual Realm's Black Eerie Swamp..."

Chapter 46: Seal

"Black EerieSwamp?"

Mu Chen was slightly surprised when he heard this name. He immediately smacked his lips. So it was actually in that place.

Black Eerie Swamp, it is an extremely vicious land within the Northern Spiritual Realm. However, it is quite different than the Northern Spiritual Field. At least in the Northern Spiritual Field, Adventurer Teams would often head there. As for the Black Eerie Swamp, it is almost a forbidden land within the Northern Spiritual Realm. During these few years, nine out of ten individualswould become fertilizer for that land. As for the remaining ones, they would be able to make it out. Yet, he would become out of his mind and require an extremely long period of time to recover from it. Even when they come out, they would still be afraid when they hear the name, Black Eerie Swamp.

"The Black Eerie Swamp isn't easy to venture in." Zhou Ye frowned. It was obvious that he was quite knowledgeable about the Black Eerie Swamp. This swamp was known to be extremely dangerous. The slightest mistake could take away their life.

"If it is for the Nine Nether Bird, it is worth risking it. And...If we really let the Liu Territory obtain the Nine Nether Bird, it would be quite troublesome for us." Mu Feng muttered.

Zhou Ye nodded. The Nine Nether Bird was just too powerful. If it was during its prime, nobody in the Northern Spiritual Realm would even dare to hunt it. But based on what was seen, the Nine Nether Bird probably failed its evolution and was in the period where it was weakest. Therefore, the Liu Territory would not give up on this opportunity.

"What should we do?"

Mu Feng thought for a while and said: "Let's first send out some decent men to monitor the Liu Territory's movements. This matter must be kept secret; otherwise many forces would be jealous when this information spreads out. Thus, the Liu Territory would not dare to act on a grand scale

publicly and would only do this in secret."

"The Black Eerie Swamp has a deathly miasma enshrouding it back then. It will only weaken during the height of summer every year. From what I see, that day isn't far away. If the Liu Territory is to move, they will definitely select that time." Zhou Ye said.

Mu Feng also nodded his head and muttered: "We should also secretly recruit for men. Once there's an opportunity, we will also take action. Even if we fail to obtain the Nine Nether Bird, we must make the Liu Territory return empty-handed!"

With the hostile relationship that the Liu Territory and Mu Territory harbored, it would be a good thing if they managed to stop the other side from doing as they wish.

"Okay, I'll go prepare right now." Zhou Ye has always done things swiftly. He immediately replied and darted away without the slightest indecisiveness.

Mu Feng watched Zhou Ye's departing figure and smiled. Then, he patted Mu Chen's head: "You brat, you sure brought back a big gift to your father."

"Dad, bring me to the Black Eerie Swamp as well." Mu Chen smiled and said.

"That place is too dangerous; it's not suitable for you." Mu Feng frowned.

"I came out of the Spiritual Road, okay? Dad, the situation there probably isn't any better than the Black Eerie Swamp." Mu Chen gently smiled and said.

Mu Feng hesitated before carefully looking at the handsome face in front of him. Although it held a slight trace of immature due to his age, it already has an unswerving determination in it. He was slightly dazed. The boy that he had single-handedly brought up has unknowingly grown a lot.

"Since you want to do this, then you can follow us. However, you have to remember not to act reckless." Mu Feng smiled and was somewhat pleased. This son of his will probably soon surpass him, his father.

Mu Chen nodded. Then he smiled as he stared at Mu Feng and said: “Also, there is something that I have to trouble dad to solve my doubts.”

“What?” Mu Feng asked, puzzled.

“It’s about me.” Mu Chen helplessly shrugged his shoulders and said: “Ever since I trained in the Great Pagoda Art, I felt that something seems to be hiding within my body. Dad, can you explain it to me?”

Mu Feng was stunned and immediately let out a smile: “There was something like this?”

Mu Chen only stared at Mu Feng. Based on his understanding of his father, the more he acted calm, the more complicated the matter was.

“Dad, you can’t keep hiding it from me forever, right?”

Mu Feng looked at the serious and persistent eyes of Mu Chen. His smile gradually faded away after a while and he revealed a bitter smile: “I never thought that you would notice it this quickly. I originally thought that it would take at least another 6 months.”

“It’s useless for you to ask me about that since it was done by your mother.”

“That’s within my expectations. With dad’s strength, it’s probably impossible for you to do this.” Mu Chen was not surprised at this answer and smiled.

“Damn brat, you really want to get spanked!” Mu Feng’s face turned red. He was actually looked down by his own son.

“What did mother do to me?” Mu Chen lowered his head and stared at his own body as he asked in confusion.

“Because you are your mother’s own son, your body possesses her blood. Therefore, she arranged a sealing array in your body when you were born. This is also why you cannot detect your Spiritual Pulse after all these years.” Mu Feng explained.

“My Spiritual Pulse was sealed by my mother? Why?” Mu Chen muttered in surprise. He had always thought that he did not possess an

Spiritual Pulse, he never imagine that...it was actually sealed by his mother.

"There are two reasons. Although a Spiritual Pulse can improve your cultivation speed rapidly, it would sometimes become an obstacle if you are too much of a genius. In order for you to genuinely become a powerhouse, you must also possess a heart that matches this talent. In this world, there are many geniuses, but how many of them could be truly viewed as a hero amongst them?

Mu Feng smiled faintly and said: "You have also heard about the Heavenly Sovereigns that broke through the shackles of the Lower Planes and entered the Great Thousand World. These people are truly powerful individuals. They possess an unshakable resolve and for you to be able to rival them, you must also have such disposition."

"Then what about the other reason?" Mu Chen nodded and asked.

"As for the other..." Mu Feng gave a wry smile and spoke: "If your mother did not seal your Spiritual Pulse, the two of us would probably be quite troubled. You might not be able to smoothly grow up."

Mu Chen frowned: "What do you mean?"

"I told you what I should have told you. But something, you don't have to know now." Mu Feng shook his head and seriously looked at Mu Chen: "You only need to know that your mother did this to protect you."

"And...You cannot act reckless. Your mother paid a great price for you, so you must not touch the seal within your body before you have sufficient strength!" Mu Feng's expression suddenly became strict."

"Mother..."

Mu Chen muttered to himself. His hand gently touched his chest. This word seemed to emit a warm feeling from within his soul. Although he had never seen the gentle figure within his heart, he still felt a sense of familiarity due to the blood that they shared.

Just what happened when he was young that separated their family? It made him, when he was still an infant, unable to see the gentle figure

clearly.

"When you become strong, you will naturally know everything." Mu Feng patted Mu Chen's shoulder and said.

"Then, when will I be able to remove the seal within my body?" Mu Chen hesitated for a moment and asked.

"Heh, remove? How could it be that easy to remove the seal that your mother has left behind? However, she has already handed the key over to you. As long as you have the ability, you will be able to gradually remove it." Mu Feng smiled.

"Key?" Mu Chen's eyes flashed: "Is it the Great Pagoda Art?"

"Yes." Mu Feng nodded and said: "When your Great Pagoda Art reaches the Towerform Level, you should be able to remove the seal set up by your mother."

"Towerform..."

Mu Chen mouth twitched. He had personally experienced how difficult it was to train in the Great Pagoda Art. He really did not know how long it'll take for him to reach the highest level.

"Moreover, you should also try to understand about Spiritual Arrays during this period of time. I'll find a Spiritual Array Master to teach you a bit." Mu Feng suddenly said.

"Spiritual Array?" Mu Chen was stunned, he immediately rubbed his head and said: "I never learnt it. Dad, you want me to be a Spiritual Array Master as well?"

"Your mother was extremely accomplished in it. As her son, you must know a bit, right? Otherwise, your mother would blame me for not teaching you properly when you two meet. Therefore, you should work hard." Mu Feng smiled as he rubbed Mu Chen's head. Then, he slowly walked out of the living room and left behind a slightly depressed Mu Chen. Just how would it be easy to be a Spiritual Array Master?

His mother knew how to do everything. But if she was this brilliant, why

would she fancy dad...

Chapter 47: Spiritual Array

Apparently it was not a joke when Mu Feng said that he wanted Mu Chen to learn about Spiritual Arrays. Therefore, Mu Chen met the old Spiritual Array Master that Mu Feng brought back on the following day.

It was a somewhat skinny, middle-aged man dressed in white robes. He looked extremely strict and his face did not have the slightest smile. Although he was Mu Feng's subordinate, he did not show much respect or modesty when he saw Mu Feng. Instead, he maintained neither an humble nor arrogant expression.

"This is Mister Wen Ling, he will teach you the basic knowledge of Spiritual Arrays from now on." Mu Feng pointed at the middle-aged man beside him and directed a smile towards Mu Chen.

"Mu Chen meets Mister Wen Ling." Mu Chen cuffed his hand to salute. He did not display the appearance of a Little Lord and looked extremely humble.

The middle-aged man named Wen Ling gently nodded. Yet he did not say any words.

"Boy, you have to work hard, as Mister Wen Ling is famous for being strict. He will not teach you if you're not talented enough, even if you're my son. Do you understand?" Mu Feng cautioned him. Wen Ling could be considered as someone that he invited to the Mu Territory. Although he was only a Rank 1 Spiritual Array Master, there were no more than ten of them within the Mu Territory. Moreover, Wen Ling was considered to be the strongest one.

Mu Chen nodded his head. The Northern Spiritual Academy did not have a course regarding about Spiritual Arrays and they did not specially invite Spiritual Array Masters over. Normal individuals would not be able to invite a Spiritual Array Master to teach them. Thus, it made the Spiritual Array Masters rather scarce within the Northern Spiritual Realm.

Perhaps after entering the "Five Great Academies", you would be able to get professional training regarding about Spiritual Arrays. However, you

can only learn the basics in the Northern Spiritual Realm.

"Then you should follow Mister Wen Ling and learn. I have something else to do."

Mu Feng was not worried about his own son. With Mu Chen's sensibility, he would not do anything that would make the teacher run away in anger. Therefore, he left while being rest assured. The matter regarding about the Nine Nether Bird made Mu Feng quite busy recently as he had to watch the Liu Territory's movements at all times.

"Mister, please sit."

Mu Chen directed a smile towards Wen Ling when he saw Mu Feng leaving.

Wen Ling nodded. He sat down and was silent for a moment. Afterwards, his stern face looked at Mu Chen and he asked: "I heard from the Mu Territory Lord that you fought against Ji Zong?"

It was evident that Mu Chen didn't expect Wen Ling to suddenly ask about this. He was stunned for a moment before nodding his head.

"Then do you know what Spiritual Arrays that Ji Zong arranged against you?" Wen Ling asked again.

"It should be two Spiritual Arrays, a Consciousness Mesmerizing Array to trap me and a Spiritual Rain Array to attack me." Mu Chen thought for a moment and replied.

"Both of them are not complicated Rank 1 Spiritual Arrays, it seems that Ji Zong was afraid of your father so he did not directly kill you."

Wen Ling said: "Based on my understanding, the strongest Array that Ji Zong can arrange should be the "Murdering Bloodshower Array" and is comparable to a Rank 2 Spiritual Array. Once it was activated, even a Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase would be extremely helpless."

Mu Chen scratched his head. It seems that he won because of luck.

"However, it is also not easy for you to break through the two Spiritual Arrays with your strength." Wen Ling stared at Mu Chen and nodded his

head slightly. A hint of appreciation appeared on his emotionless face.

"We'll talk a bit about Spiritual Arrays now..."

Wen Ling waved his head and said: "The so-called Spiritual Array is simply a special method of resonating Spiritual Energy. It will activate the Spiritual Aura within the world, effecting both offensive and defensive measures."

"However, it is rather complex and difficult if you want to trigger this sort of resonance."

"In a few Lower Planes, it is easy to arrange Spiritual Arrays. This is because the energy there isn't as rich and complicated compared to the Great Thousand World. Therefore, the Great Thousand World's Spiritual Arrays are more advanced and complex compared to the ones at the Lower Planes."

Wen Ling extended his hand out. His hand seemed to be particularly slender and was completely different than his ordinary appearance. Mu Chen stared at his palm and noticed that Spiritual Energy was gathering quickly at his fingertips. Finally, it turned into five exquisite Spiritual Seals. The Spiritual Seals seemed to be quite complex, but it emitted a special fluctuation. Around the five Spiritual Seals, the Spiritual Aura from the world seemed to be overturning quietly.

"This is a Spiritual Seal, it is an essential item for arranging Spiritual Arrays."

"Spiritual Seal?" Mu Chen was startled. It was apparent that he was unfamiliar about this thing.

"Yes."

Wen Ling nodded. He flicked his fingers and the five Spiritual Arrays escaped his hand and flew out. It seemed to have fused with the raindrops from the sea and faded away. However, when the Spiritual Seals disappeared, Mu Chen suddenly felt a fierce and unexpected wind blowing, causing his body to be slightly shaky.

Mu Chen exclaimed and his eyes became serious. He was able to see

faintly that the air in front of him was slightly distorted. Light beams that were difficult to be seen with the naked eye seemed to be intertwining. And at the source of the light beams, it was the five tiny Spiritual Seals...

"Is this a Spiritual Array?"

Wen Ling nodded and said: "This is just a tiny Spiritual Array. It is not considered even a Rank 1 Spiritual Array."

"Arranging a Spiritual Array requires absolute control over the Spiritual Seals. Any slight fluctuation and abnormal resonance would cause the Spiritual Arrays to fail. When the Spiritual Arrays fail, the Spiritual Energy will cause a backlash to the user. In serious cases, they would lose their lives. This is because this failure is like losing control over your Spiritual Array and it will cause a heavy blow to the user.

"Generally speaking, the more powerful the Spiritual Array is, the more Spiritual Seals you would require. At the same time, the difficulty for manipulating it will become harder..." Wen Ling said: "I am a Rank 1 Spiritual Array Master, my utmost limit is controlling 20 Spiritual Seals at once. If I add anymore, I'll lose control over them... Based on my knowledge, the number of Rank 5 Spiritual Array Masters could be counted in one hand. They are able to manipulate over hundreds of Spiritual Seals and this power could even exterminate Spirit Stage powerhouses."

Mu Chen secretly clucked his tongue when he heard this.

"Spiritual Seals are the foundations of arranging a Spiritual Array. Aside from that, you require another essential item."

"What?"

"Diagram Array!" Wen Ling faintly spoke: "Forming an array is extremely difficult. It is equivalent to a large-scaled construction project. The Spiritual Seals are like cornerstone and the paths of connection. On the other hand, the Diagram Array is like the design. Without a complete design, it would impossible for the construction to start."

Wen Ling's hands entered his own arms and he slowly pulled out a

emerald jaded script. On the jaded script, a faint light flashed: “This is a Rank 1 Spiritual Array scroll, its name is the Spiritual Lightning Array.”

Mu Chen accepted it with curiosity and unraveled it. Light instantly entered his eyes and he could see light beams that would make others dizzy on the Diagram Array. These light beams intertwined complicatedly and finally formed into a flashing, yet faint lightning array.

“A Diagram Array could be considered to be the most attractive item for a Spiritual Array. Whenever a high ranked Diagram Array appears, it would definitely attract many Spiritual Array Masters to seize it.”

“And Diagram Arrays are also like Spiritual Array Masters. It is divided into 9 ranks. After all these years, the highest ranked Diagram Array I’ve seen is only a Rank 4 Diagram Array.” When Wen Ling talked about the Rank 4 Diagram Array, his strict face was filled with envy and longing.

“Of course, a Diagram Array is still too early for you now.”

Wen Ling stared at Mu Chen and handed another jaded script to him as he said: “Inside of this, there is the method of cultivating Spiritual Seals. See if you can cultivate it out. From a certain extent, this could be considered as a test for beginners. If you are able to feel that you’re clumsy and slow when cultivating, then you can stop. This means that you are not sensitive to your Spiritual Seals. In other words, it means you do not have the talent for this.”

Mu Chen heard this and accepted the jaded script. He did not say anything more and closed his eyes as he accepted the cultivation method for Spiritual Seals from within the jaded script.

Mu Chen closed his eyes for approximately an hour. Then, he slowly opened his eyes and put down the jaded script within his hand. His eyes showed pondering and thinking.

Cultivating the Spiritual Seal was quite similar to the Limitless Death Seal. However, it was not as complicated. This is definitely not because becoming a Spiritual Array Master was easier than training in the Limitless Death Seal. After all, the amount of Spiritual Seals that a Spiritual Array Master would manipulate far surpasses the amount of

Limitless Death Seals. Could the two Limitless Death Seals that Mu Chen was able to condense face 20 Spiritual Seals or maybe even 200 Spiritual Seals? It was obvious which one was harder in condensing and manipulating.

Mu Chen thought for a moment and finally opened his eyes again. His hand stretched out and a dark black Spiritual flickered at his fingertips. As the lights flickered, he was attempting to cultivate a Spiritual Seal.

Wen Ling's eyes stared calmly at Mu Chen as Mu Chen began to attempt to cultivate a Spiritual Seal. If the latter fails the very first test, there was no need for him to teach him any longer. It would only waste both of their times.

Chapter 48: Talent

In the quiet room, Wen Ling watched calmly at the boy in front of him with a dull expression. At this moment, the boy currently had his eyes closed and a dark black Spiritual Energy fluctuated at his right hand. The Spiritual Energy seemed to be condensing into a form.

Wen Ling stared at the boy and shifted his eyes away after a while. He let out a sigh deep down inside. Mu Chen had already entered this state for a full hour. This time had far surpassed his expectations.

Generally speaking, a slightly talented Spiritual Array Master beginner would condense his first seal in half an hour after being exposed to Spiritual Seal cultivation. The more talented users would form one even more quickly.

And now, Mu Chen had used an hour, yet he was not able to form his very first Spiritual Seal. This sensitivity could be described as slow. Therefore, Wen Ling let out a regretful sigh. He naturally heard of the impressive talent that Mu Chen displayed in cultivating Spiritual Energy. However, it seems that his talents did not extend to being a Spiritual Array Master.

Although Wen Ling was regretful, he did not care much. After all, he had seen enough of this situation. There were many geniuses at cultivation, who would not be a genius in another area. The war was still fair this way.

Time slowly passed while Wen Ling sighed. This continued for another half an hour before Wen Ling finally saw the boy in front of him open his eyes. A Spiritual Seal still hadn't formed in his hand, which made Wen Ling feel incredulous. It can't be that he was so clumsy that he couldn't even condense a single Spiritual Seal, right?

"What happened? Why haven't you formed a single Spiritual Seal, or were you distracted?" Wen Ling frowned and asked with a severe expression.

When Mu Chen heard this, he shook his head awkwardly and said with hesitation: "It's not that I can't condense it, but I don't know if I made a

mistake."

"A mistake?" Wen Ling was stunned.

Mu Chen thought for a moment and stretched out his slender palm. A dark light surged out as his dark black Spiritual Energy flickered at his fingertips. Then, Wen Ling saw how a single Spiritual Seal slowly emerged.

"So you did succeed." Wen Ling let out a sigh of relief when he saw this.

But just when he was relieved, he noticed another Spiritual Seal emerging out of Mu Chen's fingertips...

"Two?" Wen Ling could not endure it and raised an eyebrow.

However, when Wen Ling's eyebrow was lifted up, the change within Mu Chen's hand did not stop. A black light surged out and another Spiritual Seal emerged...After the third Spiritual Seal, another two Spiritual Seal appeared one after another on Mu Chen's fingertips.

Five Spiritual Seals!

Wen Ling was in a daze as he stared at the five dark black Spiritual Seals at Mu Chen's fingertips. His mind seemed to have blanked out and a hint of incredulous appeared in his stern eyes.

He would have never expected that Mu Chen would be able to condense five Spiritual Seals on his very first attempt. Back when he was learning, it took him a full half a month before he was able to do that. This was because it would be harder to condense one when the amount of Spiritual Seals increased.

Mu Chen watched Wen Ling's dazed expression and scratched his head. The Spiritual Seals' fluctuations faded disorderly and he said timidly: "Did I make a mistake?"

Although he had not come into contact with Spiritual Array Masters before, he still knew how difficult this profession was. Moreover, he did not feel the slightest difficulty when he condensed the first seal. It felt as if it was a matter of course and was even smoother than his normal cultivation.

This made him slightly shocked and he doubted whether or not he made a mistake when condensing a Spiritual Seal. Otherwise, how would it flow this smoothly?

Wen Ling finally recovered from his shock, yet his eyes remained fixed on Mu Chen's hand. Then, he opened his mouth and said: "Y...You probably didn't make a mistake."

After he blurted this out, he felt that his voice was a little dried. He immediately let out a dry cough and fully recovered: "It seems that you're quite talented in the area of a Spiritual Array Master."

When Mu Chen heard this, he let out a sigh of relief. It seemed that it was correct.

"Kuh...Although you seemed to be quite talented in this area, you should not act arrogant. A true Spiritual Array Master rank is not achieved simply by talent." Wen Ling became strict again and spoke.

"What Mister Wen Ling said is correct." Seeing that Mu Chen received his lesson, Wen Ling peeked at the boy again. He discovered that the boy's eyes were calm like a quiet lake. Not even the slightest hint of arrogance and pride could be seen within the boy's eyes. This made him let out a praise within his heart. This boy will definitely surpass his father one day and reach an amazing height.

The Territory Lord, Mu Feng, has an impressive son.

"Although the amount of Spiritual Seals you condensed was quite amazing, the Spiritual Energy was dispersed and was not able to solidify. This is why it faded away this quickly. This kind of Spiritual Seal cannot be used to arrange a Spiritual Array."

Perhaps because of Mu Chen's respectful and humble learning attitude, Wen Ling's strict expression softened. He originally only had the attitude of fulfilling a task when Mu Feng asked him to teach Mu Chen about Spiritual Arrays, but now, he showed a tiny bit of sympathy due to Mu Chen's talent and attitude.

Mu Chen revealed an understanding appearance and nodded his head.

The Spiritual Energy within those Spiritual Seals was indeed too dispersed.

"For the remaining time, you will use all your might to condense Spiritual Seals. When you can condense these five Spiritual Seals out as you wish, I will teach you a few Spiritual Arrays for beginners."

"Come, you should continue to condense them. I will explain the details that you have to pay attention to during the process of condensing Spiritual Seals..."

"Thank you, Mister Wen Ling!"

An afternoon passed and dusk soon appeared. Yet, Wen Ling still watched the boy, who was immersed in condensing Spiritual Seals. His face revealed a satisfied expression as he stood up and quietly left.

Wen Ling left the room and headed straight to the rear hall. There, he saw Mu Feng, who was discussing about certain affairs with Zhou Ye at the meeting room.

"Ohoho, Mister Wen Ling, how did the training go for the boy? Does he have any talent in it?" Mu Feng hurriedly asked when he saw Wen Ling. His face was quite urgent. If Mu Chen did not have any talent in it, wouldn't he have inherited his uselessness?

"Congratulations, Territory Lord." Wen Ling cupped his hands and revealed a smile on his strict face: "The Little Lord displays a talent in this area no weaker than his cultivation talent. Based on this speed, he would be able to complete the introductory course within 10 days."

When Mu Feng heard this, he let out a sigh of relief and grinned. This boy did not disappoint him and disgrace his mother.

"Little Mu's talent is really amazing. It seems that it is only a matter of time before he surpasses you." Zhou Ye's face also revealed a soft smile as he spoke to Mu Feng.

"That's of course, why don't you see whose son this is?" Mu Feng smiled proudly. His appearance seemed to be even happier than when he occasionally obtained the upper hand against the Liu Territory.

“That’s right, did the Liu Territory have any movements?” Mu Feng turned around and asked.

“There was a little bit of movement. Our spies have reported back, saying that many experts were gathering in Liu Territory. It should be part of the preparations the Liu Territory is doing in secret.” Zhou Ye replied.

“Yes.”

Mu Feng nodded. His eyes narrowed slightly and became extremely sharp.

“Watch over them carefully. When they take action, we’ll also move out as well. Heh, we will not let them get the Nine Nether Bird!”

...

Time passed day after day. Mu Chen spent the majority of his time on condensing Spiritual Seals. He had recently advanced into Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase. Although he could attempt on charging into the Spiritual Rotation Stage by relying on the Accumulation Elixir and the remaining Jaded Essence Fruit, his rational mind made him give up on this idea. The cultivation right now was to lay down his foundations. If he was too focused on pursuing speed, it may cause more harm than good.

Moreover, condensing Spiritual Seals would allow him to train in his control of Spiritual Energy and it would kill two birds with one stone.

Under Mu Chen’s efforts of training, he managed to completely solidify the five Spiritual Seals within five short days. Therefore, it would not disappear instantly due to the uneven distribution of Spiritual Energy.

When Wen Ling saw Mu Chen successfully solidify five Spiritual Seals, he was shocked, but he did not show it. Furthermore, he began to teach Mu Chen how to arrange a Spiritual Array.

Only when he reached this step, Mu Chen was able to understand just how difficult it was to arrange a Spiritual Array. Even though he displayed an impressive talent in this area, he still failed numerous times without any results when constructing a tiny Spiritual Array, which was not even considered a Rank 1 Array...

And even with his repeated failures, Wen Ling's expression was normal. If Mu Chen was able to successfully arrange a tiny Spiritual Array after a few short days, then it would undermine the profession of a Spiritual Array Master. Also, if that's the case, there shouldn't be this few Spiritual Array Masters within the Northern Spiritual Realm

However, Mu Chen also began to grasp the methods through his repeated failures and he finally succeeded on arranging a tiny Spiritual Array on an afternoon half a month later.

Chapter 49: Taking Action

In the courtyard, Mu Chen held his breath. 8 Spiritual Seals emitted light and flashed between his palms. This was the results of his efforts after this period of time. Right now, he was able to simultaneously condense and manipulate 8 Spiritual Seals.

At a nearby location, Wen Ling firmly fixed his gaze on him. During this time, Mu Chen had always attempted to arrange a tiny Spiritual Array, but he had not yet succeeded. Although he had always failed, Wen Ling could feel that Mu Chen was rapidly approaching success after all those failures. This boy had the ability of improving himself constantly through failures.

Swoosh!

Mu Chen's eyes were calm and his arms shook slightly in the next instant. The 8 Spiritual Seals suddenly stormed out from between his palms and disappeared quickly as if it had integrated into the air.

The moment the Spiritual Seals vanished in the air, Wen Ling's eyes narrowed. He could faintly see the 8 Spiritual Seals each occupying a unique position within the air. Rays of light emitted out from the Spiritual Seals and intersected and connected in a rather complex trajectory...

Moreover, when the final ray of light finished the complex connection, Wen Ling immediately felt the Spiritual Aura within the world surging more rapidly in this location.

Faint light flashed in the air before it quietly faded away. It was impossible to detect without sensing it carefully.

Mu Chen fiercely opened his eyes and a hint of surprise surged out of his black eyes. He succeeded!

"Clap Clap."

From nearby, Wen Ling gently clapped his hands with a satisfied smile on his face. He walked over and said: "Congratulations on successfully arranging your first Spiritual Array."

Mu Chen also let out a delighted smile. The tiny Spiritual Array in front

of him wasn't even considered a Rank 1 Spiritual Array, yet it was enough to get him excited.

Wen Ling took a step forward and entered the range of the tiny Spiritual Array. He could see the air inside suddenly become distorted and a tiny light array emerged. Numerous lights bursted out and bounded Wen Ling's four limbs and body like a rope.

"Not bad."

When Wen Ling saw this, he let out a faint smile. His body trembled and Spiritual Energy gushed out from his body as it destroyed the numerous binds. It was evident that a tiny Spiritual Array that didn't even reach Rank 1 Spiritual Array was not something that could shackle him.

"This tiny Spiritual Array's name is Spiritual Shackles Array. Although it is not considered a Rank 1 Spiritual Array, it is still quite useful. If your opponent is not careful, it will delay them for a moment. That moment would be your best chance." Wen Ling explained.

Mu Chen nodded his head. He appreciated the effects of this Spiritual Shackles Array, thus he spent this period of time studying it.

"Mister Wen, when can I arrange a Rank 1 Spiritual Array?" Mu Chen asked. Although the tiny Spiritual Array had a bit of use, it was still limited in application. He would only become truly powerful after he was able to arrange a Rank 1 Spiritual Array.

"Rank 1 Spiritual Arrays require a minimum of 15 Spiritual Seals. There is still quite the distance before you reach this step." Wen Ling said.

"15 Spiritual Seals, huh..." Mu Chen nodded slightly. Ever since he condensed 8 Seals, he started to feel the difficulty of condensing. It would require a lot of effort if he wanted to reach the level of condensing 15 Spiritual Seals.

"Since you have the ability to arrange a tiny Spiritual Array, then I would let you learn more about the other tiny Spiritual Arrays during the next period of time. This will help lay down the foundations for you. Although these tiny Spiritual Arrays are not too complicated, they are still the most

basic items." On Wen Ling's face emerged a rare smile. It seems that he was quite happy regarding Mu Chen's progress.

"Yes."

Mu Chen smiled as he nodded. Ever since he came into contact with Spiritual Arrays, he found that he was quite interested in it. Could this be passed down through his mother?

Thinking about this point, Mu Chen's heart could not help but smile. He was quite curious again. Based on what his father said, his mother had reached an extremely high level of achievement in Spiritual Arrays. However, he did not know what Spiritual Array Master rank she was...

During the next few days, Mu Chen did not let his Spiritual Energy Cultivation slow down while he spent many sleepless nights researching about other tiny Spiritual Arrays. During this study, he understood more about Spiritual Arrays and the amount of Spiritual Seals he could condense increased.

Time passed quickly as Mu Chen was fully immersed in his training. A week later...

On this day, Mu Chen sensed that there was a different atmosphere within the Mu Estate compared to the previous days. He pondered for a moment before his heart trembled and immediately rushed to the Meeting Room within the Mu Estate.

Outside of the Meeting Room, a few heavy guards were guarding it. However, when the guards noticed Mu Chen, they did not stop him as if they had already received orders earlier.

Mu Chen charged straight into the Meeting Room. Then, he noticed a few figures within the large room. There were five figures which were most striking and they sat inside the hall. Although their body shapes were quite different, they still seemed quite capable. Moreover, the Spiritual Energy fluctuation that emitted from their bodies was not weak.

"It's the 5 City Lords of the Mu Territory."

Mu Chen was slightly surprised when he saw the 5 familiar figures.

These five men were capable generals of his father. They helped him guard the five cities within the Mu Territory. On most occasions, they were each guarding their own city, but they actually all gathered here today.

Mu Feng did not say anything when he noticed Mu Chen entering the room. He only gestured and Mu Chen came to his side.

“Little Lord.” The five figures all cupped their hands and smiled upon seeing him.

“Uncle Duan, why are you still acting so polite towards me?” Mu Chen smiled. The tone he used was also quite amiable. After all, he was quite familiar with these five individuals.

“Ohoho, the Little Lord has also grown up.” The skinny middle-aged man in the front smiled. The other four also revealed a smile and the originally strained atmosphere loosened up.

Mu Feng also smiled and pressed his hands. The room instantly quieted down.

“I have roughly told you about the matter of this trip. Our spies have reported back with information that the Liu Territory has started to head to the Black Eerie Swamp. Therefore, we must immediately leave as well.”

Mu Feng’s serious eyes scanned the crowd and said: “This time, the matter is extremely important. I will personally lead the team with Zhou Ye. We’ll leave two of you to guard the Mu Territory. As for the remaining three individuals, you will also head out together with us.”

Mu Chen clucked his tongue slightly when he heard this. It seemed that the Mu Territory will be sending out all their elites. Looks like dad valued the Nine Nether Bird highly.

“The Liu Territory also views this matter as extremely important. Based on the information we’ve gotten, Liu Qingtian will personally lead their team. Moreover, Liu Zong and Liu Ming from the Liu Territory will go as well.” Zhou Ye said.

When Mu Chen heard this he was slightly surprised. The Liu Territory’s

Liu Qingtian and Liu Zong were both Spirit Stage powerhouses. That Liu Ming would soon advance as well. This line-up was extremely powerful. No wonder dad would head out together with Uncle Zhou.

The five city lords also had a serious expression. They could feel some pressure when they thought of the Liu Territory's line-up. Then, the skinny middle-aged man called Duan Wei pondered before speaking: "Then, Tie Lang, Chen Xiong and I will head out together with the Territory Lord. The other two will protect the Mu Territory, how about this?"

"Yes."

Mu Feng nodded and immediately gestured with his hand: "You will each lead a team. The strength must not be less than a Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase. Moreover, they must be experienced veterans. We cannot fail this mission."

"Yes!"

The five city lords all let out a solemn cry. Then, they immediately grinned and said: "It seems that we'll really fight against the Liu Territory this time. It's really been a long time since it's been so refreshing."

Mu Feng also let out a faint smile. A fire also surged out from the depths of his eyes. Others may be afraid of the Liu Territory, but the Mu Territory wasn't. This time, for the Nine Nether Bird, he would have to fight against them.

Mu Chen stared at the fiery fighting intent that surged up within the meeting room. He also licked his mouth gently. An expectation rose up from within his heart towards the mysterious Nine Nether Bird. Such a high ranked Spiritual Beast had never appeared in the Northern Spiritual Realm...

It was really unknown who would get his hand on this thing.

Chapter 50: Black Eerie Swamp

The Black Eerie Swamp is located in thesouthern part of the Northern Spiritual Realm. Moreover, it belongs to a rather remote regionwithin the Northern Spiritual Realm. Because of how dangerous it is, there were very fewpeoplewho went thereand hence, it had an extremely low popularity.

The Mu Territory was quite far away from the Black Eerie Swamp. Therefore, Mu Feng and the others only reached the Black Eerie Swamp after 3 days.

Mu Chen stood on the slope of a hill and stared forward. What entered his sightwas a dark and primitive forest. A grey deathly miasma covered the endless sky above the forest. This deathly miasma contained a highly toxic poison. Even a Spirit Stage powerhouse would not carelesslyallow it to invade hisbody.

Even though they were separated by quite a bit of distance, Mu Chen could still feel the deathly aura and the stench of blood that emanated from the Black Eerie Swamp. This place was many times more dangerous than the Northern Spiritual Field. No wonder the people within the Northern Spiritual Realm would say that it was a forbidden land.

“The Liu Territory’s men should have reached the Black Eerie Swamp. They are planning to enter from the west passage. Perhaps we will meet them shortly after we entered.” Zhou Ye overlooked the Black Eerie Swamp and said in a serious voice.

Mu Feng nodded his head slightly and immediately pulled out a jaded bottle. Inside the jaded bottle were a couple of pills: “Everybody should swallow these Poison Dispel Pills. Although it cannot stop the overly powerful poisons, it still has a tiny bit of resistance against the deathly miasma.”

Mu Chen also received a Poison Dispel Pill and he could feel a cold aura wandering within his body after he swallowed it. It must be that the pill has displayed it effects.

“Everybody should know just how dangerous the Black Eerie Swamp is.

Therefore, you should all be careful, let's go!"

Mu Feng saw that everybody had made the proper preparations, so he did not delay it any longer. He waved with his hand and his body darted out in front towards the Black Eerie Swamp within the distance. Behind him, Zhou Ye, Mu Chen and the others immediately followed.

The line-up was approximately 100 men and was not a small party. However, all the men that Mu Feng had brought were all veterans. They had bountiful experiences, so they made no noise as they hurried over. Not even dusts were brought up as they quietly entered the Black Eerie Swamp filled with the deathly miasma.

After entering the Black Eerie Swamp, Mu Chen could feel a cold feeling coming from all directions. It made the blood within his body stiffen up.

Mu Chen's eyes scanned in vigilance across the dark environment. Compared to the Northern Spiritual Field, this place was exceptionally quiet. However, it was this silence that made everybody feel uneasy.

As the party carefully entered the depths of the Black Eerie Swamp, Mu Chen could feel a sense of tension appearing in their bodies. Their hands clenched onto the shiny swords as the Spiritual Energy quietly circulated.

Even though they were extremely careful, the Black Eerie Swamp was still filled with dangers and death traps.

Ah!

Shortly after the group had entered the Black Eerie Swamp, a shrill scream erupted out from the team. Beneath the earth filled with rotten leaves, a hideous giant serpent sprang out. The instant that the body twisted, it instantly swallowed two men, who reacted slowly, from the Mu Territory. A black saliva dripped out from his giant mouth, causing the leaves on the ground to become rotten. It was evident that it was highly toxic.

"It's the Black Eerie Serpent!"

Due to the sudden attack, the party was slightly in confusion. However, they quickly recovered from the shock and let out a cry when they saw the

hideous, black, giant serpent. This was a Middle Rank Spiritual Beast, whose strength was comparable to Spiritual Rotation Middle Phase. They never imagined that they would meet such a powerful Spiritual Beast just after they entered the Black Eerie Swamp.

"Hmph."

When Zhou Ye noticed this, he immediately frowned and let out a cold hmph. He fiercely took a step forward and a dense Spiritual Energy erupted out. His body flashed and directly appeared on top of the Black Eerie Serpent. Then, his legs stomped on the enormous body of the Black Eerie Serpent.

Roar!

When Zhou Ye stomped fiercely, an enormous beast shape seemed to form from his Spiritual Energy behind him. It was a dark yellow, hornless rhinoceros. On the back of the hornless rhinoceros, it was filled with thick scales and it looked like it was carrying a tiny mountain.

Boom!

When the dark yellow, hornless rhinoceros appeared, Zhou Ye's body seemed to have to turn as heavy as a mountain and an exceptionally heavy weight appeared. He actually directly crushed the Black Eerie Serpent alive. As the earth trembled, the Black Eerie Swamp let out a sorrowful cry as its snake body was crushed into a mass of blood.

A Middle Rank Spiritual Beast that was comparable to a Spiritual Rotation Stage Middle Phase was directly crushed to death by Zhou Ye like this.

When Mu Chen saw this scene, he could not exclaim out loudly.

"Your Uncle Zhou has now reached the Spirit Stage Initial Phase. The Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence that he ingested was the Mountain Spirit Rhinoceros, ranked as the 180thon the Myriad Beast Record's Earth Ranking. When he crushes you down, it is similar to a mountain pressing onto you. It will instantly crush a human to pulp." Mu Feng said.

Mu Chen nodded in envy. When would he be able to obtain a Spiritual

Beast's Soul Essence that only belongs to him.

Zhou Ye took out the Black Eerie Serpent's Soul Essence out and walked back over as he said in a deep voice: "The Black Eerie Swamp is filled with dangers. If you do not wish to lose your life, then you should all focus!"

Everybody quickly replied. Although they were already extremely cautious towards the Black Eerie Swamp, it was obvious it was not enough.

After exterminating the Black Eerie Serpent, the party progressed forward. However, this time, they became even more careful. Vigilant eyes constantly scanned the surroundings. They would even check the place properly before even lowering their feet.

Although this carefulness made their movement speed slow down, it still brought quite the effect. After meeting the Black Eerie Serpent, the party had experienced many sneak attacks, but it did not cause any causalities. At most, a dozen people were just slightly injured.

This careful movement lasted for approximately half an hour. Mu Feng and his team had finally reached the initial areaforentering into the depths of the Black Eerie Swamp. However, the silence around the surrounding environment made it even creepier.

"Da."

Mu Feng, who was in the front, suddenly stopped as his eyes stared sharply inside the dark forest with a rotten smell. He let out a sneer and said: "Liu Qingtian, when did you become concealing yourself to perform sneak attacks?"

After hearing these words, everybody was startled and clenched their swords. Their gazes were fixed on the dark forest. Are they finally going to meet with the men from the Liu Territory?

Mu Chen also stared closely at that direction. This encounter was earlier than his expectations.

"Mu Feng, it's really hard to shake off your Mu Territory."

After Mu Feng's voice faded away, a faint laughter came from within the

dark fores. Then, sounds of footsteps rang out and figures slowly emerged from within the forest.

There were approximately a hundred of these figures. The line-up wasn't weak at all. Mu Chen's gaze swept through and stared at the person in the very front. A middle-aged man wearing a blue robe was standing with a faint smile at that location. Moreover, this person had a pair of slightly retracted eyes. His eyes were like a tiger as he scanned through the group, making everybody feel that he was awe-inspiring.

Liu Qingtian, the Liu Territory's Lord.

Mu Chen pouted his lips. It was evident that this man was the Territory Lord of the strongest Territory within the Northern Spiritual Realm, Liu Qingtian!

Beside Liu Qingtian, there was an extremely skinny, middle-aged man. His eyes were jaded green and had an emotionless expression. However, it was evident that he was a Spirit Stage powerhouse from the Spiritual Energy fluctuation that he emitted from his body!

The Second Master of the Liu Territory, Liu Zong.

Because behind Liu Zong, there was a familiar person, Liu Ming, standing there. Thus, Mu Chen's heart changed as he clearly knew the identity of this man. Furthermore, another familiar face was beside Liu Ming. It was Liu Mubai. Mu Chen did not imagine that even Liu Mubai would have followed.

As the two sides collided with each other, unfriendly gazes emerged out. The Spiritual Energy quietly surged as the atmosphere became extremely tense.

"Brat, so you truly were the one that stole away that item!"

Liu Ming and Liu Mubai's eyes instantly turned cold when they noticed Mu Chen behind Mu Feng. Especially the former, he had an grim appearance and he gritted his teeth firmly. Although he had guessed it in the very beginning, it still made him mad as he was played around by a boy.

However, Mu Chen only displayed a smile against Liu Ming's fierce gaze. Then, he stared looked at Liu Mubai, who also had a cold expression, and said: "I really have to thank you for sending such a big gift over to me."

Liu Mubai's eyes narrowed slightly as he said: "You're just lucky that you have such a blessed life."

Mu Chen's smile made Liu Ming grit his teeth even harder.

"Ohoho, Mu Feng, you sure have a good son." Liu Qingtian also glanced at Mu Chen. He probably knew that Mu Chen was the biggest reason why the Mu Territory had appeared.

Mu Feng looked indifferently at Liu Qingtian and said: "The Liu Territory sure is greedy, you have to share benefits with others. If you want to pocket it up by yourself, it's not a good act."

"Are the Mu Territory not afraid of death,sinceyou want to participate in everything?" Liu Zong, who was beside Liu Qingtian, muttered as he coldly looked at Mu Feng and the others.

"It would probably be easier to die if you try to pocket it yourself." Zhou Ye also sneered.

Liu Zong let out a cold laugh and said: "If the majority of the Mu Territory's elite troops were to die here, then the Liu Territory will help govern the Mu Territory's domain for you."

"I'm afraid that you don't have the ability to do so!" Zhou Ye said slowly.

The two sides stopped talking with each other and only gazed at the other side. An intense chill and Spiritual Energy fluctuations quietly surged out. It seems that the bloody battle will soon break out.

Mu Chen stared at this tense atmosphere and quietly circulated his Spiritual Energy as well. However, just when he ready, his ears suddenly twitched. His gaze turned towards the darkness in the depths of the Black Eerie Swamp as if a strange sound had appeared from that place.

Buzzzz.

When Mu Chen heard this buzzing sound, he was startled at first. Then,

his face instantly changed.

Chapter 51: Devouring Spirit Bee

Buzzz!

A subtle buzzing sound emitted out from within the depths of the dark forest. Yet, it instantly changed Mu Chen's expression.

Although the Black Eerie Swamp was filled with dangers and a single mistake could cost their lives, there was one thing which people would dread within the Black Eerie Swamp.

It was a Low Rank Spiritual Beast known as the Devouring Spirit Bee.

This Spiritual Beast was only the size of a palm and had the strength of a Spiritual Movement Initial Phase. However, everybody who entered the Black Eerie Swamp knew how terrifying it would be if they met the Devouring Spirit Bee within the Black Eerie Swamp.

With the Devouring Spirit Bee's strength, they would naturally be able to crush it easily if they met one of them. Unfortunately...It did not move by itself and instead, millions of them would move together every single time they took action...

They were like a dark cloud as they swept over the swamp. Any Spiritual Beasts, even if they were Middle Rank Spiritual Beasts comparable to Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase, would turn to bones in an instant as they enter their paths.

Within the Black Eerie Swamp, even the High Rank Spiritual Beasts would have to temporarily retreat if they met a swarm of Devouring Spirit Bees.

"Dad!" Therefore, when Mu Chen heard this subtle buzzing sound, fear appeared within his heart and he hastily whispered: "Hurry and run, there's a swarm of Devouring Spirit Bees!"

When his words came out, Mu Feng's face also changed as a hint of fear appeared. He was immediately decisive and he waved his hand as he shouted: "Hurry, we're leaving this place!"

When these words faded, he took the lead and darted away to the other

direction of the Black Eerie Swamp. He did not care about confronting Liu Qingtian. If they were bound by the Devouring Spirit Bees, even if he managed to escape, the Mu Territory's men would definitely suffer heavy casualties.

When their group of men left, the Liu Territory's side was stunned. Liu Qingtian frowned before his face immediately became serious.

"It's a swarm of Devouring Spirit Bees, run!"

Liu Qingtian let out a cry and did not hesitate to bring his men in another direction. It was evident that they knew how troublesome a swarm of Devouring Spirit Bees were as well.

The tense atmosphere between the two groups instantly vanished and they hurriedly retreated by themselves.

Just when they were hurriedly retreating, an endless black cloud surged out from within the depths of the dark forest. A buzzing sound rang out as if the air was trembling.

Bang.

When the black cloud surged out, the empty ground also shook. A mouse-like black Spiritual Beast desperately drilled down to escape.

However, it was clear that the black cloud was faster. It flew rapidly towards the black Spiritual Beast and a shrill roar sounded out before fading away quickly.

Only white bones covered with bloodstains were left behind after the black cloud passed by.

If you looked carefully during this moment, you would be able to see that there were actually countless palm-sized black bees within the black cloud. The black bees' mouths were covered with hideous fangs and blood dripped out from them.

The Liu Territory and Mu Territory's men withdrew quickly. However, they still underestimated the speed of the Devouring Spirit Bee swarm. In just a few short instances, the huge black cloud spread out and a dozen or

so men from both sides were engulfed by the black cloud. Afterwards, shrill screams rang out from within.

Perhaps the fresh blood had aroused the desire for them to kill, because the Devouring Spirit Bees did not immediately head back. Instead, it split into black torrents and headed quickly towards the two fleeing groups.

"Dodge!"

Mu Feng hurriedly shouted when he saw the black torrent stabbing towards them.

The party instantly divided into two and was separated from each other. Then, they gritted their teeth as they stared at the black torrent. They did not dare to pass through.

"Little Mu!"

Zhou Ye's face changed when he noticed that Mu Chen was separated from them. He attempted to forcibly charge through the black torrent formed by the Devouring Spirit Bees. However, he was stopped by Mu Feng.

"Relax, that boy isn't as weak as you think. Moreover, Old Duan and the others are with him. We should first avoid this swarm of Devouring Spirit Bees. He knows where to reunite with us." Mu Feng said as he glanced at the figures which were separated from them by the black torrent.

When Zhou Ye heard this, he hesitated for a moment before nodding his head. Although Mu Chen was still small, his performance had always been quite assuring. With Mu Chen's cautiousness, the dangers within the Black Eerie Swamp should not be a big problem for him.

Mu Feng waved his hand and led the men following him into the forest. They escaped far away from the dangerous and mighty Devouring Spirit Bees swarm.

"How unlucky."

On the other side of the black torrent, Mu Chen saw that their group was separated from the others and helplessly shook his head. However, it

was apparent that he did not dare to forcibly break through the torrent formed by the Devouring Spirit Bees. He did not hesitate and fled in the other direction. Right now, he must get far away from these dangerous things.

"Little Lord, be careful."

Old Duan brought a couple of men and followed Mu Chen. Since they were separated now, he had to properly protect Mu Chen. Otherwise, he wouldn't have the face to see Mu Feng if anything happened to Mu Chen.

Mu Chen nodded. He casted a glance behind him and his eyes were cold. This was because he noticed the black swarm surging towards them.

"Hurry and run!"

Mu Chen let out a shout and dark black Spiritual Energy surged through his body. He quickly pushed his speed to its very limits. If they were surrounded by the Devouring Spirit Bees swarm, they were almost guaranteed to die.

Duan Wei and the others also noticed the danger and swiftly followed Mu Chen. They did not dare to say anything anymore.

Although they were not slow, the Devouring Spirit Bee swarm's speed was still faster. They could feel that the Devouring Spirit Bees were gradually getter closer to them.

"Damn it!"

Duan Wei was also aware of this situation and he immediately cursed. He gritted his teeth and attempted to turn around to stop them.

"Uncle Duan, don't act impulsive!" However, just when Duan Wei was about to turn around, he was suddenly grabbed by Mu Chen. The latter pointed and said: "It seems that they have given up?"

Duan Wei was stunned. He looked over and noticed that the Devouring Spirit Bees swarm suddenly stopped their chase. They hovered around as they buzzed. Then, suddenly, they swiftly headed towards the North-Western direction.

Mu Chen was slightly surprised as he stared at this scene. He immediately frowned. It seems that he could faintly hear the sound of a flute coming from a distance away...

This extremely weak and peculiar flute sound seemed to attract the Devouring Spirit Bees swarm.

"Could it be that the Devouring Spirit Bees swarm was actually controlled by someone?" A surprising idea appeared within Mu Chen's heart. This flute sound did not seem like it was caused naturally.

"Little Lord, these tiny things have finally retreated. We should hurry back to reunite with the Territory Lord." Duan Wei let out a sigh of relief when he noticed that they had gotten rid of the Devouring Spirit Bees.

When Mu Chen heard this, his eyes flashed for a moment and he gently said: "Uncle Duan, let us follow the Devouring Spirit Bees over and see."

Duan Wei was stunned for a moment when he heard these words. He quickly said: "Little Lord, it's too dangerous!"

"It's fine. We will not get close to them and only watch them. If they are any problems, we will immediately retreat." Mu Chen pondered for a moment before speaking. If the Devouring Spirit Bees swarm was really controlled by humans, then could have other forces obtained the information regarding the Nine Nether Bird?

Seeing Mu Chen's insistence on it, Duan Wei could only helplessly shake his head. He immediately said: "Fine, we'll follow them. However, if anything happens, I will immediately bring the Little Lord away."

"Yes, thank you Uncle Duan."

Mu Chen smiled. He did not hesitate any longer and swiftly followed. Seeing this, Duan Wei led the men as they followed.

The Devouring Spirit Bees' speed was extremely fast. However, with Mu Chen closely following them, along with the black cloud being too conspicuous, they did not lose it along the way.

As they followed, Mu Chen's face became more and more suspicious.

This is because the subtle flute sound was become clearer and clearer.

“Little Lord, the Devouring Spirit Bees swarm has stopped!” Duan Wei suddenly whispered as he looked nervously in front.

Mu Chen also lifted his head over to look when he heard this. He could see a basin in front of them. Within the basin was a tiny black hill. On this black hill was a strange black tree, which was covered densely with Devouring Spirit Bees.

The peculiar flute sound seemed to be coming from there. However, the sound was too subtle. If one did not carefully listen, it was impossible to detect it.

Mu Chen’s eyes carefully scanned through this area. However, he did not notice any existence there. This made him confused. Could it be that he misjudged this?

Mu Chen frowned and stared at the black tree. His eyes moved slowly up. Finally, he stared at the top of the tree and his pupils immediately shrunk.

At that location, he saw a gray figure faintly appearing and disappearing there.

Could there really be someone?

Chapter 52: Spirit Bug Flute

Mu Chen's gaze remained fixed on the crown of the black tree. At that location, he could vaguely see a grey figure. However, he felt something was off as the grey figure did not show any signs of life.

"What exactly is that?" Mu Chen frowned.

"Uncle Duan, I'll have to trouble you with something." Mu Chen's eyes flashed and he gently whispered.

"What orders do you have Little Lord?" Duan Wei immediately replied.

Mu Chen approached over and said something besides Duan Wei's ears. When the latter heard this, his face instantly changed and turned pale.

"Little Lord, it's too dangerous." Duan Wei earnestly attempted to persuade him. He did not know why Mu Chen wanted to do such a dangerous act. This was the nest of the Devouring Spirit Bees. If they were surrounded, there was no way out.

"Uncle Duan, I know what I'm doing. Trust me." Mu Chen whispered. The boy had an exceptionally serious expression. Not even the slightest recklessness could be seen within his black eyes as they twinkled coldly.

Seeing Mu Chen insisting on this, Duan Wei could only let out a wry smile. He gestured towards the few men beside him and swiftly departed.

Mu Chen also lowered his body when he noticed them heading away. He hid his body within the bushes and had his eyes fixed on the giant black tree.

After approximately ten minutes since Duan Wei and the others departed, a commotion rang out from a distance. A dozen or so Spiritual Beasts were driven out of the forest and headed over this way.

Buzz.

The silence here was destroyed by the dozen or so Spiritual Beasts. Numerous bloody red lights lit up and the air began to tremble. Buzzing sounds instantly rang out as the countless Devouring Spirit Bees surged

out. They formed into a black cloud and rushed towards the Spiritual Beasts.

Roar!

Only now did the fleeing Spiritual Beasts discover the crisis in front of them. They instantly roared out crazily and turned around. However, as they bolted away, the black cloud swiftly chased after them.

As the Devouring Spirit Bees left, the giant black tree became completely bare. Although there were still some Devouring Spirit Bees remaining, they were not a concern without their number advantage.

Mu Chen's body instantly charged out at this moment. He directly headed towards the giant black tree and went straight towards the treetop like a nimble monkey.

Along the way, a couple Devouring Spirit Bees tried to interfere with him. However, they were easily taken care of by him.

Mu Chen's speed was extremely fast. Within ten breathes, he had leapt onto the treetop. The treetop was rather spacious, but was quite hidden. The branches which stretched out covered its secrets.

Because of the time constraints, Mu Chen did not dare to act slowly. His eyes instantly looked towards the inside of the tree. He could see a figure actually sitting amongst the weeds.

However, this figure did not have the slightest hint of life because it was a skeleton. Moreover, a tattered grey outfit was on the surface of its body.

Mu Chen stared in surprise at the skeleton on the treetop. He carefully approached it and waited to see if there was any change before feeling relieved.

As he approached the skeleton, he discovered that half of the bones were charred. Signs of withering seemed to be on the charred bones.

It seemed that this skeleton had suffered a heavy injury while he was still alive.

Mu Chen's eyes glanced through the surroundings and stopped at the

bone palm in front. Vague writing seemed to be on it. He waved his sleeves and swept the leaves apart as his vision fixed onto that location.

"My name is Tian Chong, I am from the Bug Spirit Clan. As I was travelling, I found traces of a Nine Nether Bird. Greed surged through me and I attempted to get it. After many pains, I finally obtained my wish. However, only then did I discover..."

The writing afterwards became blurry. However, Mu Chen could see words of hatred in the end. This made him stunned and his heart shivered. So this person also discovered the traces of the Nine Nether Bird and he nearly succeeded in obtaining it. But at the last moment, some sort of misfortune occurred.

"Bug Spirit Clan..."

Mu Chen muttered to himself. He had heard faintly that there was a rather strange clan in the Great Thousand Worlds, who manipulated millions of bugs within the world. Others named them as Spirit Bug Users. They had extremely secretive means and would be troublesome if they were provoked. Mu Chen did not imagine that one of them would die here.

Mu Chen pondered for a moment. Then, his eyes turned their attention to the other bone palm of the skeleton. He noticed a black flute which was a couple inches long within the bone palm. Various insect patterns were engraved on the flute and a subtle flute sound rang out from the flute whenever a breeze appeared.

"This item...Could it be a Spirit Bug Flute?

Mu Chen seemed to be lost in thought. It was said that the Spirit Bug Users would all have a Spirit Bug Flute that they used to control the Spirit Bugs that they raised. Could the black flute in front of him be that item?

"So when I heard the subtle flute sound, it was because of the breeze entering this Spirit Bug Flute...It seems that the Devouring Spirit Bees formed their nest here because of the flute sound as well."

Mu Chen suddenly realized this and immediately let out a cry of praise.

These Spirit Bug Users sure have a rather peculiar method.

"Senior, since you have already died, this young one will inherit your relic." Mu Chen bowed down towards the skeleton. He carefully took the black flute away from it. If he was not mistaken, the Spirit Bug Flute should be able to summon the Devouring Spirit Bees. However, he cannot use it recklessly. After all, he was not a Spirit Bug User. If he really summoned the Devouring Spirit Bees over and he failed to control them, he was simply asking for trouble.

Although that's the case, Mu Chen was not willing to return back empty-handed. This item would eventually be eroded through years of weathering. Instead of letting this item get ruined, it might have a bit of use within his hands.

Just after Mu Chen collected the Spirit Bug Flute and was about to leave, he suddenly glanced at the grey outfit of the skeleton. He hesitated for a moment before praying to the bones. Afterwards, he touched the tattered grey clothes.

Because of the years of erosion, the grey outfit was reduced to ashes when Mu Chen touched it. Two transparent bottles appeared under the bones. It was obvious that the bottles were not made from any ordinary material. Even after all these years, they were still well preserved.

Mu Chen picked up the two bottles. Within the bottles, there was a black liquid. However, Mu Chen did not know the effects of the black liquid and pondered for a moment. He carefully opened the bottle cover and a strange aroma drifted out.

Buzzzzzz!

The moment the strange aroma was released, Mu Chen felt the giant black tree tremble for a moment. Then, he noticed that many Devouring Spirit Bees drilled out from the tree trunk and headed towards the treetop with scarlet eyes.

Seeing this, Mu Chen was shocked. He immediately shut the cover of the bottle and quickly placed it within his Mustard Seed Bracelet. The aroma seemed to have an effect of attracting Devouring Spirit Bees.

“I can’t remain here any longer.”

Mu Chen did not dare to stay here any longer when he noticed the commotion. The Spiritual Beasts that Duan Wei and the others had driven out would not pin down the Devouring Spirit Bees for long. If he did not leave now, there was no escape route for him when he was surrounded by the Devouring Spirt Bees.

“Thank you, senior.”

Mu Chen cupped his hands towards the skeleton. He did not remain at this place any longer and jumped off the giant black tree. Then, he quickly rushed to the forest.

After passing through the forest, he stopped suddenly and waited for Duan Wei and the others to come. Suddenly, a fierce wind erupted above his head and he was startled. His toes touched the ground and he dashed backwards.

“Who?!”

A hint of coldness flashed through Mu Chen’s eyes. He lifted his head and saw a familiar figure standing on the tree trunk in front of him. That figure was staring at him with indifferent eyes.

It was actually Liu Mubai!

Liu Mubai stared coldly at Mu Chen and stretched out his hand as he faintly said: “It seems that you’re really lucky. You can find decent items wherever you go. So what did you get this time above the treetop? Hand it over.”

Chapter 53: Collision

Under the tree shades, Mu Chen stared at Liu Mubai as Liu Mubai stared down from above at him. He did not expect to encounter him at this place. It seems that the Liu Territory's men were also separated by the Devouring Spirit Bees' swarm earlier. Moreover, from this guy's appearance, he also noticed the subtle flute sound and came over. Unfortunately, he reacted a step too slow as Mu Chen was there first.

Since Liu Mubai wanted to make him hand over the item, Mu Chen gently let out a mocking smile.

"This isn't the Northern Spiritual Academy. If I were to kill you, it will not cause any trouble. Therefore, I hope that you can accept reality right now. I think that with your personality, you would not do any foolish and desperate attempts." Seeing Mu Chen ignoring him, a touch of darkness surged through Liu Mubai's eyes as he slowly spoke.

"I was not afraid even when Xue Tu was chasing after me. Just who do you think you are, Liu Mubai?" Mu Chen smiled and replied.

"That idiot, Xue Tu, was probably unlucky and met with the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon within the Northern Spiritual Field, right? You're quite lucky since that kind of thing occurred." Liu Mubai had a hint of ridicule within his eyes. They had actually investigated it after the incident occurred and found traces of a fight within the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon's territory. At that location, scraps of Xue Tu's clothes were found there. This discovery made them understand why Mu Chen was able to escape from Xue Tu.

"So since Xue Tu died against the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon, how is it related to you? You are still naive if you think that you can frighten me with this."

Liu Mubai smiled coldly. They had predicted the events that had happened on that day. However, they thought that the appearance of the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon was just a coincidence. They did not imagine that a boy had meticulously calculated all these steps in order to

send Xue Tu to death.

Mu Chen smiled. He did not get hot-headed and argue with Liu Mubai. He was fond of the individuals that tried to act smart.

“Right now, will you hand over the item to me by yourself?” Liu Mubai extended his hand out again. However, a faint Spiritual Energy surged out faintly through his palms this time.

Mu Chen gave a slight smile and shook his head.

Boom!

The instant that Mu Chen shook his head, Liu Mubai’s eyes turned completely cold. He swooped straight down like a hawk chasing its prey and the Spiritual Energy within his palms mercilessly gushed out towards Mu Chen.

Mu Chen’s toes inserted itself into the leaves. He lifted the leaves into the sky and retreated quickly.

Bang!

The fiery red Spiritual Energy gushed out and directly shattered the leaves dancing in the sky. Liu Mubai’s body was like lightning and his hands were like claws. The fiery red Spiritual Energy emitted a boiling fluctuation as it headed straight towards the vital points of Mu Chen’s chest.

When Mu Chen noticed the fierce offensive of Liu Mubai, his eyes also turned cold. A dark black Spiritual Energy surged out from his fist and a Limitless Death Seal appeared.

A punch was blasted out!

The Limitless Death Seal flashed on the surface of Mu Chen’s fist. As the black Spiritual Energy wrapped around it, an overbearing fluctuation was unleashed.

Dong!

Mu Chen’s fist collided with Liu Mubai’s sharp claws. A sound rang out and a wave of Spiritual Energy that could be seen with the naked eye

spread out. This made the leaves under their feet blast out into the air.

Mu Chen's body trembled slightly and retreated a few steps backwards. His eyes remained fixed on Liu Mubai. This guy really had reached the Spiritual Rotation Stage.

"Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase?" Liu Mubai's body also shook for a bit and a hint of surprise appeared in his eyes. When Mu Chen was fighting against Liu Yang, he had just reached the Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase. He never imagined that Mu Chen would be able to reach the Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase after such a short period of time. This cultivation speed wasn't slow at all.

Moreover, what surprised him the most was Mu Chen blocking one of his attacks head-on. Although Mu Chen did not gain the upper hand, it was still extremely surprising for him to be able to fight against him like this with the strength of a Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase.

"You have a bit of skill. No wonder you also had this annoying appearance. I originally planned on making you lose completely in a formal competition during the fight for the space in the "Five Great Academies". However, I really dislike you so it seems that I shouldn't give you that chance." Liu Mubai said heartlessly. Then, he took a step forward and the fiery red Spiritual Energy gushed out from within his body. This Spiritual Energy pressure directly enveloped Mu Chen. From his appearance, it seems that he really planned on killing Mu Chen here.

Swish!

Liu Mubai did not hesitate at all as his Spiritual Energy gushed out to shapeshift his palms into claws. The fiery red Spiritual Energy seemed to have formed into a shape of a fire eagle and the claws combined with the fire eagle as he swept towards Mu Chen fiercely.

Seeing this powerful offensive come from Liu Mubai, Mu Chen did not directly confront it again. Liu Mubai was indeed stronger than him. If he was to face him directly, it would fit Liu Mubai's intention.

Mu Chen's toes touched the ground and he jumped back vigorously. As he retreated backwards, a dark black light flashed on his fingertips.

Liu Mubai immediately chased after him. He let out a sneer as he watched Mu Chen constantly retreating and dodging his fierce attacks: “Weren’t you always so prideful? Why are you dodging here and there like a loser dog now?”

Mu Chen’s reply was a sneer as well. However, he still did not plan on engaging in a frontal confrontation.

“Let’s see where you can hide!”

Liu Mubai’s eyes flashed and he lunged out. As the dense Spiritual Energy burst out, his claws turned into fists and he blasted out a punch from above towards Mu Chen.

“Hawk Inferno!”

A fiery red Spiritual Energy gushed out like flames when the punch was fired out. The winds formed by the fist within the flames erupted out like a matchless fire hawk. It completely surrounded all paths of retreat for Mu Chen.

Mu Chen suddenly stopped and his eyes remained fixed on the fierce offensive that was approaching. In an instant, he placed his hands together and a cold cry came out from his mouth: “Form Array!”

Buzz!

The air within him shook slightly when the words were shouted out. Beams of Spiritual Energy erupted out from the air and actually binded Liu Mubai’s four limbs.

This sudden binding made Liu Mubai’s body stiffen. He immediately let out a hint of surprise: “Spiritual Array?”

However, the surprise only lasted for a moment. He already noticed how weak the binding ability of this Spiritual Array and let out a sneer: “So it’s only a tiny Spiritual Array.”

Boom!

A dense Spiritual Energy gushed out and severed the beams formed by Spiritual Energy. Liu Mubai’s offensive remained unchanged and he

fiercely blasted it towards Mu Chen. However, the momentum of his offensive had weakened due to the tiny Spiritual Energy.

This time, Mu Chen did not continue to dodge Liu Mubai's fierce offensive. A hint of chill gushed out from his black eyes.

The dark black Spiritual Energy surrounded Mu Chen's arms and he immediately charged forward. His hands were placed together and two Limitless Death Seals emerged quickly from between his palms.

"So you finally won't escape?"

Seeing this, a murderous intent surged through Liu Mubai's eyes. Above the winds formed by the punch, the fire hawk that was devouring the fiery red Spiritual Energy let out an abnormal fluctuation as it blasted out towards the center of Mu Chen's chest.

"Limitless Death Seal!"

With a low cry, a sound rang out from within Mu Chen's heart. The Spiritual Energy within his body flowed through his meridians like a flood. His palms were drawn back in towards his body and them it exploded outwards.

The two Limitless Death Seals let out a domineering glow within the center of his palms.

Under the two vicious and cold gazes, the fist and palms swept over and finally collided with each other.

Chapter 54: Black Poison Marsh

Boom!

A loud sound suddenly resounded out among the tree shades. A storm-like Spiritual Energy impact spread out and shattered the numerous leaves on the ground. The large trees also vibrated intensely and leaves appeared in the sky.

As the leaves were falling down from the sky, the two figures that collided with each other trembled fiercely. Then, their body staggered backwards.

Mu Chen's feet grazed the ground and he staggered backwards a dozen steps. He took a fierce stomp and stabilized his stature. At this moment, his palms were still trembling slightly. The overly powerful impact caused his palms to ache.

Although his hands hurt, he still forcibly received Liu Mubai's fierce offensive. It was evident that the might of the two Limitless Death Seals was finally revealed.

Ever since he formed the two Limitless Death Seals, Mu Chen was never able to truly unleash it completely. This is because the two opponents that he faced, Xue Tu and Ji Zong, far surpassed him in strength. With this difference in power, it was impossible to make up for it even if he activated the two Limitless Death Seals. Therefore, Mu Chen never knew how powerful the two Limitless Death Seals were.

But right now, he finally knew.

Although Liu Mubai had advanced into the Spiritual Rotation Stage, he was probably still in the Initial Phase. This had surpassed Mu Chen, but the gap wasn't impossible for him to make up for unlike with Xue Tu and Ji Zong.

Thus, in this level of battle, the might of the two Limitless Death Seals were finally displayed completely.

Compared to Mu Chen's expression, Liu Mubai had a somewhat ashen

face. His eyes remained fixed at Mu Chen. It was apparent that he did not understand how his opponent was able to fight against him like this by relying on the strength of a Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase. Although he still had some moves that he hasn't displayed yet, he was still in the Spiritual Rotation Stage. This strength surpassed Mu Chen who knows how many times. But even with that, he was still not able to obtain the upper hand. How could he accept this?

"Was your prediction regarding me off? You originally thought that I am someone that you can just step on, but now it seems that it's different than what you expected." Mu Chen stared at Liu Mubai's ashen expression and said with a smile.

The veins on Liu Mubai's forehead twitched. He immediately sucked in a deep breath and suppressed the rage within his heart. His eyes gradually turned abnormally dark and chill was felt within his voice: "You really surpassed my expectations, but...Do you think that you have the right to act arrogant because of this?!"

When the final words filled with chill exited Liu Mubai's mouth, the fiery red Spiritual Energy surged out again from within his body. His eyes were filled with a rich murderous intent.

It was clear that Liu Mubai had finally revealed a true killing intent towards Mu Chen.

No matter what he had to do, he decided that he must wipe out this loathsome fellow.

Seeing this, Mu Chen's eyes narrowed. The corners of his lips slowly rise up and formed a cold smile. Although it would be a bit troublesome to deal with Liu Mubai right now, Mu Chen would not let him get any benefits if this guy continues to pester him.

Under the tree shades, the two of them confronted each other with razor cold eyes. The leaves drifted down between the two of them endlessly as the atmosphere became tenser.

Kacha.

However, just when the two of them had tensed their body up like a fully arched bow, a faint sound rang out from the forest behind. This strange sound caused the tense atmosphere to stiffen.

"Swish!"

The sound was getting closer and closer. Then, a dozen or so individuals suddenly came out from the forest and were behind Liu Mubai.

"Little Master, we finally found you!" Seeing the figures rushing over, Mu Chen frowned for a bit. This is because they were all Liu Territory's men.

Seeing this, Liu Mubai secretly let out a sigh of relief. He immediately sneered at Mu Chen and said: "It seems that you've used up all your luck."

"That might not be true."

Hearing this, Mu Chen smiled and his eyes glanced behind him. A few familiar figures rapidly appeared from there. From their statures, it was Duan Wei and the others.

It was clear that Duan Wei and the others were aware of the early commotion. Thus, they hurried over. Moreover, their expressions changed when they saw Liu Mubai's group. They instantly protected Mu Chen and stared vigilantly and unkindly at the other group.

Mu Chen shook his head and relaxed his tense body. Since both side's men had rushed over, there was no way of fighting again. Otherwise, the degree of the fight would probably attract a few of Black Eerie Swamp's Spiritual Beasts over. At that time, both sides would be troubled.

Liu Mubai also seemed to have thought about this point and gritted his teeth as if he was unwilling. He stared at Mu Chen again and said: "It seems that you've survived again."

"It's useless if you only say it. You should say these words to me when you manage to completely step on me." Mu Chen said with a calm expression.

"There will be a chance when that happens. I really want to see if you will still have such an annoying expression at that time." Liu Mubai took a

deep glance at Mu Chen before waving his hand. He did not say anything more and brought the Liu Territory's men back into the forest.

Duan Wei and the others were relieved when they saw Liu Mubai's group leave. Then, he looked at Mu Chen and asked: "Little Lord, are you alright?"

Mu Chen smiled and shook his head. His black eyes still had a hint of coldness as he stared at Liu Mubai's departing figure. Only after a while did he rushed out in the other direction.

"We should go as well. Let's hurry and reunite with my dad."

...

This is an extremely vast, black swamp and a black deathly miasma was above it. The deathly miasma at this place was exceptionally strong. If anyone dares to charge into it, they would not be able to last for long even if they were at the Spiritual Rotation Stage strength.

In the black swamp, a faint poisonous gas emerges whenever the bubbles explode. From time to time, black mud would roll down. Under the black mud, scarlet and vicious eyes would emerge and slowly sweep around the surroundings.

At this edge of the swamp, a group of men were a bit worried. The one leading them was Mu Feng. At this moment, he was frowning as he stared at the endless black swamp.

"Territory Lord, the Black Poison Marsh is too dangerous to pass. It is impossible for us to pass through the deathly miasma in the skies above. If we were to cross the swamp, not many of us would be able to survive from the Black Poison Crocodile's attacks." A Mu Territory's City Lord said with a wry smile beside Mu Feng.

"Can we enter the depths of the Black Eerie Swamp from another location?" Zhou Ye frowned and asked.

"There is a way, but we would have to go around for quite the distance. If we waste this much time, we would probably be far behind the Liu Territory." A man replied.

“Those guys, they really came fully prepared!” Zhou Ye gritted his teeth. It was apparent that the Liu Territory had investigated everything carefully. They might have sent a few men to investigate it before. Since they did not head down this way, they must have found another passageway to the depths of the Black Eerie Swamp.

Mu Feng secretly’ sighed. Then he asked: “Is there any news from Little Mu and the others?”

“Not yet, should I bring some men to search?” Zhou Ye asked.

Mu Feng thought for a moment. But just when he was about to speak, his expression changed and he said with a smile: “No need, I’ve said it before, you should not underestimate that boy…” As he said this, he turned around and looked at the forest behind them. He saw the bushes shake and a dozen figures quickly dashed over. The one leading was a handsome boy. It was Mu Chen.

“Dad!”

Mu Chen stared at the men around the edge of the swamp and immediately smiled. He had finally caught up.

“Are you alright?” Mu Feng smiled at Mu Chen and asked.

Mu Chen shook his head and walked forward. He scanned the vast swamp and jokingly said: “Dad, it seems that you’ve found trouble.”

It was evident that Mu Chen also noticed the crisis that Mu Feng and the others were currently facing.

Mu Feng could only shake his head sourly and let out a helpless sigh. He and Zhou Ye could rely on their Spirit Stage strength and forcibly leap over the swamp. However, it was impossible for the other men.

“If we continue to drag this out, the Nine Nether Bird would probably be captured by the Liu Territory.” Zhou Ye also said with a bitter smile.

“Uncle Zhou, relax. The Nine Nether Bird probably isn’t that easy to obtain either.” Mu Chen shook his head. Although he had never seen that Nine Nether Bird before, he knew that the Nine Nether Bird wasn’t that

simple to obtain through the information left behind by the skeleton.

"Moreover...It isn't impossible for us to pass through the Black Poison Marsh safely." Mu Chen's gaze swept through the poisonous swamp in front of him and suddenly said with a smile.

"Oh?"

Hearing these words, Mu Feng, Zhou Ye and the others were surprised. Their eyes brightened up as they stared at Mu Chen. At this moment, the boy was leisurely patting his hands and was at ease.

"You have a plan?"

Mu Chen nodded his head when he saw the eager expressions. In the Spiritual Road, there were many places even more dangerous than this Black Poison Marsh...

Chapter 55: Plan

When they saw the smiling boy in front of them, Mu Feng and the others exchanged looks. A hint of joy and uncertainty appeared within their eyes.Even with their experiences, they were not able to deal with this. However, this boy could resolve it?

“Then let’s hear you explain it. If you say any nonsense, I won’t forgive you.” Mu Feng smiled and asked.

Mu Chen stared at the vast Black Poison Marsh and said, “Even birds will find it difficult to cross the Black Poison Marsh, once they step in, as it will be difficult for them to escape. It is impossible for one to leap through the sky filled with deathly miasma. However, if we were to have a floating object at the landing point, we would be able to progress forward. But soon after that, the numerous Black Poison Crocodile within the Black Poison Marsh would drag us down and rip us into shreds.”

“We all know about this.” Mu Feng chided.

“Actually, it’s not that difficult to pass through. In the Black Poison Marsh, what is able to freely pass through it?” Mu Chen asked with a smile.

“Freely pass through?” Mu Feng was slightly stunned and thought for a moment before saying: “The Black Poison Crocodile?”

“Yes. As long as we capture a few of the Black Poison Crocodile and use its crocodile skin as a boat, we will be able to pass through the Black Poison Marsh without being obstructed. Moreover, the smell emitting from the Black Poison Crocodile’s skin will help us avoid attacks from the other Black Poison Crocodiles.” Mu Chen said.

“It’s that simple?” Mu Feng and the others frowned. This method wasn’t too difficult to execute, but would it be able to pass through the Black Poison Marsh just with this? Although the Black Poison Crocodile’s skin would have some effect, it would not completely allow them to be safe.

“Ohoho, there is indeed another step.” Mu Chen smiled and replied. The

Black Poison Crocodile wasn't highly intelligent, but it wouldn't be easy to muddle past them.

"As for the final step, we should get the earlier steps completed first. Dad, Uncle Zhou, we'll leave the matter of killing the Black Poison Crocodiles up to you two."

When everybody heard this, they all looked at each other. They weren't sure what Mu Chen wanted to do.

"Boy, you better not be messing around!" Mu Feng gritted his teeth. As of now, they really didn't have any ideas. Moreover, they could not afford delaying the time. Otherwise, they would be thrown far behind the Liu Territory.

"Zhou Ye, we will attack. The others should prepare making boats. Mu Feng waved his hand and made an order.

"Yes!"

Although others were suspicious of the method that Mu Chen was talking about, they still immediately responded due to Mu Feng making it an order. They instantly spread out and began hacking at trees.

Mu Feng and Zhou Ye glanced at each other. A dense Spiritual Energy suddenly erupted out from within their bodies. Mu Feng's body moved and appeared in the skies above the Black Poison Marsh. A fiery red Spiritual Energy swept out from behind him and directly formed into a flame bird. The flame bird's body was filled with fiery red scales and had wings like a dragon. It seemed to be filled with power and an enormous Spiritual Energy pressure emitted out. Furthermore, it caused the Black Poison Marsh below to tremble and numerous Black Poison Crocodiles appeared out as the swamp shook. They stared in alert at the flame bird in the sky.

"Roar!"

Zhou Ye was also suspended in the sky and a mountain-like, brown rhinocerous emerged behind him. This heavy weight seemed to cause even the air to vibrate.

The Spirit Stage powerhouses, who ingested a Spiritual Beast's Soul

Essence will all possess some of the distinct characteristics and strength that the Spiritual Beast had when it was alive. For example, Mu Feng's Dragonfire Bird granted Mu Feng speed, while Zhou Ye's Mountain Spirit Rhinoceros granted him pure strength.

Mu Chen stared at the majestic Spiritual Beasts behind Mu Feng and Zhou Ye. A burning passion could not help but pour out from his eyes. It seemed that the Spirit Stage was so powerful, that they far surpassed the Spiritual Rotation Stage.

Zhou Ye's hand clenched into a fist and with a cry, a punch was blasted out. A deep yellow Spiritual Energy that seemed to be mixed with the power of being heavy like a mountain roared out like a pillar of light and bombarded into the swamp.

Boom!

The earth seemed to have trembled at this moment. A deep crater was directly formed from the punch in the swamp. This enormous Spiritual Energy caused dozens of Black Poison Crocodiles to fly out into the sky due to the tremor.

Mu Feng also acted at this moment. The Dragonfire Bird behind his back let out a long roar at the sky. A violent and dense light of flame erupted out and directly wrapped around the dozens of Black Poison Crocodile.

Kacha!

As the Spiritual Energy wriggled around, the dozens of Black Poison Crocodile that had the strength of a Spiritual Rotation Stage strength instantly died. Then, Mu Feng waved his hand and threw them at the edge of the Marsh.

...

When Mu Feng and Zhou Ye attacked, a couple of men suddenly stopped at a certain cliff path that was slightly away from the Black Poison Marsh. It was the Liu Territory's men that Mu Feng and the others met earlier.

"This Spiritual Energy fluctuation..."

Liu Zong's footsteps suddenly paused and he stared at the distance: "It's Mu Feng and Zhou Ye...It seems that they met some sort of trouble."

"They should be trapped at the Black Poison Marsh. Ohoho, with Mu Feng and Zhou Ye's strength, they could forcibly pass over. However, they will consume a large amount of strength. As for the others, they do not have the ability to pass through."

Liu Qingtian, who was in front, said: "If that's the case, they would basically be injured individuals when they reach the deepest part of the Black Eerie Swamp. Would they even have the courage to fight with us then?"

"Big Brother sure is thoughtful. If we have the chance at that time, we should not let them escape. Once the Mu Territory does not have Mu Feng and Zhou Ye, heh, won't that territory be easily and freely obtained by us, the Liu Territory?" Liu Ming said with a sneer.

Liu Qingtian gave a faint smile and nodded. A tiny bit of killing intent surged through his eyes. If they have the opportunity, he naturally would not let it go. Right now, they only have to wait for the Mu Territory's mentally tired and injured individuals at the deepest part of the Black Eerie Swamp.

"Mu Feng, you could have enjoyed a happy life in the Mu Territory, yet you do not want that. You just had to come and try to fight against my Liu Territory for the Nine Nether Bird. Then, don't blame me..."

...

Boom.

The earth trembled as Mu Chen stared at Mu Feng tossing over a dozen of Black Poison Crocodiles. He could not help but smack his lips. Every single Black Poison Crocodile had the strength of a Spiritual Rotation Stage Initial Phase. However, they were completely powerless against his dad and Uncle Zhou.

Mu Chen let out a sigh of praise. Then, he called a couple of the experts to peel off the crocodile skin from the Black Poison Crocodile. At the same

time, a simple boat was already finished at the side. Mu Chen allowed them to wrap the crocodile skin around the tiny boats.

If they were to throw the tiny boat into the Black Poison Marsh, it would probably sink immediately. However, the Black Poison Crocodile's skin had a bit of Spiritual Energy fluctuation in it when they were still alive. It was just enough to let the boat float on the swamp.

After everybody had finished doing this, eyes began to stare at Mu Chen again. Would this method really allow them to pass through the Black Poison Marsh?

"It's your turn now." Mu Feng looked at Mu Chen with a serious expression and said: "Don't fool around. If trouble appears after we enter the Black Poison Marsh, there won't be many that will be alive."

"Dad, relax."

Mu Chen smiled instead and pointed at the swamp: "Our primary problem is to avoid the attacks from these Black Poison Crocodiles. The Black Poison Crocodiles are Middle Rank Spiritual Beasts. But because they lived in the swamp for so long, their sensing abilities are extremely weak. Moreover, they do not have sharp eyes as well. As long as we are able to disrupt their vision, we would be able to mix in and pass over with the aura from these crocodiles' skin.

"How would we disrupt their visions?" Mu Feng inquired with a frown.

"That's all thanks to dad allowing me to learn about Spiritual Arrays over this period of time..." Mu Chen smiled and gripped his palms. Eight Spiritual Seals soon emerged at his fingertips.

"You are already able to arrange a Spiritual Array?" Seeing the Spiritual Seals at Mu Chen's fingertips, Mu Feng and Zhou Ye were shocked. The other Mu Territory's men were also surprised as they stared at Mu Chen.

"It's only a tiny Spiritual Array."

Mu Chen said with a smile: "I will be arranging a "tiny Spiritual Array" known as the "Soul Confusion Array". It will be able to cause a slight confusion. Although it will not have much effect, it is perfect to use to deal

with the Black Poison Crocodiles with low sensing abilities."

Mu Feng and Zhou Ye exchanged glances at each other. They never imagined that Mu Chen's understanding about Spiritual Beasts surpassed even veterans like them.

After saying this, Mu Chen ignored them and his face turned serious. He flicked his fingertips and the 8 Spiritual Seals vanished at the surroundings of the small boat. Then, everybody was able to faintly feel the air vibrating slightly and emitted out a strange fluctuation.

Mu Chen's hand seals changed and finally let out a sigh of relief after a while. He wiped off the sweat from his forehead and said: "It's done."

Everybody hurriedly glanced over. They really saw that a faint mist emerged on the boat and enshrouded the majority of it away.

This cover would be broken immediately if a human were to see it. Fortunately, the Black Poison Crocodiles did not possess such high intelligence.

"There's really more to the Little Lord than what meets the eye." Duan Wei and the others could not help but let out a cry of admiration. They had always treated Mu Chen as a child before. However, now they discovered that this boy wasn't that simple.

Although they weren't sure whether or not this method would work this smoothly, they still had a little bit of confidence after seeing this.

"Why are you praising him so early? It's only good if it works. Otherwise, we would have wasted all this effort and harmed others instead." Although Mu Feng had traces of satisfaction appearing on his face, he did not let out any praises. This was done so that the boy wouldn't be too proud of himself.

"Whether it is mule or a horse, you'll know soon." 1

Mu Chen pouted his mouth. He directly pushed the tiny boat into the Black Poison Marsh and was the first to jump onto it.

Chapter 56: A Vicious Scheme

Pop.

Within the Black Poison Marsh, huge black poison bubbles rise up and burst apart. A smelly stench of poison gas rises up and further adds onto the deathly miasma enshrouding the air.

At this moment, above the Black Poison Marsh without many living creatures, a small boat wrapped with Black Poison Crocodile's skin was being paddled over cautiously.

Everybody on the boat was extremely tensed up. They did not dare to make the slightest sounds as their eyes remained fixed on the swamp. Moreover, the Spiritual Energy within their bodies quietly surged.

This group of men was the Mu Territory's men who naturally used Mu Chen's method to pass through the Black Poison Marsh. Although Mu Chen's confidence gave Duan Wei and the others a little bit of confidence, they were still in a dangerous location. The feeling of how the slightest mistake would make the boat to capsize and turning them into the swamp's mud did not make them feel good.

Compared to them being tensed, Mu Chen's face was a lot calmer. However, his eyes still remained fixed at his surroundings. This tiny boat contains many experts of the Mu Territory. It they were to have any loss here, it would be a severe blow for the Mu Territory.

Mu Feng stood beside Mu Chen and had a seemingly calm face. However, it still carried a sense of seriousness. His entire body was tense and he would immediately act if he noticed that the situation was off.

As everybody on board was tensed up, the small boat gradually entered the depths. A little bit of movement appeared in the swamp and the swamp filled with poison gas shook. Then, numerous hideous Black Poison Crocodiles' heads emerged in the swamp and slowly swam towards the boat.

Everybody on board had their eyes twitch when they saw this. Their

heartbeat also accelerated.

Amongst the silent boat, dozens of Black Poison Crocodile were around the boat's surroundings. The pair of scarlet eyes brutally scanned across the black mud.

Everybody immediately became alert.

Under Mu Chen's control, the boat continued to maintain a slow and steady pace as it quietly crossed the swamp. Instead, Mu Feng and the others were able to feel relieved as the Black Poison Crocodiles did not attack them. From their scarlet eyes, they were able to see some sort of confusion in them.

It was evident that the Black Poison Crocodile, who weren't highly intelligent, could vaguely sense that something was wrong, yet they were not able to figure out the reason of it.

The small boat eventually passed through the Black Poison Crocodile's encirclement smoothly. However, everybody on board still did not dare to breathe. Only after half an hour later, when they finally saw the edge of the swamp, they finally spat out the foul smell that had been within their hearts.

"Heh, we really crossed over. The Little Lord is really amazing!"

The atmosphere on the boat suddenly relaxed. Duan Wei and the others had a happy expression and could not help but praise Mu Chen.

"Dad, how is this? I didn't disgrace you, right?" Mu Chen secretly let out a sigh of relief and clapped his hands as he directed a smile at Mu Feng.

"You damn brat."

Mu Feng scoffed at him. However, he could not hide the pleasure within his eyes. This boy had finally grown up and was able to help him share the burden. At least it wasn't in vain for him to separate his father and mother over all these years.

"Little Mu really isn't the same now." Zhou Ye also let out an emotional sigh. Ever since Mu Chen came back from the Spiritual Road, he had

changed too much. If he was an understanding boy with talent before, now, he was someone who could take up some of the responsibilities.

Mu Feng nodded his head slightly. His hand rubbed Mu Chen's head and moved. He directly landed on the edge of the swamp and said: "We should also hurry; otherwise, we'll be too far behind the Liu Territory."

"Yes!"

Duan Wei and the others all replied and came onto the shore one after another. After slightly reorganizing themselves, they kept alert and accelerated as they headed towards the depths of the Black Eerie Swamp.

The instant that Mu Feng and the others passed through the Black Poison Marsh and headed to the depths of the Black Eerie Swamp, a cold gaze looked down from above at them from a mountain cliff far away.

"These guys, they actually made it through the Black Poison Marsh safely! How is that possible?!" Liu Ming stared at the figures at the distant and immediately turned pale.

"It seems that the Mu Territory came prepared." Liu Zong frowned. He originally planned on taking them easily after the Mu Territory's men were thoroughly exhausted through their trip across the Black Poison Marsh. However, he never expected them to have passed through without any efforts.

A cold chill flashed through Liu Qingtian's eyes. The more prepared the Mu Territory was, the greater the obstacle it was for them. These guys must be eliminated and the Nine Nether Bird must belong to the Liu Territory. As long as they have the Nine Nether Bird, the Liu Territory will become the overlord of the Northern Spiritual Realm. And he, Liu Qingtian, will not be a Territory Lord anymore, but instead the Lord of the Northern Spiritual Realm.

This raging ambition was burning within Liu Qingtian's eyes.

"Big Brother, what should we do now?" Liu Ming asked. Based on this scene, the Mu Territory's men would soon catch up to them.

"There's no need to be impatient." Liu Qingtian said with a smile: "How

much time have we used to prepare for this plan? We had surveyed the Black Eerie Swamp since a long time ago. The Mu Territory still wants to fight against us recklessly without any preparations?"

Saying this, he stared at the depths of the Black Eerie Swamp again and a cold chill surged through his eyes again.

"Let's go. At that place, I'll prepare a big gift to welcome them."

...

Because they were gradually entering the depths of the Black Eerie Swamp, Mu Feng and the others were getting more and more careful. In the depths of the Black Eerie Swamp, there were genuine traces of High Rank Spiritual Beasts. If they were targeted by these vicious individuals, it would be particularly troublesome. After all, Mu Feng and the others would still have to be careful about the Liu Territory's men at all times.

The party quietly passed through the dark jungle. Even when they met some Spiritual Beasts, they did not dare to attack them. Instead, they would go around them and swiftly depart.

This sort of torture lasted for half an hour before Mu Feng and the others finally walked out from the jungle. After passing through the jungle, there was a black mountain cliff. On the body of the mountain, there was an enormous crack that spread out from within it. It made it seem like a demon's giant mouth.

Mu Feng and the others stared at the black mountain abyss. They frowned and their eyes carried a sense of seriousness.

"We are gradually approaching the depths of the Black Eerie Swamp..." Mu Feng said slowly: "The area in front should be considered the true Black Eerie Swamp. Inside this place, High Rank Spiritual Beasts exist."

"High Rank Spiritual Beast."

Duan Wei and the others turned solemn. These Spiritual Beasts are equivalent to Spirit Stage powerhouses.

"Along the way, we will not kill any Spiritual Beasts. The High Rank

Spiritual Beasts here are all extremely bloodthirsty. A tiny smell of blood would be able to attract them over to look. If it attracts more than two High Rank Spiritual beasts, we would have to pay a great price."

Mu Chen nodded. This place was a lot more dangerous than the Northern Spiritual Field.

"Let's go, all of you should be careful."

Mu Feng waved his hand and he led the way as he charged towards the dark crack on the body of the mountain. Behind him, Mu Chen, Zhou Ye and the others were cautiously following.

Because the sky was often shrouded by the deathly miasma, the deepest part of the Black Eerie Swamp was quite dark and damp. From time to time, a variety of muffled and bloodthirsty roars would come from the distance.

Mu Feng and the others cautiously walked in the shadows and avoided all places where traces of Spiritual Beasts appeared. Moreover, Mu Chen could feel the surging Spiritual Energy from Mu Feng and Zhou Ye's bodies. It was evident that they were prepared to deal with any emergency situations.

However, they did not meet with any obstacles along the way. This smoothness made Duan Wei and the others quite relieved. According to the speed that they are going at, they would soon reach the deepest part of the Black Eerie Swamp.

But Mu Chen frowned instead of feeling relieved like the others. This smoothness made him feel uneasy instead.

Just when they turned once at the mountain path, Mu Chen exchanged gazes with Mu Feng. He could also see a sense of vigilance within the latter's eyes. It was obvious that the latter had the same feeling.

As the mountain path turned, their visions widened up in front. It was a vast mountain space. This area was the intersection point between the three mountain peaks and was surrounding by very steep cliffs.

Mu Feng looked at this area and his eyes suddenly became serious. He

lifted his head and remained fixed at a secluded location on a cliff. At that location, a few figures slowly emerged.

"Ohoho, Mu Feng, you're really not that slow." On the cliff, Liu Qingtian stared down at Mu Feng and the others with a smile.

"It's the Liu Territory's men, be careful!"

Seeing this, Zhou Ye let out a cry and a dense Spiritual Energy surged out from his body.

"Liu Qingtian, what are you planning to do?" Mu Feng let out a deep cry. The Liu Territory seemed to be completely aware of this Black Eerie Swamp, while they knew nothing about it. This undoubtedly made them to be quite passive.

"Seeing you be this careful, it really makes us not that happy. This is why I want to find you to help us out."

Liu Qingtian smiled, but it was a hideous smile. Then, he waved his hand and the Liu Territory's men threw a big jar down.

Crack.

The jar burst open when it hit the ground and a black red liquid instantly spread out. The jar was actually filled with sticky, fresh blood. Moreover, with the fresh blood spreading out, a thick stench of blood emitted outwards.

Seeing this scene, Mu Feng and the others' expressions became disgusted.

"The effects of just animal blood aren't that great." Liu Qingtian smelled the stench of the blood and a hint of coldness surged through his eyes again. He suddenly waved his sleeves and dozens of Liu Territory's men were blasted out. Shrill screams emitted out instantly.

Boom.

Liu Qingtian had an expressionless face and flicked his fingers. Numerous Spiritual Energy lights erupted out and fiercely bombarded the dozen individuals.

Bang!

A deep cry rang out. The dozen individuals actually exploded in midair and a mist of blood poured down. This scene was extremely bloody.

Mu Feng and the others' eyes turned quite gloomy and dark.

Roar!

Just when their eyes turned gloomy, numerous roars finally rang out from the depths if the Black Eerie Swamp. The roars were filled with violent Spiritual Energy fluctuations.

High Rank Spiritual Beasts!

Mu Feng's face finally turned completely pale. Liu Qingtian's scheme was really ruthless!

Chapter 57: Seizing an Opportunity

Roar!

When the bloodthirsty roars rang out from a distance away, Mu Feng and the others had turned pale. They actually fell for the trap that the Liu Territory designed this time.

“Mu Feng, how is it? Do you like this big gift?” Liu Qingtian stared down from above at Mu Feng. The sounds of laughter had a bit of sarcasm within it: “Just how much time do you think we, the Liu Territory, had spent on this Nine Nether Bird plan? You think that you’re qualified to compete with us just because you earned a little bit of information?

“Forget it, since you came, you’ll have to pay a price. Just treat it as buying a lesson.”

Mu Feng stared coldly at Liu Qingtian. However, he did not plan on arguing with him. His eyes flashed and he was constantly thinking for a method. From the Spiritual Energy fluctuations within the roars earlier, it was definitely High Rank Spiritual Beasts. If they were entangled by these High Rank Spiritual Beasts, they would definitely be gravely injured and thoroughly consume their strength even if they manage to resolve it. At this moment, Liu Qingtian and the others would not give up on this opportunity.

However, if they were to leave now, they would follow the Liu Territory’s intentions. They would not be able to stop them from obtaining the Nine Nether Bird. And once the Liu Territory obtains the Nine Nether Bird, the Mu Territory would be in great danger.

In this situation, they were forced into a great dilemma.

“What should we do now?” Zhou Ye could not help but ask.

“We’ll first look at the situation.” Mu Feng whispered with a pale expression.

Beside him, Mu Chen also frowned. The bastards from the Liu Territory sure are disgusting and are always trying to trouble them.

Roar!

While the Mu Territory's men remained on alert, a beast's roar resounded again from the distant. Then, everybody heard the sound of the winds breaking approaching quickly. Soon, three lights quickly charged over from the depths of the Black Eerie Swamp and appeared around the mountain cliffs.

"3 High Rank Spiritual Beast!" Seeing the three lights, Mu Feng could not help but grit his teeth.

Under everybody's nervous gazes, the three lights swiftly revealed their huge bodies above the cliff. Their scarlet beast eyes were filled with bloodthirstiness and brutality.

On the left mountain cliff, there was a blood-red, giant lion. A pair of sharp, purple wings was on the back of the lion and it looked extremely majestic.

On the right mountain cliff, there was a completely black, giant beast and it seemed to be made of steel. The sunlight shone down on its body and made it extremely dazzling. It was as if it was a killing machine.

"Purple Winged Lion!"

"Blacksteel Beast!"

When Duan Wei and the others saw the two giant beasts, their faces changed and they exclaimed loudly. It really is a High Rank Spiritual Beasts. These two Spiritual Beasts probably possess the strength of a Spirit Stage Initial Phase.

"That is an "Aquablaze Crane!"

Mu Feng's eyes swept pass the two High Rank Spiritual Beasts and landed on the final one. His eyes instantly turned serious. It was a huge black crane. However, the wings of the crane revealed different colors. One was a blue like the flowing water, while the other was fiery red like a flame. When they flapped, it was quite beautiful as it was like fire and water rushing out.

However, a deadly force was within this brilliance.

The Aquablaze Crane was the strongest amongst the three High Rank Spiritual Beasts. Its strength had reached the Spirit Stage Middle Phase!

“Mu Feng, it seems that you’re quite unlucky. Even the Aquablaze Crane was lured out. It seems that we’ll be able to witness a good fight between men and beast.” Liu QIngtian stared at this formation and could not help but laugh. Then, he waved his hand and his men secretly hid in the cliff. Right now, the High Rank Spiritual Beasts were lured by the blood below and were not aware of them.

“Assholes!” Zhou Ye gritted his teeth and his eyes were filled with fury.

“Territory Lord, what should we do? If we were to fight against the three High Rank Spiritual Beasts, we would probably suffer sneak attacks from the Liu Territory after we dealt with them.” Duan Wei said with a worried expression.

Mu Feng’s eyes turned grim. At this moment, the 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts had already targeted them. If they were not going to fight, they must retreat. However, he really wasn’t willing to retreat now.

Seeing Mu Feng’s flashing eyes, Duan Wei and the others did not dare to disturb him. They could only stare at the 3 eagerly High Rank Spiritual Beasts as their palms began to fill with cold sweat.

Mu Chen also understood the situation that they were in. He frowned and an idea flashed through his head. Shortly after, he narrowed his eyes and a light seemed to have passed through the night-like black eyes of his.

“Dad.” Mu Chen said out quietly.

“Eh?” Mu Feng responded absently. He was showing a troublesome expression and had a headache due to thinking too much.

“Can Uncle Zhou and you block off these 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts?” Mu Chen asked.

Mu Feng glanced at him and nodded his head helplessly as he said: “But this way, your Uncle Zhou and I would both consume a great deal of

strength. Once the two of us are weakened, Liu Qingtian would definitely attack."

"You don't have to kill these 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts. It's fine as long as you block them off while allowing yourself to consume the least amount of energy." Mu Chen said.

"Entering into a stalemate like that would not benefit us." Mu Feng frowned and said: "If we cannot kill these 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts, we can only go away."

"I have a plan to get rid of them." Mu Chen hesitated as he spoke.

Mu Feng's body trembled at this moment. He looked in surprise at Mu Chen. Beside him, Zhou Ye and the others also had an incredulous expression as they stared at Mu Chen.

These were 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts. They are comparable to Spirit Stage powerhouses. How is it possible for Mu Chen, who is merely a Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase, to get rid of them?

"You don't necessarily have to rely on your fists to get rid of them." Mu Chen curled his lips and said with a smile: "There's something calling seizing the opportunity. It's something I enjoy doing the most. In the Spiritual Road, it saved me many times."

"What are you ultimately planning to do?" Mu Feng could not help but ask. Could this boy really have a way of dealing with it?

"There's no time to explain. You should stall them while I go prepare." Mu Chen stared at the 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts that would lunge over at any time. There was no time to explain it in detail, so he could only urge them to do it.

Hearing this, Mu Feng and Zhou Ye exchanged glances and gritted their teeth as they nodded. Right now, Mu Chen truly made them feel assured. Since he said this, then, he really should have some sort of plan.

"I'll leave this place to you."

Mu Chen did not say anything more and immediately turned around. He

quickly vanished as he rushed towards the outside.

“Someone ran?” Seeing Mu Chen escape, Liu Qingtian, who was concerned about the movements of Mu Feng and the others, frowned and spoke.

“The one that ran away was Mu Chen. What is he planning to do? Is he planning to escape by himself?” Liu Mubai whispered in confusion. He did not know why, but he always felt a slight unease coming from Mu Chen.

“Forget it. We should not care about him. He is only a boy at the Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase. Without Mu Feng and the other’s protection, he probably wouldn’t be able to escape the Black Eerie Swamp.” Liu Qingtian was not too concerned. Compared to the pillars of the Mu Territory, Mu Feng and Zhou Ye, who would care about a measly Mu Chen?

Liu Mubai also nodded. He had indeed overestimated Mu Chen. How is it possible for him to reverse the situation they are in? What nonsense.

Boom!

While they were talking, a dense Spiritual Energy erupted out from below. They saw Mu Feng and Zhou Ye charging out in the lead as they headed straight towards the 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts staring at them.

Mu Feng stopped the Aquablaze Crane and the Blacksteel Beast. After all, he was at the Spirit Stage Late Phase. He would not be disadvantaged even if he was fighting against two by himself.

On the other hand, Zhou Ye was only at the Spirit Stage Initial Phase. He was neck and neck against the Purple Winged Lion.

This amazing confrontation instantly set off bursts of Spiritual Energy impacts. Every time they fought against each other, the air seemed to tremble.

Liu Qingtian let out a playful smile as he stared at the fierce battle. However, his eyes remained cold. Mu Feng, just attack with all your strength. Since you’re unwilling to leave, then leave your life behind here!

When the fierce battle broke out in the valley, Mu Chen quickly scurried out. Then, he leapt onto a hill and his eyes looked at a vast black forest. He hands instantly turned over and a flute covered with engravings appeared in his hand.

This item was the Spirit Bug Flute that he had obtained before!

Chapter 58: Luring Bees

Mu Chen gripped on the icy cold Spirit Bug Flute and he contemplated for a while. Then, he no longer hesitated and placed the flute at his lips. The Spiritual Energy within his body surged out and was blown into the Spirit Bug Flute.

Mu Chen wasn't a Spirit Bug User. He naturally did not have the ability to activate the Spirit Bug Flute. However, he knew the basic method of using it. If it was an experienced Spirit Bug User, they would be able to lure over the Spirit Bugs that they wanted with their Spirit Bug Flute. However, Mu Chen could not do this. But luckily, the most massive population within the Black Eerie Swamp was the Devouring Spirit Bees. It should be feasible for him to lure them over if he blew the Spirit Bug Flute at this place.

Wuuuu!

As the idea flashed through Mu Chen's mind, the Spirit Bug Flute also emitted a faint light. The engravings on it also activated and a strange sound wave came out from the Spirit Bug Flute. Then, it spread out far away.

The sound wave wasn't particularly loud. It was even to the point where it would be easily overlooked if you do not listen to it carefully. However, Mu Chen knew that the Spirit Bugs were extremely sensitive to this kind of sound wave.

Mu Chen continued to pour Spiritual Energy into the Spirit Bug Flute and allowed the sound waves to spread out endlessly. Moreover, he took the time to watch at the sky in the depths of the Black Eerie Swamp. At that location, the Spiritual Energy fluctuation was gradually become more violent. It seems that his dad and Uncle Zhou had already began to fight against the 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts.

He must hurry!

A hint of anxiety passed through Mu Chen's eyes. The 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts aren't weaklings. For his dad and Uncle Zhou, every

minute that they are entangled with the Spiritual Beasts means a minute of consumption. When their strength is consumed to a certain extent, the men from the Liu Territory hiding in secret would definitely attack.

And that scene was something that Mu Chen did not wish to see.

The sound from the flute leisurely spread out. However, there wasn't much movement occurring in the distance. This made Mu Chen's palms sweat. Was his method useless?

Although he said it confidently in front of Mu Feng and the others, that was only comforting them. Mu Chen knew the struggle occurring in Mu Feng's heart. Since Mu Feng didn't want to leave like this and let the Liu Territory obtain the Nine Nether Bird, but at the same time, he did not want the Liu Territory to stealthily attack them, Mu Chen could only think of this plan to break through this extremely unfavorable situation.

If he was unable to lure the Devouring Spirit Bees over, his method of seizing an opportunity would be useless.

"Brothers, please give me some face!" Mu Chen muttered in his heart.

While Mu Chen was waiting anxiously, the time quickly passed. In a blink of an eye, nearly ten minutes had passed. The Spiritual Energy fluctuation in the valley was getting even more violent. Even the earth started to tremble, it was evident that the battle was becoming more intense.

He didn't have much time left!

Mu Chen gritted his teeth and was prepared to turn around. The gaze he stared at the distant suddenly became serious and joy filled his face.

"It's coming!"

In a distant location, a black cloud covered the sky and swiftly approached. A unique buzzing sound came from afar.

The Devouring Spirit Bees were finally lured over!

Mu Chen endured the joy within his heart and put away the Spirit Bug Flute. He immediately turned and scurried back towards the valley.

...

Boom!

In the valley, a violent Spiritual Energy exploded forth. It caused the cliffs to tremble and a few boulders rolled down from the cliff.

Duan Wei and the others stared nervously at the two battle circles. At that location, there were 2 Humans and 3 Beasts. They had already collided fiercely with each other and the lights from Spiritual Energy surged out. It turned the rubbles within the valley into powder.

"Damn it!"

Seeing this stalemate, Duan Wei looked at the certain location on the mountain cliff again. At that place, a cold gaze stared downwards. It was obvious that this situation was what the Liu Territory intended it to be.

"The Little Lord hasn't come back yet?" Someone looked behind and could not help but speak.

Duan Wei shook his head with a bitter smile. He did not know what Mu Chen had gone to do. However, from his earlier appearance, he probably did this because he had some sort of idea. However, he did not know whether or not Mu Chen's idea would be able to help them break out of this predicament.

"Just wait a little longer. If the Liu Territory dares to attack, we would not let them have an easy time!" Duan Wei grinded his teeth and said.

The other people nodded as well. Their eyes flashed fiercely.

Just when they were beginning their preparations, a sudden sound rang out from behind. They hastily turned their heads back and saw Mu Chen's figure quickly approaching.

"Little Lord!" Seeing this, Duan Wei and the others were happy.

"Dad, Uncle Zhou, retreat." Mu Chen stared at the two battle circles and shouted out.

Mu Feng and Zhou Ye, who had always been waiting for news from Mu Chen, instantly retreated backwards. However, the 3 High Rank Spiritual

Beasts were hot in pursuit.

Mu Chen stared at the 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts as they chased over and gripped his palm. A bottle emerged and he opened the bottle. A strange fragrance emitted out from within it.

Bang.

Mu Chen smacked the bottle and the black liquid within flewout. Mu Chen's palms moved and his Spiritual Energy was like the wind as it spread the black liquid apart. It turned into black moist air and smashed into the 3 High Rank Spiritual Beast's body.

The black moist air stuck itself on the 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts' body. However, they did not give the slightest reaction to it. They did not even care about Mu Chen, who was like a weak ant-like existence in their eyes, and continued chasing after Mu Feng.

Duan Wei and the others were also confused when they saw Mu Chen's strange actions.

"Enter that fissure!" Mu Chen pointed at a mountain crack nearby and quickly shouted.

Duan Wei and the others looked at each other. However, they immediately gritted their teeth and nodded their head. They charged straight into the crack within the mountain. Mu Chen also quickly followed them. In the rear, Mu Feng and the others were at the back and they caused the 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts to retreat by erupting out a dense amount of Spiritual Energy.

"What are they doing?"

The Liu Territory's men watched the Mu Territory's men enter the crack within the mountain and were stunned. If they did this, isn't that just cutting off all paths of escape? When did these guys become so stupid?

Liu Qingtian also frowned. With Mu Feng's intelligence, how could he do such a stupid thing?

"Big Brother?" Liu Ming whispered. It was obvious that he was unsure of

this situation as well.

Liu Qingtian narrowed his eyes. Then in the next moment, his face suddenly changed. He lifted his head and stared at the outside of the valley. A buzzing sound suddenly became louder.

“This is...Devouring Spirit Bees?”

Liu Ming and the others also noticed it. They hurried lifted their heads and they saw a black cloud enshrouding the sky within their sights. A buzzing sound echoed in the valley.

“Roar!”

The 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts in the valley also noticed the Devouring Spirit Bees approaching. They instantly let out uneasy growls. Against such a terrifying amount of Devouring Spirit Bees, even High Rank Spiritual Beasts would be in a predicament.

The black cloud finally poured into the valley like a black torrent. They did not stop at all and rushed in like a flood. Then, under the gazes of both Mu Feng and Liu Qingtian’s men, they charged straight towards the 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts.

Roarrr!

After being surrounded by the black cloud, the 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts instantly struggled fiercely. The violent Spiritual Energy constantly erupted out and they squashed thousands of Devouring Spirit Bees. However, following this, they were surrounded by even more Devouring Spirit Bees.

Mu Feng and the others watched as the roaring sounds became increasingly faint within the black clouds. They could not help but shiver. Afterwards, they slowly turned their heads towards the boy, who was smiling brilliant, and their faces turned stiff.

Could this...be the plan that Mu Chen mentioned?

But how did he attract all these Devouring Spirit Bees over and made them attack only the 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts?

The scheme he devised was too incredible!

Chapter 59: Arrival

Buzz!

The Devouring Spirit Bees' unique buzzing sounds echoed within the valley. It made everybody feel horrified. Especially since there were 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts struggling within the black torrent.

Because of the 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts' resistance, the valley floor was covered with corpses of Devouring Spirit Bees. Moreover, the Devouring Spirit Bees did not show the slightest signs of retreating and their scarlet eyes stared crazily at the 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts. Waves and waves of attacks continued to charge over at them.

The black torrent seemed to form into a gigantic storm and anywhere that storm passed by, only white bones would remain for any living creature.

The two groups of men hidden in the valley shivered as they stared at the scene in front of them. At this moment, no matter which party was involved, they would probably be completely annihilated.

Mu Chen's body was also hidden in the crack inside the body of the mountain. He peered through the gaps and stared inside the valley. The Spirit Bug Flute and the black liquid with a strange fragrance were already returned to his Mustard Seed Bracelet. He did not dare reveal it all. If it attracted the Devouring Spirit Bees over, there was truly no way out for them.

The black storm inside the valley lasted for approximately ten minutes. The original fierce and powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuations gradually weakened until it finally disappeared completely.

When the 3 Spiritual Energy fluctuations disappeared, everybody knew that the 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts were also wiped out by the Devouring Spirit Bees...This made Mu Feng and the others smack their lips. Although the Devouring Spirit Bees were quite weak individually, they became one of the most deadliest creatures within the Black Eerie Swamp.

After the enormous swarm of Devouring Spirit Bees eliminated the 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts, it circled the valley once before quickly disappearing with its buzzing sound.

As the Devouring Spirit Bees left, Mu Feng and the others drilled out from the fissure and gaze at the center of the valley. Only bones remained of the 3 originally majestic High Rank Spiritual Beasts. Traces of blood cling onto the white bones, making it look particularly cold.

At this moment, Mu Chen walked over leisurely and obtained the 3 abnormally dazzling Spiritual Beasts' Soul Essences from within their cranial. He did not show any restraint and placed it within his Mustard Seed Bracelet.

This was a High Rank Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence. Its value far surpassed the ones that they obtained earlier in the Northern Spiritual Field. This level of Soul Essence would even make Spirit Stage powerhouses moved.

After collecting the Spiritual Beasts' Soul Essences, Mu Chen smiled and raised his head. He stared at the mountain cliff and said: "What other schemes do you have? You want to continuing leading the High Rank Spiritual Beasts over? I don't mind luring the Devouring Spirit Bees over again."

In the cliff, the Liu Territory's men all had exceptionally ugly expression. Liu Qingtian's eyes also narrowed and he fixed his eyes at Mu Chen as he said with an incredulous tone: "You lured the Devouring Spirit Bees over?"

"You think that you were the one who did it?" Mu Chen's smile turned cold and said: "I think that you guys should hurry and get out of the Black Eerie Swamp. Otherwise, you might end up having the same fate as them when the swarm of Devouring Spirit Bees appears again.

The Liu Territory's men were slightly in a mess. Liu Zong, Liu Ming and the others' expressions all changed. They had personally seen how powerful the swarm of Devouring Spirit Bees was. If they fell inside of the swarm, they would definitely die.

"You immature and inexperienced brat, you're still too inexperienced if

you want to intimidate me!" Liu Qingtian recovered from the shock and let out a cold sneer as he said: "You might have lured the Devouring Spirit Bees over, but it was obvious that you do not have the ability to manipulate them. The black mist that you sent over before was probably the reason why the swarm of Devouring Spirit Beast would attack the 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts, right?"

Mu Chen smiled. However, he was shocked at how sharp Liu Qingtian was. He was able to see his earlier actions clearly.

"Mu Feng, you have a good son!"

Liu Qingtian stared coldly at Mu Feng. They should have been able to severely injure the Mu Territory today, yet they were stopped by a boy. This made them feel wrathful flames within their hearts.

"Ohoho thank you for the praise." Mu Feng also laughed and said: "Liu Qingtian, so what other schemes do you have? Are you going to fight personally now? That's great, it's been a while since I sought advice from you. Why don't we have a fight here?"

Liu Qingtian turned gloomy. Although he was quite furious, he still understood that it wasn't the time for them to fight against the Mu Territory. Otherwise, they would suffer too much damage and would not be able to obtain the Nine Nether Bird.

"Let's see how long you can act proud!"

Liu Qingtian's voice was cold as he spoke. Then, he no longer said anything and waved his hand. He gathered the Liu Territory's men and headed quickly to the depths of the Black Eerie Swamp. Right now, they did not want to waste time to stop Mu Feng and the others. This is because they knew that it would end up all in vain.

"Let's go, we'll follow them!"

Seeing this, Mu Feng let out a cold cry. His body charged out and led the Mu Territory's men as they followed behind Liu Qingtian. After the Liu Territory's plan failed, they were not able to get rid of the Mu Territory's men anymore.

The two groups of men quickly entered the Black Eerie Swamp one after another. This time, Liu Qingtian and the others became more honest. They no longer dared to cause any more trouble since they were afraid of getting involved in it as well.

Along the way, the two groups of men cautiously headed forward and did not dare to disturb the other Spiritual Beasts. This rapid pace lasted for approximately half an hour.

After half an hour since the two groups of men advanced vigilantly, the black color in the valley began to subside and their vision widened up.

"Swish!"

Mu Feng's team stepped out of the valley and appeared on top of a high slope. He gazed in front and his expression became serious.

In front of him was a vast basin. The ground at this place seemed to be burned by flames, causing it to show a charred color. Of course, the thing that frightened them the most wasn't this, but the white bones within the basin.

From the sizes, these bones were probably from Spiritual Beasts. They assumed a posture where they are crazily running towards the front. From their appearance, it seemed that something had attracted them and made them unable to free themselves.

Mu Chen stared at the white bones on the ground and sucked in cold air. Just what happened over here? Why did so many Spiritual Beasts die...

His eyes slightly went up and stared in front. Then, he saw it. In the center of the basin, there is a large black volcanic mountain. The dark zone on the very peak of the mountain seemed to be like a demon's gigantic mouth and would devour everything.

"This place..."

Mu Chen's eyes turned serious. The scene in front of him was somewhat familiar. He pondered for a moment before he remembered. This scene was exactly the same as the one inscribed on the copper piece!

Mu Chen tilted his head and exchanged glances with Mu Feng. He could tell from the other person's eyes that he was surprised and delighted.

It was apparent that this place is where the Nine Nether Bird was located at!

It was also where their goal was located at!

Chapter 60: The Strange Rock

Inside the black basin, a cool breeze blew and the numerous dense bones trembled slightly. This scene made everybody shiver.

“This place is where the Nine Nether Bird is located at!”

In this area, the eyes of the two groups of men lit up. The gazes they used to stare at the black volcano were mouth-watering and filled with heat.

Liu Qingtian’s eyes were burning. He immediately turned around and stared at Mu Feng. Then, he let out a sneer as his dense Spiritual Energy surged out and he charged straight towards the volcano.

Behind him, Liu Zong, Liu Ming, Liu Mubai and the others also immediately follow.

“Let’s move!”

Mu Feng also let out a deep shout. The dense Spiritual Energy erupted out from within his body and formed into a huge flame bird. The Dragonfire Bird’s wings shook and turned into a flash of light. Afterwards, Mu Feng jumped onto the back of the Dragonfire Bird.

The human and bird charged out. This violent Spiritual Energy directly caused a storm to appear in midair.

“Hmph!”

Seeing Mu Feng head over, Liu Qingtian’s eyes turned cold. He let out a low cry and a Silverlight erupted out from within his body. A giant silver beast emerged soon after.

This giant beast was like a giant ape. However, the entire body was filled with silver scales. On the scales, lightning flashed across them. Moreover, lightning rumbling sounds actually burst out as it howled.

“This is...the Lightning Scale Beast?” Mu Chen stared at the gigantic silver beast behind Liu Qingtian and was slightly surprised. This was a powerful Spiritual Beast ranked at the 133th place in the Myriad Beast

Record's Earth Ranking. Although it had not reached the Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts, it was still a top existence amongst the High Rank Spiritual Beasts.

"Bang!"

The Lightning Scale Beast stopped on the ground and lightning surged out. It carried Liu Qingtian as it stopped Mu Feng.

"Haha, Liu Qingtian, you finally couldn't resist on fighting? Then let me see, how much we've both improved over the past year!" Seeing this, Mu Feng was not afraid and instead laughed. The Dragonfire Bird beneath him let out a sharp cry and charged towards Liu Qingtian as it released out a violent, fiery red Spiritual Energy.

Boom!

The two massive monsters collided fiercely with each other in midair. The violent Spiritual Energy impact caused many of the bones below to shatter.

The Territory Lords from the Mu Territory and Liu Territory had already begun their fight. The men from both sides naturally would not be polite with each other and their eyes were filled with viciousness as they charged at each other.

"Leave Zhou Ye to me!"

The Liu Territory's second master, Liu Zong, stared darkly at Zhou Ye, who was leading the Mu Territory's men over. With a cold cry, a green light emitted out and a illusionary giant beast formed behind him.

It was a giant scorpion who was completely green. A faint fragrance came out from its body and it was obvious that it was poisonous.

"Jaded Venomous Scorpion, ranked at the 204thplace in the Myriad Beast Record's Earth Ranking." Mu Chen immediately recognized the jaded scorpion when he noticed it.

Don!

The men from both sides had finally fought with each other. The sounds

from the fight also broke the silence within this place and the Spiritual Energy endlessly emitted out along with murderous intent.

Under Duan Wei and the others' protection, Mu Chen also collided against the Liu Territory's men. However, he quickly rushed past and did not hesitate to shoot off like an arrow towards the black volcano.

"Mubai, stop him!"

Seeing this, Liu Ming, who was fighting against Duan Wei, instantly cried out.

Liu Mubai nodded his head when he heard this and turned around. He quickly chased after Mu Chen.

When Mu Chen heard the sounds of winds breaking behind him, the corner of his eyes twitched and he frowned slightly. He immediately circulated the Spiritual Energy within his body and infused it into his legs, causing his speed to accelerate again.

"You want to run away?!" Seeing this, Liu Mubai snorted and accelerated as well in order to pursue him.

The two of them quickly jumped into the black basin one after another and approached the black volcano. They climbed up the steep mountain cliff like a nimble monkey.

"Swish!"

Just when Mu Chen was rapidly arriving at the peak, Mu Chen suddenly felt a fierce wind shooting out from behind him. He immediately lunged forward and pressed onto the ground with his palms. His body rotated in midair.

Ding!

A sharp dagger fiercely inserted itself at the location where Mu Chen would have landed on. It directly pierced through the hard volcanic mountain.

Swish Swish!

Liu Mubai gripped his hands again and a couple of daggers were fired

out again. This time, he directly aimed it in front of Mu Chen. It was obvious that he was trying to drive Mu Chen to retreat.

Feeling the sounds of wind breaking, Mu Chen gripped his hand and numerous Spiritual Seals quickly emerged. Then, it shot out and quickly integrated itself into the air.

Chi Chi!

Numerous light beams emerged. The air became distorted and Spiritual Energy fluctuations stormed out from the beams of Spiritual Energy. It directly blocked out all the daggers.

When he arranged the tiny Spiritual Array for defense, Mu Chen did not plan on letting Liu Mubai have an easy time. He passed through a pile of sharp volcanic rocks and let out an whirlwind kick with one feet as he stepped on the ground with the other.

The sharp volcanic rocks instantly covered the sky as it fired off towards Liu Mubai, who was behind Mu Chen.

“Bang Bang!”

Seeing this, Liu Mubai clenched his hands into a fist and punched out. The fiery red Spiritual Energy mixed with the violent winds shattered the volcanic rocks that were shot over.

Although Liu Mubai blocked the attack, his speed was reduced slightly. He watched as Mu Chen took advantage of this gap and scurried away like a nimble monkey. He could not help but grit his teeth before hurriedly chasing after Mu Chen again.

The two of them continued to display various means to block the other. Anything that could be utilized was used by them. This scene seemed quite lively. However, only the two of them could feel how dangerous it was. They had never shown any mercy when they attacked.

Swoosh!

After a few minutes while one chased and the other ran, Mu Chen was a step earlier to reach the peak of the black volcano. The peak was a sunken

crater. However, it was quite dark so Mu Chen was not able to see what was inside.

"Boom!"

Mu Chen's eyes swept across the crater of the volcano. Behind him, the fist winds bombarded over from behind. He hesitated for a moment before dropping straight down into the volcano's crater.

Liu Mubai followed him in hot pursuit. He noticed Mu Chen entering the dark volcano's crater and hesitated for a moment as well. However, he soon gritted his teeth and followed.

The two of them quickly slide into the crater of the volcano and landed vigorously inside of the volcano's crater.

Inside the volcano's crater, the lights were dimmed and it was filled with black volcanic rocks.

Mu Chen's gaze quickly scanned across. But to his surprise, he did not see any traces of the Nine Nether Bird. There were only many black volcano rocks here caused by the volcanic impact at this location.

As Liu Mubai entered the crater, he did not immediately attack Mu Chen. He also scanned the surroundings to search for traces of the Nine Nether Bird.

The two of them scanned the surroundings, yet their eyes were filled with doubt.

Mu Chen frowned. He carefully moved around the bottom of the crater and continued to search.

At the same time, Liu Mubai also glanced at Mu Chen before moving away. It was apparent that he had the same idea as Mu Chen.

The bottom of the volcano's crater wasn't too spacious. The two of them quickly went in a circle, but they did not have any harvest. This made the doubt within their eyes grow even further.

Could what the copper piece mentioned be fake?

Mu Chen curled his lips and searched the surroundings. At this

moment, he had unconsciously walked to the center of the bottom crater. At this location, there were a couple of gigantic, black volcanic rocks that had been pushed out by the volcano in the surroundings.

He stared at these gigantic, black volcanic rocks, yet he did not see anything. He sighed helplessly in his heart and was about to turn around. However, he suddenly stopped and gripped his palms within his sleeves. Then, the ancient copper piece emerged within his palms. At this moment, the copper piece emitted out a faint heat.

“This copper piece...Can it sense the location of the Nine Nether Bird?”

An idea appeared in Mu Chen’s mind. He immediately looked quietly at Liu Mubai, who was searching at another direction, before heading quietly towards the gigantic, black volcanic rocks.

He touched each of the black rocks as he passed by. Shortly after, he stopped moving and stared at the slightly shining, gigantic black rock in front of him. As he stood here, the copper piece within his hand turned exceptionally hot.

Chapter 61: The Mysterious Black Egg

The gigantic black rock that was in front of Mu Chen was approximately dozens of Zhang 1tall. There were shattered holes on it, yet it was particularly smooth as if was eroded by magma before.

Mu Chen's palms lightly touched the gigantic black rock. He could feel the ancient copper piece within his palms becoming abnormally hot.

"Could the Nine Nether Bird be inside?"

An idea flashed through Mu Chen's mind and his eyes twinkled. Then, he looked at Liu Mubai, who was on the other side, and clenched his fist. A dark black Spiritual Energy surged through his palms and the Limitless Death Seal emerged on the surface of his fist.

Boom!

Mu Chen drew his arm back towards him before blasting out a fierce punch. The sounds of the winds breaking broke out from the short distance. It smashed heavily onto the gigantic black rock as the arm was wrapped by Spiritual Energy.

Bang!

Mu Chen's fist landed on the gigantic black rock and a deep sound rang out. The giant rock shuddered for a bit. Then, Mu Chen was able to see cracks quietly spreading out from behind the fist.

Crack.

Pieces of rubble continued to fall down endlessly from the gigantic rock. The speed of how fast the cracks spread accelerated and it soon filled the enormous rock.

Seeing this scene, Mu Chen took a step backwards carefully. After that punch, he had already discovered that the inside of the rock was hollow...

The gigantic rock continued to tremble and pieces of rubble constantly fell down. Just when Mu Chen was staring at it, his eyes narrowed. This is because he saw a black light emitting out from the cracks of the gigantic

rock.

The commotion over here also attracted Liu Mubai's attention. He also stared in surprise at the trembling rock and a hint of surprise appeared in his eyes.

Black lights shot out from the cracks in the rock. A wave of fluctuation spread out and the gigantic rock exploded open after a banging sound.

The rubble shot out and a few crossed through Mu Chen's body. However, he remained motionless and stared at the location where the rubble shot out from. At that location, the gigantic black rock had already erupted and a dark black light quietly appeared as it floated in the bottom of the crater.

As the light floated in the air, a 1 Zhangtall black egg seemed to be inside the light. The black egg was smooth and completely black. On the surface of the egg's shell, there were a couple of exceptionally obscure and mysterious engravings on it. The engravings seemed to be a mysterious black bird spreading its wings out and it protected the egg.

"This is..."

Mu Chen's eyes twinkled when he saw the shining black egg. He hesitated for a moment and joy filled his eyes. From the image within the copper piece, the Nine Nether Bird seemed to have turned into a black egg and landed here in the end. Could it be the one in front of him?

When Mu Chen saw the black egg, Liu Mubai was also aware of it. Greed instantly gushed out from his eyes and he charged straight for the black egg.

Seeing this, Mu Chen's eyes flashed. However, he did not recklessly rush over. He did not believe that it would be that easy to obtain the Nine Nether Bird.

Liu Mubai quickly approached the black egg. But just when he was about to enter a couple of Zhangdistance away from the black egg, a black light blasted out from the surface of the egg.

Bang!

The black light fiercely bombarded Liu Mubai's body. His originally moving body was shot backwards and he landed heavily on the ground. He could not help but spit out fresh blood.

Fizz!

After the black egg caused Liu Mubai to fly backwards, it seems to be activated and a black light wrapped around its surroundings. Then, it slowly flew up to the sky above the crater.

Seeing this, Mu Chen hurriedly rushed out of the crater and appeared on the peak of the volcano.

Fizzzz!

The black egg finally suspended itself on the sky above the crater. Black lights emitted out and caused the Spiritual Energy within the world to become violent.

This commotion soon attracted everybody's attention. Mu Feng and Liu Qingtian both retreated backwards and stared bewilderedly at the mysterious black egg that appeared.

"Dad, the black egg is formed by the Nine Nether Bird. Hurry and take it away!" Liu Mubai also helplessly followed him above and let out a cry.

"The Nine Nether Bird?!"

Liu Qingtian's eyes narrowed and ecstasy flowed out from within his heart. His body turned into a blurry figure as he charged like a lightning towards the mysterious black egg above the crater.

Seeing this, Mu Feng did not want to fall behind and immediately followed.

The two of them were extremely fast and charged to the crater in an instant. They both extended their palms and wanted to capture the mysterious black egg.

"Dad, don't!"

Mu Chen's eyes remained fixed on the mysterious black egg. However, he suddenly remembered the skeleton that he met within the Black Eerie

Swamp. His heart was suddenly filled with anxiety and he immediately shouted out.

Mu Feng, who was about to seize the mysterious black egg, heard this cry and was slightly surprised. His eyes twinkled and he gritted his teeth. Then, he actually forced himself to stop his body from moving.

Although this was a rare opportunity, he still suppressed the impulse he had within his heart because of the trust he had for Mu Chen.

On the other hand, Liu Qingtian let out a sneer when Mu Feng stopped and touched the mysterious egg with a finger. Just when he was able to take it for himself, his face suddenly changed.

Fizz!

A strange sound came out from the mysterious black egg. Liu Qingtian's finger, which touched the mysterious black egg, actually quickly became charred and an enormous pain emitted out from his finger.

This sudden change of events made Liu Qingtian's expression change. He struggled frantically, but found that his finger was stuck to the black egg as if it was glued on. No matter how he struggled, he was unable to get rid of it. Moreover, what made him terrified was that the Spiritual Energy within his body actually quickly flowed into the black egg through his finger.

"Damn it!"

Liu Qingtian let out an angry howl and his eyes turned ruthless. He raised his blade and actually cut off the finger that was in direct contact with the mysterious black egg.

The finger dropped down and blood spattered out. Liu Qingtian endured the pain from it and desperately retreated backwards.

All this events happened in an instant. Mu Feng was the closest and he clearly saw the scene. He immediately trembled as he stared at the mysterious egg. This item wasn't a weakling. It was fortunate that he was stopped by Mu Chen earlier. Otherwise, he would probably pay an even greater price.

“Big Brother!”

Seeing the desperately retreating Liu Qingtian, Liu Zong and the others hurried over towards him. Their eyes twitched when they saw that Liu Qingtian’s finger was chopped off.

“Be careful, this damn thing is a bit strange!” Liu Qingtian hurriedly circulated his Spiritual Energy, stopped the blood at his chopped of finger and said with a grim expression.

Liu Zong and the others nodded. It seems that it wasn’t that easy to obtain the Nine Nether Bird.

Mu Feng also landed at this moment and reunited with the Mu Territory’s men. He patted Mu Chen’s shoulder and said with a bitter smile: “It’s lucky you warned me quickly.”

Mu Chen’s eyes turned serious. His eyes remained fixed at the mysterious black egg above the crater. Then, he said softly: “Dad, be careful. I feel that something is wrong.”

Mu Feng also nodded his head. The Nine Nether Bird wasn’t any ordinary Spiritual Beast. It was a super existence that was ranked 11thon the Beast Record’s Earth Ranking. Compared to the Nine Nether Bird, his Dragonfire Bird was worth nothing.

The atmosphere suddenly became strange. The two groups of men that were originally fighting in a life and death battle while refusing to let the other get the slightest lead suddenly did not dare to act. They only stared vigilantly and greedily at the mysterious black egg.

A breeze blew in from afar and relaxed the tensed atmosphere slightly.

Mu Chen’s eyes were also fixed at the mysterious black egg. However, his eyes suddenly turned cold. This is because he discovered that the mysterious engravings on the mysterious black egg suddenly began to light up.

A strange fluctuation was quietly born from within and emitted outwards.

Chapter 62: Unusual Change

Fizzzzz.

The mysterious black egg floated above the crater of the black volcano. At this moment, a couple of the obscure light engravings gradually lit up on the surface of the black egg. As these light engravings emerged, everybody was able to feel that the Spiritual Energy within the world suddenly became extremely violent.

Mu Feng and the others all looked solemnly at this scene. He could feel the restless movements of the Spiritual Energy within the world. A hint of unease surged through his eyes. This situation was slightly beyond his expectation.

From the image brought up by the copper piece, the Nine Nether Bird should have been in an extremely weak state after failing its evolution. However, from the way the mysterious egg made Liu Qingtian cut his finger off, it seems that this item was not something they could just grab as they thought.

"Be careful."

Mu Feng said in a low voice: "If the situation seems off, we will immediately retreat. We'll give up on taking the Nine Nether Bird."

Zhou Ye and the others were slightly taken aback when they heard this. However, seeing Mu Feng's serious expression, they nodded their heads. It was apparent that they noticed that something was off.

Mu Chen's gaze was also fixed tightly at the mysterious black egg in the sky. The Nine Nether Bird was too powerful. Although they did not know what level the Nine Nether Bird had reached before it failed its evolution, it definitely far surpassed the strength of a Spirit Stage.

And the Nine Nether Bird which possessed this strength would probably be something that nobody could subdue even if it only possessed a couple of percent of its power from before.

Not that far away, the Liu Territory's men also stared at the mysterious

black egg above the sky of the volcano as if they met a great enemy. Liu Qingtian's face turned extremely grim. On the other hand, Liu Mubai's face was turning red and blue alternately. If it wasn't for his words earlier, Liu Qingtian probably wouldn't have frantically snatched it. Moreover, in the critical moment, Mu Chen decided to shout something completely different than him and saved Mu Feng. After comparing their actions, his handsome face reddened and was filled with hatred.

"Big Brother, are you alright?" Liu Zong and Liu Ming stared at where Liu Qingtian's finger was cut off and asked with concern. If anything was to happen to Liu Qingtian, it would be a severe blow for the Liu Territory.

Liu Qingtian shook his head with a grim expression. His eyes remained fixed at the sky and did not blink at all.

"All of you should stare at it. I don't want to return empty-handed this time!" Liu Qingtian said in a gloomy voice. When the Liu Territory's men heard this, their hearts jumped and they hurriedly nodded.

Under the intense gaze from both groups, the mysterious black egg's light engravings gradually brightened up in the sky. Moreover, it followed a sense of rhythm. It would light up and darken as if it was breathing.

Fizz.

As the light engravings brightened up, the mysterious black egg suddenly trembled. Then under the surprised gazes of everyone, black light erupted out from the black egg.

The sky instantly turned dark at this moment. It seemed to have caused the day to turn into night. This change made everybody's faces change.

Cry!

Just when the darkness enshrouded the location, a clear cry resounded out in the world.

This clear cry seemed to have turned into a sound wave and spread outwards before it vanished at the end of their visions.

Mu Chen stared at the black light that enshrouded the sky. He suddenly

jumped and a hint of unease appeared.

"Something's wrong!"

Mu Feng's face suddenly changed. He gripped his fist tightly and let out a horrified expression: "The Spiritual Energy within our body are rapidly disappearing!"

After he said this, Zhou Ye and the others' expression changed. They hurriedly inspected their body. As expected, the Spiritual Energy within their body was vanishing abnormally.

It was as if something was sucking away the Spiritual Energy within their bodies forcibly!

After hearing Mu Feng's cry, Mu Chen's heart jumped. He was only at the Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase, so he was not that sensitive to the feeling of losing Spiritual Energy. Instead, Mu Feng and the others with their Spirit Stage would sense it the most.

"It's because of the black egg!" Mu Chen said in a low voice. At this moment, the mysterious black egg was the only thing that could explain this strange scene.

Not far away, the Liu Territory's men also entered in a commotion and sounds of exclamation rang out endlessly. It was evident that they detected this strange situation.

"Territory Lord, what should we do?" Duan Wei urgently asked. If this continues, the Spiritual Energy within their bodies would completely be exhausted. How would they leave the Black Eerie Swamp then?

Mu Feng's eyes changed rapidly and he gritted his teeth: "Leave, we're retreating!"

This situation here was too strange. Mu Feng understood that the trip this time was too recklessly. Just what sort of existence is the Nine Nether Bird? Even if it failed to evolve and was in an extremely weak state, how was it possible for them to easily get a bargain with their strength?

At this moment, there was no use being greedy anymore. No matter how

precious the treasure was, it would be useless if they could not protect their lives. Therefore, Mu Feng decisively acted and led the others away.

Bang!

However, just when Mu Feng let out the order for retreat, the ground seemed to tremble like an earthquake.

“Territory Lord, look quickly!”

A voice filled with horror suddenly rang out. Mu Feng, Mu Chen and the others hastily looked up and stared behind them. They saw various lights emerged from within the Black Eerie Swamp. The lights were all powerful Spiritual Beasts. In the lead, there were at least a dozen of High Rank Spiritual Beasts!

These Spiritual Beasts were rushing over crazily towards this direction. The scene of dozen of beasts rushing over made Duan Wei and the others turn pale.

Mu Chen could not help but suck in a breath of cold air. What is this situation? Could it be that all the Spiritual Beasts within the Black Eerie Swamp would rush over?

“Hurry and dodge!”

Mu Feng’s eyes twitched. He suppressed the horror within his heart and led them to a cliff. Against such amounts of beasts rushing over, even a Spirit Stage powerhouse would have to hide.

When Mu Feng and the others hurriedly gave way to the beasts, the Liu Territory also discovered this scene. Many of the men felt powerless in their legs. This formation was definitely too terrifying.

Liu Qingtian was also shocked as well. Luckily, he did not lose his cool and brought his men away. They did not dare to appear in front of the beasts rushing over.

The two groups were separated by some distance and did not dare to make a sound. They carefully crouched down and stared at the group of Spiritual Beasts charging over from a distance.

Mu Chen fixed his gaze on the Spiritual Beasts as they charged over. His eyes instantly became serious and he noticed that signs of madness appeared in the Spiritual Beasts' eyes. It seems that something mysterious had caused them to turn berserk.

Mu Chen frowned and finally thought back to the Spirit Bug User's skeleton. He became even more alert to the Nine Nether Bird that he never met. It seems that it was not simple at all.

The herd of beasts brought a trial of smoke and charged into the black basin. The dense bones that existed there earlier were squashed under their foot. However, they ignored it and charged in the direction of the mysterious egg above the crater.

Mu Chen stared at the herd of beasts and watched as they charged into the basin towards the mysterious black egg. Then, his eye narrowed when he witnessed the black bird light engraving on the mysterious black egg gently fluttering its wings as if it resurrected itself.

The originally dark sky turned even darker again.

Cry!

Another clear cry emitted out like a black sound wave again. This sound wave was as gentle as the flow of water and it spread over towards the berserk herd of beasts galloping over.

The heaven and earth seemed to have become completely silent at this moment.

Mu Chen fiercely sucked in a breath of air. A hint of astonishment surged out from his black eyes. This was because he saw the Spiritual Beasts instantly freeze when they were affected by the black sound wave whether it was a High Rank Spiritual Beast or Low Rank Spiritual Beast. Then, their flesh would be stripped apart and revealed dense bones in the form of running over as it stood within the basin.

Mu Chen exchanged glances with Mu Feng. They both saw the shock within each other's eyes. Afterwards, they thought about the white bones that they saw earlier. So the white bones appeared like this...

In other words, it wasn't the first time that this situation occurred.

Chapter 63: Divine Black Thundercloud

The black sound wave gently rippled and emitted outwards from the black basin. As the black sound wave passed through, all the Spiritual Beasts would instantly turn into dense bones. Not even a single trace of blood existed on the white bones.

Mu Chen and the others stared at this scene, stunned. Then, they shivered as this scene was too abnormal.

Swish.

A dense light would surged out from the Spiritual Beasts that turned into bones and form a light rainbow as it surged through the sky towards the mysterious black egg above the crater.

Fizz.

And while facing the dense light rainbow filled with Spiritual Energy, the mysterious black egg also released a black light. Then, it sucked in all of the light rainbows like a bottomless pit.

Light rainbows endlessly rise up from within the Spiritual Beasts' bodies. Under that brilliance, they devoted their lives.

Furthermore, the most horrifying thing was that the Spiritual Beasts would watch this terrifying scene occur without any panic. A hint of craziness was within their scarlet eyes. It was as if they were flies flying into a fire, yet they seemed to feel glory in their actions.

This strange contrast made Mu Chen shiver. Then, he stared at the mysterious black egg that was endlessly sucking in the light rainbows within the sky. This method had far surpassed the intelligence of all the Spiritual Beasts that Mu Chen had seen before. It was even more cruel and cunning than a human.

"That black egg is probably formed by the Nine Nether Bird..." Mu Feng's face became serious as he stared in fear at the black egg absorbing many rainbows in the sky.

"The Spiritual Beasts in the Black Eerie Swamp seemed to be providing

an enormous amount of Spiritual Energy to the Nine Nether Bird…" Mu Chen softly spoke.

Mu Feng also nodded and said: "Moreover, it's not the first time that a scene similar to this has occurred. Over these years, the numerous Spiritual Beasts in the Black Eerie Swamp had turned into white bones and devoted all their Spiritual Energy to the Nine Nether Bird."

"The Spiritual Beasts in the Black Eerie Swamp…" Mu Feng's face turned strange as he said: "It seems that it was raised by the Nine Nether Bird. It will let them grow and fatten up before the Nine Nether Bird slaughters it to extract their Spiritual Energy."

On the side, Duan Wei and the others all shuddered when they heard this. If it was done by a human, they wouldn't be too surprised. However, this scenario was planned by a Spiritual Beast that was considerably powerful.

"And…Perhaps the copper piece that we obtained was also its intention. It used that to lure a few greedy humans over to absorb the Spiritual Energy away from our bodies." Mu Feng said with a bitter smile and said: "This time, it might not think highly about us. Otherwise, I feel that we would end up no better than the Spiritual Beasts."

Zhou Ye's face turned pale. If this was all planned out by the Nine Nether Bird, then it would be too terrifying…

Mu Chen also sighed. He knew that what his father said was mostly true. There were probably many humans that came to this place like the skeleton he met in the Black Eerie Swamp due to greed over the past years. However, the skeleton was slightly luckier as he managed to escape. Yet, he still died due to his injuries being too severe.

"Then what should we do now?" Duan Wei and the others wiped the cold sweat off their foreheads. It was still the first time for them meeting such a terrifying Spiritual Beast. The terror didn't just come from its strength, but also from how it was cunning and ruthless like a human.

"Retreat!"

There wasn't the slightest hesitation in Mu Feng's voice: "Don't even think about the Nine Nether Bird. Nobody in the Northern Spiritual Realm will be able to capture this existence. We should immediately retreat while its attention is focused on the Spiritual Beasts!"

"Yes!"

Duan Wei and the others let out a sigh of relief when they heard this. They could not see any hope in this bizarre situation. It would be a wise decision for them to leave as soon as possible.

Mu Feng seemed to have made up his mind on giving up on the Nine Nether Bird. After he issued out the order, he waved his hand. A group of men quietly climbed up the cliff and cautiously headed out of the black basin.

"Big Brother, the people from the Mu Territory are retreating!" The Liu Territory was aware of the movement caused by the Mu Territory and Liu Ming shouted out quickly.

"Forget about them!" Liu Qingtian said coldly: "Something is wrong with the current situation. We would feel safer if they leave since we wouldn't have to remain alert against them."

"Then, we..." Liu Ming hesitated for a moment. In fact, he was also terribly afraid when he witnessed the scene in front of him. The mysterious black egg was too bizarre and his instincts told him that it would be smarter for him to get as far away as possible.

"Just wait a little longer!"

Signs of struggling could be seen within Liu Qingtian's eyes. However, he still gritted his teeth and said these words. The temptation of the Nine Nether Bird was too great. If he was able to obtain it, even if the possibility was extremely small, he would instantly become the lord of the Northern Spiritual Realm!

Liu Ming and Liu Zong exchanged gazes with each other and nodded. They had prepared a long time for this plan. If they were to leave now, they wouldn't be willing to accept it.

Just when the Mu Territory was quietly retreating and the Liu Territory was remaining there without giving up, thousands of Spiritual Beasts in the black basin turned into bones from the black sound wave.

Hu.

The numerous light rainbows in the sky whistled out and eventually all of them were sucked into the mysterious black egg. When the final light rainbow was sucked in, the world seemed to have become unusually quiet.

Crack.

During this silence, a sudden cracking sound rang out. It was not loud, but the Liu Territory and the Mu Territory seemed to have been shocked by lightning. Then, all their eyes fixed itself onto the mysterious black egg in fear. They could see that subtle cracks actually emerged on the surface of the black egg.

As the cracks emerged, black flames surged out and wrapped the mysterious black egg completely. When the bizarre black flame rushed out, the Spiritual Aura in the world seemed to show signs of boiling.

“This is...” Cold sweat seemed to drip down Mu Feng’s face slowly. His voice became hoarse as he said: “The Nine Nether Bird seems to be coming out.”

Li!

Just when he finished saying those words, a cry rang out in the world from the mysterious black egg. A black flame instantly enveloped the sky like a storm.

The cracks on the surface of the black light egg were becoming increasingly concentrated. Then with a final crisping sound, it burst open.

As the black flames became increasingly violent, Mu Chen and the others were somewhat shocked to see a pair of black wings that could cover a mountain stretching out from within the flames.

The black flames continued to scorch the sky. Mu Chen and the others could vaguely see a huge shadow within the monstrous flames. It was

elegantly stretching its large body as if it was resurrecting from Nirvana like a phoenix rebirthing from flames.

A horrifying Spiritual Energy pressure also emitted out at this moment. It caused the Spiritual Aura within the world to boil.

“Is this the Nine Nether Bird?”

Mu Chen watched in shock at the massive creature stretching its body elegantly in the monstrous black flames. Although he was not able to see its appearance clearly, the somewhat vague outline already feels amazing.

“This fluctuation…”

Mu Feng kept a close eye at the vague outline and immediately gulped. This Spiritual Energy pressure probably wasn’t something that a Three Heavens Stage powerhouse could compare with!

They actually had a wishful thinking of capturing this sort of existence. It was truly ridiculous.

“Hurry and run!”

Mu Feng took a deep breath and gathered all the drool he had within his heart. He let out a cry and prepared to retreat no matter what.

Rumble!

However, just when Mu Feng urged his people to retreat, thunder sounds rang out in the sky. They looked up and suddenly froze. A black thundercloud abruptly gathered above the black flames in the sky. Moreover, they could faintly feel that there was a black lightning dragon quietly surging within the thundercloud.

A destructive energy emitted out from the black thundercloud.

“This is the… Divine Black Thundercloud?”

Mu Feng stared at the black thundercloud and his eyes instantly narrowed. He could not help saying these words out as he suppressed the horror within his voice.

“Divine Black Thundercloud?” Mu Chen was stunned.

Mu Feng took a deep breath and suppressed the shock within his heart as he muttered: “The Nine Nether Bird…actually hasn’t given up yet. It is still attempting to evolve!”

Chapter 64: Evolution

"Evolve?!"

Mu Chen and the others were stunned. They stared at the massive shadow within the black flames which covered the sky. Then, he said: "Didn't it fail before?"

"That's why it would like to try again."

Signs of surprise could be seen within Mu Feng's eyes as he said: "It seems that this Nine Nether Bird is extremely prideful. It had to use many schemes in order to resurrect after failing the evolution last time. Who would have thought that it would attempt to evolve again when it had just reappeared?"

Mu Chen was also surprised at the courage that this Nine Nether Bird had. If one was ordinary, he would unconsciously avoid doing whatever he had failed at doing. However, this Nine Nether Bird wanted to climb back up from where it had fallen. This courage, this pride..., it amazed everyone.

"Will it succeed?"

Mu Chen asked in a low voice. He lifted his head to stare at the sky filled with black thunderclouds. Within the thunderclouds, the black lightning seemed to creep around like a massive black dragon as it released an indescribable power.

"Who knows...The Nine Nether Bird is originally an extremely powerful existence. It possesses the 11thrank on the Myriad Beast Record's Earth Ranking. Moreover, if it successfully evolves, it would have the qualifications to charge at the Myriad Beast Record's Heaven Ranking. At that time...It will truly become a Divine Beast." Mu Feng said.

"Divine Beast..."

Mu Chen could not help but bite his lips. This simple phrase gave off an unparalleled pressure. This is because each and every one of the Divine Beasts were super-existences within the Great Thousand Worlds. Even Sovereign-class existences would be afraid of these overlords belonging to

different species.

"However...the Divine Black Lightning isn't that easy to overcome." Mu Feng also said gently as he stared at the enormous shadow within the black flames in the sky. In the world are many Spiritual Beasts, but, just how many of them would be able to evolve into these super-existences?

A Spiritual Beast and a Divine Beast may only be different by one word, yet there is an unsurpassable gap between them.

"It has already failed once before. Normally speaking, once one fails to overcome the lightning, the one who was attempting would be annihilated by the lightning. However, this Nine Nether Bird seems to have escaped with its life before. If it fails again this time, it might not be that lucky."

Mu Feng's pace of retreating gradually slowed down. If the Nine Nether Bird is going to attempt to overcome the lightning, then they would be safe. This is because they were just like ants in the Nine Nether Bird's eyes. They simply weren't worthy enough for it to pay attention to them.

Mu Chen felt a bit of regret when he heard these words. If the Nine Nether Bird was to vanish due to the lightning, nobody would be able to obtain its Spiritual Beast Soul Essence. This way, the Mu Territory would not have gotten any harvest for coming here.

However, who would have the ability to ingest the Nine Nether Bird's Soul Essence even if they obtained it? Mu Feng was extremely lucky back then when he ingested the Dragonfire Bird. Not to mention the Nine Nether Bird, who was even more powerful than the Dragonfire Bird?

While Mu Chen and the others stared at the sky with regret and admiration, a clear cry resounded throughout the world from within the black flames in the sky. Moreover, it was possible to hear a deep unyielding fighting spirit from within the cry.

It was issuing a challenge towards the Divine Black Lightning!

"Boom!"

The Divine Black Thundercloud seemed to have noticed the Nine Nether Bird's provocation and immediately let out a deep rumbling sound, which

echoed throughout the region. Under the rumbling sound, Mu Chen and the others could feel the Spiritual Aura within the world trembling, as if it was fearful of that terrifying heavenly might.

"Li!"

A clear cry rang out once again. The Nine Nether Bird's wings stretched out from within the black flames and suddenly black flames surged out all over the place. It turned into numerous black flame pillars and fiercely charged at the black thundercloud.

The Nine Nether Bird actually dared to take the initiative to launch an attack at the Divine Black Lightning.

Boom!

The black thundercloud quietly surged and a black lightning started winding and swirling. The black lightning dragon stared coldly at the black flame pillars charging over. Then, a black lightning filled with destructive power immediately rushed down.

Bang Bang Bang!

The black lightning and black flames collided fiercely. The entire world seemed to have exploded at that moment. Then, the loud rumbling sound made the earth tremble violently and cracks spread out from the black basin.

Mu Chen and the others stared in shock at the terrifying battle in the sky. At that location, the black flames and black lightning were wreaking havoc crazily.

It was evident that the black lightning is an extremely terrifying thing. The lightning descended down as if it was attempting to destroy everything in the world and shattered countless black flame pillars.

After the black lightning shattered the countless black flame pillars, it used a terrifying momentum to fiercely descend down into the black flames within the sky. In the end, it descended down onto the massive creature hidden within the black flames.

Li!

Within the cry this time, pain could be heard. But following this, anger emerged in the cry again. The Nine Nether Bird flapped its wings and the black flame sea furiously whirled together. Then, it finally turned into several interconnected black flamestorms.

Buzzzz!

The earth began to shatter due to the rotation of the black flamestorms. Luckily, the Nine Nether Bird's primary target was the Divine Black Lightning. Thus, the black flamestorms whirled over towards the Divine Black Thundercloud once it was formed.

Facing against the Nine Nether Bird's crazy attack, the Divine Black Thundercloud also quickly moved. A dark lightning vortex appeared at the center of the thundercloud and numerous black lightnings gathered inside the vortex.

Boom!

Within the vortex, numerous black lightnings gathered together and eventually formed into a massive lightning pillar. It fired out and bombarded the black flamestorms in a direct confrontation.

Swoosh!

The black lightning pillar was like the Thunder God's punishment and forcibly tore apart the black flamestorms. The entire world seemed to have become dim in that moment.

The black flamestorms that were formed by the Nine Nether Bird's full strength were stopped once again and the Nine Nether Bird issued out an extremely furious cry again. This damn lightning had already stopped it once. Could it again be planning to prevent it from evolving?

Its prideful self would never be willing to admit defeat!

The black flames within the sky suddenly shrank abnormally. It was as if all the black flames wormed itself into the Nine Nether Bird's body.

As the black flames shrank, the Nine Nether Bird's body finally entered

everybody's view.

It was a massive creature approximately the size of 10,000 Zhang and its wings were able to cover a mountain when it was spread open. On its body, mysterious black feathers had a hint of black flames surging through them. On its tail, long tail feathers extended out elegantly and clusters of black flames slowly burned at the tip.

Although the Nine Nether Bird was extremely massive, it did not have a shred of fat. Its curved body made it seem extremely elegant, slim, mysterious and beautiful. It truly was a fascinating creature.

However, the Nine Nether Bird's eyes were showing a fiery red color at that moment. Unacceptance and rage were filled within its eyes as it stared at the entrenched thundercloud in the sky. Then, it flapped its wings and furious winds suddenly appeared in the world. The black flames covered its wings and theNine Nether Bird itself turned into a black flame as it flew up high. In the end, it mustered all its power and rushed straight towards the black thundercloud.

It was going to do a final showdown against the Divine Black Thundercloud!

Mu Chen stared at the flapping wings as it charged without fear into the black thundercloud, which even the Nine Nether Bird felt horror from, like a moth to a flame. His heart was filled with shock.

The Nine Nether Bird's unyielding and stubborn personality made a spectator like him feel amazed.

However, when this amazement rose up, a sense of regret also emerged. This is because Mu Chen saw the Divine Black Thundercloud contracting intensely and all the lightning within it seemed to have gathered together at this moment.

This blow would definitely shock the heavens and earth.

Boom!

At that moment, the world became silent. Only the sound of thunder resounded out. Then, a black lightning dragon, which was almost the same

size as the Nine Nether Bird, pierced through the skies and landed furiously on the approaching Nine Nether Bird's body.

Chapter 65: Destruct

The black lightning descended down from the sky above. The indescribable thunder sound emitted almost spread throughout the entire Black Eerie Swamp. The Spiritual Beasts within the Black Eerie Swamp also issued out fearful roars as they laid on the ground shivering. They did not dare to make even a slightest movement.

Everybody at the scene had shocked expressions as they watched the events happening in the sky. Even Mu Feng and Liu Qingtian, who were the strongest individuals within the Northern Spiritual Realm, were completely horrified. This power was too terrifying. If it landed on them, even their remains wouldn't exist.

"Li!"

As the raging lightning descended down, a mournful cry filled with despair and resignation rang out.

"The Nine Nether Bird is going to fail!"

When Mu Chen heard this clear cry, his heart jumped. So the Divine Black Lightning Calamity was this powerful? Even such a mighty existence like the Nine Nether Bird couldn't endure it.

In the sky, the berserk black lightning was almost suppressing the black flames completely. No matter how much the Nine Nether Bird struggled, it was unable to move forward.

The black flames were finally pushed back completely and helplessness appeared in its cry. It never imagined that it would fail again after its first failure.

The black lightning filled with destructive energy had already oppressed the Nine Nether Bird's true body. Afterwards, a loud cry rang out from the Nine Nether Bird again. At this moment, the mysterious black feathers on its massive body began to burn up.

As the black flames raged out, the temperature in the world also began to increase significantly.

“Hurry and retreat, the Nine Nether Bird is crazy. It’s going to self-destruct!”

Seeing the black flames ignite on the Nine Nether Bird, Mu Feng’s face changed and he immediately shouted out. He instantly grabbed onto Mu Chen and darted away from the black basin, like an arrow.

Behind him, Zhou Ye, Duan Wei and the others also had ghastly expressions as they hurriedly followed. Just how terrifying would the Nine Nether Bird’s self-destruction be?

In the distance, the Liu Territory’s men also noticed this situation and their faces immediately turned pale. They frantically fled away towards the opposite direction.

At this instant, they completely gave up on the idea of capturing the Nine Nether Bird.

As the two groups of men rushed away recklessly, the black flames within the Nine Nether Bird turned increasingly violent in the sky. It flapped its large wings and then its massive body exploded at this moment.

The black flames gushed out and even forcibly destroyed the terrifying black lightning. Even the black thundercloud in the sky was ripped apart by the surging black flames.

Furthermore, the entire world seemed to have become like a steamer. The boiling temperature made the underneath forest burn up instantly.

Bang!

Although Mu Feng and the others had already escaped far away from the center of the explosion, the impact emitted out from it still caused the group of men to helplessly fall to the ground.

Mu Feng climbed up and took a glance at the sky. His face became increasingly serious. At the location where the Nine Nether Bird had self-destructed an enormous black flame lotus bloomed. The black flames were like black meteorites and showered down on to the earth. It was as if the world was coming to an end.

Dong Dong!

No matter where the black flames landed at, the earth would immediately crack open. Then, the cracks would quickly spread. This black basin had instantly turned into shambles.

“Hurry!”

Mu Feng said in a deep voice. They could not afford to stay in this place anymore. If they were unlucky and were hit by a meteorite-like flame, then it would be bad news.

Swoosh!

However, just when Mu Feng had shouted out, he could hear the burning sounds of winds breaking. He quickly lifted his head and his face changed drastically. The black flames that flew across the sky seemed to be shooting at them.

Mu Feng stared as the black flames quickly became larger within his eyes. His face was also pale. At this moment, it was already too late to escape. He hurriedly exchanged glances with Zhou Ye and took a step forward. Then with a violent cry, dense Spiritual Energy poured out from their bodies and formed a thick Spiritual Energy light barrier that protected the people behind it.

Swish!

The black flames with a long black tail showered down and bombarded the Spiritual Energy light barrier.

Boom!

Mu Chen and the others could feel the earth they were standing on start to crack. The boiling heat caused some minor skin irritations.

While the Spiritual Energy light barrier blocked against the impacts of the black flames, cold sweat was constantly dripping down from Mu Feng and Zhou Ye. The hands that maintained the Spiritual Energy light barrier were burned so much that they felt bursts of pain.

However, the two of them continued to maintain it. They understood

that if the people behind them were to be affected by it, they would at least be seriously injured with their strength.

Crunch.

The Spiritual Energy light barrier trembled and twisted faintly. As this moment, a crunching sound rang out. Mu Chen and the others who were behind the light barrier hurriedly retreated as if they had met a great enemy.

“Be careful, we can’t block it anymore!”

The Spiritual Energy light barrier was becoming more and more distorted. Finally, Mu Feng and Zhou Ye were not able to maintain it and with a low cry, the Spiritual Energy light barrier shattered as the two of them were blown back helplessly.

The black flames rushed in like a torrent. Although the majority of its strength was canceled out by Mu Feng and Zhou Ye, the impact still influenced Duan Wei and the others. Their bodies grinded across the land for a hundred meters, as if they had suffered a heavy blow, before finally stopping awkwardly.

Bang.

Mu Chen’s body also flew backwards and landed heavily on a giant boulder. His throat instantly had a sweet taste and he could not help but spit out fresh blood. It was as if the bones in his body were collapsing.

“Isn’t this way too powerful?”

Mu Chen wiped off the blood from the corner of his mouth and let out a wry smile. This was only just one of the flames in the sky. If they all were to bombard at them, wouldn’t it instantly erase them? The Nine Nether Bird’s self-destruction is truly terrifying.

Mu Chen hobbled as he stood up. But just as he was about to call out to Mu Feng and the others, his face instantly changed as he lifted his head. He saw a tiny black flame heading straight towards him.

“Mu Chen!”

This sudden turn of events was also noticed by Mu Feng. His face immediately became distorted as he charged towards Mu Chen.

With his speed, however, he was not comparable to the black flames that rushed over. So even Mu Feng could only watch as the black flames rapidly enlarged itself in his eyes.

“How unlucky.”

There was time only for this thought to cross Mu Chen’s mind. Then, he felt a burning feeling and pain instantly filled his mind. Darkness filled his vision and his head dropped down.

But the instant before his vision turned dark, he vaguely saw a light flashing within the black flame. Then, he entered the darkness as he suffered a terrible pain.

Chapter 66: The Change within his Body

Mu Chen's consciousness floated without aim in the darkness. There was not even the slightest trace of light in this place. He was not even aware of time as he drifted around in a comatose state.

Although he did not know how long he drifted around, a strange fluctuation emitted out from within the darkness. A strange black flame surged out in the center of the darkness as it condensed itself.

As the black flames condensed itself, it actually turned into a giant black bird, which let out a cry towards the sky. Then, it seemed to have noticed Mu Chen's drifting consciousness. With a sharp cry, it turned into a streak of black flames and charged over to his consciousness as it glared fiercely.

Ah!

Mu Chen issued out a scream from his mouth and his body sat up like a conditioned reflex. His forehead was filled with cold sweat while his eyes were trembling.

"Little Mu woke up?!"

"The Little Lord is awake!"

Just when Mu Chen was confused about the scene earlier, delighted voices rang out from the surroundings. Only then did he lifted his head up in daze and realized that he was on top of a stretcher. Zhou Ye, Duan Wei and the others were all looking at him with a happy expression nearby.

"Is he awake?"

Mu Feng's familiar voice rang out in surprise. Then, he hurriedly walked over and let out a sigh of relief when he saw Mu Chen safe and sound.

"Dad, what is this all about?"

Mu Chen rubbed his head and asked.

"You were affected by the flames' impact caused by the Nine Nether Bird's self-destruction and you've been in a coma up until now. Luckily, it doesn't seem to be a major issue." Mu Feng explained. If anything

happened to Mu Chen, he really didn't know how he would face it.

Mu Chen was stunned when he heard this. He vaguely remembered that a black flame was charging towards him before he fainted.

"What about the Nine Nether Bird? Did it die?" Mu Chen shook his head as he asked.

"Yes." Mu Feng nodded with a bit of regret. Through the self-destruction, nothing was left behind of the Nine Nether Bird. They did not obtain any harvest this time. However, at least the Liu Territory also headed back empty-handed. Thus, this could already be considered a success for the Mu Territory since the other goal of this trip was to stop the Liu Territory.

Mu Chen also felt a bit of pity. That was an existence ranked 11thon the Myriad Beast Record's Earth Ranking. It was not something you could meet easily. He really didn't know just how powerful one would be if they managed to ingest its Spiritual Beast Soul Essence.

"We have already passed through the Black Eerie Swamp and we're currently heading back to the Mu Territory." Zhou Ye smiled as he spoke: "It was all thanks to Little Mu for the Black Eerie Swamp's trip this time. Otherwise, we would not be able to catch up with the Liu Territory and see that terrifying scene."

"Ohoho, yes, there's a successor for the Territory Lord now. Congratulations." Duan Wei and the others smiled as he spoke. Little Mu had truly impressed them during the Black Eerie Swamp trip.

After hearing these words, Mu Feng could not help but be proud. He immediately waved his hand and said: "Everybody should increase the alertness level after we head back from this trip. Since the Liu Territory came back empty-handed, they would definitely be angry at our Mu Territory. Moreover, with their personality, they would not let this go easily."

Everybody agreed when they heard this and then they accelerated. Although they have already exited the Black Eerie Swamp, they still felt the chills after seeing the earth-shattering scene earlier. They only wanted to get away from that place as far as possible.

While Mu Chen sat on the stretcher, he immediately rubbed his head. Then, he turned around and stared at the Black Eerie Swamp in the distant. He did not know why, but he had a strange feeling that the Nine Nether Bird hasn't died yet.

Two days later, Mu Feng and the others returned back to the Mu Territory. The dusty group of people felt relieved while they thought back about the dangerous trip they had. They finally managed to return alive.

Mu Feng dismissed everybody and allowed them to rest. As for Mu Chen, he hobbled for a while and returned back to his room. He immediately took a big nap. It was evident that he was completely exhausted because of the past few days.

When Mu Chen woke up from his deep slumber, it was already evening. He stared blankly at the quiet night before stretching his waist.

"It's time to train." Mu Chen chuckled and sat cross-legged. He closed his eyes slightly and quickly entered the state of cultivation. The surrounding air trembled around him and tiny traces of Spiritual Aura from the world were attracted over. Then, it finally entered Mu Chen's body through Mu Chen's breathing.

He maintained this state of cultivation for approximately an hour. Then, all of a sudden, he opened his eyes. Within the dark night, his black eyes revealed amazement and hints of joy.

This is because he noticed that the Spiritual Energy within his aurasea had actually reached a state of being completely full. This represents that he had already reached the pinnacle of a Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase. It also meant that he could charge at the Spiritual Rotation Stage!

"It was actually this fast."

Mu Chen was delighted. He originally thought that it would take at least another two weeks or so. Never did he expect that the Black Eerie Swamp trip would have brought him that much benefit.

After a while, Mu Chen gradually suppressed the joy within his heart and clenched his palms as an exquisite jaded box appeared within his

hand. Within the jaded box lies a round emerald shape elixir. It was the Accumulation Elixir that he had received as a reward during the Northern Spiritual Field Training.

This elixir would provide great assistance to the ones charging at the Spiritual Rotation Stage. He had never used it because he was waiting for the best moment to use it. And now, it was time.

Mu Chen picked up the emerald-like elixir and sniffed the faint fragrance emitted by it. His head immediately cleared up and he no longer hesitated as he threw the Accumulation Elixir into his mouth.

Nom.

The Accumulation Elixir immediately melted and turned into rumbling Spiritual Energy. It seemed to pour through Mu Chen's body like a flood.

Mu Chen quickly closed his eyes as he circulated the Great Pagoda Art. He steadily ingested the dense Spiritual Energy bit by bit and poured it into his aurasea.

With the influx of the large amount of Spiritual Energy, many changes appeared in his aurasea. The clump of Spiritual Energy that was like a nebula slowly shrank. While it was shrinking, Mu Chen could feel the Spiritual Energy within his body becoming purer and fiercer.

It requires a lot of Spiritual Energy for one to charge at the Spiritual Rotation Stage. Luckily, Mu Chen had the Accumulation Elixir. Therefore, he was about to omit some trouble during this step. He stabilized his mind and slowly ingested the elixir's medical power as he sent it all into his aurasea.

Within his aurasea, the originally palm-sized clump of Spiritual Energy had turned into the size of a chicken egg. However, the edge of the clump had become rounder. Moreover, the black Spiritual Energy had become increasingly abstruse.

The clump of Spiritual Energy was still compressing itself while Mu Chen continued to send Spiritual Energy within his aurasea.

This process lasted for around ten minute before the compression finally

stopped. The chicken egg-sized clump of Spiritual Energy had become the size of a pigeon's egg.

Mu Chen could sense the change happening within his aurasea and quietly entered with his mind. He noticed that a pitched-black light wheel gradually floated on top of the pigeon egg.

The Spiritual Energy light wheel was many times smaller than the clump earlier. However, Mu Chen could sense how dense the Spiritual Energy within it was.

It had far surpassed the Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase!

Mu Chen stared at the small and delicate Spiritual Energy light wheel as joy welled up from his heart. He had finally broken through the Spiritual Movement Stage and advanced into the Spiritual Rotation Stage.

Just by this, he had reached the basic acceptance conditions for the "Five Great Academies".

Although he did not feel surprised that he achieved this step, the feeling of becoming stronger was extremely wonderful. Perhaps the guys from the Spiritual Road had completed the final step and obtained a power far beyond his, but so what?

I, Mu Chen, was not inferior to any of you in the Spiritual Road. And I can do the same in the Great Thousand World!

Mu Chen pursed his lips and a sense of pride and persistence emerged on the boy's handsome face.

After he had successfully condensed the spiritual wheel, Mu Chen had completely relaxed. But just when he was about to exit this state, a familiar cry rang out from within his mind.

Li!

This cry was not loud, but Mu Chen seemed to have been struck by lightning when he heard it. His entire body stiffens as a fizzing sound rang out within his mind.

Boom!

Just when Mu Chen's mind lost its capability to think when it heard this cry, he discovered a fierce fluctuation appearing from within his body. Then, it directly charged at his mind as if it was trying to devour his consciousness!

The soul essence swallowing its owner?

This situation stunned Mu Chen as his body instantly turned cold. Then, horror appeared within his eyes.

Chapter 67: A Page of Black Paper Seals the Spirit Bird

This sudden turn of events had completely made Mu Chen's mind enter a state of chaos and horror. His face also turned extremely pale.

The soul essence swallowing its owner?

Damn it, he had just advanced into the Spiritual Rotation Stage and did not have the strength to even ingest a Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence. How could such a thing appear within his body?

Mu Chen's mind was completely stunned. However, he was still somewhat calm so he quickly recovered from the chaos. It was not the time for him to think why this had happened, instead, he must focus on protecting his life!

The soul essence swallowing its owner was something quite common. A few Spirit Stage powerhouses were quite ambitious and wanted to ingest a powerful Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence. However, they did not realise that it was an extremely dangerous act. In order to ingest the Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence, you must first wipe out the consciousness of the Spiritual Beast. They would definitely have to suffer the resistance of the Spiritual Beast while they perform this act. Some of the fiercer Spiritual Beasts would even take the opportunity to counterattack and attempt to swallow its owner instead. If this were to happen, it was almost certain that the owner would die.

An extremely fierce fluctuation charged straight at Mu Chen's mind and attempted to erase his consciousness. While facing this sort of attack from within his body, Mu Chen did not have many ways to deal with it. He immediately took a deep breath and manipulated the Spiritual Energy within his body to circulate it through his meridians. Then, he made it crash against each other.

Dong!

A low and silent sound echoed within Mu Chen's body. This tremor

caused his throat to suddenly taste sweet. However, the Spiritual Energy collision also formed a Spiritual Energy fluctuation. These fluctuations quickly spread out and collided with the fierce fluctuation that was charging towards Mu Chen's mind.

As the two fluctuations collided with each other, Mu Chen felt dizzy again within his mind. However, he bit his tongue tightly and used the pain to keep himself awake. Afterwards, he saw a black flame surging within his body.

The black flames drifted around and an elegant black shadow with wings appeared within the flames.

"It's the Nine Nether Bird!"

Mu Chen saw the black shadow that had left a deep impression on him and his heart immediately trembled. He would never have imagined that the Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence that entered his body would be the Nine Nether Bird's Soul Essence!

"It was then!"

Mu Chen suddenly recalled the instant before he had fallen unconscious in the Black Eerie Swamp. The black flame that charged at him had something hidden within it. Could it be that the Nine Nether Bird's Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence was hidden within it? And that it entered his body through it?

"Damn it!"

Mu Chen cursed and did not feel any delight from the fact that the Nine Nether Bird's Soul Essence was within his body. He could only feel an irregular heartbeat as it was impossible for him to ingest it with his strength right now. If that's the case, there is only one result: his consciousness would be erased by the Nine Nether Bird. Moreover, the vicious and cunning Nine Nether Bird might even use a special method to occupy his body to be reborn again.

Mu Chen was definitely not happy to see such a scene.

"Li!"

Within the black flames, the Nine Nether Bird seemed to be aware of Mu Chen's gaze and instantly let out a fierce cry. The black flames turned around and drilled towards Mu Chen's aurasea.

It was smart. It knew that Mu Chen would not be able to stop him once his aurasea was destroyed. After destroying his Spiritual Energy, he would become a useless person.

"What a vicious beast!"

Mu Chen was shocked by the Nine Nether Bird's viciousness. He angrily cursed as he mobilized his Spiritual Energy and attempted to stop the Nine Nether Bird.

The Nine Nether Bird within the black flames seemed to have noticed the surging Spiritual Energy. Within its sharp eyes, a hint of contempt flashed. Just what level of an existence is it? Even if it had no body, it was not something which a boy, who had just entered the Spiritual Rotation Stage, could deal with.

The black flames instantly turned a lot brighter and it flapped its wings. Then, flames directly charged at the surging Spiritual Energy. However, Mu Chen could tell that the Spiritual Energy within his body had completely evaporated away when it collided against the black flames.

To the Nine Nether Bird, this sort of blockade was simply ineffective against it. On one side, it was a super Spiritual Beast, whose name was vicious and reputed within the world. On the other side, he was a boy, who was only at the Spiritual Rotation Stage. They simply weren't at the same level.

Mu Chen also noticed the gap between the two of them. However, he did not give up because of this. Instead, he gritted his teeth and a hint of ruthlessness appeared in his eyes. If you want to cripple me, then I won't let you be better off either!

Mu Chen moved his mind and the Spiritual Energy light wheel that was just formed slowly circulated. The Spiritual Energy that was stored within it was completely drawn out by him. Then, it charged towards the black flames approaching his aurasea mercilessly.

Chi Chi!

The black flames continued to head forward and wherever it passed, the Spiritual Energy evaporated. Even when Mu Chen did everything to stop the black flames were they only delayed for a moment. It was evident that it could not stop the Nine Nether Bird.

Within ten short breathes, the black flames have already broken through all the Spiritual Energy barriers that Mu Chen had placed up. Outside of his aurasea, the Nine Nether Bird's eyes seemed to have emerged on the black flames as it revealed a touch of pride.

Swish!

Under Mu Chen's furious gaze, the black flames moved and entered his aurasea. A burning pain instantly emitted out and caused Mu Chen's face to become distorted.

He could see the Nine Nether Bird heading towards the Spiritual Energy light wheel that was just formed after entering his aurasea. It roared and attempted to destroy it.

The Spiritual Energy light wheel embodies all the Spiritual Energy that Mu Chen had condensed through his life. If it was destroyed, Mu Chen's efforts in training would instantly be wasted.

It was obvious that Mu Chen's schemes were completely powerless in face of such an existence. This difference was not something that schemes could help make up for. Thus, he could only angrily stare at the Nine Nether Bird charging at his Spiritual Energy light wheel.

"I'll go all out against you!"

In the final moments, Mu Chen let out a furious shout. He did not care and forced his Spiritual Energy light wheel to self-destruct. This was the only thing he could still do. Although he would pay a great price, it would still be better than the Nine Nether Bird erasing his consciousness!

The Spiritual Energy light wheel erupted out lights. This sort of Spiritual Energy had also suddenly become particular violent. But just when it was the moment when Mu Chen was going to fight to the bitter end against

the Nine Nether Bird, a bell-like sound echoed within his aurasea.

Under this strange sound, Mu Chen's rampaging Spiritual Energy light wheel that was about to explode actually calmed down a bit.

Mu Chen watched this scene and stared at the surface of the Spiritual Energy light wheel. At that location, a page of black paper was quietly lying down. It seems that the sound was issued out from that place.

"This"

Mu Chen wanted to cry, but tears did not flow out. After he obtained the mysterious black paper which he could not detect, it had always remained in his body. Never did it show any effects, but who would have expected that it would suppress the final ability that could take out the Nine Nether Bird's life in this critical moment.

As the Spiritual Energy light wheel was suppressed, the black flames formed by the Nine Nether Bird were close at hand. The black flames caused the Spiritual Energy light wheel within his aurasea to show signs of becoming distorted.

"It's over."

Seeing this scene, Mu Chen let out a sigh of despair.

Dong!

Just when the fierce black flames were about to smash into the Spiritual Energy light wheel, a black light screen descended down.

Bang!

The black flames that were almost always harmful were actually knocked back. Then, a hint of surprise appeared in the Nine Nether Bird's eyes within the black flames.

Mu Chen was also stunned when he saw that scene. He hurriedly looked at the thin page of black paper. This was because a thin layer of a black light barrier descended down from it.

"Buzz."

A strange sound that sounded like Sanskrit started to come out from the page of black paper. Then, dark purple lights emerged on the surface of the black paper that had always remained motionless.

Swoosh.

When these lights appeared, it actually formed into a dark purple light barrier and enveloped the black flames formed by the Nine Nether Bird within it.

This unforeseeable development surprised the Nine Nether Bird. It hurriedly charged at the light barrier. But what shocked Mu Chen was that the light barrier was completely unmoving against the Nine Nether Bird's charge.

It was not the end after the light barrier was formed. A purple light started to gather beneath the Nine Nether Bird and gradually extended outwards. It actually turned into purple mandala flowers.

Obscure, dark gold engravings seemed to be covered on the mandala's flower petals. A hint of horror instantly appeared within the Nine Nether Bird's eyes when it saw the mandala flower and it let out a frightened cry.

The mysterious dark purple mandala flower was like a cage and it bounded the black flames formed by the Nine Nether Bird. Then, it slowly drifted away and landed on top of the thin black paper.

A mysterious flower cage completely trapped the Nine Nether Bird within it.

As the Nine Nether Bird became trapped, the rampage within Mu Chen's aurasea gradually subsided. The black flames also began to fade and it turned into a baby fist-sized mini Nine Nether Bird.

It struggled angrily, but it could not escape the dark purple mandala flower. Therefore, it could only stop and close its fierce and hateful eyes as it prepared to gather strength for an opportunity.

Mu Chen was completely stunned as he watched this strange battle within his aurasea. Only after a while did he finally recover from his shock. Then, he stared blankly at the dark purple mandala flower on top

of the page of black paper.

It was resolved like this?

Chapter 68: Spiritual Flame Array

When Mu Chen woke up in the morning, his mind was still somewhat confused. If it wasn't for the black paper's purple mandala flower within his aura sea and the trapped Nine Nether Bird, he would have thought that what had happened last night was all a dream.

"Damn beast."

Mu Chen gradually accepted the situation after a long time. He fiercely rubbed his face and cursed furiously. Although the Nine Nether Bird was caged by the mysterious black paper, he still felt uneasy. After all, the Nine Nether Bird was too powerful. It may be extremely weak right now, but what would he do if the mysterious black paper could not stop it after the Nine Nether Bird had recovered its strength in the future?

This thing that was left within his body was like an unstable bomb. It could turn him completely helpless at any time.

Only after he had tasted the fierceness and ruthlessness of the Nine Nether Bird was Mu Chen aware of how naive he was of hoping to ingest it. With the Nine Nether Bird's pride, Mu Chen could guarantee that this damn beast would fight to the bitter end if anyone attempts to forcibly ingest it.

What's the point of holding this sort of Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence?

Mu Chen eventually calmed down after furiously scolding the Nine Nether Bird deep down inside. The situation has already happened, no matter how much he vents it out, he can't change anything. Fortunately for him, the Nine Nether Bird was currently trapped by the black paper, so he had some time to think of a way to deal with the Nine Nether Bird.

He got up from his bed and slightly organized himself before leaving the room. Then, he walked to the place where he would learn about Spiritual Arrays from Mister Wen Ling. After the Black Eerie Swamp trip, Mu Chen had understood how amazing Spiritual Arrays are and his interest in it increased significantly. Moreover, the ones that he was able to arrange were only tiny Spiritual Arrays, they weren't even considered Rank 1

Spiritual Arrays.

In the training room that he would usually practice in, Mu Chen did not see Mister Wen Ling. Presumably, he had arrived too earlier. However, he was not impatient and sat down cross-legged on the cushions. He then revealed a pondering expression. Right now, he had officially advanced to the Spiritual Rotation Stage and could feel that the Spiritual Energy density within his body had increased significantly. Furthermore, he had become more proficient in his control over Spiritual Energy.

"I wonder how many Spiritual Seals I would be able to condense?"

Mu Chen muttered to himself as a hint of expectation flashed through his eyes. He immediately stretched out his palm and his palm spun. Dark black Spiritual Energy gushed out from it and surrounded his palm completely. Mu Chen was completely satisfied about the speed and the density of the Spiritual Energy. As expected from the Spiritual Rotation Stage, the efficiency of mobilizing Spiritual Energy greatly surpassed the Spiritual Movement Stage.

The dark black Spiritual Energy on Mu Chen's fingertips quickly gathered and changed. 8 Spiritual Seals seemed to be condensed in succession at a fast pace. Then, a 9thSpiritual Seal quietly condensed when Mu Chen moved his fingertips.

Mu Chen stared at the 9thSpiritual Seal, but he did not stop at this. The dark black Spiritual Energy continued to condense and a 10th, 11thSpiritual Seal flashed. In the end, the amount of Spiritual Seals stopped at the 12thSeal.

Mu Chen watched the 12 Spiritual Seals on his palm. He was just barely satisfied with this result as he could feel that this wasn't the limit for him. However, he had just advanced to the Spiritual Rotation Stage and required a little bit of time to stabilize. When that happens, he believed that he would be able to do better.

Mu Chen smiled for himself when he saw his own progress. He clenched his hand and the 12 Spiritual Seals vanished. Afterwards, sounds of footsteps could be heard outside the door. Then, the door was pushed

open and Wen Ling entered.

"Mister Wen."

Seeing this, Mu Chen hurriedly got up and greeted Wen Ling.

Wen Ling gestured with his hand and stared at the boy in front of him. A smile was plastered on his strict face as he said: "I heard from the Territory Lord that you used tiny Spiritual Arrays at the Black Eerie Swamp. You've learned quickly."

Wen Ling was asked by Mu Feng to teach Mu Chen about Spiritual Arrays and the latter was able to quickly enter the doorway for Spiritual Arrays. This gave him quite a bit of face. However, he must admit that the majority of it was because Mu Chen had quite the talent in the aspects of Spiritual Arrays.

Mu Chen smiled embarrassedly. The tiny Spiritual Arrays that he used could only trick Spiritual Beasts with low intelligence.

"You probably have to practice by yourself for the next two days." Wen Ling looked at Mu Chen and said: "Your father is planning to construct a Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array within the Mu City. This level of Spirit Convergence Array isn't something that I could arrange by myself. Therefore, your father paid a great price to invite 3 other Rank 1 Spiritual Array Masters to help. During this period of time, I would have to work together with them to see if it will work out."

A "Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array". Mu Chen was slightly surprised. In the entire Northern Spiritual Realm, the only Rank 3 Spirit Convergence Array was in the Northern Spiritual Academy. As for a Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array, only the Liu Territory had it. Even the Mu Territory only had a Rank 1 Spirit Convergence Array. This must be what his dad has been brooding about. After all, a Spirit Convergence Array is a symbol to show how powerful a force is. For the Liu Territory to be able to become the strongest territory out of the nine territories, the Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array had to play a part in it.

However, a Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array wasn't something that could be easily constructed. Even for a few Rank 2 Spiritual Array Masters,

they would not be confident that they could arrange it. Moreover, constructing a Spirit Convergence Array requires a large amount of rare materials. Thus, it was extremely costly. It would be a heavy blow to the Mu Territory if it were to fail. This is why Mu Feng did not recklessly attempt it and endured it all these years. From the looks of it, his dad finally couldn't endure it any longer.

But even if they invited another 3 Rank 1 Spiritual Array Masters to work together with Wen Ling, it was still hard to say if they would succeed on arranging the Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array.

"Yes, Mister Wen. If you're busy, it's fine if you focus on your affairs." Mu Chen nodded his head.

Wen Ling gave a nod. It seems that he was quite hard-pressed because of the Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array. He did not plan on saying anything more and intended to leave as he turned away.

"About that, Mister Wen." Mu Chen suddenly spoke up. He looked at Wen Ling, who was puzzled, and hesitated before saying: "I think I have some understanding about the tiny Spiritual Arrays now. I wonder if Mister Wen could give me a scroll of a Rank 1 Diagram Array so I can study it?"

After hearing that Mu Chen wanted to study a Rank 1 Diagram Array, Wen Ling frowned. His face became serious again: "It's good that you have talent, but did you forget the words of how I told you not to be arrogant? A Rank 1 Spiritual Arrays requires at least 15 Spiritual Seals. The complexity of it also far surpasses a tiny Spiritual Array. If you would like to study on a Rank 1 Diagram Array, then you should wait until you formed 10 Spiritual Seals"

Before he even finishing speaking, he suddenly paused. Surprise emerged on his strict face because he saw the boy lifting up his palm. Then, the required 10 Spiritual Seals he mentioned emerged on his fingertips.

"You"

Wen Ling was stunned as he stared at the 10 Spiritual Seals on Mu

Chen's fingertips. He only recovered from his shock after a while before staring strangely at Mu Chen. Just for how long did this guy come in contact with Spiritual Array Cultivation? He could actually already form 10 Spiritual Seals. Isn't the talent he displayed in this area too terrifying?

"Cough"

Wen Ling let out a dry cough and concealed the shock on his face as he said: "Since you've already reached it, then I'll allow it."

While he said this, he pulled out a red Diagram Array from within his arms and handed it over to Mu Chen: "This scroll is a rather simple Rank 1 Spiritual Array. Its name is the Spiritual Flame Array. This Spiritual Array requires at least 15 Spiritual Seals in order to arrange it. It's fine if you're going to study about it, but do not attempt to arrange it. Otherwise, it would not be fun if the Spiritual Array backfires on you."

Mu Chen nodded as he excitedly accepted the red Diagram Array.

Seeing this, Wen Ling let go of his hand and immediately left. He still had to discuss with the other 3 Spiritual Array Masters that were invited regarding about how they should construct the Rank 2 Spiritual Array. This was a hassle. However, it might be a good opportunity for him. He might be able to find a catalyst, which would improve himself, and allow him to advance to a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master.

Seeing Wen Ling depart, Mu Chen carefully opened up the scroll for the Rank 1 Spiritual Array. Then, a red light flashed as a faint heat emerged. Mu Chen focused his mind and concentrated his eyes on it.

Red lights were flashing on the Diagram Array. Light beams would extend out and intertwine with each other and form a rather complex outline.

Mu Chen could not help but smack his lips as he stared at the Diagram Array, which would make ordinary people dizzy. The Rank 1 Spiritual Array was indeed a lot more complex than a tiny Spiritual Array. However, it made him even more interested.

Mu Chen was immersed in the "Spiritual Flame Array" and studied the

complex Spiritual beams outline within it. Only after a while, he slowly retracted his gaze. Although he was quite eager to test it out, he would not attempt it recklessly. After all, this Rank 1 Spiritual Array requires at least 15 Spiritual Seals and it was evident that he had not reached the level right now.

"It seems that I should properly condense for a while."

Mu Chen was content as he put away the Diagram Array. Then, he closed his eyes and attempted to condense more Spiritual Seals.

During the next few days, Wen Ling was busy with the matter of constructing a Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array. He did not have much time to teach Mu Chen and the latter was happily at leisure. He would spend the entire time attempting to condense Spiritual Seals.

His efforts brought a great effect. As Mu Chen had gradually adapted to the Spiritual Rotation Stage, his control over his Spiritual Energy had become more proficient. Thus, on the fifth day, he had successfully increased the amount of Spiritual Seals to 15.

After the amount of Spiritual Seals had reached 15, Mu Chen could not conceal the excitement within his heart. Then, the excited youth brought out the "Spiritual Flame Array" once again. Right now, he had finally become qualified to attempt a true Rank 1 Spiritual Array.

Chapter 69: Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array

In the courtyard of the Mu Estate, Mu Chen was standing straight as excitement surged through his eyes. After many days of training, he had finally condensed 15 Spiritual Seals. This also reached the basic requirements for the “Spiritual Flame Array”.

And he was also finally able to test just how powerful a Rank 1 Spiritual Array was.

Mu Chen’s palm opened up and dark black Spiritual Energy flashed before it turned into shining, black Spiritual Seals. He manipulated the Spiritual Seals and channeled them to enter the air. Then, the Spiritual Seals seemed to have vanish like raindrops falling in the ocean. The only thing that others could perceive was a strange, rippling fluctuation.

The complexity of arranging a Rank 1 Spiritual Array was far beyond a tiny Spiritual Array. Although Mu Chen had constantlystudied the Diagram Array of the “Spiritual Flame Array” over the past few days, it was still the first time attempting it for him. Thus, he was still quite not used to it. Sweat had emerged on his forehead as he channeled the 15 Spiritual Seals into the air.

“Buzz.”

The 15 Spiritual Seals fused into the air and formed Spiritual Energy lights which were hard to see with the naked eye. Then, Mu Chen controlled his thoughts and manipulated the Spiritual Energy lights to extend into light beams. In the end, the light beams were intertwined with each other.

The Diagram Array was rather complex, so Mu Chen was quite busy. Arranging the complicated Diagram Array requires fine control and a single mistake would lead to failure.

It was evident that a Rank 1 Spiritual Array was not that easy to arrange. Although Mu Chen was quite talented in that area, he was not able to

accomplish it in one attempt.

Thus, when the light beams for the Diagram Array extended to a complicated step, he finally made a mistake. A Spiritual Energy light beam had extended to the wrong location.

The instant that the Spiritual Energy light beam's position was off, Mu Chen secretly shouted out sh*t. Then, he saw the air in front of him emitting out a violent Spiritual Energy fluctuation. A fiery red color surged out from that location and one could faintly see the unfinished shape of the Spiritual Array.

Boom!

The violent fiery red Spiritual Energy directly bombarded on Mu Chen's body and a deep sound rang out. It made Mu Chen fly back dozens of meters and his depressed appearance made him seem like he was quite awkward.

Afterwards, Mu Chen climbed up from the ground. Luckily, he did not suffer any major injuries. He patted his body casually and pondered for a while as he thought back to the area where he had failed. Lights constantly flashed within his black eyes.

Mu Chen's first attempt on arranging a Rank 1 Spiritual Array had ended with failure. However, he did not give up. Instead, it aroused his stubbornness and he started attempting it again after a brief rest.

But the result...

Boom! Boom!

In the courtyard, muffled sounds rang out endlessly through the afternoon. At that location, a youthful figure was endlessly being blown away. The patrolling guards looked at each other when they heard the sounds, but they did not dare to disturb Mu Chen's training.

Mu Chen, who was quite awkward, finally stopped his training when night was approaching. He had spent an entire afternoon in failure. However, this did not take a blow to his confidence. This is because he had overcome the part where he had failed in every time he failed. Based on

this speed, he would soon be able to arrange the “Spiritual Flame Array”.

As he thought about this, Mu Chen let out a grin and clapped his hands. Then he turned around and left.

For the next three days, Mu Chen had placed almost all his energy on the “Spiritual Flame Array”. He would attempt it over and over again in the courtyard, yet he would fail every single time.

Sometimes, the patrolling guards within the estate would feel surprised when they noticed Mu Chen crawling up from the ground helplessly. They did not know what Mu Chen was practicing in, but his attitude of climbing up and ignoring all those failures made them admire his perseverance and insistence.

“The Little Lord is quite diligent. It seems that there is a successor for the Mu Territory in the future.” The guards thought this as they walked lightly. They did not want to disturb the boy who was training in the courtyard.

Mu Chen’s failures continued to persist. This continued until the 3rdday’s evening before there was a slight change.

The boy in the courtyard was completely awkward again, only his eyes were still flashing. At this moment, he had a serious expression and 15 Spiritual Seals danced around his fingertips. They immediately integrated into the air and brought out a Spiritual Energy fluctuation.

Compared to the past few days, Mu Chen’s technique had greatly improved. It seems that the failures he had experienced allowed him to progress significantly.

As the fluctuations occurred in the air, the Spiritual Aura within the world also flew quickly over. A red light suddenly emerged in front of Mu Chen and a complicated red light array gradually emerged.

Within the fiery red light array, lights surged like a flame travelling back and forth. It looked exceptionally majestic.

Mu Chen stared at the finally completed “Spiritual Flame Array” and delight poured out from his eyes. He had finally succeeded after many

failures!

Although the “Spiritual Flame Array” still showed some signs of instability at the moment, this was still a successful arrangement made by Mu Chen.

“Go!”

Mu Chen suppressed the joy within his heart and his fingers moved. Two of his fingers weren’t bent and pointed at a giant boulder that was like a mountain in the courtyard.

Buzz.

A fiery light suddenly emerged on the Spiritual Flame Array. Then, a red flame light pillar erupted out like a volcano. It shot off fiercely from the Spiritual Array and bombarded the giant boulder.

Bang!

The earth seemed to tremble at this moment. The giant boulder that was like a mini-sized room instantly shattered and gravel exploded out. It made the courtyard into a big mess.

“What an amazing power!”

Surprised filled Mu Chen’s face as he witnessed the power of the Spiritual Flame Array. This power was probably something that even a Spiritual Rotation Stage Middle Phase powerhouse would find hard to endure. A Rank 1 Spiritual Array truly deserves its reputation. However, the consumption was quite high for him as well.

“Little Lord!”

The guards outside of the courtyard also heard the commotion and hurriedly rushed in. They stared at the mess on the ground and were stunned. Originally, they thought that Mu Chen had suffered an enemy attack and quickly rushed over.

“It’s fine. I did this all by myself.”

Mu Chen smiled and waved his hand. He stared at the awkward appearance he had and smiled helplessly. Then, he turned around and

entered the house to clean himself up while the guards exchanged gazes with each other. When did the Little Lord become so powerful? He actually destroyed a mountain-like boulder. Not even their captain, who had reached the Spiritual Rotation Stage, could do it.

After Mu Chen cleaned himself up, he walked out of the room and slipped away as he noticed the guards cleaning up the courtyard. He was quite exhausted after studying the "Spiritual Flame Array" overnight for a couple of days.

Mu Chen strolled down the Mu Estate leisurely and walked near the Meeting Room. Then, he noticed lights within it. It was already this late, yet his dad was still discussing about some affairs?

Mu Chen thought for a moment and walked over. He immediately heard a loud sound coming from the Meeting Room. The sound was quite familiar as it was the sound of Mu Feng smacking the table in fury.

His dad hasn't been so furious in a long time, what had happened?

Mu Chen hesitated for a moment before straining his ears to listen.

Within the Meeting Room, Mu Feng's face was dark with rage. The table in front of him was smashed to pieces by him. He stood up and angrily shouted: "Those Liu Territory's as*holes. They really like obstructing us secretly!"

Beside him, Zhou Ye also had a gloomy expression and immediately exclaimed: "Those bastards. They spent a great deal of money purchasing the materials and restraining many Spiritual Array Masters when they heard that we were going to construct a Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array. With the remaining materials we have left, we cannot fail again."

Mu Feng clenched his fist tightly and looked at the other four figures in the room. One of the people in the room was Wen Ling. As for the others, they were all middle-aged individuals. They must be the other three Rank 1 Spiritual Array Masters that Mu Feng had invited over.

"Mister Wen Ling, what other difficulties are we facing now in order to construct a Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array?" Mu Feng lowered his voice

and asked slowly.

Wen Ling sighed and said: “Territory Lord. We have already attempted once over the past few days. However, it ended in failure and we wasted a lot of materials. Based on our conjecture, we probably require another Rank 1 Spiritual Array Master to help us.”

Zhou Ye frowned and said: “We have basically invited all the Spiritual Array Masters within the Mu Territory. With the Liu Territory’s obstruction, it would probably be difficult to find another Rank 1 Spiritual Array Master.”

Wen Ling let out a bitter laugh. He also knew that it was troublesome, but there was no other way. They had tried it before and knew that it was not possible with just the four of them.

“Zhou Ye.” Mu Feng’s eyes flashed and immediately waved his hand as he said: “Send the word out to the Spiritual Array Masters which the Liu Territory had drawn away that the Mu Territory will double whatever the Liu Territory had promised them as long as they help the Mu Territory!”

Zhou Ye was shocked. This means that they would have to pay a great price. Moreover, these words mean that the cunning Spiritual Array Masters would probably take the opportunity to squeeze every last bit out from them. If that’s the case, it would be unfair to the other three Spiritual Array Masters in front of them. It would easily show that they were being unfair.

Thinking about this, he glanced at the other 3 Spiritual Array Masters. As expected, they were somewhat unnatural.

“The Territory Lord should not say these words out in anger. This might cause us to crumble down instead.” Wen Ling said with a wry smile.

At this moment, Mu Feng seemed to have woken up. He first cupped his fists to the other three Spiritual Array Masters before sitting back down as he gritted his teeth with a gloomy expression. Right now, news about the Mu Territory wanting to construct a Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array has spread out. If they were not ableto accomplish it, they would become a joke.

Silence filled the Meeting Room again and the atmosphere was quite depressing.

Creak.

Just when everybody was silent, the tightly closed door was suddenly pushed open. Mu Feng frowned and was about to shout. However, he immediately swallowed it back down when he saw Mu Chen's figure.

Mu Chen smiled at Mu Feng and then turned around to Wen Ling as he said: "Mister Wen, I see that you're missing a Spiritual Array Master. Would it be fine if I were to take that spot?"

Chapter 70: Participation

The atmosphere within the Meeting Room seemed to have slightly frozen due to Mu Chen's sentence. Then, Mu Feng and the others directed their surprised eyes at Mu Chen.

"What madness are you saying?" Mu Feng scolded him as he frowned.

Wen Ling also frowned. Constructing a Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array was a rather troublesome matter. Only a Rank 1 Spiritual Array Master would be able to help. Although Mu Chen had quite the talent in the area of Spiritual Arrays, he had only just started. How could he withstand such responsibilities?

"Ohoho, constructing a Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array isn't something that you could casually participate in. Otherwise, if an accident was to occur, the loss of the materials would be a serious blow to the Mu Territory." A middle-aged man with thick eyebrows smiled faintly. It was evident that he treated Mu Chen's words as a boy acting arrogant.

The other two Rank 1 Spiritual Array Masters also nodded their heads. If a brat was able to participate in this, then why would they need them?

"Mister Wen, if you're able to arrange a Rank 1 Spiritual Array, would you be barely considered as a Rank 1 Spiritual Array Master?" Mu Chen ignored them and asked Wen Ling with a smile.

Wen Ling hesitated and said: "In a broad sense, that is true..."

"I have already successfully arranged the Rank 1 Spiritual Array "Spiritual Flame Array" that you have handed over to me." Mu Chen said.

Wen Ling's voice suddenly stopped. He paused for half a second before immediately shouting out: "How is that possible?!"

"You can arrange the "Spiritual Flame Array"?" The other three Rank 1 Spiritual Array Masters stared at Mu Chen in disbelief. They could not believe that a young boy would have reached the same level as them.

Mu Feng and Zhou Ye also stared at Mu Chen with a surprised expressions. However, the two of them knew Mu Chen pretty well. Mu

Chen would not randomly spout nonsense in front of them. If he says that he could arrange the “Spiritual Flame Array”, there was a certain degree of truth to it.

“You...”

Wen Ling also recovered from the shock and stared doubtfully at Mu Chen as if he still did not believe him: “If that’s the case, then try arranging it out in front of us.”

Mu Chen could not help but nod. He gripped his hand and dark black Spiritual Energy condensed. Then, 15 black Spiritual Seals flashed as it was formed.

“He’s actually able to form 15 Spiritual Seals!”

The three Rank 1 Spiritual Array Masters’ faces turned serious when they saw this. The amount of Spiritual Seals that they were able to condense were only 17. And now, a boy, who was only in his teens, had already almost caught up to them. Just how frightening was his talent regarding Spiritual Arrays?

Wen Ling’s mouth could not help but twitch when he saw the 15 Spiritual Seals. However, he did not say anything. He had already believed Mu Chen’s words within his heart.

Mu Chen’s face turned serious and he flicked his ten fingers. The 15 Spiritual Seals shot off into the air and integrated into the air. Then, his hands were rapidly changing seals.

Buzz.

As Mu Chen’s seals changed, everybody at the scene could feel the temperature in the room rapidly increasing. The Spiritual Energy within the world was rapidly gathering in the air in front of them.

Everybody at the scene were all individuals with keen perception. Thus, they could vaguely see the quickly forming complex light diagram within the air. A light of fire surged through the Array.

The time slowly passed. After a while, Mu Chen finally stopped his

hands from changing. In the air in front of them, a fiery red Spiritual Array gradually emerged as it enveloped half the Meeting Room.

"This..." Wen Ling had a complicated expression as he stared at the formed Spiritual Array. He could not help but sigh as he said: "This is definitely the Spiritual Flame Array."

The other three Rank 1 Spiritual Array Masters beside him exchanged gazes. They immediately let out a bitter laugh. A boy, who was in his teens, was a Rank 1 Spiritual Array Master? It was the first time they saw it in their lives. Just what kind of freak is the Mu Territory's Little Lord?

Mu Feng and Zhou Ye's eyes were filled with joy. Mu Feng stood up and patted Mu Chen's shoulder as he said with a smile: "Atta boy, it seems that you've really inherited your mother's talent in this."

"Don't just ignore my efforts in it, okay?" Mu Chen said helplessly. If he did not spend a week fully immersed in studying the "Spiritual Flame Array" and crawled up after experiencing many failures, how could he have succeeded?

Mu Feng smiled as he nodded his head. He could not conceal the pride and content within his eyes. The anger he had towards the Liu Territory for obstructing him had completely vanished at this moment.

"Mister Wen, what do you think about Mu Chen? Would he be able to help?" Mu Feng looked at Wen Ling and asked.

Wen Ling pondered for a moment and said: "It's true that Mu Chen is able to condense the "Spiritual Flame Array". However, he had only just started out and cannot be considered as a true Rank 1 Spiritual Array Master. After all, he still needs to hone his experience and eyesight."

Mu Feng glanced at Mu Chen and also nodded his head. Indeed, no matter how talented Mu Chen was in this area, experience wasn't something which would come to him for no reason.

Mu Chen's face turned a little sour.

"Ohoho, but experience comes from slowly accumulating it. Constructing a Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array might be a great

opportunity for him. Right now, he can barely be qualified to participate in it." Wen Ling stared at Mu Chen, who was bitter, and smiled. Then, the tone of his voice changed.

Surprise quickly poured out from Mu Chen's eyes. He smiled and said: "Then, thank you, Mister Wen."

Wen Ling waved his hand. The eyes that stared at Mu Chen were filled with a surprisingly gentle light. Even he could not help but show some love towards such a talented boy. However, he also quickly understood that he probably wouldn't be able to give much guidance to Mu Chen due to his talent. This is because it was a simple matter for the latter to surpass him.

The other three Rank 1 Spiritual Array Masters did not refuse after hearing this. It was obvious that they were shaken by Mu Chen's earlier performance. According to Wen Ling, Mu Chen had not yet been exposed to Spiritual Arrays for a month, yet his abilities were about to catch up to them. Perhaps this boy would soon become the most powerful Spiritual Array Master within the Northern Spiritual Realm.

"I will take Mu Chen with me tomorrow to the Spirit Convergence Array's location. We will let him get familiar to it and attempt it after a couple of days. How about that?" Wen Ling looked at Mu Feng and asked.

"Okay."

Mu Feng did not object. As long as Mu Chen was able to improve his understanding on Spiritual Arrays, he would not feel pain even if Mu Chen was to waste all the materials that they gathered.

Since they had already made their decision, Wen Ling and the others talked about the details with Mu Feng before taking their leave.

"Boy, you should follow Mister Wen Ling tomorrow and learn properly. Don't just be satisfied with your talent. Cultivation in Spiritual Arrays isn't something that you can go far on with just talent." Mu Feng watched Wen Ling and the others depart before turning around to talk with Mu Chen.

"No matter what, you must not be ordinary in Spiritual Array Cultivation

even if you are ordinary in Spiritual Energy Cultivation. Otherwise, you will disgrace your mother."

Mu Chen rolled his eyes and could not help but ask: "Mother is really such an amazing Spiritual Array Master?"

"Your mother's achievement in Spiritual Arrays could be said to be unmatched within the Northern Spiritual Realm. Probably even in the Five Great Academies, nobody will be able to compare with her." Mu Feng said with a faint smile.

"She was that amazing?" Mu Chen was slightly stunned. He could endure it if it was the Spiritual Array Masters within the Northern Spiritual Realm. But what sort of place are the "Five Great Academies"? In that place, the strongest Spiritual Array Masters could probably annihilate a Spirit Stage powerhouse on a whim. Her mother was actually that amazing?

"But if mother is that amazing, dad, don't you feel a lot of pressure?" Mu Chen suddenly glanced at Mu Feng and joked around.

"When I first met your mother, her strength was somehow sealed to an incredibly low level. At that time, I treated her as a common, weak woman and protected her on the way. In the end, I nearly died..."

Mu Feng smiled. Then, he revealed some pride in his eyes and said: "Who would have imagined that she would become that powerful? However, your mother is very gentle, so why would I feel any pressure?"

"So you took advantage of her when she was in a perilous state. When mother had her strength sealed, it must be when she had her guard down the most. Otherwise, why would she fancy you, dad?" Mu Chen said as he understood the situation.

"Damn brat, you're looking for a spanking!" Mu Feng finally turned the shame into anger and pretending to hit Mu Chen. However, Mu Chen laughed as he scurried away while leaving behind a dumbfounded Mu Feng.

"That boy..."

Mu Feng put his fists away and immediately let out a pleased smile as he muttered: “Jing, our son is becoming more and more amazing. I think that he might be able to surpass you in the future. When that happens, it will be the time when our family reunites...”

After talking up to this point, he seemed to have remembered something and darkness flushed through his eyes. He clenched his hands tightly and his drooping face was quite dark.

“You can look down on me. I don’t care. It’s true that I do not have the ability, but I still have my son!”

On the following day, when morning had just arrived, Mu Chen had already exited his room. Outside of the Meeting Room, he saw Mu Feng, Wen Ling and the others, who had already been waiting for him.

“Let’s go.”

Mu Feng showed a faint smile when he saw Mu Chen arriving. He took the lead and charged out of the Mu Estate to the northern part of Mu City. At that location, there was a vast square. It was the place where Mu Territory’s guards would train daily. If they were able to arrange a Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array at this place, it would increase the attractiveness of the Mu Territory to a few powerhouses. After all, a Spirit Convergence Array would bring great benefits to cultivation.

Right now, the square had already been isolated by the Mu Territory’s guard. Mu Feng and the others entered the square and stopped their footsteps. Then, they stared heatedly in front.

Chapter 71: Joint Array Arrangement

Mu Chen also looked in front of him and could see five deep yellow pillars erected on the vast square. The stone pillars were filled with mysterious engravings. Around the stone pillars, there were traces of Spiritual Aura within the world fluctuating.

“This is a Spirit Convergence Pillar crafted by Spirit Convergence Rocks, right?”

Mu Chen walked forward and looked at the five Spirit Convergence Pillars. The Rank 3 Spirit Convergence Array within the Northern Spiritual Academy also had these things. However, the Spirit Convergence Pillars at that place were shining gold. Its purity was also much higher than the five pillars in front of him.

“These five Spirit Convergence Pillars are the central cores of the Spirit Convergence Array. Every single one of them costs millions of Spirit Coins.” Mu Feng said with a faint laugh.

Mu Chen nodded. A Spirit Convergence Array was different than ordinary Spiritual Arrays. Although it does not possess any offensive abilities, it is an essential item for many forces. Moreover, it is a symbol of strength for these forces. The reason why the Liu Territory was able to become the strongest force within the Northern Spiritual Realm was because they possess a Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array aside from the fact that they were truly stronger than the others.

In order to cultivate within a Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array, many powerhouses would defect to the Liu Territory in order to obtain better cultivation conditions, allowing themselves to go further on the path of cultivation.

And generally speaking, a Spirit Convergence Array could be considered a rather well-known Spiritual Array to people. Many Spiritual Array Masters are aware of its Diagram Array. However, they are only aware of it. It was still extremely difficult if they want to construct it.

Not to mention about the various rare materials that a Spirit

Convergence Array requires, the required number of Spiritual Seals in order to construct the Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array was a total of 50. Even Rank 2 Spiritual Array Masters, who were less skilled, may not create it alone. Moreover, they were extremely rare existences within the Northern Spiritual Realm. It was impossible for the Mu Territory to invite them over. Thus, they could only use numbers and see if it could be completed by a joint force of four Rank 1 Spiritual Array Masters.

Fortunately, Wen Ling had already been long regarded as a top existence among the Rank 1 Spiritual Array Masters and was highly likely to ascend to a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master. With him leading, it would increase the chances significantly.

"To construct the Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array this time, the five of us will each be responsible for one Spirit Convergence Marble. We will base it on the diagram array and each of us will be responsible for a portion of it. Then, we will connect it together and cause the Array to activate." Wen Ling looked at Mu Chen and said.

"Although this method of being responsible for a portion of the Diagram Array is a way, it seems that it requires a high compatibility rate, right? If even the slightest mistake occurred during the connection process, it will probably..." Mu Chen hesitated for a moment. He was not a rookie in Spiritual Arrays now and could naturally discover the flaw in this approach.

Wen Ling nodded and sighed: "It can't be helped. I think that it's impossible to find such an amazing Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master within the entire Northern Spiritual Realm, who could construct a Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array by himself."

"When the Liu Territory constructed their Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array, they also used this approach. And based on my knowledge, they secretly failed many times and suffered a huge loss. However, normal individuals did not know this."

Mu Feng smiled and said: "The materials that we gathered could only support one more failure. Otherwise, we will have to spend some time to

prepare it again."

"If we were to fail to construct the Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array, the Liu Territory will probably not give up on this chance of attacking us. They will spread it out loudly and that will be detrimental to us." Zhou Ye said helplessly.

Mu Feng waved his hand and smiled as if he did not care: "It's fine if you do your best."

Zhou Ye let out a bitter laugh. He knew that Mu Feng did not want to give too much pressure and responsibility to Mu Chen since Mu Chen had gotten involve with it. This is why he acted so carefree. But in fact, Mu Feng really hoped to construct the Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array. This way, it would reap great benefits to the Mu Territory's fame.

Mu Chen glanced at Mu Feng and did not say anything. After all, they were father and son. Although Mu Feng might be saying this, he could tell how important this matter was to him.

"To arrange the array this time, I will be responsible for 20 Spiritual Seals. As for the remaining 30, Chen Ling and the others will each be responsible for 8. As for Mu Chen, he will be responsible for 6 Spiritual Seals."

Wen Ling looked at Mu Chen and said: "Do not underestimate these 6 Spiritual Seals. If you want to complete this portion of the Diagram Array, it will probably be even harder than the "Spiritual Flame Array"."

Mu Chen nodded. Naturally, he understood this truth. Furthermore, he did not have much experience, so Wen Ling had already thought highly of him when he allowed him to be responsible for 6 Spiritual Seals."

"Next up, I will explain the key parts of the Spirit Convergence Array. You must carefully remember it, so that you will not make a mistake and ruin everything." Wen Ling said strictly.

"Yes." Mu Chen gave a slight smile and said. Although the boy's handsome face was quite young, he was still humble and polite. This made the other 3 Rank 1 Spiritual Array Masters watching by the side nod their

heads. It was rare for this Mu Territory's Little Lord to act so harmonious even with his status and talent. If it was another youth, they would have acted arrogant and butted in already.

Mu Feng watched and seriously listened as Wen Ling explained the key points about the Spirit Convergence Array to Mu Chen. He also smiled pleasantly and waved his hand before heading away with Zhou Ye. It was a headache to listen about this and that about Spiritual Arrays. It was still best to leave that boy to deal with it by himself.

In the next few days, Mu Chen would head to this square and study with Wen Ling regarding this Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array. Moreover, with his gentleness and studious attitude, the other 3 Rank 1 Spiritual Array Masters were quite satisfied with it. They would also talk about their experiences in arranging Spiritual Arrays and Mu Chen would humbly learn from it.

By working hard, Mu Chen had basically understood the Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array after a few days. At the same time, he was surprised about how complex the Spirit Convergence Array was. Compared to it, the "Spiritual Flame Array" that he had learned earlier was nothing much.

Moreover, Wen Ling and the others were quite satisfied after seeing Mu Chen beginning to understand about this Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array. They discussed it for a while and finally decided to take action tomorrow!

Mu Chen stood in the square. He stared at the 5 Spirit Convergence Pillars standing upright and took a deep breath. He gradually allowed himself to calm down.

Beside him, Mu Feng patted his shoulders and said with a comforting smile: "Just do your best, it doesn't matter if it fails. After all, it will only just be delayed for a while."

Mu Chen smiled, but he did not reply. He looked at Wen Ling and saw the latter's face becoming extremely serious. Then, he immediately waved and moved on top of a Spirit Convergence Pillar.

Seeing this, Mu Chen and the others also moved and each of them

landed on top of a Spirit Convergence Pillar.

"Prepare yourself."

Wen Ling shouted and shook his hands. Then, a clump of light floated out from his hand and a powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuation emitted out wave after wave.

Mu Chen and the others also followed. Four clumps of light rose to the sky. These were all High Rank Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence. In order to construct this sort of array, Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence is an indispensable item. This is because the array requires the massive energy that is accumulated within the Soul Essence as a guide.

"Let's begin!"

Wen Ling stared at the clumps of light overhead and let out a shout. He waved his sleeves and 20 Spiritual Seals surged out from his sleeves in an instant. This speed of condensing Spiritual Seals had, indeed, surpassed ordinary Rank 1 Spiritual Array Masters.

Chen Ling and the other two Rank 1 Spiritual Array Masters all stared enviously at this. Although they were considered Rank 1 Spiritual Array Masters, they were far worse than Wen Ling. The latter could highly likely become a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master.

They were jealous for a moment. Then, they collected their thoughts and each of them condensed 8 Spiritual Seals. They carefully controlled it and allowed them to enter the air surrounding the Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence above them.

Buzz.

Mu Chen also took action now and 6 Spiritual Seals condensed on his fingertips. With his ability right now, he would be able to manipulate it sophisticatedly if he was only manipulating 6 Spiritual Seals.

The 6 Spiritual Seals vanished within the surroundings of the Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence. Then, the air trembled. Mu Chen closed his eyes slightly and moved his long fingers. As his fingertips trembled, a light emerged within the surrounding air of the Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence.

Light beams carefully extended out and intertwined with each other.

The square was completely silent. The 5 of them were gathering all their thoughts and carefully arranged the portion of the Diagram Array they were responsible for.

Mu Feng and the others stood nearby and had a serious expression as they stared at the fluctuations caused by the Spiritual Energy. A hint of nervousness flashed through their eyes. If they were to fail this time, this plan of theirs would be delayed for at least 6 months. Moreover, they would definitely be ridiculed by the Liu Territory.

“Pass down an order; do not let anyone approach this location.” Mu Feng waved his hand and gently spoke.

“Yes!” A guard hurriedly responded and spread out with a large amount of men.

The time quickly passed while Mu Feng and the others were waiting restlessly. In a blink of an eye, an hour passed. The Spiritual Energy fluctuations at the scene were becoming increasingly violent. Above the 5 individuals and the Spirit Convergence Pillars, a complex Spiritual Energy Diagram Array was flashing dazzlingly.

Another half an hour quickly passed, Wen Ling was the first to open his eyes. His eyes were filled with nervousness and seriousness. This time, he assumed half the responsibility of arranging the Spiritual Array. If others were to make a mistake, they might be able to save it. However, if he were to cause it, it would basically mean that the arrangement of the array would end up in complete failure.

Following after Wen Ling, Chen Ling and the others also opened their eyes one after another. It was evident that they had completely the portion of the Diagram Array they were responsible for.

“Connect the array!”

Seeing this, Wen Ling’s face became increasingly serious. Next up, it was the most difficult step. If any mistakes were to occur during the connection process, it was likely to affect the situation as a whole and

force the entire group to collapse.

The four of them heard this and tensed up their bodies. They gathered all their focus and moved their thoughts. Then, light beams shot out from the complex light array above them and began to intertwine with each other.

At the outside, Mu Feng and the others' hearts pounced when they witnessed this scene. They knew that whether or not it would succeed would all depend on this step.

Chapter 72: Heart Array State

Buzz.

A violent and dense Spiritual Energy trembled within the air like a wave. Everybody outside was staring nervously at the sky. At that location, 5 parts of the complex Spiritual Energy light array were beginning to gather slowly above Wen Ling and the other's heads.

Swoosh.

At this moment, the 5 complex light arrays were rapidly trembling. Then, a Spiritual Energy light beam exploded out and suddenly made contact with each other in the center point of the array.

The light beams intertwined with each other complicatedly and bursts of fluctuations emitted out. Wen Ling and the others' faces were extremely serious. They did not dare to be distracted. At this moment, if even a single mistake were to occur when the light beams intertwined with each other, it would lead to serious consequences.

Chi Chi.

The light beams quietly connected with each other. Then, Mu Feng and the others were able to see that the five separated Spiritual Energy light array were showing faint signs of merging together.

However, they still didn't dare to breathe out. This is because they knew that it was not completely successful yet.

The time passed by slowly and the trajectories of the connected light beams also became more complicated. This requires a rather precise control. When two Spiritual Energy light beams made contact with each other, they must control the power of the Spiritual Energy to the same level. Otherwise, it is highly possible that one side's light beam would be shattered by the other and, thus, the connection would fail.

It truly requires sophisticated and subtle control ability.

As the connection became increasingly complex, Wen Ling and the others' eyes became more serious. Even cold sweat emerged on their

forehead. This sort of control had a considerable consumption on their mind.

Mu Chen focused his mind. His eyes suddenly closed, yet Wen Ling and the others did not notice it. Although the sight in front of him was complete darkness, it was strange that his mind seemed to have flowed through the Spiritual Energy light beams that he controlled and wandered within the Spirit Convergence Array like a flood. Not only was it the part he was responsible for, even Wen Ling and the others' parts were reflected within his heart.

At this moment, the other world seemed to have been separated by him. No movement could disturb him. There were only sketched out complex and obscure Diagram Array trails within his heart.

Under this somewhat strange state, the nervousness that Mu Chen had originally felt faded away. His long fingers trembled slightly and the Spiritual Energy light beam moved precisely based on his thoughts.

At this moment, he felt increasingly that he had an innate sense of proficiency over this Spiritual Array.

In mid-air, the five Diagram Arrays were getting closer. The Spiritual Energy light beams converged together and gradual signs of it completely merging had appeared.

When Mu Feng and the others witnessed this scene, they could not hold back the delight surging out from their faces. Everything seemed to be going smoothly.

However, Wen Ling did not relax. He understood that it was not considered successful as long as the final step of the connection process was not complete. That is because this tiny step could cause the entire array to collapse.

"There's only the final bit left..."

Wen Ling gritted his teeth and attempted to calm himself down. He continued to manipulate the Spiritual Energy light beams stably and allowed it to connect with the other four portions of the Diagram Array.

And when he completed this final step, he could not help but let out a sigh of relief. However, at this moment, he felt a strange fluctuation coming out from the Spiritual Array.

This fluctuation was not strong, yet it instantly changed the color of Wen Ling's face. He hurriedly lifted his head and noticed that traces of disorder had actually appeared in the Spiritual Array in front of Chen Ling.

"Sh*t!"

Wen Ling's heart jumped and his face became pale. It turned out that when Chen Ling was connecting the Spiritual Array with the Spiritual Array Master to the left of him, the latter's Spiritual Energy light beam was slightly stronger. It actually caused his Spiritual Energy light beam to shatter.

Upon seeing this, Chen Ling's face changed. He quickly attempted to save it and hastily converged light beams to reconnect them. However, he made a mistake while he was in a rush and, instead, cause the originally stabilized Spiritual Array to tremble.

"Kacha."

A sudden sound of breaking emerged from a part of the Spiritual Array formed by Chen Ling. Then, he stared with a pale face as the Spiritual Energy light beams were disappearing bit by bit. Finally, it affected the Spiritual Seals and caused 3 of the Spiritual Seals to completely shatter.

This sudden turn of events made the other two Spiritual Array Master's face change. Especially the one whose Spiritual Energy was too strong and caused Chen Ling's Spiritual Energy light beam to fade away. His face was exceptionally ugly.

Once a Spiritual Seal was destroyed, it basically meant that half the Spiritual Array was destroyed. Moreover, it was impossible to complete the Spirit Convergence Array without Chen Ling's disappeared portion of the Spiritual Array.

"This..."

This accident was immediately perceived by Mu Feng and Zhou Ye. Their hands gripped together on the spot as they stared at the disorderly Spiritual Array in front of Chen Ling. They glanced over and noticed a hint of bitterness from the other person's eyes. Indeed, a problem had appeared.

"Chen Ling, stabilize your mind, do not get confused!" Wen Ling shouted out lougly.

Chen Ling gritted his teeth and took a couple of deep breaths. He quickly used all his power to stabilize the Spiritual Array. However, after the 3 Spiritual Seals shattered, his Spiritual Array could be considered as incomplete.

"Brother Wen, I'm afraid that I cannot maintain it for long. Sorry, I've dragged you down this time." Chen Ling said with a bitter smile.

"You only have 3 Spiritual Seals that were shattered, so the Spiritual Array is only slightly incomplete. Can you form more Spiritual Seals to save it now?" Wen Ling gritted his teeth and asked.

"I..." Chen Ling's face reddened up and he said ashamedly: "I probably cannot stabilize this incomplete Spiritual Array as I continue to form Spiritual Seals..."

Wen Ling sighed. Then, he turned to look at the other two Spiritual Array Masters. They, too, shook their heads embarrassedly. If they were to distract themselves to help save Chen Ling's portion, problems would probably appear on their side.

Seeing this, Wen Ling let out a bitter expression. He had already took the responsibility of completing the most complex portion during this joint array arrangement. Right now, manipulating 20 Spiritual Seals was already hit limit. It was impossible for him to create any more.

"Eh..."

He sighed and shook his head helplessly at Mu Feng. It seems that they failed this time as well.

Mu Feng let out a bitter laugh and nodded his head. But just when he

was about to wave his hand to allow them to stop...

"Huh?"

However, when he intended to end this time's array arrangement, Zhou Ye suddenly said aloud: "Little Mu, he..."

Mu Feng hurriedly lifted his head when he heard this. He noticed that Mu Chen had his eyes closed tightly and did not seem to have noticed the situation occurring right now. However, 3 Spiritual Seals suddenly appeared on his fingertips.

"What is he doing?"

Wen Ling and the others also became aware of Mu Chen's action and were stunned. However, their color of their faces instantly changed as they noticed Mu Chen flicking the 3 Spiritual Seals over and it landed above Chen Ling.

These 3 Spiritual Seals quickly fused into the air. Then, Wen Ling and the others were able to see Spiritual Energy light beams rapidly extending out and the incomplete portion of the Spiritual Array were being drawn out.

"It's the shattered portion of Chen Ling's Spiritual Array!"

Wen Ling and the others had a keen vision over the others. They instantly saw that the portion of the Spiritual Array that Mu Chen had drawn out was Chen Ling's shattered portion of the Spiritual Array!

However, they were immediately astounded. How was this possible? Mu Chen had always been studying about the Spiritual Array portion that he was responsible for. Moreover, he had never made contact with the Chen Ling's portion. How could he form out the missing portion this quickly and without any mistakes?

Wen Ling exchanged glances with each other and saw the surprise within each other's eyes. Then, they discovered that Mu Chen had kept his eyes shut the entire time. In other words, he did not need to see it at all and he formed the shattered portion out.

“How could this be possible?!” The other two Spiritual Array Masters were speechless.

Wen Ling was also surprised. He fixed his sight at Mu Chen, who had his eyes closed while his fingers trembled. Then, his eyes focused and he slowly said: “He seems to have entered the state of “Heart Array”.

“Heart Array State?”

Chen Ling and the others hesitated for a moment before gasping. Their eyes were filled with an incredulous expression: “Isn’t the Heart Array State only possible for Spiritual Array Masters, who are at least Rank 3? How could he enter such a state?”

Wen Ling also felt incredulous, yet he only said with a bitter smile: “I am not too sure as well. He seemed to possess great talent within the areas of Spiritual Arrays. Although this situation is rare, it has appeared before. A few highly gifted individuals would be able to rely on a certain catalyst to enter this state before reaching Rank 3 Spiritual Array Master.”

Chen Ling and the others were completely speechless. Soon, they were filled with envy. They would probably never enter this state within their lifetime. However, the boy in front of them seemed to have entered it inadvertently. It really made them sigh deep down within their hearts.

“Chen Ling, control the rest of your Spiritual Array to connect it with Mu Chen’s. Then, continue to combine the array!” Wen Ling said in a deep voice.

Hearing this, Chen Ling nodded. He carefully controlled the incomplete Spiritual Array and slowly connected it to the part that Mu Chen had saved.

“Combine the Array!”

Hearing Wen Ling’s shout, Chen Ling and the others urged the Spiritual Arrays to connect once again. This time, no accidents occurred and the five Spiritual Arrays merged together perfectly. All of a sudden, a powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuation burst out from mid-air. A large brilliance enshrouded the light barrier and everybody within the Mu Territory could

feel that the Spiritual Aura within the world was gathering in the direction of the square.

"Success!"

Wen Ling and the others stared at the complex Spiritual Array that enveloped the sky above the square. A sense of relief and delight poured out from their eyes. Outside of the venue, Mu Feng also had an excited expression as he saw that the situation took a dramatic turn.

Gradually, Wen Ling and the others detached their thoughts away from the Spirit Convergence Array and stared complicatedly at the boy nearby. At this moment, the boy gradually opened his eyes. He looked at Wen Ling and the others as he scratched his head. With a slightly dazed voice, he said: "We finished it?"

Hearing this, Wen Ling and the others' faces completely stiffened.

Chapter 73: Seeded Entry

"You don't know what happened?" Wen Ling could not help but ask as Mu Chen's confusion showed.

Mu Chen frowned. He vaguely remembered that he seemed to have entered a certain state earlier. However, he was not particularly clear about what had just happened.

"Earlier, you have entered the 'Heart Array' State." Wen Ling said softly.

"Heart Array State?" Mu Chen was surprised.

"It is a mysterious state you would only be able to touch after you become a Rank 3 Spiritual Array Master. At that time, you will be able to get rid of the binds of the naked eye and use your heart to observe the array. All of the trajectories of the Spiritual Array would be within your heart and it will move based on your thoughts."

Wen Ling stared at Mu Chen and said, "An accident occurred for the Spirit Convergence Array earlier and it was going to fail. However, it seems that you have unconsciously saved it."

Mu Chen was slightly stunned. He seemed to have remembered that the Spirit Convergence Array had completely reflected itself within his heart. Moreover, the originally completed Spiritual Array seemed to have a flaw at the final moment. Then, at a conditioned reflex, he seemed to have done something to it.

"So that is called Heart Array State." Curiosity filled Mu Chen's eyes. Under that state, he could feel that it has become a lot easier to arrange a Spiritual Array and the Spiritual Energy light beams would move based on his thoughts. The feeling like how water floods in made him feel extremely comfortable.

"However, based on your appearance, it seems that you have unconsciously entered that mysterious state. You must try to comprehend that feeling more. If you are able to control whether or not you can enter the Heart Array State, it will greatly benefit your Spiritual Array

Cultivation." Wen Ling smacked his lips. This time, he could not conceal the jealousy within his tone. The Heart Array State, it is a state that many Spiritual Array Masters would dream of. Even he had never experienced it before.

Beside him, Chen Ling and the other Spiritual Array Master also stared at Mu Chen with a complex expression. They did not have the slightest mentality of looking down on him. They understood that the boy in front of them was probably at a completely different level. Perhaps in the near future, they would be looking up at the boy, who had once humbly asked for advice.

"Haha, thank you, everybody. You've done a great deed to the Mu Territory since you've constructed the Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array this time!" At this moment, Mu Feng walked in from the outside with a delighted expression. Then, he cupped his fist and thanked Wen Ling, Chen Ling and the other.

Wen Ling let out a faint smile. Moreover, Chen Ling and the others had slightly reddened faces. They had nearly ruined the entire thing. If it wasn't for Mu Chen entering the Heart Array State, they would probably cause the Mu Territory to have a major loss.

"Territory Lord Mu, the ones who performed the majority of this service are Brother Wen and the Little Lord..." Chen Ling said embarrassedly.

"Mister Chen Ling, what are you saying? There is no size of this service. Without the 3 of you, how could we have arranged this Spirit Convergence Array?" Mu Feng said in a stern voice.

Hearing this, Chen Ling and the others also emotionally cuffed their hands. They did not have arrogance within their eyes anymore. For Mu Feng to be the Mu Territory's Lord, his tolerance was really impressive. In the future, they might decide to move around the Mu Territory more. Furthermore, Mu Chen's talent in Spiritual Array Cultivation was extremely terrifying. He will reach a staggering height in this aspect. At that time, they would benefit greatly if they were able to get some pointers from him.

Mu Chen also quietly smiled when he saw Mu Feng's act of winning them over. His own father was quite crafty. There aren't many Spiritual Array Masters in the Northern Spiritual Realm. If they were able to rope in three Rank 1 Spiritual Array Master, it would be a considerable assistance.

Because Wen Ling and the others have also consumed a lot of strength due to the Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array, Mu Feng only talked with them briefly before sending them off so they could rest. Afterwards, he let out a sigh of relief and smiled as he stared at Mu Chen beside him: "Good boy, it's all thanks to you this time."

"You are my father, of course I have to help you." Mu Chen grinned as he spoke.

"Damn brat." Mu Feng scolded him for a moment before rubbing Mu Chen's head. He sighed and said: "If you want to help me, then hurry and get admitted to the 'Five Great Academies'. The Northern Spiritual Realm may seem very big, but we are only a group of visionless toads sitting within a well. You will only be qualified to become a true powerhouse if you obtained the resources and education from the 'Five Great Academies'."

"Your talent far surpasses me, your father. Therefore, you will walk much farther than me and you will be able to do things that your father cannot do."

Mu Feng muttered to himself: "You are all my hope."

Mu Chen stared at Mu Feng's gentle and comforting eyes and smiled: "Dad, relax. I have said it before, there will be a day when I bring mother back."

Mu Feng laughed. He only felt that his eyes started to become obscure and firmly nodded his head. He believed that his son would never let him down.

"I'll head back to the Northern Spiritual Academy tomorrow. After calculating the time, the spaces within the Five Great Academies should have been sent over by now. I'll see how many spaces were assigned to the Northern Spiritual Academy this time."

Mu Chen stretched his waist and his black eyes stared at the red glow on the horizon. An elegant and soft figure was reflected within the depths of his eyes. She seemed to have long silver hair as well as a pair of glass-like eyes. Her exquisite and tiny face, which would definitely create a calamity in the future, would often be covered with a coldness that separated others away from her. However, only he knew how gentle she was underneath that coldness.

"The Five Great Academies...I really have to go there."

...

The next day. After Mu Chen said farewell to Mu Feng, he used the Mu Territory's Transfer Spiritual Array to hurry back to Northern Spiritual City. However, he did not stay within the city for long and headed straight back to the Northern Spiritual Academy.

At this moment, three figures were sitting up straight in a study within the Northern Spiritual Academy. The Principal of the Northern Spiritual Academy, Xiao Mu, was in the front. Behind him on the left and right were the two highest level of instructors within the Northern Spiritual Academy, Teacher Mo and Teacher Xi.

"The spaces for the Five Great Academy have been sent over."

Within Principal Xiao's hand, he held a golden picture scroll. On the picture scroll, there were five different, yet extremely oppressive emblems. These five emblems represent the Five Great Academies.

"How many spaces did our Northern Spiritual Academy obtain this time?" Teacher Mo asked interestedly.

Principal Xiao's dry fingers gently touched the golden picture scroll within his hand. He said with a strange expression: "Five entries."

"Five?" Teacher Mo thought for a moment before saying: "There are only 5 students within the East Branch, who would be eligible to reach the Spiritual Rotation Stage in a short period of time. As for the West Branch, there will probably be 7 students. It seems that there will be a fierce competition for it."

Principal Xiao nodded his head. The requirements for the Five Great Academies were quite harsh. It isn't a place where you can enter just by wanting to enter it.

"Moreover, aside from these five entries...there is a special entry." Principal Xiao's expression became increasingly strange as he stared at Teacher Mo and Teacher Xi.

"A special entry?" Teacher Mo and Teacher Xi stared in puzzled at Principal Xiao.

"It is a Seeded-Class Entry." Principal Xiao said as he lowered the golden picture scroll within his hand.

"A Seeded-Class Entry?" Teacher Mo and Teacher Xi's faces finally became serious and they could not help but ask: "How could they hand over this sort of entry to our Northern Spiritual Academy?"

The Five Great Academies' entries were divided into three classes. The lowest class was the ordinary entries. The second level was the Seeded-Class entries. Right now, the Northern Spiritual Academy had received this type of special entry. However, these entries would only be obtained by powerful academies. A Spiritual Academy like the Northern Spiritual Academy should never obtain this level of entrie.

The highest level entrywas the Core Entries. It is extremely rare and everyone, who earned it, were monster-like existences. Only the most dazzling individuals in the Spiritual Road would be able to obtain it.

Moreover, these entries were not just in name. It would also provide you an identity after you've decided which one of the "Five Great Academies" you'll enter. The status and resources you'll obtain would depend on it. Thus, many people would fight to the bitter end in order to obtain this high class entry.

"A Seeded-Class Entry. After including all the Spiritual Academies, there will only be twenty of them within the Hundred Spirit Heavens...I can't believe that one would actually land in our Northern Spiritual Academy's hands." Principal Xiao let out a strange laugh as if it was incomprehensible.

Hundred Spirit Heavens is the vast land outside of the Northern Spiritual Realm. Within the Hundred Spirit Heavens, there were dozens of large and small realms and the Northern Spiritual Realm was only a relatively weak realm. Therefore, the Northern Spiritual Academy would not be able to obtain an advantage over all the other Spiritual Academies within the Hundred Spirit Heavens. If it was in the past, this Seeded-Class entrywould definitely be divided through the other powerful Spiritual Academies within the Hundred Spirit Heavens. How could it be their turn?

"I've heard a little bit of information. This Seeded-Class entry was probably allocated to us directly due to a decision of the Five Great Academies." Principal Xiao said faintly.

"Oh? A decision from the Five Great Academies?" Teacher Mo and Teacher Xi exchanged gazes with each other. Just what sort of existence are the Five Great Academies? Why would they take care of a measly Northern Spiritual Academy? Moreover, they did not have any powerful figures within the "Five Great Academies".

"We aren't the ones that obtained it..." Principal Xiao narrowed his eyes slightly: "I think...that it might be a certain student within the Northern Spiritual Academy who has attracted the attention of the Five Great Academies."

"Student?"

Teacher Mo and Tecaher Xi was stunned. Then, their eyes immediately lit up: "It's Mu Chen?!"

Within the entire Northern Spiritual Realm, Mu Chen was the only one who had participated in the Spiritual Road. Moreover, he had surprisingly been kicked out half way. This was extremely difficult to understand and also made thoughts flash through other people's mind. Just what on earth did Mu Chen do in the Spiritual Road?

Principal Xiao slowly nodded his head and said: "It should be that little guy...Heh, the Five Great Academies kicked him out of the Spiritual Road, yet they purposely handed a Seeded-Class Entryto us. What is the meaning of this? Is it to compensate him? Or are they reluctant to let him go?"

“Reluctant to let him go? To the Five Great Academies, what genius haven’t they seen? It’s only Mu Chen, it shouldn’t be enough, right?” Teacher Xi frowned.

Teacher Mo let out a faint smile and said: “You should not underestimate a person who killed a vicious individual, who was at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase, by relying on his Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase strength.”

Principal Xiao smiled and waved his head as he said: “We should not care what the Five Great Academies are thinking of. Since they handed this entry to us, we should just take it.”

“Then what about the entry? Should we hand it directly to Mu Chen?” Teacher Mo inquired.

Principal Xiao shook his head and said: “That would only lead to dissatisfaction with the other students. Moreover, if the Territory Lords within the Northern Spiritual Academy knew that we actually have a Seeded-Class Entry, wouldn’t they all be envious of it? If we handed it to Mu Chen, they would all be filled with fury and say that we were unfair.”

“Then…”

Principal Xiao stood up and let out a faint smile as he said: “We’ll follow the rules. Strength is supreme. We will hand over this Seeded-Class Entry to whoever is the strongest. Although it is possible that it was prepared for Mu Chen, he can only blame himself if he does not have the strength.”

As he said this, he waved his hand.

“Convey the news out. I think that many little guys would go crazy about it…Ohoho, a Seeded-Class Entry. It is the first one since the establishment of the Northern Spiritual Academy.”

Chapter 74: Chen Fan, Huo Yun

Northern Spiritual Academy, East Branch, Training Grounds.

It was evident that the training grounds were quite lively today. It seems that every East Branch Heaven Class student came. This is because today was the day that the Northern Spiritual Academy would announce the amount of entries for the “Five Great Academies”.

Most of the students, who came to train in the Northern Spiritual Academy, came for the entries of the “Five Great Academies”. They would work hard year after year in order to use the Northern Spiritual Academy as a stepping stone and enter the rumored “Five Great Academies”...

When Mu Chen entered the training grounds, he was startled by the loud noise. He looked at the tightly packed heads and secretly smacked his lips. He never imagined that there will be so many students in the East Branch’s Heaven Class.

“Mu Chen, over here!”

Not far away, a girl’s sweet voice rang out. Mu Chen turned his gaze over and saw Tang Qian’Er waving her slender hands at him. The moving smile on her pretty face attracted a lot of attention from the youths nearby.

Mu Chen also directed a smile towards Tang Qian’Er and walked over. They had not met in a month. This young girl has increasingly become more slim and graceful. Although she was dressed in black training clothes, it is still possible to see her exquisite curves.

“I haven’t seen you in one month, yet why do I feel that you’ve change a bit?” Tang Qian’Er tilted her head and asked in surprise as she glanced at Mu Chen. After all, Mu Chen had stepped into the Spiritual Rotation Stage. Even though he had not revealed it, a girl is indeed perceptive and could still feel a little bit of change.

“I nearly died inside the Black Eerie Swamp. Of course, I’ll change a bit.” Mu Chen smiled and said.

“You also went to the Black Eerie Swamp? I heard from my father that the Mu Territory seemed to have fought with the Liu Territory within the Black Eerie Swamp. I never imagined that you would have gone as well. Are you okay?” Tang Qian’Er frowned and asked.

Mu Chen shook his head. It seems, on that day, the commotion within the Black Eerie Swamp was quite large. Even the Tang Territory had received news about it. However, it seems that they did not know that the commotion was caused by the Nine Nether Bird’s evolution.

“Brother Mu!”

A shout suddenly rang out from nearby. He noticed that Mo Ling, Tan Qingshan and the others all walked over with a smile. It seems that they have seriously trained during this month and appeared to be darker, especially Mo Ling. Mu Chen could feel that the Spiritual Energy within his body had become increasingly dense. It was only a step away from advancing to Spiritual Rotation Stage.

“Hehe, Brother Mu. It’s all thanks to the Jaded Essence Fruit you’ve gave me last time. I will probably reach the Spiritual Rotation Stage soon. When the happens, I’ll leave you behind.” Mo Ling directed a smile at Mu Chen and spoke.

Mu Chen smiled as he glanced at him. He was too lazy to correct him.

“I wonder how many entries the Northern Spiritual Academy will receive. Last time, it seemed to be 3 entries only. The East and West Branch fought to the bitter end for those 3 entries.” Mo Ling licked his lips. His eyes twinkled as he talked about the entries. It was apparent that he really wanted it.

Mu Chen also nodded his head. But just when he was about to speak, he heard a commotion coming from behind. He turned his head around and noticed two figures slowly walking over.

“Huh? It’s Chen Fan and Huo Yun...So these two guys finally decided to appear.” Mo Ling whispered as he looked at the two men and was a little surprised.

Hearing this, Mu Chen was also shocked. He glanced at the two individuals for a moment. When he was in the Earth Class, he had heard of these two names. Based on their strength, they were probably at the pinnacle of the East Branch's Heaven Class. They were only slightly weaker than Liu Mubai. However, they were rather low-key and would rarely appear in the Northern Spiritual Academy. Therefore, their names would never appear in the rankings.

"It was rumored that they joined an Adventurer's team and would often hunt Spiritual Beasts." Mo Ling said.

Only then, Mu Chen nodded his head suddenly. No wonder he could feel a faint smell of blood from them. Moreover, from their calm eyes, it was indeed different from the youthful students nearby.

"Most likely, these two individuals have already attempted to charge into the Spiritual Rotation Stage." Mu Chen said softly. He could feel that the Spiritual Energy fluctuation from their bodies were even stronger than Mo Ling. It seems that they have gradually condensed a Spiritual Wheel.

"It's those two." Tang Qian'Er whispered as her beautiful eyes stared at them

Mu Chen could hear that her tone had changed and could not help but glance at her in confusion.

"Hehe, Brother Mu. Chen Fan and Huo Yun knew each other since they were young. Both of them had fought against each other as they grew up. Moreover, they both fell in love with Qian'Er after entering the Northern Spiritual Academy and would often fight with each other because of her. However, they were both rejected by her in the end. Then, these two grouped together and joined an Adventurer's Team to train. They said that they would court her again after they obtained the entries for the Five Great Academies." Mo Ling whispered on the side.

Mu Chen was stunned. He immediately glanced with a funny expression at Tang Qian'Er, who had a red face. The attractiveness of the East Branch's flower really couldn't be covered and would come wave after wave.

While Mu Chen was talking with Mo Ling, Chen Fan and Huo Yun also looked over to this side. To be exact, they saw Tang Qian'Er beside Mu Chen and a smile emerged on their indifferent faces as they walked quickly over.

Seeing that they were coming for her, Tang Qian'Er helplessly bit her lips and hid her body behind Mu Chen.

This tiny action made Chen Fan and Huo Yun completely stunned. They immediately fixated their gaze over at Mu Chen. Chen Fan's gaze was still alright, but Huo Yun had an ill gaze.

"You should be Mu Chen, right? I've heard of your name before. So we finally meet today." Chen Fan gave a faint smile at Mu Chen and held out his hand.

"Nice to meet you."

Mu Chen also replied with a smile and glanced at Chen Fan's outstretched hand. Then, he immediately shook it.

The moment when the two hands clasped with each other, Spiritual Energy surged out from Chen Fan's palm and the veins jumped on the arm that gripped Mu Chen's hand.

Mu Chen could feel a powerful squeeze coming from the palm and helplessly shook his head. He did not resist and allowed Chen Fan to utilize his strength. However, his face did not have the slightest movement.

"Chen Fan, what are you doing!" Tang Qian'Er also noticed this scene and immediately frowned and shouted out.

Chen Fan stared at the trace of ridicule at the corner of Mu Chen's mouth and frowned as well. This Mu Chen really had some ability.

"Ohoho, Qian'Er. I only had a teasing inclination. It's been a while since such an amazing person has appeared in our East Branch." Chen Fan retracted back his hand and smiled at Tang Qian'Er.

"Brother Mu Chen probably didn't mind, right?" Chen Fan looked at Mu

Chen.

"If it's only this amount of strength, naturally, I wouldn't mind." Mu Chen smiled and said.

"Then we definitely should have a duel sometime." Huo Yun challenged Mu Chen as he spoke.

"We'll talk about it when you have the chance." Mu Chen did not make any comments and ignored these two individuals as he walked towards the direction of the training grounds. On the other hand, Tang Qian'Er gave off a fierce glare at the two of them before following Mu Chen.

"Could Qian'Er have fallen in love with that boy? Wouldn't we have benefited someone else because we were fighting with each other all the time?" Huo Yun glanced at Tang Qian'Er's figure and muttered.

"That will depend if he has the ability to let us allow him to do so." Chen Fan rubbed his chin and said.

"Let's find an opportunity to beat him up." Huo Yun said.

"Okay." Chen Fan smiled and nodded his head.

More and more students appeared in the training ground. After approximately 30 minutes, a familiar figure slowly walked out. The commotions at this place instantly quieted down and stared eagerly at Teacher Mo, who walked over to the training grounds.

Teacher Mo glanced at the tightly packed heads and let out a faint smile. He cut straight to the point and said: "This time, the Northern Spiritual Academy has received 5 "Five Great Academies" entries."

"Five?"

An uproar suddenly burst out within the training grounds. Although there were more entriess than last time, it was still quite short in supply for the qualified students.

"Moreover..." Teacher Mo's eyes suddenly glanced at Mu Chen and said: "Aside from the five entries, we also have a Seeded-Class Entry."

"A Seeded-Class Entry?"

All sounds seemed to have disappeared within the training grounds as looks of astonishment were directed at Teacher Mo. After a long period of them, a few people fiercely inhaled a breath. Even Chen Fan and Huo Yun took in a deep breath.

Mu Chen was probably the only person who remained calm. A Seeded-Class Entry was indeed quite rare. However...if he had successfully completed the Spiritual Road, he would have probably obtained an even higher class entry.

“Only the strongest student within the Northern Spiritual Academy would qualify to obtain this Seeded-Class Entry. Therefore, if you want to obtain it, you must defeat all other competitors.”

Teacher Mo stared at the shocked students and glanced once again at the calm Mu Chen. He smiled and said: “Within our East Branch Heaven Class, there are only five individuals who are qualified to compete for it. They are: Chen Fan, Huo Yun, Mo Ling, Tang Qian’Er and...Mu Chen.”

After hearing these five names, regretful sighs rang out from within the training grounds. However, they also understood. The ones who qualified for it must possess the ability to reach the Spiritual Rotation Stage in a short period of time. In this location, only these five individuals would meet this requirement.

“For the next month, I will personally guide the five of you individually and allow you to complete the final step and advance into the Spiritual Rotation Stage!” Teacher Mo said in a deep voice.

“Yes!”

Hearing this, Mo Ling and the others nodded excitedly. Teacher Mo was a Spirit Stage powerhouse. If he was to personally guide them, their cultivation would be smoother.

However, Mu Chen smiled helplessly and hesitated for a moment before holding up his hand.

“Mu Chen, do you have a question?” Seeing Mu Chen raise his head, he asked in confusion.

“Teacher Mo, that step is probably unnecessary for me.”

Teacher Mo was stunned. He immediately guessed what that meant and his eyes fixated itself onto Mu Chen’s body. Then, he could feel the Spiritual Energy fluctuation within the latter’s body was different than the rest of the students.

“Y…You’ve advanced to the Spiritual Rotation Stage?” Teacher Mo exclaimed.

WAAA.

Sounds of wowing erupted out from nearby. Not only did Tang Qian’Er, Mo Ling and the others stare in shock at Mu Chen, even Chen Fan and Huo Yun opened their mouths slightly.

This guy…actually reached the Spiritual Rotation Stage already?

Chapter 75: Spiritual Arts Room 3rd Floor

In the training grounds, the atmosphere turned into an uproar due to the sudden and explosive news. Everyone's gaze fixated onto the figure of the young boy.

Spiritual Rotation Stage?

Although there were many excellent students within the current Northern Spiritual Academy, who have reached the critical point of their breakthroughs, there was only one person who managed to advance into that level. Based on everybody's knowledge, that person is the West Branch's Liu Mubai. He is also the strongest student within the Northern Spiritual Academy.

However, a second one had appeared in the East Branch now?

At the side, Mo Ling and the others stared blankly at Mu Chen. Then, he immediately let out a bitter laugh. Previously, he still tried to show off, yet he never knew that Mu Chen had left him in the dust a long time ago.

"What an insane person." Mo Ling and Tan Qingshan exchanged gazes with each other and saw this thought emerging from within their eyes. Especially the latter one, he had originally ascended to Heaven Class together with Mu Chen. However, right now he had only reached Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase, yet Mu Chen had already surpassed him by far.

"He really is a tough nut to beat."

Chen Fan and Huo Yun's expression became solemn. Although the Spiritual Energy within their aurasea had shown traces of condensing into a wheel, they were still quite far from reaching the actual Spiritual Rotation Stage.

Staring at the boy in front of them wearing a calm and composed expression, they were flabbergasted. It seems that this competitor would be difficult to deal with.

Teacher Mo waved his hand and stopped the noise within the training

grounds. He stared deeply at Mu Chen before saying: “Although you managed to enter the Spiritual Rotation Stage, you should still remain in the Northern Spiritual Academy during the next month. It would probably be beneficial to you as well.”

After hearing this, Mu Chen’s heart moved slightly. He looked at Teacher Mo and nodded his head without saying anything.

“Alright, everyone should train by themselves now. Mu Chen, follow me for a moment.” Teacher Mo waved his hands and left the trainings grounds. Seeing this, Mu Chen immediately followed him.

With the departure of these two men, the training grounds became an uproar completely. It was evident that they were still immersed in the shock that Mu Chen had already advanced into the Spiritual Rotation Stage.

Mu Chen ignored the uproar that he had caused and walked forward. Then he saw Teacher Mo with his hands behind his back.

“Mu Chen, I think that you should be able to guess why our Northern Spiritual Academy obtained a Seeded-Class Entry?” Teacher Mo laughed as he looked at Mu Chen. Although the latter was only a youthful boy, he understood that Mu Chen was quite mature and more cautious than any battle-hardened veterans.

“Is it because of me?” Mu Chen, indeed, managed to predict it a bit. A Seeded-Class Entry was considerably rare even within the Hundred Spirit Heavens, not to mention about the Northern Spiritual Realm. Therefore, it would not have landed within the Northern Spiritual Academy unless of a special reason.

Teacher Mo nodded his head and said:” Indeed, it is related to you. However, Principal Xiao does not intend to hand the seeded entry to you directly.”

“I understand, that thing is too attractive. If it was handed over to me, it wouldn’t be good to the Northern Spiritual Academy.” Mu Chen was not particularly surprised. The Northern Spiritual Academy has always remained neutral, if it were to be given to him so easily; others probably

would not see things favourably.

"And..." Mu Chen let out a laugh. The boy's smile seemed to be a little bit conceited, yet it did not annoy anyone: "Since it belongs to me, I will rely on myself to obtain it. I don't need others generously gifting it to me.

Teacher Mo was stunned for a moment. He couldn't resist laughing out loud and a hint of admiration passed through his eyes: "You sure feel confident about it, if you're competing to obtain the seeded-class entry, you should know who is the greatest opponent for you, right?

"Liu Mubai." Mu Chen shrugged. Although that person was indeed quite annoying, Mu Chen had to admit that he had quite the strength.

"Do you know Liu Mubai's strength? " Teacher Mo asked again.

"He should have advanced into the Spiritual Rotation Stage a long time ago. Although the rumours within the Northern Spiritual Academy say that he is in the Spiritual Rotation Stage Initial Phase, I feel that he is probably stronger than that." Mu Chen thought for a moment before saying this. He had fought against Liu Mubai earlier and the latter had definitely concealed a part of his strength.

"Yes, Liu Mubai currently might be in the Spiritual Rotation Stage Middle Phase." Teacher Mo nodded and he spoke.

"As expected." Mu Chen narrowed his eyes. He was indeed a formidable opponent. However, he had also advanced into the Spiritual Rotation Stage right now. Mu Chen wasn't exactly afraid of him if they had to fight.

"Moreover, Liu Mubai refused Teacher Xi's personal guidance when he heard about the news of a Seeded-Class entry and headed straight back to the Liu Territory. Furthermore, he even took one month off." Teacher Mo said with a faint smile.

"He refused Teacher Xi's guidance?" Mu Chen was slightly surprised. Teacher Xi was still a genuine Spirit Stage powerhouse. Ordinary students would not be able to receive his personal guidance, yet Liu Mubai actually ignored it?

"There must be a reason why he chose to do this. It means that he

believes that the Liu Territory has some sort of method to greatly improve his strength." Teacher Mo said softly.

Mu Chen nodded his head seriously. Although Liu Qingtian was a Spirit Stage powerhouse, he did not believe that Liu Qingtian would be better than Teacher Xi if it was about guidance for cultivation.

Then where did this belief of his come from?

Mu Chen bit his lips as he felt a sense of crisis. The most frightening thing were the unknown facts.

"During this one month, I will also teach you personally. Of course, if you believe that you will be able to improve more rapidly in the Mu Territory, I will not stop you." Teacher Mo smiled as he spoke.

"Teacher Mo, don't joke around. Although my father is also at the Spirit Stage, he has never taught others regarding cultivation. He is not good at it." Mu Chen said helplessly. Mu Feng's strength might be stronger than Teacher Mo's, but he was not suitable to teach others about cultivation.

Teacher Mo smiled and said: "Since that's the case, I will personally teach you during this one month. But before this, I will first talk about the compensation that the Northern Spiritual Academy would be handing to you."

"Compensation?" Mu Chen was startled. He immediately shook his head and said: "Is it about the Seeded-Class Entry? Teacher Mo, the Northern Spiritual Academy did not do anything wrong. Moreover, I do not feel that I've lost anything."

"Ohoho, Principal Xiao was the one to say it. No matter what, you are the reason why the Northern Spiritual Academy obtained this Seeded-Class Entry. If you think that compensation does not sound good, then you can change it to a reward." Teacher Mo smiled.

"Then, fine." Mu Chen scratched his head and did not refuse it anymore. Since the Northern Spiritual Academy was going to give him some benefits, it would be too pretentious if he continued to reject it.

"Then follow me to the Spiritual Arts Room." Teacher Mo smiled.

“Spiritual Arts Room?” Mu Chen was stunned.

“Weren’t you interested in the Spiritual Arts Room’s 3rdFloor? This time, I’ll let you enter it.” Teacher Mo gave a faint laugh before turning around and walking away.

“The Spiritual Arts Room’s 3rdFloor?” Mu Chen licked his lips. A hint of delight surged out from his eyes. The Spiritual Arts Room’s 3rdFloor contains the most powerful Spiritual Arts within the Northern Spiritual Academy’s collection. The collection over there must be many times more bountiful than his father’s collection.

It seems that the Northern Spiritual Academy really decided to pay a price. The Spiritual Arts Room’s 3rdFloor is a place that very few students would be able to enter. At that location, the Spiritual Arts were all at least Spiritual Tier!

Mu Chen’s heart was filled with excitement and he quickly followed.

He followed Teacher Mo as they went all the way through the Northern Spiritual Academy and directly entered the Spiritual Arts Room. Then, they headed straight towards the 2ndFloor. At this moment, a few Heaven Class students were searching through Spiritual Arts. They were surprised when they saw Teacher Mo bringing Mu Chen up here.

“Mu Chen?”

A voice came from the side and Mu Chen looked over towards the red dress. It was evident that the charming Hong Ling was staring at him with her mouth slightly opened.

“Senior Hong Ling.”

Mu Chen gave a slight smile and directed a nod towards Hong Ling. However, he did not say much more and directly followed Teacher Mo to the depths of the 2ndFloor. At that location, there was a faint light barrier. A dense Spiritual Energy fluctuation emitted out from the light barrier.

The two of them stopped in front of the light barrier and caused the students on the 2ndfloor to turn their gaze over at them. They knew that this was the passageway to the Spiritual Art Room’s 3rdFloor. However, no

students were ever permitted to enter.

"Teacher Mo, what are you doing?"

A few Heaven Class students stared in astonishment at Teacher Mo and Mu Chen. Their eyes flashed as if they understood. Then, a surge of surprise filled their eyes.

"No way..."

While they exclaimed in a low voice, Teacher Mo waved his sleeves and cracks slowly appeared on the light barrier. However, just when he was about to bring Mu Chen in, a voice suddenly rang out from behind: "Teacher Mo, why is he allowed to enter the 3rdFloor?!"

Teacher Mo stopped for a moment and turned around. He could see many Heaven Class students staring angrily over at this location. Moreover, many of their eyes were filled with jealousy and unwillingness. They had longed to enter the Spiritual Arts Room 3rdFloor, yet they were not qualified to enter. However, seeing Teacher Mo bring Mu Chen in, it instantly imbalanced their psychological state.

Teacher Mo swept his eyes across them and said in a faint voice: "This is because his performance in the Spiritual Road has helped us to secure the first-ever Seeded-Class Entry for the Northern Spiritual Academy. Is this reason enough?"

The entire Spiritual Arts Room's 2ndFloor instantly became silent. Numerous incredulous gazes began to fixate themselves onto Mu Chen. So the first-ever Seeded-Class Entry of the Northern Spiritual Academy came because of him? Wasn't he kicked out of the Spiritual Road halfway through? Why would the Five Great Academies still purposely hand over a Seeded-Class Entry to the Northern Spiritual Academy?

Hong Ling could not help but conceal her lips with her slender hand. She immediately stared complicatedly at the boy, who had become the center of attention. The boy that had been ordinary within her eyes had slowly emitted out heat and light, causing him to become dazzling.

Seeing that nobody was questioning him anymore, Teacher Mo waved

his hand and walked past the light barrier. Mu Chen also followed him immediately.

After the two individuals disappeared behind the light barrier, the Spiritual Arts Room 2ndFloor was still completely silent. It was evident that they were still immersed in the shock brought by the sudden news.

Chapter 76: Two Spiritual Arts

The 3rdFloor of the Spiritual Arts Room was not as luxurious as imagined by Mu Chen. Instead, it was quite simple. It seemed like an ordinary attic, yet the spotless floor made others understand the importance of this place to the Northern Spiritual Academy due to its maintenance.

It was the first time Mu Chen had entered the treasured location, which every single Northern Spiritual Academy student would drool about and he immediately looked around curiously.

Teacher Mo walked forward. In the center of the attic, there was a bluestone platform. A delicate jade box was placed neatly on top of the bluestone platform. He waved his hand and the jade box opened. A light slowly floated out and many jaded scripts of different color were within the light.

“These are all Spiritual Tier Spiritual Art. You can pick from them.” Teacher Mo stared at Mu Chen and smiled.

“These are all Spiritual Tier Spiritual Arts?” Mu Chen stared at the dozen lights and could not help but smack his lips. As expected from the Northern Spiritual Academy, this collection was many times more powerful than his father’s collection.

Mu Chen hurriedly walked up and eagerness filled his eyes. He did not train in many Spiritual Arts right now and the only one that could be displayed was the Limitless Death Seal. Moreover, it may have a high potential, but it was still Common Tier. As for the Great Pagoda Art, it was too profound. It also could not bring obvious benefits to Mu Chen currently.

Therefore, he needed this level of Spiritual Art to increase his combat abilities. Otherwise, he did not believe he would be able to defeat Liu Mubai, who returned to the Liu Territory to prepare, one month later.

Mu Chen stretched out his hand and a clump of light appeared within his hand. The light faded away and a brown colored jaded script floated

out. He glanced at it for a moment: “Earth Spiritwave, Spiritual Tier Low Rank.”

This seems to be a script for a Spiritual Tier Low Rank Attack Spiritual Art. Mu Chen pondered for a moment, yet he shook his head. Although this Spiritual Art was pretty good, it did not feel like it suited him.

Mu Chen lowered the Spiritual Art within his hand and looked at the other ones. Teacher Mo stood at a corner and quietly watched.

After 10 minutes since Mu Chen had started the selection, his eyes had finally lit up. Then, he stared in great interest at the jaded script in his hand. This jaded script was a faint cyan color. However, it was not an Attack Spiritual Art, but a Movement Spiritual Art. Moreover, it’s rank was not that low as well.

Shadowspirit Step, Spiritual Rank Middle Rank. If this Spiritual Art was to be trained to the Great Achievement Stage, your figure would be like a spirit while the afterimages would confuse others. It was also untraceable.

Mu Chen had learned a few Movement Spiritual Arts before, but these Movement Spiritual Arts were too ordinary. It was still the first time for him to see one of this level.

“Done? You really have a pretty good discerning eye. You’ve picked one of the few Spiritual Tier Middle Rank Spiritual Arts.” Seeing this, Teacher Mo let out a faint smile and spoke.

Mu Chen smiled embarrassedly before he stared at the Spiritual Arts reluctantly. He actually also took a liking to an Attack Spiritual Art. However, it would seem that he was too greedy if he picked another one.

“You’ve taken a liking to another one?” However, Teacher Mo still noticed his expression and immediately frowned as he asked.

Mu Chen smiled awkwardly.

“I originally planned on letting you select one Spiritual Art as compensation,” Teacher Mo stared at the resentful Mu Chen that was rubbing his head. He thought about it for a moment before he said with a smile, “However, I can make an exception to it and allow you to select one

more. However, there is a condition."

"What is the condition?" Mu Chen hurriedly asked.

"You must guarantee that you'll defeat Liu Mubai and let the Northern Spiritual Academy East Branch obtain the Seeded-Class Entry," Teacher Mo said.

"Eh?" Mu Chen was surprised for a moment. This was originally his goal. He stared at Teacher Mo's eyes that contained a smile and seemed to have understood the meaning behind it. He immediately nodded his head, "Don't worry, Teacher Mo. I will not let others obtain what belongs to me!"

Teacher Mo smiled as he waved his head, "Since that's the case, then I'll watch your performance. Choose it."

Mu Chen nodded his head gratefully. Then, he did not hesitate and grabbed onto a jaded script amongst the ones that he had looked at. Ancient light writings emerged on top of the jaded script.

Spirit King Finger, Spiritual Tier Low Rank. It walks down the path of fierceness and hardness. Moreover, it allows the finger to be like metal and could fracture bones.

This was a Spiritual Art that trains the fingers. Mu Chen was quite interested in it. In the past, he had trained in a threat level Finger Spiritual Art. He was extremely satisfied with this type of attack, which was sharp and lethal without using weapons.

"Oh? It's actually a Finger Spiritual Art?"

Teacher Mo was also stunned for a moment when he noticed Mu Chen selecting this Spiritual Art. It was quite painful to train in this sort of Spiritual Art. This is because it requires you to train solely your fingers. Moreover, during the training period, the pain caused by training your fingers was not something an ordinary person could endure. After all, the nerves of the fingertips are linked with the heart.

"I've gotten accustomed to it." Mu Chen smiled. There was no power that you could obtain without effort. If you want to obtain it, you would naturally have to pay a price.

Teacher Mo nodded his head. He felt even more satisfied regarding the boy in front of him. He has talent, yet he was not conceited nor was he reckless. He could endure what ordinary people could not endure. A boy like this was considered to be the most excellent student he had seen through the many years of teaching in the Northern Spiritual Academy.

"During this one month, I will help you with the training of these two Spiritual Arts and allow you to succeed in it as soon as possible." Teacher Mo waved his hand before he walked out of the building.

"I will not disappoint Teacher Mo."

Mu Chen stared at the back of Teacher Mo and nodded his head heavily. He was not a person, who would only talk about how grateful he is to another person. Teacher Mo had helped him greatly, so what he needed to do was not to disappoint him. It would be enough if he snatches the Seeded-Class Entry away!

Liu Mubai. Let us have a good fight this time!

Liu Territory, Inside the Liu Estate.

"Seeded-Class Entry?!"

Within the room, the Liu Territory Lord, Liu Qingtian, immediately sat up when he heard these words. He stared in surprise while revealing a hint of excitement at Liu Mubai as he said, "How is it possible for the Northern Spiritual Academy to obtain a Seeded-Class Entry?"

"I'm not too sure as well." Liu Mubai shook his head and said, "However, it is indeed true."

"A Seeded-Class Entry. This is probably the first time that the Northern Spiritual Academy has obtained it, right? If Liu Mubai is able to obtain this Seeded-Class Entry, he would definitely obtain better resources when he entered the Five Great Academies. His achievements would also surpass ordinary Five Great Academies' students." Liu Zong was also shocked by the news, but he immediately said with a delighted expression.

They were aware that a student, who obtained the Seeded-Class Entry, would be in a different level compared to an ordinary student.

“Haha, if Mubai becomes a seeded student in the Five Great Academies. Perhaps he would have reached the Three Heavens Stage by the time he graduated. At that time, not only would the Liu Territory become the Northern Spiritual Realm’s Lord. We would even obtain a decent position in the Hundred Spirit Heavens!” Liu Ming laughed.

Liu Qingtian licked his lips and stared eagerly at Liu Mubai as he said, “Mubai, no matter what price you have to pay, you must obtain the Seeded-Class Entry!”

“That’s right. Within the Northern Spiritual Academy, who is the most threatening opponent to you?”

Liu Mubai’s eyes narrowed. He thought about the brief fight he had with Mu Chen in the Black Eerie Swamp. Although he had hid quite a bit of strength back then, he could feel, with his instincts, that Mu Chen seemed to have some other means as well.

If there was still a student within the Northern Spiritual Academy that could cause him some uncertainty, it would probably be Mu Chen.

“Mu Chen.” Liu Mubai replied. “Dad, this Mu Chen had obtained the qualifications to the Spiritual Road before. We cannot underestimate him too much.”

“Mu Chen? That boy?” Hearing this name, Liu Qingtian’s eyes turned cold. He remembered that Mu Chen had lured the Devouring Spirit Bees over in the Black Eerie Swamp and helped Mu Feng solve their dilemma.

“Big Brother, that boy is quite strange. Back then, Xue Tu went to kill him, who was only a Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase, but in the end, he was the one who somehow died.” Liu Ming also opened his mouth to speak. He could still remember deeply about the matter back then.

Liu Qingtian nodded his head and a hint of coldness immediately surged through his face. He said, “The Seeded-Class Entry must fall into the hands of the Liu Territory. Otherwise, it would be a calamity. Therefore, we must not make any mistakes about this matter!”

“Mubai. From today onwards, you will enter the forbidden lands behind

the mountain. Your grandfather will assist you with your training!" Liu Qingtian's eyes flashed and he muttered.

"Grandfather? Grandfather is inside the forbidden lands? Didn't he go missing 3 years ago?" Hearing this, Liu Mubai was surprised and became speechless.

"Heh, that is what is said at the outside. Your grandfather secluded himself to try and enter the Three Heavens Stage. If we wait until that old man succeeds, wouldn't the Northern Spiritual Realm be completely controlled by our Liu Territory?!"

Liu Qingtian let out a dark laughing sound and said, "That group of idiots from the Mu Territory thought that they would be safe if they hindered the Liu Territory from obtaining the Nine Nether Bird. Just you wait, as long as your grandfather comes out, I will make Mu Feng kneel down in front of me like a dog!"

"An upstart force wants to compare backgrounds with my Liu Territory? What an idiotic dream!"

"Yes!"

Hearing this, Liu Mubai also had a hint of excitement flash through his eyes. If his grandfather could personally assist him, his strength would definitely increase greatly after one month. By then, who would care about Mu Chen?

As he thought back about the shame that Mu Chen made him feel in the Black Eerie Swamp, Liu Mubai gritted his teeth tightly. A hint of cruelness appeared at his mouth. At that time, I want to trample you fiercely in front of everybody's face...in front of everybody, who had confidence in you. The most excellent youth in the Northern Spiritual Realm is me, Liu Mubai, and not a trash like you!

Chapter 77: Harsh Training

Northern Spiritual Academy, Behind the Mountains.

Over at this location, there was a lush forest as well as a huge waterfall. The waterfall hanged down from the mountain like a silver water python as sounds of rumbling bombarded down. A mist rose up from it and emitted outwards.

Teacher Mo had his hands behind his back as he stood in the empty space below the waterfall. In front of him, Mu Chen, Tang Qian'Er, Mo Ling, Chen Fan and Huo Yun were all there.

"From today onwards, I will give each of you a specialized training. Aside from Mu Chen, the rest of you must officially advance to the Spiritual Rotation Stage within the month. Otherwise, you will be disqualified and lose the rights to fight for the Five Great Academies' entries." Teacher Mo's gaze swept across the few people as he spoke faintly.

Hearing these words, Tang Qian'Er, Chen Fan and the others' expressions became serious. They trained at the Northern Spiritual Academy because of the Five Great Academies' entries. If they were to lose the qualifications, it would be a hard blow for them to resist.

"The four of you are currently at the pinnacle of Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase. Chen Fan and Huo Yun have even begun to attempt to condense a Spiritual Wheel. However, all of you are still a step away. Therefore, all of you will require using some external pressure in order to condense the Spiritual Energy into a wheel."

"External pressure?" Chen Fan and the others exchanged gazes.

"Do you see this waterfall?" Teacher Mo smiled and pointed at the waterfall causing a rumbling sound behind him. Numerous currents flowed down and crashed into the rocks below with a massive energy. It splashed and caused the sky to be filled with mist.

"Starting from today, the four of you will sit beneath the waterfall and train. You will use all your Spiritual Energy to resist the impact of the

waterfall. The external pressure will gradually seep into your body and gradually force the Spiritual Energy within your aurasea to condense into a wheel."

"Ah?"

Chen Fan and the others were astonished. Sitting and training underneath a waterfall? Wouldn't they become dizzy just after resisting this terrifying impact for a minute?

"There are no shortcuts for training. If you want to advance to the Spiritual Rotation Stage within a month, you must take ruthless methods. If you can't even do this, then there's no need for you to compete for the entries!" Teacher Mo said in a deep voice.

"Yes!"

The four of them hurriedly replied.

"If you do not have enough Spiritual Energy within your body, you can exit temporarily to recover your Spiritual Energy. Afterwards, you'll head back in!" Teacher Mo swept his sharp eyes across them as he spoke.

"Yes!"

"You can begin now." Teacher Mo waved his hand and said.

Tang Qian'Er and the others exchanged gazes. Then, they gritted their teeth as Spiritual Energy surged out from their bodies. Afterwards, their body moved and passed by the wide river before reaching the bottom of the waterfall.

Bang Bang Bang!

However, just when they reached the bottom of the waterfall, they did not even manage to sit cross-legged and were directly blown into the lake by the powerful impact. Everyone of them became a drowning chicken.

The four of them climbed out from the lake as their Spiritual Energy poured out constantly and they forcibly resisted the impact from the water current as they sat down. Then, they gritted their teeth and endured the pain from the waterfall's impact. They stubbornly resisted it and

circulated their Spiritual Energy.

Mu Chen stared at the four individuals sitting cross-legged underneath the water fall and secretly smacked his lips. This method of training was quite serious; it was indeed a demonic training.

“Mu Chen.”

Teacher Mo’s gaze fixated on Mu Chen. This made the latter’s heart jump and he felt a bad feeling.

“Did you read the two Spiritual Arts?” Teacher Mo asked faintly.

Mu Chen nodded his head.

“The training ground for you is over there.” Teacher Mo pointed at a place down the river. Mu Chen turned his gaze over there and was suddenly numb. He could see that it was a location where the waterfall would fall down without hitting any obstacles. If you have to say it, the place where Tang Qian’Er and the others were training had a few rocks above to ease the impact. As for him, it was completely vast and empty. There was nothing blocking it.

And most importantly, there seemed to be only wooden logs with the size of his feet standing tall and upright underneath the waterfall.

“If you want to successful learn the Shadowspirit Step, it is very simple. You only have to shuffle back and forth through those wooden logs without getting wet at all.” Teacher Mo said.

“What?”

Mu Chen was completely stunned. He had to shuffle back and forth, yet he could not get wet. How was that possible?

“These waterfalls will not be maintained continuously. There will be a momentary gap. If you want to fulfill this condition, your speed must be able to keep up with the momentary gap of the water current.”

Mu Chen let out a bitter smile. This difficulty wasn’t small. However, it was indeed an excellent method of training his movement.

“Moreover, the Spirit King Finger is indeed fierce and sharp. However,

with the extent of training you have had with your fingers, it is still impossible for you to train in the Spirit King Finger. Therefore, your fingers must accept this training. I will let some wooden logs fall down from time to time from the waterfall. And what you have to do is to use your fingers to pierce through these wooden logs that would flash by instantly." Teacher Mo slowly spoke.

Mu Chen felt his head becoming numb again. The wooden logs would fall down rapidly through the water current. Just how powerful would it be? Moreover, based on their speed, he would miss it if he was slightly distracted. If he wanted to pierce through it, he must take action the moment when the wooden logs passed by. This not only requires a perfect control of your attacking speed, it is also a extremely brutal training towards his fingers.

"What is it? Are you afraid?" Teacher Mo said faintly.

"Although it is a bit troublesome, it's not enough to make me feel afraid." Mu Chen took a deep breath. His handsome face gradually became calm and eagerness emerged within his black eyes.

"Ok."

Seeing this, Teacher Mo also nodded his head in satisfaction: "Then, let's begin."

Mu Chen also nodded. He did not plan on being indecisive and immediately moved. He directly passed by the surface of the water and charged directly into the fierce waterfall currents like a swallow. Then, he landed on top of a narrow wooden log.

Boooom!

The powerful water current charged down fiercely. Mu Chen toes hurriedly touched the wooden log and charged to the next wooden log in front of him.

Bang!

But just when he was about to charge out, a powerful water current rushed down and instantly threw him into the lake below. He seemed to

have underestimated the speed of the water current.

Mu Chen spat out the lake's water in his mouth and his hands slapped the water. Then, his body jumped onto a wooden log again. His face had already become completely serious and Spiritual Energy gushed out of his body in order to defend against the water current's impact.

In the beginning, it was apparent that he had to use all his Spiritual Energy to protect his body. Then, he would gradually get accustomed to it.

Mu Chen focused all his senses before rushing out again and passed straight through a water current. Then, he landed on another wooden log. However, just when he was about to leap forward again, he heard a strange sound coming from the water current and his eyes stared up. He noticed a black shadow fiercely charging down from the water current.

It was a wooden log mixed up in the water current.

Two fingers from Mu Chen's hand were straightened out and in the next instant, it fiercely thrust out.

The two fingers were like spears as they stirred the layers of water vapor. Then, it directly stabbed ruthlessly as the black shadow passed by.

Bang!

A muffled sound rang out. The wooden logs only shuddered and showed no signs of being thrusted through. Then, it flowed down the water current into the lake below.

Seeing that his strike was completely useless, Mu Chen grinned. An intense pain came from his fingertips. In addition to the speed of it flowing down, the wooden log was soaked with the lake's water. It was harder than fine iron. Moreover, he could not use Spiritual Energy. This sort of collision made it feel that the bones of his fingertips had shattered.

Boom!

Due to this slight distraction, the waterfall poured down rapidly and directly blew Mu Chen into the lake.

"Damn it!"

Mu Chen stuck his head out from within the lake and cursed fiercely. He endured the pain from his fingertips and stood on once again. He pushed his speed to the extreme and charged straight out.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Underneath the waterfall, a figure was constantly blown out and was mercilessly pushed into the lake. This powerful force was enough to make Mu Chen dizzy. However, he stubbornly endured the pain throughout his entire body and gritted his teeth. His speed was increasing endlessly.

Although he would sometimes be able to dodge the water current's impact once, the wooden log flowing down the water current still tormented his fingers.

Near the waterfall, Tang Qian'Er and the others, who were sitting cross-legged, heard the commotion and quietly opened their eyes. Upon looking at the commotion, they immediately shivered. Although they have not personally experienced it, they could tell that Mu Chen was facing something more vicious than them just by looking at it.

Beside the lake, Teacher Mo was standing with his hands held behind his back. He looked calmly at the awkward figure beneath waterfall. If he wants to succeed, he must first pay a price.

Throughout the entire afternoon, the figure would tirelessly shuffle back and forth the waterfall. During this period, even Tang Qian'Er and the others took two breaks. However, Mu Chen did not have the slightest plans of stopping this demonic training.

When the sunset emerged in the sky, Tang Qian'Er and the others would drag their exhausted bodies onto the shore. Every single one of them were tired and had a pale expression. They did not care and slumped down onto the ground while panting heavily.

Seeing this, Teacher Mo said: "Let's end today's training."

Tang Qian'Er and the others had just become relieved, yet they immediately turned gloomy the moment the next phrase came out.

"We'll continue it tomorrow."

Tang Qian'Er and the others slumped down on the ground powerlessly and rested for a while. However, they could still hear a plopping sound coming from nearby. Then, they lifted their heads and noticed a slim figure moving like a machine. It seems that he did not hear Teacher Mo's words and continued to climb up and get washed away.

Although they could feel that the figure was already somewhat sluggish due to the exhaustion, a determined will supported his thin body so that he did not fall down.

"Teacher Mo...He's reaching his limit soon!" Tang Qian'Er bit her lips and could not help but look away towards Teacher Mo.

Mo Fei shook his head slowly and said gently: "This is his own decision. He is stronger than you not just because of his talent, Mu Feng...really has a good son."

Chen Fan and the others had a complicated expression as they watched the tired figure beneath the waterfall. A rare sense of admiration emerged within their hearts. If Mu Chen's talent was higher than theirs, they could say that it was because the heavens have given it to him. However, they must admit that Mu Chen's willpower...

This person...is really insane.

Chapter 78: Condensation

Time was like sand in an hourglass and in the blink of an eye, half a month passed.

During this half a month, Mu Chen had engaged in a high-intensity training underneath the waterfall every day. He did not know how many times he was fiercely smashed down by the impact of the waterfall into the lake. The logs that fell down from the waterfall made Mu Chen's fingers become swollen many times. If it wasn't because his Spiritual Energy would endlessly circulate and nurture his body and bones within his finger, Mu Chen would not have been able to endure it.

In the first five days of this half a month, Mu Chen was almost always brought back by Teacher Mo in a half-unconscious state. The boy's gentleness would make others feel quite comfortable. However, once he decided to do something, the persistence that he showed even moved Teacher Mo.

Luckily, Mu Chen began to display his talents out after one week of adaptation period. Although he would still be injured, it was already much better compared to the half-unconscious state he was in during the first week.

Moreover, Mu Chen was adapting to it even more as the days passed. Sometimes, he would be able to follow the momentary gap of the waterfall's current.

After many injuries and coupled with them being nurtured by Spiritual Energy, his fingers had finally been trained to the point where its lethal power had increased. He would occasionally pierce through the wooden logs that passed by if he managed to grasp onto the opportunity.

The harsh training had finally begun to show its results.

Naturally, Mu Chen wasn't the only one who improved during this period of time. Tang Qian'Er and the others had also improved after training under the pressure below the waterfall. Amongst them, the ones who improved the most were Chen Fan and Huo Yun.

After all, the two of them had long attempted to condense their Spiritual Wheel. Right now, they only need to cross through a small step in order to officially advance to the Spiritual Rotation Stage. Thus, they were surprised to discover that the Spiritual Energy within their aurasea had completely condensed into a Spiritual Wheel on the 13th day of the training. The Spiritual Energy that surged out had split apart the massive water current flowing down.

However, Teacher Mo made them continue their training underneath the waterfall after they had successfully advanced to the Spiritual Rotation Stage. It was to allow them to stabilize their level as soon as possible and to avoid their Spiritual Energy to show signs of being unsubstantial.

Furthermore, Tang Qian'Er and Mo Ling were also stimulated when they were aware that Chen Fan and Huo Yun had succeeded in their advancement to the Spiritual Rotation Stage. The amount of time they rested daily had been greatly reduced and they gritted their teeth to bear the impact of the water current. They circulated the Spiritual Energy within their bodies and hoped that they would soon reach the Spiritual Rotation Stage.

Under the scorching sun in the horizon, the five figures were facing waves of pressure underneath the freezing waterfall and allowed time to slowly pass by.

...

Bang.

The waterfall descended down from the mountain stream and landed in the lake below. Water vapour splashed and filled the sky.

At the edge of the lake, Teacher Mo held his hands behind his back as he looked at Tang Qian'Er and the others sitting cross-legged below the waterfall. He felt the increasingly dense Spiritual Energy fluctuation and nodded his head slightly. Then, he turned his head over to another direction.

It was evident that the waterfall over there was much more rapid. The massive water current would rumble as it flowed down. Sounds of

rumbling reverberated itself among the mountain.

Underneath the waterfall were numerous wooden logs. Mu Chen's body was swiftly jumping across the wooden logs like a nimble monkey. His speed was extraordinary and sometimes, you could only see a shadow flashing by.

"It's not enough!"

However, Mu Chen was not satisfied with his own speed. Instead, he frowned. The cold water vapour splashed onto his face and allowed his state of mind to calm down.

The dark black Spiritual Energy surged out of Mu Chen's body and wrapped around his feet. In that instant, a booming sound resounded and he seemed to vanish into thin air.

The water current that covered the sky suddenly descended down.

Mu Chen's eyes narrowed when he saw this and his body instantly moved. He was like lightning and shuffled through the water current within the waterfall. At this moment, he had pushed his speed to the very limits.

Swoosh!

A vague shadow emerged on a wooden log and the impact from the water current directly passed through it. It was actually an afterimage caused by his high-speed.

"Huh?"

Teacher Mo's eyes suddenly focused as he watched this scene from the lake. His mouth issued out a light "huh" sound.

At this moment, Mu Chen seemed to have been separated from the outside world. He could feel that his body suddenly became a lot lighter while the water current which was originally impossible to catch with his eyes had suddenly slowed down. He could even see the tiny gap between the curtains of water.

As long as he passed through those gaps, the waterfall would not be able

to touch him!

Swish!

Mu Chen's figure rushed out like a blur and dark black Spiritual Energy continued to be instigated around his legs. A blurry figure emerged and its body seemed to pass through the gap inside the waterfall like a black line.

Swoosh!

Moreover, a black shadow seemed to have flowed down the rushing water as Mu Chen's body passed through the gap in the water current.

However, Mu Chen's eyes remained calm. He paused for a moment while sticking up two fingers. Then, his arm extended straight out and his fingers seemed to be like a spear. It pierced through the flow of water and accurately struck the center of the wooden log while it flowed down from the waterfall.

Bang!

A deep sound resounded out. Mu Chen's fingers forcefully pierced through the wooden log and caused splinters of wood to fly out. Then, it was washed away by the water current.

Joy instantly surged out of Mu Chen's heart. It was the most relaxing attack he had done during these twenty or so days. There wasn't the slightest hesitation and his power flowed out perfectly.

"Haha!"

An indescribable delight rang out within Mu Chen's heart. Then, he could not help but laugh out loud. His body moved and turned into a black line as he shuffled through the waterfall.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

While shuffling through the waterfall, his attacks did not stop. The winds emitted from his fingers were like lightning and grasped the timing to attack perfectly. Numerous wooden logs were pierced through as they passed near his body.

At this moment, these sounds seemed to have formed a wonderful

rhythmic melody

Beneath another waterfall, Tang Qian'Er and the others were shocked by this rhythmic sound and turned their gazes over. Then, they were stunned when they noticed the shadow shuffling back and forth like a ghost beneath the waterfall.

"This...crazy guy."

Chen Fan could not help but open his mouth wide. After he had advanced to the Spiritual Rotation Stage, he wasn't willing to accept Mu Chen and attempted Mu Chen's training. However, he was instantly washed away by a wooden log. Later on, he used his Spiritual Energy to wrap it around his body and attempted it once again. But in the end, he was still fiercely blown away by a wooden log flowing down the waterfall.

And right now, Mu Chen was actually treating those wooden logs within the waterfall like they were something ordinary. Moreover, he did not forget to pierce through all the wooden logs with his fingers as they passed by. Just what sort of terrifying speed and finger strength would it require to do this?

Within the entire Northern Spiritual Academy, the West Branch's Liu Mubai might be the only one who could fight against this crazy individual.

As Tang Qian'Er and the others watched Mu Chen as if he was a monster, Mu Chen finally stopped and stood steadily on a wooden log after ten minutes.

He balanced himself, but did not plan on backing out yet. Instead, he sat down cross-legged as Tang Qian'Er and the others gazed at him, puzzled. Dark black Spiritual Energy surged out from within his body and blocked the impact from the waterfall.

Seeing Mu Chen's strange action, Tang Qian'Er and the others were slightly startled. Then, they could feel a special Spiritual Energy fluctuation emitting out from within Mu Chen's body.

"This is..."

Teacher Mo's eyebrows lifted up slightly: "He made a breakthrough in

his Gong Fa Spiritual Art?"

Teacher Mo's prediction was correct. Previously, Mu Chen could feel an indescribable relaxing feeling within his body and pushed his speed to the very limits. However, when he did that, he discovered that the Spiritual Energy within his body suddenly circulated and the route it took was the circulation route for the Great Pagoda Art.

The dark black Spiritual Energy surged out and finally entered his aurasea. In that instant, Mu Chen's mind had followed and entered it as well. Then, he was surprised to see the dark black Spiritual Energy rising up on top of the Spiritual Wheel in his aurasea. It slowly condensed and formed a palm-sized illusionary light tower.

The light tower was extremely unreal and seemed like it would vanish if some wind blew. If you looked at it carefully, the tower seemed to have nine floors. However, aside from the foundation of the tower which seemed to look real, the rest of it was like an illusion.

But when this illusionary light tower was formed, Mu Chen could feel the mysterious lights within his body lighting up once again. These lights were spread around the depths of his body. However, when he looked, he discovered that when he connected the lights together, they would form a massive light tower within Mu Chen's body.

The moment that this light tower appeared, the dark black Spiritual Energy on the surface of Mu Chen's body in the outside world seemed to have formed a vague black light tower.

This tower of light protected his entire body.

Rumble.

The boundless waterfall descended down and smashed onto the black light tower, yet the light tower was motionless.

However, the black light tower only lasted for an instant before swiftly fading away. Furthermore, Mu Chen's tightly closed eyes slowly opened when the light tower faded away. A hint of delight could not be concealed within the depths of his eyes.

At this moment, the Great Pagoda Art which he trained in had suddenly entered the Shape-Condensation Level!

Chapter 79: Results

Within the flowing waterfall, Mu Chen opened his eyes. His face was completely filled with delight. He never expected that the Great Pagoda Art would actually make a breakthrough at this moment.

This had gone beyond his expectations.

The Great Pagoda Art had a total of 3 levels: Foundation, Shape-Condensation and Towerform.

The first level was relatively easy to reach. However, Mu Chen did not make much progress after that. Although he felt that he was becoming increasingly proficient in the Great Pagoda Art, the feeling of breakthrough did not appear until today.

Within his aurasea, the illusionary light tower above his Spiritual Energy light wheel had already vanished. However, Mu Chen could clearly feel that the Spiritual Energy flowing within his body had become increasingly pure as it condensed.

Moreover, he could vaguely feel the sealed Spiritual Pulse within his body after the Great Pagoda Art had reached the Shape-Condensation level. It was not like before when he could not perceive it at all.

It was evident that the Spiritual Pulse that his mother had sealed was gradually being perceived by him as he was deepening his understanding about the Great Pagoda Art.

Mu Chen lowered his head and looked at his hand. He gently clenched it and an inexplicit expression emerged on his face. It was the first time that he could clearly feel the hidden Spiritual Pulse within his body.

He could not predict what level the Spiritual Pulse was, but he could vaguely feel a peculiar feeling. It was as if it was awakening from hibernating and begun to reveal itself from within the clouds.

He was looking forward to the moment when his Great Pagoda Art reaches the Mastery Stagel. Just how powerful would the Spiritual Pulse be when that happens?

Mu Chen took a deep breath and spread out his hands, allowing the Spiritual Energy which was wrapped around his body to disappear. He allowed the freezing waterfall to bombard his body before himself pushing off with his toes. His body turned into a black shadow and rushed out. In the end, he landed beside the lake,

At this moment, Tang Qian'Er and the others had already stopped training and were resting on the shore. They had a strange expression when they noticed Mu Chen rushing over to their side. They had completely witnessed the commotion caused by Mu Chen earlier.

"You seem to have become even more powerful?" Chen Fan looked at Mu Chen. The latter's aura remained at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Initial Movement. However, they felt that he was completely different from before. Even if he was considered to be at the same cultivation level, he felt some danger when he faced Mu Chen.

Mu Chen smiled. Currently, he had truly succeeded in his training for the Shadowspirit Step and Spirit King Finger. Although he still required actual combat to hone it, his combat ability had already improved greatly. Moreover, his Great Pagoda Art had made a breakthrough earlier and his Spiritual Energy was much more powerful compared to Chen Fan and the others. It was to the point where he was not inferior to a Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase in terms of density and endurance of Spiritual Energy.

"It seems that this training style has already reached your desired effects." Teacher Mo slowly walked over and glanced at Mu Chen as he smiled.

Mu Chen nodded. Right now, he could truly follow the speed of the waterfall's current. Furthermore, he could even pierce through the wooden logs which flowed down without missing a single one. Therefore, he had already succeeded in reaching the results he had initially desired.

"However, training is still just training. Right now, you need actual combat to hone the Spiritual Arts that you've trained."

Teacher Mo smiled and turned to Chen Fan and Huo Yun: "The two of you should join forces and see if you can defeat him."

“Join forces?”

Chen Fan and Huo Yun frowned. However, they stared eagerly at Mu Chen. During this period of time, Mu Chen had severely shocked them. If they were able to beat Mu Chen up then they would be able to balance their emotions.

They understood that they would not be Mu Chen’s opponent if they were fighting individually. However, if they joined forces, they still had some confidence about winning. After all, they were both at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Initial Phase like Mu Chen. It was possible to make up for the gap by relying on numbers.

“Mu Chen, will you let us feel happy?” Chen Fan grinned as he spoke.

“You’re actually still acting this happy when it’s two against one, can’t you be more promising?” Tang Qian’Er batted her eye at Chen Fan and sighed.

On the other hand, Mu Chen smiled. He glanced at Teacher Mo before nodding his head and said: “Since it’s like this, I’ll have to trouble the two of you to help me hone my skills for a while.”

Seeing Mu Chen accept, Chen Fan and Huo Yun suddenly laughed. They twisted their neck and said: “That’s great. However, I will tell you in advance, you shouldn’t treat us like students, who have never fought against humans before. We have once participated in an Adventurer’s Team, so we fought against others in a bloody battle before.”

“Thank you for the reminder.”

Mu Chen slowly extended his hands and said: “Please guide me.”

Chen Fan and Huo Yun’s faces became slightly serious when they saw this. Although they were saying this, they were still quite afraid of Mu Chen. After all, Mu Chen had trained under their gazes during the past twenty days. They knew somewhat how powerful the latter was.

“Let’s go!”

The two of them were quite familiar with each other. They exchanged

gazes and rushed out towards Mu Chen at the same time without deliberately reminding the other one. Moreover, they split apart to the sides as they rushed over.

Dense Spiritual Energy surged out from Chen Fan and Huo Yun's body. Their speed instantly increased and their tightly clenched fists emerged on the left and right side of Mu Chen. A vicious wind came from their fists and headed towards Mu Chen's head ruthlessly.

When she saw the two of them being so merciless against Mu Chen, Tang Qian'Er could not help but call out softly.

However, Mu Chen remained quite calm against this synchronized attack. Before the winds from their fist could reach him, he had already taken half a step back.

The fierce winds brushed past his face and lifted up Mu Chen's hair. It revealed a pair of black eyes that were calm like a serene lake.

"Tempest Massacre Fist!"

Since Mu Chen had easily avoided their offense, Chen Fan and Huo Yun pressed onwards tightly. Their fists blasted out and a tempest seemed to have emerged. A fierce fist wind was enveloped by dense Spiritual Energy and directly charged over at Mu Chen.

As this storm-like attack rushed over, Spiritual Energy gushed out from Mu Chen's feet. His body moved and with a swishing sound, he seemed to have become a ghostly shadow and directly passed through the duo's continuous offensive.

The duo's fist winds did not manage to touch Mu Chen's body at all!

"What speed!"

Chen Fan and Huo Yun narrowed their eyes. They did not manage to capture how Mu Chen passed through their offensive.

"On the left!"

Light flashed through the corner of their eyes and they turned around to fire off a kick. The kick was like a spear and tore apart the air as it fiercely

bombarded the figure over there.

However, when their kicks reached the figure, it went straight through. There wasn't the slightest feeling of them hitting Mu Chen.

"It's an afterimage!"

A touch of amazement finally flashed through Chen Fan and Huo Yun's eyes. How could Mu Chen's speed be this swift and bizarre?

"Over here!"

Laughter suddenly rang out from their right side. Chen Fan and Huo Yun were surprised and hurriedly turned their body. However, they witnessed Mu Chen with a total of four fingers standing up on both hands. A vague golden light was flashing on the fingertips while an extremely fierce fluctuation emitted out.

Swish!

Mu Chen's arm trembled. The finger seemed to pierce through the air like lightning as it charged straight towards Chen Fan and Huo Yun's throat.

Boom!

A dense Spiritual Energy rushed out unreservedly from Chen Fan and Huo Yun. It formed a thick Spiritual Energy light shield in front of them. It was apparent that they had noticed how powerful Mu Chen's attack was.

But in face of their defense, Mu Chen did not show any signs of stopping. At his fingertips, a golden light seemed to surge out from his bones. It was filled with an extremely fierce fluctuation.

Dong!

Mu Chen's fingers finally landed on Chen Fan and Huo Yun's Spiritual Energy light shield. They watched as the light shield became distorted. Then afterwards, the fingers pierce through the Spiritual Energy light shield under the duo's widened eyes.

Swish!

Mu Chen's glowing fingertips stopped half an inch in front of Chen Fan and Huo Yun's throat. Although it did not touch their bodies, a bloodstain still appeared on their throats. A slight pain exuded out.

Chen Fan and Huo Yun did not dare to move at all. They stared at the golden fingertips in front of them and took a deep gulp. If they were in a fight for life and death, Mu Chen's fingers would have ripped through their throats.

"Thanks for the fight."

Mu Chen directed a smile at the duo. However, he felt some joy within his heart. The Shadowspirit step and the Spirit King Finger's power had exceeded his expectations. If he had to fight against two Spiritual Rotation Stage opponents earlier, it would not be this easy even if he won.

"It seems that we should not even think about getting that seeded entry." Chen Fan helplessly pouted. Although they held back a little, it was evident that Mu Chen did not use his full strength as well.

"You wanted to take advantage of Mu Chen, yet in the end you were the ones that were taught a lesson, right?" Tang Qian'Er suddenly smiled when she was aware of Mu Chen's victory.

"Qian'Er. We're at least considered your most faithful suitors. You shouldn't give us such a heavy blow, right?" Chen Fan and Huo Yun said while being depressed.

"Thanks, but I would be happier if you two stopped pursuing after me." Tang Qian'Er smiled sweetly and had a pure and beautiful smile. However, she still gave the duo a relentless hit.

"Not bad." On the side, Teacher Mo also nodded as he smiled: "However, your Shadowspirit Step is still a bit rusty. You're unable to use it naturally and at ease. It seems that you will have to practice it for a while before it will integrate completely into your fights."

"Since it's impossible for them to give you a decent spar, I'll personally fight against you for the remainder of the time." Teacher Mo smiled as he stared at Mu Chen, who was completely stunned. "Of course, I will

suppress my strength to the level of Spiritual Rotation Stage. No matter what methods you use, you will have perfectly completed the one month training if you are able to defeat me. How's that?"

Mu Chen grinned and nodded heavily. Not even the slightest hint of fear emerged in his eyes, instead, fighting spirit burned within his eyes. It was more than he could wish for to have a Spirit Stage powerhouse help him with his training!

...

And while Mu Chen began to fight against Teacher Mo, suddenly a powerful Spiritual Energy exploded out in the forbidden lands behind the mountains within Liu Territory's Liu Estate. The Spiritual Energy formed a fierce wind and caused the forest to shake.

After a while, the forest gradually stopped shaking. A slender figure slowly walked out from a cave in the forbidden lands. That appearance, it was Liu Mubai.

At this moment, he grasped his hands tightly and gently felt the powerful strength within his body. The smile on his face gradually became more savage.

Mu Chen, I'm afraid that your lucky days are about to end.

Chapter 80: Spirit Stage as a Sparring Partner

After Mu Chen had defeated Chen Fan and Huo Yun, his opponent had suddenly become Teacher Mo. This change of events finally made Mu Chen suffer.

Although Teacher Mo suppressed his strength to the Spiritual Rotation Stage, it was not the Initial Phase and rather the Spiritual Rotation Stage Middle Phase. Based on what Teacher Mo had said, you require great pressure if you want to temper yourself. If they were equally matched, the effects weren't as great. Initially, Mu Chen had no objections to these words. However, he felt that he was tricked by Teacher Mo after they began to fight. Although Teacher Mo suppressed his strength to the Spiritual Rotation Stage Middle Phase, his keen vision, experience, the dexterity of his forged body and his variety of offensive and defensive techniques were all at the Spirit Stage level. He could suppress his Spiritual Energy, but he could not suppress these things...

Therefore, Mu Chen was basically fighting against an opponent, who possesses Spiritual Rotation Stage Middle Phase strength and has the experience of a Spirit Stage.

The result of the battle was obvious. Mu Chen was completely slaughtered.

During the first day of combat, Mu Chen had fought against Teacher Mo 13 times. He basically did not manage to do any significant damage to the latter and lost terribly every single time. On the side, Tang Qian'Er and the others felt that it was an extremely painful sight to watch and turned their gazes away.

The situation on the second day was slightly better. However, Mu Chen still remained in a disadvantaged position. If he was slightly careless, Teacher Mo would instantly take advantage of the flaw and defeat him in one move.

Although Mu Chen's situation was quite miserable, he wasn't considered to be the same as any ordinary boy. In the Spiritual Road, he had experienced many bloody fights and had a certain excellent talent. He was able to quickly absorb the reason of his failure and improve by making changes bit by bit...

Therefore, after being completely slaughtered by Teacher Mo for two days, he was finally able to gradually catch up to the pace. Although he was still in a disadvantaged position, he was, at the very least, able to counterattack. The counterattacks weren't that effective, but it was still considered to be an extremely decent change.

Within the mountains, under the waterfall.

Dense Spiritual Energy erupted out and caused the gravel on the ground nearby to shatter to powder. A thin boy's figure flew out like the wind and like a blurry shadow, he instantly appeared in front of a slender figure. His hand was clenched tightly as Spiritual Energy surged out. It brought out vicious winds as it ruthlessly headed at the back of the slender figure's head.

Bang!

But before the fist managed to smash on its target, the slender figure seemed to have eyes behind his back and did not show signs of turning his body. A fist passed by his ears and bombarded behind him. It directly collided with the fist.

A fierce breeze emitted out and the slender figure's body trembled slightly. His fist instantly turned into a palm as a dense Spiritual Energy surged out from the center of it.

Dong!

The thin figure was suddenly hit by a heavy blow and his body flew backwards. Then, the figure made a spin in mid-air before staggering as he landed on the ground.

"He lost again."

Not too far away, Chen Fan and the others watched this scene and

instantly grinned. During this past week, they have seen this scene numerous times. However, Mu Chen was currently doing a lot better than the previous week. At that time, Mu Chen would have been defeated miserably when Teacher Mo attacked. But as of now, he had already managed to initiate an attack, though those attacks were easily blocked by Teacher Mo.

"Mu Chen is already quite amazing like this. If it was us, we probably wouldn't even have the courage to fight against Teacher Mo." Tang Qian'Er frowned and said when she noticed Chen Fan and the others snickering.

"It's true that we wouldn't dare to fight against Teacher Mo. But that's because we aren't that stupid." Chen Fan laughed. Unless he was stupid, why would he fight against a Spirit Stage? Even if the Spirit Stage powerhouse was to suppress his Spiritual Energy to the level of Spiritual Rotation Stage, isn't it still the same thing?

Tang Qian'Er batted an eye at him sourly.

"Today is the final day of training. We will be fighting for the entries tomorrow..." Mo Ling was a little regretful as he said: "It seems that Brother Mu won't be able to reach his target."

"That's good. That guy is quite proud and arrogant. Even I would have to admire his performance during this period of time. However, how is it possible for him to defeat Teacher Mo?" Huo Yun patted Mo Ling's shoulders and spoke.

Mo Ling scratched his head. It was true. Teacher Mo was pretty much an unattainable existence in their eyes. With their current strength, it was basically impossible for them to defeat Teacher Mo. It was impossible even if he had suppressed his strength!

"That guy still refused to give up."

Chen Fan suddenly said. He watched as Mu Chen, who was blown away by Teacher Mo, straightened himself. Within Mu Chen's eyes, there will still a fiery fighting spirit that refused to be extinguished.

“That guy…” Chen Fan smacked his lips and immediately gave a wry smile as he scratched his head: “He is quite crazy. However, he is definitely much stronger than us. At the very least, I would not be able to persist when I clearly knew I was going to be slaughtered.”

Tang Qian’Er held her hands tightly. Although her eyes were filled with worry, she knew Mu Chen’s personality quite well. The latter would never give up this easily.

“Let’s do this one final time. You have to fight for the entries tomorrow, so you should have a good rest tonight.” Seeing Mu Chen look over here once again, Teacher Mo nodded his head and spoke faintly.

Mu Chen did not say anything. He only took a deep breath and his eyes instantly became sharp. Dark black Spiritual Energy surged out from his feet and his body turned into a black line as he headed directly at Teacher Mo.

Teacher Mo did not move his body at all and only stomped with his feet. Some gravel on the ground flew up into the sky as he waved his sleeves. His Spiritual Energy surrounded the gravel and it covered the sky as it shot off towards Mu Chen like a volley of arrows.

Swoosh!

Mu Chen’s speed suddenly accelerated and an afterimage emerged behind him. His body actually passed through the sky filled with gravel.

Boom!

Teacher Mo’s body also rushed out at this moment. He instantly collided against Mu Chen. His Spiritual Energy surrounded his body, fist, fingers, elbow and legs. Every single part instantly turned into a lethal and terrifying weapon as it shot off fiercely at the vital areas of Mu Chen.

Swish!

Mu Chen pushed the Shadowspirit Step to the limits and a blurry shadow went around Teacher Mo. He avoided every single attack that contained a powerful force.

“It’s still not fast enough!”

Mu Chen could feel Teacher Mo’s attacks barely hitting him. The powerful winds caused by the attacks made his skin sting. Moreover, it was obvious that the latter’s offensive was speeding up. Sooner or later, he would be showered by it.

He must let his speed become even faster!

Mu Chen gritted his teeth. At this moment, he gathered all his focus and pushed hisSpiritual Energy to the extreme. The Spiritual Energy within his meridians roared and brought dense waves of energy.

It was still not fast enough!

His attacks weren’t strong enough!

An unyielding roar echoed within Mu Chen’s heart. His eyes seemed to have been cut apart from the world again. He did not make any strange sound and only watched Teacher Mo’s fierce offensive in front of him.

Bring out all my power!

Buzz!

As this roar echoed within Mu Chen’s heart, a buzzing sound suddenly rang out from within Mu Chen’s aurasea. He could see that his Spiritual Energy had actually gathered together and formed a vague light tower above the Spiritual Wheel in his aurasea.

Buzzzz!

The moment that the vague light tower emerged, lights seemed to have been summoned and lit up within the depths of Mu Chen’s body.

Boom!

The Spiritual Energy within Mu Chen’s body suddenly rose sharply and flooded out. An indescribable feeling rumbled through his limbs and bones!

Swish!

At this very moment, Mu Chen’s speed suddenly increased. It even

turned into numerous afterimages and enshrouded Teacher Mo. Afterwards, the latter was somewhat surprised to discover that all his attacks were dodged by Mu Chen.

"How could his speed suddenly increase this much?!" A hint of suspicious arose within Teacher Mo's heart.

"Mu Chen's speed became faster! How is that possible?!"

Chen Fan and the others, who were watching this scene, also exclaimed out loud. They were unable to tell which afterimage was Mu Chen's true body.

Teacher Mo stopped his attacks. He stared at the afterimages that surrounded his body as the winds surged out and enveloped him. He frowned for a moment. Mu Chen, who had been firmly locked on by him, had sudden escaped his sights.

"It's my turn to attack!"

A cry suddenly resounded through the sky. Teacher Mo narrowed his eyes and suddenly turned around. He noticed that Mu Chen had two fingers that were straighten out and a dazzling golden light was flashing at the fingertips. This light actually emitted out from the bones and it made it seem that the fingers were made of gold.

Swish!

The golden fingers were like a divine golden spear as it tore through the sky. An extremely fierce power, along with an abnormally dense Spiritual Energy, stabbed at Teacher Mo's chest at lightning speed.

There was no hesitation within that stab. It was sharp and vicious!

"So fast!"

Teacher Mo was also surprised. The dazzling golden light had almost obscured his vision. Before he could respond, the golden fingers had already been thrusted over.

Boom!

A dense and matchless Spiritual Energy instantly rushed out from

Teacher Mo's body. At the same time, cracks appeared on the ground and a huge boulder nearby even instantly shattered.

Mu Chen's finger also landed on Teacher Mo's body at this moment. However, before it could penetrate through, it was bounced back by the powerful Spiritual Energy. His body left a dozen or so meters trail on the ground before it finally stopped.

Tang Qian'Er and the others were flabbergasted as they witnessed this scene. Then, Tang Qian'Er could not help but suddenly shout out: "Teacher Mo, you cheated!"

In the moment earlier, the Spiritual Energy that erupted out from Teacher Mo's body had far surpassed the limits of a Spiritual Rotation Stage.

Hearing Tang Qian'Er's shout, Teacher Mo could not help but feel slightly embarrassed. It was true that he had brought out his Spirit Stage's Spiritual Energy. However, it was not intentional. Rather, it was a reflex due to his body sensing danger.

Mu Chen climbed up awkwardly from the ground and stared at his body covered with mud. However, he did not reveal any signs of being dispirited. Instead, the eyes that looked over at Teacher Mo were filled with excitement.

"This boy..."

Teacher Mo could not help but shake his head when he stared at Mu Chen's excited expression. He immediately chuckled and raised his thumb towards Mu Chen: "Amazing."

"I won!" Mu Chen sat down on the ground and felt exhausted, yet he could not endure laughing out loud.

"Holy sh*t... No way, right?"

Chen Fan, Huo Yun and Mo Ling were all staring dumbfounded at Mu Chen, who was laughing maniacally. Is this crazy bastard still human?

Chapter 81: Entry Competition

Within this vast region of the Northern Spiritual Realm, it was hard for the variety of large and small commonplace events to attract the interest of others. However, there was one event that was considered to be a rare and grand event within the Northern Spiritual Realm.

That was the Northern Spiritual Academy's Entry Competition. During this competition, they would decide the home for the entry into the "Five Great Academies".

Within the eyes of all the forces in the Northern Spiritual Realm, the Five Great Academies were basically an incomprehensible and massive existence. They could not imagine what sort of background and terrifying power it possesses. The only thing that they did know was that they couldn't even be considered as ants in the eyes of the Five Great Academies.

This is why almost everybody would attempt to let their child enter this massive existence. They were clear that their achievements would far surpass any ordinary person if they managed to enter the Five Great Academies.

Although the Northern Spiritual Realm was considered a vast region, it was still a relatively remote place within the endless Great Thousand World. If they truly want to experience the brilliance of the Great Thousand World, they must first past through the path of the Five Great Academies.

Thus, the Northern Spiritual City would become the most dazzling and bustling location whenever the Northern Spiritual Academy's "Entry Competition" was hosted. Even the Nine Territory's Territory Lords would personally come over. This was because it was an extremely important matter to them.

As long as their children are able to stand out and obtain an entry within the competition, their reputation would improve. Moreover, they would enjoy the envious gazes of other people.

This comfortable feeling was not something that could be achieved through the daily expansion of their territory.

...

Today, the Northern Spiritual City was undoubtedly in a state of being inflated. The massive city was crowded and many noisy sounds gathered. The sounds soared through the clouds and could be heard within a radius of a hundred miles.

The venue for the Entry Competition was set in the Northern Spiritual City's northwest area's Northern Spiritual Square. It was considered to be the most spacious location within the Northern Spiritual City and could accommodate a hundred thousand people.

However, the spacious venue has already long been occupied by the crowd. Looking at it, the sea of humans filled the venue to the limits. Even the tall buildings near the square were filled with figures.

Inside the square, all the students in the Northern Spiritual Academy were gathered there and were all excited. Wasn't the reason why they came to train in the Northern Spiritual Academy the wish of being qualified for this sort of competition one day? Although they weren't good enough to be in the competition right now, they could still take the opportunity to observe it. Moreover, they would be able to assess how powerful the students that were participating in it were.

In front of the Northern Spiritual Square, there were also a few rather prominent and special seats. Currently, the seats were all filled with people. Every single one of them had an extraordinarily imposing manner as well as dense Spiritual Energy. As they glanced around, their might was revealed. It was the Nine Territory Lords of the Northern Spiritual Realm.

"Haha, Brother Mu. You came really early. It's said that that little guy, Mu Chen, is also participating in it this time, right? I haven't seen that little guy in a while, but I've heard from Qian'Er that he is very amazing?"

In front of the seats, sounds of laughter rang out. A few individuals glanced over and noticed a middle-aged man smiling. Everybody immediately recognized him. It was the Tang Territory's Territory Lord,

Tang Shan.

Mu Feng smiled as he cupped his head towards Tang Shan and said: “How could that boy be powerful? He just likes showing off in front of girls.”

Mu Feng had a pretty good relationship with Tang Shan. Although the two territories weren’t allies, they would often cooperate with each other.

“That girl, Qian’Er, has only broken through to the Spiritual Rotation Stage a few days ago. I wonder if she willbe able to pass this time.” Tang Shan was a bit worried. Although Tang Qian’Er was quite gifted, the ones participating in this Entry Competition were all outstanding individuals among their peers. It was not easy to win.

“Ohoho, I’ve heard that there is a Seeded Entry this time. It’s the first time that the Northern Spiritual Academy obtains it. It’s impossible for Qian’Er to get it, but let’s see if that little guy, Mu Chen, can obtain it.” Tang Shan did not say much about this matter and his tone changed as he laughed.

Mu Feng smiled, but just when he was about to speak, a mocking voice rang out from nearby: “The Liu Territory have preordered this Seeded Entry. We did not plan to let the others obtain it.”

Mu Feng turned around and glanced at the calm Liu Qingtian. He let out a faint laugh and said: “This isn’t a queue for business. How could you talk about preordering it?”

“I’ve said it wrong. Your Mu Territory shouldn’t even dream of obtaining this Seeded Entry.” Liu Qingtian took a fleeting glance at Mu Feng and said.

“You shouldn’t say too much. Otherwise, wouldn’t it be disgraceful for you when you can’t retract back those words?” Mu Feng smiled and said.

“Then let’s see who willbe the one that would be disgraced.” Liu Qingtian sneered. A cold chill emerged within his eyes. Just act all you want now. I’ll see if you can laugh when Mubai beats your son half to death.

The other Territory Lords nearby did not participate when they noticed the confrontation between Mu Feng and Liu Qingtian. They knew that the Mu Territory and the Liu Territory were incompatible with each other. Although there were few of them who were accustomed to Liu Territory being so overbearing, the Liu Territory was still the strongest force within the Northern Spiritual Realm. Unless there is a need to do so, they did not want to offend them.

Mu Feng retracted his gaze away from Liu Qingtian's body. It was useless to say anything right now. Although he knew that Liu Mubai was quite amazing, how could his son be an ordinary individual within his generation?

Dong!

After the bustling sounds lasted for half an hour within the Northern Spiritual Square, a deep bell sound suddenly rang out and echoed throughout the entire city.

As the bell sounded, countless gazes fixated itself in the direction of the Northern Spiritual Square. At that location, four figures slowly appeared. The person in front was the Northern Spiritual Academy's Principal Xiao. Behind him, Teacher Mo and Teacher Xi were closely following him. Moreover, there was a rather unfamiliar old man amongst them. He seemed to have a lazy appearance and did not pay the slightest attention as he glanced at the Nine Territory Lords.

"Ohoho, I would like to thank everybody for coming today. We are considered to be acquaintances, so I will not say any superfluous words to annoy you." Principal Xiao cupped his fists in the direction of the Nine Territory Lords and smiled.

Seeing this, Mu Feng and the others hurriedly cupped their hands to return a salute. Although Principal Xiao kept a low profile within the Northern Spiritual Realm, no force would dare to underestimate him. Not to mention the peerless identity of the neutral Northern Spiritual Academy, there weren't more than three individuals who could surpass his strength amongst the Nine Territory Lords.

“Of course, I’ll introduce the referee of the Northern Spiritual Academy’s Entry Competition this time. He has the final say over all the rules.” Principal Xiao cupped his hands towards the seemingly lazy old man nearby. He immediately smiled and said: “Everybody, this is Mister Hao from the Five Great Academies. He will be supervising the Entry Competition this time.”

“From the Five Great Academies?”

Mu Feng and the others were shocked when they heard this remark. They quickly stood up and cupped their hands towards this old man. Every single individual that came out from the Five Great Academies was an all-powerful individual. They were not to be underestimated.

The old man known as Mister Hao only directed a nod towards Mu Feng. This attitude was not considered to be polite, yet the Nine Territory Lords could only chuckle dryly. His background of the Five Great Academies was enough to overwhelm them.

“Let’s begin.” Mister Hao nodded at Principal Xiao and said.

Hearing this, Principal Xiao also smiled and glanced at the entire venue. Under his dense Spiritual Energy, his voice resounded in everybody’s ears.

“For the Entry Competition this time, there are a total of 12 individuals participating: 5 from the East Branch and 7 from the West Branch. There will be 5 ordinary entries and 1 seeded entry. The 12 individuals will split up into six matches and fight with each other. The winner will be able to obtain the qualifications of the ordinary entry. Of course, if anyone would like to obtain the seeded entry, they can challenge once again. The final winner will be able to obtain this seeded entry.” Principal Xiao’s gaze looked towards the students from the East and West Branches and he said: “Is there any problems?”

“No!”

“That’s good. The students that are participating in the competition should come up onto the venue!”

Just as Principal Xiao’s voice faded away, a commotion rang out from the

East and West Branch. Under numerous envious gazes, a group of figures surged out and landed on the venue.

"Brother Mu, good luck. Go seize that seeded entry!" From the East Branch, Su Ling, Tan Qingshan and the others shouted out while being excited.

Mu Chen directed a smile at them as he waved.

"Seeded Entry? I'm afraid you don't have the right to get it." At the opposite side, Liu Mubai tilted his head slightly and stared coldly at Mu Chen as he gently spoke.

"Won't we know if I have the right to obtain it later on?" Mu Chen smiled and replied.

"You think you have the right to fight against Brother Liu?" Beside Liu Mubai, a boy sneered and spoke. He was the one who had a conflict with Mu Chen during the Northern Spiritual Field, Chen Tong. However, the current him seemed to have broken through to the Spiritual Rotation Stage after Teacher Xi's training. This made his confidence soar and he did not have the fear that he initially had when facing Mu Chen.

Mu Chen only glanced at Chen Tong and ignored him. A person, who had just advanced to the Spiritual Rotation Stage, wasn't someone worthy of his attention.

And when Chen Tong noticed that Mu Chen had directly ignored him, he gritted his teeth in hatred. He thought that he must punish him if he meets him later on.

"For this Entry Competition, we will follow the old rules. We will decide the opponents through lots."

Principal Xiao waved his hand and the person holding the bamboo lots ran up. Mu Chen and the others extended their hands and each of them picked a bamboo lot from him.

When they noticed that they were drawing lots, the numerous gazes fixated over at that location. The fierce Entry Competition was about to begin.

Chapter 82: Complete Victory

Mu Chen stared at the lot within his hands. A number [1] was written on the lot. Then, he lifted up the bamboo lot. The others, seeing this, also raised the bamboo lot that they just drew.

"How interesting...I was only thinking about it earlier." Chen Tong smiled hypocritically as he stared at Mu Chen. Then, he arrogantly lifted up the bamboo lot within his hand. It was the same number as Mu Chen. Apparently, he was Mu Chen's opponent.

Mu Chen stared at Chen Tong, who was arrogantly smiling, and shook his head helplessly.

"That idiot..." Chen Fan and the others grinned. They felt pitiful as they directed a smile towards Mu Chen. The two of them weren't even opponents for Mu Chen right now. Moreover, Chen Tong was probably even weaker than them by a bit. They really didn't know how foolish this person was. How could he still reveal this sort of smile at this moment?

"It's over."

Besides them, Mo Ling's face turned pale and he smiled bitterly. He raised the bamboo lot within his hand and said, "My opponent is Liu Mubai."

"Ah?"

Chen Fan, Tang Qian'Er and the others all looked sympathetically at Mo Ling. Amongst the 12 participants of the Entry Competition, there was no doubt that Mu Chen and Liu Mubai were the hardest to defeat. Since Mo Ling had to fight against Liu Mubai immediately, he was indeed quite unlucky.

"It's fine. For this Entry Competition, the outcome is related to the entry. However, it doesn't mean that you're completely out of luck if you lose." Mu Chen patted Mo Ling's shoulders, yet his eyes glanced at the platform towards Mister Hao, who was from the Five Great Academies. He said: "Your current strength has already reached the requirements for the Five

Great Academies. Therefore, even if you lose, it's possible for you to get an extra chance if you are able to prove how different you are from the others."

"Really?" Mo Ling hesitated for a moment before quickly asking.

Mu Chen nodded his head and said: "Of course, but as for how you will impress him will depend on yourself."

Mo Ling nodded his head gratefully. The entry was equally important to him. If he failed this time, he would no longer be allowed to enter the "Five Great Academies". It was his final chance.

Dong!

A bell sound rang once again within the Northern Spiritual Square. Chen Fan, Tang Qian'Er and the others looked at the bamboo lots they drew and slowly backed off. Right now, this first match should be Mu Chen against Chen Tong.

As they moved away, numerous gazes instantly gathered at the two figures within the stage.

"Ohoho, I never imagined that Mu Chen would be in the first match." Tang Shan looked at the two individuals on the stage and said as he smiled.

Mu Feng also smiled and nodded his head. Naturally, he could tell that Mu Chen was at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Initial Phase. Although his opponent was the same level as him, Mu Chen should still be able to defeat such an opponent. Moreover, if Mu Chen were to win this match, he would at least obtain the entry to the Five Great Academies.

"So he's that Mu Chen?" On the main platform, Mister Hao, who seemed to be lazy, suddenly straightened up his body. He looked peculiarly at the handsome boy at the stage.

Beside him, Principal Xiao smiled and nodded his head.

"He looks like a gentle and peaceful boy...I never thought that he would actually do all those things. You really can't judge a person through his

appearance." Mister Hao stared in interest at Mu Chen and muttered these words.

"I hope that this little guy will not disappoint me. Otherwise, I came here for no reason."

At the side, Principal Xiao was quite curious when he heard these words. However, he did not ask about it. He could only try to figure out within his heart just what sort of shocking thing Mu Chen had done in the Spiritual Road that made the Five Great Academies concerned about him.

...

"I've said that sometimes people would be unlucky. It really is unreasonable."

On the much anticipated stage, Chen Tong smiled as he looked at Mu Chen. He was still thinking about punishing this guy earlier. Who would have imagined that the opportunity to do so would appear in the next instant?

Mu Chen stared helplessly at the arrogant Chen Tong. He could not help but shake his head. This guy...is quite foolish.

"Can you stop talking?" Mu Chen sighed and said.

Seeing Mu Chen's disregarding attitude, Chen Tong gnashed his teeth. This guy always had an appearance that angers others.

"Mu Chen. This time, I won't let you act this arrogant!"

Chen Tong shouted out. Dense Spiritual Energy surged out from within his body. The extent of this power made many Northern Spiritual Academy's students secretly click their tongues. As expected, this person had advanced to the Spiritual Rotation Stage.

"Swish!"

His toes touched the ground and his body moved swiftly. Spiritual Energy erupted out from both palms and a faint burning fluctuation emitted out.

"Fiery Heartbreak Palm!"

Chen Tong emerged directly in front of Mu Chen. A fiery energy gathered at the center of his palm. It was like a mass of extremely hot flames. Then, it carried violent winds as it shot off in anger towards Mu Chen's chest.

Mu Chen glanced at him casually and raised his hand.

"Smack!"

A crisp sound suddenly resounded out from the stage. The palm that Chen Tong had fired off suddenly froze in midair. He was stunned as he stared at the boy, who directly a helpless smile, in front of him. He immediately felt a burning sensation coming from his face.

He was suddenly slapped mysteriously?

"This..."

Surprised voices also broke out from outside the stage. Many people did not even see what had exactly happened. They could only see a handprint emerging on Chen Tong's face and hear the crisp sound of a slap.

"What a fast speed!"

Only the ones with extraordinary eyesight muttered to themselves with a serious expression. They could vaguely see the lightning speed attack during that instant.

"I'll kill you!"

Although he did not understand what had happened, the pain from his face made Chen Tong's eyes turn red. He looked ferociously at Mu Chen and the Spiritual Energy within his body was released unreservedly. The palm winds were like fire sweeping through the place as it bombarded towards Mu Chen.

However, Mu Chen only moved slowly against this fierce offensive. It was like a stroll and he allowed Chen Tong to attack him crazily, yet it did not even touch his clothes.

The scene on the stage looked quite funny. One of them was crazily attacking while the other was walking around relaxed. It was like a boat

following and rising with the waves within a storm.

At this moment, even the ordinary individuals could see the difference between the two of them. It seems that the two individuals were not at the same level.

"What a mysterious movement ability, that Mu Chen isn't simple at all."

A few powerful individuals nodded in surprise. He could actually act so relaxed during a Spiritual Rotation Stage's berserk attacks. This wasn't something that anybody could do.

Liu Mubai watched this scene coldly. He was quite surprised about Mu Chen's speed. However, he immediately grinned. It would only be interesting if it's like this, otherwise, wouldn't he feel bored about it?

"Do you only know how to dodge?!" Seeing that his attacks were to no avail after a long period of time, Chen Tong immediately flew into a rage out of humiliation. It was too hard to bear when every attack of his missed.

Mu Chen finally stopped moving. His black eyes stared undisturbedly at Chen Tong.

"Pyroblast Spirit Fist!"

Seeing that Mu Chen had stopped moving, Chen Tong's eyes were filled with delight. He immediately took a step forward and his Spiritual Energy rushed out endlessly from within his body. Layers of flame accumulated on his fist as it fiercely blasted off towards Mu Chen.

Since there was an opportunity, he must use all his strength in this attack to defeat this person!

This thought flashed through Chen Tong's mind. Then, he noticed Mu Chen also clenching his fists in front of him. Then, his arm fired off directly like a spear.

Boom!

Wrapped by a dark black Spiritual Energy, Mu Chen's fist collided with Chen Tong's all-out attack without the slightest signs of dodging. A deep

sound suddenly resounded through the sky.

With the two individuals as the center, a violent blast of air spread out.

Mu Chen's body remained motionless, but Chen Tong's face turned red. In the next instant, his body trembled and flew backwards under many astonished gazes. He brushed against the ground for a dozen meters before finally stopping.

"How is that possible?!"

Chen Tong lifted his head. His face was filled with an incredulous expression. Both Mu Chen and he were at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Initial Phase, why is it that he couldn't even block one attack from Mu Chen?

"I won't believe it!" Chen Tong's eyes turned red. With a low cry, he fiercely attacked again.

Swish!

Just when he was about to charge out, a ghost-like black figure appeared in front of him. Before he could even react, a cold hand was pressed onto his throat.

Feeling the cold hand on his throat, Chen Tong was suddenly shocked and froze. He stared at the boy's face that was close to him. The originally gentle face had become cold and heartless. Those indifferent eyes made his heart jumped and he could feel that he was being stared by a cheetah.

"I...I surrender."

Chen Tong swallowed his saliva and said while quivering. He finally understood the difference between the two of them. Although he had advanced into the Spiritual Rotation Stage, he wasn't Mu Chen's opponent at all.

Mu Chen glanced and him. He did not seem to care about him and slowly released his hand.

"Brother Mu is amazing!"

As Mu Chen released his hand, a commotion instantly burst out from

outside the stage. The East Branch students, especially Su Ling, Tan Qingshan and the others could not help but excitedly shout out. They weren't able to see the battle clearly, yet they could tell that the arrogant Chen Tong was completely overwhelmed by Mu Chen.

Hearing their cheers, Mu Chen directed a smile towards them. Then, he suddenly felt something and turned his head around. His line of sight landed at the direction of Liu Mubai. At this moment, Liu Mubai had crossed his arms and was staring at Mu Chen like he was something interesting. That appearance was just like a wolf that had found a prey.

Liu Mubai noticed Mu Chen looking over and smiled. Then, his lips moved slightly.

Mu Chen's eyes narrowed. He could tell what Liu Mubai wanted to say to him.

"You will end up as pitiful as him."

Mu Chen replied back with a smile as his eyes turned cold.

"I'll be waiting for it."

Chapter 83: Battle for the Entries

The Entry Competition's first match ended with Mu Chen utterly crushingChen Tong. This fight surprised many of the audience. Although the battle did not last long, the people that were capable of discerning it could tell how powerful the boy named Mu Chen is. They were both at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Initial Phase, yet the strength they exhibited on the stage were at a completely different level.

"That Mu Chen is the son of the Mu Territory Lord, Mu Feng, right? He is indeed quite capable."

"It was said that he was the only one, who obtained the qualifications to the Spiritual Road, within the Northern Spiritual Realm. However, something happened and he was kicked out from it."

"Judging from his appearance, the boy is quite extraordinary. With such abilities, he shouldn't be too bad within the Spiritual Road, right?"

"Who knows why he was kicked out? But with his abilities, it shouldn't be difficult for him to enter the Five Great Academies."

Outside of the Northern Spiritual Square, many whispers spread out. It was evident that other people are starting to notice the boy from the earlier battle, who had once caused a commotion within the Northern Spiritual Realm.

Mu Chen did not care much about the various gazes that were sent over and returned to the East Branch's seats. At the same time, Liu Mubai stood up from the West Branch's seats with a calm expression and walked towards the stage.

From the East Branch, numerous gazes were directed at Mo Ling, who had become pale. Mu Chen gently patted his shoulder. Only then did Mo Ling grit his teeth and walked up.

Liu Mubai glanced at Mu Chen calmly before turning his gaze towards Mo Ling, who was walking onto the stage. He lowered his head and fixed his sleeves as he said, "You should just concede."

Mo Ling was suppressed by the pressure coming from Liu Mubai, but immediately gritted his teeth and said, “Please instruct me.”

Liu Mubai’s eyes were calm and indifferent as he shook his head and said, “You really don’t appreciate my kindness.”

Facing Liu Mubai’s attitude, Mo Ling’s face were changing alternately to blue and red. However, the other person was definitely strong. He simply had no other method; he was going to lose in this battle for sure. The only thing he could do was to not to lost too badly.

Mo Ling took a deep breath and clenched his hands tightly. Spiritual Energy flowed out from his body and he felt his body filled with energy. Afterwards, Mo Ling finally had a little bit of confidence and took a step forward. He initiated the attack and headed straight towards Liu Mubai.

Mo Ling’s strength was actually considered to be quite decent. Even amongst the Northern Spiritual Academy’s Heaven Class, he was ranked rather up front. However, he knew that Liu Mubai, who was in front of him, had always dominated the title of the strongest Northern Spiritual Academy student all these years and nobody was able to shake that title.

Against such an opponent, there wasn’t the slightest chance of winning if he didn’t go all out from the beginning.

Liu Mubai looked calmly at Mo Ling charging over. His body tilted slightly forward and an explosion rang out from beneath his feet. His figure instantly turned into a red light as he rushed over.

His speed was extremely fast even Mo Ling was only able to see the red light flash as it emerged. Then, he was horrified to see Liu Mubai appearing in front of him. A slim palm gently smashed over and landed on Mo Ling’s chest. He did not even have the time to defend against it as the volcanic Spiritual Energy erupted.

Bang!

A muffled sound emitted out. Mo Ling, who was in a position of charging forward earlier, instantly flew back. Fresh blood sprayed out as he awkwardly brushed on the ground.

Waa!

This scene directly caused numerous uproars from the onlookers. Mo Ling, who had reached the Spiritual Rotation Stage Initial Phase, didn't even have a chance to attack in front of Liu Mubai!

"What a terrifying strength." Su Ling and the others gulped. The title of the strongest Northern Spiritual Academy student wasn't just for show.

Mu Chen also stared at the stage. When Liu Mubai had attacked previously, his eyes focused slightly. Liu Mubai's speed was not inferior to his. He was indeed quite powerful.

"Eh, they aren't at the same level." Beside him, Chen Fan and the others sighed. It was just like earlier when Mu Chen had fought against Chen Tong. The current Mo Ling and Liu Mubai were at a completely different level.

On the stage, Liu Mubai stared indifferently at the awkward Mo Ling. A hint of disdain emerged on his mouth and he turned away to leave. In a battle where he completely oppressed the other, it didn't feel great at all.

"Wait."

A hoarse voice came out from behind. Liu Mubai frowned and turned around. He could see Mo Ling wiping the blood from his mouth and stood up while wobbling. He gritted his teeth and said, "I haven't lost yet."

Liu Mubai's eyes slowly darkened.

Under Liu Mubai's dark eyes, Mo Ling circulated his Spiritual Energy within his body and charged over to Liu Mubai.

Boom!

A muffled sound rang out once again. Liu Mubai moved like a lightning and emerged at the right side of Mo Ling. With a kick that was like a spear, he fiercely kicked Mo Ling's waist.

Puchi.

Mo Ling flew backwards again. Fresh blood sprayed out and it was obvious that he was quite helpless.

However, just when everybody sighed in regret, they were surprised to see Mo Ling gritting his teeth as he stood up once again while trembling.

“Ohoho, good. You’re quite stubborn.”

Seeing Mo Ling clinging at him obstinately, Liu Mubai laughed due to his rage. This time, he did not give Mo Ling an opportunity to initiate an attack. His feet stomped onto the ground as he charged out.

Bang!

Mo Ling’s body was directly sent flying by Liu Mubai’s palm.

Bang!

Before Mo Ling could even stand up, Liu Mubai’s figure had rushed out again. His eyes were dark and he kicked Mo Ling in the waist and sent him flying a dozen meters as if he was garbage.

Countless people watched as Liu Mubai continued to attack the helpless Mo Ling. But even so, that boy continued to grit his teeth and endured. Although his face had turned pale, he still refused to surrender.

“What a tenacious boy.”

A few people secretly sighed. Although Mo Ling’s strength was incomparable against Liu Mubai, the courage to fight against him when he knew he was in a completely different level was still quite surprising.

At the East Branch’s side, all the students watched Mo Ling, who refused to admit defeat, as he was kicked around. They were all silent. A few students even tilted their heads away and could not bear to watch anymore.

It was too cruel.

“Motherf*cker!” Chen Fan gritted his teeth. It would be fine if Liu Mubai had knocked out Mo Ling and threw him off the stage. However, this way of insulting others was going overboard.

Tang Qian’Er also gently gritted her teeth. She moved her gaze away from the stage and whispered, “Should we just let him surrender?”

“If he surrenders now, Mo Ling wouldn’t have the slightest chance of obtaining an entry.” Mu Chen said gently. His eyes swept past the main platform. At that location, Mister Hao was frowning as he watched the stage. It was impossible to tell whether he was delighted or furious based on his expression.

“But…” Tang Qian’Er still wanted to say more.

“This is the method he chose. Perhaps his strength could not compare with Liu Mubai, but his courage would help him obtain dignity and pride. There is something called guts. If a man doesn’t have this deep down inside, he would be a weakling no matter how powerful his Spiritual Energy is. He would be looked down by others.” Mu Chen said in a calm voice.

There was nothing Tang Qian’Er could say. Although she did not understand why men would have to struggle even if they had to die, those men were indeed quite attractive to the girls.

This one-sided battle lasted for nearly ten minutes. At that moment, Mo Ling was completely covered with blood. His consciousness was also quite blurry. However, he used his willpower and endured it.

Liu Mubai’s face had already turned completely dark. This sort of battle brought no benefits to him. He knew that when he heard sounds of whispers appearing from time to time.

Liu Mubai stared at Mo Ling and a hint of killing intent emerged within his eyes. Since you can’t be sensible, I’ll destroy you!

But just when Liu Mubai was about to deliver the killing blow, Mister Hao gently waved his hand on the main platform. Principal Xiao immediately shouted out, “The battle is over, Liu Mubai wins.”

Hearing this, Liu Mubai glared fiercely at Mo Ling, who was almost unconscious. He could only leave while waving his sleeves in anger. As he left the stage, he glanced coldly at Mu Chen. Apparently, he thought that this was Mu Chen’s idea to deliberately trouble him.

Seeing that the match was over, a few students from the East Branch

carried the unconscious Mo Ling down from the stage.

"It's my turn next."

Chen Fan gritted his teeth and angrily stepped onto the stage. His opponent was a rather well-known student from the West Branch. They were both at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Initial Phase. However, this student lacked combat experience compared to Chen Fan, who had joined an Adventurer's team. It couldn't be seen at the start of the battle. However, as the battle gradually intensified, it was slowly revealed. In the end, Chen Fan finally discovered a flaw and seized the opportunity to defeat his opponent in one attack.

Following Chen Fan was Huo Yun. He, too, obtained victory just as anticipated from the start. And the final match was Tang Qian'Er's fight. The match made many eyes lit up. This was because her opponent was the West Branch's Hong Ling. The two Northern Spiritual Academy's flowers would actually clash with each other.

It was evident that two beautiful girls fighting were more likely to attract attention. This attention surpassed even the matches of Mu Chen and Liu Mubai. It could be seen that a beauty's attractiveness would always be the strongest.

This battle was not brutal nor bloody. However, everybody still watched intently. The girls' gentle methods were like butterflies flying around. Even the attacks that would take one's life would still become graceful in their hands.

Tang Qian'Er and Hong Ling's strength were equally matched. Although they had their own means of attacking, they failed to determine the winner. In the end, Mister Hao opened his mouth and the match between the two of them actually ended up in a draw.

As it was a draw, everybody was shocked. There were only this many entries. How would they allocate it if it was a draw? But since this was said by Mister Hao, they could only keep this question deep down in their hearts.

With the end of this battle, the Northern Spiritual Square's atmosphere

quietly rose. Even the powerful powerhouses casted their gaze over with great interest.

This is because, next up, it was the fight for the seeded entry.

After all these battles, they could tell that there were only two students among the group, who could compete for the seeded entry: Mu Chen and Liu Mubai.

And coincidentally, these two individuals were the Mu Territory's Little Lord and Liu Territory's Little Master. The relationship between these two territories was quite terrible. In another perspective, this seeded entry competition would be a battle between the two territories.

However, they just didn't know who exactly would have the final laugh?

Chapter 84: Fierce Struggle Between a Tiger and a Dragon

In the massive Northern Spiritual Square, the atmosphere was becoming heated up. Numerous gazes looked eagerly at the stage, waiting for the true fierce struggle between a tiger and a dragon.

Under the audience's eyes, Liu Mubai's body moved and was first to land on the stage. His cold eyes stared at Mu Chen, who was at the East Branch. The corner of his mouth twitched as he could not wait it to start. He wanted to see just how wonderful the expressions of the people, who believed in Mu Chen, would be when Mu Chen was defeated.

Mu Chen also looked at Liu Mubai's cold smile and calmly headed up to the stage. He stood at a place near Liu Mubai.

"Brother Mu, good luck!"

Su Ling and the others' faces turned red as they shouted. Although they knew how powerful Liu Mubai was, they still had quite the confidence in Mu Chen.

"This day has finally come..."

Liu Mubai gently twisted his neck and stared at Mu Chen. A smile actually emerged on his face. However, underneath that smile was a hint of coldness. It seems that he has endured for a long time for the scene today.

"You're not afraid of it becoming twisted?" Mu Chen said with a soft laugh.

"I'll waste you." Liu Mubai shrugged and said with a smile.

"If I get the chance, I'll do the same to you." Mu Chen nodded his head and replied seriously.

Liu Mubai smiled as he looked at Mu Chen. The latter also seriously stared at him. The atmosphere may seem quite gentle, yet the cold chill flowing through the depths of their eyes made others freeze.

“It seems that Mu Chen is the only one who could compete with Liu Mubai for the seeded entry.” Tang Territory’s Territory Lord looked at the two individuals facing off. He could help but speak. These two individuals were already considered to be the most outstanding individuals among the younger generation within the Northern Spiritual Realm.

“But based on what I know, Liu Mubai is probably at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Middle Phase. Moreover, with those powerful Spiritual Arts from Liu Territory he read through, his combat ability is quite extraordinary...Mu Chen is only at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Initial Phase, so he’s at a disadvantage.” Tang Shan looked towards Mu Feng. After all, they had a pretty good relationship with each other. At this moment, he was naturally bias towards Mu Chen.

Hearing these words, Mu Feng said with a faint smile: “The boy from the Liu family is quite capable. However, Mu Chen isn’t a weakling that could be defeated by just anybody.”

Although Mu Feng recognized Liu Mubai’s ability, he also had confidence that his son wouldn’t be any weaker than him.

“Haha, since that’s the case, I hope to see a decent match.” Tang Shan said with a chuckle.

On the other side of the seats, Liu Qingtian seemed to have heard Mu Feng’s words. He instantly made a mocking smile and waited for the show to begin: “What a foolish dream.”

At the main platform, Mister Hao from the “Five Great Academies” stared at the two individual in the stage. He finally straightened up his body and did not act this lazily anymore. His pair of muddy eyes finally showed a tiny bit of interest: “So that main event is finally about to begin.”

Principal Xiao also nodded his head. Then, he stood up while his eyes remained fixated at the stage. His eyes paused for a moment as he stared at Mu Chen and Liu Mubai’s body before he gently waved his hand.

“The competition for the seeded entry officially begins!”

Boom!

The instant Principal Xiao's voice emerged; two powerful Spiritual Energies seemed to have erupted out from the stage at the same time. It brought forth bursts of winds spiraling.

Two pair of cold eyes would flash as it seemed to bypass the dense Spiritual Energy surrounding the bodies and intertwined with each other.

Swish!

The two figures also rushed out at this moment. A black figure and red figure ripped through the obstruction of the air and directly charged forward. They did not show any signs of dodging and collided with each other at the center of the stage in a couple of seconds.

Dong!

A violent Spiritual Energy shock wave erupted out during the instant they collided. The solid ground shattered and tiny cracks emerged.

The intensity of their Spiritual Energy was absolutely not something an ordinary Spiritual Rotation Stage Initial Phase could compare with.

"Interesting." Liu Mubai licked his lips gently. The eyes that he used to stare at Mu Chen were as if he had met a prey that caught his interest. In the next instant, his eyes turned cold and fiery red Spiritual Energy wrapped around his legs like flames. With the sound of an explosion coming out from beneath his feet, he charged out like a fiery red figure.

This speed was just like a lightning bolt and caused countless cries to appear from the surroundings.

"That's...the Liu Territory's Blaze Step. It's a Spiritual Tier Low Rank Movement Spiritual Art. I never expected that Liu Mubai would actually be able to learn it." Tang Shan stared at the flames from underneath Liu Mubai's feet and exclaimed slightly.

Under many gazes, the fiery red figure seemed to have instantly appeared behind Mu Chen. Afterwards, a palm was fired off. At the center of the palm, fiery red Spiritual Energy surged out and it was extremely violent.

Swoosh!

However, Mu Chen's body trembled slightly when Liu Mubai was about to successfully land his attack on Mu Chen's back. Following this, Liu Mubai's attack passed directly through his body.

"An afterimage?"

Liu Mubai's eyes immediately focused when he noticed that his attack missed. He did not hesitate and took advantage of his miss in order to kick behind him like a spear. An enormous gale blew out.

Boom!

A deep voice sounded out from behind. Without anybody noticing, Mu Chen had appeared behind Liu Mubai and his fist wrapped with black Spiritual Energy collided with Liu Mubai's kick.

"Pretty good movements you have there!"

Liu Mubai sneered. He leapt up to the sky as Fiery red Spiritual Energy flashed at the soles of his feet. Turning around, hefired off numerous fists towards Mu Chen. Each of these fists contained violent Spiritual Energy and brought forth numerous winds as it enshrouded Mu Chen.

Against Liu Mubai's fierce offensive, Mu Chen's body moved and dodged like a ghost. Afterimages would vaguely appear and it was impossible for others to capture his dodging trajectories.

"Huh, what a mysterious movement ability." Seeing Mu Chen's movement abilities, Tang Shan's eyes lit up. With his keen eyesight, he could naturally tell that Mu Chen was displaying a rather mysterious movement Spiritual Art.

Mu Feng was also surprised when he saw Mu Chen's movements. He was quite unfamiliar with this movement ability and it was definitely not taught by him. It seems that it must have come from the Northern Spiritual Academy.

Bang Bang Bang!

Liu Mubai's offensive was extremely fierce. He was in hot pursuit, yet

Mu Chen relied on the mysterious movement in order to avoid endlessly. He completely evaded all the attacks brought out by Liu Mubai.

The two of them on the stage had pushed their strength to the very limits. It was still fine for the powerful individuals. However, students like Su Ling and the others could only see blurry red and black shadows flashing around the stage. Their faces were completely filled with shock.

After chasing Mu Chen for so long with no avail, Liu Mubai's eyes turned completely dark. He pondered for a moment and Spiritual Energy surged out from his body. His speed instantly increased and he caught up with Mu Chen's ghost-like figure.

Swish!

But during the moment he had just caught up, Mu Chen's body suddenly stopped. Two fingers remained straight up and had instantly turned into a gold color. It flashed dazzlingly and emitted an extremely sharp fluctuation.

Mu Chen's fingers tore through the air and ruthlessly headed towards Liu Mubai's throat.

Mu Chen's sudden change from defense to offense surprised Liu Mubai. However, he did not panic and straightened two of his fingers. A fiery red Spiritual wrapped around it like flames and it seemed extraordinary brutal.

The gold fingers and fiery red fingers were thrusted out. In the next instant, they collided heavily together.

Clang!

The collision of the fingers was like metal colliding with each other. A crisp sound actually broke out and sparks flew out both fingers. It was visible that their fingers had changed forms.

Mu Chen's eyes were cold as he formed finger seals with both hands. His fingers sparkled like gold and he activated the Spirit King Finger. Two golden spears accompanied with finger seals charged fiercely at Liu Mubai.

Swish!

And while facing Mu Chen's fierce offensive, Liu Mubai sneered and fiery red Spiritual Energy emitted out. Four of his fingers remained straighten as he stabbed at Mu Chen.

The golden light and fiery light seemed to have enshrouded their bodies.

Everybody could seal that each of the finger seals formed had a lethal power.

Countless individuals held their breaths as they watched the two figures colliding against each other with their fingers. This sort of collision wasn't something that even a Spiritual Rotation Stage Middle Phase could do.

Clang!

Another collision between their fingers appeared. Mu Chen and Liu Mubai both had to took a step backwards. From their fingertips, blood actually dripped down. It was evident that the collision had caused them a bit of injuries.

Mu Chen's cold eyes remained fixated at Liu Mubai's body. The latter was indeed quite powerful. He couldn't achieve any results even with such an offensive.

Apparently, it wasn't enough to obtain victory like this.

Mu Chen took a deep breath and his body suddenly retreated backwards. His hands also retreated back into his sleeves. And most surprisingly, he even actually closed his eyes slowly.

Mu Chen's strange action instantly aroused a commotion from the audience. It was evident that they did not understand what he was doing.

"This..." Tang Shan looked suspiciously at Mu Feng. Wouldn't it give an opportunity to his opponent if he closed his eyes right now?

Mu Feng also frowned. He was unclear what Mu Chen was planning to do.

"Trying to act all mysterious, go to hell!"

Liu Mubai's eyes narrowed. He immediately sneered and rushed out towards Mu Chen. But against his offensive, Mu Chen did not show any signs of dodging. Although he closed his eyes, he still pushed the Shadowspirit Step to the extreme. A few confusing afterimages were brought out and he evaded Liu Mubai's attacks.

Liu Mubai did not hold back because of the strange state that Mu Chen was in. His attacks became fiercer and gradually blocked Mu Chen off.

But just when he was prepared to shut down Mu Chen's escape path, he did not notice that dozens of Spiritual Seals had emerged from Mu Chen's hands that were hidden by his sleeves. It silently integrated into the air.

At the stage, Mu Chen, who had always been evading, suddenly stopped. He stared at Liu Mubai as he rushed over and had a faint smile on his handsome face. He gently placed his hands together and formed a strange seal.

At the main platform, Mister Hao stared at the seal formed by Mu Chen's hands and his eyes focused completely.

"This is...a Spiritual Array's seal?!"

Chapter 85: Hidden Cards Revealed

Under everybody's astonished gazes, Mu Chen's hand suddenly formed a strange seal. Afterwards, his eyes suddenly focused. A dazzling red light suddenly erupted from the sky behind hand and formed a fiery red Spiritual Array that was the size of a dozen or so Zhang tall!

"A Spiritual Array?!"

Numerous individuals stood up at the Northern Spiritual Square. They watched the Spiritual Array behind Mu Chen's back with incredulous eyes. The people with keen vision could even tell that the powerful fluctuations within the Spiritual Array had definitely reached the level of a Rank 1 Spiritual Array!

"God, Mu Chen actually arranged a Spiritual Array? He's actually a Rank 1 Spiritual Array Master?!"

"How is that possible? Even for a Rank 1 Spiritual Array Master, they would require some time to quietly arrange an array. However, he's in a battle right now. Moreover, he even closed his eyes earlier!"

"But this is definitely a Rank 1 Spiritual Array!"

"How is this possible?!"

Shocked cries rang out from the Northern Spiritual Square. Everybody's eyes were filled with shock and confusion. It was apparent that they did not know how Mu Chen was able to do this.

"This..."

Not only were they shocked, even the Territory Lords in the seats at front were completely surprised. Liu Qingtian even straightened up his body and had an extremely ugly expression. He never thought that the boy from the Mu Territory, aside from having a decent strength, would actually have such a surprising hidden card up his sleeves.

"So Mu Chen is actually a Spiritual Array Master. No wonder you were so confident." Tang Shan gradually recovered from the shock and praised him loudly. Then, he was somewhat puzzled and asked: "However, how

could he arrange an array this quickly even if he is a Rank 1 Spiritual Array Master?"

Mu Feng had a surprised expression as well. However, he quickly understood the reason behind it. He could not help but smile. Others might not be able to understand why Mu Chen could form a Spiritual Array this quickly, but he could guess vaguely why that happened.

"Is it the Heart Array State? It seems that Mu Chen is grasping and understanding the Heart Array State more and more..." Mu Feng muttered to himself.

"That Mu Chen really hid his strength well..."

At the main platform, Principal Xiao also had a surprised expression. He could not help but smile: "I never imagined that he was a Rank 1 Spiritual Array Master..."

Beside him, Teacher Mo also nodded his head. He had trained Mu Chen this long, yet he had not discovered it at all. This guy really knew how to conceal his hidden cards.

"Moreover, he isn't an ordinary Spiritual Array Master..."

Mister Hao's eyes flashed as he stared at the handsome boy on the stage. He could not conceal the shock within his voice: "He seems to be able to enter the "Heart Array" state. Otherwise, it's absolutely impossible for him to close his eyes and arrange a Spiritual Array this quickly."

"Heart Array State?" Principal Xiao and the others trembled. Naturally, they have heard about this state before. They heard that even Rank 3 Spiritual Array Masters might not be able to enter that mysterious state. Yet Mu Chen was actually able to enter that state with his strength of a Rank 1 Spiritual Array Master?

Ordinarily speaking, a peculiar fluctuation would emerge while arranging a Spiritual Array. However, they never expected that Mu Chen would arrange a Spiritual Array. Therefore, their attention was completely focused on the exchange between the two of them. But who would have thought...

“Interesting.”

Mister Hao smiled slightly. His eyes remained tightly fixed at the stage.

“A Spiritual Array?”

On the stage, Liu Mubai’s figure had completely stopped. He had an extremely pale expression as he stared at the circulating fiery red Spiritual Array behind Mu Chen. The violent Spiritual Energy emitted out from that location had caused the air to constantly tremble.

Mu Chen looked at the pale Liu Mubai and gently smiled as he exhaled slowly. He actually carried a mentality of hoping to be lucky as he arranged a Spiritual Array in combat. After all, this was extremely difficult to do. Although he had constantly attempted to understand the mysterious Heart Array State during this one month, he would still have to pay a big price if he made a mistake.

But fortunately, he won this bet. The experience from the Spiritual Road had allowed him to gather his thoughts and focus completely. During the critical moments, he would not be distracted and remain calm like the water as he entered the mysterious Heart Array State. By borrowing its power, he had successfully arranged a Spiritual Array.

“Try out this feast that I’ve prepared for you.”

Mu Chen directed a smile towards Liu Mubai and his eyes immediately turned sharp. His hand seals changed as he shouted out: “Devouring Tigerblaze Spiritual Array!”

Roar!

Following Mu Chen’s shout, a deep tiger’s roar actually emitted out from the fiery red Spiritual Array behind him as it shone.

This Devouring Tigerblaze Spiritual Art was a Diagram Array that Mu Chen had obtained from Wen Ling the night before he returned to the Northern Spiritual Academy a month ago. The power of this Spiritual Array was quite extraordinary. It required a total of 17 Spiritual Seals in order to arrange it. A month ago, Mu Chen did not have the ability to condense 17 Spiritual Seals. However, after a month of harsh training, he

had finally succeeded.

The power of this Spiritual Array was ranked in the top 3 amongst all the Spiritual Arrays that Wen Ling knew. Once it was released, even a Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase would have to avoid its brilliance and power.

Liu Mubai stared at the Spiritual Array filled with a violent Spiritual Energy. His hands slowly clenched together and coldness surged through his eyes.

“Roar!”

The fiery red Spiritual Array had become increasingly violent. In the next instant, a fiery red light swept out like lava and directly formed into a mighty flame tiger.

Swish!

The instant that this flame tiger had appeared, it shouted to the sky. With a burning flame and violent Spiritual Energy, it crossed through the skies and lunged towards Liu Mubai under many gazes.

This attack was something that a Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase individual would be afraid of.

The flame tiger roared and heated winds blew. It seemed that the air was completely oppressed and fled away as it enshrouded Liu Mubai. Liu Mubai lifted his head and stared at the rapidly approaching flame figure. His face suddenly became extremely cold.

“You think you can win with such a technique?”

He muttered to himself. However, he did not move too much. The fiery red Spiritual Energy gushed out like fire as the flame tiger charged towards him.

“Ah.”

Within the Northern Spiritual Square, everybody watched as Liu Mubai clashed together with the flame tiger. They exclaimed out loud. Did this guy abandon himself to despair?

In the seats at front, Liu Qingtian smiled sarcastically when he saw this.

Mu Chen also watched tightly at the location where the flames were raging. However, he frowned. In the next instant, he seemed to have felt something and quickly retreated backwards.

Boom!

A powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuation erupted out from within the center of the flames. The powerful Spiritual Energy actually forcibly scattered the raging flames away.

"What a powerful Spiritual Energy!"

This sudden turn of events stunned everybody. They hurriedly looked over and saw a figure wrapped with dense Spiritual Energy slowly walking out from within the flames.

"Liu Mubai's Spiritual Energy is actually even more powerful than an ordinary Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase!" A few individuals sensed the dense Spiritual Energy surging out from the figure's body and could not help but shout out loudly.

"So this Liu Mubai also had a hidden card up his sleeves!"

Su Ling, Tang Qian'Er and the others turned slightly pale as they watched this scene. Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase? This Liu Mubai was truly a person, who concealed himself completely.

"Mu Chen. You're not the only one that holds a hidden card."

Dense Spiritual Energy enshrouded Liu Mubai. He felt the powerful Spiritual Energy within his body as his viper-like eyes locked itself onto Mu Chen and he laughed.

Mu Chen also stared at Liu Mubai. This guy really made a breakthrough during this one month and reached the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase.

"However, did you believe that a Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase was the limits of my power?" Liu Mubai smiled gently and had a cold smile. The eyes he used to look at Mu Chen became extremely mocking. I'll show

you what is called an insurmountable gap!

“Although I haven’t used it for a long time, did you all forget that I possess a Spiritual Pulse as well?”

Liu Mubai slowly spread out his hands. Afterwards, everybody was able to see lights slowly emerging on his body. These lights were like a soaring dragon as it flashed.

With the emergence of these lights, Liu Mubai’s Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase’s Spiritual Energy fluctuation actually began to expand once again. Finally, under many astonished gazes, he had reached the pinnacle of a Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase.

At this moment, he had reached the limits of a Spiritual Rotation Stage!

Just who, among the Spiritual Rotation Stage, could compete with him?

The entire venue was completely silent. The only thing happening was Liu Mubai’s dense Spiritual Energy spreading out in waves. The pressure from this Spiritual Energy even made the people near the stage feel a sense of pressure.

“Not only did Liu Mubai advance to the Spiritual Rotation Stage, he even possesses a Human-Level Spiritual Pulse. It will be troubling now.” Tang Shan sighed. There are probably only a few people who could compete with Liu Mubai within the Spiritual Rotation Stage.

Mu Feng’s face sank. The boy from the Liu Family wasn’t that simple. He never expected that the Rank 1 Spiritual Array that Mu Chen had arranged would be completely useless in front of him.

“I won’t give you a chance to struggle.”

On the stage, Liu Mubai stared coldly at Mu Chen. His hands slowly clenched together and forceful waves of Spiritual Energy quickly gathered at the center of his palm. In the end, a dazzling sun seemed to emerge at the center of Liu Mubai’s palm.

Sensing the powerful Spiritual Energy at the center of Liu Mubai’s palm, many people’s hearts jumped. Is he planning to defeat Mu Chen

ruthlessly?

"Solar Inferno Palm."

Liu Mubai's body rushed into the air and his Spiritual Energy poured out endlessly. His entire body seemed to have turned into a fiery light while a fiery sun was tightly clutched at the center of his palm. It carried an extraordinary fluctuation as he charged furiously at Mu Chen, who was below him.

The ground on the stage collapsed slightly due to the violent impact. Everybody watched flabbergasted at Liu Mubai's amazing offensive.

Within the Spiritual Rotation Stage, is there really someone who could block it?

The outcome will be decided like this?

Phew.

Under numerous gazes, Mu Chen also took a deep breath. Then, he actually slowly closed his eyes once again. His heart was calm like the water and his Great Pagoda Art began to furiously circulate.

Within his aura sea, the Spiritual Energy Wheel began to emit numerous lights. These lights gathered above it and a vague black light tower with nine levels slowly emerged.

When this black light tower appeared, mysterious black lights began to slowly lit up within the depths of his body. At the same time, a vague black light tower appeared on the surface of Mu Chen's body.

He suddenly opened his eyes and watched with razor-sharp eyes at the sun descending down from the sky.

You have a Spiritual Pulse. I also have one. Furthermore, mine is much more powerful than yours!

Chapter 86: Victory or Defeat

A fiery Spiritual Energy swept down violently from the sky. A dazzling sun emitted a powerful Spiritual Energy as it bombarded down like a meteorite towards the boy at the center of the stage.

At this moment, dark black Spiritual Energy surged out from Mu Chen's body. Black lights emerged on the surface of his body and formed a blurry black light tower.

Black lights spilled out from the light tower as it guarded Mu Chen's body. A rather mysterious fluctuation emitted out from it.

When a black light tower suddenly emerged on the surface of Mu Chen's body, it also attracted a lot of attention. At that moment, many individuals had surprised expressions. As Mu Chen had brought surprise to them earlier when he arranged a Spiritual Energy, they did not dare to underestimate this boy.

Mu Feng was startled slightly when he saw the black light tower. Then, he immediately recalled something and his eyes instantly narrowed. He clenched the chair's support with his hands while his heart was completely in a chaos.

Although the black light tower was quite blurry, he had a deep impression of it. This was because Mu Chen's mother had used a similar measure before. However, the black light tower formed by her was many times stronger compared to the one formed by Mu Chen.

"Did Mu Chen's Great Pagoda Art improve again?" Mu Feng's eyes twinkled. Surprise surged out from the depths of his eyes. That brat was truly unpredictable.

The Great Pagoda Art that had once troubled him was flowing smoothly within Mu Chen's hand.

"This is..."

On the main platform, Teacher Mo was shocked as he stared at the black light tower on the surface of Mu Chen's body. The black light tower

exuded a mysterious fluctuation. Although it appeared to be insignificant, nobody dared to underestimate it.

Teacher Molooked at the boy's figure and could not help but click his tongue. This boy really hid many cards up his sleeves...

"Swish!"

Just when ideas were appearing within everybody's hearts, the atmosphere within the stage had completely heated up. In the air, Liu Mubai witnessed the commotion caused by Mu Chen. However, the sneer on his face became increasingly rich. Right now, he had advanced to the Spiritual Rotation Stage. Moreover, with the power of the Spiritual Pulse, there were few that could compete with him among the Spiritual Rotation Stage. No matter what the current Mu Chen would do, it was nothing but a last-ditch effort.

There would only be one outcome for him.

That is to be stepped by him on the stage!

"You're not qualified to snatch the seeded entry away from me!" A cold light flashed through Liu Mubai's eyes. The fiery sun within the center of his palm swelled once again. It was evident that he was planning to use all his strength in this one attack to end this fight!

Boom!

A powerful Spiritual Energy pressure enveloped down from the sky. Mu Chen slowly raised his head and stared at the burning sun that was quickly descending down with his black eyes. He immediately bent his knees slightly as his eyes twinkled coldly.

Boom!

Mu Chen's body charged out as a dark black Spiritual Energy erupted out from within his body. A mysterious light pattern seemed to emerge above the black light tower.

Outside of the stage, the countless individuals exclaimed loudly when they noticed Mu Chen actually taking the initiative to attack. They did not

dare to blink as they watched the scene.

The black and red lights flashed as they charged out like light beams. In the next instant, it collided fiercely against each other under the numerous gazes.

Boom!

A shocking sound rang out from midair. The black and red lights bloomed in the sky like fireworks.

Crunch.

The fiery red Spiritual Energy that formed a sun had fiercely smashed against the black light tower and a crunching sound rang out. At the same time, Mu Chen's eyes peeked through the black light tower and stared tightly at the hideous looking Liu Mubai.

"Break!"

Liu Mubai issued out a deep roar from his throat. His veins on his arms trembled as he pushed the Spiritual Energy within his body to the limits. He instilled Spiritual Energy crazily into the center of his palm.

The collision between the two of them did not go as he expected. He thought that it the light tower would crumple instantly. However, the black light tower that enveloped Mu Chen's body had a powerful defensive power even when it seemed quite fragile. It actually withstood his fierce attack!

This was not the result he wanted!

"You're only a Spiritual Rotation Stage Initial Phase, what gives you the right to fight against me?!"

Liu Mubai clenched his teeth tightly and retracted his arm. Then, he fiercely smashed forward. The burning sun continuously bombarded the thin black light tower. Deep sounds spread out through the entire Northern Spiritual Square.

"Buzz."

The black light tower began to ripple under the crazy bombardment by

Liu Mubai. Even Mu Chen, who was protected inside, was subjected to the vibrations and blood flowed out from his mouth.

Mu Chen wiped the blood from the corner of his mouth and his eyes became cold. He furiously circulated the Spiritual Energy within his body. The Spiritual Energy Wheel within his aura sea became increasingly brighter as he released all his Spiritual Energy unreservedly.

At the same time, the mini-sized black light tower above the Spiritual Energy Wheel also let out subtle buzzing sounds. This sound seemed to reveal traces of human pride.

It was the feeling of being provoked by something mediocre!

Swoosh!

The mysterious black lights within the depths of Mu Chen's body became increasingly dazzling. It has an arrogance that belongs to itself. A trashy Spiritual Pulse actually dares to challenge its command!

Above Mu Chen's body, the black lights from the thin black light tower suddenly erupted out. A long humming sound rang out and the black lights that expanded out instantly covered the violent red sun.

As this occurred, a roar emitted out from Mu Chen's mouth. He moved his feet and his body suddenly spun at a high speed. The black light tower that enshrouded his body had turned into a light spiral at this moment.

Swish!

As the black light tower rotated, the top part of the tower smashed fiercely into the burning sun. Then, Liu Mubai was horrified to see cracks appearing on the burning sun that combined all his Spiritual Energy.

Moreover, he was astonished when he felt a strange fluctuation passing over from the light tower. Under this fluctuation, the Spiritual Pulse within his body was actually suppressed!

"How is that possible?!" The Spiritual Pulse that was shining within his body had suddenly dimmed a little bit. Liu Mubai's face instantly changed.

"Break!"

However, when he was still astonished, a cold cry rang out from within the black light tower. The fiery sun instantly began to collapse and completely shattered apart.

Moreover, the black light tower also crumbled and became like an illusion while the fiery sun shattered.

Swish!

A black figure charged out swiftly from the illusory light tower and fist filled with black lights fired out. On the fist, two black light seals emerged.

When the fiery sun shattered, Liu Mubai turned pale. The Spiritual Energy within his body had quickly vanished. He hurriedly crossed his arms in order to protect his body against the black fist that fiercely smashed over.

Boom!

The fists wrapped with the two black light seals landed on Liu Mubai's arm. A domineering and matchless energy exploded out like a flood.

Puchi!

Liu Mubai felt a stinging pain emerging from within his arms. He could not help but spit out a mouthful of blood and his body flew back awkwardly. However, the instant he was sent flying away...

His leg also fiercely kicked Mu Chen's body.

Dong!

The two figures descended down from the air and landed severely on the ground. It created two holes on the stage as they spat out a mouthful of blood.

Waah!

A commotion rang out once again from outside the stage. They never expected both of them to fight to the point where they were both hurt.

Mu Chen wiped the blood from the corner of his mouth as he stood up unsteadily. He stared coldly at Liu Mubai, who was not far away. Although

he felt immense pain, he ignored it completely and charged forward. He stuck up two fingers and a golden light flashed dimly at his fingertips. Since the two of them have fought to this extent, they had almost completely depleted the Spiritual Energy within their bodies.

Right now, it was a competition of whose willpower was stronger.

Mu Chen charged directly at Liu Mubai. His face was expressionless, yet it gave off a sharp killing intent. From this killing intent, nobody doubted that he was really going to kill Liu Mubai!

Seeing Mu Chen charged recklessly over to him, Liu Mubai's face became even paler. He stood up awkwardly and retreated two steps. The Spiritual Energy within his body was already completely depleted and there was no way of him attacking anymore.

From this scene, the outcome was already quite obvious. However, since Liu Mubai refused to admit defeat, the competition was not considered over.

Mu Chen's body charged towards Liu Mubai. But just when his fingers were about to stab into the latter's throat, Liu Qingtian's face finally turned dark and he shouted out: "Asshole, you dare!"

As he cried out loudly, he actually charged out and an immense Spiritual Energy fluctuation filled the entire venue.

"Liu Qingtian, you dare touch my son?!"

Mu Feng also shouted out furiously and his palm smashed against the armrest. His body also rushed over and appeared directly above Mu Chen. Then, he smacked Liu Qingtian in anger.

Bang!

As the two Spirit Stage Late Phase powerhouses fought fiercely in midair, the Spiritual Energy shock wave made Mu Chen and Liu Mubai fly backwards. Both of them immediately spat out a mouthful of blood.

"Liu Qingtian, Mu Feng, what are you two doing?!"

Seeing both of them fight, Principal Xiao also shouted out in anger. His

body moved and appeared between the two of them while stopping both of them.

As they noticed Principal intervening in this, Liu Qingtian and Mu Feng stopped as well. They glared fiercely at each other.

“That Mu Chen is too ruthless. It was evident that he was going to take Liu Mubai’s life. Acting this ruthless in a duel, we must cancel his qualifications!” Liu Qingtian gnashed his teeth and said.

“Stop with your bullsh*t! You lost the battle, yet you don’t want to lose the war? Just how shameless is your Liu Territory?” Mu Feng said mockingly.

“Both of you, if you both disturb the competition again, then don’t blame the Northern Spiritual Academy for not giving face to you two!” Principal Xiao shouted in anger.

Liu Qingtian gritted his teeth and lowered his voice and asked: “Then, who is the final victor of this match? Seeing that both of them are completely exhausted, why don’t we consider this as a draw?”

“Hush.”

When these words were said, hushing sounds instantly rang out from outside the stage. If it wasn’t for Liu Qingtian earlier, Mu Chen would have probably obtained the victory.

Principal Xiao also frowned and said: “That will be determined by Mister Hao.”

After he said this, he turned towards Mister Hao, who was on the main platform, and cupped his hands as he asked: “Mister Hao, in your opinion, what’s the outcome of this match?”

Hearing this, Mister Hao said with a faint smile: “Mu Chen wins.”

“Why?!” Liu Qingtian shouted out furiously.

“Can’t you see?” Mister Hao pointed at the stage and said: “Mu Chen is still on the stage while Liu Mubai was sent out. Therefore, he lost.”

When Liu Qingtian heard this, he hurriedly looked down and his face

turned dark. The shock wave caused by Mu Feng and him when they fought had actually sent Liu Mubai out of the stage...

Although Mu Chen was lying down faraway, he was still at the edge of the stage and did not drop out.

Sounds of suppressed laughter rang out from outside the stage. Liu Qingtian really shot himself in the foot. Originally, he could still argue about the situation. However, in the end, he sent his son directly off the stage. This way, there was no hope on arguing about it.

Mister Hao slowly stood up and looked at the audience. His faint voice resounded through the sky.

"Right now, I declare that the Northern Spiritual Academy's seeded entry belongs to the East Branch's Mu Chen!"

At the Northern Spiritual Academy's East Branch, Su Ling, Tang Qian'Er and the others were stunned. Then, thunderous cheers resounded out instantly.

At the same time, countless individuals stood up outside of the stage and a loud applause rang out. The earlier battle was magnificent. The strongest student within the Northern Spiritual Academy was well deserved.

Amongst the thunderous cheers, Mu Chen struggled to sit up. He had a pale expression and lifted his head to look at Mu Feng. Then, he noticed the latter giving a thumbs up to him and immediately smiled.

What belongs to me will ultimately belong to me. Nobody can take it away!

Chapter 87: Selecting the Spiritual Academies

The much-anticipated Entry Competition closed the curtains with Mu Chen obtaining the most valuable seeded entry. However, everybody within the Northern Spiritual Square was still immersed in the fierce battle earlier. Many people were amazed by that fight.

With his Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase strength and the power of his Spiritual Pulse, Liu Mubai was almost regarded as having no opponents beneath the Spirit Stage. However, who would have expected that he would ultimately be defeated by Mu Chen, who was only a Spiritual Rotation Stage Initial Phase.

This result made everybody secretly sighed. No wonder Mu Chen was able to become the only one qualified for the Spiritual Road within the Northern Spiritual Realm.

Although Liu Qingtian was extremely dissatisfied with the final judgment made by Mister Hao, he was not stupid. The latter's background was extremely powerful and he would not care about his identity of the Liu Territory's Territory Lord. Since that he lost the seeded entry, he could only think of another approach.

After resting for a while, Mu Chen and Liu Mubai gradually recovered a bit of strength. However, Liu Mubai had an extremely cold and ugly expression.

Under numerous gazes, Mister Hao looked across the stage and waved his hand. Then, the twelve people that participated for the Entry Competition hurried onto the stage as they were stared enviously.

"The final results have come out for the Entry Competition today."

Mister Hao's eyes fixed themselves at Mu Chen and the others as he faintly said: "Originally, there should be only 6 entries including the seeded entry. However, there is a slight change right now."

Afterwards, Mister Hao turned his gaze towards Mo Ling, who was

sweating nervously, and said: “You have lost the competition originally. Based on the rules, you should be disqualified.”

Mo Ling’s eyes turned dark and revealed a bitter expression.

“However, your perseverance and courage is commendable. Your talent is also acceptance. Thus, I will make an exception and give you an entry this time.” Mister Hao said.

Mo Ling was stunned. His face immediately turned red with excitement and hurriedly bowed down as he said: “Thank you Mister!”

Mister Hao nodded. Then, he turned around to look at Tang Qian’Er and Hong Ling: “The two of you drew. Normally speaking, this should not have happened. However, I can look aside and hand both of you an entry.”

Tang Qian’Er and Hong Ling were instantly filled with joy when they heard this.

“However, there is a condition.” Mister Hao said.

“What’s the condition?” Tang Qian’Er and Hong Ling quickly asked.

“You can only choose to enter the “Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy1”.” Mister Hao said with a faint smile.

“The Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy?” Tang Qian’Er and Hong Ling were stunned.

The Five Great Academies. Accurately speaking, it is the title for five Spiritual Academies. These five Spiritual Academies are known respectively as: Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, Azure Sky Spiritual Academy, Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy, Martial Spiritual Academy and the Saint Spiritual Academy. Amongst them, the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy was rather unique as they only recruit female students.

Naturally, you should not underestimate the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy due to this. To be able to become one of the Five Great Academies with just females, the strength of the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy was absolutely terrifying to the point where it was utterly indescribable.

Moreover, the name of the Five Great Academies actually had some sort of origin. It was said that each of the Five Great Academies had an Ancient Divine Beast living there that had once shocked the world. In fact, the name of the Five Great Academies are actually derived from the name of the five Ancient Divine Beasts.

"So what's your decision?" Mister Hao looked at Tang Qian'Er and Hong Ling. To be honest, there were indeed much less female students compared to male students during the recruitment process. As the recruiter for the "Five Great Academies", he would fail his job if he didn't find enough people for the Million Phoenix Academy. Although the people within the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy were all females, it was precisely because of this that it was extremely tough and troublesome.

Hong Ling did not hesitate at all and directly nodded her head. To be able to enter the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy was just as she had wished. Although the other four Spiritual Academies were not terrible compared to the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy, the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy was still the one that suited her the most.

Tang Qian'Er hesitated for a moment. She peeked and glanced at Mu Chen. If that's the case, wouldn't she be in a different Spiritual Academy than Mu Chen? However, if she did not accept, would she have another choice?

As if he was aware of Tang Qian'Er's gaze, Mu Chen nodded at her. The Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy was actually quite suitable for Tang Qian'Er. It would be irrational if she failed to enter it.

Seeing Mu Chen nod his head, Tang Qian'Er bit her red lips and bitterness filled her eyes. Then, she tilted her head and said to Mister Hao: "I'll select the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy as well."

When that happened, Mister Hao smiled. Afterwards, he turned to look at Liu Mubai and the others and asked: "Your decisions are?"

"I'll choose the Azure Sky Spiritual Academy." Chen Fan and Huo Yun exchanged glances and actually selected the same Spiritual Academy.

"I'll choose the Saint Spiritual Academy." Liu Mubai pondered for a

moment and said without any hesitation. He had considered about it a long time ago. Although the strength of the Five Great Academies was absolutely terrifying, he still discovered that the Saint Spiritual Academy was considered the leader amongst the Five Great Academies if you really had to rank them. It was said that the Saint Spiritual Academy was always the strongest in the competitions shared between the Five Great Academies during the past few years.

Mister Hao glanced at Liu Mubai and nodded without saying anything. Then, he turned his attention towards Mu Chen and said: “What about you?”

Everybody nearby immediately set their sights towards Mu Chen. As the one who obtained the seeded entry, no matter which Spiritual Academy he entered, he should be able to obtain far more resources and status compared to an ordinary student.

Liu Mubai stared hatefully at Mu Chen and his eyes revealed that he was extremely unwilling. That was what he was supposed to enjoy!

Mu Chen pouted his lips for a moment. A transparent, glass-like pair of beautiful eyes and silver long hair flashed through his mind. As he thought about this, he slowly clenched his hands.

“Mister Hao, may I ask you for some information?” Mu Chen took a deep breath and respectfully asked Mister Hao.

Mister Hao smiled and nodded his head. He felt quite satisfied with Mu Chen.

“I want to ask about two people.” Mu Chen said in a soft voice: “Mister Hao, you should have heard of the name, Ji Xuan, right?”

When Mu Chen said this name out, Mister Hao’s eyes narrowed. His face also became serious and he stared deeply at Mu Chen as he spoke: “Ji Xuan. In the Spiritual Road’s trial, he was a person that was assessed as a “King” class. He was one of the most dazzling individuals within the Spiritual Road and obtained a core entry for the Five Great Academies.”

Everybody’s expression changed when they heard these words. Although

they were unfamiliar with that name, they could feel an intense pressure. A core entry. It was something that could only be obtained by a person, who was like a monster.

"King Class huh?" Mu Chen's eyes drooped slightly. This was the highest class of assessment within the Spiritual Road. However, it was within his expectations that Ji Xuan would obtain this assessment with his abilities.

"Which Spiritual Academy did he enter?" Mu Chen's voice remained calm. Nobody could tell what sort of emotions were within his voice.

Mister Hao stared at Mu Chen. Shortly after, he said: "Ji Xuan entered the Saint Spiritual Academy and was even specially named out by the higher ups of the Saint Spiritual Academy."

"The Saint Spiritual Academy?" Mu Chen glanced at Liu Mubai. Then, he nodded his head slightly before he hesitated for a moment. His originally sharp and cold gaze suddenly turned gentle.

"The second person I would like to ask is called Luo Li." Mu Chen scratched his head and asked.

"Luo Li?" Mister Hao frowned and said faintly: "Luo Li. She was also assessed as a "King" Class within the Spiritual Road's trial. She also obtained a core entry for the Five Great Academies."

Everybody at the scene secretly clucked their tongues. What sort of insane individuals are within the Spiritual Road?

"She's also a King Class..."

Mu Chen smiled. If it's her, she definitely had the ability. It seems that she became a lot more powerful after he had left the Spiritual Road.

"Then which Spiritual Academy did she enter?" Mu Chen looked at Mister Hao nervously. He had made a promise with her. If it deviated from it, she would probably put on a terrible face when they met again with her personality. Though she would always have an indifferent expression.

"Luo Li entered the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy."

Mister Hao stared at Mu Chen with a smile that didn't seem like a smile. Then he said: "Originally, the Martial Spiritual Academy's Lord Principal had personally spoken with her and wanted to let her enter the Martial Spiritual Academy. But in the end, she rejected and instead chose the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy."

At the side, Chen Fan and the others were completely flabbergasted. Isn't that simply too arrogant?

Hearing this, Mu Chen was also stunned. He had an exceptionally complex expression on his face.

The Spiritual Road.

As the cold night enveloped the lands, a warm bonfire rose up within the depths of a forest. Beside the bonfire, a boy was fiddling with the fire and caused the warm flames to float towards the right.

At that location, a girl with black clothes was sitting there quietly. Her delicate face was buried within her knees and she only revealed a pair of glass-like eyes. She stared at the handsome face of the black-haired boy in front of her as she was warmed by the flames. Her eyes curved gently like a crescent moon. However, the curvature was minimal and was impossible to detect.

"You..."

She suddenly extended her slender white hands over and pulled out a wood unconsciously. She casually asked: "After the Spiritual Road is over, which Spiritual Academy would you enter?"

"Me?" The boy thought for a moment. He smiled and said: "I'll probably go to the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. I was born in the Northern Spiritual Realm, so I have a good feeling with the word North."

The girl glanced at him. Her voice was flat, like the sounds of the valley, and she said: "The Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy? I don't want to go there. It seems that we'll have to separate after the Spiritual Road is over."

The boy was stunned. He helplessly asked: "Then which Spiritual Academy are you planning to go to? Tell me, when the time comes, I'll go

to that one as well."

The girl tilted her head and asked: "Why should I tell you?"

"Didn't you say that you'll help block all the arrows behind my back? You can't say something when you didn't mean it. You didn't have this attitude when you first formed a team with me." The boy said furiously.

"No. If I'm with you, it will bother my training. You should just go to your Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. I won't choose that place."

The girl gently let out an hmph sound. She did not wait for the boy to become angry and directly extinguished the fire with a wave of her hand. Then, she jumped onto a tree and said: "I'm going to sleep. It's your turn to guard during the night today."

"Luo Li, you didn't keep your promise! Don't act that you're amazing because you're pretty! Tell me clearly!"

Beneath the tree, an angry voice rang out endlessly from the boy. Above the tree, the girl gently leaned on the tree branch and gently lifted the corner of her mouths under the faint moonlight. At that instant, her charm even made the moonlight dimmer.

"Idiot."

She gently smiled within her heart. Then, she slowly closed her eyes and feel asleep peacefully.

Mu Chen exhaled heavily. Then, he looked towards Mister Hao in front of him and said with a slight smile: "Mister Hao, I'll select the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy."

Chapter 88: Conclusion

"Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy?"

Mister Hao smiled at Mu Chen and his eyes showed a meaning as if he understood. He soon nodded his head and said: "That's fine. It's up to you."

It seems that Mu Chen decided to go to the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy because he shared a relationship with Luo Li. However, this was not within the scope of his consideration. With Luo Li's strength and talent, she would definitely be dazzling even if she entered the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. As for Mu Chen, he was quite excellent as well. However, he lacked the final part of the Spiritual Road and temporarily had a bit of a gap compared to the monsters that had successfully completed the Spiritual Road's trial.

However, Mister Hao knew that this gap would soon be covered by the boy in front of him. He knew that if it wasn't for that sudden turn of events, Mu Chen's final assessment within the Spiritual Road would perhaps reach the "King" Class as well. This was enough to prove his talent.

"How about the two of you?" Mister Hao looked at Mo Ling and a West Branch student, who haven't decided on their Spiritual Academy yet.

"I'll go to the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy as well." Mo Ling scratched his head and said in an embarrassed way. In his eyes, the Five Great Academies were a mysterious and massive existence. Due to the trust he had in Mu Chen, he felt that it may be better if he was beside Mu Chen.

"I'll go to the Martial Spiritual Academy." The West Branch student also quickly replied.

Mister Hao nodded. This way, the entries from the Northern Spiritual Academy were completely clear now. There would be 2 individuals going to the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, 2 for the Azure Sky Spiritual Academy, 2 for the Myriad Phoenix Academy, 1 for the Martial Spiritual

Academy and 1 for the Saint Spiritual Academy.

"You still have two months of preparation time. After two months, you will come to the Northern Spiritual Academy once again and I'll send you to the place prior to the Five Great Academies. Over there, you will meet the new students from all over the world. Moreover, there will be a trial waiting for you at that location. If you perform poorly during the trial, there is a danger of being deprived of your entry. Thus, you should train well during these two months." Mister Hao said faintly.

Chen Fan and the others suddenly cried out loud when they heard this. The Five Great Academies weren't really that easy to enter. Isn't it too harsh with all these tests?

When he heard this, Mu Chen's heart shook. If that's the case, wouldn't he be able to meet Luo Li at that place?

"Okay. The Entry Competition today is over now. For the remaining time, you can manage it by yourself. It is fine even if you take a temporary leave from the Northern Spiritual Academy. However, you must remember to come back after two months." Mister Hao waved his hand and leisurely left.

With Mister Hao's departure, Chen Fan and the others were relieved. Liu Mubai glanced coldly at Mu Chen before heading out directly. Even Chen Fan and the others could feel the rage within Liu Mubai clearly.

"Tch, he can't even admit that he lost." Chen Fan pouted his lips and said towards the back of Liu Mubai.

"Mu Chen. It seems that we'll be separated in the future. Haha. However, I will train hard within the Azure Sky Spiritual Academy. Moreover, I remember that the competitions within the Five Great Academies are quite fierce. You must be careful; otherwise, I might have surpassed you by the time we meet again." Chen Fan laughed.

Mu Chen also smiled. The Five Great Academies weren't a tiny place like the Northern Spiritual Academy. It is a place that gathers all sort of talented individuals from all over the world. If they wanted to shine at that location, it wasn't an easy thing to do.

Because they managed to obtain an entry, Chen Fan and the others were extremely excited. After they spoke a few words with Mu Chen, they headed off towards their friend. Afterwards, only two beautiful girls remained beside Mu Chen as they stared at him.

"Congratulations." Hong Ling stared complicatedly at Mu Chen. It was evident that Mu Chen was the one in the limelight today. Nobody could have imagined that someone as strong as Liu Mubai would actually be defeated by him.

The ordinary boy in her memories back then had become someone bright and dazzling.

"I'll also have to congratulate Senior Hong Ling." Mu Chen gave a smile to Hong Ling. Then, he saw the resentful face of Tang Qian'Er beside him. He could not help but chuckle: "Sister Qian'Er. This is a happy event, why do you have such an expression?"

"Are you really that glad that you'll separate from me?" Tang Qian'Er pouted and said.

Mu Chen could only helplessly smile. It seems that it was wise to shut up.

"Are you close with that Luo Li?" Tang Qian'Er said in a bitter tone. Naturally, she saw the different expression Mu Chen had when he said that name.

"She's a friend that I met within the Spiritual Road. She's beautiful like Sister Qian'Er." Mu Chen smiled and said.

Tang Qian'Er's face turned red and she said: "Enough with your sweet-talk, hmph, I'll go and work hard within the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy. In case we meet again, I'll represent the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy to defeat a person like you from the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy."

"When that happens, I must ask Sister Qian'Er to hold back for old times' sake." Mu Chen nodded and seriously said as he smiled.

"Puchi."

When Tang Qian'Er saw Mu Chen acting this way, she could not help but chuckle. The girl's bell-like laughter sound made Mu Chen's tired boy to slowly relax.

After the gloomy Liu Mubai reunited with Liu Qingtian, they did not remain long at this location and instead stormed away with a dark expression. However, they glanced coldly at Mu Feng and Mu Chen as they left.

"Dad, what should we do now?" Upon exiting the Northern Spiritual Square, Liu Mubai finally could not resist and asked. He could not accept this. After all, he had prepared himself so well for the seeded entry, yet he failed in the end!

With a cold expression, Liu Qingtian said: "Since that Mu Chen obtained the seeded entry, he will definitely be valued highly after he enters the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. Moreover, with his talent, his achievements would not be low in the future. Therefore, it is considered a great potential threat for us."

"Then..." Liu Mubai had to admit it. Mu Chen was indeed quite dangerous.

"What are you afraid of? Even though he has a seeded entry, what use is it if he could not enter the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy?"

Savageness passed through Liu Qingtian's expression: "As long as we decimate the Mu Territory, Mu Feng and Mu Chen would definitely die."

"Although Mu Chen had already obtained the entry, a battle between the Liu Territory and the Mu Territory is a dispute between forces within the Northern Spiritual Realm. Even the Five Great Academies cannot say anything regarding this matter. Moreover, if we accidentally kill a rascal during this battle, who could say anything about it?"

Liu Mubai's eyes jumped. His eyes were filled with ominous color: "Then, when should we attack?"

"There's no need to be that impatient. Isn't there still two months?" Liu Qingtian's eyes narrowed as he sneered: "Your grandpa is about to finish

his training. As long as he is able to advance into the Three Heavens Stage, the Mu Territory will become a weakling that we could easily crush. Right now, we have to find something for the Mu Territory to do. This way, we could avoid letting them know this information. If they were to arrange it so that Mu Chen could escape when it happens, it would be a great disaster for us."

Liu Mubai nodded heavily.

"For things like this, you either should not do it or otherwise, once you've done it, you must eradicate the problem completely! You must not leave the slightest chance of an impending future disaster!" Liu Qingtian said coldly and turned around to look back at the massive Northern Spiritual Square. Then, he waved his sleeves and walked away.

"Mu Feng. You and your son should just wait for your death!"

After the Entry Competition ended, Mu Chen remained at the Northern Spiritual Academy for a day before he returned back to the Mu Territory with Mu Feng. When they returned, the entire Mu City was decorated with lights. The atmosphere was filled with joy. As the Little Lord of the Mu Territory, Mu Chen had obtained the seeded entry for the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. This was considered an extremely great news for the Mu Territory.

"Haha, Little Mu is amazing. This time, the Mu Territory really obtained a great deal of fame. It's the first seeded entry within the Northern Spiritual Realm!" Zhou Ye led the crowd and headed forward. The stern expression that he always had was currently filled with delight.

After hearing Zhou Ye's praise, Mu Chen also scratched his head.

"Enough. I've heard enough of these words during the past two days." Mu Feng smiled and waved his hand. His face suddenly turned slightly serious as he said: "During this period of time, increase the alertness a bit. Since the Liu Territory lost the seeded entry this time, with his personality, Liu Qingtian would probably not let it go so easily."

When Zhou Ye heard this, he also nodded and quickly sent down a command.

After returning to the Mu Estate, Mu Chen participated in the celebratory feast for a moment before heading back to his room. He sat cross-legged on his bed and stretched his waist. It had been quite tiring for him during the past few weeks.

"I should be able to see her after two months, right? I wonder if she changed since I haven't met her for so long..."

Mu Chen muttered to himself. At this moment, his handsome face seemed extremely gentle. With Luo Li's talent and her rating within the Spiritual Road, she would be valued highly no matter which Spiritual Academy she entered. However, nobody knew the reason why she chose the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy aside from him.

"She completed the Spiritual Road's trial. Right now, she's probably far stronger than me..."

Mu Chen sat up fiercely. This was not allowed. If he had fallen behind her too much, it would be too disgraceful. Moreover, she was so beautiful. There must be a variety of excellent individuals who coveted her. Regarding about this matter, he had seen enough of it during the Spiritual Road.

In the Spiritual Road, he was able to protect her. However, the situation was different right now. Thus, he could not feel satisfied just on this tiny bit of achievement!

Mu Chen took a deep breath and began to focus as he suppressed the stress within his body. He entered a cultivation state and began absorbing the Spiritual Aura within the world as he circulated the Great Pagoda Art.

Mu Chen's consciousness entered his body. After a while, he seemed to have suddenly recalled something and allowed his consciousness to enter his aurasea in order to look at a certain location within it.

At that location, a mysterious page of black paper was quietly floating. Above the black paper, a mysterious dark purple mandala flower extended out and formed a beautiful cage. In the center of the cage, there was a Nine Nether Bird, who had restraint the flames on its black wings.

Mu Chen's consciousness stared at the Nine Nether Bird. He hesitated for a moment before sending extremely gentle thoughts into the cage.

Boom!

Just when Mu Chen's gentle thoughts entered, the Nine Nether Bird suddenly opened her eyes fiercely. Fierceness instantly filled its eyes and it viciously stared at Mu Chen.

Boom!

It crashed onto the light barrier formed by the cage and caused a chain reaction of ripples. Her vicious eyes seemed that it wanted to swallow Mu Chen up completely.

Mu Chen was shocked by the vicious aura coming from the Nine Nether Bird. However, he could not trap it here forever. It was an unstable bomb. Moreover, it was a bomb that was hidden within his body. If it exploded one day, Mu Chen would probably be blown to the extent where not even his bones would remain. Therefore, he must find a solution to this problem.

Regarding the solution, Mu Chen had thought with much deliberation and felt that he should use the method of negotiations. However, only god would know whether or not it would be effective.

But no matter what, he must attempt it.

Chapter 89: Failed Negotiations

Mu Chen's consciousness stared at the Nine Nether Bird, which was trapped within a cage. The latter also stared at him fiercely with a vicious gaze. From the vicious aura, Mu Chen had no doubt that the Nine Nether Bird would rip him into pieces if it had the chance.

It was too difficult to tame a Spiritual Beast at its level.

"Cough..."

As he was stared at fiercely by the Nine Nether Bird, Mu Chen let out a dry cough. He attempted to convey friendly thoughts over: "About that... Hello."

However, the Nine Nether Bird was completely indifferent when facing his method of conveying friendliness. The vicious aura within its eyes did not show the slightest signs of weakening.

"I know that you can understand my words..." Mu Chen said helplessly: "For you to be in such a situation is actually your own fault. I did not provoke you, yet you dove into my body and attempted to erase my consciousness."

The Nine Nether Bird looked at Mu Chen coldly and slowly retracted its body. Its elegant wings which were filled with black fire instantly laid down lazily on top of the mandala flower.

"If we continue to be in a stalemate, it would not be beneficial to either of us. Why don't we discuss it a bit and find a method that would benefit the both of us?" Mu Chen led the discussion and said.

However, against his induction, the Nine Nether Bird's eyes seemed to show a hint of ridicule and it simply ignored him.

"Oi, can't you give me a bit of face? At the very least, this is my place. Do you believe that I'll use this thing to deal with you?" Seeing the Nine Nether Bird ignore him, Mu Chen could not help but feel a bit angry.

When the Nine Nether Bird heard this, the ridicule within its eyes increased and a special thought was conveyed out as Mu Chen became

angry: “Despicable human, if you could control it, would you have to talk with me?”

“So you really knew how to communicate with humans!” When he was aware of these thoughts, Mu Chen’s heart jumped. No matter what, the Nine Nether Bird had finally communicated with him! However, during the communication, it had always looked down upon him and mocked him.

“You treacherous humans really know how to sweet-talk. You just took a fancy to my Soul Essence and wanted to attempt to ingest me. What a low quality method.” The Nine Nether Bird sent out cold thoughts over.

“Hmph, you seemed to have said it that way so that you’re quite honorable and just. Don’t you want to erase my consciousness? Moreover, it was entirely your fault. If you did not have bad thoughts, why would you be trapped inside my body?” Mu Chen sneered.

“You think you can trap me forever? My Nine Nether Bird’s clan possesses the blood of the Undying Bird. With your strength, it is impossible for you to kill me. My strength will gradually recover and when that happens, the first thing I’ll do is to kill you!” Viciousness was filled within the thoughts conveyed by the Nine Nether Bird.

“Then, why don’t you try it? We’ll see who will last until the end!”

Mu Chen grunted. He knew that it was impossible to negotiate with the Nine Nether Bird. This damn beast was too arrogant. It was simply impossible to discuss how they would mutually benefit.

Mu Chen’s consciousness gradually faded away and he opened his tightly closed eyes. Then, he pouted. This damn Nine Nether Bird...

“I must think of a way to get rid of this trouble, otherwise, it will become a calamity in the future.”

Mu Chen secretly thought to himself. He did not understand much about the Nine Nether Bird. If what it said was true, perhaps Mu Chen would be the one in trouble. Therefore, he must find a method to deal with this trouble.

However, Mu Chen knew that it wasn't easy to think of a solution. The only thing right now that could restrain the Nine Nether Bird was the mysterious black paper within his body. However, Mu Chen did not obtain the slightest harvest when he re-examined it later. Therefore, there was no choice aside from giving up. Perhaps his strength was not enough, so he was not able to understand the mysteries of this mysterious black paper.

Thus, he could only slowly deal with the matter regarding the Nine Nether Bird.

In the next few days, Mu Chen did not give up hope and would occasionally head over to communicate with the Nine Nether Bird when he was resting. However, the latter completely ignored his words and laid down on top of the mandala flower. Its eyes were cold and were filled with ridicule. It was as if it was watching Mu Chen speaking a monologue.

After attempting several times, Mu Chen finally gave up on this naïve action of his. It seems that it was not feasible to reason with the Nine Nether Bird. He could only hurry and increase his strength. Once he advanced to the Spirit Stage, he would have the ability to ingest a Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence. At that time, he would be able to cause a threat to this Nine Nether Bird.

When that happens, that damned feathery beast would look him directly in the eye.

After he temporarily gave up on the matter regarding the Nine Nether Bird, Mu Chen spent two days with Mister Wen Ling. Based on Mu Feng's information, it seems that Mister Wen Ling was about to advance to a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master soon. If he succeeds, it would definitely be excellent news to the Mu Territory.

After all, there weren't more than 5 individuals that had reached the Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master within the entire Northern Spiritual Realm. The past Mu Territory never had a Spiritual Array Master at this level. Therefore, once Mister Wen Ling succeeds, it would be of great help to the reputation of the Mu Territory.

As for Mister Wen Ling, who would always have a solemn and dull

expression, he had become considerable gentle towards Mu Chen. Apparently, he had heard that Mu Chen had used a Spiritual Array to deal with Liu Mubai during the Entry Competition. This act had made Wen Ling feel quite honored.

Within the quiet courtyard, sounds of footsteps suddenly emerged. Mister Wen Ling, who was training with his eyes closed, opened his eyes and let out a faint smile. Everybody within the Mu Estate knew that he did not like being disturbed. Therefore, nobody would come over to his place at this time aside from Mu Chen.

"Hehe, Mister Wen. I've come over to see when you'll make a breakthrough." As expected, Mu Chen's figure appeared in the doorway of the courtyard. The boy directed a smile towards him and greeted him.

Wen Ling stared at the boy amused. He helplessly shook his head and said: "Boy, you don't have to play any tricks. Just say it directly if you want the Diagram Arrays. You've bothered me for a couple of days now. Even if you don't feel annoyed about it, I will."

Noticing that Wen Ling had seen through his thoughts, Mu Chen could only scratch his head awkwardly. Diagram Arrays were considered to be the thing which was valued the most by a Spiritual Array Master. He had felt guilty about asking to look through Wen Ling's collection of Diagram Arrays.

Wen Ling stared at the awkward Mu Chen and let out a laugh. Then, he beckoned Mu Chen over and said: "From tomorrow onwards, I'll seclude myself and attempt to breakthrough to a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master. When I advance to a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master, the previous Diagram Arrays are not suitable for me anymore. It's fine if I teach it to you."

When Mu Chen heard this, his face was suddenly filled with delight.

"How many Spiritual Seals can you condense right now?" Wen Ling stared at Mu Chen and asked.

"18 Seals." Mu Chen pondered for a moment before speaking. Because of his cultivation, the Spiritual Energy within his body had gradually become stronger. Therefore, the amount of Spiritual Energy required to condense

seals had increased.

Although Wen Ling was mentally prepared for it, he could not help but smack his lips when he heard Mu Chen saying this. The latter's talent in Spiritual Arrays was considerably shocking. With 18 Spiritual Seals, it is considerable to be quite excellent amongst the Rank 1 Spiritual Array Masters.

"The "Devouring Tigerblaze Spiritual Array" that I taught you previously was one of top 3 most powerful Spiritual Arrays that I know."

Wen Ling smiled. He clenched his hand and a scroll containing a flashing Diagram Array emerged: "This Diagram Array is called "Nine Heavenly Lightning Spiritual Array", it is considered to be my strongest Spiritual Array."

When Mu Chen heard this, his eyes suddenly lit up. This was Mister Wen Ling's strongest Spiritual Array?

"This Spiritual Array requires a total of 20 Spiritual Seals. Among the Rank 1 Spiritual Arrays, it is considered to be at the pinnacle. Of course, the arrangement of this Spiritual Array is considered to be quite complicated and is comparable to a few Rank 2 Spiritual Arrays. I originally thought that you would not be able to touch upon it yet, but since you are able to enter the "Heart Array" state, it will greatly reduce the difficulty level." As he mentioned the Heart Array State, Wen Ling's face was filled with envy. To a Spiritual Array Master, that state was something that they desire dearly.

"Once this "Nine Heavenly Lightning Spiritual Array" is successfully arranged, nobody within the Spiritual Rotation Stage could block it. Even Spirit Stage Initial Phase powerhouses would not underestimate it."

Mu Chen could hear his heart pounding. So this "Nine Heavenly Lightning Spiritual Array" was actually this powerful.

"I'll hand this Diagram Array over to you. However, you must remember not to act recklessly if you do not feel certain that you can arrange it, so that you will be able to avoid being hit by the backlash of the Spiritual Array." Wen Ling handed the Diagram Array over to Mu Chen and warned

him seriously.

"Yes!"

Mu Chen hurriedly responded. He carefully took the Diagram Array and spread it open slowly. A flash of lightning entered his eyes. To any ordinary person, a complicated mess emerged. However, to a Spiritual Array Master, a Diagram Array filled with mysterious trajectories had emerged within their eyes.

Mu Chen stood at that spot and stared at the Diagram Array within his hand. His expression was mesmerizing as if he was immersed within the Diagram Array. When Wen Ling noticed this, he smiled faintly and quietly left the courtyard.

When Mu Chen woke up from his mesmerizing state, the color of the sky had slowly become dark and he hurriedly returned back to his room. During the next couple of days, he spent all his concentration on the "Nine Heavenly Lightning Spiritual Array". However, he knew that it was impossible for him to arrange this Spiritual Array right now even with the help of the Heart Array State. Therefore, he did not act recklessly and instead studied it over and over again. This allowed him to firmly memorize these complex Spiritual Energy light beam trajectories.

For a full five days, Mu Chen was immersed in his study about the Spiritual Array. Until one day, he suddenly heard a noisy sound coming from outside the courtyard, only now did he walk out while frowning. Then, he noticed a few guards rushing over to the foreyard. Based on the atmosphere, it seemed that something was wrong.

"What happened?" Mu Chen stopped a guard and asked in a deep voice.

"Little Lord."

When the guard saw Mu Chen, he hurriedly bowed down. Then, he hesitated for a moment before saying: "A big problem occurred. One of our Mu Territory's cities suffered an attack and the City Lord, Chen Xiong, was killed."

When Mu Chen heard this, the color of his face suddenly changed.

Chapter 90: Mang Yin Mountain

"Uncle Xiong was killed?!"

When he heard the guard's words, Mu Chen's breathing stopped for a moment and his hands clenched tightly together. The Mu Territory's five City Lords, Duan Wei, Chen Xiong and the others, were all loyal individuals, who had helped Mu Feng conquer the lands. In the end, they had finally managed to create the Mu Territory within the Northern Spiritual Realm. When Mu Chen was small, he had received a lot of care from them and shared feelings with them. Thus, the sudden news of Chen Xiong's death made his face completely pale and filled him with anger.

"Hu."

Mu Chen took a deep breath and suppressed his anger and killing intent within his heart. His face darkened as he charged towards the Meeting Room. No matter who did it, Mu Chen would never forgive him!

When Mu Chen arrived at the Meeting Room, he noticed that a lot of people were surrounding it. All of their faces were filled with rage. Chen Xiong was quite bold and generous. Moreover, he had great popularity within the Mu Territory. Coupled with the fact that he was a veteran general for the Mu Territory, he was respected by everyone. Since he was suddenly killed, everybody had become furious.

"The Little Lord has arrived!"

Everybody hurried to bow when they saw Mu Chen rushing over. Then, they got out of the way and watched Mu Chen with admiring eyes. When Mu Chen defeated Liu Mubai during the Entry Competition and demonstrated a frightening degree of strength they noticed that his combat abilities had surpassed even the other City Lords like Duan Wei.

Mu Chen nodded his head and entered the Meeting Room. At that moment, rage filled the entire meeting room. Mu Feng sat at the head of the table and had ferocious eyes as if he wanted to devour people. Below him, Zhou Ye's face was also extremely terrifying.

“Duan Wei, what on earth happened?” Mu Feng glanced at Mu Chen, who had entered and didn’t say anything. His dark eyes turned towards Duan Wei and asked.

Duan Wei gritted his teeth and said: “According to the information we have obtained, it was done by Mang Yin Mountain.”

“Mang Yin Mountain?”

Mu Chen frowned. In the Northern Spiritual Realm, there were many other forces aside from the Nine Territories. And this Mang Yin Mountain was considered as one of the strongest among the other forces. Their strength was not too far apart from the Nine Territories and were known as the strongest underworld forces within the Northern Spiritual Realm.

“We never interfere with the Mang Ying Mountain and would mind our own businesses. Why would they suddenly attack us?” Killing intent flashed through Zhou Ye’s eyes while he asked this.

“The Mang Yin Mountain has secretly been in contact with the Liu Territory...This matter must be related to the Liu Territory.” Mu Feng narrowed his eyes slightly and said in a cold voice.

“The Liu Territory? It’s those trashes again! Did they really think that our Mu Territory is afraid of them?!” Zhou Ye smacked the back of his hand and shouted out in anger.

Mu Chen’s eyes were also completely cold. If it was the Liu Territory, it might be related to the fact that he seized the seeded entry. With Liu Qingtian’s personality, he would definitely do something...

“What should we do right now? Mang Yin Mountain has already attacked our Mu Territory and killed one of our City Lords. If we do not act, I’m afraid that it would cause great damage to our reputation.” Zhou Ye said in a deep voice.

Mu Feng slowly placed his palm on top of his teacup on the table. Then, he suddenly pressed his palm down and turned the teacup into powder. His tone was as cold as a blade and he said: “How can we ignore it? My Mu Territory will definitely decimate this Mang Yin Mountain!”

“The boss of the Mang Yin Mountain, Yang Gui, is someone at the Spirit Stage Initial Phase. Under his command, there are two individuals that have reached the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase. If we’re going to attack, then let me personally lead the team.” Zhou Ye said.

When Mu Feng heard this, he hesitated slightly before nodding his head. He would have liked to personally lead the troops. However, since the Liu Territory had thoughts about his Mu Territory, he must take charge on guarding Mu City and watch over the Liu Territory. This way, they would be able to avoid having their elite troops being eliminated by the Liu Territory when they were sent out.

Zhou Ye’s strength was also at the Spirit Stage Initial Phase. By bringing over elite troops, there was no need to fear the Mang Yin Mountain...

“Dad, I’ll go together with Uncle Zhou.” Beside him, Mu Chen, who had been listening to the conversation, suddenly spoke up.

Mu Feng frowned and said: “It’s too dangerous.”

“Dad, with my strength, unless a Spirit Stage personally attacks me, nobody can pose a threat to me.” Mu Chen said with a faint smile.

With this, Mu Feng hesitated. He only now remembered that Mu Chen was considered to be an expert. Among the Mu Territory’s experts, nobody could really have an advantage in a fight against him aside from himself and Zhou Ye.

“Since Little Mu has the heart to do this, then let him come with me. He is considered to be quite excellent with his strength right now. Moreover, he is proficient in Spiritual Arrays and will be a big help.” Zhou Ye smiled and said.

Mu Feng thought for a moment before he nodded. Indeed, Mu Chen’s combat abilities were in no way inferior to Duan Wei and the others. If he went as well, it would be a big help.

“Then, you should follow and head out. However, you have to remember to listen to Uncle Zhou’s arrangements. If you disobey the commands and recklessly charge out, I will not forgive you!” Mu Feng warned him

seriously. The Mang Yin Mountain was quite greedy and selfish. Moreover, they would be extremely vicious when they fight. If they harbored any underestimation towards them, they would probably be overturned.

"Okay."

Mu Chen nodded. A cold light flashed through his eyes. Mang Yin Mountain. Since you've dared to attack our Mu Territory, then you should be prepared for a bloodbath!

When Zhou Ye acts, he would do everything at lightning speed. Once he made his decision, he would immediately execute it. He spent less than 2 hours to summon hundreds of elite troops. Then, he brought the two City Lords, Duan Wei, Tie Lang and Mu Chen as they charged straight out of the Mu Territory and headed towards the western direction of the Mu Territory.

Mang Yin Mountain was located at the Mang Yin Mountain Range. It was connected to the Mu Territory's west borders. The Xiong City that Chen Xiong was guarding was located at that location. It protected the borders of the Mu Territory. However, it was also because of this that the Xiong City was the first target of Mang Yin Mountain. Chen Xiong was even personally killed by the boss of Mang Yin Mountain, Yang Gui...

When Mu Chen and the others arrived at Xiong City, the day was approaching sunset. The city which originally bustled with popularity had its city gates destroyed. The guards at the gate were all looking frightened and constantly scanned the area vigilantly.

Zhou Ye directly brought the troops into the center of the city. The awful killing intent in the atmosphere attracted a lot of surprised gazes. However, when they noticed that the leader was Zhou Ye, their hearts jumped. It seemed that the Mu Territory was quite furious. They would even send out a Spirit Stage powerhouse.

Zhou Ye and the others directly rushed to the City Lord's Estate. At that location, a middle-aged man was waiting for them a long time ago. When he saw them, he hurriedly rushed forward.

"Master Zhou, Little Lord."

This person was the Vice-City Lord of Xiong City. His surname was Cheng while his name was Yong. Since Chen Xiong was killed, he temporarily managed Xiong City. However, his appearance was covered with bandages and showed that he had suffered severe injuries when they were under attacked by the Mang Yin Mountain.

Zhou Ye waved his hand and sat down in the living room of the city lord estate. His eyes darkened and he said: “Are there any movements from the Mang Yin Mountain?”

“We have been monitoring them during this period of time. However, they retreated back into the Mang Yin Mountain Range ever since they killed the City Lord and did not cause any other commotions.” Cheng Yong quickly replied.

“It seems that bastard, Yang Gui, knows that the Mu Territory will not forgive him that easily. He’s only acting like a coward right now?” Zhou Ye said with a cold expression.

“Master Zhou, Mang Yin Mountain Range is extremely steep and they have tightly guarded some paths that we must pass. If we were to forcibly attack, there will be a lot of casualties.” Chen Yong said.

Mang Yin Mountain Range was quite high in altitude. Even for a Spirit Stage powerhouse like Zhou Ye, it was impossible for him to fly up there. Unless it was a powerhouse, who had ingested a Spiritual Beast’s Soul Essence which possessed a flying ability like Mu Feng, it would be impossible for them to get there. Moreover, this was only limited to its user. It was not realisticly possible to bring that many men up there.

“Moreover, the most troublesome thing isn’t this. The locations near the Mang Yin Mountain Range were infested by the underworld forces within the Northern Spiritual Realm. Aside from the Mang Yin Mountain, there are other underworld forces there. They have a bit of fear towards the Nine Territories. However, if we were to charge in, we would be prompting them to join forces against a common enemy. This way, it would be quite troubling for us.” Cheng Yong sighed and said.

When Mu Chen heard these words, he frowned. It seemed that this

matter wasn't as simple as he thought.

"Aside from Mang Yin Mountain, which underworld forces are the most powerful?" Zhou Ye asked in a solemn voice.

"It's Nine Dragon City. Their strength is only second to Mang Yin Mountain. Moreover, they have quite a lot of power to rally supporters among the underworld forces. If they were willing to help, we would be able to directly cross through the Mang Yin Mountain Range and charge straight into the Mang Yin Mountain's lair." Chen Yong thought for a moment and said.

"Who's the leader of Nine Dragon City?"

"Lei Shan, he is also someone with the strength of a Spirit Stage Initial Phase."

"Lei Shan, huh..." Zhou Ye nodded his head slightly. He had a vague impression of this name as he was a well-known powerhouse within the Northern Spiritual Realm. Back in the days, they had met before. However, they were only acquaintances and Zhou Ye did not have a close relationship with him.

"I'll bring some men to Nine Dragon City tomorrow." Zhou Ye pondered as he spoke. The matter right now was quite troubling. If they were able to get acquainted with Nine Dragon City, it would be much easier to deal with the situation. Otherwise, it would be quite troubling.

Early in the morning of the second day, Zhou Ye brought Mu Chen, Duan Wei and the others towards Nine Dragon City. They did not bring too many troops over. After all, the underworld forces were quite cautious. If they brought too many men over, it may cause Nine Dragon City to be alert of them.

Nine Dragon City was located on the north side of the Mang Yin Mountain Range and it guarded several roads. Merchant teams would have to take the initiative to pay a toll to pass through. And towards these merchants, who knew how to behave, Nine Dragon City would not cause any trouble. Although they were underworld forces, they still wished for peace and wealth. Nobody enjoyed fighting bloody battles.

Zhou Ye and the others headed directly to Nine Dragon City. After two hours, they reached Nine Dragon City. However, what welcomed them was a tightly shut city gate and a few wary gazes from the shadows.

Zhou Ye stared at the tightly closed city gates and frowned. It seemed that Nine Dragon City had expected that the Mu Territory would head over here. Based on its action, were they planning on not helping?

“Friend from Nine Dragon City, could you notify Leader Lei that Mu Territory’s Zhou Ye wishes to meet him?” Zhou Ye sat on his horse and cupped his hands on his mouth as he shouted out. The shout was wrapped by dense Spiritual Energy and emitted out from midair.

“My dad has secluded himself for training. He is unable to meet with guests, so please leave.”

After Zhou Ye shouted, a cold voice sounded out from the top of the city gates. Everybody’s gazes turned towards that location and noticed a vigorous figure emerging. It was a young girl dressed in green clothes. She had a slim figure and her tightly fit clothes highlighted her slender body. Her appearance was originally quite beautiful. However, her short hair made her seem quite valiant. At that moment, she had crossed her arms and stared down from above at Mu Chen and the others with slightly pouted lips.

When Zhou Ye heard this, he let out a faint smile and said: “My apologies. If we cannot meet with Leader Lei today, we would not be able to leave that easily. I hope that this miss would open the city gates.

“You want to charge in forcibly? Then, you’ll have to ask whether I will agree to it!”

The girl lifted her eye brow and let out a grunt. She gripped her slender hand and a Spiritual Seal emerged on her fingertips.

When Mu Chen saw the Spiritual Seal, his eyes were filled with surprise. The girl in front of him was actually a Spiritual Array Master?

Chapter 91: Persuasion

"A Spiritual Array Master?"

When Mu Chen noticed the Spiritual Seals on the girl's slender hands, Zhou Ye also became aware of them. A hint of surprise immediately appeared on his face. He never imagined that there would be a Spiritual Array Master within Nine Dragon City.

But based on her appearance,it seems that this girl was merely an ordinary Rank 1 Spiritual Array Master.

"The people from the Mu Territory should hurry and leave. Otherwise, you shouldn't blame me for being rude." The Spiritual Seals circulated around the girl's slender fingers as she glanced at Zhou Ye and the others.

"Is this how you treat your guests?" Zhou Ye frowned and asked.

"Nine Dragon City is unfamiliar with the Mu Territory. Therefore, you are not considered as guests." The girl lifted the corner of her lips and the Spiritual Seals located at her hand quickly integrated into the air. From that location, a Spiritual Energy fluctuation emitted out and soon, an icy-blue Spiritual Array was formed in mid-air. It emitted a faint chill to the surroundings.

"Since you're refusing to leave, don't blame me for this!" The girl said softly and waved her hand. The chill from within the Spiritual Array suddenly swept out and condensed into many ice spears. Afterwards, they shot off towards Zhou Ye and the others. It brought sounds of wind breaking as well as a freezing chill.

When Zhou Ye noticed this, his eyes sank. However, just when he was about to move, Mu Chen took a step forward. He did not perform any actions, yet the air in front of him suddenly fluctuated. A fiery red Spiritual Array was quickly formed and spewed out flame light pillars. They directly evaporated the numerous spears that were shot over.

"Huh?"

Seeing this, the young girl turned to look at Mu Chen and said with a

surprised voice, “You’re also a Spiritual Array Master?”

“This young lady, we, the Mu Territory, came over here in order to give an opportunity to the Nine Dragon City. With Leader Lei’s positive outlook, I believe that he would not give up on this rare opportunity. Of course, there is a chance that I have overestimated Leader Lei. But if that’s the case, then Nine Dragon City will never be able to have any great achievements.” Mu Chen said in a faint voice as he stared at the beautiful girl.

“You dare say such words about my father?!”

When the girl heard Mu Chen’s words, she lifted her eyebrows. But just when she was about to attack once again in anger, a sudden cry rang out: “Yin’Er, stop!”

When Mu Chen heard this voice, he was stunned. That voice sounded quite familiar.

Just when Mu Chen frowned, a figure appeared next to the young girl. He turned his gaze over and was startled, “Brother Lei Cheng?”

Beside the young girl was a muscular man with bare arms. The appearance of that man was the same person that he met within the Northern Spiritual Field Training, the Leader of the Thunderstorm Team, Lei Cheng.

“Haha, Little Brother Mu Chen, long time no see.” Lei Chen cupped his hands towards Mu Chen and said with a smile.

“Mu Chen?” The girl beside him was stunned when she heard this name. Her beautiful eyes immediately stared at Mu Chen. Within her eyes, there was a hint of curiosity as well as a provocative feeling: “As in the Mu Chen, who obtained the only seeded entry within the Northern Spiritual Academy?”

Lei Cheng smiled and nodded, “Open the city gates.”

“Second Uncle, but…” The young girl quickly spoke.

Lei Cheng shrugged and said, “It’s your father’s decision.”

The young girl mumbled to herself before waving her hand. Moments later, a few individuals slowly opened the heavy city gates. Mu Chen and Zhou Ye exchanged gazes with each other before riding in with their horses.

"Brother Lei Cheng, why are you in Nine Dragon City?" After they entered the city, Mu Chen asked Lei Cheng in confusion.

"Haha, that's because my brother is Nine Dragon City's Leader. Naturally, I will be here as well. However, I often bring others to hunt Spiritual Beasts, that's why I formed an Adventurer's Team." Lei Cheng said as he laughed.

"Oi, you're Mu Chen? I heard that you're a Spiritual Array Master as well? Since when does the Northern Spiritual Academy teach students about Spiritual Arrays?" The young girl asked with a pout as she stared up and down at Mu Chen.

Within her tone, it seemed that she felt quite a bit of anger towards the Northern Spiritual Academy. This made Mu Chen a bit suspicious.

"Ohoho, this is my brother's daughter, Lei Yin. This girl is extremely fond of Spiritual Arrays and possesses quite the talent in them. However, Nine Dragon City has no way to invite experienced Spiritual Array Masters over to teach her. She has studied it over the years by herself and has a bit of an achievement. She could barely be considered as a Rank 1 Spiritual Array Master." Lei Cheng said as he introduced the young girl.

When he heard this, Mu Chen stared in surprise at the young girl. She actually relied on herself and became a Rank 1 Spiritual Array Master. It seemed that she's quite talented in that aspect.

"Although she's talented in Spiritual Array Cultivation, her Spiritual Aura Cultivation isn't as good. She originally wanted to go to the Northern Spiritual Academy, but she did not reach the requirements."

"Uh..." Mu Chen stared at the girl whose eyes were filled with resentment. He finally knew why the girl had so much hatred towards the Northern Spiritual Academy.

“Did you guys come because of the matter regarding Mang Yin Mountain?” Lei Chen looked at Mu Chen and Zhou Ye as he spoke.

Zhou Ye nodded and said: “I hope that you can take the trouble and allow us to meet with Leader Lei.”

“About this matter, big brother said that we should not intervene. However, since you’ve already come and based on the fact that Mu Chen had once helped me, I’ll bring you over. As for whether or not you can convince my brother, that will depend on you.” Lei Cheng said helplessly.

“Thank you, Brother Lei Cheng.” Mu Chen smiled and said.

Lei Cheng smiled and led the way. The girl called Lei Yin stared at Mu Chen a few times before pouting her lips and following them.

Mu Chen and Zhou Ye both followed Lei Cheng and entered Nine Dragon City. Along the way, they met many men, who were sweating madly as they trained. The aura coming from them was not weak. Moreover, their bodies had the faint smell of blood. It was evident that they weren’t people that could be easily dealt with. Nine Dragon City was definitely quite powerful.

The two of them followed Mu Chen and headed straight towards the main stronghold. At that location, a burly middle-aged man, who looked quite similar to Lei Cheng, was sitting on the seat in front. His sharp eyes stared at Mu Chen and Zhou Ye as they entered.

It was obvious that this person was the Leader of Nine Dragon City, Lei Shan. He is also a powerful figure only second to Yang Gui among the Northern Spiritual Realm’s underworld forces.

“Friend from the Mu Territory, I already know the reason why you’ve came.” Lei Shan stared at Zhou Ye and Mu Chen as he said in a faint voice: “However, this is a grudge between your Mu Territory and Mang Yin Mountain. We, Nine Dragon City, will not participate in it.”

When Zhou Ye heard this, his heart sank. As expected, Nine Dragon City did not want to help. But just when he was about to speak, a faint voice came from beside him, “Uncle Zhou, leave this to me.”

Zhou Ye was stunned as he glanced at Mu Chen. He saw the serious expression on the boy's face and hesitated for a moment before nodding his head.

"Leader Lei, I have heard a long time ago the story how your created this Nine Dragon City. Within the Northern Spiritual Realm's underworld forces, you are considered to be a well-known figure. However, from what I've seen today, you have disappointed me." Seeing Zhou Ye nod his head, Mu Chen took a step forward and said this with a faint smile.

Lei Shan's sharp eyes stared directly at Mu Chen. However, he waved his hand in order to prevent his men from attacking due to frustration. He said in a faint voice: "If you want to provoke me to act, then you're still too inexperienced."

"I wonder if Leader Lei has the ambition to make it so that Nine Dragon City becomes the leader of the underworld forces within the Northern Spiritual Realm?" Mu Chen said slowly.

Lei Shan's eyes narrowed. However, he still did not speak.

"Among the underworld forces right now, Mang Yin Mountain's strength has been growing. They have gradually started to expand and conquered a few underworld forces. Currently, they are considered to be the strongest force within the underworld. About this point, I believe that Leader Lei should agree to it?"

Lei Shan nodded indifferently.

"Since Mang Yin Mountain has expanded their forces this rapidly, it should be easy to see their ambition. And from now on, with the Liu Territory helping them secretly, I believe that their ambitions will not stop here. Perhaps in the nearby future, Mang Yin Mountain will integrate all the underworld forces within the Northern Spiritual Realm into their group. When that happens, Nine Dragon City will only have two paths to choose. One is to be conquered by them and become a part of Mang Yin Mountain. The second is to resist. However, it is evident that Nine Dragon City is currently not Mang Yin Mountain's opponent."

Lei Shan's calm face gradually revealed a few changes. Shortly after, he

said, “These are just your speculations.”

“Yes, they are indeed just speculations. But what if it’s true? Is Leader Lei willing to use the futures of all the lives within Nine Dragon City and gamble that Mang Yin Mountain will not do it? To be honest, you should understand them better than me.” Mu Chen smiled. Before he came over here, he had carefully analysed the situation among the underworld forces within the Northern Spiritual Realm as well as how Mang Yin Mountain acts.

Within the main stronghold, Nine Dragon City’s executives looked at each other. Their eyes had become a little serious. It was evident that Mu Chen’s words had made them secretly feel uneasy. After all, they truly understood Mang Yin Mountain. If they were to obtain support from the Liu Territory, they might really have this ambition.

Moreover, in the Northern Spiritual Realm’s underworld forces, the only one that could oppose Mang Yin Mountain was their Nine Dragon City. Therefore, if Mang Yin Mountain wanted to integrate all the underworld forces within the Northern Spiritual Realm, they must attack Nine Dragon City.

Zhou Ye could feel the changes occurring within the Nine Dragon City’s executives. A hint of delight flashed through his eyes and he quietly gave a thumbs up to Mu Chen. He never expected that this little guy would be so clever with his words as well as having such keen insight. He specifically pointed out the weak point within Nine Dragon City.

“Then, what do you want to do?” Lei Shan frowned. He had finally loosened up his tone a little bit.

“We, the Mu Territory, originally did not plan on caring about the affairs of the Northern Spiritual Realm’s underworld forces. However, since Mang Yin Mountain took the initiative to provoke us, the Mu Territory will never forgive them. Therefore, this is also a chance for Nine Dragon City. If we were to join forces, it is enough to completely eradicate Mang Yin Mountain. When that happens, Nine Dragon City will become the strongest underworld force in the Northern Spiritual Realm. Moreover,

you will have space to expand once again." Mu Chen said without any hesitation.

"Then, won't my Nine Dragon City offend the Liu Territory? The Liu Territory is the strongest force within the Northern Spiritual Realm. It is not a wise idea to offend them because of the Mu Territory." Lei Shan said slowly.

"However, you do not have a choice. The Liu Territory dislikes you and they directly chose to support the Mang Yin Mountain. Right now, it is not about the issue of offending the Liu Territory. Instead, it is the Liu Territory wanting to help Mang Yin Mountain to get rid of you as a stepping stone." Mu Chen said sincerely as he loosened his hands. "They have already decided to eliminate you. Isn't it stupid for you to worry about offending them?"

Lei Shan's face had turned increasingly ugly. Mu Chen's words had hurt his pride.

"Right now, this is the only chance for you. If the Mu Territory fails to get rid of Mang Yin Mountain, we can only leave. However, when that happens, the one that will be in trouble will be Nine Dragon City."

Mu Chen smiled. His eyes gradually turning cold: "Thus, if Leader Lei is far-sighted, he should not worry about those rules and directly join forces with us to eradicate Mang Ying Mountain!"

"Not only will this allow you to get rid of a potential crisis, it will give you a great opportunity!"

"Leader Lei, what do you think!?" Mu Chen's final words finally began to fade away.

Within the main stronghold, the atmosphere had become tense. All the Nine Dragon City's executives, Lei Cheng, Lei Yin and the others were all staring at Lei Shan, whose face was changing. His next decision would determine the future fate of the Nine Dragon City.

Time slowly passed by. Mu Chen had also gradually turned tense. Although he said everything that he should say, if it could not dispel Lei

Shan's concerns, then it couldn't be helped. He could only think of another plan to deal with Mang Yin Mountain.

Among the tense silence, Lei Shan finally let out his breath. He then lifted his head, staring sharply at the nervous Mu Chen as he slowly nodded his head.

"Fine. We, the Nine Dragon City, will cooperate with you and eliminate Mang Yin Mountain!"

Chapter 92: Teaming Up

The tense atmosphere inside the main stronghold was instantly broken due to Lei Shan's sentence. Not only did delight fill Zhou Ye's eyes, even Nine Dragon City's executives were secretly relieved. They, too, were actually tangled between the gains and losses. However, since Lei Shan had made a decision, they would have a pillar of support behind the decision.

"Haha, Leader Lei, may we have a pleasant cooperation." Zhou Ye cupped his hands as he smiled towards Lei Shan.

Lei Shan also stood up. His gaze looked at Mu Chen for a while and he said: "Back in the days, I've met Mu Feng a few times, even I would have to admit that I admire how he treats others. However, I never expected that his son would be even more amazing than him."

"Leader Lei, that's too much flattery. I only spoke the truth." Mu Chen secretly loosened up the tense feeling he had and smiled.

"What you said was certainly true. Mang Yin Mountain has become more and more arrogant and they caused many troubles to our Nine Dragon City. In the past, I did not want to cause anymore issues, so I endured it. But based on the situation now, it seems that I will only destroy many brothers' futures and lives if I continue to endure."

A hint of murderous intent flashed through Lei Shan's eyes. He said: "Since he, Yang Gui, isn't planning on letting my Nine Dragon City go, then I, Lei Shan, won't let him do as he pleases!"

Zhou Ye nodded and said: "We, the Mu Territory's men, will attack Mang Yin Mountain tomorrow. As for the other underworld forces within the Mang Yin Mountain Range, I must trouble Leader Lei to inform them. Our main goal is Mang Yin Mountain. We will not attack any other underworld forces."

"Relax. With the reputation of my Nine Dragon City, the brothers that we will meet on the path will certainly give way. I believe that they won't say anything about it." Lei Shan waved his hand and said in a deep voice.

“Leader Lei. You should know that we would have to eliminate them from their roots. Since we have decided to attack Mang Yin Mountain, we must not give them any opportunities. Therefore, I hope that the Nine Dragon City will give us their full support, so that we can eradicate all future troubles.” Mu Chen said softly.

“Heh. You’re still so young, yet you’re more ruthless than us.” Lei Shan smirked for a moment. He stared strangely at Mu Chen. A hint of admiration filled his eyes. As someone from the underworld, it was quite pleasing to see such ruthlessness.

“Yang Gui killed one of my seniors. If I do not get revenge, I will be worse than a woman.” Mu Chen shook his head and said.

“Oi, so what if it’s a woman? Are you looking down on women?!” Just as Mu Chen’s voice faded away, a shout sounded out beside him. He noticed that Lei Yin was glaring angrily at him with her beautiful eyes.

Lei Shan laughed awkwardly.

“Haha. My family’s Yin’Er isn’t in any way inferior to males. Mu Chen, you should not offend her. She is the person who understands Mang Yin Mountain Range the most. Therefore, if she were to guide you around Mang Yin Mountain, you will be able to bypass their defensive fortresses and head straight to their lair.” Lei Shan smiled and said.

Mu Chen was surprised. He immediately cupped his hands towards Lei Yin and said with a smile: “I was wrong in what I said. I will have to bother Miss Lei Yin for this matter.”

“Although I hate the individuals from the Northern Spiritual Academy, this matter is extremely important to my Nine Dragon City as well. Naturally, I will help.” Lei Yin batted an eye towards Mu Chen and said: “Additionally, I’ve heard that you’re a Spiritual Array Master? Then, let’s see who is more amazing in that aspect tomorrow.”

Mu Chen smiled. Although Lei Yin was a girl, her competitiveness was not weaker than that of any male. It’s no wonder that she would bear a grudge towards the Northern Spiritual Academy.

“Then, we’ll wait for Nine Dragon City’s good news tomorrow. We’ll head back and prepare our troops in order to attack Mang Yin Mountain tomorrow!” Zhou Ye directed a smile towards Lei Shan as he turned around and brought Mu Chen away.

Lei Shan stared at the two figures far away and smacked his lips.

“Leader, are we really going to cooperate with the Mu Territory in order to deal with Mang Yin Mountain? If this was known to the others, wouldn’t the other underworld forces believe that we did not follow the rules?” A Nine Dragon City executive asked in a low voice.

“What Mu Chen said previously was correct. If we were to care about the rules now, our Nine Dragon City will probably have no path of survival...” Lei Shan sighed and said: “Mang Yin Mountain has cooperated with the Liu Territory secretly. We must prevent their sinister ambition.”

“Send down an order. Let all of our brothers begin their preparations. We have endured it all these years. It seems that not many individuals still remember how we built the Nine Dragon City back then.”

Lei Shan waved his hand and a hint of coldness passed through his eyes: “Since Yang Gui wants to eliminate us, we will do a pre-emptive attack and destroy them!”

The following day, inside Xiong City, Zhou Ye and the others had already finished their preparations. With a cold cry, large amounts of troops surged out of the city like a torrent. They brought out a murderous aura as they charged towards Mang Yin Mountain Range.

Before entering Mang Yin Mountain Range, Mu Chen had met with Nine Dragon City’s troops that came to assist them. Among them, Lei Yin was the leader while Lei Cheng and a few other experts from Nine Dragon City followed.

“We will head to Mang Yin Mountain from the east side. The other troops from Nine Dragon City will circle around and enter Mang Yin Mountain from the west side. When it is time, we will form an encirclement and cut off all escape routes for Mang Yin Mountain.” Lei Yin looked at Zhou Ye and Mu Chen as she spoke.

“We’ll have to trouble Miss Lei Yin then.” Mu Chen cupped his hands and said.

“Let’s go.”

Lei Yin didn’t bother to say anymore words and waved her petite hands. Then, she rode a horse and charged into the center of the Mang Yin Mountain Range. The hooves of their horses were wrapped in thick cloth. Thus, it would not cause much commotion even if they were a large force.

With Lei Yin, who was quite familiar with the terrain, leading the large forces towards the center of the mountain range, the journey was quite smooth. They were not blocked by any underworld forces as they headed over. It seemed that Nine Dragon City had already opened the path up.

In just an hour, their large force had already gotten close to Mang Yin Mountain. Mu Chen stared at the towering mountain peak and could feel a killing intent emitting from it. It was evident that Mang Yin Mountain’s main camp was not a peaceful place.

“There are only a handful of paths that lead towards Mang Yin Mountain. However, all of these paths are heavily guarded nowadays. If you want to breakthrough forcibly, there will be quite the amount of injuries. Therefore, I will bring you to another path so that you can perform a sudden attack and completely eradicate one of their strongholds. Afterwards, we will be able to surround their lair.” Lei Yin pointed at the steep Mang Yin Mountain and said.

Mu Chen exchanged gazes with Zhou Ye and nodded their heads.

Lei Yin waved her hands. She gave up on her horse and rushed valiantly into Mang Yin Mountain. Behind her, numerous figures silently charged and followed her tightly.

This Mang Yin Mountain was extremely steep. Fortunately, the troops that came were all elites from the Mu Territory. Every one of them had excellent skills and could keep up with Lei Yin’s pace. They passed through a trial at the edge of the cliff and secretly sneaked into Mang Yin Mountain.

At one of Mang Yin Mountain's strongholds, numerous figures were scanning the area vigilantly. A man, who seemed to be a captain, would constantly scold them in a low voice, causing them to keep their eyes open.

Swish!

But at this moment, numerous arrows were shot off fiercely from the forest. Every single arrow was accurate and pierced the throats.

"Enemy attack!"

This sudden attack instantly plunged the stronghold into chaos. But before they could sound the alarm, numerous figures had already charged out from the forest like death gods.

Faced with the sudden enemy, the stronghold's defenses were all ineffective. In a few minutes, the stronghold was thoroughly cleaned.

These figures swiftly opened the stronghold's gates. Then, they turned around and quickly vanished.

Similar incidents also occurred in many other strongholds at the same time. Within half an hour, Mang Yin Mountain's strongholds were all completely destroyed.

In a location near the peak, Mu Chen and the others had quietly reunited with Nine Dragon City's troops. Lei Shan stared at the mountain peak sharply. At that location, an enormous fortress was there. That place was Mang Yin Mountain's lair.

"Let's do it. Next up will be the true battle. In all of their strongholds we destroyed, there weren't many experts. It seems that all of them have gathered inside their lair. That Yang Gui is quite cunning." Lei Shan said in a deep voice.

Mu Chen and Zhou Ye also nodded. Within their eyes, a murderous intent arose...

Mang Yin Fortress. This fortress seemed extremely mighty. Its exterior was made of steel and it looked like a metal fortress. On the fortress, lots

of people were patrolling back and forth vigilantly.

"Boom!"

All of a sudden, a matchless and vigorous Spiritual Energy soared into the sky and directly formed a palm. It smashed heavily on the steel gates and caused the entire fortress to tremble violently.

"Enemy attack!"

A sharp sound suddenly destroyed the silence at the mountain peak. It caused the stronghold to enter a state of chaos. Numerous figures flashed and appeared on the fortress. They immediately casted their sights out and could not help but suck in a cold breath.

At this moment, they noticed a torrent of troops charging over from outside of their fortress and completely surrounding the fortress. An amazing killing intent filled the sky.

"Damn it, why did we only discover the enemies now? What happened to our strongholds?!" A few people that noticed this formation screamed suddenly.

"Don't panic. Hurry and inform the boss!"

"Everyone, remain alert!"

Zhou Ye looked at the chaos within Mang Yin Mountain and shouted out angrily. A thunderous sound resounded out: "Yang Gui, hurry and scram out here. You've killed our Mu Territory's men. Right now, it's time for you to pay your debt!"

Zhou Ye's shout echoed throughout the peak. The faces of the troops in Mang Yin Mountain changed. So it was the Mu Territory. However, how could they come over here so fast?

"Haha, Zhou Ye. I've waited for you for a long time now. So what if you're the Mu Territory? You think that I'm afraid of you?!"

Just as Zhou Ye's shout faded away, a sneer filled with hostility rang out. Then, a light flashed out and appeared above the fortress.

The light scattered away and revealed a skinny man. His eyes were sunk

in and he looked extremely wicked. His thin lips let out a provocative arc as he sneered at Zhou Ye.

Mu Chen stared coldly at the figure in midair. This person was the number one individual among the Northern Spiritual Realm's underworld forces. The boss of Mang Yin Mountain and also the killer of Chen Xiong, Yang Gui?

Yang Gui's eyes looked fiercely at the troops that surrounded his liar. However, he did not show the slightest fear and, instead, grinned. "Where's Lei Shan? Stop hiding around when you are already here. How gutless."

Seeing Yang Gui's fearless expression, Mu Chen's eyes narrowed. It seems that he had expected them to go to find Nine Dragon City for help.

"Haha, Yang Gui. It seems that your nose is still quite sensitive like a dog." A big laugh sounded out from behind. At this moment, Lei Shan slowly walked out and stared at Yang Gui coldly.

"Lei Shan, you're quite courageous. I haven't even caused any trouble for you, yet you dare to come here? It seems that you're planning to start a war against my Mang Yin Mountain?" Yang Gui directed a wicked smile towards Lei Shan and said.

"Stop acting in front of me. If I do not attack you today, you would have probably attacked me tomorrow." Lei Shan curled his lips and said.

"Haha, it seems that you're not stupid." Yang Gui grinned. He actually did not have any traces of hiding it as he said: "However, that's good. Since you've came here on your own accord today, it will save me the trouble."

He tilted his head as he stared coldly at Zhou Ye and Lei Shan. "However, you fools, did you think that I'm afraid of your revenge when I dared to attack the Mu Territory?"

After his voice faded away, Yang Gui looked towards the inside of his fortress and smiled: "Friends from the Liu Territory, you should come out now."

Swish!

As the last word was said, a powerful Spiritual Energy suddenly surged out from within the fortress. A light figure also emerged next to Yang Gui. Then, as the light dispersed, a familiar figure was revealed. That appearance, it was the Second Master of the Liu Territory, Liu Zong!

Liu Zong directed a smile towards Zhou Ye. His cold eyes also glanced at Mu Chen beside him as he cupped his hands gently. Then, a cold voice echoed throughout the mountain peak.

“Zhou Ye. My Liu Territory is here. We’ve been waiting a long time for you.”

Chapter 93: Bloody Battle

"Liu Zong?!"

Zhou Ye and Lei Shan looked at the figure that appeared beside Yang Gui. Both their expressions immediately became serious. It seems that the affair today wouldn't be settled that easily.

"So the one backing up Mang Yin Mountain really is you, the Liu Territory!" Zhou Ye's face became dark as killing intent surged within his eyes: "Then, was it also the Liu Territory's instruction which caused the sudden attack on our Mu Territory?"

"Ohoho, we noticed that the Mu Territory acted too proud recently and wanted to suppress it a bit. However, who would have thought that Brother Yang Gui would attack that severely and kill people." Liu Zong smiled faintly as he spoke.

Zhou Ye's eyes darkened and a crunching sound came out from his clenched fists.

"Since you've all come today, I think that there's no need for you to leave here. Zhou Ye, you're considered the right-hand man of Mu Feng. If you were to be killed at this location, the Mu Territory would suffer greatly from it." Liu Zong pretended that he did not see Zhou Ye's dark expression and waved his hands. Then, a sound of wind breaking could be heard from within the fortress. Afterwards, a group of men appeared on the fortress walls. The one leading them was the Third Master of the Liu Territory, Liu Ming.

It seemed that Liu Zong had brought many elite troops over to Mang Yin Mountain this time and had waited for the appearance of the Mu Territory.

"Leader Lei, prepare to attack!"

Zhou Ye said in a low tone. Although the situation was out of his expectations, it was clear that there was no way of retreating. They could only fight to the bitter end against Mang Yin Mountain and the Liu

Territory.

And regarding this point, Lei Shan also understood this. The Liu Territory had already made it clear that they were cooperating with Mang Yin Mountain. If they failed to get rid of Mang Yin Mountain today, then Nine Dragon City would be eliminated by them in the future.

“Attack!”

A chill flashed through Lei Shan’s eyes. He immediately waved his hand and cried out with killing intent.

“Leave Liu Zong to me.” A powerful Spiritual Energy erupted out from Zhou Ye’s body. His eyes remained fixed on Liu Zong. The latter was a Spirit Stage Middle Phase powerhouse and was extremely powerful. Even Zhou Ye could only barely stall for time against him.

Lei Shan nodded. Both sides had 2 Spirit Stage powerhouses. However, it seems that the opponent had a slight advantage over them. It seems that it would probably be a bloody battle today.

“Liu Zong, get the f*ck over here!”

Zhou Ye took a step forward and powerful Spiritual Energy began to gather behind him. It vaguely turned into a light brown rhino and a heavy feeling was emitting out. At the same time, the ground he was standing on collapsed.

“Zhou Ye. Do you really believe that you’re my opponent?!”

Liu Zong let out a sneer. A dense Spiritual Energy also gathered behind him and formed into a jaded green scorpion. The scorpion’s jaded green tail was flashing as a bloody smell emitted out from it.

“Dong!”

However, Zhou Ye did not care about it and his body rushed out like lightning. The giant rhino behind him also became lively and caused the entire ground to tremble. This terrifying power was quite amazing.

Swish!

Liu Zong let out a cold hmph before his body rushed out. He waved his

hand and the tail of the jaded green scorpion behind him fiercely stabbed towards Zhou Ye.

The two types of dense Spiritual Energy collided with each other. This shockwave immediately brought out a gale and caused the nearby forest to tremble.

"Kill!"

Seeing that Zhou Ye took action, Lei Shan also let out a shout. Spiritual Energy gathered behind his back and formed into a golden armored beast. The armored beast was like a giant mouse and its entire body was covered with golden scales. It seemed like a layer of armor, dazzling and strong.

When Mu Chen saw the golden armored beast, he immediately recognized it. Golden Armadillo. Ranked 168th on the Myriad Beast Record's Earth Rankings. It was said that it possesses the strength to pierce through a mountain.

"Haha, Lei Shan. We haven't fought in so many years, let me see how much you've improved!" Seeing this, Yang Gui let out a big laugh. Dense Spiritual Energy surged out and formed in a giant dog with a crescent moon imprint behind him.

Silvermoon Canine. Ranked 177th on the Myriad Beast Record's Earth Rankings. It had an extremely powerful sense of smell and no movement could escape its sense of smell within a radius of a hundred miles.

Lei Shan and Yang Gui also dashed out. The two of them also collided against each other heavily. Their fight was actually extremely violent and emitted out waves of Spiritual Energy shockwaves as it shaved off layers from the ground.

"Kill!"

Since the leaders on both sides had already attacked, there was no need for the troops to have any inhibitions. The troops screamed out loud with red eyes and charged towards the fortress like a flood.

Boom Boom Boom!

A violent Spiritual Energy exploded out endlessly from above the peak. If you were to look above, it was extremely colorful and dazzling. However, beneath the dazzling sight raged a truly bloody battle.

Mu Chen also rushed into the crowd. His movements were like a ghost and a golden light would flash between his two fingers. They were like a sharp golden spear, which would cause blood to splash out every time it broke the winds. Sounds of screams accompanied it.

It was evident that Mu Chen, who had activated the Shadowspirit Step and Spirit King Finger, possessed an extreme killing ability.

“Bastard, you’re seeking death!”

However, just when nobody could stop Mu Chen’s rampage, a violent cry rang out beside his ears. Then, a powerful fist of wind swept over towards Mu Chen. The trembles even caused the earth to crack up.

“Liu Ming?”

Mu Chen looked up at the figure rushing over here and let out a sneer. During the Northern Spiritual Field Training, it was hard for him to resist against Liu Ming. However, that wasn’t the case right now.

Against Liu Ming’s fierce offensive, Mu Chen did not dodge and instead changed his fingers to a fist. Two Limitless Death Seals emerged on the surface of his fist as he punched out. An overbearing wind erupted out from his fist.

Boom!

The two fists collided with each other and caused waves of air to emit out. A dozen or so individuals nearby were directly blasted back forcibly and spat out blood.

When the blast erupted out, Mu Chen’s body trembled and retreated a few steps backwards. As for Liu Ming, who had rushed over, tumbled in midair and landed on the ground. His face was extremely dark.

“Asshole, you’ve truly become powerful!” Liu Ming gnashed his teeth as he spoke. Originally, he never cared about Mu Chen. However, as they

fought again today, he realized that Mu Chen was in no way inferior to him.

"It's just that you're too weak." Mu Chen said with a cold smile.

"I, the Third Master, will tear you to pieces today!" Liu Ming angrily laughed. He pushed the Spiritual Energy inside his body to the extreme. Then, he rushed over towards Mu Chen like a lightning. The winds coming from his clawing attacks were extremely fierce.

Seeing this, Mu Chen immediately used the Shadowspirit Step and retreated backwards like a ghost. He waved his sleeves and the air fluctuated. A tiny Spiritual Array emerged out and Spiritual Energy chains made of light wrapped around Liu Ming's body.

With his current ability, it was a simple act to arrange a tiny Spiritual Array.

Bang Bang.

However, this tiny Spiritual Array was not much of an obstacle to someone with Liu Ming's strength. The Spiritual Energy rushed out from his body and directly destroyed all the chains around him. He said in a mocking voice: "I had heard that you're a Spiritual Array Master. How come you only know to use these measly things?"

"Then, I'll give you something big!"

Mu Chen's eyes turned cold. A dozen Spiritual Seals quickly emerged on his palm.

"Hmph."

Seeing this, Liu Ming's heart jumped. He did not dare to be careless and charged out.

Although the Spiritual Arrays formed by a Spiritual Array Master were extremely powerful, they required a period of time to prepare. As long as they were able to get up close, a Spiritual Array Master could not resist against them.

"Swish Swish."

However, Mu Chen saw through his thoughts. He immediately activated Shadowspirit Step to the limits and caused many illusionary shadows to appear. It actually made Liu Ming unable to know where his true body was located at.

"Boy, do you only know how to hide?!" Liu Ming shouted out in rage. Mu Chen's movements were too elegant. It was evident that Mu Chen had trained in a rather extraordinary Movement Spiritual Art. Although he pushed his Spiritual Energy to the limits, he still failed to catch Mu Chen.

"Swish."

Just when he shouted, Mu Chen's body suddenly stopped moving. However, Liu Ming did not have the time to rejoice, instead, the color of his face changed when he noticed the violent fluctuations behind Mu Chen. A massive fiery red Spiritual Array emerged slowly and emitted out a violent Spiritual Energy.

"Damn it! How could he arrange a Spiritual Array this quickly?!"

Liu Ming's face twitched. It wasn't that he hadn't fought against a Spiritual Array Master before. However, it was the first time that he saw a Spiritual Array Master, who could arrange a powerful Spiritual Array at such a high speed.

"Devouring Tigerblaze Spiritual Array!"

Mu Chen did not allow Liu Ming to remain shocked for a long period of time. He stared coldly at the latter and the hand seals immediately changed. A tiger's roar erupted out from within the fiery red Spiritual Array and then, a flame tiger containing a violent and burning Spiritual Energy directly rushed towards Liu Ming.

"Ghastly Netherworld Hands!"

Feeling the violent pressure coming from the flame tiger, Liu Ming did not hesitate and hurriedly pushed his Spiritual Energy to the extreme. With a loud shout, his hand smacked out and the Spiritual Energy formed into a light which gathered around his palm. Afterwards, the light covered palm collided fiercely against the flame tiger.

Bang!

The violent Spiritual Energy erupted out and shattered the gravel on the ground into powder.

Swish!

Swish!

But just when Liu Ming used all his strength to resist against the violent flame tiger, a vague shadow suddenly rushed in from the side. Two of its fingers were straightened out. The fingertips were flashing a dazzling golden light as it mercilessly headed straight towards his throat.

This offensive was quite clinical. As he was caught off guard, Liu Ming could only smack it away with the back of his hand.

Chi!

The golden lights were sharp like a spear. As it touched Liu Ming's palm its sharpness erupted out. Then, it actually stabbed right through the center of Liu Ming's palm and caused blood to sputter out.

Ah!

Liu Ming issued out a scream immediately. His body flew back awkwardly and he held onto his bloody palm with an astounded expression.

Mu Chen looked coldly at Liu Ming. However, he did not give him time to recover and rushed over once again.

"Stop him!" Seeing this, Liu Ming quickly shouted out.

The Liu Territory's men nearby immediately charged towards Mu Chen when they heard the cry. However, they were quickly stopped by the Mu Territory's men.

The current situation was quite chaotic. Mu Chen glanced at Liu Ming, who was retreating quickly. However, he did not show any signs of chasing after him. Instead, he retreated back to the center of the Mu Territory's and Nine Dragon City's men. He frowned as he stared at the two battles in midair.

Lei Shan and Yang Gui were both Spirit Stage Initial Phase powerhouses. It would be hard to determine the victory without a period of time. However, Liu Zong was at the Spirit Stage Middle Phase. He was stronger than Zhou Ye. Therefore, Zhou Ye would be the first one to topple down if they continued to draw out the battle.

Once Zhou Ye was defeated, it would immediately lead to a chain reaction. Moreover, once it affected Lei Shan, the Spirit Stage powerhouses on their side would be defeated. It would be useless no matter how much of an advantage they obtained down here.

Therefore, they must think of a way to defeat the other's Spirit Stage powerhouses.

Mu Chen's eyes flashed. He immediately tilted his head and looked at Lei Yin and the others beside him: "Can you protect me for a while?"

"What are you planning to do?" Lei Yin's beautiful face was quite unnatural. She had just seen how Mu Chen had dealt with Liu Ming using a Spiritual Array. This speed of arranging a Spiritual Array was not something she could compare with.

"I want to help your father kill Yang Gui." Mu Chen said in a deep voice.

Lei Yin was surprised. She stared strangely at Mu Chen and said: "They are both Spirit Stage powerhouses. If you want to pose a threat to them, you must use a Rank 2 Spiritual Array. Aren't you currently only a Rank 1 Spiritual Array?

"I'll try it out."

Mu Chen took a deep breath. His hand gripped tightly and a Jaded Essence Fruit emerged within his hands. This was the final one remaining. With his current Spiritual Energy, he would need a bit of external support in order to condense 20 Spiritual Seals.

He did not hesitate and shoved the Jaded Essence Fruit into his mouth. Then, under Lei Yin's eyes of amazement, he closed his eyes tightly. Shortly after, she was stunned as she noticed Spiritual Seals emerging out from Mu Chen's fingertips.

The amount was a total of 20 Spiritual Seals!

Chapter 94: Nine Heavenly Lightning Spiritual Array

20 Spiritual Seals?

Lei Yin was slightly shocked as she watched the Spiritual Seals that were being condensed out of Mu Chen's fingertips. A hint of complexity filled her eyes. This amount of Spiritual Seals almost reached the pinnacle of a Rank 1 Spiritual Array Master. She had always believed that she had a high talent in Spiritual Array Cultivation, however, it seemed that she was quite far behind in talent when compared to Mu Chen.

Mu Chen did not care about Lei Yin's feelings. At this moment, he was fully preoccupied on condensing the Spiritual Seals. After he carefully condensed out 20 Spiritual Seals, he flicked his fingers and the 20 Spiritual Seals integrated into the air in front of him.

Chi Chi.

Numerous complex Spiritual Energy light beams erupted out when the Spiritual Seals were integrated into the air. They formed an extremely complicated Diagram Array. Moreover, Mu Chen had shut off all interference from the outside world and had entered the Heart Array State once again. He controlled the Spiritual Energy light beams and attempted to complete the complex connections.

At this moment, he was attempting to arrange the strongest Diagram Array that he had obtained from Wen Ling. It was the "Nine Heavenly Lightning Spiritual Array" whose power could rival quite a few Rank 2 Spiritual Arrays. At present, he would have to strain himself in order to arrange this sort of Spiritual Array even with the help of the Heart Array State. However, the situation right now will not permit him to think about that.

Whether or not the Spiritual Array would fail, he had to attempt it.

Mu Chen concentrated and his slender hands constantly changed forms. His ten fingers shuttled back and forth like a butterfly. They drew

countless trajectories as cold sweat emerged on his forehead.

Seeing Mu Chen's appearance like this, Lei Yin's eyes became serious. It seemed that Mu Chen was not absolutely certain on whether he could arrange this Spiritual Array. Right now, he must not be disturbed. Otherwise, he would suffer a severe injury if the Spiritual Array backfires.

At the mountain peak, the troops from both sides rushed against each other. Numerous Spiritual Energies erupted out and sounds of fighting rang out.

As time passed, the cold sweat on Mu Chen's forehead began to increase. His handsome face was extremely serious right now. However, it made Lei Yin let out a sigh of relief. The strange fluctuation in the air in front of Mu Chen did not show any signs of disorder. It seemed that everything was under Mu Chen's control.

"Buzz."

As Lei Yin relaxed, the air in front of Mu Chen suddenly let out a violent buzzing sound. At that location, the air seemed to fluctuate like boiling water. Then, dazzling silver lights began to emerge from the fluctuations.

These silver lights slowly began to gather and vaguely formed into a light array that was dozens of meters tall. From the light array, deep sounds of rumbling were emitted out while lightning flashed.

This array that appeared suddenly shocked everyone at the mountain peak. They quickly turned their gaze over and stared in astonishment at this complex silver Spiritual Array.

"What a powerful Spiritual Energy!"

The men from both sides stared at the dazzling lightning Spiritual Array. Then, they felt the surging Spiritual Energy from within it and their faces immediately changed. This level of Spiritual Energy was almost comparable to a Spirit Stage powerhouse!

"Stop him, he's arranging a Spiritual Array!"

When Liu Ming, who was wounded by Mu Chen earlier, noticed this

scene, his eyes instantly narrowed and he quickly shouted.

From the surging Spiritual Energy fluctuations, it was evident that Mu Chen was arranging an extremely powerful Spiritual Array. If he successfully arranges this array, even a Spirit Stage powerhouse would suffer from this great threat.

Hearing Liu Ming's shout, the elite troops from the Liu Territory immediately rushed forward towards Mu Chen. However, there were many men from the Mu Territory and Nine Dragon City nearby protecting him. They were unable to charge forward quickly.

"Hmph!"

Seeing this, Liu Ming grunted and lunged forward. He pushed his Spiritual Energy to the limits and tore a crack through the defensive lines. Currently, all the experts were mutually restraining each other. Among the ones protecting Mu Chen all weren't powerful experts so it wasn't easy for them to stop Liu Ming.

"Stop right there!"

As she noticed Liu Ming charging over, Lei Yin immediately frowned. Spiritual Seals emerged from her fingers and were fired out swiftly. The air in front of her fluctuated and formed into a icy-blue Spiritual Array that exuded a freezing chill.

"Frozen Serpent Spiritual Array!"

Hiss!

A chill expanded out from within the icy-blue Spiritual Array. Then, several enormous ice serpents surged out and tangled around Liu Ming.

"It's another Spiritual Array Master?!" Seeing this scene, Liu Ming's face changed. However, he quickly noticed that the Spiritual Array formed by the girl in front of him wasn't as powerful as Mu Chen's.

When he became aware of the situation, a cold light flashed through Liu Ming's eyes. He clenched his fists tightly and dense Spiritual Energy exploded out. His fists whistled through the air and crushed the ice

serpents that tangled him into pieces.

Lei Yin's face turned slightly white. However, she gritted her teeth and urged the Spiritual Energy within her body in order to arrange another Spiritual Array. She used all his strength to prevent Liu Ming from approaching closer.

Bang Bang Bang!

Due her attempts to stop him, Liu Ming was slowed. However, he still managed to rush over and appeared in a location near Lei Yin in a couple of minutes.

"Damn brat, go to hell!"

Liu Ming's eyes were dark. His clawing attacks were like lightning and brought out fierce winds. He attempted to grab onto Lei Yin's snowy white neck mercilessly as if he wanted to destroy a beautiful thing through ruthless means.

Seeing the grim Liu Ming rush over, Lei Yin's face became a lot paler. However, she stubbornly fought back her fear and refused to retreat. She immediately circulated the Spiritual Energy within her body in order to struggle recklessly against Liu Ming.

"Die!"

Liu Ming immediately laughed wickedly when he noticed that Lei Yin wanted to fight against him head-on. If she were to arrange Spiritual Arrays from a distance, it might cause him some trouble. However, in a close-up battle, he could take her life within 3 moves.

But just when Liu Ming was about to deliver the killing blow, a brilliant silver light erupted out from behind Lei Yin. Violent Spiritual Energy fluctuations mixed with rumblings sounds were formed into lightning and struck out against Liu Ming, who was approaching.

This incoming lightning instantly changed Liu Ming's expression. He quickly urged the Spiritual Energy within his body to form a Spiritual Energy light barrier on the surface of his body.

Boom!

The lightning did not hesitate as it severely bombarded his body. As the violent lightning erupted out, Liu Ming's body instantly flew backwards hundreds of meters, sliding on the ground before it buried itself in a boulder.

Puchi.

Fresh blood sprayed out from Liu Ming's mouth. His entire body was charred as he lifted his head in surprise. He noticed Mu Chen, who was behind Lei Yin, slowly opening his tightly shut eyes. A lightning Spiritual Array slowly circulated above his head. It carried an extremely violent Spiritual Energy and would flash from time to time.

"Damn it, how could this Spiritual Array be this powerful?!"

Horror filled Liu Ming's heart. He was bombarded by the lightning to the extent that he became seriously injured. The power was comparable to a Spirit Stage powerhouse's attack!

The men nearby were all scared because of this. Fear immediately filled their faces. Even Liu Ming, who was at the peak of a Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase, could not block a single attack from the Spiritual Array. How could they dare to rush forward?

Mu Chen's stared coldly at Liu Ming, who was severely injured. However, he ignored him and turned his gaze towards Lei Yin and asked: "Are you okay?"

Lei Yin shook her head and said: "Thank you."

If Mu Chen had not helped during the critical moment earlier, she probably would have been killed by Liu Ming.

"It's fine. I still have to thank you for protecting me." Mu Chen smiled gently. Then, his cold eyes looked towards the battle between Lei Shan and Yang Gui. His hand seals changed and the massive lightning Spiritual Array slowly circulated as numerous lightning flashed.

In the sky, Yang Gui was currently fighting fiercely against Lei Shan

when he felt a chill. He hurriedly turned his gaze away and his eyes instantly narrowed. Then, he revealed a surprised expression. Even he felt a hint of danger coming from this lightning Spiritual Array.

"What a powerful Spiritual Array." Lei Shan also noticed the Spiritual Array and immediately exclaimed.

"Nine Heavenly Lightning Spiritual Array!" Mu Chen stared coldly at Yang Gui and shouted out while his hand seals changed.

Boom!

Following Mu Chen's cry, the lightning Spiritual Array had completely activated. Rumbling thunder sounds echoed throughout the sky. Then, the array trembled for a moment and a massive lightning rushed out like a lightning dragon. It tore through the sky at lightning speed and fiercely bombarded against Yang Gui.

"Damn it!"

Seeing the lightning quickly becoming larger within his eyes, Yang Gui's face changed instantly. The violent Spiritual Energy within the lightning made his heart jump.

Boom!

A powerful Spiritual Energy immediately rushed out from Yang Gui's body. His fingers were spread apart and then he fired off from his palm: "Grand Wraith Palm Print!"

Billowing Spiritual Energy gushed out and formed a gigantic Spiritual Energy palm print. It carried a powerful energy as it collided fiercely against the lightning.

Bang!

An immensely violent Spiritual Energy shockwave erupted out in the sky. As a dazzling brilliance emerged, many people closed their eyes.

Hmph.

Yang Gui's body also trembled at that moment. A muffled hmph sound emitted out from his throat. Then, his body quickly staggered a dozen

steps backwards as a trace of blood emerged from his mouth. The Spiritual Energy within his body had been shocked and it was apparent that he had suffered a severe injury from that collision.

"Yang Gui, die!"

Just when Yang Gui retreated back quickly due to his injuries, a shout filled with killing intent rang out from behind him. He quickly turned around and noticed Lei Shan rushing over. The latter's body was completely wrapped in golden light. Behind him, the Golden Armadillo seemed to have fused together with him. With a cry, an indescribable sharpness emerged from it and penetrated through his chest.

Yang Gui's body immediately stiffened as he struggled to lower his head. He noticed that a two-foot bloody hole appeared on his chest as fresh blood poured out from it.

At this instant, the entire mountain peak was silent. The troops from Mang Yin Mountain stared at this scene in horror. Their eyes showed a feeling of intense fear.

Upon seeing this, Mu Chen let out a sigh of relief. He sat down on his butt. Yang Gui was dead. Thus, Mang Yin Mountain and Liu Territory would definitely lose today's battle.

Chapter 95: Black Scroll

On the top of the mountain, the originally chaotic battlefield had suddenly quieted down, especially the men from Mang Yin Mountain. They were all stunned as they looked at Yang Gui whose aura was fading away while he fell down from midair. Their boss was killed just like that?

But he was a Spirit Stage powerhouse, how did he get killed so easily?

“Men from Mang Yin Mountain. If you dare to resist, then don’t blame the Nine Dragon City for making a bloodbath out of you!”

Lei Shan landed on a huge tree as he glanced at the panicked troops from Mang Yin Mountain. From within his shout, a thick murderous intent surged out.

“Kill!”

The morale of the troops from Nine Dragon City rose. With a loud cry, they suddenly charged towards Mang Yin Mountain’s troops in order to kill them. The latter had been destroyed mentally and could not form an effective defense.

Mu Chen watched the defeated troops from Mang Yin Mountain and let out a sigh of relief. He circulated the Great Pagoda Art and absorbed Spiritual Aura in order to recover. Previously, Lei Shan’s attack was quite decisive. He did not hesitate and killed Yang Gui when he had become weak momentarily.

“Bang!”

In the sky, violent Spiritual Energy erupted out from the place where Zhou Ye and Liu Zong were fighting. Zhou Ye retreated a dozen steps while Liu Zong only retreated two steps. However, Liu Zong had an ugly expression on his face. That was because he had seen the cold corpse of Yang Gui.

“Useless trash!”

Liu Zong’s heart was slightly shocked. He immediately gritted his teeth as he cursed. Yang Gui’s death had basically ruined their advantageous

situation.

"Haha, Liu Zong. It seems that it's impossible for things to go your way today!" Zhou Ye let out a cold laugh. The morale on their side had increased with Yang Gui's death. And more importantly, Lei Shan could now extend a helping hand. Zhou Ye could team up with him in order to defeat Liu Zong. Even for Liu Zong, who was at the Spirit Stage Middle Phase, it would be difficult to obtain the upper-hand when facing two Spirit Stage Initial Phase powerhouses.

Liu Zong's face darkened. He stared at Mang Yin Mountain's defeated troops and gnashed his teeth bitterly. Then, he glared coldly at Zhou Ye and appeared next to Liu Ming, who was heavily injured and burned to a char by Mu Chen. He grabbed onto Liu Ming and quickly fled away from the mountain peak.

"Retreat!"

Seeing Liu Zong retreat, the Liu Territory's men also shouted out and quickly escaped from the fray.

Without the support from the Liu Territory, Mang Yin Mountain's troops completely lost their morale and quickly surrendered when the fortress was broken into.

Mu Chen stood on top of the fortress walls and watched as the troops from Mang Yin Mountain scattered away. Mang Yin Mountain would now disappear forever from the Northern Spiritual Realm's underworld.

"Haha, Mu Chen. You're quite amazing. You're actually able to arrange such a powerful Spiritual Array at such a young age." Lei Shan laughed as he landed next to Mu Chen. He firmly patted Mu Chen's shoulder as Mu Chen gave a bitter laugh due to the force. He felt that his entire body was being shattered.

It was evident that Lei Shan was in an excellent mood. Yang Gui was a big rival for him and Lei Shan had been suppressed by him over the past few years. He had never thought that he would be able to get his revenge today. Of course, it was thanks to Mu Chen's Spiritual Array support. Otherwise, he wouldn't have been able to take Yang Gui's life that easily

even if he had managed to defeat him.

Zhou Ye also descended down. He looked at Mu Chen with a pleased smile. It was a wise decision when he decided to bring Mu Chen along with him.

“Leader Lei. We’ll let you deal with the remaining men from Mang Yin Mountain.” Zhou Ye looked at the troops that had surrendered as he directed a smile towards Lei Shan.

“That’s fine.” Lei Shan nodded. For an underworld force, what they needed the most was manpower. The Mu Territory might despise these individuals, but Nine Dragon City required them.

“Mang Yin Mountain is the strongest underworld force within the Northern Spiritual Realm. They surely must have a lot of treasures. Since we’ve obtained their troops, we’ll leave the treasure collection to you.” Lei Shan smiled. This was within reason. Mang Yin Mountain had been eradicated and hence they had managed to resolve a big concern of theirs. Moreover, they could take this opportunity and form a friendly relationship with the Mu Territory. Thus, Lei Shan was willing to give up the Mang Yin Mountain’s treasure to the Mu Territory.

Zhou Ye smiled. He did not refuse, but he also did not plan on accepting everything. He said: “Let’s split it in half. Nine Dragon City has suffered quite a bit of losses today. Moreover, we still have an opportunity to cooperate.“

“Then, I’ll have to thank Brother Zhou.” Lei Shan did not argue as he cupped his hands and smiled. Right now, they had offended the Liu Territory. In order to avoid their retaliation, they naturally had to form a better relationship with the Mu Territory.

Since the two sides had come to an agreement, Lei Shan waved his hand and called his men to bring over a certain person. This person was exceptionally skinny, yet he had quite the cunning eyes. However, he looked miserable instead, due to the blood covering his body.

“This is the second leader of Mang Yin Mountain, Lin Hou. He is also a known figure.” Lei Shan smiled coldly at Lin Hou and said: “Bring us to the

treasure room. If you are useful to us, you will naturally be able to keep your life. Otherwise, I do not mind getting rid of you right now."

Lin Hou shuddered when he saw Lei Shan's killing intent. He hurriedly smiled and said: "Leader Lei, relax. I know all about Mang Yin Mountain and am well aware of where the most precious collection is located."

"Then, why don't you hurry and lead the way!" Lei Shan shouted.

"Yes yes, please follow me." Lin Hou quickly nodded and awkwardly led the way.

"This sort of person, who would betray anyone in his interest, isn't suitable for staying in Nine Dragon City." Zhou Ye stared at the silhouette of Lin Hou as he said that with a faint smile.

"Brother Zhou, there's no need to worry. I naturally understand this." Lei Shan smiled. He wasn't a fool. How could he let a person, who could easily betray his former lord, stay by his side?

Hearing this, Zhou Ye did not bring it up anymore and followed quickly along with Mu Chen.

Mang Yin Mountain's fortress was quite massive and had numerous houses. Currently, Lin Hou was turning left and right as he brought everyone to the largest building in the depths of the fortress.

Lin Hou stopped in the study room of the building. Then, the walls suddenly cracked open when Lin Hou touched the wall. Afterwards, he directed a smile towards Lei Shan and said: "Everyone, this place is Yang Gui's treasure collection when he was still alive. I only found it due to a coincidence..."

"You can enter it first." Lei Shan said faintly. It was clear that he did not trust this person.

Lin Hou laughed awkwardly and immediately entered. Seeing that he was completely fine, Lei Shan, Zhou Ye and Mu Chen followed him.

Behind the wall was a secret room. There was a sparkling light coming from it. The secret room wasn't large, yet it was definitely filled with

treasure. There were Spirit Coins piled up almost forming a small hill. From the looks of it, there were at least a million coins. On the other side, numerous jaded scripts were placed. It was obvious that this was Yang Gui's Spiritual Arts collection.

Mu Chen became a little bit interested and wandered in. He looked at a few Spiritual Arts and immediately curled his lips. These Spiritual Arts were not considered that excellent. The highest level one was only at the Spiritual Tier.

Mu Chen casually looked at them and soon completely lost interest in these Spiritual Arts. He began to wander into the interior. At that location, there were a few exquisite jaded boxes. He picked one up and gently opened the cover. Then, a fist-sized blood ginseng appeared in his eyes. A rich and pure Spiritual Energy emitted out along with its fragrance.

"Nine Truths Blood Ginseng?"

Mu Chen looked at the blood ginseng and his eyes suddenly lit up. This was a worldly treasure that was even rarer than the Jaded Essence Fruit. It was extremely beneficial for cultivation. However, the Spiritual Energy within it was extremely violent. It would harm the body if it was not completely ingested.

However, Mu Chen was not afraid of this at all. The Great Pagoda Art that he trained in was exceptionally domineering. It was clear that the violent Spiritual Energy from the blood ginseng was at a level beneath it.

Moreover, if he was able to completely ingest this fully-matured Nine Truths Blood Ginseng, he might be able to breakthrough to the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase in a short period of time.

"Uncle Zhou, this thing belongs to me." Mu Chen waved the jaded box towards Zhou Ye and smiled.

"You've performed a great job this time. Pick as many treasures as you want." Zhou Ye smiled.

Hearing this, Mu Chen placed it within his Mustard Seed Bracelet. However, he was not greedy. Although these worldly treasures were

excellent, it would be harmful for him, in the long run, if he overrelied on them to increase his strength quickly.

Therefore, he was not envious when the other decent worldly treasures were taken away by Zhou Ye and Lei Shan. Instead, he wandered around the secret room and looked everywhere.

The secret room was not that spacious and Mu Chen quickly reached the end of it. However, he did not see anything special. Thus, he could only pout his lips. It seemed that Yang Gui's collection wasn't that amazing.

Mu Chen shook his head and was about to turn around.

Crack.

However, he seemed to have stepped on something when he turned around. Something rolled out from beneath his foot. He lowered his head and saw a black scroll rolling near his foot.

The scroll was covered in dust. It was evident that it wasn't taken care of properly. Mu Chen frowned as was about to leave. However, he did not know why he suddenly hesitated for a moment and sucked up the black scroll into his hands.

Mu Chen looked at it carefully, yet he did not discover anything special from it. Then, he casually opened the scroll.

When the scroll was opened, a faint black light emerged. Flashing black lines were scattered across the scroll without any rules.

Mu Chen frowned as he stared at the scattered lines. His eyes were filled with doubt. These lines seemed like a Diagram Array. However, it was disorganized and had no proper trajectories for the array.

"What is this thing?"

Mu Chen pouted his lips. The pattern within the scroll seemed like something drawn by an ignorant child and looked completely useless.

Mu Chen fixated his gaze on the black scroll. He could vaguely feel something wrong with it. Then, he pondered for a moment before suddenly closing his eyes. The sounds from the outside world were

gradually being cut off. Under the silence, he actually entered the Heart Array State.

Although Mu Chen had closed his eyes when he entered the Heart Array State, he could still see the thick black light that erupted out from the black scroll. Then, he saw with his heart, a mysterious trajectory slowly connecting the originally chaotic light beams.

The black light surged through the outlines of the light beams. As Mu Chen looked at them attentively, he could see an extremely complex Diagram Array emerging from the scroll. He could vaguely perceive a mysterious black lotus and an indescribably vicious aura emitting out from the Diagram Array.

Hmm.

Mu Chen's body trembled slightly and he suddenly opened his eyes. A muffled sound rang out from his throat. Then, traces of blood began to emerge from the corner of his mouth. However, he did not care about it at all and only stared in shock at the black scroll within his hands.

This item was definitely a high rank Diagram Array!

Chapter 96: Suppression and Breakthrough

A high rank Diagram Array?

Mu Chen stared unsteadily at the black scroll within his hand. Although he could not determine the rank of this Diagram Array, it should be at least more powerful than a Rank 2 Spiritual Array.

If word comes out about this level of a Diagram Array, it would probably create madness among the Spiritual Array Masters within the Northern Spiritual Realm. In the eyes of Spiritual Array Masters, even rare worldly treasures wouldn't be as attractive as this high rank Diagram Array.

Mu Chen wiped the blood off the corner of his mouth. Then, he walked towards Zhou Ye and Lei Shan as he waved the scroll: "Uncle Zhou, I want this as well."

Zhou Ye and the others took the black scroll and looked over it back and forth. However, they did not see any clues from it. Thus, they smiled and handed it over to Mu Chen.

Mu Chen snickered when he accepted it. He knew that Zhou Ye and Lei Shan wouldn't be able to see the mystery behind the black scroll. Otherwise, Yang Gui wouldn't have casually discarded it at this place. The value of a high rank Spiritual Array was probably much higher than everything else inside this secret room.

As for how Mu Chen could see through the mystery of this black scroll, it was all because he could enter the Heart Array State. Otherwise, Mu Chen believed that even a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master wouldn't be able to discover the hidden Diagram Array within the black scroll even if they were looking at it.

The Heart Array State is something that only a Rank 3 Spiritual Array Master could enter. However, it was not absolute and only had a small probability. Not every single Rank 3 Spiritual Array Master would be able to enter the Heart Array State. Thus, it was a secret that couldn't be

unlocked by just anyone.

Mu Chen quickly put away the black scroll. When he headed back, he could research it a little. However, it was impossible for him to attempt arranging it with his current strength. Previously, his body had trembled just from the vicious aura emitting from the Diagram Array. If he attempted to arrange it forcibly, he would definitely die due to the backlash.

After he obtained the high-grade Diagram Array, Mu Chen did not have any other thoughts about the items within the secret room and allowed Zhou Ye and Lei Shan to divide the spoils of war. Then, they called their respective troops to transfer it back to their own territory.

"Leader Lei. Regarding this matter, it is all thanks to Nine Dragon City. If there is anything you need help with, please feel free to send some men over to the Mu Territory. We will definitely help you with the best of our abilities." At the entrance of the Mang Yin Mountain Range, Zhou Ye cupped his hands towards Lei Shan and smiled as he led the Mu Territory's troops.

"Haha. Brother Zhou, you're being too polite. My Nine Dragon City will have to thank you. Once we settle the situation over here, we will definitely head over to the Mu Territory and pay a visit to Territory Lord Mu Feng!"

"Sure, farewell."

Zhou Ye smiled. He did not delay it and waved his hands as he brought the large number of troops away. They quickly disappeared from Nine Dragon City's line of sight...

News quickly spread out regarding the battle against Mang Yin Mountain. The destruction of Mang Yin Mountain shocked the Northern Spiritual Realm. After all, Mang Yin Mountain was the strongest underworld force within the Northern Spiritual Realm. Since it was now eradicated, it naturally attracted a lot of attention.

Especially when news about Yang Gui's death came out. Numerous individuals were completely stunned when they heard this. A Spirit Stage

powerhouse would actually be killed like this...

They really can't provoke the Mu Territory.

Numerous large and small forces sighed. They naturally heard about Mang Yin Mountain attacking the Mu Territory and killing one of the Mu Territory's City Lords. Although they knew that the Mu Territory would not just endure it, they never expected that the Mu Territory's revenge would be enacted this quickly and this viciously...

Liu Territory, Within the Liu Estate.

Liu Qingtian sat at the seat of honor with an indifferent expression. Beside him was Liu Mubai while below him were Liu Zong and Liu Ming. However, both of them had an ugly expression at this moment.

"How did you fail?" Liu Qingtian glanced at the two of them and asked as he frowned.

"It's all because of that little as*hole, Mu Chen." Liu Ming gritted his teeth and said: "That brat could actually arrange a Spiritual Array whose power was comparable to a Rank 2 Spiritual Array. Together with Lei Shan, they killed Yang Gui."

"Oh?" Liu Qingtian's expression changed slightly. So Mu Chen could arrange such a powerful Spiritual Array? That brat really was a disaster. He actually improved so much in such a short period of time.

At the same time, Liu Mubai also gnashed his teeth secretly. A hint of jealousy and hatred flashed through the depths of his eyes. Unknowingly, the gap between Mu Chen and him had been pulled apart. How could his prideful self endure this?

"Big Brother, what should we do now? With the matter about Mang Yin Mountain, the Mu Territory's reputation will definitely soar. Moreover, they also formed a close relationship with Nine Dragon City. This isn't good news for us." Liu Zong asked.

Liu Qingtian smiled calmly. However, a chill filled his eyes: "Why are you so impatient? We instructed Mang Yin Mountain to act in order to capture the Mu Territory's attention. Our father is progressing smoothly

with his training. He should be able to exit his secluded training after one month. When that happens, he will become the only Three Heavens Stage powerhouse in the Northern Spiritual Realm."

"By that time, who will care about the Mu Territory? We will be able to easily destroy them. As for the other forces, it would be great if we could conquer them. However, if they're unwilling, then we can just eliminate them."

Liu Qingtian's eyes were burning eagerly as he clenched his hands tightly: "When that happens, the Liu Territory will become the true overlord of the Northern Spiritual Realm. The vast area will be controlled single-handedly by my Liu Territory!"

When Liu Zong and Liu Ming heard this, their eyes became a lot more passionate. It was finally time for the Liu Territory to rule over the Northern Spiritual Realm...

Mu Territory.

After the incident with Mang Yin Mountain was dealt with, Mu Chen had quietly stayed in the Mu Estate. This was because he spent most of his time researching the mysterious black Diagram Array inside the scroll.

He had also allowed Wen Ling to glance at the Diagram Array. The latter had already successfully advanced to a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master. However, he did not possess the Heart Array State and could not view the hidden Diagram Array within the scroll. About the Diagram Array, he did not hide it from him. After all, Wen Ling had treated him quite well. Not only did he lead him on the path of a Spiritual Array Master, he had also handed over all the Diagram Arrays he possessed without reservation. To this stern teacher, Mu Chen felt quite grateful to him.

Moreover, when Wen Ling heard about this from Mu Chen, he was quite interested in it. After all, a high rank Diagram Array possessed great attractiveness towards Spiritual Array Master. But contrary to Mu Chen's expectation, Wen Ling was not fixated on it. He only smiled and said that he had no luck with this Diagram Array. Therefore, he could not view it.

Regarding this, Mu Chen could do nothing about it. Since Wen Ling

could not see the hidden Diagram Array within the scroll, he did not have the ability to simulate it. Therefore, Mu Chen could only keep it to himself and slowly research it.

After a period of research, Mu Chen had vaguely entered the starting point and had a bit of understanding concerning the Diagram Array. If his research was correct, this Diagram Array's name was known as the "Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array". As for the overall rank of the Diagram Array, Mu Chen did not fully understand it yet. However, it was at least a Rank 3 Diagram Array. It was obvious that Mu Chen could not arrange a Diagram Array of this level with his current strength.

About this, Mu Chen felt quite helpless. He had the Diagram Array, yet he did not have the strength to attempt it. Instead, it made him itch. Thus, he could only gradually gather his thoughts and attempt the Diagram Array in the future.

After turning his focus away from this, Mu Chen began to dedicate himself fully to his cultivation. With his current strength, he had long possessed the qualifications to break through into the Spiritual Rotation Stage Middle Phase. However, he did not do that. Instead, he had constantly suppressed his Spiritual Energy and did not allow himself to reach that step yet.

It wasn't that he didn't want to advance to the Spiritual Rotation Stage Middle Phase. It was just that his ambition did not stop there. Instead, he planned on directly breaking through to the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase.

This idea was quite unreliable. After all, it required a large amount of Spiritual Energy to breakthrough to a Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase from the Spiritual Rotation Stage Middle Phase. If it was before, Mu Chen would not have this idea. However, he possessed the "Nine Truths Blood Ginseng" right now. Therefore, he had this thought.

The "Nine Truths Blood Ginseng" possessed a pure and violent Spiritual Energy. As long as Mu Chen could ingest this Spiritual Energy, he could rely on the Spiritual Energy that he suppressed within his body and release

it all out during the peak density. This would definitely be like a pent up volcano. The eruption would be extremely terrifying.

By relying on this energy, Mu Chen was certain that he could breakthrough to the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase.

Thus, Mu Chen could only wait for the correct timing.

And this wait lasted for nearly half a month...

After half a month, Mu Chen sat cross-legged on a stone platform inside the Mu Estate's courtyard. At this moment, Spiritual Energy continued to leak out endlessly from the surface of his body. It represented that the Spiritual Energy within his body had reached an extreme.

At every level, there was a limit how much Spiritual Energy could be stored within the body. Currently, Mu Chen was only at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Initial Phase. However, the amount of Spiritual Energy within his body had surpassed the limits of a Spiritual Rotation Stage Initial Phase.

If he failed to deal with the situation accordingly, it could easily cause damage to the meridians as the Spiritual Energy was too abundant.

Hu.

Mu Chen let out a deep breath. A hint of black light leaked out from his breath as well. It was evident that it was mixed with Spiritual Energy.

"It's about enough."

Mu Chen felt a slight pain within his body and smiled slightly. This act was extremely dangerous. Fortunately, the Great Pagoda Art was exceptionally domineering and could control the abundant Spiritual Energy. It stopped the Spiritual Energy from causing damage recklessly within his body. Otherwise, he would not dare to do such a bold act.

Mu Chen gripped his hand and a jaded box emerged. He opened the box and the "Nine Truths Blood Ginseng" appeared from within it. A rich scent poured out. Then, he inhaled and instantly felt the Spiritual Energy within his body expand once again.

“Amazing.”

Mu Chen secretly let out a praise. However, his eyes quickly turned serious and he threw the “Nine Truths Blood Ginseng” into his mouth.

The scalding juice emitted out within Mu Chen’s mouth and instantly turned into surging amounts of Spiritual Energy. It flowed into Mu Chen’s body like a torrent and instantly caused his body to turn red.

Mu Chen felt the Spiritual Energy that was about to rampage within his body and did not dare to act slowly. He quickly closed his eyes and entered a state of cultivation. He circulated the Great Pagoda Art madly in order to ingest the violent Spiritual Energy.

Right now, it was time to breakthrough!

Chapter 97: Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase

Boom!

Surging Spiritual Energy rushed out like a flood and roared past Mu Chen's limbs. Due to the abundance of Spiritual Energy, Mu Chen felt a pricking pain in his meridians. It was evident that his meridians had reached the limits of enduring it.

At the same time, Mu Chen was clear about the condition of his body. He immediately circulated the Great Pagoda Art in order to drive the dense Spiritual Energy through the Spiritual Art's circulation route.

Waves of Spiritual Energy were ingested by the Great Pagoda Art and were turned into numerous dark black Spiritual Energy before it fused into the Spiritual Energy Wheel within his aurasea.

Accompanying this influx of dense Spiritual Energy, the originally pigeon egg-sized Spiritual Energy Wheel slowly grew. The Spiritual Energy lights flashing on the surface also became brighter.

Hu.

The entire aurasea seemed to have rumbled at this moment. This commotion awakened the Nine Nether Bird, who was trapped inside the dark purple mandala flower within his aurasea. It watched this scene with a cold and cruel gaze.

Then, it suddenly stood up when it witnessed the scene. The burning black flames within his black wings suddenly enshrouded the cage which trapped it.

Buzz!

However, against the impact, the light barrier cage formed by the mandala flower rippled. It did not show even the slightest signs of shattering. A hint of hatred flashed through the Nine Nether Bird's eyes. Right now, it was an excellent chance for it to attack Mu Chen. But this

abominable cage had sealed it to the extent that it couldn't even display any means of attacks towards him.

Regarding the Nine Nether Bird's actions, Mu Chen did not have the time to care about it. He was completely focused on controlling the surging Spiritual Energy within his body. At this moment, he could not afford even the slightest error.

The Spiritual Energy within his meridians howled endlessly. This high-speed circulation made Mu Chen's meridians ache. This time, there was way too much Spiritual Energy entering his body.

However, it was clearly useless to be thinking about this right now. Therefore, Mu Chen could only concentrate and he circulated the Great Pagoda Art to the extreme. He ingested the violent Spiritual Energy constantly.

Time quickly passed by and in the blink of an eye, two hours had passed. During this period of time, the Spiritual Energy Wheel within Mu Chen's aurasea had expanded by an entire size. Right now, he had already reached the Spiritual Rotation Stage Middle Phase.

But there was still a considerable amount of Spiritual Energy surging endlessly within his body.

It was time to charge at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase.

This idea flashed through Mu Chen's mind. He immediately took a deep breath. The surging Spiritual Energy within his meridians accelerated as it flowed through the Great Pagoda Art's circulation route.

This speed made his meridians contract slightly. However, Mu Chen ignored it. The domineering Great Pagoda Art would be enough to control the violent Spiritual Energy. The violent Spiritual Energy that others might not be able to deal with was like a tamed sheep inside his body.

"All of you should just become part of my Spiritual Energy!"

Mu Chen muttered within his heart. Above the Spiritual Energy Wheel, lights condensed and turned into an illusory light tower. This light tower swayed and absorbed the flooding Spiritual Energy like a whale. Then,

with the empowerment of the massive amount of Spiritual Energy, the illusory light tower seemed to have turned slightly material.

Buzz.

The absorption speed of the light tower was extremely terrifying. In a matter of just a dozen minutes, the dense Spiritual Energy within Mu Chen's meridians was completly absorbed by it.

Moreover, the illusory light tower seemed to have become more corporeal after absorbing this dense Spiritual Energy. This made Mu Chen exclaim loudly. If he wanted to turn the illusory light tower into a corporeal light tower, wouldn't the amount of Spiritual Energy he required be terrifying?

Mu Chen smacked his lips in shock. He immediately concentrated and the light tower slowly faded away into lights as it entered the Spiritual Energy Wheel.

Dong!

As the lights entered his Spiritual Energy Wheel, the light wheel shook violently. Waves of dense Spiritual Energy fluctuations emitted out constantly and the size of the Spiritual Energy Wheel expanded at a visible speed.

In a matter of seconds, the Spiritual Energy Wheel had expanded to the point where it was the size of an infant's fist. Around the light wheel, Spiritual Energy lights would emerge. It looked rather abstruse as if it was enveloping the stars outside of the galaxy.

A dense Spiritual Energy fluctuation emitted out from within Mu Chen's body. This sense of power made his pores open up. It was an indescribable and comforting feeling.

Mu Chen sensed the Spiritual Energy Wheel with a bit of joy. With its degree of strength, he had truly reached the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase!

After suppressing his Spiritual Energy during this period of time, he had finally reached this level with the help of the Nine Truths Blood Ginseng

and the Great Pagoda Art. As long as he advanced one more step, he would become a Spirit Stage powerhouse!

That level would be a qualitative change to his cultivation. In the Northern Spiritual Realm, a person at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase was quite powerful. However, to tell the truth, there are many of them. If they wanted to truly become a leader of a force, they could only do it if they possessed the strength of a Spirit Stage powerhouse.

This was because everybody knew that the capability of a Spirit Stage powerhouse was simply not something that a Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase could compare with. No matter how many Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase men you had, it was not as convincing as you, yourself, being a Spirit Stage powerhouse.

They were two completely different levels. The prestige that they represent was also completely different.

Mu Chen nodded in satisfaction when he felt the density of the Spiritual Energy within his body. Then, he focused his consciousness on the Nine Nether Bird which was trapped within the aurasea.

Although he was completely focused on ingesting the Spiritual Energy previously, he did not ignore the actions that the Nine Nether Bird did.

The Nine Nether Bird also noticed Mu Chen. However, it only glanced at him coldly before lying down lazily.

“Damn feathery bird, you’ve already lost your influence and position right now. Can’t you act sincerely?” Mu Chen said with a cold smile.

“Go to hell!”

Hearing Mu Chen call it a damn feathery bird, the Nine Nether Bird bursted into a rage. The blazing wings fiercely flapped and a cold intent was conveyed over.

“You wouldn’t benefit if you were to kill me. Therefore, you should act more sincerely!” Mu Chen said heartlessly.

“With your Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase strength, you are worse

than an ant in my eyes. You dare scold me?" Thoughts surged out from the Nine Nether Bird. Within it, a cold murderous intent was conveyed out.

"You think that it's your victory because you've trapped me within your body? This mandala flower isn't something that you can control!"

Hearing this, Mu Chen flew into a rage. His consciousness moved and actually floated towards the cage formed by the mandala flower. Then, his consciousness slowly touched it.

When it was touched, Mu Chen was exceptionally nervous. It was true that he didn't have a way of controlling the mysterious mandala flower which had emerged from the black paper. But no matter what, this was the only thing that was capable of restraining the Nine Nether Bird. He must attempt it. Otherwise, the Nine Nether Bird would never listen to his words.

As Mu Chen timidly touched the mandala flower, he was stunned. The rebound that he expected to come did not appear and, instead, his consciousness also integrated into the mandala flower a little bit.

At that instant, Mu Chen felt that he could control the mandala flower a little bit.

This feeling instantly made Mu Chen froze. Shortly after, a surge of ecstasy filled his mind. Afterwards, he stared unfavorably at the Nine Nether Bird.

The Nine Nether Bird also detected something. It folded its black wings uneasily and was on alert.

"Damn feathery bird. I'll make it so that you'll want to hurt me!"

Mu Chen snickered and moved his consciousness. The massive flower petals of the mandala flower actually spread out slowly and whacked fiercely at the Nine Nether Bird.

Boom!

The Nine Nether Bird, who was caught off-guard, immediately issued a cry of pain when it was hit by the flower petals. The black flames on its

body dimmed slightly. Then, a hint of fear finally emerged within its eyes.

It was evident that it never expected that Mu Chen would be capable of activating this mysterious mandala flower.

Seeing this, Mu Chen's heart was filled with delight. During this time, he had to endure the Nine Nether Bird's attitude and could not do anything to get back at it. Now, he finally had a mean to counter back. He immediately activated the mandala flower in order to smack at the Nine Nether Bird endlessly.

The Nine Nether Bird evaded it awkwardly. Every time it was hit by the mandala flower's petals, the black flames on its body would dim. This made it a bit frightened. The mandala flower was quite mysterious as it was actually capable of absorbing its energy.

"Mu Chen, don't go overboard now. Believe it or not, I'll fight to the bitter end with you!" After avoiding repeatedly, the Nine Nether Bird also entered a rampage and the feathers on its body stood up. Within the thought that was conveyed over, it was full of rage and horror.

"Hmph, this is a punishment that you deserve. Since you're staying in my body, you should act more honestly. Otherwise, don't blame me for not holding back if you hold some ill desire towards me." Mu Chen said ruthlessly. He did not dare to push the Nine Nether Bird too hard. After all, the latter was not an ordinary existence. Even though it was weakened a lot, who knew if it had some sort of last resort or not? If he made the Nine Nether Bird feel anxious and it decided to fight him to the death, Mu Chen might not be able to endure it.

Fury filled the Nine Nether Bird's eyes. However, it stopped scorning and ridiculing Mu Chen. Instead, it shook the feathers on its body and slowly lay down. Now that Mu Chen was capable of controlling the mandala flower, it was best not to provoke this person.

Noticing that the Nine Nether Bird finally caved in, Mu Chen let out a sigh of relief. Then, his consciousness exited the mandala flower. But once he exited it, he felt a sense of dizziness. A feeling of fatigue emitted out and made him drowsy.

“So controlling the mandala flower actually consumes this much mental energy…”

Mu Chen was shocked and forcibly suppressed the stress that he felt. The mandala flower was indeed strange. He had activated it inaccurately, yet it nearly made him fell asleep. Then, wouldn’t he faint if he attempted to use it to do something?

“It seems that I shouldn’t use it often.”

Mu Chen muttered to himself. Then, his consciousness exited his body. Although the consumption was great, he still obtained a measure that the Nine Nether Bird was afraid of.

“This damn feathery bird. Just wait until I advance to the Spirit Stage, I’ll deal with you then!”

Chapter 98: Uneasy Silence

After Mu Chen successfully advanced to the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase, he gradually slowed down his cultivation pace. This breakthrough was different compared to the times when he would slowly yet steadily advance and instead was a sudden leap. Although Mu Chen was thoroughly prepared for this rapid breakthrough, no matter what, it still made his Spiritual Energy a little bit sparse. Thus, he must quietly temper his Spiritual Energy. Otherwise, this sparseness would be trouble for him when he attempts to breakthrough to a higher stage.

Mu Chen selected a decent idea to temper his Spiritual Energy. The plan was to condense Spiritual Seals. Before his breakthrough, Mu Chen could only condense 19 Spiritual Seals. On the day that Yang Gui was killed, he only managed arrange the “Nine Heavenly Lightning Spiritual Array” due to the Jaded Essence Fruit. Otherwise, he would not have reached that level.

But since his strength had increased significantly, Mu Chen could easily condense 20 Spiritual Seals. He no longer required any external help to do so. This made Mu Chen quite delightful as it also means that he could successfully arrange the “Nine Heavenly Lightning Spiritual Array” with his own strength. With this powerful Spiritual Array, he would be able to fight even a Spirit Stage Initial Phase powerhouse.

However, a great obstacle emerged when Mu Chen attempted to condense the 21st seal after condensing 20 Spiritual Seals. It was difficult to form the 21st Spiritual Seal.

This phenomenon puzzled him. With the increase of his strength, it should be easy for him to condense over 20 Spiritual Seals. Why did he keep failing?

After thinking for a while without any conclusion gathered, Mu Chen, who was in confusion, could only head over to find Wen Ling. Then, after the explanation given by Wen Ling, he finally understood that the 21st Spiritual Seal was the critical point for a Rank 1 Spiritual Array Master to

breakthrough to a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master.

Although 20 Spiritual Seals and 21 Spiritual Seals only differ from 1 seal, it separated the two levels.

Wen Ling spent numerous years before he finally completed this difference of 1 Seal and became a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master. It was evident that it wasn't as simple as Mu Chen thought if he wanted to cover the gap in a short period of time, even if he had a monstrous talent.

After he heard Wen Ling's explanation, Mu Chen was enlightened. No wonder it was so difficult to condense the 21st Spiritual Seal. This was due to it actually representing the difference between the two levels. As long as he successfully condensed the 21st Spiritual Seal, he would be considered to be a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master. Moreover, he would condense numerous Spiritual Seals at an alarming speed.

For example, Wen Ling could only condense 20 Spiritual Seals before he became a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master. But after he finally stepped past the 21st seal, he managed to condense 29 Spiritual Seals within half a month. Furthermore, the number of seals was still growing slowly...

Thus, this was the difference between a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master and a Rank 1 Spiritual Array Master.

After identifying the cause, Mu Chen slowed down the speed of condensing Spiritual Seals. Although it would still be a compulsory lesson every day, he split up the time so he could complete other matters.

As Mu Chen relaxed, a dozen days or so passed by.

During this period, Mu Chen would split up his time into four parts. One part was for condensing Spiritual Seals, another part for cultivating Spiritual Energy, another part for researching on the complex and mysterious "Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array and the last part was for talking with the Nine Nether Bird within his body. The Nine Nether Bird was an extremely powerful existence and was currently within Mu Chen's body. Although it was trapped, Mu Chen was quite tempted towards its strength. Therefore, he did not want their relationship to be filled completely with hatred. However, the Nine Nether Bird ignored his

actions for a conversation. The viciousness within its eyes did not fade at all. Instead, the gaze that would occasionally look at Mu Chen was like how it would view a naïve fool.

This foolish person actually believes that he could make it obedient just like this?

Although there were minimal effects of the talk, Mu Chen did not get bored of it. Instead, the Nine Nether Bird was the one that felt it was annoying. Once it heard his voice, it would cover the cage with its wings and would not listen nor talk.

Even though Mu Chen did not obtain much significant results from the exchange he had with the Nine Nether Bird, he still made a discovery regarding about the "Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array". However, this discovery made him get a headache. This is because he discovered that the "Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array" that he saw within the black scroll wasn't complete. Accurately speaking, it should only be a part of the complete "Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array".

The most peculiar thing about it is that this part was still a perfect Spiritual Array. It could be arranged and activated by itself. Mu Chen was quite surprised to see that. It was his first time seeing a Diagram Array with such a perfect Spiritual Array after dissecting it out from the complete version.

As for the remaining parts of the "Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array", it was still hidden within the black scroll. It was impossible to detect even when Mu Chen activated his Heart Array State. This was obviously because he wasn't strong enough to see it.

However, Mu Chen did not feel dispirited. Right now, his strength wasn't enough. Not to mention the complete version of the "Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array", the part of the Diagram Array he could see required approximately 100 Spiritual Seals. Mu Chen still had a long way to go before he reached this number. Perhaps only an excellent Rank 3 Spiritual Array Master would barely reach this requirement.

After all, he had only just begun on the path of a Spiritual Array

Master...

While Mu Chen was quietly cultivating, the Mu Territory was relatively quiet. Even the entire Northern Spiritual Realm was somewhat quiet. This silence made Mu Feng feel a little bit uncomfortable.

“Did the Liu Territory cause any commotions?” Within the Mu Estate, Mu Feng held a teacup and frowned as he asked Zhou Ye.

Zhou Ye shook his head and said: “It was as if those bastards had changed their personalities. They became completely quiet and peaceful. Moreover, they didn’t even care about their underworld forces, which we helped the Nine Dragon City conquered.”

After hearing Zhou Ye say this, Mu Feng frowned even more. He understood Liu Qingtian’s personality. The latter was cunning and crafty. He was definitely not a good person. How is it possible that he would let it go after they suffered such a loss against the Mu Territory?

“Send down an order. They should keep a close surveillance towards the Liu Territory. If the Liu Territory causes any commotion, they should immediately report it back.” Mu Feng placed down the teacup and said in a deep voice.

“Okay.”

Zhou Ye nodded his head and immediately turned away.

Mu Feng stared at Zhou Ye’s silhouette as his hands grinded against the armrest of his chair. His eyes turned towards the direction of the Liu Territory. Somehow, anxiety had filled his heart.

This feeling was like how a bloody storm would sweep over soon.

Ominous and terrifying...

Liu Territory.

Recently, the Liu Territory had remained rather calm. However, everybody could feel it vaguely that the patrols within the Liu City had become a lot stricter. It was as if they were preparing something.

This made many individuals a bit puzzled. Thinking about some time

ago, the Liu Territory had confronted the Mu Territory, could the Liu Territory be preparing to defend against the Mu Territory? But the Liu Territory should be the strongest force within the Northern Spiritual Realm. They had always bragged about it gloriously. Why would they suddenly be afraid of the Mu Territory?

Many were puzzled. Thus, rumors spread out about how the Liu Territory was afraid of the Mu Territory. They did not dare to fight against them and etc. This harmed the reputation of the Liu Territory.

Liu Estate.

Boom!

In the meeting room, a table was completely smashed into pieces by a paled face Liu Ming. His face darkened as he said: “Those idiots think, we, the Liu Territory, would actually be afraid of the Mu Territory?”

At the seat of honour, Liu Qingtian glanced at him and said: “It’s only just rumors. Why do you care about it?”

“What big brother said is correct.” Liu Zong nodded his head and continued: “Right now, the most important thing is to wait for the old man to exit his secluded training. We should not care about anything else. As long as the old man advances to the Three Heavens Stage, the rumors would all fade away.”

Liu Ming gritted his teeth and said: “But how long do we have to wait? During this period of time, the Mu Territory and the Nine Dragon City had conquered many forces that belonged to us. Those as*holes, they actually dare to bully our Liu Territory, how bold!”

“This Mu Feng is definitely seeking his death.” Liu Zong said in a cold voice.

Liu Qingtian smiled. However, this smile was extremely cold. He said: “Be patient, there will be a time when he would have to pay for it all. When that happens, I will make him beg in front of us.”

“The Mu Territory is only an upstart force. They actually dare to compare background and history with my Liu Territory? They’re biting off

more than they can chew."

Liu Qingtian stood up and waved his hand: "Just do what you have to do. We'll continue to wait."

His voice faded away and he was about to leave. However, his face suddenly changed and he lifted his head up. The bright sky above the Liu Territory had actually suddenly become darker.

Buzz.

Fierce winds blew in the sky. Everybody in the Liu Territory could feel it. At this moment, the Spiritual Aura within the world seemed to fluctuate violently. Moreover, the Spiritual Aura flowed with the winds and rushed quickly in one direction.

A few people looked in that direction and noticed that location was the mountain behind the Liu Estate.

"What's happening?" Liu Ming hurriedly walked out. He stared at the changing weather and could not help but ask.

Liu Qingtian only stared at the sky. Then, he took a deep breath. His gaze turned towards the mountain and he could see that winds were fiercely blowing in the sky. Clouds gathered as an amazing Spiritual Energy pressure emitted out in waves.

"Dad is about to exit!"

A smile emerged on Liu Qingtian's face. However, the smile looked extraordinarily ferocious and cold within the dark skies.

Hearing this, Liu Zong and Liu Ming also revealed delightful expressions.

"Liu Ming, immediately send out news. We, the Liu Territory, will host a Nine Territory Meeting. Every single force within the Northern Spiritual Realm must be present. Otherwise, we'll eradicate them!" Liu Qingtian said with a faint smile.

"Yes!"

Liu Ming smiled as he replied.

Facing the fierce winds, Liu Qingtian slowly opened his arms. From this point on, the Liu Territory is the overlord of the Northern Spiritual Realm...

Mu Feng, just wait for your death.

Chapter 99: Nine Territory Meeting

The news about the Liu Territory holding a Nine Territory Meeting quickly spread like the wind throughout the entire Northern Spiritual Realm. Moreover, everyone in the Northern Spiritual Realm was astounded by it.

The Nine Territory Meeting. It was known as the most extravagant affair within the Northern Spiritual Realm. Normally, it would only be held when there was an extremely important matter. The last time a Nine Territory Meeting was hosted within the Northern Spiritual Realm, the Nine Territories had decided on their positions of power and boundaries of their domain. Furthermore, it was due to this setup, of the Nine Territories within the Northern Spiritual Realm, had continued until the present time.

And now, the Liu Territory had suddenly called for a Nine Territory Meeting. Why would they do that?

Although many factional forces were in doubt, they could feel a surging and turbulent presence coming from the Nine Territory Meeting. It was likely that peace within the Northern Spiritual Realm would disappear...

Mu Territory, Within the Mu Estate.

A serious atmosphere filled the meeting room. Mu Feng's complexion changed, as he sat on the seat of honor. At the same time, Mu Chen, Zhou Ye and a few higher-ups from the Mu Territory were present at the scene.

"Why did the Liu Territory suddenly call for a Nine Territory Meeting..." Mu Feng's eyes were sharp. He slowly lifted them up and asked, "What are they planning to do?"

Everybody at the scene was silent. The Liu Territory's actions were too abrupt. Nobody understood what they were planning to do. The Nine Territory Meeting, this certainly wasn't something that could casually be hosted...

Mu Chen also frowned. His instincts told him that the Liu Territory

must have some sort of goal. Moreover, this goal should be extremely unfavorable to the Mu Territory.

"The Liu Territory acted too suddenly, and it makes me feel a bit uneasy. Should we just ignore them and not participate in the Nine Territory Meeting?" Zhou Ye pondered for a moment before asking.

"I'm afraid that wouldn't work. The Nine Territory Meeting was set as a compulsory obligation that was personally decided by the nine territories. No matter who calls for it, all of us must attend. If we were to break the rules, there will be no benefit for us." Mu Feng shook his head and said, "Furthermore, if they were coming at our Mu Territory, it would be impossible to avoid it, even if we did not go there. Instead, the Liu Territory might use a method to alienate us from the other territories..."

Zhou Ye sighed and said, "What should we do then?"

"Gather the troops tomorrow. We will convene the strongest force we can from within the Mu Territory and participate in this Nine Territory Meeting."

Mu Feng's hands smashed onto the table as he said in a cold voice, "I do not believe that the Liu Territory could eat up my Mu Territory in one gulp. Also, please send a message to the Territory Lord, Tang Shan, and the other territory lords. I believe that they must be feeling a bit uneasy at this moment. If the Liu Territory dares to do anything funny, let's see what they are capable of when the remaining 8 territories are against it!"

Zhou Ye nodded. Although it was unclear what the Liu Territory was planning to do, they wouldn't dare offend all of the other 8 territories at once.

Mu Chen stared at Mu Feng, who was currently wearing a tense expression. His eyes also became serious. It seemed that Mu Feng could feel the danger from this situation as well. But no matter what, Mu Chen would not let the Liu Territory go that easily, if they dared to attack the Mu Territory...

The location of the Nine Territory Meeting was at a city known as Nine Territory City, located deep within the center of the Northern Spiritual

Realm. The previous Nine Territory Meeting had also been held at this location, and thus this city held the perfect precedent for playing the host.

This area was considered neutral territory. It did not belong to any particular force, so, whenever a force calls for a Nine Territory Meeting, they will become the host and entertain the other forces.

Normally, this city was not that festive. However, it had instantly been thrust into the limelight, after the Liu Territory had sent out news about the Nine Territory Meeting. It was even livelier when compared to the Entry Competition held by the Northern Spiritual Academy a while ago.

After all, only a few people were eligible for the Entry Competition. Although many would yearn for entry, the notion of victory or defeat would be meaningless to most of them. Therefore, they were really only seeking a kind of fantastic and lively entertainment, when they headed there.

However, the Nine Territory Meeting was different. It was a setup related to the Northern Spiritual Realm. Once any kind of turbulence broke out, it would be impossible for all the forces within the Northern Spiritual Realm to avoid it.

Thus, it was likely that everyone within the Northern Spiritual Realm would be paying attention to this matter, as it would affect them personally.

When Mu Feng and his troops arrived at the Nine Territory City, the city was already flocking with people. They could vaguely see numerous forces bring their men and surge within the city in waves.

This time, all the elites within the Mu Territory were sent out. Not only did Mu Feng lead the team personally, Zhou Ye, Mu Chen and the other 4 City Lords had followed as well. Even Wen Ling, who had recently advanced to a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master, had followed along. Coupled with the hundreds of men, their imposing manner was quite powerful and mighty.

And just like that, a commotion broke out through the entire Nine Territory City due to the Mu Territory's troops arrival. Countless forces

quickly moved to greet them, while Mu Chen returned the greeting as he laughed.

The Mu Territory's men stopped when they arrived at the stone temple located in the center of the city. Then, the 4 City Lords personally kept them in check as Mu Feng's gaze swept around. Afterwards, he seemed to have noticed other squadrons of elite troops. They were probably brought by the other Territory Lords. So it seems that those guys were also quite vigilant.

"Brother Mu."

As Mu Feng looked around, sounds of laughter rang out nearby. Mu Feng quickly turned his head around and saw Tang Shan coming over with his most trusted group of men.

"Brother Tang." Seeing this, Mu Feng quickly headed forward. At the same time, Mu Chen also followed and glanced behind Tang Shan. He was immediately startled. This was because he noticed that Tang Qian'Er had also followed Tang Shan over.

When Tang Qian'Er noticed Mu Chen, delight emerged instantly within her eyes. She blinked at him in amusement.

Mu Feng and Tang Shan quickly grouped up together. They whispered to each other with a serious expression.

"Why did you come as well," Mu Chen who was following behind Mu Feng asked the girl beside him.

"Dad seemed to place a great importance on the Nine Territory Meeting, this time. Since I would have been bored if I stayed in the Tang Territory, I followed him out here." Tang Qian'Er smiled. However, she immediately frowned. She glanced at the surroundings, before leaning over to Mu Chen and whispered, "I heard that the Liu Territory is planning something."

"En. Otherwise, why would they spend so much effort to call for a Nine Territory Meeting?" Mu Chen smiled and said, "Although the Nine Territories all possess the right to call for a Nine Territory Meeting, no territory has ever called for it, since they established the Nine Territory's

power structure."

"Have you heard of the name, Liu Jingshan, before," Tang Qian'Er whispered. "My dad seemed to speak in earnest about him..."

"Liu Jingshan?"

Mu Chen's heart jumped as his eyes narrowed. He whispered, "Liu Jingshan is Liu Qingtian's father. Back in the day, he was the strongest person within the Northern Spiritual Realm. However, he seemed to have disappeared 3 years ago. Why would your father suddenly be mentioning him?"

Tang Qian'Er shook her head and said, "I don't know either."

Mu Chen frowned. An uneasy feeling filled his heart. Liu Jingshan was the strongest person within the Northern Spiritual Realm back then. His strength was at the Spirit Stage Late Phase. Moreover, it was said that he had been only a step away from advancing to the Three Heavens Stage. However, before that could happen, he suddenly disappeared one day. Rumors were spread about how his cultivation had gone wrong, and he had died due to serious injuries.

"Could that old man still be alive?"

Mu Chen's heart shook. If Liu Jingshan was still alive, wouldn't the Liu Territory have 2 Spirit Stage Late Phase powerhouses if he came? If he included Liu Zong, there will be 3 Spirit Stage powerhouses. No Territory within the Northern Spiritual Realm could fight individually against this obscene strength.

Furthermore, the most disturbing fact was that Liu Jingshan already possessed Spirit Stage Late Phase strength 3 years ago. If he was still alive... no...If he improved, wouldn't he have advanced to the Three Heavens Stage by now?

Thinking about this point, Mu Chen sucked in a breath of cold air. Three Heavens Stage. It had not been seen within the Northern Spiritual Realm in many years. If a powerhouse at this stage appears within the Liu Territory, no force could compete with them within the Northern Spiritual

Realm.

Thoughts rapidly filled Mu Chen's mind, and he didn't look good. Seeing this, Tang Qian'Er secretly stuck out her tongue. She placed her hands behind her back and did not dare to say anything more.

When they entered the stone temple, Mu Chen saw Mu Feng looking over towards him. The latter's eyes were quite serious. Beneath that seriousness, there was a even a hint of uneasiness. It had been many years since Mu Chen had seen Mu Feng reveal such an expression.

It seemed that he too had obtained a bit of information from Tang Shan as well.

Within the stone temple, the area was extremely spacious. Numerous important figures were walking around. At the same time, the other territory lords had already arrived and were talking with each other. However, Mu Chen could detect that the atmosphere was a bit unnatural from their laughter sounds.

It seemed that this news had already been secretly spread out...

Mu Feng sat down on one of the stone seats as well. Mu Chen and Zhou Ye stood behind him. Then, Mu Chen glanced at the opposite side. At that location, there was a beautiful woman wearing a red dress, and her smile attracted numerous gazes. Moreover, Mu Chen was able to see a familiar figure behind her. It was Hong Ling. He had never expected that even she would follow her mother over to this place.

Hong Ling smiled when she noticed Mu Chen. Her peach-like eyes were moist and she displayed the enchanting aura that she inherited from her mother.

"Little girl, did you take a liking to the boy from the Mu Family?"

The beautiful woman's gaze had fixated on Mu Feng ever since he entered. She gently gritted her teeth before glancing at the handsome boy beside Mu Feng. Then, she directed a question to Hong Ling.

"Mom, what are you saying," Hong Ling blushed wildly as she said in embarrassment.

“That Mu Feng isn’t a good person. Thus, his son cannot certainly not be much better. If you don’t like him, then it’s best not to have any dealings with him,” The beautiful woman said in faint voice. A trace of resentment was slipped into her tone.

“You have obtained the entry to the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy ,and you will have a promising future. When the time comes for you to attend, you will meet many youths that are far more outstanding than that boy from the Mu Family.”

Hong Ling glanced strangely at her mother. She was vaguely aware of her mother’s affair when she had been young. Back then, her mother seemed to have pursued Mu Feng, yet she never succeeded. In the end, her mother became too discouraged and married her father as she was disheartened. However, her father had died, due to a grave injury from a battle. After all these years, her mother had maintained being single. Although time could change a lot of things, her mother still possessed a little bit of resentment towards Mu Feng.

“Mom, I just want to enter Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy, so I can train properly. As for the other affairs, we’ll talk about it later,” Hong Ling said in a faint voice. She glanced once more at the handsome boy beside Mu Feng, yet she had complex feelings within her heart.

The beautiful woman patted Hong Ling’s petite hands. Then, she stared bitterly at Mu Feng, who avoided looking over to that location, before retracting her gaze.

“Dad, that side has been looking at you ever since you’ve arrived.”

Mu Chen was also aware of the situation over there. He gently coughed and spoke.

“Shut up.” Mu Feng glanced fiercely at Mu Chen. This boy, he really is being insensitive.

Mu Chen smirked. It seems that his father was quite popular when he was young.

Within the temple, other territory lords gradually arrived as time passed.

Aside from them, a few well-known forces within the Northern Spiritual Realm had also arrived.

As more troops arrived, the scene within the temple gradually quieted down. Then, sounds of footsteps came from behind the temple. At that location, the curtains were raised and numerous figures walked out from behind it. At the same time, laughter rang out from Liu Qingtian.

“Haha, I would like to thank everybody for giving face to my Liu Territory. Since everybody has arrived, I feel extremely honored!” Liu Qingtian had a big smile plastered on his face as he walked into the temple. Then, he sat down on the seat of honor. Behind him, Liu Zong, Liu Ming and Liu Mubai followed him closely.

When Liu Mubai entered, his gaze fell on Mu Chen’s form. A hint of coldness emerged within his eyes, and he curled his lips at Mu Chen.

Mu Chen. Today, this place will become the burial ground for both you and your father!

Chapter 100: Liu Jingshan

Mu Chen was aware of Liu Mubai's cold gaze. He narrowed his eyes slightly, as his gaze gradually turned malevolent.

No matter what your Liu Territory is planning to do, I will not forgive you that easily if you dare to cause trouble for our Mu Territory!

Liu Mubai also understood the meaning within Mu Chen's eyes. The corner of his lips turned even colder. By you? Who do you think you are? I want to see just how pitiful you and your father will be later on.

Within the temple, everybody immediately cupped their hands, when Liu Qingtian appeared. Although the Northern Spiritual Realm was divided into nine territories, everybody knew that the Liu Territory was the force with the grandest background within the Northern Spiritual Realm. Moreover, they were probably the strongest force as well.

Mu Feng smiled faintly at Liu Qingtian as he cupped his hands. Nobody could tell whether or not he was angry.

"Ohoho, so Territory Lord Mu Feng also came? It's a pleasure," Liu Qingtian directed a smile towards Mu Feng. This smile seemed rather kindhearted. It seemed as if he had forgotten all about the conflicts they had in the past.

"Our ancestors were the ones that decided on the rules concerning the Nine Territory Meeting. Since the Liu Territory called for a meeting, it is only natural that I would come," Mu Feng smiled and replied.

Liu Qingtian nodded as he smiled.

Inside the temple, the other Territory Lords and the leaders of the forces all held a strange expression when they saw the two rivals' attitudes towards each other. Everybody in the Northern Spiritual Realm knew that the Mu Territory and Liu Territory were enemies. These two territories were truly seeking to eliminate one another. Thus, this act of theirs was quite amusing.

However, underneath that amusement, they felt the anxiety within their

hearts slowly growing. Liu Qingtian's behavior was somewhat abnormal.

"Ohoho, Territory Lord Liu. So why did you suddenly call for a Nine Territory Meeting and summon all of us? Are you going to announce a major event," Tang Shan asked as he smiled faintly.

The atmosphere within the temple instantly grew tense. Everybody's gaze shot towards Liu Qingtian, who was at the seat of honor. It was evident that Tang Shan's question was the question they all wanted to ask.

Liu Qingtian stared at the nervous gazes that were projected over the room. However, he smiled and gently patted the armrest. Then, he said calmly, "It's nothing much. I just have a proposal, so I wanted to seek everyone's opinion."

"Oh? What's the proposal?" Tang Shan smiled as he asked.

Liu Qingtian smiled and said, "Everybody should know this as well. The Northern Spiritual Realm is a rather weak realm within the Hundred Spirit Heavens. Therefore, we have no say in most situations. Putting it crudely, if another realm invades us in the future, the Northern Spiritual Realm won't be able to fight back. In the end, we would have to hand over our estates."

The temple was completely quiet. Everybody's gaze was sparkling, yet nobody followed up to speak. It was evident that they weren't sure what Liu Qingtian was planning to do.

"Ohoho. Territory Lord Liu is probably overthinking the situation. Our Northern Spiritual Realm is located at a remote place within the Hundred Spirit Heavens. Why would the other large realms take a liking to our place and spend great efforts to seize the Northern Spiritual Realm?" Tang Shan said jokingly.

"But what if...," Liu Qingtian said faintly.

"If Territory Lord Liu has something to say, then just say it. Stop teasing us with platitudes," Mu Feng smiled and interjected.

Liu Qingtian glanced deeply at Mu Feng. He lifted the corner of his lips and responded, "What I wanted to suggest is actually quite simple. The

Northern Spiritual Realm does not have a position within the Hundred Spirit Heavens , because we are not strong enough. And we do not have the strength because the Northern Spiritual Realm is completely divided. If we unite all the forces within the Northern Spiritual Realm, we would possess some ability even within the Hundred Spirit Heavens. Not only would nobody dare to invade us, we would even be able to expand our territory and obtain more resources. By then, who within the Hundred Spirit Heavens would dare to underestimate our Northern Spiritual Realm?"

The temple was silent. Shock flashed through numerous leaders' eyes. Liu Qingtian actually wanted to unite all the forces within the Northern Spiritual Realm? Is he crazy?

"How ambitious," Mu Chen mentally snorted. Could it be that Liu Qingtian was not satisfied with his own territory and wanted to become the overlord of the Northern Spiritual Realm?

Mu Feng and the other Territory Lords had calm expressions. At the same time, the leaders from famous forces did not speak a word either. All of the people here were crafty and cunning individuals, so how was it possible for them to not detect the hidden agenda underlying Liu Qingtian's plan?

"Ohoho, I wonder what everybody thinks about my proposal? If you think that it would not work, you could care to mention it. After all, we are thinking of the entire Northern Spiritual Realm's future," Liu Qingtian did not care about the strange atmosphere within the temple as he asked this.

"Territory Lord Mu Feng, what do you think," Liu Qingtian's gaze turned towards Mu Feng as he inquired.

Mu Feng's eyes narrowed. He stroked the table in front of him and chuckled, "I wonder how we would decide on the rules for the union? For a union like this, there should be a chieftain who controls the entire situation, right? Who would this chieftain be?"

Since Mu Feng was able to confront Liu Qingtian without being in a disadvantageous position, he was naturally not a simple person. When

this question was asked, everybody's eyes turned sharp.

Who here wasn't a leader within their own territories right now? Wouldn't they be suppressed by others after the union? There is a saying, that one should prefer to be the head of a dog than the tail of a lion. They do not want to turn from being the leader to someone inferior...

"The union is simple. We will form a Northern Spiritual Alliance. We will attack and defend together with everyone. As for the position of the chieftain, I believe that Territory Lord Mu Feng is the most appropriate," Liu Qingtian smiled.

At this moment, countless gazes instantly shifted towards Mu Feng. However, the latter's expression did not change. He denied this claim, as he shook his head, "I am well aware of my abilities, and I am not capable of being the chieftain."

Then, Liu Zong, who was standing behind Liu Qingtian, suddenly directed a wink at a certain direction. A force from over there immediately stood up and suggested, "I think the rules for the union suggested by the Liu Territory Lord may work. My White Horse Clan agrees to it. As for the position of the chieftain for the Northern Spiritual Realm, I believe that Territory Lord Liu would be suitable for it. After all, everybody is aware of the Liu Territory's strength. Moreover, he is quite persuasive. What do all of you think about this?"

Mu Feng secretly cringed, and his eyes sank.

The other 7 Territory Lords looked away and exchanged gazes with one another. Although the Liu Territory was the most powerful force within the Northern Spiritual Realm, it wasn't strong enough to suppress them all. Thus, it was impossible for them to recognize Liu Qingtian as the chieftain.

Seeing none of the other Territory Lords follow along with that advice, the smile on Liu Qingtian's face faded away as he said faintly, "Or do you all of you believe that the Liu Territory isn't prestigious enough?"

"Territory Lord Liu. I, Lie Yan, have always respected you. However, I worked hard to obtain the Lie Territory. As for the union, I am not

interested in it. Therefore, if Territory Lord Liu insists on forming a Northern Spiritual Alliance, I, Lie Yan, will not accompany you. I'll take my leave here." A middle-aged man suddenly stood up within the temple and cupped his head at Liu Qingtian as he spoke.

"Lie Yan, you dare disrespect our Liu Territory?!" Seeing this, Liu Ming immediately barked out in anger.

"Hmph, although I have always been polite to you, that does not mean that the Lie Territory is afraid of you!" Lie Yan originally had a fiery temper. Once he heard Liu Ming's words, he immediately retorted. Then, he waved his sleeves and walked away without saying another word.

Seeing this, everybody within the temple began to whisper. With Lie Yan as the lead, Liu Qingtian's wishful thinking had failed completely.

Mu Chen glanced at Liu Qingtian. However, he noticed that the latter had a faint smile on his face. The eyes that stared at Lie Yan were as vicious as a poisonous snake.

"Lie Yan, don't blame me for not reminding you. Once you exit this place, you won't have another chance." Liu Qingtian lowered his head and organized his sleeves as he spoke.

"Haha. Liu Qingtian, I might be a little bit afraid of you, but you're not qualified to say those words to me," Lie Yan laughed scornfully. He was at the Spirit Stage Middle Phase. Although he was weaker than Liu Qingtian, it was simply a joke if the latter thought he could suppress him like this.

As his laughter faded away, he took a step out of the temple.

Boom!

Just when Lie Yan took a step out of the temple, a deep sound rang out from the entrance of the temple. Then, everybody noticed a figure flying backwards. It flew back and destroyed countless stone pillars before landing at the center of the temple.

Puchi.

Fresh blood sprayed out from the figure when he landed. A horrified

expression emerged on his face.

WAHH.

Uproars immediately resounded out inside the temple. Numerous gazes stared in shock at Lie Yan, who was awkwardly splayed across the ground. Who could have hurt Lie Yan, who was at the Spirit Stage Middle Phase, in one move?

Mu Chen and Mu Feng's eyes narrowed instantly. They fixated their gaze on the entrance of the temple as a hint of uneasiness filled their hearts.

Liu Qingtian's face remained calm. However, a mocking smile appeared on his face.

Rustle.

The rustling of footsteps was heard from outside the temple. The commotion within the temple immediately quieted down. At this moment, everybody's gaze was focused at the entrance.

Under everybody's gaze, a thin, old figure slowly emerged at the entrance. He wore a grey robe and had an aged face. His eyes appeared as if they had sunk in deeply, like those of a withered corpse.

The grey-robed old man stood at the entrance with an expressionless face. His murky eyes slowly surveyed the people inside the temple. Then, he extended a pale hand out from his robe and coughed twice. He said with a hoarse voice: "Nobody can leave here without my permission today. The ones that leave here will-"

The grey-robed old man took another step forward. An extraordinary Spiritual Energy pressure that surpassed that of a Spirit Stage powerhouse emitted out from his bent body like a storm.

Bang Bang Bang!

The ones that were nearby could not withstand the Spiritual Energy pressure and shot back awkwardly.

"Die!"

Once the grey-robed old man spat out this word, the Spiritual Energy pressure was completely released. Cracks quickly spread out on the ground within the temple.

Outside of the temple, a fierce wind blew while the clouds gathered. At the same time, the Spiritual Aura within the world seemed to rampage.

At this moment, everybody's faces changed dramatically.

Mu Feng's hand gripped the armrest tightly. He clenched his teeth and a hoarse voice exited from the gaps of his teeth. With a bit of shock, the words creeped out one after another.

"Liu Jingshan...Three...Heavens... Stage!"

Chapter 101: Heavenly Fusion Stage

The entire temple was enshrouded by an amazing Spiritual Energy pressure. Underneath this pressure, everybody's face changed, and they stared in horror at the grey-robed old man.

This was a Spiritual Energy pressure that surpassed a Spirit Stage powerhouse. It could only have been coming from someone who stepped into the first stage of the Three Heavens Stage, the Heavenly Fusion Stage!

The so-called Three Heavens Stage was not a single stage. Rather it referred to three separate levels. The first level was known as the Heavenly Fusion Stage, the second level was known as the Heavenly Transform Stage, and the third level was the Heavenly Completion Stage.

Right now, the Spiritual Energy Pressure emitted from the grey-robed old man was something that only a Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouse would possess.

Heavenly Fusion Stage!

Everybody within the temple felt their mouth stiffen. How many years had it been since a Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouse appeared in the Northern Spiritual Realm? A powerhouse of this level would be considered as a genuine powerhouse even within the Hundred Spirit Heavens, not to mention within the Northern Spiritual Realm!

There were no less than 10 Spirit Stage powerhouses present at the scene. However, even with this number, they were completely powerless in front of a Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouse.

This is because the gap between them was just too big.

Just as its name suggested, the Heavenly Fusion Stage was able to integrate with the world and manipulate a portion of the Spiritual Aura within the world. The power from simply their gestures could destroy a mountain. It was not something that an ordinary Spirit Stage powerhouse could compare with.

"He's Liu Jingshan, the previous Territory Lord of the Liu Territory, and

once the strongest person within the Northern Spiritual Realm. So he was actually still alive!"

Within the temple, numerous gazes met with a bit of dismay. They could feel a bit of unease. The Northern Spiritual Realm could only maintain the current setup because a few forces had a relatively similar strength. Nobody was able to make another submit to them completely. Therefore, the Northern Spiritual Realm, because of this, had remained peaceful for so many years. However, Liu Jingshan, who had suddenly appeared, instantly broke the balance between the forces.

A Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouse would instantly increase the Liu Territory's strength to an exponentially terrifying extent.

Mu Feng's gaze fixated itself onto Liu Jingshan as he clenched his fists. Beside him, Mu Chen's face turned serious. It seemed that the news they obtained was true.

At this moment, Mu Chen turned around to look at the other Territory Lords. He discovered that their expressions were exceptionally ugly. Hint of fear emerged in their eyes, when they stared at Liu Jingshan. This reaction made Mu Chen sigh. If the 8 territories were to join forces, they wouldn't be particularly afraid of Liu Jingshan. But unfortunately, none of them had the courage to fight against a Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouse.

Inside the temple, a few individuals could not breathe due to the atmosphere. As he slowly walked in, Liu Jingshan glanced at everybody. Seeing this, Liu Qingtian hurriedly handed over his seat. However, Liu Jingshan waved his hand. His eyes stared at the crowd as he said faintly: "It's been a while since we've met with each other. I wonder if you still remember this old man?"

"Ohoho, Senior Liu was the strongest person within the Northern Spiritual Realm back in the days. Although you'd disappeared for 3 years, your prestige still remained. How could we forget you?" Tang Shan let out a dry cough and spoke with an unnatural, forced smile.

Liu Jingshan smiled faintly and muttered, "Since everybody remembers

me, you should know my personality as well. I have endured this 'scattered setup' within the Northern Spiritual Realm for many years. Now it's time to resolve it."

Hearing this, everybody's face changed.

"Senior Liu. We do not have much ambition within the Northern Spiritual Realm and do not wish to fight against the other large realms within the Hundred Spirit Heavens. Ohoho, isn't it quite nice right now," A Territory Lord asked.

Liu Jingshan glanced at him and answered, "Although you do not have much ambition, I do... From today onwards, the Liu Territory will form the Northern Spiritual Alliance, and I will bear the responsibilities of being the chieftain. As for the rest of you, it is voluntary whether you decide to join or not. However, although I said that, there are only allies and enemies within my eyes. If you're not willing to be my allies, then I can only treat you as my enemies."

Numerous faces inside the temple froze. Implied in Liu Jingshan's words was an obvious threat.

Liu Qingtian and the others smiled as they stared at everybody's changing complexion. With a Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouse, the Liu Territory had surpassed all the other forces within the Northern Spiritual Realm.

Liu Qingtian glanced at Mu Feng, who had a calm expression, and smiled wickedly. Mu Feng, Mu Feng, there is no chance of you turning the tables this time.

"Ohoho, what Senior Liu said is correct. We cannot just occupy a corner of the land throughout our lives. My White Horse Clan is willing to join the Northern Spiritual Alliance and serve Senior as our chieftain." The clan leader of the White Horse Clan, who spoke earlier, was the first to reply. He had a flattering expression, which made many curl their lips in disgust at him.

Although they were disgusted by his act, the situation had gone beyond many people's expectations. Under Liu Jingshan's indifferent gaze, the

leaders of many forces did not dare to argue back. At this moment, Lie Yan was still lying down on the ground. He was a Spirit Stage powerhouse, yet he didn't possess the strength to fight back against Liu Jingshan.

The true difference between a Spirit Stage and a Heavenly Fusion Stage had been revealed.

Thus, a few forces immediately followed the White Horse Clan and accepted the union. However, the remaining 8 territories' Territory Lord did not present their views yet. It was evident that they were struggling unwillingly within their hearts.

Liu Jingshan watched this scene calmly. Then, his eyes turned towards the 8 Territory Lords as he said slowly: "What about you?"

The 8 Territory Lord exchanged gazes with each other. Every single one of them had an exceptionally ugly expression plastered on their face.

"Senior Liu..." Tang Shan sighed and cupped his hand, "The Tang Territory is the something that I've devoted my life to. Therefore, I'm afraid that I cannot accept your invitation to join this union."

"So it seems that Territory Lord Tang Shan isn't interested in becoming an ally of mine. if that's the case..." Liu Jingshan smiled faintly. However, the smile gradually turned cold. The Spiritual Energy Pressure that filled the temple instantly gathered at Tang Shan's location.

Tang Shan's body suddenly became tense. In the next moment, dense Spiritual Energy erupted out from his body. The Spiritual Energy lights formed a golden tiger behind him, as a powerful Spiritual Energy emitted out.

"Roar!"

The golden tiger unleashed a roar. Ferocity flashed through Tang Shan's eyes, as he charged forward. The Spiritual Energy surged out and formed a golden claw. Then, it smashed viciously towards Liu Jingshan at lightning speed.

Tang Shan knew how powerful Liu Jingshan was. Therefore, he had to put all of his strength into his attacks. When facing a Heavenly Fusion

Stage powerhouse, he must have the mindset of going all out from the very beginning.

But against Tang Shan's violent offense, Liu Jingshan remained motionless. A touch of ridicule flashed through his murky eyes. He extended his bony hand out and smacked casually.

Buzz!

The instant Liu Jingshan smacked downwards with his palm, the Spiritual Aura within the world seemed to be affected by it. It gathered at his palm at an extraordinary speed and instantly turned into a giant clump of Spiritual Energy. Afterwards, it smacked down and collided against Tang Shan's fierce offensive.

Boom!

Shockwaves of Violent Spiritual Energy spread throughout the temple. Cracks suddenly spread through the ground, and even a few pillars were smashed to pieces.

Puchi.

Flying through the sky, Tang Shan suddenly spat out a mouthful of blood. The golden tiger behind his back dimmed as he flew backwards.

In just one attack, Tang Shan, who was close to being a Spirit Stage Late Phase, had been completely defeated.

"Dad!" Seeing Tang Shan gravely injured, Tang Qian'Er's face turned pale and she urgently called out.

Liu Jingshan remained motionless with an indifferent expression. Separated by air, he let out a punch. Rampaging Spiritual Energy surged out and smashed fiercely towards Tang Shan. Judging from his appearance, it seemed that Liu Jingshan was going to land the killing blow in order to set an example.

Seeing this, Mu Feng's eyes turned cold. He tilted his head and quickly said to Zhou Ye: "Zhou Ye, if the situation goes terribly, take Mu Chen and leave. Go hide inside the Northern Spiritual Academy!"

Zhou Ye's face twitched. He knew that even Mu Feng did not have the slightest confidence of dealing with this crisis. To them, a Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouse was much too powerful. It was enough to break the balance within the Northern Spiritual Realm.

Mu Chen remained silent. However, he was clenching his fists tightly. At the same time, a hint of madness flashed through his slightly drooped eyes.

He did not enjoy watching his loved ones being killed while he escaped to a place far away, in order to get revenge a few years later. It wasn't part of his character to just sit and watch. He would rather fight with all he's got and seek a chance for survival amidst the near-death situation.

Swish!

After Mu Feng quickly informed Zhou Ye, his body rushed out and appeared in front of Tang Shan. Spiritual Energy rushed out unreservedly from his body as he fired off a punch.

Bang.

A fiery red Spiritual Energy swept out like flames. It collided heavily against the Spiritual Energy attack that was blasted out.

Again, Violent Spiritual Energy shockwaves erupted out. Mu Feng's body shook and he quickly retreated a dozen steps. His fist was also shaking. Then, he stared solemnly at Liu Jingshan and said in a deep voice, "Senior Liu, is it necessary to act this savagely?"

"Mu Feng, huh? When you built a reputation for yourself, you were still a young boy. I never expected that you would be able to obtain the accomplishments you have today. You're quite amazing."

Liu Jingshan looked calmly at Mu Feng. A flash of coldness appeared within his sunken eyes as he said: "However, no matter who it is, I will personally kill them if they dare to interfere with the Liu Territory dominating the Northern Spiritual Realm today!"

"Then, I'll want to seek guidance from Senior Liu!"

Mu Feng's eyes turned cold. He knew that the Mu Territory and Liu Territory were enemies. Liu Jingshan would never let them go this easily. If that's the case anyway, why not fight to the bitter end?

"Brother Mu, I'll fight with you," Tang Shan exclaimed. Mu Feng by himself definitely was not Liu Jingshan's opponent. If they did not join forces during this moment, they wouldn't have the chance to do so in the future.

"Everyone. I do not want to hand over the efforts that I have devoted half my life to, to the Liu Territory. If you're still worrying about the consequences, the next one to be targeted will be you!" Tang Shan glanced at the other Territory Lords as he shouted out these words.

Hearing Tang Shan's cry, the other 6 Territory Lords' expressions changed. If they attacked, it would mean that they chose that camp. However, if they let Mu Feng and Tang Shan be defeated, they wouldn't have another choice and could only grovel beneath the Liu Territory.

"Senior Liu. You've really gone overboard this time. My Hong Territory is doing fine right now. We do not want to join the Northern Spiritual Alliance!" Hong Territory's Territory Lord, Hong Ling1, gritted her teeth and screamed out loud.

"My Luo Territory does not wish to join either!" Luo Territory's Territory Lord also agreed.

"My Yan Territory as well!" Lie Yan, who was injured by Liu Jingshan earlier, shouted out in anger.

In a few seconds, including Mu Feng and Tang Shan, a total of 5 Territory Lords stepped forward against Liu Jingshan. The remaining 3 Territory Lords were still wavering. A Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouse simply gave off far too much pressure for them.

Inside the temple, many leaders watched the scene progress. Their faces turned pale. How many years had it been since they'd seen such a formation?

"Five Territory Lords, huh, is there anyone else?" Liu Jingshan's eyes

glanced at Mu Feng and the others. He actually grinned and let out a cold smile.

"A group of ignorant fools..."

Liu Jingshan suddenly straightened up his hunched-over body. His grey robe fluttered without any winds as an amazing Spiritual Energy stormed out within the temple. In an instant, more cracks began to appear throughout the temple.

Boom!

Liu Jingshan's murky eyes turned ferocious. He took a step forward fiercely, as if he was an avalanche raining down from above. The large temple could not withstand the massive Spiritual Energy and began to collapse.

Accompanied with an amazing Spiritual Energy, Liu Jingshan's voice, which was dripping with killing intent, resounded out through the sky.

"Since these are your decisions, don't blame me for being merciless!"

Chapter 102: Deal

Boom!

Within Nine Territory City, an amazing Spiritual Energy exploded into the sky in a pillar of light. Fierce winds suddenly started blowing and everyone in the city felt the Spiritual Aura within the world tremble.

Numerous shocked gazes stared at the source of the light pillar. They had never seen such a powerful fluctuation of Spiritual Energy in their lives. The extent of the Spiritual Energy wasn't something that a Spirit Stage powerhouse could compare with.

When did a powerhouse of this level appear in the Northern Spiritual Realm?

"No matter who attempts to stop my Liu Territory today, I will kill them all!"

An old figure slowly emerged from within the towering Spiritual Energy light pillar. He did not need to borrow external strength in order to stand within the air. His sharp gaze was like a hawk and his cry resounded throughout the entire city.

Swish!

From the collapsing temple, five figures charged out. Each of them relied on their dense Spiritual Energy in order to stay afloat in midair. These five lights occupied a different direction, yet, they were all facing the old figure.

"That's Mu Feng and Tang Shan...They're actually five Territory Lords!"

"What are they doing? Just where did that old man come from? He has such a terrifying Spiritual Energy!"

"Holy! That's Liu Jingshan. That old man is still alive! Moreover, with this strength... Did this guy break past the Spirit Stage to advance to the Heavenly Fusion Stage?"

The commotion in midair instantly attracted everybody's gaze. Furthermore, shocked voices rang out when they noticed the

confrontation in the sky. It immediately caused an uproar in the city.

"It seems that the Liu Territory is attempting to form a Northern Spiritual Alliance and wants to gobble up the other forces. Five of the Territory Lords disagreed, so they joined forces to fight against the Liu Territory!"

Soon, news regarding the commotion spread out, which undoubtedly caused a bit of a shock to the people within the city. To the Northern Spiritual Realm, this major event was definitely sufficient to cause chaos.

"Mu Feng, do you really believe that you can defeat me if the five of you join forces? Based on the fact that you're all pretty strong, I will give you another chance. After all, it would be a severe blow to the Northern Spiritual Alliance if all of you were killed!" In the sky, Liu Jingshan stared at Mu Feng and the others as he said this in a deep voice.

"Senior Liu, I think you should give up on this. We aren't that ambitious and would only like to guard our own territories. Regarding the conquering of the Hundred Spirit Heavens, you should do it by yourself," replied Mu Feng with a faint smile.

"How stubborn!"

A small chill flashed through Liu Jingshan's eyes. He did not speak anymore. It seemed that the battle today was inevitable. Otherwise, the Liu Territory would not be able to scare the other forces within the Northern Spiritual Realm.

"Boom!"

A powerful Spiritual Energy erupted like a volcano from within Liu Jingshan's body. The overwhelming Spiritual Energy surged out and turned into a black double-headed dog behind him as a vicious aura emitted from the giant dog's body.

Seeing the black double-headed giant dog behind Liu Jingshan's body, Mu Feng and the others' expressions turned serious. This was a Double-Headed Hellhound, which was ranked 98th on the Myriad Beast Record's Earth Ranking. It was able to spew both winds and flames. Although it

was not considered to be a Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast, it was not far behind. 1 Within the High Rank Spiritual Beasts, it was regarded as a top existence.

The Double-Headed Hellhound formed by Liu Jingshan's Heavenly Fusion Stage strength seemed as if it was truly there. Compared to the Spiritual Beasts condensed by Mu Feng and the others, it was clearly more powerful.

"Today, I'll let you experience a Heavenly Fusion Stage's true strength!"

Liu Jingshan stepped on the air and immediately spun his hands around. The Spiritual Aura in the air gathered in his palm forming red-hot flames and black winds.

Exhaling wind and flame was the Double-Headed Hellhound's ability. Since Liu Jingshan had ingested its Soul Essence, he was naturally able to use this ability, Windfire Spiritwave!

Liu Jingshan smacked out with his palms. From one hand, flames twisted around like a giant fire python while black winds condensed into an enormous black tempest on the other hand.

Boom!

Together with an extraordinary Spiritual Energy fluctuation, the fiery python and black tempest stormed towards Mu Feng and the others.

Seeing Liu Jingshan's powerful attack, Mu Feng and the others' expression had turned completely solemn. They did not dare to treat it with the slightest neglect. The Spiritual Energy within their bodies was pushed to the extreme. Behind them, five powerful Spiritual Beasts were formed from Spiritual Energy light.

Among these 5 Spiritual Beasts, the fiery giant bird behind Mu Feng was naturally the most powerful. After all, the Dragonfire Bird was the only one that had truly reached Heaven Rank.

In the sky, the five territory lords used all their strength to form an attack with their dense Spiritual Energy. The overwhelming attack swept out and collided with the fiery python and the black tempest.

Boom!

The collision caused a massive rumble through the sky endlessly. Waves of Spiritual Energy rolled outwards and forcefully razed the buildings beneath the battlefield.

Countless individuals watched the battle in the sky with shocked expressions. Mu Feng, Tang Shan and the others were all reputed top-class powerhouses within the Northern Spiritual Realm. At this moment, all of them had pushed their strength to the limit. However, Liu Jingshan, who was facing them, remained motionless as he stood in the sky. Under his palms, wind and fire surged. He could actually mobilize the Spiritual Aura within the world casually, and so, with an unmovable state like a mountain, he blocked the fierce offensive from Mu Feng and the others.

So a Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouse was actually this terrifying. Even when he was against 5 Spirit Stage powerhouses, he still had complete control over the situation.

From within the temple, Mu Chen and the others rushed out. When they noticed the amazing confrontation in the sky, their faces turned grim. A Heavenly Fusion Stage's strength had completely surpassed their imaginations.

"Dad." Tang Qian'Er's pretty face was filled with anxiety. Her beautiful eyes were slightly red. It was evident that the current situation was making her feel extremely uneasy.

Beside Tang Qian'Er, Hong Ling also bit her lips tightly. Her father had died when she was young. Through all these years, she and her mother had depended on no one but each other. If something were to happen to her mother here, it would be a severe blow to her.

"Don't worry," Mu Chen said. He looked at the panicked expressions of the two girls and reached out to hold their slender wrists. Then, he pulled both of them behind him and said with a gentle voice, "They'll be fine."

Tang Qian'Er and Hong Ling stared at this boy's calm, handsome face. At this moment, they seemed to get affected by his calmness and the anxiety within their hearts faded away slightly.

“They’ll be fine? What a foolish dream. My grandfather hasn’t even gotten serious yet. Do you really believe that it was possible for them to defeat a Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouse if they joined forces? How naïve.” At a corner of the collapsed temple, Liu Mubai stared at Mu Chen with a mocking expression.

Mu Chen glanced at him and could not be bothered to respond. At the same time, Tang Qian’Er and Hong Ling winced behind Mu Chen’s back.

“Hmph, Hong Ling. You should come over to my side. If you persuade your mother to join the Liu Territory, I’ll guarantee your safety!” Liu Mubai grunted as he stared at Hong Ling, who was wincing behind Mu Chen’s back. He had always liked her. Although they seemed fairly close within the Northern Spiritual Academy, they were only friends. He had always wanted to advance their relationship, but had failed to do so.

Hong Ling glanced at Mu Chen and immediately gritted her teeth. She reached out with her icy and petite hand to hold onto the corner of Mu Chen’s clothes, as if this act could ease her anxiety a little.

Seeing this, Liu Mubai’s face turned blue. Then, he immediately shot a vicious glance at Mu Chen. Soon, I’ll make it so that you would wish that you were dead!

“Uncle Zhou, how is it?” Mu Chen ignored Liu Mubai and asked Zhou Ye, who was standing next to him and was staring at the sky with a serious expression.

“Not good. That old fart Liu hasn’t used his true strength yet...” Zhou Ye’s face darkened: “Even for the five Territory Lords together, it’s unlikely that they can be his opponent.”

“Then Uncle Zhou should help as well.” Mu Chen proposed.

“No, I must protect you. If the situation turns out bad, I will take you away with me. We can die, but you can’t!” Zhou Ye said in a deep voice.

“I won’t leave dad behind.” Mu Chen clenched his hands and replied slowly.

“Little Mu, you can’t act recklessly. While there’s life, there’s hope. As

long as you enter the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, you would be able to surpass the old fart within 3 years. When that happens, we need you to take revenge for us!" Zhou Ye snapped.

"If there is no other choice, I will do that." Mu Chen gritted his teeth. Within his eyes, a hint of scarlet color emerged.

"However, I will use everything I have to find a chance within the despair first. I won't let you die in front of me!"

Zhou Ye stared at the boy and let out a bitter laugh as he firmly patted Mu Chen's shoulder. How could there be a chance within the current situation? When Liu Jingshan became a Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouse, they were doomed to fail.

Mu Chen took a deep breath. Then, he glanced one more time at Mu Feng and the others, who were fighting with all they had in the sky. He slowly closed his eyes and his consciousness entered his aurasea.

Inside, he saw the Nine Nether Bird staring at him lazily from on top of the mandala flower.

"What? You want me to help? Dream on." A hint of ridicule passed through the Nine Nether Bird's eyes as a thought was conveyed over.

"If I die, it would not be good for you either. Once you're discovered, countless powerhouses would target you. This is because you are too powerful. However, you are way too weak right now." Mu Chen's voice was impervious to desires and passions. It was so calm that the Nine Nether Bird was surprised as well.

"Within my body, you can gradually recover. However, if you fall into the hands of those powerhouses, your situation would be several times worse than it is now, staying within my body."

The Nine Nether Bird's long eyes narrowed and it folded its wings against its body. It was evident that it was not deeply moved by Mu Chen's words. Although the situation outside was quite dangerous, it still had other measures it could take.

"Let's make a deal. You help me and I'll make you a promise." Mu Chen

said slowly.

"A promise?"

"I will promise that I won't ingest you." Mu Chen's voice was steady and firm.

A hint of light flashed in the Nine Nether Bird's eyes, but it immediately responded sarcastically, "Bah! Stop with the act. You can't even imagine how much benefit you'll obtain if you ingest my Soul Essence. Thus, your words have no credibility at all."

"You've been in my body for a while, so you should understand my personality."

Mu Chen said in a faint voice: "You are indeed powerful. I need to help my father now, otherwise, if he dies, rage will fill my heart. The hatred within me would also end up affecting you; I would definitely ingest you when I obtained the power to do so."

"Don't try to question whether or not I can do it. The black paper, which trapped you within my body isn't that easy to deal with. It would not be difficult to deal with you once I unlock its secrets. You should also realize this."

The Nine Nether Bird's wings spread out. A cold thought was conveyed over: "Are you threatening me?"

"I'm offering to make a promise which will be of great benefit to you. Moreover, if you do not help me in this situation, you will be Liu Jingshan's accomplice. I, Mu Chen, can distinguish hatred and kindness clearly. If you help me, I will naturally be grateful to you. Otherwise, I will not forgive anyone involved, when I have the ability to do so!" Mu Chen's voice was filled with decisiveness. If the Nine Nether Bird does nothing to help, he will let it go easily in the future.

Feeling the stubborn decisiveness within Mu Chen's voice, the Nine Nether Bird gradually turned silent. It laid down on the mandala flower. Shortly after, it slowly answered: "If I help you, you truly will not attempt to ingest me?"

“Once you have the ability to form you true body, you can decide whether or not you want to leave!” Mu Chen said in a deep voice.

“If you want me to help, it’s possible.” The Nine Nether Bird stared sharply at Mu Chen: “However, you must accept a condition of mine!”

Mu Chen did not hesitate and nodded heavily.

“Okay!”

Chapter 103: Borrowing Strength

Seeing Mu Chen accept its condition so easily, the Nine Nether Bird was stunned. A hint of suspicion emerged within its eyes.

"I have no choice right now. Therefore, there's no need for you to doubt me like this," Mu Chen said as if he knew the Nine Nether Bird's thoughts. He added with a calm voice: "No matter how much benefit I'll get from ingesting you, it's worthless compared to my father's life."

The Nine Nether Bird turned silent for a moment. It could feel the unwavering conviction within Mu Chen's voice. From the time it had hidden inside Mu Chen's body, it indeed gained some understanding in the latter's personality.

"As for the condition I want you to accept, there's no need to mention it now. We can talk about it after we overcome the current dilemma." The Nine Nether Bird extended its burning wings elegantly and said: "We'll first discuss how we'll defeat that old geezer at the Heavenly Fusion Stage."

"If I was in my peak condition, I would be able to defeat that old geezer in one attack. However, you should understand that I'm currently quite weak. Therefore, I can't help you get rid of him personally. So, everything is still up to you."

Mu Chen shook his head and replied, "I'm not his opponent."

"I will lend you my power temporarily. However, I must tell you that you are too weak right now. I don't know if your frail body can withstand my power. If a problem occurs, I won't have any way of resolving it either." The Nine Nether Bird slowly asked: "Do you still dare?"

"Lend me your power!" Mu Chen nodded without any hesitation.

"By relying on my power, you will temporarily reach the Heavenly Fusion Stage. However, you must remember that it's only temporary. If you cannot kill the old geezer during that period of time, you'll be the one that suffers misfortune." The Nine Nether Bird explained.

“Okay!” Mu Chen nodded again. No matter what, he would never just watch Mu Feng die in front of him!

“In a while, you should control the mandala flower and weaken its suppression. I will then transmit my powers to you.”

The Nine Nether Bird had a calm expression as it said: “Of course, if you don’t believe me and think that I will harm you the instant you weaken the mandala flower’s suppression, then there’s no need for us to talk anymore.”

“I trust you,” Mu Chen smiled and responded.

“Oh?” A hint of interest flashed through the Nine Nether Bird’s eyes: “You believe me this easily? Should I call you innocent or just plain naïve? Could it be that you’ve already forgotten that I’ve secretly attacked you before?”

“This situation is different from back then. Inside your bones, there is a sense of pride that humans cannot compare with. Since you’ve given me your word, you won’t do anything else aside from that.” Mu Chen smiled.

The Nine Nether Bird did not speak, as it didn’t want to respond to the comment.

“No matter what, I will have to thank you this time. I will remember this favor deep within my heart.” Mu Chen took a deep breath. A hint of sincerity could be found in his voice. No matter how it does it, the Nine Nether Bird was the only one that could help him right now. Moreover, since the latter was willing to lend its power to him at this critical moment, Mu Chen would be grateful towards it, regardless of its reasons.

“This is only a deal, stop attempting to make friends,” The Nine Nether Bird grunted impatiently and said: “Instead, you should prepare yourself.”

Mu Chen smiled and nodded. Then, his consciousness slowly exited his aurasea and his closely shut eyes opened up. At this moment, a rumbling sound rang within his ears. In the sky, an amazing Spiritual Energy Pressure was being emitted in waves.

“Are you alright?” Tang Qian’Er stared at Mu Chen in concern. She

noticed that Mu Chen had closed his eyes suddenly and thought that something had happened to him.

Mu Chen shook his head. He saw the anxiety in Tang Qian'Er's expression and smiled slightly: "Tang Qian'Er, don't worry. Believe me. It won't go as how Liu Jingshan wishes."

Tang Qian'Er and Hong Ling were somewhat surprised as they stared at Mu Chen. At this moment, the boy's handsome face still maintained its calmness. However, compared to before, it somehow made them feel more at ease.

It was as if the boy had some sort of confidence now.

Although Tang Qian'Er did not understand where Mu Chen's confidence stemmed from, she believed in the latter. Thus, she smiled.

Beside him, Zhou Ye secretly let out a bitter laugh. This boy, he really knows how to comfort others. Based on the situation right now, he would have to knock him unconscious if he was unwilling to leave. It was fine if he and Mu Feng died in this place, but if Mu Chen died, it would be completely over.

Mu Chen lifted his head and stared at the sky. The battle had reached its climax, as Mu Feng and the others had pushed their Spiritual Energy to the limit. Every single fierce attack would make any Spirit Stage powerhouse turn pale. However, Liu Jingshan's face did not change at all. A powerful Spiritual Energy surged out from his palm. Flame and black wind gushed out like two giant whips and completely suppressed Mu Feng and the others.

Although the battle seemed to have reached a stalemate stalemate, everyone could tell that Liu Jingshan was acting leisurely. It was evident that he was not using his full strength. On the other hand, Mu Feng and the others' faces had turned completely red.

The enormous gap between the Spirit Stage and the Heavenly Fusion Stage was slowly being revealed.

In the city, numerous forces watched as Liu Jingshan calmly fought 5

Spirit Stage powerhouses. The observer's faces also turned pale and fear emerged slowly within their hearts. A few of them secretly sighed. It seemed that the Northern Spiritual Realm would belong solely to the Liu Territory.

The previous balance was destroyed.

Liu Qingtian smiled, and he stared at the sky while his hands were behind his back. Not far away, the other 3 Territory Lords that did not attack also had pale expressions. A hint of bitterness emerged on their smile. So a Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouse was actually this terrifying. It was unlikely that it would have helped if they joined the fight to help Mu Feng and the others. In the future, it would be best to please the Liu Territory. With the Liu Territory's strength, it would not need to suppress them too much. The other Territory Lords would be able to obtain a decent status at least.

"Ohoho, the 3 Territory Lords, please rest assured. From now on, you are friends of my Liu Territory. My Liu Territory has always treated friends kindly." Liu Qingtian glanced at the 3 Territory Lords and smiled.

Hearing this, the 3 Territory Lords let out a hollow laugh. They quickly displayed a respectful and submissive attitude.

"Haha."

Seeing the Territory Lords, who were at an equal footing with him before, display such an expression, Liu Qingtian could not help but laugh out loud. The sound of his laughter was filled with pride.

A hint of fury surged through the 3 Territory Lords when they heard Liu Qingtian's laughter. However, they forcibly suppressed it. The situation right now wasn't the same as before.

"Ohoho. It seems that father is about to use his true strength." Liu Qingtian did not care much about them and suddenly lifted his head.

Hearing this, the 3 Territory Lords' hearts jumped. They quickly raised their head.

In the sky, the flame and the black wind faded from Liu Jingshan's

palms. He stared indifferently at Mu Feng and the others, who had a vigilant and serious expression, as he called out: “Have you had enough yet?”

“If you’ve had enough, then it’s time to end this game. I’m quite old, and I do not have that much energy to play with you all.”

Liu Jingshan took a step forward. At that moment, numerous individuals could see that the Spiritual Aura within the world was gathering quickly beside him. The surging Spiritual Aura was like an enormous wave and was an impressive display of power.

“Myriad Waves Mountain Pulverizing Palm!”

Liu Jingshan had a cold expression, as he suddenly fired off a palm. Billowing Spiritual Energy surged out from his palm and formed a gigantic handprint. A devastating Spiritual Energy radiated from the handprint.

Boom!

The instant that the handprint appeared, it enveloped the entire sky. It directly and fiercely suppressed Mu Feng and the others.

Boom!

Underneath the handprint, the air exploded. Countless waves swept out, and crashing sounds resounded through the sky. It made the air tremble violently. Even the buildings beneath the handprint were instantly smashed to the ground.

Feeling the devastating Spiritual Energy fluctuation that enveloped them, Mu Feng shouted, “We’ll attack together!” The five of Territory Lords instantly pushed their Spiritual Energy to the limit and the Spiritual Beasts behind them roared up at the sky. Five light beams containing all their Spiritual Energy exploded out.

Bang Bang Bang!

The attacks from both sides collided fiercely in midair. A Spiritual Energy shock wave that could be seen with the naked eye was created by the collision. In the sky, endless explosion sounds rang out and brought

forth an amazing gale.

Puchi!

As the gale emerged, Mu Feng and the others' bodies trembled. Then, they spat out a mouthful of blood as they each tumbled downward like broken kites.

Just when Mu Feng was about to hit the ground, he forcibly stabilized his body. He wiped the blood from his mouth and shouted out in the direction of Zhou Ye: "Run!"

"Mu Territory's troops, kill them!"

Hearing Mu Feng's cry, the Mu Territory's troops stationed outside of the temple instantly let out bloodthirsty cries. Then, they rushed towards the temple like a flood.

"Stop them!"

Liu Qingtian sneered and waved his hand. From the opposite direction, troops flooded in and blocked the Mu Territory's troops.

"Dad!"

"Mom!"

Tang Qian'Er and Hong Ling stared at Tang Shan and Hong Ling, who were covered with blood on top of a stone tower. Their pretty faces were completely pale and their bodies trembled.

"Brother Zhou, please bring them away with you!" Tang Shan's face was pale. He immediately turned his head towards Zhou Ye and shouted out.

Zhou Ye's face was gloomy. He stared at the chaotic situation appearing within his eyes and gritted. Then, he grabbed onto Tang Qian'Er and Hong Ling as he shouted towards Mu Chen: "Little Mu, let's go!"

Mu Chen's body did not move. It seemed to be trembling slightly.

"You want to leave?!"

Liu Qingtian was also aware of the situation over at this side. He instantly let out a sneer and his body turned into a light figure as he

charged over. A dense Spiritual Energy gathered beneath his palm. Then, he blasted the palm over.

Zhou Ye hurriedly appeared in front of Mu Chen and fired off a punch. The dense Spiritual Energy caused the ground to crack open as it collided against Liu Qingtian's palm.

Bang!

Waves of air swept out. A muffled sound suddenly emitted from Zhou Ye's throat as he was forced back a dozen steps or so. After all, he was only at the Spirit Stage Initial Phase while Liu Qingtian was at the Spirit Stage Late Phase.

"Boy from the Mu Family, don't even think about going to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. You will be buried in this Northern Spiritual Realm!"

After knocking aside Zhou Ye with a palm, Liu Qingtian appeared in front of Mu Chen as quickly as a ghost. He sneered as he fiercely fired off a palm filled with Spiritual Energy at Mu Chen.

"Asshole Liu, you're seeking death!"

Seeing the attack on Mu Chen, Zhou Ye was extremely angry. He issued a fierce cry and charged madly at Liu Qingtian.

Not far away, Mu Feng noticed the situation appearing over there and instantly lost his spirits. It was as if his brain had turned completely empty.

"Haha, Mu Feng. I'll help you get rid of your genius son!" Liu Qingtian's face was extremely hideous. The palm winds were becoming increasingly sharp as the palm smacked down.

But just when the palm winds were about to hit him, Mu Chen, who had made no movements until now, suddenly raised his head. In his eyes, a mysterious black flame arose. Then, the corner of the boy's lips slowly lifted up in Liu Qingtian's narrowed eyes.

Boom!

Mu Chen's hand instantly appeared in front of him and completely blocked off Liu Qingtian's fierce attack.

The fierce Spiritual Energy impact emitted beneath Mu Chen's feet caused the earth to crack open.

At this moment, countless people widened their eyes. This is because Mu Chen, who endured Liu Qingtian's fierce attack, stood motionless like a boulder.

"How is this possible?!"

Surprise instantly filled Liu Qingtian's eyes. He stared at the strange smile of the boy in front of him and a hint of unease appeared within his heart. But just when he was about to retreat backwards, Mu Chen's palm turned into a claw and it clawed downwards. An irresistible force emitted out and Liu Qingtian's body smashed down to the ground, causing the hard ground to shatter.

Mu Chen's eyes were cold. He lifted his feet and stepped fiercely on Liu Qingtian's back. At this moment, the earth instantly collapsed.

Puchi.

Liu Qingtian spat out a mouthful of blood. Horror filled his eyes. He never imagined that a Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase boy would suddenly possess such fearful strength.

Naturally, he wasn't the only one that was surprised. Even Zhou Ye, who was rushing over, suddenly stopped moving and stared at the scene in daze.

Numerous gazes gathered at this location as well. Tang Qian'Er and Hong Ling could not help but cover their mouths with their hands. In the rear, Liu Zong, Liu Mubai and the others were all stunned.

"Mu Chen..." Mu Feng was also stunned. Everything that was happening there was beyond his imagination.

"Asshole, you're seeking death!" Liu Jingshan's eyes turned cold. A hint of killing intent filled his eyes.

Mu Chen ignored his voice and lifted his feet. He kicked Liu Qingtian's chest and sent the latter flying. For hundreds of meters, long, deep tracks appeared in the ground.

Many people sucked in a cold breath. Just what had happened?

After sending Liu Qingtian flying, Mu Chen slowly lifted his head. The eyes, that had burning black flames within them, stared at Liu Jingshan like a vicious beast. Then, a hoarse voice echoed throughout the sky.

"Old geezer, you haven't asked whether or not I'll agree to you killing my dad!"

Mu Chen gripped his hands tightly. Black Spiritual Energy surged out like flames from his body. At this moment, a powerful Spiritual Energy pressure emitted throughout the entire city.

As they felt the Spiritual Energy pressure, everybody, including Liu Jingshan, changed complexions.

This is because the strength of the Spiritual Energy had actually reached the Heavenly Fusion Stage!

Chapter 104: Fighting Liu Jingshan

The moment that amazing Spiritual Energy pressure was emitted from Mu Chen's body, everybody within the city was completely dumbfounded. Countless individuals stared blankly at the boy's figure, as rumbling waves flooded their hearts. Their minds had stopped completely.

How could he possess such terrifying strength?

"Impossible!"

Liu Zong, Liu Ming and Liu Mubai were speechless. They had an incredulous expression plastered on their face as if they had just seen a ghost.

"Heavenly Fusion Stage?!"

In the sky, Liu Jingshan, who had maintained an indifferent expression all this time, suddenly narrowed his eyes. His gaze fixated itself onto Mu Chen's body, which had black flames rising up from the surface. The pressure of this Spiritual Energy was in no way inferior to his. It had become evident that Mu Chen had also reached the Heavenly Fusion Stage at this moment.

The entire city was perfectly silent.

Moreover, under numerous surprised gazes, Mu Chen's eyes focused on Liu Jingshan's body. He seemed to smile as he spoke, "Old geezer, don't think that you can act recklessly within the Northern Spiritual Realm just because you have reached the Heavenly Fusion Stage. I'm afraid that the Liu Territory's wish to create the Northern Spiritual Alliance will not be realised today."

"Brat, don't get too carried away. Although I don't know why your strength has exponentially increased, that power does not belong to you. If you want to stop me with that power, I'm afraid you're still too naïve." Within Liu Jingshan's voice, fury surged and pressured one's soul.

"Then, we'll have to see if that's true."

Mu Chen smiled. He clenched his hands and the skin on the back of his

hands cracked open. Tiny amounts of blood oozed out. The Nine Nether Bird's power was too strong for him. It was clear that his body was being forced to suffer a tremendous burden in order to withstand this strength. However, he couldn't afford to care about that right now.

Swish.

Mu Chen appeared in the sky and confronted Liu Jingshan, who was far away from him. The pressure from two Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouses' Spiritual Energy surged out in waves as they fiercely collided with each other.

A thunderous sound seemed to echo throughout the entire space.

At this moment, Mu Feng, Tang Shan and the other 3 Territory Lords had landed on the ground. They exchanged gazes with each other before their eyes fell onto Mu Feng. However, the latter could only let out a bitter laugh. The current situation had already surpassed his expectations. He too did not understand where Mu Chen obtained this power.

But this wasn't the time to care about it. Mu Chen's strength had suddenly increased to the point of being able to compete with Liu Jingshan. To them, this was a pleasant surprise. The originally irreparable situation had now truly changed.

From here on, they could only watch to see if Mu Chen would be able to overturn this unfavorable situation single-handedly.

As these thoughts were flashing through the Territory Lords' minds, the figures confronting each other in the sky, gradually intensified their Spiritual Energy pressure. Although they hadn't taken action yet, this imposing manner had completely enveloped the city.

Boom!

A muffled sound rang out as another wave of Spiritual Energy pressure collided once again. At the same time, a hint of coldness flashed through the eyes of Mu Chen and Liu Jingshan.

Swish!

Their bodies seemed to have moved at the same moment. They rushed through the sky like lightning, and ,in an instant, they collided with each other above the city.

Liu Jingshan's expression darkened. Since Mu Chen's power increased suddenly, he did not dare to underestimate him. A punch accompanied with rumbling Spiritual Energy was blasted out. With its momentum, it could have easily shattered an entire mountain.

Against Liu Jingshan's powerful attack, Mu Chen did not show the slightest signs of dodging. Instead, a mysterious black flame emerged from within his eyes. Black Spiritual Energy surged out from the Nine Nether Bird and appeared on the surface of his fists. Within that black Spiritual Energy, there was a smoldering black flame.

Dong!

Two powerful fist winds, containing extremely powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuations, fiercely collided with each other. A rumbling sound resounded instantly. Then, visible shockwaves were emitted from their fists. As these shockwaves touched tall buildings inside the city, the buildings instantly turned into powder.

In midair, the two figures both retreated back dozens of steps. A hint of seriousness filled Liu Jingshan's eyes as he stared at Mu Chen. In the earlier Spiritual Energy collision, he could feel that Mu Chen's Spiritual Energy was extremely bizarre. The strange black flame within the black Spiritual Energy seemed to scorch his Spiritual Energy whenever they collided.

"The source of this boy's strength is quite mysterious and strange. I must use my full strength to deal with it." This idea floated within Liu Jingshan's mind. He instantly clicked his tongue, and a rumbling sound rang out from his mouth.

Behind Liu Jingshan, the Spiritual Aura within the world surged and gathered. The density and power emitting from it made a few Spirit Stage powerhouses' heart jump. A Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouse was just too powerful.

Take this!

Liu Jingshan took a step forward. At this moment, the entire sky seemed to tremble a little. He issued out a cry as he fiercely punched out with both hands.

Jingshan's Punch! 1

Buzz!

Liu Jingshan's punch was like the wind. Billowing Spiritual Energy was being turned into yellow Spiritual Energy clumps, as it accompanied the winds from the fist. In a few seconds, the entire sky was filled with the violent Spiritual Energy clumps as they rushed towards Mu Chen.

Every single Spiritual Energy clump had the power to gravely injure a Spirit Stage powerhouse. It was even more terrifying because there were so many of them gathering together.

Mu Chen stared at the fierce offense that enshrouded him. A hint of light flashed through his black eyes. Then, he actually charged over.

Swish!

The Spiritual Energy clumps that filled the sky howled. However, at the very last moment, Mu Chen's body turned extremely blurry, and after images emerged behind him. He directly passed through the fierce offensive with a phantom-like speed.

"What speed!"

Liu Jingshan was slightly shocked by Mu Chen's speed. It seemed that this boy had trained in a Movement Spiritual Art as well.

"Swish!"

Mu Chen's body passed through the clumps of Spiritual Energy that filled the sky. Then, he straightened out two fingers, as a dazzling golden light radiated from them.

"Try one of my attacks as well,"Mu Chen shouted out coldly, as he stabbed at the air with his two fingers. An extremely overbearing golden light exploded out from within his fingers. It tore through the air and

fiercely charged towards Liu Jingshan.

With Mu Chen's current strength, the destructive power of the Spirit King Finger could almost destroy a mountain.

"Hmph!"

Liu Jingshan watched the golden light surge over. The domineering fluctuation within it made him focus even more. He immediately let out a muffled shout and lifted his arm slowly. Then, he blasted out a punch with an extremely heavy expression.

"Buzz!"

Right when Liu Jingshan's slow and strange punch was shot out, the Spiritual Aura in front him shook. It vaguely seemed to turn into a gigantic mountain of approximately 300 meters tall.

Dong!

Liu Jingshan's heavy punch landed on the gigantic mountain and caused the mountain to tremble. Soon, it turned into a deep yellow light which had the power of a mountain as it collided with the golden light that ripped through the sky.

Boom!

As the two lights collided, an amazing Spiritual Energy shockwave was sent out. At this moment, a storm was raging fiercely within the area.

"You're quite capable. Let's see how many punches you can block!"

Liu Jingshan's sleeves instantly disintegrated. His bony arms expanded rapidly. His veins trembled as a feeling of power was emitting from them.

"Mountain God Tactics, Regretful Mountain God Fist!"

A cold cry resounded from Liu Jingshan. At this moment, his fists energy detonated and numerous, gigantic mountains were formed beneath the fists. These mountains were formed of dense Spiritual Energy, and suddenly, heavy fists of wind surged out endlessly at Mu Chen.

"I'll receive as many punches as you throw!"

Facing Liu Jingshan's overwhelming offensive, Mu Chen did not back down. Brilliant golden light spewed out from his two fingers like a peerless divine spear, tough and overbearing.

Take this!

Mu Chen's fingers suddenly thrust out and the air in front was instantly torn apart. Numerous golden lights erupted from Mu Chen's fingers. Moreover, hints of black flames surged around on the surface of the golden lights.

Buzz!

Everybody within the city raised their heads at this moment. They watched the boundless mountains and the domineering golden lights with astonished expressions.

A battle of this level was too impressive.

Dong Dong!

The overwhelming offensives that covered the sky collided fiercely. As the golden lights collided heavily with the mountains, amazing Spiritual Energy shockwaves exploded out.

The Spiritual Energy shockwaves set off a storm in the sky. As the storm swept out, cracks appeared within the city. A few buildings even collapsed directly.

At this instant, everybody was awkwardly dodging the powerful and matchless Spiritual Energy impacts.

Mu Feng and the others lifted their heads. The entire sky was filled with golden and yellow lights. It was as if the sun's rays were obscured by it.

As they watched the collisions, they sighed deeply. They could clearly feel how powerful a Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouse was once again. When they fought against Liu Jingshan earlier, there was no need for him to use his true strength.

"Heavenly Fusion Stage."

Mu Feng clenched his hands tightly. He had been stuck at the pinnacle

of the Spirit Stage Late Phase for many years and failed to take the final step. However, he seemed to have understood something vaguely after his fight with Liu Jingshan and watching this huge battle.

This feeling made him understand that he might be able to step into the stage that he had dreamed of, as long as he secluded himself for a while after the fight.

Just when Mu Feng was enlightened, the fiercely domineering battle in the sky had finally ended. As the lights that filled the sky faded away, an old figure and a young figure reappeared in everybody's eyes.

Both of them were unscathed. However, the Spiritual Energy rumbling near their bodies made everybody understand that their fight had entered the climax.

On Liu Jingshan's arms, his snake-like veins were writhing. He stared sharply at Mu Chen, who was nearby, as he let out a dark expression. He never imagined that he would fail to defeat Mu Chen with his fierce offensive earlier.

The latter's strength had surpassed his expectations. However, it was still not enough!

Liu Jingshan took a deep breath and slowly formed seals with his hand. At this moment, his face turned solemn. Then, an indescribable heavy pressure emitted out quietly.

"Mu Chen, I trained tirelessly for many years before I finally mastered the Mountain God Tactics. Today, I'll test it out on you!"

Liu Jingshan's eyes were cold. As his shout faded away, deep yellow lights swept out overwhelmingly behind him. Within those lights, a yellow mountain that was approximately 3000 meters tall was gradually formed.

On this mountain, the cliffs and boulders were vivid and realistic. It was like a genuine object. Once it appeared, the sky was forcibly oppressed. Even the ground below was crumbling.

Mu Chen's eyes focused as he witnessed this scene.

Liu Jingshan's hand seals changed and he fired off a palm. With an enormous shadow, the 3000 meter tall mountain actually soared and charged towards Mu Chen.

"Mountain God Tactics, Earth Sealing Mountain!"

Chapter 105: Rank 3 Spiritual Array

The towering mountain, which seemed frighteningly realistic, was forcibly tossed up from the ground. It soared across the sky and emitted out such heavy fluctuations of force, that it caused the earth below to fracture. When it reached him, it enveloped Mu Chen and fiercely suppressed him.

As the mountain descended, the air within the world seemed to let out the sound of compressed explosions. An enormous arc of air swirled together into a circular shape underneath the mountain.

Mu Feng and the others watched this attack and could not help but gulp. Their scalps began to feel a little numb. If the mountain descended down, at least half of the city would be destroyed.

The destructive power that a Heavenly Fusion Stage possessed was too far beyond that of the Spirit Stage.

“I wonder if Mu Chen can defend against this attack.” Mu Feng and the others stared worriedly at the thin figure of the boy in the sky. Underneath the massive mountain, he was tiny, just like an ant.

Hu.

Under countless gazes, Mu Chen slowly spat out white air. A hint of seriousness flashed through his eyes, which had a black flame burning inside of them.

His hands suddenly formed a few mysterious seals.

As his hand were changing between the seals, a dense, dark-black Spiritual Energy was gathering in the center of his palm. In a couple of seconds, the dark-black Spiritual Energy had formed into two black seals which were approximately 3 meters tall.

These black seals naturally came from the Limitless Death Seals that Mu Chen had trained in, but the Limitless Death Seals he had condensed at his current level were many times stronger than before.

Even after Mu Chen had condensed two Limitless Death Seals, he did

not stop. Instead he continued on. From the center of his palm, dark black Spiritual Energy gathered once again. As the Spiritual Energy gushed in and out, a seal of black light emerged once again.

The third Limitless Death Seal!

Mu Chen stared at the third Limitless Death Seal, which emitted an extraordinary Spiritual Energy pressure. However, his eyes were still flashing as he continued to change seals. Another dark-black light ring emitted out endlessly from the center of his palm.

Rumble.

The fluctuations from the dark-black light ring seemed to emit muffled sounds of Spiritual Aura as they collided with each other. Then, the black light ring shrank within Mu Chen's palm as if it was going to become yet another dark black light seal soon.

Mu Chen was actually attempting to condense a 4th Limitless Death Seal in one go!

Although Mu Chen had always been training hard ever since he had obtained the Limitless Death Seal, he was never able to succeed in condensing the 3rd Limitless Death Seal. However, this time, he relied on the Nine Nether Bird's power and finally completed it.

He could feel how terrifying the backlash would be once he formed the 4th Limitless Death Seal. If it wasn't for Nine Nether Bird's domineering Spiritual Energy, coupled with the black flame's magical effect of being able to ignite Spiritual Energy, Mu Chen might have already destroyed his meridians during the backlash.

Four 3-meter-tall Limitless Death Seals floated beside Mu Chen and every one of them emitted a black lightwave. It actually enveloped Mu Chen's surroundings within a range of dozens of meters. Inside this field, the air seemed to become distorted and would seem like a mysterious black hole if looked at from far away.

As the four Limitless Death Seals emerged, Mu Chen took a deep breath, and his eyes turned sharp. He waved his sleeves and formed a fist with his

hand. Then, he fired off a punch towards the mountain descending down at him.

Bang!

When the punch blasted out, an enormous sound rang out from the air. The 4 Limitless Death Seals trembled before shooting out with a swishing sound.

The 4 Limitless Death Seals surged out in a straight line, and black light waves rippled over the place where they passed by. Looking from afar, it seemed that there truly was a black hole flashing across the sky.

Every single one of the Limitless Death Seals was extremely fast. In the blink of an eye, they appeared beneath the mountain and fiercely collided with its base without any sign of stopping.

Bang!

As they collided with each other, an amazing shockwave of Spiritual Energy radiated outwards at a maddening pace.

Kacha.

The 1st Limitless Death Seal soon shattered underneath the impact.

“How fragile!” A cold sneer flashed across Liu Jingshan’s face when he noticed this.

Dong!

But just when Liu Jingshan was about to sneer again, the 2nd Limitless Death Seal, which contained overbearing Spiritual Energy that surpassed the first one, charged over. The black light waves quickly spread out, and the massive mountain shook violently as the speed of its descent began to slow down.

The would-be sneer on Liu Jingshan’s face turned ever so serious.

Dong!

The 3rd Limitless Death Seal followed closely. A black light imprint covered the base of the mountain. Then, an extremely overbearing energy

emitted out and forcibly halted the mountain's descent.

And just when the mountain was unable to descend down, the 4th Limitless Death Seal rushed over. It quietly released the most terrifying energy out of all the previous attacks.

Boom!

A black light emerged from the bottom of the mountain. It was like the darkness that appeared in the sky after sunset. Underneath this black light, even the sunlight vanished.

The entire world's colors seemed to have turned slightly dim at this moment.

Dong!

As numerous individuals watched in shock at the darkness that was radiating, a muffled sound rang out. Then, the numerous eyes that were watching this scene narrowed.

From the base of the mountain, a massive black beam pierced through the mountain like a pillar supporting the sky. In the end, it even penetrated through the peak of the mountain.

It was a stupendously spectacular scene.

"How is this possible?!"

Liu Jingshan's body trembled. As he trembled, a hint of doubt emerged in his eyes. He had already pushed his strength to such a degree, yet it was blocked by Mu Chen?

"Hu." In the city, Mu Feng and the others let out a sigh of relief.

Buzz!

At this moment, the black light beam expanded and affected the entire mountain. Finally, a loud bang rang out as the mountain was forcibly destroyed by the light beam before it faded away in the distance.

The all-out attack by Liu Jingshan was perfectly defeated by Mu Chen like this.

“That bastard!” Liu Qingtian, Liu Zong and the others had a grim expression as they watched this scene occur in front of their eyes. Within their incredulous eyes, a hint of panic emerged. They never imagined that a boy, who seemed insignificant in their eyes, would suddenly possess such terrifying strength. Not even Liu Jingshan, who stepped into the Heavenly Fusion Stage, could defeat him.

In the sky, the black lights on Mu Chen’s fingertips faded away slightly. He lifted his head and stared at Liu Jingshan, who was staring at him grimly from nearby.

As they stared at each other, they actually did not attack again. It was evident that they could tell how powerful the other person was.

“To be able to corner me to this extent, you are quite amazing.”

Liu Jingshan stared at Mu Chen as he let out a deep breath. It was as if he wanted to let out all the grievance within his heart through this singular breath. However, his eyes remained cold and he warned: “Although I don’t know where this power of yours appeared from, it ultimately does not belong to you. Therefore, you probably can’t endure this power for a long time. On top of all that, you only have the strength of a Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase. It’s impossible for your body to endure this sort of power. Don’t think that you can hide this from me. I’m not that blind.”

Mu Chen’s eyes flashed. Liu Jingshan was indeed a Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouse. His keen eyesight was not something an ordinary person could compare with. As he continued to use the Nine Nether Bird’s power, his body started to show signs that it could not endure the power anymore. Under his clothes, a fine trail of blood had appeared on his skin. Fresh blood slid down from his body and dropped down from his fingertips.

“What the old geezer said is true. You can’t endure it any longer. If you can’t kill him, I’ll advise you to immediately take your father and leave.” The Nine Nether Bird’s cold thoughts resounded within Mu Chen’s mind.

Mu Chen curled his lips and nodded: “I know.”

Liu Jingshan stared at the silent Mu Chen. However, he had a faint smile on his face. It was evident that he had spotted what Mu Chen feared he would. He waved his sleeves and said: “For my following moves, I only need to maintain a stalemate with you. Your strength will gradually become weaker, and when that happens, it will be all too easy for me to kill you.”

In the city, Mu Feng, Tang Shan and the others quieted down. Although they didn’t know what had happened to Mu Chen that made his strength swell, that power clearly did not belong to him. And regardless of how this power appeared from the outside, he did not possess the endurance of a true Heavenly Fusion Stage like Liu Jingshan.

Liu Qingtian and the others were relieved when they heard these words. They started to stare wickedly at Mu Chen. This boy is too mysterious. They must eliminate him. Otherwise, they wouldn’t be able to rest or eat in peace.

In midair, Mu Chen stared at Liu Jingshan, who had a mocking expression on his face. He smiled and said: “As expected, the older you are, the wiser you become.”

“Then what are you planning to do now?” Liu Jingshan smiled mockingly. He already knew Mu Chen’s weakness. The latter currently possessed a Heavenly Fusion Stage strength, but it wouldn’t be enough to kill him. As long as he keeps dragging it on, Mu Chen will definitely die.

“Everything will be fine so long as I kill you before I lose this power,” Mu Chen smiled and replied.

“Interesting.” Another hint of seriousness flashed through Liu Jingshan’s eyes as he retorted: “However, I’m afraid you aren’t capable of doing that, even if you borrowed more external strength!”

Mu Chen directed an enigmatic smile towards Liu Jingshan. Then, his eyes gradually turned cold before he closed them tightly. At the same time, his body retreated quickly. As he retreated, his fingers danced around. Then, many individuals were becoming mere witnesses, as Spiritual Seals began to emerge at a rapid pace from his fingertips before they floated

around his surroundings.

In a couple of seconds, Mu Chen's surroundings were filled with dazzling Spiritual Seals. The amount was nearly equal to 100 seals!

In the city, there were a few Spiritual Array Masters present. However, they started to gape as if they had seen a ghost when they saw the hundred seals dancing around Mu Chen.

100 Spiritual Seals?

That is something which could only be done by an excellent Rank 3 Spiritual Array Master!

Could it be that Mu Chen is going to arrange a Rank 3 Spiritual Array?

Chapter 106: Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array

"100 Spiritual Seals?!"

When the hundred spiritual seals emerged, sparkling like stars near Mu Chen, Liu Jingshan's face instantly changed. A hint of horror appeared within his eyes.

Although he wasn't a Spiritual Array Master, he had experienced numerous events within his lifetime. Naturally, he understood that a Spiritual Array which was arranged with a hundred Spiritual Seals would be considered extremely powerful even among Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays. Once this level of Spiritual Array was arranged successfully, it's power could truly tremble the heavens and shock the world.

"A Rank 3 Spiritual Array!"

These words exited out from the gaps of Liu Jingshan's teeth. An extremely dense murderous intent filled his eyes. This time, he was finally able to feel a small sense of danger from the situation. Although he did not know whether or not Mu Chen could really arrange a Rank 3 Spiritual Array, there was no doubt that Mu Chen made him feel that it was possible for him to die.

"I must not let him arrange this Spiritual Array!"

The murderous intent within Liu Jingshan's heart surged out. Although a Spiritual Array of this level was extremely powerful once it was arranged, a Spiritual Array Master still possesses a fatal weakness. That weakness is that it requires time for them to arrange a Spiritual Array. Moreover, they could not be overly disturbed during this period of time. And yet currently, Mu Chen was actually daring enough to to arrange a Spiritual Array during this fierce fight. In many people's eyes, it was an extremely foolish and desperate thing to do.

"Go to hell!"

At this moment, Liu Jingshan's face was extremely gloomy. He did not

hesitate at all and turned into rainbow light as he charged towards Mu Chen. At the same time, he blasted both his fists out. Dense Spiritual Energies surged out and formed into numerous mountains as they fiercely suppressed Mu Chen.

But facing Liu Jingshan's attack, Mu Chen's eyes remained tightly closed. A dark Spiritual Energy emitted out from his feet, then, his figure instantly became blurry and brought forth numerous afterimages. While floating in the sky, he was dodging everything with a phantom-like speed.

Boom!

The giant mountains that were condensed from fist winds carried an extremely heavy and sharp Spiritual Energy as they charged towards Mu Chen. However, they failed to touch his body.

"What a fast speed!"

Seeing Mu Chen's phantom-like speed, Liu Jingshan was surprised and immediately gritted his teeth. Right now, it was evident that Mu Chen was planning to stall for time as he arranged the Spiritual Array. Therefore, all his concentration was placed on avoiding his attacks.

But the more it was like this, the more he couldn't let Mu Chen succeed with it.

"Fish Roaming Spiritual Art!"

At this moment, Liu Jingshan's body trembled. His entire body seemed to have softened up and he tore through the air with an alarming speed towards Mu Chen.

Liu Jingshan's body looked extremely strange, as he travelled across the sky. The scene looked like a fish swimming in the ocean. However, his speed was extraordinary. It was evident that he had used a Movement Spiritual Art right now in order to catch up with Mu Chen's speed.

Liu Jingshan's body quickly approached Mu Chen. A hint of seriousness flashed through his eyes and he formed claws with his hand. On his claw-like hands, violent Spiritual Energy flashed as he attempted to grab onto Mu Chen's throat.

As the winds coming from the claws surged out, the air seemed to explode.

But just when Liu Jingshan's air slashes were about to touch Mu Chen's body, the latter seemed to have perceived in advance, and his body shook. Numerous afterimages layered themselves on top of one another and the winds from the claws passed through the afterimages.

"Damn it!"

Liu Jingshan's complexion changed. Not only were Mu Chen's movements strange, but, more importantly, he seemed to be able to perceive his attacks in advance. He would instantly change trajectories when he perceived Liu Jingshan's attacks, causing the attacks to miss completely.

"I won't believe that you can keep dodging forever!" Liu Jingshan gnashed his teeth and his attacks suddenly became even more ferocious. Sharp claw winds tore across the sky and overwhelmingly attacked Mu Chen.

Swish Swish Swish!

Facing Liu Jingshan's attacks, Mu Chen's figure turned even more phantom-like. His eyes remained closed, yet his body danced around like a leaf floating in a storm. He allowed the storm to do whatever it wanted, yet it would not tear him apart.

As Mu Chen constantly evaded Liu Jingshan's attacks, everybody could see that the hundred Spiritual Seals had gradually integrated into the air. At that location, extraordinary Spiritual Energy fluctuations were being endlessly emitted. All the Spiritual Aura within the world seemed to be converging in that direction.

Mu Feng and the others watched the scene nervously. Whether or not they could break through the dilemma today would depend on Mu Chen successfully arranging that Spiritual Array.

The suffocating battle continued in the sky. However, as time passed by, everybody could tell that Liu Jingshan wasn't as calm as earlier. It was

evident that he noticed he wouldn't be able to disturb Mu Chen if this continued on. The latter seemed to be separated from the world. Moreover, what was truly surprising everybody was that he could dodge Liu Jingshan's fierce offensive even when he had shut off all interference from the outside world.

All of this made people secretly wonder if the boy in front of them could accomplish this seemingly impossible matter.

"Swish!"

In the sky, Liu Jingshan had suddenly stopped moving. At this moment, his face was slightly distorted. The murderous intent within his eyes had condensed to the point that it was almost corporeal.

He fixed his gaze on Mu Chen's phantom-like figure. Behind him, a dark color had already emerged. The air was distorted and a massive Diagram Array was taking shape.

It seemed that it was impossible for him to obstruct Mu Chen from completing the Spiritual Array.

"Today, I'll see what you're made of!"

A shout filled with killing intent rang out from Liu Jingshan. He immediately retreated backwards. As he retreated, a dense Spiritual Energy surged out from his body.

At that moment, an extremely strange fluctuation emitted from Liu Jingshan's body.

Everybody directed their gaze over to Liu Jingshan. Then, they were surprised to see that Liu Jingshan's body was swelling up rapidly. Black light completely covered the surface of his body.

Kacha,

Liu Jingshan's clothes ripped as his body quickly swelled up. In a few seconds, he had actually discarded his human form and changed into a massive giant beast.

It was a huge black hound. The two heads on the hound had hideous

mouths filled with sharp fangs from which saliva dripped. As it appeared, even the air fluctuated a little bit.

The huge black hound spat out a couple of breaths. One of its hideous mouths spewed out flames while the other mouth had black winds forming within it. An extremely evil fluctuation emitted endlessly as it rippled through the sky.

Liu Jingshan had actually transformed into the Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence that he ingested, Double-Headed Hellhound!

At this moment, numerous individuals' expressions changed. Even Mu Feng and the other Territory Lords took a deep breath. They were naturally aware that the Double-Headed Hellhound that Liu Jingshan had transformed into was not an illusion. It was a Double-Headed Hellhound that possessed its true strength and aura!

"So a Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouse could ingest a Soul Essence to such a degree!"

Mu Feng and the others' hearts trembled. Although all of them had ingested Spiritual Beast's Soul Essences, they could only condense the Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence using their Spiritual Energy at most. It was absolutely impossible for them to directly transform into a true Spiritual Beast like Liu Jingshan.

Right now, Liu Jingshan not only possessed his original body's strength, he also possessed the toughness and true ability of the Double-Headed Hellhound. It was amazing to an extent that it was terrifying.

Roar!

The Double-Headed Hellhound which Liu Jingshan transformed into roared at the sky. Within its scarlet eyes, a hint of fierceness emerged. Although he had changed into such a form right now, Liu Jingshan was still Liu Jingshan. He still possesses a clear rationality and would not behave like a Spiritual Beast just because of this change.

However, this was truly a combination of a Spiritual Beast's tough body with a human's wisdom. It was only because of this that it was terrifying.

Bang!

The Double-Headed Hellhound opened its hideous mouths. A fire dragon as well as a black storm erupted out. It was evident that this violent Spiritual Energy was many times more powerful and vicious compared to his human form.

Mu Chen's body quickly brought out afterimages as he avoided the attacks. Although he managed to avoid being hit in a vital point, his clothes were ripped in half and he revealed his body covered with fresh blood.

"Roar! Roar! Roar!"

The Double-Headed Hellhound roared madly and the Spiritual Aura within the world became violent. Under many horrified gazes, numerous fire dragons and black storms erupted out in the sky overwhelmingly. This time, it had enveloped the entire region's sky. It was impossible for Mu Chen to retreat!

As they watched this scene, Mu Feng and the others' hearts were beating especially fast. Even their palms were covered with cold sweat.

Rumble!

The fire dragons and black winds were like ferocious beasts and they revealed a hideous appearance as they charged towards Mu Chen.

In the city, everybody immediately held their breath. They did not dare to even mutter a single word.

The heat brought by the fire dragons had already caused the scraps of clothes on Mu Chen's body to turn into ashes as the fierce winds dispersed the ashes. This violent offensive was getting closer...

But just when Mu Chen was about to be enveloped in the violent offensive, his tightly shut eyes opened up.

Within his black eyes, a black flame arose. It was extremely mysterious.

Chi Chi.

On Mu Chen's body, numerous bloody fissures began to crack and form.

Fresh blood oozed out, yet Mu Chen remained motionless. His bloody hands slowly formed another seal as a hoarse voice rang out.

"Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array, Activate."

Buzz!

When the final syllable was uttered, a strong black light erupted out from the space behind Mu Chen. Under many gazes, the black light extended and formed into an extremely complicated dark Spiritual Array.

The light beams from the Diagram Array emitted out. They could vaguely see a mysterious black lotus slowly blooming.

Numerous black lotus petals descended down and landed in front of Mu Chen. It allowed the flame dragons and black storms to bombard it as much as they wanted.

Boom Boom Boom!

Violent Spiritual Energy fluctuated crazily in the sky. However, when the flames and black winds dissipated away, everybody's eyes narrowed. This was because the black lotus petal that protected Mu Chen had remained unharmed.

"Next up..."

Mu Chen's hands trembled slightly, and he wiped the blood off the corner of his mouth. Even this minor action caused a tremendous amount of pain to him. His body had reached its limits in enduring the Nine Nether Bird's power.

But it wasn't the time for him to fall now.

Mu Chen's eyes, which had burning black flames in them, stared quietly at the distant Double-Headed Hellhound. Then, he immediately tapped the sky with his slender finger which was covered with blood. Sounds of mutters rang out.

"It's time to slay the hound..."

When the voice faded away, the massive and mysterious black demonic lotus emitted a deathly wave of energy.

Chapter 107: Exterminate

Boom!

As it illuminated the sky with a black light, the massive and mysterious black lotus soared through the sky at an alarming speed and emerged above Liu Jingshan, who was still transformed into the Double-Headed Hellhound.

While the black lotus slowly rotated, numerous lotus petals began to bloom. The entire world seemed to become dim at this moment as the Spiritual Aura within the world converged on the black lotus.

This fluctuation was extremely alarming.

Within Liu Jingshan's blood-red eyes, a hint of unease flashed. From the mysterious black lotus, he could feel a hint of death.

At this moment, the only thing he could do was to use all of his strength to resist it. This was definitely Mu Chen's last resort. As long as he managed to block it, it was certain that Mu Chen would die.

Roar!

A roar filled with killing intent rang out from Liu Jingshan's mouth. A ferocious aura surged out from his body as the two hound heads opened their hideous mouths.

Flames and black winds gathered rapidly within the respective mouths, distorting the surrounding air.

Everybody in the city watched this scene nervously. They could tell that the two people in the sky were using their last resorts.

"Blackwyrm Firestorm!"

At this moment, all of the Spiritual Energy within Liu Jingshan's body began to circulate. The fiery light and black winds, located at each of their hideously respective mouths, expanded hundreds of meters in size. In an instant, a roar containing a murderous intent bellowed out once again.

Boom!

The entire sky seemed to tremble at this moment. Then, countless individuals were witnesses as a flame dragon and a black wind dragon, each hundreds of meters tall, rushed out from Liu Jingshan's mouth.

The two enormous dragons charged towards the sky and entwined with each other. As the two dragons converged, the flames were fanned by the winds, and it burned more furiously. The violent ferocity of the Spiritual Energy also increased exponentially and was extremely shocking.

This attack was truly Liu Jingshan's strongest technique!

Everybody watched the entwined twin dragons in awe. These dragons carried a peerless Spiritual Energy as they charged directly towards the mysterious black lotus. Behind them, a long tail formed by shining lights emerged.

At this moment, the final lotus petal slowly bloomed on the mysterious lotus.

A dark-black light, like darkness that invaded the earth, converged swiftly at the center of the black lotus. In the center of the lotus, a black liquid seemed to be dripping down.

At this moment, the dark-black light suddenly became stronger.

Swish!

Everybody noticed that the mysterious black lotus trembled slightly at this moment. Then, a black beam that was hundreds of meters wide silently erupted from the black lotus.

From the looks of it, this black light beam did not possess an overly violent Spiritual Energy. It was like a black pillar of water that descended down from the sky as it surged through the sky. Under many people's nervous gazes, it collided with the fire and wind dragons.

Dong!

A Spiritual Energy shockwave emitted from the point of contact, and the entire world seemed to tremble at this moment.

Roar!

The twin dragons roared and struggled to breakthrough. Waves of matchless and violent Spiritual Energy emitted out and attempted to dissipate the black light pillar that descended upon it. However, what shocked everyone was that no matter what the twin dragons did, the black light beam remained motionless. It was like a pillar supporting the sky and was unmoved by the confronting dragons.

As Liu Jingshan watched this scene, the uneasiness within his eyes increased. Although the black light beam was not extraordinarily imposing, it still gave him the chills.

In the distance, Mu Chen watched the confrontation in the sky calmly. He immediately moved his fingers gently and the black lotus in midair crumbled. It turned into a black liquid and fused with the black light beam.

Swish

As the black lotus faded away, an enormous black lotus imprint emerged on the surface of the black light beam. The hidden brilliance within it had finally been exposed.

Hidden dark-black lights erupted from the light beam. At this moment, the twin dragons gave a shrill cry. Then, many people were aghast to see that cracks had surfaced on the fire and wind dragons' bodies.

At that instant, Liu Jingshan's eyes narrowed.

Boom!

A shocking sound resounded out. The black light beam had actually penetrated through the fire and wind dragons forcibly.

In the instant that the twin dragons were penetrated, horror poured out from Liu Jingshan's eyes. A feeling of death swarmed through and consumed his heart in terror.

Under the threat of death, he immediately turned into a black light and retreated. He could feel that he would definitely die if that mysterious black light landed on him!

Waa!

Sounds of shock broke out in the city as they noticed Liu Jingshan fleeing suddenly. Even Liu Qingtian's expression had turned pale.

"You want to escape?!"

Mu Chen's cold eyes stared at the black light that was Liu Jingshan. He had used all possible measures in order to force Liu Jingshan to this hopeless situation. If he allowed him to escape, everything he did would be completely useless. After all, the latter would come back after he rested for a period of time. As for Mu Chen, he wouldn't be able to borrow the Nine Nether Bird's power every time.

Therefore, he must eliminate Liu Jingshan so there wouldn't be any future troubles.

Swish!

As the killing intent within Mu Chen's heart surged, the black light beam that had pierced through the twin dragons suddenly made a turn. It tore through the sky and chased after Liu Jingshan at an intense speed.

The black light beam was as swift as lightning. In only a few seconds, it had appeared behind Liu Jingshan.

"No!"

Liu Jingshan shouted in horror. He furiously roused his Spiritual Energy and placed a massive Spiritual Energy barrier behind his body.

Boom!

However, the black light beam did not care and charged straight at it. Finally, it landed on the Spiritual Energy barrier.

Kacha.

The seemingly powerful Spiritual Energy barrier was completely ineffective at this moment. The black light beam was like the sickle of a death god, and it easily ripped through the Spiritual Energy barrier. Then, it smashed into the Double-Headed Hellhound, which was Liu Jingshan, fiercely.

“Ah!”

At that instant, Liu Jingshan’s cries of despair and fear resounded throughout the sky.

Dong!

Amidst the screams, the black light beam forcefully pierced through Liu Jingshan’s body before it shot off to a distant mountain. The entire earth trembled as the mountain instantly vanished.

At this moment, the entire city was completely silent.

This was because they had witnessed the Double-Headed Hellhound disappearing completely as the black light beam passed by, not even its bones remained.

It was a scene as though he had been forcefully erased from the world.

In the sky, the violent Spiritual Energy fluctuations subsided quickly. Even the extraordinary battle earlier had completely faded away.

Within the city, numerous people exchanged glances with each other as they stared at the empty sky. Liu Jingshan was killed just like this?

A Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouse had fallen like this?

Liu Qingtian, Liu Mubai and the others stared blankly at the place where Liu Jingshan had vanished. A feeling of dizziness emerged from their minds and they could not help but sit down on the floor.

The excellent situation they had originally, the ambitions of dominating the Northern Spiritual Realm, all of this was completely destroyed?

And everything was caused by Mu Chen, who they did not think of highly before?

“How could this be...” Liu Qingtian’s body trembled. His eyes no longer had the sharpness they had earlier. What replaced it was a deep sense of fear. This time, the Liu Territory had offended all the forces within the Northern Spiritual Realm. Yet, the only person they could have possibly relied on had been killed. From now on, the Liu Territory would definitely take a severe blow within the Northern Spiritual Realm.

Beside Liu Qingtian, the other 3 Territory Lords that did not help out Mu Feng and the others also took a deep breath. They stared grimly at Liu Qingtian and slowly moved away. It was evident that they did not want to have any relation to the Liu Territory anymore.

"Brother Mu Feng. I never imagined that your Mu Territory would actually have hidden such a trump card," Tang Shan muttered as he recovered from his shock.

A few Territory Lords nearby also looked at Mu Feng with a complex expression. Within their eyes, fear arose. They were genuinely shocked by the attack that Mu Chen had unleashed.

No wonder Mu Chen was able to become the only person that qualified for the Spiritual Road within the Northern Spiritual Realm.

Hearing this, Mu Feng could only smile bitterly. He knew nothing about this. Moreover, he did not expect that Mu Chen possessed such power...

In the sky, Mu Chen glanced at the place where Liu Jingshan had vanished. After he confirmed that the latter's aura had completely vanished, he finally let out a sigh of relief.

But just as he sighed, the power within his body rapidly subsided. A feeling of powerlessness quickly emerged. At the same time, intense pain rose throughout his body and he felt that his body had become completely useless.

Powerlessness surged through Mu Chen's mind. In the end, his body wobbled and he lost consciousness as he fell from the sky.

Seeing this, Mu Feng hurriedly rushed out and caught Mu Chen, who was completely covered in blood. Then, he landed on the ground carefully.

"Uncle Mu, is he alright?" Tang Qian'Er hurriedly approached. She could not help but bite her lips when she noticed that Mu Chen was covered in blood.

"His is still breathing. He should only be unconscious."

Mu Feng examined Mu Chen for a while before letting out a heavy sigh

of relief. Then, he exchanged gazes with Tang Shan and the others. A hint of chill flashed through their eyes.

"Qian'Er, please take care of this boy."

Mu Feng handed over the unconscious Mu Chen to Tang Qian'Er. When the girl saw this, she hurriedly grabbed onto Mu Chen's waist without caring about the tainted blood all over his body. The robust feeling and manly aura made her blush. Then, she secretly stared at the unconscious boy's handsome face as her heartbeat increased.

As Tang Qian'Er's heartbeat increased, many people within the city were staring at the Territory Lords, who approached the Liu Territory's troops with expressions devoid of compassion. They secretly sighed to themselves. Next up, it would be the concluding act. The Liu Territory's position within the Northern Spiritual Realm would definitely plummet. On the other hand, by relying on the fear of Mu Chen, the Mu Territory would undoubtedly become the strongest force within the Northern Spiritual Realm.

The setup of the Northern Spiritual Realm would still change. However, it was still many times better than having been forcibly annexed by the Liu Territory...

All of this was due to this boy.

A few gazes stared at the boy in the beautiful girl's arms. Their hands covered their mouths, and a touch of admiration passed through their eyes. The Mu Territory's Little Lord had definitely exceeded his father.

After this battle, Mu Chen's name would definitely become known to everyone in the Northern Spiritual Realm.

Chapter 108: Conclusion

The large battle in Nine Territory City had ended with Mu Chen killing off Liu Jingshan. Moreover, everything that had happened here spread throughout the Northern Spiritual Realm at an extremely rapid pace.

As predicted, the Northern Spiritual Realm was completely shaken by this news.

There were only a few people that could remain calm after hearing about the shocking battle. Most of them gradually widened their eyes and were startled within their hearts.

That person, Liu Jingshan, had been a Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouse!

How many years had it been since a powerhouse of this level appeared in the Northern Spiritual Realm at all?

But now a powerhouse of this level had finally emerged, yet he was killed without displaying its might. Furthermore, the most shocking thing was that the person who killed him was only a youthful boy!

Nobody could fathom exactly how this outcome occurred. However, it was a cold truth that many people had personally witnessed. No one was foolish enough to question it, and they could only keep the shock to themselves. Just exactly how powerful was the Mu Territory's Little Lord?

Amidst the shock, Mu Chen's name spread through every corner of the Northern Spiritual Realm. By relying on it, the Mu Territory's reputation also soared and far surpassed the Liu Territory. Already, there were signs that they were becoming the strongest force within the Northern Spiritual Realm.

As for the Liu Territory, ever since their ambitious plan was ruined, it was as if a fatal blow had been dealt to them. Originally, Mu Feng and the others planned on eradicating the Liu Territory from the Northern Spiritual Realm, but ultimately they did not. This was because the Liu Territory still possessed immense power even though Liu Jingshan was

killed and second, their opinions did not coincide. During this Nine Territory Meeting, the Mu Territory's reputation had increased significantly due to Mu Chen. It was evident that some of the forces were afraid that the Mu Territory would become arrogant. If they were to join forces and eliminate the Liu Territory, it would be most favorable to the Mu Territory.

Since there was no consensus, the Liu Territory was preserved. However, they still suffered heavy losses. Half of the Liu Territory's lands were divided by the other territories. Furthermore, the Liu Territory would have to pay various compensations, which would make their family bankrupt.

And since the Liu Territory was going downhill, everybody chipped in and gave them a push. Right now, the Liu Territory was extremely unpopular. The Liu Territory's powerhouses, who submitted to them, had all left, and this caused the Liu Territory to suffer another severe blow. However, they could only swallow it down like harsh medicine. After offending many forces and losing Liu Jingshan, the Liu Territory was no longer the strongest force within the Northern Spiritual Realm.

In the future, it was highly likely that they would continue to weaken until they truly vanished from this realm.

However, they could not resist this painful consequence of their actions and could only submit to suffer.

Not only was Liu Jingshan killed during the battle in the Nine Territory City, even Liu Qingtian's ambition and courage were destroyed. From now on, it was unlikely that they would have the guts to start another battle similar to this...

The trauma planted in them this day was too terrifying.

...

As the Northern Spiritual Realm was being strongly affected by the Nine Territory Meeting, Mu Chen remained unconscious. In regards to his unconscious state, even Mu Feng had no solution. When he attempted to use Spiritual Energy to investigate Mu Chen's situation, he discovered that his Spiritual Energy vanished completely once it entered Mu Chen's body.

After repeated tries, he could only give up.

Fortunately, he was relieved by the color gradually being restored to Mu Chen's face while he was unconscious. The injuries within his body must be gradually healing. However, the speed of recovery was quite slow...

This slow recovery lasted for nearly two weeks. Finally, Mu Chen awoke from unconsciousness.

In the quiet and refreshing room, Mu Chen's eyes twitched as they opened slightly. Faint sunlight entered his eyes and caused them to sting.

This pain gradually vanished. As he adjusted to the intensity of the sunlight, he opened his eyes completely.

What he saw was a familiar environment. This was his room, so he should have returned back to the Mu Territory?

At this moment, bursts of pain emerged within his head and Mu Chen's throat made a dry, muffled sound. It took a while for his head to gradually recover. Then, he placed his palms on the side of his bed and struggled to get up. However, he noticed that his hand was pressing onto supple hair. He hesitated slightly before turning his head around. At the side of his bed, there was a slender figure resting as she was laying down on the side of the bed.

"Sister Qian'Er?"

Mu Chen stared at the familiar figure and was a bit surprised. Why was she here?

As if she was aware of the movements on the bed, the girl beside the bed opened her beautiful eyes in a daze. Then, she looked blankly at Mu Chen, as he stared at her.

Seeing that the boy in front of her had awakened, the daze within Tang Qian'Er's eyes vanished. A hint of delight surged out: "Mu Chen, you're finally awake?"

Mu Chen directed a smile towards Tang Qian'Er and sat up properly on the bed. As she saw this, Tang Qian'Er hurriedly lifted him up with her

slender hands as she simultaneously placed a pillow behind Mu Chen.

Her soft and fragrant hair stroked his face and caused it to itch. At this moment, Mu Chen could not help laughing as he noticed that the girl had become this thoughtful.

"What is it," Tang Qian'Er asked when she noticed Mu Chen laughing inexplicably.

"It's rare to see Miss Tang taking care of others," Mu Chen continued to laughed.

Tang Qian'Er's pretty face turned red. She pouted as she said: "Who wanted to take care of you? It's because my father has been talking business with Uncle Mu recently. Since I'll be bored in the Tang Territory anyways, I followed along with him. Furthermore, Uncle Mu didn't have time to take care of you, so that's why I came to take care of you."

Mu Chen smiled, but he did not expose the girl's act. Moreover, he was truly powerless at the moment. This time, his injuries were too grave.

"I'll go get some water for you." Tang Qian'Er muttered to Mu Chen before turning around to leave.

Mu Chen stared at Tang Qian'Er's figure as she left, before he finally closed his eyes tightly. His consciousness entered his body. The majority of the injured meridians in his body had already recovered while he was unconscious. However, the Spiritual Energy light wheel within his aurasea had become quite dim and lacked Spiritual Energy. It seemed that it would only become abundant again after he cultivated it for a while.

However, Mu Chen did not care about this at all. Instead, he headed to a location within aurasea. At that location, the Nine Nether Bird was lying down on top of the mandala flower. The black flames on the surface of its body had become dim. It was evident that Mu Chen wasn't the only one who was injured this time. Even the Nine Nether Bird had suffered greatly.

The Nine Nether Bird seemed to be aware of Mu Chen's glance and opened its eyes slightly. It stared coldly at Mu Chen before a mocking thought was conveyed over: "You're sure long-lived. You actually

survived."

Mu Chen smiled and ignored the ridicule from the Nine Nether Bird. He only replied seriously and sincerely: "It's all thanks to you this time."

Sensing the sincerity within Mu Chen's voice, a hint of unnaturalness flashed through the Nine Nether Bird's eyes. Although the thoughts conveyed were still cold, it no longer taunted him: "What thanks? I didn't help you for free. You should remember what you've promised me, otherwise, I'll make you pay a price if you fail to keep that promise."

"Relax. What I promised is still valid. I won't ingest you, and you can leave whenever you want." Mu Chen nodded.

"As for the other condition, I'll try to help you if I can. But what is the condition?"

Hearing this, a hint of light appeared within the Nine Nether Bird's eyes. It hesitated for a moment before asking: "You're going to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?"

"Yes."

"Then I want you to obtain an item from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy," The Nine Nether Bird replied.

"What item?"

"The Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy has an Ancient Divine Beast known as the Northern Sea Dragon. Its blood essence possesses an Ancient Divine Beast's blood. If I manage to obtain that, I will be able to use it as a catalyst and awaken the ancient blood sleeping within my body. By doing this, I will finally be able to complete my evolution and advance to a Divine Beast."

"Northern Sea Dragon..." Hearing this, Mu Chen sucked in mouthful of cold air. It was a terrifying existence within the Myriad Beast Record's Heaven Rankings. For the Nine Nether Bird to ask him to obtain its blood essence, isn't it thinking too highly of him?

"Relax. Although the Northern Sea Dragon's blood essence is valuable, it

wouldn't cause much harm to it if a bit was taken out. The Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy probably has a stock of it, so you should be able to get it as long as you can think of a way." The Nine Nether Bird's thoughts were conveyed over.

Mu Chen gave a bitter smile as he replied, "I'll do my best."

The Nine Nether Bird nodded. The Northern Sea Dragon was indeed troublesome. Even in its peak condition, it was impossible for the Nine Nether Bird to defeat the Northern Sea Dragon. The only method it could suppress the Northern Sea Dragon was to complete its evolution to the Nine Netherworld Bird and fully awaken the ancient Undying Bird's blood.

Therefore, it had placed all its hope on Mu Chen. If he was able to perform exceptionally well within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, there should be a chance to obtain it.

"Next up, I'll have to rest for a while. Therefore, you shouldn't think of borrowing my strength all the time. You should just behave yourself and protect your life, so you won't die too early." The Nine Nether Bird reminded him.

Mu Chen nodded reluctantly. To be honest, he did not want to borrow this strength again. This was because the cost of borrowing it was too great. If it wasn't for the fact that the Liu Territory had cornered them, he wouldn't have been forced into using such measure.

After Mu Chen finished his conversation with the Nine Nether Bird, his consciousness exited his aurasea. Just as he opened his eyes, he noticed Tang Qian'Er pushing open the door and entering with a water kettle in her hands.

"How long was I unconscious for?" Mu Chen took the cup and asked.

"About half a month." Tang Qian'Er thought for a moment before replying.

Hearing this, Mu Chen clicked his tongue. He had actually fallen unconscious for such a long period of time. It seemed that the aftereffects of borrowing the Nine Nether Bird's power were indeed quite heavy.

“That’s right…Half a month…Doesn’t that mean I missed the time to go to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?” Mu Chen thought of something and quickly asked.

“What’s the hurry? There is still 5 days.” Tang Qian’Er batted an eye at Mu Chen.

Only then, Mu Chen was relieved. If his entry to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was delayed because of this, it would be a severe loss to him.

“Hmph, are you thinking about the fact that nobody would bother you once you’ve entered the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?” Tang Qian’Er’s face turned sour as she asked coldly.

“How is this possible? With Sister Qian’Er’s beauty, you will definitely be in the top ranks, even if you enter the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy. Although the students within the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy are all female, the five academies would often communicate with each other. When that happens, wouldn’t you completely captivate all the other academies’ students? You’ll probably be unhappy if I beg you to bother me then.” Mu Chen smiled and replied.

Tang Qian’Er chuckled. She raised her chin proudly and said: “That’s correct. There are many outstanding youths in the Five Great Academies. Once I fall for someone, who would care about you?”

After saying this, Tang Qian’Er raised her fists at Mu Chen and muttered: “Moreover, you shouldn’t act too arrogantly. I will surely cultivate properly within the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy. If by some chance I meet you again, I’ll show you how amazing I am!”

“That’s enough for now. I’ll call Uncle Mu and the others over. You should rest for a while.”

Tang Qian’Er smiled at Mu Chen as she ended the conversation. Then, she stood up and headed outside.

Mu Chen stared at the girl’s figure as she departed. He inhaled deeply as his closed his eyes. At the same time, he slowly clasped his hands

together.

The Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, I'm really looking forward to you.

Chapter 109: Recovery

During the next few days, Mu Chen spent all his time fully recovering himself. In a few days, it was time to head back to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. According to Mister Hao, there will be a true examination when they enter the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Comparatively, it seemed that this examination was not on the same level as the Northern Spiritual Academy's Entry Competition. This was because the opponents this time around were not limited to a tiny group from the Northern Spiritual Academy but instead consisted of genius from various locations, far and wide.

Moreover, there would also be some monsters that passed through the Spiritual Road.

It would not be a simple matter to stand out during the examination. Thus, Mu Chen must recover completely before that day arrives.

Fortunately, Mu Chen did not meet many obstacles during his recovery. In just three days, the dim Spiritual Energy light wheel within his aura sea was once again starting to emit light.

Furthermore, its Spiritual Energy density was many times more powerful than before. It was evident that the battle and heavy injuries were actually beneficial to Mu Chen.

Although the Spiritual Energy within the Spiritual Wheel had become denser, there was still no feeling of advancement. However, Mu Chen was not disappointed. If he thought it was this simple to advance to the Spirit Stage, wouldn't he truly be underestimating this level?

Even though his Spiritual Energy did not show any significant signs of breakthrough, Mu Chen obtained an unexpected harvest. He detected that the amount of Spiritual Seals had finally broken through to 21 Seals...

Breaking through from 20 Seals to 21 Seals was a qualitative advancement.

This was because by breaking through this level, it meant that Mu Chen

possessed a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master's strength!

To a certain extent, a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master was already comparable to a Spirit Stage powerhouse. Originally, Mu Chen thought that it would take at least a month before he could accomplish this step, but who would have imagined that the battle, that had left his body in ruins, would provide such a benefit to him.

Furthermore, with this hidden card, Mu Chen finally felt a bit of confidence towards the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's true examination.

Moreover, after Mu Chen broke through to a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master, the amount of Spiritual Seals he could condense increased significantly. In just two short days, the amount of Spiritual Seals he could condense had reached a staggering 26 Seals. Moreover, as time passed, the amount would gradually keep increasing.

Although the battle brought numerous benefits to Mu Chen, it also caused a bit of trouble for him. The trouble was that his father kept insisting that he reveal and explain the source of the sudden power boost from the day of his battle.

Mu Chen knew that Mu Feng only asked him because he was worried; after all, that power was far too strong. With Mu Chen's strength, it was evident that he could not control it completely.

At first, Mu Chen did not want to talk about this matter, because he was afraid that Mu Feng would just become more worried. After all, even if Mu Feng knew about it, it was impossible for him to drag the Nine Nether Bird out of his body and would only cause both of them to develop a concern for no reason.

However, the situation with the Nine Nether Bird had changed. Although the Nine Nether Bird was still cold, its hostile attitude had softened a lot; and it would not attack him in secret. Therefore, Mu Chen didn't need to worry about mentioning it to Mu Feng.

Therefore, Mu Chen told the truth to Mu Feng.

After his explanation, he noticed Mu Feng entering a daze suddenly. After a while, the latter gradually recovered from the shock and stared strangely at Mu Chen.

Despite the significant effort the Liu Territory and Mu Territory put into obtaining the highly-coveted Nine Nether Bird from the Black Eerie Swamp, they had both failed. Who would have imagined that during their time in the Black Eerie Swamp, the Nine Nether Bird would have actually taken refuge inside of Mu Chen's body on its own?

Under Mu Feng's gaze, Mu Chen could only shrug helplessly. He didn't know why this had happened either. Perhaps, this could only be explained as fate.

After Mu Feng's look of surprise lasted a while, he gradually got over the shock. However, he immediately frowned. As a Spirit Stage powerhouse, he had once ingested a Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence. He naturally knew how rebellious a Spiritual Beast of that level could be. Back in those days, he had gone through great pains in order to ingest the Dragonfire Bird; yet the Nine Nether Bird within Mu Chen's body was many times stronger than the Dragonfire Bird.

Considering Mu Chen's strength, Mu Feng could not determine whether it was good or bad for him to host such a vicious beast within his body.

Seeing that Mu Feng was concerned, Mu Chen consoled him for a while. Only after he explained the current status of his relationship with the Nine Nether Bird did Mu Feng relax a bit. However, Mu Feng still told him to remain vigilant. A Spiritual Beast of that level had an intelligence that was not inferior to that of a human. Also, given the Nine Nether Bird's previous schemes, Mu Feng did not hold any doubts about its viciousness. That thing was definitely an extremely dangerous existence.

Hearing this, Mu Chen replied with a smile.

Time flew by quickly and in the blink of an eye, it was the day before his departure.

In the quiet courtyard, Mu Chen was currently cultivating with his eyes closed when he heard familiar footsteps approaching. He opened his eyes

and noticed Mu Feng entering the courtyard.

"Dad." Mu Chen directed a smile at Mu Feng as he spoke.

Mu Feng walked up next to Mu Chen and rubbed the latter's head. A hint of reluctance and affection emerged in his eyes as he smiled: "Brat, you'll be leaving tomorrow. This time, you probably won't be able to come back for a while. You should properly cultivate in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Even though there are geniuses everywhere over there, I won't allow you to disgrace me!"

Mu Chen could see the reluctance within Mu Feng's eyes, and his heart suddenly felt a hint of warmth. He smiled and replied: "Dad, just relax. Your son isn't someone who can be easily bullied..."

Mu Feng was slightly depressed. Over these years, he had brought up Mu Chen alone. Although Mu Chen was always sensible, Mu Feng could have always helped him when he was in trouble in the Northern Spiritual Realm. But once he left the Northern Spiritual Realm and entered the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, he would not be able to give any protection to Mu Chen.

"You'll have to leave tomorrow. Your father has nothing to give you. However, I've heard that you've advanced to a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master, so I've been searching for Diagram Arrays during the past two days..."

Mu Feng directed a smile to Mu Chen and gripped his hand tightly. Then, a glowing scroll emerged within his hand: "This is a Rank 2 Diagram Array, it should be of use to you."

Mu Chen was stunned and touched as he immediately accepted the glowing scroll. In the Northern Spiritual Realm, a Rank 2 Diagram Array was considered rare. Mu Feng must have gone to extraordinary lengths in order to find this Diagram Array. No wonder he was busy during the past two days. He had clearly been spending his spare time for this reason.

"Thanks dad."

Mu Chen placed the Diagram Array within the Mustard Seed Bracelet.

Although he had become a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master, he did not have any Rank 2 Diagram Arrays. Although he had the "Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array", which was comparable to a Rank 3 Spiritual Array, Mu Chen could not arrange it unless he borrowed the Nine Nether Bird's strength.

Therefore, right now, he urgently needed this Rank 2 Diagram Array.

Mu Chen pondered before he asked, "Dad, after I leave, managing the Mu Territory will be all up to you. Is it truly fine that you did not get rid of the Liu Territory?" He probably would have to leave the Northern Spiritual Realm for quite a long period of time. Naturally, he wanted Mu Feng to be safe here.

"Right now, the Liu Territory is greatly weakened and is nothing to be feared." Mu Feng smiled: "Moreover, you shouldn't underestimate your father. This time, I gained some inspiration and can vaguely feel the threshold of a Heavenly Fusion Stage. If I were to train for a while, I should be able to advance to the Heavenly Fusion Stage."

"Oh?"

A hint of surprise emerged in Mu Chen's eyes. If Mu Feng successfully advanced to the Heavenly Fusion Stage, nobody would dare offend him in the Northern Spiritual Realm, and the Mu Territory would be completely stable as well.

"Haha, you should rest well today. I'll send you to the Northern Spiritual Academy tomorrow." Mu Feng smiled proudly and patted Mu Chen's shoulders before he left.

Mu Chen stared at Mu Feng's broad back. He suddenly felt that his mouth was slightly blocked and could only gently mutter: "Dad, remember the promise that I said to you. There will come a day when I bring mother back here. Our family will definitely be reunited."

Mu Feng's silhouette suddenly stopped at the entrance of the courtyard. He lifted his head and sighed. His eyes were slightly wet, and he slowly nodded his head.

“Brat, just cultivate properly. Your father will wait for that day.”

…

In the early morning of the following day, Mu Chen had gotten up early and left his room. He noticed that Mu Feng and Zhou Ye were waiting for him outside.

Zhou Ye escorted Mu Feng and Mu Chen out of the Mu Estate, before he rubbed Mu Chen’s hair. “Little Mu, good luck. I hope that you can surprise Uncle Zhou the next time you come back to the Northern Spiritual Realm,” he said with some emotion.

Mu Chen smiled as he nodded to Zhou Ye: “Relax Uncle Zhou. Instead, shouldn’t you worry about finding a wife?.”

“Damn brat.” Zhou Ye could not help but laugh.

“Let’s go.” Mu Feng waved his hand and took the lead towards the Transfer Spiritual Array within the Mu City. Mu Feng waved at Zhou Ye before he quickly followed.

As the two passed through the Mu City, numerous gazes were projected over towards them. Most of the gazes were fixed at Mu Chen’s body and curiosity and awe were within them.

It was evident that Mu Chen had become a well-known figure, after the battle above the Nine Territory Meeting. The fame had even surpassed Mu Feng and the other Territory Lords.

“Right now, your name is even more dazzling than mine,” Mu Feng laughed as he noticed the surroundings gazes.

Hearing this, Mu Chen also smiled: “When I return, I will use my own strength to obtain these gazes.”

“Daring and resolute. I’ll wait for that to happen.”

Mu Feng smiled as he stepped onto the Transfer Spiritual Array while Mu Chen quickly followed. Then, Mu Feng quickly waved his sleeves, and a light emerged as Spiritual Energy surged out. Their figures quickly vanished under countless estranged gazes.

Chapter 110: Departure

Currently, the spacious training ground of the Northern Spiritual Academy was crowded with Northern Spiritual Academy's students. All of them were gazing enviously at the stage. At that location, there were five giant arrays floating in thin air that emitted a vague yet powerful pulse of Spiritual Energy.

It is said that these light arrays were Transfer Spiritual Arrays, leading to the Five Great Academies. After passing through them, one would be able to enter any of the holy grounds that they'd wished for all over these years.

However, these people currently did not have the qualifications.

At the training grounds, Tang Qian'Er, Hong Ling and Mo Ling had already arrived. Even Liu Mubai was present at the scene. However, he did not have the arrogance he had had previously. Instead, his face was slightly pale and was covered with a dejected expression. It was obvious that he had suffered a heavy blow mentally.

"Mu Chen's coming!"

A commotion of noise suddenly rang out outside of the training grounds, and numerous fiery gazes immediately turned away from the training grounds. Then, they noticed a familiar boy, and a tall burly figure slowly walking in from the training ground entrance.

As they stared at the boy's figure, countless Northern Spiritual Academy students lowered their voice. In their eyes, curiosity and awe emerged. During this period of time, the news about Mu Chen slaying Liu Territory's Liu Jingshan had spread throughout the entire Northern Spiritual Realm.

To them, the Heavenly Fusion Stage was too dazzling. They could not measure up to the power that someone of that level would possess. But no matter what, it must be stronger than Teacher Mo, Teacher Xi and even the Principal, right?

And a powerhouse of that level was actually killed by Mu Chen? Just

how terrifying, then, was he?

Under numerous astonished gazes, Mu Chen entered the stage and cupped his hands in salute towards Teacher Mo, Teacher Xi, Principal Xiao and Mister Hao as he said: “My apologies, I arrived late.”

“It’s fine. You’re not considered late.” Teacher Mo smiled. The eyes he used to look at Mu Chen were quite peculiar. Just after he heard of this event, even he, himself, felt tremendous shock. Now that he met with Mu Chen again, a mysterious feeling emerged within his heart.

This boy had too many secrets.

“Ohoho, we still have to modulate the Transfer Spiritual Array for a while, so you’ll have to wait for a bit.” Principal Xiao waved his hands and replied with a smile.

Mu Chen nodded and stood beside Tang Qian’Er. At this moment, Chen Fan and the others were staring at him strangely. This caused Mu Chen to glance at them helplessly.

“Hehe.” Seeing Mu Chen look over at them, Chen Fan and the others let out a hollow laugh. They felt slightly unnatural. After all, they used to be able to joke around with Mu Chen. But now, they could feel that they weren’t at the same level.

As he noticed this, Mu Chen did nothing to explain the situation to them. Instead, it was Tang Qian’Er who glanced over and asked: “Are your injuries all healed?”

Mu Chen nodded and smiled: “With Sister Qian’Er taking care of me, it would be difficult for them not to heal.”

Hearing this, Tang Qian’Er let out a sweet smile before she crooned: “You’ve only spoken nicely right before we depart, how insincere.”

Mu Chen felt completely helpless. When facing a girl’s unreasonable expectations, it was best to remain silent.

“You should look at Liu Mubai. Right now, he looks at you as if he had seen a ghost...” Tang Qian’Er glanced across to the opposite side as she

muttered.

Mu Chen's gaze followed and intersected with Liu Mubai's gaze. The latter quickly turned his head away. Currently, his appearance had none of the former prestige of someone who had previously been the number one individual of the Northern Spiritual Academy.

Mu Chen calmly retracted his gaze in order to not stare at Liu Mubai as if he had won against someone. During the path of cultivation, he would meet enemies one by one. If he wanted to improve, he would have to constantly look towards the future and review the past. Only then, he would be able to improve slowly.

Liu Mubai was considered to be outstanding. However, he was not worthy for Mu Chen to treat him as an unforgettable rival.

"All of you should listen up..."

From the side, Mister Hao suddenly spoke to the crowd: "I have mentioned this to you before. Although you have passed the Northern Spiritual Academy's examination, it has only granted you the opportunity to enter the Five Great Academies. It does not mean that you are already regarded as a student in the Five Great Academies."

"The Five Great Academies will test all of you themselves. That will be the true test of the Five Great Academies. If you pass, you will become a student within the Five Great Academies and have a promising future.

"However, if you fail to pass, we will not send you back, but you will not be able to enter the Five Great Academies anymore. Instead, we will send you to other major Spiritual Academies."

"Therefore, each one of you will have to work hard to become a true student of the Five Great Academies."

"Yes!"

Hearing this, Mu Chen and the others' faces turned serious.

The Great Thousand World was endless and vast. Nobody could detect the ends of it. The Hundred Spirit Heavens, that the Northern Spiritual

Realm belonged to, was only considered to be a speck of sand within a desert. It was completely insignificant.

The area outside of the Hundred Spirit Heavens was known as the Hundred Spirit Continent. In this continent, there were numerous territories that were similar to the Hundred Spirit Heavens. Moreover, there were countless territories and continents outside of the Hundred Spirit Heavens. If they did not use a Transfer Spiritual Array, a powerhouse at the Three Heavens Stage would not be able to travel across all the continents, even if they devoted a whole lifetime.

The Great Thousand World was too mysterious and extensive. There were as many forces as there were stars in the sky. Among these stars, the Five Great Academies were considered to be bright and dazzling stars. Even within the entire Great Thousand World, they were quite well-known.

The geniuses from the various continents would gather at the Five Great Academies. Therefore, it would not be easy to stand out in such a place.

Mu Chen would have to use all his strength in order to pass the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's test.

As these thoughts flashed through Mu Chen's mind, he looked towards Mister Hao and inquired: "Mister Hao, may I know what the test will be for the Five Great Academies?"

Mister Hao glanced at Mu Chen and shook his head. He replied: "The Five Great Academies each have their respective test. Therefore, I am unclear about them. However, someone will receive you after you pass through the Transfer Spiritual Array. At that time, you will come to learn more about the test."

Although this wasn't useful information, Mu Chen still nodded.

After some time, the five Transfer Spiritual Arrays gradually emitted out an intense light. The violent Spiritual Energy fluctuations, which were originally there, had stabilized.

"It's about there."

Seeing this, Mister Hao nodded towards Principal Xiao. Then, he looked at Mu Chen and the others as he said: “Saint Spiritual Academy, please go to the second Transfer Spiritual Array from the left.”

Hearing this, Liu Mubai quickly stepped forward and stood within the Transfer Spiritual Array. As he entered the Transfer Spiritual Array, he finally regained a bit of courage. Then, he stared at Mu Chen and gritted his teeth as he clenched his hands: “Mu Chen, I admit that you’re powerful. However, just you wait. There will be a time when we meet again. When that happens, I will defeat you!”

Hearing this, Mu Chen’s black eyes stared at Liu Mubai. Under his gaze, Liu Mubai’s body shuddered. It seemed that he was being reminded of the terror that Mu Chen had inflicted upon his family that day within the Nine Territory City. His legs and stomach felt a little weak, and he struggled to remain standing up.

It was as if he had been completely traumatized by Mu Chen that time, and this trauma made him feel intense fear.

“I’ll welcome it anytime.”

Mu Chen smiled faintly. The Saint Spiritual Academy, huh? Ji Xuan is also there, right? Compared to him, Liu Mubai was truly unworthy.

“Azure Sky Spiritual Academy, please go to the third Transfer Spiritual Array from the left.”

Hearing Mister Hao’s instructions, Chen Fan and Huo Yun hurried forward. Their faces were filled with excitement and tension.

“Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy, the fourth Transfer Spiritual Array.”

Tang Qian’Er bit her lips and clasped her hands. She thumped Mu Chen’s chest as she said: “Good luck in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Although there are many geniuses there, I believe that you won’t fall behind. Otherwise, I will be embarrassed to say that I know you when we meet again.”

“Yes, you too.” Mu Chen stared at the girl in front of him. A hint of depression filled his heart due to the separation.

Tang Qian'Er nodded and no longer spoke. She twisted her slim waist as she entered the fourth Transfer Spiritual Array together with Hong Ling. However, her beautiful eyes remained fixed at Mu Chen.

"Mu Chen, Mo Ling. The two of you should enter here." Mister Hao pointed at the Transfer Spiritual Array beside him.

Mu Chen's gaze stared at Mu Feng, who had been behind him all this time. The latter smiled and nodded towards him. Then, under countless gazes, Mu Chen immediately took a deep breath and entered the Transfer Spiritual Array without hesitation. Seeing this, Mo Ling quickly followed.

"Brother Mu, good luck. Please bring glory to our Northern Spiritual Academy. Even in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, you must be the strongest!" At the edge of the training grounds, Su Ling and the others shouted out.

"Please act as the advance party for us. In the future, we will come to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy to leech off you!" The other students also yelled out.

Hearing this, Mu Chen could not help but smile. He nodded towards them.

"Concentrate, we're beginning the transfer!" Mister Hao said in a deep voice. He waved his sleeves and numerous light seals shot into the Transfer Spiritual Arrays. Then, a powerful light shone from the Spiritual Array and completely enveloped the figures within it.

The powerful light gradually obscured Mu Chen's vision. He gazed at Mu Feng, who was nearby. The latter also stared at him in daze. Then, a hint of loneliness emerged on his resolute face. After Mu Chen departs, he would be the only one remaining in the family...

"Dad, don't worry. I will definitely bring mother back!"

Mu Chen clenched his hands and muttered to himself. Then, he slowly closed his eyes.

Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, I'm coming.

Luo Li, I’m coming.

Chapter 111: Northern Heavens World

This place was a vast, endless landscape with blue skies and drifting clouds. In the distance, a boundless ancient forest could be seen.

Within the forest stood giant trees, that were comparable in size with mountains. Groups of Spiritual Beasts would fly above the forest as their sharp cries echoed throughout the world.

Even further away, there would be massive Spiritual Beasts fighting against each other occasionally. Their thunderous roars came from far away.

This land was like an ancient prehistoric land where no person had ever set foot on.

However, the absence of human activity was quickly destroyed. A massive bluestone platform appeared out of thin air in the sky. Mist surrounded the platform like it was a fairyland.

At this moment, numerous light pillars emerged on the bluestone platform. As these light pillars descended, countless figures appeared on the platform.

In half an hour, the originally empty platform was completely filled and their chatter gradually echoed throughout the area.

At the corner of the platform, another light pillar descended. As the light faded, two figures emerged.

Once he detected that the light gradually weakening, Mu Chen opened his eyes slowly. In the next moment, he became somewhat surprised when he looked at the bluestone platform he was currently standing on.

On the platform, there were numerous figures. However, all of them were wary as they looked around. It was evident that they were also unfamiliar with this situation.

“Brother Mu. Is this the place for the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy’s examination?” Behind Mu Chen, a weak voice rang out. Mo Ling was cautiously glancing around. His voice was weak because he could

feel that even the weakest person on the platform had the strength in the Spiritual Rotation Stage Initial Phase. Furthermore, many of them gave him a feeling of pressure.

Mu Chen nodded and smiled.

"These people should be the others who obtained entry to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, right?" Mo Ling could not help but smack his lips. Awe for the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy formed within his heart. The number of people that obtained entries to the Five Great Academies was limited to the fingers of both hands. But in this location, there were at least a thousand people.

"Although all of the people here are quite powerful, there's no need to be afraid. If you lack courage, how could you compete with others?" Mu Chen smiled. He knew that Mo Ling felt slightly inferior. After all, the Northern Spiritual Realm was quite a small place. Many of these people probably came from large Spiritual Academies. The background and strength they possessed wasn't something that a student from the Northern Spiritual Academy could compete with.

"Okay."

As he looked at Mu Chen's comforting, handsome face, Mo Ling's timid heart calmed down. That's right. There was nothing to be afraid of. The one beside him had once killed a Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouse. Although Mo Ling did not understand the quality of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy students, he did not believe many of them could surpass Mu Chen.

Mu Chen comforted Mo Ling for a bit before he too glanced carefully around the platform. Right now, there were at least 1000 people on the platform. However, there weren't many conversations taking place; only small groups of people would stick together. Based on this, they probably hailed from the same location.

"As expected of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy..."

Mu Chen glanced around and immediately praised the academy within his heart. From what he sensed, everybody here had reached the Spiritual

Rotation Stage. Moreover, there were no less than 6 individuals who reached the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase.

Furthermore, the people in front of him were only a handful of those that had entered the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Based on this, one could see how terrifying the competition was for the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

The Northern Spiritual Academy's Entry Competition could not be compared to this competition!

Dong!

Just as Mu Chen looked around, a soft bell sound rang at the center of the platform. Everybody's gaze quickly shifted, and they saw a stone tablet suddenly emitting a dazzlingly bright light.

As the light converged above the stone tablet, an old figure formed from the light emerged.

"Little ones, I am one of the monitors for the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's examination..."

The old figure smiled as it stared at the numerous boys and girls on the platform and said: "Next up, I will inform you of the rules here."

On the platform, everybody remained silent. Their eyes were fixated on the old figure.

"The space you're currently residing in, is known as the Northern Heavens World. It is the place where the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy specifically tests students. Moreover, the platform you are standing on is known as the Escort Platform. In the Northern Heavens World, there are hundreds of Escort Platforms like this one. Therefore, the one you are standing on is just one of many."

As the words were spoken, many people were secretly shocked. Didn't that mean there were at least tens of thousands of people participating in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's examination? This number was too terrifying to imagine!

“Ohoho. Due to there being too many individuals, the number of Northern Heavens Worlds totals four. Of course, the other three Northern Heavens Worlds are also executing the same examination. However, these are unrelated to all of you.” The old figure smiled.

Mu Chen could not help but grin. There are four of these Northern Heavens Worlds? The Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy is truly one of the Five Great Academies. This could only be described as terrifying.Wouldn’t this mean that his chance of meeting with Luo Li would be reduced to at most 25%?

“Eh, I hope that she’s in this Northern Heavens World as well.” Mu Chen shook his head helplessly and could only look forward to it.

“The Northern Heavens World is extremely vast. There are numerous powerful and vicious Spiritual Beasts all over the place. Your goal is to pass through these obstacles and enter the Northern Heavens Hall in the center of the Northern Heavens World. At that location, there will be a Transfer Spiritual Array that leads to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, and we will welcome you there.”

“That doesn’t seem too difficult.” Mu Chen frowned. The Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy shouldn’t be limited to just this, right?

“Ohoho. These aren’t all the rules yet. Each of you must touch this stone tablet first. Of course, you will all be divided into ranks. The ranks will be divided from 1-9. Normally speaking, the students that obtained the ordinary entry will be ranked initially at 1. The students that obtained the seeded entry will start at 3; The core entries will begin at 5.”

When everybody heard this, they hesitated for a moment. Then, people came up one after another to touch the stone tablet. As they touched it, a light beam would shoot out from the stone tablet and land on their foreheads.

Once the light beam faded away, a shining symbol appeared on the students’ foreheads. However, the symbol given revealed a dark yellow color and the number [1] appeared within the symbol.

It was evident that these people were assessed as Rank 1.

Everybody stared at the dark yellow symbol on their respective foreheads and felt a bit frustrated. It was truly a terrible sight to possess the lowest rank.

Buzz!

Just as the crowd was feeling bitter, a powerful light beam erupted from the stone tablet. The light beam revealed a dark red color and converged on the forehead of the boy who was in front of the stone tablet.

As a dark red symbol emerged, the number [3] slowly formed.

"Rank 3? He's actually a student that obtained the Seeded Entry!" The dark red light was too different than the rest of them. Therefore, many surprised gazes shot over immediately and they smacked their lips enviously.

As the boy in white clothes noticed at the envious glares nearby, he raised his chin slightly. A hint of pride emerged on his face. The people that obtained a seeded entry could look over the students who only obtained an ordinary entry. This is because it represented that they were at different levels.

The boy's arrogant gaze caused the students to feel slightly uncomfortable. However, they knew that the latter was truly stronger than ordinary students. It was best not to provoke this sort of person.

On the platform, the crowd continually obtained their symbols. And after the boy in white, there were two other individuals that possessed a seeded entry. This made many people exclaim secretly. Just in their Escort Platform, there were already 3 seeded entries. Just how many seeded entries were there within the Northern Heavens World?

Furthermore, above the seeded entries, there was the core entry.

Many of the people weren't clear how terrifying the people who obtained a core entry were. However, it was certain that a person who obtained a core entry would be a monster!

Mu Chen and Mo Ling did not hastily head forward. They waited for the crowd to lessen before lining up. Because Mo Ling only possessed an

ordinary entry, he also obtained a Rank 1 assessment. As for Mu Chen, he was assessed as Rank 3 like the other seeded entries.

When the dark red light emerged on Mu Chen's forehead, many astonished gazes glanced over. Even the three individuals with seeded entries had their gazes focused on Mu Chen. It was evident that Mu Chen, who had obtained a seeded entry, was worthy of their attention.

After everybody was assessed, a strange smile seemed to appear on the old figure. He continued to explain: "Since all of you have been assessed ranks, I will continue to speak. Based on the rules, any students who are ranked lower than 4 will be eliminated at the end. In other words, they will lose their qualifications to enter the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy."

WAHHH!

The platform suddenly shook. Everybody was stunned. Wouldn't this mean that nobody here was qualified?

"Little ones. There's no need to worry. The ranks aren't fixed and can be increased. Moreover, the method of increasing rank isn't difficult. You only need to kill Spiritual Beasts or obtain worldly treasures that have accumulated Spiritual Aura, and the symbol on your forehead will automatically absorb some of the Spiritual Aura. Through that, your rank will increase."

Everyone was relieved. So they could increase their ranks through hunting Spiritual Beasts and obtaining worldly treasures.

"Of course, this isn't the fastest way to increase it. The fastest method is to steal the Spiritual Aura within other people's symbols. This will allow you to quickly raise your rank."

Once this was said, countless people's bodies stiffened. Then, their faces gradually changed.

"Especially the symbols that are ranked high. For example, you are all only Rank 1 currently. However, if you managed to defeat the seeded entry students and obtained the Spiritual Aura within their symbols, you will

immediately increase from Rank 1 to Rank 3." The old figure had a huge smile plastered on his face as if he was a sly fox trying to lure people to perform this act.

Mu Chen's eyes narrowed slightly. This rule basically encourages students to steal from one another. As expected, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's examination isn't that simple. So this is the examination system, huh?

Because at this moment, Mu Chen could feel the gazes nearby change. Many of them revealed a hint of greediness as they stared at the symbol on his forehead.

Chapter 112: Girl in a Black Dress

Suddenly, the atmosphere on the Escort Platform turned strange. A few boys' gazes became vigilant, and they all stepped away from one another.

This rule had made it extremely clear. Aside from being careful of the vicious lands and Spiritual Beasts, the greatest threat they could face were their fellow students.

"Little ones. This rule was made to give everyone a chance. A chance to escape the ordinary. Even a person with Core Entry will be disqualified and denied their right of entry to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy if he fails to reach Rank 4." The old figure's chuckle rang out again.

Mu Chen snorted upon hearing this. A person who had obtained Core Entry would definitely not a kindhearted person. Even if they had an accident and had their symbol robbed, would it really be difficult for them to regain a Rank 4 symbol with their abilities?

"Regarding the Ranks, it will determine your position within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. The higher your rank, the more you will valued by the academy. Therefore, in order to not be disqualified and obtain a better status and resources within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, you should work hard on increasing your rank. I will wait for your arrival at the Northern Heavens Hall..."

"By then, the difference between all of you will be reflected by your success."

"Finally, a reminder to everyone: If you want to give up, you only need to shatter the symbol on your forehead. After that, a monitor will come over and take you away. But in that case, the person who has lost their symbol will be eliminated."

"Okay, right now, I want to solemnly tell all of you that the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's Examination has now officially begun!" The old man directed a slight smile at the crowd before his figure slowly faded away.

With the disappearance of the old figure, the Escort Platform became completely silent. A few people's eyes were twinkling.

Mu Chen felt the pressure of this atmosphere and glanced at his surroundings. Most of the people on the platform were gathering in groups of two or three. The only exceptions were the Seeded Entry participants and Mu Chen. Next to the Seeded Entry participants, there was a humongous crowd that had formed. Judging from the appearance, these participants came from a rather large-sized Spiritual Academy and thus had many followers.

Compared to them, Mu Chen's side looked pretty shabby. After all, the only one beside him was Mo Ling, who was at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Initial Phase.

The 3 Seeded Entry participants' gazes swept across the platform. They were slightly afraid of each other. Therefore, they simply waved their hands and jumped off the Escort Platform as they charged into the depths of the ancient forest.

In the Northern Heavens World, the amount of students participating was numbered in thousands. Thus, there was no need for them to fight against such tricky opponents when they had time to pick their prey.

"Let's leave as well." Mu Chen whispered to Mo Ling.

After he spoke, he charged away from the Escort Platform. Seeing this, Mo Ling hurriedly followed. However, countless gazes twinkled on the escort platform as they noticed Mu Chen's action.

On the platform, there were no less than six people whose strength had reached the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase. However, there were only four people who obtained a seeded entry. It was evident that the other individuals at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase felt this was somewhat unfair. After all, they too possessed the ability to obtain a seeded entry. They just lacked the luck...

Fortunately, this examination gave them a chance.

On the Escort Platform, three of the four seeded entry participants had

many followers beside them. It was relatively troublesome to attack them. However, Mu Chen's force seemed pretty weak and appeared to them to be the easiest target.

As long as they defeated Mu Chen, they would instantly obtain a Rank 3 Symbol.

In the crowd, many eyes narrowed as they stared at the direction Mu Chen had taken. The corners of their lips immediately lifted up as if they had spotted a prey.

A Seeded Entry? In this place, it was only a title that attracted trouble.

Mu Chen brought Mo Ling away from the Escort Platform. His calm face made it seem as though he was not aware of others plotting against him. His eyes would only stare into the distance with slight hope. Luo Li, are you here?

When Mu Chen entered the ancient forest, an Escort Platform that was relatively far away was quite bustling.

This Escort Platform appeared to be larger than the one Mu Chen was on. There were a lot more people as well. However, aside from the scattered individuals, the dense crowd was clearly divided. There were many boys with prideful expression. The Spiritual Energy fluctuation emitting from their bodies clearly showed that the majority of them were at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase. Furthermore, on their foreheads, a dark red symbol appeared which represented that they were winners of the seeded entries.

At this location, they were considered as the best of the bunch.

Buzz!

On the Escort Platform, a light pillar suddenly descended and numerous people glanced over lazily. Soon, the originally lazy expression they had immediately vanished. Instead, it was replaced with shock.

WAHHH!

Muffled cries spread throughout the platform like ripples. Many people

were affected by it and turned over to take a look. In front of their eyes, a slender figure emerged.

As the light pillar slowly dispersed, a girl in a black dress emerged. She had an exquisite figure and had curves underneath her dress. Her silver hair shone like the Milky Way and fluttered in the sky as the breeze blew. It was exceptionally moving.

The girl's skin was white as snow while her eyebrows were like crescent moons. While she moved gently, it seemed that it teased people's hearts. Underneath the moon-like eyebrows were a pair of clear glass-like eyes. These eyes were so beautiful those who stared into them would lose themselves in them. Not many males of the same age were able to maintain their calm under her gaze.

Moreover, she possessed an extremely refined face. The only shortcoming it had, was that it did not have a smile. It wasn't that the face was cold and detached; instead, it was as calm as a lake. Her glass-like eyes blinked gently and gave off a feeling that nothing in this world would attract her gaze.

The originally bustling Escort Platform had instantly turned quiet by such a scene. Many people secretly stole a glance at her. However, it was unknown why few of them dared to stare at the girl's clear and beautiful crystalline eyes.

The boys with a flashing red symbols on their forehead, which proved that they were extraordinary, had fiery eyes. There was no doubt that it was the first time they had ever seen such elegance and temperament.

The girl in the black dress glanced around the Escort Platform quietly. Then, she walked over to the stone tablet located at the center of the platform. As she walked gracefully, many people noticed that a pitched-black sword was on her back.

The gazes on the scene moved together with her.

Finally, a tall boy, who was relatively handsome, could not endure it and walked over. On his forehead, a red symbol shone. This was the ability that attracted other person's attentions.

“Hello, I’m Gu Ge from the Dayuan Continent’s Dayuan Spiritual Academy. Do you need any help? Since you’ve arrived slightly late, I can explain the rules here for you.” The boy revealed a gentle smile to the girl in black dress. His tone was also quite soft, making it difficult for her to refuse.

The girl in the black dress glanced at the boy for a moment with her clear glass-like eyes, and in that moment, the latter felt his heartbeat increase. A hint of passion flashed through the depths of his eyes. If he was able to obtain a girl like this, just how maddening and moving would it be when he hugged her in his arms as she acted shy?

However, the girl in black dress only glanced at him for a moment. She did not speak to him and only walked around him as she headed towards the stone tablet.

Seeing this, Gu Ge let out a smile. He followed over and began to explain the rules as if he was in a world all by himself. Then he smiled and asked: “It seems that you’re by yourself. It will be quite dangerous. I have many companions. Therefore, I would like to join teams with you, so you can be safe as well.”

When she heard the word “teams”, the girl’s clear eyes seemed to flash. However, she remained uncommunicative and gently extended her slender hands to touch the stone tablet.

Buzz!

As her hands touched the stone tablet, it suddenly shook. A distinctive golden light shot off and formed at the center of the girl’s eyebrows.

Gu Ge’s voice instantly faded away. Moreover, many people, who had fiery expressions, instantly became dumbfounded. This is because they noticed signs of a [5] appearing on the girl’s forehead.

A Rank 5 Symbol?

Everybody sucked in a mouthful of cold air. Even the people who obtained a seeded entry took a big gulp. The girl in front of them actually obtained a Core Entry?

Gu Ge's face twitched. A Core Entry. Only the people, who were assessed as "King" Class in the Spiritual Road would be able to obtain it!

The seemingly weak and beautiful girl in front of them was actually this terrifying?

The girl slowly turned around and her clear glass-like eyes looked at Gu Ge. Her slender lips finally opened. Her voice was crisp and quiet.

"You mentioned earlier that the symbol's rank could increase through stealing other people's symbols?"

Gu Ge was stunned and immediately nodded his head.

The girl in the black dress spoke gently: "Then, all of the seeded entry participants here should hand over their symbols to me."

WAHHH!

An uproar instantly broke out on the Escort Platform. There were a dozen boys whose eyes were filled with rage. They were all individuals who obtained a seeded entry.

"Hmph. Although you are someone who obtained a Core Entry, don't you think it's unrealistic for you to steal so many people's symbols!?" A boy sneered.

The girl in the black dress shook her head. She stared at the boy and replied seriously: "I don't think so."

Hearing this, his face immediately turned black with rage. He gritted his teeth as he shouted: "Everyone. Let's all attack her together and see how amazing she is!"

The other seeded entry participants also nodded when they heard this. A dozen individuals slowly surrounded the girl. At this moment, Gu Ge also shrugged his shoulders. The girl had ignored him earlier, and this had made him feel slightly irritated. Thus, he gloated and said: "It seems that I can't help you either."

A dozen boys, who were all at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase, surrounded the girl. Powerful waves of Spiritual Energy suddenly erupted.

In the next instant, all of them were lunging towards the girl in black dress.

However, the girl remained motionless. She only blinked and brushed away the hair on her forehead.

Boom!

Just when the dozen individuals were about to touch her body, a black light suddenly erupted from her body.

Bang Bang Bang Bang!

A dozen figures instantly flew back and landed on the ground. Every single one of them spat out a mouthful of blood as horror filled their eyes.

The crowd immediately inhaled a breath of cold air. A dozen Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase powerhouses were completely defeated without even being able to touch her body?

The girl in black dress walked over. She made a small action with her hands and the dozen individuals' symbols quickly turned dim. A few lights flashed and entered the golden symbol on her forehead.

By stealing many Rank 3 symbols, the girl's golden symbol had turned a lot brighter. However, it had not reached Rank 6. It was evident that it wasn't easy to rank up.

After taking away the unfortunate fellows' symbols, the girl in black dress walked towards Gu Ge, who was completely pale. She stared at him with her clear eyes: "Yours."

Cold sweat slid down Gu Ge's forehead. He smiled stiffly and had no intention of attacking. As he concentrated, the Spiritual Aura within his symbol emitted out and entered the golden symbol on the girl's forehead.

Once she was done robbing away the seeded entry participants' symbols, the girl in black dress did not attack the ordinary students. She only turned away and headed towards the edge of the Escort Platform. Her eyes stared at the distance. Finally, ripples appeared in her quiet eyes. Her mouth twitched and a shallow smile bloomed.

I said that I'll wait for you. But if you do not come, I will hate you.

Chapter 113: Targeted

In the ancient forest, giant trees towered into the sky. The thick branches and leaves grew outwards and gave the impression that they were covering the sky. Moreover, shocking roars would bring about powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuations when they were heard from time to time in this boundless forest.

Roar!

Currently, somewhere within the forest, Mu Chen was staring in surprise at the Spiritual Beast in front of him. The Spiritual Beast's body was covered with a golden color. It had a shape similar to a cow and even had a golden horn on top of its head. However, its tail was close to a crocodile's tail and had many sharp spikes. As it swung around, it caused the wind to whistle and the air seemed to be torn apart.

Golden Crocodile. Middle Rank Spiritual Beast. It had strength comparable to a Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase. Furthermore, the golden scales that covered its body made it impregnable.

Beside the Golden Crocodile, there was a giant black tiger as well. Although it was not as bold and powerful when compared to the Golden Crocodile, it still possessed the strength of the Spiritual Rotation Stage Middle Phase.

"Leave this big guy to me. You can deal with the other."

Mu Chen pointed at the Golden Crocodile. Although he had the ability to resolve the situation by himself, this would not benefit Mo Ling. Since everybody required honing their abilities to improve, it would not be beneficial for him to protect Mo Ling too much. Otherwise, it would limit the latter's progress.

"Okay." Mo Ling nodded. He also understood that he could not rely on Mu Chen for everything. If he didn't improve his strength, he would only be a burden to Mu Chen.

Seeing this, Mu Chen no longer said anything. He immediately lunged

over towards the Golden Crocodile. As he extended two of his fingers, the fingertips shone a golden light. An extremely sharp and overbearing aura emitted from them.

Roar!

The Golden Crocodile roared as it noticed Mu Chen rushing over. It lashed its tail, which was strong enough to crush boulders, fiercely towards Mu Chen and appeared to hit him. However, its tail mysteriously passed through Mu Chen's body, for little did it know, the thing it had hit had actually been an afterimage.

"Up here."

Mu Chen moved swiftly and appeared above the Golden Crocodile's head. He smiled slightly, and his Spiritual Energy erupted out. The energy forcibly made the Golden Crocodile collapse on the ground. Then, his fingers stabbed mercilessly into the Golden Crocodile's head .

Clang!

Sparks burst out. Mu Chen's fingers, that were hardened like tempered steel, actually penetrated through the Golden Crocodile's tough golden scales. Fresh blood instantly sprayed out.

Roar!

The Golden Crocodile instantly entered a frenzy due to it being severely injured. However, no matter how it struggled, it failed to touch Mu Chen's phantom-like figure. With the latter's strength, it was quite easy to deal with a Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase Spiritual Beast.

In two short minutes, the Golden Crocodile was completely covered with its own blood. Finally, it stopped struggling and crashed onto the ground, which instantly shook due to the impact.

Mu Chen clapped his hands and squatted down. He extracted a Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence, which was shining a golden light, from the Golden Crocodile's head. As the Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence emerged, a faint golden light shot out and entered the symbol on Mu Chen's forehead. The dark red symbol instantly brightened up.

“This item created by the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy is quite unusual.” Seeing this, Mu Chen frowned. He could detect that the golden light was quite subtle, thus, it did not affect the Spiritual Beast’s Soul Essence overall. Moreover, it seemed that the symbol would actively absorb any Spiritual Energy nearby that was not bound to a Spirit Beast in order to achieve the effect of ranking up.

Furthermore, the symbol rejected the Spiritual Aura within a human’s body. In other words, it was ridiculous for anyone to use their own Spiritual Energy to increase the symbol.

Mu Chen held onto the Spiritual Beast’s Soul Essence. A Middle Rank Spiritual Beast’s Soul Essence wasn’t something he would care about. But just when he was about to place it inside his Mustard Seed Bracelet, he detected a black light surging through the center of his palm and held onto the Spiritual Beast’s Soul Essence. Then to Mu Chen’s dismay, the Spiritual Beast’s Soul Essence quickly turned dim. With a banging sound, it scattered away into lights.

After the black light absorbed the Spiritual Beast’s Soul Essence’s energy, it returned back into Mu Chen’s body.

Mu Chen stared dumbfounded at this scene. He immediately recovered from the shock. It was the Nine Nether Bird!

“The Spiritual Beast’s Soul Essence has a small effect of helping me recover. In the future, you should hunt more and speed up my recovery.” The Nine Nether Bird’s thoughts was conveyed in Mu Chen’s mind.

“You’re really rude.” Mu Chen curled his lips and spoke.

“If it wasn’t for you borrowing my strength last time, I wouldn’t be in such a weak state in the first place.” The Nine Nether Bird replied coldly.

“Okay, I’ll try my best.” Mu Chen shook his head helplessly. It really wasn’t great to owe the Nine Nether Bird a favor. If it was before, he could ignore it. But now, he could deal with a bit of exploitation. Besides, if the Nine Nether Bird recovered quickly, he would have an ultimate life-saving measure, even if he did not want to utilize this power.

“Since I’ve benefited from you a bit, I’ll be kind and tell this to you. You’ve already been targeted.”

“Oh?”

Mu Chen’s eyes narrowed. He immediately smiled as he looked behind him at the forest. These people were quite fast. It seemed that his Rank 3 Symbol was quite attractive.

Mu Chen stopped his conversation with the Nine Nether Bird and turned his gaze over towards Mo Ling. For Mo Ling, his strength was close to the black tiger Spiritual Beast. Therefore, it would be quite difficult for him to deal with it. As they clashed against each other, injuries appeared on his body. However, it was evident that the black tiger Spiritual Beast suffered far worse injuries.

The battle between the man and the Spiritual Beast lasted for a while. The black tiger Spiritual Beast finally couldn’t bear it and struggled as it collapsed. Then, Mo Ling rushed over and delivered a heavy blow. He killed it completely.

Mo Ling sat on the corpse of the black tiger Spiritual Beast and wiped the blood off his face. He directed an embarrassed smile to Mu Chen for delaying them for so long here.

Swish.

At this moment, numerous black lights suddenly stormed out from the forest and shot off towards Mo Ling’s vital points.

This attack was too swift and abrupt. Therefore, Mo Ling failed to perceive it and could only watch as the black lights grew larger within his eyes.

Boom!

But just when the black lights were about to hit Mo Ling’s body, a golden light flew over and appeared in front of Mo Ling. It allowed the black lights to hit it.

Clang Clang!

The golden light was really the Golden Crocodile's corpse. As the black lights made contact with the corpse, they bounced off while making clanging sounds.

Mo Ling's face instantly changed. He hurriedly stood up and stared fearfully into the forest. If it wasn't for Mu Chen, he would have probably been injured heavily.

"Who's there!" He stood up and shouted out angrily.

Mu Chen frowned and said: "You've sneakily followed us for so long already. Yet you're reluctant to reveal your appearances?"

"Ohoho, as expected for a person, who obtained a seeded entry. You're indeed quite capable."

From the forest, sounds of laughter rang out. Then, three figures rushed out and landed on a branch. They stared down at Mu Chen and Mo Ling with gazes as if they had spotted prey.

Mo Ling was shocked when the three figures revealed themselves. This is because these three individuals came from the same Escort Platform as them. In addition, they were all at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase!

"3 Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase!"

Mo Ling's heart sank. These three individuals were in no way inferior to Liu Mubai. If it was only one person, it would be easy to deal with them. But with all three of them, even Mu Chen would find it quite troubling.

Although Mo Ling knew that Mu Chen had once killed a Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouse in the Northern Spiritual Realm, it was still just a rumor. That strength might not have belonged to Mu Chen. Therefore, it was uncertain if Mu Chen could use that strength a second time.

Thus, with Mu Chen's Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase strength, it would be easy for him to deal with one person who was at the same level as him. But if it was three...

"Brother Mu."

Mo Ling approached Mu Chen and his voice was filled with worries. He

knew that it would be simple for Mu Chen to leave by himself even if all three joined forces. However, it would be troublesome if Mu Chen had to bring him away as well.

"Brother Mu, why don't we go our separate ways?" Mo Ling gritted his teeth and said in a low voice. He felt slightly uncomfortable for being a burden to Mu Chen.

"With the current situation, there's no need to do so." Mu Chen directed a smile at Mo Ling. If they thought three people at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase were able to force him to abandon his companion and escape, then they were underestimating him.

"This friend over there. I'm Ge Qing. Ohoho, we're quite interested in your Rank 3 Symbol. Why don't you hand over the symbol to us and we'll let you leave? This way, everybody will be happy and it'll be better for both of us, don't you reckon?" Among the three individuals, a boy in grey clothes smiled at Mu Chen.

The other two boys at Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase stared mockingly at Mu Chen. It was evident that they did not believe Mu Chen had the ability to escape from their hands.

Mu Chen stared at the three of them. A hint of sharpness flashed through his eyes. He knew that these fellows followed him because of his Rank 3 Symbol. Furthermore, there were still a few people sneaking around behind them.

It was obvious that there were many people targeting him. After all, who told him to have a Rank 3 Symbol? Also, his companion was much weaker than the other 3 Seeded Entry candidates.

A person like him was the easily viewed as the weakest target.

"Mo Ling, stand back." Mu Chen said softly.

Hearing this, Mo Ling's face changed. Does this mean Mu Chen is planning to fight? But there's a total of three people on the opposite side... Although he was slightly concerned, he still nodded and retreated cautiously.

“Oh, not bad...Does this mean he’s planning to fight all three of us by himself?” Seeing this, the three individuals let out a mocking smile.

“How arrogant.”

Ge Qing also let out a faint smile. The eyes he used to stare at Mu Chen turned cold. He immediately waved his hand and said: “Since this friend has so much confidence in himself, we should entertain him for a while. This way, we can prevent people from acting this arrogant just because they obtained a seeded entry...”

The other two also grinned and clenched their palms. A powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuation erupted out. Then, the three of them exchanged gazes before charging over at the same time.

As the trio swooped down like a hawk, violent Spiritual Energy enveloped Mu Chen completely.

They wanted the boy in front of them to know that he couldn’t act arrogant here just because he obtained a seeded entry!

Chapter 114: Slaughter the Chicken to Warn the Monkey 1

Fusing themselves with the dense Spiritual Energy, the three figures fiercely pounced towards Mu Chen like a tiger springing towards its prey. As they passed through the sky, violent winds began to form and rumble out from their fists in an attempt to envelop Mu Chen.

Although the trio spoke demeaningly, they were merciless once they attacked. It was evident that they were somewhat afraid of Mu Chen. After all, it was certain that a person who had obtained a seeded entry wasn't someone simple.

The Spiritual Academies that they had come from also had seeded entries. However, they lost in the competition for it. This was enough to explain the strength required to obtain such an entry.

Although they were uncertain how powerful the Spiritual Academy Mu Chen had come from was, it was never wrong to be cautious.

But against these three men, Mu Chen's handsome face remained calm. He only moved the moment the three attacks were about to descend on him.

In the instant that Mu Chen moved, an afterimage appeared. The winds from the trio's powerful fists roared and smashed the afterimage into nothingness.

"An afterimage?!" Once their attacks missed, Ge Qing and the others' faces changed.

Swish!

However, as their faces were changing, Mu Chen's figure had already appeared in front of one of them as if he had been a ghost. A golden light shone from his two fingers that remained extended like a sharp weapon. Then, like a shining divine spear, it tore through the air and charged towards the boy's throat.

After seeing how sharp Mu Chen's finger attack was, the boy's eyes also changed. He ferociously changed his hand from a fist to a palm and dense Spiritual Energy surged out: "Sorrowful Palm!"

The boy's strength wasn't weak; he also had plenty of experience. Although Mu Chen's speed was beyond his expectations, he did not panic and immediately counterattacked as he waited for the other two companions' support.

Swish!

But when the dense palm attack was about to collide with Mu Chen's attack, the latter's eyes flashed and the figure faded away again.

The boy's palm attack missed and his eyes narrowed suddenly. He hurriedly turned his body and was somewhat surprised to see a golden light erupt from behind him. In the end, it landed on his shoulder fiercely.

Puchi.

The dazzling finger attack was like a sharp spear. It directly pierced through the boy's shoulders and fresh blood sprayed out in all directions, causing the boy to let out a scream as he flew backwards.

"Brother Mu, amazing!" Seeing this, Mo Ling's eyes were filled with surprise. It was apparent that Mu Chen's strength had vastly surpassed his power from the time when he had fought against Liu Mubai.

In a few moments, a Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase student was completely defeated by Mu Chen. This made Ge Qing and the other person's eyes jump. A hint of uneasiness filled their hearts.

The person they thought of as a weakling was actually this tricky.

"Let's do this together. He's extremely fast, we should not get separated by him so he can defeat us individually!" Ge Qing shouted out.

The other Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase student nodded his head solemnly, then, the two of them unleashed fierce attacks towards Mu Chen from both sides.

But against the two of them teaming up, Mu Chen's Shadowspirit Step

was activated once again, and his body retreated like a phantom. He directly avoided the fierce attacks from the two of them.

"Nine Sword Dance!"

Once he noticed Mu Chen's phantom-like movements, a hint of coldness flashed through Ge Qing's eyes. He suddenly changed seals and dense Spiritual Energy surged out. Then, it formed into 9 Spiritual Energy Swords.

Swish!

Once these longswords were condensed, they shot out and flanked Mu Chen. The sharp sword aura easily ripped through the air.

Seeing this, Mu Chen's eyes revealed a touch of surprise. The Spiritual Art that Ge Qing was displaying was certainly not low in tier. The people that came from large Spiritual Academies truly had an amazing background.

"Daluo Palm!" The other Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase student immediately shouted out once he noticed Mu Chen being slowed down by Ge Qing. Dense Spiritual Energy instantly formed into a handprint of pure Spiritual Energy and smashed down angrily towards Mu Chen.

But when he saw this, Mu Chen let out a cold snort from within his heart. He circulated the Great Pagoda Art, and a faint black light barrier emerged on the surface of his body. The black light seemed to vaguely form a tower-like shape .

Clang Clang!

The 9 Spiritual Energy Swords chopped down at the blurry black light tower. However, the light tower did not budge at all. Immediately after this, the Spiritual Energy handprint smashed down, yet it also failed to harm the light tower. This powerful defense made Ge Qing and the other student's expressions change.

"Boom!"

But Mu Chen ignored the two individuals whose expressions were once

again changing significantly. Powerful fist winds surged as two black light seals emerged on the surface of his fists. Then, Mu Chen punched out, and an overbearing and violent Spiritual Energy bombarded the two of them.

Seeing this, Ge Qing and the other hurriedly expelled their Spiritual Energy in order to send out a punch to counter the blast.

Dong!

The overbearing winds from by the two Limitless Death Seals collided against Ge Qing and the other student's attack. Spiritual Energy swept out and forced the two of them to retreat a couple of steps.

"What an overbearing Spiritual Energy!"

As they were knocked back, Ge Qing and the others were shocked. Mu Chen was at the same Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase like them, yet he actually obtained the upper-hand when facing the two of them.

Just when Ge Qing and the other student were astonished, an exceedingly violent and fiery Spiritual Energy fluctuation emerged in front of them. They hurriedly looked over and noticed a 30-meter-tall, fiery Spiritual Array forming just in front of Mu Chen.

"A Spiritual Array?!"

As they looked at the Spiritual Array's Diagram Array, Ge Qing and the other revealed a horrified expression. This guy was a Spiritual Array Master as well?

"Roar!"

A tiger's roar resounded within the crimson light array, and in the next instant, a blazing tiger carrying violent Spiritual Energy stormed out of it and charged over to the trio.

"Let's attack together!"

Sensing the violent Spiritual Energy within the flame tiger's body, Ge Qing hastily cried out.

"Nine Sword Dance!"

“Daluo Palm!”

The two of them instantly released their strongest attacks. Finally, the billowing Spiritual Energy crashed into the flame tiger that was charging over.

Hot air waves swept out and the leaves on the ground instantly ignited without need of a fire. Then, Ge Qing and the other student staggered backwards a dozen steps.

“It’s too hard to deal with him, let’s hurry and retreat!”

Ge Qing’s face was completely pale. Even when they used all their strength, they weren’t able to get the upper-hand against Mu Chen. It was evident that they had estimated Mu Chen’s strength incorrectly. At this moment, it was best for them to retreat quickly.

Swish!

But just when this idea appeared in their minds and they prepared to retreat, a sound of winds breaking rang out. Then, they noticed a blurry figure standing in front of them. The two fingers emitting out a golden light brought forth sharp winds as they stopped in front of their throats.

The two of them instantly froze. They did not dare to make the slightest action. In their eyes, panic surged out.

“You actually wanted to rob others with such abilities? Aren’t you overestimating yourself?” Mu Chen smiled as he stared at the two pale faces.

“You!”

Ge Qing gnashed his teeth and stared fiercely at Mu Chen.

Mu Chen smile faintly and he changed his hands from two fingers to a palm. Then, he smacked down heavily on both of their chests. The powerful winds directly sent them flying away. A mouthful of blood sprayed out and the atmosphere instantly became depressed.

“Next up, you should know what you will have to do, right?” Mu Chen asked softly as he squatted down in front of them.

Ge Qing stared at Mu Chen's smile and felt a chill within his heart. He exchanged gazes with the other person and could only grit his teeth unwillingly. A light beam emitted out from the symbol on their forehead and entered the symbol on Mu Chen's forehead. This made the latter's symbol turned brighter. On the contrary, their symbols turned quite dim and seemed like it was about to disappear.

Mu Chen stood up and called Mo Ling over. He allowed Mo Ling to absorb the Spiritual Aura within the symbol of the unfortunate fellow, who had been wounded by him earlier.

"Everyone. If anyone wishes to rob my symbol's Spiritual Aura, I'll welcome it. However, I hope that every one of you will be prepared before you target me. These three fellows are examples..."

Mu Chen lifted his head and directed a smile at the forest behind him. He could sense the hidden aura of the people who followed Ge Qing and were planning to rob him.

The forest was completely silent. In the darkness, a few people's eyes flashed and intended to retreat. The person in front of them was too strong. Even though he was only at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase, he is able to easily defeat three opponents at the same level. Perhaps this guy could only be dealt with by an expert who had entered the territory of the Spirit Stage.

After Mu Chen's words faded away, he did not bother to stay in the area. The effect of setting an example for others should be quite effective. Although he wanted to increase his symbol's rank, these people only possessed Rank 1 symbols. Obviously, he wasn't interested in them as it would take too much time.

"Let's go."

Mu Chen glanced at the trio once more. Then, he gestured towards Mo Ling and headed into the depths of the ancient forest.

Ge Qing and the others stared at Mu Chen's fading figure. All three of them gnashed their teeth. They originally thought that this matter could be easily resolved, but in the end, they were the ones to suffer.

“What should we do now? That guy is too powerful. I’m afraid nobody within the Spiritual Rotation Stage is his opponent.” One of them let out a bitter laugh as he stared at Mu Chen’s silhouette.

A hint of coldness flashed through Ge Qing’s eyes. He gritted his teeth and said: “He is definitely amazing. But it isn’t to the point where nobody can defeat him.”

“You have a plan?” The other two asked in surprise.

“Hmph, let’s find my big brother. He is a person who participated in the Spiritual Road. As of now, he has already entered the Spirit Stage. Wouldn’t it be simple for him to defeat that bastard?” Ge Qing sneered.

“Participated in the Spiritual Road?”

“Spirit Stage?”

The two boys could not help but exclaim loudly. A hint of shock remained in their eyes. It was apparent that they did not expect Ge Qing to have such a powerful big brother.

“Follow me. I have a Spirit Board on me, so I can sense the position of my big brother. He should be in the same area as us. When the time comes, I will make that guy spit out everything he has eaten!” Ge Qing stood up as he gritted his teeth. Then, he headed towards the opposite direction. Seeing this, the other two boys quickly followed...

“Brother Mu, there won’t be any more trouble, right?” Mo Ling asked Mu Chen as he followed him. However, he would look back cautiously from time to time.

“The trio earlier was pretty strong. Compared to them, the people in the rear were nothing. Therefore, there won’t be anyone attacking us for now.”

Mu Chen smiled as he looked into the distance: “But as we enter the depths of the Northern Heavens World, we’ll start encountering powerful individuals. There are at least tens of thousands of students entering this place. Among them, there are a few powerful characters that came from the Spiritual Road. At that time, the examination will have truly begun.”

Mo Ling could not help but let out a bitter laugh. To stand out from their respective Spiritual Academies and obtain a Five Great Academies' entry, they must possess some ability. With so many powerful individuals, the competition was truly unthinkable.

At this moment, Mu Chen slowly exhaled. His black eyes were quite abstruse. In the Spiritual Road, he had many enemies. Who knows how many of them he would meet here? Since those guys passed through the final part of the Spiritual Road, their strength would soar, perhaps, they had already broken through to the Spirit Stage.

Mu Chen pursed his lips. He did not want to lose to an opponent that he had defeated before. Even if they had passed through the Spiritual Road and obtained the most important Spiritual Energy Empowerment, he, Mu Chen, would let them understand one thing. It does not matter whether he had lost a year of cultivation due to the Spiritual Road, nor does it matter that he did not obtain the Spiritual Road's final Spiritual Energy Empowerment. Since he was able to make them surrender in the Spiritual Road, he could do the same in reality as well.

Mu Chen clenched his hands slowly. It seemed that it was time for him to condense the third Limitless Death Seal...

When he fought against Liu Jingshan, Mu Chen has once condensed 4 Limitless Death Seals by borrowing the Nine Nether Bird's strength. The power was quite extraordinary. For the current Mu Chen, it was evident that he did not have the ability to condense 4 seals. However, he probably had the ability to condense the 3rd seal.

If Mu Chen was successful in condensing the 3rd seal, even a Spirit Stage Initial Phase powerhouse would have to take shelter when he activated it with his current strength.

Chapter 115: The Third Limitless Death Seal

Within the ink-like dark of night, only a couple of stars could be seen in the entire Northern Heavens World. It was quite a lonely sight.

Inside the ancient forest, various roars resounded out from time to time. These roars were laced with rage. Apparently, since the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's examination began, a few Spiritual Beasts had been disturbed by the students. The vast region that had previously been calm and quiet was suddenly being occupied by numerous students that rushed in like a flood.

The Spiritual Beast inhabitants were clearly unhappy being disturbed by them. Therefore, battles would continue to break out even when it was late at night.

In the depths of the forest, a bonfire rose. Mu Chen was sitting cross-legged underneath a large tree. He stared at the rising bonfire and entered a trance. This was quite a familiar scene to him.

In the Spiritual Road, he had spent many nights like this. However, during that time, he had a beautiful girl, who possessed clear glass-like eyes, beside him. When he glanced at her, it was as if the troubles within his heart were being suppressed, and he would calm down.

"Brother Mu, here."

A discordant voice suddenly caused Mu Chen wake from the trance. He stared at a piece of dark, roasted meat that was being handed over by Mo Ling, who had a foolish smile on his face. At this moment, he could not help but let out a sigh. In his eyes, a hint of depression appeared. Luo Li was definitely better. Not only was she a feast to his eyes, the roasted meat that she made was many times better than Mo Ling's roughly made one.

Mo Ling also knew that his cooking skills were quite miserable. However, his smiling appearance still made Mu Chen shake his head helplessly.

“Brother Mu, the Northern Heavens World is truly large. We’ve already walked for two days and we still haven’t escape the forest…” Mo Ling said.

“How could the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy’s examination location be a small location?” Mu Chen smiled: “There are probably tens of thousands of students. Moreover, all of them are individuals who stood out within their own Spiritual Academy. If the place isn’t large, how could they throw them all in here?”

“During the past two days, there have been less people provoking us.” Mo Ling nodded. Then, he smiled and said: “It seems Brother Mu’s threat earlier was quite effective.”

“The effects will soon disappear.” Mu Chen shook his head. He stared into the depths of the forest underneath the dark sky as he said: “The Northern Heavens World is a vast, circular region. We were all at the edges, but everybody is heading towards the center. Therefore, it will become increasingly more difficult to approach the center area. Not only will the Spiritual Beasts become more powerful, the enemies will also become tougher.”

“I’ve heard some news earlier. It seems that many people are grouping up and forming small and large forces. When groups like that fight, it will be a grand sight.” Mo Ling said.

Mu Chen nodded and smiled: “That’s normal. In fact, you are quite amazing if you can gather a large amount of men by your side during the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy’s examination.”

“Moreover, the Spiritual Beasts will become more powerful as time passes. Aside from a few monsters, the others would have to rely on teams.”

“With Brother Mu’s abilities, you can definitely do better if you tried.” Mo Ling replied. Towards Mu Chen, Mo Ling had quite a bit of confidence in him.

Mu Chen let out a noncommittal smile. He wasn’t interested in doing such a thing.

“Hehe. However, Brother Mu’s symbol has already ranked up to Rank 4 within two days. You’ve already reached the bottom line for not being eliminated. As for me, I’m still at Rank 2. I really need to work harder.” Mo Ling stared enviously at Mu Chen’s forehead. The latter had a fiery red symbol. This was the sign for a Rank 4 Symbol. During the past two days, Mu Chen had hunted down many powerful Spiritual Beasts. Thus, his speed of ranking up was quite fast. As for himself, he had worked hard, yet he only reached Rank 2. It was still quite far away from reaching Rank 4.

“There’s no need to be impatient. It’s still early. This examination will not end this quickly.” Mu Chen smiled as he comforted him. Then he smiled: “You can guard first tonight. I need to cultivate for a while. If there are any issues, wake me up immediately.”

“Okay!” Mo Ling nodded.

Seeing that the situation was like this , Mu Chen no longer spoke and closed both his eyes. The Spiritual Energy within his body slowly circulated. In the past two days, he had always attempted to condense the third Limitless Death Seal. When he had just started, he had still been quite rusty; but he gradually began to form it. Based on his feelings, he felt that he would truly succeed in condensing it tonight.

Mo Ling watched as Mu Chen closed his eyes and started cultivating. Then, he stood up and extinguished the bonfire without leaving any sparks. His strength in the Northern Heavens World was only considered ordinary. Thus, he could not give much protection to Mu Chen. It was best for him to be cautious.

Mu Chen quietly gathered his thoughts and waited for his heart to completely calm down. Once he was calm, he started to rapidly circulate the Spiritual Energy within his body.

The Limitless Death Seal was a rather peculiar Spiritual Art. It wasn’t extremely powerful in the beginning. But as the number of seals increased, it would eventually possess extraordinary power.

On the day Mu Chen borrowed the Nine Nether Bird’s power, he had temporarily condensed four Limitless Death Seals. With those four seals,

he destroyed Liu Jingshan's Mountain God Tactics attack, which was at the mastery stage. According to his own speculations, the Mountain God Tactics that Liu Jingshan had trained in was close to a Spiritual Tier High Rank Spiritual Art.

However, it was evident that it was impossible for Mu Chen to condense four Limitless Death Seals in his current state. But since his strength had increased, he could attempt to condense the third seal.

Dense Spiritual Energy circulated within Mu Chen's body. Shortly after, Mu Chen was finally able to control his thoughts and allowed the Spiritual Energy to flow through his meridians to his palms.

At the same time, Mu Chen's hands clasped together and formed a few unusual hand seals. As these hand seals faded like an illusion, dark-black Spiritual Energy began to gather underneath his palm. By the end of the process, it had formed into a clump of black light 3 meters in size.

Spiritual Energy was twisting around within the light clump. It seemed that something was being formed within it. As this occurred, overbearing and powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuations emitted and caused the leaves beside Mu Chen to crumble into dust.

Next to Mu Chen, Mo Ling secretly clicked his tongue. He did not know what Spiritual Art Mu Chen was training in. It actually had such an impressive power.

Over time, the black light clump became increasingly small. As the light clump shrank, a black light seal began to become increasingly clear.

Buzz!

The black light clump had completely vanished, and a black light seal floated on top of Mu Chen's palm. The Limitless Death Seal had finally been condensed successfully by Mu Chen.

Mu Chen exhaled a stream of white vapor. He immediately changed his hand seal and the Limitless Death Seal entered his palm.

Boom!

The instant the Limitless Death Seal entered his palm, Mu Chen's body shook. An extremely powerful backlash surged out from his palm and charged fiercely through his meridians, wreaking chaos along the way.

However, Mu Chen was already prepared for this. He concentrated and dark-black Spiritual Energy that had been on standby within his meridians swept out. It collided fiercely with the backlash.

Buzz Buzz.

A deep sound echoed within Mu Chen's body. Inside his aura sea, the Spiritual Energy light wheel circulated and waves of Spiritual Energy were pouring out constantly. It defended against the Limitless Death Seal's backlash.

The Limitless Death Seal was truly domineering. However, the Great Pagoda Art that Mu Chen had trained in was even more domineering. It did not retreat against the fierce impact, and instead there were signs of the backlash being resolved.

This confrontation within Mu Chen's body lasted for approximately half an hour. Just when Mu Chen started to feel a slight pain within his meridians, the backlash in his body was finally completely resolved.

Buzz.

Just when the backlash was resolved, Mu Chen felt the third Limitless Death Seal slowly integrating into the center of his palm.

It was this way, that Mu Chen had truly succeeded in condensing the third Limitless Death Seal.

In the dim night, Mu Chen opened his eyes. He clenched his hands and felt three Limitless Death Seals twinkling at his fingertips. An overbearing fluctuation emitted.

As he felt the power of the three Limitless Death Seals, Mu Chen revealed a satisfied smile. By layering the three Limitless Death Seals on top of each other, even a Spirit Stage Initial Phase powerhouse would have to avoid its might.

“Brother Mu, did you succeed in your cultivation?” Mo Ling, who was watching the surroundings nervously, suddenly asked in surprise.

Mu Chen nodded and smiled as he stood up. But just when he was about to let Mo Ling rest, his expression changed. His eyes immediately turned towards the forest in front. A tremor came from that direction.

Spiritual Beasts’ roars also seemed to start at the same time as the tremor.

“Spiritual Beasts.”

Mu Chen frowned. He immediately gestured to Mo Ling and the two of them headed to the top of a tree. Their gazes were focused in the direction of the tremor. The vibrations rapidly came closer and they noticed a red light after a while.

It was a group of red panthers. Looking at them from afar, it seemed that their bodies were covered with flames and looked extremely mighty. They were all Flame Panthers, Spiritual Beasts that possess the strength of a Spiritual Rotation Stage Middle Phase. With a dozen of them grouping together, even a person at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase would have to hide.

Mu Chen stared at the group of Flame Panthers before turning his gaze toward the front of the flock. At that location, a slender figure was awkwardly avoiding the Flame Panthers’ attack.

“Someone’s being hunted.” Mo Ling whispered.

Mu Chen’s eyes narrowed. Through the moonlight, he noticed a little girl dressed in white. She seemed to be even younger than them. Her petite face was extremely beautiful and adorable. At this moment, her lake-like eyes were rippling with panic.

“How could she obtain the qualifications to enter the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy at such a young age?” Although the girl was quite cute, Mu Chen was more surprised at her age. He immediately whispered this in shock.

“Brother Mu, should we help her?” Mo Ling asked. It was indeed quite

cruel for them to stand back and do nothing, while watching a cute girl being ripped into pieces by Flame Panthers.

Mu Chen stared at the scene, but he did not show any signs of helping out.

While she was being watched at by Mu Chen and Mo Ling, the little girl also seemed to detect something. She lifted her face and her lake-like eyes stared at Mu Chen and Mo Ling. Delight instantly filled her face.

However, her delighted expression quickly faded away. This is because it seemed that the two men on the trees did not want to help her.

"Meanies."

The little girl pouted. Water soon gathered in her eyes, but she bit her lips stubbornly so that tears didn't flow. She was quite innocent, so she did not know why they didn't help her out in her time of need. However, once she thought about it, the other side wasn't obligated to help her. Thus, she immediately rubbed her eyes. Her previous Spiritual Academy was better. Everybody would help her, but the people here were all bad individuals. She truly didn't know why her parents and the principal wanted her to come here. Right now, she was separated from her sister and nobody wanted to help her.

As they noticed the pitiful appearance of the girl, Mu Chen and Mo Ling's faces twitched. If there were females here, they would probably have charged down and held the little girl in their arms with sympathy...

"Ah."

The little girl suddenly issued a scream. While she was desperately trying to escape, her steps were quite disorderly; and she actually fell forward. When that happened, she immediately turned around in panic and watched in terror as the dozen hideous Flame Panthers came lunging at her.

"Eh."

On the tree, Mu Chen finally let out a helpless sigh. His body swooped down like a hawk over to the girl.

Since it was impossible to ignore, why not help her out?

Chapter 116: Sun'Er

Within the forest, meat was roasting over a bonfire as aromatic oil dripped down. The oil droplets dribbled into the bonfire causing the flames to rise higher from within the bonfire.

Next to the bonfire, a little girl dressed in white was currently widening her bright, black eyes. She stared at meat roasting on the spit as drool was slowly leaking out of her mouth; she was endlessly swallowing her saliva. Currently, her attention was completely captured by the roasted meat. As for the two individuals beside her, she had temporarily forgotten about them.

"Cough..."

Mu Chen could not help but cough lightly while he stared at the oblivious girl. He had saved her from the Flame Panthers earlier, yet she still remained silent. Only after a while, she hesitantly muttered to Mu Chen: "I'm hungry."

When Mu Chen heard this, he was dumbfounded. He could only make the best of the ingredients available, so he roasted a Flame Panther. Although his skill was incomparable to Luo Li, it was still many times better than Mo Ling.

The little girl, who was completely focused on the roasted meat, heard Mu Chen's coughing sounds and lifted her petite face.

"Little girl, what's your name?" Mu Chen directed a smile at the little girl and asked her.

"You're all bad people. My sister told me not to casually tell other people my name." The little girl pouted. She still remembered Mu Chen and Mo Ling standing aside, watching her while she had been helplessly chased by the Flame Panthers. They had not wanted to help her. Thus, from her perspective, they were as close as possible to being assessed as being bad individuals. If it wasn't for the fact that she was so hungry, she would have ignored them.

Mu Chen frowned and lifted the roast meat as if he wanted to throw it away. At that moment, the little girl suddenly became anxious. Her eyes instantly turned watery as if she wanted to cry in protest against the unpardonable crime Mu Chen was committing by denying her something to eat.

But Mu Chen remained unmoved. He only smiled at her slightly.

"I'm Sun'Er." The little girl finally couldn't hold out any longer, and her nose twitched as she replied in dismay.

"How old are you?"

"14 years old." With the roasted meat being held hostage, the little girl could only answer the questions honestly.

A hint of surprise filled Mu Chen's eyes. 14 years old? She has been able to obtain the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's qualification at such an age? Isn't this too amazing? Moreover, when Mu Chen looked at the little girl's snow-like forehead, a dark-red symbol was there. It was a Rank 3 Symbol.

That is to say this little girl didn't just obtain an ordinary entry. Rather, she obtained a seeded entry exactly like him.

"You obtained a seeded entry for the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy even though you're only 14? Could it be that your family is related with someone high up in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy? Your strength is similar to mine. You're only at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Middle Phase, so how could you obtain a seeded entry?" Mo Ling could not help but ask. He was disturbed. This was because he felt ashamed when he compared himself to the little girl.

"Nonsense!" The little girl was instantly unhappy when she heard these words. She immediately replied: "You're not my opponent."

"Then why would someone who obtained a seeded entry be hunted by Flame Panthers?" Mo Ling asked suspiciously.

"That's because I'm hungry." This reason instantly made the little girl's face flush. She immediately grabbed onto her long pigtails and said

embarrassedly: “Furthermore, I’m a Spiritual Array Master. They came too fast and scared me. Once I was afraid, I could not arrange a Spiritual Array.”

“A Spiritual Array Master?”

Mu Chen and Mo Ling were surprised. The latter stared doubtfully at the little girl named Sun’Er as though he did not believe her.

“I didn’t lie to you!” Sun’Er noticed the suspicion on Mu Chen and Mo Ling’s faces and was suddenly impatient. She extended her petite hands and her slender fingers twinkled. As the air fluctuated, a blue Spiritual Array formed in front of her. Then, a powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuation emitted from the array.

“This...”

Mo Ling was stunned. He felt an immense pressure coming from the Spiritual Array. From the Spiritual Energy fluctuation, he could tell that it was definitely enough to defeat someone at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase. Moreover, this Spiritual Array was formed easily by the little girl.

“A Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master.” Mu Chen’s eyes focused at this moment. The power of this Spiritual Array was in no way inferior to his “Devouring Tigerblaze Spiritual Array”. It was already considered to be outstanding among the Rank 1 Spiritual Arrays. Moreover, Sun’Er was able to arrange it this easily. It meant that she had already surpassed a Rank 1 Spiritual Array Master. Furthermore, Mu Chen perceived a familiar feeling as she arranged the Spiritual Array. It was the...

Heart Array State.

At this moment, shock filled Mu Chen’s heart. The little girl in front of him was actually a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master. In addition, she was like him and possessed the Heart Array State.

This meant that she also possessed an extraordinary talent in Spiritual Array Cultivation.

Moreover, Mu Chen could feel that Sun’Er had received relatively

complete Spiritual Array Cultivation Training. It was many times better than his own half-baked training. At the very least, even though he was a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master, there were only a few Spiritual Arrays he could use.

At that instant, Mu Chen finally understood why she was able to obtain a seeded entry and had been recruited by the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy at such a young age.

Thinking about this, Mu Chen sighed. There were too many concealed talents within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Furthermore, this was only an examination for newcomers and there were already so many powerful individuals.

"Here." Mu Chen smiled as he handed the roasted meat in his hand to the little girl, who was already salivating.

"Thank you, brother."

Sun'Er's dark eyes instantly brightened up. However, the little girl still thanked him politely before accepting it. Then, she stopped caring about her image as she gobbled it up.

Mu Chen could not help but smile as he stared at the innocent little girl, with her long twintails and filled with vitality.

The little girl's body was quite petite, yet her appetite was unexpectedly large. She quickly ate all the meat and blinked as she said to Mu Chen with an embarrassed expression: "I'm still hungry."

Mu Chen was speechless. He asked with a wry smile: "How long since you last ate?"

"Two days." The little girl was particularly distressed as she mentioned it. She said: "I originally brought a lot of food. However, I met a little Spiritual Beast two days ago and fed a lot of food to it. Since I don't know how to cook, I did not have a chance to eat until now."

Mu Chen and Mo Ling exchanged gazes with each other. Both of them wanted to laugh. The Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's examination was an extremely serious place. How could such an unusual creature

appear here?

Mu Chen shook his head, picked up some wood and stacked it up.

“Brother, you’re really kind. What’s your name?” Seeing Mu Chen preparing food for her again, Sun’Er’s opinion of him was increasing significantly. Thus, she asked with a clear and innocent voice.

“I’m Mu Chen and he’s Mo Ling. We came from the same Spiritual Academy.” Mu Chen smiled and asked: “Based on what you’ve said earlier, your sister is also in this Northern Heavens World?”

“Yes.” Sun’Er hurriedly nodded. She rubbed her stomach and said: “However, we were separated. Otherwise, I wouldn’t have been hungry. Moreover, if my sister was here with me, I wouldn’t have been bullied by these hateful beasts.”

As she talked about her sister, the little girl seemed to be filled with pride. Her twintails would bounce up and down.

“Is your sister powerful?” Mo Ling asked due to his curiosity.

“My sister is someone who participated in the Spiritual Road.” Sun’Er replied proudly.

Mo Ling was surprised. Participated in the Spiritual Road? Then she was definitely not someone simple.

“Brother Mu, maybe you know her.” Mo Ling smiled as he asked Mu Chen.

“That’s not necessarily the case. The Spiritual Road is quite large. Moreover, I came out a year earlier than the rest of them. How could I know everyone?” Mu Chen shook his head and replied.

“Brother Mu Chen, you also participated in the Spiritual Road? Aren’t you quite powerful? I also received the Spiritual Road’s qualification, but my mother didn’t let me go because I was too young.” Sun’Er said regretfully.

“You also obtained the qualifications?” Mo Ling was speechless. He stared at Sun’Er as if she was a monster. Just what sort of background did

this little girl have? Within their Northern Spiritual Realm, Mu Chen was the only one that had obtained the qualification to enter the Spiritual Road.

Mu Chen was not surprised. It seemed that Sun'Er was quite talented in Spiritual Arrays. If they had to discuss her combat ability, she could probably fight against a Spirit Stage Initial Phase powerhouse. However, she definitely lacked experience and was quite immature.

"It's good that you did not go. Otherwise, you might not have been here right now." Mu Chen smiled. He knew how ruthless the Spiritual Road was. It was truly an outstanding place to hone others. To an innocent girl like Sun'Er, it was not a good place to go. If she had participated, she might have lost that innocent and pure personality. But whether or not it was a loss for her was difficult for one to tell.

"Here."

Mu Chen handed the roasted meat in his hand to Sun'Er. Since the girl was quite innocent, he was quite fond of her.

Sun'Er excitedly accepted the roasted meat. Then, she immediately buried herself in the meat.

The little girl had a truly big appetite, which had only been satisfied after Mu Chen had roasted an entire Flame Panther for her. This scene made Mu Chen and Mo Ling glance at her tiny body. They wondered where all that food had disappeared to within her body...

"Brother Mu Chen..."

After she was satisfied, Sun'Er's black eyes suddenly stared at Mu Chen and she asked hesitantly: "Can I ask you a favor?"

"Eh?" Mu Chen stared at her.

"Can you take me to my sister? She's probably in this region, I have a Spirit Board so I can find her..." Sun'Er touched the red symbol flashing on her forehead and whispered: "Other people have been trying to steal this from me...So I could only hide whenever I met anyone over the past two days...If I get lost while looking for my sister, I will probably starve

again…”

Mu Chen gave her a soft smile. Sun’Er possessed a Rank 3 Symbol. It was indeed quite attractive to others. Coupled with her age and pure personality, she would probably be tricked and have her symbol stolen shortly after separating from them.

“Brother Mu Chen, you’re a good person. Please help me. I will definitely repay you once I find my sister.” Sun’Er pleaded. Mu Chen was the first person that didn’t try to steal her symbol and had even given her food.

As he stared at the little girl’s pleading expression, Mu Chen smiled. Most of the people within the Northern Heavens World would have the same goal as them. Therefore, their routes would be the same. He believed it wouldn’t cause too much trouble for them to help her out, so he nodded his head at Sun’Er.

It would definitely be interesting to have such an unusual creature following them.

Chapter 117: Man Journey

With Sun'Er joining them on the road, it brought a lot more joy to them. Both Mu Chen and Mo Ling had a favorable impression of the cute and innocent, little girl. Although this little girl was sometimes careless, her antics would often bring delight.

Because of Mu Chen and Mo Ling's protection, Sun'Er was finally able to display her abilities as a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master during the trip. Even Mu Chen was sometimes surprised when he saw the powerful Spiritual Arrays that were formed so skillfully. The explosive energy from the arrays could directly kill a Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase Spiritual Beast.

Although that the little girl was quite amazing, she lacked combat experience. Upon being disturbed, the speed of arranging Spiritual Arrays would slow down significantly and become quite unstable.

If it was a life and death battle, it was unlikely that her opponent would give her the chance to perfectly form the array. In conclusion, Sun'Er's potential was quite high, but she still needed to hone herself before she could fully use that potential.

But no matter what, a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master was still a considerable threat. If Sun'Er was given the room to go all out, she could even fight against a Spirit Stage Initial Phase powerhouse. Of course, there was still the issue of of her needing time to prepare...

During their three-man journey, they attracted a lot of attention. After all, among the three of them, Mu Chen possessed a Rank 4 Symbol, Sun'Er possessed a Rank 3 Symbol and even Mo Ling had a Rank 2 Symbol. To many individuals, this kind of target was quite tempting. Thus, there were many sneak attacks along the road. However, every single one of them was resolved by Mu Chen.

With Mu Chen's current strength, unless it was a Spirit Stage powerhouse, they would not be able to produce any threat to him. Therefore, the many trouble-makers had been unable to disrupt their

pace.

Roar!

In the forested area, the roars of beasts sounded out. Mu Chen stood on top of a tree branch and saw what was ahead. At that location, there were three pitch black rhinoceros. These three Steel Rhinos had the strength comparable to a Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase. Their blood-red eyes were locked onto Mo Ling, who was directly above them. Not too far behind Mo Ling, Sun'Er looked around hesitantly.

"Sun'Er. I'll leave these three fellows to the two of you. If you can't resolve this situation, we will have to temporarily cancel tonight's dinner." Mu Chen stared at Sun'Er and smiled.

Sun'Er's strength was decent. If she could mature, she would then be able to perform decently. Thus, Mu Chen was trying to help her out as much as possible. Although Mu Chen had a favorable impression to her, due to her lovely and innocent appearance, her personality was not suitable for this place. Therefore, Sun'Er had to develop her own strength. This was something that would benefit her.

"Please be considerate: it isn't only for you, it is also for your Brother Mo Ling's dinner. You must perform steadily, otherwise, both of you will starve together."

As she heard Mu Chen use this terrible threat on her, Sun'Er's nose twitched. Although it was a bit frustrating, the little girl felt guilty because her own performance would affect Mo Ling as well. Brother Mu Chen is the worst; he is even more vicious than these Spiritual beasts. Although his smiling appearance looks very handsome...

This time, she had to work hard.

After making up her mind, Sun'Er clenched her fists softly. Light swiftly emerged and condensed into numerous Spiritual Seals. She closed her eyes and did not look at the vicious Spiritual Beasts. Then, her hands changed between seals, and a Spiritual Array Diagram was quickly arranged.

In front of her, Mo Ling was forced into an awkward position by the

three Steel Rhinos. He was only at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Middle Phase, so he wasn't able to defeat even one of the Steel Rhinos. If it wasn't for the fact that these Spiritual Beasts weren't intelligent, he would have probably been stomped to death already. But even so, he was still in danger and could only barely hold on.

"Brother Mo Ling, move aside!"

Just when Mo Ling couldn't endure anymore, an angelic voice came from the rear. Mo Ling instantly rolled away and slammed his hands onto the ground. Then, his body quickly flew back.

At this moment, Sun'Er had already opened her eyes. A blue light array was formed in front of her and a violent fluctuation spread out.

By the time the Spiritual Array had been formed by Sun'Er, her petite face had also turned solemn. She waved her hands and the blue light array released a rich blue light.

"Wind Spirits Array!"

Boom!

The blue light gushed out and turned into blades of wind within the light array. The wind blades tore through the air and descended with overwhelming power. The ground was heavily damaged as a result.

Dong!

These wind blades directly enshrouded the three Steel Rhinos. As the wind blades surged over, they instantly cut the three Steel Rhinos and wounded them all over their bodies. In the end, they roared and struggled as they fell to the ground. Fresh blood flowed out from their wounds.

Mu Chen nodded slightly as he watched from the side. The Spiritual Array that Sun'Er displayed should be considered a top existence among the Rank 1 Spiritual Arrays. It had an extraordinary power. Even the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase Steel Rhinos weren't able to endure it.

"Amazing!"

Mo Ling looked at the three Steel Rhinos that had been quickly killed by

Sun'Er and could not help but direct a thumbs up to Sun'Er. Surprise filled his eyes. A Spiritual Array Master was indeed powerful.

Mu Chen smiled and walked next to Sun'Er. He rubbed her head and said, "Well done."

After receiving these praises, Sun'Er's eyes revealed a hint of delight. It was truly easy to make this little girl happy.

"Take out your Spirit Board. You should check how far away we are from your sister."

Hearing this, Sun'Er's hands instantly flashed. A light board the size of two palms emerged on top of her hands. On the board, there was a light barrier, and a few lights could be seen within the barrier.

This was a position supporting Spiritual Artifact. Although it required being set up in advance, it would be quite convenient for them to find the other within a certain range.

However, Mu Chen would rarely see Spiritual Artifacts within the Northern Spiritual Realm. This is because Spiritual Artifacts could only be made by Spiritual Blacksmiths, and the Spiritual Blacksmiths in Northern Spiritual Realm were even rarer than Spiritual Array Masters. Even Mu Feng didn't possess any decent Spiritual Artifacts. Overall, this could only be the case as the Northern Spiritual Realm was too small...

Sun'Er stared at the Spirit Board for a while and pointed to the north with a finger. "We're close. If we continue to head in this direction, we will be able to find my sister within half a day," she said

Mu Chen nodded slightly.

"Brother Mu Chen." Sun'Er placed away the Spirit Board and stared at Mu Chen. Her twintails danced as she asked: "Are you going to leave once you send me back to my sister?"

Sun'Er was reluctant to part with him. After their interactions with each other during the past two days, the little girl felt Mu Chen's kindness and had became quite close to him; this was all despite him being uncompromising in order to force her to train.

“Both of us would have to head to the whatever Northern Heavens Hall at some point. We could go together along with my sister…” Sun’Er said with expectations.

Hearing this, Mu Chen smiled. He tugged the little girl’s twintails that were filled with vigor and replied: “We’ll see when that happens. Come, let’s prepare dinner first.”

Sun’Er’s eyes, which looked depressed due to Mu Chen’s vague reply, instantly lit up when she heard the end of the sentence. She hurriedly followed him in excitement.

As Mu Chen and the two others departed, a few gazes hidden within the darkness of the forest flashed and faded away.

On the next day, Mu Chen and the others were able to set off again. Based on the trajectory of Sun’Er’s Spirit Board, her sister must have been heading over to this direction swiftly.

The three figures pushed off gently from a tree branch and rushed out from within the forest. They flew off, accompanied by the sounds of winds breaking.

However, Mu Chen stopped all of a sudden. He extended both arms and stopped both Mo Ling and Sun’Er behind him.

“What is it?” Mo Ling asked in confusion.

Mu Chen’s eyes narrowed. His eyes stared calmly at the forest in front of them as he said: “Come out. Don’t you feel uncomfortable hiding in such a cramp space?”

After Mu Chen’s voice rang out, a commotion began in the forest in front of them. In an instant, Mo Ling was surprised to see numerous figures slowly emerging from the forest. There were at least thirty people hiding there.

And in the forefront of the group, he noticed three familiar figures. The one that was leading the group was Ge Qing, who had attempted to rob them previously but instead had suffered a loss.

Right now, Ge Qing had a red symbol flashing on his forehead. In a few short days, he had actually increased his symbol to Rank 3. It seemed that he had robbed numerous individuals.

"Ohoho, what a coincidence. We actually meet again." Ge Qing smiled as he stared at Mu Chen. His eyes were filled with ill intent.

Mu Chen glanced at him and noticed that there were actually 8 individuals, who had reached the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase, within the group. As for the rest, their auras were not weak either. It seemed that Ge Qing had come prepared. Moreover, these people had a red ribbon wrapped around their arms. It looked like they belonged to the same team.

Currently within this Northern Heavens World, there were already numerous small and large forces. It was evident that Ge Qing had joined one.

"It seemed that the punishment I've handed out to you before wasn't enough." Mu Chen said slowly. A hint of coldness flashed through his eyes. He did not like this sort of incessant trouble.

"Hmph. You still dare act arrogant now? Aren't you quite capable of fighting? Then, why don't you try fighting against all 30 of us?!" Ge Qing shouted as he gnashed his teeth. Although he knew that Mu Chen was powerful, he didn't believe that they would fail to get rid of Mu Chen with thirty men. After all, the latter was only at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase and had not broken through to the Spirit Stage.

"Mo Ling, take Sun'Er and leave."

Mu Chen's black eyes slowly turned cold. A black light flashed out from his palms.

"Brother Mu Chen."

Just when Mu Chen was about to attack, Sun'Er suddenly pulled on his arm. Then, she quietly held out the Spirit Board on her palm. A hint of delight had filled her dark-black eyes.

"My sister is coming."

Mu Chen was stunned. He glanced at the Spirit Board and noticed a light approaching them at an extremely fast speed.

Boom!

The light quickly approached this area and fluctuating Spiritual Energy instantly burst outwards. A powerful Spiritual Energy pressure then emitted throughout the area.

Mu Chen felt the Spiritual Energy pressure and frowned, “Spirit Stage?”

Mu Chen looked towards the distance. At that location, a figure made of light was charging over at a lightning speed.

Chapter 118: Ye Qingling

A dense Spiritual Energy pressure engulfed the forest at an amazing speed. Ge Qing and the others, who had been originally planning to attack Mu Chen, suddenly changed their expressions. They hurriedly turned around and looked to their rear. Coming from that direction, a figure wrapped with Spiritual Energy was rushing over quickly.

Swish!

The figure was extremely fast, and, in a couple of seconds, she appeared in the sky above the forest. Then, her body descended onto a large tree as she revealed her slender figure.

At this moment, everybody's gazes were gathered at the location of that girl. She was a beautiful girl dressed in an apricot-colored dress. Her figure was quite tall, and she had a tender face. Moreover, her neck, which was slender and white as snow, gave off an exquisite allure all the way down to her collarbone. Beneath the collarbone was a curvy figure that extended down along with her clothes.

A girl like this could only be considered as outstanding. However, she was currently wearing a cold expression and exuding a sharp, dangerous atmosphere, which was so strong that it was able to stop others from approaching her.

"Sister!"

When Sun'Er noticed the girl appear, her petite face revealed a hint of delight, and she hurriedly waved her hands.

The beautiful girl dressed in the apricot-colored dress looked at Sun'Er, and her cold expression quickly faded away. Her eyes immediately softened.

"Is she Sun'Er's sister? How pretty." Mo Ling whispered while he looked at the beautiful girl in surprise.

Mu Chen smiled. The girl in front of him was unfamiliar to him. It was evident that he had not met her in the Spiritual Road. However, the latter

was certainly powerful. The aura she emitted was probably at the Spirit Stage Initial Phase level. With strength like this, she could not be considered weak in the Northern Heavens World.

"The final step in the Spiritual Road is truly impressive..."

Mu Chen sighed within his heart. In the Spiritual Road's trial, if the earlier steps honed the mind, then the final step was the reward to the trial. That reward would be power distribution based on the honing of the mind. Thus, as long as one passed the final step, it would count as passing the Spiritual Road.

And since Mu Chen was kicked out halfway through the Spiritual Road, he had only been able to mentally hone himself. But he lacked the power of the final step.

Based on Mu Chen's calculations, if he had successfully obtained the Spiritual Energy Empowerment during the final step, he was confident that he would have had the qualifications to enter the Three Heavens Stage.

Although he felt a bit of regret, Mu Chen wasn't someone that was indecisive and wishy-washy. Even without the enormous leap of power, he believed that he would be able to catch up slowly and steadily.

On the tree, the girl dressed in the apricot-dress stared intensely at Mu Chen and Mo Ling, who were beside Sun'Er. She understood that her little sister was quite innocent. If someone wanted to trick her and sell her off, she would probably be happily counting the money for the transaction.

Even against the intense gaze, Mu Chen did not back down at all. His black eyes were calm as a lake. He not only remained unaffected by her strength but also by her appearance.

After a while, the girl slowly retracted her gaze and turned to look at Ge Qing. She glanced at the red ribbon. Then, her beautiful eyes twitched as she asked: Are you from the Ge Clan?"

Ge Qing nodded hesitantly. He recognized the girl in front of him, who was clearly at the Spirit Stage. She was the leader of the Ye Clan, Ye

Qingling. In this region, she was quite well-known.

"Scram." The girl said faintly.

Ge Qing's face changed slightly. He gritted his teeth and said unwillingly: "If you want to take the little girl away, we will not stop you. However, we have a grudge with that boy over there, so I hope that you will give some face to my big brother, Ge Hai, and not intervene with us."

Ye Qingling looked at Ge Qing for a moment. Ge Hai was the leader of the Ge Clan. His strength had also reached the Spirit Stage Initial Phase.

However, Ye Qingling still shook her head and replied, "Since they are Sun'Er's friends, I cannot sit here idly."

Hearing that Ye Qingling insisted on intervening with the situation, Ge Qing's face instantly turned ugly. It was evident that he had not expected Ye Qingling to not give any respect to his brother.

Swish!

Just as Ge Qing's expression changed, sounds of winds breaking suddenly rang out from behind. Then, numerous figures charged over and appeared at the surrounding space. They completely surrounded all of them.

"It's the people from the Ye Clan..." Ge Qing and the others were slightly afraid when they noticed the numerous figures.

"Ge Qing, Sister Ye is speaking to you respectfully. You better know what's good for you. Otherwise, we will directly snatch away your symbols and see if your Ge Clan is able to respond in turn!" A boy shouted out in a cold voice in front of the dozens of figures.

The boy had a lanky body and stared at Ge Qing with a smile. However, once his gaze swept over to the figure in the apricot-colored dress, a hint of passion and love emerged within the depths of his eyes.

"Wang Sheng, do you think that our Ge Clan is afraid of you?" Ge Qing grunted as he stared at the boy. The latter was considered to be the number 2 figure within the Ye Clan. His strength was only slightly weaker

than Ye Qingling. It was said that he was half a step from entering the Spirit Stage and was considerably powerful.

"Then why don't we test it out?!" Wang Sheng curled his lips and replied.

"You!"

Ge Qing gnashed his teeth. How could they dare to attack when Ye Qingling was here? A single Spirit Stage powerhouse was enough to deal with all of them. After all, a Spiritual Rotation Stage and a Spirit Stage was far too different.

Ge Qing's expression changed for a while. Then, he finally turned and looked at Mu Chen: "Consider yourself lucky this time. Don't ever let me find an opportunity to deal with you. Otherwise, I will not let you go this easily."

After he said this, he turned and spoke to Ye Qingling and Wang Sheng: "Since you won't give the Ge Clan any face, I will have a good talk with my brother about it. Don't think that we are afraid of you!"

"Let's go!"

Ge Qing grunted and waves his hands. Then, he led the thirty men back into the forest behind disappearing from this location.

With the departure of Ge Qing and the others, the atmosphere in the area calmed down. Wang Sheng also let out a sigh of relief. The Ge Clan had numbers similar to them. Moreover, Ge Hai was also at the Spirit Stage Initial Phase. If they were to fight, they wouldn't have much of an advantage.

Ye Qingling only moved from the branch after she noticed that Ge Qing and others were leaving. She appeared on the tree where Mu Chen and the others were standing on. Then, her tender face revealed a touching smile as she pulled Sun'Er's hands and asked gently: "Little rascal, did anything happen to you during our separation?"

Sun'Er pouted with a hurt expression: "I starved for a few days. It was lucky that I met Brother Mu Chen. Otherwise, I would have starved to death."

“Glutton.” Ye Qingling smiled. Her slender fingers could not help but poke Sun’Er’s nose. Then, she lifted her head to the boy in front of her. The boy had a smile on his face as he stared quietly at them. Throughout the entire exchange, nothing had broken the calmness within his eyes..

“You’re Mu Chen, right? I’m Sun’Er’s sister, Ye Qingling. Thank you for taking care of her during the past few days.” Ye Qingling directed a smile at Mu Chen and extended her exquisite hand over.

Mu Chen also extended his hand and held onto her hand. As their hands touched, Mu Chen could feel a delicate chill, which was as comfortable as holding a beautiful jade stone. However, he did not long for this feeling and gently retracted his hand: “I only took a liking to this girl. That’s why I brought her along the way.”

Behind Ye Qingling, Wang Sheng and the others arrived and smiled friendly at Mu Chen.

“Sister. Brother Mu Chen is amazing. He is also like us and obtained a seeded entry. Moreover, he’s also a Spiritual Array Master.” Sun’Er pulled Ye Qingling’s hands and grinned.

“Oh?”

A hint of surprise filled Ye Qingling and Wang Sheng’s eyes. Their gaze swept across Mu Chen’s body. A person, who was at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase, was commonly seen within the Northern Heavens World. However, he was truly capable since he obtained a seeded entry. As for being Spiritual Array Master like Sun’Er mentioned, it was neglected since they thought Mu Chen only knew how to use Spiritual Arrays and wasn’t extremely skilled in it.

Mu Chen smiled helplessly. This little girl is truly innocent since she just announced his secret out loud. He cupped his hands towards Ye Qingling and said: “Since Sun’Er has found you, I have no business here anymore. Thank you for rescuing me earlier. I’ll have to say goodbye together with my friend.”

Although Ye Qingling’s strength wasn’t weak and she had built a considerable force, Mu Chen did not plan on being welcomed by them.

Thus, he wasn't thinking of deepening their friendship.

"Brother Mu Chen, NO!" But just when he muttered these words, Sun'Er hurriedly pulled his hand. She pleaded: "Since we're all going to the Northern Heavens Hall, let's go together."

She had already developed some feelings of camaraderie with Mu Chen and Mo Ling after the past few days. Therefore, she didn't want Mu Chen to leave.

"Brother Mu, since Sun'Er likes you, why don't you follow us temporarily? You don't have many people with you, so you must not have gathered a lot of information about the Northern Heavens World. We can inform you about it." Ye Qingling smiled as she sent out an invitation. She had thought about if for a while. Mu Chen had helped Sun'Er out, so it was as if he had done them a favor. And from the looks of things, he seemed to have offended Ge Qing. If it was just Ge Qing, it would be simple to deal with. However, he had a big brother, who stepped into the Spirit Stage, behind him. Ge Hai had also participated in the Spiritual Road, so she knew that he was not easy to deal with. Mu Chen and Mo Ling would probably suffer if they crossed paths with him.

Mu Chen glanced at Ye Qingling. He understood what the latter was thinking just from her twinkling eyes and smiled. He had never care about Ge Qing. As for his brother, who cares if he had entered the Spirit Stage? Would he, Mu Chen, really be afraid of him?

Even a Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouse had been killed by him. Just how much pressure could a mere Spirit Stage give him?

But if Mu Chen refused Ye Qingling's invitation as well, he could be perceived as being considerably uncompromising. Moreover, the final sentence Ye Qingling had said had grabbed his interest.

He was quite unfamiliar with the Northern Heavens World and Ye Qingling had quite the amount of men. Thus, she probably understood it better than him. He could take advantage of this and obtain a lot more information.

"Then I'll have to trouble you for the next few days." Mu Chen smiled

and no longer refused. Then, he brought Mo Ling as he descended down from the tree. From the side, a few Ye Clan youths welcomed them enthusiastically.

"Sister Ye, wouldn't we make Ge Hai unhappy by letting them stay with us?" Wang Sheng whispered.

"Let's not mention about the fact whether Ge Hai would attack us because of Ge Qing. Even if it was true, I'm not afraid of Ge Hai." Ye Qingling smiled gently.

"You shouldn't underestimate Brother Mu Chen. He is quite powerful. It seemed that he also entered the Spiritual Road..." Sun'Er touched her face as if she recalled the words that Mo Ling had mentioned before.

"What?"

Hearing this, Wang Shen was completely speechless. Even Ye Qingling was stunned. Mu Chen had also participated in the Spiritual Road?

"Shouldn't a person, who participated in the Spiritual Road, be at the Spirit Stage at the very least? He seemed to be weaker than me." Wang Sheng was filled with doubt.

Ye Qingling frowned lightly. She seemed to have vaguely heard of Mu Chen's name before, but she could not recall where...

"You probably misheard them."

Ye Qingling smiled slightly. If he had participated in the Spiritual Road, Mu Chen's strength was indeed quite low. Moreover, the latter didn't have the smell of someone who came out of the Spiritual Road. Thinking about this, she came to the conclusion that Sun'Er had probably misheard them.

"Let's go. Little rascal, your sister will prepare a delicious feast for you."

Ye Qingling pulled Sun'Er as she walked forward. Sun'Er, who had originally planned on refuting the matter regarding Mu Chen, instantly had her eyes light up when she heard these words. Then, she hurriedly followed.

Chapter 119: Ge Hai

Many tents were spread throughout an open space covered with gravel that was deep inside the forest. These tents formed a camp that was covered by the shade of the ancient forest.

Inside the camp, there were numerous figures, and the atmosphere was particularly lively. Moreover, there were people guarding the surroundings of the camp vigilantly and constantly monitoring the situation near the camp.

"Sister Ye has returned!"

Suddenly, a shout resounded throughout the air. A commotion instantly burst out, and numerous people stood up as they stared eagerly towards the outskirts of the camp. In the distance, dozens of figures were rapidly approaching, and, after just a few moments, they landed within the camp.

"Sister Ye!"

As they stared at the leading figure, the beautiful girl dressed in an apricot-colored dress, countless respectful cries could be heard ringing within the boundaries of the encampment.

Ye Qingling returned with a smile towards the crowd. She then turned around and said to Mu Chen, who was beside her: "This is the temporary rest stop of the Ye Clan. Those here are nice individuals."

Mu Chen nodded. He glanced around and noticed many people looking at him with kindheartedness and curiousity.

"All of them seem to respect you." Mu Chen was slightly surprised. Although Ye Qingling had the strength of a Spirit Stage, and it wasn't difficult for her to gain their admiration, he could tell that everybody here respected her in the depths of their hearts.

"Ohoho, Sister Ye has an excellent personality. If it wasn't for her, many of us would have been robbed by other forces. Ever since she formed the Ye Clan, we have gradually improved ourselves..." Wang Sheng laughed from beside him.

“The creators of other forces probably rob other student’s symbols, but Sister Ye would never do such a thing. She led us to hunt Spiritual Beasts and search for worldly treasures. Moreover, she distributed the majority of the items to us.”

A hint of surprise flashed through Mu Chen’s eyes. No wonder these people respected Ye Qingling so much.

“I’m at the Spirit Stage, so it is easy for me to raise my symbol to Rank 4. However, it isn’t the same for others. If they do not work together, they will be robbed of what they were able to accumulate and, thus, be eliminated from the competition.” Ye Qingling replied gently.

“You really don’t have much ambition. Doing this you will slow down the speed you can increase your symbol’s overall rank.” Mu Chen said.

“If the symbol rank increases, it only means that I will initially be given a much better position and have access to more resources within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. I can slowly obtain these later on. But if you were to be eliminated, there would be absolutely no hope for you. ” Ye Qingling uttered.

Mu Chen shrugged his shoulders. Since Ye Qingling didn’t care about it at all, it was evident that he should not say any more on the topic. Though for a girl to go to such an extent truly impressed him.

Ye Qingling waved her hand and let everyone scatter away. Then, she pulled Sun’Er to a bonfire, took out a few ingredients and began to personally prepare food for Sun’Er.

“You should follow us for the next few days. We are also heading towards the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. At the same time, we will search for traces of Spiritual Beasts and worldly treasures. Perhaps there might be some you are interested in...” While she was preparing to roast food for Sun’Er, Ye Qingling smiled and spoke to Mu Chen.

“Also, Ge Qing won’t be able to do anything to you while you’re here. You should stay here for a few days, so that they will give up on you and flee. Then, you can move freely again, how’s about that?”

Mu Chen smiled and did not reply. It seemed that she believed that he had come here for protection...

Just when Mu Chen arrived at the camp grounds of the Ye Clan, Ge Qing was in a gloomy state as he brought the others back to a camp that was located on a cliff that was slightly farther away..

“Ohoho, Ge Qing, you’re back? But what’s this? It looks as though you’ve been bullied by others?” In the center of the camp, a burly man laughed as he looked at Ge Qing’s face.

“In this region, there are people that dare to disrespect the Ge Clan?”

Ge Qing sat down furiously. He grit his teeth and said: “It’s those people from the Ye Clan. We were truly unlucky to meet Ye Qingling.”

“Oh? You even met Ye Qingling? Hehe, to be honest, Ye Qingling is quite beautiful and powerful. If you are able to conquer her, you will definitely have a pleasurable life.” Someone said in surprise.

“Pfft, by you? Ye Qingling is at the Spirit Stage. Who else but the boss could be her opponent here?” A person laughed at the other teasingly.

“Big Brother.” Ge Qing ignored them and glanced at the man in the center of the crowd who was wielding a dark-red long sword. The boy had his head down and had exceptionally long hair. He was much older than the people beside him and seemed particularly mature. Moreover, a cold killing intent emitted from him, which made others keep away from him.

“The Ye Clan has gone too far. They didn’t even care to give us face, even when your name was mentioned.”

Hearing this, the man with the dark red long sword smiled faintly. He lifted his head and a hideous scar was revealed on his face. This scar extended out from the corner of his left eye all the way down to his neck. It was as if his face had been divided into two.

This scar was like a hideous centipede and made the man appear more vicious and cold.

“Why did you provoke the Ye Clan? Ye Qingling is quite capable, and

she was one of the people who participated in the Spiritual Road. It'd be best if we do not offend them." Ge Hai replied.

Seeing that Ge Hai wasn't planning to help him out, Ge Qing could only whisper: "I didn't plan on doing anything to the Ye Clan. It's just that Mu Chen has somehow gotten the help of the Ye Clan, even though he wasn't a part of them..."

Pu!

The dark red blade suddenly slashed across Ge Hai's palm and blood suddenly flowed out. Everybody instantly became quiet, even Ge Qing stammered and shut his mouth. He stared at Ge Hai, whose hand was injured. At this moment, the latter revealed a violent and vicious aura that he had never seen before.

"Big Brother. Did I say something wrong?" Ge Qing gulped and asked in fear. It was the first time that he had seen such a terrifying presence from Ge Hai.

Ge Hai slowly lifted his head. The hideous scar on his face seemed to creep up at this moment, making him look extremely terrifying. His eyes were bloodshot as he stared at Ge Qing.

"What was the name that you've just said?"

Ge Qing's body froze and he replied: "M-Mu Chen."

Ge Hai's body trembled slightly. He seemed to be suppressing something as he asked: "T-Tell me. How does he look?"

Ge Qing was shocked because of Ge Hai's abnormal state. The surrounding people also felt that something was off but did not dare to mutter even a sound. Then, Ge Qing described Mu Chen's appearance to Ge Hai.

When Ge Qing's voice faded away, the entire camp was completely silent. The only sound that could be heard was Ge Hai's heavy breathing. In his eyes, an increasingly prominent shade of crimson started to appear. His expression had a bit of fear, a bit of craziness and some hatred that was somewhat difficult to contain.

“Right now, is he at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase?” Ge Hai raised his head and his crimson eyes stared at Ge Qing. But before the latter nodded, he muttered to himself: “That’s right...He did not experience the final step of the Spiritual Road. Thus, his strength was bound to be lowered. Ohoho, Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase...Ohoho...”

“Big Brother, what’s wrong?”

Ge Qing was completely stunned by Ge Hai’s strange smile and asked cautiously.

Ge Hai directed a horrifying smile to Ge Qing. His bloody hand touched the hideous scar on his face and said: “Mu Chen is with the Ye Clan?”

“Yes.” Ge Qing hurriedly nodded.

Ge Hai stood up. His eyes were sharp like a wolf and he glanced coldly at the crowd before speaking: “Gather everyone. We will immediately head over to the Ye Clan’s camp. All of you should be prepared. If the Ye Clan dares to stop us, we will eliminate them!”

Everybody was surprised. Does that mean they are going to attack the Ye Clan? What’s wrong with the boss? In the past, they had always maintained a peaceful relationship with the Ye Clan. Why did his killing intent become so rich?

However, while they had doubts within their mind, they did not dare to object. They immediately hurried away and the entire camp became chaotic.

“Big Brother, d-do you know that Mu Chen?” Ge Qing asked timidly.

“I know him. Of course, I know him...”

Ge Hai’s finger ran across the scar on his face. A hint of fear and hatred finally gushed out from his eyes.

“He was the one that left this scar on my face...”

Beside him, Ge Qing was completely frozen. His mind immediately became numb. He never imagined that Ge Hai, who he had always respected, was injured by that seemingly gentle boy.

Just who was he?

Ye Clan Campgrounds.

The entire camp was lively. With Sun'Er's arrival, the camp was filled with a bit more joy. Everybody liked this cute and innocent little girl.

Beside the bonfire, Wang Sheng was holding a bowl of wine, which he raised to Mu Chen. Then, he drained it completely and patted his chest in high spirits. "Brother Mu Chen, don't be afraid. With us here, the Ge Clan won't dare to do anything."

"That's right. You and your companion are Sister Ye's friends. Naturally, you are also our friends. As long as we're here, we will not let the Ge Clan touch you." A few individuals nearby agreed as well.

Before they had gathered to drink, the matter regarding Mu Chen and Ge Qing had been spread around by Wang Sheng and the others. In regards to his current situation, many Ye Clan members expressed their support to Mu Chen and were extremely enthusiastic about protecting him.

Mu Chen smiled. Perhaps it was because, under the influence of Ye Qingling, the members of the Ye Clan gave off a decent feeling. They were all easy to get along with.

Ye Qingling walked over and scolded them with a laugh. Then, she directed a smile at Mu Chen and said: "There's no need to be too concerned. They're always like this. They like to boast when they're drunk."

Mu Chen shook his head and replied: "It's quite alright."

Ye Qingling's eyes stared quietly at Mu Chen. She said with a light laugh: "I don't know why, but I think that you're not that simple to deal with..."

"A person who's at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase shouldn't be that difficult for you to deal with." Mu Chen replied. A girl's intuition is truly terrifying sometimes. However, he was not interested in exposing himself.

Ye Qingling's brushed away the hair in front of her forehead. Although Mu Chen was only at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase, the latter's aura gave her a feeling that he wasn't as simple as he looked. However, since Mu Chen was not interested in telling her, she would be considerate and not press him for more information.

Mu Chen stretched himself and stood up. But just when he was about to speak, his expressions changed. His black eyes sharpened slightly as he stared at the outskirts of the camp.

Buzz!

At this moment, the sound of an alarm echoed throughout the camp from the surroundings.

All the Ye Clan members hurriedly got up. They quickly turned their gaze towards the forest outside of the camp. At that location, a large amount of people had rushed over and surrounded the camp.

Everybody's faces changed slightly as they stared at these individuals. Then, they noticed the red ribbon wrapped around the intruders' arms.

"It's the Ge Clan!"

Chapter 120: Blood Calamity

In the Ye Clan's campgrounds, everybody immediately stood up. They stared solemnly at the outskirts of the campgrounds. At that location, several hundreds of figures were rushing over. Did the entire Ge Clan leave their nest?

All were shocked by this. The Ye Clan and the Ge Clan had always minded their own business. Why had all of the Ge Clan rush over here?

Could it be that the Ge Clan had truly decided to fight against the Ye Clan because of Ge Qing?

"Sister Ye!"

The Ye Clan's members looked at Ye Qingling. At this moment, the latter also frowned. She could not seem to understand why the Ge Clan would launch a punitive expedition against them. Although she was surprised, she did not show any fear. She only gestured with her hands and said, "Prepare yourself."

Hearing this, Wang Sheng and the others nodded their heads.

Mu Chen stared at the scene in front of him and frowned. This Ge Qing is truly quite annoying.

"Brother Mu." Mo ling approached Mu Chen and was a little nervous.

Mu Chen smiled slightly at him and told him to relax.

"Brother Mu Chen, there's no need to be afraid. I will definitely protect you," Sun'Er said seriously as she suddenly appeared next to Mu Chen and grabbed onto his hands.

Mu Chen smiled and rubbed Sun'Er's head. His black eyes gradually turned cold as he stared out into the distance. Beside him, Mo Ling's heart jumped, for he knew that Mu Chen was truly furious.

Outside of the camp, the large amount of Ge Clan members were surrounding the campgrounds. As soon as it had been formed, the group split open and two figures slowly walked over. The person in the lead was

wielding a dark-red longsword and emanated a vicious aura from his body. This aura was enough to make people from both camps shudder.

"It's Ge Hai. He actually came here personally!"

In the campground, the Ye Clan's crowd's expression finally changed when they noticed this figure. It was evident that they had not expected Ge Hai to come here in person.

"Ge Hai, what do you want?" Ye Qingling asked unkindly as she slowly walked forward. Her beautiful eyes revealed a cold chill as she stared viciously at the figure of Ge Hai.

Ge Hai stared at Ye Qingling. However, his cold gaze slowly scanned the campground and he replied with a gloomy tone: "Ye Qingling. This matter is unrelated to you and your Ye Clan. If you want to intervene, I do not mind fighting against you. We shall see who shall lose more men!"

Ye Qingling stared coldly and responded: "Do you have to do this just because of the small affair regarding Ge Qing? Do you think that my Ye Clan is truly afraid of you?"

Ge Hai's mouth opened up and revealed a mocking smile. He stared at Ye Qingling and asked strangely: "Do you think that I am a person, who would do such a thing?"

Ye Qingling frowned. She immediately asked: "Then why does it have to be this way? Did all of you come over here filled with murderous intent to attend a late night party?"

"It seems that you truly do not know about it..."

Ge Hai stared strangely at Ye Qingling: "A famous figure appeared in your Ye Clan , and yet you didn't even realize? How on earth did you manage to survive in the Spiritual Road?"

Ye Qingling gripped her hands tightly as if she understood something. Could he be talking about Mu Chen? She tilted her head slightly and stared at the lean boy in the rear.

In the campground, everybody's gazes followed hers and landed on the

handsome boy's face, which had a smile plastered on it.

Ge Hai's gaze honed in on this unforgettable figure. His body trembled suddenly, and his crimson eyes were filled with craziness, hatred... and even a bit of fear.

In the Spiritual Road, that figure had once left him an irreplaceable trauma.

"Mu Chen, it's you! It really is you!" Ge Hai's body trembled. His voice trembled as it rang out.

The boy in the rear slowly walked up in front. Under the many puzzled gazes, he glanced at Ge Hai for a moment and frowned as if he was thinking about something. After a while, he finally remembered the somewhat familiar figure.

"It's you...So you were actually still alive. I thought for sure that slash would have killed you directly back then."

The words that came out of Mu Chen's mouth made everybody freeze again. Even Ye Qingling had a hint of surprise that crossed her face.

Ge Hai stared at the figure in front of him. The hatred within his heart made his body shake intensely. In the Spiritual Road, the latter's methods and means had truly made him feel afraid. He originally thought that he would only be fated to stare at this figure from afar and never have a chance to turn the tables. However, the world was truly strange.

He would actually meet the boy who had set off a such a dreadful calamity in the Spiritual Road and had even been kicked out of the Spiritual Road... here... once again...

The most important fact in this whole situation that the person he feared before was actually weaker than him currently. His strength was only at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase!

This contrast in level made Ge Hai smile even more grimly. His hands trembled with so much excitement that he had been forced to take a deep breath to calm himself down. He directed a hideous smile at Mu Chen and said: "I never thought that the heavens would give me such an

opportunity. Mu Chen, the fear that you forced on me back then, I will give it you back a hundredfold right now!"

"You will experience the same sense of fear and helplessness that I felt back then!"

Currently, he was a Spirit Stage powerhouse, and Mu Chen was simply a weakling within his eyes. It was a chance for him to break through the trauma that had nested itself deep within his heart. He would never forgive Mu Chen!

Mu Chen smiled. His black eyes remained calm as usual and replied: "Although I have many enemies, I have never considered you as a rival. In the past, you weren't my rival. Even now, you aren't one."

There wasn't a hint of sarcasm within Mu Chen's words. He was just explaining the situation seriously.

Ge Hai's crimson eyes glared at Mu Chen. A deep humiliation filled his heart. Just what would this lowlife consider as a powerful rival? However, he felt even more humiliated because his opponent did not think that he would qualify as such a person.

"I will use this sword to cut a scar on your face..." Ge Hai snapped. He took a step forward and dense Spiritual Energy surged out. A Spirit Stage's might was unleashed and it caused many of them to feel oppressed.

"Ge Hai! Don't even dare try to hurt the friend of my Ye Clan's in front of me!" Ye Qingling shouted out. An aura that was in no way inferior to Ge Hai spread out as well.

"Haha."

Seeing this, Ge Hai laughed strangely. He pointed at Mu Chen and had a weird expression as if he had seen something funny. His laughter sounds rang out through the forest: "Haha, Mu Chen. Your actions in the Spiritual Road were enough for you to be assessed as a 'King Class'. Even the ones that stood at the peak of the Spiritual Road such as Ji Xuan and Yang Hong were afraid of you. Moreover, you even created the legend known as 'Spiritual Road's Blood Calamity' while you were there... But now, you

actually need a woman to protect you?!!"

At this moment, everybody instantly became silent. They stared at the boy, who remained completely calm, in front of them. Although they did not participate in the Spiritual Road, they understood how terrifying a person who had been assessed as "King Class" within the Spiritual Road was. It was definitely enough for them to obtain a Five Great Academies' Core Entry!

"King Class? Ji Xuan? Yang Hong? Spiritual Road's Blood Calamity?"

As for Ye Qingling, she was shocked because of something else. Her beautiful eyes widened up and an incredulous expression emerged on her face.

As a person, who came out of the Spiritual Road, she clearly understood what that phrase and the names that had be spoken just now represented.

Ji Xuan and Yang Hong were the most dazzling individuals within the Spiritual Road. Even after entering the Five Great Academies, they were existences that were looked up to by countless others. However this boy who had a reassuring smile on his face... The seemingly peaceful boy was actually an existence that these individuals were afraid of?

The Spiritual Road's Blood Calamity...

Ye Qingling gently exhaled. A shocking event that had once shaken the entire Spiritual Road. In the end, it had even caused the Five Great Academies, who would never intervene in the Spiritual Road's trial, to take action. So the Spiritual Road's Blood Calamity was caused by the boy in front of them?

"S-so you were the Blood Calamity Mu Chen within the Spiritual Road?"

Ye Qingling muttered with shock. No wonder she felt that she had heard his name before. So this Mu Chen was the Blood Calamity that countless people feared...as well as admired within the Spiritual Road.

"Therefore, Ye Qingling, you should back off. You aren't qualified to protect him." Ge Hai gritted his teeth and said. Once that name was muttered, even he would tremble. This shows how terrifying the boy in

front of him was back then. However, once they returned to the Great Thousand World, the previously terrifying existence had turned into a joke!

This is because even he, Ge Hai, could step on him easily!

Ye Qingling's eyes stared complicatedly at Mu Chen's handsome and calm face. She bit her teeth and said: "I don't care who he is. He helped Sun'Er, so he's my friend. I will never hand him over to you!"

Although the words "Blood Calamity" had shocked her, Ye Qingling understood that Mu Chen wasn't as strong as back then. No matter how powerful Mu Chen was in the Spiritual Road, this place wasn't the Spiritual Road, but the Great Thousand World. Mu Chen was kicked out from the Spiritual Road in the middle and had lost both a year of cultivation and the more important Spiritual Energy Empowerment from the Spiritual Road.

Right now, he was only an ordinary boy with the strength of a Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase. Otherwise, Ge Hai would still be trembling with fear in front of him.

Seeing this, Ge Hai's eyes turned cold. His hand gripped the dark-red long sword tightly, and a dense Spiritual Energy rushed out from his body.

Ye Qingling took a step forward and a slender long sword appeared within her hands. Then, she confronted Ge Hai.

"Swish."

Just when Ye Qingling was about to attack, subtle footsteps rang out behind her. The lean figure, who was the focus of attention, grabbed onto her wrist gently.

Ye Qingling turned around and noticed Mu Chen smiling at her while shaking his head.

"Thank you. But if I can't even deal with such unimpressionable fellow, would I dare to come to the Five Great Academies?"

"Ge Hai, right? Although this place isn't the Spiritual Road, to be honest,

in the past you were never qualified to be my opponent. Even now, you still aren't."

Mu Chen smiled slightly and took a step forward. His eyes started to emit a hint of coldness.

Chapter 121: In the Past, Right Now...Yet Still Strong

Ge Hai's crimson eyes stared wildly at the figure in front of him. The latter's eyes remained calm as usual. The situation before them was like a seemingly silent and serene lake, yet a frightening whirlpool that could envelop people was hidden underneath it.

"You think that we're still in the Spiritual Road?"

Ge Hai glared at Mu Chen and ground his teeth: "You think, in your current state, that you are still qualified to say that to me? Based on what? By the fact that you're at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase?"

Mu Chen smiled: "If you want to wipe away the fear and trauma within your heart, then come and get me. But you should know my personality. Thus, if you plan on doing it, you should be prepared to pay a price. This place clearly isn't as cruel as the environment of Spiritual Road, but if I actually cared about such rules, I wouldn't have done those things back in the Spiritual Road."

Ge Hai's eyes narrowed. From Mu Chen's smile, he could see the terrifying figure from the Spiritual Road again. Fear spread out from the depths of his heart.

"You, at your current state, aren't qualified to say such words to me!"

Ge Hai replied darkly. He took a deep breath and suppressed the fear within his heart. He knew that if he did not defeat Mu Chen, there would be an obstacle in his cultivation due to the existence of the trauma.

The heavens had given him a chance to wipe away this fear, so he must seize this opportunity!

"This time, you will be the one that will pay the price!"

A shout rang out from Ge Hai's throat. In the next instant, his eyes revealed a hint of fierceness and brutality. Then, a powerful Spiritual Energy emitted out unreservedly from his body.

Boom!

He pushed off from the ground and flew over like an arrow. He immediately appeared in front of Mu Chen and his hands clenched on the dark-red long sword. With a swishing sound, a sharp sword beam slashed down furiously at Mu Chen's throat.

Ge hai revealed his experience and his ferocity within that offensive. The imposing manner from the attack was something that far surpassed any ordinary students. A person, who came out of the Spiritual Road, had to be at least this capable.

Mu Chen's eyes flashed as he saw the sword beam. He retreated back slightly and, with the sounds of winds breaking, the sharp sword beam flew past the place where his throat was earlier.

"Right now, I'll let you know the gap between a Spirit Stage and a Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase!"

Ge Hai yelled. A powerful Spiritual Energy pressure enveloped Mu Chen and an overwhelming sword beam slashed towards his vital areas like a storm.

Swish!

Numerous gouges appeared on the ground due to the sword attacks. Even countless trees were cleaved apart by the sword. Their bare stumps were as smooth as a mirror.

Everybody in the Ye Clan's campground held their breath. They knew how powerful Ge Hai was. A Spirit Stage powerhouse was someone far beyond any of them. This attack was enough to instantly obliterate a Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase.

They did not know whether or not Mu Chen could endure it...

Their gazes were filled with worry as they watched Mu Chen's figure. The latter remained motionless against the sharp sword that rushed over.

Mu Chen's black eyes reflected the overwhelming sword slash as well as Ge Hai's hideous appearance. In that moment, the Great Pagoda Art began

to circulate within his body.

A dark-black Spiritual Energy flowed through his meridians, and the mysterious lights within his body lit up once again. With his strength slowly increasing, it was apparent that he was gradually becoming able to activate the mysterious Spiritual Pulse that his mother had sealed.

Although he was not able to activate its power completely, it was sufficient enough to deal with the opponent in front of him.

The lights flashed and a mysterious tower vaguely appeared within Mu Chen's body. The flowing Spiritual Energy instantly surged out.

Within Mu Chen's eyes, dark lights flashed. Furthermore, a tower of black light emerged within the depths of his eyes. He clapped his hands together, and the black light started to condense on the surface of his body. In the end, a blurry black light tower appeared.

Clang Clang Clang!

Ge Hai's sharp sword landed on the blurry black tower, and a clanging sound resounded. Sparks flew everywhere, yet the black light tower was completely unmoved.

"What the hell is that?!"

Ge Hai stared at the black light tower that shrouded Mu Chen. His expression changed, and he gritted his teeth. He could not believe that with his Spirit Stage strength he would fail to oppress Mu Chen, who was only at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase!

"Bloodshed Carnage Sword!"

Ge Hai took a step forward, and the sword's imposing manner changed. A bloody aura appeared on its surface. At the same time, the dark-red long sword turned crimson and slashed down creating a red arc.

Facing Ge Hai's fierce offensive, Mu Chen did not show any signs of retreating. He, too, had his own pride. If he was to retreat in front of an enemy that wasn't worth his attention before, it would be belittle him.

Mu Chen's hands clenched into fists. Under the protection of the black

light tower, his body had turned into a fierce weapon. Spiritual Energy and winds surged out from his fists and directly collided against Ge Hai's crimson long sword.

Clang!

The powerful impact emitted out and the ground underneath them collapsed.

"Kill!"

Ge Hai shouted out furiously. As he pushed the Spiritual Energy within his body to the limits, the long sword within his hand let loose a powerful sword slash. However, he discovered that it was impossible to truly suppress Mu Chen.

"Bastard. He's only at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase! How is it possible that he could fight me head on!?" Ge Hai shouted out in his heart. As someone who was only Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase, Mu Chen had far exceeded Ge Hai's expectations regarding the former's true combat ability.

The people from the Ye Clan were completely shocked by the two figures. This sort of Spiritual Energy collision was not something that a Spiritual Rotation Stage could release.

"Sister, is Brother Mu Chen going to be okay?" Sun'Er stared at the battle worriedly as she pulled Ye Qingling's hands.

Ye Qingling held onto Sun'Er's petite hands and shook her head slightly. Her beautiful eyes were filled with surprise. Although Mu Chen was only at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase, his true combat ability was equal to a Spirit Stage.

"He is truly powerful." Ye Qingling let out a praise. The Spiritual Road's Blood Calamity definitely deserved his reputation. Even though he was kicked out of the Spiritual Road and had his cultivation level slowed, how was it possible that such a monstrous person would have let himself fall behind others?

This sort of person would probably press forward slowly and surely,

while at the same time becoming even stronger when they suffer an enormous blow.

"Boss actually can't obtain the upper-hand! Damn it! How is it possible that he is this powerful?!" A few members of the Ge Clan were secretly shocked. They thought that with Ge Hai's Spirit Stage strength, he would be able to completely suppress Mu Chen, who was only at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase.

Ge Qing's expression changed completely. Since Mu Chen was able to defeat three Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase by himself, he was naturally stronger than an ordinary Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase. However, he never expected that Mu Chen was someone that even Ge Hai would find it difficult to defeat.

Clang Clang!

The two figures collided fiercely against each other. The Spiritual Energy impact sent the gravel on the ground flying and dirt blasted out along with the impact.

And at the source of the impact, Ge Hai's face was extremely grim. His hands clenched onto the sword handle and revealed a posture that looked as though he could slash down a mountain.. This powerful attack that could cut apart a Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase was completely blocked by Mu Chen's bare fists.

The latter's fists emitted a black Spiritual Energy fluctuation, and an overbearing presence started to emerge. It was something that even Ge Hai's long sword failed to cut apart.

"You, who obtained the Spiritual Energy Empowerment, are only this powerful? It seems that the Empowerment wasn't as impressive as I thought."

Mu Chen smiled faintly. With his current strength, he would be able to fight against a Spirit Stage Initial Phase powerhouse once he activated the mysterious Spiritual Pulse within his body. Ge Hai, who thought that he could free himself from the trauma, had truly underestimated him.

“I will let you know soon. Back then, I was able to defeat you with ease. Even now, I can do it just as easily!”

Mu Chen’s eyes turned cold at this moment. His originally peaceful expression instantly became as dangerous as any blade.

As he looked into Mu Chen’s eyes, Ge Hai’s heart trembled.

Swish!

Mu Chen took a step forward, and the Spiritual Energy within his body surged out. Then, he clenched his fists and, without hesitation, fired off a punch.

This plain and ordinary fist carried no mysteries as it was shot forth. However, as the fist was about to land, it let out powerful winds and a black light radiated from its center. It was there that three black light seals emerged.

These three black light seals were only a few meters tall, but they let out an extremely domineering fluctuation.

“Boom!”

Mu Chen’s face remained calm as he let the punch fly out towards Ge Hai. With a trail of black light and the sounds of winds breaking, the three black light seals roared and bombarded against Ge Hai ruthlessly.

The places that the winds rushed through seemed to have exploded. It was as if the air itself was slightly distorted.

Ge Hai also noticed how powerful Mu Chen’s offensive was. His eyes immediately became serious. The long sword within his hand instantly let out a sword beam that was dozens of meters long. Light flashed through Ge Hai’s eyes.

“Spirit Destruction Bloodstrike!”

He immediately cried out. The sword beam instantly turned crimson like it was made of fresh blood. In the next instant, the blood red sword beam pierced through the air and collided against the three black light seals.

Boom!

Once the attacks made contact, the three black light seals erupted at the same time. Three overbearing energies stacked against each other and bombarded the crimson sword beam.

Dong!

The crimson sword beam trembled intensely, and then actually shattered on impact.

When the crimson sword beam were broken to pieces, Ge Hai's eyes were filled with terror.

He wasn't able to obtain the upper-hand even with his strongest attack!

The dark-red long sword flew away from Ge Hai's hands. His body shot backwards as if he suffered a heavy blow and landed heavily against a sturdy tree. His throat tasted something sweet and he immediately spat out a mouthful of fresh blood.

"How is this possible? Why did I lose to him again?!"

Ge Hai screamed within his heart. He immediately stood up and prepared to attack again. He wanted to use the dense Spiritual Energy of a Spirit Stage to wear down Mu Chen!

However, just as he stood up, his body instantly froze. This was because he felt an extremely violent Spiritual Energy fluctuation surging in front of him.

A commotion suddenly rang out in the surroundings as well.

Ge Hai slowly lifted his head. He noticed that Mu Chen was staring at him emotionlessly, as his hands were at his side. However, lightning flashed above his head as it formed into a massive lightning Spiritual Array. The violent fluctuations that were emitted from the Spiritual Array made Ge Hai's eyes narrow.

Mu Chen was actually a Spiritual Array Master!

Ge Hai's body stiffened, and a hint of horror emerged within his heart.

"I've said it before, I have too many opponents. But if you want to step on me, you're not qualified to do so."

Mu Chen stared indifferently at Ge Hai whose eyes were completely filled with horror. He flicked his finger and the lightning Spiritual Array issued out a roar. A dazzling lightning emerged from the array and charged out like a furious dragon.

The lightning tore through the air and a blinding light shone. Ge Hai and the other Ge Clan's members' faces immediately paled.

At this moment, Ge Hai finally understood how large the gap between him and Mu Chen was...

After all, there was always someone that would be feared and be looked up to by someone like him...

Chapter 122: Terms and Conditions

The lightning pierced through the forest like an angry dragon baring its fangs and brandishing its claws. A violent Spiritual Energy fluctuation surged out and rampaged through the air.

Swish!

In a blink of an eye, the lightning had charged over to Ge Hai. At this moment, the latter's eyes were filled with horror. When Mu Chen attacked, he did not show the slightest mercy at all.

He was still as ferocious as before.

At a time like this, Ge Hai could only desperately push the Spiritual Energy within his body to the limits. Spiritual Energy gushed out and protected his body as a sturdy Spiritual Energy Armor.

Boom!

The violent lightning blinded everyone as it landed fiercely on Ge Hai's body. The earth instantly shattered open due to the lightning shock.

Swish.

In this instant, Ge Hai's body flew backwards like a bullet. The trees that were in the way were all smashed apart by his body. He then sprayed out mouthfuls of blood.

After smashing apart dozens of giant trees, Ge Hai's body finally lay on the ground awkwardly. His body was completely covered with blood and was in a helpless position. The fierceness and brutality that he showed earlier had completely vanished.

At this moment, the members from the Ge Clan were all completely silent. Even the people who were acting arrogant earlier had shut their mouths while cold sweat dripped down their bodies. Ge Qing was even trembling as he looked at this scene.

In his eyes, Ge Hai had always been synonymous with the word 'powerful'. Even after they entered the Northern Heavens World, there

were only a few people that could compete with him. However, Ge Hai, who had always been undefeated within his heart, had lost to Mu Chen.

Moreover, the latter's strength was only at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase.

"How could he be this strong..."

Ge Qing's body trembled slightly. He stared at Mu Chen and fear surged out from his eyes. Only now, he regretted provoking the seemingly gentle, yet demonic boy...

In the Ye Clan's campground, it was also completely silent. Wang Sheng and the others secretly swallowed. They couldn't imagine that the boy who was sitting together with them earlier...The boy who felt quite kindhearted and gave off a comfortable feeling, was actually this terrifying.

Ge Hai was a Spirit Stage Initial Phase powerhouse. An existence that was as powerful as Ye Qingling. Yet, he was defeated by Mu Chen?

Mu Chen stared indifferently at the helpless figure on the ground. He slowly walked past Ge Qing and headed straight towards Ge Hai. When the members of Ge Clan noticed this, they did not dare to stop Mu Chen's advance.

Mu Chen stood in front of Ge Hai and clenched his hands. The dark-red long sword nearby was sucked into his arm and the razor sharp blade was directly pointed at Ge Hai's throat. He said quietly: "I've said it before. If you dare to cause trouble for me, you should be prepared to pay a price."

Ge Hai trembled. His face was pale as he stared at Mu Chen, who was looking at him condescendingly with emotionless eyes. He replied in a quivering voice: "This isn't the Spiritual Road...If you recklessly kill others, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy will definitely disqualify you!"

"Are you threatening me with this?"

Mu Chen smiled slightly. He extended his hand forward and the razor sharp blade scratched Ge Hai's throat's skin. Traces of blood slowly oozed out.

The cold chill that appeared on Ge Hai's throat made his body freeze. He no longer dared to say another word. This is because he understood that if he angered the boy in front of him, the latter might actually kill him.

He knew clearly how ruthless Mu Chen was.

The surrounding Ge Clan members shivered as they watched this scene. The piercing chill that emitted from Mu Chen's body had shocked them to the extent that they did not dare to make the slightest movement.

"If you want to live, then hand over something that will save your life."

Mu Chen then said faintly: "Although it is a bit troubling to murder others here, you will probably be eliminated if I wipe away the symbol on your forehead. Don't even think about entering the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy."

Ge Hai's face finally changed. He had spent great effort in order to enter the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. If he were to be eliminated here, it was truly worse than death.

"I'll hand over all the Spiritual Aura within my symbol to you." Ge Hai gritted his teeth and replied. His symbol had already reached Rank 5. It was evident that he had robbed numerous students during this period of time. If he were to hand it over to Mu Chen, his efforts during this period of time would all be in vain. However, compared to having his symbol erased, it was a much better choice.

Mu Chen smiled. The sword that was posted near Ge Hai's neck retreated slightly.

Ge Hai concentrated and the golden symbol on his forehead instantly turned dim. A golden light shot out and entered the symbol on Mu Chen's forehead.

Buzz.

With the empowerment of the special Spiritual Aura, the symbol on Mu Chen's head instantly turned golden. It was obvious that his symbol had also reached Rank 5 after absorbing the Spiritual Aura from Ge Hai's symbol.

“Now, can you let me go?” Ge Hai stared at the golden symbol on Mu Chen’s forehead and gnashed his teeth.

Hearing this, Mu Chen smiled. He shook his head and said, “This is not enough.”

“You!” Ge Hai was furious.

The cold blade touched his skin again. Ge Hai did not dare to struggle and shouted out angrily, “What do you want!”

However, Mu Chen only stared at him calmly. The meaning was obvious. With just the Spiritual Aura from Ge Hai’s symbol, it wasn’t enough to appease the unhappiness within his heart.

The cold chill at his neck made Ge Hai gradually calm down. He pondered for a moment before he finally spoke, “I’ll tell you something. You’ll let me go.”

“That depends on the value of your information.” Mu Chen replied lightly.

“We discovered a small valley with numerous worldly treasures there. Among those treasures, we discovered one that looked like a Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia. 1” Ge Hai gnashed his teeth as he replied.

“Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia?” Mu Chen’s eyes narrowed. A hint of interest finally emerged in his eyes. It was an extremely rare worldly treasure. Not only was it extremely beneficial to Spirit Stage powerhouses, it is said that it was able to allow people, who were at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase, to take the most important step forward and advance into the Spirit Stage.

Right now, Mu Chen was only a step away from Spirit Stage. Although he was confident that he could advance within a month, the time it would take was a bit too long for him.

He had many enemies from the Spiritual Road. Ge Hai was only an ordinary fellow among them. There were many people who were much more powerful than him. Mu Chen was certain...He would definitely meet many familiar faces within the Northern Heavens World.

Thus, he must quickly advance to the Spirit Stage. Only then, he would possess enough strength to deal with his past enemies.

Therefore, the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia was extremely tempting to him.

However, he did not believe Ge Hai that easily. He immediately smiled and said: “If it’s such a precious worldly treasure. Why didn’t you try to get it? Why did you leave it there till now?”

“There are three High Rank Spiritual Beasts guarding it. Their strength is in no way inferior to me. It’s impossible for me to obtain it.” Ge Hai said unwillingly. He spent a great price in order to discover that place. Yet, he was stopped by the three High Rank Spiritual Beasts within the valley.

“Location.”

Mu Chen’s eyes narrowed as he inquired.

Ge Hai quickly reported the location to Mu Chen. As he listened, he pondered for a moment. Then, he gestured to Ye Qingling. Seeing this, the latter walked over doubtfully.

Mu Chen told Ye Qingling what Ge Hai had said earlier, including the location of the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia.

“Is there credibility regarding this location?” Mu Chen asked. Ye Qingling knew much more than him. It was a good idea to ask for her advice.

“Northwest…” Hearing that direction, Ye Qingling thought for a moment. Soon, she nodded and replied: “That direction is indeed quite hidden. Moreover, the Ge Clan had indeed been hovering around that area…However, whether or not they were doing it for the ‘Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia’, I can’t be certain.”

Mu Chen nodded slightly. He glanced at Ge Hai again. Although he did not know what idea this guy was planning, this information truly was trustworthy.

Mu Chen slowly retracted the blade away and tossed the dark-red long sword to Ge Hai. He smiled: “This time, I’ll let you go. However, if I

discover that you've lied to me, believe me, you won't be able to get away."

Ge Hai trembled as he saw Mu Chen's smile. He did not dare to say anything and climbed awkwardly to his feet. Then, he hurriedly waved his hand and brought the Ge Clan members away.

"Are you going to that place?" Ye Qingling stared at the retreating figures before turning to face Mu Chen. She frowned and said: "I've always felt that Ge Hai didn't have good intentions when he told you that location."

"It doesn't matter if he has good intentions or not. It's fine as long as the information is correct." Mu Chen replied with a smile: "How about it? Are you interested in coming together with me? It seems that there are a few worldly treasures there. It would be beneficial to you and your Ye Clan."

"A Spiritual Road bigshot like you would actually need my help?" Ye Qingling smiled and replied.

"Bigshot..." Mu Chen smiled bitterly: "It's not like you don't know about that place. It's extremely dangerous. If I don't kill them, they will kill me."

Ye Qingling sighed and tilted her head. She stared curiously at Mu Chen and asked: "If you want my help, that's fine. However, you have to answer one of my questions."

"What is it?"

"What relationship do you have with the King Luo, Luo Li?" Ye Qingling asked with great interest.

"King Luo...Is this the title that she received after her assessment as a King Class?" Mu Chen could not help but laugh when he heard this title. He could imagine her frowning in frustration when she obtained the title.

"She is my comrade. We were always in a team." Mu Chen smiled.

"Are you only just comrades?" Ye Qingling smirked as she looked at Mu Chen. "Do you know what she did after you left the Spiritual Road?"

"What?" Mu Chen's smile vanished and he frowned.

"In the final stop of the Spiritual Road, when the kings were fighting for

the crown, she attacked King Xuan, Ji Xuan."

Ye Qingling's beautiful eyes were suddenly filled with passion. She stared eagerly at Mu Chen and stressed each syllable as she talked: "The battle between two kings. At the price of being gravely injured, King Luo pushed back King Xuan and caused him to lose the opportunity to seize the crown."

"At that time, she told King Xuan that she would not take his life. There will be one day when you, Mu Chen, would personally take his life."

Mu Chen fell silent. He raised his head and sighed. A hint of killing intent slowly surged within his eyes. Ji Xuan, you dare hurt her! Then, I'll be taking your life!

The battle that we did not finish in the Spiritual Road, let us end it during our stay in the Five Great Academies!

Chapter 123: Fighting For Treasures

In the forest, a large number of troops were fleeing away in panic. In the front of the group, Ge Hai, who was completely covered with blood, had an extremely pale expression. The scar on his face twitched and was looked particularly ferocious. As they witnessed the scar, the people nearby immediately felt a chill.

"Big Brother..."

Ge Qing called out cautiously: "Are we going to hand this information to them just like this? If Mu Chen obtains the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia, his strength will increase once more. When that happens..."

Before he finished talking, Ge Hai threw a cold glare at him and made him shut up.

Then, Ge Hai slowly retracted his gaze and looked to the rear coldly. He gnashed his teeth and said: "How could it be easy for him to obtain the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia!"

"Did you believe that I didn't attempt to obtain the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia because I was afraid of the three beasts?" Ge Hai glanced at Ge Qing and sneered: "Although the three beasts are quite powerful, there are ways to deal with them since they have low intelligence. However, we were not the only one who had targeted the rare worldly treasure, the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia."

"Others have also discovered it?" Ge Qing was surprised.

"Hmph, those two groups are led by kindhearted individuals. They have always been eyeing on the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia. However, they feared each other so they never attempted to obtain it. If Mu Chen were to head there, he would definitely cause a dispute with them."

Ge Hai said coldly: "Although the bosses of the two groups were not from the Spiritual Road, their backgrounds aren't weak. By relying on a variety of resources, their strengths are in no way inferior to mine. Once Mu Chen tries to snatch the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia in front of them, heh,

there will be a good show."

"At that time, we will secretly lurk around there. If there's an opportunity, we will completely destroy them and seize the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia. With that, I will finally be able to attempt to breakthrough into the Spirit Stage Middle Phase. With that strength, I will be considered as outstanding even within the Northern Heavens World."

Hearing this, Ge Qing immediately chuckled: "Big Brother sure is wise. That boy truly thought that he had taken advantage of you. Who would have thought that it was all under Big Brother's calculations?"

Ge Hai also let out a cold smile. However, Mu Chen's smiling and handsome face flashed through his mind again. He immediately shivered and forcibly suppressed those emotions.

"In addition, you will spread this message out...That the Spiritual Road's Blood Calamity currently resides in the Northern Heavens World." Ge Hai gritted his teeth and had a dark expression.

"That guy had made many powerful enemies within the Spiritual Road. There must be quite a few of them throughout this Northern Heavens World. If they were to hear of this information, hehe, Mu Chen would definitely be in trouble."

"Yes!"

In the Ye Clan's campgrounds, many people were still immersed in the battle earlier. Many individuals would direct gazes filled with awe and curiosity at the boy in the camp as they worked.

Who would have thought that this seemingly gentle boy would actually be this terrifying? He was so powerful that even Ge Hai was completely beaten up by him.

"Brother Mu Chen, you're so strong."

Sun'Er did not hide her admiration for Mu Chen and stared at Mu Chen with her twinkling, dark-black eyes. This little girl, she did not know the concept of powerful. She only felt that Mu Chen was quite handsome and cool earlier.

Mu Chen smiled and flicked at Sun'Er's twintails, who was filled with vitality. At this moment, the Ye Clan were packing up the campground in order to head to the place mentioned previously by Ge Hai.

"Once our people approach that location, the majority of them will stay behind temporarily. We will only bring a few powerful individuals over to that location." Ye Qingling walked over to Mu Chen as she spoke.

Mu Chen nodded. It was definitely a terrible idea for many of them to approach that location together as they would be easily discovered.

"The Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia is quite rare. Since Ge Hai managed to discover it, it might also mean that others would find it. We must be careful." Mu Chen replied. Naturally, he was not so naïve to believe that Ge Hai was being completely honest. Therefore, it was best for them to be careful.

Ye Qingling also bobbed her head in agreement.

"However, we also have a secret weapon." Mu Chen smiled and rubbed Sun'Er's head. The little girl was also a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master. Moreover, she possessed the Heart Array State. If she were to unleash her full combat abilities, even Ye Qingling would be inferior to her. However, she was overwhelmingly lacking in combat experience and while facing her opponents she could easily panic. If a Spiritual Array Master was to reveal such emotions in battle, his effectiveness would be cut by half.

"This rascal..." Ye Qingling was quite reluctant about this. Although Sun'Er possesses a high talent in Spiritual Arrays and would be quite powerful if she displayed her strengths correctly, it was unfortunate that this rascal was timid and voracious.

Seeing Ye Qingling's reluctant expression, Sun'Er pouted her lips. Her sister gave her the cold shoulder again.

"After all, she is still quite young. As long as she hones herself, she will be able to be self-responsible eventually." Mu Chen felt that this was quite normal. After all, Sun'Er was still too young. Moreover, she had always lived in a completely sheltered environment. Thus, as long as she obtained more experience, she would definitely become independent.

“Brother Mu Chen is the best.” Sun’Er hugged Mu Chen’s arm and grinned.

Ye Qingling glared at her for a moment. Then, she turned around and ordered the others to speed up their pace.

After approximately half an hour, the Ye Clan was fully prepared to leave. Ye Qingling waved her hands and the large amount of troops surged out like a flood towards the northwest.

This large wave of men naturally attracted a lot of attention. However, the Ye Clan was quite well-known in this region. When others noticed the Ye Clan, they did not dare to reveal any bad intentions. Thus, aside from a few Spiritual Beasts, which they defeated quickly, their journey was extraordinarily smooth.

They travelled almost the entire distance before they eventually stopped.

There were a few chasms in the forest here. In the front, there were many mountains overlapping each other. A few of these steep mountains pierced into the clouds. Endless roars resounded from the mountains.

“The place that Ge Hai mentioned should be around here.” Ye Qingling looked at the overlapping mountains as she tilted her head to talk with Mu Chen.

“Let’s select a few individuals and prepare to enter the mountain.” Mu Chen nodded slightly. This place was indeed quite hidden. If they did not look for it specifically, it would be difficult for them to detect it.

Ye Qingling turned around and quickly selected twenty-ish people from the Ye Clan. Most of these people were at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Middle Phase. However, they were exceptions such as Wang Sheng, who had reached the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase.

“Mo Ling. You should wait together with them.” Mu Chen informed Mo Ling. The latter also nodded. His strength wasn’t quite prominent in this place. If he were to follow them, he would only be a burden to them.

“Let’s go.”

After noticing that everything was in order, Mu Chen did not delay anymore and immediately waved his hand. He directly charged into the mountain. Then, Ye Qingling brought Sun'Er, Wang Sheng and the others as they followed.

In the mountain, there were many Spiritual Beasts. However, Mu Chen and the others' goal weren't the beasts. Thus, they never attacked them and avoided the formidable Spiritual Beasts as they headed straight into the depths of the forest.

They ran for approximately ten minutes before they stopped at a mountain slope. They gazed forward. At that location, there were three mountains intersecting with each other which formed a valley. Many massive trees grew near the borders of the valley and formed a natural cover.

Mu Chen and the others stood at the crest of the mountain slope as they glanced into the valley. They could vaguely feel the presence of three vicious auras. These auras were comparable to a Spirit Stage Initial Phase powerhouse.

"Three Spirit Stage Initial Phase Spiritual Beasts."

Mu Chen glanced at Ye Qingling and the others. Ye Qingling had a decent expression, while Wang Sheng and the others' faces changed completely. They never hunted three High Rank Spiritual Beasts at once before.

"We must quickly deal with these three Spiritual Beasts. Otherwise, the large commotion would attract other Spiritual Beasts and humans over." Mu Chen spoke slowly.

"There's no way we can rush it. In this place, only Brother Mu and Sister Ye have the ability to fight against High Rank Spiritual Beasts alone." Wang Sheng smiled wryly.

Mu Chen also smiled and said: "Leave these three Spiritual Beasts to me. It will be fine if you just pay attention to the other people's movements."

Hearing these words, even Ye Qingling was stunned as she stared at Mu

Chen. Mu Chen actually wanted to fight against 3 Spirit Stage Initial Phase Spiritual Beasts alone? This was much more difficult than fighting against Ge Hai.

"I'm not planning on fighting against them head on."

Mu Chen smiled slightly as he said: "Didn't Sun'Er say it before? I am also a Spiritual Array Master..."

Ye Qingling was stunned. Sun'Er had indeed mentioned it before. However, she did not pay much attention about it. Moreover, so what if Mu Chen is a Spiritual Array Master? How could he deal with three High Rank Spiritual Beasts? That would be impossible unless he could arrange a powerful Rank 2 Spiritual Array.

Just when she was surprised, Mu Chen's fingertips flashed. Then, Ye Qingling and the others were astounded as they noticed numerous Spiritual Seals slowly emerging from the fingertips.

A total of 30 Spiritual Seals!

Ye Qingling's lips parted. 30 Spiritual Seals? This guy was actually a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master as well?

Mu Chen slowly closed his eyes as his fingertips drew numerous trajectories. Then, the 30 Spiritual Seals quickly charged into the air in front of them and vanished. Afterwards, an amazing Spiritual Energy fluctuation slowly emitted.

Upon seeing this, a hint of wonder flashed through Sun'Er's petite face. Her dark-black eyes stared at Mu Chen as she muttered: "Brother Mu Chen could actually enter the Heart Array State as well..."

Ye Qingling's heart trembled again. Heart Array State. Because of Sun'Er, she knew how powerful that state could be to a Spiritual Array Master. She never imagined that Mu Chen was not only a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master, but also someone like Sun'Er, who possessed the Heart Array State.

"As expected from a person who was assessed as a King Class within the Spiritual Road..." Ye Qingling sighed. Even though he was kicked out of

the Spiritual Road in the middle, how is it possible for such a person to be ordinary?

Mu Chen did not care about the shock that Ye Qingling and the others faced. His hand seals changed and an golden Spiritual Array slowly expanded out in front of him. As the Spiritual Energy fluctuations came out of the array, it instantly distorted the air around it.

Chapter 124: Golden Revolution Soulreaver Array

A golden Spiritual Array slowly expanded out from the air in front of Mu Chen. As the complex Spiritual Energy light beams interweaved with each other, they emitted extremely violent Spiritual Energy fluctuations.

Ye Qingling and the others weren't Spiritual Array Masters. Naturally, they weren't able to understand Spiritual Arrays. However, Sun'Er was staring at the array seriously. In her eyes, the complex and obscure Spiritual Energy light beams were like channels of power transmission. They gradually perfected the entire Spiritual Array.

Hu.

Mu Chen slowly opened his tightly shut eyes. He lifted his head and stared at the massive golden array with a serious expression. It was the first time for him to use his own strength to arrange a Rank 2 Spiritual Array.

This Spiritual Array was the Rank 2 Spiritual Array that Mu Feng had painfully searched for and found shortly before Mu Chen left the Northern Spiritual Realm. Regarding about this array, Mu Chen had long ago learnt it by heart. However, because the amount of seals he could condense was lacking, he had never attempted to arrange it. But now, he was capable of doing so.

"Next up, I'll have to trouble you." After the Spiritual Array was successfully completed, Mu Chen smiled at Ye Qingling.

Hearing this, Ye Qingling was dumbstruck. Then, Sun'Er laughed joyfully and said "Sister sure is stupid. Brother Mu Chen wanted you to lure the three High Rank Spiritual Beasts over, so he could kill them with his Spiritual Array."

Ye Qingling stared at Sun'Er for a while and immediately nodded. However, she hesitated for a moment and asked: "Are you certain that your Spiritual Array is capable of killing 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts?"

Although Mu Chen's Rank 2 Spiritual Array was quite impressive, a High Rank Spiritual Beast's skin was quite tough and sturdy. They had a powerful defense. It was probably quite difficult for the array to massacre all of them in one attack.

"Relax. I know what I'm doing." Mu Chen smiled slightly.

Once she heard these words, she she lost her hesitation and gave instructions to the crowd. Then, her lovely figure dashed off into the valley.

"Sun'Er."

Mu Chen stared at Ye Qingling's fading figure before he turned his gaze towards the surrounding mountains. He narrowed his eyes and beckoned Sun'Er over. Then, he slowly whispered into her ears.

Just when Mu Chen and the others were preparing to take action, on the opposite side of the mountain, two figures entered into two nearby camps. There were many people inside each camp, each having nearly 100 people.

"Boss. Someone's targeting the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia!"

In a camp, a figure suddenly stood up once he heard this information. He was dressed in white and had a face filled with arrogance. He sneered once he heard the message and asked: "Who? Could it be Ge Hai? He actually has the courage to do so?"

"It's not Ge Hai. It's another clan. It seems to be the Ye Clan." Someone replied.

"Ye Clan? Ye Qingling?" The boy in white frowned before he let out a brilliant smile: "So it's that beauty? She truly is courageous. She actually dares to target something that I've taken a fancy to."

"Boss, what should we do?"

"What do you mean by 'what should we do'? Immediately prepare to take action. Since that beauty dares to steal from me, then I'll capture her as well. Haha!" The boy in white laughed. He waved his hand and immediately charged out of the camp. A large amount of troops quickly

followed him.

As they rushed out towards the center of the mountain, a large number of troops also exited the other camp...

Roar!

Shortly after Ye Qingling entered the gorge-like valley, deafening roars rang out and caused the valley to tremble. A violent Spiritual Energy suddenly arose from within the valley.

Swish!

Ye Qingling's tender figure was wrapped in Spiritual Energy and turned into a figure of light. She charged out of the valley like lightning. Behind her, three blue giant birds rushed out. As they flapped their wings, Spiritual Energy billowed and covered their claws as they attempted to grasp onto Ye Qingling.

Ye Qingling's body was like a falling leaf in the winds. She would gently sway and completely evade the attacks from the three High Rank Spiritual Beasts. However, the violent Spiritual Energy fluctuations still made her body unsteady.

With just her strength, it wasn't easy for her to pin down 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts.

While Ye Qingling brought the 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts towards the mountain slope where Mu Chen and the others were residing at, Mu Chen's expression gradually turned more solemn as he fixed his sight on the 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts.

"Chi Chi."

The golden Spiritual Array slowly circulated and emitted a golden Spiritual Energy. The golden light became brighter and brighter as if it was crafted by actual gold."

"Prepare to intercept." Mu Chen turned his head towards Wang Sheng and the others.

"Yes."

Wang Sheng and the others immediately responded. The Spiritual Energy within their bodies surged as they stared at the three High Rank Spiritual Beasts that were approaching them. Every single one of them was waiting for the instant Ye Qingling would enter their attack range. Then, dense Spiritual Energy erupted and bombarded against the three High Rank Spiritual Beasts behind Ye Qingling.

Bang Bang!

Numerous attacks landed on the 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts' bodies and sparks flew. However, the 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts' bodies were as tough as steel. The attacks failed to do any damage to them. But at the very least, they had managed to slow them down.

By relying on this brief moment, Ye Qingling escaped the 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts and landed quickly on top of the mountain slope. She stared at Mu Chen and her voluptuous chest gently bounced as she muttered: "It's your turn now."

Mu Chen nodded with a smile. His sharp eyes stared at the 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts that were approaching the mountain slope. Then, he gently placed his hands together and the golden Spiritual Array behind him instantly emitted a brilliant golden light. A ferocious Spiritual Energy surged from the array.

"Li!"

The three High Rank Spiritual Beasts seemed to be aware of the dangerous fluctuations emitting from the golden Spiritual Array and they immediately slowed down. Cries rang out from their mouths as a dense Spiritual Energy filled their bodies.

"Golden Revolution Soulreaver Array!"

A cold light flashed through Mu Chen's eyes. A piercing cry suddenly resounded from his mouth.

At this moment, a dazzling golden light arose like a sun. As the golden light gathered, the array trembled and a massive brilliant golden light blasted from the Spiritual Array.

Buzz!

The golden light rushed out and immediately turned into a sharp jagged golden wheel. The light wheel rotated crazily as it let out a buzzing sound. Then, the golden light extended out uncertainly as if it had ripped apart the air.

“Go!”

Mu Chen’s fingers touched it for a moment. Afterwards, the golden light wheel blazed like golden lightning towards the 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts.

As the golden light wheel rushed over, the feathers of the 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts were standing up straight. A hint of panic seemed to flash through their eyes. It was evident that they detected the danger from this golden light wheel.

The 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts hesitated for a moment before they suddenly turned around to flee. They immediately extended their wings in order to fly away. After all, a High Rank Spiritual Beast possessed a little bit of intelligence and knew how to act to avoid impending doom. They were certain that they would die if they were to be hit by the dangerous golden wheel directly.

“You want to run?”

Seeing this, Mu Chen smiled. He had spent a great effort in order to arrange the Rank 2 Spiritual Array. Wouldn’t it be a huge loss if he let these 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts escape?

Swish!

With Mu Chen’s thoughts, the golden light wheel’s speed accelerated and was like golden lighting within the sky. It rapidly caught up with one of the High Rank Spiritual Beasts and landed on its body.

Chi!

The high speed rotating golden light wheel possessed a terrifying destructive power. Even against a High Rank Spiritual Beast, which

possessed a powerful defense, it still tore through the layers of defense and pierced through its body.

Blood sprayed out within the sky.

With a sharp cry, the High Rank Spiritual Beast fell from the sky.

The golden light wheel did not disappear after defeating one of the High Rank Spiritual Beasts. It immediately caught up with the second and third Spiritual Beasts and ripped through their bodies as well.

Pu Pu.

A large amount of blood fell down from the sky like a cloud of blood. After it pierced through 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts, the Spiritual Energy of the golden light wheel was depleted and it faded away gradually.

Mu Chen stared at the bloody mist. He could feel that the other two High Rank Spiritual Beasts were still alive and was not instantly killed like the first one. After all, the golden light wheel had consumed quite a bit of Spiritual Energy after it had eliminated the first Spiritual Beast...

Li!

From the bloody mist, a fierce and brutal cry resounded out. The two High Rank Spiritual Beasts charged over fiercely as their eyes locked onto Mu Chen. They immediately flapped their wings and rushed over directly towards him.

“Be careful!” Seeing this, Ye Qingling was stunned and immediately attempted to help.

However, Mu Chen did not retreat. Instead, he let out a sneer: “It’s a powerless action.”

Swish!

Mu Chen’s hands clenched tightly and, once again, Spiritual Seals integrated themselves into the air. A lightning quickly condensed behind him and rapidly formed into a lightning array.

Nine Heavenly Lightning Spiritual Array!

Boom!

A violent lightning descended like a dragon onto the two gravely injured High Rank Spiritual Beasts.

Bang!

As they were struck heavily, blood sprayed out from the two High Rank Spiritual Beasts. In the end, they let out a pitiful cry before they fell down.

On the side, Ye Qingling, Wang Sheng and the others stared at Mu Chen. They were shocked that he was actually capable of rapidly condensing a second Spiritual Array to continue his assault. The speed in which Mu Chen arranged the Spiritual Array was way too fast.

"If only Sun'Er could arrange a Spiritual Array like this..." Ye Qingling thought. When Mu Chen arranged a Spiritual Array, he was so calm that nothing could influence him. All his fear and panic was completely isolated by him. As for Sun'Er, she would fail in arranging a Spiritual Array once she was frightened. It was truly unknown how long it would take before she could perform the same feat as Mu Chen.

"You can follow me after you collect these Spiritual Beast's Soul Essences."

Mu Chen muttered to Ye Qingling and the others after he defeated the 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts. Then, he immediately dashed over into the valley. In a few short seconds, he had already entered the depths of the valley.

The valley was quite verdant and had plenty of Spiritual Aura. Moreover, there were a variety of Spirit Fruitscontaining Spiritual Aura within the valley from Spirit Trees. This place was truly what Ge Hai had said. It was a place filled with treasures.

Mu Chen's eyes only glanced at them for a moment before he immediately headed into the depths of the valley. Although these Spirit Fruits were decent, they weren't something that he needed.

After a while, Mu Chen finally stopped. His eyes were firmly fixed on a mountain slope. At that location, a lush emerald clump of light had

gathered.

Inside the clump of light, he could vaguely see a tiny, emerald Spirit Zoysia. From its appearance, it looked like a polished jade as it was sparkling and translucent. An amazing Spiritual Energy slowly being emitted by it.

Mu Chen stared at the emerald Spirit Zoysia eagerly.

“Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia!”

Chapter 125: Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia

A green light that was filled with vitality surrounded the emerald-like Spirit Zoysia. An enticing aroma was constantly being emitted from the grass, which would cause anyone's mouth water.

"So this is the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia?"

From behind, Ye Qingling's voice rang out. As she exclaimed at the sight of the Spirit Zoysia sitting on the slope, Mu Chen noticed that she had also brought Wang Sheng and the others over.

Mu Chen smiled and nodded. He then looked at Ye Qingling and spoke: "The Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia belongs to me this time. Consider it a favor, okay?"

"This information came from you. Moreover, you were the one that defeated the Spiritual Beasts outside. This item naturally belongs to you. There is no need to talk about favors." Ye Qingling smiled: "However, there are still many worldly treasures inside the valley. Although they aren't as outstanding compared to the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia, they are still decent. It will be beneficial to our cultivation."

"Pick as much as you want." Mu Chen laughed.

"Then I'll have to thank you." Ye Qingling nodded. She did not say anything more and waved her hand as she brought the others to pick the other worldly treasures in the area.

Mu Chen moved quickly and rushed over to the location of the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia. His hand was wrapped with Spiritual Energy as he inserted it directly into the slope. Afterwards, he dug out the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia along with a massive boulder.

Once the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia was plucked by Mu Chen, an emerald light flowed out and entered the symbol on Mu Chen's forehead. The golden light from the symbol instantly turned richer and showed signs of increasing from a Rank 5 to a Rank 6.

After feeling the changes that were made to his symbol, Mu Chen's eyes

were filled with surprise. It seemed that searching for worldly treasures could be a decent method of increasing the symbol's ranks. Unfortunately, it was extremely rare to find worldly treasures that were filled with Spiritual Aura such as the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia.

Mu Chen lowered his head to look at the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia on top of the boulder. The beauty of this worldly treasure could only be seen close up. Within the sparkling colors, a dense and pure Spiritual Energy fluctuation was emitted.

Mu Chen smelled the enticing aroma, and the Spiritual Energy within his body shook. A strange feeling filled his heart.

It was the feeling of wanting to attempt a breakthrough.

"I'll absorb it here right now and attempt to breakthrough to the Spirit Stage!"

This idea flashed through Mu Chen's mind, and his eyes twinkled. He sat down decisively upon the floor of the valley, then he took a deep breath and gradually calmed down.

As he was calming himself, his hands were covering the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia from both above and below. Suddenly, Mu Chen's Spiritual Energy began to surge out.

Boom!

The boulder, which the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia was on, turned into dust underneath the Spiritual Energy pressure, and the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia also cracked open slightly.

An emerald liquid filled with extraordinary Spiritual Energy flowed out and the valley instantly turned hazy as a seductive scent spread out.

The pressure of the Spiritual Energy within Mu Chen's hands gradually increased, and it finally compressed the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia into a clump of emerald liquid. The liquid was filled with an extraordinary Spiritual Energy which caused Mu Chen's hands to tremble.

Hu.

As Mu Chen inhaled, the emerald liquid rose up and turned into a stream of green droplets which entered Mu Chen's mouth.

Boom!

Once the emerald liquid, which was filled with extraordinary Spiritual Energy, entered Mu Chen's body, and his skin immediately turned green. His entire being seemed to swell.

Rumble!

An amazing Spiritual Energy was raging like a flood within Mu Chen's body. He hurriedly gathered his thoughts and circulated the Great Pagoda Art in order to swiftly ingest the massive Spiritual Energy within his body.

However, the Spiritual Energy from the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia was truly enormous. Now that it had entered Mu Chen's body, it actually showed signs of losing control.

Just when Mu Chen was somewhat troubled by it, a sudden suction of energy appeared from within his aura sea. It immediately took a portion of the pure Spiritual Energy away.

This scene initially stunned Mu Chen, but he immediately concentrated and noticed that the Spiritual Energy entered the Nine Nether Bird's body, who was laying down on top of the mandala flower.

As the Nine Nether Bird absorbed the Zoysia's Spiritual Energy, the dim color on its body instantly lighten up; then, black flames started to rise from its body once again.

"What are you looking at? It was you who made me this weak. Right now, you have way too much Spiritual Energy. It wouldn't harm you if I take a bit away from you." The Nine Nether Bird seemed to be aware of Mu Chen's gaze, and a cold message was immediately conveyed over.

Mu Chen smiled bitterly and said hesitantly: "Are you planning to attack me secretly again?" He remembered the previous time during his breakthrough when the Nine Nether Bird secretly attacked him.

And now, the breakthrough this time was even more important that

before. If anything terrible happened, he would truly regret it.

"If you have this wish, I can indulge it for you." A mocking thought was conveyed over by the Nine Nether Bird.

Mu Chen smiled awkwardly and relaxed. Then, he ignored the Nine Nether Bird and focused on ingesting the massive Spiritual Energy within his body as he prepared to breakthrough into the Spirit Stage.

In the valley, Ye Qingling and the others were picking the other Spirit Trees' Spirit Fruits. The Spiritual Auras from these Spirit Fruits were far inferior compared to the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia. However, they was still beneficial for cultivation.

"What a rich Spiritual Aura."

Wang Sheng suddenly turned around and stared at the depths of the valley. An enticing aroma emitted from that location along with dense Spiritual Aura.

Ye Qingling paused for a moment. She immediately understood that Mu Chen was probably ingesting the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia and frowned: "Do we have people keeping an eye out for trouble?"

"Yes. Relax, Sister Ye. We have people being vigilant," Wang Sheng laughed.

Wuu!

Just when Wang Sheng said these words, a humming sound rang out from outside the valley. The crowd of people inside the valley instantly changed their expressions. Once she heard this sound, Ye Qingling immediately rushed to a high slope and stared out into the distance.

"Swish!"

Two other figures quickly rushed over to the high slope from nearby. They said in panic: "Sister Ye, this is bad. We discovered two groups charging over towards us."

Ye Qingling's face changed slightly and asked: "Is it the Ge Clan?"

"No. We did not discover Ge Hai's figure from these two groups," One of

the men muttered.

Ye Qingling's eyes turned serious and murmured: "It seemed that Ge Hai wasn't the only one that knew of the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia being here. That bastard truly had bad intentions from the start!"

"Sister Ye, what should we do?" Wang Sheng hurriedly asked. The two groups of men were definitely comparable to the Ge Clan. Otherwise, Ge Hai wouldn't have let their groups exist. With them rushing over to this location, how could they resist against them with just this amount of manpower?

Ye Qingling glanced at the valley and bit her teeth. She immediately responded: "We should stop them for now. Mu Chen is currently breaking through to the Spirit Stage. He cannot be disturbed right now."

Wang Sheng exchanged gazes with the others. Could they even stop them? But since Ye Qingling was the one that said this, they could only comply with it.

Ye Qingling rushed up to the highest point of the valley and stared out to the distance. Then, she discovered two groups of men charging over to this location rapidly. Each group had dozens of individuals.

"Haha. Little Beauty, we meet again!" A figure rushed out from the group on the left. A dense Spiritual Energy emitted from his body as he let out a frivolous laughter.

"Yang Gong?"

Ye Qingling stared at the figure dressed in white and immediately frowned. She had met this person before. Although the latter had not participated in the Spiritual Road, his family was quite prosperous. By relying on numerous resources, he managed to enter the Spirit Stage Initial Phase.

"Hmph, your Ye Clan truly has guts. You dare steal the item that I, Zhou Li, had taken a liking to! You must have a death wish!" From the other group of men, a figure dressed in black charged out with a cold expression. He stared unkindly at Ye Qingling.

“It’s the Yang Clan and the Zhou Clan…” Wang Sheng and the others’ expressions immediately changed. The two groups were well-known forces within this region. Their strength was in no way inferior to their Ye Clan.

Ye Qingling stared coldly at Yang Gong and Zhou Li. Both of them were at the Spirit Stage Initial Phase. With her alone, it would be difficult for her to fight against them.

“Ye Qingling, hand over the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia!” Zhou Li shouted. He had been eyeing at the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia for a few days. If it hadn’t been for Yang Gong, he would have probably taken action already. How could he have expected that Ye Qingling would make a pre-emptive move on it?

Ye Qingling’s eyes flashed with an uneasy look. She smiled: “About the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia, it seemed that the other side wants it as well. If I were to hand it over to you, they would probably be dissatisfied.”

Zhou Li frowned and glanced at Yang Gong.

“Ohoho. Not only are you beautiful, but you’re also as cunning as a fox. I like it.” Yang Gong laughed and looked at Zhou Li as he said: “Brother Zhou must have seen through this sort of psychological action, right? Why don’t we temporarily join forces to capture this beauty? When that happens, the beauty will belong to me and I’ll let you have the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia. How’s that?”

“Good!”

Zhou Li’s eyes lit up. His personality was different than Yang Gong. Thus, the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia was more attractive to him.

Ye Qingling’s face changed slightly when she noticed that the two of them formed a temporary alliance.

“Haha. Little Beauty, you should just follow me around. I will definitely treat you well.” Yang Gong laughed loudly. Then, he charged directly at Ye Qingling. At the same time, Zhou Li rushed over as well. They surrounded Ye Qingling.

Ye Qingling’s expression turned slightly cold, and a dense Spiritual

Energy also erupted from her. Although it would be difficult for her to face two Spirit Stage powerhouses, there was no other choice. She could only stall for as long as possible.

“Boom!”

But just when Ye Qingling was about to attack, an extremely violent Spiritual Energy suddenly emitted from a slope nearby. The surrounding forest was instantly destroyed by it.

This violent Spiritual Energy fluctuation instantly surprised both Yang Gong and Zhou Li. They hurriedly turned their gaze over and noticed a massive Spiritual Array slowly emerging on the slope. In front of the Spiritual Array, a lovable and cute girl with twintails were staring at them grumpily.

“Since you’re bullying my sister, you must be looking for a beating!?”

Sun’Er voice resounded out as her hands quickly formed a few seals. The massive Spiritual Array above her immediately circulated, and violent Spiritual Energy quickly gathered.

“Wind Dragon Skysmash Array!”

Roar!

Within the massive blue Spiritual Array, a blue light gathered and swept across the sky. An enormous wind dragon burst out from the array carrying sand and rumbling Spiritual Energy towards the Yang Gong and Zhou Li.

As Yang Gong and Zhou Li stared at the formidable wind dragon, their faces instantly changed.

Chapter 126: Spirit Stage

Roar!

As the wind dragon roared, furious winds bellowed and numerous wind blades swept across the sky. The space left behind seemed to have been ripped apart by these wind blades. This powerful attack instantly changed Yang Gong and Zhou Li's expressions.

The Spiritual Array that Sun'Er had activated was extremely powerful. It was probably on the same level as Mu Chen's 'Golden Revolution Soulreaver Spiritual Array'. It was certain that even someone at the Spirit Stage Initial Phase would die if it hit them.

Before this entire thing had happened, Mu Chen was extremely cautious and made Sun'Er hide quietly for an ambush. He had told her to secretly prepare a Spiritual Array, so that she could arrange it once something terrible happens.

Mu Chen knew that Sun'Er had barely any combat experience. Thus, he could not let her fight against others in a head-on battle. Instead, by making her hide, she could finally display the power that she rightfully possessed.

And the current situation proved that Mu Chen's arrangements had indeed been correct. Without people disturbing her, the Spiritual Array that Sun'Er arranged was in no way inferior to his own.

Yang Gong and Zhou Li's face changed as they stared at the approaching wind dragon. It was evident that they had perceived a Spiritual Energy fluctuation that even they would fear. If they were hit by such an attack, it was almost certain that they would be killed.

"It's not so easy to kill us!"

However, Yang Gong and Zhou Li were not ordinary individuals. They never felt despair, even in such a circumstance. Instead, they let out cold shouts as they gripped their own hands. Then, a clump of light was unleashed from each of their respective hands.

Boom!

A dense Spiritual Energy erupted out from their palms. At this moment, Ye Qingling and the others noticed that a black iron shield had formed in front of Yang Gong. The black iron shield was covered with mysterious engravings, and a unique fluctuation emitted from it.

And in front of Zhou Li, a grey stone stove had appeared. The stone stove also possessed a powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuation. On the surface, it too had many unique light engravings.

“Obsidian Spirit Shield!”

“Spirit Stone Stove!”

These words were simultaneously shouted by Yang Gong and Zhou Li. Then, the shield and stove instantly let out a dazzling flashes as they protected the two of them.

Bang!

By the time the wind dragon had finally arrived, it had built up enough momentum and fiercely smashed against the black shield and stone stove. A formidable Spiritual Energy shockwave instantly resounded out.

Swish.

Two figures were shot down from the air awkwardly. However, they hurriedly stabilized their stances the moment their feet landed on the ground. The black shield and stone stove turned dimmer and finally disappeared within their hands.

But from their appearance, the two of them did not suffer much damage!

“Spiritual Artifacts?” Once Ye Qingling noticed this scene, her heart sank slightly. Just earlier, Yang Gong and Zhou Li had both pulled out true Spiritual Artifacts. Their family background was truly impressive.

At this moment, Yang Gong and Zhou Li’s expressions both trembled. If it weren’t for their Spiritual Artifacts, the two of them would have actually been killed by that little girl.

“You’ll go and capture that little girl. I’ll stall Ye Qingling!” Yang Gong

said in a solemn voice. At this moment, he had put away his jolly attitude. The little girl was too amazing. If another powerful Spiritual Array emerges, they would definitely suffer.

"Okay!"

Zhou Li also understood this point, so without further thought, he immediately nodded and rushed towards the distant slope where Sun'Er was.

"Stop right there!"

Seeing Zhou Li charge towards Sun'Er, Ye Qingling's face instantly changed. She hurriedly rushed out. However, just when she moved, Yang Gong had appeared in front of her. He smiled and said: "Little beauty, you should play with me instead."

"If you dare touch my sister, I will never forgive you!" Ye Qingling's eyes were completely cold. A dense Spiritual Energy surged out of her body and she attacked Yang Gong fiercely.

"Haha."

Yang Gong laughed. However, he did not dare to be too careless. Ye Qingling wasn't weaker than him, if he were to underestimate her, then he would definitely pay a price. Thus, he too pushed his Spiritual Energy to the limits as he faced her.

BOOM!

The two of them went all out, their Spiritual Energy erupted, crushing the nearby boulders and trees to pieces.

Just when Yang Gong started his fight against Ye Qingling, Sun'Er, who was on the distant mountain slope, noticed Zhou Li, who was approaching with murderous intent. She was shocked and immediately ran into the forest behind her.

Zhou Li, who was originally tensed and wary of Sun'Er, watched this scene and was completely startled. It was evident that he never expected Sun'Er, who made both him and Yang Gong feel death, would actually flee

immediately.

"Where are you planning to go!?"

However, Zhou Li quickly recovered from the shock. Sun'Er was even more dangerous than Ye Qingling. If she were to hide herself and stealthy arrange a Spiritual Array, they wouldn't have the luck to survive again. He absolutely had to capture her.

Swish!

A dense Spiritual Energy surged from Zhou Li's body. Then, he chased after Sun'Er like a gale...

...

Rumbling Spiritual Energy surged through Mu Chen's limbs and bones like a flood. As he circulated the Great Pagoda Art with all his strength, he was constantly absorbing the pure Spiritual Aura from the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia. In the end, it had all flowed into his aura sea and empowered the Spiritual Energy light wheel within it.

Buzz.

As the dense Spiritual Energy entered, the Spiritual Energy light wheel expanded constantly. It finally became the size of an adult's palm, and the area surrounding the light wheel was covered with lights. It had the appearance of a vast, mysterious universe.

Mu Chen felt the Spiritual Energy within his aura sea increase at an alarming speed, yet his mind gradually calmed down.

With the Great Pagoda Art circulating at full strength, he had finally ingested the last portion of pure Spiritual Energy from the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia.

Once the final portion entered his Spiritual Energy light wheel, a strange feeling instantly filled Mu Chen's heart. This feeling was as though everlasting ripples had appeared in a calm, serene spring.

At this moment, the Spiritual Energy light wheel had completely stopped circulating. Waves of Spiritual Energy rippled on the surface of the light

wheel. Then, Mu Chen examined the Spiritual Energy that had gushed out and gathered on the surface of the Spiritual Energy light wheel.

The Spiritual Energy converged and, once the light dispersed, a petite light figure, who was sitting cross-legged, had emerged on top of the Spiritual Energy light wheel. It was extremely blurry, yet it seemed to be quite similar to Mu Chen. But because it was too blurry, it was impossible to look at it clearly.

In the instant that the petite light figure was formed, a mysterious feeling appeared within Mu Chen's heart. He immediately concentrated and changes appeared within his gaze. He had actually turned into the petite figure who was sitting cross-legged on top of the Spiritual Energy light wheel.

"So this is a Spirit?"

Mu Chen realized that this was probably the biggest change as a Spirit Stage compared to the Spiritual Rotation Stage. Once he condensed this spirit, he had truly stepped into the realms of the Spirit Stage.

Mu Chen's thoughts quickly fused with the petite spirit, and he opened his eyes. His figure quickly moved, and he emerged outside of the mandala flower. Then, he smiled as he stared at the Nine Nether Bird within it.

At this moment, the Nine Nether Bird instantly became alert once it noticed the petite figure outside. Once a human reached the Spirit Stage, they would have the ability to ingest a Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence. In other words, Mu Chen has finally obtained a measure to deal with it now.

It had never doubted how appealing it was to humans. As long as they ingested its Soul Essence, they would be able to obtain the mighty abilities of a Nine Nether Bird. To many powerhouses, this was extremely tempting.

"Hehe."

The petite spirit grinned at the Nine Nether Bird, and it let out a malicious laugh.

"As expected, humans are truly up to no good!" The Nine Nether Bird's

black flames instantly rose and thoughts filled with rage echoed within Mu Chen's aura sea.

"If you want to ingest me, I will not let you get away with it easily!" The Nine Nether Bird spread out its wings as it shouted angrily.

The petite spirit watched the Nine Nether Bird who overreacted and was completely speechless. He said helplessly: "But I never said that I wanted to ingest you?"

The black flames rising from the Nine Nether Bird's body instantly froze. It was skeptical as it asked: "Then why did you come over here!?"

"I have just condensed a spirit, so I wanted to show it off to you." Mu Chen's voice was filled with ridicule. It was evident that he had acted this way on purpose. The Nine Nether Bird had never given him face. Thus, now that he was able to torment it, he felt pretty great.

The Nine Nether Bird finally realized the meaning behind Mu Chen's actions and anger instantly filled its eyes. The wings that emitted black flames swept severely against the light barrier: "Scram!"

This violent bird... Mu Chen smiled. He said seriously: "Relax. My promise is definitely true. I understand that I would benefit a lot if I ingest you. But no matter how powerful one is, I look down upon people who can't even keep a promise. Therefore, there is no need for you to worry. If it wasn't for your help, I probably wouldn't have a father anymore."

The Nine Nether Bird slowly folded its wings. Although its eyes were still filled with fierceness, the depths of its eyes had softened up. Although this bastard was quite vindictive, at least he was still commendable in certain areas.

After Mu Chen finished saying these words, he controlled the petite spirit and returned it back to the Spiritual Energy light wheel. As long as he entered the Spirit Stage, this petite spirit would be capable of automatically circulating the Great Pagoda Art. It would achieve an effect of cultivation. In addition, once he started circulating the Great Pagoda Art with his own body, the cultivation would be twice as effective. Thus, this petite spirit was extremely beneficial to his cultivation.

“The Spirit Stage is truly impressive.”

Mu Chen let out an praise. His mind focused as he completed the final circulation of his Great Pagoda Art before finally exiting the cultivation state.

Buzz.

But at this moment, he felt a buzzing sound emerging from within his body. He hesitated slightly and carefully sensed this buzzing sound. Then, he discovered that a sudden surge of information appearing from his heart.

Mu Chen checked the information that was delivered to him and a hint of surprise filled his heart. Had he actually activated something within the Great Pagoda Art due to his breakthrough into the Spirit Stage?

“The Great Pagoda Art that mother left behind is truly mysterious.”

Mu Chen gathered his thoughts and completely read the information handed to him. It seemed that a mysterious Spiritual Art was hidden within the information. It was...

Vajra Pagoda?

Chapter 127: Subdue

Boom!

A dense Spiritual Energy erupted in midair outside of the valley. Two figures had charged at each other with rumbling Spiritual Energy like powerful winds colliding.

In this moment, Ye Qingling was fighting with Yang Gong, and neither of them were holding back. They fully demonstrated the strength of the Spirit Stage. Although their strengths were similar, as time passed, Ye Qingling started to gain the upper-hand. After all, she was someone that had come out of the Spiritual Road and had experienced the trial within it. Whether it was battle experience or mental strength, she was far more outstanding than Yang Gong. She had increased her strength slowly and steadily, while the latter had relied on a massive amount of resources in order to reach the Spirit Stage. Thus, Yang Gong's strength was a little bit more unstable when compared to Ye Qingling's.

It was apparent that Yang Gong was aware of the pressure coming from Ye Qingling. His expression instantly became serious, and he did not dare to divert his attention elsewhere as he fought with all his strength.

While this battle occurred, the troops brought by Yang Gong and Zhou Li had rushed over in order to fight against Wang Sheng and the others. But due to the difference in numbers, Ye Qingling's side was quickly put at a disadvantage.The situation was beginning to look grim for them.

"Haha. Little Beauty. Your men won't be able to endure it any longer. Are you still planning to resist us stubbornly?" Yang Gong laughed and tried to use words to distract Ye Qingling.

However, as he laughed, Ye Qingling's attacks were becoming increasingly more powerful. The latter completely saw through the former's thoughts. How could she not understand them? If she were to be distracted by the others, it will not help the situation at all. Therefore, if she truly wished to help Wang Sheng and the others, she must defeat Yang Gong as soon as possible.

Due to the suddenly increasing ferocity of the attacks, Yang Gong was completely shocked and did not dare to speak anymore. As he concentrated, he began to feel that this girl was truly cunning.

While the battle between Yang Gong and Ye Qingling had entered the climax, a few people were watching the scene in secret from nearby. One could tell based on their appearances, it was the Ge Clan.

At this instant, their eyes were firmly fixed at the battle. Their eyes twinkled as they clearly stood to benefit greatly from the tussle.

“Big Brother. It seems that Yang Gong isn’t faring well against Ye Qingling.” Ge Qing whispered as he watched the battle.

“There’s no hurry. Ye Qingling does not have a sufficient amount of men, and they will soon be defeated. Furthermore, Zhou Li is already chasing after that little girl. As long as he captures her, Ye Qingling will be completely suppressed.” Ge Hai sneered.

“But what I’m wondering is what is going on with that Mu Chen…He hasn’t made any moves yet since the very start. Could it be that he has already obtained the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia and is attempting to ingest it at this very location?”

“If he successfully ingests it…if he were to advance into the Spirit Stage…” Ge Qing said trembling at the thought.

“Hmph. How can it be so easy to ingest a Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia? It’s evident by his absence that the bastard has gambled on ingesting it. However, he overestimates his own strength. Once Ye Qingling and the others are defeated, Yang Gong and his side will enter the valley. When that happens, that idiot, who will be sitting in a vulnerable state of cultivation, will simultaneously be at death’s door.” Ge Hai smiled evilly as he spoke.

”And if by some chance, he were fight against Yang Gong to the bitter end, that will be the time when we emerge in front of them.”

“Big Brother sure is wise.” Ge Qing had a happy expression. Ge Hai had truly thought through the entire process and knew what to do. Let’s see

how you, Mu Chen, overcomes this obstacle this time!

Dong!

In the sky, Spiritual Energy surged out of Ye Qingling's palms, and emitted a dazzling light which collided with Yang Gong.

A Spiritual Energy fluctuation, visible to the naked eye, spread out.

While Yang Gong retreated back a dozen step, Ye Qingling only retreated back three steps. However, he smiled and pointed below. At that location, Wang Sheng and the others were completely surrounded: "It seems that your subordinates have fallen into my hands."

"Then I'll kill you first!" Ye Qingling's eyes were cold. Spiritual Energy fluctuations emerged from her palms. At this moment, she was preparing to attack once again.

"Haha, I'll want to see you try." A cold sneer suddenly rang out from nearby. Ye Qingling was surprised and hurriedly turned her head around. At this moment, her expression changed drastically. She noticed Zhou Li approaching this location quickly, and, in his hands, he was clutching a struggling, little girl.

"Sun'Er!" Ye Qingling was speechless.

"Sister, I'm sorry." Sun'Er's eyes had turned red due to shame. She severely lacked combat experience . Thus, despite being quite powerful, when she attacked stealthily, once a Spirit Stage powerhouse like Zhou Li had targeted her, her combat abilities would immediately plummet.

"Zhou Li. If my sister is injured even slightly, I will kill you even if I have to lose my life!" Ye Qingling glared at Zhou Li. As these words were spoken, her voice was filled with rich killing intent.

Zhou Li's face turned slightly. He knew how terrifying a crazy woman could be. Therefore, he did not wish to overly provoke Ye Qingling and replied: "As long as you hand over the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia, I'll let her go."

Ye Qingling clenched her hands and bit her lips.

“Hows that sound?”

Zhou Li gripped Sun’Er’s soft shoulders with a bit of power. In that instant, the little girl instantly let out a painful cry, and her mouth twitched. Her eyes had also turned an even deeper shade of red, as she fought to hold back her tears.

Sun’Er gradually came to understand that this place wasn’t the same place she was previously at. Here, she could not hope to have everybody’s protection and love.

Once Ye Qingling heard Sun’Er’s painful cry, her body trembled slightly as she felt pain within her heart.

“If I were you, I would quietly let her go!”

Just when Ye Qingling had felt that stinging pain of Sun’Er’s cry within her heart, a voice filled with anger rang out followed by a figure quickly rushing out of the valley.

“Who!”

Zhou Li stared at the figure of light, and his expression changed.

Swish!

The figure ignored Zhou Li’s cries and appeared in front of him like a phantom. With its hands clenched into a fist it sent a punch blasting out towards Zhou Li’s head.

From the atmosphere of this punch, it would probably blow away Zhou Li’s head away if it were to hit him.

“You have a death wish!?”

Seeing this, Zhou Li was completely furious. Spiritual Energy gushed out of his body, and he fired out a punch of his own without any hesitation. His punch collided fiercely against the other punch that was blasted towards him.

Boom!

But as these fists collided with each other, Zhou Li’s expression changed

drastically, and a surge of pain burst through his his arm. The other person's Spiritual Energy was exceptionally overbearing and had forcibly destroyed the Spiritual Energy that covered his fist as it charged into his body.

Zhou Li's body trembled, and he hurriedly staggered backwards. At this moment, a sweet taste filled his throat.

Just when Zhou Li staggered backwards, the light figure's arm shot out and snatched Sun'Er away from his grip. Then, the figure's Spiritual Energy dispersed, and it revealed the cold-looking expression of Mu Chen.

"Brother Mu Chen!" Seeing this familiar expression, Sun'Er instantly shouted with delight. Afterwards, her eyes turned red and she said in frustration: "That bastard gripped me too hard. It hurts."

"Go over to your sister. Brother Mu Chen will teach him a lesson for you." Mu Chen smiled at Sun'Er.

"Okay." Sun'Er nodded and her body jumped into Ye Qingling's arms. Ye Qingling stared at her carefully while being quite distressed.

"Boy, who are you?!" Zhou Li's stared grimly at Mu Chen. Beside him, Yang Gong's eyes were also completely alert. Mu Chen, who had suddenly appeared, made them feel a little bit of unease.

"You wanted the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia, right? Well it's a shame that I have just ingested it." Mu Chen smiled at the two of them while he spoke.

Hearing these words, Zhou Li and Yang Gong's expressions instantly turned cold. They gnashed their teeth as if they wanted to rip Mu Chen into pieces. They had been eying that Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia for a long time. But because they had been afraid of each other, they had now failed to obtain it. They never expected that, in the end, their actions would benefit this Mu Chen in such a way.

"You dare steal the item, which I desire? Foolish trash!"

Yang Gong shouted out loudly and exchanged gazes with Zhou Li. He immediately yelled: "Let's get rid of him!"

Just earlier, he had seen Mu Chen repelling Zhou Li. Thus, he knew that Mu Chen was quite capable and did not dare to fight against him by himself.

Swish!

But before the two of them could manage an attack, Mu Chen had already made the first move. With a cold expression, a dark-black Spiritual Energy surged from his body and charged into the clouds. The density of the Spiritual Energy was many times more powerful than it had been before his advancement.

“So this is the power of a Spirit Stage...”

Mu Chen felt the torrent-like Spiritual Energy within his body and could not help but feel the comfort that emerged along with it. He straightened two of his fingers and the tips of these fingers lit up instantly. With a Pu sound, they quickly formed into a 3-meter-long golden light spear and stabbed towards Yang Gong and Zhou Li at lightning speed.

Boom!

Once they noticed the spears, Yang Gong and Zhou Li hurriedly circulated their Spiritual Energy . Both of them unleashed a powerful punch. However, their punches were blown away the moment they made contact with the golden light. A hint of surprise instantly filled their eyes. So the dark-black Spiritual Energy was actually this domineering!

“Swish!”

Mu Chen’s body quickly appeared in front of them again. He immediately let out a punch. But this time, three black light seals emerged on the surface of his fist. Surging black waves emitted out from his fist.

Booooooom!

As the three black light seals erupted out, Yang Gong and Zhou Li felt chills as they detected the overbearing fluctuations coming from the black light seals. They immediately gripped their hands together, and the black shield and stone stove reappeared.

Bang!

The three Limitless Death Seals exploded out. The Spiritual Energies overlapped against each other and let out a powerful impact on the black shield and stone stove. It made the black shield and stone stove instantly turn dim, as each flew back into their respective owner's hands.

Puchi.

As they watched the Spiritual Artifact being forced back, Yang Gong and Zhou Li's expressions turned pale. Both of them were completely shocked as they spit out a mouthful of blood. They could not believe that Mu Chen, who was at the same level as them, would actually be so powerful. He was able to completely subdue the two of them by himself!

"Run!"

At this moment, the two of them understood that they have finally met their match. They acted decisively and immediately retreated as they wiped away the blood on their mouths.

"And just where are you planning on going?!"

Within Mu Chen's eyes, a cold light flashed. He immediately activated the Shadowspirit Step and turned into numerous afterimages. Before Yang Gong and Zhou Li could react, he had already appeared in front of them. A golden light glowing from his fingertips like a sharp-edged golden divine spear stopped in front of their throats. The swift and fierce aura instantly made fresh blood ooze out of their skin on their throat.

"If you dare move one more step, I'll kill you."

Mu Chen glanced calmly at the two of them. The voice that lacked emotions had instantly frozen both Yang Gong and Zhou Li's body.

Chapter 128: Spoils of War

Outside of the valley, Yang Gong and Zhou Li's men gradually stopped moving. Their expressions changed as they stared at Mu Chen, who had complete control over their bosses. Then, they exchanged gazes with each other and stopped moving as well.

He was capable of defeating the Spirit Stage Initial Phase powerhouses, Yang Gong and Zhou Li, easily. As for them, what were they worth compared to these powerful individuals?

"Motherf*cker. Weren't you acting quite arrogant earlier? Who told this motherf*cker to hit me?" Wang Sheng, who had bruises on his face, sent a person, who was at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase, flying with a kick, while cursing. He hadn't often been greeted like this before.

The person who suffered a kick from Wang Sheng did not dare to fight back. After all, the situation wasn't the same as before.

"What do you want?"

On the mountain slope, Yang Gong and Zhou Li gritted their teeth. A cold chill permeated from the fingers that had stopped near their throats. It made them unwilling to make even the slightest movement. The boy in front of them had extremely calm eyes. They had no doubt that they would have to pay a bloody price if they dared to take the slightest action.

Mu Chen stared at the two of them and said faintly: "Since the fight is over, we will first talk about the price of fighting against us. Hand it over."

Mu Chen's eyes were focused on the symbols located on Yang Gong and Zhou Li's foreheads. From the dazzling golden color, it was evident that both of these individuals had Rank 5 Symbols.

"You!"

Hearing that Mu Chen wanted to steal their symbols, Yang Gong and Zhou Li's expressions changed. They had spent a lot of effort in order to increase their symbols to Rank 5.

"You can choose not to do so. However, I will wipe your symbol away. If

that happens, I believe that the two of you will be eliminated from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, right?" Mu Chen muttered as if he didn't care.

Yang Gong and Zhou Li instantly turned pale. Their eyes trembled as they stared at Mu Chen, who said these words calmly. The latter's methods were more decisive and vicious than they thought.

"Have you made up your mind?" Mu Chen smiled at the two of them.

"Fine. I'll treat it as if you're heartless!" Yang Gong exchanged gazes with Zhou Li and each noticed the bitterness within the other's eyes. They gnashed their teeth and concentrated. Then, the glittering golden symbols let out two brilliant lights as the symbols turned dim.

Mu Chen absorbed one of the golden lights into the symbol on his forehead. It instantly brightened up and turned into a dark golden color. At this moment, his symbol had levelled up into Rank 6.

After Mu Chen had finished absorbing the Spiritual Aura from Yang Gong's symbol, he flicked his finger and sent Zhou Li's portion over to Ye Qingling. When the latter noticed this, she hesitated for a moment. But after seeing Mu Chen direct a nod at her, she absorbed the Spiritual Aura from the symbol. At this moment, the symbol on her forehead also brightened up.

"Now, can you let us go?" Yang Gong gritted his teeth as he asked.

Mu Chen glanced at the two of them and he let out a mocking smile: "You were bullying such a cute girl earlier. Thus, you must compensate for it."

"We've already given the Spiritual Aura within our symbols to you. What else do you want!" Yang Gong shouted furiously.

"I noticed earlier that you two seemed to have pulled out something interesting." Mu Chen's eyes slowly scanned the two figures. If he were to use the triple Limitless Death Seals with his Spirit Stage Initial Phase strength, that wouldn't be something that an ordinary Spirit Stage Initial Phase powerhouse could withstand. However, the two of them managed to

endure it.

Hearing these words, Yang Gong and Zhou Li's faces turned pale. This thief! He actually dares to snatch away our Spiritual Artifacts? Those are our protective items!

"We don't have anything like that!" Yang Gong and Zhou Li gritted their teeth as they replied.

"If that's the case..." Mu Chen smiled slightly. His black eyes suddenly turned cold. His fingers disappeared from their throats and appeared in front of their foreheads.

After receiving powerful winds from Mu Chen's finger, the dim symbols on their forehead actually showed signs of breaking.

Feeling the chill on their foreheads, Yang Gong and Zhou Li's legs turned slightly weak. If their symbol was erased, they wouldn't be qualified to enter the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

"How about now? This is your final chance." Mu Chen directed a smile at the two of them. However, this smile made both Yang Gong and Zhou Li shudder. This person truly doesn't follow the typical pattern...

Yang Gong and Zhou Li sighed powerlessly. They finally gave up on resisting and extended their palms over. A light emerged on their palms and quickly turned into two clumps of light.

Within the clumps of light, one could vaguely detect a black shield and a grey stone stove.

"This is a Spiritual Artifact?" Mu Chen frowned. He looked at Yang Gong and Zhou Li in surprise. It seemed that they truly had powerful backgrounds as both of them possessed Spiritual Artifacts. Even his father didn't have such items.

Mu Chen was surprised deep inside. However, his hand did not hesitate as he grabbed onto the black shield and the stone stove. The two Spiritual Artifacts resisted for a while within his hand. But in the end, they were suppressed forcibly by Mu Chen and placed within his Mustard Seed Bracelet.

“Thank you for your gifts.”

Mu Chen finally retracted his fingers and chuckled.

Yang Gong and Zhou Li’s faces were completely blue. They stared ruthlessly at Mu Chen: “Boy, since you dare to steal from the two of us, if you have guts, I dare you to leave your name behind. We won’t easily accept this!”

Hearing this, Mu Chen smiled: “Mu Chen. I’ll welcome the two of you to cause trouble for me again. However, you should listen carefully. If you dare cause trouble for me, and get defeated by me again, I might erase your symbols if you fail to hand over satisfactory compensation.”

As they looked at Mu Chen’s smile, Yang Gong and Zhou Li’s hearts jumped. This bastard actually wants us to trouble him? Is he hoping for us to become individuals, who would hand over many treasures to him?

“You just wait!”

However, they could lose the fight, but not the battle. Even though they were already in a mess, Yang Gong and Zhou Li still had to act mighty and cool. They shouted out and immediately retreated.

Once they noticed their bosses depart, the unfortunate fellows below quickly scurried away. They did not dare to stay at this location.

Hidden in a distant forest, Ge Hai, Ge Qing and the others watched this scene unhappily. They were gritting their teeth to the point where they nearly shattered. Originally, they planned on reaping the benefits from other individuals, but it actually turned out like this.

“Big Brother, what should we do?” Ge Qing smiled bitterly. He was completely shocked. Just earlier, Mu Chen had completely subdued two opponents alone. It was evident that his combat abilities had far surpassed any ordinary Spirit Stage Initial Phase powerhouse. If they wanted to defeat him, they would need at least a Spirit Stage Middle Phase powerhouse!

Ge Hai gritted his teeth and his expressions changed for a moment. Finally, a hint of depression emerged on his face. He said: “Forget it. Let’s

withdraw first. Right now, we aren't their opponents at all. Let's hurry and leave. It would be troubling if he discovers us."

His heart trembled as he spoke these words. He hurriedly turned his head and noticed Mu Chen staring at him from the distant mountain slope.

"Hurry and run!"

Ge Hai was completely startled. He no longer cared about the others and ran away. He understood that, if he was to fall into Mu Chen's hands again, the latter would definitely erase his symbol if he didn't kill him.

"That bastard. Just you watch. We have already spread news about your existence in this Northern Heavens World. Since you had so many enemies in the Spiritual Road, there ought to be someone in this Northern Heavens World who will find you! When that happens, let's see how you'll suffer!"

Ge Hai cursed in his mind as he fled. Right now, he could only hope for a powerful individual to take care of Mu Chen...

"They truly refused to give up their evil intentions."

From afar, Mu Chen stared calmly in the direction in which Ge Hai and the others were escaping. However, he did not chase them down. He already hadn't cared about a person like Ge Hai in the Spiritual Road. There was no need for him to care about such a person in the Great Thousand World either.

If he truly refused to give up and he stumbled into his hands, all Mu Chen could do was to make him suffer.

Mu Chen slowly retracted his gaze and turned around towards Ye Qingling and the others. He directed a smile at Sun'Er, who was in Ye Qingling's arms, and asked: "Little girl, are you okay?"

Sun'Er shook her head and pouted. Then, she lowered her head and said: "Brother Mu Chen, I'm sorry. I almost ruined everything."

Previously, Mu Chen had told her that he would give her a major task.

He made her hide nearby in order to protect them. But who would have expected that she was the one that was captured? Moreover, she was used to threaten her sister. This made the little girl quite unhappy.

"You've already done quite well. If it wasn't for you buying time for me, I wouldn't have had the time to ingest the Yin Yang Spirit Zoysia."

Mu Chen smiled and rubbed Sun'Er's head. Then, his face turned solemn as he spoke: "However, you should still act a little bit braver next time. Your sister can't protect you forever. Moreover, you have great potential. Perhaps in the future, you will meet powerful individuals. When that happens, you might be the one that has to protect your sister. If you are still afraid then, your sister could be injured. You wouldn't like to see such a thing happen right?"

Sun'Er possessed an extremely terrifying talent in terms of Spiritual Arrays and Mu Chen knew about this. Her training in Spiritual Arrays was more complete than his. After all, the majority of his knowledge about Spiritual Arrays was taught by Mister Wen Ling. Perhaps Wen Ling was considered an excellent Spiritual Array Master within the Northern Spiritual Realm, it was evident that he was far inferior to a true Spiritual Array Master.

If Sun'Er was able to be courageous and wouldn't become a mess in a crisis, Mu Chen believed that perhaps he would not be Sun'Er's opponent based on Spiritual Arrays.

Sun'Er stared at Mu Chen's handsome and gentle face as she nodded seriously. Brother Mu Chen was correct. She could not allow her sister to protect her forever. She had to become stronger in order to protect her sister in the future.

As she watched this scene, a hint of warmth and comfort flashed through Ye Qingling's eyes. She directed a grateful smile towards Mu Chen as she understood the good intentions that the latter had towards Sun'Er.

Mu Chen also let out a satisfied smile. Then, he gripped his hand and light emerged from his palm. In an instant, the black shield and stone

stove that he had stolen from Yang Gong and Zhou Li appeared. An unique Spiritual Energy fluctuation was emitting from each of these items at the same time.

Mu Chen stared curiously at the black shield and stone stove in his hands. He wanted to carefully examine his spoils of war.

Chapter 129: Spread of Information

The black shield and the stone stove emitted a faint light as they floated above Mu Chen's palm. As they flashed, a strange Spiritual Energy fluctuation spread out.

Mu Chen stared curiously at the two Spiritual Artifacts. As the creation of Spiritual Artifacts was rather complex, only Spiritual Blacksmiths had the ability to create them. Moreover, there were barely any Spiritual Blacksmiths within the entire Northern Spiritual Realm. Based on this, one can see how tiny the Northern Spiritual Realm is compared to the vast and endless Great Thousand World.

Mu Chen's hand gripped the black shield of light and inserted Spiritual Energy into it. A powerful light started to emit from it and the palm-sized artifact instantly expanded into a protective shield in front of Mu Chen's body.

On the surface of the black shield, there were many mysterious engravings along with black lights. It gave off a vaguely dense and powerful feeling.

Previously, Yang Gong had used this black shield to block Mu Chen's triple Limitless Death Seal attack.

Based on Mu Chen's calculations, this black shield could probably withstand a powerful attack from a Spirit Stage Middle Phase powerhouse. But this fact made him secretly sigh. A Spiritual Artifact truly brought too many benefits to a battle.

Mu Chen played around with the black shield before he handed it over to Sun'Er. He smiled: "This is your reward."

Both the black shield and stone stove were protective Spiritual Artifacts. Since Mu Chen was planning on keeping the stone stove, he handed the black shield over to Sun'Er. After all, she was a Spiritual Array Master who lacked battle experience. With the support of the black shield, she would be a lot safer than before.

Sun'Er extended her petite hands and fiddled with the black shield as she chuckled: "Thank you, Brother Mu Chen."

"The black shield and stone stove are probably Low Rank Spiritual Artifacts." At the side, Ye Qingling smiled when she noticed this scene: "However, it truly provides many benefits to Sun'Er. If it weren't for these protective Spiritual Artifacts, they would have probably been killed by Sun'Er directly."

"We originally had higher ranked Spiritual Artifacts as well. However, they were handed back to our family when we entered the Northern Heavens World. They said that we must rely on ourselves for our cultivation within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. If we were to use the Spiritual Artifacts' power to obtain a higher position, we would truly be inferior to others."

Hearing Ye Qingling say these words, Mu Chen let out a bitter smile. This was truly the difference between them. In the Northern Spiritual Realm, he had almost never seen any Spiritual Blacksmiths. However, Ye Qingling and the others were accustomed to them.

After this, Mu Chen put away the stone stove casually. Although a Spiritual Artifact brought many benefits, he had always believed that the most important thing was for one to rely on their own strength. This was something that everybody could trust.

"What are you planning to do next?" Ye Qingling smiled as she stared at Mu Chen.

"Head to the Northern Heavens Hall. What else could I do?" Mu Chen smiled. He believed that everybody's goal was the same. This is because if they were to reach that place, they would be able to enter the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

"What about you?"

"Naturally, the same as you." Ye Qingling smiled: "However, I would like to find a suitable Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence to ingest on our way there. You have only recently advanced into the Spirit Stage, so you probably haven't ingested a Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence yet, right?"

Mu Chen sighed helplessly as he nodded. Although he had an extremely rare Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence within his body, he did not dare to ingest it.

"Actually, many students that advanced to the Spirit Stage have not ingested a Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence yet. This is because they were picky and set their sights quite high. They do not wish to find and ingest a random Spiritual Beast's Essence. Although it is possible to change the Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence later, it is indeed a troublesome matter.

"As far as I know, there are many powerful Spiritual Beasts within the Northern Heavens World. In fact, there are a few that have reached the Heaven Ranks and had a pretty decent position within the Myriad Beast Record's Earth Ranking. Although these Spiritual Beasts are difficult to deal with, they would always create a commotion once they were found. Many individuals would flock to them..."

"Actually, this is an opportunity that the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy has granted to us. It is a chance that would allow us to become a lot more powerful within the Northern Heavens World. This way, we would truly qualify to be students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy."

Ye Qingling blinked her eyes as she stared at Mu Chen and said: "If you have no other plans, why don't you follow us? If we were to find a couple of powerful Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence, I would give you the first choice."

"Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts..." A hint of surprise flashed through Mu Chen's eyes. It seemed that he had underestimated the Northern Heavens World. How could such a place be ordinary if it was used by the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy as their examination grounds?

Although Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts were extremely powerful and it was impossible for them to compete with the beasts with their present strength, there were thousands of students inside the Northern Heavens World. These individuals were not weak either; together, it would be possible for them to suppress a Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast. Naturally,

there was a premise that the Spiritual Beasts weren't as terrifying as the Nine Nether Bird...

However, the possibility was quite small. Based on Mu Chen's calculations, the Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts within the Northern Heavens World would not surpass the ranks of the top 50 Spiritual Beasts in the Myriad Beast Record's Earth Ranking. After all, a Spiritual Beast with a rank above the top 50 was too powerful for students like them.

"I'm quite interested in this as well."

A hint of interest flashed through Mu Chen's eyes. Currently, he had advanced to the Spirit Stage and it was indeed true that he required a Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence. Otherwise, he would definitely be at a disadvantage once he fought against enemies that had ingested a Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence.

Furthermore, the Northern Heavens World was quite vast and boundless. It was evident that it would be difficult for him to obtain information and find traces of Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts. Therefore, it would truly help him out if he were together with Ye Qingling and the others.

"Then, let's reunite with the others and head to the interior of the Northern Heavens World." She was quite happy to hear that Mu Chen would be going with them. After all, Mu Chen was extremely powerful, and his presence would be a significant boost in strength for the Ye Clan.

Mu Chen smiled and nodded. Then, the group packed their belongings before they headed quickly out of this mountain. Finally, they converged with the Ye Clan members, who were waiting for them at the foot of the mountain.

As the groups reunited with each other, a passionate commotion broke out. Wang Sheng and the others were talking excitedly about the battle that happened earlier within the mountains. Once the surrounding Ye Clan members heard that Mu Chen was able to completely subdue two Spirit Stage Initial Phase powerhouses by himself, they immediately cried out in shock. Their gazes held a hint of passion and worship as they

looked at Mu Chen.

In their eyes, a person who had advanced to the Spirit Stage was truly outstanding. Mu Chen, having easily bested not one, but two such individuals, was simply glorious.

With such a powerful person protecting their tiny Ye Clan, the threats that they suffered would decline greatly...

In the next few days, Mu Chen followed the Ye Clan as they headed to the interior of the Northern Heavens World. Although there were numerous troubles along the way, it did not stop them at all during their trip.

Furthermore, Mu Chen discovered that there were more students and forces as they gradually entered the interior of the Northern Heavens World. In addition, the majority of these individuals had a powerful aura. After all, without a bit of ability, it was impossible for them to protect their symbols from being robbed along the way.

Although they met many powerful forces and students as they entered the interior of the Northern Heavens World, the Ye Clan did not attract a lot of hatred as they never took the initiative of robbing other people's symbols. Thus, they were quite peaceful compared to the forces that fought against each other daily.

However, this peace did not last forever. This is because of the unique information that was gradually spreading throughout this vast region. This information did not create a commotion with those people who had not participated in the Spiritual Road, but to the ones that participated in the Spiritual Road, it was somewhat shocking.

The message conveyed was extremely short, yet it created a huge commotion in a few people's hearts.

The Spiritual Road's Blood Calamity, Mu Chen, is currently present at the Northern Heavens World.

Blood Calamity Mu Chen.

Many were unfamiliar with this name. However, there were also many

people who jumped upon hearing this name. Nobody who came from the Spiritual Road would ever forget the terrifying Blood Calamity that was caused within the Spiritual Road.

And the creator of the Blood Calamity was a boy named Mu Chen. A person who should have been assessed as a King Class and would have stood at the peak of the Spiritual Road.

This information spread quickly. A few individuals would grit their teeth in hatred once they obtained this news. A few would exclaim in curiosity, saying they would like to meet the boy who caused that shocking event within the Spiritual Road.

Some would hate, some would fear and some would be surprised...

Various emotions were evoked as the message was spread throughout the Northern Heavens World. Before long, Mu Chen's name had become a frequently discussed topic within the vast region. This made many people who had not participated in the Spiritual Road realize that a terrifying individual had descended into the Northern Heavens World...

This information had attracted a bit of trouble for Mu Chen as well. However, he was still able to control the trouble that he had attracted; for now. However, he understood that as the information spread further, the amount of trouble he would face would increase significantly. After all, he had a few opponents that were quite powerful...

Therefore, he must increase his own strength as soon as possible...

...

In a certain location within the Northern Heavens World.

Boom!

The sound of an explosion rang out within a massive mountain. Then, an enormous Spiritual Beast, covered with spikes, came crashing down to the ground. Fresh blood oozed out and turned the ground red.

It was a Magical Thorn Beast, whose strength was comparable to a Spirit Stage Middle Phase powerhouse. If a Spirit Stage Initial Phase powerhouse

were to meet it, their only option would be to quickly flee from this High Rank Spiritual Beast.

But at this moment, it had completely lost its life.

A figure landed gently on the massive body of the Magical Thorn Beast and extended its hand to extract the Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence. After glancing it for a bit, the figure placed it away.

"Yo, not bad. You dealt with this beast quite quickly." Sounds of laughter rang out from nearby. At this moment, a handsome boy emerged and whistled at the figure on top of the Magical Thorn Beast's body.

The figure that killed the Magical Thorn Beast lifted its head and revealed a handsome face. On his forehead, a purple-golden symbol was revealed. It was a symbol that had reached Rank 7.

This figure had a calm expression as if it was relatively easy for him to kill a Magical Thorn Beast.

"It's that expression again..."

The handsome boy curled his lips as if he was bored. Then, he stretched his waist for a moment as he smiled: "However, I believe you'll be interested in what I'm about to say."

"Blood Calamity Mu Chen has appeared."

Just as the handsome boy had expected, the figure who was on top of the Magical Thorn Beast froze for a moment. Afterwards, the figure quickly appeared in front of the handsome boy and his dull eyes instantly sharpened: "Mu Chen? Where?!"

"It should be in this area. I've already sent a few men over to investigate. We will soon have his location. I'll inform you as soon as we get it." The handsome boy smiled.

"Great!"

A smile finally emerged on the figure's face.

"I'd say, Chu Qi, Mu Chen isn't a man to be trifled with. Why are you searching for him? It doesn't seem like you have had much interaction

with him before, right? And it's not like you have a grudge against him from the Spiritual Road either." The handsome boy said helplessly. Known to him, Mu Chen was a terrifying existence that a person like Ji Xuan would fear.

"I hold no grudges against him."

The handsome boy named Chu Qi let out a faint smile. He stared at the frowning boy. Yet a hint of passion emerged from within the depths of his eyes: "I like Luo Li. I selected the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy because I've heard that she also selected it."

The handsome boy's eyes widened for a moment. Then, he gave a thumbs up to Chu Qi: "Amazing. You truly set your sights quite high. However, it's unfortunate for you as you probably don't stand a chance. She's truly amazing. It's impossible for you to conquer her."

"She has someone that she likes." Chu Qi clenched his hands tightly as he spoke.

The handsome boy was stunned. Then, he instantly understood and asked: "Are you talking about Mu Chen?"

Chu Qi slowly nodded his head and he began walking down the mountain. The ground underneath him shook slightly as he walked. At the same time, a hint of unacceptance spread out, accompanied by his voice.

"Therefore, I'm going to personally meet him. I will show him just who is the one that is more suitable for her!"

Chapter 130: Dragon Elephant Array

Surrounded by lofty peaks that shot up into the sky, this was a place where numerous mountains had intersected with one another. Thus, the many paths in this range would all intersect and come together at this location.

Due to the paths converging, this region was quite a festive and popular location. numerous camps were spread out among an exceptionally vast ground. Furthermore, there were many figures flocking about, demonstrating in this fashion how popular this location was.

Mu Chen stood on a mountain slope as he watched the scenes of people come and go. A hint of surprise flashed through his eyes. There were thousands of people in the area in front of him. The number of people here was even many times greater than the amount that had been on the Escort Platform.

“This place is a temporary gathering point. From this location, it is possible to advance to the depths of the Northern Heavens World. Therefore, many people in this region choose to pass through this place.” Next to Mu Chen, Ye Qingling explained with a smile: “In addition, this area also has an exchange market. Many people come here to sell the items that they have. Various Spiritual Arts, Spiritual Beast’s Soul Essences and even Spiritual Artifacts can appear here. Naturally if you would like to obtain the item, you must hand over a price that is satisfactory for them.”

Mu Chen nodded. It was truly what he had expected. As long as humans were around, a place like this would automatically form. After all, everybody wants to obtain the items that they need.

“Do we need Spirit Coins here?” Mu Chen asked. Spirit Coins were the common currency used in the Great Thousand World. The coins contained Spiritual Aura could also be directly absorbed. Thus, it was a hard currency within the entire Great Thousand Worlds.

“Spirit Coins would barely be considered suitable. However, they aren’t

the thing that the people here need the most." Ye Qingling's slender finger pointed at the dark golden symbol on Mu Chen's forehead and spoke: "This is the hard currency within the Northern Heavens World. If you want to exchange for anything, you must hand over a satisfactory amount of Spiritual Aura from your symbol..."

Mu Chen felt quite strange. He had never expected that the symbol would have such an effect at this location. However, once he thought about it, Spirit Coins were truly useless to the people here. As for the Spiritual Aura within their symbols, it could help the sellers to quickly increase their symbol's ranks and allow them to escape the tragic fate of being eliminated.

"Moreover, this is also a location where we could gather various types of information. We could inquire about any traces of Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts. Shall we go?" Ye Qingling smiled at Mu Chen.

"Okay."

Mu Chen was quite interested in this place and immediately nodded his head.

Seeing this, Ye Qingling quickly issued orders for the Ye Clan set up camp at this location. Then, she brought a handful of men including a curious Sun'Er, Mu Chen and Mo Ling down the mountain slope as they headed towards the bustling trading area.

As they approached the trading ground, passionate voices rang out. The bustling sounds made Mu Chen feel like he was back in the Great Thousand Worlds.

At this location, nobody had the right to occupy a particular space. Therefore, there was no force that would specially maintain order. However, one would be greatly mistaken if one believed that they could ignore the rules here. This place contained numerous individuals belonging to different forces. Once someone broke the rules here, they would become the enemy of countless forces. Thus, only an idiot would act so foolishly.

Mu Chen and the others slowly walked down a path towards the trading

ground. Their view gradually widened, and they saw what the trading ground was like.

Within the trading ground, there were many tents sent up. Outside of the tents, neatly cut boulders were placed. On the surface of the smooth boulder, a faint Spiritual Energy was emitted. Various items would appear on the boulders.

“Demon Destruction Sword Technique. A Spiritual Tier Low Rank Attack Spiritual Art. You only need to pay a Rank 3 Symbol’s Spiritual Aura to take it away, don’t miss this amazing opportunity!

“Earth Spirits. Spiritual Tier Low Rank Gong Fa Spiritual Art. Requires a Rank 4 Symbol’s Spiritual Aura, who would like to see it?”

“Ghastly Spirit Sword. Low Rank Spiritual Artifact. It only requires a Rank 5 Symbol’s Spiritual Aura!”

As Mu Chen and the others walked around the trading ground, many strange cries came from all directions. This made numerous people chuckle. Perhaps such weird cries and requests would only be heard within the Northern Heavens World.

Mu Chen’s gaze swept across the surrounding stone tables. Numerous items on the table were considered precious and rare. If it was placed within the Northern Spiritual Realm, it was enough for people to consider stealing them. If it’s the price, it would be at least 100 000 Spirit Coins. However, it was evident that it was a lot cheaper here.

Mu Chen walked together with Ye Qingling and the others for half an hour before separating with them. The little girl, Sun’Er, was busy enjoying the bustling environment and wanted her sister to take her shopping. Thus, Mu Chen started to wander around by himself.

Although he had seen many decent items along the way, Mu Chen did not see anything that truly tempted his heart. This made him quite disappointed, but just when he was planning to leave, a shout rang out from nearby, which made him stop.

“Motherf*cker. Who the hell are you planning on tricking? You want to

use a broken Diagram Array to exchange for a Rank 6 Symbol's Spiritual Aura?"

"Diagram Array?"

Mu Chen's heart trembled. He immediately gazed over and noticed a boy who stood on a stone table as he was cursing at another boy, who was dressed in a grey outfit, in the corner. The boy, who was being cursed, had his eyes shut as he curled his lips while ignoring the other boy.

Seeing that the grey outfit boy disregard him, the boy lost interest and departed with a cold grunt.

At this moment, Mu Chen also arrived in front of the stone table. He stared at the place in front of the boy dressed in grey. There was a black iron box and a dark golden scroll was within it. A faint Spiritual Energy fluctuation was given off by the scroll.

"What rank is your Diagram Array?" Mu Chen asked with great interest.

Once the boy dressed in grey heard a person asking him a question, he lazily opened his eyes. He glanced at Mu Chen and his eyes lit up once he noticed the Rank 6 Symbol on Mu Chen's forehead. His eyes immediately turned eager and he hurriedly replied: "This is a Rank 2 Diagram Array. However, you should not underestimate it. If you want to arrange this array, it would require at least 40 Spiritual Seals. The power of this array is something that even a Spirit Stage Middle Phase could not endure.

"40 Spiritual Seals?" Mu Chen was surprised. It was quite rare to see a Rank 2 Spiritual Array that required this many Spiritual Seals. After all, only a few outstanding Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master could, barely, reach this requirement.

For example, the Golden Revolution Soulreaver that his father had found only required 30 Spiritual Seals. But the power from this array could instantly defeat a Spirit Stage Spiritual Beast as well as wound two other Spiritual Beasts.

"Are you also a Spiritual Array Master?" Mu Chen glanced at the boy dressed in grey and asked.

Hearing this question, the boy dressed in grey nodded with a hollow laugh.

"A Diagram Array is extremely important to Spiritual Array Masters, right? You would actually be willing to sell it?" Mu Chen inquired.

"I am currently only a Rank 1 Spiritual Array Master. Who knows how long will it take before I reach the 40 Spiritual Seals requirement? It's questionable weather I can reach the Rank 4 Symbol. So why shouldn't I use it to exchange for my Symbol's Spiritual Aura? Once I enter the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy to cultivate myself, I wouldn't care about not having a Diagram Array." The boy dressed in grey was quite open to the situation as he replied.

Mu Chen smiled. That was true. If he was to be eliminated because his symbol did not reach Rank 4, it was evident that this loss was incomparable to a Rank 2 Diagram Array.

"What's the price?" Mu Chen did not hide the fact that he has great interest to the scroll.

"Rank 6 Symbol's Spiritual Aura. I won't lower the price. This is something that I spent great efforts in order to steal from my father. If you're willing, then buy it. If not, then you should just forget about it." The boy replied firmly.

"Can I inspect the item?" Mu Chen thought for a moment and asked.

"That's fine." The boy replied without any hesitation. He was also a Spiritual Array Master. Thus, he knew how complex that this Diagram Array was. If one wanted to master it, it would require a long time spent researching and studying it. An existence that could understand a complex Diagram Array in a glimpse did not exist at all.

Mu Chen's hand cradled the dark golden scroll within the box, and he slowly unrolled the scroll.

Roar!

Once the scroll opened up, a dark-golden light emerged. It felt like a dragon and elephant's roar had entered Mu Chen's ears. On the scroll,

numerous complex lights flashed as if a dragon and elephant were entrenched in it.

As the golden gradually dimmed, three ancient characters emerged.

“Dragon Elephant Array.”

Mu Chen softly muttered these words. Then, he was drawn in by this Diagram Array. A hint of delight soon emerged within his black eyes. This Diagram Array seemed to be quite powerful and he was quite satisfied with it.

“I’ll take it.” Mu Chen raised his head and smiled at the boy, who had his sights fixed on him.

“Haha, brother, you sure are straightforward.” The boy dressed in grey was immediately overjoyed once he heard these words. Then, the red symbol on his forehead darkened. The Spiritual Aura at that location was temporarily suppressed to the appearance of a Rank 1.

The dark golden symbol on Mu Chen’s forehead flashed and a golden light flew out into the other boy’s forehead. The latter’s darkened symbol immediately became a dazzling gold. It was the mark of a Rank 6 Symbol.

“Cool. Right now, I am also a Rank 6 Symbol expert.” The boy in grey touched his forehead happily. Then, he quickly picked up a cloth and tied his forehead in order to hide his symbol.

Mu Chen held onto the Diagram Array and touched his dark and dim symbol. He could not help but shake his head. The accumulated Spiritual Aura had completely disappeared. If the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was to end the competition now, he would be instantly eliminated.

Mu Chen placed the Diagram Array within his Mustard Seed Bracelet and ignored the boy, who was happily closing his shop,as he walked away. He did not have any plans on looking at the other shops anymore as he was completely broke.

Just when Mu Chen intended to find Ye Qingling and the others, he felt a commotion appear from within the trading ground. In the distance, the

heavily packed crowds had split apart.

Mu Chen's eyes narrowed as he stared at that location. He could vaguely hear a few voices.

"Isn't the boss of the Chu Clan? It's said that the Chu Clan is one of the most powerful forces within this region..."

"He rarely comes here. I wonder what actually brought him over here this time."

As the crowd split apart, a burly figure slowly walked out from it steadily. As he walked, it felt as if the ground was trembling. Thus, nobody dared to underestimate him.

Mu Chen glanced at the figure and intended to avoid him.

However, the figure headed straight towards him. Under numerous surprised gazes, he appeared in front of Mu Chen.

Mu Chen frowned as he stared at the unfamiliar figure that had stopped in front of him. The latter's gaze had made him feel a bit uncomfortable. Moreover, he was quite certain that he had never seen this person before.

"Are you finding me for something?" Mu Chen asked calmly.

"You're Mu Chen, right?"

The burly figure stared at Mu Chen with a faint smile.

"I'm Chu Qi. I want to ask you to do me a favor."

Mu Chen's black eyes remained fixed on Chu Qi's face. However, he did not answer him.

Chu Qi stared at Mu Chen and slowly spoke: "I hope that you will not appear in front of Luo Li."

Chapter 131: Chu Qi

"I hope that you will never appear in front of Luo Li again."

When these words entered Mu Chen's ear, his twinkling eyes started to focus. He stared at this person named Chu Qi and lifted up the corner of his lips: "Are you Luo Li's suitor? Based on your appearance, you're someone that came out of the Spiritual Road, right?"

Mu Chen smiled as he continued: "Since you're from the Spiritual Road, you should more or less know about me. That being said, I do not care how much you like Luo Li. Not even Ji Xuan is qualified to say such words in front of me, so who do you think you are?"

Chu Qi stared at Mu Chen and slowly replied: "Ji Xuan is indeed formidable. However, even if it was him, I would still say the same words. Also, your reputation might have been great within the Spiritual Road, but I believe that you do not understand the current reality right now."

"This place isn't the Spiritual Road, and you are no longer the Blood Calamity Mu Chen. You're just a person, who had recently advanced into the Spirit Stage. With your strength only at this level, it is enough to make me believe that you do not deserve her. At the same time, it gives me a bit of confidence."

Chu Qi had a serious expression as he continued to talk: "She's quite outstanding, so there are many people that like her. In the future, it's highly likely that something similar with happen again. But since she likes you, I do not hope to see others defeat you. If it's going to happen, it might as well be me who does it."

"You truly are quite narrow-minded."Mu Chen glanced at Chu Qi for a moment and immediately inquired: "Have you met Luo Li before?"

"She saved me once in the Spiritual Road. Thus, I spent a bit of time with her," Chu Qi replied.

"I can guess that during the so-called 'time' you spent with her, she always ignored you, right?" Mu Chen could not help but smile. With his

understanding of Luo Li, he knew it was common for Luo Li to ignore the people beside her.

Chu Qi's expression froze and turned quite unnatural. This is because Mu Chen was correct. After Luo Li had saved him, she had never talked with him again. She would do her own things such as cultivating, hunting and resting by herself. It was as if she had completely forgotten about the people beside her.

But because of such acts, Chu Qi liked her even more. In the short period of time he was with her, he essentially experienced the best time of his life. But on the day that he had to separate from her, he could not resist and told her that he liked her. But the girl with crystal-like eyes stared at him strangely and finally said a single phrase to him.

"I like Mu Chen. I hope that you will not chase after me."

After saying this, she left. The only thing left behind was a completely stunned Chu Qi.

Chu Qi's face changed slightly as he stared at Mu Chen's slightly smiling handsome face. A hint of jealousy emerged from within his heart. How could he, Mu Chen, make her, who would ignore everything aside from cultivation, pay attention to him?

Chu Qi had sensed a hint of softness appear on Luo Li's exquisite face as she muttered Mu Chen's name.

"I did not think much about it. Besides, if you truly possessed the strength that matched your reputation within the Spiritual Road, perhaps, I would not have looked for you. Unfortunately, the current you seems quite weak."Chu Qi continued slowly: "Therefore, I do not believe you are qualified to be beside her."

This person was somewhat stubborn and had a low emotional intelligence.

Mu Chen frowned as he asked: "Then what do you want to do about it?"

"Fight with me. If you lose, you will not appear in front of her again. She is too outstanding for the likes of you. Thus, similar things will just

continue to appear. If you are too weak and get trampled on and defeated by others, it would only make her sad. Since it's like this, it's best to eliminate this possibility as soon as possible." Chu Qi answered.

"You truly believe that you would have a chance with her if this happens?" Mu Chen inquired.

"No..." Chu Qi shook his head and said: "I just don't want to see her sad expression because the person she likes was too weak and was defeated by others."

Mu Chen's had a strange expression. This guy is truly making him unable to respond.

"I'm not interesting in proving anything to you." Mu Chen walked past Chu Qi and paused suddenly: "However, I will not let anyone hurt her. No matter who it is."

Chu Qi frowned: "With your current strength, you are just overconfident by saying such words."

Mu Chen sighed helplessly and stopped talking. Then, he walked away.

"Bang!"

A dense Spiritual Energy fluctuation suddenly emerged from behind. This instantly shocked everybody within the trading ground. Numerous gazes were projected over as they stared at Chu Qi, whose Spiritual Energy was surging out.

Chu Qi took a step forward and the ground trembled. Then, a punch was fired out by him. Cracks actually burst open on the ground as the winds from the punch flew out like lightning towards Mu Chen.

Mu Chen turned his body around, and a dark-black Spiritual Energy also surged out from his palm. His palm immediately smashed towards the approaching gale.

Boom!

Spiritual Energy shockwaves erupted out and caused the surrounding grounds to crack open. The ones that were nearby were forcibly blown

away.

"You shouldn't go too far." Mu Chen's black eyes gradually turned cold. He stared at Chu Qi as he frowned.

"How cowardly. You currently do not possess even half of the courage that you had when you were the Blood Calamity Mu Chen."

Chu Qi immediately moved and turned into a figure of light as he rushed to a mountain outside of the trading ground. A rumbling cry filled with Spiritual Energy emitted out in midair: "Mu Chen. Show me your true strength. If you walk away now, I will not stop you. However, I do not believe that a person that is liked by King Luo, Luo Li, would be a coward!"

WAHH.

In the trading ground, a commotion rang out. Numerous individuals turned their attention towards the slender boy in the trading ground. Is he the recently discussed figure, the Blood Calamity Mu Chen?

He's Mu Chen?

At this location, there were also a few people who came out of the Spiritual Road. At this moment, their gazes sharpened as they stared in fear at the boy, who had caused a calamity within the Spiritual Road.

Mu Chen stared at Chu Qi, who was on top of the mountain. His face turned slightly cold. This person was truly annoying and this made him quite furious.

"Mu Chen!"

Not far away, Ye Qingling's voice rang out. She brought Sun'Er as she hurried over with a worried expression. It was evident that she had recognized Chu Qi. After all, the latter was quite a celebrity in this region.

"Be careful." Ye Qingling spoke. She heard Chu Qi's voice from earlier and, thus, she knew the purpose of this challenge. With Mu Chen's personality, she knew that he would not run away from the challenge.

Mu Chen nodded towards the two girls before he charged out of the trading ground and appeared on a mountain opposite of Chu Qi. Although

he did not hold any grudges towards Chu Qi, the latter had come searching for him. If he was to walk away, it would cause others to believe that he, Mu Chen, was afraid of Chu Qi.

Moreover, what Chu Qi said was correct. Luo Li was indeed quite outstanding. The amount of people that liked her would definitely increase. In order to stop troubling matters like this current one from appearing again, there was only one method. He could only show the others a strength that they would fear.

Chu Qi should be someone at the Spirit Stage Middle Phase. He wasn't considered weak. Compared to Ge Hai, he was definitely a lot more powerful. Perhaps, that was the confidence that he had when he came seeking for him.

But Mu Chen would make him understand that he, Chu Qi, wasn't as strong as he believed.

On a mountain slope near the trading ground, a group of figures was watching the face-off between the two individuals.

"Chu Qi really made his move." The person leading the group was a handsome boy. He watched this scene helplessly as he spoke.

"So that's Mu Chen? A Spirit Stage Initial Phase? Although that's quite amazing, he's still far from boss, right?" A person behind the handsome boy spoke.

The handsome boy let out a faint smile as he stared at the slender figure. His gaze was quite complicated and he spoke: "If his cultivation hadn't been delayed because of the Spiritual Road...Coupled with the fact that he was kicked out of the Spiritual Road midway and lost access to the Spiritual Energy Empowerment, he would probably be at the same level as Ji Xuan and Yang Hong, the people who stood at the peak of the Spiritual Road..."

Everybody that heard these words immediately clicked their tongue. Mu Chen was actually this powerful?

"However, there aren't that many 'ifs' in this world. Just as Chu Qi has

said, Mu Chen is currently only at the Spirit Stage Initial Phase. This strength does not match his reputation from the Spiritual Road." The handsome boy slowly responded.

"At the very least, Chu Qi should be able to suppress him now."

The handsome boy stared at the two individuals confronting each other. Chu Qi wanted to defeat Mu Chen to make the latter realize that he was not good enough for Luo Li. At the same time, he could be planning on using Mu Chen to boost his fame. Recently, the matters regarding Mu Chen had been discussed a lot. Perhaps, many people, who came from the Spiritual Road, were planning on making their moves. Mu Chen's reputation was too dazzling. However, he currently did not have the strength to match that fame. Therefore, it was the perfect opportunity to step on him.

To be able to step on a person, who was highly looked up to in the past, would always give one pleasure.

With Mu Chen's personality, it was apparent that he hated endless streams of challenges. Therefore, Chu Qi was an excellent opponent for him. He could rely on this opportunity to send a warning to the others and make other realize that he, Mu Chen, was still the same Mu Chen from before. It did not matter whether he was kicked out of the Spiritual Road in the middle, nor did it matter that his cultivation had been delayed for a year. He was still an existence that the people who stood at the peak, should fear.

Both of them had their own purposes for this fight. But it was up to them to determine who would be the one to achieve it.

The handsome boy felt the increasingly tense atmosphere and slowly exhaled. This battle was important to the both of them.

Chapter 132: Eyed Golden Crystal Beast??

The atmosphere outside of the trading ground instantly lit up like a fire. Within the surrounding forests, the numerous sounds could be heard of wind breaking, as countless figures landed within it. Every single one of these individuals started staring at the two figures who were confronting each other on nearby mountains.

Among the people that had gathered, there were many individuals that weren't familiar with Mu Chen. However, they knew the person on the other side, Chu Qi, pretty well. In this region, the Chu Clan was considered to be one of the strongest forces. Moreover, Chu Qi's name was well-known by everyone.

The confrontation between these two men was undoubtedly attractive to everyone.

"At least you have some guts." Chu Qi stared at Mu Chen as he slowly spoke.

"A mere Spirit Stage Middle Phase isn't someone I fear." Mu Chen smiled. Although Mu Chen had only advanced to the Spirit Stage recently, he wasn't someone that could be underestimated.

"I hope that your tone matches your strength. I won't believe that the person she likes would be that weak either."

Chu Qi slowly clenched his hands, and a deep-yellow Spiritual Energy rushed out of his body like a tempest. The Spiritual Energy that he had cultivated gave off a feeling like it was as heavy as the earth.

"I will not hold back at all!"

Chu Qi shouted out suddenly. His soles stepped heavily on the ground and the entire mountain trembled at this moment. Then, his body descended towards Mu Chen like a meteorite.

"Meteorite Wave!"

While Chu Qi was in midair, a deep-yellow Spiritual Energy gathered on the surface of his fists. In a few seconds, it had formed into a small

meteorite that was falling from the sky.

Humm.

A sharp sound of breaking winds resounded throughout the area. The formidable air pressure emitted from the meteorite forcibly blew away the trees below. Even the earth started to show signs of a collapse.

Even though the battle had just started, Chu Qi had already used one of his ultimate moves. It was evident that he had no intentions of warming-up. He just wanted to defeat Mu Chen as soon as possible!

Mu Chen raised his head slightly and stared at the powerful attack from above that was about to bombard him. However, his face remained the same as he clenched his hands. Three dark light seals flashed and appeared on the surface of Mu Chen's fist.

A punch was blasted out! The three Limitless Death Seals suddenly erupted outwards with a brilliant black light, formed into a line, and emitted a such a domineering Spiritual Energy fluctuation, that it caused the very air around it to become distorted.

Bang Bang Bang!

Just before making contact with Chu Qi's attack, the three Limitless Death Seals suddenly exploded. Then, layers of black fluctuations were emitted from the explosion like overlapping waves.

Fireworks blossomed as the black and yellow light collided with each other in midair. A visible Spiritual Energy shockwave spread out and uprooted the trees on the mountain top that had stood within its wake .

Smoke started to rise.

In the sky, Chu Qi had taken two steps back. He stared at Mu Chen, who was on the peak of a mountain, and frowned. He did not attempt to test Mu Chen out during the previous attack. Thus, he was surprised that Mu Chen had been able to withstand it head-on.

"Boom!"

As the smoke cleared itself, a rumbling echo could be heard from within

the dust. A light array emerged, and a furious lightning dragon issued out a roar. It torn through the air as it headed directly towards Chu Qi.

"A Spiritual Array?!"

This special Spiritual Energy fluctuation instantly startled Chu Qi. However, his eyes flashed, and he actually decided not to avoid it. Instead, he took a step forward and clenched his fists. The clothes on his arms instantly shattered as his veins began to pulse like a dragon. Then, he immediately fired out a punch.

Boom!

The air exploded due to the mighty punch from Chu Qi. As the violent Spiritual Energy emerged, the winds created by his fists directly shot towards the furious lightning dragon. With outstanding strength, he directly destroyed the beast with one attack.

"I never expected that you were a Spiritual Array Master. However, this kind of Spiritual Array is useless against me." Chu Qi landed on a cliff as he stared at the place where Mu Chen stood.

"Is that so? Then, I'll give you one that's even more powerful!"

Within the dusty clouds, sounds of laughter rang out. Then, another powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuation surged out from within the clouds. The dusty cloud was blown away, and the scene within was revealed.

At that location, a brilliant golden Spiritual Array had already formed above Mu Chen's slender body. An extremely fierce Spiritual Energy fluctuation was slowly emanating from it. It caused numerous marks to appear on the nearby ground.

"This is a Rank 2 Spiritual Array?"

The people watching the battle were stunned. A commotion broke out immediately. This Mu Chen was actually a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master as well?

"Golden Revolution Soulreaver Array!"

The golden wheel was extremely fast; many people could only see the

golden light with their eyes, and faint traces that were left in the sky as the air was ripped apart.

Only the Spirit Stage powerhouses were able to observe it carefully. However, their expressions instantly became serious. The golden wheel was too fierce. If it directly hits, even a Spirit Stage Initial Phase powerhouse would be instantly killed.

Once these two men started fighting, they were truly quite ferocious.

The golden light rapidly enlarged itself in Chu Qi's eyes. Facing the fierce and matchless winds Chu Qi became serious. By now, he finally knew why Mu Chen had not put him in his eyes. He was actually hiding his identity of a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master underneath the veil of a Spirit Stage Initial Phase.

But, although this measure was quite powerful, it wasn't enough for Chu Qi to admit his own defeat!

Boom!

Dense Spiritual Energy erupted out from Chu Qi's body. His eyes actually emitted jaded color at this moment. Then, a growling sound rang out from his mouth as he took a step forward.

The faint and massive shadow of a Spiritual Beast appeared as Spiritual Energy lights gathered behind Chu Qi's back.

The Spiritual Beast was completely golden. It was as if its body was covered in a golden crystal armor. It even had a pair of majestic jaded eyes, which made the whole scene an impressive display of power.

"Is that the Jaded-Eyed Golden Crystal Beast? Ranked as the 99th on the Myriad Beast Record's Earth Ranking. It is among of the best of the best and comparable to a Low-Level Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast!"

"So this is the Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence that Chu Qi has ingested? It's definitely amazing!"

As the shadow of a Spiritual Beast emerged behind Chu Qi, Chu Qi let out another growl. He clenched his hands tightly together and fired off a

punch. As winds were created by his fist, the Jaded-Eyed Golden Crystal Beast roared and fired a golden hoof out as well.

A brilliant, golden light shone as the winds, which were created from Chu Qi's fist, fused with the golden hoof. The fluctuations surging out exponentially increased because of this.

"Clang!"

The winds created by Chu Qi's fist were colored with a monstrous golden light as it collided forcibly with the golden wheel. Sounds of metal colliding with each other could be heard. Then, a golden light wave surged out and spread out into the distance.

"Shatter!"

Chu Qi yelled. Golden light instantly resurfaced on his arm and the Jaded-Eyed Golden Crystal Beast also let out a roar towards the sky.

Clang!

Another punch from Chu Qi fiercely bombarded the golden wheel. A terrifying power poured out and finally cracks were appearing on the golden wheel. In the end, the golden wheel was forcibly destroyed underneath numerous gazes.

"Amazing!"

Many individuals secretly inhaled a mouthful of cold air. Chu Qi was definitely powerful. He actually shattered the golden wheel that could have instantly killed a Spirit Stage Initial Phase powerhouse. Even for Spirit Stage Middle Phase experts, this sort of strength could be considered among best of the best.

"Sister Ye, will Brother Mu be fine?" Mo Ling instantly became worried when he noticed how formidable Chu Qi was. This person was many times more powerful than someone like Ge Hai.

Ye Qingling also had a serious expression. She had witnessed how powerful Mu Chen's Spiritual Array was. A couple of days ago, this very same Spiritual Array had instantly killed a Spirit Stage Initial Phase

Spiritual Beast with a powerful defense. In addition, it had severely injured two other Spiritual Beasts. This sort of power was something that even a Spirit Stage Middle Phase would have to avoid. Who would have expected that Chu Qi would be this ferocious and directly destroy it head-on?

"He actually made Chu Qi utilize the power of the Jaded-Eyed Golden Crystal Beast this quickly..." From a nearby mountain slope, a handsome boy muttered to himself with a serious expression.

"Mu Chen. In order to defeat you, I'll use my strongest power. This is my respect to you!"

In the sky, Chu Qi's jaded eyes stared sharply at Mu Chen. He immediately took a step forward, and the Jaded-Eyed Golden Crystal Beast growled. Golden light gathered at both of his arms at an astonishing speed. At this moment, the Spiritual Aura within the world seemed to tremble.

"Golden Crystal Godfist!"

Chu Qi's muffled roar resounded throughout the area. With a sluggish speed, he clenched his fists tightly together and fired off another two punches. In the instant he let out these two punches, a golden sun formed underneath his fists. The dazzling light emitting from the sun had actually covered the entire sky and caused countless eyes to sting.

"Boom!"

Chu Qi's body trembled violently, and his face turned slightly pale. Then, a golden sun, accompanied with the Jaded-Eyed Golden Crystal Beast's roar, descended down towards Mu Chen.

Boom!

Due to the golden sun, the air began to vibrate. The mountain, which Mu Chen was standing on, also started to tremble violently and numerous boulders began to fall.

Mu Chen lifted his head, and his black eyes stared at the golden sun falling down. His gaze turned solemn when he noticed the powerful energy within the golden sun. Chu Qi's strength was quite outstanding

within the Spirit Stage Middle Phase.

"Hu."

White air was slowly exhaled from Mu Chen's mouth. A tinge of coldness appeared within his black eyes. He knew that many people were targeting him recently, and Chu Qi was the very first one that made his move.

In order to get rid of this endless streams of trouble, he needed to show his strength to the world.

He had to let everybody know...Even if he was kicked out of the Spiritual Road midway...Even if he had not obtained the Spiritual Road Empowerment, he was still the Mu Chen from back then!

Mu Chen slowly loosened his fist. A faint golden light appeared on the center of his palm. Then, a golden light beam gathered and formed into a golden pagoda engraving.

Mu Chen's eyes turned sharp as he charged towards the sky. The golden pagoda engraving, that was on the center of his palm seemed to come alive at this moment.

It was as if the golden pagoda had emerged just to suppress everything in the world.

Chapter 133: Vajra Pagoda

Boom!

As Mu Chen charged at the attack, a golden light erupted from his palms. Then, a mysterious engraving of a golden tower started to form in his palm, and a bizarre fluctuation emerged.

“Vajra Pagoda!”

At this moment, the Spiritual Energy within Mu Chen’s body seemed to have completely activated itself . The golden light flashing within his hand had instantly turned even more dazzling, giving off the appearance that it was constructed from pure gold.

As Mu Chen took flight into the air, he shot off a palm fiercely. In that instant, golden light surged through the sky, and an enormous golden hand emerged. A clear, golden tower engraving could be seen on the massive golden hand.

Bang!

The golden hand was fired off majestically and, under numerous gazes, it smashed heavily into the golden sun that was descending down towards it.

Dong!

The two powerful attacks collided fiercely with each other, and golden waves spread out furiously from the sky, causing numerous bursts of gales.

“Suppress this for me!”

Within Mu Chen’s eyes, a golden light seemed to glow. He clenched his hands tightly, and a cold cry resounded throughout the sky.

Bang!

As Mu Chen’s voice faded away, the golden tower engraving on the golden hand instantly lit up. As the engraving moved, it seemed to have formed into a true golden pagoda and attempted to suppress the golden sun.

Under the cover of the golden hand, the powerful golden sun, that was formed by Chu Qi's Spiritual Energy, rapidly darkened. It was as if it was truly suppressed by the pagoda.

At this moment, Chu Qi's expression finally changed. The golden tower engraving on the golden palm was too bizarre. He lost connection with every part of the golden sun that was covered by the golden hand. Moreover, the sun was constantly being weakened.

"What sort of attack is this? Isn't this a little too weird!?"

Chu Qi's eyes jumped. He never thought that his strongest attack would have been stopped as well.

"Boom!"

As the golden hand descended completely onto the golden sun, the golden sun darkened and began to dissipate. Seeing this, Mu Chen's eyes flashed. His hands changed, and the golden hand erupted out again. As it flashed with dazzling light, it appeared on top of Chu Qi and smacked down.

"Roar!"

Behind Chu Qi, the Jaded-Eyed Golden Crystal Beast roared towards the sky as if it had detected danger approaching it. At this moment, Chu Qi hurriedly lifted his head and gritted his teeth. Spiritual Energy erupted out from his body, and a violent wind was created as his fist bombarded towards the golden palm.

Bang!

Against the fierce attack from Chu Qi, the golden palm seemed to be like a mountain within a storm and remained unmoving. The terrifying golden palm seemed to have suppressed the air and shattered the fierce winds created from Chu Qi's palm. In the end, many people witnessed a scene where the palm was smashing directly against Chu Qi's body.

Dong!

A muffled sound resounded within the sky. Golden shockwaves spread

out, and Chu Qi fell down almost instantaneously. Blood oozed out of his body and left a long trail as he fell.

Chu Qi's body created an enormous crater on the ground, and he spat out another mouthful of blood. His face was extremely pale and the Spiritual Energy that should have been circulating within his body had completely vanished.

The region instantly became silent. Anyone who did not know about Mu Chen before inhaled mouthfuls of cold air. It was evident from the look on their faces that they felt horror from this scene. After all, Chu Qi was a powerhouse at the Spirit Stage Middle Phase level. Moreover, he had ingested the Soul Essence of a Jaded-Eyed Golden Crystal Beast. With his abilities, there were barely any opponents for him in the Spirit Stage Middle Phase. However, right now, just in front of them, Chu Qi was defeated by Mu Chen, who was only at the Spirit Stage Initial Phase...

There were also a few people here that came from the Spiritual Road. It was apparent that their strengths were much more powerful than the other individuals. When they watched this scene occur in front of their eyes, they managed to remain calm. However, their eyes shone, and a quiet fear ran trembling within their hearts.

They originally wanted to take advantage of Mu Chen's weak strength and trample over him. Then, by using his reputation, they would be able to increase their own fame. But this scene made them gradually realize that the boy in front of them...Although he had lost the Spiritual Road's Empowerment, was still Mu Chen, that Mu Chen, that they feared. He was able to stand out within the Spiritual Road. Thus, even in the Great Thousand World, he was outstanding as well. He would ultimately reach the same level as the ones that stood at the peak of cultivation and shine with a dazzling light that solely belonged to him.

"Brother Mu is truly impressive."

Mo Ling and the others stared at this scene with surprise. Their eyes were filled with worship as they watched the conclusion of the fight.

Ye Qingling also gently let out a sigh of relief. She stared at the boy that

slowly descended from the sky. At this moment, this boy had turned into an exceptionally dazzling existence. Although she had never met Mu Chen before in the Spiritual Road, his name has long been known to people.

Thinking about it, the current Mu Chen might be as dazzling as he was initially when he was within the Spiritual Road.

The person that King Luo, Luo Li, likes, is truly extraordinary.

Under numerous gazes, Mu Chen landed near Chu Qi. His black eyes were slightly cold as he stared at the Chu Qi, who was completely pale. This person truly had a bit of skill. If it wasn't for the fact that he had advanced to the Spirit Stage and obtained the mysterious Spiritual Art, Vajra Pagoda, it would have been difficult for him to defeat him today.

"It's your win." Chu Qi wiped the blood from his mouth and he stared complicatedly at Mu Chen. He originally thought that it would be a piece of cake for him to defeat Mu Chen using his strength as a Spirit Stage Middle Phase coupled with the power of the Soul Essence that he had ingested. But his expectations were completely off from the final result.

To make Ji Xuan, Yang Hong and the others fear him within the Spiritual Road, Mu Chen truly had something that made him impressive. Even without the Spiritual Road's Empowerment, he was not someone that an ordinary person could shake.

A purple golden light suddenly lit up on Chu Qi's forehead and it shot off towards Mu Chen. Chu Qi said faintly: "This is the price I'll pay. Take it."

"A Rank 7 Symbol..." When the surrounding individuals noticed the purple golden symbol, they could not help but speak out. This symbol was considered to be at the pinnacle in this region. They did not know how many Spiritual Beasts Chu Qi had hunted in order to increase his symbol to this level. But unfortunately, he had lost everything with just one battle.

However, they did not react strangely when Chu Qi handed over his Symbol. After all, this situation occurs too often. Once the challenger lost, they would hand over the symbol to the victor.

Mu Chen waved his hand and the purple golden light floated on the center of his palm. He glanced at it faintly, but he did not reply back to Chu Qi.

Swish.

Sounds of winds breaking resounded suddenly nearby. A dozen figures quickly rushed over and landed beside Chu Qi as they lifted him up.

"Ohoho, Brother Mu. It was Chu Qi's mistake this time. This symbol will be the price that he'll pay. I hope that you would not care too much about it." The handsome boy smiled at Mu Chen as he cupped his hands.

The surrounding men also had a complicated expression plastered on their face. It was the first time that they've seen Chu Qi in such a helpless position.

However, Mu Chen continued to fiddle around with the purple golden light and remained silent.

At this moment, Ye Qingling and the others also rushed over to Mu Chen's side. They stared vigilantly at the men from the Chu Clan.

"Brother Mu..." Seeing this, the handsome boy thought that Mu Chen would refuse to let them go. His smile instantly stiffened.

"Take it back."

Mu Chen glanced at him for a moment and flicked his fingers. He sent the purple golden light back towards Chu Qi. At this moment, the latter was completely stunned. A Rank 7 Symbol was something that took a large amount of efforts from him. He believed that it would be tempting to anyone, thus, he never thought that Mu Chen would return it back to him.

"I hold no grudges with you. Although a Rank 7 Symbol is nice, it isn't worth much to me." Mu Chen replied faintly. Although the symbol on his forehead had dimmed after he had bought the "Dragon Elephant Array", nobody would object to this. After all, it was easy for a powerful person to rapidly increase their symbol's rank.

Chu Qi had a complex expression as he absorbed the purple golden light

back into his symbol. He replied: “Thank you. The person she likes is truly outstanding.”

Once Mu Chen noticed Chu Qi’s expression of getting hurt in love, he could not help but curl his lips.

“Ohoho, thank you Brother Mu for being this generous. The Chu Clan will treat it as if we owe you a favor. If there is anything that you need us to do, feel free to ask us. We will definitely do our best to help you.” The handsome boy let out a sigh of relief once he noticed Mu Chen handing the symbol’s Spiritual Aura back to Chu Qi. He immediately cupped his hands again and smiled.

Mu Chen waved his hands and no longer wanted to talk with them. But just when he was about to turn away...

“Wait...” Ye Qingling suddenly grabbed onto Mu Chen’s arm, stared at the handsome boy and asked, “We have something that we want to trouble you about.”

“Feel free to say it.” The handsome boy was slightly startled.

“Recently, we’ve been searching for trails of Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts . Since there are so many people within the Chu Clan, you should have collected a variety of information. I wonder if you have any information regarding about this in particular?” Ye Qingling asked.

“Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts?” The handsome boy and Chu Qi exchanged gazes with each other. Both of them could see the surprise within their eyes. Mu Chen and the others were actually searching for Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts? Aren’t they acting too courageous?

“Boss...” From the rear, a person walked up to the two of them. He quietly muttered: “If it’s about Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts, we, indeed, have a bit of information about them. It’s over at the Valley of Ice...”

“Valley of Ice?” The handsome boy and Chu Qi’s expressions instantly turned solemn as if they recalled something.

A few days ago, someone within their group passed through a mysterious region and heard a shocking sound. In the cold and windy

environment, a massive creature seemed to have appeared. The pressure emitted out from it was not something that an ordinary, High Rank Spiritual Beast would possess.

"Brother Mu, why don't we find a place to talk about this?" The handsome boy exchanged gazes with each other. Then, he stared at Mu Chen and smiled.

Ye Qingling, who had only casually asked about this matter, had her eyes brighten up once she noticed the expression on Chu Qi's face. Beside her, Mu Chen was also quite surprised. Based on their expressions, they really had information regarding Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts?

It was indeed a pleasant surprise.

Chapter 134: Mysterious Spirithail Dragon

In the Ye Clan's camp, Mu Chen, Ye Qingling and Chu Qi were sitting together in the central tent.

"Brother Fang, can you tell us about the news you have gathered related to the Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts yet?" Mu Chen smiled as he stared at the handsome boy beside Chu Qi. After the previous conversation, he had come to know that the latter's name was Fang Zhong, and he had also participated in the Spiritual Road. Right now, he was also at the Spirit Stage Middle Phase. Since he was friends with Chu Qi, he had co-founded the Chu Clan with him.

Hearing this, Fang Zhong smiled and nodded his head. He had a good impression of Mu Chen as he did not show any arrogance even after he defeated Chu Qi. He pondered for a moment and said: "A week ago, we discovered a relatively unique region. Because the region is constantly covered by ice and snow, we call it the Valley of Ice."

While we were there, we discovered numerous precious worldly treasures. However, the strange thing was that there wasn't a single Spiritual Beast that stepped inside the region, nor were there any Spiritual Beasts that dared to seize these worldly treasures."

"Earlier, few of our men went inside to search. But just when they were planning on sneakily taking a few of the worldly treasures, a shocking sound rang out within the depths of the ice region. Then, they discovered a massive shadow of a beast that had hidden itself within the snow. But one thing is certain, the Spiritual Energy pressure emanating from it was not something that a High Rank Spiritual Beast could compare with."

Hearing this, Mu Chen was instantly lost in his own thoughts. He immediately asked: "Did you find out what Spiritual Beast it is?"

A Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast was too powerful. Even if it was the weakest of the Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts, it wasn't something that they could defeat. Therefore, they had to research it completely and figure out what Spiritual Beast it was and its respective rank on the Myriad Beast

Record's Earth Ranking before taking action.

"After this happened, our men drew a rough outline of what they had seen based on their memories." Fang Zhong exchanged glances with Chu Qi, and the latter pulled out a leather sheet, which he handed over to Mu Chen.

When Mu Chen received it, he immediately glanced at the leather sheet. On the surface of the paper, a simple outline of a massive figure hidden within the snow was drawn. From its appearance, it seemed like a giant serpent. However, the enormous wings behind it were completely unfolded as it summoned snow.

"Although the Spiritual Beasts that are ranked in the top 80s of the Myriad Beast Record have all entered the level of being a Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast, I do not believe that there is a Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast that is in the top 50s within the Northern Heavens World." Mu Chen slowly spoke. 1

Hearing this, Fang Zhong and the others nodded their head. If a Top 50 Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts was at its mature stage, they would be comparable to the Heavenly Transformation Stage or even Heavenly Completion Stage. Thus, it was probably impossible for the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy to control the situation if they had placed such a terrifying existence within this place.

"That being the case, we can only choose from the Spiritual Beasts that are between the 50th and 80th rank of the Myriad Beast Record. Among these Spiritual Beasts, there is only one that is shaped like a giant serpent, has wings and enjoys living in an arctic location."

Mu Chen pointed at the leather sheet and slowly muttered as he looked at Chu Qi and the others: "That is the Spiritual Beast that is ranked 73rd, the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon."

"Mysterious Spirithail Dragon." Chu Qi, Fang Zhong and Ye Qingling were all stunned.

Mysterious Spirithail Dragon. Born in arctic lands and possessing snowy wings since birth, it could summon snow and cause the lands to be in an

endless winter. It would shed its skin every 100 hundred years and every time it shed its skin, its strength would increase significantly. Once it had shed its skin three times, it would enter its mature stage and its strength would be comparable to a Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase powerhouse.

"Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase..."

Mu Chen smacked his lips. He truly hoped that the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon had not reached maturity yet. otherwise, it would be extremely difficult for them to succeed in killing it. Thinking about his past encounters, Mu Chen had borrowed the Nine Nether Bird's power and had only barely managed to deal with Liu Jingshan, who had only advanced into the Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase. If the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon had reached Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase, it would be impossible for him to kill it even if he borrowed Nine Nether Bird's power again.

"This Mysterious Spirithail Dragon probably isn't at its mature stage yet. Otherwise, it would have been impossible for our men to escape underneath that Spiritual Energy pressure." Fang Zhong mused.

Mu Chen nodded. He also believed that it was unlikely for the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon to be at its mature stage. Thus, he tilted his head towards Ye Qingling. It was quite a decent target for him.

"Ohoho, Brother Mu. From your appearance, are you planning on targeting the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon?" Fang Zhong smiled.

"I'm a bit interested in it." Mu Chen smiled and did not hide the interest he had about the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon.

"The Mysterious Spirithail Dragon is too powerful. You cannot defeat it." Chu Qi muttered deeply.

Since the majority of them were only at the Spirit Stage, how was it possible for them to defeat a Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast that was at the Heavenly Fusion Stage?

"It's true that we cannot defeat it with us alone." Mu Chen smiled and immediately asked: "But what if we include another 100 Spirit Stage

powerhouses?"

Fang Zhong and Chu Qi's expressions changed slightly.

"Within this current Northern Heavens World, there are many people. I believe that many of these people would be interested in a Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast. If we were to spread the news about the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon out, there should be many people who would flock over there."

"No matter how powerful a Mysterious Spirithail Dragon is, it would be powerless against that many individuals. Once that happens, we could take advantage of the crisis to seize the Soul Essence. That is our chance." Mu Chen said faintly.

"With that many individuals, it's would no longer be certain that you would be able to obtain the Soul Essence, even if we managed to defeat the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon." Fang Zhong replied slowly.

"But at least there's a chance, right?" Mu Chen smiled.

Fang Zhong and Chu Qi both turned silent. It was true. At least they would have a chance of success.

"Thank you both of you for telling me such important information." Mu Chen cupped his hands to the two of them. Without them bringing him the news about a Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast, it might have taken a bit of time before they managed to find one.

Fang Zhong and Chu Qi exchanged gazes with each other. The former suddenly let out a cough and smiled: "Brother Mu, we are also quite interested in your proposal. If it's possible, can you include us in this?"

"Regarding the Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence, we do not truly have a desire for it. After all, the two of us had already ingested a Soul Essence. Although we could ingest it once again, it is too troubling. Therefore, we would not plan on snatching this."

"However, there are many precious, worldly treasures within the Valley of Ice. If there's an opportunity, we would also like to obtain a few materials from the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon's body. After all, the

Mysterious Spirithail Dragon's body is an amazing material for creating Spiritual Artifacts. In the future, we might find a Spiritual Blacksmith to create a powerful Spiritual Artifact for us."

Hearing this, Mu Chen communicated with Ye Qingling using their gazes. Then, he smiled and nodded: "We eagerly welcome you. Since it's like this, let us cooperate once."

The information was brought over by Chu Qi and the others. Moreover, they weren't weak either. If they were to cooperate, it would definitely benefit them.

"What are you planning to do next, Brother Mu?" Seeing Mu Chen give them his approval, Fang Zhang and even Chu Qi smiled. A hint of eagerness filled their eyes. Although the two of them were quite mature, they were still young. Thus, they liked to do things that would stimulate them. A battle against a Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast was something that they were deeply interested in.

"My plan is actually quite simple. We will first take a group of people to the Valley of Ice to explore the terrain. At the same time, we will send a few men to spread information that a Mysterious Spirithail Dragon is within the Valley of Ice. I believe that the Valley of Ice would be quite bustling within two days. We would not need to guide the others and could just wait for the developments to occur. After all, there will definitely be someone who would be willing to be the first wave of attack." Mu Chen smiled.

Fang Zhong and Chu Qi nodded their heads. It was indeed true that there was no need of any special plans. After all, the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon was too powerful. Probably, there was nobody within the Northern Heavens World who could defeat it by themselves. In that case, they could only rely on numbers. As for who would obtain the Soul Essence, it would depend on their own abilities.

"Since it's like this, we will take our leave first. Tomorrow, I will bring our men over and we'll set out together." Fang Zhong and Chu Qi both stood up as they spoke.

Mu Chen nodded and watched as the two departed the tent.

"We should also begin our preparations. About this trip towards the Valley of Ice, we should only bring men who possess the strength of a Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase. Otherwise, it would be dangerous since others do not possess sufficient strength to protect themselves." Mu Chen said as he turned towards Ye Qingling.

Ye Qingling nodded and immediately headed out in order to secretly arrange her men.

On the other hand, Mu Chen stretched his waist slightly while a hint of interest emerged within his black eyes. Ohoho, Mysterious Spirithail Dragon. You are quite an excellent target. This time, you'll probably be tormented...

On the following day, Fang Zhong and Chu Qi arrived on time and brought approximately 30 men over. All of these men possessed the strength of a Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase. It was evident that they understood that it was not something that they could complete with just numbers.

The Ye Clan's strength wasn't something that could compare with the Chu Clan. They only had approximately a dozen Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase members, which wasn't even half of the Chu Clan. However, with Mu Chen leading them, the Chu Clan members did not dare to underestimate them.

Mu Chen discussed with Fang Zhong briefly. Then, he beckoned Mo Ling over and said: "After we depart, you should secretly spread the information out based on what I had said. Be careful to make sure that nobody finds out that we spread this information out deliberately."

"Brother Mu, relax." Mo Ling nodded his head. He was filled with regret as he could not follow Mu Chen and the others to meet a Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast. However, he understood that he would only drag them down if he went without sufficient strength.

Seeing this, Mu Chen said no more and exchanged glances with Fang Zhong. He waved his hand: "Let's go."

...

The Valley of Ice was located in a forest that was situated at the northwest of the interior of the Northern Heavens World. This place was far too remote. Thus, it was rare for individuals to head over there even if the Northern Heavens World was filled with people.

In order for Mu Chen and the others to arrive at this location, it took them an entire day. Numerous Spiritual Beasts would bother them along the way. Fortunately, the group was filled with experts. Thus, no causalities occurred even though their pace was slowed.

On the second day's afternoon, Mu Chen and the others gradually slowed down their pace. This is because they detected that the temperature was dropping at an alarming rate.

They exchanged gazes with each other and their spirits shook. It seemed that they weren't far away from their destination.

As the group entered a mountain, they looked around and were completely shocked. The originally lush forest had suddenly disappeared. Instead, what had replaced it was a world filled with snow. Cold snowflakes mixed with whistling winds descended on this world of ice. A cry rang out from from the air around them.

"So this is the Valley of Ice..."

Mu Chen stared at the world of ice that was hidden by the mountain and let out a sigh. Just when he was about to speak, an ancient, giant beast's roar rang out from the depths of the world of ice.

Bang!

At this moment, the snow descending was shaken and spread apart. An amazing chill emitted from the gap.

Mu Chen's body was like a boulder as he stood on the peak of the mountain. However, his eyes remained fixed on the depths of the world of ice. Under the blizzard, he could vaguely see a massive creature summoning snow.

Although there was still quite a bit of distance to the massive creature, its Spiritual Energy pressure had already spread all the way to this place.

Within Mu Chen's black eyes, a hint of passion surged. They had predicted it correctly. The massive creature that was hidden within the world of ice was indeed the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon, ranked 73rd on the Myriad Beast Record's Earth Rankings!

Chapter 135: Formation

On the top of the mountain, everybody could feel the Spiritual Energy pressure emitting from the depths of the frozen world. Their expressions shook a little bit, and a hint of eagerness surged within their eyes. They had indeed correctly identified their target.

Mu Chen gradually retracted his gaze from the frozen world and whispered, “Let’s go. We’ll sneak in. However, you shouldn’t touch any of the worldly treasures. We’ll find a place and wait until the area starts to get lively.”

“Yes.” Everybody immediately nodded once they heard this.

Upon seeing this, Mu Chen rushed out and charged into the frozen world, facing the blizzard. Behind him, dozens of figures followed quietly.

As they entered the depths of this World of Ice, Mu Chen and the others were gradually able to feel the chill of this world. Although the Spiritual Aura was quite abundant and numerous worldly treasures, there weren’t any traces of Spiritual Beasts. Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts all possessed an extremely strong respect of territorial rights. Thus, ordinary Spiritual Beasts would not dare to enter the territory that a Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts was occupying.

After Mu Chen and the others had quietly entered the World of Ice, they were able to clearly feel the formidable Spiritual Energy pressure as they approached the depths of this world. A tremendous roar rang out from the blizzard and would shake the world from time to time.

But against such a spectacle, Mu Chen was able to remain calm. After all, he had once experienced the terror of the Nine Nether Bird. The scene of black flames surging through the sky in order to fight against the heavens was deeply engraved in his mind.

Compared to the Nine Nether Bird, the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon was insignificant. This was because, even if the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon was in its mature stage, it was ultimately still only at the Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase. Even if it had experienced numerous good

fortunes and opportunities, it was impossible for it to enter the Myriad Beast Record's Heaven Ranking and step into the realms of a Divine Beast.

On the other hand, the Nine Nether Bird had the ability to do so. As long as it broke through the shackles of world, it would be able to shed its spiritual form and become a Divine Beast. It would then become a powerful existence within the entire Great Thousand World.

"Okay, we can't move forward anymore."

Mu Chen suddenly stopped and rushed into a hidden crack in the mountain. This crack was situated just in between two mountain peaks. Thus, they had a wide view of the outside world. If they looked outside, they would be able to see the depths of the World of Ice.

Once they arrived at this location, the pressure of the Spiritual Energy had also become increasingly powerful. If they were to head forward any further, it was likely that they would be discovered by the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon. With just the men they had here, they wouldn't be its opponent; thus they did not want to risk it.

Chu Qi, Ye Qingling and the others all nodded their heads. All of them were aware of the formidable Spiritual Energy pressure as well.

"Next up, we will wait until this location gets lively." Mu Chen lifted his head and stared at the depths of the World of Ice as he muttered.

At an unknown time, a rumor suddenly began to spread out within a region inside the Northern Heaven World's interior. It was said that there was a World of Ice hidden behind numerous mountains to the west. At that location, there were a few people that discovered a heavily wounded Mysterious Spirithail Dragon. Furthermore, there were numerous worldly treasures within the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon's domain.

Like a drop of water landing on a calm pool and causing ripples, this rumor quickly spread out.

"It's said that there's a heavily injured Mysterious Spirithail Dragon within the Valley of Ice!"

"The Mysterious Spirithail Dragon seems to be guarding a worldly

treasure known as the Ice Deity Tree. If a Spirit Stage powerhouse was to obtain the Ice Deity Fruit from the tree, they would immediately advance!"

"Right now, there are many forces and powerhouses heading towards the Valley of Ice. Shall we also head there for fun?"

All sorts of rumors spread out at an alarming rate. The entire region became restless, and numerous individuals headed quickly towards the direction of the Valley of Ice.

Once this information was passed to a few extremely powerful forces and powerhouses, they stared into distance with a strange gaze. A Mysterious Spirithail Dragon...

A Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast of this level was enough to let their greed cloud their hearts.

"Gather everybody. We're heading towards the Valley of Ice!"

Orders were issued quickly, and many powerhouses also secretly took their leave as they headed out towards the Valley of Ice. That region had undoubtedly become extremely popular in an instant...

...

Valley of Ice.

Within the crack of the mountain, Mu Chen was sitting cross-legged calmly. Behind him, Ye Qingling, Chu Qi and the others were also doing the same. Dense Spiritual Energy was being emitted from them in order to resist against the cold winds that blew in.

"It seems that the information about this location has already been spread." Mu Chen suddenly spoke. He was able to detect numerous Spiritual Energy fluctuations which had entered this barren tundra in just one short day.

Chu Qi and the others also nodded their heads, as they had also detected them.

"However, there still aren't enough men." Mu Chen smiled as he muttered this to himself.

Time quietly flew by, and another day had come to pass.

On the second day, the originally quite World of Ice had turned into a noisy location at an extremely rapid speed. Numerous figures had arrived in this barren wasteland and the noise emitted from them seemed to have stopped the endless blizzard.

A steady stream of men entered the depths of the World of Ice. From their hidden spot, Mu Chen and the others were able to see countless, powerful figures moving around in the blizzard. Their auras weren't weak at all.

For the men that entered the depths of the World of Ice, they noticed that the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon was quite familiar to them. However, they were not idiots. They clearly knew the difference between the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon and themselves. They could only rely on numbers in order to defeat this powerful existence. If any of them were to rashly rush in, they would definitely be killed instantly by the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon.

Thus, many of the men would stay within the boundaries of the World of Ice as they waited for more people to gather.

This wait only took one afternoon. When it occurred, Mu Chen and the others were slightly shocked, as they stared at the approaching figures that covered the entire sky.

From a rough glance, the amount of people gathered had exceeded 10,000. Moreover, there were at least hundreds of Spirit Stage powerhouses among them. These numbers had clearly surpassed the number of Spirit Stage powerhouses within the Northern Spiritual Realm.

"As expected of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy..."

Mu Chen could not help but sigh. This was only a portion of the men within the Northern Heavens World. Yet, the formation was already quite terrifying. Just how terrifying would it be once every single one had been included in the formation? The attractiveness of the Five Great Academies was truly shocking.

“Next up, let’s wait for the show to begin.”

Mu Chen spat out a mouthful of cold white air. A smile filled with expectations had emerged on his handsome face. The commotion was quite enormous now. Thus, the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon would soon be alerted. When that happened, it would definitely be furious.

“Once we enter the fight, it would definitely be a spectacular sight.” Fang Zhong exclaimed. It was hard to imagine that this scene was all secretly caused by them.

“When do we begin?” Chu Qi asked.

“There’s no need to be impatient.” Mu Chen shook his head and replied: “We aren’t the only ones that are planning to take advantage of the others. Moreover, there are many powerhouses that appeared at this location. Many of them will have the same idea as us.”

Chu Qi and the others nodded. Although a third party would definitely benefit from the tussle between two others, there were too many third parties at this location. Thus, these third parties would definitely fight against themselves as well.

Human figures emerged everywhere within the World of Ice. The noisy voices rang out and dissipated the majority of the raging blizzard.

As the people gathering at this location increased, nobody dared to take the initiative to enter the depths of the barren ice land. They were all waiting for the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon to emerge from the depths.

And they did not have to wait long. A thunderous roar rang out, and a feeling of blind fury and fierceness could be sensed within the roar. It was evident that the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon had detected the human insects that had stepped inside its territory after it had been awakened from its slumber.

Roar!

This roar formed a sonic impact as it spread out. It caused the blizzard to descend down like numerous razor sharp blades. A few unlucky individuals were going to be directly cut by these sharp blades and had to

immediately protect their bodies with Spiritual Energy.

"Be careful everybody. The beast is coming out!" A roar filled with Spiritual Energy rumbled.

Bang.

The ice lands seemed to tremble at this moment. The snow suddenly blew into the depths of the World of Ice, and everybody could see a massive blizzard sweeping over from the depths.

The display of strength was extremely shocking.

The blizzard was exceedingly swift, and in a few seconds, it appeared in front of countless individuals. Afterwards, the blizzard was ripped apart as a pair of enormous wings covered with ice suddenly unfolded itself from within.

Roar!

An abnormally powerful Spiritual Energy rushed out together with the roar and a formidable Spiritual Energy pressure spread throughout the region.

Boom!

The blizzard directly exploded, and snow descended down from the sky. A massive monster emerged within the snow, and at this moment, numerous individuals' eyes narrowed.

It was an exceptionally beautiful creature. Its body was that of a dragon while a dazzling, glistening ice armor covered it. Cold breaths blew out from its hideous, gigantic mouth and froze the surrounding air. A pair of giant, blue eyes stared coldly at the numerous insects in front of it.

At the same time, it slowly flapped its wings, causing wind and snow to emerge.

The originally noisy environment had instantly become silent. Even when many individuals were prepared psychologically, shock still filled their hearts when they personally witnessed the might of the Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast in front of them.

“Is this the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon?”

Mu Chen also stared at the massive creature that occupied the space. His face turned serious, but a hint of delight flashed through his eyes. This is because he noticed that the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon was still only at the Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase.

If it was only at this level, it was something that they could deal with.

“The show finally begins.”

As Mu Chen murmured to himself, the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon let out a furious roar. It opened its gigantic mouth, and an icy torrent rushed out directly towards the crowd of people.

The Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast had finally made its move.

Chapter 136: Ten Thousand Men Slaying Spirithail Dragon

Boom!

The white, icy torrent descended down towards the crowd like a snow-white waterfall; at the same time, an extremely formidable Spiritual Energy fluctuation emitted out.

Ah!

Shrill screams resounded, but strangely no blood had been shed. The ones that were hit by the rushing torrent instantly erupted into numerous light beams that brought them away.

Mu Chen was slightly startled as he watched this scene occur before his very eyes. He was able to clearly see that the symbols of the ones that were hit were destroyed and formed into the light beams which soon disappeared.

“So the symbols will protect people who would otherwise be killed. Once it shatters, it executes a mysterious Spiritual Energy and directly transmit them away. But in this case, they are considered eliminated from the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy.” Ye Qingling muttered beside Mu Chen.

Mu Chen nodded. So the symbol actually had this sort of protective measure. Although they were able to use Spiritual Energy within the Northern Heavens World’s trial, the ruthlessness could not compare with those of the Spiritual Road. In the Spiritual Road, nobody would care about whether you lived or not. Aside from yourself, there was nobody you could rely on.

“Ohoho, the participants of the Spiritual Road are selected through numerous screenings. If they did not use this sort of method in the Northern Heavens World, at least half of the participants would be dead. Even the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy wouldn’t be able to pay that kind of price.” Fang Zhong smiled.

Although the Five Great Academies were all immensely powerful and were well-known throughout the entire Great Thousand World, they would recruit a lot of students. Thus, if half of them were dead, the parents of these students would probably be furious.

"Even though they won't die, the price that they've paid for being eliminated is severe. Just now, there were two unlucky Spirit Stage powerhouses among the ones that were hit." Chu Qi also muttered. With this sort of strength, they would have had a certain amount of ability. Based on ordinary situations, it wouldn't have been difficult for them to raise their symbol's rank to Rank 5. Unfortunately for them, they were instantly eliminated by the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon.

"Let's continue to watch. Right now, the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon is in its peak state and would be a monstrous torrent against the people that came." Mu Chen smiled. He raised his head and stared at the massive creature in the distant sky.

It was evident that the figures, who were on top of the trees, were shocked by the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon's attack. Only after this attack, they had understood that, although they had numbers, a Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast was something at the Heavenly Fusion Stage!

This strength was enough to instantly kill any one of them!

However, there were some capable individuals within the group and they hurriedly shouted out in response to the appearance of the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon. "All the Spirit Stage powerhouses should attack together. The Spiritual Rotation Stage should retreat and perform concentrated bombardments with Spiritual Energy!"

And what's more, the people, who obtained an entry for the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, were all individuals with a little bit of ability. Once they heard these shouts, they acted decisively, and numerous figures rushed out into the sky as dense Spiritual Energy erupted out.

A hundred or so figures appeared in front of the group and emitted out a powerful, rumbling Spiritual Energy.

"Roar!"

In the sky, the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon stared at these humans, and a hint of viciousness flashed through its icy-blue eyes. It immediately roared again, and an icy torrent erupted out from its mouth once again.

"Attack!"

The hundred Spirit Stage powerhouses all shouted out. A variety of attacks then exploded out at the same time. The sky became a dazzling spectacle of light as the rumbling Spiritual Energy attacks collided against the overwhelming ice torrent.

Bang!

The formidable attacks collided heavily with each other in the sky, and a massive shockwave erupted out. A gorge was carved into the ground that had once been covered with snow and ice.

As the blizzard swept across the area, the attacks from both sides gradually faded away. The attack from the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon was actually blocked by these hundred Spirit Stage powerhouses.

"It's truly amazing when there are so many people." Mu Chen could not help but praise once he witnessed this. With a hundred Spirit Stage powerhouses joining forces together, they were able to cause trouble for an existence such as the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon.

"Attack!"

In the sky, another cry rang out. In the rear, the thousands of Spiritual Rotation Stage also let out a cry together.

Boom!

Thousands of Spiritual Energy attacks instantly swept out from them. Underneath this attack, even the blizzard that covered the sky was blown away. Numerous lights pierced through the sky and landed on the massive body of the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon.

Dong!

A deep sound rang out constantly. Against such an attack, the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon was actually forcibly blown back a few

hundred meters. On the surface of its body, traces of scars appeared on its glistening ice armor.

Roar!

A bit of pain surged through its body and thus angered the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon. It let out a furious roar and started to flap its massive and snowy wings.

A violent Spiritual Energy erupted out, and ice started to condense at an alarming speed. In a few seconds, countless ice spears had formed. Every single one of these ice spears emitted out a Spiritual Energy fluctuation that caused everyone to jump.

It was evident that the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon was truly furious.

Swish! Swish! Swish!

The Mysterious Spirithail Dragon flapped its giant wings, and countless ice spears rushed out instantly. They ripped through the air and descended down towards the figures that had attacked it.

“Boom!”

Against this terrifying offensive, the Spirit Stage powerhouses’ faces instantly changed. They hurriedly pushed the Spiritual Energy to the limits and countered with numerous devastating Spiritual Energy attacks.

Bang Bang Bang!

As countless ice spears rushed through the sky, Spiritual Energy would charge over to counter it. This scene was exceeding spectacular and magnificent.

Chi Chi!

Unfortunately, in this such of terrifying collision, there were still a few unlucky individuals that had been hit by the ice spears. The symbol on their foreheads instantly shattered and turned into a light that transmitted them away.

The entire world was completely covered with terrifying collisions as shockwaves emitted out.

Mu Chen and the others stood at the crack of the mountain as they watched the horrifying collisions that covered the entire sky. A hint of shock filled their eyes. This scene was truly like a small-sized war.

A war between humans and a Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast.

Mu Chen stepped forward and his hand touched the mountain cliff that was covered with snow. However, his gaze remained fixed at the horrifying collisions that occured in the distance.

“Eh?”

Suddenly, Mu Chen frowned. He tilted his head and stared at his own hand that touched the mountain cliff. He discovered that the snow at this location was showing signs of melting. In addition, a hint of heat penetrated through the snow.

“Could the large battle have triggered some sort of change?”

Mu Chen stared at the slowly melting snow and frowned. However, he did not think much about it as he focused his gaze back onto the battle.

The collision between the two sides continued. Every single attack of the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon was blocked by the crowd using the advantage of numbers. Although there was quite a bit of loss, they had still managed to suppress the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon.

This was a battle of endurance. Although the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon’s strength far surpassed everybody on the scene, but if it was based purely on Spiritual Energy density, it alone wasn’t enough to compete with everybody once they joined forces.

As long as the stalemate persisted, the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon would be at a disadvantage. Furthermore, it was able to detect that there were still some cunning and powerful humans that were hiding at certain locations. It was evident that they were waiting for the moment when it would go into a tired state.

In addition, it could not consume too much energy, otherwise...

Roar!

The Mysterious Spirithail Dragon issued out a roar and flapped its wings as the glistening ice armor on its body emitted out a burst of intense light. It was actually charging head-on against the Spiritual Energy attacks.

Boom!

It collided with the avalanche of attacks as it charged into the crowd of humans. Then, it flapped its wings as its massive tail swept across the sky and crushed the mountains.

Chi Chi!

Countless individuals burst into light beams as they were hit. Their symbols shattered and transmitted them away.

The crowd hurriedly scattered and signs of people rushing away emerged throughout the mountain.

“All-out attack everyone, let’s slay this beast!”

“Kill!”

“Let’s attack together!”

Various cries resounded throughout the sky. As their friends had their symbols shattered, numerous people’s eyes turned red. They pushed their Spiritual Energy to the limits and started a bombardment on the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon’s massive body.

Both sides were completely furious.

Mu Chen could not help but grin. It was lucky that the people here had the protection of the symbol. Otherwise, this place would have turned into a bloody river already.

“The Mysterious Spirithail Dragon has used up a lot of Spiritual Energy.” Ye Qingling stared at the massive creature in the sky. After such a battle, the latter’s ice armor had shattered in many locations. It also started to become dim and it was evident that it had consumed enormous Spiritual Energy.

“Everybody should pay attention. We’ll wait until Mysterious Spirithail Dragon consumes a bit more energy or when the other hidden individuals

start taking action…" Mu Chen glanced at them quickly. The hidden individuals were definitely powerful. If they were to store their power and join forces against the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon, it would definitely cause a severe injury to the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon.

"Yes!"

Ye Qingling, Fang Zhong, Chu Qi and the others all nodded their heads. They all began circulating the Spiritual Energy within their bodies.

Mu Chen also started to circulate his Spiritual Energy. However, his gaze suddenly turned serious, and he gripped the mountain cliff tightly. He discovered that the heat was become more and more intense. It did not seem that it was caused by the battle.

Mu Chen's eyes flashed. He hurriedly squatted down and swept his sleeves. The snow spread out and quickly melted away. These rocks were actually somewhat hot.

"What is it?" Chu Qi and the others noticed Mu Chen's strange action and was stunned.

Mu Chen frowned and felt something was wrong. It seemed that a powerful surge of heat was rapidly approaching this location from underground.

"Something's wrong. Let's not make any moves right now." Mu Chen said in a deep voice.

Ye Qingling and the others exchanged gazes. It was evident that they had some doubts. However, they nodded immediately once they noticed Mu Chen's serious expression.

Mu Chen touched the hot rocks and stared into the snowy white landscape. Shortly after, his eyes narrowed. This is because that area had suddenly turned completely red.

Boom!

The earth suddenly shook as if an earthquake has occurred and it suddenly cracked open. Then, numerous lava pillars erupted out into the

sky.

Bellow!

A deep cry rang out accompanied with the erupting lava pillars. It resounded through the entire sky and a Spiritual Energy pressure that was in no way inferior to the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon was emitted out.

Mu Chen's expression instantly turned solemn. A hint of shock flashed through his eyes.

Underneath this earth, there had actually been another Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast?

Chapter 137: Geocentric Flame Japalura

Reded, fiery magma erupted into the skies and descended down like a rain of fire. As it made contact with the blizzard, layers of mist formed as the snow sublimated away.

“What’s going on?!”

“What is that?!”

“It seems like something came out from underground!”

This sudden change of events startled everyone at the scene. They immediately turned their gaze towards the ground that had cracked open. At that location, the domain of ice was rapidly melting and was changing into a somewhat dark-red color. The temperature had also rapidly increased.

“What’s happening?” In the crack of the mountain, Ye Qingling and the others exclaimed in surprise.

“It seems that our intelligence was probably wrong. It wasn’t just one Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast located here; there were two of them.” Mu Chen said in a deep voice.

The expressions of Chu Qi and the others changed instantly. This situation was completely beyond their expectations.

“This Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast was probably hidden underneath the ground, so it’s no wonder that we could not detect it.”

Mu Chen’s eyes stared sharply at the newly-sundered ground, which was covered with overflowing magma, and replied: “It probably detected the battle above early on. However, it remained hidden as it probably wanted to wait for both sides to run out of Spiritual Energy. Heh, this beast is quite calculating.”

Chu Qi and the others exchanged gazes with each other. It seemed that they hadn’t been the only ones that wanted to be the third dog that seized the bone; even this Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast wanted to be it. But it had to be said that, for Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast, their intelligence wasn’t

any lower to that of a human's.

"What should we do now?" Fang Zhong smiled bitterly. If it was only one Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast, they had a chance by relying on numbers. However, once the second had appeared, that chance had completely vanished. Even if everybody joined forces together, they weren't an opponent for these two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts.

"Let's wait for a while."

Mu Chen's gaze twinkled as he spoke: "Although they are both Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts, it isn't guaranteed that they'll work together. From the looks of it, they seemed to have a hostile relationship with each other. Thus, the primary target for the Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast within the magma is probably the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon."

"That's right. These Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts probably want to devour each other as well. This way, they would be able to obtain a much more powerful bloodline as well as Spiritual Energy. It would be extremely beneficial for their evolutions. Adding all that, they definitely must be enemies!" Fang Zhong's eyes flashed as he responded.

Ye Qingling exchanged gazes with the rest of the group and noticed the delight within their eyes. If that was the case, wouldn't they have a bigger chance of obtaining a Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence?

However, Mu Chen wasn't as optimistic as them. The current situation was quite unique. It was best to wait and watch the situation before making a judgment.

"Let's watch for a while."

He replied before he turned his gaze back towards the distant battlefield. At that location, magma kept overflowing out from the crack on the ground. From underneath the icy lands, a massive shadow emerged.

The shadow approached the surface rapidly, and, with an explosive noise, it crashed against the icy lands. The ground shook and magma surged out. Then, a massive creature jumped out of the magma while emitting a powerful Spiritual Energy pressure.

Boom.

While the ground trembled, numerous gazes shot over towards the magma. From the magma, they noticed a massive creature of flame slowly crawling out from it.

This flame creature was like a lizard. Its entire body was covered with raging flames, and it seemed as if magma was flowing out from the surface of his body. The semi-liquid magma constantly dropped and melted the snow and ice.

On its hideous head, there was a flame horn that was condensed from magma. It emitted out a terrifying temperature that almost caused the air to ignite.

"This is..." Countless gazes focused onto the creature that had appeared from the magma and immediately narrowed.

"Geocentric Flame Japalura 1, Ranked 70th on the Myriad Beast Record's Earth Ranking." Mu Chen slowly spoke as he stared at the massive creature.

Ye Qingling and the others' gazes immediately turned serious. This Geocentric Flame Japalura was in no way inferior to the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon.

"Oh my god! It's another Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast!"

"What should we do?!"

"Retreat, retreat!"

It was apparent that the others had also recognized the massive creature that carried such a formidable Spiritual Energy pressure. They immediately let out screams filled with horror.

Panic quickly spread throughout the crowd. If it was like earlier when they were fighting against Mysterious Spirithail Dragon, they could still win the battle by relying on numbers. But currently, they were in complete despair. Two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts were enough to slaughter them all.

In the mountain plains, people began to retreat in panic. The fighting intent that they had earlier no longer existed.

Bellow!

The ground trembled as the Geocentric Flame Japalura stepped out of the magma. It waved its enormous tail that was covered in flowing magma and completely obliterated a mountain. Accompanied with magma, the mountain boulders instantly crushed dozens of individuals, who immediately turned into beams of light.

Once the crowd noticed the ferociousness of the Geocentric Flame Japalura, fear completely filled their hearts and they hurriedly retreated.

At this moment, the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon stopped its attack on the crowd. Instead, its icy-blue eyes focused on the Geocentric Flame Japalura. It knew that its rival would appear.

“Roar!”

The Mysterious Spirithail Dragon issued out a roar at the Geocentric Flame Japalura. Spiritual Energy swept out and a blizzard descended down onto the latter.

However, the latter completely ignored the blizzard. Magma continued to flow out of its body, and the icy blades that could instantly kill Spirit Stage powerhouses melted before they could touch the Geocentric Flame Japalura’s body.

Swish!

Seeing that it could not stop the Geocentric Flame Japalura’s movements, the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon immediately became furious. Its hideous mouth opened and let loose an icy torrent. Every area that the torrent passed through immediately became frozen.

With this, the Geocentric Flame Japalura finally stopped. The flame horn on its head, that had magma flowing out, suddenly shone. Then, a massive magma pillar exploded out and collided fiercely against the icy torrent.

Boom!

As the ice bombarded against the magma, the entire ground seemed to have trembled. Powerful Spiritual Energy shock waves instantly destroyed the frozen ice on the ground.

The ones that were planning on retreating were immediately stunned. Why did these two Spiritual Beast start fighting against each other?

“Roar!”

The Mysterious Spirithail Dragon roared out furiously. It flapped its wings, and its massive body became like a meteor made of ice. It then collided directly against the Geocentric Flame Japalura. Since the bodies of Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts were extremely powerful, this kind of attack was their most powerful and lethal weapon that they possessed.

Against the charging attack of the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon, the Geocentric Flame Japalura did not retreat. Instead, magma covered its limbs, and it charged headfirst against the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon.

Bang!

As the two massive creatures collided in midair, ice and magma sprayed throughout the sky. At this moment, the sky seemed to have trembled.

The two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts were fighting against each other while being entangled. Icy torrents and magma furiously eroded against the two Spiritual Beasts.

At this moment, the World of Ice was completely ruined. The magma and icy torrents brought forth devastating roars.

Everybody had stopped their attacks and watched in shock at the two massive creatures. Because of their existences, the ground trembled nonstop as fresh blood landed and tainted the snowy white lands.

“The Mysterious Spirithail Dragon seems to be at a disadvantage...” Ye Qingling suddenly spoke as she watched the two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts battle against each other.

“The Mysterious Spirithail Dragon had already consumed a large

amount of Spiritual Energy previously and suffered numerous injuries. Moreover, the Geocentric Flame Japalura was extremely cunning and hid itself. It seems to have stored up power before it commenced its attack. Thus, the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon can't really be considered its opponent." Mu Chen slowly responded.

"Then what should we do?"

"Wait!"

Mu Chen said in a low voice: "Although the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon is at a disadvantage, their strengths are still relatively the same. The Geocentric Flame Jalapura would have to pay a certain price in order to kill it. When that happens, it would be the best opportunity for us to take action."

Chu Qi and the others nodded. Perhaps many people were waiting for this moment to occur. After all, the value of two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts were too tempting.

"Rumble!"

The earth trembled and the two massive creatures tumbled around crazily as they bit each other. Compared to before, the scene was many times more tragic and horrifying. However, everybody was able to perceive that the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon was gradually weakening as time passed. By then it had suffered many severe injuries.

"Roar!"

The Mysterious Spirithail Dragon seemed to be aware of its situation. Thus, it suddenly growled and forcibly broke away from the Geocentric Flame Jalapura. Then, it flapped its wings and flew off to the distance while fresh blood flowed out of its body.

It was actually planning to escape.

Bellow!.

The Geocentric Flame Jalapura also issued out a roar. This was a once-in-a-lifetime opportunity. How could it let the Mysterious Spirithail

Dragon escape! It immediately stomped the ground and turned into a magma-like light and chased the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon.

The two massive creatures disappeared into the distance as they left this ruined area.

“Chase! Do not let them get away!”

“Two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts. One would probably increase his symbol’s rank directly to Rank 8!”

“If I am able to obtain one of their Soul Essences and successfully ingest it, it would be enough for me to defeat a Spirit Stage Middle Phase with the strength of a Spirit Stage Initial Phase!”

“Chase!”

Everybody stared at the already distant Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts and immediately recovered from the shock. Many people instantly rushed after the massive creatures.

Swish!

Sounds of wind breaking resounded out. The people that were hidden in the shadows weren’t able to endure it any long and rushed out as well.

“Let’s go!”

Mu Chen also waved his hands and was the first one to rush out of the crack. The situation in front of them was the perfect opportunity. They could not give up on this chance.

Hearing this, Ye Qingling and the others quickly followed.

Mu Chen and the others were situated at the front of the crowd. He lifted his head and his black eyes stared at the two massive creatures in the distance. A hint of eagerness filled his eyes.

But while Mu Chen was chasing after the two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts, he did not realize that, within the mandala flower in his aura sea, the Nine Nether Bird had suddenly opened its eyes. Black flames surged, and its gaze brightened up.

“Is it a Mysterious Spirithail Dragon and a Geocentric Flame Japalura?”

Chapter 138: Snatch

The current location was a peaceful and harmonious lush forest. This land had accumulated huge amount of vitality as time passed. Occasionally, roars from Spiritual Beasts would resound out from the depths of the mountain.

Dong!

However, in an instant, this peace was destroyed. The ground had started to tremble, and numerous Spiritual Beasts quickly fled from the mountains. All of them glanced behind them in fear as an fiery-red and icy-blue color rapidly approached from the skies.

They could vaguely see two massive creatures fighting against each other viciously inside two colored balls of energy. Powerful surges of Spiritual Energy swept out like gales, and the entire forest was being destroyed at a rapid speed.

Roar!

As the two massive creatures fought against each other bitterly, fresh blood constantly oozed out of their wounds. The entire world seemed to be tainted by the scent of this blood. Even the Spiritual Beasts that would normally have entered a berserk state when they smelled the blood were all shivering in fear and they did not show any vicious aura.

All of them could sense the powerful Spiritual Energy pressure that was being emitted from the bodies of the two massive creatures.

As the two massive creatures were fighting, numerous figures were trailing them. Their gazes were filled with shock as they noticed the damage caused by the two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts.

“As expected from a Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast,” Ye Qingling exclaimed. She immediately stared in front and said: “The injuries of the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon are becoming graver with each exchange. It probably wouldn’t be able to sustain itself much longer.”

Mu Chen nodded. He also detected the weakening of Spiritual Energy

fluctuations being emitted from the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon.

"However, there are many people following behind, and most of them possess the strength of a Spirit Stage." Mu Chen glanced behind for a moment. To the rear, there were many figures heading in the same direction as they were. Almost all of them were at the Spirit Stage and were quite powerful. Furthermore, he could detect that there were a few that had originally hid their strength extremely well, yet now they emitted a powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuation.

It seemed that all of these individuals would be difficult to deal with.

"Mu Chen."

Just when Mu Chen was thinking about this, his expression suddenly turned serious. This was because a thought was conveyed directly to his mind. It was from the Nine Nether Bird!

A hint of surprise flashed through Mu Chen's eyes. It was evident that he had not expected the Nine Nether Bird to contact him by itself.

"What is it?" Mu Chen quickly asked.

"The Mysterious Spirithail Dragon would probably play its trump card against the Geocentric Flame Japalura in a while. When that happens, they would be gravely injured. At that moment, you should reduce the suppression you're exerting on me using the mandala flower. I'll come out and eliminate the two of them!" The Nine Nether Bird's thought was sent over.

"You're going to take action?" Mu Chen was shocked. This was something uncommon, the Nine Nether Bird was actually going to take the initiative to help him?

"Hmph, if I help, I will naturally need to obtain some sort of benefit- Okay, I won't talk to you about it now. However, it's unlikely you will succeed unless I help."

The Nine Nether Bird grunted: "After I kill them, you must immediately extract the Spiritual Beasts' Soul Essence and place their bodies within your Mustard Seed Bracelet. Then, you should immediately flee. After all,

there are a few troublesome individuals in that ant colony behind you, so you must leave that location as quickly as possible."

"Okay."

Mu Chen did not hesitate at all. This is because what the Nine Nether Bird had said was correct. This matter had attracted too many people over and had even surpassed his own expectations. If he had help from the Nine Nether Bird, it would be easier to deal with this current situation.

"Everyone. Even if anything strange happens to me, you don't have to worry about it. Perhaps, all of you can head back in advance. I'll come back soon." Mu Chen lifted his head and said to Ye Qingling and the others.

Ye Qingling and the others were stunned by Mu Chen's words. A hint of confusion filled their eyes. However, they nodded immediately. It was best not to question Mu Chen right now.

Mu Chen turned his gaze forward. In front of him, the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon's Spiritual Energy was rapidly declining, and a hint of powerlessness was also present in its roars.

Roar!

The earth suddenly trembled, and the temperature suddenly decreased. Snowflakes actually emerged out of thin air and descended to the ground. At this moment, the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon's originally powerless roars suddenly become urgent. The Spiritual Aura within the world suddenly showed signs of resistance.

"It really is desperate now." Mu Chen could feel the change occurring in the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon. His eyes flickered, and he immediately began to circulate his Spiritual Energy quietly.

Roar!

In the distance, the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon had gotten rid of the Geocentric Flame Japalura's entanglement and flapped its wings in the air. Then it let out a berserk cry as light engravings emerged from the ice crystals on its wings. Scarlet blood also began to ooze out from the light

engravings.

The light engravings quickly turned blood-red.

From below, the Geocentric Flame Jalapura also detected the danger and no longer charged in head-first. It stomped the ground furiously and cracked it open. Magma spewed out from the cracks, and the land turned into a land of lava rapidly.

Swish!

The Mysterious Spirithail Dragon's snow-white wings began to flap more rapidly. The Spiritual Aura within the world surged and quickly formed into a massive light ball filled with freezing Spiritual Energy. A bloody engraving covered the surface of the light ball.

An extremely horrifying fluctuation emanated from the massive Spiritual Energy light ball. This instantly caused Mu Chen and the others' expressions to change.

Boom!

The Mysterious Spirithail Dragon issued out a roar, and the freezing Spiritual Energy light ball that contained all of its strength blasted out. Accompanied by a blizzard, it was like an meteor of ice as it descended down fiercely onto the Geocentric Flame Jalapura.

Bellow!

Facing the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon's desperate attack, the Geocentric Flame Jalapura also issued out a roar. The flame horn that had magma flowing out instantly gushed out massive amounts of magma. Magma also shot out from the crack in the ground and, together, they finally formed into a pillar of magma which rushed towards the freezing Spiritual Energy light ball.

Bang Bang Bang!

As the two attacks collided, the pillar of magma instantly crumbled and lava sprayed out everywhere. However, the freezing Spiritual Energy light ball continued to descend downwards and finally exploded on the

Geocentric Flame Jalapura.

Boom!

An indescribable snowstorm immediately emerged at this moment. The mountain and forest instantly turned into a world of ice. Although Mu Chen and the others, who were trailing the Spiritual Beasts, were quite a distance away, there were still a dozen or so Spirit Stage powerhouses that were wrapped up in the snowstorm. Their symbols instantly shattered and they vanished into beams of light.

Mu Chen and the others hurriedly hid themselves behind a mountain in order to avoid this terrifying impact that rushed over towards them. However, the chill that accompanied the snowstorm still made the Spiritual Energy within their bodies slow down.

Mu Chen stared into the distance and noticed that the snowstorm was gradually fading away.Some distance from his current location, the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon had fallen down in a weakened state causing the ground to tremble.

Near the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon, the Geocentric Flame Jalapura's originally red body had turned slightly dim. The flame on its horn had been extinguished and cracks had emerged on the its surface. It was evident that it had suffered a heavy injury.

This devastating battle gradually quieted down. Everybody stared at the two gravely injured Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts and their eyes turned red due to greed. However, they were temporarily restrained due to the slowing effects of the chill.

"Mu Chen, go!"

The Nine Nether Bird's thoughts resounded in Mu Chen's mind. At the same time, a black flame surged through his body and completely burned away the chill that eroded his body.

Swish!

Mu Chen immediately moved and dashed out underneath many astonished gazes. In a blink of an eye, he appeared at the battlefield filled

with ice and flames. A black flame surged like a river within his black eyes.

Li!

A clear cry suddenly rang out from his body. Once the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon and the Geocentric Flame Jalapura heard this cry, a hint of fear instantly emerged in its eyes.

“Swish!”

Within Mu Chen’s eyes, the black flames were burning violently. With a final swishing sound, they had turned into two beams of black flames that ripped through the void.

Chi!

The Mysterious Spirithail Dragon and the Geocentric Flame Jalapura could only see the flash of the black light. However, they were soon aware of the pain that came along with it. The beam of black flames had actually completely ignored all their defense and forcibly tore through their sturdy heads.

The two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts’ massive body slowly stiffened and their life force quickly faded away.

“Hurry, do it!”

The Nine Nether Bird’s thoughts resounded out again. But this time, it had become a lot weaker than before. It was evident that the Nine Nether Bird had used up a large amount of energy in the earlier attack.

Swish!

Mu Chen immediately rushed over and a suction force appeared in his palms. A red and blue light rushed out from the two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts’ broken heads and landed into his hands.

Within the two lights were a miniature ice dragon and flame lizard. At this moment, they were struggling furiously, making it nearly impossible for Mu Chen to grip it tightly.

“Hmph!”

Mu Chen grunted and a black flame emerged in his palms. After the black flames completely covered the two Soul Essences, he immediately moved beside the two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts' corpse and waved his hand as he placed it into his Mustard Seed Bracelet.

Kacha.

Once the two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts were placed within the Mustard Seed Bracelet, subtle cracks emerged on the bracelet. Although the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon and the Geocentric Flame Jalapura were dead, their corpses still possessed a powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuation. Since they had been completely absorbed into the Mustard Seed Bracelet at once, the Mustard Seed Bracelet could not endure it.

From the start of Mu Chen's attack to the retrieval of the corpse, all of this only lasted for a few seconds. However, the numerous Spirit Stage powerhouses could only watch as Mu Chen snatched away the Spiritual Beasts' Soul Essence as well as the corpses...

"You're seeking for death!"

Mu Chen's actions immediately caused the Spirit Stage powerhouses to enter a state of rage. They shouted out furiously at him as they rushed over.

"Hand over the Soul Essences!"

Among the Spirit Stage powerhouses that rushed over, there were three of them that were exceedingly fast. In a flash, they had appeared near Mu Chen, and three powerful Spiritual Energies began to envelop Mu Chen.

These three individuals actually possessed the strength of a Spirit Stage Late Phase!

The hidden experts finally could not resist on showing their true selves and immediately took action!

Chapter 139: The Great Chase

Three people stood in midair with dense Spiritual Energy fluctuations were emitting from their bodies. Based on these fluctuations, it was evident that they had reached Spirit Stage Late Phase.

At the moment, these three individuals were staring coldly at Mu Chen. They all had the same idea, to kill the latter.

The skinny boy in the middle of the trio stared coldly at Mu Chen as he spoke. “Don’t you think your appetite is too enormous? So many of us have been chasing this far in order to obtain the two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts; every single one of us had to pay a great price, and you actually dared to take it all away?!”

“You’re only a mere Spirit Stage Initial Phase, yet you are quite ambitious. Aren’t you afraid that you’ll be killed? Hurry and hand over the Spiritual Beasts’ Soul Essences as well as the corpses! Perhaps we’ll let you get out of this alive!” The person on the left also shouted out coldly.

As for the person on the right, he maintained a heartless expression as he firmly fixed his gaze on Mu Chen. Sharp Spiritual Energy surged out from his slightly clasped palms.

At this instant, Ye Qingling and the others also recovered from the shock. They stared at the three figures in the sky and their expressions instantly changed.

“It’s actually Xie Guan, Wu Hu and Qin Zheng. Damn it, why would they be here right now?!” Fang Zhong shouted out. His voice trembled with shock. These three individuals were quite famous in the Spiritual Road. When the Spiritual Road was over, they were assessed as “Quasi-King Class”. Although there was a small gap between them and an actual King Class, they were still quite powerful.

Mu Chen wasn’t their opponent at all.

“Boss Xie. I’ve seen him before! He’s the Blood Calamity Mu Chen!” In the sky, a person suddenly shouted as he recognized Mu Chen.

"Oh? Mu Chen?"

Xie Guan and the others were startled and immediately glanced at Mu Chen again. However, they soon sneered: "I never expected that the famous Blood Calamity Mu Chen would only be at this level right now. What a joke. And I thought that I heard rumors about him being assessed as a King Class, how ridiculous!"

Mu Chen glanced at the trio for a moment. Although he did not know them, he knew that they must have performed quite decently in order to reach the Spirit Stage Late Phase. However, it was obvious that he had not met them in the Spiritual Road.

"It seems that the current situation is quite terrible..."

Mu Chen's eyes flashed. Xie Guan and the others were indeed powerful, but more importantly, there were dozens of Spirit Stage powerhouses watching in the rear. With this sort of lineup, it was enough for them to fight against a Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast. It was evident that it was impossible for him to deal with them in a head-on battle. After all, the Nine Nether Bird's power had already been used when he killed the two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts earlier.

"I must leave this place first. If I had been able to ingest the Soul Essence, I wouldn't have been afraid of them." A thought flashed through Mu Chen's mind.

"Mu Chen, hand over the Soul Essences. Otherwise, I do not mind on eliminating the so-called Blood Calamity from this plane of existence." Xie Guan extended his hand over and shouted coldly.

"Divide these two Soul Essences by yourself!"

Mu Chen waved his sleeves and two clumps of light shot off from his sleeves. Once he threw the clumps of light over, he immediately turned into a flash of light as he charged away from this location at an extraordinary speed.

Xie Guan and the others reflexively extended their hands to catch the clumps of light. However, they immediately noticed that something was

wrong. Although the clumps of light were emitting Spiritual Energy fluctuations, they weren't something that could compare with a Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence.

It was evident that these were only two common Spiritual Beasts' Soul Essences.

"Bastard, you're dead meat!"

Xie Guan and the others' expressions instantly turned cold. They immediately charged onwards as they chased after Mu Chen.

"Chase. He actually dares to keep the two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast's Soul Essences for himself! We can't let him go!" From behind, dozens of Spirit Stage powerhouses also shouted as they followed.

Ye Qingling and the others were completely stunned by the ongoing events. They quickly exchanged gazes with each other.

"What should we do? It will be dangerous for Mu Chen if the other Spirit Stage powerhouses continue to chase after him. After all, the two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast's Soul Essences are too tempting. The group that will chase after him can only become increasingly larger. Moreover, his strength seems to be at the Spirit Stage Initial Phase again..." Fang Zhong smiled wryly.

Chu Qi also frowned. No matter which measures Mu Chen would take, he believed that it was clearly impossible for him to face this sort of lineup.

"Let's follow them and see what happens." Ye Qingling gritted her teeth. Mu Chen was definitely in a terrible situation. They would, without a doubt, worry if they left right now.

Fang Zhong and Chu Qi both sighed and nodded their heads. Thus, the three of them also started chasing after him rapidly.

Mu Chen immediately pushed his speed to the very limits. Directly behind him was the trio formed by Xie Guan, Wu Hu and Qin Zheng. And behind the trio was a large group of Spirit Stage powerhouses...

This strange scene of a group chasing a fleeing individual persisted for a while.

Every one of them was extremely fast and charged out of the mountains in just half an hour. However, this commotion had instantly alerted numerous individuals. Many of them were flabbergasted as they watched this bizarre scene occurring in front of their very eyes. The formation of nearly 100 Spirit Stage powerhouses shocked many people.

"What's going on?!"

"Why are so many individuals chasing after one person?"

"It seems that someone obtained two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts' Soul Essences!"

"What?! Two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts' Soul Essences?"

"Quick! Quickly now! Send a message to the boss, and tell him that we've discovered something good!"

The commotion caused by the Spirit Stage powerhouses quickly caused a widespread disturbance. Once the information was spread, an uproar was instantly created. Greed quickly filled the eyes of many people. A few Spirit Stage powerhouses immediately rushed out and joined the fray.

Therefore, the fact that Mu Chen was being chased over acquiring two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts' Soul Essences spread quickly...

Mu Chen gritted his teeth as he detected the amount of auras behind him was increasing. Because of this, he did not dare to move to regions with many people and could only take unpopulated routes. But even so, the large force that was chasing him continued to be in hot pursuit.

"Damn it!"

Mu Chen cursed quietly. This time, he really stirred up a hornets' nest.

"Swish!"

As Mu Chen cursed, he suddenly felt the Mustard Seed Bracelet shudder. Two clumps of light flew out. The two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts' Soul Essences!

Pu!

Black flames gushed out of Mu Chen's chest and completely enveloped the two clumps of light. Then, it forcibly pulled the Soul Essences directly into Mu Chen's body.

"Bastard, what are you planning to do?!" Mu Chen shouted in anger.

Within his aura sea, the Nine Nether Bird stared at the two Soul Essences that entered the mandala flower. A hint of cunning flashed through its eyes. It smiled as it sent out a thought over to Mu Chen: "I'll ingest these Soul Essences, you should continue escaping. Relax, I will provide you the energy to escape."

Once its voice faded away, it completely ignored Mu Chen. A hint of seriousness and hesitation flashed through its eyes as it stared at the two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts' Soul Essences. Then, it quickly opened its mouth and completely swallowed the Soul Essences.

Boom! An amazing Spiritual Energy fluctuation erupted out from the Nine Nether Bird's body.

"Sh*tty bird! You dare trick me!" Mu Chen gnashed his teeth in anger. This damn Nine Nether Bird had actually swallowed the two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts' Soul Essences and had left nothing for him!

"Just you wait!"

Although he was quite angry, Mu Chen also knew this wasn't the moment to quarrel. He hurriedly circulated his Spiritual Energy to accelerate...

The information about Mu Chen possessing two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts spread at an alarming rate. After all, this information was too amazing. A Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence was quite appealing to everyone here.

Thus, in just half a day, this information spread throughout the interior of the Northern Heaven World.

Northern Heavens World's Interior, South-East Direction.

The location was barren red valley. At this moment, numerous people had appeared in the depths of the valley. Every single one of them was glancing towards the center. From that location, a single-eyed, giant ape was shouting towards the sky; a formidable Spiritual Energy pressure gushed out from its body.

Judging from the Spiritual Energy pressure, the single-eyed giant ape was also a Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast that was comparable to a Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase!

But at this moment, many hideous sword injuries were plastered on the body of this giant ape. Every single one of these sword injuries was quite fatal. Moreover, there were hundreds of individuals unleashing attacks at the top of the valley, which brought the single-eyed giant ape into battle of will.

At the forefront of the valley, a dozen individuals were standing there. However, there were three figures among these dozen individuals that stood at the front of the pack. There were one girl and two boys.

The two boys were burly and skinny respectively. At this moment, they were completely focused on the single-eyed giant ape whose Spiritual Energy fluctuations were weakening. They were completely on guard against the one eyed giant ape's ferocious counterattack.

Next these two boys stood a slender and beautiful girl. She wore a black dress and her smooth, supple silver hair was extremely eye-catching. Compared to the two individuals beside her, she seemed a bit more relaxed. Even when she looked at the single-eyed giant ape, her clear glass-like eyes remained completely calm.

Even though her attitude was like this, none of the powerhouses thought that she was arrogant. That was because she was the one that gravely injured the Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast in front of them. It was only because of this that the rest of them had a chance against it.

"Ohoho, Luo Li. If you obtain the Spiritual Aura of a Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast, you would probably become the first one to increase their rank to Rank 9, right?" The skinny boy smiled at the eye-catching girl, who

was completely silent.

"Probably."

The girl's glass-like eyes remained quiet. Even though this was a shocking topic to everyone in the Northern Heavens World, she was not affected by it at all.

Seeing this, the skinny boy did not seem surprised. It was evident that he knew the girl's attitude quite well.

From behind, a commotion suddenly rang out. A figure hurriedly rushed over and leaned towards the skinny boy as he spoke: "Boss, I've just received news that someone has actually obtained two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts' Soul Essences in the Northwest direction. Right now, he's gravely injured, and he's being chased by hundreds of Spirit Stage powerhouses. Should we intervene as well?"

"Oh? Two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts' Soul Essence?"

The skinny boy was stunned. The burly boy also showed a surprised expression and asked: "Which amazing person did this?"

"He seems to be called Mu Chen?" The person thought for a moment before responding.

Just when his voice faded, he suddenly noticed that his two bosses' expressions changed. Then, the two of them slowly turned their gazes towards the black dressed girl.

The girl in black dress suddenly turned around and revealed an extremely elegant face. At this moment, ripples started to emerge in her eyes despite not yielding even the slightest of changes when they were talking about her pre-eminent Rank 9.

"What did you say his name was?" The girl in black dress asked quietly. Her voice was trembling while she asked this. It was evident that her emotions were slightly out of control.

Once the messenger saw this, he did not dare to respond slowly and hurriedly muttered: "He's called Mu Chen. Currently, he has obtained two

Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast Essences and is being chased by hundreds of Spirit Stage powerhouses. It was reported that he is severely injured."

"What direction?" Hearing the words "severely injured", the girl in black dress immediately clasped her slender hands. A hint of coldness immediately flowed through her serene eyes.

"Northwest."

The girl in black dress immediately started to move.

"Luo Li. There's no need to be impatient. The Single-Eyed Diamond Ape won't be able to last much longer. If you wait for a little bit more, you will become the first one in this Northern Heavens World to have increased their rank to Rank 9. Wouldn't it be a bit rash if you were to leave at this critical moment?!" The skinny boy quickly muttered once he noticed her intention.

The girl in black dress paused for a moment and tilted her head slightly. Her clear and beautiful eyes stared at the skinny boy as she slowly spoke: "I came to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy because of him. If he's not in this place, then what's the purpose of me being here? Just what is the use of a Rank 9 Symbol then?"

The girl in the black dress glanced at the skinny boy, who was smiling wryly, and the hint of coldness faded away from her eyes. She whispered: "He's hurt. He needs me right now. I want to be by his side. Don't stop me, otherwise, I'll get angry."

The skinny boy chuckled bitterly as he stared at the girl in black dress. Quickly after, he said: "That guy truly makes me jealous... Should I send someone to go with you?"

"No need. I can resolve it all by myself."

This time, a hint of killing intent laced the girl's voice. She stopped conversing with the skinny boy and rushed away. Her body turned into a beam of light as she charged towards the northwest direction.

Mu Chen, you promised me. You said we'll enter the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy together. Therefore, you must wait for me.

Chapter 140: Changes inside Body

Swish! Swish!

The sounds of winds being cleaved through could be heard resounding throughout the mountains. Beams of light flashed as numerous figures stormed through the area. At the same time, numerous shouts could be heard.

In front of the flock of men was Mu Chen, currently wearing a gloomy expression. These bastards had already chased him for almost an entire day, yet they didn't show the slightest signs of stopping.

Moreover as the chase continued, the people following him had increased. The attractiveness of the two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts' Soul Essences was too great. But most importantly, Mu Chen only appeared to be at the Spirit Stage Initial Phase. As such, his currently perceived level wasn't enough to make the ones that were at a slightly higher or even the same level to fear him.

His perceived weakness caused everybody to want to catch him and seize the Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts' Soul Essences.

"I must think of a plan to get rid of them." Mu Chen frowned.

Dong!

Just when Mu Chen was pondering his problems, the sound of a sudden explosion came from inside his body. A vibration instantly spread throughout his body.

Puchi.

This sudden vibration caused Mu Chen to shudder in surprise. His face immediately turned pale, and he spat out a mouthful of blood. At the same time, his figure staggered a bit.

"Hurry, he won't be able to last much longer, capture him!"

"Don't let him escape!"

Far behind Mu Chen, the flock of men witnessed this scene and were

completely delighted. Mu Chen's stubbornness and speed were much higher than they had anticipated. Even after they chased him for nearly a day, they failed to surround him. Judging from his current appearance, it seemed likely that Mu Chen couldn't hold on any longer.

"What's going on?!"

A hint of dismay flashed through Mu Chen's eyes. He immediately concentrated and reached into his aura sea. Once he entered the aura sea, he discovered a formidable Spiritual Energy fluctuation that was spreading out like ripples.

And the source of this Spiritual Energy was the Nine Nether Bird that was inside the mandala flower cage!

At this moment, the Nine Nether Bird's body had doubled in size and its body was covered in black flames. Its eyes betrayed the pain of its current struggle.

"What the hell are you doing?!" Mu Chen shouted out. This damn bird, it had actually secretly absorbed the two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts' Soul Essences, and now it even caused this mess? It was truly trying to kill him.

While the Nine Nether Bird had been lying down on the mandala flower, a tinge of icy-blue and fiery-red appeared in its black flames.

Mu Chen immediately understood what was happening. The Nine Nether Bird had eaten too much. It had attempted to ingest two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts' Soul Essences at once, but a backlash had occurred. After all, it had still been in an extremely weakened state. If he was being honest, he had to say that the Nine Nether Bird's injuries were far more severe than those the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon had sustained earlier. If it had ingested the Soul Essences one by one, perhaps it wouldn't have been a problem. However, it had been extremely greedy...

The Mysterious Spirithail Dragon and the Geocentric Flame Jalapura were known for controlling the powers of great blizzards and rushing magma respectively. The nature of these two elements naturally opposed each other. Right now, the Nine Nether Bird had placed them together. This caused the resistance to sharply increase, which led to the backlash.

“You deserve it!”

Mu Chen scolded. The damn bird had finally gotten what it deserved.

However, scolding aside, he was quite anxious as well. After all, the Nine Nether Bird was inside his aura sea. If another backlash occurred, the explosion would probably destroy him instantly. Therefore, he could not afford to do nothing in this situation.

“What should I do?” Mu Chen asked helplessly. He was extremely unfortunate. Right now, he was being hunted by others. Now an accident occurred inside his body.

“Ingest them!” The Nine Nether Bird sent its painful thoughts over to him.

“I must get rid of the pursuers temporarily. So no matter how much pain you’re in, you must help me now. Otherwise, we’ll both be dead!” Mu Chen gritted.

After saying this, he immediately left his aura sea. Then, he turned around and noticed that the men chasing after him had already covered quite a bit of the distance that had initially been separating them. He took a deep breath and felt a powerful energy surging out of his aura sea.

“Dong Dong!”

When this energy emerged, Mu Chen was able to feel a slight disturbance within his aura sea. It was evident that the Nine Nether Bird’s condition got worse due to it sending part of its power over to Mu Chen.

But at this moment, neither had the time to care much about it.

Boom!

At this moment, black flames gushed out of Mu Chen’s body. Then, a pair of black flame wings formed on his back. The air instantly exploded as he turned into a black beam of light. With unimaginable speed, he disappeared into the horizon.

As they watched this scene occur in front of their very eyes, the faces of the people chasing after Mu Chen immediately turned pale.

“Chase. We’ll chase after him using the residual Spiritual Energy fluctuations!”

“He must be desperate right now. As long as we catch up to him, he will not be able to escape!”

Numerous shouts rang out. They immediately increased the circulation of Spiritual Energy inside their bodies and accelerated as they continued their chase...

By relying on the Nine Nether Bird’s power, Mu Chen was able to escape the flock of men in a few minutes. He immediately entered a group of mountains and descended near a waterfall.

When Mu Chen landed on the ground, he immediately sat cross-legged. He had to manage his time well. Although he had been able to escape the mob temporarily, he had left traces of Spiritual Energy along the way. Since he didn’t have time to erase them, it was only a matter of time before they caught up.

Mu Chen’s thoughts quickly entered his aura sea again and noticed that the black flames on the Nine Nether Bird was showing signs of distorting. Its body was constantly expanding and contracting.

This was the appearance of Spiritual Energy being in a completely unstable state.

Mu Chen’s thoughts quickly entered the tiny spirit body that was sitting on top of the Spiritual Energy light wheel. Then, the little body rushed out and appeared in front of the mandala flower. His hands changed forms and Spiritual Energy shot out. However, he became stunned when he noticed that his Spiritual Energy completely shattered once it made contact with the Nine Nether Bird’s chaotic and violent Spiritual Energy.

Mu Chen was startled. He smiled bitterly when he discovered that it would be impossible for him to help with the mere strength of a Spirit Stage Initial Phase. Not only did the Nine Nether Bird have its own Spiritual Energy, it also possessed the Soul Essence of the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon and the Geocentric Flame Jalapura. There was nothing he could do now.

A thought was conveyed to him by the Nine Nether Bird.“Use the mandala flower! Did you truly believe that you could had helped with your strength being only at Spirit Stage Initial Phase?”

“If I could activate this thing, did you think that I would have let you act so arrogantly in front of me?” Mu Chen shouted in anger. If he had been able to activate the mandala flower, he would have completely ingested the Nine Nether Bird in the beginning.

Although he was utterly furious, Mu Chen still managed to calm himself down. His spirit slowly descended and landed near the mandala flower. He hesitated for a moment before extending a blurry hand made of light, and gently touched the cage.

When he made contact with the mandala flower, Mu Chen discovered that his spirit was able to fuse with the mandala flower without any obstruction. Immediately after he had discovered that, obscure fluctuations surged into his heart.

This made Mu Chen feel something unique. He had a feeling that the mandala flower that emerged from the mysterious black paper had some intelligence of its own.

“Can you help me out?”

Mu Chen knew that he could not control this mysterious mandala flower right now. Therefore, he sent his thoughts over to see if they would have any effect.

Buzz.

Just as Mu Chen sent these thoughts over, the mandala flower actually started emitting brilliant purple lights. The beautiful and enchanting petals also blossomed slightly.

A golden magical engraving seemed to emerge on the petal. Then, these engravings shot out like a purple golden web and completely enveloped the Nine Nether Bird.

Chi Chi!

When the purple golden web enveloped the Nine Nether Bird, smoke erupted from the Nine Nether Bird's body. Its body struggled violently and it sent an angry thought over: "What the hell are you doing!"

Although it detected that that the two Soul Essences were also in pain while being constricted by the web, the Nine Nether Bird was also suppressed by it. It was as if the mandala flower planned on eliminating all of them.

"How should I know!" Mu Chen was also shocked by the scene that was occurring. He had no way of controlling the mandala flower.

"Don't hurt it!" Mu Chen gnashed his teeth and quickly sent a new thought to the mandala flower.

However, he quickly discovered that this thought of his played no effect. Although the mandala flower had a bit of intelligence, it did not have any wisdom. Since Mu Chen asked for it to help him, it felt that it had to eliminate anything that could harm him. Since the two Soul Essence had been ingested by the Nine Nether Bird, it planned on eliminating the Nine Nether Bird along with it.

"Hurry and spit out the Soul Essences! Otherwise, you'll be eliminated as well!" Mu Chen quickly thought of this point and shouted out.

"Their Spiritual Energy has already been fused into my body. How can I spit them out?!" The Nine Nether Bird responded furiously.

"You..." At this moment, even with Mu Chen's temper, he had the impulse to curse furiously. Did this damn bird have to be this impatient?

"Sooner or later, I'll be killed by you!"

Mu Chen gnashed his teeth and moved his body. His spirit directly entered the mandala flower and appeared on the back of the Nine Nether Bird. His hands touched the purple golden web and tried to remove it. After all, he was the owner of this body, and if that was the case, the mandala flower probably wouldn't hurt him, right?

The Nine Nether Bird was shocked by Mu Chen's action. A hint of complexion flashed through its eyes. This idiot. Why is he this stupid?

How could he charge in before figuring whether or not the purple golden web would hurt him?

When the purple golden web touched Mu Chen's body, it shuddered for a moment. Then, it directly phased through Mu Chen's tiny spirit form and continued to suppress the Nine Nether Bird.

"It's completely ignoring me." Mu Chen touched his unscathed body and said helplessly.

"It's planning to eliminate anything that could be a threat to you." The Nine Nether Bird actually turned calm. It stopped struggling and allowed the purple golden web to suppress it.

"You really deserve it!" Mu Chen cursed. This guy truly only had itself to blame.

"You dare curse at me!" The Nine Nether Bird was completely furious. It flapped its burning wings and directly sent Mu Chen flying away from its back. However, it was evident that it did not use much strength and Mu Chen landed gently in front of it.

When Mu Chen landed in front of the Nine Nether Bird, he asked helplessly: "What should we do then?"

The Nine Nether Bird glanced at him and became silent. It said: "It's not like there isn't a way. It's only attacking me because it recognizes that I am a threat to you. If I'm not a threat to you, it will probably stop its attack."

"Threat?" Mu Chen was stunned. He bitterly replied: "Then, could it be that I must ingest you?"

"Dream on. The Nine Nether Bird possesses the bloodline of the ancient Undying Bird. Even if it's a destroyed Soul Essence, we will never let a human ingest it. We would never let them control us!" The Nine Nether Bird shouted angrily.

Mu Chen let out a hollow laugh and responded: "I was only joking."

The Nine Nether Bird stared fiercely at Mu Chen and became silent

again. After a while, it finally spoke in a somewhat difficult voice: “Aside from ingesting me, there is actually another way.”

“What is it?” Mu Chen hurriedly asked.

A hint of struggle flashed through the Nine Nether Bird’s eyes. Then, as if it had made a major decision, it slowly closed its eyes.

“Bloodline Bond.”

Chapter 141: Bloodline Bond

"Bloodline Bond?"

Mu Chen seemed slightly stunned as he repeated these words slowly back to himself. Then, his eyes sparkled as he looked at the Nine Nether Bird and asked: "What's that?"

"It's something that only a member of an ancient Divine Beast's lineage can do. Simply put, it uses a special technique to link our bloodlines together."

"A benefit is that you will possess my abilities. This is a higher ranked method of obtaining a Spiritual Beast's abilities compared to simply ingesting the Soul Essence."

A faint thought was conveyed over by the Nine Nether Bird: "The disadvantage of this is that we will form a tight connection with each other. If you were to die, I would die as well. Similarly, if I die, you will die as well."

Mu Chen froze immediately and smiled bitterly: "Isn't this quite vicious?"

"Stop pretending. Although humans are able to increase their lifespan through cultivation, but based on an ordinary death, you are the ones that would definitely die first unless you somehow managed to cultivate to an extremely high level." The Nine Nether Bird said disdainfully.

"And you think that I'm willing to form a Bloodline Bond with an insect-like human? The Nine Nether Bird possesses the bloodline of the ancient Undying Bird. Compared to everything about you, it is many times more noble!"

"You don't even know how many people attempted to form a Bloodline Bond with us. Despite that, the Nine Nether Bird race has never done such a shameful act. If it wasn't for the fact that there isn't another method, I would never have suggested such a thing in the first place!"

A hint of anger was within the thought that was conveyed over. When

humans ingested a Soul Essence and erased the Spiritual Beast's will, it was one of the most despicable and lowly act of obtaining the Spiritual Beast's capabilities. However, a Bloodline Bond surpasses the act of ingesting in terms of method and potential.

This is because this was the only method that could fuse two bloodlines together, allowing the cultivator to use an extremely formidable power.

However, a Bloodline Bond requires agreement from both parties. To high rank existences, it was simply a disgrace for them to lay down their dignity and willingly form a Bloodline Bond with humans. Therefore, they would rather be completely obliterated instead of doing such a thing.

Mu Chen smiled helplessly. After all, this entire thing had happened because of the Nine Nether Bird. Who told it to be so greedy and to swallow two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts' Soul Essence at once?

From the sounds of it, the Bloodline Bond possesses many benefits to him. However, Mu Chen felt a bit off as he would have to bundle his life together with someone else.

"Do you agree or not? Stop acting so indecisive!" Seeing Mu Chen turn silent, the Nine Nether Bird spoke up immediately. It could feel the purple golden web gradually tightening on itself.

Mu Chen sighed and nodded. He immediately turned serious and said: "Although there isn't much meaning in me saying this, I would like to clarify that I do not have much desire to form this Bloodline Bond. I only promised because I owe you favor. And now, there is only one method of resolving this dilemma. Otherwise, no matter how many benefits I would obtain, I would not tie my life together with someone else."

The Nine Nether Bird was truly powerful. However, Mu Chen wasn't someone who would sacrifice something that he adheres to just for strength. He had confidence in himself. Perhaps he wasn't as powerful as the Nine Nether Bird currently, but he firmly believed in this sentence: Nobody could predict how powerful he would be in the future.

In the future, it was possible for him to surpass the Nine Nether Bird in strength.

The Nine Nether Bird grunted and did not make a rebuttal. It was not afraid of death; otherwise, it would not have directly face off against the Black Divine Lightning. After being together with Mu Chen, it had gradually come to understand him. The earlier act of Mu Chen touching the purple golden web without knowing whether or not it would harm him had made it feel a little bit touched. Thus, it believed that the person in front of it was at least a little bit better than the other despicable humans.

Thus, it proposed to form the Bloodline Bond. To a certain extent, it had recognized Mu Chen as an individual. Otherwise, it would rather die instead of making such a choice.

“Hurry. I don’t have much time.” Mu Chen urged the Nine Nether Bird.

“Leave the Bloodline Bond to me. If you have the slightest resistance or reluctance, it will cause the bond to fail. Also, you will only have one chance on performing this bond. Once it fails, we will never be able to form a bond again.” The Nine Nether Bird reminded Mu Chen.

“This method sure is harsh.” Mu Chen was slightly surprised and immediately nodded his head.

Seeing this, the Nine Nether Bird suddenly flapped its wings and a black flame erupted from its body. Then, it quickly formed into a black pattern between the two of them.

The black pattern formed by the black flames gave off an extremely mysterious feeling. It seemed to communicate with something mysterious within the human’s body.

“Place a drop of Blood Essence inside the black pattern.” The Nine Nether Bird said.

Hearing this, Mu Chen extended out a finger. A scarlet drop of blood shot out from his fingertips and landed inside the flaming black pattern.

Chi Chi.

As the fresh blood contaminated the black pattern, white mist erupted out in bursts. However, it did not evaporate away. Instead, it fused itself

inside the black pattern and slowly surged through the pattern. In the end, it occupied half of the black pattern.

A hint of seriousness filled the Nine Nether Bird's eyes at this moment. A black light flashed on its forehead as a drop of black blood escaped its body. Black flames seemed to be burning within this drop of blood.

This dark-black blood also fused into the black pattern and occupied the other half.

Buzz.

The two drops of blood each occupied half of the black flame pattern. Then, once the black pattern started to circulate, the two bloods actually made contact together.

Boom!

In the instant that the two bloods made contact with each other, Mu Chen and the Nine Nether Bird's body trembled. However, both their gazes remained firmly fixed on the circulating black pattern.

If it were to fail, the bond between the two of them would also fail. There were no other opportunities for succeeding this act anymore.

Fortunately, the two Blood Essences fused together quite smoothly. It was evident that the bird and human did not have any signs of resisting each other.

Buzzzz!

As the two Blood Essences fused, a brilliant light erupted out from the black pattern. Black flames rose and directly ignited the pattern.

Swish! Swish!

Two dark-red Blood Essences erupted out from the black flames and landed respectively on Mu Chen and the Nine Nether Bird's forehead. As the black flames surged, a black flame emblem slowly emerged and entered the depths of their bodies.

Once the black flame emblem entered the depths of their bodies, a mysterious feeling emerged in their hearts. This mysterious feeling made

it seem like that their life was shared between the two of them.

As Mu Chen looked at the Nine Nether Bird, the latter also stared at him. Both of their eyes showed a hint of complexion. The Bloodline Bond was a success. No matter what, from now on, they were both an important existence to each other.

Even if they had to risk their life, they must protect each other. This is because it is the same as protecting themselves.

Chi.

Suddenly, the purple golden web that caused severe pain on the Nine Nether Bird went through the Nine Nether Bird's body. This time, it did not cause any damages to it. Instead, the two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts' Soul Essences within the Nine Nether Bird's body had their wills erased.

Once it was aware of this situation, the Nine Nether Bird let out a sigh of relief. It stared hatefully at the mandala flower. It had truly lost its power and influence because of this. Thus, once it recovered, it would definitely treat it nicely!

"The will within the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon and Geocentric Flame Jalapura has been eliminated. Next up, we will ingest it together. However, the majority of the Spiritual Energy will belong to me. After all, you cannot bear such enormous Spiritual Energy." The Nine Nether Bird spoke.

"How fussy, why does it seem like you're a female?" Mu Chen raised his eyebrow and challenged it. He stared at the Nine Nether Bird and asked: "In the end, are you a male or a female? It seems that once a Spiritual Beast is strong enough, it can also shapeshift into a human shape, right?"

"None of your business!" As this was mentioned, the Nine Nether Bird immediately turned furious. It directly flapped its wings at Mu Chen. Since it had formed a Bloodline Bond with Mu Chen, the mandala flower no longer bound itself inside the cage. Its black wings passed through the light barrier and whacked at Mu Chen's spirit. This act sent Mu Chen's spirit flying away.

“Violent Bird.”

Mu Chen smiled and no longer provoked it. He began to help ingest the massive Spiritual Energy within the two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts’ Soul Essences...

While Mu Chen had his thoughts immersed inside his body, he did not sense that the outside danger had already enveloped him.

Outside of the mountain’s waterfall, sounds of winds breaking rang out as numerous figures rushed over. They finally emerged in the sky and found Mu Chen, who was sitting cross-legged near the waterfall.

“Hmph, we’ve finally found the boy. Let’s see how he can hide from us now!”

As they stared at Mu Chen’s figure, cold cries rang out. They were truly tired due to the one day chase. It was amazing how tough it was to deal with a boy, who was only at the Spirit Stage Initial Phase.

In front of the crowd, Xie Guan and the others stared coldly at Mu Chen’s figure. Spiritual Energy surged out as they prepared to attack.

“Swish!”

However, three figures quickly emerged in front of Mu Chen. It was Ye Qingling, Chu Qi and Fang Zhong. They had followed the pack closely. However, they never imagined that Mu Chen would be discovered. Thus, they were forced to appear.

“Chu Qi?”

Xie Guan stared at these three individuals and immediately frowned as he locked his gaze on Chu Qi: “Are you planning on protecting Mu Chen? I’d advise you not to do this, otherwise, you’ll be in trouble.”

Chu Qi sighed helplessly. He truly had nothing that he could say. Based on this guy’s actions, he would definitely erase Mu Chen’s symbol while taking the two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts’ Soul Essences.

“Everyone, let’s be lenient wherever it’s possible. How about letting us go if Mu Chen hands over the Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts’ Soul Essences?”

Fang Zhong asked. At this moment, they could only attempt to stall for time.

"Hmph, this boy is truly irritating. He made us waste so much of our time. How could we forgive him that easily? You should hurry and scram, otherwise, we'll deal with you as well!" Wu Hu, who had reached the Spirit Stage Late Phase, immediately turned cold as he shouted out loud.

"Then, we can't let you succeed either!" Chu Qi gritted his teeth and responded.

"You think you can stop us with the three of you?!"

Wu Hu sneered as he charged over. Dense Spiritual Energy surged out as it bombarded the trio.

"Together!"

Seeing Wu Hu attack, Chu Qi also shouted out. The three of them cooperated with each other and powerful Spiritual Energy collided against Wu Hu's attack.

Dong!

As the two attacks collided with each other, the Spiritual Energy shockwave directly caused numerous ripples to occur in the waterfall. However, Wu Hu's body only retreated back two steps while Chu Qi and the others retreated dozens of steps. At the same time, Ye Qingling, who was the weakest of the trio, turned slightly pale. After all, there was quite a bit of difference between a Spirit Stage Late Phase and her.

"All of you, SCRAM!"

Wu Hu charged out again. A punch was blasted out and sent Chu Qi and the others flying away. Then, he immediately appeared in front of Mu Chen and grinned: "Dogsh*t Blood Calamity Mu Chen, wake up!"

He grinned villainously and dense Spiritual Energy charged at Mu Chen's chest. It was evident that he was planning to force the latter to wake up from the state of cultivation.

Seeing this, Chu Qi and the others' expression changed. It was apparent

that Mu Chen was in the state of cultivation. If he was disturbed, it was likely that the Spiritual Energy would backlash on him, causing severe injuries.

"Swish!"

But just when their expressions changed drastically, a sharp sound of winds breaking resounded out from the distant horizon. Under Wu Hu's surprised gaze, a sharp, black light seemed to appear from the void and shot through his thighs, nailing him to the ground.

"AH!"

Screams resounded out from Wu Hu immediately.

This sudden change of events made the other Spirit Stage powerhouses' expressions change. They immediately shouted out: "Who?"

Every one of them lifted their heads as they stared at the distant horizon. From that location, a bright light was rushing over. In a couple of seconds, it turned into a figure of light as it landed in front of Mu Chen.

As Chu Qi stared at the slender figure, the corner of his eyes twitched rapidly. He could not believe what he was seeing.

This familiar figure...Was it Luo Li?

Chapter 142: Reunion

Rumbling sounds could be heard as the waterfall continued to pour down and fill the sky with mist.

At this moment while standing in the air above the waterfall, hundreds of figures had an expression of astonishment when they turned their gazes to the edge of the waterfall. A girl wearing a black dress suddenly emerged in their field of vision. She possessed a delicate ,beautiful face, and her clear glass-like eyes gave off a feeling of tranquility. Her supple, long hair flowed from the crown of her head, down like a waterfall to her slender waist. A gentle breeze blew, and her long hair swayed slightly.

Although she was standing there quietly and did not utter a single word, everybody at the scene, unbeknownst to each other, felt completely stunned.

On the ground beside her, Wu Hu's leg was nailed to the ground by a black longsword. He originally had a face filled with rage, but he retracted this furious gaze when he noticed the girl in a black dress in front of him. Instead, a hint of terror appeared in the depths of his eyes, and he quickly suppressed the curses that he was about to blurt out.

In the sky, Xie Guan and Qin Zheng's expressions also froze. It was evident that they recognized the girl in black dress who stood front of them. Although they had only seen this outstanding appearance and temperament once, it was firmly etched inside their minds and was impossible to erase.

In addition, they recalled the scene of her forcing back King Xuan, Ji Xuan, in the final stop of the Spiritual Road causing him to lose his chance of obtaining the Spirit Crown.

She...was actually at this place!

A strange silence suddenly appeared within the sky.

This silence lasted only for a moment before it was destroyed by a boy, who was in the Spirit Stage Initial Phase, that clearly had not participated

in the Spiritual Road. He looked at the girl in black dress and shouted: “Who are you? You actually dare help this boy? Are you planning to become enemies with so many of us?!”

“Shut up!” In the front of the group, Xie Guan fiercely turned his head back and yelled.

The Spirit Stage boy was completely stunned and his facial color constantly changing from blue to white and back. However, he did not dare to say another word. Then, he turned around and looked at the people next to him. He immediately discovered that all of them were staring at him strangely. This gaze made him shiver. Could it be that this beautiful girl in the black dress had some sort of background?

Next to the waterfall, the girl in black dress extended her slender hands and gripped the hilt of the sword which was still protruding from Wu Hu’s leg. Afterwards, she casually pulled it out.

Seeing this, Wu Hu hurriedly stopped the blood from flowing out. Immediately afterwards, he attempted to flee from the dangerous person in front of him.

“Don’t move.”

But just when he was about to move, the girl’s cold voice entered his ears. He was instantly terrified to the point of turning completely stiff and he did not even dare to make the slightest twitch.

“None of you as well,” She lifted her head and said slowly to the hundreds of figures in the sky.

Xie Guan’s expression froze. He immediately gritted his teeth and replied: “King Luo, if we have offended you in any way, we are willing to make amends.”

“You should not have chased after him.” A cold chill emerged in the girl’s clear eyes as she spoke to Xie Guan and the others.

Xie Guan’s face immediately changed. Could it be that Mu Chen had some sort of relationship with Luo Li? How is this possible? Wasn’t he kicked out of the Spiritual Road early on? How could it be possible that he

formed a connection with Luo Li?

"So he was King Luo's friend." Qin Zheng let out a hollow laugh and spoke: "If we knew about this, we wouldn't have dared attack him. Speaking of which, this is all a misunderstanding."

Xie Guan also clenched his teeth and his heart was filled with unwillingness. When Luo Li had appeared, it had already become near impossible for them to obtain the Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast's Symbol. This is because he knew how powerful that beautiful girl in front of them was. A person who could gravely injure a heaven-sent child like Ji Xuan wasn't someone that they could fight against.

"Since you've already chased him over here, then I'll have you stay here temporarily." Luo Li replied.

Xie Guan's heart sank as he gritted his teeth and said: "King Luo, are you planning to attack us?"

Luo Li glanced at him for a moment and replied faintly: "Although I really want to get rid of you directly by myself, he might hold a grudge towards me for doing so. Therefore, all of you are going to remain here. After all, he does not like it when I intervene with something like this."

Once Xie Guan heard this, he immediately felt delighted. As long as Luo Li remains passive, they would not fear Mu Chen.

Xie Guan and the others exchanged gazes with each and secretly nodded. They remained at their location honestly and did not dare to retreat.

Seeing this scene, a few Spirit Stage individuals behind them felt that something was off. Although they did not know how powerful the girl in black dress was, they knew from Xie Guan and the others' expressions that these powerful cultivators greatly feared her.

"It's best to run away quickly." A few Spirit Stage Initial Phase students exchanged gazes with each other and retreated quickly from the scene.

"Idiot!" When Xie Guan heard the sounds of winds breaking behind him, he was extremely surprised and cursed out loud. Then, they noticed Luo Li

lifting up her slim eyebrow as she slowly lifted up the black longsword in her hand and let out a few gentle thrusts.

The air immediately rumbled and after-images appeared on top of the black longsword. Then, a sharp sword beam, that was impossible to detect with the naked eye, seemed to rip through the void.

Chi Chi!

In the far distant location, the Spirit Stage students that retreated instantly froze and fear emerged in their eyes. This is because they detected that the symbol on their forehead had shattered at this moment. A beam of light immediately formed and enveloped them as it transported them away.

As Xie Guan and the others stared at the twinkling beams of light behind them, their heart jumped fiercely. Even the Spirit Stage students that did not move were completely covered with cold sweat. Only now did they understand how terrifying that the girl in black dress was.

"Anybody that moves will have the same fate as them." Luo Li's eyes gently swept across the crowd. However, this action was enough to make them completely shiver and they did not dare to resist at all.

In the rear, Ye Qingling stared eagerly at Luo Li, who had completely frightened, with her own strength, hundreds of Spirit Stage students so bad that they did not dare to move. As expected from King Luo.

Next to her, Chu Qi was firmly staring at the figure passionately. His eyes were completely filled with excitement. If it wasn't for Fang Zhong pulling him back, he would probably have rushed over already.

At this moment, Luo Li still had her slender hand grasping the black longsword. However, she slowly turned away from the crowd once she confirmed that she had frightened everybody. She did not care about the other individuals and locked her gaze firmly on the boy, who was sitting cross-legged in front of her.

Suddenly, she ignored the crowd and gently sat down in front of Mu Chen. Her glass-like eyes twinkled as she stared quietly at the familiar

face.

After being separated for roughly two years, he seemed to have matured a bit. However, a calm smile still remained on his handsome face.

"I've waited so long for your arrival..."

She extended her slender hand and gently touched Mu Chen's face. A warm and gentle smile slowly emerged from the corner of her lips. At this moment, her calm and serene eyes seemed to be filled with a brilliant light.

She did not know when it happened, but because of his appearance, the pitched-black world, in which she only cared about cultivation, had become completely dazzling and filled with expectations.

Even the boring and uninteresting Spiritual Road had become something that she had enjoyed.

"At least you weren't stupid and knew that you had to enter the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy..."

The girl laughed gently. That smile even caused the sound of majestic waterfall to dim considerably. In the rear, Chu Qi's eyes that were originally filled with obsession suddenly turned bitter.

She really liked him.

In the sky, Xie Guan and the others noticed the intimate actions of Luo Li, and their hearts immediately sank. Judging from this, it was evident that their relationship wasn't simply just friends...

While Luo Li quietly sat in front of Mu Chen, her slender hand finally relaxed and let go of the black longsword as she placed it on top of her slim legs. Yet while doing so, her gaze had always remained on Mu Chen's body.

Thus, everybody felt that the scene here had become particularly strange. In the sky, a large group of individuals remained completely motionless and had their gazes completely fixated on the slender figure. Yet the figure sat quietly as she watched the boy who was cultivating.

Time passed slowly just like this. Approximately half an hour later, Mu Chen gradually opened his tightly closed eyes.

As the world in front of his eyes turned bright, Mu Chen twisted his neck slightly. But soon after, his face froze instantly as he stared at the girl in black dress that was smiling at him with her red lips.

That elegant and familiar face was still so very attractive.

Mu Chen blinked and could not help but rub his eyes for a bit as he muttered: “Did I really think about her that much? This must be an illusion, right?”

It was evident that girl in front of him had heard his murmur. Thus, her lips suddenly sprang up. Her heart, which could remain calm in face of any circumstances, suddenly bloomed like a flower. It burned passionately and delight slowly seeped out from within.

She held onto the hilt of the black longsword and the scabbard gently poked Mu Chen’s chest. She smiled and asked: “Do you need me to stab you a couple of times?”

Mu Chen’s eyes widened a little bit more. In the depths of his eyes, a hint of happiness surged out. He immediately laughed and extended his arms to embrace the girl in front of him.

The girl seemed shocked by this action of his. As her sword was touching Mu Chen’s chest, she could have easily blocked Mu Chen with her current strength by utilizing Spiritual Energy. But once she noticed the joy within the boy’s eyes, her eyes also softened. She held the sword hilt in front of her chest, while she allowed herself to be hugged.

When Mu Chen embraced the slender waistline, he buried his face into her supple long hair and took a deep breath as he muttered: “Luo Li, I’ve finally found you again...”

Since the day that he had departed from the Spiritual Road, he had always been waiting for the arrival of this day. In order for it to happen, he had paid a great price.

Luo Li’s glass-like eyes softened as she could feel Mu Chen’s efforts over

the past two years. In the Spiritual Road, a heaven-sent child was suddenly kicked out. Thinking about it, he must have suffered a lot of pressure when he went back.

Although he always had a calm smile plastered on his face, under that smile she knew how tired he was and how much hardship he had faced.

Her hands gentled extended out and wrapped around Mu Chen's waist. Then, she slowly muttered deep down inside.

Mu Chen, I'm also happy that I was able to see you again

Chapter 143: Resolve

At the edge of the rushing waterfall, a boy hugged a girl while the sun rays descended onto their bodies. This scene was so beautiful, it could have been a painting.

In the sky, the faces of Xie Guan and the others started to twitch as they watched this scene. Since it had come to this, only a fool would believe that Mu Chen had an ordinary relationship with Luo Li.

Although they did not have much contact with Luo Li before, they knew how unapproachable this girl, who had stood at the pinnacle in the Spiritual Road, was. It was as if she maintained a distance with everyone. Her clear eyes were not cold, yet they stopped everyone from approaching her.

They had never heard of this heaven-sent girl, who was coveted by numerous talented geniuses within the Spiritual Road, having any intimate contact with the opposite sex. Not to mention this kind of scene, where she was hugged by someone else...

At this moment, Xie Guan and the others stared complicatedly at Mu Chen and their eyes were filled with pure jealousy. They knew how outstanding Luo Li was. Therefore, they could only watch and stare at such a girl from afar. However, a certain person was holding her in his arms and enjoying her unique warmth and fragrance.

“Cough.”

Behind Mu Chen and the others, Ye Qingling suddenly let out a gentle cough. If she did not interrupt them, who knows how long the two of them would remain like this. Moreover, doesn’t Mu Chen know that such an open display would be extremely aggravating to others?

Ye Qingling glanced at Chu Qi, who was beside her. The latter was gritting his teeth and held an expression of wanting to rip Mu Chen to shreds. But fortunately, he was pulled back tightly by Fang Zhong.

If he were to rush up right now, it was highly likely that he would be

dealt with by a single slash from Luo Li.

After hearing the coughing sounds coming from the rear, Mu Chen gradually recovered his senses. He immediately separated himself gently from Luo Li, and his eyes swept across the sky. There was a strange atmosphere coming from the crowd that had been awkwardly standing there. Once they noticed Mu Chen's gaze, they hurriedly turned their heads and evaded it. The viciousness that they once had when they were chasing him had completely vanished...

Mu Chen glanced at Luo Li and understood roughly what had happened. He smiled: "It seems that your strength has increased greatly during these two years."

Luo Li only smiled and replied: "If you experienced the final battle within the Spiritual Road, you would probably be at this level as well."

"How can there be so many 'ifs'?"

Mu Chen stood up and said: "However, even without that opportunity, I will still be able to catch up."

As he spoke, he directed a smile at Luo Li. "Moreover, there are so many people that like you. Since they are all quite powerful, it will probably be even more troublesome when we enter the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Therefore, I'm afraid that trouble would continue to find us if I don't hurry up."

Luo Li gave a shallow smile as she replied: "It's fine. I can protect you. Just like the time you protected me in the Spiritual Road."

"I'm not that weak." Mu Chen lifted his head and stared at the Xie Guan and the others, who were acting unnaturally. He gave a faint smile and asked: "Did you leave them for me?"

"It can't be helped. I don't wish to be complained to by a certain someone I know." Luo Li bit her red lips with her teeth. The eyes that were staring at Mu Chen carried a rare hint of grievance. She said: "You were always like that. You would not let others intervene in your matters."

Mu Chen smiled bitterly. He knew that she was talking about the matter

within the Spiritual Road.

"It's not that I didn't let you intervene. It's because I knew that there would be a great price to pay. There are some things that a man should endure instead." Mu Chen sighed and a hint of coldness flashed through his eyes.

"That matter was secretly caused by Ji Xuan." Luo Li's slender hands tightened as she gripped onto the sword hilt as she muttered.

"I know." Mu Chen smiled. He stared at the delicate face of the girl in front of him and slowly replied: "However, even if I knew that it was set up by him, I would still have done the same thing. After all, there are rules that a person has within their hearts that should not be violated."

Luo Li looked at his eyes, and her red lips turned upwards slightly around the edges. A hint of gentleness flashed through her serene eyes. The Mu Chen's crazy actions during the Spiritual Road had made her understand a lot of things. This is why she came to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy without any hesitation.

"The Spiritual Road is only the beginning. We will finally have a true fight now that we've entered the Five Great Academies." Mu Chen smiled. The handsome smile on his face revealed a bit of anticipation.

"I hope that he can give me some sort of surprise. Otherwise, it will be quite dull during our training within the Five Great Academies. This time, let us have a good fight."

"I'll help you." Luo Li gently spoke.

"Of course you will. If you don't help me, I'll have to spank you." Mu Chen chuckled.

A tinge of crimson emerged on Luo Li's exquisite face. She glared angrily at Mu Chen. If someone else said that to her, she would probably have instantly stabbed them with her sword. But because the person in front of her was Mu Chen, she was reluctant to do so.

"But right now, you should still deal with the current situation."

Mu Chen smiled. Then, he directed this smile towards Xie Guan and the others: “Everybody, was it fun chasing after me?”

Xie Guan and the others had an unnatural expression. Their gazes were fixed on Luo Li, who was beside Mu Chen. At the moment, they were a little bit at a loss on whether or not they should speak up. It was obvious that they were quite afraid of Luo Li.

“Say whatever you want. She will not intervene.” Mu Chen smiled faintly. He knew that Xie Guan and the others were scorning him.

“Hmph. If you want me to say it, then I’ll say it. It’s not like I’m afraid of you.”

Xie Guan finally could not endure holding back in front of this many individuals. He sneered: “We are indeed afraid of King Luo. However, we’re not afraid of you. To be blunt, if it wasn’t for King Luo, do you think that you would have the right to be so arrogant in front of us? Blood Calamity? A person that was assessed as a King Class? You think that you can act like this with your strength only being at Spirit Stage Initial Phase?

Luo Li’s eyebrows were raised slightly. Her slender fingers could not help but flick at the sword’s scabbard. At this moment, a hint of coldness flashed through her glass-like eyes.

“I’d like to clarify that I’m currently at Spirit Stage Middle Phase.” Mu Chen smiled. Although the majority of the two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast’s Soul Essences were absorbed by the Nine Nether Bird, the remnants of it was enough for him to reach the Spirit Stage Middle Phase.

“Pu.”

Xie Guan and the others let out a mocking laugh as he quipped: “Does that make a difference?”

The three of them were genuine Spirit Stage Late Phase powerhouses. In their eyes, Mu Chen’s Spirit Stage Middle Phase was not much better than Spirit Stage Initial Phase.

Behind the trio, a few Spirit Stage students also agreed. Although the level of this strength wasn’t bad, it wasn’t enough to frighten them.

“I think that there’s quite a bit of difference.”

Mu Chen smiled at the trio. However, his black eyes did not carry a hint of a smile within them. He spoke: “Next up, I’ll let you three play around with me for a while. That is, if you’re capable of doing so.”

Xie Guan and the others were stunned. These words of Mu Chen meant that he wanted to play around with the three of them by himself? With his Spirit Stage Middle Phase strength, a single person would be enough to deal with him. Wasn’t he just seeking his own death by wanting to fight against three of them by himself?

The three of them exchanged gazes with each other. However, their eyes quickly floated towards Luo Li, who was beside Mu Chen.

“If you don’t enjoy being his opponent, I’m willing to exchange places with him.” Luo Li said faintly as she glanced at the trio.

“Ohoho, since you have such courage, we wouldn’t be giving you face if we avoid you.” Hearing this, Xie Guan and the others instantly relaxed and replied.

“Oi, Mu Chen, what are you doing?” Seeing this, Ye Qingling hurriedly walked over and asked. These three were powerhouses at the level of the Spirit Stage Late Phase. Even if Mu Chen had made a breakthrough earlier, he was still only at the Spirit Stage Middle Phase. How would it be possible for him to fight against three of them by himself? This guy was usually pretty smart, why is he being so foolish now? Could it be that he wanted to show off in front of Luo Li?

Luo Li looked at Ye Qingling, who had a worried expression on her face. Then, her glass-like eyes focused themselves onto Mu Chen again, and her gaze seemed to convey an unsettled expression. Hmph, this bastard, there’s no shortage of pretty girls beside him.

When Mu Chen noticed Luo Li’s gaze, he could only smile helplessly. Then, he turned towards Ye Qingling and laughed: “Relax, I know what I’m doing.”

Seeing this, Ye Qingling didn’t say anything more. However, her eyes

glowed when she turned her line of sight towards Luo Li: “You are King Luo, right? I can finally look at you from such a close range. I have come to worship you a lot.”

It seemed this was the first time that Luo Li had met such a girl that was this enthusiastic about her. She hesitated slightly before nodding: “Hello.”

“Hello, I’m Ye Qingling...”

Mu Chen glanced at Ye Qingling, who was extremely excited and was completely speechless. So she was one of Luo Li’s fans? He shook his head helplessly and ignored the two of them. Immediately afterwards, he took two steps forward and stared at the trio in the sky: “If you are able to block one of my attacks, I’ll forget about what was done earlier. If you fail to do so, then leave your symbols behind. I’m currently lacking them.”

Hearing this, Xie Guan and the others let out a cold laugh. This guy really is mad. Did he really just treat us as if they were little dogs or cats? How is it possible that he could deal with us so easily!?

“Then we’ll ask for guidance from the famous and well-renowned Blood Calamity, Mu Chen!” The three of them laughed. Their laughs were filled with mocking sarcasm.

Mu Chen smiled and completely ignored their sarcastic laughs. Then, he slowly closed his eyes.

When the crowd of Spirit Stage students noticed Mu Chen’s actions, they were stunned. However, before they could say anything, they noticed that a Spiritual Seal was rapidly emerging from Mu Chen’s palms.

“A Spiritual Seal? He’s actually a Spiritual Array Master?!” A hint of surprise flashed through the crowd.

Xie Guan and the others still had a sneer on their faces. However, their expressions soon turned serious. This is because they noticed that the amount of Spiritual Seals within Mu Chen’s hand had actually surpassed 30.

Normally, a Spiritual Array that required a total of 35 Spiritual Seals was enough to be a threat towards Spirit Stage Late Phase powerhouses.

“Buzz.”

Their gazes were gradually turning even more serious, as they noticed the amount of Spiritual Seals within Mu Chen’s hand had already reached 35 Seals. Moreover, it showed no signs of stopping.

36 Seals!

38 Seals!

40 Seals!

When the amount of Spiritual Seals in Mu Chen’s hand had reached 40, the Spirit Stage students all took a deep breath. Shock quickly filled their eyes.

40 Spiritual Seals!

Finally, at this moment, Xie Guan and the others’ expressions changed completely.

Chapter 144: Might of the Dragon Elephant Array

“Buzz!”

All of the 40 Spiritual Seals let out a tremor as they condensed in Mu Chen’s hands. Then, spiritual fluctuations emitted and caused further vibrations in the surrounding air.

At this moment, everybody was shocked by the 40 Spiritual Seals. Even Ye Qingling, Chu Qi and Fang Zhong were stunned. Since when did Mu Chen have such a powerful technique?

Even among the Rank 2 Spiritual Arrays, a Spiritual Array that consisted of 40 Spiritual Seals was considerably powerful. Its might was something that even an ordinary Spirit Stage Late Phase powerhouse would have to evade.

While watching this scene quietly occur in front of her eyes, Luo Li let out a gentle smile.

Swish!

Once Mu Chen flipped his hand around, the 40 Spiritual Seals instantly integrated themselves into the air. At the same time, the surrounding air quickly became distorted. A faint dark-golden light started to emit from the air.

Roar!

While the space was becoming distorted, a faint dragon’s roar resounded and shook the mountains.

In the sky nearby, Xie Guan and the others’ expressions had turned completely serious. The contempt-filled expression that they initially had, finally faded away. From the Spiritual Array, they could feel something that was able to threaten them.

“Let’s do this together!”

The three of them exchanged gazes and completely gave up on their

pride. With a shout, dense Spiritual Energy erupted from the trio's bodies. Directly behind them, the light of their illusory Spiritual Beasts emerged. It was apparent that these were the Spiritual Beasts' Soul Essences that they had ingested. Judging from the density of their Spiritual Energy, it should be powerful Spiritual Beasts that are roughly in the 100s of the Myriad Beast Record.

In order to block Mu Chen's powerful Spiritual Array attack, the trio did not dare to hold back.

"Buzz!"

A dark-golden light quickly emanated out from above Mu Chen. It finally turned into a massive dark-golden Spiritual Array. Then, the Spiritual Array slowly circulated, and beams of dark-golden lights intertwined together emanating mysterious fluctuations.

Judging from its appearance, this intertwining Spiritual Array seemed to be occupied by a dragon and an elephant, which guarded the heavens and the earth.

Finally, Mu Chen's tightly closed eyes slowly reopened. He extended his slender fingers, and tapped the air as he quietly muttered: "Dragon Elephant Array!"

Boom!

As if it was a dark-golden sun, a fierce burst of dazzling, dark-golden light emerged from the array. Then massive dark-golden beams of light erupted from the Spiritual Array.

Roar!

When the light beams shot out, they intertwined with each other and finally formed a roaring dragon and a gigantic elephant whose bodies were made entirely of gold. As the dragon and elephant galloped over, the sky seemed to tremble from their impact.

Spiritual Energy that covered the world rushed over towards the trio.

In the rear, the crowd of Spirit Stage students had pale expressions as

they watched the mighty dragon and elephant. From what they felt, they knew that this power could instantly obliterate them.

"Dong!"

At this moment, Xie Guan and the two other individuals let out their attacks together. With a cry, dense Spiritual Energy formed into three Spiritual Energy pillars and pierced through the sky. With an extraordinary atmosphere, it collided fiercely with the dragon and elephant.

BOOM!

Spiritual Energy shockwaves, visible to even the naked eye, expanded from the explosion. Even the air seemed to be displaced by these shockwaves. This caused bursts of gales to rampage through the forest.

"Dragon Elephant Suppression!"

As this occurred, a hint of coldness flashed through Mu Chen's black eyes. He quietly shouted deep down inside as he changed the seals formed with his hand.

Boom!

Faster than the eye could see, the dragon and elephant fused together and formed into a dark-golden disc. On top of the disc, a golden dragon was surging through the air as the golden elephant set foot on the ground. The aura it produced was simply shocking.

Bang!

When the suppression of the dark-golden light disc descended, the light pillars formed from Xie Guan and the others started to break. Instantly, their faces turned completely pale, and their expressions were filled with horror.

In the end, the Spiritual Energy pillars were completely shattered and the dark-golden light disc turned into lights, which rushed out and fiercely collided with the trio's bodies.

Puchi.

At this moment, the trio's expressions were pale as they spat out a mouthful of blood. Their aura quickly weakened and they started to stagger.

The crowd of Spirit Stage students' expressions changed drastically when they became aware of the fact that the combined attack of Xie Guan and the two other Spirit Stage Late Phase powerhouses failed to completely stop the Spiritual Array's power. Terror emerged in the depths of their eyes.

The power of this Spiritual Array was actually this terrifying?

Xie Guan and the others were completely pale as they exchanged gazes with each other. Their eyes flashed and they fiercely rushed away. It was evident that they planned on leaving.

"Swish!"

But just when their bodies showed some movement, a slender figure appeared from the rear. Then, a black longsword gently stopped in front of them.

"If you want to be disqualified, then feel free to take another step." Luo Li glanced at the trio and replied faintly.

The trio instantly stiffened and cold sweat trickled down their foreheads. They smiled bitterly and the symbol on their foreheads twinkled. A Rank 7 and two Rank 6 symbols immediately let up and 3 Spiritual lights rushed towards Mu Chen, who was below them.

At this moment, Mu Chen did not hesitate and absorbed the three Spiritual lights. The originally dim symbol instantly became filled with light. However, even after absorbing the three symbols, Mu Chen's symbol remained at the level of a Rank 7 Symbol. It was evident that it was becoming increasingly difficult to rank up the symbol once it reached the late stages. If he wanted to increase it to Rank 8 or Rank 9, it would be even more difficult than Rank 7.

"Ohoho, I'll have to thank the three of you for handing over such a big gift to me." Mu Chen cupped his hands in thanks towards Xie Guan and

the others as he spoke.

The trio's faces immediately twitched and revealed a smile filled with bitterness. Although they were constantly cursing Mu Chen within their hearts, they did not dare mutter out loud.

At this location, not only was there the terrifying King Luo, even Mu Chen, whom they had originally thought was weak, revealed an extraordinary power. The Spiritual Array that he had used earlier wasn't something that the three of them together could stop.

"That guy really is tough..." At this moment, the trio had eyes filled with bitterness. This time, they tried to seize an opportunity only to end up much worse than they started. In order to increase their symbols to such a level, they had to pay with great effort. However, all of this effort was handed over to Mu Chen.

"Goodbye, you three. I won't send you off." Mu Chen didn't bother talking with them as he let out a faint laugh.

"Mu Chen, you shouldn't act too cocky. Although you have King Luo protecting you, there is more than one "King" from the Spiritual Road within this Northern Heavens World. Once you approach the Northern Heavens Hall, let's see how cocky you can be!" Xie Guan gritted his teeth as he let out a sneer filled with unwillingness. Then, he did not dare to remain at this location and quickly fled into the distance.

"So there are other Kings..." Mu Chen smiled. A hint of coldness flashed through the depths of his eyes. No matter who it was, if they believed that they could step on Mu Chen because he was kicked out of the Spiritual Road midway, he did not mind letting them understand that the Spiritual Road's Empowerment didn't give them the overwhelming advantage that they had imagined.

"Everyone, are you not going to leave? Could it be that all of you are planning to hand over your symbols to me?" Mu Chen stared coldly at the Spirit Stage students in the air as he did not have a favorable impression of these people. However, he did not force them to hand over their symbols. If he did so, it was possible that he would be easily cornered by

them. After all, it was quite troubling to deal with so many people.

The Spirit Stage students in the air all let out a hollow laugh and did not dare to refute. They immediately rushed away and in a few seconds, the sky was completely empty.

When Mu Chen noticed the empty sky, he also let out a breath of relief.

Luo Li descended from the sky and stood beside Mu Chen.

"Brother Chu, Brother Fang. This time, I'll have to thank you." Mu Chen turned around to stare at Chu Qi and Fang Zhong, who had complicated expressions, as he cupped his fists as thanks. Since they were willing to stand out and help him at that crucial moment, even if it wasn't too beneficial, Mu Chen would still remember this favor from them.

Fang Zhong smiled as he shook his head. On the other hand, Chu Qi completely ignored Mu Chen and his eyes were firmly fixed on Luo Li. His mouth moved and he asked with a reddened face: "Luo Li, a...are you alright these days?"

Luo Li glanced at Chu Qi and raised her eyebrows. She thought for a moment before asking: "Do we know each other?"

Puchi.

From the side, Ye Qingling could not help but laugh. Fang Zhong also had a grin on his face as he stared sympathetically at Chu Qi. What a poor guy...

Chu Qi scratched his head and replied embarrassedly: "We've met in the Spiritual Road before. You've even saved me once..."

When Luo Li heard this, she nodded slightly. But when they judged the look on her face, everybody wondered if she had attempted to recall this memory. However, this was her personality. She would always adopt an uncaring attitude towards the things that she did not care about.

"Brother Chu, Brother Fang. It's all thanks to your help that I've managed to successfully hunt the two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts. I'll let you have this Mysterious Spirithail Dragon." Mu Chen waved his hand

and the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon's massive body emerged on the ground in front of them.

"Thank you, Brother Mu." Seeing this, Fang Zhong was completely delighted and cupped his hands in thanks.

"Also, there's also two Spiritual Auras for our symbols. I'll divide one to the two of you." Mu Chen flicked his fingers and an icy-blue Spiritual Aura surged out. Judging from the Spiritual Aura coming from the Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast, it was probably enough for a symbol to rank up to Rank 7 completely from Rank 1.

Although Mu Chen could probably reach Rank 8 Symbol if he absorbed these two Spiritual Auras, he wasn't a person who would seize all the benefits for himself. Since he had absorbed the two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts' Essences, he had already obtained a massive benefit.

Seeing that Mu Chen was willing to hand over the Symbol's Spiritual Aura to them as well, he was filled with joy that he couldn't even close his mouth probably and hurriedly divided it with Chu Qi. This is because their symbols were already at Rank 6. Once they absorbed it, they would have ranked up to Rank 7.

After handing these items to Fang Zhong, Mu Chen looked at Ye Qingling and handed over the other Spiritual Aura. He said embarrassedly: "I originally planned on giving you one of the Spiritual Beasts' Soul Essences, but something came up and it's all gone."

Ye Qingling smiled as he took the Spiritual Aura and said: "It's fine. Although it's unfortunate that the Soul Essences are gone, I'm still quite satisfied with just this."

"I've hunted a Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast before. Luckily for you, there's one Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence remaining. It's also quite compatible with you." Luo Li's glass-like eyes blinked and she suddenly extended her hand. A clump of light surged out and from within the clump of lights, there seemed to be a snowy-white unicorn.

"Is this the Jaded Unicorn that's ranked 87th on the Myriad Beast Record's Earth Ranking?" Ye Qingling stared at the snowy-white Soul

Essence and was shocked. She hurriedly replied: “It’s too precious. I can’t accept it.”

“You’ve helped him out. Consider this as my thanks.” Luo Li smiled faintly and placed the Soul Essence within Ye Qingling’s hands.

“I’ve helped him out, yet you were the one that thanked me. King Luo really is virtuous.” Ye Qingling glanced mischievously at Luo Li and said: “Your relationship is pretty good.”

Mu Chen also smiled. Between him and Luo Li, they naturally would not pay attention to these things. He immediately waved and said: “Let’s go. We’ll head back now. Mo Ling and the others are probably quite anxious. Once we find them, we should probably head to the most inner territory of the Northern Heavens Hall...”

“Only that place will be truly lively.”

Chapter 145: Old Rival

In the Ye Clan's campground, cheers filled with excitement instantly broke out when Mo Ling and the others saw Mu Chen, Ye Qingling and the rest returning.

A while ago, information about Mu Chen being chased by others was circulated around. Thus, all of them knew about it and had been extremely worried. Although they knew how powerful Mu Chen was, the situation wasn't the same as before. The large force that was chasing after him was far too terrifying. Therefore, they were quite worried. If something were to happen to Mu Chen, Ye Qingling and the oters, who stole many of the symbols of them, would probably cause the downfall of the Ye Clan.

"Sister!"

Sun'Er hurriedly rushed over and dove headfirst into Ye Qingling's arms. The latter hugged her as she smiled.

"Brother Mu!"

Mo Ling and the others also gathered around quickly. Their faces were filled with excitement. But just when they were about to speak, they noticed the girl in black dress behind Mu Chen. Due to her appearance, the group of boys was completely stunned.

The girl in the black dress possessed a delicate, beautiful appearance. That appearance had even surpassed Ye Qingling's. Moreover, the temperament that she radiated was also magnificent. Her glass-like eyes were calm and serene. They gave an intoxicating feeling to everybody who staring into them.

Although Mo Ling and the others had seen many beautiful girls before, it was the first time that they seen such a breathtaking beauty. In that instant, the youthful boys all held back from speaking and hesitated, tongue-tied in front of this beauty.

"You shouldn't have any undesirable thoughts. This person is a big shot. Moreover, someone already obtained her. If you dare have any thoughts

about her, you would have to be careful of Mu Chen beating you up you up to the point where you're like a pig." Ye Qingling covered her mouth as she laughed.

As Luo Li's charisma was something that could even influence the usually calm Ye Qingling, it was not shocking that it affected Mo Ling and the others.

"Ah?"

At this moment, the crowd all let out a cry. Then, envious gazes were shot towards Mu Chen. Contrary to this, Mo Ling scratched his head instead as he asked: "Brother Mu, when did you find such a beauty? Sister Qian'Er would be sad if she knew."

Hearing this, Mu Chen's heart suddenly jumped. This brat truly was speaking carelessly.

"Who is Sister Qian'Er?" As expected, Luo Li approached Mo Ling as her clear eyes glanced at Mu Chen. Then, she asked with a smile.

Mo Ling's face instantly turned red and replied hesitantly: "It's a friend of ours in the Northern Spiritual Realm. She grew up together with Brother Mu."

"Oh, so it's a childhood friend." Luo Li's slender hands gently pinched Mu Chen's palm as she spoke.

When Mu Chen noticed Luo Li's expression, he was quite interested. After all, he was accustomed to her uncaring and indifferent expression. Thus, this was the first time that he saw such an expression as well.

"Let's go. Don't be jealous."

Mu Chen smiled and held Luo Li's warm and slender hand as he headed inside the camp: "Everybody should prepare themselves. We will leave tomorrow and head to the innermost region of the Northern Heavens World. However, everybody can relax. I will not let anyone here be eliminated."

Since Mu Chen had already mixed together with the tiny Ye Clan for a

while, he had a little bit of feeling towards it. Thus, he didn't mind helping them out.

"Brother Mu is amazing!"

When the members of the Ye Clan heard this, they instantly rejoiced and shouted out excitedly. With Mu Chen's word, they wouldn't have to worry about their symbols not reaching the required rank and, thus, be eliminated.

On the other hand, Luo Li's face turned slightly red as she was dragged away by Mu Chen under many people's gazes. She struggled for a moment, but Mu Chen held onto her tightly. In the end, she could only allow him to do what he wanted...

As the evening sky enveloped them, a bonfire rose up within the campground, causing it to be extremely lively.

In the corner of the campground, Mu Chen and Luo Li were sitting alone beside a bonfire. Although gazes would be constantly directed over secretly, nobody came to disturb them.

Luo Li's slender hands were holding onto the spit rack as the dazzling roasted meat emitted out an enticing aroma above the fire. Compared to what Mu Chen usually made, it was many times better in terms of smell and taste.

"Here." Seeing Mu Chen stare enviously at it, Luo Li could not help but laugh as she handed the roasted meat over.

"I can finally eat what Lord King Luo had personally made again." Mu Chen accepted and let out a sigh. This taste was truly something that he had missed.

Hearing Mu Chen tease her, Luo Li batted an eye at him. However, the corner of her lips gently lifted up and revealed the joy within her heart. As long as she was together with him, even the tiniest things made her happier than when she hunted down Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts by herself.

While she sat elegantly next to the bonfire, her black dress outlined her

slender body. Then, she quietly watched Mu Chen voraciously devour the meat as her thin fingers released the ribbon on her hair. As she did, her long silver hair fell down and released a dazzling luster underneath the glow of the fire.

"When will your hair turn back?" Mu Chen quickly finished the roasted meat and casually asked as he glanced at Luo Li's hair. He could vaguely recall that he had once asked Luo Li about the color of her hair. Back then, she had mentioned that it was the result of the Gong Fa Spiritual Art that she had trained in.

"What? Do you not like it?" Luo Li was slightly startled and attempted to asked casually.

"How could I dare say such a thing? If I mention that I don't like it, you will ignore me for a few days." Mu Chen couldn't help but laugh. Back then, he had mentioned that it would have looked better if it was black. In response, Luo Li gave a noncommittal smile towards him. But during the next three days, Mu Chen had to take care of his own food supplies. Thus, after this punishment, Mu Chen didn't dare talk about the color of her hair.

"Speaking about the Spiritual Road, who was the one to obtain the Spirit Crown?" Mu Chen wiped his mouth and asked Luo Li.

The so-called Spirit Crown was the utmost glory and honor one could obtain within the Spiritual Road. However, the only ones that were eligible to obtain it were people that were assessed as King Class. It was also the most dazzling moment within the entire Spiritual Road.

Regarding about this, Mu Chen had actually been looking forward to it prior to him being kicked out of the Spiritual Road. After all, the individuals that participated in this dazzling moment were ones standing at the pinnacle of Spiritual Road. His blood boiled as he thought that he would be able to compete with them.

"In the end, the Spirit Crown ended up in Wen Qingxuan's hands." Luo Li replied.

"Wen Qingxuan? A girl?" Mu Chen was quite surprised. The Spiritual

Road was quite huge and since he had been kicked out midway, he was a bit unfamiliar with a few people who stood at the pinnacle of the Spiritual Road. At the very least, he had never heard about this Wen Qingxuan.

"She is quite powerful. Currently, she entered the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy. You will probably have the opportunity to meet her in the future." Luo Li nodded. If it wasn't for the fact that she was filled with anger and had kept a constant watch on Ji Xuan, she would have probably faced Wen Qingxuan. However, Ji Xuan wasn't someone weak. Although she managed to push him back in the end, she had also ended up paying a heavy price.

"As expected of the Five Great Academies. It's truly a place where groups of strong individuals gather." Mu Chen smiled. Who knows how bustling it would be when the Exchange Festival for Five Great Academies occurs?

"Ah, right. Yang Hong also entered the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy." Luo Li suddenly spoke up.

"Yang Hong?" Mu Chen's gaze turned serious. In the Spiritual Road, he had two very powerful enemies. One was Ji Xuan, the other was Yang Hong. He had never imagined that guy would have entered the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Wouldn't that mean that they would meet up in the future?

"Is he in the Northern Heavens World as well?" Mu Chen looked at Luo Li while an icy look flashed across his black eyes. Although the event in the Spiritual Road was secretly caused by Ji Xuan, Yang Hong was probably involved in it as well.

"Yes. However, he isn't in our Northern Heavens World." Luo Li nodded. There were a total of four Northern Heavens World used as examination grounds, and it seemed that Yang Hong wasn't in the same one as them.

"It's fine. We'll naturally meet again in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy." Mu Chen smiled faintly. Yang Hong, huh? Since there's no way to find Ji Xuan right now, I'll deal with you first. Otherwise, wouldn't it be a bit boring within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?

“Also, there’s a total of 8 people, including me, that obtained a King Class assessment inside this Northern Heavens World.” Luo Li continued: “Among the eight of us, there are two that you should know. It’s the two brothers, Shi Jingtian and Shi Hao.”

“The Shi Family’s brothers that we nearly killed in the Spiritual Road?” Mu Chen frowned. Enemies were truly destined to meet again. He never imagined that he would run into them again.

“Yes. At this moment, the two brothers are only a step away from reaching Heavenly Fusion Stage. They are quite powerful.” Luo Li replied.

Mu Chen nodded. If they are only a step away from reaching Heavenly Fusion Stage, it would mean that their breakthrough isn’t too far away. In the Northern Heavens World, they would be considered at the top of the bunch.

“You’ve already entered the Heavenly Fusion Stage, right?” Mu Chen looked at Luo Li and asked.

Luo Li nodded and smiled: “So you will have to hurry and catch up to me. Otherwise, you’ll be thrown far behind me.”

“Even if I’m thrown far behind you, I can still spank you.” Mu Chen teased.

“Pervert.” Luo Li was a little bit embarrassed and batted an eye at him. Then, she said: “I’m going to cultivate. You should guard tonight.”

As these words exited her mouth, her eyes softened up. She thought back to the days in the Spiritual Road when they had to rely on each other. Although it had been quite tough, those days had become irreplaceable memories in their hearts.

Mu Chen smiled and asked: “Then let’s have another hug?” He was still reminiscing the warm and soft skin that he had hugged today. In the past, it had been rare for him to obtain such a treatment.

Luo Li glared at Mu Chen. This guy is becoming greedier. I must ignore him.

“I’m going to cultivate.”

Luo Li’s slender hands were placed on top of the sword hilt. Then, she closed her eyes and entered a state of cultivation. From then on, she ignored Mu Chen.

Seeing this, Mu Chen smiled. Underneath the bonfire’s glow, he stared at Luo Li’s beautiful appearance. A hint of gentle kindness also passed through his black eyes.

It’s great that I’ve met you. I’m glad that I saved you when I first met you in the Spiritual Road...

“Hu.”

Mu Chen stared at the sky and let out a sigh. Then, he slowly clenched his hands. It seemed that there were many rivals of his inside the Northern Heavens World...

Shi Jingtian, Shi Hao, Yang Hong...

I made you afraid of me during the Spiritual Road. Even in the Great Thousand World, I can do the same. Therefore, you shouldn’t underestimate me because I lost the Spiritual Energy Empowerment. Otherwise, you will have to pay a great price...

Chapter 146: Meeting Place

Within the vast mountains, commotions rang out. Numerous furious roars resounded as Spiritual Beasts charged towards a dozen agile figures.

“H...Hurry. Lead them all towards Brother Mu!”

“If you don’t want to be eaten by these Spiritual Beasts, then put your back into it!”

In front of the Spiritual Beasts, tired, breathless groans could be heard from a group of people. Then, these figures mustered all their strength to head towards a nearby hill. At that location, there were numerous figures waiting in ambush.

On the top of the hill, a massive Spiritual Array was slowly circulating. Dragon and elephant sounds could be heard from time to time, as a formidable Spiritual Energy emitted out.

Mu Chen stared at the numerous Spiritual Beasts that were attracted by the group. There were probably over 40 Spiritual Beasts. Furthermore, at the forefront of the group, there were ten Spiritual Beasts that possessed the strength of a High Rank Spiritual Beast.

However, Spiritual Beasts at this level weren’t a threat to the current Mu Chen.

“Let’s move.”

Mu Chen muttered and waved his hand. A formidable fluctuation instantly burst out of the Spiritual Array. Then, a dark-golden light erupted and formed a dragon and an elephant as they surged over.

Bang!

As the dragon and elephant passed by, countless massive Spiritual Beasts flew backwards and had their bones completely shattered by the impact. Slowly, their life faded away.

Although the Spiritual Array was considerably powerful, there was a large quantity of Spiritual Beasts. Therefore, there were still a few agile

Spiritual Beasts that managed to escape and rushed fiercely at the Ye Clan members.

Seeing this, Ye Qingling was prepared to take action. However, Luo Li, who was beside her, gripped the hilt of the black longsword with her slender hand. The longsword trembled for a moment, and the shadow of a sword pierced through the empty space.

Chi Chi!

When the Spiritual Beasts were only a few hundred meters away from the Ye Clan members, their bodies suddenly turned stiff. Fresh blood immediately sprayed out and they were actually cut into two halves. At the point where they were cut, it was as smooth as a mirror.

The Ye Clan members all sucked in a breath of cold air. Their eyes were completely filled with horror as they looked at Luo Li. They didn't know what happened, but the Spiritual Beasts had been split apart. Furthermore, it had been done from such a far distance.

If these Spiritual Beasts were them, they would have probably died in a much terrible way.

"Hurry and take the Soul Essences out. For the people whose symbol hasn't reach Rank 4, they should absorb the Spiritual Aura for their symbols." The Spiritual Array above Mu Chen's head slowly faded away as he smiled at Wang Sheng and the others.

"Yes!"

Wang Sheng and the others hurriedly responded, then, they rushed out in excitement. These Spiritual Beasts weren't weak. If they were planning to deal with it by themselves, they would have to pay a price in order to successfully kill one of the Spiritual Beast. But with the help of a powerful person such as Mu Chen, everything had turned simple once again.

Ye Qingling looked at the excited Ye Clan members and smiled. She turned around and said to Mu Chen: "Thank you very much."

If it wasn't for Mu Chen, it was evident that it would have been impossible for her to help every single Ye Clan member to reach Rank 4

Symbol. Therefore, a few members would have to leave unhappily. If that were to happen, every one of them would definitely feel bitter.

Mu Chen shook his head: “It wasn’t easy to come to this place. Moreover, they definitely have some talent. If they were to successfully enter the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, they should be able to be somewhat successful. Therefore, it would be a pity if they were eliminated due to some misfortune.”

“Right now, we are approaching the innermost region of the Northern Heavens World. We should soon reach the meeting place.” Luo Li spoke gently.

“The meeting place, huh...”

Hearing this, Mu Chen’s eyes narrowed slightly. At that location, he would probably be able to meet all the powerful individuals within this Northern Heavens World. It was truly something that he was looking forward to.

“Let’s prepare to leave.” Mu Chen said as he looked at Ye Qingling.

“Okay.”

In the following half-a-day, Mu Chen began to hurry ahead at full speed. This was because this place was already considered to be the heart of the Northern Heavens World. Thus, approximately 70-80% of the students had gathered at this location. The number of people here was simply astonishing. Even from a distance of a hundred miles, they were still able to see light figures rushing through the air.

As they hurried, Mu Chen and the others met with numerous small and large forces. All of them were filled with excitement as they headed in the same direction. That direction led to the last stop of the Northern Heavens World’s examination.

From there, they would truly enter the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

The students that managed to reach this location were all people with real skill. Every single one of their symbols on their forehead had

surpassed Rank 4. Although it wasn't quite amazing, it was still enough for them to enter the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Of course, these forces would all cast surprised gazes towards the Ye Clan were Mu Chen and the others resided. After all, they didn't have many individuals and many of them didn't have a particularly powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuation. This made them surprised. A small force with such pitiful power was actually successful in reaching this location? And the majority of the people possessed a Rank 4 symbol?

Mu Chen and the others didn't care about the gazes of the other forces. The group of men rushed through the forest and finally slowed down as sunset approached.

At this moment, everybody was a little shocked as they stared out into the distance.

It was an open plain on top of a mountain. But at this moment, a dense mass of people were spread out to the end of their line of sight. Furthermore, a steady stream of figures were approaching from afar.

Dense Spiritual Energy fluctuations rushed out into the sky.

It was a sea of people.

This was where the truly strong people gathered.

Various genius from all over the Great Thousand World would enter the Northern Heavens World and finally gathered in this location. But only the ones that stood out from the crowd here were truly heaven-sent individuals.

"There's so many people." Wang Sheng and the others exclaimed out loud. They could feel that it was extremely easy to find Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase individuals here. Furthermore, Spirit Stage powerhouses were a dime a dozen here.

"Let's enter as well."

Mu Chen waved as he headed towards the center of the meeting place. Luo Li, Ye Qingling and the others quickly followed behind him.

But shortly after they departed, dozens of figures surrounded them from the front. Numerous gazes swept across Mu Chen and the others before they finally stopped on Luo Li's body.

Mu Chen's group had very little people. Moreover, the majority of them weren't particularly strong. Coupled with the fact that they had an eye-catching existence such as Luo Li with them, it was natural that they would be targeted by others.

"Haha, where did such a beauty come from? How could you be within this tiny force? Why don't you come to our Mo Clan? With our protection, nobody would dare touch you!" These dozen of figures weren't weak. The leading two figures had even reached Spirit Stage Middle Phase. At this moment, they were grinning as they stared at Mu Chen and the others.

Numerous gazes were also directed towards them from the surroundings. However, when a few gazes noticed Luo Li, who was beside Mu Chen, these gazes immediately turned strange. Then, when they looked at the people that stopped Mu Chen, their gazes were filled with sympathy and joy.

At this moment, Mu Chen frowned slightly. Beside him, Luo Li's hand had already covered the hilt of her sword.

"Bang!"

But just when she was about to attack, the person who previously spoke up suddenly flew towards the ground and was splayed as if he was a dog. His face reddened as he got up and shouted: "Who?"

As he shouted out, he noticed a person staring at him darkly. He immediately retreated: "Boss."

The skinny figure did not care about him and step forward. Then, he cupped his fist towards Luo Li as he spoke: "I apologize. My man spoke out without thinking about what he said. I hope that King Luo would not take it personally."

The boy earlier heard this and his expression changed. Although he did not participate in the Spiritual Road, he knew what the words, King Luo,

represented. Only the people, who stood at the pinnacle of the Spiritual Road, possessed a title. Even his boss, who had reached Spirit Stage Late Phase, wasn't qualified to obtain one...

Then, the skinny man turned his gaze towards Mu Chen, who was beside Luo Li. He stared at Mu Chen's handsome face and was a little bit shocked. His eyes instantly retracted when he saw Mu Chen.

"You recognize me?" Seeing his reaction, Mu Chen asked in surprise.

"Ohoho, Blood Calamity Mu Chen, how is it possible that I don't know you?" The skinny boy let out an unnatural laugh as he spoke: "I was nearly affected by the Blood Calamity in the Spiritual Road..."

He still remembered the monstrous and bloody day. And the coldhearted boy that had caused this disaster-like Blood Calamity was in front of him.

"Oh." Mu Chen smiled: "Then, I'm sorry about it."

Cold sweat flowed down from the skinny boy's forehead. However, he did not dare answer Mu Chen. In his eyes, the gentle and handsome-looking boy was far more terrifying than King Luo, who was beside him.

"In the future, you should teach your men better. Otherwise, it would be easy for you to get into trouble." Mu Chen smiled faintly and said nothing more. He immediately brought the crowd through the sea of humans and headed forward.

"Boss, who is that boy?" He only possessed the same strength as me, how could he talk to you like this?" Seeing Mu Chen depart, the person, who had acted rudely, asked secretly.

"He's your mom." Seeing the boy's wretched appearance, the skinny boy was completely furious and sent another kick towards him. "You actually dare provoke that death god. Are you f*cking tired of life? Unlike you, I still want to live a little bit longer!"

About the unrest behind him, Mu Chen didn't care about it. He brought the group through the crowd and headed towards the front.

At this location, it wasn't quite crowded. Moreover, it was split apart by

many powerful forces. These forces weren't comparable to the ones before. Nobody would dare set foot within their territory.

They were considered to be the strongest forces within the entire Northern Heavens World.

Compared to them, Mu Chen's group was quite strange. This is why many people cast unnatural gazes towards them.

But apart from a few puzzled looks, the majority of them stared complicatedly at the boy beside Luo Li.

That guy really appeared.

In the northwest corner of this location, two figures suddenly stood up while they were surrounded by a group of powerful individuals. A extremely powerful aura erupted out, which caused many gazes in this region to be directed over towards them.

"Mu Chen!"

The two figures that emitted out such a formidable Spiritual Energy fluctuation stared coldly at Mu Chen's figure. Their cold voices resounded out directly through this open space.

"I never expected that you would appear here!"

Chapter 147: Shi Family's Brothers

In the center of this vast open plain, the major forces had co-existed through dividing their territories. Every single one of these forces possessed a powerful lineup. Even Spirit Stage students that were powerful enough to become the leader of a Clan would have to control themselves as if they were only ordinary existences.

This is because they knew that an ordinary Spirit Stage wasn't qualified to step into this place filled with experts.

And in the central zone, there were seven eye-catching locations. These seven locations were known as the territory of the most formidable groups. In front of their formations, there were extremely powerful Spiritual fluctuations emitting out.

In the northeast corner, there was a crowd of hundreds of people. In the front of this crowd were two boys. One of them was tall and burly, while the other was quite skinny. Their appearances were quite familiar as they were the ones who assisted Luo Li in the hunt for the Single-Eyed Diamond Ape.

These two were also individuals who stood at the pinnacle of the Spiritual Road. They were also assessed as King Class. King Yan, Yan Xiao, and King Zhou, Zhou Ling. Even among this gathering location of strong individuals, they were still dazzling existences.

At this moment, it was evident that they had also discovered Mu Chen and Luo Li, who arrived at this location. Both of them wore complicated expressions as their gaze remained fixed on Mu Chen. In the Spiritual Road, they had met Mu Chen once before. More importantly, they had fought against each other. However, they had stopped once they made contact and didn't attempt to kill each other. Speaking of which, they felt a little bit of sympathy towards him.

Aside from the two of them, there were still three other locations that had two figures with formidable Spiritual Energy fluctuations. It was evident that they were also people who were assessed as King Class that

came out from the Spiritual Road.

On the other side, two figures stood up among the crowd as they stared coldly at Mu Chen. The cold shout earlier had come out from their mouths.

These two individuals were the dual kings from the Shi Family that Luo Li had mentioned earlier. It was Shi Jingtian and Shi Hao, who were considered to be Mu Chen's rivals in the Spiritual Road.

In this region, the eight Kings from Spiritual Road had all gathered. Apart from them, there were other large forces. Although the leaders of these forces did not participate in the Spiritual Road, their strength wasn't any weaker than the Kings from the Spiritual Road. Normally speaking, these people were either brought up by large forces within the Great Thousand World or ones that had extraordinary encounters. They were all heaven-sent individuals.

This was truly the place where only the strong gathered.

The Shi Brothers' cries resounded in the air like thunder. It instantly suppressed the liveliness of this location. Suddenly, numerous gazes were cast towards the central area.

"Isn't that the dual kings from the Shi Family? These two brothers were individuals that were assessed as King Class within the Spiritual Road. It's rumored that they were only half-a-step away from reaching Heavenly Fusion Stage. When the two of them combine forces, they could even stand against a Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase powerhouse."

"Did they shout Mu Chen earlier? Could it be the Blood Calamity Mu Chen from the Spiritual Road?"

"Who else could it be aside from that demon? I've heard earlier that he came to this Northern Heavens World. Moreover, he obtained two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts' Soul Essences!"

"However, it's said that his strength is only at Spirit Stage Middle Phase. It seems that he suffered a huge loss when he was kicked out of the Spiritual Road. Right now, he has quite a bit of gap separating him from

the King Class individuals..."

"The dual kings from the Shi Family were his rivals in the Spiritual Road. Since they've met, it's likely that they wouldn't let him go easily. However, King Luo is beside Mu Chen. She is a person that is even more fearsome than the dual kings of the Shi Family. This time, it would definitely be interesting..."

Currently, there were too many people here. Among them, there were countless that came out from the Spiritual Road. With a glance, they had seen all the people that were at the scene. Thus, strange voices spread out quickly through the crowd.

At this moment, Mu Chen turned his gaze towards the two familiar figures. The Shi Brothers were somewhat burly. Shi Jingtian is bald and had a cold gaze which made others shiver. On the other hand, Shi Hao had long hair and a calm expression. However, the glare that he had when he looked at Mu Chen was filled with coldness.

"I was wondering who it was. So it was one of the people that I defeated before." Mu Chen smiled. Since the two of them acted so rudely once they met, he naturally didn't bother giving them any face.

"You think you still have the right to act so arrogant?" Shi Jingtian sneered. He looked at Mu Chen and a mocking smile emerged: "The once famous Blood Calamity in the Spiritual Road is only at the Spirit Stage Middle Phase? With such strength, you're not qualified to stand at this location. From what I see, you should scram!"

In the central area, the majority of the powerhouses stared unkindly at the two forces. However, they did not speak and maintained as a bystander. But judging from the surface, Mu Chen wasn't worthy of their attention. After all, they could easily find a group of people who was at the Spirit Stage Middle Phase. Truthfully, he wasn't qualified to be placed on an equal footing with them.

But the people at the scene weren't idiots. They naturally did not dare to underestimate Mu Chen. Moreover, even if they did, there was still Luo Li, who stood beside Mu Chen. She was an existence that they all feared.

“If you think that we’re not qualified, you two brothers could see if you can drive us out.” Luo Li’s clear eyes stared at Shi Jingtian and Shi Hao. Her voice was filled with coldness as she spoke.

“Luo Li, did you believe that we two brothers are afraid of you?!” Shi Jingtian’s eyes darkened as he shouted out.

“If that’s the case, then let me experience the Shi Family’s Dual King’s Stone Emperor Art.” Luo Li’s slender hand slowly covered the black longsword as she muttered.

Bang!

As Luo Li’s voice resounded out, a formidable Spiritual Energy erupted out from her body. This Spiritual Energy fluctuation instantly changed numerous people’s expressions.

“This Spiritual Energy fluctuation…She actually reached the Heavenly Fusion Stage?! How terrifying!”

As they felt the pressure emitting out from the Spiritual Energy fluctuation, sounds of shock erupted out through this area. Even the people who stood at the peak of this area turned serious and revealed a hint of fear in their eyes.

At this moment, the brothers from the Shi Family narrowed their eyes. Then, Shi Jingtian turned his gaze towards Mu Chen and sneered: “Mu Chen, you are still considered to be a well-known figure within the Spiritual Road. Although I’ve never liked you in the past, you still had my respect for always standing in front of women. Why have you fallen to the point where you would need a woman to protect you now that we’ve returned to the Great Thousand World?”

“Shi Jingtian. You can stop with your foolish provocations.” Mu Chen lowered his eyes and responded faintly.

“You shouldn’t act too cocky either. So what if Luo Li is going to attack? If we two brothers join forces together, we aren’t afraid of her. Do you think that with the measly amount of people behind you, you would be able to fight against our Shi Clan?” Shi Jingtian said.

“You can try it if you want.” Mu Chen smiled slightly. However, his smile was filled with mercilessness. Perhaps the Ye Clan members weren’t as powerful as the Shi Clan. But if they dared to attack, Mu Chen didn’t mind letting them pay a heavy price.

Shi Jingtian’s eyes immediately turned cold as he stared at Mu Chen. The latter also stared back at him and the atmosphere instantly turned tense.

“Ohoho, if you have something to say, then please say it. Why must you take action immediately? It’s best if it’s peaceful.”

A sudden laughter suddenly rang out within this tense atmosphere. Numerous gazes turned around and noticed that the skinny boy was staring at the two of them from the northeast corner. It was King Zhou, Zhou Ling.

“Zhou Ling. Are you planning to intervene in this as well?” Seeing the skinny boy, Shi Hao frowned and asked coldly.

Hearing this, Zhou Ling smiled: “Currently, the majority of the people within the Northern Heavens World have gathered at this meeting place. Our goals are the same. To find the Northern Heavens Hall. However, no matter how hard we look, there is no trace of the Northern Heavens Hall.”

“What do you want to say?” Shi Hao frowned and asked.

“As far as I know, the Northern Heavens Hall should be at this location. However, it hasn’t appeared yet. Thus, there is only one reason. It’s because the condition triggering the appearance of the Northern Heavens Hall have not been satisfied yet.” Zhou Ling smiled.

“What condition?” From nearby, a figure wearing a red robe asked suddenly. This person also possessed a powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuation. It was Yan Ling. He was also a person who stood at the pinnacle of the Spiritual Road and was known as King Yan.

“According to my guess, the condition should be the appearance of a Rank 9 Symbol. Unfortunately, none of us have achieved it.” Zhou Ling looked helplessly in Luo Li’s direction. Originally, Luo Li was most likely to

achieve it. However, she gave it up because of Mu Chen.

"A Rank 9 Symbol..."

Hearing this, everybody frowned. At this location, there were a few people that had a Rank 8 Symbol, but nobody had a Rank 9 symbol.

"Therefore, I'm proposing that we should form a Rank 9 Symbol together. Why don't we talk about the earlier matter after we trigger the appearance of the Northern Heavens Hall?" Zhou Ling smiled.

"Form one together?" Shi Jingtian sneered: "From what I see, why don't we force the weakest one to hand over their symbol to us. This way, it would be faster and more efficient."

As he sneered, his gaze was directed towards Mu Chen. It goes without saying that he was targeting Mu Chen.

"It seems that you are planning to cause trouble for me today no matter what." Mu Chen smiled coldly.

"I only wanted you to understand that right now, you simply aren't qualified to stand at the same place as we are!" Shi Jingtian sneered.

Mu Chen sighed. Then, he slowly stepped forward among the bustling commotions and clenched his hand. He smiled gently: "It's certainly not my style to endure the bullying when it's said directly to me. Since it's going to be like this, come out. In the Spiritual Road, I could turn you into a loser dog. In this place, the outcome would be exactly the same."

"If you lose, hand over your symbol."

When Shi Jingtian noticed that Mu Chen dared to openly challenge him, he suddenly grinned. Wasn't he always waiting for this moment when he had constantly provoked him?

"If you want my symbol, that's fine. But if you lose, you will have to scram. At the same time, you must hand over Luo Li's symbol. I don't care about your symbol!" Shi Jingtian replied in contempt.

Mu Chen frowned. But before he could speak, Luo Li, who was behind him, responded faintly: "Fine!"

Chapter 148: Fighting Against Shi Jingtian

WAHH.

When Luo Li muttered straightforwardly “Fine”, everybody in the central area entered into an uproar. It was evident that they didn’t understand why Luo Li was willing to accept it so easily.

If she was the one that was going to fight, it would be easier to understand. However, Mu Chen was only at the Spirit Stage Middle Phase. His strength wasn’t considered to be outstanding among the rest of them here. Moreover, his opponent was Shi Jingtian, a powerhouse who was half-a-step from reaching Heavenly Fusion Stage!

Did she really believe that Mu Chen wouldn’t lose?

Not far away, Zhou Ling smiled bitterly as he watched this scene. He had a slightly complex expression on his face. Since he had cooperated with Luo Li previously, he had some understanding of the latter’s personality. However, during the period when they cooperated with each other, he had never seen Luo Li, who was only concerned about cultivating, care about another person.

“Mu Chen. You’re truly a lucky guy. However, I hope that you will not disappoint her...” Zhou Ling looked at the boy, who slowly walked forward, as he muttered.

“Haha. It seems that King Luo believes in you quite a bit.” Shi Jingtian laughed as he stared coldly at Mu Chen.

“Can we begin?” Mu Chen smiled. Within his black eyes, a hint of coldness surged. He never thought that this person would still be so irritating.

“Then come at me!”

A chill surged through Shi Jingtian’s eyes and he took a step forward. Dense Spiritual Energy erupted endlessly and the impact from it crushed the nearby gravel to powder.

“The loss that I suffered in the Spiritual Road...This time, I’ll let you

experience it!”

Shi Jingtian’s eyes were filled with viciousness and he no longer hesitated as he stomped on the ground. At this moment, the earth seemed to tremble. Then, he bent over and smashed his fist onto the ground.

Boom!

An extraordinary Spiritual Energy surged into the earth. Then, the very ground on which Mu Chen stood instantly collapsed. A surge of vicious Spiritual Energy erupted from the ground like a sharp spear as it shot fiercely towards Mu Chen’s legs.

At the same time, Mu Chen also moved and turned into a blur. When his afterimage was shattered, he had already appeared in front of Shi Jingtian.

Swish!

Mu Chen kept two fingers straightened as they flashed with a golden light. The light was like a golden spear, which penetrated through the void, as it lunged towards Shi Jingtian’s throat.

“You actually want to injure me with such abilities?!” Shi Jingtian grinned as hishand appeared in front to block Mu Chen’s attack. At the same moment, a greyish-white Spiritual Energy entered his arm, which caused his arm to become as hard as a rock. It was matchless in terms of toughness.

Clang!

When the sharp golden light made contact with Shi Jingtian’s palm, a loud clanging sound rang out as sparks flew. However, the latter’s palm only trembled slightly while it completely stopped Mu Chen’s attack.

“Scram!”

Shi Jingtian instantly changed his palm to a fist and blasted out a punch. The greyish-white Spiritual Energy surged out like a flood as it smashed fiercely towards Mu Chen.

Bang!

In response, Mu Chen waved his sleeves as he retreated backwards. His feet stabilized in midair and light emerged from his palms. At this moment, dozens of lights integrated within the air.

A formidable Spiritual Energy fluctuation instantly erupted above Mu Chen. Then, a golden light Spiritual Array soon emerged.

"A Spiritual Array? And with such terrifying speed!" When they noticed the Spiritual Array above Mu Chen, many people were completely shocked. The speed at which Mu Chen arranged an array was unbelievable. Just how much control over his Spiritual Energy was required to do so?

"Buzz!"

Mu Chen's eyes turned cold and his hand seals changed. Within the golden light Spiritual Array, a jagged, golden light wheel erupted out from within. It instantly rushed through the sky towards Shi Jingtian as it turned into a golden light.

"A Spiritual Array? So you still have such a technique. However, it's best not to show such a disgraceful Spiritual Array!" Shi Jingtian sneered. On his arms, his veins moved like a dragon while a greyish-white color filled his entire arm.

"Stone Python Pierce!"

Shi Jingtian did not make any attempt at dodging. Instead, he blasted out a punch with his rock-like arm. A muffled sound rang out as the greyish-white Spiritual Energy brought forth powerful winds. It actually formed into a greyish-white python as it fiercely bombarded against the golden wheel.

Bang!

When the greyish-white Spiritual Energy erupted, a formidable fluctuation was emitted as well. The jagged, golden light wheel was shattered instantly by Shi Jingtian's punch. From this act, it became clear that the latter's strength was definitely quite powerful.

"Haha, Mu Chen. As expected, you've lost the might and power you had

in the Spiritual Road once you've returned to the Great Thousand World. So you're only capable of this much right now?" After destroying the golden light wheel in one attack, the scornful look on Shi Jingtian's face increased as he mocked Mu Chen.

Although he was mocking Mu Chen, Shi Jingtian was still someone that had experienced the harsh trial of the Spiritual Road. His combat sense was quite outstanding. Thus, he rushed forward and approached Mu Chen. Against a Spiritual Array Master, it was most advantageous for him to counter with close combat. Furthermore, since this battle was for the symbol, it was best not to make a mistake.

"I'll defeat you in one punch!"

A hideous smile emerged within Shi Jingtian's face. He smiled coldly at Mu Chen and the greyish-white arm instantly darkened. It was as if it had turned into the most solid rock in the world.

"Dragon Rocksmash!"

Shi Jingtian's punch shot out together with dense Spiritual Energy. A dragon's roar actually accompanied it as the greyish-white Spiritual Energy formed into a stone dragon. It rushed through the air as it fiercely smashed towards Mu Chen.

Bang Bang!

Under this powerful attack, the very air around the area seemed to explode. At this moment, the flow of air interwove with the galloping dragon.

Mu Chen stared at the powerful attack as coldness flushed through his black eyes. He clenched his fists tightly and three dark light seals emerged. As soon as they appeared, he immediately blasted out a punch as well.

These three black light seals formed into a beam of black light as it exploded against the stone dragon. A formidable Spiritual Energy surged out in waves from the contact.

Bang!

The stone dragon seemed to tremble against the fierce winds produced. However, Shi Jingtian only laughed loudly as he fired off another punch. Greyish-white Spiritual Energy surged out and completely shattered the three black light seals.

After facing off a few times, it was evident that Shi Jingtian had the upper hand.

When he destroyed the three black light seals with one punch, Shi Jingtian was about to mock Mu Chen again. However, he suddenly noticed the cold eyes that Mu Chen had and his heart jumped. Only then, he noticed that the winds produced by Mu Chen's fist weren't completely released. On the surface of his fist, black lights twinkled. Then, overbearing fluctuations surged out in waves.

"Boom!"

All of a sudden, black light seemed to flood out from Mu Chen's fist. Another black light seal soon emerged after this. Once this black light seal emerged, the surrounding Spiritual Aura seemed to tremble.

"There's actually a fourth light seal?!" Shi Jingtian's eyes finally changed slightly. He could detect that Mu Chen's mysterious black light seals were more powerful than the previous ones that were formed. Compared to the three seals that were accumulated together, the fourth seal seemed to be even stronger!

"Boom!"

Mu Chen remained calm and did not speak at all. When the fourth Limitless Death Seal was formed, he immediately fired out a punch.

Once the punch was fired off, the air immediately exploded!

The air seemed to have been compressed before it exploded as Mu Chen's attack bombarded the stone dragon. But this time, the black light actually shattered the stone dragon completely. Moreover, the remaining energy did not diminish as it continued to bombard Shi Jingtian.

Mu Chen's almighty attack instantly caused a little bit of commotion.

“Iron Wall!”

Shi Jingtian shouted out and crossed his arms in front of himself. Greyish-white Spiritual Energy surged and actually formed into a faint greyish-white light wall. From its appearance, it seemed to be formed by a sturdy rock that had been tempered through lava numerous times. It was completely unmovable.

However, Mu Chen was completely unaffected by it. The fourth Limitless Seal brought forth numerous black ripples as the air exploded. Then, it bombarded heavily against Shi Jingtian’s arms.

Boom!

A Spiritual Energy shockwave that could be seen with the naked eye was instantly emitted. In that instant, a deep voice resounded out through the sky.

“Scram!”

At this moment, Mu Chen finally spoke coldly. The black light shockwaves instantly accelerated and exploded with a bang.

Dong!

Waves of air immediately swept out. At this moment, Shi Jingtian’s body actually flew back awkwardly, although he managed to land on his feet. However, he only stabilized his form after leaving behind traces of sliding for nearly a hundred meters.

“WAHH!”

Commotions instantly rang out within the area. They never expected that the situation would be reversed by Mu Chen.

“I told you back in the Spiritual Road. You shouldn’t get too carried away. Otherwise, you would pay a severe price. It seems that you still haven’t learnt that lesson.” Mu Chen slowly released his clenched fist as he spoke faintly towards the gloomy Shi Jingtian.

“Just because I’ve appeared in front of you, you think that you’ll be qualified to step on me?”

Shi Jingtian stared coldly at Mu Chen. At this moment, his eyes were filled with flames of rage. As he stepped forward, a cold voice filled with hostility rang out.

"Carried away? I'll show you what getting carried away truly means!"

Shi Jingtian stomped on the ground and a powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuation instantly erupted out from his body. Then, Spiritual Energy slowly formed into a greyish-white python behind him.

The massive python's body was completely covered with rock-like scales. On his head, there was a greyish-white spiral-patterned horn. Its greyish-white eyes were completely emotionless as if it had been drilled out from the depths of the earth.

When this greyish-white python figure emerged, Shi Jingtian's aura actually soared again.

It was infinitely close to reaching the Heavenly Fusion Stage!

"74th in Myriad Beast Record's Earth Ranking, a Low Rank Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast, the Earthstone Spirit Python?"

As Mu Chen stared at the massive python, black flames also seeped out from within his eyes. Then, the surrounding individuals trembled slightly as they detected an abnormally fiery fluctuation slowly emitting out from Mu Chen's body.

Chapter 149: Black Flames

As black flames emerged from the depths of Mu Chen's eyes, his eyes turned slightly weird. Dark black Spiritual Energy also wrapped around his body. As the Spiritual Energy surged around him, hints of black flames also moved.

Mu Chen immediately stepped into the sky and slowly gripped his hands. A mysterious fluctuation also emitted from his body. At this moment, dark black Spiritual Energy also gathered behind his body. However, it did not form the shape of the ingested Soul Essence like Shi Jingtian.

This was because he did not ingest a Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence. What he was performing instead was the much higher ranked method; Bloodline Bond. At this moment, he currently possessed some of the Nine Nether Bird's abilities. Moreover, this ability was much more flexible. This is due to the Bloodline Bond. The Nine Nether Bird within his body possessed a complete intelligence. Therefore, compared to the Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence where Shi Jingtian had completely erased its consciousness, it had more spirituality.

Countless gazes gathered on Mu Chen's body. They could detect that the Spiritual Energy fluctuations emitting from his body had increased considerably as well.

"How did Mu Chen's Spiritual Energy become that much stronger all of a sudden? It's even stronger than a Spirit Stage Late Phase. Could it be because he ingested a Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence?" Ye Qingling said in surprise.

Luo Li's eyes focused as she stared at Mu Chen's body. A hint of surprise also flashed through her clear eyes. Perhaps others might fail to detect it, but she could tell how domineering the dark black Spiritual Energy that wrapped around Mu Chen's body was. Moreover, it secretly gave off a heart-throbbing feeling.

"A powerful Spiritual Beast is probably within his body. However, it isn't

the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon and the Geocentric Flame Jalapura." Luo Li muttered to herself. A faint smile immediately emerged on her face. She knew that he would be able to catch up even if he had lost the opportunity from the Spiritual Road. There were even times when Luo Li had believed in Mu Chen more than she believed in herself.

This is because they had encountered numerous difficulties and dangers during their one year within the Spiritual Road. In the end, it was always the smiling boy who had helped her escape these dangers.

Although Luo Li usually did not show much concern for anything, she was actually quite prideful deep down inside. However, this pride of hers was constantly destroyed ever since she met Mu Chen.

During the half-year chase, she actually knew that Mu Chen had countless opportunities to kill her. However, he still gave up in the end.

Back then, Luo Li felt that he was truly foolish for giving up these opportunities. But until she finally managed to defeat him and placed her sword in front of Mu Chen's throat, she finally understood that she wasn't able to kill him...

This boy was like a spider who would form spider webs within spider webs. On the other hand, she was a tiny chick that chased after him endlessly. But once she finally came to her senses, she discovered that the layers of spider silk had already wrapped around her tightly. She had been trapped to the extent that she did not even wish to escape.

Mu Chen was, indeed, still powerful.

Luo Li's glass-like eyes twinkled as she stared at the thin figure. Then, she smiled softly. In that instant, numerous people's gazes were captivated by that smile.

"No wonder you dared to show up, so you were hiding your abilities."

Shi Jingtian also noticed the Mu Chen's mysterious Spiritual Energy fluctuations, which had increased in strength in an instant, and his eyes turned serious. He immediately let out a cold laugh. Since he had suffered earlier, he was quite vigilant towards Mu Chen. However, he had currently

summoned the Earthstone Spirit Python and his strength was infinitely close to a Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouse. On the other hand, Mu Chen's power up had only caused his strength to be equivalent to a Spirit Stage Late Phase.

The gap between them had opened up instead.

"Let me show you just who is the one getting carried away!"

Liu Jingtian clenched his hands and dense Spiritual Energy surged out like a flood. Angry roars rang out from his throat as a mysterious fluctuation spread out underneath his feet.

Buzz!

At this moment, the earth seemed to tremble. As he stomped down and charged into the sky, greyish-white Spiritual Aura erupted out from his clasped hands. It actually formed into numerous greyish-white lights. These lights soon formed into numerous boulders that were suspended in the sky.

An overbearing fluctuation was emitted.

At that moment, many individuals' gazes turned solemn. They could detect that every single one of the rocks formed near Shi Jingtian had the power to gravely injure a Spirit Stage powerhouse.

It was evident that his combat abilities had soared after activating the Soul Essence's power.

"Stone Emperor Art, Meteorite Shower!"

Shi Jingtian's eyes darkened as he locked down on Mu Chen, who was below him. His gaze instantly turned cold as he changed the seals formed by his hands. At this moment, the numerous greyish-white lights suddenly buzzed and sounds of the winds breaking instantly rang out. These countless rocks descended down towards Mu Chen and covered almost all of his paths of retreat.

Mu Chen lifted his head and stared at the rocks that were rapidly becoming larger within his eyes. At this moment, he took a deep breath

and circulated the Great Pagoda Art within his body. A mysterious light started to flash within the depths of his body.

Buzz.

The dark black Spiritual Energy that was surging on the surface of his body instantly turned into a blurry black light tower. On top of the light tower, traces of black flames floated around.

When the black light tower was formed, the descending rocks came violently crashing down. In the end, they had smashed fiercely onto the black light tower outside of Mu Chen's body.

Dong Dong!

The earth seemed to tremble at this moment. Countless people stared in shock at the earth where the bombardment of rocks occurred. At that location, smoke spread out and covered their line of sight. However, they were still able to feel how terrifying the attack was.

This vicious attack would definitely turn anyone who was at the Spirit Stage Late Phase into pulp.

At this moment, Ye Qingling and the others were staring nervously at the place where the smoke rose up. Their hands were clenched tightly. Sun'Er even had to cover her eyes with her tiny hands.

The only one that remained calm was Luo Li. Although Shi Jingtian's attack was indeed powerful, it clearly wasn't enough to kill Mu Chen.

Finally, the bombardment ended. The smoke also started to disperse and everybody immediately turned their attention to that location. Then, sounds of gasps rang out.

At the place where the ground was collapsing, a person was quietly suspended in midair. On top of his body, the blurry black light tower had remained completely motionless in the face of Shi Jingtian's attack. That amazing offensive performed by Shi Jingtian had actually caused no damage to him at all!

"How is this possible?!" In the sky, Shi Jingtian was completely

speechless.

"Swish!"

While he was horrified, Mu Chen's body had appeared in front of him like a phantom. Winds formed by his fists rushed out while it was being wrapped by dark black Spiritual Energy. It drew an arc as it pounded heavily against Shi Jingtian.

Shi Jingtian hurriedly summoned his Spiritual Energy and blocked with his rock-like arms. The Stone Emperor Art that he had trained in allowed him to possess powerful defence as well. Therefore, he wasn't afraid of a hand-to-hand fight.

Dong! Dong! Dong!

However, Mu Chen didn't seem to be concerned about it. His fists were wrapped in dark black Spiritual Energy and bombarded against Shi Jingtian's arms. At this moment, Shi Jingtian's expression changed drastically. This is because he detected that extreme heat was being transferred into his arm every time Mu Chen's fists landed. This intense heat would charge into his meridians, which caused severe pain in his arms.

"Something's strange with this guy's Spiritual Energy!"

Shi Jingtian was shocked. Only now did he detect that there was a hint of black flames that was within the dark black Spiritual Energy whenever Mu Chen attacked.

"I must not fight against him head on!"

Shi Jingtian hurriedly retreated backwards. The black flame was too overbearing. If he let too much of the black flames seep into his body, it would probably scorch his meridians, which would gravely injure him.

"I must not delay this battle." Shi Jingtian finally felt a bit of unease. Mu Chen's strange techniques had finally made him quite uneasy.

"I'll deal with him in one attack!"

Viciousness filled Shi Jingtian's eyes. He immediately gritted his teeth as

his arms trembled slightly. The greyish-white color in his arms turned increasingly dark. His large veins also twitched. At this moment, even his ten fingers seemed to be crafted from stone.

Accompanied with the greyish-white light, a formidable fluctuation erupted from Shi Jingtian's palms.

"Take this!"

When the greyish-white light and Spiritual Energy had reached its peak, Shi Jingtian shouted loudly as he smacked down with his palm.

"Heavenly Stonesmash Palm!"

Following Shi Jingtian's shout, a greyish-white light escaped his hand and instantly formed into a massive stone palm. This palm was covered with rock engravings and was extremely tough.

At the same time, Mu Chen's palm also released out a dark black light. He, too, fired out a palm attack calmly. In that instant, faint sounds of thunders were formed and the entire sky seemed to darken.

"Vajra Pagoda!"

Mu Chen also struck with his palm. The dark black Spiritual Energy formed into a black palm. On the black palm, dark golden tower engravings emerged and a fluctuation that seemed to suppress everything appeared.

Boom!

The two palm attacks ripped through the air and collided heavily with each other like meteorites. At that moment, a loud noise resounded. Violent shockwaves were emitted and formed gales in the area. Sand and stone were instantly swept up from the earth.

"Suppress!"

Mu Chen's eyes turned cold and he clenched his hands. Underneath the golden tower engravings, Shi Jingtian was aghast to see that his rock palm was beginning to crack. It was as if the Spiritual Energy within it was completely erased.

“How is this possible?!” Shi Jingtian was completely speechless.

“Swish!”

However, Mu Chen ignored him and the black palm with golden tower engravings completely emerged above Shi Jingtian as it smacked down.

Seeing this, Shi Jingtian hurriedly circulated his Spiritual Energy to protect this body.

Bang!

However, the palm still beat down mercilessly at him. After a muffled cry, everybody noticed Shi Jingtian falling down from the sky and landed fiercely on the ground.

The ground instantly shattered and web-like cracks spread out.

Puchi.

Shi Jingtian had a pale expression as he spat out a mouthful of blood. Traces of horror were still shown in his eyes. He never imagined that the attacks of Mu Chen would be so terrifying. Not even he, who was infinitely close to a Heavenly Fusion Stage, could block it!

“Swish!”

His eyes blinked as he attempted to retreat backwards. However, he heard the sounds of winds breaking and a light with black flames rushed across his eyes. Then, Mu Chen’s slender fingers, which carried black flames, stopped in front of his throat like the black scythe of a death god.

His body instantly froze and was covered with cold sweat. He did not dare make even the slightest movement.

“I’ve told you before...”

Mu Chen’s black eyes stared calmly at Shi Jingtian, who was completely horrified, as he slowly spoke: “If you get carried away, you will have to pay a price.”

“Now, you should hand over this price. Otherwise, I do not mind eliminating you.”

Chapter 150: Northern Heavens Hall

In the central area, the bustling commotion slowly quieted down. Everybody stared in shock at the conclusion of the battle.

The outcome was beyond many people's imaginations. Shi Jingtian had actually lost!

At this moment, many individuals exchanged glances with one another before turning their gaze towards that slender figure. Their expressions instantly turned serious. As for the people that came from the Spiritual Road, they secretly let out a sigh of relief. As expected, how could a person who caused that shocking event be weak, even if he had failed to obtain the Spiritual Energy Empowerment?

All of them instantly retracted their attitude of superiority. Even if they had exited the Spiritual Road, it did not represent that they were superior to everyone. There were too many talented geniuses in the world. As for the Spiritual Road, it was only a trial and it did not mean that they were standing above their peers. If they wished to maintain their position, they would have to remain vigilant and wary. Otherwise, they might be surpassed by others.

The other superior students in the central area all stared at the scene with serious expressions. Even Zhou Ling couldn't help but smack his lips. By relying on his strength as a Spirit Stage Middle Phase, Mu Chen was able to defeat a person who was a half-step from the Heavenly Fusion Stage. He truly was powerful.

"Mu Chen!"

When Shi Hao witnessed this scene, his expression instantly changed. He shouted loudly as he charged forward to save Shi Jingtian from Mu Chen's hand.

Swish!

But just when he moved, a slender figure appeared directly in front of him. A black longsword carrying an extraordinary sharp sword aura was

only a short distance away from his throat.

Shi Hao was surprised and immediately stopped moving. He hurriedly retreated and lifted his head up. Then, he noticed Luo Li wielding the longsword as she stared calmly at him. She said: “If you’re planning on intervening, I don’t mind fighting against you.”

Shi Hao’s expression instantly changed. Luo Li was a genuine Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouse. It was impossible for him to defeat her alone. Thus, he could only grit his teeth and remain motionless in front of her.

On the other hand, Mu Chen did not care about Shi Hao’s actions. He only stared at Shi Jingtian, who had a gloomy and surprised expression, and smiled faintly. He did not mutter any words and immediately stabbed towards the symbol on the latter’s forehead.

“Wait!” Seeing Mu Chen act without hesitation, Shi Jingtian was completely shocked. He hurriedly shouted and a purple-golden light emerged from the twinkling, purple-golden symbol on his forehead. At the same time, the symbol on his forehead darkened.

Mu Chen held onto the purple-golden light that was filled with mysterious Spiritual Aura and smiled at Shi Jingtian. He said: “Thanks.”

Shi Jingtian had a gloomy expression as he slowly stood up. Then, he retreated quickly and shouted through the gaps of his teeth: “Mu Chen, I’ll never forgive you!”

“You’re welcome to try me anytime.” Mu Chen chuckled. He immediately directed his gaze away and asked: “Anyone else have a problem with me being here?”

The surroundings were completely silent. The people that had originally looked at Mu Chen provocatively instantly turned their gazes away. They did not dare to look directly at him. After all, even someone as powerful as Shi Jingtian was defeated. If they were to face Mu Chen, they would only disgrace themselves.

The other superior individuals also did not respond. It was evident that the strength displayed by Mu Chen was enough to make them afraid. If

they were to offend him right now, not only would they offend Mu Chen, they would also offend Luo Li as well. Thus, it was apparent that this was not a wise decision.

"Haha. As expected from the Blood Calamity Mu Chen. Although we haven't met in the Spiritual Road, I've at least heard the rumors. Now that I've met you, your reputation is well-deserved." King Yan, Yang Ling, laughed as he spoke to Mu Chen.

His laughter instantly shattered the tense atmosphere and the others started to speak as well. However, it was obvious that they were more careful with their words as if they did not want to offend Mu Chen.

Mu Chen also cupped his fist in response to the other individuals. Then, he flicked his finger and sent the purple-gold light towards Luo Li. He said: "After you absorb it, you should reach Rank 9 Symbol."

Seeing Mu Chen hand over the Rank 8 Symbol to Luo Li, they were stunned for a moment. After all, it was quite difficult to raise the symbol to Rank 8. Just by hunting Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts, it would require at least three of them before it reached that rank. Therefore, there weren't even ten individuals that reached Rank 8 Symbol.

On the other side, Luo Li extended her slender hand to grasp onto the purple-golden light. Then, she smiled gently towards Mu Chen before absorbing the purple-golden light into the symbol on her forehead.

Many people in this area watched as this scene occurred before their very eyes. They immediately held their breath. Since this location was the center of the Northern Heavens World, they only needed a person to obtain a Rank 9 Symbol and the condition to summon the Northern Heavens Hall would be fulfilled.

Once the purple-gold light entered Luo Li's forehead, the purple-golden symbol on her forehead emitted a dazzling light. This light was like a purple-golden beam, which shot out from her forehead and into the sky.

"Boom!"

When the purple-gold beam rushed into the sky, everybody noticed that

the Spiritual Energy fluctuations in the world suddenly turned extremely violent. Then, noise rumbled down from the skies above.

Everybody immediately turned their gaze towards the sky.

In the sky, the purple-gold light shone as it vaguely formed into a massive purple-gold palace. This palace brought forth a shadow as it slowly descended from the skies.

Finally, the purple-gold palace slowly descended down and landed on the ground. In the instant that it landed, the earth trembled violently.

"Is this the Northern Heavens Hall?"

Many people stared eagerly at the purple-gold palace. This was the true gateway to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. After passing through, they would finally become students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Rumble.

Under numerous gazes, the purple-gold palace's heavy, gold-crafted doors slowly opened. A dazzling gold light filled their eyes.

"The Northern Heavens Hall has opened. The students that have reached Rank 4 Symbol or above, please enter..." Following the opening of the purple-gold door, an old and hoarse voice slowly resounded out from within.

"Boom!"

This voice instantly broke the silence. Countless individuals, who had achieved this condition, had their eyes turn red due to excitement. The next moment, swishing sounds of winds resounded out. Then, these students all rushed into the purple-gold palace like a swarm of locusts.

When Mu Chen witnessed this terrifying formation, he also gave a huge smile. Then, he tilted his head towards Ye Qingling and the others as he spoke: "Let's enter as well."

Ye Qingling nodded her head. The Ye Clan members were also extremely excited. They had finally made it to this place after passing

through numerous trials and tests.

"Let's go!"

Mu Chen waved his hand at Luo Li and the two of them took the lead as they charged forward. In a few seconds, they had appeared before the massive purple-gold door as they rushed in.

In the instant they passed through the purple-gold door, they could feel the symbol on their forehead flash slightly. It was as if something had been scanned. It was apparent that one of the abilities of the palace was to track their symbols. As for the students that did not manage to reach Rank 4 Symbol, it was evident that they had lost the opportunity to enter through the doors and were forever eliminated from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy...

Just when Mu Chen and the others rushed into the purple-gold palace, a brilliant light flashed through their eyes. After they recovered their consciousness, they discovered that they were inside a vast hall. Even by looking around, they did not manage to see the ends of the hall.

At this moment, numerous figures emerged within the hall. Soon, the vast and empty hall was completely crowded.

"Where is this place?"

Many people looked around, dazed. Is this the interior of the Northern Heavens Hall? How should they enter the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy after entering this location?

"Ohoho, little fellows. Congratulations for passing the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's examination." Just when everybody was glancing around, lights gathered around and an old figure slowly emerged in midair.

The old figure was quite familiar. It was the figure formed with light that had guided Mu Chen and the others on the Escort Platform. However, the figure standing in front of them wasn't an illusory light figure. Instead, it was his true body.

Mu Chen stared at the white-haired old man and a hint of seriousness

flashed through his eyes. He could sense a strong pressure emitting from the latter's body. This pressure was clearly not something that an ordinary Heavenly Fusion Stage should possess.

"As expected from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Even the person that is escorting us is terrifying to such a degree." Mu Chen smacked his lips secretly.

"I am the person that escorts you from the Northern Heavens World. At the same time, I will lead you to the true Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy." In the sky, the old man stared at the mass of humans below. At this moment, the youthful faces were all filled with expectation and excitement regarding the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

"Since you've managed to arrive here, it is enough to prove that you were successful. Next up, I will hand over the reward that you deserve."

The white-haired old man smiled slightly and waved his hand. Then, all of the symbols on the everyone's forehead flashed immediately. In the end, the symbols turned into a beams of light which fell into everybody's hands.

Once the light faded away, a sparkling crystal card appeared in everybody's hand. At the same time, a number emerged on the crystal card.

"What is this?"

Sounds of confusion rang out from everybody.

"This is the Spiritual Value Card. The number on top of it is known as Spiritual Value. You should not underestimate this item. It is extremely important within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. In the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, you can use these Spiritual Values to exchange the items that you want such as Spiritual Arts, Spiritual Artifacts, Diagram Arrays, Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence and even personal guidance from top-notched instructors..."

WAHHH.

A commotion instantly burst out inside the hall. Many people looked at

the crystal card in their hands heatedly. So this little thing was that useful?

Mu Chen was also surprised when he heard this. He lowered his head and looked at the Spiritual Value Card in his hand. On the surface, it showed a few numbers: 1100 Points.

“1100 Spiritual Value Points...It seems that the higher the symbol’s rank is, the more Spiritual Value one would obtain.”

Mu Chen thought for a moment. Then, he looked at the Spiritual Value Card in Luo Li’s hand, who was standing beside him. On the surface, there were a few dazzling numbers.

5000 Points.

Mu Chen could not stop his mouth from twitching. It was actually that much more than his...

Chapter 151: The Final Challenge

5000 spiritual value points.

While Mu Chen was slightly shocked by the numbers displayed on Luo Li's spiritual value Card, he glanced around and looked at Ye Qingling's spiritual value Card. Although the latter possessed a Rank 7 Symbol, she only had approximately 800 spiritual value points. As for Mo Ling, Wang Sheng and the others, they had even less, approximately 100...

Thus, Ye Qingling and the others could not help but exclaim loudly when they noticed the dazzling amount of spiritual value points that Luo Li possessed. That amount was probably the highest among everyone here, right?

"You've suddenly become a rich woman." Mu Chen laughed as he joked around.

In response, Luo Li glared at him snappily.

All of a sudden, someone asked loudly in the hall, "Old Mister, how can we gain more spiritual value points?" When he heard this question, the white-haired old man smiled. "It isn't difficult to obtain spiritual value points. In the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, there is a variety of tasks. Once you complete these tasks, you will be able to obtain spiritual value points. You could also obtain them by hunting Spiritual Beasts and handing over the Spiritual Beasts' Soul Essences to us. Moreover, there are private trades between students, which use spiritual value points. You will gradually understand more about this after you enter the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy."

Mu Chen nodded his head slightly. It seemed that there were many methods of obtaining spiritual value points.

"Then when can we enter the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?" A few individuals could not wait and asked. They were looking forward to seeing the true Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy for a long time.

"If we follow the normal regulations, you have already qualified to

enter."

The white-haired old man smiled faintly and said: "However, there's a final stage that needs to be completed. This stage is not for everyone, but only the students that have achieved a Rank 7 Symbol or above."

"Eh?"

In the hall, the people who possessed a Rank 7 or above Symbol, were shocked. Then, they stared at the white-haired old man. Was it some sort of test for them?

"This test isn't necessary. You can choose to give up and there will be no losses. However, the ones that managed to pass this test will receive an additional 5000 spiritual value points." The white-haired old man chuckled.

"5000 spiritual value points?" Numerous people instantly turned eager. As for the ones that failed to reach a Rank 7 Symbol, they could only stare enviously at the ones that did.

"May we know what sort of test it is?" A person, who possessed a Rank 7 Symbol, asked eagerly.

"It's a duel. However, your opponents are your seniors within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy." The white-haired old man smiled.

"Seniors from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?" The corner of many people's eyes twitched. They could feel that something terrible was going to happen.

The white-haired old man waved his sleeves and a dozen light pillars suddenly lit up behind him. As the light pillar faded away, a dozen figures appeared in the sky above.

These figures all possessed youthful appearances. Once they emerged, they stared at the youthful boys and girls within the hall mockingly.

"Yo. Looks like there's quite a few people here. It seems that the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy will become quite lively." A boy with red hair chuckled as he looked down at the crowd below.

“We’ve waited for ages before we were summoned here. Old Bai, this isn’t quite efficient.” A skinny youth smiled towards the white-haired old man.

“This Northern Heavens World has only just summoned the Northern Heavens Hall. It’s truly quite slow. As for the other three Northern Heavens Worlds, their results were obtained a long time ago...” Another burly youth spoke out as well.

“I’ve heard that those three Northern Heavens Worlds had a few powerful individuals inside. They even managed to pass through the final challenge. However, it’s probably impossible for them to succeed with Sister An here, right?” A few people smiled towards the central light pillar where, a glamorous woman wearing a red dress emerged. She had a scorchingly attractive body and extremely beautiful looks. However, her face remained cold and heartless, which stopped many from looking at her.

“Shut up!”

The girl in the red dress swept her gaze around and shouted coldly. In response, the dozen individuals immediately closed their mouths and did not dare to speak another word.

In the hall, countless gazes stared at the dozen individuals behind the white-haired old man. Their expressions became more serious, and they could sense the enormous pressure emitting from the bodies of those people. It was comparable to the strength of someone who was only half-a-step away from Heavenly Fusion Stage.

The beautiful girl in red seemed especially terrifying...

Mu Chen stared in surprise at these figures before his eyes finally landed on the girl in red dress. His gaze turned serious as his expression turned solemn. This was because he could sense that the girl was a genuine Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouse.

She was at the same level as Liu Jingshan!

“An Ran, you’ll explain how the following duels will go.” The white-

haired old man beckoned the girl in red dress forward as he smiled.

"Yes."

The girl named An Ran nodded her head slightly, and her beautiful, yet cold eyes stared at everyone at the scene. Her red lips parted slightly as she spoke faintly: "Newbies that have just arrived, I will represent all the seniors in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy in welcoming you. No matter what sort of background you have, you should behave honestly within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Here, we will only respect the strong. If you don't have any capabilities, we will look down upon you even if you have a powerful background."

"Next up, let's talk about the final challenge that you'll face. The ones that possess a Rank 7 Symbol or above are qualified to challenge us. Of course, you can directly give up."

"The reward for successfully passing a challenge has already been mentioned by Old Bai. Although the people beside me aren't exceptionally excellent in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy and are only ranked in the 50s of the Spirit Ranking within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, against the likes you, they should be quite troublesome to defeat."

"What is the Spirit Ranking?" Someone asked curiously.

"It is the lowest ranking within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy." An Ran replied coldly.

Many people were dumbfounded. These people, who were half-a-step away from the Heavenly Fusion Stage, could only enter the lowest rankings within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?

"Oi, Sister An. You should at least give us some face in front of these newbies. The Spirit Ranking isn't as terrible as you've explained. The ones that are in the top 10 are quite powerful." The dozen individuals all had flushed faces as they complained.

"Those idiots, who are hogging the Spirit Ranking and do not dare to advance? They are powerful?" An Ran coldy swept her gaze over them. At

this moment, the group of people immediately shrank back and did not dare to respond to her.

"You should know that there were a total of four Northern Heavens World used as testing ground this time. You are only in one of them. And among these four Northern Heavens World, yours was the slowest to summon the Northern Heavens Hall. Perhaps this represents that you are the worst out of the bunch." An Ran said as she looked at the group of new students.

"Just who says that! We could have had a Rank 9 Symbol appear a long time ago. However, there was a tiny problem that occurred." Zhou Ling could not help but mutter. If it wasn't for Luo Li heading over to save Mu Chen, they would have summoned the Northern Heavens Hall a while ago.

"Newbie. Don't talk about excuses in front of me. I only care about the results. Whether or not you're the weakest out of the four Northern Heavens World, you should not say it out with your mouth but prove it with your own strength!" An Ran replied coldly.

Zhou Ling curled his lips and stopped arguing with her. It was indeed true that this girl's strength was much higher than his own.

"The other three Northern Heavens Worlds have all passed the final challenge. Among the ones that passed, there were a few students that achieved the best results. They actually managed to defeat the strongest senior among the students dispatched here."

In the hall, a few student were slightly moved. Based on the seniors in front of them, the strongest senior in each respective Northern Heavens World would at least possess the strength of a Heavenly Fusion Stage, right? As newbies, they managed to defeat them?

"Who are they?" King Yan, Yan Ling, asked. He was also a prideful individual. Naturally, he would want to know who was more outstanding than him.

An Ran glanced at him for a moment and said: "Bing Qing, Mu Kui and Yang Hong."

When these three names were spoken, a large uproar resounded out within the hall, especially from the people that came from the Spiritual Road. Aside from the first name, the other two individuals were people that once stood at the pinnacle of the Spiritual Road. Even among the ones that were assessed as 'King Class', they were considered to be ranked high up.

"Yang Hong..."

Mu Chen's eyes narrowed when he heard this name. That guy'd truly advanced quite quickly.

"Next up, it's your turn." An Ran said faintly: "If you want to make me recognize you're not the weakest out of the 4 groups, then show me your abilities. I absolutely detest men that only know how to speak with their mouth."

When everyone heard her words, they gnashed their teeth suddenly. All of them felt the impulse to hit her. Moreover, looking at the abundant buttocks of her hot body, it should feel pretty good when they smack her.

Although these thoughts appeared in many people's mind, they did not dare to speak up. Since An Ran was able to make the other seniors afraid, it was best for newbies like them to endure it as well.

"Right now, all of the people that qualify for the duel can choose to give up. If you give up, take a step backwards."

In the hall, everybody looked at each other. Then, a few students that possess a Rank 7 Symbol smiled bitterly and retreated backwards. Since all of these seniors possessed the strength of a Quasi-Heavenly Fusion Stage, how would it be possible for them to defeat them?

"It seems that I have to give up on it as well." Ye Qingling smiled helplessly. She was only at the Spirit Stage Initial Phase. It was evident that there was no need for her to try this challenge.

"Mu Chen, Luo Li, good luck. Defeat her. Show her how powerful us rookies are." Ye Qingling smiled. The only one who could challenge An Ran was probably Luo Li. As for Mu Chen, he was probably slightly

weaker.

In the hall, a gap soon emerged. In the end, there were only a dozen students that stood in the front of the group.

“The selection of opponents will be decided through drawing lots. However, you will still have the right to give up after you draw your lot.” An Ran gripped her hand and numerous lights flew out.

Upon seeing this, the group below all caught the clump of lights with their hand. When the lights landed, they instantly turned into beams of light before they finally landed on the seniors’ bodies.

Mu Chen was one of those who caught a clump of light and gently gripped it. The clump of light cracked open and turned into a beam of red light.

His line of sight followed the red light and he was instantly stunned. Of course, he wasn’t the only one that was dumbfounded. Even the other newbies were shocked.

This is because at the end of the Mu Chen’s beam of red light was An Ran, who had a cold expression.

Chapter 152: An Ran

Mu Chen was standing at one end of the red beam while An Ran, who had a cold expression, was on the other end. This scene instantly silenced the hall and many people had a strange gaze.

Mu Chen had actually been matched with the strongest one among the seniors.

“Heh.” On the side, the Shi Family’s Brothers sneered as if they had seen something fortunate.

At the same time, Zhou Ling and the others frowned. Isn’t Mu Chen’s luck too terrible? He actually selected the trickiest one of the seniors. Judging from the individuals here, the only one who could fight against An Ran was probably Luo Li.

Although they were quite shocked when Mu Chen defeated Shi Jingtian, An Ran was much more powerful than Shi Jingtian.

“Spirit Stage Middle Phase?”

In the sky, the dozen seniors were surprised as they stared at Mu Chen. They could not help but chuckle: “This is quite interesting. Why is it such a weak newbie? Moreover, isn’t he too unlucky...”

Under numerous gazes, Mu Chen smiled helplessly. He truly had bad luck.

Next to Mu Chen, Luo Li stared at Mu Chen with quite a worried expression. She could sense how tricky this senior known as An Ran would be.

As for An Ran, she stared at Mu Chen emotionlessly and said: “You should give up. I don’t want to waste any time. Perhaps you can ask the girl beside you. If she is willing to fight against me, I will allow you to exchange with her. In this place, she is the only one that can fight against me.”

Hearing this, Luo Li lifted her eyebrow for a moment. Then, she looked at Mu Chen hesitantly. Although the boy in front of her was warm and

gentle like the sun, he possessed a strong pride deep down inside. Thus, she did not want her actions to hurt his pride, which boys seemed so concerned about it.

Mu Chen looked at Luo Li, who was hesitant in speaking. Then, he smiled faintly and gripped onto the fading red beam of light: “If it wasn’t for Yang Hong, I wouldn’t mind letting you replace me on this. After all, it’s best if I can focus on fewer matters.”

Luo Li nodded slightly. She understood the meaning behind his words. If there was no Yang Hong, he would step back. But since Yang Hong had achieved the best results in another Northern Heavens World...

Since Mu Chen had defeated Yang Hong in the Spiritual Road, the prideful Mu Chen would not allow himself to be any worse off than to Yang Hong.

“Good luck.” Luo Li said gently.

Mu Chen nodded before lifting his head. He smiled at the icy-cold senior known as An Ran: “There’s no need to exchange. I’ll be the one fighting. Please give me your guidance, senior.”

An Ran frowned for a moment as she stared at Mu Chen. Then, she replied coldly: “In order to keep a bit of face, you would challenge an opponent that you know you won’t be able to win against. This action is truly foolish. At times, it’s best to endure temporarily. The new students this time are truly disappointing.”

In the hall, many students gnashed their teeth when they heard her demeaning tone. However, they did not dare to talk back.

However, Mu Chen smiled gently at the cold, yet beautiful appearance of An Ran and replied: “Senior An. Allow me to speak bluntly; when I was learning how to endure, perhaps you were still learning how to fall in love with others.”

At this moment, the hall instantly turned silent. Even the dozen of seniors widened their mouths and stared dumbfounded at the boy below them. Isn’t this boy too amazing? He actually dared to provoke An Ran?

The white-haired old man also smiled as he stared at Mu Chen. However, he did not intervene in the conversation.

“What did you say?!”

An Ran’s expression was completely cold as she stared at Mu Chen. Her chest heaved slightly, and it was apparent that she was suppressing her rage. Then, she moved and appeared in front of Mu Chen. In that instant, a powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuation enveloped Mu Chen.

“Senior. Everyone has the right to speak at this location. Since you mocked all the students here, we also have the right to speak back at you.” Luo Li took half a step forward and blocked the Spiritual Energy fluctuation emitting from An Ran’s body.

An Ran stared ruthlessly at Mu Chen and said: “It’s true that everybody has the right to speak. However, they would also have to pay the price for being so defiant. I hope that your strength can match your mouth’s abilities. Otherwise, I will truly look down upon you.”

“Thank you senior for your reminder.” Mu Chen smiled faintly. Since the other side was being so rude and forceful, he did not bother being too polite.

“Old Bai, let’s begin!” An Ran said coldly.

In the sky, Old Bai nodded his head and said: “Is everybody ready?”

While his words faded away, he noticed that nobody rejected. Thus, he waved his sleeves and numerous lights descended. They landed directly and enveloped the seniors, Mu Chen and the other new students.

The light also enveloped An Ran. She stared coldly at Mu Chen for a moment before closing her eyes tightly. She had already planned on teaching a lesson to the newbie known as Mu Chen. He dares act this arrogant when he only possess such pitiful strength? Did he really believed that this place was the weak and powerless Spiritual Academy that he was in before?

Swish!

Once the lights faded away, Mu Chen and the other's bodies suddenly disappeared as well. This made everyone within the hall completely stunned. However, a large screen of light soon appeared in the sky. Within the light screen, many figures appeared. They were the people that had disappeared.

So they could actually rely on this screen of light to view the upcoming battles.

Numerous gazes focused themselves on the light screen. Then, they began to search for two figures. Instead of the battles where the results were obvious, it was evident that they wanted to see how Mu Chen would face off against the strongest senior among the group...

Would it be a massacre where Mu Chen was defeated pitifully or would it be similar to the battle earlier where he completely reversed the situation against Shi Jingtian?

The crowd continued to stare at the screen with eyes filled with expectations...

When Mu Chen opened his eyes, he was located inside a vast and empty hall. This hall wasn't as big as the place before. But more importantly, it was completely empty as if there were no other people around.

"Freshmen, are you prepared to pay the price of what you've said earlier?" An icy cold voice rang out from in front of him. Mu Chen turned his gaze over and noticed that An Ran staring at him coldly.

"Senior. No man would ever like such a cold woman." Mu Chen smiled helplessly and replied.

"Even now, you still dare to talk back to me!" A cold chill was projected from An Ran's eyes. She bit her teeth angrily. This was the first time she met a person that could make her this angry.

"Since senior doesn't like what I'm saying...'

Mu Chen smiled as his eyes instantly turned emotionless: "Let's fight!"

Once these words were spoken, Mu Chen rushed forward. He had

activated the Shadowspirit Step to the limits and turned into numerous afterimages. At the same time, the winds produced from his fingers were like lightning as they stabbed violently towards An Ran.

An Ran let out a cold laugh and did not evade Mu Chen's attack. Instead, a powerful Spiritual Energy gushed out of her body like an erupting volcano. With just the Spiritual Energy impact, she had completely pushed back Mu Chen.

The gap between a Spirit Stage Middle Phase and an Heavenly Fusion Stage was just too enormous.

"With only such abilities, you actually dared to act conceited?"

An Ran's eyes were completely cold as she spoke: "Bring out your full strength. Otherwise, you won't have an opportunity to attack again."

"Vajra Pagoda!"

Mu Chen did not hesitate at all as a dark black Spiritual Energy erupted out from his body. As he smacked out with his palm, a dark black hand was formed in the sky. Golden tower engravings appeared and disappeared on the hand as it attempted to suppress An Ran.

Against such an opponent, ordinary attacks would be completely useless. He had to use his full strength.

"This is at least a bit better than before." An Ran stared at the dark black palm, which possessed a powerful Spiritual Energy suppression, and grunted. Then, she pushed off from the ground and headed directly towards the dark black palm. Spiritual Energy erupted from her slender hands and formed into a long spear. It immediately gave off an incredible atmosphere.

"Spirit Destruction Spear!"

A cold cry exited An Ran's mouth as she swung her slender arms. The long spear formed by Spiritual Energy flashed as it became a pillar of light. Afterwards, it tore through the skies and collided heavily against the palm.

Dong!

A powerful Spiritual Energy shockwave was emitted and instantly distorted the air. Soon after, An Ran's eyes turned cold. Then, An Ran's eyes turned ruthless as Spiritual Energy erupted out from her body.

Boom!

A dazzling light forcibly collided with the black hand and cracks soon emerged. In the end, the black hand had shattered completely.

The Vajra Pagoda that Mu Chen had formed was finally forcibly destroyed by someone else. This...was the difference in strength.

An Ran moved and stood in the sky. Her cold eyes stared down at Mu Chen. But just when she was about to sneer and mock Mu Chen, her expression suddenly turned serious. This is because she noticed that Mu Chen's body had remained motionless throughout the previous exchange, yet in the sky above, a powerful golden light erupted. As the lights condensed, it formed into a massive and complex Diagram Array.

"A Spiritual Array?!" A hint of shock finally appeared within An Ran's eyes. She could sense the violent Spiritual Energy fluctuation emitting from the Spiritual Array. Judging from the fluctuations, it was already close to a Heavenly Fusion Stage.

"So this guy was also a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master? No wonder he dared to act this arrogant when he's still at the Spirit Stage Middle Phase." An Ran finally understood why Mu Chen had acted the way he did before. However, she only sneered in response to the Spiritual Array. After all, to fight against a Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouse, would require at least a Rank 3 Spiritual Array Master. Right now, Mu Chen was still quite far from it.

At this moment, Mu Chen spat out white air from his mouth. His black eyes focused themselves on An Ran as he changed hand seals. Then, a muffled cry resounded out.

"Dragon Elephant Array!"

Roar!

At this moment, sounds of dragons and elephants resounded out loudly

as a powerful Spiritual Energy surged out...

Within the hall, many new students were surprised as they stared at the screen of light where Mu Chen was being shown Although they weren't in the same place as Mu Chen, they could still sense how powerful the Spiritual Array activated by Mu Chen was.

But even if the Spiritual Array was powerful, was it truly enough to defeat An Ran, who was at the Heavenly Fusion Stage?

Chapter 153: The Freshman's Counterattack

Roar!

Deafening roars rang out within the vast and empty hall from the dragon and elephant. At that moment, the entire hall trembled as a formidable Spiritual Energy fluctuation emitted from the giant Spiritual Array above Mu Chen.

"Dragon Elephant Array!"

A flash of light surged through Mu Chen's eyes as he changed his hand seals. At the same time, the massive Spiritual Array shook. Then dark-golden beams of light surged out and formed into a galloping dragon and elephant. As they galloped through the empty skies, a powerful pressure erupted viciously in An Ran's direction

While An Ran stood in the air and stared at the golden dragon and elephant, dense Spiritual Energy gushed out from her hands as she struck out towards it.

"Shattering Ethereal Palm!"

Once An Ran attacked the golden dragon and elephant, the air in front of her seemed to become distorted. A dense Spiritual Energy gathered and formed into a palm of light as it smacked heavily against the approaching golden dragon and elephant.

Boom!

The two attacks collided, and an terrifying Spiritual Energy shockwave was instantly emitted.

"Dragon Elephant Suppression!"

Mu Chen said out softly. The golden dragon and elephant quickly turned into a golden disc with a dragon and elephant covering it. Then, with a loud explosion, it completely shattered the palm of light as it charged fiercely towards An Ran.

"Wave Surfing Slash!"

An Ran's eyes remained cold as Mu Chen's attack approached her. Dense Spiritual Energy gathered on her hands and formed a wave-like blade of light. Then, as she swung her arm down, the blade of light rushed out and slashed the golden disc. Metal clanging sounds rang out when they collided. In the end, the blade of light actually split the golden disc into two halves.

Commotion instantly rang out from the new students within the giant hall. An Ran was truly too powerful. Moreover, she had numerous powerful Spiritual Arts. Although the power of the Spiritual Array arranged by Mu Chen contained extraordinary power, she was able to destroy it completely.

Swish!

While the new students were focused on the match between Mu Chen and An Ran, a beam of light suddenly shone down into the hall. Afterwards, two figures emerged from within the beam of light and everybody immediately turned their gaze in that direction. They noticed that Luo Li and a senior, who had a flushed expression, had reappeared within the hall.

"Thanks for the battle, senior." Luo Li looked at the boy with reddened cheeks as she spoke softly.

Hearing this, the boy suddenly let out a bitter laugh. Who would have known that this beautiful girl would actually be this powerful? With her Heavenly Fusion Stage strength, it was no wonder that An Ran had said that she was the only one that could compete against her.

"Luo Li actually won this quickly?"

The new students recovered from the shock and exclaimed out loud. Then, they stared in shock at the girl in black dress that possess a slender body. However, the latter's eyes remained calm and completely ignored everybody's gazes. She only lifted her exquisite face and stared at a few screens made of light until it finally landed on the screen where Mu Chen was located. A hint of worry appeared in her eyes.

Bang!

An Ran's body appeared in front of Mu Chen's body as her hand contained a terrifying Spiritual Energy fluctuation. It headed mercilessly towards Mu Chen's chest. However, it was blocked completely by the latter's arms.

A muffled sound rang out and Spiritual Energy fluctuations emitted from that spot. Mu Chen's body was instantly sent flying away and his feet slid on the ground for a few hundred meters until he finally stabilized. It was evident that his arms were slightly numb.

In that moment, Mu Chen's eyes turned slightly serious. This was his second time fighting against a real Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouse. The first time was naturally against Liu Jingshan. However, he was only at the Spiritual Rotation Stage back then. The gap between the two of them was simply indescribable. Therefore, he could only fight against him after borrowing the strength of the Nine Nether Bird. But even so, the price he paid was that he had to fall unconscious for nearly half a month.

Right now, it was apparent that he was much stronger than before. Even if he only relied on his own strength, he was still able to fight back against a powerhouse of that level, though he was completely being overwhelmed.

If he wanted to defeat An Ran, it wasn't enough with just these methods!

An Ran's body turned into a figure of light once again as she rushed over towards him. A cold laugh rang out as another vicious Spiritual Energy impact enveloped Mu Chen.

Mu Chen's body trembled slightly before he retreated quickly back using afterimages. Only after he evaded An Ran's attack did he dare let out a breath of relief. His consciousness entered his aura sea and saw the Nine Nether Bird elegantly extending its wings with black flames as it sat comfortably on the mandala flower.

It was evident that the current Nine Nether Bird had regained a bit of power after absorbing the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon and the Geocentric Flame Japalura's Soul Essences. Not only was the color on its body becoming more profound, even the black flames that shrouded its

body had become a lot denser.

"You shouldn't need my strength against such an opponent, right?" The Nine Nether Bird said lazily: "Moreover, I don't want to attack since I still have a lot of Spiritual Energy that's not digested yet."

"I just came here to get the power that belongs to me."

Mu Chen replied snappily. After the Bloodline Bond, to a certain extent, a portion of the Nine Nether Bird's powers belongs to him as well. He could easily use it as if it was his own. At the same time, a portion of his powers could be used by the Nine Nether Bird. However, it was evident that the Nine Nether Bird does not care about his current power.

This was one of the benefits of the Bloodline Bond.

Of course, the power that he could freely use could not compare in strength with the all-out attack that the Nine Nether Bird had done back then against the Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts. However, it was already sufficient for him right now.

"That's fine."

The Nine Nether Bird slowly closed its eyes as it lay lazily on the mandala flower. Black Spiritual Energy erupted from its body like flames as it gushed into the tiny spirit that was sitting on top of the Spiritual Energy light wheel...

"Did you become quiet because you finally are aware of the difference in strength?"

An Ran sneered as she increased the ferocity of her attacks. By relying on her Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase strength, she had completely suppressed Mu Chen.

"Playtime's over. It's time to end this!"

Since An Ran noticed that Mu Chen had stopped speaking, she started to feel bored as well. The Spiritual Energy within her hands suddenly became a lot of stronger. Afterwards, she shot down heavily towards Mu Chen in order to end the battle.

Bang! But just when she smacked down with her hands, a hint of light flashed through Mu Chen's black eyes. Then, the corner of his lips were lifted up slightly.

"Senior An. It's not a good habit to rejoice this early."

A fleeting smile appeared on Mu Chen's face as he immediately fired out a punch. At this moment, dark black Spiritual Energy surged out like a flood. Within the Spiritual Energy, a black flame rose as it released an overwhelming heat.

Boom!

The winds formed by Mu Chen's fist directly collided against An Ran's hand. In that instant, a powerful shockwave exploded out. Even the ground underneath their feet collapsed from the strength of the collision.

As the shockwave exploded outwards and gravel flew everywhere, Mu Chen and An Ran's body both trembled for a moment before they were blown back from the shock.

In the hall, the countless new students exclaimed aloud. Mu Chen actually repelled An Ran in a head-on battle? Wasn't he completely suppressed early on?

"That boy is quite interesting." Currently, the majority of the battles have already ended and many seniors have already reappeared within the hall. They stared at the screen of light and were dumbfounded. It was evident that they did not expect that Mu Chen would be able to fight against An Ran to this extent.

In the hall where the battle was being fought, An Ran also stabilized herself as her cold expression revealed a hint of shock. Mu Chen was able to fight evenly against her in a head on battle?

"How is this possible?"

An Ran looked forward towards Mu Chen. Mu Chen's body was completely wrapped in dark black Spiritual Energy. On the surface of his Spiritual Energy, a mysterious black flame floated around as it gave off an extremely dangerous fluctuation.

“Why did his Spiritual Energy suddenly increase this much?” An Ran was completely dazed. If it was earlier, Mu Chen was able to fight evenly against a Spirit Stage Late Phase. However, the current Mu Chen had already reached the gateway to the Heavenly Fusion Stage. Although there was still a gap between the two of them, it wasn’t impossible for him to make up for it.

“Senior An, now let’s fight again.”

Mu Chen looked at An Ran and smiled. Within his black eyes, a black flame rose and the surging energy within his body instantly made his blood boil.

“As if I’m afraid of you!”

Although An Ran was astonished deep down inside, she still gave a sneer with her mouth.

Swish!

Just when her sneer faded away, swishing sounds instantly rang out. Numerous afterimages appeared and Mu Chen’s body had already emerged in front of her like a ghost. Then, his fist that was wrapped with rumbling black smoke quickly grew with within An Ran’s eyes.

“Shattering Ethereal Palm!”

An Ran reacted quickly and countered with a palm. Spiritual Energy rumbled as it fiercely collided against Mu Chen’s attack.

Bang!

Visible Spiritual Energy shockwaves ripples expanded out. The two Spiritual Energy interweaved against each other as each tried to erode the other. However, An Ran’s face changed slightly. This is because she noticed that Mu Chen’s dark black Spiritual Energy rushed over overbearingly as the two Spiritual Energy collided with each other. As the black flames rose, even her Spiritual Energy was completely burned away.

“What the hell is this? It could even burn Spiritual Energy!”

An Ran was surprised. Once she felt her Spiritual Energy weakening, her

body instantly moved to the sky. At this moment, her face gradually turned serious as she exhaled.

Afterwards, the Spiritual Energy around her body instantly erupted out as a icy-blue hawk appeared behind her. Once the icy-blue hawk appeared, a powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuation emerged as well.

The icy-blue hawk's body was completely covered with an ice armor. From its body, it released a chill which seemed to have frozen the air.

Mu Chen's eyes turned solemn when he noticed the icy-blue hawk behind An Ran's back.

"That's..."

In the hall where the new students were located, numerous people stared at the screen of light where the battle seemed to have reached the climax. At this moment, the seniors' expressions had also turned serious. That guy actually managed to force An Ran to summon the "Northern Goldenstripe Seahawk".

That was a Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast ranked 65th on the Myriad Beast Record's Earth Ranking.

The freshman, which only seemed like a Spirit Stage Middle Phase, was actually powerful to this extent?

Chapter 154: Spirit Bird Suppresses the Ice Seahawk

Powerful Spiritual Energy rushed out of An Ran's body as a massive icy-blue hawk unfurled its wings behind her. At that moment, the air suddenly froze and a devastating chill filled the hall.

When compared to the cold air emitted from the Mysterious Spirithail Dragon, this frosty chill was much more severe.

"To be able to force me to use the Northern Goldenstrip Seahawk; you can be proud of yourself even if you lose." Although An Ran still had a cold expression, her eyes had turned quite serious while facing Mu Chen. No matter what happened, the latter had revealed strength that had surprised her. Moreover, she did not forget that Mu Chen was still only at the Spirit Stage Middle Phase. If he was to advance into the Heavenly Fusion Stage in the future, he would probably easily surpass her.

Since An Ran had always believed that strength is everything, she retracted the contempt she had after realizing the full extent of Mu Chen's power. She had finally recognized him as an opponent that was on par with her.

"Then please enlighten me senior. However, I don't want to give up yet."

Mu Chen felt the surging power within his body and replied eagerly. This power gave him the impulse to cry out into the sky; it was as if he finally wanted to fight seriously against someone!

An Ran grunted and an icy-blue light swept out from her body. At the same time, the icy-blue hawk flapped its wings. Immediately afterwards, An Ran's body slowly fused with the icy-blue hawk.

Ji!

When she had fully merged with the icy-blue hawk, an amazing sharpness instantly erupted within the hawk's eyes. At this moment, the icy-blue hawk seemed to come alive. It cried to the skies as a flood of Spiritual Energy was released from its body.

Kacha.

Layers of ice began to form near the icy-blue hawk's surroundings. Even the moisture within the air was completely frozen.

Following the icy cry that emitted from its body, the icy-blue hawk flapped its wings and flew up into the air. Layers of ice continued to grow endlessly from within its body. From a distance, it appeared to be a life-like ice sculpture.

However, this particular ice sculpture was extremely dangerous.

"Frozen Wings!"

When the icy-blue hawk's body was completely enveloped by ice, it flapped its wings and a dazzling, frosty pillar was formed and descended down towards Mu Chen.

Bang!

When this terrifying attack descended from above, the air seemed to explode. Chill filled the air; layers of ice formed as it swooped down, creating an icy path in its wake

Everybody could feel how terrifying An Ran's mighty attack was.

It was as if a fierce creature from the Northern Seas, carrying with it an endless chill, had descended into the world.

Mu Chen lifted his head, and his black eyes reflected the terrifying icy-blue hawk. However, not even the slightest bit of fear could be found in his eyes. Instead, the raging fire within his eyes burned ever more vigorously.

"Let's have a good fight then!"

The smile on Mu Chen's face had suddenly turned a bit unruly. He stomped on the ground as he darted forward. Dark-black Spiritual Energy gushed out like flames and enshrouded his body.

Xiong Xiong. 1

All of a sudden, the dark black Spiritual Energy expanded exponentially.

From afar, only the black smoke rushing into the skies could be seen. In its wake, a long and dark tail of light formed. At this moment, the Spiritual Energy rumbling throughout the area was extremely powerful.

The two figures of light rushed at each other within the massive hall and collided against each other fiercely.

In the hall where the freshmen were located, many of them were completely shocked as they watched this scene. They never expected that Mu Chen would choose to fight against An Ran's powerful attack directly instead of evading her attack.

At this moment, Zhou Ling and the others had also finished up their battles. They, too, stared solemnly at the light screen. The power displayed by Mu Chen had also completely shocked them. Although judging from his strength, he only seemed like a Spirit Stage Middle Phase, he was displaying a power that rivaled or even went beyond what they possessed.

The two brothers, Shi Jingtian and Shi Hao, both turned gloomy upon seeing this. It was evident that the power revealed by Mu Chen was much more powerful than earlier, when he was facing Shi Jingtian.

"No matter what sort of measures you possess, it's impossible for you to be at an advantage against a Heavenly Fusion Stage if you fight head on against them!" The two brothers gnashed their teeth as they stared tightly at the screen of light.

"Brother Mu, good luck!" Mo Ling and the others, with their fists clenched tight, seemed extremely nervous as they stared at the blazing black flame in the screen of light.

Boom!

Under numerous nervous gazes, the black and blue lights were like meteorites as they collided fiercely inside the battle hall.

An amazing chill rushed over from the impact and the sheer frost even formed layers of ice on Mu Chen's body. Even the dense black flames seemed to be suppressed by it.

In an instant, black flames fought back and arose within Mu Chen. A

low growl seemed to be coming from within his throat. Then, dense black Spiritual Energy mixed with black flames burst out overwhelmingly from his body.

The layers of ice on his body instantly melted into nothingness.

Li!

In that instant, a clear cry also rang out from within Mu Chen's body. This cry was filled with pride and dignity as if it was the king of all birds.

Once this cry resounded from Mu Chen, the icy-blue hawk trembled for a moment. Although it was already ingested, it could still sense the oppression that had come from within Mu Chen's body.

Dark black Spiritual Energy concentrated violently on the surface of Mu Chen's body. Soon he took the form of a giant bird with black wings. As the giant bird extended its wings, black flames surged out.

Bang!

Overbearing dark-black Spiritual Energy formed into a mysterious black bird as it charged forward. The rumbling black flames emitting from it instantly melted the cold chill from the icy-blue hawk.

Horror finally filled the icy-blue hawk's eyes. Even An Ran was able to detect a blazing heat rushing over towards her.

This heat instantly made the Spiritual Energy within her body boil up as if it was being burned.

"Shatter!"

A hint of chill flashed through Mu Chen's eyes as he shouted coldly. Then, a loud explosion rang out.

Boom!

The illusory black bird that was being enveloped by black flames flapped its wings. Immediately after, the flames surged out and destroyed the layers of ice armor on the icy-blue bird. In the end, the black bird turned into a black light and pierced through the icy-blue bird.

The black flames rushed away like smoke. However, the icy-blue hawk behind it was filled with cracks. In the end, it exploded out and An Ran's body emerged as the blue lights twinkled in the sky. At the same time, An Ran's face was filled with disbelief.gf

The dense dark black Spiritual Energy around Mu Chen's body also slowly faded away. Although he was a bit pale, his eyes were still exceptionally bright.

Inside the hall, two figures of light suddenly appeared and enveloped both Mu Chen and An Ran. As the light dissipated away, the two figures also vanished from the hall.

Inside the freshman hall, everybody widened their eyes as they stared at the fading screen of the light. The entire hall was completely silent and everyone was filled with disbelief.

They could not believe that Mu Chen had actually destroyed An Ran's terrifying attack!

"Amazing."

Zhou Ling and the others also sighed. A hint of admiration could be heard within their voices. Although they had fought against Mu Chen in the Spiritual Road, they did not bear any grudges against each other as they brushed past him. Therefore, they had not experienced how frightening of an existence Mu Chen was. They could only perceive that Mu Chen was extraordinary from the event that had happened later on.

And now, they were able to personally witness and feel the pressure that the handsome boy had emitted.

The two Shi brothers' expressions turned ugly. However, they did not say anything. It was evident that they were still filled with shock. Even by joining forces with each other, it was near impossible for them to win against An Ran's attack from earlier. However, Mu Chen was able to do it...and was only at the Spirit Stage Middle Phase...

They did not understand how Mu Chen had managed to do this, but this did not stop fear from appearing within their hearts. Mu Chen's

demonstration had finally made them understand that even if he had been kicked out of the Spiritual Road in the middle of the competition; even if he did not receive the Spiritual Road's Empowerment, he was still the Blood Calamity that countless geniuses feared in the Spiritual Road.

"Haha, Brother Mu won!"

As for Mo Ling and the others, they immediately cheered. Sun'Er even clapped her soft and white hands as delight flashed across her petite face.

Luo Li, on the other hand, only gently smiled. Her eyebrows were like crescent moons as a hint of happiness and pride emerged in her clear eyes. The boy that she would often think about deep down inside was indeed extraordinary.

In the hall, two beams of light descended and Mu Chen and An Ran emerged from within. The latter's cold expression had already faded away; instead, what replaced it was a face full of complex emotions. She looked at Mu Chen before she looked over to Old Bai and said: "I lost."

On the side, the seniors quietly smiled when they heard this and directed their gaze towards Mu Chen. This boy truly isn't ordinary. He actually made An Ran admit defeat.

"It seems that there are a few powerful individuals within this bunch of freshmen." With just an exchange of gazes, the seniors could tell that every one of them had thought of the same thing.

Old Bai grinned as he nodded his head. His gaze also swept across Mu Chen's body as he smiled: "There's something interesting within this fellow's body."

Mu Chen smiled in response, but did not explain anything. Although he was not trying to hide the existence of the Nine Nether Bird, there was no need to reveal it. After all, the name of the Nine Nether Bird was far too famous. Moreover, the Nine Nether Bird within his body possessed the qualifications to enter the Heaven Rankings. Once it succeeds in its evolution, its position would instantly improve as it will become a genuine ancient divine beast.

“This is your reward.”

Old Bai flicked his fingers, and the crystal card in Mu Chen’s hand instantly brightened up. The originally 1100 Spiritual Value Points suddenly became 6100...

“Okay, now that everybody’s challenge has been completed, next up...”

Old Bai smiled slightly and waved his sleeves. The air behind him instantly distorted and, with a flash, an enormous bronze door appeared out of thin air. Then, the giant doors slowly opened.

“The Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy welcomes everyone.”

At this moment, all the students stared eagerly at the opening bronze doors. Even Mu Chen could feel his heart pounding. After all, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was the holy land for cultivation within numerous youths’ hearts...

And finally, its doors were open for them!

Chapter 155: Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy

Although there was an endless number of continents within the Great Thousand World, the Northern Heavens Continent was still one of the most dazzling ones.

And the source of the Northern Heavens Continent's brilliance was the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

It was one of the widely-known "Five Great Academies" within the Great Thousand World, where numerous young geniuses gathered. Every one of their students would reveal their magnificent talent as they embarked on the road of becoming one of the dazzling powerhouses within the Great Thousand World.

The Great Thousand World was enormous. Among them, there were countless races and various powerful forces. But even so, many of these geniuses would choose to enter the "Five Great Academies" for training. Just based off this, one could see the how unique the "Five Great Academies" were. Otherwise, why would these wellborn geniuses give up on their own race's inheritance and travel across many continents to train at one of the "Five Great Academies".

Because of the brilliance of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, this place was naturally quite outstanding. When compared to the Northern Spiritual Realm within the Hundred Spirit Continent, the Northern Spiritual Realm couldn't even be considered a rural province of the Northern Heavens Continent.

Within the Northern Heavens Continent, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy maintained a exclusive position. Aside from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, there were still countless small and large forces within this continent. This continent was truly where talented geniuses were concealed.

Someone had once said, even Sovereign powerhouses would have to

retract their pride and arrogance when they arrived at the Northern Heavens Continent. Judging from just this, one can see how complex and deep the waters were of this continent.

Although the waters were deep within the Northern Heavens Continent, the turbulence caused within it would never spread to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. This is because all of the forces and powerhouses within the Northern Heavens Continent know that the quiet Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, which was located at the center of the continent, was in fact a sleeping dragon. Although, normally, it did not normally reveal its strength, its presence was enough to frighten everyone once it did revealed its might.

Moreover, everyone knew that the strength displayed by a Spiritual Academy would only be the strength on the surface. The truly terrifying strength was the not this, but the hidden strength that they concealed.

Over the thousands of years, there were numerous powerhouses who came out of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academies. Among them, there were a few powerhouses who once stood at the pinnacle. Although they had already left the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy and perhaps became a leader of a force or territory, it was impossible to remove the bonds they had with the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Even if they did not do anything during normal circumstances, once the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was in danger of being wiped out... the individuals would be able to see how terrifying a power that was hidden deep inside the academy.

This was the confidence and power of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Perhaps it might not be the strongest within the Great Thousand World. Its human connections would make even the elite forces and races with powerful backgrounds fear it...

When Mu Chen and the others stepped through the giant bronze doors, they could feel a sense of dizziness emerging from within. This was due to the dimensional transfer. Fortunately, the nausea did not last, and before long they felt their bodies stabilizing. Then, the light in front of their eyes suddenly turned brighter.

Everyone opened their narrowed eyes as they stared at the unfamiliar world in front of them. Shock emerged on the faces of many.

The originally empty stone platform was instantly filled as Mu Chen and the others appeared. In front of them was a majestic sight.

An vast and endless land could be seen. On the ground, there were numerous cultivation halls that were connected with each other. Occasionally, waterfalls would descend down through the mountains as grand ripples of mist emitted out.

The scene in front of them was too impressive. Thus, even though the stone platform that Mu Chen and the others were standing on, was quite vast, it was nothing compared to the scene in front of them.

In the skies above the Spiritual Academies, numerous figures would pass by. A few would be flying within the practice grounds. Hence, powerful Spiritual Energies would collide and cause muffled sounds.

Among the endless mountains within the Spiritual Academy, the most eye-catching mountain was the one that was situated in the center. The mountain was oddly shaped and appeared to be a divine bird that had spread its wings. A sense of oppression that enveloped the entire land could be felt from the bird-shaped mountain.

At the top of the wings of this bird-shaped mountain, there were stone tablets on each respective wings. On the stone tablet, dazzling light that could be seen throughout the entire Spiritual Academy radiated outwards.

Mu Chen stared at the massive stone tablet situated at the left wing and stared at the top of the tablet. As the golden lights shone, two grand words were formed.

Spirit Ranking!

“Spirit Ranking...” Mu Chen murmured. Could this be the Spirit Ranking that An Ran previously mentioned?

“That is the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy’s Spirit Ranking.” A voice faintly appeared beside him. Mu Chen turned around and noticed An Ran beside him. She stared at the massive stone tablet as her red lips

twitched.

"What is the Spirit Ranking?" Mu Chen asked in confusion.

"Just as the name implies. This is a ranking that the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy made for the Spirit Stage students. It is the most basic ranking within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. As long as your strength is within the Spirit Stage, you have the qualifications to enter this ranking. However, this Spirit Ranking only includes the top 1000 Spirit Stage within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy," An Ran explained.

Only after the explanation did Mu Chen finally understand the ranking. He was at the Spirit Stage Middle Phase. Just what rank would he possess on the Spirit Ranking?

"If you believe that the ones on the Spirit Ranking would only possess the strength of a Spirit Stage, then you're too naïve." An Ran grunted: "The bastards that are ranked in the top 10 are probably on par with me."

Mu Chen was stunned. Afterwards, he was completely surprised. After all, he only defeated An Ran after relying on the shared power between him and the Nine Nether Bird. Could the people ranked in the top 10 possess Spiritual Beasts that were comparable with the Nine Nether Bird? However, it couldn't be possible that they would possess Bloodlink Bond like him, right?

"These individuals only used a loophole. Normally, you only need to infuse your strongest Spiritual Energy within the Spiritual Value Card that Old Bai gave you earlier and you would possess the right to enter the Spirit Ranking. The Spiritual Value Card would send the information to the Spirit Ranking and rank you."

"The individuals, who are ranked in the top 10, all used a loophole. In the instant that they advanced into the Heavenly Fusion Stage, they infused the Spiritual Energy within the Spiritual Value Card. Just like this, they would be able to unleash an energy comparable to a Heavenly Fusion Stage with their Spirit Stage strength. By doing this, their rankings would naturally be very high. After all, how could an ordinary Spirit Stage compete with them?"

Mu Chen smacked his lips. In other words, the individuals that were ranked within the top 10 of the Spirit Ranking had occupied the top 10 of the Spirit Ranking while their true strength had reached the Heavenly Fusion Stage a long time ago?

"Are there any benefits in occupying the top 10 of the Spirit Ranking?" Mu Chen asked. It probably was pretty glorious for them to use this method in occupying the top 10 ranks, right?

"Every day, the top 50 of the Spirit Ranking will automatically obtain Spiritual Values based on their rankings. How could they not be moved by the idea of earning Spiritual Values without doing anything. Moreover, just how many Spirit Stage students would dare to challenge them? However, these individuals are just trying to demonstrate their might over here only. If we were to talk about the next ranking, the Heavenly Ranking, they probably wouldn't even enter the top 1000." An Ran replied.

After this, Mu Chen understood. So there were such benefits from having a rank. No wonder they wouldn't want to leave after occupying a rank within a basic ranking such as the Spirit Ranking.

"Then what's the Heavenly Ranking?" Mu Chen continued to ask as if he was a curious little baby.

"Heavenly Ranking..." After speaking these two words, An Ran's cold expression finally turned serious and her eyes turned completely passionate. She lifted her head and stared at the right wing of the bird-shaped mountain. At that location, there was another enormous stone tablet. Clouds were moving near the stone tablet and golden lights would occasionally flash. Every single name on this stone tablet was a powerhouse within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

"Heavenly Ranking. It is the ranking that students who have entered the Three Heavens Stage can enter. That ranking represents the peak of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Numerous geniuses train in order to obtain a seat within the Heavenly Ranking. Whenever the top ten ranks within the Heavenly Ranking change, it is the largest event within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy."

Mu Chen could feel the passion within An Ran's tone, and his black eyes focused on the stone tablet. He stared and noticed that the names formed with golden light were permeating out with glory. It was as if they were etched there to be respected and looked up to by all students within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Standing next to Mu Chen, Luo Li, Ye Qingling and the others also stared at the stone tablet which represents the true level of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

"Heavenly Ranking Rank 10, Zhou Fan. Cultivated at Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy for 3 Years."

"Heavenly Ranking Rank 9, Luo Hua. Cultivated at Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy for 3 Years."

"Heavenly Ranking Rank 8, Wang Zhong.

...

"Heavenly Ranking Rank 3, Su Xuan."

"Heavenly Ranking Rank 2, Li Xuantong."

When the Heavenly Ranking's Rank 2 had its name displayed, Luo Li frowned beside Mu Chen. However, Mu Chen failed to detected it.

"Who is ranked first?"

Countless eyes moved upwards once again and stared at the top position. At that location, a name carrying a deep sense of oppression emitted out.

"Heavenly Ranking Rank 1, Shen Cangsheng.

"Shen Cangsheng..." Numerous individuals stared at the golden name. Although it was only a name, it was like an unsurpassable mountain. This trauma enveloped and entered many people's hearts.

After all, they were only freshmen that had just arrived within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. In this place filled with countless geniuses, they had only just started. However, that person had already reached the pinnacle and was standing above them.

Mu Chen stared at the domineering name and slowly retracted his gaze away. He could sense the blood within him starting to show signs of boiling.

This is the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy that he had been expecting for so long. Even the competition within the Spiritual Road was nothing compared to this place. If he wanted to prove himself, this place was the best training ground for him.

One day, he would surpass all these heaven-sent children and stand at the peak as well!

Chapter 156: Yang Hong

While standing on the massive platform, thousands of freshmen stared at the name that was at the top of the “Heavenly Ranking”. The pressure which it emitted instantly silenced everyone.

Even the freshmen that were assessed as “King Class” in the Spiritual Road had a glimmer of fear and respect as they stared at the name.

This is the person that stood at the peak of countless students within Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

“Shen Cangsheng...”

Mu Chen slowly spat out a mouthful of air as he gently muttered this domineering name.

“He is currently the strongest student within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Even I have only seen him once, a year ago.” An Ran stared complicatedly at the name. When she met Shen Cangsheng, the latter had completed a mission to hunt down a Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast and had just returned to the academy.

Under the sunset, a boy dressed in black robes had descended from the sky with a long spear that pierced through a massive Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast. Fresh blood spattered through the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. As he descended to the academy with his spear on his shoulders, a trail was formed from the trickling blood.

That scene had shocked the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Even for An Ran, who was a freshmen at that time, could feel a shiver coming from the depths of her soul.

“To all of you freshmen. Right now, he is not someone that you can reach.”

An Ran gradually recovered and stared at the silent freshmen as she smiled: “The Heavenly Ranking is still too far away for you. Maybe after you’ve trained for at least two years, you may qualify to enter the Heavenly Ranking. Right now, all of you should just consider how to enter the Spirit

Stage Ranking. That ranking is the place where all newcomers belong.

Hearing this, many freshmen scratched their heads. The Spirit Ranking wasn't that easy to enter either. If they wanted to rank in the top 50s, they would probably need the strength of a Quasi-Heavenly Fusion Stage. As for the top 10, even if they possessed the strength to occupy it, they wouldn't dare to steal the positions away from the seniors that weren't willing to leave the ranking.

Thinking about this, all of the freshmen secretly sighed. As expected from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, which they had come to view as holy ground for cultivation. The competition here was truly terrifying.

At this moment, light emerged in the sky above the enormous platform and Old Bai's body emerged. He stared at the thousands of freshmen and nodded his head slightly. Then, he smiled and said: "Since all of you have reached the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, then it's time to gather the remaining freshmen over from the other three Northern Heavens World. After all, they've reached this place a few days ago."

Hearing this, Mu Chen frowned in response.

Old Bai waved his sleeves, and a clear bell sound resounded in the skies. Then, it created a symphony of sound waves as it spread out.

Following the ringing bell sound, Mu Chen and the others quickly noticed numerous figures that were rushing over and landing on the other stone platforms.

Due to the numerous figures, a bustling commotion rang out within this area.

On the platform where Mu Chen and the others were, thousands of freshmen stared curiously at the other three stone platforms. These people had also passed through the other Northern Heaven World. They were also this year's Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's freshmen just like them.

By adding up the freshmen on the four stone platforms, there were

probably over twenty thousand students. This number was truly extraordinary.

Swish!

On the southern stone platform, a figure of light rushed over and stood at the front of the stone platform. When this figure of light appeared, the freshmen on that platform instantly showed respectful gazes as they stared at it.

The lights slowly dispersed and revealed a slim and tall figure. It was a beautiful girl who had long, icy-blue hair. Her pair of big eyes were also icy-blue in color. When viewed from far away, she seemed like a frosty mountain, which emitted a icy-cold chill.

If An Ran was refined and elegant, then the girl with long blue hair was naturally cold. Her pretty eyes seemed to attract the chill air within the world.

Mu Chen stared at the girl and his eyes narrowed. From the powerful fluctuation that emitted out from the latter's body, he could tell that she had also advanced to the Heavenly Fusion Stage.

"She's Bing Qing. She is the freshmen that defeated the strongest senior within her Northern Heavens World." An Ran replied faintly: "It's said that she came from the Ice Spirit Clan. Hence, she was born with the ability to control ice."

"Ice Spirit Clan?" Mu Chen was stunned. Then, he said in surprise: "Could it be the rumored Ice Spirit Clan in which the Martial Ancestor, who came from a Lower Plane, challenged all by himself?"

He had heard this rumor a long time ago. The Ice Spirit Clan was a clan that possessed powerful heritage and background. It was considered to be an elite force even within the Great Thousand World. However, in front of the Martial Ancestor, who came from a Lower Plane, the Ice Spirit Clan had been completely powerless against that man, who was a god of lightning who even wielded a lightning staff. That battle had shocked the entire Great Thousand World. Even Mu Chen, who was living in the Northern Spiritual Realm, had heard about it.

An Ran nodded. It was evident that she had heard this rumor as well.

From afar, the girl known as Bing Qing stared at the platform where Mu Chen and the others were standing after revealing her appearance. However, her gaze only remained on Luo Li's body before she turned away. She did not participate in the Spiritual Road. However, her strength was in no way inferior to the individuals that stood at the pinnacle of the Spiritual Road. From Mu Chen's group, she felt that Luo Li was the only one that was considered to be a threat to her.

Swish!

Following Bing Qing, two other figures of light rushed out and stood in front of the east and west stone platforms. On the eastern stone platform, a grizzled figure appeared. His body emitted a yellow glow as if he was a withered tree. However, he gave others a feeling of extremely danger.

"That's Mu Kui. He is also the most outstanding freshmen within another Northern Heavens World."

An Ran stared at the western stone platform. At that location, a slender boy in blue clothes stood with his hands behind his back. A completely different temperament exuded from him. While he was being quite arrogant, he was still exceptionally powerful.

"That's..."

"Yang Hong. I know him, you don't have to introduce him to me." Mu Chen's black eyes slowly focused on the slender figure far away. He laughed faintly as if he was reminiscing the past.

Beside him, Luo Li also stared at that figure. A chill flashed through her clear glass-like eyes.

At this moment, the boy at the eastern stone platform also felt the gaze and tilted his head immediately. He possessed a fairly handsome face. Matched with his slender figure and unique temperament, he definitely possessed a powerful charm. From nearby, many girls would secretly glance over shyly at him.

He stared at the distant stone platform before his gaze focused on Mu

Chen's body. His face was stunned for a moment before he formed a strange smile on his face.

"Mu Chen, so we meet again."

He smiled at Mu Chen. However, his laughter that was filled with dense Spiritual Energy, instantly caused numerous students to turned their heads over.

"However, I'm quite surprised. So the widely known and famous Blood Calamity in the Spiritual Road is now only at the Spirit Stage Middle Phase. Ohoho, this is beyond my expectations. I never thought that you would be this weak after losing the Spiritual Road's Empowerment."

The boy laughed gently and pondered as he stared at Mu Chen: "If Ji Xuan knew that you only possess such strength, he would probably be quite disappointed. After all, he had always seen you as his rival. In the end, you've actually became this weak and pitiful. It seems that being kicked out of the Spiritual Road had taken its toll on you."

Yang Hong's voice carried and instantly started commotions within the other three stone platforms. After all, there were numerous people that participated in the Spiritual Road before. Among them, there were definitely quite a few of individuals that had been assessed as King Class. Hence, they deeply remembered the name of the Blood Calamity, Mu Chen.

After all, he was a person that even King Xuan, Ji Xuan, had feared in the Spiritual Road. How could they not be wary of him?

Numerous gazes immediately shifted away and landed on Mu Chen's body. Shock immediately filled their eyes. Compared to the freshmen that stood at the peak, the latter's Spirit Stage Middle Phase strength was incomparable.

Bing Qing and Mu Kui also stared over. Although the former did not participate in the Spiritual Road, she had a bit of understanding about the individuals stood at the pinnacle of the Spiritual Road. Naturally, she had heard of the so-called Blood Calamity Mu Chen. However, she never expected that the handsome boy in front of them was the Blood Calamity

that could instantly change the expressions of people, who participate in the Spiritual Road.

At the same time, Mu Kui also frowned. A hint of disappointment filled his eyes. He naturally enjoyed fighting. If Mu Chen was strong , then he would be interested in him. However, these thoughts immediately faded away when he looked at him.

“Yang Hong. If you want an opponent, I can always fight against you,” Luo Li’s clear glass-like eyes stared coldly at the boy as she slowly spoke.

Hearing this, Yang Hong immediately frowned.

“If you want to mock him now, it is still too early for you. He is the same as the three of you and is one of the most outstanding people within his own Northern Heavens World. Even I was defeated by him. So what gives you the right to mock him?” Beside Mu Chen, An Ran frowned and let out a sneer.

She had lost to Mu Chen. If Mu Chen was mocked by these individuals, wouldn’t they also be laughing at her incompetence?

When An Ran said these words, commotions instantly burst out. The freshmen from the other three platforms stared in disbelief at the calm, handsome boy. With just the strength of a Spirit Stage Middle Phase, he was able to defeat a senior who was at the Heavenly Fusion Stage? How was that even possible?

Bing Qing and Mu Kui were completely startled. Then, they stared curiously at Mu Chen.

“Oh?”

Yang Hong narrowed his eyes as he stared seriously at Mu Chen. He smiled keenly: “As expected from the Blood Calamity, Mu Chen. It seems that you’ve hidden your strength quite deeply. This way, it will be interesting...”

Mu Chen’s black eyes stared at Yang Hong and his lips also formed a smile. He took a step forward and his voice suddenly turned cold.

“If you’re interested, why don’t you test it out?”

Chapter 157: Importance of Spiritual Value Points

Mu Chen's cold voice resounded through the skies as he stared keenly at Yang Hong, who was in the distance. At this moment, the Spiritual Aura within the world seemed to tremble.

The freshmen within this area instantly quieted down. Every single one of them were filled with curiosity and expectation as they stared at the two opposing individuals. These two individuals were the most outstanding freshmen within their respective Northern Heavens World. Just how amazing would their battle be when they face each other?

Hearing Mu Chen's words, Yang Hong retracted his smile slightly and smiled coldly in response to these words. Currently, dense Spiritual Energy surged out from his palms as he smiled once again: "I'd really want to test you out. Just how in the world did you defeat a Heavenly Fusion Stage with your Spirit Stage strength?"

Sparks flew between their eyes as the two of them stared at each other. A cold killing intent belonging to each of them was also apparent.

"That's enough. Now is not the time for you to fight with one another."

Old Bai's figure appeared in the air and disrupted the opposing atmosphere with a swing of his arms. He said: "One month later, there will be a freshmen competition. When that happens, you will naturally have the chance to fight against each other. Whoever manages to win in the freshmen competition will be the number one individual among the freshmen."

Hearing Old Bai's words, many freshmen's eyes lit up. Perhaps the title of the number one individual in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was still quite far away from them, they did not mind revealing their strength in the freshmen competition. This way, they would be able to obtain a bit of fame within the freshmen. After all, there were over twenty thousand freshmen this year. It wasn't easy for them to stand out from the

rest of them.

As a youngster, a bit of reputation was enough to make their blood boil and to strive for it.

A hint of interest also flashed through Mu Kui's eyes. He naturally enjoyed fighting and was also a person who had stood at the pinnacle of the Spiritual Road. He was in no way inferior to Yang Hong and the others. Thus, he naturally did not want to lose the title of the strongest to anybody else...Even if his opponents were powerful individuals.

As for Bing Qing, she remained completely calm and was not affected by these words.

On the other hand, the coldness within Mu Chen's eyes faded away slightly as he took a step backwards. It was true that this wasn't the best opportunity for him to fight against Yang Hong. The latter's strength was at the Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase and was no weaker than An Ran. Moreover, Yang Hong probably possessed special techniques. Thus, he could not underestimate him at all. It would probably difficult to determine the victor if they were to fight right now.

"From now on, all of you are official students within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. No matter what sort of identity and background you possessed before, you are only ordinary students in this place. If you want to earn respect and status, you must show off your abilities." Old Bai stared at the numerous students as he smiled faintly.

"Next up, all of you have been arranged to live in the freshmen area. The freshmen area is divided into four districts: North, South, East, West. In a bit, there will be an instructor that would lead you over."

As Old Bai's voice faded away, dozens of figures of light rushed over from nearby and stopped above them. These figures were all middle-aged individuals. However, the powerful fluctuations emitting from the body made them understood that every single one of them possessed the strength of a Heavenly Fusion Stage.

When Mu Chen witnessed this scene, he could not hide the surprise within his eyes. An ordinary instructor in the Northern Heavens Spiritual

Academy actually possessed the strength of a Heavenly Fusion Stage. If it was in the Northern Spiritual Realm was enough for them to be lord of the realm.

As expected, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was truly powerful.

The dozens of instructor spread out and started arranging the students. As for Mu Chen and the others, a slender figure headed over to them. In the end, the lights faded away and formed into a beautiful woman with a voluptuous body. She wore a red dress and possessed a pretty appearance. She had a charming and mature style as she smiled at them attractively.

The woman in red dress stared at the area where Mu Chen and the others were and waved. A barrier of light immediately enshrouded approximately 2000 students.

"For the ones within the light barrier, congratulations. I am your freshmen instructor and will guide you for a while. I'm called Mu Ling. If there is anything that you don't understand, feel free to find me." The women in red dress smiled as she stared at the boys and girls beneath her.

When the other freshmen from other areas noticed this charming instructor, they immediately stared enviously at them. After all, she was much more attractive than the stern-looking male instructor that they have.

"Come. Follow me, I'll bring all of you to your respective district." Mu Ling waved her hands and swayed her body before heading towards the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

"Let's go."

Mu Chen smiled at Luo Li and immediately followed. Behind him, Ye Qingling, Sun'Er, Mo Ling and the others also quickly followed. They also happened to be in the same area as Mu Chen. Thus, they would be able to take care of each other from now on.

Thousands of people followed Mu Ling and charged away from the stone platform. As they descended down, numerous cultivation halls appeared

in their eyes. Moreover, they could see countless individuals flying through the skies.

Under Mu Ling's guidance, Mu Chen and the others flew towards the west side for dozens of minutes before slowing down. Then, the former pointed down and smiled: "This is the place where you'll be living."

Mu Chen and the others looked down and noticed the lush scenery along with the sparkling clear lake. In this area, there were simple houses situated in groups.

"The Spiritual Aura here..."

Surprise filled Mu Chen's eyes. He discovered that the Spiritual Aura of the world was exceptionally dense in this region. Moreover, the density would increase as they entered the depths of this region.

"There's actually a huge Spirit Convergence Array hidden in this place!"

Mu Chen's eyes swept across this area. Right now, his eyes weren't the same as before. With just a glance, he was able to detect the hidden special fluctuations within the air. These were fluctuations that were unique to a Spiritual Array.

This residential area for freshmen actually has a Spirit Convergence Array. Moreover, the rank of it had definitely surpassed the only Spirit Convergence Array that the Northern Spiritual Academy possessed.

"Little guy. You have keen eyes." Mu Ling was amazed as she stared at Mu Chen. However, she smiled and faced the crowd as she said: "The place that you will be living in is enveloped by a Rank 4 Spirit Convergence Array."

When these words were spoken, commotions instantly broke out from the crowd. A Spirit Convergence Array was a symbol of power for any forces. Perhaps many of them had seen a Rank 4 Spirit Convergence Array, it was still the first time that they've seen one arranged at a residential location.

"Moreover, the residential area for freshmen is also divided into A, B, C-Class. You are only assigned to C-Class right now. It is considered to be at

the border of the Rank 4 Spirit Convergence Array. Although the Spiritual Aura here is quite decent, it cannot compare with the B-Class and A-Class areas." Mu Ling pointed to the depths of this region. It was evident that the Spiritual Aura at that location was much more concentrated. Then, she said: "That location is the center of the Spirit Convergence Array. The density of the Spiritual Aura naturally surpassed the exterior of it."

"Can we live at that place as well?" A few freshmen drooled as they asked. It was evident that it was much more beneficial for their cultivation if they were to live inside that area.

"Of course." Mu Ling smiled charmingly as she replied: "However, we would require a fee for you were to live there. An A-Class room requires a fee of 2000 Spiritual Value Points per month. As for a B-Class room, it requires 1000 Spiritual Values Points."

All the new students were completely stunned when they heard this. So it was like that? They had to pay rent?

"Little guys, Spiritual Value Points are quite important within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. This can be a mean to motivate you to cultivate. In the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, there are a total of 100 plus Rank 4 Spirit Convergence Arrays, 60 plus Rank 5 Spirit Convergence Arrays, 20 Rank 6 Spirit Convergence Arrays, 10 Rank 7 Spirit Convergence Arrays and one Rank 8 Spirit Convergence Array."

WAHH.

At this moment, even the blessed individuals from powerful backgrounds could not help but suck in mouthfuls of cold air. It was evident that they were shocked by this news. Wasn't it too terrifying for the academy to possess this many Spirit Convergence Array?

"Of course, everyone shouldn't think that they could enjoy using these Spirit Convergence Array without paying a price." Mu Ling chuckled.

"What do you mean?" At this moment, everybody felt a sense of unease.

"Aside from the Rank 4 Spirit Convergence Array, the remaining Spirit Convergence Array requires a fee to enter. For the Rank 7 Spirit

Convergence Array, it requires a fee of 5000 Spiritual Value Points per day."

Bang.

Almost all of the students fell down at this moment. They finally understood what sort of existence Spiritual Values Points are within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. It would be difficult for them to progress forward without any Spiritual Value Points here.

Mu Chen also laughed bitterly when he heard this. Right now, he possessed 6100 Spiritual Value Points. In other words, wouldn't he only qualify to cultivate for one day in the Rank 7 Spirit Convergence Array?

However, it's still quite interesting.

"Everyone shouldn't be this sad. There are actually many ways to earn Spiritual Value Points within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy." Mu Ling smiled charmingly, but a hint of sadistic satisfaction could be seen when she looked at their miserable appearances.

"The simplest method of obtaining Spiritual Value Points is to infuse your strongest Spiritual Energy within your Spiritual Value Card every month. If you've improved during that month, you will automatically be rewarded for the difference. Of course, you can also do it whenever you make a breakthrough..."

"If you want to obtain Spiritual Value Points quicker, you can enter the "Lightning Territory". That is a popular location within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy." Mu Ling pointed towards the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's skies in the distance. All of them immediately turned their gaze over and they noticed that the sky at that location was quite dark. They could vaguely see the distorting skies and flashing lightning.

"The Lightning Territory is a cultivation ground that the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had opened up. At that location, endless amounts of divine lightning descend. This divine lightning possesses the effect of strengthening Spiritual Energy. At the same time, it can also strengthen the body. Anyone who reaches Spirit Stage strength can enter

that place. Aside from cultivation, you could condense the divine lightning into a “Divine Lightning Bead”. This is quite popular within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. It is said that it is worth 200 Spiritual Value Points per bead in the Spiritual Values Hall.”

“200 Spiritual Values per bead?” The corner of the crowd’s eyes twitched. It was actually that expensive? It seems that it was a decent method to earn Spiritual Values.

“However…”

Mu Ling placed her hands on her lips and smiled bewitchingly at them: “You will also have to pay a price to enter the Lightning Territory. However, it isn’t that much. You can enter it after paying 500 Spiritual Value Points.”

At this moment, everybody’s expression turned grim and gnashed their teeth. The Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was truly despicable!

Chapter 158: Spiritual Value Hall

"Okay. Next up, everybody can begin to decide where they want to live. Ah, if anyone wants to be transferred over to the B-Class or A-Class area, please let me know." Mu Ling chuckled as she stared at the bitter expressions on the freshmen.

At this moment, all of the new students exchanged gazes with each and smiled wryly. With the Spiritual Value Points that they possessed, they could only temporarily live within the C-Class area. Only after they've gradually understood how to obtain Spiritual Value can they select a higher level of treatment.

Mu Chen looked at the A-Class area and was slightly moved by it. Currently, he had over 6000 Spiritual Value and was more than enough for him to select a place with dense Spiritual Aura. This way, it would be beneficial for his cultivation as well. Thus, it was worth the price that he would pay.

Mu Chen thought for a moment before suddenly leaning over to Luo Li and saying: "Why don't we live together?"

Once she heard this, Luo Li froze. Then, she immediately blushed and glared at him with a bashful expression. It seems that this guy is going overboard now that we've reunited with each other.

However, Mu Chen ignored her and looked towards Mu Ling. He said: "Instructor Mu Ling, how many people can share a room together?"

"Two people." Mu Ling chuckled as she moved her gaze alternatively at Mu Chen and Luo Li. In her eyes, a special meaning could be seen.

"Then, I want an A-Class room." Mu Chen smiled.

Luo Li bit her lips and turned her face as she blushed. At this moment, she could only pretend that she was completely unrelated to Mu Chen. No matter how much she did not care about other matters, she still had the modesty of a girl. How could she cohabitate with a boy? In the Spiritual Road, she only did it due to the circumstances. The ground was their bed

and the skies were their blankets. However, she could not do this anymore.

After Mu Chen had said this, Zhou Ling and the others also selected an A-Class room. With the amount of Spiritual Values that they had, it was enough for them to pay this fee. As for Ye Qingling, she brought Sun'Er with her and selected a B-Class room.

Chaos appeared within the skies for a while and many freshmen had decided on where they would be living. Afterwards, Mu Ling brought Mu Chen and the others as they headed towards the A-Class area.

Once Mu Chen and the others entered the A-Class room, they could feel the dense Spiritual Aura within the world. Their consciousness trembled for a moment as they could feel that this residential area would definitely bring numerous benefits to their cultivation.

"Below here are the A-Class rooms. You can pick among them yourselves. Once you've entered the room, it will automatically deduct the amount of Spiritual Values from your Spiritual Value Card." Mu Ling pointed downwards as she smiled.

"After you've selected your room, you should rest for the day."

"Also, if you use the Spiritual Value Card in your hands, you can contact the Spiritual Value Hall. In the Spiritual Value Hall, you can exchange for a variety of items. Moreover, you can use the Spiritual Value Card to check for them. Of course, if you've taken a liking to anything, you would still have to head over to the Spiritual Value Hall in order to exchange for it."

Mu Chen and the others nodded as they stared downwards. His gaze glanced around before finally stopping at a tiny house near the clear lake. Then, he smiled: "I'll select this one."

As his voice faded away, he smiled and turned to look at Luo Li. Then, without waiting for the girl to resist, he pulled her slender hand and descended down towards that house.

At this moment, Zhou Ling and the others that were nearby had an extraordinary expression as they witnessed this scene. Wasn't this too stimulating?

However, Mu Chen ignored their reactions and landed in front of the house with Luo Li. The girl immediately escaped from his grasp blushing as her eyes were filled with embarrassment.

“Hehe.”

Mu Chen smiled towards her and said seriously: “If we live together, we can at least take care of each other. Moreover, we can save Spiritual Value Points. Since we’ve just arrived at the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, we should be thrifty.”

Luo Li batted an eye at him snappily. That excuse was not convincing at all. After all, she possessed approximately 10000 Spiritual Value Points and it was enough for her to stay her for half a year.

“Don’t try to push your luck!” Luo Li warned. She pushed open the door and entered. The tiny house had two floors and looked quite tidy. Luo Li glanced around and was quite satisfied with it. Moreover, the two floor design had made her slightly relieved.

“From now on, I’ll live upstairs while you’ve live downstairs.” Luo Li replied.

This time, Mu Chen nodded sincerely and did not dare to provoke the girl, who was already embarrassed due to the cohabitation. Although the two of them knew each other’s feelings, she, the girl should still maintain a bit of modesty between them.

Luo Li stepped upstairs to inspect her room. While she did so, Mu Chen wandered around and returned to his own room. At that location, the beds were already prepared. It was evident that the treatment provided for an A-Class room was quite outstanding.

Mu Chen lay down on the soft bed and let out a deep sigh. Various emotions appeared within his heart. From now on, he was considered to be an official student of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

He would be spending a few years here for cultivation.

“Dad. I will properly train myself in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. The next time I return, I will definitely bring mom back with

me!" Mu Chen grasped his hands tightly. After he left the Northern Spiritual Realm, there was nobody beside his dad. Thus, he must be quite lonely.

"Huuu."

Mu Chen took a deep breath and suppressed the emotions within his heart. Then, he sat down cross-legged as he gripped his hand and a crystal-like Spiritual Value Card immediately appeared within his hand. Previously, Instructor Mu Ling had mentioned that this Spiritual Value Card was able to contact the Spiritual Value Hall. That place was the exchange ground within the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. From there, he would be able to earn more information regarding about the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Mu Chen gripped onto the Spiritual Value Card and emitted out a trace of Spiritual Energy. At this moment, the Spiritual Value Card lit up and a screen of light was formed in front of the card. On the screen of light, various diagrams and data appeared.

"Python's Fury. A spear created by using the only horn that belongs to a Golden-Horn Spirit Python. Once it was used in battle against humans and Spiritual Energy was emitted out, the spear tip will be like a anger python. It possessed exceptional power and is a Middle Rank Spiritual Artifact. Price : 8000 Spiritual Value Points."

"Nineflare Art. Gong Fa Spiritual Art. Spiritual Tier Middle Rank. Price : 9000 Spiritual Value Points."

"Phantom Magic Steps. Movement Spiritual Art. Spiritual Tier Middle Rank. Price : 7800 Spiritual Value Points."

"Meteorfall Spiritual Array. Rank 3 Diagram Array. Forms meteorites with Spiritual Energy whose power is something that even a Heavenly Fusion Stage would not dare to fight head on. Price : 13000 Spiritual Value Points."

"Divine Lighting Bead. Possesses the aura of divine lightning. It has the ability of strength the Spiritual Aura within one's body as well as their body. Price : 200 Spiritual Value per bead."

Various images flashed through Mu Chen's eyes. As the list progressed, his eyes became more and more surprised. The majority of the items sold in the Spiritual Value Points were quite outstanding. Even High Rank Diagram Arrays could be seen occasionally. However, the price was also quite expensive. With Mu Chen's wealth, he could not purchase any of them.

After flipping through the images, Mu Chen's eyes finally turned serious.

"Myriad Lightning Sword. Deity Tier Low Rank. Attack Spiritual Art. Created by a Sovereign powerhouse. Price : 3,000,000 Spiritual Value Points. Only possessed by the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy."

WAH.

Mu Chen immediately inhaled deeply once he saw this. His eye could not help but jump when he noticed it. Deity Tier Spiritual Art? This Spiritual Value Hall actually sells Deity Tier Spiritual Arts?

Mu Chen's heart pounded rapidly before he gradually recovered from the shock. In the Spiritual Value Hall, there were a few items that were sold by students. But at the same time, there was also something that was only possessed by the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. For example, this Deity Tier Spiritual Art was the property of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy and was not a private belonging of the students.

This treasure was something that would make even Mu Chen completely moved. However, the price following it also made his mouth twitch for a moment. With a price of 3,000,000 Spiritual Value Points, just how many people could purchase it within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?

Mu Chen shook his head as he smiled bitterly. It was evident that this was something that the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had deliberately displayed in order to motivate their students. It was something that one could see, but could not purchase...

At this moment, Mu Chen restrained himself of any thoughts about it and began looking through the images again. As he continued downwards,

the amount of outrageous items would increase. However, the price that followed it also made Mu Chen turn completely pale.

"Piercing Nine Dragon Array. Rank 6 Diagram Array. Price : 3,500,000 Spiritual Value Points."

"Ancient Golden Bird's Soul Essence. Heaven Rank Middle Class Spiritual Beast. Ranked 34th on the Myriad Beast Record's Earth Ranking. Price : 4,000,000 Spiritual Value Points."

"Nine Cauldrons Divine Armor. Peerless Spiritual Artifact. Can defend against an all-out attack from a Heavenly Transformation Stage. Price: 3,300,000 Spiritual Value Points."

These various treasures flashed across Mu Chen's eyes. Every single one of these items made it difficult for Mu Chen keep his calm. At the same time, the prices also made him jump.

As expected from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Only they would possess such ability and bring out such treasures.

Any one of these items would definitely lead to a chaotic scramble for them within the Northern Heavens Continent. Yet it had became the best method to motivate students to earn Spiritual Value Points.

Mu Chen smiled bitterly before he glanced over again and was about to stop looking to avoid being excessively stimulated by the pictures. However, just when he was about to close the screen of light, his eyes retracted suddenly.

His gaze landed on the top of the light screen. At that location, a short text was written there. Although the text was short, it caused Mu Chen's heartbeat to increase rapidly. He could even feel an impulse coming from within his aura sea as well.

"Northern Sea Dragon's Blood Essence. An item from the Protector Divine Beast of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Possessed the ability to strengthen the body as well as cleansing the bones. If a human were to absorb it, it would completely change their body. They would possess a powerful body that is comparable to a Spiritual Beast. Price :

7,000,000 Spiritual Value Points."

"Northern Sea Dragon's Blood Essence..."

Mu Chen murmured. Isn't that the item that the Nine Nether Bird wanted? As long as he obtained it, the Nine Nether Bird would be able to break through its shackles and shed its spiritual form and become a Divine Beast. It would awaken its ancient bloodline and become an super-existence that is in no way inferior to the Northern Sea Dragon...

In Mu Chen's aura sea, a powerful Spiritual Energy stormed out. The Nine Nether Bird who was originally laid-back instantly stood up. The flaming black fire within its eyes was completely filled with excitement and delight.

"Mu Chen! Mu Chen! We found it! We must get it! We must get it!"

The Nine Nether Bird's thoughts were conveyed over. It was the first time that Mu Chen had seen the Nine Nether Bird being this excited and delighted.

Mu Chen smiled helplessly. He would like to help it, but it should at least look at the price of this item.

It was a total of 7,000,000 Spiritual Value Points!

Just who, in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, could purchase this item?

Chapter 159: Storming into the Spirit Ranking

Rampaging Spiritual energy rumbled within Mu Chen's aura sea, as excitement filled the Nine Nether Bird's eyes. Even Mu Chen could clearly feel the emotions that it had currently.

"Don't be impatient..."

Mu Chen smiled wryly and said: "Since I've promised that I would help you obtain the Northern Sea Dragon's Blood Essence, I will definitely do it. But let's be realistic as well, okay? After all, you're not going to tell me to go and steal it, right?"

Hearing Mu Chen's voice, the Nine Nether Bird's eyes calmed down for a bit. The raging black flames on it body slowly weakened as it flapped its wings and said: "You must help me obtain it. Right now, I only require that to awaken my bloodline, break through the shackles of a Spiritual Beast, and complete my evolution."

Mu Chen nodded his head and smiled: "Relax. Since we've formed a Bloodline Bond, I will definitely help you out to the best of my abilities."

As he spoke, he stared once again at the price of the Northern Sea Dragon's Blood Essence and shook his head as he smiled bitterly. Just how long would it take before he gathers a total of 7,000,000 Spiritual Value Points?

But after he thought about it, he understood the reason behind it. After all, just how valuable is the Northern Sea Dragon's Blood Essence? If it could be obtained easily, then it would be too good to be true.

To obtain something like this, they could only take it step by step.

Knock Knock!

At this moment, gentle knocks rang out near the door side. Mu Chen lifted his head and noticed a girl in a black dress leaning gently on the door. The girl's figure was extremely slim and soft, and her waist had

curves that would move any man. Her long hair flowed down like a silver river. At the same time, sunlight was shining through the windows and made the girl's exquisite appearance even more beautiful.

Mu Chen stared at the enchanting girl in front of him and was completely loss in his thoughts.

"What are you looking at?" Luo Li walked in front of him and asked with a smile.

"I am quite fortunate that I suddenly became soft-hearted when I first met you in the Spiritual Road." Mu Chen smiled. His black eyes stared at the exquisite face in front of him and said: "Otherwise, just how lonely would I be in the future?"

"From what you've said, it seems that you didn't really want to save me in the beginning?" A hint of smile and gentleness also appeared in Luo Li's eyes.

Mu Chen was completely speechless. After all, it wouldn't have been very beneficial for a person to be soft-hearted within a ruthless place like the Spiritual Road.

"You chased me for more than half a month right after that. You should have calmed down already, right?"

Luo Li smiled faintly. A gentle smile rippled within her calm eyes. Mu Chen was fortunate, but wasn't she also fortunate? Because of his appearance, her gloomy world had seemed to come alive. Even if she had numerous burdens on her shoulders, she still possessed a bit of expectation on meeting him once again.

"Okay. Let's stop with the chitchat and talk about business." Luo Li retracted her smile and looked seriously at Mu Chen. She said: "You are planning to fight against Yang Hong in the freshmen competition a month later, right?"

"Yes."

Mu Chen nodded his head. He did not like Yang Hong at all. That guy was an accomplice of Ji Xuan on the Spiritual Road. All the events that

were caused by Ji Xuan, this guy had also participated in them. Now that they've met in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, there was no way that he would let him go so easily.

"It's not that easy to deal with Yang Hong. Right now, he is also at the Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase. However, he possessed the Earth Level Spiritual Pulse. Once he activates it, there aren't many individuals that could compete against him at the Heavenly Fusion Stage." Luo Li responded.

"Moreover, based on what I've heard, Yang Hong had once obtained the Soul Essence of the Ancient Tigerdragon. Thus, his combat abilities would have soared even more. If he were to fight with everything he's got, he would be able to fight against a Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase."

"The Heaven Rank Middle Class Spiritual Beast, Ancient Tigerdragon, that's ranked 50th on Myriad Beast Record's Earth Ranking?" Mu Chen was quite surprised, and his expression turned serious. As expected, Yang Hong wasn't an ordinary individual. With such combat abilities, even Mu Chen felt a bit of pressure.

With Mu Chen's current strength, he would be able to fight against an Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase opponent if he used the shared power of the Nine Nether Bird. However, it would barely be enough against a Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase opponent.

If he completely relies on the Nine Nether Bird's power, it would be a simple task for him to defeat a Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase opponent. However, that was his last resort. Mu Chen did not want to borrow too much external power. Even if he formed a Bloodline Bond with the Nine Nether Bird, it wasn't beneficial for his cultivation if he borrowed too much external strength.

"Although you have many techniques, your foundation is still weak. After all, you are still only at the Spirit Stage Middle Phase. The gap between you and Yang Hong is exceptionally great. Therefore, you will have to make a lot of preparations for the battle next month. At the very least, you will have to increase your strength to the Spirit Stage Late Phase

within the month," Luo Li said with a solemn expression.

Mu Chen nodded his head. Although his combat abilities were equivalent to a Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase, he was only still at the Spirit Stage Middle Phase. This was his major weakness. But at the same time, it wasn't easy for him to advance to the Spirit Stage Late Phase within a month.

"If you want to advance to the Spirit Stage Late Phase in a month, it isn't impossible. You would just have to rely on a bit of help." Luo Li smiled slightly. Then her Spiritual Value Card emerged in her hand. The card then shone with light that displayed an item catalogue. Assorted items reappeared on the screen as Luo Li scrolled down with her slender hand. Finally, she stopped at a certain spot and there were a few characters of light written there.

Mu Chen immediately glanced over towards the text.

Spirit Pill. A Pill that is beneficial to individuals at the Spirit Stage. It can help them advance to the next level. However, the medical energy within the Pill is extremely violent. If it isn't completely ingested, it would harm the Spiritual Energy within one's body. Price : 20,000 Spiritual Value Points.

"If you are able to obtain a Spirit Pill, you should be able to advance to the Spirit Stage Late Phase within a month. As for the violent medical energy, it is simple to deal with it. Instructor Mu Ling had mentioned it earlier, the Lightning Territory has endless amounts of divine lightning. The divine lightning possesses the effect of strengthening Spiritual Energy. If you were to take the Spirit Pill within that place, you should be able to rely on the power of the divine lightning to completely absorb the energy within the pill." Luo Li smiled. Judging from her detailed explanation, it was evident that she had considered this issue a while ago.

Mu Chen nodded his head. To a person like him who was at the Spirit Stage, the effect of this Spirit Pill was quite decent. It was quite rare to obtain such a precious pill within the Northern Spiritual Realm.

"However, there is only one issue." Luo Li pointed at the end of the light

screen and said: “The Spirit Pill costs 20,000 Spiritual Value Points. Right now, I only have 11,000 Spiritual Value Points while you only have roughly 4,000 Spiritual Value Points. Even if we add it up, it wouldn’t be enough.”

Luo Li frowned. It was evident that she didn’t know what to do either. Since they’ve only just entered the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, they naturally did not possess many methods of earning Spiritual Value Points. Therefore, it was indeed an enormous problem to them.

“Spiritual Value Points, huh...”

Mu Chen frowned for a moment before he smiled: “It’s not that there isn’t a solution to this issue.”

“Eh?” Luo Li stared in surprise at Mu Chen. She did not know what methods he could use to solve this issue.

Mu Chen smiled and grabbed onto Luo Li’s slender hand: “Follow me.”

Seeing that this guy started becoming all touchy again, Luo Li immediately blushed. She struggled gently for a moment before discovering that Mu Chen was holding her hand so tightly that she could only give up on resisting. After all, there was no one else aside from them here.

Mu Chen pulled Luo Li to the highest part of the house. There, they were able to see the clear blue skies. If they were to look further away, they would be able to see a corner of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

At this moment, Mu Chen stared at the most eye-catching bird-shaped mountain within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Accurately speaking, he was looking at the massive stone tablet that displayed the Spirit Ranking on top of the bird-shaped mountain’s left wing.

“Didn’t Instructor Mu Ling say it earlier? As long as we are able to enter the top ranks of the Spirit Stage, we would be able to obtain Spiritual Value Points as reward.” Mu Chen stared at the stone tablet that was a symbol of glory within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Numerous Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy students would probably always be checking to see if there were any changes on it.

“Are you planning to enter the Spirit Ranking?” Luo Li said in surprise.

Mu Chen nodded slightly.

“This is indeed one method. With your current strength, you should be able to enter the top 10 ranks within the Spirit Ranking. But if you do this, you will offend the senior that had occupied that rank.” Luo Li replied. Right now, she had already advanced to the Heavenly Fusion Stage and had lost the qualifications to enter the Spirit Stage. Moreover, with her current strength, she didn’t have the ability to enter the higher ranking, Heavenly Ranking. Thus, she could not benefit from either rankings currently.

“That place was originally a place for new students only. They are already unreasonable by occupying those ranks in the first place. Moreover, it isn’t my style to hide.”

Mu Chen smiled. The competition within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was quite fierce. It didn’t matter whether it was be now or in the future, there would be an endless amount of competitions. If he were to always hide and hold back, just what purpose would it serve?

He did not come to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy to learn how to hide from troubles.

“You’re truly quite a troublemaker. You haven’t even entered the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy for a day, yet you are planning to do such a thing.” Luo Li smiled as she replied helplessly. She could already foresee the commotion that would be caused by this event. This isn’t simply an issue about rankings. Instead, it would be a challenge issued to the seniors by the freshmen. This is because during the past few years, there were no freshmen that dared to drag a senior down from the Spirit Ranking when they had just arrived in the academy.

“I was also forced to do this. The two of us would be bankrupt after purchasing the Spirit Pill. Compared to this, who would care about the prestige of a senior?”

Mu Chen smiled and clenched his hand tightly. The Spiritual Value Card emerged in front of him as faint lights emitted.

Mu Chen stared at the Spiritual Value Card and his eyes turned serious. He slowly tightened his hands and a powerful Spiritual Energy surged out from his body. The surrounding air also began to fluctuate.

Within his aura sea, the Spiritual Energy light wheel flashed. The Spirit that was sitting cross-legged on top of the light wheel also emitted dazzling light as it pushed the Spiritual Energy in his body to the limits.

Boom!

Dark-black Spiritual Energy rushed out from Mu Chen's fist and caused a tremendous pounding sound. It roared as it formed a pillar of light and bombarded the flashing Spiritual Value Card.

Boom!

A deep sound resounded within the freshmen area. A beam of light immediately rushed up into the sky. At this moment, the freshmen within this area all lifted their heads, bewildered as they stared at the beam of light. Then, they discovered that the beam of light rushed through the sky and headed to the giant stone tablet that symbolizes the glory of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Chapter 160: Rank 3 of the Spirit Ranking

Swish!

Just like a meteorite with a tail of light behind it, the dazzling beam of light flashed across the skies of the enormous Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. In the end, it rushed into the stone tablet that had the Spirit Rankings engraved under many people's surprised gazes.

Buzz!

In the instant that the beam of light entered the stone tablet, everybody was able to see a dazzling light emit from the Spirit Ranking. On the ranking, a golden light rose rapidly.

In a few seconds, it rushed into the top ten rankings.

"WAHHH!"

Commotion instantly burst out within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Although the Spirit Ranking was the one of the most basic rankings within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, it was generally difficult to enter the top ten of the rankings. After all, these people were in the Spirit Ranking, yet they possessed the strength of a Heavenly Fusion Stage.

"I wonder which person, who is breaking through to the Heavenly Fusion Stage, is causing this commotion..."

"Ohoho, those guys are always like that. They really don't give any way to the freshmen."

"Didn't we experience that as well? The freshmen are truly too arrogant. They really needed to learn how to turn it down a notch."

"Pfft, if they truly are capable, then they should enter the Heavenly Ranking. Just what good is it to enter the Spirit Ranking... The top ten people are truly thick-skinned..."

The change in the Spirit Ranking immediately attracted many Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's students' attention. Various voices rang out,

however, they did not know which senior it was that was breaking through to the Heavenly Fusion Stage.

And under numerous gazes, the golden light continued to climb upwards. Rank 9...Rank 7...Rank 5. When the golden light reached Rank 4, people finally began to feel surprised about it. Although the Spirit Ranking was only a basic ranking to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, nobody would believe that the ones that were able to hold that position for a long time would be quite weak.

Especially the ones ranked in the top 3 of the Spirit Ranking. These three individuals were famous even among the Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouses within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. For more than half a year, their rankings within the Spirit Ranking was untouchable.

And now...

Many individuals' gazes concentrated on the golden light. When the golden light finally reached Rank 4, it finally slowed down and hovered for a moment. Then, the golden light jumped up suddenly and occupied the Rank 3 position.

Once that golden light occupied the Rank 3 position, the name that was originally ranked third flashed and slowly faded away. Under normal circumstances, the name wouldn't fade away if they were surpassed in the ranking. It would only drop one rank. However, the person that was originally Rank 3 had already advanced into the Heavenly Fusion Stage. It was considered that he had lost the qualifications to compete again in the Spirit Ranking. Thus, once it was surpassed, it had directly vanished from the rankings...

However, this change would only occur for the Rank 3 position. The other ranks that had been surpassed would still have to drop a position.

"The one that was removed is Mo Lun, right? Ohoho, that guy is truly unlucky. If he was still on the Spirit Ranking, he would be able to obtain 1000 Spiritual Value Points every day."

In the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, a few people gloated as

they laughed at Mo Lun's unfortunateness. Then, they stared at the golden light that occupied Rank 3. At that location, the lights began to dissipate a little before finally becoming a name formed by golden lights.

Spirit Ranking Rank 3, Mu Chen. Cultivated at Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy for a day.

"Eh..."

The atmosphere within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy instantly turned silent. Numerous people were startled as they stared at the Spirit Ranking. Cultivated at Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy for a day? Doesn't that mean it's a freshman that had just arrived at the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy today?

A freshman was actually able to kick out a senior that had occupied the Spirit Ranking?

The silence within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy only lasted for a split second before a bustling commotion rang out. How many years had it been since such a thing had happened?

"Just who is this Mu Chen? It seems that the freshmen this year are quite capable?"

"Could it be that he just so happened to breakthrough to the Heavenly Fusion Stage today? And so he also used that loophole?"

"Ohoho, this is quite interesting. Mo Lun isn't a weakling. Since this freshman called Mu Chen dared to kick him out of the Spirit Ranking, with his personality, he wouldn't just let it go."

"Yes. Moreover, the people who had been pushed down a rank by him wouldn't feel great either..."

"This Mu Chen sure is courageous."

Within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, countless individuals continued to talk with each other as they stared at the Spirit Ranking. However, it was clear that they felt a bit of sympathy towards Mu Chen's action.

It was evident that the commotion caused by the Spirit Ranking also attracted the attention of many freshmen within the freshmen areas. They stared in a daze at the dazzling name on the ranking. Although other individuals may be unfamiliar with this name, all of them knew who that name represented.

They never imagined that this person was that powerful. He had only just arrived at the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, yet he caused such a commotion already.

In the Freshmen area's North District, Yang Hong, who was sitting cross-legged within a house, suddenly opened his eyes. He stared at the Spirit Ranking that was emitting a bright light in the distant and looked coldly at the name that made him feel uncomfortable. A hint of coldness flashed through his eyes.

As expected, that bastard truly had the combat ability equivalent to a Heavenly Fusion Stage. No wonder he was able to become one of the most outstanding freshmen within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

"Although you're quite capable, shouldn't you know how to endure and hold back a little? Do you really believe that the seniors, who are ranked in the top 10, are truly weaklings?" Yang Hong sneered. The seniors within the top 10 of the Spirit Ranking all possessed the strength of a Heavenly Fusion Stage. From his view, Mu Chen's actions were basically searching for trouble.

"I'll let you be proud of yourself for a while. A month later, in the freshmen competition, I'll let you understand the enormous distance between you and me." Yang Hong slowly tightened his hands as his eyes turned ruthless.

"Since I, Yang Hong, am in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, Mu Chen, you shouldn't even think of being able to succeed here!"

At this moment, in the other two directions of the freshmen area, Bing Qing and Mu Kui were also aware of the changes within the Spirit Ranking. They stared at the familiar name as their eyes twinkled.

It seemed that there were quite a few powerful individuals within this

year's freshmen. The freshmen competition a month later would definitely be lively. However, just who would obtain the title of the strongest freshmen?

"Rank 3..."

Mu Chen smiled faintly as he stared at the Spirit Ranking. This rank was beyond his expectation. He had originally thought that he would only be able to enter the top 5.

"This time, the amount of Spiritual Energy that I activated was within the limits of my control. If I were to use all my hidden measures unreservedly, it's possible for me to become Rank 1."

Mu Chen smiled. However, he did not immediately do this. Becoming Rank 3 had already reached his purpose. If he were to immediately soar to Rank 1, it would be too eye-catching.

"How many Spiritual Value Points do you have now?" Luo Li asked.

Mu Chen opened his hand and the crystal-like Spiritual Value card landed back in his hand. Within the crystal clear Spiritual Value Card, lights converged and finally formed into numbers.

24,100 Spiritual Value Points.

Mu Chen stared at the amount within his Spiritual Value Card and let out a sigh of relief. By becoming Rank 3 on the Spirit Ranking, he had obtained 20,000 Spiritual Value Points as a reward. This was enough for him to purchase a Spirit Pill.

"Tomorrow, I'll head to the Spiritual Value Hall to purchase the Spirit Pill. Then, I'll enter the Lightning Territory for a bit. With the remaining time I have left, I will breakthrough to the Spirit Stage Late Phase." Mu Chen smiled as he looked at Luo Li.

Luo Li nodded gently.

Immediately afterwards, Mu Chen lifted his head once again and stared at the Spirit Ranking. He truly needed to increase his current strength quickly. There were too many powerful individuals within the Northern

Heavens Spiritual Academy. Since he had caused such a commotion today, it would definitely be troublesome if he did not increase his strength.

Within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, they also follow the rule of respecting the strong. Without sufficient strength, it would only be a disgrace to occupy such a high position...

...

This place is a mist-shrouded area. Within the mist, there were numerous stone platforms suspended in mid-air. Although they weren't quite big, it was enough for a person's range of motion.

At this moment, there were many figures sitting with their eyes closed on the floating stone platforms. Spiritual Energy gushed out near their bodies and the faint Spiritual Aura nearby fluctuated before entering their bodies.

This mist was actually formed by an extremely rich Spiritual Aura!

The Spiritual Aura within this place had actually reached such a degree of density.

At this moment, a person who was sitting cross-legged on a stone platform, suddenly opened his eyes. This person was wearing loose clothes with loose long hair. His aura was extremely cold, and powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuations rippled near his body.

He opened his eyes and gripped his hand tightly. A crystal-like Spiritual Value Card emerged and lights flashed. Then, his expression suddenly became grim.

"Mu Chen? A freshmen that just entered the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy actually dared to eliminate me from the Spirit Ranking!" The youth's eyes were quite cold as his face was filled with fury. He did not care about the daily reward of 1,000 Spiritual Value Points from the Spirit Ranking anymore. If it was a senior, he would accept the situation. However, he was kicked out by a freshman who had just arrived at the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy and was not used to the academy. To him, this was a big disgrace.

He did not know how many individuals would mock him because of this.

This was a challenge to his strength!

“Damn it!”

The youth gritted his teeth. It seemed that he must stop his cultivation for a while. After all, he could not lose his pride. Although he would not be able to return to the Spirit Ranking after finding the freshman, it would at least allow him to regain a bit of pride.

“I’d like to see just how capable a freshman like you is! You actually dare to be this arrogant upon entering the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy!”

The youth grunted and muttered to himself: “Since others won’t teach you, I, Mo Lun, will teach you what we call respecting your seniors!”

As his voice faded away, the youth closed his eyes once again. In his heart, he had already made up his mind. He would temporarily stop his training tomorrow and teach that arrogant freshman a lesson!

Chapter 161: Spirit Pill

The following day.

Mu Chen and Luo Li both left the freshman area and headed straight towards the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. The students of Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy possessed great freedom. There were no constraints in terms of lessons and most instructors would rarely restrict the actions of students. This is because there were many students within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy that were even more powerful than the instructors. Hence, the instructors would only take a guiding role most of the time and would not always teach them like what Teacher Mo did during the Northern Spiritual Academy.

Of course, it wasn't that there aren't well-known instructors within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. The instructors that stood at the pinnacle in strength were first-class powerhouses even within the Northern Heavens Continent. If the students wanted their guidance, they would have to pay a high fee for them to come.

And for the freshmen, it was currently impossible for them to pay such an enormous amount of Spiritual Value Points.

Since the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was quite vast, Mu Chen and Luo Li flew through the sky for nearly half an hour before finally reaching the location of the Spiritual Values Hall.

The Spiritual Values Hall was so majestic that it was simply impossible to describe. This hall seemed to be situated at the top of a mountain within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Moreover, fog would circulate near its surroundings as if it was a fairyland.

Just by standing next to the Spiritual Values Hall, they would seem like tiny ants. If they looked up, they would be able to see massive words formed with light sparkling in midair.

The Spiritual Values Hall was considered a popular location within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Thus, Mu Chen and Luo Li were able to sense how popular this location was when they've arrived outside

of the hall.

In the skies nearby, countless figures would rush over and head straight into the giant hall. The flow of people that entered was endless.

Mu Chen and Luo Li stood outside the Spiritual Values Hall and stared at the liveliness of this location. They could not help but exclaim aloud. It seemed that they had only seen a speck of what the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was.

“Let’s enter as well.”

Mu Chen smiled at Luo Li before the two of them also headed inside the mountain-like Spiritual Values Hall. As they entered, they could feel Spiritual Energy fluctuations that caused them to tremble slightly.

In front of Mu Chen and Luo Li, there was a vast and abnormal hall. The ceiling of this hall seemed to be covered with stars and was extremely mysterious. Moreover, the hall was quite noisy as many individuals would gather here.

At this moment, the two of them stared above and noticed many circular crystals floating in midair. From within the crystals, they could see various scrolls, Spiritual Artifacts and worldly treasures, etc.

Mu Chen glanced at the starry ceiling and frowned. He could sense a mysterious fluctuation within the hall that caused him to tremble. It was a fluctuation that was unique to a Spiritual Array.

It was evident that there was a terrifying Spiritual Array arranged secretly within the Spiritual Values Hall as a precaution to theft.

While Mu Chen and Luo Li glanced around the Spiritual Values Hall, they suddenly detected numerous gazes being cast over. Accurately speaking, the gazes landed on Luo Li, who was beside Mu Chen.

At this moment, the girl’s tall and slim figure coupled with her soft, silver, long hair caught the attention of many individuals. Her glass-like eyes made others feel the calmness within her heart. Furthermore, her exquisite expression was exceptionally attractive.

Since a girl with such temperament and appearance had appeared here, it was impossible for her not to draw attention.

"Huh, when did such a beautiful girl appear within our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy? This temperament and appearance are absolutely at the highest level!"

"She's quite unfamiliar. I've never heard of her before."

"Ohoho, you could strike up a conversation with her for a bit. Since the boy beside her is only at the Spirit Stage Middle Phase, he is weaker than her. They probably aren't a couple..."

When Mu Chen noticed the various gazes coming from his surroundings, his expression immediately darkened. But before he managed to say anything, the girl beside him suddenly stretched out her slender hand and pulled him into the depths of the Spiritual Values Hall.

In the instant that she grabbed Mu Chen's hand, Mu Chen felt the whispers suddenly fading away from their surroundings. Surprise filled many people's faces and each of them felt a sense of pain. Why would such an outstanding girl choose such a weak boy? Is it because he was quite handsome?

Mu Chen noticed the regretful and envious gazes emerge and grinned in response. He felt quite happy deep down inside. This is my woman, you're not qualified to touch her.

Just when he felt a bit proud, Mu Chen also gripped Luo Li's slender hand tightly. In response, the girl immediately glared at him. The elegance displayed by Luo Li made Mu Chen's heart jump. Unknowingly, the girl had already begun displaying her charm which would cause a disaster.

After Luo Li pulled Mu Chen into the depths of the Spiritual Values Hall, she released her hand and calmly glance around the surroundings.

"Eh."

Mu Chen gripped his hand and reminisce the sense of softness that remained within his hand. However, he immediately sighed: "It seemed that I must quickly increase my strength. Someone's charm is too

powerful. If I do not become stronger, I don't know how many times others would bat an eye at me. Those guys are all staring as if I'm only an attractive and pretty man."

When Luo Li heard this, she smiled and tilted her head. Her glass-like eyes stared at Mu Chen as she nodded: "You're quite like that."

Mu Chen was somewhat shaken and depressed.

"It's fine. Not to mention that you aren't one, even if you are, I am still willing to be with you." Luo Li's red lips twitched and her pretty eyes were like curved moons. At this moment, she wasn't like her usual calm self. Instead, she seemed more like a sly fox.

"Alluring woman. Just wait till I surpass you. Just see if I would smack you on your butt." Mu Chen pouted as he stared at the blushing and delicate face of Luo Li. Then, he clapped his hands and moved his attention upwards. He lifted his head up and stared into the air where, there was a gigantic crystal ball. Within the crystal ball, there was a golden liquid that was the size of a human's head. The golden liquid seemed to be alive and would slowly crawl around. A strange feeling was being emitted from it.

"That's..."

Mu Chen's eyes turned serious as he stared at the text of light outside the crystal ball. Then, his eyes narrowed as he muttered: "So this is the Northern Sea Dragon's Blood Essence..."

Violent Spiritual Energy appeared once again within his aura sea. Mu Chen did not have to look to know that it was the Nine Nether Bird becoming excited again.

"Calm down. Nobody would dare steal any of the items here. Even if it's you, you probably wouldn't be able steal items from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy when you're in your prime condition." Mu Chen said helplessly within his heart.

When the Nine Nether Bird heard his voice, the rampaging Spiritual Energy slowly subsided. It also knew what its circumstances were right

now. Since the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy dared to display the Northern Sea Dragon's Blood Essence, they probably weren't afraid of it being stolen.

"Let's go. Let's first buy the Spirit Pill."

Seeing the Nine Nether Bird calm down, Mu Chen was quite relieved. He immediately spoke to Luo Li as he headed straight towards a crystal counter nearby where an old man was currently taking a nap.

"Old man. I want to buy a Spirit Pill." Mu Chen knocked on the crystal counter and asked politely.

The old man that was awakened lifted his head up impatiently. He stared at Mu Chen for a moment before flicking his fingers. At this moment, a beam of light headed straight towards Mu Chen, who grabbed onto it. When the lights faded away, a box appeared. Inside the box, there was a round pill, which is the size of a dragon's eye, that exuded a mellow fragrance. It was the Spirit Pill.

After the old man had tossed the box as if it was trash, he waved his hand. The Spiritual Value Card within Mu Chen's hand lit up and numerous lights flew into his hand. Mu Chen immediately glanced at his Spiritual Value Card and noticed that it had already 20,000 Spiritual Value Points deducted.

Once this was done, the old man closed his eyes again. However, he suddenly opened them and stared at Luo Li, who was beside Mu Chen. A hint of surprise flashed through his eyes.

"Little girl..." The old man stared at Luo Li. His gaze was fixated on her silver hair.

Luo Li also stared at the old man in confusion. Beside her, Mu Chen was slightly surprised as well.

The old man looked for a moment before slowly asking: "Are you a person from the Luoshen Clan? Just who is Luo Tianshen to you?"

Luo Li's eyes immediately narrowed as she stared at the old man. However, she shook her head slightly and replied: "I'm sorry. I can't tell

you that."

After saying this, she pulled Mu Chen towards the exterior of the Spiritual Values Hall. Seeing this, the old man did not stop her and only frowned. He muttered: "That girl probably trained in the Luoshen Art. That's why her hair became like that. However, only a person that possesses the bloodline of the royal family could train in that...But why would someone who is in the royal family of the Luoshen Clan come to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy..."

He pondered for a moment before letting out a sigh. Then, he slowly closed his eyes again.

Luo Li dragged Mu Chen out of the Spiritual Values Hall as the latter stared at her. He had also heard the old man's words. Luoshen Clan. Could it be Luo Li's clan? But why hadn't he heard of it before...

When Luo Li exited the Spiritual Values Hall, she released Mu Chen's hand. At this moment, her glass-like eyes were slightly in a trance and she was absent-minded.

"What is it?" Mu Chen whispered.

"It's nothing." Luo Li shook her head gently. Then, she smiled faintly at Mu Chen: "We've obtained the Spirit Pill. You should hurry and train within the Lightning Territory. I'll cultivate within a Rank 5 Spirit Convergence Array as I wait for you to come out."

Mu Chen could tell that she had something hidden within her heart. However, she did not want to tell him about it yet. Since it was like that, he would not ask her and instead wait for her to tell him. Then, under many gazes, he suddenly took a step forward and pulled the girl into his arms. He whispered next to her ear: "Right now, I might not have the strength to share your burden, but believe me, I will definitely become strong. Since you've said in the Spiritual Road that you'll protect me from any sneak attacks from the back, then I should be the one that's standing in front of you."

Luo Li bit her lips. Her glass-like eyes were filled with softness as she replied with a gentle "yes".

“Then, I’ll head to the Lightning Territory. Wait for me to come back out.”

Mu Chen smiled as he released her. He waved his hand and immediately turned into a beam of light as he headed far away. Luo Li stared at his figure as a gentle smile surfaced. As this smile emerged, many people nearby were completely mesmerized. Only after a moment, she turned around and headed in the opposite direction.

Just when Mu Chen separated with Luo Li, a beam of light rushed into the freshman area which they belong to. Then, a boy with long hair emerged in midair. He had a cold aura emitting from his body as he stared down at the freshmen below. A cold shout instantly rang out within the freshmen’s ears.

“Who is Mu Chen? Hurry and get the f*ck out here!”

Chapter 162: Mo Lun

"Who is Mu Chen? Hurry and get the f*ck out here!"

A cold shout laced with rumbling Spiritual Energy exploded like thunder in the freshmen area. At this instant, countless freshmen lifted their heads in shock at the figure that appeared in midair.

In this vast and desolate freshman area, there were many freshmen beginning to gather. Ye Qingling, Mo Ling and the others were all at this location. When they heard the shout, all of them immediately frowned.

The figure in the sky stood proudly as he gazed coldly at the many freshmen below. He shouted: "Did none of you hear my words? Where is the freshman called Mu Chen?! He actually dares to eliminate me from the Spirit Ranking, yet he doesn't have the guts to reveal himself?"

After he had finished his sentence, the freshmen below finally understood why this figure had appeared. So he had come to cause trouble because Mu Chen had recently seized the third position in the Spirit Rankings...

They exchanged gazes with each other. However, it seemed that Mu Chen wasn't here.

"Senior. Brother Mu left this place earlier. If you want to find him, please come again tomorrow." Mo Ling hesitated for a moment before shouting out loud. The figure in front of him had spoken in a tone where he had looked down upon Mu Chen, which made Mo Ling somewhat unhappy. However, he did not dare express his unhappiness in front of this senior.

In the sky, the figure moved and presented himself directly above the students situated in this empty area. He sneered: "He left? What a gutless person. He probably hid himself deliberately, right? I originally thought that this year's freshmen were quite capable. I never imagined that you were all so timid and useless."

Hearing this person's remarks, many freshmens' expressions turned grim. In this area, there were a few top-notch freshmen from their

respective Northern Heavens World such as Zhou Ling. Their expressions became somewhat dark. However, they still endured as they were fearful of this person's strength.

"What a group of useless trash."

Seeing that many of the freshmen were holding back back their emotions, the figure laughed coldly.

"I won't permit you to badmouth Brother Mu Chen!"

But just when he said such words, a young tender voice rang out with rage. Many people immediately turned their gaze over and noticed Sun'Er, who was beside Ye Qingling, was staring furiously at the figure in the sky. Behind her, a massive light array was being formed quickly.

"A Spiritual Array?"

When the figure noticed the light array behind Sun'Er, he was somewhat shocked. It was evident that he had never expected that this cute-looking girl would possess such extreme firepower.

"Swish!"

The light array condensed and Spiritual Energy gushed out. It formed into a violent wind python as it charged towards the long-haired youth in the sky.

"Hmph."

Seeing this, the long-haired youth's eyes turned cold. He stomped down, and a powerful Spiritual Energy burst out from his body. He smacked down with his palm and directly crushed the wind python into numerous lights.

But after the long-haired youth shattered the wind python in one attack, his eyes turned even colder. He flexed his fingers and a beam of violent Spiritual Energy rushed out from his fingertips and charged straight towards Sun'Er.

"You!"

Seeing the long-haired youth attack Sun'Er, Ye Qingling's pretty eyes

were instantly filled with anger. In a flash, she appeared in front of Sun'Er as her dense Spiritual Energy formed into a Spiritual Energy light shield.

Bang!

When the light beam bombarded against the light shield, it instantly destroyed the shield. Ye Qingling grunted and was knocked back a few steps. Her expression paled slightly.

"You're going overboard!" Seeing this, Mo Ling and the others were enraged. They did not care about the fear they had against this long-haired youth and shouted furiously at him.

"How noisy! This year's freshmen really need a lesson. No wonder Mu Chen dared to do such a thing. Today, I'll make all of you understand that, in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, respecting your seniors is a must!" The long-haired youth frowned and let out a cold laugh. He waved his sleeves and rumbling Spiritual Energy formed into a gigantic Spiritual Energy palm. Then, it bombarded towards the many freshman in the empty area.

Seeing this long-haired youth act this domineering, the freshmen present at the scene were completely grim. Since they were able to become a student of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, they were all prideful individuals. And now, they were being repeatedly abused by this person. It was impossible for them not to be furious.

"Hmph!"

Zhou Ling and the burly person called Yan Xiao also shouted out angrily. Their bodies rushed out as dense Spiritual Energy surged out from their bodies. The two of them unleashed a Spiritual Energy attack together and fought against the gigantic Spiritual Energy palm.

Boom!

Violent Spiritual Energy emitted out from the collision and both Zhou Ling and Yan Xiao were knocked backwards. Their expressions also paled. Although the two of them were half a step away from the Heavenly Fusion Stage, the difference between them and the senior was too great.

“You’re slightly capable. However, you dare fight against me, Mo Lun, with such strength? You’re too confident of yourself!” The youth known as Mo Lun glanced at Zhou Ling and Yan Xiao as he sneered.

“If you’re really capable, then go and challenge the people on the Heavenly Ranking. You think that you’re capable just because you can come and bully the freshmen? Hmph, if it wasn’t because Mu Chen and Luo Li had left earlier, you wouldn’t even be able to show-off your strength!” Zhou Ling gritted his teeth as he replied.

“The boy, Mu Chen, probably knew that I would came seeking him for trouble. That’s why he hid early on.” Mo Lun sneered: “However, I really dislike all of you freshmen. It seems that I must teach you a lesson as well.”

“You really believe that we’re afraid of you?!”

Mo Lun’s aggressive attitude finally angered the thousands of freshmen present at the scene. All of them shouted together and the imposing manner formed by them were extraordinary.

“Hmph. Although we are freshmen, it only means that we’ve been cultivating for less time compared to you. Just why are you proud of this? If you really want a fight, then all of us will fight against you!” Another three figures rushed over from nearby and landed in front of Zhou Ling and Ye Qingling. The three of them were quite familiar. They were all top students in the Northern Heavens World and have been assessed as King-Class in the Spiritual Road.

In normal circumstances, these top students had their own pride and would not communicate with each other a lot. They could only be regarded as acquaintances. However, Mo Lun’s aggressive attitude made them all group together against a common enemy.

Seeing this scene, Mo Lun frowned for a moment before his eyes turned slightly dark. These five individuals were all half-a-step away from reaching Heavenly Fusion Stage. Coupled with the thousands of freshmen, he wouldn’t be able to fight against them if they were to all join forces.

“The freshmen these days are truly getting arrogant!”

Mo Lun's eyes were completely cold as he said: "Joining forces, is it? Fine. I'll let you off the hook today. However, I'll come again tomorrow. When the time comes, I'll let all of you have a bit of fun. All of you freshmen truly need to learn to not be this arrogant. As for that Mu Chen, if he wants to hide, then he better hide well."

Once he said these words, Mo Lun sneered and turned into a figure of light. He flew off in the direction of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy and quickly vanished from their sight.

As they watched Mo Lun's fading figure, Zhou Ling and the others all had grim expressions.

"Brother Yan Ling. Thanks." Zhou Ling said gratefully towards the three individuals that came to assist them.

"It's fine. After all, we are all new students. Since a few seniors are looking down on us, we shouldn't let them underestimate us." Yan Ling shook his head and immediately replied: "Judging from his demeanor, it seems that he won't let us off this easily. During this period of time, we should join forces. If we do this, he won't dare to do anything."

"Mu Chen seems to have entered the Lightning Territory to cultivate. Luo Li also followed him over there..." Ye Qingling laughed wryly. They had had a bit of contact with Mu Chen, so they knew his whereabouts.

"It might be good for him to stay low." Zhou Ling sighed. Compared to An Ran, Mo Lun's strength was even greater. Even if Mu Chen was here, he probably wouldn't be able to do anything and would have ended up being humiliated.

It was evident that he also believed that Mu Chen had suddenly headed to the Lightning Territory in order to avoid Mo Lun.

"Brother Mu Chen isn't afraid of him." Sun'Er muttered.

Zhou Ling and the others smiled bitterly and immediately shook their heads: "In the coming days, if any of you can head out to cultivate, then please do that. That bastard will probably torment us for a few days, but once he discovers that it is to no avail, he will lose interest and leave."

Many of the freshmen laughed bitterly. In their hearts, they felt a bit uncomfortable. The seniors really are bullying them...

As for what happened in the freshman area, Mu Chen had no knowledge of what was going on. At this moment, he had just reached the entrance of the Lightning Territory. This place was a super-sized stone platform that was suspended in mid-air. On the stone platform, there were numerous figures rushing in from all directions.

A dark sky covered the platform. The space there was showing signs of distortions as if it was the entrance to a World of Lightning. Lightning occasionally flashed by and deep rumbling sounds would resound from that distorted space.

"So this is the Lightning Territory?"

Mu Chen stared at the distorted space and felt a terrifying fluctuation emanating from within. He secretly smacked his lips. To be able to open up a unique space, it wasn't something that an ordinary person could imagine.

Mu Chen shook his head while he was surprised. He immediately moved and flew directly into the distorted space. Outside of the distorted space, there seemed to be a faint Spiritual Energy light barrier. When Mu Chen's body was about to enter, he felt a little bit of resistance. However, he quickly overcame it.

This light barrier only prevented students that were beneath the Spirit Stage from entering. It was apparent that Mu Chen wasn't among that group.

After entering the light barrier, the distorted space became clearer. The creeping movements of the space seemed like a heavy-class monster that was entrenched in the void and caused terror within one's heart.

And right now, there were many figures that were rushing to enter the distorted the space.

Upon seeing this, Mu Chen smiled. He immediately circulated Spiritual Energy to protect his body as he charged headfirst into the distorted space

where the rumbles of thunder resounded.

When Mu Chen made contact with the distorted space, the Spiritual Value Card within his hand lit up faintly. A few hundred Spiritual Value points were instantly deducted from it. In the instant that the Spiritual Value was deducted, Mu Chen's figure also vanished within the Lightning Space.

Chapter 163: Breakthrough in the Lightning Territory

Boom!

The instant that Mu Chen passed through the distorted space, he could clearly feel the world darken in front of him. Rumbling thunder clapped through the skies.

Surprise emerged in his eyes as he looked in front. A vast expanse of space had appeared in front of him. Within this space, numerous clouds gathered and lightning converged within these clouds. The lightning would descend from the sky continuously like fierce silver pythons.

An extremely violent Spiritual Aura filled the entire space. In this place, the originally gentle Spiritual Aura was influenced by the lightning and had turned violent.

Within this lightning space, there were numerous stone platforms suspended in midair. The stone platforms revealed a dark-golden sheen, and each of these platforms had a figure sitting cross-legged on it. From time to time, lightning would soar through the skies and descend onto a figure that was sitting on a stone platform.

Whenever the lightning descended, the dark golden stone platform would cause the lightning to disperse, causing the stone platform to emit an exceptionally beautiful silvery glow.

From within the distorted space behind Mu Chen, a steady stream of people would rush out. Among them, there would be a few individuals that would search for empty stone platforms to begin their cultivation. As for the rest, they would head further into the depths of this lightning space.

Every single one of the individuals that would head further in were exceptionally powerful.

“The Lightning Territory is divided into ten levels. Right now, this is only the first level. It seems that the divine lightning will become more

powerful as one progresses further into the depths." Mu Chen pondered for a moment. From the moment he had arrived in the Lightning Territory, he was provided all the information related to the Lightning Territory. Normally speaking, the first level was for Spirit Stage Initial Phase students to cultivate. As one progressed further, the strength required would increase significantly. It was said that even a Heavenly Transformation Stage powerhouse wouldn't be able to easily enter the tenth floor.

"I should attempt to progress further into the depths as well."

Mu Chen pondered for a moment before rushing into the depths of the lightning space. With his current strength, it was evident that he was not interested in the first level. Divine lightning of that level was practically useless for his cultivation.

Mu Chen's speed was extremely fast, and in a few minutes he had already reached the depths of the first level. Here, another distortion had appeared and people would occasionally fly into the distortion.

Mu Chen did not hesitate and charged directly into the distortion. Once he arrived, he discovered that the scenery of the second level was essentially the same as the first level. However, the clouds that converged here were clearly a lot denser, which caused the divine lightning to become even more violent.

Mu Chen glanced across the second level and continued to move forward. It was apparent that the second level did not satisfy him at all.

In just ten minutes, Mu Chen had reached the third level. In order to enter this level, it required the strength of a Spirit Stage Late Phase. However, this wasn't an obstacle to Mu Chen. Although he was only at the Spirit Stage Middle Phase, his true strength had already reached the same level as a Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase.

Within the third level, flashing lightning and rumbling thunder could be seen and heard. Numerous lightnings would soar through the sky before brutally descending. It was evident that this entire space was quite bright.

Mu Chen sensed the degree of power of the divine lightning within the

third level before nodding his head slightly. He immediately moved and entered the depths to search for an unoccupied dark golden platform.

When Mu Chen sat cross-legged on the dark gold platform, his palm touched the platform. A cold feeling entered his hand. “So this isn’t made of stone, but rather some sort of metal. Judging from its appearance, this metal powerfully attracts lightning.”

When he sat down, his consciousness focused and started infusing Spiritual Energy into the dark gold platform. All of a sudden, a faint golden light emerged from the platform. This platform which was able to attract divine lightning had been completely activated.

In the instant that the platform was activated, clouds began to converge above Mu Chen. The sound of rolling thunder, like the roar of an ancient beast, rang out and displayed its full might to the world.

“Boom!”

The thundercloud rumbled and a tiny silver divine lightning bolt soared through the clouds and descended at an alarming speed towards Mu Chen, who was sitting on the platform cross-legged.

Seeing the descending lightning, Mu Chen hurriedly used his Spiritual Energy to protect his body.

Boom!

The silver lightning landed overwhelming Mu Chen’s body. Instantly, his body twitched and he could feel stinging pain could from his body. The dazzling lightning covered his body and jumped around before entering his body.

At the same time, Mu Chen also began to circulate the Great Pagoda Art. As dark-black Spiritual Energy surged through his meridians, a part of the lightning followed. It was then absorbed into his Spiritual Energy.

Chi Chi.

As the lightning was absorbed into his Spiritual Energy, his dark black Spiritual Energy began to fluctuate and a subtle crackling sound could be

heard. After a while, the lightning began to fade away. However, Mu Chen could feel that a portion of his Spiritual Energy had become slightly more condensed.

"The divine lightning here truly has the ability to strengthen Spiritual Energy." Mu Chen was overjoyed. The Lightning Territory truly deserved its reputation.

After testing the divine lightning for a while, Mu Chen was finally relieved. He clenched his palm and the Spirit Pill appeared. Then, he placed it within his mouth.

Once the Spirit Pill entered his mouth, it quickly melted. Billowing heat began to flow down his throat at an alarming speed.

Boom Boom.

Dense, violent Spiritual Energy surged through his meridians like a flood. However, the Spiritual Energy was considerably violent. It was just like a wild horse, it would not allow itself to be controlled.

Hu.

Mu Chen could feel the rampaging force of the Spirit Pill's medical power. He let out a soft sigh before activating the lightning platform. Dark golden light was emitted and the thunderclouds in the skies immediately began to rumble. Dozens of divine lightning bolts descended towards his body like angry serpents.

All of the lightning exploded on the surface of Mu Chen's body. The lightning surged endlessly into his body. By manipulating the divine lightning, he quickly forced it to fuse with the violent medical power of the Spirit Pill. This way, he could deal with the rampaging Spiritual Energy from the Spirit Pill swiftly.

Mu Chen concentrated on the changes within his body and quickly discovered that the violent Spiritual Energy from the Spirit Pill had calmed down a little after the power of the divine lightning had entered his body.

"The power of this divine lightning isn't enough yet!"

After Mu Chen felt the changes within his body, he was completely at ease. He concentrated and pushed the lightning platform's ability to attract lightning to its limits. At this moment, a golden light surged out and the thunderclouds rumbled crazily above him. Streaks of lightning began to descend successively.

Mu Chen sat calmly and allowed the dazzling lightning to freely wrap around his body. Although there was a stinging pain whenever he was struck by the lightning, it was evident that the pain was within his ability to endure.

Endless amounts of divine lightning entered Mu Chen's body and cleansed the the Spirit Pill's rampaging medical power. At the same time, he also quickly refined the calmed Spiritual Energy and allowed it to enter his aura sea.

Rumble!

In this area, endless silver streaks of lightning descended. This crazy act immediately captured the attention of the other students nearby that were cultivating. The stone platform was able to control the frequency of the lightning and these students would have never pushed the frequency of the lightning to the limits. After all, the divine lightning was also quite violent, and if they weren't strong enough, they could be smitten to the point where they were gravely injured.

Therefore, it was rare to see someone like Mu Chen activate the platform to its limit.

However, Mu Chen did not care about the surprised gazes that gathered on him. His consciousness was completely focused on the changes within his body. By cooperating with the divine lightning, he was able to refine the violent Spiritual Energy within the Spirit Pill.

Moreover, it was done with high efficiency.

In less than an hour, Mu Chen could feel that the violent Spiritual Energy within the Spirit Pill had been completely dealt with by the power of the divine lightning.

“Next up, I just have to refine all of this Spiritual Energy and prepare to breakthrough to the Spirit Stage Late Phase!”

Mu Chen concentrated and began to circulate the Great Pagoda Art at full strength. The enormous amount of Spiritual Energy was being refined endlessly as it was infused into the Spiritual Energy light wheel within his aura sea.

With the steady stream of Spiritual Energy entering the Spiritual Energy light wheel, the light wheel turned increasingly bright. Even the tiny Spirit that was sitting cross-legged on the light wheel had become a lot clearer.

Everything was progressing properly for his breakthrough. Right now, he only had to wait for the opportunity to breakthrough!

As he was waiting for the opportunity, three days had passed.

Within these three days, Mu Chen did not know how many times he had been struck by lightning. The power of the divine lightning would enter his body endlessly and strengthen his Spiritual Energy.

As he was being struck by lightning, he did not dare to move at all.

Suddenly, his hand trembled for a moment. Powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuations emitted from the surface of his body. It was evident that the Spiritual Energy had reached the point where it could not be suppressed.

“It’s finally time for me to make a breakthrough!”

Mu Chen’s black eyes opened up and reflected the endless amount of descending lightning before he closed them once again.

Within his aura sea, the Spiritual Energy light wheel was dazzling to the point that it was like a star. Waves of Spiritual Energy pulsed vividly, and rippling sounds could be heard.

At the same time, the tiny Spirit on the Spiritual Energy light wheel was clear to the point where it could be seen from a distance. It was basically a smaller version of Mu Chen. Moreover, the Spiritual Energy emitting from it was many times more powerful than before.

The Spirit that was sitting cross-legged on the Spiritual Energy light

wheel took a deep breath as it fiercely formed hand seals. In a couple of seconds, rumbling sounds resounded.

Boom!

Rampaging light suddenly erupted from the Spiritual Energy light wheel and pure Spiritual Energy rushed towards the tiny Spirit.

As it was being infused with pure Spiritual Energy, the Spirit was like a bottomless hole. It would absorb the endless Spiritual Energy. At the same time, the Spirit's body also expanded by size. The surface of its body shimmered and it was apparent that it had become slightly more real compared to the illusory form it had before.

The influx of Spiritual Energy lasted for approximately 30 minutes before it gradually came to a halt. The dazzling light from the Spiritual Energy light wheel also faded away slowly, and all of the lights within his aura sea also began to dissipate.

As for the glass-like Spirit, it continued to sit calmly on the Spiritual Energy light wheel. After a while, it finally opened its eyes. Those eyes were like a mysterious galaxy.

Boom!

In the instant the Spirit opened its eyes, a powerful fluctuation was emitted. In the end, it spread throughout Mu Chen's body, causing his body to tremble violently.

Hu.

On the stone platform, Mu Chen also let out a breath of white air, which had faint traces of lightning contained in it. He could sense that the dense Spiritual Energy within his body had become even more powerful when compared to a few days ago.

From the dense Spiritual Energy, Mu Chen was able to tell that he had already officially advanced into the Spirit Stage Late Phase!

A smile spread out on Mu Chen's mouth. He finally let out a sigh of relief and prepared to end his cultivation. However, he suddenly felt that a

mysterious fluctuation being emitted due to the Great Pagoda Art.

This feeling was extremely mysterious. It even caused Mu Chen's blood circulation to accelerate. At this moment, he was in a daze. Then, a hint of shock emerged in his eyes.

Could it be that he was about to make a breakthrough on the Great Pagoda Art as well?

Chapter 164: I will Control the Heaven and Earth

A mysterious feeling rippled through Mu Chen's heart. Surprise instantly emerged on his face.

He had once felt this feeling when his Great Pagoda Art broke through to the Shape-Condensation level. Originally, Mu Chen had thought that the next time this feeling appeared would only be after he had at least reached the Heavenly Fusion Stage. He never imagined that it would actually come so early.

"Is it because of the power of the divine lightning?"

Mu Chen pondered thoughtfully. The divine lightning had a miraculous effect, strengthening Spiritual Energy. After training for a few days, Mu Chen could feel the subtle changes in the Spiritual Energy within his body.

It was the feeling of it being more condensed.

Mu Chen suppressed the delight he had within his heart. After all, the mysterious feeling was only a sign before the Great Pagoda Art makes a breakthrough. It wasn't a true breakthrough yet. Next up, he must grasp this mysterious feeling and successfully advance to the next level.

Right now, his Great Pagoda Art had reached the Shape-Condensation level. If he was able to progress further, he would reach the Towerform level. Only by reaching this point, he would be considered to have successfully trained in the Great Pagoda Art.

Towards the mysterious Spiritual Art that his mother left for him, Mu Chen had always been curious about it. According to Mu Feng, the mysterious Spiritual Pulse within his body was sealed by his mother. If he wanted to release the seal, the Great Pagoda Art was the key.

Therefore, in Mu Chen's opinion, the breakthrough in the Great Pagoda Art was more important than his breakthrough to the Spirit Stage Late Phase.

Mu Chen sat cross-legged on the lightning platform and began activating the Great Pagoda Art once again. In an instant, a dark golden light was emitted and the originally dissipating thunderclouds gathered once again. Endless amounts of lightning being to descend from the thunderclouds and struck Mu Chen's body.

Chi Chi.

The dazzling lightning spread across the surface of Mu Chen's body as he circulated the Great Pagoda Art at full strength. He forced the dark black Spiritual Energy to surge through his meridians rapidly.

When Mu Chen circulated the Great Pagoda Art at full strength, he was able to detect that dark mysterious lights had slowly appeared within the depths of his body...

However, the mysterious lights would fade and reappear. However, once the divine lightning struck Mu Chen's body, these lights would suddenly brighten up a little.

"As expected, it is because of the power of the divine lightning."

Aware of this scene, Mu Chen finally understood the reason behind the breakthrough in the Great Pagoda Art. He immediately opened his eyes and stood up. He stared into the depths as he muttered: "The efficiency of the divine lightning on the third level is still too low. If this continues, I'm afraid that the mysterious feeling would gradually subside and I will lose this opportunity of advancing my Great Pagoda Art."

This sort of breakthrough was mostly due to luck. Once he fails, he could only wait for the next opportunity to come.

Mu Chen's eyes flashed and he decisively took action. His body moved as he rushed swiftly to the depths of the third level of the Lightning Territory.

In less than ten minutes, Mu Chen had reached the depths of the third level. There, a distortion appeared once again. Outside of the distortion, there was a faint light barrier.

In order to enter the fourth level of the Lightning Territory, one must

possess the strength of a Heavenly Fusion Stage. This light barrier was left here to stop students beneath this level from entering.

"Swish!"

Mu Chen completely ignored the light barrier and charged directly into it.

At this moment, numerous figures stared at the light barrier. Almost all of them possess the strength of a Heavenly Fusion Stage. It was evident that they were considered excellent within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. At this moment, they were somewhat startled when they noticed Mu Chen's figure. Just where did this brat come from? Did he not know that only people who had the strength of a Heavenly Fusion Stage were eligible to enter the fourth level?

A few of them chuckled and grinned. Every one of them was quite interested in this. After all, they knew how powerful the light barrier was. Even if it would not hurt the student that attempted to forcibly pass through, it would at least cause the student to be in an awkward situation.

However, Mu Chen did not care about the nearby gazes. When he was about to make contact with the light barrier, he gripped his hand tightly and blasted out a punch.

Four dark light seals emerged suddenly on Mu Chen's fist. Then, it formed into a beam of black light as it bombarded fiercely against the light barrier.

Buzz.

Numerous ripples emitted from Mu Chen's fists. Then, it became more and more violent. In the next instant, subtle cracking sounds rang out. The light barrier in front of Mu Chen had actually been forcibly destroyed by Mu Chen.

Swish!

When the cracks appeared, Mu Chen rapidly entered. At this moment, there were many surprised gazes. Just when was it possible for a Spirit Stage Late Phase to enter the fourth level?

“Just where did that guy come from? Just by relying on his Spirit Stage Late Phase strength, he was able to unleash an attack that was comparable to a Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase. That guy is pretty powerful.”

The crowd that had been watching Mu Chen was completely shocked. However, they soon recovered and exclaimed loudly. Then, they stormed towards the fourth level of the Lightning Territory.

But when they charged into the fourth level of the Lightning Territory, Mu Chen’s figure had already disappeared. After Mu Chen quickly reached the fourth level, he could feel the difference between the third level and the fourth level.

The thunderclouds in the skies had already become pitch-black. Although the lightning strikes were less frequent than on the third level, deep rumbling sounds would resound occasionally. Just by this sound, one could tell how powerful the divine lightning was within this level.

After Mu Chen reached the fourth level, he immediately searched for an empty lightning platform. He quickly descended and sat cross-legged as he activated the lightning platform.

Boom!!

Once Mu Chen activated the lightning platform, the thunderclouds above his head began to gather. Just from their appearance, the thunderclouds were like a terrifying gigantic face. It revealed a wicked smile before a loud rumbling sound rang out. A lightning strike that was dozens of meters wide descended like a beam of light. In the next instant, it fiercely struck Mu Chen’s body.

The powerful impact made Mu Chen’s body tremble fiercely. An intense pain emitted from the surface of his body. Mu Chen could feel that the divine lightning on the fourth level was powerful to the extent that it wasn’t the same grade as the third level. No wonder the academy would only allow students who had reached the Heavenly Fusion Stage to enter this place.

Mu Chen’s body flashed as the lightning struck him. Then, he felt a dense amount of divine lightning entering his body. The power of the

divine lightning from this one lightning strike was almost the same as ten strikes of lightning from the third level!

"Not bad."

Mu Chen was quite satisfied with the lightning on the fourth level and began to concentrate. As large amounts of divine lightning entered his body, he could feel that the mysterious black lights within his body began to become brighter at a slow pace.

Although the pace was quite slow, it was still many times faster than earlier.

Mu Chen concentrated and gradually adapted to the divine lightning on the fourth level. Afterwards, he began to increase the frequency of the lightning strikes. Later on, the thunderclouds above his head became increasingly violent and numerous divine lightning bolts struck down. These rampaging lightning strikes had shocked the nearby students.

To be able to fearlessly activate the lightning platform to this level of frequency, it was not something that an ordinary Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase student would do. They neither had the courage or the ability to do so.

As the divine lightning continued to bombard downwards, Mu Chen seemed to have completely secluded himself from the outside world and was only concerned about the changes within his body. This sort of selfless training had quickly lasted for ten days.

During these ten days, Mu Chen's body had basically remained motionless. The descent of lightning strikes from the thunderclouds had also never stopped. It had become an extremely eye-catching scene.

Numerous students that were cultivating had felt surprised and cast their gazes to this place. On the dark golden lightning platform, they were able to vaguely see a slender figure sitting cross-legged amongst the raging lightning strikes.

In the fourth level of the Lightning Territory, it was extremely rare to see such a scene. For ten full days, divine lightning had been summoned

endlessly. Even a person who had reached the Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase wouldn't be able to endure it, right?

Just who exactly is this guy? How is he this powerful...

Not far away, there were numerous figures standing on a lightning platform. Every single one of them was somewhat surprised as they watched this scene.

In front of these individuals, there was a familiar face. It was the face of a cool beauty who was wearing a red dress. It was An Ran, who had lost to Mu Chen within the Northern Heavens World.

"That guy is truly powerful. Even I wouldn't be able to endure this level of divine lightning. I really want to know just who this powerful person is..." Beside An Ran, a youth chuckled. However, he could not conceal the surprise on his face.

"There are a lot of students within our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Who knows how many people were hiding their strength and cultivated secretly as they waited for the day to suddenly shock everyone? Perhaps this person was one of them." Another youth laughed.

When An Ran heard their words, her beautiful eyes also stared at the lightning. The figure gave her a somewhat familiar feeling.

"Just who is that person?" An Ran frowned as she muttered to herself.

"Huh? The lightning seems to be weakening." All of a sudden, the youth beside An Ran spoke out.

An Ran immediately turned her gaze over. As expected, the originally violent lightning had begun to weaken. The commotion caused by that place had been extremely eye-catching for the past few days. Therefore, many people immediately cast their gazes over in surprise and curiosity.

As countless gazes focused on Mu Chen's body, Mu Chen's focus remained within his body. In the depths of his body, the originally looming, mysterious black lights had suddenly become quite bright. A mysterious fluctuation quietly emitted.

Buzz.

All of a sudden, Mu Chen felt the mysterious black lights tremble. Then, he noticed that the black lights extended and formed a beam of light.

These beams of lights would extend out and connect with every single one of the black lights.

As Mu Chen watched this occur, his heart tensed up.

Shortly after, the black light beams finally completely connected with each other. And in the moment when they finished linking up, Mu Chen's heart jumped. This is because, he noticed that lights spread out and the black lights had slowly formed into a mysterious black tower within his body.

In the instant that the mysterious black tower was formed, Mu Chen felt that he had travelled through time and space. An obscure and mysterious ancient voice echoed slowly within his body.

"By turning the body to a Pagoda, I will control the heavens and the earth."

Chapter 165: Pagoda

"By turning the body into a Pagoda, I will control the heavens and the earth."

Within Mu Chen's heart, an ancient voice seemed to gently resound through time and space. An inexplicable feeling was quietly born and rippled out as well.

His hands silently changed into an extremely mysterious and ancient seal. At the same time, the Spirit within his aura sea that was sitting cross-legged also formed the same exact seal.

A mysterious fluctuation emitted.

At this moment, the mysterious black lights in the depths of Mu Chen's body also turned increasingly bright. As for the black light tower within his body, it was also turning more and more vivid.

While Mu Chen was on the lightning platform, a mysterious dark-black light emerged from his body. This light surrounded his body and quickly expanded.

In just a few seconds, a black tower that was approximately a few hundred feet tall was formed from the lights. At this moment, Mu Chen's body also vanished from sight.

It was as if this black tower was formed by his body.

The black light tower exuded a deep black glow. It had nine floors and mysterious engravings were placed throughout the tower's body, which emitted an ancient fluctuation.

Boom!

Divine lightning constantly descended and bombarded the black pagoda with nine floors. However, the latter remained motionless and, instead, it directly absorbed the divine lightning.

As the pagoda absorbed the divine lightning, the black glow, that was circulating through the pagoda, also became increasingly deep. It was as if

it was being refined by the divine lightning.

This change was also projected into Mu Chen's heart. From this, Mu Chen seemed to understand something and immediately concentrated. Amidst numerous aghast gazes, the pagoda actually formed into a black light as it surged towards the skies and charged into the layers of black thunderclouds.

This scene instantly caused a tremor within this area and countless individuals were horrified. This guy actually rushed into the thunderclouds?

But at that location, the divine lightning were extremely terrifying!

"What is that guy doing?" On the lightning platform where An Ran and the others were located, a group of individuals were completely flabbergasted and speechless. The power of the divine lightning within the thunderclouds was exceptionally terrifying. A Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase or even a Late Phase powerhouse wouldn't dare to enter either.

"Rumble!"

While they were completely shocked, a loud rumbling sounded broke out from the thunderclouds. Surging lightning rumbled and converged at a certain place.

This disturbing scene made the ones watching turn completely numb.

For approximately ten minutes, under many gazes, this raging scene continued within the thunderclouds before it gradually stopped. Then, silence filled the area.

"Was that guy struck to death by the divine lightning?" Everybody exchanged gazes while they had this thought. They could not imagine what sort of brainless fool would rush directly into the thunderclouds.

But within that silence, a black light figure suddenly descended from the black thunderclouds. Afterwards, the light faded from the figure and it formed into a human silhouette.

The silhouette had a slender body and was exceptionally handsome. His body was completely intact and there weren't even the slightest signs of injury.

"He's still alive?"

As they stared at the person that appeared, the people, who originally let out a sigh, instantly returned their gazes and had expressions of disbelief. Moreover, their expressions turned completely pale once they discovered that the latter's strength was only at the Spirit Stage Late Phase.

A Spirit Stage Late Phase actually entered the Lightning Territory's fourth level and was completely unharmed after rushing into the thunderclouds? Just what sort of monster is this boy?

"That's..."

An Ran was stunned as she stared at the boy.

"An Ran, do you recognize him?" A boy beside An Ran noticed her expression and could not help but ask in surprise.

"Yes...He's Mu Chen. He was the freshman that defeated me in the Northern Heavens World." An Ran replied with a complex expression.

"So he's Mu Chen?"

The people nearby were all surprised. They had heard that An Ran had suffered a defeat in the Northern Heavens World. However, they never expected that the freshman, who defeated An Ran, would cause such a ruckus in front of them. No wonder he managed to defeat An Ran...

"To be able to defeat a Heavenly Fusion Stage opponent with the strength of a Spirit Stage Late Phase...This boy isn't that simple." The boy beside her exclaimed. It seems that the freshman this year were quite high in quality.

"When he defeated me, he was only at the Spirit Stage Middle Phase." An Ran said in frustration. After all, she was quite a prideful individual. However, there was nothing that she could say when she lost to Mu Chen. The various means revealed by the latter were indeed quite powerful. It

wasn't something that an ordinary Spirit Stage Middle Phase should possess.

When the others heard this, their eyes were stunned and they immediately let out a bitter laugh. There are truly a few powerful individuals among the freshman this year.

"However, he stirred up quite a bit of trouble the past few days. Mo Lun has been looking for him and he caused a ruckus within the freshman area. So he was cultivating at this place..." An Ran muttered.

"So he was the freshman that Mo Lun was searching for...That should be quite interesting to watch. That guy, Mo Lun, should soon breakthrough to the Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase, right?" The boy beside An Ran frowned: "However, he's a senior, why is he picking a fight with the freshmen? Moreover, his actions during the past few days were indeed going overboard."

They were prideful seniors, and there was no honour in bullying the freshmen that were recently accepted into the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

An Ran nodded slightly as well. She, too, was quite disgusted with Mo Lun's actions.

As they conversed with each other, Mu Chen, who had appeared in midair in the distance, swept his gaze around. He stared at the numerous gazes nearby that were completely fixed on him and was quite surprised. It was evident that he never expected that his cultivation would have attracted that many people's attention.

However, he was not particularly fond of this attention. Therefore, he turned around and decided to leave temporarily.

"Mu Chen!"

But just when he was about to leave, a cry came from afar. Then, he noticed a figure rushing over towards him. After the figure had approached, he was somewhat surprised and smiled: "Senior An Ran, so you were here as well."

“You must be quite relaxed since you’ve hidden yourself in this place.” An Ran stared at Mu Chen as she frowned.

“Huh?” Mu Chen frowned. It wasn’t as if he had offended anyone with his cultivation, right?

“Are you just pretending or do you really not know about that issue?” An Ran stared at Mu Chen’s bewildered expression and said: “Don’t you know what happened within the freshman area?”

“What happened? Is it related to me?” Mu Chen was quite confused and asked in doubt.

“You’ve eliminated Mo Lun from the Spirit Ranking. He is a prideful individual, thus, he was completely enraged by you. During the past few days, he has been looking for you. However, since he wasn’t able to find you, he released his fury on the freshmen located in your freshman area.”

An Ran continued to speak: “And it seemed that your friends had joined forces to resist him when he came over to search for you. This caused him to be completely furious. Therefore, he called over a few friends over the past few days and has obstructed the freshmen within that area from exiting to cultivate. Moreover, he even spread the word about how long you would be able to hide.”

Mu Chen was completely surprised and his expression immediately turned grim. Fury also poured out within his eyes. He never expected that this Mo Lun would be so petty. Not only did he hold a grudge about the Spirit Ranking, he even involved the freshmen who weren’t involved in that issue.

“Right now, this matter has aroused a lot of attention, but since this is a matter between students, the instructors of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy cannot intervene. However, I think that you should appear for a bit, otherwise, it would be detrimental to your reputation.” An Ran said.

Currently, news had also spread throughout the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. They had said that Mu Chen was a coward and was afraid of trouble. He took the benefits of the Spirit Ranking and went into

hiding. At the same time, he let his companions take care of his own trouble.

An Ran stared at the boy in front of her. At this moment, Mu Chen's expression gradually calmed down and his anger subsided. However, within his black eyes, a daunting chill emerged.

"Senior An Ran. Thank you very much. About this issue, I didn't consider the possibilities of this occurring thoroughly. This caused my friends to suffer." Mu Chen cupped his hands towards An Ran and replied softly.

An Ran nodded. After all, she had fought against Mu Chen and had lost to him. If the latter was truly a coward, she would also feel quite uncomfortable. To lose to such a person, it wasn't worth it. However, judging from the situation now, it was clear that it was different than the rumors outside. Mu Chen did not hide because he was afraid of Mo Lun.

It was evident that Mu Chen had no desire to continue to cultivate once he heard this news. He turned around and intended to leave the Lightning Territory.

"Do you need any help? It isn't easy to deal with Mo Lun. Moreover, he has even found a few friends to help him. If you need some help, I can bring a few friends over. This way, they wouldn't dare to go overboard." Seeing this, An Ran quickly spoke up.

However, Mu Chen only smiled when he heard this and replied: "Thank you for your kindness, Senior An Ran. However, since I was the one that caused this trouble, I will resolve it by myself."

Seeing Mu Chen's smile, An Ran felt a tiny chill within her heart. Even when she had badmouthed this gentle and handsome boy within the Northern Heavens World, he had always remained like a sunshine boy. But at this moment, the latter's expression emitted a powerful chill. This made An Ran understand that Mu Chen was extremely furious this time.

An Ran nodded. She unconsciously felt that Mo Lun seemed to have stirred up a hornet's nest...

Mu Chen no longer spoke and immediately rushed towards the exit of

the Lightning Territory. In a dozen minutes or so, he passed through the numerous floors of the Lightning Territory and rushed out of the entrance.

Once Mu Chen returned to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, he did not have the mood to watch the fairyland-like sight. Instead, he stared coldly at the distant freshman area. His body quickly turned into a figure of light as he rushed over there.

At this moment, his palms slowly clenched themselves and a piercing chill gathered within his eyes.

Mo Lun, is it? If you believe that I've disgraced you utterly since I've kicked you out of the Spirit Ranking, then this time, I will disgrace you to the extent that you wouldn't even have any face left to be disgraced!

You bastard!

Chapter 166: Blockade

In a certain location within the freshmen area.

In the spacious plaza, numerous freshmen had gathered, talking to each other. However, they could not suppress the anger within their voices. Many of the freshmen stared angrily at the skies above this area. At that location, there were a few figures standing in midair as they chuckled and watched over them. These people all had sloppy expressions, but the Spiritual Energy fluctuations that were emitting from within their bodies revealed that they all possessed the strength of a Heavenly Fusion Stage individual.

It was evident that it would currently be difficult for the freshmen to compete against this line-up.

At the center of the plaza, Ye Qingling, Zhou Ling and the others had all gathered. All of them had furious and unwilling expressions. These bastards had already besieged them for a bit over ten days.

Although they could still cultivate within the freshmen area, they felt like prisoners in a prison, since they were stuck in this place and were not allowed to exit.

“These bastards are going too far!” Yan Ling gritted his teeth as he cursed. His face had a few bruises. This was the price that he had paid for not being able to endure this treatment and fighting against these bastards. Although he was considered to be one of the strongest freshmen, there was still quite a bit of difference between him and the seniors, who had already cultivated within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy for one or two years.

Zhou Ling and the others also had gloomy expressions. In the past, they were all prideful individuals and had never been this insulted. During these ten or so days, a few freshmen, who were originally together with them in this freshmen area, had applied to leave this freshmen area due to the pressure from Mo Lun and the others. Only by doing this, they were able to escape from their bullying.

However, there were lot more freshmen who had decided to huddle together and form a group. After all, the students that were able to enter the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy were all considered to be at the pinnacle of their own respective academies before. Although their sense of superiority had dimmed after they entered the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, they still had pride deep down inside. Therefore, if they were to leave this freshmen area due to the current circumstances, won't it be same as they telling others that they were afraid of these bastards and were forced to choose a humiliating method to escape their bullying?

Their prideful selves would not accept such thing to happen.

Thus, even though many of the freshmen were filled with fury, there weren't many individuals that decided to leave this freshmen area. Instead, they grouped together as if they wanted to see just how far these bastards would go.

"Let's continue to cultivate. After all, we're within a Rank 4 Spirit Convergence Array, the Spiritual Aura within this place is quite abundant. Let's see who will be able to outlast the other." Zhou Ling said.

Everybody nodded in response. Because of Mo Lun's actions, they had become quite familiar within each other during the past few days. They would gather together and it was apparent that they had formed a deeper relationship.

"Right now, we can only wait until Mu Chen or Luo Li return." Ye Qingling smiled bitterly. Those two...Once they departed, they left for more than 10 days and had not reappeared since then.

"Even if they came back, it probably wouldn't be easy to deal with the current situation." Yan Ling said helplessly. Although both Mu Chen and Luo Li's strength were considered to be at the pinnacle of the freshmen group, these seniors were in no way inferior to them. Moreover, they had an advantage in numbers.

"Eh, let's just wait and watch." Zhou Ling waved his hand and was about to begin his cultivation. However, his expression suddenly changed and he lifted his head as he stared into the distant skies. At that location, a figure

of light was rushing over to this location rapidly. A familiar fluctuation emitted out from that figure.

"It's Mu Chen! He's back!" Zhou Ling stood up in surprise and exclaimed.

"Mu Chen returned?"

In this plaza, the thousands of freshmen were also surprised. They hurriedly lifted their heads as they stared at the distant figure of light.

"Mu Chen?"

The commotion below was also heard by the numerous individuals in the sky. They were all startled and immediately turned towards the figure of light. Then, a youth sneered: "That guy, he finally couldn't endure it any longer and appeared, huh? Prepare to notify Brother Mo, I'll intercept that boy."

Immediately after he spoke, dense Spiritual Energy surged out from the youth's body and charged over as he shouted: "Boy, I've waited for you for a long time. Stop right now!"

From a distance, Mu Chen was able to see the numerous figures forming a blockade within the sky. The cold chill within his eyes suddenly increased. These bastards, they really had formed a blockade here!

Just when his eyes turned increasingly relentless, he stared at the figure that was rushing towards him and the latter's sneer resounded out from afar.

Seeing that this bastard dared to act this arrogant in front of him, his expression turned completely cold. He clenched his fingers tightly and blasted out a punch. Dark-black Spiritual Energy converged and four Limitless Death Seals were formed and fired out at the same time.

As the four Limitless Death Seals exploded out, it left behind a trail of light. Everywhere that the trail of light passed through, it forcibly caused the air to blow up and sounds of explosion rang out.

The youth that had charged towards Mu Chen also detected how

powerful the attack released by Mu Chen was and his eyes immediately focused. This boy, he truly had some skill as he was able to eliminate Mo Lun from the Spirit Ranking.

"A mere freshman dares to act this insolent in front of me?" Although this youth was somewhat surprised, he was not afraid of Mu Chen. As he sneered, he also clenched his fists tightly and Spiritual Energy gushed out from his body. Rumbling Spiritual Energy converged on the surface of his fists as he fired out a punch. Then, this punch connected directly at the four Limitless Death Seals that approached him.

"Scram!"

Mu Chen's black eyes were completely merciless. The four Limitless Death Seals suddenly exploded and powerful Spiritual Energy shockwaves overlapped with each other like rippling waves. With the force of thousands of shockwaves, they bombarded fiercely against the youth's attack.

Visible Spiritual Energy shockwaves rang out with a gigantic sound. At this moment, the youth's expression was slightly pale and filled with horror. His body trembled and he was forcibly blown away. He felt something sweet within his throat and traces of blood leaked out from the corner of his mouth.

In this direct confrontation, he was actually blown away by Mu Chen!

"How is this possible?!" The youth's eyes were completely dismayed. How could this Spirit Stage Late Phase freshman possess such extraordinary combat ability?

When the numerous seniors witnessed this scene, they were also quite shocked.

In the instant that they were completely shocked, Mu Chen had rushed past their blockade and landed directly on the plaza where the freshmen gathered.

"Mu Chen!" Seeing this, Ye Qingling and the others hurriedly and surrounded him.

“Brother Mu, you’ve finally returned!” Mo Ling and the others’ expressions were filled with excitement.

“Everyone, are you alright?” Mu Chen glanced around the surroundings at everyone. All of them had eyes filled with surprise and not even the slightest grievance could be seen within them. This made him somewhat touched and somewhat ashamed. After all, they had suffered because of him.

“We’re alright. Although these bastards were quite arrogant, they didn’t dare to do anything to us.” Zhou Ling smiled at Mu Chen and was quite curious. Just earlier, he had seen Mu Chen blow away a senior, who was at the Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase, with one punch. Compared to ten days ago, it was apparent that the latter’s strength had increased again.

“This time, it was all because of me not considering such possibilities. I’ve troubled everyone.” Mu Chen said seriously as he cupped his hands towards the freshmen.

“Ohoho, Brother Mu, what are you saying? The Spirit Ranking originally belongs to us freshmen. It’s completely reasonable for you to enter the Spirit Ranking. Instead, these bastards are quite narrow-minded, we all support you!” A freshman smiled and responded.

“That’s right. Brother Mu, you’ve brought glory to us freshmen when you entered the Spirit Ranking. These seniors are truly shameless. We’re not afraid of them. Didn’t they just enter the academy one or two years earlier than us? What is so amazing about them?”

Numerous freshmen spoke out in rage. They spoke out everything that they had hidden deep inside previously. It was evident that they were quite unhappy towards Mo Lun and the others.

As Zhou Ling watched this scene, he also smiled and said to Mu Chen: “It seems that everybody supports you. However, that bastard, Mo Lun, isn’t here. They would take turns in blocking us, but I think that guy will soon appear.

Mu Chen nodded his head slightly and responded slowly: “Everybody, relax. I won’t fight unless I am attacked. However, since they’ve already

appeared, I may be underestimated if I were to endure this."

As he spoke, he lifted his head and stared at the numerous pale youths. His voice was completely heartless as he spoke: "Hurry and notify that Mo Lun. Didn't he want to see me? I'll wait for him right here!"

In the sky, the numerous youths snorted in response. They exchanged gazes with each other and then a person gripped his hand tightly. A light flashed in the center of his palm before it quickly flew away and disappeared.

"A freshman actually dared to act this arrogant. We'll see if you'll have such confidence when Brother Mo appears." A youth sneered.

Mu Chen's eyes possessed a calm glow. He glanced at the youth, but was too lazy to care about him.

As the commotion caused at this location was quite large, it had attracted quite a bit of attention. Numerous freshmen from other areas had approached from afar as they stared in this direction. The rumors of Mo Lun and the others forming a blockade in this area had already spread. Although the other freshmen from other areas felt displeased, they didn't dare say anything as they didn't want to get involved.

And currently, it seemed the cause of this trouble, Mu Chen, had finally reappeared.

When this area attracted numerous people's attention, three individuals, Yang Hong, Bing Qing and Mu Kui, stared towards this place in the sky from three different locations. They wanted to see how Mu Chen would deal with the current situation. After all, they had seen Mo Lun before as well. The latter wasn't weak and was about to break through to the Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase.

Towards the numerous gazes from all directions, Mu Chen remained completely indifferent. He only stared into the distant skies. After a while, his expression finally changed. From that direction, a rainbow light was surging over and appeared in the sky after a few seconds.

When the light faded away, it revealed a stern-looking youth with long

hair. His sharp eyes swept through the place beneath him and finally stopped on Mu Chen's body. His smile turned cold and he finally spoke.

"So you're Mu Chen, right? I've waited for you for quite a few days."

Chapter 167: Mo Lun

The long-haired boy stood in midair and stared at Mu Chen, who was in the plaza below, and revealed a mocking smile. He thought that Mu Chen had appeared because he'd been forced to the point where he couldn't hide any longer.

"So you're Mo Lun..."

At that moment, Mu Chen lifted his head and smiled towards the long-haired boy in the sky. He said, "You're quite narrow-minded. It's truly beyond my expectations. No wonder you dared to occupy the Spirit Ranking, which is for freshmen, and didn't have the courage to challenge a higher level ranking. From what I've seen, you truly are pitiful."

When Mo Lun heard Mu Chen's words, his eyes suddenly changed, and his face turned grim. He immediately responded, "What a sharp tongue you possess. You dare speak such words, even when you're in front of me. You really are heedless of the consequences!"

"You're quite talkative."

Mu Chen shook his head and a cold chill poured out from his black eyes. He stared at Mo Lun and said slowly: "Relax, even if you wish to resolve this matter silently, I wouldn't give you the chance to do so. The humiliation that you've gave to my friends the past few days, I'll make sure that you pay it back right now."

Mo Lun was stunned. Then, he burst out laughing as if he had heard a joke. He tilted his head towards his friends and laughed: "Did you hear that? He said that he wouldn't give me the chance to resolve this matter silently? He actually believed that I was planning to let him go?"

A few youths beside him immediately stared mockingly at Mu Chen. Didn't this guy know the situation he was in?

"Boy, just because of these words, you'll never have a peaceful life in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy." Mo Lun smiled. His eyes also turned increasingly cold as he replied faintly:

“I’m afraid you’re not qualified to say such words.”

Mu Chen smiled and his body slowly rose into the sky. In the end, he was exchanging gazes with Mo Lun at the same eye level. Then, he stretched out his hand and gently bent it: “Come. If you want to get your revenge, then bring out your abilities. Otherwise, you probably won’t be able to regain the pride that you’ve lost.

Mo Lun’s gaze was like a blade stabbing into Mu Chen’s body. His expression had turned exceptionally grim. Mu Chen’s attitude had indeed infuriated him. This scene wasn’t something that he’d wanted to see.

He wanted to see this freshman, who was clueless of the world, reveal a pitiful appearance after he understood who he had provoked...

However, this boy was impervious to such an obvious situation. Thus, he could only use his fists to make him understand that a freshman, who had been recently accepted into the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, should learn what is called modesty!

“All of you should step backwards.” Mo Lun spoke slowly in a dark tone.

Seeing Mo Lun’s expression, the nearby youths understood that Mo Lun was completely furious. They immediately stared pitifully at Mu Chen before retreating backwards.

“Perhaps you might feel proud of eliminating my name from the Spirit Ranking, but I must tell you this in sympathy. That was something that I left behind a year ago. In other words, the current you can only contend with the me from one year ago...”

Mo Lun slowly gripped his hands and golden Spiritual Energy formed into a dense golden light. A Spiritual Energy spread out from his body and caused the expressions of numerous freshmen below to change.

The degree of Spiritual Energy was only half-a-step away from the Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase!

Mo Lun’s strength was even greater than An Ran, who they’d met in the Northern Heavens World!

A few gazes immediately turned towards Mu Chen. However, the latter's face remained completely calm. Not even the slightest disturbance could be seen within his eyes. Moreover, he wasn't surprised by the Spiritual Energy pressure emitting from Mo Lun.

"Boy, it's too late for you to regret this!"

Mo Lun's eyes turned cold as he grinned. Then, he rushed forward and clenched his hands together as he fired a punch. At this instant, a golden light erupted. With an extraordinary fluctuation, it soared rapidly like lightning towards Mu Chen.

Mu Chen's black eyes reflected the approaching golden light. In response, he straightened two of his fingers and let out a furious stab in the next instant. A golden light also erupted from his fingers and formed into a peerless golden divine spear.

The two golden lights fiercely collided with each other and deep sounds rang out from the Spiritual Energy impact. In a few seconds, both lights were annihilated by each other and faded away.

As he witnessed this scene, Mo Lun's eyes narrowed.

All of a sudden, a blurry figure rushed past the fading golden lights like a phantom and appeared above Mo Lun. Just then, a punch was fired out. Four Limitless Death Seals roared out and an extraordinary Spiritual Energy fluctuation enveloped Mo Lun.

As the four Limitless Death Seals roared out, the fluctuations emitting from it instantly changed Mo Lun's expression. It seemed this boy had trained in numerous high-level Attack Spiritual Arts. Otherwise, he wouldn't have such combat abilities.

But if this is the reason behind your confidence, then I'll let you know the difference between us through absolute strength!

"Goldfire Spirit Finger!"

Mo Lun's body remained motionless as he pointed with a single finger, while golden light gushed out. Within the golden light, a golden flame seemed to have appeared. Then, accompanying the winds unleashed by

Mo Lun's finger, it formed into a light with golden flames. It tore through the air and heavily bombarded the approaching Limitless Death Seals.

When the two powerful attacks collided with each other, Spiritual Energy shock waves that were visible to the naked eye surged out. The golden and black Spiritual Energy confronted each other as it constantly surged and attempted to destroy the other.

"Shatter!"

Seeing the two Spiritual Energies having a stalemate, Mo Lun's eyes darkened. At this moment, the Spiritual Energy within his body was completely unleashed. He smacked down with his palm and the golden light finally suppressed the Spiritual Energy impact formed from the Limitless Death Seals. With a bang, the Limitless Death Seals finally shattered and disappeared.

Just when the Spiritual Energy impact from the Limitless Death Seals was completely resolved, a figure rushed forward furiously and the shadow of a palm descended down mercilessly and enshrouded Mo Lun's surroundings.

Bang!

However, Mo Lun only sneered in response to Mu Chen's ferocious attack. He activated his Spiritual Energy and a sharp and powerful wind was formed by his finger. This wind completely stopped Mu Chen's offense.

In the sky, the two figures were entangled with each other. Black and golden lights would erupt in the sky, making it a dazzling scene.

In this area, numerous gazes stared at the two figures. Even a person who had entered the Heavenly Fusion Stage would turn completely serious in the face of the violent Spiritual Energy that was emitting from this location.

Ye Qingling, Zhou Ling and the others watched with a serious expression as Mu Chen fought against Mo Lun. It was evident that, compared to ten days ago, Mu Chen's strength had increased significantly.

Therefore, he was able to fight evenly even against Mo Lun's terrifying offensive.

But no matter what, Mu Chen was still only at the Spirit Stage Late Phase. If they were to compare the density of Spiritual Energy within their bodies, it was natural for Mu Chen to have significantly less than Mo Lun. Therefore, it wouldn't be to Mu Chen's advantage if this stalemate continued on.

"Boom!"

Just when these thoughts flashed through their minds, a devastating rumbling resounded from the sky. At the same time, the two intertwining figures were blasted backwards.

Mu Chen's sleeves had been slightly torn while Mo Lun's loose long hair had turned completely messy. It was evident that the two of them did not hold back during their confrontation.

"This boy is surprisingly resilient. No wonder he was able to eliminate the ranking that I'd left behind a year ago." Mo Lun let out a cold laugh. The strength displayed by Mu Chen was indeed comparable to a Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase. This was extremely rare.

"However, you shouldn't be too proud of yourself. After all, this is only the beginning!"

Mo Lun's eyes turned sharp and he took a step forward. His long hair danced in the skies once again and dazzling golden lights were emitting from his body. These lights would extend and retract, making it look like there were millions of lights surging forth.

"Goldfire Sword Art, Myriad Sword Slash!"

Mo Lun's hand seals changed as he let out a deep cry. The golden lights that he was emitting immediately condensed in front of him. In the end, it formed into an overwhelming number of golden swords. Every single one of these swords was trembling and making a buzzing sounds A sharp fluctuation would emit from each sword.

With the appearance of these countless golden swords, the Spiritual

Aura within the world near Mo Lun's body started to turn violently. Everybody was able to detect this powerful assault of his.

It was evident that Mo Lun was about to use his trump card!

"He actually forced Brother Mo to use his Goldfire Sword Art. This boy is indeed quite capable." A few seniors were surprised as they watched this scene.

Swish!

As they spoke, Mo Lun's cold eyes locked onto Mu Chen's body. Then, he let out a cold sneer and changed his hand seal. At this moment, the countless golden swords rushed up into the skies. Then, with numerous whistling sounds, they descended down like a golden torrent. It tore through the air and, with extraordinary speed, it blocked all paths of retreat for Mu Chen.

Numerous individuals' expressions changed when they witnessed this scene. Even an ordinary Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase powerhouse wouldn't be able to receive Mo Lun's attack. It seemed that this guy was planning to end this fight early.

Ye Qingling, Zhou Ling and the others all stared nervously at the sky. At that location, Mu Chen's body seemed so insignificant and weak in the face of the mighty golden torrent.

From afar, Yang Hong, Bing Qing and Mu Kui also had their sights fixed at this place. Even they felt a hint of danger from the golden torrent. If Mu Chen didn't have any other techniques, he would definitely be defeated.

Amidst the countless tense gazes, Mu Chen remained calm. He stared at the mighty golden torrent and could feel the extraordinary sharpness from the swords within.

At this moment, he suddenly closed his eyes. Dark-black light emitted from his body and completely enveloped him.

"Turn the body into a Pagoda!"

Mu Chen gently murmured within his heart. At the same time, dark

black lights suddenly rocketed up into the sky. As the black light surged out, Mu Chen's body completely vanished. Instead, it was replaced by a nine floored pagoda!

The pagoda remained suspended in midair and black lights continued to spill out. It remained motionless and quietly allowed the golden torrent of swords to bombard its body.

Ding Ding!

Crisp metal sounds resounded out. The golden torrent of swords had surrounded the pagoda and circled around it furiously. The fluctuations emitting from it had even caused the air to show signs of distortion and many people watching had turned numb.

However, Mo Lun and, from a distance, Yang Hong, Bing Qing and Mu Kui's eyes narrowed at this instant. This is because they could see that the black pagoda was quietly standing within the violent golden torrent. Even against such an extraordinary offensive, it had remained completely motionless.

Moreover, Mo Lun's all-out attack did not even leave the slightest traces on the black pagoda.

"How is this possible?!"

In this instant, even for Mo Lun, he was completely shocked. A hint of unease sprouted in the depths of his heart and quietly entangled itself like vines.

Only now did he finally understand that the freshman, who he believed had been hiding cowardly, was very strange and extremely dangerous.

Chapter 168: The Might of the Pagoda

The golden torrent swept through the skies, and the countless golden swords were making whistling sounds. From afar, the tempest formed by these swords seemed like an extraordinary attack.

At this moment, countless gazes witnessed the scene occur in the sky. The attack from Mo Lun had shocked them tremendously. Even Ye Qingling and the others looked worried.

But just when the worry could be seen in their faces, buzzing sounds rang from the golden torrent in the sky. Suddenly, the sharp golden torrent froze for a moment and the speed of the storm was forcibly slowed down. Afterwards, it stopped completely.

Swish!

When the golden torrent was blocked, a black glow shone from the golden torrent. As the black glow passed through, the golden torrent seemed to have melted like lava touching snow, causing the golden swords to instantly fall apart and disintegrate at an alarming speed.

Within a few seconds, the mighty golden torrent completely vanished from sight.

And in the center of the golden torrent was a few hundred feet black pagoda. It was suspended quietly in the air as a mysterious fluctuation was emitting from it.

The black tower had obscure light engravings on the surface and not even the slightest trace of damage was on the body of the pagoda. It was evident that the devastating golden torrent had no effect on it.

“What the hell is that? Could it be a Spiritual Artifact? However, it doesn’t look like one...”

Everybody’s gaze was fixed on the black tower and people looked surprised. Even Ye Qingling and the others were completely shocked. It was clear that it was their first time witnessing Mu Chen use such a technique as well.

At this moment, the black pagoda trembled for a moment and black lights suddenly gushed. The tower suddenly rushed up into the skies and then it directly suppressed Mo Lun, who was beneath it.

As the black tower rushed up, an indescribable pressure started to emit from it. In that instant, even the Spiritual Aura within the world had fled from this location. It was as if it had met something terrifying.

As the huge shadow from the pagoda enveloped him, Mo Lun's expression turned extremely serious. He felt a dangerous fluctuation coming from the black tower.

Right now, he did not dare to underestimate Mu Chen at all.

After all, Mu Chen's various techniques had finally made him feel somewhat uneasy.

"It won't be that easy for you to defeat me!"

However, Mo Lun was, after all, an experienced senior. Moreover, he wasn't weak at all. Even at a time like this, he was able to quickly suppress the unease within his heart and let out a battle cry. Golden Spiritual Energy surged out like a flood and surrounded his body. In the end, a deafening roar rang out as he turned into a golden beast that could walk in the air.

The entire body of this beast was gold in color, as if it was crafted from actual gold. Its enormous body had a golden flame drifting around. Moreover, a golden horn with spiral engravings was on the golden beast's forehead. The golden beast's body started emitting a powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuation.

"Is that the Goldfire Beast that's ranked 91 on the Myriad Beast Record's Earth Ranking?"

When Ye Qingling and the others noticed that Mo Lun had changed into a golden beast, they were surprised. Mo Lun actually had to use this technique as well. It seemed that he was pressured by Mu Chen quite a bit.

"Roar!"

As the Goldfire Beast roared towards the sky, thousands of golden lights erupted from its body. A pair of golden eyes stared at the black pagoda, while attempting to suppress it. Then, it lowered its head and a brilliant glow flashed from the golden horn on its head. The glow was exceptionally bright and stung countless eyes.

“Goldfire Horn!”

Mo Lun’s deep cry resounded out from the Goldfire Beast’s hideous mouth. Immediately after, a gigantic golden light erupted furiously from the golden horn of the Goldfire Beast.

The golden light ripped through the sky like a pillar of light. It carried a powerful Spiritual Energy and under countless gazes, it fiercely smashed against the pagoda that was approaching.

“Scram!”

The Goldfire Beast formed by Mo Lun roared out loudly. Gold energy collided against the pagoda in a pillar of light. At the same time, violent Spiritual Energy shockwaves spread out in waves. It was an spectacular sight.

“Scram? You’re being suppressed instead!”

The black pagoda remained motionless and allowed the golden light to do whatever it wanted. Mu Chen’s voice also rang out from within the pagoda loudly. After his voice appeared, black lights swept out from the surface of the black pagoda.

Buzz.

The black pagoda vibrated as a black halo was emitted from the base of the pagoda. As the black halo rippled out in waves, the originally bright golden beam dimmed at an extraordinary speed.

The change in brightness was exceptionally swift. Before Mo Lun could recover from his shock, the black pagoda had already descended. It shattered the golden lights as it passed through.

Bang Bang Bang!

Watching the pagoda descending while suppressing the golden light, the Goldfire Beast's eyes filled with terror. It hurriedly activated the Spiritual Energy within its body and numerous golden beams shot out. However, whenever these powerful golden beams touched the black halo beneath the pagoda, they turned dim and vanished at an amazing speed.

From its appearance, it was as if the darkness had met the sunlight.

While it continued descending with overbearing might, the terror within the Goldfire Beast's eyes increased, because it had no way of stopping the pagoda.

"Boom!"

Finally, under countless horrified gazes, the black pagoda fiercely smashed down onto the enormous body of the Goldfire Beast.

The instant it made contact with the Goldfire Beast, even the skies seemed to tremble.

Overwhelming black light rushed out from the base of the pagoda. Due to the enveloping black light, the Goldfire Beast that was formed by Mo Lun started to make sounds of wailing. The golden light quickly dimmed and shrunk. In the end, it turned back into a human figure

At this moment, the human figure shot back awkwardly and mouthfuls of blood were spat out. The originally powerful aura seemed to have shriveled up and the Spiritual Energy fluctuations that rippled out from his body had become weak and disorderly.

Mo Lun's figure shot straight down to the ground. This powerful force directly caused a deep crater to form on the ground. Cracks immediately spread out from the crater.

Puchi.

Mo Lun's clothes were completely torn to pieces. His hair was completely disheveled as he stared palely at the sky. Fear was pouring from his eyes. While the black pagoda suppressed him, it also shattered his courage.

This power had completely suppressed him!

The numerous individuals that were concerned about this battle also quietly inhaled mouthfuls of cold air. Their eyes were filled with disbelief. Even the seniors in the sky were completely stunned. They stared in a daze at Mo Lun, who had a pale expression, and could not recover from their shock.

Mo Lun, whose strength was comparable to a Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase, had actually lost? Moreover, he had lost to a freshman, who was only at the Spirit Stage Late Phase?

They turned their necks stiffly and exchanged gazes with each other. All of them were completely silent. This time, their opponent was too strong and they had completely underestimated him.

“That guy...”

In a distant location, Yang Hong had a calm expression as he witnessed this scene. But when he stared at the black tower, his eyes focused and turned cold. Mu Chen’s true strength was beyond his expectations. As expected, that guy wasn’t someone who could be dealt with easily. It seemed that he had to make preparations for the Freshmen Competition that would be hosted ten days later.

“He’s quite powerful.”

On the other side, Mu Kui nodded his head and gave a fair assessment. Although he was not afraid of Mo Lun, it would be burdensome if he wanted to suppress the latter to this extent. Since Mu Chen had managed to do so with his strength at the Spirit Stage Late Phase, it impressed him.

As for Bing Qing, she had remained icy cold. Her icy-blue eyes did not reveal much shock.

In the plaza, Ye Qingling and the others also recovered from their shock and surprise filled their eyes. This time, even Zhou Ling and the other students at the pinnacle of the freshmen were impressed. With the identity of a freshman, he was able to defeat a senior such as Mo Lun. This ability of his was enough to tame them.

Not to mention Mo Ling and the others, these individuals all had eyes filled with worship. At the same time, the other freshmen all had dazzling smiles on their faces. They stared at the seniors, who had ugly expressions, and felt satisfied. They were finally able to express their fury from the past few days.

In the sky, the black tower quickly shrank. As the light faded away, it turned into a slender figure. At this moment, Mu Chen stared coldly at Mo Lun, who was completely pale, and appeared directly in front of him.

Seeing Mu Chen's cold expression, Mo Lun's heart jumped. He gritted his teeth and said, "Boy, it's your win. Everyone, let's leave!"

Although he was in an awkward position, he wouldn't submit to him verbally. He could lose the battle, but could not lose the war.

"Leave?"

Mu Chen stared at him and frowned. This made Mo Lun felt a bit of unease. However, he continued to sneer and said, "Otherwise, what do you plan to do?"

"Since you've blocked this many people from leaving for ten days, don't you think that you should hand over a bit of compensation?" Mu Chen said faintly, "Hand over all your Spiritual Values."

"What did you say?!" Mo Lun's expression instantly turned cold and he snapped. He never imagined that Mu Chen would be this vicious. He actually wanted him to hand over his Spiritual Values.

Mu Chen remained indifferent and flicked his finger. A powerful wind erupted and passed by Mo Lun's ear. Then, it landed on the ground and formed a hole in the tough boulder.

"Although I cannot kill you, I don't mind hanging you on a tree within the freshman area. This way, you wouldn't have any face left within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy." Mu Chen seemed to smile. However, this smile sent chills throughout Mo Lun's body.

"Sometimes, you have to pay the price when you do the wrong thing. Otherwise, you wouldn't remember it at all."

“Bastard!” Mo Lun’s face reddened and he growled: “You dare do this to me? Don’t you know that I’m a member from the “Azure Red Community”? If you dare do such a thing, then don’t even think being able to survive within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy!”

Mu Chen glanced at him calmly before he took a step forward. He grabbed directly onto Mo Lun’s collar and fired out a palm. He directly dislocated all four of Mo Lun’s limbs and dragged him towards a tree. It was evident that he planned on hanging him there.

“You!”

Mo Lun endured the pain from his limbs and had a pale expression. If he were to be hung up at this place, he definitely wouldn’t have any face left!

“Wait!”

As he thought about the humiliation that he would face, Mo Lun finally couldn’t act arrogant anymore. His entire body turned limp and he clenched his hand tightly. A crystal-like Spiritual Values Card appeared and he gritted his teeth as he stared at Mu Chen. “Just you wait, I won’t let you go this easily!”

Mu Chen smiled and completely ignored him. He picked up the Spiritual Values Card and looked at the amount it contained. At this moment, he could not help but lift his eyebrow in surprise.

Chapter 169: Association

200,000 Spiritual Value points.

Mu Chen stared at the number on the Spiritual Value Card and was slightly startled. Mo Lun actually possessed so many of Spiritual Value points? Just how long had he been saving them? No wonder he had such a terrible expression just now.

Mu Chen directed a smile at the gloomy Mo Lun and tossed the Spiritual Value Card in his hand towards Zhou Ling as he said: “Brother Zhou. Please distribute these Spiritual Values among everyone. Consider it my apology to everyone here.”

“This…” Zhou Ling was stunned. Even the other freshmen in the plaza scratched their head and had felt slightly embarrassed.

“Just do as he says.” Ye Qingling smiled. After all, this entire matter was indeed caused by Mu Chen. Although the freshmen did not place the blame on him, Mu Chen didn’t treat it as if they should naturally do this. Instead, his actions revealed how big-hearted he was.

Zhou Ling hesitated for a moment and exchanged gazes with Yan Ling and the others beside him. Then, he nodded his head and extracted 170,000 Spiritual Value points from the Spiritual Value Card before tossing the remaining 30,000 Spiritual Value points back to Mu Chen. He smiled: “In the end, this is the loot from your victory. The rest of it should still belong to you. This amount is enough to split between us.

Seeing this, Mu Chen did not refute him and extracted the remaining 30,000 Spiritual Value points from the Spiritual Value Card. Then, he threw the Spiritual Value Card back to the pale-looking Mo Lun as he smiled: “On behalf of everyone here, I’ll thank Senior Mo Lun for his generosity.”

Mo Lun stared at the empty Spiritual Value Card and his face alternated between blue and red. He felt enormous suffering within his heart. After all, he had saved up for half a year to accumulate such amount of Spiritual Value points. Just now, he had lost everything he had.

In the sky, the few youths that followed Mo Lun over hurriedly descended. When they witnessed this scene, their expressions were completely pale and they glared furiously at Mu Chen.

"Boy. You're going too far! You actually dare steal his Spiritual Value points!"

Mu Chen gave a faint smile and said: "I've said it before. This isn't stealing, but compensation. Judging from your appearances, it seems that you would like to compensate us as well? It seems that all of you were involved in this matter during these past few days as well."

When these youths heard these words, they were slightly shocked and gritted their teeth. The scene of Mu Chen completely suppressing Mo Lun was still vivid in their minds. Therefore, they didn't dare to face Mu Chen who was completely filled with spirit and confidence.

"We, the Azure Red Community, will never let this matter go easily!" One of the youths said coldly.

"No matter what sort of background you have, you should find me directly next time you're going to cause trouble. Don't act so lowly." A hint of coldness flashed through Mu Chen's eyes. Although he did not know what the "Azure Red Community" was, it did not mean that he would just allow anyone to intimidate him. Perhaps he might be a freshman right now, but if someone truly wanted to deal with him, he did not mind letting them know that he wasn't a weakling.

"Just you wait!"

The youths had dark and furious expressions. Under the numerous mocking gazes from nearby students, they did not have the face to remain in this place. Their actions for the past few days had made countless seniors feel that they were indeed despicable. Moreover, even Mo Lun had lost. If they were to group together since they weren't able to accept this outcome, not only would they lose their faces completely, even their "Azure Red Community" would be scoffed at.

It was evident that they couldn't afford such a consequence to occur.

Hence, they could only respond relentlessly as they picked up Mo Lun, who was in a completely awkward position, before leaving quickly.

When the freshmen in the plaza noticed that they were leaving in panic, cheers resounded out through the place. The fury within their hearts had finally been released.

“Brother Mu, you’re so manly!”

Mo Ling shouted out loudly in excitement. The other freshmen also quickly shouted and their voices rang out like an avalanche as it spread far away. Even the other freshmen within the other areas were able to hear these cries clearly.

“Amazing...”

The freshmen within the other areas had faces filled with admiration as well. Although they did not suffer from Mo Lun’s blockade, they were still freshmen as well. Towards Mo Lun’s actions, they were also quite furious. Since Mu Chen had defeated Mo Lun, he had definitely increased the freshmen’s reputation as well.

As for the freshmen that had applied leave towards the other areas prior to Mu Chen’s appearance, they were completely embarrassed. After all, they had tried to avoid trouble once it occurred. They would definitely be dishonored if word spread about them.

In the distant sky, Yang Hong stared emotionlessly at the freshmen area where the cheers resounded out. He grunted as he waved his sleeves and descended.

“He’s a good opponent.” Mu Kui’s eyes were burning with fighting spirit as he smiled. Then, he also descended from the sky.

As for Bing Qing, she stared at the slender figure who was completely submerged by the countless freshmen with her icy-blue eyes and nodded her head. The so-called Spiritual Road’s Blood Calamity was indeed quite skilled. No wonder he had made so many people from the Spiritual Road fear him.

As the battle ended, the gazes that were projected over to this place were

slowly retracted. Although the battle was concluded, many people were still shocked deep down inside. The scene of the mysterious black tower suppressing everything was too insane and outrageous. It made it difficult for them to recover from their state of shock. They never could've imagined that Mu Chen, with his Spirit Stage Late Phase strength, could possess such a powerful and terrifying technique...

"The Freshmen Competition ten days later will definitely be a sight to watch. I really wonder if Mu Chen will be the strongest or if Yang Hong, Mu Kui or Bing Qing will be even stronger than him..."

A few individuals were looking forward towards the competition. The mentioned individuals were at the peak of this year's freshmen. Moreover, they wanted to know just who is the true number one individual amongst the freshmen.

In the plaza, Zhou Ling and the others watched the emotional freshmen and could not help but smile. Then, they distributed the 170,000 Spiritual Values that they had obtained earlier. Although 170,000 Spiritual Values might seem like a lot, they were still hundreds of freshmen in this place. Every single one of them did not even obtain 1,000 Spiritual Values, but this was still enough for them to feel grateful towards Mu Chen.

"It seems that your strength has improved once again." Ye Qingling approached Mu Chen and chuckled.

"I've made a breakthrough recently." Mu Chen smiled. In fact, if it wasn't for the sudden breakthrough in his Great Pagoda Art, he probably would've had to spend a lot of effort to defeat Mo Lun. After all, Mo Lun wasn't weak at all.

"However, you've completely offended that person this time." Ye Qingling frowned slightly. Mo Lun was truly narrow-minded and petty. Since Mu Chen had directly stolen all his Spiritual Values this time, that guy probably wouldn't accept it this easily.

Mu Chen smiled. Perhaps there might be trouble, but he wasn't the type of person who would stop his actions just because it might be troublesome to him in the future. For people with personalities similar to Mo Lun's,

they would only become more arrogant and presumptuous, the more he gave in.

Mu Chen wasn't someone who didn't know how to endure. However, it was apparent that Mo Lun wasn't someone qualified to force him to such an extent.

"Mo Lun probably isn't a big trouble for you. However, the "Azure Red Community" is something that one should fear." After Zhou Ling had finished distributing the Spiritual Values, he had walked over as well and said with a serious expression.

"You know what the "Azure Red Community" is?" Mu Chen turned around and asked Zhou Ling.

"The Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy is too enormous. There are nearly 100,000 students. I don't know how many are hiding their strength, but with such a large number of students, they would naturally form associations or communities. This forces are tricky and extremely troublesome. Moreover, the "Azure Red Community" is one of the most famous forces."

Zhou Ling spoke: "Based on what I know, there are many powerful individuals within the Azure Red Community. Moreover, their boss is within the top 100 individuals in the Heavenly Ranking. I'm afraid that his strength has to be at the Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase, at least."

"Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase..."

Mu Chen's eyes turned serious for a moment. A student with such strength is considered to be outstanding within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. No wonder the people from the Azure Red Community were this arrogant. With such a powerful person backing them up, there was no need for them to look at the freshmen evenly.

Beside him, Ye Qingling, Yan Ling and the others had serious expressions. For them right now, it was difficult for them to compete with such a senior.

"We'll deal with the situation when it occurs. If that Mo Lun really tries

to use the Azure Red Community to deal with me, I will naturally fight back." Mu Chen smiled: "I hope that they won't do it. After all, I don't want to cause too much trouble."

Zhou Ling and the others nodded. Right now, they could only hope that the Azure Red Community wouldn't take action because of Mo Lun. Otherwise, it would be quite troublesome for them.

"Also..." Zhou Ling and the others exchanged gazes with each other and spoke hesitantly.

"Just say whatever's in your mind. If I can help, I won't refuse." Mu Chen smiled. Right now, he had a favorable impression on Zhou Ling and the others. These people were truly worth knowing as friends. At the very least, they did not choose to blame him when they suffered because of an overwhelming force.

"Due to of the recent affair with Mo Lun, there are many freshmen that left our area. However, the ones that remained are all decent individuals... We get together quite well."

Zhou Ling said embarrassedly: "Thus, we've talked for a bit and decided to form an association as well. After all, if we were to group together, we would have more power when others bully us in the future. Moreover, we would be able to help each other when we're in trouble. A group is definitely stronger than one person."

When Mu Chen heard this, he was quite surprised. He never thought that Zhou Ling and the others intended to do such a thing.

"Actually, within this year's freshmen, there are already associations that have begun to emerge. For example, the one with the strongest momentum currently is the Wyvern Association that was formed by Yang Hong. Also, there is the Ironwood Group formed by Mu Kui. In addition, there are many other freshmen forces..." Zhou Ling continued to speak.

Mu Chen was quite shocked. These guys truly acted quickly. They were just admitted to the academy, yet they've already started building up their own cliques...

“If we were to form an association, naturally, we would need someone extremely powerful. Otherwise, we wouldn’t be able to maintain the group so...” Zhou Ling directed a smile at Mu Chen.

Seeing this, Mu Chen also smiled. He stared at the anticipating gazes and nodded: “I’m not interested in forming an association, but if you wish to make one, I’m all in for it.”

Hearing these words, Zhou Ling and the others were completely overjoyed. However, they immediately twitched and asked: “Also, is it possible for Luo Li to join us as well? Cough, with her in our group, we believe that our popularity would soar...”

With this, Mu Chen completely understood and scolded playfully: “So your objective is Luo Li. It feels that I was just an afterthought for you!”

“How could this be? It’s just that Luo Li’s image is just too strong. She’s beautiful and powerful. Moreover, she has great temperament. Not to mention the freshmen, even among the Seniors at the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, there are only a handful that could compete with her.” Zhou Ling said embarrassedly.

Mu Chen glanced at them snappily. However, he wasn’t actually unhappy. After all, it wasn’t that he hadn’t seen Luo Li’s charm before. Compared to him, it was indeed easier for her to attract popularity.

“I’ll tell her about it. However, whether or not she’ll join, that will depend on her.” Mu Chen waved and replied.

“I’m counting on you.”

Zhou Ling and the others were delighted. After all, Luo Li was basically disinterested in everything aside from cultivation. If they were to find Luo Li, they would definitely be rejected. However, it was a different story if Mu Chen was the one asking.

Moreover, if their association had both Mu Chen and Luo Li joining, it was evident that their reputation would increase...

Chapter 170: Cheating

The trouble caused by Mo Lun was finally resolved with the appearance of Mu Chen. This freshman area had once again become free of hindrance. However, news of the sensational fight that broke out were still being spread by word of mouth from so many freshmen that a few seniors have vaguely heard about this fight.

Regarding the outcome, those seniors were obviously surprised. Mo Lun's strength may not be counted as outstanding among the seniors, but no matter what, he was on the verge of breaking through to the Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase. Compared to those freshmen who just entered the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, this kind of strength should clearly be somewhat difficult to contend against.

But at present, Mo Lun was actually defeated.

Moreover, he was defeated by a freshman named Mu Chen, who didn't even have to exert himself. This irresistible strength where one has no choice but to yield caused some seniors to be inwardly shocked. Apparently, these newly arrived freshmen seemed to be quite a bit more capable compared with the past freshmen.

Concerning Mo Lun's humiliating defeat, quite a few seniors actually snorted disdainfully. After all, the ones that understood him knew his personality. If he only went to seek trouble for Mu Chen, perhaps no one would say anything. But his actions of obstructing the freshmen had earned people's contempt. Since the students of Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had all been freshman once, they were particularly disapproving of Mo Lun's actions.

And so, regarding Mo Lun's defeat and his eventual loss of half a year's worth of accumulated Spiritual Value points, the same thought, that he got what he deserved, was going through many people's head. Since this time, this guy had been utterly disgraced, let's see if he dares to be so cocky in the future.

Mu Chen couldn't be bothered regarding Mo Lun's humiliation. You

reap what you sow. If the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy didn't have strict rules, the matter this time would not have been simply resolved with just 200,000 Spiritual Value points.

After this matter with Mo Lun had been settled, peace and quiet once again returned to the freshman area. But since Mu Chen was worried that a similar incident may happen again, he decided to stay in the freshman area for a few days to avoid any trouble from emerging.

Fortunately, no trouble appeared. Mo Lun had lost no small amount of face, and so, had disappeared without a trace, not daring to show himself. In these past few days, preparations were already in full swing for the association proposed by Zhou Ling and the others. The people in the freshman area were unanimously in favor of the proposal. After being in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy for more than half a month, it became clear to them that the competition at the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy is extremely intense. In such a competitive environment, the strength of an individual clearly cannot compare to that of a group. As a group, everyone can pull together as one to the benefit of everyone.

Therefore, a resolution on the matter of an association was successfully passed by everyone. Zhou Ling and the others couldn't help but feel a little excited. Even though they had established their strength in the Northern Heavens World, that was only temporary. But now things were different. They will be spending quite a long period of time at the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, so it would be worthwhile to put a lot of energy and hard work into this association.

Mu Chen didn't have a lot of interest towards the hustle and bustle of Zhou Ling's group. While he supported Zhou Ling and the others, that didn't mean that he intended to participate in such complicated business.

On the other hand, Zhou Ling and the others strongly supported Mu Chen's dedication towards cultivation. For their proposal to work, an overbearing power is needed. And as far as they can tell, Mu Chen and Luo Li were their most powerful deterrent.

That was why, during this time that they were in turmoil, nobody went to disturb Mu Chen. Instead, they allowed the latter to enjoy a moment of peace.

Mu Chen sat cross-legged on the top floor of a small house as he was circulating the Great Pagoda Art and absorbed the abundant Spiritual Aura of the world. After all, the freshman area is enveloped by a Rank 4 Spirit Convergence Array. The density of the Spiritual Aura was multiple times stronger than the Rank 3 Spirit Convergence Array at the Northern Spiritual Academy. By cultivating in this place, his cultivation speed would at least double when compared to the Northern Spiritual Academy.

"A Rank 4 Spirit Convergence Array is already this amazing, I really can't imagine how much more frightening a Rank 5 or Rank 6 Spirit Convergence Array can be." Curiosity arose in Mu Chen's mind. He had never seen a Spirit Convergence Array at that rank before. Not to mention the Northern Spiritual Realm, even within the Hundred Spirit Continent, there probably aren't many Rank 5 or Rank 6 Spirit Convergence Array.

"Luo Li should've entered a Rank 5 Spirit Convergence Array to cultivate. It's been so long and she still haven't returned."

Mu Chen shook his head helplessly. He knew Luo Li's personality. For unknown reasons, this quiet and refined girl had such an obsessive fixation regarding cultivation that it even moved Mu Chen. During the Spiritual Road, Mu Chen had rescued her from the hands of other participants. Perhaps the young girl became slightly touched by him during the moments they spent together that time. In a sense, this caused the kind of feelings between a girl and a boy to sprout.

For ordinary girls, a majority would want to preserve this budding attraction. But instead, Luo Li decided to do the opposite and attempted to kill Mu Chen in order to completely wipe that feeling from her heart.

At that time, she felt that letting this sentiment grow would have hindered her cultivation.

That is why she forcibly suppressed her feelings even though she was unwilling in her heart. But her obsession with cultivation prevailed in the

end, and so, the almost half-year long chase to kill him, began.

Luo Li had a very calm personality and it seemed that she was always aloof and disinterested. She would use an observer mentality to quietly watch over the world. But no matter how emotionless she may become, she is still a girl after all.

She didn't know that when she first started developing feelings for this boy, there were certain things that had already escaped her control. As a result, when she finally managed to defeat Mu Chen after half a year and pressed her long sword against Mu Chen's throat, she looked at the youth's helpless expression and suddenly realized that the feelings she had kept suppressed in her heart had already sprouted during the half-year chase. Her insipid feelings had spread throughout her entire heart, unconsciously breaking through her restrictions.

In this dangerous hunt, who is the hunter and who is the prey, who won and who lost, no one could give a clear answer.

And all this was caused by Luo Li's obsessive fixation with cultivation. There were times that Mu Chen developed a sense of pity for that level of obsession, but he never stopped her. Instead, whenever she was spending great effort cultivating, he would invest an even greater effort than her.

"This girl."

Mu Chen softly let out a sigh. He was able to tell that Luo Li's background is definitely not simple. He had been aware of this for long time. The expression of the old man from the Spiritual Value Hall also proved this point. Therefore, this left him feeling puzzled. For Luo Li to have this kind of background, why is she working with such dedication on her cultivation?

From Mu Chen's understanding of Luo Li, she is not someone who is crazy about cultivation. In fact, Mu Chen could vaguely feel that she had a hint of disgust and resistance towards cultivating, but...

Mu Chen smiled bitterly and shook his head. For the time being, he threw away these thoughts. He knew there would be a day that Luo Li will tell him herself. Since she doesn't want to talk about it now, Mu Chen

naturally will not force her.

Thinking up to this point, Mu Chen decided not to worry any longer. A crystal Spiritual Value Card suddenly appeared on his palm. On the surface, it showed more than 30,000 Spiritual Value.

“Only 30,000.”

Mu Chen twitched his mouth. To obtain the Northern Sea Dragon’s Blood Essence, it was still short 6,970,000 Spiritual Values. It was said that Mo Lun had used up almost six months in order to accumulate 200,000 Spiritual Value. If this is the case, wouldn’t it take more than ten years to collect 7 million Spiritual Value?

“Mu Chen.”

While Mu Chen was feeling helpless about this, Nine Nether Bird’s thoughts suddenly sounded out in his heart.

“Hmm?” Mu Chen answered half-heartedly.

“You could go sell Divine Lightning Beads considering they are worth quite a few Spiritual Value.” Nine Nether Bird radiated with joy at coming up with this idea. Shortly after, Mu Chen saw a dark black beam of light rush out from within his body.

Rumble.

Along with the appearance of the black beam, rumbling sounds of thunder suddenly roared out. With a stunned gaze, Mu Chen stared at the densely packed silver colored beads that have unexpectedly appeared in the middle of the black beam. These beads were barely thumb-sized and a lightning pattern came into view on the surface of the beads. A power of pure essence radiated forth from within, emitting a deep sound of thunder rolls.

“These are the Divine Lightning Beads? So much?” Mu Chen stared blankly. Immediately, his brows cannot help raise. “How did they come in your possession?”

According to his rough estimate, there are perhaps five hundred Divine

Lightning Beads. With 200 Spiritual Value per bead, these beads should be worth 100,000 Spiritual Value in total. It's no small number.

"When you were cultivating in the Lightning Territory, I was secretly absorbing the power of the divine lightning and then condensed them into these." Nine Nether Bird's voice was somewhat excited. "Didn't they say that these could be sold for Spiritual Value? How much are they worth?"

Mu Chen's face looked a bit strange. At this moment, the Nine Nether Bird's appearance resembled a little peddler who had suddenly stuck a fortune. This is completely different than his former arrogant and prideful attitude.

"100,000 Spiritual Value." Mu Chen answered.

That's still quite far from 7,000,000 Spiritual Value Points. Well, it doesn't matter, we can just go to the Lightning Territory several times. As long as I use my full strength, the speed when condensing Divine Lightning Beads should increase significantly." The Nine Nether Bird was slightly depressed and replied in resignation.

"If you go all out, then it would create too much of a disturbance and that sort of disturbance will inevitably be detected by Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's high level experts. Although they might not do anything to you, this is suppose to be a kind of a test for students after all. If you were to do such an act, they might recognize it as cheating. If by any chance they take measures towards this, wouldn't we have wasted all our effort?" Mu Chen smiled bitterly. Regarding this matter, it would be best if they did it in secret. If they were to condense a huge amount of Divine Lightning Beads, it would instead be quite unnatural.

"Then just when would I obtain the Northern Sea Dragon's Blood Essence..." The Nine Nether Bird also felt that this was logical, however, it was still somewhat unwilling. In front of him, there was a chance of evolution, but in the end, the so-called Spiritual Value had stopped it.

"Be patient, we have plenty of time." Mu Chen comforted.

"Fine then, you can deal with these Divine Lightning Beads. The next time we go to the Lightning Territory, I'll work discreetly as much as

possible to not get caught and condense more Divine Lightning Beads." Nine Nether Bird said grudgingly.

Mu Chen smiled and nodded his head. He proceeded to collect the Divine Lightning Beads when suddenly his expression changed. Lifting up his head, he stared into the distance to see a figure of light flying over before finally landing on top of a small house. This figure revealed the graceful and beautiful silhouette of a girl.

When Mu Chen saw this familiar silhouette, he smiled. So she finally finished with her cultivation...

Chapter 171: Goddess Luo Association

Luo Li gazed at Mu Chen with a faint smile as she appeared on top of the house. After her beautiful eyes examined him, she lit up in pleasant surprise. “You broke through to Spirit Stage Late Phase?”

Mu Chen nodded with a smile and teased. “I really can’t compare to you when it comes to being lost in cultivation.”

Luo Li’s delicate cheeks flushed red as she replied. “I achieved decent results this time cultivating in the Rank 5 Spirit Convergence Array.”

Furrowing her delicate eyebrows slightly, she continued. “But I heard some rumors while I was there that Mo Lun tried to find you and cause trouble in retaliation for getting kicked off the Spirit Ranking. That’s why I hurried back just now.”

Mu Chen shook his head helplessly and then recounted the incident with Mo Lun.

After listening to Mu Chen, a trace of chilliness bubbled up on Luo Li’s beautiful face. Biting her red lips, she looked at Mu Chen and said, “I should’ve anticipated this. If I had just stayed here then this kind of incident wouldn’t have happened.”

“It was nothing. He was just a clown.” Mu Chen casually smiled. He had never taken Mo Lun seriously as an opponent.

“Oh right.”

Mu Chen chuckled after he recalled the conversation with Zhou Ling and the others, and then proceeded to explain the proposal to establish an association with Luo Li.

“An association? This would indeed be a lot of power in Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy and its power will only continue to grow. If you support their plans then I’ll just act accordingly.” Luo Li’s slim jade finger gently swiped away a strand of hair on her forehead and did not give this matter further thought. It was just as Mu Chen had anticipated. She had almost no interest in these kinds of things and only agreed

because he had been the one to tell her.

Mu Chen couldn't help but smile. Just as he was about to speak, he heard the sound of rushing wind coming from close by. Turning to look, he saw Zhou Ling, Ye Qingling, and the others coming directly towards them.

Zhou Ling glanced over and saw a beautiful silhouette on top of the house. His eyes lit up with sudden joy as he made his way to the top of the house together with Ye Qingling.

"Luo Li, you've finally returned!" Zhou Ling happily said to Luo Li.

Luo Li gave a slight smile in acknowledgement but didn't say anything.

"How's everything? Are you finished with your association business?" Mu Chen interjected laughingly.

"Haha. This actually isn't what we came to talk to you about but the groundwork has already been completed. More than 700 students from our freshman area have already expressed an interest in becoming a member. All that's left is to carefully screen and evaluate the talent of these prospects." Zhou Ling said with a smile.

Mu Chen slightly nod and said. "You can do that on your own. I will most likely not get involved since I'll probably just mess things up."

"Just leave the association business to us. You two are our signboard and only need to maintain your reputation at Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. That will be the biggest help." Zhou Ling continued enthusiastically, "When you two occupy the first two spots on the Heavenly Ranking, then our association will become the most formidable student power at Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy!"

"You are really reaching for the sky." Mu Chen was speechless. These people really are quite daring to set their sights on the first two spots of the Heavenly Ranking.

"By the way, what is the name of the association?" Mu Chen suddenly asked.

When Zhou Ling heard this question, he started to chuckle and glanced sideways at Luo Li. “After some discussion, we decided to name the association as the Goddess Luo Association!”

“Goddess Luo Association?”

Not just Mu Chen, Luo Li was also startled after hearing the name. The name made it look as if she personally established the association just to name it after herself.

“Haha. Luo Li is visually stunning. Joining the association would be the same as following a goddess in the eyes of many of the freshmen. Quiet but not cold. Beautiful but not provocative. I dare to say that it won’t take too long before she will become the most popular girl at Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.” Zhou Ling said in high spirits.

“We even have the badges ready.”

Zhou Long fished out an exquisite badge from his bosom. The badge was the color of dark azure and had traces of watermarks. In the center, there was a figure dressed in a black dress, a slender and elegant young girl with long hair as resplendent as the Milky Way. Her glass-like eyes were so clear and penetrating that it caused people to become intoxicated.

The corner of Mu Chen’s mouth was slightly drawn. That looks exactly like Luo Li.

“Senseless.” Li Luo’s evaluation caused Zhou Ling’s smile to suddenly turn stiff and awkward.

Mu Chen gave a slight cough and chided with a serious face, “Luo Li is already charming enough to begin with. Accentuating that further like so will only turn all the students wild and lascivious. Won’t this create a headache for me?”

“Well.” Zhou Ling scratched his head in contemplation and said. “We could also add your image so that people will know that she is already taken. With this, they won’t dare have other thoughts.”

Mu Chen’s eyebrows immediately perked up. His hand forcefully patted Zhou Ling’s shoulders and said in a stern voice. “It is rare to see you come

up with a good idea. I'm proud of you."

Pfff.

On the side, Ye Qingling could not help but laugh out loud. A touch of crimson blush appeared on Luo Li's delicate cheeks while she stared at Mu Chen in anger and embarrassment.

"Good, then let's do it like so. Luo Li won't have any objections?" Zhou Ling smiled as he looked to Luo Li for her consent.

Luo Li snappishly looked at Mu Chen before answering. "Do as you wish."

Zhou Ling became happier after hearing her answer. As expected, getting Mu Chen on their side was key, otherwise, how would Luo Li agree so readily?

"Then it's settled." Zhou Ling looked at Mu Chen and said. "Recently, the Wyvern Association and other communities are stepping up their recruitment of members. After all, Yang Hong's reputation is not low. Not only that, but according to our sources, he has secretly been spreading a rumor that he's sure to obtain first place at the freshman competition to become the number one student among this year's freshman.

After hearing this, Mu Chen smiled and said. "He wants to be first but it won't be that easy."

"Yes if Yang Hong obtains first place, I'm afraid that we will have dark days ahead. Therefore, we will be relying on you to snatch first place away from him." Zhou Ling said with a heavy voice. Yang Hong was aware of the recent establishment of the Goddess Luo Association. Perhaps in his eyes, they had long been recognized as Mu Chen's people. With his temperament, he probably would not treat them favorably if he did gain power.

"Our fight is unavoidable." Mu Chen nodded and said with a weak smile, merely the smile was a little bit cold. He had already wanted to fight with this person for a long time. He understood that Yang Hong was thinking likewise.

These two had been restraining themselves for the freshman competition. All of their past grievances and resentment would finally be settled then.

“Since only the two of you can deal with that person, we will leave him to both of you.”

Zhou Ling laughed. Afterwards, Mu Chen and the others once again talked about the Goddess Luo Association before taking their leave.

Mu Chen looked at two silhouette fading away into the distance and then turned to look towards the north with ice-cold expression in his eyes.

The guidelines for the freshman competition were unclear at the moment, but Yang Hong was not somebody who was easy to deal with and must not be underestimated.” Luo Li whispered. Yang Hong was a peak existence in the Spiritual Road which was enough to show that he’s outstanding. With astonishing talent, his methods will not be weak and is someone who Mu Chen regards as worthy opponent.

“Although I can’t stand the sight of him, I have to admit that his ability is indeed substantial. To underestimate him is to lack good judgement. I won’t do it and he probably won’t either. Even though he’s outwardly contemptuous and scornful of me, I’m certain that he remains vigilant and possibly fearful of me in his heart. This person is similar to a viper; I cannot give him any opportunities that he can take advantage of.” Mu Chen said while stretching his body.

“Besides Yang Hong, that Mu Kui and Bing Qing are also equally difficult to deal with. Mu Kui’s reputation in the Spiritual Road was not inferior to Yang Hong. And that Bing Qing hails from the Ice Spirit Clan of the Great Thousand World, an extremely powerful clan that has existed for a long time. Although Bing Qing did not participate in the Spiritual Road, she is still not the slightest bit weaker than us. They will all be considered favored candidates for the number one spot.” Luo Li said softly.

Mu Chen nodded his head. That Mu Kui and Bing Qing really would not be easy to deal with.

“Other than those two, there is still one more person capable enough to

become the number one freshman." Mu Chen suddenly laughed while looking at Luo Li. Her strength on the surface is at the Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase, but Mu Chen could vaguely sense that Luo Li has concealed a portion of her strength. Of course, she's not the only one. Even Yang Hong, Mu Kui, and Bing Qing all possess hidden strength that they have not revealed yet.

How can it be simple to be at the level of peak existences from the Spiritual Road or people from the Ice Spirit Clan?

"Who?"

Luo Li was stumped at first, but immediately understood after seeing the playfulness in Mu Chen's eyes. Biting her rosy lips, she inhaled deeply and issued a light humph. "In the event that your luck really is so bad that you meet me, I will forfeit."

Mu Chen started laughing. He waved his sleeves and a ball of black light flew out towards Luo Li. Inside the black light were numerous flickering lightning beads releasing a deep thunder sound.

"These are Divine Lightning Beads. They are very good for refining Spiritual Energy.

If you had used these Divine Lightning Beads while you were cultivating earlier in the Rank 5 Spirit Convergence Array, you would have been able to maximize your cultivation efficiency."

Luo Li curiously reached out to grab the ball of black light and saw approximately one hundred Divine Lightning Beads inside. She looked up at Mu Chen in surprise and said. "I heard condensing the Divine Lightning Beads is not easy, but you were able to condense this much in just a few days?"

Mu Chen shrugged his shoulders and did not reveal that Nine Nether Bird was the one that condensed these Divine Lightning Beads.

"Hum."

And this time, a low hum reverberated in his mind. This was naturally the Nine Nether Bird's voice, expressing its dissatisfaction with Mu Chen

for giving away the fruits of its labor.

"Don't be cheap. I'll make it up to you later."

Mu Chen laughed before he comforted the Nine Nether Bird inside his mind. He clenched his hand and the Spiritual Value Card immediately appeared and a screen of light flickered on. On the screen of light was an impressive list of items that could cause people to enter a daze.

Mu Chen's slender fingers swiped across the screen as his eyes constantly scanned the items that appeared. He also needed to make preparations with the freshman competition near at hand. After all, the opponents this time were not simple.

Mu Chen continued to scroll through the list for half the day before he finally came to a stop. Focusing his eyes on the screen and smiling in satisfaction. "That's it."

A dark red, almost indiscernible writing glowed on the screen.

Array of the Great Ifrit. Rank 3 Diagram Array. Selling price: 30,000 Spiritual Value.

Chapter 172: Spar

The benchmark for entering the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy wasn't low. All of the students that managed to enter this top academy were all outstanding existences from their respective homes. However, this excellence of theirs had dimmed by comparison after they reached the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. This is because there were too many brilliant people in this place. In order to shine inside a place where geniuses gathered, it required much more than talent. Perseverance, determination, and effort were all required as well.

Therefore, if anyone managed to stand out within this competitive location, then that person truly possessed the qualifications to become a true powerhouse. Perhaps in the future, his name would resound throughout the vast and endless Great Thousand World and would be remembered for generations.

However, this step was too far away for Mu Chen and the others, who had just recently arrived at the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Right now, their primary goal after entering Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, was to face their first competition since arriving.

It was the so-called Freshmen Competition.

The Freshmen Competition was considered to be the first true competition for countless freshmen. In this competition, the outstanding boys and girls from all over the world would begin to emerge and expose their brilliance. Moreover, the tiny brilliance they emitted would eventually become dazzling within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Even those already established within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy would value the Freshmen Competition greatly. Seniors within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy would also appear, as they wanted to see how strong the freshmen were this year. Also, they wanted to know if any of them would be able to pose a threat to them.

Because of this, it had even happened in the past that some of the

freshmen who stood out within the Freshmen Competition would significantly increase their strength after cultivating for a while. They would even surpass the seniors and become one of the elites within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. At the same time, they would earn a place of their own.

Aside from a few exceptions, the big-shots within the Heavenly Ranking were almost all exceptionally brilliant existences within their Freshmen Competition.

Thus, everyone would want to see just which freshmen would become such a force to be reckoned with in the nearby future of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy...

It was for these reasons that information about the freshmen had spread throughout the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy prior to the Freshmen Competition. Many of the seniors had started paying attention to this year's freshmen.

Due to the seniors being concerned about the freshmen, the information related to the particularly outstanding freshmen had also been known by many seniors. It was evident that Yang Hong, Mu Kui, Bing Qing, Luo Li and the other outstanding students had caught the most attention.

Of course, the most notable individuals were Luo Li and Bing Qing. After all, no matter where you are, beautiful girls would always easily attract attention.

For Luo Li, her appearance and temperament were undoubtedly top-class. Even at such an age, her delicate and exquisite face had already started to show signs of being able to easily attract trouble. It was truly hard to imagine just how attractive she would be when this girl finally blossoms and emitted her charm. In this case, it may perhaps be true that beauty was the root of all trouble.

Although Bing Qing's appearance might not be as exceptional compared to Luo Li's, she had a unique temperament as well. Her icy-blue long hair and slender body were outstanding as well.

It was apparent that these four individuals were highly valued by the

seniors. This is because the freshmen that managed to enter the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy at the Heavenly Fusion Stage were definitely powerful individuals.

It was destined for these individuals to become powerful people within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Aside from these four individuals, Mu Chen's name had also emerged from a few seniors. This is all related to the battle that Mu Chen had that day with Mo Lun.

Although Mo Lun wasn't particularly outstanding among the seniors of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, he still possessed the strength of a Heavenly Fusion Stage. Since Mu Chen managed to defeat him with his Spirit Stage strength; such news had surprised many people.

It was clear that many people had seen him as a dark horse within the Freshmen Competition. However, whether this dark horse would manage to shock the freshmen that stood on the pinnacle such as Yang Hong as the others, it would all depend on the Freshmen Competition...

This year's Freshmen Competition was truly quite interesting.

As the Freshmen Competition approached, the freshmen were doing everything they could to increase their strength. They used all possible means to become slightly stronger before the Freshmen Competition started.

This tense atmosphere enveloped all the freshmen areas. Even within the freshmen area that Mu Chen and the others reside, the cultivating atmosphere was quite rich. People could be seen everywhere sitting cross-legged to cultivate or having spars with others.

At the center of this freshman area, there was a clear lake. However, the lake's surroundings were filled with many figures. Every one of them had widened their eyes as they stared curiously at the lake.

On this sparkling lake, two figures were standing on top of the water. One of them was a boy with a slender figure and under the faint sunlight, his handsome face was filled with gentleness.

Opposite to him, there was a girl in a black dress. Her supple hair flowed down like a waterfall. As for her glass-like eyes, it seemed even clearer than this lake and was quite attractive to others.

These two individuals were naturally Mu Chen and Luo Li. Judging from their appearances, it was evident that they were going to spar. With the upcoming Freshmen Competition, even these two had to urgently increase their strength. Therefore, sparring became a decent method of doing so.

Near the lake, there were many freshmen staring curiously and all of them had the same badge on their chest. On this badge, there was an image of a girl in black dress. Beside this girl, there was a slender boy smiling slightly. His appearance was quite sunny and handsome.

This was the badge of the Goddess Luo Association. It was evident that the people here were all members of the Goddess Luo Association.

"I'll bet that Sister Luo Li will be the victor..."

"Brother Mu isn't someone simple either. It wouldn't be easy for her to win."

"You've never seen Sister Luo Li's true abilities before. I believe that in this year's Freshmen Competition, Sister Luo Li will become the number one freshmen."

Many whispers resounded out near the lake. A few people had eyes filled with expectations. After all, the two individuals in front of them were considered the most outstanding students within the freshmen. Their spar would definitely be quite a sight.

While the countless individuals murmured, and stared at the lake, Mu Chen suddenly narrowed his eyes. A ripple slowly spread out from his feet. At the same time, his body turned into a figure of light as he rushed over towards Luo Li at an extraordinary speed.

"Swish!"

Before he arrived, a sharp golden light of dozens of meters had extended out from two of Mu Chen's fingers. In a split second, it had already appeared in front of Luo Li.

“Bang!”

However, just as this sharp golden light was about to hit Luo Li, the latter smiled slightly and the water in front of her suddenly exploded. A torrent of water rose into the sky. Under her surging Spiritual Energy, this rapid torrent reformed into a shield and protected her.

Puchi.

When the golden light penetrated into the veil of water, it had extended furiously. But just when it was about to break through the veil of water, it froze and dispersed into the air. The Spiritual Energy within the golden light had been forcibly destroyed by the veil of water.

While this sharp golden light was blocked by the veil of water, a figure had approached over like a phantom. This figure’s hand had clenched into a fist as it blasted out a punch without hesitation. Four Limitless Death Seals instantly emerged.

With overbearing power, the Four Limitless Death Seals rushed into the veil of water. The violent and domineering power within it immediately shattered the veil of water and water sprayed everywhere. The overbearing waves of Spiritual Energy impacted and overlapped as they broke through the veil of water and surged over towards Luo Li.

Luo Li watched as the veil of water was destroyed. However, against the violent black Spiritual Energy impact, she merely stretched out her slender hand and rotated slightly. At this moment, an azure Spiritual Energy poured out like a flood from her and quickly formed into a vortex of Spiritual Energy.

Once this high-speed circulating vortex appeared, the nearby Spiritual Aura of the world had rushed in and caused the azure vortex to become clearer. At the same time, a mysterious fluctuation emitted out.

The attack formed by the four overbearing Limitless Death Seals bombarded fiercely against this azure vortex. However, the Spiritual Energy vortex had circulated rapidly and completely diffused the impact from the Limitless Death Seal.

If the Limitless Death Seal was overbearing and domineering, then this azure Spiritual Energy vortex was quite a soft technique. Although it seemed quite fragile, by circulating endlessly, it had completely dispersed the powerful impact formed by the Limitless Death Seals.

It was an extremely brilliant method of using softness to conquer strength.

When Mu Chen saw the diminishing black Spiritual Energy within the azure vortex, his eyes were filled with surprise. Luo Li's techniques were quite peculiar.

And just when Mu Chen was surprised by this technique, the azure Spiritual Energy vortex suddenly paused for a moment, and an abnormally dense Spiritual Energy surged out. The seemingly gentle vortex seemed to expose its true fangs at this moment. Accompanied by a roar of a Sea Beast, this Spiritual Energy had surged over towards Mu Chen's chest.

Mu Chen's eyes instantly flashed. At this moment, dark glow appeared on the surface of his body and a black light tower slowly emerged.

When the Spiritual Energy impact smashed onto the black light tower, a crisp sound rang out. Shockwaves also rippled out from the surface of the illusory light tower.

Explosions erupted out from the lake that the two individuals were fighting. Columns of water rose up into the sky before it poured down like a massive rain. This caused everyone's line of sight to become blurry.

When the raindrops appeared in front of their eyes, Luo Li's body suddenly moved. She gripped her hand tightly and the black longsword appeared in her hand. As she rushed forward, the black longsword seemed to have penetrated through the rain and stopped in front of a person's throat.

The water droplets that filled the sky eventually faded away and everyone had regained their sight.

At this moment, Luo Li chuckled as she stared at Mu Chen, who was in front of her. Her longsword had stopped in front of Mu Chen's chest.

“It seems that it was my victory.” Luo Li smiled as she waved the sword in her hand.

Mu Chen also smiled and lifted his hand up. Then, he slowly opened it. Under Luo Li’s stunned gaze, he revealed a lock of silver-colored hair.

At this moment, bursts of applause broke out near the lake. The two individuals’ battle was extremely quick, yet it was quite dangerous. If it was a true battle, Luo Li’s longsword wouldn’t have stopped. As for Mu Chen, he wouldn’t have just taken out a wisp of long hair from her.

In the audience’s eyes, these two individuals were outstanding to the extent that they ought to worship them. They really wanted to know, when these two finally let go of everything and thoroughly revealed their abilities, just how amazing it would be when they fought?

Fortunately for their curiosity, that day seems to be fast approaching.

Chapter 173: Heavenly Ranking's Rank 2, Li Xuantong

This place was like a fairyland. Within the clear blue skies, white clouds would float around, causing the entire world to seem like it was amidst a faint mist. This mist was extremely strange; it would float downwards, yet it would never disperse. Instead, it would occasionally be swayed by the breeze, and mysterious yet familiar fluctuations emitted outwards from it every so often.

The floating mist was entirely formed from the Spiritual Aura within the world!

In the depths of this fairyland, a gigantic waterfall surged through to the peak of a mountain – like a dragon before it descended straight down. Loud rumbling sounds echoed throughout the skies.

The waterfall was covered with magnificent colors, and a terrifying fluctuation was emitted from it. If one were to sense it carefully, they would discover that this waterfall was actually made of Spiritual Energy!

If this scene was seen by the freshmen within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, they would probably be completely dumbfounded. Just the Spiritual Aura emitted out from this place alone, wasn't something that an ordinary person could endure while cultivating.

Sometimes, it wasn't better to be surrounded by dense Spiritual Aura. In a place like this, ordinary students probably wouldn't be able to stay for long, before their meridians would swell up due to the Spiritual Aura. If they were to continue cultivating, it was highly likely that their bodies would explode from the Spiritual Aura...

This place was naturally one of the deepest parts of one of the ten Rank 7 Spirit Convergence Arrays that the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy possessed.

Beneath the waterfall was a blue boulder that protruded outwards. On top of this blue boulder, skinny figure sat cross-legged quietly. A powerful

attraction force emanated outwards from him, as he absorbed the floating mist formed by Spiritual Aura into his body endlessly.

Faint lights enveloped the surface of his body, causing it to glow faintly like a rainbow. As he sat at this location, he emitted a peculiar feeling. Even though he could be seen with the naked eye, he seemed to have fused with the world, and was completely untouchable.

Only if someone approached him, would they then discover that the skinny figure was dressed in blue clothes, and had long loose hair. The breeze blew his hair, giving him a mysterious feeling of being completely free. His face was particularly handsome, and had decent proportions. This caused him to exude a unique manly charm.

After cultivating for a long period of time, did he suddenly opened his eyes. Within his eyes, a brilliant luster surged. Then, he slowly exhaled out a clump of white air, and immediately blew on it.

All of a sudden, the white air entered into a rampage — as if extraordinary Spiritual Energy had been injected into it. White light erupted out from within, and formed into a blade of light. It flew towards the waterfall and actually cut it apart.

The boy in blue clothes stared calmly at the gradually recovering waterfall, before lifting his head up to face the distant sky. In that location, a beam of light was rapidly approaching. In a few seconds, it formed into a figure that stopped above the blue boulder on which he was located.

“Is there any news about that guy, Shen Cangsheng?” The boy in blue clothes stretched for a moment as he asked.

“He accepted a Heaven Rank mission and ran off again. As far as I know, he’s probably tracking down the Jiuyin Sect. Those sneaky bastards killed a dozen students that were gaining experience in the Northern Heavens Continent.” The boy that came was a boy in black clothes. He shrugged his shoulders as he responded.

“Jiuyin Sect?”

The boy in blue clothes smiled, “Although it’s only a run-down force, it’s

said that their Sect Leader has the strength of a Heavenly Transform Stage, right? Moreover, they're specialized in hiding and sneak attacks. That should be a group mission; since Shen Cangsheng decided to hunt them down by himself, he truly is courageous."

"Are you afraid that he won't be able to resolve it?" The boy in black clothes smiled.

"That guy is a monster. He even managed to suppress me. For this mere Jiuyin Sect, it's impossible for them to turn the tables on him." The boy in blue clothes shook his head and replied.

"During the Freshmen Competition back then, you were only one move away from victory." The boy in black clothes said.

"Sometimes, a tiny difference may mean that there's a wide gap between us."

The boy in blue clothes smiled faintly, "However, I haven't faced him for nearly a year. I've been itching to fight him again. I really want to test how powerful his Divine Judgment Art has become."

"It seems that you've made a breakthrough in your Tianxuan Divine Art." The boy in black clothes replied in surprise.

"It's only a little progress." The boy in blue clothes smiled and asked, "Is there anything interesting that's occurred recently in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy? I've secluded myself for nearly three months... Nothing restless occurred right?

"The Judgment Brotherhood is still as overbearing as ever. It can't be helped. Who told Shen Cangsheng to be within their group? Otherwise, everything has been temporarily peaceful. It seems that everyone has been cultivating in preparation for the Hunting Battle six months from now." The boy in black clothes pursed his lips and replied.

"Although the Judgment Brotherhood is overbearing, they wouldn't dare do anything to our "Xuan Clan". The boy in blue clothes waved his hand and said, "Instead, it's the others that are quite troublesome. That guy, He Yao, has always been attempting to fight against me. Although he's only

Rank 4 on the Heavenly Ranking, if he were to take action, Su Xuan wouldn't be able to stop him. However, it's because he likes her, that he didn't steal her position."

"So that's why he's been targeting you?"

The boy in blue clothes smiled as he nodded his head. He had an exhausted expression as he spoke, "However, that doesn't matter. The people ranked in at the top ten of the Heavenly Ranking aren't weaklings. Every single one of them possesses hidden techniques. However, since I've managed to suppress him for so many years, it won't be easy for him to replace me..."

The boy in black clothes nodded his head as well. Although the other might seem to be exhausted, there was no doubt that he had spoken with confidence and arrogance. After all, the boy in front of him was currently Rank 2 on the current Heavenly Ranking, Li Xuantong.

Within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, there was only that monster that could suppress him.

"Ah, right. This year's freshmen has also arrived in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. The Freshmen Competition is tomorrow as well. It's said that there are a few formidable individuals among this year's freshmen."

"Who are they?" Li Xuantong waved his sleeves and asked casually.

"To be precise, there are five individuals that are rather powerful. Yang Hong, Mu Kui and Mu Chen. The last one is rather peculiar. He managed to defeat Mo Lun, who was close to the Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase, with the strength of a Spirit Stage Late Phase. Right now, he's considered a black horse."

"As for the remaining two, they are both girls, and are quite outstanding. One is Bing Qing from the Ice Spirit Clan, while the other one is a girl called Luo Li."

When these words exited the boy's mouth, he instantly detected that something was wrong. It was apparent that Li Xuantong, who had looked

exhausted, immediately stiffened in front of him. Then, the latter slowly turned his head around and asked hesitantly, “Who?”

The boy in black clothes froze for a moment. Then, he repeated the last two names again. However, when he mentioned Luo Li’s name, he noticed that the boy in front of him opened his mouth slightly.

“Luo Li?” Li Xuantong turned his head: “Ah...How is this possible? Why would she come to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy? What does she look like?”

The boy in black clothes glanced at him strangely, before describing Luo Li’s appearance to him.

“It really is her... I never imagined this.” Li Xuantong smiled and the exhaustion in his face instantly vanished.

“Do you know this Luo Li?” The boy in black clothes asked in surprise. It was the first time that he’d seen the boy in front of him react like this just because he’d heard a girl’s name.

“Ohoho.” Li Xuantong smiled and nodded his head.

The boy in black clothes shrugged helplessly as he spoke, “If you’re interested in her, then I have bad news for you. It seems that she already has someone that she likes. It’s that freshman called Mu Chen. If I remember correctly, they’re currently living together.”

Li Xuantong frowned as he murmured, “How can this be...Ah, no wonder...So the things that I’ve heard before were really true.”

When the boy in black clothes noticed this, he thought for a moment and asked, “Do you need me to teach the freshmen a lesson?”

“If you were to do this, she’d probably get angry.”

Li Xuantong shook his head, and slowly stood up. He soon spoke, “She has a stubborn personality. I don’t want her to get angry at me.”

“This...” The boy in black clothes hesitated for a moment.

“You don’t have to bother with this.” He smiled and his long hair fell down. He looked towards the exit, and fell silent for a moment before

speaking, “Forget it, I’ll meet up with her first. I haven’t seen her for a few years now. I’ll go and see what this is all about...I really dislike hearing this news.”

“A love rival? Could it be that she doesn’t like you, even with your outstanding qualities?” The boy in black clothes couldn’t help but ask.

“Oh... I’ve always treated her as if she was my younger sister.”

Li Xuantong smiled, but once he noticed that the boy in black clothes had curled his lips, he could only reply helplessly, “Although I do like her a bit, she probably dislikes me. However, her situation is rather complicated, eh, but... that Mu Chen really shouldn’t stay beside her.”

After he had spoken, he took a step forward and lights seemed to fluctuate around him. In an instant, he had appeared a kilometer away. Then, another light fluctuation appeared and he’d completely vanished.

When the boy in black clothes witnessed this scene, he could only shrug his shoulders in response. It seemed that he truly cared about this girl called Luo Li. He actually stopped his cultivation temporarily, just to meet her.

Freshmen Area.

Within the plaza, numerous freshmen were gathered. Mu Chen and Luo Li were situated at the center of the plaza, and smiled as they watched the members of the Goddess Luo Association cultivate.

At this moment, Luo Li lifted her hand to sweep away the hair that had fallen in front of her face. However, just when she was about to speak, her eyes suddenly focused, and she lifted her head. She stared outside of the plaza. At that location, there was a figure in blue clothes that slowly approached.

This figure was quite strange. Although she could see him clearly, the other individuals seemed to have completely ignored him. They allowed him to walk through the crowded plaza towards them.

Mu Chen was also aware of this scene. His eyes stared firmly at the figure that approached, and his expression turned serious. From this

person, he felt a dangerous fluctuation.

The boy in blue clothes soon appeared in front of Mu Chen and Luo Li. Then, he smiled faintly at Luo Li and said, “Long time no see, Luo Li.”

After he appeared, the freshmen within the plaza finally noticed the uninvited guest and immediately gathered together. They stared in alarm at the boy in blue clothes.

Luo Li’s glass-like eyes stared at the boy in front of her, and she frowned for a moment. Then she gave a slight nod.

“Li Xuantong, long time no see.”

Chapter 174: off

Li Xuantong.

When the name came out of Luo Li's rosy little mouth, the originally noisy public square instantly became deathly silent. The expression of the surrounding Goddess Luo Association members became stiff before their eyes bulged out in fear and disbelief.

Li Xuantong? Heavenly Ranking's Rank 2 Li Xuantong?

Gasp.

Everyone looked at each other in dismay before fiercely inhaling a mouthful of cold air. He truly is an influential figure among the students of Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, very different from these freshmen who recently arrived. He had stood at the top of countless students for a long time. Many even look at Li Xuantong with reverence and admiration.

This mysterious and elusive personage had unexpectedly appeared before their eyes?

Mu Chen stared attentively at this handsome, long-haired youth in front of him. Although he was startled by his counterpart's identity, his eyes contained no reverence or fear but remained undisturbed.

"You really came to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy." Li Xuantong smiled faintly before his gaze flit across Mu Chen who was by Luo Li's side, an unfathomable expression in his eyes.

Luo Li's head gently nodded and then turned silent, having no intention of carrying on a conversation.

"You still have that temper or yours." Li Xuantong was a little helpless as he smiled. His expression gradually became solemn as he watched Luo Li attentively and chided. "You should not have come here."

"This is my business." Luo Li replied as her fine eyebrows slightly knitted.

When the surrounding people heard their conversation, a look of suspicion appeared on their faces. There seem to be some history between Luo Li and Li Xuantong.

“Is that news true?” Li Xuantong pursed his lips and slowly continued. “I really didn’t expect that you would also have impulsive moments.”

Luo Li remained silent and slightly lowered her eyes, but her sparkling, glass-like eyes were still shining brightly. She had never regretted the things she had done.

“Is it because of him?” Li Xuantong said indifferently as his gaze finally rested on Mu Chen.

Luo Li’s eyes narrowed as she walked forward half a step to stand in front of Mu Chen, but a hand abruptly extended out to hold her tender, lily-white hands. She was slightly dazed when she saw Mu Chen shaking his head and smiling at her.

He is clearly not going to stand behind her in this situation and have her deal with this line of questioning. That’s not something a man can do.

Mu Chen held Luo Li’s lily-white hands and then looked toward Li Xuantong and said. “This Mu Chen greets Senior Li Xuantong.”

Li Xuantong acknowledged Mu Chen but did not speak; however, the students in the public square nevertheless could detect an oppressive aura slowly spread out from Li Xuantong’s body, causing the air flow in the public square to slow down.

Some of the students nearby could not help but step back before the stifling sensation in their heart slightly eased.

Mu Chen’s expression remained calm and his figure remained unmoving. Although Li Xuantong is giving him an oppressive sensation similar to a devastating tornado, he did not retreat back an inch.

That suffocating atmosphere emerged quickly and disappeared just as quick. But when that oppression dissipated, even Zhou Ling and the others felt a cold sweat running down their back and their hearts begin to tremble soon after. Just how strong is Li Xuantong? He did not even move

and yet he had already exhausted their strength and their fighting spirit.

Li Xuantong's eyes suffused with a faint light as he looked at Mu Chen and said. "If you didn't take action just now, I would have lost any interest in talking to you."

"It was my pleasure." Mu Chen gave a noncommittal smile. This Li Xuantong seems like a mischievous person but actually have a penetrating-to-the-bones sense of pride. His abilities also possesses this unyielding quality.

"However," Li Xuantong slowly withdrawn his gaze and continued, "For your own good and also her own good, you had better leave her."

A chill suddenly flit across Luo Li's clear glass-like eyes. She wanted to speak but Mu Chen dissuaded her. He gazed at Li Xuantong, smiled, and said. "This request, I'm afraid that you will have to forgive me for not obliging. You treat me as if I'm chasing something too great for me. I know that it will be very difficult and maybe I will be beaten black and blue, but..."

He held Luo Li's penetratingly ice-cold but exceedingly tender and lovely hands before smiling. "Some things are worth pursuing. Even if this road will be difficult, I will still continue walking."

Li Xuantong creased his brows and slowly said in a cold voice. "You don't have the slightest idea what burden she has to bear. This world has never been fair and that is why she can never be like ordinary girls."

"Her coming to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy should be because of you. Did you know that time is extremely precious to her? So much precious time was squandered because of you. You indulge in the time you spend together with her, but did you even know what kind of price she had to pay in return?"

"Your conduct is what one would consider as selfish and nothing more."

Li Xuantong sneered. "So you do not deserve her."

Mu Chen wrinkled his brows at this time. He could feel the delicate hand in his grasp gradually becoming colder as he asked. "What do you

mean?"

"In order to gain her freedom these past two years, she had to pay a heavy price." Anger and heartache flashed in the depths of Li Xuantong's eyes as he solemnly answered.

Zing!

Before his voice died out, the sharp and clear sound of a sword unsheathing suddenly echoed out. All of the Spiritual Aura in the area seems to frantically fluctuate at this time

An indescribable sword light soared up toward the sky and blossomed into a flower before everyone's eyes. Soon after, Luo Li already appeared in front of Li Xuantong unsheathing a black colored long sword. Right when the sword left the scabbard, the sword point that is reflecting an incandescent sword light halted in front of Li Xuantong. The sword point was still trembling and appeared to even cut apart the empty air.

"Li Xuantong, although we can be considered friends, you are interfering too much in my business. I don't want to fight you so don't force me." An icy aura rushed forth from Luo Li's clear glass-like eyes, her voice penetratingly cold.

Li Xuantong looked at the trembling sword point in front of him but did not move as he stared at the young girl's delicate complexion. This is the first time in all the years he had known her that he had seen her get this angry, and to defend a man no less.

But that man was not him.

An imperceptible darkness swept past Li Xuantong's eyes before he slowly said. "For him, is it worth it? Your situation, you understand what will happen if this continues."

Luo Li looked at Li Xuantong wordlessly as she lightly nodded her charming and delicate chin. A soft look appeared in the depths of her clear glass-like eyes. She did not care if it was worth it or not. She only knows that since he appeared, her previously colorless world had become full of life. What she had once thought was just dull and dry cultivation

had now become a source of hope and anticipation.

She knows that when they are together, she was able to gently laugh.

Mu Chen pursed his lips and walked forward unhurriedly. Placing his fingers upon the sword, he pressed it down while looking over at Li Xuantong. “Senior Li Xuantong, I do not know what kind of compromise she had to make to come here, but when she told me in the Spiritual Road that she wants to stand by my side and even blocked a cold arrow for me, I knew that I will stand by her side in the same way that she will stand by mine, no matter what may come.”

Li Xuantong stared indifferently at Mu Chen, shaking his head and said. “I can’t agree with you right now. What qualifications do you have to stand in front of her and take on her burden? Those things are still too far from you.”

“So I’ll become strong.” An unwavering and persistent smile appeared on the young and handsome face. He may not be strong enough right now, but he believes there will be a day that he will possess the qualification.

“Confidence is a good thing, but the reality is crueler than you think.”

Li Xuantong frowned as he stared at Mu Chen and said. “I won’t change my mind because of your words. In my eyes, you do not deserve her so I will stop you.”

“In that case.” Mu Chen smiled, his black eyes gradually becoming chilly. “Then I will have to defeat you senior, so that you will not casually interfere again. ”

“You are too arrogant.”

Li Xuantong faintly smiled and said. “But like I said, you currently do not have the qualification. If you want to challenge me, at the minimum wait until you are able to become the number one freshman. If you can’t even accomplish this much, you don’t need to challenge me. I can’t afford to lose this person.”

Luo Li’s icy cold eyes stared at Li Xuantong.

“Luo Li, this is a problem between men. At the very least, I have to commend his courage to challenge me. If he didn’t even have courage, I would have directly kick him out of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy even if that will make you angry at me. So this kind of challenge, you don’t have to get involved. If I can’t at least do this much, then how can I protect you?” Li Xuantong said as he looked at Luo Li’s eyes.

Mu Chen pulled Luo Li’s small hands as he stared at Li Xuantong and softly said. “Then I’ll have to ask senior for your patience, I’ll take your position on the Heavenly Ranking.”

Li Xuantong smiled indifferently and wordlessly waved at Luo Li before turning around and slowly walks away.

“I’ll attend the Freshman Competition tomorrow. I hope that your performance will be able to impress me. Luo Li’s insight should not disappoint me. Otherwise, I’m afraid that you will face extremely difficult situations from now on at Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.”

Chapter 175: Freshman Competition

As the following day approached, the freshman area positively boiled over with anticipation. All of the freshmen were eager to get into action as their eyes burned red-hot with passion.

To them, the Northern Heavens World was just a test, however, the Freshmen Competition was where they could truly prove themselves. Only those who distinguished themselves on this stage would be qualified to establish their own legacy at the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

And the Freshman Competition will be especially fierce since it will be the first tournament for the freshmen after arriving at the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy!

The mood was no different in the freshmen area where Mu Chen resided. Approximately one thousand freshmen had converged at the public square wearing a “Goddess Luo Association” badge. Clearly, they were members of the association.

As they stood in the middle of the public square, both Mu Chen and Luo Li could sense a palpable feeling of excitement pervading the world. Embers glowed in the eyes of the former as if it was on the verge of burning.

“Mu Chen. We will be aiming for first place as well, so you better not lose to us! We don’t care if you can’t keep up with us!” Zhou Ling and company laughed loudly and jested. They had also prepared for a long time for today.

Mu Chen smiled and said. “Bring it on.”

“Big Sister Luo Li. Brother Mu is too arrogant. You have to crush his ego and take first place away from him!” Several freshmen jeered mischievously, attracting others who echoed their sentiment. Clearly, Luo Li’s opinion is paramount in the Goddess Luo Association.

Luo Li looked at the scene in front of her as a very faint smile appeared on her delicate and charming face. Her beautiful eyes glanced at Mu Chen

and she quipped. “You have to be careful.”

Mu Chen couldn’t help but smile upon seeing this and replied. “In that case, don’t blame me for being impolite.”

Gales of laughter erupted in the public square. The people present knew the relationship between Mu Chen and Luo Li. The usually quiet and demure Luo Li will only show that beautiful smile that would cause one’s heartbeat to quicken in front of Mu Chen.

“Good. If all of you are ready then let’s set off, follow me.” A beam of light came towards them, Teacher Mu Ling appeared in mid-air, looking down at the many students with a charming smile.

“Let’s go!”

Mu Chen took the initiative to charge out as he waved his hands signaling the others to follow. Figures in all direction immediately rushed forward under Mu Ling’s lead, blotting out the sky and covering the earth as they rushed forth, through the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, to the northwest.

A similar scene was being played out at the same time in the other freshmen areas as multitudes of students moved out like a locust swarm, casting a huge shadow across the land.

This was a sight to behold.

Many seniors were also on the move elsewhere in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. The academy attached considerable importance to the Freshman Competition since the individuals who stand out in this tournament will inevitably become important figures within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Therefore, these seniors wanted to use this opportunity to identify freshmen that could threaten them in the future.

Mu Chen and the rest continued to follow Mu Ling westward for more than ten minutes before slowing down. Then, they stopped under a large shadow.

Mu Chen and the others were currently staring ahead at an enormous mountain range. One mountain in particular stood at ten thousand zhang

in height and towered above the rest. At a glance, this colossal mountain had even obscured the sky.

The air looked slightly hazy in the skies above this mountain, vaguely forming into a thunderstorm as waves of astonishing Spiritual Energy fluctuations propagated out.

Located inside these mountains was a vast open field that is currently filling up with figures. All of the freshmen had been gathered here, leading to their chatter clamoring until it resounded into the skies.

Swish!

A beam of light slowly approached from the distant sky when the last of the freshmen had arrived, but the slow looking beam appeared in the sky overhead only a moment later, as if it had teleported.

The light dissipated to reveal three figures; the two to the sides were elderly men dressed in green gowns, with white beards, solemn expressions, and mysterious eyes that seem to flicker with lightning.

A figure in a white gown was standing between these two elders. His appearance was peculiar; he had a head full of white hair yet he had a handsome and youthful face. His skin was fair, his bearing did not befit that of the elderly, and his beaming smile gave people an exceedingly good-natured impression.

Mu Chen and the others simultaneously turned to look at the three imposing figures suspended in midair. They were able to sense that the appearance of the three men had caused all the Spiritual Aura in the world to continuously rush toward them as if they had control of all the Spiritual Aura in the area.

“These three are elders of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. The one standing in the middle is particularly distinguished; he is ranked as one of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy’s Heaven Class Elders.” Mu Ling explained to Mu Chen and company as she gazed respectfully at the three in the sky.

“Heaven Class Elder.” Mu Chen and the others were stunned when they

heard this. They have now gained a better understanding of the academy. For example, the Elders' positions are divided into Heaven Class Elders and Earth Class Elders. Heaven Class Elders are rarely seen at the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy so the students did not expect that the youthful-looking, white-gowned man to be one.

"Haha, it seems that this Freshman Competition is livelier than ever."

In the sky, the youthful-faced man in the white gown beamed at the endless sea of students on the field below. When he waved his sleeves, the deafening clamor around the field immediately quieted down.

"New kids. This old man is Zhu Tian. I'm here to welcome you all as new members of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. I will be in charge of this year's Freshman Competition." The white gowned man said smilingly. His appearance did not change as he stared at the freshmen above and below. However, this old man, whose head was filled with white hair, felt particularly strange to the them.

But they did not dare to laugh when faced with this strange feeling. This is because even a fool can tell that the person before their eyes held frightening ability and status.

"Oh yes. This Freshman Competition will be slightly different; it will no longer be simple arena matches."

Zhu Tian pointed his finger toward the towering mountain in the stood out in the center of the mountain range behind him and laughed. "The Freshman Competition this time around is very straightforward. There is a Spiritual Flag at the peak of the Northern Spirit Mountain. Whoever gets to the summit the mountain first and captures the Spiritual Flag will become the champion of the Freshman Competition."

Sounds of shock and astonishment immediately were heard around the field; was it really that simple?

"Of course, there are a lot of Spiritual Beasts in the mountains and even Heaven Ranked Spiritual Beasts on the Northern Spirit Mountain." Zhu Tian continued smilingly.

“Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts?” Many freshmen stared blankly before bitterly sighing. This Freshman Competition really is not that simple.

For the first five students to reach the summit of the mountain: first place will be rewarded 500,000 Spiritual Value points, second place will be rewarded 400,000 points, and so on.” Zhu Tian beamed and said. “Of course, the most important point is that the top five will gain permission to enter into the Spiritual Arts Temple, where you may even be able to obtain the Deity Tier Spiritual Arts, if you are lucky.”

“Deity Tier Spiritual Arts?”

The countless freshmen inadvertently inhaled in a breath of cold air before a fire ignited in their eyes. A Deity Tier Spiritual Art is worth countless incredibly strong treasures and possessed a fatal attraction to many of the students.

“That’s quite generous of them.”

Mu Chen involuntarily smacked his lips. Deity Tier Spiritual Art. His heartbeat quickened as he turned his gaze toward the peak that towered over the layers and layers of mountains. But he suddenly wrinkled his brows. He didn’t know why but he had a feeling that the situation was not as simple as it seemed.

“Oh. I think this is obvious so I won’t elaborate. There will not be many rules—everything will be fair game.” Zhu Tian smiled before waving his sleeves; a sharp and crisp ring resonated throughout the heavens and earth.

“I announce the start of this year’s Freshmen Competition!”

Rumble!

When Zhu Tian’s jocular voice reverberated through the world, the field instantly began to quake as countless pillars of Spiritual Energy soared up into the sky. Many students moved out like a plague of locusts and directly surged towards the endless mountains.

At this moment, the entire world seemed to tremble.

Standing up in the sky, Zhu Tian couldn't help but smile when he witnessed this tumultuous scene; but the corners of his mouth lifted in a somewhat playful smirk.

"What about that powerful guy at the peak of the Northern Spiritual Mountain? You did not warn them about him." The two old men behind Zhu Tian informed.

Eh?" Zhu Tian appeared to be stumped for words before he hit his head in annoyance and replied. "How could I forget? It's regrettable but youngsters always need a little motivation to arouse their potential.

The two white-haired elders glanced at each other and shook their heads helplessly. This person is intentionally making things difficult for the freshmen this time.

As the masses of freshmen surged into the mountain range, a figure flashed in the distance as he swept out in the northern sky. Li Xuantong held his hands behind his back as his expressionless eyes were looking in that direction.

If that person called Mu Chen can't even compete with these freshmen, then Luo Li will need to break up with him. He will have no choice but to show himself out.

Chapter 176: Northern Spirit Mountain

At this moment, the originally peaceful mountain seemed as if it had been attacked by an earthquake. Both the mountain and the earth were trembling. Moreover, the roars of countless Spiritual Beasts resounded from within the mountain.

At the border of the mountains, a dense mass of humans was entering like a pack of ants as they rushed overwhelmingly into the vast mountain range that is covered in towering trees.

But when the mass of humans entered the mountain range, angry roars burst out from within the mountains as the ground split open and numerous Spiritual Beasts lunged out to begin their assault on the humans. From the distance, packs of vicious Spiritual Beasts flapped their wings in the skies as they attempted to banish the sudden intruders.

However, their attempts were futile as the sea of people collided with the approaching Spiritual Beasts. Violent Spiritual Energy surged out and lit up the sky in bright colors.

Sounds of angry roars and fighting resounded together as a steady stream of Spiritual Beasts descended from the mountains. The freshmen had gradually slowed down and was split into numerous groups as they advanced toward the deepest mountain which symbolized glory for them.

The group with Mu Chen and the others had quickly split apart as well. However, a dozen members of the Goddess Luo Association and Luo Li had managed to remain together with Mu Chen. With Mu Chen and Luo Li leading the group, their pace of advance was quite fast and the dozen Goddess Luo Association's members closely followed as they fought off the Spiritual Beasts approaching from the sides.

At this moment, Mu Chen had two fingers straighten up and a golden glow emitted from them. It formed a golden spear and would pierce through the approaching Spiritual Beasts whenever it was fired off.

Mu Chen's gaze swept out in all directions as he quickly cleared away the fearless Spiritual Beasts. At that moment, there were a few groups

which had also advanced at an extraordinary speed. It was evident that the ones leading these groups were considerably powerful.

"Let's speed up."

Mu Chen lifted his head and stared at the towering mountain in the depths of the mountain range. That mountain extended into the clouds and the peak could not be seen from below. Anyone who managed to reach that place would be able to come out on top.

Mu Chen exhaled gently as he looked towards Luo Li. He let out a quiet battle cry before allowing the Spiritual Energy within his body to explode outwards. The golden light emitting from his two fingers seemed to have turned into two divine spears as they forcibly tore apart the stream of Spiritual Beasts

In response, Luo Li also nodded her head. Her slender hand tightly gripped her black longsword. However, the longsword did not exit its scabbard; instead, a black sword beam swept out. This beam was simply unstoppable. Each time the sword beam flashed by, a Spiritual Beast would be cut into two pieces. Moreover, the wounds were cut so sharply that they were as smooth as a mirror. This sharpness had even slightly shocked Mu Chen.

With their accelerated pace, they had quickly reached the depths of the mountain range. However, the Spiritual Beasts that appeared had also become more and more powerful. Every single Spiritual Beast that appeared would have at least reached the Spirit Stage.

Against these Spiritual Beasts, Mu Chen and Luo Li still managed to remain the same pace. However, the members of the Goddess Luo Association, who were behind them, were gradually unable to keep up and had slowed down.

"Brother Mu, Sister Luo Li. You two should go ahead and attempt to take the Spirit Flag. This will make our Goddess Luo Association become a bit more famous!" Seeing that they could not keep up with Mu Chen and Luo Li, the members of the Goddess Luo Association shouted out and slowed down their pace.

“Okay!”

Mu Chen smiled and waved towards them. Then, he exchanged gazes with Luo Li before the two of them turned into figures of light as they surged forward. At this moment, both of them had pushed their Spiritual Energy to their limits. Dense Spiritual Energy swept out and forcibly blasted away the Spiritual Beasts that lunged towards them. Using this gap, they had passed through the pack of Spiritual Beasts at lightning speed.

Swish!

Just when Mu Chen and Luo Li began to reveal their true power, dense Spiritual Energy fluctuations suddenly erupted from the other directions. Several figures separated from their forces and rushed forth by themselves towards the towering mountain.

At this moment, the ones that dared to leave their groups were all powerful. Among the freshmen, they were considered to be the best of the best. Therefore, they were the main force that would rush towards the towering mountain in the depths of the mountain range.

Seeing this, Mu Chen and Luo Li no longer held back their strength. They began to reveal their powerful techniques and forcibly cut a path through the Spiritual Beasts. Although the Spiritual Beasts had pressured them slightly, they did not manage to slow down their pace.

Thus, ten minutes later, Mu Chen and Luo Li had eventually reached the bottom of the Northern Spirit Mountain. As they approached, they were able to feel how majestic this mountain was. They felt that they were like ants standing at the base of the mountain. Even if they raised their heads and looked up, they weren’t able to see the peak of this mountain. Furthermore, they detected an extraordinary Spiritual Energy fluctuation from within this massive mountain.

It was evident that these Spiritual Beasts were the true obstacles for them.

As Mu Chen punched out, surging Spiritual Energy had erupted out and blown away a massive Spiritual Beast. Just when Mu Chen and Luo Li

entered the mountain, Mu Chen's expression changed and he stared to their right. At that location, a dozen individuals rushed over. It was evident that these individuals weren't friendly.

On these people's chests, there was a badge with a wyvern entrenched in it.

Apparently, these individuals were members of the Wyvern Association.

"They were sent by Yang Hong to stop us."

Luo Li's gentle voice rang out. It was clear that she also detected these individuals as well.

"Stay right here!"

When these individuals from the Wyvern Association noticed that Mu Chen and Luo Li had already discovered them, the one leading this group had shouted. He rushed out as dense Spiritual Energy gushed out from his body. From the surging Spiritual Energy, it was clear that he had already reached the Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase. However, his Spiritual Energy was quite unstable, and it was evident that he had only recently advanced due to external forces.

At the same time, the people behind him had also activated their Spiritual Energy. Every single one of these individuals possessed the strength of a Quasi-Heavenly Fusion Stage.

This formation was quite powerful. It seemed that Yang Hong had used the elites of his Wyvern Association to delay the two of them.

In this area, there were still other individuals. However, they did not take any actions once they noticed this scene. After all, this was a battle between the Wyvern Association and the Goddess Luo Association. There was no need for them to intervene. Instead, they could take advantage of the interference to speed up their pace.

"Leave that guy to me. Let's end this quickly."

A hint of coldness flashed through Mu Chen's eyes. He pushed off from the ground and turned into a beam of light as he lunged straight towards

the approaching figure.

Just when Mu Chen rushed over, Luo Li had also slowly clenched her black longsword as she made her way towards the dozen Wyvern Association's elite.

"Mu Chen. It's not your turn to obtain the title of the Number One Freshmen!"

The one facing Mu Chen sneered. This boy was also someone who was at the pinnacle of the Spiritual Road. He, too, was assessed as King-Class. Regarding the level of excellence he showed, he had even surpassed Zhou Ling and the others. Since he was quite close with Yang Hong, he naturally did not like Mu Chen.

"Destructive Spirit Fist!"

This person had a prideful tone as he spoke. However, he could back it up as he wasn't weak at all. As he stood in midair, he unleashed a punch and dense Spiritual Energy surged out. A powerful wind was formed with killing intent from this punch as it bombarded towards Mu Chen.

Against this powerful offensive, Mu Chen's eyes remained calm. He clenched his hands tightly and blasted out a punch as well. Four Limitless Death Seals were quickly condensed and formed into a beam of black light as it collided against the opposing attack.

At the same time, the Four Limitless Death Seals exploded and the Spiritual Energy shockwave released from each seal overlapped with each other as they released a powerful destructive energy.

Just when these two attacks collided with each other, the Spiritual Energy formed by the Limitless Death Seal had tore apart the opposing attack in an instant. Then, under this boy's pale expression, it had smashed fiercely against his body.

Puchi.

The boy spat out a mouthful of fresh blood when he was hit and was sent back awkwardly. His face was completely pale and had eyes of disbelief. Although he knew that Mu Chen was powerful, he never

imagined that he would be instantly defeated with just one attack.

"Even Yang Hong isn't qualified to stop me. Just who do you think you are?"

Mu Chen's eyes were cold as he stared at the boy in the yellow robe and let out a cold laugh. Then, without wasting any time, he rushed towards the towering mountain.

On the other side, Luo Li had also stopped her attack. The Wyvern Association's elites were all lying down on the ground awkwardly beneath her. At this moment, blood leaked out from their mouth as they stared at Luo Li's beauty with fear.

These dozen individuals were all half-a-step away from the Heavenly Fusion Stage. However, even if they had such strength, they did not even manage to delay Luo Li a single bit. The latter's strength was far beyond them.

When the other individuals nearby witnessed this vicious two-man group's abilities, they were secretly shocked. In order to stop these two individuals, it would require Yang Hong, Mu Kui and Bing Qing to join forces.

However, Mu Chen did not care about the individuals that attempted to stop them. Instead, he charged directly towards the towering Northern Spirit Mountain. As he stared at the mountain, a cold chill flashed through his eyes.

Yang Hong, do you truly believe that you would be able to stop me like this?

I still remember clearly what you've done during the Spiritual Road. Since I can't find Ji Xuan right now, I'll start my revenge on you first...

As Mu Chen and Luo Li entered the Northern Spirit Mountain, a dozen figures of light had also rushed in from various directions. From the North, Yang Hong had an indifferent expression as he stared in another direction with a cold expression.

Mu Chen, I, Yang Hong, am taking the title of the Number One

Freshmen. I will make you understand that you're not qualified to even struggle in front of me!

Chapter 177: Reaching the Summit

At this moment, two figures were dashing through the towering Northern Spirit Mountain one after another. Powerful Spiritual Energy was emitted out towards their surroundings as if they were prepared to deal with any unexpected events.

Behind the two of them, there were a few individuals following them from a distance. However, they were still separated from each other by quite a bit. After all, everybody was regarded as competitors right now. Unless they had a relationship like Mu Chen and Luo Li, they would remain vigilant and alert against the other individuals.

Although the numbers of Spiritual Beasts hiding in ambush had decreased since they'd entered the Northern Spirit Mountain, every single one of these Spiritual Beasts was incredibly powerful. Even the weakest Spiritual Beast was able to contend against a Spirit Stage Late Phase powerhouse. Since they would come at them in swarms, it would take some time for Mu Chen and the others to deal with them.

All of a sudden, a sharp sound resounded from above them. At this moment, the vast forest seemed to have been split open, and numerous large bird-type Spiritual Beasts descended from above. Their metal-like claws tore through the air as they rushed down fiercely towards Mu Chen and Luo Li.

In response, Luo Li gently jumped off a tree branch, and her slender figure charged forth towards the Spiritual Beasts. Her slender hand grasped onto the black longsword and swept it through the air. A black sword beam was unleashed and it passed through three bird-type Spiritual Beasts that could each individually deal with a Spirit Stage Late Phase powerhouse.

As the black sword beam passed through the three bird-type Spiritual Beasts, the three Spiritual Beasts issued out a strange cry, before they were cut in half. Fresh blood rained down onto the ground, accompanied by their organs.

Luo Li's attack was straightforward and powerful. She wasn't delayed at all, even when she had to deal with this obstacle. In an instant, she'd managed to catch up with Mu Chen, who was in front of her.

"We've approached the middle of the mountain. If we continue further on, it'll be within the range of the peak of the mountain." Mu Chen lifted his head and stared above. His eyes had turned slightly serious. After all, it would be truly troublesome once they'd reached the peak of the mountain. There would be Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts at that location. Moreover, they didn't know the quantity and rank of the Spiritual Beasts. If a powerful one appeared, it'd be difficult for even a person with Heavenly Fusion Stage strength to pass through.

"Be careful." Luo Li spoke softly. She had also detected that there were dangerous fluctuations being emitted from the top of the mountain.

Mu Chen nodded his head. All of a sudden, a roar resounded out directly in front of them. This roar contained a violent Spiritual Energy fluctuation. Moreover, this fluctuation had forcibly shattered a few of the trees once it emerged.

Mu Chen and Luo Li's eyes focused instantly at this moment. To be able to have such an imposing manner, it must be a Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast.

"Ah!"

Once this extraordinary roar rang out, a few screams also resounded out. Mu Chen and Luo Li hurriedly rushed over. Then, they noticed that a deep-yellow giant python was occupying this area. Numerous stone engravings covered the giant python's body, causing it to seem to be made out of boulders. Its hideous mouth revealed numerous jagged teeth, as saliva slowly dripped down. Once the saliva touched the ground, it encroached upon and formed a hole on the ground.

At this moment, there were a dozen individuals retreating from the surroundings of this giant python. All of them had pale expressions. It was evident that they were gravely injured.

When Mu Chen and Luo Li noticed this giant python, their eyes turned

serious as they quickly identified it.

Mountain Devouring Python —a Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast which was ranked 86th on the Myriad Beast Record's Earth Ranking.

An adult Mountain Devouring Python wasn't something that a Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase powerhouse could deal with. However, Mu Chen and Luo Li were slightly relieved once they've noticed that this Mountain Devouring Python was only at the Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase. However, even if it was at the Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase, its power couldn't compare with the Wyvern Association's men from earlier.

"Hiss!"

The ravaging Mountain Devouring Python suddenly stopped moving with the emergence of Mu Chen and Luo Li. Its savage triangular pupil stared at these two individuals as it hissed. It was evident that it could detect a dangerous fluctuation being emitted from both Mu Chen and Luo Li.

This Mountain Devouring Python had sealed off the path towards the summit of the mountain. If they didn't take care of it, it was clearly impossible for them to pass through.

"I'll do it." Mu Chen chuckled. Then, his body rushed forward as dark-black Spiritual Energy surged out from his body. A powerful imposing manner was emitted out from him.

"Boom!"

When the Mountain Devouring Python noticed Mu Chen approaching, it swept its hugged tail fiercely and shattered the ground. Then, it pulled out a massive boulder and threw it towards Mu Chen.

Mu Chen's eyes remained calm as he blasted out a punch. Rumbling Spiritual Energy rushed out from his fist and smashed the giant boulder into powder. Right now, time was quite precious, so he didn't want to be delayed here by the Mountain Devouring Python.

"Vajra Pagoda!"

Mu Chen smacked out with his palm. Dark-black Spiritual Energy rushed out as if it was smoke, and a gigantic golden palm was formed. Within this palm, a dark towering engraving loomed, and a mysterious fluctuation was emitted.

Once this gigantic golden palm was formed, it rushed through the sky and attempted to suppress the Mountain Devouring Python. At this instant, the latter had also cried out fiercely. The scales on its body stood up, and a deep-yellow beam gathered in its mouth. The deep-yellow beam was quickly unleashed as it charged aggressively towards the approaching gigantic golden palm.

The two attacks collided fiercely in mid-air, and the Spiritual Energy impact from it completely razed the forest to the ground, and countless trees were uprooted. These attacks were quite amazing.

However, the Mountain Devouring Python's attack didn't manage to gain results. On the gigantic golden palm, the black tower engraving slowly crawled forward and completely suppressed the deep-yellow beam. Therefore, the yellow beam was quickly dispersed.

Bang Bang Bang!

Once the gigantic golden palm shattered the powerful Spiritual Energy beam, it descended and slammed down fiercely on the Mountain Devouring Python's body.

In this instant, the earth seemed to tremble violently. At the same time, the Mountain Devouring Python cried out painfully. The scales on its massive body had shattered, and fresh blood flowed out. However, A Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast's life force was quite tenacious — even if had suffered a severe blow from Mu Chen, it remained quite brutal and vicious. In retaliation, its massive tail swept through the air as it attempted to whack Mu Chen with it.

Mu Chen's body flickered for a moment and after images emerged. His body was like a phantom as he appeared behind the Mountain Devouring Python. A golden glow was emitted from two of his fingers, as a spear was shot through the sky. This spear had landed at the location where the

Mountain Devouring Python's scales were shattered.

Chi Chi!

Under the sharp golden light, the Mountain Devouring Python suddenly wailed out. Fresh blood sprayed out from his body as it struggled in pain. It attempted to bite and swallow Mu Chen, yet it was avoided by the latter swiftly.

At this moment, the dozen individuals stared at Mu Chen who was dealing with the Mountain Devouring Python. They were all shocked. Just earlier, they had joined forces, yet they had failed to defeat the Mountain Devouring Python. They could never have imagined that Mu Chen would be able to defeat it this easily.

Finally, the Mountain Devouring Python's struggle had slowed down. This was the moment that Mu Chen was waiting for. A golden light was unleashed from two of his fingers, as it pierced through the Mountain Devouring Python's head.

In that instant, the Mountain Devouring Python's struggling stopped completely. Its massive body crashed down to the ground. Seeing this, Mu Chen charged forward and extracted a deep-yellow light from the head of the Mountain Devouring Python. Within this light, a mini-sized Mountain Devouring Python was struggling fiercely. It was the Soul Essence of the Mountain Devouring Python.

Mu Chen reflexively placed the Mountain Devouring Python within his Mustard Seed Bracelet and was about to leave. However, he suddenly felt a chill, and his eyes moved quickly. He noticed that a black light had swept out quickly from the shadows. It was a black claw that could easily tear through metal, and it was charging towards Mu Chen's back at an alarming speed.

This sudden attack caused Mu Chen's heart to jump. However, just when he was about to put up a Spiritual Energy defence, a black sword beam tore through the air and hacked fiercely against the black light.

A metal sound rang out, and the sword beam dissipated away. However, the black light was also blown away. As it landed on the ground, a dark-

black Spirit Leopard was revealed. This black leopard's body didn't have any hair, and looked like it was made of black metal. Compared to a regular leopard, a pair of black wings was also upon its back. From its appearance, it seemed like a spectre within the darkness.

A slender figure quickly approached from Mu Chen's rear, as she charged straight towards the black leopard. Her speed was extremely quick and, in an instant, she had appeared in front of the leopard. Then, everybody was able to see that her slender hand was holding onto a black sword hilt.

As this slender figure passed by the black leopard, a crisp sound resounded out once a black light emerged.

When Luo Li appeared behind the black leopard, her slender fingers gently moved and quickly sheathed her sword. As for the black leopard, it shook for a moment, before it fell onto the ground. Its body had been divided cleanly into two halves.

From afar, the dozen individuals that had witnessed this scene all inhaled a mouthful of cold air. The black spirit leopard wasn't an ordinary Spiritual Beast. It was a Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast, known as the Spectre Leopard, and was in no way inferior to the Mountain Devouring Python. It was a Spiritual Beast known for its speed, and it specialized in sneak attacks. Even a Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouse would die in its claws if they weren't careful. However, they couldn't imagine that it was instantly killed by Luo Li.

At this moment, Luo Li also extracted out the Soul Essence of the Spectre Leopard. Then, her beautiful eyes smiled as she looked towards Mu Chen.

"Not bad."

Mu Chen raised his thumb up as he smiled. He was indeed careless just now. Since this place was already approaching the peak of the mountain, there were countless Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts. These Spiritual Beasts were all quite cunning. It would be a fatal mistake if he was careless.

"Let's go."

Mu Chen beckoned Luo Li with his hand, and didn't intend to stay in this place. However, an outbreak of furious roars resounded throughout the Northern Spirit Mountain. Violent Spiritual Energy was contained within these roars. Based on this, it was clear that the roars were all from Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts.

Others were also beginning to meet with Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts.

Once they heard these roars, Mu Chen and Luo Li's eyes gradually turned serious. The amount of Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts within this place was far beyond their expectations.

"Be careful."

Mu Chen exchanged gazes with Luo Li and reminded her. Then, they didn't remain at this location any longer. Under many envious and awestruck gazes, the two of them turned into figures of light as they rushed straight towards the peak of the towering mountain.

Just when Mu Chen and Luo Li rushed towards the peak of the mountain, Yang Hong, Mu Kui, and Bing Qing had also started going up quickly as well. As they rushed up, a trail of Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast carcasses was formed...

Chapter 178: Stone Platform

Roar! Roar!

The angry roars of countless Spiritual Beasts echoed throughout the vast mountain range, causing the forests to tremble. Numerous individuals clashed together with Spiritual Beasts within this vast wilderness, and astonishing battles occurred.

And on the peak of the nearby mountains, a few figures observed the many skirmishes that had broken out down below. After a while, some of the gazes shifted toward the majestic mountain at the center of the mountain range.

Exceptionally powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuations swept out at this time from the mountain. It appeared that several of the more talented new students had already reached the Northern Spirit Mountain, and were charging up towards its peak, which was hidden in the clouds.

It was clear that the one who could take the lead and charge up to the summit, which represented glory to them, might possibly seize first place, and become the number one student in the freshmen class.

At this moment, Zhu Tian and the other two elders stood high up in the sky. Zhu Tian was beaming as he observed the lofty mountain; his eyes imperceptibly cast a glance at the summit before the corner of his mouth curled up slightly more.

“These kids were a lot faster than what I’d imagined, but things will become interesting once they approach the finale. It’s troublesome even for this old man to put that big guy in check.”

Swish! Swish!

Down below, Mu Chen and Luo Li swiftly made their way through the forest. Dense Spiritual Energy enveloped their bodies, and vigilance and seriousness filled their eyes. They are already very near the summit; almost all of the Spiritual Beasts in this area are Heaven Rank, but fortunately they merely possess the strength of the Heavenly Fusion Stage

Initial Phase. Otherwise, it would be extremely troubling for them...

"Hmmm?"

Mu Chen suddenly narrowed his eyes as they were dashing through the forest and suddenly fired out a punch suffused with Spiritual Energy, directly attacking the ground beneath his feet.

Boom!

A massive crack propagated from where Mu Chen's explosive fist had landed, causing a sharp cry to echo out where the earth had ruptured. A giant beast with savage light in his eyes and covered in sharp scale armor quickly crawled out.

"Earthly Demon Beast?" Mu Chen creased his brows when he saw this giant, grotesque beast covered in black scales; yet another Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast of the Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase.

Just as Mu Chen was planning to quickly dispose of this Earthly Demon Beast, Luo Li suddenly pulled on his sleeve, her delicate little face somewhat solemn as she pointed at a spot not too far away.

Mu Chen's gaze followed where she pointed just as the ground split apart and five more Earthly Demon Beasts climbed out, their berserk Spiritual Energy flooding the forest.

Six Earthly Demon Beasts?

Even Mu Chen's felt numb when he saw this scene; he promptly gave Luo Li a knowing glance before the two simultaneously ran away as fast as they could. Even though the six Earthly Demon Beasts only have the strength of Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase, Mu Chen and Luo Li would have to pay a price if they had engaged in a fight. Also, stalling here would've wasted quite a bit of time.

Therefore, escaping was the most sensible option in this situation.

Roar!

The six Earthly Demon Beasts saw the two humans attempt to escape and issued out ferocious roars before chasing after them with startling

speed. Each step caused the earth to quake and the mountains to tremble.

Mu Chen and Luo Li saw the beasts' relentless pursuit and did not dare to dally, increasing their speed to the utmost and made a beeline toward the summit.

Pressing on at such high speed, it did not even take ten minutes before the thick, lush forest gave way to an open clearing where an incomparably massive platform was seen farther ahead. A trail leading up to the summit was seen just past this platform.

But just when the two of them rushed out of the forest, they heard angry roars coming from another direction. As they turned to look, their expressions became frozen stiff.

In that direction, no small number of massive Spiritual Beasts with astonishing Spiritual Energy had simultaneously burst onto the clearing. In front of them, several figures were fleeing in disarray.

They were headed the same direction as Mu Chen and Luo Li—straight towards the massive stone platform that led to the summit.

When Mu Chen caught sight of the more than thirty Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts, the corner of his mouth cannot help but pull into a wry smile. This Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy is too vicious; to unleash so many Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts here, how could you defeat all of them?

"Hurry!"

Mu Chen cried out as he accelerated, dashing towards the massive stone platform. If he was caught by the Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts at this moment, he feared that the outcome would be disastrous.

Luo Li gently nodded. Unless one has entered the Heavenly Transformation Stage, no one can escape after being surrounded by more than thirty Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts.

The Freshman Competition organized by the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was obviously not fun and games, but a true test of these top freshmen's capabilities.

Mu Chen and Luo Li swiftly dashed towards the distant platform. At the same time, the other party being chased was also charging towards the same direction, and they were finally able to see each other clearly.

With a glance, Mu Chen recognized the others as Yang Hong, Mu Kui, Bing Qing, and a few other students. They had also decided to take evasive action when they encountered the many Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts.

But it seemed that everyone adopting the same strategy had inadvertently led so many Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts to come together.

At the same time that Mu Chen and the other party saw each other, countless spectators were watching them attentively on the surrounding mountain peaks. Their eyes lit up when they finally saw action at the massive stone platform, but their expressions slightly changed when they saw the trail of Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts.

“Why are there so many Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts?”

“These freshmen are really unlucky. This Freshman Competition is much more difficult compared to the past. It’s impossible to force their way through so many Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts.”

“Yes. Not only do they have to guard against the Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts, they still need to be vigilant of other freshmen.”

“Haha, this year’s competition is such quality entertainment, isn’t it more amusing like this?”

“...”

The gallery of people observing the situation on the summit suddenly broke out into whispers. A growing interest can be seen on their faces at this time.

The action at the summit obviously caught more of their attention compared with the struggles of the average freshmen below.

Li Xuantong stood with his hands behind his back at the side of a cliff, coldly watching the summit; his sharp gaze concentrated on Mu Chen and Luo Li. He knew that ir was almost time for the real trial of this Freshmen

Competition.

Under the attentive gaze of countless eyes, ten figures were seen barely keeping their distance from the horde of Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts as they neared the platform.

“Hey, Mu Chen!” A gasping voice was heard not far from Mu Chen. He looked only to see Zhou Ling had unexpectedly also arrived here. His face was a little pale, evidence that he hadn’t had it easy evading his pursuers.

Mu Chen nodded at him and felt a little surprised in his heart. The Spiritual Energy propagating out from Zhou Ling’s body indicate that he had reached Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase, but the unstable aura revealed that he had only recently broken through.

But Zhou Ling had been half-a-step away from the Heavenly Fusion Stage for a long time and had been bitterly cultivating for more than a month at Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy; it came as no real surprise for him to have this kind of breakthrough.

“Let’s reach the stone platform first.”

Mu Chen made a hand gesture before pulling Luo Li quickly toward the enormous stone platform with the Spiritual Beasts almost upon them.

But when Mu Chen was about to make his move, a silhouette rushed forth in an attempt to gain the lead. He furiously struck out with the back of his hand as a surge of Spiritual Energy coalesced into a giant illusory palm directly at Mu Chen.

“Mu Chen, watch out! Zhou Ling hastily blurted.

When Mu Chen noticed this sneak attack, his expression immediately became ice-cold. Stepping to the side, dark black Spiritual Energy swept out from his body and transform into the indistinct shape of a light pagoda.

Bang!

The giant palm of Spiritual Energy smashed into the light pagoda, causing Mu Chen’s body to tremble as the light pagoda rippled from the

shockwave before slightly dimming. His ice-cold gaze flitted across the familiar figure.

Mu Chen's expression was extremely cold; this person was vicious. He wanted to strike Mu Chen earlier so that the latter would fall behind into the depths of the Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast horde. If that happened, Mu Chen would have suffered grievous injuries even if he manages to escape and subsequently not be in the condition to fight for the position of the number one freshman.

"Yang Hong, you want to fight now? Then let's fight!"

A cold light flashed across Mu Chen's eyes as he suddenly rushed forward, bent all but two fingers, and shot a golden light toward Yang Hong with lightning speed.

Yang Hong glanced behind him and sneered. He flicked his finger to fire off a Spiritual Energy beam at the approaching golden light and completely neutralized the attack, all that while maintaining his speed.

"Want to fight? Come and get me!"

Yang Hong's figure flashed forward, taking the lead and directly stepping on the large stone platform. He turned around to face Mu Chen as exceptionally vigorous Spiritual Energy erupted out from his body.

Mu Chen clenched both hands. The dark black Spiritual Energy surged within his body as the Great Pagoda Art circulating at full strength. A chilling murderous intent condensed in his black pupils.

Swish!

Mu Chen had also reached the stone platform with Luo Li following closely behind, her glass-like eyes locked onto Yang Hong.

Behind them, Mu Kui, Bing Qing, Zhou Ling, and the other top freshmen also jumped on the platform.

"Be careful Mu Chen, the Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts have caught up!" Zhou Ling hastily warned. It is not a good time to fight it out seeing that there is a more pressing problem behind the group.

Mu Chen's gaze flashed across the Spiritual Beasts before returning to watch Yang Hong with a chilly expression.

During the confrontation between the two, the tens of Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts completely encircled the platform, casting an enormous shadow on everyone.

Roar!

The beasts faced the sky and gave a long roar and their Spiritual Energy billowed out as they launched a frenzied assault at Mu Chen and the others on the stone platform.

Upon seeing this, Mu Chen can only fall back with Luo Li and temporarily shift his attention to these Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts. But right when he was about to fight, Nine Nether Bird urgently cried out.

"Mu Chen. Get out of here now! There's something strange!"

Nine Nether Bird's abrupt warning caused Mu Chen to be alarmed as he acted almost reflexively to pull Luo Li away with him.

Boom!

Just as Mu Chen made his hasty retreat, the ground where he was originally standing on collapsed as a scorching pillar of magma soared into the sky. A giant hand of surging magma extended out from the midst of the pillar, slamming down on a Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast and immediately obliterating the body.

Bang! Bang!

Under the shocked gazes of Mu Chen and the other freshmen, as well as the many spectators on the nearby mountain peaks, the stone platform shook violently as more large pillars of magma were sent violently into the sky. Enormous hands made of magma stretched out from each of these pillars. This scene was an extraordinary sight to behold.

"Why is the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy letting this big guy out?"

Li Xuantong was also slightly surprised at this scene; a grim look

immediately flashed through his eyes.

Chapter 179: Summit

At this moment, the massive stone platform was crumbling away as numerous pillars of lava soared up into the sky. Giant hands formed from lava extended out from these pillars and indiscriminately slammed down on the Heaven Ranked Spiritual Beasts and humans on the platform.

This scene had not only shocked Mu Chen and the others on the mountain, but even the people observing outside of the Northern Spirit Mountain were completely astonished. It was evident that this sudden development was beyond everyone's expectations.

Due to the Nine Nether Bird's warning, Mu Chen had reacted quicker than the others and had pulled Luo Li away. In the instant that he had fallen back, the lava hand had crushed a Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast with the strength of a Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase. The attack brought forth an intense heat as it struck down furiously at where Mu Chen and Luo Li were previously.

The lava hand smashed into the stone platform, causing the massive stone platform to quake as scalding lava began to flow outwards. The attack had completely melted away the stone platform.

Since the lava hand had missed, the lava trembled slightly before it quickly gathered together again and swung towards Mu Chen and Luo Li.

Mu Chen's eyes were completely serious after witnessing the terrifying might of the lava hand. He was able to sense that the strength of violent Spiritual Energy emitted from the lava hand far exceeded the Heavenly Fusion Stage.

He didn't dare to come into contact with it.

"Run!"

Mu Chen instantly made up his mind. The situation had changed. If they were to remain here any longer, it was highly likely that they would turn to ashes once the lava hand hit them. The have to leave this instant.

Luo Li gently nodded her head in agreement. Her slender hand firmly

grasped onto the black longsword. As a black glow circulated the length of the blade, an extremely sharp aura could be felt emitting from it.

Mu Chen's eyes quickly swept around his surroundings as he withdrew. At this moment, there were almost a dozen lava hands in the sky slamming down relentlessly one after the other. Even the Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts that had surrounded them before began to issue out fearful cries as they fell back. The Spiritual Beasts that had been too slow in their retreat were forcibly disintegrated by the lava hands, filling the sky with ashes.

Elsewhere on the mountain, Yang Hong, Mu Kui and Bing Qing were continuously performing evasive actions with serious expressions. They clearly understood just how powerful these lava hands were. If they take the attack head on, it was likely that they would've had to pay a great price.

"What should we do?" Luo Li whispered. The situation was too chaotic right now. She simply didn't know in which direction she should escape.

Mu Chen's eyes suddenly flashed. He detected that the lava hands had stopped chasing after the Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts once the latter had escaped the range of the Stone Platform.

"There must be a range to these attacks."

Mu Chen thought for a moment. Then, his gaze turned towards the place above the Stone Platform, the summit of the mountain. It didn't seem that the lava hands had extended out towards that location.

"Head to the summit!"

Mu Chen cried out and immediately accelerated towards the peak of the mountain. Seeing this, Luo Li quickly followed behind.

From nearby, Yang Hong and the others also noticed Mu Chen's actions. Their eyes also flashed as they immediately circulated their Spiritual Energy and pushed their speed to their limits. They, too, were heading towards the summit.

Based on the current situation, there were only two paths that they could

take to leave the Stone Platform. One option was to rush straight towards the peak of the mountain, and the other was to head back down the mountain. However, choosing the second option would also mean giving up the opportunity to compete for the title of the number 1 freshman. It was apparent that Yang Hong and the others, who were incredibly prideful, would not make such a selection.

Zhou Ling and the others in the rear had also noticed Mu Chen's actions and wanted to follow, but were forced back by the violent attacks of the lava hands. He cut a sorry figure as his skin turned fiery red. Thus, he could only sigh helplessly as he hastily backed away.

As expected, not everybody was qualified to head to the summit of the mountain.

Outside of the mountain range, countless gazes were gathered at the summit of the mountain. Even the freshmen who had begun to descend stared in the direction of the summit, observing the battle between the most outstanding students within the freshmen.

Under numerous gazes, Mu Chen, Luo Li, Yang Hong, Mu Kui and Bing Qing rushed forward and gradually revealed their movement techniques. They skillfully avoided the lava hands that contained an extraordinary Spiritual Energy fluctuation and continued forward.

These five individuals all possess a strength that far surpassed ordinary freshmen. As they completely focused their attention on evasion, they managed to see through the lava hands' movements and managed to break through, following which they quickly headed towards the summit.

Sensing the five individuals breaking through, the massive body within the Northern Spirit Mountain had slowly closed its fiery eyes. All of a sudden, it issued out a deep roar.

This roar echoed throughout the mountain and even caused the other mountains to quake. A large crack suddenly extended out from the peak of the mountain and fiery red lava covered the sky, forming into a curtain of magma that completely sealed off Mu Chen and the other's path.

As the lava rained down from the sky, the entire world suddenly turned

exceptionally hot. This boiling atmosphere had even caused the Spiritual Aura of the world to tremble slightly.

Witnessing the sudden change in the situation from outside the mountain, these people's mouths started to twitch. Such a terrifying existence was hidden within the Northern Spirit Mountain. Not only was it impossible for the freshmen to pass through this obstacle, but even the seniors within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy would also be helpless against it.

Rumble.

At this moment, the lava erupted and spread throughout the sky before it descended like a waterfall. Below the lava, Mu Chen and the others were helpless like ants.

All five of them had serious expressions. If they weren't careful, this attack would definitely be a disaster for them.

However, if they were to retreat right now, it would mean that they would give up on seizing first place. Therefore, they had no choice but to move forward!

Mu Chen bit his lips gently as an unswerving determination appeared on his handsome face. As he took a deep breath, dark black Spiritual Energy gushed out from his body. Then, under the bustling commotion, he charged straight into the lava.

An uproar immediately erupted in the surrounding mountains as the countless individuals witnessed this scene. In their opinion, this action was the same as committing suicide.

Li Xuantong's gaze turned serious for a moment as he narrowed his eyes. Mu Chen's actions were slightly beyond his imagination.

Just when Mu Chen charged straight into the waterfall-like lava, Yang Hong and the others' expressions changed. They immediately gritted their teeth as they charged forth as well. Extraordinary Spiritual Energy erupted out from their bodies one after another.

"Putong!"

Mu Chen was the fastest out of them all. His entire body was surrounded by dark black Spiritual Energy and was like a trail of thick black smoke. He had directly rushed into the lava and disappeared from sight.

Following Mu Chen was Yang Hong. His gaze was cold as dense Spiritual Energy erupted out from his body. A giant python had vaguely formed from his Spiritual Energy as he charged straight into the lava.

On the other hand, Mu Kui blasted out a punch as the rumbling Spiritual Energy formed into a gigantic golden fist. This fist smashed into the curtain of lava directly in front of him.

At the same time, Bing Qing's icy-blue hair had turned deep blue. An extraordinary chill emanated out from her as layers of ice covered her slender body. In the end, she rushed into the lava as well.

And last of all was Luo Li. She glanced at the place where Mu Chen had disappeared and gripped onto her black longsword with her slender hand. In an instant, the sword had twitched and a crisp sound echoed out. A peerless black sword beam tore through the sky as it was unleashed.

It was apparent that all five of these individuals had shown their true abilities at this moment!

Countless individuals watched this scene seriously. Their attention was completely focused on the other side of the curtain of lava. From there on out, they would be able to reach the summit of the mountain. Thus, as long as they were able to pass through this dangerous curtain of lava, they would be qualified to reach the summit.

However, the true question was; just how many out of these five individuals would be able to pass through?

The bustling and noisy surroundings had become completely silent at this moment. Their gazes gathered at the opposite side of the curtain of lava.

As everybody's gazes gathered at that location, changes soon appeared as well. With an oppressive power, a black light burst out of the curtain of

lava.

This black light seemed to be in a shape of a black tower. However, before everybody could clearly recognize it, the black light had faded away and revealed a slender figure. This slender figure had reached the summit of the mountain.

“Someone reached the summit!”

When this cry resounded out, numerous gazes stared at the slender figure. Their eyes were filled with curiosity and astonishment.

“It’s the freshmen that defeated Mo Lun!”

The audience had quickly identified the person that reached the summit. A commotion rang out; who would have thought the one that first reached the summit would be a freshman at the Spirit Stage Late Phase.

However, just where their astonished cries faded away, cracks suddenly appeared in the curtain of lava and another figure rushed out and entered the summit.

At this moment, Luo Li held onto the slightly hot black longsword as she smiled at Mu Chen.

Swish! Swish! Swish!

Just when Luo Li landed outside of the curtain of lava, extraordinary Spiritual Energy erupted out from behind her again. Three holes subsequently burst open within the lava and three other figures rushed out. However, their bodies, too, had smoke emitting out from it. Even the armor of ice on Bing Qing’s body had completely melted and evaporated away.

Bursts of commotion resounded out in the nearby mountains. Many of the seniors had serious expressions on their face. They never thought that there would be so many powerful individuals within this year’s freshman class. These five individuals had actually passed through such a terrifying obstacle.

As the five individuals reaching the summit, the lava behind them had

suddenly flowed down and ignited the entire mountain. The crimson lava spread out and dyed the mountain with a beautiful shade of red.

However, nobody had paid attention to this scene. Their eyes were all focused on the five individuals that had reached the summit. Even the freshmen below had cast their sights over due to their curiosity.

They all knew that the competition between the strongest freshmen this year had only just begun!

One after another, their gazes gathered at the center of the summit. At that location, a stone tablet was erected there. And on that stone tablet, was an enormous golden Spirit Flag that swayed due to the wind.

That Spirit Flag represented the honour of the Number One Freshmen.

The one that managed to obtain it would undisputedly become the Number One freshmen!

Chapter 180: Yang Hong's Hidden Strength

Numerous gazes gathered at the peak of the towering mountain where five figures stood motionless. However, everyone could sense that there was a storm surging underneath this momentary calm.

These people were among the best of the new students and had to overcome many challenges to finally stand here. They were all outstanding, but only one person can become foremost among the freshmen. Therefore, it would not be easy to capture the spiritual flag that embodied this honor and glory.

The true battle had just begun.

The figures from the surrounding peaks were all watching with bated breath; they were aware that this lull in the fighting wouldn't last long.

Once this momentary peace was broken, what follows would undoubtedly be an electrifying fight!

Under the attentive gaze of the onlookers, the atmosphere on the summit became quite strange. Luo Li and Mu Chen were standing to one side while Yang Hong, Mu Kui, and Bing Qing were standing in another; a look of vigilance appeared in their eyes.

In any case, this isn't a tournament where it was a duel between two individuals and all that you need to do was to defeat your opponent. Just a moment of inattentiveness would be all it takes for the other competitors to launch their vicious attacks. To be caught in that kind of situation would be an intractable headache for anyone among these five.

In this tense silence, the five figures remained on tenterhooks; vigorous Spiritual Energy surged within their bodies like a tidal wave, surly and unreasoning, spreading to all of their limbs.

Yang Hong's eyes slightly narrowed as he coldly stared at Mu Chen. His body leaned forward as a glow suddenly radiated in his eyes.

Swish!

His body suddenly transformed into a figure of light as he went straight for the Spirit Flag at breakneck speed.

The tense atmosphere was instantly broken with Yang Hong's sudden movement.

A chill flashed across Luo Li's glass-like eyes; a black longsword appeared in her lily-white hands as she slashed out without any hesitation. A enormous black sword beam viciously swept out and directly slashed down on Yang Hong's body.

The black sword beam whistled forward and carved out a hundred-zhang-deep gorge before the attack landed. The sharpness of this Qi made people inwardly apprehensive.

Even Yang Hong could not afford to be careless when facing Luo Li's attack. Just when everyone thought that he would be forced to defend himself, his body unexpectedly flashed forward to evade the sword beam and changed direction before he turned around to send out an explosive punch towards Mu Chen.

"Rumble!"

Spiritual Energy swirled around Yang Hong's fist like a raging storm, bringing forth an overbearing gale that relentlessly stormed toward Mu Chen.

Yang Hong's sudden attack obviously surprised a lot of people, but it became readily apparent that this had been prepared beforehand. His target wasn't the Spirit Flag at all. Instead, it had always been Mu Chen!

Mu Chen's eyes remained cold in the face of this sudden attack. He had long known about his enemy's deceptive tendencies and would naturally never let his guard down in Yang Hong's presence.

"I didn't expect you to be so fond of such underhand tactics."

Mu Chen laughed grimly and circulated the Great Pagoda Art at full strength; dark-black Spiritual Energy waves surged out from his body as he

punched out. Four Limitless Death Seals condensed and immediately exploded like overlapping waves, directly colliding with Yang Hong's fist.

Bang!

Shock waves, visible to the naked eye, swept out from the point of impact, sending out vibrations through the air and producing deep and low sounds similar to the rolls of thunder.

The shock waves gradually dissipated to reveal two figures under the gaze of countless onlookers. Not surprisingly, Mu Chen and Yang Hong were the first to make their moves.

"Mu Chen, didn't you want to fight against me? Well, here's your chance. But your strength at the Spirit Stage Late Phase is truly too pathetic; why don't you team up with Luo Li?!" Yang Hong taunted while attentively watching Mu Chen with sharp, cold eyes.

Mu Chen heard what he said and smiled. "Yang Hong, why are you resorting to such trickery? Just admit that you're afraid of us teaming up against you. Why is there a need for you to act like this?"

"Don't worry." Mu Chen's eyes slightly lowered as a cold light flickered within his black pupils. "I won't need Luo Li's help against someone like you."

Yang Hong sneered and said. "You sure talk big."

After these words, Yang Hong swiftly looked toward Mu Kui and said. "Brother Mu Kui, I have to fight against Mu Chen now. Since no one will be able to block you, it is the best opportunity to capture the Spirit Flag."

Mu Kui grinned as a glint of light appearing in his seemingly dull and steadfast eyes. "Yang Hong, you always enjoyed scheming. If I were to actually do as you say, it is probably the scene that you wouldn't want to see, right?"

"But you can rest assured; I don't care about being the Number One Freshmen. What I want is to defeat all of you!"

A flame ignited in Mu Kui's eyes as he said. "If you have to fight, then

fight. But whoever wins will have to fight me. I will naturally seize the Spirit Flag after I've defeated all of you!"

"Haha, I admire Brother Mu Kui's candor." Yang Hong laughed out loud. He knew that Mu Kui is a battle maniac who would not take advantage of his fight with Mu Chen to seize the Spirit Flag.

"If you want to fight, then fight as much as you want. I'm not interested. However, since nobody wants the Spirit Flag, I'll just help myself to it." Bing Qing, who was nearby, suddenly spoke coldly. Yang Hong had taken advantage of Mu Kui. However, she wasn't interested to wait until their battle was finished.

She was no longer inclined to stay after she finished speaking, her delicate body instantly moved out toward the Spirit Flag.

But a slender shadow appeared in front of her just as she was making her move. Bing Qing stared coldly at Luo Li, who is standing in her way and frowned as she said. "You want to stop me?"

Luo Li smiled and replied. "It's not that I want to stop you, but I just wanted to ask you to wait a while longer."

The situation has become extremely delicate. The animosity between Mu Chen and Yang Hong had already reached its boiling point. Mu Kui's addiction to fighting meant that he had no interest in the Spirit Flag. Therefore, Luo Li's only concern at the moment was Bing Qing.

Truth be told, Luo Li also did not really care for the Spirit Flag or the honor of becoming the Number One Freshman. She never concerned herself with these kinds of pointless competition between hot-headed males. However, she did not want the Spirit Flag to be snatched away while Mu Chen's hands were tied due to fight with Yang Hong.

Therefore, she acted at this moment and stood in Bing Qing's way.

Their confrontation caused the countless gazes watching the summit to burn hot with anticipation. Although the match between Mu Chen and Yang Hong was similarly thrilling, the two girls were clearly easier on the eyes. Luo Li and Bing Qing were both exceedingly beautiful girls; the

former's exquisite appearance would enchant any man while the latter's ice-cold personality was also oddly attractive. A fight between these two would definitely be a sight to behold.

"Wait for what?" Bing Ling softly asked.

"Wait until they've finished their fight. I won't stop you again if you go for the Spirit Flag then." Luo Li quietly said.

"And what if I don't comply?" Bing Qing's voice seemed to carry a bone-chilling aura.

"Then I'd have no choice but to personally experience your Ice Spirit Clan's secret arts." Luo Li's jaded hand tightly held the hilt of the black longsword. The black sword light emitted out had twisted around the sword's blade like streams of water.

Bing Qing slightly narrowed her icy-blue eyes as she concentrated on Luo Li. An icy-blue, cold aura flowed out from her exquisite yet delicate body, causing the surrounding air to freeze over.

The atmosphere between the two had immediately devolved into mutual hostility.

Elsewhere on the summit, Yang Hong secretly sighed in relief when he saw this development. It was extremely important to him to surpass all the other freshmen, and he did not wish to see someone else obtain this title.

For Luo Li to oppose Bing Qing, it had suited him well. He knew that Luo Li would not stand idly since she wanted Mu Chen to capture the Spirit Flag.

But she didn't know that her actions would only benefit Yang Hong in the end.

The corners of Yang Hong's mouth curled up into an icy-cold smile. He immediately looked at Mu Chen and said. "Now we can fight to our heart's content. I'll make you understand that I, Yang Hong, will completely overshadow you at the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy!"

Mu Chen extended his palm slowly and faintly smiled. “I’ll beat you up so bad you will never dare to speak those words again.”

“With your pitiful strength at the Spirit Stage Late Phase?”

Yang Hong smiled mockingly as he casually took a step forward; dense Spiritual Energy fluctuations begin to spread out from his body. “Did you really believe that my strength was only at the Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase?”

Boom.

Yang Hong’s footsteps landed heavily on the ground one after another; the summit seemed to quake as astonishing Spiritual Energy saturated the air forming an overwhelming pressure that surged towards Mu Chen.

Yang Hong’s gown fluttered open as a powerful current of Spiritual Energy converged on the palm his two hands; such frightening intensity revealed that he had truly reached the Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase!

This Yang Hong was really concealing his true strength!

The gallery of onlookers on the surrounding peaks gasped in surprise; this freshman is really strong! Even though he had only recently entered the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, his strength had already surpassed some of the older students.

“Come at me with everything you’ve got or you will be crushed like a dead dog!”

Yang Hong’s piercing gaze swept out toward Mu Chen, his chin lifted in a condescending manner as he sneered at the latter. His eyes began to glow with killing intent.

“Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase…”

Mu Chen lightly sighed; this Yang Hong really is a difficult opponent. Nevertheless…

He slowly extended his hand toward Yang Hong and made a beckoning gesture, black light coalesced in the depths of his eyes as if forming an

enigmatic, dark-black light pagoda.

"Come."

As Mu Chen's soft voice faded away, everyone sensed that the sky above the summit became dark as if in anticipation of the confrontation between the two.

This freshman year's greatest battle is about to get underway.

Chapter 181: Mu Chen VS Yang Hong

Swoosh!

In the sky, two powerful Spiritual Energies surged out and collided with each other. When these two energies made contact with each other, it was as if the lightning within the clouds had collided with each other. Deep sounds echoed out. This tense atmosphere even made the airflow stop completely.

Numerous gazes had concentrated at the summit of the mountain. All of them were breathless as they waited in anticipation. The atmosphere at that location was extremely tense and was about to break out.

Within the quiet skies, a furious wind suddenly blew and the forest began to sway. From afar, it seemed as if a green wave had appeared within the mountain.

However, once the wind had faded away, Mu Chen and Yang Hong's eyes had turned completely serious and a hint of sharpness emanated from them. Both of them rushed out at the same time towards each other. Their Spiritual Energies had turned into a majestic torrent as they soared through the sky before fiercely colliding with each other.

A dazzling sound reverberated out. From the collision between Spiritual Energies, as a gale formed and emitted out from them. Towering trees were uprooted before they were completely smashed into pieces by the shock waves.

The two Spiritual Energies fiercely colliding against each other, wasn't a duel between techniques. Rather, it was a battle based purely on the density of Spiritual Energy one possessed.

From this collision, it was clear that Yang Hong had the upper hand. After all, he was at the Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase. As for Mu Chen, he was still at the Spirit Stage Late Phase. In a battle between density of Spiritual Energy, it was clear that Mu Chen was at a disadvantage.

Therefore, the black torrent emitted out by Mu Chen had shown signs of weakness in front of the green torrent emitted out by Yang Hong.

"Mu Chen. Do you understand now? This is the difference between me and you!"

Yang Hong stood in the sky as the green torrent of Spiritual Energy continued to surge out from his body. Moreover, he had stirred up the Spiritual Aura within the world and had added it to the green torrent. His robes fluttered constantly and he looked down condescendingly at Mu Chen as he sneered.

"I don't have time to play with you any longer. Once I defeat you, I have to seize the Spirit Flag!" Yang Hong gripped his hand tightly and green Spiritual Energy surged out. It had formed into a massive Spiritual Energy vortex, which completely enveloped Mu Chen's surroundings.

Within the massive green vortex, a black torrent of Spiritual Energy was rushing around. However, the density of this Spiritual Energy was vastly inferior to the green Spiritual Energy.

"Boom!"

Yang Hong stared at Mu Chen, who was within the black torrent of Spiritual Energy. His eyes flashed as he gripped his hand. All of a sudden, a deep sound rang out. The green vortex had begun circulating at a higher speed, and a powerful oppression had descended down upon the black torrent.

Yang Hong, wanted to completely destroy all of Mu Chen's defenses! He wanted to shatter the self-esteem of the person that was once a bothersome existence to him in the Spiritual Road! He wanted to tell him that he, Yang Hong, was like the stars in general and that he was dazzling existence.

"Boom!"

Accompanied with Yang Hong's killing intent, the enormous green Spiritual Energy vortex released an extraordinarily destructive power. Then, it bombarded fiercely against the black Spiritual Energy torrent.

In the instant that it hit, the black torrent completely crumbled away. It was evident that it was impossible to block a Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase's all-out attack with the Spiritual Energy of a Spirit Stage Late Phase.

On the nearby mountains, sighs echoed out. The freshman known as Mu Chen was going to lose this quickly? It seemed that the gap between Stages was too great for him. However, he was pretty good as he managed to reach the summit with the strength of a Spirit Stage Late Phase.

At this moment, Li Xuantong's eyes were completely indifferent. He stared at the collapsing black torrent and frowned. He, Mu Chen, shouldn't be this weak, right?

"Eh?"

Just when this thought appeared in Li Xuantong's mind, he immediately concentrated again. This is because he noticed that the collapsing black Spiritual Energy had suddenly trembled for a moment. Then, the black lights had gathered together and formed into a blurry black tower.

The black light tower stood in the center of the green vortex and a mysterious bell sound reverberated out from it. Light surged out from the tower's body. However, it remained completely motionless against any attacks from the green Spiritual Energy vortex.

In this instant, Yang Hong's face sank slightly. A hint of coldness flashed through his eyes as he waved his sleeves. The green Spiritual Energy vortex had suddenly accelerated and an oppressive power that could crush a mountain had emerged. It had constantly descended down upon the light tower formed by the black Spiritual Energy.

Buzz.

In the face of the violent attacks unleashed by the green Spiritual Energy vortex, the black light tower formed by the black Spiritual Energy emitted out a buzzing sound, and numerous black halos spread out from it.

These black halos were considerably strange and they seemed to possess a mysterious power. Whenever the attacks from the green Spiritual Energy

vortex were unleashed, they would be completely negated by the black halos.

"He actually stopped it..."

The sudden change of events was seen by countless individuals. Astonished cries immediately resounded out. They originally thought that Mu Chen was about to lose, but they never imagined that the latter had special techniques as well.

At the foot of the mountain where the battle occurred, countless freshmen stared nervously at the summit. Ye Qingling, Zhou Ling and the others had gathered together as they stared at the very top of the mountain. They understood that Yang Hong was much more powerful than Mo Lun. However, they did not know what the outcome would be this time.

At this moment, Yang Hong's cold eyes stared at the blurry black light tower and sneered: "You won't be able to stop me by relying on this thing!"

"Sky-Shattering Spirit Trident!"

Yang Hong clasped his hands fiercely and green Spiritual Energy surged out. It had directly formed into a massive green trident in the sky and a sharp fluctuation rippled out from it.

"Go!"

Yang Hong flicked his finger and the green trident shot forth at an extraordinary speed. In an instant, it had vanished and, under everybody's gazes, it had appeared in front of the blurry black tower.

Buzz.

The black halos emitted out from the tower attempted to stop the attack. However, the giant trident broke its way through. Then, everybody witnessed the trident striking the surface of the light tower.

An extraordinary Spiritual Energy emanated out. Cracks quickly emerged on the light tower and it had exploded completely with a bang.

When Yang Hong noticed that the light tower had completely shattered,

he let out a cold humph. But before he was able to speak, his eyes suddenly focused as he heard a buzzing sound. From the place where the light tower had exploded, a golden light wheel had suddenly shot out and charged straight towards Yang Hong.

"Scram!"

Yang Hong blasted out a punch in retaliation. Dense Spiritual Energy rushed out and this single punch had completely destroyed the golden light wheel.

"Roar!"

However, just when Yang Hong had destroyed the golden light wheel, a dragon-like roar had suddenly resounded out. From the sky, a dark golden light had surged. A dragon and an elephant suddenly emerged and integrated with each other to form a plate with a dragon and an elephant. Then, it attempted to suppress Yang Hong.

"A Spiritual Array?"

At this moment, Yang Hong had detected a mysterious Spiritual Energy fluctuation. Then, he noticed a light array had formed in the air. At this moment, his eyes had focused slightly. So Mu Chen was actually a Spiritual Array Master. Judging from this Spiritual Array, it was probably comparable to a Rank 3 Spiritual Array.

"Could it be that this bastard is also a Rank 3 Spiritual Array Master?" Yang Hong was stunned. A Rank 3 Spiritual Array Master already possessed the strength comparable to a Heavenly Fusion Stage.

"No matter how many techniques you've hidden for today, I will still trample over you!"

Yang Hong's eyes quickly turned cold. From his hand, a green Spiritual Energy billowed out. His palm had suddenly become like a jade and countless veins could be seen on it.

"Sky-Shattering Jaded Spirit Hand!"

Yang Hong struck out with his palm. The jade-like hand floated out and

collided against the approaching golden plate without any hesitation.

When the two attacks met, the air was trembling, it was as if a vacuum of air was formed. Yang Hong's robes continued to flutter and he seemed like a war god. A green light exuded out from his jade-like hands and he fired out a dozen handprints. Every single one of them had smashed onto the golden plate and the violent energy from them eventually forced it back.

"Shatter!"

Yang Hong moved forward and smashed down with his palm. A crisp sound was heard, as the golden plate containing the dragon and elephant was completely destroyed by this attack. The golden plate had turned into lights as it gradually dissipated away.

As the lights drifted and faded away, Yang Hong stood in the air as his cold eyes had locked onto a slender figure nearby. Green Spiritual Energy stormed out from his palm towards this figure.

At the same time, Mu Chen stared calmly at Yang Hong, who was about to release a powerful attack. The two Spiritual Arrays that he had cast successively were easily destroyed by Yang Hong. A Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase was truly extraordinary.

However... These two Spiritual Arrays were only Rank 2 Spiritual Arrays. It was quite unlikely for them to hurt Yang Hong at all.

Therefore...

Mu Chen slowly closed his eyes. At the same time, Spiritual Seals rushed out from his sleeves and quickly integrated into the sky behind him. All of a sudden, the sky turned fiery red and a massive red array formed. A burning and violent fluctuation emanated out from the Spiritual Array.

"That is..."

Countless eyes were focused on the massive red array. Soon, these eyes were filled with seriousness.

"It's a Rank 3 Spiritual Array!"

“So Mu Chen is actually a Spiritual Array Master. And he’s a Rank 3 Spiritual Array Master, to boot!”

“So that’s it. A Rank 3 Spiritual Array Master is capable of fighting against a Heavenly Fusion Stage. No wonder he wasn’t afraid of Yang Hong...

“But why can he arrange an array this quickly?”

Countless whispers erupted out at this moment. Even Elder Zhu Tian was quite surprised by this sudden display of talent by Mu Chen. His eyes were soon filled with interest.

“This little guy...He had actually trained in Spiritual Arrays. Moreover, this state...Is it the Initial Level of the Heart Array State?”

Chapter 182: Array of the Great Ifrit

The sky surrounding Mu Chen glowed scarlet at this moment, painting the clouds a fiery red as if they had caught on fire. The air became distorted by the searing heat as an enormous array of fiery red light gradually formed behind Mu Chen.

The faint Spiritual Energy fluctuations emitted out from the center of this array of fiery red light caused the complexion of many of the older students to change. They feared that even ordinary people at the Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase would not be able to receive this level of attack.

So this freshman named Mu Chen clearly did not reveal his true strength when he previously fought against Mo Lun.

“The freshmen this year are terrifying.” Some of the people inwardly sighed. Although these freshmen were younger than them, their techniques, as well as their schemes, cause others to sigh with amazement.

“A Rank 3 Spiritual Array Master, huh?”

On the summit, Mu Kui also looked up to gaze at Mu Chen’s figure, as a fire ignited within his eyes. The latter didn’t let him down; if Mu Chen was defeated this quickly at the hands of Yang Hong, he would’ve felt some regret.

Elsewhere, Luo Li and Bing Qing were still facing each other in a standoff. Although the atmosphere between the two girls was tense, neither had made a move. It is obvious that they were both wary of their opponent; once they made a move, both sides might have to expend a lot of energy.

Bing Qing glanced at Luo Li before she too raised her head to look at the shocking battle in the sky. The secret technique that Mu Chen revealed had also caused her to be somewhat astonished. She had previously believed that Yang Hong would make short work of Mu Chen.

Now it seems that it won’t be that simple. This Mu Chen was able to

capture Luo Li's heart; he was not just some trivial and worthless character.

Luo Li slightly craned her snow-white neck to look up at the tall and lean figure; a trace of softness flitted across her clear glass-like eyes. Mu Chen's background count for nothing compared to the other four on the summit. According to him, the place where he came from ought to be just a small and weak continent in the Great Thousand World. His background was nothing spectacular, yet he was not the slightest inferior to Yang Hong and the other freshmen powerhouses.

That's why she was certain that Mu Chen would come to the Five Great Academies even though he was kicked out halfway through the Spiritual Road. Even though he did not receive the Spiritual Energy Empowerment from the Spiritual Road, he was still able to stand out in this gathering of geniuses.

Perhaps, in the future, this youth will achieve fame and glory that will shake this vast Great Thousand World. The Five Great Academies will be nothing more than the first step in his journey.

—

Under the starry skies within the Spiritual Road, the youth, who was in a slightly awkward state after he dealt with a group of pursuers, had raised his head. On his handsome face, a determined smile had emerged.

"Luo Li, there will come a day that my name will resound in every corner of the Great Thousand World." The youth turned his head to face the small campfire and gaze at the girl beside him with his cool and lonesome eyes, looking at her delicate and beautiful cheeks that cause men to be intoxicated.

"Why?" The young girl said with a faint smile.

"If that happens, you will hear my name no matter where you are, so that even if I'm not by your side, I will still be able to protect you just like today." The youth smiled. His sincere and refreshing expression had caught the young girl off guard, a hint of a smile curled up on the corner of her lips.

—

Luo Li's clear glass-like eyes gently blinked, and the corner of her mouth slightly curved upwards. She looked at his slender frame and could feel the latter's maturity even though he is, currently, still too far away from making good on his promise of great ambition.

But she believed that he will be able to do it.

Just like how she believed that he will arrive at the Five Great Academies to finish what he had started on the Spiritual Road.

With the eyes of countless onlookers gazing up the sky, Yang Hong's expression was somewhat unsightly and felt a little alarmed as he looked at the array of scarlet light gradually forming behind Mu Chen.

"Spiritual Array Master? I won't let you arrange a Spiritual Array this easily!"

Yang Hong coldly snorted. This is not the first time he had fought against a Spiritual Array Master. The power of this incomplete Spiritual Array is not weak, but all Spiritual Array Masters have a fatal flaw. It is not easy for them to gain enough time to deploy their Spiritual Arrays during pitch battle. An experienced opponent will finish the fight before the Spiritual Array Masters can complete their arrays.

Swish!

Yang Hong's figure abruptly rushed forth like lightning as both palms once again became sparkling and translucent like jade.

Yang Hong headed straight for Mu Chen. This scene caused many people's to secretly nod their heads; Yang Hong really isn't somebody who is easy to deal with. He did not foolishly wait for Mu Chen to complete his Spiritual Array.

As long as he managed to interfere with Mu Chen and make it so that he could not arrange his Spiritual Array, the victor of this battle would be determined.

"Brother Mu, watch out!"

Upon seeing this from the foot of the mountain, Mo Ling and the others' hearts jumped as they anxiously yelled out, but they discovered that Mu Chen was too far away to hear their warning.

Mu Chen tightly closed his eyes and submerged himself in the Heart Array State, perfectly controlling each and every Spiritual Seal. However, he immediately sensed Yang Hong's imminent arrival and realized the latter's intent.

"You want to interfere with me?"

Mu Chen laughed mockingly in his heart, but his mental state remained calm and composed. He did not panic in the slightest, but instead submerged himself even deeper into the subtle control ability of the Heart Array State.

With this level of fine control, he was able to clearly perceive the direction and trails of the Spiritual Energy flow in the world.

The complex Diagram Array behind him was also reflected within his heart, incomparably distinct and penetrating.

Under this fine control, Mu Chen's palm sudden extended out of his sleeves and lightly whirled, only to see several tens of Spiritual Seals condensed once again. With a flick of his finger, the Spiritual Seals shot out into the air in front of him, causing a Spiritual Energy fluctuation that instantly arranged into a Spiritual Array.

Roar!

A flash of light radiated out to reveal a massive array of golden light, after which a golden dragon and elephant violently surged out and fused into a golden disc that streaked toward Yang Hong.

"WAHH!"

This development instantly caused an immediate uproar to fill the air. Mu Chen had unexpectedly deployed two Spiritual Arrays at the same time? Is this something he should be able to accomplish as a Rank 3 Spiritual Array Master?

Who doesn't know that Spiritual Array Masters won't dare to have the slightest lapse in concentration when they deploy Spiritual Arrays much less dividing their attention in two!

"What?"

Elder Zhu Tian, who was watching the battle in the sky, also cried out in surprise before muttering to himself. "To be able to achieve this level as a Rank 3 Spiritual Array Master, it seems that this kid is quite talented in regards to the Heart Array State."

Only a select few of the high-level Spiritual Array Masters were able to develop this ability to divide their attention. He hadn't anticipated that Mu Chen had already reached this level of proficiency.

Bang!

Yang Hong's facial expression darkened as his punch blasted into the golden disc. He blocked the Spiritual Energy shock waves from the explosive collision and wanted to press forward without delay, but another golden disc came whistling toward him.

It was obvious that this level of Spiritual Array was no longer difficult for Mu Chen.

After the momentary delay from blocking this second attack, Yang Hong stopped moving forward. He had a gloomy expression on his face because the massive array of scarlet light behind Mu Chen's body was already completely formed.

Obviously, his attempt to disrupt the array formation had failed.

Mu Chen slowly opened his eyes at this moment and a cold chill flitted across his black pupils. He gazed at the dispirited Yang Hong and said with an almost mirthless smile. "You seem to use your head a little bit more."

"You think that you can challenge me just because you completed a Rank 3 Spiritual Array? How naive." Yang Hong sneered.

Mu Chen simply smiled in response and ignored him. As he changed his

seals, the massive array of scarlet red light behind him suddenly activated as a blaze spread out like fiery waves and swept across the sky.

He extended his slender finger and pointed to the sky as his black pupils became ice-cold.

“Boom!”

Towering flames that covered the sky swept out from the center of the Spiritual Array, after which an inhuman sound roared out from within. Flames spread out as a massive pillar of fire explosively shot out from the center of Spiritual Array.

Roar!

The flames that shot out appeared to tremble before it unexpectedly transformed into an incomparably massive creature of fire. Two horns grew out from its head, fiery red scale covered its entire body, and an extremely frenzied and scorching Spiritual Energy fluctuation emanated out causing the moisture in the air to evaporate immediately.

A look of amazement appeared on the faces of the countless onlookers as they gazed at this creature of fire. The fluctuations emitting out of its body was not any weaker than a person at the Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase. This Spiritual Array arranged by Mu Chen was apparently ranked amongst the top of Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays.

“Array of the Great Ifrit!”

Mu Chen flicked his finger as his quiet voice reverberated through the air. “Go!”

Roar!

The Ifrit roared up at the sky. Flames swept out like waves as its body moved and directly transformed into a fiery light. The flames ignited into a raging inferno as its entire body transformed into a flaming meteor and streaked across the horizon toward Yang Hong.

The ground below ruptured and burst open as the flaming meteor swept past. Superheated air formed a visible arc in front of the flaming meteor

and created a magnificent tail of fire.

Yang Hong raised his head. The Ifrit meteor reflected in his eyes as the corner of his mouth slowly curled up into a sinister smile.

“This is what you had prepared to use against me? It’s not bad, but it all ends now! I’m tired of playing with you!”

Yang Hong took one step forward as the clothes on his body abruptly turned into dust. A cyan light radiated forth as a frenzied dragon roar ferociously resounded throughout the heaven and earth.

Numerous trembling gazes followed along only to see a resplendent cyan light. Yang Hong’s body slowly faded away and was replaced by a gigantic dragon entrenched in the sky.

This gigantic dragon’s body was dark green with cyan dragon scales which were unexpectedly covered in tiger stripes. Its head was not that of a dragon, but rather the head of a sinister tiger.

When this unusual dragon appeared, everyone felt an overwhelming fluctuation sweep out.

“This is...”

Many onlookers concentrated on the gigantic dragon’s body with a stunned expression on their faces.

“Ranked 50th on the Myriad Beast Record’s Earth Ranking’s: Ancient Tiger Dragon?”

Chapter 183: The Nine Nether Bird Appears

Cyan light illuminated the horizon, bringing with it an overbearing pressure that caused the air to become stifling. The numerous spectators were all similarly overwhelmed as their shocked gazes fixated on the massive cyan-colored dragon that settled up above in the sky.

Who would've imagined that Yang Hong had ingested a Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence and it turned out to be an Ancient Tiger Dragon that is ranked 50th upon the Myriad Beast Record's Earth Ranking. Even a Heavenly Completion Stage powerhouse would have to retreat in the face of a mature Ancient Tiger Dragon. This Yang Hong had unexpectedly obtained its Soul Essence?

The older students looked at each other in dismay before they shook their heads and sighed; each freshman had been more terrifying than the last.

"An Ancient Tiger Dragon?" Surprise flashed across Li Xuantong's eyes when he saw this scene from one of the surrounding mountain peaks. Generally speaking, someone with this amount of strength, who is capable of obtaining the Soul Essence of a fearless existence, such as the Ancient Tiger Dragon will have a strong background. The possibility that someone had relied solely on a fortuitous encounter to obtain it is inconceivable.

Li Xuantong's gaze concentrated on the blazing meteor whistling across the vast sky towards the Ancient Tiger Dragon. Yang Hong's strength had risen dramatically by pushing the Ancient Tiger Dragon's Soul Essence to its limit. It would be difficult to find a worthy opponent for him within the Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase. Even if Mu Chen had his hidden card as a Rank 3 Spiritual Array Master, it would still be a tall order if he wanted to defeat Yang Hong.

Next up, he would have to see how Mu Chen will respond to this situation.

“Haha, Mu Chen. Did you truly believe that you’re the only one with hidden cards and that I didn’t have my own?”

The immensely formidable Tiger Dragon occupied the sky; its large ruby eyes watched Mu Chen attentively as a mocking laughter burst forth from its ferocious tiger maw. Yang Hong, who had activated the Ancient Tiger Dragon’s Soul Essence, could already feel a surge of power within his body. This strength was sufficient enough to gravely injure anyone of the Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase with just one punch, to say nothing of Mu Chen who only had the strength of the Spirit Stage Late Phase.

“Watch as I break your Spiritual Array attack!”

The Tiger Dragon’s laughter echoed like thunder before its massive dragon claw suddenly clenched and fiercely struck the whistling flame meteor.

Boom!

The two titans mercilessly collided in mid-air with a loud explosion, resulting in rolls of thunder that reverberated across the sky. The momentum of the Ifrit meteor had been completely stopped by the brute force of the impact, causing a rain of fire to fall from the sky.

Although its momentum had been stopped, Yang Hong was still forced to retreat a great distance even in his Tiger Dragon form. However, it didn’t take long before he stormed forth once more with a whip of his tail and proceeded to bombard the giant flame meteor with a flurry of punches.

Boom! Boom!

The Tiger Dragon was relentless in its attack and violent Spiritual Energy surged out like a storm. Roaring up at the sky, its claws started to glow from the cyan light of the accumulated Spiritual Energy, bringing with it a kind of terrifying power to topple mountains to bear down on the blazing meteor.

“Scram!”

Yang Hong gave a savage roar in his Tiger Dragon form as his fist

explosively punched out. The empty air appeared to distort around the fist as it forced back the giant flame meteor. Lines and lines of cracks rapidly propagated through the meteor, until it finally shattered under the shocked gaze of the countless spectators.

Anyone who saw this rain of fire covering the sky was visibly moved; Yang Hong's power had clearly advanced by more than a level after transforming into the Tiger Dragon.

On the summit, Mu Kui watched Yang Hong's incredible display of martial prowess with a heavy expression. Even he was particularly wary of the power that the latter showed. Although this person is quite a schemer, his own strength was just as impressive.

"Mu Chen is going to lose. Aren't you going to help him?" Bing Qing said indifferently as she glanced at Luo Li.

After transforming into the Ancient Tiger Dragon, Yang Hong's strength gave her a strong feeling of trepidation, and she's afraid she might not even be able to contend with Mu Chen's Spiritual Array.

Fixated on the tall and lean silhouette in the sky above, Luo Li showed a faint smile and said. "He won't lose so easily."

Bing Qing knitted her umber-black eyebrows; she clearly didn't understand where all of Luo Li's confidence came from. The current situation is not optimistic for Mu Chen.

"Then I'll have to see just how he is able to reverse this situation." Bing Qing looked up with her beautiful face to watch the sky, not convinced of Luo Li's confidence in Mu Chen.

"Haha."

The transformed Yang Hong broke out in thunderous laughter up in the sky. Even the Spiritual Array that Mu Chen had painstakingly arranged had collapsed under his relentless strikes. Who is winning and who is losing in this battle was self-evident.

"It will be your turn next!"

Yang Hong's large ruby eyes looked intently at Mu Chen. He couldn't wait to crush the latter and enjoy the pleasure of trampling Mu Chen beneath his feet.

Swish!

Cyan light suddenly burst forth from the Tiger Dragon's gigantic body. A squall rose up with a single whip of the Tiger Dragon's massive tail. Thunder rippled through the air as the Tiger Dragon transformed into a cyan beam and appeared above Mu Chen, its enormous shadow descending on the latter.

"Get off the mountain!"

Dense Spiritual Energy violently gushed out from the Tiger Dragon's clenched claws, appearing like a resplendent cyan-colored sun. The massive claws contained enough power to rend the sky as it blasted out toward Mu Chen.

Enveloped in cyan light, the Tiger Dragon's attack was as fast as lightning as it streaked across the air, leaving a vacuum in its trail. Everyone held their breath. At the foot of the mountain, Mo Ling and the others' faces paled; they could still sense just how frightening Yang Hong's punch was even when they were separated by such great distance.

This punch might even instantly kill a Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase powerhouse!

Mu Chen raised his head just then and concentrated on the incoming dragon claw. Both of his hands slowly clenched as an exotic black flame emerged from the depths of his eyes. The dark-black Spiritual Energy that covered his body had also silently burst into black flames.

Mu Chen's black eyes became more profound at this moment.

Watching the battle from up in the sky, Elder Zhu Tian's expression suddenly became more intense. He turned his head to glance at the two elders besides him and saw a stunned look flit across their eyes.

They sensed an extraordinarily powerful fluctuation that was faintly similar to when someone activated a Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence, but

was also slightly different.

This fluctuation still has Spirituality and vitality.

Boom!

While they were in a state of amazement, the dragon claw had finally arrived. A look of pity appeared on the faces of the spectators as the attack ferociously exploded onto Mu Chen's body.

Bang!

The heavens trembled as a frenzied cyan-colored Spiritual Energy surged out uninhibited like a large wave and illuminated the heavens.

This punch ruthlessly struck Mu Chen.

Ye Qingling and Zhou Ling's complexion became pale. They no longer entertained thoughts of Mu Chen pulling out a victory, but instead were only praying that his injuries are not too severe. As long as he can hold on to his life, they can rescue him later.

"Eh? Why hasn't Brother Mu fallen?" Mo Ling said distractedly as he carefully scanned cyan sky.

Ye Qingling and the others were also surprised and startled as they looked toward that direction. According to common sense, Mu Chen should be falling from the sky after directly receiving that punch.

Many others had also thought that this was peculiar. The astonished gazes looked to the sky at once where the cyan light from the devastating Spiritual Energy began to wane.

The first sight to emerge after the cyan light faded was the massive dragon claw, but a black light appeared to shine from underneath the claw. Fixating on their attention there, the pupils of the countless spectators immediately shrank.

They saw black flames violently raged inside the black light underneath the massive dragon claw. Right now, those black flames seemed to have transformed into a pair of gigantic wings of black flame that have enclosed around Mu Chen's body and shielded him from Yang Hong's

fierce punch.

"How can this be..."

Numerous murmurs broke out; the thoughts of many were filled with disbelief and shock. They really couldn't understand how a person at the Spirit Stage Late Phase was able to repeatedly resist the all-out attack of an opponent at the Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase

"How is this possible?!"

Identical thoughts flitted across Yang Hong's heart. His eyes rapidly turned blood red as he looked below to see that Mu Chen had suddenly grown a pair of gigantic wings of black flames.

This sensation of being repeatedly thwarted really made him unable to calm down.

He should've easily destroyed Mu Chen like breaking dead branches from a tree and trampled him under his feet!

"Boom!"

The Tiger Dragon form of Yang Hong roared up at the sky as its dragon claws shortly whistled through the air and frantically attacked the human figure below.

Hu.

A pair of black wings stretched open from within the black flames that enveloped Mu Chen's body. As soon as the wings flapped, the sound of breaking wind resounded, an afterimage appeared, and his figure flashed before appearing a kilometer away.

A trace of coldness flashed across the black flames in Mu Chen's eyes as he changed his hand seals while watching Yang Hong's frantic assault.

Li!

A clear and resonant cry suddenly resounded throughout the world. When this sharp cry sounded out, everyone could sense that all the Spiritual Aura within the world had suddenly showed signs of resistance.

And the source of this resistance is precisely Mu Chen's position!

"What's that?!"

A loud shout suddenly rang out causing countless gazes to hastily look over only to see the dark-black Spiritual Energy behind Mu Chen surge up like thick smoke. Black light spread through the skies as the flames behind Mu Chen transformed into a monstrous and mysterious black bird.

A colossal bird stretched its wings and immediately caused the sky to darken. Black flames surged out and engulfed the heavens. This scene caused shock to appear in the eyes of many people.

"This fluctuation..."

Up in the sky, Elder Zhu Tian's complexion turned solemn at this moment. He looked at the other two elders and saw the same shock in their eyes.

This Mu Chen had actually ingested the Nine Nether Bird's Spiritual Beast Soul Essence?!

Chapter 184: The Power of the Bloodlink Bond

As the mysterious black bird emerged in the world along with its devastating black flames, countless gazes were immediately attracted to it.

The massive black bird was completely covered with black flames. However, its body wasn't clearly visible, thus, a few individuals weren't able to determine which Spiritual Beast it was. But judging from its aura, it was definitely much more powerful than the Yang Hong's Ancient Tiger Dragon!

"W-What is that Spiritual Beast? What a terrifying aura!"

Mo Ling and the others gaped in shock as they stared at the enormous black bird. It was the first time that they've seen Mu Chen use the power of a Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence. Moreover, they've originally thought that Mu Chen had ingested one of the two Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence that he had obtained in the Northern Heavens World. However, from what they've seen, it was evident that they were clearly wrong.

Mu Chen had always been hiding the Soul Essence that he had ingested!

So this was the strongest trump card that he had hidden!

"This guy..." Zhou Ling had a shocked expression before he inhaled deeply as a complex expression emerged on his face. Originally, he thought that he would be able to narrow the gap between him and Mu Chen once he had advanced to the Heavenly Fusion Stage. But who could have imagined that this person was like a bottomless hole. Nobody could understand the depths of his strength.

It was as if he was completely unpredictable.

At this very moment, the Spiritual Energy fluctuations emitting out from Mu Chen's body was already comparable to Yang Hong!

Sometimes, even Zhou Ling had to admit that Mu Chen was a person

who would always create miracles...The situation that he had originally thought was impossible to overturn was finally switched around magically by Mu Chen.

On the nearby mountains, the seniors that were watching this battle had stunned expressions. This tide of this battle had constantly changed, which had made them completely surprised.

"These freshmen are truly amazing. In the future, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy will definitely become quite lively..."

At this moment, Li Xuantong stood up straight with his hands behind his back. His eyes were also focused on the mysterious black bird that had emerged behind Mu Chen. However, his eyes were quite something so he managed to predict which Spiritual Beast it was.

But the result of his prediction was something that he could not believe.

"How is it possible that he could ingest a Soul Essence of this level with his current strength?" Li Xuantong frowned. A Heaven Rank Spiritual Beast of this level was quite difficult to conquer, and even more difficult to ingest. However, only an idiot would believe it if one was to say that Mu Chen, with his Spirit Stage Late Phase strength, had managed to ingest it.

But the truth was placed in front of their eyes. Moreover, Li Xuantong was able to detect that the energy of Mu Chen's Soul Essence seemed to possess a higher level of Spirituality compared to Yang Hong's Soul Essence.

This feeling was quite strange. However, a truly keen individual would be able to perceive this subtle difference.

This feeling...It was as if one was a dead object while the other was a living creature.

After pondering for a while, Li Xuantong could only shake his head, and continue to stare at the sky. This time, he must admit that Mu Chen had completely surprised him. At the very least, the latter wasn't as weak as he had imagined.

In the instant that everyone in the mountains were shocked by the

mysterious black bird, the three elders were completely surprised as well.

"Nine Nether Bird...Impressive. How did that boy do it? An existence like the Nine Nether Bird possesses the potential to evolve into a Divine Beast. Once it evolves, it will be an existence that is equivalent to Lord Dragon 1... How could it be ingested by a human?" Zhu Tian and the others muttered as their eyes were filled with shock.

The Lord Dragon that they mentioned was the Guardian Beast of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, the Northern Sea Dragon. Even the Principal would have to be polite in front of it.

Their keen eyesight wasn't something that a student could compare. Therefore, they knew that the Nine Nether Bird was a prideful and terrifying Spiritual Beast. In order to ingest its Soul Essence, one must require a Sovereign-level existence to personally suppress it for them to ingest its Soul Essence. It was impossible for Mu Chen, who had come out from a tiny place like the Northern Spiritual Realm, to satisfy this condition.

As an elder of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, Zhu Tian and the others knew about Mu Chen's information. Therefore, they were quite confused when they saw the Nine Nether Bird.

"Interesting..." Elder Zhu Tian smiled as he continued to look up at the sky.

On the summit, Mu Kui and Bing Qing's expression had turned serious as well. At this moment, even they felt a hint of danger from Mu Chen.

As for Luo Li, she continued to stare at the sky calmly. Her red lips revealed a shallow smile. Although this trump card of Mu Chen made her surprised as well, she had always believed in Mu Chen. Therefore, she had always believed that this seemingly thin boy wasn't someone that would be easily overwhelmed by others.

Everything that he had lost, he would slowly get it back.

While everybody's gaze were focused on Mu Chen's body, Mu Chen directed his thoughts into his body. This is because he could feel unique

changes occurring within his aura sea.

Within his aura sea, the Nine Nether Bird was sitting elegantly on top of the mandala flower. Black flames would surge out endlessly from its body as it rushed into the Spirit on top of the Spiritual Energy light wheel.

At this moment, Mu Chen's Spirit was completely covered with black flames. It looked extremely mysterious.

When the Nine Nether Bird glanced at the Spirit on top of the Spiritual Energy light wheel, it muttered lazily: "It actually managed to assimilate with my power to this extent. What a lucky fellow."

This power was naturally brought forth by the Bloodlink Bond. When Mu Chen had fought against An Ran within the Northern Heavens Hall, he had used this power as well. However, the power at that time was completely incomparable with the power right now.

Although Mu Chen had completed the Bloodlink Bond with the Nine Nether Bird, it doesn't mean that he could directly use the Soul Essence's energy as he did not ingest the Nine Nether Bird's Soul Essence. Instead, he needed to gradually assimilate with the Nine Nether Bird's power. The more he had assimilated with it, the more power he would be able to control.

Moreover, this power would remain with him even if the Nine Nether Bird had left his body. Not to mention, when he had reached the limits of the assimilation, Mu Chen could even become the Nine Nether Bird, and possess all the abilities of the Nine Nether Bird.

From a certain extent, Mu Chen was basically considered to be a human form of a Nine Nether Bird!

It wasn't a half-baked existence that Yang Hong and the others had formed.

This was the benefits of a Bloodlink Bond!

In other words, the Bloodlink Bond is a power that could evolve. For people like Yang Hong, who had directly ingested a Soul Essence, they would be able to gain more strength early on. However, its potential was

far less than the former method.

In the sky, Mu Chen clenched his hands slowly while his body was wrapped in black flames. He could feel that the dense Spiritual Energy that was surging within his body. This power was enough to destroy mountains.

As his assimilation with the Nine Nether Bird increased, he would be able to use more of its power. This power wasn't like the power that he had temporarily borrowed against the fight with Liu Jingshan. It was a power that he had complete control over.

Mu Chen slowly raised his head. A black fired burned within his eyes as he stared at the Ancient Tiger Dragon far away. At this moment, the latter's red eyes were focused on him tightly.

At this instant, Yang Hong's heart stopped out of shock. He originally thought that the battle was about to end, but a sudden change had occurred.

Although he wasn't able to clearly see the appearance of the mysterious black bird behind Mu Chen, Yang Hong was able to feel that the Ancient Tiger Dragon that he had ingested was trembling in fear. It seemed to be fearful of the mysterious black bird behind Mu Chen.

Since the Ancient Tiger Dragon was afraid of this mysterious Spiritual Beast, its ranking had to be at least listed on the top 30 of the Myriad Beast Record's Earth Ranking!

He could not imagine how Mu Chen was able to ingest a Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence of that level. Even for him, he had only managed to ingest the Ancient Tiger Dragon's Soul Essence after his father joined forces with various Elders and that was only barely a success. But what did this Mu Chen rely on to do this?

This person is too dangerous!

This thought flashed through Yang Hong's heart. In this instant, killing intent rushed out from him. He understood that if he continued to let Mu Chen live, he, Yang Hong, would definitely be completely suppressed by

him. As long as they were both within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy it would be impossible for him to become a dazzling existence.

This was something that Yang Hong wouldn't accept!

"Kill him!"

Killing intent surged through Yang Hong's heart. As he immediately roared out into the sky, an azure light surged out like waves. It rumbled as it rushed through the sky in order to envelop Mu Chen under it.

It was evident that Yang Hong was going to use everything that he could to kill Mu Chen.

When Mu Chen stared at the rumbling waves of Spiritual Energy approaching, he immediately concentrated and the gigantic black bird lifted its wings. Black flames surged out and formed into a sea of flames as it protected him.

Rumble!

The rumbling azure light rushed over and collided against the sea of flames. However, once the azure light made contact with the blazing flames, it was evaporated instantly.

The mysterious black flame seemed to have burned even the Spiritual Energy.

Yang Hong's eyes changed instantly and recklessness filled his heart. Originally, he had the absolute advantage against Mu Chen, but all of a sudden, his advantage had completely vanished. Instead, he had become unable to even destroy Mu Chen's defenses.

The Ancient Tiger Dragon roared furiously as it attacked. However, the sea of black flames did not budge. In front of the mysterious black bird, the Ancient Tiger Dragon that was formed by Yang Hong, was like an angry loach.

At this instant, Mu Chen stared calmly at Yang Hong, who was completely furious. His body floated up and he landed on the mysterious black bird. Then, he flew up high in the sky.

As Mu Chen stared down condescendingly from above at the Ancient Tiger Dragon formed by Yang Hong, he suddenly closed his eyes. At the same time, he circulated the Great Pagoda Art within his body.

Black lights begin to emerge within the depths of his body and linked up with each other.

In the sky, the black light suddenly descended down from above as a bell sound rang out. Countless gazes hurriedly looked at the direction of the sound. Within the sky, the mysterious black bird had started to fade away. Instead, what replaced it was a massive nine-floor black tower. Black flames were wrapped on the surface of the black tower.

An extraordinary fluctuation rippled out in waves from the black tower.

When the Ancient Tiger Dragon formed by Yang Hong had looked up at the nine-floor tower in the sky, a sense of anxiety and fear filled its heart.

Just when Yang Hong had felt uneasy about the tower, this nine-floor black tower had suddenly brought forth a horrifying energy fluctuation; it tore through the sky. And under countless gazes, it had completely suppressed the Ancient Tiger Dragon!

Chapter 185: Black Tower Seals the Tiger Dragon

Boom!

At this moment, shockwaves rippled out high up in the skies. An extraordinary Spiritual Energy fluctuation condensed like a storm as a powerful Spiritual Energy pressure enveloped the entire world.

The source of this rumbling Spiritual Energy was a massive black tower. Black flames surged throughout the surface of the tower as it descended down.

The scene was quite a shock and countless individuals watching could not hide the surprise within their eyes.

Even for those who had reached the Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase, this attack was enough to stun them.

On the summit, Mu Kui and Bing Qing had exceptionally solemn expressions and their eyes twitched slightly. From the Spiritual Energy fluctuation in the sky, they could feel a fatal-type of danger.

It was evident that they never expected that Mu Chen and Yang Hong's battle would be this extreme.

In this instant, Mu Kui and Bing Qing exchanged gazes with each other. They both knew that the outcome of this battle would all depend on this one move.

In the sky, Elder Zhu Tian watched as the black tower descended down. A hint of confusion suddenly appeared on his handsome face and he frowned. Then, he muttered to himself: "This black tower...Why does it feel that I've seen it somewhere before..."

Even though he said that, Elder Zhu Tian had thought hard about it, yet he could not remember where he had seen this black tower. Thus, he could only shake his head helplessly. It seemed that this freshman known as Mu Chen wasn't as simple as the information that he had known about

him. Otherwise, how could a person from such a small Northern Spiritual Realm possess such frightening techniques?

"The outcome of this battle has probably been decided..."

Elder Zhu Tian lifted his head as he stared at the black tower, who had formed a massive shadow on the ground. It was clear that this attack contained all their strengths from both sides. They weren't holding back at all. Thus, the one who was at the disadvantage would probably end up losing completely.

In the sky above the summit, the Ancient Tiger Dragon formed by Yang Hong glared at the black tower, which was emitting an immense pressure. He, too, was able to detect a hint of unease and danger.

If he failed to stop Mu Chen's attack, he would probably end up in a complete defeat.

Once he lost, his achievements would all end up in Mu Chen's reputation. It was something that the prideful Yang Hong couldn't accept. No matter what, he must not let Mu Chen step on him!

"In the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, I, Yang Hong, am the most dazzling existence. Mu Chen, if you want to stop me, then I must force it so that I will be stepping on you!" A furious roar echoed within Yang Hong's mind. In the blood-red eyes of the Ancient Tiger Dragon, ferociousness gushed out.

The Ancient Tiger Dragon raised its head and roared out to the sky. Its roar was like a dragon, yet at the same time, it was like a tiger. It contained a deep fierceness emotion that was similar to the ingested Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence. Perhaps when he had obtained this power, his hidden personality was somewhat affected by the Soul Essence. Therefore, it was apparent that Yang Hong had changed slightly and became brutal like the Ancient Tiger Dragon.

"Boom!"

As the Ancient Tiger Dragon roared, a dense azure light gushed out of the massive body. Golder tiger stripes emerged on the surface of the Tiger

Dragon's body and it started to glow. When the azure light and the golden light both appeared near the Ancient Tiger Dragon, it seemed to have formed into an azure dragon and a golden tiger that were fighting against each other. A hint of ferociousness had suddenly surged throughout the world.

"Mu Chen. I am the Number One Freshman, nobody can steal it away from me!"

This violent shout echoed through Yang Hong's heart and he immediately concentrated. At this moment, the Ancient Tiger Dragon swung its massive tail upwards, it emitted an azure light, and covered a massive range.

Roar! Roar!

When the roars of the Ancient Tiger Dragon resounded out constantly throughout the world, everybody lifted their heads up in response. They watched as the Ancient Tiger Dragon rushed straight up into the sky.

And from above, the black tower with black flames continued to descend as it suppressed everything.

In this instant, both of them had red eyes!

Under countless gazes, accompanied with the black flames and azure light, the black tower and the Ancient Tiger Dragon soared through the sky and finally collided heavily with each other.

In the instant that they met, the world seemed to tremble. The ground that was kilometers below them started to tremble and cracks quietly spread out.

A stinging light with violent Spiritual Energy fluctuations surged out from the sky. Rumbling sounds reverberated out along with it.

At this moment, the numerous gazes endured the stinging pain as they watched the furious collision between the two individuals. The violent and raging Spiritual Energy fluctuations emitted out and distorted the air slightly.

“Roar!”

The Ancient Tiger Dragon continued to growl furiously as it charged ferociously. Waves of azure light smashed onto the black tower as it attempted to shatter it.

Despite this frenzied attack, the black tower remained motionless. Black flames surged through it and the azure light was burned whenever it approached the black tower.

“Buzz!”

Finally, in response to the powerful offensive displayed by the Ancient Tiger Dragon, a mysterious engraving slowly emerged on the tower. Black light quickly gathered on the base of the black tower and formed into a massive black rune.

This black rune moved slowly around, causing it so that nobody was able to see it clearly. However, a mysterious fluctuation with sealing abilities seemed to have emitted out from it.

“Pagoda Tower. Suppress All Things!”

Within the black tower, an ancient bell sound resounded out. All of a sudden, the massive black rune descended down and smashed onto the Ancient Tiger Dragon’s body.

Just from that one contact, the azure light emitted from the Ancient Tiger Dragon’s body suddenly darkened. A mournful roar also came out from the Ancient Tiger Dragon’s mouth.

It was able to detect that a mysterious force was entering its body through the black rune. Once this power invaded its body, it had sealed all of the Spiritual Energy circulation paths within its body.

It was as if it was forcibly sealed by it.

As the azure light darkened, a bright glow burst out from the black tower and it directly suppressed the massive body of the Ancient Tiger Dragon. After suffering such a heavy attack, the massive body quickly descended down from the sky along with the black tower.

Boom! Boom!

Everybody watched as the Ancient Tiger Dragon descended down, an explosion seemed to have emerged when the black tower collided with the Ancient Tiger Dragon. Even the ground below had collapsed from the collision.

“Dong!”

Under countless gazes, the black tower had finally descended down to the ground. In the end, it had landed on top of a mountain and the mountain instantly trembled. Many boulders rolled down the mountain and the entire mountain started to collapse.

Billowing smoke rose up into the sky and covered their sight.

At this instant, the entire world was completely silent. The only sound that still existed was the echoed of the boulders rolling down the mountain. Everybody’s gaze was completely focused on the collapsing mountain’s peak. The victor should have been determined, right?

From the foot of the mountain, Ye Qingling, Zhou Ling and the others all flew up into the sky as they watched nervously at that location. A conclusion had finally appeared for this shocking battle, right?

At the same time, Li Xuantong, too, focused his gaze in that direction.

On the summit of the Northern Spirit Mountain, Mu Kui, Bing Qing and Luo Li also flew up into the sky. Judging from their appearance, it seemed that the outcome of this battle was more important than Spirit Flag that represented the Number One Freshman.

And under the countless gazes, the smoke on the collapsing mountain gradually faded away. Immediately afterwards, a land filled with cracks had emerged in their eyes. The mountain peak had been turned into a flat land. Moreover, the entire mountain was completely destroyed.

At the center of the mountain, a huge crater had emerged. The violent Spiritual Energy emitted out from that crater had slowly dissipated.

The situation was finally clear for everybody watching.

Everybody's gaze immediately gathered at that direction. Then, bustling commotions resounded throughout the world.

At the crater, the Ancient Tiger Dragon and the black tower had already disappeared without a trace. What replaced it were two slightly awkward individuals. Both of them had bloody bodies and torn clothes as they confronted each other.

These two individuals were naturally Yang Hong and Mu Chen.

At this moment, Yang Hong's hair had turned messy and it wasn't as stylish as before. His eyes were staring at Mu Chen in front of him. At the same time, a surging madness and fear appeared in his eyes.

"They're actually still standing?"

Seeing the two individuals confront each other, everyone was stunned. Aren't these two individuals too stubborn?

Mu Chen was slightly pale. He stared at Yang Hong and slowly wiped the blood off from the corner of his mouth. Then, he turned around and slowly walked away from the cracked ground.

"I've said it before. I will take back what belongs to me. This time, it's your turn to pay back your debt. Next time, it will be Ji Xuan." Mu Chen walked out of the cracked area and a hoarse voice resounded out.

Puchi.

At this moment, Yang Hong's expression finally turned red and blood sprayed out as he lifted his head up. Then, his body slowly tilted forward before it crashed down on the ground. His eyes were filled with disbelief.

He actually... Lost again to Mu Chen.

Is that bastard truly this terrifying? Even though he had lost a year's worth of cultivation... Even though he had lost the Spiritual Road Empowerment... Why is he still able to catch up with me?

Yang Hong's eyes slowly closed. No matter how much he wasn't willing to admit it, he knew that deep inside perhaps only Ji Xuan was able to suppress a dazzling existence like Mu Chen.

Chapter 186: Who's the Number One Freshman?

Violent Spiritual Energy surged through the world before it finally dissipated. At this moment, countless gazes were focused on the place with shattered ground. To be precise, they were staring at the boy who was slowly walking out of the crater.

The boy's handsome face was slightly pale, and the Spiritual Energy fluctuations emitting from his body had weakened significantly. It seemed that he was slightly tired.

However, nobody laughed at his weakened and tired state. Even the seniors had serious expressions as they stared at him. It was evident that the earlier battle had shocked them as well.

A battle of this degree would rarely occur between freshmen. Even the seniors couldn't afford to deal with such a fierce fight.

In front of them, the freshman known as Mu Chen had earned everybody's respect and attention with his strength.

At the foot of the mountain, numerous freshmen were stunned as they watched this scene. The silence lasted for a long time before someone slowly raised their hands and started clapping gently. Soon, sounds of applause resounded out quickly as it echoed throughout the skies.

The performance and abilities displayed by Mu Chen had truly impressed them. At the same time, it gave face to the freshmen. At the very least, they'd be able to talk back towards the arrogant seniors within the academy.

'There's an amazing person among us freshmen!'

Mu Chen stood atop the shattered ground as he stared out towards the numerous figures in his surroundings. Then, when he heard the thunderous applause, he couldn't do anything but helplessly smile.

On the peak of a mountain, Li Xuantong gazed at the slender figure and

slowly retracted his gaze. His chin nodded slightly. Mu Chen's appearance today hadn't disappointed him at all. As expected, Luo Li's eyes were quite capable.

However, even with this battle, Mu Chen still wasn't worthy of standing next to Luo Li. He'd only become an obstacle to her, and when that time came...the two of them might be hurt.

Li Xuantong's eyes drooped slightly. He knew that he liked Luo Li, yet Luo Li had only treated him as a friend. Even so, this was something that he felt that he had to do for Luo Li. Perhaps she might disagree with his actions, but it was needed.

The thunderous applauses lasted for a while before it gradually faded away. At this moment, Luo Li quickly rushed over and appeared beside Mu Chen. Her glass-like eyes stared at the latter as she asked gently, "Are you alright?"

Mu Chen smiled and nodded his head. However, his pale expression was apparently unconvincing. After all, Yang Hong wasn't an ordinary opponent. Even though he'd successfully defeated him, he'd still paid a great price. Right now, he, too, was considerably weak and powerless.

From the distant sky, Elder Zhu Tian slowly approached and appeared in the sky in front of Mu Chen. His eyes stared peculiarly at Mu Chen before he smiled, "Little guy, this battle is your victory. However, you didn't obtain the Spirit Flag yet, so you can't be regarded as the Number One Freshman."

Countless gazes immediately became focused on this scene. It was true. Although Mu Chen had managed to defeat Yang Hong, the Freshmen Competition wasn't a duel within an arena. Only the person who managed to obtain the Spirit Flag could be considered the Number One Freshman, and it was clear that Mu Chen hadn't satisfied this condition yet. However, the latter's strength had already made everyone accept him as the strongest.

Nobody present at the scene believed that there was someone among the freshmen that could defeat Mu Chen in a one-on-one duel.

When Ye Qingling and the others heard the words from Elder Zhu Tian, they felt slightly regretful. Although they hoped that Mu Chen would become the Number One Freshman, they knew that Mu Chen wasn't in a decent state right now. It was clear to them that both Mu Kui and Bing Qing were tricky individuals. The two of them weren't a lot weaker than Yang Hong. Therefore, there was a big disadvantage for Mu Chen if he was to fight against the two of them.

At this moment, Mu Kui and Bing Qing rushed over. They stood in the sky as they watched Mu Chen.

But under the numerous gazes, Mu Chen suddenly smiled. He shook his head and replied, "Elder Zhu Tian, I give up on the remaining battles. Let the others compete for the title of the Number One Freshman."

Regard the title of the Number One Freshman, Mu Chen had never cared much about it. The only reason why he'd gone against Yang Hong was because of the grudge that they held. And now, the outcome had been decided. Thus, he didn't want to force himself and carry out a high-intensity battle once again. This would only be a burden on his body.

"Oh? You're actually giving up on becoming Number One?" Elder Zhu Tian was surprised as he stared at Mu Chen. A boy like Mu Chen should be at the age where he was young, fit, and impulsive. A catchy title should be enough to make him fight to death. However, Mu Chen actually gave up on this chance?

Countless seniors were also surprised as they stared at Mu Chen. The latter's imposing aura was at the peak. If he continued to fight after his victory over Yang Hong, it might be possible for him to obtain the Spirit Flag if he joined forces with the girl in black dress that he was extremely close to.

Mu Chen nodded his head. The rewards for the top 5 individuals were actually pretty close. Aside from the amount of Spiritual Values that they would obtain, the rest were basically the same. Moreover, they would all be able to enter the "Spiritual Arts Hall". Therefore, he didn't feel the need to fight against Mu Kui and Bing Qing for the title of the strongest.

“The competition for the Spirit Flag will belong to you two now.” Mu Chen directed a smile at Mu Kui and Bing Qing as he spoke.

“You’re not going to fight?”

When Mu Kui heard this, disappointment filled his eyes. Then, he shook his head melancholically as he replied, “I’m not interested in the so-called Number One Freshman. Right now, I’m more interested in a fight against you. How about it? Do you want to test me out?”

Mu Chen was stunned as he gave a bitter smile. This Mu Kui was truly a battle maniac...

“He isn’t in a decent state right now. If you enjoy fighting, I will fight against you. At the very least, I won’t disappoint you.” Luo Li said to Mu Kui.

When Mu Kui noticed this, he smiled embarrassedly. Then, he seemed slightly anxious as he shook his head. “Since you’re not going to compete anymore, the Freshmen Competition has turned completely boring. I can’t be bothered to fight against two women. That’s why, I’ll give up as well.”

“However, you must promise me: When you’ve fully recovered, you have to fight against me once... Just like earlier. There’s no need to hesitate. The more ruthless you are, the better the fight will become.”

Mu Chen could only nod helplessly in response to these words. He, too, had a favorable impression towards Mu Kui’s straightforward personality. Therefore, he decided to put up with it.

“What did you mean when you mentioned women?”

Bing Qing suddenly frowned. She stared coldly at Mu Kui and a freezing chill slowly emanated out, “Do you really think that you can defeat me?”

Mu Kui was stunned and soon let out a hollow laugh. Against the creatures known as women, Mu Kui had always felt a headache. Therefore, he didn’t openly provoke Bing Qing again. After all, this girl was quite powerful and he might not win if they were to fight.

Seeing Mu Kui turn completely silent, Bing Qing finally turned her gaze

towards Mu Chen and spoke, “The Freshmen Competition has become boring because of you. Everybody is giving up on it. If I were to seize the Spirit Flag, it would only make me look like a fool. Therefore, I don’t want to take the Spirit Flag either.”

Mu Chen’s mouth twitched at this moment. Why were all these individuals so unique... They didn’t want the title of the Number One Freshmen when it was handed directly to them. If it was anyone else like Yang Hong, they’d be quite anxious to rush over and pluck the Spirit Flag.

“All three of you are giving up?” Elder Zhu Tian was baffled as he stared at Mu Chen and the others. It was evident that he, too, had noticed that this year’s freshmen were quite unique.

Mu Kui and Bing Qing casually nodded their heads. Then, they both turned over and looked at Mu Chen, “This time, you have the right to become the Number One Freshman. After all, I would’ve probably ended up in a similar state as Yang Hong if I were to fight against you just now. Thus, if Luo Li, who is beside you, has no argument, then you deserve to become the Number One Freshman.”

Mu Kui and Bing Qing’s words were indeed true. In the earlier battle, Mu Chen had fought furiously against Yang Hong and it was quite an exciting match. Even they had to recognize that they would’ve probably lost to that terrifying black tower that was revealed by Mu Chen in the final moments of the battle.

Although Mu Chen didn’t fight directly against them, everybody was able to recognize and understand a few facts. Therefore, they didn’t waste any time. With their prideful attitudes, neither Mu Kui nor Bing Qing wanted to take advantage of the weakened Mu Chen and seize the title of the Number One Freshman.

“Thank you for your praise.”

Mu Chen smiled and replied, “However, since we’ve already given up, let’s have Luo Li pick up the Spirit Flag. I believe that she’s more worthy of obtaining the title of the Number One Freshman than me.”

Although nobody had ever seen Luo Li’s true ability, Mu Chen was still

able to feel that Luo Li's true strength was definitely beyond Yang Hong. If Mu Chen were to fight against Luo Li unreservedly, he didn't have the confidence that he'd defeat her.

When Mu Kui and Bing Qing heard this, they, too, glanced over at Luo Li. Then, they nodded their heads. Both of them were able to sense the same thing that Mu Chen had felt from Luo Li. Although Luo Li didn't fight often, nobody dared to underestimate this beautiful girl. After all, even Bing Qing had stopped and temporarily abandoned her goal when Luo Li had stopped her.

Luo Li was startled for a moment. It was evident that she didn't understand why the title of the Number One Freshman had suddenly fallen to her. At this moment, she glared at Mu Chen. This nasty person had actually pushed her to the front.

Perhaps others might covet the title of the Number One Freshman, but Luo Li didn't really cared about it.

"Cough. Just to remind you, first place receives 500,000 Spiritual Value. Right now, we're quite poor. If we obtained this Spiritual Value, we'd be able to improve ourselves quite a bit. It truly isn't easy raising a family." Mu Chen approached Luo Li and gently fiddled with Luo Li's slender hands.

At this instant, Luo Li was quite furious, yet she wanted to laugh as well. However, she didn't want to do anything to Mu Chen, who was quite powerless right now. Thus, she could only grit her teeth and charge to the summit under numerous gazes as she pulled out the enormous Spirit Flag.

Afterwards, she descended down while holding the massive Spirit Flag. She smiled slightly at Elder Zhu Tian, who was in a daze, and said, "Elder Zhu Tian, can you announce the results now?"

Tears of laughter filled Zhu Tian's eyes as he nodded. These freshmen were truly quite fascinating, and impossible to understand at the same time. After all, Luo Li hadn't fought against anyone, yet she had somehow become the Number One Freshman...

Even amongst the history of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, it

was probably the first time that a person had obtained the title of the Number One Freshman that easily, right?

Chapter 187: Conversation

The Freshmen Competition eventually came to a rather comical conclusion. The one to take the title of the number one freshman was neither Yang Hong nor Mu Chen, who had fought in a life-or-death battle, but Luo Li, who hadn't even fought at all.

Many of the freshmen and seniors had been somewhat disappointed with this turn of events. They couldn't help but smile wryly, but there wasn't much to complain about. They had already witnessed the spectacular showdown earlier between Mu Chen and Yang Hong during this Freshmen Competition. It was likely that any further fight would not have been able to eclipse that performance so the desire to watch them was not high.

The so-called Number One Freshman was just a title. Luo Li, Mu Kui, and Bing Qing may not have fought, but their abilities were unquestionable. The ease with which they had reached the summit had already confirmed their strength.

In addition, there had been occasions where the strongest freshman hadn't been the one to seize the Spiritual Flag. However, everybody naturally knew how to assess the strongest freshman deep within their hearts.

The battle they had just witnessed earlier had left them completely shaken. Even the proud seniors of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy couldn't help but admire Mu Chen for achieving this level as only a freshman. They obviously felt in their hearts that Mu Chen is fully deserving of being first among this year's freshmen class.

Of course, whether Mu Chen had any thoughts about what the others were thinking was another question.

The cultivation fervor among the freshmen had died down somewhat following the end of the Freshmen Competition. During this transition period in Northern Spiritual Heavens Academy, they were currently familiarizing themselves to the new surroundings and truly becoming a

part of this massive spiritual academy.

In Mu Chen's case, he also took three days off for rest and recuperation to fully recover from his fight against Yang Hong. Although Mu Chen viewed the latter unfavorably, he had to admit that Yang Hong was quite capable. Based on his talent alone, he would be able to carve out a place for himself at the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

However, Mu Chen did not fear him; he had already beaten him once before, and naturally there will be a second time and a third. If Yang Hong is unable to live with it and want to cause problems for Mu Chen, he would not mind letting him experience the taste of defeat again.

On top of a very small house, Mu Chen motionlessly sat cross-legged, looking up at the vast blue sky. A long time passed before he exhaled a mouthful of white air and stretched his body which had become somewhat stiff from inactivity.

He had been quietly residing here to recover from his injuries these last few days. As for the commotions that he had caused due to his duel with Yang Hong the other day, he was hardly concerned about it.

Mu Chen swept a glance around the outskirts of the freshman area; bustling conversations could be heard coming from there and the mood seemed exceedingly exuberant. Ever since the Freshmen Competition, their residential area had undoubtedly become the most dazzling of all the freshman areas. Plenty of freshmen made their way here wanting to join the Goddess Luo Association and follow Mu Chen and Luo Li.

However, Mu Chen and Luo Li clearly didn't give much thought to this kind of thing. On the other hand, Zhou Ling had shown an intense enthusiasm. Moving back and forth all day long, he worked hard to expand the Goddess Luo Association's prestige and influence.

"This guy..."

Mu Chen gave a resigned smile. He couldn't relate to Zhou Ling's passion, but he had a favorable impression of Zhou Ling and therefore supported his undertaking.

“Hmm?”

Mu Chen was looking into the distance, but his expression abruptly changed as he turned his head, only to see a streak of light approach from the distant sky. Within a few breaths of time, it had already appeared above his small house.

The figure turned out to be a man with a handsome face and a pair of indifferent eyes. It was precisely Li Xuantong.

Li Xuantong emerged and glanced lazily at Mu Chen. His eyebrows could not help but crease as he said. “Looking like this, could it be that you believe that your victory over Yang Hong and becoming the number one freshman is enough for you to be complacent?”

Mu Chen frowned, but did not bother to argue with him and replied. “The number one freshman is Luo Li and not me. Besides, I had just recovered; a small break doesn’t seem too excessive, right?”

Mu Chen did not hold a particularly good opinion of Li Xuantong. He seemed to be familiar with Luo Li, but Mu Chen did not appreciate him interfering in the affairs between Luo Li and himself. He might have his reasons, but he definitely did not have any respect or consideration for them.

However, since Li Xuantong did not have any bad intentions toward Luo Li, Mu Chen had tolerated the uncomfortable feeling in his heart, not wanting to fall out with him.

I also witnessed the battle during the Freshman Competition a few days earlier.” Li Xuantong said indifferently. “I have to admit that you do have a bit of ability, but like I’ve said before, you still do not have the qualification to be in a relationship with Luo Li.”

Mu Chen’s eyes slightly narrowed as a trace of anger flit across his eyes, his voice becoming flat. “Senior Li Xuantong, don’t you think you are sticking your nose where it doesn’t belong?”

Mu Chen stared at Li Xuantong and continued. “Please remember that you aren’t anybody to Luo Li, so you have no business interfering in her

choice. If you despise me, don't hesitate to come at me; whatever you want to do, I'll accompany you."

"Are you angry?" Li Xuantong smiled faintly as his expression slowly became frosty. He looked at Mu Chen with a sharp gaze similar to cutting edge of a sword and said: "It's not that I want to interfere in her choice; rather, it's you who is preventing her from making the right decision. You're not like what she thinks and, at the same time, you also can't imagine her burden. You like her, but do not know that you staying by her side is a grave hindrance to her."

"That is why leaving her is the best thing you can do for the both of you. I also wish that you are able to do this very much." Li Xuantong said with a deep voice.

Mu Chen's eyes slowly gained a fierce light. He stood up, looking coldly at Li Xuantong and said. "And if I say no?"

"In order to lessen her suffering in the future, I'll have no choice but to make my move." Li Xuantong said indifferently.

"You can try!"

Mu Chen's eyes turned cold as he stared at Li Xuantong. Dark black Spiritual Energy rapidly surged out from his body.

Li Xuantong remained expressionless as he took a step forward. The Spiritual Aura of the world immediately converged, causing the sky above the small house to become somewhat distorted. An extremely terrifying pressure exploded out and came crashing down on Mu Chen.

This frightening pressure enveloped Mu Chen's body, but his tall and lean frame remained perfectly straight like a spear. His eyes fixated on Li Xuantong and did not show any sign of fear, even if the person before him is the Heaven Ranking Rank 2 powerhouse.

Kacha.

Mu Chen sunk into the ground, causing the ground to split open and cracks to appear. The dark black Spiritual Energy that covered his body also became somewhat muted, but his expression remained unwavering as

he stared at Li Xuantong.

Such a confrontation continued for half a minute before Li Xuantong took a step back, causing the oppressive feeling to immediately dissipate. He gazed at Mu Chen and said coldly. “I’ll give you two months. If you still do not leave Luo Li within two months, I will take action.”

“You are an awfully arrogant person. I believe if you are repeatedly beaten at the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, it will be a severe psychological shock for you.”

Li Xuantong continued apathetically. “Don’t question my ability to keep my word. And believe me when I say the hardships you may encounter in the future will seem mild in comparison to what I’ll do to you. So I hope you are smart enough to know when to cut your losses and back down.

Mu Chen’s eyes became icy-cold and his five fingers slowly clenched into a fist at this moment. This self-righteous prick really rubs people the wrong way.

“You should carefully consider your next move during these two months.”

Li Xuantong suddenly turned his head and look into the distance. A streak of light flew over from that direction before revealing a familiar silhouette of a beautiful woman. It was precisely Luo Li. She had obviously sensed the confrontation between the two. A trace of anger could be detected from the Spiritual Energy fluctuation.

“I hope you don’t reveal what was said between us to Luo Li to get her to stop me. I will be thoroughly disappointed if that happens.” Li Xuantong said indifferently. Without further delay, his figure moved and disappeared into the distance.

Swish.

Once Li Xuantong left, Luo Li rushed to the top of the small house, her beautiful face turned to look coldly at the direction Li Xuantong had left. Afterwards, she looked at Mu Chen with her glass-like eyes and said. “He didn’t do anything to you, right?”

Mu Chen looked back and smiled; his eyes were somewhat hazy. “No.”

Luo Li stared at Mu Chen, and then said after a slight hesitation. “He didn’t say anything, right?”

Mu Chen stared into Luo Li’s clear and lovely glass-like eyes and then suddenly reached out to take the young girl into his arms. Caught by surprise, the young girl was too slow to react as her delicate cheeks flushed red, but she did not try to push him away. She was able to sense that there was something bothering Mu Chen.

“Luo Li.”

Mu Chen lowered his head, lightly breathing in the delicate fragrance of the young girl’s hair, before he said softly. “No matter what, regardless of what price I need to pay or effort I need to put in, I will absolutely not let you go.”

The young girl’s white arm wrapped lightly around Mu Chen’s waist as her face rested upon Mu Chen’s chest. Softness flit across her clear eyes as her small head gently nodded.

Mu Chen slowly raised his head and looked in the direction that Li Xuantong had disappeared to. A penetrating light gathered in his dark pupils.

Li Xuantong, I don’t care what reasons you may have, but if you really want to get involved I will not let you get what you want so easily.

Mu Chen knew that Li Xuantong was difficult to deal with, much more difficult than Yang Hong, but he also clearly understood that there are some things that he simply cannot give up, no matter the consequence.

The girl in his arms, for example.

Chapter 188: Spiritual Energy Fusion

A dark clear night enshrouded the massive Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy as a faint moonlight poured down from above. At this moment, the entire world seemed to be covered with a hint of silver color.

However, within the bustling and populated Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, it was still shining brightly even though it was late in the night. In a few training grounds, it was still possible to see people cultivating endlessly.

In the freshmen area, Mu Chen was sitting cross-legged in his room, simply letting the dazzling moonlight shine through his window and illuminate his body. At this moment, his eyebrow twitched slightly while his eyes flashed.

The conversation that he had during the day with Li Xuantong had finally made him serious. It was evident that Li Xuantong was planning to intervene with his relationship with Luo Li. Moreover, it was clear that he did not have much goodwill towards Mu Chen.

There was no doubt that Li Xuantong was extremely powerful. After all, he was a powerhouse ranked second on the Heavenly Ranking even among all the geniuses within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Nobody would dare underestimate him.

If he was actually going to intervene in this matter, it might become troublesome for Mu Chen.

Thus, in order to deal with this problem, Mu Chen did not have any choice but to become stronger. Only then, he would not be afraid of any possible actions that Li Xuantong would take against him.

But for the current Mu Chen, Li Xuantong was clearly extremely difficult to deal with. Although they have not fought against each other, Mu Chen had already predicted that Li Xuantong had far surpassed the Heavenly Fusion Stage.

The gap between him and Li Xuantong was too large. It wouldn’t be easy

for him to cover the gaps with his various techniques. Aside from relying on the Nine Nether Bird's power like he did against Liu Jingshan, there was no way for him to deal with Li Xuantong. However, if he was to do that, he believed that he wouldn't have won with his own strength. After all, the battle with Liu Jingshan was about life and death. As for the battle against Li Xuantong, it hadn't reached the same extent of resolve yet.

Furthermore, Mu Chen did not like showing off with the Nine Nether Bird's power. After all, this power did not truly belong to him.

"In order to be able to compete against Li Xuantong, I probably will have to breakthrough to the Heavenly Fusion Stage..."

Mu Chen muttered to himself. The gap between a Spirit Stage and a Heavenly Fusion Stage was far too enormous. Even he could only compete against a Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase after exhausting all his techniques. Once he confronts a Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase, he would be at a disadvantage. Not to mention an entity like Li Xuantong, who had far surpassed the Heavenly Fusion Stage.

Therefore, if Mu Chen wanted to reduce the gap between the two of them, he would have to break past the Spirit Stage and advance to the Heavenly Fusion Stage during these two months!

Mu Chen nodded his head gently. It seems that he couldn't relax even after he had defeated Yang Hong. There are countless geniuses within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. If he did not continue to work hard and constantly push himself to become stronger, perhaps next time he would be the one that loses.

"Just another two days and we will be able to enter the "Spiritual Art Hall". I must try my best to obtain a Deity Tier Spiritual Art. This way, I will have another trump card up my sleeves." Mu Chen mumbled.

Deity Tier Spiritual Art. These words were extremely tempting to anyone. Even Mu Chen could not help but become moved upon thinking about it. After all, he had never seen a Spiritual Art at that level before. However, it was clearly synonymous with the meaning of powerful.

In the Spiritual Art Hall, there are countless Deity Tier Spiritual Arts for

sale. However, the high prices stopped Mu Chen from obtaining them. Therefore, it was an excellent chance for him to enter the Spiritual Art Hall this time.

Although he knew that the chances of obtaining a Deity Tier Spiritual Art was extremely low, he still had to try no matter what.

"Power...Power..."

Mu Chen shook his head while he sighed unhappily. His leisurely days had been destroyed by Li Xuantong. Although he did not know what Li Xuantong wanted two months later, it was apparent that he would have to be well prepared.

Mu Chen curled his lips slightly and slowly closed his eyes. His consciousness sunk down into his aura sea. On top of the mandala flower, the Nine Nether Bird was lying down lazily as a black flame continued to burn endlessly on its body.

"Are there any methods to make me stronger?" Mu Chen scratched his head as he asked the Nine Nether Bird.

"Aren't you strong enough now? You were able to defeat a Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase opponent with your Spirit Stage Late Phase strength." The Nine Nether Bird extended its wings lazily. Every single one of its actions revealed a hint of elegance, causing Mu Chen to seriously doubt its gender.

"It isn't easy to deal with Li Xuantong." Mu Chen smiled and immediately responded. "Moreover, that person has been in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy for a long time. He probably has millions of Spiritual Values. Therefore, if we manage to obtain it, perhaps we would be able to buy the Northern Sea Dragon's Blood Essence..."

The Nine Nether Bird's eyes immediately brightened up upon hearing these words. The black flames on its body suddenly became more intense.

"So, can you help me think of a way to improve my strength? Once I become stronger, the speed of obtaining Spiritual Values would also accelerate. This way, you will be able to obtain the Northern Sea Dragon's

Blood Essence sooner." Mu Chen smiled. He had completely grasped the weak point of the Nine Nether Bird.

"That Li Xuantong is considerably stronger than you. He isn't someone that can be compared with Yang Hong. If you are going to confront him right now, you will absolutely get slaughtered." The Nine Nether Bird knew that Mu Chen was using its weakness to provoke it. Thus, it glared at him as it spoke.

"Don't I have two months?" Mu Chen smiled. Regarding the difference in strength, Mu Chen did not feel frustrated about it. After all, Li Xuantong was indeed quite talented and had cultivated in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy for countless years. If he didn't have such strength, he would have been looked down upon by others.

The Nine Nether Bird stared at Mu Chen as it spoke: "What you are thinking is correct. Right now, the most urgent matter is for you to quickly breakthrough to the Heavenly Fusion Stage. Otherwise, you wouldn't be able to compete against Li Xuantong."

Mu Chen nodded his head slightly. He also understood this. If he could not advance to the Heavenly Fusion Stage, he was not qualified to fight against Li Xuantong. Techniques were only a method of closing the gap between him and his opponents. But once the gap was too big, no matter how powerful his techniques were, it was completely useless in the face of absolute strength.

Mu Chen sighed. It looks like that he must attempt to breakthrough to the Heavenly Fusion Stage...

"Wait." Just when Mu Chen was about to exit his aura sea, the Nine Nether Bird suddenly spoke.

"Eh?" Mu Chen stared at it in confusion.

"It's true that you must breakthrough to the Heavenly Fusion Stage. However, I can provide a bit of help to strengthen you as well." The Nine Nether Bird responded. Currently, it had formed a Bloodlink Bond with Mu Chen. If Mu Chen was too weak and was killed by someone, it, too, would end up dead. Therefore, the Nine Nether Bird would not hide any

means of improving Mu Chen's strength.

"What help are you talking about?" Mu Chen was stunned and his face was instantly filled with delight as he asked.

"Spiritual Energy Fusion." The Nine Nether Bird replied faintly.

"Spiritual Energy Fusion?" Mu Chen repeated the phrase spoken by the Nine Nether Bird and was completely dumbfounded. It was evident that he had never heard of the term "Spiritual Energy Fusion" before.

"Spiritual Energy Fusion is something that could only be performed by someone with a Bloodlink Bond. It is actually quite simple. As long as we fuse our Spiritual Energy, you will be able to obtain a special power within your Spiritual Energy."

The Nine Nether Bird extended its wing. On top of its wings, a black flame was burning: "What do you think about my black flame?"

"It's truly powerful."

Mu Chen nodded honestly. The Nine Nether Bird's black flame was even able to incinerate Spiritual Energy. Moreover, since he was able to utilize the black flame when he had borrowed the Nine Nether Bird's power, he understood the effects of the black flames extremely well.

"This is called the Nine Nether Flame. It is an innate ability of the Nine Nether Bird race and can ignite Spiritual Energy and all types of energy. This flame is extremely powerful. Moreover, it would even accompany us through our evolution and evolve as well. Once I evolve into a Divine Beast, this Nine Nether Flame will evolve into the Nine Netherworld Flame. Furthermore, if I become even stronger and completely awaken the ancient Undying Bird's blood within my body, the flame will become unperishable unless I die." A hint of pride could be heard within the Nine Nether Bird's voice as it explained. It was evident that this Nine Nether Flame was something that the Nine Nether Bird's race was extremely proud of.

Mu Chen nodded his head as he praised it deep down inside. Within this world, there are indeed many wonders. Although the Spiritual Beasts are

quite different than humans, they, too, possess special abilities that humans would truly hope to obtain.

"If you are able to complete the Spiritual Energy Fusion, your Spiritual Energy will also possess the abilities of the Nine Nether Flame. From that moment onwards, the Spiritual Energy that you've cultivated will become more overbearing than anybody else's Spiritual Energy. It can be considered as a qualitative improvement of your Spiritual Energy."

"Oh?"

Mu Chen's eyes lit up. His Spiritual Energy will obtain the incinerating abilities of the Nine Nether Flame? Although Mu Chen was able to utilize a tiny amount of the Nine Nether Flame when he was borrowing the strength of the Nine Nether Bird, the Nine Nether Flame would vanish once he had stopped borrowing from the Nine Nether Bird. It would not remain within his own Spiritual Energy.

Hence, he had become surprised once he heard that the Spiritual Energy Fusion that the Nine Nether Bird had mentioned would allow his Spiritual Energy to possess the characteristics of the Nine Nether Flame.

"How can we perform this so-called Spiritual Energy Fusion?" Mu Chen asked urgently.

"The Spiritual Energy Fusion, it is not an easy task. Since the synchronization between me and you was too low previously, we were not able to reach the level of being able to perform it. However, we should be able to barely perform the Spiritual Energy Fusion right now."

A hint of delight appeared within the Nine Nether Bird's tone. "I must inform you, though. The Spiritual Energy Fusion is extremely painful. Your Spiritual Energy might be incinerated by my Nine Nether Flame, which would cause more pain than you being thrown into a volcano. If you are able to endure it and complete the fusion, your Spiritual Energy will change."

"So...Are you courageous enough to try it?"

Mu Chen did not hesitate and nodded. Flames began to burn within his

eyes: “When do we start?”

“There’s no need to hurry. You should rest for a day or two first. Then, after we leave the Spiritual Art Hall, we can find a place to cultivate and strive to help you breakthrough to the Heavenly Fusion Stage within two months. At the same time, we will also complete the Spiritual Energy Fusion!” The Nine Nether Bird responded.

“Good!”

Mu Chen grinned. If he was able to complete both tasks, his strength would likely increase significantly. When that happens, he would possess a few means to compete against Li Xuantong.

Chapter 189: Number One

In the following two days, Mu Chen followed what the Nine Nether Bird's instructions and didn't focus heavily on cultivation. Instead, he made the effort to rest calmly in order to reach his peak condition.

The results were quite excellent and in just two days, Mu Chen had completely recovered from his injuries in the battle against Yang Hong. The Spiritual Energy within his body surged endlessly throughout his body like a river and he could feel an immense power rippling through his limbs.

Compared to when he fought against Yang Hong, Mu Chen could feel that the Spiritual Energy within his body had become denser. Although the battle was quite dangerous, it clearly brought a few benefits to his cultivation. However, this increase did not make him reach the limits of a Spirit Stage Late Phase and the feeling of breakthrough did not appear yet...

Regarding the breakthrough, Mu Chen remained fairly calm. After all, it was not easy for one to advance to a Heavenly Fusion Stage. Even though he had cultivated steadily, it still required a certain catalyst and enough Spiritual Energy before he could truly advance to the Heavenly Fusion Stage!

Therefore, it was apparent that he could only cultivate quietly and wait for that day to arrive.

In the freshmen area, Mu Chen sat cross-legged on top of a clear lake as faint Spiritual Energy surrounded his body. It gave off an appearance as if he was floating above the water.

Beside the lake were a few training grounds. Numerous freshmen were either cultivating or sparring at that place and almost all of them were part of the Goddess Luo Association. After the day when Mu Chen had a fight with Yang Hong, the prideful "Wyvern Association" no longer dared to act arrogant. Instead, the "Goddess Luo Association" took the opportunity and increased in size. Luckily, both Zhou Ling and Ye

Qingling had experiences in managing a large group of people. Thus, they did not allow just anyone to enter. Only after they had passed through a few trials, they would be permitted to enter the Goddess Luo Association. This was the primary reason that the "Goddess Luo Association" was not filled with countless freshmen.

Amongst the freshmen, Mu Chen was currently the most dazzling figure. He shone brighter than Yang Hong, Mu Kui and any of the others. After all, the battle on the day of the Freshmen Competition was just too amazing. Even after a few days, numerous freshmen were still talking about it. However, this was not limited to the freshmen, even a few seniors would praise them and inform others of that brilliant fight.

Therefore, many curious and awed gazes would be focused at the center of lake.

As Mu Chen sat cross-legged on top of the lake, he could feel the ripples from the surface of the water. A hint of serenity had emitted out from his heart and caused the flow of his Spiritual Energy within his body to become more agile.

Suddenly, fluctuations occurred on the peaceful lake and Mu Chen slowly opened his eyes. Then, he gave a faint smile towards Ye Qingling and Zhou Ling, who had approached him.

"Hey, it was said that Yang Hong had regained consciousness today." Zhou Ling smiled as he spoke to Mu Chen.

However, Mu Chen gave an indifferent nod. It was apparent that Yang Hong was gravely injured compared to him, thus, he had just woken up from his coma.

"You will head to the Spiritual Art Hall tomorrow to select your Spiritual Arts," Ye Qingling stated enviously: "If you are able to obtain a Deity Tier Spiritual Art, it would truly be amazing."

After all, a Deity Tier Spiritual Art was extremely attractive for almost anyone.

"How could I obtain one that easily?" Mu Chen smiled. If a Deity Tier

Spiritual Art could be obtained so easily, it wouldn't be priced at such a terrifying price at the Spiritual Values Hall.

"By the way, what were you doing for the past few days? You did not cultivate and instead acted quite lazy like an old man." Zhou Ling asked curiously. For the past two days, Mu Chen had been quite lazy. He stayed in the freshman area and did not head to a Spirit Convergence Array or to the Lightning Territory to cultivate.

"Adjusting my condition."

Mu Chen smiled and did not explain further. He lifted his head and stared at the massive bird-like mountain within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. On the wings of this bird-like mountain, the Spirit Ranking was shining with a golden light. Moreover, his name was currently shining on the Rank 3 Position on it.

"I plan on becoming Rank 1 on the Spirit Ranking."

Mu Chen's gaze stared towards the Spirit Ranking's Rank 1. On that place, a dazzling name was there: Su Ling'Er. It was evident that the person that occupied the Rank 1 position was a girl.

"Spirit Ranking's Rank 1?" Zhou Ling and Ye Qingling were stunned. Delight immediately filled their faces. Although the Spirit Ranking was only a low-level ranking within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, it would cause a tremor within the academy if someone reached the top of it.

Mu Chen might be Rank 3 on the Spirit Ranking, but both of them knew that the difference in power that it represented was completely different.

If Mu Chen managed to become the Spirit Ranking's Rank 1, it would definitely bear more weight than the title of the Number One Freshmen.

"However, the person who occupied the Rank 1 position of the Spirit Ranking is Su Ling'Er...She is a well renowned beauty within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy." Zhou Ling spoke as he stared at the name on the peak of the Spirit Ranking.

However, Mu Chen smiled. A beauty? He did not believe that she was

more beautiful than Luo Li.

"Moreover, the most troubling fact is that Su Ling'Er's sister is Su Xuan." Zhou Ling gave a hollow laugh before he continued.

"Su Xuan?" Mu Chen was finally stunned and asked in surprise: "The one that is Rank 3 on the Heavenly Ranking? That Su Xuan?"

Zhou Ling nodded. The weight of that name was not any weaker than Li Xuantong in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

"Since Su Xuan possessed such a reputation within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, she must not be a petty-minded individual. Replacing an individual on a ranking is a normal occurrence." Mu Chen smiled. This time, he was going to use his full strength on the Spirit Ranking. Once he had reached the Heavenly Fusion Stage, he would not be able to attempt for a higher ranking anymore. Therefore, this was basically his final chance.

After all, reaching the Rank 1 position of the Spirit Ranking would definitely bring a large amount of Spiritual Values. Therefore, it was quite tempting to Mu Chen, who required a considerable amount of Spiritual Values.

When Zhou Ling heard this, he did not speak anymore. If Mu Chen managed to become Rank 1 on the Spirit Rankings, it would be a great publicity for the Goddess Luo Association. When that happens, their reputation and fame would increase significantly.

At this moment, Mu Chen slowly closed his eyes. Then, Zhou Ling and the others were able to see a dark-black Spiritual Energy surging out from Mu Chen's body. Mu Chen's body floated up and a powerful Spiritual Energy pressure quietly spread out.

Around the lake, many Goddess Luo Association's members noticed the change at this location and immediately turned their gazes over in curiosity.

Under the countless gazes, Mu Chen's body floated in mid-air before he suddenly opened his eyes. A bright light flashed through his black eyes

and the dormant Spiritual Energy within Mu Chen's body acted like an awakening lion.

Dark-black Spiritual Energy gathered at Mu Chen's palm at an extraordinary speed. From afar, it seemed like a mass of ink had appeared.

Mu Chen lifted his head and stared at the massive stone tablet in the distance. He immediately took a deep breath before he slowly blasted out a punch.

After Mu Chen had slowly fired out his punch, the air in front of him seemed to have explode. Black light gathered and four black light seals had emerged. Soon, these four black light seals had formed into a black beam of light as it bombarded on the Spiritual Values Card in front of Mu Chen.

A brilliant rainbow beam burst out from the Spiritual Values Card when the black beam smashed onto it. Under countless gazes, this beam soared through the air and finally landed on the stone tablet which recorded the Spirit Ranking.

The massive stone tablet immediately trembled and a strange buzzing soon rang out. At the same time, golden light unleashed out from it as if it was a rising sun.

The change on the Spirit Ranking had immediately attracted numerous Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's students' attention. They stared dumbfounded at the Spirit Ranking and soon, they noticed that the name that was Rank 3 on the Spirit Ranking had suddenly emitted a glow. The glow it emitted was as if it was time for a change and the name suddenly rose up. In an instant, it had completely erased the name that had been on the summit of the Spirit Ranking.

The stone tablet issued out a mysterious sound as if it was announcing that the King of the Spirit Ranking had been replaced by someone else.

Finally, the golden light that was entrenched on the top position of the Spirit Ranking had faded away and revealed two golden words.

Spirit Ranking Rank 1, Mu Chen!

Within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, countless gazes were focused on the unfamiliar name on the top of the Spirit Ranking. All of a sudden, they fell silent. But soon, sounds of surprise appeared.

However this time, not many people felt that this change was anything strange. After all, this name had begun to become known to many seniors after the battle during the Freshmen Competition. They knew that the freshman known as Mu Chen possessed the strength that even that they had to pay attention to.

But this boy was surprisingly amazing. He actually did not care and kicked Su Ling'Er off the Spirit Ranking...That girl wasn't a gentle person at all. She had a completely different personality compared to her sister...

Who knows how her beautiful appearance would change once she noticed that she was kicked off the Spirit Ranking's Rank 1 position...And how she would grit her teeth as she cursed at that bastard that replaced her...

Just when the seniors secretly laughed, they gazed at that name and shook their heads in pity. This freshman was truly a dazzling existence. Perhaps in the nearby future, this name would truly become quite phenomenal...

Chapter 190: Su Xuan, He Yao

Mu Chen stared at the sparkling Spirit Ranking in the sky, above the lake, and smiled. He immediately grabbed onto his Spiritual Values Card and noticed that it had increased by a total of 100,000 Spiritual Values. Including the 400,000 Spiritual Values that he had obtained during the Freshman Competition, he had saved up approximately 500,000 Spiritual Values. This was considered to be a decent amount of Spiritual Values. However, it was still far far away from the Northern Sea Dragon's Blood Essence...

Mu Chen curled his lips helplessly. Last time, when he had taken the Rank 3 position of the Spirit Ranking, he had caused Mo Lun to appear. Yet this time, he had taken the Rank 1 position...Who knows what troubles would await him?

However, there was no helping it as it involved Spiritual Values. Who told the Nine Nether Bird to keep bugging him about it...

Near the lake, the freshmen witnessed this scene with a burning passion. They stared at the name on the Rank 1 position of the Spirit Ranking and felt their blood boil. If in the future, they were able to leave their name on the ranking, it would definitely be something that they could be proud of.

"Amazing."

Zhou Ling gave a thumbs up as he praised Mu Chen. He no longer had any doubts about Mu Chen. This person was truly bizarre. Even though Mu Chen was only at the Spirit Stage Late Phase, a person at the Heavenly Fusion Stage would still avoid him. Right now, the very same person easily kicked off Su Ling'Er, who had occupied the top position of the Spirit Ranking for nearly a year. Just how is this something easily done by a freshman?

Mu Chen smiled and did not talk about this matter. Instead, he waved his hand towards Zhou Ling and Ye Qingling as he walked towards the depths of the freshman area, leaving behind gazes filled with worship.

The commotion caused by the Spirit Ranking had also attracted the attention of the other freshman area. When these freshmen noticed the familiar name on the Spirit Ranking, they could not help but exclaim.

At a certain freshman area, Yang Hong's face darkened as he stared at the Spirit Ranking. He gripped his hands tightly and a cold aura emitted from his body. In that instant, the members of the Wyvern Association took a step back and didn't dare to approach.

"Mu Chen. I won't give up this easily!" Yang Hong's eyes flashed as he gritted his teeth, with his fists constantly crackling. The more dazzling Mu Chen appeared, the more he felt his face boil in anger. The feeling of being overwhelmed by someone wasn't something that a narrow-minded person like himself could endure.

At another location, Mu Kui and Bing Qing both stared at the Spirit Ranking. Their gaze changed slightly before they retracted their gaze. This person was truly someone who did not want to be left alone.

He had only dealt with the matter of Mo Lun a while ago, yet he, once again, had kicked someone off the Spirit Ranking.

At the same time when Mu Chen entered the top of the Spirit Ranking, Li Xuantong, who was located on a quiet platform on a mountain, stood up with his hands behind his back.

This mountain was owned privately by Li Xuantong and was a reward given to him by the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy after he had completed a Heaven Rank mission. The Spiritual Aura within this location was equivalent to being within a Rank 5 Spirit Convergence Array. A private residential area was something that many students would dream of having. However, generally speaking, this private residential area was worth more than 1,000,000 Spiritual Values. Therefore, it wasn't something that a normal student could possibly afford.

Li Xuantong stared towards the vast and wide, Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Numerous figures were rushing back and forth the academy.

Suddenly, a figure of light approached from afar. Then, it landed on the

platform of this mountain. At this moment, Li Xuantong's expression changed slightly as he turned his body over. But what entered his sight was a girl in black dress with calm eyes and an exquisite appearance.

"This is truly rare. You would actually come searching for me by yourself." Li Xuantong's apathetic expression faded away slightly as he smiled.

Luo Li glared at the boy in front of her. The latter was quite handsome and was considered to be outstanding. Even within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, he was liked by countless girls. However, she, herself, had never felt anything towards this boy.

"What did you say to him yesterday?" Luo Li raised her eyebrow as she asked.

But in response, Li Xuantong only smiled.

"Li Xuantong, this is my own affairs. I do not wish that you will intervene in them. Also, I hope that you would not interfere with him either." Luo Li said in a cold tone.

The smile on Li Xuantong's face gradually faded away. He stared at Luo Li and replied: "Even if I stop interfering with him, he would still be obstructed by others in the future. The interference he would have to face would be ten times...no, hundred times stronger!"

"When that happens, what would you do?"

Luo Li clutched her hands tightly and responded, "I can deal with it by myself".

"By yourself?" Li Xuantong shook his head and replied: "It seems that you like him quite a lot. Otherwise, how is it possible that you would say such words? Love truly is fascinating...Even an intelligent person would become reckless due to it. However... I have never thought that you would become like this. For him to change you like this, Mu Chen is truly fortunate."

Luo Li remained silent.

Li Xuantong sighed as he stared at the beautiful girl in front of him. Emotions faintly passed through the depths of his eyes. Back then, when she was still only a little girl, he had already fallen in love with her. He had witnessed this cheerful little girl slowly become more and more calm and mature due to her burdens. Moreover, she was exceptionally tough to herself...tough enough to the point where even he had even felt sympathy towards her.

"You should be aware of the situation of the Luoshen Clan. There aren't many decisions you can make by yourself. Perhaps coming to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy is the last decision you can make by yourself."

"You don't have much time left. Since you already know that you will be separated from him, why did you come here? This act of yours would not benefit either of you."

Li Xuantong stared at the girl in front of him. A hint of pain flashed through her glass-like eyes as she muttered quietly: "I have thought about never appearing before him after I left the Spiritual Road. However, I couldn't endure it. I was afraid that he might have become dispirited since he was kicked out of the Spiritual Road. Therefore, I wanted to be together with him as he endured this pain. I wanted to see him reveal his brilliance out once again."

"When I am beside him, I feel happy. It's been years since I had this feeling." Luo Li's eyes drooped as she laughed at herself: "I would hate to miss out on this feeling. Therefore, please let me enjoy this feeling during this period of time. You know that my responsibilities are great and I will shoulder them. However, I hope that you would not intervene with him."

"For myself...Please let me pass through this time like this," Luo Li said gloomily as she turned away and slowly disappeared from this mountain.

Li Xuantong stared at Luo Li's parting figure and slowly closed his eyes. When he had finally reopened them, his gaze had regained the calmness that he had before.

At this moment, at a far away place, the Spirit Ranking erupted out a

glow and Li Xuantong directed a gaze towards the name that was Rank 1 on the Spirit Ranking. After a while, he retracted his gaze from the Spirit Ranking.

Luo Li. It's not that I want to pick on him. However, if he really did not possess the strength to be with you, he would only become an obstacle for you in the future. That is why I will deal with him with my own methods.

At a certain location of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, there was a massive lake. An island with a house and flowers blooming was at the center of this lake.

At this moment, a furious voice resounded out from the house.

"AHHHHH! That freshman known as Mu Chen is truly annoying. He isn't satisfied after seizing Mo Lun's Rank 3 position. He even dared to kick me out of the Spirit Ranking. This pisses me off!"

"Sister. You must help me even out the score!"

The house became silent for a moment before another girl let out a gentle laugh: "The Spirit Ranking originally belongs to the freshmen. Why are you even on the Spirit Ranking in the first place? Since that you've been kicked out of the Spirit Ranking, you should work hard and focus on the Heavenly Ranking."

"But he's too much! A freshman that had just arrived at the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy is actually acting this arrogant!"

"Ohoho, this freshman is quite powerful. I won't help you about this matter. Also, you should be honest with yourself. If you were to fight against him, you probably aren't his opponent."

"I don't believe it!"

The door of the house was pushed open with rage, and a pretty little girl rushed out from within. She wore a light yellow dress and her blue hair was tied up in a ponytail. As her ponytail bounced, it revealed her youth and vitality.

Once this little girl exited the house, her body immediately turned into a

figure of light as she quickly disappeared into the distance.

Once the little girl had departed, another graceful figure slowly walked out from the house. Her blue hair flowed straight down and her pointed face was white like snow. Her appearance gave off a gentle temperament.

At this moment, she stared helplessly at the direction where the little girl had headed to.

"Ohoho, what happened to Ling'Er? Who angered her this time?" A laugh suddenly appeared outside of the lake as a figure appeared on the island.

The person that arrived had a tall and thin body. His blue hair was exceptionally unusual and he had a handsome appearance. However, a hint of evilness was revealed within his face. But once combined with his smile, he was quite appealing to the girls.

"Nothing happened." The gentle girl glanced at him and replied with a smile: "Is there something that you want from me?"

"I've recently accepted a Heaven Rank mission and I need a partner. Therefore, I wanted to ask if you have some time." The boy in blue hair smiled. Within the depths of his eyes, a hint of passion and emotion appeared as he stared at the gentle girl.

However, the gentle girl shook her head and rejected him. "I need to focus on my cultivation recently. Therefore, I don't have the time to do the mission. You should find someone else."

Once these words were said, she immediately returned back to the house and gently closed the door.

Seeing this, the boy with blue hair could only smile helplessly. Then, he turned around and exited the island on the lake. Once he reached the shore, a group of people rushed over and asked, "Boss, did she reject you again?"

"Boss, you are, after all, a famous individual who is ranked 4th on the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's Heavenly Ranking. She truly isn't giving you any face. If it wasn't for the fact that you held back against her,

she wouldn't be occupying the Rank 3 position of the Heavenly Ranking." A person muttered angrily.

"Why are you so impatient?" The boy with blue hair smiled: "You can only obtain such an outstanding girl slowly. It's not possible to obtain her easily. Relax, she will eventually belong to me in the future."

The boy's smile was gradually filled with wickedness. Then, he turned around and looked at the house at the center of the lake as he grasped his hands tightly.

"The girl that I, He Yao, took a liking to...How is it possible for her to escape from my clutches?"

Chapter 191: Spiritual Arts Hall

When morning arrived the next day, both Mu Chen and Luo Li left the freshmen area, and headed towards the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. After all, today was the day that they'd select Spiritual Arts from the Spiritual Arts Hall.

Mu Chen was deeply moved and passionate about when it came to the Spiritual Arts Hall. To a certain extent, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was considerably stricter than the Northern Spiritual Academy. At this place, there were things known as free Spiritual Arts that one was able to learn. If one wanted to obtain a powerful Spiritual Arts, they could only obtain it by exchanging for it with Spiritual Value.

Every single student within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy would constantly work hard to obtain Spiritual Value. This was because the effects of one's cultivation would be greatly reduced if one didn't have Spiritual Values.

The Spiritual Arts Hall was a place where students would drool even more so about entering. However, not everyone was able to enter this place freely. Only the outstanding students, those who had obtained an award from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, would be able to enter this place and possess the chance of obtaining a Spiritual Art.

Moreover, if one was lucky, it was possible to obtain a Deity Tier Spiritual Art from the Spiritual Arts Hall. Therefore, entry to the Spiritual Arts Hall was enough to make one be filled with jealousy.

Mu Chen and Luo Li headed directly to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, and after approximately a dozen minutes or so, they gradually slowed down their speed. In the end, they landed on the peak of a towering mountain.

Atop the mountain, there was a massive hall. A stone square was in front of the massive hall. This location was where both Mu Chen and Luo Li landed.

As they landed on the stone square, they glanced around and noticed

that this place was completely empty. However, their expressions had turned serious the moment they landed. The two of them had clearly perceived a faint consciousness passing through their bodies. This consciousness was considerably powerful, and it was evident that there was a guardian hidden nearby.

The Spiritual Arts Hall was an important place within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Thus, it was certainly filled with powerful defenses. If anybody wanted to wreak havoc at this location, they'd probably wind up engulfed in a tragedy.

Mu Chen and Luo Li exchanged gazes with each other before they slowly walked towards the massive hall. At the same time, they relaxed their bodies and didn't reveal any tension.

Just when Mu Chen and Luo Li stood in front of the massive hall, swishing sounds resounded from behind them as three figures descended down. They, too, landed on the stone square. These individuals were Yang Hong, Mu Kui, and Bing Qing.

In the instant that Yang Hong appeared, his eyes had already become fixed on Mu Chen's body. He immediately clutched his hands tightly, as his eyes filled with rage.

However, Mu Chen only glanced at him for a moment before retracting his gaze. Then, he smiled at Mu Kui and Bing Qing.

"The two of you have come quite early," Mu Kui said as he grinned and walked forward. His eyes swept across the massive hall and muttered: "I never imagined that the security at this place would be this powerful. I was nearly scared to the point of wanting to run away."

Mu Chen smiled. It seems that they, too, had felt the powerful consciousness scan through them when they'd approached this place.

"Little guys, you've arrived too early. I haven't even properly rested yet." Just when the five of them had gathered at the Spiritual Arts Hall, a lazy voice appeared from within the hall. Mu Chen and the others immediately raised their heads and noticed Elder Zhu Tian appearing above the massive hall all of a sudden. As he appeared, he revealed an appearance as

if he hadn't slept yet.

"Greetings to Elder Zhu Tian."

Mu Chen and the others bowed down towards Elder Zhu Tian in a line. It was evident that they had to be respectful to Elder Zhu Tian, who was a Heaven Ranked Elder at the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Elder Zhu Tian smiled as he nodded. In an instant, he had appeared in front of Mu Chen and the others. The speed he showed made the five of them completely stunned. They weren't aware of exactly when the former had appeared in front of them. Instead, they had a feeling that Elder Zhu Tian had always been standing in front of them.

"So powerful."

Mu Chen was secretly shocked. Was this the power of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy? Even a Heaven Ranked Elder possessed such strength. No wonder the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was able to possess such a reputation throughout the entire Great Thousand World.

Elder Zhu Tian chuckled as he stared at the five of them. His gaze circulated around Mu Chen's body a few times and, under his gaze, Mu Chen felt that the latter had seen through everything within his body as a chill arose.

"Good. Since everybody has arrived, let us enter the Spiritual Arts Hall."

However, Elder Zhu Tian's gaze didn't remain on his body for long, and he quickly waved his hand. Then, he turned around and looked at the tightly closed doors. After flicking his finger, a light was shot out towards the gigantic bronze doors.

As the light passed through, the bronze door started to glow. Rays of light began to intertwine with each other and vaguely formed a complex array. A subtle, yet powerful fluctuation was emitted from it.

"As expected, the security is quite tough. Not only is it protected by so many hidden experts, it's also protected by such a powerful Spiritual Array." Mu Chen glanced at the array for a moment and secretly smacked his lips. From the fluctuations currently being emitted, he could tell that

the Spiritual Array on the bronze door was at least Rank 5, or was even higher.

"Follow me."

Elder Zhu Tian waved his sleeves and took the lead. As he took a step into the bronze door, a bright light glowed and he disappeared. Seeing this, Mu Chen and the others also quickly followed.

Immediately after the five of them had passed through the bronze door, lights flashed in front of their eyes. A hint of dizziness appeared within their heads. When they finally recovered, the scene in front of their eyes had already greatly changed.

It was a place filled with dazzling rivers that were formed by light rushing forth from all directions. As they stared further out into the distance, they could see that this scene had extended to the horizons.

Mu Chen and the others were stunned when they witnessed this bizarre scene. It was evident that this place was completely different from the Spiritual Arts Hall that they'd imagined. Moreover, they didn't see any Spiritual Arts in this place.

Elder Zhu Tian's body appeared in front of them and a smile rose on his face. He pointed at the numerous rivers of light and smiled as he said: "This place is the Spiritual Arts Hall. And the Spiritual Arts that you all wanted are hidden in this place..."

Mu Chen and the others were surprised as they stared at the rivers of light. They could vaguely feel mysterious fluctuations emitting from them.

"First of all, I must tell you this. The Spiritual Arts Hall is the collection place of the Spiritual Arts within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Arts. There are countless Deity Tier Spiritual Arts within this place. If you possess both the strength and luck required, it's possible for you to obtain one."

Elder Zhu Tian smiled, "Of course, it doesn't mean that it's certain that you'll obtain a Spiritual Art after entering the Spiritual Arts Hall. Once your challenge to obtain one has failed, you will return empty-handed."

“Challenge has failed?” Mu Chen and the others were filled with doubt. This could also occur?

Elder Zhu Tian nodded and explained: “Within the rivers of light, there are countless Spiritual Arts. If you want to obtain a satisfactory Spiritual Art, you’ll have to enter and search for one. It’s fine if it’s a normal Spiritual Art, but if you grab onto a powerful Spiritual Art, you’ll be transferred somewhere. At that place, you’ll meet the protector of that Spiritual Art. Their strength will be based on the level of the Spiritual Art. As long as you can defeat them, you will be able to obtain the Spiritual Art that you have chosen. However, if you are defeated, you will lose the opportunity to obtain a Spiritual Art, and will have to return empty-handed.”

Mu Chen and the others were stunned. It truly wasn’t easy to obtain a Spiritual Art from the Spiritual Arts Hall.

“Therefore, I would advise you not to be too persistent in your pursuit of the strongest Spiritual Art. Otherwise, you might be quite unlucky.”

Elder Zhu Tian waved his hand and asked, “Is there any questions you would like to ask?”

Mu Chen and the others exchanged gazes and slowly shook their heads. Eagerness filled their eyes. It was evident that the method of acquiring a Spiritual Art had evoked their interest.

“If that’s the case, then let’s begin. I hope that you will be able to return here in success,” Elder Zhu Tian said as he nodded and smiled.

“Let’s go!”

Mu Chen exchanged gazes with Luo Li and the two of them smiled. They took the lead and headed straight into a river of light. Behind them, Yang Hong, Mu Kui, and Bing Qing also quickly followed and vanished within the river of light.

When Elder Zhu Tian witnessed the five of them rush into the river of light, he smiled and muttered: “I wonder what these kids will obtain. It isn’t easy to obtain a Deity Tier Spiritual Art...”

Once Mu Chen entered the river of light, the sight in front of him turned brighter. He stared in front of himself, and noticed that the beams of lights were rushing past his body at an alarming speed.

As Mu Chen looked at the beams of lights that passed by, he was able to notice that there were scrolls within the beam. A peculiar Spiritual Energy fluctuation was emitted from them, and it was evident that they were all high rank Spiritual Arts.

Mu Chen extended his hand out and grasped onto one of the beams. When his hand grabbed onto the beam, information quickly flowed into his mind.

Collapsing Thunderfist, Spiritual Tier Middle Rank Spiritual Art. The aura formed was like lightning. It is a tough and overbearing technique which can even shatter mountains.

Mu Chen smacked his lips. He didn't expect that he would just randomly grab onto a Spiritual Art at the Spiritual Tier Middle Rank level. This Spiritual Art would be considered a treasure at the Northern Spiritual Academy. But at this location, it was just a common item.

Mu Chen released the beam that he had grabbed onto and allowed it to rush away from him. It was clear that he wasn't interested in a Spiritual Art at this level. Since it was a rare chance for him to enter the Spiritual Arts Hall, it would be a disappointment if he was to obtain a Spiritual Tier Middle Rank Spiritual Art after entering the Spiritual Arts Hall.

"The best items are probably at the back."

Mu Chen lifted his head and stared at the beams of light at the very end. He smiled slightly, and quickly turned into a beam of light. He rushed over towards the depths of the river of light.

As Mu Chen was rushing towards the depths of the river, he didn't detect that the mysterious black paper within his aura sea had twinkled slightly.

However, the Nine Nether Bird that was laying on the mandala flower seemed to have noticed it. It stared at the mysterious black paper that it

was afraid of for a moment, yet it didn't detect anything. Therefore, it closed its eyes once again.

Chapter 192: Selecting the Spiritual Art

Within the magnificent and glamorous river of light, Mu Chen's body rushed out like lightning. Countless beams of light rushed through the sky and every single one of these beams possessed a scroll that was glowing in a different color. Spiritual Energy fluctuations would emit from these scrolls.

However, Mu Chen only glanced at these beams and did not take any action. Relying on his past experiences, he knew that the scrolls within these beams of light were mainly Spiritual Tier Middle Rank Spiritual Arts. Although they were decent Spiritual Arts, Mu Chen wasn't satisfied with them anymore.

As Mu Chen continued to progress further in, a thick and bright beam burst out. The lustre of this beam was clearly brighter than the beams he had seen earlier.

Mu Chen stared at this beam and dark black Spiritual Energy gushed out of his hands. It extended out like billowing smoke and rushed over towards the beam.

When the beam of light had entered the black Spiritual Energy, Mu Chen quickly retracted his Spiritual Energy. However, the beam continued struggling like a caught fish within his Spiritual Energy. His dark Spiritual Energy started to show signs of it crumbling. Seeing this, Mu Chen quickly utilized his Spiritual Energy and wrapped heavily around the beam of light. Then, he stretched out and grabbed onto this beam

In the instant he had grabbed onto the beam of light, information flowed into his mind.

Grand Arctic Jade Hand, Spiritual Tier High Rank. Requires extremely cold Spiritual Energy to learn. When it is mastered, the cold aura is extremely overbearing and could turn one into an ice sculpture through contact. Once the sculpture is hit, it would shatter.

"It is actually a Spiritual Tier High Rank Spiritual Art." Mu Chen smacked his lips. Speaking of which, a Spiritual Art at this level is

considered to be quite excellent. Even the Spirit King Finger that he had learned was only at the level of a Spiritual Tier Low Rank Spiritual Art. As for the Shadowspirit Step, it was at the level of a Spiritual Tier Middle Rank. Both of these Spiritual Arts had helped Mu Chen out numerous times in the past. However, with the increase of his strength, these Spiritual Arts were not able to satisfy him any longer.

Mu Chen hesitated for a moment before letting this beam of light escape. Although Elder Zhu Tian had warned them not to be too persistent in obtaining a Deity Tier Spiritual Art and should know when to stop, Mu Chen did not want to be easily satisfied with such a Spiritual Art. This was not recklessness, but the confidence that he had within himself.

After letting the Spiritual Tier High Rank Spiritual Art escape, Mu Chen continued to rush into the depths. In a few minutes, he had seen many Spiritual Arts that were at the same level of the Grand Arctic Jade Hand. However, he had let all of them escape his grasp. His black eyes swept through the dazzling river of light nervously as he continued to search for a Spiritual Art that truly tempted him.

This search of his lasted for approximately ten minutes. Finally, Mu Chen was able to discover...

Of course, it couldn't be said that he had discovered it. This is because the beam of light was too amazing. If the beam of lights earlier were like loaches, this beam of light was like a serpent. It was massive and powerful. All other lights would avoid it as it passed by. It was as if these lights were afraid of this massive light and did not dare to face it.

When Mu Chen noticed the serpent-like beam, he could vaguely see a blue glow within it. This blue glow was like a storm and it exuded out a powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuation.

"That's the one!"

Mu Chen's eyes glowed. He hurriedly stabilized his posture and Spiritual Energy gushed out from his body. Then, his Spiritual Energy rushed out and attempted to envelop the serpent-like beam.

But just when the Spiritual Energy had enveloped the beam of light, the

beam of light shook furiously and rushed out as it forcibly destroyed the black Spiritual Energy.

The powerful resistance displayed by the beam of light had shocked Mu Chen. He did not dare to relax and hurriedly utilized his Spiritual Energy and continued to attempt to wrap it around the beam of light.

Chi Chi!

But against Mu Chen's obstacles, the beam of light smashed it in a rampage. With a powerful manner, it had rushed through all these obstacles. The former's obstruction was completely useless in front of it.

This beam of light was actually powerful to this extent!

Mu Chen's eyes turned serious and he smacked down with his palm. He immediately muttered: "Vajra Pagoda!"

Dark-black Spiritual Energy surged out and quickly formed into a massive hand. Mysterious black tower engravings loomed out within the hand and a powerful suppression was released.

When the massive hand was condensed, it was smashed down towards the beam of light. An extraordinary shock wave emitted out when the two had made contact with each other. This shock wave had blown away all the other beams of light.

Endless Spiritual Energy fluctuations burst out from the massive hand. The tower engraving would constantly squirm and a mysterious power was released. Finally, it managed to slow down the beam of light. But even so, Mu Chen found that he could only fight against it in a stalemate and it was difficult to actually suppress it.

"I'll see how long you can endure this!"

Mu Chen gritted his teeth and circulated his Spiritual Energy. He continued to infuse the Spiritual Energy into the massive hand. If he were to relax, the beam of light would escape and everything that he had done would come to naught.

Therefore, the two attacks had remained at a stalemate. Spiritual Energy

fluctuations would emit out continuously, causing the surroundings to become empty.

Mu Chen gritted his teeth and sweat began to form on his forehead. In order to remain this stalemate, he needed to consume a large amount of Spiritual Energy. Moreover, it was like a tug of war, once he relaxed, he would lose.

Boom!

Spiritual Energy fluctuations burst out endlessly. But just when sweat flowed down from Mu Chen's forehead constantly, the beam of light was no longer as powerful as before. Instead, the lustre of its light had turned slightly dim.

"This is the moment!"

When the beam of light had turned dim, Mu Chen's eyes flashed. He smacked down with the massive hand and it bombarded against the beam of light. Lights flew in all directions. At the same time, Mu Chen rushed forward and his hand entered the storm within the beam of light.

Chi Chi.

The storm was like a blade and cut Mu Chen's hand. Bloodstains appeared, yet Mu Chen remained calm. He had completely ignored it as his hand grasped onto the scroll within the storm.

When he caught the scroll, a powerful resistance rushed out from it. The scroll attempted to escape, but Mu Chen had tightly held onto it. Spiritual Energy surged out and wrapped around the scroll. Even if his hand was injured, he would not let it escape.

Fresh blood slowly dripped down from his palm. In the end, the scroll's resistance grew weaker and Mu Chen finally retracted back his palm. His eyes stared eagerly at the scroll within his hand.

This scroll was blue in color. Its entire body was like a jade and countless tiny gales would form near the scroll. A swishing sound would emit from it, causing it seem quite peculiar.

When Mu Chen grabbed onto the blue scroll, he felt a wave of information entering his mind.

Nine Dragon Skywind Art, Quasi-Deity Tier Spiritual Art. Learn through obtaining the astral winds of the heavens and earth. When it is mastered, nine dragons would roar and cause the world to split apart. It is impossible to detect its divine might.

“Quasi-Deity Tier Spiritual Art?”

Mu Chen hesitated for a moment before surprise and delight filled his face. Delight because this Spiritual Art was not a common item and surprise because there was actually a Quasi-Deity Tier in terms of Deity Tier Spiritual Arts.

Judging from its appearance, the Quasi-Deity Tier was probably the lowest level of the Deity Tier Spiritual Art. But no matter how low it is, it cannot change the fact that it is a Deity Tier Spiritual Art. Its power is immense and it was not something that a Spiritual Tier High Rank Spiritual Art could compare with.

Mu Chen stared at the Quasi-Deity Tier Spiritual Art and his eyes twinkled. He nodded his head. A man should not be too greedy, you should stop when you know that it’s enough. A Quasi-Deity Tier Spiritual Art is already considered to be powerful. If he was too greedy, it was possible that he would end up with nothing.

Thinking about this, Mu Chen no longer hesitated and tightened his grasp. He planned on shattering the scroll and get transferred into it. After he defeated the protector within the scroll, he would finally obtain this Quasi-Deity Tier Spiritual Art.

But just when Mu Chen was about to shatter the scroll, a mysterious buzzing vibration was emitted out from his body. His hand instantly became powerless and had loosened up.

At the same time, the blue scroll burst out from his hand and formed into a beam of light as it flew away quickly.

Mu Chen was dumbfounded as he stared at this scene. The Deity Tier

Spiritual Art that was within his grasp had flown away. Even with his personality, he could not resist and shouted angrily: “Nine Nether Bird, was this your doing?!”

It was apparent that the vibration earlier was not made by himself. And inside his body, there was only the Nine Nether Bird. Therefore, who else could it be except for this bird?

Within his aura sea, the Nine Nether Bird had completely ignored Mu Chen’s furious shout. Instead, it stared tightly onto the piece of black paper. On the surface of this black paper, a dark purple light slowly rose up and flew away.

Mu Chen, who was about to enter a rampage and had planned to trouble the Nine Nether Bird, suddenly noticed a dark purple light wrap his body. Then, before he could react, it had completely surrounded Mu Chen and dragged him into the depths of the river of light at an amazing speed.

This scene had completely startled Mu Chen. When the dark purple light appeared, he knew that it wasn’t the Nine Nether Bird’s fault. He immediately focused and gradually discovered the source of the vibration.

When Mu Chen discovered the source of the fluctuation, he sucked in a mouthful of cold air. His eyes were filled with disbelief. This commotion was actually caused by the mysterious black paper that had never done anything to him during the many years he had obtained it?

“What does it want?”

Mu Chen muttered. At this moment, he had discovered that he had already lost control of his body and could only allow the dark purple light bring him to the depths of river of light. This made him wanted to cry, yet tears would not come out. The Quasi-Deity Tier Spiritual Art that he spent so much effort to obtain...

But just when Mu Chen was brought to the depths of the river of light by the dark purple light, in an independent space deep below, a beam of light that had dozen of suns suspended near it had exuded out an extraordinary pressure.

At the same time, a deep rumbling suddenly rang out. Black lights had slowly emerged behind the dozen suns.

When the black lights emerged, the dozen suns actually retreated back a bit. It was as if the suns were afraid of the black lights.

The black lights swayed and an ancient fluctuation emitted out from it. It stopped for a moment and suddenly it rushed out from the deepest parts of the river of light as if it was attracted by something.

Chapter 193: Four Gods Constellation Scripture

Within the brilliant river of light, a dark purple light flashed by. The countless beams within the river of light actually moved away by themselves, and allowed the purple light to pass through smoothly.

At that moment, Mu Chen was within the purple light. His expression was filled with disbelief and shock. Ever since he'd obtained the mysterious black paper, it had only displayed a miraculous power when the Nine Nether Bird had attempted to seize his body. Since then, it had returned to its peaceful state, and no matter what Mu Chen did, he'd failed to make any contact with it.

But contrary to his expectations, the mysterious black paper had once again begun to move...

Although Mu Chen was stunned, he didn't resist it. Ever since he'd obtained the mysterious black paper from the Spiritual Road, it'd never caused him to be in danger. Instead, it had protected him. Therefore, it was unlikely that the paper would harm him.

As he thought about this, Mu Chen gradually calmed down. He stared at the beams of light that flowed by, and noticed at least three different beams that were just as bright as the Nine Dragon Skywind Art as he progressed further in. It was evident that these beams possessed a Quasi-Deity Tier Spiritual Art as well.

Mu Chen stared reluctantly at the bright lights in the distance. However, seeing that the purple light didn't show any signs of stopping, he could only let out a helpless sigh. Right now, he wanted to see just where it would bring him to.

The dark purple light continued to carry Mu Chen into the depths of the river of light. After approximately ten minutes, Mu Chen noticed that his speed had finally slowed down. At that moment, the surroundings were completely devoid of light, and weren't as magnificent looking as before.

Instead, it seemed that he'd reached the very end of the river of light.

In the end, the purple light had finally stopped and Mu Chen glanced around in the darkness. He let out a bitter laugh. Just what the hell was going on?

Just when Mu Chen became dumbfounded, swishing sounds rushed out from the deepest parts of the darkness. He immediately turned around and noticed a black clump with a tail of light rushing towards him at an alarming speed.

The black clump of light quickly arrived in front of Mu Chen. At that moment, Mu Chen stared at it in surprise. The clump of light was pitch-black and looked like a tiny black hole. Even his line of sight seemed to be sucked into it. Therefore, Mu Chen wasn't able to see anything as he looked at it.

Although he wasn't able to detect anything strange with it, Mu Chen's gaze turned serious. This was because he could vaguely feel an immense and obscure fluctuation being emitted from within the black clump.

As he continued to gaze at the black clump of light, the roars of an ancient dragon and a tiger resounded out from within. Aside from these two roars, there were also two other, different ancient roars as well.

When Mu Chen heard the ancient dragon and tiger's roar, his expression had become completely serious. From these sounds, he could sense a mysterious pressure.

Mu Chen stared tightly at the black clump of light, and couldn't decide whether or not he should touch it. At the same time, he didn't dare to move either. His instincts told him that this item was probably more formidable than the Quasi-Deity Tier Spiritual Art earlier.

Just when Mu Chen hesitated, a purple light rushed out from his body and illuminated the black clump of light. At the same time, Mu Chen was able to detect that the mysterious black paper within his aura sea had started to vibrate. A mysterious purple light was constantly being emitted out.

Chi Chi.

Under the radiance of the purple light, the black clump of light had actually melted away. Soon, the item within the black clump was revealed in front of Mu Chen.

Within the faint black light, there was a dark scroll. Ancient beast engravings were carved atop the surface of the scroll. At the same time, lights were emitted from within, and had condensed into illusionary beast figures near the scroll. Each one of these figures roared out. From the sound, Mu Chen was able to sense that it was both mysterious and ancient...

Mu Chen stared at the powerful aura that was emitted out from the scroll and his heart trembled. He hesitated for a moment before he extended his hand out. The black scroll slowly descended down and landed within his palm.

In the instant he made contact with the black scroll, he was able to detect that a wave of information had flowed into his mind.

Four God Constellation Scripture. A powerful Deity Art created by using the Constellation Spirits of the four directions. It could summon the Constellation Spirits from all four directions. Once these four gods gathered, it could tremble the heavens and the earth.

It was a simple introduction, yet it wasn't able to conceal the powerful and overbearing aura being emitted. But what had shocked Mu Chen the most was that it didn't state the level of the Four God Constellation Scripture.

Even though it wasn't stated, Mu Chen was aware that this Spiritual Art was definitely at the Deity Tier level. Moreover, it was much more powerful than a Quasi-Deity Tier Spiritual Art; he was actually unclear as to just how powerful it was.

"This Four God Constellation Scripture seems to be related to the mysterious black paper within my body," Mu Chen muttered as he held onto the black scroll. From the commotion caused by the mysterious black paper, Mu Chen knew that it was the mysterious black paper that had

attracted this Spiritual Art towards him. Otherwise, it would've been impossible for Mu Chen to reach this place with his own power, and he wouldn't have been given a choice to obtain a Spiritual Art at this level.

Although he'd obtained this black scroll, Mu Chen still hesitated for a moment. It's not like one could take away a high ranked Spiritual Art just because they'd managed to obtain it. This was because one first had to defeat the protector in order to take away the Spiritual Art.

Furthermore, from what Elder Zhu Tian had said, it seemed that the more powerful the Spiritual Art was, the more powerful the protector would become. Even though Mu Chen hadn't faced against any of the protectors before, he knew that the protector that were used to protect a Deity Tier Spiritual Art weren't weak at all.

Mu Chen lowered his head and stared at the black scroll within his hand.

Should I take it or not?

Mu Chen's eyes flashed for a moment before he finally became serious. Since there was such an opportunity, he mustn't miss out on it. It wasn't a big deal if he failed, he'd just return empty-handed!

Thinking about this, Mu Chen no longer hesitated, and gripped onto the black scroll tightly. An overwhelmingly powerful dark light was unleashed and instantly enveloped Mu Chen's body. Then, both Mu Chen and the black scroll vanished from that place.

At a certain location in the Spiritual Arts Hall.

Elder Zhu Tian sat cross-legged within a large hall. In front of him, there was a white-haired old man. In front of them, they would gently place pieces on the Go Board from time to time.

Within the large hall, there were a dozen of other individuals sitting with closed eyes. It was clear that they were currently cultivating.

"Ohoho, I wonder if any of this little guys will manage to obtain a Deity Tier Spiritual Art this time? During the past few years, only Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong managed to obtain a Deity Tier Spiritual Art

during their freshman year, right?" The white-haired old man in front of Elder Zhu Tian chuckled as he placed a board piece down.

"That depends on the mood of the Spiritual Arts Hall. If it's in a bad mood and has strengthened the protectors, it will become much more difficult." Elder Zhu Tian smiled and continued speaking, "However, there are a few powerful ones among the freshmen this time. I think that it's possible for them to obtain a Quasi-Deity Tier Spiritual Art."

The white-haired old man smiled and nodded. Just when he was about to speak again, his expression suddenly changed. From within the hall, a rippling fluctuation was being emitted out. It was from a consciousness that didn't seem human.

"Someone made contact with a Spiritual Art at the Core Territory of the Spiritual Art Collection."

When this thought was conveyed out, Elder Zhu Tian and the white-haired old man's expression changed. Their board pieces dropped down onto the Go Board and had actually shattered both the board and the table.

"A Spiritual Art from the Core Territory?!"

Elder Zhu Tian and the white-haired old man exchanged gazes with each other in astonishment. Then, they immediately frowned and asked, "How is this possible? It is impossible for even a Heavenly Transformation Stage to enter that place. How could someone have made contact with a Spiritual Art inside that place? Moreover, the Spiritual Arts within that place aren't even among the Spiritual Arts that could be selected by students. How could someone possibly enter that place?"

"The Spiritual Art rushed out from that place by itself." A thought was conveyed out to them.

"What?" Elder Zhu Tian and the white-haired old man were finally stunned. The Spiritual Art had actually come out by itself? This was the first time that they'd ever heard of this occurring.

Within the large hall, the dozen figures, who were cultivating, also

opened their eyes. Surprise filled their faces. It was also the first time since they'd guarded the Spiritual Arts Hall that they had heard of such a thing occurring.

"Which Spiritual Art is it?" Elder Zhu Tian asked solemnly.

The Spiritual Arts that were stored within the Core Territory of the Spiritual Arts Hall were considered to be a treasure even within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Ordinarily speaking, it wasn't something that they could let a student to obtain.

The inhuman-like consciousness turned silent for a moment before it responded: "Four Gods Constellation Scripture."

"Four Gods Constellation Scripture?"

Elder Zhu Tian and the white-haired old man were stunned. Their eyes immediately shrank slightly and asked, "Is it that ancient Spiritual Art that nobody has ever successfully learned?"

"Yes."

Elder Zhu Tian frowned. It was unknown when the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had obtained this Spiritual Art. However, ever since they'd obtained it, no one had ever successfully managed to learn it. Even the principal had attempted to learn it, and had still failed. According to the what their principal had said, the "Four Gods Constellation Scripture" was a powerful Spiritual Art that was probably born from an ancient scripture. It would be immensely difficult to learn it without the ancient scripture...

But why would such a situation occur now?

"Who obtained this Spiritual Art?" Elder Zhu Tian inquired.

The air trembled and lights gathered within the hall. In the end, it had condensed into a handsome boy with a slender body.

When Elder Zhu Tian looked at the figure formed by light, his eyes were filled with surprise. He muttered, "So it was Mu Chen...That boy isn't simple...Not only does he possess the Nine Nether Bird's Soul Essence, he

even caused the “Four Gods Constellation Scripture” to rush to him by itself...”

Elder Zhu Tian chuckled and his eyes flashed.

What an interesting little guy.

Chapter 194: Protector

When Mu Chen opened his eyes once again, the river of lights had already vanished. Instead, a dark golden hall had emerged in front of him. This hall was quite spacious and seemed to pulse with a chill as if it was made of metal.

Mu Chen's eyes swept across the massive hall and stared at the center of the hall with a serious expression. At that location, there was a shadow standing still. From its appearance, it seemed like a heavy black armor. This heavy black armor was engraved with many black lines and gave off a mysterious feeling.

Mu Chen stared at the lifeless black armor and sensed danger from it. At the same time, he quietly circulated his Spiritual Energy within his body.

Kacha.

Just when Mu Chen looked carefully at the lifeless black armor, a clicking sound rang out from the icy-cold armor. It was as if something had been activated. Then, Mu Chen noticed a pair of scarlet lights being emitted from the armor. It seemed like that the armor was gazing at him coldly.

When the scarlet light focused itself on Mu Chen's body, black lightwaves slowly surged out from the black armor and a powerful Spiritual Energy pressure was released from the icy-cold armor.

"Intruder. You will be able to obtain the Spiritual Art if you beat me!" A emotionless voice resounded out from the black armor.

"Are you the protector of the Spiritual Art?" Mu Chen's eyes focused. It was clear that the black armor wasn't human and was a special item like a puppet. Apparently, this was the protector that Elder Zhu Tian had mentioned earlier.

Buzz.

Once the protector's voice faded away, a stone platform slowly emerged from behind the black armor. Black lights glowed on top of the stone

platform and a black scroll could be vaguely seen within the black lights. Illusory beasts were condensed on the scroll and these beasts issued out ancient roars endlessly.

This was the “Four Gods Constellation Scripture”. As long as Mu Chen defeated the mysterious protector in front of him, he would be able to obtain this Spiritual Art.

Mu Chen’s gaze slowly move away from the “Four Gods Constellation Scripture” and towards the protector with heavy armor. He felt that it would be quite a thorny path. After all, he had already felt an immense pressure emitting from the protector even without it attacking him. This pressure was extraordinarily powerful and Mu Chen was aware that he wasn’t its opponent.

Mu Chen shook his head with a bitter smile. It was evident that a Spiritual Art at this level wasn’t something a freshman could obtain. However, who would have imagined that the mysterious black paper within his body had actually summoned the “Four Gods Constellation Scripture” from deep within...

Just when Mu Chen sighed helplessly, black lights had already begun to surge out from the protector’s icy-cold armor. An extraordinary Spiritual Energy pressure was emitted out from within it.

The protector didn’t say anything else and took a step forward. Sounds of metal clashing could be heard. At the same time, the protector turned into a beam of light as it rushed directly in front of Mu Chen. Then, it fired out a punch straight towards Mu Chen.

When this punch was blasted out, the violent black Spiritual Energy had charged forward like a serpent. The powerful winds formed by it had actually blasted away the air in front of it.

When Mu Chen noticed the protector approaching aggressively, his expression changed. Retreat wasn’t an option anymore. Thus, he could only defend himself by attacking. He, too, blasted out a punch and four Limitless Death Seals were condensed and erupted out towards the protector’s punch.

Bang Bang Bang!

However, the overlapping Limitless Death Seals were actually forcibly blown away when it made contact with the attack from the protector. The remaining power of the attack had smashed onto Mu Chen's arm as he protected himself.

Even though he had protected himself, Mu Chen's body was still sent flying away. Blood flowed out his body and a stinging pain burst out from his arms. His body flew back a few hundred meters before he had finally stopped.

Although Mu Chen stabilized his body, he was deeply shocked. The protector was too strong. From his estimates, this heavy armor had already surpassed the Heavenly Fusion Stage. How could he possibly deal with it right now?

Mu Chen stared at the black scroll on the stone platform in front of him and let out a bitter laugh. Elder Zhu Tian was correct. If one was too greedy, they would end up with nothing...

Not far away, the protector did not give any chance for Mu Chen to rest. Instead, it charged forward and every single step it took caused the hall to tremble. A powerful offensive surged out from it towards Mu Chen.

Seeing this, Mu Chen's expression darkened. He could only grit his teeth and continued to avoid the attacks.

From a certain location inside the Spiritual Arts Hall, Elder Zhu Tian and the others raised their head up. In front of them, a screen of light had formed and within this screen of light, a scene of the protector chasing after Mu Chen was displayed.

"Ohoho. Although that little guy was fortunate enough to obtain the 'Four Gods Constellation Scripture', it seems that he does not possess the strength to defeat the protector." The white-haired old man watched this scene as he laughed.

Elder Zhu Tian also nodded and responded: "The protector of the 'Four Gods Constellation Scripture' is equivalent to a Heavenly Transformation

Stage Initial Phase. Mu Chen is only at the Spirit Stage Late Phase. The gap between them is just too large, this gap wasn't something that techniques could cover..."

When Mu Chen had successfully defeated Yang Hong, who was at the Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase, Elder Zhu Tian was quite surprised. However, he did not recognize that it was an impossible act. But judging from the what was occurring right now, Elder Zhu Tian could only say it was simply unimaginable for Mu Chen to defeat the protector by himself.

"It seems that this little guy wouldn't be able to obtain the 'Four Gods Constellation Scripture'. To be honest, I actually wanted to see if this little guy would be able successfully learn the Spiritual Art." The white-haired old man smiled.

Elder Zhu Tian shook his head and replied: "It can't be helped. The rules are decided by the Spiritual Arts Hall. We can only assist it and cannot change the rules. If Mu Chen fails to defeat the protector, then we can only play by the rules."

The white-haired old man nodded and stared at the screen of light. At this moment, Mu Chen was in a completely awkward state. Judging from his appearance, it seems that he wouldn't be able to last much longer.

As Mu Chen retreated, he was once again struck by the powerful winds formed by the attacks of the protector. The air erupted and a long trial was formed as Mu Chen's feet slid across the hall. At this moment, blood had emerged from his mouth.

Mu Chen wiped the blood traces from his mouth, but at the same time, his heart was in a mess. Every single attack of his seemed to be fragile like a piece of paper in the face of the protector. He knew that this was caused by the difference in strength. Even if he had advanced to the Heavenly Fusion Stage, he would not be able to defeat this protector. However, he would at least be able to compete with it and would not be in this awkward state he was in right now.

Mu Chen's eyes twinkled and he sent his consciousness towards his aura sea to look for the Nine Nether Bird. In this situation, he truly needed

a bit of help.

Within his aura sea, the Nine Nether Bird stretched its wings lazily and responded: “Don’t come searching for me. This mess wasn’t caused by me, so you should look for the culprit instead.”

Hearing this, Mu Chen could not help but turn his eyes towards the mysterious black paper within his aura sea. At this moment, the latter was in a completely peaceful state. However, a faint purple light could be seen emitting from it.

Unfortunately, Mu Chen wasn’t able to do anything to the mysterious black paper. Therefore, he could only shake his head in response.

“The protector’s strength isn’t weak. Judging from your current strength, it isn’t something that you can possibly defeat. But sometimes, it isn’t necessary to defeat it in a head-on battle. The Spiritual Arts Hall is probably an exceptional Spiritual Artifact and the protector is controlled by it. As long as you are able to sever the link between the protector and the Spiritual Arts Hall, this puppet won’t be able to move at all.” Seeing Mu Chen’s dejected expression, the Nine Nether Bird curled its lips and spoke out loud.

“Sever the link?” Mu Chen was stunned, but he quickly asked, “How?”

“How should I know...” The Nine Nether Bird flapped its wings that were tainted with black flames. It was evident it was quite dissatisfied since Mu Chen had came searching for it whenever he didn’t know the solution to his problem.

Mu Chen sighed. The bird and paper were basically acting like gods. It seemed that he could only rely on himself.

Within the hall, Mu Chen’s body was blown away once again. Fortunately, he did not dare to fight directly against the protector. Instead, he was constantly avoiding it in order to stall for time.

At this moment, his eyes blinked rapidly. In order to sever the link between the protector and the Spiritual Arts Hall, he must first understand how the two of them are connected, right?

Mu Chen's eyes flashed and scanned through the heavy armor on the protector. He could see faint engravings flashing on the surface of the armor and a mysterious fluctuation emitted out from it.

Mu Chen's eyes focused fiercely. This fluctuation...Is it a Spiritual Array's fluctuation?

That's right!

The Spiritual Arts Hall arranged a Spiritual Array on the protector's body in order to control it. As long as managed to destroy the Spiritual Array, he would be able to severe the link between the Spiritual Arts Hall and the protector.

A hint of excitement filled Mu Chen's black eyes.

At this moment, the protector rushed forward once again. Just when it had approached Mu Chen, Mu Chen took this chance to scan through the complex engraving on the armor and firmly remembered it in his mind.

This time, Mu Chen was blown away again. However, he immediately crawled back up. His eyes had became brighter due to the hope of defeating the protector.

Bang! Bang!

Next up, the protector had continued to bombard its attack towards Mu Chen and Mu Chen was constantly sent flying away by it. Although he was becoming more injured and more blood was flowing out from the corner of his lips, his eyes revealed more and more excitement.

He was finally able to understand the Spiritual Array arranged on the armor of the protector. He knew where the core of the Spiritual Array was located at!

The protector continued to cause the hall to tremble as it charged forward once again. But this time, when it had approached Mu Chen and blasted out a punch, the latter had also taken a step forward. Dark-black Spiritual Energy gushed out from his hand and a black flame danced within it.

When the protector's attack had smashed onto his chest, Mu Chen's attack also managed to smash down on a specific location of the black armor!

Chapter 195: Trick

Within the hall, Mu Chen's body was blown away awkwardly. His feet scraped across the metal-like floor and was finally blown into a massive stone pillar.

Puchi.

Fresh blood sprayed out from Mu Chen's mouth. At this moment, Mu Chen was extremely pale. Although he had already overestimated the protector's strength, he discovered that he had still underestimated the strength of a Heavenly Transformation Stage after enduring one blow.

Mu Chen rubbed his chest and pulled out a black piece. This black piece resembled a black pot with Spiritual Energy engravings placed on its surface. This was a Low Rank Spiritual Artifact that Mu Chen had obtained in the Northern Heavens World. He had never used it all this time, but at that earlier moment, Mu Chen had activated it. If it wasn't for this black pot, right now, his injuries would be much more serious.

Mu Chen tossed aside the black piece and wiped away the blood from his mouth. Then, he stared at the protector in the distance. At this moment, the latter had also stopped moving. A scarlet light shone out from within the heavy armor.

Mu Chen stared firmly at the protector and clenched his hands. Although his estimations were mostly accurate, he must witness the final result to know if it had any effects.

If this method failed to sever the link between the protector and the Spiritual Arts Hall, Mu Chen could only try to think of another way.

As Mu Chen stared at the protector, Elder Zhu Tian and the others were also watching the screen of light from a certain location. A hint of surprise appeared as they noticed the unmoving protector.

With their keen senses, they could detect something abnormal.

Chi Chi.

While they were surprised, the icy-cold body of the protector had

suddenly released out a disorderly Spiritual Energy. Then, the scarlet light emitted out from within the armor had dimmed before it had completely turned black.

"What happened?" Seeing this, Elder Zhu Tian was shocked and he asked in surprise.

"He destroyed the hidden Spiritual Array on the protector's body and severed my connection with the protector." A thought was conveyed over as the screen of light fluctuated.

"Oh?"

Elder Zhu Tian and the white-haired old man exclaimed loudly. Naturally, they knew that the Spiritual Arts Hall had the ability to control the protectors. This was achieved by the hall through a Spiritual Array placed on the protector's body. However, this Spiritual Array was quite complicated. It would not stop even if a portion was destroyed unless it was the core of the Spiritual Array. However, Mu Chen had managed to destroy the core of the Spiritual Array.

This eyesight and the timing to grasp the opportunity was indeed marvelous.

"Should I reconnect to the protector?" An inhumane thought was conveyed out once again.

Elder Zhu Tian thought for a moment and shook his head. "Although he did not truly defeat the protector, he still managed to stop it. Therefore, it is considered that he had passed this test."

Elder Zhu Tian glanced at the white-haired old man. The latter had also nodded his head and said, "Consider him passed."

"Okay."

This thought was conveyed over and the inhumane consciousness faded away.

"That little guy... He truly is surprising. He actually managed to defeat the protector using such a method," Elder Zhu Tian exclaimed.

The white-haired old man also smiled. He stared at the boy in an awkward state within the screen of light and muttered: “It seems that there are indeed excellent seedlings within this year’s freshmen. Perhaps in the nearby future, he will possess the qualifications to challenge the seniors at the top.”

“When that happens, it will be quite fun to watch.”

Inside the hall, Mu Chen finally let out a sigh of relief after noticing that the Spiritual Energy had completely vanished from within the protector’s body. He immediately wiped out the sweat from his forehead.

It seemed that his gamble had paid off this time.

With Mu Chen’s strength, it would be quite difficult for him to forcibly destroy a Spiritual Array at this level. Therefore, he could only observe the Spiritual Array carefully and discover the core and the important array lines. He would destroy one of them and this would lead to an effect of completely disrupting the Spiritual Array.

Of course, he only managed to perform this feat because he had relied on the Nine Nether Bird’s Nine Netherflame. This flame was able to burn even Spiritual Energy. Otherwise, he wouldn’t be able to instantly destroy the Spiritual Array lines.

“This Nine Netherflame is indeed powerful.”

Mu Chen stared at the hint of black flame on the icy-cold body of the protector. He could not help but let out a praise. It seems that he must perform the Spiritual Energy Fusion that the Nine Nether Bird had mentioned after he exited the Spiritual Arts Hall. When his Spiritual Energy had fused with the Nine Nether Bird’s, the overbearingness and power of his Spiritual Energy would reach another level.

Moreover, the battle with the protector had finally made Mu Chen understood how powerful a Heavenly Transformation Stage powerhouse was. This made him quite alarmed. After all, Li Xuantong’s strength was probably even stronger than the protector. If he did not improve, he wouldn’t be able to contend against Li Xuantong. It was evident that he, Mu Chen, did not want to see a situation where he was completely

powerless in the face of Li Xuantong.

"It seems that I must hurry and improve my strength."

Mu Chen muttered to himself and felt a hint of urgency. He immediately took a deep breath and suppressed the flowing blood. Then, he slowly walked forward, bypassing the protector and headed towards the stone platform.

And against Mu Chen's action, the protector no longer reacted. From its appearance, it was as if the victor had been determined... Although he had resorted to using a trick.

After walking past the protector, Mu Chen stopped in front of the stone platform. He stared at the black scroll suspended above the stone platform. When he observed the black scroll at a close distance, he was able to notice that the four beast figures surrounding the scroll were a dragon, tiger, phoenix and turtle. As they growled, it was quite mysterious and ancient-sounding.

Mu Chen extended his hand out and held onto the black scroll. At this moment, the black scroll did not resist and allowed Mu Chen to hold onto it.

In the instant that Mu Chen had held onto the "Four Gods Constellation Scripture", a grin appeared on his face. After enormous effort, he finally managed to obtain it.

Buzz.

When Mu Chen had obtained the "Four Gods Constellation Scripture", a burst of light erupted out from within the hall. Then, Mu Chen felt the space distorting and everything in front of him had changed.

Mu Chen calmed down and immediately looked around. Then, he noticed that he was staring at Elder Zhu Tian, who had a smile on his face. Beside him was a white-haired old man. And further behind these two individuals, there were a dozen figures who had stared at him in a curious manner.

"You truly are lucky... From the rules, you currently aren't qualified to

obtain a Spiritual Art at the level of the Four Gods Constellation Scripture." Elder Zhu Tian's eyes swept through Mu Chen's body as he smiled.

Mu Chen let out a hollow laugh. However, deep down inside, he felt nervous. Could Elder Zhu Tian and the others plan on taking back the "Four Gods Constellation Scripture"? He understood that he wouldn't be able to obtain the "Four Gods Constellation Scripture without the summon of the mysterious black scroll within his body.

Elder Zhu Tian glanced at Mu Chen and seemed to know what he was thinking: "Relax. Since you've obtained the 'Four Gods Constellation Scripture', we would not ask you to hand it back to us. This is also considered to be your opportunity."

"Then I will have to thank you, Elder Zhu Tian."

Mu Chen was relief and quickly gave his thanks.

At this moment, Elder Zhu Tian smiled and waved his sleeves. Four other beams flashed near Mu Chen and four figures emerged from within. It was Luo Li, Yang Hong, Mu Kui and Bing Qing.

All four of them had a dense Spiritual Energy surging out from their bodies. It was evident that they had experienced a battle as well. However, judging from their expression, they were in control of the fight.

When the four of them appeared, they looked towards Mu Chen, who was in front of them. However, they were stunned when they noticed Mu Chen's pale expression and torn clothes.

"What happened?" Luo Li's expression changed and hurriedly walked forward. Right now, Mu Chen's condition was even worse than the condition he had after fighting against Yang Hong.

Mu Kui and Bing Qing were also surprised as they stared at Mu Chen. Only Yang Hong's eyes were sneering. It was evident that he was willing to see Mu Chen in a beaten up state.

"Ohoho, this little guy met a Deity Tier Spiritual Art and was beaten up to this state by the Heavenly Transformation Stage protector." Elder Zhu

Tian chuckled.

"Heavenly Transformation Stage protector?!"

When these words were spoken, Luo Li, Mu Kui and Bing Qing were completely stunned. All of them had actually obtained a Quasi-Deity Tier Spiritual Art. However, the protector they had faced was only at the Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase. This Mu Chen had actually fought against a protector at the Heavenly Transformation Stage? Just exactly what level was the Spiritual Art he had found?

"How overconfident." Yang Hong sneered. This guy, who does he think he is? He actually didn't know his own strength and even dared to touch a Deity Tier Spiritual Art.

Mu Chen glanced towards Yang Hong and completely ignored him. This made Yang Hong's face turn blue.

"Since I found one, I attempted to obtain it." Mu Chen directed a smile towards Luo Li.

Luo Li shook her head helplessly. He wouldn't've discarded his opportunity because of this one attempt?

"Ohoho. He didn't fail." Elder Zhu Tian smiled.

"Didn't fail?" Luo Li and the others froze when they heard this. A hint of disbelief emerged in their eyes. They stared at Mu Chen, who was completely pale and in an awkward state. If he didn't fail, does that mean he had succeeded?

Mu Chen actually defeated a protector at the Heavenly Transformation Stage? How is this possible!

"Although he resorted to using a trick, it is still considered a success. This little guy isn't as simple as you think." Elder Zhu Tian smiled towards Mu Chen.

Towards Elder Zhu Tian, who had spoken out his secret, Mu Chen could only laugh wryly. Then, he smiled towards Yang Hong, who had a gloomy expression, and said, "Sorry. It wasn't what you think it was."

Yang Hong's expression turned blue. A hint of powerless filled his heart. Originally, he thought that he would surpass Mu Chen once he obtained a Quasi-Deity Tier Spiritual Art. However, who would've imagined that this bastard would actually defeat a Heavenly Transformation Stage protector. Although he didn't know what trick Mu Chen used, but could the difference in strength really be covered by a "simple" trick?

Chapter 196: Rank 6 Spirit Convergence Array

Outside of the Spiritual Arts Hall, lights burst out and Mu Chen and the others' figures emerged. As each one of them obtained a Spiritual Art, it was evident that their trip to the Spiritual Arts Hall was over.

However, Yang Hong's expression remained somewhat gloomy even after they had left the Spiritual Arts Hall. He glanced at Mu Chen sullenly and disappeared into the distance. At this moment, he was filled with disbelief and horror as he heard that Mu Chen had defeated a protector at the Heavenly Transformation Stage.

Mu Chen glanced at Yang Hong's departing silhouette before retracting his gaze.

On the other hand, Mu Kui and Bing Qing stared curiously at Mu Chen. They wanted to know what Spiritual Art Mu Chen had obtained within the Spiritual Arts Hall. However, it wasn't polite to inquire about it. Thus, they could only cup their hands towards Mu Chen before departing on their own.

"Where are you planning to go now?" Luo Li's beautiful eyes stared at Mu Chen as she softly asked.

"I'm going to experience one of the high rank Spirit Convergence Array inside the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy." Mu Chen smiled. Since he had already obtained the Spiritual Art, he should grasp hold of the time and begin to cultivate. Time was running out and he must breakthrough to the Heavenly Fusion Stage within two months. Moreover, he must complete the Spiritual Energy Fusion. After all, he felt immense pressure from Li Xuantong.

Luo Li blinked. She was extremely intelligent and could guess why Mu Chen was trying so hard to cultivate.

"If it's because of Li Xuantong, you don't have to care about him..." Luo Li hesitated slightly before she spoke.

Mu Chen smiled. His gaze were firmly fixed on the delicate and exquisite face of the girl in front of him. This appearance...This smile...It was extremely bewitching.

"Why are you staring at me like this?" Luo Li's face turned slightly red once she was aware of Mu Chen looking at her like this.

Mu Chen extended his hand out and held onto the girl's slender and delicate hands. This soft texture made it nearly impossible to let go.

At this instant, Luo Li's face turned bright red. Her eyes quickly scanned through the surroundings. Only after she noticed that there were nobody nearby, she stopped struggling.

"It isn't because of Li Xuantong." Mu Chen bit his lips and stared at the girl in front of him. His handsome face had changed slightly and revealed a hint of determination: "I don't know what you're burdened with, but, since you told me in the Spiritual Road that you would protect my back, then who do you think is standing in front of you?"

Luo Li stared at Mu Chen. Within her glass-like eyes, a hint of emotion emerged.

"Perhaps I may not be qualified right now. However, I believe that I would be able to do it in the future. When that happens, I will fulfill my promise. Therefore, I am currently working hard to achieve it." Mu Chen's gentle voice revealed his determination.

Since you are standing behind me. Naturally, I will be in front of you.

Luo Li nibbled her lips and stared at Mu Chen. After a while, she revealed a slight smile and nodded her head.

"I'll head out first. Are you planning to come with me?" Mu Chen smiled.

Luo Li shook her head and replied: "I will stay at the freshman area for the next few days. Since you've obtained the Spirit Ranking's Rank 1, it is possible that another person would come due to their rage. This way, I can help you deal with the situation."

Although Mu Chen had resolved the matter with Mo Lun previously, the rumors spread out from it weren't all that good. Therefore, Luo Li hoped that this sort of incident would not occur again.

Mu Chen nodded. He did not know Su Ling'Er and did not know her personality. Therefore, it would be best to be prepared for it. With Luo Li's strength, she shouldn't be any weaker than Su Ling'Er.

Moreover, if Su Ling was to take action, he could resolve it again after he had finished his cultivation.

"I'll head out first then." Mu Chen replied and no longer hesitated. He turned into a figure of light as he headed to the depths of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Luo Li stared at Mu Chen's departing figure and the smile on her face slowly faded away. After a while, she let out a faint sigh before disappearing from this location.

As Mu Chen headed to the depths of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, he would glance around. At this place, there were countless individuals rushing through the sky. The Spiritual Energy fluctuations emitted from these individuals were considerably powerful. This area was normally filled with seniors and their strength was naturally much more powerful than the freshmen's.

Mu Chen's eyes looked out into a certain direction. From that location, a powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuation surged out. It was the direction of a Spirit Convergence Array. Moreover, its rank wasn't low at all.

Mu Chen pondered for a moment before he rushed out to the right. At that direction, there was a Rank 6 Spirit Convergence Array. He had never seen a Spiritual Array at this rank before and if he was able to cultivate within it, the results of his cultivation would definitely exceed the results if he cultivated outside of it.

Although it would cause a fortune to cultivate within a Rank 6 Spirit Convergence Array per day, time was pressing for Mu Chen so he did not consider about the cost.

After flying for approximately ten minutes, Mu Chen had slowed down his pace. His eyes were focused on the scene in front of him. At this place, a fierce distortion was in place and had formed a massive door of light. Even if they were separated by a distance, Mu Chen was able to sense a tiny pressure from the Spiritual Aura rushing out from the door.

Swish!

At this moment, numerous figures would charge into the door of light. It was evident that they were students that planned to enter the Rank 6 Spirit Convergence Array to cultivate.

Seeing this, Mu Chen let out a praise before following the stream of people and charged into the Rank 6 Spirit Convergence Array.

In the instant Mu Chen had entered the Rank 6 Spirit Convergence Array, he felt a powerful surge of Spiritual Aura rushing towards him. At the same time, his body felt quite heavy as if he had a mountain on his back.

Mu Chen quickly circulated the Spiritual Energy within his body to resist this sense of heaviness. He lifted his eyes and glanced around. Then, surprise filled his eyes.

The Rank 6 Spirit Convergence Array was larger than what Mu Chen had expected. It possessed valley plains, mountains and river streams. From its appearance, it seemed like a beautiful, yet secluded place.

Within this area, a faint mist would emit out. However, it wasn't the regular mist that one would encounter normally. Instead, it was formed by the Spiritual Aura of the world. Normally speaking, this mist would only be formed when the Spiritual Aura of the world had reached a certain degree of richness. Moreover, it was very beneficial for cultivation.

"As expected from a Rank 6 Spirit Convergence Array."

Mu Chen was full of praise as he looked around. Compared to this place, the Spiritual Aura within the freshman area was quite shabby. Of course, the cost of entering this place was quite larger as well.

Mu Chen looked at the Spiritual Values Card within his hand and

noticed that a total of 4,000 Spiritual Values were deducted from it. In other words, the Rank 6 Spirit Convergence Array would deduct 4,000 Spiritual Values every day. Since Mu Chen had around 500,000 Spiritual Values, he could only cultivate in this place for approximately three months.

Mu Chen put away his Spiritual Values Card and let out a wry smile. It was fortunate that he had obtained a bit of Spiritual Value from the Freshmen Competition. Otherwise, he wouldn't have enough Spiritual Values to cultivate in seclusion within the Rank 6 Spirit Convergence Array.

"Are there any other conditions to perform the Spiritual Energy Fusion?" Mu Chen glanced around before inquiring the Nine Nether Bird.

"You should find a location with a high density of Spiritual Aura. Also, it would be best if it is extremely close to a deep lake." The Nine Nether Bird's thoughts were conveyed out to Mu Chen.

"A deep lake?"

Mu Chen was slightly confused, but he did not inquire about the reason right now. Instead, he rushed to the depths of the Spirit Convergence Array. It was evident that the Spiritual Aura became more dense as he neared the center of the Spirit Convergence Array.

Compared to earlier, Mu Chen had slowed down as he flew across the place. Rumbling Spiritual Aura would enter his body every time he took a breath, causing his body to be much more relaxed.

Along the way, there were various mountain river streams, but the majority of the locations were already occupied . Although it would consume a lot of Spiritual Values in order to cultivate within the Rank 6 Spirit Convergence Array, the density of the Spiritual Aura of the world within this place had made many students flock to this place when they had accumulated sufficient Spiritual Values.

Mu Chen continued to head to the depths of the Spirit Convergence Array, and in approximately ten minutes, he had gradually slowed down and revealed his figure. His line of sight had stared below. At that location,

there were two giant mountains which were connected at the summit. Because of this connection, it had formed a massive lake. The lake seemed quite clear and at first glance, it was impossible to see the bottom of this lake. It was evident that it was quite deep.

Dense Spiritual Mist floated above the lake. Even when a powerful gale had emerged, it had failed to dissipate the Spiritual Mist.

Regarding this location, Mu Chen was quite satisfied with it. He descended and landed on the surface of the water. When he landed, his feet caused ripples on the surface of the lake. This was because the Spiritual Aura at this place was too dense and caused Mu Chen's body to become a lot heavier.

Mu Chen glanced around the surroundings. There should be a few students secretly cultivating near this lake. However, it was quite quiet compared to the outside. If he was to cultivate at this place, he probably wouldn't be disturbed.

"What should I do now?" Mu Chen inquired again.

"Dive down to the bottom of the lake to cultivate." The Nine Nether Bird replied faintly.

"Dive down to the bottom of the lake?" Mu Chen was stunned.

Within his aura sea, the Nine Nether Bird stretched its wings that were tainted with black flames elegantly as it responded: "It is extremely difficult to perform a Spiritual Energy Fusion. Therefore, you will require the assistance of an external force. As for this external force, we can use the pressure of the water to replace it. The water within this lake possesses Spiritual Aura, thus, the pressure from it far exceeds ordinary water pressure. Once you reach the bottom of the lake, the water pressure would seep into your body from all directions. When that happens, you can intertwine the Nine Netherflame and your Spiritual Energy and the water pressure seeping into your body will help your Spiritual Energy fuse with the Nine Netherflame gradually..."

"Of course, it is easier said than done. The slightest bit of mistake would cause your body and meridians to suffer a severe injury. Moreover, the

Nine Netherflame is exceptionally overbearing. Even with the Bloodlink Bond, the Nine Netherflame does not belong to you. Therefore, you must endure this pain or else everything that you've done would end up in naught."

"So...are you prepared?"

Mu Chen took a deep breath and his eyes became serious. In the end, he nodded heavily without any hesitation.

"Let's begin!"

A hint of fierceness emerged within Mu Chen's black eyes. Then, with a plopping sound, he dove straight into the clear lake and water ripples spread out. As for Mu Chen, his figure was just like a fish as he headed towards the bottom of the lake.

Chapter 197: Cultivating at the Bottom of the Lake

Splash.

Icy-cold lake water flowed past Mu Chen's body. At the same time, his body descended quickly down to the bottom of the lake. However, as he continued to descend, Mu Chen noticed a powerful pressure surging towards him from all directions.

Currently, Mu Chen did not utilize any Spiritual Energy to protect the surface of his body. Instead, he relied solely on his flesh and body to endure the water pressure as he dove down.

Mu Chen's black eyes were firmly fixed at the bottom of the lake. His body was able to sense that it was withstanding a water pressure that was constantly increasing. In a few minutes, he finally stopped descending. This was because he could feel that the water pressure had caused slight pain to his body.

Then, Mu Chen lifted his head up towards the surface of the lake. At that location, there was a bright clump of light. Right now, he was probably a few hundred meters underneath the lake.

Here, the lake's water was quite unusual. Since the lake's water was mixed with dense Spiritual Energy, it had caused the water pressure to become particularly powerful. Even with Mu Chen's current strength, he felt a slight pressure from it.

Cultivating in this location should be just about right.

Once this thought appeared in Mu Chen's mind, he nodded his head. Then, he sat down cross-legged within the lake. His expression also began to turn serious.

Mu Chen let out a mouthful of air as he closed his eyes. His consciousness began to sink down into his aura sea.

"Can we begin?" Mu Chen stared at the Nine Nether Bird lying down on

the mandala flower and inquired.

The Nine Nether Bird nodded its head and flapped its wings. A rich black flame surged out. Then, it looked towards Mu Chen and said faintly: “If you’re fully prepared, then let’s begin. Remember, if you feel that you can’t endure it, you should give up on it temporarily. Do not take any risks.”

Mu Chen’s expression turned solemn and he nodded heavily.

“Then let’s begin.”

The Nine Nether Bird stopped speaking and flapped its wings. Immediately afterwards, the rich black flame surged out and had surged into the Spiritual Energy light wheel and Mu Chen’s Spirit within his aura sea.

At this moment, even the tiny Spirit within Mu Chen’s aura sea had revealed a dignified expression. It formed seals with its hand and dense black Spiritual Energy erupted out from the Spiritual Energy light wheel as it protected it from the black flame.

Chi Chi!

The black flame quickly surged and instantly enveloped both the Spirit and the Spiritual Energy light wheel. A burst of sound resounded out as the black flame collided with the dark-black Spiritual Energy. At this moment, Mu Chen could feel that his Spiritual Energy melted quickly when it made contact with the black flame.

In the past, Mu Chen was able to control a tiny bit of the Nine Netherflame when he relied on the Nine Nether Bird’s power. He managed to manipulate it so that it would not harm him. However, under this circumstance, it was evident that he had lost control of the Nine Netherflame. The Nine Netherflame that was once a razor-sharp weapon for him had now revealed its extraordinariness towards him.

Since his Spiritual Energy was melted by the black flames, Mu Chen let out a cry and a brilliant light erupted out from his Spiritual Energy light wheel. Dense Spiritual Energy shot out and bypassed the raging black

flames. This light exited his aura sea and quickly circulated through his meridians.

Within the Spiritual Energy that had exited his aura sea, every single part of it was tinted with black flames. Moreover, it caused the black flames to appear within Mu Chen's meridians. With just the temperature of the black flames, it made Mu Chen's meridians convulse.

A stinging pain expanded out, causing Mu Chen's body to tremble.

Mu Chen grinded his teeth and endured the immense pain. He continued to utilize and circulate his Spiritual Energy. However, as he circulated his Spiritual Energy, the Spiritual Energy also began to weaken. This was because the black flame had continued to burn through the Spiritual Energy.

Chi! Chi!

In this instant, Mu Chen's body had turned exceptionally hot. Spiritual Energy continued to circulate through his body, yet at the very beginning, the Spiritual Energy was completely burned by the Nine Netherflame as it circulated half-way through his meridians.

It was an intense consumption. As he circulated his Spiritual Energy, he relied on the external pressure to fuse his Spiritual Energy with the Nine Netherflame. However, once the Spiritual Energy was completely burned, the fusion of Spiritual Energy and the Nine Netherflame had ended in failure.

Currently, it was as if Mu Chen was basically swapping his blood for a completely new one. However, it was not blood that he was swapping; it was Spiritual Energy...He required all of the Spiritual Energy within his body to be completely fused with a pure Spiritual Energy like the Nine Netherflame.

Therefore, if the Spiritual Energy that he had drawn out was completely burned and failed to make it back to the Spiritual Energy light wheel, it would mean that it had ended up in failure. Moreover, he would have wasted the Spiritual Energy.

Fortunately, Mu Chen remained fairly calm while facing this situation. He knew that it wasn't easy to perform the Spiritual Energy Fusion. It would definitely take a relatively long period of time for him to adapt to it. Only then, his Spiritual Energy would be able to gradually endure the blazing Nine Netherflame and successfully fuse with it.

As Mu Chen held this thought in his mind, the Spiritual Energy within his body had been thoroughly exhausted in just an hour. The Spiritual Energy light wheel had also turned quite dim.

Therefore, Mu Chen endured the stinging pain within his body and temporarily stopped the Spiritual Energy Fusion. Instead, he circulated the Great Pagoda Art and quickly absorbed the Spiritual Energy within the lake's water in order to replenish the Spiritual Energy within his body.

When the Spiritual Energy within his body was quite abundant again, he did not plan on resting and started to perform the Spiritual Energy Fusion once again...

This was a considerably tiring and painful cultivation.

After the first day of cultivation was complete, Mu Chen was finally able to make the Spiritual Energy within his body gradually endure the Nine Netherflame. However, he was still unable to successfully make a surge of Spiritual Energy return to his Spiritual Energy light wheel.

But Mu Chen wasn't depressed at all. At the very least, there was a tiny bit of progress made.

Next up, for the remaining cultivation period, Mu Chen had repeated the same actions over and over again. He would only rest briefly every day and would spend most of his time on the Spiritual Energy Fusion. Fortunately, the heavens wouldn't disappoint a hard working individual and on the fourth day, a single surge of Spiritual Energy had endured the Nine Netherflame and the immense water pressure. It completed the circulation and returned within his aura sea.

The Spiritual Energy was several times weaker than when it had departed from his aura sea. Moreover, it was just a shred of Spiritual Energy. However, this made Mu Chen quite excited. After all, this shred of

Spiritual Energy had completed the Spiritual Energy Fusion and was strengthened.

Mu Chen's consciousness stared at the brand new Spiritual Energy with excitement. The newborn Spiritual Energy had turned even darker and was the same color as the night sky. Within this shred of Spiritual Energy, Mu Chen noticed a trace of black flames flickering.

It was the Nine Netherflame.

Delight filled Mu Chen's heart. He focused for a moment and the black flame within the shred of Spiritual Energy rose up. But right now, Mu Chen did not feel the slightest trace of danger emitting from it.

This was because this Nine Netherflame truly belonged to him. Even the Nine Nether Bird wasn't able to control it!

Although the shred of Spiritual Energy was quite tiny in size, Mu Chen could feel that this Spiritual Energy with black flame was much higher in quality compared to his previous Spiritual Energy!

The destructive power and lethalness had increased several folds.

"You've only fused a tiny part of your Spiritual Energy...It is far from being complete." The Nine Nether Bird reminded Mu Chen.

Mu Chen smiled and quickly suppressed the emotions he felt. He focused once again and the strengthened Spiritual Energy went inside the tiny Spirit's body on top of the Spiritual Energy light wheel. At this moment, the eyes of Mu Chen's Spirit had darkened slightly.

With the success of the shred of Spiritual Energy, the remaining cultivation was performed easily. However, the pain that he suffered did not decrease at all. Waves of pain would stimulate Mu Chen's nerves and caused his body to tremble violently.

In just two short days, the Spiritual Energy fused with the Nine Netherflame had gradually increased in quantity within Mu Chen's body. However, the process was still far from being complete.

Since the Spiritual Energy within Mu Chen's body was completely

emptied, he closed his eyes once again and began to form seals without any hesitation. He activated the Great Pagoda Art and a hint of black flame surged out from his body. Once his absorption of Spiritual Aura had begun, the nearby lake water had instantly evaporated and formed an empty area.

Splash.

At this moment, the lake water was gathering quickly towards where Mu Chen was located. A massive vortex was formed. Mu Chen was sitting at the eye of the vortex as he drew out the Spiritual Aura from the lake's water into his body.

The commotion caused by Mu Chen was extraordinary. The entire lake trembled from his power. This commotion of his had also agitated a few figures, who were also cultivating within the lake. It was clear that they were also using the water pressure to cultivate.

When they detected the commotion within the lake, they opened their eyes in surprise. Then, they rushed through the lake and headed towards the source of the commotion. Soon, they noticed Mu Chen sitting cross-legged within the vortex.

"Who is this guy? He actually caused such a large commotion!"

"He seems to be at the Spirit Stage Late Phase. How is it possible that he possess the ability to cause such a ruckus?"

"This guy...isn't simple."

Their eyes were filled with surprise as they whispered with each other. However, they did not disturb Mu Chen's cultivation. Each one of them were able to sense how powerful Mu Chen was. Although the latter only seemed to be at the Spirit Stage Late Phase, the fluctuations emitted out from the latter's body made them feel a hint of danger.

They looked at this scene for a moment and noticed that Mu Chen was planning to ignore them. Therefore, they could only disperse and head back to their original locations.

On the other hand, Mu Chen had also detected the figures approaching.

But upon seeing that they did not reveal any hostility, he relaxed himself and began to concentrate in order to replenish the Spiritual Energy within his body.

Once the Spiritual Energy within his body was filled, Mu Chen let out a deep sigh and his eyes glowed. He had a feeling that he would be able to complete the Spiritual Energy Fusion this time!

“Let’s begin!”

Mu Chen endured the excitement within his heart and focused. Rumbling Spiritual Energy exited his Spiritual Energy light wheel once again.

Chapter 198: Su Ling'Er

Buzz.

At this moment, within Mu Chen's aura sea, a rumbling, rich black flame was enveloping Mu Chen's Spiritual Energy light wheel. As this situation progressed, Mu Chen's Spirit sat cross-legged on the Spiritual Energy light wheel and formed a few seals. Then, it absorbed the strengthened Spiritual Energy that returned.

As more of the strengthened Spiritual Energy returned, the eyes on Mu Chen's Spirit darkened and a faint black flame could be seen surging within it.

Although Mu Chen's Spiritual Energy fluctuation were no different than earlier, the strength that would explode out once he decide to fight would definitely be stronger than before.

The Spiritual Energy that was fused with the Nine Netherflame would also reveal just how extraordinary it is.

"It's nearly complete..."

Ripples formed within Mu Chen's heart and a mysterious feeling emerged. The feeling of his body being completely filled with Spiritual Energy was becoming more and more apparent.

Just when a surge of Spiritual Energy rushed into Mu Chen's Spirit, Mu Chen felt that his Spirit had trembled violently. Then, a violent Spiritual Energy fluctuation erupted from it. At the same time, black flames gushed out from its body. His entire Spirit was covered with black flames.

This black flame was the Nine Netherflame. However, this Nine Netherflame belonged solely to Mu Chen!

"Right now, you have completely changed the Spiritual Energy within your body with the fused Spiritual Energy. However, it does not mean that it is complete yet." The Nine Nether Bird watched this scene and spoke: "You still need to form a Seed of Fire using the Nine Netherflame. Then, from now on, you must continue to strengthen it using your Spiritual

Energy. This way, once new Spiritual Energy enters your body, it would be automatically fused with the Seed of Fire and turned into the fused Spiritual Energy."

Hearing this, Mu Chen nodded his head slightly. He did not hesitate and his Spirit formed a tiny hand seal. One hand was above, while the other hand was below. It was as if the sun and the moon were within his hand.

Swish!

The black flames that were wrapped around Mu Chen's Spirit quickly gathered towards the space between its hand. Then, it was compressed endlessly...

While Mu Chen compressed the Nine Netherflame within his body, an irregular black flame soon formed. However, it was evident that it would need some time before a Seed of Fire would be formed.

About this, Mu Chen actually maintained his calmness. He did not hurry and, instead, condensed the black flame slowly and steadily. Eventually, it turned slightly real...

Just condensing the Seed of Fire took approximately five days.

Within these five days, Mu Chen was completely focused on condensing the Seed of Fire. Under his full strength, he had obtained substantial results. The originally irregular black flame had turned into the size of a palm. The color of it was extremely dark and black flames would permeate out from it.

The Seed of Fire was about to be formed.

But while Mu Chen was fully immersed with his cultivation, he did not know that trouble was rushing towards him within the Rank 6 Spirit Convergence Array. The source of this trouble was Su Ling'Er, who he had kicked out from the Spirit Ranking.

Su Ling'Er had once headed towards the freshman area to search for Mu Chen. However, she wasn't able to find him there. Instead, she had met with Luo Li and the two of them fought against each other. But what surprised Su Ling'Er was that she wasn't able to defeat Luo Li. It was clear

from their battle that Luo Li wasn't inferior to her at all.

This made her become interested in Luo Li. Coupled with the fact that Luo Li was a beauty, Su Ling'Er, instead, wanted to be on friendly terms with her. Therefore, the battle between the two girls did not yield any results.

Although Su Ling'Er's temper wasn't that great, she did not perform a similar feat like Mo Lun and obstructed the freshmen. With her appeal within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, coupled with her sister's reputation, the power that could be formed wasn't something that Mo Lun could compare with.

And upon hearing that Mu Chen wasn't within the freshman area, she had departed from it. Afterwards, she had asked around and heard that Mu Chen had headed to a Rank 6 Spirit Convergence Array to cultivate. Therefore, she had chased him to the Spirit Convergence Array. This little girl was quite prideful and felt humiliation when Mu Chen had kicked her out of the Spirit Ranking without any mercy. In the past few years, it was the first time that she had seen a man that dared to do such a thing to her.

Therefore, she must beat up the freshman known as Mu Chen and let out her temper.

But the area within the Spirit Convergence Array was considerably large. It was evident that it wasn't easy to find a person within this place. However, this wasn't any trouble for Su Ling'Er. After all, she was considered to be a well-known beauty within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Coupled with the fact that she was the sister of Su Xuan, there were many students that wanted to please her. Therefore, she only had to reveal her goal and many male students would volunteer to help her. They would help find Mu Chen within this Spirit Convergence Array.

Therefore, a ruckus occurred within this Rank 6 Spirit Convergence Array. Many seniors would pass through the area searching for traces of Mu Chen. This disturbed the peace within the Spirit Convergence Array.

Although there were a few people that were unhappy about it, they

could only accept it as they knew of the reputation of these sisters.

Countless figures stood on top of a mountain peak within the Rank 6 Spirit Convergence Array. The one leading these individuals was a pretty girl dressed in light yellow. Her blue hair was tied up in a ponytail and her skin was like the snow. She possessed large eyes and a petite nose. With all of the above traits, she was considered to be a bright and beautiful girl. At this moment, she was gritting her teeth. After all, she had been searching for Mu Chen on a grand scale and attracted some dissatisfaction from others. Although she might not care about it, it would still anger her because others were secretly talking behind her back. Therefore, she pushed the source of this rage towards Mu Chen.

"This bastard. It's the same every time. He would hide after doing what he had to do! Just why would Luo Li like him?" Su Ling'Er said bitterly.

"Ohoho, there's no need to be this impatient. We should be able to find him soon. When that happens, we would be glad to help you take care of him if you ask us to." Behind Su Ling'Er, a boy smiled and replied. His face was filled with arrogance and from his tone, it seemed that he never thought that Mu Chen was someone important.

"This Mu Chen is truly within the limelight recently. It was said that he is the Number One Freshman among this year's freshmen. During the day of the Freshmen Competition, he had defeated Yang Hong, who had already reached the Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase. We are only slightly stronger than Yang Hong, so it won't be easy for us to defeat him." Another boy said in a solemn voice.

"What? Chen Xiu, are you actually afraid of a freshman?" The boy earlier let out a mocking laugh. "No matter how strong he is, he is only a freshman. If he wants to defeat us, he will need to cultivate for at least a year before that's possible."

"Enough. When I find him, I will defeat him by myself. There's no need for you to intervene." Su Ling'Er shook his head. She did not hold too much resentment towards Mu Chen. After all, she only wanted to let out her anger. Therefore, it was enough if she had defeated Mu Chen. There

wasn't a need to waste this much effort on a freshman.

"Swish!"

Just when Su Ling'Er spoke out loud, a figure of light suddenly approached from a distance. It landed on the mountain peak and spoke with delight: "We found where Mu Chen is!"

"Oh?"

Joy instantly filled Su Ling'Er's face. I've finally found you, you bastard! Let's see whether or not you can continue to hide from me!

"Hurry and bring me there!"

Swish! Swish!

Swishing sounds resounded out on top of the mountain as Su Ling'Er and the others rushed away. In a dozen minutes or so, they appeared in the sky where two mountains' summit had connected with each other. A lake was formed within the connected area.

"Miss Ling'Er. Mu Chen should be cultivating within this lake. I've seen him before." When Su Ling'Er appeared, a figure approached from the shore of the lake. This person was cultivating at this place earlier as well and was disturbed by Mu Chen's cultivation commotion before.

"Thanks."

Su Ling'Er let out a pleased smile and waved her hand. A beam of light shot out from her Spiritual Values Card.

The figure quickly received the beam of light and noticed that his Spiritual Values Card had increased by another 5,000 Spiritual Values. This caused him to grin. After all, he could cultivate within this place for another day. This Su Ling'Er sure is generous and is quite wealthy. No matter who, as long as they managed to successfully obtain her love, they would never have to worry about not having enough Spiritual Values.

Su Ling'Er sent the person away after handing over some Spiritual Values. Then, her beautiful eyes were focused on the clear lake. She let out a hmph and said: "Are you still planning to hide like a coward now?"

“Ling’Er. Let me drag this person out for you and force him to apologize.” The boy in white clothes beside Su Ling’Er smiled.

“I can deal with it by myself.”

Su Ling’Er smiled faintly. She did not need an apology from him. She only wanted to defeat Mu Chen and prove to her sister that she wasn’t as weak as she had imagined!

Once she said these words, Su Ling’Er swept her hands and a beam of Spiritual Energy rushed out into the lake. Powerful waves and gales were blasted directly to the bottom of the lake.

“Mu Chen. Hurry and come out in front of this lady!”

When Su Ling’Er caused a ruckus at the lake, she shouted out towards the depths of the lake. Her voice was wrapped with Spiritual Energy and echoed through the sky as well.

At this moment, countless students cultivating nearby were affected. They quickly turned to the source of the commotion and stared in surprise. After all, Su Ling’Er was a celebrity within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Everyone would pay attention to her actions.

“So she’s finding Mu Chen.”

“Is it the Number One Freshman? Mu Chen, who had recently obtained Rank 1 on the Spirit Ranking?”

“Who else could it be? He actually dared to provoke Su Ling’Er. He truly doesn’t know much about the world.

“Su Ling’Er is about to breakthrough to the Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase, right? Although Mu Chen is quite powerful, he will probably suffer this time.”

Whispers resounded out through the sky. Countless individuals stared at this place with interest. After all, cultivation was considerably boring. Right now, it was evident that this scene would help relieve them from their boredom.

Just when this area became lively, Mu Chen opened his eyes from the

bottom of the lake. Black flames surged within his eyes and the nearby lake water instantly evaporated.

He lifted his head slowly and frowned. He could vaguely guess why this trouble had occurred.

Chapter 199: Battle between the Old and New Spirit Ranking Rank 1

In the sky above the lake, Su Ling'Er stood in mid-air as she stared down towards the bottom of the lake. She raised her eyebrow slightly. Even with all this, that bastard is actually trying to hide from her?

"Could it be that the Number One Freshman this year is actually a coward?" The boy in white clothes behind Su Ling'Er laughed out mockingly.

"Ling'Er. Watch me drag out that guy for you!" At that moment, he descended down after speaking. When Su Ling'Er noticed this, she did not stop him from rushing towards the bottom of the lake.

Seeing that Su Ling'Er did not object to his actions, he grinned and dense Spiritual Energy surged out from his body. At the same time, his body turned into a figure of light as he rushed down towards the bottom of the lake.

It was evident that he was planning to enter the lake and to drag out Mu Chen from his hiding place.

His speed was extremely fast and the wind pressure from his descent caused a large crater to form on the surface of the lake. Then, he tore past the surface and rushed into the lake. However, a sudden pillar of water burst out like a water dragon from below.

This water dragon smashed heavily on the boy in white clothes. Moreover, the Spiritual Energy within the water dragon had caused the boy to be blown away awkwardly. At the same time, his clothes were completely wet.

As the boy stabilized himself, his expression turned slightly pale. His gaze was firmly fixed at the center of the lake. At that location, a huge whirlpool had formed. And within the center of the whirlpool, a water pillar suddenly burst out. A handsome boy with a slender body had emerged from the water pillar.

When Mu Chen emerged from the bottom of the lake, he stared at the nearby figures before his gaze settled on Su Ling'Er. He frowned and asked: "May I know why you are disturbing my cultivation?"

"So you're that Mu Chen?"

Su Ling'Er stared at Mu Chen, who had appeared. She carefully observed him for a moment before saying: "I'm Su Ling'Er. You should know why I am searching for you, right?"

So it was her...

Mu Chen frowned and replied faintly: "Are all of the seniors within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy this narrow-minded? Every time they are beaten within the rankings, they would have to appear in front of me. Could it be that, in your eyes, it is truly difficult to endure a freshman surpassing you?"

Su Ling'Er's face instantly turned red. She was slightly angered by the tone displayed by Mu Chen. Hmph, this bastard. Just what is there to be proud of? He had only broken her results from a year ago!

"It's not like I care about the measly title of the Spirit Ranking Rank 1." Su Ling'Er gritted her teeth as she spoke: "I only wanted to see exactly how special the Number One Freshman this year was. But judging from what I've seen, you seemed to be quite ordinary."

"From the very start, I was just an ordinary freshman." Mu Chen smiled: "It seems that I've disappointed this senior. If that's all you've wanted, then please leave. I still need to cultivate and I have no time to play with you."

After saying this, he attempted to dive down into the lake again. Judging from his appearance, it seemed that he did not wanted to be related to Su Ling'Er at all.

At this moment, Su Ling'Er was actually dumbfounded. It was the first time that she had seen such a person from the opposite sex act like this in front of her. This surprised her, yet it also angered her.

"Hmph. Boy, Su Ling'Er didn't let you leave, yet, you actually dare to

leave? Stay right here!"

Because he was taken in by surprise at the beginning, the boy, who had turned into an awkward state due to the water pillar, suddenly shouted out loud. His body quickly appeared above Mu Chen as he smacked downwards.

Rumbling Spiritual Energy surged downwards. The extraordinary attack had actually caused waves to spread throughout the surface of the lake.

Since he had turned to this awkward state by Mu Chen previously, he thought that he had shamed himself in front of Su Ling'Er and he naturally wanted to get back his pride. Therefore, he did not hold back in his attack and used his full strength instead.

Seeing that this boy act immediately after he had spoke, his black eyes had turned cold. This person's strength was similar to Yang Hong. To a certain extent, he wasn't as strong as Yang Hong after Yang Hong had summoned the Ancient Tiger Dragon.

"You really thought that you can do just anything to a freshman?"

Mu Chen's hands spun and dark-black Spiritual Energy surged out from his body. Within the Spiritual Energy, a black flame danced around and an extreme heat emerged. In that instant, the water beneath Mu Chen's foot boiled up.

Mu Chen's hands turned into a fist as he fired out a punch straight out. The dark-black Spiritual Energy flowed through his arm and rushed out like a lion with blazing black flames. It did not retreat as it collided against the boy in white clothes's attack.

Spiritual Energy shockwaves stormed out from the place where the two attacks collided. A massive abyss was forcibly ripped apart on the surface of the lake.

But when the two Spiritual Energy collided with each other, the boy in white clothes's expression changed dramatically. This is because he detected that his Spiritual Energy was being consumed at an alarming rate.

“This person’s Spiritual Energy is quite strange!”

The boy in white clothes was surprised as he stared towards Mu Chen’s Spiritual Energy. He noticed that within the black Spiritual Energy, there was a black flame dancing around. Every time it passed by, it would burn his Spiritual Energy and reveal its overbearingness.

Mu Chen let out a deep hmph and the Spiritual Energy within his body burst out without mercy. Dense Spiritual Energy mixed with black flames had rushed up towards the sky.

The boy in white clothes’s attack was completely burned away. At this instant, shock filled his face and he hastily retreated. However, Mu Chen did not allow this. His moved quickly and appeared in front of the boy in white clothes. His body was like a bullet as his shoulder smashed onto the boy’s chest.

The boy in white clothes was sent directly flying away. Blood flowed out from the corner of his lips as he felt something sweet within his throat. Due to the impact from Mu Chen, his clothes were completely shattered away.

At this moment, commotions broke out from the people watching this scene nearby. The boy in white clothes wasn’t particularly nameless, he, too, possessed a bit of fame within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Moreover, his strength was in no way inferior to Yang Hong, yet he was at a disadvantage during his momentary contact with Mu Chen.

The boy with white clothes turned pale and his eyes darkened. He wiped off the blood traces at the corner of his lips. Then, he stared coldly at Mu Chen as the Spiritual Energy within his body turned more violently.

“Liu Tong!”

However, Su Ling’Er had shouted out just when the boy in white clothes’s eyes darkened: “This is my own affair. I don’t need you to intervene in them!”

Hearing this, the fluctuations emitted from the boy in white clothes gradually weakened. However, the eyes that stared at Mu Chen were still

quite gloomy. He was at a disadvantageous position earlier because he did not know about this strange Spiritual Energy. If they were to fight again, it wouldn't be easy for Mu Chen to gain the upper hand against him!

Mu Chen glanced at the boy in white clothes for a moment before he looked over to Su Ling'Er. He said coldly: "What do you want? Are you going to continue releasing your charm so that you'll find more opponents for me?"

At this moment, his voice was filled with impatience and rudeness. He was not acquainted with Liu Tong at all and did not bear any resentment with him. However, hatred was formed between them due to Su Ling'Er. Therefore, he was slightly pissed off.

It was evident that Su Ling'Er was rarely treated this way. Therefore, her face turned bright red as she took a deep breath. Her voluptuous chest was lifted up slightly and she replied as she suppressed her rage: "Relax. I, Su Ling'Er, wouldn't do such a despicable act. I don't care much about the Spirit Ranking's Rank 1. However, I have the right to get back the face that I lost when you seized that title. Since you've made me lose face, it can't be that you're not permitting me to get it back now?!"

"I give up, okay?"

Mu Chen replied faintly and ignored Su Ling'Er. He turned around and descended down towards the lake once again. Time was pressing for him, so he didn't have time to play with this girl.

"You!"

Su Ling'Er gritted her teeth. It was apparent that she was angered by Mu Chen's words and actions. Therefore, she did not speak any longer and, instead, fiery red Spiritual Energy surged out from her body. It formed into a Spiritual Energy pillar as it tore through the sky towards Mu Chen.

Sensing the sudden Spiritual Energy fluctuation from behind, Mu Chen's eyes focused and he blasted out a punch as well. Four Limitless Death Seals emerged and collided against the Spiritual Energy pillar.

Another burst of Spiritual Energy shockwaves erupted out. Enormous

waves were formed and rain poured down near the lake.

Ripples began to emerge from where Mu Chen was standing. His expression turned serious. Although Su Ling'Er may look sweet and arrogant, she was indeed quite powerful. She was many times stronger than Liu Tong.

"Hmph. So this year's Number One Freshman is quite womanly. He doesn't have the boldness that the other Number One Freshmen from previous years had. He doesn't even dare to receive a challenge from a girl!" Su Ling'Er stared at Mu Chen, who was within the pouring rain. She laughed out coldly as she spoke.

"However, it's not possible for you to reject this duel today!"

Su Ling'Er's body rushed down as a fiery red Spiritual Energy surged out towards the sky. From the fluctuations of the Spiritual Energy, it was extremely close to the Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase!

Su Ling'Er had turned into a figure of flames as she descended down towards Mu Chen. Her slender hand moved and dense Spiritual Energy surged out like a storm. It carried the rain as it whistled over towards Mu Chen.

Mu Chen lifted his head and black flames surged within his eyes. He, too, took a deep breath and a thunderous roar rushed out from his throat. Then, he turned around and smacked out with his palm.

Black Spiritual Energy surged out from within Mu Chen's body without reservation. From afar, it seemed like a sea of black flames. Even before the rain had poured down, it had been completely evaporated by the black Spiritual Energy.

The two extraordinary Spiritual Energies smashed against each other and shockwaves spread out. The lake's water was blasted into the sky as a massive storm raged through this area.

Countless gazes were focused at a place above the massive lake. As the storm raged throughout this area, two figures were confronting each other. At the same time, both the fiery red Spiritual Energy and the dark-

black Spiritual Energy had occupied half of the sky.

At that location, a boy and girl confronted each other with serious expressions.

Many people's eyes were filled with interest as they watched this scene. The two individuals in front of them possessed a bit of fame within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. There was no need to mention about Su Ling'Er's fame. As for Mu Chen, his reputation had soared due to the recent Freshmen Competition. Therefore, the battle between the two of them would definitely be a sight to watch.

Furthermore, the most important part is that...it was the confrontation between the previous and new Spirit Ranking's Rank 1. This made them quite curious. Just which one of them had the greater odds of victory?

Chapter 200: Means

Crash.

The overwhelming rain enveloped the sky that surrounded the lake as it poured down. Ripples emerged constantly from the surface of the lake, and crisp sounds resounded endlessly from the storm.

At the center of the lake, a boy and a girl were confronting each other. An extraordinary Spiritual Energy fluctuation was emitted from both of them. Before the rain even managed to approach their bodies, it was blown away.

Numerous figures nearby were attracted to this scene. They stared curiously at the two individuals confronting each other.

Mu Chen stood on the surface of the lake as he stared at the beautiful girl confronting him. The girl had bright eyes and white teeth. Moreover, she possessed a slim figure and was an exceptional beauty. However, she was currently like an angry cat, and was glaring at him tightly.

Against such an opponent, Mu Chen felt slightly troubled. If the opponent was someone that went overboard like Mo Lun, he wouldn't hesitate to teach her a lesson. However, Su Ling'Er wasn't as annoying as Mo Lun. Therefore, it was evident that it would be too mean if he gravely injured her, yet it wouldn't be easy to calm down such a person if he went too lightly.

Su Ling'Er stared at Mu Chen with her beautiful eyes as she grit her teeth. Then, her hands danced as she suddenly charged towards him. Judging from her elegant movements, it was clear that she'd learned a rather special Movement Spiritual Art.

Furthermore, her mastery of this Spiritual Art was many times higher than the Shadowspirit Step that Mu Chen had trained in.

Mu Chen was slightly shocked. Although Su Ling'Er had a boyish attitude, her strength was no joke. It was no wonder that she'd managed to occupy the 1st Rank on the Spirit Ranking for so long; it seemed she hadn't

solely relied on her sister to obtain her reputation within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

In an instant, Su Ling'Er had emerged in front of Mu Chen. At the same time, a flame-like whip had appeared within her slender hands. Scarlet scales were plastered all along the whip, and an extraordinary Spiritual Energy was emanated from it. It was evident that this whip was a Spiritual Artifact. Moreover, it was definitely a higher ranked one compared to the Black Pot Spiritual Artifact that Mu Chen had obtained previously...

At the very least, it was a Middle Rank Spiritual Artifact.

Mu Chen's lips twitched. It was the first time that he'd fought against someone who'd directly brought out such a Spiritual Artifact. Although there were many Middle Rank Spiritual Artifact within the Spiritual Values Hall, these Spiritual Artifact had an extremely high price. The cheapest ones could be bought with a few thousand Spiritual Value Points, while the more expensive ones could be bought with hundreds of thousands. However, with Su Ling'Er's personality, it was obviously that she wouldn't purchase the former...

Therefore, the power of the scarlet whip made Mu Chen slightly afraid.

Yet Su Ling'Er didn't hesitate at all in her fight against Mu Chen. She waved her hand and the scarlet whip flew out like a fiery dragon. It forcibly created a rip in the water along the surface of the lake as it headed towards Mu Chen.

When Mu Chen noticed this scarlet whip approaching him, he hurriedly retreated, not daring to take the attack directly. After all, Su Ling'Er was half-a-step away from the Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase. With the help of her scarlet whip, she could probably fight for a while against a Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase. Therefore, it was only natural that Mu Chen would take evasive actions against the attack.

However, it was clear that Su Ling'Er was quite skilled at using her whip. Once she noticed that Mu Chen was evading her attacks, she quickly flicked her wrist, and the whip tore through the air. It swirled through the sky at an alarming speed and caught up with Mu Chen. Then, it smashed

down angrily towards him.

When the whip smashed down, the wind pressure caused the lake to explode and to be divided into two pieces. Even with his evasive actions, the violent whip was like a dragon's tail, and it smashed into Mu Chen's shoulder.

As the lake burst open, Mu Chen's figure was seen flying into the lake. A large hole was formed within the surface of the lake.

Surprised voices rang out from the nearby audience. Since Su Ling'Er had managed to occupy the Spirit Ranking's 1st Ranked position for so long, she was indeed quite capable. The previous attack was extremely violent and accurate. Not to mention Mu Chen, even another Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase powerhouse wouldn't have been able to avoid it.

Seeing this, Su Ling'Er snorted and let out a light 'hmph' sound. Her hand shook for a moment, and the whip covered with fiery scales was retracted by her. It was wrapped around her slender waist.

"Oi. Just how long do you plan to hide inside the water?" Su Ling'Er gently patted her hand as she stared at the calm lake.

However, there was no response to her question. This stunned Su Ling'Er. Could it be that that bastard was gravely injured already? He couldn't even last for a long fight? But he'd managed to obtain the Spirit Ranking's 1st Rank...

Su Ling'Er waited for a moment. Upon seeing that there hadn't been any movements, she frowned. She'd only wanted to vent some of her frustration, she hadn't intended to seriously injure Mu Chen.

"Plop!"

Just as Su Ling'Er frowned, the water surface that she was standing on was suddenly tore open. A water vortex formed, and a hand pierced through the water and grabbed onto her slender foot. Then, with a fierce tug, it dragged Su Ling'Er, who panicked, into the icy cold water.

When Su Ling'Er was forced into the lake, she hurriedly activated her

Spiritual Energy. At the same time, her hand quickly grasped the scarlet whip on her waist.

But before she could perform any actions, a pair of arms appeared from behind her and completely locked down her hands. Then, a boy that permeated a manly smell emerged close to her.

"You!"

At this moment, Su Ling'Er's petite body was being locked down as if she was being embraced. Her expression changed, and she quickly struggled. However, Mu Chen knew that it wouldn't be easy to deal with this girl if she went berserk. Therefore, he also activated his Spiritual Energy and dragged her to the bottom of the lake.

"Bastard, release me!"

Su Ling'Er struggled fiercely, and Spiritual Energy surged out from her endlessly. Yet, her struggles were in vain, as her limbs were all locked down by Mu Chen.

Moreover, as she'd struggled, their bodies had brushed against each other. This feeling instantly made Su Ling'Er's face turn as red as a tomato; rage filled her eyes.

"Don't move!"

Mu Chen shouted. This girl was indeed quite wild.

"Mu Chen, you bastard!" Su Ling'Er stared furiously at Mu Chen. She then stared down at the arm that had locked down her hands. She bit down fiercely, without any hesitation, on it.

Under the infusion of Spiritual Energy, her bite wasn't inferior to a tiger's bite. Therefore, fresh blood soon overflowed from Mu Chen's arm.

Mu Chen inhaled deeply. The pain that he felt from his arm made him doubt whether or not his entire arm had snapped due to her bite. This girl wasn't that old, yet why were her teeth so strong?

"Let go!" Mu Chen's lips twitched as he shouted.

However, Su Ling'Er ignored him, and instead bit down even harder

when she noticed Mu Chen's twitching expression.

At this instant, Mu Chen's eyes turned fierce. He pulled fiercely with his arms and directly pulled Su Ling'Er into his arms. Then, he freed one of his arms and spanked the girl.

Even though his palm had to pass through the icy-cold lake, it was still filled with strength as he spanked the girl on the butt. A crisp sound resounded out slightly within the bottom of the lake.

When Mu Chen's palm connected, he noticed that the girl within his arms had instantly stiffened. Then, he noticed that Su Ling'Er's face had turned fiery red. Even her eyes were showing signs of redness within them.

"Bastard! Bastard!"

At that moment, Su Ling'Er went mad. She didn't relax her biting attack, and instead began clawing at Mu Chen. She seemed to have forgotten about utilizing her Spiritual Energy, and displayed the sharpness of her claws like an ordinary girl.

After Mu Chen was scratched a few times, he was slightly angered as well. He didn't care about anything anymore, and spanked her once again.

Spank! Spank!

Clear sounds spread out at the bottom of the lake, which caused ripples to form. Mu Chen didn't hesitate, and spanked her a dozen times without any mercy. After enduring these dozen hits, Su Ling'Er finally cried, and didn't dare to act violently.

"Are you going to continuing biting me?!" Mu Chen said with a furious expression.

"Mu Chen, you bastard!" The girl cried and didn't have the boyish attitude that she'd had previously. The pain that had appeared from her butt had made her both embarrassed and ashamed.

Seeing her like this, Mu Chen stopped and pushed her aside quickly. Then, he retreated backwards and stared at her as he guarded himself against her. He was afraid that she would enter that berserk state again.

After all, Su Ling'Er wasn't that weak, and it was evident that she was stronger than Yang Hong even when he'd utilized the Ancient Tiger Dragon. Therefore, it would be quite tricky for him to defeat her before he advanced to the Heavenly Fusion Stage.

Su Ling'Er grit her teeth and her eyes turned red after she'd finished crying. When she noticed that Mu Chen had released her, her hand immediately touched the scarlet whip at her waist.

"You dare!"

Mu Chen shouted out with a fierce expression.

At this moment, Su Ling'Er's body shuddered. It was evident that she was quite afraid. As she stared at Mu Chen, who had a dark expression, fear slowly began to creep into her fearless heart. Fortunately, they were at the bottom of the lake, and nobody had seen what had happened. Otherwise, she might have died due to the embarrassment.

"You were asking for what happened to you today. A girl should act more gentle. You shouldn't spend all day looking for trouble." Seeing Su Ling'Er stop when he shouted at her, Mu Chen had a strange feeling, and said in an emotionless tone.

In response, Su Ling'Er covered her butt with her petite hands as she stared at Mu Chen. Her eyes were red and filled with rage. Then, she shouted, "Mu Chen. Remember this! I'll never forgive you!"

After saying this, she actually turned away and burst out from the lake. Once she'd exited the lake, she wouldn't talk with anyone, and instead dashed towards the outside of the Spirit Convergence Array.

At the bottom of the lake, Mu Chen stared at the departing Su Ling'Er and was slightly relieved. He stared at his bloody arm and let out a bitter smile. That girl was truly like a dog. Those teeth of hers...

Luckily, he'd finally managed to send her away. It wasn't a bad result, considering that he hadn't had to pay a high price in order to defeat her. Although his means used to defeat her were somewhat unauthentic, they had occurred only because Mu Chen hadn't wanted to have a true battle

with her. If they were to truly face each other, Mu Chen wasn't afraid of her at all.

"I hope that she won't tell her sister about this matter."

Mu Chen curled his lips. Currently, he might be able to deal with Su Ling'Er. However, if she called out to her sister, Su Xuan, who was ranked third on the Heavenly Rankings, it would definitely be trouble.

"It seems that I must hurry and advance to the Heavenly Fusion Stage."

Mu Chen's expression turned serious. His current strength was truly lacking. Therefore, he had to make a breakthrough as soon as possible!

Chapter 201: Breakthrough

Mu Chen sat at the bottom of the lake for half a day as he waited for the audience to disperse. Then, he quietly emerged and glanced around. Once he'd confirmed that Su Ling'Er had departed, he was relieved.

"It seems that I can't remain here any longer."

Mu Chen shook his head helplessly. Although he'd managed to deal with Su Ling'Er today, he'd completely angered her. Once she recovered, she'd probably go on a rampage. When that happened, he'd be in trouble once she appeared again.

Moreover, Mu Chen had already completed his Spirit Energy Fusion cultivation. There wasn't any meaning to him cultivating at the bottom of this lake. Therefore, he needed to find another cultivation location, and prepare himself as he broke through to the Heavenly Fusion Stage!

As he'd fought constantly against powerful opponents, Mu Chen was aware of just how large of a gap there was between the Spirit Stage and the Heavenly Fusion Stage. If it wasn't for the fact that he possessed various techniques, he wouldn't have been able to defeat all those enemies.

But even so, he could still faintly feel the powerlessness within him. Therefore, he needed to breakthrough to the Heavenly Fusion Stage as well. When that happened, it would be a lot easier for him to deal with an opponent at the Heavenly Fusion Stage.

If Mu Chen was at the Heavenly Fusion Stage, there would be no need for him to use the sort of means to deal with the situation that he had today. Although it might not be easy to defeat Su Ling'Er, the latter wouldn't be able to obtain the upper-hand against him, even if she were to use a Middle Rank Spiritual Artifact.

Therefore, it was necessary for him to advance to the Heavenly Fusion Stage.

As he thought about this, Mu Chen decided not to hesitate, and directly

burst out from the lake. He then headed further into the depths of the Spirit Convergence Array. He needed to find another place to cultivate in peace.

Because Su Ling'Er had come searching for him earlier, he must've left a few trails previously. Therefore, after the previous incident, Mu Chen was quite careful, and did his best to avoid other individuals. He focused specifically on moving throughout the calm mountains and forests.

After approximately half an hour, Mu Chen had finally decided on the place where he'd cultivate. It was the summit of a hidden mountain. The summit wasn't quite visible, and was covered with trees.

Mu Chen's figure descended and landed on the isolated summit. This place was relatively close to the depths of the Spirit Convergence Array. Therefore, the Spiritual Aura of the world was exceptionally dense. Spiritual Mist would emerge from time to time, and was quite a refreshing sight.

Mu Chen glanced around the isolated peak, before he drilled a cave into the edge of a steep cliff. He cleared up the place slightly, before he sat down cross-legged.

Once he sat down cross-legged, his expression gradually became dignified. He knew that it wasn't easy to breakthrough to the Heavenly Fusion Stage, even if he'd made preparations for it.

A clump of white gas was slowly exhaled from Mu Chen. He closed his eyes, and the Spiritual Energy fluctuations that were emitted from his body retracted slightly.

Mu Chen didn't attempt to breakthrough to the Heavenly Fusion Stage immediately. This was because he knew that it was completely meaningless. He'd reached the peak of the Spirit Stage a while ago, and only needed an opportunity to breakthrough. But sometimes, it was this opportunity that stopped individuals from passing through the door to the Heavenly Fusion Stage.

He slowly cleared his mind of the thoughts of a breakthrough, and allowed his state of his mind to become calm. At the same time, he began

to circulate the Great Pagoda Art, and to absorb the dense Spiritual Aura within the world.

At this moment, the Spirit that was sitting above Mu Chen's Spiritual Energy light wheel had also sat down cross-legged. It formed a few cultivation seals with its hands. The so-called Heavenly Fusion Stage was for one to fuse with both heaven and earth. However, the fusion wasn't using one's own body, but their Spirit.

Only by allowing one's Spirit to breakthrough the shackles of the body, and by fusing with the heavens and earth, would one be able to manipulate the Spiritual Aura within the world and become a genuine Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouse.

Mu Chen's Spirit gradually calmed down and entered a state of selflessness. His consciousness drifted around within his body, yet whenever it attempted to break through his body, it was hampered.

However, Mu Chen wasn't anxious about this obstruction. He maintained a peaceful state of mind, and allowed his consciousness to drift around. He didn't deliberately try to find a feeling to break through the restraints of his body.

He knew that he would only be able to break through the restraints of his body when that feeling emerged. Otherwise, it would be useless no matter how much he struggled.

Right now, there was no need for him to be anxious. He only had to wait quietly.

Just as Mu Chen was immersing himself in his cultivation, and was searching for the mysterious feeling needed to breakthrough the shackles of his body, Su Ling'Er had returned to the island located at the center of the lake grumpily. She pushed open the door and ignored the gentle girl who was staring at her in surprise. She stomped up the stairs angrily, and rushed into her own room. Then, her petite body rolled around as she hammered her bed.

"Bastard! Bastard! Bastard!"

Su Ling'Er's face was completely red under her blanket. She grit her teeth as she cursed constantly. She still felt an occasional pain from her butt, causing her to feel slightly embarrassed.

She never expected that Mu Chen would actually do such an act!

"Bastard, I won't forgive you!

Su Ling'Er gritted her teeth. At this moment, she seemed like a tiny wolf, and she couldn't wait to tear Mu Chen into pieces.

"Who can't you forgive?"

A gentle laugh resounded out. Su Ling'Er hurriedly threw her blanket aside, and noticed Su Xuan chuckling nearby as she stared at her.

"N...Nothing." Su Ling'Er's face was bright red as she quickly responded. She didn't dare mention that she was spanked by Mu Chen. It was far too embarrassing!

"Didn't you say earlier that you would search for that freshman called Mu Chen? How is it? Did you find him?" Su Xuan smiled.

"N...No, I didn't find him." Su Ling'Er shook her head. Although she gnashed her teeth to the point where they were about to shatter, she had to save herself a little bit of face.

Su Xuan stared at Su Ling'Er for a moment. This was a bit strange. Just earlier, she'd been constantly muttering about how to trouble Mu Chen. Yet, right now, she'd acted quite honest.

"What happened to you?" Su Xuan noticed that Su Ling'Er's posture was strange, and that she'd tilted her body. Her clothes revealed her graceful curves, but it all seemed somewhat unnatural.

Su Ling'Er hurriedly sat up. However, once her butt made contact with the bed, a stinging pain emerged. Tears filled her eyes. However, she endured the pain as she cursed Mu Chen.

"If there's any problems, feel free to find your sister." Su Xuan felt that Su Ling'Er's actions were quite bizarre. However, she didn't think much about it, and rubbed her sister's head. Towards this sister of hers, she was

always quite protective.

"I know. Hurry and leave. I can deal with my own matters. Isn't that what you said, sister?" Su Ling'Er pouted. She would only say such words at this sort of moment.

Su Xuan shook her head as she left the room.

Once Su Xuan had left, Su Ling'Er buried her face into her pillow and rolled around. An angry voice rang out from her clenched teeth.

"Mu Chen, I won't forgive you!"

Although Su Ling'Er was filled with rage, she recovered on the following day. She immediately rushed back into the Spirit Convergence Array, and headed towards the lake. But once she'd arrived, she noticed that Mu Chen had already disappeared, and not even a trace of him could be found.

"Bastard! Bastard!"

In the sky, Su Ling'Er stomped down with her foot. She was fully prepared today, and had brought another valuable Middle Rank Spiritual Artifact, as well as the scarlet whip with her. She planned on capturing Mu Chen and getting her revenge, yet, she'd never imagined that the cunning fellow would actually run away from this place.

"AHHHHH! I don't believe that you can hide from me forever!"

Su Ling'Er swung her hands around angrily, and caused massive waves to form on the surface of the lake. The students, who were dizzy from the waves, had emerged from the lake. Once they saw that it was Su Ling'Er however, they suddenly shrank back, and didn't dare to say anything.

Su Ling'Er ignored them and glanced around. Then, she rushed off in another direction. From her appearance, it seemed that she wouldn't stop until she'd managed to capture Mu Chen.

While Su Ling'Er was searching for Mu Chen angrily, the latter had been cultivating quietly and calmly within a cave. At this moment, Mu Chen's body was completely motionless, and even his breathing was quite weak. It

was as if he was gravely injured and was about to die. However, if one were to sense carefully, they would notice that hidden underneath his current facade, was a burning and youthful vitality.

Mu Chen was currently experiencing the wonders of breaking through the shackles of the body. Everything in the outside world seemed to be blocked off by him. At this moment, he was completely immersed in his cultivation.

Time passed while Mu Chen continued this peaceful cultivation. In a blink of an eye, almost a month had passed.

During this month, Mu Chen had basically cultivated the entire time. He would utilize his Spirit to sense the world as he attempted to let it break through his body's shackles.

And under his calm state of mind as he cultivated, results had gradually emerged. His consciousness would drift around his body, yet it would occasionally break through his body's shackles. When it occurred, a mysterious, yet memorable feeling emerged within Mu Chen's heart...

After experiencing this feeling to a certain extent, Mu Chen finally opened his eyes. A profound feeling flashed through his black eyes.

He gently brushed aside the thin layer of dust on his clothes. At this moment, a faint Spiritual Mist had emerged atop his head. And within this Spiritual Mist, there was a palm-sized Spirit that slowly appeared. Then, it slowly sat down on Mu Chen's head.

In the instant that this Spirit had emerged, Mu Chen's body had trembled. The world in front of him seemed to have changed — as if it had changed from being quite unfamiliar, to being quite close to him...

Bang!

All of a sudden, countless Spiritual Auras within the world swarmed over towards him. It was as if there was a stream of Spiritual Aura that had entered this cave. In the end, it entered Mu Chen's body as he sat quietly.

In that instant, the Spiritual Energy fluctuations emitted from him soared! Compared to before, it was many times stronger!

This was a completely different level!

Chapter 202: Heavenly Fusion Stage

A powerful gale suddenly emerged above the mountain. The dense Spiritual Aura of the world seemed to be attracted by something and gathered at the summit. In the end, it rushed into cave like a flood and entered Mu Chen's body.

Buzz.

With the infusion of dense Spiritual Aura, fluctuations emerged near Mu Chen's body. A faint jade color actually emerged on his body and it seemed quite mysterious.

On Mu Chen's head, the Spirit also formed a seal. At that moment, the Spirit had a mesmerizing expression. It had sensed the heavens and earth and its body was slowly being fused into it.

It was a completely different realm than the Spirit Stage.

Mu Chen felt that as if his soul had suddenly become quite vast. At the previous stage, he was bound to his body, and it couldn't compare with the vast world outside.

But right now, every single one of his actions could fuse with the world and he could mobilize the dense Spiritual Aura within the world.

Mu Chen's Spirit also gradually turned clear. Moreover, it did not have an illusory form anymore and seemed like it was real.

Furthermore, a powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuation emanated out from the tiny Spirit.

A clump of white air was slowly exhaled out from Mu Chen's mouth. Then, he immediately changed seals. At that instant, the Spirit on his head slowly entered his body and returned to the aura sea.

When the Spirit returned to his aura sea, a mysterious and violent fluctuation emerged from the depths of his body. The Great Pagoda Art had also circulated by itself.

Sensing this change, Mu Chen was surprised. However, he did not

obstruct it and instead watched quietly. He could feel that this change was caused by the sealed Spiritual Pulse within his body.

Accompanied by the increase of his strength, the mysterious Spiritual Pulse that was sealed by his mother had slowly revealed its true form.

Zzzt!

When the fluctuation emerged, Mu Chen noticed that the mysterious black lights had emerged within the depths of his body again. The lights emitted out beams of light which had gathered at his Spirit's hand.

When the strange black lights had converged at his Spirit's hand, it gradually twisted around and condensed into a tiny black tower.

The tiny black tower was held by his Spirit and ancient and obscure, dark-golden engravings were on the surface of the tower. A majestic feeling emerged out, which would make one be in awe in front of it.

"This is..."

Mu Chen was shocked as he stared at the tiny black tower within his Spirit's hand. He was aware that the tiny black tower was quite peculiar. It did not seem to be an illusory item that was formed by Spiritual Energy. Instead, it was closer to being a Spiritual Artifact. But if he had to compare them, this item was different to a Spiritual Artifact.

In that instant, even Mu Chen wasn't able to understand exactly what this tiny black tower was.

Mu Chen's heart was filled with surprise. Just what exactly is the sealed Spiritual Pulse within his body? It could actually condense and turn into such a form. This was the first time he had ever heard of it.

He immediately focused and the Spirit waved the black tower in its hand slightly. A brilliant beam of black light burst out from it at this moment and an ancient bell sound resounded out.

A fluctuation that could seal all things slowly emitted out from it.

Mu Chen stared at the tiny black tower and investigated it for a while. However, this did not bear much results and could only shake his head as

he withdrew from his aura sea.

In the cave, Mu Chen opened his eyes and his body trembled slightly. The dust that had landed on his body was instantly blown away. Then, he stood up slowly and a creaking noise resounded out from his body.

Mu Chen gripped his hand tightly and sensed the dense Spiritual Energy fluctuation within his body. Delight instantly filled his eyes. After painstaking effort, he had finally advanced to the Heavenly Fusion Stage!

He stood at the entrance of the cave and stared out to the lush forest. At this moment, the world seemed to become much brighter in his eyes. He was also able to perceive the Spiritual Aura fluctuations within the world more accurately.

His gestures could mobilize the nearby Spiritual Aura within the world and this feeling wasn't something that a Spirit Stage could compare with.

"As expected of the Heavenly Fusion Stage..."

Mu Chen could not help but let out a praise. No wonder he had to use up various means while dealing with Yang Hong's attacks. So the difference between the two stages were so large.

"I wonder if Dad managed to break through to the Heavenly Fusion Stage yet."

Mu Chen suddenly smiled. With his current strength, he could definitely become the overlord of the Northern Spiritual Realm. But within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, he was still quite unworthy. This made him sigh. The Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy wasn't something that the Northern Spiritual Realm could compare with.

Mu Chen stretched his waist for a moment and took a deep breath of the fresh air within the forest. Then, he rushed into the sky and headed towards the exterior of the forest. This time, he had entered the Spirit Convergence Array for approximately one month and a half. He had spent nearly 200,000 Spiritual Values. Fortunately, his Spiritual Values Card possessed around 500,000 Spiritual Values before entering the Spirit Convergence Array. Otherwise, he would have been kicked out of the

Rank 6 Spirit Convergence Array halfway through his cultivation.

Although he had consumed a large amount of Spiritual Values, the results of his secluded cultivation were great. Not only did Mu Chen succeed in the Spiritual Energy Fusion, he also managed to break through the Spirit Stage and advance to the Heavenly Fusion Stage that he had dreamed of.

Compared to these results, the 200,000 Spiritual Values was only a minor thing.

Mu Chen smiled. In ten minutes, he had exited the forest. He looked around, then, he headed towards the exit of the Spirit Convergence Array. However, a hint of surprise emerged in his eyes after he flew for a few minutes.

This is because he noticed that there were countless individuals heading in the opposite direction instead. Every one of these individuals had a burning gaze as if there was a treasure in the depths of the Spirit Convergence Array.

“What happened?”

Mu Chen was stunned and he gradually slowed down. His gaze turned towards the depths of the Spirit Convergence Array and he could vaguely sense that the Spiritual Aura within the world was fluctuating violently at that location.

Mu Chen hesitated for a moment and immediately obstructed a student that was charging towards the depth of the Spirit Convergence Array. He smiled: “Senior, may I ask where all of you are heading to?”

The student that was obstructed by Mu Chen had an annoyed expression. He glared at Mu Chen for a moment and planned to rush past him.

Mu Chen flicked his fingers and his Spiritual Values Card emerged. 5,000 Spiritual Values turned into a beam of light as it headed towards that student.

At this moment, the latter’s eyes instantly brightened up. He hurriedly

placed away the 5,000 Spiritual Values and turned to look at Mu Chen. His eyes quickly warmed up and he replied: “Judging from your appearance, could you be a freshman? So you didn’t even know about the Spirit Tide within the Spirit Convergence Array?

“Spirit Tide?” Mu Chen was stunned and was quite confused.

“Generally speaking, in a highly rank Spirit Convergence Array like this, extremely dense Spiritual Aura of the world would be accumulated over the years. It would then form what is known as the Spirit Tide.” The student explained.

“Then why are so many people heading towards the so-called Spirit Tide?”

“That isn’t true. The Spirit Tide is considerably violent and it could be quite dangerous if one was sucked in. Normally speaking, it is best to avoid a Spirit Tide if possible.” The student snickered. Then, he responded with his eyes blazing: “However, within the Spirit Tide, a worldly treasure known as the “Celestial Spirit Lotus” would be formed due to the accumulated Spiritual Aura.”

“Celestial Spirit Lotus?” Mu Chen narrowed his eyes.

“Every time a Spirit Tide occurs, there would be one single Celestial Spirit Lotus that appears. The Celestial Spirit Lotus itself isn’t much use. However, the Spirit Lotus Seeds on the Celestial Spirit Lotus are considered a rare worldly treasure. It possesses the miraculous effects of stabilizing Spiritual Energy as well as solidifying your foundations.

“Oh?” A trace of surprise appeared within Mu Chen’s eyes. While cultivating Spiritual Energy, the foundations were exceptionally important. If the foundations were weak, it would be difficult to improve no matter how long one would cultivate. Therefore, a worldly treasure that could stabilize Spiritual Energy and solidifying foundations was considerably rare. He never imagined that the “Spirit Lotus Seeds” would possess these effects.

“A single Spirit Lotus Seed is worth at least 200,000 Spiritual Values within the Spiritual Values Hall. Moreover, there is no stock of them.

Therefore, who wouldn't try to seize one since the Spirit Tide had appeared?" The student smacked his lips and said disappointedly: "However, there is only one Celestial Spirit Lotus and the Spirit Lotus Seeds are limited. It would definitely be difficult to obtain one with so many people eyeing on it."

"Okay, buddy. If you're interested, you should hurry over. Otherwise, you wouldn't be able to see anything at all. I'm heading over first."

Seeing that he had pretty much explained everything, the student waved his hand and he charged towards the depths of the Spirit Convergence Array.

Mu Chen stood in the sky and stared at the figures that were rushing towards the depth of the Spirit Convergence Array. He pondered slightly before he rushed out in the same directions as the other individuals.

Since he had just advanced to the Heavenly Fusion Stage, he felt that the Spiritual Energy within his body was slightly superficial even though he had attempted to compress it. If he successfully obtained a Spirit Lotus Seed, he would be able to resolve this situation and he wouldn't need to spend time on stabilizing his Spiritual Energy.

A treasure like this wasn't something that you could wish for. Since it had appeared in front of him, he naturally would have to join in the fun as well. After all, it would be a pity if he just gave up on it.

Chapter 203: Huo Feng

In the deepest part of the Spirit Convergence Array, the sky was filled with brilliant colors. If one was to look forward, the sky would seem as magnificent as the ocean. A dense Spiritual Aura was converging and forming into many tidal waves. At the same time, rumbling sounds resounded out, causing it to seem like actual tidal waves.

On the ground outside of the deepest part of the Spirit Convergence Array, countless figures were already waiting patiently. Every single one of them were looking at the Spiritual Aura Ocean eagerly. At that location, the Spiritual Aura was surging out like actual tidal waves and a terrifying Spiritual Energy pressure emanated out into the world.

Against this terrifying Spiritual Energy pressure, even a Heavenly Fusion Stage would seem quite miniscule and wouldn't dare to face the tidal waves directly.

In front of the crowd of students, there were a few individuals that were entirely different than the rest. These individuals were all well-known students within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Furthermore, they were all quite powerful and were considerably frightening by just standing there.

When Mu Chen arrived at this location, he noticed this lively scene. Then, he too, landed on a mountain peak in the front. His gaze swept across the terrifying Spiritual Aura Tidal Waves in the distance. From the Spiritual Energy pressure that he sensed, his breathing stopped for a moment.

"As expected from a Rank 6 Spirit Convergence Array."

Seeing this magnificent scene, Mu Chen couldn't help but let out a praise. Only a Spirit Convergence Array of this level could actually cause such an amazing Spirit Tide.

Mu Chen looked at the Spirit Tide in the distance before he turned his gaze towards the individuals that were in the front. Then, he noticed a familiar silhouette amongst these individuals.

It was Su Ling'Er.

When he noticed the girl's elegant figure, Mu Chen could not help but rub his nose. His body instinctively shrank back slightly. After all, he had never imagined that Su Ling'Er was currently still within the Spirit Convergence Array.

However, Su Ling'Er didn't seem to notice Mu Chen at all. She crossed her arms as her beautiful face stared coldly out into the sky to her right. From that direction, there was another group of individuals approaching.

The number of individuals weren't small and the one leading was also a beautiful girl. Her appearance was quite pretty and had slightly thin lips. An unconcealable hint of arrogance and superiority could be seen within her eyes.

Although the two girls' beauty was at a similar level, Mu Chen felt that Su Ling'Er made him feel slightly more comfortable.

"Keke, Su Ling'Er. You sure have arrived quite early. The Celestial Spirit Lotus hasn't even appeared and yet you've already arrived." Just as Mu Chen glanced at the two of them, the tall and beautiful girl that was leading the group chuckled as she stared at Su Ling'Er.

"Xu Qingqing. This Spirit Convergence Array does not belong to you. Do I have to report to you, whenever I come here?" It seemed that Su Ling'Er did not possess any pleasant feelings towards this girl and she quickly responded rudely.

"Hmph. How sharp-tongued." The girl called Xu Qingqing snorted before replying mockingly: "I heard that you've tried to cause trouble for the freshman known as Mu Chen earlier. However, it seemed that you've embarrassed yourself instead? Su Ling'Er. Your sister is quite famous among the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, yet how could you, her sister, fail to teach a lesson to a mere freshman?"

"From what I see, why don't you ask me to help you teach a lesson to that freshman?"

"You're not qualified to intervene with my own affairs," Su Ling'Er said

coldly.

"Ohoho, is that it? However, I must obtain the Spirit Lotus Seed today. If you want to steal it from me, then don't blame me for acting quite rude. Others might be afraid of your sister, but I'm not afraid of her." Xu Qingqing curled her lips.

"Then, let's see you try taking it."

Su Ling'Er continued to oppose Xu Qingqing and did not take a step backwards. The confrontation between these two girls also attracted the attention of many individuals. However, many of them were not surprised. After all, everyone within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy knew that Su Ling'Er and Xu Qingqing had a terrible relationship with each other.

Su Ling'Er's sister is Su Xuan, who was ranked third on the Heavenly Ranking. However, Xu Qingqing's brother was also Xu Huang, who was ranked fifth on the Heavenly Ranking. Both of them had a powerful background and not many would dare offend either of them. Therefore, many individuals would stay away from these two girls.

Mu Chen curled his lips as he watched the confrontation between these two girls. Just earlier, Xu Qingqing had dragged him into their conversation. The tone as she talked about him made him quite unhappy. Therefore, he did not like her that much.

It was evident that Mu Chen was not interested in entering their quarrels. Therefore, he stood quietly as he watched the Spirit Tide in the distance. He waited for the moment when the so-called "Celestial Spirit Lotus" would appear.

"Eh?"

But while Mu Chen was waiting, he suddenly felt a gaze filled with hatred suddenly focusing on him. He immediately frowned and turned around as he stared towards the source of this gaze. When he located the source, he was slightly surprised.

This was because the owner of this gaze was Mo Lun, who Mu Chen had

defeated previously.

Ever since that guy had been defeated by him, he had vanished without a trace. Mu Chen had originally thought that he would perform some sort of measures against him, yet he never imagined that Mo Lun would have calmed down. This saved him from a bit of trouble. However, judging from Mo Lun's appearance, it seemed that he had not given up on revenge.

Mu Chen glanced at Mo Lun before focusing on the people beside him. At that location, there were three other individuals. Mu Chen's gaze swept across these three individuals and stopped at the one in the front. His eyes instantly became serious.

It was a somewhat burly boy. He had a dull appearance, yet he had a slightly pointed nose. At the same time, he gave off a cold feeling and judging from the Spiritual Energy fluctuations emitted from his body, he was many times stronger than Mo Lun.

This person actually possessed the strength of a Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase.

This made Mu Chen somewhat surprised. In general, a person with such strength would be ranked in the top 100s of the Heavenly Ranking. It was impossible for him to be a nobody within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Mo Lun stared darkly at Mu Chen before the corners of his lips rose up coldly. Then, he approached the burly boy in front and whispered a few words to him. At the same time, he pointed over towards Mu Chen.

When he noticed this, Mu Chen had an indifferent expression while he raised his eyebrow. It seemed that he didn't teach him a big enough lesson last time.

As Mo Lun whispered to the burly boy, that boy slowly tilted his head. Then, his cold gaze focused on Mu Chen's body.

Against this cold gaze, Mu Chen did not show any signs of retreating and instead confronted this gaze.

Before he had advanced to the Heavenly Fusion Stage, it might be quite

difficult for him to deal with a person at the Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase. But for the current him, he wasn't afraid of them anymore. If they were to fight against each other, it wouldn't be easy for his opponent to gain the upper hand.

The burly boy listened to what Mo Lun had to say. However, it was evident that the latter was currently complaining about Mu Chen's actions. After a while, the burly boy nodded and headed straight towards Mu Chen.

When Mo Lun noticed this, he hurriedly followed. A hint of cunning and pride emerged in his eyes as he stared at Mu Chen again.

"Huh, isn't that the leader of the Azure Red Community, Huo Feng? He actually came here."

When the burly boy rushed over towards Mu Chen, it had attracted a lot of gazes and it was clear that others had identified him.

"Azure Red Community's Leader, Huo Feng?" Mu Chen narrowed his eyes slightly. Since Mo Lun was part of the Azure Red Community and he was defeated by Mu Chen, it was no wonder that this boy would take action.

Moreover, from the looks of it, this leader of the Azure Red Community is planning to help Mo Lun get his revenge.

"Swish!"

Huo Feng's body quickly appeared at the mountain peak where Mu Chen was located at. He stared coldly at Mu Chen and asked: "You're the freshman known as Mu Chen, right?"

"May I ask what you want from me?" Mu Chen smiled faintly.

"Previously, I was in secluded training. Therefore, I had only heard about Mo Lun's matters a few days ago."

Huo Feng stared at Mu Chen and waved his hand. Then, he continued: "Although he had gone overboard, you've also taught him a lesson. However, I hope that you will return the Spiritual Values back to him.

That was the Spiritual Values that he had accumulated for six months. If you do so, then this matter is truly over."

He had a calm tone as if he was talking about something that should naturally occur.

Mu Chen smiled and glanced at Mo Lun. Then, he replied: "He prevented so many freshmen from exiting the freshman area. People always say that you shouldn't hurt one's pride if you were to hurt someone. However, he stepped directly on so many people's pride. I've always considered that the lesson that I've taught him was quite light. But now, you actually want me to return the Spiritual Values back to him?"

"Mu Chen. You actually dare to act this arrogant in front of our leader? Do you actually believe that the Azure Red Community isn't able to deal with you?!" Mo Lun's face exchanged between a pale and red color as he sneered. From his tone, it was clear that he had made Mu Chen an enemy of the Azure Red Community.

"It seems that I was too kind last time. Against a bastard like you, there truly isn't a need to care much about it." Mu Chen directly a smile towards Mo Lun. However, this smile caused Mo Lun to shiver and retreat slightly. He had seen Mu Chen's performance at the Freshmen Competition and knew that he wasn't Mu Chen's opponent.

"To actually threaten members of the Azure Red Community in front of me, it seems that the rumors are true. This year's freshmen are quite arrogant." Huo Feng stared coldly at Mu Chen as he spoke.

This confrontation soon caused a commotion. Since many people were waiting for the appearance of the "Celestial Spirit Lotus", they casted curious gazes over here.

When they noticed the two individuals confronting each other, a hint of surprise filled their eyes. After all, Huo Feng was quite famous within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. His rank of being 91st on the Heavenly Ranking bears a bit of weight.

As for Mu Chen, his fame had started to emerge after the Freshmen Competition and was considered an emerging dark horse within the

Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

They never imagined that these two individuals would actually confront each other.

Not far away, Su Ling'Er also noticed the commotion and turned her gaze around. Then, her pretty face instantly turned red as she noticed Mu Chen's silhouette. She gritted her teeth tightly and rage filled her eyes. This bastard had finally dared to appear in front of her?!

"Since you're a freshman and perhaps you didn't understand about the rules, I didn't want to bother you. Regarding about the matter with Mo Lun and you, it's true that Mo Lun had done something inappropriate. Therefore, I will ask you once more. Return the Spiritual Values back to him and we will consider this matter over, okay?" Huo Feng extended his hand out as he spoke in a deep voice. His eyes, as he stared at Mu Chen, was razor-sharp.

Mu Chen frowned and laughed faintly as he glanced at Huo Feng. Then, he slowly shook his head. In his eyes, a hint of coldness emerged.

"I refuse."

Chapter 204: Confrontation

"I refuse."

When these two words left Mu Chen's mouth, everyone noticed that Huo Feng's eyes had turned slightly cold. A powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuation slowly emanated out of his body.

It was evident that the leader of the Azure Red Community, who was widely known in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, was angered by this comment.

Seeing this, Mo Lun began to gloat as he stared at Mu Chen. As long as Mu Chen angered Huo Feng, it wouldn't be easy for him to get away. After all, Huo Feng's strength was at the Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase. Moreover, he was one of the individuals ranked in the top 100 of the Heavenly Ranking. Even within the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, he was considered to be quite powerful.

Not far away, Su Ling'Er's eyes flashed as she witnessed this scene. She immediately hummed: "You deserve it. Huo Feng isn't an ordinary individual. Did you truly believe that you could get rid of him just by acting like a ruffian?"

Once she said these words, her petite face turned red. She bit down and stared in hatred towards Mu Chen's figure.

"So he's the freshman that was recently in the limelight? Aside from being arrogant, it seems that there is nothing special about him." Xu Qingqing also stared towards Mu Chen as she curled her red lips.

Naturally, she was aware of Huo Feng's strength. Even if she was the one that had to confront him, it would be quite troublesome. Furthermore, it seems that Mu Chen did not possess the abilities to fight against him.

As countless gazes began to focus on the mountain peak, Mu Chen stared coldly towards Huo Feng. He gently gripped his hands and dark black Spiritual Energy surged out. Within the Spiritual Energy, a black flame quietly appeared.

It was evident that it was impossible for him to return the Spiritual Values back to Mo Lun.

"I refuse...These words are something that you can say just because you want to say them."

Huo Feng's glared at Mu Chen and said faintly as he stressed each word: "Sometimes...you have to see if you're qualified to say these words!"

Against Huo Feng's aggressive tone, a hint of coldness slowly emerged within Mu Chen's black eyes. He looked towards at Huo Feng and smiled: "Whether or not I'm qualified...It isn't something that you can decide."

"Is that so?!"

Huo Feng's eyes sharpened and he rushed forward. The powerful Spiritual Energy within his body erupted out. Then, the ground underneath him cracked open and the cracks charged out like a earth dragon. Within the matchless and violent Spiritual Energy, a earth dragon's growl could be heard faintly.

Seeing Huo Feng attempt to suppress him, Mu Chen also let out a cold sneer deep down inside. He did not have the slightest intention of retreating and instead, he stomped on the ground and took a step forward.

Cracks also emerged out from underneath Mu Chen's feet. However, the boulders that these cracks passed through had melted completely. A screeching sound resounded out as it charged towards the cracks that were like violent earth dragons.

A massive sound resounded out and gravel erupted out throughout the sky. When the two cracks made contact with each other, the two violent Spiritual Energy within the cracks had erupted as it attempted to erode each other.

"Eh?"

Huo Feng looked at where the Spiritual Energy made contact and his eyes turned serious. He could sense that his Spiritual Energy was rapidly being consumed when the two Spiritual Energy confronted each other.

Although the density of his Spiritual Energy far exceeded Mu Chen's Spiritual Energy, the latter's Spiritual Energy was extremely condensed. It was quite difficult to destroy this condensed Spiritual Energy.

"This brat is quite capable. No wonder he was able to become the Number One Freshman."

Huo Feng sneered inside his heart. However, he was still an Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase powerhouse. No matter what sort of tricks Mu Chen had, it wasn't possible for them to stop him.

He did not possess any grudges with Mu Chen, but Mo Lun was considered to be his men. Since Mo Lun had came to him and complained about Mu Chen, he naturally couldn't turn a blind eye to it. Otherwise, he would lose the support of the members of the Azure Red Community.

"Tornado Palm!"

Huo Feng thought quickly and he rushed up into the sky like an eagle. Then, he struck out and rumbling Spiritual Energy erupted out as gales began to blow.

Within the gales, a blue palm of fierce winds was formed. It formed a storm as it tore through the air towards Mu Chen, who was on top of the mountain.

"Vajra Pagoda!"

Mu Chen lifted his head and his eyes sharpened. He did not retreat and smack out as well. A golden light surged out and formed into a golden palm. Within this palm, a dark black tower engraving emitted out a mysterious glow.

The two Spiritual Energy palms smashed heavily against each other in the sky. In that instant, a storm brew out. Waves of violent Spiritual Energy had emitted out from the two attacks.

The two violent Spiritual Energy attacks attempted to erode each other, but both of them gradually faded. It was evident that the two powerful attacks were evenly matched.

"Mu Chen's strength...has actually improved again!"

Seeing this result, the nearby crowd could not help but exclaim out loud. Their eyes turned serious. They could sense that Mu Chen was currently much stronger than his previous self when he was facing Yang Hong a month ago. Otherwise, it was impossible for him to be evenly matched against Huo Feng. After all, the latter was at the Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase.

"That guy...So he actually managed to advanced to the Heavenly Fusion Stage!"

Not far away, Su Ling'Er witnessed this scene and was surprised. No wonder Mu Chen wasn't afraid of Huo Feng...It was clear that he had advanced to the Heavenly Fusion Stage within this month. This is because when he had faced Su Ling'Er previously, he was still at the Spirit Stage Late Phase.

"Roar!"

Mu Chen lifted his head and stared calmly at Huo Feng, who was standing in the sky. His palms spun and dozens of Spiritual Seals emerged from his fingertips. These Spiritual Seals quickly integrated with the air and a massive golden Spiritual Array began to form. A disc with both dragon and elephant had emerged. It rushed towards Huo Feng as it issued out a roar.

"He's actually a Spiritual Array Master as well?!"

Seeing how Mu Chen easily arranged a Spiritual Array, Huo Feng's eyes turned serious. His body quickly emerged in front of the dragon and elephant disc. He immediately kicked out with his leg and caused the air to be torn apart.

Huo Feng's ferocious kick carried rumbling Spiritual Energy as it collided fiercely against the dragon and elephant disc. It had managed to forcibly destroy the disc apart.

However, just when Huo Feng had destroyed the disc with his kick, a scarlet light suddenly erupted from below. He lowered his head and

noticed an even larger Spiritual Array had formed above Mu Chen's head. A Spiritual Energy fluctuation that far exceeded the previous Spiritual Array had emitted out from within the current Spiritual Array.

"Great Ifrit Array"

Mu Chen flicked his fingers with a calm expression. With his current strength, he could arrange this Great Ifrit Array in an instant.

Fierce red light burst out from the giant array. Then, a massive Ifrit erupted out from the array. Soon, it turned into a pillar of flame and charged towards Huo Feng.

"Cyclone Slash!"

Seeing the raging Ifrit charge towards him, Huo Feng hurriedly retreated dozens of steps. He gripped his hands tightly and dense Spiritual Energy surged out. It formed massive blue blade slash as it tore through the sky. With an overwhelming aura, it slashed mercilessly at the Ifrit's body.

Flames erupted into the sky. At this instant, the massive Ifrit body was cut into half by Huo Feng's slash attack.

The audiences nearby could not help but let out praises once they witnessed these two powerful offensives. These two individuals were quite capable.

Huo Feng's expression was quite calm as the blade slash cut apart the Ifrit's body. But just when the red light faded in front of his eyes, a chill appeared deep down inside. He heard subtle sounds of wind and noticed Mu Chen had actually charged towards him while the red lights were disappearing.

"You're seeking death!"

Huo Feng sneered. As a Spiritual Array Master, this Mu Chen actually did not hide far away and rely on the power of the Spiritual Array. Instead, he had actually taken the initiative to approach him. Is he truly looking down on him and his Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase strength?

"Sky Dragon Destruction Fist!"

It was evident Huo Feng did not allow Mu Chen to hesitate at all. He bent his legs slightly and clenched his hand as he fired out a punch.

Rumble!

A storm-like Spiritual Energy suddenly surged out. Then, a dragon's fist formed by the wind had gathered on the surface of Huo Feng's fist. A devastating roar had emerged. This fist carried the power to shatter mountains and it headed fiercely towards Mu Chen.

Once this fist was blasted out, countless people had solemn expressions. It was evident that they had sensed how powerful this attack was.

"Go to hell!"

At this moment, Mo Lun stared excitedly at this scene. The "Sky Dragon Destruction Fist" was one of Huo Feng's trump cards. Once it was used, it could instantly defeat any opponents below the Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase. Since Mu Chen was currently rushed towards Huo Feng, it was too late for him to evade it!

The blue dragon rapidly grew larger within Mu Chen's eyes. He immediately took a deep breath and dark black Spiritual Energy emerged as he, too, fired out a punch.

Buzz! Buzz!

Four Limitless Death Seals instantly condensed on the surface of Mu Chen's fist. But when these four Limitless Death Seals emerged, Mu Chen did not stop it there. Dark black light continued to surge and another Limitless Death Seal quietly condensed on the surface of his fist.

Five Limitless Death Seals!

Since Mu Chen had advanced to the Heavenly Fusion Stage, the Limitless Death Seal that hadn't improved for a long time was finally strengthened.

Once these five Limitless Death Seals emerged, rumbling black light caused the surrounding air to become distorted. An overbearing and matchless fluctuation spread out from these Limitless Death Seals.

“Go!”

Mu Chen muttered. He blasted a punch and the five Limitless Death Seals soared through the sky like a black comet. They connected with each other and under countless gazes, it smashed fiercely against the blue dragon.

Chapter 205: Celestial Spirit Lotus

Rumbling Spiritual Energy shock waves rippled through the sky. A powerful gale was formed and caused the forest below to sway. At the same time, a sandstorm emerged and caused everybody to shut their eyes.

However, a few individuals infused Spiritual Energy into their eyes in order to look at the collision of the two violent Spiritual Energy.

Boom!

In the sky, the violent Spiritual Energy storm suddenly broke out. A massive Spiritual Energy impact rushed out and caused both Mu Chen and Huo Feng to be blown away.

Bang.

Mu Chen hurriedly placed the soles of his feet on the ground and landed on the peak of a mountain. However, his clothes were torn apart. At the same time, his eyes turned slightly serious. Huo Feng's strength was indeed quite powerful. No wonder he was able to be ranked within the top 100s of the Heavenly Ranking.

From a distance, Huo Feng also landed on top of a towering tree. He, too, had torn clothes just like Mu Chen. This caused his eyes to turn solemn. He never imagined that he wouldn't be able to suppress Mu Chen with his Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase strength. The two of them were evenly matched.

After personally facing off this freshman, he knew that the latter possessed incredible strength. It was no wonder that he did not care about him and his threats.

"How could this be..."

Mo Lun's face darkened and his eyes were filled with disbelief. It was evident that he did not expect that Mu Chen would remain undefeated even when Huo Feng had personally taken action.

How could this freshman improve this quickly?!

From afar, Su Ling'Er's eyes were also filled with surprise as she witnessed this scene. Her gaze swept across Mu Chen's body. This boy was actually capable of fighting against Huo Feng to this extent...

At the same time, Xu Qingqing was astonished by Mu Chen's feat. She glanced again towards Mu Chen and curled her lips. She stopped speaking for the moment. However, the disdain within her eyes had faded slightly.

"Do you want to continue fighting?" Mu Chen directly a faint smile towards Huo Feng.

Huo Feng frowned. Just from the earlier battle, he already understood that he must use his full strength if he wanted to defeat Mu Chen. However, the Spirit Tide was about to appear. Therefore, he had to save his strength to seize the "Celestial Spirit Lotus". This place was extremely attractive to the students and there were countless people that even he feared. If he was to consume a large amount of Spiritual Energy now, he would lose the ability to contend with them later on.

"I'll find you after this."

Huo Feng was a decisive person. Once he had made his decision, he would no longer hesitate. Therefore, he replied faintly while dispersing the Spiritual Energy fluctuation from his body.

When the audience heard these words, they understood that Huo Feng had given up on continuing his fight with Mu Chen. It seemed that the strength that Mu Chen had displayed earlier had made him slightly afraid.

Mu Chen smiled and ignored what Huo Feng had said. His strength had already made Huo Feng afraid of him. The latter naturally wouldn't be as rude as earlier. It seems that strength was essential no matter what place it was. If he didn't break through to the Heavenly Fusion Stage, he probably would have been embarrassed by Huo Feng.

Beside Huo Feng, Mo Lun's expression changed slightly. However, he did not dare to say anything, and could only grit his teeth. RIght now, Mu Chen's strength had far surpassed him. He wasn't his opponent anymore.

Mu Chen also glanced calmly at Mo Lun. This gaze caused the latter to

shiver and he hurriedly avoided eye contact with Mu Chen.

Huo Feng also glanced deeply at Mu Chen. Then, he turned away and headed for the depths where the Spirit Tide had become quite violent. At that place, the Spiritual Aura of the world had begun letting out rumblings sounds.

The commotion caused by the Spirit Tide was detected by countless individuals nearby as well. Their eyes were cast over towards that place and within these eyes, a hint of passion and eagerness was revealed.

The value of the Spirit Lotus Seeds was far too great. Even if they were reluctant to use it themselves, they would still be able to sell it for 200,000 Spiritual Values at the Spiritual Values Hall. This was a considerable harvest. After all, it was enough for them to cultivate within the Rank 6 Spiritual Array for a whole month.

Mu Chen also set his sights towards that direction. He, too, was quite interested in the Spirit Lotus Seeds. Since he had just advanced to the Heavenly Fusion Stage, the Spiritual Energy within his body was quite superficial. If he managed to obtain a Spirit Lotus Seed, it would be able to help him stabilize his state and improve the foundations of the Spiritual Aura within his body.

Bang!

Just when Mu Chen's eyes turned dignified, the Spirit Tide suddenly emitted out a devastating sound. Crashing sounds of thunder resounded out through this space.

The Spirit Tide seemed to have expanded to the limits and was about to explode.

At this moment, everybody started to circulate their Spiritual Energy and protected their bodies. Within their eyes, a hint of alertness had emerged. After all, the power released by the explosion of the Spirit Tide was considerably frightening. If they were sucked into it carelessly, they would probably be gravely injured.

Everybody within this space had became quiet. The only sound that

resounded out was the endless rumbling sounds of the Spirit Tide.

Under countless gazes, the Spirit Tide continued to accumulate. Magnificent colors emitted out from it, causing this place to become a splendid sight.

“Boom!”

Finally, the overlapping Spirit Tide had reached its limits. With a massive explosion, it seemed to have suddenly disappeared for a moment. However, this situation did not occur for long as everybody was able to see the vast and endless Spirit Tides shortly afterwards.

A thunderous sound rumbled throughout the entire Spirit Convergence Array!

Boom! Boom!

The massive Spirit Tide was like a brilliant wave of Spiritual Aura as it spread out. Even mountains were crushed into pieces as the Spirit Tide passed by.

The entire earth trembled due to the Spirit Tide!

Swish! Swish!

As they witnessed the Spirit Tide rushing over, numerous people quickly left the ground and retreated towards the rear at an alarming speed. They were afraid of being swallowed by the tidal wave.

Mu Chen also followed the majority of the group and retreated backwards. However, his eyes were firmly fixed at the massive Spiritual waves. This is because the Celestial Spirit Lotus was hidden within them.

In the sky, countless figures were retreating. Yet, waves of Spiritual Energy had soon caught up with them. A number of these individuals displayed their speed and evaded them. At the same time, they stared sharply at the Spiritual Energy waves.

In that instant, Mu Chen also evaded a Spiritual Energy Wave that had descended from the sky. A few droplets of Spiritual Energy fell down onto his body. Every single one of the droplets felt like a thousand tons and

caused Mu Chen's body to sink. He could not help but cluck his tongue. It was this heavy with just a few droplets of Spiritual Energy, then wouldn't he be gravely injured if he was hit by the massive wave...

It seems that it wouldn't be easy to obtain the Celestial Spirit Lotus.

Just when Mu Chen signed, a few screams resounded out from behind him. A few unlucky individuals were smashed by the waves and all of them vomited out blood. Then, they were blown back. Even their chest was slightly crushed and it was evident that it wasn't a light injury.

Hearing these screams, Mu Chen hurriedly concentrated and did not dare to be distracted by other thoughts. He circulated his Spiritual Energy and moved quickly. While he evaded the Spiritual Energy waves, his keen eyes were constantly scanning the massive waves in the sky.

However, it wasn't easy to find the Celestial Spirit Lotus within these massive waves. Mu Chen's eyes had turned slightly blurry, yet he still haven't discovered any traces of the "Celestial Spirit Lotus".

"Swish!"

Just when Mu Chen was concentrating on his search for the Celestial Spirit Lotus, a swishing sound was heard from behind. He hurriedly turned around and noticed a scarlet whip passing by his body.

Once he noticed the familiar scarlet whip, Mu Chen knew who had attacked him. He immediately curled his lips helplessly...So he was still discovered by her.

He turned his head and stared at the pretty girl, who had been glaring at him angrily. Then, he asked, "Are you finished?"

"You bastard! Pervert!" Su Ling'Er gritted her teeth as she scolded him.

Mu Chen shook his head and could not be bothered to argue with her. He turned around and flew off to another direction.

"You!"

Seeing Mu Chen ignore her, Su Ling'Er stomped down in anger. Her hand shook and the scarlet whip had charged out once again like a fiery

python.

Sensing the winds from behind, Mu Chen's body turned slightly. Then, the scarlet whip passed near his body and smashed violently onto a Spiritual Energy wave.

The Spiritual Energy wave swelled slightly before it was burst apart.

Mu Chen closed an eye in response to the destroyed Spiritual Energy wave. But just when he was about to turn around, his eyes shrank. He hurriedly focused and noticed a jade glow slowly emerging from within the depths of the destroyed Spiritual Energy wave. At the same time, a pure Spiritual Energy fluctuation emanated out. As it flowed outwards, a seductive scent had emerged.

Once Mu Chen smelled this scent, delight instantly filled his eyes. It was the Celestial Spirit Lotus!

When the Celestial Spirit Lotus appeared, a jade light erupted out like a pillar as it rushed into the sky.

Swish!

At this instant, almost everyone casted their gaze towards this direction. Then, their eyes turned red as muffled sounds resounded out.

Countless individuals began to charge towards this place. The swishing sounds as they rushed over had even overshadowed the rumbling sounds from the Spirit Tide.

"Swish!"

As the others approached, Mu Chen's eyes were also glowing. He did not hesitate and he charged straight towards the Celestial Spirit Lotus.

However, just when Mu Chen had approached the Celestial Spirit Lotus, a sudden gale erupted out from behind as it charged towards his vital points from behind.

This attack was extremely vicious. If Su Ling'Er's attack earlier was only to obstruct him, then this attack was attempting to take his life.

Mu Chen's eyes immediately darkened. He blasted out a punch and the

dark black Spiritual Energy with the black flame rushed out. Then, it blew away the silver sword that had approached him.

This silver sword flew backwards and finally landed onto a beautiful girl's hand.

It was Xu Qingqing.

Chapter 206: Xu Qingqing

Mu Chen glared coldly at the beautiful girl nearby. The latter was currently holding onto a silver sword as her lips lifted up slightly. Then, she directed a smile towards Mu Chen: “Thanks for helping me find the Celestial Spirit Lotus. Next up, just leave it to me.”

“It won’t be easy if you want to get the Celestial Spirit Lotus!”

Su Ling’Er’s beautiful eyes were also filled with a hint of coldness. She had a grudge with Xu Qingqing for a long time. It could not compare with the grudge that she had with Mu Chen. Therefore, she stopped obstructing Mu Chen and, instead, replied coldly towards Xu Qingqing.

“That’s not up to you to decide.”

Xu Qingqing’s lips curled and she waved her hand: “Go!”

Once these words resounded out, a dozen individuals actually rushed up from behind. Every single one of them had a powerful aura. It was evident that Xu Qingqing was quite prepared in order to seize the Celestial Spirit Lotus.

“Swish!”

Xu Qingqing brought the dozen figures and rushed straight towards the location of the Celestial Spirit Lotus. Once the others noticed the menacing aura from these individuals, they hurriedly evaded them.

“Hmph!”

Su Ling’Er let out a grunt and also waved her hands. A group of individuals also emerged from behind her. Then, she brought these individuals and attempted to intercept Xu Qingqing’s group.

Due to this, the two groups were entangled with each other and violent Spiritual Energy fluctuations erupted out. A brutal fight was about to begin.

At this moment, the silver sword that contained a sharp Spiritual Energy fluctuation flew straight like a lightning towards the scarlet whip. Then,

Xu Qingqing's sword twitched slightly and a sword beam flew passed the long whip. It headed straight towards Su Ling'Er's chest.

Seeing this vicious attack from Xu Qingqing, Su Ling'Er's eyes were filled with rage. Her slender finger poked the air slightly and a fiery red Spiritual Energy burst out and stopped the sword beam.

"Xu Qingqing. Our strength are quite similar to each other. It won't be easy if you want to break pass me to obtain the Celestial Spirit Lotus!" Su Ling'Er said coldly. She had always hated Xu Qingqing. Therefore, even if she, herself, failed to obtain the Celestial Spirit Lotus, she would not let it end up in Xu Qingqing's hands.

"Is it?"

Hearing this, Xu Qingqing let out a strange smile. Her eyes suddenly turned cold and she gripped her silver sword tightly. At the same time, a powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuation emitted out from her body.

The intensity of the Spiritual Energy had reached the Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase!

"You advanced?!" Seeing this, Su Ling'Er's expression changed slightly. Just previously, she and Xu Qingqing were extremely close to reaching the Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase. However, she had not yet managed to advance. She never imagined that Xu Qingqing would actually make the breakthrough before her.

"Hmph. Since I knew that you would obstruct me, shouldn't I be prepared to deal with you?" Xu Qingqing smiled tenderly, yet, her eyes remained cold. Then, she waved her hand and the silver sword emitted out a dazzling light. The silver sword expanded exponentially as the wind surged and formed into a massive silver sword. A fierce sword aura rushed through the sky towards her.

"Breeze Blade!"

Xu Qingqing shouted out loudly. In response, the massive silver sword shuddered for a moment before it charged through the sky towards Su Ling'Er.

Seeing this, Su Ling'Er did not dare to act slowly. Her hands trembled and the scarlet whip erupted out overwhelming red light. A massive flame python seemed to emerge on the whip and formed a powerful defence.

A powerful blast erupted out when the massive sword slashed down onto the scarlet whip. However, Su Ling'Er's face instantly turned pale. Her scarlet whip also turned slightly dim and it was clear that it had been damaged.

At this moment, Su Ling'Er gritted her teeth and quickly placed away the scarlet whip as she quickly retreated.

Noticing Su Ling'Er retreat, a sneer emerged on Xu Qingqing's face.

A massive wave of Spiritual Energy suddenly emerged from behind Su Ling'Er. Its massive shadow instantly enveloped Su Ling'Er, who had a pale expression.

Considering the size of this Spiritual Energy wave, even Su Ling'Er would be gravely injured if she was struck by it.

However, the Spiritual Energy wave was far too wide. It was impossible for Su Ling'Er to evade it. Her face turned pale as she understood that Xu Qingqing had been cornering her in this direction.

"That wicked girl!"

Su Ling'Er gritted her teeth and cursed within her heart. She could only utilize her Spiritual Energy to protect her body as she watched helplessly as the Spiritual Energy wave enveloped her.

But just when Su Ling'Er watched in despair at the Spiritual Energy wave, a swishing sound resounded out and a figure rushed over. This individual extended his hands out and held onto the girl's waist as he forced her into his arms. At the same time, a dark-black Spiritual Energy erupted out. On the surface of the Spiritual Energy, a black flame suddenly emerged.

This sudden change of events instantly surprised Su Ling'Er. She turned her eyes quickly and noticed Mu Chen's handsome face. Then, she instinctively struggled violently against him.

“If you don’t want to die, then stop moving!” Mu Chen shouted out.

Although things weren’t great between Mu Chen and Su Ling’Er, he couldn’t just watch as she was enveloped by the massive Spiritual Energy wave. Moreover, Su Ling’Er wasn’t as nasty and cold-hearted as Xu Qingqing. At the very least, she wouldn’t be as vicious as Xu Qingqing.

Only then, Su Ling’Er recovered and reacted accordingly. She watched as the Spiritual Energy wave rushed over and enveloped them. At the same time, she held onto Mu Chen’s neck as her body snuggled up into Mu Chen’s arms.

The heavy wave surged over and Mu Chen’s body was struck by a heavy blow. However, he gritted his teeth and the black flames emerged as it evaporated the Spiritual Energy wave that approached his body. Then, with a muffled cry, his body turned into a black light that was ignited with black flames and he charged straight through the massive wave.

The dark-black Spiritual Energy gradually faded away. However, Mu Chen frowned even more tightly. After all, the impact of the Spiritual Energy wave was far too heavy. Even though he possessed the Nine Netherflame and burned most of the Spiritual Energy that smashed into him, it had still made his blood tremble within his body. Waves of pain also emerged from the surface of his body.

However, Mu Chen’s expression remained calm as she released the girl from his arms. Then, he said: “I’ve helped you this time. So consider that I’ve settled the matter earlier.”

“You!”

Su Ling’Er frowned. She wanted to say how could that matter be settled this easily, but once she noticed bruises on Mu Chen, she swallowed back these words down. She knew how heavy the Spiritual Energy wave was. Since she was protected earlier, she didn’t have any injuries. But for Mu Chen, he had endured a heavy blow.

“Are you alright?” Su Ling’Er hesitated for a moment before she lowered her voice and asked.

Mu Chen shook his head. However, his gaze remained fixed at the Celestial Spirit Lotus that had gradually emerged from the massive wave. At this moment, countless individuals were rushing over from all directions. But whenever one approached the Celestial Spirit Lotus, they were obstructed by the others. This place was currently quite chaotic and from time to time, a few unlucky people would be blown away while vomiting blood.

"Let's cooperate." Mu Chen looked at Su Ling'Er and said: "I'll help you obstruct Xu Qingqing. You will go seize the Celestial Spirit Lotus. Then, we will split the loot later on, okay?"

His goal was obviously not small. If he were to attempt to seize the Celestial Spirit Lotus, it was likely that he would become a target by everyone nearby. However, Su Ling'Er was different. She had a powerful background. Moreover, she was quite beautiful. Towards such a beautiful girl, most of the people would have an attitude of protecting her. Therefore, this would give Su Ling'Er an opportunity to seize the Celestial Spirit Lotus.

Coupled with the fact that Su Ling'Er had a few helpers, it would help prevent a few troubles for her.

Hearing this, Su Ling'Er hesitated for a moment. In the end, she nodded. Since Xu Qingqing had advanced to the Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase, her strength was beyond her own. Therefore, it wouldn't be easy for her to obstruct Xu Qingqing.

"Keke, a hero saving a beauty. Su Ling'Er, you're truly quite charismatic and charming!" From nearby, Xu Qingqing witnessed Mu Chen saving Su Ling'Er and her expression instantly turned cold. She gritted her teeth and sneered at Su Ling'Er.

"Also, the guy called Mu Chen. I would advise you to stop getting involved with our own affairs. A mere freshman does not have the right to act like a hero!" Xu Qingqing shouted out mockingly towards Mu Chen.

"There's no need for you to be bothered by it." Mu Chen replied faintly. He immediately waved his hand towards Su Ling'Er. Once the latter

noticed this, she immediately nodded her hand and rushed towards the Celestial Spirit Lotus.

Seeing this, Xu Qingqing's expression froze. She immediately rushed over, but after taking a few steps, Mu Chen had appeared in front of her.

"A freshman at the Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase actually dared to obstruct me. Who do you think you are?!" Seeing Mu Chen appear in front of her, Xu Qingqing's face was filled with rage and arrogance.

While she spoke meanly towards Mu Chen, her attacks, too, were quite vicious. The silver sword within her hand instantly erupted out numerous sword beams as it burst out to Mu Chen's vital areas.

In response, dark-black Spiritual Energy surged out from Mu Chen's body. He flicked his fingers and several Spiritual Energy with black flames burst out and dispersed the sword beams.

Mu Chen's expression remained indifferent as he dealt with the sword beams. Then, he stared at Xu Qingqing's face that was filled with rage. However, his expression caused the latter to become completely angered. This indifferent expression was obviously displaying how Mu Chen had looked down upon her.

A mere freshman actually dared to look down upon her, Xu Qingqing?!

"I'll kill you!"

She gritted her teeth and the Spiritual Energy within her body surged out without reservation. At the same time, her body flew up high into the air. Then, she placed her hands together and the silver sword emanated a dazzling light.

A sharp and frosty sword aura erupted out.

At that instant, Su Ling'Er, who was heading towards the Celestial Spirit Lotus, noticed this powerful fluctuation and instantly turned her head around. Her face immediately changed. That crazy girl is trying to kill Mu Chen?

"Nine Heavens Spirit Sword, Spirit Termination!"

In the sky, Xu Qingqing's cold eyes stared down towards Mu Chen. Her hand swung down and a cold cry resounded out. In that instant, countless individuals noticed a massive sword light tore through the sky as it slashed down in anger.

Under this slash, even the Spiritual Energy waves were torn apart!

A murderous intent surged within this sword light.

Chapter 207: layered Pagoda

Rumble!

The majestic sword beam were like milky way as they fell from the horizon. They brought a chilling cold aura, carrying a momentum of splitting a mountain as they tore the horizon and hack down towards Mu Chen.

Xu Qingqing clearly didn't have the slightest restraint in her attack. If Mu Chen couldn't defend against it, he would probably be heavily injured, at the very least.

When the gazes from the surrounding groups saw this, their complexions slightly changed. When this woman becomes fierce, she's simply unable to be reasoned with. Mu Chen doesn't seem to have any grudge with her, but she was actually so merciless with her attacks.

Close by, Su Ling'er's pretty face also displayed some anxiety. However, it's too late for her to save Mu Chen. Therefore, she could only pray that he doesn't get hacked to death by Xu Qingqing.

Under everyone's gaze, Mu Chen also raised his head. His pitch-black eyes stared at the boundless sword beam as a cold light emerged from his eyes.

He slowly raised his hand and on his palm, black light gathered and turned into a small black-colored pagoda. From the looks of it, that small pagoda appeared extremely ancient, but there wasn't any excessively boundless fluctuations coming from it.

Someone saw the small black pagoda appearing on Mu Chen's hand, and his eyes concentrated on it, while murmuring, "Is that a Spiritual Artifact? With such weak fluctuation of Spiritual Aura, it's probably a Low Rank Spiritual Artifact. Relying on that, it's probably not possible to block that fierce attack from Xu Qingqing!"

Mu Chen did not pay much attention to those whispers. The Spiritual Energy within his body was injected into the small black pagoda.

Thereafter, he gave a flick of his finger and the small black pagoda flew out.

Boom!

The small pagoda flew out and instantly, the wind was dramatically raised. In an instant, it turned into a black coloured huge pagoda with approximately dozens of Zhang 1. The huge pagoda floated up in the sky and on the pagoda, countless profound dark-gold veined patterns could be vaguely seen.

Wooosh!

Boundless beam of light were whistling as it fell down. Thereafter, it struck the black pagoda. The two collided and, instantly, shocking metallic sounds were resounding as surging waves of aura dispersed.

Countless lines-of-sights gazed at that direction. Even after the black pagoda suffered a strike from Xu Qingqing, it didn't split open. Black flashes rippled and the sword strike was blocked.

This scene instantly caused shock to show from their eyes. That black pagoda was actually so powerful?

"How can this be?" Xu Qingqing's face changed upon the sight of this. That strike of hers earlier was sufficient to defeat any Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase. How could it be blocked by that small black pagoda from Mu Chen?

Xu Qingqing wasn't the only one who was shocked. Even Mu Chen was shocked. This small black pagoda was the one that appeared within his body previously. In fact, towards this mysterious small pagoda, he didn't have much knowledge about it. He only knew that it might be related to that mysterious Spiritual Pulse that was sealed within his body. As for it's might, he knows nothing about it.

However seeing it now, it seems like it possessed powerful defensive ability...

"However, could it be that this black pagoda could only be used as a shield?" Mu Chen mumbled to himself. He could feel that this small black

pagoda wasn't that simple. It shouldn't only possess such simple usage to it, right?

"Xiuu!"

Just when Mu Chen was mumbling to himself, the black pagoda suddenly emitted several black lusters. One of which streaked through the sky and shot towards Mu Chen.

The sudden unforeseen ability caused Mu Chen to be shocked. Before he could evade in time, he was shot by that black luster. Thereafter, he felt that there was some profound intent flowing out from his heart.

"This is...!"

Mu Chen received some mysterious information. A brief moment later, a smear of shock rushed into his eyes. This seems to be some of the controlling methods of the black pagoda.

"Nine-layered Pagoda."

Mu Chen stared at that black pagoda as a strange name appeared in his heart. Shortly after, he let a mouthful of breath out and both of his hands suddenly formed an extremely ancient seal.

Just when Mu Chen formed the seals, the Spiritual Energy within his body seemed to be disappearing with frightening speed.

At the same time the Spiritual Energy was disappearing, the black pagoda in the sky exploded with brilliant beams of light. At the most bottom layer of the black pagoda, the gloomy black colour gradually turned into a bright golden colour.

Ancient golden patterns occupied that layer of the pagoda. The gold patterns wiggled as a golden dragon soared. It soared into the sky with extremely shocking energy. The sky was filled with Spiritual Aura and emitted a huge ripple.

"Pagoda Suppression!"

Mu Chen's hand seals changed and the Nine-layered Pagoda fiercely soared into the sky. Black light swept and at the first layer of the pagoda,

overflowing golden luster swept out. The gold dragon roared as it dragged along with matchless immense shadow, as well as Spiritual Energy ripples and went to suppress Xu Qingqing, who had shock on her face.

His sudden burst of this astonishing attack made everyone's expressions change. Xu Qingqing hastily retreated, but realised that she wasn't able to retreat through the envelop of the Nine-layered Pagoda. She immediately mobilised her Spiritual Energy and the silvery long sword in her hands burst out like a silver python, along with silvery sword flashes and stabs towards the suppressing Nine-layered Pagoda.

Boom!

The sword flash clashed with the Nine-layered Pagoda. Those sharp sword flashes rapidly turned dull with shocking speed as fine cracks appeared on the sword.

Puff!

The Spiritual Artifact suffered heavy damage. Xu Qingqing's face abruptly paled and a mouthful of blood was spurt from her mouth as she was sent flying back in a sorry state.

Wuuum!

It was as though that silvery long sword had issued a wail as her Spiritual Energy turned dull and flew back into Xu Qingqing's hand. On the sword blade, fine cracks extended. It was a Middle Rank Spiritual Artifact, but was turned into scrap by the Nine-layered Pagoda!

The entire area was in silence. Every eye that gazed in this direction was filled with shock. Especially Huo Feng, who had exchanged blows with Mu Chen earlier, his face was especially grave. He obviously didn't expect that Mu Chen would have such shocking cards up his sleeve. That suppression from the black pagoda earlier on, even if it was him receiving such an attack, even he would be in a sorry state.

Mu Chen looked at Xu Qingqing, who was sent flying. With a wave of his hand, the Nine-layered Pagoda shot back and landed on his palm, before disappearing.

He was also filled with shock in his heart. The formidability of this Nine-layered Pagoda had far surpassed his imagination. Furthermore, from the information that he had received earlier, this Nine-layered Pagoda had nine floors. Earlier on, he had only managed to mobilise the first layer. If he could mobilize all nine layers one day, wouldn't that kind of might be heaven defying?

Furthermore, it seemed that this Nine-layered Pagoda possessed a weird ability. Like earlier, it had directly laid a Middle Rank Spiritual Artifact to waste. If it was an ordinary clash, it's impossible to accomplish such a feat.

The Nine-layered Pagoda seemed to be the weakness of Spiritual Artifacts. It can simply be said as a Spiritual Artifact killer.

"My Silver Dragon Sword..."

Xu Qingqing held the dull silvery long sword in her hands as her eyes turned dull. Soon after, her pretty face turned extremely cold. Her eyes were fixed on Mu Chen as she spoke in a stern voice, "Mu Chen, I'll shred you to pieces!"

"Lu Long, Liu Xiao, kill him!" She yelled shrewdly. Her pretty face was twisted from her anger.

Close by, two figures flew over as their eyes gloomily stared at Mu Chen. Both of them were Heavenly Fusion State Late Phase experts. Although they weren't within the top hundredth of the Heavenly Ranking, they're still powerful characters.

Seeing the sight of this, Mu Chen's brows were also slightly frowned. This Xu Qingqing was indeed ignorant, this kind of woman was the most annoying.

"Xiuu!"

However, when those two were about to take action, there was a sudden burst of Spiritual Energy coming from behind. An overflowing green light soared into the sky and everyone turned their attention towards it. In the huge wave, the Celestial Spirit Lotus was gradually blooming.

When the Celestial Spirit Lotus had fully bloomed, a heavy fragrance filled the air. After a whiff, the agitated Spiritual Energy within one's body felt as though it had calmed down.

Someone issued a cry, "The Celestial Spirit Lotus is about to bloom!"

Mu Chen concentrated and looked over at it. Within that "Celestial Spirit Lotus",there were lotus seeds that were flickering with dazzling luster. From the looks of them, they appeared to be as smooth and round as gems.

At this moment, with the blooming of that "Celestial Spirit Lotus", those lotus seeds also had signs of erupting. That Celestial Spirit Lotus had actually matured to the point where it would erupt automatically.

The countless gazes from the surrounding groups were boiling. Once the Celestial Spirit Lotus erupts, the situation would definitely be in chaos. At that time, they would have to depend on their luck to obtain those seeds.

"Get ready to snatch the lotus seeds!"

At the sight of this, Xu Qingqing could only clench her teeth as she glanced at Mu Chen ferociously. If she were to attack Mu Chen right now, she would lose her chance to snatch the the lotus seeds.

Mu Chen paid no attention to her as he had also directed his gaze at that dazzling Celestial Spirit Lotus.

Practically everyone had their gazes gathered over there.

Those gazes slowly turned blazing.

Boom!

The Celestial Spirit Lotus had blossomed to its limit and, soon after, dark green light beams had fiercely erupted into the sky. The sky looked like it was decorated with jade. At the same time, that Celestial Spirit Lotus had completely exploded.

A surge of frightening Spiritual Energy storms swept forth and scattered the Spiritual Energy waves. In that storm, pearls of jadeite luster shot throughout the surrounding area at an astonishing speed.

Doooon!

The heavens and earth surged violently. Those countless shadows longingly pounced towards those jadeite pearls.

Chapter 208: Seizing of the lotus seed

Boom!

The entire heaven and earth looked as though they're rumbling at this moment. The dark green rays of light shot throughout the surroundings at an astonishing speed. Countless people had charged at those rays of light with their eyes dyed scarlet red as they attempted to snatch them.

Bang! Bang!

However, these people had evidently underestimated the explosive power produced by the Celestial Spiritual Lotus. Under the impact, those Spiritual Lotus Seeds were like arrows that filled the skies. Some fellas who had ran out of luck ran made a head-on impact with them and before their hands could grab one, that splendid green luster had penetrated their palms and were spraying fresh blood.

Arghhh!

Mournful shrieks resounded incessantly in the ear. That bad luck fella grabbed onto his palm that's flowing with fresh blood as he issued a sharp howl.

Seeing that bad luck fella's situation, those people then cleared their heads a little and no longer dared to reach for the seeds. Instead, they circulated their Spiritual Energy, and control their Spiritual Energy into forms of hands before they tried to grab them.

Pffft! Pffffft!

Even with the obstruction of those Spiritual Energy covered hands, some of the green lusters were like hot knives through butter as they pierced through. Thereafter, they'd streaked across the horizon and after several blinks, they had disappeared to the border of the horizon.

Evidently, these Spiritual Lotus Seeds weren't so easily taken.

Mu Chen looked at the chaotic scene and was also a little shocked at the destructive energy of those Spiritual Lotus Seeds. It seems like these things weren't that easy to obtain.

Wooosh!

Just when Mu Chen was astonished, a surge of rapid wind came over. Raising his head, he saw a green luster. It had already broke through the blockade of everyone and flew straight to him.

Seeing it, Mu Chen flicked his finger and Spiritual Energy that contained black flames shot out and heavily clashed with that green luster.

Bang!

A spiritual aura exploded from the impact, but that green light still managed to pierce through. Its speed wasn't any slower compared to before as it was shot out.

"I'll see where can you still run to!"

Mu Chen smiled. He clenched his fists and that Nine-layered Pagoda had, once again, appeared. He waved his sleeve and that black pagoda flew out. It had appeared before that green luster. With the pagoda aiming for that green luster, its black lights surged and had devoured it.

Bang!

That green luster had charged into the Nine-layered Pagoda. The body of the pagoda trembled and flew over several hundred zhang away. Thereafter, the black pagoda stabilised. With a flash of light, it flew back towards Mu Chen.

Mu Chen extended his palm and the black pagoda landed on his palm. Black light was rushing out, before it dispersed. A green luster appeared on his palm. The light then dispersed again and turned into a thumb-sized green lotus seed. That lotus seed was a jade-green, smooth and round. A fragrance was followed by a surge of pure Spiritual Energy ripples that constantly spread out.

"This is the Spiritual Lotus Seed?"

Mu Chen looked at the green-coloured lotus seed in his palm. By just holding it in his hand, he sensed that the Spiritual Energy within his body felt as though it had settled down a lot more. It was to the point that even

his blood and qi that was disrupted by that Spiritual Energy had also calmed down a lot more.

"Indeed, a wonderful item!" Joy flashed through Mu Chen's eyes as he exclaimed in admiration. It seems like this Spiritual Lotus Seed does have the effect of solidifying Spiritual Energy.

At this moment, many people in the surrounding area have also seen Mu Chen obtaining the Spiritual Lotus Seed. Jealousy was in their eyes, but no one was covetous to the point of taking actions against him. Previously, when Mu Chen and Xu Qingqing fought, the strength that he revealed made them understand that this newcomer that had just come to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy for a few months wasn't any pushover.

The chaos in this zone still continued. However, after Mu Cheng, there were several people that experienced a burst in their luck. Taking advantage of that moment, they managed to stop several Spiritual Lotus Seeds, which attracted the attention of countless scarlet eyes.

Mu Chen kept that Spiritual Lotus Seed and shifted his gaze to another direction. His eyes were burning. With such an opportunity, he definitely can't let such a chance go.

The Nine-layered Pagoda in his hand was capable of taking these Spiritual Lotus Seeds. Relying on its special characteristic, he doesn't have to worry about the Spiritual Lotus Seed's frightening impact.

Thinking about it here, he didn't have the slightest hesitation. With a flash of his figure, he exploded and flew to another direction. With a flick of his palm, the Nine-layered Pagoda appeared once again. Black light bubbled and all of a sudden, it was abstruse and mysterious.

Mu Chen carefully searched for his targets. He didn't go snatch for those Spiritual Lotus Seeds that were eyed by others. But had directed his target towards those Spiritual Lotus Seeds that had managed to charge out the blockage of others.

Very quickly, he searched for his targets once again. The Nine-layered Pagoda flew out and the wind sharply increased. It turned into a huge

pagoda and was heading towards a green luster.

Dong!! Dong!!

That green light was covered by the Nine-layered Pagoda. The body of the pagoda intensely trembled but very quickly, that powerful resisting force disappeared, bit by bit.

Mu Chen's palm waved and that Nine-layered Pagoda flew back to his hand, along with the Spiritual Lotus Seed.

Another Spiritual Lotus Seed had fallen into his hands.

The gazes of those in the surrounding area all had their eyes turning red. Many of them couldn't even stop a Spiritual Lotus Seed even with so many of them combined. However, Mu Chen was able to obtain it so easily.

There were only ten Spiritual Lotus Seeds in that Celestial Spiritual Lotus and that fella had gotten two of it on his own!

Mu Chen did not bother about those gazes. Those Spiritual Lotus Seeds were extremely rare and were priced at 200,000 Spiritual Value points each. Having this kind of opportunity, how could he miss it?

Thereafter, he kept the Spiritual Lotus Seed with a flip of his hand. Sweeping his eyes, he's already searching for new targets.

"Xiuuush!"

Just when he was about to act, several gales violently brushed over as they headed towards the vital parts of his body.

The sudden attack caused Mu Chen's eyes to turn cold. The Nine-layered Pagoda in his hands flew backwards as it expanded and shielded him from behind.

Daaang! Daaang!

Metallic sounds resounded and the Nine-layered Pagoda was jolted back some distance. However, those gales from the sneak attacks were all obstructed.

Mu Chen then turned around as he coldly stared at the person that

attacked him. It was Xu Qingqing, Lu Long and Liu Xiao, those three.

"Hand over the Spiritual Lotus Seeds; otherwise, I wouldn't mind offending you!" Xu Qingqing extended her jade-like hands as she made the cold demand.

Mu Chen heard what was said, but smiled instead. He shook his head as his tone carried an undisguisable amount of loathing, "Handing them over to you? Who are you?"

Hearing Mu Chen's manner of speaking, Xu Qingqing's face turned ashen as she bit her teeth, "Kill him!"

Hearing what Mu Chen had said, the other two had also looked at Mu Chen with an unkind gaze. Although they wouldn't go as far as to kill him, beating Mu Chen up was still extremely easy.

Mu Chen's gaze also turned cold as he issued a cold laugh. If they wished to play, then he'll accompany them to the end.

"Xu Qingqing, what are you guys doing? You're bullying with higher numbers?!"

However, just when Mu Chen was about to take actions, a tender bark resounded from the distance. Su Ling'er was seen rapidly closing in with several people and appeared before Mu Chen.

"Su Ling'er, this has nothing to do with you. Mind your own business!" Xu Qingqing said in hatred.

"Not possible." Seeing how mad Xu Qingqing was, Su Ling'er smiled like a flower as she turned around towards Mu Chen and said, "Go and take the Spiritual Lotus Seeds. I'll block them for you."

Hearing her, Mu Chen slightly hesitated, but had nodded his head in the end. Compared to taking the Spiritual Lotus Seeds, fighting with Xu Qingqing was evidently a waste of time.

"Then, I'll have to trouble you."

Mu Chen smiled towards Su Ling'er and flew away.

"YOU!"

Seeing this, Xu Qingqing's face instantly turned ugly as she barked, "All of you, get lost!"

When she barked, her figure burst out. Behind her, Lu Long and Liu Xiao were closely following from behind. Thereafter, they were obstructed by Su Ling'er's group and a chaotic battle instantly broke out between them.

Just when Su Ling'er was obstructing Xu Qingqing and her group, Mu Chen was once again, searching for targets. Overall, the amount of Spiritual Lotus Seeds were afterall, limited. There were only a dozen or so of them. Because of that, after a round of everyone snatching them, there weren't that many targets left that Mu Chen could grab.

As a result, Mu Chen searched for more than ten minutes, before having the chance to harvest another Spiritual Lotus Seed. Thereafter, the chaotic heaven and earth was gradually restored to its original scene. All those Spiritual Lotus Seeds have all been snatched away.

Seeing as the skies have become quiet once again, Mu Chen lightly smiled. Three Spiritual Lotus Seeds is already considered a decent harvest, which can be seen from all those covetous gazes that were cast in his direction.

In both heaven and earth, that surging Spiritual Energy waves had also dissipated bit by bit. In the end, the gorgeous sky was restored to its original appearance.

Su Ling'er's battle had also stopped with the retreat of those Spiritual Energy waves. Xu Qingqing's face was ashened. She was actually unable to even get a single Spiritual Lotus Seed, she'd completely come in vain.

"That brat called Mu Chen, you've obtained three Spiritual Lotus Seeds. Give one to me and I'll forgo today's matters. Otherwise, I'll let my brother know about this and in the future, you can only dream on mingling in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy!" Xu Qingqing said as she stared at Mu Chen with her teeth tightly clenched.

"Ha! You think I'm afraid of you? Get your brother to look for my sister then." Su Ling'er coldly smiled.

Xu Qingqing viciously pierced Su Ling'er a glance. Thereafter her face was looking at Mu Chen with cold glare. The latter lightly smiled, "500,000 Spiritual Value points for one."

Many people in the surrounding were stunned. 500,000 Spiritual Value points? Is this kid insane? No matter how precious the Spiritual Lotus Seeds were, they weren't worth this amount. He's obviously trying to infuriate Xu Qingqing to death.

Looking over, Xu Qingqing's tender body was indeed trembling from the anger. After so many years in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, since when had anyone provoked her like this before?

"You wait! I, Xu Qingqing, will definitely not let this matter go!"

Xu Qingqing's ample bosom was heaving up and down. She left those words of hatred, before she waved her sleeves and left, filled with anger.

Looking at Xu Qingqing's leaving silhouette, Mu Chen lightly smiled. He truly does have a natural life of offending others.

The big brother of this Xu Qingqing should be Xu Huang, right? An existence of Heavenly Ranking's Rank 5... It seems like he has offended another powerful figure. However, there's a saying: 'When there are too many debts, one stops to worry.' Since he's already going against Li Xuantong, there's no difference with having another Rank 5 of the Heavenly Ranking as an opponent.

Chapter 209: Experts of the Heavenly Ranking

Mu Chen looked at Xu Qingqing's silhouette. Towards her threat, he dismissed it with a laugh. He then turned his head towards Su Ling'er and smiled. "Senior Sister Ling'er, thank you for this matter."

"What Senior Sister Ling'er? That sounds wrong. My age isn't that far from yours!" Su Ling'er rolled her eyes at Mu Chen.

Mu Chen smiled and didn't argue with her on this matter. Seeing how unruly and ridiculous Xu Qingqing was, this Su Ling'er before him seemed like a cute fairy.

"Oh right, this Spiritual Lotus Seed is for you, consider it my thanks." Mu Chen extended his hand and there was a round lotus seed on his palm emitting a green luster. A surge of pure spiritual energy dispersed from it.

"For me?" Su Ling'er was a little astonished. She originally did not think that Mu Chen would be this generous. After all, the Spiritual Lotus Seed was obtained by him. The reason why she had taken action earlier on was simply because of her grudge against Xu Qingqing and her actions couldn't be considered a sincere helping gesture.

"Of course, this can also be considered my apology for my actions before." Mu Chen laughed.

"You!"

Su Ling'er's face flushed red as her eyes were filled with indignation. Her tone carried urgency, "You're not allowed to talk about that matter anymore. You better forget about that, otherwise...otherwise, I will never forgive you!"

Mu Chen helplessly smiled and said nothing further to agitate her. Mu Chen passed the Spiritual Lotus Seed over to her.

Su Ling'er stared at that jade-like lotus seed and hesitated for a brief moment, before she extended her slim and jade-like fingers to take it from

Mu Chen's palm.

Su Ling'er fiddled with the Spiritual Lotus Seed in her jade-like hand. Unconcealable joy appeared in her eyes, before raising her shapely brows and smiled. "Consider you knowing what's right. I'll be a person of great moral and not pursue with your offences. I'll not haggle with you anymore."

Mu Chen smiled. "Since that's the case, then I'll leave first."

He had stayed in this Convergence Array for half a month, so it's time that he leaves.

"Let's go, I'm also tired of staying here." Su Ling'er sweetly smiled.

Seeing that, Mu Chen did not refuse and nodded. He turned into a streak of light and flew towards the exit of the Convergence Array. Seeing this situation, Su Ling'er lead her group and followed behind him.

Along the way, the two of them conversed and became more familiar with one another. Without the grudge from before, they could discard the prejudice within their hearts and realised that it's indeed possible for them to be friends with one another.

Mu Chen appeared outside the Convergence Array. Looking at the familiar scenario and the streaking figures that filled the sky, he couldn't help breathing out a mouthful of air in relief. Although there were students cultivating everywhere within the Convergence Array, the feeling that it gave wasn't the same as being in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Over here, the feeling was much more comfortable.

"I'll be returning to the freshmen area. Come and play if you have some time." Mu Chen smiled as he bid Su Ling'er farewell. Right now, he had set his heart on heading home. Although it was just a month or so from not seeing Luo Li, his heart was filled with yearning.

Su Ling'er nodded and spoke nothing else as she also wanted to return home. These last few days were extremely exhausting for her.

Mu Chen cupped his hands and spoke no further. He turned around and flew towards the freshmen area. Su Ling'er glanced at his silhouette and

stared at him for a brief moment, before turning her agile body and flew towards another direction.

...

When Mu Chen returned to the freshmen area, evidently, it had also aroused some uproars. Many eyes from the freshmen were filled with heat.

"Brother Mu has returned from his training?"

"Seeing Brother Mu's imposing manner, it seems like his cultivation has stepped up even more. No wonder he's the number one of our freshmen class!"

"Psh, all you know is bootlicking. However, Brother Mu truly is looking more and more dashing... With him overseeing the Goddess Luo Association, we'll definitely shine in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy in the future....."

Hearing the voices from all different directions, Mu Chen couldn't help showing a smile on his face. These slapsticks made him feel warmth in his heart.

"Okay, okay. Get out of my way!"

A resonant voice resounded from the front and Zhou Ling was seen striding over. He smiled as he called everyone to disperse. Thereafter, his line of sight was shifted to Mu Chen with his eyes filled with amazement.

"You've broken through the Heavenly Fusion Stage?"

Before Mu Chen could reply, Zhou Ling smacked his lips, "Formidable."

Since Mu Chen was able to go head-on with someone of the Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase while at the Spirit Stage Late Phase, now that he had broken through into Heavenly Fusion Stage, doesn't that mean that he wouldn't fear even a Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase?

Mu Chen gazed speechlessly at Zhou Ling as he shoved him away. His gaze fell towards the plaza before him. Over there, stood a smiling black-dressed girl. Her features were exquisite, peaceful, yet elegant. Her slim

figure was beautifully outlined. Her gem-like eyes carried a faint smile as she stared at him.

No matter where she was, she was so outstanding that it makes it hard for others to ignore her. At the plaza, there were many freshmen cultivating and their line of sights were also shifted over uncontrollably. Their eyes had unconcealable adoration.

Looking at her, Mu Chen's heart had calmed down, bit by bit. Together with her, even if an enormous matter had fallen, Mu Chen could still be able to maintain his calmness.

Zhou Ling looked at both of them and shrugged his shoulders. He gave up, feeling like an irksome light bulb1...

Mu Chen breezed forth. He disregarded the gazes of everyone as he extended his hands and pulled Luo Li's jade-like warm delicate hand. The latter's face slightly flushed, but made no efforts to struggle.

Seeing Luo Li's slightly flushed expression, everyone couldn't help sighing in their hearts. This quiet girl that looked as though she was in her own world. She would only reveal such a girlish appearance before Mu Chen.

This made the others couldn't help but to be jealous and envious of Mu Chen, who made her reveal such a charming appearance.

"Have you met any troubles during your cultivation in the Convergence Array? Earlier on, that Su Ling'er came and was overbearingly looking for you, but was kept off by me. She should have gone looking for you." Luo Li said, lightly.

"Yeah we've met. If we didn't fight, we wouldn't be friends. Right now, we can be considered as friends."

Mu smiled before spreading out Luo Li's hand and placed a smooth and round Spiritual Lotus Seed in her hands. "I snatched this when I was in the Spirit Convergence Array, you can have it."

"This is a Spiritual Lotus Seed?" Zhou Ling moved in as his eyes were shining with light. He has been loitering in the Spiritual Value Hall

recently and, naturally, he had heard of how priceless this seed was.

Mu Chen nodded, “However, I’ve only managed to get two of them, so there’s none for you.”

Hearing what was said, Zhou Ling smacked his lips in regret. “It seems like you weren’t quiet in the Convergence Array. However, Luo Li hasn’t been wasting her time either. Right now, she’s an expert of the Heavenly Ranking.”

“Heavenly Ranking?”

Mu Chen was shocked and, thereafter, shifted his gaze in astonishment towards Luo Li. Those that were able to step into the Heavenly Ranking must be those that possessed strength of Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase. Luo Li had actually reached that step?

Mu Chen shifted his gaze onto the distant majestic tablet. His sharp gaze swept through the tablet and saw some familiar words.

Heavenly Ranking Rank 83, Luo Li. Freshman.

“You actually thought about charging into the Heavenly Ranking?” Mu Chen was a little flabbergasted. With Luo Li’s temper, she shouldn’t have liked to reveal herself by charging into the Heavenly Ranking.

“Luo Li didn’t have that kind of thinking, but was forced without a choice.” Zhou Ling shrugged and continued, “You’re well aware of how powerful Luo Li’s charm is. Few days ago, when you were in your seclusion training, Luo Li met a rather hateful fly in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. The moment that fella saw Luo Li, his eyes were heated and he came around, pestering her.”

“Oh?”

Mu Chen narrowed his eyes and his brows were slightly knitted together, appearing to be rather unhappy.

“That fella can still be considered to have some fame in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. He was the former Heavenly Ranking’s Rank 83. Afterwards, when Luo Li was a little frustrated with him, she took

straightforward actions." Zhou Ling chuckled, appearing to be taking joy in the calamity of others. When he recalled that scene, he was really delightful.

"But who knew that he wasn't Luo Li's match? In just a few rounds, he lost to Luo Li and ran with his tail between his legs and his ranking in the Heavenly Ranking was lost due to this, and was replaced by Luo Li."

Mu Chen only then understood. The placing in the Heavenly Ranking can only be obtained by defeating someone on it. Luo Li had defeated that fellow and, therefore, was able to move into the Heavenly ranking.

"In the future, if there's a similar situation, let me handle it."

Mu Chen held onto Luo Li's hands and said, forging a grave expression. Since someone dared to prey on his corner, he'll definitely get rid of them, no matter how many came.

Luo Li ridiculously glanced at him. Her gaze however, was filled with joy. No matter what, as long as she could be by him, her heart would then be joyous.

"Let's return first."

Seeing so many people around, Mu Chen swung his arms as he pulled Luo Li into their house. Between the two of them, it's still best not to have those light bulbs around.

Returning back to their house, Mu Chen pulled Luo Li as they came to the top of the building. He then looked at that clear lake and lazily sat down. Luo Li had also sat down beside him as a sweet fragrance was being carried by the wind.

Luo Li raised her head and looked at Mu Chen's dashing cheeks. She lightly smiled and placed her head on Mu Chen's shoulder. Her slender and long eyelashes slightly blinked and slowly closed.

Sensing the lean weight coming from his shoulders, Mu Chen shifted his head and looked at those porcelain-like delicate cheeks and was slightly dazed. This simple movement had instantly softened his heart. This kind of feeling was similar to him becoming her reliance in this world.

“Luo Li, there’ll be a day when I will make you feel at ease and able to release your burden. No matter what you’re bearing, even if it’s the heavens or earth, I’ll help you lift it up.” He said in a light tone.

The young girl’s eyelashes slightly moved and her rosy lips were risen into a warm curve. She gave a light ‘En’ as acknowledgement to his words.

Chapter 210: Training in the Deity Tier Spiritual Art

The night gradually darkened. Mu Chen sat on the bed as the ice-cold moon pierced through the window and shined on him, bringing along a slight chill.

Mu Chen lowered his head and stared at that round and smooth Spiritual Lotus Seed in his palm. The overflowing and pure Spiritual Energy ripples were constantly being emitted from it. The fragrance from the seed had also filled the entire room.

After looking at the Spiritual Lotus Seed for a brief moment, he swallowed it. When the Spiritual Lotus Seed had entered his mouth, it turned into surges of Spiritual Energy and went into his body. Although this Spiritual Energy was forceful, it was mild and pure. It did not cause the slightest inconvenience for Mu Chen. Compared to those violent treasures, the attribute was entirely different.

Surges of Spiritual Energy rippled in Mu Chen's body. He circulated the Great Pagoda Art as he constantly refined these Spiritual Energies. After all, these refined Spiritual Energies were absorbed by his Spirit, as well as the Seed of Fire. The final product was that dark-black Spiritual Energy that was also burning with black flames.

When that surge of Spiritual Energy was absorbed by Mu Chen, a peculiar ripple was being emitted. That ripple was rather mystical. Whenever it fluctuated, the originally flaring Spiritual Energy slowly calmed down. A kind of steadiness and profound intent gradually rippled out.

That steadiness made Mu Chen feel indescribably carefree. It felt like something was suddenly forming while floating in the void or like a collapsing palace suddenly gaining a steady firm pillar. Expelling all of its unsteadiness.

Haaaa

Mu Chen uncontrollably breathed a mouthful of white mist in comfort. A faint luster also emerged from his face. Only the current him as of this moment, could be considered a genuine Heavenly Fusion Stage.

Previously, he could only be considered to have just managed to step into the door of Heavenly Fusion Stage and was not even in thorough control of a phase yet. However, relying on the miraculous effects of the Spiritual Lotus Seed, Mu Chen was able to polish to that level in an instant. This kind of foundation that he possessed far surpassed ordinary Heavenly Fusion Stage.

"It's indeed worthy of being a rare treasure that even if one possesses 200,000 Spiritual Value points to purchase from the Spiritual Value Hall, there might not even be any of them for sale." Mu Chen praised. Perhaps the effects of the Spiritual Lotus Seed might not be comparable to other treasures; however, its effect of solidifying foundation was the most realistic. Only with a solid foundation can one have the possibility to dash for a higher level in cultivation.

After absorbing that Spiritual Lotus Seed, and solidified his cultivation, Mu Chen muttered to himself. With a clench of his fist, a black-coloured scroll was appeared in his hand.

That black-coloured scroll was constantly emitting a black luster. This luster formed the illusions of the four primordial beasts around the scroll. The four of them roared. It's as if their roars had pierced through time and space, coming from the ancient times.

That scroll was the Four Gods Constellation Scripture that Mu Chen had obtained from the Spiritual Arts Hall from before. Because he was in seclusion earlier on, he hadn't had the time to study it. But now, he finally had the chance to do so.

This Four Gods Constellation Scripture was a little strange. If it wasn't for that black paper summoning it, it'd definitely be impossible for Mu Chen to obtain it. This had proved how extraordinary this item was.

The grade of this Spiritual Art wasn't clear, but, at the very least, it was stronger than a Quasi-Deity Tier Spiritual Art.

As time passed, from the two months that was given by Li Xuantong, there's only ten days left. Mu Chen had a feeling that Li Xuantong wasn't joking with him. If he couldn't make a satisfying decision to Li Xuantong, the latter would definitely disregard everything and force him to leave Luo Li.

And that kind of situation was not what Mu Chen wanted to see.

Therefore, to prevent that kind of situation from happening, he had to do his best in increasing the number of cards under his sleeve. There were as many experts as clouds in the sky in this Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. On the Heavenly Ranking, all of them were formidable figures that definitely mustn't be underestimated.

After pondering this, Mu Chen cast his line of sight onto the black-coloured scroll in his hand as his eyes gradually turned grave. After a brief moment later, he slowly shut his eyes.

A faint black luster surged out from the black-coloured scroll. Thereafter, it entwined around Mu Chen's palm. At the same time, Mu Chen's body jolted as he immediately felt a vast amount of information rushing into his mind.

Boom!

When that vast amount of information had rushed into Mu Chen's mind. Intense booming pain came from his mind and in that instant, he lost his consciousness. His surrounding scenery abruptly changed.

Mu Chen swept his astonished gaze around and realised that he seemed to be in a deep starry sky, unable to see the heavens or earth. Before him was an enormous black-coloured scroll as it slowly pulled open. A black luster surged out as old ancient words flashed into his eyes.

There were four spirits at four directions. They were the Azure Dragon, White Tiger, Vermilion Bird and the Black Tortoise. The four spirits gathered, suppressing even the heavens and earth.

There wasn't excessively complicated introductions, only that simple row of words. However, it had a majestic surge that caused Mu Chen's

breathing to turn sluggish.

Roar!

Suddenly, a deep roar resounded in the starry sky. Directing his line of sight over, he saw the luster appearing in the four sides of the starry sky. Vaguely, they formed huge dragon, tiger, bird and tortoise.

At this moment, the starry sky was constantly changing. Mu Chen looked at it, feeling intoxicated. The stars began to turn fuzzy. In the end, it turned into extremely cryptic primordial seals.

Those primordial seals were reflected in Mu Chen's eyes as he firmly memorise them in his mind.

The seals that were formed by stars gradually dispersed after a long time and Mu Chen had woken up. The starry sky gradually vanished and Mu Chen opened his eyes. Within his eyes were gasps of surprise, as well as astonishment.

From those primordial seals, he could sense a towering frightful power.

"This is the Deity Tier Spiritual Art?"

Mu Chen murmured to himself. Shortly after, he deeply inhaled a mouthful of air as his expression became serene. Both of his hands had come together and formed into primordial and bizarre seals.

His seals changed. Even though it was a little unfamiliar and sluggish, but the changes in the seals also carried a hint of ancient and boundless auras. It incited the Spiritual Aura in the surrounding heavens and earth to be a little boiling.

Mu Chen's seals changed an entirely ninety-nine times and when the last seal was formed, his forehead was already filled with beads of sweat. Within his body, large amounts of Spiritual Energy had also been consumed.

Ohmmm!

When he made ninety-nine changes, the Spiritual Energy within the room abruptly turned violent. Between his palms was an ascending luster

that appeared like a bright sun. Within it, was the vaguely contained roars of a tiger.

A frightful ripple spread out.

Mu Chen glanced at that bright sun-like luster gathered within his palm. With a move, he flashed out of the room and appeared on the giant lake at the freshmen area. Pushing his hands out, thunder-like barking came from his throat, “Four Gods Constellation Scripture, Divine Seal of the White Tiger!”

ROOOOAR!

A world-shaking tiger roar resounded. The surrounding Spiritual Energy in the heavens and earth gathered towards him. That white luster in Mu Chen’s palm expanded and in the end, a scorching sun surged forth and formed into a enormous white lustered tiger with the size of approximately a hundred feet. That white tiger issued a roar as it flew out and ferociously shot into the lake.

BOOOOOM!

The enormous lake of several thousand feet in radius suddenly vibrated. Huge waves rolled and ferociously hit the surrounding shores, causing booming sounds to linger in one’s ears.

Mu Chen looked down at that huge crater as the lake gradually calmed down. Lowering his head to both of his hands, Mu Chen’s brows were tightly knitted together. Although the might of that attack wasn’t weak... Mu Chen could feel that he had yet to unleash the true power of the Four Gods Constellation Scripture.

When he was executing it, he could feel that there was something crucial that he was lacking.

Mu Chen submerged into his thinking. Just what was he lacking?

He stood on top of the lake and raised his head, looking at the abstruse night. Caresses of breeze fluttered his clothes as he sunk into contemplation and doubt.

He recalled the forming white tiger earlier on. The Spiritual Energy was violent, but it lacked in grandeur. That was simply an ordinary white tiger form, lacking the grandeur of a genuine white tiger.

Having the shape, but lacking the soul.

Therefore, the real power of the white tiger seal couldn't be unleashed.

Mu Chen's eyes suddenly lit up but very quickly, he became helpless again. Azure Dragon, White Tiger, Vermilion Bird and Black Tortoise were reputed as the spirits of the four directions. They were also superior existences among the Divine Beasts, standing at the pinnacle. Only a few of the superior beasts could be compared to them. Wanting to study such deities was simply impossible for the current Mu Chen.

Mu Chen cast the side of his mouth down in dejection. Deity Tier Spiritual Arts are indeed extraordinary. Even if others obtained it, trying to succeed in training in it wasn't so simple.

He sighed as he shook his head. Mu Chen never thought that he would suffer such a plight when he had just started training in it. Right now, he could only grope about it slowly for the time being.

"Hmm?"

However, when Mu Chen was planning to give up for the time being, his thoughts suddenly moved. Right now, there was nothing he could do to the Four Gods Constellation Scripture. However, he wondered if that mysterious black paper could give him some aid?

Since that black paper could attract the Four Gods Constellation Scripture over, there must be some link between the two.

Mu Chen's gaze faintly flickered and his mind had immediately entered into his aurasea. His gaze was fixed on that mysterious black paper. That paper had no reaction, not even having the slightest light emitted from it. It looked normal and ordinary, like an ordinary object.

Mu Chen stared at that mysterious black paper and pondered for a brief moment. His mind moved and saw the Spirit that was seated on top of the Spiritual Energy Wheel stood up and appeared before that black piece of

paper.

His Spirit stood firmly as both of his hand suddenly came together. Primordial and cryptic seals changed shakily. These seals were exactly the same as what Mu Chen had executed earlier on.

As the seals changed, there wasn't any activity from the mysterious black piece of paper. This had made Mu Chen's mind sink. When the last of the ninety-nine seals solidified, he couldn't help sighing in disappointment.

Ohmmm!

However, when Mu Chen's sigh had ended, a mysterious buzzing shook and suddenly spread out in his aurasea.

Mu Chen's Spirit suddenly rose his head and, in his eyes, a dense ecstasy surged out.

Before him, that mysterious black piece of paper that didn't have any movements had finally, at this moment, emitted faint black luster. A buzzing sound resounded in his aurasea.

There's finally a reaction from that black piece of paper!

Chapter 211: Comprehend

Mysterious black light was released bit by bit from that black piece of paper. Vaguely, he could see some cryptic and ancient light patterns as they slowly spread on the paper, bit by bit.

Mu Chen looked at this scene with a little excitement. So many years had passed since he obtained this black piece of paper and it's the first time he had seen such activity from it.

Ohmmmn! Ohmmn!

Black light constantly gathered on top of that black piece of paper. Shortly after, that black light looked as though it had turned into a starry sky. Countless stars were floating on it. A snow white enormous tiger stepped onto the starry sky as it roared towards the sky. That roar shook the starry sky and an endless killing aura omnipresently engulfed everything. For a brief moment, the Spiritual Energy in Mu Chen's body had actually been intimidated to the point that it had stopped circulating and his entire body froze.

He was overwhelmed with shock as he gazed at that white tiger that stood on the starry sky. Raging waves were rummaging in his heart. This white tiger before him was definitely not any ordinary tiger, as it possessed that grandeur of a supreme divine beast!

Although it wasn't material, that grandeur was sufficient to shake the heavens and earth!

The Four Gods Constellation Scripture that he was training in was lacking this kind of grandeur that was possessed by the original four mythical beasts!

In the aurasea, Nine Nether Bird was also flapping its wings, its gaze was fixed on the white tiger that was standing on the starry sky above the black page of paper. Its eyes were filled with restraining fear and grief. As spiritual beasts, it could naturally sense the genuine might that was released from this white tiger. Even ordinary Divine Beasts were incomparable to its prestige.

White Tiger, one of the four mythical beasts was indeed, a well-deserved reputation!

Mu Chen also inhaled a mouthful of air and gradually restored his calm. This White Tiger before him was just an illusion. However, this illusion was different, as it possessed the genuine killing aura that only the genuine White Tiger possesses.

Mu Chen looked at the White Tiger that was stepping on the starry sky, then slowly closed his eyes, quietly comprehending the killing aura that was emitted from the White Tiger.

He had to integrate this grandeur into his seal, so that he'd be able to unleash the genuine might of the Four Gods Constellation Scripture.

However, it's evident that trying to complete this step wasn't easy. Even if Mu Chen was able to comprehend the killing aura brought from this White Tiger before them, there still wasn't any major results.

On the contrary, Mu Chen wasn't disappointed. Since he had found the way to truly train the Four Gods Constellation Scripture, he only needed a little time and he should be able to truly succeed in training it.

Thinking about it here, Mu Chen restrained all urgency and calmed his state of mind, before exiting from his aurasea. With his exit, the luster from that mysterious black piece of paper had also rapidly dispersed and was restored to its former state. Only the Nine Nether Bird was still looking at it in alert.

On the lake, Mu Chen opened his eyes and the sky was already brightly lit. He stretched his body and returned to his small house.

Over the next few days, Mu Chen had been submerged in comprehension. The moment he had time, he would enter his aurasea and look at the roaring White Tiger figure that stood on the starry sky. That blowing, inexhaustible killing aura was like a cold stream that could even freeze the blood of others.

While Mu Chen was being carried away in his comprehension, over the next few days, although the "Divine Seal of the White Tiger" executed by

Mu Chen hadn't unleashed its full might, it was much more powerful, compared to his first execution of it.

According to this speed, perhaps it wouldn't be much longer and Mu Chen would be able to truly unleash the might of the "Divine Seal of the White Tiger".

Towards that day, he's filled with expectation.

...

At the top of the house, Mu Chen quietly sat down, but he wasn't cultivating. Instead, he was lazily basked in the sunlight. He had always been comprehending that killing aura of the White Tiger these days, causing his state of mind to be a little influenced by it. The Spiritual Energy within his body was also fluctuating in a peculiar way. But fortunately, he had refined a Spiritual Lotus Seed and therefore, he could pacify that peculiar fluctuation. However, he also knows that this should have been caused by being immersed in that comprehension. Therefore, he's relaxing a little today, not daring to be completely wrapped up in the comprehension anymore.

Beside him, sat Luo Li. Her originally bundled lustrous long hair had also been untied and was drooping down, dazzling to the eyes, like the milky way. Her slender and tender body had outlined her developed and slightly plumped curves because of her sitting posture. Looking at her, she seemed exceptionally graceful. At this moment, she was holding a scroll and was earnestly going through it. That seemed to be a scroll of Spiritual Art.

Mu Chen held his face up as he leaned his face to the side, looking at the earnest Luo Li. He couldn't stop grinning. This scene was indeed beautiful and was calming to the heart. And his state of mind, which was affected by the White Tiger's killing aura earlier, had also gradually calmed down.

Woooosh!

However, that tranquility wasn't long lasting. Suddenly, sounds of sonic booms came and a figure urgently came over, landing on the top of the small house. It was Ye Qingling.

"What's wrong?"

Mu Chen raised his head and looked at Ye Qingling. At this moment, the latter's face was filled with anxiety.

"Something happened. Today, we brought a group of people to cultivate in a Rank 6 Spirit Convergence Array, we ran into a bunch of unfamiliar seniors. They were exceptionally rude and unreasonable, and forcefully chased the members of the Goddess Luo Association out of the Convergence Array. Zhou Ling wasn't willing to comply, and was wounded by them. They even gave Sun'er a slap!" Ye Qingling said with an anxious tone.

"What?!"

Mu Chen's eyes instantly turned cold. Who was it that went so far? Slapping even a small girl like Sun'er?

"Who was it? Our Goddess Luo Association shouldn't have offended anyone. Could it be the Azure Red Community, which Mo Lun is from?" Luo Li had also rolled up the scroll and said with her brows slightly knitted together.

"It wasn't those of the Azure Red Community." Ye Qingling shook her head and bitterly smiled, "They're more troublesome compared to the Azure Red Community. It's the Great Desolate Association."

"Great Desolate Association?" Mu Chen was slightly baffled.

"Is it that Great Desolate Association which Xu Huang of Heavenly Ranking's Rank 5?" Luo Li asked as she had some understanding towards these matters.

"Yeah."

"Xu Huang?" Hearing this name, Mu Chen was slightly dazed. Thereafter, his eyes had thoroughly turned cold. "Among those bunch of people, was there a girl named Xu Qingqing?"

"Sun'er was slapped by that wretch!"

Ye Qingling immediately nodded her head as her eyes were filled with

rage. If it wasn't for Zhou Ling asking her to come back and look for Mu Chen and Luo Li, she would have probably fought with Xu Qingqing.

"So it really was her!"

Mu Chen's eyes had also turned thoroughly cold. This Xu Qingqing was indeed too much. Was she treating him as someone that was easy to mess with?!

His eyes were shady as he stood up, "Sorry about it. The origin of this matter was me. That Xu Qingqing is probably wanting to give me trouble. I've implicated everyone."

Ye Qingling blanked. Although she didn't know how Mu Chen had a grudge with that Xu Qingqing, she still shook her head, "This can't be blamed on you, it's that Xu Qingqing that's gone too far."

"Bring me with you." Mu Chen looked towards Ye Qingling. The chill in his deep voice was unable to be concealed. Anyone can see that Mu Chen are genuinely angry.

In that Rank 6 Spirit Convergence Array, Xu Qingqing had constantly looking to make trouble for him, but Mu Chen was too lazy to bother with her. Therefore, he wasn't bothered about it. However, he never thought that she would actually dare to take action against those of the Goddess Luo Association. Furthermore, she even dared to slap such a cute little girl like Sun'er!

"That Xu Qingqing brought quite a bit of people with her. Among them, there were four that had reached Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase. Within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, they still have some fame." Said Ye Qingling.

"I'm coming along as well."

Seeing Mu Chen's gloomy expression and with her understanding towards him, she naturally knew that Mu Chen had gotten truly angry and immediately stood up. Although Mu Chen's current strength had undergone a huge increase, the other party had greater numbers. She's afraid that Mu Chen would suffer a loss.

Mu Chen nodded his head and Ye Qingling had immediately flew away, leading them from the front.

The three of them quickly exited the freshman area and swiftly headed towards a corner in the vast Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Approximately ten minutes later, their speed finally slowed down. On the vast stone platform, the Spiritual Aura was distorted. It was a Rank 5 Spirit Convergence Array.

Wooooosh!

The three of them rushed into the Rank 5 Spirit Convergence Array. Not long after they had entered, they saw two batches of people confronting each other on a vast stone platform before them. One of the forces was evidently, more powerful and suppressed the other party.

Around the platform, there was quite an amount of people observing. They could also tell that those on the left side should be freshmen and as for those on the right, they were people of the Great Desolate Association that possessed enormous fame in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Both sides weren't of the same level to begin with.

This kind of action was undoubtedly bullying, but no one dared to speak of it. The Great Desolate Association wasn't an ordinary force in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, as their leader was the Rank 5 of the Heavenly Ranking, Xu Huang. Xu Huang was extremely powerful, so there wasn't that many people that would dare to provoke him in the entire academy.

Standing at the front of the group, Xu Qingqing's face carried a trace of a cold smile as she looked at the slightly frightened freshmen.

Over at Goddess Luo Association's side, Zhou Ling's face had some bruises. Previously when they fought, he couldn't go a few rounds with them and was defeated by a Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase fellow.

By the side of Zhou Ling, those members of the Goddess Luo Association were also clenching their fists as they stared at Xu Qingqing. Their eyes were filled with fiery rage.

“Big Brother Mu is here!”

Suddenly, someone pleasantly spoke up. Zhou Ling and the rest immediately raised their heads. Indeed, they saw three figures rapidly closing in and landed before them. It was Mu Chen, Luo Li, as well as Ye Qingling, the three of them.

“Mu Chen!” Zhou Ling was also in great joy.

Mu Chen nodded towards Zhou Ling, then looked at the latter’s side. By his side, stood a twin-tailed little girl with pitch-black eyes that’s currently looking at him with watery eyes. There was also a red palm mark on her snow white cheeks.

“Big Brother Mu Chen.”

When Sun’er saw Mu Chen, her hands rubbed her cheeks as she sniffed, trying her best not to let her tears fall. Her grievant appearance made others that looked at her to feel sorry for her.

Mu Chen’s expression had also gradually turned ice-cold.

Chapter 212: Two Slaps

When Mu Chen appeared on that stone platform, quite a few people in the surrounding area had shock smearing across their eyes. Among the freshmen, Mu Chen and Luo Li had the most fame.

Mu Chen rose to fame because of that huge battle during the Freshman Competition, whereas Luo Li had rose up to the Heavenly Ranking previously, which was known to many students in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Looking at it right now, both of them seemed to be gathered and were also standing on the side against the Great Desolate Association.

However, although Mu Chen and Luo Li's fame were rising, the Great Desolate Association wasn't any simple force. In the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, those that could surpass them can be counted on one's fingers. Mu Chen, however, was still a fledgling and it'd be difficult for him to contend against them.

"Hoo, you've finally appeared."

Seeing Mu Chen, a smear of a cold smile instantly appeared on Xu Qingqing's face, "Did you really treat my words back then in the Rank 6 Spirit Convergence Array as a joke? You've offended me, Xu Qingqing, and still want to have a good time in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?"

"Are you the one that hit her?"

Mu Chen didn't have much of an expression on his face as he pointed towards Sun'er. His voice was calm, like water without much ripples of emotion.

Xu Qingqing cast a glance at Sun'er, who had red palm marks on her little face. The little girl's appearance with watery eyes did indeed attract the pamper of others, however, she cast the corner of her mouth to the

side. At such a young age, she already knows how to feign the pitiful victim to attract men.

"I was the one that hit her, who lets her to be so untactful to have the cheek to contradict me. It's already light that she only got a slap." Xu Qingqing coldly laughed.

"If I encounter people like you in the Spiritual Road... "

Mu Chen stared at Xu Qingqing, his handsome face had a smear of smile. However, in that smile, it was filled with chill and a smear of killing intent.

"...I would have killed you."

When Mu Chen's last sentence came out coldly, his gaze turned ice cold.

Xu Qingqing felt the deep killing aura within Mu Chen's words, her face had also changed. But shortly after, she flew into a rage out of humiliation and screamed, "Who the hell are you? Before me, you still dare to act that?!"

Mu Chen's gaze remained cold as his body slightly leaned forward. However, just when he was about to charge out, the black-dressed girl by his side took a step before him. Her figure was extremely fast and seemed like lightning. Even Mu Chen was only able to catch her fuzzy afterimage.

Luo Li's figure instantly appeared before Xu Qingqing. At this moment, her delicate face had a faint chill that was spreading out.

"Who are you?" Seeing Luo Li before her, Xu Qingqing's brows were raised. She looked at her delicate appearance that even a woman would be envious of. A trace of jealousy rose in her heart.

Luo Li's glass-like eyes faintly stared at her, but she didn't speak a word. Her jade-like hand was raised and suddenly moved with her palm open.

PAAAAA!

Luo Li's hand was like lightning. She didn't have the slightest mercy and heavily slapped Xu Qingqing's face. That crisp sound resounded from the stone platform.

Xu Qingqing's face turned over from that slap on her face. She opened her mouth and her eyes widened, appearing to be a little blank, as she didn't have the time to respond.

She was actually slapped?

After that crisp slapping sound had resounded from the stone platform, all those who were whispering from before looked as though they had been chopped off. Everyone's expressions were a little solidified as they blanking stared at this scene.

Those members of the Great Desolate Association behind Xu Qingqing were also dazed. They're very clear of how crafty and unruly Xu Qingqing was, borrowing the fame of her brother, Xu Huang. Although there were people within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy that hated her, those people could only restrain their loathe and welcome her with smiling face. And today, Xu Qingqing was actually slapped in front of so many people?

They were in a daze, staring at the black-dressed girl before Xu Qingqing. Her delicate appearance had made them slightly absent-minded.

"You...!"

Xu Qingqing's rosy lips slightly trembled as she slowly turned her face around and looked at Luo Li before her and mutter with a hard to believe voice, "You dared to hit me? You dared to hit me?!"

"That slap earlier, was for Sun'er." Luo Li looked at her with an

indifferent expression. Thereafter, her expression turned cold and her jade-like hand was raised, her palm open again.

PAAA!

The crisp sound resounded again and caused everyone's hearts to twitch.

"This slap was for you scolding him earlier on. In the future, when you scold him once, I'll slap you once." Luo Li retracted her jade-like hands and faintly declared.

The burning pain from her cheeks had thoroughly woken Xu Qingqing up. However, insanity rushed out from her eyes. He face was a little distorted as she looked at Luo Li. With a grasp of her jade-like hand, a longsword appeared with a flash. After pouring Spiritual Aura into it, she was making a mad attempt to pierce Luo Li's throat, "I'll kill you!"

A black-coloured longsword slide into Luo Li's hand as she abruptly grabbed onto the sword hilt. Images of a sword appeared as the sword stealthily slashed out a profound trajectory and heavily landed on Xu Qingqing's wrist.

Claaang!

A bruise instantly appeared on Xu Qingqing's wrist as her longsword fell.

Xu Qingqing issued a shriek as she grabbed her wrist. Her eyes turned red and her originally somewhat pretty face became a little distorted and unsightly. She screamed in insanity, "Kill her! Quick, kill her for me!"

At the current moment, Xu Qingqing had nearly gone insane. Over the years, she had been used to being unreasonable and tyrannical in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Since when has she ever suffered such humiliation before? Those two slaps nearly gave her a kind of fainting feeling.

She knows that if this matter were to spread out, it would definitely be a laughing joke in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. How would she have any face left?!

The large amount of seniors behind Xu Qingqing had also recovered from their shock. After all, this Xu Qingqing was the sister of Xu Huang and today, she was slapped before their eyes. If they didn't do anything, they wouldn't be able to explain themselves.

"Junior, aren't you a little too heavy with your hand?"

A youth with an ordinary appearance, but with some chill in his expression took a step out as he barked. He extended his hand out as his forceful Spiritual Energy swept out and made a grab towards Luo Li like eagle claws.

"If I'm you, I wouldn't want to touch her!"

However, just when his hand had extended out, a voice with ice in his tone resounded. A figure flashed forth from behind Luo Li and a fist flew out. Surges of Spiritual Energy mercilessly shot towards that youth with rising black flames.

"Hmph!"

Seeing it, that youth's face had also changed. Forming the shape of claws with his hand, Spiritual Energy within his body surged. On his fingertips, Spiritual Energy looked like they had been crystallized as it carried sharpness and heavily collided with that fist of black flames.

Bang!

The two of them collided as violent Spiritual Energy ripples swept out. The face of that youth had changed at that moment as he felt a surge of blazing sensation coming from his fingertips. Those peculiar black flames were actually igniting his Spiritual Energy as it attempted to intrude into his body.

Those black flames seemed to have great harm towards Spiritual Energy.

The gaze of that youth flashed and he urgently retracted his fist as his figure backed off dozens of steps.

Woooosh!

Seeing that youth moving backwards, a low uproar had instantly spread out in the surrounding. They all knew that youth, his name was Chen Xiu. He can be considered one of the higher ranked members in the Great Desolate Association. Right now, his strength had reached Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase and it's said that he possessed the qualification to fight for the top 100 in the Heavenly Ranking. They never expected that he would be knocked back by Mu Chen in a single exchange.

"Chen Xiu, you trash. You can't even take care of a freshman?! All of you, go! Capture them! I want to kill that little tramp!" Seeing the situation, Xu Qingqing's body was trembling from the anger. Her sharp voice was flustered and exasperated. The her right now had lost a little of her rational.

Chen Xiu and the rest, seeing that Xu Qingqing was making an unreasonable scene, were making faces that weren't that nice either. They were from the Great Desolate Association, but they weren't slaves of Xu Qingqing. If it wasn't for Xu Huang, they probably wouldn't even pay any attention to Xu Qingqing.

Mu Chen stood before Luo Li as he looked at Xu Qingqing, who had her face distorted from anger, as well as Chen Xiu and his group with a cold expression.

Luo Li's jade-like hand was lightly grasping the black longsword. Her glass-like eyes did not show too many ripples. Her gracefulness and calmness was exactly opposite of the unreasonable Xu Qingqing. This caused everyone to have their lips twitch in their hearts. Compared to this Luo Li, Xu Qingqing was lacking quite a bit.

Xu Qingqing made a bursting unreasonable scene, but seeing that no one paid attention to her in the surrounding area, she was trembling from the anger. She pointed towards Chen Xiu's group and bit her teeth, "Fine, since you guys don't want to take action, I'll do it myself. If I'm killed, I'll see how you guys explain yourselves before my big brother!"

Chen Xiu's group had the corners of their mouths twitching. Within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, killing is forbidden. Only crazed women like you would shout about killing someone.

Xu Qingqing however, did not care about what they were thinking. Grabbing onto her longsword, she was about to charge out as if her life depended on it.

"Qingqing!"

Just when she was about to rush out, a low bark resounded. It was like booming thunder as it resounded on the stone platform. Hearing that voice, joy immediately filled Xu Qingqing's face.

"Big brother!" Xu Qingqing hastily raised her head. She saw a figure flashing not far away and in a several breaths, he appeared above this area. Thereafter, he flashed down and landed beside Xu Qingqing.

When Zhou Ling and the rest had heard Xu Qingqing shouting "Big Brother", their hearts abruptly sank. In this Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, there's only one person that could be called this name by Xu Qingqing.

Their lines of sight shifted to Xu Qingqing's side with a little fear. Over there, a luster dispersed and revealed a thin figure. He was donned in grey clothes. His face wasn't handsome at all and his eye socket was slightly caved in. That pair of eyes had a kind of hawk-like sharpness. When his eyes swept, it caused fear to arise in the heart of others.

This person was Rank 5 of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's Heavenly Rank, Xu Huang?

Such a person had actually appeared!

Chapter 213: Two Powerful Figures

When that grey-robed youth appeared on the stone platform, the atmosphere instantly became stagnant. The surrounding observing students also swallowed a mouthful of saliva. They must have never expected that this matter would actually attract such a ferocious person like Xu Huang.

This kind of figure was extremely rarely seen in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Mu Chen's line of sight also shifted to that grey-robed youth in an instant. The latter's eyes were caved in and had a sharp and uncomfortable chill.

He stared at that grey-robed youth as his body became slightly tense. He could sense a dangerous aura coming from that person and this person before him, aside from Li Xuantong, was the most powerful person that he had seen in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy so far.

"Boss!"

When Chen Xiu and the rest saw the appearance of that grey-robed youth, they all hastily shouted.

"Big Brother!"

...

Xu Qingqing immediately pounced forth and grabbed onto Xu Huang's arm and cried, "You have to seek justice for me, that little tramp did that to me in the eyes of so many. My face has been thrown away!"

Xu Huang took a glance at Xu Qingqing's reddened cheeks that were slapped and his brows were slightly knitted together. Naturally, he's well aware of his little sister's character. But no matter what, she's still his biological sister and no matter what she'd done wrong, he still had to carry the troubles that she had landed herself in as her elder brother. This was what was told to him by his father, when he left for the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

“Explain.” Xu Huang’s said as he looked at Mu Chen’s group with his brows frowned.

Mu Chen’s brows were also frowned and said, without much ripples in his words. “There’s nothing to explain. Ask those people under you. They’ll naturally tell you what had happened. Furthermore, if your mouth is still not clean, then it won’t stop at just two slaps.”

As his words ended, he was already looking at Xu Qingqing. His tone was forbidding and his black pupils were filled with ice-cold murderous intent.

Hearing what was said, Xu Qingqing wanted to scream in anger. However, after seeing Mu Chen’s devouring gaze, her heart suddenly froze and could not speak the words that had reached her mouth.

Everyone couldn’t help slacking their lips inwardly. Such great courage of Mu Chen to actually dare to threaten Xu Qingqing before Xu Huang.

Xu Huang’s caved-in eyes stared at Mu Chen. Along them, flowed with chilling rays of light which also made others understand that he wasn’t someone that could be easily messed with.

“The amount of people within this Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy that could speak such words before me doesn’t exceed the fingers of one hand. Do you think that you’re also among the ranks? Freshman?” Xu Huang’s voice was a little deep as it carried a heart trembling power.

“Even if you’re Li Xuantong, I’d still dare to say it.” Mu Chen said as he smiled indifferently.

“Really?”

Xu Huang coldly smiled. Evidently, he had treated Mu Chen’s words to be ignorant jokes. He pointed at Xu Qingqing and continued, “She’s my little sister. Even if she was arrogant, considered everyone else beneath her and making trouble without reason, she’s still my little sister. I can discipline her, but not you.”

“Like sister, like brother.” Mu Chen understood why Xu Qingqing’s character was like this, it was all caused by Xu Huang’s spoiling. Serves her right for being taught a lesson today.

“Hand over the one that hit her. Seeing that you guys are freshmen, I won’t have much haggle with you guys.” Xu Huang stared at Mu Chen and waved his hand. He’s after all, an influential figure of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. If he were to have too much haggle with freshmen, he would be bringing his status down and would also attract the gossip of others. Saying that he’s bullying the weak.

Luo Li’s eyes were ice-cold as she grab hold onto the black longsword and stepped forth. However, she was stopped by Mu Chen’s hand.

“It looks like Senior Brother Xu Huang is going to seek justice for her without finding out the rights and wrongs?” Mu Chen faintly smiled. He originally thought that Xu Huang was someone that could be reasoned with a little, but he never expect that he would still be so imperious and overbearing. No wonder he had such a sister.

“What do you think?” Xu Huang looked at Mu Chen as his caved eyes were slightly covered with a shadow. His sharp gaze made others not daring enough to looking into them.

Mu Chen smiled as he shook his head. “It’s impossible for me to hand her over. No matter what Senior Brother Xu Huang wants to do, we’ll accept all of it. Except that I still have to offer an advice. Your little sister’s character needs some discipline. It’s still good within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, but if she were to go out... haha, I’m afraid that she’d suffer.”

Seeing that Mu Chen still dared to lecture her at this moment, Xu Qingqing was instantly angered to the point that she was gnashing her teeth.

“Accept them?” Xu Huang’s brows was slightly frowned. His sharp gaze was vaguely like a chilling sword edge as he stared at Mu Chen, “Are you certain that you’re capable to accept them?”

Boom!

Just when the last of Xu Huang’s words landed, his eyes had thoroughly turned cold as a surge of shocking Spiritual Energy rolled out from his body, like storm. The people in the surrounding area were jolted back in a

sorry state.

A powerful Spiritual Energy shrouded over with intense pressure, making it difficult for all of the present students to breathe. Their faces had undergone a huge change. Is this the strength of Heavenly Ranking's Rank 5? He's actually strong to such an extent?!

Mu Chen's expression had also turned grave. That surge of Spiritual Energy's pressure before him caused even his breathing to become stagnant. He immediately circulated the Great Pagoda Art. As if there were sounds of ancient bells resounding within his body and endured this oppression.

Beside Mu Chen, Luo Li's beautiful glance slightly concentrated. Her hand that was grabbing hold onto the black longsword slightly exerted force. Facing the pressure of Spiritual Energy from Xu Huang, she had not taken a step back.

"Heavenly Transform Stage!"

Mu Chen's expression became grave as he stared at Xu Huang, whose expression was sharp as a blade. This kind of oppression was absolutely not something that a Heavenly Fusion Stage could possess. Evidently, Xu Huang has reached Heavenly Transform Stage!

"Hand her over and I won't haggle with you guys over this matter. Today's matter will then end here." Xu Huang faintly said as he pointed to Luo Li.

Mu Chen smiled. Heavenly Transform Stage was indeed powerful, but that doesn't mean that he would be afraid. If Xu Huang has really gone too far, he wouldn't mind borrowing the power of Nine Nether Bird to crush him.

Although this would reveal the matter that he didn't ingest the Soul Essence of the Nine Nether Bird, but had formed Bloodline Bond with it. But wanting him to hand Luo Li over was obviously impossible.

"Stubborn."

Xu Huang's expression had finally turned ice cold and he had also lost

patience to chat with Mu Chen any longer. He took a step forth and was about to take action.

"Boom!"

Suddenly, just when Xu Huang was about to take action, a surge of powerful pressure of Spiritual Energy rolled over omnipresently from far away. A ray of light also flew over.

"Xu Huang, if you want to touch her, I'm afraid that I won't agree to it."

A faint voice came from the distance and approached. When everyone had directed their gazes over, a figure appeared above the stone platform and slowly landed down beside Mu Chen and Luo Li.

"Li Xuantong?!"

When everyone saw that handsome youth, they instantly issued alarming sounds. Shortly after, their eyes were burning with fiery light. Who could have imagined that in such a short amount of time, two of the top 5 rankings in the Heavenly Ranking made their appearance? Furthermore, one of them was the current rank 2, Li Xuantong!

When the number 1 of the Heavenly Ranking, Shen Cangsheng wasn't here, who else can be compared to Li Xuantong?

"Li Xuantong?" Seeing the appearance of Li Xuantong, Xu Huang was also stunned. He had obviously not expected that this guy would appear here. Standing beside him, Xu Qingqing's face was also changing. Originally, she thought that they were just frail and weak freshmen. She never expected them to have some connections with Li Xuantong!

Mu Chen was also a little surprised by the appearance of Li Xuantong. This guy would actually help them? This was indeed strange. However, a majority of it should be for Luo Li. Otherwise, he definitely wouldn't be willing to show himself.

"Li Xuantong, this matter should have nothing to do with you?" Xu Huang said with his brows creased. Towards Li Xuantong, he obviously had some restraining fear for him. If he fought with Li Xuantong today, this matter would be troublesome.

“I won’t bother as long as you don’t implicate her.” Li Xuantong faintly smiled as he continued, “However, the fault in today’s matter was indeed not with them. I feel that there isn’t a need to enlarge this matter.”

Xu Qingqing was gnashing her teeth. Li Xuantong’s words had obviously said that she was in the wrong. However, when facing people like Li Xuantong, she knows that she wouldn’t dare to offend him no matter how arrogant she was. She could only swallow this grievance.

Xu Huang’s brows were creased together. After looking face-to-face with Li Xuantong for a brief moment, he turned to Mu Chen and spoke, “I’ll give him face this time. But freshman, there won’t always be a time where someone will help you. Next time, I will definitely not give you this chance.”

“Then, I’ll be looking forward to it, Senior Brother Xu Huang.” Mu Chen smiled as he cupped his hands. Within his smile, there wasn’t the slightest fear.

Xu Huang’s expression was cold as he deeply looked at Mu Chen. He didn’t say anything else as he waved his hand, turned around and headed towards the exit of the Spirit Convergence Array. Seeing him, Xu Qingqing could only stomp her feet in anger and followed up. She knew that it’d be impossible for her to get back her face today.

As Xu Huang and his group left, the surrounding students had also been dispersed bit by bit. They all felt pity as there wasn’t an intense battle. However, being able to see two influential figures of the Heavenly Ranking’s top five had already made their trip worthwhile.

“Thanks.”

Mu Chen looked towards Li Xuantong and thanked him. Although he wasn’t afraid of Xu Huang, it’s naturally good if he could conceal some secrets.

“If it wasn’t for Luo Li, I wouldn’t be bothered with this.” Li Xuantong faintly said. His tone did not give any face which caused Luo Li to have her brows creased. She pulled Mu Chen’s hand and was about to leave.

“Mu Chen.”

Li Xuantong’s gaze fell onto the hands of those two. “The time that I’ve given you will soon end, what’s your answer?”

Mu Chen’s steps stopped as he held onto Luo Li’s delicate little hand and faintly smiled. Tightly grabbing and showing it towards Li Xuantong. The meaning was self-evident and left with Luo Li. A calm and firm voice resounded.

“Senior Brother Li Xuantong, you reveal your sword, I accept your move.”

Li Xuantong looked at the two of them as their figures moved further away and breathed a mouthful of air out. Raising his head to the azure sky, sharpness slowly turned more and more condensed in his eyes.

What an unresigned kid. Since that’s the case, then let me see if you have the qualification to make the choice.

Chapter 214: Requesting a Battle

The matter with Li Xuantong and Xu Huang appearing in the Grade 5 Spirit Convergence Array, along with the confrontation, soon spread out in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. The two of them were influential figures and their fame was much more powerful compared to Mu Chen's. All information concerning them had attracted countless attention.

The top ten of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's Heavenly Ranking were all formidable figures. Regarding this point, everyone was well aware of it. Or to put it this way, those that were ranked in the top ten would rarely take any action, as they are well aware that the other party was not to be trifled with. Therefore, they were considered to be barely harmonious between each other, as long as there weren't any other special reasons.

Li Xuantong and Xu Huang, one of them was Heavenly Ranking's Rank 2, while the other being Rank 5. All of them possessed strength of Heavenly Transform Stage and with such strength, not mentioning the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, even in the entire Northern Heavens Continent, they could still be considered as experts. In some Sects or Forces, they could be considered middle to high rank existences.

If the two of them were to fight, it would definitely shake the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. However, what made others feel pity was that there wasn't any fight between them. Seeing that Li Xuantong had appeared, Xu Huang brought his men and left. Although he said that he was giving Li Xuantong face, he obviously had some fears as well. Even if they were to be tangled over it, it also wouldn't help in the least. Therefore, he might as well leave free and easy.

Therefore, this confrontation had ended with nothing definite, which made everyone more disappointed. However, their disappointment only lasted for a day, before they were shocked by the storm-like news that spread out in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Li Xuantong issued a Battle Notice.

This piece of news had spread throughout the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy in just a few hours. Every student that received this news was shocked for a moment, before they touched their ears, doubting if they were hearing it right.

Heavenly Ranking's Rank 2, Li Xuantong was issuing a Battle Notice against a freshman?

What's with this situation?

Who is Li Xuantong? Who is Mu Chen? One being high up, the influential figure of Heavenly Rank's Rank 2. One being a freshman that had just entered the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy several months ago. Although the latter had resounding fame, how could he be compared to people like Li Xuantong?

Such odd confrontation had actually appeared? Furthermore, it was Li Xuantong who issued the notice?

The entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was bursting with shocking commotion. This could be considered the most unusual thing that has happened in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy this year. It's rarely that Li Xuantong would take action, and no one had expected that this time around, he would actually challenge a freshman as his opponent. Is he trying to have joy brought to him by crushing others?

However, no matter how they guessed, this matter had already been spread out. This caused some ripples for the freshman called Mu Chen. No one knew how that guy offended Li Xuantong to the point that the latter would actually issue such a notice.

This battle would probably be a dull farce. There wasn't any suspense in this battle.

However, to be able to witness the super influential Heavenly Ranking's Rank 2 taking action again, it's still pretty good. Hopefully, the current number one freshman wouldn't be beaten to the point that he would be dispirited.

...

Somewhere in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, in a huge hall. Xu Huang's brows were knitted together as he heard the report from the guy below and said softly in doubt, "Li Xuantong actually issued a notice to Mu Chen? Didn't he just help them?"

Beside Xu Huang, Xu Qingqing had a face of rejoicing in other people's misfortune. When she heard this news, her eyes couldn't help expressing laughter as she clenched her teeth. "Big Brother, it's evident that Li Xuantong is interested in Luo Li and the one that Luo Li likes is Mu Chen. Yesterday when Li Xuantong came, it was because of Luo Li. There isn't any relationship between him and Mu Chen."

Xu Huang lightly nodded, realising that this made sense. That Luo Li was exceptionally outstanding. Whether it was her appearance or demeanor, they stood at the peak of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. The only one that could be compared to her at this point would probably only be Su Xuan. However, one being sweet-tempered like water and one being quiet and distant. Their demeanors were entirely different.

"This Mu Chen would probably have his face thrown out, this time around." Xu Huang said lightly. This battle didn't have much suspense. If Li Xuantong wished, he could suppress Mu Chen into a dog-like sorry situation. This Mu Chen was evidently, a prideful person. After suffering such a setback, his cultivation in the future would always be in that shadow.

"He deserves it!" Xu Qingqing said viciously. She was impatient as she wanted to see that battle two days later. She wanted to see if that guy would still have that indifferent expression that enraged her when he was being stepped beneath someone's feet.

Xu Huang held onto the teacup and lightly took a sip. He smiled indifferently.

"Go take a look two days later. Although the outcome would be dull."

...

“This Li Xuantong is too much, to the point of even issuing such a notice!”

Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, on another isle in the middle of a lake. Su Ling’er looked at the red-coloured Battle Notice that was spread out. Her shapely brows instantly creased and said, as she felt injustice for Mu Chen.

At the lakeside in front of Su Ling’er, there was a slender beautiful woman with fine, black hair draped down like a black waterfall. At this moment, she was at the lakeside washing a round jade bead that was also emitting a faint luster. The surface of the jade bead was filled with profound line patterns and vaguely, there was also a type of obscure Spiritual Energy ripples coming from it.

Hearing Su Ling’er’s voice from the back, she slightly tilted her head and revealed a gentle and beautiful face as she asked in doubt, “What’s wrong?”

“Big Sister, this Li Xuantong is too much. He actually issued a Battle Notice to Mu Chen!” Su Ling’er said as she was fuming with anger. What’s Li Xuantong’s strength and what’s Mu Chen’s strength? This Battle Notice is simply meant to bully others.

“Oh? How did this happen?”

Hearing what was said, Su Xuan’s eyes were smeared with astonishment. Li Xuantong was a prideful person. Therefore, it’s rare for him to commit stuff like bullying the weak. But why did he do this?

“It’s rumored that Li Xuantong is fond of Luo Li and Luo Li likes Mu Chen... Thereafter, Li Xuantong did this out of jealousy.” Su Ling’er said as he cast the corner of her mouth to the side.

Su Xuan glanced at Su Ling’er oddly and felt her tone of speaking was somewhat wrong. However, she still shook her head and said, “I still understand Li Xuantong’s character. Even if he’s jealous of a rival in a love affair, he also wouldn’t do this. There must be another reason for him to do this.”

“No matter what reason it is, issuing this kind of Battle Notice is still bullying.” said Su Ling’er.

“Li Xuantong has long stepped into the Heavenly Transform Stage and Mu Chen is at the Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase. How can he win against Li Xuantong?”

Su Xuan couldn’t bear not smiling. Her smile was gentle and charming, “Sometime ago, weren’t you shouting about finding Mu Chen’s trouble? Why did you suddenly help him to speak up, instead?”

Su Ling’er’s charming face blushed as she mumbled, “Mu Chen this person, is still not bad. Previously, I didn’t understand him. This time, we wouldn’t be able to be friends if we didn’t fight. We could barely be considered as friends and, therefore, I would naturally think a little more for him. Furthermore, he’s on the weaker side. If I don’t help him, am I going to help Li Xuantong instead?”

Su Xuan stored the ancient jade bead and said, “Since the Battle Notice has already been issued, this matter is fixed. There’s no use in fighting it, no matter what’s being said, unless Mu Chen doesn’t take up the battle. If he doesn’t take up the battle, others would also find it proper and to be expected as a matter of course.”

“Impossible.” Xu Ling’er immediately shook her head and continued, “Although that guy appears gentle from his looks, he’s actually very conceited. The Battle Notice has already been sent out. Even if he knows that he will lose, he’d still probably fight.”

“Then, there’s no way.” Su Xuan shook her head and continued again. “Right now, we can only wait for two days later and look at the situation again.”

Su Ling’er also sighed. Right now, that’s the only thing that they could do. They hope that Mu Chen would be able to resist this blow. Even if he lost to Li Xuantong, it’s not anything embarrassing.

At the same time, at other places in the academy, those that could be considered as influential figures in the academy were also startled by this Battle Notice. Thereafter, they were surprised. It’s been a while since Li

Xuantong fought and this time, he's actually challenging a freshman?

That's interesting. Two days later, they can go and have a look to treat it as some fun.

...

"That's too much. Li Xuantong is simply bullying! Big Brother Mu, don't be bothered about him. We'll not accept this Battle Notice!"

The freshmen area was also boiling. In that plaza, Zhou Ling and the rest had their faces filled with rage. In their hands, there's a red-coloured Battle Notice.

"Right, Big Brother Mu, even if we don't accept this Battle Notice, no one will say that we're weak!" someone echoed.

Among everyone, Mu Chen was also looking at the Battle Notice in his hands. Through his expression, he didn't find it unexpected. Evidently, he had already expected that the actions that Li Xuantong spoke of should be acted upon, personally by himself.

Beside Mu Chen, Luo Li's delicate charming face slightly had an ice-cold expression. Shortly after, she turned around and was about to look for Li Xuantong, but her jade-like arm was grabbed by Mu Chen.

"Don't get involved in this matter, let me handle it." Mu Chen looked at Luo Li. Although his voice was light, it had unquestionable earnest and firmness.

Luo Li nibbled on her lips. Li Xuantong wasn't Yang Hong and, in this battle, there wasn't any fairness that can be said. However, when she looked at Mu Chen's eyes and saw the seriousness, Luo Li understood that it's impossible to change Mu Chen's answer and had to endure this matter.

"After this matter, I'll go look for him." Luo Li said. She respected Mu Chen, but at the same time, she had her own forbidden lamella1. Li Xuantong interfered with her matter again and again, this had also touched her bottom line. Although she understood that perhaps, he didn't have any bad intentions.

Mu Chen helplessly smiled, but said nothing. He turned his head towards Zhou Ling, who was showing nervousness on his face. He knows that the countless people in the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy were probably looking towards them, waiting for his reply.

Mu Chen wedged that blood-red Battle Notice between his fingers. Black flame rose between and the Battle Notice was thoroughly ignited. At the same time, his light voice slowly resounded as the black flames grew.

“Zhou Ling, spread the news. Regarding this Battle Notice, I’ll accept it.”

Chapter 215: Spirit Battle Stage

The matter with Li Xuantong's Battle Notice spread throughout the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Just when everyone was waiting for Mu Chen's reply, the news finally came out from the freshmen area.

And this news caused them to be shocked again.

Mu Chen had actually accepted the battle!

Hearing this reply, countless students were secretly smacking their tongues inwardly in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. What great courage from Mu Chen, to daringly accept the battle. They didn't know if he's courageous or reckless.

Towards Mu Chen's reply, there were some that sneered and mocked, whereas there were some that shook their heads and sighed. There were also people being a little curious. To be able to become the number one among the freshmen, Mu Chen shouldn't be a fool. Since he dared to accept the battle, then he should have some methods up his sleeves. Except, they didn't know if those methods would be able to compete against Li Xuantong.

But, no matter what, this matter had undoubtedly become Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's sensational major event. Countless students that were originally in the Spirit Convergence Array and Lightning Territory dropped their cultivation and came out upon hearing this matter, preparing to witness the most attractive sparing battle in this half year in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

When everyone raised their heads in hope, two days quickly passed. In these two days, Mu Chen had been in the small building, cultivating. Even those of the Goddess Luo Association rarely saw him. Clearly, he ought to be making preparation for the upcoming battle that startled countless students in Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Although Zhou Ling and the rest were worried, they didn't go and bother Mu Chen. Since he had already accepted the battle, there's no longer any

chance to back out. This battle was already unavoidable.

That being the case, they can only allow Mu Chen to make more preparations.

All of them really didn't wish for Mu Chen to beat Li Xuantong, as this matter was too absurd. Li Xuantong wasn't Yang Hong, as he had cultivated in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy for many years. He had long broken through into Heavenly Transformation Stage and Heavenly Fusion Stage students like them, weren't on the same level as him. It's true that Mu Chen had many methods up his sleeves, but the gap between the two wasn't so easily complemented.

And now, everything would be left to the battle that startled the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy and made everyone focus their attention.

In the small building at the center of the freshman area, Mu Chen quietly sat at the top of the building. He raised his head and looked at the endless starry sky with a calm expression. He didn't feel nervous about the approaching battle.

"You still haven't gone to rest?"

A delicate fragrance rushed from his back as Luo Li's soft voice resounded. Mu Chen turned his head over. At this moment, the young girl with her ink-black clothes and long hair that was draped down appeared, with some steam coming from her hair, as she had just finished bathing.. Her exquisite features caused even the moonlight to be inferior.

Mu Chen smiled as he nodded.

Luo Li lightly moved her lotus steps as she got close to Mu Chen and slightly hesitated. She said, "I seem to have brought some trouble for you."

In the course of two days, Mu Chen had been cultivating and his words have decreased by a lot. Luo Li could obviously sense that Li Xuantong had given great pressure to Mu Chen.

Mu Chen frowned as a gentle light of anger flashed across his eyes. He reached out for her soft and delicate waist and pulled her into his

embrace. He raised his hand and heavily smacked her perky butt that was wrap under the black clothes and snorted, “If you say such words again, you’ll receive more smacking.”

Luo Li’s exquisite face instantly flushed red as she gave Mu Chen a shy, yet angry stare.

“In this world, since when is it easy to eat a swan? Not to mention that the one in my embrace is the princess of all swans.”

Mu Chen smiled and placed his forehead onto hers. His voice was serious, “Luo Li, I like you. Therefore, I can crush all of the troubles that was caused by you. I did not decline Li Xuantong’s request for battle, because I know that this is only the first battle. In the future, perhaps more of these will appear. However, I have to tell you that I will crush whatever hinders us from getting together.”

“If I lose such an outstanding wife, where will I go and find another? Furthermore, I still hope to bring you back to Northern Spiritual Realm, letting my father to take a look at his daughter-in-law. I have to let him know that my eyesight is tip-top.”

Hearing Mu Chen’s words, gentleness appeared at the corner of Luo Li’s mouth. But soon after, her face flushed red. She couldn’t endure the shyness within her heart and angrily barked, “Who’s going back with you?”

“At that time, it’ll no longer be your choice.” Mu Chen grinned. His smile felt as though a small rabbit had fallen into the mouth of an ash-grey wolf.

Taking a glance at him, her girlish attitude was exceptionally sweet and charming. It was different from her usually quiet and distant attitude and made Mu Chen dazed from looking at her appearance. Shortly, those black pupils made Luo Li feel an uneasy heat rising to her face.

She lightly twisted her body, but her slim waist was embraced even tighter by Mu Chen. She then saw Mu Chen slightly lower his head and his heated breathing was blowing on her lovely cheeks.

As though she knew what Mu Chen was going to do, her delicate cheeks blushed red. She bit on her red lips and lightly shut her eyes.

Let it be. Give him some encouragement since he'll have to fight tomorrow.

Just when she was thinking, with her heart beating fast, Mu Chen's lips went towards those lukewarm lovely lips. Covering those rouge cherry lips.

Luo Li's body had turned stiff at this moment and after a moment later, only then did she soften up. Her slender jade arm unconsciously hooked around Mu Chen's neck. She slightly raised her head, revealing her swan-like white neck.

They were shining under the moonlight and after a long while later, their lips finally separated.

Mu Chen looked at her bewildering eyes. Causing that charming girl to smack her lips.

"You rogue!" Luo Li sobered up. Thinking of her bold actions earlier on, her face instantly became boiling. She hammered her fist on Mu Chen in humiliation and anger. Circulating her Spiritual Energy, she broke free from Mu Chen's arms and returned back to her room hastily.

Mu Chen looked at that girl's silhouette as he lightly smiled. Shortly after, he breathed a deep mouthful of breath out. His black pupils sparkled as it began to surge. Among them was a surging, blazing fighting spirit.

Li Xuantong, let's battle next!

When the first glimmer of dawn tore through the night sky the next day, it shined onto the vast land of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Astonishing moments broke out in the academy.

Wooooosh! Woosh!

Countless sonic booms resounded in the sky in all directions. They were all heading towards one direction, the Spirit Battle Stage located at the

northwest direction of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

This is the area in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy that's used for sparing. Ordinarily, many students spared here, conducting actual combat to promote their own strength.

And the battle that had been causing a sensation in the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy will be conducted here.

Today, the Spirit Battle Stage appeared especially lively, compared to usual. At the largest stage in the Spirit Battle Stage, a vast crowd was already gathered here. With a glance, it's full of black-coloured heads and the end could not be seen.

In the countless sea of people, it was a vast stage that was approximately several thousand feet in range. It was sufficient to accommodate a brilliant and fiery battle.

"This battle could be the most attracting battle in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy this year." Someone looked at the surrounding mass of people and couldn't refrain from making the comment.

"That, look over there. Didn't you see Su Xuan, Rank 3 of the Heavenly Ranking, as well as Rank 4's He Yao and Rank 5's Xu Huang? Probably only Li Xuantong is capable of making them show themselves."

"Hehe. You seem to have forgotten the most monstrous one in our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?" Weird laughter sounded.

"You're talking about Shen Cangsheng? People like him is too heaven-defying. I believe that his position is unshakable, not even Li Xuantong could do it."

"I wonder how long it would take for me to reach that height." Some people sighed. Those that were able to enter into Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy all possessed decent talents. However, even they felt helpless admiration towards that name.

Many whispers came from behind. Su Ling'er was seated beside Su Xuan, as they sat at the front. A pair of beautiful sisters were extremely attractive to the eyes. One of them being lovable and charming, while the

other was sweet-tempered, being a great feast to the eyes of others.

Not far from them, was a green-haired youth with devil-like looks. The smile on his face looked a little devilish, but that also attracted the peek of many girls.

This person was He Yao, Rank 4 of the Heavenly Ranking. In the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, this person possessed fame not any weaker to Li Xuantong.

Not far away, at the right side of his direction, was Xu Huang. At the current moment, Xu Huang was resting with his eyes shut. Xu Qingqing sat beside him with a face of excitement. She already couldn't wait to see the look of Mu Chen's suffering.

Indeed, as said by those at the back. This battle had indeed attracted a huge line-up and was certainly extremely grand.

Xiuuuu!

Just when the surroundings of the stage were bustling, a ray of light shot towards this direction from far away. He then appeared at the center of the battle stage with both of his hands at his back, having a tranquil look on his face.

"Li Xuantong is here!"

Looking at that appearing figure, the surroundings of the stage rumbled and shortly after, their eyes were blazing. One of the protagonists have finally appeared.

Su Xuan, He Yao, as well as Xu Huang, all had their gazes on Li Xuantong. Over here, the only thing that could attract their interest would probably be Li Xuantong.

As Li Xuantong appeared, he paid no attention to the surrounding crowd as his eyes were shut, patiently waiting.

The bustling crowd continued.

When the sunlight began to turn intense, a sonic boom finally resounded in the sky far away from the Spirit Battle Stage. Countless

figures flew over. Several of them landed at the seat of the stage, whereas one landed in the stage under the looks of countless eyes.

As a slender youth landed in the stage, he raised his head to look at the person in front of him. The youth cupped his hands and smiled. His moderate, yet fearless, voice resounded.

“Senior Brother Li Xuantong, Mu Chen is here to face you in battle!”

When these words landed, the atmosphere in the surrounding stage abruptly turned boiling.

Chapter 216: Pact of Three Moves

The atmosphere around the vast stage surged. Countless curious eyes looked to the tall, thin youth standing on that stage. This youth had an outstanding appearance. He wore a light smile on his face, with a fearless demeanor that made many secretly nod to themselves. Regardless of the outcome, at least Mu Chen dared to accept the battle. Many would approve of him simply for such courage.

"Gege1, this Junior Brother is rather handsome."

"It'd be better if he was stronger, instead." A few pretty girls were gathered, laughing with amorous eyes on that youth.

"So, this is the number one of the newcomer batch? Mu Chen?" Those who were paying attention to Mu Chen's looks were only a small number of the girls, after all. The majority of the crowd were narrowing their eyes as they examined Mu Chen. A Heavenly Transform Stage Initial Phase strength. Even for the newcomers, there's no way he's the best, right? But it looks like he became first, anyways. It looks like Mu Chen has some methods up his sleeve.

Su Ling'er looked over Mu Chen. The latter stood proudly at the center of the stage, fearlessly facing Li Xuantong. Her charming eyes lit up and her tiny mouth quirked as she said, "This fellow really came."

"So he's Mu Chen?" Su Xuan was also examining Mu Chen with some curiosity. Then, she nodded, "He's got a pretty good demeanor, to remain so calm while facing Li Xuantong. Some old-timers can't even do as much."

"Big Sister, please don't underestimate him. Although his cultivation is only at the Heavenly Transform Stage Initial Phase, he's not weak. Not even a Heavenly Transform Stage Late Phase could gain an advantage over him." Su Ling'er immediately followed.

“Oh? Looks like things are getting more interesting.” Su Xuan lightly smiled and continued, “However, that won’t be enough to confront Li Xuantong. I don’t know how they’re going to spar, but no matter how I look at it, Li Xuantong is still absolute. It’ll be extremely hard for Mu Chen to shake that.”

Su Ling’er also sighed. Of course she knew the truth in Su Xuan’s words, but since things had already progressed this far, things would have to depend on Mu Chen, himself.

Let him last longer.

Even if he lost, no one would ridicule him. After all, the two of them were on entirely different levels. Even if Li Xuantong won, the contest was unfair to begin with.

“So he’s the new transfer that everyone’s been talking about, Mu Chen?” The grey-haired He Yao stared at Mu Chen with a devilish smile on his face, then gave a light laugh. From the looks of him, the boy wasn’t anything special. He Yao didn’t know why Li Xuantong bothered to personally issue the Battle Notice. In the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, you could count on one hand the number of people who could get that kind of treatment.

On the other hand, when Xu Qingqing saw Mu Chen, she stared at him with her teeth tightly ground. Hatred filled her eyes. Pretend all you want! I’ll see how you’re going to pretend after Li Xuantong crushes you!

Xu Huang sat to the side with indifference on his face. His sunken eyes reflected a sharp ray of light as he stared at Mu Chen. Five fingers lightly tapped the stone chair, emitting a sharp and clear rap.

In the areas around the back, Yang Hong, Mu Kui, and Bing Qing were also present. The matter with Li Xuantong and the Battle Notice to Mu Chen had been widely talked about; how could they not know? They also wanted to witness this confrontation.

Yang Hong was obviously here to see Mu Chen left in a sorry state. On the contrary, Mu Kui and Bing Qing wanted to see how far Mu Chen could go, while faced with the genuine influential figure of the Northern

Heavens Spiritual Academy, Li Xuantong. The same Mu Chen who'd made them feel such fear.

Would he be crushed? Or would he create some miracle? They, too, were curious.

All eyes were focused and filled with expectation towards the two figures at the center of the battle stage.

Under the countless watchful expressions, the two at the center of the stage met eyes. The surrounding atmosphere froze.

Li Xuantong still wore calm and tranquil expression as he stared at Mu Chen and said, "Not bad. You didn't reject the Battle Notice. Your courage is still admirable."

"Many thanks to Senior Brother Li Xuantong's praise."

Mu Chen smiled noncommittally. His black pupils, however, didn't have much of a smile in them. Rather, he stared at Li Xuantong with a sharpness in his eyes and slowly said, "How should we spar? Senior Brother Li Xuantong, please say."

Li Xuantong's immediately dropped his indifferent air. "Rest assured, I won't leave a single route for you."

Mu Chen smiled, "Then Senior Brother Li Xuantong can also be rest assured. I've walked quite a lot of death routes and had quite a few experiences. Since I, Mu Chen, have come today, of course I'll accompany you until the end."

Li Xuantong lightly nodded, raised his head, and looked out into the sea of people. His keen sight swept over them and landed somewhere.

Someone like Li Xuantong always attracted attention around here. Many people noticed this action of his. Among the many in the crowd, his attention finally collected on a young girl with a refined complexion and a tranquil air.

“She’s that Luo Li? Rumor has it that Li Xuantong likes her. Seeing it now, it really looks like it’s true.”

“Tsk, tsk. Such an appearance and air, she’s indeed of the best quality. In the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, probably only Su Xuan could compete with her on any level. No wonder the top of the old-timers and that freshman are fighting over her.”

“She’s already caused this at such a young age. What’s it going to be like in the future? Who’s going to let such a beauty go?”

A trace of shock flashed through the eyes that found the girl in black. Afterwards, they only spoke in low voices.

“She’s Luo Li? She’s indeed outstanding.” Su Xuan also turned her head and her eyes flashed with a trace of shock.

“Yeah.” Su Ling’er couldn’t help admitting it, either. She’d fought with Luo Li before and knew that not only was that girl beautiful, she was also amazingly strong. Perhaps she was hiding her strength even deeper than Mu Chen was. Usually, she wouldn’t show her true strength, unless it was some special situation.

As everyone praised her, Xu Qingqing didn’t have such tolerance. She looked at Luo Li with jealous eyes. The latter’s appearance and demeanor made her ashamed of her own inferiority; at the same time, she was angry over the humiliation.

However, Luo Li only disregarded the eyes from every direction. He cold glass-like pupils stared back at Li Xuantong. Her exquisite face had a chilly mask over it.

“It seems that I’ve angered her, yet again.”

Li Xuantong helplessly shrugged and shifted his line of sight back to Mu Chen. “It’s true that there’s quite a gap between us. But I don’t want everyone to say that I’m bullying the weak with an unfair advantage. So I’ll give you a chance in this battle.”

“Three moves.”

Li Xuantong extended three fingers. He stared at Mu Chen and slowly said, “Take three moves from me and it’ll be your win. However, I’ll do my best. Whether you can receive them depends on yourself.”

“So? Do you dare?”

Everyone narrowed their eyes at the stage. This so-called Pact of Three Moves looked simple enough, but was actually filled with extreme danger. If it was an ordinary fight, Li Xuantong might not be too serious about it. But once the pact had been made, he might really take it seriously. As for Mu Chen, it was an opportunity. But it was also an opportunity filled with extreme danger.

In the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, there weren’t many who could handle three moves from Li Xuantong. But each and every one who had accomplished it had possessed a fame far above Mu Chen’s.

Countless eyes were directed towards Mu Chen, waiting for his choice.

Under everyone’s watchful expressions, Mu Chen lightly breathed out a cloud of white mist, then nodded towards Li Xuantong. “I’ve said before, no matter how you wish to conduct our battle, I’ll accept it.”

“Good.”

Li Xuantong silently nodded as he looked at Mu Chen. Then, he used a faint voice so that only his intended audience could hear. “If you can accept my blows, then I’ll tell you something about the Luo God-Clan. I think you’ll be interested to know.”

Mu Chen stared, ten fingers slowly curled into a tight fist. Li Xuantong’s words had undoubtedly struck a chord in his heart. Based on Li Xuantong’s words from earlier, Mu Chen had figured out a few things. In order to come to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, Luo Li had made a promise to the so-called ‘Luo God-Clan’. A promise that was probably wasn’t good for her. And evidently, this Luo God-Clan would not permit Mu Chen and Luo Li to be together. Therefore, Mu Chen had to

gather information on this Luo God-Clan in order to prepare for future troubles.

"Then, I'll have to ask Senior Brother Li Xuantong for advice."

Mu Chen's two hands came together and the Spiritual Energy within his body began to circulate without reserve. An abyss-black Spiritual Energy, burning with black flames, poured out of his body. The surrounding atmosphere seemed twisted because of it.

A Pact of Three Moves.

There wasn't going to be a warning cry. The moment Li Xuangtong moved, it'd be a torrent of thunder and rain. Mu Chen would have to bring out his best.

Mu Chen's black pupils were filled with attentiveness. He turned his head and glanced at the girl in black. She was biting her cherry lips and looked rather nervous.

"I won't lose!"

If he couldn't even deal with this problem, how would he face the even harder obstacles in the future?

Mu Chen suddenly looked up as black flames rose in his eyes. He looked at the indifferent Li Xuantong and growled with a heart-shaking resoluteness that resounded across the battle stage.

"Senior Brother Li Xuantong, make your move!"

Chapter 217: Freshmen's Number 1 vs. Heavenly Ranking's Rank 2

"Senior Brother Li Xuantong, make your move."

When Mu Chen's low growl resounded across the stage, the crowd realised that the atmosphere around the vast battle stage had been frozen. It's as if it'd been stretched to the extreme.

The murmur from around the stage slowly died down. Each pair of eyes was focused on that stage.

Li Xuantong looked at the handsome youth who had unwavering resolution in his eyes. His eyes slightly rippled, but there were no changes to his expression.

He slightly nodded and rolled up his sleeve with his slender hands. Those same slender fingers and fair hands harboured an astonishing lethality.

"I won't go easy."

It looked like Li Xuantong mumbled something to himself. Then, everyone felt the Spiritual Aura between heaven and earth turn chaotic in an instant. A shocking surge of Spiritual Aura roiled and collected towards Li Xuantong.

Fwooooooooo. Whoooosh.

A hurricane formed on the stage from the Spiritual Aura that formed between heaven and earth. It was a gorgeous beam of light that twisted itself around Li Xuantong, painting him like a majestic god.

As long as one is able to step into the realm of the Three Heavens Stage, they'd be able to mobilise the heaven and earth's Spiritual Aura. Evidently, before a Heavenly Transform Stage like Li Xuantong, Mu Chen's Heavenly Fusion Stage wasn't able to gain the slightest advantage and was suppressed instead.

Therefore, compared to Li Xuantong's rainbow-like demeanor, Mu

Chen's side was much more quiet. His blazing black-flame Spiritual Energy shrouded his entire body. Looking from afar, it was like surges of black smoke was soaring up into the skies. The black smoke was also abnormally concentrated. No matter how forceful the external pressure was, it still remained towering and firm.

Countless eyes were nervously staring at both of them. They were all aware that the battle would soon breakout.

Tap.

Li Xuantong took a step out. That subtle sound caused countless eyes to contract. Li Xuantong was seen slowly raising his right hand. That slender, long and white palm was actually becoming transparent, bit by bit.

Ohmmm. Ohmmmm.

The omnipresent Spiritual Aura violently surged and landed on Li Xuantong's gradually transparent palm. In that transparent palm, there were threads of chalcedony-like luster emerging and in the end, filled his entire palm.

That hand had turned into something like transparent jade and in that jade, chalcedony flowed within.

It was extremely beautiful.

Yet, when some seniors saw Li Xuantong's palm turning transparent, their expressions couldn't help changing drastically. Their hearts trembled. Li Xuantong was really not joking around, he's not intending to be lenient at all.

"Spirit Chalcedony Hands Li Xuantong, the skill that made him famous. It seems like he's truly not intending to be lenient at all." Su Xuan softly said, feeling a little astonished, while looking at the scene.

"This fella is bullying." Su Ling'er said in indignation. Li Xuantong's

strength far surpassed Mu Chen's to begin with, and he had actually used his genuine skill, that's simply bullying.

Su Xuan smiled. "Not exactly bullying. In fact, it's also a kind of recognition that Li Xuantong has for Mu Chen. If he's not going to use his true strength against Mu Chen, then that means that he's looking down on him. Men like them are always concerned about the so-called face, acknowledgement and whatsoever. Otherwise, why would there be so many of those 'fights that leads to friendship', as well as the so-called mutual understanding?"

Su Ling'er flung the corner of her mouth to one side. What acknowledgement is that, beating the other party into a sorry state is the so-called acknowledgement? These men are indeed, incomprehensible.

Low voices of alarm spread throughout the surroundings of the Battle Stage. Clearly, many people sensed the formidability in this attack from Li Xuantong. Does he really intend to end this farce in just one move?

No one knows. How will Mu Chen handle this?

Countless gazes shifted over, towards Mu Chen, who was shrouded within a blazing black-flame Spiritual Energy. They could all naturally sense the peculiarity in Mu Chen's Spiritual Energy. However, if he wanted to use this to contend against Li Xuantong, he's still too naïve. Thinking about it, Mu Chen wouldn't be childish to that extend.

Under countless gazes, Mu Chen who had his entire body shroud in surges of Spiritual Energy, had a grave expression appearing on his face. In his black pupils, black flames appeared and, shortly after, it turned cold and sharp.

"Woooosh!"

Up ahead, Li Xuantong was looking at Mu Chen indifferently.

Thereafter, his already transparent slender hands lightly fanned over.

Bang!

As Li Xuantong's palm fanned, vigorous Spiritual Energy was seen instantly exploding forth, like flood. Huge and deep cracks appeared in the earth up ahead.

Xuuuuosh!

A transparent palm that was roughly several dozens of feet flew out, creating a whistling sound. In that palm, it was also filled with chalcedony-like blood vessels that appeared to be extremely profound.

That palm flew with a frightening speed. Anything that was obstructing its path was instantly crushed. It's to the point that even the air was issuing penetrating explosion sounds.

Everyone could see the huge ravine being ripped open on the ground. Furthermore, at the end of the ravine was where Mu Chen was located.

A transparent chalcedony-like palm rapidly expanded before Mu Chen's eyes. That frightening pressure caused Mu Chen's clothes to flutter. A sharp pain sensation came from his skin.

Huuuuu

Mu Chen spat out a mouthful of white smoke. A sharpness was within his eyes as he abruptly took a step forth, clenching his five fingers into a fist as it burned with black-flame Spiritual Energy. It was as though a black sun had appeared within his fist.

An abyss-black Spiritual Energy twisted and a black light seal rapidly flew out.

One, two... four, five.

Five Limitless Death Seals appeared before Mu Chen. Those Limitless

Death Seals were also blazing with black flames. A shocking amount of Spiritual Energy ripples swept out.

Outside the stage, Su Ling'er looked at those five Limitless Death Seals and a smear of concern flashed across her eyes. In the Rank 6 Spirit Convergence Array, Mu Chen had used this move to repel Huo Feng. Although the power wasn't weak, it's still not possible to deal with this move from Li Xuantong!

"Buzzz. Buzzzzz."

Just when Su Ling'er had some worries, a black luster rushed out of Mu Chen's fist again. A berserk of Spiritual Energy ripples violently swept out that could be seen by the naked eye.

An Abyss-black Spiritual Energy rapidly gathered before Mu Chen. Thereafter, everyone could see another black-coloured light seal slowly being formed.

Boom!

The sixth Limitless Death Seal!

The current Mu Chen was actually able to unleash six Limitless Death Seals at the same time!

The Common Tier Spiritual Art that Mu Chen had obtained in the Northern Spiritual Academy had gradually revealed the extraordinariness that belonged to it in Mu Chen's hands!

"Boom!"

When the sixth Limitless Death Seal was formed, Mu Chen also felt the qi and blood within his body boil. The sharpness within his eyes was increasingly more intensely. His five fingers tightly clench and punched a fist out.

Xiuuuu!

As Mu Chen punch his fist out, the six Limitless Death Seal instantly flew out. They were like mysterious black-coloured comets that streaked across the horizon, dragging long light tails behind them. Even some Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase experts were alarmed at the overbearing Spiritual Energy ripples. While ripping the battle stage fearlessly under the various astonished gazes, they flew towards the transparent palm and heavily collided.

Bang!

In that instant of collision, the Battle Stage that was several thousand feet long trembled as if it was in the middle of an earthquake. Everyone could clearly see that the ground which the two forces collided had fierce cracks that were rapidly spreading out like spider-webs.

The two thickest cracks were like earth dragons that were roaring underground and bolting upright. The impact directions were heading for Mu Chen and Li Xuantong's directions.

Li Xuantong looked at the huge crack that was coming towards him. Under that crack concealed an extremely berserking Spiritual Energy.

He stared at that crack and took a step forward. The Spiritual Energy within his body poured out and formed into a Spiritual Energy light wall that was approximately a hundred feet in size before him.

Bang!

The crack violently collided onto that Spiritual Energy light wall. That wall trembled and fluctuated with ripples. Thereafter, the ripples intensified, causing the light wall to scatter. The crack's speed was obstructed and stopped half an inch away from Li Xuantong's feet.

As Li Xuantong stopped the impact, at the opposite side, there was

another even more astonishing Spiritual Energy crack. Under the gaze of many, it struck Mu Chen.

Boom!

Dense smoke burst out. Everyone could see that when that crack, which contained a violent Spiritual Energy, touched Mu Chen's body, he flew out and was sliding across the floor.

Huaaaa.

An alarming voice broke out in the surrounding area. Did he manage to resist it?

Somewhere on the stand, Luo Li was looking at this scene. Her jade-like hands also couldn't help abruptly grabbing onto her black-coloured longsword.

Su Ling'er's hand, which was holding onto Su Xuan's, also clenched tighter. Her other hand covered her mouth with nervousness filling her eyes.

Countless gazes gathered towards the smoke and dust and they were all worried. Did Mu Chen manage to take that move?

Under countless gazes, the smoke slowly dispersed. As the smoke dispersed, the situation there also became clear to everyone's eyes.

On the ground, there was an extremely ferocious crack that was like a huge black dragon. And at the end of the crack, was a figure with one knee on the ground. Both of his hands were thrusted into the ground and dragged a long mark.

That's Mu Chen!

Under the gaze of the entire stage, Mu Chen slowly pulled his hands back with fresh blood dripping down from his fingers. He slowly stood up and raised his head. There was also a trace of blood at the corner of his mouth. He casually wiped it off and looked at Li Xuantong with a light

smile, which was dazzling to the eyes.

“Let’s carry on with the second move.”

Chapter 218: Four Gods Constellation Scripture VS Profound Sky Divine Technique

"He took it!"

All around the stage, the eyes that'd been watching Mu Chen suddenly issued cries of surprise. Many of the expressions boiled over with amazement.

Mu Chen had actually managed to take an attack from Li Xuantong.

From the looks of it, Mu Chen had paid a price for that. But in the end, he was still standing on that stage. He'd successfully taken the first move.

Luo Li's nervous jade-like hand, that'd been clutching her black longsword, silently loosened a little. She couldn't help the heartache she felt as she watched the young man standing upon the stage, as he wiped the blood from the corner of his mouth.

Next to her, Zhou Ling, Ye Qingling, and the others also breathed heavy sighs of relief. Regardless of what anyone said, Mu Chen had taken the first move. So, even if he ended up losing, it'd be a glorious defeat. After all, he'd managed to take a full-on attack from the Heavenly Ranking's number 2, Li Xuantong, even though he was only a freshman. That was already enough to make others exclaim in admiration.

Su Ling'er sat up front, watching the scene with pleasant surprise. Su Xuan, sitting next to her, was also watching the youth, and her expression flashed with amazement. She lightly nodded her head. "His strength isn't bad."

This time around, her words were actually coming from her heart. For someone of her level, Li Xuantong's attack just now wasn't anything she couldn't take. But for a freshman who was only at the Heavenly Fusion stage Initial phase, that was pretty impressive.

"Interesting." He Yao said with a light smile, while nodding.

Xu Huang also watched Mu Chen with eyes that crinkled a little. Xu Qingqing, sitting next to him, was gritting her teeth with a face filled with resentfulness. Was that guy born under the zodiac of the cockroach or something? The fact that he could even block that...! How detestable!

Mu Chen had no time for the differing opinions of the crowd. He shook off the traces of blood from his palm and smiled towards Li Xuantong. “Shall we continue?”

Li Xuantong also stared at Mu Chen and, shortly after, nodded. “Not bad, you didn’t disappoint me.”

“No worries. At the very least, I’ll also give you some surprises.” Mu Chen smiled. His youthful and handsome face was full of offensive signs, which was entirely different from his usual gentle look.

“I’m looking forward to it.”

Li Xuantong lightly nodded and followed, “Spirit Chalcedony Hands, that’s my once famed move that made me famous. However, since it’s ‘once’, it also means that it has been replaced. Now, try my new move that has replaced it.”

Mu Chen deeply inhaled a mouthful of air as the smile on his face slowly turned sharp and grave. The Spiritual Energy within his body had been circulated to its peak. Pitch-black Spiritual Energy that’s being igniting with black flames was looking like black smoke and started to surge out.

That move earlier had actually caused some wounds for him. Although it wasn’t anything serious, the might of Li Xuantong’s next move was definitely more frightening.

The situation wasn’t too good for him. As the Heavenly Ranking’s Rank 2, Li Xuantong’s fame was indeed not in vain. That strength of his should be the strongest that Mu Chen had seen among his generation so far.

Both of Li Xuantong’s eyes slowly closed themselves up and, thereafter, a surge of majestic brilliant rays of Spiritual Energy emerged. His figure slowly floated up in the air, as well.

Wooooooosh! Woooosh!

Spiritual Aura from the heavens and earth started surging like a hurricane. A whistling sound resounded around Li Xuantong, along with some muffled thunder.

Both of Li Xuantong's hands lightly came together and formed mysterious seals. As the seals formed, everyone could abruptly feel the concentration of the surrounding Spiritual Aura. It actually had signs of berserking, but thereafter, poured into Li Xuantong's body from all directions.

As the shocking Spiritual Aura poured in, both of Li Xuantong's hands looked as though they had turned illusionary and fuzzy.

"This is..."

"Profound Sky Divine Technique." Su Xuan, He Yao and Xu Huang all said together with their eyes concentrated.

"Profound Sky Divine Technique?"

Hearing these four words, Su Ling'er's face instantly changed drastically. She naturally knew that the tyrannical Profound Sky Divine Technique that Li Xuantong had practiced in was no longer in the category of ordinary Spiritual Arts, but Deity Tier. Its might was even more frighteningly powerful.

Although others didn't have discerning judgements like Su Xuan, through the frightening and berserking Spiritual Energy that they felt, their faces all turned grave.

On the stage, Mu Chen raised his head and looked at Li Xuantong's illusionary and fuzzy hands. The faint frightening ripples that came from him caused Mu Chen to felt immense danger.

Mu Chen inhaled a mouthful of air as he suppressed his pounding heart. Both of his hands slowly came together as pitch-black Spiritual Energy frantically gathered into his palms. Shortly after, both of his hands abruptly changed, as well. Cryptic and primordial seals were skillfully being formed from his fingertips, one after another.

As Mu Chen's seals changed irregularly, the sky behind him slowly turned dark. Thereafter, light started to appear, like stars.

These changes immediately attracted the attention of everyone. Countless people directed their gazes over in astonishment. Seeing the stellar lights behind Mu Chen, their hearts trembled.

From the stellar lights, they felt astonishing Spiritual Energy ripples.

This Mu Chen truly does have some methods up his sleeves, as well!

"Those seals that Mu Chen has formed...!" Su Xuan shockingly looked at the primordial seals formed in Mu Chen's hands and continued with a soft tone, "It's actually a Deity Tier Spiritual Art."

"Mu Chen also knows a Deity Tier Spiritual Art?" Su Ling'er said in astonishment. Just how much does this fella have hidden?

"Yeah, those that are ranked within the top five of the freshmen all possess the qualifications to enter the Spiritual Arts Hall and choose a Spiritual Art of their own liking. If opportunity is sufficient, they would even get the chance to obtain a Deity Tier Spiritual Art. However, the Deity Tier Spiritual Arts that the majority of people have obtained are all Quasi-Deity Tier Spiritual Arts. I think that Mu Chen has obtained his there." Su Xuan said as she nodded.

"However, even if he has also trained a Deity Tier Spiritual Art, Li Xuantong's Profound Sky Divine Technique is a Deity Tier Low Rank. Furthermore, his base strength has far surpassed his. With Deity Tier against Deity Tier, he still wouldn't be able to gain any advantage."

Su Ling'er sighed. Indeed, even if Mu Chen possessed a Deity Tier Spiritual Art, he still wouldn't be able to cross that distance. Furthermore, Li Xuantong had been practicing with a genuine Deity Tier Low Rank. In terms of ranking, it's a level higher than the Quasi-Deity Tier.

Mu Chen was very outstanding with many cards up his sleeves. However, since Li Xuantong was able to become the Rank 2 of the Heavenly Ranking, how would he be ordinary? These fellows were all talented figures.

Up in the sky, Li Xuantong was emitting a light luster. His fuzzy hands rapidly changed. The Spiritual Aura that filled the sky surged forth and poured into both of Li Xuantong's hands. As the Spiritual Energy became concentrated to the peak, both of his hands gradually calmed down. The light luster faded away and his hands were restored back to their original colour. From looking at them, they seemed to be only an ordinary pair of hands.

However, those with the strength to see, like Su Xuan, could sense the frightening lethality contained in his pair of hands.

Li Xuantong's eyes indifferently looked below. Looking at the stars forming behind Mu Chen, a little ripple was made within his eyes, but soon disappeared.

Thereafter, under everyone's gaze, he gradually extend a slender finger and lightly tapped the air.

"Profound Sky Divine Technique, One Profound Finger."

When Li Xuantong's finger tapped down, the empty space was suddenly filled with endless ripples. Those ripples rapidly fluctuated and the entire sky looked as though it had been turned into an enormous mirror with ripples in it.

Boom!

That mirror suddenly distorted as tens of thousands of brilliant rays engulfed it. Soon after, everyone shockingly saw a huge crystallised finger of few hundred feet. It actually came out from the mirror and, like a sky-high pillar, started pressing towards Mu Chen, who was directly below it!

The crystal finger hadn't land, yet a huge crater was already forming on the battle stage as cracks were rapidly spreading out.

Everyone inhaled a mouthful of cold air. That one finger was actually so frightening!

The ground was shaking, but Mu Chen's figure wasn't moving the slightest bit. After raising his head to look at the approaching huge crystal finger, his ever-changing seals abruptly solidified.

ROOOOOOOOOOOOAR!

Endless killing aura poured forth from his black pupils as he roared into the sky. His roar sounded like tiger's as it shook the heavens and earth.

Torrent-like killing aura swept out as the sky became instantly rendered into an intense killing battlefield.

Mu Chen's pitch-black pupils were turning scarlet as the black-coloured Spiritual Energy frantically rush towards the stellar sky behind him. As the Spiritual Energy boiled, a large white tiger with the size of several hundred feet rapidly formed.

The white tiger stood on the stars as it roared towards the sky. Its roar shook the starry skies as torrential killing aura turned both heaven and earth a dull gray colour.

"Four Gods Constellation Scripture, Divine Seal of the White Tiger!"

A deep and low tiger-like roar also resounded in Mu Chen's heart. Soon after, his seals changed and the White Tiger that was standing on the stars abruptly pounced. The White Tiger lunged as though it was striding into the limits of space-time and appeared on the sky.

The White Tiger roared towards the sky as the Spiritual Energy that filled the sky turned frantic and berzerk. Thereafter, under countless gazes, it directly went head-on with torrential killing aura, descending towards the huge finger and heavily collided with it!

BOOOOOOM!

In the instant it collided, it was as if the heavens and earth had gone silence. Everyone was overwhelmed with shock as they looked at this scene. Before they could recover from the shock, that frightening Spiritual Energy impact rushed over like a hurricane.

Bang! Bang!

However, when that hurricane was about to spread to the viewing stands, a light luster suddenly appeared around the surroundings of the battle stage. The light luster shrouded the battle stage within, it was the

protective measures of the Spirit Battle Stage.

Boom! Booooom!

That fearsome impact heavily hit one of the Spiritual Energy light barriers and made urgent ripples. After a very long time, it gradually dissipated.

That overwhelming impact gradually dispersed.

Everyone's gazes immediately redirected themselves towards the middle of the battle stage. Thereafter, they couldn't help inhaling a mouthful of cold air as their eyes became filled with shock.

Chapter 219: My Turn to Attack

Countless pairs of eyes looked upon the battle stage spiderwebbed with ravines. The massive cracks were sinister mouths that spreading through the stage.

That impact had nearly destroyed the stage.

There were numerous exclamations of astonishment, after which all eyes returned to the stage. As the smoke and dust dispersed, the only even ground that was left was revealed. As of this moment, there was a black-light pagoda roughly a few dozen feet in height.

That black-light pagoda quietly stood there like a towering figure on the battle stage, but Mu Chen's silhouette could not be seen.

Upon seeing this, everyone questioned. Where's Mu Chen?

Ohmm Ohmmmmm.

While they were confused, the black-light pagoda flickered with a dark light, then rapidly shrank. A slender figure appeared with a flash.

It was Mu Chen.

However, his face was pale. He extended his hand and the black-light pagoda landed on his open palm where its light dulled before it disappeared entirely.

Cough!

He covered his mouth as he coughed. Fresh blood dripped from his palm. Half of Li Xuantong's frightening attack had been cancelled out by the Divine Seal of the White Tiger. Even with the protection from the Nine-layered Pagoda, his five viscera and six bowels had still suffered quite a jolt. So much that his blood was even showing signs of flowing backwards. But fortunately, he was able to suppress those feelings.

"What a formidable Profound Sky Divine Technique."

Mu Chen wiped the traces of blood from his mouth. The redness of his lips was shocking, even to the eye. He slowly raised his head, smiled lightly

at the sky, and said:

"That technique that you've practiced is even more formidable." Li Xuantong scrutinized Mu Chen. His usually indifferent expression finally turned grave. The technique that Mu Chen had executed just now was extremely powerful. That killing aura had even frozen his blood. But fortunately, with his vigorous Spiritual Energy, he'd endured it.

Li Xuantong understood that if Mu Chen had been on par with him, then that attack wouldn't have won him the slightest advantage.

"You've taken the second move." Li Xuantong said slowly. His pitch fluctuated slightly. He clearly hadn't expected Mu Chen to come this far.

"He took it again!"

Li Xuantong certainly wasn't the only one. Countless agreements sounded from around the battle stage, then returned attention to the slender, pale-faced youth with respect in their eyes.

"What a formidable Junior Brother."

Even some of the beautiful girls exclaimed in surprise. He was able to force Li Xuantong of the Heavenly Ranking's Rank 2 to use his Profound Sky Divine Technique. And even then, he stayed upright on that stage. Even though he'd suffered some injuries, he never showed the slightest trace of fear. Others found it hard not to be shocked by such discipline.

"Big Brother Mu Chen, f*ck yeah!" Zhou Ling firmly pumped his fist as he flushed red from the excitement. His vulgar language caused Ye Qingling, who was sitting beside him, to glare at him in anger. Only then, did he cover his mouth in embarrassment.

"Formidable!"

In the front seats, Su Xuan focused on the slender figure as she softly made a comment. "Give him two more years, or maybe even less. There will definitely be a place for him in the Heavenly Ranking's top 3. Who knows, he might even be able to challenge Shen Cangsheng's Overlord position."

Su Ling'er was stunned for a moment as her eyes filled with amazement. She clearly hadn't expected her sweet-tempered, yet prideful sister, to give Mu Chen such a high evaluation.

In all these years at the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, no one had ever been able to shake Shen Cangsheng position as Overlord. There were many people who had their eye on it, but no one had ever succeeded.

Su Ling'er approached her sister and chuckled. "Hehe, Big Sister, I think Mu Chen is quite strong. Aren't you lacking one person in your mission? Perhaps you can consider him."

Su Xuan unhappily stared back at her and said, "That mission of mine must be as delicious as a steamed bun. He Yao has also been drooling over it for a long time and I didn't consent to it. True, Mu Chen isn't bad, but he can't be better than He Yao, right?"

"I thought you weren't fond of He Yao? You kept saying that his scheming was too deep, like a smiling tiger1." Su Ling'er said in a low voice.

Su Xuan softly knocked Su Ling'er on the head, but she didn't give a clear-cut answer, "Let's see. If Mu Chen can take three moves from Li Xuantong, I may consider it."

While they were talking, He Yao sat a short distance away, staring at the battle stage with some concentration. He actually seemed rather serious, compared to his usual absent-mindedness. This sparring match had truly aroused his interest.

Xu Qingqing sat next to Xu Huang, also blankly staring at the stage. The corner of her mouth twitched, but no mockery came out. She knew that no matter how arrogant she acted, Mu Chen's performance had truly made many people gasp in surprise.

Mu Chen paid no attention to the commotion around the stage. He only held his mouth and coughed, and circulated the Great Pagoda Art to pacify the rampaging blood flow.

He looked up and smiled at Li Xuantong. "There's still one more move,

right?”

Li Xuantong slightly nodded his head, then went silent for a brief moment before speaking. “You’re already injured. I’m afraid you won’t be able to handle the third move in your current situation.”

Mu Chen smiled at Li Xuantong, “Why don’t we change things for the third move, then?”

“What?” Li Xuantong was briefly taken aback by Mu Chen’s suggestion.

Mu Chen extended his slender, blood-stained hands and stared at them for a brief moment. “Why don’t I take the initiative for the third move?”

Silence…

When Mu Chen spoke, the uproar around the stage instantly turned into dead silence. Many twisted their necks to stare at that pale, yet smiling youth, wondering if they’d heard him wrong.

“He said he’d take the initiative to attack first?”

Someone muttered and exchanged looks with the person next to them. They felt as though the world was suddenly becoming incomprehensible. Faced with an opponent like Li Xuantong, Mu Chen actually dared to speak such words?

“He must be joking.” Someone dryly laughed. But shortly after, he realised that the joke wasn’t funny at all. They could only shake their head with a bitter smile. This battle was really impossible to predict.

“What’s Mu Chen trying to do?” Su Ling’er muttered, blankly staring at Mu Chen.

Su Xuan, however, had a grave expression on her face. She looked at Mu Chen with a look of surprise. Mu Chen clearly wasn’t a fool. But even in a normal battle, most people wouldn’t take the initiative to attack. The receiver had the advantage because they always had the time counter. The difference between Mu Chen and Li Xuantong was huge; Mu Chen had only survived because he’d been on the receiving end. The moment he decided to take the initiative, he’d be putting himself at a disadvantage.

Unless he was certain his attack would be a real threat to Li Xuantong.

Could he possibly reach that place?

He Yao and Xu Huang had also been taken by surprise. They couldn't help narrowing their eyes as they stared at Mu Chen on the stage. They laced their fingers and sat up.

"That guy is simply looking for death!"

Xu Qingqing ground her teeth with a lunatic expression as she glared at Mu Chen. Does he think he'd soared into the sky after barely managing to take two moves from Li Xuantong?

She turned to Xu Huang, but didn't see a single mock or sneer on her brother's face. One the contrary, she saw bewilderment. That made her heart jump. The words that she was about say suddenly became stuck in her throat.

"You'll take the initiative to attack?"

In the sky, Li Xuantong stared at Mu Chen with a sharp gaze. It was such a grave expression that even his voice dropped and couldn't return to its previous calm. "Are you sure?"

Mu Chen lightly nodded his head.

"Alright!"

Li Xuantong's expression was as sharp as the bladed edge of a sword. His figure slowly descended. "I truly hope you can surprise me today. The man who's caught Luo Li's eyes must have something to distinguish him from the masses."

"Thanks."

Mu Chen nodded, then turned around to look at the black-dressed girl that was also looking at him, too. He lightly smiled. That gentle smile paired with his handsome face caused many red faces in the female population. They realised that this Junior Brother of theirs possessed charm no less than Li Xuantong.

Luo Li also saw Mu Chen's gaze and gentle smile, which burrowed into

the deepest parts of her heart. Her face, which had always been cold, slowly turned gentle. The corner of her cherry lips turned into a smile.

Her smile was breathtaking, making many watching eyes green with envy.

Mu Chen looked away as his pitch-black Spiritual Energy slowly gushed out of his body. His body floated up and with a move of his mind, the energy that he and Nine Nether Bird shared swept out.

Boom!

An astonishing amount of Spiritual Energy radiated from him, torrenting out as black flames filling half the horizon.

As Mu Chen raised his Spiritual Energy, he slowly closed his eyes. His heart was as calm as glassy pond as he slowly submerged himself into the profound intent of the Heart Array State. Even though his eyes were shut, he could still see the outside world with such clarity that he could even hear the heartbeats of those around the stage.

The Spiritual Energy in the heavens and earth also became exceptionally susceptible.

Watched by countless shocked expressions, Mu Chen slowly put his hands together. Then, his fingers moved, forming Spiritual Seals all around him.

“Spiritual Seals?!”

The eyes on those Spiritual Seals contracted. Someone finally understood Mu Chen’s intentions. “He’s trying to set up a Spiritual Array!”

However, a Rank 3 Spiritual Array was probably useless against Li Xuantong!

Several Spiritual Seals were suspended around Mu Chen, one after the other. Everyone’s expressions also turned from their initially puzzled looks to shock. So much so that even Su Xuan and those that were seated at the front had grave expressions on their faces.

That’s because the number of Spiritual Seals that was revolving around

Mu Chen had already reached the frightening quantity of a hundred!

This was already in the category of a Rank 4 Spiritual Array!

Mu Chen's eyes slowly opened. With a flick of his fingers, everyone watched the hundred Spiritual Seals suddenly rush forth, blending into the sky.

The heavens and earth turned dull gray and frightening Spiritual Energy ripples fluctuated. Everyone could see a frightening Spiritual Array forming above Mu Chen.

Chapter 220: Reappearance of the Demonic Lotus

Rumble!

Heavens and earth darkened as the Spiritual Aura gathered. Everyone around stage looked up with shock in their eyes.

Wind and clouds gathered. Between them, a large light array gradually formed, one with an extremely complicated outline, like a masterpiece of nature.

“He can actually set up a Spiritual Array of such a level?!”

Many stared blankly at the complicated light array as their eyes filled with wonder. This Array clearly surpassed a Rank 3 Spiritual Array. Could Mu Chen be a Rank 4 Spiritual Array Master?

Such Spiritual Array Masters were few in number, even amongst all of the students at the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Could this Mu Chen really be at that level?

“It’s the Heart Array State!”

Su Xuan’s eyes were dignified. She stared at the figure in the sky as her eyes glowed. “He’s actually controlling the Heart Array State. Furthermore, it looks like this isn’t the Initial Level of the Heart Array State!”

Su Ling’er was overwhelmed with shock. She understood how important the Heart Array State was for Spiritual Array Masters. Generally speaking, only Rank 3 Spiritual Array Masters could comprehend this kind of ‘Controlling everything in his hands and link to his heart’ Heart Array State. Furthermore, the Heart Array State was further divided into three different levels. In the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, those who practiced in the way of Spiritual Arrays and are able to comprehend the Heart Array State were extremely few in number. The amount of people who could comprehend the Middle or High Level Heart Array State wouldn’t exceed the number of fingers on a single hand!

“Just how many cards does this guy have hidden up his sleeve?” Su Ling’er muttered. This gentle-looking youth was like a bottomless pit, unfathomable.

“Looks like there’s finally some fun this time.”

Su Xuan lightly smiled. Even Li Xuantong should get a headache from a Spiritual Array of this level. Mu Chen really had gone all out. However, that boy truly was extraordinary, to be able to force Li Xuantong to such a position, even though he only had an Initial Phase Heavenly Fusion Stage cultivation.

He Yao and Xu Huang wore no expressions on their faces. They’d originally regarded Mu Chen with little significance. They’d only come here to see Li Xuantong. They never thought that this insignificant character would make them feel such danger.

Furthermore, they couldn’t forget that Mu Chen was still a freshman. If he was given a year to train in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, wouldn’t his achievements surpass theirs?

This guy couldn’t be underestimated.

The entire arena was shaking due to the appearance of the enormous array in the sky. Li Xuantong, himself, was also staring upwards. His eyes reflected a dark and unclear gleam.

He said nothing, which made it difficult to guess his thoughts. His hands slipped out of his sleeves as a frightening amount of Spiritual Energy ripples fluctuated around him.

The indifference that he’d worn at the start of the match was clearly gone. Now, Mu Chen had far surpassed his expectations.

“Come, let me take a look at your trump card.” He lightly muttered inwardly. His expression, however, became sharper and sharper, as though he wanted to shoot through the air and straight through Mu Chen’s body.

Huuuuuu.

Under Li Xuantong’s sharp blade-like gaze, Mu Chen breathed out a

sigh. His face turned even paler and his hand seals abruptly changed.

Boom!

Up in the sky, the huge light array exploded with a loud thundering sound. Rays of light filled the sky, then gathered into a colossal black lotus a few hundred feet in diameter.

The black lotus was suspended in the air, slowly revolving. As it turned, the space around it seemed twisted.

This Spiritual Array was the Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array, of course. Back when Mu Chen was in the Northern Spiritual Realm, he had relied on this array to kill Liu Jingshan. But back then, he was only at the Spiritual Rotation Stage. It was fundamentally difficult for Mu Chen to bring the array to its full potential. Even after borrowing the power of the Nine Nether Bird, he was barely able to execute it. But now that he'd grown stronger, he could comprehend some of the array's profound intent.

Back then, he lacked foresight and treated the Butchering Demonic Lotus as only a Rank 3 Spiritual Array. It was only after he became a Rank 3 Spiritual Array Master did he realize how shallow his understandings were towards this array.

He'd learned from that black scroll that his current 'Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array' was only a small portion of the array's true form. One day, when Mu Chen became strong enough and he learned to fully unleash this Spiritual Array, its might would definitely be world-shaking.

But now, this portion of the 'Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array' was already his limit.

Mu Chen's face turned even whiter as weakness washed over his body. This time, he did not rely on the Nine Nether Bird's strength, but rather his own, to lay out the 'Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array'.

"Go."

He extended his palm and lightly tossed it. The enormous black lotus shook as it shot forth with a black luster. As it flew out, the closed lotus

flower slowly bloomed.

The Spiritual Energy ripples between the heavens and earth became even more violent.

Ohmmm. Ohmm.

The black lotus reached full maturity. The heart of the lotus slowly directed itself towards Li Xuantong, who was right underneath it. A strange black liquid dripped from the lotus petals, gathering towards the heart of the lotus.

A black luster gathered towards the heart of the lotus. A surge of scalp-tingling Spiritual Energy violently rippled out.

Shhiiiiiinnnggggg!

When the dark glow reached its peak, the black lotus jolted. After that, the crowd watch a ray of black light nearly penetrate through the heavens and pierce the earth, as if the black liquid had formed a black dragon that tore through the sky with its fangs and claws!

Boom! Boom!

The stage, which was already filled with ravines, finally couldn't endure any longer and started to crumble down in layers. Li Xuantong, however, made no movements. He raised his head towards the black light that penetrated the sky. His slender hands came together as his deep and low voice resounded.

"Profound Sky Divine Technique, Profound Sky Compass!"

Ohmmmm!

A brilliant green light filled the area in front of Li Xuantong. As the light gathered, it turned into a huge compass made of green light, roughly a hundred feet in diameter. As the compass materialized, even the air seemed to become frozen.

"Li Xuantong's strongest defence... the Profound Sky Compass..." Su Xuan, He Yao, Xu Huang and the rest all watched that green compass with great focus. To think Li Xuantong had actually been forced to take such

measures.

Once the green compass fully formed under the watchful eyes of the crowd, it flew out and collided with the black light falling from the sky!

Boom!

In the instant of collision, brilliant rays of light exploded like fireworks. They outshone any other source of light that one could possibly imagine, forcing everyone to shut their eyes. Even after that, they could all feel a stinging pain from behind their eyelids.

Boom!

The brilliant rays of light shot forth, followed by a storm of Spiritual Energy that changed the expressions on Su Xuan and everyone else's faces. As if they had been materialized, wreaking havoc. The shockwaves instantly collapsed the battle stage, even though it was several thousand feet wide. The Spiritual Energy barrier surrounding the stage was instantly torn apart, creaking as it went. The sheer destructive force of the impact forced a fear into everyone's hearts. Several even jumped at the collision. Even a Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase would be torn to shreds by such an impact.

The Spiritual Energy tornado on the stage wreaked havoc for several minutes, before it slowly started to disperse.

As the Spiritual Energy tornado dissipated, everyone directed their eyes back to the stage.

The stage itself was already gone, only leaving several huge craters. Two figures towered over them, in the sky.

Mu Chen's face had paled again as the Spiritual Energy ripples around him weakened even further. However, his black pupils were still eye-catchingly bright. He looked at Li Xuantong with a smile. Even his voice had become a little hoarse. "Senior Brother Li Xuantong, I suppose we can say that I've taken the third move, is that right?"

Li Xuantong looked to his right hand with a blank expression, then slowly opened his palm towards Mu Chen. There was a streak of scarlet-

red blood. He'd suffered some injuries.

People began whispering around the stage with shock in their hearts. Mu Chen had actually managed to injure Li Xuantong.

"You... you're pretty good." Li Xuantong said as he sighed, glancing at the pale, yet bright-eyed youth.

"You won the pact of three moves. Luo Li's judgement is as good as ever."

Li Xuantong lightly smiled. With his personality, it was beneath his dignity to admit the fact. But the answer was already obvious, especially with so many people looking on.

Mu Chen's performance today was more than enough to shake the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

"I no longer have any strength left. If this had been a real fight, I definitely would've lost." Mu Chen announced in a light voice. One could say that he'd already exhausted his strength. He'd already spent all his cards to withstand Li Xuantong's three moves.

"That's why we had those rules. If the two of us had been on the same level, then perhaps I would've been the one to lose." Li Xuantong smiled, then cupped his hands towards the crowd as he continued, "In this battle, I, Li Xuantong, have lost."

His voice echoed over the crowd. Everyone opened their mouths with complicated expressions written all over their faces. This outcome had clearly been far beyond their expectations.

Who could've expected a mere Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase to win against Li Xuantong?

"Marvelous!"

Su Xuan lightly smiled as she made a pertinent comment, then began clapping her slender jade-like hands. The crisp sound echoed throughout the arena.

Clap! Clap!

The sounds of one person clapping turned into a thunderous roar, until it rumbled over the Spirit Battle Stage with an earth-shattering intensity. One could even hear it outside the arena.

Even the most narrow-minded person would sigh in admiration at the outcome of this battle.

Somewhere among the spectator seats, Yang Hong's face was ashen. He clenched his fist until he was shaking. The fears buried deep in his heart slowly began to spread. The current Mu Chen had already surpassed him. He felt powerless.

He looked at the youth's pale face and felt helpless. Maybe only Ji Xuan could suppress him.

Mu Kui and Bing Qing also sighed, but there was also admiration in those sighs. Even Mu Kui, who was fond of fighting, had no intentions of fighting Mu Chen. He knew from watching those three moves that he wouldn't be able to take even one of them.

"How can this be?" Xu Qingqing's face changed irregularly. She slouched back with a face paler than before. Fear rose in her eyes.

Mu Chen, who was still up in the sky, only felt exhaustion at hearing the thundering applause. He lightly trembled, then blacked out and fell from the sky.

Swoosh!

A beautiful woman's image flashed through the spectator zone. With a move of her slender waist, she reached out her jade arms and wrapped them around Mu Chen's waist. She wore a black dress. It was Luo Li.

She hugged Mu Chen and peered into his handsome, yet pale face. A surge of heartache overwhelmed her. She coldly glared at Li Xuantong with glass-like pupils. "I'll settle this with you later."

Li Xuantong bitterly smiled and shrugged.

However, Luo Li was done paying attention to him. She tightly held Mu Chen as she turned into a streak of light. Under numerous pairs of

surprised eyes, she flashed out of the Spirit Battle Stage arena and flew away.

Chapter 221: The Luoshen Clan

The curtains closed on the fierce battle that took place at the Battle Spirit Stage, leaving many surprised expressions in the crowd. The spectators studied the tattered remains of the battle stage and couldn't help clicking their tongues. They understood that, from this day onwards, the freshman known as Mu Chen would be renowned throughout the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Even though he only had a Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase cultivation, he'd endured two moves from Li Xuantong. Then he'd swapped to offense for the last move, and even then he'd been able to wound Li Xuantong.

Such an accomplishment would make even the seniors exclaim in admiration. A freshman was actually able to do all that! Regardless of whether it was his courage or his methods, they felt admiration towards Mu Chen's qualities.

This didn't mean that Mu Chen was strong enough to take down Li Xuantong, but everyone knew that if he was given another year to train, it might not be impossible.

Within a year, his name would probably appear in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's top 3 Heavenly Ranking.

The battle was finally over. However, everyone understood that the ripples caused by this battle would influence the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy for a long time. Mu Chen's fame in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy skyrocketed.

He was well-known before, but this pushed his name to much greater heights. Even though Mu Chen had given an outstanding performance at the Freshmen's Competition and attracted the attention of a few seniors, he still couldn't have compared to Li Xuantong. Back then, there was no way he could've achieved as much fame as he had this time around.

After this battle, Mu Chen's name soared within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

For the few days after the battle, Mu Chen cultivated in a small building. Even though he'd been injured in the battle, it was nothing serious; they were far lighter than the injuries he'd sustained while fighting Liu Jingshan, so he managed to recover in only half a day. However, he knows that this battle had caused huge ripples. He was also too lazy to go out and deal with the people who, undoubtedly, noticed him now.

Mu Chen quietly sat in his room. The Spiritual Energy surged around him. His breathing was as steady as a mountain and had vigour to it. Even though it'd been a desperate battle with Li Xuantong, he'd reaped quite a few benefits from it.

He'd gotten the chance to test the strength of a Heavenly Transform Stage. If he ever faced someone of that cultivation again, he'd know what to expect from his experience. Even though he'd successfully confronted Li Xuantong this time, it also served as a lesson as to how powerful Li Xuantong was.

If it hadn't been for the pact of three moves, Mu Chen would've been forced to borrow the power of the Nine Nether Bird to defeat Li Xuantong. However, that wasn't the kind of victory that Mu Chen wanted. Even though Li Xuantong had stood between himself and Luo Li, Mu Chen honestly didn't harbor any ill will towards him. Even though Li Xuantong was his opponent, he was someone worth regarding. If it wasn't a life or death battle, then Mu Chen didn't want to borrow someone else's power to obtain a victory over him. That was his pride, as well as his way of showing respect towards the opponents he acknowledged.

Of course, if his opponent had been someone like Liu Qingshan, then Mu Chen wouldn't have thought twice about whether to play fair or foul.

The reason why Mu Chen treated Li Xuantong as a true competitor was because he wanted to compete against Li Xuantong in a fair fight. Without any restrictions or aids. He wanted a true victory over Li Xuantong.

However, there was quite a distance between them right now. That's why Mu Chen wasn't slacking off after his so-called victory; instead, he was working even harder on his cultivation, so that he might be able to truly

overtake Li Xuantong.

The next time they fought, Mu Chen wanted to tell Li Xuantong that he no longer needed this “pact of three moves”.

Mu Chen smiled as he thought about that. He glanced to the area right outside the room. Luo Li had gone out earlier. And Mu Chen knew exactly why she’d gone out. He helplessly shook his head and prayed for the unlucky guy. Then, he closed his eyes again.

Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, a certain towering mountain peak

On that mountaintop was Li Xuantong, helplessly face-to-face with a girl dressed in black and an icy-cold expression, who was wielding a dark longsword.

“Was that fight fun?” Luo Li’s glass-like pupils coldly glared at Li Xuantong. Her clear voice flowed like a mountain stream, yet it carried a chill.

“If you didn’t have enough fun, I’d be glad to play with you.”

Li Xuantong scratched his nose and bitterly laughed at Luo Li’s words. Sharp rays of light swords tore through the air in a storm.

Li Xuantong tapped his fingers and rays of Spiritual Energy shot out to meet the light swords.

Shhhiiiinnnngggg!

The Spiritual Energy rays were destroyed by the light swords upon contact and put Li Xuantong on edge. Luo Li’s Luoshen Art had been trained to a point past perfection. Indeed, she was worthy of her reputation as the rare genius of the Luoshen Clan that only appeared once in a hundred years.

Li Xuantong heaved a helpless sigh and backed off, dodging the sword rays. He knew that Luo Li wouldn’t listen to anyone when she was angry, so the only thing he could do was let her vent.

The light swords and Spiritual Energy whistled on that mountaintop, causing utter chaos. Anyone who saw the commotion would be

astonished. They would know that this mountaintop was part of Li Xuantong's territory. Who would dare scale that mountain to cause trouble for Li Xuantong?

Even though the spectators were surprised, they didn't dare to ascend the mountain to check. They only watched as the sharp rays of sword light rained down like a storm upon that peak.

The torrent carried on for several minutes before settling down. Then, all was peaceful.

However, the scene wasn't as elegant and serene as it had been before; rather, it was in complete disorder. Deep ravines spiderwebbed the ground, clean cuts as if they'd been carved by a razor-sharp weapon.

Li Xuantong stood on a stone platform, his previous confidence and ease were nowhere to be seen. Even his clothes had a few tears to them. His hair draped down1, giving him a very sorry appearance. However, it wasn't all because he was allowing Luo Li to vent her anger. Luo Li's strength had truly surpassed his expectations.

He inspected his tattered clothes and the girl with the longsword. Then he cautiously asked, "Are you done venting?"

Luo Li combed and twisted her long hair with her jade-like hands. Her exquisitely charming face was expressionless as she spoke. "Li Xuantong, I hope this will be the last time. I still consider you a friend, but if you take it too far, I may turn hostile."

Li Xuantong bitterly smiled as he seriously replied, "If he couldn't even handle the likes of myself, how could he handle matters in the future? You can't be the one to handle all of it, right?"

Luo Li went silent and didn't respond.

Li Xuantong lightly sighed. "How much longer can your grandfather endure? Two years? Maybe three?"

Luo Li trembled. Her small hands clutched the sword handle so hard that even her fingertips were turning white. Her petite figure suddenly seemed especially frail and pitiful.

“You’re the only hope the Luoshen Clan has. For how much longer can you remain by his side? You’re the Empress of the Luoshen Clan and the one with the purest bloodline within the royal family. You have many followers who are loyal to the the Luoshen Clan’s Royal Family, and they have seen you as the Emperor’s successor. With your personality, I know you won’t be able to abandon everything. Therefore, when the time comes, you’ll definitely go back. And at that time, you’ll have to leave him. There’s no happy ending for the two of you.” Li Xuantong said slowly.

“I’ll wait for him,” Luo Li replied in a soft voice.

“Wait for him to grow? Let’s not even mention whether he can actually reach that stage. Even if it were possible, do you have the time to wait? The other three God Clans2 are also eyeing yours. The Luoshen Clan has fallen, the lion has aged. Right now, you are the only intimidating force.” Li Xuantong sighed. Reality was always so cruel.

Luo Li looked up towards Li Xuantong. Her voice was soft and slow as she articulated each word with an unquestionable resoluteness. “I believe in him.”

Li Xuantong speechlessly looked at her exquisite beauty.

Luo Li also spoke no more. Her jade hands waved as she skimmed away from the stone stage, turned into a streak of light, and rapidly disappeared.

For the next few days, if things went as Mu Chen expected, the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy would be talking about that pact of three move that he’d had with Li Xuantong. Even the entire freshmen’s area was talking about it in excitement. There was nothing Mu Chen could do but hole up in the building and seclude himself in cultivation.

Luo Li looked after him for a few days. Only after she was certain he was fine did she head for the Convergence Array to cultivate. Mu Chen could sense that recently, her need to cultivate had become a little more pressing.

Mu Chen could only bitterly smile inwardly at that. Luo Li’s dedication to cultivation made his heart ache for her, but there was nothing he could do.

He had no idea about the details of her life, that cultivating was everything. That she had to, because of her responsibility. That's why her world had always been monotone and dull. A character created, but nothing in her heart. A dull character.

It was later, after they'd met, that something had appeared in that girl's heart that allowed her to smile, despite the exhaustion from cultivating.

To her, time was usually the most precious commodity. But she'd still come all the way to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, just for him.

It was another night. Mu Chen was seated in his room, cultivating, when he suddenly opened his eyes. His figure moved and he appeared on top of the building, where he saw Li Xuantong, standing, with his hands behind him.

A crease appeared in Mu Chen's brow when he saw Li Xuantong. "What did you say to Luo Li? Why's she cultivating so hard these past few days?"

Li Xuantong turned around, glanced at Mu Chen, and lightly said, "Rather than saying 'she's cultivating so hard', why not say 'she's trying to lighten your burdens'?"

"What do you mean?" Mu Chen's brows were tightly locked together.

Li Xuantong sat down, looked at the round moon, and lightly sighed, "Have you heard of the Luoshen Clan?"

Mu Chen listened with full attention.

Chapter 222: Eastern Heavens Realm

"Luoshen Clan!"

Mu Chen's eyes concentrated on Li Xuantong. Back in the Spiritual Value Hall, he'd heard that elder mention the Luoshen Clan. However, he didn't have much more information on the matter. The Great Thousand World was simply too vast. Forget about knowing all of the Northern Spiritual Realm, even the realm where they were currently located, the Northern Heavens Continent, where the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was, was only one of the many continents within the Great Thousand World.

There were too many things in this world that Mu Chen was unaware of, nor did he have the necessary connections to learn about them.

"In this Great Thousand World, there are many powerful races with long inheritances. For instance, there's the Ice Spirit Clan and Fire Spirit Clan. They're two races that possess great fame in the Great Thousand World." Li Xuantong lightly carried on. "The Luoshen Clan is also one of them. At its height, the Luoshen Clan was stronger than any other clan. Even the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, with its deep background, couldn't claim to be stronger at the Luoshen Clan at its pinnacle."

Mu Chen's expression was grave. He didn't have a clear-cut idea of how powerful the Ice Spirit Clan and the Fire Spirit Clan were, but he knew that the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was an extremely terrifying body. He knew that he'd only been in contact with the tip of the iceberg of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. And the Luoshen Clan that Luo Li was from actually possessed such terrifying strength?

"But, of course, I also said that was back during the Luoshen Clan's golden era."

Li Xuantong glanced at Mu Chen and continued, "The Luoshen Clan lives in the Fast East Lands of the Great Thousand World, in the Eastern Heavens Realm. The Eastern Heavens Realm has as many continents and forces as there are stars. Of these forces, the Four Great God Clans rule

over the Eastern Heavens Realm. Countless other forces have attached themselves to these clans in order to survive. They are regarded as kings."

"Four Great God Clans?"

"Yes. The Luoshen Clan is one of them." Li Xuantong nodded his head and continued, "The Four Great God Clans have dwelled in the Eastern Heavens Realm for thousands of years, constantly warring with one another, accumulating mountains upon mountains of blood debts that are impossible to wash off. One could say that there's an irreconcilable feud between them."

"The Luoshen Clan, from previous eras, stood at the top of the Four Great God Clans. They suppressed the other three God Clans who dared not to come within contact of their sharp blades. Pity, they allowed their luck to flourish too much back then and that led to their current withering state. It's to the point where they must rely on one girl to save them." Li Xuantong ridiculed as he shook his head.

Mu Chen's brows lightly wrinkled together. Is Luo Li the girl that he's talking about?

"The Luoshen Clan's geniuses have been withering these past few hundred years. Most of the core members of the Luoshen Royal Clan are like maggots gnawing on the declining giant. Most of Luo Li's relatives were decayed by their reputations, submerged in fantasies of past glories with no idea that their Luoshen Clan is already full of holes." Li Xuantong mocked.

"A few decades ago, Luo Li's father was the most outstanding amongst the Luoshen Clan. If he had been able to take over the Luoshen Clan, then he could've changed their situation. It's a pity that he suffered heavy injuries and fell during a battle among the Four Great God Clans."

"His fall was a heavy blow to the Luoshen Clan. Luo Li's grandfather had no choice but to come out to, once again, support the entirety of the enormous clan. At that time, perhaps even he was also in despair. Amongst all the people of the Luoshen Clan, there wasn't anyone who could inherit that great responsibility. Fortunately, as Luo Li grew older,

she revealed a talent that far surpassed her father's."

"From that point on, even though she was still just a child, it was decided that she'd be the next Empress. She was told that when the time came, she'd receive an inheritance that'd been passed down for thousands of years: that enormous clan with the hopes of billions of people. She will become their Empress and protect them from the cruel Eastern Heavens Realm in order to allow the Luoshen Clan to survive."

Li Xuantong narrowed his eyes as he thought about the little girl who should've lived a joyful and carefree childhood without worries, but was, instead, closely supervised by the Luoshen Clan. Swinging her longsword under the waterfall, over and over. Huge waves swept over that petite body, wounding her with each impact.

In the end, she'd cried as she held onto her longsword, without consolation but, instead, the strict scoldings of her grandfather. Her father fell when she was very young, leaving a weak-bodied mother to accompany her. Yet, despite her tender age, she was very sensible. Letting her mother see her cry would only cause heartache to her weak-bodied mother; therefore, she endured alone.

The first time Li Xuantong saw Luo Li, she was hiding behind a stone, clinging to her longsword, and crying. But once she finished crying, she dragged her small body and her longsword to embrace the huge waves yet again.

Mu Chen stood on the roof, his heart tightening with indescribable heartache.

"Luo Li won't have much time by your side..." Li Xuantong said softly.

"Why?!" Mu Chen said in alarm.

"Because Luo Tianshen won't be able to hold on much longer. His lifespan will come to an end in at most, five years. And before that happens, he will definitely take Luo Li back to accept her inheritance. Furthermore, Luo Li must step into the Sovereign Stage; otherwise, the Luoshen Clan will be attacked by the other three Great God Clans. Thanks to that blood feud, the Luoshen Royal Clan will be thrown into utter

chaos. Anyone loyal to the Luoshen Clan will be slaughtered in a massive bloodbath. These matters are all too common in the Eastern Heavens Realm." Li Xuantong said lightly.

"Sovereign?" Mu Chen narrowed his pupils. After the Heavenly Completion Stage was the Sovereign Stage. The Sovereign Stage was further split into 9 Grades, from Grade-1 to Grade-9. The stage was further differentiated into Heavenly and Earthly – the so-called Heavenly Sovereign and Earthly Sovereign.

Generally speaking, those who managed to step into the Sovereign Stage were considered true experts inside the Great Thousand World and possessed the strength to become the lord of a continent. Grade-9 Sovereigns were considered the pinnacle of the Sovereign Stage. Earthly and Heavenly Sovereigns were even more fearsome. In the Great Thousand World, anyone who possessed such cultivation would also have renown fame and be hailed as a hero of the present.

And Luo Li had to reach the Sovereign Stage within five years, at the very latest?!

"For powerful clans like theirs, the Sovereign Stage is the minimum requirement for becoming clan leader. Luo Tianshen once possessed the power of an Earthly Sovereign, but he sustained heavy injuries from prior battles. As of now, his life will soon come to an end. That's why he will resort to any method in order to create a leader who can contain the situation after his death."

"And Luo Li is the one he chose. Only she possesses the purest bloodline to receive this kind of inheritance. That way, their chances of success will be much higher." Li Xuantong said, slowly.

"Higher chance of success?" Mu Chen's face changed. Does that also mean that there are chances of failure?

"In this world, there is no such thing as a power that comes without a price. Everything has its risks." Li Xuantong nodded and continued, "If the inheritance fails, Luo Li will die."

"However, that's still the last resort. Luo Li only needs to return to the

clan once Luo Tianshen runs out of time. That might be half a year, or maybe an entire year later. But that time will still come."

Li Xuantong sneered, "Pity. The vast Luoshen Clan, at its prime, possessed a Heavenly Sovereign and two Earthly Sovereigns. They were so strong that they intimidated the other three God Clans into submission. They even possessed a great fame throughout the Great Thousand World. Who could've imagined that a thousand years later, they're being supported by one elderly old man who has to put all his hopes on the shoulders of one frail little girl?"

Li Xuantong looked to Mu Chen and spoke with a deep voice. "Now do you know why Luo Li always trains so hard?"

Mu Chen slowly nodded. No wonder Li Xuantong kept saying that he was holding Luo Li back. Time was the most important thing to her. But because of him, she'd come to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. That's how great her passion was.

"Right now, she's also doing her best to cultivate for your sake. She probably thinks that by the time you learn of this, she'd be strong enough so that you wouldn't have to bear the burden. She'd take them upon herself."

Li Xuantong looked at Mu Chen as the corner of his mouth turned with an agonized expression. "What's so good about you?"

Mu Chen's hand were tightly clenched in his sleeves. "When the time comes, does she absolutely have to return to accept the inheritance?"

Li Xuantong nodded. "I wouldn't think of obstructing her. Otherwise, she wouldn't be happy at all, just because she's at your side."

Mu Chen laughed to himself. "I'm not that selfish."

"Currently, the Luoshen Clan is declining. Their enemies are a pack of wolves and tigers eyeing their properties with greed. However, none of them dare to move. One reason is Luo Tianshen. Even though that tiger has aged, its might is still present. The second reason is because the Luoshen Clan landed a piece of good karma a few dozen years ago. They

unintentionally saved a young man from the Lower Planes." Li Xuantong explained.

"Oh?" Mu Chen was confused. He clearly couldn't see the relationship there.

Li Xuantong raised his head, his usual indifference was replaced with a trace of reverence. "That young man from back then has become one of the Overlords of the Great Thousand World. He possesses fame that shakes the world."

"Who is he?" Mu Chen was quite curious.

A look of fanaticism flashed through Li Xuantong's eyes. "He once freely roamed the Great Thousand World; even the Old Ancestor, a Heavenly Sovereign of the Fire Spirit Clan couldn't stop him and could only allow him to act as he wished. Right now, he's the lord of the Endless Fire Territory."

"He's the Flame Emperor, Xiao Yan."

Chapter 223: Flame Emperor

The Flame Emperor, Xiao Yan.

When Mu Chen heard that domineering title, he blanked for a brief moment. This wasn't the first time he'd heard that name; he'd heard of it back in Northern Spiritual Academy. But back then, he'd only had vague impressions of the name; now, he knew a little more about the man behind the name, and what that meant within the boundaries of the Great Thousand World.

The ones who'd shed their shackles, broken through from the Lower Planes, and arrived in this Great Thousand World were all extraordinary figures with top quality characters. Maybe it was because of the ranks of the Planes, but those within the Lower Planes were limited in how high they could reach. However, once they stepped into the Great Thousand World and adapted to it, they would become tigers that'd stepped into the deep mountains, or dragons that'd returned to the sea. They were dazzling figures, even within the Great Thousand World, where great authorities gathered.

This Flame Emperor was one of them, as well as the Martial Ancestor who'd single-handedly challenged the entire Ice Spirit Clan.

The blaze in Li Xuantong's eyes slightly dispersed as he looked back at Mu Chen.

"This good karma casually fell into the hands of the Luoshen Clan. Strictly speaking, what they did couldn't be considered 'saving', but, perhaps, more like 'aiding'."

"When the Flame Emperor first broke through the shackles of the Lower Plane and entered the Great Thousand World, he landed in the Luoshen Clan's territory by coincidence. You should know, some of the energies practiced in the Lower Planes aren't Spiritual Auras. This Flame Emperor, for example, practiced an energy called Douqi in his Plane. After entering the Great Thousand World, his Douqi would gradually convert into a purer form of Spiritual Energy. Most of those who've cast away the

shackles of the Lower Planes are unfamiliar with this concept. As experts, of course, they'd be unwilling to allow their hard-earned Douqi, or any other energy for that matter, to be converted into something unfamiliar."

"So, of course, there'd be some conflicts. The conversion of Spiritual Energy might pose a danger to them. The rejection of it might do the same. That's the first major problem to those who've managed to break through from the Lower Planes."

Li Xuantong smiled. To people like themselves, this was a rather amusing issue. But to those who'd actually cast aside the shackles of the Lower Planes and entered the Great Thousand World, this was quite a headache.

"Luo Tianshen met the Flame Emperor then and helped him successfully convert his Spiritual Energy. He could also see that even though the Flame Emperor was young, he was knowledgeable and experienced. Luo Tianshen knew that anyone capable of breaking the shackles of the Lower Planes would be someone capable. Even though they wouldn't be too strong when they had just stepped into this Planes, the potential they possessed was extremely frightening. That's why Luo Tianshen dropped their status difference and befriended him."

"However, the Flame Emperor didn't stay in the Luoshen Clan for long. He left right after he recovered. It's said that he went to search for his two wives. For a long time after that, Luo Tianshen didn't hear any news of him."

"Not until ten years ago. One day, a certain piece of news spread throughout the Great Thousand World. A man had proclaimed himself the Flame Emperor, fought with the Fire Spirit Clan's Old Ancestor, and had stepped into the Heavenly Sovereign cultivation stage. It was an earth-shaking battle, and torrential flames had turned the entire abandoned continent into a wasteland. The Fire Spirit Clan's Old Ancestor couldn't even harm the Flame Emperor after exerting all his methods. In the end, he was forced to admit defeat with his hands cupped. The Flame Emperor then asked for a flame from the clan, then left carefree and easy. From that day on, the name of the Flame Emperor was widespread throughout

the Great Thousand World."

Li Xuantong's eyes were blazing again. Heavenly Sovereign. Within the Great Thousand World, that kind of level could make one the absolute overlord of a territory. And when faced with this Flame Emperor, even a Heavenly Sovereign had been forced to cup his hands in defeat. A figure as mighty as him was befitting of the title "Flame Emperor".

"After that, the Flame Emperor founded the Endless Fire Territory. Experts rushed over like ducks lining up. Not only is the Flame Emperor in control of all the flames between heaven and earth, his skill in refining elixirs is also unparalleled. My experts seized the opportunity and went begging for those elixirs. Thus, the Endless Fire Territory transformed into a colossal existence in only a few decades."

Li Xuantong clicked his tongue as his eyes filled with admiration. The Great Thousand World was endlessly wide, and all kinds of mighty people were trying to make a name for themselves. However, it wasn't that simple.

Mu Chen sighed as well. The name of Flame Emperor truly wasn't in vain.

"Perhaps even Luo Tianshen was shocked after hearing of the Flame Emperor's accomplishments. He probably never considered the possibility. Back then, that young man had only just arrived in the Great Thousand World, but he'd managed to make a name for himself in only a few decades. However that old man is prideful down to his bones, so he didn't spend effort on associating with the Endless Fire Territory. Maybe to him, that favor was nothing but a small thing, not worth remembering."

"But ten years ago, when Luo Li's father fell, the entire Luoshen Clan was close to death. On Luo Tianshen's birthday, the Flame Emperor sent someone to express his good wishes. The gesture shocked the other three God Clans, who were like tigers staring down their prey. Perhaps none of them expected the Luoshen Clan to have such an ally."

"After that, Luo Tianshen had to borrow the Flame Emperor's prestige in order to barely keep the Luoshen Clan afloat for another ten plus years."

Li Xuantong sighed and carried on, “However, once Luo Tianshen’s lifespan comes to an end, the situation will definitely collapse. Even though the Flame Emperor’s name is far-reaching, the Endless Fire Territory is, after all, still too far from the Eastern Heavens Realm. Furthermore, the three God Clans aren’t that easy to deal with. Even if they’re afraid of the Endless Fire Territory, if the Luoshen Clan has declined to the bottom, they definitely won’t hesitate to move.”

“It’d also be tricky to try and solve the Luoshen Clan’s situation with outside force. You could save them once or twice, but not forever.” Li Xuantong faintly summed up. Right now, most of the core members of the Royal Family were useless, aside from Luo Li who possessed the qualifications to inherit the clan as Empress. Such vermins. If Luo Tianshen passed away before Luo Li assumed full control, then the Luoshen Clan would probably be in danger.

The situation was simply awful. Mu Chen felt heartache as he thought of the burden Luo Li carried on her tender shoulders. However, he knew that there was no way he could keep Luo Li from going back.

Mu Chen clenched his fist. In the end, he was still too weak to help Luo Li.

It looked like he had to speed up his cultivation over the next five years. He had to be of some real help once Luo Li took control of the Luoshen Clan! Even though that’d be difficult, he wasn’t going to give up.

Li Xuantong saw Mu Chen clench his fist and spoke, “You have five years, at most. However, I don’t think you’ll be able to truly help her within only five years.”

“Who knows what the future will bring?”

Mu Chen only smiled. The future was too unpredictable and difficult to judge. But he knew that he’d do his best to reach his target. No matter how rough the road might be, he definitely wouldn’t give up.

Otherwise, how would he fit next to such a lovable and dear girl?

Li Xuantong looked at the youth before him. The latter’s smile was faint,

but there was an unquestionable resolve in his eyes. Li Xuantong knew that it was impossible to get Mu Chen away from Luo Li.

Once in a while, this youth does show some charm. His resolve and confidence. Maybe that's why he obtained the favor of that girl who bears so much on her shoulders.

"I promised Luo Li that I wouldn't interfere in your matters anymore. However..."

As he spoke, his expression turned sharp as he glared at Mu Chen, "I hope that you won't let me down. I'm not asking you to provide much help to Luo Li. I only ask that you don't drag her down. Her responsibilities are too large and cruel that the slightest pause will mean destruction."

Mu Chen raised his head to the starry skies and slowly declared, "I feel more sorry for her, than you do."

"Li Xuantong."

He lowered his head then looked back towards Li Xuantong with a serious expression. This was also the first time he'd called Li Xuantong's name without a prefix. "There'll be a day where I'll stand beside her once more. Anything that grieves her, I will reduce to ashes!"

Li Xuantong looked at the youth's face, which was calm, but held an endless ripple in his eyes. He wanted to say something, ended up only nodding. "I hope you'll actually be able to accomplish that. There's still time for you to grow."

Mu Chen replied with a small nod and a smile. Then his expression recovered as he inhaled a deep breath and inquired, "What's the Flame Emperor's level? If you compared him to the Martial Ancestor who challenged the entire Ice Spirit Clan, who's stronger?"

"The Flame Emperor made that Old Ancestor of the Fire Spirit Clan, a Heavenly Sovereign, admit defeat with cupped hands. However, this isn't a kind of news that's heard often. With his talent and a few decades to cultivate, there's no way he's still stuck in the same spot. Who knows, he might've even surpassed the Heavenly Sovereign stage and stepped into an

even higher level. After all, the Great Thousand World is endlessly vast. The road to the peak is long, even for heroes like the Flame Emperor."

Li Xuantong smiled. "As for that Martial Ancestor, he's also extremely frightening. He managed to single-handedly overturn such a large existence like the Ice Spirit Clan. However, those guys from the Ice Spirit Clan are also very cunning. After the Martial Ancestor broke through their defences and invaded their grounds, they managed to suppress their anger and did their best to comply with his requests. After that, the Martial Ancestor established the "Martial Border", one on par with the Endless Fire Territory. Right now, the Ice Spirit Clan has an extremely close relationship with the Martial Border. Those who were planning to attack the Ice Spirit Clan, now have to consider the figures behind them: the Martial Border, as well as that Martial Ancestor.

"It's not easy to say which one of them is more powerful. After all, the two of them have never fought before. Most people keep their opinions to themselves."

Li Xuantong rubbed his chin, "However, I'd really like to see which one is stronger, between the Flame Emperor and the Martial Ancestor."

Mu Chen also couldn't help laughing as he looked up to the endless starry skies. The Great Thousand World was endlessly vast, filled with many brilliant things he'd never known. However, he believed that one day, he'd be qualified to stand at the heart of the Great Thousand World, and have a great battle with the Sovereigns from the Lower Planes.

Chapter 224: Heaven Rank Mission

In the end, Li Xuantong left. However, Mu Chen's heart was still beating wildly with all the information that he'd just gotten. What Luo Li had on her shoulders was far heavier than he thought, giving him even more of a heartache.

Towards that silly girl who could put down such an important matter to meet him in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, he was deeply moved. Nothing could be greater than a beauty's grace.

Siiuuuuu!

Shortly after Li Xuantong left, a streak of light flew over under the night. A slender figure landed on the building. It was Luo Li, who'd just returned from cultivating.

When Luo Li saw Mu Chen standing there, she was slightly baffled. Yet, she still showed him a gentle smile as clear as a spring flowing across the mountains, softening the hearts of any who saw it.

Mu Chen's eyes were fixed on the beautiful girl before him, who gave off a distant sense of tranquility. The deep emotion within his eyes made the girl's face flush red.

"What happened?" Luo Li asked as she touched her exquisite face.

Mu Chen slowly approached Luo Li under her bashful gaze. He extended his arm and embraced her slender and delicate waist.

Luo Li's face blushed red as she glanced around. Only after making sure that there was no one else there did her struggles weaken as she buried herself into his embrace. That familiar scent lightened the exhaustion that she'd accumulated from cultivating for the past few days.

"Sorry." Mu Chen lightly said as he buried his face into her long, fragrant hair.

Luo Li was slightly startled. "What are you saying, all of a sudden?"

"Before, you told me that falling in love with me would hinder your

cultivation. I thought that was a joke. I never imagined that it'd truly bring you trouble." Mu Chen still recalled their time on the Spirit Road— This girl's reason for chasing after him for half a year. Back then, he'd found it rather amusing. But after learning Luo Li's situation, he realised that she hadn't been joking when she'd said those words. Because of him, she sacrificed much of her important cultivating time.

Luo Li used her slender arms to push herself away from Mu Chen's chest. However, her delicate face remained in a frown as she stared at him and said, "I don't like what you're saying."

It was easy to see that she was upset with the way he was mocking himself, saying he was only hindering her.

"What did you hear?" After all, Luo Li was an intelligent woman. She could tell that Mu Chen was acting strange. She swept her charming eyes over the roof and asked, "So, Li Xuantong visited you? What did he say?"

Her anger flared as soon as she finished those words. What did that Li Xuantong do?! Did he really think I would have a fall-out with him?

Mu Chen smiled, extended his hand, and brushed Luo Li's exquisite face. His voice was gentle as he replied, "Don't blame him. I should've known all of that. One fine day, I'll be able to stand beside you and tear all those matters to shreds!"

Luo Li softly sighed as she threw herself back into Mu Chen's chest and lightly nipped him1, "Let's not talk about that."

Those words were too heavy; she felt tired just thinking about them. She also didn't want to drag Mu Chen into this anymore.

Mu Chen smiled as he tightened his arms around her. "Rest assured. What's done is done. I won't let you go. In this lifetime, you're already mine. Mu Chen's woman."

"What do you mean by 'what's done is done'? That sounds so horrible. This has nothing to do with you." Luo Li lightly laughed as she rolled her eyes at him. Her charming air made Mu Chen restless.

"You're in my arms, and still you dare to say that 'this has nothing to do

with me'? Someone needs a smack." Mu Chen darkly chuckled. The hand that'd been tangled around her waist casually slipped down to her backside and gave a light tap.

Luo Li's tender face stiffened and turned red. She bashfully bit Mu Chen's chest again, this time a little harder.

Mu Chen held the girl, raised his head to the starry skies, and sighed a deep breath. When he spoke next to Luo Li's ear, his voice was filled with resolve. "Luo Li, I might be weak right now, and you cannot depend on me. But trust me, one day, I'll truly stand by your side. When that time comes, I'll handle all the waves coming at you. Anyone who's bullied you and aggrieved you, I'll shred to pieces!"

"Luo Li, please wait for me. Wait for me to become an absolute expert."

Towards the end, his voice was as soft as a whisper; however, it conveyed an unswerving determination from the deepest parts of his heart.

Luo Li's eyes turned red at the soft whisper in her ears. A warmth rippled through her body from the deepest parts of her heart.

She extend her jade-like arms, embraced Mu Chen's waist in return, and made a soft "en" in acknowledgement. She then raised her face towards Mu Chen, stood on tiptoe, and kissed him on the lips.

Mu Chen, I will wait for you. I don't care if you're an ordinary or an absolute expert. I'll still be waiting for you.

...

The next day, Su Ling'er paid a visit to the freshmen's area and found Mu Chen, who was still cramped up in his building.

"You have something for me?"

Mu Chen was rather surprised by Su Ling'er's sudden appearance. The girl held her hands behind her back as she looked at the small building with interest. A smile filled her face.

"I came looking for you with some good news." She smiled and continued, "Can you take a trip with me? My big sister wants to see you."

“Your big sister? Su Xuan?” Mu Chen blanked. Su Xuan was looking for him? The two of them had never really interacted before, nor had he been acquainted with her in the past.

“En.”

Su Ling’er nodded. “Rest assured, it’s nothing bad. Other people might not even get such an opportunity, even if they begged,” she said as she walked. Mu Chen hesitated, then followed after her.

Under Su Ling’er’s lead, the two of them left the freshmen’s area and headed towards the north area of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. After about half an hour, Mu Chen followed Su Ling’er as they descended towards a lake. At the heart of the lake was a small island that was populated with only a handful of neat houses.

At this moment, a white-clothed girl stood in front of one of the bamboo houses. Her charming face held a sweet-tempered smile as she watched the two descend.

“Big sister.” Su Ling’er waved towards the girl in white.

Mu Chen was rather taken aback by the appearance of this astonishing beauty within the grounds of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Her white dress was delicately wrapped around her exquisite, yet full, body. Her long her was as dark as ink, and her sweet demeanor was truly beautiful.

“Senior Sister Su Xuan.” Mu Chen cupped his hands towards the girl.

“You don’t have to be so polite.” Su Xuan lightly smiled and continued, “I summoned you today because I’ve accepted a Heaven Rank mission from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. I wanted to see if you’re interested.”

“A Heaven Rank mission?” Mu Chen blanked and awkwardly replied, “I don’t seem to possess the qualifications to join a mission of this rank, right?”

Of course, he knew about the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy’s Mission Hall, which was in charge of distributing all sorts of missions.

Those who could complete these missions would receive huge rewards. The rewards were differentiated into three ranks. The Heaven Rank mission that Su Xuan spoke of was a high rank. This kind of mission not only required strength, but also sufficient experience. Even if a freshman like Mu Chen possessed the requisite strength, he still wouldn't have the qualifications to accept the mission.

"In terms of strength, you possess quite a bit. As for experience, I can handle that for you." Su Xuan said lightly.

"Why did Senior Sister Su Xuan ask me?" Mu Chen said in confusion. Heaven Rank missions were rarely seen. Not just anyone could accept one. Even though there were some risks associated with the mission, the rewards were ample. If Su Xuan wanted to advertise that she was looking for partners, there would definitely be mobs of powerful students rushing over.

Su Xuan glanced at Su Ling'er. The reason why she'd asked for Mu Chen personally was because Su Ling'er kept suggesting him, of course. In addition, she didn't have a bad impression of Mu Chen. This offer could be considered her acknowledgement of that; therefore, she had summoned him.

"Your performance during the Spiritual Battle Stage is why I sought you out. Perhaps there are others who also possess sufficient strength; however, I don't have very high opinions of them." Su Xuan lightly shook her head and continued, "This Heaven Rank mission is restricted to a team of five people. Counting you, we already have four. If this mission is a success, then each person receives 1,500,000 Spiritual Value Points."

"1,500,000 Spiritual Value Points? So many?" After hearing that, even Mu Chen had to take in a lungful of chilly air before returning to his usual calm. That was the reward for a Heaven Rank mission? 1,500,000 Spiritual Value Points all at once. If he did that three or four more times, wouldn't he be able to purchase the Northern Sea Dragon's Blood Essence?

"That actually isn't very much. The Heaven Rank mission that we

accepted is only a Low Grade. If it'd been a High Grade Heaven Rank mission, the reward could be up to 8,000,000. However, only one person has ever managed to complete such a mission in recent years." Su Ling'er smiled.

"8,000,000..." Mu Chen's mouth couldn't help twitching and he bitterly smiled. "Was it Shen Cangsheng who completed it?"

"En, only that guy could accomplish such a task." Su Xuan lightly nodded. Her tone contained a small amount of lamentation. Even though she was Ranked 3, she understood that there was quite a bit of distance between herself and Shen Cangsheng.

"In addition, this Heaven Rank mission that I accepted is rather special. It's not a kill or arrest bounty mission; it's a spirit treasury hunting mission. In other words, we're supposed to search for hidden places that's been passed down since ancient times. Generally speaking, there should be many Spiritual Arts, Artifacts and all sorts of treasures left behind by ancient predecessors. The Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy isn't requiring us to hand over everything we find. We can actually keep the treasures."

Su Xuan smiled, "Therefore, spirit treasury hunting missions are the most popular ones within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. We're basically taking information from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy and reaping all the profits."

Mu Chen was interested in Su Xuan's words. He wasn't really interested in the treasures; it was actually those 1,500,000 Spiritual Value Points that stirred him.

"Senior Sister Su Xuan..."

Mu Chen hesitated for a brief moment, then said, "I'm rather interested in this mission. However, can I take the liberty of making a request?"

"What is it?" Su Xuan smiled.

Mu Chen gave a rather embarrassed smile and said, "Could I reserve an extra spot on this mission?"

Chapter 225: Spirit Treasury Hunting

"You want another spot?"

Su Xuan was rather surprised by the request. She hesitated for a brief moment before replying, "There is only one spot left and the candidates have already been determined."

She spoke in a somewhat apologetic tone as she looked at Mu Chen.

There was nothing Mu Chen could do. He originally wanted to recommend Luo Li, but since the team was already full, the only thing he could do was forget it. He was only worried that if he left Luo Li alone in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, she wouldn't have him to distract her anymore; she'd definitely enter an intense cultivating state. Mu Chen didn't know whether that was good or bad.

"Aside from from the two of us who are on this mission, there's also Senior Sister Li Qing, Rank 23 of the Heavenly Rank. She's the famed ice beauty of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy."

"The other is Guo Xiong, Rank 20 of the Heavenly Rank. I already chose them a while ago, so it wouldn't be nice to change it now." Su Ling'er said.

"Then, it seems I've been rude." Mu Chen smiled.

"Since you don't seem to have a problem with it, then our teammates are settled. We'll head out in three days. When the time comes, we'll gather back here," Su Xuan said with a nod.

Mu Chen nodded back. It seemed like he'd have to leave the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy for a while. Mu Chen was also curious about the Northern Heavens Continent that laid outside the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. How could he possibly reject such a good opportunity to go outside?

He continued chatting with Su Xuan, until both sides became a little more familiar with each other. Since this seemed to be the sisters' home, at last, Mu Chen decided to end his stay andwas about to leave after cupping his hands.

However, a sonic boom sounded, forcing him to stop in his tracks. The boom turned into a figure and landed on the small island; it was a slender youth with green hair and a rather demonic facial feature.

This greened hair youth was the Rank 4 of the Heavenly Ranking, He Yao. When he appeared, he only glanced at Mu Chen with a smile on his face. However, there was also a trace of cryptic brilliance hidden deep within his eyes.

“Haha, Su Xuan, how’s the matters from before?” He Yao looked at Su Xuan as he smiled.

When Su Xuan saw He Yao, her sweet-tempered face still had a smile on it, but Mu Chen could tell that there was definitely a rather disaffected courtesy. She smiled and replied, “I apologize, but the members for this mission have already been determined. He Yao, you are too strong for this mission to be a challenge to you. If you joined, how could it possibly have any effects to train?”

Mu Chen understood the situation. It looked like this He Yao wanted to join the mission; however, Su Xuan was rather skilled with her words. She was clearly rejecting him, but she was putting it in such a nice way.

But, He Yao wasn’t a nobody, either. Of course, he wouldn’t lose his temper over such a simple sentence from Su Xuan. He lightly smiled and said, “Don’t put it like that. Even though this spirit treasure mission is better suited for profits than training, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy only provides you with the most basic amount of information. No one knows how difficult the mission might actually be. Besides, if some other powerful experts find out about the treasure, things might get dangerous. If it ended up in a fight, wouldn’t it be safer with a second guard?”

Su Xuan’s pupils slightly focused as she faintly smiled, “I doubt we’d have the fortune to find a spirit treasure valuable enough to warrant such a situation.”

“Everything begs for stability.” He Yao smiled. His line of sight shifted towards Mu Chen. A trace of brilliant light flashed through his eyes as he

recognized Mu Chen. After all, the battle that day left him with a deep impression.

"Haha! This must be Junior Brother Mu Chen. I'm He Yao."

He Yao approached Mu Chen with a gentle smile. Su Xuan's expression slightly changed as she saw him shift his attention towards Mu Chen.

"So, you're Senior Brother He Yao."

Mu Chen glanced at Su Xuan and noticed the changes in her face. However, he showed a light smile and cupped his hands politely. So, this guy was the Rank 4 of the Heavenly Ranking, He Yao. An influential figure of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

"I won't beat around the bush." He Yao showed a full smile and politely said, "I wish to join Su Xuan's team on this mission. I believe Junior Brother Mu Chen has a spot. I hope Junior Brother Mu Chen could let me have it. I'd definitely repay you greatly for this favor."

Mu Chen frowned. He Yao had indeed targeted him for the position.

He Yao smiled again when he saw Mu Chen furrow his brows. "Junior Brother Mu Chen, I'm well aware that this mission has a reward of 1,500,000 Spiritual Value Points. You can rest assured. If this mission is successful, I'll share half of the Spiritual Value Points with you. That way, you'd be able to obtain 750,000 Spiritual Value Points without having to do anything. I believe that's not a bad deal, right?"

"How generous."

Mu Chen inwardly smiled. He Yao really seemed to want this spot. Too bad. Mu Chen absent-mindedly looked at the lake, but in reality, he was paying attention to the sisters. He could tell that Su Xuan couldn't stand He Yao. It'd be inappropriate for him to give the spot to him.

"I apologize, Senior Brother He Yao. This spot was given to me by Senior Sister Su Xuan and I do not possess the rights to give it to someone else. If Senior Brother He Yao can convince Senior Sister Su Xuan, then I can give it to you without any conditions. I have no need for that half of the Spiritual Value Points." Mu Chen lightly smiled.

Mu Chen hadn't been very polite about it, he'd blatantly refused the request without leaving He Yao with any face, and he'd thrown the issue back at Su Xuan. But with Su Xuan's personality, He Yao definitely wasn't getting that spot.

"Cunning." Su Xuan's lips slightly curved uprwards. Her charming eyes glanced at Mu Chen, filled with an extremely charming smile.

Of course, He Yao could tell that Mu Chen was only giving excuses. Although He Yao had smile on his face, his eyes flashed with a chill deep down. "Junior Brother Mu Chen should give me some face. In the future, if you need any help in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, I'll definitely do my best to help you."

Mu Chen lightly shook his head while keeping his attention. He could sense the darkness deep within He Yao's eyes. Then, he understood why Su Xuan didn't like him. This person's scheming heart ran deep. Even though he seemed easy to get along with, he actually had a rather dark character. He wasn't someone who was easy to deal with.

He Yao's smile disappeared a bit at Mu Chen's continued rejection. However, he was still courteous as ever. He didn't flare as he replied, "If that's the case, it seems like I was being pushy."

He Yao turned back to Su Xuan and said, "Su Xuan, I will not go this time around. I hope that you all will return safely. If there's a chance next time, please inform me. With me around, I'll definitely be able to protect you."

His facial features were excellent and rather charming when he cared to be gentle. However, none of them were fooled. Of course, they wouldn't fall for his theatrics.

Su Xuan lightly nodded but said nothing.

"Then, I'll take my leave first."

He Yao smiled towards Su Xuan and gave a meaningful look at Mu Chen before, cupping his hands and leaving.

Mu Chen looked into He Yao's slightly dark eyes and lightly shook his head. It seemed like he'd offended someone, again. Aside from Su Xuan of

the top five of the Heavenly Ranking, he'd already fought with Li Xuantong and never even seen Shen Cangsheng. As for Rank 4 He Yao and Rank 5 Xu Huang, they weren't on good terms with him.

"An unexpected calamity has descended from the heavens." Mu Chen said helplessly as he sighed.

Su Xuan covered her mouth as she lightly laughed, "Of course, you'd be the one who could challenge Li Xuantong. I was worried that you might let him have the spot."

"I risked my life just to exchange three blows with Li Xuantong. I don't consider this a challenge at all." Mu Chen shook his head and continued with a small amount of doubt in his voice. "Senior Sister Su Xuan, He Yao is much stronger than me. If he went, then the success rate of this mission would be increased by many folds. Why did you reject him? Furthermore, he seems to be interested in Senior Sister Su Xuan, as well."

"In the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, there are way many people who are fond of my sister. Should she accept them all?" Su Ling'er snorted.

"At least there aren't many who can compare to He Yao." Mu Chen smiled.

Su Xuan lightly shook her head and lightly replied, "He Yao's scheming runs too deep. I don't like it. That kind of person isn't suitable as a trustable companion."

"Then, it sounds like I'm worth trusting," Mu Chen smiled. "I'm overwhelmed by the favor."

Su Xuan laughed and gently said, "You're still under observation. As for trust, we'll have to see."

Mu Chen laughed and said no more. Then, he waved his hand and flew off. Since he might leave the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, he'd have to let Luo Li know about it.

In the forest outside the lake, He Yao's face was cold as he watched Mu Chen flying overhead. His eyes were filled with a chill and darkness.

“Boss, that Su Xuan didn’t let you join the mission?”

The voice came from a skinny youth next to He Yao. “That woman really doesn’t know how to be tactful. With boss’ help, what kind of mission wouldn’t be easy? But boss, that Heaven Rank mission wasn’t terribly uncommon. I heard that it’s just a spirit treasury hunting mission. Just an ordinary spirit treasury.”

“What do you know?!”

He Yao waved his sleeves and coldly barked, “Su Xuan’s mission is in the White Dragon Hillock. Even though the mission’s description only mentioned “a wealthy Spirit Treasury”, I’ve secretly checked. A few hundred years ago, there was a pinnacle expert who appeared in the White Dragon Hillock. His name was Sovereign White Dragon. He also fell in the White Dragon Hillock. However, his gravesite has never been found. With the spirit treasury appearing now, there’s a possibility that it was left behind by this Sovereign White Dragon.”

“Wouldn’t that be a Sovereign Spirit Treasury then?!” The skinny youth was shocked.

A spirit treasury of this level wasn’t ordinary; it’d be enough to to make many forces drool. It was far from being a Low Grade Heaven Rank mission.

He Yao sneered and directed his gaze back to the lake. In his eyes flashed a trace of ruthlessness.

“If it really is a Sovereign Spirit Treasury, then Su Xuan’s team isn’t going to have it easy. I’ll see how many of them can come back alive! Hmph! Not knowing how to appreciate favors!”

Chapter 226: Northern Heavens Continent

The next morning

Mu Chen was prepared to leave. A slender, elegant girl stood before the building, watching him with bright eyes. Last night, Mu Chen had informed her that he was going on a mission with Su Xuan's party. Even though they'd only be apart for a short while, the girl was still rather reluctant to let him go. But ultimately, she didn't hinder Mu Chen. She, too, needed some time to quiet down and cultivate.

"Then, I'll be going."

Mu Chen lightly smiled as he moved closer to the girl.

"Okay. Be careful." Luo Li lightly nodded. Her hands straightened out the wrinkles in Mu Chen's clothes, like a newlywed wife. The gesture filled Mu Chen's eyes with gentleness.

"Don't push yourself too hard in cultivation, while I'm not around. It's true that 'learning is moving forwards and not advancing is moving backwards', but you still can't be too hard on yourself. It'll have a negative effect, instead." Mu Chen sternly reminded.

"I know." Luo Li nodded.

Mu Chen decided it was time to stop loitering around. He waved his hand and his figure turned into a streak of light. Under Luo Li's watch, he flew towards the interior of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Mu Chen flew through the skies of Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. About ten minutes later, he arrived at the forest outside the lake and descended.

When he landed on the small island, he noticed that there were two strangers present, aside from Su Xuan and Su Ling'er.

A man and a woman. The man had a towering, ape-like figure, and emitted a sense of barbaric oppression. He had a thick brow and a stern face that held a straightforward smile, entirely different from He Yao's. Even Mu Chen had a feeling that he liked the guy, just by seeing him.

The woman wore tight-fitting cultivation clothing. She had a tall build and was rather well-developed. The cultivation outfit exaggerated her sexy curves – anyone would be dizzy just from looking at her. Mu Chen shifted his line of sight upwards and met an icy face. Her long, naturally curly hair gave her a rather charming air, but the effect was lost in her ice-cold expression.

In terms of demeanor, she was probably less than Su Xuan. But with her fiery figure gave her the capital to compete against Su Xuan.

Upon seeing them, Mu Chen understood what was going on. They must be the remaining two companions for this mission. Guo Xiong and Li Qing.

When Su Xuan saw that Mu Chen had arrived, she lightly smiled, motioned towards the other two companions, and introduced them. Indeed, they were exactly the ones Mu Chen had predicted.

Finally, Su Xuan motioned towards Mu Chen and introduced him to the other two. “This is our last companion, Mu Chen. Even though he’s just a freshman, he can’t be underestimated.”

When Guo Xiong heard that name, he immediately looked back at Mu Chen. A strange look also flashed across Li Qing’s icy face as she looked to him.

“Haha, you must be that Mu Chen that took three moves from Li Xuantong! I never expected someone who looks so weak and feeble would be able to attain such a manly achievement.” Guo Xiong laughed. His voice was loud like thunder as it resounded near Mu Chen’s ears.

Mu Chen helplessly smiled.

“Since Su Xuan invited you, you must have some strength. We’re all in this together. I hope we can attain mutual trust and help each other.” Guo Xiong said with a straightforward laugh.

“Then, I’ll have to trouble Senior Brother Guo Xiong to take care of me.” Mu Chen laughed. He’d developed a good impression of this loud and robust man. He could sense that this Guo Xiong before him definitely

wasn't weak. He's much stronger than the usual Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase expert. Based on the ripples that Guo Xiong were giving off, he probably already had one foot on the path to the Heavenly Transform Stage. You could probably count them as Heavenly Transform Stages, anyways. The only thing hy lacked was the opportunity to fully boost him there. Within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, that was quite decent.

From the looks of it, Mu Chen was the weakest link on this mission. A Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase wasn't terribly outstanding. Even Su Ling'er had already stepped into the Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase. However, Guo Xiong and the rest didn't underestimate him because of that. Even though they hadn't personally witnessed Mu Chen's pact of three moves with Li Xuantong, they'd heard about it through the rumors. That was already enough to surprise them.

Who is Li Xuantong? He's the Rank 2 of the Heavenly Ranking! Even though Guo Xiong and Li Qing only ranked in the twenties, they were well aware of the gap between themselves and Li Xuantong. If they'd been in Mu Chen's position, they might not have even been able to withstand those three moves.

"It's about time. Let's get ready to move out."

Su Xuan lightly smiled, "I'll fill you in on the mission details along the way."

Mu Chen, Guo Xiong and Li Qing nodded. No objections.

"Let's go."

In response, Su Xuan fell silent. Her figure moved and took the lead as she flew towards the exit of Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Mu Chen and the rest followed.

Since coming to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, Mu Chen had never left the grounds. Therefore, he was unfamiliar with everything that was going on, and could only follow the lead of Su Xuan and the rest. As they flew, he gained a sense of just how vast the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was, for the first time. They only saw the boundary of

the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy after flying for several hours. As they approached, Mu Chen looked up at the sky and noticed the peculiar ripples of Spiritual Aura. Upon a closer look, he could sense the clouds rushing about through those strange ripples. These ripples were from Spiritual Arrays.

These Spiritual Array ripples were as broad as the ocean, cryptic, and extremely complicated. Mu Chen's face changed with just a glance. He could feel his Spiritual Energy turning chaotic; he immediately suppressed it.

"This is where the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy intersects with the outerworld. With this Spiritual Array protecting the academy, it'll be easy to leave the grounds, but not the other way. In order to enter, you'll have to obtain the "Institution Guide" to enter the Northern Heavens City. Otherwise, you'd be slaughtered by the Academy Guarding Spiritual Array." Su Xuan explained to Mu Chen, when she saw him looking up at the sky.

"The Northern Heavens City?" Mu Chen immediately asked in doubt after nodding to her explanation.

"It's an enormous city that stands outside of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. It's well-known throughout the Northern Heavens Continent. It's also considered the academy's number one defence."

"We're heading to the White Dragon Hillock, which is located at the center of the Northern Heavens Continent. It's about a three-day journey from here. We should hurry straight there."

Su Xuan looked at Mu Chen and said, "Mu Chen, this is your first time outside of the academy grounds. I should fill you in with some information about the Northern Heavens Continent."

Mu Chen nodded, with eyes filled with interest.

"The Northern Heavens Continent is extremely vast. Our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy sits at the heart of the continent and is also the largest force on this continent."

Su Xuan's voice was as gentle as running water, pouring across the heart. "But, don't assume that's going to make our trip any smoother."

"The Northern Heavens Continent conceals many talents. There are as many forces as there are stars in the sky – dragons and snakes mingled together, if you will. No one knows how many powerful figures are hidden around. Furthermore, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy has its own rules; any students who've ventured outside its borders are to rely on themselves. Unless you die, the academy won't interfere."

"Of course, the academy isn't going to ignore matters of life and death regarding its students. The moment one of its students dies, the academy is sure to investigate. When they find the murderer, they'll issue an order of arrest in the form of a mission. They'll chase the killer to the ends of the earth, leaving them nowhere to hide."

"Even so, every year, there are a few students who lose their lives to other sorts of mishaps while journeying out in the Northern Heavens Continent. The Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy can only avenge a few among them; there are also others who've died in vain."

As she spoke of that, Su Xuan's gentle face turned stern. "Therefore, when journeying out in the Northern Heavens Continent, we must be extra careful. If the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy is the ivory tower, then this is the genuine slaughter house. A slight carelessness could mean loss of life."

Mu Chen lightly nodded. Now that he'd left the grounds of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, he was no longer bound by their rules. On the flip side, it meant that the academy wasn't going to protect him, either. Survival and success on this Northern Heavens Continent would depend on his own capabilities.

There were many talented individuals hiding in the Northern Heavens Continent. Even though the academy was considered the strongest force, it had yet to claim the entire continent for itself. After all, their first priority was to nurture its students. From a certain angle, you could say that the academy needed the ruthless training grounds of the wild

Northern Heavens Continent. They knew that students would never become genuine experts if confined to cultivating inside the academy.

Only by undergoing endless trials of blood and fire could you temper a tenacious character. Moving forward bravely on the path of cultivation and never falling back.

And the other forces probably knew that. That's why they didn't fear the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, even though they knew of its size and strength. That's why so many students had left their bones buried in the wilderness of the continent.

Mu Chen gradually restrained the ripples in his heart. The smile and gentleness on his face also slowly and unconsciously vanished. As his smile disappeared, his expression turned much deeper.

It felt as if the clouds around were towering, lofty peaks that had just cleared a little.

The Blood Calamity of the Spiritual Road had let go of his restraint. Now, on the Northern Heavens Continent, he'd be able to exert his full strength with nothing to fear.

Although these changes were very tiny, Su Xuan, Guo Xiong, and Li Qing all noticed it. A strange look immediately flash through their eyes. Right now, Mu Chen gave off an air of someone who was well-experienced and had lots of training behind him, not someone who'd just left the grounds of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. No. Even those who were experienced didn't have such sword-sharp eyes.

"This Mu Chen isn't a simple guy."

This sentence flashed through all their hearts. Su Xuan lightly smiled and waved her jade hands.

"Let's head for the White Dragon Hillock."

Chapter 227: White Dragon City

The White Dragon Hillock was located slightly west of the center of the Northern Heavens Continent. This was a rather unusual place with some decent fame throughout the Northern Heavens Continent; it's rumored that countless experts once fell here during a centuries-old, earth-shaking battle. These rumors also claimed that the fallen included a Sovereign level expert.

When those experts fell, they left everything they had buried within this place. Since then, countless treasure hunters have gathered there, endlessly searching the White Dragon Hillock. There have actually been a lucky few who've managed to discover rather ample rewards. Some even managed to win those fallen experts' inheritances. From that point on, they soared from their former status as nameless nobodies, gaining some amount of renown within the Northern Heavens Continent.

When people heard that, the White Dragon Hillock's fame suddenly surged. In addition to the vastness and strangeness of the White Dragon Hillock, there were also many Spiritual Beasts wandering the area. That's why even though the White Dragon Hillock wasn't extremely famous, it still had quite a local reputation.

Not far from White Dragon Hillock, several lights suddenly streaked across the horizon. The outlines of a massive city could be seen in the distance.

"We'll reach White Dragon City next. It's the largest city in White Dragon Hillock. Everything in this area is controlled by White Dragon City Lord. Rumor has it that this person possesses the strength of a Heavenly Transform Stage. He's certainly not weak. You could say he's a small overlord of this territory."

As they flew on, Su Xuan's soft voice sounded in their ears.

"We'll first find lodging in White Dragon City and gather information. Usually, there are some abnormalities when a Spirit Treasury emerges. It'd definitely attract a lot of people. We'll have to take note of which forces

we need to be careful of."

Su Xuan was evidently experienced with these sort of missions; she was especially thorough with her plans. Mu Chen heard her and formed no opinions, of course. He nodded his head.

Su Xuan lightly smiled at that. Her figure moved and descended, landing outside the city.

Mu Chen followed. As he approached, he sensed just how majestic this city was. The city walls were built from Black Stones and were several hundred feet tall. It was a towering structure, giving off an impenetrable feeling.

In terms of both scale and name, this city was several dozen times greater than their Mu Territory's city. Mu Chen couldn't help sighing. Compared to the Northern Heavens Continent, not to mention a small Northern Spiritual Realm, the Hundred Spirit Continent could only be considered ordinary.

After all, even if the Mu Territory did control a decent-sized territory, Mu Feng was still only at the Spirit Stage Late Phase. However, even the City Lord of White Dragon City already possessed the strength of a Heavenly Transform Stage. If this lord had lived on the Hundred Spirit Continent, he would've already become the Lord of several Realms.

Streams of people constantly flowed throughout the city entrance. The bustling noise informed them of the character of the city.

"Let's enter the city as well."

Su Xuan lightly waved her jade hands as she led Mu Chen and the rest of the group into the city. As they walked in, the air became even more vigorous.

"We'll search for a place to lodge and then head for the trading sector of the city. It's the area with the most information flow, as well as the largest auction house. That's where we'll make our preparations for this spirit treasury hunt."

First, Su Xuan led her team in search of an inn. Then, they headed

towards the trading sector that was located at the heart of the city. This should be the most flourishing part of White Dragon City. All sorts of Spiritual Artifacts, Soul Essences, Spiritual Arts, and various other treasures were on sale. As long as you could afford it, it was yours.

Su Ling'er's feminine side was excited and enamoured with the dazzling pieces on display. However, Su Xuan pulled her back with a helpless smile. "Most of these are just ordinary things. There's an auction house in the deepest part of the trading sector; that's where you'll find the good stuff. In a while, we'll also head over there for a look. We'll also be able to see which forces and experts have gathered here."

Su Ling'er nodded with reluctance and let Su Xuan pull her away, deeper into the trading sector.

As they walked, their group gathered quite a bit of attention. It had nothing to do with Mu Chen or Guo Xiong; it was solely because of Su Xuan, Su Ling'er, and Li Qing. Their characters were entirely different; sweet-tempered, pampered and charming, and ice-cold. Anyone would be dazzled with just a look.

Mu Chen and Guo Xiong followed behind them, feeling the glares of heated from all around. They helplessly exchanged looks and smiled. No matter where they were, beautiful girls always attracted attention.

The five of them quickly moved through the trading sector, only slowing once they reached the heart of it. Here stood a majestic hall, with endless streams of people moving about. At the entrance stood fully-equipped guards. Anyone who wanted to enter the auction house would have to pay 10,000 Spirit Coins. This standard was clearly different from any other auction house they'd known before.

Su Xuan paid the entrance fee for five people with a wave of her hand, then led the four of them into the huge hall. As they entered the hall, their lines of sight expanded. They could see a vast auction hall at the end of the other passage. Currently, the auction hall was filled with people, clearly showing how popular the place was.

The party moved towards the front and found seats. Mu Chen swept his

eyes around. Usually, you'd have to possess quite a bit of power and status to sit in these kinds of seats.

As of now, there were already people lazily slouching or idly staring at nothing, waiting for the auction to begin.

Mu Chen swept his sharp eyes towards the front, quickly finding a white-clothed youth, who was seated in front, towards the left. He was leisurely fanning himself. Beside him were two very sexily-dressed ladies, who were snuggling up to him, lightly smiling as they teased.

Next to that white-clothed youth, sat a withered grey-robed old man. His eyes were shut as though he was blind and deaf as he sat beside that youth. From the looks of it, he seemed to be in-charge of protecting that youth.

"That should be the Young City Master of White Dragon City." Su Xuan said suddenly clarified in a soft voice.

"Senior Sister Su Xuan knows him?"

"His sleeves have white dragons embroidered on them. That's the symbol of White Dragon City. Furthermore, the old man next to him is a Heavenly Transform Stage Initial Phase. Aside from the Young City Master, I'm afraid no one else in this city could get such treatment." Li Qing lightly explained. Her voice was light but cold, filled with dense loathing. It wasn't directed at Mu Chen, but at that youth who had two girls snuggling up to him with their ample figures. It was clear that she was disgusted by such a lecher.

Only after that did Mu Chen get it. He'd already noticed that the grey-robed elder wasn't quite ordinary. However, this was his first time here. Of course, he didn't know about the symbol of White Dragon City.

Su Xuan's expression quivered as she looked ahead, towards the right. "Even the Heavenly Dipper Sword Sect's members are here." She was looking at several figures, the leader of whom wore yellow clothes. He was thin, but had especially sharp eyes. Based on the faintly discernible Spiritual Energy ripples he was giving off, he wasn't any weaker than that grey-robed old man. Next to him were several young girls and boys. Each

of them wore the symbol of a golden sword on their chest.

"The Heavenly Dipper Sword Sect?" Mu Chen followed Su Xuan's gaze. But since this was his first in the Northern Heavens Continent, he was clearly unfamiliar with other forces' symbols.

"Within a thousand miles of White Dragon Hillock, there are three forces that are considered the strongest. White Dragon City, the Heavenly Dipper Sword Faction, and the Earthen Way Sect. Usually, they'd be guarding their own territories and wouldn't bother showing up in each other's territories. But now, they've actually gathered here. I wonder if they're also here due to the appearance of the Spirit Treasury." said Su Xuan.

"Can't be helped. The appearance of a Spirit Treasury usually attracts some abnormal movements. They're also locals of the White Dragon Hillock. How could they let themselves miss out on such a good opportunity?" Guo Xiong helplessly replied. If the Spirit Treasury attracted too much attention, then their harvest would naturally decrease.

"Now, let's see if the Earthen Way Sect shows up."

Su Xuan lightly nodded. However, before she could finish her words, her expression changed. Mu Chen noticed the change and turned to look. Not far away, there was a group of people wearing earth-yellow clothes approaching. The one leading them was a skinny old man with sunken eyes. He slowly strolled towards the auction house and sat down in the frontmost seats.

Mu Chen understood just by looking. Those people should be from the Earthen Way Sect that Su Xuan had just been talking about.

This time, all three major forces within a thousand miles had gathered in White Dragon City.

Xu Suan, Guo Xiong and Li Qing exchanged glances and slightly frowned their brows. It seemed that the difficulty of their mission had just increased.

Mu Chen also stared at the three forces; he noticed that the moment all

three leaders arrived, everyone suddenly started staring straight ahead at the auction stage. Rays of light flashed in the depths of their eyes.

"These guys..."

Mu Chen knitted his brows and also looked towards the auction stage as rays of light flashed through his mind.

"Are we waiting for the auction to start? What's caught everyone's attention?"

Chapter 228: Spiritual Array Seed

Shiiiii!

The sounds of bells and drums echoed throughout the huge auction house. Many people sat up in an instant, straightening their bodies as they directed excited expressions towards the auction stage. They knew the sign – the auction was starting soon.

Numerous adventure teams had gathered in White Dragon Hillock. Each day, they hunted ferocious Spiritual Beasts, while also searching for Spiritual Treasuries. Once the harvest passed inspection, most of it ended up at the auction house. All the good stuff within a thousand miles of White Dragon Hillock ended up at this particular one.

Many people had come here for that. After all, a High Rank Spiritual Artifact could save a life in desperate fights. To many of the smaller adventure teams, it was absolutely crucial. In the end, life is the most important.

When Su Xuan and the rest heard the sound, they also focused their attention. Especially Mu Chen, who'd noticed the strange air between the three major forces; he paid extra attention.

Watched by a hall full of eyes, a fat middle-aged man slowly walked onto the spacious auction stage with a face full of smiles. He cupped his hands towards the crowd and said, "Haha. Ladies and Gentlemen, my name is Bi Sheng, Chief Auctioneer of the Nine Xia Merchants' White Dragon City auction house. First, allow me to thank everyone on behalf of the Nine Xia Merchants for attending this event."

"So, the auction house here is managed by the Nine Xia Merchants." Su Xuan said softly as she heard the name.

"The Nine Xia Merchants are famous in the Northern Heavens Continent?" Mu Chen asked in a low voice.

Su Xuan lightly smiled. "The Nine Xia Merchants are one of the three largest mercantile groups in the Northern Heavens Continent. What do

you think? They possess powerful strength. Although the overlord of White Dragon Hillock is only really a local overlord – he can't hold a candle to the Nine Xia Merchants."

Mu Chen understood that. No wonder the Young City Lord of White Dragon City was keeping to himself over there.

At least the auctioneer named Bi Sheng didn't get too long-winded with this speech. He made a quick transition and moved over to the main topic. With a wave of his hand, a sword case appeared onstage.

The sword case opened, revealing a three-foot-long green blade, rippling with a dense green luster. As the green energy poured out, it showed the image of a large green eagle on the blade. The eagle flapped its wings, creating wind blades, engulfing everything. Sonic booms sounded so loudly, it seemed as if the air had cracked.

This clearly wasn't a Low Rank Spiritual Artifact; there was even a Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence sealed within the sword. It wouldn't be weak.

"Haha. Ladies and Gentlemen's, this is the Azure Eagle Sword. It's a Middle Rank Spiritual Artifact. Sealed inside is the Soul Essence of an Azure Light Eagle, with strength comparable to a Heavenly Fusion Stage. As everyone knows, the Azure Light Eagle is known for its speed. At its fastest, even a Heavenly Transform Stage expert would have a hard time hunting it. It has now been refined into this sword, enhancing its power by several folds. If there's any friend here today who's an expert with swords, don't miss out on this opportunity!" Bi Sheng said with his eyes narrowing as he smiled.

"The starting bid for this sword is 150,000 Spirit Coins."

The auction hall was briefly silent by such an expensive price. However, the lull was soon broken with all sorts of voices. A Middle Rank Spiritual Artifact with the Soul Essence of an Azure Light Eagle was indeed worthy of such a price.

Mu Chen looked around the auction house, hearing all the yelling. He couldn't help making a bitter smile for a brief moment. When he left the

Northern Spiritual Realm, Mu Feng had prepared 150,000 Spirit Coins for him. That was already a decent sum for the Mu Territory. But here, it was the lowest starting price for a Middle Rank Spiritual Artifact.

The yelling continued around the auction house for several minutes, before slowly dying down. In the end, the "Azure Eagle Sword" was sold for 190,000 Spirit Coins to a skinny middle-aged man.

Once the "Azure Eagle Sword" had been sold, the atmosphere in the auction house gradually rose. The auctioneer Bi Sheng was clearly experienced with these sort of auctions. Next came a series of decent quality items. Most were Spiritual Arts, all of those were High Rank Spiritual Tiers. Each priced over a million.

Spiritual Arts were rather good treasures to many people of this area; however, Mu Chen, Su Xuan, and the others who'd come from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy would find them ordinary. Especially Mu Chen, who'd had a glimpse of the Spiritual Arts Hall's vast collection. It was harder for him to see much more value in these things.

"There's nothing good." Su Ling'er muttered. She clearly wasn't very satisfied with the quality of the auctions.

"Let's wait a little longer. The good things are usually towards the end." Su Xuan lightly smiled. She wasn't impatient.

Mu Chen also nodded. He'd noticed that the members of the three major forces were still quietly seated. Even up until now, none of them had made a move. They were obviously still waiting for the better pieces to appear.

"Haha, the next item for auction is a little special. A team adventuring in the White Dragon Hillock managed to find it by sheer luck. By our appraisals, it should be an item left behind by a High Rank Spiritual Array Master."

On the stage, Bi Sheng's pair of hands carefully held up a jade box, the middle of which was decorated with a metal spheres. However, what confused everyone was the fact that none of them could sense any powerful Spiritual Energy rippling from it.

“Haha. Everyone, please don’t underestimate this. If we’ve appraised correctly, then these should be “Spiritual Array Seed” that only powerful Spiritual Array Masters can create.”

Bi Sheng narrowed his eyes and smiled. “Only Spiritual Array Masters with extraordinary abilities can carve such complex and frightening Spiritual Arrays onto this small metal spheres. When facing opponents, all they have to do is throw this “Spiritual Array Seed”, which will instantly form Spiritual Arrays. It’s really mysterious and unusual.”

From one of the front seats, the Earthen Way Sect’s skinny old man glanced at the rusty metal balls and sneered. “Hehe. Hey Fat Bi, it’s true that these ‘Spiritual Array Seed’ must be created by High Rank Spiritual Array Masters. But you’ll still have to check the level of the Spiritual Arrays carved on these ‘Spiritual Array Seed’. If they turn out to be only Rank 1 or 2 Spiritual Arrays, then, what’s the point?”

“You’ll also need a special method to activate them. Even if you have a ‘Spiritual Array Seed’, you won’t be able to activate it if you aren’t familiar with it.”

Everyone in the auction house nodded as they listened. Bi Sheng had been vague on purpose; he was clearly digging a hole and hoping that people would jump in.

“Haha, Brother Tu truly has a vicious foresight. No wonder you’re an Elder of the Earthen Way Sect.” Even though he’d been exposed, Bi Sheng wasn’t enraged at all. Instead, he nodded and smiled. “These ‘Spiritual Array Seed’ are rather ancient. We invited a Rank 3 Spiritual Array Master to study them, but even he couldn’t understand them. The only thing he said was that these Spiritual Arrays definitely surpassed his rank. It’s true that they’ll only serve the purpose of being decorations; but, of course, to some people, they could also be a formidable treasure.”

“Let’s not say any more. The starting price for this “Spiritual Array Seed” is 30,000.”

“Hissss.”

As Bi Sheng’s words landed, the auction crowd hissed. This guy hadn’t

even clearly stated the rank of the Spiritual Arrays carved on these "Spiritual Array Seed" and was daring to ask for 30,000 for just one seed.

However, there was quite a number of Spiritual Array Masters among the auction crowd who were rather interested in it and started bidding. But once the price had reached 50,000, the voices quieted down.

"Haha, this friend over here has offered a price of 50,000. Is there anyone who is willing to go even higher?" Bi Sheng smiled.

Mu Chen stared at this particular "Spiritual Array Seed" and his eyes narrowed as a strange light flashed through his eyes. He'd already entered the Heart Array State to observe the "Spiritual Array Seed". The complicated patterns clearly surpassed the category of Rank 3. According to Mu Chen's speculations, the Spiritual Array carved on this "Spiritual Array Seed" might be compatible to a portion of his "Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array".

This really was some good stuff.

A thought flashed over Mu Chen's heart and he lightly smiled. "60,000."

The sudden sound in the quiet auction house attracted quite a bit of attention. So much so that even the members of the three major forces also turned their heads in his direction.

Even the white-clothed youth, with two beautiful girls hugging him, also lazily glanced at Mu Chen. Then his eyes focused. A blaze was lit within his eyes.

"Premium qualities." His eyes were fiery as he looked at Su Xuan, Su Ling'er, and Li Qing sitting next to Mu Chen. His heart pounded. Compared to the two girls in his embrace, those three were on another level.

"Since when did our White Dragon City have such premium qualities?" That white-clothed youth let go of the two girls in his embrace and licked his lips. His eyes were filled with unconcealed lust for the three girls.

"What are you staring at? You don't want your eyes anymore?!" Su

Ling'er was the first to sense the white-clothed youth's covetous gaze. Her face turned cold as she coldly growled. Her personality was violent to begin with; back in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, she was already so hard to deal with. Now, upon seeing the gaze coming from this white-clothed youth, she was even more furious. Being frank and outspoken, she naturally didn't give him any face.

Su Xuan also glanced at the youth with indifference. However, she did not speak. Meanwhile, the loathing in Li Qing's eyes was unconcealed as she glared back at him, it was so hard that you could sense the bloodthirst.

"Haha, a little chili pepper with just enough spice. I like it."

Even though Su Ling'er had shouted at him, he wasn't angered. Instead, he licked his lips and lazily waved his hand. "100,000 Spirit Coins. I, the Young Master, want that Spiritual Array Seed."

Chapter 229: White Dragon Jade Pillar

100,000?

When the white-clothed youth announced his price, a commotion broke out in the auction house. Such a sum clearly surpassed the estimated price of the Spiritual Array Seed by a long shot.

Eyes shifted between the white-clothed youth and Mu Chen, then to Su Xuan and the other two girls, who currently had angry wolf-like expressions. Then, they understood what was going on.

Most of the people in this auction hall had lived in White Dragon Hillock for quite some time. Of course, they knew that the Young City Lord was very lustful. Who knows how many girls had fallen into his hands over the years? From the looks of it, these three unfamiliar, but beautiful, girls had caught his attention, so he'd purposely stirred matters up.

Mu Chen slightly furrowed his brows. He never thought that the smooth auction might be interrupted by this guy. Mu Chen, himself, also didn't possess much wealth; even if he tried to compete, he knew he wasn't going to win.

The white-clothed youth laughed at Mu Chen's frown, showing off his status as a hedonistic rich-kid.

Su Ling'er's shapely brows lightly moved. She saw the proud look from that youth. A little Young City Lord of White Dragon City dared to put on an act before her?

"150,000." Su Ling'er coldly said.

A commotion broke out in the auction house again. Quite a few people were looking over in interest. From the looks of it, this pampered-looking young miss wasn't someone easy to deal with.

Those from the Heavenly Dipper Sword Faction and the Earthen Way Sect also looked over at Mu Chen's group and showed surprise. Then, the middle-aged man of the Heavenly Dipper Sword Faction and skinny old

man from the Earthen Way Sect stopped their eyes on Su Xuan. They'd clearly sensed her strength.

A trace of astonishment flashed across their eyes. This girl was clearly quite young, but she was already so powerful? These youths definitely weren't simple.

That white-clothed youth was also dazed for a moment. The eyes that'd been watching the exchange with amusement suddenly flashed with gloom. No one in White Dragon City would dare to go against the Young City Master like that.

"200,000." He said after glancing back at Su Ling'er.

"250,000." Su Ling'er added. Her charming eyes were filled with mockery. Now, she'd put him on the stage where he couldn't back down.

"YOU...!" The youth raged. The moment he let out that furious bark, the grey-clothed elder pressed him on the shoulder.

The grey-clothed elder opened his eyes and said, "Young City Lord, there's no need to make trouble. They aren't ordinary people. That girl in white is so powerful that even I might not win. Just let it go. Our target isn't this Spiritual Array Seed, so, please, don't make unnecessary trouble; otherwise, I wouldn't be able to face the City Lord."

When the white-clothed youth heard the elder's words, his face changed through several shades of green and red. He never expected to embarrass himself in front of so many people. However, he only nodded, as he didn't dare to ignore this elder. He then threw a ruthless glance towards Mu Chen's group, before looking away.

"Hmph, a little Young City Lord of White Dragon City dared to be arrogant before me?" Su Ling'er snorted as she saw how suffocating that youth was acting.

"This price is already a little high." Mu Chen helplessly smiled. The information on the Spiritual Array Seed wasn't complete, after all. By spending 250,000 Spirit Coins, he felt like they'd lost a little.

"It's his fault for having such dirty eyes." Su Ling'er twisted her lips into

a pout, but then smiled, “I’ll gift this Spiritual Array Seed to you. I’m not a Spiritual Array Master, so I won’t have a use for it.”

“Then, you have my thanks. I don’t have the money right now, but I’ll return it to you next time.” Mu Chen didn’t reject the offer as he was still rather interested in this Spiritual Array Seed. He only thought of oweing a favour this time.

“Who asked you to return it? We’re companions, right now, so helping each other is natural.” Su Ling’er said as she rolled her eyes at him.

“What Ling’er said is correct. This Spiritual Array Seed shouldn’t be ordinary. If you can study it, who knows? It might be of huge help to us.” Su Xuan lightly smiled. Her gentle smile moved many hearts around them. A woman like her was considerably outstanding. No wonder even Bai Dong couldn’t endure it.

Mu Chen smiled, nodded, and stayed silent.

The auction continued, but Mu Chen didn’t find anything else interesting after his Spiritual Array Seed, and was slightly disappointed. The three major forces sitting in front of them didn’t buy anything, either. It was clear that they’d each come for a specific target, and it seemed that their targets lied in a similar direction.

The auction gradually wound towards its end; however the atmosphere became increasingly excited. Bi Sheng stood onstage with a full smile on his face as he swept an eye over the three major forces without making it clear that he was looking at them. Then, he retrieved an object from his sleeve with exasperating slowness.

The moment that object came out, Mu Chen felt brilliant rays of light as they rushed forth in the eyes of the three major forces. The grey-robed elder next to the white-robed youth hadn’t moved at all, until this point, but now, even he was tightly focused.

Mu Chen followed their eyes back to the stage and saw a jade rod appear in Bi Sheng’s hand, roughly 2 inches long. The surface of the rod seemed to be decorated with a barely visible engraving of a white dragon in flight. On the head of that dragon was the vague impression of a person

sitting cross-legged.

The moment this White Dragon Jade Dowel appeared, it started to vibrate. As powerful lights were emitted, what seemed to be the mournful cries of a dragon tore through the hall. It was a misery too strong for words, like a tsunami bearing down upon them.

The misery quickly permeated the hall. Within a few moments, everyone's faces were white, as if their Spiritual Energies had stopped flowing. The pressure was filling them with a dread born from the pits of their hearts.

What is this?!

What terrifying pressure!

Cries of alarm rose and fell. Everyone eyed the White Dragon Jade Dowel with shaken hearts. Was this the last item left for the end of the auction?

"What is that?" Su Ling'er also watched with curiosity. Something that surprised her had finally appeared in this auction.

Under such spiritual pressure, Su Xuan's lovely eyes also stared at the White Dragon Jade Dowel. She lightly said, "I'm afraid this item probably belonged to a Sovereign."

"A Sovereign?!"

Mu Chen, Guo Xiong, and Li Qing felt light jolts in their hearts upon hearing those words. An item left behind by a Sovereign? Such a treasure actually made its appearance here?

"Haha. Ladies and Gentlemen, this White Dragon Jade Dowel was discovered in the depths of White Dragon Hillock. We have concluded that this White Dragon Jade Dowel was most probably left behind by the White Dragon Sovereign who fell several hundred years ago in White Dragon Hillock." Bi Sheng said as he lifted the White Dragon Jade Dowel with great caution.

"The White Dragon Sovereign?!"

The entire auction was shocked. Countless eyes had turned red. As everyone knew, among the experts who'd fallen in the White Dragon Hillock, the White Dragon Sovereign was the most famous. Back then, the White Dragon Sovereign was an extremely powerful existence, even for the entire Northern Heavens Continent. However, no one had ever managed to obtain his inheritance after his death. But now, it's finally been discovered?

An item left behind by a Sovereign was more than enough to make them go crazy with greed.

Recently, there had been a rise in the level of abnormal activity in the depths of White Dragon Hillock. It only took a little thinking for everyone to understand that these were signs that a Spirit Treasury was emerging. Furthermore, the White Dragon Dowel had appeared with amazing timing. It was highly likely that this new Spirit Treasury might be the one left behind by the White Dragon Sovereign. The information bomb that Bi Sheng had tossed instantly exploded in the auction house. Countless breaths grew heavier.

A lot of people had already noticed the abnormalities in the depths of White Dragon Hillock; however, even if they knew that a Spirit Treasury was about to appear, most of them thought it would only be an ordinary Spirit Treasury. Therefore, most people didn't think too much about it and only focused on trying their luck out there. After all, there were many Spiritual Treasuries that would periodically emerge in White Dragon Hillock. Most of those were ordinary, anyways. However, now, it looked like this new Spirit Treasury might be the one left behind by the White Dragon Sovereign. Wouldn't that be a Sovereign Spirit Treasury?

There were huge differences between Spirit Treasury of that level and ordinary ones. It was enough to shake the entire White Dragon Hillock.

Mu Chen's group also exchanged looks as chaos broke out around them.

"Didn't the information say it'd be a Wealthy Spirit Treasury? How'd it turn into a Sovereign Spirit Treasury?" Guo Xiong asked blankly.

Su Xuan also slightly knitted her brows. "It seems that there was a

mistake in our information. It'll be troublesome this time. If it'd been only a Wealthy Spirit Treasury, then our mission would've been a smooth one. But, since it's a Sovereign Spirit Treasury, it'll probably attract more experts, or even the three major forces. When the time comes, a great battle will be unavoidable."

Even though their party wasn't weak, they were still low in numbers. Trying to confront the powerful local forces with only the five of them would be rather difficult. Furthermore, there were still many powerful adventurer teams in White Dragon Hillock. Those people weren't easy to deal with, either.

"It might not be a genuine Sovereign Spirit Treasury. Who knows, that fat-ass probably just said that to drive up the price," Su Ling'er muttered.

"That's possible," Su Xuan lightly nodded. Then, her charming eyes focused on the White Dragon Jade Dowel on the stage. "We'll wait and see how the situation plays out."

Guo Xiong and the rest of them nodded. Right now, that was the only thing they could do.

Mu Chen also directed his attention towards the White Dragon Jade Dowel on the stage and noticed the nervous expression coming from the three major forces. His heart, however, sensed Bi Sheng's words were probably all true. The Spirit Treasury that'd emerged this time might really be the one left behind by that White Dragon Sovereign.

"It looks like our mission just gained a lot more twists and turns."

Chapter 230: Competition

With the appearance of the White Dragon Jade Dowel, the entire auction house boiled over with an impassioned gaze. Many lines of sight fixedly stared at the dowel. Even though Bi Sheng hadn't been terribly clear with his words, the effect was the same — if the new Spirit Treasury in the White Dragon Hillock really was a Sovereign Spirit Treasury, then this White Dragon Jade Dowel might be a crucial object for it.

If they could get their hands on this White Dragon Jade Dowel, wouldn't you be able to increase their chances of finding the Sovereign Spirit Treasury?

Quite a few of those stares were heated and filled with greed. If they could find the Sovereign Spirit Treasury, then their cultivations could scale the skies in a single step. If they could get their hands on the White Dragon Jade Dowel, then they'd require an even shorter time to soar through the heavens in this Northern Heavens Continent!

Bi Sheng gave the auction crowd a narrow-eyed smile and said, "Haha. Of course, we cannot neglect the connection between this White Dragon Jade Dowel and the White Dragon Sovereign. But, as to whether the true usage of it, we cannot say for sure, either. Only the one who wins this piece in today's auction may study it."

"Now, we'll start bidding. The starting price is 3,000,000 Spirit Coins."

Bi Sheng waved his large hand and slightly raised the White Dragon Jade Dowel, spreading and shrouding the hall with its radiance. The faintly discernible pressure seemed to have traces of freezing the air inside the auction house.

"3,500,000."

The white-clothed youth named Bai Dong was the first to speak, displaying White Dragon City's determination to win this piece.

"4,000,000."

But this time, it looked like White Dragon City wasn't going to have an

easy time. The moment Bai Dong's voice landed, the Heavenly Dipper Sword faction followed. The one who spoke was the middle-aged man with eyes as cold and sharp as the edge of a steel blade.

Bai Dong heard that and shot them a vicious glare; however, the middle-aged man appeared not to have noticed it. His eyes were focused only on the White Dragon Jade Dowel. White Dragon City may be powerful, but the Heavenly Dipper Faction wasn't afraid of them.

And, just as Bai Dong was giving off the vicious stare, the old man wearing a yellow robe from the Earthen Way Sect parted his lips. He flashed his large yellow teeth and said with a beaming smile, "4,500,000."

A collective sigh seemed to pass over the audience as they watched the three major forces engage in a bidding war. They understood that they didn't stand a chance against those three wealthy and imposing forces.

Su Ling'er seemed to have her curiosity aroused by the White Dragon Jade Dowel. Just when she was getting ready to call out her own price. However, Mu Chen stopped her.

"What are you doing? If we can get our hands on that White Dragon Jade Dowel, then we might be able to find the Sovereign Spirit Treasury," Su Ling'er said as she pouted.

"That thing is a hot potato. We can't take it." Mu Chen replied as he shook his head.

Who knows how many people had their eye on that White Dragon Jade Dowel? If their party bought it in such a public place, then they'd probably be followed by numerous people, once they left the auction house. Forget about finding the treasures. Once they left the city, the trouble would start like an endless stream. There were only five of them; they had no hope of dealing with it all. Even with Su Xuan's Heavenly Transform Stage strength, she couldn't possibly intimidate everyone who came after them.

"En. Mu Chen is right." Su Xuan lightly nodded her head in agreement and glared at Su Ling'er, who was still pouting. "Don't mess around. Otherwise, I won't take you out on any more missions."

Only after being threatened by Su Xuan, did Su Ling'er duck down her little head.

"What's your opinion on the situation?" Su Xuan looked to Mu Chen with a faint smile. Even though Mu Chen was about the same age as Su Ling'er, she could tell that his actions carried great experience behind them. Almost like an upperclassman who was used to going outside for training.

"We'll watch for any changes. If this White Dragon Jade Dowel really is connected to the newly emerged Spirit Treasury, then, when the time comes, there'll be an intense battle. We're low on manpower, so we'll have to stick to the shadows and watch for opportunities. If we get caught in heavy fire, we'd only have to immediately abort the mission. Otherwise, we'll suffer disastrous losses." Mu Chen muttered.

Guo Xiong, who was sitting next to him, nodded in agreement. Li Qing gave Mu Chen a second look. Who would've thought that this freshman actually had a skill or two?

Su Xuan nodded her delicate head and looked towards at the three major forces, who were really starting to get into their bidding war. She lightly smiled and said, "Then, for now, let's just sit back and watch the show."

Mu Chen responded with a laugh and pointed his eyes towards the front. Within a short few minutes, the Young City Lord of the White Dragon City had already hiked the dowel's price up to 6,000,000 Spirit Coins. That price certainly wasn't low anymore. If this was back in the Northern Spiritual Realm, his Mu Territory wouldn't even be able to scrape up so much wealth in one sitting.

When the price reached 6,000,000, the eyes of the middle-aged man from the Heavenly Dipper Sword Faction turned gloomy. Light slightly flickered in his eyes. Then, he spoke in a low, gravely voice, instantly inflating the price by another million. "7,000,000."

Some members of the audience secretly licked their lips. It looked like this Heavenly Dipper Sword Faction had also come prepared.

When 7,000,000 was announced, even White Dragon City and the Earth

Way Sect quieted down for a brief moment. Shortly after, the Young City Lord exchanged a look with the grey-robed elder sitting next to him and coldly smiled, “Elder Chen Kun has quite the resolve.”

The middle-aged man named Chen Kun lightly smiled and replied, “We wouldn’t dare to compare ourselves against the rich and imposing White Dragon City.”

“My White Dragon City is determined to win this White Dragon Jade Dowel. If you want to compete, then my White Dragon City will accompany you to the end.” Bai Dong coldly laughed and waved his hand. “8,000,000.”

The Heavenly Dipper Sword Faction’s Chen Kun frowned at the new price.

“Haha. If the White Dragon City has such confidence, then my Earthen Way Sect will give you another push.” The yellow-robed elder showed a mischievous smile and said, “9,000,000. If your White Dragon City can get over that price, then we’ll give up on the White Dragon Jade Dowel.”

“9,000,000…”

A massive sigh exploded in the auction house. It’s no wonder why these guys were hailed as the three strongest forces within a thousand miles of the White Dragon Hillock. To people like themselves, these prices like those meant nothing more but words.

They remembered that a year ago, a Quasi-Deity Tier Spiritual Art had wound up in this auction house. Back then, it sold for about 10,000,000 Spirit Coins. And now, this White Dragon Jade Dowel will soon reach 10,000,000, and no one even knew how to use it.

“That god damned Huang Tu, old demon.” Bai Dong sent another vicious glare towards the yellow-robed old man and gnashed his teeth. Even though White Dragon City had some inside connections, 10,000,000 Spirit Coins wasn’t cheap for them, either. But, if they wanted the White Dragon Jade Dowel, then they had to match the price. And Bai Dong’s father had already given the order — they were to get that White Dragon Jade Dowel at any cost.

"10,000,000!"

Bai Dong stood up and barked. The audience immediately sucked in a cold lungful of air. Did White Dragon City have to act as if their life depended on it? Why did they have to spend 10,000,000 Spirit Coins to buy an object that no one even knew how to use?

10,000,000 Spirit Coins should be worth half a year's revenue for White Dragon City, right?

"How generous." Guo Xiong also smacked his lips. He was surprised that White Dragon City was willing to hand over such wealth.

Mu Chen also nodded. 10,000,000 Spirit Coins. Even Mu Territory's yearly revenue could never reach such a number.

When Bai Dong smashed the sky high price of 10,000,000 down. Even the Heavenly Dipper Sword Faction and the Earthen Way Sect seemed to have their fires put out. This price was already at their limits. The most important thing was whether or not they could match White Dragon City's determination. This made them realize that it was useless, even if they continued to compete at their limits.

Bi Sheng stood on stage with his thin-eyed smile, watching the show play out. He waited briefly, until he was sure that no one else was willing to raise the price. Then, he raised the auction gavel, made the last three calls, and heavily brought down the gavel.

When the auction gavel landed, the crowd knew that this White Dragon Jade Dowel had landed in the hands of White Dragon City.

"Ah, ah. The Young City Lord has quite the resolution. I hope this Spirit Treasury really turns out to be a Sovereign Spirit Treasury. Otherwise, you've really taken a huge loss this time." The Heavenly Dipper Sword Faction's Chen Kun stood up and turned to smile at Bai Dong's party of two. Then, he led his own party straight out of the hall.

"Haha. It looks like White Dragon City has really paid with their blood. I hope my Earthen Way Sect will be able to pick a few scraps out of the mess. I suppose we'll take our leave." The Earthen Way Sect's yellow-

robed old man gave Bai Dong a squinty smile, waved, and led his party out.

Bai Dong gave the evil-eye to their retreating backs and gnashed his teeth. “Be cocky all you want. There’ll be a time when you will cry.”

“Let’s go.”

Su Xuan rose, called to Mu Chen and the others, and headed outside the hall. Behind them, Bai Dong longed after that graceful and nimble figure of hers. He felt like there was a blazing fireball in his heart. This sweet-tempered and cute little girl... would this flower pale and lose her color once he put himself on top?

But, when his insatiable eyes landed on Su Xuan’s lovely body, he suddenly sensed someone shoot a razor-sharp killing intent in his direction. He slightly turned his head and saw Mu Chen, standing behind Su Xuan, staring back at him with unsympathetic eyes. That icy expression chilled his heart.

Bai Dong started to feel rather uncomfortable under Mu Chen’s glare. His own expression dimmed, and the corner of this mouth lifted into a cruel smile. He lifted a hand and made a light slashing motion towards Mu Chen’s neck.

Mu Chen saw the motion, but his expression was still apathetic. Then, he turned away. Completely ignored Bai Dong.

Bai Dong turned green when saw that Mu Chen had completely disregarded his threat. He leaned his back and spoke to the grey-robed elder in a dim voice, “Elder Qiu, run a background check on those guys. I’d like to find out where this trash came from, for them to be daring enough to go against me inside this White Dragon City.”

The grey-robed elder gave a slight nod. Those strangers didn’t look like a party of adventurers. Not only that, they were quite powerful. Indeed, he’d need to do some research on their origins, in order to be on the safe side.

Bai Dong waved his sleeve and left the auction house through the opposite door. His expression was incomparably dark. He was going to make those guys understand just how stupid they were to provoke him

within the walls of his White Dragon City.

Chapter 231: Bai Xuan

The evening colors slowly advanced little by little, at last blanketing the enormous White Dragon City. But even though night was here, it couldn't suppress the liveliness of the city. The sounds of people bubbled up into the skies. Even from far away, others could still feel the flourishing city.

White Dragon City was especially lively today. The cause was the piece of news that'd recently been released from the auction house at noon. It was regarding the Sovereign Spirit Treasury.

A Sovereign Spirit Treasury.

Those few words alone were enough to redden the eyes of many. Everyone clearly understood the weight those words held.

Sovereign, a name meant for the true experts of this Great Thousand World. Only existences of that level could qualify to become the Lord of a Continent. Only people like them possess the qualifications to gain such authority.

Although Heavenly Fusion Stage experts were also very powerful, they were still a far cry from gaining control of an entire continent, or even making others worship them.

As for the Spirit Treasuries left behind by Sovereign level experts, those were, also, clearly incomparable to Heavenly Fusion Stage experts. If someone blindly stumbled upon a Sovereign's inheritance, they'd gain god-like aid on their cultivation path. They would break away from the ordinary.

Half the reason for the White Dragon Hillock's fame was due to the White Dragon Sovereign who had, once upon a time, fallen in this place.

People flocked here in droves in order to search for the Spirit Treasury that he'd left behind. But no one was able to find it in the past few hundred years. And, at long last, there was finally some news of this Sovereign Spirit Treasury. It didn't matter how much of this news was actually true. It was enough to make a lot of eyes turn red.

The entire White Dragon Hillock would be shaken by this news.

...

Mu Chen sat in a room in one of White Dragon City's Cultivating Pavilions. His attention was currently focused on the object in his hands – a rusty metal sphere roughly the size of a dragon's eye. The surface of the sphere was decorated with tiny, cryptic patterns.

This was the 'Spiritual Array Seed' that Su Ling'er had bought for him in the auction house, earlier today. Only a Spiritual Array Master could study this; therefore, Su Ling'er had given it to Mu Chen.

Mu Chen was clearly interested in it, as well. Forging a 'Spiritual Array Seed' of this level required a frightening amount of control. It was basically impossible for an ordinary Spiritual Array Master to forge it. Not even for Mu Chen.

"The Spiritual Array carved onto this 'Spiritual Array Seed' certainly isn't of a low rank."

Mu Chen carefully studied the 'Spiritual Array Seed' for half an hour before looking away with a grave expression. Based on those vague patterns, he could tell that this Spiritual Array was at least a Rank 4. It probably wasn't any weaker than his Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array. But, of course, Mu Chen's current Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array wasn't the complete one.

His current attainments in Spiritual Arrays had already reached the level of a Rank 3 Spiritual Array Master. If he entered into the Heart Array state, he could even come in contact with Rank 4 Spiritual Arrays. Usually, a Rank 3 Spiritual Array Master could form a maximum of 99 Spiritual Seals. Once that number reached 100, they'd qualify to be a Rank 4 Spiritual Array Master.

And the portion of the Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array that Mu Chen could set was exactly 100 Spiritual Seals. He just happened to land in the latter category.

Of course, with Mu Chen's current strength, he'd have to exert all his

energy, just like when he'd faced Li Xuantong. He'd even have to use the energy he shared with the Nine Nether Bird, as well as the Heart Array State. Only then could he successfully form those 100 Spiritual Seals and set up the Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array.

Mu Chen estimated that if he wanted to be able to set up the Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array as easily as he could set up a Rank 3 Spiritual Array, then he'd probably have to wait until he reached the Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase. Only after that would he be able to do it without needing to exert all his energy.

"In order to activate this Spiritual Array Seed, I'll need to thoroughly understand the Spiritual Array carved into it..."

Mu Chen muttered to himself. Generally speaking, this Spiritual Array Seed would only be useful in the hands of a Spiritual Array Master. Even if a regular person got their hands on it, they wouldn't be able to activate it without understanding the circulating trajectory of the Spiritual Array. If they recklessly injected Spiritual Energy into it, then the Spiritual Array Seed would explode and they'd only end up hurting themselves.

It wasn't a simple task to thoroughly understand the circulating trajectory, even for a Spiritual Array Master.

"It looks like I'll have to take it slow."

Mu Chen held onto the rusty Spiritual Array Seed and slowly closed his eyes. His mind gradually calmed, until he was as tranquil as a still pond. A sense of brightness slowly lit up and spread throughout his heart. This was the thorough sensing ability of the Heart Array State.

Mu Chen entered the Heart Array State and his mind slowly enveloped the Spiritual Array Seed that was resting in his palm. Traces of fine Spiritual Energy quietly drilled in. Then, he started to carefully explore the complicated Spiritual Array that was carved onto the seed.

This exploration process was extremely complicated. However, Mu Chen already had prepared himself for that. He calmed himself and began exploring it, bit by bit.

...

White Dragon City, City Lord's Mansion

In the depths of the mansion, Bai Dong and the grey-robed elder stood in a dimly lit study room. There was a table before them, and behind it was a white-haired, middle-aged man. This man was currently fixing his eyes on the White Dragon Jade Dowel that was flickering with Spiritual Energy pressure.

"This White Dragon Jade Dowel was left behind by the White Dragon Sovereign. It seems like there wasn't any mistake with our intelligence." The middle-aged man said. He lightly smiled as he held onto the White Dragon Jade Dowel.

Hearing his words, Bai Dong and the grey-robed elder released lungs full of stale air.

"Father, this newly emerging Spirit Treasury should be the one left behind by the White Dragon Sovereign, right?" Bai Dong asked in low voice.

"That should be correct." The man who Bai Dong had called "father" was Bai Xuan, White Dragon City's City Lord, of course. He was the overlord-like figure for the area within a thousand li 1 of the White Dragon Hillock.

"White Dragon Sovereign. Did that old fart really think he could hide the Spirit Treasury forever? I built this White Dragon City and searched for decades, all the while waiting for this day." Bai Xuan laughed indifferently. A dense, cold, and brilliant flight flickered in his eyes.

"As long as we find that supreme treasure, our mission is complete. When that happens, we'll leave this damned place and go back."

"Father, the Heavenly Dipper Sword Faction and the Earthen Way Sect have also sent their people over. Furthermore, once the news spreads, there might be reinforcements." said Bai Dong.

"Heavenly Dipper Sword Faction, Earthen Way Sect... Haha, just a bunch of small figures. When our Demonic Dragon Palace ruled the Northern Heavens Continent, forces like them could be erased with just the wave of

a hand." Bai Xuan's eyes flickered with a chilling light. "If it hadn't been for those Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy bastards, how could our Demonic Dragon Palace land in this situation? Back then, if that White Dragon Sovereign hadn't stolen our supreme treasure and rebelled, and if it hadn't been for those old farts of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, that academy wouldn't have had a chance to rule the Northern Heavens Continent!"

"Hmph, but it doesn't matter. Before long, our Demonic Dragon Palace will rise again. When that day comes, we'll definitely uproot the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy!"

The grey-robed elder's eyes flickered. "City Lord, there was a group of youths who recently arrived in the White Dragon City. They aren't very old, but they're extremely powerful. I secretly investigated and learned that they're from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy."

"Oh?" Bai Dong's brows frowned. Then he laughed nastily. "So they're from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. No wonder they were so arrogant."

"From the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?" Bai Xuan's brows knitted as he carried on, "Could they be here for the Sovereign Spirit Treasury, as well? Could the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy know about what was hidden? That's impossible!"

"It doesn't seem like it. Otherwise, they wouldn't have sent such a small party."

The grey-robed elder shook his head and continued, "Among them, there's a white-dressed girl who's the Rank 3 of the Heavenly Ranking, Su Xuan. She's probably at the Heavenly Transform Stage Middle Phase, extremely powerful. Aside from her, there's Guo Xiong and Li Qing, also ranked in the top 30 of the Heavenly Ranking. The other two were only Heavenly Fusion Stages – ordinary and nothing to fear."

Based on the grey-robed elder's words, you could tell that he was very familiar with the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

"Heavenly Transform Stage Middle Phase..." Bai Xuan held the White

Dragon Jade Dowel. The Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy definitely has their methods of nurturing students. They already possessed such frightful power at such tender ages.

"Father, what should we do? Those people from Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy actually dared to step into our territory! We definitely can't let them go. Furthermore, if they relay the news back to Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy and invite genuine experts to reinforce them, the situation could turn extremely unfavorable for us. Who knows if our preparations all these years will turn out to be in vain?" Bai Dong licked his lips. His voice was sinister; however, his eyes were filled with desire.

The grey-robed elder nodded to Bai Dong's words. "What Young City Lord said isn't wrong. Those students from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy are an unstable factor."

Bai Xuan's eyes narrowed. "That Su Xuan isn't weak. If we force them, she might slip away. If that happens, we'd be inviting even greater trouble."

"City Lord, among that group of five, the girl with the Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase cultivation is Su Xuan's biological sister. If we can capture her, Su Xuan will definitely refrain from shooting at the rat for fear of breaking the vases. Won't they be in our grasp?" The grey-robed elder said in a low voice.

Bai Xuan lightly smiled and nodded to his words. He heavily placed the White Dragon Jade Dowel on the table and said in solemn voice.

"Then let's get rid of all those unstable factors. Remember, don't take any actions within White Dragon City, so as to avoid attracting the attention of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy."

Bai Xuan smiled as he revealed his white teeth and a chilling aura.

"Wait until they exit White Dragon City, then send out the Demonic Dragon Guards to get rid of them. Anyways, there have been quite a number of Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy students who've died by our hands, the hands of the Demonic Dragon Palace..."

Chapter 232: White Dragon Hillock

Early the next day, Su Xuan's party left White Dragon City for the White Dragon Hillock. Even though White Dragon City was the largest city in the vicinity of the White Dragon Hillock, it was still located some distance away to avoid commotions caused by the local Spiritual Beasts. Therefore, Mu Chen's party had to quickly set upon their journey.

It was only after they left did they realize just how huge an impact the news made – the news that this Spirit Treasury was actually a Sovereign Spirit Treasury.

The wide road to the White Dragon Hillock was jammed with an astounding number of people. So much that even the air was periodically filled with figures that flashed overhead. Everyone was rushing in one direction – towards the White Dragon Hillock, as well.

Mu Chen's group felt helpless at this scene. They originally wanted to quietly explore; they never expected there to be such massive levels of activity.

"We should hurry to the White Dragon Hillock and find somewhere to set up camp, before nightfall. Otherwise, if we move around recklessly, we'll easily attract the attention of the Spiritual Beasts." Su Xuan said with a light voice.

Mu Chen and the others nodded at her words. Shortly after, their figures moved and streaked across the horizon.

As they rushed towards the White Dragon Hillock, they overlooked something. Some distance behind them, a dark gaze had locked onto them.

Mu Chen's party didn't rest at all on the trip; so, by the time dusk arrived, they could see the edge of the White Dragon Hillock.

It was a continuous mountain range with peaks of different heights. Among them was a ten thousand foot peak that soared into the heavens, piercing through the cloud layer and the edge of the sky. From time to

time, roars of beasts would resonate throughout the air, stirring the Spiritual Energy in the heavens and earth.

However, even such a towering mountain range couldn't conceal the baleful aura rising from the earth. This aura was left behind from the earth-shaking battle that took place a few hundred years ago. Countless experts had fallen and turned into skeletons.

"It's truly worthy of being a place that a Sovereign expert had once fallen." Mu Chen's group stood on the peak of a distant mountain and sighed at the cruel aura fluctuating throughout the White Dragon Hillock.

"The emerging Spirit Treasury happens to be located in the depths of the White Dragon Hillock. That area is filled with so many Spiritual Beasts that there might also be quite a few Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts. Of course, we'll also have to take note of other adventurer groups who've come to the White Dragon Hillock seeking treasure. Those people aren't going to be easy to deal with. Furthermore, they'll be extremely ruthless. If we end up offending them, they won't bother about our origins and definitely won't show any mercy for the sake of their interests." Su Xuan stared at the White Dragon Hillock that was streaming with a baleful aura. This wasn't a good place.

"Therefore, everyone has to work as one during this trip to the White Dragon Hillock. No one is to act on their own." Su Xuan said as she directed her line of sight towards Su Ling'er. Her charming eyes stared and continued, "Understood?"

Su Ling'er pouted. Was that directed at her? Was she really that unreliable?

The other three couldn't help smiling from the side.

"Let's move out. We'll search for a safe place to set up camp in the White Dragon Hillock." Su Xuan waved her jade-like hands. Then, her figure took the initiative and shot away, heading directly towards the baleful White Dragon Hillock. Mu Chen and the other three followed closely behind.

When they entered the White Dragon Hillock, they instantly felt a surge

of ice-cold air shroud them. This was thanks to the baleful aura of the White Dragon Hillock. If they allowed this to enter their bodies, it'd corrode them. Therefore, when parties entered this area, they usually had to circulate their Spiritual Energy to prevent the baleful aura from invading their bodies.

Mu Chen's group quickly flew over the White Dragon Hillock, encountering many adventurer parties along the way. When those blood-lusting adventurer groups saw their party, their eyes instantly lit up. Their gazes couldn't help moving all over Su Xuan, Su Ling'er, and Li Qing.

These people rarely ever saw such beautiful girls. Now that they encountered one, their hearts naturally itched.

But, even though their hearts itched, none of them were blind. Especially the leaders of their groups. They all stared at Su Xuan and her party in fear, with eyes on full guard. They barked, warning their members to keep their eyes peeled and avoid offending this party.

And because of that, their party didn't meet any trouble, even though Su Xuan and her companions were quite eye-catching. In addition, they were still in the outer borders of the White Dragon Hillock, so there were very few powerful Spiritual Beasts. Therefore, by the time night fell, they managed to find a good campsite.

They laid out their small camp in the middle of the desolate forest. The bonfire's flames soared and dispersed a faint light into the darkness.

The bonfire illuminated Su Xuan's gentle and charming face. She smiled and said, "Tonight, Guo Xiong is on guard duty. Remember not to let your guard down. Danger could appear at any time in a place like this."

Mu Chen and the others nodded. On their journey here, they'd already noticed a few adventurer parties with decent strength. Those parties still couldn't compete with theirs, even at their peak strength, but those parties had greater numbers. Furthermore, they were the ruthless-types who were used to blood. If there was a conflict, things could get troublesome.

After Su Xuan finished her instructions, she entered a tent with Su Ling'er. Mu Chen and Guo Xiong made some light conversation, before

Mu Chen returned to his tent, as well. Mu Chen continued studying the Spiritual Array Seed. With just a little more time, he should be able to grasp the seed's method of use.

As the bonfire flared, the small camp gradually quieted down. On a small hill a distance away, the shadow of a group appeared like a specter in the night.

Bai Dong stood at the front of that group, dressed in white, and coldly smiling at the scene before him. His tone was cold has he asked, "Elder Qiu, is everything ready?"

"All preparations are complete." The one named Elder Qiu spoke from behind him.

"Then, move out. Act according to the plan. Don't hurt my beauties." Bai Dong licked his lips as the lust soared within his eyes.

"Yes!"

The group behind him responded with deep and low voices. Then, there were a few sonic booms as they shot out into the night like spectres.

Bai Dong stood on the hill, staring ahead with his lustful expression. He smiled and said, "Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Hmph! There have been no less than thirty Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy students who've died in the hands of our Demonic Dragon Guards. Now, it seems a few more lives will be added to that number."

"Let's see how you run this time!"

In the quiet camp, Guo Xiong sat cross-legged, periodically glancing at the dark forest with alert eyes. He tightly gripped a long, black blade. Spiritual energy surged around him.

"Mhm?"

Suddenly, Guo Xiong's eyes focused on something. His majestic Spiritual Energy burst out in an instant. With a quick flex of his fingers, the black longsword sharply hacked downwards.

Daaaang!

The black longsword cut downwards, and the sounds of metal on metal resounded as a black spear split in two.

“Who’s there?!”

Guo Xiong instantly stood up and barked towards the dark forest.

The tents instantly opened as Su Xuan, Su Ling’er, Li Qing, and Mu Chen quickly flew out. The four of them had just entered their cultivating states, but had instantly awoke when they heard the commotion.

“Ambush! Be careful!” Guo Xiong saw Su Xuan and the others emerging and immediately shouted.

Shiiinnnngggg! Shhhiiinnnngggg!

As his voice landed, several black and sharp rays shot out from the forest. Spears containing majestic Spiritual Energy rained on their camp from all directions.

“Hmph!”

A cold aura flashed through Su Xuan’s eyes. Her figure flashed away. Her jade-like hands flicked and surges of Spiritual Energy swept out, turning into a Spiritual Energy whirlpool a few dozen feet wide.

Chhhhhh! Chhhhhh!

The black spears flew into the Spiritual Energy whirlpool and were destroyed.

“Which sneaky bunch are you? You don’t even have the guts to show yourselves?!”

Su Xuan’s charming eyes coldly looked into the dark forest. Then, her figure moved. She turned into a streak of light as Spiritual Energy tore apart the darkness, blasting over it without mercy.

Bang! Bang!

Her aura boiled over the forest, destroying it. Su Xuan moved again and disappeared into the darkness. She had to get rid of these mice. Otherwise, they wouldn’t be able to have any peace.

Mu Chen and the others watched Su Xuan give chase and moved themselves to tightly guard the camp. Su Xuan was a Heavenly Transform Stage Middle Phase; those who wanted to harm her wouldn't have an easy time of doing so.

Boom!

They turned towards the front, when several Spiritual Energy Ripples suddenly emanated through the air. Within these Spiritual Ripples were actually two Heavenly Transform Stage Initial Phases!

Mu Chen and the others changed their expressions when they sensed those Spiritual Energy ripples. Two Heavenly Transform Stage Initial Phase experts? Just who was this enemy? For them to actually be able to bring out such formations!

"We have to go help her!" Li Qing's face was frosty. She growled and flew out. Guo Xiong saw her go and quickly moved to follow. But, before he left, he said to Mu Chen and Su Ling'er, "The two of you will hide here, for now. We'll return as soon as we take care of those guys!"

Rustle!

The moment his voice landed, Guo Xiong and Li Qing flashed away through the dark forest, quickly rushing towards the origins of those Spiritual Energies.

Mu Chen took note of the situation and couldn't help furrowing his brows. Even though their party was rather small, they were still quite strong. Who actually dared to move against them?

Based on their formations, their enemy shouldn't be an ordinary force.

"Mu Chen, what should we do now?" Su Ling'er watched Su Xuan and the others give chase, then moved closer to Mu Chen.

"Don't panic. We'll quietly wait for their return. They shouldn't have gone too far; they should return soon." said Mu Chen.

Su Ling'er nodded. She couldn't help pulling on the hem of Mu Chen's clothes with her small hands. In the White Dragon Hillock, danger came

layer upon layer. While Su Xuan wasn't around, she could only rely on Mu Chen.

Mu Chen's body suddenly tensed as his keen eyes scrutinized their surroundings. He circulated his Spiritual Energy, preparing to deal with any situation that arose.

Shiiiinnng!

As Mu Chen swept his eyes around, a sudden and urgent break of wind resounded in his ears. A sharp gale tore through the air, bringing an ear-piercing sound.

Mu Chen slightly narrowed his eyes, and hugged Su Ling'er's slim waist with a turn of his hand. The tip of his foot tapped the ground and his figure flew several dozen feet in the air.

Bang!

A black spear as thick as an arm mercilessly impaled the place where the two of them had been standing moments before. The spear had penetrated half a meter into the ground and vibrated with a buzzing noise.

Mu Chen studied the black spear with a chill in his heart. He raised his head. Only the fine sounds of the wind whistled through his ears. Four figures appeared in the huge tree in front of them. Four chilling gazes fixed onto them, filled with baleful aura.

"Four Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phases?"

Mu Chen's gaze eyes swept over the four figures and he felt a jolt in his heart. Which force was this? To actually bring out such experts to deal with them...

Mu Chen glanced in the direction that Su Xuan and the others and disappeared in, and his heart inevitably sank. Was all of that was just to lure the tigers from its mountain?

The other party seemed to be targeting the two of them!

Chapter 233: Night Attack

It was night. The four figures stood like spectres in the huge tree. Their bodies were hidden from head to toe in black robes – even their faces couldn't be seen. The only parts of their bodies that were exposed were their eyes, which were filled with baleful aura.

Frightening Spiritual Energy ripples fluctuated around the four of them. Based on those levels, all of these people had reached the Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase!

Mu Chen narrowed his eyes at their formation. If you put them in with any of those previous adventurer parties, they'd definitely take the lead position. So why had four of them suddenly appeared?

They hadn't provoked any powerful forces along their journey, so why was trouble knocking on their door?

"Who are you?!" Mu Chen's voice was solemn as he coldly growled. If he'd been facing just a single Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase opponent, he could've defeated them without much effort. But there were four of them. Furthermore, from the looks of it, those four were highly experienced. The baleful aura in their eyes had obviously been earned through long years of knowing massacre. They were completely different from the Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase upperclassmen of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy!

However, those four black shadows acted as though they hadn't heard Mu Chen. On the other hand, the baleful aura within their eyes grew even denser.

Mu Chen's and Su Ling'er's hearts sank at seeing their formation. Those guys were excellently trained, not an ordinary adventurer party.

"Kill them!"

An ice-cold sound suddenly came from the mouth of a black shadow. Then, the four of them exploded in motion. With a flex of their fingers, black spears materialised in their hands. Their Spiritual Energies surged,

melting into multitudes of illusionary spears that covered the skies and the earth, enveloping the two of them.

Mu Chen's expression changed at the straightforward actions of the four shadows. He formed a claw, condensing with dark light. The Nine-layered Pagoda surfaced in his palm, exploding with a downward force.

Dang! Dannng!

Numerous spears hit the Nine-layered Pagoda, but only caused it to shake a little. The surface of the pagoda wasn't damaged in the slightest.

Rustle!

But, the four of them weren't the gentle and kind types; the moment they saw Mu Chen's impenetrable defense, two of them changed direction. The spears made a detour around Mu Chen and shot towards Su Ling'er, who was being protected behind him.

Su Ling'er responded to the situation by hastily putting her jade-like hands on the long fire-red whip at her waist. With a shake of her jade-like hand, the whip whistled out like a fiery python. It carried surges of Spiritual Energy and collided with the two spears.

Bang! Bannng!

A berzerk Spiritual Energy emanated from the collision, toppling the large trees in the vicinity. The two spectre-shadows skimmed forward, pressing closer to Su Ling'er. The tips of those spears shined with a chilling light and were aimed at Su Ling'ers vitals.

Faced with two Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phases, Su Ling'er had instantly landed herself in a very disadvantageous position. It was even more dangerous when you compared the ruthlessness of their attacks against her own. Her delicate face turned a little pale.

Shhhhuuuu!

Two chilling spears shot forward and penetrated the defense that Su Ling'er had set up with her fire-red whip. The spears shot towards her shoulder at lightning speed, bringing a strong and sharp gale.

Su Ling'er's enthusiasm had declined as she faced those fearful attacks. She quickly stepped back, then jumped as she realized that she'd already backed up into the trunk of a tree. Her charming face turn exceptionally pale.

Daaang!

However, just as the spear was about to hit Su Ling'er, the Nine-layered Pagoda descended from the sky and enveloped her.

Daang!

The black spears that had flown with their frightening Spiritual Energy ripples heavily collided with the pagoda; however, they were dispersed by the rippling layers of dark light.

The pagoda made of dark light rapidly shrank. A figure flew up to Su Ling'er and pulled her into his embrace by her slender waist. Then, the figure fled into the dark forest, like a cunning rabbit.

"Chase them down!"

When the four figures realised what'd happened, they growled and quickly gave chase.

Mu Chen held onto Su Ling'er as he flashed through the forest. He lowered his head, glanced at the slightly pale and shaking young girl as he asked, "Are you alright?"

Su Ling'er shook her head and replied, "Thank you. What should we do now?"

Their opponents were four Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase experts. Between the two of them, Su Ling'er was also a Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase, but she wasn't very experienced in combat. She probably couldn't even defeat one of the four. Meanwhile, Mu Chen had quite a few cards up his sleeve, but he knew he wouldn't have time to prepare them; their opponents weren't looking for a fair and honorable fight.

Their situation was extremely unfavourable.

"Can we last until Big Sister and the others find us?" Su Ling'er asked in

a low voice. If Su Xuan and the rest were with them, they wouldn't have to fear those four.

"Our opponents are very experienced. Their target is clear. First, they lured your sister and the others so that they could easily deal with us. They probably planned to capture us first, then restrain your sister and the others." Mu Chen's deep reply came as he continued to flash through the forest, like a hunting leopard.

"If I take you with me, they'll probably catch up soon."

Su Ling'er showed an anxious expression at Mu Chen's words. "What should we do?"

"I'm going to put you down, first." Mu Chen cautiously looked behind them. Four figures were rapidly catching up.

"Ah?" Su Ling'er looked confused. Her delicate face instantly turned as white as snow and her beautiful eyes surged with moisture. She grabbed Mu Chen's clothes, "Mu Chen, you bastard! Fine! Put me down now, I don't need you to save me!"

Mu Chen didn't know whether to laugh or cry at her expression. He helplessly replied, "What are you thinking? If I take you with me, they're going to overtake us sooner or later. The only thing I can do is hide you somewhere, while I lure them away. After that, you need to find your sister and the others as soon as possible."

Su Ling'er's delicate face turned red; however, she still couldn't care about anything else as she anxiously said, "No, it's too dangerous for you to lure them all by yourself."

She'd just witnessed the strength and intimidation of those four. Their bloodlust was surging and their methods were ruthless. You couldn't get that way just by sparring with the upperclassmen of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

"I know what I'm doing."

Mu Chen shook his head with an unquestionable tone in his voice. His figure continued to flit across the forest. With a pulling motion of his

palm, he drew out some sort of green leaf from among the underbrush. Then, he quickly ground the leaves and sprinkled the peculiar-smelling juices over Su Ling'er.

"These juices will conceal your scent. Later, when I leave you somewhere, you'll need to hide yourself and suppress your Spiritual Energy. That way, they won't be able to find you." Mu Chen explained as he finished what he was doing.

Su Ling'er dazedly watched Mu Chen complete the task with an extremely proficient technique. She slightly raised her head and saw Mu Chen's handsome face under the shine of moonlight. However, the current Mu Chen was filled with a cold intent, replacing his usual gentleness. The sharpness was like a polished longsword, quietly hiding its edge within its scabbard.

"Mu Chen, this is a Middle Rank Spiritual Artifact that I exchanged at the Spiritual Value Hall. You should use it." Su Ling'er brought out a cyan longsword. A vague, but piercingly sharp sword aura emanated from it.

Mu Chen nodded. He'd never used a Spiritual Artifact before, but one had suddenly appeared before his eyes. At least he could use it to increase his fighting strength by a bit.

"Be careful."

Mu Chen's speed abruptly increased. With a turn of his body, he leaned slightly. The instant he had entered the darkness, he threw Su Ling'er from his arms.

Su Ling'er twisted her body in mid-air and quietly landed in a large tree. Then, she concealed herself within the tree's dense foliage. She also quickly suppressed the Spiritual Energy circulating in her body.

She nervously directed her line of sight downwards. Soon, four spectre-like shadows bypassed her in their pursuit. When they arrived in the area, their bodies slightly paused and their eyes swept the area. Then, they resumed their pursuit in the direction that Mu Chen had gone.

As they distanced themselves, Su Ling'er faintly heard a deep and low

voice that sounded on the wind. “Quick, we’re running out of time. We have to get rid of those two as soon as possible!”

Su Ling’er didn’t immediately leap down from the huge tree; instead, she remained among the leaves for a period of time. She knew that Mu Chen had placed himself in great danger just to get her to safety. She couldn’t be reckless and cause Mu Chen’s plan to fail.

“Mu Chen, you have to be careful!”

Su Ling’er’s small fists were tightly clenched as her charming eyes looked in the direction that Mu Chen and those four specter-like shadows had disappeared in. Her eyes were filled with nervousness and worry.

Rustle!

She waited for quite a while more. Once she was sure that everything had calmed down, she leapt vigorously from the tree. Then, she rapidly skimmed in the direction of their camp.

“Mu Chen, you have to hold on there. I’ll get my sister and the others to rescue you right away!”

Mu Chen’s figure moved like a black leopard among the shadows of the gloomy forest as he quietly skimmed through. His palm slowly clutched the cyan longsword at his waist as he looked behind him. Back there, the sonic booms sounded even more urgent than before. Four bodies were faintly discernible as they gave chase.

“So, they’re here?”

Mu Chen said to himself in a soft voice. Then, he stuck out his tongue and licked his lips. A trace of scarlet light surged forward in his black pupils. He was like a fierce and malicious wolf about to set upon its prey.

“It’s been a long time since I’ve been like this. Since you guys are chasing so hard and unwilling to let go, let’s find out who’s the real hunter!”

An excited curve rose on Mu Chen’s lips. He’d already been suppressing the urge to hunt for quite a long time now. When he was in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, he’d had the identity of a student. But, out

here, there was nothing he had to worry about anymore!

Moonlight shined down through the tiny cracks in the forest, forming a chilly arc of light on his handsome face. That side appeared very cold at this moment.

Now, the Blood Calamity of the Spirit Road was going to reveal his fangs.

Chapter 234: Reverse Killing

Four specter-like shadows quickly and violently flashed through the forest. Their expressions were like those of wolves, fixed upon their target that was a short distance ahead – a lone figure fleeing in a sorry state.

"Let's see how far you can run!"

The hearts of those four were filled with the sounds of cold laughter as they abruptly increased their speeds. They noticed that their target had started showing frantic movements and clumsier steps – likely out of dread for the inevitable.

If you couldn't preserve a clear mind under such a brutal pursuit, then the consequences went without saying.

A cruel light passed through the eyes of the four shadows. These Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy students were quite gifted; but, unfortunately for them, talents were useless in life-or-death exchanges. The most important factors that determined the outcome of a life-or-death struggle were merciless needs to kill and keen senses.

Rustle!

Disdain flashed through their hearts as they watched the pitiful figure turn a corner and disappeared from their sights. They immediately followed.

Their figures flew over a cluster of trees.

When they passed through that patch of forest, the shadows from the dense branches and leaves dispersed from their eyes. In that moment, a shadow pounced on them, entering the embrace of one of the four.

The four shadows' expressions changed at the sudden event. The shadow that'd collided with their comrade was still for a moment, before it sharply snarled. Their comrade reflexively aimed his black spear towards the person in his arms.

Shiiiiing!

But the instant the spear thrust forward, a sharp longsword mercilessly pierced his heart with a majestic Spiritual Energy. The sword tip penetrated through his back and fresh blood poured down.

The shadow widened his eyes in disbelief at the cold-eyed youth in his embrace. The boy's expression was exceptionally frigid, as though it'd been crafted from ice.

Never, in his wildest imaginations, would he consider this turn of events; the youth who'd only been running from their pursuit had suddenly turned back. The unexpected surprise had broken all of their guards.

Furthermore, this youth's ruthlessness surpassed their own. He'd instantly penetrated the shadow's vitals, severing his life.

"He did that on purpose!"

The shadow's vision gradually turned black, with the youth's indifferent expression as his last living memory. Just a short while ago, this youth had been panicking under their pursuit. But how was that expression from someone that was panicking from running?

So, this youth had been putting up a façade, and made the experienced experts lower their guards. Then, he'd launched his counterattack!

Neat and tidy, without the slightest hint of sloppiness.

"You...!"

Everything happened in an instant. By the time the other three shadows realized what'd happened, Mu Chen's blade had already run itself through their comrade's heart.

The three of them glared with dark eyes filled with rage. The spears in their hands turned into sharp attacks, enveloping Mu Chen with threats to his vitals. This brat actually dared to kill one of their comrades right before their eyes. How could they possibly let him escape?

Mu Chen faced the three's attacks and pulled out his longsword with a flick of his wrist. His Spiritual Energy circulated. Cyan light glinted off the longsword as he burst forward with a razor-sharp sword energy and light,

resisting the numerous spear images.

Shhhuuuuu!

The three of them were well coordinated. A few rays of cold light still managed to break through Mu Chen's defense and flew towards his chest.

Mu Chen dragged the corpse of the shadow that he'd killed back into his arms, and used it as a meat shield.

Chhhhhhh!

The sharp spears pierced through the dead shadow with a majestic Spiritual Energy. The tips of the spears drew thin lines of blood on Mu Chen's chest.

Mu Chen's eyes were cold as he stepped forward. The corpse was heavily tossed to the side, sailing into that black shadow.

A dark malevolence showed itself in the eyes of that shadow.He threw out a fist, which impacted with the flying corpse. A surge of violent Spiritual Energy erupted, badly mutilating the body.

Chhhhhhh!

But the moment the fist struck the corpse and tore it to pieces, cold rays of light flicker within the corpse's chest. The tip of a sword, wrapped in black-coloured Spiritual Energy with black flames throbbing of it tunneled through the corpse's chest and thrust towards the black shadow with lightning speed.

The offence was too quick, violent, and sharp – so much so that even the black shadow was taken by surprise. That shadow threw out a punch as his Spiritual Energy surged as one could even hear the roar of a dragon within it. The majestic Spiritual Energy had turned into spiritual fist with the shape of a raging dragon and collided with the sharp light that burned with black flames.

BANG!

Black flames swept out as the two heavily collided, quickly igniting the violent gale of Spiritual Energy wrapped around the fist.

Rustle!

The sword light pierced the gale and swung down on the black shadow's wrist as he watched with a shocked expression.

Sword light flashed. Blood splattered. Blood flowed from the places where the five fingers had been severed.

Mu Chen cultivated quite a tyrannical Spiritual Energy. By adding the Middle Rank Spiritual Artifact that Su Ling'er had given him, his offense definitely wasn't something that an ordinary person could withstand.

"Arghhhhhh!"

The black shadow miserably shrieked, mercilessly thrusting the spear in his left hand towards Mu Chen's throat. He was trying to take Mu Chen down with him.

Ding!

But since Mu Chen had already gained the advantage during that exchange, he wasn't willing to risk getting a heavy injury. With a flick of his hand, the longsword flew back. His fingers clamped over the cutting edge of the sword and slanted the blade to the side, just so that it managed to block the spear.

Sparks flew.

Mu Chen borrowed the force of the impact and let himself fly out, gaining distance. He entered the forest like a bat into the night, disappearing in the blink of an eye. "Damned brat!"

The three shadows looked at the cold corpse in front of them, their eyes were filled with rage. The four of them were Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase experts, and had a rich amount of experience under their belts. They never imagined that this barely Heavenly Fusion Stage brat could reverse the situation and put them in such a miserable position.

Not only had they lost a member, but one of the remaining shadows had also lost a hand. Their fighting strength had declined!

"We can't forgive him!"

The three of them snarled, especially the black shadow that'd lost his hand to Mu Chen. His eyes turned sinister.

The three of them exchanged looks, then flew out at the same time. But this time, their bodies were tense as they circulated their Spiritual Energies to their limits. They were expecting an attack at any moment as they advanced.

That lightning exchange earlier had forced them to understand that even though this youth may be young, he wasn't the gentle type. Not only did he have vicious eyes, even his offense was fierce. His actions were direct and straightforward, without the slightest bit of sloppiness. He was definitely different from the other Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy students, who were usually low on experience in terms of fighting and killing.

If they still had any contempt for him in their hearts, then they'd probably suffer a defeat tonight.

Mu Chen flashed through the forest, lightly wiping traces of blood from his chest. It was just a flesh wound, nothing much. His reversal of the earlier situation had been extremely successful. It looked like his previous acting had produced quite an effect.

Mu Chen glanced behind himself. Those three should be acting much more cautious now. But that also meant that they'd slow down their chase, providing him with a little more time.

"Now, let's see who's the true hunter."

Mu Chen muttered as he observed the forest before him. He could vaguely make out the scarlet pupils of several beasts. Those must be the Spiritual Beasts of the White Dragon Hillock.

He watched the scarlet eyes of the beasts residing in the depths of forest, and the corner of his mouth rose into the trace of a smile. He didn't avoid the area; on the contrary, he changed directions and headed towards them.

Night enveloped the forest as three shadows rapidly flashed through it. One in front, while two followed behind – a triangle formation. Their

tensed bodies overflowed with Spiritual Energy as they cautiously kept an eye on their surroundings.

"Mm?"

As the three of them moved along, their eyes were suddenly drawn to something. The one in front waved his palm and the three of them landed on a clear patch of ground. Some distance away were two beast corpses that were spilling fresh blood. It was clear that they'd been recently killed.

"Must be the brat."

The black shadow who'd lost his fingers to Mu Chen clenched his teeth and said, "It looks like he was surrounded by Spiritual Beasts. That means he's probably slowed down his pace. We must make use of the opportunity."

"En."

The other two nodded. Then, the three figures flashed away, resuming their chase.

Over the next few minutes, they saw a series of freshly-killed beast corpses. Among the corpses were shreds of cloth – Mu Chen's clothes.

Based on these signs, Mu Chen must have encountered more and more Spiritual Beasts. Furthermore, he'd also sensed that the three shadows were already nipping at his heels. The signs showed that he'd quickened his pace a little, so much so that he couldn't afford to clean up the traces of the battles.

After giving chase for another ten minutes, the three shadows stopped, once again, in a clearing. On the ground before them was the corpse of a large golden lion. The Spiritual Beast was clearly dead, with a cyan longsword thoroughly impaled in its large, sinister maw.

"This belongs to the brat."

The three of them stopped next to the huge lion corpse and studied the familiar longsword.

One shadow coldly smiled. "This kid's luck is so bad. He actually ran into

a Gold Flame Lion. This beast is as strong as a Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase. Even we'd have to waste a bit of effort to deal with it. No wonder he decided to discard his Spiritual Artifact."

"Roar!"

Suddenly, a deep and low roar resounded from deeper within the forest. Vaguely, ripples of Spiritual Energy were carried over.

"He's encountered another one. Quick, we'll be able to catch up to him this time!" The three of them delightedly exclaimed as they heard the sounds.

"En!"

The three of them nodded. Two of the three were about to give chase, while the last one took two steps over to the corpse to grab the cyan longsword. This was a Middle Rank Spiritual Artifact, a powerful object. It'd be a pity if they left it here.

Bang!

As his fingers closed around the sword's hilt, intending to pull it from the Gold Flame Lion's corpse, in that moment, the corpse exploded. Fresh blood splattered about as a bloodied figure charged out from the fleshy remains. The figure curved two fingers. A gold light rushed forward, bringing an extremely sharp ripple with it. The black shadow watched with a startled expression as it went through his throat.

The black shadow trembled and fell to the ground, his widened eyes filled with disbelief.

The blood-covered figure lowered his head and retrieved the longsword. He slowly raised his head and looked to the figure that'd already stopped moving, then turned around to find the other two shadows watching him in utter shock.

Mu Chen wiped the fresh blood from his face and lightly smiled at the two remaining shadows. From the perspective of the two shadows, that smile was as frightening as a demon's.

They'd been acting so cautiously, but they'd still fallen for the brat's scheme!

His methods were simply impossible to defend against!

"Now, it's your turn."

Mu Chen lightly rapped on the sword blade, making clear and crisp sounds as he did so. He'd already killed two out of the four. The ones left were one crippled, and one whole expert. But their formation itself had been crippled, as well, and it was no longer strong enough to force him to run.

Chapter 235: None Left

"You damned brat!"

Night covered the forest. The two black shadows ground their teeth as they watched the bloodied Mu Chen eerily smile at them. His eyes were filled with dense bloodlust.

They never imagined that things would turn out like this!

Shouldn't they be able to easily dispatch a Heavenly Fusion Initial Phase brat? How did the situation progress to this point? The four of them were Demonic Dragon Guards with a rich amount of experience under their belts. Who knows how much blood was stained on their hands? But, during tonight's pursuit of this youth, two of them had been slain, and one had been heavily injured.

Even if they'd been sent to take down a Heavenly Transform Stage expert, they wouldn't have paid such a miserable price, right?

"Surprised?"

Mu Chen pick up his cyan longsword. A pitch-black Spiritual Energy flared and formed irregular sword lights at the blade's tip. He smiled. With his entire body drenched in blood, it was a frightening spectacle.

"The number of people I killed on the Spirit Road alone is more than the total you've killed between all of you." Mu Chen smiled and pointed the longsword towards the two as he continued his speech. "Now, shall we end this comedy of a pursuit?"

"Yes, it's about time to end this. We won't give you another chance to flee!"

The two black shadows eerily replied. Then, one shadow ducked left, while the other went right, sealing off Mu Chen's path of retreat. They'd already had a taste of Mu Chen's many tricks during their earlier pursuit. In order to guard against that, they couldn't be careless and give him another chance. Otherwise, they could fall into his traps at any moment.

"Really?" Mu Chen smiled. He tightened his grip on the longsword as a

majestic Spiritual Energy poured out like black smoke and surged towards the sky.

"Kill him!"

The two black shadows went silent as their eyes turned cold. They burst forward simultaneously. The two black spears in their hands were venomous snakes darting from their nests, sweeping towards Mu Chen in a violent gale.

Mu Chen also flew forward in the same instant. The light of the sword surged as the black flames ascended. Even though he faced two attackers, he didn't show the slightest hesitation.

Dang! Daaaang!

As the three of them intertwined, a violent Spiritual Energy burst outwards. Dried leaves swept over the ground and turned into dust. One large tree collapsed after another.

Mu Chen's attacks were ruthless. He'd gone with full force, straight towards the unharmed black shadow. He paid no attention to the one with the crippled hand. It looked like Mu Chen planned to exert all his power to kill the unharmed black shadow.

However, the latter clearly wasn't someone who was easy to deal with. The shadow released his Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase strength, without restraint. His attacks were sharp and all aimed at Mu Chen's vitals.

The sword light and spear image whistled through the air. Frightening Spiritual Energies collided and dispersed multiple times.

Dang!

Mu Chen's expression was indifferent as he thrust his sword forward, bringing the surges of Spiritual Energy and flaring black flames with it. The blade was like a black horse, running as fast as lightning towards the black shadow's chest. However, the latter had already swept up his spear to block Mu Chen's attack.

“A Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase wants to fight me head-on? What wishful thinking!” That black shadow coldly smiled.

Mu Chen’s expression was as placid as ever as he pulled back the sword and then dived forward, like an eagle. His fingers clenched as he threw out a punch.

Boom!

Spiritual Energies fluctuated. Mu Chen’s pitch-black Spiritual Energy was like a storm as it rapidly gathered around his fist. Six Limitless Death Seals seemed to have formed in an instant.

As the six Limitless Death Seal appeared, the natural Spiritual Energies from the forest grew more chaotic. A black-coloured light seal flew out, like a black comet, as it streaked across the night sky towards the black shadow.

Boom!

Cracks appeared in the ground, forming a huge ravine.

Shock appeared in the eyes of the black shadow. He’d sensed a fatal amount of danger from that attack.

“Black Dragon Fiend Spear!”

Spiritual Energy swept out from the body of that black shadow. His hand trembled as the black-coloured spear flew from his hand. The energy went wild, turning into a black dragon a few dozen feet long. It bared its fangs, brandished its claws, and charged.

Bang!

The comet formed from the Limitless Death Seals didn’t give the slightest pause as it mercilessly collided with the black light dragon, causing a huge crash to resound. The black shadow watched as the black comet sailed on like an irresistible force, instantly destroying his black dragon. Even the black spear that’d formed the dragon’s core had been sent flying.

Boom!

The comet pierced through the dragon and whistled towards the shadow, as the shadow, himself, watched with an expression of fear plastered all over his face.

“Arghhhh!”

A miserable shriek shook the earth as a huge crater appeared on the ground. In the center of the crater was the black shadow’s corpse, now more of an indistinct mess than a human being. He’d died instantly.

Mu Chen’s six Limitless Death Seals had been enough to withstand one of Li Xuantong’s attacks. Now, the execution of it had instantly killed a Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase expert.

“Haaaaaaaa.”

Mu Chen also deeply exhaled a deep breath. His aura was slightly sluggish. That attack had drained a lot from him.

Mu Chen stood high up in the air. With a flick of his wrist, the Nine-layered Pagoda appeared in his palm, then flew behind him to block the attack of the remaining black shadow with the crippled arm.

Mu Chen slowly turned around to face the frightened black shadow and lightly smiled, “It seems like you’ve have chosen the wrong target.”

“So, do you still want to resist?”

The black shadow slightly trembled. The eyes that’d been filled with a sinister aura were now filled with fear. Today’s events were truly too horrifying to speak of.

“Who are you?! You name wasn’t in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy’s Heavenly Ranking!” the black shadow severely retorted.

When Mu Chen heard that, he furrowed his brows. He coldly stared at the person before him. “I take it that you’re familiar with what goes on in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy? I wonder, who are you?”

The black shadow was shocked. He never thought that his simple remark would raise the suspicions of this youth before him. This fellow was simply too hard to deal with.

“No. It’s impossible to complete tonight’s mission. I can only return and report that we made a mistake in estimating our target’s strength!” The shadow ground his teeth. The black spear in his hand shot towards Mu Chen as the shadow, himself, took the opportunity and flew away.

The pagoda in Mu Chen’s hand expanded and blocked spear like a huge shield. He watched the black shadow escape towards the forest with a blank expression. With a flick of his finger, the Nine-layered Pagoda expanded, again. The first layer exploded with golden lights. A roar sounded as the light turned into a golden dragon that tore through the forest. The black shadow couldn’t dodge in time as the dragon collided with him.

Bang!

A violent shock wave leveled the surrounding trees. That black shadow coughed up fresh blood as his wretched figure flew backwards and landed at Mu Chen’s feet.

Rustle!

The cyan longsword stopped at the shadow’s throat. Mu Chen lightly smiled and said, “Now, will you tell me where you’re from?”

“You must be dreaming, if you think you’re going to get anything out of me!” The shadow’s eyes were dark as he laughed. “Brat, don’t be complacent. None of you will escape!”

Mu Chen looked uninterested as he drove the longsword through the shadow’s throat. He’d decided that he couldn’t extract any more information from the shadow. In that case, there wasn’t any point in keeping him alive.

“Huu.”

Mu Chen straightforwardly killed the last person, then sat down and panted heavily. He felt a little beaten after the night’s battle of wits and merciless wills.

Rustle!

After he got rid of the last person, a series of sonic booms echoed from the distance. Mu Chen looked up in surprise and clutched the longsword in his hand. But loosened his grip when he realised that it was Su Ling'er.

"Mu Chen!"

Su Ling'er landed on a patch of empty ground and took in Mu Chen's bloodied state with a single glance. She was instantly startled and her charming face lost its color as she anxiously hurried over to him.

"I'm fine."

Mu Chen waved his hand towards her.

Su Xuan, Guo Xiong and Li Qing followed after Su Ling'er, their faces were also filled with anxiety. They let out relieved sighs when they confirmed for themselves that Mu Chen was still alive.

They looked at the two corpses with blank expressions, then back at Mu Chen with confusion in their eyes. "You killed these two? What about the other two? Didn't Ling'er say that there were four?"

"All dead."

Mu Chen was a little shaky as he stood up. He looked over his own blood-soaked body and gave them a helpless smile.

"All dead?"

Su Xuan, Su Ling'er, Guo Xiong and Li Qing's faces changed as they looked at Mu Chen in disbelief. "You did this?"

Mu Chen looked around and replied, "Is there anyone else here?"

Su Xuan and the other three were speechless as they watched Mu Chen with strange expressions. According to Su Ling'er, those four should've been Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase killers with extremely cruel and rich experiences. Su Xuan could've killed them straightforwardly, but even Guo Xiong and Li Qing, who were Quasi-Heavenly Transform Stages, would've withdrew back. There was no way they could've killed the assassins.

But Mu Chen had accomplished it?

“Formidable!” Guo Xiong exclaimed in admiration as he gave Mu Chen a thumbs up. Mu Chen had clearly gained his respect by accomplishing such a feat as only a Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase.

Li Qing’s eyes were also filled with amazement as she looked at Mu Chen.

“Haha, it looks like I truly made the right choice in choosing you as our companion.” Su Xuan sweetly smiled. However, her charming eyes still held a peculiar expression as she looked at Mu Chen.

“Stop teasing me. I only fought for my life, nothing particularly amazing. I was just a little more ruthless than they were.”

Mu Chen shook his head, then asked, “Do you know who they are? Why would they attack us? Such formations probably don’t belong to an ordinary force, right?”

The longsword in Su Xuan’s hands tore open the shirt of a black shadow’s corpse, revealing a tattoo on his chest – a palace carried on the backs of dragons. A baleful aura slowly emanated from it.

Su Xuan stared at that tattoo as a cold light flashed across her eyes.

“They’re from the Demonic Dragon Palace.”

Chapter 236: Demonic Dragon Palace

"Demonic Dragon Palace?"

Mu Chen frowned at Su Xuan's words, as he was unfamiliar with that name. Furthermore, he didn't remember offending some Demonic Dragon Palace on their way here. Right?

"Are they really from the Demonic Dragon Palace?" Guo Xiong and Li Qing's faces changed, going cold, "No wonder they had such a ruthless formation. So, it's them."

Su Xuan lightly nodded. "The ones who intercepted us earlier were two Heavenly Transform Stages and three Quasi-Heavenly Transform Stages. Not many forces within a thousand miles of the White Dragon Hillock are capable of sending out such a formation.

She smiled at the slightly frowning Mu Chen as she spoke. "You're new to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, so it's not strange that you don't know about the Demonic Dragon Palace. A few hundred years ago, one powerful force ruled the entire Northern Heavens Continent – the Demonic Dragon Palace."

"Are they stronger than the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?" Mu Chen blanked as he considered the inconceivable.

"No. Even though our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy resided on the same continent, we never had any thoughts of ruling. We didn't meddle in the events that went on. That's why the Demonic Dragon Palace seized the opportunity to rise, and became the overlord of the Northern Heavens Continent."

Guo Xiong smiled, "However, the Demonic Dragon Palace wasn't satisfied, even after they became the overlord of the continent. The Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy at the center of the continent was a thorn in their side. They knew that they could only become true overlords by removing the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. They wanted to use the continent as their headquarters as they invade and attack other continents."

Mu Chen swept his tongue around his mouth. How ambitious of the Demonic Dragon Palace. Forget about ruling the Northern Heavens Continent, they actually dared to take action against the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

"As a result, the Demonic Dragon Palace began attacking the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy a few hundred years ago. That battle was truly world-shaking and countless experts fell. The entire continent was embroiled in battle."

Mu Chen seemed shaken. The strength of Demonic Dragon Palace was definitely frightening to be able to rule the entire Northern Heavens Continent. Meanwhile, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had contentedly and stably sat at the center of the Northern Heavens Continent for thousands of years. Their foundation was just as deep and unmeasurable.

The collision of such two forces would definitely result in devastating destruction.

"That battle carried on for years. In the end, Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy stood victorious, while the Demonic Dragon Palace withdrew in defeat, their might declined. Those forces that they'd once suppressed retaliating against them. The Demonic Dragon Palace's ruling seat had been utterly shattered."

Su Xuan stared at the corpses and said, "However, a centipede dies but never falls down. Even though the Demonic Dragon Palace was defeated, they weren't destroyed. They're still hiding out on the Northern Heavens Continent, recuperating, while they wait for an opportunity to arrive."

"Over the years, the students of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy who've gone out for training would often encounter various attacks. Half of those are from the Demonic Dragon Palace."

"Every year, about half of the students who've died out on the Northern Heavens Continent were at the hands of the Demonic Dragon Palace."

Chill gathered on Su Xuan's sweet-tempered face as she spoke. She clearly, and bitterly, despised the Demonic Dragon Palace.

“Has the academy taken any measures?” Mu Chen asked with furrowed brows.

“You know that nothing is gentle after you leave the borders of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. At the same time, it serves as an experience – the only way you can become a true expert is by experiencing the need to kill for yourself. That’s why they send students out to train. In this world, how could anyone grow stronger without paying a price?”

“Furthermore, our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy’s Mission Hall has a special board – the Bounty Board. All the names on it are well-famed, as many students who’ve left to train have died by their hands. That’s why our academy issues bounties for them. Students who kill those bounty targets will be heavily rewarded.”

“Bounty Board?” Mu Chen was confused. He’d never even heard of this board before. Clearly, only students whose strength have reached a certain level could gain the access to go after the terrible people on the Bounty Board.

“Each target on the Bounty Board is a ruthless figure, so much so that they’re even known within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. All of those missions are extremely dangerous and difficult; that’s why they’re known as the most painful missions of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.”

Guo Xiong stood to the side licking his lips. “What’s engraved in my mind was the event that shook our entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Back then, Shen Cangsheng had just come out of his seclusion and took on one of these bounty missions. Furthermore, the one he’d accepted was a Rank 3 of the Bounty Board, an extreme talent from the Demonic Dragon Palace – Blood Demon Dragon - Yu Yuan.”

“Blood Demon Dragon, Yu Yuan...” Mu Chen muttered.

“This Yu Yuan was extremely powerful. Before this, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had sent out a party of twenty out for training, including two Heavenly Transform Stage Initial Phase upperclassmen. Even the worst among them was a Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase. Such

formation is already formidable, but when they encountered Yu Yuan, only one Senior Sister escaped, protected by the others."

"After that, our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy attempted an unsuccessful hunt; two of the hunting party ended up killed instead, increasing Yu Yuan's fame. After that, no one else dared to accept his bounty mission."

Guo Xiong had an expression of admiration. "Until Shen Cangshen came along."

"Shen Cangshen still wasn't Rank 1 back then, only somewhere in the top 10 of the Heavenly Ranking. He often hid away by himself, but, that day, he came out of seclusion and exploded. With his spear, he soared to Rank 1 of the Heavenly Ranking."

"After that, while the student body was in shock, he accepted Yu Yuan's bounty mission. 10 days later, he returned with his spear over his shoulder and Yu Yuan's head on the end of it."

Guo Xiong's eyes boiled with excitement as he recalled the huge shock that'd brought to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

"Everyone had been dumbfounded as they raised their heads towards the war god returning with the spear on his shoulder. They were in extreme shock."

Mu Chen looked at Guo Xiong, whose eyes were still boiling and Li Qing, the ice beauty who seemed faraway at the moment. He could see that this Senior Brother, Shen Cangsheng, who he'd never met before, possessed an extremely high position in the eyes those students.

He was curious. How powerful was this legend-like figure? How strong was he compared to Li Xuantong?

"Shen Cangsheng is indeed a powerful individual," Su Xuan confirmed with a soft voice. "You could think of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy as a gathering place for geniuses. He Yao, Xu Huang, and the others are also fairly outstanding. There are many who've hidden themselves from the public, waiting for the day they amaze the world with

a single brilliant feat and become powerful figures soaring to the heavens. Even still, no matter how outstanding they were, they still can't shake the Heavenly Ranking's peak, that majestic war god."

"Most of the targets on the Bounty Board are from the Demonic Dragon Palace. They're the only ones who'd try to kill our students by any means."

Su Xuan looked at Mu Chen, "Now you know about the blood feud between our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy and Demonic Dragon Palace?"

Mu Chen nodded. It seemed that this Demonic Dragon Palace shouldn't be underestimated. The Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy allowed this to happen was for the sake of their students' training, but also possibly because they had no way of pulling up the Demonic Dragon Palace by its roots.

"This time, it seems the Demonic Dragon Palace has noticed us." Su Xuan's charming facial features drew together. "As far as I know, the White Dragon Sovereign who fell here was once a high-ranking member of the Demonic Dragon Palace. However, he betrayed them. It's likely that the Demonic Dragon Palace sent their experts because of the appearance of this Sovereign Spirit Treasury. When the time comes... we'll have to be careful."

Mu Chen, Guo Xiong, Li Qing, and Su Xuan all nodded. They felt the inconvenience. It seemed that this mission wasn't going to be as easy to complete.

"We should move. We'll take advantage of nightfall and the fact that we've just thwarted the Demonic Dragon Palace. Best if we lose them completely." Su Xuan said.

None of them had any objections. They tried to tidy up the area, then headed deeper into the White Dragon Hillocks with increased vigilance.

...

Mu Chen's party headed deeper into the hillocks. Meanwhile, Bai Dong stood in the forest on a faraway slope, his color turning steel-grey.

“Trash, trash! Four pieces of trash! Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase strength and they couldn’t even dispose of a girl who wasn’t even a Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase and a Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase boy!

Bai Dong look down at the four black-colored jade tokens in his hand, which was completely shattered. It showed that those four had already been killed.

The grey-robed elder stood next to Bai Dong, his expression bewildered. “How is this possible? How could the two of them kill four Demonic Dragon Guards?”

He was familiar with the strength of the Demonic Dragon Guards. Even he’d have to bide his time if he wanted to deal with the four them together. But now, a boy and a girl, still smelling of their mother’s milk, kill them?

Bai Dong was so angry that he crushed the jade shards in the his hand. Then, he looked to the depths of the forest with a sinister look in his eyes.

“Inform my father. It looks like we don’t need to worry about being exposed, anymore. As long as we obtain what’s in the Spirit Treasury, we can withdraw from this place. But, before we leave, I want those irksome things exterminated!”

Chapter 237: Lion Tiger Regiment

Daylight intensified as the vast White Dragon Hillock shedded the shroud of night. Wind abruptly screeched throughout the mountain range. Vaguely, there were shapes of countless figure moving within in the forest. They stormed through like a swarm of locusts, all heading in the same direction – towards the depths of the White Dragon Hillock.

That was where the Sovereign Spirit Treasury would appear!

And in response to the sudden locust swarm of people, the White Dragon Hillock, itself, quickly exploded. Countless angry Spiritual Beasts hissed in anger as they rose to face the intruders. There wasn't even a shred mercy in those hearts and their Spiritual Energies rushed towards the skies as they hissed. For a moment, it felt as if the entire mountain range was trembling.

Ah!

Once in awhile, a mournful or blood-curdling wail would slice through the mountain range – likely belonging to some unlucky fellow who was being torn to pieces by those Spiritual Beasts. At the same time, even more Spiritual Beasts were being exterminated by the rushing mob of experts. Tremendous bodies rolled and writhed in splashes of newly spilled blood, before finally collapsing to the ground with deep rumbles.

Such events were occurring throughout the mountain range. The stench of blood saturated the air.

Shuuuuu!

In the forest, Mu Chen's party of five was swiftly moving along. The White Dragon Hillock currently had a very different air than the one of tranquility from the night before. As night retreated, the numerous experts and other unknown things had started to show themselves. The vigorous Spiritual Energies rose and fell in violent cycles, showing just how many experts this rumored Sovereign Spirit Treasury had attracted.

Su Xuan's lovely face turned to face four different directions. She'd also

noticed the White Dragon Hillock's commotion. She waved a jade-like hand and spoke in a tender voice, "We should increase our pace."

As her voice landed, the five of them sharply increased their speed, turning into five streak of lights that swept past the forest of towering trees.

"Roar!"

However, the moment they crossed a certain patch of forest, a fierce sound carried over from their right. They turned their eyes in that direction, only to see a massive fire-red Spiritual Beast watching them with a sinister gleam in its eyes and a severed limb hanging from its mouth. It was clear that it'd recently devoured a human being. When this animalistic brute saw Mu Chen's party intrude on its territory, it gave a thunderous roar and sprang on them with its body still reeking of blood.

"A Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase Spiritual Beast dares to get in our way," Mu Chen commented upon seeing that. He smiled, flicked his fingers, and the Nine-Layered Pagoda appeared. The headwind sharply increased. In an instant, it transformed into a massive black tower, creating an impression of fearful might, like that of a lofty mountain. Then it cruelly weighed down on the body of blood-red Spiritual Beast.

Boom!

Even the ground crumbled as the Nine-Layered Pagoda ruthlessly descended. The massive blood-red Spiritual Beast exploded with a mournful snarl – it'd been directly crushed to death under the pressure.

A look of surprise passed through the eyes of the other members of Su Xuan's party. Even though this blood-colored Spiritual Beast only had the strength of a Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase, it'd still had an extremely strong defense. They hadn't expected Mu Chen to take care of it in just one stroke.

"Hmm? Treasure!" Su Ling'er only glanced at the corpse of the blood-red Spiritual Beast before turning her line-of-sight to another spot ahead. Clinging to one of the cliffs of fractured stone and earth was a blood-red zoysia1 gently swaying in the breeze. A fragrance dispersed in the air.

“Blood Spirit Zoysia?” Su Ling’er’s lovely face instantly lit up. Crafted from the heavens, a wealth of the earth2 – such a treasure would undoubtedly be hard-won under any other circumstance. It could have considerable effects on one’s cultivation.

Swish.

Her image flashed away and landed on the large cliff. Then, she bent down and plucked the Blood Spirit Zoysia.

Shuuuu!

However, the moment she picked the Blood Spirit Zoysia, a pointed screech rose and resonated. The only thing they saw was a line of frigid light launching towards Su Ling’er as fast as lightning.

“Watch out!” Su Xuan’s lovely eyes focused as she pointed a jade finger into the air and tapped. A line of Spiritual Energy raced out, intending to shatter the frigid light that was heading for Su Ling’er.

Guo Xiong And Li Qing simultaneously entered combat mode, eyes coldly watching the direction that the frigid light had come from. They saw human figures flash through the forest. About 20 people quickly emerged and landed on the patch of broken stone.

Each of them had a sword or knife in hand and wore an arrogant expression. Traces of fierce aggression showed in their auras. One look would tell you that they weren’t the type to play nice – they were probably one of the stronger adventurer parties.

They were led by two men in their thirties, who looked rather similar to each other. Likely brothers. Their eyes shined with a savage craftiness.

“What do you think you’re doing?” Guo Xiong coldly barked as he looked at those unkind fellows.

Mu Chen’s eyes were drawn in the same direction, then his brows slightly knitted. This adventurer party wasn’t weak. Their two male leads were Quasi-Heavenly Transform Stages. As for the rest, around eight were at the peak of the Heavenly Fusion Stage, while the others were at the Spirit Stage.

You could say that this battle line-up of adventurers was rather formidable.

One of the skinny males in the adventurer party couldn't help running his eyes all over Su Xuan, Su Ling'er, and Li Qing. He chuckled. "Hehe. My friends, I'm afraid we've already had our eyes on this Blood Spirit Zoysia for an entire day. We finally managed to clear out the Spiritual Beasts in this area, but before we could get to it, you slipped behind our backs and picked it, anyway. Isn't that a little too much?"

"This is a heaven-made treasure of the earth. The ones who win it are the ones who deserve it. You guys loitered around for an entire day; that's probably because you couldn't do anything." Su Ling'er's rosy little lips twisted as she mocked them. You could tell that they weren't the savoury types just by looking at them. Only an idiot would believe them.

"You! The little wench wants to die!"

"The little wannabe lady is still young, but she's already so ill-behaved. Let this older brother teach you a few manners!"

The party hissed in anger. Their aggression started to show in their eyes as they hurled back all sorts of obscenities.

"Get lost!" Mu Chen's expression was frigid, but he didn't care to waste any more words on the likes of them.

"What attitude from that kid!"

The adventure party's leader eyed Mu Chen with a cloudy expression as he slowly replied, "Our Lion Tiger Regiment has been in this White Dragon Hillock for many years; even the three major forces wouldn't dare to speak to us like that."

Of course he could sense Su Xuan's astonishing strength; however, he had more people on his side. In addition, his experts were all experienced in battle. He didn't think these tender-looking little boys and girls would be able to gain anything if it came to a fight.

"That's why we're not from the three major forces," came Mu Chen's indifferent remark.

A man with a scarred face and an exceptionally fierce expression sternly shouted, “The fact remains that you dared to caw your little mouth. Do you believe that this uncle will dice you up? A Heavenly Fusion Stage dared to provoke us in our territory?! Reckless idiots!”

Swish!

Mu Chen’s expression turned to ice. No more useless words. His image exploded forward like a Great Roc3 setting upon its prey. His fist burst into black flames as a wild Spiritual Energy erupted and roiled.

“Courting death!”

The scarred man gave a severe shout. He was a Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase; how would he fear Mu Chen, who was only a Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase!

He moved forward in a single step. His hand formed a claw and Spiritual Energy surged, until it was sharp and pointed. The Spiritual Energy seemed to turn his hand into the claw of a light eagle. It tore through the air towards Mu Chen.

Thump!

The fist and claw firmly collided and the churning Spiritual Energy swept outwards. The scarred man’s expression changed in an instant. A moment later came a pitiful howl. A snapping sounded from his finger. His body quaked so hard it seemed as it he would fly backwards.

Swish!

Mu Chen’s expression was still indifferent. He grabbed his opponent’s hand, halting the man’s movements; with a forceful jerk, the man fell flat on his face, like a dog eating shit. Mu Chen stepped forward again and his foot sailed out, kicking the scarred man squarely in the face. The punt sent him flying back by several hundred feet, heavily collided against the trunk of a huge tree. Instantly, not even sounds of miserable shriek was issued from him.

Mu Chen’s movements had been crisp and accurate – not a single wasted move. By the time the others registered what was going on, the

scarred man was already unconscious. His body had been left in a wretched state and was covered in blood.

"Boy, such nerve!"

One of the Lion Tiger Regiment's leaders was also angered. He moved forward in a step and his Spiritual Energy swept out. When his fist flashed out, the only thing they could see was his Spiritual Energy melting into the form of a roaring lion. The energy churned as it directly roared towards Mu Chen.

Bang!

Even the ground had been split by this leader's move. It looked like he wasn't weak.

Mu Chen saw the leader's ferocious offensive, but his expression remained just as frigid as before. He closed his hand and black flames boiled out as he threw a punch.

Six Limitless Death Seals formed under Mu Chen's fist. Between the ripples of Spiritual Energy, something like a black comet shot out.

Bang!

Their fists met with a sweeping wind, violently clashing in the middle of the broken land. A startling wave of wind and energy swept out. The shattered stones that'd littered the ground instantly turned into dust, then rose into the air as a dark cloud.

The members of the Lion Tiger Regiment urgently backed away, though their eyes stayed firmly locked on the situation in front of them. Through the bursts of wild Spiritual Energy, one could see the vague outlines of two figures. Both were ferocious enough that it sent shivers down their spines.

Between the quaking of the ground they could see their leader's shoulders shake as he was shoved back several dozen steps. His feet were planted firmly in the ground and the brace marks under his feet were roughly half a foot deep.

Meanwhile, the young man he faced had only taken two steps back.

“How is that possible!” they cried. This boy couldn’t be past the Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase, but he’d forced their Quasi-Heavenly Transform Stage leader backwards with a single fist?

The other Lion Tiger Regiment leader also watched with wide eyes. Mu Chen had displayed a combat strength that far surpassed what they’d seen on the surface.

They weren’t the only ones shocked. Even Guo Xiong and Li Qing were staring at Mu Chen in amazement. They knew he wasn’t weak when he single-handedly killed four Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase assassins the night before. But now, they’d personally seen Mu Chen force back an opponent of their own level. They couldn’t help the feeling of discomfort in their hearts.

Mu Chen unhurriedly pulled back his fist. He watched the other members of the Lion Tiger Regiment with an indifferent expression. The members tried to avoid his eyes as they realised their place and no longer dared to recklessly provoke Mu Chen. They usually were a cruel and violent bunch, but this handsome looking youth had turned out to be even more cruel and violent than they were. Once he moved, there was no such thing as mercy.

“Now will you get lost?” Mu Chen slowly asked.

Su Xuan stood behind Mu Chen and extended a slender jade hand. A smooth and ancient-looking jade bead slipped into her palm. A startling Spiritual Energy churned, but the sense of it was vague as it slowly spread through the air. A cold look surfaced on her sweet-looking face.

From the looks of it, even she’d grown annoyed.

Chapter 238: Emergence of the Spirit Treasury

Mu Chen's party wore bitter-cold expressions. A surprising amount of Spiritual Energy surged from Su Xuan, Guo Xiong, and Li Qing; it was clear that they'd decided to act, too.

The expressions of the two leaders changed when they saw that and they scrutinized Mu Chen and Su Xuan. Looks of fear flashed through their eyes.

Su Xuan was far stronger than they were. If it came down to a fight, they probably wouldn't be able to win, even if they teamed up against her. Then, there was the youth who looked gentle on the surface, but was ruthless underneath. They'd probably have to pay a huge price for fighting him, too.

On top of that, the Spirit Treasury was due to appear soon. It'd be unwise for them to exhaust their strength here and now.

If they wanted to take back their pride, they'd have to wait until they could ally with another powerful adventurer party.

The two leaders of the Lion Tiger Regiment exchanged gloomy looks as they rumbled in deep tones, "It's a small world. Our Lion Tiger Regiment won't leave it like this."

"Let's go!"

The two of them signaled a retreat to the other Lion Tiger Regiment members, who were boiling with resentful auras. Soon after, their party quickly disappeared from view.

Su Ling'er snorted as she watched the party leave, then she turned back to face Mu Chen and smiled. "I didn't know you could be so dashing when you're angry."

Mu Chen showed her a smile and a shrug. Behind him, Su Xuan clutched the ancient jade pearl as she also looked at him. "You are truly

deserving of your title as the 'Blood Calamity of the Spiritual Road'."

Those words told Mu Chen that she knew something about his background, but he wasn't terribly surprised about it. It's obvious she'd conducted a background check before she asked him to join her party.

"Let's move on. It looks like we'll be able to enter the depths of the White Dragon Hillock soon." Mu Chen stated as he looked ahead, though he stopped at that. It was obvious that he was interested in the rumored Sovereign Spirit Treasury.

Su Xuan nodded, then moved and flitted away.

They didn't meet any major obstacles for the rest of their journey. There was one powerful Spiritual Beast, but Mu Chen had killed it faster than was thought possible. Roughly half an hour later, they entered the deepest area of the mountains.

Clouds and mist swirled around the towering peak that rose to meet the heavens. A huge waterfall torrented downwards, its rumbles echoing throughout the mountains.

Mu Chen's party skimmed up the green slopes as they kept an eye on their surroundings. The nearby hills and plains were dotted with countless shapes of people, while even more were flying in from the distance. The entire landscape looked like it was a majestic portrait.

"So, there were this many people." Guo Xiong couldn't help smacking his lips It looked like every expert and decently sized force within a thousand miles of the White Dragon Hillock had deigned it necessary to rush to this particular location. The attractiveness of a Sovereign Spirit Treasury was truly worth its name.

"It's said that this is where the White Dragon Sovereign fell."

Su Xuan pointed ahead with a slender finger towards five majestic peaks in the distance. A waterfall flowed like the Milky Way down from each of the five peaks and into a large lake at the foot of the mountains. The lake was as clear as a mirror as it changed its colors to reflect the vibrancy of the peaks that surrounded it.

“Mhm?” Mu Chen raised a curious eyebrow towards the lake, but he couldn’t detect anything unusual from its surface.

Su Xuan lightly smiled. “You won’t be able to see it. Who knows how many experts have explored the area in the past few hundred years? None of them managed to find anything. From the looks of it, it’s still not time yet. If that expert, who had reached such heights, wanted to conceal this Spirit Treasury from others, then it won’t be easy to find.”

Mu Chen nodded. That was an existence powerful enough to become the overlord of an entire continent. His very name intimidated others everywhere and he’d commanded millions of people. Obviously, his Spirit Treasury wouldn’t be easy to find.

“For now, we’ll just have to wait until the Spirit Treasury appears. I’m guessing that it should be soon.” Su Xuan’s charming eyes scanned the five towering mountains.

The party quietly sat themselves down on the green slope to wait. As time passed by, the number of experts in the area slowly swelled, making this part of the White Dragon Hillock more lively than ever.

Shhhhuuu!

Mu Chen silently sat on the mountain’s peak as he scanned the area with narrowed eyes. Suddenly, he widened his eyes as a powerful Spiritual Energy rippled from his right, accompanied by the sounds of screeching wind.

From the place where Mu Chen had been watching, two groups of nearly a hundred people each appeared out of nowhere and landed on one of the nearby peaks.

Mu Chen was familiar with them; they were the Heavenly Dipper Sword Faction and the Earthen Way Sect. However, their current formations were far more intimidating than the last time he’d seen them. They’d clearly received their reinforcements.

The sheer number of people between the two forces wasn’t something to be dismissed, either, and the Spiritual Energies that rippled from them

were exceptionally powerful. As a result, they'd attracted quite a few looks as the leaders of several other forces in the area frowned at the scene. It looked like the Heavenly Dipper Sword Faction and the Earthen Way Sect had both put quite a bit of money into this expedition.

"Both forces have two Heavenly Transform Stage elders!"

Li Qing looked over with her charming eyes and frowned. The Heavenly Dipper Sword Faction and the Earthen Way Sect probably wouldn't rank among the Northern Heavens Continent's most powerful forces, but they were still the local bosses of the White Dragon Hillock. They were the only forces who could send out so many people on such short notice. If any treasures appeared in this Sovereign Spirit Treasury, they'd be the ones with the power to seize them.

Su Xuan nodded. There was little she could do; the information they'd been given for the assignment only said that it was a "Wealthy Spirit Treasury", and that was what they'd had in mind as they built their party. Who would've thought that once they reached their destination, the supposed Wealthy Spirit Treasury would turn into a Sovereign Spirit Treasury?

"Just do your best. All we need is a single item from the Spirit Treasury to prove that we've been here. Mission complete. As for the other treasures, that'll depend on the situation at the time."

Everyone nodded at Su Xuan's words. That's all they could do given the current situation, since Su Xuan was the only member of their party with exceptional strength. The other four weren't terribly outstanding among all the experts gathered there.

Shhhhhhhuu!

The screeching of the wind interrupted their conversation again. Everyone looked in the direction of the sound and saw nearly a hundred bodies rushing over and landed on another peak.

"They're from White Dragon City." Mu Chen scanned the crowd and picked out Bai Dong, the Young City Lord, standing at the front. Next to him was that grey-robed elder and behind them were nearly a hundred

people dressed in white robes that were decorated with patterns of soaring dragons. They stood silently behind Bai Dong with knife-sharp glints in their eyes as they glanced around. An aura of bloodthirst surged around them.

Mu Chen couldn't stop his frown as he watched the white-robed figures. Even though their Spiritual Energies weren't terribly impressive, they didn't make him feel too comfortable.

"It's that despicable guy." Su Ling'er had also noticed Bai Dong's arrival. A look of disgust crossed her face.

Su Xuan also frowned the moment she looked over. Even though White Dragon City's army wasn't a small force, they only gave off ordinary Spiritual Energy ripples. The strongest one was probably the grey-robed elder – a Heavenly Transform Stage Initial Phase. Their formation was definitely weaker than the Heavenly Dipper Sword Faction or the Earthen Way Sect. But for some reason, Su Xuan felt that they were the greater threat.

"Hehe."

When Su Xuan and her party spotted Bai Dong, the latter had done the same to them. An eerie smile spread over his face, but he didn't provoke them for the moment. He knew this wasn't the place to start a fight.

Mu Chen slowly pulled his eyes away and looked back at the lake, waiting for something to appear.

The day wore on and night cloaked the mountain range. A full moon hung high above the horizon and spread its ice-cold light over the sky and earth.

Everyone held their breath; all conversations ceased. An excitement swept over them.

There were no movements from the depths of the mountains, even as the light of the moon grew ever colder. Some of them began growing impatient. Was today not the day when the Spirit Treasury would appear?

Enraged voices sounded low as they spread on the night wind.

Mu Chen calmly focused on the moon's reflection on the lake. That was when the moon on the lake, emitting a peculiar glow.

The glow rose from the lake water and formed a faint mist on the glassy surface.

"Something's happening!"

Mutters of excitement passed through the crowds. The strange signs had appeared again!

As the forces grew excited, the Spiritual Aura between heaven and earth suddenly turned a little violent and collected above the lake with an impossible velocity.

Shhhhhuuuu!

The moon shined brilliantly on the lake's surface. Watched by countless awestruck expressions, the light slowly formed into the shape a humanoid figure.

The lake-being wore a white robe. The details of his face were indistinct, but the patterns on his robe were those of vivid and lifelike dragons. A frightening pressure had rippled over the land.

"Roaaaaar!"

The snarl of a dragon echoed with the appearance of the light entity. The area around the lake quaked violently as the mist gathered again to form a white dragon that spiraled around the figure.

"That's...!"

Everyone watched the white figure and his dragon with expressions of shock. An emotion of joy and awe flushed through the crowd.

"It's the White Dragon Sovereign!"

Su Xuan's jade-like hands were tightly clenched. Expressions of surprise, happiness, and helplessness were simultaneously shown in her charming eyes.

The Spirit Treasury that was appearing was indeed a Sovereign Spirit

Treasury!

Chapter 239: Fire Spirit Lotus

The light gathered on the surface of the clear lake. When the figure of light appeared with his white dragon spiraling around him, the atmosphere around the White Dragon Hillock finally exploded.

Countless eyes turned red and their breaths turned heavy as they stared at the illusory light spirit. A look of intense delight welled up in their eyes.

The Spirit Treasury appearing this time was actually the Sovereign Spirit Treasury!

When they'd first arrived in the area, they'd only heard a few rumors about the Sovereign Spirit Treasury. No one was certain that the Spirit Treasury emerging this time would actually be the one left behind by the White Dragon Sovereign. They'd been trying their luck by coming here and their bets had finally paid off.

Lips were licked. So, it was a Sovereign Spirit Treasury. If the news spread, some true major forces might even be moved to action. But luckily, the news hadn't spread so rapidly this time. By the time a few of the major forces receive the news, the Sovereign Spirit Treasury would be cleaned out.

"It really is the White Dragon Sovereign." Bai Dong's eyes also turned red as he watched the light spirit. His dark eyes stared out from among the white-robed figures. A trace of excitement flashed across his eyes.

"That's the White Dragon Sovereign?"

Mu Chen also watched with a curious expression. It was impossible to get a clear glimpse of the light spirit's features, but the dragon still spiraled with a fleeting, yet intimidating, demeanor that rippled between heaven and earth. It was a sight that struck fear and awe into the hearts of any who saw it.

"Onom."

The illusionary White Dragon Sovereign raised his hand and the white dragon roared. A burst of myriad color erupted like the burning sun and

rose over the lake. The water instantly frothed and boiled.

Shuu! Shhhuu!

Five colors were shining brighter than any others and shot towards the five mountain pillars.

Chiii!

Each pillar of light touched one of the Milky Way waterfalls and split them open. The colors illuminated the cliff faces behind the waterfalls.

Kachaa!

The cliff faces tumbled down, one massive stone after another, revealing five huge seals to the eyes of the observers.

“Thats...”

Everyone stared at the seals in shock.

“Onom.”

The five ancient seals glowed with brilliant light and left their cliff faces like living creatures and gathered above the lake.

“Roarr!”

The moment the five seals gathered, the white dragon lifted its muzzle, roared towards the sky, and charged into the seals. There was a flash of light and the space began to distort, turning into a vortex of light a few dozen feet wide.

Shuuuuu!

Another beam of light rushed out from the vortex and into the sky, bearing the image of a huge white dragon. The roars of dragons echoed for hundreds of miles. It was truly a spectacular sight to anyone in the White Dragon Hillock.

“The Sovereign Spirit Treasury has appeared!”

Everyone’s heartbeats quickened. The Sovereign Spirit Treasury that’d been hidden for several hundred years had finally appeared!

“Charge!”

Someone shouted. Then countless figures rose up and rushed like locusts towards the vortex.

Mu Chen’s dark pupils burned with excitement as well; he was very interested in the rumored Sovereign Spirit Treasury. He wanted to take the opportunity to make himself even stronger.

Thanks to Li Xuantong, he knew little more about Luo Li and her Luoshen Clan. More importantly, he knew that he needed to become even stronger. That was the only way he could help Luo Li, so that she wouldn’t have to bear the burden of saving millions upon millions of her clansmen. And to have her sink into despair while he helplessly watched.

However, he was still too weak. Even Li Xuantong could easily beat him. He had to grow stronger.

On the roof of that small building, the young boy had told the young girl that he would become a supreme expert.

He still had a long way to go before he got there. But luckily, there was still time for him to grow.

“Let’s go.”

Mu Chen looked up and took in a deep breath of chilly air. Something reflected in his black pupils. His voice rumbled deep and low with resoluteness that couldn’t be heard. His road would be hard, but in this world, there was still something that he was willing to chase after, even if it required him to give everything he could.

Su Xuan also nodded as she reminded, “Be cautious. A Sovereign Spirit Treasury is no less dangerous than a dragon’s pool or a tiger’s cave. It won’t be easy to obtain the treasures the Sovereign left behind.”

She lightly inhaled a breath of air, then became the first to move out. Counting Mu Chen and the other three, the four streaks of light entered the earth-shaking mass of bodies that flowed towards the huge glowing portal.

The moment Mu Chen entered the portal, he felt his surroundings ripple with chaos. His vision blacked out for a moment, then returned. At the same time, a surge of heat blew directly on his face.

Mu Chen opened his eyes with an expression of astonishment. Before him was a vast lake of magma and he was standing on a platform in the middle of it all. Flashes of light continued at regular intervals as one figure after another materialised on the platform.

Mu Chen swept his eyes around the island and suddenly realised that all of his party members were missing.

"Were we separated by the portal's space ripples?" Mu Chen frowned. This Sovereign Spirit Treasury was indeed worthy of its name. This was a man-made dimension. He was shocked by just thinking about how it could've been created. However, Mu Chen knew that one would have to be exceptionally powerful to open a space in a place such as the Great Thousand World.

Even a Heavenly Completion Stage expert wouldn't be able to accomplish that.

The Great Thousand World was a place where a host of other planes intersected, and as a result, the stability of this place was far greater than average. Experts who were powerful enough to tear apart space in the Lower Planes wouldn't make so much as a crack in the Great Thousand World. And if an expert from the Great Thousand World ever visited a Lower Plane, they'd easily cause a major disaster.

Mu Chen shook his head. It looked like they'd been temporarily separated; however, they'd probably run across each other, sooner or later. They were strong enough, as long as they didn't encounter any peculiar troubles. But, right now, he had to take care of himself, first.

Mu Chen looked around. The stone platform he stood on wasn't the only one in this gigantic lake of magma. The sounds of a commotion drifted from somewhere far away.

"I should leave this place, first."

Mu Chen took two steps forward and his line of sight was drawn to the other end of the magma lake. That place should be connected to the depths of the Spirit Treasury.

“Hmm? What’s that?”

Just when Mu Chen was about to skim off, a few cries of surprise sounded from his stone platform.

Mu Chen was alerted by those cries and his eyes snapped back to the source. A fiery-red lotus was blooming on the surface of magma. The center of the flower blazed with flames and within those flames were more thumb-size lotuses of fire.

Ripples of astonishing Spiritual Energy fluctuated throughout the space. The air itself felt like it was on fire.

“That’s...”

Mu Chen looked at the floating fiery-red lotus and, at first, drew a blank. Then, he recognised it and asked, “Is that the Fire Spirit Lotus?”

The Fire Spirit Lotus was an extremely rare treasure. Its seeds were formed from the purest Flame Spiritual Energy that could be found between the heavens and earth. It possessed a god-level effect for refining the physique and also had great benefits towards cultivation.

Even in the auction house, the price of such a treasure wouldn’t be low. But, right now, there were so many of them floating on the magma lake.

“That’s the Fire Spirit Lotus?!!”

When Mu Chen identified the burning lotus blossoms, a surge of surprised cries burst out from the experts around him. A heavy feeling of greed settled within countless pairs of eyes. Never could they have imagined such wealth just after entering the Spirit Treasury. The Sovereign Spirit Treasury was, indeed, worthy of its name.

Mu Chen licked his lips as he swept his eyes over the vast lake of magma. His heart jumped at seeing so many Fire Spirit Lotuses.

As far as he knew, it was rare to find Fire Spirit Lotuses growing in such

large clumps. But, if they did, then there was a chance that another rare treasure would be born.

The Fire Celestial Lotus.

It was an evolved form of the Fire Spirit Lotus. It could greatly enhance the progress of those who cultivated fire attribute Spiritual Arts. Although Mu Chen didn't cultivate that particular aspect, it'd be a great benefit to the Nine Netherflames that he'd merged with.

"There are so many Fire Spirit Lotuses growing in this place, so there must be one that's succeeded in its evolution!"

A look of determination flashed through Mu Chen's eyes. Just as he was prepared to leap, a loud laugh burst out from someone behind him. Then, a figure leaped before him, heading directly towards one of the Fire Spirit Lotuses.

"Haha! So many Fire Spirit Lotuses! What luck!"

The figure was heading directly towards the Fire Spirit Lotus. Mu Chen narrowed his eyes.

Rustle

The figure landed on top of the Fire Spirit Lotus and clutched at it while laughing. However, the moment he prepared to pluck it, the magma underneath him burst upwards and a scarlet shadow twisted itself around his legs. With a violent jerk, he was dragged into the magma.

"Arghhhhh!"

He cried mournfully. A green smoke rose from the spot he'd disappeared.

Mu Chen, and any others who'd been ready to act, instantly recalculated with different expressions on their faces. So there was such vicious creatures lurking under the magma?

Chapter 240: Encounter

"What's that?!"

Everyone stood on the stone platform staring down into the magma in shock at the unforeseen event that'd just occurred before their eyes. Scarlet shadows flashed under the surface of the magma.

The boiling liquid moved and gave the spectators a preview of a massive horned python covered in fiery-red scales. The boiling flames didn't cause it the slightest discomfort; on the contrary, it seemed quite content with its environment.

These snakes roamed freely below the surface of the magma. One glanced at the human figures standing the stone platform with a cold, savage light in its eyes.

"Those are Flame-Eating Pythons!"

Someone cried out in alarm when they recognized the savage creatures hiding within the magma. These Spiritual Beasts were creatures that possessed the ability to control the magma from the moment they were born within it. As they're hidden under the magma, they were also extremely difficult to deal with.

"If there's a treasure, then there's always something guarding it. It looks like these Flame Eaters are guarding the Fire Spirit Lotuses." Mu Chen nodded to himself. However, there was nothing here that he feared. It was true that Flame Eaters weren't easy to deal with, but they weren't enough to make him pull back, either.

"Hmph, just a few little Flame Eaters wants to keep us from acquiring the Spirit Lotuses?"

The cold snort sounded from a short distance away – a man with a cold laugh on his face as he released rippling, potent Spiritual Energy. He moved in a burst towards the magma.

Tshhhhhh!

Right before he was about to pluck the Fire Spirit Lotus, several scarlet

lights burst from underneath the surface of the magma lake. A wild gale sprung up.

"Hmph."

The man barked a laugh and a long blade appeared in his clenched fist and flickered with spiritual light. The blade trembled as he cast several razor-sharp blade-like images, which soared out and cut deeply into the scarlet lights.

Clang!

The sounds of metal on metal rang out. Lines of blood appeared on the bodies of the Flame-Eaters as they whined mournfully and fell back into the magma.

After pushing back the Flame Eaters, the man extended his hand, clutched the Fire Spirit Lotus, and plucked the Fire Seed from the heart of the flower.

The spectators became riled up when they saw the man obtain the Fire Spirit Lotus. The ones with decent strength were the first to leap out. After that, an earth-shaking number of figures began rushing towards the magma lake.

Mu Chen also burst forward with them. He put one foot on the empty air and used the foothold to drive his body straight towards the center of the lake.

Even though Fire Spirit Lotuses were decently-prized treasures, the one that Mu Chen wanted was the Fire Celestial Lotus. If he could get his hands on that, then he'd be able to strengthen the Nine Neatherflame inside him, while also charging directly towards the Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase.

Even though Mu Chen had quite a few tricks he could've pulled, he knew that his physique still wasn't strong enough. If he ended up fighting an opponent who far surpassed him in strength, things could get troublesome.

Rustle!

Those thoughts further fueled Mu Chen's desire for the Fire Celestial Lotus and he abruptly quickened his pace.

Tsssssshhh! Tssssh!

The moment Mu Chen upped his speed, the magma below him suddenly boiled upwards. A pillar of liquid stone rose into the air by several feet and ruthlessly aimed towards him.

Mu Chen moved to evade as he activated the Shadowspirit Step and his body split into several illusions as he avoided the pillar of magma. The maneuver hadn't slowed him in the least as he continued towards his target.

The surface of the magma lake bubbled with noise as figures shuttled back and forth. Each Fire Spirit Lotus blooming on the lake's surface had already been targeted by more than one person. Chaotic battles broke out over who would be the one to keep the treasures.

These fights also attracted the Fire-Eaters hidden under the magma. If they discovered an opening, they'd burst up with ruthless attacks.

As a result, the battles were accompanied by shrieks of misery as one body after another fell into the lake. Even though one could keep the burning liquid at bay with their Spiritual Energy, they'd be overwhelmed with despair and fear once they had fell into it, as a result of being attacked by the Fire-Eaters.

Mu Chen watched the scene unfold with apathy and his steps didn't show the slightest pause. He wasn't fighting over the Fire Spirit Lotuses, so he was using his energy to boost his speed to the max as he headed towards the center of the lake.

One could expect the natural Spiritual Aura to be even more chaotic around the center of the lake and the Spiritual Beasts hiding in that area to be even more savage and ruthless. The other experts probably wouldn't head in that direction for a while, so Mu Chen had the opportunity for first pick.

In just a few short minutes, Mu Chen had already approached the center

of the lake. He kept his eyes peeled for the possible existence of a Fire Celestial Lotus.

However, his first search didn't bear fruit. The center of the lake only bubbled and burst with blazing hot scarlet magma.

"There aren't any here?"

Mu Chen knit his brows as a look of disappointment flashed across his face.

Shhhhhhuu.

As Mu Chen was feeling disappointment from the lack of a harvest, a screeching wind blew by his ears. There were people heading in his direction and it was clear that their target was the same as Mu Chen's – the Fire Celestial Lotus. They must have good foresight.

Mu Chen looked them up and down and realised that these newcomers weren't weak. However, he knitted his brows when his eyes reached the end of the line. There were a few familiar figures.

It was a group of five or six people led by someone dressed in white – the Young City Lord of White Dragon City, Bai Dong. Next to him were several white-robed underlings and the grey-robed elder.

Mu Chen and Bai Dong recognised each other at the same time. A contemplative smile crossed the latter's dark eyes.

"Haha. Brother, are you alone? It looks like you've been separated from your friends." Bai Dong's face was plastered over with a smile as he approached Mu Chen.

The grey-robed elder and the underlings spread out in a circular formation as they slowly advanced towards Mu Chen.

Mu Chen's eyes dulled at the sight of them; however he displayed a smile on his handsome face as he moved towards Bai Dong. He cupped his hands and said, "So, it's the Young City Lord who I've heard so much about. Please forgive me for my lack of respect back at the auction house."

Bai Dong gave Mu Chen a blank look as he studied the slightly regretful

expression on Mu Chen's face. He couldn't help puffing out his chest and raising his head. Even though Bai Dong still intended to kill Mu Chen, he thought he'd at least spare his enemy some suffering in return for his tact.

"Haha, it was just a small disagreement... I, Young City Lord of the White Dragon City..." Bai Dong smiled, but before he could finish his sentence, the face of the grey-robed elder abruptly changed.

Rustle!

Mu Chen moved like ghost and approached Bai Dong in only a single step. A cyan longsword appeared in his fist and flashed towards Bai Dong's throat in a ruthless swing.

Mu Chen's actions were so unexpected that both Bai Dong and his grey-robed elder had been taken by surprise. Not only did this little Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase manage to escape their clutches earlier, but he dared to strike right before their eyes!

"Shhhhhhu!"

Of course, Mu Chen's blow was difficult to avoid, given such a short distance. There was nothing that Bai Dong could do except watch as the sharp sword glinted towards him.

Baaang!

But right before Mu Chen's glowing sword cut through Bai Dong's neck, the grey-robed elder forced a palm towards Bai Dong and sent him flying backwards at an angle.

The blade streak across Bai Dong's face and sliced off his ear. Fresh blood welled up from the wound.

Since Mu Chan had failed to kill his target with that strike, he immediately backed away. Nothing rippled in his dark pupils and the cold smile on his face had turned even more frigid. The warmth from before was entirely gone from his face.

"Haha, you can thank your dumb luck." Mu Chen's longsword trembled as he smiled at Bai Dong, who'd lost an ear and had blood all over his face.

“Bastard…bastard, little trash…my ear…”

Bai Dong’s expression was savage and the blood made his expression seem even more twisted. He covered his missing ear with one hand as he pointed at Mu Chen with a trembling finger and roared with the desire to tear Mu Chen apart.

He never imagined that someone like Mu Chen would be able to do something like to him!

“Elder Qiu! Catch him, catch him! But, don’t kill him! I want to chop his limbs off one by one!” Bai Dong snarled as his eyes turned scarlet red.

“Brat, it looks like we really can’t underestimate you. So cunning and ruthless at such a tender age.” The grey-robed elder darkly stared at Mu Chen. Now he knew why those four Demonic Dragon Guards had wound up dead instead. This brat was a few years younger than Bai Dong, but he’s as cunning as a fox and ruthless to the extreme. How could an ordinary student of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy have learned such ruthlessness?

“You’ve left a blood trail all the way to my doorstep. Did you think I was going to offer you tea and shout ‘1,2,3’ before we started?” Mu Chen laughed in ridicule.

The grey-robed elder had darkly stared at him and coldly laughed in reply. “No worries. Either way, nothing can change your fate. You managed to escape last time; but this time, you won’t be so lucky.”

Mu Chen’s pupils slightly shrank. “Last time?”

He stared into the eyes of the grey-robed elder. Then Mu Chen’s gradually turned from bewildered to cold.

“So, you were the ones who sent those people… which means that your White Dragon City is, in fact, from the Demonic Dragon Palace?” Mu Chen’s heart jolted. This secret Demonic Dragon Palace was indeed powerful and far-reaching. Even the White Dragon City was one of their chess pieces.

“What a smart brat.”

The grey-robed elder smiled indifferently. He never thought that this slip of his tongue would give so much away to this youth. But what the kid learned wouldn't make a difference right before he died.

"Go, kill him."

The grey-robed elder waved his hand and the white-robed subordinates advanced towards Mu Chen with icy expressions and bloodthirsty auras — exactly the same as the four who they'd encountered in the forest!

Chapter 241: Fire Celestial Lotus

The moment the cold laugh and bloodthirst started from the grey-robed elder, several white-robed men darted out from behind him. With a quick flick of their hands, several black spears swung and created multiple spear images that were hurled towards Mu Chen.

The cyan longsword flashed and a pitch-black Spiritual Energy burst outwards from Mu Chen's body. The sword flickered with black flames and blocked all of the spear images that rained down on him.

Claang! Claaang!

The sword collided with the spears and burned them away with its black flames. These white-robed individuals weren't as strong as the four from before – they should be somewhere in the Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase. However, their actions were extremely well coordinated. Even a Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase might get killed in a fight against them.

Mu Chen looked up at the grey-robed elder, who was staring back at him with the eyes of a venomous snake. This Heavenly Transform Stage Initial Phase old bat was the one Mu Chen truly feared. Such power was quite overbearing with his current cultivation. This old man would be a great threat, if he decided to move against him.

Mu Chen had no backup, at present, and it was unlikely that he'd be able to carve an escape route out, like last time. His situation was especially un-reassuring.

Several others nearby had noticed the confrontation between Mu Chen and the members of White Dragon City. However, they only afforded a cursory glance, before they took the initiative to leave the area. It was clear that they didn't want to get themselves involved.

"I must find an opportunity to escape." Mu Chen frowned. They should be within the vicinity of the Sovereign Spirit Treasury, so, if he started a fight with Bai Dong right now, there would be too many unstable factors. He couldn't tell if there were going to be more reinforcements from White Dragon City. On top of that, he had to stay wary of the others, who were

eyeing him like tigers watching their prey.

"Trying to escape?"

Mu Chen flicked his eyes towards the grey-robed elder, who darkly smiled back at him. Then, something flashed in the elder's eyes. He clenched his dried-up fists as a powerful Spiritual Energy surged into an arc of light and formed into a long spear. The Spiritual Energy of the arc throbbed and gave it an astonishing might.

"The old fellow is about to act!"

Mu Chen's face couldn't help to changed as he retreated.

The grey-robed elder stepped forward with a cold smile on his face. Then, his image turned fuzzy for a moment, as if it was formed from wisps of smoke. Within a few steps, he'd closed the empty space between himself and Mu Chen.

Mu Chen cheerlessly pushed his Shadowspirit Step as far as it could go; however, the old man still managed to catch up. Whatever Spiritual Art this old man practiced, it clearly surpassed the Shadowspirit Step.

"Black Dragon Spear!"

The dark spear in the elder's hand vibrated and exploded with a brilliant light as it lunged forward. The majestic Spiritual Energy moved like a black dragon and swiped at Mu Chen. A sharp bloodthirst whipped past him.

Mu Chen didn't dare to pause as the shocking gale blew past him. Instead, he raised his hand and the Nine-layered Pagoda materialised and swelled in size, becoming a pagoda-shield between them.

Baaaang!

The long spear smashed into the Nine-layered Pagoda, causing it to tremble with a metallic clash. The force of the impact flowed towards Mu Chen and made his blood and qi surge.

"Hmm?"

The grey-robed elder made a sound of surprise. Not even a Heavenly

Fusion Stage Late Phase should be able to withstand that attack; however, this youth had managed it with the help of this strange black pagoda.

"Seal this entire area. I want to see how long he can last." That grey-robed elder coldly ordered. His eyes focused as he took another step forward. His majestic Spiritual Energy circulated as he released his Heavenly Transform Stage power in an explosive burst of strength. The black spear in his hands stabbed out with an air-ripping speed, causing waves on the surface of the magma lake.

Mu Chen mobilised his Shadowspirit Step to dodge the grey elder's increasingly ferocious attacks. Once again, he sent the Nine-layered Pagoda out to withstood the attacks.

But if this goes on, he'd be thoroughly suppressed.

"Elder Qiu, remember not to kill him. I don't want him dying so easily!" Bai Dong stood outside their range, savagely glaring at the disadvantaged Mu Chen.

"Rest assured, Young City Lord. I won't let him escape." the grey-robed elder darkly smiled as a chill revealed itself in his eyes. His attacks intensified even further.

Mu Chen made a jolty retreat, with a gloomy expression on his face. The old man's overbearing posture had provoked his anger.

Mu Chen felt pressured by the old man's Heavenly Transform Stage Initial Phase strength, but he also knew that he would have to suffer the consequences of going all out.

"Hey, old fart, if you want to play, then I'll play with you!"

There was a murkiness in Mu Chen's eyes as he started forming seals with both hands. The seals quickly came into being with a surge of frighteningly powerful Spiritual Energy ripples.

"Hmm?" The grey-robed elder sensed the Spiritual Energy ripples and focused on them. So, this brat really does have some tricks up his sleeve. No wonder he managed to kill the four Demonic Dragon Guards.

The moment before Mu Chen executed his Four Gods Constellation Scripture, he stole a glance at the boiling magma. A trace of shock suddenly flashed through his previously cold eyes.

Even though Mu Chen's attention had been split, the speed at which he formed his seals didn't slow for even a moment.

"Brat, you're reckless to split your attention while fighting me!"

The grey-robed elder had noticed the diversion of Mu Chen's attention and he turned into a strand of fuzzy smoke that reappeared above Mu Chen with lightning speed. Waves of Spiritual Energy moved through the black spear as it cut downwards.

At the same time, the Nine-layered Pagoda appeared above Mu Chen and rapidly expanded.

Claaaang!

The elder's fierce attack drove into the pagoda, which turned dull and quickly shrank, before it crashed into Mu Chen.

Mu Chen suffered from heavy blow and tumbled backwards into the magma with a "pfff!"

The waves of magma lapped upwards as Mu Chen disappeared beneath them.

The grey-robed elder stood in the sky, watching the magma lake in surprise. Could that brat really have died just like that?

Bai Dong quickly flew over to him with a wary expression. He clenched his fist and said, "That brat won't die so easily. Fish him out! I'll grind his bones to dust!"

The grey-robed elder shook his head and replied, "Young City Lord, this lake is filled with flame miasma. Even if one can withstood the magma itself with their Spiritual Energy, they will still be corroded away by the flame miasma. That brat fell in; his death is certain.

Bai Dong's face twisted with refusal. He hated Mu Chen down to his bones and still had plans for ruthlessly torturing him. He didn't expect Mu

Chen to simply die like that.

"We'll stand guard here. If he does survive, he's certain not to stay in there for long. The moment he reappears, we'll capture him." The grey-robed elder replied as he swept an eye over the magma lake.

Bai Dong nodded and gritted his teeth. "Little trash, you better not die so quickly!"

They took separate positions in the air as they probed the surface of the lake with their senses. However, they were ultimately left bewildered and empty-handed after guarding the area for a full ten minutes, without a sign of Mu Chen.

"That brat definitely died in there," the grey-robed elder solemnly declared. There was no way he could've survived after so long. Not to mention that the brat was still a Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase.

Bai Dong whipped his sleeves around.

"Young City Lord, let us reconvene with the City Lord. Obtaining the treasures left behind by the White Dragon Sovereign is still of utmost importance," the elder said.

Bai Dong could only nod his head as he glanced at the magma lake's one last time, before reluctantly leaving.

Bai Dong left, clearly not knowing that Mu Chen — who he thought to be dead — was still hiding out in the depths of the magma lake. His body was shrouded in black flames. With the Nine Netherflame guarding him, the magma was no threat at all; the so-called flame miasma couldn't get through its guard.

Mu Chen swam around in the scarlet magma, constantly keeping an eye out for dangers. The Nine Nether Bird had reported that it'd discovered peculiar ripples coming from deeper down.

It was highly possible that those ripples were coming from the Fire Celestial Lotus!

That's why Mu Chen had seized the opportunity to escape the grey-

robed elder by diving into the magma lake. This way, he could spend his time searching for the Fire Celestial Lotus, instead.

"That old fart. The next time we meet, I'll give you a taste of my moves." Mu Chen coldly snorted to himself. If there hadn't been other things holding him back, how could he have let himself be suppressed like that? If Mu Chen had gone all out, then that old fart would either be dead, or have had a layer of his hide scraped off. However, the exchange would've been exhausting on Mu Chen's part.

Mu Chen didn't slow his search as these thoughts circulated through his heart. The deeper he dived into the magma lake, the stronger the heat became. The temperature at this depth was even starting to penetrate the defenses of the Nine Netherflame.

If this went on, then Mu Chen wouldn't be able to continue, with or without the Nine Netherflame's protection.

"Two hundred meters down, on your right." The Nine Nether Bird's voice suddenly sounded.

Mu Chen acknowledged the voice with a change of expression and immediately headed towards the direction the Nine Nether Bird had indicated.In a few moments later, he looked up ahead with an expression of excitement on his face.

The scarlet magma was boiling harder over here. In the center of it all floated a rainbow-coloured lotus. Not even the magma could approach the brilliant rainbow colors that glowed from it.

A strange fragrance spread through the area and seemed to disperse the heat that had built up in Mu Chen's body.

Mu Chen studied the rainbow lotus that was deep in the magma with an expression of exhilaration. This was the Fire Celestial Lotus that he'd been searching for!

Chapter 242: Refining the Lotus Seed

It really is the Fire Celestial Lotus.

Mu Chen's eyes were blazing as he stared at the rainbow-coloured lotus submerged in the magma lake. Joy had settled within him as his plan bore fruit, as expected. The Fire Spiritual Energy around here was so strong that it could support many Fire Spirit Lotuses at once, so there simply had to be one that'd managed to evolve. The only difference in his plans was that the treasure hadn't been floating on the surface; instead, it'd been hidden deep in the magma.

The magma was boiling so hot that it could melt metal. Even Heavenly Transform Stage experts wouldn't dare to dive into it. If the Nine Netherflames hadn't been protecting Mu Chen's body, then he wouldn't have been able to obtain the Fire Celestial Lotus, even if he knew where it'd been hidden. The only thing he could've done was sigh and leave with depressed spirits.

Mu Chen licked his lips as he continued his pace towards the Fire Celestial Lotus.

But, the moment before Mu Chen reached the Fire Celestial Lotus, he sensed a sudden ripple through the magma. A scarlet light pierced through the lake and was headed towards him at a startling speed.

Mu Chen was temporarily caught off guard by the sudden attack, but he still managed to shroud his body within the Nine-layered Pagoda with a wave of his hand.

Claaaang!

The scarlet light collided with the Nine-layered Pagoda, causing it to shake violently. The dark light flickered, then rapidly faded away, before re-entering Mu Chen's body.

"Pffffff."

Mu Chen's face turned pale as the Nine-Layered Pagoda dulled and returned to him as he spat out a mouthful of blood. His eyes glazed over in

shock as he barely managed to turn his head towards the right.

A scarlet snake slithered through the magma. It was covered in scarlet scales and had flaming horns. Other than that, it didn't look to be all that powerful. The only thing that was unique about it was the fact that its horns were burning with dark-gold flames and flowed with fiery-red magma.

In fact, this scarlet snake was actually far smaller than the Flame-Eating Pythons that Mu Chen had seen from the surface. However, the strength that flowed from this one was far greater. Mu Chen felt much more power emanating from it than from even that grey-clothed elder.

Is this the King Flame-Eating Python?! Mu Chen felt a jolt in his heart and tasted something bitter on his tongue as he looked upon the smaller scarlet serpent. How could he have forgotten that? The Fire Celestial Lotus was such a rare treasure — how could it not have a guardian Spiritual Beast? The ordinary Fire Spirit Lotuses floating above him were already enough to attract all those regular Flame-Eaters; so, of course, the higher grade Fire Celestial Lotus would have something guarding it.

Based on the way this particular Flame-Eater was acting, Mu Chen guessed that it was as strong as a Heavenly Transform Stage Middle Phase expert. He also had to take into account the fact that they were currently inside the magma. Forget about Mu Chen, even Su Xuan wouldn't be able to win in this situation.

"Hissss. Hiss."

The King Flame-Eater savagely stared down at Mu Chen with its triangularly arranged pupils. Given that it was so powerful, of course it'd developed a decent amount of intelligence over time. It looked at Mu Chen with the mocking expression of a cat watching a mouse. It knew its own strength — it also knew that this little human would certainly become food in its mouth, sooner or later.

Mu Chen didn't even twitch as he looked at the Fire Celestial Lotus right before his eyes, then back at the King Flame-Eater that was still eyeing him like a predator watching its prey. He decisively grounded his teeth and

retreated.

At his current level, there was no way Mu Chen could deal with that King Flame-Eater. If he loitered around there any longer, he'd definitely lose his life.

Shhhhhu!

The moment Mu Chen moved, something primal flashed through the eyes of the King Flame-Eater. With a twitch of its tail, a frightening Spiritual Energy swept out. Mu Chen sensed the magma around him bear down even harder than before, slowing him down, little by little, until he came to a full stop.

The King Flame-Eater could actually control the magma with such precision.

Cold sweat beaded on Mu Chen's forehead as the Nine Netherflame continued to protect his body from within. He slowly raised his eyes to see the King Flame-Eater tearing through the magma towards him like a scarlet ray of light.

"Damn it!"

Mu Chen's expression changed and his Spiritual Energy surged as he prepared to meet the threat.

But right before Mu Chen could act, something jolted him from within his body. A clear and resonant cry sounded from him.

"Liiii!"

The pride, honor, and power carried in that cry were as clear as day.

The King Flame-Eater immediately braked on its charge as the cunning pupils were overwhelmed with shock and despair. It looked as if it'd seen something truly terrifying.

Rustle!

The King Flame-Eater twisted its body, turned, and fled.

Boom!

As it turned to flee, a surge of black flames poured from Mu Chen's body and took the shape of a dark bird. The bird's eyes were stone-cold as they stared at the retreating figure of the King Flame-Eater. When it opened its beak, a stream of black flames poured out and raced through the magma, enveloping the King Flame-Eater.

"Chiii! Chii!"

The King Flame-Eater desperately struggled against the attack as it wailed mournfully.

The dark bird blazed and ignored the cries of the serpent. Then, it opened its beak again and inhaled. The black flame-shrouded snake writhed as it turned into a streak of dark light and was devoured.

Mu Chen watched with a dumbfounded expression. Then, he looked towards the slender black bird. Nine Nether Bird?

The bird that burned with black flames casually turned to Mu Chen. That expression. Who else could it be, if not the Nine Nether Bird?

"So, you can leave my body now?" Mu Chen said with a little shock. It looked like the Nine Nther Bird had regained quite a bit of strength.

"This is only a form created with Spiritual Energy."

The Nine Nether Bird's voice resounded deep inside Mu Chen's heart. Then, it stretched its wings and looked at Mu Chen. "I don't want to die just because I associated with you."

Mu Chen shrugged and smiled. Thanks to the Bloodlink Bond between them, if he'd died from the King Flame-Eater, then the Nine Nether Bird would've also died with him.

The Spiritual Energy image of the Nine Nether Bird suddenly flapped its wings and a black flame spurted towards Mu Chen, "It looks like something that the King Flame-Eater ate hasn't been fully digested."

As Mu Chen observed the lump of black flames with wide eyes, the flames dispersed and revealed a palm-sized medal that looked like it'd been forged in silver. The surface of the silver medal flickered with a

strange aura and had been engraved with the image of a soaring white dragon.

What's this? Mu Chen was astonished. He examined the medal and its carving of the dragon, but didn't sense anything off about it. He frowned as he muttered to himself and stowed it away.

Based on the design of the white dragon, this should've been something left behind by the White Dragon Sovereign. But why was it inside the King Flame-Eater?

Mu Chen had no idea how to use the silver medal, so he stowed it away and looked back towards the Fire Celestial Lotus. This time, he swam over without meeting any obstacles and gingerly landed on the petals of the rainbow-coloured lotus.

At the center of the lotus surged a strand of pure Fire Spiritual Energy. And inside this strand floated a rainbow-coloured lotus seed the size of an infant's fist.

Over time, this rainbow-coloured lotus seed had slowly turned glossy as it gathered the Fire Spiritual Energy in the area. Even now, it constantly emanated an extremely pure fire-attributed Spiritual Energy.

"You can have the Fire Celestial Lotus seed. Once you eat it, give the rest of the flower to me." The Nine Nether Bird swept an eye over the Fire Celestial Lotus and a look of satisfaction filled its eyes. Treasures like this – brimming with rich Fire Spiritual Energy – were exactly what it needed the most.

Mu Chen had no objections to the Nine Nether Bird's request. The lotus seed was where the purest Spiritual Energy had gathered. The flower itself was also quite extraordinary, but the Spiritual Energy there was much more wild. Mu Chen would have to spend much more time and energy absorbing the flower – luxuries that he couldn't afford at the moment. He might as well hand it over to the Nine Nether Bird.

"Refine it quickly. The Fire Celestial Lotus can counter the flame miasma. On top of that, cultivating with it here will greatly benefit the way you absorb the Spiritual Energy inside the lotus seed. You must take the

opportunity, before my Spiritual Energy body disperses. I can still guard you, for now, but you must not waste time." The black flames surged around the Nine Nether bird, then died down as it rapidly shrank to fit in a palm and landed on the lotus flower.

Mu Chen nodded and didn't delay. He took two steps forward and plucked the multicolored lotus-shaped seed floating between the petals.

Onom. Onom.

The moment Mu Chen touched the lotus seed, the Fire Spiritual Energy around him began to churn chaotically. Several surges swept towards Mu Chen, but were absorbed as he circulated the Great Pagoda Art.

Mu Chen quickly unfolded his palm to see the glowing seed. A burning sensation was spreading through his palm, although it was pleasantly warm. When Mu Chen first dived into the magma lake, some of the flame miasma had managed to penetrate the Nine Nether Flame's defenses and invaded his body. It had now been dispelled.

"Good stuff."

Mu Chen exclaimed in admiration as he sat down on top of the lotus flower and pacified the ripples of Spiritual Energy within his body. He placed one palm on top of the seed and one below, then pulled; the suction from his palms caused the seed to explode with a dazzlingly scarlet light that was as intense as the burning sun.

An extremely pure scarlet Spiritual Energy rushed out from the lotus seed and bathed Mu Chen in a scarlet light. It poured into Mu Chen through his mouth, nose, and even his pores.

Mu Chen's skin turned scarlet red and the Spiritual Energy within his body boiled vigorously and blazed with astonishing energy!

Chapter 243: Breakthrough

The wind screeched over the magma lake as human figures scurried back and forth over its surface. Even though the raid earlier had depleted the area of most of its Fire Spirit Lotuses, there were still quite a few left over; after all, this magma lake was extremely vast. A lot of people had stayed in this area to scrape up some of those leftovers.

A white-robed figure sat on one of the huge stone platforms floating in the lake. His eyes were cold and focused as he stared into the scarlet magma, searching for any suspicious movements.

He was a Demonic Dragon Guard that Bai Dong had left behind before they'd moved on. That Bai Dong understood Mu Chen quite well — even after watching him fall into the magma lake, Bai Dong didn't want to give him a chance, so he'd left one expert behind to monitor the situation for him. If the guard noticed any sign that Mu Chen was still alive, then he'd immediately send them a message.

However, the grey-robed elder disapproved of Bai Dong's actions. The magma lake was extremely formidable; even the elder, himself, wouldn't be able to last more than five minutes. On top of that, they'd stayed in the area for more than ten minutes before they left. That was more than enough time for Mu Chen to have been burnt to ashes.

The Demonic Dragon Guard who'd been left behind was thinking the same thoughts; however, he couldn't disobey Bai Dong. Therefore, he impatiently stayed at his post with a terrible mood.

"A Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase brat wants to live after falling in? How is that possible?"

The Demonic Dragon Guard smiled at no one in particular as he absent-mindedly looked around the boiling magma lake. Suddenly, his mouth dropped open as astonishment flooded his eyes.

The other experts who'd been digging the area for Fire Spirit Lotuses also watched the surface of the magma lake with expressions of disbelief.

A whirlpool had formed down there. And all of the Flame-Eaters were fleeing.

Bang!

A tall pillar of magma shot out from the vortex. A human form flew out from the liquid and moved to hover in midair.

The black flames slowly burned away to reveal a slender and handsome youth. Many of the spectators widened their eyes at his familiar features.

"It's that youth who got beaten into the magma lake by those people from White Dragon City!"

"How is he still alive?"

"How is that possible?"

Cries of surprise burst from those who saw Mu Chen's entrance and their faces turned pale as if they'd seen a ghost. At first, they'd felt sympathy for Mu Chen when they saw him fall into the magma lake. But who would've thought that he'd still be alive?

Mu Chen, however, didn't bother with the astonished faces. Instead, he looked down and looked at his slender hands, then clenched them. An unconcealable excitement permeated his majestic Spiritual Energy.

Thanks to the pure Fire Spiritual Energy within the Fire Celestial Lotus, Mu Chen's ability had been greatly strengthened and he'd even entered the Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase. He could also sense that his Nine Netherflame had grown even stronger.

The greatest boost from the refined Fire Seed had been to his Nine Netherflame, instead of his Spiritual Energy.

Mu Chen showed a satisfied smile before he looked around. Bai Dong and his crew were already gone. It made sense; they didn't have the time to wait around for him.

"The next time we meet, I'll make sure you're not so comfortable." A chill flashed through Mu Chen's black pupils. He waved his sleeve and was prepared to leave, but his eyes were suddenly drawn to a stone

platform a short distance away. His expression changed. On that stone platform stood a white-robed elder, staring at him in shock.

"They actually left a guard behind?"

Mu Chen's expression turned dark when he saw the white-robed expert.

The white-robed Demonic Dragon Guard mirrored Mu Chen's change of expression. His heart jumped. Then, without the slightest hesitation, he turned around and left. As a Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase, he definitely wasn't Mu Chen's opponent. He had to find Bai Dong and tell him that Mu Chen was still alive.

Rustle!

But just as the guard started to fly away, a screeching wind made him turn his eyes over his shoulder. What he saw scared him so badly that his soul almost left his body. In that instant, Mu Chen had appeared right behind him.

"Since you stayed behind, then you should stay here forever," Mu Chen said with his cold but casual tone. The ice-cold bloodlust was clear to the ears of the Demonic Dragon Guard.

"Shhhhhu!"

The guard's face changed dramatically. With a clutch of his fingers, a long dark spear materialised in his hand and thrust forward with a trembling ferocity.

A pair of slender hands wrapped in dark flames also shot forward like twin bolts of lightning. They slid over the black spear and reached around the Demonic Dragon Guard.

Bang!

The guard's clothes immediately turned to ashes as a death-black palm print appeared on his back. He coughed up red blood as the despotic flames overtook his body and roasted him down to his meridians.

"Arrrghhh!"

The Demonic Dragon Guards shrieked miserably as he burned.

Mu Chen seized over the black spear with an apathetic expression. Then he swung it down on the Demonic Dragon Guard, much like one would swing a club. A violent gale rushed away from the pair as Mu Chen mercilessly pounded his opponent into the magma lake.

"Arrrghhh!"

The Demonic Dragon Guard shrieked again as he landed in the magma, but was quickly cut off as the boiling liquid engulfed him with a green cloud of smoke. He'd already been reduced to ashes.

With a flick of his finger, Mu Chen tossed the black spear after him. Once that was done, he dusted off his hands. Then he turned around and left, the whole time wearing the same calm expression.

The other experts in the area watched Mu Chen's shrinking back with expressions of fear as they realised that their heads were damp with cold sweat. Who would've thought that such a youngster could be so ferocious when provoked?

That young man was a fierce one. Bai Dong was going to have quite the headache for provoking him.

The experts shook their heads and sighed inwardly before they recovered and returned to their tasks of harvesting the leftover Fire Spirit Lotuses.

Roughly ten minutes later, Mu Chen had left the magma lake behind him. Ahead of him was the huge palace. People were rushing towards it in large numbers like hungry wolves and tigers – everyone was searching for the treasures that might appear.

This area was far more chaotic than the magma lake. Even the slightest would engulf a large number of victims, even if they had no idea what that even was.

Mu Chen swept his eyes over the scene and quickly lost interest. This was clearly still within the outer limits of the Spirit Treasury, so there was no way any treasures would appear all the way out here. Bai Dong and the rest probably hadn't wasted any time here, either.

Mu Chen thought about it a little, then decided to move ahead. With a quick flash, he bolted straight towards the palace. Once in awhile, some untactful idiot would get in his way. When that happened, all Mu Chen had to do was casually send out a palm and send them flying backwards with blood trailing from their mouths. He didn't bother with being polite. When everyone else saw what he was capable of, they grew too wary to act and simply allowed him to pass.

Mu Chen passed through the entryway and entered a long and narrow corridor, which occasionally branched off into a few ancient stone chambers. Mu Chen allowed others to hurry into those rooms ahead of him. Sometimes there'd be bursts of joy – sounded like they'd found some valuable treasures – but those sounds were usually followed by the clashing of weapons.

Mu Chen didn't let his attention stray in the slightest. He identified a single route and headed towards the depths of the palace. He'd already wasted too much time under the magma lake, so now he had to rush.

First, he had to rejoin with Su Xuan and the others. After all, they'd come here as a party. In this place that crawled with hungry wolves, only companions could be trusted.

"I hope nothing happened to them."

Mu Chen frowned and quickened his pace. He didn't have to worry about Su Xuan, with her strength. Li Qing and Guo Xiong were also strong enough to protect themselves. But then there was Su Ling'er, the weakest. If she'd been left alone, she'd definitely take hits due to her fiery temper.

Even though Su Ling'er was a little unreasonable at times, she was still a good person. Mu Chen didn't want anything bad to happen to her.

By the time Mu Chen was done with those thoughts, he'd already sped through several thousand-meter long corridors – and it'd only taken him a little over ten minutes. He'd already passed through a few stone chambers, main halls, and other types of rooms where some sort of Spiritual Aura rippled. However, he only glanced once into those rooms before he flew on. The things inside them weren't worth his time.

“I should’ve travelled the perimeter by now.”

The more Mu Chen flew, the fewer halls and stone chambers he could sense. However, his sense of the scale only grew larger. Compared to the previous places he’d visited, this palace was much more intricate and majestic.

Mu Chen passed through another corridor and almost entered another stone chamber. The stone gate to the chamber had already been smashed and a few humanoid figures stood in the room with ripples of wild Spiritual Energy pouring from their bodies.

Mu Chen glanced into the ransacked chamber and hesitated. Finally, he decided not to press forward for the time being.

But just as Mu Chen was about to turn around, a burst of laughter drifted out of the stone chamber.

“Haha. Beauty, you should obediently hand that item over. Even though you’ve offended us, the great Lion Tiger Regiment, we can still forget about punishment – that is, if you’re obedient. Otherwise, don’t blame us once your smooth skin falls into our hands.”

“Dream on!”

An icy-cold voice spat back at the laughter. A voice filled with anger and deep hatred.

“Is that so? Then don’t blame us. Brothers, capture this ice beauty for me!” They laughed again.

Mu Chen halted his steps outside the stone chamber and narrowed his eyes. He’d heard that voice before – that must be Senior Sister Li Qing.

Chapter 244: Draconic Spirit Bracelets

The stone hall was spacious and majestic; but due to the corrosion of time, it'd collapsed a little. Several huge stone pillars laid around the main hall in crumpled heaps. It gave off the feeling of an ancient ruin.

Several human figures were spread around the ruin-like hall. Only at the center of the room was there a small gathering of about a dozen or so people. There was an air of oppression about the hall, though the others in the room didn't dare to show their opinions about it. They were well-aware of the Lion Tiger Regiment — it was one of the top adventurer parties in the area. Furthermore, both leaders were present, so no one dared to test their luck.

A 2-foot-tall stone statue stood at the end of the hall. The statue's feet were mottled and it glared with wide eyes as it emitted a violent aura. It was so detailed that it looked as if it was actually alive.

Two nicks were carved into the rams of the stone statue.

Under the state was a beautiful, sexy, yet ice-cold girl. She wore a frigid expression that was filled with anger.

"Little beauty, if you don't hand it over, then don't blame us for not knowing how to be tender." A roguish smile passed through the Lion Tiger Regiment. The leader drooled as he passed his eyes over the ice beauty's tender and full features and he felt a demonic fire ignite in his heart. Her figure was too good.

The ice queen standing before the Lion Tiger Regiment was Li Qing, of course. "Don't go too far. You guys already snatched away one my Spiritual Artifacts, and you're still not satisfied?" she growled through her teeth with an ice-cold expression.

She wanted to kill all the despicable men in front of her, but she knew that she was only a Quasi-Heavenly Transform Stage; the leaders of this Lion Tiger Regiment were on the same level. On top of that, they had two Quasi-Heavenly Transform Stage experts. And they had numbers. The subordinates glared at her like tigers watching their prey. She definitely

wouldn't be the one to benefit from a fight.

That middle-aged man of the Lion Tiger Regiment stepped forward and raised his arm. A dark red bracelet appeared on his wrist. It was shaped like a scarlet red dragon — the head and tail linked together to form a circular bracelet. A powerful Spiritual Energy rippled from it and one could hear the faint roars of a dragon.

The glow from the Draconic Spirit Bracelet nearly engulfed the body of the middle-aged man.

All eyes in the stone hall were fixed on the Draconic Spirit Bracelet. Expressions of greed flashed over their faces. When the odd signs of an emerging treasure first showed in the stone hall, Li Qing had been the first to notice. Something strange was happening to the statue's wrists, so she'd reduced the areas on those wrists to dust.

As the clay fell away, everyone saw the spiritual light bloom from the gashes. The statue was wearing a pair of dragon-shaped bracelets that flickered with spiritual light. The roars of dragons echoed through the hall.

Those definitely weren't ordinary Spiritual Artifacts. Guesses were that the Draconic Spirit Bracelets were a High Rank Spiritual Artifact.

High Rank Spiritual Artifact.

Those four words were enough to make many eyes turn red. A High Rank Spiritual Artifact could easily auction for millions of Spirit Coins back in White Dragon City. And now, the High Rank Spiritual Artifacts — the Draconic Spirit Bracelets — had appeared. Of course, it caused no small commotion.

Everyone stood paralysed in wonder, but Li Qing was the first to break from the trance. She acted first and seized one of the Draconic Spirit Bracelets without hinderance.

But the moment she snatched up the Draconic Spirit Bracelets, the two leaders of the Lion Tiger Regiment also saw their chance. The two of them joined hands and forced Li Qing to retreat. They'd also stolen one of the

Draconic Spirit Bracelets.

However, those two hadn't been satisfied with that; they could tell that the two Spiritual Artifacts were a set, which meant that their true might could only be unleashed when used together. That's why they refused to let the other Draconic Spirit Bracelet fall into Li Qing's hands.

The middle-aged man gently caressed his Draconic Spirit Bracelet and smiled at Li Qing. "Hand over the other Draconic Spirit Bracelet. We promise not to hurt you."

This man was one of the Lion Tiger Regiment's two leaders – Cheng Hu. He was well-known in the White Dragon Hillock.

Li Qing grounded her teeth and her charming eyes seemed to erupt with flames. These people from the Lion Tiger Regiment were being too much.

"If you want to steal the Draconic Spirit Bracelet from my hands, you're welcome to try!" Li Qing's voice was icy-cold. She wore only one bracelet shaped like a fire-dragon on her jade-like wrist. A wild Spiritual Energy influenced the natural Spiritual Energy caused it to shake.

"Haha. Do you think you can confront our Lion Tiger Regiment all alone?" Cheng Hu coldly smiled. He wasn't bothered by whether or not the bystanders would gossip about them of taking advantage with numbers. As far as he could see, there was only benefits to be had from this situation. What would he care about gossip?

"Big Brother, we'll act together and capture her. We'll see how long she can act tough!" The other leader of the Lion Tiger Regiment, Cheng Shi, coldly proposed. He was the one who Mu Chen had fought before.

If the Draconic Spirit Bracelets had only been Middle Rank Spiritual Artifacts, then perhaps they wouldn't have cared so much. Such a Spiritual Artifact might be tempting, but it wouldn't be something that they absolutely had to get their hands on. But this was a different story with a High Rank Spiritual Artifact.

Even though there was only one difference between ranks, the power difference was like that between heaven and earth. If they obtained that

High Rank Spiritual Artifact, they wouldn't even need to fear a Heavenly Transform Stage Initial Phase expert. They could even use their connections to suppress their opponent.

In the White Dragon Hillock, the decently-strong forces all possessed Middle Rank Spiritual Artifacts. But none other than the three major forces the amount of forces that possessed High Rank Spiritual Artifact wouldn't exceed the fingers on one hand.

Above the High Rank Spiritual Artifacts were Peerless Rank Spiritual Artifacts. However, artifacts of that level were objects that exceeded their imaginations. It's said that Spiritual Artifacts of that level possessed their own intelligence. Profound and boundless with the power to move mountains and split seas. Forget about the White Dragon Hillock, there weren't even that many forces on the entire Northern Heavens Continent that possessed Peerless Rank Spiritual Artifacts.

Cheng Hu nodded as he stared at Li Qing with a dark and cold expression.

Everyone else in the stone hall inwardly smacked their lips. So the two leaders were going to gang up against Li Qing. The Lion Tiger Regiment was dishonorable, indeed.

Li Qing now wore a different expression, as well; however, the rage in her eyes hadn't diminished. She tightly clutched her Draconic Spirit Bracelet. She'd already decided that she wouldn't let them steal her half of the treasure so easily, even if that meant risking both parties to be injured.

"Move!"

The two brothers didn't give a second thought about the shushing from the crowd around them. With a shout, they rushed Li Qing together. Two powerful Spiritual Energies rippled out. The members of the crowd of less strength urgently fell back from the powerful Spiritual Energy pressure.

Li Qing grounded her teeth at the attack. She was prepared to use the Draconic Spirit Bracelet, even though she still wasn't very familiar with it.

But, before she could act, a familiar voice mockingly called from

somewhere else in the stone hall. “The Lion Tiger Regiment should be a pretty well-known force in the White Dragon Hillock, right? So why are their actions so shady?”

“Who?!”

Cheng Hu and Cheng Shi halted their rush and directed their gaze to the mocking voice. Their eyes quickly found it near the broken gate. The slender and handsome youth – staring at them with a sneer – standing in front of it.

“It’s that kid!”

Cheng Hu and Cheng Shi’s faces changed as they immediately tried to peer into the corridor behind Mu Chen. When they realised that they couldn’t see Su Xuan, they breathed out sighs of relief. As long as that girl – who seemed so gentle yet made them feel such pressure – wasn’t present, then they had nothing to fear.

“Mu Chen!”

The rage in Li Qing’s beautiful eyes was replaced with a look of delight. But that was quickly replaced by an expression of worry when she, too, realised that Mu Chen was alone.

She knew that Mu Chen was a book not to be judged by its cover, but the members of the Lion Tiger Regiment weren’t the usual enemies they dealt with.

“Brat, I advise you to scram while you still can. You should try not to invite disaster upon yourself.” Cheng Hu slowly said as he stared at Mu Chen with a dark expression.

Mu Chen only smiled, tapped his foot, and shot across the stone hall, landing next to Li Qing. He couldn’t care less about the dark looks coming from Cheng Hu and his experts. He looked at Li Qing with a clam smile and asked, “Senior Sister Li Qing, are you alright?”

A grateful look flashed through her beautiful eyes as she lightly shook her head. “We’ll wait for the opportunity and make a break for it. We’ll wait until we can join up with Su Xuan and the others. Then, they won’t

dare to act like this anymore."

Mu Chen nodded and replied, "Yes, we definitely have to leave. But first, we're going to take your things back."

He turned around to look at Cheng Hu's group, then extended his hand with a smile. "Trash of the Lion Tiger Regiment, hand it over and scram."

All of the faces in the stone hall changed to brilliantly peculiar expressions. Did that brat purposely show up to cause trouble? Did he really think that the Lion Tiger Regiment was still going to let him off?

The bystanders looked back at the two brothers and confirmed that their expressions had, indeed, darkened. Sharp bloodlust showed in their eyes.

Chapter 245: Twin Dragon Suppression

"Brat, you're asking for death!"

The two brothers stared Mu Chen down with ruthless and dark eyes. They didn't expect this youth to be so insolent, especially since he'd appeared alone. To think he actually dared to be so untactful.

"Boss, kill that brat!" someone from the Lion Tiger Regiment called out. Did this stinking brat really think that their fame was nothing but empty bragging?

Cheng Shi and Cheng Hu exchanged glances. Then, the former nodded and slowly started walking forward as surges of powerful Spiritual Energy pressure poured out of him. His tone was dull as he said, "Brat, your courage is commendable, but I'll let you know this: everyone who's been in your situation has met a miserable end."

He drew his fingers together and a long black sword materialised in his fist. A bloodthirsty aura emanated from it – it was clearly a powerful Spiritual Artifact.

It looked like Cheng Shi planned to take matters into his own hands.

The expression in Li Qing's charming eyes turned cold and she prepared to take a step forward. However, she was blocked by Mu Chen.

"Let me handle it."

Mu Chen smiled at Li Qing. At first, Li Qing had been rather worried about their situation; but for some reason, that worry had been lifted away by Mu Chen's smile. After interacting with him for these past few days, she'd come to understand him a little. He wouldn't be rash and act on ideas that he was uncertain about.

He'd been provoking the other party since the moment he showed up. He wasn't stupid, he just didn't fear the other party.

He wasn't afraid, which meant that he didn't plan to leave any face for the other party.

“Be cautious, I’ll watch Cheng Hu for you.” Li Qing said in a low voice.

Mu Chen nodded as he slowly moved forward. Spiritual lights flickered in his hand and a cyan longsword appeared.

“One-on-one? What courage you have.”

Cheng Shi grinned angrily when he saw Mu Chen move forward alone. This brat was really too arrogant. A mere Heavenly Fusion Stage strength actually dared to talk back to him — to he, who had Quasi-Heavenly Transform Stage strength. This brat really wanted to die!

All other eyes in the stone hall watched with amazed expressions. They had no idea where this youth was getting his confidence from. To think he dared to do such a stupid thing.

“Well, since you decided to come, then you should pay the price for your own words.”

Who knows how many lives have stained Cheng Shi’s hands over the years? Of course, he wasn’t going to be lenient towards Mu Chen just because he was young. A cruel look flashed through Cheng Shi’s eyes. A powerful Spiritual Energy rushed out and he took another step forward. His Spiritual Energy surged until it resembled a lion’s roar that echoed and shook the stone hall.

“Brat, die!”

He flashed and reappeared in the air right in front of Mu Chen’s eyes. His eyes were dark as he swung the large blade in his hands downwards. There was no fanciness in that attack, just the surge of Spiritual Energy in his body. The swing sent out waves of blade energy several dozen feet long and cracked the ground when they struck.

Cheng Shi’s actions didn’t have the slightest hint mercy in them. They only fully demonstrated his viciousness.

“Haaaaaa.”

Mu Chen took in a deep breath and his dark pupils turned icy-cold. He firmly gripped his longsword and circulated his Spiritual Energy, which

coursed strongly through his meridians before rushing out from his body. Black flames ascended along with his spiritual energy and nearly shrouded his entire body. The temperature rose in the stone hall.

Rustle!

Mu Chen growled as he thrusted his longsword. Black flames engulfed his longsword as it cut forward and met Cheng Hu's blade.

Bang!

Blade light and sword light clashed and rang with an echoing clang. The force of the impact swept out and sliced the nearby stone pillars with cuts as smooth as the surface of a mirror. The people nearby retreated for fear that they'd be caught in the crossfire.

Rumble!

One stone pillar collapsed after another in cloudy heaps of dust and rubble. Everyone turned back to the battle to see two figures standing in midair over a huge pile of destroyed stone. The two were glaring at each other with ferocious expressions, much like two predators competing for prey.

"Brat, you actually managed to take an attack from our second leader?" The members of the Lion Tiger Regiment watched with faces full of shock. They knew that even a Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase should've been heavily wounded by that attack. But, this young man had completely blocked it with just a sword.

"No wonder he was so arrogant. So, it seems he actually does have some ability. But, in the end, it doesn't matter what kind of methods he has up his sleeves. Now that he's enraged our second leader, there's no way he's escaping death." someone coldly said with a smile.

Cheng Hu narrowed his eyes at the youth, who was standing in midair and knitting his brows back at him. This youth's Spiritual Energy felt a little odd. Even though it wasn't as powerful as Cheng Shi's, those black flames were extremely destructive. When they crossed blades just now, most of Cheng Shi's blade light had been corroded away by those black

flames.

Li Qing sighed a breath of relief when she saw that Mu Chen hadn't been beaten back. Her jade-like hands clutched the Draconic Spirit Bracelet. The moment Cheng Hu decided to join the fight, she'd move to obstruct them.

Everyone's attention was focused on the battle between Mu Chen and Cheng Shi, so no one had noticed anything as the stone pillars had crumbled. The stone statue at the end of the hall was glowing with a barely visible light.

"So, you have some abilities, after all."

Cheng Shi tightly clutched his long blade with a dark expression. At first, he'd planned to beat this Heavenly Fusion Stage kid down; but, contrary to his expectations, this brat's Spiritual Energy was so abnormal that it was no longer possible. That strange Spiritual Energy and those black flames could even ignite and evaporate his blade light.

Mu Chen gripped his longsword as he exhaled. In reality, he was also surprised that he'd withstood Cheng Shi's attack without giving any ground. It seemed like his recent breakthrough to the Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase had boosted his strength more than he'd originally thought. Although, of course, he still knew that the Nine Netherflame had been strengthened the most. The Nine Netherflame inside his Spiritual Energy was never this powerful before he'd refined that Fire Celestial Lotus.

"A Quasi-Heavenly Transform Stage still isn't qualified to act so cocky in front of me."

Mu Chen smiled, though the smile never reached his eyes. Now that he'd finally entered the Sovereign Spirit Treasury, of course he wasn't going to give all his time to Cheng Shi. He had to end this quickly.

As Mu Chen reached that conclusion, he extended his hand. The dark light in his palm flared as the Nine-layered Pagoda appeared.

A sharp gale whipped up as the the Nine-layered Pagoda appeared and

instantly grew into a massive tower a hundred feet tall. The black flames surged over the pagoda's structure and an intense Spiritual Energy rippled out.

"Roar!"

The first floor of the pagoda glowed with a golden light — a light that began moving across the walls of the pagoda. A massive golden dragon lifted out of the walls and reared its head to roar at the sky. The stone hall trembled.

Cheng Shi's eyes widened with fear. There was definitely something off about this kid. He couldn't underestimate him.

He tightened his fingers around his long blade and began circulating his Spiritual Energy without reserve. A majestic Spiritual Energy swept out like a tidal wave, enveloping the entire hall with its pressure.

Mu Chen's expression was still indifferent as he watched the golden dragon spiral around the Nine-layered Pagoda. However, he wasn't done with his attack yet; he brought his hands together and formed a strange sign.

Onom!

The moment Mu Chen formed his sign, the Nine-layered Pagoda began buzzing as it floated in midair. The golden light started to spread from the first floor to the second.

When the golden light completed its reach for the second floor, another golden dragon appeared. It, too, roared and left the pagoda to spiral around the Nine-layered Pagoda.

The two golden dragons roared as they circled the pagoda and the natural Spiritual Aura surged violently in response. It was a shock to many eyes.

Joy bubbled up in Mu Chen's eyes at the appearance of the second golden dragon. There were nine layers to the Nine-layered Pagoda and each held a golden dragon. Before today, he'd only been able to control the dragon of the first layer — but now, he could finally summon the second

one.

Mu Chen's expression burned as he studied his Nine-layered Pagoda. The Great Pagoda Art that his mother had left him wasn't an ordinary art, of course. The profound intent hidden within it would slowly reveal itself as he grew stronger. He wondered how powerful this Great Pagoda Art would be once he cultivated it to its end?

He could just see the spectacular sight of nine dragons soaring from the pagoda. He looked forward to it.

"Now, let's offer you to the pagoda!"

Mu Chen coldly smiled at Cheng Shi, who still wore a stunned expression from the appearance of the Nine-layered Pagoda. Mu Chen's he willed it to happen with his intent, without the slightest hesitation. An earth-shattering shadow and two golden dragons mercilessly bearing down on Cheng Shi. Then, he willed it to happen with his intent, without the slightest hesitation.

"Nine-layered Pagoda, Twin Dragon Suppression!"

Bang!

The stone floor collapsed and a wild energy fluctuated. The bystanders with inferior strength coughed up blood as they retreated from the vibrations. The stone pillars exploded into fine shards.

"Slash of the Heavenly Tiger!"

The dumbstruck Cheng Shi finally recovered and reacted to the pagoda. He circulated his Spiritual Energy and burst forward with a snarl and a slash of his blade.

Boom!

Waves of Spiritual Energy rolled away from his body and took the form of a glowing lion. Blades of light sprouted from the lion's body as it moved towards the pagoda like the slash of a sword.

Bang!

As the amazed spectators watched, the blade's lion of light collided with

the pagoda's twin dragons. A shocking Spiritual Energy swept out.

Bang!

The entire stone hall had been leveled. Dust filled the air as the light lion continued its course and was destroyed by the pagoda with a loud noise. Cheng Shi's face changed again.

"Wooooooshhh!"

The pagoda's dragons weren't weakened at all by crushing the lion; instead, they smashed into Cheng Shi at the speed of lightning.

"Pfffft!"

Cheng Shi suffered the full force of the impact and fell back with a pale face. Long tracks appeared under his feet as the pagoda drove him into the base of a pillar. He coughed up mouthfuls of blood.

Li Qing's rosy lips fell open at the instant outcome – just a moment ago, Cheng Shi had been standing there without a scratch on his face. Her charming eyes turned to the slender figure still hovering in midair. Mu Chen was actually this powerful?

Chapter 246: Exchange

Mu Chen softly landed in the stone hall. Everyone wore a shocked expression as they watched Cheng Shi still coughing up blood in his sorry state. His expression was extremely different than it'd been before. This outcome had clearly been outside of his expectations.

Cheng Shi, a Quasi-Heavenly Transform Stage expert, had been defeated by a single move from a Heavenly Fusion Stage youth?

"How is that possible?!"

The members of the Lion Tiger Regiment cried with hoarse voices. The arrogant and belittling expressions had melted away from their faces and were replaced with fear as they looked upon the youth.

Mu Chen stood in the air, watching Cheng Shi, who was still hemorrhaging. A chill flashed through his eyes. Without warning, he burst forward towards Cheng Shi.

It was clear that he planned to kick the enemy while he was down.

"You dare?!"

Chen Hu snarled when he noticed Mu Chen's relentless pursuit. The Draconic Spirit Bracelet on his wrist flared with spiritual light and the roars of dragons. The bracelet itself transformed into a fiery-red flood dragon and burst towards Mu Chen with a raging Spiritual Energy.

A look of concern flashed through Mu Chen's eyes. This Draconic Spirit Bracelet was so powerful that it made his skin crawl. So, there was this much distance between a High Rank Spiritual Artifact and a Middle Rank one?

"Hmph!"

When Cheng Hu acted, he'd forgotten about Li Qing, who was still keeping an eye on them. She coldly snorted and raised her Draconic Spirit Bracelet, as well. Hers, likewise, turned into a massive dragon shrouded in surging scarlet pulses, which quickly moved to block the other scarlet dragon.

Boom! Boom!

The scarlet dragon and scarlet flood-dragon collided in midair as waves of wild Spiritual Energy rippled out. The very air itself was compressing and exploding under the force of their battle, further wrecking the ruined stone hall.

Mu Chen raised his head towards the dragons' fight with a dignified look on his face. Recently, he'd been straying away from Spiritual Artifacts – he'd come to believe that they weren't that powerful, after all. But, now that he'd witnessed the power of a genuine High Rank Spiritual Artifact, he realised just how much a Spiritual Artifact could increase one's strength in battle.

If Cheng Shi had possessed another High Rank Spiritual Artifact, then Mu Chen definitely wouldn't have defeated him so easily. In fact, they might've been caught in a long, drawn-out fight just because of a Spiritual Artifact. Then, all Cheng Shi had to do was use his greater Spiritual Energy to wear Mu Chen away.

The expression in Mu Chen's eyes flickered. Seems like he can't underestimate the effect of a Spiritual Artifact. If possible, he'd like to have a Spiritual Artifact to protect himself. Otherwise, if he ever encountered someone who possessed a High Rank Spiritual Artifact, he'd be forced on the defensive.

The thought didn't delay Mu Chen's charge towards the pale-faced Cheng Shi at all.

"Stop him!" Cheng Hu realised that Mu Chen didn't plan on letting his brother go, so he issued an enraged order. But, he was currently caught up with Li Qing, so he couldn't afford to divert his attention any further.

"Yes!"

Dozens of Lion Tiger Regiment experts responded as they rushed towards Mu Chen.

"Get lost!"

Mu Chen's expression turned cold as he gripped his cyan longsword

even harder. The black flames surged and entirely shrouded the blade as he thrust it forward. The sword light and black flames swept as one towards the members of the Lion Tiger Regiment with an earth-shattering force.

So, among those members were even Heavenly Fusion Stage experts. But still, it was impossible for them to take down Mu Chen. A dark-burning sword light arced towards them, instantly slicing through their defenses, and sent them flying backwards, while trailing blood.

Mu Chen was as fierce as a wolf or tiger as he smashed through them and reappeared in front of the pale-faced and fear-filled Cheng Shi.

“What do you want?!” Cheng Shi snarled, even he couldn’t hide the fear in his eyes. This youth was only a Heavenly Fusion Stage. How could he be so ferocious?

Mu Chen lightly smiled at him as he stepped forward. His palm trembled as the dark-burning sword light halted right before Cheng Shi’s exposed throat. Cheng Shi froze as he felt the sharp and blazing energy lap at his skin.

“Hey.” Mu Chen grabbed Cheng Shi as he stared over at the dim Cheng Hu with a smile. “I wonder how much you value your brother’s puny life?”

“Kid, if you hurt him, there’ll be an irreconcilable blood feud between yourself and my Lion Tiger Regiment. None of us will rest until you’re dead or we’ve been eradicated.” Cheng Hu threatened. He clenched his fists as rage filled his eyes.

“Cut the nonsense.” Mu Chen smiled while shaking his head. Then, his eyes turned cold. “Hand over the Draconic Spirit Bracelet in exchange for your brother’s life.”

“You...!” Cheng Hu flew into a fury as he held Mu Chen’s eyes. He looked as if he wanted to swallow Mu Chen whole.

However, Mu Chen only returned a cold smile as he brought the longsword and its black flames closer to Cheng Shi’s throat. A thin line of blood trickled down and was burned away by the black flames.

Cheng Shi's face turned even paler. He was too terrified to even breathe due to the heat at his throat.

Chen Hu trembled as he fixed his eyes on Mu Chen. The other members of the Lion Tiger Regiment took note of the situation and didn't dare approach.

The other spectators in the ruined stone hall clicked their tongues when they saw Mu Chen take Cheng Shi hostage. Truly, a ferocious individual. They never expected the two leaders of the Lion Tiger Regiment to fall into Mu Chen's hands.

Li Qing also put away her Draconic Spirit Bracelet as she flew to Mu Chen's side. Her beautiful eyes stared at Cheng Hu, whose body trembled from anger and tension.

Mu Chen coldly smiled at the expressions that ran through Cheng Hu's face. "It looks like you think that your brother's life is worthless compared to the Draconic Spirit Bracelet."

Cheng Shi trembled by the ruthless intention in that sentence. The members of the Lion Tiger Regiment also looked at Cheng Hu. If he didn't make the exchange, then many of them might end up with cold hearts.

Cheng Hu only glared at Mu Chen with deep loathing. This kid was still young, but his heart was extremely ruthless. If he didn't exchange the Draconic Spirit Bracelet for his brother, then he might lose the hearts of the Lion Tiger Regiment.

"Alright. I'll give you the Draconic Spirit Bracelet! But, you must release him first!" Cheng Hu bit his teeth as those words were stifled out from the gap between his teeth.

"You're in no position to make those demands." Mu Chen smiled. "Hand over the Draconic Spirit Bracelet."

Cheng Hu's eyes turned bloodshot as he glared at Mu Chen, before he finally made his decision. He reached out and made a motion as if to pull something out of thin air. The huge scarlet flood-dragon quickly shrank down and returned to its bracelet form before landing in Cheng Hu's

palm.

Rustle.

Cheng Hu clutched the bracelet with a look of heartache in his eyes. But, ultimately, he still tossed it towards Mu Chen.

Mu Chen flicked his wrist out and pulled the Draconic Spirit Bracelet into his hand. An intense Spiritual Energy coursed from his palm, through the rest of his body. In that instant, even Mu Chen couldn't control it and cried out in admiration. Truly a High Rank Spiritual Artifact. It was many times stronger than a Middle Rank one.

"Here."

Mu Chen passed it to Li Qing.

Li Qing gave him a surprised look — she didn't expect Mu Chen to simply hand it to her. After all, he was the one who'd fought hard for it. Back in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's Spiritual Value Hall, something like this would be worth millions of Spiritual Value Points. That wasn't a small amount.

Li Qing looked as if she was struggling for a moment, then shook her head. "It's your spoil of battle. I can't take it." She knew that the Draconic Spirit Bracelets together formed a single Spiritual Artifact, but that one still belonged to Mu Chen.

Mu Chen smiled, shook his head, and tossed it to her anyways.

Li Qing panicked when she saw Mu Chen toss it so casually and quickly dove to catch it with her jade-like hands. Anger flared in her chest as she demanded, "What are you doing?!"

She was a beautiful woman, even though she was usually a little too cold. Mu Chen was temporarily stunned by her upset expression. However, he quickly recovered and smiled. "Senior Sister Li Qing, you're rather beautiful when you smile."

Li Qing's face turned red as she snorted and put the Draconic Spirit Bracelet on her wrist. Her face returned back to its usual icy-cold form.

“I’ll consider this a favor I owe you. When we return home from the mission, I’ll give you the 1,500,000 Spiritual Value Points that I’m supposed to get.”

Mu Chen smiled, “No need.”

“I don’t like owing favors. If you don’t want the points, then you should take this Draconic Spirit Bracelet back,” Li Qing pressed.

Mu Chen smiled and shrugged. Senior Sister Li Qing could be quite cute when she was being stubborn. Pity, given how cold she normally was.

Cheng Hu’s eyes nearly sprouted flames as he watched Mu Chen flirt with Li Qing. “Are you still not going to let my brother go?!”

“Alright.”

In one swift move, Mu Chen hauled Cheng Shi to his feet and printed a palm on his back. The force of the palm sent Cheng Shi flying out in an even sorrier state than he’d been before. His pale face turned even paler, if that was possible.

Cheng Hu caught his flying brother and immediately examined his pale face. His expression changed. “What did you do to him?”

“I put something inside his body. Don’t worry, he won’t die. He just won’t be able to circulate his Spiritual Energy for half an hour.”

Mu Chen smiled and shrugged a very insincere apology. “Sorry, you guys have greater numbers. I was also worried that you might attack us after I let him go. Please forgive me.”

Cheng Hu stared at Mu Chen with dark eyes, then flashed him a bit of a ferocious smile. “Little piece of shit! Did you really think we’d let you walk away like this?”

That caught Mu Chen’s attention.

A rumbling of footsteps sounded from outside the stone hall and everyone watched as a cluster of people rushed in like a tsunami. Some of them were members of the Lion Tiger Regiment, though many others wore an entirely different uniform – all the members of this second group

wore the same crest sewn onto their breast.

"It's the Nine Blade Troop!"

"The Lion Tiger Regiment and Nine Blade Troop are allies. That kid is doomed. Sigh. It's as the saying goes: 'The older piece of ginger always bites harder than the younger piece.' The Lion Tiger Regiment must have sent someone out for reinforcements."

Mu Chen knitted his brows at the whispering as he watched two individuals separate themselves from the rest of the Nine Blade Troop — clearly the leaders and Quasi-Heavenly Transform Stage experts.

The two newcomers glanced around the stone hall and laughed. "Haha. Brother Cheng Hu, I rushed over immediately after I received your message."

Cheng Hu cupped his hands. "I'll have to thank you two brothers." Then he looked at Mu Chen with a fierce expression and laughed. "Little piece of shit. Let's see if you can still dance?"

Mu Chen's expression turned cold as his black flames slowly spread over his body.

Li Qing clutched the Draconic Spirit Bracelets even harder and prepared to exert all her strength.

Ka cha.

The atmosphere in the stone hall could only be described as a state of pure hostility.

Suddenly, a strange sound rang throughout the room. Everyone frowned as they turned their eyes towards the source at the end of the stone hall.

Their faces changed.

Mu Chen and Li Qing had also turned around and their pupils shrank at the sight before them. The mottled stone statue was bursting with lights in the form of a complex array. A surge of frightening Spiritual Energy rippled from the ancient stone statue.

The stone statue slowly opened its eyes and looked upon them with it's

stone-dead eyes.

Chapter 247: Stone Guardian

Onom!

A brilliant light rippled in strings over the mottled surface of the ancient stone statue. It looked as if a complicated and cryptic Spiritual Array had been engraved on its surface.

Everyone in the stone hall was startled by the changes before them, and it took them a moment to recover from the bursts of astonishment that were evident in their eyes.

The stone statue had come to life?

Mu Chen watched the ancient stone statue with a grave expression. The stone statue itself finally opened its eyes; however, there was no emotion in those pits, even though a spiritual light flickered.

The statue slowly lowered its head and looked around the crowded stone hall. An empty and emotionless voice echoed through the hall. “Death to those who agitate the Dragon Tomb!”

As the statue spoke, it reached out to take the end of one of the many toppled stone pillars and swung it with a terrifying and mountain-moving force.

Bang! Bang!

Those who stood directly in the pillar’s path were instantly ground into paste. Others who couldn’t dodge in time were sent smashing into the walls, while spewing mouthfuls of fresh blood.

The statue’s sudden explosion of energy shocked many experts and sent them retreating with wary expressions. This thing was basically a killing god.

Mu Chen was also shocked by the statue and he rapidly circulated his Spiritual Energy in response. There was something off about the situation, but right now, they had to focus on evacuating from the chaos caused by the stone statue.

Mu Chen turned to Li Qing and said, “Prepare to retreat.”

Li Qing lightly nodded.

The newly awakened stone statue had already started its ruthless massacre of the stone hall’s occupants. It marched forward, using the stone pillar in its hands like weapon. Everyone struck by the weapon was left either dead or crippled.

The Lion Tiger Regiment and Nine Blade Troop had the greatest numbers; therefore, they also suffered the greatest losses. Scores of people were turned into meat pulp with each swing of the stone pillar.

“Brother Cheng Hu, what’s going on with that stone statue?” The Nine Blade Troop’s leaders urgently asked with matching expressions. They’d only rushed here because they’d heard that there was a High Rank Spiritual Artifact. However, they hadn’t even caught a glimpse of this High Rank Spiritual Artifact before they encountered this rampaging stone guardian.

Cheng Hu sullenly pointed at Mu Chen and Li Qing. “The High Rank Spiritual Artifact has fallen into their hands. We can’t let them escape.” Their reinforcements had arrived after great difficulty, only to see such unexpected changes to the situation. They were unwilling to withdraw.

“First, we’ll have everyone withdraw. Then, the three of us can fight together!”

The Nine Blade Troop’s leaders hesitated. The stone guardian’s rampage could get troublesome if they stayed too long.

Cheng Hu ground his teeth. “That bastard nearly killed my brother and even dared to use him to threaten me. If you capture them, I can give up on the High Rank Spiritual Artifact. Just hand that bastard to me!”

The Nine Blade leaders lit up and laughed. “Alright. Since Brother Cheng Hu asked us, we’ll capture that brat.”

Cheng Hu cursed inwardly, but only waved his hand in acceptance. The members of their parties began retreating while Cheng Hu and the Nine Blade Troop’s two leaders flew forward, towards Mu Chen and Li Qing.

Li Qing was the first to sense the three experts bearing malicious intent. The stone hall was already in a state of chaos as the stone guardian continued its massacre and sent everyone fleeing in sorry states. However, not only was Cheng Hu not fleeing with them, he was running towards them. It seemed that his hatred for Mu Chen was uncontrollable.

"Hmph."

Li Qing wasn't frightened by their attacks in the slightest. With a tightening of her fingers, the Draconic Spirit Bracelets on her wrists burst with brilliant lights. Two colossal dragons – one scarlet and one flood dragon – roared and charged with astonishing power, engulfing the three enemies and destroying any remaining pillars in their path.

Now that the Draconic Spirit Bracelets had been united, it was clear that the power behind them was several times greater. The sheer strength of the artifact even surprised Mu Chen. It was truly worthy of the title of "High Rank Spiritual Artifact".

"Damn it!"

Cheng Hu's face changed when he saw the scarlet dragons rushing towards him with their baleful auras. The three figures stopped and released their Spiritual Energy without reservation. The three majestic energies whistled out from their bodies and collided with the dragons.

Bang!

Violent waves of Spiritual Energy swept out. Several unlucky experts retreated while coughing up blood.

The twin dragons roared low and deep as they stopped Cheng Hu and the other two.

A look of excitement flashed across Li Qing's face as she observed the might of the Draconic Spirit Bracelets. With this artifact, she might even be able to hold her own against a Heavenly Transform Stage Initial Phase expert. Again, this High Rank Spiritual Artifact was befitting of its title.

Mu Chen couldn't help clucking his tongue either. Even he might not win against Li Qing while she had those bracelets – if he didn't pull any

powerful tricks.

But now that the Draconic Spirit Bracelet belonged to Li Qing, Mu Chen no longer coveted it. Either way, Mu Chen refused to believe that there was only one High Rank Spiritual Artifact left behind in this Sovereign Spirit Treasury.

Boom!

Just as Mu Chen was sighing at its power, his mind suddenly jumped at the explosion. He shifted his gaze towards the stone guardian and noticed that it had suddenly halted its steps. It shifted its empty gaze and stopped on Li Qing, who was still controlling the Draconic Spirit Bracelets.

The Draconic Spirit Bracelets had been taken from this stone guardian, and it was clear that it could sense the familiar ripples. Even though it didn't possess any intelligence, those ripples were enough to attract it.

Boom!

The Stone Guardian hugged the huge stone pillar and suddenly strode forward, charging in Mu Chen's direction. It lifted its stone arms and brought the pillar down on Li Qing so quickly that an ear-piercing sonic boom echoed in the chamber.

The shadow of the pillar descended and Mu Chen's face changed. He didn't think twice as he pulled Li Qing into his arms and tapped his feet on the ground to retreat.

Bang!

The stone pillar smashed into the spot where they'd just been standing and cracks spiderwebbed from the ground. Mu Chen's scalp tingled. Even he'd be heavily injured if he took that one full-on.

This stone guardian definitely wasn't weak. Probably only a real Heavenly Transform Stage expert would be able to confront it.

"Release me."

A cold voice sounded in Mu Chen's ear and interrupted his thoughts. He looked down at the sexy ice queen in his arms and saw that those icy-cold

eyes were filled with humiliation and anger.

"Those were pressing circumstances. Pressing circumstances." Mu Chen dryly explained with a chuckle, but still set her down. Li Qing seemed to have something against those of the opposite sex. But there was no way Mu Chen could've bothered over such small details earlier.

Li Qing also knew that Mu Chen hadn't tried to take advantage of her on purpose, so she didn't hang on to it. She only gave him a warning glare before she turned her attention back towards the stone guardian. When its attack had landed a miss, it'd lifted the stone pillar again to slam it down on Cheng Hu and other two who were closer.

The three of them didn't dare to take the attack and rapidly retreated. They sorrily and only narrowly dodged the guardian's attack.

"Let's leave now." Mu Chen said to Li Qing. Suddenly, he furrowed his brows and a silver medal appeared in its hand. The medal had been engraved with the image of a white dragon – the one that he'd taken from the body of the King Flame-Eater back in the magma lake. For some reason, the medal was currently heating up.

"What's going on?"

Mu Chen was temporarily confused by the changes he sensed in the silver medal. However, he only furrowed his brows and tucked it back into his sleeves. This was no time to ponder over it.

He didn't notice that when he brought out the silver medal, the stone statue had frozen for a brief moment before it'd turned around. He only saw it running towards him, rumbling as it moved.

"Quick, run!"

Mu Chen's expression changed as he called out to Li Qing and retreated. In just a few moments, he was already out of the ruined stone hall and moving faster with Li Qing beside him.

However, the stone guardian didn't seem like it intended to give up, even as they moved further away. Its bloodthirsty aura surged.

Cheng Hu and the other two sighed in relief when they saw that the stone guardian had given up on them.

The two leaders of the Nine Blade Troop gasped for breath. The two of them had nearly been ground into fresh meat, and weren't anxious to try again. "Brother Cheng Hu, that Stone Guardian was too powerful. It'd be hard for us to destroy it and won't be easy for us to escape from it. I think we should let it go. That stone statue has its eye on that brat for some reason, so he's already as good as dead."

Cheng Hu hesitated as well, before he nodded helplessly. "Then we'll let him go. We'll reorganise our experts and head deeper into the palace. I believe there should be better treasures in there. As long as we are allies, I believe that we can even contend with the three major forces."

"Alright!"

The two leaders of the Nine Blade Troop immediately agreed. They left the ruined stone hall as a group to gather their men, then immediately headed towards the depths of the spirit treasury.

In another location, Mu Chen's face was ugly as he knew that the stone guardian had targeted them. It didn't matter where they ran to, the stone guardian was always close behind.

"Mu Chen, what's going on?" Li Qing's face changed as well, why was the stone guardian targeting them?

Mu Chen thought for a bit, then said, "It looks like it's coming after me. Let's separate."

"Alright. I'll be right behind you." Li Qing nodded and quickly turned towards another direction.

The stone statue simply ignored Li Qing and her Draconic Spirit Bracelets in favor of chasing after Mu Chen.

"Damn it."

Mu Chen angrily cursed. This thing really was after him. But why? He'd never fought with it, and he didn't have the Draconic Spirit Bracelets.

“What’s going on?”

Mu Chen furrowed his brows as ideas flickered through his mind. A moment later, those thoughts clicked into place and he clenched his fist. The silver medal with the white dragon appeared back in his hand.

A light flashed through his eyes as he looked at the heated silver medal. He seemed to have understood something.

So this silver medal was the thing attracting the stone guardian?

Chapter 248: Black Basin

Rumble!

The ground trembled as the ancient stone statue charged onward with heavy steps. Any obstacles in its path were instantly crushed as it left a trail of pandemonium in its wake.

Those who happened upon the scene quickly withdrew from it. No one dared to get in the statue's path, so they simply allowed the strange duo to speed on their way.

A pitch-black Spiritual Energy blazed out from within Mu Chen's body and shrouded him. He kept his pace as something flickered in his eyes and the silver medal in his hand grew even warmer.

With a few tests, Mu Chen had confirmed that the ancient stone statue was, indeed, after him. And it was definitely because of this silver medal.

"What exactly is this silver medal?" Mu Chen wondered. This object had been so well-hidden that it'd been inside the body of the King Flame-Eating Python. If Mu Chen hadn't found the Fire Celestial Lotus by sheer luck, and if the Nine Netherbird to devour the King Flame-Eater, then there was no way he would've discovered this medal.

There was no way it could be something ordinary, since it'd been hidden so securely. Furthermore, the white dragon design on its surface told him that it was likely left behind by the White Dragon Sovereign.

"I can't keep running like this."

Mu Chen went silent. He still wanted to enter the depths of the Sovereign Spirit Treasury to fight for other treasures, but there was no way to do that with this stone statue chasing after him. First, he had to get rid of this problem.

Mu Chen tightly gripped the silver medal as he ground his teeth. It looked like he had to try it.

As he thought that, any hesitation in his heart ceased to exist. He flashed away and ascended to a higher platform, then turned to face the ancient

stone statue that was still approaching with its baleful aura.

Boom! Boom!

Cracks appeared on the ground wherever the stone statue chose to lay its feet. The sheer pressure of its approach even compressed the air until it exploded.

The stone-fisted statue grew larger in Mu Chen's field of view. Mu Chen took in a deep breath, then raised the silver medal. He stopped caring whether his idea would work as he poured his Spiritual Energy into it.

The silver medal stayed the same as Mu Chen poured his Spiritual Energy into it, and the stone statue was just as ferocious as before. If it hit Mu Chen, then he'd suffer grave injuries.

"It's not working?"

Cold sweat dripped from Mu Chen's forehead as his heart pumped rapidly, but he still didn't remove his hands from the medal. With a twist of his mind, he poured all of his Spiritual Energy into the silver medal.

Bang!

The stone statue vaulted off the ground and sailed upwards, its heavy shadow bearing down on Mu Chen, and firmly landed on the platform.

Mu Chen tensed and turned away, preparing to run.

Onom!

But before Mu Chen could make his escape, the silver medal finally trembled. The white dragon on its surface seemed to come to life as it roared low and deep. A white light poured forth from the plate and shined upon the body of the ancient stone statue.

Mu Chen was temporarily paralysed by the sudden white light. However, the bloodthirsty stone statue suddenly shrank back. In the time it took for a few breaths, the statue had shrunk down to the size of a palm and flew towards Mu Chen.

Mu Chen reached out and caught it.

“This…” Mu Chen studied the stone statue in his palm with a look of amazement. It was so small and mottled. A faint pattern of light glowed on its surface. But this small thing had been chasing him all over the place just a moment ago.

Mu Chen turned to the silver medal in his other hand with an equal look of amazement. It seemed that this stone guardian was something akin to a Spiritual Artifact, but could only be controlled through the silver medal in his hand.

“This medal really is something.” Mu Chen smacked his lips as he tucked the medal away. He kept the tiny statue in his hand and played around with it – with a move of his intent, he poured a surge of Spiritual Energy into it.

Onom.

The stone statue exploded with dazzling light and expanded. In a few breaths, it turned back into the ten-foot tall stone statue.

But this time, the statue didn’t launch any attacks at him; on the contrary it stood next to him, quietly and at attention, like the most loyal guard.

Excitement appeared in Mu Chen’s eyes as he observed the stone statue – he could sense that right now, he possessed some amount of control over it.

Bang!

Following Mu Chen’s intent, the stone statue threw a punch at the stone pillar next to it, thoroughly crushing it. That violent strength even made Mu Chen’s eyelids twitch. Based on his estimations, even a Heavenly Transform Stage Initial Phase expert would have to dodge its sharp attacks.

It was a pure fighting machine.

“Formidable!” Mu Chen exclaimed in admiration. Another treasure worthy of the Sovereign Spirit Treasury.

This statue must have withstood several hundreds of years worth of weathering, but it still possessed such strength. The name of Sovereign was not in vain.

Even though he hadn't obtained a High Rank Spiritual Artifact, this stone guardian was still an extremely satisfactory harvest. If Mu Chen ever encountered Bai Dong again, he wouldn't need to act so afraid.

Shhhhhuuu!

Sounds of sonic booms resounded from afar. With a wave of his hand, Mu Chen ordered the guardian to return to its smaller form. The statue landed on his palm and he stowed it away inside his Mustard Seed Bracelet.

Li Qing reappeared a short distance away and quickly joined him. She breathed out a sigh of relief when she saw that Mu Chen was fine and well. Her charming eyes looked around as she asked, "Where's the stone guardian?"

"It's settled." Mu Chen smiled.

Li Qing was shocked and confused. Mu Chen had "settled" that terrifying stone guardian? Just how much strength was this guy hiding away?

She gave Mu Chen a strange look, but didn't press him for details. After all, everyone had their own secrets. She had no specific reason to ask that much from him.

"Well then, we should join up with Su Xuan and the others. They're likely deeper inside the Sovereign Spirit Treasury," Li Qing suggested. Right now, there were many forces heading deeper into the Spirit Treasury. If they didn't hurry, they might end up missing a few opportunities.

Mu Chen nodded. He was deeply interested in the Sovereign Spirit Treasury, especially since they'd found such powerful treasures – the Fire Celestial Lotus, the Draconic Spirit Bracelets, and the Stone Guardian – outside of that area. He wondered what astounding treasures would be

hidden within the treasury's depths.

If he ever got his hands on those hidden treasures, then his fighting strength would definitely surge. He wouldn't need to fear anyone, even a true Heavenly Transform Stage.

The two of them made no more delays. They identified their path and pushed their speeds to the limit as they flew into the bowels of the Sovereign Spirit Treasury.

Along the way, they still heard the sounds of clashing weapons echoing from the main hall; however, neither of them paused. Roughly half an hour later, they noticed that the quantity of stone halls and the number of branching paths had decreased. As they continued, the landscape before them suddenly opened up into that of a vast desert.

Faint lights streaked overhead, like bolts of lightning as they sped deeper into the desert.

Mu Chen and Li Qing exchanged glances and moved as one, following those lights. A few minutes later, they slowed down.

They were arriving at the heart of the desert, marked by a huge black basin. Many figures stood at the basin's rim.

A powerful Spiritual Energy emanated from this place – even the natural Spiritual Energy of this area rippled in response.

Many experts were gathered here.

Even Mu Chen was surprised by the sheer number of experts gathered here. These guys moved quick.

The two of them also landed by the basin, then edged closer to the rim. They realised that down inside the depression of the earth were several black stone pillars that soared to the skies.

Each pillar was nearly a thousand feet tall and decorated with formerly picturesque images that'd been blurred due to the passage of time. Together, these pillars filled the entire basin.

The basin surged with an indescribable aura and, for some reason, their

auras trembled in reply. It was like meeting one's superior.

Even the natural Spiritual Energy had quieted under the pressure of the basin's aura, as if it was incapable of fighting back.

This was a Sovereign's prestige.

Everyone's expression had turned solemn. This aura was simply far too powerful for them to handle, even though it was only a remnant of what it once was. If a genuine Sovereign ever appeared, no one present would have the guts or mind to react.

This was an absolute suppression.

Perhaps in the eyes of a Sovereign, everyone here would be nothing more than ants.

Mu Chen inhaled and clenched his fists as he felt the remnant Sovereign aura permeate the heavens and earth. Dense flames poured from his pupils.

Sovereign.

What a powerful term that was.

One day, when he manages to ascend to that level, he'll stand next to Luo Li and shield her from the wind.

Then, he'd search for his mother, as he'd promised his father. The next time he returned to the Northern Spiritual Realm, he won't be alone.

He was still a far cry from that goal, but he believed that he'd reach it one fine day!

A vicious and ferocious gaze locked onto Mu Chen and Li Qing the moment they landed at the edge of the basin.

Mu Chen sensed it and turned towards the source. His eyes narrowed immediately. There were several dozen people over there, all wearing white robes. At the front of that group stood Bai Dong and the grey-robed elder.

Mu Chen lightly smiled back at Bai Dong's vicious glare. Indeed, they

meet again.

Bai Dong's expression turned even more sinister at Mu Chen's smile, before it finally turned cruel.

Bai Dong took a single step forward as he stared at Mu Chen as if he were a ghost. His bloodthirsty voice filled the air around him.

"So, you're still alive, you little piece of shit. But that's fine. I thought you died too easily, anyways. This time, I'll catch you and chop off all your limbs!"

Chapter 249: The Power of the Stone Statue

Bai Dong's voice was filled with bloodlust and malice as it filled the air around him and attracted the attention of many. When they saw that Bai Dong's rage was directed towards one particular young man, they were startled, then their expressions turned to pity. This young man dared to provoke White Dragon City's Young Master? Did he not know that Bai Dong always took revenge on any grievances he has suffered?

But their sympathy was nothing more than sympathy; no one came to Mu Chen's aid. White Dragon City was one of the three most powerful forces within a thousand miles of the White Dragon Hillock. Only the Heavenly Dipper Sword Faction and the Earthen Way Sect could stand up to them; all others were somewhere below in strength. There hadn't been enough time for the news about the White Dragon Sovereign's Spirit Treasury to spread, and as a result, any forces larger than these three hadn't had enough time to arrive.

It'd be unwise to provoke them here.

Mu Chen smiled at Bai Dong's savage expression. "Your face looks unbalanced with that one ear hanging. Should I help you fix that?"

Bai Dong was so pissed that his eyes turned red. All these years in the White Dragon Hillock and he'd never suffered anything like this. This was one of the greatest humiliations he'd ever suffered. He definitely had to avenge this blood debt.

"Elder Qiu, catch him!" Bai Dong said through his teeth. "This time, don't let him die so easily. Since the heavens have seen fit to put him before me once again, then I want to torment him. To let him know that living is a painful thing!"

The grey-robed Elder Qiu nodded and watched Mu Chen with an expression of dark amazement. He felt disbelief. How did this kid escape from the magma lake? Could he possess some sort of Spiritual Artifact

that allowed him to hide in those boiling depths?

Elder Qiu shook his head. It didn't matter anymore. Since this brat was still alive, then all that mattered was that he had to defeat him again.

He fixed his eyes on Mu Chen and slowly took a step out from their neat ranks. A majestic Spiritual Energy swept out and revealed his strength as a Heavenly Transform Stage Initial Phase.

"Heavenly Transform Stage Initial Phase..."

Li Qing's face changed as she watched the grey-robed elder. She didn't know what'd happened between Mu Chen and these guys, but she knew that she'd never abandon Mu Chen.

"Mu Chen, I'll deal with him. If I use the Draconic Spirit Bracelet, I won't be any weaker than him." Li Qing said through her teeth. Since they still haven't met up with Su Xuan and the others, she had to be the one to move.

Mu Chen shook his head. "Senior Sister Li Qing, if you act, then those white robes back there will act too... Plus, they're probably the ones who ambushed us in the forest. They're from the Demonic Dragon Palace."

"What?!"

Li Qing's face abruptly changed as astonishment filled her charming eyes. The White Dragon City was actually a subordinate to the Demonic Dragon Palace?

"Let me deal with that old man. Right now, experts are gathering here like clouds, so White Dragon City, won't show their true strength so easily. I'll string them along until Senior Sister Su Xuan arrives. Then, we can confidently face them," Mu Chen explained.

"But you..." Li Qing was alarmed as she tried to stop him. However, she paused as she thought about all of the hidden cards that Mu Chen had up his sleeve – he had so many that even she couldn't see the end of them. If Mu Chen wanted to act, then he probably had a way to protect himself.

"Alright, then. You be careful." Li Qing said as she nodded.

Mu Chen nodded back and stepped forward, though his eyes were pinned on the grey-robed elder with a chill in his eyes. That old fart had thrown him into the magma lake earlier. If the Nine Netherflames hadn't protected Mu Chen, he wouldn't have escaped from that. Now that they were facing each other again, Mu Chen wasn't going to make it as easy.

"Little brat, it looks like your life isn't as small as I thought."

The grey-robed elder looked down on Mu Chen, clenched his fist and a black spear appeared with a flash. The elder was a straightforward man. He cut the small talk as his Spiritual Energy surged, affecting the Spiritual Aura around them, then thrust the spear forward.

Shuuuuu!

The Spiritual Aura surged and it seemed as if the spear had torn the very air apart. The image of a spear, tens of feet in length, flashed like lightning towards Mu Chen.

Many of the spectators trembled in fear at the sheer strength behind that attack. This old man was ruthless; he was so cautious, even though he was only facing a Heavenly Fusion Stage youth.

Mu Chen coldly smiled and took a large leap forward. His five fingers curled into a fist. With a low snarl, he punched.

Boom!

A pitch-black Spiritual Energy swept out from Mu Chen's fist like a tidal wave. Six Limitless Death Seals formed in an instant and the natural Spiritual Aura roiled violently.

Shuuuu!

The Six Limitless Death Seals appeared, joined head-to-tail, and flew out. In a flash, they heavily collided with the sharp spear light.

Boom!

A violent Spiritual Energy swept outwards. A black light streaked out like a comet and cut through the spear light like a hot knife through butter, then continued towards the grey-robed elder.

A commotion broke out among the spectators. They thought that Mu Chen should've been holed up on the defense against this genuine Heavenly Transform Stage expert. But who could've imagined that it was the other way around? Not only was Mu Chen not guarding, but he was actually exerting such frightening attacks.

Of course, these people could tell how powerful Mu Chen's attack was. The light seal was clearly a rather powerful Spiritual Art; otherwise, he wouldn't have broken the grey-robed elder's attack so easily.

"Hmph."

The elder watched the black streak soar towards him and sensed the overbearing ripples it contained. He focused his eyes and coldly snorted from his mouth as his claw tore down.

"Heaven Tearing Demonic Dragon Claw!"

Roar!

Surges of black Spiritual Energy, similar to a gigantic dragon's claw, tore towards Mu Chen's attack. There was a chill to it, as if it could even shred mountains into pieces.

Shuuuuu!

The black dragon claw tore through the sky and met the black light. A surge of violent Spiritual Energy emanated out as the light was broken apart.

Even though the claw had destroyed the streak, it'd suffered many cracks and ultimately crumbled into pieces.

The grey-robed elder burst forward like a wisp of green smoke and appeared before Mu Chen in an instant. The spear in his hand pierced the air between them as he aimed for Mu Chen's throat.

Mu Chen's eyes were cold as he tapped the air with his finger. The Nine-layered Pagoda appeared in a flash and obstructed the spear like a shield.

Dang!

A metallic clash rang out with a violent Spiritual Energy. Mu Chen

retreated ten steps and the Nine-layered Pagoda was sent flying.

Onom.

However, as the Nine-layered Pagoda fell back, it circulated its black light and expanded even further until it was a hundred feet tall. Then, it turned around and bore down on the grey-robed elder.

“Get lost!”

The grey elder barked as he brandished his black spear and formed a series of spear images, similar to soaring black dragons. However, the Nine-layered Pagoda withstood those attacks, though it’d been forced back a little more.

“Dammit!”

The grey-robed elder sent out another spear, this time battering the Nine-layered pagoda upwards by a thousand meters. A cold light flashed across his eyes and his image blurred for a moment.

“Demon Soaring Step!”

Shhhhhuu!

His form pierced through the skies like a demonic dragon. In the next instant, he reappeared over Mu Chen’s head, even as countless pairs of eyes watched him. His expression was grave as he swiped another claw at Mu Chen.

Roar!

A torrential Spiritual Energy surged from that claw and was aimed down towards Mu Chen’s head. It looked like Mu Chen would be torn apart, if he was hit by that attack!

Li Qing cried out in alarm as she clutched the Draconic Spiritual Bracelet on her wrists. “Mu Chen!” The bracelets glowed with a blinding spiritual light. It was clear she intended to move.

“Brat, die!” The grey-robed elder barked as he continued his vicious attacks.

Mu Chen raised his head and looked at the elder's fierce attacks. However, instead of panicking, his black pupils were painted with a chill.

The grey-robed elder sensed that chill and suddenly felt uneasy.

"It's not that easy for you to kill me!"

Mu Chen smiled at the grey-robed elder as he curled his fingers. An old stone statue appeared and started glowing and expanding. A mottled fist heavily collided with the black dragon claw with a punch that carried mountain-shattering strength.

Dong!

The sky trembled when the two clashed, and surges of violent energy swept out.

Bang!

Everyone saw the grey-robed elder go into shock as his body was violently jolted and he spat out a mouthful of blood. He flew back a few thousand meters and was in a sorry state.

"Huaaa!"

The entire area near the black basin exploded with cries of shock. The elder turned his eyes towards Mu Chen. He didn't know how it'd happened, but a ten-foot-tall stone statue had suddenly materialised in front of Mu Chen. The statue's body flickered with a light as it maintained its stance with its fist in front – clearly the fist that'd sent Elder Qiu flying backwards.

"It's that stone statue?!" Even Li Qing felt shocked. But now she understood. So Mu Chen had actually subdued the stone statue. She didn't know what methods he'd pulled to achieve that, but it's no wonder why he didn't fear the the grey-robed elder. So he had such confidence.

Rustle!

Mu Chen watched the grey elder sail backwards. Then he tapped his foot on the stone statue's shoulder and flew down like a large roc. His cold eyes were fixed on Bai Dong.

This guy was simply too vicious – even Mu Chen was pissed at him, and that's saying something. He'd finally decided to deal with Bai Dong now, while he had the chance. Since there was already an irreconcilable blood debt between them, Mu Chen was no longer worried about grudges.

"You!"

When Bai Dong saw Mu Chen flying towards him, his face finally changed.

Chapter 250: Forced Out

Rustle!

Mu Chen held his indifferent expression as he appeared before Bai Dong in a flash. His fingers twitched and a cyan longsword appeared. Without a moment's hesitation, the blade became shrouded with Spiritual Energy that burned black and aimed towards Bai Dong's throat.

Bai Dong's facial expression changed at Mu Chen's sudden action; but fortunately for him, he wasn't weak. Even though he hadn't reached the Heavenly Transform Stage yet, he was a Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase and had the strength to back it up. He snarled with fury and punched as his Spiritual Energy soared.

"Sky Crumbling Demonic Dragon Fist!"

His Spiritual Energy surged as his fist travelled forward like a massive black demonic dragon uncoiling its body. The force of the movement seemed as if it could turn the sky to dust. It was clear that Bai Dong's Spiritual Energy wasn't an ordinary one.

The chill in Mu Chen's eyes grew even colder as he switched from blade to fist. Six Limitless Death Seals formed in an instant, causing the natural Spiritual Energy around them to roil violently. Like six rays of dark of light, they streaked through the air and met Bai Dong's Demonic Dragon Fist in a hard collision.

Boom!

The sound of the collision thundered as the violent spiritual ripples spread out. For a moment, Bai Dong's face had turned ghostly pale, but then a dark red flush smeared across his face. He coughed up a mouthful of blood as he flew backwards.

Mu Chen's six Limitless Death Seals at full force could even withstand an attack from the grey-robed elder – a Heavenly Transform Stage Initial Phase. Bai Dong wanted to defeat it with his Heavenly Fusion Late Phase cultivation? Simply a fantasy.

“You said want to kill me? I’m afraid you’re not capable of that!”

Mu Chen coldly smiled with a sharp edge to it. In a flash, he’d burst forward and appeared before Bai Dong again, and the cyan longsword in his hands ruthlessly stabbed towards the latter’s throat.

Cries of surprise rose from everyone watching the scene from around the rim of the black basin. How could this youth be so ruthless? He even dared to kill Bai Dong? Didn’t he fear the wrath of White Dragon City?

The grey-robed elder’s face took on a drastically different expression. “You dare!?”

But there was too much distance between them. He couldn’t assist in time.

Mu Chen ignored him as he looked down on Bai Dong, who was watching the sword bear down on him with a face full of shock.

This was a guy who’d always fulfilled his grudges. It’d be better for Mu Chen to eliminate him early and avoid any future twists and turns.

Shuuuu!

Mu Chen’s sword edge was sharp; he’d reached Bai Dong in only an instant. However, just before he could land the killing blow, an exquisitely fine light burst from within the group white-robed White Dragon City experts.

Ding!

A violent gale tore through the sky and clashed against Mu Chen’s blade with astonishing swiftness. Mu Chen’s blade trembled under the gale’s strength and he even retreated two steps.

“Who?!”

He swept his eyes over the white robes with an annoyed and dangerous chill in his eyes. Suddenly, his eyes pinpointed the source and he laughed loudly. “So it’s the City Lord of White Dragon City! Since you’re here, why don’t you show yourself? Why run and hide? Were you trying to take advantage of our distraction and steal the Sovereign Spirit Treasury?”

His voice, wrapped in Spiritual Energy, resounded throughout the heavens and earth. The booming quality of it shocked many of those present at the site and they widened their eyes in disbelief. Especially those from the Earthen Way Set and Heavenly Dipper Sword Faction. The City Lord had personally shown up?

The grey-robed elder's expression changed at Mu Chen's challenge. Was this kid trying to provoke Bai Dong?

Numerous pairs of eyes scrutinised the crowd of white robes, and under their watchful gazes, a single figure stepped forward. He removed his white robe to reveal the face of a middle-aged man – it really was the City Lord of White Dragon City, Bai Xuan!

Bai Xuan lightly smiled. "What a deep scheming youth."

His eyes were filled with a cold light as he stared back at Mu Chen. He'd originally intended to hide himself – he never expected to be forced out by a kid like this.

Mu Chen glared back. "It looks like your White Dragon City is determined to obtain this Sovereign Spirit Treasury."

Mu Chen could sense a tyrannical Spiritual Energy rippling from this man. He must be a Heavenly Transform Stage Middle Phase at the very least – no doubt extremely powerful.

Bai Xuan smiled as if it was a given. "Of course, we must do our best to win such fantastic treasures." He shook his head. "Since you've forced me to show myself, I must show you my appreciation."

The moment his words landed, the glint in Bai Xuan's eyes turned sharp and an astonishingly powerful surge of Spiritual Energy burst like a gale from his body. He stepped forward, his movements were like that of a ghost, and headed straight for Mu Chen.

Mu Chen's expression changed as he retreated.

"Can you even escape?"

Bai Xuan coldly smiled. In a flash, he'd caught up to Mu Chen and threw

out a palm. The Spiritual Energy surged like a tidal wave, stretching continuously in a multitude of directions. There was a never-ending chorus of explosions.

Mu Chen backed off, too cautious to go head-to-head against such power. With a will of his intent, the Stone Guardian appeared before him, stepped forward, and pounded its fist down on Bai Xuan.

Dong!

Mu Chen could feel the reverberations from the collisions as the Stone Guardian was sent sailing backwards.

Mu Chen's expression turned grave at that. Bai Xuan was truly powerful – no wonder he was the City Lord of White Dragon City. The Stone Guardian was forced to retreat after taking only one of his fists.

"Something that weak won't be able to protect your puny little life." Bai Xuan explained with an expressionless face as he pressed forward again. His fingers formed a claw as he swiped downwards.

"Heaven Tearing Demonic Dragon Claw!"

Boom!

The five fingers raked through the sky, as if tearing the space down with it. Bai Xuan's "Heaven Tearing Demonic Dragon Claw" was far more powerful than the grey-robed elder's.

Mu Chen's cold expression concentrated on Bai Xuan's ferocious attacks as he put his hands together in preparations to circulate his Spiritual Art. But before he could execute it, a torrent of spiritual light poured from behind him, shrouding his body in a sort of Spiritual Energy barrier.

Boom!

The razor-sharp claw slashed at the barrier with violent bursts of Spiritual Energy, but couldn't tear it down.

"Who?!" Bai Xuan's gaze turned cold.

A sweet and gentle voice drifted from somewhere near the end of the crowd. "City Lord of White Dragon City, you are someone who has great

renown. Yet you dared to act so ruthlessly against a mere youth. Are you not afraid that others may say it is unbefitting of your station?"

Everyone turned their heads towards the voice to see three figures swiftly flying towards them – led by a charming and sweet-looking young woman in a white dress.

"Su Xuan," Li Qing couldn't suppress the joy she felt upon seeing them. Su Xuan had finally caught up with them.

Bai Xuan's indifferent expression was temporarily replaced with a sharp one as he looked over Su Xuan. He could sense that her Spiritual Energy wasn't any inferior than his. It seemed that this girl was the Rank 3 of the Heavenly Ranking in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, Su Xuan.

The students nurtured by the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy were powerful indeed. They were so young, yet they could rival the best disciples of the Demonic Dragon Palace.

"The Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy really does have its methods." Bai Xuan applauded as he lightly smiled at Su Xuan.

She returned the smile with the words, "We thank White Dragon City for your praises." She raised a jade-like hand to disperse the protective barrier around Mu Chen and allowed him to join her.

"You're always causing trouble. It's barely been half a day, yet you've already started a fight with White Dragon City." Su Ling'er scolded as she glared her doe eyes at Mu Chen.

"They're the ones who ambushed us last night." Mu Chen said slowly. "They're from the Demonic Dragon Palace."

"What?!"

Su Ling'er and Guo Xiong looked startled. Even Su Xuan slightly narrowed her eyes. White Dragon City wasn't known for having a long history, but they'd already ruled this area for over a decade. None of these young students had expected it to be just another chess piece for the Demonic Dragon Palace. It seemed this organisation was truly deep and unfathomable. No wonder the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy even

held some fear and restraint towards them.

Even from a distance, Bai Xuan noticed the astonished expressions on their faces. It looked like they'd just come to some realisation. He couldn't help the odd smile that crept over his face as he gave them one last meaningful glance before ducking back into the throng of White Dragon City experts. Now that Su Xuan had appeared, it wouldn't be easy to kill Mu Chen. Furthermore, there was a more pressing matter that required his attention.

As long as they obtained that item, it would be easy to kill those brats.

The unaffiliated experts around the basin warily eyed Bai Xuan as he rejoined his people – especially the Heavenly Dipper Sword Faction and the Earthen Way Sect. They exchanged glances amongst themselves and finally seemed to settle on some unspoken agreement. It was clear that they intended to combine their strengths to deal with the strongest White Dragon City.

Bai Xuan's sharp attention hadn't lost that fact; however, he only afforded them a cold smile and seemingly wasn't bothered by them.

"City Lord, it looks like that brat dragged us out into the spotlight," The grey-robed elder reported with a grim expression.

Bai Xuan smiled nonchalantly. "They're nothing more than annoying locusts. What are they capable of, anyways? Did they think that my White Dragon City was only capable of that much?"

By this point, Bai Dong had caught up as well, although he was still throwing vicious glances in Mu Chen's direction. "Father, what do we need from this place?"

Bai Xuan knit his brows as he frowned. "I've received orders to obtain the most precious object from the White Dragon Sovereign's Spirit Treasury. As for the specifics, even I'm not sure."

"The most precious object?" the grey-robed elder echoed as he turned his eyes towards the bottom of the black basin. "Then, it should be here, because this is the place where the White Dragon Sovereign died!"

Bai Dong seemed doubtful. “However, it doesn’t look like there’s a Spirit Treasury here.”

His father studied the basin for a moment, then slowly replied, “That’s because the seal here is still intact. It looks like we only need to wait for the sun and moon to come together. When the natural Spiritual Energy turns chaotic, the seal will weaken. Then, all we need to do is destroy it and the the Spirit Treasury will appear.”

“Right now...all we have to do is wait.”

He finished his words and closed his eyes with a silent finality.

Bai Xuan wasn’t the only one who knew about that – that much was clear. Experts from other forces could also sense the abnormalities around the black basin, and chose to wait instead of act blindly.

The wait stretched for nearly half a day before the sky and land turned dark and the natural Spiritual Aura between the heavens and earth began to fluctuate.

Just as the Spiritual Aura between the heavens and earth fell into disorder, Mu Chen’s eyes caught something. Down in the black basin, the thousand-foot-tall mysterious black stone pillars started to faintly glow.

“The Spirit Treasury appearing!”

Mu Chen’s heart trembled and his eyes blazed with passion.

Chapter 251: Sovereign Appears

Onom onom.

The space between heaven and earth was overshadowed with darkness as the natural Spiritual Aura of the land turned chaotic. A faint mist began curling up from the earth due to all the Spiritual Aura gathering towards this place.

Everyone noticed the sudden changes and took in the details of the scene, quietly preparing for battle. This was the resting place of a Sovereign; it was best to remain cautious. With their strength, they were only qualified to wander around the White Dragon Hillock; if they ever met a genuine Sovereign, they would be weaker than an ant.

Even though there was no longer a Sovereign here, all they needed was some of his legacy treasures to turn it into a life-threatening situation.

Mu Chen and his companions were also on their guard as they stared into the black basin. The colossal black pillars were beginning to give off light, bit by bit.

As the light grew stronger, they could barely make out a pattern on the surface of the black pillars. A light pattern that seemed alive and wiggling.

Shuuuu!

As the patterns thrashed, the intensity of the light suddenly exploded. The rays raced out from the basin, interweaving and blanketing the basin in thick layers of light.

Rumble!

It sounded like thunder. The natural Spiritual Energy surged and rushed towards the center of the basin in a torrent. Everyone's expressions turned grim, though none of them rashly charged in; they knew that they'd only be crushed to death by the violent surges of Spiritual Energy.

Su Xuan turned her face towards the basin and frowned. "The black basin has been covered." Up ahead, the light was slowly spreading out, until it'd become a solid screen several thousand feet in diameter and

blocked their view of the basin.

Mu Chen frowned at the frightening Spiritual Energy rippling from the screen. “This must have been left behind by the White Dragon Sovereign to keep prying eyes away from the place where he fell.” This wasn’t something he could break. If he tried to force it, he might incur a counter-strike, and he’d be as good as dead.

Guo Xiong smiled bitterly. “This Sovereign Spirit Treasury really isn’t easy to reach.” They’d already endured so much difficulty to reach this place; they hadn’t imagined this light screen to be yet another obstacle in their path.

“Let’s study the situation first,” said Mu Chen. Su Xuan and the rest nodded in agreement. Right now, the best they could do was observe the changes.

The other experts’ faces also turned ugly when they sensed the light screen. How were they supposed to reach the Sovereign Spirit Treasury with this light screen in place?

Numerous pairs exchanged looks and the area grew extremely silent for a moment.

Suddenly, a courageous bark sounded from a skinny, middle-aged man in the crowd. “Hey, everyone! Let’s work together to destroy this light screen. Even though this probably belongs to the White Dragon Sovereign, it’s still several hundred years old, at least. Plus, there’s no one controlling it. With so many of us here, it’s possible for us to destroy it!”

His announcement attracted quite a few nods and verbal agreements from the others. After all, the light screen wasn’t going to disappear on its own.

The concurring voices increased in volume as more and more people demonstrated their willingness to cooperate.

“Good, we’ll act together!”

Tens of thousands of bodies rose into the sky, creating a surge of Spiritual Energy in a majestic scene.

Su Ling'er was eager, as she asked, "Are we going to help out, too?" She was fond of lively events, and the prospect of tens of thousands of people acting together was getting her excited.

Mu Chen helplessly shook his head. Su Xuan also glared at Su Ling'er and said, "Stop being rash. This light screen was left behind by the White Dragon Sovereign to protect the treasures that he left behind. Destroying it with only this many people is nothing but a dream. Those guys don't know how powerful a genuine Sovereign is. There are probably a few among them who know, but they're still just fanning the flames.

Su Ling'er pouted at Su Xuan's lecture, but she did quiet down. She understood that she shouldn't be rash in these situations.

Mu Chen nudged them to look in another direction, where Bai Xuan and his soldiers were looking around with frigid expressions. Bai Dong wore a ridiculing smile as he mocked the experts who were clearly overestimating themselves. "Look at those guys from White Dragon City. They're waiting to watch a good show."

"Watch out for them. If they're really from the Demonic Dragon Palace, then they've probably already prepared something." A dark light flashed through Su Xuan's eyes as she continued, "When he was alive, the White Dragon Sovereign was also from the Demonic Dragon Palace. But for some unknown reason, he betrayed the Demonic Dragon Palace. The Demonic Dragon Palace suffered heavy losses while pursuing him. That was the chance our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was waiting for, so that they could eliminate them with just a single move."

Mu Chen lightly nodded in understanding. Bai Xuan and his experts weren't very surprised by the appearance of this light screen; they already expected it.

Shuuuu! Shhhhhu!

As Mu Chen and his allies conversed, the tens of thousands of experts had already finished gathering their Spiritual Energy into one. In the next instant, they fired it with an earth-shattering cry. Even the heavens and earth trembled as the tens of thousands of separate Spiritual Energies

streaked across the sky and continuously rained down on the powerful light screen. The sheer volume of their attacks filled the entire black basin with a monumental air.

Mu Chen fixed his eyes on the scene. Even a Heavenly Completion Stage expert would try to avoid having tens of thousands of people bombard them. He wondered whether the White Dragon Sovereign's light screen would withstand such a bombardment.

Rumble!

Tens of thousands of attacks hammered down, and the light screen suddenly fluctuated and rippled. Rays of light began gathering at the screen's middle, before they slowly took on the fuzzy shape of a human figure.

The light slowly died as the figure appeared — a handsome youth, white-robed and slender with his long hair draped around his shoulders. However, there was no black in his milky-white eyes. An extremely odd detail.

The white-robed figure was quietly seated over his screen of light. A few stray lines of light circled around him, like a roaring white dragon.

With the appearance of this white-robed spirit came an indescribable movement in the natural Spiritual Energy. One filled with palatial might.

Even the heavens and earth seemed to tremble under the pressure of his aura.

The natural Spiritual Energy coiled around him, allowing him free reign over it.

"Sighhh."

His white pupil-less eyes stared at the Spiritual Energy barrage raining down on him. Then, he lightly waved his palm, as if he was only sighing in dismissal.

Onom! Onom!

A hundred feet away from where he sat, the overflowing Spiritual Energy

froze in an instant. The next instant, it seemed as if the space around it had frozen as well.

Sssss!

Everyone instantly drew in a breath of cold air.

The white-robed figure lightly flicked his fingers and the silent Spiritual Energy suddenly became unstuck. Even as they watched, the energies suddenly reversed their paths and turned on the ones who'd launched them.

Pffft!

A cloud of blood rose up in the sky as half of the ten thousand experts coughed blood and fell back. The remaining half turned pale and retreated of their own will, with shock in their eyes.

"That's...!"

Someone cried out in a frightened voice as he indicated the white-robed spirit seated before the light screen. Fear filled his eyes as his voice trembled. "That's the White Dragon Sovereign?!!"

The White Dragon Sovereign!

It seemed as if the entire sky had fallen silent just to hear those words. Countless faces turned pale and filled with fear, their owners regretting their rash actions.

"That's the White Dragon Sovereign?" Su Ling'er said in surprise as she looked at the figure.

"That's indeed the White Dragon Sovereign. However, I'm afraid that's only a remnant Spiritual Energy image." Su Xuan sighed. "Just a remnant Spiritual Energy image and yet it possesses such power. Sovereigns are fearsome, indeed."

Mu Chen also nodded his head slowly. This was the strength of a Sovereign? It was power truly worthy of ruling a territory of this large continent.

Around the black basin, many bodies were paralysed with fear, too afraid

to even move. They knew this figure wasn't the real White Dragon Sovereign, but also knew that it'd be all too easy for them to be slain.

As everyone was feeling terrified by the light spirit, a low mocking laugh sounded out. "Haha! It's just a Spiritual Energy image that'll soon disperse. White Dragon Sovereign. How impressive."

In their stupor, everyone turned their eyes towards the source of the laughter – the City Lord of White Dragon City. Bai Xuan slowly walked forward as he coldly regarded the spirit.

"Is he crazy?" A confused expression crossed everyone's faces. Even though Bai Xuan was considered powerful among them, he was still nothing more than an ant to this remnant Spiritual Energy image of the White Dragon Sovereign. Yet he actually dared to provoke the White Dragon Sovereign?

The white-robed spirit directed his pupils towards Bia Xuan and everyone sensed the natural Spiritual Energy churn violently in response.

His voice rang in the air. "The Demonic Dragon Palace really has sent someone."

"White Dragon Sovereign, since you've already betrayed the Demonic Dragon Palace, then I don't need to pay my respects you. What a pity that the Sovereign of a generation fell here. What a pity." Bai Xuan coldly smiled.

"Return the treasure that you stole from the Palace. Your actions back then caused our Demonic Dragon Palace to lose to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. With the Overlord position lost, you've practically become the sinner of our Demonic Dragon Palace!"

The white-robed figure casually looked over Bai Xuan. From his posture, one could tell that he disliked the argument; even still, as a Spiritual Energy image left behind by a Sovereign, he still possessed part of the original's pride and might.

"Hmph."

The corner of Bai Xuan's mouth rose into a strange smile at the White

Dragon Sovereign's aversive expression.

"It looks like the White Dragon Sovereign isn't very interested in me. In that case, allow me to invite someone you'd be more interested in speaking to."

Bai Xuan tightened his fingers and a black light spread from the center of his palm. The light gathered and condensed, until it became a dark pearl the size of a dragon's eye, emanating a frightening Spiritual Energy.

Kacha.

Bai Xuan chuckled as he shattered it.

Boom!

The moment Bai Xuan destroyed the black pearl, a towering black pillar soared into the air. An indescribable pressure shrouded them.

A dark misty figure materialised from within the black pillar and strolled out. Everything trembled beneath his feet.

He flashed a casual smile as he spoke to the white-robed figure in a voice that echoed through all the space between the heavens and earth.

"Haha. White Dragon, it's been few hundred years since we last met. I trust you've been well since then."

Mu Chen, Su Xuan, and their party dropped their jaws. This figure of dark light was actually a Sovereign too?!!

Chapter 252: Black Dragon, White Dragon

When the figure of black light appeared, the natural Spiritual Aura roared and turned violent. A pressure weighed down on them so heavily that even the heavens would tremble at it.

Everyone felt as if their very skin was being peeled away; they could no longer access the natural Spiritual Aura of this place.

It seemed as though the natural Spiritual Aura was being taken over by this black spirit.

"That's...a Sovereign Clone?"

Countless experts were frightened into despair and their legs turned to jelly as they watched the black spirit. The sudden appearance of this being, who was on par with the White Dragon Sovereign, had made them lose their composure.

Astonished emotion took over their rationality.

None of them had ever imagined that Bai Xuan could summon forth a Sovereign Clone. Didn't that mean that there was a Sovereign standing behind White Dragon City?

Was that really possible? If White Dragon City possessed such strength, why would they hole themselves up in the tiny White Dragon Hillock?

Shock overtook those from the Heavenly Dipper Sword Faction and Earthen Way Sect. This was news to them as well – White Dragon City's position as one of the three major forces of this hillock wasn't truly what they thought it was.

"Didn't the White Dragon Sovereign's remnant image mention the Demonic Dragon Palace, earlier?"

"Could he be talking about that the powerful force that was only a step away from becoming the Overlord of the Northern Heaven Continent a few hundred years ago? That Demonic Dragon Palace?"

"White Dragon City...was a chess piece set up by the Demonic Dragon

Palace?"

"..."

Emotions rose like tidal waves in their hearts as their faces glazed over with shock. Once this news spread, there'd be major shifts on the Northern Heavens Continent.

Bai Xuan couldn't care less about the shocked gazes coming from all over the place. He only raised his head towards the black spirit with reverence in his eyes. As long as he completed this task, he'd be able to return to the Demonic Dragon Palace. It wouldn't matter anymore whether his identity was revealed or not.

"That's a Sovereign Clone..."

With an unconcealable expression of shock, Su Xuan's charming eyes solemnly turned to the sky. "I never thought that Bai Xuan would actually have such a trump card. It seems like they're determined to win the White Dragon Sovereign's Spirit Treasury."

Mu Chen, Li Qing and the rest also nodded their heads in shock. Bai Xuan's trump card was too powerful. However, it's fortunate for them that'd he'd only revealed it to deal with the Spiritual Energy image left behind by the White Dragon Sovereign.

"Black Dragon..."

The White Dragon Sovereign's white pupils stared at the black spirit as ripples finally appeared on his face. "I never thought that you'd actually dare to appear. Aren't you afraid of the ones from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?"

"Haha, this is just a clone. I doubt they'll be able to detect it." The spirit called Black Dragon lightly smiled as he looked at the White Dragon Sovereign. "White Dragon, you've hidden the supreme treasure of my palace for so long. It should be about time for you to return it."

"After so many years...you're still concerned about it." the White Dragon Sovereign lightly sighed.

The Black Dragon Sovereign lowered his eyes as his voice slowly sounded out, “White Dragon, we were once the greatest of friends. However, you betrayed me. The pain of our clan perishing, have you forgotten it?”

“You were already deceived by hatred.” The White Dragon Sovereign said with another sigh.

“Who cares about the methods on the road of revenge?” The Black Dragon Sovereign smiled and sighed in regret. “I never thought that you’d refuse to wake up, even after your death. Forget it. Today, I’ll get rid of your remnant image. After getting the supreme treasure back, we’ll once again, rule over even the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. When we have truly grown strong, we’ll begin our true revenge.”

His words landed with a clear finality. Then, he took a step forward. The earth trembled as a boundless Spiritual Energy surged and gathered behind him, as endless as the seas.

Roar!

Within the sea of Spiritual Energy came tyrannical dragon roars. One massive dragon clad in cold black scales charged out. Its large body was slender and powerful, with the power to destroy the heavens and annihilate the earth.

The Black Dragon Sovereign’s figure trembled as he turned into a ray of black light and became one with the colossal black dragon. As one, they charged towards the White Dragon Sovereign on the light screen.

Boom!

It was like a frightening tornado had torn through the heavens and earth. Even the ground began showing cracks.

“Sighhh.”

The White Dragon Sovereign sighed again as his boundless Spiritual Energy rippled out. His body trembled and started to glow with a white light, and a massive white dragon appeared, one no smaller than his opponent’s black one. The white scales flickered with a dazzling glow as

the creature breathed out, turned into a cloud, and drifted to meet the threat.

A frightening Spiritual Energy swept through the entire heavens and earth.

Roar!

The roars of dragons resonated through the skies as the black and white dragon flew in unison, colliding again and again in ferocious strikes. Thunder roared and the heavens and earth trembled as though wrought under a violent gale.

Mu Chen and the rest watched the frightening confrontation occurring up in the skies. Even from such a distance, the Spiritual Energy impact still made them tremble a little.

Furthermore, the two of them were only wisps of the two Sovereigns. If they'd been fighting with their main vessels, the entire sky would probably shatter.

"The light screen has weakened a little." Su Xuan suddenly said.

Mu Chen and the few others immediately looked over and confirmed that as the battle in the sky intensified, the originally powerful light screen that covered the black basin was starting to ripple. Its originally brilliant glow had also dulled a little.

"The White Dragon Sovereign has died, after all. His strength is limited. Furthermore, he's fighting the Black Dragon Sovereign's Clone, so he's definitely exhausting a lot of energy. That's why the light screen is rapidly weakening," Mu Chen clarified.

Su Xuan also nodded. "It might not be long before the light screen becomes weak enough for us to pass through."

"Everyone must be cautious while collecting treasures. White Dragon City is extremely well-prepared and they're glaring like tigers. They're definitely the strongest contestor out there."

Mu Chen smiled when he heard that and swept his eyes around the

basin. “Even still, their very strength may get in their own way; some of the other forces are likely to take precautions by allying to deal with them. Who knows if we could take that chance to collect the treasures?”

“We’ll see how it goes. If we can’t get any treasures, then we’ll retreat first. Our lives are the priority.” Su Xuan said lightly.

Mu Chen and the others nodded. Treasures were great, but lives were still more important.

The other forces had also sensed the changes to the light screen and their expressions immediately heated up. The terrifying White Dragon Sovereign was currently occupied. From here, the only thing that mattered in winning treasures was their personal abilities.

Even though many were still shocked by the secret nature of White Dragon City, Bai Xuan and his experts weren’t actually enough to make them fear. And even though the Demonic Dragon Palace was powerful, they and the Northern Heavens Academy were like fire and water; the Demonic Dragon Palace wouldn’t do anything rash.

“Get ready to act.”

Bai Xuan closely scrutinised the powerful light screen fluctuating with ripples and said with a low voice, “We’ll kill all those who dare to get in our way.”

“Yes!”

A ferocity flashed through the greyed-robed elder when he heard Bai Xuan’s orders.

Bai Dong’s cold eyes glanced in Mu Chen’s direction. He’d wait until they entered the black basin. If there was an opportunity, he definitely wasn’t going to let that kid go!

Countless numbers of experts quietly waited around the black basin, barely restraining the excitement in their hearts. The skies above them rolled with clouds as the black and white dragons tore at each other. Frightening Spiritual Energies rippled through the heavens and earth.

This wait lasted for more than ten minutes before the powerful light screen lost the stability it once possessed and took on an illusionary quality, as though it was on the verge of collapsing.

Everyone's eyes boiled at the same instant. It was about time.

"Go!"

Bai Xuan took the lead with a wave of his hand. With his White Dragon City experts in tow, he flashed out like lightning towards the screen. While they were still some distance away, Bia Xuan threw out his fist.

Boom!

Spiritual Energy surged. The White Dragon City experts towards the back barked lowly as the black spears in their hands shot forward like gusts of strong wind, bombarding the light screen until it was on the verge of collapsing.

Dong!

Even more ripples moved over the light screen as it turned even more translucent. Several breaths later, a series of cracks began spreading over its surface.

Rustle!

When Bai Xuan and his group saw the crack, they moved and charged in.

Every other force followed when they saw White Dragon City's group charge in. A gale broke out as everyone tore a hole in a different place of the light screen. Together, they charged endlessly into the black basin.

"Let's go!"

Su Xuan raised her jade hands and took the initiative. Mu Chen and the rest quickly followed.

When they reached before the light screen, they joined powers to tear their own crack in its surface, revealing the pitch-black basin on the other side. The darkness there gaped like a massive, hungry maw, devouring the endless river of people.

“Be cautious,” Su Xuan reminded as she charged into the crack. Li Qing, Guo Xiong, and Su Ling’er quietly circulated their Spiritual Energies to protect their bodies before following.

Mu Chen peered into the darkness behind the crack and a smear of curiosity flashed through his pupils. The supreme treasure that the two Sovereigns had been speaking of should be in here. Except he didn’t know...

What sort of treasure was it?

An intense curiosity rose in Mu Chen’s heart. Then, he smiled and stepped into the darkness on the other side of the rift.

Chapter 253: Dense Water Spiritual Pearl

A darkness rushed forward to greet them the moment they passed through the rift. Mu Chen and his comrades opened their eyes and realized that they could no longer see the outside world, now that they were inside the black basin. The darkness stretched out all around them. A chill swirled with the surrounding wind.

However, there were still many bodies occupying the space around them — clearly members of the other forces. They'd quickly re-formed their own parties and had raised their guards, keeping a safe distance away from any of the others.

Mu Chen's line-of-sight cut through the darkness, then narrowed as they pinpointed something up ahead. He could just barely make out the shapes of several obsidian pillars, towering like beasts in the darkness. His heart started to beat faster.

Even though they were down inside the basin, no one experienced any surprise attacks. However, everyone stayed on guard and slowed their pace as they moved closer to the center of the basin. Each group took their own formations as they slowly advanced.

"Why's it so quiet?" Su Ling'er asked in a whisper. "Isn't this Sovereign Spirit Treasury a little too still? Shouldn't a place like this be filled with all sorts of danger?"

Su Xuan also knit her brows in doubt. However, she remained silent as she circulated her Spiritual Energy and maintained her state of high alert.

Mu Chen slowly swept his eyes around the area again before he looked back at the stone pillars. For some reason, the uneasiness in his heart grew stronger.

As he stared ahead, he noticed that there were already a few parties charging towards the stone pillars.

An even deeper blackness swirled over the stone pillars as the stone started shedding bits of debris.

“Not good! Be careful!”

Mu Chen’s pupils shrank as he threw himself in front of Su Xuan and the others with a determined look in his eyes.

“Onom!”

Just as Mu Chen’s warning reached their ears, the side of one massive stone pillar suddenly shattered and a huge black hand thrust forward from the dust. The charging formations immediately fell into disarray. Fresh blood splattered.

Mournful shrieks resounded.

The sudden situation shocked everyone.

Bang! Bang!

More cracks started to appear on the other pillars, which then collapsed to reveal more pitch-black stone statues. Each glared at them with savage red eyes.

A frightening Spiritual Energy rippled over these stone statues. None of them were weaker than the stone statue Mu Chen had subdued just a little while ago.

“Hssssss!”

Mu Chen couldn’t help taking in a breath as he watched the stone statues struggle out of their pillars. To think there’d be so many Stone Guardians here! This truly was a dangerous place.

Everyone else’s faces changed immediately as they took their positions in the formation.

“We’ll charge together and wreck those stone statues!”

The attack had been too unexpected; however, the humans weren’t few in numbers either – there were quite a few experts who’d made it into the basin. After the sudden loss, the formations rapidly gathered again. Shouts and snarls rang through the darkness as the experts joined forces and their combined Spiritual Energy soared to reach the skies, before they charged towards the black stone statues.

Boom!

A torrent of people smashed into the black stone statues and the two sides broke into an intense battle. A violent Spiritual Energy swept over the battlefield, so strong it even split the earth.

However, everyone had underestimated the Stone Guardians – these things had been created solely for battle and felt no pain. Even though the experts had the advantage of quantity, they lacked in terms of quality – there were only a few who could break through the stone statue's defenses and advance deeper, and they still had to pay a huge price for accomplishing that much.

"Those guys from White Dragon City are charging in real fast!" Li Qing suddenly warned.

Mu Chen looked to the far right and confirmed that the experts of White Dragon City had already gathered into an arrow formation and were swiftly piercing through the stone statue's defenses. Each of them was giving it their all. Aside from Bai Xuan and the grey-robed elder, Mu Chen and his party could sense another four Spiritual Energy ripples coming from experts who'd reached the Heavenly Transform Stage Initial Phase!

Borrowing strength from their powerful formation, White Dragon City took the lead and broke through the Stone Guardians much faster than any of the other forces could possibly match.

Su Xuan ground her teeth as she recognised a few familiar Spiritual Energy ripples. "Among those four other Heavenly Transform Stage Initial Phases, two of them are from the ones who attacked us the other night. So they really are from White Dragon City."

Mu Chen frowned. "White Dragon City no longer needs to hide its strength; all they have to do is advance past the stone statues to reach the deepest area. The treasures will be right in front of them."

"We can't let them steal the supreme treasure so easily!" Su Xuan declared. Since they'd already confirmed that they were members of the Demonic Dragon Palace, they'd become their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's mortal enemy. Besides, if Bai Xuan and his soldiers won the

treasure, then they probably wouldn't be able to escape safely.

Guo Xiong and the rest nodded in agreement.

"We'll move together. After them!"

Su Xuan lightly waved her jade hands and made a clutching motion. With the sensation of rolling waves, a strange and ancient jade pearl appeared in her hand.

Mu Chen and his group circulated their Spiritual Energies to the limits and burst forward. They passed through large throngs of people as they charged towards the Stone Guardians.

Their Spiritual Energies were much stronger from the other experts', which quickly attracted the surprised attention of three Stone Guardians. The stone statues took trembling steps as they changed directions and charged after them.

"Dense Water Spiritual Pearl, Dense Water Prison!"

Su Xuan took note of the situation and raised her jade hands. The ancient jade pearl flew from her palm, and a surge of blue waves a hundred feet high rose into the air. The water crashed down and swirled into a massive vortex, enveloping the three stone statues.

Bang! Bang!

The violent whirlpool spun endlessly with a frightening force. The three statues had been as strong as any Heavenly Transform Stage Initial Phase, but they were pinned down so strongly that they couldn't even move. The clear and beautiful azure waves pounded them until cracks appeared on their bodies.

Even Mu Chen was shocked by Su Xuan's move. This was the first time he'd seen her fight, but he never imagined that she'd be so powerful. With just a casual attack, she could take care of those three Stone Statue Guardians.

Ranked 3 of the Heavenly Rankings. Truly, her fame wasn't for nothing.

Su Ling'er flashed an adoring smile when she saw Mu Chen's astonished

expression. “That’s my sister’s Dense Water Spiritual Pearl. A High Rank Spiritual Artifact. She spent three million Spiritual Value Points for it.”

Guo Xiong laughed as well. “Haha. The Dense Water Spiritual Pearl contains an extremely bizarre form of Spiritual Water called Dense Water. A single litre weighs a thousand kilograms1. It could even crush a mountain. It’s as dangerous as any weapon and can be used for both offense and defense. The power of the Dense Water Spiritual Pearl can’t be missed; that’s why Su Xuan sits so securely as the the Rank 3 of the Heavenly Rankings.”

Mu Chen exclaimed in admiration and nodded. So it was a High Rank Spiritual Artifact. No wonder. From the looks of it, Su Xuan’s Dense Water Spiritual Pearl might even be stronger than the Draconic Spirit Bracelets.

“Let’s go.”

Su Xuan motioned and the blue jade2 pearl returned to her jade hands. She stroked its cyan surface as she smiled and said, “Let’s get over there. Fast.”

“Yes!”

The other four agreed, then burst out in unison, easily passing the three stone statues that’d gotten in their way just a few minutes ago.

Su Xuan brought out the Dense Water Spiritual Pearl again, while Guo Xiong and the other three burst forward on full attack, in an attempt to lessen the pressure on Su Xuan. The group of five charged straight forward.

The Heavenly Dipper Sword Faction and Earthen Way Sect followed closely behind them. These factions had the advantage of numbers, and furthermore, they’d joined forces, so their combined strength was now far greater than it’d been before.

Everyone charged straight ahead. As long as they could get past the Stone Guardians, they’d reach the Spirit Treasury and obtain the supreme treasure!

However, the price for such a straightforward charge was a heavy one to

pay. Mournful screams echoed endlessly through the black basin, and the faint smell of blood permeated the air. Many faces turned pale.

Mu Chen's party relied on Su Xuan's Dense Water Spiritual Pearl. Even though they suffered no injuries or deaths, their advancement grew tougher by the step. Finally, Mu Chen decided that he had no choice but to summon his Stone Guardian as well. Unfortunately, his Stone Guardian was already badly damaged and looked to be on the verge of collapse – however, it could buy them some time to catch their breaths.

"There have been quite a few deaths from White Dragon City."

Su Xuan moved the Dense Water Spiritual Pearl again, and waves as heavy as mountains crushed the arm of one Stone Guardian that was in the process of charging them. Then she looked to her right, where the experts of White Dragon City were already bathed in fresh blood. Even one of the Heavenly Transform Stage Initial Phase experts had died. No doubt a disastrous loss for them.

"We're approaching the central region."

Mu Chen nodded with a grave look in his eyes. He'd already noticed that the deeper they went, the more violent the Stone Guardians became, as though they were desperate to keep them from reaching their destination.

It was clear that they'd soon reach the heart of this Spirit Treasury.

"There're abnormal movements from White Dragon City!" Su Ling'er urged.

Mu Chen and Su Xuan turned surprised expressions to see that White Dragon City had split their party into two. One was headed by Bai Dong, with four Heavenly Transform Stage Initial Phase experts protecting him. The other was lead by Bai Xuan and was swiftly charging forward. The goal of this formation was clear – Bai Xuan was trying to open a path for the other group to forge ahead.

Mu Chen narrowed his eyes. "They know that they're attracting too much attention because they have too many people. They're trying to split up into smaller groups, so they can move faster!"

He had to admit that White Dragon City's strategy was quite effective. While Bai Xuan and his group were attracting all the attention, Bai Dong and his smaller party had already disappeared into the darkness.

"What do we do now? If this goes on, they'll be able to be the first to enter!" Guo Xiong anxiously cried.

Su Xuan smiled bitterly. She could try charging in alone; however, she knew the others would find it difficult to protect themselves without her.

As Su Xuan helplessly considered her options, Mu Chen suddenly spoke with a soft voice. "I'll chase after them. You guys can catch up later."

"You alone?" Everyone looked at Mu Chen with an astonished expression. They clearly hadn't expected such a suggestion from him.

"Rest assured. I won't do something stupid, like seeking my own death." Mu Chen smiled. However, he didn't have enough time to fully explain, either.

Su Xuan evaluated Mu Chen's steady gaze and hesitated. Then, she nodded. "Alright. You go first. We'll distract the stone statues for you. Remember, if you encounter Bai Dong and his group, just try to buy time."

"Okay."

Mu Chen nodded. Then, he moved like a hunting leopard as he slipped between two stone statues and rapidly disappeared into the darkness.

"Will he be alright?" Su Ling'er worried as she looked in the direction where Mu Chen had disappeared.

Su Xuan shook her head and softly replied, "I don't know where he gets that confidence from, but right now, I can only choose to trust him."

Su Ling'er, Li Qing, Guo Xiong nodded. That was all they could do in the current situation. Just hope that nothing happened to Mu Chen.

Chapter 254: Black Demonic Pillar

Shhhhhhhu!

As the darkness enveloped the center of the basin, a single figure streaked over the inky blackness – it was Mu Chen. Suddenly, he came to a halt. His feet briefly brushed the ground before he came to a full stop more than ten feet away from a Stone Guardian.

Bang!

A stone fist fell with the power of a meteor striking the earth, right at the spot where Mu Chen had touched just a few moments before. A series of cracks spread over the ground.

Mu Chen steadied his feet as his Spiritual Energy surged and he burst forward again. He swiftly passed through a gap in the Stone Guardian's offense.

Right now, he was somewhere deep inside the basin. As a result, the number of Stone Guardians had increased, and they'd grown more violent as well – to the point that even Mu Chen didn't dare to confront them. All he could do was take advantage of the gaps between them and charge ahead.

However, his charge only lasted for a few minutes before he was cut off, and Mu Chen suddenly found himself surrounded by six Stone Guardians. They moved their mountainous steps as they rained punches down that could shatter the sky.

Mu Chen warily observed the Stone Guardians as they sealed off his only path of retreat. Finally, he knitted his brows and waved his sleeve, summoning his own Stone Guardian. It stood like a stone shield before him.

Bang!

Six heavy stone fists landed on Mu Chen's Stone Guardian, and more cracks spread over its body. At last, it exploded with a bang.

Mu Chen felt his heart ache. The statue had been a faithful servant to

him, and he hadn't expected to see it destroyed just like that. It was too much of a waste.

"I wonder if the White Dragon Medal has any effects on these Stone Guardians?"

Mu Chen felt excitement in his heart. He'd been entertaining the idea for a while, but the Stone Guardians had been too violent for him to risk it. He was also afraid that he'd repeat the situation in the stone palace hall – that he'd only end up provoking the stone statues to attack even more. But now that he'd been driven into a corner, he couldn't care less about those risks.

Mu Chen decided that it was time to act. With a wave of his hand, the White Dragon Medal appeared in his hand and he activated it with his Spiritual Energy. The silver medal began flickering with a faint glow.

The moment the White Dragon Medal appeared, Mu Chen noticed that the Stone Guardians' attacks had become sluggish. But before he could celebrate the fact, they attacked him anyways.

"It doesn't work?"

A smear of disappointment flashed through Mu Chen's eyes. So it seemed he couldn't rely on the White Dragon Medal to control these Stone Guardians.

However, it wasn't entirely useless. At least its presence had slightly suppressed their attacks – which meant that the White Dragon Medal had some effect after all.

Something flickered in Mu Chen's eyes as he poured everything into the White Dragon Medal. The glow from its metallic surface grew stronger, and Mu Chen was enveloped in its light.

From a distance, Mu Chen looked like a patch of fuzzy white light. You couldn't even see his tracks if you tried.

While Mu Chen was bathed by the white glow, he kept an eye on the six Stone Guardians that'd been attacking him. Their offense had finally ceased and their scarlet stone eyes had dimmed to a flickering glow in

their empty sockets.

"It looks like the White Dragon Medal can interfere with the stone statue's senses! They can't see me!"

Mu Chen finally had a grasp of what was going on, and a moment of exhilaration passed over him. Even though the White Dragon Medal couldn't control the Stone Guardians like he'd imagined, he could use it to interfere with their senses. With it, he could reach the heart of the basin with the greatest speed.

This was no time to delay. Mu Chen stepped up his speed and charged through the statues in a flash, heading towards the depths at lightning speed.

This time, Mu Chen encountered no other obstacles. The Stone Guardians he passed only stared at him with blank expressions, without attacking.

Borrowing the medal's cloaking effect, Mu Chen passed through the field of stone statues within minutes. Finally, he slowed his pace when he sensed that there were fewer Stone Guardians in the area. Up ahead, it looked like there were none.

"Am I already at the heart?"

Suddenly, Mu Chen sensed something. He sped up again, and a moment later, the darkness began to retreat from his vision. What appeared before him was a dusky landscape scattered with large stones. At the center of these stones stood a black stone pillar roughly a hundred metres wide.

This stone pillar didn't give off a majestic feeling like the ones from before. But now that Mu Chen knew why, his heartbeat quickened.

As Mu Chen carefully approached it, he realised this black stone pillar wasn't made of ordinary stone – in fact, it wasn't made of stone at all, nor was it made of gold or wood. However, it appeared extremely ancient. A strange design was scrawled over its surface. As Mu Chen studied it, a baleful aura quietly began to spread around him, strong enough to devour the heavens and earth. Mu Chen's eyes turned a little red.

He felt himself go unfocused for a moment as he drew even closer and lightly placed his hand on the mottled surface.

Boom.

The moment he touched the pillar, a massive explosion sounded in his mind. Images flashed through his consciousness.

There was a deep pool filled with scarlet liquid that looked like blood. Human bodies were being tossed down from somewhere above and melted as they splashed into the pool. Down under the bloody surface stood a black pillar and a hidden demonic god that devoured all with its baleful aura.

Above the abyss stood a fuzzy figure with white hair, clad in a white robe. He looked exactly like the White Dragon Sovereign.

The figure looked down upon the bloody scene and a look of unbearable pain flashed through his eyes. He slowly clenched his fist.

Boom!

The bloody pond was jolted by an explosion and a column of blood suddenly rose from its surface and reached for the clouds. The abyss split open and the bloody light soared from the the pool and into the heavens, and remained suspended upon the horizon.

The black pillar was painted in rivers of endless blood. An endless flow of demonic patterns swirled around on its surface. The support was rent with deep claw marks, as if it'd collapse at any moment.

The sudden outburst from the ancient demonic pillar shattered everything. Even the heavens and earth seemed to lose their colour in that single moment. An endless baleful aura blew across the scene, causing even yin and yang to tremble.

Even the powerful being who stood above the abyss, shrouded in light, couldn't help taking a step back in the face of such a baleful aura.

Mu Chen concentrated his mind on the scene. The baleful aura even seemed to infect his heart as an ominous feeling replaced his rationality.

“Liiiiii!”

A clear cry suddenly resounded within his body. The sound wave instantly woke Mu Chen from that state of mind.

Mu Chen recovered with his body drenched in a cold sweat. He looked up at the cracked pillar with the expression of a hungry ghost. It was almost in his hands. However, he retreated with eyes filled with astonishment and wariness.

What was that goddamned stone pillar? Why did it possess such a frightening baleful aura?

Mu Chen knitted his brows as he moved his eyes over the black pillar. Finally, his eyes found the peak, where there rested a white spiritual pearl, roughly the size of an infant’s head.

Its clear surface sparkled as it dispersed the darkness with a milky-white light. Mu Chen’s heart grew calmer as he stared at that light.

A heavy atmosphere rolled within the white spiritual pearl, like a sea of clouds. He could barely make out the shape of a white dragon roaming within its curved surface and hear its vigorous cries.

“That’s...”

Mu Chen focused his eyes on the white spiritual pearl that emitted such frightening Spiritual Energy. Just a glance told him that it was an extremely rare treasure.

He licked his lips as he studied the pearl with heated eyes. The black demonic pillar was simply too strange, but there weren’t any demonic traces inside the white pearl. It was clearly a treasure at first glance. If he had to choose between the two, of course he’d want the white spiritual pearl.

Mu Chen made his decision and flew towards the white pearl with outstretched hands.

Shhhhuuu!

The moment before Mu Chen laid hands on the pearl, a strange gale

whipped up from behind him. His eyes widened as a cold chill ran down his spine. The Spiritual Energy inside him surged as he threw out a punch.

A pitch-black Spiritual Energy swept out and black flames surged with a shocking ferocity.

Bang!

The two collided with a dramatic dispersal of Spiritual Energy. The jolt forced Mu Chen backwards by several steps before he could steady himself. His expression was dark as three figures swiftly stepped out of the darkness.

"Hmph! You're really a despicable thing that never dies. You actually managed to reach this place ahead of us!"

Bai Dong was one of the figures who'd walked out of the darkness, albeit in a fairly torn-up shape. He was accompanied by only the grey-robed elder and one other guard. The other two Heavenly Transform Stage Initial Phases must have fallen during their charge.

Right now, Bai Dong and the grey-robed elder were eyeing Mu Chen with cold expressions tinged with astonishment. They never expected him to reach this place ahead of them.

If they'd arrived any later, Mu Chen probably would've taken everything.

Mu Chen looked at the two of them with a strange mixture of boredom and bloodlust.

A savage smile appeared at the corner of Bai Dong's mouth. He raised his head towards the elder and said, "Elder Qiu, the two of you go deal with him. Don't give him another chance."

The grey-robed elder slowly nodded and stepped out with the Heavenly Transform Stage Initial Phase guard beside him. His eyes locked onto Mu Chen like those of a venomous snake.

Mu Chen studied the two Heavenly Transform Stage Initial Phase experts as his gaze also turned a little colder.

Chapter 255: Bai Xuan's True Strength

The grey-robed elder and the Heavenly Transform Stage Initial Phase guard slowly stepped forward, their cold, snake-like eyes fixed on Mu Chen.

The supreme treasure was right before them. If they could just get rid of Mu Chen, they'd be able to safely seize their prize. Therefore, this obstacle before them had to be dealt with.

"Brat, since you don't want to get lost on your own, then you can leave your puny little life right here." The grey-robe elder threatened. They had two Heavenly Transform Stage Initial Phases on their side. With power like that, he could kill Mu Chen as easily as he could turn his palm.

Mu Chen was expressionless as he slowly spread his hands. Even he found it difficult to fight two opponents of this level – however, he had no other choice. But if these guys really wanted a fight, then he wouldn't mind letting them know that this so-called "pushover" wouldn't be that easy to deal with.

"Go!"

The grey-robed elder was done with this nonsense. They wrapped their fingers around the empty air, and black spears materialised on cue. Then, the two of them acted at the same time and rushed towards Mu Chen at lightning speed.

Mu Chen quickly retreated from their powerful attacks. With a twitch of his own fingers, the Nine-Layered Pagoda appeared and expanded in a flash, becoming a solid defense between them.

Clang! Claaang!

However, the grey-robed elder and the guard weren't intending to be merciful. They circulated their Spiritual Energies to the limits and whipped their spear images on the pagoda like raging vipers. The force of the attack even shoved the structure back.

Mu Chen's emotions were rolling, but there was no panic in his eyes. He

made use of the precious time that the Nine-Layered Pagoda had bought him, and quickly formed a series of confusing hand seals while circulating his Spiritual Energy.

Faced with such an opponent, of course Mu Chen had to get serious.

He formed the seals with both hands and a wave of majestic Spiritual Energy washed over them. The natural Spiritual Aura around them was also rapidly gathering towards him.

“Be careful! That kid is going to unleash some Spiritual Art!”

The grey-robed elder and the guard both noticed the intense ripple in the natural Spiritual Energy around them. The grey-robed elder icily glared at Mu Chen as he barked, “Get rid of him!”

They thrusted the long spears in bursts of Spiritual Energy, jolting the Nine-Layered Pagoda and knocking it back. Then they burst towards Mu Chen like lightning.

“Hmph.”

Mu Chen’s pitch-black eyes turned into a pair of deep black pools and he coldly snorted as he formed more hand seals. A torrential Spiritual Energy swept out like waves of the great seas.

Boom!

The skies above Mu Chen became starry and a colossal white tiger formed from their light. It crouched upon the sky as a deep, baleful aura swept out.

“Four Gods Constellation Scripture, Divine Seal of the White Tiger!”

Mu Chen furiously glared at his opponents, just like the roaring white tiger above him. He formed the last seal with both hands and set it out.

“Roar!”

The White Tiger Divine Beast stepped on the starry sky and roared, shaking the heavens and earth. The starry light responded to its call and slammed down upon the grey-robed elder and the guard.

“It’s Deity-Tier Spiritual Art!”

Their expressions changed and their voices grew shriller. They hadn’t expected such a Spiritual Art from Mu Chen — and he was able to fully exert it!

Their faces turned grave and their postures showed that they weren’t affording the slightest negligence. They circulated their Spiritual Energies without the slightest bit of restraint. They immediately joined their efforts and threw out a palm. The turbulent Spiritual Energy surged into a Spiritual Energy light barrier a hundred feet tall, solid and firm as any wall.

Boom!

The starry light struck the light barrier with a thunderous Spiritual Energy. Violent shockwaves swept out. The huge, messily scattered stones were instantly ground to dust.

Bang!

The light barrier shattered under the force of the attack and the grey-robed elder was sent flying several hundred feet back. He groaned as a scarlet line appeared on his lips.

Mu Chen’s Divine Seal of the White Tiger had injured both opponents with that attack. But instead of continuing the barrage, he paused his offense and turned to Bai Dong.

Bai Dong was stunned into silence by Mu Chen’s fearsome might. He couldn’t understand it. Why was this Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase youth so hard to deal with?

His two Heavenly Transform Stage Initial Phase experts should’ve easily killed him. However, they’d been wounded by him instead. The methods that Mu Chen had used to accomplished this alarmed Bai Dong.

So when he saw Mu Chen suddenly burst towards him, his expression drastically changed. All thoughts of stealing the treasure had been banished from his mind as he rapidly retreated.

“You want to leave?”

Mu Chen coldly smiled as he circulated his Spiritual Energy and chased after Bai Dong.

Bang!

Bai Dong took the full attack; however, he could only guard against Mu Chen’s six Limitless Death Seals. Blood trailed from his mouth as his torn body flew backwards. But before he could regain his bearings, a chilly sword ray stopped at this throat. He froze in place, not daring to move.

“Brat, you dare!”

The grey-robed elder and the guard had recovered by now, only to see Bai Dong fall into Mu Chen’s hands. Their faces twisted in rage.

“Turn around and leave this place.” Mu Chen slowly said with an indifferent expression.

No one moved as they glared at Mu Chen with ferocious expressions. If they did that, wouldn’t they be leaving the supreme treasure to Mu Chen? That was something they weren’t willing to let happen. They couldn’t afford to pay the consequences.

Mu Chen held their eyes and frowned. It looked like they considered this supreme treasure to be far more important than Bai Dong.

Even though Bai Dong was terrified, he still managed to spit out vicious threats. “Piece of shit! The supreme treasure is what we value most. You can kill me, but my father will definitely shred you to pieces! Your companions won’t escape either!”

“Yeah, I know.”

Mu Chen lightly smiled. Bai Dong was startled by the expression, and Mu Chen took advantage of that to throw out a palm. Bai Dong flew backwards with a face full of disbelief and fresh blood. Mu Chen’s palm had nearly severed his life – he clung to life by only a hair-thin thread.

The grey-robed elder and the guard rushed forward to catch Bai Dong. Their expressions grew grave as they evaluated his condition.

“He still has some breath left. If you don’t do anything, he won’t hold on for much longer,” Mu Chen sighed to them.

The two of them understood Mu Chen’s intentions – he wanted to use Bai Dong’s heavy injuries against them.

“You!”

The grey-robed elder was furious as he snarled that word. Suddenly, a thunderous boom echoed from somewhere outside their pocket dimension and an indescribable Spiritual Energy swept over them.

Bang! Bang!

The remaining stone pillars in the black basin instantly shattered and the dark sky once again regained its light. Outside, the White Dragon Sovereign’s powerful light barrier had finally collapsed.

The violently attacking Stone Guardians had shattered to pieces.

A light bathed over them and they blankly raised their heads towards the source. The black and white dragons had slowly lost their glow from the long battle and the frightening might that’d engulfed the space slowly started to disperse.

The two Sovereign Clones had exhausted their Spiritual Energies.

The light screen that’d shrouded the black basin had disappeared. The stone statues had also lost their fighting strength.

All the challenges that’d stood in their way were now gone.

The other experts that were still engaged in a battle stopped their fighting and blankly evaluated the situation in their heads. Then, the expressions rushed back to their faces as they burst forward at the same time, and the basin was drowned out by the howl of wind as they rushed towards the depths.

Mu Chen had lost his indifferent expression as well. He never thought that the two great Sovereign Clones would disperse just like that. Once the White Dragon Sovereign’s Clone dispersed, the place would become a free-for-all.

Rustle!

Mu Chen immediately stood up and headed towards the white spiritual pearl resting atop the black demonic pillar.

“Hmph!”

But just as he reached the top of the pillar, a cold snort cracked like lightning from somewhere above.

Mu Chen immediately looked up to find Bai Xuan glaring down at him with a chilly face. When Bai Xuan saw that Mu Chen was about to make a dive for the pearl, he narrowed his eyes and threw out a punch. The Spiritual Energy surged with the weight of a tsunami as it crashed down on Mu Chen.

At just the right moment, Mu Chen’s body flickered with a black light and the Nine-Layered Pagoda appeared around him.

Clang!

The Nine-Layered Pagoda suffered the heavy attack and its black light instantly dimmed. Even inside, Mu Chen felt the blast from Bai Xuan’s fist and his face turned ashen as he coughed up red blood. He staggered and flew out, colliding with the black demonic pillar. With a twist of his wrist, he steadied himself using the pillar.

“Brat, hand it over!”

Bai Xuan’s eyes were like a cold blade. With a shout, he rushed at Mu Chen with bloodlust in his aura.

“Shhhhhhuu!”

But just as Bai Xuan initiated his charge, a brilliantly glowing jade pearl cut between the two and exploded with waves of water, shrouding Mu Chen within a protective barrier.

Bang!

Bai Xuan’s sharp attacks clashed with the azure waves; however, his attacks were only pushed back by the protective water.

Bai Xuan's expression dropped a few degrees in temperature when he glanced towards the source of the attack and found Su Xuan. She appeared right in front of Mu Chen, cautiously affording him protection.

"Brat, hand it over. Or don't blame me for starting a massacre." Bai Xuan's eyes were savage as he glared at Mu Chen like a venomous snake.

Mu Chen wiped away the trickle of blood at the corner of his mouth. With a flick of his wrist, he picked up the pearl that rippled with frightening Spiritual Energy and stowed it away. But as he did so, he failed to notice that a drop of blood from his hand had landed upon the black demonic pillar. The drop seeped into the pillar and didn't even leave a trace behind.

"So, you think she can keep up with me." Bai Xuan studied Mu Chen and Su Xuan and the corner of his mouth slowly turned into a mocking smile.

Mu Chen's pupils shrank as he looked at the darkened Bai Xuan. Something wasn't right.

"Did you really think I was only this strong?"

Bai Xuan took a step forward with eyes like icy frost. A black bracelet on his arm suddenly crumbled to dust. Mu Chen and Su Xuan's faces both changed.

They felt the surge of oppressive Spiritual Energy sweeping out from Bai Xuan's body.

This strength – he'd already reached the Heavenly Transform Stage Late Phase!

Bai Xuan had actually been hiding his strength this entire time!

Chapter 256: Space Shattered

Heavenly Transform Stage Late Phase!

Mu Chen and Su Xuan's faces took on drastically different expressions as they warily observed Bai Xuan. The latter stood as an imposing figure overflowing with majestic ripples of Spiritual Energy. Their expressions slowly turned grave and determined. The City Lord of White Dragon City was a very patient man. He'd managed to conceal his true strength, even though he'd had to suffer such great losses while battling the stone statue formations.

This patient man made their hearts turn cold.

"City Lord, the Young City Lord was heavily injured by that brat. Even now, he only hangs on by a thread!" the grey-robed elder reported from behind Bai Xuan.

The bloodlust in Bai Xuan's eyes flared as he fixed his eyes on Mu Chen. Even his hoarse voice was saturated with his desire to kill. "Brat, you should start praying that I don't get my hands on you. Or I'll definitely skin you and pull out your tendons, one by one. I'll make you regret being born into this world."

However, Mu Chen wasn't stirred in the slightest by Bai Xuan's threat. His black pupils were as indifferent as if Bai Xuan had never spoken. When Bai Xuan's men had first attacked them in the forest, he'd already concluded that something like this would happen. So even if he didn't cripple Bai Dong, the outcome would be the same.

"The leftovers of the Demonic Dragon Palace dared to act so impudently in the Northern Heavens Continent? Aren't you afraid that our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy will send out experts to behead all of you?" Su Xuan coldly warned.

"Haha. Did you think that this continent belonged to your Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy? If it hadn't been for that unfortunate incident, our Demonic Dragon Palace would've destroyed your Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. And you still dare to spout nonsense here?"

Bai Xuan laughed.

"You are the ones who lost. That's still a fact." Mu Chen smiled, as he poked the festering wound and pulled Bai Xuan back to reality.

The smile on Bai Xuan's face vanished as his palms slowly came together. In a flash, a savage blood-red spear appeared in his hand, emitting a frightening and baleful aura. It was clear to all that this was an Ominous High Rank Spiritual Artifact.

"Since you like to speak of reality, then I'll tell you guys what you will face now is the reality, brats of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy!" Bai Xuan's gaze were cold. He took a step forth and the blood-red long spear trembled. Torrential blood-red light rays surged. In those light rays, it was as though an overflowing sea was made from blood. The stench of blood was spreading throughout the heavens and earth.

"Blood Devouring Sea Spear!"

Boom!

The scarlet rays were spreading like rivers of blood as they swept towards Mu Chen and Su Xuan from all directions. Mu Chen and Su Xuan narrowed their eyes at the sight of them. Bai Xuan had been a Heavenly Transform Stage Late Phase to begin with. If you added on the power of the Ominous High Rank Spiritual Artifact, then he was like a tiger that'd grown wings.

Su Xuan's charming face turned grave as she released her own majestic Spiritual Energy. The Dense Water Spiritual Pearl in her hand also exploded with light and the azure waves of pure Spiritual Energy became as heavy as the mountains. The waves spun into a massive barrier, protecting both herself and Mu Chen.

"You're just a Heavenly Transform Stage Middle Phase, but you still think you can withstand my attack?!"

Bai Xuan coldly smiled upon seeing Su Xuan's defense. The spear in his hand trembled as bloody rays of light gathered on its tip, as if rivers of blood were gathering in a basin at its point. Then, without warning, the

spear was thrust forward and smashed into the azure water barrier.

Bang!

A terrifying Spiritual Energy swept over them, even though the azure water barrier managed to halt the attack. However, Bai Xuan snarled as he forced the bloody spear tip even harder, until it finally tore the water barrier apart.

Bang!

The water barrier exploded outwards and turned into mist as it dispersed. Su Xuan's face turned pale as a trickle of blood appeared at the corner of her mouth.

The spear of dense baleful aura tore through the sky and shot towards her.

Shhhhhhuuuuuuu!

A surge of Spiritual Energy announced the cyan longsword as it flew out from behind her and met the blood-red spear.

Clanng!

A metallic clash resounded and the Spiritual Aura surged. The longsword fell back and tore the flesh between Mu Chen's thumb and forefinger, where he'd been holding the hilt. Fresh blood flowed onto the sword blade as he took several steps back. His emotions surged as his face turned pale.

"Big Sister!"

A cry of alarm sounded from somewhere behind them. With a gust of wind, Su Ling'er, Guo Xiong, and Li Qing flew over and landed beside Mu Chen and Su Xuan. Their faces changed as they realised that both of them were heavily injured.

During this journey, Su Xuan had always been calm in her fights. She could easily defeat all her opponents. Likewise, Mu Chen didn't look strong on the outside, but he could pull miracles and reverse almost any situation.

Before they knew it, the two of them had become crucial members of their small party. But now, the two of them were heavily injured.

By now, quite a few forces had managed to gather in the depths of the basin. However, they quickly backed away with fearful expressions when they sensed Bai Xuan's strength. Even the Heavenly Dipper Sword Faction and the Earthen Way Sect were cautious about taking action. Every level of the Heavenly Transform Stage had a huge gap to the next. The two forces collectively possessed four Heavenly Transform Stage Initial Phase experts, but even they'd be slaughtered in only a few blows against someone like Bai Xuan.

That was the difference between the Heavenly Transform Stage Initial Phase and Late Phase.

"Brat, you should be smart and hand it over. Maybe I'll let you die quickly." Bai Xuan said as he hovered in the air, overflowing with bloody-red light. His eyes were sharp as he stared at Mu Chen.

Mu Chen coldly smiled back. This Bai Xuan was powerful indeed, especially with the High Rank Spiritual Artifact. He was exceptionally powerful for someone still in the Heavenly Transform Stage. But if he thought that he could make Mu Chen grovel in fear, then he was still too naive.

If Mu Chen didn't have a life-preserving trick, how could he dare to fight Bai Xuan?

Mu Chen's hand slowly closed as black flames surged in the depth of his eyes. It looked like he had to borrow the power of the Nine Netherbird this time. He'd have to pay a decent price, but he couldn't worry about that right now.

Drip.

Thoughts flashed through Mu Chen's heart and more blood dripped from the tip of the sword onto the black demonic pillar beneath his feet, and disappeared.

Onom.

“Look at that black stone pillar!”

Someone cried out in surprise. Dark-red runes were slowly lighting up on the surface of the crumbled stone pillar – the only one still standing at the center of the black basin. Even the heavens and earth seemed to take on a red tint.

Mu Chen was also startled by the strange change and he grabbed Su Xuan by the wrist. “Get away from the stone pillar!”

By the time his warning landed in their ears, he’d already taken Su Xuan and retreated. The others immediately followed.

“Trying to leave?!” Bai Xuan’s eyes turned cold as he followed too.

Boom!

The instant that Bai Xuan burst out, the black demonic pillar exploded with a blinding bloody light. The light soared into the clouds like a column of scarlet blood and dispersed into the sky, turning it into sea of blood. A ominous ripple spread beneath the sky.

It made that Ominous High Rank Spiritual Spiritual Artifact in Bai Xuan’s hands look like a fragile toy.

The abrupt events startled everyone present. Even Bai Xuan’s face took a drastic change. He sensed a frightening and indescribable ripple from that sky of blood.

“What’s that black stone pillar? Why’s it so horrifying?!” Bai Xuan stared at the claw marked pillar in shock.

“Could that stone pillar be the supreme treasure of this Spirit Treasury?!”

Bai Xuan’s heart trembled. His mission was to retrieve a supreme treasure from the White Dragon Sovereign’s Spirit Treasury; however, he had no detailed information of the treasure’s characteristics. At first, he thought it was the white spiritual pear that Mu Chen had seized – the Spiritual Energy ripples that it emitted told him that it was most likely ranked as a supreme treasure. But now, this mysterious black pillar was

even more shocking!

It was so horrifying that even Bai Xuan didn't dare to move.

The bloody sea of clouds spread and covered the entire dimension. Everyone watched in shock as the space around them twisted and seemed ready to shatter.

Even this mysterious space couldn't suppress that frightening stone pillar?

Countless experts became overwhelmed with shock. Just what kind of treasure was it? Could it be a Divine Artifact?!

"The space is going to shatter!" Bai Xuan warned.

Mu Chen and the rest immediately circulated their Spiritual Energies to guard their bodies.

Bang!

All Bai Xuan could do was clench his fist as he no longer dared to move. He immediately circulated his Spiritual Energy to protect himself.

Bang!

The space twisted until it reached its limit. With a bang, it shattered like a mirror, sending violent ripples through the fabric of space around them.

One maelstrom of space appeared after another and devoured the people still trapped inside. Before anyone in their party could say anything they, too, were enveloped by a space maelstrom and disappeared.

——

White Dragon Hillock

Far in the distance, a series of holes appeared in the sky. Numerous figures fell out like trash being dumped into a garbage pit.

Mu Chen and his party were lucky, since they hadn't been separated as they were thrown out. They stabled their fall and landed together on a mountain peak.

"All out." Su Xuan said in astonishment as she looked at the sorry

figures dotting the mountain range.

"Just what was that black stone pillar? It was so horrifying!" Guo Xiong asked, dumbstruck. The space created by the White Dragon Sovereign had been extremely stable. However, it'd been so easily destroyed by the black stone pillar.

Only experts like the White Dragon Sovereign, or stronger, could accomplish something like that, right?

Mu Chen was deep in thought. He'd seen something like that before. He understood that the black demonic pillar was the supreme treasure that the White Dragon Sovereign had stolen from the Demonic Dragon Place. However, that item was way too demonic. Even Mu Chen was wary of touching it.

"We need to leave while Bai Xuan hasn't noticed us!" Mu Chen declared.

That Bai Xuan was indeed formidable. It'd be best if they could avoid him. Otherwise, a battle to the death would be unavoidable.

Su Xuan and the rest nodded as they turned around and prepared to leave.

However, that instant they did so, Mu Chen saw a new crack appear before them and a torrent of ominous energy surged out. Before he could even react, a bloody light burst from the rift and hit Mu Chen dead between his widened eyes.

Mu Chen's body stiffened. He could sense an extremely frightening ominous aura spread throughout his body, originating from the black demonic pillar.

Chapter 257: Primordial Ominous Artifact

Boom!

A horrifyingly baleful aura burst from Mu Chen's body. His eyes instantly turned bloodshot as an overwhelming bloodlust surged from the depths of his heart and tried to overtake his rational mind.

However, Mu Chen's will stayed steady and firm. He could still cling to consciousness, even in such a situation. He immediately circulated the Great Pagoda Art, using his Spiritual Energy to keep the invading baleful aura at bay. He knew that if his mind gave in to the baleful aura, then he'd become nothing more than a murderous puppet.

Damn it!

His heart roared angrily as he desperately tried to resist the baleful aura's invasion.

Su Xuan and the others tried to step in when they noticed Mu Chen's predicament. However, they stopped in shock when they saw his body begin to shake uncontrollably and his eyes turn scarlet-red.

"Mu Chen, what's going on?" Su Ling'er anxiously cried.

"What a heavy baleful aura!" Su Xuan's charming face changed as she continued, "Could this aura have invaded him while he was in the Spirit Treasury?"

"What should we do now?" Guo Xiong urgently asked. This baleful aura was simply too terrifying – even the White Dragon Sovereign's personally crafted dimension couldn't contain it. And Mu Chen had been infected. Didn't this spell disaster for him?

"We should get out of here first." Su Xuan said through her teeth. Of all times for something to happen, something just had go wrong now. And that something had happened to Mu Chen. Their fighting strength would be down, and the conditions of their present location were extremely discouraging. After all, Mu Chen had managed to steal the white spiritual pearl. If they stayed here, then they'd definitely attract more unwanted

attention.

"Yes!"

Li Qing and the other three quickly nodded, then hauled Mu Chen with them as they burst out of the White Dragon Hillock at lightning speed.

Far away on a mountain peak, Bai Xuan materialised. His eyes were dark as he looked in the direction that Mu Chen's party had disappeared to.

Underneath the surface, Bai Xuan was furious. If that peculiar black demonic pillar had been his objective, then he'd failed his mission. And now that the Spirit Treasury had been shattered, any traces of the black demonic pillar had been lost with it. He didn't even know how to start searching.

Given the circumstances, Bai Xuan had failed his mission. If he returned empty-handed, then he'd be severely punished. He had to make up for this failure, somehow. Maybe, if he killed Mu Chen and his party, and stole the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl, then he might be able to redeem himself slightly.

At the very least, they'd spare his life. Otherwise, he might find his head separated from his shoulders, even if his father was an Elder of the Demonic Dragon Palace.

"Trying to leave? What a pipe dream!"

He turned into a streak of rainbow light and chased after them.

Inside Mu Chen's body, the red baleful aura was taking down his defenses, one after another. It charged onwards, devastating anything Mu Chen could throw at it as it invaded his body even further and evaded his will.

Liiiiii!

But just as Mu Chen was about to collapse from the aura's rampage, a clear screech tore through his body. The young man instantly felt relieved upon hearing the sound – the Nine Netherbird was finally moving.

Boom!

Black flames swept from Mu Chen's aura sea and surged like tidal waves. They clashed with the scarlet aura and started devouring each other like mad animals.

The fear of being possessed finally lifted a little.

But before Mu Chen could sigh in relief, the Nine Netherbird spoke in a grave voice. "Be careful. This demonic pillar isn't as simple as you think it is. In my current state, even I cannot withstand it."

"What?!" Mu Chen's heart received a jolt. Even the Nine Netherbird couldn't defeat that strange demonic pillar? Just what was that thing?!

"If I've guessed correctly, this demonic pillar is an extremely powerful Primordial Ominous Artifact. Even a Sovereign expert wouldn't be able to suppress it!" the Nine Netherbird thought to him. There was an unconcealable fear in its voice.

"A Primordial Ominous Artifact?"

Mu Chen had no reaction to the phrase – it was clearly the first time he'd ever heard of it. Not that it mattered. His situation still wasn't any better.

"Then what do we do?" Mu Chen asked with a bitter smile. If the Nine Netherbird couldn't even defeat this Primordial Ominous Artifact, then wouldn't he end up losing control of his body to it?

The Nine Netherbird made a long pause. "Perhaps you can lure this Primordial Ominous Artifact into your aura sea."

"What?" Mu Chen was startled. That was the entire reason he'd been fighting it so desperately. And now the Nine Netherbird actually wanted him to let it into his aura sea? Once this pillar took over that place, Mu Chen would be resigned to eternal damnation.

"If I was at full strength, I might've been able to fight it," the Nine Netherbird continued. "Besides, isn't there something else inside your body, aside from myself?"

Mu Chen was confused for a moment before he realised what the Nine

Netherbird was talking about. “Are you talking about that mysterious black paper?”

“Yes.”

“What is that black paper?” Mu Chen bitterly smiled. Why did so many unknown things have a tendency of piling up inside of him? He still didn’t know how to use that mysterious piece of black paper.

“That black paper contains ancient ripples of energy. It seems to be the Primordial God Scripture, though an incomplete copy,” the Nine Netherbird explained.

“What’s the Primordial God Scripture?” Mu Chen was blankly asked.

“It’s something similar to a Deity Tier Spiritual Art, except far more powerful. Ancient records describe its divine abilities as heaven-defying. Whenever a Primordial God Scripture appeared, forget ordinary Sovereigns, even Earth and Heavenly Sovereigns would flock to it. The Primordial God Scripture could help them take an even bigger step in their path of cultivation.”

Mu Chen was stunned. So even Sovereign experts were attracted? He never imagined that this mysterious piece of black paper would have such a rich history. Pity that it was incomplete.

“Remember the mandala flower in your aura sea? That’s the Divine Seal Array. If you lure the Primordial Ominous Artifact into your aura sea, you can use that flower to suppress it.”

Mu Chen turned his thoughts towards his aura sea, towards the dark purple mandala flower quietly floating above a sheet of black. He couldn’t feel any shocking ripples being given off from it.

But Mu Chen wasn’t fooled; he’d already experienced how powerful the mandala flower could be. Back when the Nine Netherbird tried to take over his body, it’d been suppressed and sealed by this very same flower.

“Then let’s give it a try.”

Mu Chen wasn’t an indecisive kind of person. The Primordial Ominous

Artifact was so strong that even the Nine Netherbird couldn't contend against it, so he had no choice but to rely on his hidden trump card. True, there were some risks involved, but it was still better than idly sitting by and waiting for death to come.

"Huuuuu."

Now that Mu Chen had decided on his course of action, he cut off all thoughts of hesitation. He turned his mind and all of his Spiritual Energy – including the efforts he'd been spending to keep the baleful aura at bay – back into his aura sea. The Nine Netherbird's majestic black flames also rapidly receded.

Boom!

The moment he and his bird backed off, the baleful aura frantically invaded. The black demonic pillar buzzed as it hovered at the heart of the baleful aura. Then, as Mu Chen nervously watched, it turned into a streak of black light and charged into his aura sea, leaving a gust of baleful wind in its wake.

Shhhhuuuu!

The wind was blowing out in the real world. Su Xuan and the others were moving as fast as they could while Guo Xiong and Li Qing carried the seemingly-unconscious Mu Chen. His entire body was flushed red and his muscles were tightly wound.

"Hurry! We can brainstorm ways to expel the baleful aura from him, after we leave the White Dragon Hillocks," Su Xuan urged as she kept looking over her shoulder. She couldn't see anyone chasing after them, but she still felt uneasy for some reason.

Did Bai Xuan really let them off, just like that?

A thought flashed through her mind and her face drastically changed. "Careful!"

Boom!

A scarlet lightning burst from the top of a mountain in front, and shot

towards Su Ling'er.

Su Xuan raised her jade hands and an azure wall of water surged from the Dense Water Spiritual Pearl.

Bang!

The scarlet blow smashed into the wave and dispersed powerful ripples of Spiritual Energy and water. Steam rose from the energy of the impact.

The party drew to a halt as they turned towards the mountain with ugly expressions on their faces. A fiendish, god-like figure stood upon that peak, holding a scarlet spear, and staring down at them with annoyance.

"It's Bai Xuan!" Guo Xiong cried. So he'd chased after them. As expected.

"I said it already. None of you brats are escaping today." Bai Xuan announced as he looked down on Su Xuan's party. Their heartbeats sped up as they saw the raw bloodlust in his eyes.

"Big Sister, what do we do now?" Su Ling'er anxiously asked. Bai Xuan was too powerful for them to handle. On top of that, one of their main fighters was in a coma. They were completely at a disadvantage.

Li Qing's beautiful eyes coldly glared back at Bai Xuan. "Ling'er, you take Mu Chen to a safe location. Guo Xiong and I will aid your sister."

There was no way Su Xuan could win against Bai Xuan. But Li Qing and Guo Xiong might be able to take some of the pressure off her shoulders.

Su Ling'er's charming face was filled with anxiety. She knew that they couldn't change their situation, even if the three of them worked together.

Su Xuan sighed in a low voice. "We'll do our best to delay Bai Xuan. If you can, you should take Mu Chen with you and escape ahead of us."

"Big Sister!" Su Ling'er was startled.

"Stop. We don't have any other options." Su Xuan's sweet-tempered expression turned cold. It was one expression she almost never made.

Su Ling'er bit her rosy lips and nodded, even though her eyes were brimming with tears. Finally, she held onto Mu Chen and retreated,

though she briefly landed on a faraway mountain and nervously looked back at the confrontation.

Bai Xuan simply watched her go. Then, he raised his blood-red spear and stomped a foot. The entire mountain shook.

At last, he spoke in a voice that seemed to contain all the bloodlust between heaven and earth. “Prepare your last words. Then, prepare to die!”

Chapter 258: Suppressed

Su Xuan, Guo Xiong, and Li Qing stood in the mountain forest. A majestic Spiritual Energy swept over them like a hurricane. Even the sea of trees stirred and bent under its pressure.

Su Xuan was the most powerful among them; she was already a Heavenly Transform Stage Middle Phase. She also owned the High Rank Spiritual Artifact Dense Water Spiritual Pearl, so her fighting strength was far greater than ordinary. Li Qing was useful if she borrowed the power of the Draconic Spirit Bracelets. That meant that Guo Xiong was the weakest among them; however, his cultivation technique focused on defense, so he made an extremely tough shield. If the three of them put their strengths together, they could be a force to be reckoned with.

But even then, the three of them had no confidence that they could defeat Bai Xuan. But given their circumstances, they couldn't resign to their fates, either. They had to put up a fight, even if they knew that they were going to die.

"A bunch of ignorant brats."

Bai Xuan's eyes were cold as he appraised the three of them. Then, flashed a cold smile as he gripped his scarlet spear. His eyes turned sharp and red as he stepped forward and a frightening wave of Spiritual Energy erupted like a volcano.

The frightening Spiritual Energy pressure washed over them.

"Go!"

Su Xuan's charming eyes focused as she shouted. She was the first to burst forward with a jade hand in the air. The glowing Dense Water Spiritual Pearl shot forward and raised a mountainous azure wave that swept towards Bai Xuan.

"Roar!"

Li Qing circulated her energy through one of the Draconic Spirit Bracelets, which swiftly turned into a huge scarlet flood dragon. It roared

with a frightening Spiritual Energy and charged towards Bai Xuan.

Guo Xiong also snarled and a dark yellow Spiritual Energy swept out. He tightened his fingers and a similar-coloured shield appeared, engraved with heavy mountains, and giving off an aura of infinite weight and steadiness.

“Impudence!”

Bai Xuan’s cold smile only grew broader as he watched them launch their terrifying offensive towards him. His form burst forward and the scarlet spear trembled as a majestic Spiritual Energy surged like rivers of blood to meet their attacks.

Bang!

A frightening gale of Spiritual Energy whipped up and wrecked havoc on the forest below.

Everything exploded into battle.

...

Boom!

Like a supreme ominous beast from ancient times, the black demonic pillar tore into Mu Chen’s aura sea with its baleful aura.

The moment the demonic pillar crashed into Mu Chen’s aura sea, he was instantly overtaken by an intense sense of pain. It felt like his aura sea was going to shatter.

The baleful aura flowed into him like bloody rivers. The black demonic pillar buzzed, as if it was celebrating the fact that it’d conquered him.

Mu Chen’s spirit stood up from its place on the Spiritual Energy wheel. His small face was grave as he watched the baleful aura. Behind him on the mandala, the Nine Netherbird also stood up, flapped its flame-clad wings, and hovered. Together, they cautiously watched the black demonic pillar.

“You activate the mandala flower. I’ll keep it busy,” said the Nine Netherbird.

“Alright.”

Mu Chen nodded and his spirit moved towards the top of the mandala flower and sat down. At his current stage, he couldn’t control the mandala flower growing from the black paper; however, it’d been inside of him for years, so he was familiar with it. He could at least slightly activate it.

Liiii!

The Nine Netherbird flapped its wings and cried loudly. A baleful aura and an earth-shattering sea of black flames swept towards the black demonic pillar.

Onom! Onom!

The black demonic pillar sensed the attack and immediately countered. The buzzing rang louder as its bloody aura grew denser and crashed into the black flames like two waves colliding and destroying each other.

Even though the Nine Netherbird wasn’t at full strength, it seemed that the black demonic pillar wasn’t either. The two fell into a deadlock when neither managed to gain the upperhand.

However, that still wasn’t good news to Mu Chen. The baleful aura was simply too oppressive — it would damage his body if it stayed here for too long. He had to settle this as soon as possible.

Mu Chen’s spirit quietly sat on the mandala flower. Even though he understood the urgency of the situation in front of him, he wasn’t panicking. He knew that panicking wouldn’t help him solve his problems.

His mind gradually quieted down as he blocked off all external senses and immersed his state of mind into the mandala flower he sat on.

As Mu Chen’s mind sank into the mandala flower, his tightened facial muscles gradually loosened, and a look of peace took its place. An indescribable sense of vigor and boundless profound intent rippled through his heart.

The mandala beneath him began emitting a faint, dark purple glow, and its beautiful petals slowly blossomed open. However, there was also a

frightening power within its beauty.

The violet light rippled and collected into a sphere of light around the mandala flower. Mu Chen had the vague sensation of an ancient Sanskrit chant echoing and buzzing through his aura sea.

When the sound reached the baleful bloody aura, a ripple spread over its savage surface and pacified it.

The black demonic pillar within the bloody sea flickered with scarlet runes. The ancient Sanskrit resounding across Mu Chen's aura sea made it feel dangerously uneasy.

However, the feeling only provoked its anger and it exploded with an undeniable rage, breaking through the Nine Netherbird's sea of black flames.

"Let it through."

Just when the Nine Netherbird was preparing to re-engage, it was startled by the voice from behind. The creature turned to face Mu Chen, who was still sitting on his flower. His eyes were already open, but they were a strange, dark violet hue.

The moment Mu Chen's spirit leapt from the mandala flower, the flower exploded with beams of dark purple light. The rays intertwined with each other and formed a net of purple light.

Shhhhhuu!

The net woven of light sailed through the air and landed perfectly on the black demonic pillar. The moment the pillar was captured by the net, its bloody baleful aura dispersed.

Onom! Onom!

Bloody runes appeared on the surface of the black demonic pillar as it shifted into various shapes in an attempt to escape the net. Eventually, it realised that there was something strange with the light net.

This purple light net wasn't as simple as it seemed. It appeared as only beams of light, but upon closer inspection, those lines were actually rivers

of mystical runes. Those runes were the reason why the black demonic pillar couldn't break free.

The violet mandala slowly circulated and tugged on the black demonic pillar, just like a venus flytrap that'd caught its prey.

Boom! Boom!

The pillar's bloody sea surged as it desperately struggled. Slowly, the ancient baleful aura even managed to stop the mandala's pull.

The mandala flower was a mysterious existence, but the black demonic pillar was just as strong.

"Nine Netherbird, attack it!" Mu Chen urged when he saw the pillar's crazed struggle.

The Nine Netherbird nodded and snapped its wings. Black flames gathered and turned into a pair of formless black wings that burned with a dark light; however, there were no flames blazing from its surface. Even so, Mu Chen could sense the frightening energy gathered there.

"Shhhhhhuuuu!"

The black wings carried their owner forward in a streak of light, right into the demonic pillar at lightning speed. The pillar shook at the force of the impact and was sent flying. The mandala flower wasted no opportunity to pull it forward.

The moment the black demonic pillar was pulled into the mandala flower, those beautiful petals rose and closed the flower into a tight bud. Glowing runes floated over the petals and turned into violet shackles, binding the black demonic pillar.

Clash!

The black demonic pillar continued to struggle and the chains clinked and clanged in response. However, the number of shackles only increased, until the black demonic pillar was thoroughly sealed.

Mu Chen and the Nine Netherbird suddenly felt as if a heavy weight had been lifted off their shoulders.

Mu Chen's spirit carefully approached the mandala flower. The black demonic pillar still towered, even though it was now tangled in countless violet shackles and its powerful energy had been suppressed.

"I've finally dealt with the big guy."

Mu Chen smiled as he looked over the tattered black pillar. His eyes suddenly focused on something and said in astonishment, "There seems to be name inscribed on it..."

He studied the ancient characters and knitted his brows. Words this old were quite hard to recognize.

"Great...Meru.....Demonic Pillar?"

Mu Chen muttered, "Is 'Great Meru Demonic Pillar' the name of this item?"

He turned back to the Nine Netherbird. "You should know something about it, right? Since you've lived for so long." If they were to speak of knowledge and experience, the Nine Netherbird clearly possessed more than him.

The Nine Netherbird stared at him for a moment, then glared and flapped its wings. "Among the Nine Netherbirds, I've only just reached adulthood!"

Mu Chen was startled, "You're already so powerful, even though you've just reached adulthood?"

The Nine Netherbird proudly raised its slender and graceful neck. "Did you think that absolute geniuses only existed among your human race?"

Mu Chen rubbed his nose.

The Nine Netherbird lazily peered down at Mu Chen, "Anyways, you'd better think about how to deal with the aftermath of what just happened. Even though the black demonic pillar has been sealed, it has still left a large amount of baleful aura inside your body. If you don't get rid of it soon, your body will be corroded."

Mu Chen smiled and narrowed his eyes, as an eager smile rose at the

corner of his mouth. He wasn't surprised. Of course he already knew that.

"This baleful aura is also a form of energy... I got it. I'll need to use them next."

Chapter 259: Won't Die

Boom!

A violent Spiritual Energy swept over the forest like a storm, leveling the trees with its sheer force.

Claaaang!

A bloody Spiritual Energy violently tore at the sky. Whenever one of his opponents – the azure wave or the scarlet dragons – charged at it, they were thrown back. Neither of them could match its might.

Su Xuan and Li Qing were pale – especially Li Qing, whose heavy chest was heaving. Even though she owned the High Rank Spiritual Artifact – Draconic Spirit Bracelets, she was still only at the Quasi-Heavenly Transformation Stage. There was simply too much of a distance between herself and Bai Xuan. If Su Xuan hadn't been pressuring him, she probably would've lost by now.

Even so, the situation wasn't encouraging.

"How long can you guys hold on?"

The bloody spear in Bai Xuan's hand trembled and a razor-sharp bloodlust swept around him. He coldly smiled at the two young women who were backing off.

Su Xuan ground her teeth as she continued to circulate the Dense Water Spiritual Pearl to resist Bai Xuan's incoming attacks.

"I'm done playing around. I'm not wasting any more time on you!" Bai Xuan announced as his eyes turned cold. The longer this dragged on, the thinner his patience wore. Even though he still controlled the situation, he still had to deal with them quickly to avoid unnecessary trouble.

Boom!

The moment his words landed, he tightened his grip on his bloody spear and his eyes turned cold. A boundless Spiritual Energy swept out, and the sky seemed to darken in response.

Lines of blood-red light illuminated the sky behind him, surged, and took the shape of a massive bloody python. Its pupils were scarlet-red and filled with deep animosity.

“Soul of the Blood Python!”

Bai Xuan’s expression was cold. Then, the spear in his hands exploded forward in a dazzling scarlet light. The Blood Python struck out from behind him, so swiftly that it whipped up a wind as strong as roaring thunder. The serpent swung its tail, coiled around the spear, and soared towards Su Xuan and her allies in a sea of blood-red light.

The sheer oppressiveness shocked them.

“Mountain of Dense Water!”

Su Xuan’s expression turned exceptionally grave as she moved the Spiritual Energy within her body and growled. A massive azure wave rose into the air like a solid mountain of blue water, gathering and twisting, until even the space around it seemed to bow before its frightening weight.

“Draconic Spirit Bracelet, Dragon-Flood Dragon Massacre!”

Li Qing also circulated her Spiritual Energy through the Draconic Spirit Bracelets as much as she could. Two spiritual loops erupted with whistles of spiritual light as the scarlet dragon and flood-dragon intertwined in a red spiral. The pressure of this display was impressive, to say the least.

Boom!

The frightening attacks clashed again and again. Surges of Spiritual Energy rippled out and created a berserk hurricane that ravaged everything in this land. The wind howled.

“You guys want to defeat me, just by yourselves?” Bai Xuan questioned as he watched their attacks meet with a cold smile in his eyes. He clenched his fist and the massive python darted away, emanating a baleful aura.

Boom!

The Blood Python crashed into the azure mountain of water. The frightening impact forced the mountain of water to give in, until finally, the entire wave exploded.

The azure water mountain had been dissipated and the Blood Python hadn't been injured. It charged forward with its dense, baleful aura, and met the scarlet dragons again.

Dong!

An earth-shattering impact rang out, and the two dragons mournfully cried. The Spirit Bracelets dimmed and flew backwards, landing in Li Qing's hand.

Pfffft.

Li Qing and Su Xuan both turned pale and coughed up mouthfuls of fresh blood. Their auras dimmed as the attack sent them flying backwards. It was clear that they'd suffered heavy injuries.

The Blood Python continued its charge towards them, with whatever strength it had left.

"Mountain Shield!"

Guo Xiong shouted as he took a step forward. His yellow shield exploded with a blinding light and a mountain of runes materialised on its surface, giving it a deep sense of profound intent and stability.

Dong!

The Blood Python hit the light shield with a loud noise, and Guo Xiong was nearly jolted off his feet. He took a few steps back as fresh blood flowed between the fingers of his shield hand.

But Guo Xiong was a strong-willed warrior. Even if he bled in rivers, he'd still hold on to his shield of light. Like Su Xuan and Li Qing, he was also sent flying by several metres before he managed to catch himself with a roar of frustration. Only now did the Blood Python run out of Spiritual Energy and disperse.

Guo Xiong heaved for air as he caught his footing. His arm was still

trembling as he turned his sweat-filled face towards the pale-faced Su Xuan and Li Qing and asked through his teeth, “Are you alright?”

Su Xuan and Li Qing bitterly smiled. Bai Xuan was way too powerful. There was no way they could defeat him, even if they worked together.

Guo Xiong ground his teeth as he solemnly declared, “You two go ahead. I’ll keep him.”

“You can’t do that alone.”

Su Xuan clenched her fists, ground her teeth, then suddenly turned around to face the mountain peak that Su Ling’er perched on. She was still watching them with a face full of anxiety. Su Xuan growled, “Take Mu Chen with you and leave!”

“Big Sister!”

Su Ling’er was so anxious and upset that her eyes had turned bloodshot. She stomped her feet in frustration and the unwillingness to abandon them and escape.

“Don’t let us die in vain!” Su Xuan sternly retorted.

This was the first time Su Ling’er had seen such a stern expression on her sister’s face. Tears flowed down her face as she ground her teeth and picked Mu Chen off the ground, preparing to escape.

“Haha, what a righteousness act to abandon yourself and save others. But it’s pointless.” Bai Xuan coldly stated as he watched them. “Do you really think you can block my way?”

Guo Xiong coldly smiled back. “You’re welcome to try!”

Bai Xuan’s eyes turned cold. Without warning, he moved like a ghost and appeared right in front of Guo Xiong. The scarlet spear thrust forward, overflowing with a baleful aura.

Guo Xiong was caught off guard; however, his powerful light shield managed to form again, just in time.

Clang!

Sparks flickered and Guo Xiong was overwhelmed with shock as he watched a series of cracks rapidly crawl over the surface of his shield.

“Break!” Bai Xuan’s arm trembled and the light shield exploded. The spear whipped towards Guo Xiong’s chest like a dragon flying at lightning speed.

Shhhhhhuu!

An azure wave rose between them and caught the spear, causing it to veer off course just enough so that the spear tip pierced through Guo Xiong’s shoulder.

Guo Xiong howled in pain as he drew back. Blood gushed from the hole in his shoulder – the wound had rendered his entire arm useless.

Su Xuan and Li Qing immediately took defensive positions in front of Guo Xiong. They glared at Bai Xuan, who looked back at them with the mocking expression of a cat toying with a mouse.

“Little miss, if you try to run, your Big Sister and your friends might die by my hands.” Bai Xuan threatened as he smiled at Su Ling’er. She was still holding onto Mu Chen and was prepared to escape.

She paused her steps as she bit her rosy lips so hard that a thin line of blood trickled down. Her lovely face was filled with glistening tears and desperation. But finally, she made her decision. She wiped those tears from her face and raced away with Mu Chen in tow. She knew that staying any longer would only make all their sacrifices be in vain.

Bai Xuan smiled at that. There was a vicious glint in his eyes as the bloody spear trembled, then burst towards Su Xuan’s party in a powerful attack.

Su Xuan’s party was suddenly surrounded by the dangers of Bai Xuan’s sudden outburst. That blood-red spear could pierce through any one of them.

“Haha! Your Big Sister won’t be able to hold on for much longer.”

Bai Xuan ferociously rained attacks on them, all the while taunting the

small trembling figures with a cold, distant, and demonic voice.

Su Ling'er covered her rosy mouth with a small hand, then clumsily wiped away her tears. Finally, she recovered enough of her composure to declare, "Bai Xuan, I definitely won't let you go!"

Bai Xuan coldly smiled. "Really? Then let's wait until I kill your sister and your friends. Then, I'll get rid of you." He turned to the three, whose offense was steadily growing weaker. Suddenly, his eyes took on a chilly expression and he launched the bloody spear with a powerful energy, heavily smashing it into all three of them.

Pfffft!

The three of them coughed up mouthfuls of blood as their bodies flew backwards. Their faces were as white as paper.

"Take another step, and your Big Sister is really going to die!" Bai Xuan threatened with a smile as he moved to stand right over Su Xuan. The bloody spear in his hand stabbed towards her slender snow-white neck with enough force that a gale whipped up around them.

Without turning around, Su Ling'er imagined the scene that was occurring behind her back. She paused and her shoulders trembled. More blood spread over her rosy lips.

But just as Bai Xuan expected Su Ling'er to turn around and attack him, she spoke in a low, hoarse voice. "Bai Xuan, I will definitely find you. And when I do, I will definitely kill you."

Then, the whites of her eyes flushed red and she flashed away.

Bang!

But before she could get too far, a firm arm suddenly stopped her. Su Ling'er was startled by the touch and looked down to see Mu Chen slowly raise his head from her arms.

His face was flushed and his pitch-black pupils were now scarlet-red. Veins stood out from under his skin, and fresh blood oozed from his skin. All this, coupled with the indescribably baleful aura in his eyes, gave him a

horrifying appearance.

Mu Chen was like a bloodthirsty Asura who'd just climbed out from Purgatory.

Others felt stabs fear from the mere sight of him.

"Mu Chen...you..."

Su Ling'er was also frightened by Mu Chen's appearance. She found herself overwhelmed by her emotions and broke down sobbing. "I was supposed to make sure that nothing happened to you. Otherwise, Big Sister and the others would've died in vain. Hurry up and leave me."

A boundless baleful aura rippled through Mu Chen, and he slowly raised a bloody, veined hand to wipe the tears from the young woman's cheek.

His face – that made others cower in fear – brightened with a smile that Su Ling'er was so familiar with.

A soft voice soothed her emotions. "Don't worry. I promise that not a single one of them will die."

Chapter 260: Power of the Ominous

Su Ling'er stood on the mountain peak, staring wide-eyed at Mu Chen's terrifying appearance. She didn't know why Mu Chen had assumed this form, so she wiped her tears and asked, "What are you planning to do?"

She wondered what he was planning. Did it matter? The end had been foretold – Bai Xuan was simply too powerful. Even her big sister wouldn't be able to defeat him. So how could Mu Chen, who was only at the Heavenly Fusion Stage, possibly do anything?

"Wait for the chance to escape with your big sister and the others. Run far and don't come back for me. Understand?" Mu Chen demanded, even as the strength in his eyes weakened as his voice grew hoarser. It seemed as if there was an endless baleful aura surging within his voice, and made it sound ice-cold to others.

Su Ling'er was so frightened that she took two steps back. Mu Chen seemed as though he was trying to suppress something. The bloody marks covering his body constantly flickered, like a murderous Asura that'd climbed out from Purgatory.

She speechlessly stared at Mu Chen, then nodded.

Mu Chen accepted her acknowledgement, then turned away without another word. Then, he moved like a streak of lightning towards the horizon. His hoarse voice echoed over the land. "Bai Xuan. The item you seek is in my possession. But as to whether or not you can take it back... that depends on your ability."

Bai Xuan coldly smiled as he watched Mu Chen with eyes like flying blades. "Haha! So you came back, in the end."

"Mu Chen, you...!"

Su Xuan and the others grew even more distressed – they'd desperately managed to delay Bai Xuan in order to buy time for Su Ling'er. But now, Mu Chen had suddenly come charging back?

However, Mu Chen didn't bother with what was going through their

heads. The ripples in his scarlet eyes were growing weaker by the moment; eventually, they disappeared entirely.

He tightly clenched his fist, then slowly loosened it.

If they had the power to see into his body, they'd find the baleful energy raging through his meridians with frightening power. But every time it pulsed through him, his meridians moved a little in response. An indescribably baleful aura filled him.

However, it was this pain that allowed Mu Chen to keep a clear mind, even as the baleful energy invaded him.

"What a madman."

The Nine Netherbird couldn't help shaking its head as it looked upon the carnage in Mu Chen's aura sea. The baleful energy was an extremely oppressive force and excelled at corroding the mind; once Mu Chen's mind fell under the the baleful aura, he'd turn into a murderous puppet, forever unable to wake up.

The baleful energy was powerful, but also risky to engage with. A single misstep and Mu Chen would be giving himself to it. What a daring individual!

Mu Chen quietly stood in the sky. The instant the ripples in his eyes disappeared, his aura nearly faded away as well.

The blood-red marks stuck to Mu Chen's skin and wriggled like worms. It was an uncomfortable sight, to say the least.

"We're already this far, and yet you're still trying to deceive me? What a reckless fool!"

Bai Xuan coldly smiled when he saw the strange look in Mu Chen's eyes. He didn't feel threatened by Mu Chen's current form; after all, Bai Xuan was a Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase. Plus, Bai Xuan had a High Rank Spiritual Artifact and his combat abilities were top notch, even among his peers. Wouldn't it be easy for him to deal with a single Heavenly Fusion Stage brat?

“Die!”

Bai Xuan burst forward and the bloody spear in his hand rippled with Spiritual Energy as it tore through the air towards Mu Chen.

“Mu Chen, watch out!” his allies cried.

Mu Chen didn’t seem the register their warning. The moment before the bloody spear pierced his chest, he reached out a hand and grasped its shaft.

Creak! Creak!

The infinitely sharp spear emitted an ear-piercing screech as fresh blood flowed from Mu Chen’s hand, down the tip of the spear. The bloody marks on Mu Chen’s skin darkened.

Bai Xuan’s expression slightly changed. He was starting to feel uneasy.

This Mu Chen was different from the one he’d met back inside the treasury.

Mu Chen gripped the spear tip as he raised his head to show his bloodshot, scarlet-red eyes. It was as if his eyes were two seas of blood, rolling and overflowing with a baleful aura.

Bloody marks appeared on his face and gave him the image of a bloodthirsty Asura.

“Boom!”

The baleful aura surged out of Mu Chen’s body like a bloody sea. The sky turned dark red.

Thin bloody lines were slowly trickling down Mu Chen’s skin, from places where his veins had burst through. Even though Mu Chen himself was a powerful force, the baleful energy was still too powerful and oppressive for his body to handle.

“This...”

Bai Xuan, Su Xuan, and the others all watched in astonishment at the familiar scene before them.

They trembled as they became overwhelmed with shock. Wasn't this exactly what'd happened to the demonic black pillar, when it first broke its seal?

But now, the baleful energy was far more horrifying than it'd been before.

But why was this happening to Mu Chen?

Su Ling'er remembered Mu Chen's demand and quickly made her retreat, even as she towed the other three along.

Mu Chen made sure that they'd escaped a good distance before he flashed a smile filled with bloody marks. But now, it was an extremely savage sight. The animosity on the wind even affected Bai Xuan's aura.

"What a façade!"

Bai Xuan glared as he snarled. His palm trembled as he pulled back on the blood-red spear and tore it from Mu Chen's hands with a red shower of blood. He stepped forward, then swept the spear back towards Mu Chen, this time with enough force that it left dizzying afterimages.

Boom!

A blood-red baleful aura surged from Mu Chen's body, like a shell of red armour. He allowed Bai Xuan's sharp spear to reach him.

Shhhhiiiiiii!

The moment the powerful spear met the shell of baleful aura, it was corroded away. However, the spear's gale still ripped open new wounds on Mu Chen's body.

But those new wounds weren't enough to deter Mu Chen. On the contrary, his scarlet eyes deepened in colour and a deep roar built up in his throat. He released it as his torrential baleful energy took the form of a second bloody spear.

Shhhhuuuuu!

Mu Chen trembled from the surges in his body and his clash with Bai Xuan. Powerful shockwaves rippled from the impacts, and the nearby

mountain peaks crumbled.

On one faraway mountain peak, Su Xuan and the others stood and watched the confrontation with fear and worry in their eyes. They realised that right now, Mu Chen was capable of standing his own against Bai Xuan!

Guo Xiong couldn't help his astonished murmur. "How could he have grown so much?"

Something flickered in Su Xuan's charming eyes. "That's the same power as the black demonic pillar back in the Spirit Treasury. My guess is that Mu Chen has been taken by its baleful aura."

When Su Ling'er heard that was said, she instantly grew anxious. "Then Mu Chen...?"

"I think he's trying to use the battle to expel the baleful aura inside his body. But if that's true, then he's in an extremely dangerous position, right now. That baleful aura is extremely oppressive; if Mu Chen doesn't handle it properly, he could be devoured. The baleful aura would take over his senses and he'd turn into a massacring puppet."

Su Xuan sighed as she stared at the faraway figure shrouded in red. "The best we can do right now is trust in Mu Chen."

Clang!

The two blood-red spears clashed and the force rippled out. Even the space around them began to twist.

Bai Xuan's face turned steel-grey and astonishment filled his eyes. He refused to believe that Mu Chen had actually kept up with him for several exchanges, and still didn't show any signs of slowing.

It was as if Mu Chen's strength had caught up to his.

Bai Xuan was in disbelief. But he wasn't your average expert – he slowly began piecing together the clues and filling in the rest with calculation.

"Is he borrowing the baleful energy that's invading his body?"

Something flickered in Bai Xuan's eyes as he stared at Mu Chen's blood-

marked face. There wasn't the slightest hint of emotion in Mu Chen's eyes. Just a pure bloodlust. Bai Xuan flashed a savage smile. "How are you any different from a bloodthirsty beast?"

It was clear to him that Mu Chen had borrowed the power of the baleful energy; but in exchange, he'd lost consciousness and had turned into the massacring puppet.

"Since you're in such deep pain, let me free you."

Bai Xuan abruptly shot up, stirring up waves of Spiritual Energy. He roared and a boundless Spiritual Energy rose from behind him, like a colossal blood-red beast. A dense animosity soared into the heavens.

"Demonic Blood Beast, Blood Smelting Sea!"

Bai Xuan shouted as his scarlet beast suddenly exploded. It turned into waves of blood that filled everything between heaven and earth.

Onom!

The bloody sea carried an earth-shattering power as it swept down from the heavens and ground every mountain in its path into dust.

"Die!" Bai Xuan savagely smiled. Mu Chen slowly raised his head as a mocking smile spread across his strangely marked face. The scarlet pupils, that'd been filled with animosity, rippled.

"Roar!"

An endless sea of baleful aura surged from Mu Chen's body, forming its own version of a bloody, starry sky. Within this bloody sky, a massive white tiger took shape. One with scarlet-red eyes.

This Divine Seal of the White Tiger, which contained a boundless killing intent, slowly merged with the baleful aura, becoming an even more fearsome force. Even heaven and earth trembled before it.

Mu Chen hovered as the animosity filled the sky around him. As he floated before the huge white tiger, the mocking smile on his blood-marked face grew even wider.

"It's you who'll die!"

Chapter 261: Bitter Blood Battle

"Roar!"

The white tiger hovered in the starry sky, its scarlet eyes contained a bloodlust that could murder the world. Its terrible animosity and killing intent soared into the clouds. All of the beasts within a hundred miles trembled with fear.

Su Xuan and the others stood on a faraway mountain peak with astonishment plastered all over their faces. It wasn't because they'd never seen Mu Chen execute the Divine Seal of the White Tiger – it was the same one he'd used back at the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, when he'd withstood Li Xuantong's sharp attacks.

But this Divine Seal of the White Tiger, was far from what it'd been before.

The white tiger in the sky looked like a living, breathing animal. Its limitless bloodlust blanketed the entire region.

"Roar!"

The white tiger roared towards the sky and lept forward, treading over the starry sky. Its glowing killing intent overflowed from its body and began twisting the space around it, as it charged towards the bloody sea that was rushing to meet it.

Bang!

The white tiger and bloody sea clashed and created a powerful gale that leveled the forest and crumbled the mountain peaks around them.

Chhhhhiiii. Chhiiiii.

The tiger's stripes glowed with bloodlust. Every time the two forces met, it was as if a river of lava had met an avalanche – freezing and melting in repeated cycles.

Mu Chen's Divine Seal of the White Tiger was renowned for its murderous intents – adding the baleful aura made it even more powerful.

Words could not describe the terrifying power it now contained

"How is this possible?!"

Bai Xuan's face twisted when he saw what'd happened. His finishing move was completely ineffective against Mu Chen!

"That damned brat is still conscious?" Bai Xuan snarled through his teeth. Just what kind of monster was he? How could he still maintain his consciousness, with that baleful energy corroding his body?

"Withstand it!"

The bloody spear in his hand trembled in response to his order. A torrent of Spiritual Energy swept out with his bloody sea in a tireless effort to divert Mu Chen's attack.

"Roar!"

The tiger snarled furiously in the face of the obstacle, and its red eyes grew even brighter. Then, without warning, its body began shrinking; however, its murderous stripes stayed as bright as ever.

The glowing stripes charged onward, dispelling Bai Xuan's bloody sea wherever its paws landed. The bloody fight filled the sky, as if the entire space had turned into an Asura's battlefield.

Bang! Bang!

The bloody sea continued to crumble under the assault of the Divine Seal of the White Tiger. The beast was an unstoppable fiend as it charged towards Bai Xuan.

"I refuse to believe that you're not dying today!"

Bai Xuan's eyes reddened as he watched the ferocious Divine Seal of the White Tiger bear down on him. He was a Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase; however, h'd been beaten into such a sorry state by the Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase Mu Chen. How can he bear such shame?

"Octa Desolate Blood Battle Art, Blood Soul War Spear!"

Bai Xuan shouted as he formed several hand seals. Surges of Spiritual Energy gathered around him and turned into a blood-red war spear, roughly a hundred feet long. It was the color of freshly-spilled blood and emitted a savage aura.

It was clearly an offensive Spiritual Art of great power.

Onom!

It pierced through the sky with its dense, desolate aura and clashed with the Divine Seal of the White Tiger!

Bang!

Heaven and earth trembled as the Spiritual Energies exploded. Both Mu Chen and Bai Xuan suffered heavily and flew back, smashing into the peaks of separate mountains. Massive cracks appeared on the cliff walls behind their backs.

"Pfffft."

Bai Xuan coughed up red blood as his eyes became filled with anger and anticipation. He looked towards Mu Chen, who was presently picking himself out of his own crater on a mountain not far away. His body was also covered in blood, making him look like a creature with red skin. His scarlet eyes still glowed with a limitless anger.

However, Mu Chen acted as if he'd suffered no wounds at all; he ignored the intense pain he must have felt, as if he were only a mere tireless doll, made only to fight.

"That bastard!"

Bai Xuan's eyes were dark as his heart let out a roaring wail. Even he couldn't help the tinge of fear in his heart as he faced against this new Mu Chen.

Mu Chen couldn't care less about his state – he simply allowed the blood to flow from his wounds. However, his scarlet eyes were fixed on Bai Xuan as he licked the drop of blood at the corner of the lips and flashed him a savage and bloodthirsty smile.

Shhhhhhu.

His scarlet eyes stared at Bai Xuan. Then, he burst out again.

“I’ll kill you, brat!” Bai Xuan roared as a boundless Spiritual Energy whistled. A vigorous fist of wind heavily smashed head-on into Mu Chen.

Both of them used their fiercest moves as they struggled for another dozen exchanges. Both suffered more injuries. The layer of blood on Mu Chen’s body grew thicker, and more blood rained off as he moved.

Bai Xuan wasn’t in a very good state, either. His clothes were shredded as he, too, became covered in blood. Among his wounds was one finger mark that’d nearly penetrated his chest and reached his heart.

Su Xuan and the others felt their skin crawl as they watched the two blood-dripping men battle. Those two must be insane.

Between the two of them, Mu Chen had been infected by the baleful energy; therefore, his consciousness was faint. Meanwhile, Bai Xuan had been driven into such a state purely by Mu Chen’s fierce and persistent offence.

Because he’s facing Mu Chen’s suicidal-like attacks, if he was a little less ruthless, he would have collapsed long ago.

But even so, there was no way he could endure for much longer.

No matter how ruthlessly Bai Xuan fought back, he was still made of flesh and blood; he could still feel fear. However, the Mu Chen before him didn’t even know of this emotion called fear...

Bang!

Up in the sky, the two man clashed again and coughed up more mouthfuls of blood out and flew in opposite directions. Bai Xuan trembled as he ground his teeth. “Crazy little brat...”

He looked at his own body, which was covered with wounds. The intense pain made him tremble and the ruthlessness that’d been in his eyes was beginning to be replaced with fear.

“I can’t carry on like this. This madman’s conscious has long been

corroded away by the baleful energy. He's doomed already, so I can't risk my life with him!" Something in Bai Xuan's eyes flickered. He'd lost control of current situation a long time ago. How could he have expected that he'd be forced to such a state by Mu Chen?

Bai Xuan ground his teeth as his figure flew out. As he retreated, he called out a piece of black jade and shattered it with a twitch of his fingers.

A black cloud quietly dispersed.

Rustle!

But as Bai Xuan made his retreat, the blood-soaked Mu Chen quickly caught up to him. His attacks were ruthlessly aimed at Bai Xuan's vitals.

Bai Xuan didn't want to risk his life, so he began slowly retreating; but he soon realised that it was an ineffective strategy. Mu Chen was already running amok, right before his eyes.

"Brat, I'll kill you!"

Bai Xuan was enraged.At first, he thought that he was in control of the situation. But, right now, it had turned into an awkward situation that he couldn't retreat, even though he wanted to. The knowledge drove him mad. He picked a good opportunity and stabbed the bloody spear in his hand towards Mu Chen's chest with lightning speed.

But Mu Chen didn't even try to evade the ferocious attack. He shifted slightly and simply allowed the spear to run through his shoulder. Then he moved forward, and closed the gap between himself and Bai Xuan in only an instant.

After Bai Xuan's spear pierced through Mu Chen's shoulder, he directed his line-of-sight towards Mu Chen's face, which was filled with a bloodthirsty and savage look. Bai Xuan's lips shivered, "Madman!"

Mu Chen's way of fighting without any regard for his life had completely shattered Bai Xuan's confidence.

"Shhuuuuu!"

Mu Chen's bent two of his fingers as a bloody light surged. He took the opportunity to attack whileBai Xuan was shocked. The attack carried the baleful energy with it as it stabbed towards the latter's throat at lightning speed.

Bai Xuan's heart turned cold as both of his palms immediately moved to defend his throat.

Mu Chen's scarlet eyes flickered as all the baleful energy within his body was forced into his two fingers. His fingers then turned blood-red, to the point that even bloody crystals started to form at the tips of his fingers.

In that instant, Bai Xuan felt that something wasn't right. However, before he could retreat, Mu Chen's fingers pierced his palms.

An intense pain coursed through him as Mu Chen's fingers, which looked as though they were molded from fresh blood, pierced through his palms. Furthermore, his ferocious might didn't decline in the slightest. After piercing his palms, Mu Chen aimed for Bai Xuan's throat once more.

Shhhhiii!

A fine sound was heard as a bloody light pierced through the back of Bai Xuan's head.

Bai Xuan's body turned stiff as he widened his eyes. His face was filled with disbelief. His lips trembled, and he looked like he wanted to speak, but not a single word came from his mouth.

Mu Chen's fingers penetrated through his throat. He slowly raised his scarlet pupils and the redness in his eyes washed away, like a tide pulling back. His pitch-black pupils and spirit were restored as well.

"Who told you...that my conscious was corroded away? I was only making use of the baleful energy." Mu Chen said with a hoarse voice. His face was covered in blood as he gave Bai Xuan a smear of smile. Meanwhile, Bai Xuan still had blood flowing out of his mouth.

"If you want to kill me, then there'll be a price to pay..."

Mu Chen gently patted Bai Xuan's face and gave it a gentle push. The

latter tottered for a moment, then fell onto a mountain peak.

Bang! Bang!

Both of them landed on the mountain peak. Mu Chen, who'd suffered heavy injuries to begin with, spurted out a mouthful of blood. He looked to the side at Bai Xuan, whose eyes were wide open as fresh blood flowed from the corner of his mouth. The latter was trembling as he stared viciously back at him. A faint and hoarse voice sounded out, little by little.

"You...you guys, not a single one of you will be able to escape!"

Mu Chen looked at Bai Xuan, who slowly took his last breath. His brows frowned. Even on his deathbed, this guy still made others uneasy. Not a single one could escape? What could Bai Xuan in his current state do to them anyways?

Mu Chen shook his head. Although he felt uneasy, he could only lie down on his stomach. He couldn't even move as the intense pain coursed through his body and made him understand that his injuries were extremely serious.

The current him no longer had any fighting ability left.

Shhhhuu! Shhuu!

A gale sounded out as Su Xuan and the other three came towards him at a fast speed. When they landed on the mountain peak, they saw Bai Xuan, who had already taken his last breath, and Mu Chen, who couldn't move. They were shocked, but after a long moment, they exchanged complicated glances.

This guy really managed to kill Bai Xuan...

That was a Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase expert!

"Are you alright?" Su Ling'er immediately moved forward and carefully lifted Mu Chen, who was covered with blood.

"Quick, let's leave this place."

Mu Chen said in a hoarse voice with the last of his energy.

When Su Xuan the rest heard what he said, they were stunned for a brief moment. They didn't question Mu Chen as they lifted him and rapidly moved away.

However, just when they were about to leave, a faint laugh abruptly sounded from the sky, causing their bodies to turn stuff.

"Haha, how formidable. You actually managed to kill Bai Xuan. The Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's reputation is truly justified..."

Su Xuan and the rest immediately raised their heads and saw a black-robed youth standing on top of a pine tree, looking at them with a smile.

That youth's appearance wasn't very outstanding. But at the center of his brows was a black mark of a coiling demonic dragon. As he smiled, the demonic dragon grew savager, little by little.

When Su Xuan and the rest saw the black-robed youth carrying a longsword on his back, their faces couldn't help drastically changing.

"Mo Longzi?!"

When Mu Chen heard that name, his heart trembled.

Mo Longzi, ranked 2 on the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's bounty board.

Chapter 262: Reinforcements

Mo Longzi.

This name was known to them just a few days ago, when Su Xuan mentioned the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's Bounty Board. As for those students that were training themselves in the vast Northern Heavens Continent, this name was as frightening as a fiend.

It's said that this person possessed excellent cultivation talent and was extremely ruthless. He was fully nurtured by the Demonic Dragon Palace. After all these years, nearly every student that has encountered him, when they're training outside, lost their lives. Furthermore, his methods were extremely cruel. Everyone that was killed by him were decapitated and their heads were placed on top of the corpse. On the top of every head, there were three joss sticks that were covered in fresh blood.

Even the higher-ups of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy were furious at the cruelty of this person. They had once sent the Punishment Squad to get rid of him. However, although they were able to heavily wound him, they'd also paid a great price. But the crucial part was that he managed to escape every single time. Whenever he reappeared, he would become even harder to handle.

If someone asked who was the most fearsome person that a Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's student could encounter, it would be Mo Longzi.

The face of Su Xuan and the rest turned pale as they directed their lines-of-sight towards the top of the pine tree, towards that black-robed youth with a longsword behind him. The latter had a light smile on his face, but they could feel the chill that was coming from their bones.

Who could have imagined that they would encounter that unlucky star here?

This was definitely an existence even more fearsome than Bai Xuan.

Su Xuan tightly clenched her teeth as she felt helpless. When they

encountered Bai Xuan, they could still put up a fight. But now that they've encountered Mo Longzi, it'd be difficult for them to have any chance of escaping.

"It seems like this calamity won't be easy to escape." Guo Xiong bitterly smiled as the despair was seen within his eyes.

Mu Chen wiped the fresh blood off the corner of his mouth with great difficulty as he endured the intense pain that coursed throughout his body. He tightly stared at that figure and also felt helpless in his heart. His state was too terrible. If he fought again, he would probably have to pay a huge price.

But, at this point of time, the baleful energy within his body was already exhausted. If he fought again, he could only depend on Nine Netherbird's power.

But if that's the case, then the injuries on his body would worsen.

If he is unable to see any other choice, then he could only take that course of action. Even if the consequences are dire, it's still better then throwing his life away.

"Haha, what's with all your expressions? To kill Bai Xuan, you guys are still pretty formidable. Within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, I believe that none of you are nameless people, right? I wonder, what's your ranking in the Heavenly Ranking?" Mo Longzi said gently with a smile at everyone from far away.

"None of your business!" Guo Xiong's expression turned dark. Towards this executioner, whose hands were drenched with god knows how much blood from the students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, he was naturally disgusted with him.

"What great bravery, I'm impressed." Mo Longzi smiled as he gave Guo Xiong a big thumbs up. Shortly after, he abruptly raised his thumb and thrust it out.

"Careful!"

Su Xuan's face changed as her jade-like hand rose. The Dense Water

Spiritual Pearl burst out with a dazzling light as the azure tidal wave swept out and formed a heavy line of defense.

Shhhhhuuu!

The fine sound of a gale was heard as a black light tore the heavy waves of water apart. Thereafter, it heavily hit onto Guo Xiong's arm and a bloody hole appeared with fresh blood flowing from it.

Guo Xiong's face turned pale, but was unyielding. He clenched his teeth and didn't issue a sound. His ferocious gaze stared towards Mo Longzi.

Mu Chen covered his mouth as he heavily coughed. His eyes turned a little cold at this moment as he stared at Mo Longzi and softly said, "Friend, if you push us too much and if there isn't any path for us, even if I die, I'll drag you along."

Su Xuan and the rest were startled as they blankly looked at Mu Chen. If anyone else said that to Mo Longzi, perhaps they would find it funny. But towards Mu Chen, who had just managed to kill Bai Xuan, they didn't have that kind of mood.

Along the way, they've seen too much of this youth, who doesn't possess the powerful strength, but the means that he was able to exert could shock others.

Far away, Mo Longzi's eyes slightly narrowed as he looked at Mu Chen indifferently. Thereafter, his voice sounded out, "Bai Xuan was killed by you, right? Indeed, you're formidable, since you're actually able to achieve this step with only Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase strength. It's simply unimaginable."

"However, did you really think that you're qualified to threaten me?" He smiled as the demonic dragon mark slowly stretched out, displaying its ferocity.

"Then, you can give me a try."

Mu Chen's eyes slightly closed as he lightly broke free from Su Ling'er's support. He slowly stepped out and at the depth of his black pupils, black flames surged out, little by little. As for the surface of his body, black

flames began to surge.

The temperature in this heaven and earth was raised.

“Mu Chen!”

Su Xuan and the rest said in alarmed tones. They were a little anxious and worried. No matter what method Mu Chen possessed, the current him was already heavily injured. If they were to encounter another battle, it would naturally be a huge burden for him.

Mu Chen waved his hand, as his black pupils blazed with black flames, staring at Mo Longzi. At this time, there wasn’t any other path for them left. This person before them wasn’t someone easy to deal with.

Mo Longzi slightly narrowed his eyes as he looked at Mu Chen, whose body was blazing with a peculiar black flame at this point in time. His brows were slightly raised as the smile that he had on his face lessened. From the latter, he could vaguely sense the danger.

“What an interesting kid. But if that’s the case, then I want to see more of your methods.” Mo Longzi smiled. His character was too ferocious. Mu Chen’s speech was clearly not sufficient to scare him.

Mu Chen sighed in his heart. It seems like this was inevitable.

The black flames blazed on the surface of Mu Chen’s body. The intense pain that came from his body made a cold sweat appear on Mu Chen’s forehead. However, he did not say a word and took a step out.

Faraway, Mo Longzi also smiled as he stretched his hand out and slowly grab onto the longsword that was behind him. He lightly trembled as the screeching of the sword resounded throughout the heavens. A frightening sword aura soared up into the clouds.

Mo Longzi was just holding onto the longsword and did not take any action. An earth-shattering amount of sword aura gathered around him. Slicing the pine tree beneath him, as well as the cliff into pieces.

“There aren’t that many students in your Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy that can make me use this Dragon Scaled Sword. Today, you’ve

forced me to use it, pretty good."

The longsword in Mo Longzi's hand was slowly raised as he pointed towards Mu Chen. The sword aura was spreading and, vaguely, the roar of a dragon could be heard.

The face of Su Xuan and the rest turned even more pale. This Mo Longzi obviously wanted to kill Mu Chen, as he was immediately using his Dragon Scaled Sword.

"You guys, retreat first." Mu Chen said softly.

Su Xuan and the rest clenched their teeth, then nodded their heads, before retreating at fast speeds.

Mo Longzi's figure gradually started to float as he stared at Mu Chen. He lightly smiled and tightened his grasp on the longsword that was held by him, as though it was made from dragon scales and gently slashed out.

"Dragon Scaled Sword Art, Beheading Dragon!"

A sword slashed out without any sound. Thereafter, Mu Chen could see that the entire space looked like it was shattered by Mo Longzi's sword. A frightening sword aura was roaring as it took the form of a dragon and flew over with a frightening speed and demeanor.

That sword was impossible to dodge.

Mu Chen deeply inhaled a mouthful of air. His eyes turned solemn as both of his fists were clenched tight, and he was ready to borrow Nine Netherbird's strength to confront his enemy.

Onom!

However, just when Mu Chen was about to take action, the sky behind him was ripped apart. A dark gold long spear shot out like a golden comet, bringing along an unrivaled gale, and heavily clashed with that dragon-imaged sword aura.

Bang!

A shocking, clashing sound was heard as the sword aura and spear light swept up, causing even the space to turn twisted.

Mu Chen, who was about to take action, was stunned by the scene before him. Who was it that helped them?

That golden long spear dispersed the sword image. With a whirl, it landed on the sky above, creating a towering image. An extremely shocking might rippled and engulfed everything between the heavens and earth.

The golden long spear was roughly ten feet in length, with a ferocious exterior appearance. The tip of the spear was like a golden lotus. The lotus petal was closed and formed an extremely sharp spear tip. A golden light circulated, while looking as though it could rip the space apart.

“That’s...”

Su Xuan and the rest was stunned at the sight of the golden long spear. Shortly after, joy flushed out of their eyes, “Heavenly War God’s Lotus Spear!”

“Shen Cangsheng?!”

Hearing that name, Mu Chen’s heart trembled. That belonged to the legendary figure in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, ranked 1 in the Heavenly Ranking, Shen Cangsheng?

Boom!

There was a violent gale that burst from the sky from far away. A golden light that looked similar to a meteorite was flying over. With several flickering lights, it crossed a distance of over ten feet and appeared in before them.

The moment that golden light figure took action, the golden war spear emitted a buzzing sound as it flew back and was held firmly by a huge hand.

Mu Chen also turned his head around at this moment, and looked towards that direction. The golden light slowly dissipated and a black-clothed youth appeared in his line-of-sight. His black hair was draped over his shoulders. His face was resolute, his eyes looked quiet, like a deep pond. An appearance that looked as though he wouldn’t be shaken, even if

the sky fell.

He held onto the golden war spear as he stood on the sky. A disdainful aura was spreading out that caused others unable to neglect it.

“It really is the upperclassman, Shen Cangsheng.”

The moment Guo Xiong saw that figure, a flame blazed in his eyes. He spoke with joy, and was ignoring the pain that was inflicted on his body.

Su Xuan and the rest were slightly relieved with a feeling that they had just escaped a calamity. Who could have thought that Shen Cangsheng, who was rarely seen, would appear here?

The youth that was holding onto the golden war spear raised his head and a faint smile appeared on his firm face.

“Mo Longzi, if you want to fight, then I’ll accompany you. Why trouble my underclassmen?”

Chapter 263: Shen Cangsheng

Up in the mirror-clear sky, a youth stood, wielding a golden war spear. His fighting spirit flashed through his eyes and he carried himself with a dazzling air that attracted everyone's attention.

Mu Chen also looked at him in surprise. He'd heard about this number one from the moment he entered the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. As far as the student body was concerned, he was, perhaps, the only one who could become the undisputed overlord.

His place as the first of the Heavenly Rankings was unshakable.

Mu Chen never imagined that the rarely-seen first in the Heavenly Rankings would make an appearance here.

Mo Longzi watched Shen Cangsheng from a short distance away, with his hand tightly wrapped around the dragon-scaled longsword. Then, he smiled. "You've been chasing me for two months now. Aren't you tired yet?"

"I accepted your bounty mission. How could I return without your head?" Shen Cangsheng smiled back. His golden spear trembled slightly.

"You can't kill me."

Mo Longzi shook his head and lazily replied, "You're formidable, but not even the elite team could kill me. There's no way you could accomplish it all by yourself."

"At the very least, if I keep chasing you, then you won't be able to kill more students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy."

Shen Cangsheng smiled as a light flashed across his eyes, "Furthermore, I'm good at finding opportunities. The moment you slip, you might find your life belonging to me."

Mo Longzi narrowed his eyes and the demonic dragon on his forehead writhed even more viciously. He gripped his longsword and lightly said, "Well if you put it that way, then, wouldn't it be better for me to kill you, so you won't cause me any more trouble?"

“If you’ve finally thought it through, then come and fight me.” Shen Cangsheng challenged as he pointed his golden spear towards Mo Longzi. His eyes overflowed with his fighting spirit.

Mo Longzi coldly stared at Shen Cangsheng. A forest of sword lights slowly took shape around him, until even the space around him seemed like it’d been sliced into ribbons.

The spear in Shen Cangsheng’s hand trembled and surged with a golden energy. His body flared with a brilliant light, as if he’d turned into a golden sun. His fighting intent soared, as if he was a god of war.

“If you treat me like that moron Yu Yuan, then you’re going to get the worst of it.”

Mo Longzi lightly smiled as a sword-sharp look filled his eyes. He took a step forward and the longsword slightly shook. That instant was filled with the sounds of swords cutting through air. An ashen-grey light rose from behind him and turned into an earth-shattering quantity of sword images.

Each sword image looked genuine, and his sword aura surged into the skies, as if it could tear the sky apart.

“Dragon Scaled Sword Art, Sky Shattering Myriad Sword!”

Onom!

The longsword whistled through the air, raising another wave of sword images that rained down on Shen Cangsheng in an astonishing display.

Mu Chen’s expression was grave as he watched the terrifying attacks. Mo Longzi was powerful, indeed. Mu Chen guessed that he’d probably already reached the Heavenly Completion Stage.

His talent must be monstrous to reach the Heavenly Completion Stagee at such a young age. But since Mu Chen came to this world, such monstrous talents were in no short supply.

Even though Mo Longzi was his opponent, Mu Chen couldn’t help sighing in admiration. From the looks of it, Mu Chen was only four or five

years older; however, Mu Chen was still speechless at his strength. No wonder he was the number 2 on the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's Bounty Board – he was someone who could make the Punishment Team fail every single time.

Shen Cangsheng raised his head, and the myriad of swords were reflected in his pupils. He tightened his grip on the Celestial Lotus Wargod Spear, which flickered with golden light. Then, his arm trembled and the spear thrust forward.

"Celestial Lotus Rain!"

Onom!

A golden light flickered as a golden lotus bloomed on the tip of his spear, expanding until it was a few hundred feet wide.

Shhhuuuuuu! Shhhhuuu!

The golden lotus slowly revolved as it blossomed, before it burst into thousands of individual petals, all bathed with golden light.

That golden light filled the skies and shattered the spectacular golden rain. Its beauty contained deadly power.

Boom! Boooom!

The shattered lotus petals gathered again and formed a single golden pillar. The column streaked across the horizon and crashed down on the sword images. In that instant, everything between heaven and earth trembled from the collision.

A series of loud explosions rang out as a wild Spiritual Energy rippled out. The forest below suffered a fatal blow and was leveled. The surrounding majestic mountains were sliced into huge boulders before they fell into pieces.

The two flowing powers crashed as each attempted to destroy the other; however, neither was able to gain the upperhand. After remaining in a deadlock for more than half an hour, they finally dispersed and released powerful gales of Spiritual Energy.

“Haha, no wonder you’re ranked first in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. It’s not surprising that Yu Yuan fell by your hands. As far as today goes, we’ll let you off. But if we meet again, you won’t be so lucky.”

Mo Longzi focused on the disappearing sword images, then turned to smile at Mu Chen and his friends. Then, he disappeared. In the span of only a few breaths, he’d completely vanished; however, his faint voice still echoed over the forest.

Mo Longzi was very straightforward with his actions; with Shen Cangsheng there, he wouldn’t be able to gain an advantage, forget about killing Mu Chen’s group. Therefore, it’d be better for him to retreat and save his energy.

Shen Cangsheng looked in the direction that Mo Longzi had vanished to, but he didn’t give chase. His fingers twitched and the golden spear disappeared. Then, he turned around to face Mu Chen, who was still hovering in midair. Black flames still blazed around him, showing his cautiousness.

A look of shock flashed across Shen Cangsheng’s face when he finally had a chance to study those black flames wrapped around Mu Chen. He didn’t know why, but something made him feel slightly threatened.

Mu Chen sensed Shen Cangsheng’s gaze. Finally, he allowed the black flames to gradually retreat into his body and revealed a body covered in blood and wounds.

“Many thanks, Senior Brother Shen.”

Mu Chen cupped his hands towards Shen Cangsheng as he made a hard smile. If Shen Cangsheng hadn’t shown himself, Mu Chen might’ve had to endure a savage battle. His wounds would’ve become even graver.

“You killed Bai Xuan?” Shen Cangsheng asked as he looked at Bai Xuan’s corpse on a nearby mountain slope. There was a smear of astonishment in his voice.

Of course, he could tell that Mu Chen’s cultivation was still that of a Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase. There was a wide gap between him

and Bai Xuan. But even still, before Shen Cangsheng had shown himself, Mu Chen had dared to stand against Mo Longzi. His courage was commendable.

Mu Chen lightly nodded, but didn't care to fill in the details. He'd only been able to kill Bai Xuan because of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar's ominous energy in his body.

"Mu Chen is a freshman who enrolled in our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy only a few months ago. But don't underestimate him! If it wasn't for him, I'm afraid that we wouldn't have escaped safely." a soft and gentle voice sounded. Su Xuan and the other three had flown over.

"A freshman?" Shen Cangsheng was stunned as he looked at Mu Chen again. His voice was filled with surprise as he spoke, "I never thought that such an excellent freshman would appear in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. It seems like the future will be lively."

"I only relied on a few backdoors1," Mu Chen smiled.

"Having access to backdoors is also a form of power. In a battle of life and death, only the result is of consequence," Shen Cangsheng said firmly.

Mu Chen felt the same. If he were caught in a life and death battle, of course he'd use every means to survive. It didn't matter if they were backdoors or not.

Next to him, Guo Xiong stared at Shen Cangsheng with blazing eyes. The very thought of meeting this Ranked 1 excited him.

"Your wounds are grave. Here's a Profound Life Pellet. It should help your current state." Shen Cangsheng extended his hand and revealed a tiny, exquisite box resting in the center of his palm. Inside the box was a faintly glowing white medicinal pellet. Circles of light revolved around the pellet as its fragrance permeated the air and drew their attention.

Mu Chen was slightly stunned. This pellet didn't look like an ordinary one. It would be a great help for any wounded person. However, the gesture felt too heavy and made him hesitate briefly.

But his hesitation didn't hold out for long before he accepted it and

cupped his hands. “Many thanks for the pill. I, Mu Chen, will remember this favor. I will return it when chance arises.”

Right now, Mu Chen desperately needed such a medicinal pellet to help him recover from his injuries. Refusing too hard would be pretentious – he obviously needed it – so why not accept it? At most, he’d owe Shen Cangsheng a favor. All he had to do was return it when he got the chance.

Shen Cangsheng smiled. He was pleased with Mu Chen’s lack of pretentiousness. As for the favor, he could care less. At Mu Chen’s current strength, it’d be hard for him to return it.

“I’ll have to trouble you this time.”

Su Xuan gave Shen Cangsheng a grateful look. If Shen Cangsheng hadn’t reached them in time, then their small party would’ve suffered a considerable loss, given the situation at the time.

They didn’t know what tricks Mu Chen had pulled from his sleeve, but whatever he’d done, he’d paid a high price. She didn’t want to see him suffer for saving them.

Shen Cangsheng shook his head. “I’ve been chasing after Mo Longzi for the past two months. He seemed to have received some sort of message from the Demonic Dragon Palace and rushed over here. I only followed him, and never expected to run into you guys.”

Guo Xiong inwardly smacked his lips. Shen Cangsheng was probably the only student in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy who could pursue Mo Longzi.

“What are you going to do next?” Shen Cangsheng asked Su Xuan’s party.

“We’ve accomplished our mission. Now, we’ll be returning to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.” Su Xuan answered. Their journey had been half a month long and filled with danger. Therefore, they should return to the Academy and get a long, good rest.

“I’ll see you guys there. Junior Brother Mu Chen was gravely injured; therefore, your fighting strength should be down by quite a bit. Mo Longzi

is vicious, merciless, and unnaturally cunning. Who knows when he might secretly turn back." Shen Cangsheng muttered.

"Then, we'll have to thank you again."

A relieved sigh passed around their small party. With Shen Cangsheng guarding them until they returned, their group would be entirely secure.

Mu Chen also smiled as he looked north. They could return the Academy at last.

Chapter 264: Returning

With a bodyguard as powerful as Shen Cangsheng seeing them back, of course they wouldn't meet any trouble. In only two short days, they'd already closed in on the border of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Over those two days, Mu Chen recovered a lot from the ominous energy, thanks to the medicinal pellet that Shen Cangsheng had given him. Furthermore, the strength of his Spiritual Energy had also risen.

Although the ominous energy was a dark and foreboding existence, it could also be considered a form of power. Mu Chen had exhausted most of the ominous energy during his battle with Bai Xuan, but he still had a little left over. He could benefit from absorbing those remains.

Mu Chen was elated at his quick recovery and felt even more grateful towards Shen Cangsheng. If it hadn't been for his medicinal pellet, then Mu Chen's wounds would've taken even longer to heal.

In the sky outside the Northern Heavens City, several light figures flew overhead and landed on a nearby mountain peak. It was Mu Chen's group, rushing back to the Academy.

"Senior Brother Shen Cangsheng, are you not following us back to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?" Mu Chen enquired as he looked at the black-clothed youth.

Shen Cangsheng smiled and shook his head. "I accepted Mo Longzi's bounty mission, but I haven't completed it yet. So, I won't return for now."

Guo Xiong smacked his lips when he heard that. No wonder Shen Cangsheng was Ranked 1 of the Heavenly Ranking. He actually dared to pursue the savage Mo Longzi. He was probably the only one in the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy who would dare to do such a thing.

"Then, we'll part here. I hope you'll successfully accomplish your mission. By the way, our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy will be hosting the annual Hunting War next month. Will you be back for it?" Su Xuan smiled.

“Hunting War...” Shen Cangsheng narrowed his eyes.

“This year’s Hunting War will be especially challenging. According to my sources, the Guardians will be the three great generals of the Punishment Hall,” Su Xuan explained.

“The three great generals of the Punishment Hall? Those three? They’re actually coming out this year?” Shen Cangsheng was shortly taken aback, and a look of shock flashed across his eyes.

Su Xuan shrugged and nodded. “Those three were the top students of our seniors’ class. Even though they graduated, they still stayed to cultivate in the Punishment Hall. So if you don’t come back, then I’m afraid we might end up losing this year’s Hunting War.”

Shen Cangsheng knitted his brows, “I never thought they’d come out. Well, in that case, I’ll try my best to rush back in the time. Those three aren’t easy to deal with, and I also wish to spar with them.”

Su Xuan nodded with a light smile as she continued, “Since you’re willing to come back, then we might have a chance at the last stage. With you and Li Xuantong.”

Shen Cangsheng smiled and stayed briefly to make some more light conversation before he left in a streak of light and rapidly disappeared over the horizon.

“Haha, if Senior Brother Shen Cangsheng comes back for the Hunting War, then we might have a chance of winning.” Guo Xiong smiled as he looked in the direction that Shen Cangsheng had disappeared to.

“Hunting War? What’s that?” Mu Chen asked in confusion.

“The Hunting War is an event that our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy hosts every year. It’s a grand occasion where almost every single student participates in an intense battle. Who knows how much unexpected geniuses might appear?”

“Don’t make a mistake by thinking that all the formidables figures are already listed in the Heavenly Ranking. Some people are really good at enduring and hiding their presence.”

Mu Chen sighed and nodded. With so many students, there was no way all of them could be listed in the Heavenly Ranking. There were still more formidable figures hiding away.

"Shen Cangsheng was a dark horse. He used to be relatively unknown in our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. But his fame shot through the roof during one particular Hunting War – he defeated the Heavenly Ranking's Rank 1, as well as the Guardian of the event. Since then, his name has spread far and wide throughout the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Even today, his position as the Rank 1 of the Heavenly Ranking is unshakable," Guo Xiong said with adoration.

Mu Chen lightly nodded. Shen Cangsheng clearly wasn't an ordinary guy.

"Then, who are these Guardians?" Mu Chen asked again. He realised that didn't know a thing about these huge events in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

"There are Guardians in every Hunting War. They're never current students – instead, they're from the Punishment Hall. Most of them are graduated students who didn't want to leave the Academy, and simply stayed here to cultivate, instead. All of them are extremely powerful."

Su Xuan lightly continued, "I heard that they're sending out three Guardians this time – the Three Great Generals of the Punishment Hall."

"Three Great Generals of the Punishment Hall?"

Mu Chen blankly repeated those words.

"Haha. Back in the days, the three of them were famed throughout our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. They still possess such fame within the Punishment Hall. Rumors say that a year ago, the three of them set out together on a mission to hunt down the Rank 1 on the Bounty Board, Mo Xingtian."

"Mo Xingtian?"

Mu Chen was stirred by that. Mo Xingtian topped the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's Bounty Board. He was rumored to be the youngest

Elder in the history of the Demonic Dragon Palace, and possessed monstrous talent and tremendous strength. He was far more powerful than Mo Longzi, who they'd encountered a few days before.

If the Three Great Generals were strong enough to chase after someone like that, then their strength must be extremely frightening.

"What was the outcome of that chase?" Mu Chen couldn't help asking.

"Outcome?" Su Xuan said helplessly with a smile. "How could it be easy to deal with Mo Xingtian? Even the Three Great Generals together returned empty-handed. However, the fact that they were able to make a full escape from Mo Xingtian was already a considerable feat."

Mu Chen also nodded. Mo Longzi alone was already very powerful, so the the Ranked 1 of the Bounty Board, Mo Xingtian should be even more fearsome. He wouldn't be ranked so highly if he could be easily killed.

"For this Hunting War, the Three Great Generals will be the students' common enemy. You can only claim victory by defeating them. Afterwards, you can exchange your Spiritual Light for mouthwatering rewards." Su Xuan paused as her charming eyes lit up, "That would be the Spiritual Light Empowerment."

The moment she mentioned this Spiritual Light Empowerment, Mu Chen clearly noticed a burning desire flash across Li Qing's frosty face. He only smiled in confusion.

"This 'Spiritual Light' is formed from the purest Spiritual Aura. It'll be one of our objectives during the Hunting War. The more Spiritual Lights we collect, the more rewards we'll receive from the Spiritual Light Empowerment."

Su Xuan saw the blank expression on Mu Chen's face – he clearly hadn't followed her explanation, so she smiled and tried again. "I heard that you participated in the Spiritual Road before, so you should know about the Spiritual Road Empowerment, right? This Spiritual Light Empowerment is roughly equivalent to the Spiritual Road Empowerment. Both can greatly unleash your potential and enhance your strength."

"Oh?"

Now Mu Chen understood. His heart trembled. No wonder the Hunting War often allowed students who'd been in hiding to expose themselves. So, there were such great rewards at stake.

Mu Chen had participated in the Spiritual Road before, so he knew about the importance of the Spiritual Road Empowerment. If he hadn't possessed those means, then it would've been hard for him to catch up to the Kings of the Spiritual Road.

If the Spiritual Light Empowerment really had such miraculous abilities, then he definitely couldn't afford to miss out.

"But, in order to obtain the Spiritual Light Empowerment, you'll have to defeat the final Guardian, of course. That's where the Three Great Generals of the Punishment Hall come in – they will definitely be our opponents."

Su Xuan gently smiled, "Otherwise, why would I remind Shen Cangsheng to come back for the Hunting War? Wouldn't I be finding more formidable opponents for myself?"

Guo Xiong sighed. "That's right. In the past, there's always been only one Guardian. But this time, there are three, and they're the renowned Three Great Generals of the Punishment Hall. Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong are probably the only ones who can contend against such formidable figures."

Mu Chen lightly nodded. Right now, you could say that Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong were the most powerful two in the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. If the two of them weren't enough, then none of the students would win much from this Hunting War.

"Alright, we're almost there. Let's visit the Northern Heavens City to turn in our report and get the invitation to the Academy." Su Xuan said as she pointed towards the grand city – the Northern Heavens City, one of the external defenses of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Everyone else nodded in agreement to her words. Then, they moved and

streaked across the sky, and entered the majestic Northern Heavens City.

They didn't stay for long in the Northern Heavens city. They quickly found an Academy mansion to make their report and successfully obtained an invitation. Soon, they were passing through the vast borderlands of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Within two hours, they were within sight of the endlessly imposing Academy itself.

They stared at the vast Academy grounds and couldn't help their sighs of relief. Smiles appeared on their faces. Their mission was complete.

Chapter 265: Handing Over the Mission Report

In the sky of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, several lights were flying over from far away. They looked at the training grounds below as the numerous light images streaked across the sky. Their tightly tense emotions finally eased down.

After experiencing those killings, they were only able to feel at ease when they reached the gentle atmosphere within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Over here, they they were able to put down their worries as students of Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Over here, they would receive the protection from those colossal figures.

Mu Chen's party entered the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy and made their way towards the Mission Hall. Now that they've successfully completed their mission, it's better for them to hand their mission report over first and receive their rewards.

The Mission Hall sat at the northwest corner of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Within the crowd, a towering majestic huge hall stood to one side. On the sides of the huge hall, there was a frightening amount of people flowing in and out.

In the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, the Mission Hall was the most well-loved location. However, all of the students that could come here to accept the mission were those with the ability to. Especially the missions that required them to head towards the Northern Heavens Continent, those missions have strict requirements.

Mu Chen and his group landed in the Mission Hall under Su Xuan's lead.

Inside the Mission Hall, it was abnormally lit up. Along the walls, there were many crystal screens, and on those screens, there were various missions that constantly changed.

Mu Chen's line-of-sight swept around and landed on the middle of the

Mission Hall. There was a blood-red crystal pillar and on the pillar, there were names carved on it.

The ghastly colour caused this crystal pillar to attract the most attention in this vast hall. Every student that came here would look at those names on the blood-red crystal pillar with fear.

“Bounty Board”

Mu Chen focused his attention towards the top of the crystal pillar. There were three blood-red names flickering there that were dazzling to the eyes. This was the Bounty Board that he had heard so much about along his way here.

Mu Chen looked up on the crystal pillar and several familiar names entered into his eyes.

“Rank 1 of the Bounty Board, Mo Xingtian. Reward – 10,000,000 Spiritual Value Points, 1 Supreme Spiritual Artifact, 1 Deity Tier Spiritual Art.”

“Rank 2 of the Bounty Board, Mo Longzi. Reward – 8,000,000 Spiritual Value Points, 1 Deity Tier Spiritual Art.”

“Rank 3 of the Bounty Board, Blood Dragon – Mu Gu. Reward – 5,000,000.”

“Rank 4 of the Bounty Board, Guo Xiong 1. Reward – 3,000,000.”

The scarlet letters showed the danger that those names posed. The sky-high rewards would make the eyelids of others jump. However, everyone understood that not everyone could enjoy the sky-high rewards.

“Mo Xingtian’s reward actually reached 10,000,000 Spiritual Value Points.” Mu Chen couldn’t help letting out a sigh. Ten million, he could basically buy anything he wanted. Even the Blood Essence of the Northern Sea Dragon, he could get two of those.

“Up till today, no one has succeeded in obtaining his reward.” Su Xuan helplessly smiled as she continued, “That kind of figure is no longer someone that we, students, could handle. Even Shen Cangsheng could

only go for Mo Longzi."

Mu Chen lightly nodded. He encountered Mo Longzi before and understood the latter's formidability. But that Mo Xingtian was even more powerful than Mo Longzi. According to his intuition, that fellow had probably stepped into the Heavenly Completion Stage cultivation long ago.

Even in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, being at the Heavenly Transformation Stage would allow someone to obtain an Elder rank. In those slightly weaker continents, they could basically proclaim them as Small Sovereigns.

"Let's go and hand over our mission report. Furthermore, we also have to inform the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy about the emerged Demonic Dragon Palace." Su Xuan said lightly. Thereafter, she took several steps towards the center of the Mission Hall. Over there, there was a huge crystal screen with students arriving and handing over their mission reports.

However, in that kind of place, the difficulty of mission had different rewards. Su Xuan walked straight towards the middle of the huge crystal screen, there was a white-haired elder that was snoring away. His thunder-like wheezing sounded out, but no student dared to bother him.

When Su Xuan saw him, she lightly smiled as she walked up. Her jade-like hands grabbed the elder's beard and lightly pulled.

"Ah! Who?!" the elder that was in the middle of his beauty sleep instantly jumped up as he grabbed onto his beard and snarled in anger. But when he saw the smiling Su Xuan, he only snorted, "It's you again. If you're handing over your mission report, then hand it over. Why are you treating an old man so crudely?"

"Hmph, you're always goofing off. I say, maybe I should pluck your beard off." Su Ling'er also walked up and snorted tenderly.

"You two brats."

Elder Liu helplessly rolled his eyes and directed his line-of-sight towards

them, “You’ve completed the Heaven Rank Mission? So quickly? Why is there a Heavenly Fusion Stage brat, as well?!” his line-of-sight suddenly fell onto Mu Chen and was stunned. Thereafter, he said in a grave voice, “Girl, you actually brought that brat to the Northern Heavens Continent? Nonsense, what if something happened? Could it be that you sisters are fond of him?”

His words were decent, to those in front. But when he saw the person in the back, his words changed and instantly caused Su Xuan and Su Ling’er’s faces to flush red.

“Damnable old fart, what nonsense are you speaking?!” Su Ling’er’s face was boiling.

“Hehe.” Elder Liu chuckled and continued, “What a joke. However, this complacency is against the rules. This brat’s reward will be cut by half. Don’t stare at me, this is only because we’re familiar with each other. Otherwise, he would only dream on getting a single Spiritual Value Point.”

Mu Chen was shocked, his Spiritual Value Points will be cut by half?

Their location was the Heaven Rank Mission’s counter. Therefore, when Su Xuan and her party came, they attracted quite a bit of attention from their surroundings. The Su sisters possessed quite a bit of fame in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Naturally, it was easy to recognise them.

Elder Liu’s voice also attracted a lot of attention. Everyone’s gaze was staring weirdly at Mu Chen. That brat only possessed Heavenly Fusion Stage strength, he shouldn’t have the qualifications to accept a Heaven Rank Mission, right? Why did Su Xuan bring him along? Could it be that between them, there was some kind of relationship?

“Oi, old fart. Stop speaking such nonsense. The information said that it was a Wealthy Spirit Treasury when we accepted the mission. But when we arrived at the White Dragon Hillock, it was clearly a Sovereign Spirit Treasury. So what if Mu Chen’s cultivation is only at the Heavenly Fusion Stage? The City Lord of White Dragon City, Bai Xuan, still die by Mu Chen’s hands. If it wasn’t for him, we wouldn’t have been able to come

back!" when Su Ling'er heard that Elder Liu was about to cut Mu Chen's Spiritual Value Points, she instantly became anxious and furiously barked.

When her words were spoken, there was a moment of silence in the surroundings. Even Elder Liu was slightly stunned. Clearly, he had yet to digest the information from Su Ling'er's words.

"Sovereign Spirit Treasury?"

"You're saying that this brat killed the City Lord of White Dragon City? How is that possible? I've gone to the White Dragon Hillocks for a mission once before. The City Lord of White Dragon City has cultivated to the Heavenly Transformation Stage!"

"It must be fake, right?"

The surrounding people exchanged glances as whispers broke out from them.

"Sovereign Spirit Treasury?" Elder Liu also recovered and carried on with some astonishment, "Isn't that impossible? From the news that we've investigated, it was just an ordinary Wealthy Spirit Treasury."

"Nonsense, the Sovereign Spirit Treasury was clearly left behind by the White Dragon Sovereign who fell in that place a few hundred years ago. The City Lord of White Dragon City was also a chess piece from the Demonic Dragon Palace. Their aim was to obtain the Supreme Treasure left behind by the White Dragon Sovereign." Su Ling'er snorted.

"White Dragon Sovereign?! Demonic Dragon Palace? Are you guys speaking the truth?" when Elder Liu heard those two names, his face changed as he abruptly stood up. His face was filled with bewilderment.

"Hmph, how could it be fake? In the end, that bastard, Mo Longzi, had also arrived. If it wasn't for Senior Brother Shen Cangsheng, who arrived just in time, we wouldn't have been able to return anymore!"

Anger was struggling within Su Ling'er's charming eyes, "We struggled with our lives to get back. In the end, the fault was on your side, since the information wasn't accurate. If it wasn't for Mu Chen, none of us would have been able to return. If you dare to cut his Spiritual Value Points by

half, I won't let you off!"

"Mo Longzi?!"

When the surrounding students heard that name, they instantly felt a chill in their bodies. A dense shock rushed from their eyes. Su Xuan and her party actually encountered Mo Longzi?

Elder Liu's face was filled with dread. His face no longer had any laziness as his line-of-sight was directed towards Mu Chen. Thereafter, he asked Su Xuan, "Was what she said the truth?"

"Correct, what Ling'er said was the entire truth. Elder Liu, if you don't believe us, you can question Guo Xiong and Li Qing, as well. Or, perhaps when Shen Cangsheng returns in the future, you can question him, yourself." Su Xuan lightly nodded as she continued, "Bai Xuan was someone from the Demonic Dragon Palace. His strength had reached Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase. Furthermore, it really was Mu Chen who killed him. In this mission, his credit was enormous. Therefore, Elder Liu can't be confused."

Next to her, Li Qing and Guo Xiong heavily nodded their heads.

Their surroundings were in complete silence, even Elder Liu was looking at Mu Chen with disbelief. He actually killed Bai Xuan, who was at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase with just his Heavenly Fusion Stage strength? How is that possible?!

Mu Chen was stared at by those gazes and felt unease. He helplessly spoke up, "Elder Liu, it was only due to some special means that I was able to kill Bai Xuan. It wasn't my genuine strength."

Hearing his words, shock filled the eyes of the surrounding people. They could care less about the means that Mu Chen used. They only knew that this brat, whose cultivation was only at the Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase, actually killed an expert with Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase cultivation.

Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase, even in the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, the number of students that reached that

height could be counted on one's fingers, right?

Elder Liu's eyes looked at Mu Chen and only after a brief moment, did he retract his gaze. He extended his hands.

"Pass me all your Spiritual Value Point Cards. The reward will be as usual; however, you guys have to clearly tell me everything you learned on this mission. I have to report this to the Elders Regiment."

Chapter 266: Wheel

Mu Chen and his party exited the Mission Hall, raised their faces towards the blue horizon, and sighed breaths of relief. Now that they'd turned in their report, their mission was considered complete.

"Thanks for back there." Mu Chen smiled as he held his Spiritual Value Point Card. 1,500,000 Spiritual Value Points. This was his largest harvest since entering the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. And now, he was also another step closer towards the Blood Essence of the Northern Sea Dragon.

Su Xuan smiled back. "It's all thanks to you that we managed to complete this mission. It'd be ridiculous for us to let your rewards be halved."

The other three nodded at that. If it hadn't been for Mu Chen, they might not have returned alive – forget about the mission.

"Mu Chen." Li Qing suddenly spoke up. She raised her jade-like hands, called out her Spiritual Value Point Card, and tapped it. A concentrated light flew out from her medal.

She looked at him and quietly explained, "As I said before, you helped me win the Draconic Spiritual Bracelets, so my mission reward is now yours."

Mu Chen helplessly smiled back. Li Qing was a cold and strong woman – once she decided on something, there was no way to change her mind. All he could do was nod and accept the light streaming into his Spiritual Value Point Card. In an instant, his Spiritual Value Points was over 3,000,000.

Guo Xiong smiled too. "Haha. Here's some from me. I took Bai Xuan's High Rank Spiritual Artifact, even though you're the one who killed him. You definitely have to accept these 1,500,000 Spiritual Value Points."

A second light flew out from Guo Xiong's Spiritual Value Point Card.

When Mu Chen killed Bai Xuan, he didn't keep his High Rank Spiritual

Artifact – Blood Spear – instead, he gave it Guo Xiong. After all, Mu Chen had already reaped the largest rewards from their mission to the White Dragon Hillocks. Not only did he obtain the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl, there was also the Ominous Artifact currently suppressed in his aura sea.

Mu Chen had clearly benefited the most from this mission.

Mu Chen could only smile bitterly as he watched the light pour from Guo Xiong's card into his own. But he knew nothing about the Great Meru Demonic Pillar inside of him. As of right now, he needed all the Spiritual Value Points he could get – therefore, he could only resign himself and accept their gifts. All he could do was make note of Guo Xiong's favor in his heart.

Su Ling'er spoke up as well. "Mu Chen, do you need more Spiritual Value Points?" Her slender fingers were wrapped around her Spiritual Value Point Card. She intended to help him, as well.

"I need a huge number of Spiritual Value Points – but everyone here also participated in this mission and deserves their rewards. I'll accept Li Qing and Guo Xiong's favors, and I'll return them when I get the chance. As for the rest, please stop giving me more favors to carry." Mu Chen sighed helplessly. Of course, he wanted to collect all the Spiritual Value Points he needed to purchase the Blood Essence of the Northern Sea Dragon, but he still found it hard to take his teammates' mission rewards.

Su Ling'er saw the determination in his eyes and quietly murmured, "Alright then. But if you ever need more Spiritual Value Points, you should come find me."

Mu Chen smiled and nodded in acknowledgement. Then, he turned to cup his hands towards the entire group. "Since the mission is over, I'll take my leave first and return to the freshman area."

He hadn't seen Luo Li for nearly half a month and his heart was all tense from the yearning. He wanted to appear before her immediately, break the clam within her pupils, and take her into his arms.

Su Xuan and the others nodded. "Alright then. See you later."

Mu Chen took his cue and turned to fly towards the freshman area. Barely ten minutes later, he slowed down as the familiar scene spread out before his eyes.

At the center of the freshman campus was a clear lake, and next to it was the plaza. Many members of the Goddess Luo Association were quietly seated and cultivating. At the center of the plaza were Zhou Ling and Ye Qingling.

Shhhhuuuu.

A gale whipped up and many of the cultivators opened their eyes in alarm to watch a single figure slowly descend into the plaza.

“Boss Mu Chen has returned!”

“Boss Mu Chen is back!”

The freshmen broke the silence and cried out in surprise when they saw him. Everyone stood up with joy in their eyes.

“Mu Chen?”

Zhou Ling and Ye Qingling also opened their eyes in disbelief when they saw Mu Chen standing in the plaza with them. A moment later, those expressions were replaced by joy.

“So, this guy is finally back.” Zhou Ling walked up to him and smiled.

Mu Chen smiled back, then looked around. “Where’s Luo Li?”

The moment he mentioned Luo Li, everyone’s expressions turned stiff. The other members of the Goddess Luo Association also hesitated.

Mu Chen knit his brows at their hesitation. “What’s wrong?”

“Luo Li is recuperating in that small building of yours.” Zhou Ling mumbled as if he was hiding something.

“Recuperating?” Mu Chen’s face instantly froze over as he looked at Zhou Ling. His voice was ice-cold when he spoke. “Just exactly what happened?”

Ye Qingling bitterly smiled.” Quite a few things have happened in the

half month you were gone. Yang Hong disbanded his Wyvern Union and took some of his men to join the Demon's Gate."

"Demon's Gate?"

"The Demon's Gate is a force created by the Rank 4 of the Heavenly Ranking, He Yao. It's well-known in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy and it's especially powerful. They're second only to Li Xuantong's Xuan Clan and Shen Cangsheng's Judgement Squad." Zhou Ling immediately explained.

"He Yao?" A cold light flashed through Mu Chen's eyes as he continued, "What does he have to do with Luo Li's injury?"

"Right after Yang Hong joined the Demon's Gate, he started targeting members of our Goddess Luo Clan. He used to be afraid of you, but now that he's joined the Demon's Gate, he's grown bolder. Plus the fact that you were gone from the Academy – he basically had nothing to fear. He started leading squads to stir up trouble and provoke us."

Zhou Ling grounded his teeth as wrath filled his eyes. "We couldn't bear it and fought with him. But he's an extremely formidable enemy and his current cultivation has already reached the Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase. Even I couldn't beat him."

A look of embarrassment crept over his face as he admitted it.

"Zhou Ling wasn't the only one who was injured. Any messengers we sent to him also returned with injuries." Ye Qingling growled. "At first, we didn't tell Luo Li about it, because we didn't want to disturb her cultivation. But Yang Hong only grew more aggressive – he sent us a message demanding that we disband the Goddess Luo Association."

Mu Chen's eyes turned stone-cold. Since when was Yang Hong so unreasonable?

"The issue grew bigger and bigger until it reached Luo Li's ears." Ye Qingling bitterly smiled. "Of course, she took action."

"This matter grew bigger and bigger and entered into Luo Li's ears." Ye Qingling bitterly smiled, "Thereafter, she took action. She fought against

three members from the Heavenly Ranking's top 20."

"She defeated more than ten despicable experts from the Demon's Gate. When those guys saw that they were losing the fight, they changed their tactics. Luo Li ended up fighting over fifty experts all alone. But in the end, those three top rankers still lost to her."

"But Luo Li also suffered from that battle, and that's why she's recuperating. The Demon's Gate hasn't dared to provoke us since, for fear of Luo Li's strength. That Yang Hong has also vanished without a trace." Ye Qingling grounded her teeth. Her hatred for Yang Hong was blazing.

Mu Chen narrowed his eyes as a chill flickered in his black pupils.

"Mu Chen, I'm so sorry. It's our fault. We were so weak that we needed her to help us in such a simple matter." Zhou Ling flushed red and the other members of the Goddess Luo Association lowered their heads in shame. True, Luo Li had challenged the experts of the Demon's Gate and beat them with no small amount of fame, but that fame felt like a knife to their pride.

Mu Chen lowered his eyes. "There must be someone else behind Yang Hong. That's why a coward like him would dare provoke us."

"Someone else?" Ye Qingling's expression changed. "Are you talking about the Demon's Gate's boss, He Yao?"

He Yao was the only one who could order around the experts of the Demon's Gate. Otherwise, why would anyone listen to a nobody like Yang Hong?

Mu Chen's expression turned even colder as he stared at the ground. He Yao was probably pulling the strings. But why would he target the Goddess Luo Association?

Mu Chen balled his hands into fists. Right before he'd left on his mission, He Yao had asked him to hand over the seat that Su Xuan had given him. But Mu Chen had rejected him. At first, Mu Chen had thought nothing of it. But now, it was a very likely motive for He Yao's grudge against him. What a petty-minded person.

He Yao had probably done this to try and teach him a lesson. But he'd miscalculated – he hadn't expected there to be another formidable figure like Luo Li still guarding the Goddess Luo Association.

"He Yao." Mu Chen's cold eyes shifted.

Zhou Ling grounded his teeth again. "Mu Chen, what do you plan to do? If you're going to stir up trouble with the Demon's Gate, then take us with you. It doesn't matter how injured we are. We'll have them know that the Goddess Luo Association isn't a bunch of cowards!"

Mu Chen shook his head and smiled. "Don't worry. Let me handle this."

This wasn't Zhou Ling's fault. Mu Chen just simply never expected He Yao to be so petty. No wonder Su Xuan despised him so much.

"Then, what are you going to do?" Zhou Ling asked.

Mu Chen lightly smiled as he approached his small building. A quietness fell over the plaza.

"Send a message to the Demon's Gate. Tell them that Mu Chen would like to visit five days from now, to express his 'thanks'."

Chapter 267: Preparation

Creak...

The door to the small building was tightly shut. Mu Chen gently eased it open and peeked inside at the spotless interior. Then, he stepped through the entrance and slowly opened the door to Luo Li's room.

A faint fragrance wafted through the doorway – the kind that could captivate anyone who caught its scent. Mu Chen turned his eyes towards the window, where a young woman lazily reclined. She wore only a thin wrap that showed her pale, glossy legs.

Her slender jade-like arms were wrapped around those legs, and her exquisite porcelain-like face was resting against one knee. Her long hair, usually tied up, was currently draped loosely over her shoulders, like a bright splash of the Milky Way.

She was asleep. So relaxed and peaceful.

Mu Chen looked at her with deep affection in his eyes. He slowly stepped closer.

She sensed his presence the moment he entered her space. The tightly-shut eyes snapped open and her clear pupils flushed with alarm.

But that tension and alarm quickly dissipated when she laid eyes on the handsome youth at her side. A smile crept over her face as she exhaled a weak question that was filled with immeasurable joy. "You've returned?"

Mu Chen studied her exquisite face – she was definitely looking a little pale. It didn't look like it was anything serious, but his heart still ached for her, and his anger towards He Yao boiled hotter.

"I heard that you were injured?" Mu Chen asked as he moved a hand to cup Luo Li's tender cheek.

Luo Li shrank from his cold touch and shook her head with a smile. "No, I wasn't."

"Are you lying to me?" Mu Chen raised an eyebrow as he wrapped one

arm around her slender waist, and the other below her knees, and pulled her into his embrace.

"Ah!"

Luo Li softly cried as she wrapped her jade-like arms around Mu Chen's neck. She stared at him in embarrassment and pouted her small lips, "You just got back, and already started bullying me?"

Mu Chen's heart pounded as he stared at the young woman pouting her small lips. It was a rare sight for the calm and distant Luo Li to show such a feminine side.

Luo Li noticed that Mu Chen was staring at her rosy lips and flushed a light pink. She twisted around his his arms with a displeased expression. "What are you trying to do?"

"Absence makes the heart grow fonder. What do you think I'm trying to do?" Mu Chen teased. Before Luo Li could react, he bent down and kissed, gently tasting the sweet and fragrant delicacy.

Luo Li stiffened at the sneak attack, but then surrendered to it. She loosened her hold around Mu Chen's neck and allowed him to do as he wished.

Mu Chen enjoyed the warmth for a good moment, before putting her down. He couldn't help grinning as he looked at Luo Li, who was now gasping for breath and flushed deep red. "What a delicious taste. I must inform you that this taste now belongs to me. As for how long... an eternity!"

"You rogue! Dream on!" Luo Li's face became a deep red from his embarrassing words.

"Do you want me to bully you even harder?" Mu Chen grinned as he hugged her a little tighter.

Luo Li glared at him and turned away, fuming.

Mu Chen gently smiled as he laid Luo Li back on the soft bed. However, her arm was still around him, refusing to let go. Finally, he looked into her

eyes and furrowed his brows. “How are your injuries?”

Luo Li lightly shook her head, “It’s nothing much. I just exhausted myself. They had the advantage of numbers, but if I’d been fighting seriously, then they wouldn’t have gained an advantage.”

“The experts of the Demon’s Gate might be strong, but they’re nothing we can’t handle. The only problem is their Boss, He Yao. While you were gone, I always had to make sure I saved enough strength to guard myself against him.”

Not even Mu Chen had an accurate gauge of Luo Li’s strength. But since she could challenge more than ten experts of the Demon’s Gate all alone, then she should’ve at least reached the Heavenly Transformation Stage. However, He Yao still hadn’t made a move, so Luo Li had to keep her guard against him. That’s why she’d held back and gotten injured by the other experts.

“He Yao...” Mu Chen’s black pupils flared with a chill. However, he quickly smiled again. “If that guy isn’t going to act like a decent human being, then I don’t have to treat him like one.”

“What are you going to do?” A look of concern flashed across Luo Li’s face. The Demon’s Gate and He Yao weren’t that easy to deal with.

Mu Chen snorted. “They dared to hurt my woman. What kind of man would I be, if I simply took that?”

Luo Li flushed red again and rolled her eyes at him. However, a soft arc rose at the corner of her mouth.

“Then, I’ll go with you.” Luo Li said flatly. He Yao wasn’t weak. If Mu Chen went alone, it’d be hard for him to win.

Mu Chen shook his head. A chill flickered in his black pupils.

“No. Let me handle this.”

At that, Luo Li knew that Mu Chen had already drawn his plans. There was nothing else she could do, so she unhappily rested her head against Mu Chen’s chest and curled up in his arms like a kitten. Her long

eyelashes blinked once, then closed as she absorbed his warmth and slowly fell asleep.

Mu Chen gently smiled at her – she was sound asleep. But when he raised his head again, a chill clouded over his charming face.

"He Yao... I originally intended to let you be. But, since you brought the fight to me, then don't blame me for getting impolite."

...

A deep night had settled over the compound. Mu Chen quietly stepped out from Luo Li's room and made his way to the roof. He twitched his fingers and the the Spiritual Value Point Card appeared. A faint light illuminated the set of glittering icons on its surface.

Mu Chen's eyes glazed over as he swept his eyes over the inventory, searching for the items he needed.

He was furious. If he did nothing, then this would happen again. Since He Yao thought he had nothing to fear from him, then he'd teach him a good lesson.

Even a Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase expert like Bai Xuan had died by Mu Chen's hands. He had nothing to fear from a single He Yao.

His eyes finally pinpointed the items he needed. Then, he stowed away the card, turned into a streak of light, and flew towards the Spiritual Value Hall.

...

The next day, Mu Chen left the house after saying goodbye to Luo Li. Zhou Ling and the others had already done as instructed, and passed Mu Chen's message to the Demon's Gate.

The message caused some disturbance within the ranks of the Demon's Gate, but the majority of those experts were only laughing at it. True, Mu Chen had left a deep impression at the Spirit Battle Stage, but no one thought he could compare to the top 10 of the Heavenly Ranking. Not to

mention that the Demon's Gate had He Yao, Rank 4 of the Heavenly Ranking. What could a single Mu Chen possibly do to them?

They simply laughed it off. In fact, some of them even hoped that Mu Chen would actually pay them a visit. Did the boy really think that by receiving three moves from Li Xuantong, he would qualify to challenge their boss, He Yao?

The members of the Demon's Gate acted like they were watching a show. Everyone had heard the news. After all, both Mu Chen and the Demon's Gate were well-known within the Academy.

Everyone remembered the freshman who'd managed to take three moves from Li Xuantong. But if Mu Chen really went through with it this time, He Yao wasn't going to let him off with only three moves. How would Mu Chen handle it then?

In just two or three days, everyone heard Mu Chen's announcement. But the strange thing was that Mu Chen, the protagonist of the event, had suddenly vanished without a trace. Some suspected that Mu Chen had hidden himself out of fear.

In the Goddess Luo Association, not even Zhou Ling could find a trace of Mu Chen. But they never had any doubts about him. As someone who dared to challenge even Li Xuantong, he definitely wouldn't do something like run away.

There must be a reason why Mu Chen had vanished without a trace.

And time rapidly passed under all the boiling suspicions...

...

The headquarters of the Demon's Gate was located at the north end of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. It was a place filled with pavilions. Everyone there was a member of the Demon's Gate. You could say it was the Demon's Gate's territory within the Academy grounds.

Right now, there was quite a crowd gathered in the main hall of the largest and central pavilion.

At the head of the hall sat He Yao, casually sipping from a teacup. On his right, stood Yang Hong and a number of the Demon's Gate core members.

"Boss, tomorrow is the fifth day. What kind of game is Mu Chen trying to play? He still hasn't shown himself." A lean man asked in a low voice. His name was Chen Hou, ranked 18 in the Heavenly Ranking, and a Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase. Just a few days earlier, he'd lost to Luo Li.

The others nodded. As the deadline drew closer, their curiosity grew stronger. Could Mu Chen have really run away?

He Yao faintly smiled and looked down into his tea. A white mist was curling up from its surface – the entire cup had frozen over as ice. He tightened his grip and the cup, frozen tea and all, shattered into pieces.

"What is there to guess about? We'll find out tomorrow. A freshman who managed to take three moves from Li Xuantong... haha, I'd really like to see what he'll do..."

Mockery filled his eyes.

"If he dares to show himself, then I'll make him understand that in this Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, there isn't a single person single person who can mouth-off at my Demon's Gate."

Chapter 268: The Visit

Demon's Gate Headquarters.

The place was clearly livelier than usual. The courts outside the ring of pavilions was jam-packed – there were people on the ground, in the sky, and even standing on rooftops. Even more were on their way.

In five days, the news about Mu Chen and the Demon's Gate had spread far and wide. Mu Chen had already gained a reputation for his pact of three moves with Li Xuantong. That event had astonished everyone and engraved his name into the minds of many upperclassmen.

But even still, everyone believed that he was a long ways away from someone like He Yao, who was a genuinely powerful figure.

The pact of three moves had displayed Mu Chen's potential and talent; however, it didn't represent his true strength. Without that restriction, there was no way Mu Chen could've competed against a powerful expert like Li Xuantong.

Even though He Yao was only ranked number 4, there was no doubt that he was strong. Many even felt that He Yao was strong enough to take Rank 3, but was just being patient.

But, either way, Rank 4 was enough to show how powerful He Yao was. And now, Mu Chen wanted to pay a visit to the Demon's Gate to repay a blood debt. It wouldn't be an easy task.

Hundreds and thousands of Demon's Gate's members were already gathered in the spacious plaza in front of the Demon's Gate headquarters. Most of them were laughing and joking with each other, without the slightest care – in fact, many of them had mocking sneers plastered on their faces. They wanted to see how this loudmouthed freshman would come and stir up trouble on their doorstep.

He Yao sat, expressionless, in a tall chair at the very front of the headquarters. His face was stone-cold, except for the brightness of his pupils.

Behind him stood the core members of the Demon's Gate, and Yang Hong, who was towards the side. That guy was no longer arrogant or overbearing. True, his talent wasn't bad, but he was still only a freshman. There was no way he could compare to He Yao, and he knew that – so he made the wise decision of joining He Yao.

By borrowing the Demon's Gate's fame, he could break free from Mu Chen's shadow. As long as he worked hard to cultivate, he'd definitely surpass Mu Chen once again!

Flames lit up in Yang Hong's eyes. He will endure it, for now; but one fine day, he'd stand at the top of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Whether its Mu Chen or He Yao, he'd stand above them all!

The sky above the plaza was filled with countless students who'd come to observe. When they saw Demon's Gate's formation, they inwardly tsked. It looked like all of the Demon's Gate core experts were present. They were waiting for Mu Chen to arrive.

"Is the Demon's Gate using their formation to try and scare Mu Chen from coming?"

"Tsk, tsk. At the front of that group is He Yao, Rank 4 of the Heavenly Ranking. Chen Hou and the other two are ranked in the top 20s, and there are quite a few others in the top 50s. The Demon's Gate's strength is formidable indeed."

"Looks like Mu Chen kicked an iron panel this time."

"That guy really likes to stir up trouble. I heard he also got into a fight with Xu Huang. And now, it's with He Yao."

"But this time, that lucky guy is doomed."

Based on their whispers, they'd already decided on today's outcome.

A particular group of people stood on the roof of a building, looking towards the plaza. The one leading them was Xu Huang, and next to him was Xu Qingqing. He sneered, "That Mu Chen still causes trouble everywhere he goes. The moment things get peaceful, he goes and knocks on the Demon's Gate's door. Does he really think He Yao is that easy to

deal with?"

"Big brother, do you think he's actually going to turn up?" Xu Qingqing asked him.

Xu Huang knitted his brows and looked around, but couldn't pinpoint Mu Chen's figure. However, his expression remained the same. "Mu Chen will definitely appear. Don't underestimate him. If you give him a another year, there will definitely be a spot for him in the top 5 of the Heavenly Ranking."

Xu Qingqing snorted, unconvinced. That brat wanted to enter the top 5 of the Heavenly Ranking? How was that be possible? His pact of three moves with Li Xuantong wasn't even a genuine fight.

"He'll definitely appear. But as to whether he can actually deal with this situation... that's an entirely different question." Xu Huang scanned the surroundings again. He really didn't understand what Mu Chen could possibly do in this kind of situation, with his current ability.

A few rooftops away were Su Xuan, Su Ling'er, Li Qing, and Guo Xiong, who'd clearly rushed over after hearing the news.

"Big Sister, why hasn't Mu Chen appeared yet?" Su Ling'er anxiously asked as she kept looking around. "Really! That guy just got back to the Academy and he's already at it again. But this time, there's not going to be a pact of three moves.

"I heard that He Yao was the one who caused this. After Mu Chen left, he sent his soldiers to stir up trouble with the Goddess Luo Association. Luo Li defeated them all, though I heard she also suffered some injuries," Guo Xiong explained.

"Mu Chen and He Yao haven't really crossed paths before. It seems He Yao's hatred is because the spot for that mission went to Mu Chen." Li Qing offered with furrowed brows. Her tone implied her impression of He Yao.

Su Xuan nodded. She'd known for a long time that He Yao was a narrow-minded sort of person. But she never expected him to hate Mu Chen for

something that small.

"Big Sister, you must help Mu Chen if anything happens." Su Ling'er pleaded.

Su Xuan lightly nodded. "I'm also responsible for this, so, of course, I won't sit by and watch as He Yao bullies him. However, we can't underestimate Mu Chen, either. He's not someone who speaks rashly. Since Mu Chen announced it, then he must have some confidence in dealing with this matter."

"He's the sort of guy who doesn't even fear someone like Mo Longzi. If He Yao wants to pressure him, that's ridiculous."

Li Qing and Guo Xiong also thought the same way. After that period of getting along with Mu Chen, they'd come to understand just how many unexpected tricks that youth had up his sleeves.

They still didn't know how today's events would turn out.

"The Goddess Luo Association is here!"

A disturbance started in the skies, and everyone's eyes turned towards the plaza's main road.

Several hundred figures were quickly rushing down the road. Most of them were freshmen. Their formation was a bit weaker than the one they were confronting, but each of them had their jaws set.

Leading them was a young woman in black with exceptionally exquisite features. Her clear and diamond-like pupils were deep and calm, and her long hair was bright like the Milky Way as it draped down her slender waist.

Everyone looked at the woman in black with alarm in their eyes.

Even Su Xuan couldn't help praising her temperament. "She's Luo Li? Not a bad woman. No wonder even Mu Chen fell for her."

Su Ling'er was pouting again, but even she couldn't deny that Luo Li was exceptional. Not only in appearance, but but also in the way she carried herself.

The members of the Goddess Luo Association followed Luo Li's leadership and marched into the vast plaza.

The moment Chen Hou and his allies saw Luo Li, they quickly averted their eyes. Their previous fight had been enough to publicly shame them once – and the worst part of it was that they still hadn't gained an advantage.

Their fight had made them understand that among the freshman, Mu Chen probably wasn't the most formidable one – it was this beautiful girl who'd kept herself hidden.

He Yao stared at Luo Li and something stirred in his eyes as he took in her composure and features. In the past, he'd believed that Su Xuan was the loveliest woman in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. But this girl standing before him was even lovelier than her.

That bastard had such great luck with women.

He Yao narrowed his eyes as he swept his eyes over the new arrivals. "What about Mu Chen? Didn't he send a message that he'd pay our Demon's Gate a visit? Why is he hiding in his turtle shell when the time has come?"

Luo Li replied with a calm and clear voice. "He said he'd come, so he'll come. All you need to do is just wait."

He Yao angrily laughed at Luo Li's calm reply. "Wait? What arrogance. Just who does he think he is? Is he worth our Demon's Gate's time to wait?" Had that guy even thought about what He Yao's reputation was, and what his reputation was?1

Luo Li's long eyelashes slightly fluttered down as she replied, "If you're that impatient, then I can entertain you awhile. But be careful not to lose your standing as the Rank 4 of the Heavenly Ranking."

Huaaaaa!

Shocked exclamations instantly burst out in the plaza and expressions filled with disbelief were aimed at the young woman in black. The crowd clearly hadn't expected such a beautiful girl to say such threatening words.

Su Xuan smiled. “It’s a little similar to the way Mu Chen speaks.”

He Yao’s face drained of colour as he slowly stood up. “What big words. If you want to seize my standing, then we’ll have to see if you’re qualified!”

When he finish speaking, a frightening Spiritual Energy pressure exploded from his body, like a tsunami. He was clearly enraged by Luo Li’s words.

Ye Qingling, who stood behind Luo Li, paled when she saw that.

There wasn’t a single ripple in Luo Li’s eyes as she stepped forward and prepared to take action.

“Let me handle today’s matter.”

Just as Luo Li was about to act, a clear and bright laughter rang throughout the plaza, causing a huge commotion. Everyone quickly searched for the source.

The voice came from one towering construct at the edge of the plaza – a young man had been sitting there for who knows how long. His eyes were ice-cold as they became fixed on He Yao and his followers.

Chapter 269: Ten Spiritual Arrays

"It's Mu Chen!"

As everyone's gaze gathered towards the youth that was on the top of the building, they instantly yelled in surprise.

Among the Goddess Luo Association's members, Ye Qingling and the rest had joy filling their eyes as they saw that figure. Mu Chen had finally showed up.

"It's true that he appeared. Hmph, I'll see how will he deal with the situation before him. Otherwise, the fame that he got from the Pact of Three Moves with great difficulty will be entirely lost." Xu Qingqing coldly snorted.

Xu Huang's gaze was also directed at Mu Chen. At this time, there still weren't any ripples in the eyes of the latter. However, in his eyes, while there was some faint fatigue, there still wasn't any panic.

"What is that fella...trying to do?" Xu Huang frowned his brows as he mumbled.

In the plaza, He Yao's eyes turned cold as he stared at Mu Chen's figure and faintly mocked, "You finally showed yourself?"

"Not to reciprocate against etiquette. Back then, the Demon's Gate paid a visit to the Goddess Luo Association. And today, I will return the favor." Mu Chen looked at He Yao as he smiled.

"Oh?" He Yao sneered, "Then, what are you trying to do?"

"That's simple, get all those people that stirred trouble at the Goddess Luo Association to apologise. Thereafter, I'll need Senior Brother He Yao to expel Yang Hong from the Demon's Gate. That guy is always calculating and if he remains in the Demon's Gate, it'd be unfortunate for you." Mu Chen faintly smiled.

When Mu Chen spoke, it instantly caused a huge commotion.

"Dream on!"

Behind He Yao, Chen Hou and the rest all had ashen faces as they barked. On one side, Yang Hong's face was also dark. He found such a great backer like the Demon's Gate. If he's expelled, then he would thoroughly lose his face. This request of Mu Chen's was rather too much.

He Yao's gaze turned ice-cold. He stared at Mu Chen as a smear of disdain rose to the corner of his mouth, "What are you? You dare to make comments of my Demon's Gate? You're just a bunch of freshmen. When Chen Hou and the rest made a trip to the Goddess Luo Association back then, it was just to teach their juniors some of the rules in the academy. Not only are you guys not grateful, you guys still dare to oust them out. Regarding this problem, I've not pursued this matter, and yet, you guys still dare to come find us instead?"

As he spoke, everyone's face in the Goddess Luo Association turned ugly. Clearly, they never thought that He Yao would be so shameless.

Mu Chen's gaze dropped as he smiled, "Then, what are you? You also dared to comment about my Goddess Luo Association? To teach others the rules, are you qualified to do so?"

The surroundings became silent and many people smacked their lips. This Mu Chen truly wasn't simple. Even when facing He Yao, his words didn't gave him the slightest face.

He Yao's face turned darker, little by little. The Spiritual Energy around him rippled even more violently. Shortly after, he coldly smiled and sat back down on his chair. "What courage. Since that's the case, then let me inform you that your request is denied. Furthermore, the one that's apologising isn't my Demon's Gate but your Goddess Luo Association."

His gaze was dark as he stared at Mu Chen, "If you're not going to apologise, then I'll let you guys leave here and return, lying down!"

When he finished his speech, he leaned against his chair and coldly smiled. He wanted to see what Mu Chen will do since he said such foolish words in his Demon's Gate's headquarters.

In the Goddess Luo Association, only Mu Chen, as well as that girl named Luo Li, was powerful enough. But just relying on their two

strengths to intimidate the Demon's Gate with him in command was too much of a fantasy.

When He Yao finished his speech, the surrounding gazes were, once again, directed at Mu Chen. He Yao had already said that he would not accept any requests. Whatever happened next would have to depend on the means that Mu Chen possessed...

Every gaze was directed at Mu Chen. At this moment, the latter was looking at He Yao with an indifference gaze. Shortly after, he lightly smiled. Except in this smile, there was a small hint of dangerous in it.

"Since that's the case..."

He quietly muttered as he spread his hands out and slowly shut both of his eyes.

The surrounding gazes were staring at Mu Chen with bits of curiosity because they're clearly unsure of what he was doing.

He Yao's indifferent and cold gaze made the members of the Demon's Gate switch to an alert state. Afterall, Mu Chen's current action was a little too weird. Could it be that he got some powerful means up his sleeves?

The atmosphere felt as though it was frozen at this moment.

Silence paced back and forth in this region. What caused everyone to be astonished was that despite them waiting, there were no movements from Mu Chen...

Everyone exchanged a glance as they pondered over what Mu Chen was trying to do.

"What is he doing?" Su Ling'er was also a little lost as she blankly asked Su Xuan.

Su Xuan's brows slightly frowned as she stared at Mu Chen. Vaguely, she seemed to have sensed some peculiar ripples. Furthermore, these ripples don't seem to be limited to only Mu Chen's surroundings.

She swept her gaze around and realised that these ripples seemed to be

surrounding the entire headquarters of the Demon's Gate.

Boom!

With the atmosphere frozen, suddenly a fine vibrating sound was heard. When everyone directed their gazes over, they saw cracks appear on a pavilion that wasn't far away from Mu Chen.

Huge stones were collapsing from the pavilion and, shortly after, light was spreading out from the pavilion. The light was like a Spiritual Energy light ray as it slowly extended itself up from the pavilion.

Boom!

As the pavilion collapsed, another pavilion in another direction also collapsed.

Boom!

Boom!

Collapsing sounds were constantly heard as everyone's line-of-sight shifted all around in bewilderment. Thereafter, they saw ten towering pavilions collapse in this region in just a few minutes.

The ten peculiar dazzling lights were like several scorching suns as they rose and surrounded the headquarters of the Demon's Gate within them.

"What's that?!" Everyone directed their lines-of-sight towards the ten huge lumps of light that were rising in amazement, as well as doubts.

Chhhiiii! Chhii!

While everyone was busy being amazed, the ten lumps of light continued to slowly rise up. Vaguely, they sensed violent Spiritual Energy ripples coming from them.

"That's..." Su Xuan, Xu Huang, as well as those pinnacle students were watching as the lumps of light expanded. The Spiritual Energy's trajectory made their pupils shrink back, "Spiritual Arrays?!"

"Those are all Spiritual Arrays." Su Xuan said as she slowly sucked in a mouthful of cold air.

“Spiritual Arrays?” Su Ling’er and the rest were shocked as they cried out, “All of those are Spiritual Arrays? How is that possible? How can Mu Chen lay out so many Spiritual Arrays at once? Just how many Spiritual Seals are needed in order to control them?”

From the looks of those Spiritual Arrays, they’re all probably Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays. But in order to lay out ten Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays at once, it’d require a Rank 5 Spiritual Array Master, at the very least, right? But clearly, it was impossible for Mu Chen to achieve the height of a Rank 5 Spiritual Array Master, which is comparable to a Heavenly Completion Stage expert. If he managed to reach that height, wouldn’t he have long become the number one figure in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?

“No... these Spiritual Arrays seemed to be at the fledging stage of being engraved...”

Su Xuan’s brows frowned again as she looked at Mu Chen, whose eyes were still tightly shut. These Spiritual Arrays seemed to have been directly engraved onto these pavilions. So, the reason why Mu Chen went missing was to hide here and engrave the Spiritual Arrays. If that’s the case, all he’d be required to do was form the Spiritual Seals required to activate these Spiritual Arrays and control them. This way, he’d be able to completely activate these Spiritual Arrays.

But if ten Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays were activated at the same time, the might of them would be extremely terrifying.

However... can Mu Chen really control ten Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays?

“That fellow... truly does have some means up his sleeves.”

On another construct, Xu Huang was looking at the ten lumps of light that were rising in the headquarters of the Demon’s Gate. His expression turned grave, “So the reason why he went missing these last few days wasn’t to hide, but to conceal himself in the headquarters of the Demon’s Gate and engrave the Spiritual Arrays... So, from the beginning, he already had this all planned out.”

“What’s the use of just engraving Spiritual Arrays. With his strength,

isn't he just dreaming if he wants to engrave the amount of Spiritual Seals needed for ten Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays?" Xu Qingqing was also shocked by the scene before her, but she was still reluctant to admit how good Mu Chen was.

Xu Huang nodded as his gaze closely stared at Mu Chen, whose eyes were tightly shut. Could the latter really achieve that step?

These changes had clearly caused an uproar in the region. In the plaza, those of the Demon's Gate had their expressions change as a smear of uneasiness flashed across their eyes.

The surrounding floating ten lumps of light gave them a huge amount of pressure.

A Rank 3 Spiritual Spiritual Array could threaten a Heavenly Fusion Stage. But if all ten of the Spiritual Arrays were activated at the same time, even the Heavenly Fusion Stage experts would have to run as far as they could.

At their front, He Yao's eyes were still deadly fixed on those huge lumps of light and his eyes were dark. That fellow actually laid down these things right under their noses and, in spite of everything, they didn't realise it at all...

"However, I refuse to believe that with his strength at the Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase, he could control so many Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays!" His eyes were ice-cold as he coldly smiled.

Onom! Onom!

Under the countless gazes, Mu Chen's surroundings fluctuated with powerful Spiritual Energy ripples. However, the current Mu Chen still had his eyes tightly shut. He shut out all the disturbances from the outside world and was focused in the Heart Array State's perfect control down to the finest detail.

The current him already had a deep comprehension towards the Heart Array State. Even if his eyes were tightly shut, the outside world seemed to have been engraved inside his heart. Shortly after, images of formless

wind and ripples of Heaven and Earth's Spiritual Auras appeared in his heart.

However, by just depending on the Heart Array State, it was still impossible for him to form so many Spiritual Seals to activate all those Spiritual Arrays...

His Spiritual Energy was clearly insufficient to control them all.

However...

The corner of Mu Chen's lips slightly rose as the palm that was in his sleeve rose. A light flashed and a round white pearl that was flickering with white light appeared. It was as though a white dragon was spiraling within the pearl.

This item was the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl they he got from the White Dragon Sovereign.

Within the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl, there was a vast amount of Spiritual Energy. Borrowing the power within it, Mu Chen could form all of the Spiritual Seals that he required!

Chapter 270: Spiritual Lotus Surrounds Demon's Gate

When the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl appeared in Mu Chen's hand, his palm suddenly clenched. As a faint white light was released, the deep roars of dragon seemed to have come along with it.

Boom!

The White Dragon Spiritual Pearl in his palm trembled as it resonated. The boundless Spiritual Energy was like a tidal wave as it flowed from Mu Chen's palm into his body.

The Spiritual Energy was pure and powerful, and the roars of dragon seemed to be following it. It was vast and mighty as it filled Mu Chen's body to the point that he found it a little painful. The power of the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl was way too majestic.

Mu Chen deeply inhaled a mouthful of air and didn't dare to lose the slightest bit of concentration. His state of mind was submerged in the Heart Array State. As he borrowed the control ability granted by the state, the Spiritual Seals were being formed by both of his hands.

As his hand signs changed, everyone could see that a dazzling light was constantly fluctuating from within Mu Chen's body. Under the ripples of the light halo, the Spiritual Seals were being formed at an frightening speed, one after another, from Mu Chen's hands.

"He's beginning to form Spiritual Seals!"

Someone exclaimed as their line-of-sight focused onto Mu Chen's body.

Su Xuan, Su Ling'er and their group were also nervously directing their gazes at him. Forming Spiritual Seals wasn't difficult. However, forming Spiritual Seals that could control ten Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays was the problem.

Under everyone's gaze, the light around Mu Chen became denser as the amount of Spiritual Seals formed by him continued to drastically increase.

In just a few short minutes, the amount of Spiritual Seals around Mu Chen had already amounted to over a hundred and was still increasing.

The shocking amount of Spiritual Seals made quite a few people's eyelids twitch. Trying to form over a hundred Spiritual Seals would require someone to at least be a Rank 4 Spiritual Spiritual Array Master.

Members of the Demon's Gate in the plaza became uneasy as smears of restlessness flashed across their eyes. Right now, they finally sensed danger.

He Yao's eyes were still dark, but the hand that he had on the armrest slowly started to tighten. Small amounts of cracks were spreading along the armrest. His instincts told him that it's best to obstruct Mu Chen right then. But the current situation forced him to be seated there, since he already gave the initiative over to Mu Chen earlier. If he disturbed Mu Chen, then it would show everyone there that, right now, there was fear in his heart. If that's the case, then that was clearly something that He Yao could not tolerate.

"I'll see to what extent can you reach!" His eyes were ice-cold as he locked onto Mu Chen's figure. There wasn't any expressions on his face, which made everyone else unable to speak a word.

On one the side, Yang Hong was also uneasily staring at Mu Chen with fear, jealousy and hatred flashing across his eyes. He could sense He Yao's changes and, clearly, even the latter felt unease.

He tightly clenched his fist as he grounded his teeth. He refused to believe that Mu Chen could be so powerful to such an extent!

Onom! Onom!

Under all of the uneasy gazes in the plaza, Mu Chen's body looked as though he had concealed himself under a dazzling light. The hundred plus Spiritual Seals, at this moment, had also seemed to have increased in quantity. Except, because of the dazzling light covering him, they're unable to clearly see how many Spiritual Seals were formed by Mu Chen.

At this moment, everyone raised their heads with hope.

The powerful light gradually started to weaken after a long time and as the light gradually weakened, Mu Chen's figure had, once again, appeared before everyone's line-of-sight.

Everyone's gaze was switched over in that instant as the irregular sound of someone breathing resounded.

The Spiritual Seals were densely packed around Mu Chen. That amount seemed to have surpassed five hundred and under that frightening amount, the people felt dizziness from the astonishment that they'd received.

"How is that possible?"

Someone cried out with overwhelming shock. They couldn't imagine that someone at the Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase could form so many Spiritual Seals. Furthermore, even if he could form so many Spiritual Seals, can he really control them?

The arrangement of the Spiritual Arrays was extremely harsh and the slightest disorder would cause the Spiritual Arrays to collapse.

On a roof, Xu Qingqing was dumbfounded as she watched the scene before her. Not a single ridicule came out of her mouth. No matter how stupid she was, she could understand how frightening five hundred Spiritual Seals represented.

"Five hundred Spiritual Seals."

Before her, Xu Huang also deeply exhaled a breath. His usual calmness was replaced with disbelief as he muttered, "How could he control so many...?"

"Mu Chen is formidable." Su Ling'er's eyes widened as she exclaimed in admiration.

Beside her, Li Qing and Guo Xiong exchanged a look and they noticed the shock from the other's eyes. Since their mission from before, they already knew that Mu Chen wasn't normal. Although this handsome youth appeared calm and undisturbed, he seemed to have possessed an endless amount of cards under his sleeves. Even though his age wasn't

that old, he would give other people a feeling of deep and unmeasurable potential.

Originally, everyone thought that Mu Chen would fight straightforwardly with He Yao. But no one expected him to secretly arrange so many Spiritual Arrays in the Demon Gate headquarters. Furthermore, what's more frightening was that he could actually activate all those Spiritual Arrays at once.

"You guys have forgotten the fact that he is a Spiritual Array Master. Perhaps, he had already reached the heights of a Rank 4 Spiritual Array Master."

Su Xuan also said softly, "If I've not guessed incorrectly, Mu Chen should have comprehended the Heart Array State and it's probably not in the Initial Phase."

Mu Chen truly was a Spiritual Array Master. However, the reason why he could control such a frightening amount of Spiritual Seals was only due to the fact that he had comprehended the Heart Array State. Furthermore, his attainments on it wasn't low.

With his ability as a Rank 4 Spiritual Array Master, the powerful Heart Array State that he possessed, and adding the fact that he already made preparations long ago, it wasn't impossible for him to control ten Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays after borrowing some external force.

Shhhuuuuu! Shuuuuu!

While everyone was shocked at the frightening amount of Spiritual Seals, Mu Chen's slender fingers lightly tapped them as they dragged a huge wind along with them. All of the Spiritual Seals flew out as they whistled; thereafter, they separated. Under everyone's fearful gazes, the Spiritual Seals shot into the ten huge lumps of light that surrounded the Demon's Gate.

As the Spiritual Seals entered them, everyone saw that the ten lumps of light were expanding at astonishing speeds. Complicated strings of Spiritual Energy intersected with one another and, thereafter, they gradually formed into ten huge massive Spiritual Arrays.

“Great Flame Demon Spiritual Array, Activate!”

Mu Chen’s indifferent voice resounded within the region and everyone could see the huge Spiritual Array bursting forth with scarlet light. Violent and blazing ripples swept out thereafter.

“Wind Demon Spiritual Array!” another Rank 3 Spiritual Array was successfully activated as the hurricane sounded like blades whistling in the air.

“Mountain Sealing Demonic Spiritual Array!”

“Roaring Gold Tiger Spiritual Spiritual Array!”

The name of each Spiritual Array was solemnly spoken out from Mu Chen’s mouth, one after another. Following his voice, a Rank 3 Spiritual Array was successfully activated.

In just a few dozen short breaths, the ten Spiritual Arrays in the sky were all activated as the lights spread out from them. The Spiritual Aura between the Heavens and Earth also became violent at this moment.

Everyone’s expressions were brilliant as they looked at those ten Spiritual Arrays and deeply exhaled as their hearts became filled with astonishment. No one could’ve imagined that Mu Chen was really capable of activating those ten Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays.

That fellow was truly monstrous.

“Big Brother Mu Chen’s frightening.” the members of the Goddess Luo Association were blankly staring at the scene up in the sky. Even Ye Qingling, Zhou Ling and the rest had dumbfounded expressions written on their faces. Clearly, they also never expected Mu Chen to create such a scene.

“So, the reason why he went missing was to prepare all of these.” they exchanged glances. From the looks of it, once this fellow was enraged, he was indeed, horrifying.

Luo Li also raised her exquisite face as she quietly watched the weightless figure that was seated on the pavilion. The corner of her mouth

rose into a soft smile.

In the plaza, it was absolutely silent. Those from the Demon's Gate, who were laughing and did not care earlier on, had already lost the ability to laugh. Their faces were turning green as they looked at the ten huge Spiritual Arrays that surrounded their headquarters.

The frightening Spiritual Energy ripples made their feet go soft.

Obviously, the current them could not laugh anymore. How could they have expected that the freshman named Mu Chen would actually create such a large scale scene and completely surrounded their headquarters with Spiritual Arrays?

"Boss, what should we do?" Chen Hou's lips trembled and his voice was a little hoarse. Being surrounded by ten Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays would cause even them to feel fear. If those ten Spiritual Arrays were aimed towards them, they felt that there wouldn't be any way for them to survive.

The core members of the Demon's Gate that were on standby also had their faces turn stiff. If it wasn't for He Yao being there, they would have lost their wills long ago.

He Yao's expression was dark as his palm abruptly increased in strength and the armrest of the chair instantly exploded.

As they remained silent, Mu Chen, who was seated on the towering pavilion, slowly opened his eyes. A smear of redness flashed across his face, but his black pupils were indifferently staring at those from the Demon's Gate.

"Senior Brother He Yao."

Mu Chen indifferently called out in this quiet region. Everyone focused their gazes as the calm voice of this youth seemed to have possessed an indescribable pressure at that moment. The pressure was spreading from him and made it so that no one dared to belittle him.

"I wonder, does the current me possess the qualifications to pay a visit and seek some guidance from you?"

Chapter 271: Taking the Arrays

"I wonder, does the current me possess the qualifications to pay a visit and seek some guidance from you?"

When the youth spoke with an indifferent voice that was spreading throughout this region, everyone felt as though the air had stopped moving. The youth appeared to be skinny, but he possessed an indescribable pressure. That was the power formed from the surrounding ten Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays and, right now, there wasn't anyone that would laugh at his so-called "visit".

In the plaza, the members of the Demon's Gate were speechless as the ridicule on their faces vanished. They exchanged looks and their expressions were filled with horror.

"Boss." Chen Hou and the rest directed their gazes towards He Yao, who had no expression on his face.

Under the countless gazes, He Yao also slowly placed his hand down on the armrest. Except, the armrest had already been turned into dust as it fell. He lightly tapped the dust and as he raised his head, there was a frightening cold gathering in his eyes, "Mu Chen. I have to say, you have indeed made me feel unexpected."

Mu Chen smiled noncommittally as he stared at He Yao, "If you've done something wrong, then there's a price that you have to pay, right?"

"Did you really think that these ten Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays would make me feel helpless?" He Yao's voice sounded as though it was turning colder with each word.

If the ten Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays were to be activated at the same time, even a Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase expert would be instantly killed. However, if He Yao only had that much ability, then he wouldn't be able to sit firmly at the Rank 4 of the Heavenly Ranking.

Everyone looked at the two who opposed one another and inwardly smacked their lips. This confrontation seemed to be even more fierce

compared to Mu Chen and Li Xuantong's Pact of Three Moves.

"These Spiritual Arrays have wasted quite a bit of time for you, right? It seems like I've belittled you. I never thought that you would actually hide yourself within the our Demon's Gate headquarters during these last few days." He Yao gradually stood up. There wasn't any emotion rippling within his voice.

"But, after you've used up these Spiritual Arrays, what other methods do you have up your sleeves?"

His eyes were dark as he stared at Mu Chen. The current card that Mu Chen possessed was clearly the ten Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays. Facing those Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays, not to mention a Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase, even those of the Middle Phase would hide from it's cutting blade. However, just because someone else was unable to withstand it, that doesn't mean that he, He Yao won't be able to.

He Yao straightened his body as a frightening Spiritual Energy rippled like a tidal wave that was sweeping out from his body. The slab beneath his feet quietly shattered as a crack rapidly extended out.

Everyone was instantly shocked as they watched his actions. Was He Yao going to take action and withstand those ten Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays?

"Chen Hou, after I've withstood those ten Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays, you'll lead a group of people and act. Since the other party is acting so atrociously in Demon's Gate headquarters, there's no need to be polite to them." He Yao slowly stepped forth as he spoke with indifference.

"Yes!" Chen Hou and the rest instantly agreed. Shortly after, they ferociously directed their gazes towards those of the Goddess Luo Association. If the threat of those Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays were removed, then there's nothing to fear from those freshmen. Although Luo Li was also formidable, it was, after all, impossible for her to deal with so many of them at one time. After giving these freshmen a rough beating, they believe that the freshmen will no longer have the guts to stay there.

When Ye Qingling and the rest saw the ferocious lights in the eyes of Chen Hou and those of the Demon's Gate, their faces slightly changed.

However, there wasn't any intention to cower back from them.

A cold light flickered in Luo Li's eyes. Shortly after, she extended her slender jade-like hands out and lightly held onto the hilt of her longsword. Vaguely, a sharp sword aura gathered around her.

The atmosphere turned hostile in that instant as multiple gazes fixed onto He Yao, who was slowly moving forth.

As the atmosphere froze, Mu Chen's face still didn't show any ripples as he looked at the approaching He Yao. Shortly thereafter, he smiled, "Senior Brother He Yao, these ten Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays weren't prepared for you."

He Yao's steps paused as he looked at Mu Chen. He wore a cold smile on his face, "Oh? Could the current you still have any ability to do something else?"

He Yao wasn't some normal person, after all. Although they didn't know what methods Mu Chen used to arrange the ten Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays, he could see that Mu Chen was already at his limit. It's not possible for the latter to separate his attention elsewhere to do anything else.

Not only could he see that, even Su Xuan, Xu Huang and the rest had the same feeling as they lightly nodded their heads at that moment. It was already formidable that the current Mu Chen could reach to such an extent. It was basically impossible for the latter to still be able to separate his attention to do anything else.

Mu Chen did not bother with those numerous doubting gazes, but only replied with a smile, "Senior Brother He Yao, these Spiritual Arrays are prepared for those people that came to my Goddess Luo Association. Therefore, I feel that you should let them to be the ones to take these Spiritual Arrays."

As he spoke, his blade-like cold gaze fell on Chen Hou, Yang Hong and the rest. When they saw his gaze, all of them trembled a little.

"Wait until I take your Spiritual Arrays, they'll naturally be the ones to test your ability!" He Yao coldly smiled. He did not pay any attention to Mu

Chen as he stomped on the ground and shot up. Majestic Spiritual Energy spread out as he flew towards Mu Chen.

"Since that's the case, I can only use something else to entertain Senior Brother He Yao."

Mu Chen indifferently smiled. Shortly after, he clenched his hand as a light flickered. A metallic rust-stained ball appeared in his hand. When the golden metallic ball appeared, Mu Chen instantly poured some Spiritual Energy into it.

Onom!

The metallic ball instantly burst forth with tens of thousands of golden lights. Thereafter, as the light swept out, extremely frightening Spiritual Energy ripples started to spread out.

As the Spiritual Energy rippled, everyone could see an extremely huge Spiritual Array rapidly forming in the sky.

That Spiritual Array was extremely huge, greatly surpassing those Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays. As the complicated Spiritual Energy lights intersected, they formed into a cryptic and profound Spiritual Array.

Woooosh! Wooooooooooosh!

A hurricane was formed between the heavens and earth from the ripples of Spiritual Energy. A complicated light Spiritual Array that was toughly a thousand feet in diameter appeared and floated above Mu Chen's head. It was extremely dreadful.

Everyone had shock on their faces as they looked at the Spiritual Array above Mu Chen's head that had instantly appeared. Everyone could tell that the Spiritual Array before them had far surpassed the boundaries of the Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays.

From the looks of the ripples, even among Rank 4 Spiritual Arrays, this Spiritual Array before them wasn't simple.

"How is that possible?" shortly after, they were at a loss for words. They refused to believe that Mu Chen could arrange a Rank 4 Spiritual Array at

such a rapid speed on top of those ten.

From Mu Chen's earlier actions, this Rank 4 Spiritual Array was clearly not engraved beforehand, but was instantly arranged and activated at that moment.

"It's the Spiritual Array Seed."

Su Xuan's charming eyes flickered as she spoke in soft voice that was filled with astonishment, "It's the Spiritual Array Seed from the auction back at White Dragon City. Mu Chen actually managed to thoroughly study it!"

On one side, the face of Su Ling'er and the rest was also filled with shock. They naturally knew about the Spiritual Array Seed. Furthermore, it was a gift that Su Ling'er bidded for Mu Chen. Back then, from its rusty appearance, they thought that it had already lost its effect. However, they never imagined in their wildest imaginations that it could display so much power in the hands of Mu Chen.

"No wonder he wasn't afraid of He Yao, so he had this hidden card." Su Ling'er said with joy. The Spiritual Array that was hidden within the Spiritual Array Seed wasn't weak. Facing a Spiritual Array of such a level, even He Yao would be afraid. Now, how will He Yao be so arrogant before Mu Chen?

"Mu Chen won't do anything that he doesn't have confidence in. Since he actually dared to visit the Demon's Gate, how would he not have any methods to deal with He Yao?" Su Xuan lightly smiled as her gaze watched the figure of that youth with a peculiar look.

The countless gazes from the surrounding area froze at the sight of the Spiritual Spiritual Array that suddenly appeared. Even He Yao, who was about to charge towards Mu Chen, abruptly stopped moving as his face flickered with doubt.

From the huge Spiritual Array, he could sense a strong amount of danger. This made them understand that he didn't have the confidence to take it.

“What formidable means.” He Yao’s gaze flickered with a cold light as he stared at Mu Chen, along with a smear of darkness as he said with his teeth tightly clenched.

“Senior Brother He Yao, you’re flattering me.”

Mu Chen faintly smiled, “Now, I’ll have to trouble you to keep silent. Otherwise, I won’t mind activating this Spiritual Array Seed. But if I were to activate it, then I won’t be able to stop it. At that time, I won’t take any responsible for any consequences.”

“You dare to threaten me?!” He Yao’s hands were tightly clenched as his tone turned cold.

“Senior Brother He Yao, if that’s what you think, then I have no other opinion.” Mu Chen’s hand tightly held onto the rust-filled Spiritual Spiritual Array Seed.

He Yao fixedly stared at Mu Chen as the veins in his hand twitched. However, he still did not take any action in the end. If Mu Chen only had those ten Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays, then he wouldn’t have anything to fear. But if there’s an additional Rank 4 Spiritual Array, then even he wouldn’t entirely be the same. Not even he had the confidence to withstand that.

“Ten Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays, you think that it’s sufficient to deal with my Demon’s Gate?!”

He Yao clenched his teeth. As long as he stood there, Mu Chen wouldn’t dare to activate the Rank 4 Spiritual Array. Aside from him, there were also three Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase experts. Add the fact that they possess so many people, they can’t be belittled if they combined their strength.

“It seems that Senior Brother He Yao still refuses to agree to my request from before.” Mu Chen stared at He Yao as he spoke.

“If you want my Demon’s Gate to apologise to freshmen like you, I’m afraid that you guys don’t possess that capability!” He Yao coldly laughed. If they were to apologise, then what face do they, the Demon’s Gate, have?

“Since that’s the case…”

Mu Chen faintly smiled. Except that his smile suddenly turned cold as his hand signs suddenly changed. The surrounding ten Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays instantly burst forth with dazzling lights and violent Spiritual Energy ripples swept out.

Everyone felt their hearts trembling. This Mu Chen had really managed to activate the ten Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays.

“Then I’ll have to ask those of the Demon’s Gate to take the Spiritual Arrays.”

Boom!

When Mu Chen finished his last word, a violent Spiritual Energy instantly started to wreak havoc.

Chapter 272: The Might of Ten Spiritual Arrays

Boom!

The violent energy was like a tidal wave as it spread throughout the region. Ten huge Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays were completely activated. Looking from afar, those Spiritual Arrays looked like ten blazing suns shrouding the headquarters of the Demon's Gate.

Chen Hou and the rest's faces turned green at the sight of this. If it was just a Rank 3 Spiritual Array, then naturally, there's nothing to fear. However, there were ten right before them. Furthermore, the combined power wasn't as simple as one plus one.

However, at this point in time, there wasn't any paths of retreat for them. Looking at He Yao's solemn face, he clearly wasn't willing to admit defeat. Therefore, they had to join hands and withstand the ten Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays.

If they're able to withstand them, then Mu Chen would lose his trump card. At that time, they'll be able to stage a comeback.

"Everyone gather together. We'll all attack at once, I don't believe that we won't be able to handle these ten Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays!" Chen Hou gritted his teeth and barked.

When the other members of the Demon's Gate heard his order, they rapidly gathered around. If they were separated right now, they'd probably suffer the consequences.

Yang Hong also clenched his teeth as he stared at the skinny figure that was seated on a pavilion with hatred and fear. He never imagined that in just several months, the latter's strength would actually be so shocking to such a degree.

On the pavilion, Mu Chen's eyes were indifferent as he watched those Spiritual Arrays soar into the sky from the plaza. Shortly after, his hand signs changed and the ten Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays up in the sky abruptly

changed. The violent Spiritual Energy rapidly gathered together.

Boom!

Boom!

The Spiritual Energy gathered and, in the next instant, ten light pillars tore through the sky and burst out with a shocking demeanor and shot towards the Demon's Gate without any restraint.

"Let's go together!"

The faces of Chen Hou and the rest drastically changed as they watched the ten huge light pillars shoot towards their direction. With a bark, the Spiritual Energy within their bodies also burst out and formed a Spiritual Energy screen up into the sky.

Onom! Onom!

The rest of the Demon's Gate also quickly circulated their Spiritual Energies. Different colours of Spiritual Energy continued to spread out and, one after another, magnificent light screens appeared. The scene was extremely spectacular.

Up in the sky above the plaza, countless gazes were nervously directed towards the magnificent plaza. They wondered which side would be even more fierce in the clash of power.

Dong!

Under everyone's nervous gaze, ten light beams continued to charge down.

Up on the pavilion, Mu Chen's gaze was icy-cold and his palm suddenly clenched. Suddenly, the ten light beams spiraled together under everyone's astonished gaze. As they madly spiraled, they turned into a single spiraling light beam.

Creak!

As the huge spiraling light beam streaked across, even the air issued fragile noises.

“What fine control!”

Someone cried out. Who would’ve expected that not only could Mu Chen control ten Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays, he could even make them to merge together.

Since that’s the case, they’d be even more fierce and fearsome.

Shhhuuu!

As this train of thought flashed across their hearts, it was like ten enraged dragons were shooting down and heavily clashed against the Spiritual Energy light screens.

Bang! Bang!

The instant they came in contact, everyone could hear each light screen shatter in an instant, one after another. The ten spiraling light beams swept past the defences like a hot knife through butter. On the plaza, huge cracks appeared from the Spiritual Energy.

Pfffft.

Multiple figures flew out, one after another, vomiting blood and were in terrible states. When Chen Hou and the rest that were at the rear saw how fierce those ten light pillars were, their facial expressions underwent a huge change.

Boom!

The Ten Spiritual Energy light pillars that swept over had, once again, charged towards the Spiritual Energy light screens that they formed before them. Suddenly, the light screens violently trembled as ripples rapidly spread out.

“We can’t withstand them!” beside Chen Hou was a person that had also reached Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase in his cultivation. That person’s face was flushed red as he barked.

“Withdraw!”

A smear of fear also flashed across Chen Hou’s eyes as the ten light beams combined into one. The impact caused by them was extremely

frightening. Although they had combined their strength into one, it was still impossible for them to truly merge their power together. Therefore, it was impossible for them to withstand the fearsome impact.

When the remaining members of the Demon's Gate heard Chen Hou's bark, they could only grit their teeth and immediately retreated at the same time.

Bang!

As they retreated, the Spiritual Energy light screens instantly shattered. The huge light beams were like enraged dragons as they roared and shot past them from the middle of the formation. Everyone that was affected by the impact flew out in an extremely terrible state as they spewed fresh blood.

Shhhhuuu!

As the light beams whistled past, the earth cracked. Thereafter, they charged past the plaza and heavily clashed against the Demon's Gate headquarters.

Even the earth violently trembled. The Demon's Gate headquarters was smashed into pieces from the impact as the huge pavilion was instantly turned into ruins.

After the light beams charged on without restraints for a period of time, the energy was gradually exhausted as it dulled down, bit by bit, and, ultimately, dispersed.

Smoke continued to spread throughout the entire plaza and it was in complete disorder.

Everyone's gaze looked at the scene before them with astonishment. In the vast plaza, there was roughly a huge and deep ravine that was roughly a dozen feet deep. The ravine swept past and went through the plaza, destroying the Demon's Gate headquarters.

On the plaza, there were many members of the Demon's Gate howling in grief. Only Chen Hou and a small minority with some powerful strength could stand on their feet. However, their faces were filled with

fear. Clearly, the frightening attack of the ten combined Spiritual Arrays made them feel fear.

"Those ten Spiritual Arrays were extremely powerful!"

Everyone looked at the slightly shocked and completely disordered members of the Demon's Gate. The power of those Spiritual Arrays was clearly powerful. If they were to fight normally, it would definitely not be so easy to defeat so many opponents at once.

After the frightening power was unleashed by the ten Spiritual Arrays, which caused even the sky gradually turn dull, it dispersed completely.

As the Spiritual Arrays dispersed, the pressure that enveloped the area also disappeared. Chen Hou and the rest who still had some fighting strength left directed their ferocious glares towards Mu Chen.

Mu Chen, however, ignored their gazes and directed his towards He Yao, instead. Along with the Demon's Gate headquarters being destroyed, the latter's face was also especially dark.

"You actually dared to wreck my Demon's Gate headquarters?!" He Yao's body was trembling. Clearly, he was enraged. He stared at Mu Chen with a vicious dark aura emitting from his eyes.

"Being treated like this, isn't it bad?"

Mu Chen lightly stared at him as his gaze became as sharp as blades. His face was also dark, "But when you bullied and humiliated my Goddess Luo Association's members, did you think of the consequences? The grand Demon's Gate actually used a wheeling fighting technique on a girl. Since you guys no longer wanted your face, then why should I leave such useless things to you guys?"

He Yao's gaze was dark. The reason why Chen Hou did all of that was he ordered him to. And him doing all of that was just to vent out the anger he had towards Mu Chen for not giving him any face. But who would've expected that Mu Chen would actually be so ruthless and did not spare any face for him?

"Boss, we'll help you capture that brat! We'll see what else can he do!"

Chen Hou barked. Shortly after, him and the other two Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase experts flew out as well and went directly towards Mu Chen.

"Get lost!!"

However, when they moved their bodies, Luo Li's figure appeared before them. The young girl had her jade-like hands on the hilt of her black longsword. Luo Li's pupils were ice-cold at this moment. A sharp sword aura swept out, causing cracks on the ground as she threw enraged slashes towards Chen Hou and the other two without the slightest show of mercy.

"You!"

The faces of Chen Hou and the other two drastically changed. They tasted how formidable Luo Li was so, naturally, they wouldn't be slow. The three of them acted together as their three Spiritual Energies clashed against the sword aura.

Bang!

The earth cracked and the bodies of Chen Hou and the other two trembled. They were sent flying back.

"You dare!" He Yao's gaze was cold as Spiritual Energy swept out from his body and he was about to take action against Luo Li.

"Same goes for you!" Mu Chen also issued a cold bark as he tightened his grab on the Spiritual Array Seed. The huge Spiritual Array that was above him slowly revolved.

Sensing the huge Spiritual Array emitting violent Spiritual Energy ripples, He Yao's eyes turned even darker as he fixed his eyes on Mu Chen, "Did you really think that you can deal with me by just relying on this Spiritual Array?!"

"Then come and try it!"

Mu Chen didn't yield in the slightest as he coldly stared at He Yao.

"Okay, then today, I'll see how formidable you are!" He Yao laughed with

anger as he took a step forth. Spiritual Energy rolled like huge waves.

However, just when He Yao was about to act, a figure flashed over and stood before Mu Chen. That figure gently smiled, “He Yao, this issue was created by your side. Why are you being so overbearing?”

“Su Xuan!”

When He Yao saw the girl that appeared before Mu Chen, his eyes instantly turned dark, “You’re trying to help him?”

“I just don’t wish to see the both of you fight and cause such unpleasantness.” Su Xuan lightly smiled.

The corner of He Yao’s eyes twitched from Su Xuan’s words. They’d already gone this far and what was this unpleasantness that she spoke of? Su Xuan was good with her words but, clearly, she was siding with Mu Chen.

“What if I refuse?” He Yao said with his eyes darkening.

“Mu Chen has saved the life of us, the two sisters, at least. Therefore, I can’t stand by and watch as he’s being bullied, so I’ll have to apologise.” Su Xuan said lightly. However, her words were clear that if He Yao wanted to touch Mu Chen, then she would definitely act as well.

He Yao’s gaze was dark as it became filled with an enraged blaze. Both of his fists were tightly clenched. This was the first time that he saw Su Xuan stand out to protect a guy. This made him feel jealousy in his heart and he was nearly set aflame by the jealousy.

He Yao’s palms were tightly clenched to the point that creaking sounds came from his fists. However, he chose not to act in the end, as it’s still not the time for him to show his cards.

He deeply inhaled a mouthful of air as the rage within his eyes slowly dulled down. However, he directed his vicious eyes towards Mu Chen and said coldly, “Mu Chen, don’t think that you won this time. I still have not treated you as a genuine opponent. But rest assured, in the Hunting War, I will set you as my prey. At that time, you’ll pay back everything that you’ve done today!”

“At that time…”

His dark eyes were, once again, directed towards Su Xuan, “No one will be able to save you!”

When Mu Chen heard his words, he lightly smiled. He slightly tightened his grip and the Spiritual Array Seed settled down and was restored its original rusty state, thereafter, he stored it.

“Senior Brother He Yao, no matter what you’re intending to do…”

He stood up on the pavilion and looked at He Yao. Thereafter, he waved his hand towards Luo Li and the rest who were below and turned around. There wasn’t that many ripples in his voice, but it resounded throughout the plaza.

“I, Mu Chen, will always accept your challenge.”

Chapter 273: Hidden

On their way back, the members of the Goddess Luo Association were extremely excited to the point that their faces were red. Earlier on, because of the Demon's Gate, everyone was tense and, at the same time, felt like they had a guilty conscience. Although Luo Li's strength was indeed the strongest among them, no matter what, she was, after all, only a girl. There were so many of them, but, in the end, they had to let a girl to stand up for them. Furthermore, Luo Li was injured by the wheeling fighting tactics that the other party had used. This made them feel extremely guilty.

Luckily, Mu Chen returned. Even when he faced the shameless and powerful Demon's Gate, he did not choose to swallow the grudge and, unexpectedly, he descended onto the Demon's Gate headquarters with a shocking appearance and returned everything that the other party had done to them.

The earlier scene filled everyone's hearts with excitement, even now. Even someone as powerful as He Yao still chose not to move in the end and could only watch the ten Spiritual Arrays wreak havoc.

There wasn't that many people that could force He Yao into such a spot, but to achieve that as a freshman, only Mu Chen could do it.

This accomplishment wasn't any inferior to his Pact of Three Moves with Li Xuantong.

When Mu Chen saw how excited everyone was, he only smiled in return and turned his sights towards the black-clothed girl that was following him. Luo Li was staring at him with a tranquil and soft gaze as her eyes rippled with emotion.

Noticing that he was watching her, Luo Li also gave him a light smile. Her smile was soft and clear, which softened Mu Chen's heart.

"Are you injured?" Luo Li asked in a soft voice. She naturally knew that it wasn't easy for Mu Chen in today's fight. It definitely wasn't inferior to his fight with Li Xuantong. However, compared to back then, the current Mu Chen was also much more powerful.

Mu Chen shook his head. Earlier on, they majority of the energy he used was from the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl. However, once he was in the Heart Array State, he acquired some exhaustion. But in terms of fatigue, it was naturally uncomparable to back then.

However, today's events made him go beyond his own expectations. At the beginning, he really did prepare ten Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays. However, he did not have the confidence to activate all of them at once, since the difficulty to do so was extremely high. But, when he entered the Heart Array State, he was immersed in a state of fine and exquisite control, which allowed him to control the ten Spiritual Arrays as he wished.

'It seems like my control over the Heart Array State has deepened.' Mu Chen thought to himself. Currently, the familiarity of his control over the Heart Array State had far surpassed that of what it was in the past.

He really did display a shocking talent in his path of Spiritual Array cultivation.

However, even though the power and might unleashed of what he did today was out of the ordinary, it required long and meticulous preparations. All of the Spiritual Arrays had to be engraved beforehand. Not to mention that the slightest mistake would put all of his efforts to waste.

"Mu Chen!"

A voice called out from behind him. Mu Chen paused as he turned around and saw Su Xuan's group rushing towards him.

"Senior Sister Su Xuan." when Mu Chen saw them, he immediately smiled in reply, "Many thanks for your earlier action."

Although Mu Chen wasn't afraid of He Yao flipping out, Su Xuan's earlier help still made him feel grateful for her actions.

"So you do know how to thank people... you left after we helped you." Su Ling'er snorted.

Mu Chen awkwardly smiled. He just didn't want to remain in that location any longer. The surrounding gazes made him feel uncomfortable.

Shortly after, he softly coughed and introduced Luo Li.

"Haha, Luo Li long, we've heard of you before. Little Sister Luo Li currently holds Rank 15 in the Heavenly Ranking, her fame within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy is even higher than yours." Su Xuan smiled as she looked at Luo Li with a smear of shock flashing across her eyes.

Back then, Chen Hou and his group came to the Goddess Luo Association to cause trouble, but were defeated by Luo Li, causing her rank in the Heavenly Ranking to rise to Rank 15. However, Luo Li didn't have any feelings for this as she wasn't that strongly attached to the rankings on the Heavenly Ranking. All of this happened because others were knocking on their door and, therefore, she fought.

Luo Li was a little embarrassed, "Senior Sister Su Xuan is flattering me."

The friendship between the girls grew very quickly and when facing with Luo Li with such outstanding temperament, even the ice-cold Li Qing revealed a smile and they rapidly got familiar with one another.

"You have to be cautious of He Yao." Su Xuan looked at Mu Chen as her gaze suddenly turned a little grave, "He Yao's always scheming and if I didn't sense incorrectly, he should have hidden his strength."

Mu Chen was stunned, but shortly after, he restored himself back to his previous state as he nodded his head. Not only did Su Xuan sense that, even he sensed that there were some dangerous ripples coming from He Yao. That fellow was rather dangerous.

"However, even after being forced to that point, he still refused to reveal his true strength." Mu Chen narrowed his eyes. What exactly was that fellow trying to do?

"Next month will be the Hunting War." Su Xuan lightly smiled.

"What you're trying to say is that he's planning to show his true strength at the Hunting War?" Mu Chen was shocked. Shortly after, a flash of light went past his eyes and he continued, "He's planning to surpass you on the Hunting War, right?"

“I’m probably not his true target.” said Su Xuan.

“Then his target is Li Xuantong?” Mu Chen was stunned. So it turned out that He Yao was going after Li Xuantong. No wonder he refused to reveal his strength to him, no matter what. It seemed that Li Xuantong was already making some preparations.

“He Yao’s ambitions are high and he’s not content with being behind someone. The Hunting War is a distinguished meeting of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. If he manages to surpass Li Xuantong on it, then his fame within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy will surpass the latter and he’ll chase after Shen Cangsheng.” said Su Xuan.

Mu Chen’s expression was a little solemn. He fought with Li Xuantong before and naturally knew how powerful that fellow was. If He Yao does have the confidence to fight with Li Xuantong, then he naturally had his own powerful trump cards that couldn’t be underestimated.

And, right now, the situation between him and He Yao was like ice and fire. The instant the Hunting War was opened, he would definitely be listed in He Yao’s prey list and, at that time, the latter clearly won’t conceal himself.

In the Hunting War, everyone had to rely on their true abilities. And if Su Xuan helped them at that time, he would be mocked and ridiculed instead.

Mu Chen narrowed his eyes as he thought of He Yao’s dark gaze. Shortly after, he smiled, “Senior Sister Su Xuan, I know.”

Since he had already done those things, he would certainly not regret his actions. No matter how much He Yao had hidden his ability, if the latter thought that he could be easily suppressed, it would definitely not go so easily.

Su Xuan lightly nodded. Regarding this matter, a reminder would be enough. Although He Yao was really powerful, this youth that stood before her wasn’t any normal person, either. As for the results between them, it will only be known after they’ve clashed.

The group of people talked for a moment before Su Xuan’s party left. Mu

Chen looked at their back figures and fell deep into his thoughts.

"What are you planning? Are you going to participate in the Hunting War?" Luo Li looked at Mu Chen as she asked.

"Since there are so many benefits in the Hunting War, I naturally have to participate in it." Mu Chen smiled. The Spiritual Light Empowerment would clearly benefit one's cultivation greatly. If he were to give it up, then the loss would be too great.

"Then, He Yao..." Luo Li slightly hesitated. If he participated in the Hunting War, then there wouldn't be that many rules and regulations. Aside from not being able to kill, even if they were to heavily injure the other party, there wouldn't be the slightest punishment.

He Yao's schemes were deep and, clearly, he wasn't a simple fellow to deal with. Facing this kind of opponent, one would have to maintain their vigilance and guard. Otherwise, who knew when he would be fatally wounded by the vicious vemon that was hiding in the dark.

"Rest assured, although He Yao has concealed a portion of his strength, I'm not someone that's easy to deal with, either." Mu Chen smiled, "Furthermore, don't we have a month's time? In this one month, I intend on entering the Lightning Territory to cultivate and make preparations for the Hunting War."

Although he managed to obtain the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl, he hadn't been able to fully grasp its profound intent. And since he had time right now, it's best that he studied it a little bit. Who knows, it might be able to enhance his strength.

There would definitely be many dark horses in this Hunting War and by adding powerful opponents like He Yao, if he were to slack a even little bit, he might be thrown far away. And clearly, this situation wasn't something that he's willing to see.

"Then, I'll accompany you." Luo Li lightly smiled.

When Mu Chen heard what she said, he couldn't stop smiling, "This is like the 'Husband wielding the sword, facing all of the enemies, as the wife

plays the zither, and follows the wave'."

A smear of redness appeared on Luo Li's face as she stared at Mu Chen. Thereafter, she quickened her steps towards Ye Qingling.

Mu Chen let out a huge laugh and quickly chased after the members of the Goddess Luo Association.

——

When Mu Chen's group left, the Demon's Gate headquarters was in ruins. He Yao, however, was solemnly looking at the headquarters that was left in ruins.

"Boss." behind him, the faces of Chen Hou and the rest were ugly. Being beaten by Mu Chen today was a huge loss of face for them, the Demon's Gate.

"Boss, if you were to take action, would that brat act so arrogantly?" Chen Hou said with a low voice. After all, he's a core member of the Demon's Gate, so, naturally, he knew some of He Yao's secrets.

He Yao indifferently threw a glance at him, then coldly said, "My opponent is Li Xuantong. A freshman is still not worthy enough for me to reveal my strength."

"But, you're just going to let that brat go?" Chen Hou unwillingly said.

Bang!

When he finished speaking, a smear of viciousness flashed across He Yao's eyes as he threw a palm out. Rolls of Spiritual Energy turned into a huge force as it instantly swept the ruined headquarters. All of the huge stones were turned into dust.

This scene made the members of the Demon's Gate silent out of fear.

"Rest assured, in the Hunting War, I will make that brat kneel and beg forgiveness for the things that he has done today. A small freshman really thinks that he can stand on top of my, He Yao's, head? What a reckless idiot!"

"For now, I'll allow him to live for another month."

He indifferently swept his sleeve as he turned around and left. His cold voice, however, spiraled around the ears of Chen Hou and the rest with a cold killing intent.

Chapter 274: Entering the Lightning Territory Once Again

Night engulfed the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy as Mu Chen quietly sat on his bed. Within his hand, a white light was flowing within a smooth pearl. There was also the sound of a dragon roaring, it's deep dragon roar caused even the air to tremble.

Mu Chen stared at the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl in his hand as doubt flashed across his eyes. Within the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl, there was a boundless amount of Spiritual Energy. He could use a small portion of the Spiritual Energy within. However, he could vaguely feel that that shouldn't be the full extent of the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl. However, every single time he attempted to enter the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl, he was rejected. The power within was rejecting his entry.

The rejection appeared weak, but it was extremely frightening to the point that Mu Chen didn't dare to forcefully barge in. Otherwise, the rejection would make him suffer.

"There seems to be a seal set within the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl." Mu Chen tightened his brows together as he muttered.

"You didn't guess wrong." The Nine Netherbird's intent suddenly resounded within his heart.

"You know what's wrong?" Mu Chen was slightly happy as he immediately enquired within his heart.

"This White Dragon Spiritual Pearl should be an inheritance object that was left behind by the White Dragon Sovereign. Except that there's a seal within it and, with your current ability, it is impossible for you to break it." said the Nine Netherbird.

"Are you able to break it?" Mu Chen immediately asked.

"As of right now, I'm afraid that it will be a little difficult." Nine Netherbird said, sounding a little helpless. After all, she still hasn't fully recovered.

“Then, what should we do?” Mu Chen was a little flabbergasted. If he could not break the seal, doesn’t it mean that he could only stare at it?

“To break this kind of seal, perhaps we can use an external force to aid us.” said the Nine Netherbird solemnly.

“An external power? What does that mean?” Mu Chen was a little astonished. Where can he borrow such a powerful external power?

“The place that you’re intending to go to tomorrow.”

A thought flashed in Mu Chen’s heart, “You’re talking about the Lightning Territory?”

His eyes lit up. Within the Lightning Territory, there was powerful and frightening external power. If he could borrow it, perhaps he’d be able to break through the seal of this White Dragon Spiritual Pearl.

“Yeah.”

Mu Chen lightly nodded as he tightly grasped the White Dragon Spiritual Peal. A smear of blaze flashed across his eyes. He wished he could enter the Lightning Territory now and borrow it’s power to break the seal on the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl.

“Okay, I’ll head for the Lightning Territory tomorrow!”

Hearing Mu Chen’s words, the Nine Netherbird’s intent also appeared to be excited, “This time, I want to refine a sufficient amount of Divine Lightning Beads. We’re still lacking more than 2,000,000 Spiritual Value Points before we’re able to purchase the Blood Essence of the Northern Sea Dragon, right?”

Mu Chen smiled as he nodded. In this Heaven Rank Mission, he obtained a total of 4,500,000 Spiritual Value Points, with only 2,500,000 Spiritual Value Points to go before he reached 7,000,000 Spiritual Value Points, the price for the Northern Sea Dragon’s Blood Essence.

Although it was not a small amount, at least they’re a step closer to it.

Mu Chen’s hand gently caressed the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl as expectation roused within his heart. If the Nine Netherbird obtained the

Northern Sea Dragon's Blood Essence, then it'll be able to fully recover and surpass the shackles of a Spiritual Beast, and become a genuine Divine Beast, right?

At that time, how powerful will it become? That was something that Mu Chen couldn't wait to see.

The next day, Mu Chen immediately headed out, after bidding farewell to Luo Li, early in the morning and immediately headed towards the direction of the Lightning Territory.

Outside the twisted space of the Lightning Territory, there were countless students rushing in. Among them, Mu Chen sensed a few with powerful Spiritual Energy ripples. On the spot, he inwardly smacked his lips. It seemed like many people were doing everything they could to make preparations for the Hunting War next month.

Outside the twisted space, there was a huge floating stone platform with a frightening amount of people arriving from several different directions. Thereafter, from this stone platform, they would enter the Lightning Territory.

Mu Chen landed on a platform and swept his eyes around. Thereafter, his gaze stopped at the edge of the platform, there was a huge silver tablet. It looked as though lightning was flickering on the huge tablet.

Around the huge platform, it was filled with many people. However, they were all pointing towards the huge silver tablet. Occasionally, there would be names flickering on top, and, from the looks of it, it was clearly not simple.

"What's that?" Mu Chen was a little astonished as he did not notice any silver tablets of that sort previously.

"This is the Lightning Territory Tablet, it's used to record the achievements of those outstanding students that went into the Lightning Territory." Someone that appeared to be a upperclassman smiled as he said.

Mu Chen looked over and swept his eyes over it, absorbing the

information on the silver tablet with his eyes. At the top of it, he saw several familiar names.

Shen Cangsheng, Lightning Territory's Highest Level, Ninth Level

Li Xuantong, Lightning Territory's Highest Level, Eighth Level

Su Xuan, Lightning Territory's Highest Level, Seventh Level

He Yao, Lightning Territory's Highest Level, Seventh Level

Li Peng, Lightning Territory's Highest Level, Seventh Level

The densely packed lightning names flickered. Every name represented powerful achievements. Within the Lightning Territory, there was a total of ten levels. The further you go, the more fearsome the lightning power becomes. Those who are slightly weaker wouldn't even dare to remain in it for long.

The Lightning Territory Tablet was also an aspect to see how many students have concealed their strength in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. On the silver tablet, aside from Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, who were able to pull some distance between the rest, the next ten were closely packed behind Su Xuan, as well as He Yao. There were some whose names have never appeared on the Heavenly Ranking before. Clearly, the strength that they possessed wasn't something that could be underestimated.

"As expected of Shen Cangsheng."

Mu Chen sighed. Previously, he was only able to reach the fourth level, but Shen Cangsheng had already reached the ninth level. If he took another step forward, he'd probably be able to reach the last level of the Lightning Territory.

This strength was, indeed, something that left others stunned.

Li Xuantong wasn't weak, either. He had reached the eighth floor, which made him just behind Shen Cangsheng. No wonder that person was a formidable figure that could challenge Shen Cangsheng.

"This time, I'll see how high I can ascend." Mu Chen's eyes flashed with

the desire to test himself. The last time he visited the Lightning Territory, he was only at the strength of Spirit Realm. But right now, his cultivation was at the Heavenly Fusion Stage and the methods that he possessed was also so much stronger.

Mu Chen glanced at the Lightning Territory Tablet and no longer made any stops as he charged into the twisted space. Lightning flickered and he appeared within the Lightning Territory as the lighting wreaked havoc.

Within the Lightning Territory, the sky was dark with lightning shooting down from every direction. The thunderous sound resounded in this entire space, causing even the heavens and earth to tremble.

This wasn't the first time Mu Chen visited the Lightning Territory. Therefore, he was quite familiar with this place. The first level of the Lightning Territory was too weak and wasn't suitable for him. Therefore, he did not make the slightest hesitation as he sped up and headed further into the depths.

The current Mu Chen was clearly much stronger than his first visit. Therefore, he already charged into the fourth level well before ten minutes.

However, he only made a slight stop in the fourth level and felt that the lightning power wasn't suitable for him. Therefore, he made a firm decision, gave up, and headed towards the fifth level.

In the Lightning Territory, the cultivation of Heavenly Fusion Stage was required to enter the fourth floor. As for the fifth level, it was a huge increase and the minimum requirement would be Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase or even Quasi-Heavenly Transformation Stage strength.

The further levels required even stricter requirements in cultivation.

Naturally, this level wasn't the only standard of judgement. Those with powerful means could also pass through.

With Mu Chen's current strength, charging into the fifth floor wasn't that difficult. When he entered the fifth floor, he only made a slight pause and shook his head again.

The lightning power wasn't sufficient to break the seal of the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl.

He, once again, pressed onwards.

In a short dozen, or so, minutes, he had already reached the protective screen of the sixth floor. However, all he did was throw a punch out and the violent Spiritual Energy instantly broke the protective screen.

His figure flashed and passed through the crack that lead to the sixth level of the Lightning Territory.

Rumble!

When Mu Chen entered the sixth level of the Lightning Territory, an alarming thunderous roar instantly resounded within his ears, as if it even made the blood within his body to start boiling.

He raised his head. This was the sixth level of the Lightning Territory, which was even darker. The thunderclouds up in the sky were so huge that the end of it could not be seen. They huge python-like lightning pierced through the heavens and earth. This scene looked as if Judgement Day had arrived.

Mu Chen sensed the violent Spiritual Energy within the heavens and earth. After a moment, he lightly shook his head, "Still not enough!"

Mu Chen muttered to himself. Thereafter, he raised his head towards the depths of the Lightning Territory. If he went in even further, it would be the seventh level of the Lightning Territory. Over there, not even a Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase could withstand the impact of the lightning.

"It requires the strength of Heavenly Transformation Stage Middle Phase..."

Mu Chen narrowed his eyes. Shortly after, his figure flew out. He wanted to break the seal of the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl as soon as possible and he could only rely on the powerful lightning of the Lightning Territory. Therefore, he had to do his best and go further in.

Although a Heavenly Transformation Stage Middle Phase's strength was powerful, it wasn't easy to obstruct Mu Chen.

Mu Chen's hands tightly clenched as his black pupils reflected the lightning world. It was especially ferocious.

Mu Chen rapidly flew past the sixth floor of the Lightning Territory. After a long time, his speed began to slow down as a twisted space appeared before him. A lightning screen pierced the heavens and earth and was blocking him.

Outside the lightning screen, there were many stone platforms with quite a few figures. Everyone that had reached this place wasn't any nameless figure. Even within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, they also possessed some fame. They were bitterly training here so that they could break through the screen and enter into the seventh floor of the Lightning Territory.

When Mu Chen arrived, he attracted quite a bit of attention. Especially when these people sensed Mu Chen's strength, they revealed faces of shock. With the strength of a Heavenly Fusion Stage, Mu Chen was actually able to reach the sixth floor?

Mu Chen did not care about everyone's gazes. He approached the huge lightning screen as he tightly clenched his fist. He had to charge through from here.

Chapter 275: Seventh Level of the Lightning Territory

Rumble

A gigantic lightning screen pierced through the heavens and earth with large lightning arcs leaping about, emitting astonishing Spiritual Energy ripples. It was as if even the space was twisted by it.

Mu Chen's figure stopped roughly a thousand feet outside the lightning screen as his eyes gravely stared at the lightning screen. This was what obstructed access to the seventh level. Therefore, it was naturally out of the ordinary. Even if some Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase experts to exerted their full strength against the lightning screen, it would be hard for them to make a crack on the screen to pass through.

"Strength of a Heavenly Transformation Stage Middle Phase..."

Mu Chen's fist clenched together as he inhaled a deep breath of air. He sat down on the air and closed his eyes.

"What's that fellow doing?"

On the stone platform outside of the lightning screen, there were some people paying attention to Mu Chen's abnormal actions. Immediately, they were a little astonished.

"Hmm, that person looks familiar. Doesn't he?"

Aside from some doubtful people, there were also some that managed to recognised Mu Chen. After all, he was no longer the nameless freshman that he was in the past. After his Pact of Three Moves with Li Xuantong, he was engraved into the memory of many upperclassmen.

"That's the freshman that managed to beat the Pact of Three Moves against Li Xuantong! His name should be Mu Chen, right?"

"So it was him, no wonder he dared to enter the sixth level of the Lightning Territory with just Heavenly Fusion Stage strength."

"But, from the looks of it, it seems that he's trying to charge through the

seventh level of the Lightning Territory, right? It shouldn't be possible, right? Not even I can pass through that screen..."

"Yeah. Even though that brat managed to take the three moves from Li Xuantong, his physical strength is still a little too weak. If he recklessly charged into the seventh level, that's simply seeking his own death."

Up on the stone platforms, there was an outburst of whispers. Some gazes were gathered onto the youth's figure that was sitting on the air.

Mu Chen wasn't bothered by those surrounding whispers. He focused his mind and, after a long while, all ten of his fingers started to form seals and he was rapidly forming Spiritual Seals.

The Spiritual Seals were increasing at a rapid speed and in just two minutes, a hundred Spiritual Seals were surrounding Mu Chen. Those Spiritual Seals whistled as they brought forth frightening Spiritual Energy ripples.

The current Mu Chen had already achieved Rank 4 Spiritual Array Master in the cultivation of Spiritual Arrays. At his best, the amount of Spiritual Seals that he could create had already reached a shocking amount of one hundred.

Up on the stone platform, everyone was looking at the hundred Spiritual Seals that were surrounding Mu Chen. Their eyes trembled. Reaching a hundred Spiritual Spiritual Seals was a threshold. Passing through that threshold, one will be able to achieve Rank 4 Spiritual Array Master. And the current Mu Chen had clearly reached that step.

Rank 4 Spiritual Array Masters are comparable to Heavenly Transformation Stage experts. They then understood why Mu Chen was able to reach the sixth level of the Lightning Territory with only his Heavenly Fusion Stage cultivation.

Shhhhhuuu! Shuuuu!

As they were grasping in surprise, the hundred Spiritual Seals that were surrounding Mu Chen whistled out. Thereafter, they merged with the heavens and earth. Instantly, the Spiritual Energy between the heavens

and earth gave off violent ripples. Spiritual Energy light rays gleamed as they interweaved, forming into a huge and complicated Spiritual Array diagram.

The Spiritual Energy light rays were sketching while releasing extremely violent Spiritual Energy ripples. Up in the sky, the light rays gradually gathered and everyone could see a complicated lotus-like Spiritual Array slowly being formed.

Onom! Onom!

It was as if a huge Spiritual Array was being made from black light Spiritual Energy that was emitting a resonating and trembling sound. Lights fluctuated along the powerful energy ripples.

This Spiritual Array was, naturally, the Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array. In the past, when Mu Chen arranged this Spiritual Array, he required a massive amount of energy. But along with his cultivation improving, he clearly no longer required the need to exhaust as much energy as he did in the past.

Mu Chen's eyes slowly opened and within his black pupils, a light flickered. Shortly after, his hand signs changed as a faint voice resounded throughout this place with the roaring lightning.

"Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array."

Boom!

The huge Spiritual Array slowly twisted to the point that even the black light lotus was also slanting to one side. The black petals gradually blossomed as boundless lights gathered at the heart of the lotus.

Shhhhhuuuu!

An extremely violent light beam shot out from the lotus heart and, shortly after, it pierced through the sky. Under all those amazed gazes, it heavily clashed against the lightning screen.

The lightning screen violently rippled as energy ripples endlessly fluctuated. Wherever the black light swept against, there were traces of

the lightning screen becoming twisted.

Mu Chen's eyes were calm as he rotated one of his fingers. The huge black lotus started to spin, along with the black light. It was like a drill that was drilling into the lightning screen.

Creak Creak

The lightning arc violently flickered as a little black mark appeared on the solid lightning screen. Thereafter, the mark slowly cracked open. Although the hole was small, it was sufficient for a person to pass through it.

"He actually cracked it!" someone cried out with a shocked and admiring voice.

Up in the sky, Mu Chen's figure suddenly stood up. There wasn't the slightest hesitation in him as he turned into a stream of light and charged towards the crack at lightning speed.

As Mu Chen charged into the lightning screen. The giant Spiritual Array slow started to disperse, bit by bit. The screen rapidly restored itself back to normal, leaving plenty of astonished and admiring gazes from outside.

Mu Chen charged through the crack and the darkness before him only lasted for a moment before it lit up. Shortly after, he opened his eyes and was a little shocked as he looked at the shocking scene before him.

It was a dark world with the lightning clouds up in the sky looking as though they were about to fall onto the ground. This caused the sky to appear extremely low and the pressure was extremely hard to bear.

Rumble!

Mu Chen raised his head and saw that the seventh level of the lightning territory was actually drizzling with rain. He extended his hand out, allowing the rain to fall onto his body. Immediately, his body started to shake uncontrollably.

He clenched his hand, caught those fine raindrops and discovered that the raindrops were formed by lightning. When they fell onto one's body, it

would bring tiny amounts of stabbing pain a with numbing sensation.

The lightning energy of the seventh level was actually powerful to this extent.

A smear of astonishment flashed across Mu Chen's eyes. No wonder the requirement to enter the seventh level was so high. Otherwise, it would be hard to endure while training here.

"The lightning energy in the seventh level is rather vigorous, it should be sufficient to break the seal."

Mu Chen slightly pondered, before his body flew out. Dozens of minutes later, his figure began to slow down. In front of him, there was a majestic mountain. There weren't any plants on the surface of mountain, it was empty with little life force.

At the peak of the mountain, there was a metallic-looking lightning platform.

Mu Chen's figure landed on the lighting platform and sat down. Up above him, the lighting clouds looked like black ink, due to the attraction of the lighting energy floating quietly up in the sky. In the clouds, there weren't any astonishing lightning bolts flickering about. However, there was some lightning that managed to get out as the black clouds moved, emitting a frightening amount of ripples.

The seventh level of the lightning energy was much more powerful compared to the sixth level.

When Mu Chen looked at the lighting clouds, where the frightening lightning energies were gathering, he wasn't worried; instead, he was happy. The more powerful the lightning energy, the more effective it would be against the seal on the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl.

Mu Chen looked at the cold lightning platform and slightly held his breath. Shortly after, he deeply inhaled and infused the Spiritual Energy within him into the lightning luring platform.

Onom Onom

As he poured his Spiritual Energy into the platform, the originally black lightning luring platform started to emit some light.

When the lightning platform was activated by Mu Chen, the ink-like lightning clouds started to wiggle. The lighting clouds extended out, little by little, like an ancient lightning beast that was about to emerge.

Mu Chen's face was grave as he clearly sensed that there was a frightening amount of energy ripples being gathered between this heaven and earth.

Rumble!

A deep thunderous roar resounded up in the sky. Mu Chen raised his head and stared at the lightning clouds. Just when he was about to welcome the lightning's impact, he suddenly saw some rain falling towards him from the black clouds.

Those rain droplets appeared to be brilliant silver and within those droplets, there were violent lightning energies being contained. Every single drop was way more horrifying than the lightning at the fourth level.

It was a lightning rain.

Crack Crack

The rain was falling down under Mu Chen's startled gaze and fell onto the surface of his body.

Bang! Bang!

Mu Chen's figure felt as though he had suffered the impact of some lightning. Every single raindrop exploded the moment they fell onto his body. The frightening energies within them caused red marks to appear on the surface of his body. That intense pain instantly traveled throughout his body.

Mu Chen couldn't help taking a deep breath. He never imagined that the rain that looked so gentle would be so frightening.

The lightning rain continued to explode and travel along the surface of Mu Chen's body and into his pores. Faint crackling sounds resounded.

That was the lightning energy traveling through his flesh and meridians.

An intense pain, along with the faint numbness, was spreading throughout Mu Chen's body. Aside from the intense pain, there was an abnormal content sensation.

Mu Chen smiled as he looked at the falling rain. His fist clenched as a white light flickered. The White Dragon Spiritual Pearl appeared in his grasp, emitting a deep resounding dragon's roar.

Mu Chen stared at the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl in his hand and, shortly after, he slowly raised his hand. The White Dragon Spiritual Pearl floated above his head as a faint white light rippled out, forming into a light barrier and blocked all of the raindrops.

When the lightning rain fell on the light barrier formed by the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl, it instantly caused ripples.

Both of Mu Chen's hands stuck to the cold lighting luring platform as he poured his Spiritual Energy into it, pushing the effect of the lightning luring platform to it's greatest limit.

Boom!

The lightning luring platform burst forth with dazzling light that instantly shrouded Mu Chen's body within it. A powerful attraction burst out.

Rumble!

As the lightning luring platform was pushed to the limits by Mu Chen, it instantly caused deep lightning roars to resound between this heaven and earth. Some ink black thunderclouds that were far away also started to be attracted towards this location.

The entire heavens and earth had instantly darkened down.

Only the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl that was on top of Mu Chen's head was still emitting some light and stood towering without any movements.

Mu Chen raised his head and mumbled, while looking at those ink-like

thunderclouds.

“Next up, give me a merciless one!”

Boom!

As Mu Chen muttered, those ink-like thunderclouds up in the sky instantly shrank and in the next instant, it was a torrential downpour!

Chapter 276: Breaking the Seal

Crack Crack

As the brilliant downpour fell, a majority of the rain was absorbed as it whistled towards Mu Chen's direction. The remaining raindrops fell onto the ground.

On the surrounding bald mountains, some of them would occasionally be hit by the stormy raindrops and would instantly crumble. Thereafter, they would be reduced to ashes and leave dense and deep holes on the mountains.

No wonder there wasn't any life force around here. Facing this kind of harsh environment, there wasn't any powerful plants that could survive here.

Onom Onom

Mu Chen wasn't distracted by the scene that was around him. His eyes were fixed on the light screen that was above him. At the heart of the light screen was the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl that had not moved a single jolt. It was constantly emitting a white light as it obstructed the storming lightning rain.

Under the wash of the lightning rain, the white screen was also rippling with fluctuations.

More and more lightning rain whistled down. Just from the looks of it, it was extremely shocking. However, the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl wasn't an ordinary object, even with the rain wreaking havoc, it still stood towering and did not move.

Looking at it, Mu Chen was shocked and overjoyed. He was shocked at the power of the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl that could even withstand such lightning rain falling on it. He was overjoyed as the more powerful the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl was, there would be more benefits that he would gain when the seal broke.

Rumble!

Up on the horizon, the ink-like lightning clouds violently wiggled about, as though they sensed how powerful the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl was. As they wiggled, the stormy rain became even more violent. That scene caused Mu Chen to be alarmed. Under this storm, even a Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase expert would be heavily wounded by it.

Roar!

The White Dragon Spiritual Pearl was heavily clashing against the falling lightning rain. A deep dragon roar burst forth as the white light rippled, as though it was enraged by the rain. The white light engulfed Mu Chen and the lightning rain that was falling on it was dispersed.

Rumble!

Towards the provoking roar, the lightning clouds at the horizon also gave their reply. As lightning clouds wiggled about, the rain actually started to merge.

Shhhuuuu! Shhhhuuu!

Fine lightning rain merged together and formed into silver lightning that was as thick as a person's arm. They pierced through the heavens and heavily clashed against the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl, along with an irresistible violent energy.

As the two astonishing powers clashed, ripples fluctuated out that caused even the space to twist.

The White Dragon Spiritual Pearl was fiercely clashing against the layers of clouds.

Mu Chen sat on the silver lightning platform as he raised his head, witnessing the fight between the two forces. He constantly controlled the lightning platform, continuously increasing its power.

He wasn't worried that the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl couldn't take it, he was just worried that the lightning energy wasn't powerful enough and would be unable to break the seal on the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl. Otherwise, all of his effort would go to waste.

However, he still belittled the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl. As an item of a Sovereign, it had gone through years of time and yet it was still so powerful.

The lightning clouds that filled the whole sky continued for a full three days and three nights. However, the light emitting from the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl was still so dazzling. Frightening Spiritual Energy ripples fluctuated as they dispersed the liquid lightning.

Because Mu Chen was constantly activating the effects of the lightning platform, there would be thunderclouds constantly being attracted towards this region and they would merge together. During these three days and three night's time, the violent lightning rain had not stopped for a moment.

"The White Dragon Spiritual Pearl is way too powerful..."

Mu Chen couldn't help smacking his lips. Under the impact, even a Heavenly Transformation Stage Middle Phase expert would not dare to endure for so long. However, seeing the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl, it was still so lively and there weren't any signs of the seal being broken.

"I refuse to believe that you can keep going on!"

Mu Chen grounded his teeth and poured his Spiritual Energy into the lightning platform again. The current lightning platform burst forth with great light.

This continued for a full ten days!

In these ten days, the lightning rain never stopped.

Although the violent rain caused the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl to dim a little, the seal still stood strong. This made Mu Chen a little speechless. No wonder even the Nine Netherbird said that it didn't have any confidence in breaking the seal on the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl, it was actually this powerful.

Mu Chen raised his head and gravely looked up at the sky. Because he continuously used the lightning platform, the entire region was basically filled with thunderclouds. The scene was so dark that even the space was

about to be suppressed.

The thunderclouds in this area were already extremely frightening to the point that even Mu Chen was a little panic-stricken as he understood that if it was him, there was no way he could fully escape from this situation.

There weren't that many people that dared to attract thunderclouds in such a fierce manner in the seventh level of the Lightning Territory. Although the lightning energy in the Lightning Territory could refine Spiritual Energy, if one were to over refine their Spiritual Energy, they would exploded into dust...

Huuuu

Mu Chen exhaled a mouthful of air as he looked at the ink-like thunderclouds. Because of the lightning energy being way too violent, Mu Chen could see lightning flickers within the thunderclouds, as if they had formed into a lightning river. That river was slowly flowing within the thunderclouds, emitting ripples that would make anyone's scalp tingle.

"I can't carry on..."

MMu Chen muttered. From the current situation, if he were to carry on, who knows how long it would take him and the Hunting War was less than a month away. Clearly, he couldn't spend too much time on breaking the seal.

"Seems like I have to get even fiercer."

Mu Chen slightly hesitated. Shortly after, he clenched his teeth and flicked his fingers. The White Dragon Spiritual Pearl brought along a torrential white light, it was like a light beam as it soared up into the lightning river that was flowing within the thunderclouds.

The lightning river was formed from the violent lightning energy that accumulated after more than ten days. Within it, the lightning energy was way too violent that even Mu Chen felt a little palpitation. However, this was the only way for him right now.

Shhhhhuuuu!

The white light soared up and was especially eye-catching in this dark horizon.

At the end of the horizon, who knows how many people have gathered here. They were all the people that were training in the seventh level of the Lightning Territory. They'd noticed the commotion at Mu Chen's side and, henceforth, they came to investigate.

They were exceptionally astonished that there would be someone that dared to lure such threatening thunderclouds. Even they didn't dare to casually step foot into that region.

This made them a little curious, they did not know which fellow had concealed himself for so long and then suddenly burst out by actually causing such a huge scene...

"Something flew up into the thunderclouds."

Under the darkened horizon, someone spoke. They saw something soaring up to the darkened sky and into the white light in the thunderclouds.

"There was already a lightning river formed in the thunderclouds, what is that guy thinking? Doesn't he know how fearsome the violent lightning river is?"

When those that could be considered to be outstanding in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy saw this scene, their faces changed. Shortly after, all of them moved back simultaneously with shock filling their eyes.

Mu Chen, naturally, didn't know the attention that he had attracted from his actions. His eyes were fixed on the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl. The latter had already turned into a white light piercing through the thunderclouds and into the lightning river.

Rumble!

The instant they clashed, there was a thunderous roar in the horizon. It violently resounded throughout the sky and under the noise, even the horizon started to tremble.

Boom!

The omnipresent lightning light burst out from the thunderclouds and, under that lightning, the ink-black thunder clouds started to rapidly dissipate.

In the range of two hundred li, the black thunderclouds rapidly disappeared.

The lightning was all attracted by the liquid body of lightning, possessing terrifying power. Mu Chen watched as a mountain peak was reduced to dust by the liquid formed from the lightning.

Mu Chen felt his scalp tingling as he immediately turned off the lightning luring platform. However, he was on a mountain peak as well and there were liquid-forms of the lightning flashing down.

Mu Chen's face drastically changed. The lightning speed was too fast that he could not evade in time.

Boom!

When the liquid-formed lightning was about to hit Mu Chen, torrential black flames swept out of his body and formed into a pair of huge wings that were engulfed in black flames, protecting him.

Bang! Bang!

The liquid-form lightning landed on the flaming black wings and burst forth with violent ripples. Thereafter, they gradually dissipated.

"Thanks."

Mu Chen was relieved as he spoke in his heart. He knew that it was the Nine Netherbird that helped him. Otherwise, he would be in a terrible state from the liquid-form lightning.

"The seal on the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl should be breaking soon." the Nine Netherbird's voice sounded in Mu Chen's heart.

When Mu Chen heard what it said, he immediately raised his head and saw the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl bathed in the lightning river. Under the corrosion of the violent energy, the light on the White Dragon

Spiritual Pearl dimmed down.

As the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl dimmed down, the dragon pattern that was engraved on the surface of the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl also started to disappear, bit by bit.

The speed of the dragon pattern disappearing was extremely fast. In a few dozen breath's time, it thoroughly dissipated. In that instant, when the dragon pattern disappeared, Mu Chen could clearly sense pure Spiritual Energy ripples exploding from within.

If the Spiritual Energy of the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl was previously restricted, then, right now, it had been truly unleashed.

"The seal is gone!"

Joy filled Mu Chen's eyes. After all his efforts, he had finally broke the seal on the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl.

Shhhhuu!

The flaming black wings that were protecting Mu Chen shot into the lightning river and grabbed onto the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl. Thereafter, they quickly returned. However, in just a few short breaths, the black flames on the wings dissipated a little.

Mu Chen extended his hand out and grabbed onto the cool White Dragon Spiritual Pearl. He could sense that, right now, he had truly obtain the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl!

Chapter 277: Foreign Fiends

On the lightning luring platform, Mu Chen looked at the warm White Dragon Spiritual Pearl in his hand with unconcealable joy in his eyes. But fortunately, he rapidly restored his clarity and did not investigate the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl. With a flip of his hand, he stored the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl.

Up in the sky, the lightning river was still wreaking havoc on this land. When Mu Chen saw it, he leaped down the mountain peak as he ran, sticking close to the ground.

The commotion that he caused in this area was too huge. Previously, he had already sensed some gazes staring at his direction. Therefore, he clearly could not continue to remain here any longer and had to find a new place to cultivate.

Mu Chen flew close to the ground, avoiding the pouring torrents. After a few minutes, he managed to leave the region where the thunderclouds were wreaking havoc. After he left, the frightening lightning ripples had also weakened, little by little.

The surrounding pressure that was slightly dissipating made Mu Chen feel relieved. Shortly after, he pushed his speed to the limits and rapidly left this region, searching for a new remote area, before he slowed himself down.

There was a short hill that wasn't that eye-catching in this mountain range. Furthermore, by borrowing the surrounding mountains, he could avoid anyone noticing this area.

Mu Chen's figure landed on top of the hill. He looked around before calming himself down. With a grasp of his hand, the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl had, once again, appeared in his hand.

Only now did he have time to take a good look at the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl, whose seal had been broken.

There wasn't that many changes on the exterior, except that the white

dragon patterns on it had disappeared. Within the pearl, a white mist looked as though it had penetrated the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl as it curled around the surface of the pearl. It appeared extremely magical.

Mu Chen grabbed onto the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl as he sensed the boundless energy within it. His expression also couldn't help turning grave. Thereafter, he deeply inhaled a mouthful of air and his hands came together with the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl floating on top of both of his palms.

A pitch-black Spiritual Energy poured out of Mu Chen's palms and shrouded the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl.

Just when Mu Chen's Spiritual Energy was about to come in contact with the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl, the pearl immediately burst forth with dazzling light and shroud his figure. When the white light shrouded him, Mu Chen's eyes blurred and soon after, he realised that the scenery before him had changed.

"That's..."

Mu Chen looked at the white world as he was engrossed in his own thoughts. This should be the world within the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl. Back then, when it was being sealed, he did attempt to try it, but had been directly rejected by the pearl. Now that the seal was broken, he could finally enter it.

He looked around and slightly hesitated. Thereafter, he flew towards the boundless white world. As he marched forth, the white mist started to dissipate.

When Mu Chen moved, the surrounding scenery changed again. The white mist rapidly disappeared and a landscape appeared, it was a vast world.

Mu Chen stood on the horizon as he looked down on the world. When he was slightly at a loss, a scarlet-blood colour appeared on the far horizon. Thereafter, the scarlet-blood colour surged over along with an endless chill. On the spot that the scarlet-blood coloured tidal wave past, endless lifeforms were being devoured. Even the various energies between

the heavens and earth were extinguished by the torrential scarlet-red colour.

At the front of the scarlet-blood colour tidal wave, there seemed to be countless figures soaring up into the sky as they tried their best to obstruct it. However, their powers were tiny before the scarlet-blood coloured tidal wave.

Countless hopeless screams resounded within the entire world as they fell into the terrifying Judgement Day.

This was a devastating disaster.

The scarlet-blood colour slowly spread to the unfamiliar world as the lifeforms were being devoured. The energies between the heavens and earth weren't an exception, either, as they became polluted.

A world filled with lifeforms were all entirely annihilated at this moment.

Mu Chen was drenched in a cold sweat as he watched the scene before him. His heart was filled with fear. What was that scarlet-blood coloured tidal wave doing in this world? It's actually so terrifying.

Mu Chen watched the scene as a blood-light gathered. There was an illusory figure filled with scarlet scales that walked out. It was like a demonic god that looked as though it was the most sinister thing in this world had directed its pupils towards Mu Chen's direction.

As the gaze was directed at his direction, Mu Chen's heart jolted. The scenery before him changed. It was like a world that was about to be destroyed. There were countless figures within the towering mountain tearing space cracks and left, fleeing for their lives.

Mu Chen looked at those figures and, among them, there was a white-haired figure that he had seen before.

"That's the White Dragon Sovereign?!"

Mu Chen's heart violently jolted as he muttered out.

The scene before him watered down as though countless months and

years had shuttled past. When Mu Chen recovered, the scenery before him had restored back to the white misty world.

Mu Chen's forehead was filled with sweat as his heart was still shocked. The scene from before gave him a huge shock. Just what were those scarlet-blood coloured lifeforms?

Could it be that among all those who escaped, the White Dragon Sovereign was among them?

"Correct, I had escaped from there."

Suddenly, a faint voice resounded out. Mu Chen was startled as he immediately raised his head. In the white misty world, the white mist started to gather as a deep dragon roar resounded out. As the white mist gathered, it turned into a huge white dragon that soared towards the horizons.

The white dragon spiraled and Mu Chen sat down before it. At the head of the white dragon, a light flickered and a figure had appeared. That figure had snow-white hair but his skin was youthful. His pair of white pupils were exceptionally bizarre.

He sat on the white dragon and his pupils stared at Mu Chen.

"Haha, it seems that you've broken the seal within the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl." That white-pupiled figure then faintly smiled. His gentle voice resounded in this white misty world.

"White Dragon Sovereign?"

When Mu Chen saw that figure, his heart jolted. In the space of the Spirit Treasury, he had seen this figure before. However, the figure that he saw was extremely blurry, and right now, the latter was extremely clear.

Precisely because of the clarity, Mu Chen could vaguely sense the terrifying Sovereign's pressure. Even if the latter had fallen, his Sovereign pressure still existed.

"Mu Chen pays respect to elder. I was lucky to obtain the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl, it was rude and impetuous of me to break the seal. I seek

your forgiveness for the alarm." Mu Chen cupped his hands as he said cautiously.

Although the White Dragon Sovereign had fallen, an existence of his level could cause huge danger to him with the slightest method they had left behind. Therefore, it was better for him to be more humble.

The White Dragon Sovereign's pupils stared at Mu Chen and, shortly after, he laughed as he waved his hand, "It was your fate to obtain this White Dragon Spiritual Pearl that I had left behind."

Mu Chen nodded and hesitated awhile, before couldn't help asking, "What was it that I saw earlier?"

The scene that he saw earlier, a world with billions of lifeforms being annihilated was way too frightening.

"Just scenes that I've experienced." the White Dragon Sovereign faintly smiled and continued, "The Great Thousand World was boundless and was the location where countless Lower Planes intercepted. It was extremely savage and cruel, it wasn't something that you can understand."

Mu Chen was speechless. Although he had not experienced the frightening situation before, he could sense how horrifying it was.

"What was that thing within the blood-coloured tidal wave?" Mu Chen asked. That lifeform made him feel fear.

"That was one of the Foreign Fiends. We call it as the Fiend Blood Tribe. What you've just seen was a world that they had destroyed and it was my hometown. Haha, I was someone who had escaped from the Lower Planes." the White Dragon Sovereign smiled, however, his smile was numbing and mournful.

"What are the Foreign Fiends?" Mu Chen muttered.

The White Dragon Sovereign slightly lowered his head, "I don't have much understanding towards them. They are born in the Great Thousand World and are towards the inner sides. If without any mishap, perhaps you won't come to know about these things in your entire life."

“But for the Lower Planes, they are extremely terrifying. Once they find a lower plane and corrode it, the outcome is the annihilation of all life forms, just as what you’ve seen earlier on.”

“Although it sounded unreal to you, have you heard of this existence called the Martial Ancestor before?” the White Dragon Sovereign looked at Mu Chen.

“The Martial Ancestor, Ling Dong?” Mu Chen was startled.

The White Dragon Sovereign nodded, “The Martial Ancestor was also from the Lower Planes. Furthermore, his Lower Planes had once suffered the attacks of the Fiends. But the Martial Ancestor was, after all, much stronger than you and I. Not only did he expel the fiends, he also managed to behead a branch of the Fiend Tribe’s Emperor.”

“Although it was just a branch, the power that they possessed was something that the Lower Planes could not withstand. To be able to achieve that as someone from the Lower Planes, the Martial Ancestor was, indeed, worthy of other’s admiration. He was much stronger than us.”

Mu Chen was stunned. Compared to the Lower Planes, the Great Thousand World had more advantages. The level of experts here was far more powerful than those of the Lower Planes. For this Martial Ancestor to make achievements up to this step with the resources of the Lower Planes, he was indeed, not simple. No wonder he could establish such a powerful existence like the Martial Realm in the Great Thousand World.

“Haha, I’ve not spoke for a long time and I have, indeed, spoke too much in such a short while.”

The White Dragon Sovereign smiled as he gradually recovered. He was, after all, a remnant of intent right now. At the spot, he waved his hand as he looked at Mu Chen, “it was fate that we met. Since you’re able to obtain this White Dragon Spiritual Pearl and also breaking the seal, then let me lend you a helping hand.”

As he finish speaking, his sleeves waved and an endless amount of white mist surged over. The white mist contained pure and boundless Spiritual Energy.

The White Dragon Sovereign smiled as he pointed towards the air. Torrential waves surged in this world with the wind and clouds rolled, and boundless pure Spiritual Energy was pouring towards Mu Chen in tidal waves.

“It’d be up to your ability on how much remnant energy you can absorb that was left by me.”

Chapter 278: Heavenly Transformation Stage

Boom!

A Majestic Spiritual Energy suddenly surged out of the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl as the endless Spiritual Energy poured into Mu Chen's body. Under the overflowing sensation, Mu Chen felt a swelling sensation.

The Spiritual Energy within the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl was way too much for him.

"I can't absorb all of it!"

Mu Chen's heart flashed with that thought as he immediately flew out, landing onto a lightning luring platform that was closest to him and rapidly activated the platform. Thereafter, thunder clouds started to gather on the horizon. However, compared to his previous encounter, it was much more gentle.

But, of course, this comparison was only to his previous encounter. The lightning energy in the seventh level was extremely robust. Even a Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase expert would find it hard to bear. If it wasn't for Mu Chen having some means up his sleeve, it was basically impossible for him to enter into this level.

Pitch-black thunder clouds gathered above Mu Chen as lightning rain fell, hitting Mu Chen and causing red marks to appear on his body. At the same time, the lightning energy also flowed into the pores all over his body as they endlessly poured onto his body.

When the lightning energy poured onto Mu Chen's body, it instantly caused a conflict with the boundless energy from the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl. As the two forces clashed, they reacted with a shocking response.

The lightning energy in the lightning territory possessed an effect of refining Spiritual Energy. Henceforth, when it clashed with the vast Spiritual Energy from the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl, the Spiritual

Energy started to slowly shrink. As the Spiritual Energy shrank, the colour turned increasingly deep and refined.

With the refining aid from the lightning energy, Mu Chen slowly exhaled a mouthful of air. Shortly after, he circulated the Great Pagoda Art to refine the Spiritual Energy and constantly absorbed them. Lastly, they poured into his aura sea, and were absorbed by the small spirit that was seated within.

This speed of cultivation was way faster compared to his ordinary speed. However, that wasn't the crucial point, the crucial point was that the Spiritual Energy from the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl was extremely pure without any consciousness. Henceforth, it did not resist Mu Chen's refinement, which caused this method of cultivation to be smooth.

In his aura sea, the small spirit rippled with light around him as it devoured the Spiritual Energy that was endlessly pouring into his aura sea. As he devoured it, he started to slowly grow and the Spiritual Energy ripples that were emitted from him also grew stronger.

The light that was emitting from the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl also grew stronger. Thereafter, it shroud Mu Chen's body into it. The black thunderclouds that were above Mu Chen have been constantly moving around as mild lightning rain fell. All that lightning energy was being endlessly poured onto Mu Chen's body to refine the Spiritual Energy from the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl.

Mu Chen tightly closed his eyes. His expression was focused as he kept circulating the Great Pagoda Art to refine it. Thereafter, he did not carry out any other methods and could accept the power from the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl.

However, he also left some caution. Although the speed of his strength growing was fast, there was a limit to it. If he were to jump too fast at once, it would cause his Spiritual Energy to be unstable, which would result in failure, which wouldn't be a good news to is future days.

But, right now, it was all still within Mu Chen's control.

His cultivation was already on the right track.

Under this type of cultivation, the days started to pass and in a blink of an eye, five days had already past. The space in the seventh level was considerably huge and vast. The amount of people that could step into this level was little in number. Adding the fact that Mu Chen chose a remote area, there wasn't anyone disrupting his cultivation during these five days.

And in these five days, the Spiritual Energy ripples that were emitting from Mu Chen's body grew to quite powerful.

Splash! Splash!

The thunder rain fell and in that area, there was a bald mountain peak. A slim figure was seated on the lightning luring platform, allowing the lightning rain to fall on his body.

His clothing had already been reduced to dust by the lightning rain in these five days. A faint silvery luster was being emitted from his skin, it was due to the lightning energy constantly refining his body.

In between both his palms, the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl slowly revolved as an extremely pure Spiritual Energy endlessly poured into his body without ending.

However, Mu Chen did not accept the limitless energy. His eyes abruptly opened. The instant his eyes were opened, lightning flashed across his black pupils. The lightning formed into thunder as it shot forth from his eyes.

Considerably powerful Spiritual Energy ripples emitted from Mu Chen's body as they sent stones that were around the lightning luring platform flying.

Under the powerful Spiritual Energy ripples, the neverending lightning rain was blocked from of Mu Chen's body, maintaining a distance of roughly five feet, before penetrating through it and fell.

Mu Chen exhaled a long lump of white mist that was infused with some lightning. His gaze gradually restored it's calmness. Shortly after, his intent moved and he saw the changes in this aura sea.

His current spirit had already expanded by a fold as the Spiritual Energy's luster constantly rippled around it. Within his spirit, there was exceptionally powerful Spiritual Energy ripples.

Compared to the past, the ripples were several times more powerful, far surpassing Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase. However, there was still a distance to Heavenly Transformation Stage.

Quasi-Heavenly Transformation Stage!

The corner of Mu Chen's lips rose into a satisfied smile. This time round, his strength had undoubtedly flew from Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase to Quasi-Heavenly Transformation Stage.

And in the process, he had skipped Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase.

"Quasi-Heavenly Transformation Stage."

Mu Chen clenched both of his fists as his intent moved, pitch-black Spiritual Energy that was blazing with black flames was surging out in waves as it swept out. Looking from afar, it looked like huge black smoke that soared up into the horizon. Even the lightning rain was unable to shake it.

His current state was way too powerful, compared to before.

Mu Chen lowered his head to the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl in his hand. The latter had already turned a lot more dull as the white mist that was fluctuating within it was also no longer brilliant.

However, the Spiritual Energy within still wasn't fully exhausted yet. Likewise, that Spiritual Energy would cause a huge impact in his path of cultivation. As Mu Chen wasn't someone that lacked foresight that would be tempted for temporary benefits and forfeits his future paths.

He grasped the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl and, with a move of his intent, he had, once again, entered into the misty world, where the White Dragon Sovereign, who was seated on a mist-formed White Dragon was. The latter's figure had also dulled down by a lot.

"How rare."

At the sight of Mu Chen, the White Dragon Sovereign lightly smiled as he said something that most people wouldn't understand.

Mu Chen was also blank. Those words that the White Dragon Sovereign spoke of was definitely not directing to his cultivation leaping from Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase to Quasi-Heavenly Transformation Stage. Even a blockhead with this opportunity could have his strength risen to Heavenly Transformation Stage easily. His current advancement was already considered rather wasteful.

"Although the Spiritual Energy that was left behind by me was without any intent, it was still something that I've cultivated, after all. When poured into a person's body, it could be easily absorbed, but compared to the Spiritual Energy that one personally cultivated, there was still a small difference."

The White Dragon Sovereign lightly smiled, "Although this small difference was unnoticable right now, perhaps it would cause obstruction to one's future growth."

"It is indeed rare for someone to resist the temptation of strength." the smile on the White Dragon Sovereign's face turned a little more gentle. Mu Chen's actions had, indeed, given him a high impression.

Mu Chen was a little embarrassed that he was praised as he ruffled his head, "You're over praising, Senior. In this world, only those that gained strength by themselves are the most dependable. I'm already satisfied with the opportunity. If I were to hope for more, I'm afraid that I would not be able to bear it."

All these years, Mu Chen's cultivation was steadily stable and his foundation was exceptionally firm. Although the power left behind by the White Dragon Sovereign was tempting, it wasn't something that was worth him damaging his foundation. Although a Sovereign expert was powerful, Mu Chen believed that there would be a day where he could reach that state as well. Or even surpass it!

The White Dragon Sovereign lightly nodded his head with a smear of appreciation flashing through his eyes. Shortly after, he patted the white

dragon that he was mounting, “This intent of mine won’t hold out for long. The remaining power in the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl can be given to you for future usage. Furthermore, if you’ve encountered a strong enemy, you can ignite the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl. I believe that even Heavenly Completion Stage experts would have to run.”

“Many thanks, Senior.” Mu Chen thanked sincerely.

The White Dragon Sovereign lightly smiled, “I just find you out of the ordinary. My intent was supported by the Spiritual Energy within the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl and, therefore, I could exist. If you’d absorbed all of the Spiritual Energy earlier on, you wouldn’t be able to hear me speaking now and you wouldn’t be fated for the stuff that I’ve left behind.”

Mu Chen was startled. The stuff that he left behind?

The White Dragon Sovereign smiled as his hand lightly patted on the white dragon that he was mounting. The white dragon rapidly shrank and turned into a scroll that was made from dragon scales. On the scroll, there was an ancient carved letter.

Mu Chen directed his gaze over and the dragon-scaled ancient scroll was imprinted into his eyes.

“Dragon Soaring Art.”

Chapter 279: Dragon Soaring Art

"Dragon Soaring Art..."

Mu Chen looked at the ancient characters on the dragon-scaled scroll and immediately licked his lips. Although he didn't know what kind of Deity Tier Spiritual Art the Dragon Soaring Art was, how could something that was taken out by a Sovereign be ordinary?

"This Dragon Soaring Art was an incomplete page that I'd obtained back then by mere luck. Thereafter, I, somewhat, completed it. However, even though this Dragon Soaring Art was incomplete, it was extremely out of the ordinary."

The White Dragon Sovereign lightly smiled as he gently caressed the dragon-scaled scroll and passed it over to Mu Chen. "As it was an incomplete Spiritual Art, I did not give it a ranking. But, back then, when I was surrounded by three Sovereign powerhouse, I relied on this Dragon Soaring Art to retreat unscathed."

Mu Chen's heart slightly jolted as unconcealable shock flashed through his eyes. What kind of scene was it for three Sovereign-level experts to fight together? He didn't have a clear concept of it, but that was definitely a tight spot. However, seeing as the White Dragon Sovereign could retreat unscathed, he could tell how powerful the Dragon Soaring Art was.

"Precisely speaking, this Dragon Soaring Art should be a Movement Deity Tier Spiritual Art. Although it might not grant you powerful offensive capabilities, it is sufficient to protect your life."

Mu Chen lightly nodded as his eyes were filled with joy. The current cards that he had up his sleeves were too little. Although the might of the Four God Constellation Scripture was unpredictable, he still had not fully comprehend it and was lacking in Movement Spiritual Arts. And at this point, it could be seen from his battle with the grey-robed elder back then. The latter's Movement Spiritual Art was way more powerful compared to his, which forced him to a rather sorry state.

But, right now, this powerful Movement Deity Tier Spiritual Art –

Dragon Soaring Art came just in time to overcome Mu Chen's weak point.

When the White Dragon Sovereign saw Mu Chen receive the scroll, he stood up and continued, "This Dragon Soaring Art is out of the ordinary and hard to comprehend. My intent will soon dissipate, but before I dissipate, let me lend you a hand."

"Look at my steps, I'll display the profound intent of the Dragon Soaring Art for you!"

The White Dragon Sovereign unleashed a low bark and his figure appeared on the white horizon. He took a step out, his steps were bizarre, as if he was walking on the stars, which was unfathomable.

The roar of a dragon resounded and his steps looked as though he was walking on the formless sound waves.

Mu Chen fixed his eyes at the bizarre movements of the White Dragon Sovereign. At the beginning, he could barely follow up, but the White Dragon Sovereign's steps quickly turned fuzzy. Not knowing when, the White Dragon Sovereign's figure had already disappeared. The fuzzy figure looked as though it had turned into a huge dragon as it soared. As it swayed, the space looked as though it had been pierced. That speed looked as though it could travel a thousand miles in an instant.

Roar!

A lingering dragon roar resounded in this space. As the white light flickered, the White Dragon Sovereign's figure appeared once again. His figure, right now, had dulled down by a lot as he lowered his head, looking towards Mu Chen. The latter's black pupils were concentrated with light flashing across as the appearance of a dragon's soaring image flashed across his eyes.

Mu Chen's eyes flickered with the dragon soaring image for a full half hour before it dulled down. His black pupils concentrated again as he turned quick-witted.

"Many thanks, Senior."

Mu Chen said as he cupped his hands, looking at the figure before him

as that figure turned hazy, as if the White Dragon Sovereign was about to disappear. This Deity Tier Spiritual Art was extremely challenging to learn. If he didn't have the demonstration by the White Dragon Sovereign earlier, no matter how powerful his talent was, it would still cost him quite some time. But, earlier, the White Dragon Sovereign gave him a lead, causing the difficulty of learning it to be lowered.

"It was hard to find something that fit my liking. Henceforth, giving it to you could resolve a wish of mine."

The White Dragon Sovereign lightly smiled. He was originally just a remnant intent that was left behind that was borrowing the remaining Spiritual Energy within the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl. He wasn't an actual existence.

"This junior will never forget this senior's huge grace. If there's anything that you required this junor to do, please let me know." Mu Chen said gravely. He had been someone that was distinct on gratitude and grudges. Today, he received the help of the White Dragon Sovereign, so, naturally, he had to remember this gratitude.

Hearing Mu Chen's words, the White Dragon Sovereign was slightly startled. Thereafter, his gaze turned blank and muttered, "If there's any wish of mine, it would be to return to my homeland..."

His blank gaze suddenly gathered a little together. After all, he stared at Mu Chen with unusual seriousness, or even solemn. He remained silent for a long while and slowly spoke out, "You're really willing to help me?"

"As long as it's something I can accomplish, I will definitely not reject it!" He said without much hesitation.

"Hahaha, good!" the White Dragon Sovereign laughed as his clear and bright eyes stared at Mu Chen, "I never thought that even after I've fallen, I could meet a youth like you. Your name is Mu Chen, right?"

"Yes."

"Good, Mu Chen... I do have a wish and it is also an opportunity for you. But whether you could grasp it would depend on your accomplishments."

the White Dragon Sovereign laughed as he made a gesture with his hand. White dragon light runes formed within his palm and shot into Mu Chen's body as fast as lightning.

Although Mu Chen was slightly startled, he did not panic and only looked at the White Dragon Sovereign in doubt.

"My wish is that one fine day, I hope that you're able to head towards the Lower Plane where I came from and expel all those foreign Blood Fiend Tribesmen that have occupied my homeland!"

The White Dragon Sovereign closely stared at Mu Chen, "If you're able to accomplish that, then I would definitely grant you a huge opportunity. Believe me, this opportunity will let you become a true supreme expert!"

Mu Chen was dumbstruck, the White Dragon Sovereign was asking him to expel those Blood Fiend Tribesmen? But they are the terrifying Fiend Tribesmen that could easily slaughter millions and millions of lifeforms. Even if he managed to become a Sovereign, it should still be impossible for him to accomplish that, right?

Unless he became an expert like the Flame Emperor and the Martial Ancestor, who became a huge authorities of their own territory, how could he attack a Lower Plane?

"What? No confidence?" the White Dragon Sovereign said as he stared at Mu Chen.

Mu Chen's expression was grave as he went silent for a brief moment, before nodding his head, "I'm grateful for Senior's grace and I ought to repay you. Although it is impossible for the current me, I guarantee that one fine day, when I possess that kind of power, I will definitely head for Senior's Lower Plane and banish those Fiend Tribesmen!"

"Good!"

The White Dragon Sovereign's calm eyes ripples with great emotion. He didn't know if his actions today would let a seed grow into a towering tree. But no matter what, it was still a trace of hope.

"The white dragon light runes that I've left in your tody will let you know

the location of the Lower Plane when your strength reaches a certain level. After you've accomplish your promise, it will also let you know what the huge opportunity is."

The White Dragon Sovereign's gaze gradually restored their calm as he looked at Mu Chen and lightly spoke, "However, if you're unable to accomplish it, you don't have to force yourself. I'm well aware of how frightening this mission is."

"I'll remember it."

Mu Chen heavily nodded his head. If there was a day he possessed the strength to accomplish it, then he would definitely pay a visit to the White Dragon Sovereign's Lower Plane hometown. And, at that hime, he would banish all those savage and destructive foreign Fiend Tribesmen. Allowing the Lower Plane to radiate with life again.

The White Dragon Sovereign laughed as he shut his eyes and muttered, "I really hoped that I could witness that day..."

His figure gradually dulled down and thoroughly disappeared.

Mu Chen gave a bow towards the location where the White Dragon Sovereign's figure dissipated. Shortly after, with a thought flashing by, he exited from the white world.

Up on the mountain peak, Mu Chen's tightly shut eyes opened as he looked at the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl that was in his hand, which had dulled a lot more in terms of its luster as he lightly spoke with solemn, "White Dragon Senior, rest assured. If I possesses that power one day, I will definitely attack the Lower Plane and banish those filthy things."

The White Dragon Spiritual Pearl seemed to be able to hear what he just said as it slightly unleashed a glow.

Mu Chen gently caressed the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl before storing it. He stood up and lightly stretched his body. The bones in his entire body rippled with a sparkling glow and the crackling of his bones sounded like firecrackers being lit.

Along with the sound, Mu Chen could sense the power within his body

growing little by little.

"What powerful energy..."

Mu Chen tightly clenched his fist as he sensed the surge of power within his body. He couldn't help smiling. The current him was way more powerful compared to the him that was half a month ago.

Without using any special means, the current him could suppress a Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase expert or even Middle Phase, which he could also contend against. If he were to use his various methods, he could even cause a huge threat towards Heavenly Transformation Stage Middle Phase experts, who could cause him some troubles before the enhancement of his strength.

"I wonder, if I were to fight with Li Xuantong right now, what would the outcome be?"

Mu Chen muttered to himself as fighting intent slightly gathered in his black pupils. Back then, when he fought with Li Xuantong, he had spent various means to take the three moves. But if they were to fight again, Mu Chen was confident that Li Xuantong wouldn't have it easy anymore.

His gains in this trip to the Lightning Territory had far surpassed his expectations.

"Hey, the speed of forming Divine Lightning Bead is way too slow in the seventh level of the Lightning Territory. Let's head to the next three levels, I want to refine a sufficient amount of Divine Lightning Beads." The Nine Netherbird's voice suddenly resounded within Mu Chen's heart.

"How much have you refined in the past few days?" Mu Chen asked. When he was cultivating, the Nine Netherbird did not idle around.

"Only two thousand..." the Nine Netherbird said with dissatisfaction.

Two thousand was equivalent to 400,000 Spiritual Value Points. This speed was already extremely fast. However, there was still quite a distance to 2,500,000 Spiritual Value Points.

"Then let's head towards the last three levels!"

Mu Chen looked towards the depth of the seventh level. As his strength rose, the seventh level of the Lightning territory could no longer obstruct him. Therefore, he wished to attempt to head for the last three levels of the Lightning Territory and see how hard it was to breakthrough.

Mu Chen smiled as his grand spirit rose in his heart. Shortly after, he took a step forward, his steps were profound with a dragon's roar. His figure looked as though it was moving with a soaring dragon, in a flash, he had already appeared a few thousand feet 1 away. Compared to back then, his speed had increased more than a fold.

Although Mu Chen had yet to fully master the Dragon Soaring Art, the initial access towards the art had already far surpassed his past speed.

The dragon roar resounded as Mu Chen's figure rapidly disappeared into the horizon.

Chapter 280: Eighth Level

In the vast Seventh level of the Lightning Territory, a deep dragon's roar resounded as the light image streaked across the horizon with astonishing speed. The light image was like a soaring dragon, as it moved, even the horizon was pierced. In a flash, it had reached the edge of the horizon with astonishing speed.

Along the way, there were lines-of-sight that had noticed that light image. However, before they could recover, that light image had already appeared at the edge of the horizon.

The speed of the light image caused them to be dumbfounded.

That light image was, naturally, Mu Chen. At the same time, his heart was filled with joy as the speed of the Dragon Soaring Art had far surpassed his expectations. Compared to his past speed, this was several times faster!

In the future, with this escaping movement art, he could escape even if he couldn't overpower his opponent.

With the Dragon Soaring Art, his safety was, naturally, guaranteed.

Shhhhuu!

In just over ten minutes, that speed had allowed him to travel through the Seventh level and he reached the depths of the Seventh level. Over there, there was a screen blocking the access to the Eighth level.

The light image gradually dissipated and Mu Chen appeared. He directed his gaze before him with a grave look. In his sight, it wasn't a lightning light screen, but an enormous lightning river with torrential lightning water pouring down in torrents. It was like a water screen that blocked the path towards the Eighth level.

"This is the screen that blocks the Eighth level?" Mu Chen looked at the endlessly falling lightning water as he muttered.

He swept his line-of-sight around and could sense the Spiritual Energy ripples from his surroundings. The ripples of Spiritual Energy were

powerful, yet they were clearly Spiritual Energies from the students that were bitterly cultivating.

However, when Mu Chen sensed them, those people had also noticed him. However, they did not show themselves, but were watching from the dark. All of the students that could reach this location were pinnacle existences in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. None of them would be easy to deal with.

Mu Chen wasn't too bothered by them as he directed his sight back towards the lightning river screen. His brows slightly knitted together. The lightning energy that was contained in the lightning screen was way too fearsome. Even a Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase expert wouldn't have a good time, if they were washed down by it.

From the looks of it, it wouldn't be easy for him to forcefully make his way through.

Mu Chen stared at the falling lightning river as he sunk himself into his thoughts. After a long time, his eyes suddenly narrowed together as he realised that, although the falling river water was densely packed, there were still gaps in between. If he could pass through those small gaps, there's a high chance that he'd be able to pass through the lightning river screen.

This required an extreme amount of speed in order to accomplish it. If it was the previous Mu Chen, he could probably only look at it and feel helpless. However, the current him possessed the Dragon Soaring Art, allowing him to give it a try.

Mu Chen didn't show much hesitation as he moved, making abnormal steps towards the screen with a light image following him. The light image was like a soaring dragon.

Shhhhhuuuu!

His figure charged into the falling lightning river screen under many astonished gazes from the dark.

Mu Chen concentrated as he stepped forth, circulating the Dragon

Soaring Art and flew out.

Shhhhiiii!

Mu Chen's figure rushed into the lightning river. However, his body turned uncontrollably stiff. Although his speed wasn't slow, it won't be easy for him to pass through the small gap. What awaited him was the lightning river falling on his body as the violent and heavy energy forcefully made him fall back. He felt a slight sweetness in his throat.

"What a formidable lightning river screen."

Mu Chen suppressed the fresh blood as a grave light flashed across his eyes. If he attempted to pass through the lightning river screen before he made his breakthrough, just this alone would have given him more than enough to suffer.

Those hidden gazes that were watching him inwardly shook their heads. Seemed like there's another one that attempted to pass through the lightning river screen. However, from the looks of it, it seemed his efforts were all futile.

There was only two people that had managed to get into the Eighth level of the Lightning Territory in the whole Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong. Aside from those two, the rest could only manage to get to the Seventh level. Although they were constantly trying, no one managed to succeed.

They were astonished by Mu Chen's speed, but even so, he still couldn't pass through the lightning river screen.

Mu Chen was unaware of their thoughts. His eyes closely stared at the endlessly falling lightning river screen. Shortly after, he deeply inhaled and his gaze gradually turned calm.

The Spiritual Energy ripples around him also turned calm. His state of mine turned exceptionally firm. All other disturbances no longer affected him. Only the endlessly falling lightning river screen was still moving.

The light screen appeared in his black pupils again, as if it was an image of a soaring dragon. The bizarre movements that the White Dragon

Sovereign had exerted appeared within Mu Chen's eyes again and again.

Mu Chen stood before the lightning river screen for a full half hour.

In this half hour, his body did not move. And seeing his behaviour, the gazes that were hidden in the dark also felt baffled. That fellow has not going to give up yet?

And in their doubts, both of Mu Chen's eyes gradually closed. Shortly after, his steps rose and the light image around him turned into a soaring dragon image as a low roar resounded out.

Roar!

The instant that dragon's roar resounded, Mu Chen felt as though he was stepping on the soundwaves. His figure had turned into an afterimage and he burst out.

Shhhuuuu!

The figure abruptly flashed through the lightning river screen. However, this time, Mu Chen wasn't sent flying back as the figure that was turning illusory bit by bit was actually an afterimage.

"He went in!"

Within a hundred mile radius, some people that were on the lightning luring stages abruptly stood up with astonished gazes.

Shhhuuu! Shhhuu!

All of the attention was gathered on the lightning water screen as the afterimages constantly dissipated. However, there wasn't the sight of anyone being repelled from it. Vaguely, it was as though they saw the light image, along with dragon roar, pass through the lightning river.

"He actually managed to pass through it! Just who is he?"

Someone deeply uttered in shock. After so long, there was finally a third person that managed to enter the Eighth level of the Lightning Territory?

And when Mu Chen passed through the lightning river, he had also attracted a commotion outside of the Northern Heavens Spiritual

Academy's Lightning Territory.

On the huge platform, the Lightning Territory Ranking suddenly flickered with a dazzling light. Countless students were attracted by it and their astonished gazes were directed on it. It had been a long time since such an abnormal scene had appeared on the Lightning Territory Ranking.

Normally speaking, only when there were major changes in the Lightning Territory, would such an abnormal scene appear.

Everyone directed their gazes over and they realised a light had moved on it, a silvery light had soared up with astonishing speed, instantly surpassing Su Xuan, He Yao and the rest before stopping at the third position.

"Mu Chen, Lightning Territory Eighth Level!"

Huaaaaaa.

Astonishment was like a tidal wave as it swept out, instantly causing a huge commotion. Countless people were dumbfounded.

"It was actually Mu Chen?!'

"That newcomer, Mu Chen? How is he so powerful? Not even He Yao and the rest could get to the Eighth level of the Lightning Territory, how did he managed to do it?!"

"I have no idea, but there wouldn't be any lies in the Lightning Territory Ranking. That Mu Chen must have managed to get to the Eighth level!"

"This is too fearsome, how did he manage to accomplish that?"

Outside the Lightning Territory, it was a huge commotion as everyone exchanged looks. They could see the disbelief from each other's eyes. Although, right now, Mu Chen could be considered a famed figure in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, no matter what, it didn't represent anything. His fight with Li Xuantong was just the Pact of Three Moves. And previously, in the Demon's Gate Headquarters, he had managed to lay out the Spiritual Arrays beforehand. Furthermore, He Yao had clearly held his hands back and didn't want to display his true strength just because of

Mu Chen. Therefore, although there were some incidents that could increase Mu Chen's fame, it didn't allow him to truly surpass He Yao and the rest.

But, right now, the commotion on the Lightning Territory Ranking had allowed them to finally have a direct awareness. Perhaps this ranking wasn't as direct as the Heavenly ranking, but it wasn't a light ranking. From here, everyone could see the true strength that those students had concealed.

And Mu Chen was able to get into the Eighth level of the Lightning Territory. Doesn't that mean that he had already surpassed He Yao and the rest, and was catching up to Li Xuantong?

Isn't this freshman too formidable?

The changes on the Lightning Territory Ranking soon spread out and attracted many disbelievers.

Because the headquarters of the Demon's Gate was still under construction, the buildings had became much more simple. He Yao was sitting on the first seat as he listened to his subordinate reporting to him without any expression.

"Mu Chen entered the Eighth level of the Lightning Territory? How is that possible?!" Chen Hou issued a cry of surprise from the side with a face of disbelief.

He Yao's expression didn't show much fluctuation, but his pupils condensed a little. He held onto a teacup for a long time, before putting it down and said with indifference, "Although it isn't easy to enter the Eighth level of the Lightning Territory, if he used some methods, it is still possible to sneak in. There isn't much to be surprised about."

"That's right." Chen Hou nodded, "It's just that Boss is unwilling; otherwise, it wouldn't be that difficult to enter the Eighth level."

He Yao lightly smiled as his gaze gradually turned cold.

"Rest assured. Just let him be complacent right now. During the Hunting War, no matter how high he soars, I will still suppress him!"

On a mountain peak in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, Li Xuantong looked at the paper with the news of the Lightning Territory in his hands as his eyes gradually narrowed. Shortly after, he flickered his fingers, turning that paper into ashes.

It seemed that Mu Chen had became much more powerful. However, if he were to appear in the Lightning Territory, there wouldn't be anymore Pact of Three Moves. At that time, he hoped that Mu Chen wouldn't be a disappointment.

Chapter 281: Bald Old Man

Lightning Territory Eighth Level

Behind the lightning river screen, a light image, along with the roar of a dragon as it flashed out, appeared on the horizon.

Huuu

The light dissipated as Mu Chen couldn't help heavily breathe out a lump of air. His eyes were filled with a grave light. The lightning river screen was, indeed, powerful and the impact was way too horrifying.

However, fortunately, he had the Dragon Soaring Art. Adding the fact that when he was in the Northern Spiritual Academy initially, he received some teachings from Teacher Mo and underwent similar training. Although this lightning river screen was several folds more fearsome, Mu Chen was able to charge through the lightning river screen with his speed after having some experience.

"I wonder how Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong made their way here, through speed or force?" Mu Chen mumbled to himself. Although Mu Chen's method was a little cheap, speed was also an embodiment of one's strength.

Mu Chen shook his head, thereafter, he raised his head and looked at the Eighth Level of the Lightning Territory, an area meant for outstanding students in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. But prior to Mu Chen's expectations, there wasn't any darkness in the horizon, nor was there any dark thundercloud groups. On the contrary, the sky was clear.

The entire space was quiet and peaceful.

Mu Chen was a little startled as he looked at the scene before him. Clearly, he never expected the Eighth Level to be so quiet.

"Why isn't there any thunderclouds?" Mu Chen frowned. He also didn't feel any tyrannical lightning energy in this space. Just what was going on?

"Fly towards the left for a hundred miles." The Nine Netherbird's solemn voice suddenly resounded from his heart. The Nine Netherbird's senses

were clearly way more powerful than Mu Chen's. And towards the left, it sensed some ripples.

Mu Chen nodded as his figure moved, flying towards the direction that was pointed out by the Nine Netherbird. A few minutes later, his figure slowly came to a stop as he looked at the scene before him, and he became dumbfounded.

It was a vast plain and on the plain, flowed a huge river. This river wasn't any ordinary river, but a river made from silvery lightning water. Furthermore, the flow of this lightning river did not come in contact with the ground, but was flowing to a certain distance above the ground, floating. It wiggled slowly, with a slow pace as it flowed towards the distance.

It's appearance was like a huge silver dragon that was moving about.

Hisssssss

Mu Chen couldn't help inhaling a deep breath of cold air. He never imagine in his wildest imaginations that the Eighth Level would be so fearsome that the lightning energy had actually condensed and form a lightning river...

In the Seventh Level, Mu Chen attracted more than ten thunderclouds before a small lightning river was formed. But from the looks of this lightning river, it was beyond comparison to the one he formed. And clearly, this wasn't the only lightning river in the Eighth Level.

"It's indeed worthy of being the Eighth Level of the Lightning Territory."

Mu Chen sighed. No wonder the requirements were so harsh to enter the Eighth Level. If one didn't possess the sufficient strength, it would be hard for them to get any results from cultivating here.

"Let's begin refining the Divine Lightning Beads." Mu Chen spoke in his heart. Clearly, the task of refining the Divine Lightning Beads was up to the Nine Netherbird. Otherwise, with his strength, god knows how long it would take for him to refine the Divine Lightning Beads that were worth over 2,000,000 Spiritual Value Points.

“Okay, leave it to me!” the Nine Netherbird was overjoyed. When Mu Chen was done talking, black flames flew out of his body and formed into a small sparrow made of black flames.

“Huuu!”

The Nine Netherbird’s mouth widened as black flames swept out in surges, forming into a huge tornado that was ablaze with black flames. As the wind was violently whipped up, the flowing lightning river started to stir.

Rumble!

As the calm lightning river turned violent, the berzerking lightning energy was like an electric current as it flowed into the black tornado. The deep roar of thunder sounded out.

As the black flames circulated, it rapidly gathered the lightning energy with that astonishing method as beads of the Divine Lighting Beads containing pure lightning energy were made.

Mu Chen looked at that spectacular scene before him and couldn’t help smacking his lips. He immediately sat down with his legs crossed. From the looks of it, the Nine Netherbird would require some time to refine and there wasn’t that many students that could make their way into the Eighth Level. Henceforth, he wasn’t worried that this scene would be caught by anyone.

What he could do next was nothing but wait for the Nine Netherbird to finish.

However, there some things weren’t as simple as Mu Chen had thought.

While the Nine Netherbird was refining the Divine Lightning Beads at a large quantity, there was some movements in the depths of the Lightning Territory.

In the depths, there was a dusky space. In the space, there was a huge black-coloured lightning river floating in the air as countless black-coloured water flowed down. It was like a huge dragon that was flying along with the violent lightning.

“This fluctuation…it’s the Nine Netherflame? Why is someone from the Nine Netherbird’s Clan here…?”

In the darkness, it was as though the twittering of birds was sorrowfully sounding out.

…

Rumble!

Mu Chen stared at the huge commotion of the lightning river. He couldn’t help stretching his body. The Nine Netherbird had already been refining the Divine Lightning Bead for roughly half an hour. But, clearly, the amount of beads that the Nine Netherbird had refined was still insufficient.

“It seems like it will require a few days of time to get enough Divine Lightning Beads to be worth over 2,000,000 Spiritual Value Points, even if I have the Nine Netherbird doing the task…” Mu Chen helplessly shook his head. Thereafter, he decided to close his eyes and cultivate.

Just when Mu Chen was about to close his eyes and start cultivating, he suddenly sensed something wrong. Shortly after, he curiously turned his head over. Not too far away, there seemed to be a figure on a huge rock.

A human figure?!

Mu Chen was startled as he immediately stood up and directed his eyes over to that direction. Only then did he clearly see that the figure that was sitting on the rock was a bald old man, donning a tattered black robe. The old man appeared to be as thin as a matchstick with muddy eyes. From his appearance, it seemed as though he would soon step into his coffin. Right at this moment, the bald old man was holding a crutch in his arms as he blankly stared at Mu Chen.

Mu Chen felt his scalp tingling from this weird scene. That old man seemed to have been sitting on that spot for a long time. However, Mu Chen didn’t sense him at all. Just what strength was required to accomplish such a feat?

The Nine Netherbird also sensed something wrong as it immediately

withdrew the black flamed tornado, Within the tornado, a flow of a silvery current flew over. This was all of the Divine Lightning Beads that the Nine Netherbird had spent half a day's time to bitterly refine.

Shhhhhhuu!

However, just as the Nine Netherbird was about to take those Divine Lightning Beads, the bald old man suddenly made a movement with his hand and all of the beads were instantly separated from the Nine Netherbird's control, and were spiraling around the latter.

Mu Chen and the Nine Netherbird's eyes changed. The Nine Netherbird inwardly clenched it's teeth, but did not take any action as it's intuition told it that the weird bald old man before them was extremely frightening.

"Be cautious, this old man is very formidable!" the Nine Netherbird's voice was extremely grave as it's voice resounded within Mu Chen's heart.

Mu Chen bitterly smiled, isn't that obvious? He easily startled them, how could he be simple?

"This old man..." Mu Chen summoned his courage and said with his hands cupped together.

"The Lightning Territory is for students to refine their bodies. You made use to the Nine Netherbird's power to refine the Divine Lightning Beads, this is considered a foul." the bald old man said as he raised his muddy eyes.

Mu Chen's face flushed red as he could not explain himself. This method was indeed, similar to cheating.

The small black sparrow that the Nine Netherbird formed stood on Mu Chen's shoulders. Its eyes flickered with light and on it's small body, black flames rose. In that instant, it had made the decision to grab Nie Li and flee the instant it felt something wasn't right.

"You's a small Nine Nether that had just reached adulthood. Don't try to employ any means before me, unless you're one of those old monsters in your Nine Netherbird's Clan..." the bald old man stared at the Nine Netherbird as he smiled.

The Nine Netherbird's gaze changed.

"However, you've indeed aroused my curiosity. With the pride of you Nine Netherbirds, you would actually form a Bloodline Bond with a human, not to mention such a weak human. If this fact was made known to those old monsters in your Clan, I'm afraid that you'd suffer." the bald old man said as he took a glance at Mu Chen and the Nine Netherbird. His speech was slow and his voice gave others a feeling of helplessness. However, the words he spoke out made Mu Chen and the Nine Netherbird's scalps tingle.

The old man actually managed to see through the relationship between them with just a glance, just what frightening eyesight was that?

Mu Chen bitterly smiled. "Senior, it was out fault in this matter. We will not refine anymore Divine Lightning Beads and will make our leave now, will that do?"

From the tone of this bald old man, he should be a huge figure of authority in this Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Therefore, as students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, Mu Chen wasn't worried that their lives would be in danger.

As Mu Chen spoke, he slowly retreated. If the bald old man didn't say anything, then he would leave this place immediately.

"From the looks of the small Nine Netherbird, it's evolution has failed, right? And right now, it needs the Northern Sea Dragon's Blood Essence and borrow it's power to rush into the Divine Beast Record, right? You guys are now refining the Divine Lightning Beads without any restraint is to save up enough Spiritual Value Points to purchase it, correct?" just as Mu Chen was about to slowly move back, the bald old man slowly spoke.

Mu Chen bitterly smiled, it seemed that there wasn't anything that could be hidden from this old man.

"Do you want the sufficient amount of Divine Lightning Beads?" the bald old man smiled as he looked at Mu Chen with interest.

Mu Chen honestly nodded his head.

“It’s hard to encounter such an interesting younger generation fella...”

The bald old man placed the crutches on his knees and stared at Mu Chen, “If you manage to handle an attack from my clone, I will return these Divine Lightning Beads to you and will let you guys refine the sufficient amount of Divine Lightning Beads you both need. Furthermore... I will give this young fella some reward, what do you say?”

“Haha, after all of these years, there were only two people that could withstand an attack from this old man’s clone among the young fellas in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.”

“Two people?”

Mu Chen was blank as his gaze concentrated, “Was it Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong?”

The bald old man slightly nodded and smiled, “Those two young fellas do have some talent. However, you’ve astonished me, being able to get to the Eighth Level with just Quasi-Heavenly Transformation Stage cultivation.”

“What now?”

Mu Chen slightly went silent. After a brief moment, both of his hands abruptly clenched. His black pupils surged with sharpness. Since Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong could accomplish it, then he refused to believe that he could be any worse than them.

“Okay, it’s a deal!”

Chapter 282: One Move

"We have a deal?" the bald old man with tattered black robe directed his muddy eyes towards Mu Chen.

"Yes!"

Mu Chen heavily nodded his head and, shortly after, he smiled, "Even if it's dangerous, I doubt that Senior would kill me in a move, right?"

"You won't die, at most, you would just lie on your bed for few months." the bald old man hoarsely smiled as he extended his skinny hands out and rubbed his bald head.

Mu Chen's smile stiffed. Shortly after, he helplessly inhaled a mouthful of air. No matter what, since he had accepted the terms, then even if he crossed mountains of daggers or seas of flames, he had to give it a try.

"Can you do it?" the Nine Netherbird secretly asked with concern in it's eyes.

"I'll give it a try." Mu Chen also didn't have a huge amount of confidence. This bald old man that was before him was definitely the most fearsome person he had ever seen. It's to the point that he was even stronger than the White Dragon Sovereign.

"Later on, I will secretly help you." the Nine Netherbird said in Mu Chen's heart. After all, Mu Chen was helping the Nine Netherbird refine the Divine Lightning Bead and, henceforth, encountered this trouble.

When Mu Chen heard what the Nine Netherbird said, he did not reply. The bald old man hoarsely smiled as he swept his skinny hands and a streak of light flew out, shrouding the Nine Netherbird. No matter how much it tried to struggle, the Nine Netherbird couldn't break free.

"Small Nine Netherbird, watch from the side." the bald old man smiled while narrowing his eyes.

The Nine Netherbird struggled for a period of time, but seeing that it wasn't very effective, the Nine Netherbird could only stare at the bald old man viciously and said, "If anything happens to him, I definitely won't let

you off. Even if I can't best you right now, that doesn't mean that I can't in the future."

The bald old man smiled, "Nine Netherbird, you still have a long way to go. Even when you manage to successfully evolve and enter into the Divine Beast Record, you're still nothing."

"Are you prepared?"

When the old man finished speaking, he stared at Mu Chen.

Mu Chen deeply inhaled a mouthful of air as his figure moved and retreated. Thereafter, he stood on the horizon and said with a solemn voice, "Senior, please grant me your teachings!"

A majestic Spiritual Energy rippled out of his body as the pitch-black flames looked similar to black smoke, soared up into the horizon and could be seen clearly within a hundred miles.

"His Spiritual Energy has merged with the Nine Nether Flames?" the bald old man stared at the surrounding blazing Spiritual Energy as a trace of astonishment flashed though his eyes.

He waved his sleeve and his skinny hands extended out and lightly clenched.

Boom!

An indescribable pressure swept out from his body. Under this demeanor, the entire space looked as though it had trembled as a deep cry resounded.

Rumble!

A huge flowing lightning river was suddenly soaring over this plain and was absorbed by the bald old man. Thereafter, it looked similar to a silver dragon as it spiraled above his head.

Mu Chen's face slightly changed at the sight of this. His heart trembled, the fearsome lightning energy in the lightning river was sufficient to crush mountains. However, it was easily lifted by this bald old man. This strength was, indeed, indescribable.

“Boom!”

The bald old man’s huge hand waved, the lightning river instantly soared into the horizon and, as it issued a rumbling sound, it rippled in this space. The lightning surged like an electric dragon, and with an unparalleled demeanor, it headed towards Mu Chen with an irresistible manner.

Mu Chen raised his head and traces of astonishment was shown within his eyes as he looked at the lightning river that was charging at him. He could clearly sense that the space around him was sealed at this moment.

There was no possibility that he could avoid this fearsome offense.

This bald old man was clearly not intending to go easy on Mu Chen.

Mu Chen clenched his teeth as both of his palms came together. The veins on his arm twitched and, shortly after, a vicious look appeared within his eyes. Since he couldn’t escape, then he could only go all out!

Boom!

The violent Spiritual Energy instantly poured out of Mu Chen’s body without any restraints. He suddenly sat down in the air and both of his hands were forming signs at lightning speed.

Onom!

There was the sound of an ancient bell ringing on this horizon. As the black lights came together, a huge Nine-layered Pagoda appeared and shrouded Mu Chen within.

Among all of Mu Chen’s methods, the defense of the Nine-layered Pagoda was clearly the most fearsome. If he wanted to withstand the horrifying attack of the bald old man, the only thing he could do was to rely on the Nine-layered Pagoda.

“This is...”

The bald old man raised his head and stared at the huge Nine-layered Pagoda up in the sky. His brows slightly knitted together as his muddy eyes flashed as thoughts crossed his mind.

Boom!

The lightning river did not have the slightest pause when the Nine-layered Pagoda appeared. As the lightning river surged, in the next instant, it heavily clashed against the Nine-layered Pagoda with undeniable pressure.

Bang!

Faced with such a fearsome impact, the Nine-layered Pagoda instantly trembled violently. As the lightning river streaked past, fine tiny cracks appeared on the surface of the Nine-layered Pagoda.

The attack of the bald old man was, indeed, way too frightening.

As the Nine-layered Pagoda shrouded Mu Chen, his face instantly flashed with a of pale colour. He never thought that his strongest defense was actually so frail under an attack of the bald old man.

He raised his head as the cracks on the surface of the Nine-layered Pagoda slowly spread out. As the lightning river continued to emit a silvery light that was dripping down, it caused a deep thunderous roar that resound within the Nine-layered Pagoda.

The Nine-layered Pagoda was about to collapse.

The instant the Nine-layered Pagoda collapsed, Mu Chen would be completely revealed. With his physique, it was clearly impossible for him to resist such a frightening impact.

Would it be game over for him just like this?

Mu Chen bit his lips, a sweetness was spreading out from the corner of his mouth. Within his black pupils, a deep unresigned intent flashed across his black pupils. If he couldn't withstand this attack, doesn't that mean that he could not be compared to Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong?

If he couldn't even be compared to them, then on what basis does he have to tell Luo Li that he could become an unrivalled expert to guard her?!

Rumble!

The Nine-layered Pagoda was crumbling, layer after layer. The black-coloured Nine-layered Pagoda was constantly showing cracks as the lightning past through the Pagoda, and was shocking the body of the youth within the Pagoda. At this moment, the latter appeared frail.

Another layer crumbled as the youth abruptly raised his head. Within his black pupils, a look full of unswerving determination that couldn't be shaken could be seen.

"Ah!"

He clenched both of his palms as eyes became bloodshot. A sound that was filled with a deep fighting roar resounded from his throat.

His deep roar resounded within this tattered Nine-layered Pagoda. His unswerving determination made an impact with this Pagoda.

Onom! Onom!

As his roar resounded, the Pagoda suddenly trembled, as though it was resonating. Mu Chen's firm and determined roar seemed to have roused something.

An ancient and old light pattern started to appear on the walls of the Pagoda. Those patterns were like ancient lotus' as they filled the area with a vast light.

The Great Pagoda Art within Mu Chen's body seemed to have been circulating uncontrollably. In the depths of his body, the mysterious black light also burst forth with a dazzling luster.

The thing that seemed to have been sealed within the depths of his body had also been activated at this instant.

"Shhhhuuu!"

An ancient sound resounded within the Nine-layered Pagoda and Mu Chen's figure was shrouded by the black light. The originally collapsing Nine-layered Pagoda instantly burst forth with an ancient light.

As the light appeared, the collapsed part of the Nine-layered Pagoda

started to restore itself, bit by bit.

The bald old man narrowed his eyes, looking at the majestic lightning river that was flowing against the unmovable Nine-layered Pagoda. Within the black-coloured Pagoda, there seemed to be something similar to an ancient black-coloured lotus. There were nine petals on the lotus flower and it was as though there was a heaven seizing power in every petal, emitting an endless profound intent.

It was as though an ancient and desolate sound was echoing between the heavens and earth.

"This..." the bald old man's face trembled a little as he muttered, "This is actually the Primordial Divine Pagoda? But if he's someone with the Primordial Divine Pagoda, how could he be here?"

A light flashed in the eyes of the bald old man, as though he had seen through the Pagoda that Mu Chen sitting in. Fresh blood was covering his entire body and wiggled to form into a blood lotus light pattern on the surface of his body. That blood lotus also had nine petals.

"Interesting. Just who exactly is he? To have parents who possess such a Primordial Bloodline..."

The bald old man's eyes flashed as the lightning river flowed away from the horizon and floated above the earth once again. And as the lighting river retreated, the huge Nine-layered Pagoda that was up in the sky turned into a black light and was dissipating, bit by bit.

As the Nine-layered Pagoda dissipated, a figure that was covered in blood instantly fell down from the sky.

When the bald old man saw it, his finger flicked and a silver light shot into Mu Chen's body. Thereafter, he swept his sleeves and a gale tossed Mu Chen into the lightning river.

"You!"

When the Nine Netherbird saw the scene, it's face drastically changed. The lightning river contained frightening lightning energy. Even when Mu Chen wasn't conscious, he wouldn't dare to lightly enter the lightning

river, not to mention that he's unconscious right now.

"Rest assured. I don't want him dead. I've previously mentioned a reward; so, naturally, I will keep my end of the deal." the bald old man lightly smiled. Shortly after, he looked towards the Nine Netherbird and two of his skinny fingers clenched. A feather that looked like it was made from metal appeared. As his fingers flickered, the feather shot into the body of the Nine Netherbird and the latter could not examine what it was.

"What are you doing?!" the Nine Netherbird was extremely angry. The bald old man was too hateful.

"I'm a bit friendly with an old monster from your Nine Netherbird Clan. Therefore, I've sent you a gift. Okay, you can continue to refine the Divine Lightning Beads, but don't disrupt that kid."

The bald old man did not make any explanations and showed a faint smile. Thereafter, he lazily stood up and slowly looked towards the far earth.

His pace appeared slow, but after a few steps, he had already appeared on the horizon and, thereafter, thoroughly disappeared.

The Nine Netherbird looked at the direction which he disappeared, but could only clench it's teeth inwardly. It worriedly looked at Mu Chen, who was wrapped inside of the lightning river. Thereafter, the Nine Netherbird spurt out its black flames, filled the sky and started refining the Divine Lightning Beads.

Chapter 283: 13,000 beads

Mu Chen's intent drifted in this darkness. He was so dizzy, it felt like it was never-ending.

Within the darkness, there seemed to be a black light surging and took form beneath Mu Chen. It seemed to be a fuzzy image of a girl and her palm gently caressed Mu Chen's intent.

Under her gentle touch, there was an indescribable softness that fluctuated in Mu Chen's heart. That sensation was similar to a mother's embrace.

The warmth made him unable to struggle free.

Under the warmth, there was a stream flowing within Mu Chen's body, as though it had soothed the injuries within him.

A trace of soberness surged up in his fuzzy state. Mu Chen tried his utmost to widen his eyes and look at that fuzzy and warm figure. However, he still couldn't get a clear glimpse of it.

However, the bizarre sensation of a blood-bond made him understand that he had some kind of relationship with that warm figure. In his childhood dreams, it was that figure that guarded him.

"Mother!"

Mu Chen tried his best to struggle and shortly after, he widened both of his eyes. His palm clawed towards that figure, but grabbed nothing but air.

"Ahhh!"

He opened both of his eyes and what he saw was a bright silvery light. Mu Chen still couldn't even react to the situation but bore the urge to scream. The violent lightning energy was like steel barbs as it flowed over him. Thereafter, it flocked into his body.

The lightning energy was way too violent and, therefore, as it rushed in, it had directly caused intense pain to Mu Chen. His muscles around his body started to twitch.

Just when Mu Chen was at loss because of this, there was a faint silvery light being emitted from within his body. Under the shine of the silver light, Mu Chen's body was like a starving person seeing food, and started to violently devour the lightning energy.

That intense pain instantly surged in a violent manner.

Mu Chen clenched his teeth as a trace of blood flowed out from the corner of his mouth. There was something that had suddenly appeared in his heart. It seemed to be a Thunder God Physique Deity Tier Spiritual Art.

"Was it left behind by that bald old man?"

The thought flashed through Mu Chen's heart and shortly after, he started to train under the influence of the Deity Tier Spiritual Art. When he circulated that art, he saw the insides of his body turning silver. As lightning flickered, his entire body, including his muscles, internal organs, meridians and bones, was endlessly devouring the lightning energy within his body.

And under the frantic devouring process, although Mu Chen still felt intense pain within his body, the fulfilling feeling of energy had surged up. The pain was comfortable and the feeling was bizarre.

Mu Chen didn't know how powerful the Thunder God Physique that was left behind by the bald old man was, but he could clearly sense his physique becoming more and more powerful.

It seemed to be a Physique Cultivating Deity Tier Spiritual Art.

This made Mu Chen a little surprised. Among Spiritual Arts, Physique Cultivating were the rarest. And, right now, the reward that was given by the bald old man wasn't just any Physique Cultivating Spiritual Art, but a Deity Tier one at that!

A Spiritual Art that could absorb lightning energy to refine one's body.

"Although that old man's methods are ruthless, he wasn't petty." Mu Chen muttered to himself. Shortly after, he didn't dare to be distracted and cultivated this Physique Cultivating Deity Art with all his heart.

This cultivation continued for an entire three days of time. Within these three days of time, Mu Chen's body was soaked in the depths of the lightning river, endlessly refining himself, again and again, with the lightning energy.

Furthermore, while Mu Chen was being refined by the lightning energy, the Thunder God Physique was constantly gathering the lightning energy around him and formed into a lightning ball.

Mu Chen did not absorb this lightning ball, but allowed it to circulate within his meridians, refining his meridians bit by bit, causing his meridians to be tougher.

This bizarre cultivation technique made Mu Chen feel a bit surprised. Shortly after, he could sense how extraordinary this Thunder God Physique was. However, when he was practicing the art, he could feel a flaw. Clearly, this Thunder God Physique must be an incomplete Spiritual Art.

That bald old man did not gift him the entire cultivation technique of the Thunder God Physique.

Although this made Mu Chen feel a little regret, he wasn't too disappointed. It was already out of his expectations to acquire such a good harvest.

Three days later.

At the edge of the lightning river, the black flames that had covered the horizon were withdrawing. The Nine Netherbird issued a clear cry and drew them back into its body. On top of its head, the silvery river flowed as it floated. Within the powerful current, there was a large amount of Divine Lightning Beads flickering with lightning energy.

From just looking at it, there was at least more than ten thousand!

After refining all of these Divine Lightning beads, the Nine Netherbird looked towards the river with concern. However, it did not spot anything unusual.

It was a little anxious and, shortly after, it flapped it's wings, and rushed

into the river to search for Mu Chen.

Bang!

However, just when it was about to charge in, a surge of lightning soared up into the heavens, sweeping out with a tyrannical Spiritual Energy. The Lightning river exploded and a figure appeared on the horizon.

For a brief moment, lightning was flickering on that figure before it started to gradually disappear. In the end, Mu Chen's figure appeared.

The current Mu Chen's skin had a faint silver colour. On his body, there was an explosive energy that was contained that could not be underestimated.

Mu Chen clenched his fist before throwing two fists out. Instantly, the air exploded. This caused joy to fill his eyes. Compared to several days before, he had indeed grown much stronger.

"Not bad."

Mu Chen praised. After the lightning dissipated from his body and he was restored to normal, he smiled with his eyes narrowed, while landing towards the direction that the Nine Netherbird was at.

"Are you alright?" when the Nine Netherbird saw Mu Chen come out, it also felt relieved.

Mu Chen shook his head, then was looking around, searching for the bald old man.

"He's long gone." when the Nine Netherbird saw Mu Chen's gaze, it spoke out.

"I wonder who that senior was, to have such ability. Even in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, he should be among the top levels, right?" Mu Chen muttered.

"Who knows?" The Nine Netherbird, however, wasn't bothered about that matter.

"Forget it." Having no answers, Mu Chen tossed that thought to the back of his head. He looked at the tens of thousands of Divine Lightning Beads

that were hovering in the sky and a smear of shock flashed across his eyes, “With so many Divine Lightning Beads, it should be enough.”

His hand swept and all of the Divine Lightning Beads were stored by him.

“Let’s go, we should get going as well.” Mu Chen stretched his body. The harvest that he had obtained on this trip to the Lightning Territory had far surpassed his expectations. Not only did his cultivation grow to Quasi-Heavenly Transformation Stage, he even obtained Spiritual Arts like the Dragon Soaring Art and the Thunder God Physique, which gave great perks to his combat abilities.

Right now, no matter how thorny the opponents that he will encounter in the Hunting War, he was confident in confronting them.

“Li Xuantong, we if meet again, perhaps the Pact of Three Moves will no longer be of any use.”

Mu Chen smiled. Several months ago, Li Xuantong was an opponent that was tough for him to win against. But now, Mu Chen no longer feared him.

“Let’s go and get your Northern Sea Dragon’s Blood Essence. Your wish can finally be fulfilled.” Mu Chen waved his hand as he smiled.

“Thanks.” the Nine Netherbird looked at Mu Chen and said with a low voice. Unconcealable joy was showing in his eyes. The Nine Netherbird had finally waited for this day.

“This relationship of ours...”

Mu Chen smiled with his eyes narrowed as he looked at the Nine Netherbird, sizing it up as he rubbed his chin, “If your evolution succeeds and you transform into a Divine Beast, you should possess the ability to take human form, right?”

At that time, he should be able to finally differentiate it’s gender, right? And Mu Chen had always maintained his curiosity on this point.

The Nine Netherbird rolled it’s eyes at him and no longer paid any

attention to him. The Nine Netherbird turned into a black light and burrowed into Mu Chen's body.

Mu Chen smiled as his figure moved, turning into a light image as he flew towards the exit of the Lightning Territory at lightning speed.

After half an hour, Mu Chen returned to the First Level and exited the Lightning Territory. After coming out of the Lightning Territory, he stood on the air and looked at the lively Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. His tensed-up body also gradually relaxed.

When Mu Chen exited the Lightning Territory, he did not head for the Freshman Area, but to the Spiritual Value Hall. He could sense the excitement within the Nine Netherbird. Since that's the case, then Mu Chen had decided to fulfill his promise.

The Spiritual Value Hall had the highest popularity in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. The frightening amount of people was like ants, constantly coming out and going in of the hall.

When Mu Chen entered the Spiritual Value Hall, he headed towards the center of the main hall, where the trading of Divine Lightning Beads was held.

Behind the huge crystal counter, there was a beautiful lady whose age should be roughly the same as the students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. However, helping out here can also obtain Spiritual Value Points as payment.

There was a decent amount of people purchasing Divine Lightning Beads. After queuing up for more than ten minutes, it was finally his turn. The beautiful girl looked at Mu Chen as she sweetly smiled, "Hi there, are you buying Divine Lightning Beads?"

"Nope, I'm here to sell them." Mu Chen shook his head.

When the lady heard his declaration, she couldn't help feeling curious. However, there were many students that condensed Divine Lightning Beads to exchange for Spiritual Value Points. Shortly after, she faintly smiled as she enquired, "The trading price of Divine Lightning Beads is

200 Spiritual Value Points for one, how many are you selling?"

She took up a brush and was prepared to record it down.

"13,000." Mu Chen smiled brilliantly.

Pa!

The brush in the lady's hand fell as her beautiful face was filled with astonishment. All of the students that were queuing up for their turn to purchase Divine Lightning Beads were also dumbfounded as they looked at Mu Chen.

13,000 Divine Lightning Beads? Was this kid's head clamped by a door? Were Divine Lightning Beads so easy to condense? 13,000 was an amount that not even Shen Cangsheng could condense!

When Mu Chen saw the doubts in the eyes of the lady, he did not bother to explain any further, but made a simple action of flicking his fingers. A brilliant silvery light started to flow out and instantly filled the surrounding counters.

"Senior Sister, 13,000 Divine Lightning Beads for a total of 2,600,000 Spiritual Value Points. Thanks."

Chapter 284: Blood Essence is obtained!

Within the Spiritual Value Hall, the bustling hall seemed to have quietened down in an instant. The dumbfounded gazes stared at the silvery current. Tens of thousands of Divine Lightning Beads. They've never seen anyone take such a huge amount out in one go before...

Within the Lightning Territory, condensing Divine Lightning Beads wasn't an easy task. Many people could only harvest around 10 beads a day. Furthermore, they still had to forsake the time that they could use to cultivate. Ten of thousands, if this was a task given to them to accomplish, even if they didn't rest, it would take an endless amount of time.

Furthermore 13,000 Divine Lightning Beads was equivalent to 2,600,000 Spiritual Value Points. It was an enormous sum that could be used to purchase a High Rank Spiritual Artifact or even a Quasi Deity Tier Spiritual Art from the Spiritual Value Hall.

The eyes that were staring at the large sum of Divine Lightning Beads had envy flickering in their eyes. But, fortunately, this was shown in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. If he was somewhere else in the Northern Heavens Continent, Mu Chen's way of revealing his wealth would definitely attract a lot of trouble to himself. Clearly, he was well aware of this issue, which was why he revealed it here.

The beautiful lady that was behind the counter recovered herself as she glanced at Mu Chen with amazement in her eyes. She clearly didn't know how he was able to obtain such a lump sum of Divine Lightning Beads. Fortunately, she was intelligent and did not ask that many questions. She took out a Mustard Seed Bracelet and as a light flickered, she stored all of the Divine Lightning Beads within it.

"Indeed, 13,000 beads." she slightly checked and nodded her head. Shortly after, she added as she smiled, "This student, I don't have the authority to process such a huge transaction. I'll go and get the teacher in-charge."

Mu Chen nodded his head. The lady turned around and left. After a

short while, she returned with a middle-aged man, whom Mu Chen assumed was the teacher in-charge here.

The teacher in-charge also gave Mu Chen a glance of astonishment. Even for himself, this was the first time that he had seen a student capable of taking out over ten thousand Divine Lightning Beads.

“Pass me your Spiritual Value Card.” the teacher in-charge lightly smiled. Although he was amazed, the teacher in-charge did not lose his composure, unlike the other students.

Mu Chen faintly smiled in reply as he handed his Spiritual Value Card over.

The teacher in-charge received it and also retrieved a Spiritual Value Card from his sleeve. A streak of light flashed into Mu Chen’s card and he returned it back to Mu Chen.

Mu Chen cast a glance at the Spiritual Value Card and saw 7,100,000 Spiritual Value Points. This made him feel relieved. His hard work, after so long, finally paid off.

“Thanks.”

He suppressed his impatience as he thanked the teacher in-charge, but he did not accept the Spiritual Value Card. He smiled gently, “I’m afraid that I have to trouble teacher, again. I wish to purchase an item.”

“What is it?” the teacher asked with a smile.

“The Northern Sea Dragon’s Blood Essence.” Mu Chen smiled in return.

The teacher in-charge’s hand that was holding onto the Spiritual Value Card trembled as he casted his glance at Mu Chen in astonishment. The Northern Sea Dragon’s Blood Essence that cost 7,000,000 Spiritual Value Points? This was the most expensive item among their Spiritual Value Point items and, after all of these years, he had yet to see any student capable of purchasing this item.

“Follow me.”

The teacher in-charge waved his hand and moved towards the back.

When Mu Chen saw the teacher walking, he immediately followed up. Behind him, many students did not clearly hear what Mu Chen wanted to purchase. But, after looking at the teacher in-charge's expression, they could guess that it wasn't an ordinary item that Mu Chen was buying. This caused curiosity to raise within their hearts.

Mu Chen, however, paid no attention to their curiosity as he followed the teacher into a small chamber. The latter walked into the inner chamber and, after a long time, he swept his sleeve and, as a light flickered, a crystal ball that was roughly the size of a human's head appeared in his hand.

Inside the crystal ball, there was a lump of golden liquid that was wiggling about with life, emitting a bizarre fluctuation.

Even with the isolation of the crystal ball, Mu Chen could detect the fearsome energy contained in that lump of golden blood. This was the genuine strength of the Divine Beasts.

Divine Beasts are existences comparable to Sovereigns.

"This is the Blood Essence of the Northern Sea Dragon, an item belonging to Lord Northern Sea." the teacher in-charge was also amazed as he looked at the golden blood and spoke with revere.

Mu Chen nodded his head. This Lord Northern Sea that the teacher spoke of should be the Northern Sea Dragon itself.

"This Blood Essence is priced at 7,000,000 Spiritual Value Points and I've already deducted it from your Spiritual Value Card." the teacher in-charge returned the card over to Mu Chen and the original 7,100,000 only had 100,000 left, which made Mu Chen helpless. He had turned poor in an instant before he even warmed those 7,000,000 Spiritual Value Points with his hand.

"Now, this Blood Essence of the Northern Sea Dragon belongs to you." the teacher in-charge smiled. Although he was curious about why Mu Chen wanted to purchase the Blood Essence, he clearly knew that he couldn't inquire about such personal matters.

“Thanks, teacher.”

Mu Chen took the Spiritual Value Point Card and stored the Blood Essence of the Northern Sea Dragon into the Mustard Seed Bracelet. He made a bow to the teacher and took his leave.

The teacher in-charge looked at Mu Chen’s leaving silhouette and went into silence, turned around and left. This matter with the Northern Sea Dragon’s Blood Essence wasn’t small; therefore, he had to report this matter to the higher-ups of the academy.

After coming out of the Spiritual Value Hall, Mu Chen looked at the flow of people and enquired in his head, while looking up at the sky, “You’ll be able to evolve now that we’ve obtained the Blood Essence of the Northern Sea Dragon.”

“How can it be that easy? I still have to undergo the tribulation.”

“That black heavenly lightning tribulation?” Mu Chen’s eyelids could not help twitching. Back then, when he first saw the Nine Netherbird, the latter was undergoing this tribulation. However, the latter had failed and, henceforth, Mu Chen knew how frightening this tribulation was.

“Shredding the spiritual and turning divine, this has always been the most important step of our Spiritual Beast’s cultivation route. Therefore, it won’t be so easy. I have already failed this step twice and, this time, by borrowing the power of this Northern Sea Dragon’s Blood Essence, I have a great amount of confidence this time round.” the Nine Netherbird said solemnly.

Mu Chen quietly nodded his head. Now that he had established a Bloodline Bond with the Nine Netherbird, they’re simple of one body. If they thrive, they’d thrive together and if they failed, they’d failed together. If anything went wrong with the Nine Netherbird, he would also suffer a grave blow. Therefore, he naturally wished for the Nine Netherbird to succeed in the tribulation.

“Adjust yourself to your best during these next two days. You can also draw my Spiritual Energy. Thereafter, we’ll look for a place and start the tribulation.” said Mu Chen.

In the aura sea, the Nine Netherbird nodded it's head as a look of gentleness flashed through it's eyes. It could sense the concern that was coming from Mu Chen's heart.

Mu Chen spoke nothing else as he headed back to the freshman area. By the time he returned, he had undoubtedly attracted the excitement of the Goddess Luo Association's members. In this period of time, the news of Mu Chen entering into the Eighth Level of the Lightning Territory had spread throughout the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy since long ago. This made many students startled. This freshman seemed to be able to accomplish an unexpected feat in several intervals at a time.

Mu Chen spoke and laughed with everyone for a brief moment, before returning to his small building. However, he did not see Luo Li. The latter had probably left to cultivate, which made him smile bitterly. That girl was still working so hard with her cultivation. However, when he thought of the responsibility that Luo Li had to bear, Mu Chen's mind was also heavy. He could sense that Luo Li might not be able to remain by his side for much longer. She was the next Empress of the Luo Shen Clan, and she had too much to prepare...

But, right now, his strength was still too weak, so he could not provide her with any help.

Standing on the small building, Mu Chen looked at the vast starry sky and lightly breathed out a mouthful of air. He still had a long way to go, but, fortunately, he should still have some time left.

During the next couple of days, Mu Chen did not go out but remained in the building to cultivate, and made preparations for the Nine Netherbird's tribulation. Although the Nine Netherbird could only depend on itself for the tribulation, Mu Chen also wished to provide the Nine Netherbird with strength as well.

And during these two days, the Nine Netherbird did not make any movements as it was quietly condensing its strength, preparing to challenge the tribulation that it had failed twice now.

Due to their preparations, the two days rapidly flew by.

After two days, Mu Chen flew out of the freshman's area and flew out of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. At the outside range, there was an endless range of mountains. This place was far from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy and having the tribulation here should keep anyone from interfering.

Mu Chen flew out for nearly half an hour, until he was far away from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, before his speed slowed down. Thereafter, he landed on a mountain. Although there were Spiritual Beasts around this mountain range, there were many powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuations. Henceforth, this was a pretty good place for the tribulation.

Mu Chen landed on a mountain peak. Before he could speak, black flames surged on his shoulder and a small sparrow flickered out. It looked at the sky, full of determination and pride in it's eyes.

Mu Chen's hand clenched and the crystal ball containing the Blood Essence of the Northern Sea Dragon appeared. The golden blood was slowly wiggling inside, emitting a powerful energy.

"Shall we start?" Mu Chen looked at the Nine Netherbird.

The Nine Netherbird nodded and, shortly after, it breathed black flames from it's mouth, shrouding the crystal ball and swallowed it into its body.

Shhhhhuuu!

Its figure flashed out as it soared into the horizon. Thereafter, the black flames swept out, as a clear and resonant cry resounded between the heavens and earth. As the black flames spread throughout the horizon, the Nine Netherbird's small body also started to expand. In just several breath's of time, a pair of blazing black-flamed wings had spread out to the point that they could almost cover the mountain.

Mu Chen raised his head, this was the second time that he had witnessed the Nine Netherbird reveal it's real body. Under the influence of the Northern Sea Dragon's Blood Essence, all of the injuries that the Nine Netherbird had suffered were completely healed, and, in addition, it even made the Nine Netherbird more powerful.

Liiiiiii!

The Nine Netherbird issued a cry towards the horizon as frightening Spiritual Energy ripples swept out. That powerful pressure filled everything between the heavens and earth.

Rumble!

When the Nine Netherbird unleashed it's energy without any restraints, frightening ripples started to gather into the nine heavens. There were lumps after lumps of black thunder clouds being formed that contained enough power to annihilate anything.

Mu Chen's gaze turned grave.

The tribulation had finally started.

Chapter 285: Divine Black Thunder Tribulation Appears Again!

Boom!

As the heaven and earth trembled, the formerly clear sky instantly turned dark. Even the Spiritual Energy between the heavens and earth sensed the horrifying taste in it and started to escape from this region.

Wuuuu! Wuuu!

Within the mountain range, an endless amount of Spiritual Energy trembled, issuing a mournful shriek. The Divine Black Thunder Tribulation was extremely fearsome for a Spiritual Beast.

The tribulation could allow them to evolve after the long cultivation, but it also made them feel extreme fear...

Mu Chen stood on the mountain peak as his mountain stared gravely at the heavens. The black thunder clouds constantly gathered and took form with a black light flickering within them. The extremely violent lightning energy couldn't be properly described. Even the Eighth Level of the Lightning Territory wasn't as frightening as it.

This was the genuine annihilation energy that originated from the heavens and earth.

Under the terrifying thunder clouds, the Nine Netherbird flapped it's wings as it's enormous body was ablaze with black flames. Under the heat of the black flames, even the temperature in the nearby surroundings had risen.

Every time the Nine Netherbird flapped it's wings, it swept out a blazing gale that engulfed the heavens and earth.

"Li!!"

The Nine Netherbird issued a clear and bright cry. It's pupils were blazing with black flames as it looked at the constantly forming black thunder clouds with an unyielding intent. It had already been defeated

twice. If it didn't possess the bloodline of the undying bird, it would have been reduced to ashes by the tribulation.

However, even if it had failed twice, it still refused to admit defeat. It was the prideful Nine Netherbird, possessing the bloodline of the Undying Bird. The Nine Netherbird wanted to become the most powerful Divine Beast between these heavens and earth!

Therefore, it had to succeed in its evolution at all costs!

The Nine Netherbird issued a clear cry, and flapped its huge wings as it issued a challenge to the tribulation, once again, and, this time, it will not be defeated!

Rumble!

The constantly forming tribulation seemed to have sensed the challenge from the Nine Netherbird and, in an instant, the black thunder clouds wiggled along with a formidable might that swept out.

More and more frightening lightning energies were being gathered in the thundercloud.

Rumble!

The thundercloud was abruptly torn apart and the world had gone silent. A huge black lightning bolt struck down with its annihilating power as it aimed at the Nine Netherbird.

Liiii!

The Nine Netherbird issued a cry, flapped its huge wings as the black flames that filled the skies surged out, and turned into a black flaming tornado that clashed with the black thunder.

Liiiiiiii!

A huge cry resounded as the lightning and black flames clashed together and abruptly swept out. The surrounding mountain peaks seemed to have been instantly leveled.

Mu Chen landed on the ground as he watched the clash with worry filling his eyes. Back in the Northern Spiritual Realm, he had already

witnessed the clash between the Nine Netherbird and the black lightning once before. And now, whether if it's the Nine Netherbird or the tribulation, both were clearly more powerful compared to back then.

"This Divine Black Thunder Tribulation seems to get stronger along with the strength of the life form that's undergoing the tribulation." Mu Chen fell into his thoughts. No wonder it was the necessary step that a Spiritual Beast had to go through in its path of cultivation. Under the Divine Black Thunder Tribulation, who knows how many powerful Spiritual Beasts had been annihilated?

In the first confront, the Nine Netherbird did not fall into a disadvantage. However, Mu Chen was clear that this was just the beginning...

Just when this thought flashed through Mu Chen's heart, the Divine Black Thunder Tribulation was completely formed up on the horizon. Frightful heavenly might was spreading as it started to show its ferocity.

Boom! Booom!

When the heavens and earth had darkened down, the tribulation wiggled as a huge black lightning bolt shot down. All of the lightning was aiming at the Nine Netherbird with extreme accuracy.

The Nine Netherbird's eyes flashed with unyielding flames as it watched the endlessly falling lightning. It flapped its wings as the energy within its body was being completely mobilised.

Huuuuuuu! Huuuu!

The black flames that looked like a flaming sea swept out, turning into a tornado as it ripped the horizon apart and was aimed towards the lightning bolts, an in attempt to obstruct them.

Two frightening powers clashed in the horizon. Energy ripples that were roughly ten thousand feet in height fluctuated out that even the space was instantly twisted. Any leakage of that energy was sufficient to instantly level this mountain range.

Mu Chen stood on the ground as he stared at the mad confrontation up

in the sky. Both of his fists were tightly clenched and his body was tensed up. He could sense the defense of the Nine Netherbird was starting to weaken as the black lightning shot down even faster.

Mu Chen's pupils suddenly shrank and saw a huge lightning bolt shoot down from the horizon. It managed to pierce through the black flaming tornado and struck the Nine Netherbird.

Liiiii!

A deep groan sounded out. The body of the huge Nine Netherbird was pulled down by a thousand feet with black smoke fuming from the spot that the lightning bolt had struck. Even with the black flames, it was still insufficient to recover the wound at a fast speed.

The Nine Netherbird issued out a painful cry as its eyes looked as though they had turned scarlet red.

Boom! Boooom!

And before the Nine Netherbird was enraged, the Divine Black Thunder Tribulation had entered into a frenzied state. The thunder clouds shrank and a black lightning bolt struck down. In that instant, even the heavens and earth were trembling at the frenzied tribulation.

The Nine Netherbird's wings retracted together as it guarded its body. Black flames surged and it had actually formed layers of black crystals. On the crystal layers, there were black flames surging, looking extremely solid.

Bang! Baaang!

The lightning pierced through the heavens and earth and struck the black crystal that surrounded the Nine Netherbird. As every lightning bolt fell, it would shatter layers of crystal. The body of the Nine Netherbird trembled, as though it had suffered a huge pain.

The lightning wreaked havoc for a few minutes. When the crystal layers that surrounded the Nine Netherbird had been shattered, its slender and huge body was in a bad state to the point that there was fresh blood dripping from the Nine Netherbird's wings.

Mu Chen saw the sorry state of the Nine Netherbird and both of his fists were clenched even tighter. The Divine Black Thunder Tribulation was strong to the extend that every single lightning bolt was capable of reducing Heavenly Fusion Stage experts into ashes.

But looking at the current situation, if this continued, it was definitely impossible for the Nine Netherbird to endure it.

Under Mu Chen's nervous gaze, up in the sky, the Nine Netherbird paid no attention to its gravely injured body. It raised it's head, issuing a prideful cry. Even if it was fated to die today, it won't yield to the Divine Black Thunder Tribulation.

"Boom!"

The lightning was simply merciless as the annihilating lightning bolts continued to strike down without any mercy.

Xiiiiuuuuu!

However, just when the lightning was about to land onto the body of the Nine Netherbird, something suddenly shot out, leaving a fine streak of light. The streak of light hovered above the Nine Netherbird, and formed a huge pair of wings that were spread out.

The feather had a dark azure colour with an endless light flowing from it. It stretched its wings that seemed to have covered the heavens and earth.

The lightning mercilessly struck the feather, causing the light that flowed in it to dissipate by a lot. However, it still managed to endure and wasn't destroyed.

"What is that?" Mu Chen was slightly startled. The feather wasn't something that belonged to the Nine Netherbird. But it contained huge power that was capable of enduring several blows from the lightning bolts.

When the Nine Netherbird saw the situation, it was was shocked. However, it immediately started to recover from its wounds. It was well aware that although the feather was formidable, it could only withstand

the lightning bolts for a small while. In the end, the Nine Netherbird still had to rely on itself to pass through this tribulation.

The Divine Black Thunder Tribulation suddenly became furious as it sensed that this item wasn't something that belonged to the Nine Netherbird. And it was extremely hateful towards external interference.

Boom! Booom!

Because of that, the Divine Black Thunder Tribulation started to wiggle and huge lightning bolts constantly hacked down. Faced with the enraged hacking of the Divine Black Thunder Tribulation, the feather started to dulled down and, in the end, it was reduced to dust by the divine lightning.

"Liiii!"

When the feather was reduced to dust, the Nine Netherbird issued a cry towards the sky. Its boiling blood was dripping from its body, but it's eyes still remained clear.

When it issued its cry, Mu Chen could see the wound son the Nine Netherbird's body flashed across with a faint purple luster. It seemed to be a strand of weak purple flames.

Those purple flames were hidden within the black flames and were naturally hard to be detected. However, Mu Chen still saw that as the purple flames appeared, the wounds on the body of the Nine Netherbird were rapidly being healed to the point that even the remnant lightning energy that was on its wounds could not obstruct it.

"Those are the... Undying Flames?!" Mu Chen stared at the fine purple flames as his pupils shrank. With his current understanding towards the Nine Netherbird, it natural that he knew that only the Undying Flames that were born within the body of the Primordial Undying Bird could disregard the injury of the Thunder Tribulation and recover its body. However, the Undying Flames were the speciality of the Undying Bird. Although the Nine Netherbird possessed a little of the Undying Bird's bloodline, it was, after all, too thin to be sufficient to awaken the Undying Flames...

But, right now, the Undying Flames had actually appeared from the body of the Nine Netherbird. This meant that the Undying Bird's blood that was contained within its body far surpassed an ordinary Nine Netherbird!

Mu Chen's gaze flickered. It seemed like the Nine Netherbird wasn't an ordinary kind in its clan.

Having its wounds being rapidly healed, the Nine Netherbird's unyielding flames that were blazing within its eyes became even richer. It raised it's head, looked at the thundercloud that were shrinking and the destructive energy that was in the Divine Black Thunder Tribulation becoming even more fearsome.

The Nine Netherbird knew that the Divine Black Thunder Tribulation was gathering its strongest energy, preparing to wipe it out from the face of this world!

Even when it faced the power that could destroy itself, the Nine Netherbird still raised it's prideful head. It's huge pair of wings lightly flapped and, among the black flames, faint traces of purple flames appeared.

"Liiiiii!"

The cry was directed towards the Divine Black Thunder Tribulation, issuing its final challenge!

Chapter 286: (Hidden Title)

Up in the heavens, the black thunder clouds were rapidly gathering. The thunder clouds did not issue any thunderous sounds, but the pressure that it issued had caused the heavens and earth to freeze.

Anyone could sense how terrifying the perishing storm would be after the silence.

The Nine Netherbird flapped its wings as its black flames surged. In the depths of the black flames, fine purple flames fluctuated. Although they were small and hard to detect, they emitted a surge of mysterious power.

On the grounds below, Mu Chen's gaze turned extremely grave. Under that pressure, he could sense the Spiritual Energy within his body had stopped circulating. He was well aware that the next attack from the Divine Black Thunder Tribulation would be the last and if the Nine Netherbird could withstand it, then it would succeed its tribulation and shred its spiritual body, and evolve into a Divine Beast. By truly shredding itself from the category of a Spiritual Beast, and becoming the powerful Divine Beast that was comparable to Sovereigns, it would possess endless prospects as well.

However, if it couldn't withstand it, it would have failed. Although the Nine Netherbird possessed the bloodline of the Undying Bird, it couldn't escape death every single time. The slightest mistake would cause it to be destroyed.

Once the Nine Netherbird was destroyed, Mu Chen, who had a Bloodline bond with it would also suffer terrifying injuries, or even death.

In this outcome, it would be extremely tragic for both Mu Chen and the Nine Netherbird.

But at this timing, Mu Chen was also helpless. The Thunder Tribulation was too terrifying to the point that even a Sovereign wouldn't dare to challenge it. Not to mention that he was just a puny Quasi-Heavenly Transformation Stage. Probably even if he had exerted all his means, it wouldn't be able to shake it.

“Nine Netherbird, go for it.” Mu Chen’s fists were clenched as he muttered.

The suppressed atmosphere engulfed the heavens and earth. The black thunder clouds that had originally shrouded the heavens and earth of ten thousand feet had shrunk down to a hundred feet. But the colour was even more dense and, looking from afar, it was like a black hole that was slowly revolving.

Onom.

The black thunder clouds that were roughly a hundred feet in size suddenly wiggled. At the center, the thunder clouds were revolving and were caving in, bit by bit. At the center of the dent, the black-coloured lightning bolts were gathering together. The black-coloured lightning bolts seemed to be like sinister black dragons that were slowly wiggling about.

“Boom!”

At the center of the dent, a black-coloured lightning bolt abruptly shot out. It was like a black-coloured divine light that had pierced through the horizon. The destructive power spread and the area that was swept by the black-coloured light seemed to decompose Spiritual Energy...

The entire heavens and earth were in silence as the black divine light roared as it shot down, like a deity that had been enraged.

Liiii!

The black flames were blazing within the eyes of the Nine Netherbird. It suddenly issued a cry and the flames that were compressed together shot up into the sky, and turned into a black-coloured feather that was roughly a thousand feet in size.

On the feather, it looked as though profound runes were being carved on it. The black flames had ascended and were extremely abnormal.

Facing that terrifying attack of the Divine Black Thunder Tribulation, the Nine Netherbird also exerted all of its power and lashed out with the most frightening move it had.

Shhhhhhuu!

As the black feather shot out, it pierced through the space and heavily clashed with the black-coloured divine light that had shot down from the heavens.

At that instant, the two force clashed, even the light between the heavens and earth seemed to have been sucked in. Only a black-coloured light was spreading out in the sky and shrouded the area in a hundred mile radius.

Bang! Bang!

The mountains were being swept through and instantly turned into ashes, one after another. Looking from above, everything within a hundred miles was leveled to ground as each mountain range was being wiped out.

Such destructive power had made those that were watching it feel a chill in their hearts.

Mu Chen did not have any startling thoughts as he fixed his eyes on the far horizon. A black light had gathered and was slowly pressing down. As it's pressure pressed down, fine cracks started to appear.

The power of the Divine Black Thunder Tribulation was too powerful!

Mu Chen's heart jumped as his eyes shrank. As more and more cracks appeared on the black feather, it finally could not endure anymore and under the black-coloured divine light and a sharp sound, it shattered.

As the black feather crumbled, the black light was unblockable and was whistling down under Mu Chen's gaze. It attacked the enormous body of the Nine Netherbird.

Liiiii!

The cry that suddenly resounded was extremely sharp. The huge body of the Nine Netherbird rapidly fell and heavily landed on a mountain range far away.

Bang!

It felt like an earthquake had happened as a surging wave swept out. At

the location that the Nine Netherbird had fallen, the surrounding range of ten thousand feet had instantly crumbled. Deep cracks were frantically spreading on the ground.

The vast mountain range was also instantly destroyed!

Mu Chen flew into the sky, and escaped that terrifying impact. He quickly rushed over and, at the center of the crater, the smoke was spreading and started to dissipate, bit by bit. The scene within was shown to Mu Chen.

In the huge crater, the Nine Netherbird was lying down in a terrible state. The black-coloured feathers on it's body were destroyed and no longer had the gracefulness that it once had. Countless savage wounds were revealed on it's body as fresh blood flowed out, instantly dying the ground in red.

Mu Chen's gaze was fixed on the Nine Netherbird that was not moving in the blood pool. The Nine Netherbird's face was pale and Mu Chen immediately landed at the location of the Nine Netherbird. He stuck his palm out, injecting his Spiritual Energy into the body of the Nine Netherbird.

Under the injection of Spiritual Energy, the Nine Netherbird that was lying in the blood pool finally trembled. It managed to open it's eyes a little as a weak intent spread out, "I've managed to succeed?"

When Mu Chen saw that the Nine Netherbird was still alive, only then did he feel relieved. He raised his head and his face abruptly changed. Up in the sky, the dissipating black thunder clouds were still flickering with a black light.

There was still some remnant destructive ripples in it.

Boom!

The black thunder clouds rumbled and a black lightning bolt shot down. However, that divine lightning bolt was clearly just a remnant energy and, compared to before, it was much weaker.

At this point of time, the Nine Netherbird was already at the edge and

could die at anytime. If that lightning bolt struck it right now, it would probably be dead!

The Nine Netherbird seemed to have sensed this situation and immediately struggled up. However, it didn't have any energy left nor blood to fill its body, and started to emit despair in its eyes.

After working hard for so many years, was it all still in vain?

Repeatedly fighting and, in the end, still failed?

Mu Chen looked at the despair in the Nine Netherbird's eyes. He couldn't help clenching his fist and, shortly after, with his teeth clenched, his figure moved. He appeared above the Nine Netherbird and with a bark, his handsigns changed. A Majestic Spiritual Energy gathered behind him and turned into a huge White Tiger. The White Tiger stood on the starry sky and ran, along with inexhaustible killing intent as it charged towards the last black lightning bolt.

Bang!

Even with such a powerful attack, the instant it came in contact with the black lightning, it was only an instant before the black lightning tore the White Tiger apart.

Boom!

The speed of the black lightning was fast as it had destroyed the White Tiger in just an instant and appeared above Mu Chen. Without the slightest leniency, it had struck Mu Chen's body.

The black lightning had sensed the similar ripples from the Nine Netherbird and, naturally, it wouldn't let Mu Chen off.

Bang!

Mu Chen had been struck by the lightning bolt and a mouthful of blood spurted out. His body was covered by the violent lightning. Thereafter, he fell, landing not too far away from the Nine Netherbird and the ground beneath it had directly crumbled.

Liii!

When the Nine Netherbird saw the situation, it instantly issued a painful and low cry. Trembling as it stretched both of its wings that was filled with wounds, it tried to save Mu Chen, who was covered in black lightning.

However, the Nine Netherbird's wounds were too heavy. The instant it moved, intense pain spread out and had nearly submerged its last bit of consciousness.

As the last lightning bolt landed, the black thunder clouds up in the sky had thoroughly dissipated. The instant the thunder clouds dissipated, the Nine Netherbird's body instantly burst forth with dazzling light.

That light was extremely bizarre as it shrouded the Nine Netherbird. Under the shining light, the terrible wounds on the Nine Netherbird were healed, little by little.

"Has the tribulation finally succeeded?"

The Nine Netherbird muttered to itself as its eyes were filled with emotions. It could sense that a huge change started to occur within its body.

This was a genuine evolution.

From body to bloodline!

The evolution caused it to be extremely happy. However, it could see the figure that was shrouded with lightning not far away. Mu Chen's strength was too weak and was impossible for him to bear the black lightning, even if it was just a remnant energy from the Divine Black Thunder Tribulation!

However, when it was anxious, it saw that the figure that wasn't far away had trembled. The black lightning on his body started to dissipate. He crawled up with great difficulty and with a bend, fresh blood uncontrollably spurt out from his mouth. He was on the verge of collapsing and clearly, he had suffered great injuries.

"Damn it, I nearly died!"

Mu Chen's face was as pale as paper as he kneeled on the ground. He wiped the trace of blood at the corner of his mouth. Lowering his head, he

looked at his palm as a smear of light flashed though his eyes and muttered, “It’s all thanks to this Thunder God Physique; otherwise, I would’ve died.”

“Nine Netherbird!”

As he muttered. He also sensed the dazzling light before him. He immediately raised his head and saw the huge body of the Nine Netherbird being covered by the divine light and started to shrink.

The body turned smaller and smaller. In the end, it shrink into the light. Mu Chen narrowed his eyes from the brightness and he could not see the scene clearly.

The light lasted for a long time, before it weakened down. As the light weakened, Mu Chen’s eyes also widened.

Within the light, there was a jade-like naked body. Her figure was graceful and her pair of jade legs were slender and slim. Smooth and stretched taut, she was extremely sexy. On top of her jade legs, she was supporting a waist and on top of that, there was a snow-white neck that was similar to a swan’s.

Her rosy lips lightly lifted, showing her charming faint purple eyes. With wildness that could make a man’s heart aroused.

Mu Chen was dumbfounded as he muttered, “...Sure enough it was a female.”

Title – Tribulation Succeeded

Chapter 287: Slumber

On the messy ground, the beautiful lady's nude body flickered with a jade-like luster. The temptation from her could make any man unable to shift their gaze from her.

However, the beautiful lady that was before him wasn't sweet tempered. When she heard Mu Chen's muttering, her brows knitted together. Her figure moved, a fragrance swept over and Mu Chen's body was knocked into the rock behind him. Thereafter, a fragile yet tight body stuck to him. At the same time, her slender jade-like hands grabbed Mu Chen's throat.

"Do you believe that I won't kill you?" Her voice was clear, like a spring stream streaking down the mountain, mixed with a cold temperature, causing the spring to be a little cold as well.

Mu Chen leaned against the rock, facing her threats. He couldn't help flinging his mouth as he said in helplessness, "Kill me, then."

It seemed like even though she had taken a human form, the Nine Netherbird's character still didn't know any tenderness.

Pffffft.

The beautiful lady before him smiled. Her jade-like hands gently touched Mu Chen's face as she smiled tenderly, "Considering your previous action by withstanding that last lightning strike, I'll not bother about you taking advantage of me."

Mu Chen felt funny and extremely embarrassed. He couldn't help shrinking his body to prevent himself from coming into contact with that body. Her body was certainly sexy and filled with wildness. She was like a female leopard that could easily evoke the temptation of men.

"Can you wear some clothes? Although you're a Nine Netherbird, you're in human form right now. So it's still best if you take note of it." said Mu Chen. This advantage wasn't something that he wanted to take.

"Human forms are so troublesome." the Nine Netherbird shook her head. Lustrous light surged over her body and some green-black clothing

formed, covering all the spots that were revealed. Even with those clothes, her graceful physique looked extremely tempting, with her slender, yet fine waist and ample chest.

Only then, did Mu Chen feel relieved. That nearly wanted his life.

"Your Tribulation should have succeeded, right?" Mu Chen looked towards the Nine Netherbird and hesitated a little before adding on, "I still don't know your name. Am I supposed to keep calling you Nine Netherbird?"

"Call me Nine Nether, then." As she had successfully passed through the Divine Black Thunder Tribulation, she was extremely happy. She smiled as she patted Mu Chen's shoulders, "in the future, let this older sister take care of you."

"However, it was still impossible right now..." Nine Nether suddenly frowned her brows and added, "I still have not completed the last step."

"What?" Mu Chen asked in doubt.

"Although I have successfully gone through the tribulation, my physical body still has yet to evolve into the physique of a Divine Beast. Therefore, for a period of time, I'll be in a slumber to evolve my physical body. Wait till I appear again, then I would have successfully evolved into a Nine Netherworld Bird!" Nine Nether's eyes, filled with ambition, surged forth with anticipation.

"Nine Netherworld Bird..." Mu Chen nodded. That should be the evolved state of the Nine Netherbird. Although there was a word difference, Spiritual Beasts and Divine Beasts were extreme opposites.

"In the period of time that I'm asleep, don't lose that life of yours. We are contracted through the Bloodline Bond, so I don't want to suffer a backlash from the Bloodline Bond unknowingly, after I'd just succeeded the Tribulation." Nine Nether's eyes glanced at Mu Chen as she said.

Mu Chen felt a little regretful. He thought that he could have a powerful bodyguard, who could have thought that she would need to be in a deep slumber. If that's the case, didn't he lose a trump card instead?

“In this period of time, if you can’t afford to offend, then hide. Wait until I wake up, I’ll kill everyone that’s bullied you. Understood?” Nine Nether smiled tenderly.

“I’m not that weak.” Mu Chen said helplessly.

“Okay then, I’ll start. You should leave after waiting awhile. The commotion caused by my tribulation was too huge. I’m afraid that it’d be noticed by those old fellas of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy and they might come over to take a look.”

Nine Nether reminded him before the black flames surged over her body, while her long and narrow eyes streaked with traces of the mysterious purple flames.

The raging black flames rose, turning into a light screen as it shrouded Nine Nether. The black flames started to solidify, bit by bit, before turning into a huge black egg that was roughly the size of a human’s height.

Feathery winged runes appeared on the huge black egg, they were ancient and cryptic as the flickering purple light could be vaguely seen.

When Mu Chen saw that Nine Nether had turned into a huge egg, having falling into a deep slumber to start her last evolution, he made a waving action and stored the egg in his Mustard Seed Bracelet. It seemed like, for a period of time in the near future, he could only depend on himself.

However, he was filled with anticipation. When Nine Nether wakes up, with her strength, she should be able to contend against Sovereigns, right? At that time, this bodyguard of his would be very powerful.

“Time to leave.”

Mu Chen took another glance at the chaotic land, before making a move, soaring up into the sky and made several flickering moves before disappearing into the horizon.

Roughly half an hour later after Mu Chen had left, a breeze brushed against a destroyed mountain peak. A bald old man that was holding some crutches appeared. His muddy gaze looked at the direction that Mu Chen

left in as a trace of astonishment flashed across his old face.

"That small Nine Netherbird actually had such a dense bloodline of the Undying Bird..."

"Seems like a genius has appeared in the Nine Netherbird's clan. Who knows, that small Nine Netherbird might be able to evolve into the Primordial Undying Bird..."

"But she actually made a Bloodline Bond contract with a small human, which could be her fatality... If those old monsters of the Nine Netherbird clan were to know of this matter, they'd probably be enraged."

"Haha..."

The bald old man softly laughed. As his laughter resounded, his body started to turn illusionary before he completely disappeared.

The land was restored to its silence. However, this silence was only maintained for half an hour before the space lightly rippled again. Shortly after. Several figures appeared out of thin air.

These few figure's hairs were white and they had solemn expressions. Although there weren't any powerful ripple fluctuations around them, a frightening amount of pressure was emitting from them.

Among them, Elder Zhu Tian was also present. At this moment, his face was grave as he looked at the heavy destruction on the land with fearsome black lightning energy still lingering around.

"It's the Divine Black Lightning..." an Elder of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy said with a solemn look in his eyes as he continued, "There was actually a Spiritual Beast that underwent the Divine Black Thunder Tribulation here."

Hearing the four words 'Divine Black Thunder Tribulation', Elder Zhu Tian's face, as well as everyone else's, could not help changing expressions. They naturally understood the might of that Lightning Tribulation. The moment they succeeded the tribulation, the Spiritual Beast would be able to evolve into a genuine Divine Beast that was comparable to a Sovereign.

Even in the Northern Heavens Continent, this kind of existence was considered the apex. But they never thought that it would appear within the surroundings of their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Furthermore, they had not sensed any powerful Spiritual Beasts hidden in the surrounding mountain ranges of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy after all these years.

"However, looking at the traces of blood scattered on the ground, that Spiritual Beast might have failed its tribulation and was reduced to nothing under the Divine Black Thunder Tribulation." Elder Zhu Tian looked at the destroyed ground. Although he did not witness the scene with his own eyes, he could sense the fearsome confrontation that happened here.

"What a pity."

The other elders also felt pity as they sighed. The cultivation of the Spiritual Beasts took much longer compared to the human's. Who knew how many months and years were needed for a Spiritual Beast to cultivate till the Divine Black Thunder Tribulation. But now, under the ruthlessness of the Divine Black Thunder Tribulation, it had turned into ashes and no longer existed.

"However, even if that unknown Spiritual Beast might have been killed by the Lightning Tribulation, we still have to report this to the Dean."

Elder Zhu Tian's brows knitted, "Recently, the movements of the Demonic Dragon Palace in the Northern Heavens Continent has increased. Those fellows have already viewed our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy as their mortal enemies. The moment an opportunity arises, they will probably create a huge threat to our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Therefore, we have to be cautious."

The other Elders solemnly nodded in agreement. The name of the Demonic Dragon Palace had quite a bit of pressure to them. This force had nearly unified the entire Northern Heavens Continent to the point that even the surrounding continents was affected by their power.

Back then, if it wasn't for the sudden change in the Demonic Dragon

Palace, in addition to their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy having Lord Northern Sea, the outcome of the battle would have been hard to tell who'd have been victorious.

"Let's go."

Elder Zhu Tian no longer spoke and with a wave of his sleeve, several figures flashed out and in several breaths, they had disappeared.

The heavens and earth had its peace, once again, restored. Only the destroyed ground proved the terrifying clash.

...

Mu Chen returned to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy without any obstructions, and returned to the Freshman's Area. His face was still a little pale. Although the divine black lightning was not able to claim his life, due to the Thunder God Physique that he had cultivated, it still caused quite a big injury to him. Therefore, he had to quickly recover from his injury.

As there was only three days left before the Hunting War, he had to be in top form.

Mu Chen's body landed on the small building. Shortly after, his expression changed as he saw a black-dressed beauty that was smiling at him.

When Mu Chen saw her, a gentle smile appeared on his handsome face. He couldn't help going to her and embracing that girl into his bosom. Having that warmth and fragrance in his embrace, he couldn't help feeling at ease.

Luo Li also lightly smiled. She complied as she leaned her face into his chest. Her pointed nose lightly sniffed and shortly after, her gem-like eyes narrowed. Mu Chen seemed to have a faint fragrance on him and, based on her intuition, she knew that it was the scent of another woman.

Mu Chen, who was still enjoying the warmth and fragrance also sensed Luo Li's state. His heart jumped and felt panic.

“Who is she?”

Luo Li’s exquisite and porcelain-like face had the look of a dangerous smile. Her voice was gentle, but it gave Mu Chen a headache. Her sensing of smell of a woman was, indeed, frightening.

Chapter 288: Boiling

Mu Chen helplessly looked at the arc that Luo Li made with her mouth. It felt dangerous, but, at the same time, he couldn't help wanting to laugh as he could sense a rare jealousy from her tone.

"You're still not explaining!" Luo Li understood Mu Chen too well. The moment she saw the smile in Mu Chen's eyes, her face immediately turned red as she pretended to the angry and stared at him.

Mu Chen held onto the beauty's slender waist and tightly embraced it. After some silence, he did not intent on hiding the existence of the Nine Netherbird from Luo Li. Hence, he simply briefed on the matters regarding the Nine Netherbird.

"Nine Netherbird?" when Luo Li heard his explanation, she was faintly startled. Especially when he heard that earlier on, the Nine Netherbird managed to succeed in the Divine Black Thunder Tribulation, the astonishment on her face grew even richer.

She was, after all, from the Luo Shen Clan. Henceforth, she had some knowledge towards powerful Spiritual Beast Clans. Among the Spiritual Beast Clans, the Nine Netherbird was rather powerful. However, she never expected one to be hidden in Mu Chen's body.

"You actually dared to take the Divine Black Lightning?!" However, her eyes widened shortly with palpitation filling her eyes.

Not even Sovereign experts would dare to come in contact with the Divine Black Lightning Tribulation and with Mu Chen's strength, if there was any mistake, it would mean turning into ashes.

"I have contracted the Bloodline Bond with the Nine Netherbird. If she dies, I will also suffer the backlash." Mu Chen helplessly smiled and added, "But looking from any direction, it was impossible for me to watch her get destroyed by the Lightning Tribulation."

"A Bloodline Bond!?"

Luo Li couldn't help opening her small mouth and take a ruthless bite at

Mu Chen's chest, "You're killing me from the anger."

She naturally had some understanding towards the Bloodline Bond. Thus, Mu Chen and the life of the Nine Netherbird was linked together and no matter which side suffered a threat to their life, the other party would suffer a backlash from the Bloodline Bond.

Mu Chen scratched his head and didn't know how to explain it. Back then, there wasn't any other choice but to establish the Bloodline Bond. However, the girl that was in his embrace was just jealous, so he didn't make any explanations but embraced her tightly.

"But, it's good. She had succeeded the Divine Black Thunder Tribulation and when she awakens, she will be an existence comparable to Sovereigns. And, in the future, you will be safer and I'll be more at ease." Luo Li wasn't someone that would pester endlessly. After releasing some of her jealousy, she recovered.

Mu Chen looked at the young girl, remembering that she will leave him to return to the Luo Shen Clan to bear a huge responsibility and was trying her best to endure everything, becoming the new Empress of the Luo Shen Clan. Mu Chen felt a faint heartache as he lowered his head to the young girl's forehead, "But, I'm not at ease about you."

"Even you've lost to me in the past, what is there not be at ease about?" Luo Li faintly smiled.

Mu Chen didn't have the heart to joke with her. His black pupils stared at her seriously. Luo Li's pretty eyes slightly move away and said in a soft voice, "What?"

"Luo Li."

Mu Chen's tone was grave and serious as he slowly spoke, "Remember, no matter what happens, you have to wait for me. Perhaps it will be hard for you in the Luo Shen Clan, but believe me, for you, I will become stronger, no matter how hard it will be, until the day I can fulfil my promise to you."

Luo Li's eyes turned red from looking at Mu Chen's grave gaze. She

knew how difficult Mu Chen had to work hard in order to fulfil his promise. The path of experts was enough to cover someone in wounds and lose their formal clean smile.

Perhaps all that hard work and tempering could refine this youth's face to be more mature. But, at the same time, it made her feel some heartache.

"Okay, I promise you." Luo Li's voice was gentle, as though it was about to melt. Her clear eyes flickered with affection.

Mu Chen's eyes turned slightly heated from looking at the touching appearance of the girl that was in his embrace. The arm that he used to embrace the girl became even more forceful, as though he wanted to merge her into his body.

He lowered his head.

"Don't." The girl emitted a sound that was as faint as a fly as she seemed to have sensed something. However, it was disregarded by the youth and with a tyrannical method, he planted a kiss on those rosy red lips.

The girl slightly struggled, but quickly relaxed her body. She was like a puddle of water as she melted in Mu Chen's embrace.

In the next three days, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy turned more and more heated with an astonishing speed. The entire atmosphere in the academy felt as though it had been ignited.

The origin of that fire was, naturally, the Hunting War.

This was the biggest annual event in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Every single year, there would be countless black horses that would soar into the heavens and expose their achievements in that year.

Every time the Hunting War ended, there would be a huge change in the rankings of the Heavenly Ranking.

Therefore, the Hunting War would certainly be an intense battle. It was the battle between the black horses and the current outstanding students. It would have to depend on each other's trump cards, if they're able to replace their opponent.

Henceforth, the atmosphere in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was extremely heated. Especially the Convergence Spiritual Array, as well as the Lightning Territory. From time to time, a figure with soaring fighting intent could be seen walking out of it.

Without any exceptions, all those people had powerful Spiritual Energy ripples fluctuating from them. They had ended their long training and returned back to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. They wanted to display their explosive strengths in the Hunting War and seize their once lost or their coming glory.

The entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was also especially heated up and countless people were inquiring all around, attempting to probe the trump cards, as well as the concealed strength of those black horses.

Under this heat, countless students had anticipation in their heart as they awaited the soon-to-start Hunting War.

When the third day arrived, the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was shrouded in passion. Up in the sky, wind breaking sounds were constantly resounding as the countless figures became exceptionally spectacular.

In the Freshman's Area, Mu Chen and Luo Li were already at the field next to the lake, where Ye Qingling, Zhou Ling and many other members of the Goddess Luo Association surrounded them in excitement. Among the current freshmen, probably only Mu Chen, Luo Li, as well as a other few people, were qualified to partake in the Hunting War.

"Brother Mu, good luck! As long as your performance in the Hunting War is outstanding, you could become an influential person in the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy!" these were the excited voices of the Goddess Luo Association's members.

Although Mu Chen did possess some fame in the academy, he still wasn't qualified to be considered an influential person. Only people like Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong, Su Xuan, He Yao and the other people that were in the top 10 ranking of the Heavenly Ranking could have such a

title.

Mu Chen smiled, he didn't have much interest in the title of an influential figure. However, he was rather interested in the Spiritual Empowerment.

"Come, we should get going." Luo Li smiled.

"Okay."

Mu Chen smiled as his figure flashed out, with Luo Li closely following him from behind. After them, Ye Qingling, Zhou Ling and the rest quickly followed after. Although they're not participating in the Hunting War, it was inevitable for them to attend such a lively annual event in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

When Mu Chen and the rest moved, He Yao, along with a huge number of the Demon's Gate's members, walked out of their newly constructed Headquarters. His gaze was cold as he directed them towards the Freshman Area.

Mu Chen, I hope that you're not that unlucky to encounter me in the Hunting War. Otherwise, I will let you understand that, compared to a genuine influential figure of the academy, you, as a freshman, are still too far away.

On an island that was at the center of the lake, Su Xuan and Su Ling'er also came out. They could not help smiling as they looked at the wind breaking sound that constantly resounded in the sky. It was, once again, the most lively moment of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

"Let's go."

Su Xuan gently smiled as she walked forth. When she walked out, the Spiritual Energy around her rippled out like water. However, after taking a few steps, the Spiritual Energy ripples were restrained by her.

"Elder Sister, you have to go for it and see if you can defeat Li Xuantong to seize his Rank 2 in the Heavenly Ranking!" Su Ling'er chuckled.

"How would that be easy? It would be great if I could preserve my

ranking as third." Su Xuan helplessly shook her head as she held onto Su Ling'er. The sister duo flew up into the sky and rushed towards the central area of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

On a mountain peak, a slender figure slowly walked out. The mountain peak had quite a number of people quietly waiting and when they saw that slender figure come out, their eyes instantly blazed.

"Boss!"

Li Xuantong lightly smiled at them as he waved his hand, "It's almost time."

"Yes!" all of them instantly replied as they closely followed him.

When Li Xuantong reached the edge of the mountain peak, he looked at the direction that was outside of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. His calm eyes flashed across with traces of expectation and fighting intent.

Shen Cangsheng, you will probably return for the Hunting War. This year, I will surpass you, so don't make me disappointed.

"Let's go!"

Li Xuantong lightly barked as his figure turned into a streak of light, shooting out. Behind him, there were many people that closely followed him.

The entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy exploded as countless figures streaked across the horizon, gathering towards the central area of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. After cultivating and endured for so long, they could finally burst out on this day.

Those students with powerful strengths had their eyes filled with fighting intent.

Hunting War, begin!

Chapter 289: Dean Tai Cang

The central area of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had a majestic and vast field. This was the extremely famed Northern Sea Field of the academy. It was said that, long ago, this was the cultivating ground of the Northern Sea Dragon. Until later, when the academy was established, a huge field was opened here. But, generally speaking, only huge events would be held here.

And the gathering location of the Hunting War was here.

This field was sufficient to hold tens of thousands of people. Today, this place was filled with an endless sea of people and that astonishing boiling noise soared into the horizons. It could be clearly heard from anywhere in the range of a hundred miles.

When Mu Chen and the rest arrived here, they couldn't help smacking their lips upon seeing such a huge amount of people. It was, indeed, worthy of being the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Mu Chen and his group stopped at the sky, their gaze looked at the Northern Sea Field. The front of the field was empty, which was different from the rear of the field. But, no matter how empty it was, no students dared to set foot here.

At the empty region, there was a copper sculpture. It was a huge creature with a fish-like scaled body, along with a dragon's claws and tail. The image of it was sinister and powerful. Even if it was just a sculpture, it still possessed a fearsome might as it spread out. It was precisely this might that made the other students not daring enough to approach it.

"That's the guardian beast of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, the Northern Sea Dragon?" Mu Chen looked at that sculpture as he sensed that might. Immediately, he couldn't help smacking his lips inwardly. This Northern Sea Dragon was, indeed, a fearsome existence.

"This Northern Sea Dragon possesses sky high status in our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Even Elder Tian Xi would have to be polite and respectful to him, when seeing that almighty existence." Luo Li said

softly.

Mu Chen nodded. Even among the Divine Beasts, the Northern Sea Dragon should be ranked at the top and, adding on to the fact that it had cultivated for so long, it's strength was definitely dreadful. Within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, there weren't that many people that could be stronger than it.

Mu Chen's line-of-sight shifted from the Northern Sea Dragon's sculpture and directed it towards the sky. From that direction, there was a cold gaze staring at him, it was He Yao.

Towards He Yao's cold gaze, Mu Chen lightly smiled in reply. If a month ago, he had some fear towards He Yao, then all the fear had been suppressed right now.

If they were to confront, the victory wouldn't be controlled by He Yao.

When He Yao saw Mu Chen's fearless expression, his gaze turned even colder. Shortly after, he coldly retracted his gaze. However, Mu Chen knew that with that fella's breadth of mind, he would definitely not let it go so easily in this Hunting War.

When Mu Chen retracted his gaze from He Yao, a series of wind breaking noises resounded from the back with a familiar Spiritual Energy fluctuation being emitted.

"It's Li Xuantong."

Mu Chen was extremely familiar with this Spiritual Energy fluctuation. He didn't need to turn his head to know who it was. He slightly turned his head and, indeed, he could see Li Xuantong coming with a group of people.

Li Xuantong's figure stopped beside Mu Chen and Luo Li. His gaze was a little complicated as he glanced at Luo Li. Thereafter, he turned towards Mu Chen with a trace of astonishment flashing across his eyes, "You're a little stronger now."

"If there isn't any improvement, how would I dare to come?" Mu Chen smiled. He wasn't being arrogant, but he wasn't humble either. He knew

that if he were to be humble with Li Xuantong, he would be looked down upon instead.

"It seems like you're here to participate in the Hunting War..." Li Xuantong lightly smiled as he added, "If we were to meet in the Hunting War, I will no longer let you have anymore Pact of Three Moves."

"That was my intention, as well." Mu Chen stared at Li Xuantong as he nodded.

When the students behind Li Xuantong saw Mu Chen confronting Li Xuantong, they felt unhappy. In their view, although Mu Chen was able to take the Pact of Three Moves from Li Xuantong, it didn't make them feel that Mu Chen could stand on the same level as Li Xuantong.

But it was just unhappiness and they still did not say anything in the end. Their eyes were staring at Mu Chen with ill intent, as though they're issuing their warning.

"I'll also participate the Hunting War with him. If we meet, then, when it happens, I can ask for some advice." Luo Li's voice was gentle as she said from the side.

Li Xuantong's face slightly turned stiff and, shortly after, he helplessly shook his head. He looked at Mu Chen and spoke, "I heard that you tore apart the Headquarters of the Demon's Gate?"

Mu Chen nodded. This matter was widely spread in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, so it wasn't surprising that Li Xuantong knew about it.

"A little too rampant." said Li Xuantong.

Mu Chen's brows twitched. Just when he was about to speak, Li Xuantong smiled and continued, "However, you're still a man. If you did not do anything, I'd most probably look for your trouble as you're not even able to protect her here, so, how are you going to protect her in the future?"

Mu Chen extended his hand out and lightly held onto the girl's slender and tender hands as he smiled, "Senior Li Xuantong, although right now,

I'm not powerful. But if anyone wants to lay a hand on her, it would have to be done by stepping over my corpse."

Luo Li's eyes were gentle as she looked at the side of the youth's handsome face. The smile on that firm face could not be doubted.

Li Xuantong lightly nodded, "He Yao, that fellow, if I were to encounter him in the Hunting War, I will definitely get rid of him."

Mu Chen smiled, "It's not my business to comment on who you want to deal with. But if I were to encounter him, then perhaps you won't have the chance to do so."

"Your tone isn't small." Li Xuantong smiled as he added, "Then, it'd have to depend on your performance on the Hunting War. Don't end up to the point that you're not able to reach the ending point."

Mu Chen smiled and no longer spoke as he held onto Luo Li's hand, standing high up in the sky.

As more time passed, more and more students gathered here. Mu Chen also saw Su Xuan, Xu Huang and various other powerful figures that ranked at the top of the Heavenly Ranking.

Aside from those influential figures that originally existed in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, Mu Chen could vaguely sense that, among the sea of people, there were quite a few hidden and ambitious glittering gazes. When they looked at those influential figures up in the sky, their eyes were filled with challenging intents.

All those gazes didn't have any fear in them, even when they're facing with the top 10 of the Heavenly Ranking.

Mu Chen vaguely sensed those gazes and, immediately, he smacked his lips. It was indeed, worthy of being the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Those people that were reflected on the Heavenly Ranking were, after all, few in numbers and many others had been hiding themselves. Waiting for their wings to be fully grown to soar into the horizon in one shot.

Clearly, this Hunting War was a good opportunity to do that.

Dong!

As more and more students gathered, a bell suddenly rang out between the heavens and earth. That long lasting bell's ring drowned all of the bustling noises as it resounded throughout the heavens and earth.

Everyone stopped talking as they looked towards the depth of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy with revere in their eyes. In that direction, there was a huge azure bird flying towards this location. The huge bird brought forth a hurricane and was suspended in the empty region of this field.

Mu Chen's gaze was also directed towards the huge bird. Speaking precisely, it was the back of the huge bird, as there were several old figures on it. Every single figure appeared to be an ordinary old man. However, not a single person dared to belittle those frail old men, because hidden within those bodies, there was tremendous annihilating power.

And, before all those old figures, there was a tall middle-aged man that wore an azure robe. His face was like a jade, with a pair of eyes that looked like boundless stars. Looking at them would make others feel like they were being absorbed by them and were unable to free themselves.

It was as though the heavens and earth were being reflected in their eyes.

He smiled as he looked at the youths below with respect on their faces. His eyes reflected his experience, like a wise man that had experienced countless years and months.

"He is..." Mu Chen's eyes were grave as he looked at that middle-aged man in the azure robe.

"He's the Dean of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, Dean Tai Cang." Li Xuantong said softly. Even someone as prideful as him had unconcealable respect in his tone.

Mu Chen lightly nodded. He never expected that even the Dean of the academy would appear. Such a huge figure wasn't someone they could see during the usual days.

“Boys and girls, after a year, I’m glad to see that all of your strengths have grown.” On the azure bird, Dean Tai Cang lightly smiled as he looked at the countless youths. His clear and bright voice resounded within everyone’s ears. His voice also made the Spiritual Energy in every student’s bodies more docile, like the voice of a god that made them feel refreshed. So much so that even their spirit rose. The Spiritual Energy within their bodies became even more lively.

“What frightening power.” Mu Chen felt the changes in his body and was instantly startled. Just what kind of strength was that? Just a speech alone was already sufficient to raise their spirits.

That voice made it feel as though it had recuperated their bodies and made them feel indescribable power.

“That’s the Tai Cang Deity Note.” Luo Li’s face was also filled with a grave expression as she added, “Rumor has it that it was born from a part of the Deity Classics. Back then, just relying on this note, Dean Tai Cang managed to kill a Sovereign.”

“Killing a Sovereign through his voice?” Mu Chen felt his head going numb. He also understood that this Dean Tai Cang had used his genuine strength, but wasn’t this a little too frightening?

“For this Hunting War, I suppose that everyone here isn’t a stranger to it. I will not waste any words on the rules. However, I have to make a reminder that this year’s Hunting War would be the hardest, as there are three Guardians at the end...”

Dean Tai Cang lightly smiled. He waved his sleeve, causing the space before him to fluctuate. As though it was a huge mirror. Within the mirror, there was a mighty mountain. At the peak of that mountain, there were three leveled hills. Up on those hills, clouds and mist lingered around that seemed to be concealing some powerful existences.

Many students exchanged glances with each other. They naturally knew that only by defeating the Guardians, only then can they advance the last Spiritual Empowerment. Otherwise, the Spiritual Light that everyone had obtained would be invalid.

In the past, there was only one Guardian. No one had imagined that it would be so hard this time round. From one to three Guardians. They wondered, which three of the Punishment Hall would it be?

Countless gazes gathered onto the light mirror. The mist over there dissipated little by little and, in the end, vaguely revealed three people that were quietly seated. However, their demeanor was like ferocious dragons that would shake the heavens and earth.

Looking at their demeanors, even Li Xuantong's face changed. The other students with sharp perception had their facial expressions changed.

"Those three are the Three Great Generals of the Punishment Hall. They're the top 3 of the Heavenly Ranking from the previous batch."

Dean Tai Cang's long lasting voice that resounded out caused an endless amount of students to inhale a mouthful of cold air. This time, it was actually the Three Great Generals of the Punishment Hall that were personally sent out? This difficulty was simply too high!

Chapter 290: Begin

“They’re the Three Great Generals of the Punishment Hall?”

Mu Chen’s gaze was grave as he looked at the direction of the cloudy mist that was vaguely being shown. Those three majestic figures were extremely powerful.

“It is indeed them, they are the final Guardians.” Li Xuantong muttered. Even he felt some pressure when facing those three, who were once the top 3 of the Heavenly Ranking.

“Furthermore, it is three people that are the Guardians. This round’s final Guardians are simply too hard.” Li Xuantong slightly frowned his brows. Although he was confident in his own strength, he wasn’t arrogant to the point that he would claim that he could confront those three all by himself. After all, those three weren’t ordinary figures. Back then, when he entered the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, those three were figures that he could only looked at from below.

According to the rules of the Hunting War, no matter how much Spiritual Light they obtained in this Hunting War, if they could not pass through the final round, everyone’s hard work would all be in vain. And all the Spiritual Light that they worked so hard to obtain would all be useless.

And, naturally, they would lose the benefits from the Spiritual Empowerment.

This was the crucial point to every student’s benefits that participated in the Hunting War.

Evidently, many students had thought of this and, instantly, the atmosphere in the field was a little stiff. Many people had their brows furrowed as they swept their gazes, searching for the figures that could ease their hearts.

“Why isn’t Shen Cangsheng here in this year’s Hunting War?”

“If he’s not here, I’m afraid that it would not be easy to get through the final test.”

“Yeah. Just relying on Li Xuantong, I’m afraid that it won’t be sufficient to deal with those three Generals.”

Those whispers started to spread out in this field and quite a few people were searching for that peak existence on the Heavenly Ranking. Only with him, would they have a guarantee to be able to obtain the Spiritual Empowerment without a hitch.

Compared to them, Mu Chen did not look around. In this view, he would rather depend on himself, rather than others. It was a downside to depend on others. Although Shen Cangsheng was indeed powerful. If he managed to return in time for the hunting War, it would be a matter that could stir people’s heart. However, Mu Chen wasn’t used to placing his hopes in others.

Li Xuantong’s face maintained indifference. His expression was calm and tranquil, without any change, as he allowed the whispers to spread out on the field.

On the azure bird, Dean Tai Cang smiled as he looked at the stirred field, “Do you guys have any objections regarding this Hunting War? If there aren’t any, then, let’s open up the Spiritual Light Realm.”

The Spiritual Light Realm was the Hunting War. It was a small realm that was established by the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy and, every single year, the Spiritual Light Realm would be opened for the Hunting War.

Countless students exchanged glances and could only nod their heads helplessly. From the looks of it, it seemed that Shen Cangsheng would not turn up. If that’s the case, then they wouldn’t have any odds of success in the final test.

Those three Great Generals possessed high fame that was not only limited to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Even in the Northern Heavens Continent, they possessed some fame, as well. Although, it wasn’t for certain that they would be able to pass through the final test if Shen Cangsheng was here, at least their odds of success would be higher when he joined hands with Li Xuantong.

Dean Tai Cang lightly smiled as he looked at the situation. He waved his sleeve and the space before him started to twist. As the light wiggled, a huge spatial door slowly took form as boundless Spiritual Energy ripples rippled out.

"It's almost time, so let's begin this year's Hunting War!" Dean Tai Cang saw the opened spatial door and laughed so clear and bright that it resounded within everyone's ears.

The countless students all nodded their heads as smears of blazing intent flashed across their eyes shortly after. No matter what, admitting defeat before reaching the final test wasn't the style of Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's students. Even if this year's Hunting War didn't have powerful figures like Shen Cangsheng, they would still attempt to challenge the final test!

However, just when the countless students were about to soar up and enter the Spiritual Light Realm, there was a hurried break of wind that suddenly sounded from far away.

Astonishing Spiritual Energy ripples soared up into the heavens.

"Haha, how can I be left out of this Hunting War?" When the astonishing Spiritual Energy ripples appeared, his laughter was like thunder as it resounded above the field.

"Senior Apprentice Shen Cangsheng?!"

"He's finally back!"

The entire field instantly exploded as countless students had excitement on their faces as they couldn't help cheering. At the final moment, the tyrant of the Heavenly Ranking had returned!

Under the loud cheers, a streak of light flew over from far away and appeared in the sky. As the light dispersed, that black-clothed youth stood on the air with a disdainful demeanor that was like a goshawk in the air, the focus of everyone's attention.

Countless gazes were looking at that figure with revere. Among this batch's students, Shen Cangsheng was undoubtedly the tyrant among

everyone.

His ranking on the Heavenly Ranking was something that no one could surpass.

“Finally appeared?” Li Xuantong stared at that black-clothed figure up in the sky as he lightly smiled, along with a dense fighting intent surging out of his eyes.

If Shen Cangsheng was not in this year’s Hunting War, then it would have been a little too boring.

“He’s Senior Apprentice Shen Cangsheng?” Zhou Ling, Ye Qingling and the rest were looking at that figure with curiosity and revere. After coming to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, they had clearly heard too much in regards to the fame of the Heavenly Ranking’s Tyrant.

Mu Chen lightly nodded his head as he looked at that figure. Looking again at the boiling atmosphere, Shen Cangsheng was, indeed, the only flag-like figure that could have the power to rally supporters of such great numbers.

At this point, even a god-favoured person like Li Xuantong was inferior to him.

“Dean, am I too late?” Shen Cangsheng stood in the air as he smiled, looking towards Dean Tai Cang, who was on the azure bird.

Dean Tai Cang smiled as he looked at Shen Cangsheng. He was, naturally, familiar with the most outstanding student in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, “Aren’t you engaged with the Bounty Mission to hunt Mo Longzi? Could it be that your mission has been completed, now that you’re back?”

When Dean Tai Cang said those words, it caused the hearts of many students to tremble. Mo Longzi? The ranked 2 of the Bounty Board?

When Shen Cangsheng heard Dean Tai Cang’s words, he helplessly smiled, “I fought several rounds with him, but he still managed to escape. Wait until I finish this year’s Hunting War and accept the Spiritual Empowerment, I should be able to kill him.”

Although his words were calm, they made the faces of many outstanding students in the academy to change. Unconsciously, Shen Cangsheng had already reached that level? How were they going to catch up to him? Heavenly Ranking's Tyrant, this name was, indeed, not in vain.

Li Xuantong narrowed his eyes. The fighting intent within his eyes did not fall weak, but turned denser.

"Li Xuantong, it's been a long time since we've met, can you not look at me like that?" Sensing Li Xuantong's gaze, Shen Cangsheng turned around and smiled.

"I just want to see how much you've improved in this period of time. Beware being surpassed by me." Li Xuantong faintly smiled.

"Haha, I also wish to see if you have any improvement in your Profound Sky Divine Technique." Shen Cangsheng nodded with a smile. Among the Heavenly Ranking, Shen Cangsheng was the only person that could be placed in his eyes. As for others, like He Yao, he didn't even consider them much.

Shen Cangsheng smiled as he lightly swept his glance towards He Yao, Xu Huang and the rest that were in the top 10 of the Heavenly Ranking. When his gaze fell onto Mu Chen, he was slightly startled and, shortly after, he gave a deeply meaningful look towards him.

Regarding Mu Chen, Shen Cangsheng clearly had quite a bit of an impression about him. Back then, Mu Chen had relied on his cultivation as a Heavenly Fusion Stage to kill Bai Xuan. Furthermore, even before Mo Longzi, Mu Chen was calm and composed. Such a state of mind wasn't something that an ordinary youth could possess.

When Mu Chen saw Shen Cangsheng's gaze, he also lightly smiled and did not say anything else.

"Since the person that all of you have been waiting for is here, then, let's begin!"

Dean Tai Cang smiled as he looked at the students that was clearly at ease. Evidently, Shen Cangsheng's arrival had given confidence to many of

the students.

When he finished his speech, the spatial door instantly burst forth with a brilliant light.

“Haha, let’s go everyone. Li Xuantong, let us meet again in the Spiritual Light Stage!” Shen Cangsheng laughed as he stepped forth and turned into a stream of light as he charged into the huge spatial door. Only his laughter remained, resounding in the sky of this field.

“Boom!”

When Shen Cangsheng moved, he had, undoubtedly, instantly caused an explosion on the entire field. Countless figures flew up and were like locusts as they streaked across the horizon, into the huge spatial door.

Li Xuantong also immediately moved as he brought a group of people with him into the huge door that was emitting the brilliant light.

“Let’s go, as well.” Mu Chen looked at Luo Li, which the latter nodded her head in response.

“Brother Mu, go for it!” Behind him, the various students of the Goddess Luo Association waved their fists as they yelled.

Mu Chen waved his hand towards them, before holding onto Luo Li’s jade-like hands and flew away, joining the stream of people into the Spiritual Light Realm.

Up on the azure bird, Dean Tai Cang was smiling as he watched the spectacular scene. Shortly after, he shifted his line-of-sight onto the light screen that was illuminating the final point of the Spiritual Light Realm, which was the so-called Spiritual Light Stage where the Three Great Generals were standing guard.

“Haha, this year’s Hunting War is a little interesting. I wonder, would the former top 3 of the Heavenly Ranking be more formidable, or the current top 3 of the Heavenly Ranking?”

When the few elders that stood behind him heard his words, they lightly smiled. Although the demeanor of those students were brilliant and, by

adding geniuses like Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, they'd still a bit lacking if they wanted to challenge the spot of the Three Great Generals.

Who knows? If things didn't work out, everyone might return empty-handed during this year's Hunting War.

Chapter 291: Spiritual Light Realm

A bizarre world that seemed like the primal chaos. The sky wasn't lit, but there were frightening Spiritual Energies that fluctuated in this primal chaotic world.

Because of the Spiritual Energy being too massive, spiritual clouds that were floating in the sky could be seen and would occasionally sway with moist spiritual clouds drifting about.

This was the Spiritual Light Realm, a bizarre small realm that was created by the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy and, at the same time, it was also the field of the Hunting War.

This place was filled with Spiritual Energy, but there was a lack of vitality here. The heavens and earth were quiet, without any sign of people.

However, the desolation in this reasoning was abruptly disrupted today.

There were beams of light that looked like locusts as they fell from the sky. Thereafter, they'd scattered to the outer areas of this realm. Although the Spiritual Light Realm wasn't big, the scale of it still far surpassed the range of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Hence, even if there was a large amount of students entering into this realm, everyone could still disperse throughout the area.

On a small hill, two beams of light flew over and turned into two figures. They were Mu Chen and Luo Li.

When they appeared, they were looking around in curiosity. Shortly after, they exclaimed out, "What nourish Spiritual Energy!"

According to their speculations, the amount of Spiritual Energy in this Spiritual Light Realm could be comparable to the Seventh Rank Convergence Spiritual Array. But, the most fearsome point of it was that although the Seventh Rank Convergence Spiritual Array wasn't small, it paled in comparison to this realm.

"However, this place lacks vitality." Mu Chen quickly sensed the defect

in this realm. Although the Spiritual Energy in this region was exceptionally robust, there weren't any fluctuations of vitality.

"This realm was created not long ago and there wasn't any way to give birth to vitality. Henceforth, it is not possible to stay here for a long time." Luo Li swept her eyes around as she commented.

Mu Chen lightly nodded his head. No wonder the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy did not open this place for students to cultivate. So, it was because this place wasn't suitable for life forms to stay.

"Let's us start by obtaining as much Spiritual Light as possible." said Mu Chen. The so-called 'Spiritual Light Empowerment' would have to depend on the obtained Spiritual Light for it to be graded. If a person had harvested a low amount of Spiritual Light, it would only waste the benefits of the Spiritual Light Empowerment.

In this Spiritual Light Realm, if someone wanted to obtain Spiritual Lights, the only way would be to kill the Spiritual Spawns.

The so-called Spiritual Spawns were actually humanoid forms of Spiritual Energy. Although those Spiritual Spawns don't possess any intellect, the strength that they possessed wasn't weak.

According to the news that Mu Chen had received, the Spiritual Spawns were divided into three grades in this Spiritual Light Realm. The lowest grade was an ordinary Spiritual Pawn, which possessed strength comparable to a Heavenly Fusion Stage. The next would be Spiritual Knights, which possessed the strength of a Heavenly Transformation Stage and some powerful Spiritual Knights were comparable to Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase. Spiritual Knights of this level were highly popular with those students with powerful strength as the Spiritual Lights that they would obtain would be the highest.

As for the strongest Spiritual Spawns, they were known as Spiritual Kings. There weren't that many of them in the entire Spiritual Light Realm and were also the most powerful existences. If they're encountered one, they could only stay far away from it. Not only do the Spiritual Kings possess simple intellect, their strengths were comparable to a Heavenly

Completion Stage, which was extremely hard to deal with.

In the history of the Hunting War, there were very few people that would dare to provoke the Spiritual Kings. Although the Spiritual Light in the body of the Spiritual Kings was the best ingredient for Spiritual Light Empowerment, their strength at the Heavenly Completion Stage made everyone hold their step and would be filled with fear.

"Let's go."

Mu Chen identified his location before flying out. He didn't have a clear goal. However, the only thing that he could do was head towards the depths of the Spiritual Light Realm.

Due to the fact that every student participating the Hunting War would be gathered at that region, where the final Guardians stood hold, their final enemy.

Two figures were streaking across the horizon and because of the Spiritual Energy in this region being too dense, the speed of Mu Chen and Luo Li also suffered some restrictions. Pressure that was suppressing them would occasionally cause them to require constant circulation of Spiritual Energy to withstand that pressure.

Mu Chen and Luo Li flew low to the ground and, after roughly ten minutes, Mu Chen's eyes were grave as his speed started to slow down. Before him, there was a dazzling light that he could only see the direction of by narrowing his eyes. That light seemed to be a humanoid figure that was drifting around, along with the majestic Spiritual Energy that was being emitted from it.

When Mu Chen sensed it, he seemed to have perceived a different fluctuation that was coming from it. Shortly after, that humanoid figure flew out and burst towards the direction of Mu Chen and Luo Li like a demon.

"Quite the decent speed."

Mu Chen lightly smiled. The tip of his toes tapped and his figure flew out, crisscrossing with that light figure. However, the moment they

crossed, Mu Chen placed his palm on the chest of that light figure. A violent Spiritual Energy surged out and instantly shattered it from the jolt.

As the light figure crumbled, a faint red light shot out from it's body. However, before that light could escape, Mu Chen had already snatched it with his hand.

That lump of faint red light started to shrink into Mu Chen's hands, little by little, before turning into a sphere of light that was roughly the size of a dragon's eye, except the fact that it contained a rather pure Spiritual Energy.

There wasn't any intent mixed in this Spiritual Aura and was exceptionally pure.

"This is the Spiritual Light?" Mu Chen fiddled with it in curiosity as he became astonished. He never expected that such a small volume would contain such pure Spiritual Energy. This realm was, indeed, bizarre.

"It's just an ordinary Spiritual Pawn." said Luo Li. The Spiritual Light was too weak and could only be compared to a drop in the ocean for their Spiritual Light Empowerment.

"Let's search slowly." Mu Chen was also a little helpless. After all, this was their first time participating in the Hunting War and, hence, they weren't familiar with this area. Clearly, no one would be so kind as to share the precious information with them.

Luo Li lightly smiled as she nodded. She wasn't worried at all. As long as she was with him, she wouldn't mind, even if she did not get any harvests.

But, even if she doesn't mind, Mu Chen had to. He knew how important this period of time was for Luo Li. Now that he can be with her, he would naturally do everything he could to make her stronger. This way, she won't have to suffer too much when she returned to the Luo Shen Clan.

"Let's go take a look." Mu Chen looked ahead as he flew out, holding onto Luo Li.

But in the next hour, Mu Chen and Luo Li duo didn't have much harvests as they would only, occasionally, encounter dozens of ordinary

Spiritual Pawns and the Spiritual Light that they obtained could not be considered as robust. This made Mu Chen a little helpless. Was the Spiritual Spawns in the Spiritual Light Realm so little? Then, how could they engage the Spiritual Light Empowerment?

Mu Chen made a flick with his finger and a Spiritual Pawn that was charging at his direction was reduced to dust. Thereafter, he grabbed the faint red light that flew out of it and curled his lips in helplessness, "Tsk, another ordinary Spiritual Pawn."

He felt speechless. Their harvests for the next two to three hours wasn't too joyful, either.

Luo Li smiled as she followed him. She appeared rather relaxed as she left all the troublesome matters to Mu Chen.

"The Spiritual Energy ripples up ahead aren't from Spiritual Pawns. It should be students that are participating in the Hunting War like us." Luo Li said with a little astonishment as she suddenly glanced far ahead.

Mu Chen wasn't very interested in that as he had been racking his brains on how to obtain more Spiritual Lights. This was the first time that he brought Luo Li along in cultivation. If they were to return empty-handed, then he would be too useless.

"There must be some rules in the Spiritual Light Realm and our first time here made us totally unfamiliar with the information. Therefore, solving the problem of information is the priority right now." Luo Li smiled.

Mu Chen was startled and, shortly after, his face was replaced with a smile, "We have some Spiritual Lights in our hands. At worst, we could make an exchange for information with the Spiritual Lights. If they refuse to agree to the terms, then they can't blame us for being unreasonable, right?"

Hearing his last words, Luo Li couldn't help rolling her eyes at him as she appeared extremely charming.

Mu Chen, on the other hand, was excited as he flew out with Luo Li. In

about ten minutes, they saw that there was a battle on a hill up ahead.

But, to their astonishment, it wasn't a battle between students and spiritual spawns, but a battle between students.

There seemed to be over a dozen students circling three students. Those three students were clearly no match for them. Under that encirclement, they were heading further and further into a disadvantage and would lose at anytime.

"An Ran, we don't want to make things hard for you. Tell us about all the Spiritual Spawns gathering points that you know and we'll let you leave!" Outside the battle, a lean and slender youth was chuckling as he looked at those three that were gradually losing.

Among those three who were being ganged up on, there was the figure of An Ran, who Mu Chen had met before when he had just entered the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

"Liu Chen, you can dream on!"

An Ran's face flushed red as her eyes became filled with wrath. She tightly clenched her teeth as she added, "You disgusting bastard. Even if I was to be kicked out of the Hunting War, I won't let you guys know the gathering points. I don't believe that you would dare to kill me here!"

The youth who was named as Liu Chen coldly smiled in reply as his gaze swept over An Ran's well-developed figure as he gave a weird smile, "Indeed, I don't dare to kill you. However, all of us here are males, and if we were to have a slip and accidentally touch or grab you, don't take it personally. I believe that you won't be able to report me about this matter, right?"

When An Ran heard his threats, her face instantly turned pale as she trembled.

"Therefore, An Ran, don't make things unpleasant. As long as you tell us about those locations, we can even bring you along and you can have a share of the Spiritual Lights. What do you think of my suggestion?" Liu Chen smiled with his eyes narrowed.

An Ran tightly clenched her teeth. Her two companions were also female. Faced with the delinquent threats from Liu Chen and his group, their faces flushed red from anger, but they could not do anything.

“Haha, I think that there’s nothing great about this suggestion.”

However, when she was about to speak, a laughter sounded out from far away. Shortly after, two light figures flew over and appeared before An Ran and her group.

“Mu Chen?!”

An Ran looked at the handsome youth before her as she exclaimed in surprise.

Chapter 292: Gathering Point

"Mu Chen?"

When the group that was surrounding Su Ran and her group heard a name that wasn't unfamiliar to them, their gazes changed as deep fear rose within their eyes.

Although Mu Chen had just entered the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy for only a few months, his reputation within the academy could be comparable to, or even more superior than some of the outstanding Seniors.

The guy that was named Liu Chen's face slightly changed as he glanced at Mu Chen and Luo Li, "This matter isn't related to the both of you, why are you casually meddling in? If it's possible, once I obtain the information, I can share it with the both of you. At that time, we might even be able to join hands together."

Likewise, he feared Mu Chen. However, he wasn't willing to let An Ran off. In the Hunting War, because of the time restraint, information was the most important. If they could not find the gathering points of the Spiritual Spawns fast enough, then they wouldn't be able to gather sufficient Spiritual Lights. If that's the case, then the effects of the Spiritual Light Empowerment would not be effective.

He possessed a Quasi-Heavenly Transformation Stage cultivation as well. If everyone else was included, then it wouldn't be easy for Mu Chen and Luo Li to deal with them, if they were to confront each other.

When An Ran heard the conversation, she clenched her teeth and added, "Mu Chen, lend us a hand and we'll give you the information!"

At this moment, she was full of loathe for Liu Chen. She would rather give the information to Mu Chen then to let these fellows benefit from it.

Mu Chen lightly smiled as he looked at Liu Chen, "Senior Apprentice Sister An Ran is my friend. Take your people and leave."

Although his relationship with An Ran wasn't too deep, he didn't like

Liu Chen too much. Furthermore, the latter's strength had still not reach to the point that it would make Mu Chen fear him. Since that's the case, then he would naturally act on his own preferences.

"You!"

When Liu Chen heard what Mu Chen had said, his eyes instantly flickered with ferocity. His face turned dull and, shortly after, he gave a signal with his eyes to his companions. The latter immediately pulled themselves away from the encirclement of An Ran and her two companions as they looked at Mu Chen with bad intentions.

"Leave him to me, you can deal with the rest." Mu Chen lightly said to Luo Li.

"Okay." Luo Li nodded. The highest cultivation among that group was only a Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase and posed no pressure to her.

"Just the two of you want to deal with so many of us...?" Liu Chen grounded his teeth as he sneered. However, before he finished his speech, Mu Chen already burst towards his direction.

"Stop him!" Liu Chen barked when he saw the situation, the Spiritual Energy within his body surged forth.

That group of a dozen also burst forth with Spiritual Energy. However, before they could act, they saw Mu Chen's figure turn into a streak of light, and the sound of a solemn roar of a dragon sounded out.

Rustle!

The light figure passed through their obstruction with an indescribable speed. Thereafter, before Liu Chen could react, a slender palm had already softly landed on the latter's chest.

Liu Chen looked at Mu Chen who had mysteriously appeared before him. His pupils immediately shrank and his face was filled with horror. The latter's speed was simply too fearsome.

Bang!

A violent Spiritual Energy surged out from Mu Chen's palm and Liu

Chen felt as though he was hit by a huge hammer and instantly flew away. After he created a long mark on the ground and clashed against a huge rock, the rock instantly crumbled and that unlucky fellow fainted.

He thought that he could confront Mu Chen with his strength at the Quasi-Heavenly Transformation Stage. But who would have expected that although the both of them had cultivated to the Quasi-Heavenly Transformation Stage, the distance between the two of them was as different as the heavens and earth.

"Bang! Bang!"

Just as Mu Chen easily dealt with Liu Chen, an urgent Spiritual Energy ripple came from his rear. When Mu Chen turned his head over, he saw a dozen unlucky fellows falling to the ground, one after another, as they wailed in pain. Among them, was a young girl wearing black clothes as she lightly patted her hands before blinking her big eyes towards Mu Chen.

"Formidable." Mu Chen gave her a big thumbs-up before looking at An Ran's group and smiled, "Senior Apprentice Sister An Ran, are you alright?"

An Ran shook her head as she looked at Mu Chen, as well as Luo Li, with a complicated gaze. A few months ago, Mu Chen's strength was just at the Spirit Realm, and who could have expect that in just a few short months, this newcomer had already far surpassed her?

Those two ladies beside An Ran were also beautiful, as they stealthily looked at Mu Chen. Clearly, they were curious towards this newcomer who had soaring fame in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

"What is the so-called gathering point?" Mu Chen did not say anything unnecessary and said the main subject. Right now, what they needed the most was information regarding the Spiritual Light Realm.

"Within the Spiritual Light Realm, although the Spiritual Energy is vast in this region, it isn't easy for Spiritual Pawns to gather in one place. At ordinary places, it wasn't easy to search for places with huge amounts of Spiritual Pawns and Spiritual Knights."

An Ran was also straightforward. She knew that half of the reason why Mu Chen gave her a helping hand was because of the information that she held. Therefore, she restrained her sigh as she spoke, “However, due to the terrain, some places have large amounts of Spiritual Spawns, which we call, the gathering point.”

“As long as we find those gathering points, we will be able to obtain a large amount of Spiritual Lights. Otherwise, even if we searched the entire Spiritual Light Realm, we wouldn’t be able to obtain enough Spiritual Lights.”

Mu Chen and Luo Li suddenly understood in a flash. No wonder they only encountered sparse amounts of Spiritual Spawns along their way here. So it turned out that there were some rules to the Spiritual Light Realm.

“Where did Senior Apprentice Sister An Ran obtain the information about the gathering points from?” Mu Chen enquired along with a little astonishment.

“This kind of information can be purchased from the Spiritual Value Hall. Except, the price is expensive. Furthermore, there would be some changes to the gathering points every single year. Therefore, no one dares to be certain that the information would be useful. And the information that we purchased was collected by the three of us.” An Ran bitterly smiled, “Who could have expected that this news was known to Liu Chen, which caused this matter to break out?”

It could be purchased from the Spiritual Value Hall? Mu Chen was stunned and shortly after, he inhaled a mouthful of air. They were, indeed, newcomers and, hence, weren’t familiar with important information like this and could only charge into the Spiritual Light Realm without any plans.

“I’ll tell the both of you the location of the gathering points.” An Ran’s face was a little dull. However, she did not forget her earlier promise towards Mu Chen and could only admit to have bad luck.

An Ran, as well as the two girls beside her, lightly sighed. Their strengths

were still a little too weak. In the Hunting War, with more and more black horses emerging, it would be hard for them to obtain any achievements.

Looking at the three beautiful ladies that dispiritedly hung their heads, Mu Chen couldn't help smiling helplessly. Why did it feel like he's committing a crime.

"Senior Apprentice Sister An Ran, we're newcomers, after all. Therefore, we are not familiar with the Spiritual Light Realm. Why don't we trouble you to bring us along? We don't have any thoughts of monopolising everything and the Spiritual Lights that we get could be split equally between us."

An Ran and the two other girls were startled. Shortly after, they raised their heads and stared at Mu Chen with surprise filling their eyes, "Can we really?"

Generally speaking, no one believed that they could find enough Spiritual Lights. The more Spiritual Lights they obtained, the greater the benefits they could obtain from the Spiritual Light Empowerment. And, right now, Mu Chen was actually willing to split the Spiritual Lights equally with them. With his absolute strength, he clearly didn't have the need to give them such treatment.

Mu Chen gently smiled at them. He also knew the importance of the Spiritual Lights. However, there was also something called proper exchange. Otherwise, his actions wouldn't have much difference form Liu Chen and his group.

"What protective feelings for the fairer sex." Luo Li lightly turned her head as she said softly with a smile yet, at the same time, not a smile.

Mu Chen could only awkwardly smile helplessly.

"Senior Apprentice Sister An Ran, lead the way. We have to get there as fast as possible." Mu Chen looked at the trio, who were still joyful, and smiled.

"Okay." An Ran immediately nodded her head. After distinguishing some directions, she flew out first with Mu Chen and the rest followed

right after her.

“Mu Chen, the gathering points that we know about were purchased from the Spiritual Value Hall. Therefore, at the same time when we purchased them, there should also be other students that did the same as us.” As they were quickly flying to the so-called ‘gathering point’, An Ran also seized the moment to inform Mu Chen of the possible troubles that they could encounter.

“What you mean is that there are other students that have their eyes on the gathering points as well?” Mu Chen’s brows slightly frowned. It seemed like it won’t be easy to obtain the Spiritual Lights in the Hunting War.

“There’s a possibility.” An Ran wasn’t especially certain, but it was certainly better if there weren’t any people and they could monopolise everything at the gathering point. However, if they were to encounter other people, it won’t be too peaceful. If the other party possessed sufficient strength, they could banish them from the raid.

“We’ll think about it again at that time.” Mu Chen said after some pondering. With his current strength, along with Luo Li, even if they were to encounter some troubles, he wasn’t afraid. If there was anyone that tried to threaten them through strength, then he wouldn’t mind giving them a taste of their own medicine.

When An Ran saw Mu Chen’s calm expression without any worries, she felt relieved. It seemed that the current Mu Chen was no longer that freshman Mu Chen from back then.

Their route was rather peaceful. Although they had encountered quite a bit of students along their way, they were all looking at them passing by with their guards up. Clearly, they did not have any intention to fight them.

After about half an hour,, Mu Chen could feel An Ran’s speed gradually slowing down.

“We will soon reach it.” An Ran’s voice caused Mu Chen’s spirit to shake. Glancing far away, he was, indeed, able to sense abnormal Spiritual

Energy fluctuations from far away.

A few minutes later, Mu Chen and his group landed on a mountain peak. Their lines-of-sight were directed ahead of them. There was a crater surrounded by several mountain peaks fluctuating with brilliant lights as a light figure hovered above with astonishing Spiritual Energy ripples that were spreading from it. There was at least a thousand of them.

“What a great amount of Spiritual Spawns.”

Mu Chen looked at the astonishing amount of Spiritual Spawns and his face started to turn grave, little by little.

“There seemed to be a stronger existence at the center of the group.” Luo Li said with a soft voice as she directed her sight towards the center.

When Mu Chen heard her words, he also directed his gaze over. Indeed, he saw a huge light figure at the center of the group as a tyrannical Spiritual Energy pressure was being emitted from it’s body.

The ripples far surpassed the other Spiritual Spawns.

Mu Chen concentrated his gaze.

That’s a Spiritual Knight!

Chapter 293: Join Hands

In the huge crater, the Spiritual Energy was extremely dazzling as it looked like a Spiritual Energy ocean with many light figures floating within. Although they did not have any consciousness, from the huge amount that had gathered, the Spiritual Energy had already reached a frightening degree.

The Spiritual Pawns here were terrifyingly huge in numbers. If they were replaced with humans of equal strength, there would be thousands of Heavenly Fusion Stage experts. If they were all added together, even those of the Heavenly Fusion Stage would be destroyed by them.

But, fortunately, those Spiritual Pawns did not possess any consciousness. Otherwise, Mu Chen and his group would have had to run for their lives.

"So many Spiritual Pawns!" An Ran and her group were dumbfounded as they looked at the scene before them. Shortly after, they couldn't help looking at Mu Chen, "How are we going to act?"

Mu Chen's brows were knitted together. Aside from the huge amount of Spiritual Pawns, there was also an existence in the depths that was comparable to Heavenly Transformation Stage, the Spiritual Knight. They were comparable to a small army.

"Our numbers are small and I'm afraid that we won't be able to take over this place." Luo Li's brows slightly knitted together. Even though the Spiritual Pawns here didn't possess any consciousness, even if they only knew how to use simple attacks, if they combined together, it would still be extremely frightening.

Not to mention that on their side, they only had five people, with her and Mu Chen being the strongest in the group. If they had to rely on the two of them to deal with this huge amount of Spiritual Pawns, as well as the Spiritual Knight that was hidden in the depths, this would undoubtedly be really exhausting for them.

And it was, naturally, unwise for them to exhaust a huge amount of their

strength.

"Furthermore..." Luo Li's pupils glanced around the surrounding mountains and lightly added, "We aren't the only one that had our eyes on here."

She could vaguely sense some concealed auras. Clearly, they weren't the only ones there. However, everyone that had noticed this place had the same thoughts as them, as they did not possess the ability to swallow this fat lamb.

Mu Chen nodded as he had also sensed some of the concealed undulated Spiritual Energies.

His eyes flickered and glance towards the mountain. Shortly after, he lightly smiled as his robust voice echoed, "Everyone, why the need to hide? The amount of Spiritual Pawns here isn't little and no individual party is capable of taking it all. Since that's the case, why don't we work together?"

His voice resounded throughout the mountains. However, there weren't any movements from those Spiritual Pawns that had gathered in large numbers. They did not have any consciousness to the point that they could not even be called lifeforms. At best, they could only be considered relatively condensed Spiritual Energies. Therefore, Mu Chen wasn't afraid that he would alarm them.

As Mu Chen's words sounded out, the mountains were quiet for few minutes before a gale of wind broke out. Several figures came out of their hiding places, one after another, and were floating in the sky. The amount wasn't small, roughly a few dozen. They formed separate circles to clearly differentiate that they were from different groups.

Mu Chen glanced pass those figures that were up in the sky as a trace of astonishment flashed through his eyes. He could clearly sense that those teams had Heavenly Transformation Stage figures amongst them. Although their strengths were only at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase, this could already prove their strengths.

'Indeed, worthy of being the Hunting War. The strength of many people has increased.' Mu Chen sighed in his heart. Generally speaking, those

with strength at the Heavenly Transformation Stage could compete with the top 20 of the Heavenly Ranking. But, clearly, in this Hunting War, the amount of Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase experts would have quite a huge change. Henceforth, the strength of a Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase expert would be far from sufficient to enter into the top 20 of the Heavenly Ranking.

"My name is Mu Chen, I wonder how should I address everyone?" Mu Chen smiled as he cupped his hands towards the crowd.

Hearing that name, many people glanced at Mu Chen with astonishment as this name wasn't unfamiliar in the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

"Haha, so it was the famous Junior Apprentice Brother Mu Chen. I've long heard of your name, my name is Lin Feng." A youth also smiled as he cupped his hands in return. He was the leader of an estimated ten-man group.

"Liu Zhan." Another youthful leader cupped his hands and declared.

"Chen Peng." A skinny youth also nodded as his face was filled with arrogance.

Those three were the leaders of the three groups and their strengths were also the strongest amongst them with Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase strengths. No wonder those people that followed them had faith in them.

Mu Chen lightly smiled, "I believe that everyone is clear that the amount of Spiritual Pawns gathered in this area is too much, to the point that no one could take them down by themselves. Why don't we cooperate and work together. As for the distribution of Spiritual Light, it'd depend on our individual abilities, what do you say?"

When the three leaders heard Mu Chen's suggestion, their eyes flickered with light. Lin Feng and Liu Zhan didn't have any objections, whereas Chen Peng glanced at Mu Chen from up high before shaking his head, "We are the ones who discovered this place first. You want us to split some of it to you guys the instant you get here? This isn't such a good

thing."

Among the three groups, Chen Peng's group had the most people and was also the strongest in strength. They originally wanted to defeat the Spiritual Pawns that were here slowly, but who could have expected that this place would be found by two other groups. Henceforth, they hiddenly stood against the confrontation and, all of a sudden, Mu Chen suddenly appeared. Furthermore, from the looks of it, they also wanted to have a share of the Spiritual Pawns.

Although Chen Peng had heard of Mu Chen before, he wasn't too afraid of him. With his strength at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase, even in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, he could be considered as outstanding. Adding the formation behind him, he wasn't too willing to split this cake with them.

Hearing the contempt in his words, An Ran and her group was a little furious. But due to the power that the other party possessed, they did not dare to say anything.

"Then, what does Brother Chen Peng want?" Mu Chen lightly smiled. No one could clearly see through the expression in his black pupils.

"How about this. It wasn't easy for you guys to get here. If you guys help us, when all of the Spiritual Pawns are eliminated, we'll give you guys a hundred Spiritual Lights, what do you say?" said Chen Peng.

"A hundred Spiritual Lights?" Mu Chen's brows twitched. Shortly after, he laughed, "It seems that Brother Chen Peng believes that we do not possess the strength to split this cake."

Chen Peng did not comment and quietly circulated the Spiritual Energy within his body. Although he was arrogant, he was also cautious. Although this Mu Chen that stood before him only had strength at the Quasi-Heavenly Transformation Stage, it was said that not even those of the Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase could do a thing to him. But after all, they were superior in terms of numbers. So if a fight were to break out, they could absolutely suppress the other team.

Mu Chen lightly smiled as Luo Li stepped forth from his side.

When Chen Peng saw Luo Li's actions, his body tensed up. The dozens of people that stood behind him immediately turned cautious as they revealed considerable fighting experience and cooperation.

"If you can withstand a sword from me, then we'll become your cannon fodder for free." Luo Li's jade-like hands slightly tightened her grip on her sword hilt. Her pupils stared at Chen Peng as her voice was clear and calm.

"What an arrogant tone of voice!" Chen Peng smiled from extreme anger.

Rustle!

However, before his smile stopped, Luo Li had already thrown a stab forth as a torrential sword aura shot out. It was like a brilliant ray of light as it instantly rip the horizon apart.

A deep sword light burst forth ahead of Luo Li.

When that sword aura shot out, Chen Peng's face drastically changed. However, he still had some ability, after all, as he unleashed a bark with his Spiritual Energy bursting out from his body and rapidly turned into a Spiritual Energy light barrier before him.

Shhhhh!

Just when the Spiritual Energy light barrier took form, a brilliant sword aura shot against it, causing the light barrier to waver. Thereafter, it was torn apart under Chen Peng's dumbstruck gaze.

A streak of blood appeared on Chen Peng's face and even several strands of his hair was severed. Making him appear to be in a sorry state.

When the dozen of people behind Chen Peng saw that he could not even withstand a move, their faces drastically changed. Their gazes were filled with shock as they looked at Luo Li, who was sheathing her sword as she stood behind Mu Chen.

Even Lin Feng and Liu Zhan's expressions were focused as they looked towards Luo Li with grave expressions. They never imagined that such a

stunning lady would be so formidable.

"Does any of you still have any opinions?" Mu Chen once again, directed his eyes towards Chen Peng, who was frightened. His voice was light, but within his black pupils, there was already chill light gathering within. If Chen Peng still refused to be tactful, then he would have to take some trouble to chase them away.

Chen Peng lightly clenched his teeth. After all, he wasn't an idiot. Although Mu Chen's group was few in numbers, the strength that they showed was more than sufficient to keep them intimidated.

"Okay." He wasn't an effeminate person. Since Mu Chen and his group possessed the sufficient strength to have a share of this cake, he would be seeking trouble if he continued to obstruct them.

"Haha. Junior Apprentice Brother Mu Chen is, indeed, someone that even Li Xuantong could not do anything against." Lin Feng laughed as he praised, "We have no opinions against your suggestion."

"So are we." Liu Zhan nodded his head as well.

Mu Chen lightly smiled. "Since that's the case, then I hope that we'll have a good time cooperating with each other."

Mu Chen's line-of-sight shifted towards the crater where the undulated Spiritual Energy was like the ocean. The sight of it raised a heat that flashed through his eyes. If they could dispose of all those Spiritual Pawns, then it would definitely be a huge harvest for them.

"Everyone, get ready to start. Otherwise, the longer we drag this on, the more people will gather towards this location."

Mu Chen laughed. Shortly after, the Spiritual Energy within his body surged out in waves as it soared into the clouds like black smoke.

"Okay!"

Lin Feng, Liu Zhan and Chen Peng acknowledged as they circulated the Spiritual Energies within them and their Majestic Spiritual Energies instantly fluctuated, filling the void between the heavens and earth.

Just when Mu Chen and the rest were getting ready to destroy this gathering point, there were several concealed gazes that were fixed onto them somewhere in the depths of the mountain range.

“Haha, Big Brother, they’re about to start, are we still just going to observe them?” The voice sounded like a laughter.

“Lin Feng and the rest are just trivial matters. However, the two freshmen, Mu Chen and Luo Li are a little thorny. But no worries, the three of us have concealed ourselves for so long, and now, it’s time to reveal our strengths. After this Hunting War, there will definitely be a spot for us in the top 10 of the Heavenly Ranking.” Another voice sounded out, it was also a faint laughter.

Up ahead of them was a slender figure and his gaze was indifferently looking towards the crater’s direction. His faint voice was ice-cold with mockery.

“Let them deal with those Spiritual Pawns and, at that time, all we have to do is conclude it, as well as leave a hundred Spiritual Lights to express our gratitude.”

“Haha, Big Brother is so generous.”

Chapter 294: Eliminate

Onom!

Just when the group charged towards the sea of spiritual lights, the massive Spiritual Pawn army sensed their undulated Spiritual Energies as some buzzing and cries resounded. Those Spiritual Pawns light figures also burst out at this moment, and headed towards the direction of Mu Chen and the group.

Although all those Spiritual Pawns don't have any intellect, they possessed keen perception for Spiritual Energies. The instant there was any Spiritual Energy ripples that appeared from their perceptive range, they would instantly start their assault.

Mu Chen narrowed his eyes as he faced the huge army of Spiritual Pawns. The amount of that army surpassed hundreds and as the Spiritual Energies resounded, the fluctuations that were emitting from them could not be belittled.

"Let's go!"

Mu Chen issued a faint bark as his pitch black Spiritual Energy became similar to smoke that swept out. He threw a punch that was infused with his blazing black Spiritual Energy flames. The instant they came into contact with the Spiritual Pawns, the flames had instantly broke their way through.

As those Spiritual Pawns broke down, faint scarlet spiritual lights were formed from them and were seized by Mu Chen. This harvest made an uncontrollable joy surface from his eyes. Prior to this, they had worked so hard to just obtain a few dozen Spiritual Lights. But once they reached here, their harvest was already so huge after a short moment.

Searching for gathering points was, indeed, the best way to harvest Spiritual Lights in the Hunting War.

Furthermore, Mu Chen's Spiritual Energy had merged with the Nine Netherflames, which would even set alight Spiritual Energy. Henceforth, it

was simply the best weapon to deal with the Spiritual Pawns, which were formed from Spiritual Energy.

At the rear, when An Ran and her group saw the violently charging Spiritual Pawns being wrecked by Mu Chen, they had astonishment surfacing in their eyes. Although the strength of those Spiritual Pawns was comparable to Heavenly Fusion Stage experts and were also considered easy to deal with, it was simply impossible for them, if they wanted to have such destructive effects like Mu Chen.

They took a glance at Mu Chen, before shifting their eyes to Luo Li. That girl closely followed beside Mu Chen as she held onto her longsword. Her sword wasn't drawn but a powerful and sharp sword aura had already charged towards those Spiritual Pawns, instantly destroying them. Her speed of eliminating those Spiritual Pawns wasn't any inferior to Mu Chen.

"How formidable..."

An Ran and her group looked at each other. Their speeds were way too inferior to Mu Chen, which made them to shake their heads as they bitterly smiled uncontrollably. Those two freshmen were simply too frightening.

At this point, there was already a disturbance caused by Mu Chen's big group in the crater with ocean-like Spiritual Energy. Aside from Mu Chen's side, the other three groups were also like ferocious tigers that had descended from the mountains. Furthermore, the charge of those three parties broke up the massive amount of Spiritual Pawns.

Due to the fact that they had more numbers, their efficiency wasn't too bad, but compared to Mu Chen and Luo Li's group of five, they were slightly weaker.

Everyone was doing all they could as they charged into the depths of the spiritual light ocean. As they're well aware of the existence of the Spiritual Knights. As long as you killed a Spiritual Knight, the amount of Spiritual Lights that they would obtain would be comparable to thousands of Spiritual Pawns.

As they gradually advanced deeper, they started to feel some pressure as an endless amount of Spiritual Pawns would continuously charge towards them. As Spiritual Energies clashed, this also meant a huge exhaustion for them.

The other three groups seemed to have experience in such battles as they formed an arrowhead formation, which they would constantly take turns to withstand the largest impacts. As for those that backed down, they would make some adjustments before going up again.

However, even with their teamwork, their speeds of eliminating those Spiritual Pawns could not be comparable to Mu Chen and Luo Li.

As time passed, the speed of Mu Chen and the rest suddenly slowed down as they realised that even those Spiritual Pawns had sensed that the greatest threat came from them. Henceforth, more Spiritual Pawns started to gather towards them.

"They're loosening the pressure to let us attract those Spiritual Pawns." Luo Li's eyes flickered as she said softly.

She could sense that the other three groups had slowed down their speed in dealing with Spiritual Pawns and as their speed slowed down, the Spiritual Pawns would naturally gather in their direction, who were the greatest threat to them.

"Those fellows are despicable!" An Ran and the other two girls said in anger. They had never thought that those fellows would actually play such a method secretly.

Mu Chen however, lightly smiled in reply. They were originally in a competition. Their so-called 'cooperation relationship' was extremely frail. The instant the rest saw their powerful strength, they would naturally play some tactics.

"Since they want to head to the depths so quickly, then let them be. We just have to eliminate all the Spiritual Pawns here." Mu Chen said calmly.

In fact, he wasn't in a rush to get to the Spiritual Knight as he could sense powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuations coming from the depths.

Clearly, those Spiritual Knights weren't ordinary existences, either. If those three other groups intended on abandoning them to take down those Spiritual Knights, it would definitely not be an easy task.

When An Ran saw that Mu Chen still maintained his calmness, she nodded as she spoke no more and closely followed his lead. Thereafter, she started to store the Spiritual Lights that were formed from Spiritual Pawns that were killed by Mu Chen and Luo Li.

When Mu Chen's group attracted the greatest pressure, the other three groups were, indeed, searching for an opportunity and burst forth, directly ripping apart those layers of Spiritual Pawns before quickly charging towards the depths.

Mu Chen glanced at their back figures from a distance, before retracting his sight. Not paying the slightest attention at them trying to eat those huge "cakes" as he set his mind on going all out with Luo Li to slaughter those Spiritual Pawns.

As time passed, more and more Spiritual Pawns were being wrecked under their hands. Turning into Spiritual Lights that were formed from majestic Spiritual Energies. Those Spiritual Light lingered around them before being quickly kept away by the An Ran trio.

"Mu Chen, we've already accumulated more than 800 Spiritual Lights!" As more and more Spiritual Lights were being taken by them, dense joy started to surface on their faces. More than 800 Spiritual Lights, this could already be considered as an ample harvest.

When Mu Chen heard her words, he also lightly smiled as he swept his sight. The Spiritual Pawns in their region had clearly become thinner and thinner. From the looks of it, a majority of them were slaughtered by them.

Boom! Boom!

Suddenly, there was abrupt bursts of Spiritual Energy fluctuations at the depths of this region. A ring of Spiritual Energy fluctuations that were visible to the naked eye rippled out and even caused cracks to appear on the ground.

“Ahhhh!”

A shriek resounded from the location of the Spiritual Energy ripples, along with waves of violent Spiritual Energy ripples rippling out. Clearly, there was a bitter confrontation.

“Let’s head to the deepest parts.” When Mu Chen saw the situation, he waved his hand and changed his direction as he flew towards the depths. From the looks of it, the three other groups had already started their battle with the Spiritual Knight.

After experiencing the massacre, the amount of Spiritual Pawns in this region had decreased by a lot. Henceforth, Mu Chen and his lot could easily pass through and, very quickly, the scene at the depths appeared before their eyes.

The deepest region was a leveled ground and, at this moment, the three other teams were encircled by the majestic spiritual lights. Within the spiritual lights, there were seven to eight tall, yet fuzzy, light figures.

Those light figures were several feet in height, being several folds more robust compared to ordinary Spiritual Pawns. The Spiritual Energy fluctuations within their bodies were comparable to Heavenly Transformation Stage experts. Especially one of the light figures amongst them, as it had a more condensed figure. The Spiritual Energy fluctuation coming from it had already reached Heavenly Transformation Stage Middle Phase.

“Seven Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase and one Heavenly Transformation Stage Middle Phase.”

Even Mu Chen couldn’t help narrowing his eyes upon this sight. No wonder the three other teams were forced to such sorry states, so it turned out that their opponents had such powerful formations.

An Ran and the other two also sensed how fearsome those Spiritual Knights were, and their faces also changed, before An Ran spoke with a low voice, “What should we do?”

“We’ll wait.” Mu Chen’s face was calm, without any sign of helping

them out. Since the three other parties liked to be first, then they can be the cannon fodder. In any case, it would even be troublesome for them, if they were to deal with the formation of the seven Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase and one Heavenly Transformation Stage Middle Phase Spiritual Knights. So why not let those teams exhaust those Spiritual Knights?

Originally, he had planned on cooperating together and mutually share the harvest. Since the other party had intended on using them as bait, then he would, naturally, not be polite to them as well.

The three other teams saw the arrival of Mu Chen's team and they felt happy. However, when they saw that Mu Chen had no signs of helping them, their faces became unnatural. They understood that Mu Chen was disgusted with their actions earlier on.

"Mu Chen, didn't we come to an agreement of cooperating? Why aren't you helping?" Chen Peng clenched his teeth as he barked, thickening the skin of his face.

The people in the two other parties had their face slightly flushed. After all, they did not have such thick skin like Chen Peng and could only brace themselves to deal with the Spiritual Knights without speaking a word.

"Tsk, you guys were the ones that dump us earlier and had us attract all the firepower." An Ran rebuked.

Chen Peng clenched his teeth and he could not say anything else. After all, he was also prideful and since his intentions were seen though, he naturally did not have any face to bed Mu Chen, but could only rebuke her words, "If we lose, you guys can deal with those Spiritual Knights, instead."

Mu Chen smiled, but he wasn't bothered by his words and continued to wait quietly for their defeat.

Boom! Boom!

The Spiritual Energy fluctuations in the field turned even more violent as the Spiritual Knights started their violent offense. As Spiritual Energy swept about, the three groups constantly had people flying out.

Their original battle formation also started to crumble.

Bang!

The Spiritual Knight whose strength had reached Heavenly Transformation Stage Middle Phase burst out as it ferociously clashed against Chen Peng with a lump of violent Spiritual Energy. The ground cracked and the latter's face turned pale as he spurted a mouthful of blood.

"Retreat!"

Chen Peng finally could not endure it anymore as he barked while climbing up in a sorry state.

Hearing his bark, his team started to rapidly retreat. They understood that it was probably impossible for them to take down those Spiritual Knights.

As they retreated, the two other teams also immediately withdrew. However, once they got out of the Spiritual Knights' attack range, they stopped. Clearly, they were unwilling to leave this place.

"Mu Chen, it was our fault earlier on. However, it's impossible for you to take down those Spiritual Knights and can only join hands with us in order for us to benefit mutually." Chen Peng unwillingly said to Mu Chen. However, his tone of voice this time around was a lot more softer.

Although the two other groups did not voice their opinions, they clearly had the same thoughts.

Mu Chen indifferently glanced at them and, shortly after, he smiled. However, there wasn't any warmth in his smile.

"Who says that we're incapable of taking them down?"

Chapter 295: Taking them down by ourselves

"Who says that we can't take them down by ourselves?"

When Chen Peng and the rest heard Mu Chen's indifferent words, they were startled. But, shortly after, he couldn't help sounding out, "Only two of you possess the strength to deal with Spiritual Knights. Could it be that the two of you will take down seven Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase and one Heavenly Transformation Stage Middle Phase Spiritual Knights by yourself?"

There was clearly mockery in his speech. Although he had witnessed how formidable Luo Li was earlier on, it was clearly impossible for Mu Chen and Luo Li to deal with the Spiritual Knights formation.

Mu Chen only cast a glance at them and did not speak anymore nonsense. He shifted his gaze towards the few Spiritual Knights in the depth as he narrowed his eyes.

Indeed, that formation wasn't weak.

"Mu Chen, can we really deal with them by ourselves?" An Ran's low voice sounded out. Although she had witnessed the strength displayed by Mu Chen and Luo Li along their way there, she still felt worried when faced with such a formation.

Furthermore, with those fellows glaring like tigers watching their prey, the slightest error they make would arouse the greed in others.

"Rest assured."

Mu Chen smiled as he looked at Luo Li, "Can you deal with them for some time?"

Luo Li's gem-like pupils looked at Mu Chen as she replied, "You're going to lay out a Spiritual Array?"

"Our minds are, indeed, in sync." Mu Chen gave her a thumbs up, making Luo Li's face turn red as she gave him a displeased look. Even at

this time, this fellow still had the mood to tease her.

"Can it be done?"

Luo Li's hands tightly gripped her slightly unsheathed black longsword as she smiled. Her graceful figure stood before Mu Chen and withstood all the attacks that were directed at him.

When Mu Chen saw her actions, he smiled. With Luo Li by his side, he felt particularly at ease as he had absolute trust in her. Even if he were to remove all of his defenses.

His sight gave a warning glance towards the three other teams with ice-cold intent. Thereafter, he slowly shut his eyes and both of his hands started to form Spiritual Seals. Shortly after, the Spiritual Seals brought along Spiritual Energy ripples as they constantly took form on his palm.

"Spiritual Seals? He's going to set up a Spiritual Array?!"

When the three group saw the surrounding Spiritual Seals forming around Mu Chen, they were instantly startled. They abruptly recalled that the latter still had the identity of a Spiritual Array Master.

The Spiritual Seals started to form around Mu Chen and, shortly after, an astonishing amount of Spiritual Energy ripples started to spread out.

The Spiritual Knights at the depths immediately sensed the Spiritual Energy fluctuations. A Spiritual Energy gale was formed as they turned into light figures and charged towards Mu Chen's direction, along with tyrannical Spiritual Energy that ripped the ground apart.

Luo Li's pupils stared at those Spiritual Knights that were charging over as cold intent started to crawl out from the depth of her eyes. Her hands tightly clenched onto her sword hilt without any retreat as she took a step forth under An Ran and the other two girls' uneasy gazes.

"She's trying to obstruct so many Spiritual Knights all by herself?!" When Chen Peng saw the scene before them, his eyes instantly narrowed. Trying to intercept one Heavenly Transformation Stage Middle Phase and seven Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase Spiritual Knights all by herself, wasn't this something that only someone with Heavenly

Transformation Stage Late Phase strength could accomplish? Could this breathtaking girl with delicate cheeks possess that fearsome strength?

"Shhhhuuu!"

Luo Li did not pay any attention to their astonishment as she gripped her longsword and slashed down.

"Buzz!"

The dazzling sword light was like the first ray of morning sun as it ripped apart the darkness that illuminated the world. Thereafter, it brought along an unformidable momentum as it hacked the body of several Spiritual Knights at lightning speed.

Bang!

There was a huge crack on the ground, causing several Spiritual Knights to be pushed back a few hundred feet, Aside from that Spiritual Knight with Heavenly Transformation Stage Middle Phase strength, the remaining Spiritual Knights had lightly dulled down.

Clearly, that attack from Luo Li had caused them to be exhausted.

"How is that possible?!" The remaining group's hearts were alarmed as their gazes became a little dumbstruck as they looked at the slender girl clothed in black with silvery long hair. How was the latter's strength so powerful?

Buzz!

Those Spiritual Knights did not have any sensation of pain and, henceforth, they quickly charged back towards their direction again. However, Luo Li casually brandished her sword towards their assault as a sword light shot forth. It formed into a sword light defense that could not be torn apart, no matter how those Spiritual Knights attacked.

Just when Luo Li was obstructing those Spiritual Knights, there were a hundred Spiritual Seals formed around Mu Chen. With a flick of his finger, those Spiritual Seals merged into the sky.

Spiritual Energy fluctuations started to spread out as Spiritual Energy

threads started to construct an outline, forming into a complicated Spiritual Array that could cause others to feel dizzy from looking at it.

Light rays started to spread out as a gigantic black lotus slowly took form. A ferocious Spiritual Energy fluctuation started to spread out on this horizon.

"The Spiritual Array that had once withstood an attack from Li Xuantong?" When An Ran and the rest saw that huge black lotus Spiritual Array, their eyes immediately lit up. Back then, when Mu Chen had the Pact of Three moves with Li Xuantong, they were also present and, naturally, they witnessed the Spiritual Array that Mu Chen used to deal with Li Xuantong.

Bang! Bang!

The Spiritual Knights seemed to have sensed the powerful ripples that were being emitted from the Spiritual Array up in the sky and their attacks instantly started to be even more frantic and managed to force back the defense formed by Luo Li's sword light.

There wasn't any fluctuation in Luo Li's eyes as she looked at the Spiritual Knights that were pushing her back. Her hands clenched a little tighter on her longsword as she gave a light smear on her sword sheath. Instantly, there was an extremely cold light that was revealed under the sword sheath.

"It's all done."

However, just when she was about to move, Mu Chen's voice suddenly sounded from her rear. Luo Li lightly smiled as she loosened her grip on the sword sheath.

Mu Chen's figure slowly rose up as he looked at the impatient Spiritual Knights. Shortly after, his handsigns changed as he issued a bark, "Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array!"

Boom! Boom!

As he barked, the huge black lotus Spiritual Spiritual Array started to slowly revolve. Spiritual Energy ripples spread out that caused even the air

to be twisted.

Rustle!

The eight Spiritual Knights burst forth towards the Spiritual Array. Although they did not possess any intellect, they could still feel the great threat coming from the Spiritual Array.

Mu Chen indifferently glared at the charging Spiritual Knights. Shortly after, he lightly made a tap with his finger in the air. The black lotus gradually bloomed as a frightening Spiritual Energy gathered towards the heart of the lotus.

Shhhhuuu!

When Spiritual Energy was gathered to the limits, the black lotus shook and a black light shot forth from the heart of the lotus. The black light beam that pierced through the heavens clashed against the bodies of the eight Spiritual Knights.

Bang!

The black light beam ultimately hit against the ground, causing even the mountain range to tremble and the ground to be torn apart. Ravines started to extend from the depths of the crater.

When the three groups saw this scene, they were startled to the point that even their faces turned pale. They immediately steadied their figures before directing their gazes towards the central region. There was a bottomless huge hole of roughly a few hundred feet. The pitch black colour made their hearts turn cold.

As for those eight Spiritual Knights that were at top of the bottomless hole, there was only one light figure floating in the air. The seven Spiritual Knights with strength of Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase cultivation were instantly killed, and turned into deep red light balls that seemed like blazing flames as they floated in the air.

These were the spiritual lights formed by Spiritual Knights!

Looking at the seven blazing lumps of light, those from the other three

groups instantly had their eyes turn scarlet red. The Spiritual Energy contained in those seven lumps of light was probably stronger then all of the Spiritual Pawns combined!

"Huuuu. Huuuu."

Their breaths were heavy as they couldn't help taking a step forth. However, in that instant when they took a step forth, a cold gaze shot towards them that caused their heads to clear up.

Up in the sky, Mu Chen's expression was indifferent as he stared at those three groups who had their eyes turn red. Hundreds of Spiritual Seals appeared in his surroundings again.

With his current strength, clearly there wasn't any difficulty to set up a Rank 4 Spiritual Array.

If those fellows before him didn't know how to be tactful, he wouldn't mind giving them another ruthless lesson.

When the three groups saw the Spiritual Seals around Mu Chen, they immediately stepped back. Honestly, they had no confidence in withstanding that powerful Spiritual Array from Mu Chen.

Furthermore, there was also a girl here that could easily obstruct the eight Spiritual Knights.

They exchanged a glance and could see the bitterness within each other's eyes. If they knew Mu Chen was so frightening to begin with, then they would have just cooperated with them properly. At least they would still have had a share of the harvest.

But, right now, they had aroused Mu Chen's disgust for them and they could clearly not get any more harvests.

Mu Chen indifferently swept an eye at them before retracting it. Thereafter, he looked at the last remaining light figure. That Spiritual Knight possessed the strength of a Heavenly Transformation Stage Middle Phase and, therefore, it was able to withstand that earlier attack from him. But, clearly, it had also suffered heavy injuries.

Buzz!

The Spiritual Knight floated up into the sky as it dimmed down. There was a sudden burst of buzzing sounds coming from its body and the seven blazing light lumps had shot towards that Spiritual Knight.

The seven other Spiritual Lights were actually absorbed by it!

Boom!

When the other seven light balls charged into that Spiritual Knight's body, a surge of violent Spiritual Energy abruptly swept out. Under the impact of that Spiritual Energy, it caused the stones that were within a radius of a thousand feet to be reduced to dust.

"It's strength is surging!" An Ran exclaimed. After absorbing the seven other spiritual lights, the Spiritual Knight's strength was constantly pressing towards Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase.

When Mu Chen saw this unforeseen event, his face slightly changed. However, just when he was about to step forth, Luo Li, who was ahead of him, took the lead instead.

Her exquisite figure turned into a graceful streak of light as her hand gripped the sword hilt. She placed her hand onto the cold sword sheath and suddenly drew her sword.

Buzz!

A sword cry soared into the heavens and everyone could sense a frightening sword light streaking across the horizon.

Rumble!

A mountain peak from far away was sliced and the region that it had sliced became as smooth as a mirror.

Tingling.

Luo Li appeared behind the Spiritual Knight as the longsword in her hand was quietly sheathed. A sharp and crisp sound rippled out and the Spiritual Knight, whose strength was surging, burst open. Eight brilliant and abnormal light lumps whistled out.

Luo Li swept her hand and the eight dazzling light lumps fell into her hand as they appeared like deep scarlet blazing flames.

With just one sword, she instantly killed the Spiritual Knight whose strength was about to reach Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase.

Chapter 296: The Three Brothers of the Wang Family

Up in the sky, the swift and fierce sword aura had already dispersed. However, the broken mountain peak was as smooth as a mirror, clearly showing how fearsome that sword from before was.

Not only the three other group and the An Ran trio, even Mu Chen was startled as he looked at the black-clothed girl. The might of that sword before was simply too fast and it was an instant after the Spiritual Knight, who had absorbed the seven other spiritual lights and was pushing forth to Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase, was killed before they could see what was going on.

That sword was considerably frightening.

Mu Chen sighed inwardly. Luo Li was, indeed, worthy of being the most talented genius in the Luo Shen Clan for the past thousand years. No wonder the Luo Shen Clan would place such a huge burden on her.

Not a single word was issued from the three other parties for a long time as their faces were slightly pale. When they looked at Luo Li, their eyes contained astonishment. So it turned out that the girl standing beside Mu Chen was the most frightening existence there.

If they were a little stirred from the spiritual lights of the Spiritual Knights, they no longer dared to have any thoughts of obtaining them at this moment. Just Mu Chen and Luo Li, alone, were sufficient to suppress all of them.

They looked at each other and bitterly smiled as they quietly backed off and retreated. They would only feel unhappy if they remained in this area; therefore, it's best if they left quickly.

Mu Chen took a glance at their back figures, but no longer bothered with them.

Luo Li flew down from the sky and passed the eight floating lumps of light towards Mu Chen and lightly smiled, "These eight spiritual lights

could be comparable to all the Spiritual Pawns in this region."

Mu Chen grabbed a spiritual light. The Spiritual Light was a deep red colour and as the light rippled, it was like a blazing flame as it endlessly fluctuated with a powerful Spiritual Energy.

This Spiritual Light was too robust, compared to the Spiritual Light formed by all the Spiritual Pawns that he had obtained earlier on.

Especially the Spiritual Light that was formed from that Heavenly Transformation Stage Middle Phase Spiritual Knight. Within the scarlet abyss, there were traces of a faint purple light. This gave a moist sensation to the Spiritual Light. That was the embodiment of Spiritual Energy being sensed to an extent.

The greatest treasure in this gathering point was probably those eight Spiritual Lights.

Mu Chen's eyes surfaced with satisfaction. They had not made their trip here in vain and their harvest at this gathering point could be considered as ample.

"Let's split the eight Spiritual Knight's Spiritual Lights." Mu Chen glanced at the An Ran trio before passing three Spiritual Lights over to them.

The An Ran trio stared at the blazing Spiritual Light. Their snow white necks lightly trembled. However, An Ran lightly shook her head in the end and replied, "We'd only guided you here. Along our way here, we did not provide much help. You can forget about sharing those Spiritual Lights. If you don't mind, can we just take half of the eight hundred Spiritual Lights?"

Although they wanted to obtain the Spiritual Knights' Spiritual Lights, they weren't greedy. In this trip, Mu Chen and Luo Li were the ones that did most of the work. If they were to accept the Spiritual Knights' Spiritual Lights, it would be a little too much.

Mu Chen looked at the firm expression on An Ran's face and went silent. He no longer spoke and stored all of the Spiritual Knights' Spiritual

Lights. “Then split the eight hundred Spiritual Lights amongst yourselves. Don’t reject my suggestion. This was, after all, our first time into the Spiritual Light Realm and, hence, we aren’t familiar with this place. Therefore, still have to rely the three of you for leading the way.”

An Ran hesitated for a brief moment, but no longer rejected Mu Chen’s offer. Although the eight hundred Spiritual Lights were precious, compared to the three Spiritual Knights’ Spiritual Lights, there was still some differences between them.

An Ran and the other two girls were a little excited as they had not expected Mu Chen to be so generous.

“Let’s go. There’s no longer any more meaning in staying here.” Mu Chen smiled. There was only a thin amount of Spiritual Lights in this region with quite a number of Spiritual Pawns still pacing about. However, Mu Chen did not have any intention of going after them. Upon obtaining the eight Spiritual Knights’ Spiritual Lights, it was equivalent to them slaughtering few thousand ordinary Spiritual Pawns.

An Ran and the two girls nodded. With a wave of his hand, Mu Chen took the lead as he brought along Luo Li and flew out of the mountain range.

However, his figure rapidly slowed down as he landed on a hillside. His brows were slightly furrowed together as he looked ahead, it was the exit to this mountain range.

However, at the exit of this region, there were dozens of people groaning on the ground as they emitted miserable shrieks. Every single one of them had bloody noses and swollen faces to the point that even Chen Peng and the other two party’s leaders were lying on the ground in a sorry state. Their faces were pale as they gnashed their teeth, looking before them.

There was a huge rock over there with one person seated on it and two people lazily standing beside him, carrying a crescent blade on their shoulders as they smiled while looking at Chen Peng and the rest.

When Mu Chen and his team appeared, the three people’s gazes were directed towards them. The two people that were standing had ruminating

expressions, while the one seated had his eyes narrowed.

Mu Chen's expression was calm as he looked at this scene before him.

"It's the Trio Blade Monarchs!" When An Ran and the other two saw those figures that were carrying crescent blades on their shoulders, their faces abruptly changed.

"Trio Blade Monarchs?" Mu Chen was startled. Clearly, he had not heard of this name in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy in the past.

"Those three are brothers of the Wang Family. The leader is Wang Tong, Wang Lei is the second eldest and the third being Wang Zhong. They're extremely versed in blades and, therefore, they were given the name: Trio Blade Monarchs."

An Ran's face was a little grave as she said softly, "Those three brothers had once challenged Li Xuantong. However, they ended up losing and disappeared for a period of time. Rumor has it that they were butterly training in the Lightning Territory, intending to clear their disgrace. Therefore, no one has seen them in action for a year, but their strength is something that cannot be underestimated."

"They had once challenged Li Xuantong?" Mu Chen was a little astonished. It seemed that those three were extremely confident in their strengths. Otherwise, why would they dare challenge Li Xuantong?

"Those three fellows are biological brothers and, hence, their coordination is connected at an extremely deep level with each other. No matter what opponent they encounter, the three of them would act together. Hence, they're extremely hard to deal with, so let's not get into any conflict with them." An Ran said with concern.

Those three fellows had undergone a year of bitter training, so their strength must have increased by a lot. If they were to have any conflicts with those three, it would definitely by an extremely troublesome matter to deal with.

"But they're probably coming for us." Mu Chen smiled. He, naturally,

didn't want to provoke any trouble, but there were still some trouble that would come at them. These three before them had clearly come here with bad intentions and it wouldn't be easy for them to evade it.

"Haha, you guys have finally come out?"

When Mu Chen and An Ran were conversing, a youth with pitch-black skin grinned as he revealed his snow-white teeth. His arm trembled as the massive crescent blade chopped down in a swift and ferocious way. He stared at Mu Chen as he smiled, "We've been waiting half a day for you guys."

An Ran's face turned ugly. Indeed, those fellows were here for them.

"Is there anything I can help you with?" Mu Chen said with his brows frowned.

"Haha, nothing much. The three of us have had our eyes on this location, but you people took the lead before us, which is a little too rude."

That particular youth smiled as he pointed his crescent blade towards the people that were in a sorry state as he continued, "Can you cooperate with us? Hand over all your Spiritual Lights to us. Haha, but if you're unwilling, I believe that the state of these people will disperse some of that mood."

Mu Chen stared at the youth and, only after a long time later, did he lightly nod his head. He did not speak as he marched forward. Luo Li lightly smiled and followed closely behind him. An Ran and the other two, however, had cautious expressions as they kept their guards up with Spiritual Energy circulating within their bodies.

"Haha, interesting."

When that youth saw the situation, he was also startled but, shortly after, he couldn't stop smiling. He looked at the approaching Mu Chen and sighed, "It seems that the three of us have been training for so long that we even lost some prestige."

Although he was smiling, there was cold intent emitting from his smile.

Rustle!

The crescent blade slightly rose and on the body of the blade, there was a flow of cold light. A sharp light travelled along the edge of the blade and, in the next instant, that youth's eyes instantly turned cold. The body of the blade trembled and he immediately threw out an enraged slash.

Boom!

The ground before him was instantly torn apart by the overbearing blade of light. A ferocious light could be visibly seen ripping the ground apart as it flew towards Mu Chen at lightning speed.

The blade of light was rapidly expanding in Mu Chen's sight as he stomped his feet.

Pitch-black Spiritual Energy blazed with black flames surging out of Mu Chen's body. It was like a waterfall as it heavily clashed against the blade of light.

Bang!

The ground was torn apart and as the black flames surged, it managed to withstand the overbearing blade of light.

"Wang Tong, what are you guys doing?!" When An Ran saw that the other party was attacking, she immediately barked furiously.

The youth that was seated on the huge stone slowly raised his head as his gaze gathered onto Mu Chen and lightly smiled, "Indeed, you are worthy of being someone that could withstand three moves from Li Xuantong."

From his tone of voice, he had clearly heard of Mu Chen's achievements.

"We don't want to attack you, but we probably will, if you're unwilling to hand over the Spiritual Lights." The boss, Wang Tong looked at Mu Chen, before he looked towards Luo Li, who was by his side. He extended his finger and tapped towards her.

"However, you also have to hand her over to us. Rest assured, we won't do anything to her. We heard that Li Xuantong is fond of her and,

therefore, we will deal with him using her."

Hearing his words, An Ran and the other two had a drastic change on their faces. Shortly after, they saw Mu Chen's face gradually turning cold and a penetrating chill was emitting from his body.

They looked at Mu Chen, who did not speak but gave others a feeling of their scalps tingling. They understood, this youth, who wasn't angry even when Chen Peng and the rest had used betrayal tactics, was truly enraged at this moment.

A dragon had it's reverse scales and those who touched it would welcome its wrath. The three brothers of the Wang Family had touched something of Mu Chen's that should never be touched.

Chapter 297: Price

When the three Wang Brothers saw Mu Chen's expression turn dark, they brought their guards up as they tightened their grips on their weapons.

The one that's seated on the rock was the boss, Wang Tong. His slightly frowned his brows as he looked at Mu Chen, whose gaze turned cold from his words. He never expected that the latter would have such a reaction from his words.

"No wonder you guys are still the defeated foes."

Mu Chen raised his head. There weren't any ripples as he stared at the three before him. The smile on the corner of his face turned harsh and offensive, "Having ambitions yet, no strength. Perhaps Li Xuantong won't even consider you guys as his opponents."

When Mu Chen said those words, the Wang Brothers' faces turned ugly as veins popped out from their arms. Their gazes were cold as they fixed onto Mu Chen. The latter's words had torn open the scar in their hearts.

Back then, when the three of them had come to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, they were arrogant and prideful. So, naturally, they were unwilling to be ordinary and, hence, they joined hands and challenged Li Xuantong, who was already an influential figure in the academy. However, the outcome was that they miserably lost. On the contrary, Li Xuantong, from back then, didn't have the attitude of a winner and only lightly cast a glance at them before leaving.

His indifferent gaze left a deep impact the Wang Brothers. From then on, they kept a low-profile and bitterly cultivated. Right now, their strength had soared to the point that they could even try charging into the top 10 of the Heavenly Ranking. They believed that if they were to encounter Li Xuantong again, they would be able to wash their disgrace away.

"Aren't you courting death?" Wang Lei, whose face was blackened, had the most furious temper as he roared while staring at Mu Chen viciously.

“A Quasi-Heavenly Transformation Stage newcomer actually dared to behave so impudently before we three brothers? It seems that you’ve gained quite a bit of confidence in receiving those three moves from Li Xuantong.” Wang Zhong sneered as he ridiculed.

“It seems like you have a huge repercussion to my words.” Wang Tong’s gaze was still as cold as before. Shortly after, his gaze dropped and added, “However, since you’ve already said those words, then you, naturally, have to pay the price for your words. I hope that you’ll be able to pay the price for it.”

Bang!

As he shouted, Wang Lei, whose temper was the most furious, grinned. His hands abruptly gripped onto that sharp crescent blade. He took a step forth as astonishing Spiritual Energy ripples soared out.

“Heavenly Transformation Stage Middle Phase!” The face of An Ran and the two other girls changed. No wonder the Wang Brothers were so arrogant, it turned out that their strengths had underwent such improvements!

With the three of them having Heavenly Transformation Stage Middle Phase’s strength, in addition to their well coordinated cooperation, they could even fight with Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase experts. No wonder they dared to seek trouble with Li Xuantong the moment they finished their training.

“Brat, as long as you’re willing to hand over all of your Spiritual Lights, as well as that girl, everything will be fine. However, since you’re unable to understand what’s best for you, don’t blame me for being too heavy with my moves!”

Wang Lei clenched his crescent blade as his figure moved. He was like a streak of lightning as he appeared above Mu Chen. Both of his hands were holding the crescent blade as he issued a bark. Brilliant lightning flashes abruptly extended from the blade, along with the deep roars of resounding thunder.

“Roaring Thunder Slash!”

As he shouted, an overbearing lightning blade flew down like a violent light as it shrouded Mu Chen, along with a few feet in radius.

Mu Chen raised his head as the lightning light was reflected in his black pupils.

Boom!

The lightning blade viciously hit on the spot that Mu Chen was standing, causing the ground to tremble. Cracks that were like a spider's web extended from the spot that the blade had landed.

"Mu Chen!" When An Ran and the other two saw Mu Chen being hit by that blade, they immediately exclaimed out.

Luo Li, who was close by, however, didn't panic in the slightest. But even so, her hands had held onto her sword grip. Luo Li's pupils were cold as she stared at Wang Tong and Wang Zhong.

"Collapsed after the first blow. I wonder, how did you withstand the three moves from Li Xuantong?" Up in the sky, Wang Lei's hands held onto his crescent blade as he stood with pride. He looked at the ground that was covered in smoke and dust as he couldn't help casting the corner of his mouth aside. That kid could not even avoid that one move of his, how did he get the courage to put on such an act before them?

"Really?"

An indifferent laugh, along with a chill, abruptly resounded from the rear of Wang Lei. His face instantly changed as the crescent blade in his hands slashed towards his rear with an overbearing blade of light.

Pitch-black Spiritual Energy was blazing with black flames as it surged like smoke while bringing along blazing ripples and swept out. It had directly clashed against the blade of light without dodging.

Clank!

The sound of metal colliding resounded as sparks flew. Wang Lei's hands, which were gripping his crescent blade, trembled. His blade that was covered with the lightning's blade of light had actually dulled under

the attacks of the pitch-black Spiritual Energy.

Bang! Bang!

However, before he could feel astonished, the figure before him charged over. That figure was covered in pitch-black Spiritual Energy as his fists, elbows and legs turned into a fighting machine. The attacks were like tidal waves as they swept towards him in all directions.

Such ferocious attacks had instantly caused Wang Lei to be at a loss. As he defended, he clearly became in a little sorry state. Blazing and violent Spiritual Energy poured into his body on the spots that were attacked, causing massive destruction inside his body as pain was felt from his meridians and muscles.

Beneath him, the An Ran trio, along with all the teams that were disposed of by the Wang Brothers, had all widened their mouths as they looked at the scene up in the sky. In nearly an instant, that Wang Lei, who was still coldly smiling and proud of himself, had fallen into a disadvantageous position.

With this kind of face-to-face confrontation, Mu Chen, whose strength was just at the Quasi-Heavenly Transformation Stage, had actually suppressed Wang Lei, whose strength had reached Heavenly Transformation Stage Middle Phase, completely!

Dong!

Up in the sky, the black streak of light had viciously clashed with the flickering lightning light. The Spiritual Energy fluctuations were like ripples as they spread out. Shortly after, the figure that was shrouded in lightning light flew out in a sorry state. As the lightning light weakened, it revealed Wang Lei's face, which was filled with disbelief.

By relying on the robust strength of his Heavenly Transformation Stage Middle Phase's Spiritual Energy, he was actually unable to defeat Mu Chen?

Rustle!

As he was slightly absent-minded from the disbelief, that ghostly figure

had, once again, appeared in the sky. Thereafter, that figure threw a fist down as pitch-black Spiritual Energy became similar to an erupting volcano as it brought forth a powerful mountain-crushing strength.

Dang!

As Wang Lei fluttered, he immediately used his crescent blade to withstand that strike. Thereafter, he felt a surge of overbearing and blazing Spiritual Energy violently invading it. Under the corrosion of the Spiritual Energy, the light on the crescent blade had instantly dulled down.

Spiritual Energy surged out as Wang Lei had turned into a meteor and fell down, and ferociously shot into the ground. In an instant, the ground trembled as smoke and dust surged out. The ground was cracked into a huge hole. Wang Lei was lying in the crater in a sorry state with a trace of blood at the corner of his mouth.

Pfffft.

He puffed out a mouthful of blood as his eyes were filled with disbelief.

“Do you now understand how I managed to withstand the three moves from Li Xuantong?” A voice without much emotional ripples sounded out before him. When he raised his head, he saw Mu Chen, who was standing close by. On the surface of the latter’s body, there was a faint silvery light as his black pupils became as cold as a couple of blades.

His face abruptly changed as his figure immediately retreated.

Rustle!

Mu Chen did not let him off easily and he took a step forth. A dragon roar seemed to resound out along with that step of his. In a flash, he had already appeared before Wang Lei.

“You dare?!”

When Wang Tong and Wang Zhong saw that Mu Chen was pressing hard, they did not hold back in the slightest and abruptly barked out. However, just when they were about to take a step out, a clear sword cry sounded out. A surge of sword aura that could even cause the heavens and

earth to tremble had fixed onto them.

That sword aura was extremely sharp and made both of their faces change. When they turned around, they saw Luo Li staring at them. The black longsword in her hand was halfway unsheathed and the sword aura was being emitted from this.

Wang Tong and Wang Zhong's faces thoroughly turned grave. They finally understood that this young girl before them wasn't as easy to deal with as they had imagined.

Bang!

A solemnly groan had sounded out before them as a figure had sorrily flew back. Thereafter, it had ferociously shot into the huge rock beneath their feet, instantly causing the huge rock to crumble down.

Wang Lei was in a sorry state, puffing out a mouthful of blood. They looked at the youth that was slowly making his way over and there was finally some shock within their eyes.

They had stepped on the wrong spot this time!

Although they had never belittled Mu Chen before, they never expect that this freshman would be so hard to deal with.

"If this is the extent of your ability, then don't go look for Li Xuantong and embarrass yourself."

Mu Chen indifferently looked at the Wang Brothers as he looked down, "Bring out some capabilities. One has to pay the price for the words they speak. These words are from you, so I believe that you guys will understand this better."

Wang Tong's gaze was dark as he made a grip with his hand and a crescent blade had appeared with a flash. He stamped the blade into the ground as a blade of light soared out. Even the clouds were split apart by the sharpness of his blade of light.

"What a huge tone. I admit that I've misjudged you. However, you still do not possess the capability to make us three brothers admit defeat!"

Wang Tong's gaze was sharp as he took a step forward. That soaring blade of light turned so ferocious that even the ground had scattered and smashed.

"I'll have a look at what price you will make us three brothers pay today!"

"This was originally prepared to defeat Li Xuantong. But, right now, we'll serve you with it. I'll see if you have the ability to withstand it!"

He tightly gripped his crescent blade and, behind him, Wang Lei and Wang Zhong's gazes turned vicious. The three of them held onto the huge blade as the overbearing sword light spread out. Vaguely, there was a deep and low thunderous rumble resounding between the heavens and earth.

Chapter 298: Battling the Three Wangs

Boom!

At the entrance of the mountains, there seemed to be thunderclouds gathering up in the sky. Deep and low rumbles of thunder resounded between the heavens and earth as a violent blade light soared into the heavens. The momentum became more ferocious as if all of the lightning had been gathered together.

Even though the Wang brothers didn't have that much of a reputation in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, their strength was something that could not be underestimated. At the beginning, when they dared to challenge Li Xuantong, this was already sufficient to prove it.

If it was someone that had no foundation to be based on, why would they dare to challenge him? Wouldn't that be the same as asking to shame themselves?

And since the Wang brothers had hidden themselves in bitter cultivation, their strengths had undergone huge improvements. Their strengths could not be considered as being what it was a year ago. Likewise, this boosted their confidence in challenging Li Xuantong.

As long as they could defeat Li Xuantong, they would become the biggest black horse and become an influential figure in the academy. When that happened, all the time that they had spent on keeping themselves hidden would have been completely worth it.

But, right now, they had already met up with Mu Chen, who was also difficult to deal with, before they even met up with Li Xuantong. If they could not even resolve the former, how could they go and challenge Li Xuantong?

Therefore, they definitely had to truly defeat Mu Chen!

Therefore, they had to let everyone know that whoever dared to challenge the three of them would only end up being defeated!

A chill surged out from the Wang brothers' eyes. The three of them were

holding onto their crescent blades and the blades looked as though they were made from lightning. They flickered with lighting as the rampaging lightning energy was being emitted.

The current them looked as though they were thunderclouds from the sky as they resonated.

When the An Ran trio saw the battle formation of the Wang Brothers, their faces uncontrollably changed as they roared with anger, “Wang Tong, aren’t the three of you too shameless? The three of you are acting together to deal with a freshman?!”

Wang Tong’s face dulled as he rebutted, “It was known to everyone that the three of us are used to working together. It doesn’t matter if we’re dealing with someone stronger or weaker, the three of us will still go together.”

“You!” An Ran clenched her teeth.

Wang Tong’s gaze was cold as he looked at Mu Chen and slowly said, “As long as you comply with everything we demanded earlier, perhaps I won’t haggle with you about how impudent you were before.”

Mu Chen stared at Wang Tong as the corner of his lips rose. He slowly stepped forth and said with a light voice, “The truth is, I also wish to tell you that one can’t act so impudently.”

“Haha.”

Wang Tong laughed from the anger as his gaze turned even colder. He no longer spoke to Mu Chen as he circulated all of the Spiritual Energy within his body. With their three strengths combined, their demeanor looked as though they had been condensed together as an astonishing Spiritual Energy pressure started to spread, enshrouding Mu Chen.

Luo Li said lightly, “Do you want the both of us to go together?”

“Support me, then.”

Mu Chen smiled. If he was, indeed, unable to contend with his opponents, then he wouldn’t put up a strong front and reject Luo Li’s help.

But, clearly, the Wang brothers didn't possess that qualification to force Mu Chen to that step.

"Okay." Luo Li gently smiled. She did not insist as she was well aware that Mu Chen had always been calm and rational. He wouldn't do anything like putting up a strong front on purpose. Since he would confront them, then he, naturally, had the confidence to do so.

Luo Li lightly retreated as she moved out of the battlefield. The An Ran trio immediately crowded around her and anxiously asked, "Can Mu Chen do it alone?"

"Senior Sister Apprentice An Ran can rest assured." Luo Li lightly smiled as she said to comfort her. She directed her gaze towards that figure who didn't look sturdy, but was able to make others feel at ease. The gentleness that was shown on her exquisite face immediately made the An Ran trio become absent-minded just from looking at her as they exclaimed in their hearts. 'No wonder someone as talented as Li Xuantong would fall in love for her. Such elegance could not be seen on a second person in the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.'

However, looking from the current situation, Luo Li clearly already had someone else in her heart and Li Xuantong probably could not have his wish fulfilled.

Rumble!

Powerful Spiritual Energy impacts constantly surged from the bodies of the Wang brothers as they reduced the huge rocks on the ground to dust. They tightly clenched their crescent blade as the lightning became even more dense.

Up in the sky, thunderclouds were wiggling about as a lightning bolt abruptly lit up the entire region.

Boom!

As the lightning illuminated the horizon, the gaze of the Wang brothers had instantly turned into the look of predators as each of them issued a deep and low roar. The three of them burst out in an instant with a semi-

circle formation and flew towards Mu Chen.

Their bodies were shrouded in lightning as they moved with extremely fast speed. Looking from afar, it looked as though three lightning bolts had streak across the sky. Causing even the air to tremble as they let loose deep and low thunderous rumbles.

“Lightning Blade!”

As the three of them barked, they raised their blades simultaneously and threw a slash down. The ground was torn apart and a ravine was opening up. The three lightning crescent blades slammed towards Mu Chen without any mercy.

Those three blades of light were extremely tricky as they sealed a majority of Mu Chen’s escape routes, forcing him to fight them head on.

Mu Chen looked at the brilliant lightning as a cold light smeared across his black pupils. Spiritual Energy surged and he moved forward, turning into a soaring dragon image as a dragon’s roar resounded.

Rustle!

The dragon’s roar echoed as the three lightning blades fell on the spot that Mu Chen was standing before. The earth cracked, but Mu Chen’s figure had already disappeared.

“What fast speed!”

The Wang brothers’ eyes turned cold. Previously, when Mu Chen fought with Wang Lei, he used this abnormal speed to toy around with the latter.

“Left side!”

Wang Tong narrowed his eyes as he abruptly issued a bark. When he barked, the three brothers displayed astonishing rapport. Blades of light with lightning instantly slashed towards the left direction.

Bang!

The earth cracked once again and a fuzzy figure had disappeared.

The lighting strike was, once again, dodged by Mu Chen.

“Be careful, he’s trying to defeat one of us by using his speed!”

Wang Tong barked. He seemed to have seen through Mu Chen’s intentions. The three brothers’ were extremely well-coordinated with one another. If any one of them were to be defeated, their coordination would also be affected. Among the three of them, the third brother, Wang Zhong was the weakest. When Mu Chen appeared on the left side, he should be targeting Wang Zhong.

Rustle!

However, when Wang Tong’s bark sounded out, his pupils shrank. A fuzzy shadow had already appeared on the right.

“He was actually targeting me!” Wang Tong’s gaze turned cold. Among the three of them, he was the most powerful. But Mu Chen was actually targeting him, how stupid!

Boom!

Just when Mu Chen’s figure had appeared, before Wang Tong could even speak, Wang Lei and Wang Zhong’s tricky blades of light had already come crashing down towards Mu Chen, who was moving at lightning speed.

Clank!

However, just when the blades of light were about to close in on Mu Chen, the latter’s body burst forth with a blade of light that instantly took the form of a black pagoda. As it flickered, a fluctuating black light was actually withstand the attack from the other two.

“Lighting Python Blade Art!”

Wang Tong’s eyes were sharp as he yelled. The crescent blade shined with lightning. It was like a huge lightning python as it whistled towards Mu Chen.

“Break!”

Mu Chen coldly smiled. Faced with Wang Tong’s ferocious attack, not only did he not retreat, his handsigns changed and he threw a palm out.

A majestic Spiritual Energy was sent out as it formed into a starry sky behind Mu Chen. A gigantic white tiger stood on the starry sky as it roared. Space was being ripped apart as it brought along a torrential killing aura and ruthlessly charged towards the lightning python blade.

With Mu Chen's current strength, it was, naturally, smooth and easy for him to execute the Divine Seal of the White Tiger without any difficulties.

Bang!

The white tiger roared as it heavily clashed against the lightning python. A killing aura surged forth and the lightning python, which contained lightning energy, was torn apart.

Wang Tong's face finally changed. His attack was something that not even Heavenly Transformation Stage Middle Phase experts could withstand. However, he never expected that it would collapse so easily under one of Mu Chen's attacks.

"That fellow had actually cultivated a Deity Tier Spiritual Art?!" Wang Tong's eyes turned dark.

Dang!

The white tiger tore the lightning python apart, but there wasn't any decrease in demeanor. It continued to exude a killing aura as it pounced towards Wang Tong. The white tiger heavily clashed against his crescent blade, which was flickering with lightning. The sound of metal clashing resounded. Both of Wang Tong's feet were on the ground, but he was knocked back a few hundred meters. The huge trees that were along the way crumbled.

"Big Brother!"

Wang Lei and Wang Zhong's faces changed as they witnessed Wang Tong losing to Mu Chen in face-to-face confrontation.

"How formidable!" The An Ran trio, as well as the three other groups, had their faces filled with fright. Chen Peng and the fellow leaders, however, had their faces filled with shock. Mu Chen was fighting three enemies all by himself; and yet, he could still grasp the loophole in their

coordination, and send Wang Tong, the strongest brother, back. This kind of strength was a little frightening.

Dong!

Wang Tong stomped his feet on the ground, causing the earth to crack. He forcefully stabilised his body as fresh blood dripped from the hand that was used to hold his crescent blade. His eyes turned even colder.

“Don’t think that only you have cultivated a Deity Tier Spiritual Art!”

Lightning flickered across his eyes as he took a step forward. His figure soared as a brilliant Spiritual Energy, containing lighting, surged from his body and linked with the thunderclouds up in the sky.

Shhhhhhuuu!

When Wang Lei and Wang Zhong saw that, they soared into the sky, as well, as they circulated all the Spiritual Energy within their bodies. At the same time, a similar lightning shot from them and linked with the lump of thunderclouds.

Thunder roared between the heavens and earth, causing the sky to darken as a violent wind howled and lightning flashed.

Clearly, the Wang brothers were forced to the point that they had to reveal their trump card.

“Mu Chen, if you’re able to withstand this, then the three of us will concede!”

Wang Tong’s face was illuminated by the ferocious lightning. He coldly barked and, shortly after, the thunderclouds were torn apart as a huge lightning bolt shot down from the heavens, and landed on the huge blade in his hand.

As for the other two, they were both like lightning beasts as their bodies emitted lightning energy.

The three of them took a step forth, causing the heavens and earth to lose their colours. This was like the anger of a Thunder God. They dazzled with lightning as they formed into three huge lightning blades that were a

few hundred feet in size. Thereafter, they ripped apart the heavens and earth as they shot towards Mu Chen with extremely fearsome might.

At the same time, the three brothers issued a bark that was like a thunderous rumble that resounded between the heavens and earth.

“Thunder God’s Nine Layers of Heaven!”

Chapter 299: Might of the Thunder God Physique

The entire world seemed to turn dark and gloomy. Violent and wild sounds of thunder rippled throughout the skies, causing the might of thunder the fill the world.

Three resplendent and wild arcs of lightning ripped the skies with incomparable power, enveloping a thousand foot radius around Mu Chen.

They were simply undodgeable.

An Ran and the rest were startled by Wang Tong and his brothers till their faces turned slightly pale. It's no wonder why these three fellows dared to challenge Li Xuantong. With such a terrifying attack, the only thing a Heavenly Transformation Late Stage expert could do was dodge!

Not far away, Chen Peng and the other two squads climbed up and hurriedly fled the area, all afraid to be affected by such a terrifying attack. At the beginning of the hunting battle, they had some confidence in themselves. However, not long after it started, they had already met up with so many ferocious people.

They knew that the appearance of such a ferocious person was only just an omen. At the later stages, there might more and more of those kinds of people, black horses that had concealed their strengths this whole time and were biding their time to show a brilliant feat.

As for them, they would drown under the surging waves of black horses.

After looking at each other's astringent expressions, they could only bitterly shake their heads. They had assumed that they had pretty good strength. They never thought that once those hidden black horses truly showed up, they would become so normal and plain.

Their gazes converged on the youth that was surrounded by thousands of lightning arcs. Facing such a terrifying attack, exactly what outcome would he end with...?

At this moment, it was obvious that Mu Chen did not have any spare energy left to care about their gazes. Raising his head, he looked towards the lightning arcs running across the skies. A sliver of icy graveness started to condense within those black pupils of his.

"Blade glows that contained the might of lightning?" he muttered to himself. It's said that the trio had been bitterly training in the Lighting Territory for a very long period of time. This had resulted in their Spiritual Energy having the might of lightning mixed within. At the same time, the divine art that they trained in had connections with thunder and lightning. When fused and displayed, their might had turned even more wild and violent.

The glow from the lightning reflecting on his pupils, Mu Chen suddenly clenched his fists tightly. The next moment, a faint glowing layer of silver had, unexpectedly, started to gradually appear on the surface of his body.

Under the silvery glowing skin, there seemed to be the same lightning light sparkling within.

This was the "Thunder God Physique", the reward that Mu Chen obtained from the mysterious bald old man after he successfully received a single strike from him. This "Thunder God's Body" was obviously a part of an even stronger body refining Deity Tier Spiritual Art. Although it wasn't complete, Mu Chen could already feel how extraordinary it was.

Mu Chen's mind sank as a ball of light, which appeared to be a lightning pearl, started to flow along his meridians. This lighting pearl was refined by Mu Chen within the Eighth Level of the Lightning Territory.

Floating on the surface of the silver lightning pearl was a black-coloured lightning pearl about half the size of it. Compared to the silver lightning pearl, it appeared to be very plain, with its surface full of potholes. However, Mu Chen knew just how terrifying this black lightning pearl was. This black lightning pearl was the end result of the condensed might of lightning from the divine black lightning.

Naturally, while helping the Nine Netherbird resist the last remnant of the divine black lightning, he had also crazily displayed his Thunder God

Physique to its limits. Absorbing the strength of that divine black lightning, it had condensed within his meridians into this small black lightning pearl.

However, after successfully condensing it, till now, Mu Chen did not dare to casually utilize it. He knew that once he displayed the strength of the divine black lighting contained within, he would incur some rather big troubles.

Forming a lighting pearl within one's body was a result of training the "Thunder God Physique". Yet, Mu Chen did not dare to casually utilize it.

Mu Chen scanned the black lightning pearl with his mind, before locking onto the silver lightning pearl. With a thought, the lightning pearl suddenly turned in a scorching sun as it released an resplendent lightning light.

Thump!

Within a seemingly deep and muffled bang, the silver lightning pearl violent shattered. When it shattered, the respondent might of thunder exploded like a raging tide, flowing wildly and crazily along Mu Chen's meridians.

Chi! Chi!

Mu Chen's body seemed to instantly sparkle with a silvery light. The crack of thunder appeared within his black pupils.

"Thunder God Physique – Indestructible and Unextinguishable!"

A low roar resounded within Mu Chen's mind as the lightning light around his body exploded outwards. He felt the wild frightening power that seemed to want to shatter him apart. Unable to bear it, he faced the sky and roared. His roar was akin to the thunder, going so far as to mask the peals of lightning striking in the skies.

Bang!

With a step forward, the entire world seemed to instantly shatter and collapse. Gigantic fissures rapidly extended from under his feet. Within a

dozen short breaths, an area of three thousand metres in circumference was scattered and smashed apart.

Whoosh!

As the world fissured apart, Mu Chen had explosively shot forward, like a bolt of lightning. Under the astonished and shocked gazes from the surroundings, he dashed head-on towards the gigantic lightning light blades!

Instead of adopting any method of evasion, he had actually used the most visually impactful way and rushed straight towards the lightning light blades!

Seeing such a vicious attitude displayed by Mu Chen, the mouths of Chen Peng and many other people were slightly agape. Isn't this slightly too overbearing?

"You're looking to die!"

The furious cries of Wang Tong and the other two could seemingly be heard above the horizon. Mu Chen's actions were simply the greatest insult towards them.

Therefore, the peals of lightning turned more violent and wild.

Bang!

The speed of the lighting light blades were too fast. Within a few breaths, they had already collided violently against the silvery glowing figure.

At the instant of the collision, the heavens seemed to tremble and shiver.

Roar!

The lightning light blades expanded in an earth-shattering manner as if they wanted to split the heavens and earth apart. Within the lightning light blades that blotted the skies, the glowing silvery figure appeared extremely tiny and insignificant, as if it was struggling just to survive.

Creak! Crack!

The sharp lightning light blades sliced at Mu Chen's body, however no slash wounds were formed. It was as if they were slicing against metal, only resulting in faint white lines.

Mu Chen looked at the wild lightning surrounding his entire body before slowly breathing in a deep breath of air. The glow surrounding him turned all the more resplendent and bright. As for the might of lightning that was sliced apart by the lightning light blades, all of them were sucked straight into his body with his utilization of the "Thunder God Physique".

The mysteries of the "Thunder God Physique" was obviously something that was too farfetched for the trio to be able to understand.

Chi! Chi!

At this time, Mu Chen had already utilized the "Thunder God Physique" to its maximum capability. One his arms became as bright as silver while the lightning that seemed to have substance arc acrossed it. An indescribably wild and explosive fluctuation started to ripple and oscillate.

"Bang!"

Within an indifferent expression, Mu Chen's arm suddenly vibrated. In the next instant, a fist rumbled towards the devastation-causing lightning light blades.

Boom!

The gigantic rumble of thunder cracking furiously resounded through the skies. Everyone could see the silvery glowing figure within the devastating lightning light blades suddenly turning extremely eye-blindingly bright.

This was followed by an exceptionally devastating fluctuation, which started to oscillate in ripples.

Seeing and feeling what had happened before them, the pupils of the brotherly trio suddenly contracted.

At this moment, the devastating lightning light blades suddenly froze. In the next instant, everyone was dumbfounded to see light waves, akin to

cracks, completely running across each lightning light blade.

Ping!

A sound akin to glass breaking, a silvery light akin to the thunder god's spear piercing the heavens and earth; the lightning light blades were thoroughly destroyed, before the rumbling sounds of thunder crashing expanded out. Scattering about, they were, unexpectedly, thoroughly dissipating into thin air.

As the lightning light blades dissipated, a silvery light slowly started to converge and condense, before transforming into a tall and thin figure.

"How is this possible!?"

The trio had incredulous expressions as they looked at the figure that appeared. At this time, Mu Chen's clothing had already been ripped to shreds. His silvery skin had arcs of lightning travelling across it while a frightening power radiated from him, as if his body was encasted in lightning.

"Retreat!"

Wang Tong was the first to regain clarity. Suppressing the shock he felt in his heart, he loudly roared.

As his words rang out, the trio explosively retreated, seemingly, at the same time. The power that Mu Chen possessed had exceeded their expectations. They never thought that their combined attack was incapable of dealing with him. With their current strength, it was already not enough to threaten the power that he possessed.

Since that was the case, it was better to quickly leave this place.

The trio's fast and direct actions made quite a few people feel somewhat shocked and astonished. This fellow was truly firm and decisive.

"Leaving without even paying any price? Don't you think walking off like this would be too discourteous?"

Mu Chen looked at the rapidly retreating figures. As that ordinary voice that held the roars of thunder rang out, he took a step forward. With the

roar of a dragon and thunder resounding out, his figure instantaneously disappeared.

“Careful!”

Wang Tong’s face violently warped as he noticed that Mu Chen’s speed had increased!

“Being careful is also useless!”

A cold voice rang out from behind Wang Tong. A startled expression flashed past his eyes, before the crescent blade in his hands instantly slashed out.

Bang!

A palm that seemed to be formed by lightning extended out and directly grabbed and held onto the sharp body of the blade. In the next instant, a foot kicked out, carrying along an arc of lightning, before violently striking Wang Tong’s chest without any mercy.

Puff!

Wang Tong spewed a mouthful of blood as his body rapidly shot down, before violently drilling into the ground with an enormous explosion.

“Big brother!” shouted Wang Lei and Wang anxiously.

“Since you two wish to accompany him, down you go!”

Lightning sparkled and flashed as Mu Chen’s figure appeared behind Wang Lei again like a spectre. Using the crescent blade in his hand like a stick, he violent swung down and furiously smashed it against the waists of the two men.

Bang! Bang!

Wang Lei and Wang Zhong sorrowfully shot down and created two new large holes in the ground.

Hiss!

Chen Peng and his group looked towards the three gigantic holes in the ground. There, the trio were lying down, spewing mouthfuls of blood. They

were in extremely pitiful states, and there was not a trace of the previous brashness and arrogance from before.

“This fellow... is also too terrifying...”

All of them swallowed mouthfuls of saliva before raising their heads. In the air was the youth, sparkling with rays of lightning as he slowly descended. The lightning light dissipated, and his body started to regain its original colour.

This time, the gazes coming from them had an addition of respect and rejoice. Thank god they had not overly offended Mu Chen; if they did, their ending might have been the same as the trio.

Mu Chen ignored their gazes and remained indifferent as he descended. With a flick of his fingers, the crescent moon blade turned into a ray of light and violent impaled the ground before the trio, sinking over a metre deep.

The trio looked at the vibrating blade as their faces turned slightly pale.

Dusting off his hands, Mu Chen stared at them with a faint smile on his face. Except, that smile made the trio feel a chill all over their bodies.

“Next up, let’s have a nice talk about the so-called ‘price’.”

Chapter 300: Extremely Dangerous Grade

The trio's faces turned deathly pale as they looked towards Mu Chen, who had a faint smile and was staring at them. They had a faint sensation of their scalp getting numb, as the scene they had witnessed caused them to feel slightly absent-minded. Even under the collaboration of the three, they were actually beaten by the youth whose strength was just at the Quasi-Heavenly Transformation Stage.

"How is he that strong!?"

Words of bitterness and pain spewed out of the mouths of the trio. They had bitterly trained for a year, and were certain that they would definitely be able to demonstrate their extraordinary talents after coming out of their isolated training. However, who would have thought that they would meet such a cruel and vicious character not long after the start of the hunt?

It was said that this fellow had just entered the Northern Heavens Spirit Academy half a year ago. However with the capabilities that he had demonstrated today, even all those outstanding seniors would be left eating his dust.

This fellow would absolutely have the strength to break into the top five rankings of the Heavenly Ranking!

What a monster!

The trio felt slightly disheartened, as the arrogance within their hearts was finally smashed and broken into bits. They once bragged about themselves being geniuses. However, when they were truly compared to a person like Mu Chen, they were tossed far far away.

"What do you want?" After all, Wang Tong was the eldest. Forcing himself to focus, he clenched his teeth and look towards Mu Chen and asked.

"Although I don't truly want your pitiful lives in this place, I can beat you three till you're half-dead. You three should automatically transfer out

of this Spiritual Light World. If you three do so, you will lose the qualifications for the Spiritual Light Empowerment." said Mu Chen with a smile as he sat down on the huge cliff before the trio; however, his voice did not have any warmth in it.

The trio's faces' turned white again, as they had chosen to unleash their abilities during the hunt all for the purpose of achieving the Spiritual Light Empowerment. It was able to grant them an improvement to their strength, allowing them to truly catch up to those influential figures at the top. If Mu Chen really forced them out of the Spiritual Light World, they would lose such an opportunity. To them, this was undoubtedly an enormous blow.

"However, you can hand over something that would make my heart move, if not..." said Mu Chen with a faint smile, his gaze swept over the trio with malicious intent.

"We've a thousand Spiritual Lights that we've snatched from those other fellows. We'll give them to you. What do you say?" asked Wang Tong as he clenched his teeth.

Hearing those words, the three small groups of people that were starting to crowd around not too far away instantly became furious; however, they did not dare to say anything. Whether it was Mu Chen or the Wang trio, both of them were not people that they could deal with.

There wasn't much of a fluctuation with Mu Chen's complexion, as he only extended his palm.

A glow sparkled within Wang Tong's hand, and a head-sized crystal ball appeared in a flash. The originally sparkling and translucent crystal was now emitting a fiery red glow, akin to a cluster of flaming suns burning with a blazing light within it. Being filled with a thousand points of Spiritual Lights, it emitted a thick Spiritual Energy fluctuation, causing even the air to start emitting a humming noise.

The three small groups of people looked anxiously at the crystal ball. It was theirs...

However, Mu Chen did not care about them. He did not have any

favorable impressions of the Wang brothers. He also did not have any favourable impressions of those narrow-minded fellows who tried to play tricks on him. Therefore, with a flip of his hand, he stored the crystal ball, without a slightest thought of returning it to Chen Peng and those groups.

Seeing his actions, Chen Peng and those groups could only squirm their lips, as they did not dare to criticise him. That was Mu Chen's spoils of war.

"You only have this? That's not enough." After storing the thousand points of Spiritual Lights, Mu Chen looked towards Wang Tong and said with an indifferent tone.

"You're still not satisfied with the Spiritual Lights! Mu Chen, don't be too much!" shouted the trio furiously as their complexions instantly changed.

Mu Chen start to walk towards them. With a clench of his fist, the crescent moon blade in front of the trio hummed and shot into his hand. With a casual shake of his hand, a swift and fierce blade light sliced a deep fissure into the ground in front of the three men, before staring at them with a slightly cold gaze.

Looking at Mu Chen's cold gaze, the trio's hearts felt slightly cold. Looking at each other, they finally sighed in dejection. Looked like they were truly unlucky this time. If they didn't offer something valuable, this fiend would not be willing to let them go.

"We have some information about the gathering points."

"I don't have that much interest in normal gathering points." replied Mu Chen, while faintly wrinkling his brows.

"Hmph, the gathering point that we know about is being classified as an Extremely Dangerous Grade." said Wang Tong furiously.

"An Extremely Dangerous Grade gathering point?" hearing Wang Tong's words, An Ran and the two girls who had remained quiet for the entire time suddenly cried out in surprise. With a change of their expressions on their beautiful faces, they stared at Wang Tong and asked, "You guys

actually knew of a gathering point of that grade?"

Mu Chen was slightly surprised as he stared at the trio. The current him had some understanding of this hunt, for example gathering points can be differentiate into strong and weak. The gathering points they had found till now were only Ordinary Grade gathering points. Above the Ordinary Grade, there was the Dangerous Grade and the Extremely Dangerous Grade.

Generally speaking, Dangerous Grade gathering points would have an existence equivalent to a Heavenly Transformation Late Stage, the Spirit General. Furthermore, the variance was not small. As for the Extremely Dangerous Grade, there was a high possibility of a Spirit King appearing.

Spirit King, one that possessed the terrifying strength of a Heavenly Completion Stage. Within the past few years, there had yet to be any news about a student being able to hunt a Spirit King.

"This information is indeed enough; however, one might not be able to put it to good use."

Mu Chen faintly frowned. If he could get his hands on the Spiritual Light from a Spirit King, he would absolutely achieve the maximum benefit from this hunt. At that time, the result of the Spiritual Light Empowerment would definitely be described as perfect. However, he wasn't a person to let a few good benefits get to his head. Although the Spiritual Light from a Spirit King was extremely alluring, one must possess the capability to be able to enjoy the rewards. Mu Chen's current strength could be considered as having a great improvement; however, he knew that if he truly faced against a Heavenly Completion Stage, he would still be in danger.

"You're guts are too small. Without that little bit of courage, you still wish to shine in this hunt?" sneered Wang Lei.

Mu Chen shot a look at him. With an expression on his face, the crescent moon blade in his hand started to vibrate, before he pointed the sharp edge of the blade at Wang Lei. Upon seeing this, the latter immediately shut his mouth up.

“Explain this Extremely Dangerous Grade gathering point to me. With your capabilities, you three don’t have to qualifications to enter that sort of place. There should be some things that you’ve yet to say, right?”asked Mu Chen as he looked towards Wang Tong.

Hearing those words, the corner of Wang Tong’s mouth twitched. He never thought that Mu Chen’s foresight would be that sharp. After hesitating for short period of time, he replied, “The number of Extremely Dangerous Grade gathering points in this Spiritual Light World can be counted with our fingers, as there were simply no students that dared to go near those kinds of places in the past few years.”

Mu Chen nodded his head. Even if it was Shen Cangsheng, and Li Xuantong, that level of influential figures would be cautious, even fear a Spirit King. Not to even mention the normal students.

Due to that, there was no one who dared to take action against those Spirit Kings. This resulted in their followers increasing over time and getting stronger and stronger. So much so that even though the students’ strength had increased, no one dared to make any plans to go against those high grade gathering points.

“The gathering point we’re talking about isn’t within those few examples. This is because it was just graded as Extremely Dangerous this year.”

Licking his lips, Wang Tong continued speaking while his eyes turned fiery, “The Spirit King at that gathering point was born only recently!”

“A newly born Spirit King?”

Shock appeared on the faces of An Ran and the two other girls. This kind of information truly had some importance. Although the current students did not have the means to deal with those Spirit Kings who had taken shape for many years, if it was only a newly born Spirit King, they would be able to have some level of possibility.

If this information was circulated, there would be no telling how many people would turn feverish over the Spiritual Light that the Spirit King would become at such a gathering point. This would be enough for them

to take the risk.

Mu Chen faintly narrowed his eyes. A newly born Spirit King? No wonder why Wang Tong and his brothers would dare to take the risk to head to a gathering point of that grade. Mu Chen knew that even with the strength of the three brothers, it would not end smoothly if they faced a newly born Spirit King. Regardless of that, there was a slight possibility for success, after all.

For the sake of the Spiritual Light of a Spirit King's Level, it was worthwhile for the trio to risk a chance.

"How many people know about this information?" asked Mu Chen in a slightly deep voice.

Wang Tong faintly frowned and shook his head, as he replied, "How would I know? This bit of information was placed within the Spiritual Value Hall by the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Although the people who purchased it was extremely small, there would still be some people who would have an inclination to such information."

"That is to say that you guys aren't the only ones who know about this information, right?"

Wang Tong nodded his head and replied, " You should not wish to have exclusive information within this Spiritual Light World, as the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy wants everyone to compete over it. As if it would that easy to find such exclusively convenient information by yourself."

Mu Chen smiled and extend his hands, "Hand me the location."

Clenching his teeth and feeling incomparably painful, Wang Tong took out a red scroll and handed it over to Mu Chen. After he received it, he opened it up to find a more complex map. On the northeastern portion there was a region that was marked out with a blood red colour. On the side of that region were the words 'Extremely Dangerous Grade' written in a scarlet colour, sparkling with a chilling glint.

It was obviously impossible for the trio to create a counterfeit of such a

thing. Furthermore, there should not be any mistake with the information that was circulated by the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Therefore, Mu Chen did not suspect anything and stored it in his Mustard Seed Bracelet.

"Thank you." grinned Mu Chen as he waved his hands, throwing the crescent moon blade, which pierced the ground before the trio once again. After rearranging himself, he proceeded to turn around and leave.

"Wait!" Seeing that Mu Chen was about to leave, Wang Tong hurriedly shouted out.

Faintly tilting his head, Mu Chen looked at him and asked, "What? What else do you want?"

Seeing the look coming from Mu Chen, Wang Tong promptly shook his head and replied with a bitter laugh, "Just thinking about discussing something with you. Since we're planning to head to the gathering point, why don't we collaborate? Since this information isn't exclusive, there will definitely be other strong groups eyeing it. I feel that, if we collaborate, the possibility to get our hands on it would greatly increase."

"You should trust us more; after all, we are still students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. It's alright to play some some tricks; however, all of us know about what level we should not go to."

"If everyone works together, and if we were to get it in our hands, we can discuss how to split it then, what do you say?"

Mu Chen looked at the Wang Tong, who was earnestly staring at himself. Behind the latter, Wang Lei and Wang Zhong twitched their mouths, but did not say anything, as it was obvious that Wang Tong was in charge.

After faintly muttering to himself for quite a while, he nodded his head. The Wang brothers' strengths were not bad. If they hadn't tried to pull some strings in the dark, they would, indeed, be some pretty good helpers.

"If you guys want to come along, I won't reject it. However, I will be the one in charge of things from now on. If you guys aren't willing, you can

leave by yourselves. On a side note, do not do anything that will cross me. If not, this won't end with something as simple as me squeezing an information report out of you guys."

Mu Chen shot a deep look at Wang Tong before signalling Luo Li, An Ran and the girls with his hand. Turning around, he proceeded to leave.

Looking at each other, the trio gave a bitter laugh before hurriedly following him from behind.

Chapter 301: Dark Society

In the next day, due to the addition of the Wang brothers mixed into their small group, their collection had increased by a minute portion. Although they could be considered as collaborating, it was natural that the Wang brothered did not have the notion of immediately treating Mu Chen as their boss. It was only a collaboration due to mutual benefit.

Mu Chen was extremely clear about this, and that was why he did not have the extravagant thought about making the trio listen to and obey his orders. As long as they could contribute during their times of need, this collaboration could continue to persist.

Similarly, the trio was also very clear about this collaboration. Therefore, they had provided some information of gathering points along the way, while providing a helping hand in encircling and destroying them, and gained some Spiritual Lights in the process. Overall, it could be considered that everyone got what they wanted to everyone's delight and satisfaction.

Naturally, it was obvious that the trio did not report all of the information that they possessed. Occasionally, they would leave to group and head out on their own for periods of time. When they returned, they would be in a sorrowful state, but excitement would always be present in their eyes. Obviously, they had left to devour some points by themselves.

With regards to their actions, Mu Chen could only twitch his mouth, as there was nothing he could say. Their collaboration was only for the gathering point that was graded as Extremely Dangerous. Before that happened, as long as they did not hinder him, nothing could be said about their independent actions.

After all, he could not force the trio to be magnanimous and provide all the information they had obtained. If that was the case, the trio might even consider leaving the Spiritual Light World than fulfilling his wish.

Under this form of collaboration where everyone did not interfere with each other and got what they wished for, two somewhat peaceful and harmonious days passed by. The trio gradually put their grudge about

being defeated by Mu Chen down. When they were together, it was even possible to have conversations going, although their relationship wasn't that intimate. However, this was naturally much better than before.

Two days had passed.

Mu Chen and the rest continued on the path towards the extremely dangerous region marked on the map. After two days, the Spiritual Light World became all the more lively. Along the way, Mu Chen and the rest would frequently meet with various large crowds of students who had formed groups to search for gathering points.

At this moment, the hunt could be said to have truly entered its exciting phase.

As everyone gradually travelled to the depths of the Spiritual Light World, various kinds of conflicts were starting to erupt. Various dark horses that had hibernated for a very long time had also started to display their astonishing strength in succession. Within this Spiritual Light World, they had suddenly magnified their previously obscure reputation to everyone.

Within the Spiritual Light World, the standard strength of the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had rapidly risen higher. Before entering, one with the strength of a Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase was able to enter the top 20 in the Heavenly Rankings. However, even if one had the strength of Heavenly Transformation Stage, it was hard to say if one might even be able to enter the top 20 at this very moment.

Even Mu Chen felt some what speechless at this development. This hunt was undoubtedly the most lively activity of the year within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Just solely on the number of dark horses that surfaced, it was more than enough to churn up huge waves within the academy.

Furthermore, it was obvious that this was just the beginning. As time continued to pass by, there would be more and more hibernating dark horses revealing themselves. As for those previously influential figures,

there would be quite a few amongst them who would feel uneasy due to the surge created by those dark horses. This would depend on whether their arrogance and hot temperedness would still be present after becoming influential figures.

At a gathering point that was not considered excessively large. Mu Chen stood on the peak of a mountain. In the valley below, there was a large amount of Spiritual Lights rippling and fluctuating. However, there wasn't much vigorous spiritual fluctuations radiating from them. This place was weaker than the gathering point they had first come across.

"Those three bastards."

Helplessly twitching his mouth, Mu Chen cursed out.

This gathering point was provided by the trio. However, it was indeed hard for this gathering point grade to enter Mu Chen's eye. Therefore, he was simply too lazy to take action, and had allowed An Ran and the girls to hunt them.

Standing behind Mu Chen, Luo Li gave a faint smile and consoled him. "Although there's little meat here, all in all, it's still considered as some Spiritual Lights. At least it provides a better result than us recklessly searching."

"How much information did the trio obtain before entering the Spiritual Light World? They didn't even give me some tidbits for our collaboration, and instead provided these small gathering points to con me." replied Mu Chen as he clenched his teeth. Those three bastards would head out every time to eat their fill by themselves. Upon coming back, they would still incessantly yell and shout, as if he was forcing them to hand over their Spiritual Lights.

Although Mu Chen knew that the trio did not have any obligation to hand over all their information to him, he would feel slightly unhappy and unfair every time he saw those three fellows glowing with radiance and satisfaction when they returned.

However, regardless of whether it was fair or not, Mu Chen did not hate the trio in his heart. Although they had some grudges between them,

following the interaction with them over these past two days, it had completely dissipated. After all, if they had not provided any information over the past two days, Mu Chen and the rest would not be able to obtain these gains.

Whoosh!

Whizzing sounds rang across the valley, before a few figures shot across. An Ran and the girls descended on the mountain peak with happiness brimming on their beautiful faces. Mu Chen had a high criteria and did not hold any interest in this gathering point grade. However, for them, it was already very satisfying.

The Wang brothers had closely followed behind them. While following behind them, the trio had appeared extremely polite. Facing their solicitous behaviour, the girls replied with faint smiles. Although their relationship had gotten slightly better over the past two days, it was clear that they were still closer to Mu Chen.

“A total of 600 Spiritual Lights.” reported An Ran after sending a smile towards Mu Chen.

“You all should store them first.” replied Mu Chen while nodding his head. Spiritual Pawn grade Spiritual Lights didn’t enter his eyes anymore. Furthermore, An Ran and the girls had spent quite the effort to collect all of them. Being a gentleman, he did not have the nerve to use such a shortcut to gain benefits.

“Brother Mu sure is magnanimous.” said Wang Tong instantly upon seeing Mu Chen’s reply.

Mu Chen shot a glance at him and said, “I’ll trouble you to find us a gathering point that gives more Spiritual Lights. Then, you’ll be more magnanimous than me.”

Upon hearing that, Wang Tong gave a sheepish laugh while feeling slightly embarrassed. In the past two days, they had been hoarding slightly too much food.

“Is there any fresh news?” Not caring much about it, Mu Chen turned

around and asked him.

Wang Tong promptly nodded his head and smiled while replying, “We’ve previously met with a group and heard a few stories. They had said that there are many dark horses that are starting to erupt. A few of the influential figures in top ten of the Heavenly Rankings had started to fall from their ranks.”

“Oh?”

Mu Chen faintly narrowed his eyes. The influential figures in the top ten had been overtaken by some dark horses in such a short frame of time? Who were the dark horses? Are they that dark?

“Yesterday, the 9th place, Jiang Tai, was challenged by someone. After an intense battle, this influential figure of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had suffered a complete defeat.” replied Wang Tong with some graveness in his gaze.

Mu Chen faintly nodded his head. Looks like these few dark horses have finally started to reveal their hidden strength.

“In addition, half a day ago, the 7th place, Gu Yuan, was challenged by someone. After an intense ten bouts, he suffered a crushing defeat.” added Wang Tong with a more serious tone.

“Ten bouts…” muttered Mu Chen as his mouth twitched. He was faintly moved. These few dark horses were too formidable. He was unsure if a person at the extreme front like Su Xuan would meet the challenges sent by the dark horses. However Mu Chen wasn’t especially worried about her. While entering the Spiritual Light World, he had sense that Su Xuan’s strength had a dramatic increase. Furthermore she doesn’t incite a strong combative response, thinking about this, there should not be that many people specifically finding trouble with her.

As for Su Xuan, Mu Chen still had a favorable impression about her, thus he had naturally not wished for her to meet any trouble.

“The person that had challenged Jiang Tai is called Mu Fengyang. He’s also a senior of the Northern Heavens Spirit Academy, but isn’t consider

famous. During the year when he had entered the academy, he was once beaten and humiliated by a student, and was beaten soundly after he tried to resist. From then on, there was no other news about him. After such a long time, he had spent all of his time on bitter training. It can be considered that he had finally erupted today." continued Wang Tong.

"The person that challenged Gu Yuan is called Zhao Qingshan. In actual fact, he can't be considered as an obscure and unknown person. He had always been holding onto the 51st place in the Heavenly Rankings. He had never stepped across that boundary; however, it is obvious that his strength is frightening. One would wonder exactly what step he had finally reached in this hunt."

With a tremor in his voice, Wang Tong said, "In addition, they are all members of the 'Dark Society'."

"Dark Society?" asked Mu Chen while gawking. Wrinkling his brows, it was obvious that he had never heard of this kind of influence within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

"Their full name is the Society of the Dark Horses. If we're going to truly talk about them, they might be the longest surviving student influences that exists within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. It is because they had always existed, and had never disappeared before."

Wang Tong faintly curled his mouth and continued, "There will always be freshmen that would enter the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. At the same time, there would be quite a few existing talents. Due to various reasons, they would enter the Dark Society. As this cycle continues, the Dark Society would never disappear. Every year, during the hunt, an absolutely large majority of the dark horses that appear would be from the 'Dark Society'."

Mu Chen was slightly shock. He never thought that the so-called "Dark Society" would actually be able to possess such tyrannical hidden strength. If one wanted to truly judge it, perhaps only Shen Cangshen's "Judgment Brotherhood" or Li Xuantong's "Xuan Clan" would be able to compare with it.

“You three should also be considered as dark horses. Is it possible that you three are members of the “Dark Society”?” asked Mu Chen as he looked towards the trio.

Hearing his question, Wang Tong shook his head and replied, “They had once extended their invitation to us brothers; however, we rejected them. Although we had, indeed, suffered a defeat by Li Xuan Tong’s hands, we did not have any grudges against him. We only wanted to put our best effort into training. Of course, being able to defeat him would, naturally, be the best. However, if we can’t accomplish that, there’s no need to warp and twist ourselves.”

Hearing his reply, Mu Chen felt slightly shocked and had a feeling of a whole new level of respect for them. He never imagined that the trio would have such a level of comprehension. However, what he said was also correct. That Dark Society seemed to always gather students that were humiliated and had talent to join their ranks. Although this might be a motivational factor to training, it would, indeed, be easy to warp and twist someone.

“The goal of the challenges sent out by the Dark Society are to defeat all the influential figures in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Therefore, you have to be slightly careful. Although you’re a freshman, your fame and reputation in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy has been increasing extremely rapidly, thus you’ve no choice but to guard against them.” continued Wang Tong.

Hearing that, Mu Chen gave a faint smile. He did not wish to incite trouble. However, if those so-called ‘dark horses’ assumed that they could establish themselves by stepping on his head, Mu Chen did not mind letting them know that there was one that was darker than them!

Chapter 302: Campgrounds

Mu Chen stood on the mountain peak and looked at the valley below, where the Spiritual Lights had thinned out. After being harvested by An Ran and the girls, there wasn't any need to continue staying at that place. Waving his hands, he said towards the trio, "Let's go. How far are we from the gathering point on the map?"

"According to our speed, we'll reach it by tomorrow."

Thinking awhile, Wang Tong continued speaking, "However, as I've said earlier, it's not only us who knows about this. Everyone who got their hands on such information would try their best to keep this a secret. So, we would definitely not be only ones that are eyeing that newly born Spirit King."

Mu Chen faintly nodded his head in approval. A big cake like this would definitely be targeted by many people; however, he did not wish for them to have such ambitions.

"According to our route, we should be able to reach a hunting campgrounds by the afternoon. There should be quite a few students stopping at that place, and there would be an abundant flow of information. We could try asking around for some information about exactly what formidable groups are present in that area. If their routes are similar to ours, we should be able to guess who our next opponents will be." The trio's familiarity with the Spiritual Light World was obviously much higher than Mu Chen's. These few arrangements were extremely appropriate.

Therefore, Mu Chen did not oppose them and nodded his head. If they were able to get their hands on all of this information, they would, indeed, be quite helpful to them.

"Let's go."

Mu Chen did not continue procrastinating. Taking the initiative, he shot forward. Transforming into a ray of light, he swept towards the northwest direction. At his back, Luo Li, Wang Tong and the rest proceeded to closely

follow him.

During the following journey, the group did not stop again, as all of them travelled at full speed. Once it was sunset, they finally saw a few gigantic camping groups on the vast, flat plains.

The area of the campgrounds wasn't small; however, they looked somewhat simple from afar, and the atmosphere within was rather fiery and lively. From a distance, there would constantly be whizzing noises ringing out, as figure after figure would sweep across before finally landing within the campgrounds.

This place could already be considered as the start of the Northern Spirit World depths. After two days into the hunt, there were more and more students entering here. Therefore, these hunting campgrounds had no lack of people and a lively atmosphere.

"There are a few hunting campgrounds within the depths of the Northern Spirit World. These places are, after all, more safe than the other places, as one wouldn't be met with wandering Spirit Pawns. When resting, one could completely feel relieved." said Wang Tong while sending a smile towards Mu Chen as they neared the gigantic campgrounds.

"In addition to allowing one to rest and organize, the hunting campgrounds still have other purposes. For example, if some of the groups did not have sufficient strength, or they wanted to recruit new members to increase their group, they could find them within the hunting campgrounds. Naturally, this is on the pretense that there is mutual agreement."

"Other than that, there are some deals and trades that could be completed here. For example, using Spiritual Value Points to change for Spiritual Lights."

"Using Spiritual Value Points to change for Spiritual Lights? Is that possible?" asked Mu Chen, somewhat astonished, after gawking.

"Ha ha, Spiritual Value Points are very important to us. This kind of exchange can be considered mutually beneficial. That's why the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy would not prohibit this." replied Wang Tong

with a smile.

Mu Chen nodded his head; however, he did not have much interest in these kinds of trades. He had an abundance of Spiritual Lights in his hands and did not need to trade with people. At the same time, there was no need for him to sell of the Spiritual Lights he had. The more Spiritual Lights he had, the greater the results of the Spiritual Light Empowerment. Mu Chen was still counting on the benefits of the Spiritual Light Empowerment to help him break into the Heavenly Completion Stage. Thus, naturally, he would not sell any of the Spiritual Lights in his possession.

“Leave the matter of collecting information to us brothers. Brother Mu and the rest can just wait for our good news.” Looking at the gigantic campgrounds filled with exuberant vitality, Wang Tong took charge and said to the rest.

“Thanks for the trouble.” said Mu Chen with a smile. With the trio in the group, it had saved him quite a bit of trouble.

“Ha ha, this is nothing. Perhaps we might have to rely on brother Mu in the future.” replied Wang Tong with a mischievous smile. The tone of his speech did not have the arrogance that he had during the last confrontation. Obviously, after crossing hands with Mu Chen, he had suppressed his arrogance and haughtiness.

Hearing his reply, Mu Chen smiled and shook his head. Although the three brothers were somewhat arrogant, and loved to sneakily hoard food, their characters were considered not bad. In the short span of two days, Mu Chen’s thoughts about them had been changed by quite a bit.

The group moved closer to the gigantic campgrounds, before descending down. As they entered the grounds, sounds of clamoring and racketing that soared throughout the skies came to meet them, causing them to feel as if their ears were buzzing and ringing.

Mu Chen and the rest looked towards the bustling and lively crowd within the campgrounds and exclaimed in astonishment. Perhaps, there was already close to ten thousand students that had gathered on these

campgrounds.

Entering the grounds as a group, they swept their surroundings with faint curiosity, before proceeding towards its depths. Along the way, they could see quite a few erected crystal signboards. There were even people who were putting energy into shouting out advertisements.

“We have currently 12 people in our squad and are looking for 8 members! Strength must be Heavenly Transformation Late Stage and above!”

“I’m ranked 98th on the Heavenly Ranking and I’m looking for a strong group to hunt the Spiritual Spawns!”

“Buying Spiritual Lights for 50 Spiritual Value Points per strand! Anyone interested should quickly contact me!”

As they walked along, Mu Chen looked at the myriad of advertisements all around him. Unable to bear it any longer, he started to smile. Only in a place like this would he be able to see such a marvelous scene.

It was a walk in the park for the Wang brothers. They would start a discussion with people from time to time, while secretly handing them some Spiritual Lights, and gathered various kinds of information.

The trio handled the matter nimbly, saving Mu Chen quite a bit of effort. Being free as a result, Mu Chen started to stroll leisurely across the campgrounds, feeling carefree and relaxed.

Luo Li followed beside him. Wearing a black dress, the soft clothing accentuated her slender and exquisitely beautiful body, emphasising her alluring curves. Her long hair, which was akin to silver, was hanging down from her head, look as bright and resplendent as the Milky Way. She had, undoubtedly, become a sight to see for all the eyes within the campgrounds, as quite a few people had astonishment within their eyes after seeing her. However, they had quickly recognised her; after all, Luo Li’s ranking within the Heavenly Ranking was higher than Mu Chen’s. Ranked fifteen, she could be considered as being rather ahead of the rest.

After recognising Luo Li, they had, naturally, recognised Mu Chen. There

wasn't any student within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy that did not know about this pair of absolutely astonishing young lovers. Other than Mu Chen, there might not be a second male student who was able to safely and quietly walk beside Luo Li.

Sensing the fiery and blazing gazes coming from the surroundings, a grin appeared on Mu Chen's face. Extending his hands, he grabbed onto Luo Li's small and jade-like hand. He wanted to make all of them jealous, they should go and continue being bachelors.

Luo Li could feel the thoughts of Mu Chen. Unable to help it, she unhappily shot a look at Mu Chen. However, contrary to her thoughts, her coquettish and absolutely beautiful appearance made quite a few people's gazes turn blazing hot.

Mu Chen smiled mischievously, before drawing Luo Li in and quickly walked for quite a while. Raising his head to look ahead, there were quite a few people forming a crowd in front of them. A platform stood there, where a youth was raising an object high up in the air, while shouting towards the crowd.

"Everyone, the thing in my hands isn't any ordinary item. It's said that it's known as the 'Forging God Stone'. This stone can be called a miracle stone, as it possesses a miraculous power, which is that it could forge and temper a Spiritual Artifact. Regardless of what kind of Spiritual Artifact yours is, as long as you use it to temper by absorbing the stone's godly power, your Spiritual Artifact will definitely rise to the next level!"

The item lifted high by the youth was a pitch-black stone. On the surface, it looked bumpy and full of holes and was totally unassuming. Furthermore, it did not have any appearance of being mysterious and strange. Although there was quite a number of people crowding around him, a majority of them were staring at him with look as if he was stupid. He actually dared to use a broken stone that he had picked up from god-knows-where and treated it as a treasure. Did he think that everyone here was stupid?

"If I used a High Grade Spiritual Artifact and used the item in your hand

to temper it, would it turn into an Absolute Grade Spiritual Artifact?" asked someone with a mocking tone, resulting in some people breaking out into laughter. By itself, a High Grade Spiritual Artifact was worth a million Spiritual Value Points within the Spiritual Value Hall. If it was a Peerless Rank Spiritual Artifact, its value would reach a terrifying amount of tens of millions. If the item in that fellow's hand was that miraculous, why would he be willing to sell it away?

On the stone platform, the youth gave a guilty smile and replied, "Of course there is a failure rate. If it fails, there's a possibility that the Spiritual Artifact will be slightly damaged."

"%$&@!"

Countless people in the crowd cursed a single word. A failure rate and slightly damaged? It's obvious that this fellow's words couldn't be trusted.

Even Mu Chen could not bear it and gave a laugh. With a single look he could tell that the so-called "Divine Forging Stone" did not have a trace of fluctuations emitting from it. More or less, this fellow was trying to trick people.

Shaking his head, he planned to draw Luo Li to leave. However, after a tug, he did not receive an appropriate response from her. Feeling slightly surprised, he turned his head and looked at her. What he saw was Luo Li's glass-like eyes staring closely at the black stone within the youth's hand.

"What's the matter?" asked Mu Chen in a low voice. He felt slightly surprised, as this was the first time he had seen Luo Li react like that to an item. "I need that stone. It can help me resolved a layer of the seal on the Luo Shen Sword." Moving closer to Mu Chen, Luo Li replied to him in a voice that only the two of them could hear.

"Luo Shen Sword?" muttered Mu Chen with slight shock. He proceeded to turn his gaze towards the black-coloured longsword that was always held by Luo Li, no matter where she went. Ever since the first time he had seen Luo Li, he had always saw her with that sword. Although there were a few times that Luo Li had truly drawn that mysterious sword, Mu Chen had never dared to doubt its might. This was due to the fact that there

were some situations where even he would feel his life being threatened by the sensation he got from that mysterious sword.

"Yup, this is the most valuable Divine Artifact of our Luo Shen Clan." replied Luo Li softly. "Grandfather had given it to me; however, due to my strength, I'm unable to control it. Therefore, grandfather had set up three seals. In the past few years I've still been unable to open a single seal. If I could obtain that rock, perhaps I'll be able to achieve that goal."

"A Divine Artifact?!" muttered Mu Chen in total shock. These simple two words represented power that could shatter the heavens and crush the earth. Mu Chen believed that even a Sovereign level expert would turn completely greedy upon hearing those two words. Who would have thought that the longsword that was carried by Luo Li was actually a genuine Divine Artifact?

Giving a faint smile, Luo Li extended her hand and passed the black longsword covered in mysterious runes over to Mu Chen. This divine object that would cause a Sovereign level expert to turn completely greedy was passed over to Mu Chen by her without any vigilance. Obviously, Mu Chen's place within her heart was higher than this so-called 'Divine Artifact'.

With slight curiosity, Mu Chen received it. In the instant the longsword touched his hand, he felt a stabbing pain coming from his palm. Although the sword had yet to be drawn, the sword qi that radiated out from it was capable of making Mu Chen instantly feel as if his entire arm had turned cold and numb. Furthermore, he could faintly feel the meridians within his body starting to ache.

This sword was too overbearing.

Mu Chen did not hold on to it for too long and quickly returned it to Luo Li. In the next moment, he looked towards the stone platform with his eyes slightly narrowed. Since this stone had such an important use for Luo Li, no matter what, he had to get it into his hands!

Chapter 303: Divine Forging Stone

On the stone platform, the youth was still hurling saliva around as he presented the “Divine Forging Stone” within his hand. However, this item was comparatively too poor when compared to everything else that he had auctioned. Therefore, there were a lot of people who held suspicions in their hearts, and there was not a single person that showed much interest in it.

“What exactly is this item going for?”

While the youth was feeling somewhat crestfallen, someone finally casually asked. This caused a tremor within his mind as he replied, “It’s priced at 5,000 strands of Spiritual Pawn Spiritual Lights or 20 strands of Spirit Knight Spiritual Lights.”

Instantly, the surroundings turned quieter as the majority of the people present spat out and choked. Looking at the youth as if he was stupid, they thought, ‘Had this fellow gone crazy after thinking about the Spiritual Lights?’

Seeing the majority of the people looking at him with gazes of contempt, the youth’s face instantly turned slightly red. Feeling indignant, he said, “If no one’s buying it, then let’s forget about it.”

It’s obvious that he didn’t have the material for being a salesperson, as he wasn’t able to garner any interest for the objects he was auctioning out. Furiously snorting, he started to turn around and walk away. He thought, ‘These people truly didn’t have an eye for treasure. There will come a time where they will feel regret.’

“Wait.”

Just as he was able to turn and leave, a voice finally rang out. Pausing his steps, he turned around with some suspicion, only to see a handsome and outstanding youth smiling towards him from under the stone platform. Standing behind the youth was a beautiful girl that would make people feel absolutely astonished.

"I'll buy that stone," said Mu Chen while smiling towards the youth.

His total harvest for the past two days was 25 strands of Spirit Knight Spiritual Lights. This had Luo Li's portion already added to it. However, since Luo Li needed that unknown stone, he would, naturally, not be stingy about it.

Whoosh!

The moment Mu Chen said those words, the various sounds of an uproar rang across the entire area. Gaze after gaze of astonishments converged on him. Spending 20 strands of Spirit Knight Spiritual Lights to buy some unknown stone. What was this fellow thinking?

"You want to buy it?" asked the youth after quite some time, while looking doubtfully at Mu Chen. 20 strands of Spirit Knight Spiritual Lights was absolutely not something that anyone could easily take out.

"Are you still selling it?" Sensing the gazes coming from the surroundings, Mu Chen faintly wrinkled his forehead and asked.

"I'm selling!" replied the youth hurriedly with a conditioned reflex. It was already so hard just to find an interested buyer. If he was to let Mu Chen go, it might be possible that he truly wouldn't think about ever selling it again.

Just as the youth shouted, he immediately tossed the black stone towards Mu Chen. From the looks of it, it seemed that he was afraid that Mu Chen might feel regret.

Giving a smile, Mu Chen extended his hands to catch it.

Whoosh!

Just as Mu Chen was able to catch the black stone, a gale suddenly rushed and erupted out, shooting directly towards Mu Chen's palm.

Feeling the incoming gale, a chilling glint flashed past Mu Chen's eyes. With a back-handed slap, pitch black Spiritual Energy burning with black flames erupted out, slapping towards the incoming gale.

Ding!

A metallic sound rang out as a dagger was sent flying by his slap. Finally, with a buzz, it smashed into a gigantic boulder, which was crushed and thoroughly shattered. At the same time, it was smashed into dust by the slap.

Due to this sudden change of events, everyone present was in shock. Hurriedly, they turned their sights towards the origin of the dagger, only to see a group of people rushing up from there. It was a group of youths wearing black robes, while the lead youth was playing with a dagger in his palm. Sparkling with a cold glint, the dagger nimbly spun around within his hand.

"What does the Dark Society's Xu Bin want?" Astonished voices rang out as people recognised the youth with a single look. It seemed that this youth had quite a reputation in this area.

"Ha ha, good skill." Clapping his hands, the youth dressed in black by the name of Xu Bin grinned as he stared at Mu Chen.

Chilling intent appeared in Mu Chen's eyes as he stared at the fellow, while an unhappy expression surfaced on his face. Facing this kind of person, who had attacked him for some unfathomable reason, Mu Chen did not have any good impression of him.

"This brother, we've taken fancy of this stone. Please make things easy and give it to us."

That Xu Qin did not care about Mu Chen's darkened face. With a faint smile, he said, "Naturally, since you all have bidded first, we'll give you suitable compensation. Is that alright?"

Although he had said 'compensation,' there wasn't a slightest amount of pity for Mu Chen in his gaze, as if what he had done was to give in to the poor.

"Alright, compensate me a thousand Spirit Knight grade Spiritual Lights." replied Mu Chen indifferently.

Hearing his reply, everyone in the surroundings instantly grinned. A thousand Spirit Knight Spiritual Lights. Even if the Spirit Knight Spiritual

Lights possessed by everyone within this camping grounds were to be added together, would it even be that many as that?

Xu Qin's face twitched before replying, "Ha ha, please stop joking, little brother. I'm Xu Qin, a member of the Dark Society. Please make things easy, brother. We've been paying attention to this item for quite a long time already."

Mu Chen did not continue to care about him. Looking towards the auctioning youth, he extended his hand, signalling that he wanted to receive the black stone again.

"Ha ha, since this brother isn't willing to give it to us, the only thing we can do is to compete in the normal way. The auctioned price is 20 Spirit Knight Spiritual Lights, right? I'll offer 22 strands." upon seeing the current situation, Xu Qin started to smile again and spoke out.

Hearing that, the mind of the youth auctioning the black stone shook. Feeling the difficulty, due to being pressed between two sides, why not give it to the person that bids the highest? This way, he wouldn't be considered as offending either one of them.

"This brother..." looking slightly guilty, he spoke while looking at Mu Chen.

Mu Chen faintly frowned. He never imagined that this kind of change would occur when he wanted to buy the stone. These few fellows truly made people feel loathsome.

"25 strands." said Mu Chen indifferent.

The moment his words appeared, it attracted quite a few whispers from the surroundings. After all, it wasn't easy to obtain Spiritual Lights at a Spirit Knight's level. 25 strands, that means that one had to kill 25 Spirit Knight at the Heavenly Transformation Stage. That wasn't an easy task to accomplish.

With Mu Chen being able to bring out 25 Spirit Knight's Spiritual Lights in one setting, it was obvious that he was not someone that was easy to deal with.

“30 strands.” A trace of darkness finally flashed past Xu Qin’s eyes as he spoke his bid. 30 Spirit Knight’s Spiritual Lights. This could be considered over half of what they had obtained over the past two days.

“Forget about it, I don’t want it.” said Luo Li while gently tugging at Mu Chen’s sleeve. She knew about their bottom line. 25 Spirit Knight’s Spiritual Lights was already their limit.

A sliver of fury flashed past Mu Chen’s eyes. Within his heart, he did not have the slight traces of a favorable impression for the Dark Society.

“Xu Qin, after so long, you still have the temper that makes people loathe you.” While a dangerous glint flashed past Mu Chen’s eyes, a mocking voice rang from behind him. He turned around, only to see Wang Tong, An Ran and the rest appearing, unknowingly behind him. As for the one who said those words, it was Wang Tong.

“Wang Tong?”

Looking at the Wang brothers, Xu Qin started to frown. It was obvious that he knew them. Proceeding to twitch his mouth, he replied, “What? You wish to insert your foot into the bid?”

“However, don’t blame me for not reminding you. It is not I who has his eyes on this ‘Divine Forging Stone’. It’s big brother Mu Fengyang. If you feel that you have the adequate guts, you can give it a try.” Sending a meaningful glance at Mu Chen and Wang Tong, Xu Qin continued to speak with a mocking tone.

“Mu Fengyang? That dark horse that defeated the ninth-placed Jiang Tai?” hearing the name, the faces of the trio slightly changed.

“Hehe, although we don’t have any interest in sticking our necks into this, we have a debt to Mu Chen from some time ago.” replied the trio. They seemed to have some previous grievances with this Xu Qin. However they also dreaded that Mu Fengyang and did not dare to overly provoke him. With a move of his eyes and a clench of his hand, a crystal ball that seemed to be ignited with a blazing fire appeared in Wang Tong’s hand. An astonishing Spiritual Energy fluctuation started to radiate from within it, looking rather substantial.

The interior of this crystal ball was obviously filled with Spiritual Lights. Furthermore, it was all at the Spirit Knight's level!

"There's a total of 30 Spirit Knight Spiritual Lights within it. I'll lend it to you, for now. Remember that this is a loan and you'll to return them to us!" said Wang Tong in a low voice, feeling somewhat painful. This was the complete harvest of the brothers.

Being together with Mu Chen for the past two days, they had, naturally, known that due to them hoarding all of the food, Mu Chen and the girls harvest wasn't especially large. If they had wanted to participate in the bidding, it was obvious that they would not be able to compete with the other party.

"Thanks, it can be consider that I owe you guys a favor."

Mu Chen gawked slightly before smiling. In his heart, his favorable impression towards the trio had grown greater to some level. Patting the shoulder of Wang Tong, he said those words.

"That Mu Fengyang might be be here, as well. Be careful." Sweeping every direction with his gaze, Wang Tong replied with dread brimming in his eyes.

Mu Chen faintly nodded his head. He already did not have a single shred of favorable impression towards this Dark Society. Today, he wanted to see exactly who would dare to prevent them from getting his hands on this "Divine Forging Stone".

"35 strands." Tossing and catching the blazing crystal ball in his hand, Mu Chen said towards Xu Qin with a single trace of warmth in his gaze.

"You!"

Xu Qin finally turned furious. He never thought that after saying Mu Fengyang's name, Mu Chen and his group would actually dare to continue to interfere with his bid. 35 strands of Spiritual Lights. This had, similarly, exceeded their limit.

Although the "Divine Forging Stone" was indeed somewhat miraculous, it did not have that high of a value.

See that Xu Qin was no longer contesting, with a flick of his fingers Mu Chen sent 35 Spirit Knight's Spiritual Lights towards the auctioning youth. The latter hurriedly received it. Carefully shooting a glance at both parties, he threw the black stone over to Mu Chen.

Both parties weren't people he could provoke. Taking the Spiritual Lights, he quickly ran away in fear of being engulfed in their fury.

Receiving the black "Divine Forging Stone", he turned around and handed it to Luo Li. The girl gave a shallow smile. That touchingly beautiful appearance made quite a few people stare fixedly at her.

"Mu Chen, are you truly going to make things difficult for us?" Looking at the object landing in Luo Li's hands, Xu Qin instantaneously threatened Mu Chen with fury.

"I dared to smash the headquarters of the Demon's Gate in the face of He Yao. Therefore, you better shut your mouth for this kind of threat."

Staring emotionlessly at Xu Qin, Mu Chen said in a cold and severe voice, "Do not provoke me, or there will be consequences you are unable to pay."

Xu Qin gritted and clenched his teeth. The Dark Society's gazes turned sinister, as vigorous Spiritual Energy erupted from their bodies.

Seeing this change, Wang Tong and the rest stood beside Mu Chen. Circulating their Spiritual Energies, they focused their gazes on Xu Qin and his group.

Due to both parties, the atmosphere instantly turned into a state of mutual hostility.

Seeing the change, the surrounding crowd hurriedly retreated in fear of being implicated.

However, just as the hostile atmosphere was about to ignite, a gentle clapping sound suddenly rang out. At the same time, a soft laughing voice followed and rang out.

"Ha ha, you're truly, with a doubt, the most outstanding person within

this batch of freshmen. However, I would like to know about what price would Xu Qin be unable to pay, and what price I, Mu Fengyang, can't pay?"

Chapter 304: Mu Fengyang

When the soft laughing voice rang out in the region that was in a state of mutual hostility, the taut atmosphere instantly turned stiff. Exultation instantly erupted from the eyes of Xu Bin and the rest of the group, before sending provocative looks towards the Wang brothers, whose expressions had some change.

Mu Chen slowly raised his head. His sight leaped across the crowd of people toward a place not far from here. At the high ground, there stood a stone pavilion; within which stood a slender and tall youth dressed in black. With calm eyes, he stared towards Mu Chen.

Even though he was still some distance away, everyone could feel the strong Spiritual Energy radiating from his body. Pressure formed from the condensation of his Spiritual Energy as it started to spread out.

That degree, he had already truly reached Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase!

"It's Mu Fengyang!" shouted someone with eyes brimming with dread. The Mu Fengyang of the past might not be very famous. However, after he had defeated the 9th place on the Heavenly Rankings, Jiang Tai, his reputation had been rising rapidly in a straight line. Everyone knew that this dark horse would rise towards the heavens in this hunt.

Mu Chen continued raising his head, his black pupils locked onto the high-spirited youth in black within the stone pavilion. The latter's imposing aura was, indeed, not weak. No wonder he could defeat Jiang Tai.

The expressions on the Wang brothers' faces turned grave. The three brothers had the strength of Heavenly Transformation Stage Middle Phase. However, if they were to truly take action, it would still be hard to contend against that Mu Fengyang. In addition, there was still Xu Qin and that group, who were glaring at them covetously, like watching prey.

"Ha ha. I've long heard about your name, Mu Chen. You're the most outstanding person within the freshmen. I've even heard about the grudge and grievances between Li Xuantong and He Yao. Our Dark Society really

approves of you. If you would join us, I think that they would not dare to do anything to you in the future." unexpectedly, Mu Fengyang did not immediately take action. Instead, he stared at Mu Chen and offered him an invitation.

His voice was filled with an extremely thick intent of recruiting Mu Chen.

"Your association is too big and noble. I'm afraid that I won't get accustomed to it." replied Mu Chen with a smile. He did not have much of a favorable impression of the association of dark horses. Although they had believed in concealing their strengths to bide time before shocking people in one go, Mu Chen had always felt that this was a little distorted. Due to some humiliation, they had firmly suppressed their emotions. Even though being able to bear it patiently was good, there were times that one cannot be to excessive.

From the temper that these few people had displayed, it might be difficult for them to maintain that painstaking training state of mind after shocking people in one day. These kinds of people were destined to be unable to become genuine experts.

Therefore, they were also destined to never truly exceed Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong.

"You really don't know how to appreciate kindness!" seeing that Mu Chen had unexpectedly rejected Mu Fengyang's invitation, Xu Bin and the group instantly flared up in a fury. From what they could see, although Mu Chen had some fame within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, it was clear that he still could not be considered as an influential figure. The current Mu Fengyang had his name rocking the entire hunting grounds.

Towards them, Mu Chen was too lazy to bother. Staring at Mu Fengyang, the latter was indeed not a weak fighter. If they were to start fighting, he had to put in quite a bit of work.

Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase. That Bai Xuan was also at this stage. However at that time, Mu Chen had to draw support from the demonic strength left in him by the "Big Scared Demonic Pillar" before

being able to kill Bai Xuan. However the current him, whose strength had increased by a huge factor, obviously, did not need to rely on that method.

"Haha. That seems somewhat regretful."

Mu Fengyang treated Mu Chen's rejection with a calm and ordinary expression, with only his eyes gradually turning sharp and incisive. Staring at Mu Chen, he slowly said, "However, that 'Divine Forging Stone' has quite a bit of use for me, is there any possibility of forsaking it?"

"Senior Mu is currently an influential figure amongst the top 10 in the Heavenly Rankings. How could such a low-graded item enter your eyes?" replied Mu Chen cynically.

"What if I say that I truly want it?" said Mu Fengyang slowly.

A surge of Spiritual Energy erupted from his body akin to a tidal wave. It seemed to stir the skies and the weather, bring about an astonishing feeling of oppression.

The vast and expansive campgrounds seemed to have quietened down by quite a bit at this instant. Innumerable gazes turned and faced the origin of this commotion. The might and threat brought by a Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase expert had made the atmosphere of this campgrounds much more stifling.

Contrary to everyone, Mu Chen seemed to not discover that sort of pressure. Only frowning slightly, he shot a look towards Mu Fengyang before turning around. "If you fancy it, I have to trouble to find a second one."

His voice was clear and indifferent; however, there wasn't much attempt to cover the impolite tone within those words. With regards of the people of the Dark Society, he could be considered as having completely lost all interest in them.

Seeing that Mu Chen had turned around to leave, Luo Li immediately followed. Wang Tong, An Ran and the rest looked at each other in the eyes before hurriedly following him.

Seeing the figure of Mu Chen turning around and leaving, a cold and

fierce smile suddenly appeared on the corner of Mu Fengyang's mouth. In the depths of his eyes, a cold glint followed his boundless Spiritual Energy as it suddenly erupted.

Bang!

With his Spiritual Energy surging, Mu Fengyang's figure dashed forward explosively, akin to lightning. Standing high in the sky, without any hesitation, he sent out a palm slap. Spiritual Energy surged below the palm, akin to a raging tide, before transforming into a gigantic Spiritual Energy palm print. Without any mercy, it furiously patted down at the back figures of Mu Chen and the group.

Just as Mu Fengyang launched his attack, Mu Chen's footsteps suddenly stopped. Clenching his hand tightly, he formed a fist. Black-flaming Spiritual Energy started burning around it that was akin to smoke as it rolled and rushed towards the clouds.

Roar!

A stretch of starry sky seemingly appeared behind Mu Chen. A white tiger stood on the stars, facing the heavens and gave a loud roar. As its hind legs stepped out of the stars, it carried a murderous aura that blotted the skies. Transforming into a white streak of light, it smashed head-on against the gigantic Spiritual Energy palm print in an extremely stiff and hard stance.

Bang!

Wild and violent Spiritual Energy fluctuations rippled throughout the skies, creating hurricanes as it travelled through this stretch of space. Even the clouds were ripped and torn apart.

The Spiritual Energy impact lasted for quite a while before slowly subsiding. The skies started to clear before the two fierce and violent attacks slowly disappeared.

Seeing this play out before their eyes, quite a few people felt slightly shocked in their hearts as their gazes turned somewhat strange as they stared at Mu Chen. Mu Fengyang possessed the strength of a Heavenly

Transformation Stage Late Phase. That palm he sent out was able to instantly defeat a Heavenly Transformation Stage Middle Phase expert. However, Mu Chen was able to counter this without a slightest trace of being in a disadvantage. His move had obviously become much stronger since the Pact of Three Moves he had with Li Xuantong.

Up in the air, when Mu Fengyang saw that his attack was blocked head-on by Mu Chen, his eyes faintly narrowed. The latter's Spiritual Energy fluctuation was only at the level of a Quasi-Heavenly Transformation Stage. He hadn't even completely stepped into the Heavenly Transformation Stage. However, Mu Chen was still able to receive his attack.

"You are undoubtedly the number one person among the freshmen." said Mu Fengyang with a faint smile.

"Mu Fengyang, if you want to shock the world with a single feat, go find those that are placed in the front on the Heavenly Rankings. There's no need to find a freshman like me. If, by any chance, you suffer a defeat here, it would not be easy to re-accumulate that fame and reputation, and the only thing you would do is to become my stepping stone." said Mu Chen with a frown as he looked towards Mu Fengyang.

"Dissolence!" Xu Qin and his group instantly shouted furiously. This freshman was too arrogant.

Contrary to them, Mu Fengyang only gave a gentle smile. A cold glint flowed within his eyes; however, he did not let it show. Gently smiling, he replied, "Looks like you truly have confidence in yourself."

"You better stop wanting this Divine Forging Stone. If you truly can't resist the urge, feel free to find and attack me. Regardless of what move you use, I'll just receive it." said Mu Chen with a laugh as his black pupils shot a deep look at Mu Fengyang. Without any pause, he waved his hand and Luo Li and the rest gradually disappeared into the distance.

This time, Mu Fengyang did not launch an attack. However, some darkness faintly appeared on his face. In the next moment, he descended from mid-air.

“Brother Mu, are you going to let that brat off just like that?” Xu Qin and his group had already crowded over before asking this question, somewhat unwillingly. Never had they imagined that even the personal appearance of Mu Fengyang was unable to restrain and prevent Mu Chen from leaving.

Mu Fengyang shot a glance at them and replied, “That Mu Chen isn’t easy to deal with. Although his strength is at the Quasi-Heavenly Transformation Stage. Even I would have to spent quite a bit of effort to deal with him. We can reach that region tomorrow, so there’s no need to consume our energy now.”

“That brat is too rampant. He didn’t even give any face to you, Brother Mu.” said Xu Qing hatefully. Being treated like that by a freshman, their hearts were filled with unjust. They thought about their freshmen time, when they were always cowering. Where would there be such impoliteness towards their seniors? However, this fellow was that rampant and yet he was still able to mix that well with others.

“Relax. The things that I, Mu Fengyang, had taken fancy of would not be given to people in vain.”

Mu Fengyang gave a faint smile, before looking at the direction that Mu Chen and his group had left in with a slightly cold gaze. “The direction that they are headed to is, more or less, toward that region. Therefore, we should be able to see them again. At that time, we’ll wait and meet up with Qingshan. After converging with him, would that brat still have any chance to hop and jump?”

“Brother Zhao is also coming.” said Xu Qin and the rest hurriedly with great joy.

Mu Fengyang nodded his head and replied, “ Although that Spirit King is newly born, it’s still not something that we can deal with. With him, we should have some level of assurance.”

“Ha ha, if our Dark Society is able to kill that Spirit King, we’ll become the only power that is able to hunt and kill a Spirit King in these last few years. In the future, our fame in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy

would be sufficient to press the Judgment Brotherhood, as well as the Xuan Clan!"

The faces of Xu Qin and the rest were brimming with excitement. Looking at the direction where Mu Chen and his group had left in, he said, "At that time, that brat will definitely feel regret for refusing to enter our Dark Society!"

Mu Fengyang laughed as he also looked towards the same direction with slightly narrowed eyes.

Mu Chen, I hope that you possess strength that is compatible with your arrogance. If not, I'll completely step on and destroy that arrogance of yours!

Mu Chen and his group did not stop at the campgrounds. Heading out of the campgrounds, they continued on their way, once again.

During the journey, Mu Chen threw the crystal ball, which had five less Spirit Knight's Spiritual Lights back to Wang Tong. Smiling at him, Mu Chen said, "I've borrowed your Spiritual Lights. Afterwards, when I've killed enough, I'll return them to you three."

"There's no hurry. With you, we're not scared of you reneging." replied Wang Tong with a smile. The gaze that he sent towards Mu Chen was filled with some astonishment, as well as a sliver of respect. The unfrightened and fearless attitude that Mu Chen had used to face Mu Fengyang had made them feel slight respect for him. After all, the trio rather dreaded that Mu Fengyang, and did not dare to casually offend him.

"You three have to lead us to more reliable gathering points on the way." said Mu Chen in a jokingly scolding manner.

The trio gave off an awkward laugh, before nodding their heads. Looks like they have to hoard less of the food in the future.

Mu Chen looked at Luo Li behind him once again. The girl was playing with the black stone, while her exquisite little face faintly revealed some joy.

"Is that Divine Forging Stone that formidable?" asked Mu Chen with

some doubt. He had heard of a Divine Forging Stone before. Even though it could be considered an uncommon object, it was not of that level of rarity.

"An ordinary Divine Forging Stone, naturally, does not have much use." replied Luo Li with a brilliant smile. Raising the black stone, she continued, "However this isn't an ordinary one."

"Oh?"

Mu Chen felt some amazement. Could this Divine Forging Stone be extraordinary?

Luo Li grasped the black-coloured Luo Shen Sword in her jade-like hand. Tossing the Divine Forging Stone in the air, a sword glow whistled before chopping down on the surface of the black stone without the slightest hesitation.

Chi!

After the sword glow had passed through, the incomparably hard black stone was, unexpectedly, slightly split open. Following the crack on the black stone, Mu Chen could instantly see a bit of sparkle and luster gently radiating out from within.

This Divine Forging Stone was indeed extraordinary!

Chapter 305: Arrival

The black stone started to split apart, inch by inch, as the sword glow flashed past. Under its black colour, a sparkling glow started to radiate out, becoming extremely dazzling.

This mysterious change had attracted the vision of Wang Tong, An Ran and the rest. They looked in amazement at the scene before them. Not a single one of them had any idea that there would actually be another world within this seemingly unremarkable “Divine Forging Stone”.

Luo Li extended her small hand and and gently peeled away those broken stone shards. As the stone shards fell off, a crystal, with the approximate size of a thumb, revealed itself to Mu Chen and the rest.

There wasn’t anything special looking at this sparkling crystal. It looked like a well cut diamond. However, there seemed to be fluid revolving within it, making it look extremely mysterious.

Although this crystal was extremely tiny, Mu Chen and the rest could feel the enormous energies contained within it.

“What is that?” asked Wang Tong and the rest dumbfoundedly.

“This is a Forging God Crystal.” replied Luo Li with a faint smile. “A necessary material that is required when forging Divine Weapons. They are extremely rare. It can be assumed that you can’t even buy it from the Spiritual Values Hall in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.”

The expressions of Mu Chen and the rest simultaneously changed. A necessary material for forging Divine Weapons? Divine Weapons...this was something that even Sovereigns would be greedy about. They have never seen one before, and they don’t even know if the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy has any of them.

“However, this Divine Forging Stone is too small and is far from enough for forging Divine Weapons. If not, its value would be extremely frightening.” said Luo Li in a soft voice.

Mu Chen nodded his head. A material that could aid in the forging of

Divine Weapons. With regards to many experts, it would be a fatal attraction if they ever caught wind of it.

"This time, we've picked up a bargain." said Mu Chen with a smile. If not for Luo Li, even he would have missed out on this "Forging God Crystal". Relying on his strength, it was simply impossible for him to discover the crystal hidden deep within the stone. Naturally, other than Luo Li, there should be no one else within the students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy that had the ability to detect it.

Luo Li gave a soft laugh before storing that Divine Forging Stone away. She needed to find time to undo the first seal on the Luo Shen Sword. That way, she would possess an extremely frightening trump card.

"Let's go. We've to seize the moment to find more gathering points. The current us are penniless, and we also have a debt to pay." said Mu Chen with a grin.

Feeling somewhat guilty, Luo Li looked at Mu Chen. She naturally knew that Mu Chen had took out all of his spiritual lights to buy the Divine Forging Stone. Their two full days worth of harvests was basically spent on it.

"If you show me this expression again, don't blame me for punishing you." said Mu Chen with a frown. He did not like seeing Luo Li being so calculative with him.

Luo Li responded with a sweet smile. That perfect smile caused even An Ran and the girls to feel a little dazzled.

"Wang Tong. I'll have to trouble you three about the matter of finding gathering points. We'll split them evenly." said Mu Chen while looking at him. Their information was extremely abundant. If they were able to provide some of them, their harvests would be extremely large.

"This region should have a Dangerous grade gathering point. I don't know if there will be any Spiritual Knights at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase there. However, there should be quite a few Spiritual Knights at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Middle Phase. It might be a little troublesome to eat it." muttered Wang Tong after hesitating.

“Dangerous Grade...” murmured Mu Chen has his eyes faintly narrowed. Before he could reply, a faint laugh rang out from Luo Li as she said, “Then, let’s go there.”

Mu Chen shot a slightly curious look at Luo Li, before proceeding to laugh, unable to control it. “Why? Our Goddess Luo can no longer bear it and wants to take action?”

Since entering the hunting grounds, Luo Li had always been following quietly behind Mu Chen and seemed to be rather content in doing so. So much so that the circumstances that required her to take action were extremely little. However, from what Mu Chen could see, she seemed to want to take the initiative.

“You’ve owed a debt due to me. Naturally, I cannot be lazy.” replied Luo Li with a charming smile, her clear glassy pupils were gently staring at Mu Chen.

“Okay, let’s head straight there!” exclaimed Mu Chen with a loud laugh. Ever since they had entered the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, Luo Li had rarely revealed her true power. However, he knew that if she was to truly take action, even he might not be able to defeat her.

Seeing this, Wang Tong looked at Luo Li with slight amazement. They did not understand much about Luo Li’s true strength. However, from Mu Chen’s words, it seemed that she was extremely formidable...

Some doubt flashed past their eyes; however, they didn’t say anything in the end and immediately proceeded to lead the way. For such matters, Mu Chen would not be joking about it...

This doubt of theirs finally turned completely into smoke and disappeared into thin air hours later. At that time, the gazes they sent towards Luo Li were overwhelmed with shock and respect.

It was a gigantic valley. At this time, Luo Li’s black sword slowly entered its sheath, causing the world-shaking sword qi to completely vanish. In front of her was a deep fissure that extended a thousand feet. The fissure was as glossy as a mirror, and it extended to a mountain peak, before splitting it into two.

This was all caused by a single slash from Luo Li.

There were even five Spiritual Knights at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Middle Phase that were cut apart by that slash.

They seemed to put up not a single trace of resistance before being sliced apart by that black comet-like sword aura.

That single slash was so swift and fierce that it was simply impossible to defend against it.

While Luo Li was sheathing her sword, at another direction, a white tiger was roaring towards the heavens. A black pagoda was suppressing something that caused the earth to quake and mountains to shake. The four Spiritual Knights at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Middle Phase were directly shaken and exploded.

From there stood an outstandingly handsome youth slowly descending to the ground.

“A terrifying pair of lovers…”

Wang Tong and the rest looked dumbfoundedly at the accomplishment of the two. They couldn’t help letting out a long sigh. Nine Spiritual Knights at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Middle Phase were completely suppressed by these two.

If these two were to direct their attacks towards the trio, they might be ousted to a sorrowful state and have to scuttle away.

At this time, they realised how stupid they were, as they had actually tried to snatch Luo Li away some time ago… If Luo Li had taken action then…looking at the gigantic fissure on the ground, a cold shiver instantly travelled up their spines.

“It’s a pity that we didn’t meet any Spiritual Knight at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phases.” said Luo Li with some regret as she shook her head. This gathering point, in reality, could be considered as having a pretty good lineup. However, it was a pity that the Spiritual Knights were clearly unable to defend against the attacks that were simultaneously launched by her and Mu Chen.

“Not bad. Adding all of them together, this gathering point had almost ten Spiritual Knights at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Middle Phase. This lineup could be considered as a Dangerous grade gathering point. This time, Wang Tong gave us a reasonable one.” said Mu Chen with slight satisfaction. Compared to the small gathering points that the trio had brought them to previous, where he was too lazy to even move, the current one could already be considered as a very big harvest.

The trio laughed guiltily before hurriedly saying, “Rest assured, when we reach that region tomorrow, you guys will understand why it’s called an Extremely Dangerous grade gathering point. If everything goes smoothly, our harvest will cause everyone’s eyes to turn red!”

Mu Chen turned his vision towards the northwest direction with some anticipation within his eyes. Extremely Dangerous grade gathering point... From there, would there be the existence of a Spiritual King?

A Spiritual King at the Heavenly Completion Stage.

He really wished to experience exactly how formidable it was.

A blaze seemed to have ignited within Mu Chen’s eyes, filled with fighting intent, as well as curiosity.

Next day

In the early morning, Mu Chen and the group stopped for a rest before rushing at their utmost speed towards the northwest direction. At their current speed, they would get close to the Extremely Dangerous grade gathering point they had been searching for since two days ago.

As Mu Chen and the group rushed towards the region, they were able to discover that there were some Spiritual Energy fluctuations faintly spreading out from the far distance.

They looked at each other in the eyes as they thought that it was not only them who were rushing to that region. However, they did not know exactly how many strong groups were locked onto that place.

Looks like this region would be extremely lively.

Mu Chen and the rest started to increase their speed. After approximately an hour, their speed started to slowly decrease as a crater appeared on the flat plains they were travelling on. That was a crater formed by an abyss whose bottom could not be seen. Beyond that crater, lied a radiant world.

The radiance over there seemingly overshadowed the colours of the sky and earth. That was the radiance formed from the convergence of light. Looking from afar, it looked like a sea of spiritual lights, and one simply couldn't see its end.

Mu Chen and the rest were floating in the sky as they stared dumbfoundedly at the sea of spiritual lights with an ending that could not be seen. Faintly, they could feel the countless Spiritual Pawns pacing back and forth.

That entire place seemed to be a country of Spiritual Pawns!

Mu Chen stared at the depths of the abyss. Although his line-of sight-wasn't able to reach the end of it, he could faintly detect some fluctuations that made even his heart slightly palpitate.

Looks like this region wasn't simple. No wonder it was able to be graded as an Extremely Dangerous grade gathering point.

"Such a terrifying gathering point..." Wang Tong and the rest were shocked to the point that words could not form in their mouths. However, they subsequently became feverish. If they were able to collect all of the Spiritual Lights here, how great would the effect from the Spiritual Light Empowerment be?

Perhaps they might even be able to rush into the Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase!

Mu Chen gradually recovered his clarity. His line-of-sight turned towards another direction, where there were some rushing whizzing sounds resounding from there. From a distance, he was able to make out a few figures standing in midair.

More and more people were coming to this place, and a great majority of

them were not easy to deal with. After all, people who don't have any skills would not dare to come to a place like this Extremely Dangerous grade gathering point.

Mu Chen and Luo Li shot a glance at each other. Seems like it would not be an easy matter to hunt the Spiritual King. This place truly become lively.

Chapter 306: Gather

At the furthest end of the Spiritual Light army, whose borders can't be seen, stood Mu Chen and his party in midair. They gazed into the bright and resplendent army; however, they did not directly rush into it.

The number of Spiritual Pawns had reached a terrifying amount. If they were to charge in by themselves, they might be instantly submerged within the sea of Spiritual Pawns. Under that frightening amount, even a Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase expert would end up in a sorrowful state.

Furthermore, other than the innumerable Spiritual Pawns, there were obviously quite a few Spiritual Knights hidden within them. All of the gathering points they had seen on the way combined were in fact still slightly less than the number present here.

The Extremely Dangerous grade gathering point truly deserved its reputation.

Wang Tong and the rest looked in shock at the scene before them. No wonder why there were so few people who dared to show fancy for such a grade of a gathering point in the past few years. Even without the Spiritual King, just based on this lineup was enough to make people halt in their tracks.

"When do we take action?"asked Wang Tong as he looked towards Mu Chen. He was somewhat eager to give it a try, as what's present before his eyes was a genuine treasure trove. As long as they were able to get a portion of it, their hunt this time could be considered as have a full harvest. This harvest would be enough to allow for them to obtain a Spiritual Light Empowerment of the highest level.

"Wait." replied Mu Chen with a gentle smile. "We're too weak. If we rashly burst in, we simply might not be able to even meet the Spiritual King before we consume all of the Spiritual Energy within ourselves.

Hearing that, Wang Tong and the rest nodded their heads. Indeed, they had previously underestimated this grade of a gathering point. Only after

seeing it with their own eyes did they realise that charging into a place like this without any accompaniment would only lead to their deaths.

Mu Chen raised his head and looked at his surroundings. At a distance, an innumerable amount of figures ceaselessly whizzed over, before forming a crowd floating in the sky. All of their eyes were feverishly looking at the Spiritual Light army in front of them.

Within a short half an hour, the surrounding skies were brimming with figures looking around in curiosity. There were at least a thousand of them. This scale can be considered as quite a bit.

"Shhhhuu!"

Just as Mu Chen was observing the surrounding situation, a rushing whoosh suddenly rang out from the distance. He looked over, only to see a large number of figures swifting dashing over, before finally floating in the air.

"It's Mu Fengyang and his party." After seeing those figures, the faces of Wang Tong and the rest slightly changed. That's due to the person in front of the group, which was the person that they had some conflict with yesterday, Mu Fengyang.

When Mu Chen and the group pointed out Mu Fengyang and his party, they clearly discovered that Mu Fengyang had narrowed his eyes and sent a faint smile towards Mu Chen. He seemed he wasn't surprised about their appearance here.

Standing behind Mu Fengyang, Xu Qin and the group stared at Mu Chen, and the group had faces brimming with ill intent, with their eyes filled with provocation.

"Hmph, what's there to be rampant about...?" muttered Wang Tong, feeling somewhat unhappy. Suddenly, his expression changed as he saw a green streak of light sweeping towards here from a great distance, before finally descending in front of Xu Qin and his party.

As the green light scattered, it reveal a figure wearing a green robe. Although his face was ordinary, his pair of eyes were extremely bright,

making people not dare to cross eyes with him. When he appeared, everyone felt a somewhat oppressive Spiritual Energy fluctuation radiating from him. This caused quite a few people from the surroundings to look over, before their expressions slightly changed.

Mu Chen's eyes had also faintly narrowed at this instant. He had felt danger coming from the guy dressed in green.

"That's Zhao Qingshan..." whispered Wang Tong and the rest in a low dreadful voice.

"The Zhao Qingshan that had defeated the seventh place on the Heavenly Rankings, Gu Yuan in ten moves?" asked Mu Chen as his eyes flashed. No wonder he had possessed such an imposing aura.

Seeing the appearance of Zhao Qingshan, Mu Fengyang was instantly surprised before laughing loudly and saying, "You've arrived at last."

Zhao Qingshan gave a faint smile and replied, "I've met with a little trouble en route."

As he replied, he looked over towards the Spiritual Light army in the distance. A strange expression flashed within his eyes as he said, "Is that the Extremely Dangerous grade gathering point? Indeed, its extraordinary."

After saying that, he continued to survey his surroundings. Although there were quite a few people around, a large majority of them were glanced over by him. When his vision swept to where Mu Chen and Luo Li stood, his gaze finally rested on them.

"That's Mu Chen. I've invited him to join our Dark Society yesterday; however, he rejected my invitation." said Mu Fengyang indifferently.

"Brother Zhao, this brat is too untactful. He had not even paid attention to brother Mu's personal invitation. From the looks of it, it seems that he really looks down on our Dark Society." said Xu Qin, adding fuel to the fire.

"People with ability will naturally be arrogant." said Zhao Qingshan as his eyes faintly narrowed. No one could tell if he was happy or angry.

Shortly after, he shifted his gaze towards Mu Fengyang, he enquired, “Did you cross hands with him?”

Mu Fengyang faintly nodded his head and replied, “He’s able to contend against a single move by me with his Quasi-Heavenly Transformation Stage strength. Although it’s due to him having learnt a Deity Tier Spiritual Art, he still can be considered as formidable.”

Zhao Qingshan smiled and said, “If you have the chance, you should use your full strength to test his abilities.”

Mu Fengyang nodded his head again. Just as he was about to speak, his expression suddenly changed. Looking at another direction, he pointed at a group of figures sweeping towards this region before standing in midair.

At the front of this group of people stood a male with his hands crossed behind his back. His facial expression was indifferent; however, the Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiating from his body made even Mu Fengyang and his party narrow their eyes.

“That’s Xu Huang...”

Zhao Qingshan gave a slight smile, while his eyes seemingly became even more bright, as his vision was locked onto that figure. The current him was already consider to be at the 7th Rank on the Heavenly Rankings. If he could defeat Xu Huang, his name would truly shake the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, and he would be comparable to those peak influential figures, like Li Xuantong and He Yao.

“This fellow had also come.” said Mu Chen with slight astonishment as he looked at Xu Huang. He never thought that Xu Huang would be attracted to this place. Looks like this place was getting more and more lively.

Xu Huang was a true and genuine influential figure within the Northern Spiritual Heavens Academy. His appearance naturally attracted numerous gazes. Some of the people’s gazes were slightly weird as they continuously revolved past Xu Huang, Zhao Qingshan and Mu Fengyang. The favourite thing the people of the Dark Society wanted to do was to find influential figures that ranked in the front of the Heavenly Rankings like Xu Huang

and utilize their fame to show a brilliant feat that would stun the world, allowing them to mount the heavens in a single step.

Currently, it's said that Zhao Qingshan had already defeated the 7th Rank on the Heavenly Ranking, Gu Yuan. The 5th Rank on the Heavenly Rankings, Xu Huang, would obviously be his next target.

If these two men were to fight, who would emerge victorious?

Facing the numerous stares coming from the surroundings, Xu Huang's face remained indifferent, with his gaze giving a faint sweep before retracting.

Xu Qingqing had also followed by his side. Her beautiful eyes gave the surroundings a sweep before spotting Mu Chen not far in the distance, which made her bite her lip. However, she knew that the current Mu Chen was no longer simple; therefore, she did not dare to be as rampant as before.

Not long after Xu Huang had arrived, a few of those outstanding students, whose reputation were not weak in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, appeared in succession. Although their reputation could not compare to that of Xu Huang, they were not considered weak.

As the people that congregated here grew larger and larger, the lineup of students here clearly became increasingly tyrannical.

Although this number was still unable to compete with the Spiritual Light army, they had possessed intellect, while those Spiritual Knights were devoid of it, and could only rely on instinct to launch their attacks.

"When preparing to attack later, make sure to take more care. An Ran, if we head in too deep, you girls should retreat first." said Mu Chen as he looked at the surroundings. Countless people were eager to give it a go, and from the looks of it, they were starting to prepare to invade the Spiritual Light army.

"Okay." replied the girls as they nodded their heads. Within this group, their strength was obviously the weakest. Heading in too deep was indeed very dangerous. After all, within this Extremely Dangerous grade

gathering point, the number of Heavenly Transformation Stage Spiritual Knights should not be little.

Just as Mu Chen had finished his orders, the atmosphere of this region had completely turned fiery and erupted. There were people who were unable to resist any longer as they shouted in loud voices, “Take action! Snatch those Spiritual Lights, and our Spiritual Light Empowerment this time will be perfect!”

“Charge!”

The eyes of quite a few people turned fiery at this moment, before figure after figure explosively dashed forward, shooting towards that vast and expansive Spiritual Light army in an earth-shaking manner.

They might not possess the qualifications of taking fancy in that Spiritual King; however, the Spiritual Lights present here were dozens of times more than other places. As long as they were able to obtain a portion of them, it was a sufficient reward for them.

“Let’s take action, too. Remember, our goal is that Spiritual King. Let’s kill as many as we can along the way.” Zhao Qingshan looked at the movements of the people in the region. His originally bright eyes had a bit of flames burning within them. However, his gaze was focused on the depths of the Spiritual Light army. Ordinary Spiritual Lights did not enter his eye, the Spiritual Light at a Spiritual King level being his only goal. If he could get his hands on it and experience the Spiritual Light Empowerment again, he might have the qualifications to break through to Heavenly Completion Stage. At that time, he would even be happy and not dread it if he were to face against Shen Cangsheng.

Chi!

The moment his words appeared, his figure had already shot forward. Bringing along his party, Mu Fengyang immediately followed behind him.

“Let’s go.”

Xu Qing looked indifferently at the back of Zhao Qingshan and his group, before casually saying two words before shooting off.

Earth-shattering whizzing sounds rang out through the entire sky as figure after figure shot towards the vast and expansive Spiritual Light army akin to locusts.

This scene was rather spectacular.

“We should also make a move.”

Only after seeing everyone starting to move did Mu Chen nod his head. At this kind of place, it’s best to let other people be the vanguard.

With a shift of his body, he shot forward, instantly shooting past the deep fissure.In the far distance. The bright and resplendent Spiritual Light army sparkled with a glow that blotted the skies. Mu Chen’s gaze focused on the depths of the army.

The Spiritual King should be at there.

Mu Chen’s eyes faintly flashed as he approached the Spiritual Light that blotted the skies. Looking at the never-ending Spiritual Knights, Mu Chen waved his hand. Taking the lead, he rushed into the Spiritual Light army.

Following the advancement of everyone, the Spiritual Light army that was originally devoid of life force, but brimming with boundless Spiritual Energy, quietly became restless at this moment.

Chapter 307: Spiritual King

Bang!

Within the boundless Spiritual Light akin to an ocean, a Spiritual power streak burning with black flames swept across. Any Spiritual Pawn that came in contact with it would disintegrate seemingly in an instant, before transforming into strands of Spiritual Light, which would float up.

Shhhuuu!

An Ran and the rest immediately took action, immediately storing those Spiritual Lights.

Just when they had stored those Spiritual Lights, the earth-shattering amount of Spiritual Pawns flooded from the surroundings like a tidal wave, almost wanting to completely submerge them.

The Wang brothers had also simultaneously launched their attacks at this instant. Swift and fierce light blades swept across, creating a huge fissure within the incoming Spiritual Pawn tide, which their small group passed through without delay.

“The number of Spiritual Pawns here is too terrifying!”

When Wang Tong and the rest had just passed through the fissure, and subsequently looked at the seemingly endless waves of Spiritual Pawns, their faces could not help turning serious and grave. The number of Spiritual Pawns at this gathering point might be in the millions.

It was fortunate that these Spiritual Pawns did not have any trace of intelligence. If not, as long as one of them attacked once, even a Heavenly Completion Stage person would be smashed and turned into pulp.

Mu Chen had also nodded his head. The few of them had took turns to attack and created a fissure in the Spiritual Pawn tide to reduce the consumption of Spiritual Energy. If one were to do this alone, once one had crashed their way through the outer boundary, one might have already exhausted one’s Spiritual Energy.

While he was cleaning up the Spiritual Pawns that were endlessly

flooding over, he had also raised his head to look at the distance. At those places, there were several extremely wild and violent Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiating out. Obviously, those places were also locked in intense battles.

The number of these fights was not small; however, it was fortunate that these fights had shared the pressure. If not, it would be many times harder for Mu Chen and his group to reach the depths.

"The Dark Society members are very quick!" Wang Tong suddenly shouted. Not far from them was a group of people who were seemingly using an unreachable speed to rush forward, crush every single Spiritual Pawn that came their way. The leaders of that group were Zhao Qingshan and Mu Fengyang. Their lineup could be considered the strongest, with their numbers also being the most.

On the right side, falling behind the Dark Society by a sliver, was the group brought over by Xu Huang. Further into the distance were some groups who were pretty strong that were rapidly slashing apart the Spiritual Pawn flood, pushing towards the depths.

"There's no need to be anxious. Even if you reach the depths earlier, do you truly think that the Spiritual King is that easy to deal with?" Mu Chen had still maintained his calm. Other than reaching the depths a step earlier by rushing in, there was no other use. However, was there any need to be a step earlier? He did not believe that Zhao Qingshan, Mu Fengyang and his gang would be able to deal with the Spiritual King.

"Maintain our speed. Use your Spiritual Energy sparingly, as this has just started." Mu Chen reminded the rest. Up till now, only the most ordinary of Spiritual Pawns had appeared, with even the Spiritual Knights having not appeared yet.

Wang Tong and the rest nodded their heads before focusing all of their attention to the unending stream of Spiritual Pawns that were flooding over.

As they were dashing forward with rapt attention, their speed had increased by quite a bit. After a short dozen minutes, they had gradually

passed through the outermost region of the gathering point.

However, as they passed through the outermost region, they finally started to gradually feel some pressure. Although the Spiritual Pawns here did not have any intelligence, their numbers were overly terrifying. Sweeping over with their surging Spiritual Energies, their attacks were not any weaker than the all-out attack of a Heavenly Transformation Stage expert. Wanting to resist that kind of attack wasn't as easy as one thought.

However, it was good that Mu Chen and his group made some mental preparations and took turns, allowing them to continue their resistance.

As time past, they got increasingly deeper into the gathering point.

Bang!

Mu Chen sent a fist rumbling out. Wild and violet Spiritual Energy streamed out akin to a rocket plume, directly shattering a dozen Spiritual Pawns that were dashing over into smithereens. A strand of Spiritual Light akin to a blaze shot out, before being caught by him.

However, after killing those Spiritual Pawns, Mu Chen slightly wrinkled his brows. Now, they could already be considered as having entered the middle region of the gathering point. However, what made him feel somewhat flabbergasted was that, on the way here, he had actually not seen a single Spiritual Knight, with everything being ordinary Spiritual Pawns.

Even the Ordinary grade gathering point they had visited before had Spiritual Knights in them. However, after reaching such a depth, why was there not even a trace of them?

Mu Chen raised his head and looked towards the depths that were brimming with Spiritual Light. The Spiritual Lights there were overly bright and resplendent, with even the the skies being masked by it. He was also unable to clearly look at that place; however, he could faintly sense that something wasn't right.

Mu Chen shook his head and suppressed the feeling in his heart. Since he had reached this place, no matter what, he had to personally see the

Spiritual King.

"Speed up!"

He roared in a low voice. He took the initiative he shoot forward, with Luo Li, Wang Tong and the rest immediately following behind him. They also started to utilize their Spiritual Energies, traveling forward at full speed.

However, as they continued further in, the suspicion in Mu Chen's eyes turned increasingly thick. Until now, he had not seen a single Spiritual Knight.

Those Spiritual Knights seemed to have vanished into thin air.

"Mu Chen, the situation doesn't feel right." Even Wang Tong had sensed this situation. His face was turning slightly ugly, as he said in a low voice.

"Where did all the Spiritual Knights go?"

Mu Chen raised his head and looked at the groups that were in the far distance. They had seemingly increased their speed as they rushed towards the depths. They also seemed to have discovered the situation, and, therefore, had wanted to hurry to the depths to search for exactly what had happened here.

"Let's go to the depths to take a look." Mu Chen softly muttered. With a wave of his hand, the group immediately increased their speed. Using all their strength, they smashed through the Spiritual Pawn flood that blocked their path.

Using their full strength, after approximately ten minutes, Mu Chen and his group had already passed through the seemingly endless Spiritual Pawn flood. As they did so, the pressure coming from all directions instantly disappeared.

The Spiritual Pawn flood had completely disappeared.

Mu Chen and his group stared with slight amazement at the absolutely empty depths. Hundreds of metres behind them was the Spiritual Pawn flood that they had just passed through. However, after passing through,

the Spiritual Pawns had stopped their pursuit, pacing to and fro, not daring to come any closer.

Mu Chen faintly wrinkled his brows and stopped caring about those ordinary Spiritual Pawns. He swept his gaze around, only to see the extreme vastness in the depths. However, it was deserted, without a single trace of life.

Within the deepest part of the depths were the bright and resplendent Spiritual Lights that blotted the skies. Faintly, there was an extremely strong Spiritual Energy pressure that radiated from the skies, blotting out the entire depths.

Perhaps, due to that pressure, the Spiritual Pawns did not dare to come closer.

As for the person that possessed that kind of astonishing Spiritual Energy pressure, there was obviously no other existence, other than the Spiritual King.

Mu Chen's vision turned around and looked at the vast and spacious region, as dozens of groups rushed in here. They had also scanned their surroundings with slight suspicion. Finally, their gazes congregated on the deepest part of the depths, where the spiritual power pressure was radiating from.

The Spiritual King was there!

The eyes of quite a few people started to turn fiery as they proceeded to simultaneously dash forward.

Mu Chen waved his hand and followed after them. At the same time, he had increased his cautiousness. This region was graded as Extremely Dangerous. If he was not vigilant, being empty-handed would be a small thing. He was afraid of being seriously injured and thrown directly out of the Spiritual Light World.

Dozens of groups rapidly shot towards the spacious region. After quite a while, their figures started to stop one by one, before looked at the place in front of them with some astonishment.

Within the extreme depths, the bright and resplendent Spiritual Lights endlessly radiated out. Within the place where the Spiritual Light was most eye-piercing stood an approximately 300 metre tall gigantic figure. The figure was covered entirely in gems, as if a thick layer of crystal armor had enveloped it. It quietly stood there, as if it was the emperor of this entire region, looking like an anomaly.

"That's the Spiritual King?"

Mu Chen and the group looked gravely at the gigantic figure. The terrifying Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiating from the latter made everyone present feel fear and trepidation.

That degree was absolutely not something that a Heavenly Transformation Stage could compare with!

Obviously, within this region, other than the Spiritual King, which existence was able to possess such powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuations?

"I'm finally seeing a Spiritual King. That's what they look like." Wang Tong and the rest muttered to themselves before bitterly laughing and said, "However, doesn't it seem to be too strong?"

The Spiritual Energy fluctuations that radiated from it made them feel their bodies grow slightly heavier. This made them understand the huge difference between themselves and the Spiritual King.

This was the strength of a Heavenly Completion Stage?

Amongst them, there was almost no one who could be the opponent of this Spiritual King in a duel.

The dozen groups stood at a far distance, their eyes staring feverishly at the Spiritual King towering over this region. However, no one dared to rashly take the initiative and attack it, as they could sense how frightening this Spiritual King was.

"Everyone."

The quiet atmosphere continued awhile. Zhao Qingshan turned his bright eyes towards the crowd. Cupping his fists, he said, "I think that

everyone has discovered the formidability of this Spiritual King. I propose that we join hands and kill it. If not, we might return empty-handed today."

Some people muttered to themselves and nodded their heads. Indeed, if they didn't join hands, they would definitely be unable to deal with this Spiritual King. Their lineup here was not weak. If they were to join hands, there were some odds of success for them to deal with this recently born Spiritual King.

"How do we split the Spiritual Light of the Spiritual King?" some people shouted out. There's only one strand of Spiritual Light from the Spiritual King; however, there were quite a few people present.

"It's somewhat too early to talk about that. We should discuss on how to allocate after dealing with the Spiritual King."

Zhao Qingshan gave a faint smile before turning to Xu Huang, and asked, "What do you think, brother Xu?"

Xu Huang faintly narrowed his eyes as he shot a look at the Spiritual King towering over this region. Faintly nodding his head, he replied indifferently. "Let's join hands."

Xu Huang was, after all, an influential figure within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Upon seeing him giving the nod of approval, everyone followed suit and nodded their heads. In a short moment, the morale started to rise. Thinking about it, with so many people joining hands, even the Spiritual King would find it difficult to resist them, right? After all, regardless of that, the Spiritual King had only strength and was devoid of intelligence.

Mu Chen looked at everyone's rising morale. His forehead faintly wrinkled before sweeping the vast region with his gaze. Why was he unable to see even a single Spiritual Knight? Where exactly had all those Spiritual Knights run to?

Chapter 308: Encircling the Spiritual King

Due to Zhao Qingshan and Xu Huang saying they would join hands, the dozen groups quickly agreed on a common consensus, with each and every person nodding their heads in agreement to join hands.

Seeing this happen, Zhao Qingshan immediately gave a faint smile, before turning his vision toward Mu Chen and his group, who had yet to make a single sound. Smiling, he asked, “Mu Chen, how do you feel about this?”

Mu Chen smiled and replied indifferently, “It’s enough if all the seniors have agreed on it. I’m just a freshman, and I’m not strong. It will be alright if I put in effort with everyone.”

A few people shot a weird glance at Mu Chen. Although the current him had indeed the status of a freshman, his reputation within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was something that even some outstanding seniors could not compare to. Naturally, matching with his reputation and his fame was a strength of the same degree. Regardless of the three bouts with Li Xuantong or rumors about destroying the general headquarters of the Demon’s Gate in front of He Yao, both were sufficient to prove the strength that he possessed.

“Haha, junior brother Mu Chen sure is modest.” said Zhao Qingshan beamingly, as he continued, “Although it’s said that this Spiritual King is a newborn; no matter what, it’s still an existence at the Heavenly Completion Stage. Therefore, we need people who possess the strength that reaches or is comparable to a Heavenly Completion Stage to be able to stall him head-on. I believe that junior brother Mu Chen is able to attack it with us.”

Mu Chen’s eyebrows faintly twitched. This Zhao Qingshan is actually holding him with such high regards? From the looks of it, he wished to probe exactly how high his capabilities were.

“Hmph, although that fellow has some ability, wanting to compete with a Heavenly Completion Stage isn’t that easy!” standing behind Xu Huang,

Xu Qingqing snorted in a low voice. She recognized that Mu Chen was somewhat formidable; however, she did not believe that he possessed the strength that was comparable to people of Xu Huang's level.

That day, outside the Demon's Gate, only by relying on his prior preparation of many Spiritual Arrays and the various grudges and grievances with He Yao, he was able to get the upper hand.

Xu Huang's expression did not change as he said indifferently, "Don't underestimate him. This Mu Chen is getting harder and harder to see through. If he truly was to take action, even I don't have absolute faith in defeating him."

Xu Qingqing curled her lips, obviously not believing those words.

Mu Chen sent a smile towards Zhao Qingshan and did not continue speaking, only nodded his head to express his approval. There were quite a few people that had converged over here, and were obviously slightly vigilant against him too. If they were to show their strength while he hid at the back, he would obviously meet with the expulsion by everyone.

"An Ran, you girls take action and attack. Wang Tong and you two follow me and attack." said Mu Chen is a soft voice.

An Ran and the two girls obediently nodded their heads. With their Heavenly Fusion strength, they really were unable to intervene here.

"What about me?" inquired Luo Li.

Mu Chen faintly shook his head and replied, "All along, I've felt that this place is slightly strange. Since they did not take the initiative to say your name, you should preserve your strength as much as possible so that you can use it when an unforeseen event appears."

Luo Li nodded her small head.

"Everyone, prepare to take action. Let us test exactly how formidable this Spiritual King is together. If we are able to kill it, we'll be the first students that are able to kill a Spiritual King in so many years!" seeing everyone appearing to be eager to give it a try, a fire was lit within Zhao Qingshan's eyes as he roared in a deep voice.

“Yes, let’s attack together!” replied everyone simultaneously with soaring fighting intent. In the next instant, over a hundred figures explosively shot forward as vigorous amounts of Spiritual Energy rushed towards the heavens.

This few people’s strength appeared to be at the Heavenly Transformation stage. With such a lineup, they could be considered as extremely tyrannical.

As their Spiritual Energies rushed towards the heavens, the 300 metre tall giant-like gem-encrusted Spiritual King that was towering over the vast depths suddenly opened its eyes. There wasn’t any emotional fluctuation within those eyes, only an eye-piercing Spiritual Light. It’s cold and empty gaze swept across, locking onto those numerous insignificant figures in the distance, which was akin to looking at ants.

Roar!

When it had discovered those intruding ants, it faced the heavens and roared loudly without any sense of courtesy. The roar was akin to a thunderous boom, rumbling as it resounded. Spiritual Energy fluctuations that could be seen with the naked-eye engulfed the skies as the earth seemed to simultaneously start vibrating.

Sensing this terrifying Spiritual Energy shockwave, regardless of Xu Huang, Zhao Qingshan and the rest, all of their expressions slightly changed, as the expression within their eyes turned extremely grave. Regardless of how much of a numerically advantage they were in or that the Spiritual King was newly-born, it truly possessed the strength of a Heavenly Completion Stage.

“Attack!”

However, those present here were, after all, rather outstanding students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Although they were shocked by the imposing aura radiating from the Spiritual King, they still did not retreat. With a fierce roar, Xu Huang, Zhao Qingshan, Mu Fengyang and the rest of the Heavenly Transformation Late Stage students explosively shot forward. Completely circulating their boundless Spiritual Energies,

they transformed into numerous streaks of light, rushing towards the giant-like Spiritual King in the distance at lightning speed.

Mu Chen had also followed closely behind, with the three Wang brothers also following closely with grave expressions on their faces. The massive crescent moon blades had already appeared in a flash within their hands.

Xu Huang, Zhao Qingshan and Mu Fengyang's speed were the fastest. Within a few breaths, they had appeared before the gigantic Spiritual King. Without any hesitation, the three of them explosively roared, releasing powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuations in an explosive manner.

"Desolate God's Blade!"

"Hurricane Sword Art!"

"Rushing Thunder Palm!"

Facing an existence that's at a level like the Spiritual King, Xu Huang and the other two were not stupid enough to show any mercy. Therefore, the first attack they sent out was a powerful one.

A three hundred metre-long giant blade was formed, and furiously chopped down.

The sword's glow, akin to a hurricane, screamed out, piercing straight at the Spiritual King's throat with incomparable swiftness and ferocity.

A gigantic Spiritual Energy palm print violently pressed on the Spiritual King's chest, carrying with it the power of crazy lightning.

Xu Huang and the other two were at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase. Furthermore, they were obviously the elites amongst them. When they launched their attacks with full power, the prestige and power of those attacks caused fear and apprehension amongst the people that were watching from behind.

Facing the tyrannical attacks, there was not a single fluctuation present in the indifferent eyes of the Spiritual King that sparkled with an eye-piercing glow. Facing the full-powered attacks from three great Heavenly

Transformation Stages, it only took a step forward. Leaning its body forward, it suddenly opened its mouth and roared explosively!

Roar!

The roar was akin to thunder as sound waves, visible to the naked eye, brought along earth-shattering Spiritual Energy storms that wreaked havoc along its path. The space was shaken till distortions started forming.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Regardless of the blade's glow, sword glints or the palm print, upon contact with the spiritual energy storm and the sound waves, they instantly shattered and exploded.

Xu Huang and the other two made a stifled snort as their bodies faintly trembled. The graveness within their eyes promptly grew deeper. The combined attacks of the three of them were unexpectedly broken by a single roar from the Spiritual King. The strength of a Heavenly Completion Stage was terrifying to that degree?

Shhhuuu!

However, just as the attacks of Xu Huang and the other two were destroyed, a hundred figures rose up from behind them. Ferocious Spiritual Energy attacks akin to a storm fell in torrents, smashing against the Spiritual King's body.

Ding! Ding!

The Spiritual Energy attacks exploded on the Spiritual King's body. However, not a single tremor ran throughout its body. The crystal armor sparkled, completely absorbing all of those attacks.

Bang!

The numerous Spiritual Energy attacks were annihilated. A glow flashed past the Spiritual King's eyes as it sent a palm rumbling out. Instantly shattering space, it furiously patted down on the bodies of numerous figures who were unable to evade in time with lightning speed.

Bang!

Those figures shot out, landing at a faraway place. Turning deathly pale, they spurted a mouthful of fresh blood, their auras turning weak and faint. Ray after ray of light descended from the skies, enveloping them. As the rays of light disappeared, their figures had also vanished.

These people had been sent directly out of the Spiritual Light World due to serious injuries.

The scene that played before them caused quite a few people to feel goosebumps rise on their skin. Just a single palm was enough to make those unlucky fellows lose the qualifications to continue staying in the Spiritual Light World. This Spiritual King's attack, isn't it too frightening?

Mu Chen's eyes turned grave as he looked at the scene before him. Was this the exact strength of a Heavenly Completion Stage? As it was born not too long ago, the Spiritual King had not completely stabilized its power in the Heavenly Competition Stage. However, its strength was already at such a terrifying level.

"Dammit! This fellow's defensive strength is too strong! We simply can't hurt it!" exclaimed the three Wang brothers as their faces turned slightly pale. Their swift and fierce blade glints that they had utilized all of their strength to unleash on the Spiritual King's body only left white scars. There was not even the slightest trace of them causing any effective damage to it.

Mu Chen stared closely at the gigantic body of the Spiritual King. At this time, everyone had already gone all-out and executed their attacks. Streaks of Spiritual Energy bombarded the Spiritual King's body in endless streams.

However, facing their attacks, the Spiritual King never even flinched a bit. Yet, every time it launched it's attack, a gigantic palm print would shatter space apart, causing serious injuries to numerous figures as it patted down. Shrieking and screaming, they would be sent out of the Spiritual Light World.

Within a few short minutes, they had lost tens of people. This made

everyone feel slight fear and trepidation and became all the more careful, fearing that they would be slapped out of the Spiritual Light World. If that happened, they would have to say a premature goodbye to this hunt.

Mu Chen floated in the sky, having yet to launch any attacks as he continued to stare at the Spiritual King. Following his observation, he discovered that every time an attack was about to land on the back of its head, it would raise and block it with his hand. As for the attacks that landed on its body, it seemed to not give a single hint of care.

Mu Chen eyes faintly narrowed as his vision shifted towards the head of the Spiritual King. Its head was also sparkling with eye-piercing light, and those hollow and indifferent eyes had not a trace of emotion within them, making people's hair stand.

As his vision moved higher, Mu Chen saw that the brightness at a position on his forehead that was clearly more eye-piercing by a bit. Faintly, there seemed to be a special fluctuation radiating out from there.

Mu Chen's eyes faintly narrowed. Waving his sleeve, a streak of Spiritual Energy burning with black flames explosively shot out, directly striking the eye piercing glow on the Spiritual King's forehead.

Bang!

However, just as Mu Chen's streak of Spiritual Energy closed in, a glow flashed past the Spiritual King's eyes. A palm slapped out, smashing the streak of Spiritual Energy into bits.

Mu Chen's eyes sparkled.

Bang!

The gigantic Spiritual King suddenly lowered its head and locked onto Mu Chen floating in the air. Clenching its large hand, a fist akin to a small mountain pounded towards Mu Chen, carrying along its frightening power.

The air was shattered by this fist, as the earth below it started to cave in.

"Careful!" Seeing this, the beautiful faces of An Ran and the girls

standing not far instantly changed and hurriedly screamed out. Luo Li's pupils turned stiff as her jade-like hand gripped her sword sheath tightly.

Roar!

Mu Chen looked towards the incoming fist that had the pressure akin to a mountain. A glow surfaced in front of his body, while a sound akin to a dragon's roar resounded out. Within the glow, a dragon's shade surfaced, having the appearance akin to flying into the skies.

The dragon shade unfurled as Mu Chen's figure mysteriously vanished from his original position. The incomparably violent fist had completely struck air.

Discovering the same thing, the gazes of Xu Huang, Zhao Qingshan and the rest faintly sparkled, before their eyes turned stiff. A shade surfaced on the gigantic arm of the Spiritual King, before shooting up the arm with an extremely astonishing speed.

"Such a fast speed!"

Their hearts faintly trembled. Mu Chen's speed was fast to the point that they could only see a blurry shade of him.

Chi!

While their hearts were in shock, Mu Chen's figure had already appeared on the gigantic forehead of the Spiritual King in lightning speed. A fist rumbled out from him as a white tiger formed behind him. While roaring, it carried a murderous aura as it rumbled towards the Spiritual King's forehead.

Bang!

The fist rumbled out solidly, as violent and explosive Spiritual Energy fluctuations erupted out of the Spiritual King's forehead. The gigantic figure that had not moved a single inch unexpectedly started to tremble at this instant, before its large feet retreated a number of steps. The entire earth quaked and the mountains shook as it trampled backwards.

Upon seeing Mu Chen's fist smashing back the Spiritual King, the pupils

of Zhao Qingshan, and Xu Huang fiercely narrowed. A few people even sucked in a breath of cold air. The Spiritual King that they were unable to stir even after joining hands was actually forced to retreat by Mu Chen's fist?

This fellow, he was that tyrannical?

One gaze after another stared at the lanky figure in the air, eyes sparkling indefinitely.

Chapter 309: Underground

Floating in midair, Mu Chen discovered those gazes aiming towards him, sparkling with suspicion. Unable to help it, he faintly curled his lips and said, “The weakness of this Spiritual King is clearly on its forehead. Your messy attacks, even if you attack it for a day, might not even be able to cause damage to it.”

Only upon hearing this did everyone gawk, before hurriedly turning their vision towards the Spiritual King. At this time, the eye-piercing glow on the latter’s forehead was somewhat restrained. Faintly, one could seemingly see that on the position of its forehead was a gemstone that seemed to be the approximate size of a human head. That gemstone was sparkling with an eye-piercing glow, while frightening Spiritual Energy fluctuations continuously radiated from within it.

Everyone stared at the eye-piercing gemstone before realising in a flash. So that was the weak spot of the Spiritual King. This was why Mu Chen’s strike was able to force it back.

From Zhao Qingshan’s and Mu Fengyang’s faces, one could clearly notice that they had taken a slight breath of relief. If Mu Chen truly possessed the strength to force the Spiritual King back head-on, exactly how frightening was the strength he possessed?

If Mu Chen truly possessed such strength, who was able to snatch the Spiritual King Spiritual Light from him?

Roar!

While they were in the process of realisation, the gigantic body of the Spiritual King started to erupt in a bright and resplendent glow once again. The attack it had received to the gemstone on its forehead had seeming enraged it. While it roared, a gigantic streak of Spiritual Energy descended from the skies, akin to a light beam, violently rumbling towards Mu Chen.

Chi!

Having made ample preparation, Mu Chen immediately exhibited the [Soaring Dragon Technique]. As the dragon shade rolled and unfurled, his figure had already appeared a thousand metres behind the Spiritual King, evading the light beam.

Rumble!

The light beam descended on the ground, smashing the earth apart, creating a gigantic pit. Faintly, there seemed to be some sparkling light.

Mu Chen shot a look at the gigantic pit, while slightly gawking. However, before he could process it clearly, a gigantic shadow had already enveloped him. The Spiritual King's gigantic hand and already ferociously patted over.

Space exploded as Mu Chen hurriedly exhibited the [Dragon Soaring Art], evading the gigantic palm the moment it made contact with him.

Mu Chen showed himself again, a grave expression all over his face, as his heartbeat sped up by a bit. The attack if this Spiritual King was too terrifying. He should definitely not let it near him. If not, the injury he would receive would not be light.

"Attack the gemstone on its forehead together!"

Fortunately, the other people had sobered up at this moment. With explosive roars, they shot and flashed over. Swift and fierce attacks started to rumble and shoot towards the gemstone on the Spiritual King's forehead that was sparkling with eye-piercing brilliance one after another.

Facing the group of attacks heading towards its weak point, the Spiritual King did not directly receive the attacks this time. Raising its gigantic hands, it completely blocked the incoming attacks.

However, the combined attacks of everyone had some crafty ones mixed in. Even though the Spiritual King had tried to block, there were still numerous attacks that violently smashed against the gemstone. The gigantic body of the Spiritual King was, once again, forced back.

However, as its body retreated, it, once again, resisted the many incoming attacks and stood back at its original position.

Bang!

Enormous Spiritual Energies gushed out from its palm in the form of light beams, smashing a few unfortunate fellows till they vomited blood and were shot away. Their auras were instantly depressing, before a ray of light descended from the sky, sending them away.

Facing this kind of loss, everyone only shot a glance before violently attacking with rapt attention again. Blade lights and sword glints blotted the skies, screaming as they violently chopped and hacked at the eye-piercing gemstone on the Spiritual King's forehead.

This Spiritual King had indeed only been born not that long ago. Although it still possessed quite terrifying strength, it appeared rather sluggish, as if it had not yet reached the degree of fullness and smoothness.

Due to this, Zhao Qingshan and the rest dared to focus their attention to its forehead. If the Spiritual King had passed through this newly-born phase, its strength would violently increase. At that time, even they might not be able to escape through the gap of its teeth.

Everyone continued in their assault. At the same time, their losses had also continued. The original number of hundreds had now been left with only half of that. The rest had already been sent out of the Spiritual Light World with a pat from the Spiritual King.

This level of loss could be called disastrous.

However, although their losses were disastrous, the Spiritual King was forced to consume quite a bit of its energy. Its attacks were already not as wild and violent as the initial ones, with it only focusing tenaciously to defend the gemstone on its forehead.

"Haha, everyone increase your power! This Spiritual King is indeed a newborn! Its strength isn't as powerful as we've imagined! As long as we can evade its attacks, it's all good!" Floating in midair, Mu Fengyang looked towards that Spiritual King, whose attacks were gradually weakening, before shouting out with a big chuckle.

Upon hearing this, a shock went through everyone's mind as they sped up their assault.

Mu Chen had also sent a streak of Spiritual Energy rumbling out. However, his eyes were continuously sparkling. This Spiritual King's strength was, indeed, not as strong as he had expected. Was it truly due to it being just born?

Mu Chen's vision swept past the place where the Spiritual King stood as his brows faintly wrinkled. There was a huge pit on the ground that was caused by its step. However, regardless of how everyone attacked, the Spiritual King did not even leave that boundary.

"Exactly what's up?" murmured Mu Chen as he stared at the patch of ground, frowning faintly.

Bang!

While Mu Chen was muttering to himself, the Spiritual King extended his gigantic hand. Ten thousand rays of light erupted out, violently smashing straight at Mu Fengyang, who was trying to boost everyone's morale.

Seeing that the Spiritual King had locked onto him, the face of Mu Fengyang faintly changed. Just as he had evaded the rays of light, his eyes caught a glimpse of Mu Chen, who was not far behind him. At this moment, a faint flash sparkled within his eyes.

Chi!

His body suddenly flew sideways, appeared coincidentally in front of Mu Chen. At the same time, the Spiritual King's gigantic hand had already ferociously covered over them, enveloping the two of them.

Under the envelope of its shadow, Mu Chen sobered up from his slightly absentminded state. After seeing what's in front of him, his expression immediately changed.

"HeHe."

A smile with ill intent surfaced from the corner of Mu Fengyang's

mouth. Spiritual Light erupted from his body, as a thick suit of deep yellow Spiritual armor appeared on his body, tightly enveloping him within it.

This Spiritual armor was obviously a pretty good defensive Spiritual Artifact.

"Bye-bye." A cold laugh rang out as the Spiritual Armor enveloped Mu Fengyang's body within it.

Mu Chen's eyes turned frosty as he thought, 'This fellow is actually trying to lure trouble to me.' He wanted to take advantage of the Spiritual King's strength to shove Mu Chen out of the Spiritual Light World. However, this Mu Fengyang was too naive. Did he think that by doing this, he would be able to bind Mu Chen's hands such that he would be unable to do anything about the incoming attack?

A black light gushed forth in front of Mu Chen's body as a black pagoda surfaced, before enveloping Mu Chen within it.

The Nine-layered Pagoda possessed extremely strong defensive capabilities, and was considered the strongest defense Mu Chen had. If its defensive capabilities were genuinely discussed, even Mu Fengyang's Spiritual Armor would be inferior to it.

Bang!

As the Nine-layered Pagoda enveloped Mu Chen within it, the Spiritual King's gigantic palm had violently patted down. A metallic sound rang out, as the two of them were immediately patted into the ground, violently piercing through the earth. A deep and gigantic pit was formed from their impact.

Spurt!

In a sorrowful state, Mu Fengyang crawled out from the gigantic pit. Spitting out a mouthful of fresh blood, he lowered his head to look at the Spiritual armor on his body. There were some cracks on its surface. This filled his heart with pain. Turning his head, he proceeded to look at the deep pit not far from him. Dust and smoke had filled the air there. Under that sudden attack, it looked like that fellow had definitely suffered serious

injuries.

“Let’s see how you’re gonna snatch the Spiritual Lights from us.” sneered Mu Fengyang coldly. Suppressing the injuries within his body, he rushed towards the horizon once again.

The attack from the Spiritual King towards the two of them was seen by everyone. When Xu Huang and the rest saw only Mu Fengyang flying towards them, they felt slightly shocked. Looks like Mu Chen had suffered injuries that were not light this time.

The actions that Mu Fengyang made were ambiguous, and no one had imagined that he would actually lure trouble towards Mu Chen.

“Mu Chen!” the facial expression of the three Wang brothers changed. They proceeded to shoot a suspicious look at the innocent-looking Mu Fengyang. However, since they did not have any evidence, it would not be good to speak up now.

Everyone shook their heads in regret. However, the present situation did not allow for them to be distracted. Therefore, they had quickly refocused their minds on launching their assault on the gradually weakening Spiritual King.

“ Mu Chen’s been hit!” From a distance away, upon seeing this play out in front of their eyes, the beautiful faces of An Ran and the girls instantly changed.

Luo Li’s brows faintly bunched up. Her pupils shot a cold look at the floating Mu Fengyang; however, she did not overly panic. Saying in a soft voice, “ Relax, that Mu Fengyang had only received light injuries. Mu Chen isn’t that frail.”

Seeing that Luo Li had not a single trace of panic, An Ran and the girls were able to quickly calm down, before faintly nodding their heads.

As the crowd of people in the air continued to encircle and launch their assault on the Spiritual King, no one had yet discovered Mu Chen’s figure appearing beside the black pagoda within the deep, dust-filled pit. He looked up towards the intense battle, before looking at the stretch of earth

with sparkling eyes. Sending his fist rumbling out, he created another deep pit and jumped within it. Next, he proceeded to continue his onslaught towards the ground.

Very quickly, a deep hole was dug up by him. Mu Chen's figure vanished into the hole. As he vanished, the black pagoda started to revolve, covering the hole up. This way, even if the dust that filled the air had dissipated, no would would be able to discover Mu Chen's disappearance. They would only assume that he had hid within the black pagoda to recuperate.

Bang! Bang!

Underground, Mu Chen's body was covered with rippling black flames akin to armor as he continued to dig deeper into the ground. The thick earth and rocks were roasted and burnt away by the black flames.

From the start, he had already discovered that something was slightly not right about this gathering point. Those Spiritual Knights would not vanish for no apparent reason. Furthermore, that Spiritual King wasn't as strong as he had expected.

Regardless of how they attack, that Spiritual King would not leave a hundred feet from it's location.

From the looks of it, it seemed that it was guarding over something.

Since there was nothing above the ground for it to defend, Mu Chen had decided to search below the ground.

With a low roar, Mu Chen revolved his Spiritual Energy, increasing the speed at which he penetrated the earth. After approximately a minute or so, something flashed past his mind. The ground below his hand, unexpectedly, disappeared as his figure dropped down.

Mu Chen hurriedly stabilised his figure. Spiritual Energy enveloped his body as he peered vigilantly at this subterranean space. As his vision looked over, the expression on his face started to freeze little by little.

"This is..."

Mu Chen took a deep breath of this subterranean air that was filled with

the smell of the earth as thick shock and astonishment erupted forth from his heart.

Chapter 310: Seizing of the Spirit Crystal

What appeared before Mu Chen's eyes was an extremely vast and spacious underground world. Within this underground world was innumerable clumps of light floating around. These clumps of light were extremely eye-piercing, while astonishing Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiated from them.

"These are all Spiritual Lights?"

Mu Chen looked at those thousands upon thousands of light clumps with shock in his eyes. From the Spiritual Energy contained within those light clumps, he could tell that those were Spiritual Lights of at least Spiritual General grade. As of now, this number of Spiritual Lights were actually converged at this place.

This scene was indeed extremely spectacular.

Mu Chen's vision followed the bright and resplendent Spiritual Lights. Within the most central area of this under ground world, he saw the most eye-piercing light clump. It was gorgeous and magnificent, with a faintly discernable crystal that was approximately 3.3 metres tall floating within it.

This crystal was limpid and sparkling, and there seemed to be a thick fluid flowing within it. A bright and dim light glow, looking akin to a beating heart, seemingly possessed a mysterious life energy.

Following the brilliant sparkle of that crystal, countless strands of Spiritual Lights, with Spiritual Energy streaks of light, were pouring out before pouring into that 3.3 metre tall crystal like an endless stream. This caused it to grow all the more brighter.

Indescribable Spiritual Energy fluctuations were undulated, akin to waves, causing even Mu Chen's heart to hurriedly throb and pulse.

"No wonder, the Spiritual Knights in this Extremely Dangerous region had all turned into these Spiritual Lights."

Mu Chen finally understood in a flash as to why he wasn't able to spot a

single Spiritual Knight since he entered this gathering point. They had all been turned into Spiritual Lights. These Spiritual Lights were obviously providing Spiritual Energy for that crystal.

"Could it be that this place was created by the Spiritual King?" thought Mu Chen while feeling some shock. From the look of the situation underground, it clearly wasn't man-made. That meant that it was created by the Spiritual King. He would have never thought that an existence without intelligence would actually be able to understand how to construct an underground world.

This might be due to their abilities; however, this was sufficient to explain the mystery contained within this stretch of the world.

'No wonder why this Spiritual King's strength isn't particularly strong.' thought Mu Chen as he looked with fiery eyes at the bright and resplendent crystal. 'The Spiritual Energy within is surging to an astonishing degree.'

According to Mu Chen's estimates, the scene before him might be for the sake of helping the Spiritual King cross over from its newly born and weak condition. Only when the Spiritual King absorbed this crystal that had absorbed the Spiritual Energy from so many Spiritual Knights would the big fellow out there truly become a Spiritual King.

A faint sparkle flashed within Mu Chen's eyes, before he explosively shot out. Within a number of breaths, he had crossed over the numerous Spiritual Energies and got close to the bright and resplendent crystal. When nearing the crystal, he could see the crystal the movement of the thick spiritual liquid within. It seemed to form an illusionary shade that was faintly discernable, which looked incomparably mysterious.

Mu Chen did not immediately take action against the crystal. His gaze swept below him, where he discovered a purple clump of light closest to the position of the crystal. Within that clump of light, there was a purple Spirit Crystal; however, it was far from the previous crystal that would make people shocked. However, the Spiritual Energy fluctuations erupting from it was still much more tyrannical when compared to those Spiritual

Lights that Mu Chen and the rest had seen before.

"This is a Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase Spiritual Knight."

A pleasantly surprised expression flashed past Mu Chen's eyes. Without a single bit of hesitation, a fist rumbled out as a violent Spiritual Energy impacted the purple clump of light. When the light clump shattered, the purple Spirit Crystal hidden within flew out, which was grabbed by Mu Chen.

As the purple Spirit Crystal landed in Mu Chen's hand, it instantly radiated an extremely astonishingly pure Spiritual Energy. Mu Chen revolved his Spiritual Energy to absorb it, and he felt the consumed Spiritual Energy within his body starting to gradually restore.

"Truly worthy of being the Spiritual Light transformed from a Spiritual Knight at the Heavenly Transformation Stage!"

Mu Chen laughed loudly. Without any trace of courtesy, he took action. Within a short span of a number of breaths, he had shattered over ten purple light clumps, gathering the purple Spirit Crystals in his hands.

These ten purple Spirit Crystals would, at the minimum, be equivalent to thousands upon thousands of normal Spiritual Pawns.

Humm. Humm.

However, as Mu Chen snatched those ten purple Spirit Crystals into his hands, the gigantic magnificent Spirit Crystal seemed to have sensed something and instantly started to hum and shake. Spiritual Energy immediately gushed out of it, transforming into Spiritual Energy waves that violent swept towards Mu Chen.

"Spiritual Energy without a single trace of attacking attribute, and you still want to cause harm to me?"

Upon seeing this, Mu Chen gave a laugh as he waved his sleeve. Spiritual Energy burning with black flames erupted out, easily resisting against the incoming Spiritual Energy waves. In the next moment, he turned his fiery gaze towards the Spirit Crystal. That was the genuine treasure!

With a clench of his hand, a long sword, sparkling with brilliance, appeared in a flash. Deep black Spiritual Energy covered it, as black flames surrounded it. With a step, he shot out, and appeared in front of that Spirit Crystal. The Spiritual Energy within his body fully erupted out as a gigantic lustrous black sword of a hundred feet howled out from his sword edge, and furiously chopped down on the Spirit Crystal.

Ding!

A metallic sound rang out as the crystal bits flew everywhere. Acute pain radiated from Mu Chen's palm, as the web between his thumb and forefinger was torn. The hardness of this Spirit Crystal had exceeded his expectations.

Creak!

However, his full-powered slash had some effect. A crack appeared at a corner of the Spirit Crystal, causing a Spirit Crystal fragment, approximately the size of a fist, to break off, which was grabbed by Mu Chen.

Upon grabbing it, Mu Chen felt his hand sink, as if he had just grabbed a heavy rock that weighed a ton.

Astonishment flashed within Mu Chen's eyes. He knew that this was due to the condensation of Spiritual Energy to a terrifying stage that brought along this weight. Looks like the Spiritual Energy contained within this Spirit Crystal was too frightening.

However, this made the fire burning within Mu Chen's eyes to grow all the more bigger. However, he did not know that on the instant he had chopped down on the Spirit Crystal, the Spiritual King that was tangled up by Xu Huang, Zhao Qingshan and the rest had suddenly raised its head and roared furiously towards the skies.

Roar!

The roar transformed into a Spiritual Energy storm which swept across, shaking and sending the unprepared Xu Huang and the rest flying backwards.

Stabilising their bodies not far away, they looked with suspicion at the Spiritual King, which had suddenly gone crazy. At this time the latter, had not cared about them. With a tight clench of its gigantic fists, it carried along frightening Spiritual Energies as they violent smashed into the earth below it.

Bang!

The stretch of earth shook, akin to an earthquake happening, as gigantic fissures started to extend from under the Spiritual King's feet. In the next moment, it started to explosively rush into the ground beneath at an astonishing speed.

At this moment, Mu Chen, who was underground had also discovered it. The expression on his face changed. Without daring to continue his stay, his figure explosively retreated.

Bang!

Giant stones suddenly descended as sunlight illuminated the underground world from the shattered earth. The place where Mu Chen previously stood was smashed through by a frightening power, leaving behind a bottomless black hole.

This was the all-out strike of the crazy Spiritual King, which was extremely terrifying.

"What is that?!"

As the underground world was revealed under the sunlight, it was immediately discovered by Xu Huang and the rest, who were floating in the sky, causing them to cry out in surprise. Dumbfoundedly, they stared at the innumerable Spiritual Lights that were sparkling with eye-piercing brilliance.

However, very quickly, their gazes congealed on that gigantic sparkling and transparent Spirit Crystal, which was radiating a terrifying Spiritual Energy. Their gazes immediately turned sluggish, as the Spiritual Energy present was enough to cause them to gulp their saliva down.

"There is someone down there!"

There were some people with sharp eyesight, as they managed to spot Mu Chen, who was preparing to quietly sneak away. Instantly, they cried out in shock.

Swish!

Everyone's gazes instantly turned over and stared stubbornly at Mu Chen's figure. When they had identified the figure, all of their gazes turned slightly sluggish.

'How can Mu Chen be there?' thought Mu Fengyang as the corner of his mouth twitched. Hurriedly, he turned his head towards the gigantic hole. The black pagoda suddenly disappeared at this instant, revealing a bottomless hole beneath it.

Upon being spotted, Mu Chen no longer continued hiding. Shooting out of the hole, he sent a smile towards everyone while saying, "Just now, I was mysteriously smashed underground, and discovered a slightly strange thing."

Everyone stared at him suspiciously, as they obviously did not trust him. However, this was not the time to argue about that with him, as everyone stared with fiery gazes at the innumerable eye-piercing Spiritual Lights below. There were so many there. If they were able to snatch some for themselves, it was already sufficient to be a rewarding journey.

Roar!

However, just as their greed was growing increasingly stronger, the Spiritual King started to roar, opening its big mouth as it sucked in the air. Everyone saw the innumerable Spiritual Lights immediately converging together, before completely being devoured into the Spiritual King's body.

At the same time, the massive Spirit Crystal had also flown up. Upon seeing this, Mu Chen's eyes sparkled as he explosively shot forward. In the next instant, his palm patted on the Spirit Crystal. His palm did not shatter the crystal. However, a black flame quietly shot into it, while Mu Chen explosively retreated away.

As for the Spirit Crystal, it shot up and was devoured by the Spiritual

King into its body.

After a short span of a number of breaths, the underground world had become devoid and empty.

Everyone became stunned and stupefied.

However, when Mu Chen saw this, his heart jumped crazily. That Spiritual King had completely absorbed everything below. Would that mean that it would cross over its newborn state? Once its power dramatically increased, with their lineup, would they be able to defend against it?

He raised his head as his scalp tingled, only to see the eye-piercingly bright Spiritual King, akin to a scorching sun. The brilliance coming from it caused several people to be unable to look directly at it. In addition, its already gigantic body started to expand once again.

A strong Spiritual Energy started to radiate out, as if its entire body had summoned a storm.

“Wang Tong, quickly! Let’s go!”

Mu Chen fiercely shouted out, instantly dropping his head and shooting explosively out.

Upon seeing the entire spectacle, Wang Tong and his two brothers faintly hesitated, before clenching their teeth, and closely followed Mu Chen. Luo Li, An Ran and the other girls, who were not far away, immediately shot over and followed closely behind them.

As for Zhao Qingshan, Xu Huang and the rest, they were somewhat unwilling, their faces fluctuating indeterminately.

Roar!

Just as they were hesitating, the Spiritual King roared, creating a thousand foot wave of Spiritual Energy. It violently impacted their bodies, causing numerous figures to spurt a mouthful of blood out as their faces turned pale.

“Let’s go!”

The faces of Zhao Qingshan and their group finally had an intense change as they looked with some palpitation in their hearts at Spiritual King who had already expanded to over three hundred feet. Clenching their teeth, they explosively retreated away.

Everyone was now retreating in distress, not daring to have half an idea of fighting that Spiritual King.

As they retreated, the Spiritual King stopped expanding in size. It furiously roar as its eyes, brimming with brilliance, locked onto Mu Chen, who was shooting of into the distance.

It could discover that the missing piece of its Spirit Crystal was on his body. As long as it could obtain that Spirit Crystal, it would be able to completely cross over from its weakest, newly-born stage!

Roar!

While furiously roaring, it shook the earth and mountains as it moved, crazily chasing after him.

Chapter 311: Pursuit of the Spirit King

Rumble!

The earth shuddered as the countless Spirit Pawns that formed the Spirit Pawn Army was restless at this moment. Streams of light shot out from the depths, without daring to stop for the slightest degree.

These Spirit Pawns did not obstruct those that were rushing out. However, under the former's struggle, they were able to feel the pressure that's akin to a Spirit King was rapidly spreading from the depths.

This pressure made them unable to move a single step.

Bang!

As the pressure radiated out, a dazzling giant that's over 300 metres high stepped out from the depths, quaking the earth and shook the mountains as it marched forth. The earth split apart under its feet as the ferocious cracks continuously extended out.

Roar!

The eye-piercingly bright giant roared, causing incomparable berserking Spiritual Energy sound waves that shattered the unfortunate Spirit Pawns as they radiated out. However, the giant did not pay the slightest bit of attention to them as it locked onto the figure at the front and relentlessly pursued it without the thought to give up.

"Damn it."

Seeing the Spirit King that did not at all care about other people as it chased after him, Mu Chen's face changed.

"Why is that big fellow chasing us?" Wang Tong and the rest had also discovered the situation and instantly became slightly flustered. As of now, the strength of this Spirit King had risen dramatically. Without even talking about them, even if Zhao Qingshan and Xu Huang were to attack together, they would still not be able to be its opponent.

"Its coming for me." Mu Chen replied while clenching his teeth as he

continued, “I’ll lure it away by myself. You guys leave first and find a safe place.”

“That’s too dangerous!” Wang Tong, An Ran and the rest hurriedly exclaimed.

“If it continues to chase us like that, it’ll eventually catch up to us.” Mu Chen replied as he shook his head. There wasn’t much panic showing within his black eyes. Taking a deep breath, he declared, “Let’s split up.”

“I’ll accompany you!” Luo Li exclaimed while softly biting her lip. She was extremely firm and blunt. The Spirit King before them was extremely strong. If Mu Chen tried to deal with it alone, it might be very troublesome for him. Therefore, she had to come along with him.

Mu Chen faintly hesitated, before nodding his head. He did not try to show off his ability. As of now. although the Spirit King could not be considered as having completely crossing over from its weak and newly born phase, there was no need to doubt its strength. If he tried to deal with it alone, it truly would be very thorny.

After nodding his head, he did not say anything more. With a move of his body, a dragon roar resounded out as he immediately displayed the Dragon Soaring Art. His figure transformed into the shadow of a dragon, rapidly shooting towards another direction akin to lightning.

Upon seeing this, Luo Li’s beautiful body moved and immediately followed after him. Her speed appeared to be not much slower than Mu Chen, who was displaying the Dragon Soaring Art.

Roar!

Following the change in Mu Chen’s direction, the Spirit King that was chasing them had also immediately sensed it. While roaring, it chased after Mu Chen once again.

The ray of light in the front, the giant at the back. The earth trembled as they rapidly disappeared from everyone ‘s line-of-sight.

“Let’s go.” Wang Tong looked over at Mu Chen’s and Luo Li’s figures heading into the distance and clenched his teeth. Immediately turning his

body, he brought An Ran and the rest towards the outside of the Spirit Pawn Army. As of now, if they were to follow Mu Chen's side, not only would they not be of the slightest use, they would even drag him down.

The other people had also understood. Although worry and unease filled their eyes, they still rapidly followed Wang Tong and left.

Since the Spirit King was chasing after Mu Chen, the people who were fleeing in fright from other directions had also noticed this. Soon after, they gradually came to a stop as they looked at the direction that the Spirit King had headed towards with doubtful eyes.

"What happened? Why did the Spirit King only head towards Mu Chen?" up in the air, Zhao Qingshan said with his brows wrinkled.

"Previously, only Mu Chen had entered the underground cave. He had definitely obtained something there; therefore, making the Spirit King chase after him." Mu Fengyang replied while clenching his teeth, his eyes brimming with the fires of anger. He was the one that thought of luring trouble to Mu Chen. However, who would have thought that Mu Chen was not only not sent out of the hunting grounds, he had even discovered the secret underground cave. Although the did not know exactly what Mu Chen did in the underground cave, since he was able to make the Spirit King relentlessly chase after him without giving up, how could the thing that he had obtained be common?

Speaking from this point, didn't he give Mu Chen a chance to obtain a treasure?

Thinking about this scenario, Mu Fengyang was furious till his face turned green.

"What should we do?" Mu Fengyang said as he looked towards Zhao Qingshan. They had lost over ten people, and they haven't even dredged up a single hair. How could this make them give up?

Zhao Qingshan's eyes sparkled, as he was similarly not willing to leave without the slightest bit of harvest. Slightly muttering to himself, he clenched his teeth and replied, "Let's wait a bit, before following those two. Let's see if there will be a chance for us. If there is, we'll attack. If

there isn't, we'll rapidly retreat."

He was a decisive person, and was clear that the current Spirit King was too strong and not something they could deal with. The only thing they could do was wait for an opportunity. If they rashly attacked, they would only end up being sent out of the hunting grounds.

Mu Fengyang nodded his head and looked towards the direction the Spirit King had gone. If the benefits of this place was obtained by Mu Chen, he'll truly be depressed until he vomited blood.

In the air, at another direction, Xu Huang had also stopped in his tracks. His gaze stared at the direction the Spirit King had gone, his eyes sparkling.

...

Within the layers of mountain, a strong gale resounded as two figures shot by. Without the slightest degree of stopping, they shot over to a distant place. Not long after they shot by, the earth started to move, the mountains started to shake, and the mountain range started to collapse. In the distance, a giant over 300 metres tall rapidly shot over, eye-piercing Spiritual Light caused it to look akin to a clump of scorching suns, making several people unable to directly stare at it.

It furiously roared, causing some Spiritual Lights to shoot out, smashing apart mountains. While doing so, it crazily chased after the two figures in the front.

Its figure was gigantic; however, its speed was as fast as lightning. Using its full strength to pursue them, it able to gradually close in on Mu Chen, who had displayed the Dragon Soaring Art.

"Its speed is very fast. Furthermore, it has an endless supply of Spiritual Energy. If we continue running, we'll end up being the first to be unable to maintain this speed." Luo Li shot a look at the Spirit King, who was gradually getting closer. Her eyes were grave as she looked at Mu Chen.

Mu Chen's face sank. He naturally knew that what Luo Li said was not false. The Spirit King had locked onto him. Obviously, it would not give up

until it snatched the broken fragment of the Spirit Crystal back from Mu Chen. However, once it snatched the fragment back, it would truly cross over from its newly born phase. At that time, perhaps even a true Heavenly Completion Stage expert would be unable to hold it back. If, by any chance, still wanted to kill him, there would be nothing more miserable than that.

Mu Chen's eyes faintly sparkled. As of now, the best way was to kill the Spirit King here. Although the Spirit King was very strong, he wasn't forced to the point where he had no methods left.

"This was originally prepared for He Yao. Since you, bastard, wants to chase me relentlessly without giving up, I'll let you have a taste of it first!"

Mu Chen was also a decisive person, and quickly decided on his decision. A chilling intent flashed within his eyes. Tilting his head towards Luo Li, he said, "Can you hold that bastard back for a little while?"

"Okay." Luo Li gently nodded her small head. Her jade-like hand slowly clenched tightly around the Luo Shen Sword on her waist. On its scabbard, there seemed to be a frosty air circulating around it.

Mu Chen gave a smile. He wasn't especially worried about Luo Li, as the latter's methods were something that even he was unable to clearly understand. In addition, there was the "Luo Shen Sword" in her hands. That was truly a Divine Weapon. Although it was in a sealed state at the moment, the two simple words "Divine Weapon" was synonymous to "Strong" and "Powerful". Mu Chen had never even seen the appearance of a Divine Weapon before. That was a thing that would even cause a Sovereign's heartbeat to race.

After the two had made a consensus, their figures rapidly shot out, before descending onto the peak of a distant mountain.

Upon landing, Mu Chen immediately crossed his legs and sat down. His eyes were faintly closed, while his hands rapidly created seals. While his Spiritual Energy fluctuated, Spiritual Seals condensed and rapidly flew out one after another.

"He wants to set up a Spiritual Array?" Luo Li said, while staring at Mu

Chen. From the looks of it, he obviously wanted to set up a Spiritual Array to counter the Spirit King. However, the Spirit King before them was tyrannical. Even a Rank 4 Spiritual Array would be hard to cause any life-threatening injuries towards it. Unless, it was a Rank 5 Spiritual Array.

However, as of now, Mu Chen was considered a Rank 4 Spiritual Array Master. Deploying a Rank 4 Spiritual Array wasn't that difficult for him. However, if it was a Rank 5 Spiritual Array, even if he had comprehended the Heart Array State, it might still not be that easy.

The higher the rank of the Spiritual Array, the more complicated it was. When it reached a certain degree, the Heart Array State would not be sufficient to provide much of a advantage. After all, the Heart Array State was still a very elemental state in the eyes of those true Spiritual Array Masters of the Grandmaster and Ancestral Ranks.

Luo Li's vision looked towards Mu Chen's handsome and outstanding face before giving a faint smile. If anyone was to compare their confidence in Mu Chen, there would be no one who had more than her. This confidence was accumulated during the year that they had lived together in the Spiritual Road. At that cruel place, this youth had never given up from the start till the end. He might have received oppression, and had failed before, but he had endured all of it. In addition, he had become increasingly tenacious. In this point, even the arrogant Luo Li had felt quiet admiration in her heart.

If not for Ji Xuan taking fancy for her in the Spiritual Road, the usually calm Mu Chen would not have bothered to start such a slaughter, which had led to him being kicked out of the Spiritual Road.

"Ji Xuan..."

Luo Li's jade-like hands slowly clenched tightly as the cold glint in her eyes condensed. Thinking about his talent, after entering the "Spiritual Saint Academy", he would be the most outstanding person there. From the looks of it then, Mu Chen still had the chance to cross hands with him. At that time, it would be a real exchange.

Roar!

A roar rang out while Luo Li's mind was still elsewhere. The earth trembled, and the mountain range continuously shook. In the far distance, a brilliance akin to a scorching sun swept over.

Luo Li looked towards the incoming Spirit King, before shooting a look at Mu Chen, who had closed his eyes and was preparing a Spiritual Array. Her jade-like hand suddenly gripped the longsword on her waist tightly. With a gentle tap of her slender jade-like feet, her beautiful figure shot forward in a flash, and appeared in mid-air

"You should stop."

Luo Li's clear and limpid eyes reflected the gigantic image as a clear and cold voice resounded within this stretch of the world, while carrying along a swift and fierce Sword Qi that was gradually condensing together.

The Spirit King did not have any intelligence, and naturally could not understand her words. It looked at the puny figure blocking its path. While roaring, the gigantic palm had carried along a Spiritual Light that blotted the sky as it violent patted down on Luo Li in a fury.

A chilling intent flashed past Luo Li's exquisite face. Those clear and limpid eyes grew increasingly incisive. In the next instant, she took a step forward. With a tremble of her jade-like hand, the black longsword in her hand instantly unsheathed.

Ring!

A clear sound rang out, as the entire stretch of the world reverberated with the light roar of the sword being unsheathed. A sky-blue Sword Qi transcended the heavens and rushed to the skies as if it wanted to shatter the heavens and crush the earth.

Bang!

That Sword Qi violently shot towards to giant palm that furiously patted over, causing metallic sounds to ring out. In the distance, Zhao Qingshan, Xu Huang and the rest that had chased after them stared dumbfoundedly as the Spirit King was sent flying. A mountain peak was smashed apart as it flew backwards.

All of them sucked in a breath of cold air as they stared in shock at the scene before them, where a young lady dressed in an ink-black dress stood in mid-air. In her hand was a longsword, rippling with faint fluctuations as it slowly radiated out.

It was a scene that had startled everyone.

Chapter 312: Heart Eye

Boom!

The gigantic Spirit King was sent smashing backwards. When its giant feet descended towards the ground, the entire earth, as well as the mountain range, violently shook a few times at that very instant. However, the Spirit King quickly stabilised its body as it started to feel some anger. The brilliance around the gigantic body grew increasingly thick as the brilliance enveloped the entire mountain range.

Roar!

While it roared, it clenched its giant hand. Spiritual Energy that blotted the skies converged, transforming into a storm. With a pat of its giant palm, a Spiritual Energy beam, which was approximately a hundred feet wide, shattered the horizon, before violent it smashed towards the slender and beautiful figure.

The Spirit King did not know any Spiritual arts; however, it possessed boundless Spiritual Energy that even a Heavenly Completion Stage expert would find hard to compare with. With this vigorous Spiritual Energy being its shield, the eruption of force from every movement was easily able to torch the mountains and boil the seas.

As the Spiritual Energy shattered the horizon, the mountain range below was smashed till a gigantic fissure was formed. The mountain tops and peaks along the side continued to shatter and explode.

Zhao Qingshan, Xu Huang, Mu Fengyang and the rest that had rushed over from the distance felt a palpitation in their hearts. The strength of the Spirit King truly was much more tyrannical than before.

No wonder why no one had the idea of fighting a Spirit King these past few years. It turned out that the mature ones were, unexpectedly, even more frightening.

Luo Li's jade-like hand gripped her longsword tightly. The girl gently breathed out a mouthful of air as her beautiful bosom rose and fell. A chill

akin to the frost filled her clear eyes as her jade-like finger ran across the body of the sword, causing a dark red colour to appear on the surface.

Buzz!

That smeared dark-red colour was rapidly absorbed by the the body of the sword. In the next instant, the longsword that rippled with azure light fluctuations started to emit a faint humming noise. Little traces of watery fluctuations started to appear on the sharp edges of the sword. This caused it to look akin to a longsword made from waves, looking extremely mysterious.

“Luo Shen Sword Art – Luo Water Transforming Sword.”

The Luo Shen Sword in Luo Li’s hand vibrated faintly as the sword edges danced. Akin to complex sword flowers, vigorous Spiritual Energy erupted out like waves, before she furiously slashed down.

Whoosh!

As she slashed down, an azure sword light howled out. It transformed into a gigantic sword light river a hundred feet long. The river surged forward, similar to an azure dragon that spiralled above Luo Li in the sky. The river water the seemed gentle, was filled with dense Sword Qi.

Once the sword light river was completely formed, it explosively shot out, violently smashing directly against the incoming Spiritual Energy beam.

Bang!

A gigantic sound rang across the sky as the berzerk Spiritual Energy, as well as the swift and fierce Sword Qi, swept out, turning the entire mountain range into a disastrous state and complete disorder.

Luo Li’s beautiful figure faintly trembled as she was sent back two steps. However, the longsword in her jade-like hand did not have the slightest degree of relaxing. Her beautiful eyes stared at the gigantic Spirit King, without even half the intent to retreat.

The Spirit King furiously roared. Its two attacks were blocked by the

figure in front of it that was akin to an ant. This caused it enter an even more berserk state, wanting to pat the figure in front of it into dust.

Under its fury, it stepped out again, causing the earth the move and the mountains to tremble. It erratically attacked, akin to a storm erupting and sweeping out.

Facing its attacks, the young lady gripped her longsword. Without the slightest hint of yielding, the Sword Qi rushed towards the sky, blocking the incoming attacks.

Zhao Qingshan and the rest watched this spectacle unfold itself from afar, while being in a daze, before feeling a cold chill run up their backs. Although Luo Li's attacks were meant for defending, being able to defend till now under the attacks of the Spirit King, wasn't it also a kind of valiantry?

Due to this point, if her position was exchanged for any of them, none of them would be able to accomplish that. They never thought that the young girl that was always standing quietly beside Mu Chen's side, other than her absolutely stunning appearance and temperament, would actually have such strength that would cause people to be stunned.

"How formidable."

Unable to contain himself, Xu Huang softly sighed as his gaze turned complicated. Beside him, Xu Qingqing had also faintly bit her lip. She stared at the young girl that continued to have an outstanding temperament under the attacks of the Spirit King, which even made other people feel stunned. Jealousy and dejection that were hard to conceal erupted from her eyes. Compared with the latter, she truly appeared inferior to her.

"However, it is still too difficult for her to fend off the Spirit King by herself. The area she could defend is getting smaller and smaller. She might not be able to hold on for much longer. Her defense will fail." Xu Huang stared at the place in the far distance. At the mountaintop there, a seated figure was faintly discernable there. This caused his eyes to faintly narrow. Was that Mu Chen? What was he preparing? Could it be that the

two of them truly wanted to deal with this Spirit King?

However, was that possible?

Although Mu Chen was not simple, his strength was, after all, at the Quasi-Heavenly Transformation Stage.

Xu Huang stared at the figure as his forehead started to wrinkle.

As Luo Li was holding back the footsteps of the Spirit King, Mu Chen was thoroughly blocked of the interference of the outside world. His mind had converged as Spiritual Seals continuously condensed around his body.

However, the amount of Spiritual Seals had gradually started to reduce in speed as he reached around 150 Spiritual Seals.

According to the number, most Rank 4 Spiritual Array Masters were able to condense 100 to 200 Spiritual Seals. Once someone was able to break past two hundred Spiritual Seals, that person would possess the qualifications to be promoted to a Rank 5 Spiritual Array Master.

Naturally, that did not mean that a Spiritual Array Master that was able to condense enough Spiritual Seals would be able to arrange a Spiritual Array. Spiritual Seals were extremely complicated things. Spiritual Seals were only the foundation of forming the structure of the Spiritual Arrays. How one perfectly created the mysteriously complicated links between these Spiritual Seals and caused them to shoot out their greatest and strongest power would be the capability that a Spiritual Array Master needed to possess.

Those Spiritual Array Masters of Ancestral Rank could casually arrange a Spiritual Array that might be formed from tens of thousands of Spiritual Seals. With that degree of complication, even a Sovereign level expert, with the talent in Spiritual Arrays, as well as practice over the years, would not be able to arrange it properly.

Naturally, as of now, Mu Chen was far from being considered as a Ancestral Rank. On the path of being a Spiritual Array Master, he was obviously still at the initial phase of his journey. The current him still required to ponder on how to settle the situation before himself.

As for these 150 Spiritual Seals, they were obviously unable to support the Spiritual Array that he needed to arrange.

He took a deep breath in his heart, gradually making his mind calm down. His consciousness had completely sank into the Heart Array State. As of now, Mu Chen had already mastered the Heart Array State to the point of perfection. According to his estimation, the level of his Heart Array State should be considered as a high-leveled Heart Array State. Due to entering this kind of state, the scenery from the outside world was seemingly reflected into his heart. This made him feel like he had seemingly reached a perfect level of mastery in this absolute calmness and tranquility.

However, following the increase of his strength, as well as the increase in the grade of the Spiritual Arrays arranged, the benefits that the state had brought him also gradually weakened.

Mu Chen knew that people who had reached Rank 3 Spiritual Array Master would have a chance to comprehend the Heart Array State. However, this kind of state might be only considered as a low grade state in the eyes of those Ancestral Rank Spiritual Array Masters.

However, although the Heart Array State might not be of a high grade, it was a kind of foundation. Spiritual Array Masters that were able to master the Heart Array State to an even higher degree would then be able to comprehend the higher and deeper states.

As Mu Chen sank deeper into the Spiritual Array State, his mind was seemingly peeled off from his body, as he focused on the condensation of Spiritual Seals. He could feel the faint fluctuations of the Spiritual Energy within, as well as a faint linkage that was extremely hard for others to detect.

With a faint thought of his mind, he could see the condensed Spiritual Energy quietly disintegrating and fluttering away. However, without waiting for the Spiritual Energy to dissipate, with another thought, the dissipating Spiritual Energy started to condense and form into Spiritual Seals. In addition, it seemed that the formation this time was even more

condensed. Furthermore, there was some surplus of Spiritual Energy that started to slightly leak out.

The Spiritual Seals that had been formed around Mu Chen's body started to dissipate. While dissipating, the Spiritual Seals started to recondense and take shape.

Formation, dissipation, formation, dissipation.

It had seemingly formed a perfect cycle. Under this kind of cycle, there was no unwanted consumption of Spiritual Energy. Instead, the number of Spiritual Seals present started to quietly increase.

At the same time, extremely huge changes appeared within the Spiritual Energy that had condensed to form the Spiritual Seals.

Mu Chen's mental state was as calm and tranquil as water. He had seemingly sank into this dissipation-condensation cycle. This continued for quite some time. Under this mental state that had not the slightest presence of ripples, there seemed to be the appearance of water droplets dripping down, creating rings and rings of ripples.

Within the depths of his mind, there seemed to be some undulations. There seemed to be an eye-like object blinking slowly due to the ripples, and it appear to open its eye.

At the instant the invisible eye opened, a myriad of living things under this stretch of the world appeared within the heart of Mu Chen.

Fast forward to the fight between Luo Li and the Spirit King.

Xu Huang, Zhao Qingshan and the rest were secretly watching from a distance.

The pleasant green scenery in the further distance, the undulating Spiritual Energy of the world.

That invisible eye examined the world, and everything appeared extremely mysterious and strange to it.

"This is the Heart Eye?"

Murmuring sounds seemed to ring within Mu Chen's heart as the

ripples disappeared. Mu Chen's eyes suddenly opened, those black pupils appeared extremely deep and abstruse. He knew that he could only touch this state temporarily, and was unable to maintain it for long. Therefore, he had to grasp this short duration of time.

His hands suddenly came together to form seals as the Spiritual Seals around his body shattered, seemingly, at the same time. Spiritual Energy rippled as Spiritual Seals condensed and formed almost instantly.

Within a short span of a number of breaths, light erupted from around Mu Chen's body. The number of Spiritual Seals had instantly exceeded two hundred.

The abstruseness of Mu Chen's eyes became increasingly thick. With a wave of his sleeve, hundreds of Spiritual Seals rushed towards the sky, rippling the air as they assimilated with the world. In the next moment, the Spiritual Energy of this stretch of the world instantly turned berserk. Everyone could see, as of now, an incomparably gigantic glowing array slowly taking shape in front of Mu Chen.

In the next moment, a Spiritual Energy hurricane seemed to blow within this stretch of the world. Spiritual Energy that was visible to the naked eye converged to form a glowing river, endlessly streaming and condensing towards the gigantic glowing array.

"That's a Spiritual Array?"

In the distance, Xu Huan, Zhao Qingshan and the rest looked towards the incomparably gigantic Spiritual Array. A jolt went through their hearts as shock erupted from their eyes. A Spiritual Array that possessed such influence and power was at least a 5th ranked Spiritual Array!

Could it be that the current Mu Chen was actually able to arrange a Spiritual Array of such a rank? How is that possible!?

Chapter 313: The Might of Twin Lotus

As the gigantic light array in the air slowly took shape, countless Spiritual Energy light rays explosively shot out. After mutually weaving and taking shape, they formed an outline of an incomparably gigantic and complicated array diagram.

Bang! Bang!

The Spiritual Energy within this stretch of the world turned rebellious, as Spiritual Energy erupted forth akin to streaks of light, endlessly streaming and pouring into the Spiritual Array.

In the front, the Spirit King, who was relying on his mad and violent attacks to force the defending Luo Li to ceasely retreat, suddenly saw the gigantic Spiritual Array from in the sky before it. As it was formed by the convergence of the Spiritual Energy of the world, it was naturally extremely sensitive to such a gigantic gathering of Spiritual Energy. From the Spiritual Array, it could sense a considerably astonishing amount of power within it.

This made it feel somewhat uneasy.

Roar!

While roaring, it grabbed a gigantic boulder hundreds of metres large. Spiritual Energy enveloped the boulder, before the Spirit King violently threw it, shooting it towards the glowing array that was gradually taking shape in an attempt to destroy it.

Swish!

However, just as the gigantic boulder was thrown, a gigantic azure-glowing sword howled. It proceeded to cut the gigantic boulder up, transforming into broken rocks that blotted the skies as they dropped down.

The Spirit King furiously roared. It fanned its giant palm out once again, carrying along frightening Spiritual Energy as it furiously smashed down towards the young girl that was blocking it all, along with a single trace of

mercy.

Under its berserk attack, the glowing sword surrounding Luo Li's body gradually shrank, as it was obviously being thoroughly suppressed. On the jade-like hand that was tightly gripping the longsword, fresh blood started to ooze out. However, she tightly bit her lip, refusing to allow the Spirit King to pass her.

How could blocking the Spirit King's terrifying attacks by oneself be an easy matter, even with a Divine Weapon like the Luo Shen Sword in her hand? However, it was, after all, still in its sealed state.

However, regardless of everything, she would never retreat, as Mu Chen was behind her. The current him obviously could not be agitated or disrupted.

Roar!

The Spirit King furiously roared as its attacks became increasingly erratic. The sword glow that enveloped Luo Li's body gradually became teetering on the brink of collapse.

In the sky behind her, the light array became all the more brighter. Following the gradual completion of the outline of the diagram, the Spiritual Array faintly took shape. From the looks of it, it seemed like a gigantic black lotus.

"Is that the Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array?" Upon seeing this Spiritual Array that was not considered foreign, the foreheads of Xu Huang and the rest wrinkled. They naturally knew that Mu Chen had used this array in his exchange with Li Xuantong. Although it was formidable, it was, seemingly, still a 4th Rank Spiritual Array. However, how could it have such prestige and power? If it was a Rank 4 Spiritual Array, it would obviously be a very stupid thing to use it to deal with this Spirit King.

"No..."

Xu Huang's eyes suddenly narrowed, as he could see another glowing outline beside the already formed black lotus glowing array. Unexpectedly, it was another gigantic black glowing lotus.

Unexpectedly, this Spiritual Array had two black lotuses.

Although from the looks of it, it was just another black lotus. However, its might and power had a gargantuan change. Although Xu Huan wasn't a Spiritual Array Master, he was able to feel that this current Spiritual Array was absolutely something that the previous "Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array" could not compare to.

'No wonder, the Spiritual Array that this fellow displayed before, was not complete...' Xu Huang thought. Naturally, he did not assume that this Spiritual Array was created by Mu Chen. He was very clear that this kind of capability was absolutely not something that Mu Chen could possess. Therefore, there was only one reason, which was that the Spiritual Array that Mu Chen had displayed before, was not complete.

The two black lotuses slowly revolved in the air, as the entire stretch of the world seemed to turn much darker and deeper, with gales suddenly erupting.

Mu Chen raised his head to look at the formed Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array, before exhaling deeply, spitting out a lump of white air. Following his increasing profundity in his attainments in Spiritual Arrays, his feelings and comprehension of the "Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array" had obviously grown deeper. If not, he would not dare to try to use it in a situation like this.

As of now, he had already managed to feel the depths of the Spiritual Array that was once mysterious and unfathomable in his eyes. According to his estimates, the Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array should have four parts. If he could complete the entire formation, there should be four black lotuses appearing. Naturally, that form of the Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array, might be a 7th Rank Spiritual Array. Its might would be terrifying enough to scare people. Even a Heavenly Completion Stage expert would turn to dust under a Spiritual Array of that rank.

The current Mu Chen still did not have the capability to reach that level. Even the second black lotus that he had condensed was due to him

touching the “Heart Eye” state by chance. Therefore, wanting all four lotuses to appear would obviously need some time.

“Luo Li.”

Mu Chen’s pupils that seemingly reflected the image of the two black lotuses looked towards the berserking Spirit King. A cold glint surfaced in his eyes as he gently spoke out.

Upon hearing Mu Chen’s voice, Luo Li slightly nodded her beautiful head before her lovable figure swiftly retreated. Landing beside Mu Chen, her hand was still gripping her longsword, taking precautions, while staring at the Spirit King.

Roar!

After losing the obstruction, the Spirit King turned its eyes, sparkling with brilliance, at Mu Chen. Without the slightest degree of hesitation, it immediately stepped forward with a earth moving and mountain shaking pace. As it furiously stepped over the land, its figure rushed towards the horizon, akin to a radiant meteor. Carrying a frightening impact force, it violently arrived before Mu Chen.

Bang! Rumble!

Under the impact, the mountain peak that Mu Chen and Luo Li were standing on collapsed, and the surrounding earth caved in.

Mu Chen’s expression remained indifferent. With a change of his hand seals, the two gigantic black lotuses in the air suddenly faced towards each other. Spiritual Energy erratically condensed within the centre of the lotuses before they shot out.

Bang!

Two glowing Spiritual Energy pillars that seemed almost corporeal collided at the same time. However, there wasn’t any repulsion nor explosion. Instead, they rapidly fused together. In a short span of a few breaths, the brilliance faded. Even the gigantic Spiritual Arrays had slightly dissipated.

While this happened, a 3 metre large glowing lotus appeared. Although this glowing lotus wasn't large, the fluctuations radiating from it were considerably terrifying. The glowing lotus contracted and expanded, akin to a beating heart, while giving off a demonic and strange sensation.

Mu Chen looked at the 3 metre high demonic and strange glowing lotus. With a flick of his finger, the glowing lotus explosively shot out. Creating a streak of light as it travelled, it rushed towards the gigantic radiant meteor that was headed towards Mu Chen.

The speed of the two were exceedingly quick. Within a short span of a number of breaths, they were about to collide high in the sky.

However, at the instant they were about to collide, a cold smile rose from the corner of Mu Chen's mouth as his palm suddenly clenched.

Boom!

The radiant meteor that the Spirit King had transformed into suddenly, intensely, vibrated. Within the Spirit King's body, there seemed to be a dark black fire starting to burn as it scuttled around.

Those black flames were not thick. However, with the body of the Spirit King that was brimming with Spiritual Energy, it created quite a big ruckus. As the black flames moved about, it started to continuously ignite and burn the Spiritual Energy.

This was the lump of black flames that Mu Chen had sneakily placed into the Spirit Crystal. When the Spirit King had devoured it into its body, it had also devoured the black flames. Although the Spirit King had boundless Spiritual Energy, and these black flames were incapable of doing any harm to it, it had given Mu Chen an advantage in this battle.

Indeed, as what Mu Chen had expected, the black flames were quickly annihilated the endless streams of Spiritual Energy. However, the eye-piercing brilliance around the Spirit King's body still turned dim for an instant.

It was at this very instant that the demonic and strange glowing lotus shot violently towards the Spirit King's chest.

Bang!

A gigantic and clear sound resonated across the stretch of the world as Spiritual Energy shockwaves swept out. Spiritual Energy hurricanes had seemingly erupted in this stretch of the world, as countless giant rocks were swept into the air, before being shattered into dust.

The gigantic body of the Spirit King shot backwards, towards the far distance, under the terrified gazes of several people, before heavily impacting the ground. The entire mountain range vibrated at this instant, as a number of mountain peaks in the distance were smashed till they became flat ground. The Spirit King's gigantic body was within the rubble.

Xu Huang, Zhao Qingshan and the rest casted their gazes over. After being smashed head-on by such a formidable Spiritual Array, even the Spirit King could not ignore such damage, right?

Under their attentive gazes, the distant mountain range started to shake again. Within the dust that blotted the skies, a gigantic figure started to stagger and stand up.

"It's still alive!"

A tremor shook their hearts; however, there was some unexpected rejoice in them.

Mu Chen stood at the mountain peak and fixed his eyes on the gigantic figure in the distance that had stood up within the dust that blotted the sky. However, there wasn't even the slightest degree of fluctuation on that handsome and outstanding face as he quietly continued to watch it.

As the dust slowly scattered, the Spirit King came into view once again. However, as of now, it did not have the boldness and powerful feeling it previously had. On its chest was a foot long hole, while its surroundings were filled with cracks. Those cracks had seemingly crawled over half of its body. There was even one crack that extended from its chest all the way to the eye-piercing crystal on his forehead.

Xu Huang and the rest had similarly noticed this spectacle, and unable to control themselves, the corner of their mouths twitched. Terror even

flashed within Mu Fengyang's eyes, as no one could have thought that Mu Chen was actually able to injure the Spirit King to such a degree.

Boom!

The Spirit King faced the sky and roared, as it could feel the heavy injuries that it had suffered. The Spiritual Energy was rapidly escaping from it. Although it did not have the sensory organs to feel pain, the escaping Spiritual Energy made it feel anger and fury.

The earth trembled again as it suddenly rushed forward in a berserk fashion. It's target was, obviously, Mu Chen.

Seeing the aggressive and overbearing Spirit King rushing over, Mu Chen's forehead slightly wrinkled. Although the latter had suffered serious injuries, an injured tiger was still dangerous. Regardless of whatever happened, the Spirit King was still an existence comparable to a Heavenly Completion Stage expert. If not for the black flames he had hidden within the Spirit King's body that had done miraculous work, Mu Chen might not have been able to injure it to such a degree.

He tightly clenched his hands as Spiritual Energy burning with black flames erupted from his body. However, at this moment, a cold and jade-like hand grabbed him. Luo Li gave him a faint smile, before speaking in a gentle voice, "Can you let me finish this up?"

She was able to see that Mu Chen's current consumption was enormous. Although the Spirit King had suffered serious injuries, the assault before its death would also be very terrifying. In her case, she was more suitable to finish it than Mu Chen.

Hearing her words, Mu Chen paused for a bit, before smiling while nodding his head.

Luo Li started to slowly walk forward. Her jade-like hand that was gripping the Luo Shen Sword slowly rose up, pointing towards the incoming Spirit King. Within those beautiful eyes, a swift and fierce shadow was condensed within.

Mu Chen was able to feel that the Spiritual Energy of this region of the

world was fleeing and scattered, as it was unable to withstand the Sword Qi radiating from the body of Luo Li's sword.

This Sword Qi even made Mu Chen's heart palpitate and jump. Looking at the exquisite, delicate and absolutely beautiful face that was akin to chinaware, the little bit of graveness on his face grew by a bit more.

Luo Li had planned to thoroughly destroy the Spirit King before her eyes.

Chapter 314: Killing the Spirit King

Sword Qi that was akin to waves undulated across this stretch of the world. This Sword Qi was not extremely swift not fierce, however it gave people a heart palpitating feeling, as if they would be chopped into bits if there were to move an inch.

Mu Chen gazed in astonishment at the girl before him. Luo Li's strength had somewhat exceeded his expectations. However, after thinking about it, he gave a mocking laugh at himself. Luo Li's talent was no less than his own. In addition, she was more dedicated to training than he was. If not for him possessing the ability of a Spiritual Array Master, he would truly not dare to pat his chest and say that he could genuinely suppress Luo Li in a real fight.

Luo Li's eyes tightly locked onto the Spirit King that was explosively shooting towards them. At this moment, unexpectedly, her eyes started to slowly close. In the next instant, the longsword in her hand suddenly slashed down.

Humm!

The instant when her sword slashed down, the earth before her suddenly split open. The Sword Qi erratically condensed around the longsword. In a short span of a few breaths, all of Sword Qi had condensed onto the edge of the sword.

Chi!

The sword edge rippled and undulated, making the longsword look akin to being made by waves. In the next instant, an azure ray of light suddenly swept out.

The azure light beam was so quick that one's naked eye would not be able to catch it. Everyone could only see a ray of light shoot past, before hearing a sonic boom that filled the skies. Even the air was split into two. Within the middle, there seemed to be residual undulating Sword Qi, causing the air to separate, unable to fuse back

The temperature of that stretch of the world appeared to instantly drop at this moment.

Mu Chen's eyes suddenly narrowed, the pores across his entire body tightened up when Luo Li's sword slashed down. This was a reaction that would happen when he was faced with an extremely dangerous sensation.

Luo Li's slash wasn't overly magnificent. However, the frightening power contained under the tranquility would make other people feel horrified.

Mu Chen raised his head to look at the azure ray of light that was formed by the Sword Qi condensed to the pinnacle point, which had already chopped down on the body of the Spirit King, before passing through it.

The mountain range in the distance was successively split into two. The areas that were split apart were as glossy and reflective as a mirror.

A mountain range that was at least a thousand feet long was quietly sliced apart.

Bang! Rumble!

The gigantic Spirit King was still violently rushing towards Mu Chen and Luo Li, as if it had not received the slightest bit of damage.

A shade of paleness appeared on Luo Li's face. Her lovable figure faintly trembled, before a hand came from behind hand embraced her waist. Tilting her head, she sent a faint smile towards Mu Chen.

Mu Chen pulled her right hand over and looked at the bloodstains that were present. He could not help but feel some pain in his heart as he cleaned away the bloodstains. Feeling helpless, he said to her, "Why did you risk your life for this? I'm able to finish this up."

Luo Li smiled; however, she did not say anything as she stared at Mu Chen, who was looking at her dearly.

The two of them had seemingly not cared about the Spirit King that was rushing over.

In an instant, the Spirit King had already arrived. However, just as it was

about to make contact with the mountain peak they were on, its gigantic body suddenly split apart. Turning into two halves, they rumbled as they fell to the sides, causing the mountain peaks below to be leveled into flat ground.

As smoke and dust filled the sky, the shaking of the earth slowly came to a stop.

Mu Chen's eye stared indifferently at the Spirit King that had split apart. The latter's split body rapidly transformed into a crystal, while rapidly shrinking at the same time. After a short span of a number of breaths, the gigantic Spirit King had turned into two clumps of scorching suns, illuminating the entire stretch of the world.

Terrifying Spiritual Energy radiated from within the two halves, and one could faintly discern that the spirit crystal's halves that were present were the ones that the Spirit King had previously eaten. In addition, the purple colour had turned darker, with the Spiritual Energy within even more terrifying.

This was the Spiritual Light. However, calling it a Spirit Crystal was clearly more suitable.

Zhao Qingshan and the rest in the distance had regained their clarity, due to the eye-piercing brilliance. Upon doing so, they stared in shock at the two eye piercing brilliance as uncontrollable greed erupted within their eyes.

This was the Spiritual Light at the Spirit King Rank! If they could get that, their Spiritual Empowerment this time would definitely be exceedingly perfect!

They could even take this opportunity to break through to Heavenly Completion Stage!

The eyes of both Zhao Qingshan and Mu Fengyang turned red as they shot a look at each other. With a clench of their teeth, they abruptly shot out. At this time, their intelligence had seemingly dropped. Although Mu Chen and Luo Li were formidable, the bitter battle earlier had clearly left them weakened now. Now was the best chance for them!

Xu Huang's gaze slightly shook as he looked at the eye-piercing brilliance. However, in the end, he only gave a soft sigh and did not take any action, before shooting a cold look at Zhao Qingshan and Mu Fengyang. He could be considered as having interacted with Mu Chen before, and knew how difficult it was to deal with this youth. Therefore, as for this two fellows who wanted to snatch the things in his hand, Xu Huang did not assume that was an intelligent decision.

Although Mu Chen and Luo Li's consumption of Spiritual Energy might be extremely large, with Mu Chen's character, Xu Huang would absolutely not believe there wasn't any contingency plans prepared.

In the far distance, Mu Chen embraced Luo Li; however, a coldness blanketed his black pupils. Looking at the two figures explosively shooting over, a mocking arc appeared from the corner of his mouth.

Luo Li had also discovered their actions, as chilling intent surfaced on her lovable face on the spot.

"You two have finally watch enough, huh?" Mu Chen sent an indifferent smile towards the two incoming people while speaking out.

Zhao Qingshan's and Mu Fengyang eye's sparkled; however, they appeared to be unwilling to look at Mu Chen. Obviously, when the latter had given the Spirit King serious injuries, it had given them great pressure at the same time. At this time, they did not dare to underestimate him, like they previously did.

"Snatch the Spiritual Light and split up!" With a low roar, Zhao Qingshan shot towards the Spiritual Light on the left, while Mu Fengyang did so to the right.

Mu Chen coldly stared at them. With a clench of his palm, a metal ball full of potholes appeared in his hands. With a flick, the metal ball shot out. Instantly, a myriad of colours blossomed as an incomparably gigantic Spiritual Array immediately condensed. Extending out, it enveloped the locations where the two clumps of Spiritual Light were.

He had long discovered the fellows that were spying on them from the distance. However, did they think he would not have a single contingency

plan when he fought the Spirit King till both sides suffered injuries?

"Hmph!"

Zhao Qingshan and Mu Fengyang's incoming figures hurriedly halted in distress. They looked at the Spiritual Array that was expanding with some trepidation. The threat brought by this Spiritual Array was not any weaker than the Spiritual Array that Mu Chen had arranged earlier!

If they were insistent on rushing in, they might be instantly enveloped by the Spiritual Array. However, they did not have the confidence to meet with a Spiritual Array of this grade.

"This bastard!"

Mu Fengyang clenched and gnashed his teeth. He never expected Mu Chen would have any contingency plans.

"Let's go!" Clenching his teeth, Zhao Qingshan immediately turned away and abruptly left. The preparation that Mu Chen had, left them without a single chance.

Mu Fengyang was clearly not as decisive as Zhao Qingshan, hesitating for a while before turning to leave.

"Since you're here, then don't leave!"

However, just as Mu Fengyang had just turned his body, the cold voice of Mu Chen had already rang out. As he turned his head back to take a glance, he was dumbstruck to see that the gigantic Spiritual Array had seemingly enveloped over. This immediately frightened him till his soul left his body and without a single trace of fighting intent as he hurriedly fled.

"Hmph!"

Mu Chen coldly snorted. With a move of his body, a dragon roar resounded out, and he disappeared at this moment. In the next instant, he appeared. He was like a spectre that had already appeared behind Mu Fengyang.

"Scram off!"

Mu Cheng's body suddenly erupted with lightning, while his skin appeared to have a faint silvery-metallic look. Clenching his hand, he sent a fist rumbling out.

Bang!

Berserk Spiritual Energy swept out as a white tiger appeared, as though it was condensed by the gale of Mu Chen's fist. Without a single shred of mercy, it rumbled towards Mu Fengyang, who was unable to muster any defense in time.

"You!"

The astonishing Spiritual Energy coming from behind him caused Mu Fengyang's face to turn deathly pale. At this moment, there wasn't enough time for him to even turn around, with the only thing he could do was to wrap his body in the Spirit Armor.

Ding!

Mu Chen's fist violent smashed against the Spirit Armor, instantly causing metallic sounds to ring out and sparks to shoot out. A mouthful of blood violently spurted out from Mu Fengyang, as his body was like a kite with a broken string, instantly dropping to the ground, creating a huge hole in the process.

Mu Fengyang miserably laid at the bottom of the deep hole. Cracks extended out of the armor on his body. This armor was almost shattered by the Spirit King's slap after he attempted to set up Mu Chen. After suffering a violent fist from Mu Chen, it had already reached its limit.

Mu Fengyang spurted mouthfuls of blood. His aura became depressed as terror filled his eyes. He never thought that Mu Chen would be that vicious, attacking just as he said that.

"It's a little too wasteful to use my Spiritual Array on the two of you." Mu Chen said with a cold smile. With a clench of his palm, the metal ball full of potholes returned to his hand.

Mu Chen descended slightly. With a clasp of his hand, a giant boulder the size of a small hill was sucked over. Upon reaching his hand, he

violently smashed it down on the seriously injured Mu Fengyang.

"No!"

As Mu Fengyang screamed out in terror, the giant boulder caused the ground to shake for a while. In the next instant, a streak of light descended from the sky. Piercing the giant boulder, it transported Mu Fengyang, who had already faint from his injuries, out.

As Mu Chen was dealing with Mu Fengyang, Zhao Qingshan had already escaped into the distance. Mu Chen only shot a look, before retracting his gaze. He did not have the intention to chase him, as the current him had truly consumed quite a bit of his strength. Wanting to smash Zhao Qingshan out of the Spiritual Light World might require him to use the metal ball. Obviously, Mu Chen was not willing to do so.

Standing in mid-air, he shot a chilling gaze to a further distance. From there, there were still some people looking towards him. However, when they noticed Mu Chen's gaze shooting over, a cold shiver swept past them before they promptly retreated.

Xu Huang looked at the youth with an imposing manner, standing in the air, before sighing. Gesturing with his hand, he said, "Let's go."

Behind him, Xu Qingqing had also fallen silent as she bit her lip. Staring at the youthful figure, her heart felt uncomfortable, and no one would have imagined that even her most worshipped big brother would not even dare to provoke that fellow's ire.

However, she had no choice but to admit that the current Mu Chen was truly much stronger than a few months ago.

Perhaps, the greatest dark horse in this hunt, would not be Zhao Qingshan, or whoever, but the Mu Chen in front of her.

Chapter 315: Shock

In the air, Mu Chen looked at the figures retreating in succession before quietly taking a breath of relief. Fortunately, the shock created from them killing the Spirit King was too great. If not, it might've been truly hard to force those fellows into retreating today.

Mu Chen turned around and waved his palm. The two lustrous spirit crystals, approximately 1.5 metres long, floated to his front. With a flick of his finger, one of them swept towards Luo Li.

"Half for each of us."

Luo Li smiled sweetly while nodding her small head. With a light hoist of her jade-like hand, she stored her half of the spirit crystal. This was very beneficial to her. With this spirit crystal half, she might be able to obtain quite a few benefits from the Spiritual Light Empowerment.

"Let's go. We should also leave this place. The previous fight was overly intense. We've got to find a place to recuperate." Mu Chen spoke out while storing the other half of the spirit crystal.

Luo Li nodded her head. Without anymore hesitation, the two settled on a direction. With a move of their bodies, they shot towards the distance, and had already disappeared into the horizon within a single breath.

As they left, the mountain range turned calm and peaceful once again. Only the earth was left in a disastrous state, which was the only evidence that an astonishing fight had erupted at that place.

However, when Mu Chen and Luo Li had left, they did not know that the matter about them killing the Spirit King had already created some giant waves.

—Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, Northern Sea Plaza—

Within these last few days, the exceptionally expansive field was seemingly filled to the brim at all times. Countless students had converged there, raising their heads to look at the sky above the field.

There was a gigantic screen located in the center. Within the screen

were the peaks of three gigantic mountains faintly discernable in the clouds. At the top of the peak, one could faintly discern three figures quietly sitting there. An invisible pressure radiated from there, making all the people within the field feel uneasy.

They knew that this was the final point of the hunt. The people there were the final protectors.

And that place, was the final pass of this hunt.

Naturally, only on the final day for the arrival of the big fight would they be able to witness the appearance of that heaven-shockingly great battle.

Before that day, they would not be able to acquire much information of what happened within the hunt.

However, it would seem like there was an exception every time.

The light array that usually did not have any activity suddenly rippled and undulated. This strange movement attracted the surprise of countless students, as gaze after gaze was sent shooting over to see.

“What happened?”

“Could it be that the final stage arrived so quickly?”

Numerous doubtful whispers rang out as everyone had faces brimming with shock and amazement. Obviously, they did not know exactly what this appearance meant.

In the front of the field, and the front of those seats located there, was the seat of Dean Tai Cang. On his left and right were a few Northern Spiritual Heavens Academy Elders. At this time, all of them had raised their heads to look at the rippling and undulating light screen.

There would be Elders specially supervising the hunt from inside. In most circumstances, if not for the final pass, the light screen would only show absolutely important information that happened within.

As doubtful gazes converged on the rippling light screen, it finally formed a clear image of a range of mountains. However, at this time, the mountain range was shaking. A radiant giant, approximately 300 metres

high, towered over as tyrannical Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiated out, appearing and feeling extremely shocking.

"That's a Spirit King?!"

As the giant appeared, voices of shock instantly rang out from within the field, while the faces of quite a few people had intense changes. Although the majority of the people here hadn't participated in the hunt before, they had some consideration to gain some knowledge over the past few days. Naturally, they also knew what a so-called 'Spirit King' meant.

"They've actually lured a Spirit King out?"

It was not only them that were shocked. Even a few Elders stilling in the front were astonished. However, their foreheads started to wrinkle as they muttered, "Why does this Spirit King look weaker?"

"This is a Spirit King that was recently born." Dean Tai Cang's eyes, which were akin to the depths of the universe, congealed on the giant within the light screen and replied with a smile.

Only at this moment did the Elders have a flash of insight. Full of interest, they turned and looked over. Even if this was a recently-born Spirit King, it might not be something that those students could handle. They started to wonder which unfortunate little brats had met with it.

As the light screen condensed, two figures became increasingly clear on the mountain peak in front of the Spirit King. When everyone was able to clearly see their appearances, shocked voices instantly erupted out.

"That's the Freshman called Mu Chen!"

"The beautiful girl beside him should be called Luo Li, right? Fifteenth on the Heavenly Rankings. The two of them actually dared to challenge a Spirit King?"

The two figures were recognized very quickly, and at once, the entire field was in an uproar. Everyone had a face of shock, as this had obviously exceeded their expectations by far.

At the corner of the field, Ye Qingling, Zhou Ling and the rest of the

Goddess Luo Association opened their mouths wide as they stared at the two in the light array with strange faces. Although they knew that Mu Chen would not be content in the hunt, they never thought that he would actually bring Luo Li to deal with a Spirit King.

That was a tyrannical existence that was comparable to a Heavenly Completion Stage!

Under countless shocked gazes, the light screen flashed. The big battle had already erupted. As the picture flashed, the earth moved and the mountains shook, as both parties had already launched their attacks.

At the pictures of the combat continuously flashed. The students in the field, whose faces were filled with astonishment, started to slowly change grave, bit by bit, with even some terrified shadows erupting out in the end.

They saw the strong and powerful Spirit King unexpectedly being forced into retreating.

The final picture displayed on the screen rested on the slash that Luo Li sent out. As the azure ray of light shot out, the earth moved and the mountains shook. In that instant, the gigantic Spirit King was sliced into two, rumbling as its halves fell.

While the light screen was vibrating, the entire field had turned deathly silent.

That Spirit King, was unexpectedly, truly killed by Mu Chen's and Luo Li's combined attacks!

At the seats in the front, the various Elders all had astonishment and shock on their faces. Dean Tai Cang's eyes congealed on the light screen and looked towards the thin figure within. A trace of astonishment flashed within his eyes before he said in a soft voice, "This girl is, unexpectedly, a member of the Luo Shen Clan? That sword in her hand, could it be the Luo Shen Sword? Isn't that the most valuable treasure of the Luo Shen Clan?"

"Dean, her grandfather should be the Luo Tianshen." said a white-haired old man beside Dean Tai Cang. From his appearance, impressively, it was

the old man that Mu Chen and Luo Li had met when they went to the Spiritual Values Hall for the first time.

"The granddaughter of Luo Tianshen?" the astonishment within Dean Tai Cang's eyes increased. Unable to resist, he laughed out and said, "That old fellow was actually willing to allow his precious granddaughter train in our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?"

"However, this little miss' talent is indeed extremely good. Being able to control the Luo Shen Sword at such an age shows that she's not simple."

Dean Tai Cang's vision suddenly shifted to look towards Mu Chen's figure before saying out, "That little fellow's called Mu Chen, right? Haha, the incidents within the Spiritual Road should've been caused by him, right?"

The old man beside him smiled, while nodding his head as he replied, "The aftermath caused by that incident wasn't small, okay? The Saint Spiritual Academy was determined to killing him then as a penalty; however, it was you, Dean, that didn't accept that. This is the only reason why he was only expelled."

Dean Tai Cang gave a faint smile before saying , "This little fellow's also a genius that is hard to come by. With additional guidance, he might not be inferior to Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong. The incident then was clearly due to Saint Spiritual Academy breaking some rules, and secretly giving that youth called Ji Xuan some hidden assistance. Did they really think that they could hide it from everyone? The only ones they could blame was themselves for the result they got in the end."

The white-haired old man nodded his head and said, "They'd taken a fancy for Ji Xuan's talent, and wanted to rely on him to press our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy in the Five Academies Great Competition. In that way, they might be able to obtain the title of the Top Academy."

Dean Tai Cang's eyes faintly narrowed as he continued to stare at the youthful figure in the light screen. Smiling, he muttered, "Although that Ji Xuan is a heaven-sent genius, this Mu Chen is also not simple..."

While the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was flaring up in shock

and astonishment by the pictures within the light screen, it was, similarly, not calm and peaceful within the hunting grounds. This was because the same piece of news had also circulated across the entire Spiritual Light World.

"In the Northwest area, at an Extremely Dangerous Grade gathering point, a Spirit King was killed. The killers were Mu Chen and Luo Li."

Enveloped by vigorous Spiritual Energy, this news instantly resounded across the hunting grounds, causing the faces of innumerable people to change.

A Spirit King... was killed?

The entire hunting grounds shook due to this news. Inconceivable and incredulous expressions erupted on the faces of everyone as they thought, After these last few years, a Spirit King was finally killed by students?

Weren't these Mu Chen and Luo Li only Freshmen? How were they able to accomplish this feat?

Innumerable people looked at each other. If not for the vigorous voices still ringing across the whole world, they would've assumed that it was some illusionary tale they'd heard.

While secretly sighing, they thought, looks like the darkest of all dark horses have already appeared within this hunt.

Within the depths of the hunting grounds, on a desolated plain, a figure was strolling slowly with a long spear on his shoulder. Before him were Spirit Pawns hiding the skies and covering the earth. Smiling, he allowed the Spirit Pawn flood to engulf him.

Bang!

Bright and resplendent golden light rushed towards the sky and swept out akin to an incomparably overbearing giant tide. The Spirit Pawns that hid the sky and covered the earth, as well as a large quantity of Spirit Generals, were immediately turned into dust at this instant, leaving behind fluttering Spiritual Lights that blotted the skies.

As the figure appeared once again, with a wave of his sleeve, he retrieved the Spiritual Lights that blotted the sky. Raising his head, his hair draped over his shoulder as a disdainful aura prevaded out, looking extremely abnormal.

That was precisely Shen Cangsheng.

Staring at the northwest direction, he gave a smile as he thought, Mu Chen, he is indeed an extremely interesting fellow; however, will he be able to climb up to the Spiritual Light platform at the final pass?

Similarly, at the same time, in the depths of a mountain peak, Li Xuantong stood tall, with his hands behind his back. He had also looked towards the northwest direction; however, there wasn't much fluctuations on that handsome face. Gazing at the direction for quite a while, he finally turned around, without saying even a single word.

Bang!

He Yao's ferocious stomp caused a giant boulder, akin to a small mountain, to turn into dust. His eyes turned dark, while the crowd behind him trembled and shut their mouths, not daring to speaking any words.

"He actually managed to kill a Spirit King. He truly has some ability..."

Hu Yao coldly smiled, before turning around and walking towards the depths, before his chilling voice slowly rang out.

"You've indeed saved me some trouble. Since that's the case, I'll kindly accept the Spiritual Light at the Spirit King level that's in you hands, then."

Chapter 316: Breakthrough

The craze brought forth by the killing of a Spiritual King continued within the hunting grounds. There were some people who exclaimed in admiration, others with envy. There were even some who doubted it. However, regardless of that, everyone knew that the two Freshmen, one named Mu Chen and the other named Luo Li, might become the most dazzling dark horses in this hunt.

Within this hunt that did not lack any dark horses, they had obviously walked to the apex position. They had even stolen the limelight from Zhao Qingshan, whose ample fame was suppressed by them, without any room for discussion.

However, while the entire hunting grounds was abuzz with the news of the killing of a Spiritual King, Mu Chen and Luo Li disappeared without a trace. For almost a day, there was still no one that had seen them.

This made everyone guess that the two might have suffered overly serious injuries. After all, regardless of what method they used, wanting to kill a Spirit King without playing any price was obviously an impossibility.

On a lone peak within a desolated area of the Spiritual Light World, Luo Li stood tall on the mountain summit, her clear and limpid pupils would vigilantly search in all directions, from time to time. Only after detecting no abnormal activity did she turn around and look towards her back. There sat a youth on top of a giant boulder, whose eyes were tightly shut while his Spiritual Energy fluctuations were undulating and being unstable.

Different from the guesses of the outside world, the reason why the two of them had not shown up for a day was not due to injuries. Although their consumption was indeed extremely large due to the fight with the Spirit King, the injuries they suffered had completely recovered after a short span of less than a day's worth of time.

The reason why they were delayed in showing up was due to Mu Chen reaching a short-of-a-breakthrough state after experiencing that big

battle.

After training bitterly in the Lightning Territory, Mu Chen's strength had increased; however, he was still unable to successfully breakthrough to Heavenly Transformation Stage. He could only be considered as a Quasi-Heavenly Transformation Stage. Although the difference between the two was only a single word, the disparity was pretty big.

Only those that could truly step pass that stage would be able to discover the marvels of the Heavenly Transformation Stage, and would possess the strength of a genuine Heavenly Transformation Stage.

For the past few days, Mu Chen had always been lingering with the feeling of breaking through. However, after recovering from this great battle, this marvelous feeling had involuntarily arisen, causing extreme joy and happiness within Mu Chen's heart.

This kind of breakthrough was a kind of enlightenment, and was unrelated to how overbearing one's Spiritual Energy was. Mu Chen knew that just based on the degree of overbearingness of his Spiritual Energy, he was comparable to a Heavenly Transformation expert. However, if he did not break pass this level, he could only be classified as having more vigorous and dense Spiritual Energy than a normal Heavenly Fusion Stage. As for wanting to experience the marvels of the Heavenly Transformation Stage, he should not even consider thinking about it.

Although this was a small step, wanting to step past it was not an easy task.

Mu Chen quietly sat cross-legged on top of the green boulder, allowing the Spiritual Energy around his body to undulate indefinitely. Contrary to that, his breathing was abnormally calm and tranquil, as if there was not a single trace of influence from his Spiritual Energy.

Within his body, Spiritual Energy was churning and boiling. However, he did not give any particular care to control it; instead, he let it automatically circulate.

Within his aurasea, his Divine Soul was seated down while radiating light. Halos continuously erupt out from the surface of the Divine Soul,

while a peculiar fluctuation was faintly discernable as it radiated out.

The Divine Soul slowly opened its eyes, revealing eyes that were akin to the night sky, looking exceptionally deep. Slowly spreading out its hands, it looked akin to trying to hug the world.

Rumble!

In the outside world, a low and deep rumble resound as gales started to erupt.

The surface of the Divine Soul turned increasingly radiant. Its small body was starting to expand, little by little. In a short period of time, it had already made contact with the edges of the aurasea.

Upon contact, a sluggish and astringent feeling transmitted out, causing the Divine Soul to have difficulty moving.

The Divine Soul peacefully sat motionless, sinking into the fantastic feeling that resonated within the heavens and the earth. In the next moment, a force of absorption started to radiate out in the outside world. It tugged at Mu Chen's Divine Soul, causing it to break free from the aurasea bit by bit, while being increasingly unfettered.

A ray of light surfaced on Mu Chen's abdomen, before passing through his body, and shot towards the Spiritual Energy enveloping the sky.

Cry!

A clear ray of light furiously shot out of Mu Chen's Spiritual Energy cover, rushing towards the heavens. This ray was extremely peculiar, as it did not have any Spiritual Energy fluctuations. However, it gave people a feeling that it was unable to be penetrated.

"The Divine Soul leaves the body, and enters the heavens and the earth."

Seeing this spectacle before her, a joyous smile appeared on the corner of Luo Li's mouth. Being able to achieve this step, this meant that Mu Chen had already stepped past his current stage, and had truly promoted to the level of Heavenly Transformation Stage.

The so-called 'Heavenly Transformation Stage' indicated the breaking of

fetters by one's Divine Soul, and was able to enter the heavens and earth. This made one able to conceal one's body at any time, making it hard to detect someone. Even if one suffered an attack, as long as one could assimilate one's body into the heavens and the earth, one could reduce the damage caused by the attack. This was why people of the Heavenly Transformation Stage had far higher resistance to attacks than people of Heavenly Fusion Stage. A large portion wasn't due to becoming more stronger and vigorous, but when receiving an attack. A Heavenly Transformation Stage expert would be able to assimilate with the heavens and earth, dispelling part of the attack.

Brilliant and clear light erupted from the Spiritual Energy cover around Mu Chen, before the fist-sized Divine Soul surfaced. Upon surfacing, it followed the clear ray of light and rushed towards the sky.

When Mu Chen was still in the Heavenly Fusion Stage, his Divine Soul could only leave for a short period of time. In addition, it could not leave far from his body. However, following his promotion to Heavenly Transformation Stage, his Divine Soul had clearly been granted more freedom. This was the reason why the fetters binding it had become increasingly less.

As the Divine Soul sat within that clear light pillar, it spread out its hands, akin to soaring through the world. At this time, a deeply drunk expression appeared on the little guy's face.

Mu Chen's body had also blossomed with radiance. When Luo Li looked over, she was able to see him sitting there. However, if she only used her senses and relied on Spiritual Energy fluctuations, she would discover that the place was empty and devoid of people. Even if she was to specifically examine that area where he was at, she would not find the slightest trace of him.

Obviously, Mu Chen had already stepped passed this stage.

In the sky, the clear light pillar gradually dissipated. Mu Chen's Divine Soul swept over, following the Spiritual Energy cover and drilled into his body, finally sitting down within his aurasea again.

His tightly shut eyes started to slowly open at this instant. His black pupils sparkled with brilliance akin to a scorching sun before dissipating, bit by bit.

“Ah!”

Mu Chen raised his head. Unable to contain the extreme feeling of carefreeness in his heart, he faced the sky and roared. His roar was akin to thunder, rolling around in this stretch of the world as it expanded out.

Standing up, he could feel that his body had become much more lithe and graceful. Although the Spiritual Energy within his body did not have an overly clear increase, he was able to feel that he had become much stronger.

The current him had an even deeper resonance within the heavens and earth. He was able to absorb the Spiritual Energy from the world much more easily. In addition, the degree of resonance and fusion had far exceeded his previous degree.

From Quasi-Heavenly Transformation Stage to Heavenly Transformation Stage. Mu Chen had finally stepped across this gap.

“Congratulations, you now possess the strength of a Heavenly Transformation Stage.” said Luo Li as she gently strutted over. Walking to his front, her absolutely beautiful, loveable face was brimming with a smiling expression.

“I’m only at the Heavenly Transformation Stage. This is far from enough.” replied Mu Chen with a faint smile. He had told the girl in front of him before that he would become an expert that was at the apex of the world. The current him clearly still had an extremely far distance from that step.

“We should leave first and calculate the time. Perhaps this hunt should be nearing its end. We still have to reach the deepest parts.” said Luo Li.

Mu Chen nodded his head in approval. The true protectors were stationed in the deepest part. Although they had obtained the Spirit King’s Spirit Crystal, if they were unable to fight their way through the final pass,

not only would it be of absolutely no use, all the other students that had obtained Spiritual Lights from this hunt would have to return empty-handed.

Mu Chen smacked his lips and hurriedly felt some pressure and stress. Although he had yet to see those three final protectors, according to his estimates, their strength might even be stronger than that Spiritual King. After all, not only did they possess vigorous Spiritual Power, they still had rich combat experience, as well as various kinds of powerful methods.

All the participating students in this hunt might feel exceedingly pressured to defeat them.

Mu Chen sighed and lamented, before grabbing hold of Luo Li's small hand. The two of them swiftly shot forward. Taking out the map to identify their location, they swept towards the southeast.

After approximately an hour, the two of them slowed down, before descending on a nearby hill. There was a number of figures waiting for them. They were Wang Tong, An Ran and the rest. This was the place that they had previously decided to rendezvous.

Upon seeing Mu Chen and Luo Li's figures, Wang Tong and the rest instantly breathed a sigh of relief as they felt a heavy burden drop off their shoulders. They had already waited there for an entire day.

"You've finally appeared. If you two didn't appear, we'd all assume that something happened to you two." Wang Tong said while wiping away the cold sweat on his forehead.

Mu Chen smiled and replied, "Let's rest here awhile and delay a bit of time."

"You two are now famous people within the hunting grounds. Do you know how many people were looking for you?" Wang Tong said in a low voice.

"What's the matter?" asked Mu Chen with concern.

"The matter of you two killing the Spirit King has already spread throughout the hunting grounds. Everyone one knows that you two have

the Spirit King's Spirit Crystal in your hands. If they are able to snatch it from your hands, they would be able to achieve perfection in their Spiritual Light Empowerment this time." An Ran replied with a smile.

"Therefore, there are, currently, quite a few people that have plans against you two. Before you two arrived, all of us assumed that something had happened to you."

Mu Chen faintly wrinkled his brows, as he never imagined that there was actually such trouble waiting for them. However, he only gestured with his hands while saying, "It's alright. If there are truly blind people wanting to come, they can't blame us for being discourteous."

As he said those finishing those words, he flicked his finger, sending multiple purple-coloured Spirit Crystals shooting out towards Wang Tong and the rest.

"These are Spiritual Lights of Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase Spirit Generals. There's enough for everyone." Mu Chen said with a smile. When he was in the underground world, he had obtained dozens of Spiritual Lights from the Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase Spirit Generals. As of now, it had benefited Wang Tong and the rest.

"Hehe. Thanks very much." Wang Tong and the rest did not act polite and received them with fiery eyes. It was already extremely hard to acquire a high grade Spiritual Light.

"Let's go. We'll head towards the deepest part of the hunting grounds."

Mu Chen said while gesturing with his hands, while casually asking, "Is there any news that's more important than that?"

Wang Tong thought for a moment, before grinning while replying, "Yes. It's said that He Yao, who is rank 4 on the Heavenly Ranks, had sent a challenge towards Su Xuan, who is rank 3. The fight would be at the base of the Spiritual Light Mountain. The absolute majority of people are now currently heading over there."

Upon hearing that, Mu Chen's eyes abruptly contracted. So, that fellow was unable to endure it any longer?

Chapter 317: Spiritual Light Mountain

As time continued to pass till this point, the atmosphere of the hunting grounds had already completely erupted. Countless students went hunting berserkly for gathering points, while those that had some harvest would hurriedly rush to the deepest part of the hunting grounds. Everyone was very clear that regardless of how much they did their utmost in here, if they were unable to clear the final pass, their earlier hard work would be all for naught. It was said that the final protectors were the three Great Generals of the Punishment Hall. They were the most influential people in the apex of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. At that time, Shen Cangsheng, and Li Xuantong were perhaps similar to Mu Chen back then when they were just freshmens, staring at the back of those peak existences.

The hunts in the past only had one protector; however, this year, the difficult had increased. Facing the obstruction by the three Great Generals, even if Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong were to collaborate, it would still be a hard thing for them to fight their way through.

This point was the worry within the hearts of many people. However, having reached such a point, there was absolutely no point in thinking and worrying at random about this. Everything had to depend on the start of that large battle before it could be reconsidered.

Mu Chen and the rest proceeded to head towards the depths of the hunting grounds. On the way, they did not stop once, even if they were to pass by any gathering points. They had already harvested to their maximum limit, and normal gathering points were already not enough to spark the slightest bit of interest.

Using their full-speed, they had already entered the depths of the hunting grounds after a day. As they entered this region, they were able to sense the fiery atmosphere that was only present there.

Whooshing sounds seemed to endlessly ring across the sky as everyone headed towards the same direction at full speed.

On the top of a lone peak, Mu Chen looked at the figures that blotted the skies, before narrowing his eyes while turning towards the deeper depths. A faint cold glint started to circulate within those pair of black pupils.

Along the way, the news that they had gathered grew more and more. Now, he had also started to understand why He Yao wanted to take action against Su Xuan. She had a gentle temperament, and did not have a particular love for combat. Although she was ranked 3rd on the Heavenly Rankings, she did not pay special attention to it. If any possessed ample strength and wanted to take it from her, she might've even taken the initiative to hand it over.

Therefore, He Yao sending out the challenge was clearly not because he was eyeing the 3rd rank on the Heavenly Rankings that Su Xuan held.

He wanted to rely on this action to force Mu Chen, who had disappeared for a day, out. The driving force for this was sufficient, as Mu Chen had destroyed the main headquarters of the Demon Gate, which caused He Yao to lose face. Added with the fact that Mu Chen had a Spirit King's Spirit Crystal with him now, these were already ample reasons for the former to take action.

"So, he did all of this to deal with me." Mu Chen said with a faint smile.

"That He Yao wants to challenge Senior Sister Su Xuan at the bottom of the Spiritual Light Mountain. I think that he did this to lure you out." Luo Li said in a soft voice, before continuing, "Looks like he's very worried that you'll find a place to arrange a large quantity of Spiritual Arrays for him to fall into."

Mu Chen nodded his head in approval. This He Yao truly was discreet, and was afraid of Mu Chen having plans against him while hiding this intent. Therefore, he was willing to take the initiative as an advantage instead of allowing the latter to secretly arrange Spiritual Arrays to deal with him. Using Su Xuan as bait, he wanted to force Mu Chen out. This way, Mu Chen would not be able to arrange his Spiritual Arrays beforehand.

“That fellow truly is deceitful.” Wang Tong said with a grin. They had all faintly heard of the grudges between Mu Chen and He Yao, thus were slightly worried as he asked, “Do you want us three to scout the Spiritual Light Mountain first? As for Su Xuan, this is still in the Spiritual Light World; at most, she would suffer serious injuries and leave the hunt. Her life won’t be threatened.”

Hearing that, Mu Chen shook his head. Looking at the direction of the Spiritual Light Mountain, he replied, “There’s no need. That’s the end point. He Yao would wait for me there. Thus, the fight between him and me would be unavoidable.”

Although he knew that He Yao was always concealing and suppressing his strength, Mu Chen had, similarly, increased his strength by quite a lot since the day of the confrontation at the Demon Gate’s Main Headquarters. If He Yao wanted to suppress him, it might not be an easy task to accomplish.

“Let’s go.”

Without saying anything more, with a wave of his palm, Mu Chen took the lead and sped onwards, with Luo Li and the rest immediately following behind.

As Mu Chen and the group hurriedly rushed over, the depths of the hunting grounds were already filled with a vast crowd. Presently, there was a gigantic mountain, approximately 33 thousand metres tall whose peak rushed towards the heavens, rising straight into the clouds. Its peak was surrounded by a cloudy layer, causing people to be unable to view the scene present there.

This mountain, was Spiritual Light Mountain.

At the peak of this mountain, the three Great Generals of the Punishment Hall were holding guard.

At its base was an extremely spacious platform, which was now packed full with a sea of people. If one were to look across, one would be unable to see the end. Innumerable clamouring noises converged together, with even the cloudy layers in the horizon being seemingly scattered by it.

As of now, within the centre of the Spiritual Light platform was a gigantic stone platform standing erect. It was devoid of people, create an obvious contrast compared to the surrounding sea of people.

Everyone's gazes were seemingly converged on the top of the empty stone platform. On it sat two figures, a female and a male. The male had a head full of long green hair, with an alluring face. The female, wearing a white dress, had a beautiful face that appeared gentle and heart-moving.

These two were influential figures at the peak of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. With such a confrontation, it had naturally caused an abnormal amount of attention.

"He Yao, you've already waited for a day. Are you still not going to take action?" On the platform, Su Xuan spoke out while faintly wrinkling her slim eyebrows. Her eyes were filled with some chilliness as she stared at the green-haired figure in the distance. As her indifferent voice rang out, it carried a tinge of mockery. Being intelligent, she naturally understood the reason why He Yao had sought her.

He Yao gave a faint smile as he replied, "Su Xuan. You've protected that brat from the start to the end. As of now, when you're in trouble, he hides and doesn't dare to show himself. Looks like your eyesight isn't that good."

Su Xuan raised her long and beautiful pupils, the mockery in her eyes increased as she said, "He Yao, there's no need to proclaim so pompously. You're using me to force Mu Chen to appear. Aren't you just scared that he'll arrange some Spiritual Arrays beforehand to deal with you?"

A cold glint flashed past He Yao's face as he replied indifferently, 'You're looking too highly on him. When he appears, I'll naturally make you understand that the headquarters of my Demon's Gate isn't something that can be sliced apart by a waste like him."

"He's able to kill a Spirit King. Can you?" A disdainful arc appeared on Su Xuan's lips as she mocked him.

Hearing her mockery, He Yao tightly clenched his fists. However, his face still remained indifferent as he replied. "That was only just a newly-born Spirit King. He had only managed to get lucky. That isn't something

worth mentioning."

The two people stared at each other on the platform; however, He Yao still had no intention to take action. This made the countless people who had cast their gazes over to feel speechless. However, they were faintly able to discern, and were also able to understand, the motive of the latter. No wonder, this fellow's goal wasn't Su Xuan, but Mu Chen...

If it wasn't for that shocking news about the Spirit King being killed, there might be people who would not understand why He Yao placed Mu Chen as his ultimate goal. However, now they no longer had such thoughts.

As of now, Mu Chen's fame within the hunting grounds might've been even more than He Yao's. This was due to him being the only person to ever kill a Spirit King in the past few years.

On the side of the stone platform, Su Ling'er watched the two people on the stone platform with concern. Beside her, Lin Qing and Guo Xiang were also resting their gazes on the stone platform.

"That fellow wants to force Mu Chen out, before snatching the Spiritual King's Spiritual Light from him." Guo Xiong said in a low voice.

"What should we do?" Upon hearing this, Su Ling'er instantly became slightly anxious. Previously, she had heard her elder sister say that the current He Yao was exceedingly strong, and even she wasn't his opponent. If Mu Chen was truly forced out, wouldn't that be unfortunate?

"We can only wait and see." Lin Qing and Guo Xiong both helplessly sighed. As of now, they did not have any other methods to deal with this situation.

Su Ling'er stomped her little feet and bit her lip as she stared at He Yao on the platform. For the first time, she felt that that fellow made her feel unexpectedly disgusted.

While everyone's gazes were converged on the Spiritual Light platform, on the cloud covered Spiritual Light Mountain, two figures had their hands crossed behind their backs as they stood under the giant trees that

shot through the clouds. Their eyes pierced through the lingering clouds toward the sea of humans at the base of the mountain.

"He Yao's strength has greatly increased. Su Xuan isn't his opponent." said Li Xuantong indifferently as he stared at a figure on the Spiritual Light platform, before continuing, "I don't know whether Mu Chen will appear, since He Yao seems to be aiming directly for him."

Hearing this, Shen Cangsheng smiled. Raising his head, he looked towards the summit of the mountain peak. Curling his lips slightly, he said, " Those three fellows are really strong. It seems slightly impossible for only the two of us to deal with the three of them."

"The three Great Generals. Their boss should be Senior Lin Zheng. I can deal with him; however, it would only end in a draw." said Shen Cangsheng with a slightly regretful tone as he shrugged his shoulders.

Upon hearing this, Li Xuantong's eyes faintly contracted before shooting a look at Shen Cangsheng.This fellow can actually fight evenly with Senior Lin Zheng? He's the strongest person amongst the three Great Generals, and was the previous #1 on the Heavenly Rankings!

"I can also deal with one. Although a victory would be hard to say, I'll not lose." he said slowly.

"That means that we're short one person." said Shen Cangsheng as he wrinkled his brows, before continuing, "Even if we were to have three draws, it would be considered our win. However, it's difficult to find another capable person again. This He Yao doesn't make the cut."

"There are still two people to choose from." Looking at the distance, Li Xuantong said slowly, "Mu Chen and Luo Li. However, in this kind of matter, there clearly needs to be a man to stand up and handle it."

"Mu Chen..."

Shen Cangsheng rubbed his chin and looked towards the the stone platform at the base of the mountain, before saying, "That will depend on whether or not he shows up. If he's able to defeat He Yao, the third slot will be his. I think by then, no other student will oppose that."

“However, if he loses to He Yao, then there’s no other way, and the place can only be given to He Yao to try.”

Li Xuantong faintly nodded his head in approval. This decision determined the interests of all the students. Therefore, even though he didn’t like He Yao, if Mu Chen lost to him, the third slot would be given to the former.

Suddenly, he raised his head to look at the distance. Narrowing his eyes slightly, he said in a soft voice, “He’s here.”

Shen Cangsheng smiled and similarly nodded his head. Shooting his vision brimming with interest at the distance, he stared at the number of streaks of light sweeping over, before muttering, “Next up, we’ll have to see, between him and He Yao, who exactly would be the one to earn the qualifications of the third slot...”

Chapter 318: The Third Spot

At the bottom of the Spiritual Light Mountain, the clamoring of passionate voices rushed through the clouds were ringing clearly in a 100 kilometre radius.

Everyone's gazes converged on the figures of the two on the stone platform. Being the 3rd and 4th rank in the Heavenly Rankings, they could be considered influential people at the apex within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Facing such veteran experts, even the hordes of dark horses that had erupted in the hunting grounds would be unable to easily shake their status.

Thus, their confrontation was, obviously, a matter that would make people's blood boil exceedingly hot.

Under the attentive gazes from the crowd, Su Xuan suddenly stood up, her slender and fully alluring body created miraculous and bewitching curves. Her eyes were filled with chilling intent as she stared at He Yao. An arc started to raise from the corner of her mouth as she said, "He Yao, although your plan is not bad, I won't let you achieve your goal that easily."

"What can you do about it? Don't tell me that you want to defeat me?" asked He Yao with a cold smile.

"I'm clear about Mu Chen's character. Since you've arranged this match, he'll definitely come. Since that's the case, I'll just have you waste some Spiritual Energy." With a clench of her jade-like hand, a unadorned smooth and round jade pearl appeared in a flash, as the sounds of waves started to ripple out.

"I truly am unable to defeat you. However, making you waste energy isn't anything difficult!"

He Yao looked at Su Xuan, whose beautiful face was now frosty while strong Spiritual Energy erupted out from her body. His face started to turn slightly ugly, as he clearly never imagined that Su Xuan would do such an unexpectedly thing.

For the sake of letting Mu Chen obtain some advantage, she was willing to personally take action to waste his strength!

"I warned you!"

He Yao's eyes turned dark as he stood up. Slowly clenching his fists tightly, the expression on his face brought a chill to people's hearts when they saw it.

"You think too highly of that brat. Regardless of what you do for him, within my eyes, he's just a clown jumping on the bridge!" He Yao said with a dense chilling smile. In the next instant, he suddenly took a step forward, and boundless Spiritual Energy, akin to the sea, rushed through the sky. The jade-green Spiritual Energy had seemingly concealed the sky. Under the envelope of this frightening Spiritual Energy, the faces of countless people in the vicinity had intense changes.

"This Spiritual Energy pressure..."

"Did He Yao break through to Heavenly Completion Stage?!"

Startled voices escaped from the mouths of students as the faces of a few outstanding ones had deep shades of graveness, while looking at He Yao's figure, and were being overwhelmed with shock. This degree of Spiritual Energy pressure was absolutely not something that a Heavenly Transformation could possess.

At the edge of the stone platform, Su Ling'er's beautiful face turned slightly pale as she clenched her little hands tightly.No wonder why Elder Sis said that she wasn't He Yao's opponent! She had already discovered it that He Yao's strength had already reached such a degree!

Li Qing and Guo Xiong's faces turned extremely ugly as they thought, This He Yao had concealed this too deeply.

Su Xuan's beautiful eyes stared tightly at He Yao, whose imposing aura had blotted the sky. Her jade-like hand gripped the jade pearl that was sparkling with bright brilliance as she said slowly, "After concealing it for so long, you're still only half a step into Heavenly Completion. Just based on this, I'm afraid that you're unable to compare with Li Xuantong."

“You still dare act tough?!”

As a cold glint flashed within his eyes, He Yao sent a large palm patting out. The Spiritual Energy of the world started to turn tumultuous, before a jade-green streak of light, approximately 300 metres wide, violent smashed down onto Su Xuan without the slightest trace of mercy.

Crash!

With her jade-like hand elevated, an azure water wave swept out from within the jade pearl in her hand, before transforming into a whirlpool that surrounded her.

Bang!

The earth shook as the the water tide that blotted the sky was dispersed by the pat. Su Xuan’s beautiful face turned slightly pale as she hurriedly retreated a number of steps. The gigantic whirlpool that surrounded her had been completely dissipated by the palm in an instant. As of now, her strength was at the peak of Heavenly Transformation Late Stage. This realm looked extremely close to He Yao’s; however, there was quite a bit of disparity between the two.

“Let’s see how many attacks you can receive from me!” roared He Yao as he took a step forward. With the intent of not showing the slightest trace of mercy, he sent another palm patting out. Boundless Spiritual Energy transformed into a giant Spiritual Energy palm before heavily patting down.

The jade pearl in Su Xuan’s hand blossomed with dazzling brilliance as wave after wave of water erupted out. Akin to a waterfall, they enveloped her within.

Bang!

The giant Spiritual Energy palm patted on the water barrier, causing ripples to instantly form and extend out. Although the water barrier did not dissipate, it started to gradually turn smaller.

Su Xuan’s strength was, after all, weaker than He Yao’s. If not for the “Dense Water Spiritual Pearl” in her hand, she might’ve been unable to

continue resisting He Yao's merciless attack.

However, if this continued, being defeated was only a matter of time.

Within the water barrier, Su Xuan bit her lip tightly. Pouring the last of her Spiritual Energy within the "Dense Water Spiritual Pearl", she tried to maintain the water barrier to the longest amount of time possible.

Humm. Humm.

As the water barrier shook, the ripples became increasingly intermittent, and from the looks of it, it was about to break and shatter. Upon seeing this, Su Ling'er's eyes started to turn slightly red, and her lovable face was filled with anxiousness.

Bang!

However, the instant when the water barrier was about to crack and and shatter, a Spiritual Energy ray shot over at lightning speed from a far distance. It violently smashed against the giant Spiritual Palm that was pressing down on the water barrier, shattering it in the process.

"He Yao, you're truly getting more and more incorrigible. The 4th rank of the Heavenly Rankings can be considered soiled by you."

During the time when the Spiritual Energy ray had suddenly swept out, a mockingly cold voice rumbled, becoming akin to thunder as it resounded out, as it rang across the entire region.

Everyone violently raised their heads, only to see a number of figures shoot over from the horizon from far away. After a few breaths, they appeared in the sky above everyone, with the leader, impressively, being Mu Chen!

"Mu Chen! He has arrived!"

"So he's the Mu Chen that killed the Spirit King?"

"Look's like there will be an interesting show to watch."

Following Mu Chen's arrival, the atmosphere within the area instantly flared up as the gazes of countless people turned fiery. As matters stand, Mu Chen had already become the most dazzling dark horse in this hunt,

while He Yao was a veteran influential figure. All of them wondered,In the great fight where the new replaces the old that is about to erupt, how intense will it be?

"Mu Chen, so you've finally dared to show yourself?!" roared He Yao with a cold voice as he stared sinisterly at the youthful figure in the sky that made him feel exceedingly disgusted.

"Haha. I never thought that you'd dread me so much that you'd actually use this kind of method to make me rush here." replied Mu Chen with a faint smile, within his laughing voice, there were hints of unconcealable ridicule.

He Yao stared at Mu Chen. However, the awe-inspiring attitude shown on his face started to gradually turn indifferent. With an indifferent smile, he said, "You're indeed overestimating yourself. However, that's alright. Since you've came, that saves me some trouble. Hand the Spirit Crystal of the Spirit King over to me and scram out of the Spiritual Light World. If you do that, I'll overlook the matter of you destroying the headquarters of my Demon's Gate."

Upon hearing that, Mu Chen started to laugh. With the clench of his fist, the clear,sparkling Spirit Crystal appeared within his hand, its dazzling brilliance was akin to a clump of scorching suns.

As the Spirit Crystal floated within his palm, a mocking arc slowly appeared at the corner of his mouth as he said, "The Spirit Crystal truly is in my hands. However, hand it to you? Who are you considered to be?"

The clamoring noises ringing within this stretch of world had seemingly turned silent at this instant, as countless students were twitched their lips. They never imagined that Mu Chen would be impolite to that extent and completely not give the slightest bit of face towards He Yao.

Hearing Mu Chen's reply, He Yao did not say anything more, and only proceeded to stare at Mu Chen with a gaze that seemed like he wanted to devour the latter.

"When the time comes where I'm stepping on you, I hope that you're able to say those words."

As He Yao's cloudy and sinister voice slowly fluttered out, his fist suddenly clenched tightly. Boundless Spiritual Energy rushed towards the sky, as its jade-green colour filled the horizon, while frightening Spiritual Energy pressure started to pervade out.

He was already unable to endure himself from violently crushing Mu Chen beneath his feet!

Mu Chen's gaze had also started to turn cold and dark as he gestured gently towards Luo Li and the rest with his hands. Upon seeing that, all of them retreated back. Although they knew that He Yao was extremely strong, they were similarly confident when it came to Mu Chen.

Su Xuan had also retreated off the stone platform, and was hurriedly supported by Su Ling'er, who looked towards the two people on the stone platform with some anxiousness. Speaking out, she asked, " Elder Sister, do you think that Mu Chen can really deal with He Yao?"

As of now, He Yao's strength had clearly increased by a great amount, with even Su Xuan being unable to deal with him. Although Mu Chen cannot be judged by the strength shown on the outside, Su Ling'er still felt uneasy and worried.

Previously, at the Demon's Gate Headquarters, Mu Chen was only able to escape with his body intact and in good health due to ample preparation, added with the fact that He Yao did not want to reveal his strength. However, as of now, He Yao had obviously not allowed this apprehension happen again.

"Don't you understand enough of Mu Chen's character?"

Su Xuan said with a gentle smile. Looking at the youthful figure in the sky with her beautiful eyes, she continued speaking, "Since he had appeared here, it would not be that easy for He Yao to defeat him."

When Mu Chen was only at the Heavenly Fusion Stage, he was already able to kill that Bai Xuan, who was at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase. In addition, the former had already stepped into the Heavenly Transformation Stage, as of now.

Upon hearing this, Su Ling'er felt slightly less worried as she raised her head to look at the sky. The hostility and tension building up before the start of the great fight had caused people to be unable to catch their breaths.

Whoosh!

However, just as this kind of hostile and tense atmosphere was about to reach its peak, two rays of light suddenly shot over from the bright and resplendent Spiritual Light Mountain, before appearing on the air above the stone platform.

"It's Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong!"

When the two figures appeared, the atmosphere at this stretch of the world instantly flared up, as each of the gazes looking at them was brimming with excitement and worship.

Within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, only these two people were undeniably the influential figures at the apex in their hearts!

"Haha! It truly is lively here."

Shen Cangsheng exclaimed as he stood in the air, while his long hair scattered around him. He had a firm and unswerving face, with slightly coarse eyebrows. A disdainful aura radiated out of his body, and within its appearance, it was undeniably unable to make people feel the slightest bit of arrogance, as only he had such qualifications.

Contrary to him, Li Xuantong, who stood beside him, did not have much fluctuations on his handsome face. With his hands placed behind his back, he appeared exceedingly free and unaffected.

"You guys, continue fighting your battle."

Shen Cangsheng said as he gestured towards Mu Chen and He Yao with his hand, before turning to look at the crowd. Pointing towards the peak of the mountain, he said, " Everyone should know that the three Great Generals are waiting up there. Previously, I and Li Xuantong had already done an investigation. It very unfortunate; however, I have to inform everyone that the two of us are unable to deal with them."

Upon hearing that, the entire region instantaneously turned silent as countless people looked at one another as they thought,The three Great Generals are actually strong to such a degree? Such that even the the collaboration between Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong is still unable to defeat them?

If this was true, won't that mean that they would fail and return empty-handed from the hunt this time?

The hard effort they had put in for nearly half a month would all be wasted effort?

Upon hearing that, Mu Chen's brows also started to slightly wrinkle. He thought that if even Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong were unable to deal with the three Great Generals and were to be defeated, won't that mean that the Spirit King-grade Spirit Crystal in his hands would lose its usefulness?

"However, there's no need to feel too much despair. According to the rules this time, we are able to have three quotas to break through the last pass."

Shen Cangsheng said with a smile, before continuing his speech, "Which is to say, other than the two of us, there's one more quota. Naturally, this quota would be left for the strongest person amongst you all."

Speaking until here, his gaze fluttered towards Mu Chen and He Yao.

"Is there any benefit in obtaining this quota?" asked Mu Chen with a smile.

Shen Cangsheng pointed towards the sea of students below as he replied, "If you obtain this quota, the hopes of all the people here would be placed on you, as you will become the saviour in their hearts."

"If you're able to pass through the final pass with this hope, you're status within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy would not be lower than either of us."

Hearing the reply, Mu Chen hopeless shrugged his shoulder without showing any interest.

“In addition, according to the rules, if we’re able to pass through the last pass, the three of us are be able to obtain a genuine Spirit King’s Spirit Crystal. Remember, it’s a genuine one, not the Spirit King-grade Spirit Crystal that’s just born, like the one you have.”

“Furthermore, our Spiritual Light Empowerment would be at an even higher degree.”

After he finished speaking, Shen Cangsheng rubbed his chin while looking teasingly at Mu Chen and He Yao. At this instant, the eyes of the both of them instantly became brilliant and dazzling.

“This third slot... is mine!” Taking a step out, He Yao stared chillingly at Mu Chen.

With a smile, Mu Chen replied slowly, “ Scram.”

Chapter 319: Battling He Yao

"Scram!"

When such a clear and direct word sprung from Mu Chen's mouth, He Yao's face instantly turned somewhat twisted, almost wanting to rip the former into shreds. He truly did not know exactly where Mu Chen got all this confidence from and actually be so rampant towards him. Could it be that due to him managing to luckily kill a Spirit King, he possessed enough qualifications to step on He Yao's head?

"You untactful thing!"

A cold and sinister light shot out from He Yao's eyes. Finally, unable to endure it any longer, he sent a fist rumbling out. Boundless Spiritual Energy swept out towards Mu Chen, akin to a giant surging wave.

Bang!

Burning in black flames, Spiritual Energy surged and erupted from Mu Chen's body. Facing He Yao's attack, he did not show the slightest intent to retreat. Similarly, he sent a rumbling fist out, and the astonishing Spiritual Energies of the two violently collided in midair.

A gigantic sound rang out as Spiritual Energy radiated from the point of impact. An ear piercing bang resounded in the air. The Spiritual Energy storm was devastating, and expelled the air from this stretch of the world.

Within this region, scorching fires started to light up within the eyes of countless students as they thought,The two have finally started to fight.

The shock wave swept past Mu Chen's body, shaking and forcing him to retreat a number of steps, while He Yao had only retreated half a step. If the vigorous degree of their Spiritual Energies were compared, the latter had already took half a step into the Heavenly Completion Stage. Even with the Nine Nether Flames fusing with his Spiritual Energy, which allowed Mu Chen's quality to rise to the next step, it was obviously unable to gain any advantage in a head-on clash.

However, facing this, Mu Chen clearly had some expectations, as there

was not a single fluctuation on his tranquil-looking face. A sharp glint started to rise within his black pupils as he locked his gaze onto He Yao.

"Looks like your strength isn't as strong as your mouth!"

After occupying the superior position, He Yao could not help speaking out with a cold laugh. Mu Chen's Spiritual Energy, which was burning in black flames, was somewhat mysterious. Regardless of that, the latter was only at the strength of Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase.

"Isn't it slightly too early to get happy?" Mu Chen replied while slightly raising his eyebrows. One could faintly discern a slightly silvery glow radiating from skin, while there seemed to be a lightning glow spreading out from under his skin.

Low and deep thunderous roars started to ring out from within his body.

"That is..."

Upon seeing this happening, a glint flashed past the eyes of Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong. Thick shades of astonishment erupted from their eyes, before they shot a look at each other while saying in a soft voices, "Thunder God Physique?"

"This truly is interesting. Looks like Mu Chen had met with that Senior within the Lightning Territory. The only thing is, to what degree had he trained his Thunder God Physique to?" asked Shen Cangsheng with some excitement. With regards to the Thunder God Physique, he was naturally not unfamiliar to it, as he had also learnt and practiced it.

He Yao had also spotted the change happening in Mu Chen, and faintly narrowed his eyes. As of now, Mu Chen seemed to be clearly more dangerous than he was previously.

Bang!

Radiating with a lightning glow all around his body, Mu Chen took a step forward. His body transformed into something akin to a silvery lightning bolt as he explosively shot out. In a flash, he appeared right in front of He Yao. A silvery fist, surging with Spiritual Energy, rumbled towards He Yao's chest without the slightest bit of mercy.

“You dare to fight with me head-on!?” He Yao’s face instantly turned cold as he spotted Mu Chen actions. With a roar, he also sent his palm patting out. With the Spiritual Energy in his body being displayed without restraint, every action he did with his hand carried along the strength to shatter mountains.

Ding!

When the fist impacted against the palm, a metallic sound rang out, as incomparably erratic Spiritual Energy crazily swept out, akin to a hurricane. A violent shiver went through the figures of the two as both of them flew out hundreds of metres away.

Whoosh!

Clamoring sounds instantly rang out from below, since Mu Chen was clearly not at a disadvantage in this exchange, and had even managed to be evenly matched against He Yao.

Mu Chen stabilised his body and rubbed his fist. After exhibiting the Thunder God Physique, his body had become exceedingly tyrannical, being even stronger and resilient than steel. Although He Yao’s Spiritual Energy was more vigorous, from this exchange, it was obvious that Mu Chen had gained some advantage.

However, the former was still truly hard to deal with.

“Looks like you’re not as strong as I’ve imagined.”

Mu Chen smirked as he mockingly spoke towards to dark-looking He Yao. At this time, he naturally wasn’t restraining any forms of the attacks towards the latter.

“Oh really?”

He Yao’s eyes turned overcast and dark as his body suddenly flew out, before rising towards the sky. Jade-coloured Spiritual Energy circulated behind him, akin to a surging wave, and brought along an astonishing Spiritual Energy pressure.

Screech!

He Yao slowly closed his eyes. Following his actions, Spiritual Energy that blotted the sky erupted out. As it surged out, a sharp screeching noise was resounding across the skies.

Under that crane-like screech, traces of the Spiritual Energy in this region erupting out were faintly discernable.

Mu Chen's face also started to turn grave, bit by bit. Obviously, this He Yao had truly started to show his genuine abilities.

"Using the Divine Crane Art so quickly?" Upon seeing the Spiritual Energy that blotted the skies behind He Yao's body, the eyes of both Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong slightly narrowed.

On the ground, the faces of Luo Li, Su Xuan and the rest started to turn slightly grave. Mu Chen's opponent this time wasn't like the rest. As of now, He Yao's strength was more tyrannical than the Bai Xuan that they had previously met. Wanting to achieve victory in this fight was not an easy matter.

This fight might not be as relaxed as they had hoped.

Rumble! Rumble!

Boundless Spiritual Energy from this region of the world seemed to howl and twist akin to a storm. Suddenly, He Yao raised his head and roared towards the sky. The sharp roar resounded across the skies, while at the same time, a dazzling brilliance erupted from his body.

As the glow extended out, it transformed into an incomparably gigantic shadow of a crane behind He Yao's body. The crane's shadow appeared to be approximately 3 thousand metres high, hiding the sky and covering the earth and its roar seemed extremely terrifying.

At this moment, He Yao's eyes suddenly sprang open. A fierce glint erupted from his eyes as his hands came together to form a seal. The seal was akin to a crane flying in the sky, its shadow endlessly encompassing him. At the same time, an ear-piercing crane screech seemed to be resounding from this hand seal.

Screech!

As the crane screech resounded across the skies, the gigantic crane shadow behind He Yao's body rapidly shrank, before turning into a jade coloured feather plume approximately 30 metres in height.

As the feather plume fluttered in the air, it looked exceedingly beautiful. However, underneath that beauty, the hearts of everyone started to have some palpitations. They had a feeling that within that feather plume was a great degree of frightening Spiritual Energy.

He Yao raised his eyes that were exuding sinister shadows, as he locked onto Mu Chen. A malevolent grin rose from the corner of his mouth as a low voice rang out across the skies, "Divine Crane Art – Falling Feather Slices the Heavens."

Extending his slender and long fingers, he slowly flicked towards the surface of the jade-coloured feather plume that was slowly fluttering as it descended from the sky.

Humm!

The instant as his finger flicked out, a fluctuation that was visible to the naked-eye seemingly extended out. As the weak humm became stronger, the next instant, the entire stretch of the world had been pervaded by the humming noise.

Swish!

The jade-coloured feather plume suddenly soared towards the horizon. Jade-coloured light extended from it. From afar, it looked as if the feather plume had transformed into a gigantic feathery blade, as an indescribably swift and fierce aura started to radiate from it.

On the ground below, shock rose within countless gazes as they stared at the jade-coloured feathery blade. The feather that looked seemingly weak and soft had know possessed sufficient strength and power to shatter the skies.

Inhale-Exhale

Mu Chen exhaled a mouthful of white mist, as he stared at the feathery blade that caused the skin of people to turn cold. At this instant, however,

his gaze started to turn tranquil, bit by bit, as his hands suddenly came together to form a seal.

Boundless Spiritual Energy condensed between him, transforming into a stretch of starry sky. A white tiger condensed and formed. Stepping across the starry sky, murderous killing intent undulated and radiated from it.

As Li Xuantong looked towards the formed white tiger, his forehead faintly twitched. During the Pact of Three Moves he previously had with Mu Chen, the latter had also displayed this divine technique. However, with the current strength of He Yao, which had far exceeded that of Mu Chen, coupled with the move he had displayed, if Mu Chen wanted to rely on this move to deal with the former, it might seem a little naive.

Roar!

The white tiger roared as murderous killing intent radiated out. This roar was extremely strong. However, it was clear in the eyes of the people that with the limitations of Mu Chen's current strength, the imposing might of the white tiger was faintly suppressed by the jade-colored feathery blade.

On the ground, some unease and worry appeared on the loveable face of Su Linger, as Su Xuan faintly wrinkled her eyebrows.

"It truly is a waste of a treasure for a Deity Tier Spiritual Art of this grade to land in your hands."

He Yao's eyes turned apathetic and indifferent as a sinister arc appeared at the corner of his mouth as he spoke out, "Wanting to rely on this white tiger of yours to block my Divine Crane Art's feather blade? I can only tell you that you're truly overly naive!"

"Cut it for me!"

He Yao did not give any more chances to Mu Chen, as his arm furiously chopped down as his cold laugh rang out.

Bang!

As his roar resounded out, the jade-coloured feathery blade that was floating in the sky instantly started to hum and vibrate, akin to the cry of a

blade. Jade-green light shot up the sky as the feathery blade faintly trembled. In the next instant, it furiously chopped down towards Mu Chen's location.

"Hmph!"

Everyone was able to see that at the very instant when the jade-coloured feathery blade chopped down, a jade-coloured slash line appeared in space. A jade-coloured glowing blade descended from the sky, encompassing Mu Chen in it.

Roar!

The white tiger roared, causing the murderous killing intent to rush out, smashing head first towards the jade-coloured feathery blade.

Roar!

However, just as the two made contact, the white tiger emitted a furious roar. The torrential murderous killing intent was sliced firmly into two by the jade-coloured blade, and the white tiger was also split into two.

The faces of everyone on the ground had also changed at this instant, as they thought,He Yao's attack is, unexpectedly, so ferocious!

A sinister smile surfaced on the corner of He Yao's mouth as ridicule appeared within his eyes. Looking at the youth that was standing erect in the distance, he thought,Looks like Mu Chen is going to get kicked out of the hunting grounds just like this...

Facing the shocked voices that blotted the sky, Mu Chen raised his head and looked towards the jade-coloured feather blade. There were still no fluctuations on his face, as his hands came together again, and his hand seal instantly changing!

The torrential Spiritual Energy behind him suddenly surged as another patch of starry sky started to condense and form. While it started to sparkle, a beastial figure even more gigantic than the white tiger started to slowly appear.

Moo!

As the gigantic beastial figure appeared, a mysterious hiss that shook the world resounded across the world. A black wave, carrying with it cold, chilling air that was sufficient to freeze the Spiritual Energy of the world, swept out from within the starry sky.

“Four Gods Constellation Scripture,” At this time, Mu Chen’s hoarse voice faintly rang out.

“Divine Seal of Black Tortoise!”

Chapter 320: Descent of the Divine Crane

The cold, chilling air diffused out, covering the entire world, and caused the temperature of the surrounding skies and earth to plummet. The air had seemingly condensed into ice threads. Even the Spiritual Energy circulating between the heavens and earth had started to become sluggish.

Everyone looked in shock at the gigantic figure that had formed on the starry sky behind Mu Chen. It was a giant beast that was fully clad in a jet-black colour. Possessing the shape of a tortoise, it quietly crept forward. At its rear, its tail comprised of a long, giant black python. As the giant python stared out, it revealed its head, while a jet black tongue flickered out from its mouth.

As it crept forward from the starry sky, a black wave swept from it. A crashing sound that looked as though it had substance resounded across the sky.

Divine Seal of Black Tortoise.

It was the second Divine Seal within the Four Gods Constellation Scripture. After obtaining this Deity Tier Spiritual Art for such a long time, Mu Chen finally displayed the second Divine Seal successfully.

This Deity Tier Spiritual Art had finally started to reveal the brilliance that was worthy of its title.

As he stood erected in the air, Mu Chen raised his head and looked towards the gigantic beast that had stepped out of the starry sky behind him. In the next instant, he waved his sleeve, as a chilling voice rang out, “Go.”

Moo!

The Black Tortoise made a long roar, causing the black tidal wave to instantaneously sweep out. Stepping on the wave, it seemingly transformed into a thousand meter long gigantic black water pillar. Carrying along extremely terrifying chilling air, under the shocked gazes of numerous people, it brazenly smashed head-on against the jade-

coloured feather blade that was furiously chopping down!

Ding!

At the instant of the collision, the entire sky seemed to have twisted and distorted. In the next instant, an ear splittingly giant sound rang across the horizon, as the black wave, as well as the jade-coloured glowing blade, swept across the entire stretch of the world.

As for Mu Chen and He Yao, it was obvious that both of them had to bear the brunt of the fall out. The incomparably erratic Spiritual Energy storm rumbled directly towards them. At this instant, the faces of the two turned seemingly pale, as they were engulfed within.

Bang!

Mu Chen was directly shot towards a mountain peak, his body laying embedded on the mountain cliff. Cracks extended, as the mountain cliff shattered, causing stones to crumble and descend.

Struggling to stand up, Mu Chen wiped the blood stains at the corner of his mouth off. Thousands of metres away, He Yao was also in a completely miserable state, as more than half of his outfit was ripped into shreds. His face was alternating between green and pale, while bloodstains had similarly appeared on the corner of his mouth.

On the ground, countless gazes looked towards the two that were flung back. They never thought that after the two had displayed such formidable Deity Tier Spiritual Arts, the both of them would still be evenly matched.

“This Mu Chen truly is formidable! Even though He Yao exhibited his Deity Tier Spiritual Art, he still wasn’t able to gain any advantage!”

“No wonder why he was able to kill a Spirit King. Looks like he should be the most dazzling dark horse in this hunt.”

“Formidable!”

Clamoring noises rang out as countless people in the region started to whisper and discuss. However, regardless of the topic of discussion, all of them had clearly regarded Mu Chan as outstanding. After all, He Yao was

an influential figure at the apex of the academy. Furthermore, he was also a Senior, when compared to Mu Chen. According to normality, he should be the one that would suppress and defeat Mu Chen. However, as of now, he had not been able to gain any superiority against him. From a certain perspective, this was a lackluster performance.

On one side of the platform, Su Ling'er, and the rest who had been observing, breathed a sigh of relief as they thought,Mu Chen truly has hidden some moves. If not, the previous attack by He Yao might have already ended this fight.

"This He Yao had already displayed the Divine Crane Art; however, he is still unable to gain any advantages over Mu Chen. Let's see how he continues fighting!" Su Ling'er exclaimed.

As long as Mu Chen doesn't lose this fight, it would completely be considered his victory.

Su Xuan wasn't as optimistic as her sister. Her lovable face was still grave as she stared at He Yao, who was quietly cleaning the blood stains from the corner of his mouth as he stood in the air, his eyes turning more frightening and Su Xuan commented, "Don't look down on He Yao. He isn't someone that can be dealt with so easily."

As everyone's gazes were focused towards the sky, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong shot look at Mu Chen with slight shock. Obviously, they felt astonished by how the latter was able to receive an attack from He Yao without letting him get a slightest degree of advantage.

"The Deity Tier Spiritual Art that he displayed isn't simple." said Shen Cangsheng in a soft voice. His eyesight exceeded other people's, and with a single look, he was able to discover the uncommonness of the Deity Tier Spiritual Art that Mu Chen had displayed.

"It's said that he had obtained it from the Spiritual Value Hall. According to my estimates, it might be a Middle Rank Deity Tier Spiritual Art." Li Xuantong said. He had crossed hands with Mu Chen before; therefore, he already had some understanding towards the Four Divine Constellations Scripture.

“A Middle Rank Deity Tier Spiritual Art?” muttered Shen Cangsheng, as the shock within his eyes became more evident. Within the Spiritual Values Hall, the number of Middle Rank Deity Tier Spiritual Arts could be counted with one’s fingers. Furthermore, the chances to obtain one was extremely small. Mu Chen’s luck was really that good?

In addition, Shen Cangsheng was also clear that although Deity Tier Spiritual Arts were powerful, that did not mean that they were easy to learn and master. Even if some people were to get their hands on them, they would not be able to successfully learn and master those arts. For Mu Chen to be able to successfully learn this, it was not an easy feat to accomplish.

“Being unable to deal with Mu Chen even after pulling this move out, He Yao’s shock must not be little.” commented Shen Cangsheng with a grin as he shot a look at He Yao in the distance.

“This fellow has always been hiding his strength within the academy, and should be doing this to deal with me. If he only has such methods, he should not have such guts.” commented Li Xuantong with a faint smile before continuing, “Perhaps, he might have never thought that he would be forced by Mu Chen to such a point…”

Turning his gaze towards Mu Chen in the distance, he continued his comment, “However, facing against Mu Chen, this does not seem to be considered as good news.”

While the two of them were engaged in their conversation, at the distance, He Yao emotionlessly raised his head. His eyes looked towards Mu Chen with extreme darkness, as his palms scatter the broken pieces of clothing on his body, bit by bit.

“I never thought that such a formidable Deity Tier Spiritual Art would be successfully learnt and practiced by you…”

Mu Chen gave a smile without saying anything; however, some vigilance slowly started to surface within his heart.

“This was originally left for that fellow Li Xuantong. However, from the looks of it now, I’ve no other choice, but to use this to defeat you.” A smile

started to rise from He Yao's emotionless face; however, that very smile caused a cold shiver down everyone's spines.

Upon seeing that, Mu Chen's eyes faintly narrowed. In the next moment, the eyes that were staring at the body of He Yao's suddenly contracted.

As the robes on He Yao's body were completely swept away by him, a blood-red rune surfaced on his chest. The blood-red seal seemed to be drawn by thick blood. Faintly, it seemed to form a blood-red imprint. The blood seemed extremely mysterious. Even though it had been exposed for so long, it still radiated a strong vitality, while the blood was even circulating at a slow rate.

"That's..." muttered Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, their gazes both converged on the symbol on He Yao's chest that was formed by blood.

"The fluctuations coming from it seem to be from the blood essence of a kind of spiritual beast. Furthermore, I'm afraid it might be one that is even ranked considerably high on the Myriad Beast Record." said Li Xuantong.

Shen Cangsheng softly nodded his head and said, "Looks a little bit like the blood essence of the Heavenly Demonic Crane..."

"The Heavenly Demonic Crane, Ranked 26th on the Myriad Beast Record?" muttered Li Xuantong as he faintly raised his forehead, before replying, "I seem to have seen it in the Spiritual Values Hall, and it's worth over 1,000,000 Spiritual Value Points. Looks like this He Yao had truly coughed out some blood just to deal with me."

"However, looks like it has given bad luck to Mu Chen..."

The Mu Chen that they had deemed to be unlucky was now faintly wrinkling his forehead as he looked at the scene playing out before him. Although he was not overly clear as to what exactly He Yao wanted to do, he had also felt some taste of fear.

At this moment, He Yao did not care about other people, and bent his head down to look at the blood imprint on his chest. Biting his fingers, fresh blood flowed out, causing his hands to be stained in red. In the next moment, his palms suddenly came together to form seals, while dazzling

symbols fluctuated out as they appeared.

Following the appearance of his hand seals, the blood imprint on his chest became an even darker blood-red color. In the next instant, it erupted with ear-piercing screeches, as the blood imprint extended. Quickly, it had already pervaded He Yao's entire body.

As of now, his eyes had slowly started to turn blood-red, bit by bit. An aura that caused people's skin to feel numb started to radiate from his body. This made his appearance akin to a human-formed ferocious beast.

"Divine Crane Art, Descent of the Divine Crane!"

He Yao's hoarse voice slowly rang out. As that happened, the skin across his entire body unexpectedly started to split apart. blood-red glowing feathers started to erupt from within his body, before finally completely encasing him.

In such a short instant, He Yao's appearance had a large change. blood-red feathers totally encased his entire body, with each of them being akin to a long and sharp sword, while an indescribable aura started to pervade out from him.

At this time, He Yao had become extremely dangerous.

Hiss!

On the ground, countless gazes locked onto the greatly changed He Yao as everyone could not resist breathing in a mouthful of cold air. In the next instant, they took a step back as they thought,What kind of Deity Tier Spiritual Art is that? Unexpectedly, such a frightening secret art existed?

"Mu Chen, forcing me to such a step. You can only say that you've courted your own death. Next up, I'll force you to scram!"

He Yao's blood-red eyes locked onto Mu Chen as blood-red light gushed out from his body. It seemed to transform into a incomparably large figure of a crane, while spreading its wings, encompassing the heavens.

As the blood-red glow erupted from He Yao's body, he seemed to look like a blood-red full moon. A long roar rang out, shattering the heavens as

the blood-red light had seemingly pervaded the entire stretch of the world.

Mu Chen looked towards the blood-red full moon that contained frightening power. Taking a deep breathe, black flames ignited and started to burn from within his black eyes.

Mu Chen's hands started to slowly spread out at this instant, and black flames started to gush out from him. A clear cry suddenly rang out from within his body as black flames surged out. In an instant, it had already pervaded throughout the horizon.

Countless gazes locked tightly onto the black flames that had curled up and blotted the skies. Under the envelopment of the black flames, the temperature of the entire stretch of the world started to follow and rise.

Screech!

Another clear cry resounded across the world, as the entire stretch of the world had seemingly flared up. Under the gazes of countless people, a pair of feathery wings clad in black flames that were able to cover up mountains suddenly unfurled out from within the surging black flames.

As the black flames diffused out, countless people cast their shocked gazes towards the horizon. There, at the place where the black flames were in a lower quantity, an incomparably giant big black bird had suddenly surfaced!

"That's...!"

At this moment, the eyes of Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong violently contracted as they became filled with thick shades of astonishment.

The Nine Netherbird!

Chapter 321: Kicked out of the Hunting War

Screech!

A resonant and clear cry rang across the world as countless gazes looked in shock at the giant black bird that had surfaced from within the torrential black flames across the horizon. As the giant bird unfurled its giant wings that could encompass mountains, black flames surged and swept out, causing the temperature of this stretch of the world to rise even higher.

“The Nine Netherbird...”

Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong looked at each other, noticing the astonishment within each other’s eyes, as they mutter, “He is actually able to transform into a Spiritual Beast form even at this level...”

Everyone knew that once one steps into the Spirit Stage, everyone would possess a power, and that was to refine the Soul Essence of Spiritual Beasts. It’s exactly this power of the Soul Essence that allowed Spirit Stage experts to possess the might of Spiritual Beasts.

However, from a certain perspective, this kind of possession wasn’t eternal, as even the Soul Essence of the Spiritual Beast would one day dissipate. Furthermore, following the increasing strength of the refiner, gradually breaking through from Spirit Stage to Heavenly Fusion Stage and Heavenly Transformation Stage, the power gained from refining the Spiritual Beast’s Soul Essence would gradually be replaced.

Naturally, not all of the refined Spiritual Beast’s Soul Essence would dissipate. If one was able to reach a considerably high level of fusion with their Spiritual Beast’s Soul Essence, the power gained from the Soul Essence would continue to exist. However, for that kind of situation to occur was not simple. After all, a Spiritual Beast’s Soul Essence had a natural rejection to mankind. Even though the Spiritual Beast was already killed, its remnant thoughts would still resist this fusion. That is, unless

they were willing to get refined. Only if this were to happen would the power from the Soul Essence be able to follow alongside the refiner.

However, with untamed and arrogant Spiritual Beasts, after being killing, would they be willing to be refined?

Therefore, following the increase in strength of people, after breaking through to Heavenly Fusion Stage, Heavenly Transformation Stage and Heavenly Completion Stage, the Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence present within them would gradually dissipate. This kind of power from the Soul Essence would gradually be replaced by an even more powerful strength.

This was the reason why Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong had shown such astonishment when Mu Chen transformed into the shape of the Nine Netherbird, and, in addition, into such a complete form.

"I truly don't know exactly how Mu Chen was able to reach such a point of fusion with the Nine Netherbird's Soul Essence..." Shen Cangsheng smiled in startlement, before saying, "Over these last few years, this is the first time I've seen someone who was able to transform into such a perfect form of the Nine Netherbird."

Li Xuantong slightly nodded his head in approval, as he looked towards the incomparably large Nine Netherbird. At this moment, a complicated expression arose on his face, since the current Mu Chen truly had a monumental change since a number of months ago.

"He's too formidable! He's actually able to transform into such a perfect form of the Nine Netherbird at this moment..."

On the ground, Wang Tong and the rest were also exclaiming in astonishment. All of them had also refined the Soul Essence of Spiritual Beasts that were not weak while they were at the Spirit Stage. However, once they promoted into the Heavenly Transformation Stage, the power from their Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence had seemingly completely dissipated, without even talking about being able to completely transform into such a perfect form of their Spiritual Beasts. In addition, when the power of the Soul Essence was most abundant within their bodies, they were still unable to transform into such a Spiritual Beast form that was as

substantial as a living creature.

Standing beside them, Luo Li gave a faint smile. She naturally knew about how Mu Chen was able to achieve such a step. Not only did he have a high level agreement with the Nine Netherbird within him, even their lives were intertwined. The Bloodline Bond wasn't something that just anyone could enjoy, as well as having the courage to be tied in one.

To many people, the power from the Soul Essence might be considered to be a provisional power source. However, for Mu Chen, it would be with him throughout his life.

Screech!

Under the countless gazes that were sparkling with various kinds of emotions, the gigantic black bird that covered the horizon raised its head towards the sky and gave a long screech. In the next instant, flapping its wings, it smashed, head first, into the blood-red full moon that had shattered space as it headed towards Mu Chen.

Bang!

The two frightening powers smashed against each other. The intense bang produced was akin to thunder, resounding across the skies, even causing a slight twist and distortion in the space.

The giant bird, burning in black flames, smashed head-on against the blood-red full moon. The two frightening powers were currently crazily trying to corrode one another.

Bang! Bang!

The incomparably erratic Spiritual Energy fluctuations were akin to hundred metre high waves that were continuously sweeping and and trying to engulf the territory of the other. The scene that they created caused the skin of quite a few people on the ground to feel numb.

Everyone was able see a black and red colour condensing in the erratic corrosion that was happening between the giant bird and the full moon. In the short span of a number of breaths, these two powers turned into gigantic ball of light that was over a hundred meters in diameter. Within

the centre of the ball of light, the two forces were erratically mixing in an extreme fashion.

Like a bomb.

Since it was a bomb, it would explode.

As this thought flashed past the minds of the crowd, they notice that the black and red colour was expanding in the sky. In the next moment, an astonishing sound rang out.

BOOM!!!

The Spiritual Energy ball of light that had condensed from the all-out attacks of the two finally could not hold onto its shape and furiously exploded. Spiritual Energy crazily swept out as the gigantic black bird, as well of the full moon, were instantly engulfed within it.

A dazzling light formed, causing countless people to narrow their eyes. A Spiritual Energy shockwave, approximately thousands of metres in length, radiated out, before finally diffusing into the ends of the horizon.

At this instant, the Spiritual Light Mountain, which was akin to a giant pillar that held the sky up, started to hum as it vibrated and shook.

Bang! Bang!

Under the buffeting from the devastating Spiritual Energy storm, a black and a red streak of light were violently flung out, before heavily impacting the expansive platform on the ground below.

BOOM!

As the earth shook, the thousand metre long stone platform started to collapse as two deep holes appeared on it. Large and coarse cracks, spanning thousands of metres, appeared like spider webs as they extended from the giant holes.

Figures started to hurriedly rise into the air from all around the stone platform as they cast their gazes over. In the previous heaven-shattering collision, exactly who had gained an advantage?

Everyone was clear that this exchange was sufficient to determine the

winner.

Under the convergence of countless gazes, the dust clouds slowly dissipated from the completely destroyed stone platform. Two unfathomably deep giant holes started to appeared in the eyes of the crowd.

The jet blackness of the deep holes masked every source of light and gaze.

Exactly who had won?

Whoosh!

Within the depths of the dark giant hole, a whooshing sound suddenly rang out, causing the crowed to hurriedly converge their gazes over. In the next instant, they saw, from the left deep hole, a figure that was covered in blood was staggering as he rose to the sky.

The figure had a head full of green hair, while the injuries were present over his entire body. Blood created a pattering sound as it dripped down from him, causing him to appear extremely miserable. It was He Yao!

Whoosh!

A few regretful clamoring noises rang out as everyone thought, So, it's still He Yao that remains standing in the end?

The lovable faces of Su Ling'er and the rest who were attentively watching this scene before them could not resist and changed.

"Hahahaha."

Covered in blood, He Yao looked at the deep hole before him that did not appear to have the slightest activity. In the next moment, he looked at the sky and laughed loudly, his facial features distorted as he roared, "Mu Chen, aren't you very proud of yourself? However, the one that laughs, at the end, is me!"

There were several people who were sighing regretfully as they thought, Is Mu Chen still weaker? However, since he was able to force He Yao into such a miserable state, he could be considered as being extremely

outstanding already. As long as some time was given to him, surpassing He Yao might only be a matter of time.

In the air, the faces of Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong were still tranquil and calm. As they shot a look at the deep hole that did not have the slightest trace of activity, a faint smile suddenly appeared on their faces.

Screech!

A clear and resonantly long screech suddenly resounded across the skies at that moment. Instantly, all of the clamoring noises turned silent as thick surprise and joy radiated from the gazes that were showing regret earlier, and they looked towards the deep hole that did not have the slightest bit of activity.

At this instant, He Yao's face had also violently contorted.

The earth faintly trembled as a scorching heat wave rose from within the depths of the giant hole. In the next instant, everyone saw erupting black flames that blotted the skies. Within the black flames, a gigantic black bird rushed towards the sky as its shadow covered the earth.

Boom!

Across the horizon, the black flames erupted as the giant bird clad in black flames slowly flapped its giant wings. A pair of incomparably sharp eyes stared at the dumbfounded He Yao.

At this moment, the disparity of strength between the two could be seen with a single look.

"How's this possible...?" muttered He Yao as he looked towards the Nine Netherbird that seemed to not have a single trace of injury. That was his strongest attack. However, from the looks of it, it unexpectedly did not do much damage to Mu Chen!

As the black flames swept out, the gigantic body of the Nine Netherbird started to rapidly shrink. Under the shocked and astonished gazes of the people on the ground, it transformed into a thin figure.

After Mu Chen reappeared, his face seemed somewhat pale; however, his black eyes were still shining with consciousness. Compared to He Yao, his condition was much better. He Yao's previous attack truly was incomparably tyrannical; however, he still underestimated the completely transformed Nine Netherbird, and Mu Chen, who had possessed such strong resilience and defensive capabilities.

The form of the Nine Netherbird truly was much more tyrannical than the body of a human.

"He Yao, you've celebrating too early. That isn't a good thing to do." said Mu Chen with a faint smile as he looked towards the extremely miserable He Yao.

"I don't believe it! The current you is just spent force! Give me less of your pretentious appearance!" The capillaries in He Yao's eyes bulged as he malevolently roared. In the next instant, he explosively shot towards Mu Chen.

Looking at the incoming He Yao, regardless of speed, attack, or strength, which had decreased too much, Mu Chen's eyes turned emotionless. With a flick of his finger, a Spiritual Energy ray howled as it surged out, and heavily impacted the body of He Yao.

Bang!

He Yao instantly flew backwards, and miserably scraped the ground as he fell. Long cracks extended out from the location where he fell as he spurted a mouthful of blood.

At this instant, Mu Chen's eyes turned frosty. Without the slightest shred of mercy, he flicked his finger once again, causing another Spiritual Energy ray to sweep out. Under the terror-filled eyes of He Yao, it violently impacted against his body.

Bang!

This stretch of earth trembled from the impact.

Whoosh!

A ray of light descended from the sky and encompassed He Yao within. With a whoosh, it sent him, who was already unable to move, out of the hunting grounds. 。Seeing He Yao disappearing into the distance, Mu Chen raised his head and deeply exhaled, while the paleness of his face turned increasingly thick.

This fight was not easy for him. However, fortunately, he had won in the end.

After He Yao was sent out, the region turned deathly silent as everyone cast their gazes towards the pale-faced youth. Within their eyes, a sliver of respect started to slowly erupt.

In the air, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong both started to smile.

Looks like the third slot had been won by Mu Chen, in the end.

Chapter 322: Pressure

The astonishing battle that happened in the air finally had an ending, while the vast Spiritual Light platform had already collapsed and was destroyed at this point in time. The two deep holes had taken up close to half of the surface of the platform, while the scary webs of cracks extending out caused them to look all the more chilling.

There was still a sea of humans that covered the mountains and the plains around the stone platform. However, the sea of humans was still in a quiet state, most likely still reminiscing the astonishing confrontation that happened in the air.

Countless gazes locked onto the figure of the youth standing in the air above them, with some having respect in their eyes. If Mu Chen had previously made people assume that he was just a Freshman; after this fight, it had truly made him into an influential figure of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

On the Heavenly Rankings, he was sufficiently capable of being placed within the top three ranks.

This kind of accomplishment made quite a few people sigh in amazement. One had to know that Mu Chen had entered the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy for, at most, half a year. However, the growth he had during this half-year had caused shock and astonishment to people.

Such an innate gift, such a monstrous talent.

“Mu Chen’s won!” Unconcealable joy and happiness erupted on Su Ling’er’s loveable face as she grabbed onto Su Xuan’s smooth wrist, while exclaiming out in excitement.

Beside her, both Li Qing and Guo Xiong had started to laugh while looking at the youth in the air with some complicated expressions in their eyes. They thought,Ever since we returned two months ago, this fellow’s strength has already improved to such a level.

Su Xuan had also shown a gentle smile as she cast her beautiful eyes, with a little peculiarity, at Mu Chen. Even she had never thought that Mu Chen would actually be able to defeat He Yao. After all, regardless of Mu Chen's talent, He Yao was still a veteran amongst the influential characters at the apex of the academy.

"Looks like my third rank on the Heavenly Rankings will have to be given up..." muttered Su Xuan with a soft laugh. She did not have any unwillingness, since she did not have any particular care about it. If not for He Yao being too much of a bully, she might've even been too lazy to put up a fight.

In the distance, Wang Tong and the rest had also taken a deep breath of relief, before looking at the figure in the air, while smacking their lips. At this moment, the gazes they sent out had faint traces of change. When they had known that Mu Chen and Luo Li had slain that Spirit King, although they had some astonishment and admiration, it was still not as strong and intense as the feelings they got at this moment.

After all, He Yao was an influential figure at the apex within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Within the academy, the only people who could suppress him would be Shen Cangsheng or Li Xuantong.

However, there appeared a third person who could accomplish that; furthermore, he was a freshman.

The shock and astonishment that this brought forth far exceeded that of when Mu Chen had slain a Spirit King. Although, He Yao's strength wasn't any stronger than the Spirit King...

"Since Mu Chen has defeated He Yao, he will be awarded the third spot..." said An Ran suddenly.

Upon hearing this, the expressions of Wang Tong and the rest turned grave, as they casted their slightly fearful gazes at the majestic mountain summit that was encapsulated by clouds. On the peak of that mountain were the final protectors of this hunt.

They were the three Great Generals of the Punishment Hall.

They were strong existences that even the overlord of the Heavenly Rankings, Shen Cangsheng, had to show extreme dread. If they were unable to pass the checkpoint of the three Great Generals, all of the hard work that they had put in during the period of time in the hunting grounds would be all for naught.

At this time, Luo Li's clear eyes had also faintly contracted. She was very clear that those three held the strongest places within the entirety of the students. This represented a kind of glory, while at the same time, they also represented a gigantic pressure.

The hunt was something that was anticipated by all the students throughout the year. As well as putting in hard work, they were willing to endure the loneliness of bitter training. All of this was to astonish people within the hunt, and to obtain Spiritual Lights in the end, because the Spiritual Light Empowerment was what made people drool.

However, the three great protectors in front of them had become a giant mountain in front of all the students. They were unable to cross it, and could only entrust their hopes on the shoulders of Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong, as well as Mu Chen, who had just obtained the final spot.

Similarly, following this kind of anticipation, the pressure was also present. Seemingly, the anticipation felt by all of the students that had participated in this hunt had transformed into a kind of pressure, pressing down on the bodies of the three. If the three were able to obtain victory against the three great protectors in the end, they would obtain the prestige from all of the students in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, which would reach the apex. They would also gain true respect and gratefulness from all of them.

This was the glory that the victor should enjoy. However, what if they lose?

This anticipation would turn into disappointment. What kind of impact would that lead for everyone?

Luo Li gently clenched her jade-like hands as she stared at Mu Chen's figure with some graveness present in her eyes. The third spot wasn't

something that was good to receive.

As Luo Li's gaze started to fluctuate, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong proceeded to descend from the sky, finally stopping beside Mu Chen. The both of them shot a peculiar look at the latter, sizing him up before saying with a smile, "Congratulations on defeating He Yao. However, we have to similarly inform you that the third spot had descended on your shoulders. I think that you should know what it represents. This isn't some terrific achievement."

Upon hearing their words, Mu Chen faintly hesitated before gently nodding his head. He naturally knew how gigantic the pressure was to possess this third spot. If he was defeated, he would gain too much disappointment from the students, and it would lead to all the efforts of everyone to go down the drain.

From the ground, Luo Li shot over and appeared beside Mu Chen. She shot a look at Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong with her beautiful eyes, without saying a single word.

Li Xuantong stared at Luo Li with a complicate gaze, before turning towards Mu Chen and said, "I think that you might still not understand the exact situation you're in. Shen Cangsheng and I had already investigated the three Great Generals. The both of us are able to resist two of them, with the final result being not a victory and not a defeat.."

Hearing his words, Mu Chen's eyes contracted. Not a victory and not a defeat. That meant that they would draw?

"According to the rules, we students have a slight advantage, which is to say that if we are able to achieve three draws, it would be our victory." Shen Cangsheng explained. With a slightly helpless smile, he continued, "That also means that Li Xuantong and I would be able to guarantee two draws. At the same time, with our two draws, the critical point would be the third fight."

A grave shadow surfaced on Mu Chen's handsome, yet pale, face, while Luo Li faintly knitted her eyebrows.

"If you are able to achieve a draw in the third fight, we would win. And,

if you lose, we will all lose. The hunt this time would end here, and everyone would return with empty hands." Li Xuantong added indifferently.

Mu Chen's face changed faintly upon hearing that. In other words, what he meant to say was that the pressure that was originally on all three of their shoulders, had now been completely transferred onto Mu Chen's body. If he lost, he would have to endure the loss of all of their hopes. There might not be people who would criticise him. However, this kind of indescribable disappointment might lead to the collapse of one's self-confidence.

This kind of conclusion seemed to be even more miserable than losing to He Yao...

Losing to He Yao, he would still not be criticised by people; after all, it was a personal matter. However, if he lost at the final checkpoint, that would be equivalent to losing all the hopes and hard work of everyone.

This responsibility was somewhat too heavy.

Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong stared at the quiet Mu Chen. They had stopped their lecture, and quietly looked at him. This indescribable, yet tightly knotted atmosphere diffused out, before spreading throughout the entire stretch of the world.

On the ground, countless people looked towards the few figures that had converged in the air. They were faintly able to understand what they were talking about, and this caused the expression on many people's faces to turn grave. Bringing anticipation in their eyes, they cast their gazes towards the figures in the sky that would bear the weight of their hopes and dreams.

The fruits of bitter training they had endured would have to depend the performances of the few in the sky, who represent their greatest strength...

The loveable faces of Su Ling'er, Su Xuan and the rest had also turned grave. This spot seemed to be somewhat too heavy. Letting it drop on the shoulders of a youth that was still a Freshman was slightly too cruel.

Li Xuantong looked at Mu Chen awhile before faintly moving his gaze while saying, “If you feel that you’re unable bear the responsibility of this spot, you can give it up. I think there should be no one that has the qualifications to say anything about it. After all, you’re still a Freshman, as of now. There’s no need to bear such stress and pressure.”

At this moment, Shen Cangsheng had also smiled. The wind tussled at his scattered hair, before he patted Mu Chen’s shoulder. With a disdainful look in his eye that did not have the slightest degree of reducing, he said, “There’s no need for this much stress. What Li Xuantong said isn’t wrong. I’ve almost forgotten that you’re just a Freshman. If you feel that you don’t have the assurance, giving up is the best choice. Worst come to worse, I’ll have to put out a little more effort and put my all in my fight against Senior Lin Zheng. As if I’m scared of him.”

Under this stifling silence propagating across the entire stretch of the world, Luo Li extended her tender and jade-like hand and gently held onto Mu Chen’s palm. Looking at Mu Chen’s forehead, which had faintly wrinkled, she gave a light smile.

Even though everyone will be disappointed, you’ll always be the most dazzling in my eyes.

Mu Chen looked at Luo Li’s exquisite face that was akin to porcelain, before faintly closing his eyes. The palm that held Luo Li’s little hand gradually gripped tighter, before he suddenly opened his eyes.

His black pupils had changed back to its previous sharpness and brilliance, with the hesitation within already completely removed.

Raising his head, he cast his gaze towards the mountain peak that was covered in clouds. A smile rose from his handsome face as he spoke out in a gentle and soft voice, “Although I know that this will result in me bearing a lot of stress and pressure, giving up isn’t my style. Furthermore, if I don’t even have the courage to bear such pressure and stress, how will I be able to pursue the path to become the unrivalled expert?”

Saying those words, he turned his head towards the absolutely beautiful young girl with silver hair, and dressed in jet-black clothes. He had

promised her that he would become an unrivalled expert and appear before her. He wanted to stand before her and completely shatter the pressure on her that was coming from all directions.

If he was unable to muster the courage to endure the pressure present now, how would he be able to continue along the path of an unrivalled expert?

Looking at the youth in front of them, whose imposing aura had started to rapidly rise with some astoundment, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong felt some astonishment. In the next moment, they could not resist and smiled as they thought,This Mu Chen truly is more reliable than He Yao.

Mu Chen gave a smile as his gaze condensed on the cloud-covered mountain peak. Faintly, he could slightly discern the three figures that were akin to demon gods. The pressure coming from them was akin to Mount Tai pressing down on him. However, the smile on his face grew increasingly thick.

“These two Seniors. Leave the third spot for me. Regardless of victory or defeat...”

Mu Chen’s black eyes turned increasingly bright as he exclaimed with fervor,

“I’ll give my all!”

Chapter 323: Last Battle

The sky became progressively dim: however, the majestic Spiritual Light Mountain became unusually lively. At this time, almost all of the students who had participated in the hunt had already rushed towards the place of the final battle.

Everyone knew that this was the most important issue, as of now, and did not continue collecting Spiritual Lights. They had to guarantee the smooth pass of the final checkpoint. Only by passing through the three final protectors would they be able to obtain the benefits of the Spiritual Light Empowerment.

According to the rules, there was only one chance to challenge the three great protectors. Therefore, if they were to lose, all of the people within this year's hunt would return with empty hands, their year's worth of hard work down the drain.

Being a fight of such a level, ordinary students were unable to get involved. Therefore, they could only cast their hopes on the three strongest people they knew.

Although they knew that this would create an exceeding amount of pressure on them, this was, after all, the only thing they could do.

On the small peak on the Spiritual Light Mountain, Mu Chen sat cross-legged on the edge of the cliff. Looking at the seemingly endless sea of humans, he noticed the thick apprehension and anticipation within all of their eyes.

The protectors this time were too strong. Even if Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong were to collaborate, they knew that their chances of victory were still not high.

Rustle!

Soft footsteps rang out behind him, before Luo Li appeared beside Mu Chen. Taking a seat next to him, a faint smile appeared on her face as she asked, "Are you nervous?"

Hearing her question, Mu Chen helplessly shrugged his shoulders. If it concerned him, alone, he would naturally have a single fluctuation of his state of mind. However, the hundreds and thousands of people below him had cast all their hopes on his shoulders. If he were to say that he was not nervous, that would be lying.

Faintly panning his head over, he gazed at the absolutely beautiful face of the young girl, while a cherishing gaze erupted out from his eyes. He had only carried the weight of the students' hopes. However, what about Luo Li?

She'll become the queen of the Luo Shen Clan, and would carry the expectations of millions of citizens. She was their queen, and she would need to protect them.

Were he to lose, it would only result in everyone here losing a year of their bitter training. However, if she were to lose, the citizens of the Luo Shen Clan would be met with a cruel slaughter. The Luo Shen Clan would turn into a mountain of corpses and a sea of blood. That was the most bloody truth, and was something that cannot be changed.

Compared to the burden of Luo Li, his was truly not worth mentioning.

"Is it painful?" asked Mu Chen in a soft voice, extending his palm and gently caressing the young girl's cheek.

Luo Li's soft and lovable face curled up within Mu Chen's bosom, as a peaceful smile surfaced on her absolutely beautiful face, gently shaking like a cicada.

Mu Chen tightly hugged the young girl in his bosom. He knew that Luo Li possessed an extremely supple and strong character. Even with such pressure on her supple shoulders that would cause normal people to collapse and crumple, she would still carry it quietly by herself. However, this made people feel even more pain in their hearts.

"Relax, I won't lose."

Burying his face into that delicately fragrant hair of hers, he muttered to her.

On another mountain peak, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong looked at the youth and the young girl snuggling together in the distance as the expression on their faces seemed somewhat different.

"I truly don't know why the academy would increase the difficulty level of the final protector to such a high level this year." Shen Cangsheng said while pursing his lips. If the difficulty was set similarly to the previous years, he would be able to deal with it sufficiently by himself. However, the difficulty level had risen multiple times this year.

The three Great Generals had come out. This was considered the first time such an occurrence happened in the past few years of the hunt.

"Only with stress would there be improvement. We can't just let you reveal your might and prestige every year, right?" replied Li Xuantong casually.

"Wait till I finish the Spiritual Light Empowerment this time. It's about time to settle things with that fellow, Mo Longzi." said Shen Cangsheng with a laugh. While mentioning about Mo Longzi, a cold glint conspicuously appeared within his eyes.

"Is that fellow very strong?"asked Li Xuantong as his forehead faintly wrinkled. He hadn't crossed hands with Mo Longzi before. However, since the latter was able to make Shen Cangsheng return with empty hands, he was obviously not someone easy to deal with.

"Yes." Shen Cangsheng replied while nodding his head, then continued, "After all, he's the genius nurtured wholeheartedly by the Demonic Dragon Palace. Furthermore, he's also still not considered the strongest amongst the younger generation of the Demonic Dragon Palace. That Mo Xingtian is even more terrifying. In a duel, even I might not be his opponent."

"Mo Xingtian." muttering that name, Li Xuantong's eyes contracted. That was an extremely vicious person, who was number 1 on the Bounty List. With regards to any Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy student, he represented an extreme amount of pressure.

"After this hunt, if you don't have anything going on, you can become a

team with me and head out of the academy. At that time, we can try to see if we can deal with Mo Longzi and Mo Xingtian." Shen Cangsheng said with a smile as he extended his invitation out. Within the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, the people who possessed the qualifications to let Shen Cangsheng extend his invitations weren't many.

Li Xuantong felt slightly emotional. However, in the next instant, he raised his head and looked towards the majestic mountain peak while saying, "We have to settle this problem in front of our eyes first. If we lose this Spiritual Light Empowerment, the plan to destroy and kill would have to be postponed for some time."

Shen Cangsheng nodded his head in approval, before turning his gaze towards the youth in the distance. For the final fight tomorrow, the pivotal key would be on Mu Chen.

The night grew dimmer as the morning radiance split the cloud layers apart, illuminating the world once again. Under the Spiritual Light Mountain, the atmosphere started to grow fiery, bit by bit, as countless scorching gazes looked towards the mountain peak.

Whoosh!

Whooshing sounds rang out in the air, before the crowd cast their scorching gazes towards the figures that appeared in the air, which were Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong, Mu Chen and Luo Li.

As Shen Cangsheng stood proudly in the air, he overlooked the sea of people on the ground, before slowly saying, "I think everyone should know about the final rule of the hunt. This fight is extreme, and concerns the personal benefits of every one of us. However, I'll have to remind you that the three of us don't have an obligation to bear this role. Therefore, regardless of the result, we three will not hold any responsibility. If the result in not desirable, at that time, whoever feels they can bear the role can just stand up, and we'll give the position to them."

Upon hearing his words, the entire stretch of the world turned deathly silent, as everyone quietly listened to him.

Mu Chen sent an appreciative smile towards Shen Cangsheng. Mu Chen

knew that he did this to take precautions against the possibility of him losing. At that time, there would be many people who would criticise him in disappointment. Although the ending has yet to be known, Mu chen felt very grateful towards Shen Cangsheng's intentions.

"Senior Brother Shen, please feel at ease. All of us won't take and inch and want a foot, and aren't discriminatory people. The three of you are the strongest amongst us. If even you three are defeated, we don't even have the qualifications to put up a contest. As for criticism, that is complete nonsense. I, Lu Hao, hereby say that even if we were to lose the final checkpoint, I'll absolutely respect the three of you, and would absolutely not feel resentment and indignation in my heart!" just as Shen Cangsheng's words rang out, a person from the crowd below immediately roared in reply.

"Yes!"

"We ask the three of you to try your best! Even if you three were to lose, there isn't anything worse than that!"

"Senior Brothers Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong and Junior Brother Mu Chen, good luck! Even if we lose, you three are the most formidable!" the clear and resonant voices of young girls caused many echos of agreement.

Mu Chen looked towards sea of people, whose spirits were continuously on the rise and gave a faint smile. Looking towards Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, he said, "Seeing this, looks that there's no way for us to lose."

"It's good enough if you try your best."

Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong both gave a smile. Raising their heads towards the majestic Spiritual Light mountain, Shen Cangsheng said, "Let's go and take a look at exactly what areas the three Great Generals of the Punishment Hall are standing at."

As the said those words, he immediately shot forward. Transforming into a streak of light, he rushed towards the peak of the majestic mountain summit. Mu Chen, Li Xuantong and Luo Li immediately followed closely behind him, with the sea of students similarly exploding forth. Covering the earth and hiding the sky, they swept towards the mountain peak akin

to a swarm of locusts.

This spectacle, was exceedingly spectacular.

.....

As everyone within the hunting grounds headed towards the mountain peak, within the northern public square of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy disturbances started to occur. At this moment, the atmosphere was considered to have reached its peak within this half a month.

Within the public square, countless scorching gazes converged towards the sky. Presently, there was a gigantic light screen, where clouds were shown within it. At this moment, they had started to become faint as the majestic mountain peak became faintly discernable as it started to appear.

This change made everyone understand that the final fight of the hunt had already arrived.

Exactly whether everyone would return empty-handed or having a rewarding journey would depend on this fight that would astonish the heavens and the earth.

However, who exactly were the three strongest people that would represent all of the contestants? There naturally wasn't any need to talk about Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong. However, will the third person be a veteran influential figure, or a dark horse that had popped out of nowhere?

Everyone was holding their breath in anticipation of this.

Gazes converged towards the surface of the gigantic light screen. As the layers of clouds retreated, the scene present within finally became completely clear.

The giant peak stood erect on the summit of the majestic Spiritual Light Mountain. Akin to pillars that supported the sky, they pierced straight through the clouds.

On the top of those three giant peaks, three figures quietly sat on the edge of the cliffs. As the mountain winds blew past, causing their clothes

to flutter, an indescribable oppression started to quietly appear, enveloping the entire stretch of the world. Even the students outside of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy were able to feel some pressure.

"Those are the three Great Generals of the Punishment Hall? Such astonishing and imposing auras!"

"Their undoubtedly the top three on the Heavenly Rankings. I'm afraid that they might all possess the strength of Heavenly Completion Stage? That's truly terrifying."

"This final check truly is too difficult. With the three Great Generals protecting the pass, even with Senior Brother Shen and the rest, it would be difficult to pass through."

"....."

The faces of countless students changed as they looked, with some respect, at the three statue-like figures sitting on the top of the mountain within the light screen. Anticipation could be faintly discernable from their eyes as they awaited the incoming fight, while thinking,That should be the highest level within our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy right? This truly made people feel anticipation.

While everyone was waiting in anticipation, they were able to hear hurried whooshing sounds ringing out from within the gigantic light screen. They turned their attention over, only to see figures that hid the skies and covered the earth rushing forth through the lingering clouds akin to a swarm of locusts. Finally, floating in the air surrounding the mountain peak, the dense and numerous sea of humans seemingly had no end.

"They've finally arrived!" quite a few people could hardly restrain their excitement as they hurriedly looked over.

Under the attention of countless gazes, the sea of humans within the light screen rippled as three figures slowly swept across the gazes of the large crowd.

The front two of them were not unexpected, which were predictably

Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong. After a split second of resting on them, all of the gazes turned towards the last thin figure.

As their gazes converged on the figure, the atmosphere within the northern public square seemed to have suddenly turned sluggish, since the mouths of countless people slowly dropped open.

“That’s...”

Ye Qingling and the rest had opened their eyes wide as they looked towards the familiar figure, while thick disbelief erupted from within their eyes.

“Actually Mu Chen!”

At this instant, the entire northern public square was completely shaken.

Chapter 324: Three Great General

At the peak of Spiritual Light Mountain, covered with lingering clouds, the three giant peaks, akin to pillars that propped the sky up, pierced through the clouds. As of now, however, a dense and numerous amount of figures had surfaced in the air surrounding them. With a glance, one can almost not find an end to the present crowd.

All of the students that had participated in the hunt converged there, waiting for the incoming final fight.

At this moment, gazes were sent towards the summit of the three great peaks, where three figures were quietly sitting. While the mountain winds were blowing at their clothing, their eyes were open, without even the slightest trace of change, due to the gathering of countless students. Even their breathing was calm and tranquil, without the slightest bit of disturbance.

All of the students were staring at the three figures with thick respect shown within their eyes. The three people in their sights should be the final protectors of this hunt.

They were the previous top three ranks of the Heavenly Rankings, and were now the three Great Generals of the Punishment Hall.

In the surroundings of the mountain peak, the clouds fluttered around as the sea of humans pervaded the air. However, what's strange was that there wasn't any clamoring and arguing noises present. Everyone was able to feel a faint pressure radiating from the bodies of the three figures on the top of the mountain peak. Enveloping the entire stretch of the world, it caused them to feel as if their heads were being weighed down.

Within the silence that blotted the sky, three figures slowly walked out, before stopping in the air a thousands metres away from the 3 giant peaks.

Regardless of the surroundings of Spiritual Light Mountain or the northern public square, everyone's gazes had converged onto the bodies of those three figures. Within those gazes, there was anticipation,

apprehension, doubt...

However, regardless of that, those three figures, as of now, had undoubtedly become the focus of everyone's attention.

At the instant when they walked out, the three figures that were sitting on the giant peaks slowly opened their tightly closed eyes.

Bang!

The Spiritual Energy of the world seemed to have erupted and explosively swept out at this instant. Intense booming and rumbling sounds could be faintly discernable as they resounded across the world.

"Shen Cangsheng, you've finally arrived." at the middle giant peak, a male gave a faint smile as his tranquil voice slowly rang out. However, this made the hearts of countless people subsequently throb as a pressure enveloped over them.

"Haha, I've let Senior Brother Lin Zheng wait for a long time." Coming to a stop in front of the male. Shen Cangsheng cupped his hands and sent his greetings, while his eyes made a faint contraction that was unnoticable.

That's Lin Zheng of the three Great Generals? Mu Chen thought while sending his gaze over, only to see a male dressed in a black outfit. He had a head full of white hair. Instead of a pale white, it radiated with a silvery shadow, with light circulating through it, making it seem mysterious.

At this time, he had already acquired some information about the three Great Generals. This Lin Zheng was said to be the person with the highest strength amongst the three Great Generals.

"Undoubtedly the previous number one on the Heavenly Rankings."

Mu Chen's expression slowly turned dignified, as he was able to sense a strong pressure radiating from within Lin Zheng's body. That sort of feeling was akin to a mountain range appearing above someone's head, causing people to be unable to catch their breath.

This Lin Zheng must have already stepped into the Heavenly

Completion Stage. Furthermore, he might not be only at the Heavenly Completion Initial Stage...

Heavenly Completion Stage, that's the final step before Sovereign Stage. If Sovereign Stage experts were able to become a Regional Lord in a continent, then Heavenly Completion Stage experts could be considered as Regional Tyrants.

Since Lin Zheng was able to achieve a strength of Heavenly Completion Stage at such an age, that was sufficient to indicate his possession of astonishing talent...

"There's nothing that could be said for the long wait. However, since it's the final fight, we'll not throw it." A voice rang out from the giant peak on the right of Lin Zheng. Looking over, Mu Chen spotted a male dressed in red. His hair was scarlet red, akin to a burning flame. Around him, the air showed faint traces of distortion, as if created by a high temperature.

"That's Gu Tianyan, your opponent this time," muttered Li Xuantong to Mu Chen in a low voice.

Upon hearing those words, Mu Chen's eyes instantly contracted as he gravely stared at the red-haired male. The Spiritual Energy of the world around the latter seemed to be exceedingly erratic, as if it was a patch of the burning sea of flames.

This pressure coming from Gu Tianyan was not as strong as Lin Zheng's; however, it still caused a dangerous flavor to coarse through Mu Chen's body. Mu Chen knew that there would not be a single one amongst the three Great Generals that were easy to be dealt with.

"Gu Tianyan's strength should be around Heavenly Completion Initial Stage. The divine art he trains in is called the Heavenly Inflammation Divine Art. This makes his Spiritual Energy akin to heavenly flames, which are overbearing and burn with a furious intensity. Any action he makes is enough to burn and incinerate cities and mountains." Li Xuantong tried his best to give more information to Mu Chen, in an effort to allow him to muster a better response.

Mu Chen nodded his head as he thought, Heavenly Completion Initial

Stage is exceedingly strong. This was not something that He Yao, with his half-step into the Heavenly Completion Stage, could compare to. If He Yao was allowed to cross hands with Gu Tianyan, Mu Chen could definitely confirm that He Yao would be defeated extremely miserably within five rounds.

Furthermore, Gu Tianyan's Spiritual Energy was somewhat different from the norm. Mu Chen wondered,Compared to my Spiritual Energy that is fused with the Nine Nether Flames, exactly which one is more overbearing?

Mu Chen stared at Gu Tianyan for a while, before looking at the leftmost giant peak. Right there, similarly, was a sitting man. This person had a head full of black hair, with a rather handsome face. Faintly smiling at the crowd, he did not show any intent to speak.

Compared to Lin Zheng and Gu Tianyan, this person clearly appeared to not want to attract too much attention. However, Mu Chen knew that if anyone underestimated him, the only thing they could say was that their heads got muddled.

"Is that Senior Brother Zhou Qing? Who's also your opponent this time?" Mu Chen looked towards Li Xuantong and asked.

Li Xuantong turned his gaze towards the black-haired male, faintly nodded his head, then replied, "It's said that during that year, Senior Brother Zhou Qing had a nickname within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, he was called 'Undefeatable Mountain'..."

"Undefeatable Mountain?" Mu Chen muttered in startlement.

"The meaning is that when he fought with people, he would basically not lose." Li Xuantong replied with a smile.

"Then why did the 1st rank in the Heavenly Rankings still belong to Senior Brother Lin Zheng?" Mu Chen asked with some doubt.

"I never said that he won." Li Xuantong replied with a smile, as he abstrusely looked at the faintly smiling black-haired male sitting on the giant peak in the distance, before continuing, "A large majority of his

fights resulted with no victories and no losses. The main reason was due to his special intentions; however, there were also other reasons."

"The divine art he trains in is named the Undefeatable Divine Art. It sounds absolutely overbearing; however, it is an extremely gentle divine art. There isn't any overly intense attacking moves within it, and the majority is focusing on dealing with people, before finally causing the opponent's Spiritual Energy to be completely wasted..."

"Therefore, within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, the large majority of the people he crossed hands with would end with a draw. Therefore, other people have given him the nickname of 'Undefeatable Mountain'."

Hearing the explanation, Mu Chen was astonished. This so-called 'Undefeatable Divine Art' was unexpectedly that special and unique. However, it was very clear that, at certain times, not being defeated and not having a victory was, from some sense, already a very frightening achievement.

Zhou Qingshan, naturally, could not be overly vicious when crossing hands with the people in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. However, if he were to truly have killing intent, even that gentle divine art might reveal its malevolent side.

These three Great Generals. None of them were simple...

While Mu Chen and Li Xuantong were talking in low voices, Shen Cangsheng cupped his hands and sent a smile towards Gu Tianyan, before saying, "A victory gained by the other's throwing is something that I also cannot stand to see. How should the later fight be fought?"

"Undeniably, you are the current 1st Rank on the Heavenly Rankings. Your courage isn't small." replied Gu Tianyan with a smile, while his scarlet hair appeared to be like burning flames. It could be seen that he treats Shen Cangsheng with extreme regard. The latter's strength was something that even made him feel dread. This made him unable to help secretly sighing in exclamation. This batch of students in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy this time seemed more formidable than theirs.

Lin Zheng made a gesture with his hands, before standing up and saying, “We’ve already waited here for so long. Shen Cangsheng, you three should already come up. Only by passing through us will all the students that have participated in the hunt be able to obtain the Spiritual Light Empowerment, if not...”

Before completing his words, the intent within was something everyone understood. In the next instant, Shen Cangsheng tightly clenched his fist as anticipation and nervousness erupted within his eyes.

“I invite Senior Brother Lin Zheng to bestow his guidance.”

Shen Cangsheng spoke out with a large laugh, with the laughing voice filled with a powerful and free intent that showed his disdain. Clenching his palm, golden light condensed, transforming into a golden-coloured divine spear. The tip of the spear was akin to a folded lotus. Golden light circulated and radiated from it, showing off its boundless Spiritual Energy that was contained within.

Shen Cangsheng gripped the golden spear in his hands. With a move of his body, he appeared on the giant peak that Lin Zheng was on. Heavily impaling his golden spear onto the ground, a shock wave swept out, causing the surface of the summit of the mountain peak to be instantly swept clean.

The moment Shen Cangsheng moved out, he had intercepted the strongest of the three Great Generals, Lin Zheng. This did not exceed the expectations of the crowd. Being the previous 1st Rank of the Heavenly Rankings, only the current 1st Rank of the Heavenly Ranking could contend with him.

Upon seeing this, Li Xuantong patted Mu Chen’s shoulders. In the next instant, his body moved, and appeared on the giant peak Zhou Qingshan was on. Cupping his hands and sending his greetings, he said, “Senior Brother Zhou Qingshan, this time, let me be your opponent. The Undefeatable Divine Art is something that I’ve also wanted to ask guidance from.”

Zhou Qingshan continued to maintain his gentleness and gave a smile.

Without saying any words, he only nodded his head. His hands faintly hung down from his body, while a warm and affable expression appeared on his handsome face.

Following the successive movements of Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, all of the gazes in the stretch of the world instantly shot towards Mu Chen, who was still standing in the air. At this moment, faint startlement and surprise appeared within the eyes of Lin Zheng, Zhou Qingshan and Gu Tianyan.

“Don’t tell me that you’re letting him come up for the third slot?”

Gu Tianyan said while faintly wrinkling his forehead. Looking at Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong in the distance, he asked, “Your batch of students should not be weak to such an extent, right? Can a Heavenly Transformation Initial Stage be a representation of your strongest?”

He did not mean to look down on Mu Chen, but this was just an elaboration of the facts. After all, a youth at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase had appeared here, and this was not something that was rational.

“Senior Gu Tianyan, he’ll show you something unexpected.” facing Gu Tianyan’s doubts, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong simultaneously smiled, by chance, before replying to him.

“Oh, really? That truly makes me want to see it.” Gu Tianyan said while raising his eyebrows. He was, similarly, not an idiot. Since even Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong had spoken out, that meant to say that the Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase youth in front of him should have some methods of his own. If not, those two would definitely not let the latter carry such an important burden.

Facing the doubtful gaze of Gu Tianyan, Mu Chen took a deep breath. The expression within his eyes gradually turned dignified and grave as his body slowly fluttered towards the giant peak the former was at.

Regardless of the surroundings at Spiritual Light Mountain or the northern public square, both had quietened down at this instant. Countless gazes anxiously stared at Mu Chen. Of the three fights, the one

he would be in would be the most unbalanced.

Disregarding the gazes that hid the sky and covered the earth, Mu Chen tightly stared at Gu Tianyan. Slowly cupping his hands, a low and deep voice that contained not a single trace of fear resounded across the sky.

“Senior Brother Gu, Freshmen Mu Chen of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy seeks your guidance!”

Chapter 325: Battling Gu Tianyan

“Freshman Mu Chen...”

When Mu Chen’s deep and calm voice rang across the majestic mountain peak, the expressions on Lin Zheng, Zhou Qingshan and Gu Tianyan’s faces all froze as a peculiar shadow appeared within their eyes. They never imagined that the youth in front of them was just a Freshman.

However, it was such a Freshman that had finally distinguished himself above the rest in this hunt, and had even become the representation of the strongest within the students. This kind of matter made Gu Tianyan feel truly incredulous. While the three Great Generals were still students, Freshmen didn’t even have the qualifications of participating in the hunts, even so much so as becoming the representation of strength...

“Your batch of students are also truly interesting.”

Lin Zheng shook his head, before staring at Shen Cangsheng in front of him, whose imposing manner was astonishing, and wasn’t the slightest bit weaker than himself. Speaking to him, Lin Zheng said, “ However, I hope he’s truly something, If not, we’ll presume that your batch of students are truly not worthy of respect.”

“Haha!” Gripping the golden-coloured spear in his hands, Shen Cangsheng laughed heroically, before replying, “Senior brother Lin Zheng, please feel relaxed. Our batch of students will definitely win, no matter what!”

“Oh, really?”

Lin Zheng said with a smile, before taking a step forward. Boundless Spiritual Energy instantly swept out, bringing a surging pressure with it. At this instant, the clouds lingering in the sky were immediately scattered by the pressure wave that was sweeping out.

Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phase.

Lin Zheng did not have the slightest intent of restraint. Taking a step forward, he had completely revealed his full strength.

Feeling the strong Spiritual Energy pressure radiating out, the faces of the countless students in the surroundings of the Spiritual Light Mountain had faintly changed as they thought,This Senior Brother Lin Zheng is too strong. If he was placed among us students, the only person who could chat and laugh in front of him might only be Shen Cangsheng.

“Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phase. Undeniably, you’re the previous 1st Rank on the Heavenly Rankings.” a ripple seemed to spread out from within Shen Cangsheng’s eyes as a scorching intent slowly erupted from within. Grabbing his golden spear tightly, he furiously stomped his feet.

Bang!

At that very instant, the earth seemed to intensely quake, as a similar boundless Spiritual Energy furiously swept out with Shen Cangsheng in the centre.

Golden-coloured Spiritual Energy illuminated the horizon, completely resisting the Spiritual Energy pressure radiating from within Lin Zheng’s body.

Shen Cangsheng’s strength had similarly reached Heavenly Completion Middle Stage, it was not the slightest bit weaker than Lin Zheng!

“He’s too awesome!” countless students exclaimed excitedly in admiration, as unconcealable worship showed within their eyes. Although the two were of a similar level, Shen Cangsheng was, after all, younger than Lin Zheng. However, his power was not weaker than Lin Zheng. In the competition, it was clear that Shen Cangsheng had gotten the upper hand. If he were to reach the same age as Lin Zheng, he would definitely far exceed the current Lin Zheng.

The Overlord of the Heavenly Rankings sure deserved his title.

“No bad.”

Facing the Shen Cangsheng in front of him, even Lin Zheng had faintly nodded his head in approval, with admiration even showing in his eyes. He had a lot of sentiment towards the Northern Heavens Spiritual

Academy. Being able to see his Junior Brothers exceeding him, other than sighing in lamentation, he felt exceedingly gratified.

As of now, Shen Cangsheng's strength was worthy to be treated seriously.

While Lin Zheng and Shen Cangsheng were locked in a confrontation, Li Xuantong and Zhou Qingshan had also exhibited their strongest might. The degree of Spiritual Energy of the two was slightly inferior than the former two; however, it had also reached the degree of Heavenly Completion Initial Stage, When the two boundless Spiritual Energies radiating from the latter two collided, peals of thunder seemed to form and ring out.

The opponents for these two fights were exceptionally similar to each other. Furthermore, all of them clearly possessed abundant combat experience. Added with their various skills and techniques, wanting to quickly find the victor was clearly not an easy matter.

Therefore, countless gazes started to turn and landed on the giant peak where the third fight was. Over there were the two people with the greatest disparity in strength. Of the three fights, it was clearly the place where the difference was easiest to determine

"Looks like you've become the most critical key."

Gu Tianyan retracted his gaze from the other two fights in the distance and looked towards Mu Chen. With his capabilities, he was naturally able to see that the people in the two fights were of similar strength. If they continued like that, the result would most likely be a draw. And if they were both to draw, their fight over here would be the critical point to determine victory or defeat.

If Mu Chen won, all of the students would able able to smoothly pass through this hunt. If he were to lose, the result would be self-evident that everyone would leave with empty hands.

Mu Chen pursed his lips as the expression in his eyes turned dignified; however, he did not reply to Gu Tianyan.

“Although your strength doesn’t seem to be strong, your courage isn’t small. This placement isn’t something that ordinary people would dare to accept.” Gu Tianyan said indifferently. He was once a student, and had also participated in the hunts, and was even the strongest student representative in that batch. Therefore, he was very clear of how much pressure that place gave. With that kind of strength, Mu Chen was still able to stand up. This kind of pressure was exceptional.

It was this point that made Mu Chen feel rather pleasing to Gu Tianyan’s eyes.

“Although this place is very stressful, someone has to stand up.” Mu Chen replied in a soft voice.

Hearing his reply, Gu Tianyan nodded his head before retreating two steps. Inserting his hands into his sleeves, his fiery-red hair was blown by the mountain winds till they resembled flames fluttering and dancing. He slowly spoke out, “ Looking at your courage, I’ll let you make the first move.”

After all, Gu Tianyan had arrogance in his blood, with his strength far outclassing Mu Chen. He was also older; therefore, he felt it was not worth his dignity to get the first attack off.

“Then, I’ll thank Senior Brother Gu.”

Mu Chen was not stupid to let go of this kind of opportunity. As of now, he was the inferior side. If he was unable to guarantee even this kind of opportunity, even Gu Tianyan might shake his head towards him.

An unreasonable person was not worthy of high regards to him.

Gu Tianyan faintly nodded his head. Obviously, Mu Chen’s decisiveness made him feel rather satisfied. If he continued to force his way in a fight, that would simply be taking everyone’s hard work and making a joke out of it.

Mu Chen took a deep breath, Without saying any more words, his body fluttered back as he retreated. In the next instant, he sat down high in the air, as his eyes slowly started to close.

Upon seeing this, Gu Tianyan was faintly startled, before a peculiar expression erupted from his eyes. This was due to him noticing Spiritual Seals starting to condense around Mu Chen's body.

"So he's a Spiritual Array Master..." Gu Tianyan understood in a flash, before an interested expression erupted from his eyes.

Mu Chen's mental state had already calmed down. He blocked all of the disturbances coming from the outside world as his mental state sunk down, trying hard to find the miraculous feeling he had felt when he touched the "Heart Eye" state.

Facing an opponent on the level as Gu Tianyan, he simply did not the slightest chance of winning, as he did not have the qualifications to drag the fight on. He had to use his genuine method the moment he took action; if not, he would not have the slightest chance of success.

Arranging a Rank 5 Spiritual Array was obviously one of the strongest methods Mu Chen had in his arsenal.

As of now, Mu Chen was a Rank 4 Spiritual Array Master. Wanting to successfully arrange a Rank 5 Spiritual Array, he had to rely on the "Heart Eye" state. However, as of now, Mu Chen simply had no guarantees in entering this state, and could occasionally touch it. Thus, the current him could only work hard in order to feel that miraculous feeling once again, and rely on it to enter the "Heart Eye" State.

Mu Chen had completely calmed down as Spiritual Seals continued to condense around his body. However, he did not have the intention of bringing this a step higher. This pace that was not hurried or rush continued to spread out.

Countless gazes were already converged on Mu Chen's body. Even on the northern public square, everyone had trained their eyes tightly onto him. All of them wanted to know exactly what Mu Chen wanted to use to contend against Gu Tianyan, whose strength was at the Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase.

On the podium in the northern public square, a few elders started to narrow their eyes as they looked at the gigantic light screen in the sky that

was showing the fights of the Heavenly Completion Stages. This was already enough to spark interest in them.

"Oh?"

The eyes of Dean Tai Cang, which were as deep as the starry sky, suddenly had faint fluctuations as he looked with some astonishment at the figure of Mu Chen in the light screen. Beside him, a number of white-haired Elders started to make startled noises.

"These fluctuations..." the eyes of a white-haired Elder lit up a bit, before saying with a gentle smile, " Interesting. This Mu Chen seems to have a high talent in his training in Spiritual Arrays. He's actually able to reach the initial contact with the Heart Eye State. Not simple..."

As the voice of the white-haired Elder rang out, on the giant peak, the Spiritual Energy fluctuations around Mu Chen's body suddenly erupted out. The Spiritual Seals that were already formed shattered in an instant, before condensing again at an astonishing speed.

The number of Spiritual Seals had also explosively increased multiple times. In a short span of a number of breaths, it had exceeded over two hundred!

"Rank 5 Spiritual Array?" countless people involuntarily cried out in shock. Only when arranging a Rank 5 Spiritual Array would one need so many Spiritual Seals.

The expression on Gu Tianyan's face changed as he stared, with some astonishment, at Mu Chen. He never thought that the latter would actually be able to arrange a Rank 5 Spiritual Array. He thought,This Mu Chen truly has some capabilities. No wonder why he would be able to allocated the third strongest representative spot.

"Huuu!"

Around Mu Chen's body, hundreds of Spiritual Seals rushed towards the sky, before rapidly assimilating into the air. Instantly, the Spiritual Energy of the world erupted out. As Spiritual Energy swept out like gales, they took a form across the horizon.

Incomparably complicated rays of Spiritual Energy rapidly formed an outline. In the next moment, they had formed an incomparably large Spiritual Energy light array that was faintly discernable in the sky, while tyrannical Spiritual Energy fluctuations gushed out.

As the light array enveloped the horizon akin to two black lotuses, it slowly revolved, radiating with astonishing pressure.

At this moment, Mu Chen opened his eyes and looked at the formed Spiritual Array, before deeply exhaling in relief. Although the time he took was somewhat long, he was fortunately able to successfully arrange it.

"Not bad. Never would've imagined that you're capable of arranging a Rank 5 Spiritual Array..."

At this time, Gu Tianyan had slowly spoke. Raising his head to look at the incomparably large Spiritual Array, he faintly smiled while saying, "So, this is your method?"

Upon hearing his words, Mu Chen gave a faint smile. With a clench of his palm, a metallic ball, covered in rust spots, appeared in a flash. With a flick of his finger, the metallic ball shot out. Rays of Spiritual Energy that hid the skies and covered the earth erupted out. Under the shocked gazes of countless people, it rapidly took shape.

The Spiritual Energy fluctuations coming from it were not any weaker than the Rank 5 Spiritual Array that Mu Chen had just successfully arranged!

That means that this Spiritual Array was a Rank 5 Spiritual Array!

Mu Chen had, unexpectedly, thrown out two Rank 5 Spiritual Arrays at once!

As Gu Tianyan gazed at the gigantic objects in the sky, the tranquil expression on his face finally started to become grave, bit by bit.

Chapter 326: Twin Spiritual Array!

The gigantic light array slowly rotated in the air. The frightening Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiating out from it had condensed together, causing incomparable erratic Spiritual Energy hurricanes to billow out, and even caused some distortions to appear in the sky.

When the two Rank 5 Spiritual Arrays appeared at the same time, their might was considerably astonishing.

With a trace of shock, countless people looked at the spectacle before them. Although they were able to guess that Mu Chen had some hidden tricks up his sleeves, they never expected that he would actually conjure two Rank 5 Spiritual Arrays at once...

If these two Rank 5 Spiritual Arrays were to released, even Gu Tianyan might not dare to show the slightest bit of disdain, right?

The gazes of the countless students that participated in the hunt were turning scorching, but were not ignited with the flames of hope. Of the three fights, they were able to see that Mu Chen's one was the most important, and was even the most critical one of them.

If Mu Chen was able to fight to a draw, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong would definitely give their utmost to ensure that the final result would be a draw. That way, the students would still achieve the final victory.

At the other two giant peaks, both parties that were releasing their full might had also noticed this situation. Sensing this, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong's tensed bodies faintly relaxed by some degree. They were also worried about Mu Chen. However, seeing the spectacle before them, they knew that the latter really did leave some tricks up his sleeves.

As for Lin Zheng and Zhou Qingshan, both of them were slightly startled as they thought,No wonder why Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong were willing to allow a Freshman, whose strength was only at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase, to come up and fight. So, this Freshman isn't that simple after all.

Looks like the fight this time was truly interesting.

“Two Rank 5 Spiritual Arrays…”

Gu Tianyan had also raised his head and gazed towards the two enormous objects in the sky. The Spiritual Energy pressure sweeping out of them had made his clothes violently flap. His fiery-red hair fluttered about, and his expression finally turned dignified and grave.

“Being able to cause some much activity with your strength at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase… You’re truly incredible.” said Gu Tianyan slowly.

“I just managed to pull a fast one. If this was a life or death battle, I might not have that long of a time to arrange my Spiritual Arrays.” replied Mu Chen while shaking his head. With his current strength, arranging a Rank 5 Spiritual Array was still, somewhat, difficult. Furthermore, his success rate was not a hundred percent. If he was unable to make contact with the Heart Eye state, he might not have been able to achieve this step.

As for the Spiritual Array Seed, that was completely relying on foreign objects. That treasure was something that Mu Chen had used to scare people. However, as of now, he had no choice but to use it.

After all, Mu Chen felt that he was not able to defeat Gu Tianyan using a single Rank 5 Spiritual Array.

“The result is more important than the process. The so-called ‘fast one’. That also depends on whether you’re capable of achieving it in the first place.” Gu Tianyan said with a faint smile. A scarlet shadow seemed to be erupting, bit by bit, from within his eyes. In the next instant, his hands started to slowly spread out. Akin to flames, scarlet-red Spiritual Energy furiously erupted from within his body.

At this instant, the temperature of this stretch of the world seemed to rise, while the ground he was standing on turned unusually dry and parched.

“Make your move. Let me see exactly how strong the might of your two Rank 5 Spiritual Arrays are!” as scarlet-red Spiritual Energy enveloped Gu

Tianyan, akin to flames, his indifferent laughing voice resounded.

Taking a deep breath, Mu Chen gently nodded his head. Without saying any more nonsense, he raised his head and gazed towards the two gigantic Spiritual Arrays in the sky.

Other than the Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array, the Spiritual Array that was arranged by the Spiritual Array Seed was called the "Mysterious Yin Spiritual Array." It was also a Rank 5 Spiritual Array. However, according to Mu Chen's estimates, this "Mysterious Yin Spiritual Array" could only be considered as an Initial ranked one among the Rank 5 arrays. That meant that it could only achieve the prestige similar to a Heavenly Completion Initial Stage.

If the two Rank 5 Spiritual Arrays were to simultaneously erupt, they should be able to deal with Gu Tianyan, right?

As Mu Chen's eyes sparkled, he no longer had any more hesitation. His hands instantly came together to form a hand seal, causing the two Spirit Arrays to be activated.

Boom! Rumble!

Following Mu Chen's activation, the two gigantic Spiritual Arrays instantly started to revolve as astonishing Spiritual Energies radiated from them.

As the two gigantic black lotuses revolved, their black petals started to fold up. At their centre, a black light, which had been compressed and compressed to the extreme point where they took shape, gushed out. At the place where they collided, a glowing lotus, approximately 3 metres high, took shape and appeared. The size of this glowing lotus was not small. It pulsated akin to the beating of a heart. While it was pulsating, terrifying fluctuations started to radiate from it.

Crackle! Crackle!

At the other side, the "Mysterious Yin Spiritual Array" had also erupted, causing the chilling air from the world to condense. In the next instant, it formed a black-coloured stream in the middle of the Spiritual Array. The

stream splashed as it flowed, causing an extremely chilling air to radiate out. At this moment, even the air was frozen solid by the flowing stream.

Due to the glowing lotus that was pulsing like a beating heart, and the black-coloured water stream, the world become cold and gloomy.

“Interesting.”

Flames erupted within Gu Tianyan as he slowly clenched his hands.

“Senior Brother Gu, please!”

In the sky, with a dignified expression on his face, Mu Chen extended his thin finger and gave the air a tap. As his fingertip descended, ripples seemed to spread out from the space.

Boom!

At the place where the fingertip had tapped down, the pulsing glowing lotus shot over. Akin to a giant black python, the black-coloured stream also shot over, with the extremely cold air contained within causing even the air to get frozen.

Swish! Swish!

The two astonishing attacks streaked across the horizon, akin to lightning. Before the countless anxious gazes, they violently rushed towards Gu Tianyan down below.

The hearts of everyone watching skipped a beat.

Regardless of the surroundings of the Spiritual Light Mountain or the northern public square, everyone had opened their eyes wide and clenched their fists.

Under the attentive gazes of countless people, Gu Tianyan’s face had turned exceedingly grave. Looking at the two terrifying attacks sweeping towards him, he suddenly brought his hands together. Scarlet-red Spiritual Energy instantly erupted out, akin to an inferno.

“Heavenly Inflammation Divine Art – Flaming Dragon’s Protection!”

Following the deep voice that rang out from Gu Tianyan, boundless

Spiritual Energy frantically condensed. As an astonishing dragon roar rang out, the Spiritual Energy transformed into a vivid and lifelike flaming dragon. Giving a long roar, it occupied the space below Gu Tianyan, its gigantic body sparkling with an indestructible radiance.

"He had actually used his strongest defense..."

Upon seeing this, the eyes of both Lin Zheng and Zhou Qingshan faintly contracted. They thought,Looks like even Gu Tianyan is feeling some pressure. He immediately utilized his strongest defense upon making a move.

Roar!

As the flaming dragon took sat down, two streaks of light were already howling over. Without the slightest bit of hesitation, they violently impacted against it without a single shred of mercy.

Bang!

At the instant of impact, a muffled sound that made everyone's hearts tremble rang out. In the next instant, everyone saw a gigantic Spiritual shock wave, a thousand metres high, sweeping out as cracks rapidly extended from the point of impact.

Looking at the shock wave sweeping out, Mu Chen immediately exhibited the Soaring Dragon Technique that he had prepared beforehand. As the dragon's shadow appeared, with a flash, he appeared thousands of metres away, evading the incoming blast.

After evading the shock wave, Mu Chen looked towards the giant peak with incomparable graveness showing in his eyes. He did not know exactly what result the attack that he had sent out would have.

He hoped that it would have some effect; after all, he was unable to arrange such an attack again. He was also not able to find the second Spiritual Array Seed for his use.

It was not only him who had such a thought. Countless gazes tightly locked onto the dust-filled area as everyone tightly clenched their fists. It was already not easy for Mu Chen to reach such a step. If this fight was

able to end here, that would be a monumentally good thing for them.

On the other two giant peaks, both Shen Cangsheng, and Li Xuantong remained quiet without making any move. Clearly, they were all waiting for the result of Mu Chen's fight.

If Mu Chen was able to achieve a draw, as everyone hoped, it would be infinitely easier for them. If he had carelessly gave up a lost, either one of them might need to be prepared to pay a very high price.

Obviously, that was not the scenario they wanted to see.

Under the convergence of countless gazes, the dust on the giant peak finally started to slowly clear away. Following the dissipation of the dust, a figure gradually become clearer and clearer.

Gu Tianyan was still standing on the giant peak.

The hearts of countless people had seemingly turned cold at this moment as they stared astringently at the male standing on the giant peak, whose scarlet-red hair was akin to flames dancing in the wind.

Gu Tianyan was actually successful in receiving the attacks from two Rank 5 Spiritual Arrays!

He was, unexpectedly, strong to such a level?

Sigh, it's a pity.

A sigh resonated within the hearts of everyone.

While everywhere was deathly silent, Gu Tianyan faintly trembled as the sleeves around his hands instantly turned into dust. In the next instant, everyone saw fresh blood dripping from his left arm. As for the right arm, it faintly hanged down as though it had lost all of its strength.

An arm of Gu Tianyan seemed to have been temporarily crippled from the earlier collision.

Under everyone's gazes, Gu Tian Yan revolved his Spiritual Energy, causing the blood stains on his arms to gradually evaporate away. Raising his head, one could clearly see extreme graveness present within his eyes.

“Fortunately, I didn’t let my guard down. If not, I might have already lost.” Gu Tianyan’s voice deeply rang out. If he had not cleverly utilised his strongest defense, the injuries he sustained as of now might’ve been even worse.

Upon hearing his words, Mu Chen gave a helpless laugh and thought, Gu Tianyan is undeniably one of the three Great Generals. He truly is not easy to deal with. Mu Chen had given his utmost; however, he could only temporarily cripple a single arm of the latter.

Gu Tianyan stared gravely at Mu Chen without speaking and even without making any moves. Everyone knew that’s because by losing the Rank 5 Spiritual Array, if Mu Chen did not have any other methods, it would already be needless to continue this fight.

Naturally, Gu Tianyan would not give Mu Chen a second chance to arrange any Spiritual Arrays.

Within the silence that blotted the skies, under the attentive gazes of everyone, Mu Chen’s eyes started to slowly close again.

Chapter 327: Using the Black Lightning

When Mu Chen closed his eyes again, everyone was instantly shocked. Even Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong violently contracted their eyes. From the looks of it, Mu Chen didn't exhaust all of his abilities yet?

He still had some hidden methods?

At this time, Mu Chen, obviously, would not continue to arrange a Spiritual Array, as his speed was too slow. Furthermore, Gu Tianyan would not give him a second opportunity to do so. Therefore, he needed to utilise other methods.

However, what methods would truly allow him, whose strength was at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase, to contend against Gu Tianyan?

Nobody knew. Therefore, they could only lock their eyes tightly onto Mu Chen in the sky.

At this moment, Gu Tianyan's forehead had faintly wrinkled. Although he did not assume that Mu Chen was just putting up an act, after experiencing the Rank 5 Spiritual Arrays earlier, he would not see the latter as an ordinary Freshman again.

However, as to exactly what method Mu Chen would use to contend against him, he appeared slightly curious. After all, common methods would definitely not be able to let a person of Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase to contend with an opponent of Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase.

In the air, Mu Chen, whose eyes were tightly shut, did not make everyone wait for long. Lightning was faintly discernable around his body as it started to appear, while his skin started to turn a silvery colour, bit by bit.

The peals of thunder quietly rang out.

"Is that the Lightning God Physique?" upon seeing this, a trace of disappointment and doubt flashed past the eyes of Shen Cangsheng and Li

Xuantong. They had also practiced the Lightning God Physique before. Although it was capable of increasing one's combat prowess by quite a bit, it was far from being able to substitute the disparity of Mu Chen from Gu Tianyan.

If Mu Chen tried to use this to contend against Gu Tianyan, the result was already clearly evident.

In the sky, Mu Chen's eyes slowly opened as lightning sparkled within them. Lightning arcs danced and jumped around his body as a destructive power was faintly discernible as it radiated out.

"His strength has grown."

Gu Tianyan's eyes faintly narrowed as disappoint flashed within them as he thought,This is far from enough...

The ones who felt this wasn't only them. Even the participating students in the surroundings of the Spiritual Light Mountain faintly wrinkled their foreheads as some worry surfaced within their eyes. Although Mu Chen's aura had grown stronger, it was clearly far from being able to contend with Gu Tianyan.

However, facing those gazes that blotted to sky, Mu Chen did not care to bother much about them, with his gaze only having Gu Tianyan present within. In the next instant, he took a step forward. With his body transforming into a bolt of lightning, he shot forward.

Gu Tianyan did not have the slightest trace of movement as he looked at Mu Chen, who was hurtling over akin to a bolt of lightning. Gently shaking his head, he thought,Is Mu Chen trying to shatter the broken jar? However, for him to just rush over like this...

Giving a helpless smile, he did not continue to think about it. With a twist of his palm, scarlet-red Spiritual Energy rose out, akin to dancing flames, as boundless fluctuations started to radiate out.

Whoosh!

Mu Chen's speed was exceedingly quick. Within a number of breaths, he had seemingly appeared before Gu Tianyan. Without the slightest trace of

hesitation, he immediately sent a fist rumbling out.

Spiritual Energy burning with black flames gushed out while bringing along strong fluctuations. This caused even the ground to crack under the force of his full-force attack.

The violent fist of winds caused Gu Tianyan's hair to shock and flutter. However, the latter only shook his head gently. Clenching his finger tightly, in the next instant, Gu Tianyan similarly sent a fist rumbling out.

"Sigh."

Looking at the fists that were about to smash together in a moment, a low sigh rang out in the hearts of everyone watching. There were even some people who had turned their heads away. In such a head-on confrontation, Mu Chen simply didn't have the slightest chance of victory.

Wang Tong and the rest laughed bitterly, before shaking their heads and sighing.

Su Linger's lovable face turned pale at the moment. Only Luo Li, standing beside her, still had clear eyes, while tightly staring at Mu Chen, because she knew him too well...

Regardless of how difficult the situation was, he would never do an action that was absolutely pointless.

Under the unblinking gazes of countless people, Mu Chen's and Gu Tianyan's fists were about to collide. However, just at this instant, the other hand of Mu Chen quickly formed a mysterious symbol.

Humm! Humm!

Following the completion of that symbol, astonishing sounds of lightning furiously rang out from within his body. In the meridians of a part of his body, an uneven black lightning bead furiously exploded at this instant.

Bang!

At the instant when the black lightning bead exploded, an indescribably terrifying force gushed out from within, akin to a flood. Black-coloured

lightning liquid overflowed, circulating erratically along his meridians.

Intense pain spread out from within Mu Chen's body, causing his eyes to turn bloodshot as the capillaries in his eyes bulged out. Despite this, he firmly resisted the pain and hurriedly displayed the Lightning God Physique, frantically absorbing the terrifying power of lightning.

Bang!

At this same instant, the fists of Mu Chen and Gu Tianyan violent collided into each other!

Black-coloured lightning suddenly gushed out from every pore of Mu Chen's body, while a faint bloody mist was even discernable.

Boom!

An astonishingly loud sound that shook the heavens and earth rang out and resonated across this stretch of the world. A violent tremor seemingly ran through the giant peak that seemed to prop the sky up, while everyone could see that the earth there had collapsed, as giant cracks endlessly extended from there like black pythons.

Waves of shattered rock shot out from the origin of impact, hiding the skies and covering the earth as they shot out in all directions, before transforming into fragments that blotted the skies with a bang.

Everyone opened their eyes wide as they stared at the place where shattered rocks continued to shoot out. The place was enveloped by the dazzling rays of erratic Spiritual Energy, causing people to be unable to exactly see what had happened within.

Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong, as well as Lin Zheng and Zhou Qingshan, locked their gazes there with graveness showing in their eyes.

At the instant when their gazes had locked onto the origin of impact, the pupils of the four violently contracted as an erratic roar of thunder furiously resounded. In the next instant, a shadow had, unexpectedly, shot out from the place of dazzling radiance.

The two feet of the figure dug into the ground, creating two foot holes in

the hard stone surface, before dragging back, forming two eye-piercing marks, approximately a hundred metres long. Scorched marks were presented on the rocks along the sides of those marks.

Exactly who was that?!

Everyone's gazes instantly converged over where the figure that was shot out staggered and stumbled, before stabilising his footing. As the radiance dissipated, bit by bit, it finally revealed a conspicuous head of scarlet-red hair

That was Gu Tianyan!

The pupils of countless people violently expanded, with some even forgetting to breath as thick shock and incredulous expressions crept onto their faces.

"How is that possible...?"

Regardless if the surroundings were the Spiritual Light Mountain or the northern public square, everyone was mumbling in disbelief. The person that was miserably flung out was, unexpectedly, Gu Tianyan?

On the podium, the gazes of the Elders watching the fight started to turn dignified at this moment.

"What's happening...?"

The four, Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong, Lin Zheng and Zhou Qingshan, looked in astonishment at the spectacle that made people feel incredulous. Even the four of them were slightly able to regain their clarity.

Previously, the two Rank 5 Spiritual Arrays were unable to force Gu Tianyan to such a miserable state. However, could this kind of head-on confrontation that should not have the slightest chance of victory, lead to such a result?

Under the shocked gazes that blotted the sky, Gu Tianyan slowly raised his head. At this moment, an obvious trace of blood dripped down from the corner of his mouth as he looked towards the direction of the giant

peak with a similar shock in his eyes. From there, an erratic Spiritual Energy was still enveloping the place.

"You're truly formidable. I never imagined that you're actually still hiding an ace that's even more formidable that the two Rank 5 Spiritual Arrays..." Gu Tianyan's hoarse and deep voice rang out as he wiped away the blood stains at the corner of his mouth, while no longer appearing to be as relaxed as before.

Within the centre of the radiance where the erratic Spiritual Energy was still present, footsteps seemed to be ringing out as everyone's gazes tightly locked onto that area.

Thump! Thump!

The sounds of footsteps become increasingly heavy, within the Spiritual Energy radiance, a figure became increasingly clear. In the next moment, he stepped out of the dazzling radiance, and appeared before all of the gazes.

Hiss!

When that figure appeared, everyone instantly sucking in a mouthful of cold air.

The Mu Chen that had appeared before them had a huge change from his previous appearance. Shattered lines had appeared on his body as black-coloured lightning liquid endlessly flowed from the pores of his body, before enveloping him within.

Black-coloured lightning danced across his body, while the pair of black pupils were filled with an indescribable savageness that seemed to be the flavor of destruction.

If the previous Mu Chen gave people a gentle and calm feeling, the current him was akin to the creature that had crawl out of the depths to destroy the heavens and earth, causing people's hearts to palpitate.

"What is that...?"

Everyone looked in shock at the changed Mu Chen. The destructive

energies radiating from him, was that truly something that could be displayed by a person at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase?

"That's the Lightning God Physique?" muttered Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong as their eyes were brimming with doubt. They were able to detect the familiar fluctuations from Mu Chen's body. However, this familiar Lightning God Physique was much stronger than the Lightning God Physique they knew...

Within the northern public square, countless people were still in shock, while the faces of the Elders at the podium turned grave and dignified.

"This fluctuation..."

The abstruse eyes of Dean Tai Cang faintly contracted, before saying in a soft voice, "This is the might of the Divine Black Lightning. Unexpectedly, there's a strand of Divine Black Lightning in that brat's body."

"He truly is messing around." said a white-haired Elder on the side as he shook his head, before continuing, "Although I don't know where he got that Divine Black Lightning from, its the stuff that even people of Sovereign Rank would not dare to casually touch. However, that kid actually dared to keep it within his body..."

"Haha, that Physique Cultivating Deity Tier Spiritual Art sure looks familiar."

Dean Tai Cang gave a faint smile without saying anything else. However, the gaze that locked onto the figure of the youth in the light screen radiated with increasing interest.

Looks like our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy has produced another brat with a monstrous talent.

On the giant peak, under the attentive gazes of countless people, Mu Chen slowly raised his head. With black-coloured lightning liquid flowing around him, he tightly stared at Gu Tianyan. At this moment, a hoarse voice, along with the flavor of destruction, slowly rang out.

"Let's continue."

As the hoarse voice rang out, Mu Chen took a step forward, with the earth seemingly vibrating at this instant.

Chapter 328: Blood Battle

On the giant peak, destructive fluctuations gushed out from Mu Chen's body as low and deep rumbles of thunder continuously rang out from within him. As those sounds resounded, even the sky seemed to turn dark and overcast.

Countless gazes converged on Mu Chen's body, which was covered in black lightning liquid that was flowing across the entire surface of his body. Due to the successive shocks and astonishment they had received from him, the faces of a large number of people started to gradually turn calm. Instead, their gazes towards Mu Chen started to turn peculiar and weird, since the latter's performance had exceeded far beyond their expectations...

"Are the current Freshmen strong to such a level?" the gazes of Lin Zheng and Zhou Qingshan had also turned strange. They never imagined that a Freshman, whose strength was only at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase, would actually be able to force Gu Tianyan to such a miserable state.

Upon hearing that, the gazes of Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong in the distance, intersected for a moment. Obviously, they were also unable to understand the hidden cards that Mu Chen had now displayed.

However, regardless of that, to them, this was not bad news.

The fight in front of them had seemingly turned slightly towards Mu Chen's favor.

Staring at Mu Chen, whose current appearance had become somewhat terrifying, Gu Tianyan's eyes turned increasingly solemn and grave. At this moment, the destructive fluctuations radiating from the former's body had made his heart start to palpitate and tremble.

Strength of such a level shouldn't appear on the body of a Freshman, whose strength was only at the level of a Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase.

Taking in a deep breath, scarlet-red Spiritual Energy curled onto his arms, akin to raging flames. Across the horizon, boundless scarlet-red Spiritual Energy swept out, akin to a prairie full of heavenly fire.

At this moment, he could no longer continue to show any mercy.

Boom!

As boundless Spiritual Energy gushed out of Gu Tianyan's body, Mu Chen, who was completely covered in the black lightning liquid, had already taken a step forward. Instantly, the earth tremble as peals of thunder resounded. Akin to a black bolt of lightning, Mu Chen instantly shot out.

Looking at the black bolt of lightning heading his way, while radiating with devastating fluctuations, Gu Tianyan's eyes instantly narrowed. With a clench of his hands, scarlet-red Spiritual Energy erupted out, before transforming into a long flaming spear in his hands.

Hong!

As a tremble shook through his arms, the long flaming spear transformed into a fiery streak of light. Shattering space, while carrying along violent and explosive fluctuations, it fiercely shot towards Mu Chen.

Facing the berserking fiery long spear flying explosively towards him, Mu Chen did not show any sign of wanting to give way to it. Clenching his hand tightly to form a fist, the black lightning liquid enveloped his fist, which he violently sent rumbling towards the fiery long spear.

Bang!

As they violently collided, the fiery spear, which was capable of piercing through an expert at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase, was directly sent shooting away by Mu Chen's fist, before transforming in fluttering scarlet-red bits that blotted the sky. In the next moment, Mu Chen's figure travelled through the plume that was created. In a flash, he had already arrived right in front of Gu Tianyan.

Bang! Bang!

Without the slightest courtesy and hesitation, Mu Chen's black lightning liquid-covered fists howled. Transforming into shades, they hid the skies and covered the earth as they hurtled towards Gu Tianyan.

Every single fist sent out was abnormally frightening, with even the surrounding space showing slight traces of distortion.

If it was before, Gu Tianyan might have commented on Mu Chen's stupidity for wanting to engage in close-quarter-combat. After all, the difference in strength between the two of them was too large. Mu Chen could only rely on special methods to defeat him. In a head-on confrontation, the latter would lose without a doubt.

However, facing the attacks that Mu Chen had launched at him now, Gu Tianyan did not dare to show the slightest negligence. The current Mu Chen, who was enveloped in the black lightning liquid, was too terrifying! The strength radiating from the former was to such a degree that made even him feel a sliver of dread.

Boundless scarlet-red Spiritual Energy erratically gushed out from Gu Tianyan's body. In an instant, his arms were covered in a majestic layer of scarlet-red crystals; the embodiment of the degree of condensation of his Spiritual Energy.

After unleashing all of the Spiritual Energy within his body without any restraint, Gu Tianyan's gaze started to turn scorchingly hot, and fighting intent erupted from his eyes.

Roar!

A howl resounded from his throat as he too took a step forward. Sending his fists howling out, they seemed to have transformed into a boundless sea of fighting intent as they violently rumbled out.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Seemingly in an instant, fists of the two collided into each other. Akin to meteors striking the earth, they erupted with extremely astonishing erratic fluctuations.

Everyone watching could only see the black lighting, as well as the

scarlet-red Spiritual Energy, frantically erupting about, and the figures of the two violently collided into one another. As fist shadows dissipated, everyone could see the deep and enormous holes that they created around the surrounding earth.

Countless people became tongue-tied as they watched the crazily clashing figures hidden behind the the erratic eruption of Spiritual Energy.The raw confrontation when fists smashed against flesh caused the hearts of countless people to feel fear and trepidation.

No one would have guess that this fight would be violent and ferocious to such a degree.

Bang!

Under the countless gazes that showed fear and trepidation, the fists of the two, whose eyes had already turn red, violently smashed against each other in the erratic eruption of Spiritual Energy.

Shock waves visible to the naked-eye swept out, and the entire stretch of the earth there instantly cracked and shattered.

Bang! Rumble!

Destructive black lightning seemed to flash within Mu Chen's eyes as the black lightning liquid started to squirm and wriggle on his arm, causing destructive energies to gush out from within.

Bang!

Once again, Mu Chen's black lightning-covered fist smashed straight against Gu Tianyan's scarlet-red crystal-covered fist.

Black-coloured ripples radiated out as Gu Tianyan's face instantly changed, some cracks had, unexpectedly, started to appear on the scarlet-red crystal on his fist.

The destructive fluctuations within the black lightning liquid continued to ceaselessly pervade him. Under these destructive fluctuations, the Spiritual Energy within Gu Tianyan's body started to rapidly get destroyed and defeated.

“Go back!”

A hoarse roar furiously rang out from Mu Chen’s mouth, causing the black ripples to violently tremble. Instantly, the crystal layer on Gu Tianyan’s arm completely shattered, while his body was flung back a thousand metres by the former’s fist.

As Gu Tianyan was sent flying, Mu Chen’s feet dug deep into the hard rock ground below him by the rebounding force, causing him to almost flip backwards.

“He sent Gu Tianyan flying yet again!”

Shocked, clamoring voices rang out once again from the surroundings of the Spiritual Light Mountain as excitement and strong emotions surfaced within the eyes of countless students. No one would have imagined that the current Mu Chen would be frightening to the point he was actually able to send Gu Tianyan retreating in a head-on confrontation.

Under the soaring atmosphere, Mu Chen pressed his hands on the ground, and pulled himself out from the earth as a bit of the black lightning liquid flowed out.

Raising his head, he looked towards Gu Tianyan, who he had sent flying. At this moment, there weren’t any traces left of the initial expression he had in the beginning of the fight, since blood was continuously dripping from his arms. Not only was his clothing tattered, his head of fiery-red hair had turned messy and charcoal black.

The energy contained by shattering that black lightning bead had far exceeded Mu Chen’s expectations. This energy was too terrifying. Even with him learning the Lightning God’s Physique, there were still some pretty serious internal injuries within his body.

Thinking about it, if he didn’t learn the Lightning God’s Physique, and possessed the ability granted by it to absorb the strength of lightning to temper his fleshly body, the current him would’ve been completely fried by the energy of the black lightning and turn into ashes.

Regardless of that, he was unable to maintain this state for too long. As

of now, his current body was simply unable to endure the devastating black lightning that was wreaking havoc.

"I have to end this fast."

Instead of succumbing to the intense pain radiating from within his body, it had caused Mu Chen to maintain his calmness at all times. Eyes sparkling, he did not allow the advantage that he seemed to have gained to flood his mind, as he firmly decided to prevent this fight from dragging on any longer.

Bang!

Just as this thought flashed past Mu Chen's mind, an exceedingly erratic Spiritual Energy fluctuation suddenly rushed to the heavens in the far away sky. Raising his head, Mu Chen saw that the horizon present before him had already turned into a purgatory of flames.

Under the burning horizon, Gu Tianyan stood erect. As of now, his eyes were scarlet-red, as if flames had erupted from them. Staring tightly at Mu Chen, a hoarse sound rang throughout the horizon.

"Mu Chen, with your strength at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase, you're the first person that is able to force me to such a stage!"

"I admired your capabilities! In this fight today, if you're able to receive this move of mine, it'll be considered your victory!"

Upon shouting those words, Gu Tianyan did not show the slightest hesitation. Rapidly placing his hands together, he formed a seal. Following the seal's formation. The scarlet-red Spiritual Energy that blotted the horizon hid the skies and covered the earth as they rapidly converged in his hands.

Bang! Bang!

As the scarlet-red Spiritual Energy crazily converged, a scarlet-red halberd, approximately ten metres long, was faintly discernable as it finally formed within Gu Tianyan's hands.

The long halberd was akin to a twisting fiery dragon, looking exceedingly malevolent and sinister. It's entire body was scarlet-red, as if it was made entirely of scarlet-red crystals. As the fiery dragon slowly wriggled and squirmed, indescribably erratic fluctuations started to ripple and undulate.

Roar!

As the fiery dragon roared, the entire stretch of the world seemed to be in a fiery and scorching state.

"He even had to use that move..." the eyes of both Lin Zheng and Zhou Qingshan contracted. Both of them had deep understanding of Gu Tianyan, and naturally had ample knowledge of his skills and abilities. The move the latter was using right now was considered the strongest attack in his arsenal.

At the beginning of the fight, who would have expected that Gu Tianyan, who had victory grasped within his hands, would be forced to such a stage?

Both Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong had also raised their heads and stared gravely at the horizon. Anyone could tell that at this stage of the fight, both parties had already brought out all of their trump cards. In this fight today, even if Mu Chen were to lose, there would be absolutely no one that would mutter half a word of doubt...

"Looks like this is his final move."

Following the appearance of the fiery dragon halberd, Gu Tianyan's face turned somewhat pale. As his scarlet-red eyes stared at Mu Chen, he furiously took a step forward. As a tremble shook through his arm, the long halberd erupted with scarlet-red light that blotted the skies.

"Great Heavenly Fiery Dragon Halberd!"

Roar!

Within the sea of flames, a dragon roar seemed to resound as the flames that blotted the sky erupted out. Transforming into a scarlet streak of light, the fiery dragon halberd shot across the horizon, before enveloping Mu Chen within its light.

Within the scarlet streak of light, the fiery dragon spread its jaws and claws open as the dragon roar shook the earth.

Raising his head, Mu Chen looked at the scorching gale blowing at him, causing the earth around him to be roasted to the point of cracking and shattering. Within his black eyes, the destructive black lightning started to grow increasingly erratic.

Placing his palms together, the black lightning liquid started to flow within his palms, before fiercely forming a seal with his hands.

At this moment, Spiritual Energy erupted from his back, before transforming into a starry sky. Within the starry sky, Spiritual Energy the blotted the sky gushed out as a tiger and a tortoise stepped out from within, appearing simultaneously.

Roar!

Moo!

As they roared and howled together, countless nervous and emotional gazes immediately swept over, while noticing the black lightning twisting and arching around their bodies.

A dragon, a tiger and a tortoise.

Shattering the skies, under the gazes of countless people who were close to suffocating under their pent up breaths, they furiously collided against each other!

Chapter 329: Victory

The skies turned dark and overcast, while every single gaze in the surroundings of the Spiritual Light Mountain was focused on the air above the giant peak. There were two frightening attacks that caused everyone to shudder and tremble. They howled, before violently colliding like two comets that streaked across the skies.

In that instant, an intense shock wave rang and resounded across the entire hunting grounds.

The dazzlingly intense light produced was akin to a scorching sun, sending its intense rays of light that shattered the darkness of the world. Under the eye-piercing light, the eyes of countless people could not help turning narrow.

Boom!

As the intense sun surfaced in the sky, the dragon, tiger and tortoise released all of the strongest energies contained within them without the slightest bit of restraint. This caused an approximate thousand metre wide Spiritual Energy storm to form, and faint traces of distortions could be faintly discernable in the surrounding space.

Everyone tightly stared at the incomparably large Spiritual Energy storm. As the Spiritual Energy within it grew increasingly erratic, the storm started to distort, traces of it being unable to contain the energy within it any longer.

Creak!

As the distortions present within the Spiritual Energy storm reached its limit, before the crowd could react, it exploded, causing thousand metre wide Spiritual Energy ripples to sweep across the skies.

That was a rather spectacular scene.

Being at the front most position against the shock waves, Mu Chen and Gu Tianyan both bore the greatest brunt of it. Although the two of them had done their utmost to defend against them, they were still sent flying

the instant they made contact with them.

Bang! Bang!

As the bodies of the two flew out, the neighbouring mountain peaks were all smashed through by them.

Bang!

Finally, the two of them smashed straight into the inside of the two mountain peaks. Rocks rolled down, covering and burying the both of them up. While both of them had miserable outcomes, the people close to the giant peak were akin to small fishes stuck in churning waters as each of them was sent tumbling into a pitiful state. There were some that were even more unlucky, being sent twisting in the air while spurting out blood from their mouths.

However, it was fortunate that this was, after all, just the aftermath of the collision, with not much destruction being caused. After a few minutes, the devastating Spiritual Energy storm started to slowly get weaker, bit by bit.

Only when that happened did the surrounding crowd start to regain their senses, and turned their gazes towards the giant peak. Unable to bear it, their mouths started to twitch. As of now, the lowering giant peak was in a completely ruined state, with giant cracks extending from it, akin to a spider web, covering it entirely.

The collision between the two had seemingly destroyed the entire towering giant peak.

This caused quite a few people to feel shock and astonishment within their hearts. The destructive power of these two people was too terrifying...

“What about the two of them...?”

Someone thought about the two main characters, before hurriedly turning their gazes towards the two collapsed mountain peaks in the distance. Those students that participated in the hunt were, as of now, incomparably nervous and anxious. Mu Chen’s victory or defeat

concerned all of them being able to acquire the Spiritual Light Empowerment. As of now, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong had yet to make their move, as even they were waiting, waiting for Mu Chen to give some closure for them...

As long as Mu Chen was able to finish his fight with a draw, all of the students there would basically achieve a definite victory in the combined results. However, if Mu Chen lost, they would need to win a fight amongst the last two. Furthermore, thinking about the need for them to defy the heavens to pull off a reversal, this would be an extremely difficult task to accomplish for even Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong.

After all, both Lin Zheng and Zhou Qingshan, who had yet to make a move, weren't people that were easy to deal with.

At this moment, the expressions on Shen Cangsheng's and Li Xuantong's faces turned increasingly grave and solemn. Locking their sights on the two collapsed mountain peaks, even with their strong emotional control, their hearts started to beat faster.

Contrary to them, Lin Zheng and Zhou Qingshan remained more calm and collected. However, their tight and unwavering gazes reveal their concern for the result.

The entire stretch of the world turned quiet again, while everyone awaited the result. However, the pressure coming from the surroundings was extremely fierce, causing people to be unable catch their breath.

This atmosphere was similarly present in the northern square, since everyone was staring tightly at the gigantic light screen in the sky, while tightly clenching their hands. The previous fight had admittedly caused them to feel shock, as well as sighing in admiration. However, regardless of that, the result was the most important.

Crash! Boom!

Under the attentive gazes of countless people, rocks started to suddenly shift and roll down from one of the collapsed mountain peaks, causing everyone's gazes to hurriedly turn over. Over there, a scarlet-red Spiritual Energy rushed to the skies, before a figure rushed out from within the

collapsed mountain peak.

"That's Gu Tianyan!" someone exclaimed.

The scarlet-red light slowly dissipated, revealing Gu Tianyan. As of now, his entire body was covered in blood, with his face appearing exceedingly pale. The Spiritual Energy surrounding his body appeared extremely weak and exhausted, without being as strong as his initial appearance.

Obviously, the previously astonishing clash was not something light for Gu Tianyan.

Upon noticing the reappearance of Gu Tianyan, the hearts of countless students could not help sinking. Although he had suffered serious injuries, he was still not at the stage where he was unable to continue the fight...

As for Mu Chen...

Looking at the other collapsed mountain peak that was showing no signs of activity, their palms were all filled with sweat.

This kind of silence, continued for a short moment.

Creak!

At the other collapsed mountain peak, the rocks started to shift and roll down. Everyone's eyes turned large when they noticed a weak black ray of Spiritual Energy rushing out from within the layer of rocks that were pushed apart.

Within the black Spiritual Energy, a figure stumble and staggered as he shot through the air, before stopping a short distance away.

It was Mu Chen.

However, as of now, he was entirely covered in blood, with rather serious and terrible-looking wounds on his body. Compared to Gu Tianyan, he obviously appeared more miserable and pitiful.

However, even though he had suffered such serious injuries, he still stood perfectly straight in the air. As of now, the youthful figure appeared exceedingly thin. As his tattered clothing fluttered in the wind, his miserable-looking appearance was unexpectedly unable to conceal the

imposing aura that made people's hearts palpitate.

Due to his injuries, the eyes of the youth had appeared dark and dim. Staring fiercely at Gu Tianyan in the distance, they appeared akin to a ferocious gaze of a wolf or a tiger.

Countless gazes blankly stared at the youth that still stood up on the sky, covered in fresh blood. The silence continued for a long moment, before it was broken by the earth-shattering cheers.

Facing Gu Tianyan's strongest attack, Mu Chen had managed to successfully endure it!

He did not collapse!

Countless students were emotional to the point that their faces were turning red as they waved their hands in the air. Their gazes looking at the thin figure in the sky were filled with admiration and worship. These kinds of gazes had already resembled those that were used when they looked at Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, and no one else.

"Too awesome..."

The faces of the three Wang Brothers had also turned red, and their expressions were filled with emotions. As of now, their eyes were filled with respect. Mu Chen's performance in this fight had completely won them over.

Naturally, they knew that the people being conquered would be many of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy students. From this day onwards, Mu Chen's place within the academy might not be much weaker than Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong.

Even influential characters like Su Xuan and He Yao had already been tossed far, far away by Mu Chen.

Su Ling'er had also started to cheer, with her lovable face turning red, while emotionally grabbing onto Su Xuan's wrist. Previously, she had almost suffocated, while watching the fight. If Mu Chen had lost in the final exchange, she would have simply lost her life.

Su Xuan gently nodded her small head as she looked at Mu Chen's figure with a gentle smile on her face. Who would have thought that a few months ago, this Freshman was still an unknown person within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy? However, now...

Perhaps he would become the fastest improving Freshman in the history of the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy.

Contrary to everyone, Luo Li did not show the same level of emotions as the others. Staring quietly at Mu Chen, a faint upwardly-curling arc appeared at the corners of her small red lips. She had always believed that the youth that she loved would be someone that became as dazzling as the stars.

Regardless of before, or now, or even in the future...

""Hu~.""

Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong both exhaled a quiet breath of relief as they looked at Mu Chen's figure. Unable to help it, they nodded their heads as they thought,That fellow truly makes people have a whole new level of respect for him.

In the sky, Gu Tianyan had also looked with complicated emotions at the battered and exhausted youth, whose eyes were still shining exceedingly bright. Hearing the deafening sounds of cheering coming from the surroundings, he could not help letting out a bitter laugh. When he was still a student, there were a lot of people then that had cheered for him in the same manner. However, as of now, the positions were reversed...

"Senior Brother Gu, did you have a great fight? If you feel that it's not enough, I might be able to accompany you for a move or two more." From a distance, Mu Chen slowly wiped away the bloodstains at the corners of his mouth as he spoke out, while a smile that was hard to raise appeared on his mouth.

Upon hearing that, Gu Tianyan made a laugh, before slowly relaxing his body. Gesturing with his hand, he said, "It's alright. If I continue to say anything more, I'm afraid I'll invoke the anger of the crowd. Furthermore, I said earlier that if you're able to receive that move of mine, you'll be the

victor of this fight."

After saying those words, Gu Tianyan's gaze turned serious as he stared at Mu Chen. Cupping his hands, a low and deep voice slowly rang throughout the sky.

"I've lost this fight."

His actions had shown that he had already placed Mu Chen on equal grounds to himself. As of now, to him, the latter was no longer just a Freshman of Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase.

"Thanks for going easy, Senior Brother Gu."

Without being unreasonable, Mu Chen gently nodded his head. He had risked his life for this fight. But, it was all worth it.

Following his words, the cheering voices in the surroundings instantly rose another notch as countless people became so emotional that their faces turned red.

"Mu Chen won!"

"Mu Chen won!"

As countless sounds of cheering resounded, even the students at the northern square, who had not participated in the hunt were feeling abnormally emotional. This fight was sufficient to make their hot blood boil.

On the podium, a few elders had also faintly nodded their heads. Obviously, they felt extremely satisfied by the fight that had just occurred.

"Dean, looks like our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy has another new monstrous talent. Congratulations..." said a white-haired old man sitting beside Dean Tai Cang.

As of now, there was also a faint smile present on Dean Tai Cang's face as he looked at the youth in the light screen, before slowly replying, "For the sake of that Ji Xuan, Saint Spiritually Academy had not hesitated to use those underhanded moves. However, I have to tell them that our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's Mu Chen isn't any weaker than him..."

While deafening cheering sounds resounded around them, on the giant peaks, both Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong had smiled and laughed. In the next moment, they turned around, looking at Lin Zheng and Zhou Qingshan, who had slightly complicated expressions on their faces.

“Senior, the next fights, should be our turn now...”

Chapter 330: The End

On the two giant peaks, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong respectively looked towards Lin Zheng and Zhou Qingshan. As of now, the expressions on their faces were undeniably much more relaxed than before, stemming from their self-confidence.

Although Lin Zheng and Zhou Qingshan weren't so easy to deal with that even Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong were not daring to even say they were absolutely able to defeat them, to them, achieving a draw in such a fight wasn't something difficult.

Of the three fights, Mu Chen had already won one. Even if they were to both draw, or lose one fight, in the end, they would still achieve victory.

Naturally, losing one match was something that they would obviously not do. In front of them, Mu Chen had become so miserable just to achieve a win. If they were to lose, they would truly be unable to explain themselves in front of all the students.

Looking at each other in the eyes, Lin Zheng and Zhou Qingshan both gave helpless laughs. They never imagined that the final checkpoint would come to such a stage...

In the surroundings of the Spiritual Light Mountain, the cheering sounds that had lasted for quite a while gradually grew softer as everyone looked excitedly at the confrontations happening on the other two giant peaks. With the advantage on their side, after Mu Chen's victory, they had already seemingly won half of the final fight.

As long as no aberrations happened during Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong's fight, victory would definitely be theirs.

Looking at the scene before him, Mu Chen finally relaxed his body completely. What happened after this was already none of his concern. He had already done what he was able to do, and he had completely achieved his goal.

Upon completely relaxing, the weakness of his body instantly surfaced

from the depths, causing him to stagger and stumble.

Suddenly, a clear and beautiful fragrance blossomed from behind him as Luo Li appeared beside him. Without any scruples on the blood that covered his entire body, her white and slender hands supported Mu Chen's body, before resting him on her lovable body.

As Luo Li supported Mu Chen, she looked at the heart-wrenching injuries present on his body. These were all caused by the black lightning's energy, causing them to look extremely horrifying. For the sake of enduring such power, Mu Chen had shouldered an extreme amount of pain and suffering.

"Are you alright?" asked Luo Li softly, concern flashing within her clear and limpid eyes. Although she was not willing to have Mu Chen engage in such life-threatening fights and earnestly wished to help him, she knew... that she couldn't interfere in these kinds of matters. It wasn't a question of the dignity of a male, but a responsibility.

This was the responsibility that Mu Chen had embraced, and he needed to face it by himself. Similarly, he would not wish for anyone to interfere and take action, including her.

Smiling, Mu Chen extended his hand to embrace Luo Li's slender waist, with his body seemingly pasted on her soft and delicate body. At this moment, his body would faintly tremble from time to time, originating from the intense pain radiating from within his body. These tremors were extremely minute, causing others to be unable to discover them. Luo Li was only able to feel them when he rested on her, causing her to feel even more concern for him.

"Everything that happens from now is of no concern to me." said Mu Chen while looking at the two giant peaks in the distance. Regardless of the results of the final fights, he was unable to interfere at all.

"You've already completed the most important part. There shouldn't be much more suspense in the following two fights." Luo Li said with a slight smile as she continued, "Congratulations. As of now, you've truly become an influential character at the peak of the Northern Heavens Spiritual

Academy."

"I don't care about such things." replied Mu Chen as he stared at Luo Li's beautiful and exquisite face, before continuing to say slowly, " For me, you came to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. This has already consumed your training time. Although I've done nothing about this, I can at least do my utmost to reduce your losses...I don't care about other people getting their Spiritual Light Empowerment; however, that's something that you definitely need to have."

Hearing his words, Luo Li gawked. Looking at the youth, although, he had some bloodstains on his face, it was still as handsome and dashing. A slightly acidic feeling rose on her small nose.Was this the reason why you would risk your life...?

"I don't think that I've lost anything. On the contrary, during these past few years, especially the time within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, I've never felt more happiness in my entire life." said Luo Li gently as a gentle and beautiful smile blossomed on her face.

Hearing her words, Mu Chen smiled as the arm wrapped around Luo Li's waist slowly grew tighter, seemingly as though he wanted to sink her into his body.

As Mu Chen continued to enjoy the gentle and fragrant embrace, under the gazes of countless people, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong slowly took a step forward on the two giant peaks.

Bang!

Boundless Spiritual Energy shot through the skies as the pressure coming from the two strong Spiritual Energies flooded out. Instantly, the entire stretch of the sky was enveloped under the Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiating from the two.

Obviously, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong had already prepared to use their full strength in their fights.

Contrary to expectations, facing the strong Spiritual Energy pressing down on them, the expressions on Lin Zheng and Zhou Qingshan still

remained calm and unchanged.

"Senior Brother Lin Zhen."

"Senior Brother Qingshan."

Cupping their hands at the same time, both Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong roared in a low voice, "Please give your guidance!"

Bang!

As they roared, the expression within the eyes of the two instantly became fierce and sharp. Stomping their feet on the ground, their figures instantly shot out as the Spiritual Energy that hid the skies and blotted the earth rapidly converged together.

Looking at the two shooting towards them with fierce fighting intent erupting from them, Lin Zheng and Zhou Qingshan shot a look at each other. After helplessly shrugging their shoulders, they made a move. Unexpectedly, out of everyone's expectations, they had taken a step back.

Facing the attacks of Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, they had unexpectedly retreated?

Whoosh!

Clamoring noises instantly resounded across the world. Although Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong were strong, they were obviously incapable of scaring Lin Zheng and Zhou Qingshan away.

Feeling somewhat shocked, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong both halted in their steps. Looking at the two who had retreated and unable to detect the faintest traces of fighting intent from them, they started to wrinkle their brows, obviously unable to understand their intent.

Facing the doubtful stares coming their way, Lin Zheng gave a helpless smile and said, "There's no need to continue fighting."

"For this last checkpoint, let's consider it your win." said Zhou Qingshan while shrugging his shoulders.

Upon hearing their replies, both Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong gawked, something which was replicated by all of the students around the

Spiritual Light Mountain. A split second later, furious sounds of cheering that shook the skies erupted out.

Lin Zhen and Zhou Qingshan had actually admitted defeat on their own accord!

That would mean that they have passed through the last checkpoint! All of them would obtain their Spiritual Light Empowerment! Their year's worth of bitter training wasn't wasted!

"They've given up, huh...?" Mu Chen also felt somewhat shocked. However, it was too much of a surprise for him. Lin Zheng and Zhou Qingshan were obviously not weak. However, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong were not the slightest bit weaker than them. Even if the former two were to utilise all of their cards, they might only be able to achieve an evenly matched situation. However, this kind of result would already be unable to create the slightest bit of change in the entire situation.

Of the three fights, Mu Chen had won his, while Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong had both achieved draws. Therefore, once this result was out, it was already unable to be changed. Since that was the case, there was simply no point for this confrontation to continue.

However, Lin Zheng and Zhou Qingshan's straightforwardness was something that made Mu Chen feel slightly intrigued. He had assumed that they would cross hands for at least an exchange before choosing to give up on the fight. He never imagined that the fight would be over before it even began...

Obviously, both Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong were having the same thoughts as Mu Chen, since their jaws were slightly hanging down. Not only did everyone have a feeling that they had no choice but to withdraw due to this unexpected turn of events, it truly made people fall into a bad mood.

They were originally planning to enjoy the fights to their hearts content. However, they never thought that Lin Zheng and Zhou Qingshan would not give them such a chance...

"So, this ends like that, huh?" said Shen Cangsheng as he restrained the

boundless Spiritual Energy radiating from him.

Hearing those words, Lin Zheng smiled in acknowledgement. With a flick of his finger, a ray of Spiritual Energy shot towards the sky, before exploding in midair. In the next moment, as the surrounding space started to faintly distort, two old figures slowly appeared from within.

Upon them appearing, a hoarse voice rang out, “Since Lin Zheng and Zhou Qingshan have given up, the victors for the final fight goes to the side of the students. According to the rules, all of the students will be able to obtain the chance of Spiritual Light Empowerment.”

Hearing the final verdict of the two Elders, countless students reacted instantly by emotionally cheering out loud.

Waiting for the cheering voices to gradually decline, the two Elders turned towards Mu Chen, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong and said, “You three have achieved victory in the final fights; therefore, you three will get your deserved rewards.”

One of the Elders waved his sleeve, causing three bright and resplendent rays of light to shoot out, before transforming into three clumps of light in front of them. Within the clumps of light, one was able to see approximately three metres tall clear and sparkling Spirit Crystals. There seemed to be liquid slowly flowing within them, and they radiated with extremely strong and pure Spiritual Energy fluctuations.

These were Spirit Crystals of Spirit King level. Furthermore, from the thickness of the Spiritual Energy present, it was clearly much stronger than the Spirit Crystal that Mu Chen had obtained from killing the Spirit King from before.

“The Spiritual Light Empowerment the three of you will receive is different from the rest of the students. After three days, head to the Punishment Hall. There will be Elders there who will personally take action to help with your Spiritual Light Empowerment.” said one of the Elders with a smile.

Hearing the Elder’s words, the students in the surroundings were casting envious gazes towards them. However, all of them knew that this was

something that Mu Chen and the other two deserved. Without them, all of the people there would have already lost their qualifications to undergo the Spiritual Light Empowerment.

Looking at the clear and sparkling Spirit Crystal in front of him, Mu Chen faintly hesitated, before asking, “Elders, would it be possible to transfer such a Spiritual Light Empowerment to another person?”

Upon hearing Mu Chen’s question, Luo Li’s beautiful face faintly changed, before instantly being suppressed by Mu Chen’s glare.

The two Elders had also gawked upon hearing his question, before they turned and shot a look at Mu Chen and Luo Li. From the looks of it, they seemed to have some inkling of understanding, since they replied with a faint smile, “It’s not only you three that are entitled to such a special Spiritual Light Empowerment. There’s another criteria that can be fulfilled to obtain it, which is to obtain a complete Spirit Crystal of the Spirit King. Only when one has one of these would this criteria be fulfilled.”

With a thought, he immediately brought out his half of the Spirit Crystal of the Spirit King out. Luo Li had also fished her half out. Placing the two halves together, they seamlessly fused together.

Extending her jade-like hands, Luo Li received the completed Spirit Crystal. With the gentle light radiating from it, it caused her youthful and absolutely beautiful face to appear exceptionally soul-stirring.

“Elders, would this be alright?” Mu Chen asked with a smile.

“Mu Chen, for the Spiritual Light Empowerment, the more Spirit Crystals, the greater its effect.” seeing Mu Chen handing over half of a Spirit Crystal to Luo Li without the slightest hint of hesitation, the two Elders could not help feeling slightly surprised before speaking their thoughts.

Mu Chen declined to comment on their words. Although the Spiritual Light Empowerment was admittedly important, in his eyes, it was clearly not the slightest bit as important as Luo Li.

Tugging her slender and jade-like hand against Mu Chen’s palm, a

gentle ripple undulated within Luo Li's clear and limpid eyes as she stared at him.

After seeing Mu Chen's determination, the two Elders did not continue to say anymore. Retracting their gazes, a strong and vigorous voice resounded in the ears of every single student.

"Since the results of the final fight are known, I will now announce that this hunt is officially over!"

As the last of his words rang out, countless rays of bright and resplendent light erupted erratically from the horizon. As they shot out, everyone was enveloped under their light.

Under the envelopment of the light, Mu Chen unfurled his hands and looked towards the expansive space before him. Instantly exhaling a deep breath of relief, he was finally able to exit from there.

Chapter 331: Rest

In the air above the northern square.

Countless students raised their heads to look at the gradually dissipating gigantic light screen. Remnants of excitement and a myriad of emotions replayed in their minds as they stared at it. The fight between Mu Chen and Gu Tianyan had truly made people gasp in amazement.

In fact, the final result was something that everyone still found hard to imagine. With a status as a Freshman, unexpectedly, Mu Chen was able to achieve a victory, which directly resulted in the quick ending of the final battles.

Countless people were still sighing in admiration over this. For the past few years, it could be said that there were quite a few talents that had come out from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. However, there were extremely few people who were able to get a result similar to Mu Chen's. Achieving such dazzling results with the status of a Freshman made everyone sigh in admiration. There was one thing that they knew; from now, Mu Chen's prestige in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy might not be any weaker to Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong.

By relying on a single fight to reach the position of a peak influential figure, perhaps there might be no one that would dare to have a single shred of doubt against him anymore.

Swish! Swish!

While countless students were still sighing in admiration, the space in the sky suddenly distorted, before countless figures hid the skies and covered the earth as they shot out from within. They were covered by a thick layer of light, which was radiating with rather astonishing Spiritual Energy fluctuations.

Whoosh!

As those figures appeared, not the slightest hint of stopping was discovered on them as they shot across the horizon akin to streaks of

light, and flew in every direction. As of now, all of them needed to find a place to train, and absorb all of the vigorous Spiritual Energy that had flooded their bodies due to the Spiritual Light Empowerment.

Upon completing this stage, their strength would have greatly increased.

Envious gazes came shooting over towards the locust swarm-like figures from the many students present on the northern square. Naturally, everyone knew after these people had to completely refine the Spiritual Energy granted to them by the Spiritual Light Empowerment, so that their strength would have a substantial increase.

At this point, the total strength of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy might rise to a new level.

As figures continued to blot the skies as they shot out of the distorted space, four figures shot out without any rush or hurry. Stopping in the air, they immediately attracted the gazes of countless people.

“Its Mu Chen, Shen Cangsheng and the rest!”

“Huh? Why aren’t they covered by the Spiritual Light Empowerment?” Someone voiced out in doubt, as Mu Chen and the other three didn’t have any light radiating from their bodies, and their internal Spiritual Energy levels weren’t overly boundless.

“Are you stupid? The four of them are the most outstanding people in this hunt. How could they just obtain some normal Spiritual Light Empowerment?”

“There are Grades for the Spiritual Light Empowerment?” asked a Freshman in doubt.

“That’s for sure! Normal Spiritual Light Empowerment would happen the instant one leaves the Spiritual Light World. The Spiritual Light that one obtains would automatically transform into Spiritual Energy and enter their body. Although this kind of Spiritual Energy is pure, a large portion of it would be lost during the absorption process. In the end, isn’t the amount that would be refined and absorb be more than 50 to 60%?”

“However, the Spiritual Light Empowerment Mu Chen and the other

three are going to receive is different. It's said that the Elders of the academy would assist in their empowerment. This kind of treatment isn't something a normal Spiritual Light Empowerment would be able to compare with."

"I see..."

As he appeared in midair, Mu Chen looked towards the sea of humans that filled the sky. Upon seeing the northern square, he took another breath of relief. Truly, the air of the outside world made people feel more relaxed. Although the Spiritual Energy within the Spiritual Light Word was more vigorous, Mu Chen had truly felt that there was just something missing.

"The four of you should head back and rest. After three days, come to the Punishment Hall for your Spiritual Light Empowerment." Also appearing in the sky, the two Elders turned towards Mu Chen and the other three before speaking out instructions.

"Yes." Hearing those instructions, Mu Chen and the other three nodded their heads in acknowledgement.

"Mu Chen, you're the only one that had a tough battle. Go take a rest before meeting up at the Punishment Hall three days from now," said Shen Cangsheng while sending a smile towards Mu Chen. The latter's fight had truly exceeded the expectations of the people. Originally, he had assumed that he and Li Xuantong would need to engage in an intense fight. However, who would have thought that the one that suffered the most was Mu Chen? As for the both of them, they had ended their fights by simply revealing their faces.

Replying to Shen Cangsheng, Mu Chen could only present a smile. As of now, his face was extremely pale, and he was truly exceptionally weak and frail. The acute pain radiating from within his body caused even difficulty for him to speak. Right now, his strongest wish was to head back and immediately take a rest.

"I'll bring him back first." Seeing Mu Chen's miserable state, Luo Li felt some pain in her heart. Carrying Mu Chen, she said a soft word or two

towards Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, before rapidly streaking away in a ray of light.

Looking at the figures of the two as they head towards the distance, Li Xuantong fell somewhat into a daze with a complication expression displayed on his face.

"So, you like her, huh?" Beside him, Shen Cangsheng's eyes had become slits as he grinned, while asking Li Xuantong. He was able to see that Li Xuantong was paying a lot of attention to Luo Li.

In response, Li Xuantong only gave a bitter laugh.

"However, from the lovey-dovey actions of those two, I think that you don't stand a chance," said Shen Cangsheng with a little sympathy. The girl by the name of Luo Li truly was very outstanding. However, her eyes had always been focused on Mu Chen. Even the two of them were able to see that Mu Chen and Luo Li had already fallen into the webs of love.

Li Xuantong shot a cold glare at Shen Cangsheng. This fellow, he just likes to do stuff that pours salt into other people's wounds.

"Forget about it. Why bother hanging oneself to death on a tree? After receiving our Spiritual Light Empowerment, let's give the bounty of killing Mo Longzi a try. This time, let's collaborate and settle things with that guy once and for all."

Shen Cangsheng patted on Li Xuantong's shoulder, before a cold glint flashed within his eyes as he said, "I'm afraid that the number of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy students that have died while going out for Outworld Training in the past two years by Mo Longzi's hands has already reached the triple digits."

Hearing his words, Li Xuantong's forehead started to wrinkle. A cold glint also flashed within his eyes as he said in a soft voice, "It's said that the Demonic Dragon Palace is getting more rampant in the Northern Heavens Continent..."

"Let the Deans and Elders care able those headache-inducing matters. Soldiers should be faced against soldiers. The Old Dog of the Demonic

Dragon Palace should naturally be stared at by the higher levels of our academy. However, as for that thing called Mo Longzi, he should be dealt with by us. If not, people might say that we Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy students are useless," replied Shen Cangsheng casually.

"How do we go about it? Form a team and hunt him?"

Muttering to himself, Li Xuantong faintly nodded his head and said, "Let's collaborate for this time. That Mo Longzi should be killed..."

"Haha, that's good."

With a loud chuckle, Shen Cangsheng patted Li Xuantong's shoulder. Without saying anything else, his figure shot towards the depths of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Upon seeing this, Li Xuantong started to head towards the mountain peak that he lived on.

As the crowd of people in the sky started to scatter, the countless students at the northern square started to leave with somewhat dissatisfied hearts. Looking towards the direction of the Heavenly Rankings, all of them knew that in a short couple of days, there might be a earth-shattering upheaval displayed on it.

At this time, Mu Chen and Luo Li had already reached their small building in the Freshman Area. Upon entering the house, Mu Chen's already pale face grew even more white, while a mouth of blood spewed uncontrollably out of his mouth.

In this fight, the true injuries weren't caused by Gu Tianyan, but the Divine Black Lightning's overly terrifying energy wreaking havoc within his body. This kind of energy was something that Mu Chen's current body was simply unable to control and leash.

Fortunately, he had learnt and practised the Lightning God's Physique, causing his fleshly body to become stronger. If not, he might have had to deal with an exceedingly high cost to his life upon his usage of the Divine Black Lightning.

Looking at the seriousness of Mu Chen's injuries, Luo Li's beautiful face started to faintly change, as she hurriedly carried him into the room.

Resting on the bed, Mu Chen weakly gestured to her.

"It's alright. The energy's already simmered down. I just have to rest and I will be alright."

"You really pushed your luck too much," said Luo Li, while getting slightly angry. To her, Mu Chen had simply caused all of these troubles for himself. The Divine Black Lightning was something that would bring dread to even a strong Spiritual Beast like the Nine Netherbird. She never expected that Mu Chen would actually dare to cause it to erupt within his body.

This kind of action was something that would instantly cause one's death, without a doubt. It was still not convenient to say it while they were outside. However, after they returned, she was finally unable to control her concern and anger.

"Even without the Spiritual Light Empowerment, I won't lose anything. Furthermore, I've not come all those thousands of miles to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy just to see you compensate me," said Luo Li while biting her lip.

Looking at the girl who was truly feeling a little angry, Mu Chen could not help lowering his head. Extending his hand, he attempted to grab hold of Luo Li's slender and jade-like hands. However, his hand was evaded by the girl, whose eyes had now turned slightly red.

With a smile, Mu Chen sent his palm out to grab again, and tightly held onto the girl's little hand, without letting her go. With a pull, he sent the girl lunging into his bosom.

Faintly struggling in Mu Chen's bosom, the gorgeous girl tried to get out. Unable to do so, she gave a soft snort, before tilting her lovable face away, indicating her intent of not wanting to easily forgive Mu Chen's nonsensical behaviour.

With a grin, Mu Chen looked towards the gorgeously beautiful face that was now filled with a little anger and indignation. As Luo Li lowered her head amidst the panic she felt, without waiting for the girl to put up any resistance, her red lips were already in contact with his.

The girl used her little hands to gently pound on Mu Chen's chest, before her lovable body finally turned soft like spring water. As she did so, her silvery hair spread out, covering the entire bed.

After kissing for a long time...

Mu Chen was still someone not willing to let go of those tender red lips. As he lowered his head to look at the blushing-red face of the girl, he said in a gentle voice with a faint smile, "I'm sorry for making you worry..."

"Yah, I'm not trying to compensate you in any way. I just feel that, if I'm unable to even clear this obstacle on my own, in the future... how should I protect you?"

A faint tremor shook through Luo Li's body as she looked at Mu Chen's eyes, which were brimming with gentle emotions for her, causing her emotions to slowly turn relaxed.

"I've risked my life to win back the Spiritual Light Empowerment, and you're still angry with me. Shouldn't you give me some kind of compensation?" asked Mu Chen with a grin.

"What kind of compensation?" noticing Mu Chen's gaze, Luo Li felt somewhat unsafe, and wriggled her lower body.

With a smirk Mu Chen's palm quietly slid down, passing through her soft clothing, touching the tender and delicate skin that was cool and akin to jade.

Luo Li's lovable body instantly turned stiff as her beautiful face turned even redder. Shock and fuster akin to a skitter of a little deer could be seen within her clear and limpid eyes.

As Mu Chen's hands slipped into Luo Li's blouse, they grasped hold of that little waist. Unable to bear it anymore, Luo Li was about to shove him away; however, she discovered that Mu Chen's actions had stopped. Faintly tilting her head over, she realised that Mu Chen had unknowingly pressed lightly on her body. As of now, his eyes were tightly closed, while his breathing was weak and feeble.

He had unexpectedly fallen asleep at this moment due to the stress and

tiredness he had sustained earlier.

This made Luo Li feel like crying and smiling at the same time. After hesitating awhile, she extended her jade-like arms and wrapped Mu Chen into her embrace. Gentling kissing the youth's lips, gentle feelings flooded her eyes as she looked at the youth's handsome face.

While gentling rubbing Mu Chen's forehead with her little hands, she muttered, "Mu Chen, rest assured. I won't let anyone hurt you...I'll protect you, too."

Chapter 332: New Rank 3 of the Heavenly Rankings

The next day, as Mu Chen woke up from his sleep, he instantly felt that all of the tiredness within his body had disappeared into thin air. The acute pain radiating from within his body had dissipated by quite a bit, compared to yesterday.

Within his meridians, Spiritual Energy was, once again, coursing through, gently healing the many injuries that his meridians had suffered from the Divine Black Lightning.

As Mu Chen swept his senses throughout his body, he discovered that there were some meridians that were stained with a burnt-black colour. Obviously, the injuries that they had sustained were not light. However, on the bright side, the Thunder God Physique that he had practised had become somewhat stronger. If not, there would've been some trouble if those meridians cracked and shattered.

"I should be able to recover from all of these injuries after resting for the next two to three days."

After muttering to himself, as he turned his body over, he felt a gentle and soft feeling coming from within his bosom. Lowering his head to look, he saw Luo Li resting on his bosom, sleeping extremely soundly. Under able to bear it, a smile appeared on his face as he bent down and gave a gentle kiss on Luo Li's glistening forehead, before quietly leaving the bed and opening the door.

As he left the house, the gentle rays of the sun shone down, causing Mu Chen's eyes to narrow uncomfortably, while his tight body quietly started to relax.

Various kinds of training sounds rang out from the distance as birds flew across the clear and blue sky. Their clear chirps caused the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy to be uplifted with vitality.

As Mu Chen took a slow stroll out, the Divine Soul within his

consciousness started its devouring. Absorbing the Spiritual Energy eagerly in the surround sky and earth within his body, the Divine Soul proceeded to refine it before devouring it.

As this continued, the dried-up reserves of Spiritual Energy within his body started to recover, bit by bit. As the Spiritual Energy flowed along his meridians, they ceaselessly cleared and repaired the damage present within his body.

Enjoying the rare chance to be idle and laze around, Mu Chen walked along to little road that ended at the public square by the lake where the Freshmen would usually train. Right now, there was already a huge crowd formed by the Goddess Luo Association members, who were engaged in their training.

"Big Brother Mu!"

Upon seeing Mu Chen's arrival, all of the gazes seemed to have instantly locked onto him with joyful and worshipping looks erupted on the youthful and tender faces of the crowd.

Waving his hands towards them in acknowledgement, Mu Chen headed towards a stone platform, then towards one side of the public square, before taking a seat. Gently closing his eyes, he proceeded to continue absorbing the Spiritual Energy of the heavens and earth.

"Your recovery speed truly something. You're already capable of jumping around after a day." A voice containing gentle laughter suddenly rang out beside him, causing Mu Chen to open his eyes, only to see Ye Qingling smiling while standing next him.

"So you wish to see me lying down?" Mu Chen asked with a smile.

Taking a seat, Ye Qingling replied with a smile, "Congratulations. You're now a peak influential figure in our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Even He Yao has been beaten down by you. Do you know that after the end of the hunt, the people of the Demonic Gate seem have been avoiding us the moment they see us? There isn't any of the previous arrogance present in them now."

“As of now, you’re the most famous person within our academy. When compared to Shen Cangsheng, you’re not the slightest bit behind.”

“And yet, I want to find some peace and quiet,” feeling helpless, Mu Chen said with a smile.

“If it’s peace and quiet, that’s something very difficult to find.”

With a sweet smile, Ye Qingling gripped her jade-like hand, causing a scroll of lambskin to appear in a flash. Handing it over to Mu Chen, she said, “Ever since the end of the hunt, the Heavenly Rankings have momentarily changed. As for you, you’re already the 3rd Rank on the Heavenly Rankings, second to only Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong…”

Receiving the lambskin, Mu Chen unfurled it, only to see a stone rubbing of the Heavenly Rankings. At the 3rd Rank, sure enough, he had spotted his name.

As for the 4th Rank, it had changed to He Yao, with Su Xuan being the 5th. Zhao Qingshan was 6th, while Xu Huang had dropped from the 5th to the 7th… other than the top two in the previous Top Ten in the Heavenly Rankings, all the rest had truly changed. Below the Top Ten places, there were even more foreign-looking names. Obviously, they should be the dark horses that had appeared within this hunt.

As for the 10th Rank, Mu Chen was surprised to unexpectedly see that it had been assigned to Luo Li. Although that lass had made her move for an exceedingly little number of times, the matter of her collaborating with him to kill that Spiritual King seemed to be enough to cause her to jump up a few places in the rankings.

“Rank 3 of the Heavenly Rankings.”

While he gave a smile, Mu Chen’s expression still remained exceedingly calm, without feeling overly joyous or surprised.

“Sigh. We’ve entered the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy at the same time. And now, you’ve become an influential figure, ranked 3rd on the Heavenly Rankings, while the rest of us are slowing crawling up.” said Ye Qingling, while somewhat sighing in lamentation. When she had first

met Mu Chen, wasn't the latter's strength not even at the level of Spirit Stage? However, after a period of time that hadn't even reached a year, the latter had already become an expert that stood at the 3rd Rank of the Heavenly Rankings...

When people were compared to people, it sure caused people to feel extreme indignation and inferiority.

Mu Chen smiled at her. Not wanting to engage in a conversation about this topic any longer with her, he asked, "Where's Sun'er? It seems that I've not seen her for some time already."

"That little lass' luck is quite good. After wandering around the academy, she met an Elder of the Northern Spiritual Academy. That Elder primarily trains in Spiritual Arrays, and is reportedly a Spiritual Array Grandmaster. After seeing Sun'er's extremely good talent, she took her under her wing to train in Spiritual Arrays." Ye Qingling replied.

"Spiritual Array Grandmaster?" upon hearing those words, Mu Chen's eyes instantly contracted. For Spiritual Array Masters, the initial stages were ranked one to nine. However, strictly speaking, Spiritual Array Masters ranked one to five can only reluctantly be considered as entering this inner room of the Dao of Spiritual Arrays. As for those that had stepped past the threshold of 5th Grade and became a 6th Grade, that would be a completely different story. Spiritual Array Masters that reached this stage were worthy enough to be called Spiritual Array Grandmasters.

Only Spiritual Array Grandmasters were considered to have touched the true mysteries and workings of Spiritual Arrays.

The 5th Grade to the 6th Grade were akin to the frightening gap between the Heavenly Completion Stage and the Sovereign Stage.

Mu Chen's talent in Spiritual Arrays was extremely high. From being a 1st Grade to a 4th Grade Spiritual Array Master, it was basically smooth without any hitches. However, even though that was the case, he did not dare to say that he could easily step past the threshold and become a genuine Spiritual Array Grandmaster.

As for this kind of Spiritual Array Grandmaster, Mu Chen dared to bet

that there might not be more than a few people with such capabilities even in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Being able to be mysteriously taken under a wing of such an Elder, this was an opportunity that Sun'er had gotten that had made even Mu Chen feel his eyes turning slightly red.

Sun'er truly did have a rather high talent on the aspect of Spiritual Arrays, and her being spotted was something that Mu Chen didn't feel strange about. However, his talent in Spiritual Arrays wasn't any weaker than hers. But he didn't see any Elders showing a particular fancy towards him. Looks like having a cute appearance does have many uses.

"Haha. According to Sun'er, this Elder's temper is extremely strange and peculiar. She doesn't only look at one's talent, she also doesn't have any biasness. Even if your talent is much higher than others, she might not care the slightest bit about you," looking at Mu Chen's current appearance, Ye Qingling couldn't help laughing while commenting.

In response, Mu Chen gave a bitter laugh. As of now, he was already a 4th Grade Spiritual Array Master. However, in reality, his speed of improvement had started to slow down. Furthermore, he was still not clear of the many states of mind towards the Spiritual Arrays, and did not know exactly what way he needed to go to increase his familiarity and comprehension of them.

After all, currently, he had just managed to come in contact with the "Heart's Eye" state. As a 4th Grade Spiritual Array Master, he should not be able to arrange a 5th Grade Spiritual Array. However, relying on the mysteriousness of the "Heart's Eye" state, he was able to compensate for the disparity of his achievements.

But, the problem was that Mu Chen's attainments in the "Heart's Eye" state was only the preliminary contact, and was inconsistent whenever he used it. If he were to meet with an off-chance of it failing while in a life-or-death situation, that would result in him losing his life.

However, if he was able to receive the guidance of a Spiritual Array Grandmaster, perhaps, he might be able to increase his familiarity and

control over the “Heart’s Eye” state...But, how could such an opportunity be easy to find?

The few Spiritual Array Grandmasters have extremely high statuses in the Northern Heavens Academy. If they didn’t want to teach you, no amount of Spiritual Value Points would matter to them.

“I’ll have a chat with Sun’er later to see if she could mention you to that Elder. Your talent in Spiritual Arrays is higher than Sun’er. I think that the Elder should not reject your request.” Upon seeing the fluctuation of emotions on Mu Chen’s face, Ye Qingling did not dare to continue teasing him as she spoke her suggestion earnestly.

“That would be much appreciated,” replied Mu Chen while nodding his head. As of now, what he really needed was training in the aspect of Spiritual Arrays. After all, it wasn’t like training one’s Spiritual Energy. There was too many overly complicated information and intricacies in this aspect. Without the guidance of others, there would always be a lot of winding paths in a solitary person’s pursuit along this road.

Gesturing towards Mu Chen, Ye Qingling noticed that there was a faint trace of paleness still present on Mu Chen’s face. Not wanting to continue disturbing him, after a short word or two, she turned around and left.

Looking at Ye Qingling’s figure as she headed towards the distance, Mu Chen temporarily put the issue of his Spiritual Array mastery aside. As of now, the most important thing he needed to do was to recover from his injuries, before heading to the Punishment Hall within three days to receive his Spiritual Light Empowerment.

Over the next two days, although the news of Mu Chen rising to the 3rd Rank of the Heavenly Rankings was trending rather fervently, he did not give a single care about it. Not taking even half a step out of the Freshman Area, he had put an end to all of the disturbances coming from the outside world.

Under the peaceful and quiet rehabilitation, the injuries present within Mu Chen’s body gradually recovered. Although there were still some slightly hidden injuries within his meridians, these could only be ridden

through time, and was something that couldn't be rushed.

With the arrival of the third day, Mu Chen's complexion had almost completely recovered. All the paleness on his face was completely gone, while vigorous Spiritual Energy coursed throughout his body with faint traces of some improvement to them.

Standing on top of the house, Mu Chen did a lazy stretch, causing crackling sounds to rattle off from all the joints in his body akin to firecrackers. This extremely comfortable feeling caused Mu Chen to let out an uncontrollable groan.

"Looks like you've recovered quite well." Luo Li's satisfied voice rang out from behind him. As of now, Mu Chen was truly back to becoming vigorous and lively like a rising dragon. Three days ago, after becoming that frail and weak, it had caused quite a bit of pain to Luo Li's heart.

"Basically more or so."

Mu Chen replied while nodding his head. Looking towards the inner part of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, he said, "Let's go. We should head towards the Punishment Hall. After risking my life to obtain the Spiritual Light Empowerment, we should at least enjoy what it's worth, right?"

Luo Li gently nodded her small head in approval. With regards to the Spiritual Light Empowerment, truthfully, she was also somewhat curious.

Extending his hand out, under Luo Li's blushing face, Mu Chen grasped her lovable little hand with his. With a light squeeze and he grin, he lead her along and floated into the air. In the next moment, the two transform into streaks of light, shooting towards the Punishment Hall within the academy.

Chapter 333: Punishment Hall

The Punishment Hall sat within the inner region of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Within the entire academy, it held an extremely high status, as well as power, as the absolutely large question of the safety and guarding of the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was under its control.

The majority of the Punishment Hall members were students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy that had already graduated, but chose to stay behind. With each successive batch, they provided a unceasing supply of fresh blood into the Punishment Hall.

Naturally, once one entered the Punishment Hall, one could no longer be called a student, and could no longer participate in the various competitions between students. Therefore, most students would generally find it extremely difficult to see the members of the Punishment Hall on most occasions within the academy.

Similarly, once one became a member of the Punishment Hall, the tasks one was sent out on would have a higher increase of danger. This place wasn't some ivory tower, as the various rules and regulations implemented here were obviously even more strict and severe. After all, the Punishment Hall was constructed for the sake of the protection of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. The enemies they faced were no longer the students and seniors that were comparing notes, but the various evil powers that were clearly presented or hidden in obscurity within the Northern Heavens Continent.

Compared the the gentle academy, the interior of the Punishment Hall clearly had an extra iron-blooded taste with a cold and strict feeling.

...

There wasn't any of the luscious and vibrant atmosphere of vitality of the outside present within the inner region of the academy. Even the sky appeared to be darker and more overcast. A giant hall that looked different from the rest of the surroundings stood erect on top of a

mountain peak. Within the air, there would be groups of people in armor darting in and out, from time to time. As they moved along, fluctuations of killing intent could be felt within the air.

This kind of imposing aura was absolutely not something that the students within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy could compare with.

Upon seeing this with their eyes, both Mu Chen and Luo Li felt somewhat shocked and startled. This was the strength that truly protected the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Although the academy was considered to be a leviathan in the Northern Heavens Continent, it did not mean that there wasn't any power or influence that had the qualifications to challenge it within the Northern Heavens Continent. Within the great continent, where experts were akin to the numerous clouds in the sky, there were still some strong powers that were observing and eyeing it from the darkness.

And this Punishment Hall was here to scare and keep all those eyeing powers at bay.

Upon arrival to this inner region, Mu Chen and Luo Li did not encounter any obstructions. Clearly, the Punishment Hall had already received the news about their impending arrival. The two of them went through some detailed screening before descending on the giant peak that shot through the distant sky.

An incomparably giant hall sat quietly on the top of the giant peak, akin to a ferocious and cold-blooded beast that was quietly stalking its prey, while a heart-palpitating, ferocious aura radiated from it.

Before the giant hall stood a black stone square with the jet-black colour of it sparkling with traces of cold light.

As Mu Chen and Luo Li descended onto the black stone square, they noticed Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, who had arrived earlier than them, standing in the centre. The ones in front of them were Lin Zheng, Zhou Qingshan and Gu Tianyan.

As Mu Chen's gaze swept past them, it rested on a space in front of

them. There stood a black-clothed middle-aged man with his hands behind his back. This person's face was cold and fierce. As Mu Chen's gaze crossed paths with him, an ice-cold air permeated from him, causing the air to freeze up.

While he was standing there, not a single word came from him. Instead, an invisible pressure enveloped over them. Under this pressure, even wild and arrogant people like Shen Cangsheng became docile and meek.

Feeling this pressure, Mu Chen shot a startled look at the black-clothed middle-aged man. From the looks of it, this man's strength was rather terrifying.

"We're sorry for arriving late." Leading Luo Li and walking forward, Mu Chen cupped his hands and said to the group.

"Don't fret about it. It hasn't started yet." With a smile, Lin Zheng gestured with his hand. Turning and pointing towards the black-clothed middle-aged man in front of him, he said, "This is the Hall Master of our Punishment Hall, Hall Master Mo You. At the same time, he's also one of the Elders on the Heavenly Seats within our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy."

Hearing Lin Zheng's introduction, Mu Chen felt slightly shocked. As of now, he had somewhat of an understanding towards the higher levels within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Within the entire academy, there were five seats within the Heavenly Seated Elders. Before, during the Great Freshman Banquet, there was an Elder by the name of Zhu Tian that seemed to be a Heavenly Seated Elder. The person in front of him... was, unexpectedly, another one of the five Heavenly Seated Elders. So he was considered one of the peak combat forces of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

"Mu Chen pays respects to Hall Master Mo You." Bowing, Mu Chen cupped his hands and greeted Mo You.

"So, you're the Freshman Mu Chen that defeated Gu Tianyan?" A dark light filled the eyes of Hall Master Mo You as he stared at Mu Chen. The gaze coming from him was exceedingly sharp and piercing, as if he was

trying to see right through Mu Chen.

"It was only due to Senior Brother Gu Tianyan giving way to me. If we continued fighting, I wouldn't have had any strength left to fight." Mu Chen replied while shaking his head. Those words by him were the truth. If he were to continue fighting with Gu Tianyan, Mu Chen would only be able to achieve a draw, at the very most. Wanting to obtain a victory was, more than likely, an impossibility. Regardless of how numerous his hidden cards were, there was still a huge disparity from Heavenly Transformation Stage to Heavenly Completion Stage.

"So, this brat knows modesty, huh?" Mo You muttered. Smirking, he shot a look at Gu Tianyan, who had a somewhat unnatural look on his face and said, "This brat's usually very arrogant. Being able to obstruct his haughty spirit shows that you have some ability."

Hearing those words, Mu Chen could only give an awkward laugh.

"Regardless of that, you truly are quite good, since you're able to reach this step with the status of a Freshman. After the past few years, you can be considered as the first one to do so. Even Shen Cangsheng wasn't able to do so during his Freshman years." Looking at Mu Chen, not the slightest hint of restraint was left with regards to his praise for the latter.

Hearing that praise, Shen Cangsheng started to smile. During his Freshman year, he had only buried his head and bitterly trained. He had also not participated in the Hunting War during that year, let alone achieving such results in a fight.

"So, you're Luo Li, right?" Mo You's gaze suddenly turned towards Luo Li, who had been standing beside Mu Chen the whole time. In the next instant, his gaze turned from the former to the Luo Shen Sword that was tightly gripped in her jade-like hand.

"Yes." Luo Li replied while slightly nodding her head. Upon noticing that, Mo You's gaze was focused on the Luo Shen Sword in her hand, and Luo Li's eyebrows started to faintly knit together.

"Haha, I've seen before that sword in your father's hands..." Mo You replied as a slightly complicated look appeared on his face.

Upon hearing his reply, everyone was blankly staring in confusion, while Luo Li felt somewhat startled. This Mo You actually met with her father before? Looks like the latter also understood her status.

Mu Chen also felt slightly startled. However, it was not something especially unexpected. Mo You was a Heavenly Seated Elder of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, and should have some understanding towards Luo Li's status. However, he never guessed that the former had met Luo Li's father before.

"During my training years, I've met your father once, by chance. Speaking of which, I also owe him my life. It's a pity that I didn't get the chance to return the favor." Feeling somewhat sad, Mo You replied to quell the confusion.

Hearing his explanation. Luo Li's expression also turned dim. Naturally, there was nothing that she did not know about the matters that had happened.

As the atmosphere turned slightly dark, this became the first time that Lin Zheng and the rest had seen such an expression on Mo You's face, causing them to be unable to muster any nice words to say.

Fortunately, Mo You quickly recovered his usual expression. Gesturing with his hand, he said, "Okay. Since you guys have all arrived. Let's prepare to carry on with the Spiritual Light Empowerment."

With a wave of his hand, three old men walked out from within the great hall. These three people were Elders of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. However, it was obvious that their status' weren't as high as Mo You's.

"For the three of you, these three Elders will personally help with your Spiritual Light Empowerment."

Looking towards Luo Li, Mo You said, "Lass, I'll personally help you with your Spiritual Light Empowerment."

Upon hearing those words, Lin Zheng and the rest involuntarily uttered a sound from their shocked reactions. Mo You was actually going to

personally take action to help a student with her Spiritual Light Empowerment? This was truly the first time in these past few years.

On the matter of the Spiritual Light Empowerment, the stronger the helping person was, the greater the benefits the recipient would get. Mo You was one of the five Heavenly Seated Elders in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Within the entire academy, clearly, there were not that many who were stronger than him.

Luo Li hesitated awhile. Only upon seeing Mu Chen nod his head did she gently nod hers while saying, “Then, I’ll have to trouble Hall Master Mo You.”

Gesturing with his hand, Mo You replied while sighing, “This can reluctantly be considered as returning a small bit of the favor. Although, this is the only thing I can do.”

Upon saying those words, he continued to say his order, “ You three will follow the three Elders inside.”

Mu Chen and the other two nodded their heads. Just as they were about to move, a dispirited and ancient-sounding voice suddenly slowly resounded within everyone’s ears.

“Wait.”

The sudden voice made everyone gawk. Raising their heads, they noticed the figure of an old man sitting on a stone pillar before the giant black hall.

Tattered clothing covered the old man’s body, while his head was bald, without a single strand of hair, and his eyes always looked dispirited as they drooped down. This made him look as though he had never had a full meal.

Upon noticing this bald-headed old man, Mu Chen instantly felt some astonishment. Isn’t this old fellow the person I met in the Lightning Territory? The Lightning God Physique he had trained in was given to him by this bald-headed old man.

Besides him, both Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong had faces brimming

with shock, as they had similarly previously met with this bald-headed old man while in the Lightning Territory.

As he noticed the bald-headed old man, shock had also instantly appeared on Mo You's face. Hurriedly, he greeted respectfully, "Lord Northern Sea."

The attitude that Mo You displayed caused everyone to feel further shock. There was actually someone within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy that could make Mo You show that much respect? What exactly was the origins of the bald-headed old man in front of them?

"Lord Northern Sea?"

Shen Cangsheng, and Lin Zheng, as well and the rest, frowned in thought, before a sudden change happened to their faces. Overwhelmed with shock, they spoke out in a low voice, "Could this be the Divine Beast Protector of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, the Northern Sea Dragon?"

Within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, other than Dean Tai Cang, the only person that could make Mo You to show so much respect would be the mysterious and seemingly wisp-like Northern Sea Dragon?

A tremor went through Mu Chen's mind as he heard those words. He was somewhat in disbelief as he looked at the bald-headed old man, who always seemed so dispirited, and was simply unable to picture the latter as the Divine Beast that was capable of intimidating the Heavens and earth.

On the stone pillar, the bald-headed old man waved his hand. In the next instant, he had already appeared in front of Mu Chen and the rest. The seemingly instantaneous movement speed caused the eyes of Mu Chen and the rest to twitch.

The bald-headed old man waved his hand towards Mo You, before sweeping his gaze towards Mu Chen and the rest, finally resting on the latter.

"Senior..."

Seeing that he was being stared at by the old man, Mu Chen instantly

felt somewhat unnatural.

Ignoring Mu Chen's change in expression, the bald-headed old man shot a slightly weird gaze at him. Only after a while did he slowly spit out some words. "From what I've heard, is it true that you've gathered some Divine Black Lightning?"

Chapter 334: Lightning Poison

"From what I've heard, is it true that you've gathered some Divine Black Lightning?"

Upon hearing those words, Mu Chen clearly gawked awhile. After hesitating awhile, he nodded his head while replying, "It's by a fluke that I've managed refine a single strand of Divine Black Lightning into a lightning bead and absorbed it within my body...during the Hunting War, for the sake of fighting with Senior Brother Gu, I shattered that Divine Black Lightning bead."

In a flash, Gu Tianyan finally understood why Mu Chen was able to erupt with such terrifying power while relying on his Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase strength. However, he still proceeded to shoot a weird look at Mu Chen as he thought, This fellow truly is a freak. He had actually absorbed the Divine Black Lightning into his body. That is something that even Sovereign experts would stay clear of!

What's more, after shattering the Divine Black Lightning bead, unexpectedly, Mu Chen was able to survive. This made them feel all the more strange. Wasn't this fellow's willpower to live that overly tenacious?

A ray of light flashed within the murky eyes of the bald-headed old man. Extending his withered palm, he lifted Mu Chen's sleeve. In the next instant, a black ray of light seemed to have shot up the latter's arm.

Chi. Chi.

As the black light shot up, black lines started to instantly surface on Mu Chen's arm. Those black lines started to squirm and wriggle under his skin, while radiating with fluctuations that caused slight unease to people.

"What's that?" Mu Chen exclaimed in shock as the expression on his face changed.

"Lightning Poison." said the bald old man indifferently, "The Divine Black Lightning is the tribulation that a Spirit Beast needs to experience for it to promote into a Divine Beast. Not only is it destructive, it also

contains a mysterious Lightning Poison, which people are simply unable to discover. However, as time elapses, the Lightning Poison will gradually turn corrosive. That is to say, if the Lightning Poison doesn't erupt. If it erupts, a crack will suddenly ring out from your entire body, and you'll become a pile of ashes..."

Mu Chen's face instantly turned ugly as a cold sweat started to appear on his forehead. Beside him, a panic-stricken expression appeared within Luo Li's clear eyes as she looked towards Mu Chen with anxiety.

At this time, the expressions on the faces of Mo You, Shen Cangsheng and the rest also changed. They never expected that there would be a such a huge impending disaster hidden within Mu Chen's body.

"Senior, please help him." Luo Li could no longer maintain her usual silence as she hurriedly spoke out. Her frantic appearance, however, caused a slightly complicated expression to appear within Li Xuantong's eyes as he faintly tilted his head away.

"Why should I help him? This is something that he had brought about to himself. Is the Divine Black Lightning something that he can bear? Moreover, he had even shattered it within his body. He's already lucky to not die as a result of doing so." the bald old man's temper appeared to be somewhat strange, since he slowly said his reply while withdrawing his withered palm.

Biting her lip, Luo Li said, "If you help him get rid of the Lightning Poison, I'll compensate you."

Sizing Luo Li up, the bald old man replied in a lazy manner, "On your entire body, the only thing that's of interest to me, would be the sword in your hand."

"If Senior likes it, I'll gift this sword as compensation." Still biting her lip, Luo Li gave her reply.

Upon hearing her words, the expression on Li Xuantong's face changed. Seeing this, Shen Cangsheng walked over and said in a low voice, "You don't stand even an ounce of chance."

Luo Li's words had also made the bald old man startled. The sword in her hands would cause even the hearts of Sovereign experts to move. However, unexpectedly, Luo Li was willing to use it as compensation, which created some surprise within him. This was due to him being able to see that Luo Li was very clear about the true value of the sword in her hand.

"Lord Northern Sea." Unable to bear it any longer, Mo You spoke out. After all, he had some connections to Luo Li's father, and would naturally help, if possible.

Extending his palm out and holding onto Luo Li, Mu Chen shook his head faintly towards her. With a faint smile, he said, "Senior, you're highly respected and worshipped in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Playing a joke like this on a girl isn't something suitable."

"Do you think I'm joking?" Faintly urling his mouth, the bald old man asked.

"Senior's usually somewhere hidden. So, your sudden appearance today should have some connection to me, am I right? Perhaps, it should be connected to the matter of me absorbing the Divine Black Lightning, am I right?" Mu Chen replied with a smile.

Hearing his words, the bald old man stared at Mu Chen. Only after a long while did he smile while saying, "You're tremendously astute, brat."

Only upon seeing the bald old man reveal a smile did everyone quietly breathe a sigh of relief. The Northern Sea Dragon had an extremely high status in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Furthermore, he had a weird temperament. If he really did not wish to help, it would truly become something troublesome.

"Indeed, I've come seeking you due to some matters. Perhaps, you'll have to help me with a little problem. Of course, to compensate you, I'll help you deal with the Divine Black Lightning within your body," replied the bald old man.

Hearing his words, everyone felt somewhat shocked. What kind of strength did the Northern Sea Dragon possess? Within the entire

Northern Heavenly Continent, you might not even find a person that could contend with him! However, from the looks of it, unexpectedly, he had needed the help of Mu Chen, a student at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase?

"May I know what Senior needs me to do? With my little bit of strength..."Mu Chen asked while slightly wrinkling his brows. If it was a problem that even the Northern Sea Dragon was unable to deal with, what could he offer?

"Just follow me first. At that time I'll give you a rundown about it. Relax, I won't let you do something that would make you lose your life."

Feeling helpless, Mu Chen replied, " However, I'm currently about to receive my Spiritual Light Empowerment..."

"I'll help with your Empowerment!" shouted the bald old man as he shot a glare at Mu Chen; he was able to see this brat's intentions with a single look.

Only when he heard those words did Mu Chen start to faintly smile. With regards to the Spiritual Light Empowerment, the stronger the person in charge, the greater the effect. Within the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, the bald old man in front of him was obviously the best person possible for the job.

Originally, Mu Chen did not have such hopes. However, who would have known that he would actually appear at this moment? This kind of opportunity doesn't come knocking on one's door twice. One would be too stupid to forsake such an idea.

Beside him, Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong, and even Lin Zheng and the rest were casting somewhat envious looks towards Mu Chen. Being able to let the Northern Sea Dragon personally help one with their Spiritual Light Empowerment; within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, Mu Chen could be considered to be the first.

"Since Mu Chen has such an opportunity, let him follow Lord Northern Sea." Mo You said with a smile. This Mu Chen truly was a lucky fellow. He's even able to meet up with such a good opportunity.

Luo Li released Mu Chen's hand, while the anxiousness in her eyes dissipated, bit by bit. With a smile on her absolutely gorgeous face, she stared at Mu Chen, who had just obtain such good fortune.

"Then, I'll go first." said Mu Chen as he waved towards Luo Li. However, without waiting for him to say anymore words, the bald old man had already dragged him away. With a fluttering of space, the two of them instantly disappeared within the distortion.

Looking at the place where Mu Chen had disappeared into, Shen Cangsheng and the rest were still sighing with envy. Why doesn't good fortune befall onto them?

"Stop sighing, this sort of good luck seems to be tied to not dying after absorbing and shattering the Divine Black Lightning in one's body. If you guys want it, you can give it a try." Mo You said indifferently.

Hearing his words, the expressions on Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong's faces faintly changed. He had to be joking. The number of peak-level Spiritual Beasts killed by the Divine Black Lightning while trying to promote to become a Divine Beast was uncountable. What's more, shattering it within one's body. Even thinking about it would cause a person's scalp to crawl. Only a freak like Mu Chen would do such an absurd thing.

Seeing the two becoming scared stiff, Mo You smirked, before turning around and heading into the great hall, with Luo Li rapidly following behind him.

"Sigh. Give it up. Seems like the both of us don't have such a life. Don't feel too bad about it."

Helplessly patting Li Xuantong's shoulder, Shen Cangsheng headed into the great hall. Looking at the back figure of Luo Li, Li Xuantong made a dejected sigh before following suit.

...

The moment he was grabbed onto by the bald old man, Mu Chen felt the scenery in front of him change so rapidly, he felt somewhat dizzy. An

intense feeling of drowsiness erupted in his mind. Fortunately, this didn't last long, before it rapidly dissipated.

"Okay."

After hearing the indifferent-sounding voice of the bald old man, Mu Chen opened his eyes, before staring somewhat dumbfoundedly at the scenery before him.

This was a dim and dark place, with a profound and unfathomable black colour everywhere. Naturally, what created the most shock within Mu Chen was the unending sea of Black Lightning. Like thousands upon thousands of water pillars, Black Lightning fell from the sky into this Black Lightning sea.

Mu Chen stared at this sea as gigantic lightning bolts arced and danced around within. As deep and low rumbling sounds resounded across this world, it carried along with them the indescribable prestige of the heavens and earth.

"What is this place?" Mu Chen asked as his scalp started to crawl. The unending sea of Black Lightning in front of him was too terrifying.

"The last layer of the Lightning Territory." The bald old man casually replied.

Mu Chen sucked in a breath of cold air. This was the final level of the Lightning Territory? No wonder there's such terrifying lightning energies present here. Compared to here, even the 7th Level of the Lightning Territory would appear insignificant.

"Carefully feel it. Aren't there some slightly familiar fluctuations within there?" asked the bald old man with a grin as he pointed towards the unending Black Lightning sea.

Panning his doubtful gaze outwards, he tried to sense what the bald old man was talking about. After a long while, his face, however, started to turn slightly pale as he said, while being overwhelmed with shock, "These are... the fluctuations of Divine Black Lightning?"

Within the Black Lightning sea, Mu Chen discovered the fluctuations of

Divine Black Lightning!

Unexpectedly, there's actually Divine Black Lightning hidden within the black-coloured lightning sea!

The quantity present was seemingly more terrifying than those present in the Nine Netherbird's tribulation.

Who would have thought that there would actually be so many Divine Black Lightning present in the final level of the Lightning Territory?

"As for the other levels of the Lightning Territory, their lightning energies are formed from those that have dissipated from here," explained the bald old man with a smile.

Hearing that, Mu Chen was speechless as his heart was filled with shock.

"Senior, what exactly did you call me here to do?" Unable to resist his curiosity anymore, Mu Chen asked his question with some worry. This place was too terrifying, and any casual Divine Black Lightning that descended might be capable of blasting him into bits. He truly wasn't able to think of how, exactly, he could help the Northern Sea Dragon.

Rubbing his withered palms together, a smile surfaced on the wrinkled and dried-up face of the bald old man. However, this smile only caused Mu Chen's goosebumps to instantly stand up as a feeling of unease erupted from within his body.

Extending his finger, the bald old man pointed towards the Black Lightning sea that filled the space in front of them as a laughing voice rang out.

"I want you to help me retrieve something from within the lightning sea."

Chapter 335: Lightning God Pill

"I want you to retrieve something for me from within this lightning sea."

Upon hearing those words, the expression on Mu Chen's face clearly froze for a while. Opening his eyes wide, he stared at the bald old man in front of him, while having some doubts as to whether he had heard something incorrectly.

"You want me to enter that?" Mu Chen said as he blinked his eyes, while pointing towards the unending sea of black lightning. If he didn't hear incorrectly, it ought be that the bald old man had spoken incorrectly, right?

Nevertheless, facing his trembling gaze, the bald old man calmly nodded his head, dispelling all the hopes that Mu Chen had.

"Senior, are you joking with me?" Mu Chen felt as if his scalp was about to be fried. There's Divine Black Lightning within that black lightning sea! Even a Sovereign would not casually set foot within that place. With his strength at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase, there might not even be ashes left of him upon him just setting foot within there.

"I'm not asking you to directly rush in like that," said the bald old man as he rolled his eyes.

Hearing those words, Mu Chen finally managed to slightly calm his nerves down. With a bitter laugh, he asked, "Exactly what thing do you want me to retrieve?"

"This Lightning Territory was created by me hundreds of years ago."

While pointing towards the mysterious space, before pointing towards the black lightning sea, the bald old man continued with his introduction, "I initially discovered something unique about this space, as it was filled with lightning energies. After noticing that, I casually took all the lightning energies out of the space and condensed them here. After racking my brains and gathering Divine Black Lightning from all over the place, I threw them all into thisi place and let them grow unsupervised..."

Mu Chen tugged at this mouth awhile as he thought, As expected of the Northern Sea Dragon. The Divine Black Lightning that even Nine Nether was afraid of was, unexpectedly, gathered by him from all over the place. Naturally, this was due to Nine Nether being too young. According to her words, she was considered as just coming-of-age within the Nine Netherbird Clan. Furthermore, being able to endure the Divine Black Lightning Tribulation while being a Nine Netherbird that had just come-of-age, her talent, as well as her abilities, was truly stronger than Mu Chen and the rest.

After all, when Nine Nether wakes up, she would have successfully completed her transformation, and become a Nine Netherworld Bird. At that time, she should have the strength to contend against Sovereigns. Added with some training in the future, there would even be the chance for her to exceed this Northern Sea Dragon...

"However, as time passed, I discovered that some things had already left my scope of control. That's because the strength of the lightning energy within was too terrifying, and condensed together to form a strange and unexpected living thing." The bald old man continued his explanation while showing his somewhat helpless dilemma.

"Living thing?" Mu Chen gawked. In the lightning sea, which was completely devoid of life, it could condense to form an unexpected living thing?

"I name it as 'Lightning Spirit'. This entire lightning sea can be considered its body."

Mu Chen sucked in a breath of cold air as he looked towards the unending sea of lighting, while being overwhelmed with shock. Isn't this so called "Lightning Spirit" too terrifying? No wonder even the Northern Sea Dragon was unable to deal with it. The myriad of living things in this world were truly incomparably mysterious and marvelous.

"It's fortunate that this Lightning Spirit's intelligence isn't too high. However, if I were to get close to it, I'd have to endure its most violent and intense attacks," said the bald old man as he tugged at his mouth. Staring

at the black lightning sea, a chilling glint flashed within his murky eyes as he continued, " If I were to use my strength and take action, I'd be able to destroy it. However, I'd also destroy the thing I want."

"What does Senior want to retrieve?" slightly curious, Mu Chen asked the bald old man. The Northern Sea Dragon had prepared this space for hundreds of years, and even created this terrifying lightning sea. In the end, he had even created the Lightning Spirit. What exactly did he want to obtain from this?

As the murky eyes of the Northern Sea Dragon converged on the black lightning sea, he said in an indifferent tone, "Lightning God Pill."

"Lightning God Pill?" Mu Chen blankly repeated those words, while a vacant expression filled his face. Obviously, he had never heard of that before.

"Although it's called a pill, it isn't something that people can refine. It's something created by the heavens and earth," explained the bald old man slowly, "Only when lightning energies are boundless enough to reach such a terrifying level would there be some chance for a Lightning God Pill to form. I've been searching and accumulating countless Divine Black Lightning for the past hundreds of years, all for the sake of a Lightning God Pill to be formed."

"Fortunately, my luck's not bad. However, I never knew that when the Lightning God Pill was born, it would also give birth to a Lightning Spirit that has been preventing me from acquiring the pill this whole time."

"What use does that Lightning God Pill have?"

"With that Lightning God Pill, I'll be able to rely on it to make a breakthrough and step into the realm of Earth Sovereign," replied the bald old man.

"Earth Sovereign." A shock went through Mu Chen's mind. If that's the case, the bald old man in front of him should be at the level of a 9th-Grade Sovereign? That's truly terrifying! He was already considered to have reached the apex of the Sovereign Realm. One more step, and he would reach the legendary Earth Sovereign Realm. Even considering the

entire Great Thousand World, an expert of that level would absolutely be sufficient to be called First Class.

With that kind of strength, even within those super strong clans, one would be able to be comparable to their clan leaders.

"Senior, why don't you find Dean Tai Cang and the other Elders? If Dean Tai Cang were to help you, shouldn't it be much more easier?" Mu Chen asked doubtfully. Within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, with the Northern Sea Dragon's status, if he needed help, who would dare to not give their utmost to help?

"It's no use. This Lightning Spirit's very cautious. I've already spoke of this to Tai Cang. When he had just entered the other day, it caused the lightning sea to erupt. If the two of us were to appear at the same time, the Lightning Spirit would feel threatened. What if it felt that it was in a life-or-death struggle and destroyed the Lightning God Pill? Won't that waste my hundreds of years of hard work?" replied the bald old man helplessly.

Hearing his explanation, Mu Chen gave a bitter laugh and looked at the black lightning sea. At this moment, there weren't too many fluctuations radiating from it. However, under this unchanging peace, Mu Chen was able to feel his heart palpitate. "However...Senior, you should know that my strength's inadequate..."

"Relax, I've already said that I won't let you lose your life for nothing."

The bald old man waved his hands and stared at Mu Chen while saying, "I've called for your help due to you absorbing a bolt of Divine Black Lightning before. Furthermore, you've let it erupt within your body. Although the strength of the Divine Black Lightning within your body have been completely used up, there's still some remnants left..."

A sparkle flashed within Mu Chen's eyes as he said, "Is Senior talking about the... Divine Black Lightning Poison?"

The bald old man nodded his head and replied, "The Divine Black Lightning Poison truly is a very frightening thing. However, from another perspective, it can be said to be a valuable treasure..."

Mu Chen's forehead wrinkled up.

"The Divine Black Lightning Poison is something that even Sovereign Realm experts dare not to casually come into contact with. If you are able to control the Divine Black Lightning Poison, to you, it would become an extremely formidable trump card."

"Control the Divine Black Lightning Poison?" Mu Chen replied with a dry laugh. He didn't even have the ability to discover the Divine Black Lightning Poison that was hidden within his body, let alone control it.

"It isn't difficult for you to sense the Divine Black Lightning. As long as I pass the complete version of the Lightning God Physique to you, you'll naturally be able to sense them. Relying on the Lightning God Physique, you should be able to even control the Divine Black Lightning," said the bald old man with a smile.

"The complete version of the Lightning God Physique?" Mu Chen repeated those words as his heart palpitated in eagerness. He had already seen how overbearing the Lightning God Physique was. If he didn't learn this body-refining Divine Art, the eruption from the Divine Black Lightning's strength would have ended very miserably for him. Furthermore, that was only the incomplete version of it. If he was able to learn the complete version of the Lightning God Physique, to what degree would his fleshly body become?

"How about it?" The bald old man asked with a grin. He believed that with this condition, Mu Chen would be unable to resist it. After knowing the formidability of the Lightning God Physique, Mu Chen would definitely not forsake it.

As expected, in an instant, Mu Chen fiercely nodded his head. Searching for riches and power through risks. For the sake of obtaining the complete version of the Lightning God Physique, Mu Chen dared to take the risk of running through extreme danger. Furthermore, he was, after all, a student of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, and the Northern Sea Dragon won't send him to his death for nothing.

Seeing Mu Chen's reacting, the smile on the bald old man's wrinkled

and dried-up face instantly grew thicker. Extending his withered palm to pat on the former's shoulder, he said, "Since that's the case, then let us do some necessary preparations."

"Preparations?" Mu Chen gawked, before staring blankly at the bald old man? Was there anything else that needed to be prepared?

"Cough."

With a dry cough, the bald old man replied, "It's like this. Although your body has some Divine Black Lightning Poison, it's still too weak and sparse. That level isn't enough to mask the fluctuations of your life force. If you were to enter the lightning sea like that, you'll definitely be discovered by the Lightning Spirit."

"Therefore?" Mu Chen suddenly felt thick uneasiness.

"Therefore... you need to get zapped by the Divine Black Lightning a few times. This would increase the density of the Divine Black Lightning Poison within your body to some extent, to the point that it can mask your life force," replied the bald old man with a dry laugh.

Hearing those words, Mu Chen tugged at his mouth slightly as he thought, This damnable bald freak! Indeed, he didn't have any good intentions! He had actually wanted him to get close to the Divine Black Lightning on his own initiative...During the previous time, it was fortunate that he was able to endure it. That was completely due to the Divine Black Lightning being only a remnant left behind by the Lightning Tribulation, with some luck added in. Only then was he able to endure it.

However, if this was to occur a few more times, could it be that he would have to always rely on his good luck?

Looking at Mu Chen's progressively darkening face, the bald old man gave another dry laugh. Touching his bald head with his withered palm, he said, "Relax, I'll reduce the Divine Black Lightning to a level that you're able to endure. I'll definitely make sure that nothing will befall you!"

Mu Chen's expression wavered indecisively. Although he had a super powerful existence of a 9th-Grade Sovereign guarding his side, the Divine

Black Lightning was truly too ferocious. If there were any unfortunate circumstances, even he might not be able to provide any aid in time.

This matter was obviously filled with danger.

Looking at the struggle Mu Chen was having, the bald old man hurriedly incited the former, “When this thing is complete, I’ll personally aid you in your Spiritual Light Empowerment, and will definitely give it my all. I dare to say that there’s absolutely no one in the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy that can exceed the results that I can help you achieve.”

Mu Chen was still stuck within his struggles.

“Hey, little fellow. Just treat it as me owing you a favor...I’ve also helped that little Nine Nether that has a bloodline bond with you successfully cross the Divine Black Lightning Tribulation. Not only did I give her some protection, I even stole a bolt of Divine Black Lightning. If not, that little Nine Nether would have already turned to ash during the Lightning Tribulation...” The bald old man hurriedly played the sympathetic guilty card, since he was afraid of Mu Chen retreating from this matter.

“There’s such a case?” Mu Chen was shocked and somewhat startled. This was something that even he did not know.

“Hehe. Although collecting the Divine Black Lightning was also my goal, it could be considered as me helping you. Furthermore, if not for the feather plume that I’d given that little Nine Nether, she would’ve been unable to grasp the time to recover.” The bald old man replied awkwardly.

Mu Chen shot a look at the bald old man. He actually did see a feather plume going to work when Nine Nether was undergoing the Tribulation. The energy that radiated from the feather plume had obviously not originated from Nine Nether.

“So, what’s your decision?” The bald old man hurriedly asked.

With a smile, the struggle within Mu Chen’s eyes slowly dissipated, bit by bit. He had always lived by the rule: An Eye for An Eye, A Tooth for A Tooth. Regardless of what motive the bald old man had, he truly did help Nine Nether a great deal. Furthermore, with the bloodline bond, by

helping Nine Nether, it can be considered that he had also helped him.

Since that was the case, he would naturally not have any reason to reject this task.

Looking towards the bald old man, Mu Chen took a deep breath, before nodding his head.

“Alright, I accept.”

Chapter 336: Complete Version of the Lightning God Physique

"You accept?"

The bald old man appeared slightly surprised as he looked at Mu Chen. Previously, when he gave many lures and enticement, Mu Chen had always been hesitant and was struggling within his mind. He never thought that his final statements would actually make Mu Chen agree so straightforwardly.

Giving only a faint smile, Mu Chen did not say anything more.

"Truly an interesting little fellow." At this moment, upon looking at Mu Chen's eyes, the bald old man understood his intent, causing an additional sliver of admiration to grow towards the former. People that were able to differentiate gratitude and grudges were truly able to make people fond of them.

Looks like this little fellow treasures a thing like friendship very strongly.

"What time do we start?" Since he agreed, Mu Chen would naturally not have any more hesitation and immediately asked about the specifics.

"Let's do it now."

The bald old man said, "If you're able to endure the Divine Black Lightning, I'll pass you the complete version of the Lightning God Physique."

Patting Mu Chen's shoulder, he continued talking, "Relax, I won't let you go in there just to be cannon fodder. Once there's a problem, I'll immediately take action. After waiting for hundreds of years, waiting for just a little longer isn't much."

"I'll try my best." Mu Chen replied while nodding his head.

With a nod, the bald old man shifted his body and shot straight at the black lightning sea that occupied the mysterious space. However, he didn't get too close, and stopped when he was around ten miles from the edge.

"Go over there."

The bald old man pointed at a space not far from where he was, where a black stone platform stood floating in the air.

Nodding his head, Mu Chen swept over and descended onto the stone platform. Upon sitting down, he felt a cold sensation radiating from it. A cold and refreshing aura seemed to coarse throughout his body, and under it, the hidden wounds that were left in Mu Chen's body by the strength of the Divine Black Lightning started to gradually disappear.

"This stone platform was cast using Lightning Refining Stones, and has some dispelling effects towards the strength of lightning. While you're on it, it'll help you reduce some of the pain," the bald old man explained.

Mu Chen nodded his head, before panning around and stared at the bald old man.

Seeing that Mu Chen had already completed his preparations, the bald old man raised his head to look at the unending sea of black lightning. In the next moment, he extended his withered finger, and gave the space a tap.

Humm!

As the bald old man's finger descended onto the space, it instantly started to intensely warp and distort. Spatial lines started to ripple out, before transforming into something akin of spatial chains. Directly passing through space, they went straight into the lightning sea.

Bang! Rumble!

Familiar low and deep rumbling sounds that caused people's heart to tremble resounded. Turning his head around, Mu Chen saw a black lightning bolt, approximately ten metres long, being tangled up by the spatial chains, like a giant python, before being dragged out from within the lightning sea.

The black lightning bolt struggled intensely, causing destructive lightning energies to continuously gush out from it. However, it was still unable to cause the slightest movement towards the seemingly weak

spatial chains.

Looking at this spectacle, Mu Chen quietly smacked his lips. The Northern Sea Dragon was undeniably a super strong existence of the 9th-Grade Sovereign level. Within his hands, the Divine Black Lightning was akin to a baby, unable to put up even an ounce of resistance.

As the bald old man dragged the Divine Black Lightning out from the lightning sea, with a clench of his palm, the spatial chains wrapping around the Divine Black Lightning violently contracted. Instantly, sparking sounds erupted out as the size of the Divine Black Lightning unexpectedly started to rapidly shrink. At the same time, the destructive energies present within it also started to rapidly grow weaker.

After a short span of a few breaths, the Divine Black Lightning was now only about ten centimetres thick. Obviously it had been weakened by quite a bit.

“That should be enough.” said the bald old man as he looked towards Mu Chen and said, “Are you ready?”

Mu Chen shot a look at the Divine Black Lightning. The destructive energies contained within it seemed to be around the same as the one that he had endured during Nine Nether’s tribulation. Thinking about it, he should be able to endure this bolt.

“Yes.” Taking a deep breath, Mu Chen nodded his head.

Bang!

Without continuing to be polite, with a wave of his palm, the Divine Black Lightning shot forward. Carrying along its destructive energies, it violently descended onto Mu Chen.

On Mu Chen’s body, Spiritual Energy burning with black flames instantly erupted as a faint silvery colour surfaced onto his skin. Obviously, he had also activated his Lightning God Physique without restraint.

Bang!

Just as he had completed activating his defenses, the Divine Black Lightning heavily stuck against the body of Mu Chen with a loud bang.

Bang!

At the instant of being struck, Mu Chen suffered something similar to a heavy blow, and he almost seemed to fly backwards. Despite that, clenching his teeth, he stuck firmly to the stone platform. As this happened, the Spiritual Energy that was burning in black flames was rapidly being compressed and dissolved.

In a short span of two breaths, Mu Chen's Spiritual Energy was forced back into his body. Following suit, carrying along its destructive energies, the Divine Black Lightning crazily gushed into his body.

Chi! Chi!

As the black lightning arced across the surface of Mu Chen's body, intense pain that would make people faint spread, once again, across his body.

As Mu Chen tightly clenched his teeth and tremors faintly shook his body, Spiritual Energy crazily erupted from his body, trying its best to resist the surge of the Divine Black Lightning energy.

However, it was clear that his little bit of Spiritual Energy was unable to be of much use, since it quickly became completely submerged, and the black lightning liquid started to wreak havoc within Mu Chen's body. His meridians started to distort under the impact, while horrifying cracking noises started to erupt from his muscles and bones.

As the intense pain continued to spread out, blood started to spurt out of his mouth, while a wave of dizziness rushed through his mind, in an attempt to make him faint. However, he understood that once he fainted, he would lose all control, allowing the havoc-causing Divine Black Lightning energy to cause a whole load of destruction within his body.

The black lightning light enveloped Mu Chen, sparkling as it arc around malevolently.

Upon seeing this, the bald old man started to get slightly anxious. If Mu

Chen was unable to endure the Divine Black Lightning, his hopes on this matter of his would seemingly be dashed.

"Endure it," said the bald old man in a low voice.

Dizziness continuously surged through him. However, just as he was feeling somewhat difficult to endure the intense pain, a cold and refreshing aura suddenly erupted within his body. As this surge within his body grew, the intense pain with Mu Chen's body had suddenly been dispelled by quite a bit. As of now, the devastating black divine lighting that was wreaking havoc was now lacking a sliver of craziness.

This was the Lighting Refining Platform at work.

Sighing a breath of relief, Mu Chen clenched his teeth and continued to endure. Only after approximately half an hour, did he slowly open his eyes. At this time, the Divine Black Lightning around his entire body had already completely dissipated, with a large majority having scattered within his body.

Mu Chen's face was pale, and every slight movement would cause pain akin to his flesh being split apart, causing incomparable pain.

"You've succeeded!" said the bald old man in gratisfaction as he descended.

With a bitter laugh, Mu Chen did not say anything, opting to close his eyes while observing the injuries within his body.

As the bald old man waved his hand, boundless and majestic Spiritual Energy erupted out and gushed into Mu Chen's body, helping him rapidly treat his wounds, while allowing him to completely recover from the injuries left behind by the Divine Black Lightning.

Under the help of the bald old man, within tens of minutes, Mu Chen's injuries were completely healed.

"Again?" Seeing that Mu Chen had already recovered, the bald old man instantly asked with a grin.

A cold shiver shook through Mu Chen. However, no tears came out from

his eyes as he nodded his head.

Bang! Bang!

Crackles of thunder resounded once again.

As time slowly ticked by into the late afternoon, Mu Chen had suffered the feeling of his flesh and skin being split apart time and time again, while hovering between life and death. He could even smell the burnt flavor coming from his body. As of now, his entire body was akin to a piece of immovable wood.

On the Lightning Refining Platform.

As the eighteenth bolt of Divine Black Lightning gradually dissipated, Mu Chen was finally unable to endure the pain. Collapsing on the stone platform, his face was deathly pale, while he continuously gasped for air. Currently, his body felt as if it had already shattered.

As the bald old man descended onto the Lightning Refining Platform, his palm pressed against Mu Chen, while Spiritual Energy erupted out. After checking the injuries in Mu Chen's body, he removed his palm.

With some difficulty, Mu Chen recovered some of his strength. However, he felt extremely tired, not even having the wish to move his fingers. Although he was tired, Mu Chen was able to feel that his Lightning God Physique had seemingly become stronger. This kind of self-torture truly had some benefits.

Bringing about a black glow, the bald old man's withered palm swept across Mu Chen's body. In the next moment, Mu Chen saw black spots appearing on his body. Akin to a liquid, they circulated around, while radiating with fluctuations that made people feel unease.

This was the Divine Black Lightning Poison. However, it was obvious that the lightning poison present within Mu Chen's body was much thicker than before.

Staring at those black spots, Mu Chen felt his scalp turn numb. After all, no one would feel comfortable to have such life-threatening things within their body.

“There’s already enough lightning poison. This should be able to mask your aura,” the bald old man said while nodding his head. Those words were akin to removing a heavy load off of Mu Chen’s shoulders. Thank god, I don’t need to continue being struck by lightning.

“Next up, I’ll pass the complete version of the Lightning God Physique to you. Afterwards, I’ll tell you how you can control the Divine Black Lightning Poison.”

Hearing those words, Mu Chen’s mind instantly shook. After enduring so much pain, he could finally get some compensation.

With a smile, the bald old man extended his withered finger and gave a tap on Mu Chen’s forehead. As the finger sparkled with a lightning light, a sliver of lightning light liquid followed his finger and drilled into Mu Chen’s forehead.

Bang!

Just as the lightning light liquid drilled into Mu Chen’s forehead, he instantly felt an astonishing peal of lightning erupting within his mind. While his body instantly gave a faint tremble, a majestic and complicated piece of information appeared like a surging tide.

Lightning God Physique, Middle Rank Deity Tier Spiritual Art of the Body-Refining category. Able to harvest the lightning energies of the heavens and earth to refine and strengthen one’s body. Besides being overbearing, one could rely on one’s fleshly body to shatter space, while possessing the strength to shift mountains.

As one acquires higher accomplishments in this Divine Art, its power would be comparable to a High Rank Deity Tier Spiritual Art.

“Comparable to a High Rank Deity Tier Spiritual Art...”

While muttering those words, Mu Chen sighed in shock. Body-refining Divine Arts were rare, and he never thought that the Lightning God Physique would be that strong. When one fully mastered it, it’s power would be no weaker than a High Rank Deity Tier Spiritual Art! One wasn’t even able to buy a Divine Art of this grade within the Spiritual Values

Hall!

As for the matter of being struck by lightning. After suffering that much pain, the benefits reaped weren't little, too.

After an instant, Mu Chen withdrew the rampaging emotions within his heart. Proceeding to calm his mind down, he started to observe and emulate the entire process of learning this Divine Art.

Chapter 337: Divine Black Lightning Poison Finger

Mu Chen's mind sank into the exceedingly complicated Lightning God Physique training method. After a long while, he slowly opened his eyes, while a shocked glint flashed within.

According to the training method, the Lightning God Physique seemed to be differentiated into nine levels, which were simultaneously called the Ennea Rune Lightning Physique. That's due the formation of a Lightning Rune every time the Lightning God Physique promoted to the next level. Once the number of Lightning Runes reaches nine, it would be considered as having a great accomplishment in it. When one reached that level, a single punch sent out purely from one's fleshly body would be able to explode an ordinary Sovereign Stage expert.

"Ennea Rune Lightning Physique..."

A scalding-hot look erupted from within Mu Chen's eyes. This Lightning God Physique was truly exceedingly extraordinary. Even within the body-refining Divine Arts category, it can be considered to be rather formidable.

"Hmm, how many runes is my Lightning God Physique at?" Mu Chen muttered to himself.

"Psh..." Unable to bear it, the bald old man snorted and sneered before saying, "As you are now, you're not even at the first rune, and you're still thinking of runes? Do you think that the Lightning God Physique is that easy to learn and master? Furthermore, as the level of your Lightning God Physique increases, the refining difficulty will also progressively increase. Once you can reach the third rune level of the Lightning God Physique, the Divine Black Lightning will possess no threat to you."

"At that time, you'll have to find a source of lightning that's even more formidable than the Divine Black Lightning. Only then would you be able to refine your fleshly body and further promote your Lightning God Physique."

“Lightning that is even more formidable than the Divine Black Lightning?” Hearing those words, Mu Chen’s expression faintly changed. As of now, just a weak bolt of Divine Black Lightning was able to send him to a near-death state. Exactly how terrifying would the lightning that’s more formidable than Divine Black Lightning be?

From the looks of it, although this Lightning God Physique was formidable, it also went along the path of being slightly oppressive to oneself. Finding terrifying lightning to get struck by, there should be quite a few people that practised the Lightning God Physique that were being split open while training, right?

“Those things are now too far from you. You should just focus on attempting to sense the Divine Black Lightning Poison within your body,” urged the bald old man while waving his hand.

Mu Chen nodded his head as his hands came together to form a mysterious seal. As the seal formed, peals of thunder could seemingly be heard as slivers of lightning bolts started sparkling out.

Within Mu Chen’s body, in his flesh and bones, little bits of black lightning seemingly started to surface. As these lightning bolts travelled back and forth within his body, they continuously refined his meridians, bones, flesh and blood.

As Mu Chen gradually sank into the slivers of numbness brought by the refinement, a slightly cold, chilling fluctuation suddenly appeared within his body.

This immediately roused Mu Chen from his training. With a sweep of his mind, he saw a drop of black liquid that silently appeared, without a sound, from an extremely well-hidden part of his body. In the next moment, it directly traveled through his blood and flesh. There were times that it even hid within his bones. However, as the black liquid passed through those places, minuscule and undetectable black imprints would be left on his blood, flesh, bones and meridians. These were the results of the corrosion caused by the lightning poison.

“This is the Divine Black Lightning Poison?”

Mu Chen felt a faint shock travelling through his mind. This thing was truly strange. If not for him practising the complete version of the Lightning God Physique, he would simply be unable to even detect its existence.

As Mu Chen discovered that drop of black liquid, several cold, chilling fluctuations started to appear at various parts of his body. These were the Divine Black Lightning Poisons that were hidden within his body.

Upon sense those lightning poisons, Mu Chen could not help feeling his head ache. These things truly made people feel extremely worried and troubled.

“Mu Chen, listen to what I say. Activate your Lightning God Physique and attract them towards the meridians in your right hand!” While Mu Chen was feeling a headache, the voice of the bald old man suddenly rang within his mind.

Hearing those words, Mu Chen slightly hesitated, before clenching his teeth and started to revolve the refining method. Activating his Lightning God Physique, peals of thunder instantly resounded within his body as a faint black lightning bolt passed through his flesh, before rushing towards the Divine Black Lightning Poison.

As the Divine Black Lightning Poison sensed the incoming black lightning bolt, it instantly tightened up, looking as if it would instantly jump up and flee.

Seeing that, Mu chen hurriedly relaxed his control. If this lightning poison started to recklessly scuttle around his body, it might create a huge problem for him. He did not assume that he would be able to prevent the eruption of the Divine Black Lightning poison within his Lightning God Physique, which was not even to the level of the first rune.

As Mu Chen relaxed his control, the drop of Divine Black Lightning Poison started to calm down once again. In the next moment, the drop seemed to sense a slightly familiar fluctuation coming from the black lightning bolt controlled by Mu Chen. After hesitating awhile, it finally approached it, bit by bit.

At the same time, Mu Chen hurriedly controlled the sliver of black lightning bolt as it slowly retreated, bit by bit, down the meridians of his arm.

Just like that, with one retreating and one advancing, after a number of minutes, the drop of lightning poison was attracted to the meridians of Mu Chen's arm,

"Attract it to the meridian of your middle finger." The voice of the bald old man resounded out once again.

Mu Chen nodded his head, and slowly attracted the drop of lightning poison into a small meridian within his middle finger. That meridian was only one of the many small branches within his middle finger. From a certain perspective, it was a wasted meridian, as it wasn't broad and properly connected to other meridians. However, from the looks of it, it had become the best prison for locking the lightning poison up.

After attracting the lightning poison within that wasted meridian, Mu Chen proceeded to use the sliver of lightning bolt to seal of the entrance. After repeating this process laboriously for over an hour, he had attracted the lightning poisons present throughout his entire body into this wasted meridian.

Several drops of Divine Black Lightning Poison circulated within that meridian. At this moment, they seemed to have discovered that something was amiss. Suddenly erupting out, they violent surged towards the black lightning bolt that blocked the entrance of the meridian.

Sensing this, Mu Chen opened his eyes and stared gravely towards his right hand. As of now, his middle finger had already become a jet-black colour. Compared to his fair palm, it appeared exceedingly conspicuous, while giving people a mysterious and sinister feeling.

"They're about to rush out!" Mu Chen exclaimed in a deep voice as his middle finger continued to tremble.

The bald old man nodded his head indifferently in response, as his withered finger suddenly shot out a drop of dull gold blood essence. Wriggling as they appeared, it descended straight onto Mu Chen's palm,

before rapidly submerging within.

A dull gold glow started to permeate from Mu Chen's right arm, before slowly retracting. bit by bit, as it transformed into a golden rune. Sweeping across his palm, it finally entered Mu Chen's middle finger. Transforming into something akin to a seal, the golden rune completely sealed the lightning poisons within Mu Chen's middle finger, causing them to be unable to struggle free again.

As this happened, the jet-black colour of Mu Chen's middle finger slowly started to recover its original colour, bit by bit. Nevertheless, he was still able to feel those Divine Black Lightning poisons hidden within his middle finger.

"That seal is able to seal up those lightning poisons. I've broken off my control over it, so you should be about to control that seal as you wish." The bald old man said with a smile, "This can be considered as your second benefit. The Divine Black Lightning is a double-edged sword. Although it's very dangerous for you, you too shouldn't underestimate its uses."

"In the future when you cross hands with others, you could secretly activate it and send your finger pointing out. Hehe, at that time, even an opponent at the Heavenly Completion Stage would instantly suffer serious injuries."

"During the Hunting War, if you had this move, you wouldn't have even needed to take such a risk in your fight with that brat, Gu Tianyan. With a single touch, your matter's settled."

Hearing those words, Mu Chen instantly felt exultation as he stared with sparkling eyes at his long and slender middle finger. He never imagined that the Divine Black Lightning Poison would have such great uses. Looks like he had truly gotten quite a bit of benefits.

"In the future, I'll call it as Divine Black Lightning Poison Finger." Mu Chen said with grin as he clenched his hand. He had casually given it the most closest and simplest name. However, even with such a simple name, it possessed a rather astonishing killing power.

“Senior, what do we do now?” After happily looking at his finger for a good while, Mu Chen finally raised his head and took the initiative to ask for the next instructions. After receiving so many benefits, he would truly feel a little guilty if he didn’t offer some contributions.

“I’ll take action in a while and lure the ‘Lightning Spirit’ out. When that happens, you’ll enter the lightning sea and search for the Lightning God’s Pill. Remember, with your strength, even if you’ve practised the complete version of the Lightning God Physique, you can only stay within the lightning sea for, at most, half an hour. Therefore, within this time limit, if you’re unable to find the Lightning God’s Pill, you have to immediately retreat out of there. If not, you’ll instantly turn into ashes,” the bald old man said solemnly.

With a grave expression on his face, Mu Chen nodded his head. Naturally, he wouldn’t play around with his little life.

Seeing Mu Chen’s nod, the bald old man didn’t continue to say any more words and let the former rest for another half an hour. After the former had completely recovered, he started to slowly rise into the air.

As the bald old man rose into the air, Mu Chen was suddenly able to feel the space intensely erupt. Lines started to extend crazily from the space surrounding the former, leading to something akin to a spatial storm to erupt, which caused the entire stretch of space to tremble.

An extremely frightening pressure extended out. Under the envelop of the pressure, even the space started to tremble.

This was the pressure of a Sovereign!

This pressure was even stronger than the White Dragon Sovereign!

A serene expression filled the face of the bald old man as a jet-black ocean tide seemed to erupt behind him. Within the waves, a unendingly giant fish-like creature seemed to shoot out from it.

Roar!

As the roar awed and shook the heavens and earth, the giant fish-like creature split apart the endless waves, before unfurling a gigantic pair of

draconic wings, which hid the skies and covered the earth. This scene, it was exceedingly terrifying.

"This is the Northern Sea Dragon?"

Mu Chen was extremely shocked, since the Northern Sea Dragon was too gigantic! It's approximately ten thousand metres long. With a look, one would not be able to see its entire length. At the same time, the pressure radiating from it was so strong that even the space seemed to be unable to endure it.

Bang! Rumble!

Just as the Northern Sea Dragon appeared, the bald old man's body disappeared, and extremely terrifying peals of thunder instantly erupted from within the black lightning sea.

As Mu Chen looked over, he saw countless thousand metre long black lightning pillars rushing towards the sky from within the lightning sea. After converging on the air above the lightning sea, they transformed into a indefinitely-shaped black lightning spirit. Lightning liquid transformed into lightning rivers as they dripped from it, while a pair of jet-black lightning bolts appeared, which looked akin to eyes that have formed out of black holes. As they appeared, they proceeded to stare at the Northern Sea Dragon in the far distance.

Bang!

That indefinitely-shaped black lightning spirit gave a furious roar, causing black peals of thunder to wreak havoc as they resounded, enveloping around thousands of metres wide.

Mu Chen sucked in a breath of cold air once again as shock filled his eyes.

That spirit, should be the Lightning Spirit, right?

That perverted existence was truly too frightening.

Chapter 338: Infiltrating the Lightning Sea

Bang! Rumble!

Erratic peals of thunder rang out across the horizon as destructive energies, akin to wanting to destroy the heavens and earth, surged out, causing people to feel extreme terror upon seeing it.

Once it appeared, the Lightning Spirit had locked onto the person it was most familiar with, the Northern Sea Dragon. The boundless fluctuations radiating from the latter's body caused it to feel extremely threatened.

Bang!

The lightning sea crazily erupted out, causing ten kilometre high giant waves to form. As the Lightning Spirit furiously roared, the ten kilometre high lightning waves condensed as the lightning immediately surged out. Hiding the sky and covering the earth, they pressed onto the Northern Sea Dragon.

However, facing the incoming attacks, a chillingly cold glint flashed within the giant eyes of the Northern Sea Dragon. Opening its big mouth, jet-black waves gushed out. Those waves contained an unlimited amount of chilling air that seemed to be able to even freeze space.

Crack! Crack!

As the waves and the lightning waves smashed against each other, the lightning waves instantly froze. As the black icy layer rapidly extended out, it rushed towards the lightning sea at lightning speed.

Bang!

Countless bolts of black lightning, akin to furious dragons, rushed out from within the lightning sea. As they violently colliding with the black icy layer, they caused it to shatter into pieces.

Mu Chen sat on the Lightning Refining Platform, his eyes filled with shock as he looked at the terrifying exchange happening before his eyes. This was genuine strength, one that could shatter space and cause the heavens and the earth to tremble by simply raising one's hands.

This was a Sovereign.

A true expert of the Great Thousand World.

Scalding hot intent erupted within Mu Chen's eyes. This was his goal in his pursuit of cultivation. One day, he would also be able to reach such heights!

Rapidly withdrawing his intentions, Mu Chen turned his gaze towards the churning black lightning sea. As of now, since the Northern Sea Dragon was already entangled the Lightning Spirit up, this was his best opportunity to enter the lightning sea.

Although the crazy and devastating black lightning bolts blotted the sky, Mu Chen did not feel much dread in his heart. Immediately after he stretched his body, he suddenly shot out, before quietly entering the lightning sea without a sound.

Upon seeing this, a glint flashed within the giant eyes of the Northern Sea Dragon, before its attacks suddenly became more erratic, forcing the Lightning Spirit to retreat, time after time. Obviously, he was trying to diverge the attention of the Lightning Spirit. If not, once Mu Chen was discovered, any casual lightning bolt it threw at the latter would cause him to immediately turn into ashes.

However, it was fortunate that Mu Chen's strength was truly too weak. The little bit of Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiating from Mu Chen was masked by the terrifying exchange that was caused by the clashing parties. Therefore, when Mu Chen neared the lightning sea, he still wasn't discovered by the Lightning Spirit.

Upon seeing that, Mu Chen quietly sighed in relief, before staring gravely at the unending black lightning sea before him. Standing there, he was akin to grain of sand within the ocean, completely unremarkable.

With such a large disparity between their sizes, it was extremely easy for terror and dread to surface within others.

Mu Chen tightly clenched his fists as his black pupils stared at the black lightning sea. Fiercely clenching his teeth, with a move, he transformed

into a ray of light and shot straight in.

Plop.

As a big wave formed on the surface of the black lightning sea, Mu Chen's figure had already disappeared.

The instant Mu Chen entered the black lightning sea, he was able to feel the lightning energies that pervaded this ocean. Within this sea, there were even quite a few Divine Black Lightnings swimming around. Looking akin to giant black dragons in the sea, they wriggled around in a frightening manner.

As Mu Chen appeared, he had immediately attracted the attention of some Divine Black Lightning, causing them to swim over. Obviously, they had discovered energy fluctuations that were different from their own.

Seeing their reactions, Mu Chen hurriedly activated his Lightning God's Physique, causing a faint black lightning bolt to surface around his body. At the same time, his middle finger also turned jet-black. As the fluctuations of the lightning poison radiated out, it masked the fluctuations of his Spiritual Energy.

Just as Mu Chen completed his actions, the Divine Black Lightning had already shot over. Swimming around Mu Chen's body, they seemed to have detected something.

At this time, Mu Chen did not dare to make a single move. In this kind of place, as long as he was somewhat revealed to be different from the Divine Black Lightning, he would be instantaneously struck into ashes by them.

Fortunately, his luck wasn't bad to such a point. The bald old man truly didn't want him to turn into ashes. After circling around him awhile, the Divine Black Lightning proceeded to swim away. After all, they were only a part of the lightning energies, and didn't have any intelligence. Therefore, it was natural that they were unable to differentiate Mu Chen apart from themselves.

Whew. Mu Chen wiped away the cold sweat that appeared on his

forehead. With a move, he shot straight through the lightning sea. Pushing apart the lightning liquid, he shot into the depths of the lightning sea that was jet-black to the point of causing people's hearts to palpitate.

This lightning sea was extremely expansive, and Mu Chen did not know which direction the Lightning God's Pill was at. However, after thinking about it, that object should be born in a place where the lightning energies were at its thickest. Therefore, it was clear that the depths were the most probable place for the Lightning God's Pill to be born.

However, saying and doing were two different things. Wanting to search for a Lightning God's Pill in such an expansive lightning sea was still not an easy task. Mu Chen diligently searched around. However, even after ten minutes passed, he still had not the slightest bit of reward.

As he searched deeper and deeper into the depths of the lightning sea, the Divine Black Lightning bolts that he met grew increasingly terrifying. Their sizes were approximately hundreds and thousands of metres long. Looking from a great distance, they were akin to icy-cold black dragons sitting at the bottom of the ocean, causing people's blood to run cold.

As time ticked by, Mu Chen couldn't help getting somewhat anxious and impatient. Although he was relying on his Lightning God's Physique, as well as the lightning poison to conceal himself, this was only a temporary measure. Also, it was clear that this state couldn't last long. Once half an hour of time was reached, he would be unable to resist the corrosion caused by the lightning energies in the lightning sea. At that time, he might be instantly turned into ashes.

"I can't continue staying in this blind state, if I do, there would simply be not enough time."

Thoughts rapidly floated into Mu Chen's mind as his eyes sparkled. Only after quite a long while later did clarity reappear within his eyes. While deeply pondering, he muttered, "Although the lightning energies within this lightning sea are frightening, the lightning sea is full of them. Some of them should definitely contain some information. Since the Lightning God's Pill is the object that represents the source of the

lightning sea, the lightning energies rippling within the lightning sea will definitely have some response!"

This idea of Mu Chen's was rather gutsy. Within this lightning sea, his strength was obviously too weak. The slightest mistake would cause him to be destroyed hundreds and thousands of times. Originally, he should be avoiding the lightning energies that filled this lightning sea. However, as of now, he planned to take the initiative and acquire the information he wanted from them.

This was an extremely dangerous plan. However, Mu Chen seemed to never lack such guts.

After muttering to himself, Mu Chen finally made his decision. If something unfortunate truly popped up, he would immediately turn around and leave. Relying on the concealment provided by his Lightning God's Physique and the lightning poison, he should be able to smoothly leave this place. However, if that happened, it be would considered that he had failed this task...

However, at this time, Mu Chen also had no other road left to walk on. Therefore, he could only take such a risk.

After making his decision, Mu Chen did not hesitate anymore. With a thought, the black lightning bolt around his body grew slightly dimmer. He did not dare to completely let it go, with the only thing he could do was to attract the attention of the lightning energies in this lightning sea, little by little, and search using such a method.

As the black lightning bolt around Mu Chen's body gradually became dimmer, he instantly felt the tranquil lightning energies immediately starting to churn and surge. In fact, even the gigantic Divine Black Lightning in the far distance seemed to have sensed this change.

As a bolt of lightning energy came into contact with his body and went straight through him, Mu Chen immediately activated his Lightning God's Physique. The lightning bolt blossomed, enveloping his enter body once again.

The Divine Black Lightning that had sensed the changes came to a stop

once again, before slowly swimming around and becoming tranquil.

Enveloped by the lightning bolt, Mu Che's body vigorously trembled. The lightning energy that entered his body obviously contained the power of black lightning, causing it to be extremely formidable. However, it was fortunate that he had already endured the strikes of several bolts of Divine Black Lightning; therefore, creating a little bit of resistance. After wasting some time, the lightning energy within his body was finally absorbed and refined by him.

After refining the lightning energy, a black lightning bolt flashed within Mu Chen's eyes. Lowering his head, he looked towards a certain place within the jet-black lightning sea, while joy surfaced within his eyes.

Indeed, from that lightning energy, he was able to sense some unique fluctuations. The origin of those fluctuations were at the place he was looking at.

The Lightning God's Pill was definitely at that place!

With a move, Mu Chen traveled through the lightning sea like a fish, increasing his speed as he swept towards that location.

Because of his increased speed, within a short span of a few minutes, Mu Chen had arrived at the deepest part of the lightning sea. There, the colour of the lightning sea was an increasingly mysterious black colour. The jet-blackness was akin to ink, while feeling slightly vicious.

Lightning arced within the liquid of the sea, radiating with destructive fluctuations. This caused Mu Chen's scalp to slightly turn numb. A place like this was truly not somewhere that he, a little Heavenly Transformation Stage, should come to.

A lightning bolt erupted within Mu Chen's eyes as he continuously scanned his surroundings. Piercing through the jet-black lightning liquid, he continued his search for his target.

At this time, less than half of the time he had remained. If Mu Chen did not increase his speed, he might not be able to continue and would have to escape from this lightning sea.

Cold sweat dripped from his face as Mu Chen's heart rate increased. As of now, a sliver of anxiousness and impatience appeared within his eyes.

"Hmm?!"

While his heart was as impatient as a roaring fire, suddenly, his eyes violently contracted. Rapidly shooting forward and traveling through the lightning liquid, his palm seemingly touched a membranous-like substance.

With a thought, a black lightning bolt erupted from his palm and enveloped his body as he slowly penetrated that surface.

Upon passing through it, he could immediately feel that the black lighting liquid, which contained destructive energies, had completely disappeared. At that moment, even the surrounding lightning sea had also disappeared.

"This is..."

As Mu Chen curiously looked around, he understood that he was in an isolated space that was independent from the surrounding depths of the lightning sea.

Obviously, this place... would only be used to hide the most precious of objects.

Mu Chen's heart pumped increasingly fast before he looked at the centre-most position of this isolated space. Immediately, his breathing suddenly froze at this instant, while unconcealable joy and happiness erupted from his face.

At a distance within his sight, a metre wide black lotus stood floating in the dark space. The lotus seemed to be made of liquid that was continuously circulated within itself. Within the centre-most position of the lotus was a black pearl, approximately the size of an infant's head, that was slowly rotating around.

Indescribable fluctuations radiated from within the pearl, as if it was the origin of the lightning energies of the heavens and earth.

Flames erupted from within Mu Chen's eyes.

He had finally found the Lightning God's Pill.

Chapter 339: Got It

Within this isolated space, Mu Chen looked at the circular pearl, whose jet-blackness was akin to a black hole, with incomparable joy. From the latter's fluctuations, Mu Chen knew that he had definitely found his target.

The Lightning God's Pill!

"I've finally found it."

Mu Chen suppressed the joy and happiness surging from within his heart, and continued to maintain his vigilance. Rapidly shooting forward, he neared the black floating lotus that seemed to be made of black liquid.

As he near it, Mu Chen was able to discover that the black lotus was seemingly created from black lightning liquid. However, even though it looked like a liquid, it gave people a mysterious feeling that it was something that can't be destroyed. Furthermore, Mu Chen was unable to discover a single trace of destructive fluctuations coming from this black lotus that was formed from the lightning liquid.

This was entirely different from the erratic lightning energies found in the lightning sea that seemed to want to destroy the heavens and wreak the earth.

After staring at the lightning liquid-like black lotus awhile, Mu Chen turned his attention to the Lightning God's Pill. This thing was his primary objective, and he needed to immediately acquire it, since the time he had left was getting shorter.

Extending his hand out, traces of black lightning bolts erupted from the centre of his palm. With a flick of his finger, those lightning bolts shot out, and wrapped around the Lightning God's Pill like a silkworm's cocoon.

Since Mu Chen's Lightning God Physique had absorbed some energies from the Divine Black Lightning, the Lightning God's Pill did not develop the slightest resistance against the energy of the same origin as itself.

Thus, it would be acquired and stored by Mu Chen in an extremely easy fashion.

Seeing everything going so smoothly, Mu Chen sighed a breath of relief. A suction force erupted from his palm, and the Lightning God's Pill, wrapped in the lightning bolt, landed in his hand.

Bang!

However, just as the Lightning God's Pill descended onto his hand, the isolated space instantly started to intensely shake. As the space distorted and warped, signs of it shattering started to appear.

Seeing this spectacle, the expression on Mu Chen's face instantly changed. Instantly, he stored the Lightning God's Pill and was about to leave. However, as his gaze swept across the black liquid lotus floating in the centre, a slight thought entered his mind.

Although he didn't exactly know what use this lightning liquid lotus had, for it to be born in the same place as the Lightning God's Pill, it was definitely not an ordinary object. Since it had appeared before his eyes, why not just conveniently take it? If not, how long do he have to wait for such an opportunity to present itself again?

As Mu Chen's eyes sparkled, he extended his hand. Lightning bolts erupted from the centre of his palm again, and brought the lightning liquid lotus into Mu Chen's hand.

Chi!

After storing the lightning liquid lotus, Mu Chen did not dare to stay there a moment longer and explosively shot out from that place. Passing through the collapsing isolated space, he appeared, once again, in the mysterious depths of the lightning sea.

Chi. Chi.

A black lightning bolt enveloped Mu Chen's body. Ramping up his speed to the very extreme of his capabilities, he crazily shot out away from the depths of the lightning sea.

Bang!

However, just as he had increased his speed, an astonishingly ferocious roar erupted from the Lightning Spirit, which was being entangled by the Northern Sea Dragon in the air above the lightning sea. Seemingly turning crazy, countless black lightning bolts erupted from it, causing the black waves that were endlessly rushing towards it to explode away from it.

Seeing this sudden eruption of craziness from the Lightning Spirit, happiness filled the Northern Sea Dragon. From the looks of it, Mu Chen should have already found the Lightning God's Pill.

Bang! Bang!

As the Lightning Spirit roared, countless bolts of black lightning, akin to a giant dragons, shot out. Rumbling towards the lightning sea, they attempted to strike and kill Mu Chen, who had stolen the Lightning God's Pill.

However, the Northern Sea Dragon was obviously not going to allow it to strike and kill Mu Chen. Opening its giant mouth, cold black air that was sufficient to freeze space gushed out, causing the lightning bolts to completely freeze up.

Seeing the unending interference of the Northern Sea Dragon, the Lightning Spirit became completely furious. Its gigantic body suddenly blew up, transforming into lightning liquid that blotted the skies. With a scream, it rushed towards the lightning sea. Transforming into a gigantic black bolt of divine lightning that was approximately a mile long, it split apart the lightning sea. With an incomparable speed, it descended to a certain place within the lightning sea.

As Mu Chen was hurrying along in the lightning sea, chilling intent erupted from every pore of his body, as an indescribable aura of death enveloped his heart.

Furiously raising his head, he saw that the lightning sea was being split apart. A black bolt of divine lightning, approximately a mile long, pierced through. Akin to a heavenly punishment, it locked onto the space surrounding him. There was absolutely no way for him to evade now!

Mu Chen's face turned deathly pale. Facing an attack of such a degree, there was simply no way for him to evade or endure it.

Facing this kind of attack, the only thing he could do was to simply wait for his death.

Bang!

However, just when Mu Chen was totally helpless, the lightning sea was suddenly parted by a frightening energy. Black cold air howled and rushed through, and right before the Divine Black Lightning arrived, it enveloped Mu Chen within it.

Chi. Chi.

The black cold air transformed into an iceberg, locking Mu Chen within its depths, who was covered by layers of protection.

Boom!

As the Divine Black Lightning furiously struck the iceberg, the lightning sea instantly erupted, causing lightning liquid thousands of metres high to surge out. Gigantic cracks extended out from the iceberg. However, in the end, it had resisted the furious strike from the Lightning Spirit.

Chi!

The iceberg shot out. In a flash, it rushed through the lightning sea and appeared in the air.

The gigantic and endless body of the Northern Sea Dragon rapidly shrank, before turning into the fragile and delicate look of the bald old man. Descending before Mu Chen, he started to tightly churn lightning sea before him.

Within, the Lightning Spirit furiously roared. Sending lightning liquid thousands of metres tall, it attempted to launch an assault at the bald old man once again.

"Hmph."

Upon seeing this, the bald old man gave a cold snort. As his hands turned illusionary, the space surrounding the lightning sea suddenly

distorted, while black cold air erupt from it. Transforming into an incomparably large black icy prison, the lightning sea was locked within.

Bang! Bang!

Countless black lightning bolts struck the surface of the icy prison; however, it was still unable to shatter and break it apart. Previously, the bald old man was afraid of the Lightning Spirit destroying the Lightning God's Pill upon sensing its doom; therefore, he had apprehension in using that much strength. Since the apprehension was gone now, the Lightning Spirit, which didn't have much intelligence, was naturally not his opponent.

After entrapping the Lightning Spirit, the bald old man turned around and grinned at Mu Chen, while rubbing his hands together. None of the imposing aura and manners that was able to shatter the heavens and rend the earth with each action was present in his current appearance.

Mu Chen shot an unhappy glare at him. However, without dilly-dallying, a black lightning bolt appeared within the extended palm. After the lightning bolt dissipated, a Lightning God's Pill, which was the size of a human's head, revealed itself.

One could faintly discern a countless number of minute lightning vortices present on the surface of the Lightning God's Pill. As it continuously rotated, low and deep peals of thunder rang out.

Upon taking the Lightning God's Pill out, lightning bolts started to form within the surroundings, creating an extremely mysterious sight.

Upon seeing this Lightning God's Pill, the eyes of the bald old man instantly turned red. With a grab, he took it. Even though black lightning bolts started to strike his withered palm, he did not let it move him a single inch.

"The Lightning God's Pill..."

Emotions gushed out from the bald old man's eyes. For the sake of this Lightning God's Pill, he had been preparing for hundreds of years. Finally, today, he had achieved his wish.

With this Lightning God's Pill, he would be able to take a step forward and break the threshold of 9th Rank Sovereign, and become a true Earth Stage Sovereign!

After feeling emotional for quite a while, the bald old man finally regained his calmness and stored the Lightning God's Pill. Breaking the threshold was obviously not an easy matter. Even though he had managed to get his hands on the Lightning God's Pill, he still needed to make lots of preparations for this attempt.

"Mu Chen, treat this as me owing you a favor," said the bald old man as he looked towards Mu Chen.

With a laugh, Mu Chen replied, "Senior, you're too polite. The benefits I've received are already enough. I'm afraid I can't accept this favor."

Indeed, not only did he receive the complete version of the Lightning God Physique, he also had the Divine Black Lightning Poison Finger, as well as the Spiritual Light Empowerment he was going to receive. This amount of harvest was already incomparably abundant.

"Hey. looks like the benefits that you gained are indeed quite big," said the bald old man with an intentful smile as he shot a look at Mu Chen.

Seeing the look coming from the bald old man, Mu Chen instantly gave a guilty smile. With a wave of his sleeve, the lightning liquid lotus that he obtained from within the lightning sea appeared in front of him.

"Senior, this is something that I found at the same place as the Lightning God's Pill. However, I don't know what it is," explained Mu Chen as he pointed at the lightning liquid lotus.

As the bald old man stared at the lightning liquid lotus, a ray of light flashed within his eyes as he replied with some shock, "This seems to be a Lightning God's Lotus...an extremely rare Heavenly Treasure. Similar to the Lightning God's Pill, there's only an extremely small chance that it would be born within the lightning energies. I never imagined that this lightning sea would simultaneously give birth to the Lightning God's Pill and this Lightning God's Lotus..."

"Lightning God's Lotus..." Only from his explanation did Mu Chen know what this lightning liquid lotus was. From the name, one can obviously tell that it was something extraordinary.

"Since this Lightning God's Lotus was found by you, it should belong to you, too," said the bald old man as he gestured with his hand.

Mu Chen tilted his head forward. Obviously, he had never imagined that the bald old man would be that generous. After all, this Lighting God's Lotus was not an ordinary item.

"Although the Lightning God's Lotus is also very rare, it doesn't have much effect on the current me."

With a smile, the bald old man explained, "Your luck's quite good. This Lightning God's Lotus will have an extremely good effect on the training of your Lightning God's Physique. In the future, when you practice while sitting on it, you'll be able to absorb endless amounts of lightning energies from it to temper or fleshly body. This is extremely beneficial, since it would increase the progression of your Lightning God's Body."

Upon hearing that, Mu Chen felt slightly happy. This Lightning God's Lotus had such an unexpected godly effect? He was currently worrying that his Lightning God's Physique was too hard to practice and train. He never imagined that this Lightning God's Lotus would help solve some of his troubles.

"Then, thank you very much, Senior." Mu Chen voiced his thanks in a sincere tone. Although it was somewhat dangerous, the benefits that he had obtained was sufficient to warrant him to undertake them. He believed that there would be countless people lunging and fighting for their lives to offer their help, should the bald old man put the word out. However, it was a pity that there weren't many people of this level who would dare to endure the Divine Black Lightning with their bodies and survive to tell the tale...

Thinking about it, if not for this point, the Northern Sea Dragon would not have come to find him.

Shaking his head, the bald old man gave a wave of his sleeve, grabbed

Mu Chen and left the last level of the Lightning Territory to a mountain in the 9th level.

The space over there wasn't as pressurising as the previous level. Although lightning rivers were present everywhere as they floated around, it was countless times better than the last level of the Lightning Territory.

"Next up..."

The bald old man gave a faint smile as he looked towards Mu Chen.

"As with my promise, I'll help you with your Spiritual Light Empowerment."

Chapter 340: Accepting the Spiritual Light Empowerment

"Spiritual Light Empowerment..."

Hearing those three words, a trace of excitement flashed uncontrollably within Mu Chen's heart. Although his harvest was abundant during this trip, it was clearly the Spiritual Light Empowerment that moved Mu Chen the most.

Compared to the Lightning God's Physique, which required a long time of practice and training, the Spiritual Light Empowerment was able to cause his strength to advance and progress in the shortest amount of time without any side effects.

As of now, his strength was only at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase. Compared with Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong and the rest, who were at the Heavenly Completion Stage, this disparity was too great. Within the Hunting War, after risking his life to fight, he had only managed to achieve a reluctant victory. Furthermore, it was only due to Gu Tianyan not being the slightest bit overbearing. Otherwise, if they had truly fought till the end, Mu Chen truly did not have the confidence to achieve victory.

After all, the disparity of the Heavenly Transformation Stage to the Heavenly Completion Stage was truly too large.

However, if his strength was able to progress by some lengths, he would not need to suffer that much when faced with a Heavenly Completion Stage opponent.

"Bring out your Spiritual Light." said the bald old man with a grin. After receiving the Lightning God's Pill, the bald old man's mood was extremely good.

Nodding his head, Mu Chen flicked his finger, causing a bright and resplendent clump of light to shoot out, before transforming into a sparkling and transparent gem. Within the gem, boundless pure Spiritual

Energy continuously radiated from it.

After taking this Spirit Crystal out, Mu Chen had also taken all the other Spirit Knight's Spirit Crystals out. Although their effects weren't as strong as this Spirit King's Spirit Crystal, no matter how small they were, they were still meat.

However, the bald old man did not care about those Spirit Knight's Spirit Crystals, and only extended his hand to grab the Spirit King's Spirit Crystal. Nodding his head, he said, "The Spiritual Light World is somewhat miraculous. The Spiritual Aura that it condenses appear to be extremely pure. Using this for empowerment truly can't be anymore suitable."

Although the Spiritual Aura of the heavens and the earth were boundless and majestic, they would always be contaminated by other sources of energy. If one wanted to absorb them, one would have to do so after refining them. However, the Spiritual Light World was different. Although it was not a large space, the Spiritual Energy that was condensed by it was clearly much more pure, compared to the Spiritual Aura of the outside world.

"Take the Lightning God's Lotus out. With the assistance of that thing, the results of your Spiritual Light Empowerment would improve by a notch," said the bald old man.

Hearing that, Mu Chen felt some surprise and joy. Looks like the Lightning God's Lotus truly was a treasure for training and cultivation.

With a wave of his sleeve, the Lightning God's Lotus appeared and floated in the air. Black lightning liquid slowly circulated around like water. Nevertheless, it still maintained its lotus shape.

With a move, Mu Chen sat down of the top of the Lightning God's Lotus. As he made contact with the Lightning God's Lotus, he instantly felt waves of lightning energies quietly erupting out, before finally entering his body.

The energy of Divine Black Lightning was contained within these lightning energies. However, it was far from the erratic lightning bolts that struck him before. Slowly permeating Mu Chen's body, bit by bit, they

passed through his muscles, meridians, blood vessels and bones, leaving behind a feeling of numbness.

At this moment, the Lightning God's Physique within Mu Chen's body seemed to have activated on its own accord. His entire body was akin to a voracious wolf, greedily devouring those lightning energies. Relying on those energies, Mu Chen started to refine his body.

Unable to bear it, Mu Chen comfortably exhaled a clump of white qi. The white air even contained minute traces of lightning bolts sparkling around.This Lightning God's Lotus was truly a good treasure! This kind of practice was truly countless times more comfortable than being struck by the previous lightning!

With the flick of his finger, the Spirit King's Spirit Crystal instantly shot out of the bald old man's hand, before finally floating above Mu Chen's head. In the next moment, the Spiritual Lights adorned Mu Chen's body were akin to the starry sky.

A wave of boundless pure Spiritual Aura spread out. Like a faint mist, it enveloped Mu Chen within.

"Prepare to start."

With a wave of his sleeve, black chilling air erupted from within. Violently sweeping the Spiritual Lights together, rays of brilliance instantly started to grow brighter as the Spiritual Lights were completely connected to one another. Finally, they shot straight into the Spirit King's Spirit Crystal.

Bang!

Strong and powerful Spiritual Energy exploded from the Spirit Crystal. Due to its purity, they had seemingly formed drops of Spiritual Energy liquid on the surface of the Spirit Crystal, sparkling with dazzling brilliance.

Whoosh!

As the bald old man's withered finger gave a tap on space, a boundless ray of Spiritual Energy suddenly shot out. Finally, descending from the sky,

it enveloped Mu Chen, who was sitting on the Lightning God's Lotus, within it.

Boundless and pure Spiritual Energy gushed into Mu Chen's body like flooded waters.

This Spiritual Energy was too pure. Absolutely not requiring any kind of refinement, it was completely sucked in by the wide open, small mouth of the Spirit sitting within Mu Chen's aurasea.

A Spiritual Energy halo appeared around the Spirit's body, while boundless Spiritual Energy rippled within every one of Mu Chen's meridians and bones. However, following the influx of more and more Spiritual Energy, Mu Chen was able to feel that quite a bit of Spiritual Energy was starting to escape from his body.

This was a very common occurrence, as no one could completely absorb all of the Spiritual Energy provided by the Spiritual Light Empowerment. Seemingly half of all the Spiritual Energy entering Mu Chen's body was escaping Mu Chen's absorption.

Regarding the escaping Spiritual Energy, although Mu Chen felt pain in his heart, there was absolutely nothing he could do about it. This was obviously not something he could manage.

Naturally, although he could do nothing, that did not mean that the bald old man could not do so.

Upon seeing the Spiritual Energy that was escaping from Mu Chen's body, the forehead of the bald old man started to wrinkle up. With him supporting Mu Chen's Spiritual Light Empowerment, that Spiritual Energy still dared to be so disobedient. If he could allow Mu Chen to enjoy only half of the Spiritual Light Empowerment, that would truly make him lose face.

"All of you, go back in for me."

Pointing his finger out, a cold black stream instantly shot towards Mu Chen's body. In the next moment, a icy-black layer extended out, wrapping Mu Chen within.

As Mu Chen was being wrapped by the icy layer, the Spiritual Energy that had attempted to escape was being forced back once again into Mu Chen's body.

This was the benefit of having stronger people to support one during one's Spiritual Light Empowerment. With the bald old man's powerful strength, he was able to easily use the most perfect method to help Mu Chen complete his Spiritual Light Empowerment. As for the other elders, they were obviously unable to achieve such a complete impenetrability.

Since the Spiritual Energy was being forced back into his body, Mu Chen was able sense them once again, causing him to involuntarily sigh in admiration. Truly worthy of the Northern Sea Dragon. He was actually able to force the Spiritual Energy back into Mu Chen's body without harming him or losing any of the Spiritual Energy.

With the bald old man supporting his Spiritual Light Empowerment, Mu Chen was able to release all of his vigilance. Starting to focus, Mu Chen activated his Spirit, and completely absorbed all of the Spiritual Energy that was endlessly streaming in.

Upon seeing that Mu Chen, who was sitting on the Lightning God's Lotus, had completely sank into a training state, the bald old man faintly nodded his head. He did not choose a barbaric method of empowerment. That kind of empowerment would be too disadvantageous, and with his status and seniority, he would naturally not opt for that method. Furthermore, it would disappoint Mu Chen too much. The latter was able to help him retrieve the Lightning God's Pill, and this was something that still made him feel gratitude.

Therefore, the bald old man did not mind the increase in time and concentration needed from him. He had chosen to use the most perfect and most economical method; every Spiritual Energy pulse that entered Mu Chen's body would be at the exact upper limit of what the latter could absorb. Next up, when Mu Chen completely absorbed the last pulse, another pulse of pure Spiritual Energy would enter his body. This was seemingly endless and would not show the slightest feeling of sluggishness. This way, it would allow Mu Chen to gradually enter a deep

state of training. With that, the results of the empowerment would be even better.

Within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, the people with the capability of achieve such a perfect control weren't many.

As for the Spiritual Light Empowerment of an ordinary student, they were the lowest end method. That method doesn't even require anybody to take action. At the instant where they left the Spiritual Light World, the Spiritual Light would automatically radiate out and enter their bodies.

Naturally, the wastage of this method could be around 60 to 70%, with that percentage dissipating away.

As the bald old man sat in the air, his eyes tightly stared at Mu Chen, who was undergoing the Spiritual Light Empowerment. The method of empowerment he had employed was extremely wasteful of time. However, anybody would neglect such a small and unremarkable problem.

"Next up, let's quietly wait for this Spiritual Light Empowerment to end."

The bald old man gave a lazy stretch. Looks like for the time being, he had to momentarily guard this area.

——

Time quietly elapsed within this 9th level of the Lightning Territory. Unknowingly, an entire month had passed by.

Within this month, Mu Chen's body had seemingly entered into a completely deep sleep, without the slightest bit of movement. Even his breathing had been reduced to the bare minimum, akin to a dying person.

However, although his breaths was getting weaker and weaker, anyone would be able to sense that the Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiating from within Mu Chen's body was getting more vigorous and overbearing, day by day.

Obviously, he had received an extremely huge benefit in this Spiritual Light Empowerment.

From the side, the bald old man was casually sitting down. Feeling bored,

he gave a lazy stretch. He had been taking care of Mu Chen for an entire month. However, from the looks of it, there seems to be no sign of this ending.

"This brat..."

The bald old man muttered, before shaking his head. With a spread of his palm, the Lightning God's Pill appeared within in a flash. Grinning, he gently rubbed it around, while a drunk expression appeared on his face.

As long as he possessed this Lightning God's Pill, even this kind of boring wait would become interesting.

——

As time continued to quietly lapse, it had been over a month. Due to the Spiritual Light Empowerment, Mu Chen had disappeared from within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. This caused doubt in a lot of students. After all, the past Spiritual Light Empowerments did not seem to need such a long period of time.

Naturally, the news of the Northern Sea Dragon personally helping Mu Chen with his Spiritual Light Empowerment did not spread. Therefore, this allowed for the many ordinary students a reason to be envious.

In this period of time, the shock brought along by the Hunting War gradually quietened down. The intense fluctuations that were initially brought about by the changes in the Heavenly Rankings had also started to become still. As various dark horses revealed themselves, the places on the Heavenly Rankings had also changed accordingly.

People wanting to cause a gigantic change in the Heavenly Rankings might have to wait for the next Hunting War to start. At that time, however, there might be another batch of dark horses that would appear.

However, even though the mass knew that dark horses might appear, for a dark horse like that monstrous talent, Mu Chen, to reappear, that might be rather difficult.

He had the strength of a Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase, and yet he was able to defeat a Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase.

From the view of many people, this was simply an inconceivable matter.

As the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy started to gradually turn peaceful, some other matters caused waves to surge within the spiritual academy once again.

Chapter 341: Academy Exchange

The craze brought forth by the Hunting War had lasted for approximately one month in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, before it finally started to dissipate. As the Heavenly Rankings headed towards stability, the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy headed towards its usual peacefulness once again.

In this peace, there were some matters whose announcements had attracted people to enthusiastically discuss. One of them being that Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong had collaborated and formed a team, and had taken the task of killing Mo Longzi from the Mission Hall.

This matter had immediately caused an uproar in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Mo Longzi's terrible name could be said to be very fierce within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. It's said that as long as those students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy that were training in the outside world ran into him, almost all of them would either be sadistically tortured to death, or suffer an extremely miserable death. This caused an implacable hatred within the student masses. However, although Mo Longzi was savage and cruel, his strength was exceedingly tyrannical. Within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, the number of people who were able to be a threat to him would only be two, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong.

In the past, Shen Cangsheng would head out alone, by himself. However, he had returned without any results. This time, he had finally collaborated with Li Xuantong. Obviously, they had decided on a plan that they had to get rid of this poison of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

The 1st and 2nd Rank of the Heavenly Rankings collaborating was something beyond worth seeing. However, it was helpless for the masses, as they were unable to follow the two, and could only quietly wait within the academy for the good news. All of them believed that Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, this astonishing and absolute duo, would definitely not return with empty hands.

However, it's obvious that this kind of news would not come so soon. Therefore, approximately ten days after Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong had left the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, much of this craze had also gradually faded away to peacefulness.

However, after this matter, there was another one that had broken the peacefulness of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, yet again.

It was well-known by everyone that there were countless spiritual academies within the Great Thousand World. Although the names of the Five Great Academies had the greatest reputation, this did not mean that there were truly no other spiritual academies whose strength was on par with the Five Great Academies.

There were a few similarly strong spiritual academies whose strength were not weaker than the Five Great Academies. However, their reputation and fame were, all in all, somewhat weaker. Therefore, when people often talked about spiritual academies, the Five Great Academies would be the most easily remembered by people.

Due to this point, it had undoubtedly stimulated those strong academies that had the qualifications to challenge the Five Great Academies, but were somewhat only lacking in fame and prestige. They had thought of all sorts of methods, and searched for geniuses all over the place in an attempt rely on them to promote the academy's name as those geniuses rose.

Naturally, this kind of fame and reputation had to rely on the namesake of the "Five Great Academies".

Therefore, this had lead to the creation of the so-called "Academy Exchange". Simply speaking, after a certain period of time, there would be some strong academies who would bring their teams towards the "Five Great Academies" and use them as a pretext to call for students to compare notes. From its appearance, it looked good-natured. However, the competitive and provocative intent contained within was already self-evident.

Although the "Five Great Academies" were clear about these so-called

"Exchanges", they did not have any means to reject them. After all, their opposition's reasons were truly high sounding and dignified. Being the Five Great Academies, their prestige and reputations were at stake. Therefore, they did not have any reason to reject.

Similarly, after more than a month since the end of the Hunting War, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy welcomed an Academy Exchange. This undeniably caused the peaceful Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy to become restless and disturbed once again.

Quite a few outstanding students started to roll their sleeves up for action and were prepared to reveal their abilities in this Academy Exchange. They wanted to let those fellows understand that the quality of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy wasn't something that any random spiritual academy could compare to.

Being one of the Five Great Academies, they naturally had their own kind of arrogance. Perhaps, they were very ordinary within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. However, regardless of that, they had all surmounted all difficulties to be able to become students of this academy. This was what they drew their arrogance from.

Therefore, this Academy Exchange was something the student masses of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had risen their heads and looked forward to, unhurriedly as it arrived.

This year, the academy that was undergoing the Exchange with the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy. It was a strong spiritual academy that sat within the Ancient Cauldron Continent. It's said that the fame and reputation of the Ancient Cauldron Continent was lower than the Northern Heavenly Continent. However, underestimating a spiritual academy that took its name from the continent it was on due to this lower fame and reputation might be a rather stupid thing to do.

Therefore, during this period, all the students within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy would pay attention to this matter. The degree of attention had even exceeded that of the Hunting War.

After all, regardless of the changes that happened due to the Hunting War, the most outstanding person was still a person of their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. However, in such an Exchange, if they were to lose, that would sully the fame and reputation of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Regardless of a single defeat, all of their faces would turn ugly.

Therefore, at this time, the students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy were extraordinarily cooperative. Regardless of the contradictions within the internal factions, they had to deal with this Exchange before settling their disputes. If not, they would incur the despise and contempt of all the students.

As a result, this exchange had proceeded as planned.

The location of the Exchange was set up in the northern square. It could be seen that the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had regarded this exchange exceedingly important. After all, this concerned the fame and reputation of their spiritual academy.

To a founding spiritual academy, fame and reputation were very important matters.

For such an exchange, to put it nicely, one can call it as somewhat of a little public shaming venue. If the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was unable to defend this place, it would have quite a bit negative effect towards the fame and reputation of their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Following the launch of this Exchange, the students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy became more solemn and serious. This was due to the sensations they got from the students of the Ancient Cauldron Academy that had come over. These students seemed to have undergone rigorous screening and selection process, as none of them appeared to be easy to be dealt with.

This exchange had continued for three whole days.

On the first day of the exchange, both sides had sent their experts out. However, none of them were able to gain any superiority. A few of the

outstanding and famous students on the Heavenly Rankings obtained some victories, as well as some losses. On a whole, the situation could be said as being stable.

However, this result caused the students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy to withdraw their contempt and scorn. This Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy had come prepared. Added with the fact that their 1st Rank and 2nd Rank on the Heavenly Rankings, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, were outside of the academy on a mission to kill Mo Longzi, obviously, they could not come back on such a short notice. Furthermore, Mu Chen, who had achieved widespread fame and stepped into the 3rd Rank of the Heavenly Rankings, had mysteriously disappeared for over a month, with no one knowing where he went.

With their three strongest people not present, if they continued with their negligence, wanting to achieve victory in this Exchange might truly become a difficult task.

Thus, on the second day, the top ten ranks within than Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's Heavenly Rankings, He Yao, Su Xuan, Xu Huang, Zhao Qingshan and the rest of the top ranked students all came out. With such a lineup, Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy final managed to achieve an overwhelming victory and suppressed the grandeur of the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy back down.

However, this kind of suppression only lasted for a day. On the third day, the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy did not continue to send out more outstanding students. In fact, they had only sent one person out.

However, it was this one person that had started his challenge from the 9th Rank of the Heavenly Rankings. Within a short span of a day, under the countless horrified gazes of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy students, he had successively defeat Mu Fengyang, Xu Huang, Zhao Qingshan, Su Xuan and the rest of the outstanding students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy...

The entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was in an uproar due to that.

More than half of the top ten within the Heavenly Rankings that took action were eliminated by that person. Moreover, that person's actions were very fierce and vicious. Seemingly all of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy students that lost to him had suffered serious injuries. This kind of violent and vicious way had incurred the combined wrath and anger of the student masses of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. However, they still had no way to deal with that person's strength.

Therefore, they could only place their final hope on the shoulders of He Yao, who had yet to lose.

However, in the end, this kind of hope was still mercilessly shattered.

He Yao was able to contend with the opponent, and had used all of his means and methods. However, due to a wrong move, he still regretfully lost. Therefore, the top ten of the Heavenly Rankings had seemingly been completely wiped out.

The voices from the entire side of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy students were instantly extinguished. Obviously, no one thought that there would actually be such a situation in this Exchange.

On the contrary, the atmosphere on the side of the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy was in high spirits. Some of their students already had contempt and disdain in their gazes as they looked at the students from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. In their hearts, they had truly believed that their Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy had already exceeded the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy in terms of strength, and was already sufficient to replace this academy from one of the Five Great Academies.

After this fight, every student from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy came to know the vicious person that had seemingly caused a complete wipeout to the top ten within the Heavenly Rankings. It was a youth by the name of Liu Zheng. His talent was absolutely astonishing. Furthermore, what made people feel shocked and astounded was that he was once chosen by the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. However, in the end, he was unable to pass through the evaluations. After being

eliminated, he had switched to the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy..

Yet, this student that was previously being eliminated had appeared once again in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. This was an unexpectedly present scenario. With such a mocking irony, it caused a fiery pain within the hearts of all the students from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

No wonder why this fellow would be that vicious when he made his moves! He was relying on this to take revenge on the fact that their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had no eyes!

The students from the Northern Heavens Spiritual ACademy were all furious and angry. Those evaluations could not be considered as completely fair, as it relied on both strength and luck. Although this Liu Zheng had shocking talent, what he was lacking was only some luck. Speaking of that, there simply wasn't anyone to blame. However, from the viciousness shown in his attacks, he appeared to have excessive grievances.

Feeling furious, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy students continued to search for their finest students that have yet to make their move. However, following that, they discovered that other than the trio of Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong and Mu Chen being missing, there seemed to be no student who was stronger than He Yao in their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy...

This result caused all of them to tear up. Could it be that this Exchange would end with such a depressing result? If that were to happen, once the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy leaves, they might immediately proclaim about it wantonly. At that moment, the fame and reputation of their Northern Heavens Spiritual ACademy would suffer a serious blow. This might even affect their prestige, as well as their ranking within the Five Great Academies...

However, hope would always inadvertently appear. Just as all of the students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy were in tears, Su Xuan had recommended a person that had incurred the agreement of the

masses.

That person was naturally the only one, other than Mu Chen and the other missing two, within the top ten of the Heavenly Rankings that had yet to take action.

That person, was the one and only Luo Li.

Chapter 342: Liu Zheng

Northern Square.

As of now, this square, which was devoid of people after the end of the Hunting War, had once again become the focal point of countless people, due to the arrival of the Exchange.

The attention it gained seemed even more fervent and passionate that the Hunting War.

This was due to the whole Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy unanimously gathering together to face a foreign opponent.

The Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy was already pressing the top of their heads. If they were not able to return the expression that filled their faces back to their opponents, they might truly become the laughingstock of the Five Great Academies, and would receive the ridicule of everyone.

This was absolutely not something that the arrogant Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy could endure.

A sea of humans pervaded the vast and expansive square. Over 90% of the people there were students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Only within the northwest corner was a small group of people that were inharmoniously present.

They were the students from the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy.

Those students wore green-coloured robes, with males and females present. However, the majority of them had their arms folded in front of their chests, while a cold smirk appeared on their faces as they looked towards the large and imposing number of Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. So what if you have more people? You're still unable to defeat Senior Brother Liu Zheng! In this Exchange, our Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy will step on your Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy!

If they were able to step on the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy and have a prominent and outstanding performance in the Great Academy Competition half a year later, then, maybe their Ancient

Cauldron Spiritual Academy might be able to take over the place of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy!

"Senior Brother Liu Zheng, you just have to defend us for one more day for our Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy to achieve victory! At that time, let's see if they have anything else to say!"

"Hmph, all of these Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy students are just reluctant to admit their mistakes, like saying that their strongest students aren't around. Senior Brother Liu Zheng had been fighting since yesterday till now. So those so-called 'Top Ten" of your Heavenly Rankings, aren't they just completely useless?"

"Exactly, even if the top three of your Heavenly Ranking came today, Senior Liu Zheng will make them scram with their tails between their legs like usual!"

"Haha."

"..."

The mockery and loud laughter coming from those Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy students rang out with restraint, which immediately incurred the wrath and fury of the student masses of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Ever since the appearance of that Liu Zheng, their attitudes had appeared extremely rampant. However, due to the drop in results, although the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy students had bellies full of fire, they were unable to let it out, with the only thing they could do was let their eyes sprout with flames.

On the square before them stood a man in green robes, whose his arms were crossed before him. With his back ramrod straight, he stared indifferently at the furious Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy students, while a cold smirk appeared at the corner of his mouth.

This is the spiritual academy that I've dreamt of entering? From the looks of it, it doesn't seem as awesome as in my dreams.

He wanted to let the people of the Northerns Heavens Spiritual Academy know that losing him, Liu Zheng, showed how blind they were!

Within the very front of the student masses of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was the current gathering spot for the most elite people within the student body. He Yao, Su Xuan, Xu Huang and the rest of the veteran elite students, as well as those new elites like Zhao Qingshan, had all crowded around there. However, at this time, the expressions of their faces weren't a pretty sight to behold.

"Su Xuan, have you already sent people to inform Luo Li? Will she come?" asked Xu Huang in a low voice as he looked at Su Xuan. As of now, other than Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong, as well Mu Chen, who had mysteriously disappeared for over a month, of the top ten within the Heavenly Rankings, there was only Luo Li, whom hadn't taken action, left.

"I've already sent the message out. Although Luo Li usually doesn't like to fight with people, this matter concerns the face of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. She should come." Su Xuan replied while nodding her small head.

"Is there any use for her to come? This Liu Zheng's strength should be at the Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase. He's not weaker than Li Xuantong. Without speaking about Luo Li, even if Mu Chen comes, I'm afraid that he might not even be able to achieve a victory. After all, this isn't a friendly comparison." After all that had happened, He Yao had maintained some distance from Mu Chen. With Luo Li having that kind of relationship with the latter, although he knew that the situation before him was suitable, he still could not resist to mention it.

Su Xuan shot an indifferent glare at him and said, "If you think you're capable, all of us will let you continue."

Hearing her words, He Yao turned sluggish. Clenching his teeth, he turned his head around. Although he was exceedingly close to the Heavenly Completion Stage, he was still unable to take that step forward. If not, he would have already defeated Liu Zheng.

Silence filled the crowd as everyone felt slightly sullen. These people from the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy truly knew when to pick a challenge. Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong had just left the academy,

while that Mu Chen had mysteriously disappeared. They had chosen such a time to send their attack, causing them to be caught unprepared and simply unable to muster any defenses.

While provocative and furious gazes were exchanged between the students from both academies, their higher-ups were both similarly seated on the chief podium within the northern square. Although the atmosphere there wasn't as incisive and competitive compared the atmosphere between the students, it was clear that there wasn't any friendliness, either.

"Haha, Headmaster Tai Cang, looks like our Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy has come at an unfortunate time for you guys. The talent of that brat, Liu Zheng is extremely high. However, he's too arrogant. I've originally wanted him to meet up with the most elite students within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy and rely on them to file down his haughtiness," said a rather fleshly man with a grin as he sat on the chief podium.

"You must be joking, Dean Fei. Exchanges are only small competitions to compare notes. When mutually comparing notes, finding one's weaknesses would be enough. Why bother about filing down other's haughtiness, right?" Dean Tai Cang replied with a faint smile.

The fatty who appeared to be a merchant was the Dean of the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy, and was named Fei Qingsong. Although his appearance wasn't awe-raising, he was a figure at the extreme peak within the Ancient Cauldron Continent. If not, he wouldn't be able to become a Dean of an academy. Therefore, anyone who underestimated him due to his appearance might get killed with a single strike from him, without knowing exactly what had happened.

"Dean Tai Cang's bearing is better," said Fei Qingsong while still beaming at both corners. Patting his big and coarse palm onto the table, he said, "Looks like our Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy has an unfair advantage in this Exchange. Please feel relaxed, Dean Tai Cang. When I go back, I'll reprimand those little fellows, and make them tightly seal their mouths up. Haha."

A faint smile still lingered on Dean Tai Cang's face without any warmness or rage. Only the Elder sitting beside him started to frown and wrinkle his brows. That was the Hall Master of the Punishment Hall, Mo You. Faintly moving his lips, a sliver of a sound rang within Dean Tai Cang's ears.

"Dean, I've already passed this news to Lord Northern Sea. However, as of now, there hasn't been any reply...and I don't know exactly whether Mu Chen will appear..."

Hearing those words, Dean Tai Cang faintly nodded his head without being detected.

"Dean Tai Cang, are there any other students that want to make a move from your North Heavens Spiritual Academy? If not..."Fei Qingsong said with a face beaming with smiles. However, before he could finish his statement, his eyes started to faintly narrow. Turning his head towards the skies in the northern direction, he saw a streak of light shooting over. Like a graceful swan, it landed within the northern square under the countless gazes from the surroundings.

As the light dissipated, it revealed the slender physique of a young girl. Wearing an outfit that was black as ink, with silvery hair flowing down from her head, and a delicate and exquisite face, she brought along an extremely unique aura that made her seem to be independent of the world around her as she appeared within everyone line-of-sight.

The originally clamoring northern square seemingly turned much quieter at this instant. Regardless of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy or the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy, astonishment and shock flashed within the eyes of the students from both sides.

"She's arrived!"

Upon seeing this, a tremor went through the minds of Su Xuan and the rest.

"What? There truly isn't any other student left from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy that has yet to make a move? I've waited for so long just for a girl?" Liu Zheng was also faintly stunned by Luo Li's

appearance. However, in the next moment, bring along cold laughter, his voice rang out.

Luo Li's clear and limpid eyes quietly stared at Liu Zheng. However, she did not respond with any words, with only her jade-like hand slowly covering her Luo Shen Sword.

"10th Rank on the Heavenly Rankings, Luo Li, seeks your guidance." Luo Li's gentle and clear voice slowly fluttered throughout the square.

"10th Rank on the Heavenly Rankings? Even your 4th Rank, He Yao, had lost under the hands of Senior Brother Liu Zheng. What can she, the 10th Rank, do?" At this time, some of the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy students managed to regain their clarity, before tugging their mouths. Discussions rang out in succession as they thought, Could it really be the honey trap of the legends?

While the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy students were undergoing their discussions, a gaze quietly shot out from within their ranks. Finally, it converged on the lovable body of the absolutely beautiful girl with an outstanding character within the square.

There seemed to be a peculiar and ruminating smile contained within that gaze.

Luo Li, you really are here...

Within the square, Liu Zheng coldly stared at Luo Li, whom was elegantly standing not too far way, before slowly saying, "I'm a person that doesn't know how to show mercy. Don't assume that I'll let you off just because you're pretty. Therefore, if you don't wish to damage your face, it's best that you step down, now."

Luo Li's eyebrows faintly bunched up before replying in a gentle voice, "Please."

Hearing her reply, Liu Zheng's expression gradually grew cold. With a cold snort, he took a furious step forward. Instantly, boundless Spiritual Energy shot to the sky as overbearing Spiritual Energy pressure came enveloping over.

Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase.

The expressions of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy students turned solemn and grave. This Liu Zheng was truly fierce and vicious. However, his strength was also extremely tyrannical.

Su Xuan, He Yao and the rest were also staring at the square. Even they had never seen Luo Li truly take action before. However, she was able to collaborate with Mu Chen to kill a Spirit King. Thinking about that, her true strength shouldn't be just that little bit that was revealed. Naturally, they were also unable to fully determine exactly how strong Luo Li was. Only when she truly took action would they be able to tell.

I hope she has also concealed her strength.

Su Xuan thought as she gave a soft sigh in her heart. That Liu Zheng's moves were extremely heavy. If he hurts Luo Li, at that time, when Mu Chen arrives, no one knows how mad and furious he would be. As of now, she can only hope that Luo Li's strength would be able to give all of them a surprise.

Standing arrogantly in the square, boundless Spiritual Energy swept out from Liu Zheng. Staring at Luo Li, a cold and sinister light erupted from his eyes. As long as he was able to defeat this final opponent, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy should have no words left to say, right?

"The Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy is nothing more than this."

A ridiculing smile appeared at the corner of Liu Zheng's mouth as he said in a soft voice, "Since I'm unable to meet up with your top three of your so-called 'Heavenly Rankings', I'll just have to step on them one by one during the Great Academy Competition half a year later."

Hearing his words, a chilling intent flashed within Luo Li's clear and limpid eyes. Staring at Liu Zheng, her jade-like hand slowly grasped the Luo Shen Sword tightly. In the next moment, everyone could feel a similarly boundless Spiritual Energy sweeping out from her body, akin to a storm.

The density and strength of the Spiritual Energy had similarly reached

the Heavenly Completion Stage!

The eyes of countless Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy students instantly grew wide open. No one would have guessed that other than Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, the 10th Rank on the Heavenly Rankings, Luo Li, would actually have such astonishing strength!

She's simply even better than Mu Chen at concealment!

However, Luo Li treated the countless shocked gazes that were converged on her as nothing. Staring at Liu Zheng, whose face had similarly changed, her clear and cold voice, followed by the the melodious and sharp ring of a sword, resounded across the horizon.

"To deal with you, I only need..."

"One sword!"

Boundless Sword Qi rushed through the skies.

Chapter 343: The Might of One Sword

Buzz!

A clear sword ringing sound accompanied the boundless Sword Aura as it shot directly through the clouds. The swift and fierce Sword Aura undulated in the skies, causing the skies to seemingly turn dark and gloomy.

The originally clamoring sounds that pervaded the air in the square had stopped upon this happening.

Regardless of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy or the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy, the faces on all of the student had a shadow of graveness. No one would have imagined that this young lady that seemed outstanding in both her temperament and beauty would actually be able to display such an astonishing and imposing manner.

However, with such strength, how was she still ranked as the number ten on the Heavenly Rankings?

This was absolutely enough to target the top three rankings!

Su Xuan, He Yao and the rest were all in shock with amazement displayed on their faces. This was especially true for He Yao, he had a vexatious expression on his face. Amongst the students from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, there were merely two people who could be said to have truly stepped into the Heavenly Completion Stage.

Those two were Shen Changsheng and Li Xuantong. Even Mu Chen, who had various methods and exceedingly strong combat prowess, was too far away from the Heavenly Completion Stage with regards to his true power.

Originally, He Yao had assumed that Mu Chen would be the third person to step into the Heavenly Completion Stage. However, who could have thought that Luo Li, someone who had extremely little occasions to cross hands with people and someone that revealed her true strength in extremely few occasions, would actually possess such frightening

strength?

This pair of lovers were simply abnormal!

Were they not afraid of their diaphragms feeling unbearable by hiding like that? There were a few people who were secretly clenching their teeth, because this was obviously quite a big blow to them.

However, other than those few depressed people, the absolute majority of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy students had joy and happiness rushing out of their eyes. Luo Li's strength was this strong, in that case, that Liu Zhen could no longer continue to be that insolent anymore!

"Hmph, a single sword? You're too arrogant!"

Under the innumerable attentive gazes from the surroundings, the startled expression of Liu Zhen disappeared as he snorted with a cold laugh. This Luo Li's strength had truly far exceeded his expectations; however, it was still at the Initial level of the Heavenly Completion Stage. If she wanted to defeat him by using a single sword, that was simply an enormous joke!

However, Luo Li seemed to have not heard his cold laughter. Clenching the Luo Shen Sword in her jade-like hands, her slender fingers ran across the sword sheath. In the next instant, a cold light blossomed as the Luo Shen Sword left its sheath once again.

Upon its appearance, the entire world seemed to have turned cold and frosty.

A Sword Aura blotted the skies as a 300 metre long gargantuan light blade shot into the skies. The boundless and majestic Sword Aura started to condense at an astonishing speed. In a short few breaths, the 300 metre long gargantuan light sword started to condense and form a river of Sword Aura.

With its appearance, a frightening Sword Aura started to radiate from it.

As he looked at the river of Sword Aura, there was a faint change in the expression on Liu Zhen's face. A chilling intent arose from his skin as an

extremely dangerous fluctuation started to erupt from his heart.

Seeing that, Luo Li gently strutted forward. With a light tremble of her jade-like hands, the longsword in her hand was gently thrusted out.

Buzz!

The longsword buzzed and screamed as if something was resonating with the sword. In the sky, the river of Sword Aura started to surge downwards, turning into an eye-catching light beam. Carrying along an indescribably swift and fierce Sword Aura, it swept fiercely towards Liu Zhen.

A single sword turned into the Luo River.

Bang!

Ten thousand strands of Sword Aura surged forward, and before the river of Sword Aura descended towards the ground, the earth was already sliced to a disastrous state. At this time Luo Li had displayed all of her strength and put everything into this move. Therefore, this time, it was much stronger than the previous time in the Hunting War!

Liu Zhen raised his head, the image of the river of Sword Aura reflecting off his pupils. At this time, his gaze had turned extremely grave as he thought, This single sword truly is astonishing.

However, wanting to make him, Liu Zhen admit defeat was not that easy to do!

A cold glint surged out from within his eyes and with a grasp of his hand, a scarlet spear suddenly appeared within it. From the spear in his hand, an erratic Spiritual Energy fluctuation swept out, like flames.

"Fire God's War Spear!"

All of the Spiritual Energy exploded from within his body without a trace of restraint as scarlet-coloured Spiritual Energy shot up towards the sky. With a frontal thrust of his spear, the air within the region seemed to have been pierced through and was ruptured by it.

BANG!

Everyone present could see the dreadful flames erupting explosively from within Liu Zhen's body as a scarlet light engulf the heavens and earth like the rage of the fire god. Carrying along torrential amounts of angry flames, it violently collided against the river of Sword Aura.

BANG!

At the instant of the collision, the Sword Aura and the scarlet light exploded. The Sword Aura wrecked havoc across the area, causing the earth to instantaneous shatter and crumble as a gigantic fissure rapidly extended on the ground.

At this moment, the Scarlet light suddenly shattered.

As the Sword Aura swept across, it actually managed to thoroughly slice and break down the scarlet-coloured Spiritual Energy that was akin to flames.

A dumbstruck look appeared within Liu Zhen's eyes as he thought, Her Sword Aura is so swift and fierce and it has far exceeded my expectations.

His hand started to tremble as he explosively retreated, not daring to have the resolve to face that sharp edge again.

Swish!

However, just as he started to retreat, and his imposing manner had weakened, a beautiful, graceful figure shot towards him with. The Sword Aura that blotted the skies seemed to follow the beautiful figure as it started to surge towards her.

Akin to lightning, the Sword Aura tore space apart and headed directly towards Liu Zhen as he stared at it with an aghast look.

That speed was too quick, and he could only watch helplessly as the sharp edge rapidly grew larger in his view; however, he did not have a single trace of energy left to evade it.

As the sword light swept forward, the body of the sword, which rippled like water, patted Liu Zhen's chest before the Sword Aura erupted out.

BANG!

Liu Zheng flew across the sky, before landing disastrously on the outside of the arena. A mouthful of fresh blood violent spurted out as his face turned deathly pale, while his eyes became filled with terror and relief that he had survived.

He had previously tasted the feeling of death when the Sword Aura struck him. If Luo Li wanted to kill him, he would have absolutely no way to live.

The victor had appeared too quickly.

The grace of that single sword was only felt by a minority of people. However when Liu Zhen disastrously landed on the ground, everyone present already knew who the victor was. Therefore, cheers of joy that shook the world instantly rang out from the location of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Su Xuan, He Yao and the rest wore expressions of astonishment as they stared at the beautiful figure in the arena with somewhat peculiar gazes. Who would have thought that this young lady, who had only followed quietly behind Mu Chen, would actually hide such strength?

All of them had underestimated her.

She did not only possess a beauty and temperament that stole people's breaths away, her strength was equally breathtaking.

"She truly is formidable," exclaimed Xu Huang with a sigh. This batch of Freshmen were truly outstanding. Having one Mu Chen was already enough, and now, who would have thought that this girl, who was usually quiet, would actually be that terrifying?

It looked like she had purposefully restrained her sharp edge when standing beside Mu Chen and acted introvertly. Yet, just like the uncommon sword in her hand, there would be a day that she would reveal her sharp edge.

And that was today.

While the students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy were cheering, the students of the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy wore

indeterminate and downcast expressions. At the beginning, they were still feeling excited; however, who could have imagined that after a short moment, there would be such a thorough reversal in the situation?

Liu Zhen of the Heavenly Completion Stage had actually been defeated in such a short amount of time.

On the podium, the smiling face of the Dean of the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy, Fei Qingsong, slightly twitched, before saying with a smile, "Undoubtedly one of the five great academies. Who would have thought that there was actually such a formidable person, other than the Top Ten on the Heavenly Ranking that had yet to reveal themselves?"

Dean Tai Cang smiled as he looked towards the young lady standing in the arena and replied, "You're overpraising, Dean Fei. Luo Li dislikes fighting, and if not for her emotions being different from other days, she would not have taken action."

Fei Qingsong also smiled. Narrowing his eyes, he said, "She is called Luo Li? Hmm... That sword that she had executed. It made me recall the Luo Shen Sword Technique of the Luo God Clan... Could it be that she is a member of the Luo God Clan?"

Dean Tai Cang refused to comment and replied, "Since Liu Zhen was defeated, this Exchange should end here. Both parties had their wins, and Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy sure is strong and robust."

"Haha, wait a moment," said Fei Qingsong with a grin, "Dean Tai Cang, we, the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy, still have people that have yet to fight... I didn't say that Liu Zhen was the strongest student of our Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy... Furthermore, although you all have a member of the Luo God Clan... Haha... We also have a student with a special background."

Upon hearing his words, Dean Tai Cang could not resist wrinkling his forehead.

This Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy had surely come prepared.

On the arena, Luo Li slowly started to restrain the Sword Aura that

surrounded her body as she quietly looked towards Liu Zhen, who looked like a sorry figure and said, "Your Spiritual Energy is superficial. It seems that there was someone who had forcefully risen your strength. With your original capabilities, you don't have the qualifications to challenge the Top Three of the Heavenly Rankings within our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

An ugly expression appeared on Liu Zhen's face as he wanted to curse out. However, due to that previous fierce and swift sword of hers appearing in his mind, he was unable to speak at that moment. That faintly trembling appearance had lost all of its previous awe.

The students of the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy clenched their teeth; however, there was still no one who dared to open their mouths and speak. Even Liu Zhen was defeated, and it was obvious that they were not able to achieve victory against Luo Li.

Luo Li looked towards the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy students, who were suppressing their rage and anger, before graceful turning and walking away with the longsword in her jade-like hands. Although she did not like to fight with people in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, she was still a student here and would naturally not stand at a corner and watch the people from the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy come there and humiliate the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. However, since she had already achieved her objective, she would not continue to stay in the arena.

Looking at Luo Li, who had turned her body and walked away, Liu Zhen clenched his fists, before finally calming down. A disappointed look appeared within his eyes as he understood that he truly was not a match for Luo Li.

"Haha..."

However, just as Luo Li had taken two steps, a soft laughing voice slowly rang out from within the group of students of the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy.

Upon hearing that laughter, a slight pause occurred in Luo Li's footsteps.

After hearing the laughter, unexpectedly, those few Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy students had a cold shiver run up their bodies as the expressions on their faces changed.

Innumerable gazes shot towards the direction of the laughing voice.

At the rearmost position within the group of Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy students, a figure slowly stood up and walked through the group. Finally standing in front of Liu Zhen, he casually said, "Useless."

A faint tremor ran through Liu Zhen; however, he could only unwillingly lower his head.

The figure strode passed Liu Zhen and slowly walked onto the arena. Raising his head, a handsome face was revealed. On his face was a pair of scarlet pupils that looked akin to blood, which made them particularly eye-catching.

"Haha, Luo Li... the next Empress of the Luo God Clan. I never imagined that you would actually be at this place..."

Luo Li turned around. When she spotted the scarlet pupils of the man in front of her that were akin to blood, an endless chilling intent erupted from within her clear and limpid eyes.

Her jade-like hand slowly gripped her longsword tightly as a cold voice filled with chilling intent spilled out from those red lips.

"Blood God Clan..."

Chapter 344: Xue Shi

"Blood God Clan..."

When those three words rang out from Luo Li's lips, the absolutely beautiful face of the girl had already turned ice-cold. Swift and fierce killing intent had even erupted from within her eyes. This kind of emotion and state of mind was rarely displayed by her.

The handsome youth gave a faint smile. Wearing a striking set of blood-red robes, an aura reeking of blood seemed to radiate from his entire body, while the pair of eyes that seemed to be coloured with fresh blood appeared extremely mysterious and strange.

"Look's like the news that we've gotten out really is real. Being the next Empress of the Luo God Clan, you've not properly received the inheritance under the protection of Luo Tianshen, and have run all the way to this Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy..."

The handsome youth smiled and said, "Is this your escape?"

Luo Li's jade-like hand slowly gripped the Luo Shen Sword tightly as her expression grew even more cold and frosty.

"That's right, I've forgot to introduce myself. My name's Xue Shi. A member of the Blood God's Royal Clan," the handsome youth faintly bowed forward, appearing modest and cultured. However, the unconcealable aura of blood radiating from him caused people to feel wary and vigilant.

Like the Luo God Clan, the Blood God Clan was one of the four God Clans in the Western Heaven World.

The person in front of them had unexpectedly come from the same place as Luo Li.

"Xue Shi? I've never heard of such a name within the Blood God's Royal Clan. Looks like your status within the Blood God Clan isn't high, right?" said Luo Li in a cold and detached voice as she stared at the handsome youth in front of her.

Hearing her reply, a cold glint flashed within the blood red eyes of the handsome youth. With an increasingly thick smile, he replied, " If I'm able to capture you, my status would naturally be different."

"By yourself?" gripping her long sword tightly, Luo Li slowly spoke out.

"Haha, being able to be crowned as the next 'Luo Empress' by Luo Tianshen, naturally, I dare not show any contempt towards you. However, your age is, after all, too young, and you've not even received a single inheritance..." replied Xue Shi has he licked his lip, while his blood-red pupils stared at Luo Li. At this moment, a thick bloody light erupted from his palms, radiating with bloodthirsty fluctuations.

"As for me, I've already received the inheritance once. Therefore... you have to be careful, and don't get killed by me. Otherwise, you're Luo God Clan will truly be finished."

"You don't have to worry about that," replied Luo Li indifferently.

Xue Shi responded with a smile. However, there was not the slightest bit of laughing intent within his eyes. In the next instant, he took a step forward. Bloody Spiritual Energy that blotted the skies gushed out from him, and the originally bright skies were instantly dyed blood-red.

Thick auras of fresh blood rippled and undulated across the heavens and earth.

The fluctuations of that boundless Spiritual Energy was unexpectedly more tyrannical than Liu Zheng's!

These fluctuations seemed to already be at the brink of reaching Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phase!

This fellow was even more formidable than Liu Zheng.

The expressions of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy student masses had also violently contorted at this moment, while shock erupted from within their eyes. No one would have guessed that there would actually be a person within the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy that was even stronger that Liu Zheng!

Graveness had also flooded the expressions of Su Xuan and the rest. This Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy truly had the intent to give their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy a fierce kick to the face.

"When did the people of the Blood God Clan run into the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy?" At the chief podium, Dean Tai Cang stared at Xue Shi, before casually asking this.

"Haha, isn't your Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy the same? Nowadays, our Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy can be considered to have some fame and reputation. Even some of those strong clans are willing to let their members come to our spiritual academy to train and cultivate..." replied Fei Qingsong with a beaming smile.

Dean Tai Cang did not respond with any comment. However, he thought, For the sake of raising their fame and reputation, the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy really did whatever they could...

The Hall Master of the Punishment Hall, Mo You had also wrinkled his forehead. This Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy truly was somewhat undiscriminating.

However, being the overlords of the north, there's nothing they could say, but only hope that Luo Li would be able to stabilise the situation. However, dealing with that member of the Blood God Clan seemed to be easier said than done...

On the square, Luo Li's eyes faintly narrowed. If this Xue Shi's strength was to progress one step further, he would be able to break through to Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phase. Furthermore, his Spiritual Energy was even stronger than Liu Zheng's.

From the perspective of stages, he and Liu Zheng were both at the Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase. However, Luo Li knew that Liu Zhen was absolutely not Xue Shi's match. After all, regardless of their appearance of strength, Xue Shi was a member of the Blood God's Royal Clan...

Therefore, the latter was not someone that Liu Zheng could compare to.

"Luo Li, let me see exactly how formidable the next Empress of the Luo God Clan is," said Xue Shi as he locked his blood-red eyes on Luo Li, while the smile at the corner of his mouth grew increasingly bloodthirsty.

Luo Li's charming face grew increasingly frosty as the boundless quantity of swift and fierce Sword Aura rushed to the skies once again.

Whoosh! Whoosh!

As the Sword Aura that blotted the skies converged, the sword river condensed once again. Obviously, Luo Li did not have any intent to show any mercy. Upon launching her attack, she had used her killing move.

"Wanting to use a single sword to deal with me? Haha! Let us see, exactly who's single move is superior!"

With a sinister smile, a chilling light erupted from the blood-red eyes of Xue Shi. In the next instant, his figure explosively shot forward as a Blood Aura that blotted the skies immediately surged forth. Akin to a sea of blood, they hid the skies and covered the earth as they swept towards Luo Li.

As Luo Li's jade-like hand faintly trembled, her charming figure shot out similarly at the same time, while the sword river howled as it swept out. Seemingly merging together, a sword light that carried along a swift and fierce Sword Aura surged out, splitting the horizon apart.

This sword of hers appeared to contain a much thicker and colder killing intent than her previous one.

Seeing this spectacle unfolding before them, everyone opened their eyes wide. Both parties had no intention of warming up. Upon taking action, they had planned to use their killing moves to inflict serious injuries to one another!

"Sword of the Blood Sea!"

The sea of blood and the sword river seemingly collided together in an instant. As the two incomparably violent and explosive attacks collided, within the sea of blood, Xue Shi gave a sudden cold roar. With a clench of his palm, a longsword that seemed to be forged from fresh blood had

condensed within. Bringing along a torrential Blood Aura, he thrusted his sword out.

Ding!

As the sea of blood and the sword river pervaded out, the two longswords furiously collided against each other.

The earth below the two cracked and shattered, while distortions seemingly appeared in the air.

The two longswords vibrated intensely as their tips pressed against one another, with one side filled with boundless Spiritual Energy, while the other being filled with erratic bloodthirstiness. Two Sword Auras that were similarly filled with extremely strong destructiveness smashed against one another. The devastation brought forth instantly caused deep fissures to form on the earth around them.

As Xue Shi's arm violently shook, his blood-red eyes sparkled, while a sinister smile rose from the corner of his mouth.

Suddenly, the sea of blood behind him churned and roll, before transforming into a screen of blood. Within the screen of blood, there seemed to be a pair of soldiers condensed from fresh blood as they howled and exited. At the back of the powerful current were gigantic cities. Those cities were sparkling with gigantic lightning flags, where a golden-coloured dazzling word was present.

Luo

As the current of blood surged forth, those cities were instantly destroyed. Countless people turned into bloody waters under the current, while mournful cries of despair rang out from within.

"Luo Li, take a look! As of now, the territories of your Luo God Clan are continuously being devoured. Those citizens that have worshipped your Luo God Clan are continuously being bathed by blood!" roared Xue Shi with a sinister smile. With a demonic sound, the laughter rushed toward Luo Li.

Seeing the images of bloody seas within the screen of blood, Luo Li's

mind violently shook, while a distressed mood rushed towards her mind, causing her Sword Aura to collapse.

At the moment when her Sword Aura collapsed, Luo Li was able to sense and understand that her opponent was disrupting her mind. This was the method that the Blood God Clan was the most adept at.

However, at this moment, she was already a step too late.

"Haha, you're too tender, after all."

Said Xue Shi with a sinister chuckle. At the instant where the Sword Aura that completely surrounded Luo Li faintly weakened, the blood sword in his hand instantly erupted with a Blood Aura that blotted the skies. As the sword light howled further, it pierced through Luo Li's defenses, causing the blood light to impact against her delicate figure.

Whoosh!

Luo Li's delicate figure instantly flew out. However, at that very instant, with a raise of her jade-like hand, a ray of sword light pierced through Xue Shi's shoulder at lightning speed.

As the Sword Aura devastated the surroundings, the two figures flew out.

Luo Li's body landed directly out of the square. Descending, her charming face was filled with a slightly frosty expression, while blood flowed along her slender jade-like fingers before dripping onto the ground.

On the square, Xue Shi had stabilised his body. A sword slash was present on his shoulder, with fresh blood staining his robes. However, he did not give the slightest care about his injury. As a blood light erupted out, the blood around his shoulder completely retracted within his body. Even his injury was rapidly healing itself.

"Haha, Empress Luo is truly soft-hearted. Only such a scene is able to shake your mind and concentration. In the future, when you're in charge of the Luo God Clan, how can that be a good thing?"

A smirk appeared on Xue Shi's handsome face as he stared at Luo Li, who was sent flying off of the square with ridiculement in his eyes.

Continuing his statement, he said, " One cannot have such compassion if one wants to become the ruler of a clan."

Luo Li's charming face instantly turned cold as she gripped her longsword tightly. If not for Xue Shi's method that had shook her mind and disrupted her concentration, it was absolutely not possible for him to force her off the square.

"Shameless!" Roars of fury and anger instantly erupted from the side of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy students. This Xue Shi was too despicable! He had actually used such an underhanded method!

However, facing their condemning roars, Xue Shi did not give the slightest bit of care. With a ridiculing smile, he said, "Victory and defeat has been decided for his match. If there are still students of your Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy that are not convinced, you can come up by all means. By then, you'll be able to clearly understand whether I've only those few means and methods."

The expressions of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy students turned ashen in anger as they thought, This Xue Shi is simply more repulsive and abominable than the previous one, Liu Zheng.

However, although they were angry and furious, at this time, almost all of the elite students of their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had already taken action. Even Luo Li, who had demonstrated her extraordinary skill and talent, had been forced off the square by Xue Shi. According to the rules, she had already lost the qualifications to continue fighting.

Therefore, aside from feeling angry and furious, there was no one that could step out from their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. All of their faces appeared extremely sullen as they thought, If only one of the Top Three ranks on the Heavenly Rankings were here! We'd like to see if these fellows would be that rampant then!

"I know that the Top Three ranks on the so-called 'Heavenly Rankings' of your Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy aren't here. Since that's the case, I'll give you all a chance. For three days, we'll be right here. Within

these three days, you guys can try all you want to call them back."

A mocking arc rose from the corner of Xue Shi's mouth as he said, "Naturally, as long as they truly dare to appear..."

Upon saying those words, he did not continue waiting. Turning around, he proceeded to leave the square.

However, just as Xue Shi had turned around, at the chief podium, a faint smile suddenly surfaced on the face of Dean Tai Cang. Standing by his side, Fei Qingsong also seemed to have sensed something, since he had knitted his brows together.

Humm. Humm.

The space above the northern square started to distort and warp, while peals of thunder seemed to ring out from within.

This sudden spectacle immediately attracted the attention of everyone as shocked and startled gazes panned over.

Xue Shi's footsteps had also froze as his blood-red eyes faintly narrowed. Raising his head, he stared at the distorted space. From there, lightning lights sparkled around as a thin figure slowly walked out from within.

Following the appearance of the figure, peals of thunder seemingly resounded across the skies as familiar Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiated across the heavens and earth.

Feeling those Spiritual Energy fluctuations, countless Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy students furiously rose from their seats while unconcealable joy and surprise erupted from their eyes.

These fluctuations... they're Mu Chen's!

He had finally appeared!

Chapter 345: Appearance

In the air above the northern square.

As the space distorted into a whirlpool shape, a thin figure slowly walked out from within. At the moment when it stepped out, Spiritual Energy fluctuations that felt familiar and tyrannical to everyone rippled and undulated across the stretch of world.

"Mu Chen!"

At this moment, the eyes of countless Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy students were all wide open as ecstasy uncontrollably erupted from within. Those Spiritual Energies were too familiar to them.

"Mu Chen's arrived!"

"He's finally here?"

"It's good now! Let's see if those fellows from the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy dare to continue being that rampant!"

Earth-shatteringly passionate and fervent voices rang out around the northern square as everyone's faces were brimming with joy and surprise. As of now, Mu Chen's reputation and prestige were no weaker than Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong. When the latter two were not at the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, Mu Chen's prestige was obviously the greatest.

During the final fight of the Hunting War that day, he had thoroughly cemented himself at the apex position within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

That position was something that even He Yao was unable to strive for.

"This fellow... he's finally appeared..." Su Xuan and the rest felt as though a heavy rock had been lifted off their backs. Mu Chen's appearance had undeniably given every student a dose of adrenaline.

Beside her, He Yao's expression started to waver between cloudy and clear. However, in the end, he did not say anything out loud. As of now,

regardless of prestige or strength, Mu Chen was already above him, Even though he was unresigned, there was nothing that he could do.

Within the square, Xue Shi stared at the figure that had stepped out from the spatial whirlpool across the horizon with faintly narrowed eyes. From the passionate and fervent voices that rang out of his surroundings, he was able to realise the identify of the latter.

This is Mu Chen, 3rd Rank on the Heavenly Rankings?

After realising that, a cold laugh rang out from Xue Shi. Indeed, he wanted to see exactly how capable the 3rd Rank on the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's Heavenly Rankings was to actually inspire such confidence in them.

The entire square was enveloped by this passionate and fervent atmosphere. This caused Mu Chen, who had appeared in the air, to faintly feel some bafflement. Just an instant ago, he had just exited his long and deep state of training...

However, after leaving his training state of mind, without even having the opportunity to say his thanks to the bald old man, the latter had shattered and cracked space apart, before throwing him in.

Therefore, he had appeared at this location.

"What's the matter?"

Mu Chen muttered with a slightly wrinkled forehead as he looked towards the northern square below him. After undergoing closed-state training for over a month, there shouldn't be any big incidents happening in the academy, right? Why was it so lively down there?

Mu Chen's gaze swept across the northern square below him. In the next instant, a chill suddenly erupted from within his eyes.

He had spotted Luo Li standing below the square. Currently, eye-piercing blood was dripping from the latter's jade-like hands.

Luo Li's injured?

A wave of anger flashed within Mu Chen's eyes as his figure instantly

shot forward, before appearing before Luo Li. Faintly frowning, he asked in a low and deep voice, "What happened?"

Upon seeing the appearance of Mu Chen, a shadow of happiness flashed within Luo Li's eyes. Gently wiping away the blood stains on her hand, she replied with a faint smile, "It's just a small injury, nothing of any importance."

"Who did it?" Mu Chen asked in a deep voice. As of now, there were not that many people who dare to provoke them within this Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, right? Could it be He Yao? Hadn't that fellow fought enough?

"I did it." At this moment, an indifferent voice rang out from close by.

Slowly turning around, Mu Chen looked towards the square, and imprinted the youth with blood-red eyes, who was clad in blood-red robes and standing with his hands behind his back, within his eyes.

"Who are you?" Mu Chen asked while his forehead faintly wrinkled up. The person before him was extremely unfamiliar, and he had never seen such a person within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy before.

Whoosh!

From a short distance away, Su Xuan shot over, before descending beside Mu Chen. In a low voice, she explained the whole story of what happened to him. As she continued her recount, Mu Chen's expression grew increasingly ugly.

This was especially so the moment when he heard that the youth with blood-red eyes before him had used such a despicable method to cause Luo Li to lose her concentration, injuring her shoulder and forcing her out of the square. As of now, the expression on his face was as dark and overcast as a thunderstorm.

"Sorry. We've originally planned to not let Luo Li get entangled with this. However, we truly had no one else to rely on. Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong had temporarily left the academy, while you have been missing..." said Su Xuan with some regret.

"Senior Sister Su Xuan, I'm also a student of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Protecting its name is also my duty," Luo Li's voice gently interrupted Su Xuan's apology.

Mu Chen nodded his head faintly, while his originally dark and overcast expression slowly returned to calmness at this moment. With a soft voice, he said, "You two step back of first. Next, let me take over."

Seeing that Mu Chen was that calm, while having such chilling intent gushing out from his voice, Su Xuan and Luo Li both knew that the former had become angry. Next, he would take action.

"Careful, he's a member of the Blood God Clan, one of the four God Clans in the Western Heavenly World," reminded Luo Li. Although this Xue Shi had used some despicable methods, anyone who neglected his strength due to this might have to pay serious consequences.

Hearing her reminder, Mu Chen gently nodded his head. Blood God Clan, huh? Although they're influential fellows, they didn't have the qualifications to extend to such a place. Since they'd extended to such a place, Mu Chen didn't mind to chopping this extension off.

Due to Luo Li, Mu Chen did not have the slightest bit of favorable impressions towards the other three God Clans in the Western Heavenly World.

Luo Li and Su Xuan proceeded to retreat, leaving Mu Chen alone, standing in the square. Upon seeing this scene, the atmosphere within the students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy instantly flared up and became more fervent.

"Brother Mu, beat that wretch to death!"

"Make them scram out of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy with their tails between their legs!

"... "

Various kinds of voices and words rushed towards the sky. Those students from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy all appeared to be psyched up, since all of them appeared to be emotional and excited.

The students of the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy looked at each other. Obviously, they had never imagined that the students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, who had all looked sullen and were about to die, would change and have such confidence.

Could it be due to that youth by the name of Mu Chen?

They casted their doubtful gazes towards the youth, who was slowly walking towards the square. He's that young? At that age, he obviously didn't have the look of an elite student that had a bountiful experience.

On the chief podium, Fei Qingsong faintly narrowed his eyes as he stared at the figure of the youth. With a smile, he said, "Is this Mu Chen person the 3rd Rank on your Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's Heavenly Rankings? However, his strength...seems to be far from enough."

With his eyesight, he was naturally able to tell that the current Mu Chen had not even reached the stage of Heavenly Completion Stage. Seemingly more than half of the Top Ten ranks of the Heavenly Rankings were even stronger than him.

With a faint smile, Dean Tai Cang replied, "There are times when looking only at the cover would cause one to suffer a crushing defeat."

"Oh?"

Fei Qingsong's eyebrows jumped, before saying with a smile, "Then, I really have to see exactly what capabilities this Mu Chen has...he's the 3rd Rank on the Heavenly Rankings, right? Haha. Dean Tai Cang, if you are to lose again, you might not be able to say anything more. As for Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, I think that Xue Shi and their group would compare notes with them in the future..."

Hearing his words, Dean Tai Cang smiled, without saying anything in response, and cast his gaze that was filled with interest towards the youth on the square. As of now, the latter seemed to be much more stronger than a month ago. However, he did not know if this time, would the latter be able to fill the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy with shock once again?

Under the fervent atmosphere, as well as the doubtful gazes of the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy, Mu Chen walked onto the square and stood at a distance not far from Xue Shi. At this moment, those pair of black eyes radiated with an indifferent chilling glint.

"The 3rd Rank of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy doesn't seem to be as strong as I've expected," said Xue Shi as he stared at Mu Chen. He was unable to feel any Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiating from the latter's body that was comparable to his own.

"You should not have injured her," said Mu Chen slowly as his pupils faintly drooped down.

"Oh?"

Xue Shi's eyebrows were faintly raised up. Staring at Mu Chen with his blood-red eyes, he smiled and said, "She truly is very formidable. If she used her true power, even I might not be her match. However, she's still somewhat too soft-hearted. Even I am easily able to shake her mind...That is her weakness."

"Therefore, I'll have you pay some price for that." Mu Chen seemed to not care about Xue Shi's voice. Minding his own business, his voice softly rang out.

"Haha..."

Xue Shi gave a smile, one that contained thick bloodthirstiness. Tilting his head to stare at Mu Chen, he replied, "Just based on you? Who do you think you are?!"

As his last words rang out, the smile on Xue Shi's face had completely disappeared, being replaced by a cold and sinister expression. He dreaded Luo Li, and, therefore, used that underhand method against her. However, who did the fellow in front of him think he was...daring to be pretentious in front of him!

"You're looking to die!"

The blood-red colour within Xue Shi's eyes intensified, as blood-red Spiritual Energy that blotted the skies swept out from him. A thick smell

of blood permeated the skies, while strong Spiritual Energy pressure came enveloping over. Compared to before, this was even stronger.

Obviously, this Xue Shi already had the intent to kill.

Outside of the square, Su Xuan and the rest had grave expressions on their faces. The strength of this Xue Shi seemed to be even stronger than Gu Tianyan by a sliver. They truly didn't know exactly how Mu Chen would deal with him. After all, this time won't be a friendly comparison of notes, like last time.

For the sake of achieving victory in this fight, both sides would use any methods.

Whoosh!

Under the pressure from the blood-red Spiritual Energy that blotted the skies, Mu Chen slowly exhaled a clump of white air. Raising his head, black lightning seemed to gush out from the depths of his black eyes.

Abruptly clenching his fists tightly, Spiritual Energy similarly erupted from his body without the slightest restraint.

Boom!

Burning with black flames, Spiritual Energy akin to smoke plumes gushed out and rushed across the horizon. Pervading out, without caring about the pressure coming from the blood-red Spiritual Energy, it shot straight up like a pillar of light, with nothing that could shake it.

Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase!

Clamoring instantly arose from the entire square, with the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy students gawking and feeling shocked first. In the next moment, mocking arcs appeared, bit by bit, on the corners of their mouths.

How exactly did someone become the 3rd Rank of the Heavenly Rankings with such strength?

Their gazes turned to mockery and ridicule as they looked towards the students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. However, to their

surprise, they saw that the students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy were using mocking gazes to stare back at them, as though rejoining in the misfortune that was about to befall the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy students.

This group of idiots. They dared to even send a Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase person up. They're truly asking for trouble...

"This group of morons...when Mu Chen was at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase, he's already able to fight equally with Senior Brother Gu Tianyan...

The silent words in the students' hearts erupted out at this moment. However, no one spoke them out. As of now, the atmosphere was subtly causing people to feel comical.

Chapter 346: Divine Seal of the Vermillion Bird

Two boundless and tyrannical Spiritual Energies rippled and undulated across the air above the northern square. As the Spiritual Energies pressed against each other, a hurricane seemed to have formed, crazily blowing across this stretch of the world.

"Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase..."

A dark and chilling glow surfaced within Xue Shi's blood-red eyes. Staring at Mu Chen, whose Spiritual Energy had completely erupted, the sinister arc on the corner of his mouth grew increasingly thick. His feelings were indeed correct. That fellow in front of him, Mu Chen, simply hadn't broken into the Heavenly Completion Stage.

Where exactly did this fellow at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase get the courage to jump and hop around in front of him?

Xue Shi, who had never experienced Mu Chen's astonishing road of combat results, wouldn't know. Similarly, those students from the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy would also not know...

However, the students from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy knew.

Bang!

Without wasting any more time talking nonsense, Xue Shi did not care whether the person in front of him, Mu Chen, was truly formidable or just acting pretentiously. As long as he took action, he would naturally come to know. Therefore, taking a step out, he started to form a hand seal. In the next instant, a blood-red glowing Spiritual Energy that lingered across the horizon gushed out. Instantly, the smell of blood reeked out, before transforming into a gigantic hand print that descended from the sky.

Bang! Rumble!

As the blood waves gushed out, the bloody handprint howled as it

descended, causing even the air to be pressed to the point of exploding, while a gigantic hand impression formed on the earth below Mu Chen.

This move by Xue Shi had made the expressions of quite a few people turn grave. Previously, against Luo Li, his attacks were too vicious, resulting in people simply unable to understand how strong he was in those brief glimpses. However, after truly revealing his extraordinary strength, everyone finally knew that his strength of being exceedingly close to Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phase was not baseless.

Bang!

Raising his head up, Mu Chen looked towards the bloody handprint that was about to press down on him. Spiritual Energy burning with black flames spread out like a sea of fire. In the next instant, a starry sky surfaced behind him, before a white tiger treaded the air and appeared.

Four Divine Constellations Scripture, White Tiger Divine Seal!

Mu Chen's fist rumbled out as the White Tiger Divine Seal transformed into a black streaking fiery meteor. Splitting the horizon apart, it smashed head-on against the bloody handprint.

Bang!

Incomparably erratic Spiritual Energies impacted one another, before surging out across the horizon. As the gigantic Spiritual Energy shock wave spread out, the earth instantly cracked and fissured. Despite this, the two figures within the square stood firmly and majestically, without moving a bit.

To them, this kind of shock wave didn't create the slightest bit of sway.

As the Spiritual Energy fluctuations within the square slowly dissipated, everyone got a glimpse of the earth, which had already cracked and fissured into little pieces. Panning their gazes towards the two figures that had yet to move, their expressions turned grave.

A gentle breeze blew by, swirling up the broken pieces of rock, causing them to flutter in the air.

As the two figures within the square interlocked their gazes, black pupils and blood-red pupils, a chillingly cold shadow abruptly flashed from within.

Bang!

The two of them seemingly moved at the same time, akin to two streaks of light shooting out. Heading towards the middle of the expansive square, they smashed head-on against each other.

Black flames and the bloody light rushed towards the sky, each filling their half of the horizon.

At the point of contact between the black flames and the bloody light were two figures sending their shadowed fists howling out. Carrying along churning Spiritual Energies, they smashed against one another.

Remnant shadows appeared as the two figures continued with their exchange. Akin to the collapse of mountains, low and deep sounds of fists and legs colliding rang out, bringing along with them extremely heavy sensations of strength. The two of them had unexpectedly chosen the most violent and vicious way of bare-handed combat.

This was an extremely eye-stimulating way of combat.

Everyone's gazes were firmly locked onto the two indistinct figures within the square, as erratic Spiritual Energy continuously erupted from them like storms, before violently smashing into each other.

As the two figures continued their successive exchanges, wave after wave of Spiritual Energy shock waves extended out, smashing and splitting the earth apart.

Whoosh!

In the earliest moments of this confrontation, the figure burning in black flames appeared to be somewhat suppressed, as the blood-red glowing Spiritual Energy eruptions were having the absolute superiority. This made many students from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy clench their fists tightly.

Fortunately, however, their worries did not last for very long. After being suppressed time after time, the figure clad in black flames grew increasingly brilliant, while his attacks gradually became more violent and vicious. At the end, the pressurising situation was completely broken.

Bang!

The two figures continued their exchange as their fist winds violently slammed against each other, causing the ground they were standing on to collapse. This caused them to retreat, skidding on the earth as they drew back hundreds of metres, leaving behind long marks.

Countless people held their breaths in silence, not even daring to inhale loudly.

Those few students from the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy were totally dumbfounded. This was the first time they'd ever seen someone who's able to fight equally with Xue Shi in such an intense brawl. Furthermore... Xue Shi's current opponent was only at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase. In the past, when he had faced opponents of that stage, he would seemingly dominate and achieve victory.

At the front ranks of the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy students, a grave expression was present on Liu Zheng's face. Looking at the figure of the youth in the distance, he thought, This 3rd Rank on the Heavenly Rankings is truly formidable...

Liu Zheng was not weak; therefore, he was naturally able to clearly see the entire process of this bout of an exchange. At the beginning, Xue Shi seemed to always be the one that initiated the offensive. Mu Chen was somewhat in the disadvantage with his initial defense. However, as time went by, this disadvantage became smaller and smaller. The latter had started to become increasingly proficient with the control over his strength. At the end, there was not much of a difference between the two, with neither one being able to even gain a bit of superiority.

At this moment, on the opposite side of Liu Zheng, Su Xuan and the rest quietly sighed in relief.

"He's familiarising himself with the sudden increase in energy within his body."

Luo Li explained in a soft voice. She was too familiar with Mu Chen, after all. Previously, he had clearly used Xue Shi to help himself break in the sudden increase in strength due to his closed up training. This was the reason why he was being suppressed at the beginning of the fight. However, once had managed to gain total control the strength in his body, the violent and vicious Mu Chen of the past was clearly back.

Su Xuan and the rest all nodded their heads. In any case, Mu Chen had dared to engage in a fierce fight with Gu Tianyan when his strength was at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase. As if it would be easy for him to be suppressed by Xue Shi.

"You've some ability."

On the expansive square, a dark and overcast shadow erupted on the handsome face of Xue Shi. Staring tightly at Mu Chen, he had finally understood why Mu Chen was able to become the 3rd Rank on the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's Heavenly Rankings. Although the latter was at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase, his Spiritual Energy was somewhat strange. Furthermore, his fleshly body seemed to also be very strong. No wonder why the latter had such confidence.

"However, even if you rely on those, I'm afraid that you'll still be unable to safely walk away from here!"

A chilling intent erupted from within Xue Shi's blood-red eyes. The true combat capability of this Mu Chen had truly exceeded the outward appearance of his strength. However, wanting to rely on that to defeat him would truly be too naive.

"Blood God's Art, Blood River Piercing Heavens!"

Xue Shi's body shot towards the sky. With a pat of his palm, a bloody light that blotted the skies converged over, before transforming into a churning river of blood. As the river of blood snaked around him, it appeared akin to a blood dragon, while an astonishing aura of blood radiated from it.

"Suppress!"

Xue Shi roared furiously, sending his palm patting out. Carrying along with an extremely astonishing and tyrannical power, the churning river of blood, condensed from the boundless Spiritual Energy, pressed straight towards Mu Chen.

Everyone was able to tell that Xue Shi had already planned to use his true strength to deal with Mu Chen once and for all.

However, Mu Chen wasn't someone that he could suppress just like that. Although this Xue Shi might be stronger and even more overbearing that Gu Tianyan by a sliver, the current Mu Chen could be said to have grown more tyrannical by a number of times since the Hunting War.

"This time, it isn't your turn to suppress others!"

Mu Chen's figure explosively retreated, before forming a seal using his hands that caused people to feel dazzled. In the next instant, churning Spiritual Energy burning with black flames akin to flooding waters erupted from him.

A starry sky started to condense behind him, once again. As the black flames rippled, an extremely astonishing Spiritual Energy fluctuation rushed to the skies.

Screeee!

A clear and resonant cry resounded out. In the next moment, a giant fiery-red bird emerged from within the starry sky. The giant bird was clad in burning flames, making it appear like a Divine Beast living within fire. With a flap of its wings, the temperature of the entire stretch of the world instantly rose explosively. Even the surrounding space started to distort due to the heat radiating from it.

"That is..."

As Su Xuan and the rest looked towards the giant fiery-red bird that emerged from the starry sky, all of their expressions were in faint shock.

"Four Gods Constellation Scripture, Divine Seal of the Vermillion Bird!"

With an expressionless face, Mu Chen furiously sent his palm patting out. In the next instant, the starry sky behind him shattered and collapsed. Flapping its extremely magnificent flaming wings, the giant fiery-red bird brought forth a terrifying temperature that was sufficient to raze the heavens and earth. Under the countless gazes from the surroundings, it viciously slammed against the torrential river of blood heading towards him.

Following Mu Chen's increase in strength, the Four Gods Constellation Scripture's Divine Seal of the Vermillion Bird became increasingly tyrannical. The control he had over this Divine Art could be said to have increasingly neared perfection!

Chi! Chi!

As the two forces smashed head-on, the river of blood instantly erupted with a bloody mist that filled the skies. Unexpectedly, the river of blood that was condensed from the boundless Spiritual Energy was being dispelled at an astonishing rate.

At this moment, the expression on Xue Shi's face finally had some changes. His river of blood was created from Spiritual Energy. Even if it was tossed within a sea of fire, nothing would happen to it. However, before his eyes, it was actually being burnt down and destroyed by his opponent's giant bird.

Exactly what kind of Divine Art did his opponent use?

"Suppress!"

Regardless of that, Mu Chen did not give him much time to ponder and think. With a cold and frosty expression on his face, Mu Chen gave a backhanded slap. In the next instant, a blazing inferno erupted from the Vermillion Bird. Sweeping out, it immediately evaporated the river of blood away.

Screech!

After evaporating the river of blood away, without dissipating, the Vermillion Bird transformed into a fiery-red streak of light and split the

horizon apart. Finally, under Xue Shi's rapidly contorting gaze, it violently impacted against his body.

Bang!

Flames instantly erupted across the horizon, appearing extremely dazzling.

Countless students from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy started to loudly cheer. Mu Chen's counterattack was so beautifully done that there's not a single thing that people could fret about. In contrast, as for the students from the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy, their faces were somewhat pale, while no longer having the provocative looks on their faces.

"Formidable..." Unable to resist, Su Xuan and the rest sighed out in admiration.

Contrary to them, Luo Li raised her lovable face and stared fixedly at the place where flames permeated its entirety, while her eyebrows started to knit.

Mu Chen had also raised his head. Black lightning flashed within his black eyes as he stared at the place where the flames were raging. At this moment, his indifferent voice resounded out.

"If you're unable to even block this move, I think it's best that you scram out of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy."

Hearing Mu Chen's words, all of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy students were stunned. Unexpectedly, that Xue Shi hadn't been defeated yet?

Countless gazes swept across the horizon towards the place burning with flames. As of now, the flames had truly started to dissipate, bit by bit. In the next moment, everyone was able to see a figure that was wrapped within a blood-red armor. Like a god of slaughter, it slowly appeared within the sky.

At this moment, the smell of blood within this stretch of the world seemed to become increasingly thick.

Chapter 347: Blood God's Armor

As the aura reeked in blood pervaded out across the sky, everyone's gaze had converged in the air. There, as the flames shrunk and disappeared, a figure clad in a blood-coloured armor appeared before their eyes.

This blood-coloured armor appeared extremely malevolent and sinister, while its blood-like colour was extremely eye-catching, making it appear as though it was condensed from blood. The surface of the armor was covered with pointy spikes that were incomparably sharp. With a single look, one could tell that they contained astonishing killing power.

There were also many groups of mysterious runes glowing and sparkling, and permeating with traces of malevolence.

This armor was completely like an outstanding weapon for killing people.

It was malevolent and reeked of blood.

As Luo Li stared at the blood armor, her pupils started to contract. With a soft voice, she muttered out, "He's actually produced a Blood God's Armor..."

"Blood God's Armor?" Su Xuan and the rest voiced out in doubt. Obviously, this was foreign and unfamiliar to them. Although, they were similarly able to sense how frightening that blood armor was.

"It's a unique cultivation technique of the Blood God Clan. It's able to allow one to refine one's body and blood into the shape of armor. This would lead to a great increase to one's fighting strength. At the same time, both offense and defense would be strengthened."

Luo Li explained in a soft voice, "With Xue Shi's strength, once he activates that Blood God Armor, even if he was to face against a person at the Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phase, he would still be able to put up a fight."

After hearing up to that point, Su Xuan and the rest's expressions faintly change. Indeed, to actually possess such skills and hidden cards, this Xue

Shi was undeniably a member of the Blood God Clan.

"Then, Mu Chen..." Su Xuan voiced out with some worry.

Contrary to her, looking at the thin figure in the square, Luo Li gave a faint smile. Confidence that was even more than Mu Chen could muster was present within those clear, limpid pupils of her as she replied, "He will not lose."

Seeing Luo Li's response, Su Xuan did not continue asking anymore. Indeed, although this Xue Shi was not easy to deal with, was Mu Chen ever a simple person? Ever since he entered the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, there wasn't a single person that could truly really suppress this ferocious tiger that was starting to reveal its towering and outstanding ability...

Although this Xue Shi was formidable, within the eyes of Su Xuan and the rest, this still might not be enough!

Within the square, where countless gazes had converged, Mu Chen was also staring at the blood armor-clad Xue Shi floating in the air, while a minute trace of astonishment flashed similarly within his eyes. Obviously, he had also detected the unusualness of that blood armor.

"This Blood God Clan... They truly do have some unique aspects..."

"Being able to force me to summon this Blood God's Armor out, you're not considerably bad." Within the air, Xue Shi lowered his head while sending his cold and sinister gaze at Mu Chen. As his low and deep voice rang out, a stench that reeked of blood pervaded out.

"Once the Blood God's Armor is summoned, it needs to be soak in the enemy's blood..." Saying that, Xue Shi slowly clenched his fist tightly. Waves of blood gushed out from his body, causing the sky to be incomparably stained in a bloody aura.

"Therefore, I'll use your blood to honor it!"

Bang!

Just as Xue Shi's last word rang out, a chilling light erupted abruptly

from within his blood-red eyes. Taking a step forward, a tearing sound rang out from his body as he shattered through space. In a flash, he appeared before Mu Chen as his fist went rumbling out.

Fresh blood seemed to wriggle and squirm on his malevolent fist, while a frightening fluctuation rippled as it was condensed.

Roar!

However, in the instant when Xue Shi's fist rumbled out, a light erupted similarly out of Mu Chen's body, while the shadow of a dragon seemingly took form. As a dragon roar resounded, a remnant shadow had already appeared at his original position.

Bang!

As Xue Shi's fist descended, a bloody light gushed out, smashing the remnant shadow directly into bits. The ground below it had also collapsed, causing gigantic fissures to rapidly branch out.

At this moment, Mu Chen's figure appeared tens of metres away. Looking at the rapidly extending fissures on the ground, his expression froze for an instant. After summoning that Blood God's Armor, Xue Shi's power had truly risen by a notch.

"You think you can run away!"

As Xue Shi's fist landed on thin air, a ridiculing smile flashed within his eyes. Being bestowed with the Blood God's Armor, not only did it increase his strength, his speed had similarly increased. Mu Chen was simply dreaming trying to escape using his movement technique.

Humm.

A bloody light blossomed from Xue Shi's body. In the next instant, Xue Shi's figure disappeared from where he was at. Like a spectre, the next time he reappeared was right in front of Mu Chen. Bringing along a bloody light, an incomparably vicious fist if wind rumbled out once again.

A faint light flashed within Mu Chen's eyes. Continuing his decision to not confront the current Xue Shi head-on, he activated the "Dragon

Soaring Art". As his speed explosively increased, he swiftly retreated, closely evading the gale that was sufficient to cause serious injuries to a person on the same level as He Yao.

Swish!

However, just as he retreated, Xue Shi's figure followed suit and stuck to him. Fists of wind permeated by bloody lights smashed through the air, causing even space to be shaken to the point of slightly distorting.

Swish! Swish!

Within the expansive square, the two figures had seemingly pushed their speeds to the utmost limit, as remnant shadows appeared one after another. The speed that the two displayed caused countless students to feel dumbfounded.

"So fast." Su Xuan and the rest sighed in admiration. Following the high-speed evasion and pursuit by the two, even they were only able to faintly discern two indistinct figures. Their speed was too fast.

"However, Mu Chen's evading all the way..."

As Su Xuan and the rest focused their gazes towards the square, anyone would be able to tell that the current Mu Chen was being completely suppressed. After summoning the Blood God's Armor, Xue Shi's strength had increased by quite a bit. With such sharp attacks coming from him, even Mu Chen did not dare to casually confront them, with the only thing he could do was to evade.

However, this was not a long term solution...

Furthermore, this would help ignite the flames within those fellows from the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy. As of now, their eyes were already radiating with light, waiting for the instant Mu Chen would make a mistake.

Luo Li was also staring at the square tightly. However, she wasn't as anxious and worried as Su Xuan and the rest. Contrary to them, she was able to sense that although Mu Chen was continuously evading, his movement's weren't frantic and disordered. During his evasions, there was

also quite a pause between them. Obviously, he should be planning something, instead of frantically evading at all directions after being suppressed by Xue Shi.

Although she wasn't too clear as to what Mu Chen was doing, since the latter had decided to do such a thing, naturally, there should be a reason. Being extremely familiar with Mu Chen, she knew that Mu Chen would never do anything that had absolutely no meaning.

At the northern square, countless students from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy were staring tightly at the middle of the square, while a cold sweat covered their palms. The escape and pursuit happening within the square was too astonishing, to the point of shaking their souls. As long as the two made the slightest bit of contact, the result might be earth-shattering.

Right now, everyone was looking at the two figures flashing and darting around like spectres with bated breath.

Bang!

The moment Xue Shi's fist rumbled out, a bloody light smeared across Mu Chen's chest as it headed towards its target. Relying on the impact, the latter retreated explosively once again. However, Xue Shi was able to sense that the Spiritual Energy around Mu Chen had fluctuated for an instant. Obviously, it had been shaken by the aftermath of his blow.

This caused a sinister and cold shadow to flash within Xue Shi's eyes.

Boom!

Boundless blood waves violently gushed out from within Xue Shi's body, before transforming into a pair illusionary blood wings that were faintly discernable. With a flap, his speed dramatically increased once again.

Chi!

Seemingly transforming into a streak of blood-red light, he appeared before Mu Chen in a blink of an eye. From his speed, one could tell that it had risen much, much higher.

"Although your movement technique is mysterious, it's a pity that I've already seen through it!"

As the black pair of eyes interlocked with the blood-red ones, a malevolent smile rose from the corner of Xue Shi's mouth. Previously, although he managed to entangle Mu Chen, he discovered that the latter had learnt a mysterious movement technique. Therefore, he had restrained himself from going all out in an attempt to identify the underlying patterns and key points. After breaking all the mysteries, it was time for him to unleash an all out killing move.

It had to be said that Xue Shi's combat experience was extremely rich. It's no wonder why he could become the person at the apex within the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy.

A chillingly cold expression was present in Mu Chen's eyes as he looked towards Xue Shi, who had gotten very close to him. The latter's aura that reek of blood had already lunged forward. However, there wasn't any anxiousness or frantism expected to be present in the latter's eyes.

"How long are you going to keep up the act in front of me?"

A cold smile flashed within Xue Shi's heart, while a killing intent surged within his eyes. Without the slightest bit of hesitation, he tightly clenched his right hand. As a bloody light encased his fist, a clear and distinct spike that reeked of blood surfaced. It obviously looked like it had sufficient killing power.

The malevolence within Xue Shi's eyes became increasingly thick. With a low and sinister laugh, he sent his fist rumbling out. As the bloody light that's attached to it extended out, a blood seal could be faintly discerned as it formed, while a torrential bloody aura permeated from it.

"Blood God's Armor, Blood God's Spiritual Seal of Destruction!"

Bang!

As a bloody aura gushed out of it, a fist of wind covered in a bloody light that looked akin to a pillar of blood shattered through the air. Under the countless shocked gazes below, it violently rumbled down towards Mu

Chen's head.

From the looks of it, it was sufficient to cause Mu Chen's head to explode.

"Our game has come to an end!" roared Xue Shi as a bloody light radiated from his eyes, while a malevolent and vicious expression covered his entire face.

This fist of his would definitely kill Mu Chen.

As the bloody light rapidly grew bigger in Mu Chen's vision, a cold and sinister arc started to climb at the corner of his mouth. In the next instant, Xue Shi seemed to see a black-coloured lightning bolt crazily flash within the former's eyes.

In fact, black-coloured lightning started to arc across the surface of Mu Chen's body, while seemingly radiating with a destructive flavor.

Bang! Rumble!

A peal of thunder suddenly resounded across the world as black lightning arcs appeared exceeding sudden around Mu Chen's body. Bolts of black lightning twined across his body, while the originally jet-black pair of eyes appeared even more deep and unfathomable.

At this moment, his body seemed to have expanded in size, causing his clothing to rip. Within the ripped seams of his clothing, one could slowly and faintly discern something akin to a lightning mark appearing...

"Your Blood God's Armor... has also been seen through by me..."

"Therefore, it should end right now!"

As the mocking arc grew increasingly higher at the corner of his mouth, Mu Chen clenched his fingers tightly together. Without the slightest bit of hesitation, black lightning bolts arced and danced across his fist, before crazily condensing together. In the next instant, they formed a black-coloured lightning sun within Mu Chen's fist.

Boom!

As Mu Chen's fist rumbled out, under the countless gazes and bated

breaths of everyone, the black lightning sun rumbled violent towards the fist condensed with Xue Shi's full power.

At the next instant, the black lightning and the fist covered in blood smashed violently against each other!

Bang!

An enormous sound resounded as the earth that both of them stood on instantly shattered and exploded.

Chapter 348: A Fist Shattering the Armor

The black lightning and the bloody light shattered the air apart, bring along incomparably rampant fluctuations as they violently collided like two meteors above the square.

Boom!

At the instant of the collision, even the earth seemed to shake intensely for a moment, while the ground within the square immediately collapsed. The black lightning light, as well as the extremely scarlet waves of blood, crazily erupted from within the centre of the square, corroding and trying to obliterate each other.

The ground under the feet of Mu Chen and Xue Shi turned into dust, layer by layer. The hard rock within the ground had seemingly turned into tofu, causing their feet to leave deep gouges within them.

The fist wrapped with a lightning bolt and the fistprint pervaded with blood were deadlocked in the air, while radiating with terrifying fluctuations, causing even the surrounding space to be shaken to the point of forming distortions.

Seeing this, Xue Shi's face turned dark and overcast. The fist that he assumed would end this fight had unexpectedly been completely blocked by Mu Chen with his fleshly body. Furthermore, from the head-on impact of their fists, the latter's black-coloured lightning bolts had actually dissipated some of the bloody aura enveloping his fist.

A considerably frightening power was contained within that black lightning.

"Die for me!"

With a roar, a Bloody Aura torrentially gushed out from within Xue Shi's body. In an instant, his entire arm seemed to be condensed with blood, reeking of blood and was eye-catching, while radiating a thick and intense flavor of blood.

Across him, black lightning seemed to flash within Mu Chen's black

pupils. At this moment, destructive fluctuations started to spread out from his body, while the clothing around his upper body seemed to tear and disintegrate.

Following the disintegration of some of his clothing, one could see a black lightning rune surfacing on his chest.

At this moment, the black lightning rune was sparkling with bits of lightning light, before suddenly lighting up completely.

Thunder God Physique, Mono Rune Lightning Physique!

Relying on his month-plus training, while adding the supplementary effects of the Lightning God's Lotus, Mu Chen's Thunder God Physique had finally reached the true realm of the First Rune!

At the instant when the Lightning Rune lit up completely, Mu Chen's body seemed to become thick and sturdy. Encased in black lightning, he appeared to be a god of lightning that had descended onto the world.

Boom!

As the rumble of thunder intensely shook the air, a lightning bolt erupted from within Mu Chen's eyes as he sent his fist rumbling out.

"Scram!"

Accompanied by a clap of thunder, his explosive roar resounded out. In the next instant, churning with black lightning and radiating within unblockable grandeur, Mu Chen's fist violently rumbled towards the blood-armored fist of Xue Shi.

At the instant of contact, Xue Shi's face finally contorted as he became overwhelmed with shock. He was finally able to sense a frightening amount of power pouring out akin to an avalanche from Mu Chen's fist.

Under that absolute power, his boundless blood-filled Spiritual Energy was smashed back in an instant.

This is bad!

Those words rang out involuntarily within Xue Shi's heart. However, before he was able to even try to think about how Mu Chen's sudden

attack became so frightening, with a move, he had already explosively retreated.

However, why would Mu Chen, having a similarly rich combat experience, give him such a chance? Having endured for quite a long time, and having even activated his Thunder God Physique, he condensed his strongest power and sent blow after blow smashing down on Xue Shi!

Bang!

Therefore, at the instant when Xue Shi had just started to retreat, the power coming from Mu Chen had already smashed against him without any restraint.

Boom!

In the next instant, everyone was able to see black lightning rapidly spreading out all of a sudden at an astonishing speed. At this moment, the Spiritual Energy permeated by the bloody light was completely suppressed by it.

As a fist went rumbling across, black lightning surged forth.

Crack!

The armor covering Xue Shi's fist seemingly shattered in an instant. Those malevolent spikes on it were also completely destroyed by the impact of the black lightning.

The black lightning was akin to a furious dragon that was planning to destroy the heavens and earth, brandishing its claws and opening its mouth, rampaging about without an ounce of fear.

Bang!

The blood armor covering Xue Shi's entire arm was completely shattered, while a mouthful of blood was crazily spurted out by him. Like a stone that was being slapped, he shot backwards, before finally gouging a deep hundred metre long track on the ground.

At this moment, the sudden clap of thunder ringing in the square rapidly disappeared.

Following that, the black lightning and the bloody light had also started to slowly vanish, bit by bit. Nevertheless, the surroundings of the northern square were unexpectedly still in absolute silence, since everyone one was staring blankly at the square, eyes brimming with shock and terror.

In the square, Mu Chen was still maintaining his position with his fist extended out. The ground in front of him had a fissure running hundreds of metres long, with a stretch of ruins present at its end.

He had actually managed to send Xue Shi flying with a single fist!

Not only were the people from the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy dumbfounded, even those students from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, whom had faith and confidence in Mu Chen, had their jaws hanging wide open. The previous scene where Mu Chen had sent Xue Shi flying with his fist truly possessed too much of a shock to their eyes...

"How could that fist be that formidable?!" Su Xuan and the rest had shock similarly present within their eyes. That fist Mu Chen had sent out was absolutely enough to cause serious injuries to even a person of Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase.

"That fellow's strength has increased again..." The faces of the people who had some disputed with Mu Chen, Zhao Qingshan and He Yao, appeared slightly pale. As of now, the gazes they sent towards the former were now filled with a sliver of dread. The current Mu Chen had become even stronger than a month ago.

Unknowingly, this former Freshman, had already gradually surpassed them, and was even leaving them far, far behind.

Within the silence-filled square, gaze after gaze started to turn to the opposite direction of Mu Chen. The ground there had already collapsed. Within the giant pit, a figure was present. Staggering and stumbling, it appeared somewhat miserable as it stood up.

That was Xue Shi. As of now, his body was covered in blood, while his right arm hung lifelessly down, as though its bones were shattered by Mu Chen's fist.

More than half of the Blood God's Armor on Xue Shi's body had already shattered, appearing extremely dim, as though it could dissipate at any time.

Obviously, the frightening attack from Mu Chen had caused considerably serious injuries to him.

"How's this possible...?"

Xue Shi looked in disbelief at his lifeless right arm. His Blood God's Armor was actually destroyed by Mu Chen...that was the Blood God's Armor that was capable of enduring the furious attacks of a Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phase expert...This Mu Chen was only at Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase! How could the latter break apart his Blood God's Armor?

"You've lost."

An indifferent expression filled Mu Chen's eyes as he stared at Xue Shi. At this moment, the latter had already landed outside of the square. According to the rules, he had already lost this fight.

Hearing Mu Chen's words, Xue Shi's face instantly contorted, while fury erupted from his eyes. He was a member of the majestic Blood God's Royal Clan! How could he lose to such a youth of no status and reputation?

"I'll kill you, bastard!"

With a furious clench of his hand, a long spear that appeared to be condensed from blood appeared within his hand. In the next instant, he had unexpectedly shot it out. A cold glint slightly appeared as the long spear within his hand was thrusted straight at Mu Chen's throat.

Whoosh!

Upon seeing that Xue Shi, who had already lost the right to continue battling, had unexpectedly attacked without abiding to the rules, everyone in the surroundings of the square instantly started clamoring, before furiously shouting and cursing out.

Indifference remained in Mu Chen's eyes as he looked at Xue Shi shooting over to him. With his Blood God's Armor broken, the latter's speed had become slower. Added with his serious injuries, he was not insufficient to be a threat.

Swish!

As Mu Chen slightly moved his body, the eyes of Xue Shi contracted abruptly, as the former's figure had already appeared right beside him.

"I've said that since you've hurt her, you'll have to pay the price...now that you've broken the rules first, you can't blame me..."

Now being very close to him, a swift and fierce expression akin to a blade erupted from Mu Chen's handsome face, while a cold and sinister arc rising from the corner of his mouth. Obviously, the intent to kill had surfaced towards the fellow that had injured Luo Li with such despicable methods.

Furthermore, he wasn't person of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Therefore, Mu Chen would not show a shred of mercy.

Feeling the deep killing intent harbored in Mu Chen's words, Xue Shi finally regained his clarity. Shock and terror instantly flashed within his eyes as he thought, This Mu Chen was actually deliberately waiting for me to break the rules?

Only when he broke the rules would Mu Chen be able to unscrupulously attack. Even if the latter truly killed him, Mu Chen would still have an excuse.

"This bastard!"

Chilling intent erupted for Xue Shi's heart as he involuntarily cursed out. In the next moment, he saw Mu Chen's palm print, encased in black lightning, violently descend towards his chest.

The ferocity of that attack was extreme.

"Stop!"

However, just as Mu Chen was about to land his palm on Xue Shi's

chest, an explosive roar abruptly resounded across the horizon. In the next instant, Mu Chen felt an indescribable pressure sweeping out. Under this pressure, his body started to become sluggish.

"Haha, Dean Fei. You've broken the rules by interfering in an exchange between students." However, just as the pressure had enveloped him, a calm and faint sound of laughter rang out, causing the pressure on Mu Chen's body to dissipate completely.

Mu Chen's body had recovered to his usual condition.

As a cold glint flashed within his eyes, his palm landed without any hesitation on Xue Shi's chest. As a clap of thunder resounded out, a slender finger of his suddenly turned into a deep jet-black colour as it silently stabbed out.

Successfully landing his strike, a sensation of danger suddenly erupted out from Mu Chen's heart, causing him to react immediately and shot back out. At that instant, he was able to see a fat figure appearing beside Xue Shi, before grabbing the latter within his hand.

"Such a vicious brat!"

The figure was naturally the Dean of the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy, Fei Qingsong. Looking at Xue Shi, whose aura was faint, his chest collapsed and close to death, his face instantly contorted, before fiercely glaring at Mu Chen.

The Spiritual Energy of the world seemingly condensed into something substantial at this moment, before pressing towards Mu Chen in an attempt to crush him.

Mu Chen instantly felt as though his body had entered into a swamp, while being unable to move. This caused a huge change to his expression. This force was something that he absolutely couldn't offer any resistance against.

However, just as the Spiritual Energy of the world was pressing down on Mu Chen, a majestic and imposing figure appeared before him. With a wave of his sleeve, the pressure that blotted the skies instantly dissipated

like smoke in thin air.

Dean Tai Cang appeared before Mu Chen, while looking calmly at Fei Qingsong in front of him. At this moment, akin to the rumbling of heavenly lightning, his indifferent voice rang out across this stretch of the world, immediately causing even the Spiritual Energy of the world to churn and boil erratically.

"Dean Fei, just because our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy would treat people with respect, do you truly assume that our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy is easily bullied?"

Chapter 349: Untitled

As though carrying the prestige of the heavens and earth, Dean Tai Cang's firm and forceful voice spread out across the entire northern square. Every other sound was being suppressed at this moment. Even the Spiritual Energy fluttering about the world was churning and flaring up.

Out of fear, countless students maintained their silence, while shock and terror filled their faces. At this moment, they were able to feel as though they had lost the control of their bodies, while the Spiritual Energy within their bodies had traces that seemed as though they would rebel at any moment.

If Dean Tai Cang was to slightly release his killing intent, the Spiritual Energy within their bodies might instantly rebel. At that time, without even needing him to take action, they would be tossed around and killed by their own Spiritual Energy.

Therefore, as the students looked at one another, they were able to see the unconcealable shock present in each other's eyes. Was this the strength of Dean Tai Cang? Indeed, it was frightening...

Across from him, a faint change was also present on Fei Qingsong's face. The majority of the strength of Dean Tai Cang's roar had headed straight towards him. While others viewed it as a roar, within his eyes, it was akin to a roar from a furious dragon, brimming within frightening fluctuations.

This sound wave attack that was unable to be detected by others caused even him to feel a heart full of graveness.

The fatty flesh on Fei Qingsong's face shook, before his gaze turned sharp and fierce. With a wave of his sleeve, the space fluctuations caused the sound waves coming from the roar to be completely blocked. Lowering his head, he shot a look at Xue Shi, whom he had grabbed in his hand. At this moment, the latter had already fainted from his serious injuries. Those injuries were serious to the point of sending a shiver across his face. Obviously, the injuries that Xue Shi had received were extremely serious.

That Mu Chen had clearly wanted to take his life.

"Dean Tai Cang, we've come from afar to your place. However, this student of your academy is so vicious. Won't he lose the face of your great academy?" Fei Qingsong questioned in a deep voice. All in all, he did not dare to shed all pretense of cordiality with Dean Tai Cang at this place. Firstly, this was the territory of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Secondly, being able to become one of the Deans of the Five Great Academies, how could Dean Tai Cang have an undeserved reputation?

Although their Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy could be considered to have some hidden cards up their sleeves, it was obvious that they were incomparable to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Regardless of the question, Dean Tai Cang's face still maintained his previous calm, gentle and indifferent expression. With a faint smile, he replied, "The previous Exchange should have already ended. However, that Xue Shi had still continued to break the rules and attacked. Mu Chen attacking in self defense is a reasonable reaction."

"If you really want to discuss this matter, you'd have to start from Xue Shi breaking the rules. Mu Chen isn't to blame."

Hearing his reply, the face of Fei Qingsong twitched uncontrollably for a few times. From the looks of it, this Dean Tai Cang did not plan to let Mu Chen give him an account... this showed that he wanted to shelter Mu Chen.

Although this Dean Tai Cang appeared good-natured and gentle, he was, in fact, extremely overbearing.

This ignited the flames within Fei Qingsong's heart, causing his face to instantly appear somewhat dark and overcast.

"Dean Fei, this Exchange can be considered to have already ended. Both sides have their victories, and we're unable to differentiate a final victor. However, your Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy truly has numerous talents. In the next Great Academy Competition, your academy should have a pretty good performance." Clearly ignoring the dark expression on Fei Qingsong's face, Dean Tai Cang's voice and his faint smile already

indicated his intent of wanting to send them off.

Fei Qingsong's face instantly turned ugly. Nevertheless, there would be no face to gain, even if he was to stay behind. With a wave of his sleeve, he coldly snorted, "Since that's the case, I'll have to thank the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy for the reception. After the Great Academy Competition, our Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy would seek guidance again for this matter."

In response, Dean Tai Cang gave a faint smile.

In the next instant, Fei Qingsong shot a fierce glare towards Mu Chen, who was standing behind Dean Tai Cang. However, the latter shot a smile back towards him in response, causing his anger to reach a level where his fat started to shake.

Snort!

With a quiet snort, Fei Qingshong grabbed the heavily injured Xue Shi and descended towards the location of the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy students, before waving his sleeve.

"Let's go!"

Boundless Spiritual Energy light swept out from Fei Qingsong's sleeve, before completely enveloping all of those students. In the next instant, they transformed into a streak of light, and shot out of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy at lightning speed.

Whoosh!

Following the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy's crestfallen departure, the northern square instantly erupted with astonishing and earth shaking cheers. Countless scorching gazes were focused on the slender youth in the middle of the square. Compared to before, a trace of genuine worship and respect was present within them.

The absolutely breathtaking scene of the latter sending Xue Shi flying off the square, was still imprinted in their minds.

Hearing the deafening cheers and roars from the students, Mu Chen

started to smile, before staring at the direction where Fei Qingsong and the rest of the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy people had left with slightly narrowed eyes. That Xue Shi was quite a problematic guy. However, it was a pity he wasn't able to kill the latter.

Regardless of being unable to kill him, that Xue Shi was still in deep shit. Previously, when Mu Chen had landed his palm on him, he had activated his "Divine Black Lightning Poison Finger", sending a trace of lightning poison into the latter's body. Although it wasn't lethal, it might lead to sufferings when the latter trained and cultivated in the future.

"Although they're not big, you're methods are quite vicious." Suddenly turning around, Dean Tai Cang spoke towards Mu Chen in a faint tone.

Mu Chen's heart immediately gave a slight jump. Although his poison finger was veiled by his pat, with Dean Tai Cang's strength, he might not be able to mask it from the latter...

Looking at Dean Tai Cang's face, which was unable to show whether he was happy or angry, Mu Chen was also unable to know what this great Dean was thinking, with the only option he had being to remain silent.

"However...at times, when you're not vicious, you'll get eaten by others."

Seeing Mu chen's nervous and tense state, Dean Tai Cang finally let out a laugh. Sounding a little delightful, he said, "Not bad. Facing a fellow that dared to ridicule the honor and dignity of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, it's best to either kill or waste him. If anything happens, I'll always be able to handle it for you."

Hearing Dean Tai Cang's words, Mu Chen became dumbfounded. Unexpectedly, this Dean that had always appeared to be an exceedingly capable and outstanding person had spoken such words. However, while feeling stunned, he had also quietly sighed in relief. From the looks of it, Dean Tai Cang didn't mind the methods that he had used.

"In reality, this kind of Exchange didn't have any benefit to us. If they won, they would proclaim their success wantonly without restraint, and use this to smear the name of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy."

With a smile, Dean Tai Cang continued speaking, "In the past, we didn't really care much about it. However, these fellows had come just at the moment when Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong had left the academy. If not for you, we might have truly let them escape with it. Therefore, you can be considered to have made a contribution to our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Don't worry about me thinking about punishing you."

"Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong have left the academy?" Mu Chen asked in shock.

"Yes. They've teamed up and taken the Bounty Mission to kill Mo Longzi," replied Dean Tai Cang as he faintly nodded his head.

"Mo Longzi..." muttered Mu Chen as his eyes faintly contracted. Previously, he had also met up with that fellow. If not for Shen Cangsheng managing to rush over in time, he might have been in considerable danger. However, as of now, his strength was much more intrepid compared to a few months ago. If he met with Mo Longzi now, it's also not necessary for the latter to be able to take his life.

"As of now, your experience is, after all, still shallow. In the future, if you wish, you can take this level of a Bounty Mission," said Dean Tai Cang with a smile. Although Mu Chen's current strength was already at a considerably intrepid level, he did not plan to allow the latter to undergo an overly dangerous mission. If anything were to happen to him by any chance, it would be quite a big loss for their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. After all, compared to Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, Mu Chen was still just a youth.

"Therefore, what you should do now is strive hard and train. I know about some of your matters in the Spiritual Road. That opponent of yours isn't simple..." said Dean Tai Cang with a faint smile.

Hearing those words, Mu Chen's eyes instantly contracted. That opponent of his...was he talking about Ji Xuan?

"That Ji Xuan was personally received by the Dean of the Saint Spiritual Academy. Therefore, the Saint Spiritual Academy would naturally put in great effort to nurture him. Added with his absolutely peak talent, with his

Heaven Grade Spiritual Pulse, his future achievements would be quite high. The most outstanding student from the Saint Spiritual Academy in the coming Great Academy Competition might even be him," replied Dean Tai Cang.

Mu Chen gently nodded his head. He naturally didn't doubt Ji Xuan's talent. At that time, people like Jie Ao and Yang Hong were all his loyal followers. This was sufficient to prove the capability and methods of the latter.

In the year within the Spiritual Road, other than Luo Li, who had previously caused a headache for Mu Chen, the only one who was of quite a high threat to him as Ji Xuan. In the end, he had even schemed to have Mu Chen forced out of the Spiritual Road. Those methods and schemes utilised by him were extremely deep and concealed.

As of now, Ji Xuan had already entered the Saint Spiritual Academy, one of the five Great Academies. As of now, compared to his achievements in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, exactly who among the two of them had the upper hand?

Although Mu Chen wasn't a person that would seek revenge for the smallest grievances, grudges and gratitude were things that he remembered very clearly. That Ji Xuan was his true enemy, and was even the kind that would send his enemy to death once a chance presented itself to him. Therefore, once they met during the Great Academy Competition, it would definitely be a life-or-death fight.

Once he had the chance, Ji Xuan would definitely not show any mercy. Similarly, Mu Chen would not have the slightest bit of hesitation.

"I know." Mu Chen replied and nodded his head. He was very clear on how formidable Ji Xuan was. Therefore, he would naturally not relax his vigilance. Against this enemy of his, no one understood him better than Mu Chen.

"The Saint Spiritual Academy would give huge support to Ji Xuan. Since you're a student of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, we'll naturally not do nothing about it."

With a beaming smile, Dean Tai Cang continued speaking, "I know that you've gotten quite a few benefits from Northern Sea, and have a substantial increase in strength. However, it seems that you're also a Spiritual Array Master, am I right? As of now, you should still be hovering and stagnating at this aspect, right?"

Dean Tai Cang's eyes were that sharp and acute. With a single look, he could tell that it was seemingly hard for Mu Chen to advance further in this aspect. After all, he was lacking guidance from people.

A faint light flashed within Mu Chen's eyes as he hastily nodded his head.

"Northern Sea doesn't even understand a bit about Spiritual Arrays. Therefore, he's unable to offer any help to you."

Dean Tai Cang retrieved a jade slip from within his robes, with the words "Tai Cang" seemingly etched onto it. Handing it to Mu Chen, he said, "Tomorrow, you'll take this jade slip and find Elder Ling Xi. She's the person with the highest attainments in Spiritual Arrays within our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, and should be able to provide some help to you."

Hearing those words, Mu Chen was filled with joy. As of now, what he needed most was the guidance of a great Spiritual Array Master. This move by Dean Tai Cang was simply assistance at a timely moment.

"Dean, thank you very much."

Mu Chen hastily took the jade slip over and voiced his gratitude.

Waving his hand, Dean Tai Cang replied, "There's no need for thanks. What I need isn't that, but a Freshman of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy by the name of Mu Chen that is able to suppress the most monstrous talent of the Saint Spiritual Academy during the Great Academy Competition."

Faintly smiling while looking at Mu Chen, he asked, "So, what do you think? Can you achieve that?"

Clenching the jade slip and giving it a soft rub, an unruly arrogance and

the sharpness of a youth rose from the corner of his mouth.

"Please feel relaxed, Dean. During the Great Academy Competition, just leave that Ji Xuan to me."

Chapter 350: Ling Xi

As the night grew darker, the clear and cold moonlight enveloped the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. However, even though it was already well into the night, the gigantic spiritual academy was still filled with vitality as figures shot across ceaselessly.

The Exchange that had ended today had undoubtedly caused the emotions within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy to flare up and boil. The scene of the final reversal caused many students to boil and turn restless. Originally, all of them had assumed that they had let the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy get the long end of the stick. Although a loss like that would not let people assume that their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was no longer capable, those slanderous rumors would always raise the ire of people.

Mu Chen had returned and defeated the strongest student from the opposite side with an immensely strong attack. This kind of reversal caused many students from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy to feel exceedingly elated and inspired. Naturally, relying on this fight, Mu Chen's 3rd Rank on the Heavenly Rankings had already become impossible to shake. There were even some students that estimated, and were shocked to discover, that the current Mu Chen had already started to gradually catch up to Li Xuantong.

According to the rate of Mu Chen's increased strength, perhaps it wouldn't take too long before the 3rd Rank on the Heavenly Rankings to take a shift forward. This might even happen before a year's worth of time... There was even the possibly of him rushing towards the Overlord's Rank within the Heavenly Rankings that was guarded by Shen Cangsheng after so many years.

At that time, there would definitely be an incomparably spectacular fight between tigers and dragons.

...

Within the little building in the Freshmen Area, a young girl was

standing elegantly. Clasping the black longsword in her jade-like hands, Luo Li's gaze was focused on it, while one could notice the absent-mindedness present within her eyes. After quite a long time, she gave a faint sigh.

"What's the matter?" A low and gentle voice rang out behind her as Mu Chen extended his arm around the young girl's slender waist.

"Looks like the news about me leaving the Luo God Clan is already spreading." replied Luo Li as she gently leaned within Mu Chen's bosom, while her eyebrows started to faintly knit together. If her grandfather, Luo Tianshen, was to know about this matter, the time of their agreement might be immediately brought forward.

She was the Queen of the Luo God Clan, and was the only person within the Luo God Clan that could shoulder them. If some mishap was to even occur to her, the Luo God Clan would truly collapse and be wiped out.

At that time, the millions of citizens within the Luo God Clan would suffer the ruthless massacre from the other three Great God Clans.

To the Luo God Clan, she was truly too important.

Therefore, once that Xue Shi wakes up, he would definitely report this news back to the Blood God Clan. At that time, the Luo God Clan would definitely catch wind of it. Therefore, even if she wanted to conceal this matter, she was unable to conceal it for long.

Hearing her words, the arm wrapped around Luo Li's slender waisted tightened, while fury quietly rose within his eyes. If he had known this earlier, he would have truly killed that fellow. Although, he also knew that wanting to kill Xue Shi in front of Fei Qingsong seemed to be an impossible task.

As Luo Li nestled in Mu Chen's embrace, her fine and exquisite little face rested against his chest, rubbing her face up and down like a little kitten. She was very clear about the immense pressure that she would have to bear if she were to return to the Luo God Clan once again. This kind of pressure was sufficient to cause an ordinary person to immediately break down and collapse.

However, the lives and deaths of millions of her citizens were all under her control.

Furthermore, at that time, she would no longer have such a heartwarming embrace for her to rely on. At that time, the only person she could rely on was herself. At that time, there would no longer be anyone that would feel heartache to the point of feeling more hurt and infuriated whenever she gets bullied.

Mu Chen looked towards the delicate and porcelain-like face within his embrace, before starting to turn silent. He knew that the day where they had to part would come. Furthermore, this separation might be for a very long time, with her not having another chance to slip out to find him.

Before possessing sufficient strength, he was also unable to find her. If he did, not only would he not be able to provide any help to her, he would even become a burden. Although she wouldn't mind that, obviously, Mu Chen would absolutely not want to see that scene.

"I'll accompany you for this period of time."

Mu Chen let his hand flow through Luo Li's long silvery-like hair, enjoying the perfect feeling in his palms. Looking up into the sky, he exhaled a long breath of air. Luo Li, I'm already doing everything I can to run along the path of an unrivalled expert. I'll continue to run like that, all the way to the point where I can truly stand in front of you and shatter anything that blocks you with a single palm of mine!

...

The next day, after accompanying Luo Li in the Freshmen area for over half a day. This continued till the young girl became slightly angry, and said that he was being too annoying and making her unable to train. Only then did he leave her alone, while feeling hurt that he was actually being ignored and avoided.

After leaving the Freshmen area, Mu Chen found his bearings and started heading towards the northern side of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. According to Dean Tai Cang, that Elder Ling Xi should be living around there.

Mu Chen already knew about some information regarding Elder Ling Xi from his conversation with Dean Tai Cang and the others yesterday, the majority coming from Ye Qingling. That's due to the fact that the Elder that had taken Su'er under her wing was the exact same Elder Ling Xi.

That Elder stayed deep within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy and rarely went out, and it was extremely rare for students to catch a glimpse of her, with the number of people being able to obtain her guidance on Spiritual Arrays being even less. Within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, if anyone wanted to obtain some guidance from the Elders, one would need extremely high amounts of Spiritual Values. However, this Elder Ling Xi had a completely firm personality. She didn't even care if one had Spiritual Values, causing countless students to be unable to shed tears, and were helpless without any other alternative.

In view of this, Mu Chen felt slightly apprehensive about this. This Elder had an overly excessive personality. He didn't know if the Dean's words would have any effect...

Holding onto this apprehension, and after approximately ten minutes, Mu Chen started to descend towards the peak of a cloud-covered mountain. An elegant courtyard stood erect on the summit of the mountain. Clouds lingered around it, giving it an extremely quiet and serene feeling.

As Mu Chen descended before the courtyard, he noticed that the main doors were tightly shut, while there was nobody around to greet him. Making a bitter laugh, he retrieved the jade slip given to him by the Dean yesterday, before saying in a respectful voice, "This student's name is Mu Chen, and I've come on the behest Dean Tai to meet with Elder Ling Xi."

Wrapped with Spiritual Energy, Mu Chen's voice rang out within the quiet and serene courtyard. Nevertheless, there was still no activity present within. Regardless of that, he didn't get anxious over it. Standing outside of the door, without moving an inch, he held the jade slip out, appearing extremely respectful.

Within his respectful stance, he waited for nearly half an hour's worth of

time.

Just as the half an hour mark gradually went by, a ray of light shot out from within the depths of the courtyard. Immediately enveloping the jade slip within Mu Chen's hands, it retrieved it before heading back. At the same time, the tightly shut courtyard doors started to slowly open, bit by bit.

Huuu.

Seeing the courtyard doors open, Mu Chen quietly breathed a sigh of relief. Looks like the Dean's jade slip has a bit of use. If it didn't, even if I stood here for an entire day and night, this eccentric Elder wouldn't even bother with me.

Mu Chen strode forward, crossing over the courtyard doors before walking into the depths.

Past the courtyard was a secluded and winding small path made of broken stones, with a clear lake by its side. Taking a look at his surroundings, Mu Chen proceeded to follow along this small rocky path.

And this walk became one that was nearing half an hour's of time.

This small rocky path seemed to continue forever without end. Regardless of how Mu Chen walked, he was unable to walk out of it. At this moment, his expression had turned completely solemn. Obviously, he was able to feel the strangeness of this place.

As his stopped his footsteps and wrinkled his brows tightly, he thought, Is this... to test me?

Taking a look at his surroundings, he gave a flick of his finger, and explosively sent Spiritual Energy shooting out towards every direction. However, without shooting out far into the distance, all of them dissipated in the air. From the looks of it, this region seemed to an isolated space.

"Is this a Spiritual Array?"

Mu Chen muttered to himself, as he scanned the surroundings around him acutely. Nevertheless, he was unable to discover any fluctuations

caused by Spiritual Seals permeating within the air. In this place, there weren't any traces of Spiritual Arrays.

After thinking deeply for quite a while, he made a sudden step back.

Following his step back, the surrounding scene turned slightly illusionary. In the next instant, he discovered that he had appeared at the location where he was right after stepping past the main doors, with the little rocky path in front of him. At his back, the doors of the courtyard were still open, seemingly telling him that if he wasn't able to head forward, he should immediately turn around and leave.

He couldn't walk forward, and he wasn't willing to turn around and leave.

Was there a third way for him to walk?

This place was definitely strange. However, it's just that Mu Chen had yet to discover it.

As he thought about it, his eyes faintly narrowed. After a while, his gaze suddenly turned towards the clear lake beside the little rocky path. As his eyes sparkled, he took a step forward, and heavily landed within the lake.

As his feet descended, there wasn't any water splashing out. At this instant, Mu Chen's taut body finally relaxed. Indeed, it's like that...

Without stopping in his tracks, he walked straight into the lake, causing the lake water to slowly submerge him, bit by bit.

At the moment when Mu Chen was completely submerged by the lake water, his surroundings seemed to faintly ripple and fluctuate. In the next moment, he started to feel them turn illusionary, with the little rocky path and the lake already dissipating away.

What appeared before him was an elegant and refined bamboo building, with the words "Ling Xi's Courtyard" being displayed.

Elation filled Mu Chen as he could tell that he had passed the slightly strange place.

Suddenly, Mu Chen's gaze turned towards the front of the bamboo

building, only to see a beautiful girl dressed in white sitting quietly there. The girl was extremely youthful, with her skin akin to snow, twirling eyebrows with a serene and quiet gaze, while radiating with an icy and indifferent aura that would repel people to a thousand miles away.

Upon seeing her, Mu Chen instantly gawked, before cupping his hands and saying, "This student..."

Before he could finish his words, the girl dressed in white gave him an icy glare. With a wave of her jade-like hand, the bamboo door instantly closed shut.

Mu Chen was stunned.

"Eh, Big Brother Mu Chen?" while Mu Chen was still stunned, a young and happy voice suddenly rang out from behind.

Turning his head around, the first thing he saw was Su'er, dressed in white, standing right behind him, who currently had her eyes wide open with happiness and surprise as she looked at him.

"Big Brother Mu Chen, why are you here?" asked Su'er happily in surprise.

Feeling helpless, Mu Chen replied, "I'm here to find Elder Ling Xi to teach me about Spiritual Arrays... however, I didn't see anyone..."

"Hasn't Elder Sister Ling Xi been here all along?" replied Su'er in confusion, as she pointed towards the bamboo building.

"This place? Elder Sister Ling Xi?"

Mu Chen immediately gawked, before an incredulous feeling erupted out from his eyes as this moment. Staring blankly at the tightly closed bamboo doors, he thought, That beautiful girl in white is that Elder Ling Xi?

Chapter 351: Guidance

Within the quiet and elegant bamboo house, Mu Chen looked with some awkwardness at the girl dressed in white that was in a seiza position behind the tea table. The latter wore a white dress, with her black hair draped over her shoulders. Coupled with her beautiful face and the lovably pointed jaw, she radiated with a faint icy and indifferent aura, letting people know that it was not easy to get close to her.

The girl in front of him was really quite beautiful, with not a bit inferior to Su Xuan. The only gripe was that icy indifference, which was the greatest among all of the beautiful girls that Mu Chen had ever seen.

He never imagined that this eccentric Elder Ling Xi would actually be this young and beautiful.

Su'er, who had also adopted the seiza position beside Ling Xi, secretly laughed as she looked at Mu Chen's awkward-looking face.

Regardless of that, the girl in white did not care about the Mu Chen in front of her and was minding her own business as she extended her slender white hand. Picking up the teapot, she gently poured the tea out, bringing along a clear and melodious sound within the quiet room as the tea entered the cup.

Giving a dry cough, Mu Chen cupped his hands and said, "This student, Mu Chen, has seen Elder Ling Xi. I apologize for my earlier conduct..."

"Why did you come here?" asked the white girl in a calm voice, with no presence of any fluctuations.

"The Dean has asked me to come here to find Elder...Ling Xi for guidance on cultivation in Spiritual Arrays," replied Mu Chen, with the word 'Elder' being said with slight difficulty, as he had never seen such a young and beautiful Elder.

"I don't teach people." Holding the jade tea cup in her white hands, the girl in white took a light sip before giving her reply.

Hearing her reply, Mu Chen immediately glared at Su'er sitting beside

her.

"I don't teach males." Seemingly knowing what Mu Chen was referring to, the girl in white added a casual response.

Feeling helpless, the only thing Mu Chen could do was forsake his shame and replied, "It's the Dean who asked me to come here."

Hearing those words, the beautiful eyes of the girl in white rotated up slightly. Shooting a look at Mu Chen, she replied, "I'm not a person of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. The only reason I'm here is due to owing a favor to Dean Tai Cang. Therefore, I've only agreed to help him construct some Spiritual Arrays for the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. As long as I want to, I can leave at any time. Therefore, don't use his name and try to pressure me."

Mu Chen was immediately speechless. This Elder Ling Xi's character truly was eccentric. She didn't even give face to Dean Tai Cang. This turn of events truly made Mu Chen feel slightly at a loss on how to proceed.

The girl in white proceeded to ignore the helplessly feeling Mu Chen and started to play with her elaborately designed jade cup with her usual indifferent expression.

Do to this, the atmosphere within the room quickly became silent and slightly stifling.

Seeing Mu Chen starting to shrivel up, Su'er could not help, laughing up her sleeve, before saying quietly, "Elder Sister Ling Xi, Big Brother Mu Chen's talent in Spiritual Arrays is very good, and is even better than me."

"There are too many people with good talent. If I were to teach every single one I see, wouldn't that tire me to death?" asked Ling Xi as she glared at Su'er.

"Elder Sister Ling Xi, can you please help Big Brother Mu Chen, please? He treats me very well," begged Su'er as she started to act like a spoilt kid.

Nevertheless, Ling XI did not budge.

"Elder Sister Ling Xi, if you don't agree, I'll not do work anymore," said

Su’er as she pouted her small mouth.

"Then, I’ll just have to lock you up in the Spiritual Array House." replied Ling Xi in a soft voice as a smile seemed to rise from the corner of her mouth.

Upon hearing the three words "Spiritual Array House", Su’er immediately turned quiet in fear, her little face quickly showed a bitter expression as she did not dare to continue speaking.

Seeing that Su’er did not dare to continue speaking, Ling Xi turned quietly for a slight moment before looking at Mu Chen. With an indifferent tone, she asked, "So, you’re a Rank 4 Spiritual Array Master now?"

"Yes," replied Mu Chen while nodding his head.

"What problem do you have?" asked Ling Xi.

"I would like to know how to control the Heart’s Eye state." Mu Chen immediately replied. To him, the Heart’s Eye state was extremely important. Once he was truly able to able to control the Heart’s Eye state, he would be able to rely on his strength of a Rank 4 Spiritual Array Master to arrange Rank 5 Spiritual Arrays.

Although it could be said that he had managed to faintly make contact with the Heart’s Eye state, the entirety of this state was extremely complicated. If he only relied on his probing and feelings, he truly did not know when he would achieve the level of full control.

"Heart’s Eye?" muttered Ling Xi, as a trace of astonishment revealed itself within her eyes. She truly didn’t imagine that Mu Chen was actually able to make contact with the Heart’s Eye state at his current level. It looked like what Su’er said was true, that he possessed an extremely high talent for Spiritual Arrays.

"The Heart’s Eye state is a rather high and deep state within the path of a Spiritual Array Master. It’s known in two forms, the Void Heart’s Eye state, and the Real Heart’s Eye state. However, from the looks of it, you aren’t even at the level of full control over the Void Heart’s Eye state."

Hearing her explanation, Mu Chen faintly gawked. Obviously, he never thought that the Heart's Eye state would actually have such a differentiation within it.

"What's the difference between the two?"

"The Void Heart's Eye state is an illusionary feeling and comprehension. If a Spiritual Array was arranged by two Spiritual Array Masters, one with control over the Void Heart's Eye state, while the other doesn't, not only will the amount of Spiritual Energy consumed by the one with control be less, its might would be even stronger, with even the chances of failure being drastically lowered. An extremely significant reason why some outstanding Spiritual Array Masters were able to arrange boundary-breaking Spiritual Arrays is due to their control over this state."

"As for the Real Heart's Eye state..." Ling Xi's voice paused slightly at this moment, before continuing, "Spiritual Array Masters that have such a degree of control over the Heart's Eye state would feel a good deal of Spiritual Arrays become incomparably simple in their eyes. This is due to them already being able to see through a lot of their complicated structures and peer into their cores. If you were to meet an enemy of such caliber, they would be able to see the weakest point of the Spiritual Arrays that you've arranged with a single look, and break them easily..."

"In addition, once one trains their control over the Real Heart's Eye state to an extremely deep and high level, it would no longer continue to be an illusionary feeling. It would turn substantial, akin to an existence of a genuine eye. That's the true Heart's Eye state."

"Under the gaze of the Heart's Eye state, no Spiritual Arrays would exist. If you come face-to-face with such a Spiritual Array Master, it's best that you don't arrange any Spiritual Arrays in front of that person. That's because he would be able to see through your constructs in a single look. Perhaps, in an instant, he would be able to arrange a Spiritual Array identical to the one you've arranged."

Hearing her complete explanation, Mu Chen was completely dumbfounded. Reproducing an opponent's Spiritual Array with a single

look? Wasn't that too perverted and abnormal? He never imagined that this Heart's Eye state would actually be that formidable. However, it seemed too far away from him. To him, what he wanted now was not the other benefits that it would provide, but only the little bit of allowing him to arrange boundary-breaking Spiritual Arrays...

"Exactly when would one be able to control this state?" Mu Chen posed his question cautiously.

"That's very simple. You just have to train and practice more," replied Ling Xi with a downplaying tone.

Mu Chen instantly felt sweat dripping down from his forehead. Isn't this making it sound too simple?

"What should I do?" asked Mu chen helplessly.

"Do you really want to control it?" asked Ling Xi as her intelligent and bright eyes focused on Mu Chen, while the icy indifferentness within them seemingly weaker than before. However, what replaced them was an indifferent laughing intent, which made Mu Chen feel a little uneasy.

However, at this time, regardless of his unease, the only thing he could do was steel himself. It was not easy to get this eccentric lady to guide him, If he showed the slightest bit of hesitation, he might be sent flying out once again.

"Yes." replied Mu Chen with a nod.

Hearing his reply, Su'er used a sympathizing gaze as she looked at Mu Chen, she was already able to picture the unlucky look that would soon appear on his face.

"Follow me," said Ling Xi and she stood up, revealing her slender and exquisite physique wrapped within the white clothing, Bringing along a slight trace of fragrance, she walked directly out of the house, leaving Mu Chen looking at her graceful and slender back figure.

The three of them headed out of the bamboo house and entered a bamboo forest, before stopping at a spacious clearing within its depths.

"In general, although Spiritual Arrays are complicated,to a Spiritual Array Master, the most important part of it would be the Array Core. Once the core is broken, even the most powerful Spiritual Array would dissipate into thin air. However, wanting to identify the Array Core of an incomparably complex Spiritual Array in operation would be an extremely difficult task."

Looking towards Mu Chen, Ling Xi extended her slender jade-like finger and gave the space a tap. In the next instant, ripples seemed to undulate out from the touched space, as Mu Chen was able to feel the Spiritual Energy in this stretch of the world seemingly becoming disordered and chaotic.

Spiritual Energy akin to a storm condensed within the spacious clearing within the bamboo forest, as a scarlet-red glowing array started to form in the air. In the next instant, a strong Spiritual Energy fluctuation started to spread out, while radiating with a scorching-hot aura.

Looking at the scarlet-red Spiritual Array that had taken shape in an instant around him, Mu Chen's expression changed uncontrollably. This Spiritual Array should be a Fourth Grade one. If he was the one arranging it, it would require ample preparation before attempting to arrange it. However, with a single tap of her jade-like finger, this Ling Xi was able to form a Fourth Grade Spiritual Array. Furthermore, Mu Chen did not even see her condense a single Spiritual Seal...

She had directly controlled the Spiritual Energy of the heavens and earth to arrange a Spiritual Array. This way made it even harder for people to guard against it.

One had to know that when a Spiritual Array Master arranges a Spiritual Array, the first thing that needed to be done was to condense the Spiritual Seals. However, it would give a clear indication to one's enemy what one's actions were. However, from what Ling Xi had done, she had directly omitted this step.

Shock quietly flooded Mu Chen's heart as he thought, A Great Spiritual Array Master, she truly is worthy of that title. She's on a completely

different level from me.

However, just as Mu Chen was secretly feeling shocked, Ling Xi wasn't done with what she was doing. With another tap of her jade-like finger, one could see two similarly gigantic and complicated Spiritual Arrays surfacing in the air, enveloping the scarlet-red glowing array within them.

Three complete Rank 4 Spiritual Arrays. Furthermore, they were arranged simultaneously.

Unable to bear it any more, the corner of Mu Chen's mouth started to twitch.

The three Rank 4 Spiritual Arrays enveloped the entire clearing with Mu Chen at their very most centre location. Currently, he did not even dare to make the slightest movement, since a single movement from him would cause the three Spiritual Arrays to launch erratic attacks at him.

"Elder Ling Xi..."

With a dry laugh, Mu Chen asked, "May I know what this is for?"

"Before being killed by them, you'll have to find the Array Cores of these three Spiritual Arrays, before breaking them to escape. Remember, you're not allowed to use your Spiritual Energy to forcefully break them. You're only allowed to break the Array Cores," replied Ling Xi in an indifferent tone.

Mu Chen immediately opened his mouth wide. What the hell is this hellish form of training? Immediately asking me to deal with three Rank 4 Spiritual Arrays, can't we stick to the norm? This truly can kill me!

"I'll give you an hour. If you can't break them, there's no need for you to continue staying here, and just return to where you've come from. I won't teach such stupid people." Nevertheless, Ling Xi completely ignored the feelings of Mu Chen. After speaking her words in an indifferent tone, with a wave of her sleeve, she turned around and left.

"Su'er, make sure to watch him. If he dares to forcefully break the arrays, you'll be the next one that enters."

As Ling Xi's beautiful figure headed into the distance, her clear and cold voice fluttered over, causing Su'er's little face to turn bitter. In the next moment, she looked towards Mu Chen, currently in the middle of the arrays with an extremely pitiful expression.

"Big Brother Mu Chen, you have to listen to Elder Sister Ling Xi's words... Su'er doesn't want to go in there..."

Chapter 352: Breaking the Array

Bang!

At the very moment when Ling Xi left the bamboo forest, the three gigantic Spiritual Arrays immediately activated. The Spiritual Energy of the heavens and earth instantly boiled and churned as boundless radiance permeated out, enveloping this entire area.

Mu Chen's expression turned grave as Spiritual Energy burning with black flames rose from his body. Looking towards the complicated Spiritual Arrays radiating with brilliance that enveloped him, he could faintly make out traces of Spiritual Energy light chains that formed extremely complicated array diagrams.

Due to the extremely close proximity of the three Spiritual Arrays to one another, it caused the level of complexity to increase by quite a bit. When combined, three Fourth Grade Spiritual Arrays were able to erupt with the force of a Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phrase. With Mu Chen's strength, if he used force with any qualm, he should be able to shatter and split these three Fourth Grade Spiritual Arrays apart and break out of them. However, the last words that Ling Xi said to him had firmly obstructed him from heading down this path.

Since he was unable to use the forceful way, the only thing he could do was to decipher the Array Cores. If not, that Ling Xi might immediately expel him.

Whoosh!

Just as Mu Chen was carefully observing and studying the Spiritual Arrays, the latter started blossoming with radiance. In the next moment, three gigantic rays of light swept over. Carrying along churning Spiritual Energy, they slammed against Mu Chen's body at lightning speed.

Bang!

As the rays of light shattered, Mu Chen was forced a step back. Spiritual Energy burning with black flames that curled around his body grew

dimmer, before turning into a raging inferno again.

"It's painful," muttered Mu Chen as he rubbed his chest. Although, with Mu Chen's current tyrannical fleshly body, enduring three Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase attacks would not lead to any injuries, but the pain was still present.

Whoosh! Whoosh!

However, it was obvious that Elder Ling Xi would not let Mu Chen be so relaxed. Just as the three Spiritual Light beams had shot out, the three Spiritual Arrays started to rumble and revolve. In the next moment, as his face started to faintly change, beam after beam of lights hid the skies and covered the earth as they shot out, rumbling towards him before raining down like a storm.

Such a terrifying amount of attacks; even Mu Chen started to feel his scalp turning slightly numb. Not daring to rely on his fleshy body to endure them anymore, a dragon's shadow erupted from Mu Chen's body as he activated the Dragon Soaring Art and fled away.

A remnant shadow appeared where Mu Chen previously stood, before immediately being shattered into pieces by the incoming Spiritual Energy beams.

Bang! Bang!

Unfortunately, there wasn't much room within this region of space enveloped by the gigantic Spiritual Array, thus Mu Chen could not completely escape from it. Even relying on the Dragon Soaring Art, he was still struck dozens of times, causing tremors to shake within his body.

At that moment, Mu Chen's face had truly turned ugly. According to normal reasoning, the Fourth Grade Spiritual Arrays arranged by him would at most be able to erupt with a single barrage of attacks, before gradually dissipating away. However, the three before him had continued launching barrage after barrage, with no end to them.

"I have to hurry up and break these arrays," muttered Mu Chen as his gaze turned solemn. He did not dare to drag this on any longer, because if

this continued, even with his small accomplishment in his Thunder God Physique, he might still be consumed to death in this place.

In the next instant, brilliance erupted from within his eyes as he locked onto the revolving Spiritual Arrays. The complicated array diagrams that were stretched by lines and lines of glowing Spiritual Energy line started to be continuously etched within his mind.

Bang!

However, just as Mu Chen had managed to probe into a little bit of the locus of the array diagrams, a wave of rampaging attacks came heading his way, forcing him to retreat tens of steps. As his blood and Qi rolled and churned over, the locus of the array diagrams that he had just managed to obtain were changed by the revolving Spiritual Arrays.

A wasted effort.

This was akin to a person trying to fumble around a moving maze, and needed to follow those orbital tracks. However, once that probe was being disrupted and interfered with, the orbital tracks would be messed up by the revolutions. If one wanted to escape the maze using conventional means, the only thing one could do was to try again from the start.

Unable bear it, Mu Chen let out a curse. Only now did he truly understand how difficult it was to break an array using this method. Naturally, he also knew that if it was that easy to find the Array Core of a revolving Spiritual Array and destroy it in one fell swoop, then being a Spiritual Array Master would not be as popular as it was.

Clenching his teeth, Mu Chen told himself to not get flustered. Upon getting flustered and anxious, he would no longer be able to find those Array Cores, with the only way left being for him to force his way out. If not, he would truly be consumed to death.

Hu.

As Mu Chen forcefully instructed himself to calm down, black lightning started to erupt on the surface of his body as the Lightning Rune on his chest grew brighter. He had already activated his Thunder God Physique.

With that, he would be able to reduce the disturbance caused by the periodic attacks towards him.

Within the clearing in the bamboo forest, Mu Chen's figure continued to flutter about as he retreated, evading those Spiritual Arrays that hid the skies and covered the earth as they headed his way. From time-to-time, some of those Spiritual Energy light beams would sweep across him, causing a faint bout of trembling to spread within his body.

Standing outside of the Spiritual Arrays, Su'er covered her eyes with her hands, not daring to take a look at Mu Chen, who was now trapped in a spectacle that was too horrible to endure. If it was her that was within those Spiritual Arrays, she might have long lost her little life.

As time slowly elapsed, the boundless Spiritual Energy within the depths of the bamboo forest grew increasingly erratic. Ray after ray of Spiritual Energy light beams swept out, causing the sky to be suffused by a brilliant rainbow of colours.

Bang!

Within the Spiritual Arrays, Mu Chen's body was struck by tens of Spiritual Energy light beams. Black lightning sparkled on the surface of his body, forcibly resisting the incoming impact, while a flash abruptly appeared within Mu Chen's gaze as he stared towards the revolving Spiritual Arrays.

He had already managed to get an approximate feel of the array diagram of one of the Spiritual Arrays. However, he was still unable to find its Array Core. The Spiritual Arrays arranged by that Ling Xi were extremely formidable. As the three Spiritual Arrays overlapped with each other, and jointly revolved, there was completely no pattern that they followed.

Due to the superimposition by the three Spiritual Arrays, wanting to find their Array Cores was too difficult a task.

And, the common way of dealing with them was completely unable to be used.

"Big Brother Mu Chen, half of the time has already past. You can do it."

Su'er's slightly worried reminder rang out from the distance. She was very clear about Ling Xi's character. If Mu Chen truly was unable to break out of the arrays within the stipulated time, there would truly be nothing that could be said.

Taking a deep breath, Mu Chen clenched his fists tightly, before slowly closing his eyes.

As he did so, he immediately entered the Heart's Array State. Although the higher and more profound Heart's Eye State was something that he was still unable to control, the Heart's Array State was, after all, an elementary state. This, at his current level, he was able to exhibit a high level of control over it.

Within the darkness, points of brilliance started to light up, which seemed to be countless points of Spiritual Energy light. Those rays of light howling across were the attacks sent out by the Spiritual Arrays, The outside was a bright and intense radiance. Within that radiance should be the location of the Spiritual Arrays.

Upon seeing all of these, Mu Chen's state of mind grew increasingly concentrated and decisive. Extended his mind out, he slowly started to send a feedback of the orbital tracks of those Spiritual Arrays back into his mind, before slowly linking them and continuing this process...

The disturbance occurring in the outside world had seemingly been completely shut out at this moment.

The complete orbital track of the Spiritual Array started to gradually take form within Mu Chen's mind.

Bang!

Within the Spiritual Arrays, the footsteps of Mu Chen, whose eyes were tightly shut, started to move much slower. On his body, the light from the black lightning sparked as dozens of rays of Spiritual Energy light beams surged over. Like a furious dragon, they violently impacted against his body.

The low and deep sounds that rang out caused a shiver in Su'er's little

heart.

As the Spiritual Energy light beams exploded against Mu Chen's body, his body was forced back by about ten steps. The clothes on his body were tattered, while shallow traces of bloody wounds appeared. Mu Chen was the only person able to endure such attacks with his fleshly body. If it was any other person at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase, they might have long been smashed into pulp.

While Mu Chen was being forced back, his eyes still remained tightly shut. In the next instant, he sent a fist furiously rumbling out. Spiritual Energy burning with black flames swept out, before violently impacting a certain location within that bright and resplendent Spiritual Arrays.

Bang!

Instantly, the Spiritual Arrays seemed to intensely tremble, before the Spiritual Array and the innermost location started to violently shudder. Cracks started to rapidly extend across the surface, before finally exploding with a bang.

The first Spiritual Array's Array Core was finally found by Mu Chen, before being easily destroyed by a fist from him.

"You did it!"

Cheers immediately rang out from Su'er as her big and vivid eyes were filled with worship. Big Brother Mu Chen's too awesome! He could actually find the Array Core just like that...

Even though he smashed an Array Core with his fist, Mu Chen's eyes still remained tightly shut. There were still two more Spiritual Arrays. Fortunately, it was much easier to find their Array Cores, compared to before. After all, one of the three superimposing Spiritual Arrays was broken. Therefore, it would not require the same amount of consumption and concentration as before.

Therefore, within a short span of a number of minutes, two more fists rumbled out from Mu Chen. Two streaks of glowing Spiritual Energy violently impacted a corner of those two Spiritual Arrays, causing them to

instantly shudder. With a humm and a buzz, both of them completely came to a stop, before rapidly dissipating away.

The three Spiritual Arrays were all broken.

After breaking the three Spiritual Arrays, Mu Chen was still deep within his previous state. He seemed to be able to faintly feel something, as though a fantastic feeling had flashed with the depths of his spirit.

This feeling was extremely fantastic. However, even though he wished to capture it, he was unable to make contact with it. Regardless of that, he was able to feel that he had faintly started to make contact with the thing that he yearned for in his dreams.

As the Spiritual Arrays dissipated, Mu Chen stood erect at his original position for a long time, before slowly opening his eyes. Instantly, a weak feeling spread throughout his legs as intense pain started to ring out from his body. Lowering his head to take a look, he discovered that his entire body was filled with wounds. Although they weren't life threatening, they had brought along waves of intense pain.

Mu Chen sucked in a cold breath of air. It as fortunate that he had managed to reach a small accomplishment in his Thunder God Physique. If not, the current him would already have shattered meridians and broken bones, and pain that would far exceed the pain radiating from his muscles.

"Big Brother Mu Chen, you too awesome!" exclaimed Su'er in excitement as she rushed over. However, upon seeing Mu Chen's bare upper torso, caused by his tattered clothes, the little girl quickly started to blush as she turned her little red face away.

With difficulty, Mu Chen gave a smile, retrieving and wearing a new set of clothes. In the next moment, he felt the exhaustion radiating from within his body. That was the feeling of his mental energy being overly depleted. The earlier fight to break those Spiritual Arrays was simply even more tiring than his fight with Xue Shi.

"Elder Ling Xi."

Mu Chen spoke out as he raised his head to look at his surroundings,

knowing that Ling Xi would definitely be paying attention to him.

"It's almost an hour. You're barely able to pass."

Ling Xi's clear and cold voice rang slowly in the air, "Go back, for now, and we'll continue tomorrow. It'll be the same as today, but there'll be one more Spiritual Array."

A faint shiver spread within Mu Chen's body. However, he did not let any sounds of anguish out. Contrary to that, a blazing fire seemed to erupt from within his eyes. Although Ling Xi's methods were cruel and barbaric, it had to be said that the results were extremely tempting. If the fantastic feeling that he had felt earlier continued to appear, he would definitely be able to give birth to the true Heart's Eye!

"Thank you very much, Elder Ling Xi."

Cupping his hands, Mu Chen gave a pat of Su'er's small head, before walking off by himself. This was Ling Xi's residence. Other than Su'er, he didn't see anyone else. Thus, it wasn't convenient for him to stay.

As Mu Chen disappeared into the distance, the lady dressed in white, Ling Xi, finally appeared beside Su'er as her beautiful eyes stared at the direction where Mu Chen had broken the Spiritual Arrays.

"Elder Sister Ling Xi, isn't Big Brother Mu Chen very awesome?" asked Su'er in satisfaction.

Extending her slender and jade-like finger, Ling Xi gave a soft tap on Su'er's bright and radiant forehead. However, she did not give a reply, with the only thing she did was look at the direction where Mu Chen had left, before giving a faint nod.

That Mu Chen's talent in Spiritual Arrays truly has some aspects that are worth commending.

Chapter 353: The Mysterious Ling Xi

In the following days to come, Mu Chen came almost every day to undergo Ling Xi's demonic training. Upon completion, he would leave, completely covered in wounds. His tattered and miserable appearance gave Luo Li a fright. However, after knowing the entirety of the matter, she could only shake her head in helplessness. This Elder Ling Xi was truly vicious in her actions.

However, although Mu Chen had paid an extremely disastrous price to undergo this demonic training, it had to be said that the results were truly not small. Within a short span of a few days, Mu Chen's rate of improvement was quite good. On the first day of this demonic training, when he had broken the three Fourth Grade Spiritual Arrays, he was already totally consumed. Furthermore, it had led to him ending up in an extremely miserable state.

However, at the end of the tenth day, he had already increased the number of superimposing Spiritual Arrays to a terrifying amount of 20...

20 Fourth Grade Spiritual Arrays activated simultaneously. The threat coming from them would even cause a Heavenly Completion Stage expert to feel his skin crawl. However, it was fortunate that those Spiritual Arrays weren't used for slaughter; thus, could not be compared to the ones that were used in real fights. Therefore, relying on his Thunder God Physique, coupled with the increasing familiarity in his training, he was barely able to scrape past it every time. Naturally, the price he had to pay was even more disastrous. After completing the training every day, he wouldn't be able to move the next day, and could only take the day off to rest.

As this cycle of rest for a day and break arrays for a day, Mu Chen could feel that the rate of the appearance of the fantastic feeling was becoming higher and higher. This made Mu Chen extremely elated.

Although this fantastic feeling did not mean that he had already come into true contact with the Heart's Eye State, it was able to tell him that he was getting closer and closer to it.

As long as he continued this, he would finally be able to brush aside the mysterious fog and truly comprehend the Heart's Eye State!

...

Bang!

Spiritual Energy that blotted the skies erupted from within the depths of the bamboo forest as Spiritual Arrays started to envelope the surrounding sky. With their numerous amount, they formed layer after layer. With their revolutions, Spiritual Energy that hid the skies and covered the earth gushed and erupted out, roaring with terrifying prestige.

At this moment, within the dense layers of Spiritual Arrays and countless howling light beams, a figure sparkled as it dashed around at lightning speed. Black lightning bolts sparked on its body, resisting the attacks from those Spiritual Energy light beams that couldn't be evaded.

Bang! Bang!

While dodging, the figure rapidly launched its furious attacks as vigorous exploding fists swept out, descending towards the numerous layers of Spiritual Arrays.

Every time it launched an attack, a Spiritual Array layer would shudder, before emitting faint cracking sounds. A moment after that, the Spiritual Array would collapse, before transforming into dots of light that blotted the skies, before dissipating away.

On the outskirts of the bamboo forest, Su'er exclaimed in astonishment at the spectacle before her. In a short span of time that hadn't even reached half a month, Mu Chen had already broken away from the miserable state he was in during the beginning of the training. Obviously, he had also managed to grasp some concepts and understandings. Furthermore, even Su'er could see that Mu Chen's ability to find and identify the Array Cores was getting increasingly formidable.

Although Ling Xi did not use any methods to conceal the Spiritual Arrays' Array Cores, wanting to find and identify them in such a situation was, by itself, an extremely difficult task. Let's not mention a Fourth Grade

Spiritual Array Master, even a Fifth Grade Spiritual Array Master would be hard pressed to accomplish that feat. However, Mu Chen was able to improve to such a level in a short span of ten plus days; this was already an extremely difficult feat to pull off.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

While Su'er was gasping in astonishment, following the howls of exploding fists, the layers of Spiritual Arrays within the depths of the bamboo forest were completely broken. As the dots of light that blotted the skies surfaced, they presented an exceptionally spectacular scene.

Whoosh!

As the final Spiritual Array shattered apart, a figure swept out and landed beside Su'er. As the brilliance faded, it revealed the naked upper torso of Mu Chen, with some blood stains present.

"Here, Big Brother Mu Chen," said Su'er as she intimately handed him a set of clothes. The little lady was no longer embarrassed, since she had seen too much for the past few days, thus becoming used to it.

Putting on the new set of clothes, Mu Chen wiped away the few blood stains on his body. Although intense pain still radiated from his body, he had already gotten used to it after a few days. Therefore, Mu Chen didn't end up in the same unbearable state as the first day, where he had almost collapsed due to a depletion of mental and physical strength.

"Big Brother Mu Chen, how's your comprehension on your Heart's Eye State?" asked Su'er curiously .

"I'm still lacking a bit," replied Mu Chen helplessly with a smile. He had felt that fantastic feeling once again just now. However, he didn't know why he felt as thought there was something slightly lacking. This feeling was akin to a little bird trapped within an egg and was trying to break the shell and escape, only to find that the shell was too hard. Unable to escape even after struggling, it appeared extremely distorted.

However, Mu chen was not overly greedy. Having such an improvement over these past few days was already considered a pretty good result.

Although he was very confident of his talent, the Heart's Eye State was, after all, one that was much deeper and profound. It wasn't that easy to control it.

"Then, Big Brother Mu Chen, you have to work harder. Yesterday, Elder Sister Ling Xi said that your improvement is too slow. If she was impatient, she would immediately chase you away," said Su'er.

Mu Chen immediately became speechless. After interacting for ten days, it could be considered that he managed to gain some understanding about Ling Xi. This lady truly had a strong character, and would do anything she wanted to do. Although Mu Chen believed that he did not dare to offend her, there truly was a possibility that, someday, she would become unhappy, and drive him out for no apparent reason.

"Su'er, do you know exactly how old she is?"

Taking a stealthy look at his surroundings, Mu Chen quietly posed this question to Su'er. He was extremely anxious and curious about this question. Within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, it was the first time he had seen such a youthful Elder. Her age seemed to be not much older than his own. However, he did not dare to say this definitively, the possibility existed for some experts with unfathomable strength to change their appearances, just like Elder Zhu Tian with his youthful appearance. However, with a single look, Mu Chen was able to see that his youthful appearance was just a façade. The ancient aura filled with vicissitude was unable to be concealed.

However, Mu Chen was unable to sense such an aura coming from Ling Xi. Although the latter was cold and indifferent, she did not have an ancient aura coming from her.

"Hmm, Elder Sister Ling Xi never talked about this before. However, she only allows me to call her Elder Sister. I think that her age shouldn't be big..." Hearing Mu Chen's question, Su'er immediately suppressed her voice. Her big eyes were now filled with excitement. From the looks of it, her gossipy heart was no weaker than Mu Chen's.

Mu Chen nodded his head in agreement. If the disparity between their

ages was truly large, there shouldn't be the matter of her asking Su'er to call her Elder Sister...

However, if that was truly the case. This truly would be a bit frightening. Just how old was she? She actually possessed such terrifying strength. This would simply cause Shen Cangsheng and the rest of the elite students to die of a heart attack.

"In fact, I think that even Elder Sister Ling Xi isn't too clear about her age, since she seems to have forgotten a lot of things..." said Su'er as she tilted her head from side-to-side, looking somewhat puzzled.

Mu Chen immediately gawked. Forgotten? His brows started to faintly wrinkle up. The feeling this Ling Xi gave people was that she was slightly too mysterious, with no one knowing exactly where she came from. This world truly had lots of mysterious and unfathomable things.

Just as he wanted to probe further, a familiar figure dressed in white appeared in the distance, causing him to hastily shut his mouth. Similarly, Su'er stuck her little tongue out, while giving a pretentious act of helping Mu Chen with cleaning his blood stains.

As Ling Xi slowly walked over, her clear and icy pupils shot a look at Mu Chen as she said, "Looks like you've some spare energy left today."

One could hear the faint chilling intent within her voice.

Mu Chen gave a dry laugh.

"Since you're done with your training, why are you still here, instead of going back?"

Immediately following her question, Ling Xi gave her next order, "From tomorrow onwards, the number of Spiritual Arrays will increase to 30. After five days, you'll enter the Spiritual Array House. If you're still unable to open your Heart's Eye State, you can go fumble around by yourself. I won't teach such a stupid person."

In response, Mu Chen gave a smile, without any bitterness shown on his face. He was, in fact, extremely curious to the point of anxiousness towards the so-called 'Spiritual Array House'. From Su'er's words, it

seemed to be a place that was quite frightening. However, from Ling Xi's words, didn't it seem as though that place had some use towards opening his Heart's Eye?

As this harbored this thought within his heart, he gave Su'er's little head a rub, before saying his goodbyes and leaving.

Upon seeing Mu Chen leave, Ling Xi glared at Su'er while saying, "Do you want to see what I'll do to you if you dare to say nonsense about me?"

"Su'er won't dare to do it anymore," replied Su'er hastily as she shook her head. Elder Sister Ling Xi is so scary. She really did hear us.

"Why are you not cleaning the bamboo forest?"

"Mhm Mhm..." Su'er nodded her head repeatedly, before hugging the large broom that was taller than her and proceeding to sweep the bamboo forest that had turned into a mess by Mu Chen.

As Ling Xi looked towards the little figure of Su'er, a faint smile surfaced at the corner of her mouth. In the next moment, she seemed to think about something as a somewhat blank expression presented itself slightly in her eyes. Giving a soft sigh, she turned around and headed back to the bamboo house, before entering its depths. Presently, there was a little bamboo house with tightly shut doors.

Opening the doors of the bamboo house, one could not see a single speck of dust within, with everything within being considerably simple and organised. A praying mat was present within the house, while a painting hung on the wall in front of it. The painting seemed to be of a black-coloured pagoda. A vague and indistinct figure of a lady sitting down was present on top of the pagoda. The figure was extremely blurry and indistinct. However, it gave people a feeling of peace and tranquility.

Ling Xi proceeded to kneel and sat down on the praying mat, before staring blankly at the painting. A blank and vacant expression fluctuated within her beautiful eyes, as if she was trying hard to remember something. However, after exhaling a breath of air with some pain, she clutched her forehead with her white hands as her black hair spilt all over the floor, causing her slender figure to appear exceedingly frail and

miserable.

...

This was a desolated area of mountains and fields. On the summit of a lone peak stood a youth dressed in black with his hands behind his back. A black sword was carried on his back, while a black dragon mark sat within his forehead. An aura of extreme chill radiated from the dragon mark, giving people a terrifying feeling that would make them tremble in fear.

That familiar appearance was Mo Longzi.

Faintly panning his head, he looked at a distance far away in the north as a cruel and frosty smile surfaced at the corner of his mouth.

"Chasing me for so long... you two really have perseverance...However, this time, I'm afraid that you two won't be able to return...this is the grand feast that I've specially prepared for you two..."

"Ha ha...if I'm able to kill the 1st and 2nd place of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, would I be able to exceed him on their Bounty List?"

"I truly look forward to it..."

A soft and chilling laughter slowly rang out from the mountain peak as the figure dressed in black started to slowly dissipate in the air.

Chapter 354: Spiritual Array House

Due to a single statement by Ling Xi, for the next five days, it was very clear that Mu Chen's life was unbearably tough and painful. With thirty Fourth Grade Spiritual Arrays grinding him to the point between life and death, he was left battered and exhausted.

However, it was fortunate that after enduring a period of the demonic training, Mu Chen could be said to have developed some resistance to it. Therefore, after successively failing in completing his training of breaking the thirty Spiritual Arrays, Mu Chen finally successfully accomplished it with extreme difficulty on the fourth day. However, the price he paid was an immediate loss of consciousness due to being totally drained upon exiting the Spiritual Arrays, which result in him being dragged back to the Freshmen area by Su'er.

For the fifth day, Mu Chen took the entire day's worth of time to recuperate, which resulted in him finally recovering. However, there was still a slight lingering fear within him. thirty Fourth Grade Spiritual Arrays; even though it was of the training Grade, it was sufficient to make a huge percentage of people at the Heavenly Completion Stage to completely lose the colour on their faces.

Naturally, having completed this training did not equate to Mu Chen being able to confront thirty Fourth Grade Spiritual Arrays when engaging in battle against others. Training and real life combat were, after all, not the same. The enemies faced during combat would not immediately arrange their Spiritual Arrays like that and leave them without any further control to let anyone search and probe their patterns.

However, this did not mean that the training did not have any effect. As of now, Mu Chen believed that if he met one or two Fourth Grade Spiritual Arrays, he would absolutely be able to effortlessly dispel them, without any kind of consumption of his strength.

His understanding and familiarity towards Spiritual Arrays had undoubtedly become much more refined after this half a month.

The fifth day was being used completely by Mu Chen to recuperate. Only on the next day did he continue to head back to Ling Xi's small courtyard.

As Mu Chen walked into the small courtyard, a girl dressed in a skirt as white as snow was sitting near the bamboo ledge within the green and verdant bamboo house. Propping her lovely cheek with her white hand, her beautiful eyes gazed onto the ground, with no focal point within her sight, while a faint expression was present on her beautiful face. That vacantness masked her original icy and indifferent expression, causing her to give people an additional beautiful feeling of frailness upon seeing her.

Ling Xi's appearance was already extremely beautiful, with only her icy indifference that forced people a thousand miles away, making Mu Chen not daring to say much in front of her. However, spotting the former with such a rare expression caused him to go into a daze upon seeing her.

While Mu Chen was in a daze, Ling Xi had also discovered his arrival, causing those beautiful eyes to immediately refocus, becoming the usual iciness and indifferentness once again.

"Hmm, you've arrived, Big Brother Mu Chen! Are your injuries healed?" Su'er's small head extended from the bamboo house at this moment. Upon seeing Mu Chen, happiness filled her little face.

Sending a smile towards her, Mu Chen cupped his hands and greeted Ling Xi, "Elder Ling Xi."

Ling Xi shot a look at him, before saying in her usual indifferent tone, "Before everything, I have to tell you that the Spiritual Array House is extremely dangerous. Although you've gotten seriously injured during your usual training here, that is, after all, within the boundaries of your limits. However, the inside of the Spiritual Array House is different from your training. Once you make a slip, your little life will be lost in there. Furthermore, at that time, I'll not save you, as this is your own decision. Your life and death is of no concern to me."

Mu Chen's expression turned faintly solemn as he asked, "After entering the Spiritual Array House, would I then be able to open my Heart's Eye?"

With the slightest bit of mercy, Ling Xi destroyed Mu Chen's hopes with

a single reply, "Do you think you're capable of doing that?"

Mu Chen gave a bitter laugh.

"You've already managed to touch the Heart's Eye State, with the only thing stopping you is your inability to open it. However, the final step you're lacking in might only be broken through during a life-or-death situation. Although the usual training is dangerous, it hasn't reached such a degree of danger," replied Ling Xi with her usual clear and cold voice.

"Naturally, you can choose a different method from this. However, I'll only give you, at most, half a month of time. If you're still unable to open your Heart's Eye at that time, my guidance will also end right there." Ling Xi's voice didn't present many fluctuations within, and same with her emotions and feelings.

She was naturally icy and indifferent, and didn't have a single shred of a relationship with Mu Chen. If not for Dean Tai Cang and Su'er, she would simply ignore him. As of now, helping him for half a month was, to her, already considered as doing her best.

Already clear about her character and temperament, Mu Chen didn't feel any anger or frustration. After a moment of deep thought, he nodded his head firmly.

"I choose to enter the Spiritual Array House."

He was similarly able to feel that he was somewhat lacking just one step. However, regardless of how much more training he did, that one step was difficult to stride over. Perhaps it truly was like what Ling Xi had said, that he need the stimulation present in a life-or-death situation to be able to truly open his Heart's Eye.

Although he knew that this would be extremely dangerous, courage and bravery were things that Mu Chen never lacked. If he was overly cautious, Mu Chen felt that he would have already died long ago during the days within the Spiritual Road, even more so to walk to the step he was at now.

Mu Chen's decision caused Ling Xi to take another look at him, before giving a calm and faint nod with her beautiful face as she turned and

walked off.

"Follow me."

Mu Chen immediately followed suited, with Su'er hastily following along. At this moment, worry and concern flooded her tiny face. She was very clear about how frightening the Spiritual Array House was. Once a problem arose while one was inside, even one's life might have no guarantees.

The three of them passed through the quiet and serene courtyard to the deepest part of the area. This place appeared extremely spacious, with only a dilapidated stone house present in front of them. The stone house was covered in moss, giving people an ancient feeling filled with vicissitudes upon seeing it.

Ling Xi came to a stop before the stone house. Forming a seal with her jade-like hands, a ray of Spiritual Energy shot out, before enveloping the dilapidated stone house.

Humm! Humm!

Following the enveloping brilliance, the stone house started to shudder, before rapidly expanding within Mu Chen's astonished gaze. In a short span of a few breaths, the stone house had transformed into a gigantic stone hall. Within the surroundings of the stone hall, one could faintly discern the mysterious runic lines flickering with a dim brilliance.

"This is..." Staring at the stone hall, a faint flash appeared within Mu Chen's gaze as thick astonishment erupted from within his eyes as he asked, "Is this a Spiritual Artifact?"

From the stone hall, Mu Chen was able to to feel the unique fluctuations possessed only by a Spiritual Artifact.

"Hehe. This Spiritual Array House isn't any ordinary Spiritual Artifact. According to Elder Sister Ling Xi, it was previously a Quasi-Divine Artifact. However, due to it being broken, its grade had dropped. Now, it's a Peerless Rank Spiritual Artifact. However, even if that was the case, due to extremely strong Spiritual Arrays concealed within it , even a Sovereign

would be trapped and find it hard to escape from within if he ever landed within it," replied Su'er with a cheeky smile.

"Quasi-Divine Artifact?" Mu Chen involuntarily sucked in a breath of cold air as he looked at Ling Xi's beautiful figure with strange gaze. Exactly what was her background? She was actually able to possess a Quasi-Divine Artifact that would even shake the heart of Sovereign Realm experts. Out of all the many Elders within the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, even the Heavenly Seat Elders, like Mo You and Zhu Tian, might not even possess a Quasi-Divine Artifact.

Furthermore, what kind of frightening person or thing was able to cause this previously Quasi-Divine Artifact to drop a Rank to become an Peerless Rank Spiritual Artifact?

Mu Chen quietly clicked his tongue. This Ling Xi was truly getting more and more mysterious.

Ignoring the two behind her, Ling Xi stared at the dilapidated stone hall, while going into a daze as a vacant expression flash within her beautiful eyes. Only after quite a while later did she give a faint sigh. With a wave of her white hand, rumbling sounds rang out of the tightly shut stone doors as they slowly started to open, bit by bit. Instantly after this, boundless Spiritual Energy fluctuations swept out from within.

"Prepare to go in. I can only open the first level of the Spiritual Array House. However, even though that's the case, it's sufficient to kill you. Therefore, you better focus all of your concentration. It's the same statement I've said earlier. Even if you are at death's door, I'll not take any action to save you. In all, you can only rely on your own strength." Ling Xi reminded in an indifferent tone.

Mu Chen took a deep breath, before his expression turned firm and solemn. Facing a frightening thing that was even able to trap a Sovereign expert within, if he just lost even a slight amount of concentration, he might be killed, spick and span.

However, in such a moment, even if there were mountains of daggers or seas of flames in front of him, he would still give it a go.

Mu Chen resolutely stepped forward, before walking straight into the opened stone door. Glowing Spiritual Energy erupted from within, slowly submerging and devouring him.

Bang! Rumble.

As Mu Chen entered through the doors, low rumbling sounds rang out as the stone doors slowly started to close, bit by bit, before restraining the brilliance that blotted the skies back.

Su'er's little hands were clenched tightly as she looked towards the tightly shut stone doors. Stealing a glance at the beautiful face of Ling Xi, which was filled with an indifferent expression, she asked in a small voice, "Elder Sister Ling Xi, what if Big Brother Mu Chen really can't hold on any longer. You would save him, right?"

Glancing at Su'er, Ling Xi replied with a tone that was almost devoid of emotion. "That's his decision, so he has to take responsibility for himself. If this was just due to a spur of hot-headedness, it serves him right if he dies. If he was only of such a level, regardless of what kind of results he ends up in, I won't feel any pity."

Hearing Ling Xi's cold and detached words and tone, Su'er's big eyes started to uncontrollably turn red as she spoke out, "Elder sister Ling Xi, you're clearly very good hearted...why do you have to act like that? You've scared me."

Looking over towards Su'er's reddening eyes, Ling Xi's expression become much more complicated. Hugging the little girl, she muttered, "Perhaps because I was previously like that. Therefore, the current me would reject such a feeling. Being more cold, being more heartless, that seems to be the only way to better protect myself..."

...

When Mu Chen's body was enveloped by the Spiritual Light that erupted out, he was able to clearly sense that the surrounding space had started to change. Upon sobering up, he discovered that he was now in a place that seemed to be a world of unending starry skies.

Within the starry skies were boundless rivers of stars, causing people to feel a sense of dread surfacing within their hearts.

As Mu Chen stood within the starry skies, he could gradually feel a sense of danger erupting from within his heart. Raising his head, he discovered that the surrounding starry skies were starting to transform at this moment. As the stars roared, they proceeded to condense and form a shape within the sky. Layer by layer it formed, as if the starlight was permeated out, before forming something akin to a gigantic Spiritual Array.

Boundless Spiritual Energy was present in that Spiritual Array formed from the stars, while the Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiating out of it were even more tyrannical than the "Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array" form from the two lotuses that Mu Chen had arranged before.

This caused Mu Chen's expression to faintly change. This Spiritual Array was already at the Fifth Grade. Even people with that had reached the Heavenly Completion Stage would not dare to meet it head-on.

This Spiritual Array House truly was extremely dangerous!

Could he truly crash his way through?

Mu Chen's expression grew grave, as uncertainty surfaced within his heart.

Chapter 355: Pursuit of Life and Death

Hum. Hum.

Boundless and erratic Spiritual Energy started to sweep out from the starry skies. In the next instant, the gigantic Spiritual Array that was seemingly formed from the stars started to immediately revolve, causing starlight to condense, while fluctuations that caused people to shutter started to spread out.

Mu Chen's expression was now grave and solemn, and did not dare to show the slightest moment of neglect. If he made the slightest mistake under a Spiritual Array of such a rank, he might truly be unable to walk out of this Spiritual Array House.

His gaze swept acutely over the complicated Spiritual Array in an attempt to find the pattern of its orbital tracks. However, very quickly, he gave up this idea. The Spiritual Array here was no longer those simple ones that he had faced during his training, true killing intent was permeating from it.

Furthermore, this Spiritual Array was clearly being controlled externally, and it wasn't by Ling Xi. This was due to this "Spiritual Array House". Being a Spiritual Artifact of such a degree, it had already formed a basic level of consciousness. Without needing any control from Ling Xi, it was already able to display the might of this Spiritual Artifact.

Therefore, Mu Chen wanting to find the Array Core of the Spiritual Array formed by it with ease and break it was obviously impossible.

Bang!

The Spiritual Array furiously revolved, condensing the ray of starlight. Unexpectedly, it immediately transformed into a giant meteor. At an extremely astonishing speed, it split apart the horizon, instantly enveloping a hundred metre radius around Mu Chen.

This incoming pressure caused Mu chen's clothes to start ripping and tearing. With a grave expression on his face, he swiftly retreated, while

forming a seal with his hands. Boundless Spiritual Energy erupted from him, before transforming into a similar stretch of starry sky behind him, where a white tiger came bounding over.

Roar!

As the white tiger roared, it strode over the starry sky. Transforming into starlight, he violently smashed head-on against the incoming meteor.

Boom!

At the instant of impact, the entire stretch of the starry sky seemed to shuddered. Erratic Spiritual Energy shock waves wreaked havoc as they spread out, before shattering the resisting white tiger starlight into bits.

Receiving such a heavy strike, Mu Chen's body was miserably forced back. A sweet taste erupted from the back of his mouth, but was forcefully swallowed back down. At this moment, his gaze grew increasingly grave as he thought, This Spiritual Array truly is not easy to deal with.

Bang! Rumble!

As the attack started to open the heavy curtains, the Spiritual Array had completely erupted out. As it revolved, it fluctuated with thousands of brilliant rays, before the starlight started to condense one after another, forming shapes of meteors once again.

Mu Chen's forehead started to wrinkled as he thought, I have to get break and get rid of that Spiritual Array as fast as possible. If not, I might be consumed to death by it, sooner or later.

"Since I can't see through you, I'll just have to forcefully break you!"

A cold glint erupted within Mu Chen's eyes. In the previous training, due to Ling Xi's instruction for him not to forcefully break the Spiritual Arrays, Mu Chen could only rely on another way. However, if he continued using that method, he might not even be able to hold onto his little life.

If the Spiritual Array was to truly revolve, its might could be comparable to a true Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phase expert, even stronger than Xue Shi by a sliver. Therefore, Mu Chen had to break it as fast as

possible.

With that intent in his head, Mu Chen did not continue to hesitate. Spiritual Energy burning with black flames pervaded out, before transforming into a starry sky behind him. However, this time, the starry sky was exceedingly vast, while three gigantic beastial figures rapidly took shape within it.

"Four Gods Constellation Scripture, Divine Seal of the White Tiger!"

"Divine Seal of the Black Tortoise!"

"Divine Seal of the Vermillion Bird!"

At this instant, Mu Chen launched his attack. Without the slightest bit of hesitation, the three great Divine Seals simultaneously flew out. As torrential Spiritual Energy pervaded the sky, the three giant beasts raised their heads and roared towards the sky. At this instant, their might had already reach a considerably terrifying level.

Swish! Swish!

Within the Spiritual Array, the numerous meteors were already formed. Hiding the skies and covering the earth, they rumbled straight at Mu Chen.

Mu Chen's expression turned icy cold. Bringing his hands together, he formed a seal, before sending a fist rumbling out.

Roar!

Instantly, bringing along incomparably erratic Spiritual Energy fluctuations, three gigantic beastial figures roared and shot out from the starry sky behind him. Akin to the exceptionally savage beasts, they violently smashed head-on towards the meteors that blotted the sky.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Meteor after meteor rapidly shattered as they impacted against the three beastial figures, while the three beastial figures appeared to be smashing through twigs, before finally smashing into the gigantic Spiritual Array. The astonishing Spiritual Energy wrecked havoc as the Spiritual Array

violently shook, before finally breaking apart.

As the points of light that blotted the sky started to descend, Mu Chen looked towards the collapsed Spiritual Array, before heaving a huge sigh of relief, as if a heavy load had come off his shoulders. All things considered, he had broken the Spiritual Array.

However, a number of breaths after he had started to relax, his expression slowly started to turn ugly, bit by bit.

This was due to what he was seeing before him; boundless Spiritual Energy was condensing once again at the place where the Spiritual Array had collapsed. As brilliant rays of light rippled out, a Spiritual Array surfaced once again. Although this Spiritual Array was different from the previous one, the fluctuations that radiated from it were just as strong.

Furthermore, Mu Chen was able to see what seemed like an even bigger Spiritual Array condensing and taking shape at the outskirts of this completed Spiritual Array.

Hiss.

This scene before him caused Mu Chen to suck in a breath of cold air as his expression started to turn slightly pale. This Spiritual Array House was actually able to arrange other Spiritual Arrays! What kind of Spiritual Artifact was this?! This was simply akin to facing a Spiritual Array Master with a considerably rich experience in arranging Spiritual Arrays!

Furthermore, it was a Spiritual Array Master that was of a higher rank than him. Maybe, it had already reached the realm of a rank.

"Such a terrifying Spiritual Artifact," muttered Mu Chen, as his heart started to tremble. This Spiritual Array House was really too powerful. Anyone that possessed it would basically possess the most obedient Great Spiritual Array Master. Furthermore, there would never be any emotional qualms with its actions. It would do what you asked it to do, with the greatest strength possible.

No wonder why Su'er said that it possessed the capability to trap a Sovereign within it. Previously, Mu Chen still had a little bit of doubt.

However, as of now, he did not dare to have a single shred of doubt about that anymore.

"Look's like this way simply doesn't work."

Mu Chen's expression was extremely serious and solemn. Although, according to the words of Ling Xi, this was seemingly just the first level of the Spiritual Array House. However to deal with him, it appeared that this was more than enough. To put it bluntly, he was clearly not this Spiritual Array House's match.

Since using the brute force method wouldn't work, the only way was to search for a way to truly dispel it.

Mu Chen's forehead tightly scrunched up. After quite a long while, he took a deep breath. From the looks of it, the only way for him to walk out from this Spiritual Array House would be to open his Heart's Eye.

Furthermore, the time he could endure in there wasn't long. Within this period of time, if he was unable to open his Heart's Eye, what might lie for him, would be death.

"There truly isn't any other road to walk."

Mu Chen muttered to himself. However, there wasn't a single shred of dread within his eyes. Instead, present within them was the brilliance, sharp and incisive gaze. Staring at the gigantic revolving Spiritual Array, he proceeded to slowly close his eyes.

He had entered into the Heart Array State once again, in order to find the mystery behind all of this.

Bang! Bang!

While Mu Chen was closing his eyes, the Spiritual Array was already revolving. Like a giant dragon's roar, surges of Spiritual Energy flooded out, crushing down against Mu Chen.

At this moment, Mu Chen had already activated his Dragon Soaring Art to his maximum ability to evade the incoming floods. As for those attacks that he was unable to evade, the only thing he could do would be to

forcefully receive them with his body. Therefore, within a short span of half a minute, blood had started to flow out of his black lightning-encased body. From the looks of it, he appeared extremely miserable.

Ignoring the gradually intensifying injuries appearing on his body, Mu Chen's state-of-mind was akin to an endless abyss; without the slightest ripple, while the outside world was totally shut off. At this moment, his state-of-mind had seemingly sunk slowly down to the deepest part of his consciousness.

From the outside, Su'er's face turned pale as she saw the scene unfolding within the light screen in front of her. Surges of frightening Spiritual Energy howled from within the light screen, while Mu Chen's figure appeared extremely small. Every single time an attack landed on him, the latter's body would violently tremble, before spurting out blood. As of now, he appeared as if he was made from blood.

By his side, Ling Xi's beautiful eyes were also focused on the light screen. The only difference being that her gaze was clearly much more calm as she quietly stared at the figure of the youth surrounded by the perils of boundless Spiritual Energy surges. Her present feelings were as if nothing that happened in the world would able to cause an overly strong emotional reaction in her.

Bang!

Mu Chen's body was struck by a Spiritual Energy surge. A gruesome-looking wound appeared as the muscles on his chest were slashed apart. His bones were visible within it as blood bubbled and poured out. While this happened, black lightning flashed erratically, trying to reduce the damage caused by the injury.

The Spiritual Energy surrounding Mu Chen's body had already become weak, similar to his vitality at this moment.

Mu Chen's consciousness had similarly discovered this faintly lethargic and weak feeling that had a faint taste of death.

That fantastic feeling had already appeared. However, he was still unable to truly open his Heart's Eye.

Just a bit more!

Furious roars seemed to ring out within Mu Chen's heart. Just that little bit more! However, his Heart's Eye located within the depths of his consciousness was still unable to be opened!

It's not enough! The threat from death isn't enough!

Mu Chen's eyes opened furiously, as some craziness surged within his eyes. Although he had already suffered heavy injuries on his body, it was still not enough!

With a hard clench of his teeth, he shot out in a perfectly straight line, heading towards a Spiritual Energy surge sweeping towards him.

Upon seeing such a crazy action by him, Su'er was frightened to the point of screaming out.

Ling Xi's gaze was still calm and serene. However, her beautiful eyes had started to narrow.

Bang!

As the Spiritual Energy surge swept across Mu Chen's body, blood spurted out, akin to a fountain. His body instantly shot back, while appearing to have somewhat caved in. At this moment, the Spiritual Energy fluctuations erupting from his body had started to slowly grow dim.

Almost as if it was about to dissipate.

Mu Chen's consciousness had similarly started to slowly grow dim and dark, while a thick flavor of death erupted from his heart. Under the embrace of death, his mind and consciousness seemed to start sinking into the unending darkness.

As this darkness continued on without end, there seemed to be something trembling within it. Finally, something akin to a newly born eye slowly opened up.

As Mu Chen's mind descended into the darkness of death, the Spiritual Array House did not stop due to that. Spiritual Energy surges howled out,

hiding the skies and covering the earth as they rumbled towards the floating Mu Chen.

"Please save him quickly, Elder Sister Ling Xi!" Su'er cried out anxiously as she frantically grabbed onto Ling Xi's arm.

With a soft sigh, Ling Xi faintly raised her jade-like hand.

However, just as she was able to take action, within the light screen, humongous rays of black light suddenly erupted of Mu Chen's body. In the next moment, after enveloping him within, they rapidly condensed together, forming a gigantic black pagoda, protecting him within it.

Bang! Bang!

The Spiritual Energy surges violently impacted against the black pagoda, causing resplendent rays of brilliance to instantly erupt out.

"Eh?" Su'er gawked in response to the changes happening before her, before breathing a huge sigh of relief. Looks like Big Brother Mu Chen was prepared for this.

"Elder Sister Ling Xi."

Raising her head, Su'er looked towards Ling Xi, only to be astonished by what she saw. At this moment, the latter was staring blankly towards the black pagoda, within the light screen, that had enveloped Mu Chen as her delicate figure was faintly trembling. Her expression and current appearance were things that Su'er had never seen before.

Chapter 356: Painting

Bang!

Within the Spiritual Array House, a gigantic black-coloured glowing pagoda appeared, protecting Mu Chen within it, while blocking all of the frightening Spiritual Energy streams heading towards him.

As the erratic Spiritual Energy smashed against the glowing black pagoda, the body of the pagoda started to shake and hum.

Bang! Rumble!

After the wave of attacks were blocked, the interior of the Spiritual Array started to change, and the gigantic Spiritual Array at the outermost boundary started to slowly revolve. In the next instant, Spiritual Energy fluctuations that would make even a Heavenly Completion Stage expert change face started to radiate out.

The Spiritual Array House had felt the tyrannical power of the glowing black pagoda, and was attempting to use an even greater force to destroy it.

The glowing black pagoda had also sensed the incoming danger, since its body instantly started to faintly tremble. Black halos started to spread out in its surroundings, forming a defense as it attempted to forcefully block the incoming attack.

Bang! Rumble!

The gigantic Spiritual Array started to take shape at an extreme speed. After resolving, a streak of light, akin to a giant dragon, brandished its fangs and claws as it rushed out. As it shot out, even the space around it started to distort.

Under the giant dragon-like streak of light, even the glowing black pagoda appeared somewhat minute and insignificant.

Just as the giant dragon-like streak of light swept over and was able to smash into the black pagoda, Mu Chen, who was within the pagoda, furiously opened his eyes. At that instant, his eyes appeared transparent,

almost as if they were made of crystals. They looked as if they were able to see through the myriad of things within the world, appearing extremely bizarre and mysterious.

Passing through the black pagoda, his gaze locked onto the giant dragon-like streak of light sweeping towards him. The power contained within it was simply not something that any ordinary Heavenly Completion Stage expert could endure.

If it freely impacted against the black pagoda, even it might shatter into pieces.

Rays of brilliance erupted from Mu Chen's transparent-like eyes, before furiously standing up. As he stood up, the gigantic black pagoda started to rapidly shrink, before re-entering his body.

As a result, Mu Chen was completely exposed to the giant dragon-like streak of light.

At this moment, the degree of transparency of his eyes grew increasingly clear. Locking onto the giant dragon-like streak of light, within his eyes, it appeared akin to a sea of Spiritual Energy, with countless Spiritual Energy streams coming together within it...

Seeing this, Mu Chen's eyes crazily flashed, before Spiritual Energy erupted from his body without a shred of restraint. In the next instant, transforming into a streak of light, he smashed head-on against the giant dragon-like streak of light.

As Su'er observed this spectacle happening, her little face instantly turned pale. She was able to recognise that this Spiritual Array was the strongest one within the first level of the Spiritual Array House. Even a Heavenly Completion Stage expert would definitely turn into ashes under its attack, with no trace of one's corpse.

"Elder Sister Ling Xi, please save..." Su'er spoke out urgently, while continuously tugging and shaking Ling Xi's jade-like hand.

Still in a daze, Ling Xi finally regained her clarity due to Su'er's shaking. Resisting the trembling within her heart, she frantically looked towards

the light screen, before noticing the scene of Mu Chen rushing straight towards the giant dragon-like streak of light. Instantly, her beautiful face intensely contorted. With a raise of her jade-like hand, a streak of light shot towards the Spiritual Array House as she roared, "Stop for me!"

Humm.

Following her furious roar, the boundless Spiritual Light within the Spiritual Array House instantly dissipated. At the same instant, the gigantic revolving Spiritual Array within had started to slowly dissipate, bit by bit.

Within the light screen, the boundless and vast Spiritual Energy fluctuations dissipated, leaving everything empty and devoid. At this moment, Mu Chen's figure had also disappeared, almost as if he had been turned into ashes.

Losing all colour to her face, Su'er looked towards the interior of the light screen as her little body continued to shiver.

At this moment, a vacant expression filled Ling Xi's eyes as an indescribable feeling erupted from her heart. She had now discovered that she seemed to have made a mistake in something that was very important to her.

That black pagoda that had previously protected Mu Chen...wasn't that the same black pagoda within that painting? Why did he possess it? Although she had lost a lot of her memories, she still knew about that black pagoda, and it was very important to her...

Clenching her jade-like hands, her fingernails pierced her palms, bringing about intense pain. However, at this moment, she had yet to take notice of it, and continued to stare absentmindedly into the distance, almost as if she had lost her soul.

An adult and a child stood before the Spiritual Array House that had already transformed into its previous dilapidated stone house look. Not speaking a single word, a gentle breeze blew through, bringing about a bone-piercing chilling intent.

Crack!

Just as their bodies and hearts had started to turn into ice, the stone doors of the dilapidated stone house started to be slowly pushed open. In the next moment, a miserable-looking figure covered in blood walked out from it.

Slightly at a loss, both of them raised their heads and looked towards Mu Chen standing before the stone doors, covered in blood and deathly pale, before gawking out.

"Big Brother Mu Chen, you're still alive!"

Su'er was the first to regain clarity, and instantly shot forward in elation upon doing so. In the next instant, the little girl had already leaped and lunged towards him. Upon seeing this, Mu Chen hastily blocked her slender waist. As a wave of force came over, it caused the seriously injured him to spurt out a sliver of blood from his mouth. Making a bitter laugh, he thought, I'm truly slightly unlucky this time.

"Ah! Big brother Mu Chen! I'm sorry, I'm sorry! Are you alright?" Upon discovering how heavy the injuries were on Mu Chen, Su'er frantically retreated, before exclaiming in panic.

Mu Chen weakly gestured with his hand. It was fortunate that he had refined his Lightning God's Physique; if not, he might truly be unable to withstand that lunge from her.

Whoosh!

Like a specter, Ling Xi's beautiful figure appeared before Mu Chen. At that moment, the usually cold and detached eyes that were far from any human emotion were filled with flood-like fluctuations as she stared tightly at Mu Chen.

"Please don't play with me like that, Elder Ling Xi..."

Seeing her actions, Mu Chen was frightened to the point of retreating two steps back, while his face grew increasingly pale. It could be considered that he was slightly afraid of this Ling Xi. Previously, he had truly almost died within the Spiritual Array House. If not for him opening

his Heart's Eye at the critical moment, everything would point to disaster for him.

When Ling Xi noticed Mu Chen increasingly pale face, she felt slightly awkward. After hesitating awhile, she extended her jade-like hand and grabbed onto Mu Chen's arm, sending gentle and mild Spiritual Energy into Mu Chen's body to aid in the recovery of his wounds.

Mu Chen was now truly frightened by Ling Xi's action as his startled gaze looked towards the beautiful lady in a dress that's as white as snow. For close to a month, this was the first time that he had seen her unlike her usual cold and detached self.

This had made him feel extremely uneasy.

At this moment, Su'er was also staring at Ling Xi in astonishment. After all, she was much more familiar towards Ling Xi than Mu Chen, and clearly understood that she was, in fact, having a strong obsession with cleanliness. Let's not talk about touching a male's hand, there were even times where she wouldn't even wish to speak any words to a male. In the past, when Mu Chen was here for training, she would immediately chase him away the moment it end, refusing to allow him to even stay for an additional moment.

Furthermore, during the times when Mu Chen was too fatigued and had fainted, she would order Su'er to bring him back.

However, as the current moment, Ling Xi had actually taken the initiative and helped Mu Chen treat his injuries. This truly was too inconceivable.

Just like this, the atmosphere within the three of them bizarrely calmed down, with only Mu Chen feeling uneasy about enjoying such an extremely rare gentleness shown to him. After quite a while later, when the intense pain within his body had slightly lessened, he gave a dry cough while saying, "That's more or less okay, Elder Ling Xi."

Only upon hearing his words did Ling Xi relax her jade-like hand. Retreating a step, she stared at Mu Chen while asking, "You've opened your Heart's Eye?"

Nodding his head, Mu Chen replied, "I've managed to open it at the final moment."

While saying those words, a smile that contained happiness from relieving a burden surfaced on his face. After this period of training, he finally had some returns. As of now, he had already truly opened the Heart's Eye State.

This would result in an extremely huge increase in his cultivation of Spiritual Arrays.

Ling Xi faintly nodded her head, while continuing to stare at Mu Chen. This caused the latter to feel a shiver in his heart, who gave a dry laugh and said, "Sorry for the inconvenience caused during this period of time, Elder Ling Xi. Mu Chen gives his thanks. My injuries today aren't light, so I'll be heading back to recover."

Completing his sentence, he was prepared to leave. However, just as he had moved his body, Ling Xi's beautiful body appeared before him. Staring tightly at him, the fluctuations present within her eyes weren't the usual frosty and indifference fluctuations.

"I want to ask you a question." Ling Xi's voice sounded somewhat impatient; however, it still remained clear and pleasing.

"Leave awhile, Su'er." said Ling Xi towards Su'er, who was staring at them with a strange look in her eyes.

In doubt, Su'er nodding her head, before rolling her big eyes and reminding her quietly, "Elder Sister Ling Xi, Big Brother Mu Chen has a girl that he likes..."

Before completing her sentence, she hastily slipped away, afraid of infuriating Ling Xi.

Ling Xi started to gawk due to her words, before a pinkish hue blossomed on her snow-like skin. Feeling exceptionally embarrassed, she naturally knew what Su'er was thinking about.

Mu Chen also felt slightly awkward, but fortunately he was very clear about his limitations. He absolutely didn't assume that Ling Xi, who had

treated him in such a cold and detached manner up to the point of causing huge confusion for him, would actually start to like him.

In actual fact, even having a favourable impression wasn't possible.

"Elder Ling Xi...may I know what you want to ask?" asked Mu Chen as he turned to look at Ling Xi. At this moment, the latter's beautiful and glittering eyes were still locked tightly onto him, almost as she didn't have the slightest intention of turning her gaze away.

As she continued to stare at Mu Chen, Ling Xi hesitated for quite a while, before a somewhat shivering voice rang out from her, "I want ask you, why is there that black pagoda within your body?"

"Black Pagoda?"

Mu Chen immediately gawked, before coming to an understanding. Ling Xi was talking about the Nine-layered Pagoda. However, this had made him feel slightly vigilant. The Nine-layered Pagoda was something that would appear after cultivating the Great Pagoda Art, while the Great Pagoda Art was left to him by his mother. This should also concern his mother, and according to what his father had said, his mother should be a very extraordinary person. Furthermore, she seemed to also possess an extremely formidable background. Therefore, being ever vigilant, he would not casually reveal such information to others.

"That's just a defensive Spiritual Artifact. There's nothing special about it," Mu Chen slowly replied, while similarly staring back at Ling Xi.

As Ling Xi continued to stare at Mu Chen, the expression within her eyes informed Mu Chen that she didn't believe what he had said.

Totally ignoring as to whether she believed it or not, Mu Chen smiled and said, "Can I go now, Elder Ling Xi?"

Ling Xi's beautiful eyes started to slightly waver. In the next moment, with a clench of her teeth, she extended her jade-like hand and grabbed Mu Chen's palm in a single go. Afterwards, she started to drag Mu Chen towards the depths of her courtyard.

Mu Chen attempted to struggled, but discovered that he was simply

unable to escape from Ling Xi's grasp. Thus, he could only give up in helplessness. Now, he truly wanted to find out exactly what this Ling Xi wanted to do today!

In the distance, as Su'er, who had hidden away, observed Mu Chen being forcefully dragged away by Ling Xi, the expression on her little face instantly became surprised. Pressing her little hands on her cheeks, a bitter expression started to form on her little face.

"Oh, no...Should I go and inform Big Sister Luo Li...?"

Creak.

As the bamboo doors were pushed open, the speckless bamboo house came into Mu Chen's view. Ling Xi continued dragging him in, and with a wave of her jade-like hand, causing the doors to shut tightly. Only then did she relax her grip on Mu Chen's hand. Walking up to the praying mat, she proceeded to sit on it, before raising her charming face to look at the painting hanging on the wall.

While rubbing his hand, which had a red imprint on it now, Mu Chen's gaze was sizing up his surroundings, before finally resting on the painting hanging on the wall.

The rubbing hand slowly froze, bit by bit, as the expression on Mu Chen's face similarly did the same.

His eyes were frozen on that painting.

Within the ancient paint was a black pagoda. There were nine levels present on it, and it seemed as if it could encompass the heavens and earth. However, Mu Chen did not pay too much attention to it as his gaze was firmly locked onto the top of the pagoda. Present there was a figure of a sitting lady.

The figure wasn't distinct, and one could faintly discern her long hair fluttering in the wind, while a startlingly peaceful aura could seemingly be felt radiating from her.

Despite that, when Mu Chen saw the blurry figure of this lady, it seemed as though he was struck by lightning. An indescribable feeling gushed out

from the deepest part of his heart. It was the deep, deep feeling of fondness that had stayed hidden for over ten years...

Within the deepest part of those blurry memories was an extremely gentle beautiful figure that seemed to be present. Holding the hands of a little infant, leaving behind a gentle smile.

That gentle figure had stayed within the deepest part of his heart for over ten years...

At this moment, Mu Chen's eyes had seemingly turned moist and blurry, while faint tremors shook his body. A hoarse voice, that had been suppressed for over ten years, rang out uncontrollably from the deepest part of his heart.

"Mom..."

Chapter 357: Relation

"Mother..."

Mu Chen's exceedingly hoarse voice rang out within this speckless bamboo house, before causing the two people within the bamboo house to suddenly turn quiet.

With extreme astonishment, Ling Xi tilted her head and stared at Mu Chen, as if she was still doubtful as to what she had heard. The figure of the lady within the painting, she was actually Mu Chen's mother?

An extremely complicated feeling started to unknowingly rise within her heart. This feeling was unable to be explained using words; however, it made her feel somewhat stifled within her heart.

"Are you saying that she's your mother?" slightly raising her eyebrows, she asked while pointing towards the paint with her slender and jade-like finger.

A surge went through Mu Chen's gaze as he stared at Ling Xi. At this moment, unconcealable emotions surged within his eyes as he replied, "Elder Ling Xi, where did you get this painting from? Do you recognise the lady in this painting?"

For the last few years, this was the first time he had managed to obtain any information regarding his mother. Although the figure in the painting was extremely blurry, there was an unquestionable feeling that she was definitely his mother.

Upon hearing his questions, her beautiful gaze turned slightly blank and vacant. Shaking her head, she replied, "I, too, don't know about it...I only know that she's extremely important to me. However, a problem seems to have appeared within my memories, because I've forgotten about a lot of things. I've also forgotten about her..."

"Furthermore... how could she be your mother?"

Although there were problems with her memory, an unknown feeling that stemmed from the deepest part of her heart made her feel

inconceivable as she stared at Mu Chen.

"Although I've never seen my Mother before, I can confirm that I've definitely not made a mistake." replied Mu Chen resolutely and decisively. That was a feeling that stemmed from the closeness of their bloodline. This was something that was absolutely correct, even though he had never seen his mother since he was young. The only thing left was a remnant shadow of a gentle figure within the deepest parts of his memory.

"You've never seen her before?"

For some unknown reason, Ling Xi quietly breathed a sigh of relief. However, in the next instant, her expression became complicated, since she felt as if she was one of two kids fighting over who their most favourite sweet would belong to.

Mu Chen nodded his head, before replying in a soft voice, "She had left when I was very young."

He didn't go into the details; after all, this was considered to be a family matter, and it was not needed for other people to know.

"Elder Ling Xi, do you truly not have even the slightest bit of information about her?" Mu Chen could not help asking as he looked towards Ling Xi. After finally obtaining some news after so much difficulty, he wouldn't let it easily slip out of his grasp.

Sitting on the praying mat, Ling Xi continued to look towards the figure of the lady within the black pagoda and replied, "My memories came to a halt to five years ago. After that, it becomes extremely blurry. I think it should be the handiwork if someone..."

Speaking until there, Ling Xi's voice became extremely cold and frosty, while hatred filled her words. If she knew the person who had done this to her, she would definitely kill that person!

"However, I can occasionally feel some fragments of my memories. Many, many years ago, I should have been together with her... I also know that she's a very important person to me. Therefore, regardless of anything, I want to recover my memories..." Ling Xi muttered to herself

while looking at the lady within the picture in a daze.

Hearing her muttering, Mu Chen gawked, before staring at Ling Xi. Unexpectedly, she's been together with Mother in the past? Exactly what relationship does she have with Mother?

While Mu Chen was still in a daze, Ling Xi had turned her head around, sending a slightly odd gaze towards him.

Seeing this, Mu Chen gave a dry laugh. In the next moment, his face turned somewhat green as he spoke out, "You really better not tell me that you're my long-lost sister or whatever...Me and my dad might not be able to endure such shocking news."

However, upon hearing his words, Ling Xi had truly thought about it, before asking, "Should we test it by dripping blood?"

Black lines instantly covered Mu Chen's face as he replied, "Don't fool around. That's useless."

Upon seeing the sweat-filled appearance of Mu Chen, Ling Xi could not help letting off a gentle laugh. At this moment, the cold and detached expression on her beautiful face had completely disappeared, causing her to appear exceedingly alluring.

"Okay, I'll not tease you." replied Ling Xi, "As of now, we're both not clear of the precise situation of this matter. However, I think that there would definitely be a chance to completely solve this mystery."

Mu Chen faintly nodded his head, although there was still some unease within his heart. If what Ling Xi said was true, that she was at his mother's side in the past, why did she suddenly leave? Furthermore, why did Ling Xi's memories get wiped? Could it be that they were met with some very big trouble, and was his mother still well, as of now?

"Now, can you tell me about the black pagoda within your body? If I'm right, she also possessed it..."said Ling Xi as she pointed towards the painting.

Remaining silent for a while longer, Mu Chen finally nodded his head. There was an unknown feeling telling him that the Ling Xi before him was

worthy to be trusted. Although this feeling might be related to his mother, it was a simple decision for him to make the selection to trust her.

"The cultivation technique that I'm practising is called the Great Pagoda Art. This was something that was left to me by my Mother, before she left. As for this black pagoda, it should be something that appears after cultivating in this technique."

Tilting his head, Mu Chen continued, "However, its might isn't as strong as I've imagine. Although, its defense is very strong, and is able to protect me."

"Great Pagoda Art?"

Hearing those three words, a flash of brilliance appeared within Ling Xi's eyes. Standing up, fluctuations appeared within her expression as this name gave an unknown feeling of familiarity within her.

Taking two steps forward, she appeared before Mu Chen. Extending her icy-cold jade-like hands, she grasped his hands, before linking their palms and ten fingers together.

Her lands appeared slender and fair, and was smaller than Mu Chen's by a size, which was just nice for Mu Chen to turn around and grasp hers. Naturally, as of now, Mu Chen would obviously not dare to do such a thing, with the only thing he could do was to suit her wishes.

"Don't resist."

When Ling Xi's palms were touching Mu Chen's, she spoke out in a soft voice. In the next instant, a wave of boundless Spiritual Energy erupted from her palms. Conveniently flowing through Mu Chen's palms, it entered his meridians, before unexpectedly making contact with Mu Chen's Spiritual Energy.

Mu Chen was instantly shocked, since this was an extremely dangerous thing to do. The Spiritual Energy produced from various forms of cultivations were all different. Once they made contact with one another, intense repulsion would erupt from them, causing extremely serious damage towards both parties.

However, just as Mu Chen was hesitating to break the contact off, the two Spiritual Energies came into contact. In the next instant, something that caused Mu Chen's heart and mind to tremble started to happen...

As the two Spiritual Energies made contact, the repulsion that he had imagined did not appear. Instead, the two Spiritual Energies had actually started to fuse together.

As the fused Spiritual Energy surged within Mu Chen's body, he discovered, with a shock, that the heavy injuries that he had suffered earlier were actually starting to recover at an astonishing speed.

After a short span of less than ten minutes, the injuries within Mu Chen's body were completely healed... the rate of recovery caused Mu Chen to turn dumbfounded by the sight before him. Even with his small accomplishment to his Thunder God Physique, he would need to rest and recuperate for at least an entire day to recover from the injuries that he had previously suffered.

In shock, Mu Chen raised his head, and looked in disbelief towards the Ling Xi in front of him. At this moment, the bafflement within his heart was getting increasingly thicker. Why would this happen?

Only when all the injuries on Mu Chen's body had completely recovered did the fused Spiritual Energy start to slowly dissociate, bit by bit. After that, the wave of Spiritual Energy travelled through his meridians, before reentering Ling Xi's body.

As the Spiritual Energy returned to Ling Xi's body, her delicate figure faintly shivered, before a faint reddish hue surfaced on her skin. Withdrawing her jade-like hands, her long eyelashes started to faintly flutter.

"How could it do that?" Unable to hold it back, Mu Chen asked aloud. After his Spiritual Energy had fused with Ling Xi's Spiritual Energy, why would it possess such strong regenerative power?

In a soft voice, Ling Xi replied, "It's because I've previously cultivated the Great Pagoda Art..."

A faint shudder went through Mu Chen's heart and mind as he thought, Ling Xi has actually cultivated the Great Pagoda Art? From the looks of it now, those words that she had previously said were definitely true.

However, could it be that people that have cultivated the Great Pagoda Art would be able to fuse their Spiritual Energies? This should be impossible! Even considering both parties had cultivated the same kind of Spiritual Art, the Spiritual Energy cultivated by everyone would have differences present within. Thus, they wouldn't be able to achieve such a perfect degree of fusion.

However, why would they be able to fuse their Spiritual Energies to such a degree?

After thinking for a long time, he was still unable to get the slightest clue about it, and could only give up in helplessness. The bodies of the two of them seemed to be hiding some secrets, and these secrets should have ties to Mu Chen's mother.

Raising his head, Mu Chen gazed towards the figure of the lady within the painting that made people feel calm and peaceful, before gently sighing in his heart. Mother, exactly what is this all about...?

"Let it be, don't get frustrated over this. All secrets will be revealed at one point. Although my memories have been tampered by someone, following the increase of my strength, I'll one day be able to retrieve all of my memories back. At that time, I'll be able to know exactly what had happened to me in the past." Seeing Mu Chen frowning and pondering in deep thought, Ling Xi consoled him in a soft voice.

Mu Chen nodded his head, before feeling slightly unnatural. In the past few periods of time, he had already gotten used to Ling Xi's cold and detached treatment towards him. However, with the sudden gentleness, he truly wasn't used to it.

"In addition, the Great Pagoda Art isn't as simple as you think. That black pagoda isn't as weak as you imagined. The only thing resulting in that is due to you still being unable to touch on that marvelous point."

Ling Xi started her warning, "Also, its best to reveal the black pagoda as

little as possible. Although I've lost quite a lot of my memories, I'm able to feel that this thing would lure some very dangerous things if it's exposed. Therefore, if it's been discovered...you might end up with a lot of trouble."

Mu Chen pulled his head back. The consideration and care shown by Ling Xi truly made him feel slightly terrified.

"Okay."

However, at this moment, he could only nodded his head.

"Let's go. Let's head out of here first." Looking once again at the painting on the wall, Ling Xi spoke out.

Hearing her instructions, Mu Chen nodded his head. Looking fondly at the blurry figure of the lady within the painting, he truly wished to take that painting away. However, it was obviously something that was extremely important to Ling Xi. Therefore, it would not be good for him to hog everything for himself.

"Mother, I've promised Dad that I'll definitely find you."

Looking towards the figure of the lady once again, Mu Chen took a deep breath of air, before turning and leaving the bamboo house.

As the two left the bamboo house, the atmosphere around them turned silent. In a short span of less than half a day, they had suffered an extremely huge emotional impact. From being originally having not the slightest bit of relationship, to a relationship so deep it was even binding...

Although they didn't talk about it, when their Spiritual Energies had perfectly fused, the two of them already knew that their relationship wasn't that simple after all.

"Ling Xi...Elder Ling Xi."

Mu Chen finally broke the silence, before saying her name with some unnaturalness.

"Just call me Ling Xi." Ling Xi replied after a moment of hesitation.

Hearing her words, Mu Chen also faintly hesitated. Nodding his head, his said, "I'll come back tomorrow."

Ling Xi nodded her small head.

Looking at the current situation, Mu Chen didn't continue talking anymore. Just as he had turned around to leave, something went into his mind as he raised his head. He looked towards the northern position of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. There, in the middle of a giant hall, a scarlet red pillar of light suddenly rushed towards the sky. At the same time, an ear-piercing and urgent bell rang out, resounding across the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Such an urgent bell ring caused Mu Chen to gawk. Casting his gaze towards the direction of the sounds origin, it seemed to be the location of the Missions Hall. Exactly what had happened?

Chapter 358: Blood Toll Bell

As the scarlet pillar of light rushed towards the sky, the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy could clearly see it. As for the ear-piercing and urgent bell sounds, they had also resounded across the heavens and earth, continuing for a long, long time.

Seemingly all of the students within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had noticed this spectacle. Countless shocked gazes turned upwards, facing towards the direction where the scarlet pillar of light had shot towards the sky with bewilderment brimming within their eyes.

"What is that...?"

On the peak of the mountain, Mu Chen was also looking at the spectacle before him in shock.

"That's the Blood Toll Bell..." Looking at the spectacle before her, Ling Xi's eyebrows knitted together awhile before speaking out.

"Blood Toll Bell?"

Mu Chen gawked.

"That's a special Spiritual Artifact of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. It can be purchased within the Spiritual Values Hall. However, not only is it expensive, normal students don't have the qualifications to even purchase it. This Spiritual Artifact possesses the effect of an alarm toll. Once its wielder falls into a life-threatening situation, it would shatter. When that happens, its accompanying subordinate bell within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy would shatter and produce such a spectacle, allowing for rescue or reinforcements to be called," replied Ling Xi.

"Rescue?" asked Mu Chen with some astonishment. Could it be that someone who was training in the Northern Heavens Continent had met with a life-threatening problem?

"This Blood Toll Bell can only be purchased by students placed within the top ten ranks on the Heavenly Rankings. From the looks of it, someone

from the top ten ranks of the Heavenly Rankings has met with great trouble in the Northern Heavens Continent." replied Ling Xi.

"Top ten ranks in the Heavenly Ranking?" Mu Chen muttered while his forehead started to faintly wrinkle up. In the next instant, he seemed to have thought about something, and his expression immediately contorted.

"It's Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong!"

As of now, of the top ten ranks in the Heavenly Rankings, the majority of them were within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, with the only exceptions being Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong. The two of them had already formed a team and were pursuing and hunting Mo Longzi. However, it had already been a month since their last-known contact. Could it be that they'd met with trouble?

Mu Chen's expression started to turn grave as he thought, That Mo Longzi is unexpectedly that formidable? Even the collaboration between Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong isn't enough to deal with him?

"This will be troublesome."

Mu Chen said in a deep voice. Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong were the two most outstanding people within the current batch of Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy students. If anything were to happen to them, not only would it cause a huge impact towards the fame and reputation of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, it would even cause all the students to feel terror and dread. After all, the two were being used as benchmarks by them.

As Mu Chen stared at the gigantic pillar of light, he could already feel a panicky atmosphere spreading throughout the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Whooshing sounds were present within entire stretch of the world as countless students shot towards the sky, looking with panic-stricken gazes towards the scarlet pillar of light.

This panic and dread had started to envelope over everything.

This panicky spectacle had similarly shocked the various higher-ups with immediate effect, as Elders appeared in the sky, one after another.

Boundless Spiritual Energy rippled out from them, pacifying the panicky atmosphere within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

At the same time, the atmosphere within a great hall at the centremost position of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was exceptionally solemn, with Dean Tai Cang sitting in the centre seat, surrounded by various other Elders below.

"Dean, what's the matter?" asked the Punishment Hallmaster, Mo You in a deep voice.

"Did something happen to Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong? Although Mo Longzi is formidable, with the strength of them two, he's absolutely unable to present too much of a threat to them. Could it be that the Elders of the Demonic Dragon Palace have taken action? If that's the case, are they forcing us to go to war with them?" asked another Elder in a deep voice. As he continued speaking, killing intent started to surface within his words.

On the centre seat, Dean Tai Cang's face was sunken to its lowest possible state as he replied, "From the little bit of news relayed by the ringing of the Blood Toll Bell, it shouldn't be that the Elders of the Demonic Dragon Palace had taken action. Although they're getting increasingly rampant and wild as of lately, they still wouldn't dare to engage in a head-on war with our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy."

"So, what's the matter?" asked Mo You with a frown. With Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong collaborating together, they could be considered as first-rate team within the Northern Heavens Continent. If it weren't people of Elder status, who was able pose a threat to them?

"It's Mo Longzi..."

Dean Tai Cang explained in an indifferent tone, "This time, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong had collaborated to hunt and kill Mo Longzi. However, who would have known that that guy would have such a deep plan hiding within his heart? He acted weak on the surface, but had secretly gathered all of the people from our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's bounty from the third place to the tenth place. Afterward, after

manipulating the situation, he had trapped Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong within his encirclement. As of now, their situation isn't clear."

Upon hearing the news, the faces of many Elders faintly changed. That Mo Longzi had truly used a vicious method. Furthermore, he was actually able to gather the top ten places on the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's bounty list, with the exception of Mo Xingtian, together. From the looks of it, he seemed to have planned to execute this scheme of his long ago.

The top ten people in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's bounty list were not easy to deal with. Due to various reasons, they had ascended onto that bounty list. Placed within the Northern Heavens Continent, they could all be considered as figures that would resound across a region.

As of now, they gathered together. This lineup could be rated as luxurious. No wonder even Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong would be forced to the point of shattering the Blood Toll Bell and calling for help.

"Dean, what should we do now? Absolutely nothing must happen to Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong. If not, during the Great Academy Competition half a year from now, the strength of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy would definitely have a steep decline. At that time, I'm afraid that there will be people eyeing and coveting our place within the Five Great Academies." said an Elder in a deep voice.

"Why not send some Elders out to provide help and rescue them?" Some people suggested.

"That's not possible. There're crouching tigers and hidden dragons within the Northern Heavens Continent. Although there's no one that could shake the position of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, there're those peak level influences that have always been staring at us. Previously, we still had some agreements with the Demonic Dragon Palace, where both parties aren't allowed to call upon Elder-level people. The grudges and grievances of the younger generation should be be settled through their own abilities. If we Elders take action, I'm afraid that the Demonic Dragon Palace would also take action. From the looks of things,

they definitely know about this. Maybe, they might even be waiting for us to get flustered and act in confusion," some people refuted.

"How should we deal with this matter? Could it be that we're to stare with our eyes and see matters happen to them?"

"Exactly. This matter needs to be settled as quickly as possible. Since Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong were forced to the point of shattering the Blood Toll Bell, their situation would definitely be extremely dangerous and desperate..."

"..."

Seeing the Elders engaging in their discussions, Dean Tai Cang finally waved his hand. Suppressing the numerous voices within the hall, he looked towards Punishment Hallmaster Mo You, before asking, "How would the Hallmaster look at this matter?"

After pondering awhile, Mo You replied, "We definitely cannot send out the Elders to take action for this matter. If we do, I'm afraid that our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy would be gossipped by others for using our age to bully the young. Therefore, we can only let the youths settle it by themselves. Naturally, that's also the best solution."

"Are the three Great Generals of the Punishment Hall within the academy?" asked Dean Tai Cang slowly.

"Lin Zheng and the other two are all here." replied Mo You while nodding his head, before continuing, "However, with this matter being so urgent and rushed, we need to send out the most extraordinary team to save Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong. However, within the younger generation of the Punishment Hall, we might not have enough manpower. Afterall, as of now, Mo Longzi has gathered together nine of the top ten names on our bounty list..."

"What are you trying to say?"

After hesitating awhile, Mo You replied, "Perhaps we can pick some amongst the students. However, the number of people needn't be too many, and must have adequate strength."

"Amongst the students?"

Dean Tai Cang suddenly gave a faint smile before nodding his head while saying, "We definitely have quite a good selection of people. I've originally wanted him to peacefully cultivate for a period of time. However, from the looks of things, we can only send him out."

"Go. I'll leave this matter to the Punishment Hall. We have to bring Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong back. I'll go and stare at the Demonic Dragon Palace...if they truly interfere in this matter, I'll go and prevent them."

"Since that Mo Longzi wants to play, we'll let the youths of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy accompany him and play, and see exactly who's stronger than who."

"Yes!"

Mo You immediately accepted the order respectfully.

...

The entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was still within the panic-stricken mode. Figures were present everywhere as people were discussing with one another. Within such a short span of time, a large number of students had already guessed the approximate reason behind this matter.

Afterall, the number of people within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy that possessed the qualifications to possess the Blood Toll Bell weren't many. As for those that have left the academy, there were only two people.

Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong.

Mu Chen could also feel the current atmosphere within the academy. Therefore, not continuing to remain at Ling Xi's place for long, he immediately planned to leave.

"Wait." Ling Xi suddenly spoke out.

Feeling puzzled, Mu Chen turned around and looked towards Ling Xi, who was currently in hesitation over something. With a toss, an old,

yellowish-coloured scroll flew towards him, before the latter said, "This is a Rank 5 Spiritual Array, and possesses power comparable to a Heavenly Completion Stage. If you've opened your Heart's Eye, you should be able to arrange it."

Mu Chen felt slightly confused as to why Ling Xi would suddenly hand him a Rank 5 Spiritual Array. However, regardless of that, he didn't reject her offer, and easily caught it as it flew over. A power that was comparable to a Heavenly Completion Stage. This was simply more formidable than the double lotus form of the Demonic Butchering Lotus Spiritual Array. As of right now, he truly needed a Spiritual Array of such a rank.

"Thank you," said Mu Chen with gratitude. Without continuing to stay behind, he rapidly turned around and left.

Looking at the back figure of the leaving Mu Chen, Ling Xi gave a faint sigh, while a complicated expression flashed within the depths of those beautiful eyes.

When Mu Chen arrived back in the Freshmen Area, the entire public square was seemingly filled with figures. All of them were gathered together as they looked towards the blood-red pillar of light that seemed to pass through the heavens with solemn expressions.

Ye Qingling, Zhou Ling and the rest were all present, with even Luo Li being startled to the point of appearing. Sending a smile towards them, Mu Chen walked towards the side of Luo Li.

"Mu Chen, do you know what has happened?" upon spotting Mu Chen, Ye Qingling and the rest immediately shot their question over frantically.

Mu Chen shook his head in reply. Just as he was able to speak, he suddenly sensed something and turned his head towards a stretch of sky not far away. A ray of light suddenly shot over from there, before appearing in the air above this public square.

"It's Hallmaster Mo You."

Upon seeing the figure, Mu Chen instantly gawked.

In the air, Mo You revealed himself. Looking at the public square below

him, his gaze instantly locked onto Mu Chen, before speaking out in a deep voice, "Mu Chen, as of now, you've been temporarily assigned to the Punishment Hall. Follow Lin Zheng and the rest and immediately leave the academy to complete your mission!"

Clamoring noises immediately broke out in the public square below as countless students had faces full of astonishment and shock. What did it mean to be temporarily assigned to the Punishment Hall? Wasn't the Punishment Hall a place that only graduated students had the qualifications to enter?

However, there were many students who were quick with their thinking and guessed the reason in a short moment. After all, just after the Blood Toll Bell rung, the level of activity from the Punishment Hall had ramped up. Due to that, people could not help associating the two events together.

Mu Chen had also put these two pieces of the puzzle together and understood what was going on. The so-called 'mission' would most likely be to save Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong.

"Yes!"

There wasn't a single bit of hesitation within him as he immediately responded in a deep voice. He had a very favourable impression towards Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong. As of now, since they're in trouble, he would naturally take action to help them. Although, he also knew that this mission would most likely be exceedingly dangerous.

"I'll go as well."

Just as Mu Chen's voice had rang out, a clear and melodious voice rang out beside him, only to see that Luo Li had walked up and stood beside him. Tossing her head up, she looked towards Mo You floating in the air.

Upon seeing this, Mo You slightly pondered, before nodding his head. As of now, Luo Li's strength was no weaker than Mu Chen's. With her going along with him, it would increase their team's strength by quite a bit. After all, the lineup of their opponent was also extremely luxurious.

With a wave of his sleeve, Mo You shot towards the distance, with his

roaring voice ringing over.

"The two of you, immediately head to the Punishment Hall, and set off with Lin Zheng and the rest."

Chapter 359: Rescue Party

Due to the urgency of the situation, after receiving the order, Mu Chen and Luo Li did not dare to spend much time mingling around. After saying goodbyes to everyone present, the two shot straight towards the location of the Punishment Hall.

Shooting across the skies above the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, Mu Chen and Luo Li were able to see the panic-stricken faces of quite a few students. The scarlet-red pillar of light in the distance was overly blood-red, causing uneasiness to radiate within the hearts of the people.

There were crouching tigers and hidden dragons within the Northern Heavenly Continent, whose danger levels were of extreme levels. Even something as strong as the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy wouldn't dare to proclaim to possess itself as the overlord. Naturally, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy have no intention of doing such a thing.

However, even without thinking about it, just possessing such strength would naturally make the other peak powers and influences dread and guard against the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Those influences might normally not dare to do anything towards the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy; however, if an opportunity truly presented itself, hitting a person who was down would be something that they would do.

Therefore, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy wasn't as invincible within in the Northern Heavens Continent as people thought it would be.

After all, this Great Thousand World was too boundless, too vast and too expansive. Even the five Great Academies were just a drop in the ocean.

If this matter was not settled properly, it might become quite a big blow to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

A grave expression appeared on Mu Chen's face. The Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was the place the he had started on his path. He had obtained nurturing at this place, and naturally felt gratitude towards the academy. Therefore, he didn't wish to see the Northern Heavens Spiritual

Academy suffer such a blow like that.

Seeing the grave expression on Mu Chen's face, Luo Li extended her icy-cool jade-like hand and grasp onto his. With a faint smile on her face, she spoke out in a soft voice, "Relax, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong are not normal people. Wanting to deal with them won't be an easy matter."

Flipping his hand and grabbing onto her's, Mu Chen replied, "I'm afraid that this matter might be dangerous..."

During the previous time, he had only followed Su Xuan and the rest to complete a Spiritual Treasure mission, and had almost lost his little life. As of now, the mission this time clearly had a level of danger far exceeding the previous one. Compared to a person like Mo Longzi, Bai Xuan was simply not worth a mention.

Therefore, the mission this time might be even more dangerous.

"I've followed along just because it'll be dangerous. If not, do you think I would come here for no reason? If you're afraid that something might happen to me, just protect me properly." replied Luo Li with a faint laugh.

"Relax. As long as you're beside me, regardless of any danger, even if we die, I'll die before you." grasping Luo Li's small hand, Mu Chen gave his reply. Although his voice was very soft, one could hear the unmovable resolution contained within them.

Luo Li's beautiful eyes gazed towards the youth by her side. With a faint smile present on her face, a water-like intent rippled within those clear and limpid eyes, causing her to look soul-stirringly beautiful. However, it was a pity that other people would forever be unable to see this, the most beautiful scene in the world.

When Mu Chen and Luo Li arrived at the Punishment Hall, they discovered that quite a few people from the Punishment Hall were already present. At the frontmost position of their group was, impressively, Lin Zheng, Zhou Qingshan and Gu Tianyan.

At this moment, grave and solemn expressions were present on the faces of the three. Obviously, they had also received the news about this matter.

"Senior Brother Lin Zheng."

As Mu Chen and Luo Li, descended, both of them cupped their fists while saying, "Hallmaster Mo You has requested for us to participate in this mission."

Lin Zheng nodded his head and replied with a smile, " With Junior Brother Mu Chen's help, we'll be able to be more relaxed."

Beside him, Zhou Qingshan and Gu Tianyan were looking at Mu Chen with kind gazes. The Punishment Hall members in the surroundings were also looking at Mu Chen, albeit with curiosity. They didn't show any contempt towards the latter due to his strength, which was at the level of Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase. This was because they had long known that the Freshman before them was able to fight with Gu Tianyan without determining a winner while he was at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase. As of now, his strength had greatly improved. That meant that his combat abilities would definitely have become stronger.

Not long after Mu Chen and Luo Li had arrived, whooshing sounds rang out from sky, only for everyone to see three streaks of light shooting over. Finally descending onto the gathering square, they revealed themselves to be He Yao, Su Xuan and Xu Huang.

Obviously, the three of them should have also received the same mission.

Upon seeing Mu Chen and Luo Li, Su Xuan and the other two didn't feel surprised. After all, as of now, if one were to remove the absent Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, the strongest people among the students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy might be the pair of young lovers in front of them.

Seeing Su Xuan and other two arrive, Lin Zheng nodded his head, before proceeding to say in a deep voice, " Everyone, our mission this time will be extremely dangerous. Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong were in the process of chasing and dealing with that Mo Longzi, and were ambushed by the former, who had secretly gathered all the vicious people on the

Bounty Board from the tenth to second rank. Since the two were heavily outnumber, they fell into an encirclement, before fleeing while suffering heavy injuries. As of now, their current situation is critical."

"Second to tenth rank on the Bounty Board..."

Upon hearing those words, even Mu Chen could not bear breathing in a mouthful of cold air. Every single person on the top ten ranks of the Bounty Board were all violent and vicious characters. Just dealing with one would, normally, already be extremely hard. They never imagined that nine of them would actually take action together.

This lineup was overly luxurious. No wonder why even Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong would be defeated and forced to retreat, and even fall into a crisis.

Grave expressions filled the faces of Su Xuan and the rest. The strength of their enemy's lineup was already considered to be very strong, and was sufficient to wipe a first-rate powerhouse off the Northern Heavens Continent.

"This mission will be headed by me, with Zhou Qingshan and Gu Tianyan providing support to me. The five of you will follow us, while two Punishment Hall members of Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase and three Punishment Hall members of half-step Heavenly Completion Stage would also follow along. The time's tight, and this is the strength that the Punishment Hall can immediately mobilise. The rest are either in closed-door training or are on other missions. Therefore, we need your help this time," said Lin Zheng in a deep voice.

Mu Chen faintly nodded his head. Looked like the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was treating this matter with deep regard. Their lineup was rather tyrannical. After all, their opponents were super vicious people on the top ten ranks on the Bounty Board. If the strength of their group wasn't sufficient, they would just become a burden if they were to head over. Therefore, the minimum requirement of strength was at the Heavenly Completion Stage.

Even Su Xuan and Xu Huang had great increases to their strength after

experiencing the Spiritual Light Empowerment, both reaching half-step into Heavenly Completion Stage. As for He Yao, he had broken through to truly reach Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase.

Therefore, within their group, from the looks alone, Mu Chen, with his strength at Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase, appeared to be the weakest.

"This is some information about Mo Longzi and his group of people. You guys, take a look and know your enemy, so that we can reduce some dangers, at the very least." With a flick of his finger, numerous streaks of light shot towards Mu Chen and the rest.

With a grab, the streak of light became a scroll within Mu Chen's hand. Tearing it open, he saw detailed information about Mo Longzi and his group written on it.

Mo Longzi, Rank 2 on the Bounty Board. Comes from the Demonic Dragon Palace. Vicious and Merciless; absolutely stunning talent; It's said that his strength was about Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phase, and might even be close to Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase. Extremely Dangerous.

Mu Gu, Rank 3 of the Bounty Board. Comes from the Divine Bone Hall. Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phase.

Gui Xiong, Rank 4 of the Bounty Board. No known school or sect. Obtained the inheritance of an ancient sect. Has a very vicious character. Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phase.

Wu Jia, Rank 5 of the Bounty Board. Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase. Is also a Rank 5 Spiritual Array Master.

Dum Dum...

As Mu Chen and the rest looked over the information given to them, their expressions grew increasingly grave. This lineup was truly tyrannical. Even if Mo Longzi was considered a Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phase, there were three other Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phases, as well as five Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phases and even a 4th

grade Spiritual Array Master...

No wonder why even Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong would be forced into such a miserable situation. Their enemy's lineup was too tyrannical.

"Leave Mo Longzi, Mu Gu and Gui Xiong to us three to deal with. As for the others, we'll leave them to you guys. As long as we rescue Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong from their encirclement, dealing with them shouldn't be difficult," said Lin Zheng in a deep voice.

Shooting a look at Lin Zheng and the other two, Mu Chen could sense from the Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiating out from their bodies that they seemed to be much stronger than before. Clearly, their strength had also increased during this period of time, reaching the level of Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Stage. No wonder why they dared to obstruct the three strongest people in the enemy's lineup.

"Yes."

Mu Chen and the rest also nodded their heads.

"Since there's no other questions, let's immediately make our move. Our time's tight, and we have to rescue them as quickly as possible."

With a wave of his hand, Lin Zheng didn't continue speaking, taking the lead and shooting off. Zhou Qingshan and and Gu Tianyan immediately followed suit, with the other Punishment Hall members also sweeping out.

"Let's go."

Nodding his head towards Su Xuan and the rest in indication, Mu Chen followed suit and shot out.

Their group quickly shot out of the inner region of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. In the next moment, they noticed countless students standing in the air above the academy's outer region, with their gazes all locked onto their group.

Within a short span of a moment, the news about Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong asking for help in a life-or-death situation had already spread across the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Therefore, upon

seeing Lin Zheng, Mu Chen and the rest in a group, all of them knew what their mission was about.

Upon seeing this horde of students, Mu Chen and the rest faintly lowered their speed.

"Senior Brother Lin Zheng, Junior Brother Mu Chen, slaughter that Mo Longzi and rescue Senior Brother Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong back!" Some students started roaring in loud voices.

After all, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong were ranked first and second on the current Heavenly Rankings. They're a kind of benchmark of struggle for many students. If the two were to lose their lives in Mo Longzi's hands, this would result in an extremely huge impact on the morale of those students.

Looking towards those students who were looking at their group with hopes and anticipation present within their eyes, Mu Chen and the group shot a look at each other, before their expressions all turned grave. They knew that if they were to fail in their mission, when they returned, the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy might totally sink into a period of darkness. Wanting to recover that vitality from before would take an unknown amount of time.

Lin Zheng took a deep breath of air. Not choosing to reply, he only slowly cupped his hands towards the countless students before him. Behind him, Mu Chen, Zhou Qingshan, Gu Tianyan and the rest had also silently cupped their hands.

"Let's go!"

With a low roar, Lin Zheng waved his hand, before proceeding to shoot off. The group transformed into ten streaks of light, rushing out of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Before the Great Hall at the peak of a mountain, Dean Tai Cang, as well as numerous other Elders, was presently standing there. Looking towards Lin Zheng, Mu Chen and the rest of the figures in the distance, chilling intent flashed within their eyes.

"Make sure to stare at the Demonic Dragon Palace. Once their Elder-level characters take action..."

The deep and abstruse eyes of Dean Tai Cang's eyes turned abnormally cold at this moment. A slight pause presented itself within his words as his hands slowly clenched together.

"Kill them all without any mercy!"

Chapter 360: Western Desolate Territory

White clouds fluttered around the azure horizon, appearing exceedingly languid. Sunlight pierced through the cloud layers, illuminating the earth, leaving behind dim gigantic shadows all around.

Whoosh!

On the horizon totally devoid of sound, hurried whooshing sounds suddenly resounded. In the next moment, ten streaks of light explosively shot over from the far side of the sky. Their speed was extremely fast. Howling over in a split second. Due to the wind pressure created by such high-speed movements, huge scars were ripped apart from the layers of clouds in the sky.

This group of people was, naturally, Lin Zheng, Mu Chen and the rest that had come from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Due to the urgency of the situation, they had seemingly not taken any sort of breaks, traveling at their utmost speed for the entire journey.

"Senior Brother Lin Zheng, how much further do we have left?" Mu Chen asked while following closely behind Lin Zheng. Looking in front of him, his voice, wrapped in Spiritual Energy, rang within the latter's ear.

"From the fluctuations radiating from the Blood Toll Bell, they should be at the Western Desolate Territory, towards the northwest of the Northern Heavens Continent. With our speed, we would need a day and a night of time, at the very least, to reach there," replied Lin Zheng.

"That long, huh...?" muttered Mu Chen as his forehead started to faintly wrinkle. A day and a night. He was just afraid that there might be some unforeseen changes. After all, since the beginning, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong's situation was not that good.

"Relax. Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong aren't people that can be easily pinched to death. Even with Mo Longzi and his lineup, wanting to kill the two of them won't be an easy thing to do." Lin Zheng understood Mu Chen's worry, and thus, said some consoling words.

"I hope so."

Mu Chen nodded his head. Looking at the distance, the skies over there seemed to be covered in black clouds. This mission wouldn't be easy at all.

...

Western Desolate Territory

When Mu Chen and the rest had rushed over, it was already a day later.

Mu Chen and the group descended towards the edge of the Western Desolate Territory. Looking at the region before them, it was in a state of complete disorder. Gigantic deep gulches akin to being created from meteors descending from the sky were present, with gigantic cracks tens of thousands of metres long extending from them.

There were a few mountains originally present here. As of now, all of them had completely collapsed, with gigantic stones scattered everywhere across the area.

Obviously, an extremely intense battle had taken place at this territory.

Staring at the totally chaotic and disordered region, Lin Zheng slowly said, "Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong had met an ambush at this place."

The group swept their gazes across the region, before their expressions slowly turned slightly grave. Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong had fought against nine vicious people from the top ten ranks on the bounty list. It was hard to imagine exactly how bitter and desperate this battle was.

"After this fight, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong should have already suffered injuries. After fleeing deep into the Western Desolate Territory, Mo Longzi and his group should've been relentlessly pursuing them, with no thoughts of giving up."

Lin Zheng's eyes turned frosty as he looked towards the depths of the Western Desolate Territory while saying, "We should get closer to them as fast as possible."

"Everyone, be more careful. Our enemies this time aren't simple people." Lin Zheng reminded. In the next moment, with a wave of his hand, he shot

towards the depth of the Western Desolate Territory, with Mu Chen and the rest immediately following closely behind.

However, this time, everyone had tensed their bodies up. They knew that not too long from now, they would land in a head-on confrontation with a luxurious lineup fully comprised of vicious people.

The depths of the Western Desolate Territory. This place was covered all year-round by thick Spiritual Mist. The Spiritual Mist hadn't dissipated nor scattered for many, many years, causing any senses to be greatly reduced within it.

Living within the Spiritual Mist were numerous kinds of special and unique Spiritual Beasts. These Spiritual Beasts relied on the cover of the Spiritual Mist to appear and disappear like ghosts. This made them extremely hard to deal with. Therefore, there would be very little experts from the Northern Heavens Continent who would come over here in search of treasure.

At this moment, at the stone peak within the depths, were ten figures. A thick baleful aura covered the bodies of these ten figures. From a single look, people would be able to know that they weren't any kind-hearted or good-natured folks.

At the very front of the group was a male dressed in black robes. A longsword strapped across his back, while the malevolent marking of a black dragon was present on his forehead, displaying his identity. He was the target that Lin Zheng, Mu Chen and their group was looking for, Mo Longzi.

"Tsk, tsk, Mo Longzi, we've already investigated. That Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong are treating their injuries while hiding in that misty valley. This time, they'll definitely have nowhere left to go!" A male in grey robes standing behind Mo Longzi gave a high-pitched laugh before speaking out. Those deep pair of eyes were sparkling with an ominous and cunning glint, while dark and extremely tyrannical Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiated from his body, causing the Spiritual Mist to be unable to enter a radius of ten metres around him.

This vicious person was the 7th Rank on the Bounty Board, Wang Yingui. His strength had reached Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase.

Upon hearing his, Mo Longzi gave a faint smile and replied, "I think that the rescue squad from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy should be arriving very soon."

"To be in such a hurry, their manpower shouldn't be much. However, it can be assumed that they would be their best ones. The three Great Generals of the Punishment Hall will definitely come," said a person dressed in greyish-white robes. The body of this person appeared to be as thin as a matchstick, with only a layer of skin covering his bones, making him look akin to a skeleton. At this moment, a thick fog appeared within his skeleton-like eyes as he spoke out with an indifferent voice.

"Hehe, what's the matter? Could it be that you, Mu Gu are afraid?" said a male whose physique was sturdy and strong, like a bear, with a giant blood-red axe on his back, making a droning laugh.

"Gui Xiong, caution is the parent of safety. That time, your head was almost obtained by Lin Zheng. Could it be that you've still not learnt your lesson?" replied Mu Gu indifferently.

"Previously, I've only been too complacent. If I see that Lin Zheng today, I, your father, will cleave him into two halves!" roared Gui Xiong, his eyes opened wide as a baleful aura gushed from him.

"That's enough. Don't argue at this place."

Mo Longzi spoke out while wrinkling his forehead. Waving his hand, he looked towards a male in green who had yet to speak. The latter's eyes appeared normal. However, chilling rays of light erupted and sparkled from within, as if a poisonous snake was lurking within their depths.

"Wu Jia, are the preparations complete?"

This person was, unexpectedly, Wu Jia, 5th Rank of the Bounty Board, and was the only 5th Grade Spiritual Array Master amongst their ranks.

Hearing Mo Longzi's words, that Wu Jia smiled, and nodded his head while replying, "I've long completed my preparations, with the only thing

left is for the fish to enter the net."

An extremely sinister smile appeared at the corner of Mo Longzi's mouth as he said, "That's good."

"Why don't we just capture Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong first?" asked Mu Gu with a frown.

"Just relax. They're unable to run away," replied Mo Longzi with a gentle and chilling smile. Looking towards the deepest part of the thick mist, he replied, "Do you think that I was truly unable to capture them over these last few days?"

Mu Gu's eyes narrowed before saying, "Are you purposefully luring the rescue squad from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy over here?"

The smile at the corner of Mo Longzi's mouth grew even more bloodthirsty and crazy. Licking his lips, he replied, "Do you think that just a Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong would be enough to satisfy me?"

"Haha, they aren't enough..."

"I also want to eat this rescue squad!"

"Haha. I truly don't know how big of an upheaval this would cause within the Northern Heavens Continent. I think that the face of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy should be very nice to watch then, right? I'm truly anticipating it..."

Mu Gu and the rest shot a look at each other as a faint tremble shook their hearts. This Mo Longzi was truly very vicious and merciless. If this elite rescue squad was to be completely defeated, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy might truly explode.

...

Whoosh! Whoosh!

Ten figures shot across the desolated plains at lightning speed. Spiritual Energy erupted from their bodies, with some people even clenching Spiritual Weapons in their hands. Their bodies were taut and tense, ready to enter their combat states at any time.

This group of people was, naturally, Lin Zheng, Mu Chen and their group who had entered the depths of the Western Desolate Territory.

Along the way, they had increased their speed, and had also tried their utmost to restrain their Spiritual Energy fluctuations to avoid being detected. Any Spiritual Beasts met along the way by them would be avoided to their greatest possible extent.

Under this full speed, it took them only a measly half an hour to enter the depths of the Western Desolate Territory.

Mu Chen's gaze swept across his surroundings, before faintly narrowing his eyes. This stretch of the world seemed to be permeated by a thick mist, of which Spiritual Energy fluctuations could be felt within.

"The depths of the Western Desolate Territory are covered by a Spiritual Mist throughout the year. Once one enters it, one's senses would drop. Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong must have known about this, and have, therefore, fled towards this direction." Lin Zheng spoke out.

Mu Chen faintly nodded his head before saying in a soft voice. "However, it's extremely easy to get lost in such an environment."

Lin Zheng nodded his head in approval. After gently making a hand sigh, everyone nodded their heads slightly, before increasingly their vigilance.

Moving close to Luo Li, Mu Chen said in a low voice. " Follow me tightly at all times. Regardless of the situation, don't ever leave my sight."

As they entered the depths, he was faintly able to sense some slight unease, but was unable to put them into words. However, regardless of that, being more careful was a must.

Luo Li nodded her small head.

Just as Mu Chen was talking to her, the surrounding Spiritual Mist grew increasingly thick. At that moment, their vision had become extremely impaired, so had their senses.

Ten figures skimmed over the land as they shot over, furiously rushing

into the thick Spiritual Mist.

However, a split second when they rushed into the Spiritual Mist, Mu Chen's expression furiously changed. He could feel strange fluctuations radiating from within the Spiritual Mist that appeared to be similar to Spiritual Arrays.

"Careful!"

Mu Chen's eyes faintly narrowed. With an explosive roar, he wrapped Luo Li within his bosom.

At the same time, the Spiritual Mist started to crazily squirm about, causing distortions to seemingly form in the surrounding space. Transforming into something akin to giant mouths of evil demons, they devoured Mu Chen and their group completely. As the Spiritual Mist pervaded over, everyone had disappeared without a trace.

Within the extreme depths, on the top of the stone peak, Wu Jia's eyes sprung open as a malevolent smile flashed across his eyes.

"The fish have entered the net."

A smile surfaced at the corner of Mo Longzi's mouth. Taking a step forward, he disappeared within the thick mist.

"It's time."

As he disappeared, a sinister voice brimming with cruel killing intent rang out within the thick mist.

Whoosh! Whoosh!

On the stone peak, eight figures stood up. Laughing malevolently, they shot out simultaneously.

The most elite rescue lineup from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?

This time, we'll kill every single one of your people! Let's see if there's anyone else that dares to offer a bounty for us!

Chapter 361: Chi Yu and Mao Jiang

When the spatial fluctuations erupted out, Mu Chen was to first to react. Spiritual Energy erupted from his body, immediately protecting him and Luo Li, whom was in his bosom. However, the expected attack didn't arrive. After lasting for a few breaths, the spatial fluctuations completely dissipated.

Embracing the slender waist of the girl within his bosom, Mu Chen descended on a mountain peak. Their surroundings were still pervaded by the thick spiritual mist. However, there wasn't any movement coming from it.

Obviously, they were still within the depths of the Western Desolated Territory. Those spatial fluctuations earlier were only meant to split them apart.

"Looks like we've been discovered long ago," said Luo Li, her clear and limpid eyes sizing up their surroundings.

Mu Chen nodded his head, while his eyes were brimming with vigilance. The unforeseen circumstance that happened had caused him to feel slight uneasy, since he didn't know the exact motive his enemy had in doing so.

"The previous spatial fluctuations were too weak, and only would've been able to separate us by a huge distance. However, it's already enough to allow our enemies to defeat us one by one," said Luo Li in a soft voice.

"Let's group up with them as fast as possible," said Mu Chen after frowning and pondering awhile.

Their mission this time was extremely dangerous. Furthermore, all of them were exposed, while their enemies were hidden. They were even separated by them. To Mu Chen's group, this was an extremely disadvantageous situation.

Luo Li faintly nodded. It was fortunate that Mu Chen's reaction was fast, resulting in the two of them not being separated. If not, she would've truly been worried to death.

As Mu Chen proceeded to walk forward, Spiritual Energy burning with black flames started to rise from his body. Walking in front of Luo Li, his gaze vigilantly swept the thick spiritual mist in their surroundings.

Whoosh!

However, just as he had started walking, his eyes furiously contacted. Explosively retreating a number of steps back, a rampaging streak of light suddenly split the thick spiritual mist apart, before shooting towards the position he was in at lightning speed. The ground over there instantly collapsed as cracks extended from there.

As Mu Chen looked towards his front, he saw a black pike that pierced deep into the earth. Only leaving less than half of its body above the ground, it hummed as it intensely vibrated. The strength put into this pike was rather astonishing.

"Tsk! Tsk!"

Just as Mu Chen had evaded the sudden black pike attack that had come from nowhere, the thick mist at another position split apart, only to see scarlet streaks of light hiding the skies and covering the earth as they explosively shot over.

Luo Li strode over, her jade-like hand tightly grasping her longsword. Instantly, Sword Aura swept across horizontally. Dinging sounds rang out as the Sword Aura blocked all of the incoming scarlet streaks of light.

"Clap! Clap!"

Clapping sounds seemed to ring out from the thick mist. His gaze turning frosty, Mu Chen stared at the location where the scarlet streaks of light had appeared. As the thick mist slowly parted, bit by bit, two figures slowly appeared within his line-of-sight.

In front of him was a giant towering cliff with two figures, one sitting and one standing, at its peak. The person sitting was dressed in scarlet robes, while a malevolent scar was present on his face. Roughly ten scarlet rays of light were floating within his palms at this moment. They were fiery red daggers, twisting and twining above his palms akin to swimming

fish.

As for the person standing, it was an extremely skinny male. However, although he was small in size, eight large black pikes were carried on his back. They were even taller than him, which gave people a strange impact to their sight upon seeing him.

At this moment, these two people were sending a smile filled with amusement as they stared at Mu Chen and Luo Li.

"Aiyahyah, our luck truly is great. We're actually able to meet a girl of such quality..." the eyes of the scarlet-robed male swept across Mu Chen and Luo Li, before finally resting on Luo Li's body. Instantly, his eyes lit up, before speaking out in a grin.

"The faces of these two people seem very...could it be that they're Freshmen? Haha, looks like the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy truly is in a tough spot now! They've actually dared to even send such a squad out," said the thin male while licking his lips.

"Exactly. They even dared to send Heavenly Transformation Stage students...the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy is truly getting more and more useless," said the male in scarlet robes as he shot a weird look at Mu Chen. Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase? He dared to come rescue people with that strength? He truly was trying to seek death.

The male in scarlet robes gave a gentle flick of his finger, causing the ten scarlet rays of light to revolve increasingly fast. Grinning while staring at Mu Chen, he said, "I'll give you a chance, brat. Just run away, and leave that girl to us. You might have a bit of chance to survive."

Mu Chen glared at the male in scarlet robes and the thin male. With a voice that was totally devoid of emotion, he replied, "So, you two are the 7th and 8th Rank on the bounty list rankings, Chi Yu and Mao Jiang, huh...?"

"Looks like the information you have about us isn't little," replied the male in scarlet robes by the name of Chi Yu. Extending his hand to grab a dagger, he extended his blood red tongue and gave it a lick, while a baleful aura radiated from his eyes.

"Okay, brat. Stop talking any more nonsense and quickly scram. This is the first time over these past few years that I've seen a girl of such quality..."

Riiiinng!

The clear and melodious ring of a sword furiously resounded as an incomparably sharp Sword Aura swept out. With an indescribable speed, it split about the earth, before cleaving down on Chi Yu's face.

Ding!

A black pike was furiously thrusted forward, heavily impacting against the Sword Aura. As Spiritual Energy erupted out, the earth was chopped apart, while the black pike was sent shooting backwards.

Chi!

Numerous sharp Sword Auras slashed across Chi Yu's face, bringing about some streaks of blood.

Chi Yu's face instantly changed as he explosively retreated. With an incomparably dark look, he glared at the young girl standing beside Mu Chen with a black longsword in her hand, who was staring at him with eyes that seemed to have seen a maggot.

"Truly delicious."

Chi Yu clenched his teeth and wiped away the blood stains on his face as a dark and sinister shadow erupted from his eyes.

"Leave him to me?" asked Luo Li as she faintly tilted her head over, seeking for Mu Chen's approval. Towards this disgusting fellow that was staring at her with those unclean eyes, she really wanted to stab her sword into him.

"Cut off his hands and leave his life," replied Mu Chen, while gently nodding his head. As he was speaking, Luo Li could hear the thick killing intent present within his words.

Giving a beautiful and gentle smile that appeared sweet, Luo Li replied, "Ok."

"Attack! Kill them both!" Chi Yu roared, his gaze became extremely dark as of now. Of the two people, other than that girl in black, whose strength at Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase, made it harder to be dealt with, that Mu Chen seemed to be a burden.

Just based on that, and yet they dared to act in such a manner in front of them?!

A sinister smile appeared at the corner of Mao Jiang's mouth as he grasped a black pike from his back. With a shiver of his arm, the black pike erupted with a bright and resplendent black light, appearing akin to a black dragon. Splitting apart the air, even the earth started splitting to form a gigantic fissure as it explosively shot towards Mu Chen.

Mu Chen took a step forward. Without any intention of retreating, he tightly clenched his fingers. Black lightning encased his body, before furiously sending a fist rumbling out.

Bang!

Black lightning gushed out as Mu Chen's fist smashed head-on against the black pike that was shot straight at him.

"Scram!"

Mu Chen's gaze turned frosty as lightning crazily overflowed from his fist. In the next instant, that black pike was, unexpectedly, repelled by Mu Chen's fist.

"What?!"

The faces of Chi Yu and Mao Jiang seemingly changed at that very instant as shock flashed within their eyes. Even Chi Yu, whose strength was at the Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase, didn't dare to use his bare fist to smash against Mao Jiang's pike. However, this brat, whose strength appeared to be at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase, was actually able to accomplish it?

"Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase. And yet you dare to bounce and jump around here. Seems like you do not know death."

Chilling and murderous intent erupted from Mu Chen's handsome face. With regards to these two rude fellows, Mu Chen would absolutely not let them off today.

"Swish!"

As his voice rang out, a dragon's shadow rose from his body. In the next instant, akin to lightning, he rushed straight towards Mao Jiang.

"Shameless boasting!"

Chilling intent appeared in Mao Jiang's eyes as he, too, shot forward. With a clench of his hands, two black pikes appeared within. Spiritual Energy erupted and swept out as Mao Jiang's body shook. In the next instant, shadow pikes hid the skies and covered the earth as they shrouded over Mu Chen.

However, facing this incoming attack, Mu Chen still didn't show any signs of evading them. Black lightning sparkled on his body, unexpectedly allowing those shadow pikes to violently descend on his body.

Ding! Ding!

Metallic sounds rang out as sparks shot out everywhere. However, those shadow pikes were, unexpectedly, unable to cause the slightest bit of harm to Mu Chen.

Bang!

A fist rumbled out from him, piercing through those shadow pikes. As Spiritual Energy gushed from him, his fist carried along frightening Spiritual Energy fluctuations as it headed straight for Mao Jiang's chest.

Mao Jiang was immediately scared shitless by the violent and vicious attack of Mu Chen. Pulling back his two pikes, he placed them in front of his chest, guarding him.

Ding!

Mu Chen's fist violently slammed against the two pikes. Even though they were made from iron essence, unexpectedly, those two pikes were pressed into extremely eye-catching arcs, and had seemingly stuck to Mao

Jiang's chest.

A chilling glint flashed within Mu Chen's eyes. Black lightning erupted from his fist, causing his power to drastically rise.

Crack!

The two iron essence pikes had broken completely. Akin to lightning, Mu Chen's fist violently slammed against Mao Jiang's chest. The latter instantly sported a mouthful of blood as his body flew back hundreds of metres, before finally stabilising himself miserably.

While waiting for himself to stabilise, Mao Jiang's eyes were overwhelmed with shock and horror. He never dreamt that this youth, who appeared to be the easiest to deal with, whose strength was only at Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase, would actually possess such terrifying strength!

Due to this unforeseen spectacle, even Chi Yu's face turned grave. Looking at the youth, who was now clad in black lightning, unease had, unknowingly, started to erupt from his heart.

Screech!

As a chilling glint flashed within his eyes, Chi Yu gave a flick of his finger. In the next instant, numerous scarlet rays of light that carried along an extremely sharp Aura explosively stabbed towards Mu Chen's back at lightning speed.

However, just as those scarlet rays of light shot out, a slender and beautiful figure appeared behind Mu Chen. Sword Aura swept out, slicing apart all those incoming scarlet rays of light.

Luo Li stood in the air. A black skirt wrapped her exquisite and lovable figure. Her long hair draped down from her head, appearing as bright and resplendent as a river of silver. However, at this moment, an apathetic light surfaced from those clear, glass-like eyes of hers.

"Leave your arms behind. If not, I'll get scolded." Staring quietly at Chi Yu, the young girl spoke out in a soft voice.

Clenching and grinding his teeth, Chi Yu replied with a sneer, "Just based on you?"

The jade-like hand of Luo Li that was tightly grasping the longsword slowly rose into the air. Pointing towards Chi Yu in the distance. An extremely astonishing Sword Aura rushed to the skies. At this moment, the spiritual mist within a radius of a thousand metres was scattered by that Sword Aura.

"Just based on me."

An apathetic smile seemed to surface on her delicate and exquisite face. Within her beauty, faint killing intent flowed out. With a shake of her jade-like hand, boundless Sword Aura condensed into a river of Sword Aura in the air above her head.

Extremely frightening fluctuations started to radiate from within the river of Sword Aura, causing Chi Yu's face to slowly turn grim, bit by bit.

No one could have guessed that the youth and the young girl in front of their eyes, whom appeared to be the easiest to deal with, were actually that troublesome and intractable.

This time, they truly had kicked an iron board.

Chapter 362: Ferocious Couple

The spiritual mist prevaded across this stretch of the world. However, on top of a mountain peak, the spiritual mist had dissipated within a radius of thousands of metres. Four figures were standing in the air within it, with boundless Spiritual Energy radiating from them, causing the spiritual mist that permeated this stretch of the world to be unable to get close to them.

The faces of Mao Jiang and Chi Yu had become extremely dark at this moment. Originally, they assumed that they had gotten their hands on some easy targets. However, all of a sudden, the lambs had turned into vicious wolves, and it was them that was forced to a slightly miserable state.

"If you're starting to regret it, I'm afraid it's slightly too late."

Mu Chen stared chillingly towards Mao Jiang as black lightning flashed around his body. Under his clothing, a lightning rune started to slowly surface, while an erratic, strong and powerful energy rose within his body like a furious dragon.

"Regret? A Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase dares to say such words to us? When we were running amok in the Northern Heavens Continent, your hair hadn't even grown out yet!" Mao Jiang roared as he laughed in fury.

"Oh really?"

The smile at the corner of Mu Chen's mouth grew increasingly sinister and cold as black lightning surfaced within his eyes. Taking a step forward, he appeared before Mao Jiang like a spectre. A fist of wind howled out, covered by Spiritual Energy that was burning with black flames, while encased with bits of black lightning. In an incomparably rampaging fashion, it violently rumbled out.

Mao Jiang's gaze was sinister and dark as Spiritual Energy erupted from his body without a shred of restraint. Transforming into shadow pikes, they explosively shot out. He truly didn't believe that he, with his strength

at Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase, would actually be unable to suppress that Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase brat!

Bang! Bang!

The two people confronted each other across the horizon. Spiritual Energy crazily wrecked havoc in their surroundings, causing even the surrounding space to faintly distort. The violent storm that swept out caused the Spiritual Energy to completely split apart and dissipate.

While Mu Chen and Mao Jiang were confronting each other, Luo Li pointed with her sword tip. In the next instant, the river of Sword Aura gushed out. Carrying along the extremely sharp Sword Aura, it enveloped over the dark-faced Chi Yu.

"Hmph."

Chi Yu's gaze grew increasingly dark and cold as scarlet-red Spiritual Energy swept out of his body akin to flames. Forming a hand seal, the scarlet-red Spiritual Energy condensed together, transforming into countless scarlet-red daggers.

These daggers sparkled with a chilling glint that caused people's hearts to palpitate. In the next moment, bringing his hand down, they transformed into a light rain that blotted the skies, hiding the skies and covering the earth as they rumbled towards the river of Sword Aura.

Scree! Scree!

As they collided in the air, the countless scarlet-red light rain dissipated the moment they made contact with the river of Sword Aura. The swiftness and fierceness of the Sword Aura had far exceeded the expectations of Chi Yu.

After completely shattering the scarlet-red light rain apart, the remnant river of Sword Aura swept across the Chi Yu.

Chi Yu was forced to miserably retreat. Regardless of that, his waist and abdomen had been swept across by the river of sword Aura. A malevolent-looking bloody wound surfaced as blood dripped from it.

"You bitch! You're looking to die!"

Chi Yu's fury had reached its peak. With a clench of his hand, ten scarlet streaks of light shot from within him, before transforming into ten short swords that seemed as if they were condensed from lava.

These ten short swords continuously dripped with lava, while extremely scorching-hot fluctuations radiated from them, appearing rather astonishing.

Obviously, these ten short swords were all Spiritual Weapons. Furthermore, they were a complete set of Spiritual Weapons. Although, when alone, they were considered to be Middle-grade Spiritual Weapons, when converged together, their might was comparable to High-grade Spiritual Weapons.

"Scarlet Dragon Entangling Death!"

As Chi Yu flicked his ten fingers in succession, the ten short swords instantly transformed into ten scarlet pythons, howling as they shout out. Moving craftily, they shot across the horizon. Bringing about vicious trajectories, they bit down towards Luo Li.

Facing the incoming bites from the scarlet pythons, Luo Li remained calm and collected. Sword Aura rippled from her body, before forming a Sword Aura defense around it, completely receiving all of the rampaging attacks against her.

The two battlegrounds in the sky had erupted into intense fights at this moment.

However, as time continued to elapse, Chi Yu and Mao Jiang's gazes grew increasingly dark as they gradually felt the pressure building up on them. The youth and the young girl in front of them were releasing strength that caused even their hearts to palpitate.

They were starting to feel unease erupting, bit by bit, within their hearts. If this continued, they might gradually end up in a disadvantage.

They had to deal with these two people as fast as possible. If this dragged on, it might be extremely unfavorable for them.

In the next instant, an ominous glint flashed within the eyes of Chi Yu and Mao Jiang.

Bang!

The long pike in Mao Jiang's hand violently collided against Mu Chen's fist of wind, causing gales to sweep out. Taking advantage of this, Mao Jiang explosively retreated. While doing so, his eyes started become reeked in a blood-red colour.

Boom!

Erratic Spiritual Energy erupted from him like a storm, undulating in this stretch of the world. As his hand seals started to rapidly change, the torrential Spiritual Energy condensed in the sky. Faintly, it appeared akin to a black stone pike that seemed to bridge the gap between heaven and earth.

The stone pike was very simple and unadorned, while strange vein-like patterns covered its entire surface. In the next moment, boundless and ancient fluctuations radiated from it, causing it to appear as if it could pierce through the heavens and earth.

Upon seeing this spectacle unfolding in front of him, Mu Chen's eyes faintly narrowed. This Mao Jing was obviously displaying an extremely formidable offensive Deity Tier Spiritual Art.

"Die, brat!"

A mouthful of blood essence spurted out from Mao Jiang's mouth, before landing on the surface of the stone pike. Instantly, the colour of the stone pike became dark, while a baleful aura was faintly discernable as it started to pervade out.

"Blood God's Heavenly Fighting Pike!"

An explosive roar rang out from Mao Jiang as the gigantic pike rushed towards the sky. Transforming into torrential rays of bloody light, they dived down from the sky. The ground below instantly collapsed, while a fissure even formed in the surrounding space.

Raising his head, Mu Chen looked towards the descending stone pike that contained a frightening power. In the next instant, his hand suddenly turned illusionary as a starry sky condensed behind him. Along with ancient roars, three gigantic beastial figures condensed from it.

The three great divine seals of the Four Gods Constellation Scripture had once again been displayed by Mu Chen.

Following his increase in strength, the might of the three great divine seals was even more so than a month ago.

Roar!

Three gigantic beastial figures roared as they flew across the sky. Transforming into three different coloured streaks of light, they intertwined as they explosively shot out. In the next instant, carrying along torrential amounts of Spiritual Energy, they furiously smashed against the gigantic stone pike pressing down from above!

Boom!

An incomparably erratic Spiritual Energy storm spread out, causing the mountain peaks below to shatter and collapse as it swept through them, leading to gigantic cracks spreading in all directions.

Mao Jiang tightly stared at the origin of the erratic Spiritual Energy storm. After quite a while, the storm gradually came to a stop. However, Mu Chen's figure had disappeared without a trace.

"He's been shattered into pieces?"

As Mao Jiang swept his gaze around, happiness erupted within his eyes. This move of his was a killing one, and that Mu Chen had actually dared to meet it head-on. This goes to show how reckless he truly was.

"It hasn't end, yet. What are you so happy about?!"

Nevertheless, just as happiness had appeared within his eyes, a ridiculing voice filled with cold laughter suddenly rang out in the air. The expression on Mao Jiang's face instantly changed as he hastily looked up, only to see that Mu Chen's figure had unknowingly appeared high up in

the sky. At this moment, a gigantic black pagoda had appeared behind Mu Chen. It had nine levels on its body, while boundless energy radiated from it.

"Let's see who will be the one that suppresses the other!"

Mu Chen sneered, while the nine-layered pagoda instantly erupted with thousands of brilliant rays of light. The surface of the pagoda, level by level, started to sparkle and, very quickly, brilliant rays of light had already permeated the fourth level.

Roar!

Golden runes surfaced on the body of the pagoda, before four golden dragons roared as they separated from the pagoda, twisting and twining as they circled the pagoda. In the past, when Mu Chen activated the Nine-layered pagoda, he could only activate two of its levels. However, with the increase of his strength, now, he was already able to activate four levels.

"Suppress for me!"

Mu Chen patted down with his large hand. Instantly, carrying along the four golden dragons twisting and roaring around it, the Nine-layered pagoda brought along its gigantic shadow as it pressed down on Mao Jiang, whose expression had instantaneously changed.

"Ten Thousand Pike Divine Art!"

Mao Jiang explosively roared, only to have ten thousand black glowing pikes surface in the air. In the next instant, hiding the skies and covering the earth, they shot straight towards the black pagoda.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

However, the Nine-Layered pagoda didn't give a single care towards the incoming attacks. In an overbearing manner, it pressed down, while countless glowing pikes shattered, simply unable to create any obstruction to it.

Bang!

Within a few breaths, the Nine-Layered pagoda had shattered all the

glowing pikes that blotted the skies apart. Under the aghast and horror-filled gaze of Mao Jiang, it violently smashed against the boundless Spiritual Energy defenses around his body.

Crack!

Mao Jiang's face instantly turned pale as a mouthful of blood crazily spurted out. His body rapidly descended, smashing through the mountain peak below, causing it to sink in.

Whoosh!

However, just as Mao Jiang was about to get buried by the countless rocks formed around him, he fled out of there in an extremely miserable state. At this moment, his body was covered in blood, his face deathly pale, while his eyes were overwhelmed with shock.

The previous attack by Mu Chen had caused serious injuries to him. Furthermore, he was able to sense that when the black pagoda had pressed down on him, the Spiritual Energy within his body had turned sluggish, as if it had been sealed up.

"This brat's very strange!"

An intense tremble shook Mao Jiang's mind as he already had the intent to flee. At this moment, if he didn't leave, he might truly be killed by Mu Chen at this place.

Whoosh!

Just as this thought flashed within his mind, his figure had already shot out at lightning speed. As long as he could enter the area of the spiritual mist, it would be very easy for him to escape.

In the air, upon spotting Mao Jiang, who was explosively shooting out, a sneer flashed within Mu Chen's eyes as his hand seal changed.

Mao Jiang was now only a hundred feet away from the spiritual mist. However, at the instant when he was able to rush into it, the spiritual mist in front of him suddenly started to intensely fluctuate. As the spiritual mist dissipated away, two gigantic Spiritual Arrays came into view.

As the Spiritual Arrays revolved, Spiritual Energy swept out. Two streaks of light explosively shot out, violently impacting against Mao Jiang, who was totally caught unprepared.

Bang!

His body flew out, once again, with shock and horror completely filling his eyes. Those Spiritual Arrays, exactly when were they arranged within the spiritual mist?

His body heavily shot into the mountain, while his aura was instantly depressed. Crazily spurting blood, his chest had already caved in as he looked incredulously at Mu Chen, who was slowly descending from the sky. With a wave of the latter's sleeve, the Spiritual Arrays in the distance started to dissipate.

Mu Chen looked with an apathetic gaze at Mao Jiang, who was now in a seriously-injured state. With a clench of his hand, a black pike dropped within. Breaking it into four pieces, with a flick of his finger, four black rays of light violently shot towards the Mao Jiang's four limbs, viciously pinning him to the mountain, causing him to be unable to move or free himself.

"Arghhhh!"

Miserable shrieks rang out from Mao Jiang due to the intense pain coming from his four limbs, while thick dread and terror erupted from his eyes. The youth in front of him was too vicious and cruel in his actions.

In the sky, after hearing the miserable shriek, a shiver went through Chi Yu's heart, who was entangled with Luo Li. He hastily looked over, only to see Mao Jiang pinned to the mountain by Mu Chen. Instantly, horror and dread erupted from his eyes.

How could that brat be so formidable?!

"Hurry up and flee!"

Chi Yu's fighting spirit was instantly doused. He already knew that their hunt had failed. If he didn't flee now, he would have the same ending as Mao Jiang.

Swish!

Making a prompt decision, his body abruptly retreated. At the same time, the the lava-like short swords transformed into scarlet pythons, once again, crazily sending their attacks towards Luo Li in an attempt to restrain her.

A chilling glint appeared in Luo Li's clear and limpid eyes as she stared at the retreating Chi Yu. As her jade-like hand slowly clenched the longsword within, her slender finger made a flick. Instantly, her sword scabbard flew out, causing chilling light to appear. Due to this, the temperature of this stretch of the world had also suddenly dropped down.

Holding the longsword in her hand, slowed her sleep down, while gently slashing downwards.

Scree! Scree!

At the instant when her sword edge slashed down, the space in front of her was split apart. The ten scarlet pythons heading towards her instantly froze as a sword light flashed past their bodies, causing them the split into two halves.

Crack!

The ten lava-like short swords that were chopped apart dropped down from the sky, their Spiritual Energy totally dissipated. This set of High-grade Spiritual Artifacts were unexpectedly destroyed with a single slash from Luo Li.

Spurt Pfft.

With his Spiritual Weapons destroyed, Chi Yu had received the backlash from Luo Li's attack. Causing him to spurt a mouthful of blood. The horror and shock within his eye instantly became thicker. However, just as he was about to increase his speed of retreat, the space behind him shattered. Two rays of sword light swept out, piercing into his shoulders.

Just like that, his body, which was speeding away, instantly froze.

Standing in the air, Luo Li extended her jade-like hands. The sword

scabbard rushing towards the sky descended down, before her longsword slowly entered her scabbard, emitting a gentle cry.

Ring!

At the instant when her longsword entered her scabbard, a mouthful of blood spurted out from Chi Yu. At the same time, his arms slowly slid down from his shoulders, before dropping down; the area sliced by her was as smooth as a mirror.

Chapter 363: Rescue

As Chi Yu's arms slid off from his shoulders, a miserable shriek instantly rang out. His body rapidly dropped down, violently smashing against a mountain peak. This fall caused him to crazily spurt yet another mouthful of blood out, his aura was decreasing rapidly.

Fluttering as she descended, a chilling intent surfaced within Luo Li's beautiful eyes. Pressing the edge of her sword against Chi Yu's throat, a Sword Aura that was bone chillingly cold radiated from it, which caused the latter's face to instantly turn deathly pale, not daring to move a single inch.

Not far away, upon seeing this spectacle, Mu Chen gave a faint smile. With a clench of his hand, he pulled Mao Jiang towards him, before tossing him beside Chi Yu. The two vicious people from the Bounty Board that were previously showing off their awe-inspiring presence had now been turned exceedingly miserable, and that awe-inspiring presence was no longer present.

"This ending seems to have exceeded the expectations of the two of you...right?" said Mu Chen with a faint smile as he looked towards the two men, both showing deathly-pale faces while looking extremely dejected and depressed.

With his arms chopped off, Chi Yu was now glaring venomously at Mu Chen. Next to him, Mao Jiang clenched his teeth while growling, " Don't get cocky, you two! This time, none of you will be able to escape!"

Hearing his threat, Mu Chen continued to smile, before asking, "Please tell me about your plans, the two of you."

"In your dreams!" Chi Yu sneered back.

With a flick of his finger, a ray of Spiritual Energy shot out from Mu Chen. When it violently smashed against Chi Yu's chest, the latter was shot hundreds of metres back. Totally ignoring the latter's fate, Mu Chen turned and look towards Mao Jiang and said, " If you wish to become like him, I will grant it to you."

Looking at the handsome youth, whose eyes were filled with a chilling indifference, a shiver shook through Mao Jiang's heart. The former's actions caused even him to feel fearful and apprehensive. How could something like that be done by a student from an ivory tower like the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?

"You guys have no hope. Mo Longzi isn't someone you can contend against."

Clenching his teeth, Mao Jiang growled, "Release us now, and you'll still be able to leave this place. Once you fall into Mo Longzi's hands, none of you will live to tell the tale!"

"What is he planning to do?" asked Mu Chen as his forehead started to slightly wrinkle up.

"Do? Hehe. He, naturally, wants to eat every last one of you guys up. This way, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy would receive a very heavy blow. At that time, his status within the Demonic Dragon Palace would rise as a result," replied Mao Jiang with a sneer.

"Can he even digest us? All of the Punishment Hall's three Great Generals have taken action this time. Is Mo Longzi's appetite that big?" Mu Chen spoke out with a sneer. Lin Zheng and the other two were all at Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phase, and weren't weaker than Shen Cangsheng. Although Mo Longzi and his lineup was strong, this didn't mean that they could eat them up. Furthermore, once they successfully rescued Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, their strength would be able to immediately suppress their enemies.

"You guy are underestimating Mo Longzi too much," replied Mao Jiang in ridiculement. "As of now, he should've already found Lin Zheng. If I'm correct, Lin Zheng has already been defeated."

"As for the other two of the Great Generals, Gu Tianyan and Zhou Aurangshan, they'll get restrained by Mu Gu and Gui Xiong. After getting his hands free, Mo Longzi would naturally deal with them, too. At that point, what else can the other people do?"

Mu Chen's eyes faintly contracted as he heard Mao Jiang's words.

Unexpectedly, Mo Longzi was strong to such a level? He could even deal with Lin Zheng?

"Don't assume that your strength will greatly increase once you rescue Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong. The two of them have been poisoned by Mo Longzi's Demonic Dragon Poison. As of now, they are helpless. Even if you save them, they'll be close to useless." Mao Jiang continued to rain verbal blows towards Mu Chen, while his face was filled with a ridiculing smile. Those fellows still wanted to fight with Mo Longzi? They were truly looking to die.

A chilling glint flashed within Mu Chen's eyes. Mo Longzi was truly worthy of his title as a super vicious person that was ranked second on the Bounty Board. He was actually that formidable.

"What do we do now?"asked Luo Li in a soft voice and she walked towards Mu Chen. The current situation was indeed rather reassuring to them. Their enemies had split them up and were attempting to defeat them one by one. At that time, once Lin Zheng and the other two great generals were dealt with, it would be extremely difficult for them to confront their enemies anymore.

Mu Chen's eyes sparkled as he pondered about it. After a while, he looked towards Mao Jiang and asked, " You should know the locations of Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, right?"

"You're still trying to rescue them? They're poisoned! There's no use even if you save them" Mao Jiang replied with a sneer.

"There's no need for you to care about that. You just need to lead the way." replied Mu Chen with a faint smile. Since their enemies wanted to deal with them one by one, he could also rely on this time to find Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong. At that time, he could think of a way to dispel the poison in their bodies, allowing their strength to drastically rise. With that, doing a roundabout intercept and killing their enemies, they might be able to reverse this entire situation.

Naturally, he would need to seize the opportunity and rescue Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong and recover their fighting strength before

everyone of them gets captured.

"I'll find Chi Yu and ask him also for the way. If I discover that your route is wrong, don't blame be for skinning you alive before throwing you here." added Mu Chen as he sent a faint smile towards Mao Jiang. Merely, that smile appeared exceedingly cold and apathetic.

Looking at the smile on Mu Chen's face, Mao Jiang started to tremble as a chill spread over his body. Mu Chen's cruelty and viciousness was without a doubt. This youth in front of him was more cruel and vicious then even them.

"You show me the way, and you'll spare my life." Mao Jiang was also a decisive person. At this moment, he clearly didn't have much choices left. Thus he could only clench his teeth and reply to Mu Chen's demand.

"That will depend on your performance."

Mu Chen did not express his opinion, before shooting out and retrieving that Chi Yu back. From a distance, it seemed as though their exchange took quite a while. Finally, he retrieved Chi Yu, who was already sunk into unconsciousness back.

"Let's go."

Mu Chen looked towards Luo Li, who nodded her head.

Mu Chen lifted Mao Jiang up, who was seriously injured, before rushing rapidly towards the centre of the dense spiritual mist, sweeping across towards the direction that Mao Jiang had provided.

However, just as Mu Chen and his group had shot in the depths, at another Rank within the depths of the Western Desolated Territory, on a giant stone that appeared akin to a small hill, a figure sitting on it started to faintly wrinkle its forehead.

Raising its head to look towards the direction of Mu Chen and his group, it muttered, "That direction should be where Chi Yu and Mao Jiang had went, right? From the looks of it, they've actually been captured, and are heading towards the depths in an attempt to save Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong?"

This person had a normal appearance. However, his eyes appeared exceedingly dark and cold, akin to a venomous snake. He was precisely the only Rank 5 Spiritual Array Master within the Bounty Board, Wu Jia.

As his eyes flashed faintly, he looked towards his front. In the region before him was a gigantic Spiritual Array that was currently revolving around. Within the Spiritual Array were three figures trapped in it.

If one were to take a careful look, one would be able to precisely identify He Yao, Su Xuan and Xu Huang. The three of them didn't get separated very far from one another. Thus, they had met up on the way, before meeting Wu Jia, who had come over to deal with them.

However, facing against a Rank 5 Spiritual Array Master that had long prepared against them, even with the three of them collaborating, they were still unable to gain the slightest bit of superiority. On the contrary, they were trapped by their enemy's Spiritual Array, and were simply unable to break it.

Fortunately, by relying on their collaboration, they were barely able to protect their lives.

As Wu Jia stared at the three people within the Spiritual Array, his forehead started to faintly wrinkled, before suddenly standing up. Compared to Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, these three students didn't mean anything. Furthermore, it could be said that both sides were being impeded, and as of now, he couldn't allow the people from that side get close to Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong.

"I'll let you guys go first."

Staring at He Yao and the other two, Wu Jia gave a sneer. In the next moment, with a move of his body, he disappeared into the spiritual mist.

With the lost of Wu Jia's control, the Spiritual Array that had trapped He Yao and the other two started to slow its revolutions down. This allowed for He Yao and the other two to breath a sigh of relief. Before hurriedly using their full strength to break the Spiritual Array.

...

Whoosh!

Within the dense spiritual mist, Mu Chen and Luo Li shot swiftly across. Spiritual Energy swept out from him, causing the spiritual mist to be unable to get close to him.

They had already traveled at full speed, as both of them knew that they were in a race against time. Once Mo Longzi successfully deals with Lin Zheng and the other two, they might truly have lost.

Mao Jiang who was being carried in Mu Chen's hand, was continuously leading the way, while the depths of his eyes were quietly sparkling.

Whoosh!

Their figures shot out explosively. However, just as they were about to rush into another stretch of spiritual mist, Mu Chen's eyes furiously contracted. With a grab, he held onto Luo Li's slender waist before explosively retreating.

Bang!

The spiritual mist in front of them shattered apart, as countless streaks of gigantic Spiritual Energy swept out. Like a furious dragon, they rumbling explosively towards Mu Chen and Luo Li.

Luo Li's beautiful eyes grew faintly chilly, as her jade like hand grasped her long sword tightly. In the next instant, boundless Sword Aura shot out, slashing apart the incoming streaks of Spiritual Energy.

"Never would I have imagined that Chi Yu and Mao Jiang would actually fall into the hands of two students..."a strang voice rang out from within the spiritual mist. As the spiritual mist fluctuated, a figure surfaced from within. It was precisely Wu Jia.

At the back of Wu Jia was a gigantic Spiritual Array that was currently revolving slowly, ready to launch attacks out at anytime.

"That's Wu Jia, Rank 5 on the Bounty Board?" looking at the person that appeared, Mu Chen spoke out while faintly wrinkling his forehead.

"Please stop here first, the two of you. Don't continue moving forward. I

will stop you two." said Wu Jia while sending a faint smile towards Mu Chen and Luo Li.

Staring chillingly at Wu Jia, killing intent erupted within Mu Chen's eyes.

However, just as he had planned to take action, Luo Li gracefully walked forward. Sending a gentle smile towards Mu Chen, she said, "Let me stop him. Go and rescue the two first."

Upon seeing this, Mu Chen was instantly startled for a bit, while slightly hesitating.

"Have a bit of confidence in me, okay?" said Luo Li in an annoyed tone. Mu Chen had always wanted to stand the front and protect her. However, wasn't he seriously underestimating this future queen of the Luo God Clan?

Hearing her tone, Mu Chen gave a helpless smile, before gently nodding his head while replying, "Please be careful."

He wasn't especially worried about her, as Luo Li's hidden cards were something that even he was not clear about. The only reason why Mu Chen hesitated was due to her extremely little times of truly fighting with people. Mu Chen didn't belief that Luo Tianshen would let Luo Li leave the Luo God Clan and come to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy without the slightest bit of trump card

As his voice rang out, he didn't continue wasting any more time. With a move of his body, he shot forward into the spiritual mist.

"Where are you going?"

Upon seeing his, Wu Jia's gaze instantly turned frosty. As the Spiritual Array behind revolved, a stream came gushing out, sweeping towards Mu Chen.

Whoosh!

A stream of Sword Aura had also swept out, colliding against the Spiritual Energy stream heading towards Mu Chen. In the next moment,

Sword Aura prevaded out, rumbling towards that Wu Jia and enveloping him within.

Taking advantage of this, Mu Chen's figure had rushed into the spiritual mist, disappearing within in a blink of an eye. As of now, he needed to rescue Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong before Mo Longzi successfully dealt with Lin Zheng and the rest.

If not, their situation would become extremely disadvantageous.

Chapter 364: Searching for Fire

Whoosh!

Mu Chen's figure shot through the spiritual mist. He was able to sense intense Spiritual Energy radiating from a far distance behind him. Obviously, Luo Li had already truly started crossing hands with Wu Jia.

Retracting his gaze, Mu Chen proceeded to coldly stare at Mao Jiang, who he had captive in his hands. With a sneer, he said, "Looks like you didn't tell me some things, huh?"

Mao Jiang's expression faintly changed as he repeatedly shook his head.

"How did that Wu Jia know which direction we were at?" asked Mu Chen chillingly. "Was it you that informed him?"

Hearing Mu Chen's question, Mao Jiang hastily replied, "There's Spiritual Arrays arranged by Wu Jia within the spiritual mist in the depths of the Western Desolate Territory. Therefore, he's able to sense all of the fluctuations within it."

Mu Chen shot a cold glare at Mao Jiang, before shooting a ray of Spiritual Energy out from his finger. Shooting into the spiritual mist, he spread his senses out. Indeed, Mu Chen was able to sense some extremely faint and strange fluctuations radiating from within. Those were the sensory threads from those Spiritual Arrays.

This Wu Jia truly had some ability.

A faint flash appeared in Mu Chen's eyes. In the next instant, with a wave of his sleeve, dozen's of Spiritual Seals condensed, before dissipating around his body. Glowing threads interweaved around his body, seemingly forming a small-sized Spiritual Array, enveloping him within.

This Spiritual Array wasn't large. However, it possessed the capability to isolate one's sensory abilities. Mu Chen didn't want every move and every action he made to be collected in Wu Jia's hands.

After arranging the array, Mu Chen turned his apathetic gaze towards Mao Jiang, before saying in a indifferent voice, "Continue leading the way."

A shiver went through Mao Jiang's heart due to the gaze coming from Mu Chen, causing him to immediately continue guiding the way.

In the continuing journey, Mu Chen didn't receive any more obstructions. After throwing off Wu Jia's means of perception, that fellow shouldn't be able to sense his position anymore.

This continued for dozens of minutes, before Mu Chen's speed was slowly reduced. A gigantic mountain cave appeared in front of him. At the end of the mountain cave was a deep valley pervaded by spiritual mist.

"Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong should be inside of that deep valley. However, the spiritual mist present there is too dense, making it extremely difficult to search for them," said Mao Jiang as he point towards the deep valley.

Mu Chen faintly nodded his head. Flicking his finger, a ray of Spiritual Energy shot out, before violently knock Mao Jiang unconscious. Hoisting him up, Mu Chen proceeded to shoot forward, rushing into the deep valley.

Upon entering the deep valley, Mu Chen's vision received even more impedance. After pondering deeply awhile, Mu Chen shot towards the air as Spiritual Energy erupted from his body. Spiritual Energy burning with black flames rose to the sky akin to a smoke signal, causing much of the surrounding spiritual mist to dissipate.

The terrain within the deep valley was complicated. Coupled with the obstruction of the spiritual mist, it was too difficult to search for the two that were hidden within. Therefore, Mu Chen chose to directly release his Spiritual Energy. His Spiritual Energy fluctuations should be very familiar to Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong. If the two were to sense it, they would definitely give a signal in response.

This action by Mu Chen had achieved quite a good result. As his Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiated out, within a short span of less than a minute, a ray of Spiritual Energy erupted from a place within the deep valley.

This Spiritual Energy fluctuation was rather familiar, it's actually Shen

Cangsheng's.

Slight happiness erupted within Mu Chen's heart, before shoot straight at the origin of the fluctuations. After a dozen breaths, his speed slowed down as his gaze faintly concentrated in his forward direction. Within the cliff present in his sight was a mountain cave. Present outside of the mountain cave was a figure standing tall and upright.

"Shen Cangsheng."

Upon spotting that familiar figure, Mu Chen instantly breathed a sigh of relief, as if a heavy burden had been lifted from him. As he moved closer and noticed Shen Cangsheng's appearance, he could not help feeling shock and astonishment.

At this moment, black blotches covered Shen Cangsheng's skin. These black blotches seemed to be squirming, while a sinister and poisonous aura radiated from them, causing Shen Cangsheng to appear exceedingly pallid and haggard. However, even though his condition was extremely miserable and poor, a smile was still present on Shen Cangsheng's face and the disdainful aura not reduced the slightest bit.

"Hey. Never expected that you'd be the first to arrive here. You truly surprised me." Looking at Mu Chen, Shen Cangsheng couldn't help smiling as he spoke out.

Landing at the entrance of the cave, Mu chen casually tossed Chi Yu and Mao Jiang, whom he was holding in his hands, towards the ground.

"That's Chi Yu and Mao Jiang? You've actually dealt with them." Seeing the two people, Shen Cangsheng felt slightly surprised. Although Chi Yu and Mao Jiang were ranked 7th and 8th, they were, after all, at the Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Stage, and could be considered formidable. He never expected that they would fall into Mu Chen's hands.

"Senior Brother Lin Zheng and the rest had also rushed over here. However, the current situation doesn't seem especially good."

Mu Chen looked at Shen Cangsheng and asked, "How are the two of you?"

"Look's like the situation isn't too good," replied Shen Cangsheng as he helpless shrugged his shoulders, before walking into the cave. As Mu Chen walked in, he noticed Li Xuantong, who was in a worse condition that Shen Cangsheng. The former's black blotches were denser than the latter's, while his entire body was permeated by those sinister and poisonous fluctuations.

As Li Xuantong raised his eyes, Mu Chen could also see a black blotch on his face. This made the former's handsome-looking face appear somewhat strange. Noticing Mu Chen, he revealed a bitter smile at the corner of his mouth. Obviously, he also didn't expect that the first person to find them would actually be the latter.

"What's this all about?" Mu Chen somewhat didn't understand this whole situation. With Shen Cangsheng's and Li Xuantong's strength, even if there were more enemies, they shouldn't have ended up in such a miserable state.

"Mo Longzi had long prepared for us. His strength had already reached Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase. He had always kept this hidden in our previous exchanges. Only at the end, when we were encircled by them, did that fellow expose his strength. Furthermore, he had brought out the Demonic Dragon Poison from the Demonic Dragon Palace. That's an extremely toxic poison refined by a Sovereign, and extremely formidable. We're not afraid of getting poisoned, but it's just that our strength still can't be restore," replied Li Xuantong in a dull manner.

"Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase..."

Mu Chen's eyes contracted. This Mo Longzi had truly reached that level. That meant to say that even Senior Brother Lin Zheng might not be able to match up with him head-on.

"The cultivation of those in the Demonic Dragon Palace is extremely sinister. Although there's a limit in their future, one's early stages would have leaps and bounds in their cultivation. I've truly neglected to take this aspect into consideration, since I've never imagined that Mo Longzi would break through that quickly," said Shen Cangsheng with a frown. In reality,

he had also come into contact with that phase. If he was able to recover after all of this, he would definitely be able to break through into Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase. However, it was a pity that due to this Demonic Dragon Poison, they were unable to extract themselves from Mo Longzi's pursuit.

"The most important thing now is to get rid of this Demonic Dragon Poison. If Mo Longzi truly promoted into Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase, I'm afraid that Senior Brother Lin Zheng and the rest will not be able to hold out for too long. We have to help them as fast as possible," muttered Mu Chen to himself.

Sitting on the floor, Shen Cangsheng said in a helpless manner, "This Demonic Dragon Poison can only be forcefully dispelled by a Sovereign Stage expert. We've no other way..."

Mu Chen slightly frowned, Sovereign Stage expert? If they could find a Sovereign Stage expert, where would that Mo Longzi dare to bounce around? He had definitely bet that the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy wouldn't dispatch any Sovereign Stage experts to deal with him. Therefore, he would dare to be that rampant and aggressive.

"Let me try. My Spiritual Energy is somewhat special. Let's see if it will have any effect," muttered Mu Chen. After speaking out, his Spiritual Energy started to fuse with the Nine Netherflame. This fire should have some restrictive effect against a sinister poison like the Demonic Dragon Poison.

Hearing his words, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong both nodded their heads. As of now, in such a desperate situation, they could only try anything presented to them.

Mu Chen arrived before Shen Cangsheng. With a clench of his fist, Spiritual Energy burning with black flames rose from his fist, radiating a high temperature heat wave as it appeared.

Placing his palm over Shen Cangsheng's crown, Mu Chen's Spiritual Energy gushed into the former's body. Not the slightest bit of resistance was put up by the former, letting the latter's Spiritual Energy enter his

body.

As Mu Chen's Spiritual Energy entered Shen Cangsheng's body, he could feel the messed-up state within the latter's body. That Demonic Dragon Poison was akin to several dragons, travelling around within his body. As the strands of poison travelled about, the Spiritual Energy along their paths was corroded and even dissipated. From the looks of this, the Spiritual Energy within the bodies of Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong would forever be unable to recover if nothing was done.

After muttering incomprehensibly to himself, Mu Chen controlled his Spiritual Energy to shoot forward, before wrapping around a strand of Demonic Dragon Poison. Black flames instantly rose as Mu Chen prepared to refine and dispel it.

Chi. Chi.

Following the encirclement by the black flames, the Demonic Dragon Poison seemed to have discovered this danger, and it immediately emitted an ear-piercing sound. A black poisonous aura radiated from it, defending it from the black flames.

As the black flames rose and the poisonous aura extended out, the two started to intertwine. However, what made Mu Chen feel slightly depressed was that this Demonic Dragon Poison was very tenacious and resilient. Even when faced with the refinement of the Nine Netherflame, it would entrench itself until the very last of it dissipates. Although he was definitely able to dissipate it, bit by bit, this speed was too slow, much too slow.

A sigh shook through Mu Chen's heart, before withdrawing his Spiritual Energy. At this moment, his face started to turn dark. According to this speed, when he had completely refined and eradicated all of the Demonic Dragon Poison within the bodies of Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, a number of days might have passed.

However, at this very moment, they clearly didn't possess that kind of time.

Upon noticing Mu Chen's expression, both Shen Cangsheng and Li

Xuantong gave a soft sigh. Although they truly didn't hold much hope about this, all in all, they felt slightly disappointed.

Mu Chen started to faintly wrinkle his forehead. Although the Nine Netherflames were able to refine and eradicate the Demonic Dragon Poison, it clearly didn't possess enough strength. If he had even greater and more powerful flames, he might be able to rapidly deal with the Demonic Dragon Poison.

However, where would he be able to obtain a flame that was more powerful than the Nine Netherflames?

As Mu Chen started to sink deep into his thoughts, a quiet and stifling atmosphere started to envelop the mountain cave, causing others to find it harder to breath.

"An even stronger flame..."

Mu Chen muttered those words to himself. After quite a while, a flash of insight furiously appeared within his head. A flame that's stronger than the Nine Netherflame?

After successfully transforming, doesn't the flames of the Nine Netherbird also evolve? From the Nine Netherflame, to the Undying Flame?

A flash of brilliance erupted in Mu Chen's eyes, before faintly narrowing them. In the next moment, his mind started to enter his Universe Bracelet, finding the Nine Netherbird who had transformed into a giant egg after successfully passing through her tribulation.

Within the Universe bracelet, Mu Chen quickly found the giant egg that was in a mysterious black colour. Faint purplish runic patterns sparkled on its surface, while a strong consciousness radiated from it.

Mu Chen's mind quietly started to call out to the giant egg. He didn't possess the qualifications to control the Undying Fire. Therefore, he could only hope for Nine Nether, who's undergoing her transformation to be able to hear his summons, and give a strand of Undying Fire to him...

"Nine Nether...hurry..."

As he continued to urge her, Mu Chen muttered to himself within his heart.

...

As Mu Chen attempted to retrieve some Undying Fire to help refine the Demonic Dragon Poison for Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, something was happening somewhere else within the depths of the Western Desolate Territory.

The earth here showed signs of collapse, and gigantic fissures extended out from the ground, while all the mountain peaks had shattered and collapsed.

Bang!

On a shattered mountain peak, a figure shot down. He sent a fist down to explode the giant rocks that littered the floor, before extending his palm into the deep pit, retrieving a figure drenched in blood.

Sending an apathetic gaze towards Lin Zheng, who had fainted from his heavy injuries, Mo Longzi carried him over his shoulder, before turning around and walking to another direction.

"I should deal with the second one now..."

Chapter 365: Curing Poison

Within the quiet mountain cave, Mu Chen tightly shut his eyes as his mind continued to call out. Nine Nether had entered a dormant state during her transformation, making him totally unable to communicate with her. Thus, he could only attempt this kind of summoning to see if he could get just a little bit of a result from it.

Although this method was slightly stupid, as of now, this was the only thing that Mu Chen could do. If not, by the time he had used the Nine Netherflame to refine the Demonic Dragon Poison within the bodies of Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, Mo Longzi might have long dealt with Lin Zheng and the rest.

Seeing Mu Chen sinking deep into his consciousness, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong didn't dare to make a single noise in fear of disturbing the former. Although the expressions displayed on their faces were still alright, due to the Demonic Dragon Poison within their bodies, they were feeling somewhat fretful and impatient within their hearts. If Mu Chen could really find a way to quickly refine and eradicate the Demonic Dragon Poison within their bodies, that would be truly good news to the two of them.

Although they didn't dare to raise their hopes too much over the success rate of this, having hope was still better than none...

As time slowly went by, cold sweat started to surface on Mu Chen's forehead, since his emotions started to turn impatient and irritated. From the start till now, his summons were still not getting any replies.

"At this time, you can't let go of this connection, Nine Nether!" shouted Mu Chen impatiently within his heart.

Within the Universe Bracelet, the giant black egg started to faintly tremble at this moment, before the golden purplish runic patterns started to appear on its surface.

Discovering this activity happening to the giant egg, Mu Chen instantly felt elated.

As the golden purplish runic patterns grew increasingly dense, slivers of flames seemingly fluttered out from them. Those flames weren't of the colour black, but appeared purplish in colour.

Gently floating and fluttering around, they appeared to be weak and easily extinguishable. Nevertheless, they gave people a mysterious sensation of being eternal, and immortal.

Undying Flames!

Unconcealable ecstasy erupted within Mu Chen's heart as his eyes abruptly snapped open. With a slight clench of his hand, a clump of purplish flames appeared within his palm.

Creak! Creak!

As the clump of purplish flames appeared, the space around it started to distort. Indescribable fluctuations started to radiate from it, causing the Spiritual Energy in the surroundings to turn scorching hot, making the entire mountain cave seem like an oven.

As Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong stared at this tiny clump of purplish flames, a shiver went up both of their spines. They were able to sense the frightening power contained within that tiny and small clump of flames.

"What flame is this?" Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong looked at each other, with shock and astonishment erupting in both of their eyes.

"Hu."

As if a heavy weight had been lifted off his shoulders, Mu Chen breathed out a sigh in relief. Although this clump of flame was extremely small, it was much, much more powerful than the Nine Netherflames. After all, these two were simply not on the same level.

With the Undying Flames, wanting to refine and eradicate the Demonic Dragon Poison within the bodies of Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong should be very simple now.

"I'm beginning. There shouldn't be a problem now," said Mu Chen as he

turned to look and smile at Shen Cangsheng.

Shen Cangsheng firmly nodded his head, his gaze turning solemn.

Mu Chen took a deep breath of air. With a point of his finger, the clump of purplish flames fluttered out, before starting to slowly spread out. Transforming into something like a fiery membrane, it enveloped Shen Cangsheng within it.

Whoosh!

Just as the fiery membrane took shape, Shen Cangsheng's skin instantly turned boiling hot. As beads of perspiration flowed continuously out, they instantly transformed into nothingness. Shen Cangsheng soon started to clench his teeth, obviously enduring the immense amount of pain caused towards him.

"Endure a bit," said Mu Chen. Although this Undying Flame wasn't that strong, he was completely unable to control it. Therefore, he didn't dare to let it enter Shen Chansheng's body. If not, once it lost control, Shen Cangsheng might end up turning into a pile of ash.

Clenching his teeth, Shen Cangsheng nodded his head. As his body trembled, green veins squirmed about on his skin akin to snakes, appearing extremely frightening when seen.

Faint flames fluttered around the surface of the fiery membrane. Under the scorchingly-high temperature, the black blotches on the surface of Shen Cangsheng's skin appeared to start boiling. In the next moment, to Mu Chen's surprise and elation, a black poisonous aura was starting to slowly be forced out from Shen Cangsheng's body by the scorchingly-high heat.

Argh!

As Shen Cangsheng furiously clenched his teeth, a low beastial roar escaped from his throat. At this moment, his eyes had already turned scarlet red. As more and more of the black poisonous aura permeated out of him, the poisonous blotches on his skin started to slowly shrink.

This torture continued for approximately ten minutes, before the

poisonous blotches on his skin were completely forced out.

With a move of Mu Chen's palm, the purplish fiery membrane instantly withdrew, transforming back into the tiny clump of flames fluttering on his finger. Merely, it appeared somewhat dimmer, with some of it obviously being consumed earlier.

As the fiery membrane returned, Shen Cangsheng's originally dim eyes seemingly turned brilliant in an instant. The Spiritual Energy of the surroundings churned and surged, gushing into his body like an endless stream, causing the Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiating from his body to grow rapidly stronger.

After losing the inhibition of the Demonic Dragon Poison, his strength had started to quickly recover.

Upon seeing this, Mu Chen breathed another sigh of relief, before turning his gaze towards Li Xuantong, who was feeling slightly emotional as of now. With a smile, he said, "It's your turn."

Li Xuantong nodded his head, before closing his eyes shut, in preparation for the incoming pain and torture.

As Li Xuantong's poisoned state was worse off than Shen Cangsheng, the time needed to eradicate all of the poison from him took nearly 20 minutes, before finally forcing the last bit of poisonous aura from his body.

Hu.

As the poisonous aura left his body, Li Xuantong quickly recovered the sharpness of his expression. Completely turning a blind eye towards the intense pain radiating out from his skin, he immediately proceeded to enter a training state, wanting to recover his Spiritual Energy at the shortest time possible.

Seeing the Demonic Dragon Poison being completely eradicated from the bodies of Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, Mu Chen could finally feel completely relaxed. Wiping away the cold sweat present of his forehead, the Undying Flame on his fingertip appeared exceedingly weak.

Staring at that Undying Flame, a thought faintly shook his heart. This flame was exceedingly formidable. Although it was just a tiny wisp, it was undeniably a divine tool to him.

"Let's try to see if it can be kept in my body."

Mu Chen muttered to himself. Although other people would definitely not dare to attempt what he was about to do, he was different from the others. His Spiritual Energy had fused with the Nine Netherflame. Although there was a disparity between the Nine NetherFlame to the Undying Flame, it was, after all, the next evolution of the Nine NetherFlame. Thinking along that line, this wisp of Undying Flame shouldn't start rejecting him.

After thinking until this point, Mu Chen didn't continue hesitating anymore. With a thought, black flaming Spiritual Energy encased the wisp of Undying Flame, before absorbing it into his body.

Just as Mu Chen had thought, upon entering his body, this wisp of Undying Flame didn't show any signs of rebelling, making him feel extremely elated. With extreme care, he slowly kept it within his Spiritual Sea.

Within his Spiritual Sea, his Divine Soul's little mouth took in a deep breath, sucking the Spiritual Energy within its body. As the tiny wisp of Undying Flame fluttered in, it descended on the little hand of the Divine Soul. Not a single rejection appeared between the two.

Upon seeing this, unable to hold it in, Mu Chen started to laugh with happiness. He never thought that he would actually be able to pick up a benefit here...

As his eyes sprung open, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong were still in the process of recovering. With a move of his gaze, he looked towards the air in front of him, where a clump of black liquid was present, squirming and wriggling about.

That was the Demonic Dragon Poison forced out from Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong's body.

Mu Chen stared at the Demonic Dragon Poison. A faint flash appeared in his gaze as he extended his palm. At this moment, his index finger started slowly to turn jet black, before black lightning started to faintly surface on it.

The Divine Black Lightning Poison was sealed within this middle finger. That was a poisonous aura that was even more overbearing than the Demonic Dragon Poison.

"If I seal that Demonic Dragon Poison within here, it should become even more terrifying, right?" Mu Chen's eyes faintly narrowed. In the next moment, without much hesitation, he summoned that clump of Demonic Dragon Poison over, before extending his slim finger towards it.

Although the Demonic Dragon Poison had caused extreme misery to Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, Mu Chen truly didn't have the slightest bit of dread towards it. Not to mention the Undying Flame within his body, even this Divine Black Lightning Poison would be able to suppress it. This Demonic Dragon Poison truly wouldn't be able to flip the sky within his body.

Black rays of brilliance sparkled on Mu Chen's finger, before proceeding to directly absorb the Demonic Dragon Poison within it. Instantly, the jet black colour of his finger become an even deep and abstruse colour, causing even a shiver to travel through his body when he looked at it.

Mu Chen took a closer look, before gently tapping forward with that finger. At this moment, he was able to see an extremely faint black brilliance flashing out. After that, he noticed a hole that wasn't large, but whose end was unable to been seen, appearing on the hard and sturdy mountain cliff in front of him. The fringes of that hole were covered in corrosive fluctuations.

A rather astonishing corrosive effect.

Shock flashed past Mu Chen's eyes, before causing the colour of that finger to regain normalcy after a thought. It's fortunate that the Northern Sea Dragon had arranged a seal on his finger. If not, he truly wouldn't be able to subdue such a frightening poison.

Bang!

As Mu Chen's finger regained its normalcy, boundless Spiritual Energy abruptly erupted from within the mountain cave. The entire mountain peak seemed to intensely shudder at this moment, causing gigantic cracks to spread out and extend.

Mu Chen cast his gaze over, only to see Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong opening their eyes within the centre of the boundless Spiritual Energy. Brilliant rays of vitality that seemed substantial flashed and sparkled within their eyes.

At this moment, they had finally recovered their strength completely. Furthermore, they seemed to have even some improvement. Looked like this event had become yet another training experience for the two of them.

"Congratulations," said Mu Chen with a smile.

As Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong stood up in succession, boundless Spiritual Energy erupted from them. The vigor within their eyes was once again present. The 1st and 2nd rank of the Heavenly Rankings that showed disdain towards the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had clearly returned.

As the two felt the boundless energy within their bodies, elation and ecstasy erupted within their eyes, before proceeding to look at Mu Chen.

"Thanks for this matter."

With a smile, both of them said their thanks to Mu Chen. Although their tones appeared casual, with one being unable to detect much gratitude in them, Mu Chen knew that if he were meet with any difficulty in the future, the two of them would definitely come and help him, even if it meant risking their lives.

Mu Chen sent a smile back in return, without saying any type of courteous words. After all, there wasn't any point in saying those, since that would, in turn, make him appear unreasonable and arrogant.

"Since you two have recovered, we should make a move, right?" said Mu

Chen as he looked out of the mountain cave. At this time, he didn't know exactly what Lin Zheng and the rest were doing.

Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong firmly nodded their heads in reply, while chilling intent erupted from their eyes.

Mo Longzi, this time, let us continue fighting for another round!

Chapter 366: Gathering

This was a gigantic basin, whose air was filled with dense spiritual mist. Within it, one could seemingly not be able to see the sky and the horizon. At this moment, extremely erratic Spiritual Energy fluctuations swept out from the centre of this basin, causing the spiritual mist in the surrounding air to be shakened to the point of being unable to spread closer.

Bang! Bang!

Spiritual Energy gushed out from the centre of the basin, while a Sword Aura howled about. Under this confrontation, the ground below started to collapse as gigantic fissures continued to endlessly form and extend out.

If one were to turn their gaze towards the origin of this spectacle, one would see two figures flashing about like lightning as they crossed hands with each other. Every single exchange would cause astonishingly loud sounds to ring out.

If one looked closely, one would notice that one of the figures was slim and graceful, with a set of black clothes wrapped around her slender and exquisite figure. A long black sword carried along an exceptionally swift and sharp Sword Aura that swept out.

This familiar figure was, naturally, Luo Li.

However, at this moment, her current opponent wasn't Wu Jia, whom she had fought against previously. The figure opposite of her was a skinny male that appeared akin to a bag of bones. This person, was Mu Gu, the 3rd Rank on the Bounty Board's rankings.

The surface of that Mu Gu's body sparkled in a lustrous white awe as if it was radiating from his bones. At this moment, his seemingly thin and withered body appear to contain an extremely tyrannical power.

A bone knife was wielded in his hands as he fought against Luo Li. The two would erupt with rather astonishing attacks as they clashed, causing even the surrounding air to get split apart by them.

A number of figures were present behind Mu Gu as they stood on a

mountain peak. Observing the battle taking place before them, astonishment was present in their eyes. Obviously, they never expected that Mu Gu would actually be obstructed by such a beautiful young girl.

"Haha. I never imagined that the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy would produce yet another outstanding student. This youth is able to possess such strength at such an age. She truly isn't simple," said a male carrying a long spear with a smile as he looked in astonishment at the battle before him.

"Teng Long, I'm afraid that even you will not be able to deal with this girl," said Wu Jia with a faint smile. From his previous exchange with Luo Li, he could determine that the latter truly was extremely formidable. He had arranged numerous Spiritual Arrays against her, which were dealt with by the latter in a single slash.

Although his words didn't sound nice, the male by the name of Teng Long shrugged his shoulders in indifference. Although Wu Jia was only rank fifth on the Bounty Board's rankings, he was, after all, a Fifth grade Spiritual Array Master. If one were to truly talk about the degree of difficulty to be subdued, from a certain perspective, he was even more formidable than those two vicious people of Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phase, Mu Gu and Gui Xiong.

"I've heard that Mao Jiang and Chi Yu were defeated?"

Wu Jia nodding his head, replying, "They were defeated by a student named Mu Chen. Furthermore, that person should have gone to save Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong."

"What's the use of saving them? The two were poisoned by the Demonic Dragon Poison. If they were rescued now, they would only be a burden for them." On the other side, a male covered in tiger-head marks spoke out while curling his lip.

This person was Wang Hu, 9th Rank on the Bounty Board's rankings.

"Mo Longzi isn't back yet? Looks like defeating Lin Zheng and the other two should consume quite a bit of his time." Teng Long spoke out while looking at his surroundings.

"The three Great Generals of the Punishment Hall are also exceptional characters. Even Mo Longzi would have to consume some time in taking them down one by one."

With a faint smile, Wu Jia replied, "However, that's alright. Regardless of how they struggle, the result would still be the same. The only thing we have to do is stare at those people from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. When Mo Longzi appears, be prepared to keep all of them here."

As his spoke those words, his sinister gaze stared towards the distance like a venomous snake. At a mountain peak situated there, there were similarly a few standing figures, which were He Yao, Su Xuan and the rest of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy members.

At this moment, however, their faces were brimming with graveness. They were similarly able to sense that Wu Jia and his group were currently staring at them. Having already crossed hands with that group of people, He Yao and the rest knew that every one of them in that group was vicious and cruel. If Lin Zheng and the other two Great Generals were around, they would not feel afraid. However, as of now, everyone had already gathered, but Lin Zheng and the other two had yet to appear. Causing them to feel some unease.

Previously, their enemies had already decided to capture all of them. The only thing that prevented them from doing so was Luo Li's arrival and her subsequent obstruction of the extremely strong Mu Gu, causing their enemies to quietly restrain their actions. However, they knew that this non-aggression couldn't last for too long, as they couldn't rely on a sole person, Luo Li, to obstruct the group of vicious people staring down at them.

"Exactly where did that fellow Mu Chen go?"

In the current situation, they urgently needed people of strength comparable to Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phase to shock and intimidate their opponents. Within their group of people, other than Lin Zheng and the other two Great Generals, the only people at that level

would be Mu Chen and Luo Li.

However, Luo Li was now being tangled up by Mu Gu, and Mu Chen had yet to show himself since the start...

Thinking about that, Su Xuan and the rest all shook their heads in helplessness. Upon entering the Western Desolate Territory, they'd been immediately separated. Therefore, they were unclear as to where, exactly, Mu Chen had gone off to.

"There's a possibility that something might have happened to Senior Brother Lin Zheng and the other two Great Generals," said an expert from the Punishment Hall with a slightly dark expression. Clenching his teeth, he continued, "That Mo Longzi has yet to show himself since the beginning. I suspect that he's gone off to deal with them."

Hearing his words, Su Xuan and the rest turned silent. Naturally, they had also thought about this. However, their current situation was already far from good. As of now, the only thing they could do was to hope that Senior Brother Lin Zheng and the other two Great Generals would be able to deal with Mo Longzi. In that way, the current situation would be completely reversed by them.

That was what they were clearly waiting for now.

Bang!

While both side were quietly waiting for the results between Mo Longzi and Lin Zheng and the other two, the confrontation happening in the sky became increasingly intense. Boundless Sword Aura howled, appearing akin to a river of Sword Aura, forcing Mu Gu to retreat.

As the Sword Aura swept across his body, it brought along bloodied wounds. Nevertheless, Mu Gu didn't seem to care the slightest bit. The skin that was slashed apart revealed dense white bones beneath. Sparking with luster and light, they appeared to be as strong and resilient as steel.

This Mu Gu had clearly cultivated some Body Refining Divine Art that was exceedingly strong; therefore, being able to endure the engulfment of Luo Li's Sword Aura.

"Truly a troublesome girl to deal with..." Looking at his blood-covered body, Mu Gu started to laugh out. His laughing sounds were withered and hoarse, sounding exceedingly ear-piercing.

"Anyways, why are you enduring so persistently? I know that you guys are waiting for the three Great Generals of the Punishment Hall. However, they would definitely be dealt with by Mo Longzi. When he arrives, your ends would already be guaranteed."

Facing his cawing, Luo Li didn't gave the slightest bit of care. Instead, her attacks grew increasingly cruel and vicious as boundless Sword Aura hid the skies and covered the earth while sweeping towards Mu Gu.

Whoosh!

Just as Luo Li had increased the ferocity of her attacks, whooshing sounds seemed to ring over from the distance.

A shiver instantly shook through everyone's minds, before instantly turning their gazes towards the origin of the sound. There, layers of dense spiritual mist were being scattered apart, before a figure swiftly shot out from within. Like a fiend, he appeared in the sky of the basin.

That figure was covered in black robes, with a black sword on his back. An apathetic expression hung on his face, while a malevolent black dragon mark surfaced on the centre of his forehead, causing a baleful and tyrannical aura to appear around his body.

That's Mo Longzi!

Upon spotting the demon god-like figure, the bodies of Su Xuan and the rest turned cold and clammy, and when they looked behind Mo Longzi, their faces instantly turned deathly pale.

Three figures covered in blood floated at the back of Mo Longzi. Their auras were depressed, while appearing to be in an injury-induced coma.

"It's Senior Lin Zheng and the other two!"

Their entire bodies turned cold and clammy, while uncontrollable shivers shook through their spines. With eyes overwhelmed with shock

and horror, they stared at the three people behind Mo Longzi.

Mo Longzi was actually that frightening? Even Lin Zheng and the other two were unable to defeat him?

"Haha. You've finally dealt with them?" On the other mountain peak, upon spotting the three figures behind Mo Longzi's back, the corner of Gui Xiong's eyes jumped and twitched, before speaking out with a hearty laugh.

Mo Longzi nodded his head with indifference. With a wave of his hands, he flung the heavily-injured Lin Zheng and the other two towards the mountain peak, before replying in an apathetic voice, "They're worthy of being the three Great Generals of the Punishment Hall. Even I had to waste some time to deal with them one by one."

Turning his gaze towards the battle between Luo Li and Mu Gu, Mo Longzi faintly narrowed his eyes, while a sliver of shock flashed within them. "Other than Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, as well as the three Great Generals of the Punishment Hall, I neer thought that the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy would produce yet another outstanding student."

"There's one more brat that has some ability. He broke through my obstruction and blocked off my Spiritual Array sensors that I've arranged within the spiritual mist. He should have headed off to save Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong," replied Wu Jia with a faint smile.

"He's gone to save them?" muttered Mo Longzi with faint jump of his eyebrows, before proceeding to laugh apathetically out loud, "Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong are close to becoming handicapped by my Demonic Dragon Poison. Even if they're saved, they'll turn into burdens. Let him do what he wants. We just have to capture him later, and that's about it."

While giving his reply, he shot a look at Su Xuan and their group standing in the distance. After judging their relative strength, he withdrew his gaze without giving the slightest care about them. Till this stage, the entire situation was basically within the palm of his hands.

"Gui Xiong, help Mu Gu finish her off. Don't waste any more time," said Mo Longzi with a wave of his hand.

"Haha, using a numerical advantage to bully others doesn't seem too good, right?"

Gui Xiong spoke out with a beaming smile. However, regardless of what words he said, he had already pulled his giant axe out. With a stomp, his figure shot out. In the next instant, with strength that could cleave a mountain, and the incomparably overbearing awe of an axe, roared crazily as it cleaved towards Luo Li.

Bang!

Seeing this, the bone blade in Mu Gu's hand furiously slashed out, sending a gigantic hundred foot long glowing arced blade violently chopping down towards Luo Li.

Two Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phase were attacking simultaneously, causing the resulting attack to drastically rise in might.

As their attacks headed towards Luo Li, her beautiful face turned grave. Grasping her longsword tightly with her jade-like hand, the river of Sword Aura swept out, protecting her entire body.

Whoosh!

As the attacks collided, the sky appeared to instantaneously split apart. With a shutter, Luo Li's delicate figure shot back, descending on a mountain peak. A flushed shadow flashed across her beautiful face while the blood and Spiritual Energy within her body churned and rolled over.

Seeing the spectacle before them, the faces of Su Xuan and the group changed. Their enemies had decided to start finishing them off?

With their strength, how could they contend against their enemies? After all, even the three Great Generals of the Punishment Hall had been captured...

Ice cold intent erupted from Luo Li's exquisite and beautiful face. As her cheeks extended out to form seemingly perfect contours, her jade-like

hand tightly grasped the Luo Shen Sword. As it lightly trembled, ripples started to fluctuate on its surface, while an obscure fluctuation rippled on the surface, as if something frightening was able to break its seal.

However, just as the ripples on the body of her sword increased in frequency, swift and sharp whooshing sounds rang out from within the spiritual mist from a distance.

The sudden whooshing sounds caused a shiver through everyone's minds.

As the spiritual mist scattered apart, three glowing figures shot out from within like lightning, before descending on a mountain peak. Boundless Spiritual Energy rushed to the skies, even a sneer resounded across the basin.

"The people on the Bounty Board's rankings truly are shameless maggots. Don't you guys feel ashamed of yourselves for besieging a girl?"

Instantly, upon hearing that voice, elation erupted from the faces of Su Xuan and the group.

Mu Chen!

That fellow had finally arrived!

Chapter 367: Short Exchange

Bang!

Boundless Spiritual Energy swept out as three figures appeared on top of the mountain peak. As the astonishing Spiritual Energy fluctuations rippled out, they converged to form enormous waves of pressure. Akin to black clouds looming over in the sky, they pressed down on Mu Gui and and his group in the distance.

"That's Mu Chen! Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong too!"

Surprise and elation instantly erupted on the faces of Su Xuan and the rest as they noticed the three figures that appeared. Originally, they had assumed that Mu Chen would appear by himself. However, they never imagined that he had actually found Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong.

"Shen Cangsheng? Li Xuantong? They've recovered their strength?!"

On the other side, upon noticing Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, who were erupting within astonishingly imposing auras, while appearing even stronger than before, the faces of Mu Gui, Gui Xiong and the rest could not help changing.

Weren't those two fellows poisoned by the Demonic Dragon Poison? How could they have recovered their strength? That poison required a Sovereign Stage expert to dispel it! Could it be that they had a Sovereign Stage expert to secretly helping them?

As their emotions fluctuated, all of them became vigilant and on guard. If the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy truly sent a Sovereign Stage expert, they were simply unable to even run away.

"Although the Demonic Dragon Poison requires a Sovereign Stage expert to dispel it. If one has some special methods, one could similarly dispel that poison. If the Sovereign Stage experts of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy dared to take action, the Sovereigns of our Demonic Dragon Palace would have naturally noticed it." Mo Longzi spoke out in an indifferent tone, causing the shock within the hearts of their group to

stabilize and calm down.

His apathetic eyes turned towards Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong and Mu Chen. Filled with a sinister shadow, he spoke towards them, "However, you guys being able to dispel the Demonic Dragon Poison truly exceeded my expectations."

Sending a similarly sinister gaze that locked onto Mo Longzi, Shen Cangsheng replied with a sneer, "I'm afraid that there're a lot things that exceeds your expectations."

As a chilling intent erupted from his eyes, Shen Cangsheng took a step forward, causing the Spiritual Energy erupting from him to drastically rise. The degree of Spiritual Energy was much more tyrannical than a normal Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phase, it had already come endlessly close to a Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase.

He was about to make a breakthrough!

Feeling the Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiating out of him, the faces of Mu Gui and their group slightly changed. Truly worthy of being Shen Cangsheng. After suffering such a huge blow, not only did he not feel depressed, he was even able to improve his strength. If they were to allow him to rush back from here, he might truly be able to make a breakthrough to Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase.

Staring at Shen Cangsheng, Mo Longzi's eyes had also narrowed. This Shen Cangsheng truly was very formidable. Him being able to promote to Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase was completely due to the cultivation method of their Demonic Dragon Palace, coupled with him obtaining a vast amount of resources. However, this was considered a kind of overdraft, as cultivating like that had lead to a drop in his life span. Therefore, he could be considered to have paid an extremely great price. However, before his eyes, time after time, this Shen Cangsheng was still able to catch up to him, leading to some frustration and fury to rise within his heart.

"Although you're about to break through, you've still not reached Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase. Just like that, you still dare to fight

with me?!" roared Mo Longzi in a dark voice.

"Whether or not I'll win will be known when we fight!"

Shen Cangsheng replied in a joyful manner, no fear present in his voice, and disdain showing in his eyes. He was the Overlord of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's Heavenly Rankings, and represented the prestige of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy! Therefore, regardless of the opponent he was faced against, he would absolutely not cower or retreat!

He knew that the Mo Longzi before him was a formidable foe. However, that was not a reason for him to feel fear and dread.

As dark glint flashed within Mo Longzi's eyes, he gave a wave of his sleeve. In the next instant, Lin Zheng and the other two, who had fainted due to their serious injuries, started to float up from the mountain peak into the air.

Seeing this happen, the faces of Mu Chen, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong all sunk. Lin Zheng and the other two had already landed in the hands of their enemies?

"Haha. Although the two of you were rescued, they have landed in my hands," said Mo Longzi with a ruminating smile. "Do you think this exchange is worth it?"

"I also have two of your people in my hands." replied Mu Chen with a sneer. With a bend of his palm, a suction force erupted out before two figures came shooting over from a place not far away. Those two figures were Chi Yu and Mao Jiang.

Shooting an indifferent glare at the two, Mo Longzi gave a faint smile and said, "They're just wastes, nothing of any importance. Do whatever you want with them."

His words and tone appeared exceedingly emotionless, not showing the slightest bit of care towards his previous companions. Perhaps, he didn't treat Chi Yu and Mao Jiang as his companions in the first place.

"Haha. Worthy of Mo Longzi. Looks like they were just tools being used

by you, just like those people behind you, right?" replied Mu Chen with a faint smile.

Instantly, Mu Gui, Gui Xiong and the rest started to slightly wrinkle their foreheads. They had also discovered the provocation within Mu Chen's words. However, it was hard to avoid feeling a little uncomfortable within their hearts.

"You sharp-tongued brat!"

Mo Longzi looked with a slightly chilling glare towards Mu Chen, before replying with dark voice, "You're that fellow that had killed Bai Xuan and was almost killed by me? Never though that you're actually able to reach such a stage in less than a year. If I'd known earlier, I would have killed you then and there."

He had already guessed that the Demonic Dragon Poison within Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong had more or less been dealt with by Mu Chen. If not, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong wouldn't have taken that long if they were to had any ways to deal with the poison.

"It's a pity that you won't get a second chance," replied Mu Chen with a smile.

"As if a Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase has the qualifications to say such stuff in front of me. Why do I need something like a chance? With your strength, I can kill all I want!" A sinister shadow flashed within Mo Longzi's eyes as he took a step forward. In an instant, only a remnant shadow remained at his original position as he appeared right behind Mu Chen. Sending a palm patting forward, greyish-black Spiritual Energy swept out, transforming into a roaring demonic dragon as it rumbled towards Mu Chen.

Humm!

However, just as that roaring demonic dragon rumbled out, a long spear sparkling with golden light created a golden streak of light as it swept out. Shattering the air apart, it pierced right towards that demonic dragon.

"I really want to see how you plan to kill other people in front of me!"

Spiritual Energy erupted out from Shen Cangsheng's body without the slightest bit of restraint, while a chilling intent gushed out from his eyes. With a shudder of his golden long spear, spear shadows that blotted the sky, hiding the skies and covered the earth as they enveloped Mo Longzi's body, aiming towards his vitals.

Ding! Ding! Ding!

Flicking his ten fingers, greyish-black streaks of light explosively shot out from Mo Longzi, shattering all of the spear shadows that had come over to engulf him, while his body fluttered and retreated.

"Mo Longzi, do you dare to fight a duel with me?!"

Fighting intent erupted from Shen Cangsheng's eyes as his figure explosively rushed forward. During this period of time, he had pursued Mo Longzi in an attempt to kill him. However, the latter had kept on avoiding and running away since the beginning, causing his guard to gradually slip away. At the end, the latter had used the means of an encirclement to cause injury to him and Li Xuantong. Between the two of them, they never had a true duel from the beginning till now. This was something that Shen Cangsheng was extremely unresigned about; he thirsted for a true fight with the latter.

In an extremely fast speed, he chased after to Mo Longzi in a flash. Golden light erupted from his eyes as he hoisted his golden spear up, while bright and resplendent rays of brilliance, akin to that of gold, shot out from the body of his spear.

Humm!

The golden long spear shook, seemingly erupting with astonishing humming noises. Fighting intent erupted from it as boundless Spiritual Energy transformed into a golden lotus at the front of the golden long spear. On the surface of the golden lotus, extremely swift and fierce spear shadows swept from it.

"War God's Golden Lotus!"

As fighting intent erupted from Shen Cangsheng's eyes, his spear

pierced straight out. In the next instant, the golden lotus at the tip of his spear crazily revolved. Like a golden scorching sun, it caused golden light to illuminate everywhere, piercing through the dense spiritual mist in the surroundings.

That spear from Shen Cangsheng was akin to the horns hanging from a deer, akin to being made by the heavens. The formidable might of it caused even space to start distorting, showing its extreme power.

Upon seeing this spectacle, the faces of Mu Gui and his group in the distance slightly changed. If it was one of them, they might simply not be able to receive such a spear. This Shen Cangsheng was truly worthy of of being the most outstanding Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy student within his batch.

Looking at the golden light that had erupted out, a chilling glint surfaced within Mo Longzi's eyes. With a cold snort, he clasped his palms together, before abruptly separating them. At this instant, a black dragon mark seemed to have surfaced within one of his palms.

"Demonic Dragon Heaven Shattering Palm!"

He sent his palm patting out, causing churning Spiritual Energy to gush out. In the next instant, a gigantic demonic dragon a hundred feet long roared as it exited. Carrying along dragon roars that shook the sky, it brought along astonishing might as it smashed head-on against the golden lotus.

Bang!

As the two powerful attacks collided, everyone heard an enormous sound ring out. Boundless rays of brilliance swept out, with the golden and black light filling their halves in the horizon.

Boom!

Devastating Spiritual Energy storms swept out, forcing the two figures in the sky to retreat upon making contact, shooting back from where they started.

Heavily hammering his golden spear down, Shen Cangsheng forcefully

stabilised himself, before looking gravely at the distance. The one present there was Mo Longzi, whom had fluttered and landed, his hands behind his back as he stood upright.

Such a tyrannical spear from him was still unable to deal with Mo Longzi. The latter's strength at the Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase truly was very strong.

"Prepare to move."

Shen Cangsheng spoke out in a deep voice. As of now, although they had lost Lin Zheng and the other two Great Generals, their lineup wasn't considered weaker than their opponents. As long as they could entangle Mo Longzi, with Mu Chen's, Li Xuantong's and Luo Li's strength, they were capable of defeating their enemies.

However, just as they were prepared to revolve their Spiritual Energy and take action, Mo Longzi gave a soft laugh. With a wave of his sleeve, Lin Zheng and the other two landed in front of Mu Gui and his group, before being grabbed by them.

"Shen Cangsheng, since you want to truly fight with me that much, I'll give you a chance. However..."

Mo Longzi's tone changed, before continuing with a smile. "It'll not be in this place. I'll wait for you all at the Western Desolated City outside of the Western Desolated Territory. If you want to save them, come to the Western Desolated City!"

"Haha, I want to kill all the so-called prideful sons of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy in front of the countless people present there! At that time, the name of me, Mo Longzi, will resound across the Northern Heavens Continent!"

"I'll let everyone know that the students taught by your Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy will always be inferior to our Demonic Dragon Palace!"

With a hearty chuckle, Mo Longzi fluttered as he retreated, with his group of vicious people rapidly following suit.

"If you want to save these three people, I'll wait for you at the Western Desolated City. Noon, Tomorrow!"

"Where do you think you're going?!"

Shen Cangsheng gave a cold roar. With a move of his body, he explosively rushed forward to give pursuit.

Upon seeing this, the person at the rear, Wu Jia gave a faint smile. Clapping his hands together, spiritual mist instantly swept forth from the surrounding area, completely covering the basin up. As this happened, their figures rapidly disappeared within the spiritual mist.

As their figures disappeared, the only thing remaining of them was Mo Longzi's sinister laughter, resounding back at Shen Cangsheng and the group.

"Shen Cangsheng, if you don't want to see the bodies of those three being hung on the Western Desolated City, be prepared to keep our appointment!"

Chapter 368: Western Desolated City

Western Desolated City, the biggest city within the entire Western Desolated Territory. Countless experts from various places that come to the depths of the Western Desolated Territory to cultivate would stop and rest at this place, as well as to prepare various cultivation-related items. Therefore, the vitality and liveliness was the greatest within the entire Western Desolated Territory.

This city was under the jurisdiction of the West Pole Hall. This Western Pole was a peak level influence within the Northern Heavens Continent, and was extremely powerful. Speaking about it, it could be considered an Overlord of a region within the Northern Heavens Continent.

Therefore, although there were crouching tigers and hidden dragons mixed within the Western Desolated City, cases of people causing trouble over here were extremely rare. After all, with such an enormously powerful influence like the West Pole Hall sitting there, it wasn't an existence that was good to provoke.

However, today, the Western Desolated City had become somewhat more lively due to some external influences, with some perceptive people being able to sense the surge and roars within the darkness.

The origin of all of these was due to Mo Longzi and his group of people.

After arriving at the Western Desolated City, they immediately occupied the most eye-catching location within the city, the Western Desolated Terrace.

The Western Desolated Terrace sat at the highest point within the Western Desolated Territory. Standing tall within the city like a mountain, it overlooked the entire city. In most cases, only when major events happened within the Western Desolated City would the Western Desolate Terrace be opened. However, this time, Mo Longzi and his group of people had directly occupied it.

This group of uninvited guests had undeniably roused the attention of countless people within the entire city.

This was especially true after seeing three gigantic metal cages being hoisted up in the Western Desolated Terrace, which even caused doubt and bewilderment. However, their doubts were quickly erased, before shock and astonishment swept through the entire Western Desolated City.

That's because the three people locked within those metal cages were, unexpectedly, the three Great Generals of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy!

With Mo Longzi's ties with the Demonic Dragon Palace also being exposed, countless people felt shock erupt within their hearts. This was a gigantic influence that had almost become the Overlord of the Northern Heavens Continent in the past. Even after suffering a decrease in fame and reputation after the astonishing war with the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy that year and hiding away for all these years, people knew that this previous Overlord still possessed frightening power that would make people quake in fear.

Facing a previous Overlord like the Demonic Dragon Palace, even those peak influences within the Northern Heavens Continent, like the West Pole Hall, would still have much dread and fear within them, and would not dare to provoke it too much.

From the looks of it, Mo Longzi had actually captured the three Great Generals of the Punishment Hall; moreover, he had used such a method to hang them within the Western Desolated Terrace. Was this a demonstration of might towards the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?

Those were the two greatest influences within the Northern Heavens Continent. Were they planning to launch a war again?

This might become a big matter that would rock and shake the entire Northern Heavens Continent.

As the entire Western Desolated City was still reeling in shock, Mo Longzi didn't show any other signs of movement. He continued sitting within the Western Desolated Terrace, with an indifferent expression within his eyes, as if he was waiting for something.

At his back, Mu Gu, Gui Xiong, Wu Jia and the rest were standing while facing the wind. Baleful auras radiated from them, pervading the air and letting everyone know their viciousness and strength.

Their entire group of seven people all possessed strength at the realm of Heavenly Completion Stage. Placed within any influences, they would be classified as elites. Although there were numerous experts within the Western Desolated Territory, the amount of people whose strengths were able to exceed that of Mo Longzi and his group of people were rather small.

"Worthy of being the genius that came from the Demonic Dragon Palace. Being able to reach Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase at such an age...that's truly frightening." After sensing the astonishing fluctuations radiating from Mo Longzi, some people within the city couldn't help sighing in admiration.

"Exactly. Furthermore, it's said that this Mo Longzi's not considered the peak within the younger generation in the Demonic Dragon Palace. That Mo Xingtian's the truly terrifying one. However, that person rarely takes action. Previously, the younger generation of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was completely suppressed by the fame and reputation of Mo Xingtian."

"Looks like the ability of the Demonic Dragon Palace to nurture people isn't weaker than the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy."

"You can't say words like that. The Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy is, after all, an academy, and doesn't have the cruelty imbued in it like the Demonic Dragon Palace. Furthermore, students have a limited amount of time to cultivate within an academy. Compared to the Demonic Dragon Palace, which has unlimited amounts of resources under its belt, and had geniuses nurtured painstakingly from birth, there will always be a slight disparity. Therefore, if you look from afar, the Demonic Dragon Palace isn't comparable to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. After all, after so many years, there are quite a few graduates from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy that had already stepped into the Sovereign Stage, and had spread their great names within the Great Thousand

World."

"That's true. Every peak influence would concentrate and pool their resources together, thus allowing for outstanding people to continuously appear. Not only Mo Xingtian from the Demonic Dragon Palace, Xi Qinghai from the West Pole Hall, Xia Yingran from the Nine Summers Merchant Group, Su Buxiu from the Heavenly Furnace Saint Sect. These people are the truly outstanding ones within the younger generation in the Northern Heavens Continent."

"..."

The entire city was rifled with whispers of discussion, causing an extreme surge of liveliness within the city. Furthermore, everyone also felt curious towards Mo Longzi's appearance, which clearly portrayed him waiting for something...

Although they were not too clear of the exact situation, those perceptive ones were faintly able to discern the feeling of the calm before a storm. A storm was about to brew within this Western Desolated City.

Uproars and some unrest were felt due to the actions of Mo Longzi and his group. Within a large hall in the centre of the Western Desolated City, a male in green robes stood with his hands behind his back. Raising his head, he looked towards the scene present within the Western Desolated Terrance as a faint smile surfaced on his face.

"Ah, Mo Longzi... you've actually come to the place of our West Pole Hall to raise a storm."

A figure respectfully spoke out behind the male in green robes, " Young Hallmaster, do we have to do anything? I've already investigated that the three people Mo Longzi had caught were the three Great Generals of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's Punishment Hall. Furthermore, Mo Longzi should be planning to wait for the reinforcements coming from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, before completely killing all of them. In that way, his reputation and prestige within the Demonic Dragon Palace would greatly increase, with the possibly of even getting rewards for his actions."

"This Mo Longzi looks like he has already promoted into Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase. If not, he wouldn't be able to deal with the three Great Generals of the Punishment Hall."

The male in green robes gave a faint smile, before gesturing with his hand and saying, "The matter between the Demonic Dragon Palace and the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy doesn't concern nor involve us. Just treat it as if we can't see it. If they want to fight it out, let them be."

"Yes!"

The gaze of the green-robed male condensed on the figure within the Western Desolated Terrace that was radiating a baleful aura. This Mo Longzi truly was formidable. However, compared to Mo Xingtian, he was still weaker by a sliver.

"Mo Xingtian..."

Thinking about that person, the eyes of the green-robed male couldn't help faintly narrowing as he started to count the dates. Isn't the "Holy Spiritual Mountain" that will cause extreme waves of shock to propagate throughout the Northern Heavens Continent about to open? This time, that Mo Xingtian might become one of my enemies.

...

The atmosphere within the Western Desolated City had grown increasingly scorching hot as time went by. As news of this matter continued to spread out, anyone that had heard of it had all rushed over the Western Desolated City.

The Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy and the Demonic Dragon Palace were, after all, too famous within the Northern Heavens Continent. Any small matter involving them would be able to shake the entire continent.

Sitting within the Western Desolated Terrace, Mo Longzi looked at the gigantic city flourishing with vitality below him, while an apathetic smile surfaced on his face. If he defeated all of the elite students from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy under the attention of this many

people, wouldn't the face of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy be completely squashed to the ground?

At that time, his status within the Demonic Dragon Palace would greatly rise as a result, with the possibility of even threatening that Mo Xingtian. At that time, the regards he would get wouldn't be weaker than that of the latter.

Thinking about that person, a dark shadow flashed within Mo Longzi's eyes. He possessed absolutely shocking talent. Originally, he should've been the most outstanding person within the Demonic Dragon Palace. However, who would have thought that Mo Xingtian had firmly sat on top of his head for the last couple of years? Within the Demonic Dragon Palace, anyone who talked about him would place him behind Mo Xingtian. This was, in reality, quite a blow towards Mo Longzi, whose inner arrogance had reached an an incomparable level.

"Hmph! When this matter's over, my reputation will greatly increase. At that time, there will definitely be my quota for the upcoming opening of the 'Holy Spiritual Mountain'. During that time, if I obtained the 'Holy Spiritual Baptism', I'll be able to obtain a good foundation in my path to promoting into Sovereign Stage. Then, Mo Xingtian will be squashed beneath my feet!"

"At that moment, only I, Mo Longzi, will truly become the strongest within the younger generation in the Northern Heavens Continent!"

A sinister expression surfaced on Mo Longzi's face as his ambitiousness erupted within his eyes. Raising his head, he looked towards the far distance out of the Western Desolated City, while a cold smirk rose from the corner of his mouth.

"Shen Cangsheng, you guys must definitely come. If not, all of my plans will be for naught...My reputation still needs you people to become stepping stones for me!"

...

Time quickly elapsed within the Western Desolated City, whose atmosphere had turned scorching hot. Whooshing sounds continuously

resounded outside of the city as people descended within the city, akin to a swarm of locusts.

Countless gazes endlessly swept towards the Western Desolated Terrance, while simultaneously looking out of the city. All of them really wanted to know; facing this solemn waiting by Mo Longzi and his lineup, exactly which of younger generations within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy would dare to come here and save their people?

As countless people raised their heads and looked around, the scorching sun across the horizon inched slowly up, before finally reaching its peak in the sky.

At this moment, a faint movement was seen within Mo Longzi's indifferent expression, before slowly raising his head. A sneer surfaced within his eyes as he looked towards to horizon, where hurried whooshing sounds suddenly rang out from there.

Those sounds appeared extremely rapid and furious, causing everyone's gaze to immediately turn their way. As they looked over, ten figures shot over akin to lightning bolts, before transforming into rainbow-like streaks, appearing in the air above the city.

As the glow around them faded, their figures surfaced for everyone to see.

A youth stood stanch and straight at the front-most position of the group. A gold-coloured long spear grasped within his hand, boundless Spiritual Energy radiated out. A disdainful look was present within his eyes, while everyone could sense the exceptionally imposing aura radiating from him.

"That's the First Rank on the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's Heavenly Rankings, Shen Cangsheng!"

Similar to Mo Longzi, Shen Cangsheng possessed quite a bit of reputation within the Northern Heavens Continent. Upon his arrival, he was immediately recognised, causing waves of outcry to ring out within the city.

"The person beside him should be the Second Rank on the Heavenly Rankings, Li Xuantong..."

"Tsk. Tsk. He Yao, Su Xuan, Xu Huang...they're all in the top ten ranks within the Heavenly Rankings. Their lineup is quite strong."

"Who are those two people? Why do they look younger than Shen Cangsheng and the rest of their group? Their age, seems to be Freshmen, right? They actually dared to come to this place? Could it be that the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy doesn't have anymore people that it could be sent here?"

"Oh, a very interesting show is coming. The Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's Heavenly Rankings against their Bounty Board's Rankings..."

As the group of people in the sky had just revealed themselves, waves of clamoring noises instantly sprung up within the entire city as countless whispers of discussion erupted out.

However, not the slightest bit of care was given by the people in the sky as they cast their sinister gazes towards Mo Longzi and his group of people within the Western Desolated Terrace.

"Haha...you've finally arrived."

Under their sinister gazes, Mo Longzi gave a faint smile. Standing up, he gave an apathetic look towards Shen Cangsheng, Mu Chen and their group.

"Congratulations for being punctual. If you guys want to rescue those three from my hands today, that would have to depend on how much ability you guys exactly have!"

Chapter 369: Four-Sided Confrontation

Due to the appearance of the group of people in the sky, the atmosphere within the entire Western Desolated City had flared up and boiled. Curiosity was present within the eyes of countless people, since all of them clearly wanted to know exactly who would be able to achieve the final victory in this head-on confrontation between the two lineups.

This battle would undeniably concern various aspects and faces of the Demonic Dragon Palace, as well as the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Both sides had Sovereigns present within them. Due to various reason, they weren't able to directly intervene and fight, and could only observe this confrontation in the dark. Therefore, the lineups present before everyone's eyes were the sharpest and greatest elite forces that both sides could send out.

As Shen Cangsheng stood haughtily within the sky, his gaze locked onto Mo Longzi, which was akin to the edge of a blade. Shifting slightly up, he noticed the three gigantic metal cages that had the unconscious and heavily injured Lin Zheng, Zhou Qingshan and Gu Tianyan within them.

Upon seeing the three who were caged up, the faces of Mu Chen and the group turned frosty, while killing intent erupted from their eyes.

All of them had respect and even some reverence for Lin Zheng and the other two; after all, they were their Senior Brothers. Currently, they were being humiliated in such a manner, causing them the be rather infuriated.

"Haha. Looks like you all are very furious."

Mo Longzi looked at the expressions filled with killing intent present on the faces of Shen Cangsheng, Mu Chen and the group. Showing an apathetic smile, he said, "You guys should be rejoicing that I've locked them up here. If not, I'd have finished them off long ago."

"I'll return what you did to them a hundred times over." Gripping the long spear tightly in his hand, green veins started to squirm and wriggle on his hand. Speaking out, Shen Cangsheng's low and deep voice was brimming with malevolence.

"I do know that you truly have that capability," replied Mo Longzi with a beaming smile.

"So what the hell are you going to do now? Send out any move you've got, and we'll return all of them back to you!" roared Shen Cangsheng in a cold voice. In any case, Lin Zheng and the other two were in the hands of their enemies. Thus, they were still a little worried about acting against Mo Longzi in fear of him hurting Lin Zheng and the other two. After all, they weren't able to be that merciless and completely show the slightest bit of detachment to their compatriots like Mo Longzi.

"Worthy of being the Overlord of the Heavenly Rankings. You truly have charisma and the guts to say such words."

Mo Longzi laughed while sticking his thumb out. A sinister shadow filled his face as a smile appeared from a split of his mouth, revealing two rows of glistening white teeth, before speaking out, "It's really very simple. We've set up four arenas over here. You just have send four people up to fight and that's it."

"However, there's no such thing as a fair matchup. Once these four people have dealt with their opponents, they have to right to decide to withdraw, or continue cooperating with others..."

"As for the type of fight, it's naturally to the death."

Speaking till the very end, the smile at the corners of Mo Longzi's mouth turned cruel and malevolent.

Mu Chen faintly narrowed his eyes when he heard Mo Longzi words. From what the latter had said, he had made it clear that he wanted solo fights, which allowed him to quickly finish off his opponent before helping the rest. In that way, he wouldn't have to worry about being besieged by Mu Chen's group. After all, he would face against Shen Cangsheng, who had promoted to Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase. If there was another person attacking him, it would become two against one. In that situation, even he would no longer have an advantage.

Previously, the reason why he could deal with Lin Zheng and the other two was due to breaking them one by one. If not, when the three of them

joined hands to fight with him, it would be nigh impossible to completely capture all of them.

As this moment, Mo Longzi was also banking on this same concept. He assumed that in a solo fight, no one from Mu Chen's side would be able to be his match. In that way, he would quickly achieve victory and turn around to deal with the rest.

This truly would help him avoid being besieged. However, that would have to depend on whether Mo Longzi was truly able to achieve victory so quickly and get his hands free to attack other people.

From the looks of it, he possessed extremely great confidence in his own strength.

The eyes of Shen Cangsheng and the group faintly flashed, having clearly seen through Mo Longzi's intention. In the current situation, they had the numerical advantage, and swarming around Mo Longzi and his group had some advantages for them. However, since Lin Zheng and the other two were within the latter's hands, they didn't have much of a say.

"Look's like the confidence you have for yourself is truly quite big."

Taking a step out, the golden long spear within Shen Cangsheng's hands erupted with a bright and resplendent golden light. As the golden light blossomed and filled the skies, Shen Cangsheng appeared akin to a god of war. Chilling intent filled his eyes as he stared at Mo Longzi while saying, "We'll accept this fight!"

"Haha, that's some courage!"

Mo Longzi roared with laughter that had endless chilling intent present in his voice. With a wave of his hand, he fluttered as he retreated back. Shooting across the sky, three other people from his group followed suit and shot out into the sky. In all, they occupied four separate regions within the sky.

The three people that shot out was Mu Gu, 3rd rank on the Bounty Board, Gui Xiong, 4th rank and the 5th rank Wu Jia.

Of these three people, two of them possessed strength at the Heavenly

Completion Stage Late Phase, while the remaining one was a Rank 5 Spiritual Array Master, an even more mysterious and hard person to deal with. All fourth of them weren't people that Mu Chen and his group could easily deal with.

Haha! Who dares to fight with me?!"

Gui Xiong flung his head up, roaring with laughter as astonishingly baleful aura pervaded his entire body. Looking malevolently towards Mu Chen and his group , the giant axe within his hand appeared as if he wanted to split up and shatter the heavens and earth.

Mu Gu also had an apathetic smile on his face, while his skinny and withered body sparkled. The bones underneath his skin became faintly discernable under his skin. Locking his gaze onto Luo Li, it appeared as if the fight that occurred yesterday had yet to reach a desirable level of satisfaction.

Compared to the other three, Wu Jia was the most quiet and solemn. Calmly sitting in the sky, the air around his body faintly rippled, while mysterious fluctuations radiated from him.

This person appeared akin to a venomous snake. He made no noise and no detectable movements, but was able to give a death-inducing attack within the silence.

Within the largest hall in the Western Desolated City, the green-robed male was also looking with interest at the confrontation happening in the skies above the city.

"Haha. Young Hallmaster. Looks like that Mo Longzi's truly crafty. His strength should be considered the strongest amongst the individual people on the two sides. In a solo fight, the only person that can put up a fight against him might only be Shen Cangsheng. However, the latter will not be able to last for long. Therefore, once he finishes his fight, this entire situation can be considered to be over," explained a figure standing behind the green-robed male.

Hearing those words, the green-robed male smiled and nodded his head while saying, "However, if the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy

achieves victory in the other three fights before that happens, things would be different..."

"That Mu Gu and Gui Xiong are both at the Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phase. Within the group of people from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, only Li Xuantong can cope with one of them, with him even being able to obtain the superiority. However, even though that's the case, he doesn't have any way to quickly finish off either one of the formers."

"Other than Li Xuantong and Shen Cangsheng, the other people from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy are on the weaker side. Of those remaining, the strongest is that He Yao. However, he's only at Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase... There's a beautiful girl, and she is someone that is slightly unable to be seen through by me. Perhaps, she might become the variable in this confrontation..."

Sweeping his gaze across Mu Chen and his group in the distance, the gaze of the green-robed male finally landed on Mu Chen's body for an instant, while a mysterious shadow flashed within his eyes. Faintly wrinkling his forehead, he proceeded to say, "Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase...could it be that the current batch of students from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy are that useless?"

"Furthermore..."

Turning his gaze towards Wu Jia, who was still being exceptionally quiet in another region of the sky, the green-robed male spoke out in a soft voice, "Of these four people, other than Mo Longzi, Wu Jia, who's the lowest rank amongst them, is the person that'll be the most difficult to deal with..."

Hearing his words, the figure standing behind him nodded his head. Although he didn't have widespread fame, when a Rank 5 Spiritual Array Master truly takes action, he might even be harder to deal with than Mu Gu and Gui Xiong.

Mo Longzi and the three people were all dreadful opponents. Although the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy held a minute advantage in

numerical superiority, they were deprived of that in this fight...

From the looks of it, they were truly forced to the end of their roads.

"Haha, what's the matter? Have you decided already?" asked Mo Longzi with a grin as he looked towards Shen Cangsheng and his group.

All the eyes within the Western Desolated City had also looked towards Shen Cangsheng and this group. Everyone was very curiously as to how Shen Cangsheng and his group would split up in this present situation.

"I'll deal with Mo Longzi." Shen Cangsheng said in a low and deep voice. Within their group, his strength was considered the strongest. The duty of stalling and obstructing Mo Longzi could only be accomplished by him.

With regards to this point, there was no one that objected to this.

"Let me deal with that Mu Gu. I'll finish him off as fast as possible." Luo Li said as her jade-like hand tightly gripped her scabbard, while a coldness erupted from within her glass-like eyes.

"So, that Wu Jia's left for me?" Li Xuantong suddenly asked.

Although Wu Jia was ranked the lowest amongst the four, everyone knew how much frightening capability a Rank 5 Spiritual Array Master possessed. Once he was able to arrange his Spiritual Arrays, even people at the Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phase would end up in extremely miserable states in front of him.

Li Xuantong knew about this point, and, therefore, chose to take responsibility and deal with Wu Jia.

Shen Cangsheng looked towards Mu Chen. At this moment, the latter's eyes appeared to slightly narrow as he started at Wu Jia, who was sitting quietly in the sky. Gently shaking his head, Mu Chen said, "Let me deal with him. I'm also a Spiritual Array Master."

Mu Chen didn't doubt Li Xuantong's strength. However, that Wu Jia's actions and methods were strange and bizarre. Even if the latter was unable to finish off Li Xuantong in an instant, once he completed the arrangements of his Spiritual Arrays, wanting to tie Li Xuantong down

would become an extremely easy task to accomplish.

The goal of their enemies was to buy enough time for Mo Longzi. Therefore, the group from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy could absolutely not be tied down by the other three, and needed to finish the other three fights as fast as possible.

Therefore, on the aspect of dealing with him, Mu Chen, who was also a Spiritual Array Master, was the most ideal choice.

Hearing Mu Chen's words, Li Xuantong remained silent for a short period of time, before gently nodding his head while replying, "You be careful."

"Since we've already decided, let's move out!"

Tightly clenching the Golden Lotus War God Spear within his hands, with a low roar, Shen Cangsheng suddenly shot out, appearing right in front of Mo Longzi.

Facing this matchup, everyone had clearly guessed it happening. Thus, everyone didn't feel surprised about this.

Li Xuantong had also shot out, and appeared before Gu Xiong.

Clenching her longsword with her jade-like hand, Luo Li spoke towards Mu Chen in a soft voice, " Be careful. I'll finish him off as fast as possible and come help you."

As she spoke those words, she shot out, her goal being the distant Mu Gu.

Her actions instant caused some clamoring noises to erupt within the Western Desolated City. The beautiful young girl that appeared as if she was a Freshman had actually become the opponent of Mu Gu, ranked third on the Bounty Board.

Across the horizon, only Wu Jia was left being unselected. At this moment, his face still had the same indifferent expression on it as his eyes sparkled, akin to a venomous snake tasting the air with its tongue.

Everyone stared at the remaining group of people from the Northern

Heavens Spiritual Academy. Faced against that lowest rank, yet being harder to deal with than Mu Gu and Gui Xiong, Wu Jia, exactly who amongst them would take action?

Within the great hall, the green-robed male was similarly filled with interest as he stared towards the sky.

Under the countless guessing gazes within the Western Desolated City, Mu Chen slowly exhaled a clump of white air, before walking out of the group.

Ah!

Countless gazes immediately converged together. After identifying Mu Chen's strength, incredulous expressions immediately erupted on each and every one of their faces.

This youth, whose strength had only reached Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase, actually dared to take action?

Within the great hall, the green-robed male had also faintly gawked, before he faintly narrowed his eyes. Gently tapping his finger, he muttered to himself, "A Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase against a Rank 5 Spiritual Array Master...Haha. This truly is interesting...I don't know if he's looking to die, or if he truly has some astonishing abilities or methods..."

Chapter 370: Spiritual Array Competition with Wu Jia

As Mu Chen walked out, not only did it cause countless clamoring noises to ring out within the Western Desolated City, it also caused the expression of the indifferent-looking Wu Jia to faintly tremble as his dark and cold gaze locked onto the former.

Nevertheless, Mu Chen cast a blind eye towards all those gazes. Shooting out, he slowly came to a stop a couple hundred metres away from Wu Jia. Cupping his fists, he spoke out with a faint smile. "Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, Freshman Mu Chen, came forward to seek guidance."

"This fellow...truly is only a Freshman..." Mu Chen's words instantly caused shocked and astonished cries to ring out, before everyone turned and looked at each other. This batch of Freshmen from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was actually that tyrannical? Having just arrived in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, they actually dared to act so rampant in the Northern Heavens Continent?

Wu Jia stared straight at Mu Chen, while not much of the so-called disdain and contempt was present. He knew that the so-called "Freshman" before him was, in fact, not a simple character. If not, Chi Yu and Mao Jiong wouldn't have lost their lives in his hands.

The reason why the current situation would progress to such a stage was all due to the youth in front of him that had appeared out of thin air... If not for him suddenly breaking through their blockade to find Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, and even dispelling the Demonic Dragon Poison within their bodies, the people locked within those metal cages might not only be Lin Zheng and the other two.

If not for this youth, this four-on-four battle would not exist, and the only thing they needed to do was to carefreely enjoy the process of stomping on the face of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Shooting a deep look at Mu Chen, Spiritual Energy started to ripple around Wu Jia's body, appearing as if he was standing within a surging lake.

Bang!

In the far distance, boundless Spiritual Energy erupted akin to a storm from Shen Cangsheng. Hoisting his Golden Lotus War God Spear, a chilling glow erupted from his eyes as he shot forward. Shadow spears blotted the skies, bringing forth frightening Spiritual Energy as they surrounded Mo Longzi.

"Haha, Shen Cangsheng! Since you truly want to have a fight with me, I'll grant your wish today!"

Mo Longzi raised his head with a long arrogant roar filled with laughter. Greyish-black Spiritual Energy erupted from him, before transforming into demonic dragons, twisting and twining around him. At this moment, the sky started to turn dark and gloomy.

"This time, I'll let you know, the true disparity between us!"

With a clench of his fist, two demonic dragons condensed within his hand. Grabbing them, he shot out, clashing head-on against the incoming Shen Cangsheng without a hint of retreat.

Bang! Bang!

Incomparably erratic Spiritual Energy swept out as the two men confronted each other in the air. Under the shock waves produced by their attacks, even the cloud layers in the sky were completely separated.

Their fight was astonishing and soul-stirring.

After seeing Shen Cangsheng commencing the fight, Luo Li and Li Xuantong didn't continue hesitating and swiftly rushed out towards their respective enemies. Upon launching their attacks, they didn't do any such thing as warming up, since what they needed the most now was time.

They needed to defeat their enemies before Shen Cangsheng fell!

Only when that happened would they be able to reverse the situation

before them around.

Bang!

Within the endless confines of the horizon, three fights instantly took place. Boundless Spiritual Energy rippled and swept out, seemingly filling the entire sky above the Western Desolated City, causing shocked expressions to fill the faces of countless people.

Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase. People of this strength could already be considered as top ranking within the entire Northern Heavens Continent. There were even some powers and influences who were completely led by characters of this level of strength. Therefore, the confrontation happening in the sky was clearly extremely spectacular to the people in the city.

Feeling the Spiritual Energy storms sweeping out within the horizon, Mu Chen took a deep breath of air, before his black eyes gradually turned frosty. Locking his gaze on Wu Jia, Spiritual Energy burning with black flames rose from his body.

Humm.

An apathetic expression still remained on Wu Jia's face and not a single word was spoken from him. With a formation of a hand seal, the air around his body started to churn and flare up. As rays of brilliance radiated out, two gigantic Spiritual Arrays immediately surfaced behind his back.

Obviously, he had long-made his preparations.

Those two gigantic Spiritual Arrays started to rapidly revolve as they radiated with overbearing Spiritual Energy fluctuations. Those were two Rank 4 Spiritual Arrays. However, they were arranged by Wu Jia with a casual move of his hands. Him being a Rank 5 Spiritual Array Master was not an unjustified reputation.

Bang!

As the two Spiritual Arrays revolved, boundless Spiritual Energy condensed forth, before transforming into two large Spiritual Energy-made

hands. Shooting out explosively, they immediately patted furiously down towards Mu Chen's location.

Mu Chen raised his head, his black pupils reflecting the image of the large Spiritual Energy-made hands head towards him. With the formation of a hand seal, rays of brilliance erupted out from the air behind him, before two gigantic Spiritual Arrays surfaced.

As the two Spiritual Arrays appeared behind Mu Chen, clamoring noises seemed to ring out within the entire city.

"That Mu Chen's actually a Spiritual Array Master?!"

"No wonder why he was so confident. However, he can't possibly have greater attainments than Wu Jia on the aspect of Spiritual Arrays, right?"

"That's hard to say. Since this time, it's a battle between Spiritual Array Masters, there'll be quite a good show to watch..."

"..."

Mu Chen didn't give the slightest care towards those countless whispers of discussions floating in the air. With a flick of his finger, golden lights erupted from the two Spiritual Arrays at his back. In the next instant, two gigantic golden teeth wheels explosively shot out. Carving two lines across the horizon, they smashed head-on against the descending giant Spiritual Energy-made hands.

Boom!

Spiritual Energy instantly exploded outwards as both attacks gradually dissolved in mutual destruction.

"So, you're a Spiritual Array Master."

Traces of emotion finally appeared within Wu Jia's eyes.

In response, Mu Chen sent a smile back at him, brimming with chilling intent. In the next instant, he shot out, boundless Spiritual Energy was condensing on his fists. Being a Spiritual Array Master, he naturally knew that one should never give too much time for a Spiritual Array Master to prepare when faced against one.

Seeing Mu Chen rushing straight towards him, Wu Jia had similarly sensed the intent of the former. Displaying a faint smile, he spoke out, "If you're thinking you're able to impede a Rank 5 Spiritual Array Master just like that, you're truly looking down on me."

With a wave of his sleeve, more Spiritual Arrays started taking form behind him, with all of them being Rank 4 Spiritual Arrays. However, they were all arranged by a casual flick of his hand.

Bang! Bang!

Erratic Spiritual Energy erupted from each of the Rank 4 Spiritual Arrays, before violently rumbling towards Mu Chen. However, facing against attacks of such degrees, not the slightest change was present on his expression before black lightning arcs appeared on his body, completely eradicating the incoming attacks.

Bang! Bang!

Wu Jia's attacks exploded on Mu Chen's body as he pierced through the barrage of erratic Spiritual Energy without a single scratch appearing on his body. Within the toughness of his fleshly body, those Rank 4 Spiritual Arrays simply weren't a threat to him.

"You've actually refined your physique..."

Looking at Mu Chen, who had shot through all the attacks he had launched, Wu Jia's eyes slightly narrowed, before shaking his head. Looks like Rank 4 Spiritual Arrays simply weren't able to obstruct that Mu Chen the slightest bit.

With a clench of his hand, a golden metallic ball covered in abstruse runic patterns appeared within. With a flick, it shot out, before a thousand rays of brilliance blossomed from it.

Unexpectedly, that was a Spiritual Array Seed!

As the golden light erupted, it instantly transformed into an incomparably gigantic Spiritual Array. Spiritual Energy crazily condensed within the centre of the Spiritual Array, before finally transforming into a gigantic golden clock. Upon its complete formation, humming sounds

instantly enveloped Mu Chen within it.

Radiating with powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuations, this golden clock was much more tyrannical that those Rank 4 Spiritual Arrays that were arranged earlier by him. Obviously, this golden clock had already encroached on the boundary of a Rank 5 Spiritual Array.

Just as the golden clock had enveloped Mu Chen, intense vibrations started to spread through it. Clear and melodious ringing sounds continued to spread from it, while getting more hurried one after the other. Obviously, Mu Chen, who was within it, was rapidly breaking the array that had surrounded him.

An indifferent expression still filled Wu Jia's face as his figure fluttered back. His hands came together to form a seal, and Spiritual Seals started to sparkle akin to stars in a night sky as they condensed at an astonishing speed.

This number had already arrived in the hundreds. Obviously, this Wu Jia had finally prepared to use his true killing move.

Whoosh!

Hundreds of Spiritual Seals explosively shot out, before fusing together in the air. In the next instant, everyone within the city was able to something akin to a storm taking shape within this stretch of the sky.

Grave expressions filled the faces of countless people within the entire city as they were able to feel how formidable the Spiritual Array being arranged by Wu Jia this time was. This was definitely considered to be a rather strong one within all the Rank 5 Spiritual Arrays.

Boom! Boom!

Crack after crack started to appear and extend over the surface of the giant golden clock. With a finally bang, an arm encased in black lightning shot out from within. In the next instant, the entire giant clock completely exploded apart, transforming into glowing dots that blotted sky, before dissipating into thin air.

After smashing the giant golden clock apart, Mu Chen raised his head to

look at the sky, which had already turned dim and dark. A gigantic Spiritual Array, approximately a few hundred feet wide, was spread across the sky, enveloping around him.

"This Spiritual Array..."

As Mu Chen looked at the gigantic Spiritual Array, his eyes faintly contracted, since he could discover some dangerous fluctuations emanating from it.

As boundless Spiritual Energy howled from it, the stretch of the sky that Mu Chen was in appeared as if it had been disconnected from the world. At the same time, all of the gazes within the entire city were blocked from seeing it. In everyone's eyes, they could only see an incomparably gigantic Spiritual Array, while being unable to see the two people that were confronting each other within it.

However, although they were unable to see within it, everyone one knew that it would be the determining moment for the victor and loser when either one of the two walked out from the Spiritual Array.

As the Spiritual Energy light screen surrounded him, Mu Chen looked into the distance, to the place where Wu Jia was seated in the air. The latter's chest was faintly heaving, while a grave expression filled his eyes. Obviously, arranging such a large array had led to quite a large consumption of his strength.

"Till this point in time, my Nine Layered Mountain and River Array has already trapped thirteen Heavenly Completion Stage experts within it to death..."

With malevolent and chilling intent like a venomous snake, Wu Jia stared at Mu Chen, while the smile present at the corner of his mouth appeared exceptionally eerie and sinister. Speaking out, he said, "You can be sufficiently proud of yourself for being able to force me to bring it out with your Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase..."

"However... your outcome will be no different from those thirteen people."

As his voice rang out, his hands abruptly came together to form a seal. In the next instant, the incomparably gigantic Spiritual Array erupted with dazzling brightness, transforming this place into something akin to a small world. Within the small world of the Spiritual Array were nine mountains glowing with golden light, appearing akin to nine divine mountains. Bright and resplendent golden brilliance slowly appeared as they radiated from the nine mountains.

At the same time, frightening Spiritual Energy pressure started to pervade out.

Seeing the nine mountains and feeling the incoming pressure, Mu Chen's expression started to slowly turn solemn.

Chapter 371: Nine Heavy Mountain Array

Bang! Rumble!

Nine gold-coloured divine mountains towered within this Spiritual Light world. Golden light gushed and flowed out of them, causing them to appear akin to the residences of gods, while radiating with Spiritual Energy pressure that caused people's hearts to tremble.

Mu Chen's expression turned grave, since the Spiritual Array that Wu Jia had arranged might be no weaker than the double lotus formation of his Demonic Butchering Lotus Spiritual Array. This Wu Jia really had some ability.

Far across the horizon, Wu Jia continued sending an indifferent gaze out towards Mu Chen. Within saying anymore words, he waved his sleeves, causing the nine gold-coloured divine mountains to instantly vibrate as a gold-coloured wave of air swept out from them.

Bang!

A gold-coloured divine mountain rushed to the skies. Carrying along a shadow that hid the skies and covered the earth, with an indescribably overbearing attitude, it brought along its golden glow as it pressed straight down towards Mu Chen.

The air under the gold-coloured divine mountain instantly exploded, while distortions appeared in the surrounding space.

Facing such an attack, even people whose strength had reached Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phase might not dare to show to slightest bit of contempt.

As the gold-coloured divine mountain grew larger within Mu Chen's eyes, he exhaled a long breath of air. In the next instant, his gaze turned sharp and fierce. Tightly clenching his hands into fists, he sent a fist rumbling out.

Boundless Spiritual Energy transformed into a starry sky behind him as a white tiger condensed together, roaring towards the sky. Transforming

into a streak of light, it accompanied Mu Chen's fist, howling through the sky as they violently slammed against the descending divine mountain.

Boom!

Incomparably erratic Spiritual Energy storms were instantly whipped up as they expanded out. Although the gold-coloured divine mountain was sent flying back, the white tiger was shattered apart by the its frightening power, transforming into glowing dots that blotted the sky.

Upon seeing this, a sneer appeared at the corner of Wu Jia's mouth. With a change of his hand seal, the divine mountains came howling out, radiating with astonishing pressure.

A frosty expression filled Mu Chen's eyes as three gigantic figures condensed once again in the starry sky behind him. However, this time, the imposing aura radiating from them had become much, much stronger. Shooting out, the three figures immediately proceeded to obstruct and resist the three incoming divine mountains.

Swish!

After blocking the divine mountains, Mu Chen shot out. Black lightning started to arc and dance around his body, while a black lightning mark started to surface on his chest.

Mono Rune Lightning Physique!

Mu Chen's speed dramatically increased, shooting straight under a divine mountain. Spiritual Energy burning with black flames explosively shot out from his body in the form of a streak of light. Tightly clenching his hand, his veins squirmed and wriggled on the top of his fist. In the next instant, his fist with lightning arcing and dancing around it, rumbled out, slamming head-on against the bottom of the divine mountain.

Boom!

As his fist made contact, the sky within this stretch of the world seemed to intensely vibrate. Gigantic cracks started to suddenly extend rapidly from the point of impact of his fist. In a short span of a few breaths, they had completely covered the divine mountain!

Bang!

Under this single punch by Mu Chen, this lofty mountain that towered in the sky had completely shattered into pieces.

After shattering the divine mountain with a single punch, a shadow of a dragon surfaced on his body. In a flash, he retreated a couple hundred feet away, where a divine mountain had violently pressed down on the location he was previously at.

"You've some ability."

Seeing Mu Chen destroying a divine mountain with a single punch, a cold glint flashed within Wu Jia's eyes. This fellow seems to have cultivated a rather strong body-refinement Deity Tier Spiritual Art. If not, he wouldn't have been able to destroy my divine mountain with his Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase strength.

"However, do you truly think that my Nine Heavy Mountain Array would be that simple?"

With a sneer, Wu Jia changed his hand seal. In the next instant, Mu Chen saw the golden divine mountain, which he had shattered into glowing bits that blotted the sky, started to condense together once again. Within a short span of a few breaths, a majestic divine mountain reappeared in his sight.

"My nine divine mountains will endlessly form. No matter how many of them you shatter, they'll condense back again, all till you've exhausted your strength and emptied all of your Spiritual Energy!" Bringing along ridiculement and contempt, Wu Jia's cold voice resounded within this world.

Hearing his words, Mu Chen shot out once again. Transforming into a bolt of black lightning, he violent smashed against a divine mountain.

Bang!

Yet another divine mountain was forcibly destroyed by Mu Chen.

However, the glowing dots that filled the sky quickly converged together,

before transforming back into the divine mountain, completely void of damage.

Seeing Mu Chen's futile attempts, Wu Jia gave a soft smile, containing his ridiculement and contempt towards the former. This Mu Chen truly wasn't going to give up. After being trapped within his Nine Heavy Mountain Array, regardless of how many methods the former possessed, regardless of how remarkable he was, Mu Chen would never be able to escape from here.

After destroying three divine mountains in rapid succession and saw them recondense, Mu Chen stopped continuing to waste his energy in doing pointless actions. With a sneer, he replied, "Although you have some ability, this is, after all, only a Rank 5 Spiritual Array. Furthermore, do you truly think that you're Rank 5 Spiritual Array Master?"

The Nine Heavy Mountain Array truly was somewhat formidable. However, Mu Chen didn't believe in what Wu Jia had said. A Spiritual Array of that degree was simply not something that Wu Jia, with his qualifications, could successfully arrange.

Furthermore, if what he said was true, it would have exceeded the boundaries of a Rank 5 Spiritual Array.

Raising his head, he looked towards the nine divine mountains that had encircled him. Golden light gushed and radiated out, causing them to appear as if they were cast from gold.

As his black pupils reflected the images of the divine mountains, his eyes sparkled with brilliance. After a moment, he muttered out in a soft voice, "Is it real, or is it fake?"

Hearing those soft words, Wu Jia's eyes furiously contracted, before sending a dark stare towards Mu Chen. At this moment, dense killing intent erupted from his heart as he thought, This fellow truly isn't easy.

"Of the nine divine mountains, only one should be real, right? After breaking that, your Spiritual Array shouldn't have any more points worth commending, right?" Locking his gaze onto the dark-faced Wu Jia, Mu Chen spoke out with a faint smile.

"That'll have to depend on whether you have the ability to do so."

A faint shiver shook through Wu Jia's heart, while his expression grew increasingly dark. Changing his hand seal, the nine divine mountains instantly revolved, causing golden light to blossom across the entire sky. The golden light concealed the nine divine mountains within, causing Mu Chen to be unable to see their tracks.

Bang! Bang!

Under the golden light, divine mountains came pressuring down one after another, attempting to squash Mu Chen to death.

Activating the Dragon Soaring Art, Mu Chen's figure appeared akin to a dragon's shadow, evading the divine mountains that were attempting to suppress him from above. For those attacks that weren't dodgeable, a fist would fiercely rumble, causing anything that was in its path to smash and shatter apart.

"I have to find the real divine mountain."

Looking at the bright and eye-blinding sea of golden light, this thought ran through Mu Chen's mind. After faintly pondering about it, he started to slowly close his eyes.

Looking at Mu Chen, who had closed his eyes all of a sudden, a feeling of unease sprouted from Wu Jia's heart for some unknown reason.

...

Bang!

Across the horizon far away from the Western Desolated Territory, two figures with the most tyrannical Spiritual Energy fluctuations, were currently exchanging furious blows with one another. Wave after wave of Spiritual Energy shock waves swept out akin to hundred foot large waves, causing the countless gazes from the entire city to be tightly lock onto them.

This was the fighting ground between Shen Cangsheng and Mo Longzi.

Bang!

Bringing along overbearing intent, a golden stream shattered apart the horizon as it pierced out.

Roar!

As a dragon roar seemed to resound out, a demonic dragon howled as it appeared, its baleful aura pervading throughout the sky. Baring its fangs and brandishing its claws, it collided head-on against the golden stream.

A violent shudder seemed to spread across the sky as Spiritual Energy storms immediately followed suit.

The golden glowing figure was sent flying back as the golden long spear within Shen Cangsheng's hand heavily smashed the space below him, stabilising his body. At this moment, a few wounds had already appeared on his body. Obviously, the intense battle with Mo Longzi had resulted in him getting some light injuries.

In the front of him, greyish-black Spiritual Energy pervaded with a baleful aura expanded out. At this moment, the Spiritual Energy appeared akin to a gigantic demonic dragon, with Mo Longzi floating in the air above it.

Looking apathetically at Shen Cangsheng, Mo Longzi slowly pulled out the black sword hoisted on his back. This sword was somewhat broad, while bloody patterns covered the entirety of its surface. With its dark and sinister colour, it appeared akin to being formed from countless amounts of blood.

"This ends here."

Mo Longzi spoke out, his voice sounding exceptionally cold and detached. Shen Cangsheng's tenacity and toughness had exceeded his expectations. Although he knew that the latter had already touched the Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase, if they had an opportunity to meet again, the latter would have already broken through. Furthermore, at that time, Mo Longzi would truly not have any assurance that he could grasp victory within his hands.

Against the Overlord of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's

Heavenly Rankings, dread was similarly present within Mo Longzi's heart. This kind of opponent would become a big cancerous tumor within his heart if he were to let him go.

Humm! Humm!

As Mo Longzi grasped the black heavy sword within his hands, a bloodthirsty humm seemed to ring out from the body of the sword. As this continued, one could seemingly hear a demonic dragon roaring across the heavens and earth.

Within the large hall in the city, upon seeing the black heavy sword in Mo Longzi's hands, the eyes of the green-robed male slightly contracted as he muttered, "That's the Dragon Breaking Sword of the Demonic Dragon Palace..."

Shen Cangsheng had similarly felt the extremely dangerous fluctuations radiating from it as his expression turned grave. Clenching the Golden Lotus War God Spear tightly within his hands, Spiritual Energy gushed out of his body without the slightest restraint.

He knew that Mo Longzi had already planned to forsake everything to get rid of him.

Roar!

The black heavy sword rushed towards the sky as black rays of brilliance blossomed from it. Appearing akin to a demonic dragon that had broken the fetters of mortality, it proceeded to plant itself in the middle of the sky.

Mo Longzi's hands suddenly came together to form a seal as Spiritual Energy swelled and burst forth from his body. Like a thousand foot wide waterfall, it hid the skies and covered the earth as it rushed towards to sky, before completely being absorbed by the black heavy sword.

Roar!

As the heavy black sword continued absorbing Mo Longzi's Spiritual Energy, the greyish-black Spiritual Energy quickly condensed together, while layer after layer of dragon scales started surfacing on it. After a short span of a few breaths, the black heavy sword unexpectedly

transformed into a genuine demonic dragon approximately a thousand feet long.

At this moment, Mo Longzi opened his gigantic blood-red eyes, with endless bloodthirsty intent pervaded within them. A baleful aura pervaded throughout the world, causing the surrounding temperature to drastically drop.

The demonic dragon sat in the sky, its gigantic body appeared icy-cold, as if it was cast in metal. Power and vigor radiated from it, appearing as if it could shatter the world apart. A ferocious beast of this level was enough to cause fear and terror in people on first sight.

That seemed like a genuine demonic dragon!

Looking at the exceptionally ferocious beast sitting in the sky, Shen Cangsheng's face turned slightly pale. Taking a deep breath, he tightly clenched his Golden Lotus War God Spear. At this moment, he absolutely could not retreat!

If he did, the other three battles would get implicated as a result.

"I'll have to risk it for this fight!"

Golden light burst forth and swept out from his body, pervading throughout the world.

At this moment, under the gigantic Spiritual Array that had replaced the sky, a shiver suddenly shook through Mu Chen, who was trapped within the Nine Heavy Mountain Array. Within the depths of his spirit, a single eye seemed to slowly open at this moment.

Chapter 372: Heart’s Eye Breaks Spiritual Array

There was a mysterious eye that seemed to have opened from the depths of Mu Chen's spirit. Looking illusionary, and yet wasn't, looking real, and yet wasn't, while seemingly able to see through all the mist that veiled the world.

At this moment, Mu Chen's eyes slowly sprung open. However, at this moment, those jet-black pupils had transformed into transparent crystal-like appearances. Under those crystal-like eyes, everything in this world seemed to be able to be seen through.

Every change within the world in front of him was no longer that clear and distinct. The boundless Spiritual Energy was dissected as it appeared within his eyes, returning back into its most basic form as Spiritual Energy of the heavens and earth.

Looking at the nine divine mountains that were hidden within the eye-dazzling golden light world, the golden light present could no long mask Mu Chen's vision. Under his crystalline eyes, every single one of the nine divine mountains became transparent, with only the leftmost one still remaining clear and bright. Furthermore, countless glowing Spiritual Energy threads extended from it. These glowing threads were locked on to the other eight divine mountains, while mysterious fluctuations radiated from them.

This divine mountain was clearly different from the other eight.

"I've finally found you."

A faint smile curled from the corner of Mu Chen's mouth.

In the distance, sensing the change that happened to Mu Chen, Wu Jia shot a look over. Upon seeing the eyes of the former, which had turned crystalline, an intense shiver shook through his body as an incredulous expression broke apart the darkness present on his face. In the end, he involuntarily cried out, "Heart's Eye?!"

Shock and horror filled Wu Jia's heart. Regardless of anything, he never imagined that the Mu Chen in front of him was actually able to comprehend the Heart's Eye State! That was a rather high and deep status, and was the yearning dreams of countless Spiritual Array Masters, which naturally included him.

However, as if the Heart's Eye State was that easy to comprehend. Countless Spiritual Array Masters have tried their utmost and exhausted all efforts only to fail and be unable to open that mysterious Heart's Eye. However, this state had somehow appeared on the body of the youth in front of him.

The shock and mental blow from this revelation caused Wu Jia's face to turn exceedingly ugly. He had flaunted himself as having absolute talent on the cultivation of Spiritual Arrays. However, he was totally refuted by the Mu Chen present before his eyes.

Swish!

While Wu Jia was reeling with shock in his heart, Mu Chen had already furiously shot out, rushing straight towards the genuine divine mountain.

As long as he could destroy that divine mountain, this giant array would naturally break apart!

Bang!

Seeing Mu Chen's action, the expression on Wu Jia's face contorted. Changing his hand seal, he hastily urged the other eight divine mountains to rush and suppress Mu Chen.

Clenching his hand, black light erupted from Mu Chen as a black pagoda surfaced. In the next instant, gales whipped up as it dramatically swelled, becoming over a thousand feet long as it sat within the sky.

Bang!

The Nine-Layered Pagoda shot forward and violently collided against the eight divine mountains. As it did so, four golden dragons roar out of its body, myriads of golden rays were radiating from them.

As the Nine-Layered Pagoda blocked the assault from the eight divine mountains, a dragon's shadow surfaced on Mu Chen's body. This dragon's shadow appeared much more corporeal than before. In a supportive state, it carried Mu Chen as he instantly passed through the air, appearing right below the ninth divine mountain.

Stomping his feet, Mu Chen rushed upwards akin to a great roc. Black lightning crazily arced and danced across his body as he clenched his hand and formed a fist. At this moment, endless brilliance flashed within his crystalline eyes.

Bang!

His fist, encased with black lightning and boundless Spiritual Energy, violently rumbled out, before smashing directly against the bottom of the divine mountain.

"Break!"

A furious roar resounded across the world akin to a clap of thunder as black lightning spewed out. Gigantic cracks instantly extended out from the location where Mu Chen's fist struck as intense vibrations shook the majestic divine mountain. As the cracks extended, they finally covered the entire mountain.

At this moment, Wu Jia's face violently contorted.

Roar!

The malevolent and sinister demonic dragon sat within the sky across the horizon. The fiendish aura radiating from it made it appear as if it was a genuine demonic dragon from the ancient antiquity, causing the world the tremble from its presence.

The faces of countless experts within the Western Desolated City changed as a result as they thought, This Mo Longzi is actually strong to such a degree.

At this moment, the eyes of the green-robed male in the large hall faintly contracted as a result.

"Shen Cangsheng, this farce will end right here!"

Standing arrogantly below the demonic dragon, Mo Longzi looked down towards Shen Cangsheng, while a cruel sneer surfaced at the corner of his mouth. Extending his finger out, he gave a tap towards towards Shen Cangsheng in the distance below.

Roar!

Raising its head to give a long roar, the demonic dragon turned into a black bolt of lightning as it swooped down in a flash. Under the terrifying rush, the space around it started to distort, with the air also exploding apart due to its force, while the Spiritual Energy of the world all scattered away.

This rushing force was sufficient to crush a Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phase expert into dust!

At this moment, the faces of Su Xuan, He Yao and the rest, who were observing the fight happening in the sky, all turned pale. Obviously, all of them had sensed the terrifying degree of Mo Longzi's attack.

Raising his head, Shen Cangsheng looked towards the scene of the demonic dragon diving towards him. As the hands that held his Golden Lotus War God Spear faintly shivered, rampant and fanatical fighting intent erupted from his eyes.

Taking a step forward, a low roar seemed to ring out from his throat as bright and resplendent golden light erupted from his body, causing him to appear incomparably dazzling. With a shake of his golden spear, it pierced forward in an extremely slow manner.

Bang!

Creases seemed to appear in the space before it as a shadow of a golden spear hundreds of feet long surfaced behind Shen Cangsheng.

"Punishment Enforcer Deity Tier Spiritual Art, Punishment Enforcer's Spear!"

A low and deep voice resounded as indescribable awe and might erupted

from the golden spear's shadow. The feeling one got from it was akin to a divine enforcer appearing in the sky, causing everyone's hearts to tremble in fear.

Humm!

The gigantic golden spear's shadow shot forward, shattering the horizon apart. Under the tight gazes of countless people, it brazenly collided head-on against the swooping demonic dragon!

Boom!

An astonishing clap of thunder reverberated across the entire stretch of the world as gigantic gold and black Spiritual Energy storms instantly swept out The bright sky instantly turned dim and dark as furious gales howled about, wreaking havoc and devastation.

Countless people tightly stared at the gigantic Spiritual Energy storms to were kicked up, while wondering, Is that Shen Cangsheng able to resist against that terrifying attack from Mo Longzi?

Within the large hall, the green-robed male faintly narrowed his eyes, while his gaze remained frozen at the spectacle before him.

Bang!

Just as his gaze was fluctuating with uncertainty, countless people looked with overwhelming shock and astonishment in their eyes as the Spiritual Energy storms before their eyes were split apart. At this moment, the gigantic spear's shadow was being violently grasped in the claws of the demonic dragon, which proceeded to give a ferocious clench.

Bang!

Under the overbearing grip of the demonic dragon, the golden spear's shadow shattered and broke into pieces. Shooting through the Spiritual Energy storms, the malevolent demonic dragon brought along its frightening shadow as it enveloped over Shen Cangsheng.

Boundless Spiritual Energy erupted from Shen Cangsheng's body as a last desperate attempt to protect himself. This was the only thing he could

do at this moment.

Bang!

As Mo Longzi rushed forward, Shen Cangsheng appeared to have suffered a serious injury as blood instantly spewed out from his mouth. Due to the attack from the former, his chest appeared to have somewhat caved in. Rapidly shooting back, he appeared akin to a bird with broken wings, rapidly dropping out of the sky, before violently shooting straight into the ground below.

The entire earth instantly collapsed at this moment as the surrounding structures instantly crumbled into pieces while gigantic cracks extended from the location of his fall.

Due to the spectacle unfolding before their eyes, the entire city become much, much quieter at this moment.

Countless people shot into the sky to look at the area that had collapsed, with dense plumes of dust rising from the location.

In the distance, the faces of Su Xuan, He Yao and the rest had all been drained of blood as a chill shook through their bodies. This Mo Longzi was that terrifying? Even Shen Cangsheng wasn't able to stand against him.

Standing across the horizon, Mo Longzi stared with indifference at the collapsed ground. With a wave of his sleeve, gales whipped up, completely scattering the plumes of dust present.

As the dust scattered away, everyone could finally see the scene present within. A deep depression had formed on the ground, with Shen Cangsheng, now covered in blood, with his clothes in tatters, swaying and stumbling as he stood within it.

The long spear was still being grasped in his hands. However, its body appeared dim and dull at this moment, having clearly suffered serious damage.

Although Shen Cangsheng was still standing, anyone could tell that he shouldn't have the strength to continue fighting.

Without Shen Cangsheng restricting him, wouldn't Mo Longzi be able to immediately control the entire situation?

"Shen Cangsheng, is there anything left that you want to say?" As he stood in the air, Mo Longzi gave a faint smile, a flavor of victory hanging within. Although Shen Cangsheng was formidable, he hadn't truly reached the Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase, after all. Therefore, in a head-to-head confrontation with him, the latter simply didn't have the slightest bit of advantage.

Tightly staring at Mo Longzi, Shen Cangsheng attempted to revolve his Spiritual Energy, only to result in him spurting more blood out as he staggered and stumbled.

"Look's like this fight will ultimately end in the victory for our Demonic Dragon Palace. The Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy is nothing more than this." Mo Longzi spoke out while shaking his head in pity. Clenching his hand, boundless Spiritual Energy condensed within, while killing intent surfaced within his eyes. Obviously, he had already intended to truly finish Shen Cangsheng at this place. With the latter's talent, as well as his growth-rate, even he was somewhat dreadful.

"In your next life, don't go to such a useless place like the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy again."

A ridiculing smile appeared on Mo Longzi's face as the boundless Spiritual Energy within his hand carried forth his killing intent and rushed out.

Bang!

However, right at that instant, the sky in the distance, which was covered by the gigantic Spiritual Array, suddenly emitted an astonishingly loud sound, causing countless people to look over in astonishment. Even Mo Longzi was no exception, since a shiver shook through his body.

The gigantic Spiritual Energy was intensely vibrating at this moment. With a final loud bang, it completely exploded and shattered apart.

Glowing dots that blotted the sky scattered and descended.

Countless gazes turned towards the place that had the densest quantity of glowing dots. At that place, the blurry figures of two people were faintly discernable as they came into view.

Within the giant hall, expression of the green-robed male started to change. Thick feelings of shock and astonishment erupted from his eyes as he muttered, "How is this possible?"

As the glowing dots gradually dissipated, the two figures finally appeared. However, as they appeared, the entire city turned deathly silent as everyone's eyes were filled with shock and amazement.

At this moment, the two figures were in close range of each other. However, one of them had a palm gripping around the throat of the other. At this moment, the latter's face was deathly pale, while not even daring to make the slightest movement.

Unable to contain their emotions, Su Xuan covered her mouth, while shocked expressions flooded the face of He Yao and the rest.

That was because, the one standing there was Mu Chen, while the one being grabbed by the throat, was Wu Jia.

They had won their fight over there, with the victor being Mu Chen!

Chapter 373: The Powerful Mo Longzi

The atmosphere across the entire Western Desolated City seemed to have frozen solid.

Bringing along thick feelings of shock, stupefied gazes looked towards the scene across the horizon. In the next moment, the corners of their mouths started to open uncontrollably. This ending was clearly something that was totally outside of their expectations.

Across the horizon, Mu Chen stood in the air, his clothes in tatters, with a few wounds showing on his body. Black lightning arced and danced around his body, while an exceptionally chilly expression was displayed on his face. With a gaze as sharp as knives, he stared towards Wu Jia, who was right in front of him, whose face was now flushed red.

Like a steel vice, his hand locked around the throat of the latter, while Spiritual Energy erupted from his palm. With just the slightest bit of movement, he would be able to instantly shatter Wu Jia's throat.

An ashen colour started to appear on Wu Jia's face.Within his eyes, the remnant of an incredulous expression was present, showing him having yet to return back to reality after Mu Chen barbarically smashed his array and caused him to suffer a complete collapse.

Wu Jia's current strength had already reached Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase. However, he never imagined that he would lose in such a short amount of time after his Spiritual Array was broken apart by Mu Chen.

The combat prowess displayed by Mu Chen had clearly far, far surpassed the strength perceived by his outer appearance.

Astonished clamouring noises erupted out, quickly breaking apart the silence within the city. The current commotion was even being more intense than when Shen Cangsheng was defeated, since the scene that unfurled before them had far exceeded everyone's expectations.

Who would have thought that Wu Jia, a Rank 5 Spiritual Array Master,

would actually suffer defeat in the hands of Mu Chen, whose strength was merely at Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase?

"He's truly interesting," muttered the green-robed male with a faint smile, while shooting a peculiar look at Mu Chen. This youth appeared to also have some hidden methods and tricks up his sleeves. It's no wonder why he dared to take action under such circumstances.

"However, even though Wu Jia's defeat. They have still not considered to have obtained victory." He proceeded to mutter. As of now, Shen Cangsheng had already been defeated, with Mo Longzi about to take action elsewhere. Facing against the super-fierce figure that even Shen Cangsheng couldn't stop, there seemed to be nobody from the side of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy that could come out to contend.

In this current situation, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was already on the disadvantageous side. Even with Mu Chen's victory, it was hard to shake and reverse the situation. After all, Mo Longzi was someone that couldn't be compared to Wu Jia.

Due to Mu Chen's victory, Su Xuan, He Yao and the rest of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy people were pleasantly surprised for an instant, before quickly reverting to grave expressions, which was accredited from the present dire situation. If Shen Cangsheng still had the strength to fight, with Mu Chen collaborating within him, the two of them would be able to contend with Mo Longzi. However, as of now, Shen Cangsheng had already suffered heavy injuries... As for the sides of Li Xuantong and Luo Li, although they had gotten the upper hand, both of them were in a life-or-death entanglement, causing them to be unable to extricate themselves for the time being.

Within this time, Mo Longzi might be able to crush and defeat Mu Chen.

Across the horizon, Mu Chen sent an apathetic look towards Wu Jia, who he had already subdued. Turning his head around, he looked towards the distance. Upon seeing Shen Cangsheng, who was completely covered in blood, with a depressed aura, his heart instantly sank. Shen Cangsheng

truly was not Mo Longzi's match.

"Haha, you're truly surprising." Mo Longzi's faintly astonished gaze rested on Mu Chen's body, before proceeding to show a faint smile as he continued his statement. "However, you still late by a bit."

Swish!

From the distance, Su Xuan, He Yao and the rest had shot over, descending before Shen Cangsheng, protecting him from the front as they vigilantly stared at Mo Longzi.

Mu Chen looked at the battlefields of Luo Li and Li Xuantong. At this moment, the two of them had already sensed the progress of the situation over at Mu Chen's side, and their attacks suddenly became fierce and violent in an attempt to rapidly end their battle to assist him.

However, Mu Gu and Gui Xiong weren't ordinary people, after all. At this moment, they had also become more vicious, sending attack after attack of all-out blows sweeping out, risking their lives to bring Luo Li and Li Xuantong down.

A faint flash spackled within Mu Chen's eyes, before sending a palm patting heavily down on Wu Jia's chest. Blood immediately spurted out from the latter as the Spiritual Energy surrounding his body instantly became dispirited, clear indications of having suffered a serious blow.

After maiming the combat capabilities of this Wu Jia, Mu Chen flung him towards Su Xuan and the rest. He raised his head, and coldly stared at Mo Longzi as boundless Spiritual Energy fluctuations gushed out of him once again.

"You're not my match." Facing the gaze coming from Mu Chen, Mo Longzi just gave a faint smile as he spoke out.

Not a single expression hung on Mu Chen's face, the same with his words, with only the glare coming from him still remaining chilly and cold.

"Truly, a detestable fellow." Mo Longzi muttered under his breath, while malevolent killing intent surged and erupted from the depths of his eyes.

For this entire matter, the youth in front of him had caused much divergence in his well-prepared plans, causing him to feel extreme ire and detestment towards Mu Chen.

"I really, really want to kill you right here, right now..."

Baleful and ominous aura that blotted the skies, accompanied by his boundless and tyrannical Spiritual Energy, hid the skies and covered the earth as they swept out from Mo Longzi, enveloping over Mu Chen. In the next instant, a tremble shook through his body as he explosively shot out.

'"Mu Chen, be careful!"' Su Xuan and the rest hastily cried out. That Mo Longzi's was truly extremely vicious. He had immediately taken action.

Swish!

Mo Longzi's speed was extremely fast, appearing before Mu Chen in a flash. Sending out a vicious pat, he noticed a dragon's shadow that was unexpectedly surfacing around the latter's body. As rays of brilliance flashed out, the latter explosively retreated, escaping Mo Longzi's attack range.

"This is...the Dragon Soaring Art?"

Looking at the dragon shadow that appeared around Mu Chen's body in a flash, shock and astonishment erupted from Mo Longzi's eyes, before instantly being filled with a dark shadow as he spoke out, "Looks like you've gotten quite a good deal of benefits from the Spiritual Treasure room of the White Dragon Sovereign, huh? Even his Dragon Soaring Art was learnt by you."

The White Dragon Sovereign was once one of the highest ranking members of the Demonic Dragon Palace of the past. Therefore, Mo Longzi also knew about this consummate skill of his. This Dragon Soaring Art was a part of a rather formidable Deity Tier Spiritual Art. Once it was mastered to a great degree, one could seemingly transform into a divine dragon, while being able to pierce through space to evade and escape. Even a Sovereign Realm expert would find it difficult obstruct such a cultivator. During that year, when the White Dragon Sovereign had betrayed the Demonic Dragon Palace, the Demonic Dragon Palace had

tried their best to contain him, but to no avail, since he escaped at the end. What he relied on was this Dragon Soaring Art.

Although the Dragon Soaring Art that Mu Chen had cultivated was still at the most elementary "dragon shadow" level, the increase in speed was already extremely quickly, making Mu Chen exceptionally hard to deal with.

As the dragon's shadow surfaced around Mu Chen's body, it made him appear as if he was a green wisp of smoke. Vigilance filled his heart as he glared at Mo Longzi. At this very moment, what he needed to do was to buy the most amount of time for Li Xuantong and Luo Li.

If he was able to drag his fight till Li Xuantong and Luo Li finished theirs, it would become much easier for him.

Nevertheless, Mo Longzi had clearly seen through his intent. He sneered as he said, "Although the Dragon Soaring Art is formidable, you're only mastered to such a small level. Do you really think that I can't deal with you?"

Taking a step forward, surging Spiritual Energy gushed out from him, seemingly blocking the sky, causing this entire stretch of the world to instantly turn dim.

"Demonic Dragon's Shadow!"

Greyish-black Spiritual Energy hid the skies and covered the earth as it rushed towards him. Akin to a gigantic light screen, it enveloped an area of approximately thousands of feet long, with Mu Chen being unable to escape as he was covered by it.

Roar! Roar!

As the light screen came enveloping over, a malevolent dragon roar, filled with a strange demonic energy, rang out, causing Mu Chen to feel his body becoming heavy.

Intense chilling intent erupted from Mo Longzi's eyes as he extended his hands. Furiously giving a pat down, a chillingly cold roar resounded across the world, "Demonic Dragon's Claw!"

Bang!

Boundless Spiritual Energy condensed across the horizon, immediately transforming into a gigantic palm a hundred feet wide. Black dragon scales densely filled the surface of the giant hand. Sparkling with a chilling glow, it appeared to be able to shatter and collapse mountains.

The giant hundred foot-wide hand patted furiously down towards Mu Chen, as ear-piercing sounds of the air exploding rang out.

Looking at the shadow that came enveloping over him, Spiritual Energy erupted from Mu Chen, before transforming into a starry sky behind him. Three gigantic figures condensed and formed within it, before carrying along boundless rays of starlight as they swept out.

Four Divine Constellations Scripture, Divine Seal of the White Tiger! Divine Seal of the Black Tortoise! Divine Seal of the Vermillion Bird!

Beastial roars resounded acrossed the horizon! Three giant beasts howled as they shot out, immediately smashing head-on against the incoming greyish-black giant hand!

Bang!

Astonishing explosions resounded across the sky as incomparably erratic and rampaging Spiritual Energy waves swept out. Even Mu Chen was sent flying back thousands of feet, with the Spiritual Energy and blood within his body faintly churning around as a grave expression filled his face. Only after crossing hands with Mo Longzi was he truly able to understand how tyrannical the latter was. No wonder why even Shen Cangsheng was unable to resist his attacks.

Raising his head, Mu Chen looked towards the Spiritual Energy waves sweeping out in the distance. Over there, Mo Longzi had his feet treading on the Spiritual Energy Waves, with his hands crossed behind his back. An expression of indifference covered his face as if the previous confrontation did not have the slightest bit of effect towards him.

"To block my strike while being at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase, you truly have some ability." Shooting a look at Mu Chen,

whose chest was now heaving slightly, Mo Longzi spoke out with an apathetic tone.

Hearing those words by Mo Longzi, not a change happened to Mu Chen's expression. Instead, the palms hidden within his sleeves started to faintly tremble, and the surrounding space started to fluctuation.

"The White Dragon Sovereign was, after all, a person from our Demonic Dragon Palace. Since you've learnt the Dragon Soaring Art, you can be considered to have some connection to our Demonic Dragon Palace. If you're able to kill Shen Cangsheng and the rest, I might be able to allow you to join our Demonic Dragon Palace. Compared to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, your future there might be much, much greater." Mo Longzi suddenly made an offer to Mu Chen with a smile. If he was able to drag Mu Chen into the Demonic Dragon Palace, the face of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy might completely go down the drain. To him, this was an extremely good way to deal a blow to his enemies.

"A power that was ousted like a stray dog by the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy dares to speak such words?" Mu Chen replied with a mocking smile.

"Since you don't want to accept my good graces, you can follow all of them and die in this Western Desolated City!"

Chilling intent flashed within Mo Longzi eyes as he clenched his hands. Surging Spiritual Energy gushed forth and condensed, forming two gigantic dragons around his body. With a roar, they swept straight towards Mu Chen.

A dragon's shadow surfaced around Mu Chen as he explosively retreated. His black pupils started to turn crystalline once against as his hands came together to form a seal.

Bang!

At the instant when Mu Chen's hands came together, the entire stretch of the world shook and trembled. In the next instant, countless people noticed rays of brilliance blossoming in the sky as boundless Spiritual

Energy hid the skies and covered the earth as they condensed together.

Within a short span of a few breaths, a gigantic Spiritual Array surfaced. Two incomparably gigantic black lotuses slowly revolved within its centre, while frightening Spiritual Energy fluctuations that caused people's expressions to change radiated out.

"Demonic Butchering Lotus Spiritual Array!"

A low roar resounded within Mu Chen's heart as his eyes turned frosty. Sending a palm patting out, under the countless shocked gazes below, the gigantic Spiritual Array started to revolve in the air.

At this moment, an expression of shock and astonishment was also present on the face of the green-robed male within the large hall. The degree of Spiritual Array arranged by Mu Chen had already reached the realm of a Rank 5 Spiritual Array. Could it be that this youth was actually a Rank 5 Spiritual Array Master?

A Rank 5 Spiritual Array Master at such an age...

His eyes started to slightly narrow as he thought, This youth is slightly unusual. However, exactly till what point will he be able hold on against Mo Longzi...?

Chapter 374: Trump Cards Revealing

Bang!

Brimming with boundless Spiritual Energy, the two gigantic black lotuses started to slowly revolve, radiating a powerful pressure that enveloped across the entire Western Desolated City.

The expressions of countless people faintly changed due to the two gigantic black lotuses, since they had sensed the formidability and might of Mu Chen's Spiritual Array. From the pressure and Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiating from it, even a Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phase expert would be left with the only option to temporarily retreat from it.

Indeed, this youth by the name of Mu Chen truly had some ability. It's no wonder why he's able to defeat Wu Jia. It looked like his attainments on the aspect of Spiritual Arrays wasn't lower than the latter. In fact, he might even be more tyrannical.

Roar!

While countless people were sighing in admiration towards Mu Chen's abilities, the two gigantic malevolent dragons had already howled over, their roars shaking the entire stretch of the world.

Humm!

The two gigantic black lotuses started to rapidly revolve. Under the cold and chilling gaze from Mu Chen, two gigantic rays of black light spewed out all of the sudden right from the centre of both lotuses. They intertwined together, appearing similar to two black dragons that had entangled with one another as indescribably overbearing and tyrannical energies radiated from them.

Bang!

Under the attentive gazes from everyone, the two rays of black light violently smashed against the bodies of the two demonic dragons. A black light instantly blossomed across the horizon, covering and shrouding over

the entire sky.

Roar!

Painful roars erupted from the two demonic dragons as they did everything they could to struggle and escape. Nevertheless, under the rays of the black light, which appeared to be as dense as ink, they started to corrode, before turning incorporeal.

Bang!

As a loud bang rang out, the two demonic dragons were pierced right through by the ink-like rays of black light. Furthermore, the rays of light continued on with their assault. Without appearing to have weakened, they violently shot over towards Mo Longzi as they enveloped over him.

A clamor rang out across the entire city.

A dark and cold expression appeared on Mo Longzi's face as he looked towards the black rays of light shooting over towards him. He was able to sense that the powerful energies contained within them were sufficient to smash and defeat a person at the Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phase.

However, it was a pity that he, Mo Longzi, was much, much stronger than a Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phase.

As a dark shadow erupted from Mo Longzi's eyes, he took a step out. Dense greyish-black Spiritual Energy erupted from his arms as layers of black scales surfaced on his skin.

"Scram off!"

A cold roar rang out from Mo Longzi as he sent two fists rumbling out. The air before him instantaneously exploded, while ripples undulated across the surrounding space. Without the slightest intent of evading, Mo Longzi's fists heavily impacted against the two black rays of light that were shooting towards him.

Boom!

Rings of rampaging Spiritual Energy ripples were seen spreading out by

everyone as Mo Longzi was sent retreating a dozen steps back. The sleeves around his arms were torn into tatters. However, not a single injury was present on his arm. Furthermore, from the head-on confrontation, the black rays of light that seemed to be an irresistible force were immediately shattered into glowing dots that blotted the sky.

This Mo Longzi's strength was actually on the level that could easily resist a Fifth Grade Spiritual Array!

Shock erupted within the hearts of countless people as everyone thought, This Mo Longzi is indeed extremely formidable and powerful. Although Mu Chen had used the strength of a Fifth Grade Spiritual Array Master, the degree of the Spiritual Array arranged by him was unable to cope with Mo Longzi.

Grave expressions filled the faces of Su Xuan, He Yao and the rest. All of them had seen the might of Mu Chen's Demonic Butchering Lotus Spiritual Array. However, they never expected that a Spiritual Array of such might was, in all, only able to force Mo Longzi to retreat, nothing more than that.

"It seems like it's very difficult for Mu Chen to be Mo Longzi's match." Xu Huang whispered.

"As long as he can endure till Luo Li and Li Xuantong finish of their opponents, with the collaboration of the three of them, they'll have some chance of victory." He Yao chimed in while wrinkling his forehead. However, with Mo Longzi's level of intellect, he would clearly not give Mu Chen such a chance.

He would definitely end this fight as quickly as possible.

"This fellow..." Mu Chen's eyes had narrowed as a result of seeing the spectacle that had played before his eyes. This was truly the first time that his Demonic Butchering Lotus Spiritual Array was unable to have its desired effect. The strength of this Mo Longzi was truly very powerful and formidable.

Whoosh!

Raising his head, Mo Longzi sent a chillingly dark smile towards Mu Chen. In the next instant, in a flash, he appeared right before Mu Chen.

Having raised his vigilance against him, the dragon's shadow around Mu Chen's body sparkled as he explosively retreated hundreds of metres back. At the same time, with a change of his hand seal, the two giant black lotuses that had yet to dissipate started to revolve once again, sending two black rays of light violently shooting out.

Bang! Bang!

Mo Longzi's fists rumbled out again, smashing the two incoming rays of light apart while being forced to retreat a dozen steps back once again. However, this time, he gave a violent stomp with his feet, making his speed increase dramatically, causing remnant shadows to appear across the sky.

In the short span of a blink of an eye, he had appeared right before Mu Chen like a specter. As the chillingly dark sneer turned somewhat malevolent, he spoke out, " Do you truly thinking that you'll be able to avoid me with your small accomplishment in the Soaring Dragon Technique?"

Clenching his fingers tightly together, the black scales on his fist sparkled with a sinisterly cold light, appearing akin to a weapon of slaughter and carnage, while chilling and erratic fluctuations radiating out.

"Dragon Breaking Fist!"

A low roar rang out from Mo Longzi's mouth as he sent his fist rumbling out. The air in front instantly shattered and exploded as the fist went straight for Mu Chen.

At this distance, Mu Chen was already unable to attempt any form of evasion. A fierce expression flashed within his black pupils as black lightning raced and erupted from his body, while a lightning rune surfaced on his chest.

Activating his Lightning God's Physique, Mu Chen turned his body,

sending a fist violently rumbling out, and smashed it straight against the fist coming from Mo Longzi.

Bang!

Ripples visible the naked-eye extended out seemingly at the instant when the two fists smashed against each other. Vibrations shook the surrounding space as the Spiritual Energy surging forth from the two had seemingly transformed into violent storms.

A shudder went through Mu Chen as he went flying back hundreds of metres. A faintly sweet taste appeared in his mouth as a sliver of blood appeared as it flowed down from the corner of his mouth. After all, his strength was only at the level of Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase. Although he had the reinforcement from his Lightning God Physique, in such a head-on collision of strength, he obviously wasn't Mo Longzi's match.

Standing arrogantly in the air, Mo Longzi didn't move a single inch from the earlier collision, with only a tremble of his shoulder, which was dealt with by the energy within his body. Looking with ridicule and contempt at Mu Chen, he spoke towards the latter, "You're truly a crazily arrogant brat. You actually dared to fight head-on with me. Looks like you've no regards for your life."

Hearing those words and seeing Mo Longzi's reactions towards the earlier exchange, Mu Chen's expression sank like a brick in water. The disparity between Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase and Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase was truthfully far too large. Even with all the various methods he had used, he was struggling with much difficulty.

Wanting to truly become a threat to Mo Longzi using ordinary methods was simply impossible.

Mu Chen's eyes started to sparkle as he pondered on the methods and ways he could use.

Obviously, Mo Longzi wasn't going to foolishly wait for Mu Chen to complete his preparations. With a sneer, he shot out once again, yet again

displaying that astonishing speed. Hiding the skies and covering the earth, a furious barrage of attacks swept towards Mu Chen.

In response, Mu Chen could only twist and turn his body to evade the incoming attacks. However, there were many instances where he was forced by Mo Longzi's absolutely tyrannical strength to meet in a head-on confrontation of power. Therefore, under this assault, Mu Chen quickly fell into a disadvantage.

Within the city, countless people sighed in admiration within their hearts, since Mo Longzi truly was the more formidable one. Although that Mu Chen had caused people to feel shock and astonishment by his combat prowess, the disparity between one full stage wasn't that easy to be supplemented.

The faces of Su Xuan, He Yao and the rest were brimming with anxiousness, because once Mu Chen falls, they would no longer have the chance to reverse the entire situation around any more.

Bang! Bang!

Low and deep sounds continued to ring out across the sky. Following every sound, Mu Chen would be sent miserably flying back, while the blood dripping down from the corners of his mouth became increasingly prominent.

However, every single time when Mu Chen was miserably sent flying back, the palms within his sleeves would intensely tremble, before light would flow out of his finger tips. As this happened, the air would faintly ripple, before returning to its original, undisturbed state.

In the air, Mu Chen's situation became increasingly miserable and dire. Being forced to flee in all directions by Mo Longzi, cries of pity and mocking laughter started to ring out within the city. However, after hearing those noises, frustration and unwillingness were surprisingly absent from the black eyes of the youth. On the contrary, a chilling calmness akin to the bottom of an ancient lake was present.

Seeing the blood flowing down from the corner of Mu Chen's mouth, Su Xuan couldn't help covering her mouth with her jade-like hands, while an

impulsion to help him erupted within her heart. However, at this very moment, the other cruel people from the Bounty List Rankings were tightly staring at them.

From the looks of it, Mu Chen seemed to be unable to hold on for much longer.

Within the large hall, the green-robed male faintly narrowed his eyes as he stared at the scene of Mo Longzi seemingly dominating over Mu Chen. Faintly wrinkling his forehead, he seemed to have discovered that wasn't quite right.

Bang!

In the sky, Mo Longzi's spectre-like figure appeared before Mu Chen once again. With a face filled with gloom, he sent another fist rumbling towards Mu Chen's throat, causing the latter to cross his arms in front of his body in defense.

Bang!

Mo Longzi's fist violently slammed against Mu Chen arms, causing a mouthful of blood to spurt out from the latter as intense pain racked his arm. If not for him having cultivated his Lightning God's Physique, his arms would definitely be maimed after receiving that attack.

Relying on the force of the blow, Mu Chen explosively retreated, his fingertips still vibrating, while fluctuations radiated within the air.

The blood flowing down from the corner of his mouth was now clear and prominent, with only the chilling expression within those pair of black pupils growing increasingly thicker.

After stabilising his body after backing off a couple hundred feet, Mu Chen slowly cleaned away the blood from the corner of his mouth before proceeding to chillingly glare at Mo Longzi.

"You're truly a tenacious brat. Looks like the body refinement divine art that you've cultivated is quite formidable." said Mo Longzi with a sinister laugh. If he was replaced by an ordinary person, even someone whose strength was at the Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phase would have

already long suffered heavy injuries after being smashed so many times by him. However, although the Mu Chen before his eyes appeared rather miserable, he clearly still possessed the capability to continue fighting.

"Nevertheless, I really want to see, exactly how many more punches you can take from me!"

A malevolent laugh rang out from Mo Longzi as he took a step out, wanting to continue his assault to finish Mu Chen off.

However, just as he was able to take another step forward, a chilling smile bursting within killing intent surfaced from the corner of Mu Chen's mouth in the far distance. At this moment, those pair of black pupils had turned crystalline, seemingly able to see through the myriad of every living thing in the world, appearing exceedingly mysterious.

Rumble!

Astonishing fluctuations rang out across the world, shocking and astonishing countless people to raise their heads, only to see the Spiritual Energy in the sky above them seemingly starting to rampage about. Countless glowing lines started to come together within the air, before spreading out. From the looks of it, they appeared to form an incomparably gigantic furnace.

Mo Longzi's eyes instantly contracted faintly as he looked at the spectacle unfurling around him, causing his expression to slowly start sinking.

Raising his head, Mu Chen looked towards Mo Longzi, who had a sunken expression hanging on his face. In the next instant, an extremely chilling voice containing some ridiculement within resounded across the sky.

"Did you really think I was allowing you to freely hit me, you trash?"

Chapter 375: Divine Furnace Heavenly Array

Boundless Spiritual Energy blossomed across the sky akin to a tidal wave. As the countless glowing threads intertwined, an incomparably giant furnace started to faintly form within the sky.

Enveloping the ground below, the furnace started radiating with astonishing fluctuations.

A slight change happened to the expressions of countless people as they stared at the glowing furnace. If one took a closer look, one would be able to discover that it was a gigantic Spiritual Array. As for those complicated-looking glowing lines, they were what comprised of the array's formation.

This Spiritual Array seemed to be even stronger than the double lotus Spiritual Array from before!

Shock and astonishment erupted once again in the hearts of quite a few experts, while the gazes they sent towards Mu Chen had changed. This fellow was actually acting weak on purpose! Furthermore, he had even fused his Spiritual Seals within the air from god knows when! Only after completing the arrangement of the array's formation did he break his character and reveal such a powerful Spiritual Array.

Previously, he was being forced to such a miserable state. However, no one had expected that the sorry figure he appeared to be was just a method used by him to mask his arrangement of his Spiritual Array.

Furthermore, everyone had to admit that his concealment was extremely good, as even Mo Longzi was unable to discover and sense it.

This youth seemed to be quite young. Yet, not the slightest bit of the usual shallowness in one's mind was present with his thinking. He was able to still remain calm and unflustered even in such a life-or-death situation, while relying on Mo Longzi's carelessness to arrange a Spiritual Array in secret.

"This new batch of Freshmen of the Northern Heavens Spiritual

Academy appears to be slightly formidable," said the green-robed male with some shock and astonishment present within his eyes. Even he was only able to sense Mu Chen's spiritual Array right before he started to activate it. Before that, he was similarly unable to sense how Mu Chen had fused his Spiritual Seals into the air.

Obviously, this Freshman by the name of Mu Chen had rather high attainments on the aspects of Spiritual Arrays. If not, he wouldn't be able to fuse his Spiritual Seals so perfectly with the air to the point of not creating the slightest bit of visible presence, not allowing anyone to sense any of his intent.

"This Spiritual Array is powerful."

Looking at the incomparably gigantic furnace in the air, the green-robed man faintly narrowed his eyes. He was able to sense that this Spiritual Array possessed extremely powerful might. This power might be sufficient to truly pose a threat towards Mo Longzi.

Now, Mo Longzi might have to pay the price for his earlier carelessness.

Across the horizon, under the attention of countless gazes, Mo Longzi's expression had turned incomparably cold and dark as he looked towards the gigantic furnace that had enveloped him. Sending a dark and sunken look towards Mu Chen at the distance, a faint twitch could be seen within his eyes, causing him to appear exceedingly malevolent.

"This is unexpected. I've truly underestimated you." Mo Longzi spoke out with a slight growl with some teeth clenching and gnashing present within his words. He never expected that he would actually get a fast one pulled onto him by Mu Chen under the attentive gazes of so many people.

Previously, it seemed as if he had completely gained the advantage. However, he had simply not discovered the moment when Mu Chen had arranged his Spiritual Array. It wasn't to say that he was lacking in his sensory capabilities. However, he truly was overly careless. He didn't believe that Mu Chen could pull off anything between the gaps of his teeth. Therefore, the gigantic furnace was akin to a violent slap to his face, causing rage and fury to erupt within his heart.

A faint expression of indifference hung on Mu Chen's handsome face, while blood still remained at the corner of his mouth. The Spiritual Array that he had arranged was naturally the one given to him by Ling Xi when he left Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Although it was within the same boundaries of a Rank 5 Spiritual Array, like the Demonic Butchering Lotus Spiritual Array, it possessed might comparable to a Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase. If it was before, Mu Chen would naturally not have the capability to arrange it. However, after opening his Heart's eye, he finally possessed the capability to do so.

Naturally, arranging this Spiritual Array would require some time. If he were to arrange such a Spiritual Array right in Mo Longzi's face, he would definitely be interfered with and stopped by the latter. Therefore, he chose to use a method that no one had expected. When Mo Longzi's attacks were at their craziest, while his body appeared to be in an extremely miserable state, relying on the concealment by those rampaging Spiritual Energy fluctuations, he had fused the Spiritual Seals, one after another, within the air.

Therefore, it had led to the scene of Mu Chen's reversal.

Shooting a look at Mo Longzi, Mu Chen didn't continue saying any useless words as he proceeded to cross his legs and sit down in the air. A hand seal was formed, causing the gigantic furnace Spiritual Array to rumble as it revolved. As it did so, the space surrounding the furnace started to seemingly churn and flare up.

"Do you really think that I'll allow the situation to turn around?!"

A sinister and cold roar rang out of Mo Longzi as he took a step forward. Boundless greyish-black Spiritual Energy swept out from him. At this moment, anyone could see that this furnace Spiritual Array had caused some dread to surface within him.

"You love to spew quite a bit of nonsense."

Mu Chen replied with a faint smile. Changing his hand seal, the air within the furnace turned scarlet-red, almost as if it was about to ignite and burn.

Bang!

Upon making contact the with boundless Spiritual Energy radiating out from Mo Longzi, Spiritual Energy started to fluctuate and radiate from the scarlet-red air. Traces of evaporation started to appear as a terrifying temperature started to radiate and spread out from within the furnace Spiritual Array.

"Divine Furnace Heavenly Array!"

A serene expression seemed to appear on Mu Chen's face as a low and deep roar brought about some chilliness that slowly rang out from his mouth.

Rumble!

Following Mu Chen's roar, the furnace Spiritual Array completely detonated. In the next instant, countless people saw scarlet-red flames forming within the furnace Spiritual Array. Akin to flaming clouds, they hid the skies and covered the earth as they swept straight at Mo Longzi.

The scale of the flaming clouds was simply unavoidable, it was impossible to escape!

Mo Longzi's expression started to turn somewhat ugly at this moment. From the scarlet-red flames that blotted the skies as they headed over, he could feel a feeling of danger from them.

"I don't believe that your Rank 5 Spiritual Array will be able to cope with me!"

Clenching and gnashing his teeth, Mo Longzi formed a hand seal, causing the boundless Spiritual Energy around his body to howl and surge. As Spiritual Energy condensed, it transformed into a glowing Spiritual Energy screen as it enveloped him within.

A black demonic dragon swam around the surface of the light screen, while powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiated from it. From the looks of it, this appeared to be the strongest fortified defense Mo Longzi could put up.

Boom! Boom!

Scarlet-red flames continued on their path as they spread out. As they extended out, the boundless greyish-black Spiritual Energy that made contact with it rapidly evaporated away. Within the entire boundary of the furnace Spiritual Array, the defensive boundary created by Mo Longzi continued to be endlessly suppressed and burned away.

Bang!

Within a short span of a dozen breaths, the scarlet-red flames finally burnt all the greyish-black Spiritual Energy to nihility. As the sea of flames surged, they surrounded Mo Longzi's glowing Spiritual Energy screen, the terrifying temperature coming from them caused ripples to its surface.

Looking coldly at Mo Longzi and his defensive attempt, Mu Chen's hand seal suddenly changed.

Grrrr!

An ear-piercingly clear screech seemed to ring from within the scarlet-red sea of flames. In the next instant, as the flames surged, they transformed into the shape of a gigantic flaming bird.

Sitting within the sea of flames, the fiery bird flapped his fiery wings as it raised its head to give a long roar towards to sky. Hiding the sky and covering the earth, it violently smashed against the demonic dragon swimming on the surface of the glowing Spiritual Energy screen .

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Low and deep exploding sounds continued to ring out across the sky as the giant fiery bird burning with flames rushed forward. At this moment, the furious ripples started to surface on the seemingly indestructible glowing Spiritual Energy screen.

At this moment, the demonic dragon on the surface of the light screen was roaring as it defended against the attacks coming one after another.

Sitting within the light screen, Mo Longzi's face had turned ashen as Spiritual Energy continued to erupt from his body to strengthen his

defenses. He knew that this Spiritual Array should be Mu Chen's final method. As long as he could endure it, he could pinch the latter to death at any time!

After being played and led around the nose by Mu Chen, he wished he could shatter all of his bones and split apart the latter into thousands of pieces!

Sensing the venomous gaze coming from Mo Longzi, Mu Chen gave a faint smile before proceeding to ignore him. Continuing to revolve his Spiritual Array, he wanted it to erupt with its most powerful strength, heavily damaging and refining the latter to death!

Bang! Bang!

Under the rampage of the fiery bird, the ripples spreading out from the glowing Spiritual Energy screen grew increasingly frequent. Furthermore, the demonic dragon swimming on it was much more incorporeal than before.

The scarlet-red sea of flames in his surroundings seized the opportunity to surge forward. Under the corrosion of the high temperature, even Mo Longzi, who was protected within, had beads of perspiration falling off of him like rain.

As time continued to slowly pass by, the glowing Spiritual Energy screen became increasingly thinner as the demonic dragon grew exceedingly close towards turning illusionary. This caused the hearts of quite a few people to skip a beat. This Spiritual Array was truly formidable. Even Mo longzi wasn't able to completely defend against it.

"Break for me!"

A chilling glint flashed within Mu Chen's black eyes. With a change of his hand seal, a furious roar akin to the clap of thunder rang out from him.

Bang!

The furnace Spiritual Array furiously revolved, causing rumbling sounds to ring out. In response, the scarlet-red sea of flames started to rampage

and grow erratic. Violently sweeping out, it smashed right against the glowing Spiritual Energy screen that was getting thinner as each second went by.

Crack!

Under the all-out pounding, the glowing Spiritual Energy screen finally reached it limit. With a faint sound resounding out, cracks started to extend on the surface of the light screen.

At this moment, inside, the face of Mo Longzi started to violently contort.

On the contrary, expressions of ecstasy and joy erupted on the faces of Su Xuan, He Yao and the rest standing in the distance.

Swish!

Under the attentive gazes of the countless people in the city, the glowing Spiritual Energy screen completely collapsed. Sensing this opportunity, the scarlet-red sea of flames swept in, instanting surrounding Mo Longzi, who now had nowhere else to evade or hide in.

At this moment, everyone could see that Mo Longzi's expression had turned incomparably ugly.

Chi. Chi.

As the scorchingly high temperatures swept out, Mo Longzi's clothes were instantly burnt into ashes, with even his skin turning scarlet-red. Under the intense temperatures from the scarlet-red sea of flames, even the latter's eyes had turned blood shot.

Puff. Spurt.

As the terrifying sea of flames advanced towards Mo Longzi, he violently spurted a mouthful of blood. Those pair of incomparably venomous eyes locked on towards Mu Chen in the far distance, before he was completely engulfed by the surging sea of flames.

Intense shock shook through the hearts of countless people.

Mo Longzi, had lost?

The entire city turned deathly silent at this moment as everyone's gazes were tightly locked at the area pervaded by the sea of flames. At this very instant, the atmosphere in that entire stretch of the world, seemed to have completely frozen solid.

The flames were still rising and flaring up.

After quite a while, due to the exhaustion of Spiritual Energy, the gigantic furnace Spiritual Array started to gradually dissipate. Simultaneously, the sea of flames that had pervaded that stretch of the sky started to slowly withdraw.

After completely withdrawing away from the area, Mo Longzi's figure had disappeared from within. However, cries of astonishment quickly rang out as people saw a strange object appearing in the sky as the flames disappeared.

Mu Chen's eyes furiously contracted upon seeing the scene as he tightly stared at the area.

Present within the sky was a ball of blood that was approximately a few feet in diameter. Appearing akin to a clump of meat dripping with blood, it floated mysteriously in the sky.

Chapter 376: Dragon Transformation Blood Art

The ball of blood floated in the sky as traces of a blood-red baleful Aura radiated from it. Following its minute up and down movements, it appeared akin to a hair-raising clump of meat from the distance.

This mysterious scene had undoubtedly caused the expressions of countless people to change as a chilling sensation rose within their hearts.

"This is..." faintly wrinkling his eyebrows, while looking at the scene in the sky, the green-robed male muttered to himself before continuing after a while later, "Could it be the secret skill of the Demonic Dragon Palace, the Dragon Transformation Blood Art?"

"Dragon Transformation Blood Art?" A figure spoke out in doubt behind the green-robed male.

"That's a high-level secret skill within the Demonic Dragon Palace. Only some of their disciples with extremely high statuses would be able to learn and cultivate it. This skill is mysterious and cruel, as it's said to requires one to dig out some of one's flesh before implanting the flesh and blood of a demonic dragon within one's body. After nourishing the demonic dragon's flesh and blood with one's own blood, one could activate it during desperate times, causing one's strength to drastically increase."

At this moment, the expression of the green-robed male grew solemn as his continued with his explanation. "However, the price to pay for this mysterious skill is very high. From what Mo Longzi has displayed, it would be hard for him to recover within half a year."

"Never thought that a brat whose strength was only at the Heavenly Transformation Late Stage would be able to force Mo Longzi to such a degree. He's truly surprising," replied the person at the back with a sigh of admiration.

Feeling the same way too, the green-robed male faintly nodded his head. This Freshman by the name of Mu Chen had truly caused people to be

overwhelmed with shock and admiration for his abilities. However... forcing Mo Longzi to such a degree, it truly couldn't be said if this was exactly a fortunate or an unfortunate thing...

The faces of Su Xuan, He Yao and the rest also turned ugly at this moment. Although they didn't know exactly what that ball of blood was, it was clearly not any good news for them.

Beside them, Shen Cangsheng had managed to stabilise his breathing, with his deathly-pale face regaining slight normalcy. However, upon seeing the wriggling ball of blood in the sky, his eyes had also furiously contracted.

"Dragon Transformation Blood Art..." Shen Cangsheng forced the words out from his clenched mouth as his blood-soaked hands tightly gripped his long spear. After exhaling a long breath of air, his expression turned grave as he prepared to take action at any moment. Although his situation wasn't too good, he knew that the upcoming situation was not something that Mu Chen could deal with by himself.

Mu Chen forcing Mo Longzi to such a stage had clearly exceeded his expectations.

Within the peculiar atmosphere that had filled the entire city, Mu Chen was also tightly staring at the ball of blood that was slightly squirming and wriggling, while a chillingly dark expression fluctuated on his face. He never imagined that he was still unable to defeat Mo Longzi after displaying his hidden trump card. That Heavenly Refining Divine Cauldron array that he had arranged was sufficient to deal heavy damage towards experts of Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase.

That fellow's too thorny.

Boom!

As Mu Chen's expression changed, the ball of blood floating in the distant sky started to quietly vibrate. Its surface started to squirm and wriggle, almost as if something was seemingly trying to break out of the ball.

A chilling glint flashed within Mu Chen's eyes. Clenching his fingers, he sent a fist rumbling out. Boundless Spiritual Energy surged and swept out, before violently slamming against the surface of the ball of blood.

Swish!

A low and deep voice rang out as blood blossomed in the sky. However, not a single jolt shook through the ball of blood. Instead, the wriggling and squirming grew increasingly rapid. At that moment, a crack started to quietly extend on its surface.

Mu Chen's pupils furiously contracted.

Bang!

The ball of blood violently squirmed and wriggled. With a pop, an arm covered entirely by blood-red scales furiously pierced out from within. The arm wasn't the shape of a human's arm, the fingers were sharp and pointed, akin to the claws of a wild beast. As it pierced out, an indescribable aura of slaughter and massacre radiated, causing the faces of countless people to faintly change.

As the arm extended out, it shattered the ball of blood apart, causing flakes of blood to spread out as a blood-red figure slowly walked out from within.

As everyone's line-of-sight converged together, countless people sucked in a breath of cold air.

Mo Longzi had reappeared, standing in the air. However, at this moment, his body had appeared to have grown much taller. Blood-red scales covered his entire body, while a blood-red dragon tail, approximately a few feet long, continuously wagged to and fro from his back. Akin to two dragon claws, his arms and palms radiated with a chilling glint.

At this time, Mo Longzi appeared just like a terrifying beast of slaughter and carnage. The gaze and aura coming from him were exceedingly dreadful and terrifying.

Roar!

Mo Longzi faced the sky and gave a long roar, sounding extremely sharp and ear-piercing, causing the faces of countless people to turn pale. The surrounding air shook due to the roar as shock waves radiated towards the distance, appearing exceedingly spectacular.

"Jie. Jie."

As his long roar rang out, Mo Longzi's blood-red eyes locked onto distant Mu Chen. An extremely cruel and sinister smile surfaced from the corner of his mouth as a scarlet-red tongue licked his lips, appearing extremely terrifying.

Mu Chen's eyes were filled with caution and vigilance as boundless Spiritual Energy radiated from his body. At this moment, he could feel an extremely dangerous flavor from Mo Longzi. The latter was now much more frightening than before.

"Being able to force to this step... Mu Chen...I have to congratulate you."

Mo Longzi smiled malevolently, while the baleful aura and killing intent within his eyes were seemingly about to turn corporeal. In the next instant, he took a furious step forward. With a wave of his blood-red dragon tall, his body disappeared from everyone's view.

Mu Chen's face instant changed as a dragon's shadow surfaced around his body. Pushing his speed to his utmost limit, he instantly retreated explosively thousands of feet back.

Swish!

However, just as he had appeared thousands of feet away, the air behind him exploded apart as a blurry blood-red figure appeared behind him. As it did, a malevolent and cruel laughing voice followed the wind as it rang out.

"Isn't your speed very fast, Mu Chen? Why are you unable to bear it now, huh?!"

Bang!

As the malevolent laughter rang out, sharp and incisive whooshing

sounds resounded behind Mu Chen's body. The gales created, were swift and sharp to the point of wanting to shatter his body.

Black lightning coursed and arced across his body, turning around while his arms crossed in front, defending his body.

Bang!

The dragon fist covered by blood-red scales, violently slammed against Mu Chen's arms. A low and deep sound rang out, and a sweet taste erupting in Mu Chen's throat as he immediately spurted a mouthful of blood. Miserably shooting back, intense pain racked his arms, almost as if they were broken and shattered apart.

The strength of the current Mo Longzi had already reached a rather frightening stage.

"Tsk! tsk! Relax, I'll make sure to break every single bone within your body!" The smile on Mo Longzi's face grew increasingly malevolent and sinister as he uttered those words. With a flick of his dragon tail, his figure disappeared, reappearing right behind Mu Chen. The blood-red scales on his arm turned increasingly radiant and brightly coloured, almost as if blood was about to drip from them.

Bang!

A fist rumbled out, causing the surrounding air to immediately explode apart.

With a clench of his hand, a black pagoda appeared. Expanding outwards, it protected Mu Chen from the front.

Ding!

Mo Longzi's punch slammed violently on the surface of the black pagoda, causing a clear metallic sound to reverberate out. Sparks blossomed as the black pagoda was sent flying back, with Mu Chen also being sent shooting back for quite a distance.

"Truly an interesting fellow. You're actually still able to resist." A malevolent and sinister laugh rang out from Mo Longzi as he rapidly shot

forward akin to a red bolt of lightning.

"However, let me see how long more you can continue to endure!"

Whoosh! Whoosh!

In the sky, Mo Longzi's speed had reached an astonishing level, appearing akin to a red bolt of lightning that was piercing through the air. At this moment, Mu Chen was completely on the disadvantageous side. If not for the black pagoda protecting his body, he would have already suffered heavy injuries from the fierce and cruel attacks of the former.

However, even with the black pagoda, his situation was extremely dire. Blood continued to flow out throughout his body. From the looks of it, it was clear that he was unable to endure for much longer.

Fear and trepidation shook the hearts of Su Xuan and the rest, since it was clear that Mu Chen and Mo Longzi were already not on the same level of strength. Regardless of how many methods and trump cards Mu Chen pulled out, he could no longer turn the situation around.

"I'll go and help him."

Clenching and gnashing his teeth, regardless of his injuries, Shen Cangsheng wanted to take action. With the current progress of the situation, Mu Chen would be stuck in an extremely undesirable position very soon. How could he sit and watch as Mu Chen gets killed by Mo Longzi?!

Su Xuan and the rest instantly felt anxious and worried. With his current state, if Shen Cangsheng were to offer his help, he wouldn't be able to provide much help for Mu Chen.

Ding!

In the sky, Mo Longzi's fist fiercely landed once again on the surface of the black pagoda. Intensely vibrating, the black pagoda grew dim at this instant, before transforming into a black light that rushed into Mu Chen's body.

Clearly, after enduring the numerous rampaging attacks unleashed by

Mo Longzi, the pagoda had already reached its limit.

"Tsk. tsk. Do you have any more things left to show?"

A strange laugh rang out from Mo Longzi as his malevolent and sinister gaze appeared extremely frightening. "If not, you can go and die now!"

With a step, he appeared right in front of Mu Chen. The sharp-pointed blood-red claws were thrust straight towards the latter's chest akin to a bolt of red lightning.

Mu Chen's eyes had turned blood shot as he prepared to crazily fight with all he had against this Mo Longzi.

Ring!

However, just at this instant, a sword ring that shook the skies furiously reverberated across the horizon! Turning their heads towards the sound, countless people saw a river of Sword Aura rush forth and violently slammed against Mo Longzi's body.

Bang!

As the Sword Aura swept across Mo Longzi's body, sparks instantly blossomed and shot out, while he was sent flying back.

Whoosh!

Clamoring sounds rang out from countless people as their gazes turned towards the sky in the far distance, where a young girl with a black longsword in her hand stood in the sky. Her eyes were as calm and cold as an icy lake, while chilling intent erupted from them as they locked onto Mo Longzi.

Behind her, a figure covered in blood dropped down from the sky, his aura depressed. Impressively, that was the Rank 3 on the Bounty Board, Mu Gu!

"Luo Li defeated Mu Gu!"

Upon seeing this, astonishment and joyous voices of surprise rang out from Su Xuan and the rest. Luo Li had truly arrived at too good a timing!

Unrestrainable cries of shock and astonishment rang out from within the city as everyone thought, This batch of Freshmen from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy are too formidable! Firstly, there was Mu Chen, who was able to force Mo Longzi to use his final trump card. Now, there was this young girl, whose beauty was stunning and breathtaking, who was able to use such swift and fierce attacks to deal with Mu Gu, whose strength was at the Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phase.

Bang!

While everyone was overwhelmed with shock and astonishment, rampaging Spiritual Energy swept out from another area of the horizon. As countless people turned their heads over, a chill shook through their minds and hearts.

Over there, Li Xuantong stood in the air, the longsword in his hand pierced right through Gui Xiong's throat. At the same time, the giant axe in the latter's hand had landed on the former's shoulder, causing blood to flow out.

A situation of taking a life while risking one's own.

However, it was clear that Li Xuantong had managed to gain a sliver of superiority in the end.

Having his throat pierced through, Gui Xiong opened his mouth, causing blood to gush out from within. He was still in shock and disbelief as he stared at the Li Xuantong before him, whose chest was slightly heaving. He appeared as if he wanted to say something, but the gushing blood prevented the words from coming out. After slumping slightly forward, he dropped down from the sky like a brick in water.

Pulling out the axe stuck in his shoulder, Li Xuantong casually stemmed to flow of blood from the wound. Holding his sword in one hand, he shot straight towards the location where Mu Chen was. Looking at the blood and wounds that covered the latter before looking at the malevolent looking Mo Longzi, he spoke out in a soft voice, "Thanks for your hard work."

At this moment, Luo Li had also hurriedly arrived beside him.

Supporting him by his side, she looked towards the blood and wounds that covered his entire body. Feeling pain within her heart, she asked, "Are you alright?"

Shaking his head, Mu Chen continued to stare at Mo Longzi, who was similarly staring back at them with an incomparably cold and and dark look on his face. At this moment, of the three of them, other that Luo Li, whose condition was much better off, both Mu Chen and Li Xuantong had suffered quite some serious injuries. In such conditions, would they be able to deal with Mo Longzi, whose strength had explosively increased?

Sending a venomous gaze towards the three, the malevolent smile at the corner of Mo Longzi's mouth grew even wider. Gentling wagging the blood-coloured dragon tail behind his back, a voice drenched with killing intent slowly rang out across the sky.

"Those two fellows truly are wastes. They can't even do the job of holding people back. However...since everyone has gathered, I'll just have to deal with all of you together."

Chapter 377: Borrowing the Ominous

Within the Western Desolated City, countless gazes locked onto the confrontation happening in the sky. Although Mu Chen, Luo Li and Li Xuantong had the numerical advantage, anyone would be able to see that the side with the true superiority was still being held by Mo Longzi.

At this time, after displaying some sort of secret technique, the latter's strength had clearly grown increasingly tyrannical. From the looks of it, even if Mu Chen and the other two were to collaborate, they still might not be able to endure against Mo Longzi.

Su Xuan, He Yao and the rest had also thought about this point, since a stretch of graveness was still present on their faces. Much joy and happiness from Luo Li and Li Xuantong defeating their opponents had dissipated away as a result.

Wanting to break and reverse the progress of this situation was truly too difficult.

Within the sky, pervaded by the attentive gazes of the myriad of people around, Mu Chen deeply frowned as he looked towards the distant Mo Longzi, The latter's entire body was radiating with a baleful aura, and wanting to deal with him would be extremely thorny.

"That fellow's strength has increased yet again." said Li Xuantong as he deeply frowned, while an ugly expression appeared on his face. Naturally, he was able to feel that the current Mo Longzi had become stronger, compared to before.

"Are you still able to fight?' asked Li Xuantong after looking at Mu Chen's injuries.

With a smile, Mu Chen nodded his head. Clenching his fists, his black pupils faintly sparkled, almost as if he was thinking about something.

"Why not hand him to me?" Luo Li spoke out in a soft voice.

This gave a shock to both Mu Chen and Li Xuantong, causing Mu Chen to faintly wrinkle his eyebrows, while cold and frosty streams of light

seemed to surface within his black eyes. Furiously clenching his hands tightly, he lightly shooking his head and replied, "It's better for me to do it."

"Can you?" asked Li Xuantong with slight doubt. He was clear about Luo Li's background. Therefore, her daring to say that she was able to deal with Mo Longzi didn't cause him to feel shocked and make a fuss. However, it was different for Mu Chen. After all, there was still some disparity between him and Luo Li. Being able to force Mo Longzi to such a step was already a rather outstanding matter in Li Xuantong's eyes.

If he was to go a step further, Mu Chen might have to pay an extremely disastrous price.

Luo Li's clear, big eyes stared towards Mu Chen. Looking at the wounds and injuries that covered the latter's body, pain erupted in her heart once again, while bits of resentment and frustration started to rise within her heart. Although she knew that Mu Chen really wanted to to stand before her and protect her, could it really be that he loved for her to stand at the side while seeing him fighting till he was completely covered in cuts and bruises?

Didn't he know that this would only make her feel even more pain within her heart?

Luo Li bit her lips with her pearly white teeth. She wasn't willing to refute Mu Chen in front of people. Therefore, she only tilted her lovable face sideways, without saying any more words. However, her appearance and posture only had the effect of clearly showing her current feelings. She was angry.

Shrugging his shoulders, faint jealousy erupted within Li Xuantong's heart as he was able to spot her emotions hidden under her actions. Being able to cause Luo Li, who was usually quiet and independent, without having any fondness for material objects, as well as showing any sadness and grief, to reveal such an angry emotion, it was already a matter that would cause jealousy and envy in people.

At least, she would only get angry when it involved people that truly held

a place within her heart.

Looking at the beautiful face of Luo Li, which was as exquisite as porcelain, Mu Chen couldn't help laughing out. This was the first time that he had seen her being angry towards him. Extending his hand to grasp the slender and jade-like hand of the young girl, the latter originally wanted to retreat her hand. However, seeing the wounds and injuries that covered all of Mu Chen's body, she was unable to rouse this little temper of hers. Giving up, she allowed him to hold her hand. Through her little red mouth gently poured out in a fit of pique.

"I know that you've some hidden trump cards up your sleeves. And, once you use them, you'll definitely be stronger than me..." Mu Chen spoke out softly and slowly. "However, I think that you should know the consequences that would result if you use those trump cards."

Hearing his words, Luo Li faintly gawked, before proceeding to bite her lips as she thought, Mu Chen's intuition is very sharp. Although there are some matters that I haven't spoken to him about, he was able to sense them. Indeed, she had some strong and powerful trump cards. However, once they were used, her grandfather, Luo Tianshen, might be able to sense them.

After all, she was the next Empress of the Luo God Clan. The Luo God Clan couldn't possibly let her leave the clan without having the slightest bit of self-protection. Furthermore, once she used some of those trump cards, that would indicate that she had met with danger. These kinds of matters weren't things that Luo Tianshen was willing to see.

Therefore, if those trump cards were used, Luo Tianshen might be resorted to take action and bring Luo Li back to the Luo God Clan. If that happened, the time when Luo Li and Mu Chen would separate would be pushed forward.

Mu Chen really treasured the times that he was spending together with Luo Li. Unwilling to see such a scene, he had, therefore, resorted to use such a method to do his utmost to keep Luo Li out of harm's way. Thus, he was willing to assume those so-called 'dangers' and the so-called 'fighting'

all by himself.

"I just...want to spend more time with you. Therefore, please don't blame for my selfish protection of you." Mu Chen continued speaking as he slowly grasped Luo Li's slender and jade-like hands. The voice ringing out from him slowly seeped into Luo Li's heart, causing ripples to surface within, while completely dissipating the slight bit of anger and resentment that were present.

Luo Li gently nodded her head as a faint smile surfaced on her beautiful and jade-like face, appearing exceptionally soul-stirring.

"Relax. I won't show off and try to be brave. If I'm truly unable to deal with him, you can take action then. What do you say?" said Mu Chen with a faint smile.

"Okay," replied Luo Li and she obediently nodded her head.

"You truly have a way to deal with Mo Longzi?" After giving a sigh, Li Xuantong spoke out.

"I'll try my best to attempt that."

Mu Chen nodded his head as he gave his reply. Staring at Mo Longzi in the far distance, chilling intent erupted from his black pupils as he spoke out, "However, I also need you two to help fight for a little bit of time."

"Okay!" Li Xuantong didn't have any bit of hesitation as he immediately agreed.

"Please do."

Taking a deep breath, Mu Chen didn't continue talking as his eyes unexpectedly started to close, bit by bit. This caused countless people to feel shocked. Could this Mu Chen be attempting to prepare a powerful Spiritual Array once again? However, why don't we feel any fluctuations of a Spiritual Array?

"Hmph! Still with those deceitful acts!"

Upon seeing this scene, the eyes of the distant Mo Longzi had also contracted. After being faced against Mu Chen's methods on innumerable

occasions, it had to be said that even he felt some fear and dread surfacing within his heart. Naturally, he wouldn't give his enemies a chance to flip the situation around, since the current him also had the strength to overturn the situation, after all. However, even if he was to win, he already had to pay an extremely high price. Therefore, he would absolutely not let such a chance to reappear for his enemies.

Whoosh!

Clenching his hands, boundless Spiritual Energy swept of from Mo Longzi before sweeping throughout the horizon. In the next instant, a shiver shook throughout his body as he explosively shot forward.

Seeing the reaction of the latter, Li Xuantong immediately rushed up. Spiritual Energy revolved to his maximum capability as it proceeded to envelop over the incoming Mo Longzi.

"Scram off!"

Faced against Li Xuantong's obstruction, Mo Longzi gave a cold sneer as he sent a fist rumbling out. No fanciful moves were used, with only boundless and overbearing Spiritual Energy to his maximum capability, they were sweeping out along his fist.

Bang!

Two boundless Spiritual Energies smashed head-on against each other, causing a loud bang to resound out. Li Xuantong's body furiously shook as he was sent flying back seemingly in an instant. Blood surfaced and dripped down from the corners of his mouth. Only after personally crossing hands with Mo Longzi did he understand how tyrannical the latter was.

Bang!

Just as Li Xuantong was sent flying back, a swift and fierce stream of Sword Aura descended once again from the sky, smashing heavily against Mo Longzi's body.

Hoisting her longsword, Luo Li swiftly shot out, while displaying her swift and fierce attacks.

Using all of their methods, the two tried their utmost to tangle and hold Mo Longzi back. This spectacle caused countless people to hold their breaths, since the two fighting sides had already become rather desperate.

As Li Xuantong and Luo Li were trying their best to delay Mo Longzi, the Divine Soul sitting with Mu Chen's aurasea opened its eyes. In the next instant, with a move, it flew straight towards the centre position of the aurasea.

Within was a dark purplish Mandala flower. A jet-black demonic pillar stood erect within the centre of the flower, while purple-coloured chains wrapped around its body, sealing it within.

This was the "Great Meru Demonic Pillar" that Mu Chen had previously obtained within the Spiritual Treasury of the White Dragon Sovereign. However, due to this pillar being too ominous, if not for the suppression by the mysterious black paper within Mu Chen's body, his mind and reason might have already been corroded by the ominous and demonic energies radiating from it. Therefore, ever since obtaining it, Mu Chen did not dare to recklessly move and use it.

However, the current situation before him, he had to activate and use it. If not, it was simply too difficult for them to deal with Mo Longzi in his current state.

Raising his head, Mu Chen fiercely gazed at the "Great Meru Demonic Pillar" in front of him, before speaking out in a low and deep voice, "If you're not willing to be sealed forever in this place, you better collaborate with me for a bit!"

Humm! Humm!

As Mu Chen's voice rang out, black rays of brilliance unexpectedly erupted from the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. Fiendish and demonic energies started to radiate, appearing as if they wanted to sweep towards Mu Chen.

Chi! Chi!

However, before the demonic aura could scatter out, purple rays of

brilliance erupted from the dark purplish Mandala flower. Upon coming into contact with the purple light, the demonic aura was akin to remnant snow coming into contact with lava, rapidly dissolving away.

This Great Meru Demonic Pillar truly was worthy of being called a lethal weapon. It's so hard to subdue and tame it.

"Let's see if you have the ability to corrode me!"

A low and deep roar rang out of Mu Chen as his Divine Soul took a step forward. Heading straight for the Mandala flower, it extended its small hands, and came in direct contact with the surface of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar.

Bang!

At the very instant when the hands of Mu Chen's Divine Soul made contact with the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, an indescribable demonic energy suddenly pervaded out. Staining the hands of Mu Chen's Divine Soul, it started to crazily corrode away. Within a short span of a few breath, Mu Chen's Divine Soul had unexpected turned into a blood-red colour. Appearing akin to a child covered in blood, one would feel intimidated upon seeing it.

Mu Chen's eyes started to continuously fluctuate between a blood-red and a jet-black colour. As the incomparably overbearing demonic energy rushed within his body, it furiously started to sweep outwards.

That was an extremely powerful energy!

However, it was able to corrode the mind and reasoning of people, and transform them into murderous wild beasts!

Tightly clenching his teeth, Mu Chen resisted this corrosion. He knew that if he wanted to control this demonic energy, he needed to resist this corrosion!

Murderous intent to slaughter and murder rushed erraticly towards Mu Chen's mind and spirit, causing a brutal and tyrannical killing intent to erupt from his heart.

His eyes were nearing a scarlet-red colour.

Humm! Humm!

However, at that moment, the mysterious black paper beneath the Mandala flower started to sparkled with a strange and peculiar luster. In the next instant, the beautiful petals of the Mandala flower started to extend out, before wrapping up Mu Chen's Divine Soul within it.

A clear and refreshing feeling transmitted over, causing the brutal killing intent within Mu Chen's heart to be slowly suppressed.

Mu Chen's eyes suddenly snapped wide open. The outer rim of his eyes appeared in a blood-red colour, while his pupils still remained jet-black with clarity!

As Mu Chen slowly spread open his fists, blood-red energies that blotted the skies hid the skies and covered the earth as they swept out of him akin to a tsunami, before gushing towards Mu Chen's limbs and bones.

Within the skies of the Western Desolated City, Mu Chen's tightly shut eyes abruptly sprung open at this moment.

At this moment, everyone was able to feel that the temperature of the world had seemingly dropped down in an instant.

Chapter 378: Who’s More Ferocious?

Bang!

Boundless Spiritual Energy rippled out from Li Xuantong's body as fists of wind howled about. Bringing along surging Spiritual Energy, they violently rumbled towards the incoming Mo Longzi.

However, facing the former's attacks, Mo Longzi seemingly smashed straight through them. The blood-coloured scales on his body sparkled with a sinisterly cold luster. Sending a palm patting out, Spiritual Energy gushed out, smashing and shattering the numerous Spiritual Energy waves apart.

"Stupid fool!"

After smashing and shattering the Spiritual Energy rushing towards him, killing intent blossomed within Mo Longzi's eyes. Li Xuantong's entanglement caused unbearable irritation to him. Proceeding to take a step forward, his figure appeared right behind the latter akin to a spectre, before sending a palm patting towards the vital part of the latter's back.

Sensing the Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiating from his back, Li Xuantong's face immediately changed. However, he was no ordinary person. A chilling glint flashed within his eyes as a longsword appeared within his hand. Without the slightest intent to evade, swift and fierce Sword Aura was carried along with his longsword as it chopped straight towards Mo Longzi's throat.

He had unexpectedly wanted to trade his life for Mo Longzi's!

"Hmph!"

With a cold snort, Mo Longzi extended his other palm, making a grab towards the sword tip that was being thrust straight at him. Sharp Sword Aura slashed across the blood-coloured scales, causing ear-piercing screeches to ring out. Although it left a wound on Mo Longzi's palm, the sword was finally stopped by him.

Whoosh!

Just as Mo Longzi had stopped Li Xuantong's Sword Aura, and was about to take the latter's life, extremely swift and fierce whooshing sounds furiously rang out behind him as a sword ray was thrust straight towards Mo Longzi's back like a falling star.

That ray caused the scales across Mo Longzi's body to tighten, as he could feel some threat from it. This threat was far from something Li Xuantong could create.

A flash appeared in Mo Longzi's eyes as he instantly proceeded to ignore Li Xuantong. After all, the attack heading towards his back possessed more threat than the latter.

However, as he was about to turn his body over, Li Xuantong took the opportunity to advance. Extending his hand, he locked up Mo Longzi's other hand, completely ignoring the extreme danger of his actions.

"You!"

A cold glint flashed within Mo Longzi's eyes.This Li Xuantong truly is very ruthless and thorny. He actually intends to risk himself to allow her attack to land on me!

With a sneer, Mo Longzi's body suddenly shook as the blood-coloured scales around his entire body erupted with dazzling brilliance. In the next instant, a powerful energy erupted from him, appearing akin to waves of blood.

Bang!

Li Xuantong was immediately sent flying back, spurting a mouthful of blood in the process. As for the sword ray that had launched at sneak attack on his back, it was also shattered by the blood waves. A shiver shook through Luo Li's body as she hastily retreated dozens of steps. The blood and Aura within her body churned and surged around, while paleness flashed across her beautiful face.

Across the horizon, Mo Longzi arrogantly stood in the sky. Looking towards the miserable-looking Li Xuantong and Luo Li, the expression radiating out from his eyes grew increasingly malevolent. Clenching his

hands, the scales across his body turned dim, while the baleful aura radiating from him grew increasingly thick and dense.

"You two don't even possess the qualifications to fight with me to a draw!"

Li Xuantong's face was deathly pale, while the Spiritual Energy around his body was in total chaos. He had already suffered injuries from his previous life-or-death struggle against Gui Xiong. After engaging in another all-out fight, he had piled more injuries on his existing ones.

Compared to him, Luo Li was slightly better off, but not far away. Mu Chen was not willing for her to use some of her trump cards. Therefore, she could only rely on the swiftness and fierceness of her Luo Shen Sword to create a threat for Mo Longzi.

However, anyone could tell that if this continued, the two of them wouldn't be able to endure for much longer.

"Looks like I'll have to kill one of you for you all to get it!" Mo Longzi roared with a malevolent sneer, before locking on towards the wounded Li Xuantong. Taking a step forward, he headed straight towards the latter to take his life.

Bang!

However, just as Mo Longzi was prepared to kill one of his enemies, a demonic Aura that blotted the skies rushed towards the heavens. Seemingly in an instant, it had pervaded across the entire stretch of the world.

This fiendishness was much, much more overbearing than the baleful aura radiating from Mo Longzi's body!

Frightened and terrified expressions appeared on the faces of countless people.

Even the expression of the green-robed male within the large hall faintly changed as he turned his gaze around. In the next instant, what they saw was Mu Chen standing tall in the distant sky.

At this moment, the youth opened his tightly shut eyes, showing off blood-red pupils, which had changed from their original black colour, and were now pervaded by murderous intent. However, within the depths of those eyes, clarity was still present. This showed that he had still retained his mind and reason, and was not being corroded by the frightening demonic energies radiating from him.

"Such overbearing demonic energies... it's actually more formidable than the baleful aura radiating from Mo Longzi. Exactly where did this Mu Chen come from?" The green-robed male muttered as his expression turned grave. The demonic energies radiating from Mu Chen had caused even him to feel shocked and astonishment.

Mo Longzi's expression had also violently contorted at this moment. Looking at Mu Chen, whose entire body was radiating with blood-red demonic energies, a thick feeling of inconceivability erupted from his eyes

That was due to the little bit of familiar flavor within the demonic energies radiating out from Mu Chen. This was the demonic Aura that was cultivated by the people of their Demonic Dragon Palace. However, it was even more fierce and overbearing than what they could cultivate.

"Exactly what kind of person is this bastard?!" Huge waves of shock shook through Mo Longzi's heart. This demonic energy was absolutely not cultivated by that Mu Chen!

"Before you kill him, I'll finished you off first!"

The blood-red demonic energy wrapped around Mu Chen's body, causing his originally handsome face to appear rather terrifying, almost as if he would turn into a god of slaughter and carnage seemingly in the next instant, and unleash a bout of massacre.

"You talk big!" Mo Longzi growled as he gnashed his teeth. Mu Chen's change had caused him to feel great unease. However, he still hung a sneer on his mouth.

As Mu Chen stared at Mo Longzi with his blood-red eyes, demonic energy travelled back and forth under the skin of his entire body, flooding his limbs and bones. This completely different power caused his entire

body to feel uncomfortable. Fortunately, being much, much stronger than he previously was when he had entered the grave of the White Dragon Sovereign, he wasn't being tortured by the same demonic energy to the point of wishing he was dead.

Mo Longzi had also tightly stared at Mu Chen. Their glares crossed paths in the air, while unconcealable cold and sinister killing intent erupted from their eyes.

"I'll slaughter you first!"

Mo Longzi's gazed finally turned into one of exception malevolence. Taking a step forward, the air in front of him exploded as he disappeared in an instant. Upon reappearing, he was already at Mu Chen's back. A sharp palm with fingers akin to dragon's claws violently patted down on Mu Chen's crown without the slightest bit of mercy.

Bang!

Incomparably overbearing demonic energies erupted from Mu Chen's body. Clenching his five fingers tightly to form a fist, he sent a punch rumbling out. A wave of blood surged out, appearing as if a sea of blood was brought forth by it. Snatching the initiative from Mo Longzi, his fists of wind smashed straight against the latter's chest.

Frightening energies exploded under Mu Chen's fist, exploding under Mu Chen's punch, as visible fluctuations consisting of waves of blood extended from the point of impact.

Boom!

A deep sound rang out. In the next instant, everyone's eyes shrunk as they saw Mo Longzi, who was seemingly unstoppable, unexpectedly being sent flying back hundreds of feet due to Mu Chen's punch. The blood-coloured scales on his chest were smashed and shattered apart, causing blood to flow out, dripping down along his scales.

Whoosh!

Astonished clamoring noises instantly erupted throughout the entire city. The changes in the spectacle before them had really changed too

quickly. Who would have thought that Mu Chen, who was suppressed by Mo Longzi to the point of not having a single ounce of contention left, would actually send Mo Longzi flying back in such an overwhelming fashion!

That was an expert at the Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase!

Looking at the spectacle before them in a daze, Su Xuan and the rest were unexpectedly unable to regain their minds for a moment. All of them didn't understand what they saw. Why would Mu Chen's strength suddenly rise to such a dramatic degree? Was it due to the demonic energies radiating from him?

Floating within the sky, Li Xuantong and Luo Li were gawking in shock. The latter was somewhat in a better condition, as she was filled with various kinds of confidence for Mu Chen that was unrelated to any reason. As for Li Xuantong, a slightly spectacular expression was currently displayed on his face, while the gaze he sent out towards Mu Chen appeared exceedingly complicated. This Freshman, who was previously someone that didn't even matter, had unknowingly grown to a step that had exceeded even him within a short span of a year...

In the distant sky, Mo Longzi's face turned extremely ugly as he stabilised his body. Looking towards the shattered scales on his chest, he instantly turned absentminded for a moment. I was actually injured by that Mu Chen?

I was injured to such a degree by a brat at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase?

Mo Longzi's face started to uncontrollably contort. In the next instant, with a raged-filled roar, the blood-coloured scales covering his body instantaneously erupted with a bloody light once again. Akin to a bolt of lightning, he explosively shot out, launching frightening attacks that instantly attempted to envelope Mu Chen.

He didn't believe that he would actually suffer defeat by the hands of a Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's Freshman after activating the Dragon Transformation Blood Art!

Bang! Bang!

As the two of them smashed into each other, astonishing demonic energies swept out akin to tidal waves, while incomparably frightening Spiritual Energy shock waves continued to radiate out. The aftermath created by those Spiritual Energy shock waves caused the scalps of quite a few people to turn numb.

A cold and detached expression was hung on Mu Chen's face, while his eyes remained scarlet-red. As the two of them crossed paths, furious punches rumbled out akin to bolt of lightning striking out. Bringing along boundless demonic energies, they smashed head-on against Mo Longzi's fists of wind.

Boom!

A gigantic wave of blood hundreds of feet wide rushed across the horizon, its momentum and power was shockingly dreadful and terrifying.

The bodies of the two them shook, before flying back over a thousand metres away. However, Mo Longzi's face grew increasingly ugly as his hands continuously trembled. The layers of scales on his hands were already shattered, while blood continued to flow out and drip down.

His baleful aura had fallen completely short of Mu Chen' fiendishness. In a head-on collision, his baleful aura was, instead, corroded by Mu Chen's demonic energy. Furthermore, when it had pour into his body, it caused his blood and Aura to churn and surge around.

Furthermore, he could faintly sense the energy within his body was gradually declining. This was the after effects of the Dragon Transformation Blood Art. If he didn't end the fight quickly, he might truly be killed by Mu Chen.

"I don't believe that I can't kill a Freshman of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy!"

Layer upon layer of rampaging emotions folded within Mo Longzi's eyes. In the next instant, a rage-filled roar rang out from his mouth as he clapped his hands together to form a seal. A ray of brilliance shot from his

crown and rushed towards the sky. Transforming into a black heavy sword, it hummed and howled as Spiritual Energy swept out of it. As the heavy sword drastically expanded, it instantly grew to a size that was a hundred feet long. In the next instant, an extremely frightening Sword Aura swept from it.

The blood-coloured scales on Mo Longzi's body unexpectedly shot out explosively. Akin to waves of blood, they encased the heavy sword, transforming it into something akin to a blood-coloured demonic dragon, radiating with frightening fluctuations.

"Demonic Dragon Divine Art, Slash of the Broken Dragon!"

Mo Longzi gave a furious roar as he took a step forward as the black heavy sword explosively shot out. A long roar rang out of the blood-red dragon. As the sword flew out, it seemingly shattered the confines of the universe, enveloping directly over Mu Chen.

The might of that one sword could slash the heavens and earth apart!

This Mo Longzi was using his life to launch his attack!

"You're betting your life? Let me accompany you!"

"Let's see who will destroy who!"

Raising his head, Mu Chen stared at the frightening attack that was coming his way with scarlet-red eyes. A low and deep roar rang out from his throat, resounding across the world. At the same time, the dark purplish Mandala flower within his aurasea started to slowly blossom. As the petals started to blossom, the Great Meru Demonic Pillar that was sealed erupted with astonishing demonic energies as they explosively rushed out.

Bang!

The fiendishness rushed from Mu Chen's crown towards the heavens, before transforming into a black demonic pillar that was approximately a thousand feet long that stood arrogantly in the sky!

At this instant, the heavens seemed to have turned dark and dim.

A Demonic Aura surged up as fiendish energies blotted the skies!

Chapter 379: Might of the Demonic Pillar

The demonic energies that blotted the skies swept out across the sky at this moment. Hiding the skies and covering the earth, even the scorching sun in the sky was completely covered by them. In an instant, this entire stretch of the world was submerged in a dusky shadow.

Countless people looked in shock towards the gigantic demonic pillar that had appeared behind Mu Chen. That was a demonic pillar approximately a thousand feet long. It appeared akin to a pillar that stood tall, hoisting up the heavens, while radiating with frightening fluctuations.

Faced against this gigantic demonic pillar, even the face of the green-robed male within the large hall had started to uncontrollably contort, while shock and terror flashed within his eyes.

Exactly where did that demonic pillar come from?! It's actually terrifying to such a degree!

Across the horizon, Mu Chen had completely disregarded the countless shocked and terrified gazes directed at him. Fiendish energies were accumulating crazily within his scarlet eyes. Since Mo Longzi had bet his all, why couldn't he do the same?

If he were to lose, not only would it cause everyone from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy present here to fall into a dire predicament, it would also cause the academy to suffer a blow to her face in the Northern Heavens Continent. Obviously, this was a situation that he was not willing to see.

As a scarlet shadow erupted within Mu Chen's eyes, a low roar rang out from his mouth. Doing a empty hug in front of him, the gigantic thousand foot long demonic pillar unexpectedly trembled, before starting to swing forward.

Bang! Bang!

Unexpectedly, the Spiritual Aura within the heavens and earth turned into a gigantic Spiritual Aura vortex due the the swing of the demonic

pillar. Tens of thousands of Spiritual Energies between the heavens and earth started to crazily condense together into the vortex.

Although this demonic pillar wasn't the actual body of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, and was merely a projection. The might and intimidation it possessed had clearly exceeded Mu Chen's expectations by a large, large margin.

This immemorial weapon truly lived up to its name. Although Mu Chen had yet to truly see the might of this divine weapon, he was certainly positive that this Great Meru Demonic Pillar would not be weaker than the so-called 'Divine Weapons'. The only downside was that thing was too fearful. If he were to lose control of it, it would devour him instead, before being corroded by the fiendish energies within it.

If not for the mysterious black paper within Mu Chen's body, he might have been affected by this Great Meru Demonic Pillar to a situation that was worse than death.

Bang!

The Spiritual Aura vortex continued to crazily revolve as the scarlet shadow in Mu Chen's eyes increased in great density. With an explosive cry, countless people stared in shock at him, who was still hugging air. At this instant, the thousand foot long demonic pillar had shot out, heavily smashing against the heavy sword encased by a blood-red giant dragon.

The sky seemed to explode apart under the wave of the demonic pillar. In the city beneath, all structures within a thousand foot radius had completely collapsed, with even the ground having sunken down. Those few people who were unable to evade in time spurted blood from their mouths as they were sent flying back.

Boom!

Appearing akin to an irresistible force, the black demonic pillar violently swung down, before smashing head-on against the black heavy sword.

Ding!

A metallic sound resounded out akin to a clap of thunder, while the

blood-red giant dragon wrapping around the heavy sword started to erupt with mournful cries. Cracks started to extend from its surface, and with a bang, it exploded apart.

As the blood-red dragon exploded, boundless Spiritual Energies erupted from the heavy sword in a defensive attempt. However, when the demonic pillar came pressing down, the heavy sword instantly started to intensely vibrate. The Spiritual light coming from the body of the sword seemingly turned dim in an instant and with a bang, it rapidly descended from the sky before shooting to the earth below.

That all-out strike of Mo Longzi's. Under the demonic pillar, he was closed to being squashed by it.

In the far distance, upon seeing this, a cold and chilling sensation instantly swept across within his body. My strongest attack was broken with such ease. Exactly what is that damnable black pillar?!

He was unable to answer this question of his. While he was still stunned in shock, he quickly saw, in terror, that the black demonic pillar had, unexpectedly, not shown any signs of dissipation after smashing and sending his heavy sword flying back. Instead, while bringing along a gigantic Spiritual Energy vortex, it had enveloped over him.

The space in his surroundings had seemingly froze up at this instant.

Terror finally erupted out from Mo Longzi's eyes. With a hasty shake of his sleeve, a palm-sized black scale flew out. Rapidly expanding in size upon appearing, it transformed into a scaled shield, standing guard in front of him. This was the strongest defense he was able to muster.

Whoosh!

The gigantic shadow came enveloping over. Upon making contact with the demonic pillar, the black-scaled shield was smashed by the irresistible fiendish energies that overflowed from it till cracks started appearing. With a muffled sound ringing out, it shattered and exploded right before Mo Longzi's terrified and despairing eyes.

Unable to be blocked, the demonic pillar descended, before finally

landing against Mo Longzi's body.

Bang!

A deep muffled sound that caused people's skin to turn numb reverberated seemingly through the gigantic city. At this moment, everyone could see a black figure shooting down from the sky, before violently piercing straight towards the ground.

The ground shook and trembled as ripples visible to the naked-eye radiated from the epicentre of the crash site. A thousand foot long radius of earth was shattered apart and had collapsed...

Dust plumes rose into the sky.

About a thousand metres from the city, the black demonic pillar in the sky finally came to a stop, before slowly turning illusionary and dissipating away completely.

The demonic energies that blotted the sky had also dissipated, allowing warm sunlight to illuminate down once again. However, it was still unable to disperse the chilling cold everyone felt within their bodies. Staring blankly at the thin figure floating in the sky, cold sweat had covered their entire backs. If the black demonic pillar had continued its descent, how many people in this city would have been killed by it...?

In the sky, the scarlet shadow within Mu Chen's eyes rapidly subsided. Proceeding to cover his mouth, an intense bout of coughs shook through him as blood spewed out between the gaps of his hand. At this moment, his face had appeared exceedingly pale.

The demonic energies were truly extremely powerful. Although he had borrowed them and turned the entire situation around, it had clearly caused extremely serious injuries to him. If not for him having cultivated his Lightning God's Physique, allowing his fleshly body to become much stronger, he might have already perished due to his heavy injuries.

Wiping off the bloodstains at the corners of his mouth, his eyes continued their cold stare towards the place that was pervaded by dust plumes below. With a wave of his sleeve, a hurricane blew out, blowing

away and scattering all the dust clouds present there.

As the dust clouds scattered, an incomparably large and deep pit appeared in the ground. Within the centre of the deep pit was Mo Longzi, his body was covered in blood while he was lying within. The bones throughout his entire body seemed to have been shattered, causing him to be unable to move.

The current Mo Longzi wasn't the domineering and flamboyant guy from before. His miserable appearance gave people a flavor of a stray dog.

Looking at the scene in the distance, the faces of Teng Long and the rest of his group were overwhelmed with shock and horror, while shivers ran throughout their bodies. This ending was clearly out of their expectations. Who would have thought that Mo Longzi, with his torrential baleful aura, would actually be defeated in the end?

Furthermore, he had suffered defeat in the hands of a Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy Freshman!

Mu Chen turned his gaze towards them, causing a wave of coldness to sweep through the bodies of Teng Long and the rest. Although they knew that the current condition of the former was extremely poor, the terror and dread within their hearts resulted in them not even daring to attempt any sort of confrontation against Mu Chen.

Giving no regards to them, Mu Chen waved his hands towards Su Xuan and the rest. The latter few people immediately rushed forward, heading straight towards the Eastern Desolated Terrace. Splitting apart the iron bars, they immediately rescued Lin Zheng and the other two from within.

Faced against their rescue, Teng Long and his group didn't dare to obstruct them anymore. The only thought running through their minds was the hope that the god of slaughter in front of them wouldn't come and find trouble with them. As of now, they clearly didn't have the guts and courage to have another confrontation with Mu Chen.

Seeing that Lin Zheng and the other two had been saved, Mu Chen breathed a sigh of relief, before sending a glare brimming with killing intent towards Mo Longzi. Although the latter was completely covered in

serious injuries, this kind of enemy had to be completely eliminated, and cannot be allowed to stay alive!

A chilling glint sparkled in Mu Chen's eyes as he extended his finger. Tapping the space before him, Spiritual Energy burning with black flames instantly swept out. Akin to a bolt of lightning, it shot straight towards Mo Longzi's head.

He wanted kill Mo Longzi here!

Woosh!

Seeing Mu Chen launch such a vicious attack, people started to cry out in shock. This Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy Freshman truly wasn't merciful. At this moment, he still didn't have the intent to show any mercy.

Looking at the ray of Spiritual Energy shooting towards him, Mo Longzi's face instantly contorted. If he was at his prime condition, an attack of this degree would naturally not faze him at all. However, at this very moment, all the bones in his body had been broken and shattered, resulting in him being unable to dodge the incoming attack. If he was to get struck by it, he would definitely be hard pressed to escape death!

Mo Longzi tried to struggle, but was unable to even move an inch. At this moment, the only thing he could do was see the ray of Spiritual Energy shoot straight towards him as the terror of death erupted within the depths of his eyes.

The ray of Spiritual Energy shot instantly across the horizon. However, just as it was able to kill and destroy Mo Longzi, the space in his surroundings started to warp and distort. Turning to something akin to a spatial screen, it protected Mo Longzi within it.

Sssssshhhhhh!

As the ray of Spiritual Energy struck the spatial screen, there was not the slightest bit of movement on it, before it was completely annihilated.

Seeing this Mu Chen's expression immediately changed, before roaring out with a fierce cry, "Who?!"

The faces of Luo Li and Li Xuantong had also sank down, while vigilance appeared within their eyes. A person that was able to distort space at will was absolutely not someone that they could deal with.

"Haha. A pretty good seedling has sprouted out from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy this time." An indifferent laughing voice suddenly resounded across this stretch of the world. Although it wasn't resonant, it caused the entire city to turn deathly silent.

The expression of the green-robed male in the large hall had also changed, before shooting into the air. Looking gravely at the distorted space, fluctuations started radiating out from there, before a figure slowly condensed out from it akin to a liquid.

The figure was dressed in a black robe, with an approximate middle-aged appearance. His hair was partially white, while his eyes were akin to a pair of black holes, unable to see their depths. At this moment, his hands were crossed behind his back, while a faint smile hung on his face as he looked towards Mu Chen floating in the sky.

"Black Dragon Sovereign?!"

Upon seeing the figure, Li Xuantong's face violently contorted as he cried out in overwhelming shock.

Shock ran through Mu Chen's mind and heart. Black Dragon Sovereign? Exactly what does this Demonic Dragon Palace want to do? Even a Sovereign level existence has appeared!

The entire Western Desolated City was completely stirred up at this instant as they looked with shocked eyes at the black-robed figure. Although there wasn't any Spiritual Energy fluctuations coming from his body, one could faintly feel a pressure radiating from him, causing all the people in the city to not dare to make a single gasp.

That's a Sovereign, a terrifying existence that could erase this city from the face of the earth with a flip of his hand!

That was a super expert that could be considered at the peak of this entire Northern Heavens Continent!

"Indeed, I sense a faint flavor of an old friend from your body..."

The Black Dragon Sovereign smiled. From his appearance till now, he had yet to take a look at the heavily injured Mo Longzi, and only continued to stare at Mu Chen. Although his expression appeared rather warm and gentle, it caused people to feel a chill coming from their bones.

Mu Chen's face turned dark and sunken. Faced against an existence at the Sovereign Stage, he was simply unable to put up a shred of resistance.

"Haha. Looks like the Great Meru Demonic Pillar has landed in your hands from the White Dragon Sovereign, huh?" The Black Dragon Sovereign spoke out with a sigh. Extending his palm, he said in a warm and gentle voice, "That's the item of our Demonic Dragon Palace. If you hand it to me, I can let you all return safely."

Mu Chen's expression immediately changed. He hadn't used the true Great Meru Demonic Pillar. However, he never imagined that it would be discovered by the Black Dragon Sovereign.

"In your dreams!"

Mu Chen gnashed his teeth. Although the other party was a Sovereign Stage expert, it was not an easy matter to make him obediently hand over the Great Meru Demonic Pillar!

"Although taking action against a younger generation would be slightly overboard, I think people will understand that it's for the sake of retrieving the treasure of our Demonic Dragon Palace," said the Black Dragon Sovereign with a warm and gentle smile. In the next instant, with a clench of his hand, Mu Chen discovered that the space surrounding him had frozen up. So much so that he couldn't even move a single inch of his body.

Mu Chen clenched his fists tightly. Is this the strength of a Sovereign? Such disparity! Regardless of the number of methods or trump cards he possessed, he was still unable to truly meet such a confrontation!

As the Black Demon Sovereign gave a tap towards the space before him, Mu Chen instantly felt the Great Meru Demonic Pillar within his body

faintly tremble. It even started to show signs of wanting to leave his body. However, it was at this moment that the Mandala Flower started to radiate its mysterious purple light, fortunately locking it in place.

"Oh?"

A shocked expression flashed across the face of the Black Dragon Sovereign, before shooting a deep look at Mu Chen and saying, "So, you have some treasures within you, huh? That's why you're able to endure the fiendish energies from the Great Meru Demonic Pillar...However, that's the treasure of our Demonic Dragon Palace, and I'll definitely take it back today."

As his voice rang out, black patterns seemed to extend out from his palm. Achieving something akin to a resonance to the Great Meru Demonic Pillar within Mu Chen's body, the trembling of the latter grew increasingly intense.

Mu Chen's face grew increasingly pale, since he could feel that he was quickly reaching the point of being unable to suppress the Great Meru Demonic Pillar within his body.

"It should come out now!"

The Black Dragon Sovereign gave a faint smile as he said that. At that instant, the Great Meru Demonic Pillar within Mu Chen's body violently shook. However, just as the Great Meru Demonic Pillar was about to break free from its seal, the space in front of Mu Chen started to violently warp and distort. An imposing figure surfaced from thin air, a broad hand landed on Mu Chen's shoulder. A boundless and expansive power radiated out from it, completely suppressing the shock and turmoil within Mu Chen's body.

With a wave of his sleeve, the frozen space around Mu Chen shattered. Turning his eyes that were as deep and abstruse as a starry sky, which were previously covered in indifference, he looked straight at the Black Demon Sovereign as the warm and gentle expression was slowly dissipating away.

"Black Dragon Sovereign, you're breaking the rules."

A monotone voice resounded across the sky as a terrifying pressure pervaded out. At this moment, the Spiritual Aura of the heavens and earth seemed to have stopped in their tracks.

The hearts of countless people started shivering and trembling. That kind of frightening strength yet again?

Staring at the majestic and imposing figure in the sky, the gaze coming from the Black Dragon Sovereign started to gradually turn cold and icy.

"Haha. I never imagined that Dean Tai Cang would actually show up personally...you truly caught me by surprise."

Chapter 380: Three Great Sovereigns

"Dean Tai Cang?!"

"That's the Dean of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, Tai Cang?"

"I never imagined that even this person would appear..."

When the words of indifference rang out from the Black Dragon Sovereign and resounded across this stretch of the world, a shock went through the hearts of countless experts within the Western Desolated City.

The Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was like a leviathan within the Northern Heavens Continent. Being its Dean, Tai Cang was a peak-level expert standing at the extreme top of this continent. No one ever imagined that there would actually be two Sovereign Stage existences appearing within the Western Desolated City. This was a rather inconceivable matter.

After all, Sovereign Stage experts possessed the qualifications to be an overlord of a region, and were usually extremely rare to be spotted. Ordinary people would be difficult to catch a glimpse of them, let alone the leaders of the gigantic powers like the Black Dragon Sovereign and Dean Tai Cang...

The turmoil happening within Mu Chen's body gradually returned to normalcy due to the large and board hand on his shoulder. Exhaling deeply, he raised his head to look at the imposing figure in front of him, while happiness uncontrollably erupted from his mind. Since Dean Tai Cang had revealed himself, it looked like he wouldn't need to worry about today's matters anymore.

"Thank's a lot Dean Tai Cang." Mu Chen spoke out in gratitude. If not for Dean Tai Cang taking action, the Great Meru Demonic Pillar within his body would be snatched away by the Black Dragon Sovereign. As of now, he had a headache dealing with the cruel and untamed nature of it. However, he knew that when the day came that he was truly able to tame

this Great Meru Demonic Pillar, it would definitely provide an extremely powerful strength to him. Therefore, he wasn't willing to hand it over.

Dean Tai Cang wave his hand in reply. Turning his head over, he cast his deep and wise gaze towards Mu Chen and said with a smile, "I truly never expected that you, little fellow, would concealed it so deeply."

Mu Chen gave an awkward laugh in reply. Looks like Dean Tai Cang knew about the matter of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar within my body.

"Let it be. Since you're able to obtain it, you have a predestined affinity with it. However, that thing's too ominous. If you continue leaving it within you, I'm not exactly sure if it will be a greatness or a disaster."

Dean Tai Cang didn't say much about this, before shooting a look at Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong and the rest in the distance and said, "However, for this matter, I really have to thank you. If not, the face of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy would not be too good right now."

"You're making it sound too serious, Dean. I'm also a student of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Helping the academy is also something I should do." Mu Chen replied with a smile.

With a faint smile, Dean Tai Cang nodded his head, before turning his gaze towards the cold and dark-looking Black Dragon Sovereign below. Stars seemed to appear within his deep and abstruse eyes as he spoke out, "Black Dragon Sovereign, your actions here seem somewhat overboard."

Staring at Dean Tai Cang, the Spiritual Qi flowing within the world seemed to have frozen solid under the interlocking gazes between the two, while a pressure that was hard to discribe started to permeate throughout the world.

Under this pressure, countless experts felt their bodies becoming seemingly heavy, while the Spiritual Energy within their bodies showed signs of freezing up. Instantly, shock and terror filled their hearts. Sovereign Stage experts were actually that frightening? They were able to create a pressure that was more terrifying that what was generated by Mu Chen's fight before even taking action!

With a wave of his sleeve, the Black Dragon Sovereign gave a faint smile, finally breaking the frightening pressure and heaviness permeating in the air, before replying, "You're making this sound too serious, Dean Tai Cang. For that item, our Demonic Dragon Palace will use all methods and ways to get it back. Therefore, I hope that Dean Tai Cang will be able to let that little friend follow me back to the Demonic Dragon Palace. In that way, our Demonic Dragon Palace will remember this favor from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy."

Hearing those words, countless people quietly grinned. The Demonic Dragon Palace seemingly had an irreconcilable hatred with the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. How was this favor of any use?

Within the sky, Dean Tai Cang gave a smile, before shaking his head and replying, "It's Mu Chen's predestined affinity to obtain it. I've no right to let him hand it over."

He had also heard of the prestige of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar before. If not for the White Dragon Sovereign betraying the Demonic Dragon Palace and bringing it away from them, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy might have had to fight with the Demonic Dragon Palace for a much longer time before they achieved victory. Therefore, he was extremely clear of the formidability of that ancient, ominous weapon. As of now, since it had landed in Mu Chen's hands, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy would obviously not let it fall in the hands of the Demonic Dragon Palace.

Vortexes seemed to surface within the black hole-like eyes of the Black Dragon Sovereign, before speaking out with a deeper voice, "Does that mean that the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy really plans to start a war with our Demonic Dragon Palace?"

The entire city turned deathly silent, while shock surfaced within the heart of the green-robed male floating in the distant sky. If the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy were to start a battle with the Demonic Dragon Palace, it would definitely become an astonishing war that would shake the entire Northern Heavens Continent.

"Black Dragon Sovereign, are you threatening our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?" However, facing the Black Sovereign's words, which seemed to be filled with the flames of war, a sharp and incisive glare erupted from Dean Tai Cang's eyes as he gave a slow reply.

"Dean Tai Cang, do you really think that we're truly afraid of your Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy after defeating us that year?!"

Not backing down any one bit, the Black Dragon Sovereign took a step forward, immediately appearing in the sky. In the next instant, a gigantic thousand foot wide Spiritual Energy vortex condensed behind his back. The Spiritual Energy of the world crazily surged and erupted, before forming a black figure thousands of feet tall that seemingly towered across the world.

Standing tall within the world, a giant dragon seemed to sit within each of the eyes of the black figure. In a breath of time, storms started howling out, while clouded layers filled the sky as an indescribable power of frightening proportions radiated from it, causing the world to mourn and shudder.

Hiss!

Looking at the black figure thousands of feet long, Mu Chen could not help sucking in a breath of cold air, while shock and terror filled his heart. Before the black figure, he was akin to an ant facing a human. Without the slightest bit of doubt, if the black figure was to send a hand patting out, he would be hard pressed to escape with his life intact.

This was the power of a Sovereign Stage expert? No wonder they could be considered as the standard of a regional overlord. Compared to the Heavenly Completion Stage, they were as seemingly different as the mud on the ground to the clouds in the sky!

"Sovereign Celestial Body? Black Dragon Sovereign, are you really going to fight with me today?" Dean Tai Cang's deep and abstruse eyes gazed towards the thousand plus foot long black figure towering over the world. An indifference was still present within his gaze, without any fluctuations as an indifferent sounding voice resounded out.

Standing before his Sovereign Celestial Body, chilling intent erupted from within the eyes of the Black Dragon Sovereign. However, he didn't immediately take action, as he was extremely clear of how tyrannical Dean Tai Cang was. Even he wasn't able to guarantee a victory against the latter.

Furthermore, once he took action, it might lead to a great war between the two sides. As of now, their Demonic Dragon Palace still wasn't completely prepared to tear off all the faces against the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

However, retreating without obtain a single thing and letting the Great Meru Demonic Pillar fall in the hands of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was something that he was extremely unwilling to do.

Therefore, the Black Dragon Sovereign remained quiet for a moment, with his Sovereign Celestial body yet to dissipate away. Its gigantic shadow shrouded the city, causing countless people to feel a chill running through their bodies. All of them knew their city was completely unable to endure a fight between two people of their level.

"Haha, these two sirs, our Western Extreme Palace is small, and can't endure the turmoil of you two."

Just as the Black Dragon Sovereign was hesitating on whether to take action, a laughing voice resounded across the world. In the next instant, everyone noticed spatial distortions forming across the horizon. Turning into a pathway, a figure stepped out from within.

The figure that appeared was a middle-aged man in green robes. The attitude of this male was extraordinary, capable of causing an overbearing aura to appear with every single move he took. With a glance, anyone could tell that he was an absolutely extraordinary being.

As this person appeared, astonishment and shock was present in the clamoring that immediately broke out within the Western Desolated City.

"That's the Palace Master of the Western Extreme Palace, the Western Extreme Sovereign?!"

Countless people felt shocked as they thought, Today's truly lively!

Ordinarily, towering over others in lofty positions, commanding and directing over the Northern Heavens Continent, there was, unexpected, three of those Sovereign Stage experts that have appeared before them.

Upon seeing this person, the green-robed male in the distance felt extremely elated. Rushing over, he greeted in a respectful voice, "Father."

This green-robed male was impressively the Young Palace Master of the Western Extreme Palace, Xi Qinghai. At the same time, he was one of the outstanding people within the younger generation of the Northern Heavens Continent.

Waving his hand towards Xi Qinghai, the Western Extreme Sovereign looked towards the Black Dragon Sovereign and Dean Tai Cang, who were in a confrontation with each other. He had immediately sensed it when the latter two had shown themselves, causing him to immediately rush over. This was, after all, the domain of their Western Extreme Palace. If he was to allow the two of them to duke it out here, it would result in losses for their Western Extreme Palace, something that he was not willing to see.

He was not willing to offend either of the two. Regardless of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy or the Demonic Dragon Palace, both were genuine leviathans of the Northern Heavens Continent. Offending either of them would result in an unhappy matter.

"Haha, so it's the Western Extreme Sovereign." Looking at the Western Extreme Sovereign that had appeared, Dean Tai Cang gave a laugh, before saying, "Thanks for the hospitality shown towards us for coming here without any invitation."

With a smile, the Western Extreme Sovereign cupped his hands in reply, appearing rather courteous. Although they were both Sovereigns, he knew that he, being a 3rd Grade Sovereign, was much weaker that Dean Tai Cang.

"These two sirs, please look on the face of our Western Extreme Palace and not fight at this place," said the Western Extreme Sovereign whist cupping his hands. If it was anyone else that dared to fight here, they

might be immediately sent flying with a pat of his hand. However, the two people in front of him, were figures at the peak of the Northern Heavens Continent.

A faint glow flashed within the eyes of the Black Dragon Sovereign. In the end, he didn't say anything with regards to this. With a wave of his sleeve, the thousand plus foot glowing figure behind him started to slowly dissipate, causing the terrifying pressure that radiated from it to follow suit.

He knew that with Dean Tai Cang protecting Mu Chen, he was absolutely unable to retreive the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. The only way for that to happen would be for him to summon all the other Sovereigns from their Demonic Dragon Palace. However, if that were to happen, it would mean that they had completely gone to war against the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. On the aspect of strength, they were truly not afraid of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. However, they had extreme dread for the old smelly bird bastard within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Before their plans were completely perfect, they could only patiently wait and bide their time.

"Tai Cang, your Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy should be proud of ourselves! Very soon, when our Demonic Dragon Palace has completed our preparations, we'll definitely flatten and decimate your Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy!" Dark and chilling intent flashed within the eyes of the Black Dragon Sovereign, with a smirk ringing out within his heart. In the next moment, with a wave of his sleeve, a ray of light enveloped the heavily injured Mo Longzi below.

"Tai Cang, the fight of the younger generations below can't be considered your victory. If your students are truly capable, you should send them to participate in the 'Divine Spiritual Mountain' this time and let them test it out. That's the greatest occasion for the younger generation of our Northern Heavens Continent. Your Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was absent for many many years already. This doesn't suit the fame and reputation of your Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, right? Or is that you're afraid to lose face over there?" said the Black Dragon

Sovereign with a faint laugh, while amusement and mockery brimmed within his voice.

Not a single fluctuation was present within Dean Tai Cang's expression as he replied in an indifferent tone. "There's no need for you to get worried over this. If our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy wishes to, we will naturally participate in it."

"Haha, I'll have to look forward to the grand arrival of your Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, then. I hope that you'll not disappoint us. That's the greatest occasion for the younger generations of our Northern Heavens Continent. Without the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, it would be much less spectacular and wonderful, you know?"

The Black Dragon Sovereign gave a hearty laugh, while delight blossomed within his heart. He knew about the heart pains of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. This was caused when their strongest students on their Heavenly Rankings were killed by the peak geniuses of their Demonic Dragon Palace during the Divine Spiritual Mountain that year, resulting in them no longer participating in such an occasion again. If they dared to participate in this occasion again, it would be the best chance for their Demonic Dragon Palace to demonstrate their prestige.

As his laughter resounded out, he grabbed the heavily-injured Mo Longzi in his hand. In the next instant, spatial ripples started to fluctuated around his body as his figure slowly assimilated into it, before completely disappearing from this stretch of the world.

Chapter 381: The Three Sovereign Disaster

Following the departure of the Black Dragon Sovereign from the sky of the Western Desolated City, the originally tense atmosphere completely vanished into thin air. The sunlight that fell from the sky seemed to have regained some of its warmth.

Looking at the space where the Black Dragon Sovereign had disappeared, the forehead of Dean Tai Cang's started to slightly wrinkle up, while chilling intent flashed within his abstruse eyes. Over these last few years, there were countless students training in the Northern Heavens Continent that had been buried under the hands of the Demonic Dragon Palace. This caused the grudges and grievances of the two sides to turn into a level of hatred that was seemingly irreconcilable.

However, although the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy couldn't bear to completely wipe the Demonic Dragon Palace off the face of the world, this wasn't an easy task to accomplish. The hidden cards of the Demonic Dragon Palace within the Northern Heavens Continent was, in some words, even more ancient than their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. They were once the Overlords of this continent, all till the appearance of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

In their previous war, although the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had achieved victory, they weren't truly able to destroy the Demonic Dragon Palace into oblivion. The core of their strength still remained, causing the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy to maintain constant vigilance, as well as dread, against them. Although they wished to deal with this looming danger once and for all, they would have to be prepared to pay a great price for that. In fact, it might even result in Sovereigns falling from the sky.

This kind of price was something that even the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was somewhat unwilling to shoulder. This was due to the fact that the opponents they had to contend against weren't just merely restricted to the Demonic Dragon Palace in the Northern Heavens Continent. There were still various strong and powerful Spiritual

Academies from other continents. The title of being one of the five Great Academies had given fame and reputation to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, while similarly casting them into the limelight. They didn't know how many spiritual academies possessing similarly powerful strength as them were staring at them from the darkness. Once the might of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy weakened, they would take action, snatching away the title of one of the five Great Academies...

This battle would similarly be extremely cruel and bitter.

"What's the Divine Spiritual Mountain, Dean?" asked Mu Chen with slight curiosity.

Shooting a look at Mu Chen, Dean Tai Cang replied, "That's a sacred ground within the Northern Heavens Continent. It's said to be inherited from the ancient antiquity. It will open once every three years. If one was able to successfully enter the Divine Spiritual Mountain, one would obtain enormous blessings, which is know as the 'Divine Spiritual Baptism'."

"Divine Spiritual Baptism? Is it similar to the Spiritual Light Empowerment of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?" Feeling startled, Mu Chen asked out doubtfully.

Unable to hold it in, Dean Tai Cang gave a laugh, before answering, "If the Spiritual Light Empowerment is able to be compared to the Divine Spiritual Baptism, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy would have far exceeded the title of the Five Great Academies..."

"The Divine Spiritual Baptism doesn't have an obvious effect of raising one's strength. However, it's still a place that would cause countless youths of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy to turn crazy because of what it is. That's because, the Divine Spiritual Baptism is able to help construct a foundation..."

"Construct a foundation?" Mu Chen repeated while frowning. That didn't seem like a formidable ability. There were many heavenly treasures that were also able to achieve such an effect.

"It's not just any ordinary foundation. It's the foundation of a Sovereign stage..." With a smile, Dean Tai Cang replied to Mu Chen while shaking

his head. Looking at the latter, he continued with his explanation. "Looks like you have yet to know the process to promote to Sovereign Stage, and exactly how much frightening tribulations are needed to be experienced."

Mu Chen gave an awkward laugh in response. As of now, he hadn't even broken through to Heavenly Completion Stage. Thinking about promoting to Sovereign Stage was too far fetched from him now. Although, it was the realm that he ultimately yearned for in his dreams.

"Only when your strength reaches the peak of Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase will you understand. It isn't just another step that you have to take to properly promote into the Sovereign Stage..."

At this moment, Dean Tai Cang's gaze turned solemn as he continued, "This is a true hole that everyone will face. Countless talents that shocked the world have stopped at this step, with some even falling from the sky."

"Why's that so?" Mu Chen asked.

"That's because what comes after the Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase... is the 'Three Sovereign Disasters' that will make the faces of countless geniuses change upon hearing them. Only when one successfully passes through these three disasters would one be able to shape their Sovereign bodies, and truly promote and step into the Sovereign Stage!"

"The Three Sovereign Disasters..." Mu Chen muttered. Although it sounded somewhat foreign to him, for some unknown reason, a chilling intent radiated out from the depths of his bones.

"There are countless geniuses within this world, before these 'three disasters' there are quite a few of them who would have rapid progress in their cultivation stages, and display their astonishing talents. However, they had turned into ashes by these three disasters in the end, dissipating from the world."

With a faint smile, Dean Tai Cang said, "Therefore, you should know by now why Sovereign Stage experts are able to possess such a status, am I right?"

Mu Chen swallowed his saliva, while his face turned slightly pale as he nodded his head. This was the first time that he had heard about the extreme difficulty and dangers one would actually face when promoting to Sovereign Stage.

"Does this have a relation with the so-called 'Sovereign foundation'?" asked Mu Chen as he thought about what Dean Tai Cang had said.

"You're very smart," replied Dean Tai Cang with a faint smile as he nodded his head. "The three disasters are too frightening, If one isn't careful, one would be turned into ashes. Even one's Divine Soul would be hard pressed to escape. As for that Spiritual Baptism, it can help build a foundation for one's Divine Soul, strengthening one's resistance against the three disasters. At the same time, if the most dire situations were to occur, it can protect one's Divine Soul during the three disasters, allowing one to have another chance of making a comeback."

Faintly opening his mouth, Mu Chen exclaimed in astonishment, "That awesome?"

Although he had yet to make contact with the so-called "Three Sovereign Disasters", he could feel that the absolute despair it would bring to people of they were to fail in them. However, this "Divine Spiritual Baptism" was able to allow people to preserve their lives during these "Three Sovereign Disasters". This was absolutely too important to have. There might be countless experts with the qualifications to rush into the "Three Sovereign Disasters" that would pay any price just to obtain such protection.

At this moment, he finally understood why the so-called "Divine Spiritual Mountain" would become the greatest occasion within the Northern Heavens Continent. Compared to that, the Spiritual Light Empowerment of their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was truly not worth a second look.

At the same time, it had made his heart feel slightly itchy. This Divine Spiritual Mountain was too enticing. If he and Luo Li were able to get baptised by it, they would possess slightly more insurance for when they planned to rush into the Sovereign Stage in the future.

"Are we able to participate in it, Dean?" asked Mu Chen in a soft voice.

Hearing Mu Chen's words, Dean Tai Cang gave a soft sigh, before replying, "The people participating in the Divine Spiritual Mountain are mostly the core geniuses of peak influences in the Northern Heavens Continent that have been painstakingly nurtured with their utmost resources. Our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy is unable to gain any advantage on this aspect. That year, we had participated once, with the participating student being the first rank on our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's Heavenly Rankings. However, in the end, he didn't return. Therefore, after that, we have basically given up on this occasion."

Mu Chen was slightly startled, before nodding his head. This didn't mean that the students from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had talents that were weaker than those people. It was just the way the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy works. All of those core geniuses were seemingly raised and nurtured by the various sects and families. Compared to them, the students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy came from all sort of places and directions. Although they had trained and cultivated for a number of years, this time was too short when compared to those outstanding youths at the peak within the Northern Heavens Continent. It's to the point of being able to lead to a great threat to the students.

This created a situation where students with strength would leave the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy upon becoming fully-fledged towards places at higher levels, seeking stronger Dao paths. As for the new students that had just entered, they would temporarily be unable to compare with those peak geniuses that had stayed in the Northern Heavens Continent for a long time. Therefore, this had created the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, which seemed to be a leviathan, but rarely produced any characters that were able to truly stand at the highest peak within the younger generations of the Northern Heavens Continent.

That's because, the people that the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy receives were students, and not sect disciples or clan disciples that had to contribute their all for their clans or sects...

"As of now, the strongest student within our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy rankings is Shen Cangsheng. His talent is extremely good. If he's given a couple more years, wanting to exceed the peak talents within the younger generation in the Northern Heavens Continent isn't a difficult matter. However, that won't be happening now," replied Dean Tai Cang.

Mu Chen faintly nodded his head. This time they had been forced to such a stage just to deal with Mo Longzi. What more could they achieve against the true elites within the peak of the younger generations? An example would be Mo Xingtian, who was an even stronger character than Mo Longzi.

However, he still had a slight feeling of not wanting to give up on that alluring "Divine Spiritual Baptism". It was extremely important for him and Luo Li. After hesitating a moment, he gathered his courage and asked Dean Tai Cang, "Dean, would it be possible for me to give it a try?"

Dean Tai Cang's eyes immediately narrowed as his stared at Mu Chen. After a while, shaking his head, he replied, "Your training and cultivating time is too short. Although I admit your capabilities, it's still too early for you to participate at the Divine Spiritual Mountain."

Tilting his head, Mu Chen appeared wanting to say something. However, with a wave of his hand, Dean Tai Cang continued speaking, "Gather them all and prepare to return to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Every student back at the academy is still waiting for news about you guys."

After completing his statement, a laugh rang out of him as he looked towards Mu Chen and said, "This time, I'm afraid that you've become a hero for our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Even Mo Longzi was beaten down by you."

Mu Chen gave an embarrassed smile, before turning around and shooting of towards Shen Cangsheng and the rest.

Looking at the back figure of Mu Chen, a expression of deep pondering flashed within Dean Tai Cang's eyes, appearing as if he was thinking of something.

Under the Spiritual Energy nourishment from everyone, Lin Zheng and the other two had successfully woken up gradually from their stupors. Embarrassed and guilty expressions were present on their faces. Although they were in a stupor earlier, that didn't mean that they were totally unclear of what had happened.

"Haha, Senior Brother Lin Zheng. That Mo Longzi had long reached Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase. We truly weren't his match. Even I had lost." Shen Cangsheng spoke out while sending a candid smile. "However, we're fortunate to have that fellow, Mu Chen, fight and beat that fellow, Mo Longzi, up for us. Even I don't know if he will be able to live after that beating."

"Mu Chen defeated Mo Longzi?"

Lin Zheng and the other two were slightly dumbfounded as they looked towards Mu Chen with inconceivable expressions within their eyes. Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase against Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase. They were simply unable to imagine how this disparity was bridged by the latter.

Shrugging his shoulders, Mu Chen spoke out. "I was just lucky this time... Our mission's complete. Let's go back to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy first, alright?"

Nodding their heads, everyone started to support their injured compatriots, before shooting into the sky.

Mu Chen fell to the back and headed off together with Luo Li. Looking at the sparkling jade-like face of the young girl that was exquisite to the point of perfection, he quietly extended his hand, and grasped the slender and chilling jade-like hands of the young girl.

Luo Li's lovable face turned slightly red as she shot a coquettish glare at Mu Chen. The latter, however, sent a grin back over while saying, "Ain't I awesome?"

Luo Li rolled her eyes unhappily towards him, her coquettish looks were extremely alluring, while an amusing laugh rang out within her heart. This fellow always maintained a humble and modest appearance in front of

others, and yet he always acted so proud of himself in front of her, making her really want to give him a bite.

However, when Luo Li noticed the remnants of the wounds still present on his body, her clear and limpid eyes turned much more gentle. Her small hand gently grasped Mu Chen's hand, and her angled loveable and snow-white chin gave a gentle nod. A soft and gentle "Mhm" sound rang out, satisfying the little bit of vanity present in Mu Chen's heart.

Floating in the sky, Dean Tai Cang looked towards everyone from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy before nodding his head. Turning around to cup his fist and smile towards the Western Extreme Sovereign, he spoke out, "Sorry for the trouble this time, Old Brother Western Extreme."

"It's alright, it's alright," replied the Western Extreme Sovereign with a smile and a wave.

Without continuing to waste time talking, spatial fluctuations instantly enveloped everyone with a wave of his sleeve. As space started to distort, everyone disappeared into thin air.

Looking at the place where the people from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had disappeared into, the eyes of the Western Extreme Sovereign faintly narrowed before speaking out with a faint smile, "Never imagined that the Demonic Dragon Palace's Mo Longzi would actually get beaten up. Looks like they will have one less participant in the Divine Spiritual Mountain this time."

"In the first place, Mo Longzi's not sufficient to be feared." Beside him, Xi Qinghai spoke out with a smile. From his tone and words, he didn't place Mo Longzi much within his eyes.

"I don't know of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy will participate this time...after this matter, that Shen Cangsheng might breakthrough into the Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase," said the Western Extreme Sovereign.

Shaking his head, Xi Qinghai spoke out in a soft voice, "Even if Shen Cangsheng breaks through, the threat he poses isn't great. Although he's

quite talented, his cultivating time is much shorter than us..."

Speaking until here, there was a small pause in his words as he muttered to himself.

"That Freshman by the name of Mu Chen...truly is somewhat unfathomable."

Chapter 382: Demonic Dragon Brand

When Mu Chen and the group returned back to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, they had undoubtedly attracted countless stares from everywhere. This was especially true when news of the astonishing fight between Mu Chen and Mo Longzi was disseminated out, causing the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy to go into shock.

Any student that heard about this matter would have their jaws drop wide open in shock, turning into a seemingly petrified state. Obviously, this news was somewhat of a fantasy story to them.

That number two on the Bounty Board, the super fierce character that even Senior Brother Lin Zheng and the Overlord of the Heavenly Rankings, Shen Cangsheng, had lost to had, unexpectedly, suffered a defeat in Mu Chen's hands?

The atmosphere within the entire academy was in a fiery state as countless people endlessly sought out the news about the astonishing battles that happened within the Western Desolated City. Within this fiery state, Mu Chen's fame and prestige had seemingly rose up in a vertical line, with signs of even surpassing Li Xuantong.

This kind of growth rate caused quite a few students to sigh in admiration. After all, Mu Chen had just entered the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy for only a year. However, an achievement of such a degree caused countless students to feel ashamed and respect for him.

At this stage, there wouldn't be one that would doubt Mu Chen's strength anymore. Everyone knew that it wouldn't take long for Shen Cangsheng's title as the Overlord of the Heavenly Rankings to change hands...

Facing such a fiery atmosphere within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, the lead character, Mu Chen, didn't show too much care about it. Upon reaching the academy, he had quietly holed himself up in the Freshman region to recover and rest from the injuries he had suffered in this life-risking clash with Mo Longzi.

He wasn't the slightest bit interested in the title of the so-called 'Overlord of the Heavenly Rankings'. Strength was something that only belonged to oneself, and not something that could be changed by a title. Furthermore, the finally risk-filled victory in the battle at the Western Desolated City didn't make Mu Chen feel any arrogance. On the contrary, he had even felt some pressure due to it.

After all, from the news that he had obtained, although Mo Longzi was the number two on their Bounty Board, he wasn't considered the genuine peak of the younger generation within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Within this vast and expansive continent, there were still some people that represented the true strength at the peak of the younger generation of this continent.

If he wanted to chase after that group of people, he would clearly need to work even harder. Although those fellows had cultivated longer than him, and were also older than him, Mu Chen didn't wish to use these as excuses.

True strength wasn't separated by age.

...

On the third day after Mu Chen had returned to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, he could be considered to have completely recovered from his injuries. Although he had relied on the demonic energies of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, it had caused injuries within his body. It was fortunate that his fleshly body was exceedingly tyrannical, possessing quite a bit of resistance against the corrosion of the fiendish and demonic energies. Therefore, he wasn't left in a condition as miserable as last time.

After recovering from his injuries, he received a transmitted message from Dean Tai Cang.

Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, Conference Hall

Looking at the six figures within the large hall, shock and astonishment clearly filled Mu Chen's heart. Not only did he see Dean Tai Cang here,

the other five Heavenly Seated Elders were actually present within. Such an impressive lineup could be considered as the highest level within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

"Haha. You've done a pretty good job this time, Mu Chen. Firstly, I have to express the gratitude of the Punishment Hall to you. If not for you, our Punishment Hall would suffer a huge loss of face this time." Upon seeing Mu Chen, the Punishment Hall Hall Master, Mo You, took the initiative and spoke out with a smile.

Next to Mo You was Zhu Tian, as well as the other three Heavenly Seated Elders. Other than the youthful appearance of Zhu Tian, the other three Elders appeared white-haired and ancient, with deep and abstruse eyes akin to being shrouded by starry skies. Not a single trace of Spiritual Energy fluctuations were present around their bodies. However, one would feel the frightening sensations of them being about to shatter the heavens and rend the earth with a single move.

"Five Sovereigns...with Dean Tai Cang, that should be six Sovereigns."

Shock shook through Mu Chen's mind. Obviously, this was the most powerful strength of their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. The reason why the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was a leviathan in the Northern Heavens Continent was due to their existences, causing the academy to be unshakable.

Only after an instant did Mu Chen gradually regain his clarity. Giving a respectful bow towards the five Heavenly Seated Elders, he turned towards Dean Tai Cang and said, "Is there any instructions for me, Dean?"

With a faint smile, Dean Tai Cang replied, "The main reason I've summoned you here is due to the matter of that 'Great Meru Demonic Pillar' within your body."

The five Heavenly Seated Elders immediately cast weird gazes towards Mu Chen's body. They were clearly familiar towards the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. During that year when the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was in a great war with the Demonic Dragon Palace, if not for the White Dragon Sovereign suddenly betraying the Demonic Dragon

Palace and taking away the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, their victory would be more hard pressed.

They understood the ominous fame of the "Great Meru Demonic Pillar". It was a strong weapon that would shake even the hearts of Sovereign Stage experts. Although it was ominous and fiendish, once one was able to control it, one would be able to display its terrifying strength.

However, as of now, such an ominous object had unexpectedly landed in the hands of such a young and weak Freshman. This truly caused people to feel surprised.

Mu Chen was also startled as his heart skipped a beat. Could it be that the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy wants me to hand over the Great Meru Demonic Pillar?

"Hoho. Relax. If our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy does such a thing, how are we different from the Demonic Dragon Palace?" Seemingly able to see the worry within Mu Chen's heart, Dean Tai Cang spoke out to quell the unease Mu Chen was feeling.

Having his inner thoughts exposed, Mu Chen felt awkward. However, he wasn't to blame for having such thoughts. Who allowed the "Great Meru Demonic Pillar" to be so tyrannical to the point where it would tug at the hearts of even Sovereign Stage experts?

"As of now, although the Great Meru Demonic Pillar has landed in your hands, it still isn't considered totally yours..." Mo You spoke out with a smile as he continued explaining. "Do you think that the treasure of the Demonic Dragon Palace will get snatched away by other people in such an easy fashion?"

Immediately, Mu Chen gawked. Starting to frown, he asked, "Hall master's meaning is that...the Demonic Dragon Palace is able to retrieve it?"

Speaking until here, his expression turned slightly grave as he thought about the actions that the Black Dragon Sovereign had taken. At that time, if not for Dean Tai Cang, the Great Meru Demonic Pillar might have truly broken out of his body...

"The Great Meru Demonic Pillar was in the hands of the Demonic Dragon Palace for many years. According to what I know, there should be a Demonic Dragon Brand from the Demonic Dragon Palace. With your strength, it's clear that you're unable to discover it," explained Dean Tai Cang.

"Demonic Dragon Brand?" Mu Chen was stunned as he blankly stared back at Dean Tai Cang. Indeed, he didn't discover the so-called 'Demonic Dragon Brand' within the Great Meru Demonic Pillar.

"This is the special method of the Demonic Dragon Palace, and it was personally arranged by a Sovereign Stage existence. It hides within the depths of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar and won't show any activity on any ordinary occasion. However, once the Demonic Dragon Palace activates it, you'll immediately lose control of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. Furthermore, if they have slightly more killing intent then, your little life will be under their control. With just a single thought from them, they'll be able to cause the Great Meru Demonic Pillar to erupt from your body." The person taking this time was the youthful-looking Elder Zhu Tian. Rubbing his chin, he grinned as he stared at Mu Chen.

Hearing those words cold sweat erupted from Mu Chen's entire body. If this was true, that would mean that the Great Meru Demonic Pillar had became an explosive? As long as the Demonic Dragon Palace activated the Demonic Dragon Brand, he would definitely be decimated by the energy that was unleashed.

"In the past, you didn't expose the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. Therefore, there's no danger of that. However, as of now, as long as you're in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, they won't recklessly activate it. However, once you leave the academy... perhaps that explosive hidden within your body might explode."

Mu Chen wiped the cold sweat off his forehead as he felt a chill seemingly spread throughout his aurasea. He was afraid that the Great Meru Demonic Pillar would completely explode. With his current strength, he was completely unable to endure it.

"I don't think that you've called me over just to give me a scare, right, Dean?" Although his heart had skipped a beat, Mu Chen quickly calmed down. Raising his head to look to Dean Tai Cang, he spoke out with a smile.

"Truly a smart fellow."

Unable to resist it, Dean Tai Cang gave a laugh before answering, "You've completed your mission this time without a hitch, so a reward should be given to you. After discussing, we've decided to help you remove the Demonic Dragon Brand within the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. This way, it will completely break its connection with the Demonic Dragon Palace. In the future, when you're able to completely tame and control it, it'll truly be yours."

Upon hearing those words, Mu Chen was immediately elated. The Demonic Dragon Brand was planted by a Sovereign of the Demonic Dragon Palace, and Mu Chen clearly didn't possess the ability to remove it. The only one that could help him in this matter would only be Dean Tai Cang and the Elders.

"Thank you very much, Dean!" Mu Chen showed his heartfelt gratitude.

Replying with a wave, Dean Tai Cang nodded towards the other five Heavenly Seated Elders, before the five scattered in different directions.

"Summon the Great Meru Demonic Pillar."

Upon hearing that, Mu Chen hesitated awhile. At this moment, the Great Meru Demonic Pillar was suppressed by the mysterious black paper. However, once it was released, it might creat a great commotion... However, after seeming the faint smile on Dean Tai Cang's face, Mu Chen's felt much more at ease. With six Sovereign Stage existences guarding him over him, he didn't believe that the Great Meru Demonic Pillar could create an upheaval!

Thinking till here, Mu Chen no longer hesitated. Faintly narrowing his eyes, with a thought, the mysterious Mandala flower in his aurasea slowly blossomed. As this happened, the purple-coloured chains that were wrapped around the Great Meru Demonic Pillar started to slowly retract.

Bang!

Just as the purple-coloured chains retracted, the Great Meru Demonic Pillar started to crazily vibrate. With a bang, it transformed into a scarlet-red streak of light, rushing straight out of Mu Chen's aurasea.

Whoosh!

As the scarlet-red streak of light rushed straight out of Mu Chen's crown, a black demonic pillar followed along the streak of light and rushed out. Demonic energies originating from the ancient antiquity swept out, filling the entire large hall in an instant.

Humm!

The entire large hall vibrated as storms whipped up with the arrival of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. Instantly piercing towards the sky of the large hall, it tried to escape and flee this place.

Hmph!

Looking at the gigantic pillar, Dean Tai Cang gave a cold snort. With a wave of his hand, a dazzling brilliance furiously erupted from the ceiling of the large hall. Countless gigantic rays of brilliance formed into chains that explosively shot out. Piercing through space, they immediately wrapped around the Great Meru Demonic Pillar.

"Suppress it!"

A deep cry rang out from Mo You, Zhu Tian and the three other Heavenly Seated Elders. Five boundless Spiritual Energies flowed out, akin to liquid streams, while howling from their palms. Wrapping around the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, the demonic energies radiating from it were completely suppressed.

Humm! Humm!

The Great Meru Demonic Pillar crazily struggled as it attempted to escape its restraints. As it did so, shattering patterns appeared in the surrounding space.

A slightly grave expression appeared on the faces of Mo You and the

other four Heavenly Seated Elders as slight shock appeared within their hearts. The Great Meru Demonic Pillar was undoubtedly an ominous weapon from the ancient antiquity.

However, although the Great Meru Demonic Pillar was powerful, the lineup it faced was overly luxurious. As time elapsed, the shock created by the Great Meru Demonic Pillar gradually turned quiet.

Whoosh!

Upon seeing this, Dean Tai Cang brought his hands together to form a hand seal. In the next instant, a ray of boundless Spiritual Energy shot out. Akin to a liquid, it enveloped the entire Great Meru Demonic Pillar within it.

This liquid-like Spiritual Energy slowly seeped into the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. As it seeped in, Mu Chen noticed some dark and abstruse black light appearing on the surface of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. From afar, it appeared akin to a pattern of an entrenched demonic dragon!

Obviously, this was the Demonic Dragon Brand that Dean Tai Cang had talked about!

"Dispel it!" Chilling intent erupted from Dean Tai Cang's eyes. Looking towards the Demonic Dragon Brand that appeared akin to a living thing, he gave a shout.

Bang!

Boundless Spiritual Energies howled from the six people, sweeping towards the Demonic Dragon Brand.

As Dean Tai Cang and the five Elders were attempting to dispel the Demonic Dragon Brand, within a giant black hall in a far place, the Black Dragon Sovereign, who was cultivating in a sitting position, furiously opened his eyes, while a chilling glow flashed within them.

"Tai Cang, you really dare to dispel our Demonic Dragon Brand! Okay! Since you want to fight, our Demonic Dragon Palace will have a fight with you first! Let's see if you have the capability to dispel our Demonic Dragon Brand!"

Quickly standing up, a low dragon-like roar resounded as spatial fluctuations radiated to far distances.

As his low roar rang out, a number of furious dragon roars rang out within the deepest depths of the black, giant imperial tomb-like hall. In the next instant, the space in front of the Black Dragon Sovereign distorted as five figures immediately step out of it, appearing within the large hall.

Following their appearance, a terrifying pressure started to radiate out.

These five people had impressively possessed Sovereign Stage strength!

Chapter 383: Battle of the Sovereigns

Boundless Spiritual Energy flooded the large hall. The Spiritual Energy present here was extremely pure, with faint signs of being liquid-like. With the level of Spiritual Energy within each clump being comparable to the maximum amount a Heavenly Completion Stage expert could condense within one's body...

Within the centre of all that boundless Spiritual Energy, the Great Meru Demonic Pillar continued to endlessly emit humming noises. However, the frightening demonic energies were unwaveringly suppressed by the Spiritual Energy, unable to spew out as previously.

The Demonic Dragon pattern squirmed about on the surface of the demonic pillar, as if the Demonic Dragon Brand had seemingly sensed the impending danger. Low and deep roars rang out from it as a dark and sinister black brilliance radiated from it, defending against the corrosion brought by the boundless Spiritual Energies.

Humm. Humm.

However, faced against the collaboration of six Sovereign Stage existences, the Demonic Dragon Brand was by itself and appeared clearly weaker. Even though it had taken root within the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, and was unable to borrow some of its demonic energies, with signs of it starting to dissipate under the corrosion of the boundless Spiritual Energies.

At this moment, Mu Chen was standing at the furthest position possible, while he was unable to move a single inch of his body. That was due to the immense pressure created by six Sovereigns unleashing their Spiritual Energies.

With nothing he could do about it, he could only bitterly laugh in helplessness. With his strength only at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase, he was not even at the level of an ant in front of a Sovereign Stage expert. Just the Spiritual Energy pressure created by them was enough to make him incapable of budging.

However, the only thing that could make Mu Chen feel comfort was that the Demonic Dragon Brand was being dispelled. That was undeniably removing an extreme danger hidden within.

Bang!

However, just as Mu Chen had exhaled a breath of relief, extremely terrifying energies furiously gushed out from the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. The Demonic Dragon Brand, which was gradually being corroded by the boundless Spiritual Energies gushing from Dean Tai Cang and the five Elders, radiated with intense black rays of light at this moment. Dragon roars howled out as storms were whipped up by the Demonic Dragon Brand. Separating itself from the demonic pillar, it had unexpectedly transformed into a rather frightening demonic dragon.

As the demonic dragon coiled up in the air, frightening fluctuations radiated from its jet-black body. Being somewhat unable to endure them, the surrounding space even started showing signs of shattering.

"Tai Cang, are you planning to take the treasure of our Demonic Dragon Palace for your own? It isn't that easy!" In a seated position, the gigantic eyes of the demonic dragon roared with incomparable rage and ferocity towards the people present in the large hall.

"Black Dragon Sovereign?!"

Upon hearing that familiar voice, Mu Chen's heart was instantly overwhelmed with shock and dread.

"Look's like you're unable to endure it after all, huh, Black Dragon Sovereign?" Upon seeing this, Tai Cang gave a faint smile as if he didn't feel the slightest bit of surprise. Obviously, he had long expected the outcome of this situation.

"Hmph! The guts of your Demonic Dragon Palace ain't small! You're really asking for trouble by daring to send a remnant shadow to charge into our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy!" A cold snort rang out from Hall Master Mo You as his expression turned dark.

"Hmph! In this Northern Heavens Continent, our Demonic Dragon

Palace can go wherever we want! Do you think you can stop us?!" Another cold voice rang out from within the demonic dragon. This voice was different from the Black Dragon Sovereign. However, it appeared similarly cold and frightening.

"Haha. If not for you guys activating the Demonic Dragon Brand, we wouldn't have been able to cast our projections over. Today's a good day. Relying on the power of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, we'll completely butcher all of you!" A laughing voice brimming with cruel tyranny rang out from within the demonic dragon.

"So, it's not just a single projection. Can it be that the Six Great Hall Masters of the Demonic Dragon Palace have arrived?" Elder Zhu Tian spoke out with a sneer.

"Six Great Hall Masters?"

Mu Chen was startled as he heard those words. Looking towards the gigantic eyes of demonic dragon, a black brilliance erupted from within as six blurry figures were faintly discernable from within. Those six figures were akin to figures of demon gods, causing people to feel extreme pressure and oppression.

"All of you guys have finally gathered together. However, it'll not change the result one single bit." Chilling intent flashed within the abstruse eyes of Dean Tai Cang. With a wave of his sleeve, the boundless Spiritual Energy gushing out of him transformed into a sea of Spiritual Energy. As the waves surged out, they shattered space, sweeping straight towards the sitting demonic dragon.

At the same time, Hall Master Mo You and the other four Heavenly Seated Elders launched their attacks, causing boundless Spiritual Energies to sweep out.

Roar!

Upon seeing this, the demonic dragon gave a roar. Extending its claws, it grabbed onto the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. Violently fanning it out, it smashed the incoming Spiritual Energy sea apart.

Bang!

At this moment, frightening demonic energies erupted from the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. As the demonic pillar was waved around, the surrounding space was split and shattered apart, completely blocking against the boundless Spiritual Energies heading towards the demonic dragon.

Whoosh! Whoosh!

As a frightening fight erupted within the large hall, the startled Mu chen hastily shot out of the large hall. In the next instant, cracks started to appear and split apart on the surface of the Spiritual Array-reinforced large hall.

Bang!

As the cracks extended to their extremities, unable to endure the frightening shock waves forming within, the large hall exploded apart. As the frightening Spiritual Energy shock waves rushed out, storms were whipped up in the air above the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, attracting the shocked and horrified gazes of countless students.

Bang!

As countless shocked and terrified gazes looked over, the large hall exploded apart. In the next instant, a gigantic dragon with a demonic pillar grasped within its hands rushed towards the sky. Six streams of light rushed towards the horizon from the surroundings as boundless Spiritual Energy seas enveloped over, continuously sweeping towards the demonic dragon. As the Spiritual Energy seas came pressuring over, space started to shatter, piece by piece, showing their extremely terrifying destructive powers.

Such a terrifying exchange appearing out of nowhere caused all the students to stare in dumbfounded shock. Did they ever see a fight of such degree?

Alarm cries quickly resounded across the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, causing numerous higher levels of the Northern

Heavens Spiritual Academy to swiftly shoot over. Looking gravely at the fight taking place in the sky, shock and astonishment appeared within their eyes.

At a secluded peak far away, a big and small figure could be seen observing the battle up in the sky. It was Ling Xi and Sun'er.

"Such frightening Spiritual Energy fluctuations... even the Dean and the other Elders have actually taken action." Sun'er cried out in shock.

"That's...the people of the Demonic Dragon Palace." Ling Xi's crescent moon-shaped eyebrows slightly bunched up. Staring at the demonic dragon, she spoke out in response.

"Aren't you going to take action, Elder Sister Ling Xi? That demonic dragon seems extremely formidable!" Sun'er replied in worry. This was, after all, the inner region of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. If students were to be swept up in the collateral energies radiating out from the fight, this would be too grave and serious for the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Gently shaking her small head, Ling Xi replied in a faint voice, "There's only the projections of those fellows from the Demonic Dragon Palace within that demonic dragon. How can they contend against Dean Tai Cang and the other Elders? Therefore, there's no need for me to take action."

Speaking until here, her gaze turned slightly towards the mountain peak located below of the fighting radius. There was a thin figure faintly discernable over there, which was precisely Mu Chen.

Upon seeing Mu Chen's figure, faint fluctuations appeared for an instant within her eyes.

At this moment, Mu Chen didn't notice the gaze coming from Ling Xi in the far distance as his head pointed towards the sky. Although the commotion coming from the sky was extremely huge, he wasn't overly worried about that. The fight happening there was clearly in the control of Dean Tai Cang and the five Elders. After all, the Six Great Hall Masters of the Demonic Dragon Palace had only sent their projections over. Although

they were relying on the might of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, they were still unable to truly contend with Dean Tai Cang and the five Elders.

If this continued, it would be no surprise to anyone that Dean Tai Cang would obtain victory.

"Is there any point in doing such useless actions, Black Dragon Sovereign?! Today, none of you will be able to bring it out of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy!" Dean Tai Cang spoke out with a cold and detached expression.

"Hmph! Is that right?!"

Black Dragon Sovereign's sneering voice rang out, while sinister and chilling intent seemed to surface within the eyes of the demonic dragon. In the next instant, its body suddenly started to crazily inflate. At this moment, the six blurry figures within the giant eyes of the demonic dragon had unexpected exploded.

"Careful! They want to self-destruct their projections!" Dean Tai Cang's eyes instantly contracted as he cried out.

Bang!

At the instant when his cry rang out, the demonic dragon had already inflated to a size nearing ten thousand feet. Hiding the sky and covering the earth, it completely exploded in the next instant. Seemingly destructive fluctuations swept out, enveloping the academy below.

Upon seeing this, Dean Tai Cang and the five Elders instantly retreated. Sending a palm patting out, boundless Spiritual Energy seas expanded out underneath, enveloping the academy below them.

Bang! Bang!

As the destructive fluctuations smashed against the Spiritual Energy seas, deep and low sounds erupted out. However, they were unable to pierce through them in the end, causing the pale faces of the countless students below to regain some colour.

Whoosh!

After Dean Tai Cang and the five Elders had successfully blocked the destructive fluctuations, a bloody light rushed towards the sky. The Great Meru Demonic Pillar swiftly followed suit as the space before it violently distorted, transforming into a pathway.

"Don't let it escape!" Dean Tai Cang's expression sank. Those Demonic Dragon fellows were really decisive and ruthless. They had actually wanted to let the Great Meru Demonic Pillar escape by itself.

However, relying on the explosive force due to the explosion of the projections, the speed of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar drastically increased. In a flash, it had already rushed into the spatial pathway, and was just about to disappear within.

Bang!

However, just at the instant when it was about to shuttle through the spatial pathway, the entire stretch of the world suddenly turned dim. Overwhelmed with shock, countless people raised their heads, only to see a ten thousand foot long feathery wing unfurling across the horizon. This entire stretch of the world was shrouded by the shadow it created.

Bang!

Under the feathery wing, sharp black claws were thrust out, causing the spatial pathway to completely shatter apart. Piercing deep within the spatial path, it grabbed onto the Great Meru Demonic Pillar within.

As the feathery wing that hid the skies and covered the earth rapidly disappeared, sunlight came enveloping back. As the strange scene suddenly disappeared, countless students looked at each other, slightly confused over what had just happened.

"Just now, that's..."

"It looked like a wing..."

"Such a big wing! Could it...could this be the Divine Beast Protector of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, Lord Northern Sea Dragon?"

"...so formidable! Even space was captured!'

"..."

A Clamoring of emotional voices erupted across the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

On the mountain peak, Mu Chen's face was filled with shock and astonishment. However, before he could regain his clarity from it, a black streak of light shot over the horizon, shooting straight into his body.

It's the Great Meru Demonic Pillar!

With a thought, the Mandala flower within his aurasea immediately bloomed. Countless purple-coloured chains shot out, rapidly wrapping around the demonic pillar, before pulling it back into the centre of the flower. In the next instant, purplish light radiated, before suppressing and sealing it up once again!

Hu.

Seeing that the Great Meru Demonic Pillar was sealed once again, Mu Chen breathed a sigh of relief akin to having a heavy weight lifted off his shoulders. For the sake of dealing with the Demonic Dragon Brand, the peak existences of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had all taken action...

Dean Tai Cang and the five Elders shot down, appearing beside Mu Chen.

"Haha. We're fortunate to have lord Northern Sea take action. If not, we'd have really lost it," said Mo You with a smile.

"Those fellows are really decisive. Exploding their own projections. That will definitely cause damage to their true bodies." Elder Zhu Tian added with a frown.

With a smile also present on his face, Dean Tai Cang looked towards Mu Chen and said, "However, it's good that we didn't lose it. From today onwards, the Demonic Dragon Palace will no longer be able to control the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. As long as you're able to control it, it will be yours."

"Thank you very much, Dean!" Mu Chen was unable to express how much gratitude he had from them. They had helped settle a gargantuan hidden danger for him. He would absolutely have been unable to achieve it by himself. After all, he didn't have the strength to face against the projections of six Sovereign Stage experts.

With a wave of his hand, Dean Tai Cang didn't continue speaking anything as he turned around, planning to leave.

"Dean..."

Upon seeing him leave, Mu Chen hastily called out to him. When Dean Tai Cang had turned around and faced him, Mu Chen hesitated for a moment. Summoning his courage, he spoke out, "I've some interest towards the Divine Spiritual Mountain..."

"Divine Spiritual Mountain?" Hall Master Mo You and the other four Elders were all startled, before starting to slightly frown. This matter was, in fact, a thorn in the heart of their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. After all, they were a leviathan and the Overlords of the Northern Heavens Continent. However, they had always been unable to participate in the biggest occasion of the Northern Heavens Continent, causing quite a few tongues wagging outside for the past few years.

"It's too dangerous." Shooting a look at Mu Chen, Dean Tai Cang shook his head, before turning around and walking away.

Mu Chen gave a bitter laugh, shrugging his shoulders in disappointment. Looks like I've no affinity with this Divine Spiritual Mountain.

Dean Tai Cang's footsteps suddenly paused, before he entered the large hall. Placing his hands behind his back, he pondered deeply for a moment, before a faint voice rang out from him.

"If you really want to go, there's a possibility. Make a breakthrough to Heavenly Completion Stage in a month."

Upon hearing those words, Mu Chen immediately felt elated, before becoming dejected the next moment. Make a breakthrough to Heavenly

Completion Stage in one month...this level of difficulty was too high...

Chapter 384: Idea

Freshman Area

Mu Chen lazily laid on the small building with his hands resting behind his head. Looking blanking at the fluttering clouds in the sky, an expression of helplessness was present on his handsome face.

At this moment, Mu Chen was having a headache. The reason was naturally due to the goal of reaching Heavenly Completion Stage within a month given to him by Dean Tai Cang.

As of now, his strength was at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase. Although it seemed as if he was only one step away from it, he was extremely clear how hard it was to take that step forward. According to his estimates, even if he were to do his utmost and cultivate, while using all of the methods he could use, it would take him three months or even longer time before being able to take this step.

As for one month, it was clearly too short.

Sitting up, Mu Chen grabbed at his hair in frustration. He knew that Dean Tai Cang was doing this for his safety in mind. After all, those people with the qualifications to participate in the Divine Spiritual Mountain were seemingly all peak-level existences of the younger generation within the Northern Heavens Continent. There were some people that were even stronger than Mo Longzi. If he were to participate with his strength at Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase, even with all the various methods he possessed, it would still lead to disaster for him.

I've no other way but to find someone to help me. thought Mu Chen as he shrugged his shoulders in helplessness. Raising his head, he looked towards a quiet and secluded mountain peak within the depths of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. That was the place where Ling Xi lived.

Within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, the number of Elders Mu Chen were on familiar terms with weren't many, with Ling Xi being

one of them. The time they knew about each other wasn't considered too long. However, for some unknown reason, Mu Chen always had an extremely indescribable feeling of trust towards Ling Xi. It was as if Ling Xi would never ever do anything that would harm him, no matter what.

This feeling made Mu Chen even feel at a loss during certain times. However, faintly, he had a certain feeling that this was seemingly related to his mother.

Ling Xi had a painting of his mother with her. This was sufficient proof that she should have some relationship with his mother. However, he was still unable to guess exactly what kind of relationship that was.

Although Mu Chen didn't know if Ling Xi had any way of helping him. In such desperate times, the only thing he could do was to try everything possible.

Thinking till this point, Mu Chen no longer continued to hesitate. Shooting towards the sky, he headed straight towards the quiet and secluded mountain peak in the depths of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. For the past few days, Luo Li had started her dedicated cultivation regimen once again, giving the cold shoulder to Mu Chen, causing him to harbour a hidden bitterness for her.

Mu Chen's figure descended on the quiet and secluded mountain peak. Upon him landing down, the tightly shut the clean doors of the courtyard that had already started to quietly open, no longer being tightly shut as they were before.

With a smile, Mu Chen walked into the courtyard, before seeing a beautiful lady in a snow-white dress sitting on the platform before the bamboo house At this time, Ling Xi's jade-like hand was resting on her cheek, while a slender finger was playing with a lock of black hair. Upon Mu Chen entering, those pair of quick-witted eyes rested on his body.

At this moment, there wasn't any of the cold and detached chilling aura radiating from her lustrous and white face. Her beautiful face that displayed a gentler expression had undoubtedly possessed much more allure and soul-stirring emotions to be born upon seeing her.

"You've not come here for many days since your return to the academy. Suddenly coming here to find me, is there a problem?" Ling Xi said out softly. Her voice was clear and melodious, akin to the voice coming from the deep valley, sounding extremely pleasing to one's ears.

With an awkward smile, Mu Chen walked forward and replied, "I was injured during the mission; therefore, I've spent all this time recovering and recuperating..."

With a gentle nod, Ling Xi didn't continue speaking again.

Not too used to such silence, Mu Chen gave a laugh to break the quiet atmosphere before saying, " Oh, yes. I've to thank you for giving me that array drawing the previous time. It had really helped me a lot this time."

"Okay."

Ling Xi nodded her head, while her slender fingers were still twirling with a lock of her black hair. After allowing it to fall down and cover her voluptuous chest, she quietly cast her beautiful eyes towards Mu Chen.

The latter obviously had some matters in his mind to be seeking for her this time.

Being stared at by her, Mu Chen was a little too unused to such an action from her. Tilting his head from side-to-side, he spoke out after drumming his courage up, "Would you be able to help me on something?"

"Speak," replied Ling Xi with a blink of her long and slender eyelashes.

"Is there any way that can allow me to break through to Heavenly Completion Stage within a month?" Mu Chen spoke out the trouble he faced while shrugging his shoulder, before continuing, "Naturally, I'm talking about ways that don't have any after effects or repercussions."

"Breaking through to Heavenly Completion Stage within a month?"

Ling Xi was startled by his words, before slightly knitting her eyebrows together. "Other people are unable to step into this stage even after cultivating for one or even two years. And here you are, wanting to accomplish that within a month. Aren't you too naive?"

Mu Chen gave a bitter laugh. This wasn't him demanding for instant success. However, Dean Tai Cang had only given him this amount of time. Regardless of whether he could accomplish it or not, he wanted to give it a try. Furthermore, it wasn't him trying to arrogant about his capabilities. He truly had the confidence in himself that he would be able to handle the power requirement of promoting into Heavenly Completion Stage.

Ling Xi stared at Mu Chen with her beautiful eyes. If anyone else were to beg her in such a way, she might not even care and think about it. However, faced with the current Mu Chen, she was unable to have any thoughts of rejecting him.

These feelings caused Ling Xi to feel somewhat inconceivable. After all, she had only know Mu Chen for no more than two months. However could she treat him so differently?

Could it be due to him having cultivated the Great Pagoda Art? Or perhaps that the lady within the painting that was extremely important to her, was actually his mother?

Ling Xi's beautiful eyes faintly sparkled, as confusion and disorder was momentarily present within her heart and mind.

"It's alright if there isn't any way to go about this...I'll head back first." Looking at the silent Ling Xi in front of him and assuming that she didn't have any way to help him, Mu Chen could only speak and say such words.

After speaking out, he planned to turn around and leave. Ling Xi was the only person staying here. Him remaining here seemed to not be too good of an idea.

"Wait." Ling Xi's clear and melodious voice suddenly rang out.

Turning around, Mu Chen immediately noticed Ling Xi extending her slender and jade-like hand towards him. Under the illumination of the sunlight, it appeared as if her hand was sparkling with a white luster.

"Show me your hand," said Ling Xi as she slightly curled her lips.

Immediately, Mu Chen gawked, hesitating for a moment, before walking over. Extending his hand, he placed it on Ling Xi's jade-like palm. The

extremely wonderful feeling he felt on contact was as if he had touched a piece of top-quality white jade, causing people to not want to part with it.

However, Mu Chen didn't have too many other thoughts at this moment as he stared with a strange gaze at Ling Xi. With the latter's disposition, she seemed to be the type of person that wouldn't do such senseless actions.

"Export one strand of your Spiritual Energy," said Ling Xi in a soft voice.

Mu Chen had some doubts present in his mind. Nevertheless, he had followed her words and pressed a strand of Spiritual Energy out. As the jet-black Spiritual Energy erupted from his palm, black flames were present, burning around it.

Shooting a look at it, a strand of Spiritual Energy erupted from her palm. Her Spiritual Energy was also, unexpectedly, a jet-black colour, with the only thing different being the absence of black flames burning on it.

Mu Chen was startled and astonished. It was exceedingly similar to the Spiritual Energy that he had built up after cultivating the Great Pagoda Art. It looked like Ling Xi had truly cultivated in the Great Pagoda Art before.

As the Spiritual Energies erupted from their palms and came into contact, the two different energies unexpectedly started to slowly fuse, bit by bit.

Whoosh!

With the fusion of the two Spiritual Energies, the two of them could clearly feel that their Spiritual Energies had started to miraculously expand by many times. Furthermore, this fused Spiritual Energy had become exceedingly stronger than each the previously combined strength of the Spiritual Energy strands.

Looking at the fused Spiritual Energy, Ling Xi didn't retract her portion back. With a light tap of her slender finger, the clump of Spiritual Energy was flicked straight into Mu Chen's body.

A faint shudder shook through Mu Chen's body as the greatly expanded

Spiritual Energy started to automatically revolve along the same pathways he used when cultivating the Great Pagoda Art. Finally, drilling into his aurasea, it was devoured by his Divine Spirit in a single breath.

However, when his Divine Spirit absorbed this clump of Spiritual Energy, Mu Chen immediately felt that the Spiritual Energy within his body had instantly increased by a portion.

"This..." Shock and astonishment filled Mu Chen's face as he immediately turned to look at Ling Xi with a weird expression in his eyes. Why would such a change happen to their Spiritual Energy when they came into contact with each other? It was able to treat his wounds, and was also able to act like a sacrificial offering, letting his Spiritual Energy expand and become much more dense and strong.

"I, too, don't know what enables this." Seemingly able to understand his doubts, Ling Xi learnt from him and shrugged her little shoulders.

"Looks like there truly is something special between the two of us."

As Ling Xi stood up, her snow-white dress made her beautiful figure appear slender and full, showing off her alluring curves. With a sudden smile, she spoke out, "If the lady in the painting that's extremely important to me is truly your mother, do you think that I'm the child bride that she has found for you?"

Overwhelmed by shock and horror, Mu Chen retreated a step back. He had almost been scared to death by Ling Xi's words. Only after quite a long while did he manage to regain his clarity, replying her with his forehead dripping with sweat, "That joke's not one bit funny."

"I hope so."

Ling Xi replied while nodding her head. Turning around and walking towards the depths of her courtyard, she spoke out, "Follow me. Due to the unique situation between us, it seems that you promoting to Heavenly Completion Stage within a month isn't absolutely impossible."

Looking at the alluring and beautiful figure of Ling Xi, Mu Chen exhaled a long breath of air, before following her in quick steps. Ling Xi's previous

words had given him quite a heavy freight.

As they headed into the depths of the courtyard, layers of cloth and mist obscured their vision.

Stopping in her tracks, Ling Xi panned her head over, looking towards Mu Chen before saying, "You'll come in when I call for you."

Mu Chen didn't know exactly what she was doing. Thus, he could only nod his head in doubt.

After walking through the hanging cloths, a clear pond was present before Ling Xi. Biting her lip, she lowered her head to look at the beautiful snow-white reflection present on the water's surface. In the next instant, she gave a smile, appearing exceedingly soul-stirring.

Slowly walking into the pond, the pond water turned her white dress wet, causing it to tightly adhere against her proud and lovable body, extending her astonishingly heart-stopping curves.

After entering the pond, Ling Xi sat within it. Boundless Spiritual Energy proceeded to erupt from her, assimilating within the water at that point. Instantly, the water started to gradually turn jet-black, while sparkling with a beautiful luster.

"Come in."

Mu Chen, who was waiting behind the layers of cloth, finally heard Ling Xi's voice. Extending his head over, he walked pass them, before finally seeing Ling Xi, who was sitting in the water.

Although the majority of her lovable figure was covered by the jet-black water, her upper body was still above the water line. Being drenched by the water, her slender and fair neck was shown through her white dress, before showing the voluptuous curves present below.

Upon seeing such an alluring and erotic scene, Mu Chen was completely dumbstruck and stupefied.

Chapter 385: Aunt Jing

Faint puffs of steam rose from the pond. However, they were unable to mask the alluring and erotic scene before Mu Chen.

Hua!

Discovering the gaze coming straight from Mu Chen, a crimson shadow surfaced on her white, lustrous face. With a wave of her jade-like hand, a pillar of water rushed out, spraying towards Mu Chen.

As the icy-cold water drenched his body, Mu Chen finally regained his clarity. Hastily turning his gaze away, he felt awkward and embarrassed, while not knowing what Ling Xi was planning to do.

"Enter the pond and absorb all the Spiritual Energy within."

Ling Xi tried her best to submerge all of her body within the pond. However, due to the water level being quite shallow, it was unable to cover the entirety of her body. Puffs of steam rose into the air, causing her cold and indifferent-looking face to appear a pinkish-red. Gently biting her lip, she said, "Also, please mind your eyes. If you dare to look at me, I'll expel you from here."

Immediately, Mu Chen nodded his head in succession, before proceeding to jump straight into the water. Upon feeling the water in the pond, amazement erupted within his eyes. He clearly felt the pure Spiritual Energy contained within the water.

These fluctuations were clearly the Spiritual Energy from Ling Xi. She had actually assimilated her Spiritual Energy into the pond for me to cultivate!

Mu Chen was baffled for a moment, while a slightly complicated expression appeared within his eyes. Looking at the beautiful figure that still appeared exquisite and lovable within the thick clouds of mist, the rather spectacular curves on her body continued to extend out.

"Why did you do this?" asked Mu Chen in a soft voice. What Ling Xi had done was simply using her Spiritual Energy and giving it to him. Although

it would increase his cultivation speed, her cultivation would temporarily come to a standstill. Although it was just for a short period of time, was there anyone in the world that would do such a thing for a stranger?

Sitting within the pond, upon hearing Mu Chen's words, a blank expression appeared within Ling Xi's eyes. That's right. Why would I help Mu Chen to such a degree? And yet, why wasn't there the slightest bit of rejection to such a thought within the depths of her heart...?

"I also don't know... Perhaps, this is something that I ought to do."

In a soft voice, Ling Xi replied, "Although I've lost my memories, the feelings within the depths of my heart didn't disappear. With them, I can feel that it's quite good for me to do such a thing."

After remaining silent awhile, Mu Chen started to sit down within the pond, while mist sprayed across his face. After quite a while later, a faint smile appeared on his face as he said, "Elder...Sister Ling Xi. Can I address you this way?"

A tremble shook through Ling Xi's lovable body. Raising her beautiful eyes, she looked towards the handsome youth smiling radiantly across the pond. For a while, she was unable to say anything. Within her heart, surging feelings seemed to impact her spirit. This caused a warm and gentle feeling to surface within her quiet and cold heart.

Therefore, a faint smile surfaced on her beautiful face as she gave a gentle nod.

"Relax, Elder Sister Ling Xi. Although I don't know exactly what relation you have with my mum, you have to believe in me that I'll definitely help you regain your lost memories! Regardless of who it was who did that to you, I'll definitely help you!" Mu Chen spoke out resolutely and decisively, while a firm and bright light flashed within his eyes.

Looking blankly at the firm and resolute eyes of the youth in front of her, the warmness Ling Xi felt in her heart caused a sliver of warmth to appear within that frost-covered heart of hers. That was a feeling that had seemingly not appeared for a very, very long time, causing even her eyes to turn slightly red. Slightly tilting her head around and wiping her eyes with

her hand, a gentle smile appeared on her face as she said, "That's good. I've now have a little brother. However, just firing off words isn't useful. As of now, you're too weak."

With a cheeky laugh, Mu Chen replied, "I'll try my best."

"Okay. You should start cultivating first," said Ling Xi with a faint smile.

Although he didn't know what this pond was, Mu Chen wasn't one bit affected. There were times when knowing such feelings within one's heart was enough. Speaking from one's mouth would instead make one appear hypocritical.

Therefore, gently nodding his head, he started to slowly close his eyes. The Great Pagoda Art within his body started to revolve, while black rays of brilliance extended from the surface of his body.

Crash!

The water in the pond surged as if it possessed a conscious, and was rapidly gushing towards Mu Chen. As this happened, the black colour within the water endlessly continued to drill into Mu Chen's body.

All of this was the Spiritual Energy coming from Ling Xi.

This Spiritual Energy drilled straight into Mu Chen's body, instantly fusing within the Spiritual Energy within his body. At the instant when they fused together, abstruse black rays of brilliance erupted within his body. These black rays of brilliance irrigated throughout his body, flooding through every corner within.

The Spiritual Energy within his body started to increase at a furious rate!

Boundless Spiritual Energy rapidly revolved within his meridians. Continuing to pour endlessly into his aurasea, it was completely devoured by his Divine Soul sitting within with a single gulp. Black rays of light radiated from its entire body, appearing exceedingly abnormal and mysterious.

A feeling of his Spiritual Energy gradually growing more tyrannical rippled through Mu Chen's limbs and bones.

As Mu Chen sunk into the miraculous feeling of his Spiritual Energy growing stronger, the revolving speed of the Great Pagoda Art seemed to grow increasingly faster, greedily devouring the endless Spiritual Energy gushing into his body.

...

Within the pond, Ling Xi looked towards Mu Chen, who had entered a state of cultivation. Faintly curling up her slender legs and resting her snow-white chin on her knees, Spiritual Energy continued to erupt from her body. After assimilating into the water, it replenished that which had already been absorbed by Mu Chen.

As Spiritual Energy continued to flow out of her, Ling Xi could feel a faint feeling of weakness starting to erupt from the depths of her body. However, instead of stopping, wrapping her jade-like arms around her knees, a slightly vacant expression appeared within her beautiful eyes as she started to slowly close them.

A feeling of dizziness started to spread within Ling Xi's mind, Unknowingly, her consciousness started to gradually grow dark and dim.

Ling Xi's consciousness fluttered within the darkness, the feelings of helplessness caused her to feel afraid and frightened.

Within the darkness, there seemed to be fluctuations present, rippling out as they undulated. Faintly, there seemed to be some blurry pictures surfacing within her mind.

It was a stretch of bloody ruins, filled with the flames of war. A little girl, completely covered in dirt and grime, shivering as she curled up within the rubble within. Trembling and shivering, the neverending rain continued to pour down, causing her already weak and frail body to appear even more pitiful.

A stretch of dull-gray was already present within her eyes, while she was able to feel the encroachment of death. However, there wasn't much fear or dread within her. Although she was young, she had seen too much of the cruelty and indifference within the secular world. There was no one that cared, no one that liked her. Even if she was to disappear, it would not

attract anyone's attention.

Ever since her birth till now, she had seemingly not felt a single sliver of warmth.

Her consciousness started to grow increasingly blurry. It seems that I'm about to die like this...

Unknowingly, the rain drops falling on her body had stopped. A figure seemed to appear before their eyes. Raising her head, she could faintly discern a gentle figure right in front of her.

The gentle figure extended her palms, rubbing Ling Xi's head. Under this gentle caressing, her originally cold and icy body unexpectedly started to warm up.

Within her blurry eyesight, she could feel this gentle figure giving her incomparable warmth, something that she had never felt before.

In the next moment, the gentle figure before her gently placed some food beside her. After rubbing her head once more, the figure rose up and walked off.

Looking at the figure gradually disappearing in the distance, a breath of courage that sprouted out from an unknown place erupted forth. Grabbing the food left for her, she stumbled and staggered, walking towards the direction the figure had walked to.

She continued walking, and walking. Time was not a concept to her now, continuing till all the energy within her body was drained. In the end, finally seeing the gentle figure that she couldn't seem to catch up to, her petite body finally collapsed.

Nevertheless, her body didn't hit the hard ground below, instead she landed within a warm and gentle embrace.

"Planning to follow me, little thing?" The gentle figure rubbed her head, while the voice ringing out was similarly warm and gentle.

"Em." Within her weakness, she tightly grabbed the sleeve of the lady, wanting to grab onto the last remnant of warm within her life.

"However, the place I'm going to is extremely dangerous. It's hard to predict whether it'll be fortunate or disastrous if you follow me..." After giving a gentle sigh, the gentle lady spoke out.

She drilled herself into the lady's bosom, greedily seeking the warmth within. For the sake of that warmth, she was willing to pay any price.

In the end, she followed the gentle lady and left.

"What's your name?"

"Ling...Ling Xi..."

"A really nice-sounding name."

"Really?...How should I call you...?"

"Okay, call me Aunt Jing." The gentle lady replied with a faint smile.

"Okay...Aunt Jing..."

...

"Come Ling Xi, I'll teach you how to cultivate... Firstly, you'll have to chose a Spiritual Art. Come, take a pick. These few are very formidable..."

"Okay. Let me see...is this alright?" Looking at the glowing scrolls before her eyes, radiating with astonishing brilliance, Ling Xi hesitated for quite a while. In the end, she looked towards the unassuming black scroll that was floating at a corner.

"Oh?"

"Is there a problem? I can't choose it, Aunt Jing?"

"No...This martial art is split into two scrolls, Yin and Yang. The scroll before you is the Yin Scroll. I've left the Yang Scroll for my Little Mu'er. If you cultivate it, you'll suffer a lot in the future."

"Little Mu'er? Is that Aunt Jing's child?"

"Haha. That's right. He's a very cute little fellow, and is a little smaller than Ling Xi..."

Looking at the happy smile that had radiated from Aunt Jing's heart, a

sour feeling erupted within her heart as she spoke out, "Then, why did Aunt Jing split up with him?"

Rubbing Ling Xi's head, Aunt Jing's expression turned into one of grief and dejection as she replied, "That's because I want to protect him... therefore, I can only leave him..."

Half-understanding Aunt Jing's words, Ling Xi nodded her head, and said, "Then, I'll cultivate in it."

"If you cultivate it, it'll bring a lot of trouble and danger for you..."

"I'm not afraid. Since Aunt Jing misses Little Mu'er that much, I'll cultivate in the same martial art. In the future, if I manage to find him, I'll bring him to see you." Ling Xi replied. As long as Aunt Jing became happy, she was willing to do anything.

Looking at the young and childish face of the little girl before her, the gentle lady gave a faint sigh. Raising her head to look towards a distant place in the endless horizon, that was a place she needed to returned to. A place that possessed strong power, and yet was extremely cold and heartless. Compared to that, she truly prefered staying in the small Northern Spiritual Realm. Her husband was there, with a little fellow that she was willing to give her all to...

Therefore, there were times that she had to make a choice. Due to that, for the sake of protecting that little fellow, even though she couldn't bear it, the only thing she could do was to leave.

...

Within the pond, Ling Xi's long eyelashes faintly trembled, Her eyes started to open, bit by bit, revealing the sparkling gem-like tears brimming within them. Gently wiping away the slashes of water on her face, she started muttering.

"Aunt Jing..."

Chapter 386: Memories

When Mu Chen had exited from his cultivation state, he could feel that the boundless Spiritual Energy circulating within his body was undeniably much more vigorous and dense than before.

Cultivating for a short span of half a day, in accordance to Mu Chen's feelings, he might have already reached the same benefits as cultivating normally for ten days. Such an efficiency truly made him gasp in amazement.

According to this speed, Mu Chen could tell that it was extremely possible for him to complete his breaththrough and genuinely promote into the Heavenly Completion Stage within a month.

Lifting his hands to do a stretch, sharp and clear cracking sounds seemed to ring out from all the bones within his body. At the same time, a feeling brimming with happiness radiated from his entire body.

Lowering his head to shoot a look at the pond, he noticed that the jet black water had already turned clear and transparent once again. Obviously, the Spiritual Energy within it had already been completely sucked dry by him.

Raising his head, to look towards the other side of the pond, the scene that he saw instantly caused him to feel startled, since he saw Ling Xi currently hugging her knees. At this moment, her beautiful teardrop-shaped face appeared exceeding calm, while her weak and lovable figure seemed to be shivering.

"Elder Sister Ling Xi!" Shock filled Mu Chen as he hastily stood up and rushed over. Hugging Ling Xi up by the waist, he carried her out. The clear water dripped down from her lovable body, while the already translucent dress stuck tightly on her exquisite and voluptuous figure, accentuating those astonishing and soul-stirring curves.

However, at this moment, Mu Chen didn't have the heart or attention left to admire such a beautiful scene. Carrying Ling Xi over the grass patch beside the pond, he retrieved an enormous set of robes and wrapped

them around her.

"I'm alright. I've just exhausted all of my Spiritual Energy, that's all," replied Ling Xi as she tightened the robes that were wrapped around her. At this moment, her beautiful eyes were staring unblinkingly at Mu Chen, as if she had wanted to burn the face of the youth in front her into the depths of her mind.

"What's the matter?" Being stared at with such a gaze, Mu Chen felt somewhat unnatural, causing him to ask out.

"Now, after looking at you again...indeed, you're look slightly like Aunt Jing," replied Ling Xi with a gentle smile.

"Aunt Jing?" Mu Chen was immediately startled. In the next moment, after regaining his clarity, he asked out in shock and astonishment, "Are you talking about my mum?"

Gently nodding her head, Ling Xi replied, "In the previous moment, I have faintly remembered some stuff..."

Upon speaking until here, a grin appeared on her face. Looking at Mu Chen, she spoke out, "So you're the little Mu'er that Aunt Jing was talking about...looks like my luck's really good, huh? I'm even able to meet up with you just by waiting at this place."

"Come, call me Elder Sister." Extending her jade-like hand, Ling Xi gently twisted Mu Chen's ears, while happiness brimmed within her beautiful eyes. At this moment, with every word and action, she truly appeared to be exceeding close and intimate to Mu Chen. Furthermore, it also appeared much more naturally and smooth.

Immediately, embarrassment filled Mu Chen. However, he didn't have any rejections towards the natural intimacy Ling Xi was showing towards him. In addition, faint feelings of warmth appeared within his heart. However, feeling helpless, he tilted his head and evaded her incoming hands. Surprise, happiness and an urgent feeling appeared within his eyes as he hastily shot a question out to her. "You've remembered, Elder Sister Ling Xi? Do you remember where my mum is now?"

When he had left the Northern Spirit Realm, he had promised his old man that he would definitely bring his mum back to the Northern Spirit Realm. Being alone by himself in the Northern Spirit Realm, his old man was too lonely.

However, at this moment, he was still extremely weak, and didn't have any way of travelling around the Great Thousand World to seek for the trail of his mum. However, if he was able to get some information beforehand, it would undoubtedly be an extremely heart-inspiring matter for him.

Faintly shaking her head, Ling Xi replied, "It's just some fragments of a memory. Furthermore, it was from an extremely long time ago...However, the place that Aunt Jing was headed to should be extremely dangerous..."

Speaking until this point, her forehead started to knit up before continuing to speak. "I might have gone to that place before...there's even a possibility that my memories were lost in that place. Somebody should have done something to me at that place!"

Speaking until here, her voice had already become exceedingly cold and frosty. Tightly clenching her jade-like hands, hatred and bitterness flooded her eyes.

At this moment, Mu Chen had also started to frown. From the information that he had gotten from his old man, his mum should be from a place that was ancient and extremely powerful. Furthermore, during the time when she had chosen to leave, it seemed as if she was worried that the people at that place would find them.

The extremely dangerous place that Elder Sister Ling Xi had mentioned might be the mysterious place that his mother had come from.

However, what exactly happened? Why would Ling Xi, who was always following his mum, separate from her? Furthermore, why would her memories disappear?

Tightly clenching his hands, Mu Chen thought, Exactly what had happened to my mum?

"There's no need to be worried. Aunt Jing's extremely powerful. Even if she's met with some trouble, it won't be too big of a problem."

Ling Xi's icy jade-like hands covered Mu Chen's hand as she spoke out in a soft voice, "As of now, what you need to do is to work hard and increase your strength. If not, even if you managed to find the location that Aunt Jing is in, you'll be completely helpless to do anything. If you're go there with a hot-headed and reckless approach, you might even bring unnecessary trouble for Aunt Jing."

Hearing her words, Mu Chen's expression turned solemn, If his mum was truly trapped in that mysterious place, the current him truly would not be one bit useful. After all, if what Ling Xi said was correct, that even her memories of that place were wiped clean...his current strength was really too miniscule.

"Elder Sister Ling Xi, how strong are you?" asked Mu Chen cautiously.

"I should have no problem dealing with the Heavenly Seated Elders of your Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy," replied Ling Xi in a played-down manner.

"So strong..." Mu Chen was shocked. Look's like she's a true genius with monstrous talent! Even within younger generation of the Northern Heavens Continent, compared to her, none of them could be worth a single look.

"The five Heavenly Seated Elders of your Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy should be at the level of First grade Sovereign, and are not particularly strong. Compared to them, Dean Tai Cang is much more formidable, and should be around Fifth grade Sovereign..."

Sweeping the lock of black hair that had fallen in front of her forehead, Ling Xi pursed her lips before continuing her words, "The Divine Beast Protector of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, the Northern Sea Dragon truly is extremely formidable. As of now, he should be a Ninth grade Sovereign, and might be attempting to break through to the realm of an Earth Sovereign..."

"However, even with that strength, he's still far from being able to

compare to Aunt Jing."

Mu Chen's mouth twitched as he heard her words. Although he had guessed that his mum wasn't simple, he never imagined that she would actually be that strong, to the point where even the Northern Sea Dragon was unable to compare to her. This truly was hard to imagine.

"Therefore, there's no need for you to feel shocked or amazed. After all, I was personally taught by Aunt Jing." Ling Xi said with a sweet smile on her face. "If you were brought up by Aunt Jing from young, you'd be even stronger than me."

Letting a bitter laugh out, Mu Chen replied, "I didn't have such luck. From birth till now, I've never seen my mum before, let alone getting any pointers..."

Extending her jade like-hand to pinch Mu Chen's cheek, Ling Xi's beautiful eyes stared straight at Mu Chen, before speaking out in a stern look, "Aunt Jing left you behind to protect you. I can feel that she cares a lot about you...therefore, you can't throw childish tantrums about her not always being by your side."

With a smile, Mu Chen nodded his head. Just as he was about to say something, his senses picked up on something, causing him to turn his gaze towards his back. Turning around, he noticed Su'er hugging a broom the size of her staring in shock at them with wide open eyes.

Cough

Upon seeing this, Mu Chen made a dry cough, while hastily removing Ling Xi's hands from his cheeks. Standing up, he walked straight towards Su'er.

"Ah, Big Brother Mu Chen! I didn't see anything! I won't tell Elder Sister Luo Li! Please don't kill me!" Upon seeing Mu Chen walking over to her, Su'er immediately spoke out in panic.

Feeling amused by her, Mu Chen flicked the little girl's bright forehead before replying, "What are you talking about? Elder Sister Ling Xi's helping me cultivate."

Opening her eyes wide, Su'er stared at Mu Chen, before turning to look at Ling Xi, whose entire body was wet, with Mu Chen's robes even draped over her. Instantly, her small mouth twitched. Is this called cultivation? Are they still treating me like a kid?

With a faint smile, Ling Xi removed the robes that were draped over her, before folding them in two. However, she didn't return them to Mu Chen, instead she held onto them. Spiritual Energy sparkled across her entire body, evaporating all the water present on her into steam. Clearly, Ling Xi had recovered some of her spiritual energy.

Standing up, she walked over to Mu Chen, before saying, "Our training ends here for today. Come again tomorrow to continue. This should allow you to breakthrough within a month."

"We're continuing this tomorrow?" Feeling startled, Mu Chen hesitated before replying, "Would that be too rushed? Just take a rest for tomorrow."

This method of dispersing one's Spiritual Energy would result in quite a bit of injury towards the person doing it. Although Ling Xi's Spiritual Energy was strong and intrepid, Mu Chen didn't want to see anything happen to her by helping him.

"You truly are gentle. Nevertheless, don't worry. I can endure this little bit," replied Ling Xi with a smile. This was an extremely natural smile, causing Su'er to stare at her with slight inconceivability. In her memory, the previous Ling Xi was extremely cold and indifferent, let alone doing something extremely extravagant like revealing a smile.

"Okay then."

Upon seeing and hearing her reply, Mu Chen could only tilt his head. After waving to the two, he didn't continue saying anything else, before turning around and walking out of the courtyard.

Looking at the back figure in the distance, Ling Xi gave a gentle smile. Aunt Jing, I've finally found him. Relax, before finding you, I'll protect him, and not let him suffer one bit of pain...

"This is over."

Noticing the smiling Ling Xi as she stared at the back figure of Mu Chen, Su'er seemed to understand something. Unable to hold it in, the little girl started to cry out, "Elder Sister Ling Xi, could it be that you like Big Brother Mu Chen?"

Tilting her head over, Ling Xi replied with some amusement, "What's the matter? Is there a problem?"

Summoning her courage, Su'er replied, "This isn't good. Big Brother Mu Chen and Big Sis Luo Li are a pair."

"You sneaky little brat. Are you actually not on my side?" Extending her jade-like hands, she gave a pitch on Su'er's little cheeks while speaking out with a grin.

"Wu...Elder Sister Ling Xi, forcing the issue will not lead to happiness."

"Su'er, do you want to clean up the Spiritual Array House today?"

"Ah, no, I don't want to! I'm sorry! Elder Sister Ling Xi and Big Brother Mu Chen are the best match possible!"

"..."

Chapter 387: At a Loss

For the next half a month, Mu Chen had seemingly spent every single day in Ling Xi's mountain peak residence, undergoing the same special and erotic method to cultivate.

However, it had to be said that this method of cultivation truly had extremely awesome benefits for Mu Chen. He never expected that the fusion of his and Ling Xi's Spiritual Energy would have such an enormous effect on him.

However, as this special method of cultivation continued, Mu Chen started to get slightly apprehensive with such a rapid increase of his strength. Every time he had cultivated this way, Ling Xi would become weak and frail. Obviously, although this method was beneficial for him, there wasn't any of that for Ling Xi.

This situation made him feel slightly regretful. If he had known about the consequences earlier, he wouldn't have gone to seek help from Ling Xi.

Therefore, as approximately half a month went by, finally, Mu Chen couldn't endure the guilt building up within his heart. The efficacy of this cultivating method with Ling Xi had also dropped. Being a resolute and decisive person, he didn't have any way to continue seeing Ling Xi's beautiful face grow weaker and paler as time went by, while remaining indifferent and unconcerned.

...

Within a little building in the Freshman region, Mu Chen sat on the roof. As he blankly stared at the sky, a somewhat absent-minded expression appeared within his eyes.

Sha. Sha.

Faint and gentle footsteps rang behind him as a familiar fragrance that caused his heart to relax followed suit. Nevertheless, this time, Mu Chen continued staring at the sky, lost in his thoughts.

Arriving beside Mu Chen, Luo Li took a seat. Staring at him with her

clear and tranquil eyes, she asked in a soft voice, "What's the matter?"

For the past two days, she had noticed that Mu Chen was feeling uneasy about something, with his gaze turning blank and lost in thought at times. This caused her to feel slightly worried about this youth.

Hearing her voice, Mu Chen turned to look at Luo Li. This was the young girl who had weathered life-or-death moments time after time during the Spiritual Road with him, and was also the young girl that was firmly imprinted in his heart and mind. Tilting his body to the side, he placed his head on her long and slender legs, before muttering, "There's some stuff, and I don't know if I'm doing the right thing or not..."

Lowering her head, her big, clear eyes casted a doubtful look towards Mu Chen.

Turning silent awhile, Mu Chen finally took a deep breath, before starting to tell Luo Li the detailed happenings about the need for him to break through to Heavenly Completion Stage within a month and the matter with Ling Xi. In fact, he had even talked about the relationship between the latter and his mother, not wanting to hide anything from Luo Li.

In return, Luo Li continued to attentively listen to him in silence.

"Do I need such easily-obtained power?" Mu Chen muttered. If that was the case, breaking through to Heavenly Completion Stage truly would be a piece of cake for him.

Lightly blinking her beautiful eyes, Luo Li continued to stare at Mu Chen. After a moment, she spoke out in a soft voice, "Mu Chen, do you know why I started liking you?"

Mu Chen gawked, before looking at the absolutely beautiful face above him.

"I like you, not because of your appearance, not because of your skills and methods, and more so your talent. Instead, I like the boy that would face any difficulty he encountered within the Spiritual Road. Regardless of how life-threatening the situation was, or perhaps being encircled by

various ways, he would always show a smile brimming with confidence and tell me, 'Don't be afraid, I'll bring you out of here'..."

"I love the self-believing smile of yours... In the past, due to the changes that happened in the Luo God Clan, I had no choice by to passively bear the responsibility of carrying on the inheritance for the sake of hundreds and thousands of people. Due to that, I was forced to cultivate. I tried to make myself capable of enduring it. However, within my heart, there wasn't any hope present. That was because, I was unable to believe that I am able to endure such a heavy responsibility..."

"However...after meeting you in the Spiritual Road, you've taught me that I need to believe in myself."

Luo Li's clear and limpid eyes stared at Mu Chen, with her soft and gentle voice akin to an alarm clock. Seeping, bit by bit, into the heart and mind of Mu Chen, it causing the confusion present within his eyes to dissipate, sliver by sliver. Within the depths of those black eyes, brilliance seemed to start condensing once again.

"Now...the person that had taught me to believe in myself, had started to stop believing in himself. What do you think I should do to remind him?" Luo Li's warm and delicate hands caressed Mu Chen's face as she spoke with a faint smile.

Hu.

A clump of white smoke left Mu Chen's mouth as he exhaled a long breath of air. At this moment, the pressure within his heart had completely dissipated, while the corners of his mouth started to slowly curl up.

Within the Spiritual Road, the number of times where he was placed within a life-or-death situation was uncountable. At that time, he was even incapable of using any Spiritual Energy. Nevertheless, there was not the slightest bit of tremble within his heart. That's because, he believed in himself, that in any situation, regardless of the difficulty, he would be able to overcome all obstacles and pass through!

In those situations, he was already able to rely on himself to overcome

them. Why was a mere Heavenly Completion Stage able to force his self-confidence to such a low point now? In fact, why did he have the need to rely on a method that would cause harm to others to increase his own strength?!

His path towards supremacy didn't require all of that!

Slowly clenching his hands, the smile hanging at the corner of his mouth became haughty and brimming with confidence. Heavenly Completion Stage? I'll use my own strength and break through!

Looking at the familiar smile reappearing on Mu Chen's face, Luo Li started to faintly smile with him. This was the Mu Chen that she loved. Forever filled with confidence, with no difficulty able to obstruct his way.

"Luo Li."

Raising his head up, Mu Chen looked towards the figure dressed in a long black dress, with golden flower patterns outlining the frills. Her outfit had caused her to appear like a noble and respectable young girl of absolute beauty. This was the future Empress of the Luo God Clan.

He was loving her more and more.

"Yes?" Raising her clear and sparklingly big eyes, Luo Li looked towards Mu Chen.

"Thank you, but I really can't endure any longer."

With a smile, Mu Chen pressed his hands straight down on Luo Li's delicate shoulders. Lunging forward, a panicked cry rang out from the young girl as Mu Chen pushed her down.

As her bright and luxuriant hair spread out across the ground, akin to a silver river, Luo Li was a little startled as she looked towards Mu Chen, who had lunged onto her. At this moment, the latter was looking down at her, with his tall body pressing tightly on hers. The scorching-hot situation she was currently in caused her face to turn burning hot.

"Hehe." Looking at the face that was inches away from him, unable to hold it in, Mu Chen started to laugh evilly.

Feeling slightly peeved, Luo Li rolled her eyes, before showing a stern expression on her beautiful face while saying, "Don't think about asking me to console you again."

"Then, let me console you."

Lowering his head, under Luo Li's big eyes, which were slightly wide-open, he stuffed those rosy lips that were sufficient to cause people to melt within his mouth.

A smear of confusion immediately flashed within Luo Li's beautiful eyes. In the end, extending her slim and slender jade-like arms, she embraced Mu Chen's neck, giving in to Mu Chen for the picking.

After enjoying this little bit of warmth from her, Mu Chen was unwilling to relinquish it that quickly. Quietly slipping his hand within the young girl's dress, he took a grab at that perky lump of warm jade fat within his palm.

"Mu Chen! Mu Chen!"

However, just as Mu Chen's loins had started raging with intense fire, hurried cries rang out from below the building.

The cries immediately broke the fiery and intoxicating atmosphere, with Luo Li being the first to snap out of it. That absolutely beautiful and calm face of hers instantly turned scorching hot. Hastily shoving Mu Chen away, she stood up and arranged her dress. Filled with resentment, her beautiful eyes stared at Mu Chen as she thought, This fellow truly is such a bad guy.

Seeing her glare at him, Mu Chen gave a dry laugh, before looking down at Zhou Ling below him. Gnashing his teeth unhappily, he asked, "What's the matter?"

Luckily this fellow knew the rules, and never rushed up to the building. If he saw the scene of Luo Li being as soft as water just now, Mu Chen could guarantee that fellow's extermination.

"Su'er brought an Elder to find you..." Spotting the unhappy expression hanging on Mu Chen's face, Zhou Ling could only reply in the most

straightforward and innocent manner.

Upon hearing this, Mu Chen instantly gawked. Elder? Look's like it's Elder Sister Ling Xi. Why did she come here for?

"Is that your Elder Sister Ling Xi?" Luo Li's charming face gradually recovered to normalcy. Moving closer to him, her beautiful eyes shot a look at Mu Chen, while an indescribable expression appeared within.

Feeling embarrassed, Mu Chen nodded his head.

"Let's go take a look. In any case, she's already here," said Luo Li with a faint smile.

Making a bitter laugh, Mu Chen held her hand, before shooting out of the building, descending towards the public square in the Freshman region. Within the centre of the public square, the familiar beautiful figure of Ling Xi was currently standing there.

In the surroundings of the public square, the crowds of the Goddess Luo Association were sneaking peeks as whispering sounds rang out.

"She's really an Elder of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy? Is that possible? How can she be that young?!"

"I've heard that she's a Spiritual Array Grandmaster, possessing extremely terrifying strength."

"Her age seems to not be that much older than us...can she be like Elder Zhu Tian?"

"I don't think so, the feeling's different..."

"Why's she finding Big Brother Mu Chen? Could it be...hehe..."

"Are you seeking your death? If Big Sis hear's that, won't she chop you up!?"

"..."

Upon hearing those whispers ringing within the public square, Mu Chen could only shake his head in helplessness. With a move, he appeared before Ling Xi and Su'er as he asked with a smile, "Elder Sister Ling Xi, is

there something wrong, for you to suddenly come to the Freshman region?"

Raising her charming eyes, Ling Xi shot a look towards Mu Chen, before taking a look at Luo Li, who was standing beside him. Gently nodding her head, her eyebrows started to slightly knit up as she spoke out, "Why didn't you head to my place to cultivate?"

With a smile, Mu Chen replied, "Elder Sister Ling Xi. Let me handle my cultivate from this point onwards. I'm truly grateful for your help during the past half-month."

Ling Xi's eyebrows knitted more tightly as she asked, "If you rely on yourself, it'll be extremely difficult to break through to Heavenly Completion Stage within the next half-month. Why do you reject my offer? If you're afraid of me suffering a loss, you truly don't need to. My cultivation is just stopping for only a month."

Giving a slow shake of his head, Mu Chen replied with a soft voice, "Elder Sister Ling Xi, the only thing I'm doing is believing in myself."

Startled, Ling Xi looked towards Mu Chen. At this moment, the youth's eyes were sparkling with brightness, brimming with genuine self-confidence. Compared to the day when he had come to find her, this was clearly an entirely different expression.

"Elder Sister Ling Xi, I'm really grateful for your help. I know...that you helping me is really due to your relationship with my mum. You're only wishing to divert the feelings of gratitude to my mum towards me..."

Ling Xi had a cold and detached personality, and took deep precautions to isolate herself from others. Mu Chen wasn't being narcissistic when he said those words, since he knew about the true reason for her actions. If not for her relationship with his mum, the current Ling Xi might still be treating him with the icy and cold manner she had done during their first encounter; what's more, using such a method of self-hurt herself to help him.

Mu Chen continued speaking with earnesty, "However, don't spoil me too much, Elder Sister Ling Xi. I believe that if my mum knew that I had

used such a method to gain strength, she might be extremely disappointed in me."

"Furthermore..."

Flinging his mouth aside, Mu Chen said in helplessness, "I also really don't want to see your weak appearance. That look isn't beautiful."

As Ling Xi gawked, she appeared startled as she looked towards the handsome youth in front of her. The latter's smile was as radiant as the sun, causing even her cold and frosted-over heart to faintly tremble.

After remaining silent for a long time, a gentle smile finally appeared on her face. This smile caused quite a few students to fixedly stare at her. Compared to Luo Li, Ling Xi clearly had a graceful bearing that was unique to her.

Slowly walking up, her jade-like hand extended out, touching Mu Chen's face. Within her eyes, genuine feelings of love and pampering radiated out, before she spoke out with a sigh, "You really are Aunt Jing's child. Those previous words might be due to Aunt Jing, however..."

A smile crept on her face as she continue, "Your Elder Sister really likes the current you."

Immediately, an embarrassed expression appeared on Mu Chen's face.

"Okay. I won't force you. I believe that you're able to succeed. However, it's best that you come to my place to cultivate. I'll try my best to help you, but I'll not use that method again."

This time, Mu Chen didn't continue rejecting her help, then smiled as he nodded his head.

...

As this incident took place within the Freshman region, Dean Tai Cang and the five Heavenly Seated Elders were sitting within a large hall in the central region of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. In front of them was a glowing Spiritual Energy screen, with the scene happening within the Freshman region displayed on it.

Chapter 388: Stealing Spirituality

Within the large hall, all was quiet as Dean Tai Cang and the Elders looked at the glowing Spiritual Energy screen, where the scene happening in the Freshman region was displayed. Obviously, the commotion that happened there had caught their eyes.

"That little fella..."

Focusing on the figure of Mu Chen displayed within the glowing Spiritual Energy screen, Dean Tai Cang finally gave a soft laugh with the feeling of a heavy weight having been lifted off his shoulders.

Ever since he gave Mu Chen the condition of breaking through to Heavenly Completion Stage within a month, he had been secretly observing the former. With Mu Chen's strength then, breaking through to Heavenly Completion Stage within a month was a rather difficult task to accomplish.

This would also make him feel extremely pressed.

Dean Tai Cang wanted to see the decisions that Mu Chen would make when he was forced into such a pressing situation. When Mu Chen had sought Ling Xi's help, he and the other Elders were slightly astonished. However, the cultivation method that he had used afterwards had caused their hearts to sink down a little.

The path that led to one becoming a true expert was filled with too many thorns and torments. However, of the people that were able to finally walk out of this path, every single one of them were tenacious in spirit. Regardless of any situation they were in, they weren't people that would give up so easily.

The the Dao of cultivation, practising by oneself was the righteous path. As for those that were similar to how Mu Chen was relying on Ling Xi's Spiritual Energy to cultivate, they had diverged to the wrong fork in the road. Perhaps, it was able to allow for his strength to rapidly increase in a short period of time. However, in the distant future, this malpractice would become a heart demon in Mu Chen's path towards becoming a true

expert.

If he continued cultivating using such a method, it would have an extremely huge impact on his future accomplishments.

During the past few days, even Hall Master Mo You and the other Heavenly Seated Elders were unable to endure Mu Chen's continuation with this cultivation method so much so that they thought of forcefully intervening. However, they were restrained by Dean Tai Cang. In such a matter, if Mu Chen was able to comprehend the consequences by himself, it would have a beneficial effect of greatly increasing his mental state. If others were to butt in and interfere, it would not lead to such a perfect ending.

However, even Dean Tai Cang was unsure if Mu Chen was capable of giving up on the lure of drastically increasing his strength that this way of cultivation provided.

As they quietly watched, time went on, continuing for half a month. However, during the half a month, as Mu Chen's strength rapidly increased, the disappointment within their eyes slowly piled up and up.

If Mu Chen was any other ordinary student, they might not have cared so much about him. However, the current Mu Chen could be considered to have exceeded Shen Cangsheng and become the most outstanding student in their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. There were only an extreme few in the earlier batches that were able to compare to him. In fact, he might have even walked much farther than them on the path towards becoming an expert.

Therefore, they had extremely high anticipation and expectations towards Mu Chen. Nevertheless, those expectations started to dissipate, little by little...

All of these feelings lasted till Mu Chen suddenly stopped that cultivation method two days ago...

"That's a hard decision to make. I've even assumed that he would sink deeper and deeper..." Hall Master Mo You exhaled a breath, before sighing in admiration as he spoke out. In accordance to the rate Mu Chen was

progressing in that cultivation technique, he might've been able to break through to Heavenly Completion Stage in a few more days. However, who would have expected that Mu Chen would actually put it to a halt at the most critical moment.

"However, Ling Xi is really reckless...she had actually used such a method. Exactly what relationship does she have with Mu Chen?" Frowning, Elder Zhu Tian asked.

Ling Xi's method had eliminated some of the negative influences that might affect Mu Chen on his walk along the path of cultivation, and was completely on the level of hurting herself to benefit others. Such a thing was obviously exceedingly inconceivable to the Heavenly Seated Elders. Furthermore, with Ling Xi and her famous cold and detached personality, she had never once interfered with any matter of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Only when the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy needed to construct Spiritual Arrays and under the behest of Dean Tai Cang would she give a little bit of face and take action. However, now...

With regards to this, Dean Tai Cang could only shake his head. Ling Xi's history was already extremely mysterious. However, all in all, this was of no harm to their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Speaking out, he said, "Ling Xi's too young. Although she's extremely strong, she's lacking in experience, compared to you guys. She's not to blame for this matter. As of now, let's allow Mu Chen to continue cultivating at her place. I think that the previous matter should not happen again."

"Then, if Mu Chen really breaks through to Heavenly Completion Stage, would you still allow him to participate in the Divine Spiritual Mountain?" asked Hall Master Mo You.

"Compared to the most elite of the younger generation in the Northern Heavens Continent, a Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase still has quite a bit of disparity. Although Mu Chen cannot be judged by the book, this is still an extremely important and yet dangerous occasion to participate in," added Elder Zhu Tian in a deep voice.

"There's still half a year left before the start of the Great Academy

Competition...If something happens to Mu Chen before that, it would be too great of a loss for us."

With a bitter laugh, Elder Zhu Tian continued speaking, "Furthermore, the elimination rate of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy in the past two Great Academy Competitions had exceeded 80%. According to the rules, this doesn't meet the standards. If this was to happen again in this upcoming one, there might be people that would take advantage of this to snatch away our title as one of the Five Great Academies. After all, the Saint Spirit Academy has always disliked us. Furthermore, there're quite a few strong and powerful academies that are eying us covetously..."

This caused a few Elders to turn quiet. Within the Five Great Academies, their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was ranked last, and had comparatively weaker backgrounds than the other four. The absolute majority of the reason why the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was able to become one of the Five Great Academies was due to the strength of Lord Northern Sea Dragon. However, if they weren't able to produce adequate results, their title would be stripped. Even Lord Northern Sea Dragon wasn't able to do anything about that. Furthermore, they didn't have the face to use that as a point to threaten others...

With a single statement of saying that their students were being deficient and that their academy was being incapable, it was already enough to stuff their mouths full.

"Hmph! For the sake of recruiting students with special and distinguished talent, the Saint Spiritual Academy had relied on some unscrupulous methods. They have even interfered with the Spiritual Road. At that time, when they had settled on Ji Xuan, they had secretly provided help, letting Luo Li face some life-threatening situations. They had also forced Mu Chen to turn into that Blood Calamity of the Spiritual Road, causing a massacre which resulted in him being kicked of out there..." said Hall Master Mo You with a cold snort, appearing exceedingly discontent with the Saint Spiritual Academy.

"There's still...Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong and the rest of those on the Heavenly Rankings. They are good seedlings, and the matter with Mo

Longzi this time had quite a big impact on them..."

Slightly narrowing his eyes, Dean Tai Cang gentle dispelled that thought with his hands as he said, "The matter of the Divine Spiritual Mountain would have to see if Mu Chen is able to break through to Heavenly Completion Stage within the remaining time. As for Shen Cangsheng and the rest, I've my own plans for them. For those children, if we give them some time, what would the most elite in the younger generation of the Saint Spiritual Academy be compared to them?"

Upon hearing Dean Tai Cang's words, Mo You, Elder Zhu Tian and the other Elder didn't continue speaking and nodded their heads in approval.

...

The next day, Mu Chen appeared once again on the quiet and secluded mountain peak where Ling Xi lived. At that place, Ling Xi was already waiting for him. Upon seeing his figure, a smile surfaced on Ling Xi's beautiful face.

"I assumed that you'd not come."

Mu Chen tilted his head in slight displeasure.

"I'm sorry. I've not considered much for this matter." Looking at Mu Chen, Ling Xi spoke out in a soft voice. Although her experience and wisdom truly was not comparable the Heavenly Seated Elders of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, whom have cultivated for many, many years, being a person on the same level as them, she had sensed the malpractice her method would bring to Mu Chen after calming down and thinking it over after the scene that happened yesterday.

"I'm the one who put forth the request, so I'm the one that needs to apologize," said Mu Chen while shaking his head. Although this matter had narrowly caused a great deal of trouble for him, it was still a good matter, all in all. His cultivation since coming to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had increased too quickly, with his mental state of mind having some fluctuations after achieving victory. This time could be considered as a method to temper his mental state, and allowed him to control his true heart.

A faint smile appeared on Ling Xi's face as she replied, "For the sake of compensation, I'll do my best to help you. Naturally, I'll not use that method again."

Looking at Ling Xi's beautiful smile, Mu Chen's finally relaxed his heart. With a smile, he said, "As long as it's not the fusion of Spiritual Energy, I quite like any other method similar to that."

Ling Xi immediately gawked, before a faint shade of red appeared on her beautiful face. Gently pursing her lips, she replied him with a smile, "Are you trying to take liberties with your Elder Sister?"

"My mistake, my mistake. Let's start." Giving a dry cough, Mu Chen hastily changed the topic.

Ling Xi shot a displeased glare at Mu Chen, before walking towards the back of the mountain, with Mu Chen rapidly in tow. After nearly ten minutes, they stopped at a spacious clearing behind the mountain.

Upon arriving here, Mu Chen shot an astonished look at the sky, noticing the faint feelings of distortion happening there. Faintly, he was seemingly able to see the complicated intertwinement of countless glowing threads, as well as the presence of Spiritual Array fluctuations.

Furthermore, Mu Chen was able to feel that the Spiritual Aura of the world seemed to be exceedingly thick and dense in this place. In fact, there were condensations of Spiritual Energy found on the tree leaves in the vicinity, while a dense fog covered their surroundings.

"The Spiritual Aura here..." Mu Chen spoke out as he looked towards Ling Xi in astonishment.

"You should know that the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy has an 8th grade Congregation Spiritual Array, right?" replied Ling Xi with a faint smile.

Knowing about that, Mu Chen nodded his head. 8th grade Spirit Convergence Array. That was an extremely frightening thing. Within the entire Northern Heavens Continent, it might be the only one of its kind. However, since entering the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, Mu

Chen had yet to see that Spiritual Array. It's said that the 8th grade Spirit Convergence Array wasn't open to students, and was hidden within the deepest part of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Could it be that the 8th grade Spiritual Array was at this place?

"The Spiritual Aura of the world present in the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy is supplied by the 8th grade Spirit Convergence Array. Therefore, it can be said that it is the lifeblood of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, and can be considered as the academy's most important thing. Other than special circumstances, it will absolutely not be opened up." Ling Xi started her explanation.

Mu Chen got a flash of understand. That's why he had never heard of anyone truly being able to enter the rumoured 8th grade Spirit Convergence Array.

"This place is..." said Mu Chen as he looked doubtfully at Ling Xi. Since the 8th grade Spirit Convergence Array won't open up, why did Ling Xi explain all this to him?

"Indeed, the 8th grade Spirit Convergence Array cannot be opened. However...I'm able to use some methods to steal some of the Spiritual Aura from inside it," replied Ling Xi with a sweet smile.

"Steal some?" Now Mu Chen's eyes had sprung wide open. How was she able to do that?

"After staying in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy for so long, the only thing that has some interest to me is that 8th grade Spirit Convergence Array. After researching for some time, although I'm unable to completely control it, I can feel and tweak some of its principles and functions. Therefore, stealing some Spiritual Aura from it isn't considered too difficult for me."

Placing her hands behind her back, Ling Xi tilted her head as she looked at Mu Chen. As she did so, her black hair slipped off her shoulder like a waterfall, accentuating her beauty to soul-stirring levels. At this moment, while looking at Mu Chen with her beautiful eyes, a sweet smile appeared on her face.

"This way, can it be considered as genuine cultivation? You won't reject this, right?"

Chapter 389: Pride of the Upperclassman

Looking towards the sky, he saw an extremely complicated glowing pattern made of the intertwinement of countless glowing threads. The degree of complication present caused even his eyes turn spirally, while a dizzy feeling erupted within his mind. In the next instant, he quickly turned his vision away as shock and amazement filled his heart. As of now, with his accomplishments in the area of Spiritual Arrays, he was still unable to completely see the rotation of this Spiritual Array! Exactly how strong and complicated was this Spiritual Array?!

Indeed, Ling Xi was undoubtedly a Spiritual Array Grandmaster. On the accomplishments of Spiritual Arrays, he had quite a big disparity when compared to her.

"I naturally have no qualms about this method," said Mu Chen while rubbing his temples and giving a smile. Regardless of the density and power of the Spiritual Energy, those were just external factors. However, if he was able to absorb and refine them, he would be completely relying on himself. This was completely different from the previous method, where he was able to obtain a rapidly increasing strength without doing any work.

"Let's begin today. You'll enter it and start cultivating, while I activate the Spiritual Array. After tearing a hole into the 8th grade Spiritual Array, I'll siphon some Spiritual Aura out from there."

Faintly nodding her head, Ling Xi turned her beautiful eyes towards Mu Chen while saying, "However, whether or not you can break through to Heavenly Completion Stage in the remaining time would have to depend on your hard work."

"Yes. I'll have to trouble you then, Elder Sister Ling Xi."

Nodding his head, Mu Chen's eyes were brimming with resolution and firmness. If he was unable to even force his way into the Heavenly Completion Stage, how could he say to Luo Li that he would be an unrivaled expert, overcoming all obstacles and protecting her with all his

might?

"Let's begin."

Not continuing to delay with any words, Ling Xi extended her jade-like hands, clapping them together. Activating her hand seal, streaks of light shot from within, rushing towards the countless intertwined glowing threads in the sky.

Bang!

As a low and deep rumbling sound seemed to ring out across the horizon, dazzling rays of brilliance erupted from the countless glowing threads. In the next instant, the glowing threads converged, transforming into an approximately hundred foot wide glowing vortex in the sky.

The centre of the vortex headed straight towards nihility, connecting to an unknown place. Extremely vast and boundless Spiritual Energy seemed to be faintly discernable as it spewed out from within like an erupting volcano.

Taking a deep breath, Mu Chen shot straight towards the mountain peak situated below the vortex before taking a seat.

With a wave of her jade-like hand, the glowing vortex started to furiously revolve about. Amidst the howl resounding about, the worldly Spiritual Aura present within the boundaries of the mountain peak suddenly increased drastically as a spiritual mist rose into the air.

Bang!

Gorgeous-looking boundless Spiritual Energy appeared within the vortex, pouring down in torrents like a tsunami. Worldly Spiritual Aura fluctuations covered the entire mountain peak, completely shrouding Mu Chen's body within it.

Looking at this scene unfurl before her eyes, Ling Xi nodded her head in satisfaction. Turning her lovable face around, she shot a vigilant glance towards the distance. After sensing nothing present there, she gracefully turned around and headed away.

On a mountain peak in the far distance, Dean Tai Cang and the other Elders could only give a bitter laugh as they observed the commotion happening in their view.

"This Ling Xi is actually able to siphon some of the Spiritual Aura from within that 8th grade Spiritual Array..." said Hall Master Mo You in shock and astonishment as he smacked his lips. This 8th grade Spiritual Array was the lifeblood of their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. During the creation of the academy, their Lord Northern Sea Dragon had paid an enormous price to hire an extremely powerful and mysterious influence from the Great Thousand World to create it. However, he never imagined that a Spiritual Array of such a degree would have a slit ripped open by Ling Xi. She's truly formidable.

"It's alright."

Dean Tai Cang said with a hearty chuckle. Not caring that Ling Xi had her attention set on their most important 8th grade Spiritual Array of their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, he stared at the glowing Spiritual Energy pillar pouring down like a waterfall with his hands crossed behind his back. "Next up, let me truly see, exactly, if Mu Chen's able to rely on himself to completely break through in the last half a month..." he muttered.

If Mu Chen was truly able to accomplish that, then their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had truly produced a rarely seen monstrous talent.

The commotion that Ling Xi caused wasn't small, since the boundless glowing Spiritual Energy pillar descending from the sky appeared was exceedingly eye-catching within the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Therefore, for the next few periods of time, there were quite a few students who paid attention to this strange phenomena, causing unavoidable shock and amazement within the student body.

However, their shock and astonishment didn't last long, since the reason behind this matter gradually surfaced. As that news was spread around, amazed and astonishment filled the eyes of many as they thought, Mu

Chen actually wanted to rely on this to rush to Heavenly Completion Stage?

That fellow was truly abnormal!

Countless students exclaimed in astonishment as they heard the news. Mu Chen had arrived in their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy only a year ago. However, his progress was sufficient to cause those senior students to feel inferior and ashamed at their own progress. Nevertheless, after recapping that even a vicious person like Mo Longzi had suffered a beating in Mu Chen's hands, they knew that this fellow simply couldn't be seen through a normal perspective. Why would they need to compare with such an abnormal human? Thinking along this path, they felt much more relieved within their hearts.

In this world, there's always some people that were out of the ordinary.

At a mountain peak within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, Li Xuantong was staring at the gigantic glowing Spiritual Energy pillar in the far distance. After a long while, he turned his vision towards the Freshman region. At that area was a girl that he was completely unable to remove from his mind. Nevertheless, he knew that he might never, ever be able to see the lovable appearance that naturally came out of her heart that she revealed in front of Mu Chen, for his sake...

A sliver of complicated emotions flashed across Li Xuantong's handsome face. The youth that he had doubted and questioned at the beginning had progressed at such a rapid pace, even exceeding him now. All of this proved the keenness and accuracy of the girl's vision. No matter how extraordinary and outstanding she was, even after everyone had doubted and questioned her choice of liking that person, she still stuck to her beliefs.

Li Xuantong was undeniably arrogant and proud of himself. There was no need to question his talent. On a certain perspective, Mu Chen could be considered his love rival. However, this didn't stop Li Xuantong from denying the recognition Mu Chen had achieved from his accomplishments. Indeed, this youth possessed the potential to make Luo

Li fall in love with him. Nevertheless, the feeling of being surpassed and overtaken was truly hard to stomach.

"Haha, looks like we, the two Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy brothers of the same boat, are about to be overtaken." A laughing voice suddenly rang out from behind him. Turning around, Li Xuantong noticed Shen Cangsheng sitting on a large cliff behind his back. On the sole aspect of appearance, Shen Cangsheng might not be as dashing as Li Xuantong, and not as handsome as Mu Chen. However, he possessed a bearing that was solely his. That tall and straight posture appeared akin to a divine spear that could pierce through the confines of heavens, forever unable to be bent. The disdainful look present on his face wasn't brash or insolent, making people feel an enchanting and imposing aura radiating from him.

Shen Cangsheng possessed extremely strong prestige and popularity within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Even with Mu Chen's strong awe and fame rushing throughout the entire academy due him defeating Mo Longzi, it wasn't able to suppress the prestige of the Heavenly Rankings' Overlord. This wasn't due to the reason of people, but that Shen Cangsheng was an extremely charismatic person.

Heading towards the stone cliff and sitting down, Li Xuantong faintly spoke out, "What's the matter? Is the Overlord of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's Heavenly Rankings feeling dispirited? That's not like you."

"Mu Chen truly is an extremely formidable fellow."

Looking at the glowing Spiritual Energy pillar in the far distance, Shen Cangsheng replied, "From the establishment of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy till now, people who were able to achieve such accomplishments within the first year of entering the academy would not exceed more than the number of our fingers. After thinking, the most recent person seemed to exist a hundred years ago. I still remember his name, Qin Zhantian. During the Great Spiritual Academy Competition that year, countless geniuses from various great spiritual academies were overshadowed under his feet. Even the Divine Sons of the Saint Spiritual

Academy that year had suffered defeat in his hands. Under his spear, he swept away anyone in his path, being undefeatable and invincible!"

"That time can be considered as the most uplifting and proud moment within the past hundred years of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's history!"

"Senior Brother Qin Zhantian, huh?" Li Xuantong said in a soft voice, "I've heard that he seems to be a regional Overlord in the Great Thousand Worlds, possessing heaven-transcending power."

Fanaticism was faintly present within Shen Cangsheng's eyes as he spoke out with a smile, "He's my goal. When I've entered the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, I've already said that I want to be the same as him!"

"Therefore," looking towards Li Xuantong, a grin cracked open from Shen Cangsheng's mouth, while a disdainful and haughty look erupted from his eyes once again.

"I'll send my application to the Dean to let me enter the Door of the Northern Depths to train and cultivate!"

Faint shock immediately shook through Li Xuantong's heart. Looking towards Shen Cangsheng, he spoke out, "The Door of the Northern Depths? Isn't that the place that turned students crazy due to being unable to handle the pressure from within?"

That place could be considered as a terrifying place that would cause the faces of the people in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy to change when mentioned. That year, there were outstanding students who had entered it. However, in the end, due to being unable to handle the pressure within that place, they suffered mental damage, resulting in them turning crazy, leading to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy to shut it down. After that, it was rarely ever opened again. However, seemingly due to this reason, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was hard pressed to achieve any good results in the following Great Spiritual Academy Competitions.

Now, Shen Cangsheng actually wanted to go in there to train and

cultivate?

With a smile, Shen Cangsheng smiled and continued talking. "If I'm scared and afraid by just this, how can I even talk about something like surpassing Senior Brother Qin Zhantian? Li Xuantong, I really want to participate in the Great Spiritual Academy Competition, and compete with those geniuses and monstrous talents from the various great spiritual academies. What about you? Are you going to continue in this lukewarm state, and wait for Mu Chen to overtake you?"

Instantly, Li Xuantong turned quiet. After a while, placing his hand behind his head, he looked towards the glowing Spiritual Energy pillar in the far distance, while the gaze within his eyes slowly grew swift and fierce.

"Door of the Northern Depths? Very well! I also really want to see exactly how frightening that place is! Since you dare to enter that place, why can't I do the same? You still don't have the ability to force me to be your number two for eternity, Shen Cangsheng! What's more, how can I let Mu Chen show his might alone at the Great Spiritual Academy Competition?"

"Haha! Well said!"

Standing up, Shen Cangsheng gave a heroic and hearty laugh.

"When we leave the Door of the Northern Depths, let's dish a beating out to that little brat Mu Chen. Although he had saved us, we've to let him know that surpassing your Seniors isn't an easy task!"

Chapter 390: The Realm of Heavenly Completion

Dazzlingly bright and resplendent Spiritual Energy appeared akin to a pillar that supported the heavens, piercing through the skies from the mountain depths. As it connected with the gigantic vortex, the dense boundless Spiritual Energy turned into thick clouds of mist, obscuring everyone's vision of the scene present over there.

The area had clearly become the place that attracted the most attention within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy during this period of time.

Every day, there would be countless students that would look towards that direction with curiosity and anticipation present within their eyes. Over these last ten days, the deal struck between Mu Chen and Dean Tai Cang had already propagated throughout the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Everyone knew that once Mu Chen breaks through to Heavenly Completion Stage within this month, he might be permitted to participate in the opening of the Northern Heavens Continent's "Divine Spiritual Mountain". However, this event for the elites at the peak of the younger generation was something that the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was unable to participate in. There were even some rumors flying about in the outside world due to this, causing dissatisfaction and indignance to surface within the hearts of the students. Why did they only accept those geniuses nurtured with unlimited resources from sects, or clans? If they truly wanted to compare, why didn't they compete with those outstanding leviathans that have gained fame and popularity after leaving the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?

How many Sovereigns have walked out from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy? Of them, how many have dazzled and shone within the Great Thousand Worlds? Compared to that, how many did those powers and influences managed to nurture?

If those Sovereigns that have walked out from Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy were to be counted in, the entire Northern Heavens Continent would tremble in fear from their might.

Therefore, the absolute majority of the students had a supportive stance towards Mu Chen's wish to participate in this "Divine Spiritual Mountain". Naturally, there were a minority of intellectually-sound people that had some doubts about Mu Chen being overly reckless. After all, even if he was to break through to Heavenly Completion Stage, compared to elites at the peak of the younger generation in the Northern Heavens Continent, there was still quite a large disparity present.

Those elites were even more difficult to deal with than Mo Longzi.

Naturally, regardless of that, the attention of seemingly the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was focused on the mountains in the academy's depths. Everyone wanted to know exactly if this youth, which had pierced his way and rushed straight ahead within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy without a single stop, would actually be able to reach the heavens once again.

Under this anticipation, yet another three days past by.

Of the one month duration, already the last two days remained!

Freshman region

The vast public square present before the lake was the usual training grounds for the Goddess Luo Association members. However, at this moment, it was packed full of people, with the large majority not having any intent to train or cultivate. Instead, raising their heads, they gazed towards the direction where the gigantic glowing Spiritual Energy pillar had met with the heavens.

During the last two days of the given one month, there was still not a single movement detected from Mu Chen, with no signs of any breakthroughs present from him.

This made quite a few Goddess Luo Association members to secretly pespire in anxiousness. As of now, all the students within the entire

Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy were paying attention to this matter. Although Mu Chen being unable to break through to Heavenly Completion Stage within a month wouldn't cause his fame and prestige to suffer, it would still cause a slight bit of disappointment within some people. After all, they held too much anticipation towards his success.

"Luo Li, it's down to the last two days...can Mu Chen succeed?" In the middle of the public square, Ye Qingling looked towards the black-dressed young girl who always had a calm expression present on her face. Finally, unable to hold it in, her jade-like hands clenched uncontrollably as she asked out.

With a faint smile, Luo Li replied, "It's the same if he succeeds or not. Cultivation can't be forced or rushed."

Indeed, Luo Li had some dissatisfaction towards the criteria of one month that Dean Tai Cang put forth to Mu Chen. The wavering Mu Chen was experiencing previously was due to him being forced to the point of being slightly anxious and rushed. Added with his rapid progress in cultivation upon entering the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, it had caused his mental state to become unstable, which almost lead to a disaster to his mental realm. Regardless of anything, from her point of view, Dean Tai Cang had to take some responsibility for this matter.

Although Luo Li knew that the realm of Mu Chen's mental state would be even more firm and stable from the experience of this matter, she was just a young girl in her teens. Furthermore, she was a girl that was worried for her loved one. As if she would maintain an absolutely neutral point of view to judge this entire situation. Therefore, her emotional state was still that of a girl trying to protect the person she loved.

"However, other people aren't thinking like that..." replied Ye Qingling in a helpless tone.

"Training and cultivation are personal matters. One doesn't need to care about the perceptions of others," said Luo Li with a faint smile. "Furthermore, isn't there still two more days? Before the final moment has past, one shouldn't make such a hasty verdict."

"That's the only thing we can do," replied Ye Qingling with a gentle sigh.

Under the attention of the masses within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, time elapsed slowly and quietly, as yet another day went by. Everyone felt as if the atmosphere within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had turned somewhat pressing and stifling. Even when training and cultivating, people would turn their gazes towards the glowing Spiritual Energy pillar shooting out from the ground, appearing as if it was hoisting up the heavens.

As scheduled, the final day arrived under the anticipation of everyone.

As the scorching sun's rays illuminated the horizon, gentle sunlight irradiated every corner of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Today, the greater half of the students in the entire academy had seemingly stopped their training and cultivation. All of them wanted to see if a miracle would appear on the final day of the deal. On the quiet and secluded mountain peak, Ling Xi sat on the porch before her bamboo house. Her jade-like hands propping up her cheeks, while her black hair scattered about, her beautiful eyes focused on the gigantic glowing Spiritual Energy pillar in the far distance.

Sitting by Ling Xi's side was Su'er, whose ponytails were wagging about. A worried expression hung on her small face as she asked, "Will Big Brother Mu Chen succeed, Elder Sis Ling Xi?"

Gently rubbing her little face, Ling Xi gave a faint smile. Shaking her head, she replied, "I don't know."

Due to the overpowering amount of Spiritual Energy present there, it had completely masked any fluctuations that might have radiated from Mu Chen. At this moment, even she was unable to understand the slightest bit of the latter's current situation.

As Su'er's jet-black eyes opened wide as she stared at the scorching sun slowly descending from the horizon, her little hands came together, praying for the sun to slow down in its descent below the mountain.

However, such a naïve wish obviously wouldn't have any result. Without any change in speed, the sun traveled across the sky, quietly moving from

noon to dusk. Under the twilight from the sunset, a faint red glow was casted across the enter Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Nevertheless, there still wasn't any movement beneath the gigantic glowing Spiritual Energy pillar.

As countless students looked towards the setting sun descending across the horizon, a gentle sigh rang through their hearts. Looks like their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was still unable to participate in the most important occasion for the elites at the peak of the Northern Heavens Continent's younger generation...

The setting sun was gradually concealed by the ends of the earth. As it completely disappeared below the earth, the entire sky turned dark and dim.

Sigh

Within the dark and dim world, sounds of people sighing rang out. Countless students shrugged their shoulders in slight disappointment, before preparing to scatter their ten days worth of attention.

Bang!

However, just at this instant, a low and deep sound suddenly resounded across the world. A gigantic Spiritual Energy wave seemed to surge and spread out across all directions in the sky akin to a tidal wave.

Whoosh!

Countless people furiously raised their heads, looking towards the depths of the mountains with shock present in their eyes. Violent and intense fluctuations were unexpectedly surfacing from the gigantic glowing Spiritual Energy pillar. As wave after wave of Spiritual Energy radiated out, it grew increasingly boundless and rampant.

"There's movement!"

Astonishing sounds of cheering erupted within the Freshman region as emotional expressions filled the faces of the Goddess Luo Association members.

Raising her clear and limpid eyes, Luo Li quietly looked at the glowing pillar, where strong and powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuations were currently surfacing from it. At this moment, her jade-like hands within her sleeves started to quietly tense up.

On the mountain peak, shock was present in the eyes of Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong as they took in the scene unfurling before them.

On the small island on the lake, the two sisters, Su Xuan and Su Ling'er, stood quietly, fluctuations present within their beautiful eyes as they looked at the glowing Spiritual Energy pillar fluctuating in the distance.

In other places around the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, those extremely famous and influential characters like He Yao, Xu Huang and Zhao Qingshan had also casted their gazes over as shock was similarly present within their eyes.

Bang! Bang!

The gigantic Spiritual Energy waves were getting increasingly rampant as each wave went by. At the end, they appeared akin to rumbling tsunamis, blanketing the sky. The dazzling brilliance radiating from them caused the dim and dark sky to regain its brightness once again.

As the rampaging Spiritual Energy waves were violent, a clear roar suddenly filled the sky. Akin to the howl of a tiger and the roar of a dragon, it resounded abruptly from the depths of the mountain!

As the howling sound radiated out, one could feel the extremely powerful Spiritual Energy contained within it.

Whoosh!

The glowing Spiritual Energy pillar suddenly started to intensely vibrate. In the next moment, eye-piercing brilliance erupted in front of everyone's eyes from the base of the glowing pillar, shooting straight towards the sky.

Boom!

The glowing Spiritual Energy pillar exploded apart, transforming into

glowing dots that blotted the skies. Within the myriad of glowing dots, a foot long clump of brilliance surfaced, with a little person radiating with brilliance sitting within. The little person was vivid and lifelike, appearing identical to Mu Chen. Clearly, this was his Spirit.

However, at this moment, his Spirit appeared extremely corporeal, as if it was an exact copy of his actual body. A strong and powerful feeling could be felt pervading throughout its entire body.

At this moment, the sitting Spirit started to slowly open its eyes. An abstruse feeling akin to starry skies appeared within its pair of eyes. As rays of brilliance erupted from within, they looked like the sparkling dots of stars in the night sky, appearing abnormally mysterious.

Raising its little hands, it opened its mouth. At this moment, the glowing Spiritual Energy dots that blotted the sky started to flow together, before finally being sucked cleanly up by the little Spirit.

The rays of brilliance radiating around the Spirit grew increasingly corporeal, while bits of golden brilliance even started to surface around it. Undoubtedly, it had turned much, much more corporeal than before.

Whoosh!

As the Spirit rushed towards the sky, it transformed into a streak of light. Piercing straight through the top of the heavens, huge gales swept out from it. However, it was unable to cause much damage to it, as if it possessed the great ability to travel anywhere within the heavens.

At the sight of this, the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy burst out with cheers. They're clear that once a person's Spirit could leave his body and roam around the heavens and earth without being extinguished, it was the Heavenly Completion!

Clearly, Mu Chen had truly broken through to the last realm of the three Heavenly Stages, the Heavenly Completion Stage!

Chapter 391: Punishment Spiritual Combat Doll

Disorder and liveliness was inevitable within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Even after the complete scattering of the brilliant rays in the sky, the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was still in an excited and frenzied state. Buzzing about from the chattering of countless people, all of the discussion topics were about the strange phenomena that sprung out from Mu Chen.

All of them had assumed that Mu Chen had still failed in the given one month span. However, who would have expected that Mu Chen would pull such a spectacular reversal at the final moment. Thinking about the spectacle that had unfurled before them, one wouldn't be able to count how many people had their eyes opened wide, brimming with amazement and astonishment.

As the atmosphere of the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy flared up, in a large hall within the central region of the academy, Dean Tai Cang and the other Elders had their gazes converged on the light screen before them. The scene shown within it was precisely the phenomena created from Mu Chen's breakthrough.

"That little fella...he actually broke through successfully. Formidable." Hall Master Mo You couldn't help smacking his lips as he sighed in admiration. That Mu Chen stayed silent for the later half of the month. They never imagined that he would show them such a counterattack at the night of the final day. This spectacle had caused even them to become secretly stupefied.

Hearing his words, Elder Zhu Tian and the other Elders nodded their heads in agreement. That Mu Chen was truly worthy of his reputation of being able to contend for supremacy with a heavenly-blessed child like Ji Xuan. His talent truly was rather astonishing.

"Dean, since Mu Chen has broken through to Heavenly Completion Stage, what about the 'Divine Spiritual Mountain'?" asked Mo You as he

looked towards Dean Tai Cang, who was sitting in the headmost position.

Gently patting the armrest, a solemn expression appeared on Dean Tai Cang's face. Faced with Mu Chen's successful breakthrough, even he was slightly surprised. However, while feeling admiration and happiness for Mu Chen's talent, he was also starting to get slightly hesitant of his previous commitment to him. Being such an outstanding student, if Mu Chen was properly guided and nurtured for the next half a year, he might be able to gain some honor for their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy in the upcoming Great Spiritual Academy Competition. However, if anything was to occur during the "Divine Spiritual Mountain", it would truly be an enormous loss for their academy.

Seeing the expression present on Dean Tai Cang's face, Elder Zhu Tian and the other Elders didn't chime in their thoughts and questions. From the looks of it, they understood the apprehension Dean Tai Cang was feeling. It truly would be too unfortunate to lose such an outstanding student.

"Why don't we make this point clear to Mu Chen? He should understand that the current him isn't too suitable to participate in the Divine Spiritual Mountain," said a white-haired Elder in a deep voice.

"This way will cause the morale of the students to suffer too huge of a blow. For the past few days, the deal between Mu Chen and the Dean has propagated throughout the academy. If we are to renege on this, it might not be too good." After thinking awhile, Mo You added in while shaking his head.

"However, it's still better than to lose such an extraordinary student..."

"This is indeed troublesome..."

"..."

As the Heavenly Seated Elders started to openly discuss on this matter, a decision wasn't made even after an hour. Naturally, all of them wanted their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy to participate in the "Divine Spiritual Mountain". After all, this truly was the greatest occasion that occurred within their Northern Heavens Continent. Due to their

academy's absence in this occasion for the past few years, it had caused many rumours and tongues to wag about. Being unable to refute them, their academy had always kept their silence on this matter. Nevertheless, thinking about this always made them feel sullen.

If Mu Chen really wanted to participate, and could even achieve an outstanding performance at the Divine Spiritual Mountain, they would be able to refute those slanderous rumors. This would truly bring quite a good benefit for their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

However, it would simultaneously bring about the danger of losing an extraordinary student as Mu Chen.

Should they take the risk for such danger?

Sitting in the main seat, Dean Tai Cang silently looked at the five Heavenly Seated Elders undergoing their bantering and discussion. After a long while, with a wave of his hand, he silenced their voices, before slowly speaking out, "Since I've made this deal with Mu Chen, and he has successfully achieved this goal, we truly don't have any reason to continue to obstruct him."

"That's..." Tthe five Heavenly Seated Elders looked towards Dean Tai Cang. Did this indicate his approval for Mu Chen's participation?

"However..."

After hesitating awhile, Dean Tai Cang continued speaking out in a deep tone, "Truly, this matter is filled with danger. Therefore, we can't be careless, and need full confidence before approving his participation. Mo You, inform Mu Chen to come to the punishment platform tomorrow. If he's able to pass the final test, I'll approve of his participation for this upcoming Divine Spiritual Mountain!"

...

The next day

When the news about Mu Chen's final test was spread around the academy, the atmosphere within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, which had rose to a frenzy yesterday, instantly turned explosive.

Freshman Region

After resting for the night, Mu Chen appeared in the public square under Luo Li's accompaniment, leading to the crowd of emotion-filled Goddess Luo Association members to gather around them. Chirping and chattering rang out, causing them to appear exceedingly lively and noisy.

Waving her hands to scatter the emotional crowd, Ye Qingling frowned as she spoke out, " "Why is there still a test for you? Haven't you successfully broken through to Heavenly Completion Stage? Could it be that the Dean and the Elders are regretting their deal?"

"The Dean and the Elders are taking my safety into consideration. After all, the people participating in the Divine Spiritual Mountain are the true elites at the peak of the younger generation of the Northern Heavens Continent. Even Mo Longzi's not considered the strongest in that group," replied Mu Chen with a smile. There wasn't any resentment in his tone, as he was extremely clear on the origin of the Dean and Elder's hesitation.

"Today's test might not be that simple. Be careful." Luo Li said softly.

"Okay. It's time for some action. I really want to see what difficult problem the Dean and the Elders have prepared for me," said Mu Chen with a smile, before grabbing ahold of Luo Li and shooting into the sky. Heading straight towards the direction of the punishment platform, with seemingly all of the Goddess Luo Association members following behind them. Clearly, with the current situation, it was clear that no one had a clear mind to train and cultivate now.

As Mu Chen and the rest headed out of the Freshman region, they noticed countless students from other regions immediately focusing their attention on them. Nevertheless, being rather habitualised to such attentive gazes, not a change happened to Mu Chen as he shot across the sky.

Countless students started taking to the air from other areas, following suit, attempting to join in the liveliness.

As Mu Chen headed towards the punishment platform, he was amazed to see the numerous figures that filled the surroundings skies. It was

unknown how many students were already waiting for them. At the front of the lot stood a few familiar figures. Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong, Su Xuan, He Yao and those other elite students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy were unexpectedly present here.

"Good Luck, Mu Chen! We support you!" Standing beside Su Xuan, Su Linger waved her little hands around while shouting out in her cute voice.

"Big Brother Mu Chen." A cute and lovable voice rang out, causing Mu Chen to turn about, only to see Su'er standing not too far away from him. Dressed in a snow-white dress, with a cold and detached expression on her beautiful face, Ling Xi had unexpectedly appeared beside her.

Crossing gazes with Ling Xi, a sliver of a faint smile surfaced on her icy-cold and beautiful face. As the beautiful flower-like smile appeared, quite a few of the surrounding students were stupefied by this breathtaking scene, while some feelings of resentment and indignation surfaced in them. This Mu Chen's truly too evil! All of these Top-Class beautiful ladies of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy actually have connections with him!

Sending a smile towards them, Mu Chen didn't say a word, before focusing his gaze towards the gigantic punishment platform. The ones present there were Dean Tai Cang and some of the Elders of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy standing on the platform.

In a flash, under the countless attentive gazes from the surroundings, Mu Chen descended on the stone platform. Cupping his hands, he respectfully spoke out, "Mu Chen greets the Dean and the other Elders."

Faintly nodding his head, Dean Tai Cang looked towards Mu Chen, before speaking out with a faint smile, "Mu Chen, congratulations for successfully breaking through to Heavenly Completion Stage. Although I've said that I'd let you participate in the "Divine Spiritual Mountain", I wish for you to understand how formidable your opponents will be. We really don't want to lose any more outstanding students anymore."

A solemn expression appeared on Mu Chen's face as he slowly replied, "I understand all of that. Therefore, if you've any test for me, I'll accept all of

them, Dean."

Feeling satisfied, Dean Tai Cang said, "This will be your final test. It's a very simple one, an appraisal of your combat capabilities."

Upon completing his statement, with a wave of his sleeve, three dark golden rays of light shot out from within. Landing on the stone platform, a shiver instantly shook throughout, before a deep voice caused the hearts of countless students to tremble.

As the dark golden brilliance slowly scattered, everyone casted their gazes over. Instantly, all of their eyes furiously contracted as the whooshing of people sucking in breaths of cold air rang out across the sky.

Three dark golden giants of approximately ten feet stood there. Their unadorned bodies were fully covered with spirit patterns. The motley dents across their bodies embodied the many combats they have been through, the battle scars left from fight after fight. Quietly standing on the platform, overbearingly chilling fluctuations quietly radiated from them.

"These are..."

Upon seeing them, a subtle change occurred on the faces of Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong and the rest. "Punishment Spiritual Combat Dolls?"

Astonished shrieks erupted within the dense crowds, with even some Seniors showing faces filled with shock. Those Punishment Spiritual Combat Dolls were said to be a special combat spiritual doll made by the Punishment Hall. In the entire hall, there were only eighteen of them, with all of them possessing strength comparable to Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase. Furthermore, they won't feel any pain, having resilient bodies that were difficult to move or shake. When it came to combat, even experts of Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase would be extremely hard-pressed when faced against them.

However, Dean Tai Cang had actually brought out three of them out! What was this for?

The faces of Ye Qingling and those members of the Goddess Luo

Association turned slightly ugly, with the beautiful eyes of Luo Li even starting to faintly contract.

Three Spiritual Combat Dolls. That was comparable to three experts at the same realm as Mo Longzi.

"Mu Chen."

Ignoring the clamoring that filled the skies, Dean Tai Cang extended his hand out. Pointing towards the Spiritual Combat Doll, a deep voice rang out from him, "Defeat them, and you'll have the qualifications to participate in the Divine Spiritual Mountain. If not, even if you lose trust in me, I'll not accept your participation in that occasion. That's because, I don't want our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy to lose another outstanding student again."

"This is the final test. Mu Chen, do you dare to take it up?!"

The mountainous gazes coming from the surroundings had converged on the body of the thin and handsome youth, while countless people clenched their fists. This test was too vicious...

Under the attentive gazes from countless people, not a single fluctuation appeared on Mu Chen's face. Without speaking a word, he slowly took a step forward.

Hua!

Shock flooded through the hearts of all the students. Mu Chen had already made his move, and made his decision.

He had... taken up this challenge!

Chapter 392: Demonic Pillar Reappears

Under everyone's attentive gazes, Mu Chen took a step forward. However, this small, small step caused the surrounding atmosphere to tighten and tense up, with shock running through the eyes of countless students. Clearly, Mu Chen's action was one that had exceeded their expectations.

Those were three Punishment Spiritual Combat Dolls of strength comparable to Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase.

Even a person like Mo Longzi would only have the option to scuttle and flee like a rat when faced with those three combat dolls. Although Mu Chen had successfully broken through, he shouldn't be capable of defeating three combat dolls that were specially built for fighting, right? Furthermore, those combat dolls didn't know fear and didn't shrink. Mu Chen wanting to defeat them was a nigh impossible task for a good deal of students to believe.

In the far distance, solemn expressions were also present on the faces of Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong. Those three combat dolls had also caused them to feel shock running through their hearts. Dean Tai Cang truly didn't leave any stones unturned in his final test.

"Can that fellow, Mu Chen, pass through this test?"

Shooting a look at each other, both of them could see the doubt and uncertainty present within each other's eyes.

On the punishment platform, Hall Master Mo You and the other Elders watched with peculiar gazes towards Mu Chen, who had walked forward. Looks like that brat had quite some confidence in himself to actually dare to take such a test.

Faintly nodding his head, Dean Tai Cang spoke out with a smile, "Since you've made your decision, there's nothing more to say. Everything will be decided from your results."

"Yes." replied Mu Chen respectfully.

"Then," with a wave of his sleeve, an invisible fluctuation radiated out from Dean Tai Cang. In the next instant, a deep and low voice resounded out, "let's begin!"

Bang!

As Dean Tai Cang's final words rang out, the three combat dolls furiously opened their eyes, dark golden rays of brilliance sparkling within them. Spiritual patterns started surfacing one after another on their icy-cold and tough bodies, while powerful fluctuations gushed and radiated out.

Boom!

The eyes of the three combat dolls radiating with golden light locked straight onto Mu Chen, before they started to take huge strides forward. The entire stone platform trembled as they moved, rumbling as they rushed explosively towards him.

Although possessing pretty large physiques akin to that of giants, their speed was absolutely not slow, appearing right before Mu Chen in a short span of a few breaths. As their fists erupted with golden light, they shattered the air apart, brimming with power that caused people's scalps to crawl as they violently rumbled forward.

Roar!

A dragon roar rang out from within Mu Chen, before a dragon's shadow appeared, coiling around his body. In the next instant like a spectre, Mu Chen's figure retreated back in a flash.

Bang!

Three strong and sturdy golden metallic fists violently smashed apart the ground where Mu Chen had just stood, causing cracks to instantly appear on the extraordinarily built surface. After missing their first attacks, without the slightest bit of hesitation, the three combat dolls explosively shot forward, sending frightening attacks sweeping continuously out towards Mu Chen.

Facing those terrifying attacks heading towards him, Mu Chen

continuously retreated, dodging and weaving about them with razor thin distances. As the dragon shadow sparkled, his speed dramatically increased, allowing him to evade those frightening metal fists that could easily send him flying.

Due to his promotion of strength, Mu Chen's speed fortunately had similar advancements. If not, he would long be pounded into pulp by the three combat dolls. Nevertheless, continuing to dodge and evade like that would not be helpful, since he was totally unable to pass this test like this.

Countless gazes converged on the pursuit happening in the sky that caused people's hearts to tremble and palpitate as everyone clenched their fists tightly, palms completely covered in sweat.

However, facing the obstructive encirclement of the three combat dolls, such evasion and dodging wasn't the best way to go about defeating them.

Bang!

Just as this thought flashed within the minds of a few students, an unforeseen change happened. Dazzling golden light suddenly blossomed from the body of a combat doll, as the spiritual patterns covering its body became extremely conspicuous. At the same time, its speed drastically increased, arriving before Mu Chen, who was displaying his Dragon Soaring Technique to evade, in a single step.

As its gigantic body appeared right before Mu Chen, its shadow immediately enveloped the latter, bringing about a powerful pressure that instantly pressed down on Mu Chen.

Whoosh!

Not the slightest shred of mercy was present in that pair of sparkling golden eyes as golden light blossomed from its golden fist like a scorching sun. Bringing about frightening power that was sufficient to level a mountain, it travelled akin to a bolt of lightning, violently hammering down towards Mu Chen's chest.

Hua!

Clamoring noises instantly erupted throughout the surroundings, while

slight changes appeared on the lovable faces of Ye Qingling, Su'er, and Su Linger as their eyes were filled with nervousness. Being smashed by such a fist from the combat doll wasn't any laughable matter.

Amidst the clamoring, Mu Chen's figure fleetingly appeared in a flash. Looking at the golden glowing fist about to envelop him, a swift and fierce glint appeared within his eyes.

Bang!

Black lightning arcs furiously danced about the surface of Mu Chen's body, shrouding his entire figure within. At this instant, his body seemed to have expanded by a inch.

Thunder God's Physique!

Clenching his hands, without the slightest bit of hesitation, Mu Chen sent his fist rumbling out. Covered in black arcing and dancing lightning, astonishingly powerful energy fluctuations radiated out from it.

The two fists, one big and one small, howled out, shattering space apart before violently smashing against one another in front of the shocked gazes of everyone in the surroundings.

Boom!

Metallic grating noises rang out at the instant of impact as violent energy ripples visible to the naked-eye swept out from the centre of the two fists! Immediately, the ground beneath the point of impact had collapsed. Mu Chen was forced back dozens of steps, while the combat doll was similarly sent back, its giant feet digging two enormous gulches in the ground. Finally, falling down on its back, it smashed the ground beneath it.

Seeing this aftermath of the exchange of fists, the jaws of countless people were left agape while shock and astonishment filled their eyes. Mu Chen had unexpected sent a combat doll back and down in a straight up contest of strength. How frightening was the power contained in that fist?

Stabilising his body, Mu Chen gently rotated his arm, stretching it as a solemn expression appeared within his eyes. That combat doll sure was

formidable. If he hadn't broken through, he would be injured by that single punch from it. However, it was a pity for the combat doll, as the current Mu Chen had became much, much stronger compared to one month ago, when he had fought with Mo Longzi.

"I won't be able to deal with the three combat dolls if this continues."

Mu Chen casted his gaze towards the three combat dolls. They didn't feel any pain and fear, and once combat starts, they will never stop or feel tired. Therefore, he couldn't rely on the so-called imposing Aura to press down on them, with the only thing he could do was to fight them head-on. However, although Mu Chen was happy and fearless to engage in a heads-up contest, faced with the abnormal built of the combat dolls, he might not be able properly deal with them.

A spark flashed within Mu Chen's eyes as he decided, Since it's like this, let's be vicious once and for all!

Whoosh!

The three combat dolls shot forward once again as fists came howling out, all containing strength that could topple mountains.

Stomping on the ground, Mu Chen rushed straight up to the sky. Clapping his hands together, a deep and fierce roar suddenly rang out from his throat. In the next instant, a glowing scarlet-red pillar shot straight towards the clouds from his crown, within it appeared a gigantic, jet black demonic pillar towering over the skies.

At the instant when the demonic pillar appeared, waves of fiendish Aura billowed and swept out. If one were to listen carefully, one would be able to faintly discern humming and trembling noises as the demonic pillar attempted to resist Mu Chen's control. However, as it struggled, the dark purplish flower patterns that covered the pillar started to sparkle with dim radiance, finally suppressing the resistance down.

"Is that the Great Meru Demonic Pillar?!"

The expressions of Dean Tai Cang and the various other Elders instantly changed upon seeing the demonic pillar. Flashes of radiance sparkled

within their eyes, while their minds trembled in shock. At their level of vision, they were naturally able to see that the demonic pillar before them wasn't any other projection, but the actual body of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar!

However, with Mu Chen's current strength, how was he able to control the Great Meru Demonic Pillar?

"The Great Meru Demonic Pillar seems to be suppressed and sealed by something!" Being the strongest person present, Dean Tai Cang was able to notice the dark purplish flowery patterns on the surface of the demonic pillar, which were radiating with fluctuations that were different from those of the demonic pillar. Those flowery patterns were suppressing the amount of fiendish Aura billowing out from the demonic pillar, forcing it to come under the control of Mu Chen.

Upon this discovery, amazement flashed within Dean Tai Cang's eyes, before gradually regaining his clarity. Looking deeply at Mu Chen in the sky, he was certain that there should be some secrets hidden within the latter's body. Being about to seal and suppress an ominous weapon from the ancient antiquity like that Great Meru Demonic Pillar, exactly what thing could do that?

Bang!

Nevertheless, the three combat dolls didn't show the slightest bit of fear and dread towards the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. With a stomp of their feet, they rushed across the horizon, sending violent attacks towards Mu Chen.

Looking down at the three golden rays of light shooting towards him, a smile started to curl up from the corner of his mouth. This was the first time that he had unveiled the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. Although it was in its repressed state, how could the strength of this ominous weapon of the ancient antiquity be compared to ordinary people? Having possessed such a powerful weapon, Mu Chen was sufficiently capable of suppressing any opponent of Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase.

Raising his hands in a hugging position, he violently swung his hands

down. As he did so, the gigantic Demonic Pillar furiously swept down. Akin to a mountain, it brought about its billowing fiendish Qi, seemingly shattering through space as it traveled across the sky. In a manner that seemed impossible to block, it heavily pounded down on the three golden combat dolls under the dumbfounded gazes coming from the surroundings.

Bang!

An astonishingly enormous bang resounded. Under the hammering of the gigantic jet-black demonic pillar, the three combat dolls had raised their golden hands, pressing up against the descending pillar in their attempts to hold it up. However, this ominous weapon of ancient antiquity wasn't something that could be handled by them! In the next instant, with a final bang, the black demonic pillar violently descended on the vast stone platform below. As the platform shattered and collapsed, the three combat doll were smashed straight into the depths of the earth!

The demonic pillar stood proudly in the punishment platform, gigantic cracks extended from it, while the three combat dolls were suppressed beneath it. At this moment, not a single movement could be detected from the demonic pillar as it radiated with fiendish Aura that blotted the skies.

Countless people had their eyes wide open as they observed this spectacle before them.

Mu Chen started to descend from the sky, subsequently landing on the top of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. Looking towards the three combat dolls that were suppressed beneath by the demonic pillar to the point of not being able to move, he turned his gaze towards Dean Tai Cang and the various other Elders, who had slightly spectacular expressions displayed on their faces. Cupping his hands, he spoke out with a smile, "Do you think I've passed this test, Dean?"

Chapter 393: Words of the Dean

Deathly silence hung in the surroundings.

Around the punishment platform, countless students had their mouths agape as they continued to stare at the spectacle before them—the gigantic demonic pillar quietly standing proudly on the ground, fiendish Qi that blotted the skies as it radiated with frightening fluctuations, while the three combat dolls were suppressed to the point of being unable to move, no longer displaying the ferocity that was present before.

This fight had ended at the speed that had clearly exceeded everyone's expectations.

Originally, everyone had expected an intense fight. However, who would have thought that Mu Chen would brandish a demonic pillar, suppressing the three combat dolls in such a direct fashion.

Looking at the ground being suppressed by the demonic pillar, a vacant expression appeared in the eyes of everyone as they thought, Those were three combat dolls that were comparable to Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase experts!

However, they were actually dealt with in such a manner...

"Too formidable..." Some people cried out. Looking at the top of the demonic pillar, there stood a thin figure, arrogantly facing the world. The imposing aura radiating from him caused the beautiful eyes of quite a few pretty girls to sparkle in splendor.

"Big Brother Mu's so awesome!"

After regaining their clarity from the astonishing fight that happened before their eyes, numerous members of the Goddess Luo Association couldn't help crying out in amazement as emotions flooded their expressions. The imposing manner in which Mu Chen instantly suppressed the three combat dolls was truly too breathtaking.

Looking at the figure standing proudly on the demonic pillar with her beautiful eyes, a faint and gentle smile surfaced on the corner of Luo Li's

mouth.

Looking at the youth standing quietly on the demonic pillar amidst the countless cheering noises from the surroundings, shades of red uncontrollably surfaced on the loveable face of Su Ling'er. To this young girl, who had had a first awakening towards love, this spectacle clearly possessed extremely strong killing power.

"What's the matter? Smitten by him?" said Su Xuan teasingly.

Instantly, the shades of red on Su Ling'er's lovable face grew deeper, before looking at Luo Li, who was standing not far from her, causing a faint pout to appear on her face. She truly didn't possess any confidence to face-off against an opponent of Luo Li's caliber.

"That fellow truly is formidable. During the time when he had joined us to complete the mission, even Bai Xuan was able to force him into a dangerous peril. However, now, even three combat dolls with strength of Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase are easily suppressed by him," said Su Xuan, unable to hold her thoughts in. Faced with the rapid increase of Mu Chen's strength, she truly had to exclaim in admiration.

"At this moment, I'm afraid that Mu Chen has the capabilities to vie for the leader of the Heavenly Rankings," said Su Linger softly. "However, why doesn't he do that? If he did so, he would truly become the person with the most fame and reputation in our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy."

With a gentle smile, Su Xuan replied, "That's because he doesn't care about being the leader of the Heavenly Rankings. Furthermore, he might not want to obtain Shen Cangsheng's position. There's always some tacit understanding between men, especially extremely outstanding ones like them."

Nodding her small head, Su Linger didn't continue to speak anymore.

At a slightly further position, compared to the astonished exclamations and cheering coming from the surroundings, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong appeared rather quiet. Looking vacantly at the figure standing on the demonic pillar in the distance, a complicated expression surfaced on their faces after a while.

"Looks like I've truly been surpassed this time." In the end, exhaling deeply, Shen Cangsheng shrugged his shoulders before sighing with a smile.

Hearing those words, Li Xuantong slightly nodded his head. Both of them knew that if they were the ones that were faced against those three combat dolls, they might have already been forced to miserably retreat. This was absolutely heavens apart from the breathtaking manner in which Mu Chen had achieved victory. That Freshman truly had already surpassed both of them.

Perhaps, this former Overlord of the Heavenly Rankings might have to concede his position.

Li Xuantong had been fighting with Shen Cangsheng in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy for so long. However, he never once imagined that a Freshman would successively overtake both of them.

Although both of them had previously forecasted such an occurrence, when it truly arrived, complicated feelings still surfaced within them. After all, both of them were prideful men.

"Nevertheless, I'll not give up just due to this," said Shen Cangsheng with a faint smile. Looking at the thin figure standing in the distance, his gaze grew increasingly resolute. Giving up that easily wasn't his, Shen Cangsheng's, style!

Hearing those words, a faint smile similarly appeared on Li Xuantong's face. Crossing his fingers together, there wasn't any dejection present within his eyes.

Above the punishment platform, Dean Tai Cang and the other Elders gradually regained their clarity, while slightly strange expressions appeared within their eyes. None of them had expected that the final test would be passed by Mu Chen in such a breathtaking fashion.

Staring deeply at Mu Chen, a laugh finally rang out from Dean Tai Cang as he spoke out with a smile, " Congratulations on passing the final test. As I've promised, you'll represent our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy and participate in this year's "Divine Spiritual Mountain", vying

for supremacy against the true geniuses at the peak of the younger generation in the Northern Heavens Continent."

"Hurray!"

As Dean Tai Cang's words rang out, astonishing cheering voices instantly erupted in the surrounding sky, the faces of countless students were filled with emotions. After so many years, their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was finally going to participate in the grandest occasion for the younger generation in the Northern Heavens Continent!

"Good luck, Brother Mu! Get rid of all those so-called geniuses! Let them know that our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was just not willing to play with them in the past! Once we play, we'll be able to stride across them like it's a game!"

"Mu Chen, your Senior Sisters are all rooting for you!"

"You have to strive for the glory of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy!"

Voices continued to ring out from the surroundings as all the students were clearly extremely emotional about this matter.

Looking at the emotion-filled students in the surroundings, Dean Tai Cang gave a helpless smile. With a faint shift of his gaze, he looked towards the group of somewhat silent people within the crowd of students, being Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong, He Yao and those elite students who were formerly at the top of their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Once the most influential figures within the academy, they had gradually been outshone and concealed by Mu Chen's increasing splendor.

Other than Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, who appeared rather fine, seemingly all of them had slightly dim expressions. Clearly, this fight had given them quite a blow to their spirits and minds.

Giving a gentle wave of his hand, Dean Tai Cang slowly started to silence the cheering voices that blotted the skies. Crossing his hands behind his back, he spoke out slowly, "Students, do all of you know about

the current circumstances of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?"

Hearing the sudden question posed by Dean Tai Cang, every student gawked, as vacant looks appeared on their faces.

"In the past few Great Spiritual Academy Competitions, not only was our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy ranked last amongst the five Great Academies, there were even some elite spiritual academies that achieved results that triumphed ours. This year, in this Great Spiritual Academy Competition, if we, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was to continue achieving the same result, there's a high possibility of us being ousted from the ranks of the five Great Academies."

Hearing the deep voice of Dean Tai Cang, countless students had faces filled with shock, before feeling deep shame and embarrassment rising from their hearts. When they were enjoying the satisfaction granted by being in one of the five great academies, they had forgotten about the dangerous situation that the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was enduring.

"Speaking about this point, it isn't that our student's are lacking in talent. The key factor is that our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy isn't utilising the extreme methods that other spiritual academies are using. In our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, regardless of what background you are, you only have an identity, which is the student of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. We won't give out enormous benefits just for the sake of roping in an elite genius, letting he or she stand above all other students. Therefore, there are times that our results would naturally fall behind."

With his hands crossed behind his back, Dean Tai Cang's figure appeared exceedingly imposing in the eyes of countless students, while his deep and firm voice resonated in everyone's hearts.

"I know that our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy isn't the final place for you all. After training and cultivating here, you will leave one day, heading towards greater places to struggle, temper and journey about. However, I hope that every single Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy

student will still retain the pride of being a student of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. As long as you never forget that you're a member of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, regardless of what you experience in the future, as long as you come back here, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy will be your final shelter, and the entire academy, will be your shield!"

Silence filled the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy as every student, and even the teachers and Elders looked towards the imposing figure standing in the distant sky, emotions surging within their hearts. To all of them, he was the spiritual pillar of the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

The eyes of a few students, especially those sentimental young girls, had already turned slightly red as pride and arrogance of being a member of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy rose within their hearts. Regardless of fame and reputation of the academy, the awe-inspiring figure standing tall and this academy had caused a warm and gentle feeling to surface within them.

Mu Chen vacantly stared at Dean Tai Cang as he faintly pursed his lips. In the next moment, a smile curled up from the corner of his mouth. He felt rejoiceful that he had chosen the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy to train and cultivate. A Dean that dared to proclaim that the entire academy would be one's shield wasn't a person that one can casually find in any spiritual academy.

Looking at the youths and young girls present around him, a rarely seen gentle expression appeared within Dean Tai Cang's eyes as he slowly said, "Naturally, I hope that everyone can remember what the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy has given you. It isn't strength, or power. What it is, is regardless of what we face, we won't easily give up or surrender! Even if we aren't one of the five Great Academies after this Great Spiritual Academy Competition, we—still—won't—give—up!"

A faint tremble instantly shook through the bodies of He Yao, Xu Huan, Zhao Qingshan and the other elite students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. At this moment, their faintly dim gazes seemingly

erupted with splendor, their gazes turned sharp once again.

Clap! Clap! Clap!

Ear-shattering clapping noises resounded like thunder as countless students had faces brimming with emotions. This was the first time that they've seen their usually stern and conscientious Dean actually speaking such motivational and awe-inspiring words.

Within the sea of students, both Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong had faint smiles present on their faces. Stepping forward under the ear-shattering claps, countless gazes immediately converged onto them.

"Dean..."

Looking towards Dean Tai Cang, Shen Cangsheng gave a smile, before saying out, "We, naturally, aren't going to give up that easily. However, similarly, I wish that you would trust us for once, Dean. We love the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Therefore, we're willing to fight for it. However, we do need some help."

"For example?" asked Dean Tai Cang in surprise.

"For example, opening the Door of the Northern Depths once again."

Standing upright in the air, his already straight figure appeared increasingly straight, like a ramrod, akin to a spear piercing through the heavens.

Chapter 394: Door of the Northern Depths

"Opening the Door of the Northern Depths..."

When those words from Shen Cangsheng fluttered across the sky, the surrounding air seemed to freeze up, while the expressions of Dean Tai Cang and the various other Elders faintly changed, with dark and gloomy shadows appearing within their eyes. Clearly, all of them didn't imagine that Shen Cangsheng would actually raise such a request.

The Door of the Northern Depths could be considered as the final tempering grounds for the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. However, due to the probability of death being too high, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had finally chose to close it after weighing the pros and cons. Due to lacking the most important area for tempering, the results of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy in the past years had slid down the rankings, with imminent danger of losing its title of being one of the Five Great Academies.

If the special methods that the other spiritual academies were using to poach elite geniuses were considered as external factors, the closure of the Door of the Northern Depths could be considered an internal factor for the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Many strong and powerful spiritual academies possessed final tempering grounds, as this was a rather important factor in allowing those elite students to have a fierce leap in strength. However, compared to the other Five Great Academies, the existence of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was considered the youngest. Therefore, some of its underlying aspects were lacking when compared to the other four academies.

Mu Chen went into a daze due to the solidification of the atmosphere. Only being in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy for a year, he naturally wasn't as clear about the Door of the Northern Depths as the other students. However, from the expressions present on Dean Tai Cang

and the other Elders, he could faintly discern how special the so-called 'Door of the Northern Depths' was.

"The Door of the Northern Depths, is too dangerous..." After pondering for quite a while, Dean Tai Cang finally replied in a slow voice.

"Dean, let me ask a question..."

After hearing Dean Tai Cang's deep words, Shen Cangsheng gave a faint smile as she spoke slowly, one word at a time, "Is there any leveled road, in an expert's path?"

Silence filled the skies once again as Shen Cangsheng's deep voice slowly resounded across the horizon. Splendid expressions appeared on the faces of countless students as they looked at the figure in the sky, ramrod straight like a spear piercing through the heavens, while unconcealable respect and worship erupted from their eyes. This was Shen Cangsheng, the Overlord of the Heavenly Rankings. Even though he was gradually being surpassed by Mu Chen, he still possessed an immovable position in the hearts of many students.

Gently exhaling a clump of white air, Mu Chen gave a thumbs-up towards Shen Cangsheng.

Turning silent for a short while, Dean Tai Cang finally gave a helpless laugh before replying, "I've actually been lectured by a smelly brat that's still wet behind his ears..."

Beside him, Elder Zhu Tian and the other Elders started laughing as a result of his reply.

"The Door of the Northern Depths wasn't completely closed in the past. We're also doing our best to repair and fill in the defects and flaws. Over these last few years, it can be considered that we've made a little progress in this. However, it's still extremely dangerous."

Looking towards Shen Cangsheng, Dean Tai Cang smiled, before waving his hand and said, "However, since you've already said those words, if I was to find more excuses, I might be inviting misfortune to myself. Hmph, alright. The Door of the Northern Depths will reopen once again.

However, there's a restriction to entry, which is that only the students in the top ten ranks on the Heavenly Rankings have the qualifications to enter, and is totally up to them to enter of their own free will."

Hearing Dean Tai Cang's reply, a smile that felt as if a heavy burden has been lifted off his shoulders appeared on Shen Cangsheng's face. With a hearty chuckle and a wide grin, he replied, "Then, please allow me entry to the Door of the Northern Depths."

"Count me in," said Li Xuantong with a faint smile.

Not far away, looking at the awe-inspiring pose of Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, before casting his gaze towards Su Xuan, who was standing in another direction, a dark shadow flashed within He Yao's eyes. Clenching his teeth, he stood up and shouted, "Count me in, too!"

He Yao's reply clearly caused lots of people to feel shocked, with even Su Xuan was shooting a peculiar look at him. Nevertheless, her beautiful eyes still showed dimness in them, without too much fluctuations present. He Yao's previous actions during the hunt had clearly aroused ire and disgust in her. Although she didn't always quite like He Yao, she was able to communicate with him just like normal friends, but that event had caused her to stop all contact with him, estranging him from her.

As He Yao's gaze remained on Su Xuan and spotting the dim gaze present within her eyes, his expression grew increasingly dim and sad. Indeed, he had too much blood rushing towards his brain during the previous incident with her. He had only wanted to defeat Mu Chen to wipe the humiliation he received clean from the latter. Naturally, he never thought of truly hurting Su Xuan...after all, she was the girl he liked.

"Dean, what you've said earlier was too touching. Therefore, I wish to do my utmost and fight for our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. If we don't enter the Door of the Northern Depths, I'm afraid that we might be overtaken by the geniuses from other top academies." said He Yao with a bitter and astringent smile. Indeed, he had a rather handsome appearance, with only an extra feeling that tilted towards coldness and gloominess. However, within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, there were

quite a few young girls that were smitten by him.

"Boss is the best!"

After hearing his words, even those members of the Demon Gate's were looking at He Yao with slightly surprised expressions. Clearly, this was somewhat different from the usual gloomy shadow that was present on him, causing those Demon's Gate members to feel emotional. He Yao's decision had caused them to feel glory and honor for being under his lead.

"It's truly difficult for that fellow to get hot-blooded, for once." Su Ling'er also felt surprised as she leaned towards Su Xuan and whispered.

Su Xuan cast a look towards He Yao with her beautiful eyes. Seeing her looking over, He Yao's body started to quietly grow straighter. This time, he did not see the cold and detached expression that was usually present within her eyes. It even had faint traces of reverting to the normal gaze she had used in the past, causing him secretly feel slightly emotional.

The entire atmosphere within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy seemed to be roused by the awe-inspiring display of Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong and He Yao. Quite a few students rubbed their hands together, itching to step into the top ten ranks and truly fight bravely for the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Feeling this roused atmosphere, a smile appeared on Xu Huang's face as he felt as though the blood within his body had started to boil. Being a member of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, he should not be backing down at this moment.

Therefore, under the proud and admiration-filled beautiful eyes of Xu Qingqing standing beside him, Xu Huang had also taken a step forward.

At another corner of the crowd, Zhao Qingshan and Mu Fengyang shot a look at each other, noticing the helpless smiles on each other's faces. At this time, if they were to back down, they might truly be looked down upon by everyone. Their pride and arrogance weren't weaker than any other person's. Therefore, at the moment when Xu Huang had stepped forward, they too had done the same.

Following this, with great emotions swirling within them, countless students noticed that of the top ten ranks on the Heavenly Rankings, other than Mu Chen, Luo Li and Su Xuan, all of the rest had actually stood up. This awe-inspiring spectacle caused the blood of the crowd to boil and surge. Regardless of the usual conflicts and battles between cliques within the academy, at this critical moment, the unity present within the academy truly made all of them feel proud and honored for being in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

As Dean Tai Cang and the various other Elders looked at the awe-inspiring spectacle unfurling before their eyes, all of them gawked, before looking at each other and the bitter smiles present on their faces. However, what came with those bitter smiles were gratification and pride. When their students were truly able to stand up and fight for the honor and glory of the academy, who dared to say that this wasn't the success of their spiritual academy?

Waving his hand to silence the flared voices that blotted the skies, Dean Tai Cang announced with a gentle smile, "Three days from now, I'll bring Mu Chen towards the Divine Spiritual Mountain. After that matter, our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy will reopen the Door of the Northern Depths!"

Hearing his proclamation, countless students were loudly cheering. This time, for the sake of protecting the title of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy as one of the Five Great Academies, everyone was willing to do their utmost, with no expense spared.

Looking at the spiritual academy that was filled with boiling emotions, Mu Chen gave a faint smile, before slowly clenching his fists. Since everyone was going to give their all, he, of all people, couldn't slack behind. At the very least, he had to fight for the face of their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy at the Divine Spiritual Mountain...

In a giant jet-black hall, the cold and dark atmosphere suppressed everything within it.

Within the centremost position of the giant hall, the Black Dragon

Sovereign suddenly opened his eyes, with a cold and dark glow surfaced within them. Raising his head, he looked towards a dark corner of the giant hall before saying in an indifferent voice, "I've confirmed the news. The Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy will participate in the Divine Spiritual Mountain this time. As for the participant, it's the person that has obtained our Great Meru Demonic Pillar, Mu Chen."

"Haha! The Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy truly has some guts. Those brats of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy that are still wet behind their ears actually dares to participate in such an occasion..." A chilling and dark radiance surfaced in the dark, as a human figure faintly appeared, bringing along an overcast laughter resounding throughout the giant hall.

"It's also good for them to come...however, how do we go about implementing our plan? Over the years, we've been patiently enduring for too long," asked the Black Dragon Sovereign with a faint smile.

"Has everything been appropriately prepared? That old mixed hair bird of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's big trouble." A deep and dark voice rang out from another corner of the giant hall.

"Yes, rest assured. There will be people that will naturally deal with that old mixed hair bird," replied the Black Dragon Sovereign as he nodded his head. As dark hatred bloomed to their extreme limit within his eyes, he slowly spoke out, "This time, we'll let the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy know that we, the Demonic Dragon Palace, are still the strongest in the Northern Heavens Continent!"

"Also, we must get back our Great Meru Demonic Pillar...that's the treasure of our Demonic Dragon Palace."

With a faint smile, the Black Dragon Sovereign spoke out once again, "Since that brat dares to participate in the Divine Spiritual Mountain, that will be all too good..."

As his voice rang out, he waved his sleeve, only for the space within the giant hall to violently warp and distort. In the next moment, it turned into a spatial pathway, within which intense ear-piercing shrieks and screeches

continuously rang out, akin to the howling of thousands of demons. As it took form, a thin and frail black figure slowly walked out from the jet-black pathway.

Covered in ordinary hemp clothing, the figure had a rather common look. His pair of eyes appeared with a greyish-black tint, akin to a pool of stagnant water, with not a single emotional fluctuation present within. A long black spear was carried on his back, encased in howling black figures that emitted ear-piercing ghostly wails and wolf howls.

After leaving the spatial pathway, not a single movement was seen from him as he stood there, just like a cold and frosty piece of rock.

"Xingtian, three days from now, be prepared to participate in the Divine Spiritual Mountain. Your mission this time is to kill the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's Mu Chen, and retrieve the Great Meru Demonic Pillar from his hands!" Looking at the stone-like figure that seemed to not possess much vitality, the Black Dragon Sovereign gave his orders in a slow voice.

Slightly raising his seemingly dead eyes, the cold and frosty figure gently nodded his head, before turning around, not uttering a single word since his appearance.

However, this strangeness brought a chill to anyone who would see this spectacle.

Chapter 395: Get Moving

The flared-up emotions within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy lasted for three entire days before gradually dissipating away. However, every single person was able to sense the changes to the atmosphere within the academy. In the past, one would continue to notice internal conflicts between cliques and factions happening within the academy. However, as the Great Spiritual Academy Competition half a year later drew closer, those conflicts quietly decreased and toned down. This was especially pronounced since the current situation of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was brought to light by Dean Tai Cang, causing the emotions of quite a few students to rise and soar. Since they were members of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, they would naturally work hard and fight for its honor and glory.

Therefore, as the critical moment drew closer, everyone conscientiously trained and cultivated. Some of the elite students ranked near the top ten ranks on the Heavenly Rankings tried to endlessly pierce through into the top ten rankings in their attempt to obtain the qualifications to enter the "Door of the Northern Depths". Although they knew the dangers brimming within it, at such a critical moment, there was no one backing down without a fight.

After three days had past since the day of the test, it was time for Mu Chen to leave the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy to participate in the most prestigious occasion for the younger generations of the Northern Heavens Continent.

Within the little building in the Freshman region, having completed his preparations, Mu Chen turned and gave a smile towards Luo Li, who was standing beside him, and said, "Let's go."

Although there's only one participation quota for the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy this time, Luo had planned to follow Mu Chen, which wasn't met with any rejection from him. After all, being able to spend more time together with Luo Li was exactly what he was looking forward to.

With a smile, Luo Li gave a faint smile while gently nodding her head. In the next moment, the two of them shot out, transforming into two streaks of light, rushing across the horizon. As they headed towards a majestic giant hall within the centremost location of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, Dean Tai Cang and the various other Elders were already there waiting for them.

Descending down from the air, Mu Chen's gaze swept past Dean Tai Cang, before faintly gawking as it landed on side of the latter. There stood a slender and beautiful girl dressed elegantly in a white dress, radiating with a cold and detached demeanour, which was precisely Ling Xi.

Mu Chen clearly felt slightly peculiar as to why Ling Xi was present here. After all, although Ling Xi had a status as an Elder within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, she participated extremely little in the affairs of the academy.

As though sensing the doubtful gaze coming from Mu Chen, a faint smile appeared on Ling Xi's face. At this moment, her cold and detached expression quietly disappeared cleanly from her face, causing some of the white-haired Elders to feel shocked and amazed. After all, they knew all too well about Ling Xi's detached and distant behavior. Within the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, they had never seen her show a smiling face to anyone.

However, before their very eyes, she had actually given a faint gentle smile towards Mu Chen, which completely caused them to lurch forward in shock.

"This time, I'll follow you two towards the Divine Spiritual Mountain," said Ling Xi with a faint smile.

"Haha. Elder Ling Xi's strength is extraordinary. With her joining, it would be much safer for you two," said Dean Tai Cang with a smile. He was also extremely astonished by Ling Xi's request to tag along with the two. Nevertheless, this was something that he wouldn't reject, as having one more person would increase the safety of their group. Although there shouldn't be dumb influences in the Northern Heavens Continent that

dared to blatantly attack their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, being a little more safe was always better.

While he said those words, Dean Tai Cang shot a deep and profound look towards Mu Chen. The Ling Xi who usually didn't give a damn about anything that happened within the academy had suddenly requested to tag along. No matter how one looked at it, she definitely had some connection with Mu Chen. Furthermore, this tagging along clearly showed her intention to protect him.

Ling Xi had actually taken the initiative to protect Mu Chen?

This was an extremely inconceivable matter within Dean Tai Cang's eyes. After all, he had a rather good understanding towards the cold and detached personality that Ling Xi had. From his view, even if the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was to be destroyed, Ling Xi might not get too emotional about it. Therefore, he had a slight feeling of it being something akin of The Arabian Nights towards Ling Xi's consideration to follow along and protect Mu Chen.

However, regardless of his astonishment, Dean Tai Cang didn't plan to investigate the connection between Mu Chen and Ling Xi. Nevertheless, from what he could see, the relationship between the two might not be that simple after all...

Upon seeing the gaze coming from Dean Tai Cang, Mu Chen secretly cursed within his heart, before panning his head to look at Luo Li. At this moment, the latter's exquisite porcelain face was still calm and tranquil. In fact, upon seeing Ling Xi's beautiful eyes looking over towards her, a faint smile appeared on Luo Li's face. However, as Mu Chen was panning around, the young girl's lips slightly trembled, before some soft whispers rang within Mu Chen's ears.

"You're rather attractive, huh?"

Instantly feeling slightly embarrassed, Mu Chen could only give a dry cough while replying, "Please don't get mistaken. Elder Sister Ling Xi's doesn't feel that relieved about the two of us heading there by ourselves."

Although Luo Li declined to comment, the expression hanging within

her eyes made Mu Chen feel as if no explanation would suffice for her.

"Since everyone has arrived, let's make a move."

With a wave of his hand, Dean Tai Cang broke the quiet exchange between the two young lovers. Shooting into the sky, he was followed by Hall Master Mo You, as well as Elder Zhu Tian. Clearly, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had attached extremely high importance towards the Divine Spiritual Mountain this year. With the Dean and two Heavenly Seated Elders, this lineup was rather formidable.

"Follow along with me, if not, your speed won't be adequate," said Ling Xi as she walked towards Mu Chen and Luo Li, while a sweet smile appeared on her face. Opening her palm, a glowing halo akin to a compass shot out from within her sleeve, before floating in mid-air.

"I'll have to burden Elder Ling, then," replied Luo Li with a gentle nod.

"If you don't mind, you can call me as Elder Sister Ling Xi like Mu Chen. In the future, if I were to bump into Aunt Ling, I might even be able to talk to her about you," said Ling Xi as her beautiful eyes started to gently size up Luo Li. Even with her judgemental gaze, she was unable to see the slightest bit of flaw from the body of the young girl in front of her. What a girl, no wonder why Mu Chen is smitten by her.

Faint shades of pink surfaced on Luo Li's lovable face upon hearing Ling Xi's words. She had already heard of some matters about the latter, and naturally knew that the Aunt Jing she had mentioned should be Mu Chen's mother.

"Elder Sister Ling Xi," replied Luo Li with a faint smile. Although she didn't like other people getting too close to her, she was able to feel the protective feelings Ling Xi had for Mu Chen. Therefore, she wasn't too stingy to reject the favorable impression she had on the latter.

With a smile on her face, Ling Xi grasped onto Luo Li's little hand, before shooting towards the top of the glowing compass-like halo. Seeing this, Mu Chen hastily followed on.

As they appeared in the air, countless students were attentively looking

at them from the far surroundings. Clearly, everyone knew that today's the day that Mu Chen would leave the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy and head towards the Northern Heavens Continent, representing their spiritual academy in the most prestigious occasion within the younger generation in this continent.

From a mountain peak, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong had shot into the air, before sending a smile towards Mu Chen as they said, "Mu Chen, this time, we've to rely on you to uphold the face of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy."

Solemnly nodding his head, Mu Chen replied, "Rest assured. Regardless of whom, I won't easily give up fighting."

Hearing that, both Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong smiled. Once the most outstanding students of the academy, this matter should be left to them to handle. However, as a matter of fact, this current situation was somewhat cruel to them. Due to their age and the duration that they've trained and cultivated, some disparity was present between them and the younger generation within the Northern Heavens Continent. Therefore, they had no choice but to hand over this responsibility and place it on Mu Chen's shoulders. Although complicated emotions were still present within their hearts, both of them had heartfelt hopes for Mu Chen to create another miracle at the Divine Spiritual Mountain.

After all, being members of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, all of them shared the same honor and glory, and any losses, as one body.

Sending a smile towards Mu Chen, Dean Tai Cang said, "Just try your best, when the time comes. There will be a live broadcast of this occasion within the academy. At that time, everyone will be able to see your performance, as well as cheer and support you."

After slightly gawking, Mu Chen returned a helpless smile. This time, he truly felt the pressure on his shoulders. At that time, every single move and choice he made would be seen by everyone within the academy. Looks like I'll have to do my best, if not it'll truly be bad for me if I appear miserable compared to everyone there.

"Let's go."

With a wave of his sleeve, Dean Tai Cang didn't continue talking. In the next moment, boundless Spiritual Energy gushed out from the air before them, while the space itself started to pull and distort, forming a gigantic spatial pathway. Taking the lead, Dean Tai Cang strode forward, walking straight into the spatial vortex.

As he did so, Mu Chen and the rest of the group closely followed behind. As the space continued to distort, it completely devoured their figures, before dissipating away. While the air regained normalcy once again, those figures had already disappeared from view.

"I don't know exactly what results Mu Chen will be able to achieve in this Divine Spiritual Mountain."

Looking at the place where Mu Chen and the group had disappeared in, Shen Cangsheng gave a smile, before saying, "I've heard that there might be people within the elites of the Northern Heavens Continent that have reached the 'Three Sovereign Disasters'..."

Nodding his head, Li Xuantong muttered, "The Three Sovereign Disasters, huh... That truly is very troublesome."

People who possessed that kind of strength were already clawing at the path of a Sovereign, and were much, much stronger than a Heavenly Completion Stage.

"However, I don't think that this fella's gonna lose." A smile suddenly appeared on Li Xuantong's face as he said, "After all, in just this year alone, I've already grown numb to the matters that he had caused. The fellow that had to risk his all just to block three moves from me has already arrived at a realm that even I'm unable to reach now."

Hearing those words, Shen Cangsheng gave a smile, before raising his head to look at the vast and expansive sky above, while quietly muttering some words within his heart.

Mu Chen, everyone from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy will be watching you this time! Let us see exactly how far you'll go!

When you return, the title of 'Overlord of the Heavenly Rankings', will truly be yours.

Chapter 396: Divine Spiritual City

The Divine Spiritual Mountain was situated close the the centre of the Northern Heavens Continent. The place it was situated in was named as the Divine Spiritual Region, and possessed extreme fame and reputation within the Northern Heavens Continent.

It's said that the Divine Spiritual Mountain was passed down from the ancient antiquity to now. Originally, there wasn't anything special about this mountain. However, due to a Heavenly Sovereign sitting and passing away on the mountain, the originally normal mountain turned into something extraordinary. As if being sealed off by a unique and powerful energy, frightening Spiritual Energy from the world flooded and enveloped the mountain's surroundings, causing no one to carelessly intrude upon it.

This isolation would weaken once every few years. When that happened, the most prestigious occasion for the younger generation of the Northern Heavens Continent would start.

All of this was due to an enormous destiny-changing event known as the "Divine Spiritual Baptism" that occurred within the Divine Spiritual Mountain. For those people who were trying their best along the path to becoming a Sovereign, this possessed life-threatening enticement. At the same time, it was sufficiently enticing to move the hearts of many strong powers and influences. After all, within this endless Great Thousand World, only genuine Sovereigns could be said to have started on their paths of becoming experts. As long as a power or influence had a Sovereign-level existence, the progression of strength and the shock from others would reach a rather frightening degree.

Therefore, the numerous powers and influences of the Northern Heavens Continent had their eyes turned bloodshot for the sake of obtaining this "Divine Spiritual Baptism", doing their utmost to contend for it. All of this was to help their own geniuses to obtain this opportunity to ensure a strong foundation on their paths towards being a Sovereign.

Therefore, the entire Northern Heavens Continent would be lit abuzz

every time the "Divine Spiritual Mountain" had opened up. All of those young geniuses nurtured wholeheartedly by the various powers and influences would fight and struggle for this baptism.

Therefore, this occasion could be said to represent the highest caliber of exchange between the younger generations within the Northern Heavens Continent.

It took Mu Chen and the group only half a day's worth of time to reach the Divine Spiritual Region from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. The speed at which they did so caused Mu Chen to uncontrollably sigh in admiration. Truly worthy of a Sovereign-level existence. If it was him alone, even if he was to give his all to rush here, it would take him a minimum of a day to reach this place.

Upon their arrival, they immediately headed towards the main area of the Divine Spiritual Region under Dean Tai Cang's lead, where a city known as the Divine Spiritual City stood.

This Divine Spiritual City was erected at the base of the Divine Spiritual Mountain, and was extremely ancient. Due to the uniqueness of the Divine Spiritual Mountain, this city had already remained in a neutral footing, with not a single power or influence daring to recklessly occupy it. After all, such actions could attract the ire and unhappiness from the other powers and influences. With a lure such as the "Divine Spiritual Baptism", a single breeze might be able to incite an Extermination-level disaster on the initiator.

As of now, it was clearly the most liveliest period within a span of a few years for the Divine Spiritual City. Countless powers and experts have gathered here from all corners of the Northern Heavens Continent, with even some solitary experts rushing over. Even though they knew that all those strong powers would not give into reason for the sake of struggling for the "Divine Spiritual Baptism", the enticement it had was sufficient to cause reason and rationale to diminish.

All of this was due to the extreme fear and terror the "Three Sovereign Disasters" have on everyone. Human Body Disaster, Spiritual Energy

Disaster and Spirit Disaster, with each one more terrifying that the previous one. With just a single mistake or error, one would turn into ashes, with even one's Divine Soul being unable to flee, completely disappearing from the world.

Countless experts have fallen from those three disasters, forever unable to climb back up again.

Therefore, within the eyes of many, the "Three Sovereign Disasters" were clearly more frightening than those strong powers and influences.

When the two terrors were compared side-by-side, it was naturally easy to weigh the disparity of terror between them.

Before arriving at the Divine Spiritual Mountain, Mu Chen shot a look at the far distance towards the back of the city. There stood the majestic silhouette of a mountain, faintly discernable within the spiritual mist that blotted the skies. The boundless degree of Spiritual Energy present there was sufficient to cause fright and dread in people's hearts. As the Spiritual Energy churned and surged around, sounds akin to peals of thunder could be heard, resounding across the world.

Looking at this scene before him, Mu Chen's eyes uncontrollably contracted.

"That's the Divine Spiritual Mountain."

Dean Tai Cang spoke out with a faint smile. "Look at the area over there. As long as one's a Sovereign-level expert, one would be unable to get close to there. That's because of the remnant pressure within that area, which should be left behind by the Heavenly Sovereign that had sat there and passed away. However, as long as one hasn't stepped into the realm of a Sovereign, one would be unable to sense that pressure. Therefore, while we are unable to get close to it, you are able to enter it. Haha. This might be due to the status that a Heavenly Sovereign has within the realm of Sovereigns."

Admiration and lamentation was present in Dean Tai Cang's voice as he explained to Mu Chen. Although being a Sovereign would mean that one had stepped onto the path of being an expert, a Heavenly Sovereign might

be considered as the Emperor of Sovereigns. Faced against such an existence, with their strength, they didn't even possess the simplest of qualifications to resist.

After hearing Dean Tai Cang's explanation, Mu Chen quietly clicked his tongue while thinking, So Heavenly Sovereign are actually that strong? Just the remnant pressure in that area was more than enough to force an expert of a level like Dean Tai Cang to not dare to recklessly intrude upon it!

"Although this Divine Spiritual Mountain appears to not be far from here, it's being locked up in an isolated space. Only when a specific date has arrived will you be able to rely on the cracks that will appear to enter within."

Dean Tai Cang continued his explanations. "If you count the dates, three days from now should be the moment when the Divine Spiritual Mountain opens. As of now, the only thing we can do is to quietly wait for the moment to come."

Hearing those words, Mu Chen nodded his head.

"Let's head to the Divine Spiritual Pavilion. That's the place where the top powers and influences within Northern Heavens Continent will converge. Perhaps, you might be able to see those people that genuinely stand at the apex of the younger generations in this continent," said Dean Tai Cang as he waved his hand, before proceeding to head towards the grandest-looking pavillion within the city, with Mu Chen and the rest rapidly following suit.

At this moment, the entire Divine Spiritual City was in a fiery and explosive state. Within the air, countless rays of light streaked past, akin to swarms of locusts, appearing extremely spectacular. Furthermore, the absolute majority of the people present here were rather strong, causing shock and astonishment to surface within Mu Chen's heart. Indeed, there were crouching tigers and hidden dragons within this Northern Heavens Continent. Regardless of the people that he had seen in the White Dragon City or the Western Desolated City, compared to here, all of them were

not even worth a mention.

Finally, Dean Tai Cang came to a stop in front of the pavilion. Raising his head to look at the top floor, he proceeded to faintly narrow his eyes. Clearly, he had felt some familiar fluctuations radiating from within. Looks like those old fellows of the Northern Heavens Continent have also come here.

"Mu Chen, you three can take a rest around here. I've to go visit some acquaintances." After bringing Mu Chen and the rest into the Divine Spiritual Pavilion, Dean Tai Cang gave a smile before speaking out to Mu Chen. The people present at the top floor were the regional Overlords within the Northern Heavens Continent. As such, the atmosphere present there was clearly not suitable for youths like Mu Chen.

After Mu Chen nodded his head in response, Dean Tai Cang, along with Hall Master Mo You and Elder Zhu Tian, headed towards the top floor. Present at the stairwell were excellent-looking guards. However, when those pretty strong guards noticed Dean Tai Cang and the two Elders, they didn't dare to create any obstruction, faintly bowing their bodies forward, and let the three head towards the top floor.

"Let's go and take a seat."

Shooting a smile towards Luo Li and Ling Xi, Mu Chen proceeded to find a place close to a window of the pavilion. As of now, this place had a good mix of scumbags and dragons, with uncountable numbers of powers and experts converged within. This was a rather good opportunity for him to observe exactly how many thorny characters were going to participate in this Divine Spiritual Mountain.

Just as Mu Chen was surveying his surroundings, there were quite few gazes that had converged on the three of them. After all, disregarding Mu Chen, Luo Li and Ling Xi were both absolutely beautiful girls that were rarely seen. To them, Luo Li appeared calm and collected, akin to a flower in the deep abyss, standing solitary and independently. As for Ling Xi, she appeared extraordinarily cold and detached, showing her personality of flinging people far, far away, causing people to not dare to recklessly

approach her.

No matter where one was, beautiful girls would attract the most attention.

Therefore, the appearance of the two girls had caused the hearts of quite a few people to itch. However, those that were able to enter such a place were definitely not nobodies. Although they didn't have the guts to casually take liberties with the two, they had cast their gazes around the three, seemingly trying to guess the identities of Mu Chen, Luo Li and Ling Xi.

Both Luo Li and Ling Xi held those gazes shooting towards them from the surroundings in total disregard as they whispered in low voices with Mu Chen. The occasional faint smiles present on their faces possessed extremely strong allure, causing quite a few people in the surroundings to feel jealous and envy.

At this time, Mu Chen had discovered the feelings present in the surroundings gazes, causing his mouth to twitch in helplessness. However, just as he was about to speak out, he suddenly cast his eyes towards a direction. At this moment, there seemed to be somewhat of an uproar suddenly ringing out from within the pavilion, as gaze after gaze all converged towards the pavilion's big doors.

Seeing this spectacle, Mu Chen followed those curious gazes, before seeing a beautiful figure slowly striding past those big doors.

There stood a young girl with a tall and voluptuous figure. Red-coloured soft armor was present on her body, appearing extraordinarily exquisite and form-fitting. Due to the exceedingly alluring figure, under the tight-fitting soft armor, her voluptuous chest appeared even more curvaceous. Below that was a willowy and slim-looking waist, with a long and slender pair of legs revealed under the short leather skirt, appearing extremely alluring.

A beauty akin to fire.

Not only did the atmosphere within the pavilion turn quiet, even Mu Chen could not bear shooting a second look at the extremely alluring

figure of that fiery and beautiful girl. In the next moment, upon noticing Luo Li shooting a faint glare at him, he hastily turned his gaze away, causing Luo Li to shake her head in slight helplessness and laughter.

Upon seeing that girl, Ling Xi became faintly startled.

At this moment, the lively atmosphere was restored once again as some people appeared to have recognized this fiery beauty, smacking their lips on the spot. Nevertheless, no one dared to take longer glances at her, as they were clear as to how formidable and thorny this girl was. Similarly, her background was also rather tyrannical.

As the young girl walked into the pavilion, she started to look indifferently at her surroundings. However, just as she was about to turn around and leave, her gaze suddenly came to a halt, while a shadow of surprise and happiness instantly erupted from her lovable face.

Sensing the gaze coming from the young girl towards them, before noticing her surprised and happy expression, Mu Chen was instantly startled.

As he was dwelling in his doubts, the fiery and alluring girl had already hopped over, while a clear and melodious voice filled with surprise and happiness rang out from her sexy lips.

"Why are you here, Elder Sister Ling Xi?!"

Chapter 397: Mess

"Elder Sister Ling Xi?"

As he looked towards the alluring girl before their eyes, shock ran through Mu Chen's mind, especially upon hearing the way the girl had called Ling Xi, which further increased the astonishment. This girl had actually recognised Ling Xi?

As Mu Chen cast a doubtful look at Ling Xi, the latter gave a faint smile. Nodding her head gently towards the girl, Ling Xi explained, "She's the big mistress of the Nine Summers Chamber of Commerce, Xia Youran."

Now, Mu Chen was really startled, sending a peculiar glare towards the alluring girl before him. Xia Youran? It's said that she one of the most famous figures within the younger generation within the Northern Heavens Continent. Furthermore, her strength wasn't any weaker than Mo Longzi, and might even stronger than him.

"It truly has been a long time, Elder Sister Ling Xi. I've never imagined that I'd actually meet up with you here. Is the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy participating in the Divine Spiritual Mountain this time?" This Xia Youran seemed to appear extremely happy and surprised at Ling Xi's appearance here, with the smile on her beautiful face appearing exceedingly soul-stirring.

Gently nodding her head, Ling Xi pointed towards Mu Chen as she replied, "This time, he's the one that's participating."

"Eh?!" Exclaimed Xia Youran as she looked towards Mu Chen in astonishment. After sensing the strength of Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase radiating from within him, she was instantly startled. With this level of strength, how would he be able to participate in the Divine Spiritual Mountain...?

Nevertheless, her astonishment within her heart wasn't shown on her face. On the contrary, sending a smile towards Mu Chen, she spoke out, "Nice to meet you. My name's Xia Youran, and speaking of which, I can be considered as your Senior Sister."

"Senior Sister?" Mu Chen was stunned once again. Could this Xia Youran be a student of their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?

"A few years back, she had trained and cultivated in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy for a year, before being summoned back for matters pertaining to her chamber of commerce. Strictly speaking, she can still be considered as your Senior Sister." Ling Xi explained.

Only after the explanation from Ling Xi did Mu Chen snap out from his astonishment, before replying with a smile, "Nice to meet you, Senior Sister Xia. My name's Mu Chen."

"Luo Li," replied Luo Li with a faint smile.

"Mu Chen?" Xia Youran suddenly blinked her bright beautiful large eyes. Sizing Mu Chen up in a look, she spoke out with some astonishment, "Could you be the Mu Chen that defeated Mo Longzi at the Eastern Desolated City?"

Mu Chen never imagined that this matter would actually be circulated around. Nevertheless, he gently nodded his head.

"No wonder." At this moment, Xia Youran had a flash of insight. Being one of the powers at the apex of the Northern Heavens Continent, the information gathering capabilities of the Nine Summers Chamber of Commerce was extraordinary. Therefore, Xia Youran had every single piece of information pertaining to the matter that happened at the Eastern Desolated City during that day. At that time, Mu Chen's strength seemed to only be at Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase. However, he was able to defeat Mo Longzi, who was at Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase. Even the various Elders of their Nine Summers Chamber of Commerce felt inconceivable to the final result of this matter. After all, the degree of strength between the two was truly too large. However, regardless of her doubts, the news and information about that were unable to be falsified.

From the looks of it, the Mu Chen before her right now seemed to have become even stronger than the time when he had defeated Mo Longzi, having truly stepped into Heavenly Completion Stage. Coupled with his

combat prowess, which couldn't be classified on ordinary levels, this Mu Chen truly couldn't be lightly regarded.

Nevertheless, Xia Youran was happy knowing that it was Mu Chen participating in this Divine Spiritual Mountain. Having previously trained and cultivated in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, she had favorable impressions of the academy. Therefore, being able to see the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy participating in the grandest occasion for the younger generations of the Northern Heavens Continent was something of a happy matter for her.

"I've been looking forward to meeting you for a long time."

Extending a slender and petite, snow-white hand towards Mu Chen, Xia Youran spoke out with a grin, "Relax. If you've any problems during this Divine Spiritual Mountain, just come and find me, and I'll protect you within there."

With a smile, Mu Chen grasped and shook her hand, having favorable impressions of this heroic "Senior Sister" that he had just met.

"Never imagined that even you would come out here, Elder Sister Ling Xi. In the past, you didn't even care the slightest bit about the matters of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy." With Xia Youran's carefree and cheerful character, it wasn't too long after their introductions before getting familiar with everyone, before taking a seat together. From the looks of it, she appeared exceedingly close to Ling Xi, with Ling Xi treating her much more amiable than others, completely withdrawing her cold and detached persona that caused people to run a thousand miles away from her.

With the three girls seated beside each other, they created an exceedingly bright and beautiful scene. Their location had undoubtedly become the most paid attention place within the dragon and scumbag-filled pavilion. Nevertheless, with the acuteness of the people present within here, they quickly recognized the identify of Xia Youran, instantly causing some fear and dread to surface within their eyes. After all, within the younger generation of the Northern Heavens Continent, Xia Youran's

fame and reputation was rather high.

Coupled with her status as the big mistress of the Nine Summers Chamber of Commerce, there truly weren't many people that dared to provoke her.

Due to Xia Youran's presence, some people had started to take notice of Mu Chen. Information passed around extremely quickly in a place like this, as people gradually came to know his identity from the whisperings that sprouted out in their surroundings. Even his name had been dug out by them. After all, due to the battle at the Eastern Desolated City a while ago, Mu Chen could be considered to possess some fame and reputation within the Northern Heavens Continent. Although it wasn't on the level of peak figures in the younger generations like Xia Youran, he couldn't be considered as a nobody or obscure figure.

"They're the people from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy."

"Haha. I never would have imagined that the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy that has been absent for the past few years would actually participate in the Divine Spiritual Mountain this time. Could it be that they aren't afraid to be killed here by those geniuses of the Ivory Tower?"

"That youth doesn't seem simple. He should be that Mu Chen. I've heard about him from the time when he had defeated the Demonic Dragon Palace's Mo Longzi at the Eastern Desolated City."

"That can't be true, right? He doesn't appear to be that strong, and Mo Longzi should have already reached Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase, right?"

"That's why I've said that he isn't simple... The person participating in the Divine Spiritual Mountain from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy should be him. Think about it. If he didn't even have any ability, would the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy allow him to come here?"

"Hmm, at that time, let's take a good look at exactly what ability he has, then."

Voices continued to ring about around the pavilion, with favourable

impressions and ill intent present within them.

As whispers continued to travel within the pavilion, within some areas that were covered by the screen of darkness, gazes had also shot out from within, converging on the area where Mu Chen and the three girls were.

The owners of these gazes were obviously not people of ordinary backgrounds. Therefore, upon noticing Xia Youran, no fear or dread was present within them, with amusement present within their eyes instead.

"That's the brat that defeated Mo Longzi?" Behind a screen, a male dressed in grey robes spoke out with a faint smile, while playing with the teacup in his hand. His fingers appeared exceedingly slender. As they gently moved about, they seemed to look like shadows wriggling on the table top, appearing exceedingly strange and weird.

"That's what I've heard," said a male dressed in yellow robes sitting beside him. With a faint smile, the former continued speaking, "What's the matter? Does Young Master Liu feel that he's irksome? Eh, it seems that Xia Youran's your nominal fiancée, and that brat actually dares to get that close to her. With you, Young Master Liu's character, you appear to feel slightly unhappy."

"Haha, there's some unhappiness," replied the grey-robed male with an indifferent smile, while the expression within his eyes had turned somewhat dark and gloomy. He was the Young Master of one of the three large chambers of commerce in the Northern Heavens Continent, the Umbra Chamber of Commerce. Speaking of which, although he had a verbal marriage agreement with Xia Youran, the latter seemed to not have the slightest intent to follow along with it. Being a male with extremely high desires, upon seeing how Xia Youran was actually smiling so care freely and happily in front of a youth, dark and overcast feelings naturally surfaced within his heart.

"Young Master Liu can take action to dish out a lesson to him. That's just a Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase brat," said the yellow-robed male with a grin.

"Dong Yuan, don't play this game with me."

With a smile, the grey-robed male continued speaking. "I'm not stupid. Although this brat isn't much, he's, after all, a person from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Although we, the Umbra Chamber of Commerce is considered one of the peak powers in the Northern Heavens Continent, we're still not comparable to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy."

Although they were able use their absence from the Divine Spiritual Mountain for the past years to mock the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, everyone knew deep within their hearts that the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was a gigantic leviathan, and a peak power within the Northern Heavens Continent. The only one that could contend with them would be the Demonic Dragon Palace. He, Liu Ying, wouldn't have a mental short circuit and take action against a person from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy in such a place. If he really wanted to, he would wait till they entered the Divine Spiritual Mountain, at the very least. When they were in there, even if he was to kill that brat by the name of Mu Chen, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy could do nothing but endure their own sufferings.

"I'm still pondering on exactly how I can get my hands on that Divine Spiritual Baptism. It appears that the number of people that had turned up this time isn't small..."

Shrugging his shoulders in helplessness, Liu Ying said, "The Demonic Dragon Palace's Mo Xingtian, the Eastern Extreme Palace's Xi Qinghai, the Mysterious Yin Mountain's Zhou Xuan, the Heavenly Cauldron Divine Sect's Su Buxiu. There's also Xia Youran and you, the Young Master of the Heavenly Yuan Chamber of Commerce. There truly is some difficulty to achieve any advantage over them."

"I'll not give way for the Divine Spiritual Baptism."

Hearing that, the Young Master of the Heavenly Yuan Chamber of Commerce, Dong Yuan, gave a smile. In the next moment, a shadow of fear flashed within the depths of his eyes as he muttered, "That's how terrifying the Human Body Disaster is. If I have no fallback during the Spiritual Energy Disaster, I really don't dare to touch it. Therefore, there's

no one that can obstruct me in this Divine Spiritual Mountain."

Hearing those words, Liu Xing gave a smile. However, just as he was about to speak out, a faint change suddenly happened to his expression. In the next instant, he felt a fluctuation that caused people's hearts to suddenly palpitate radiating out from somewhere.

"Oh?" Dong Yuan's eyes had also contracted. Turning his head around, he looked towards the giant doors, while speaking out in a soft voice, "That fellow has arrived."

Indescribable dark sensations radiated out like ripples, causing the clamouring noises in this area to slowly dim down, while the expressions on quite a few people changed as they looked towards the giant doors. At this moment, the light present at that area seemed to have turned dim, before a figure appeared within like a spectre.

Seemingly no one had discovered how he had appeared in such a fashion.

That was a male dressed in ordinary hemp clothing. His appearance wasn't anything out of the ordinary, with the only peculiar thing being his eyes, which appeared like a pool of stagnant water, with not even the slightest emotional fluctuation present, causing people's hearts to freeze up.

However, just an ordinary figure had caused the entire place to turn deathly silent as fear and terror surfaced in the eyes of quite a few young experts from various places.

The dead water-like eyes of the male slowly swept out, before suddenly coming to a stop. In the next moment, everyone noticed he was walking out, causing the crowd to split apart like a crack, before reaching the area where Mu Chen and the other three girls were.

Chapter 398: Mo Xingtian

The ordinary-looking male dressed in hemp robes stood right in front of Mu Chen and the group. His deadpan-eyes showing not a single fluctuation within them, causing people to feel a chill up their spines.

Mu Chen's gaze locked straight on towards the male before him, while his entire body entered into a tense state, Spiritual Energy started to vigorously circulate within his body. He had sensed an extremely dangerous flavor from the man before him. That feeling had already far exceeded the feeling he got from Mo Longzi!

Staring coldly at the man harboring ill-intent towards him, a faint guess of the man's identity started to appear within Mu Chen's mind.

Beside Mu Chen, Luo Li's slender hands were already placed on the hilt of her sword. Once the man made a single move, she would take action without the slightest bit of hesitation.

"What the hell do you think you're doing, Mo Xingtian?!" The one that took the lead to speak out was Xia Youran, who roared towards the male, while looking at him with a vigilant gaze.

Mo Xingtian.

Even though that person's name had already rang out within the pavilion upon his appearance, the mention of him by Xia Youran still caused shocked expressions to appear on the faces of some people. People like Xia Youran and Liu Ying were capable of being placed within the top-most level of elites within the younger generations of the Northern Heavens Continent. However, everyone knew that the person that caused people to feel the most dread and terror would be the Demonic Dragon Palace's Mo Xingtian.

Although the times that Mo Xingtian had shown his face in the Northern Heavens Continent were far less than Mo Longzi, his existence still caused the hearts of many young geniuses to sink. That's due to the well-known fact that there was not the slightest rumor of Mo Xingtian ever losing in a fight for the past few years. Naturally, the prerequisite was

that the fight was between people of similar cultivation realms.

Therefore, when looked from a certain perspective, Mo Xingtian could be well-considered as the number one figure within the younger generations in the Northern Heavens Continent. Although such a rumor wasn't spread around, yardsticks were present within everyone's minds, since there were things that one could weigh and measure with one's own judgement.

Although the geniuses from various places, like Xia Youran, Liu Ying and Su Buxiu, also possessed extremely outstanding talent, if one was to ask who they feared and dreaded the most within the younger generations, their unanimous answer might as well be Mo Xingtian.

Faced against Xia Youran's roar, not the slightest bit of fluctuation appeared within Mo Xingtian's gaze. Continuing to stare at Mu Chen with those deadpan-eyes that contained not one bit of movement, he spoke out, "My current mission is to kill you."

Hearing those words, chilling intent abruptly flashed across Luo Li's beautiful eyes. With a tremble of her jade-like hand, a sword roar howled out, while a slash of Sword Aura shot ruthlessly straight towards Mo Xingtian.

Just as the slash of Sword Aura appeared before Mo Xingtian, a glowing halo of Spiritual Energy surfaced around him, instantly blocking the incoming Sword Aura. Shaking his head, he proceeded to say, "That's a bit weak."

"Oh, really?" A chilling glint flashed within Luo Li's beautiful eyes. Clenching her sword with her jade-like hands, she was just about to launch another attack, before her hands were grasped by Mu Chen. Tilting her head over, the latter shook his head towards her, before raising his head to look at the male, who had caused everyone's hearts to palpitate. With a smile, Mu Chen spoke out, "If you're trying to killing me here, I really feel that your brain's gone wacko."

As he said those words, Mu Chen's gaze turned cold and fierce in an instant, before words as sharp as a blade's edge rang out from his mouth.

"Scram off."

Humm.

Low clamoring voices instantly rang out within the pavilion, since quite a few people looked towards Mu Chen with inconceivable emotions present within their gazes. Clearly, none of them had expected Mu Chen to actually use such a tone against Mo Xingtian.

A faint sparkle immediately appeared in some of the gazes shooting out from the darkness, with whispers of interest ringing out from them.

As he heard Mu Chen's reply, Mo Xingtian's deadpanned gaze fluctuated for a bit, while he considered about the percentage of success if he toook action now to kill Mu Chen.

Creak.

Finally, Mo Xingtian took a step forward. However, just as his foot was about to touch the ground, his eye faintly contracted as a dangerous fluctuation suddenly erupted from the beautiful girl radiating with a cold and detached aura standing beside Mu Chen.

Halting his foot, a serious expression appeared on his emotionless face.

"He told you to scram off. Are you deaf?" The beautiful girl in the snow-white dress slowly raised her lovable face, only to show an icy-cold frostiness permeating throughout her beautiful eyes.

Mo Xingtian's pupils instantly contracted, before a shiver shook through his face. At this very moment, the beautiful girl had already taken action.

It wasn't any gorgeous or magnificent move. Extending her slender and jade-like hand, the beautiful girl gave a sudden clench of her hand.

As she did so, the space around Mo Xingtian started to furiously collapse. Rays of light shot out from space, forming a glowing net, enveloping all over Mo Xingtian's body. As the rays of light shot around, black scars started to appear in the surrounding space.

An incomparable feeling of danger gushed out from Mo Xingtian's heart and mind as his body started to make a furious retreat. In that moment,

his body appeared to have turned illusionary for an instant. In the next second, before those rays of light that were shattering space apart could encase his entire body, he had already appeared in a location a dozen metres from where he once stood.

Seeing the scene that had unfolded before his eyes, Mu Chen's eyes faintly narrowed as he thought, That movement skill of Mo Xingtian's is rather strange and peculiar. In the previous instant, his body appeared to have turned illusionary, truly a formidable fellow. He's actually able to avoid a strike from Elder Sis Ling Xi! Although Ling Xi had yet to unleash her true strength, she had undoubtedly possessed more than sufficient strength to suppress Mo Xingtian with ease.

"Hmph!"

Seeing that her attack wasn't able to deal with Mo Xingtian, a faint wrinkle appeared on Ling Xi's lovable face as a bout of dissatisfaction surfaced within her. In the next instant, patting her jade-like hand on the table's surface, everyone immediately felt the Spiritual Energy in their surroundings starting to fluctuate and rampage about. The space surrounding Mo Xingtian proceeded to turn abnormally warped and distorted, appearing akin to a spatial prison, completely sealing Mo Xingtian within it.

"Spatial Prison? Sovereign Realm expert?!"

Furious roars of astonishment rang out within the pavilion as everyone looked towards Ling Xi with dread and terror gushing out of their eyes, while inconceivable expressions surfaced on their faces. Clearly, none of them was able to believe that such a young girl actually possessed the strength of a Sovereign. When did such a terrifying student appear in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?

Ignoring the cries of astonishment ringing around her, Ling Xi gave a flick, sending a ray of jade-like brilliance shooting out of her finger. Piercing through space, it shot straight towards the forehead of Mo Xingtian, clearly aiming to directly take away his life.

Shock and astonishment filled the hearts of everyone yet again, while

everyone was utterly intimidated by the ruthlessness of Ling Xi's action.

Being locked within the warped space and unable to free his body, a frown appeared on Mo Xingtian's face as he looked towards the frightening ray of brilliance shooting explosively towards him. However, despite the impending threat of death, not a single trace of terror or dread appeared on his face.

"Hmph! You've such nerve to actually dare to send an act towards the people of our Demonic Dragon Palace?!"

Just as the glowing crystal-like pillar was about to strike Mo Xingtian, a faint, cold snort suddenly rang out. In the next instant, the surrounding space shattered, while an ancient and withered palm patted out from within. With a single pat, it shattered the warped space surrounding Mo Xingtian, while sending a flick out, striking and shattering the glowing crystal-like pillar apart.

In the next moment, fluctuations started to ripple out in the surrounding space, while a black-robed male appeared beside Mo Xingtian. That was the Demonic Dragon Palace's Black Dragon Sovereign. At this moment, a chilling expression hung on his face as he glared at Ling Xi, sending the frightening pressure of a Sovereign radiating outwards. This caused the expressions of quite a few of the young experts present in this pavilion to change as they hastily retreated away.

Taking a step forward, Ling Xi blocked the incoming pressure from reaching Mu Chen and the group. A frosty shadow started to fluctuate within her beautiful eyes, while rays of spiritual brilliance sparkled under her slender fingers. At this moment, the surrounding air appeared to turn frozen solid, while exceedingly powerful fluctuations started to faintly converge within the pavilion.

"So, you're that Elder of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy that specializes in Spiritual Arrays?" Looking towards the air flaring up around Ling Xi, the unique fluctuations radiating out of her caused his eyes to narrow as he spoke out in a cold and detached tone.

"So she's an Elder of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy..."

"However, she doesn't seem to be much older than us..."

"It shouldn't be hard for an expert with that level of strength to change their outer appearance."

'Hmm, I still feel that something's not right..."

The words coming from the Black Dragon Sovereign caused quite a few people within the pavilion to quietly breathe a sigh of relief. However, all of them could faintly feel that something was not quite right. Did such a young Sovereign cause too much of an impact to us?

"If you're an Elder of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, I'm afraid that you've broken the rules today!" said the Black Dragon Sovereign with a dark expression.

"Haha. I've already warned that guy over there. However, he still chose to attack us..." replied Mu Chen with a gentle smile, though a shadow of pity hung on his face. He had warned Mo Xingtian earlier that if he was to take action, they would similarly have an open reason to retaliate. If that was to happen, it wouldn't break any rules if Mo Xingtian was to instantly die. However, that Mo Xingtian truly was hard to be dealt with. The previous step forward by him was similarly his way of testing their capabilities.

However, the only thing that had exceeded his expectation would be the actual strength of Ling Xi.

"As if this is the place for you to talk, brat!" The Black Dragon Sovereign replied in a frosty voice. He clearly possessed extreme loathing and dislike towards Mu Chen, since the latter still controlled the treasure of their Demonic Dragon Palace!

"Haha! The Black Dragon Sovereign truly is very impressive to the point of even being able to fight with the students of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy." Faint laughter rang out as a voice suddenly resounded in the pavilion. Spatial fluctuations rippled around Mu Chen's body as Dean Tai Cang appeared out from within, looking towards the Black Dragon Sovereign with a faint smile on his face.

Staring coldly towards Dean Tai Cang, the Black Dragon Sovereign

sneered, "I've never imagined that your Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy would actually dare to participate in the Divine Spiritual Mountain, Tai Cang. What's the matter? Weren't the deaths of those elite students that year sufficient of a lesson for you guys?"

Shooting an apathetic look at the Black Dragon Sovereign, Dean Tai Cang replied, "This year's Divine Spiritual Mountain has yet to start. If you're too proud of yourself now, you'll not be able to retract your words in the future."

"Oh really? I truly anticipate that day to come."

The Black Dragon Sovereign replied in a ridiculing tone. Sweeping his gaze towards Mu Chen, he shook his head and said, "Do you truly think that you're some sort of rare genius just because you've defeated Mo Longzi? Looks like your Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy have been getting more and more useless during the recent years. Don't worry. Since you've come here, our Demonic Dragon Palace will let you taste the same feeling that you've felt in that year once again."

As his voice rang out, he shot out a sneer, before turning around and walking away, with no one daring to block his path.

As Mo Xingtian turned around, he shot a look over towards Mu Chen, before giving something akin to a smile, accept that the smile contained not one tiny bit of warmth. Those deadpan-eyes of his appeared to be looking at a corpse, before turning around and walking away.

Looking at the back figure of Mo Xingtian, a chilling shadow flashed with Mu Chen's eyes as he thought, That Mo Xingtian is truly worthy of being the number of super ruthless figure on the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's Bounty List. The feeling of danger that he gave to Mu Chen was far more ruthless that Mo Longzi.

Looks like there would be twists and turns in this Divine Spiritual Mountain.

Chapter 399: Preparations

During the next three days, the Divine Spiritual City grew increasingly lively and noisy, since more and more people were streaming in from all directions, before congregating in the somewhat ancient city in the middle. Within a moment's time, like rising clouds and scudding clouds, this place had truly become the most eye-catching place within the entire Northern Heavens Continent.

Within the tall pavilion located in the city, Mu Chen looking at the figures hiding the skies and covering the earth as they streaked across the city skies akin to rays of light. Unable to help it, he started to smack his lips. During the span of these three days, he had finally recognized the lure and enticement of the "Divine Spiritual Mountain". According his estimates, all of the small and and big influences within the Northern Heavens Continent should have rushed over to get their share of this liveliness.

"There's really a great amount of people here!" said Mu Chen with a smile. Compared to the events he had experienced in the White Dragon City, Western Desolated City and others, they were truly dwarfed by the scale of the occasion caused by the Divine Spiritual Mountain. As for the Northern Spiritual Realm, there simply wasn't any possibility of such things happening. Within that place, even a person with the strength of an ordinary Heavenly Fusion would already be deemed as an Overlord. However, at this place, a person of that strength would only be considered as an 'average' person.

This kind of disparity caused Mu Chen to give a helpless laugh in response; after all, the Northern Spiritual Realm was just a small place. As for the aspect of cultivation, the requirement for recourse was rather severe and harsh. Therefore, in this small place, where a rank 3 Spiritual Array wasn't even able to be arranged, even if one was to try their utmost, they might not have that many accomplishments and achievements in it. Naturally, that small place was the birthplace of Mu Chen, with the feelings he had for it were something that couldn't be replicated.

There were times where Mu Chen had thoughts of him returning the the Northern Spiritual Realm with his current strength. If he did, his dad, Uncle Zhou, and the rest might be scared shitless of his Heavenly Completion Stage strength. Let's not talk about the small and tiny Northern Spiritual Realm. Even within the Northern Heavens Continent, he could be considered as a First-class expert. Wanting to be the ruler of a city was something that absolutely couldn't be anymore simpler.

Of course, this was just some of his whimsical thoughts, since he knew that his path to being an unrivalled expert had just started. He had promised his dad to bring his mom home, and, as of now, he was way too far from that step. Nonetheless, regardless of the difficulties he faced along the way, he would always work hard to achieve his goal. He wasn't being conceited about his strength and growth when he said those words when he left. To his dad, this might just be a promise. However, Mu Chen knew that his dad, who had painstakingly brought him up, really missed his mum to the point where his figure appeared somewhat lonely and desolate. This was especially present when he had left his dad. Nevertheless, his dad knew that he, himself, didn't have such strength to bring his wife back. Thus, he had placed all of his hopes and the painstaking effort on his son, someone that he could feel pride from.

Therefore, Mu Chen didn't want his dad to feel any disappointment in him anymore.

Facing the sun, Mu Chen gave a faint smile. Old man, the current me's working hard. Let me help you accomplishment the matter you can't do, alright?

"Tomorrow's the opening day for the Divine Spiritual Mountain."

All of the sudden, a beautiful-sounding girl's voice rang out from behind. Panning his head around, he spotted Luo Li present behind him. Sending a faint smile over, he nodded his head in agreement, before turning to look in the far distance past the city. At that place, the Spiritual Qi of the world was growing increasingly erratic as waves of it started to radiate out. Like waves on a sea, crashing sounds resounded from their movements.

At this moment, the lofty and majestic mountain that was radiating with hair-raisingly rampaging Spiritual Energy seemed to gradually started to become clearer and clearer.

This was the sign of the impending opening of the Divine Spiritual Mountain.

"For the past two days, I've sought out Senior Sister Xia about the Divine Spiritual Mountain happening this time. There might be six people that you'll have to pay attention to. These six can be considered as elites at the highest peak within the younger generations of the Northern Heavens Continent. All of them are extremely strong, and I'm afraid that even Mo Longzi might not be able to match up to them," said Luo Li with a slight frown.

'Oh? Which six?"

"The first one's, naturally, the Demonic Dragon Palace's Mo Xingtian. He can be said to be your greatest enemy this time. Since the Demonic Dragon Palace's treasure is in your hands, they'll definitely attempt to snatch it back from you. Within the Divine Spiritual Mountain, there's no way to investigate and blame anyone for any injury or death. Therefore, Mo Xingtian will definitely take action towards you in there," said Luo Li with a solemn expression on her face. "Also, according to Senior Sister Xia's reports, it's estimated that Mo Xingtian's strength should be after the First Tribulation of the "Three Sovereign Disasters", the Human Body Disaster."

"He has passed the Human Body Disaster, huh...?"

Faintly nodding his head, Mu Chen's gaze started to grow slightly sharp and astute at this moment.

"The next few ones are the young masters of the Umbra Chamber and Commerce, Liu Ying, Heavenly Yuan Chamber of Commerce, Dong Yuan and the Mysterious Yin Mountain's Zhou Xuan. As for the Western Extreme Palace's Xi Qinghai, we've already met that person once, when we were at the Western Desolated City. He was observing us and Mo Longzi for the entire duration of our fight. In addition, there's also the Heavenly

Cauldron's Divine Sect's Su Buxiu."

"I'm afraid that all of these people might already possess the strength of one who has passed the First Tribulation. Each of them are top-level geniuses raised painstakingly with unlimited resources and time by those peak influences of the Northern Heavens Continent. You can consider them as future in-charges of Chambers of Commerce and sects. If you are to bump into them in the Divine Spiritual Mountain, you can consider them as your enemies."

With a faint laugh, Luo Li continued talking, "Naturally, Senior Sister Xia's not weaker than them. However, compared to other people, the chances of her targeting you are slim."

.

"All of them are vicious characters, huh?" said Mu Chen while nodding his head. So, these are the strengths of the highest elites in the younger generations of the Northern Heavens Continent, huh? Look's like I can't underestimate them.

"There shouldn't be a problem, right?" asked Luo Li, while shooting a look at Mu Chen. Slightly wrinkling her forehead, Luo Li said, "They should have allowed me to participate, hmph."

Clearly, those earlier little scuffles and conflicts weren't comparable to the fights that were about to happen within the Divine Spiritual Mountain. Furthermore, there wouldn't be any mercy shown by the participants inside it. If one let's down one's guard for just the slightest moment, there would be a high possibility for one to not walk out from the Divine Spiritual Mountain alive. Luo Li was clearly feeling worried about this, regardless of her trust in Mu Chen.

"There's only one quota! I can't bear to let you face those cruel and vicious fellows by yourself!" replied Mu Chen with a smile. "Rest assured. Although the opponents are very strong, I'm not that weak. Later, let me see exactly what that Divine Spiritual Mountain has. If I'm able to bring it out, I'll make sure to get one for you."

Hearing those words from Mu Chen, Luo Li rolled her eyes towards Mu

Chen, before saying, "I've heard from Senior Sister Xia that there's only an extremely small number of people that can receive the Divine Spiritual Baptism every time, due to the handful of people that can enter within the area of baptism. If you still dare to bring it out, I think that you'll get assaulted by the masses then."

A smile surfaced on Mu Chen's face as he heard her reply, with no refute coming from him.

"Oh, that's right."

As though thinking about something, with a wave of her jade-like arm, numerous clumps of fire surfaced around Luo Li, before floating before her. What appeared were five clear palm-sized transparent jade bottles. Within those bottles were burning flames that were filled to the brim. Those flames were scarlet-red in colour, while radiating with high temperatures. Clearly those jade bottles were made of some special material, since no matter how high those flames burnt, they were unable to shatter their containers apart.

"These are the things that you've asked Senior Sister Xia to obtain for you. It's said that the flames within these bottles are the product of a Raging Flame Sparrow devouring the geocentric lava, and possess quite strong destructive powers. The flames within these five small jade bottles required seemingly hundreds of Raging Flame Sparrows just to fill them up," said Luo Li while shooting a doubtful look at Mu Chen. Clearly, she didn't understand the goal of him suddenly wanting to collect them. Although these things might be able have an effect of catching an opponent off-guard during a fight, they weren't particularly strong.

"I have a wonderful use for them."

Looking at the five jade bottles, a flash of happiness appeared within Mu Chen's eyes. Carefully storing them, he said, "Look's like I owe Senior Sister Xia a favor now."

These things were clearly not cheap, and were extremely difficult to collect. It was all thanks to Xia Youran being the eldest Young Mistress of the Nine Summers Chamber of Commerce. If not, he would really have no

way of obtaining them within such a short amount of time.

"It should be due to Elder Sister Ling Xi," said Luo Li with a faint smile. Xia Youran was extremely close to Elder Sister Ling Xi. After seeing the latter's attitude to Mu Chen, she had clearly held Mu Chen with much more regard. Due to that, Mu Chen's request was able to be ranked so highly within her mind.

Mu Chen nodded his head, not caring anymore about the relationship between Xia Youran and Ling Xi. With these things, he had now one more hidden card up his sleeves. When the moment comes, it should be quite a handful for even Mo Xingtian to deal with them.

"Since everything's set, what's next..."

Giving a lazy stretch, Mu Chen gazed towards the mountainous silhouette faintly discernable within the blowing Spiritual Energy in the far distance, before giving a faint smile.

"...Is to wait for the opening of the Divine Spiritual Mountain."

The next day, as the early morning came, the atmosphere of the Divine Spiritual City had completely erupted, with countless shadows shooting towards the skies like a swarm of locusts. From the mountain peaks and plains surrounding the city, one could see figures endlessly taking for the skies, transforming into streaks of light, howling across the horizon.

The enticement of the Divine Spiritual Baptism was too strong, with countless people already having bloodshot eyes towards it's lure. Therefore, even those peak influences and powers weren't able to dominate over the entirety of the Divine Spiritual Mountain by themselves, since they would truly become the enemy of the masses. This was something that even the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy and the always overbearing Demonic Dragon Palace weren't able to bear, since the price of that would be too high for them to endure.

Therefore, as long as one had the strength and didn't exceed the limits, anyone within the Northern Heavens Continent possessed the qualifications to participate in the Divine Spiritual Mountain. Hence, it had led to the spectacular appearance and attendance of this occasion.

Mu Chen's group had also made their move. Under the lead of Dean Tai Cang, they arrived at the front of the vast and boundless Spiritual Energy waves. At this moment, the earth and the skies were already covered by a sea of humans. Nevertheless, only those peak influences of the Northern Heavens Continent possessed the qualifications to vie for the positions right at the very front of the human crowd.

The arrival of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had attracted the attention of the masses. After all, within the Northern Heavens Continent, there was no one that would dare to show contempt for such a true leviathan.

Sending a smile only towards some of the people familiar to him, Dean Tai Cang proceeded to place his hands behind his back, sending a deep gaze towards the lofty and majestic mountainous form present behind those Spiritual Energy waves that isolated in another space.

At this moment, Mu Chen had his eyes towards a place not far away, where those from the Demonic Dragon Palace were. With the Black Dragon Sovereign standing at the front, presently behind him was the hemp-clothed, extremely ordinary-looking Mo Xingtian. If not for that deadpanned gaze that gave everyone a profound impression, it would be extremely hard to recognise him if he was placed within a crowd of people. However, this ordinary-looking fellow was genuinely the most vicious person within the younger generations in the Northern Heavens Continent.

Sensing Mu Chen's gaze, Mo Xingtian panned his head over, sending a cold and detached smile back towards Mu Chen. Although there wasn't any killing intent present within his smile, Mu Chen knew that this Mo Xingtian might have already included him within his 'Must Kill' list.

"The second place on the bounty list has already been dealt with. All that's left is you."

Mu Chen muttered to himself, before raising his head up. Looking towards the vast and boundless Spiritual Energy waves before him, intense fluctuations started to appear within them. At this moment, the lofty and

majestic mountainous form hidden in the depths grew increasingly clear and distinct, while ripples started to undulate from the space before everyone's eyes.

Everyone's gaze started to churn and flare up.

The Divine Spiritual Mountain was about to start!

Chapter 400: The Opening of the Divine Spiritual Mountain

Rumble.

Akin to a tsunami, the Spiritual Energy of the world surged and swept out, while the low and deep sounds seemed to be unbearable for even space, while intense spatial warping and distortions appeared. As the surrounding space warped and distorted, the gigantic mountain that seemed to be contained within an isolated space grew increasingly clear to everyone's eyes.

At the same time, a special pressure that appeared to have remained since the Ancient Antiquity quietly radiated out. This pressure was undetectable and invisible to the absolute majority of the people present. Only people like Dean Tai Cang, existences that have stepped into the realm of the Sovereigns, would be able to feel it, causing their eyes to faintly narrow, while fear and dread surfaced within their hearts.

Although this pressure had been weakened by quite a lot under the passage of time, it still possessed a certain level of suppression to them. That's because it was something left behind by a Heavenly Sovereign, whom had sat on the mountain and passed away.

A Heavenly Sovereign was the Emperor amongst Sovereigns. To Dean Tai Cang, and the other Sovereigns present, it was an existence that was far too strong and powerful. Naturally, even when placed within the Great Thousand Worlds, formed from the convergence of hundreds of thousands of planes, a Heavenly Sovereign was still a top-class existence. There would be countless Sovereigns willing to prostrate themselves in worship towards a Heavenly Sovereign.

That was a great figure that was genuinely able to guard a region of a world to the point of controlling an entire plane.

Mu Chen and the rest were, naturally, unable to detect this pressure, with the only feeling they got being a faint uneasy one. However, it didn't

pose much of an effect to them.

At this moment, Mu Chen's only focus was to start at the warping and distorting space, waiting for the opening of the Divine Spiritual Mountain.

As he quietly waited for that moment, a waft of fragrance fluttered past him. Panning his head around, he noticed that Xia Youran had appeared by his side. At this moment, the latter was still dressed in her alluring and seductive fiery-red soft armor. That snow-white exposed skin and her voluptuous and elegant figure attracted quite a few gazes from the surroundings.

"Mu Chen, make sure to be more careful after entering the Divine Spiritual Mountain. Be especially careful about the spatial currents, as well as the spatial gales." Xia Youran sent a reminder to Mu Chen, after showing a bright and beautiful smile towards him.

"Spatial currents? Spatial gales?" Mu Chen was slightly startled as he repeated those two terms. Having completely zero understanding towards the Divine Spiritual Mountain, he clearly didn't know what those two terms meant.

"The location where the Divine Spiritual Mountain is standing is within a fragmented space. Outside of that fragmented space are extremely frightening spatial currents. Once one gets swept into them, one would definitely die, without a doubt," explained Xia Youran with a serious expression on her lovable face. "The spatial gales occupy the surroundings of the Divine Spiritual Mountains. The closer one gets to the centre, the stronger and more frightening the spatial gales get. When one becomes unable to endure their buffeting, one would be swept by them and into the currents, resulting in being instantly turned into ashes."

"These two are the greatest dangers brought about by the Divine Spiritual Mountain, with uncountable numbers of experts having already succumbed to them."

"Thank you very much for your reminder, Senior Sister Xia." Mu Chen expressed his gratitude while nodding his head.

With a soft voice, Xia Youran continued speaking, "In addition, please be

careful about other people. I don't know how many experts will be participating in the Divine Spiritual Mountain. However, the fact is that only a fixed number of people can undergo the Divine Spiritual Baptism. Therefore, all the people entering in there would be considered as competitors. Once an opportunity arises, there might be people who will take action directly and launch killing blows at you."

"After entering the Divine Spiritual Mountain range, just follow me. I'll bring you to the place of the baptism. With you by my side, even that Mo Xingtian might feel a bit of fear. At the very least, he wouldn't be too overly rampant. However, as for the matter of you being able to obtain the Divine Spiritual Baptism, that would truly have to depend on your genuine ability and skill." Shooting a look towards Mo Xingtian standing not too far from her, a sliver of dread flashed within her beautiful eyes. However, she still spoke those words out in a soft voice.

Hanging a smile on his face, Mu Chen's favorable impression of Xia Youran had been raised by quite a bit. He was extremely clear of how formidable Mo Xingtian was. Although Xia Youran was one of the elite figures in the top of the younger generations within the Northern Heavens Continent, she would still feel extreme dread if she was to truly face-off against Mo Xingtian. However, at this moment, for his sake, she was able to make such a decision, something that was rather hard to make.

After all, no one in their right mind would love to offend such a frightening opponent for no reason.

"Please be at ease, Senior Sister Xia. If I feel that I can't endure anymore, I'll immediately fall back. I won't hold you back," replied Mu Chen.

Xia Yoran didn't imagine that Mu Chen would reply in such a straightforward manner. Sending a sweet smile to him, she extended her jade-like hands and gave Mu Chen's shoulder a pat while saying, "Relax. Elder Sister Ling Xi has saved me before. Seeing that it's extremely rare for her to show so much care for a male, how could I not protect you?"

Hearing those words, Mu Chen replied with only a smile. Not commenting more about it, he nodded his head to show his gratitude

towards her.

As Mu Chen was happily chatting along with Xia Youran, while waiting for the opening of the Divine Spiritual Mountain, both of them didn't realise a slightly cold gaze shooting towards them from a distance far away. The owner of such a gaze was the young leader of the Umbra Chamber of Commerce, Liu Ying.

Looking at the intimate manner Xia Youran was displaying towards Mu Chen, shadows of darkness surfaced within his gaze, while the corner of his mouth started to faintly twitch. Seeing this, the Young Master of the Heavenly Yuan Chamber of Commerce, Dong Yuan, gave a faint smile in response. He knew that Liu Ying was a fellow with extreme lust and full of desires. Although he hadn't made any progress in his pursuit of Xia Youran, he had classified her as a 'forbidden territory' for everyone else. Seeing Xia Youran showing such intimacy to Mu Chen caused him to have an unbearable impulsion to rip the latter into shreds.

"Don't be impatient. Let's wait for us to enter the Divine Spiritual Mountain first. At that time, even if he wants to, that brat won't be able to run away," said Dong Yuan with a grin.

"I don't have the skill to waste time on such a brat," replied Liu Ying. Nevertheless, his gaze remained dark and overcast, while a cold and detached smile hung on his face. He wasn't a person that didn't know how to prioritise. However! He knew that the most important thing for him to do after entering the Divine Spiritual Mountain was to obtain the Divine Spiritual Baptism. How could he waste such precious time on Mu Chen?

"Naturally, if we were to really bump into each other, I truly don't mind conveniently settling him once and for all." Twiddling his fingers, a shadow seemed to appear on the fingertips of Liu Ying, while the smile present at the corner of his mouth appeared cold and cruel.

A radiant smile on the face of Dong Yuan was shown as he heard Liu Ying's words. Although this Mu Chen appeared to possess the strength of a Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase, he might not be as simple as he looked. At that time, if Liu Ying had engaged in combat with him, even

if Liu Ying did win, he should have to pay some kind of price. This was a situation that he would naturally be extremely satisfied to see.

Rumble!

Just as the dark and overcast shadows appeared within the eyes of Liu Ying, an intense rumbling sound suddenly rang out from the vast and boundless Spiritual Energy ocean. As space started to become increasingly warped and distorted, everyone turned ecstatic as the space around the Divine Spiritual Mountain had actually started to slowly split apart.

As space started to splinter apart, an endless range of lofty and majestic mountains that brought about its gigantic shadows, erupted from within. The enormous body of the mountain extended from the spatial fissure, unveiling itself to the world. Looking from afar, it appeared as if it was a mountain range floating in the sky.

However, such a gigantic mountain range was just an unassuming corner of the Divine Spiritual Mountain.

Hu! Hu!

As a small part of that mountainous body erupted from the spatial fissure, rampaging spatial gales instantly rushed out furiously. As the gales blew out, it brought about rather fierce energies, seemingly causing even the Spiritual Energies of the world to split and shatter apart.

However, not a single person paid attention to this, since everyone had focused their bloodshot-eyes towards the lofty and majestic mountain range present within the spatial fissure. That was the mountain range that was locked in an isolated space. However, from the looks of it, what had appeared before their eyes was only the tip of an iceberg. From this, one could see how frightening the scale of this Divine Spiritual Mountain range was. Perhaps, just from its other appearance, it wasn't any smaller than the gigantic Divine Spiritual City.

The Divine Spiritual Mountain had finally appeared at this moment!

At this moment, the atmosphere of the entire world appeared to freeze and solidify.

Whoosh!

However, this solidification lasted for only an instant, before being immediately broken apart, with figures that hid the skies and covered the earth shooting out from the city. Hasty and hurried whooshing sounds resounded, akin to claps of thunder, roaring across the skies.

"Let's go!"

"The Divine Spiritual Mountain's opened!"

"The Divine Spiritual Baptism is mine for sure!"

"Haha! What the hell do you think you are, to dare to take a piece of the Divine Spiritual Baptism?!"

As roars filled with incomparable excitement resounded out, the entire world started to get completely aroused and thrown into disorder.

"Let's make a move too, Mu Chen." Looking at the locust swarm-like mass of figures rushing towards the Divine Spiritual Mountain, Xia Youran wasn't able to contain her impatience at the very end as she spoke out towards Mu Chen.

Nodding his head, Mu Chen turned back to look at Luo Li, Ling Xi and Dean Tai Cang, before speaking out with a smile, "It's time for me to enter."

"Be careful." Luo Li and Ling Xi reminded in response.

"If you're met with an extremely dangerous situation, just break the jade slip I've passed to you, and I'll rescue you from there," said Dean Tai Cang with a solemn expression present on his face. Although he would have to pay some price for forcing his way into the Divine Spiritual Mountain, he truly wasn't able to endure the possibility of Mu Chen dying within. If that happened, it would become an extremely huge blow to their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Mu Chen gently nodded his head in agreement, without replying to anymore words. He knew about the special uniqueness of the Divine Spiritual Mountain; even with Dean Tai Cang's strength, he wouldn't be

able to enter that place. And yet, the latter was able to speak those words. This went to show the extreme regard the latter had on Mu Chen in his eyes.

With a move of her charming figure, Xia Youran took the lead, turning into a streak of light. Shooting straight towards the spatial fissure in the sky, she headed straight towards the mountain range that had extended from there. Seeing this, Mu Chen immediately followed suit, rapidly heading out behind her.

Mutually, in tandem, the two streaks of light that hid the skies and covered the earth rushed into the spatial fissure. Slowly turning smaller, they finally disappeared within it.

Buzz!

As more and more people rushed into the Divine Spiritual Mountain range, the space surrounding it started to turn increasingly transparent, akin to glass. Within the glass was a vast and boundless ancient-looking mountain range. At this moment, the fringes of the mountain range was filled with countless shadows, the people at the head of the swarm that had rushed into the spatial fissure.

Those figures that hid the skies and covered the earth instantly broke apart the eternal peace and tranquility within the Divine Spiritual Mountain range.

Various elderly figures stood within the sky outside of the spatial fissure, eyes tightly locked at the ancient mountain range that was faintly discernable within the space before them. At this moment, all of them knew that the extremely brutal and cruel combat would erupt within in the later moments.

All of this, was for the "Divine Spiritual Baptism" that only a number of people could enjoy!

Chapter 401: The Trembling of the Mysterious Black Paper

What appeared before them was a desolated, yet extremely endless stretch of a mountain range. At this moment, this ancient and tranquil land had turned into an endless howl of clamoring noises from the locust swarm-like crowd of figures shooting over it.

Swish! Swish!

Countless glowing figures hid the skies and covered the earth as they shoot over the mountain range, before landing on the large stretch of earth. With greedy gazes of insatiable lust, everyone glared at the endless stretch of the mountain range before them. This Divine Spiritual Mountain range was said to be formed by a Heavenly Sovereign passing away in a sitting position on it. Although the "Divine Spiritual Baptism" was undoubtedly the most valuable thing in here, there were many other natural-born treasures and remnants from the ancient times that were left behind. To them, if they were able to obtain those items, it would be a heavenly-gifted matter.

At this moment, Mu Chen and Xia Youran had landed on the ground, with him looking curiously at his surroundings. This endless mountain range was too vast and expansive! Before it, they were just like ants. Gigantic trees that reached to the skies stood planted beside them. Every single one of them was a thousand feet wide, appearing like pillars that supported the heavens, with storms and hurricanes not even being able to shake them one single bit.

Raising his head, Mu Chen discovered that the skies above him were, unexpected, a jet-black colour. That wasn't the night sky, but the shattered space they had passed through to get here. This dark blackness swirled about, like a black hole. Anything that came into contact with it would be devoured by the blackness, causing people to feel terror and dread towards it.

A gigantic clump of light hung in the sky, radiating with brilliance,

illuminating the entirely endless mountain range. Rather terrifying fluctuations seemed to radiate from within the clump of light. Clearly, that should be the place where the legendary Heavenly Sovereign had sat and passed away. With their strength, they were simply unable to get close to it.

"That's the Divine Spiritual Mountain range?"

Mu Chen gasped out in shock, since he was able to feel the uniqueness of the Spiritual Aura within this world, which contained a mysterious essence in them. If one was to absorb and refine it, one would have a feeling of thirst radiating from their entire body, as if they couldn't endure absorbing all of the Spiritual Aura of the world.

"The Spiritual Aura of this world is said to be mixed with the blood and flesh of the Heavenly Sovereign who had passed away here, and is extremely beneficial to the refinement of one's fleshly body," said Xia Youran with a smile.

"No wonder," replied Mu Chen, smacking his lips, while shock appeared within his mind. That Heavenly Sovereign had passed away since god-knows forever. However, just some remnants of blood and flesh from him was able to change the Spiritual Energy of the world by this much. Such power truly was heaven-defying.

"However, it's a pity that the time the Divine Spiritual Mountain range opens each time is extremely short, being only a few days of time. If not, remaining here and training would have an enormous benefit to one's cultivation," replied Xia Youran with some pity. Although their Nine Summers Chamber of Commerce had an extremely strong power-base, they weren't able to obtain the Spiritual Energy from the blood and flesh of a Heavenly Sovereign to offer to people for cultivation.

Hearing her words, Mu Chen nodded his head. If he could stay here and train for a period of time, he might be able to achieve quite a huge breakthrough in his Lightning God's Physique.

"The land here also seems different," said Mu Chen after lowering his head to look at the earth below. The earth here appeared to be a faint

dark-red colour. Circulating his Spiritual Energy, he gave a hard stomp with his feet. Despite that huge force, only a few unassuming cracks appeared on the ground, causing his eyelids to twitch uncontrollably for a few times. If this was the outside world, with this step, even a mountain peak would tremble by the force of it. However, in this place, he was unexpectedly only able to achieve such a small bit of effect.

"That's due to the Heavenly Sovereign sitting and passing away here. Some of his blood and flesh has fused with the Divine Spiritual Mountain range. Thus, everything here will appear different from the outside," explained Xia Youran with a covered up smile.

"So, that's the reason," replied Mu Chen as a flash of understanding went through him.

"Furthermore, due the the Heavenly Sovereign sitting and passing away here, by relying on his strength, there are some wonderful heaven-born Spiritual Treasures appearing within this Divine Spiritual Mountain range. These Spiritual Treasures are extremely valuable. Due to them absorbing large amounts of Spiritual Energy mixed with the blood and flesh of a Heavenly Sovereign as they grew up, they have an extremely strong benefit towards the tempering of one's fleshly body."

With a smile, Xia Youran continued speaking, "In fact, there are many people who have entered the Divine Spiritual Mountainous range without the aim of obtaining the Divine Spiritual Baptism. Although it truly is the most valuable thing here, the difficulty of obtaining it is too hard, after all. Therefore, why not search for some natural-born Spiritual Treasures, and strengthen one's fleshly body to prepare for one's Fleshly Body Tribulation, right?"

Nodding his head, Mu Chen truly was somewhat enticed by such a prospect. However, he was able to judge the importance between matters. His goal here was the Divine Spiritual Baptism, and he truly didn't have any time left to go out and search for those heaven-born Spiritual Treasures that were hidden in extremely deep places.

"Let's go. We'll head straight towards the baptism area in the centre of

the Divine Spiritual Mountain range. At the same time, let's see if we can conveniently chance upon some heaven-born Spiritual Treasures along the way there," said Xia Youran with a smile.

The two of them shot through the skies at a low attitude, not daring to reach the high altitudes due to the increasing danger if they headed higher up. If one's unlucky enough to be swept into the shattered space, one might be instantly smashed into nihility by the incomparably frightening spatial currents.

As they headed deeper into the vast and expansive Divine Spiritual Mountain range, an endless number of figures shot pass them in their surroundings. They rushed towards the mountain range like a swarm of locusts, before leaving no stone unturned in their search for heaven-born Spiritual Treasures hidden within this world. This method of carpet bombing-style of searching truly had some results, since within a short span of time, that was less than half an hour, Mu Chen and Xia Youran had discovered some Spiritual Lights shooting towards the skies. Clearly, some heaven-born Spiritual Treasures have already been discovered.

Standing on the top of a hillside, Mu Chen and Xia Youran looked towards those Spiritual Lights shooting towards the skies in the far distance. Turning to shoot a look at each other, both of them had unexpectedly shook their heads.

Although those Spiritual Lights should have come from heaven-born Spiritual Treasures, from the strength and intensity of those Spiritual Lights, both of them could tell that the Spiritual Aura contained within those Spiritual Treasures weren't especially strong. Furthermore, the number of people attracted by them were truly too many. Therefore, Mu Chen and Xia Youran didn't want to waste their time and effort on them.

Giving up decisively against getting part of the action and share of those Spiritual Treasures, Mu Chen and Xia Youran increased their speed to the maximum, shooting towards their goal with explosive speed.

As Mu Chen and Xia Youran rushed towards the baptism area, they bumped into quite a few people with similar goals along the way. As their

gazes intersected, the expressions on the faces of those people turned into ones of ill-intents. However, in the end, there was no one that took action towards the two of them. From the looks of it, they might have recognised Xia Youran, and knew that the big Young Mistress of the Nine Summers Chamber of Commerce wasn't a good target to provoke.

Relying on the reputation of Xia Youran, there was no one that dared to take action against Mu Chen too, even though his strength at the Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase appeared extremely average in a place like this.

"Careful." while shooting swiftly in the air, Xia Youran suddenly extended her jade-like hand and grabbed Mu Chen. Looking solemnly at their forward direction with her beautiful eyes, she said, "The spatial gales are coming."

Raising his head, Mu Chen noticed that the land in the far distance had seemingly turned somewhat dark and dim. Hurricanes could be faintly discerned, hiding the skies and covering the earth as they swept over. Furthermore, one could seemingly observe black ripples surfacing within those hurricanes. Clearly, those were wind blades formed by the rampaging spatial fluctuations.

Chi. Chi.

As those spatial gales howled over, those thousand foot tall giant trees that were akin to pillars that supported the heavens were chopped and mowed down, while the sliced areas appeared as smooth as a mirror. This caused shock and astonishment to quietly surface within Mu Chen's heart. Looks like those spatial gales truly are formidable.

"Let's hide for a while."

Grabbing onto Mu Chen, Xia Youran quickly descended, landing into a depression within the mountain. With a wave of her jade-like hand, boundless Spiritual Energy howled out, transforming into a glowing Spiritual Energy film, covering this small depression.

Hu! Hu!

As Xia Youran completed her preparation with familiarity, the sky had already turned completely dim and dark. As the black gales that hid the skies and covered the earth swept over, the deep grooves were sliced into the ground by the spatial blades mixed within the gale, displaying their rather frightening destructive capabilities.

Creak. Groan.

They were able to feel the effects from the spatial gale within the small depression they were holed in. The glowing Spiritual Energy film continuously shook about, while the black spatial blades caused the glowing film to titter on the brink of collapse.

Seeing this, Mu Chen's expression turned solemn as he circulated his Spiritual Energy, getting ready to take action at any moment.

However, it was fortunate that the matter that made him worry the most didn't happen in the end. Although the glowing Spiritual Energy film continuously shook about, it didn't break in the end, causing Mu Chen to quietly breathe a sigh of relief.

Ah!

As Mu Chen started to relax, a miserable shriek suddenly rang out from the distance. Turning his gaze over, he noticed the Spiritual Energy defenses of a dozen people being ripped apart by the spatial gales. Before they could take action, the black-coloured spatial blades had already shot over without the slightest bit of mercy, slicing their bodies into bits that blotted the skies.

Looking at the blood and flesh blotting the skies, scattering about in the wind, Mu Chen's eyelids started twitching uncontrollably. From the looks of it, those fellows appeared to possess an outward strength similar to his own, at the Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase. However, under those spatial gales, they were unable to put up the slightest bit of resistance.

"Don't know how many unlucky fellas are out there in this wave of spatial gales," said Xia Youran as she smacked her lips. Nevertheless, no pity was shown on her face. Since those people wanted to come to a place

like this, they would naturally need to have the preparation to pay the worse price that could happen to them in here.

"We'll head along after this wave of spatial gales have past."

Hearing her words, Mu Chen nodded his head, before planning to take a rest. However, just as he had taken a seat, something tingled his senses. He turned his head to look towards the mountain range in the far distance, only to notice that the spatial gales were also howling at that place. Furthermore, they appeared to be more erratic than the situation Mu Chen was facing. At that, there was even a gigantic tornado wreaking havoc. Spatial blades that hid the skies and covered the earth howled out from it, slashing apart everything that came into contact with them.

As Mu Chen stared at the tornado, his eyes uncontrollably narrowed. That's because he seemed to notice a clump of dazzlingly bright Spiritual Light within the tornado.

Whoosh!

Furthermore, upon noticing that clump of dazzlingly bright Spiritual Light, the latter erupted with intense brilliance. This brilliance caused even the dimly lit world to light up.

Relying on that brief instant of illumination, Mu Chen seemed to notice a lustrous white thing within the clump of brilliance that appeared slightly like a bone...

"What is that...?"

Mu Chen mumbled, before his expression suddenly changed, while he placed his palms uncontrollably on his chest. He could feel a tremor suddenly radiating from his aurasea. As he traced back to the origin of the tremor, his heart started to intensively beat.

That's because, the origin was, unexpectedly, the piece of incomparably mysterious black paper within his aurasea!

Furthermore, this tremor was much more intense than any of the times before!

Chapter 402: Seizing the Treasure in the Tornado

Hum. Hum.

Mu Chen could feel that the mysterious black paper was starting to grow increasingly impatient. At this moment, the expression displayed on his face grew increasingly solemn. Over these past few years, this was the first time he had seen such activity from the mysterious black paper. And, it should be related to the thing located within the tornado in the far distance.

Xia Youran had also sensed the brief instance of brilliance that had just occurred. Casting her beautiful eyes over, she looked towards the clump of light located within the tornado, while shock and astonishment instantly appeared on her lovable face. After pondering for a slight instant, she spoke out, "That should be some kind of heaven-born Spiritual Treasure. Never imagined that one would actually be located within that tornado, huh?"

As she said those words, some pity was extruded within her voice. From the look of the situation before, wanting to obtain that heaven-born Spiritual Treasure before their eyes wasn't going to be easily. However, it was also a pity that such an item was hidden within that tornado. Going close to it in the current situation was clearly an extremely dangerous thing to do. After all, once one gets blown to high altitudes by the storm created by the tornado, and sucked into the spatial currents present there, one would truly be hard to escape the disaster that had befallen on them.

Staring tightly towards the storm before him, Mu Chen proceeded to furiously stand up.

Seeing that, Xia Youran was instantly scared by Mu Chen's actions. Looking straight at his face, she instantly exclaimed, "Don't be impulsive, Mu Chen. It's too dangerous over there. That kind of heaven-born Spiritual Treasure isn't easy to harvest."

Hearing her words, Mu Chen gave a bitter laugh. Naturally, he had also understood the dangers if he got close to that place. Nevertheless, the mysterious black paper within his body was held in extreme regard by him. This thing was even able suppress the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, clearly showing how extraordinary it was. Although, till now, Mu Chen still wasn't able to have an exact grasp of its origins, there was always a feeling within that this mysterious black paper might be rather formidable and powerful.

For the sake of getting a better understanding of the mystery behind that black paper, there were some dangers that Mu Chen felt he needed to risk and undergo.

Therefore, faced with Xia Youran's reminder, he could only shake his head gently and reply, "Senior Sister Xia, the Spiritual Treasure before us is rather important to me. I have to see if I can get it into my hands."

Looking at Mu Chen and seeing that he had already made up his mind, Xia Youran couldn't help stomping her feet in indignation. This fella's really acting too recklessly!

"Haha. Please relax, Senior Sister Xia. I know my limits. If I'm unable to obtain it, I'll immediately fall back. Just wait here for me." Mu Chen spoke out with a smile, before preparing to move his body.

Gently clenching her teeth, Xia Youran extended her jade-like arm to bar his movement, while replying, "I'm scared for you. Let's go together. There's only one way about this. If something happens to you here, how am I going to explain to Elder Sister Ling Xi?"

Feeling touched by her words, Mu Chen didn't obstruct her. Instead, he only replied in a soft voice, "Thank you very much, Senior Sister Xia."

Heroically waving her jade-like hand, Xia Youran extended her arm, before a dragon eye-sized green-coloured pearl appeared before their eyes. The surface of the green pearl was covered with mysterious patterns, while powerful fluctuations could be faintly discerned radiating from it. Mu Chen was able to sense that when the green pearl had appeared, the windy noises from the surroundings had instantly quietened down.

Looking curiously at the green pearl, Mu Chen could clearly sense that this item shouldn't be any ordinary Spiritual Artifact.

"This is a Wind Resistance Spiritual Pearl. Although it's a High-grade Spiritual Artifact, its offensive attributes aren't especially strong. However, it has an extremely strong effect against wind attacks. With it, we'll be able to get close to the region occupied by those spatial gales." Grasping the green pearl in her hand, Xia Youran started to explain with a grin.

Hearing that, elation instantly surfaced within Mu Chen's heart, while a mouth of praise rang uncontrollably out of his mouth. Truly worthy of the big Young Mistress of the Nine Summers Chambers of Commerce. Such a difference in family and status. Such a special High-grade Spiritual Artifact that was countless times stronger than what he could find, and yet she was able to bring it here just like that.

Having trained and cultivated for so many years, Mu Chen had yet to even obtain a single one of those extremely rare High-grade Spiritual Artifacts. Although the Great Meru Demonic Pillar was formidable, he wasn't able to use it with ease. Therefore, compared to Xia Youran, he truly was extremely poor.

Raising her jade-like hand, Xia Youran dispelled her glowing Spiritual Energy film that had covered the little hillside depression.

Bang!

When the glowing spiritual film was dispelled, the spatial gales that hid the skies and covered the earth came howling over. Nevertheless, when they were within a few feet of Mu Chen and Xia Youran, they abruptly turned weaker. With such a reduction in destructiveness, they were no longer able to break the Spiritual Energy defenses that covered their bodies.

The feeling he got was as if there was an invisible barrier protecting their entire bodies, giving him an extremely weird sensation.

"Let's go."

Looking at this, Xia Youran gave a smile, before shoot swiftly into the

air. This time, they clearly didn't dare to fly too high into the sky. Even with a treasure like the Wind Resistance Spiritual Pearl with them, it was still wise to be careful about matters like that.

Mu Chen followed closely behind Xia Youran by a step, while the two of them shot towards the rampaging spatial gales akin to two minute glowing figures. As they did so, some gazes coming from the hillside concealments along the way discovered the two of them piercing through the spatial gales. Upon spotting them, their gazes turned somewhat vacant. At such a time, people should be avoiding those spatial gales. And yet, those two fellows had actually dared to travel with such fanfare in such destructive winds. They truly were extremely reckless and daring.

However, Mu Chen and Xia Youran didn't give a care about those gazes coming from the darkness. Increasing their speed, they shot straight towards the area devastated by the tornado.

Relying on the protection of the Wind Resistance Spiritual Pearl, the two of them were able to travel through the rampaging spatial gales with extreme ease. Shooting up a high cliff, they raised their heads, looking towards the rampaging tornado not far in the distance. At this moment, the storm appeared in a jet-black colour, with spatial blades that hid the skies and covered the earth as they swept out of it, slicing hundreds and thousands of holes and gashes into the earth.

Within the depths of the storm, the clump of light grew increasingly bright and radiant.

Looking at the clump of brilliance, Mu Chen's eyes grew increasingly red-hot. As he got closer, he could feel the increasingly impatient tremors coming from the mysterious black paper within his body.

Taking a step out, he couldn't resist anymore, wanting to get it into his hands.

"Wait," said Xia Youran as she grabbed his hand, her beautiful eyes looking at a dark place not far away from them. There, she could faintly discern some figures present. At this moment, those people were also stared at the tornado. Clearly, they had also discovered the Spiritual

Treasure faintly hidden within the tornado.

"Looks like there's quite a few people staring at that thing," said Xia Youran while a slight frown appeared on her forehead. Being able to arrive at this place under the spatial gales to harvest the Spiritual Treasure clearly showed that they weren't just any random ordinary figures. From the looks of it now, it wouldn't be easy to obtain this Spiritual Treasure today.

Nevertheless, not much unexpected feelings appeared within Mu Chen's eyes. The Spiritual Treasure within the tornado shouldn't be ordinary, so being able to attract some people to try to obtain it wasn't something that was unexpected. However, the current situation appeared quite pressing.

"If they wish to obtain it, let them take the lead and try, while we take a back seat and observe them," said Mu Chen in a soft voice.

Hearing his words, Xia Youran breathed a sigh of relief. She was somewhat afraid of Mu Chen being unable to endure the lure of the Spiritual Treasure and rushing to take action. At that time, not only would they have to endure the attacks coming from the spatial gales, they might also lure quite a few hidden blades and arrows along the way. At this moment, one must absolutely not lose their calm and cool.

When the both of them came, they had clearly attracted the attention of some people. Instantly, some of them could not endure any longer. The amount of people that was attracted by the Spiritual Treasure were increasing in numbers as time past. If they were to wait any longer, the chances they that would have would probably be less and less.

Swish!

In the darkness, the eyes of some people sparkled, before furiously clenching their teeth and explosively shooting forward. Boundless Spiritual Energy erupted out, causing the spatial gales to be smashed apart in an instant as dozens of figures shot straight towards the tornado, all in their attempts to snatch and obtain the Spiritual Treasure located within the tornado.

Chi! Chi!

However, just as they neared the tornado, gales that blotted the skies howled over, with countless black spatial wind blades hiding the skies and covering the earth as they shot over. With such a number, they would truly be rather terrifying for anyone.

Ah! Ah!

As the black spatial wind blades howled past, miserable shrieks instantly rang out, while the boundless Spiritual Energy surrounding those people were unexpectedly sliced apart by those spatial wind blades. As their bodies were cut into pieces, blood and flesh started to spurt throughout the skies.

The only fellows with a protective Spiritual Weapon was able to miserably retreat at the instant when using them to block those spatial wind blades. However, they had still paid a rather terrible price. After landing in an appalling fashion on the ground, their blood-soaked figures appeared extremely miserable and hideous.

In the darkness, quite a few people sucked in a breath of cold air at the scene that had unfolded before them as they thought, Those spatial gales are truly terrifying. The people that had just taken action all had strength on the level of Heavenly Completion Stage, with one of them even reaching Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase, but was still sent flying back in a miserable fashion. However, compared to the unfortunate fellows who were cut and sliced apart, they were already extremely lucky.

Seeing the first batch of people paying such a miserably heavy price, those people that had turned bloodshot by the Spiritual Treasure started to gradually calm down. Their foreheads brimming within cold sweat, they didn't dare to recklessly take action again.

While they did so, the spatial gales were still rampaging and wreaking about havoc. Like an incomparably large black-coloured giant dragon, the tornado twisted and turned about, exhibiting its astonishing power.

"When do we take action?" asked Xia Youran as she looked towards Mu Chen. "I suggest that we wait till this tornado weakens before taking action. Would that be alright?"

An expression of pondering flashed within Mu Chen's head. With a shake of his head, he replied, "Senior Sister Xia. Right now, everyone else also has the same line of thought as you. That's why, once the tornado truly weakens, I'm afraid that everyone would also take action at the same time as us. Under that chaos, wanting to obtain that Spiritual Treasure might be even more difficult than now."

"So, what's your plan?"asked Xia Youran with a slight frown appearing on her forehead.

"Senior Sister Xia, could you possibly lend me your Wind Resistance Spiritual Pearl for a moment?"

"You want to head in there alone?" Xia Youran was shocked, while a faint change of expression appeared on her lovable face. Even a Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase person would be quite hard-pressed to resist against those spatial gales. With Mu Chen's strength at the Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase, everything pointed to disaster for him if he was to head into the tornado.

With a smile, Mu Chen replied, "Senior Sister Xia. There're still a few people eyeing covetously at that Spiritual Treasure. I can feel a few fierce and rather formidable fluctuations coming from around us. Look's like there's some difficult characters in this area. Therefore, I hope that you can help me obstruct them at this place. As for the matter about obtaining that Spiritual Treasure, you can leave it to me."

Hearing his reply, Xia Youran's frown persisted, appearing as if she wanting to advise against such action. However, in the end, she was stopped by the smile hanging on the face of the youth in front of her. Sighing in helplessness, she gently nodded her head in acknowledgement.

While Mu Chen was discussing with Xia Youran in a soft voice, there were two figures shooting cold and detached gazes towards them from a mountain crevice not far away from them. Their appearances were the Young Masters of the Umbra and Heavenly Yuan Chambers of Commerce, Liu Ying and Dong Yuan.

"Haha. This truly is the inevitable clash between enemies," said Dong

Yuan as he looked towards the male and female not far away from him. With a smile, he continued speaking, "Looks like they have their eyes on that Spiritual Treasure, too. Any thoughts?"

Pressing his palm against the hard mountain wall, his five fingers appeared like knifes, carving five deep grooves into the rock. Patting his hands together with indifference, he stared towards Mu Chen's figure, while shadows of darkness flashed within his eyes.

"Relax, that brat doesn't have the luck and fortune to enjoy such a Spiritual Treasure."

Chapter 403: Wu Dong

Wu! Wu!

As the black tornado wreaked havoc across the world, low and deep sounds, akin to the roars of a giant dragon, rang out, causing the earth the vibrate and tremble under the destruction caused by the tornado.

After observing the miserable endings to the first batch of people, the people hiding in the various spots of darkness didn't dare to recklessly take action and head out. Eyes sparkling, they quietly waited for the weakening of the spatial gales, since that would be the only time that they could safely take action.

As everyone hid and waited for that opportune moment, Mu Chen had already obtained the Wind Resistance Spiritual Pearl from Xia Youran. Placing it within his sleeve, he raised his head, looking straight at the rampaging tornado that's wreaking havoc everywhere. Taking a deep breath, he said, "I'm moving out now. Senior Sis Xia. If I'm able to obtain it, you should make a move first, before meeting up again later."

If he was truly able to obtain that Spiritual Treasure, he would immediately become the common enemy of everyone here. At that time, he might bring some trouble for Xia Youran, if she was to stayed with him. Although she might not mind, Mu Chen didn't want to bring about trouble for others, due to his actions.

Hearing his words, Xia Youran had understood Mu Chen's intent. However, she was also extremely clear that although the age of the youth in front of her was less than her own, he had extremely strong personal opinions. Therefore, not saying anything more about it, she nodded her head, before warning him again, "Be careful, alright?"

With a smile, Mu Chen nodded his head. Without any more hesitation, Spiritual Energy burning with black flames rose from him, enveloping his entire body. Under his skin, black lightning seemed to arc and spark about. Faced against those frightening spatial gales, Mu Chen clearly didn't have the guts to hold any of his strength back, and activated all of

the defenses he could muster.

Whoosh!

After doing that, a fierce glint gradually appeared within Mu Chen's eyes. With a shift, he shot out akin to a black bolt of lightning, and explosively headed towards the tornado.

Due to the earlier scene that unfolded, there was already no one that dared to recklessly take action. However, the sudden movement of Mu Chen immediately attracted all of the gazes over.

"There's other people that are taking action!"

"Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase? Where did this pile of waste come from? He's simply seeking his own death."

"He truly doesn't know the immensity of the heavens. Only those that are blessed would have the fortune to enjoy such a Spiritual Treasure."

Various whispering voices rang out from the darkness, with the majority of them being ones of mockery or contempt. Even for experts at the Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase, the tornado formed by the spatial gales was extremely difficult to be dealt with. Seemingly all of the people at the Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase were unable to even escape from it.

Standing within the crevice in the mountain, Liu Ying and Dong Yuan were currently staring at the figure shooting across the skies with slightly narrowed eyes, with doubt and suspicion flickering within their gazes.

"He actually dared to snatch the treasure all by himself?" Dong Yuan exclaimed with a slight bit of shock. He had assumed that Xia Youran would accompany Mu Chen as he advanced towards the tornado. However, he never imagined that that fellow would have the nerve to attempt it by himself. Nevertheless, with the latter's strength, would he be able to pierce into that tornado?

A cold sneer appeared on the face of Liu Ying as he stared at the figure quickly shooting across the sky, while saying, "That's truly interesting. I really wanna see, exactly, what capability that recently famous brat has."

However, although he had said those words, he had also sent a signal towards a certain direction, were a black figure seemed to be present. He was radiating with a chilling aura, which caused the experts in its vicinity to immediately run far away, their eyes filled with dread and terror.

"Oh? It's that fellow," said Dong Yuan, after narrowing his eyes to take a look. With a smile, he said, "Look's like you don't play to personally take action, huh?"

"Wu Dong's the City Lord of the Heavenly Python City, and has some fame within the Northern Heavens Continent. He owes me a favor, and today's just the right day to return it...regardless of how many tricks he has up his sleeves, a Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase brat isn't worthy of me to personally take action," replied Liu Ying with an indifferent snort, one which contained unconcealable arrogance.

Shrugging his shoulders, Dong Yuan thought, This fella's truly cautious.

As the two people continued chatting, Mu Chen's figure explosively shot across the sky. On the contrary to people's expectations, the fierce rampaging spatial gales were unexpectedly unable to deal much obstruction to him. With Spiritual Energy burning with black flames surrounding his body, the occasion swipe of the black spatial wind blades were simply unable to pierce through his Spiritual Energy defenses.

This spectacle immediately caused quite a ruckus from the surrounding crowd, with quite a few people having shock and doubt on their faces. They were somewhat unable to believe that those incomparably ferocious spatial wind blades appeared to be as light as feathers, striking Mu Chen's body without too much strength at all.

"There's a possibility that the brat's got a Spiritual Artifact that defends against wind storms," said Dong Yuan with a slight frown. Being the Young Master of the Heavenly Yuan Chamber of Commerce, his eyesight wasn't ordinary, since he was able to spot the underlying reason with a single look. Mu Chen should have some special Spiritual Artifact to protect his body, if not, he would not be able to travel in such an unimpeded fashion within the spatial gales.

"It should've been given to him by Xia Youran," replied Liu Ying within an increasingly dark expression. , Xia Youran truly did put in some effort for the sake of protecting that Mu Chen!

Whoosh!

As Mu Chen's figure shot explosively across the horizon, he reached the vicinity of the gigantic tornado within the short span of a dozen breaths. As he did so, his entire body grew increasingly tense, since he knew that he was now in a truly dangerous region. The previous batch of people had all been utterly massacred at this place, suffering disastrous losses.

Humm! Humm!

Just as Mu Chen was getting vigilant, the tornado seemed to have discovered his presence nearby, instantly sending humming sounds ringing out. Black-coloured spatial wind blades that hid the skies and covered the earth swept out, appearing akin to a wind dragon covered in blades, and were heading straight towards Mu Chen.

With a swift wave of his hand, a green-coloured halo expanded from the Wind Resistance Spiritual Pearl within his palm.

Chi! Chi!

The wind dragon composed of spatial wind blades rushed towards the halo, causing its fierce brilliance to instantly turn dim by quite a bit. As this happened, the degree of sharpness of the wind dragon was reduced. Nevertheless, this attack was too strong. Even after being greatly weakened by the Wind Resistance Spiritual Pearl, it didn't scatter apart, and the spatial wind blades violently struck against Mu Chen's body, one after another.

Cold sneers over the impending misfortune instantly rang out from below. This brat is going to suffer death by a thousand cuts...

Heh...

However, as the cold sneers rang out, all of a sudden, the eyes of a few people furiously sprang apart. In the sky, after being struck by numerous spatial wind blades, Mu Chen had actually been knocked back by a dozen

metres. As he stabilised himself, not a single drop of blood was present on his body,

This fellow has actually endured all of the spatial wind blades that struck him!

This caused the expressions of those Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase experts to turn solemn. If they were to place themselves in Mu Chen's shoes, they might not be able to escape unscathed from that many spatial wind blades. The youth in front of their eyes clearly had some abilities.

Travelling through the sky, Mu Chen didn't bother about the gazes coming from below. Lowering his head to look as his body, he noticed that his clothes had already been shredded apart. White scratches covered his skin, faintly throbbing within pain. Nevertheless, such a bit of pain was completely ignored by Mu Chen.

Hu.

Mu Chen quietly breathed a sigh of relief, feeling fortunate for the great rise in his strength. Coupled with the Lightning God's Physique, as well as the assistance from the Wind Resistance Spiritual Pearl, those spatial wind blades weren't able to do much harm to him.

Since this is the case, let's rush straight into the tornado!

With a grin on his face, Mu Chen headed forward, planning to rush straight into the tornado to obtain the Spiritual Treasure within.

Within the mountain crevice, Liu Ying darkly stared towards the figure piercing through the obstruction of the spatial wind blades as though they were pieces of paper. Looking towards the black figure not far away from him, he gently nodded his head, then extended his hand to make a slicing action across his neck.

Kill him.

Bang!

Within the darkness, the figure shrouded with a chilling aura gave a

smile, revealing his pearly-white teeth. With a shift of his body, cracks appeared below his feet as his figure shot towards the sky like a vicious eagle.

Immediately, the figure that had suddenly rushed towards the sky attracted the attention of everyone in the vicinity. The expressions of some people slightly changed as they cried out, "That's...the City Lord of the Heavenly Python City, Wu Dong?"

"That fellow...has already been at the Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase for a long time. I don't know if he has crossed the Human Body Disaster as of now..."

"It's said that Wu Dong once tried to cross the Human Body Disaster, but failed. This fella's also formidable, being fortunate enough to survive with his life. However, his current strength has exceeded a normal Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase, and is simply not someone that the other fellow can match."

"Since he has taken action, I'm afraid that misfortune's heading that brat's way."

As whispers rang about from the surroundings, the figure that had explosively dashed up grew increasingly clear within people's view. The figure wore a green armor, with a faint green glow sparkling around it. Clearly, this was also a defensive Spiritual Artifact. As the surrounding spatial wind blades slashed against the armor, they left behind lines of scratch marks, but were unable to penetrate through it.

Clearly, this Wu Dong had come prepared.

On the lower ground, Xia Youran had also spotted Wu Dong, who was heading towards Mu Chen, causing her lovable face to slightly sink. With a cold snort, she sent a flick out with a finger, sending boundless Spiritual Energy shooting out. Like a whip, she swung it straight towards the latter.

Sensing the swift and fierce attack heading towards him, Wu Dong didn't slow down the slightest bit, with no signs of showing any care for it too.

However, as the Spiritual Energy whip shot straight towards Wu Dong, suddenly, a grey-coloured streak of light explosively shot out from below. Smashing into the Spiritual Energy whip, it obstructed it from its intended target.

A slightly frosty expression appeared on Xia Youran's face as she turned her head over, only to see a figure faintly smiling from the mountain crevice, it was Liu Ying.

"Liu Ying! What are you doing?!" A frosty roar rang out from Xia Youran. It's this loathsome fellow again!

With a faint smile, a cold and indifferent voice rang out like the wind from Liu Ying.

"Heaven-born Spiritual Treasures are for the capable to obtain, Youran. There's no need to obstruct other people. If that brat's powerless, he should just obediently return to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy to train. This Spiritual Treasure isn't something that he should lay his finger on."

Chapter 404: Poisonous Finger

Looking coldly at the faintly smiling Liu Ying standing not too far from her, powerful Spiritual Energy started to swell around Xia Youran's body, causing creaking sounds to ring out in the air. She had always been extremely irked by that Liu Ying, ever since the projects that their Chambers of Commerce had collaborated on. Although the two of them were tied together through an engagement, that was just for show, a beneficial agreement, and was known to everyone. However, who would have thought that this fellow would unexpected treat it as something real, and view her as something that was forbidden to be contacted by anyone, with any friend of the opposite sex that came close to her suffering his wrath and retribution?

Although it wasn't good for Xia Youran to break all pretense with Liu Ying, due to the strength of the Umbra Chamber of Commerce. However, she felt extreme ire towards him, one that was growing increasingly deep as of now.

As of today, that fellow had suddenly targeted Mu Chen. Clearly, it was because of him getting close to her.

"Do you really think that I don't dare to deal with you, Liu Ying?!" An ice-cold voice rang out of Xia Youran as her lovable face turned frosty.

Shrugging his shoulders, Liu Ying replied with a smile, "I only want for you to calm down for a bit, Youran. That brat's ambition's too big. Suffering a setback's good thing for him."

As he spoke, he sent a faint smile towards Xia Youran. "Furthermore, I didn't personally take action against that brat, Youran, and that's due to you. Therefore, you shouldn't take action again, and just quietly sit back and enjoy the nice show. Isn't that much better?"

With a sneer, Xia Youran replied, "Do you think you can obstruct me? Also, can that Wu Dong really deal with Mu Chen?"

"Haha. I know that Mo Longzi was defeated by that Mu Chen. However, Wu Dong isn't Mo Longzi. Although he has failed his Human Body

Disaster, within the Heavenly Completion Stage, I'm afraid that there aren't many people that are his match," replied Liu Ying with a faint smile.

Hearing his reply, Xia Youran slightly clenched her teeth. Nevertheless, although she was worried about Mu Chen, she naturally couldn't reveal that thought on her face. With a cold snort, she cried out, "Let's look and see!"

The Liu Ying before her was clearly staring right back at her, not letting her take action. Although Xia Youran wasn't afraid of Liu Ying, she might get tied down by the latter, if they were to cross hands. In that way, it wouldn't help Mu Chen in any way.

"Then, I'll wait and see."

Seeing the anger and fury present on Xia Youran's beautiful face, the smile at the corner of his mouth appeared much richer. Crossing his hands behind his back, he turned to look towards the sky with a grin.

Swish!

In the sky, Wu Dong's speed increased to an extremely fast level, appearing like a streak of light, piercing through the spatial wind blades that blotted the skies. Fiercely staring at Mu Chen, who was also travelling through the spatial wind blades, he sent a furious pat out. The boundless winds that brought along boundless Spiritual Energy rushed out from his palm, piercing through the spatial wind blades, violently smashing towards Mu Chen's figure.

When Wu Dong rushed towards the sky, Mu Chen had already discovered him. As of now, when the former had sent his attack out, a slightly chilly glint appeared within Mu Chen's eyes. In the next instant, a dragon shadow surfaced around his body as he retreated a dozen steps back.Evading the incoming attack, he slightly turned his body, looking towards the figure shooting towards him.

"You're called Mu Chen, right?" Looking towards Mu Chen, an indifferent smile appeared on Wu Dong's face as he said, "Go down. This Spiritual Treasure isn't something that you should put your fingers on."

"Who are you?" asked Mu Chen with a frown. The man before him appeared to be roughly thirty years old in age, with the Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiating from his body being even stronger than Mo Longzi during their fight.

"Heavenly Python City's Lord, Wu Dong,"replied Wu Dong with the same indifferent tone. Nevertheless, a sliver of unconcealable arrogance could be heard from his voice.

Frowning as he pondered, Mu Chen replied with an emotionless voice, "Never heard of you before."

Wu Dong's expression immediately turned sluggish. He could be considered to have some reputation within the Northern Heavens Continent. After all, he had become a Lord of a city within a continent brimming with experts at such an age, which was considered an extraordinary achievement by itself. Therefore, Mu Chen's response caused his eyes to faintly narrow, before sneering as he said, "The students taught by the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy are truly getting more and more rampant by the batch. No wonder why their prestige is dropping more and more as the years go by. Look's like they really can no longer endure it, since they summoned up the guts to send someone like you to participate in the Divine Spiritual Mountain. However, I'm afraid that they'll not be able to earn any reputation back, since they will throw their face away once again."

"A small Heavenly Python City Lord dares to speak such rampant words, huh? Destroying you would just be a matter of a wave for the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy," replied Mu Chen with a frown, not showing a single shred of face for the so-called 'Heavenly Python City Lord'.

"You damnable thing!" A roar rang out from Wu Dong, with his face finally turning dark. With a shift of his body, he explosively shot forward. Shadow fists howled out, bringing along boundless Spiritual Energy as heavy as mountains, enveloping all over Mu Chen.

Seeing this, Mu Chen didn't engage into a head-on confrontation with him, and a dragon shadow rose from his body. While a dragon's roar rang

out, his speed explosively increased, while he rushed straight towards the inner region of the tornado.

"Are you able to run away today?" Seeing Mu Chen rushing into the tornado that's wreaking havoc all around, the eyes of Wu Dong slightly narrowed. With a cold sneer, dazzling brilliance erupted from his armor, enveloping his entire body. Transforming into a glowing streak of light, he followed suit, rushing straight at the tornado.

As he dashed towards the tornado, Mu Chen could feel how formidable those spatial wind blades were. Even with the protection of the Wind Resistance Spiritual Pearl, the spatial wind blades that hid the skies and covered the earth caused red welts to appear on Mu Chen's skin as they brought about their rotational energies, slashing furiously down on him.

Rotating his Spiritual Energy, lightning arcs sparked across the surface of his body as he forcefully endured the attacks that hid the skies and covered the earth, while flying rapidly towards the inner region of the tornado.

Not far behind him, green light sparkled as Wu Dong closely pursued him from behind. With the green armor protecting his body, causing the spatial wind blades shooting at his direction to completely disappear, he looked towards Mu Chen's figure present in front of him. With a furious clench of his arm, a long halberd appeared in a flash. A shiver went through his arms as he sent an incomparably fierce wind blade sweeping out. Completely smashing apart all the spatial wind blades in its path, it moved forward, heading towards its intended victim.

"Don't think about obtaining the treasure from under my nose today! That'll be simply the ravings of a lunatic!"

Sensing the boundless wind blade shooting towards him from behind, a chilling glint flashed within Mu Chen's eyes as he came to an abrupt halt. In the next instant, turning around, he sent a fist rumbling out. Spiritual Energy burning with black flames spewed out, completely smashing the incoming Spiritual Energy halberd shadow apart.

Swish!

As his fist smashed the incoming Spiritual Energy halberd shadow apart, Mu Chen didn't proceed forward once again; instead, he turned around, and dashed towards Wu Dong.

"You finally can't endure anymore, huh? I thought that you'd be like a rabbit, continuing to run and flee away!" Seeing Mu Chen taking the initiative to rush towards him, a sneer instantly surfaced on the corner of Wu Dong's mouth. This brat's truly a greenhorn! Just like that, and he's unable to endure any more! Did he think that I'm Mo Longzi?

Roar!

As Mu Chen shot over, a frosty expression was present on his face. A seal formation appeared from his hands, before boundless Spiritual Energy rushed towards the skies. As the starry skies appeared, three gigantic beastial shadows appeared. In the next instant, bringing about astonishing might, they split space apart, smashing all of the incomparably berserk spatial gales in the surroundings apart.

"A bit of ability, huh?"

Looking at the three gigantic beastial shadows shooting his way, and sensing the Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiating from them, caused Wu Dong's eyes to faintly narrow. This attack had truly reached a level comparable to Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase. Look's like this Mu Chen didn't rely completely on luck to defeat that Mo Longzi.

"Just that little bit of ability isn't anything in front of me!"

With a furious shake of the halberd in his hand, Wu Dong thrust it straight out like a spear. Powerful Spiritual Energy swept out as the halberd's shadow transformed into an incomparably gigantic python. As the gigantic python howled out, it merged with the body of the halberd, piercing straight towards the three gigantic beastial shadows.

Bang!

Rampaging Spiritual Energy fluctuations rushed out, unexpectedly creating a hundred foot sphere of free space around them. At this moment, the spatial gales wreaking havoc in their surroundings were

unable to intrude in this space.

On the ground below, various experts had raised their heads to look at the two figures intensely crossing hands within the devastated space in the gigantic tornado. This caused quite a few people to quietly click their tongues in admiration. Those two fellows truly had guts bigger than everyone else. The tornado was brimming with spatial gales, with one requiring to pay an extremely miserable price with just a lapse of judgement.

There were also quite a few people feeling shock and astonishment towards Mu Chen's performance. Everyone present knew the level of Wu Dong's strength. Although he had failed to cross his Human Body Disaster, he was absolutely stronger than an ordinary Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase. Nevertheless, Mu Chen had actually dared to engage in a head-on confrontation against him, and wasn't even in much of a disadvantageous position. This caused quite a few people to gasp in admiration; after all, his strength was only at the Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase.

Swish!

As rampaging Spiritual Energy swept out, Mu Chen's figure shoot forward, while looking towards the halberd-wielding Wu Dong standing in the distance. At this moment, the frosty glint within his eyes grew increasingly thick, since he could feel that the spatial gales within the tornado gradually getting weaker. If he wasn't able to deal with this Wu Dong soon, once the spatial gales scattered, the countless experts staring from below with bloodshot eyes might take action then. At that moment, wanting to snatch the treasure from that group of wolves would truly be extremely difficult. After all, Mu Chen knew that he wasn't able to achieve victory over everyone by himself.

Therefore, he needed to get rid of the fellow in front of him in the fastest possible time!

As Mu Chen's eyes narrowed, he transformed into a streak of light, shooting towards Wu Dong in a straight line. As he did so, black lightning

arcs sparked across his body, while a powerful strength started to radiate out from within.

"You've cultivated a Body-Refining Divine Art?"

A poisonous glare shot out from Wu Dong's eyes, since he could tell with one look how extraordinary Mu Chen was, while his sneer grew increasingly wide. Did this waste truly think that he would be very formidable after cultivating a Body-Refining Divine Art? Although he had fail his Human Body Disaster, he had still become extremely powerful. Even people who had cultivated in a Body-Refining Divine Art would be hard to compare to him.

"A brat that doesn't know how high the heavens are! I'll deal with you in a single move!"

A fierce and sinister glint flashed within Wu Dong's eyes as a lustrous white light unexpectedly erupted from his body. At this moment, all the blood and flesh within his body seemed to flare up as an extremely powerful strength started to surge within his limbs and bones.

As he stomped on the air, his figure explosively shot forward. In a span of a few breaths, he had made contact within Mu Chen, with body of the other being able to feel the chilling intent erupting from each other's eyes.

Pointing his fingers like spears, Mu Chen sent them piercing out, shattering all of the surrounding spatial gales apart in an abnormally swift and fierce manner.

"Scram!"

With a sinister smile, Wu Dong clenched his hands into fists, while lustrous white light sparkled from them, causing them to appear akin to jade, hard and indestructible. This fist was more than sufficient to cause severe injuries to a Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase expert!

Nevertheless, faced against such an attack, Mu Chen, unexpectedly, did not dodge or evade. Piercing his two fingers forward, he smashed them towards Wu Dong's wind fists.

At the instant of contact, Wu Dong seemed to see a cold and sinister

smile slowly creeping up from the corner of Mu Chen's mouth.

At the same time, one of Mu Chen's fingers instantly turned incomparably jet-black.

Chapter 405: Severed Arm

At the very instant when Mu Chen's finger had turned jet-black, Wu Dong seemed to have also discovered it, causing a unconcealable chill to suddenly flood through his mind. As cold sweat erupted from him, drenching his entire body, the senses that he had honed for all the years of training and cultivation had caused him to feel a sensation of life-threatening unease at this moment.

Therefore, he had halted the punch he was about to send out seemingly at that instant. The strong gales caused by his sudden reversal caused the Spiritual Energy in his body to churn and slosh around. Nevertheless, not caring a damn about this, he forced himself to retreat as fast as he could.

"Isn't it a bit too late to walk away now?"

However, the instant when he had stepped back, Mu Chen's cold and frosty voice rang out like maggots in one's tarsus. The handsome face of the youth was now engulfed in chilling intent. Taking a step out, a giant dragon shadow seemed to surface at the bottom of his feet. Carrying him on its back, his step forward caused him to appear as if he was piercing through space.

Like a spectre, he appeared right before the retreating Wu Dong, that black fingertip shooting towards the throat of the latter at lightning speed.

That jet-black finger appeared akin to the sickle of the grim reaper, radiating with a dense aura of death.

His speed was too quick, too the point that Wu Dong was unable to react in time, only managing to send a rebounding arm to shield in front of his body, while erupting his Spiritual Energy out in defense.

Chi!

The jet-black finger pierced through. As the boundless Spiritual Energy defense came into contact with the jet-black finger, crackling sounds immediately erupted from it, before started to dissolve away. Like an incomparably sharp dagger, Mu Chen's fingertip pierced straight into Wu

Dong's arm like a bolt of lightning.

As the fingertip pierced through, it brought along a spray of fresh blood.

As Wu Dong's figure miserably retreated back, he was incomparably shocked to see his arm turning jet black at an astonishing speed. At this moment, a black colour started to crazily extending across his body.

This was a frightening poison!

Overwhelmed with shock, Wu Dong hastily tried to circulate his Spiritual Energy in an attempt to force the poison out from his body. However, as his Spiritual Energy made contact with the black poison, Wu Dong discovered, to his horror, that the Spiritual Energy in his body was unexpected being corroded by the poison at a rapid pace! That Spiritual Energy had unexpectedly turned into a highly toxic poison at this moment!

He was completely unable to force it out!

Such overbearing poison!

At this moment, Wu Dong's face turned deathly pale as he thought, What kind of poison is this? ! It's actually so overbearing! Even Spiritual Energy will get contaminated by it!

As the black-coloured poison lines started to rapidly extend, Wu Dong's eyes turned bloodshot. In the next moment, with a furious clench of his teeth, he turned his hand into a blade. As Spiritual Energy surged out, he gave a vicious chop down at the base of his arm, violently slashing down.

"AAAHHH!"

A fierce shriek rang out of Wu Dong's mouth as the arm, having already turned jet-black, detached from his body and flew down from the sky, spurting out blood that had already turned jet-black. As it left his body, the cut off arm rapidly rotted away, turning into black-coloured ashes in a short span of a few breaths, before scattering apart.

Retreating in an extremely miserable fashion, Wu Dong's face appeared deathly-pale, with his forehead dripping with sweat. At this moment, the gaze shooting towards Mu Chen had turned into one of incomparable

dread and terror. That poison's too terrifying!

Seeing this, a slight frown appeared on Mu Chen's forehead. It was extremely hard for him to grasp the opportunity to display his "Black Lightning Poison Finger". He never imagined that Wu Dong would be that decisive to actually chop his arm off upon discovering the inability to dispel the overbearing poisonous aura.

"One more time!"

With a cold and detached smile on his face, Mu Chen's figure shot out once again. Seeing this, Wu Dong was terror-stricken, turning stiff with fear, no longer daring to take action against Mu Chen anymore. Turning around, he became an extremely sorry figure as he fled away. A roar filled with fury and anger rang out along with the spatial gales in the sky, "For the enmity of my arm, I'll definitely take my revenge, Mu Chen!"

Looking at the figure of Wu Dong fleeing in horror, a faint smile appeared on Mu Chen's face, before the jet-black finger started to slowly regain its original colour. With every use, that "Black Lightning Poison Finger" would decreasing in toxicity. Therefore, he couldn't just use it in any normal occasion, and left it as a hidden ace. If he didn't need to chase that Wu Dong away as fast as possible, he wouldn't have used it at all. However, he never imagined that this "Black Lightning Poison Finger" would actually be that overbearing. Just a single touch was enough to waste away an entire arm of Wu Dong's.

He never proceeded to chase after the fleeing Wu Dong. Although he had completely trashed the latter, the current him had a more important matter to attend to.

Turning his body around, he looked towards the depths of the tornado. In the next moment, his figure explosively shot towards it. Now, he needed to grasp the best timing to obtain that Spiritual Treasure!

As Wu Dong fled away, the various experts below could faintly hear the furious roars of the former ringing out from the tornado. Hearing those angry roars, their expressions slightly changed. Nevertheless, due to the obstruction of the storm, they were able to determine exactly what had

appeared during that moment.

The faint smile originally present on Liu Ying's face started to slowly turn dark. Clearly, he had felt that something was not quite right.

Whoosh!

As everyone was guessing about what had happened, a glowing figure suddenly shot out from the tornado storm in an extremely miserable fashion, immediately drawing all of their gazes.

And there, Wu Dong was fleeing in terror, a deathly-pale shadow present on his face, body drenched in cold sweat. He appeared as miserable as a stray dog on the streets, completely different from the arrogant aura of a City Lord that he had shown at the very beginning.

As their gazes shot over to Wu Dong, before finally resting on his missing arm, the eyes of quite a few people furiously narrowed, while thick feelings of terror and dread erupted within their minds.

That Wu Dong had actually lost an arm in such a short span of time?!

That Mu Chen's unexpectedly that formidable? Relying on his strength at Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase, he not only forced Wu Dong to retreat, he even caused him to lose an arm?! How is this possible?!

The hearts of every expert tremored in shock as their expressions continued to fluctuate.

At this moment, Liu Ying had also seen the current state of Wu Dong. Therefore, the dark shadow originally present on his face became even darker to the point of being able to frighten people. Clenching his hands as tightly as he could, his handsome face had started to slowly warp and distort. That waste Wu Dong! He had actually been injured into such a state?!

While fury exploded within Liu Ying's heart, Xia Youran was also baffled by the scene unfurling before her, with her beautiful eyes brimming with shock and astonishment. She knew that Mu Chen being able to represent the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy meant that that he definitely possessed some redeeming qualities to warrant so. However, she never

imagined that the latter would actually be able to injure Wu Dong to such a degree in such a short span of time.

Regardless of anything, that Wu Dong's a person that had experienced the Human Body Disaster. Although he had failed to pass through it, he was still much strong than any other normal Heavenly Completion Stage. However, it seems as if she had still underestimated that little fellow Mu Chen.

Gently crossing her jade-like arms in front of her ample bosom, Xia Youran breathed a sigh of relief, while the chilling intent originally present on her lovable face completely faded away. Staring amusingly at Liu Ying, whose handsome face had slightly warped, she said, "Look's like your wish didn't come true, after all."

Hearing her words, Liu Ying's gaze turned dark as fury and angry rushed out of his heart. With a dark voice, he replied, "It's too early to be happy. Since Wu Dong's useless, let me personally test how much he's worth!"

As his voice rang out, Liu Ying stomped his foot, sending himself rocketing straight into the sky. In an instant, an extremely powerful wave of Spiritual Energy swept out from him like a giant sphere. Unexpectedly, it caused the spatial gales wreaking havoc in this region to be completely unable to reach within a range of a few hundred feet of him!

This scene instantly caused the crowd of experts to feel shocked as dreadful expressions appeared on their faces as they looked towards the figure radiating with a terrifying aura. Tremors shook through their shocked hearts a they thought, Is this the highest level of the younger generation in the Northern Heavens Continent? From the looks of it, that Liu Ying might have already passed through the first of the Three Sovereign Disasters, the Human Body Disaster, right?

"This Liu Ying wants to personally take action!" Some people exclaimed out in shock, before their gazes turned scorching hot. Generally speaking, a person on the level of Liu Ying would only personally take action at the area of the baptism. No one ever imagined that he would actually be forced to take action by Mu Chen, whose strength was only at the

Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase.

"You dare, Liu Ying?!"

Frowning deeply, with a move of her alluring body, Xia Youran shot forward like a bolt of lightning, appearing right before Liu Ying. Spiritual Energy that blotted the skies immediately swept out from her, causing her exquisitely voluptuous and alluring body to glow with luster. This caused her skin to appear as white as snow, resulting in her looking incomparably alluring and soul-stirring.

"Xia Youran!"

A deep roar of fury rang out from Liu Ying. Sending a dark gaze towards Xia Youran, who had obstructed his path, a fierce roar rang out, "Step aside!"

"I advise you not to go too overboard, Liu Ying!" replied Xia Youran. At this moment, her lovable face had turned ice-cold as wave-like Spiritual Energy that blotted the skies swept out from behind her, appearing like a giant sea. Faced against Liu Ying, who was radiating a terrifying aura, not a single hint of fear nor dread was present on her, as her ice-cold voice rang out through the sky.

"With me here, I'll absolutely not let you touch a single bit of him!"

Hearing her reply, Liu Ying's face grew even more cold and dark. Seeing Xia Youran wanting to protect Mu Chen to such lengths caused the flames within his heart to flare to greater heights. Unable to contain his impulsion to rip the latter into thousands of pieces, he took a step forward. Waves of pressure formed by Spiritual Energy that blotted the skies enveloped Xia Youran as an explosive roar rang out, "Then, I'll see if you've any ability to prevent me from touching single bit of him!"

"Come and try!"

As she roared her reply, Xia Youran had similarly taken a step forward, coming into a head-on collision with him. Two powerful Spiritual Energy pressure waves smashed violently against one another, causing thunderous explosions to ring out. As the pressure waves expanded out,

the breathing of quite a few experts present below turned sluggish, with them not daring to take deep breaths of air. From the looks of it, the two characters present within the peak of the younger generation in the Northern Heavens Continent seemed to be ready to take action against one another.

The surrounding atmosphere appeared to have frozen up, with even the rampaging spatial gales being unable to blow in their vicinity.

Within the air, the two figures coldly stared at one another, with the atmosphere being of mutual hostility.

As the two people stood in confrontation, Mu Chen had already smoothly reached the deepest region of the tornado. Within its eye, the incomparably rampant spatial winds were completely absent. The calmness here and the flurry of turmoil outside formed two pictures that were at the extremities of each other.

Floating in the eye of the tornado, Mu Chen sent his blazingly-hot gaze towards his front, where a clump of light radiated with dazzling brilliance. Within the centre of the clump of brilliance was a bone that appeared to be made of jade, quietly floating within. Indescribable fluctuations radiated from it, causing the surrounding air to slightly tremble.

This was a pressure that caused even the heavens and earth to tremble.

The pressure of a Heavenly Sovereign!

That jade bone was without a doubt left behind by a Heavenly Sovereign!

Chapter 406: Bone of a Heavenly Sovereign

A small bone as white as jade, yet it caused the heavens and earth to shake under its prestige. Naturally, with other trembling present, there was also Mu Chen, staring with his eyes wide open.

At this moment, Mu Chen was staring tightly at the white bone, his heart pounding hard and rapidly. From the pressure radiating from it, the white bone was naturally left behind by the Heavenly Sovereign that had sat and passed away here in the ancient antiquity. If this was known by the fellows outside of the tornado they would definitely risk their lives to snatch and obtain it with their hands.

It was fortunate that he took action fast, not waiting for the spatial gales to weaken before entering the tornado. If such a treasure was revealed out in the open, god knows what kind of carnage and slaughter it would attract. At that time, Mu Chen would truly not have the confidence to obtain such a treasure in front of those bloodshot madmen who would be close to losing their minds.

Bang! Bang!

Suppressing his rapidly pounding heart, Mu Chen's face changed in the next instant as he felt the mysterious black paper within his aurasea trembling with increasing intensity. This feeling appeared as if it was about to forcefully break out from his body.

"Stop jumping about! After I've obtained that item, there's naturally a part for you!"

A bitter feeling hung within Mu Chen's mouth as he kept on repeating those words in his mind. He held the mysterious black paper within his body with extreme importance. If it was to rush out of his body, and by the off chance was unable to return, he would truly vomit blood today. He would rather not come into contact with the bone of the Heavenly Sovereign, rather than lose that mysterious black paper within his body

due to one careless mistake.

As if hearing the cries of Mu Chen, the trembling of the mysterious black paper finally started to slowly weaken. This made Mu Chen wipe the cold sweat on his forehead in relief. He didn't dare to presume the possibility of any spiritual consciousness of this mysterious black paper. Nevertheless, it possessed some sentience, being able to feel the thoughts and feelings of the person it was in.

As the mysterious black paper calmed down, Mu Chen turned his gaze back towards the jade-white bone within the clump of light. After hesitating for a bit, he started to close in. As he got closer, not a single movement was observed from the jade-white bone as it floated quietly within the clump of light.

Staring at the jade-white bone calmly floating there, Mu Chen gave a ferocious clench of his teeth, while extending his hand out to grab it.

Bang!

At the very instant when Mu Chen's hand had grabbed whole of the white bone, an astonishing amount of lightning seemed to explode within his body. As his face turned red, a mouthful of blood spurted out. At this moment, his expression violently contorted as he felt an indescribably frightening pressure radiating from the white bone, completely enveloping his entire body.

At this moment, his body appeared to have been pressed under a mountain range that spanned to the heavens, causing creaking sounds to ring out from his entire body. If not for him having cultivated his Thunder God Physique, he would have been immediately crushed into bits. However, even with that, blood started to flow out from every pore of his body, while his body started to intensely tremble.

This white bone was just a small part of the bones left behind by the Heavenly Sovereign when he had passed away while sitting here. Nevertheless, the strength it possessed was not something that a person on the level of Mu Chen could come into contact with.

Clenching his teeth tightly, blood started flowing out from the corners of

his mouth. Nevertheless, regardless of his life, Mu Chen didn't relax his grip on the white bone. At this moment, a stubborn and unyielding expression that would cause people to be moved was displayed on his handsome face.

Bang! Bang!

The peals of lightning exploding within his body continued to increase in frequency, with even his Spiritual Energy being shaken to the point of turning into complete turmoil. As Mu Chen's face grew increasingly red, yet another mouthful of blood spurted out from him.

The hand grabbing onto the white bone trembled as blood continued to drip and flow from it, causing the white bone to be completely soaked in blood.

However, just as Mu Chen was about to give up in helplessness, deep abstruse rays of black brilliance suddenly erupted from the mysterious black paper. Ancient words seemed to surface from within the black brilliance, before transforming into streaks of black lights, shooting out from within.

Humm!

Sounds akin to an ancient mantra rang out from Mu Chen's body. The Qi and aura churning within his body, as well as his Spiritual Energy that had erupted out, had unexpectedly become calm and tranquil in an instant. Even the terrifying peals of thunder ringing within his body had started to slowly turn quiet under the sounds of the ancient mantra.

At this moment, unconcealable ecstasy and elation erupted on Mu Chen's face.

This mysterious black paper had finally started to show movement!

As the mantra rang out, Mu Chen's arm, which was shaking intensely, had also calmed down. In the next instant, he noticed incomparably ancient words transforming into black streaks of light, rushing out from his body, before wrapping around that jade-like white bone. As the black streaks of light circled the bone, they appeared to stain it like ink, quickly

suppressing the brilliance radiating from it.

Within a short span of a dozen breaths, the white bone had already transformed into one of a jet-black colour, akin to being smothered within ink. As for the frightening pressure radiating from it, it appeared to have been sealed up, with not a single hint of it remaining.

Mu Chen finally regained the freedom of his body, causing him to breath a deep sigh of relief, before casting a shocked and doubtful gaze towards the black-coloured bone, which had stopped showing any abnormal signs of activity. Why would this bone of a Heavenly Sovereign be sealed up by the mysterious black paper?

"Exactly where did this mysterious black paper come from?"

Mu Chen muttered to himself while feeling slightly shocked within his heart. This mysterious black paper could not only seal and suppress an ancient ominous weapon like the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, it also sealed something like the remnants of a Heavenly Sovereign. This thing truly was slightly frightening. Although he still wasn't able to make an estimate of its origin, Mu Chen was absolutely sure that this mysterious black paper was extremely, extremely terrifying.

Bang!

While Mu Chen was still in a daze as he thought about the black paper, low and deep bangs rang from the outside, causing him to immediately regain his clarity. Turning around to look, he saw that the gigantic tornado and surrounding storm appeared to have started to slowly dissipate away, with the spatial gales also following suit.

"I've to hurry up and get away from here!"

Feeling startled by this, Mu Chen hastily stored the jet-black bone away. Although he didn't suffer severe injuries earlier, he had suffered some due to the pressure radiating out from the white bone, which had impacted his combat capability. If anyone was to spot his less than ideal condition, he would be hardpressed to say that nothing would happen; after all, there were too many people covertly eying this place.

With a shift of his body, Spiritual Light condensed below his feet, before transforming into a gigantic shadow of a dragon. Carrying Mu Chen on it's back, with a wave of its body, it pierced through the dissipating tornado and storms, before rapidly retreating from there.

Bang!

At the same time, on the earth below, the various experts present had also sensed the weakening spatial gales in their surroundings, causing happiness and elation to gush out from their eyes. Staring towards the weakening tornado and storms with scorching gazes, their bodies grew taut, waiting for the moment to immediately dash in to obtain the treasure at the very instant the storms dissipated away.

Within the skies, Xia Youran and Liu Ying were still in confrontation with each other, both parties shooting incomparably cold and frosty gazes towards each other, while Spiritual Energy that blotted the skies swept out from them. Although they were currently like daggers in a drawn state, they did not reveal their true strength, since both of them were extremely clear about the tyrannical strength of the opposite party. In an exchange, regular methods would definitely not work against either of them. However, if they were to use their true skills, there would definitely be prices that needed to be paid. As of now, they have yet to arrive at the area of the baptism. If they were to go all-out now, it would be tantamount to giving a heavensent opportunity to other people.

Therefore, regardless of the anger and fury present within Liu Ying's heart, he didn't dare to be reckless under the watchful gaze of Xia Youran.

"Hmph! The spatial gales are about to dissipate. At that time, when everyone rushes forward, that brat won't be able to escape, even if he prays to the gods!" said Liu Ying in a dark voice.

"There's no need for you to worry about him." replied Xia Youran with a sneer.

A chilling glint flashed within Liu Ying's eyes upon hearing her reply. However, just as he was able to speak out, a dragon roar suddenly resounded across the skies. Liu Ying hastily raised his head, only to see an

illusionary shadow of a dragon surface within the dissipating storms. Waving its tail, the dragon appeared in a place a thousand feet away from Liu Ying in a flash. Such speed of the dragon caused even Liu Ying to be startled.

Roar!

As the dragon roar resounded, under the amazed looks of the people below, the dragon shadow quickly disappeared into the horizon far away.

Everyone stared in amazement as the dragon shadow disappeared into the horizon, before raising their heads again, only to see that the tornado and the storms in the sky had already dissipated away. However, there was not a single presence of the Spiritual Treasure that was once present within it, as if the tornado and storms had vanished into thin air.

A moment of silence hung over all of the experts present in this stretch of the world.

"That dragon shadow earlier seems to be from that brat..."

"Fucking shit! He snatched the Spiritual Treasure away!"

"Such running speed!"

"Bastard!"

After the moment of silence, furious shouts and curses violently erupted in the skies as the faces of many experts turned green with rage. They had painstakingly waited here for more than half a day, waiting with great difficulty for the storms to dissipate. Yet, in the end, Mu Chen had already snatched the treasure and fled. The most hateful thing was that they had actually stared with open eyes as he ran away.

"Chase him! Don't let him get away!"

In the end, there were still some people who weren't willing to give up, roaring out in fury as they furiously shot towards the direction where the dragon shadow had disappeared to.

Looking towards the direction the dragon shadow had disappeared to with her beautiful eyes, Xia Youran gave a sweet laugh as she thought,

That smelly brat's truly fast at slipping away. Nevertheless, from the looks of it, he should have gotten the treasure into his hands.

Sweeping her gaze out, she shot a look towards Liu Ying, noticing the ashen expression present on the latter's face. It could be considered that he had been taught a vicious lesson by Mu Chen today. Not only was he unable to subdue the latter, he had even allowed the latter to snatch the treasure and smoothly slip away.

"Hehe. Look's like your wish has truly gone down the drain," said Xia Youran with a grin, while the Spiritual Energy radiating from her that blotted the skies started to slowly dissipate away. Since Mu Chen had managed to successfully slip away, there was naturally no more need for her to hang around this irksome fellow anymore.

Shooting a dark look at Xia Youran, Liu Ying replied in a chilling tone, "I don't believe that brat's gonna hide just like that. As long as he dares to enter the area of the baptism, I'll naturally be able to capture him, and have him obediently hand the item over!"

As his voice rang out, Liu Ying didn't stay there any longer. With a wave of his sleeve, he brought along his heart brimming with hatred as he turned around and left. Today, he had truly thrown his face away.

Seeing the back figure of Liu Ying in the distance, Xia Youran gave a sneer. With a move of her alluring figure, she headed towards the opposite direction of him, leaving behind those on the ground staring at each other, with not a single harvest at all. After a brief moment, the experts gave a helpless sigh as they thought, All of this for nothing.

Chapter 407: Blood Essence of a Heavenly Sovereign

Whoosh!

A streak of light shot across the sky at an astonishing speed, leaving behind faintly discernable dragon roars ringing out behind. That was an illusionary shadow of a dragon, with a figure present on its back. Howling as it travelled across the horizon, it shot across the skies at an astonishing speed.

Standing on the back of the dragon shadow, Mu Chen looked towards the earth that was rapidly increasing in distance from him, while an expression of sighing in admiration appeared within his eyes. The speed of the Dragon Soaring Art was truly way too fast. No wonder why the White Dragon Sovereign was able to smoothly flee from the encirclement of multiple Sovereigns from the Dragon Demonic Palace that year.

According to Mu Chen's current comprehension of the "Dragon Soaring Art", he knew that this Dragon Soaring Art was divided roughly into a few phases. The first phase was the "Dragon Shadow". The second phase was the "Dragon Soaring", with the third phase being "Dragon Evasion". As of now, with his strength breaking into the Heavenly Completion stage, having drastically improved, compared to before, Mu Chen's Dragon Soaring Art had progressed to the second phase, "Dragon Soaring". Upon reaching this phase, one's Spiritual Energy would be able to cause a giant dragon to surface from one's body. With this giant dragon, it was able to carry Mu Chen to travel across the heavens and earth, with its speed appearing as if it could chase after the stars and moon.

Mu Chen was confident that with his current speed, Heavenly Completion Stage, even those experts that have passed through the first of the Three Sovereign Disasters, the Human Body Disaster, wouldn't be able to catch up to him.

Due to this very reason, Mu Chen dared to snatch the treasure in front of the eyes of so many experts who were covertly eying it, since he had the

confidence to safely leave after snatching the treasure.

"I don't know how long it'll take before I can reach the third phase, 'Dragon Evasion'..." muttered Mu Chen to himself. It's said that if one was able to cultivate the Dragon Soaring Art to the phase of "Dragon Evasion", one could transform one's body into that of a giant dragon. At that time, one would be able to pierce through space, causing even normal Sovereigns to bite one's dust.

A moment of yearn for that hung within Mu Chen's mind, before he regained his thoughts about his current position. Looking towards the far distance behind him, he was able to faintly discern some Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiating from there. Looks like there're some fellows that aren't willing to give up on attempting to snatch the treasure from me, huh?

"I've to first find a place to recover and recuperate."

Mu Chen muttered to himself. Furthermore, he was burning with impatience to see exactly what uses that bone of a Heavenly Sovereign had.

As this thought flashed within his mind, Mu Chen immediately reacted, causing the giant dragon below his feet to explosively increase in speed. In a flash, he and the dragon disappeared across the horizon. After some time, he appeared within a range of towering mountainous ridges. Waving his sleeve, the giant dragon shadow below him dissipated away, while he rushed down, descending within a small concealed mountain valley.

Within the depths of the mountain valley, Mu Chen found a mountain crevice to drill himself into, before sitting down with crossed legs. Before he started to look at the bone, he withdrew all of his Spiritual Energy aura, turning to something akin to a rock, masking himself within the mountain's crevice.

Not long after withdrawing his Spiritual Energy fluctuations, whooshing sounds started to ring out in the sky as figures shot across in succession. As they scanned their vicinity to no avail, unwilling curses and shouts rang out from them before they started to head off towards the distance.

Within the mountain, Mu Chen's faintly shut eyes started to slowly open, while an amused smile curled up from the corner of his mouth. In the next moment, his expression turned extremely serious as his hands carefully retrieved the jet-black Heavenly Sovereign's bone that had turned abnormally quiet.

At this moment, remaining abnormally quiet, the Heavenly Sovereign's bone didn't radiate with any of the past pressure that it possessed before, appearing incomparably common and ordinary-looking.

Playing around with it in his hands for a while, a frown started to appear on his forehead. After a while, he twitched his mouth in helplessness, since he discovered that no matter what he did, not a single reaction was garnered from the jet-black bone. He had attempted to circulate Spiritual Energy into it, but to no avail, since Spiritual Energy would just get unreasonably shaken off upon contact with the black bone.

Clearly, after sealing the Heavenly Sovereign's bone, the mysterious black paper had isolated all ways that people could use to search for the bone.

Holding onto the black bone, Mu Chen gave a bitter laugh. Looks like the only way is to get the mysterious black paper to take action. With his little bit of strength, it was simply impossible for him to dip his finger into this treasure.

You're the best, you're the boss. I leave it up to you.

Mu Chen muttered in his heart.

Just as his voice rang out within his heart, the mysterious black paper within his aurasea erupted with rays of black brilliance. Rays of brilliance surfaced on the the thin piece of black paper like the most ancient of writings, recording about the mysteries of the world, appearing none the more mysterious.

Whoosh!

A ray of brilliance shot out from the mysterious black paper, before gushing out from Mu Chen's palm, aiming straight at that tiny black bone.

Chi! Chi!

The black colour on the bone quickly withdrew, turning back into its sparkling and lustrous form in the short span of a few breaths, appearing exceedingly perfect, like a piece of pure jade. Furthermore, this time, there wasn't any of the previous intense reaction that came from the Heavenly Sovereign's bone, like in the past, as it quietly sat within Mu Chen's palm.

Converging his mind over, Mu Chen observed the abnormal glossiness on the surface of the jade-like bone, with not a single trace of blemish present, akin to a perfect piece of artwork. Furthermore, due to the sparkling and lustrous appearance of the jade-like bone, Mu Chen was even able to see a drop of what it seemed to be golden-coloured blood slowly circulating within.

There's actually the blood essence of the Heavenly Sovereign within this jade-like bone?!

Looking at the golden blood essence within the bone, Mu Chen's hearted started to rapidly pound. That's the blood essence of a Heavenly Sovereign! Although it was only just a little bit present, even Sovereign stage experts would turn bloodshot when faced with such a thing. Although it was said that there was a Heavenly Sovereign that had passed away in the ancient antiquity while sitting within the Divine Spiritual Mountain range, after the passing of time, everything of the Heavenly Sovereign should have been washed away by the sands of time. Even powerful blood essence should have gradually faded away during such a long length of time. However, who would have imagined that there would actually be a few drops of it remaining within this jade-like bone.

This was truly a treasure!

Mu Chen could feel his breath turning exceedingly rough and loud.

Humm.

Although Mu Chen was ecstatic about the golden blood essence before his eyes, humming sounds started to ring out from the mysterious black paper in his aurasea once again.

As that happened, the jade-like bone started to slowly float up from Mu Chen's palm. In the next moment, Mu Chen observed rays of brilliance radiating out from it. As for the few drops of golden blood essence, they had unexpected started to slowly spread out from within the jade-like bone, before floating quietly in front of Mu Chen.

Pale rays of golden light radiated from them, causing the entire crevice to be illuminated in a golden hue. Mu Chen tightly stared at the few drops of golden blood essence. Although he wasn't able to feel overly astonishing Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiating from them, he was able to faintly discern the terrifying energy contained within those few drops of blood essence.

Even a Sovereign would be met with exceedingly astonishing and face-changing shock.

Furthermore, there appeared to be low and deep peals of thunder ringing out from within the golden blood essence. From the looks of it, when the Heavenly Sovereign was still alive, he or she might have cultivated in some kind of special martial art that possessed a Lightning attribute. Only then would his or her blood essence possess such frightening powers of lightning.

Whoosh!

All of a sudden, those few drops of golden blood essence transformed into a golden rays of light, shooting straight towards Mu Chen. In the next instant, in front of his incomparably astonished gaze, it drilled straight into his body.

This unforeseen turn of events caused inconsolable terror to instant erupt within Mu Chen's heart. Indeed, his eyes were watering due to the blood essence of the Heavenly Sovereign. However, with his current level of strength, he was simply unable to enjoy such a thing. Even a single drop of it would cause his body to explode apart!

Chi!

Without giving the slightest bit of care about the wishes of Mu Chen, the golden blood essence rushed straight into his body, piercing through

his blood, flesh and meridians. With an astonishing speed, it proceeded to dissipate within Mu Chen's body, causing a him to feel as if a drop of ink has been dipped into a vat of water.

Bang! Bang!

Frightening clashes of thunder started to resound within Mu Chen's body once again, causing his face to turn deathly-pale. At this moment, he could feel a terrifying amount of energy suddenly erupting from within his body, seemingly wanting to explode his body apart.

This energy's too frightening, and he was completely unable to endure it!

However, just as Mu Chen was about to fall into despair, not stopping for long within his blood and flesh, the golden blood essence rushed straight into the depths of his body. Drilling straight into his aurasea, it finally sank right into the mysterious black paper.

Chi! Chi!

As the golden blood essence drilled into the mysterious black paper, the latter started trembling for a moment as golden runic patterns seemed to appear on its surface, one after another. Those runic patterns seemed to consist of ancient writings from the depths of the mysterious black paper, radiating with endless mystery and a feeling of being immeasurable.

The thing concealed within the mysterious black paper appeared to have been activated by the blood essence of the Heavenly Sovereign!

Although Mu Chen as extremely interested to know exactly what background the mysterious black paper had, he could not afford to have the slightest bit of stray thoughts at this moment. Although the golden blood essence has been completely absorbed by the latter, slight traces of the golden blood essence had stuck to Mu Chen's blood and flesh when it had pierced through his body.

Just this tiny little trace of remnants was still exceedingly frightening to Mu Chen.

Therefore, Mu Chen's entire body had transformed into something like a furnace at this moment, with all the blood and flesh in his body needing to

burn.

Golden arcing rays carried along golden-coloured lightning brilliance, piercing and weaving about in Mu Chen's blood and flesh. Intense pain started to wrack out from Mu Chen's entire body, causing green veins to bulge and swell at his temples, making him appear exceedingly fierce and malevolent.

Fuck his mother! He was already unable to endure it anymore! Nevertheless, the mysterious black paper had already sank into a state of transformation, completely unable to provide the slightest bit of help to him.

Now, he could only rely on himself!

Clenching his teeth tightly, with a wave of his sleeve, a lotus flower congealed from black-coloured lightning liquid appeared in a flash. This was the Lightning God's Lotus that he had obtained after previously helping the Northern Sea Dragon. This Lightning God's Lotus had an extremely beneficial effect towards the tempering of one's physique. After obtaining it, Mu Chen had been relying on the energy of the Lightning God's Lotus to cultivate his Thunder God Physique ever since.

As of now, his situation was exceedingly dangerous! The remnants of the Heavenly Sovereign's blood essence was too frightening, almost causing his body to explode under its might! Now, he needed to promote his already tyrannical physique up a notch! If not, it would be extremely hard for him to escape from this life-threatening disaster.

Sitting on the Lightning God's Lotus, Mu Chen forcefully suppressed his body, which seemed to want to ignite and burst into flames. Bringing his hands together to form a seal, he started to circulate the cultivation method of the Thunder God Physique. Although he was in extreme danger at this moment, it could also be said that he had an extreme stroke of luck. If he was able to absorb and refine the energy contained within the Heavenly Sovereign's blood essence remnants, his Thunder God Physique might be able to achieve a breakthrough, yet again!

If he was able to successfully breakthrough, Mu Chen's strength would

be heavily promoted! However, if he failed to breakthrough, it would be extremely hard for him to keep his little life past today!

Mu Chen clenched his teeth. At this moment, the only thing he could do was to fight with all he had!

Chapter 408: Sovereign Celestial Body

Bang!

Frantic peals of lightning erratically resounded within Mu Chen's body, while a golden-coloured splendor was seemingly present throughout his internals. Even his flesh, blood and even bones were stained by this golden colour, appearing as if they were casted from gold.

This golden colour continued to crazily corrode away Mu Chen's internals. Within the golden colour was minute spots of golden-coloured lightning sparks. Those golden-coloured lightning sparks were extremely minute; however, they contained extremely frightening energies within them. Any place that they travelled past would cause a state of destruction within Mu Chen's body, as if that area would explode apart.

Intense pain continued to crazily wrack throughout his body.

For his Thunder God's Physique to grow stronger, Mu Chen would need to endure extremely intense pain and suffering for it to progress. However, upon every successful progression, he would possess a strength that would cause people to feel drunk. This was something that would cause countless people to love and envy him, since other people would be unable to abandon anything just for the sake of the pursuit of power.

Similarly, Mu Chen was unable to abandon his pursuit of strength. Therefore, he could only go all-out and crazily activate his Thunder God's Physique. Within his body, black lightning sparks surfaced within his flesh and blood, continuously enveloping the golden light in an attempt to refine it.

However, although the black lightning contained a portion of the Divine Black Lightning's strength, the golden lightning sparks were clearly more frightening. Even with something as strong as the Divine Black Lightning appeared somewhat weak in front of them. Thinking about it, the Divine Black Lightning was, after all, the Lightning Tribulation that Spiritual Beasts would have to pass when they break through to become Divine Beasts. That kind of tribulation was somewhat similar to the "Three

Sovereign Disasters" that the humans would have to pass through to breakthrough into the Sovereign realm. Contrary to that, those golden lightning sparks had originated from a Heavenly Sovereign. In front of an existence like that, the Black Divine Lightning would appear akin to ordinary lightning with a slight increase in power.

Fortunately, what was corroding Mu Chen's flesh and blood was, after all, the remnant blood essence of the Heavenly Sovereign. Although it was strong, its followup wasn't strong, which allowed him to endure, before slowly refining and absorbing it at the end!

Therefore, Mu Chen furiously activated his Thunder God's Physique to its utmost limit, and slivers of black lightning sparks pierced through his flesh and blood, rushing forth towards the golden sparks wave after wave. Although they had surged forth time and time again, they were corroded and assimilated by the golden lightning sparks. However, during that process, there would also be minute bits of the golden light breaking apart and dissipate away, before being greedily absorbed by Mu Chen's flesh and blood.

As they absorbed those broken up flecks of golden light, a pale golden colour started to faintly appear on Mu Chen's flesh and blood, while an indescribable tyrannical and overpowering feeling started to faintly radiate from him.

After enduring the bout of intense pain and suffering, Mu Chen started to gradually adapt to it, before proceeding to focus his mind and spirit. Using this long drawn-out method, he slowly continued to break the incomparably golden lightning sparks apart, bit by bit. After absorbing the outer parts, the lightning liquid, which formed the Lightning God's Lotus Mu Chen was sitting on, started to crackle with black lightning sparks as strands of Divine Black Lighting continued to unceasingly pour into Mu Chen's body, helping him consume the energies of the golden lightning sparks.

Under this attack from the inside and outside, the painful expression present on Mu Chen's face started to gradually fade away, while the intense battle raging within his body started to shift towards his control.

Time quickly elapsed, with a day's worth of time gradually ticking past.

Within this day, Mu Chen sat within the Lightning God's Lotus, not moving a single inch. As the sparks of black lightning continued to radiate from the lotus, it seemingly engulfed the entirety of Mu Chen's body. As the rays of brilliance radiated from the lightning sparks slowly squirmed about, astonishing energy fluctuations radiated from them.

Humm!

All of a sudden, faint golden rays of brilliance slowly shone from the black lightning sparks surrounding Mu Chen's body. Under the golden glow, those black rays of brilliance appeared to be like snow that had clashed against lava, rapidly melting into it.

As this happened, Mu Chen's body surfaced from under the black lightning sparks. However, at this moment, a faint golden glow covered the entirety of his body, appearing akin to a layer of gold from afar, looking similar to the golden bodies of those buddhas. Furthermore, Mu Chen's body had become much stronger than the day before!

After persisting awhile, the golden glow started to gradually disperse away, revealing the black rays of brilliance radiating from the lightning arcs that had condensed on Mu Chen's chest. As the lightning arcs extended out, they started to transform into a lightning rune!

Diplo Rune Lightning Physique!

After refining and absorbing that remnant blood essence, Mu Chen's Thunder God's Physique had finally progressed, reaching the level of Diplo Rune Lightning Physique!

Mu Chen's tightly shut eyes started to slowly open at this moment. As he did so, golden brilliance seemed to flash within those black pupils of his, appearing extremely sharp and penetrative.

Lowering his head, he took a look at the lightning rune imprinted on his chest that was gradually dissipating away, while a look of satisfaction surfaced within his eyes. It was already hard to cultivate a Body Refining Divine Art, with the Thunder God's Physique adding another notch of

difficulty on top of that. After starting to cultivate the complete version of the Thunder God's Physique, Mu Chen had not once stopped in cultivating and training it. However, as of now, just by relying on that sliver of blood essence from the Heavenly Sovereign, he had genuinely reach the level of Diplo Rune Lightning Physique.

Stepping off from the Lightning God's Lotus, Mu Chen waved his sleeve, keeping the lotus back. Clenching his fingers, he could feel the tyrannical power surging to near the point of eruption within his body, causing him to grin uncontrollably in happiness. Compared the Mono Rune Lightning Physique, the Diplo Rune Lightning Physique was truly more much tyrannical. According to his estimates, even an expert who had pass through their Human Body Disaster would truly not be able to compete with him on the aspect of brute strength! The Thunder God's Physique still possessed its formidable aspects.

After adapting to the surging energy within his body, Mu Chen turned his gaze towards the jade bone that was still floating before him. At this moment, the blood essence within it had already been completely absorbed by the mysterious black paper, leaving it empty. However, even after losing the blood essence, this jade bone still possessed immense energies within it.

Staring at the jade bone, Mu Chen scratched his head; after all, this jade bone was something that came from the Heavenly Sovereign, and contained immense energies. However, at his current cultivation realm, he was clearly unable to refine those energies. Therefore, the only thing he could do was to store it away, since such a treasure would definitely have some use in the future.

Carefully holding the jade bone, Mu Chen proceeded to properly store it away.

"That's right! The mysterious black paper!"

Only at this moment did Mu Chen remember the thing that was most important, causing him to hastily sink his consciousness into his aurasea. In there, he spotted the mysterious black paper once again, quietly floating

within. However, at this moment, there was a gigantic transformation compared to its previous appearance. There was no longer a deep, black darkness on its surface; there were golden-coloured runic patterns extended across it. Those runic patterns gave Mu Chen a feeling of the ancient antiquity from an extremely old age, while appearing to have recorded the mysteries of the heavens and earth.

With a thought, Mu Chen's Divine Soul that was sitting within his aurasea stood up, before approaching the black paper with golden runic patterns with caution. After slightly hesitating, it extended its small hand to gently touch the surface of the black paper.

Humm!

At the instant when Mu Chen's Divine Soul made contact with the mysterious black paper, the latter immediately erupted with rays of golden light. Transforming into a glowing screen, with ancient texts appearing to slowly flow and move about on its surface. As Mu Chen's Divine Soul blankly stared at those incomparably profound and abstruse ancient texts, a drunk and stupefied feeling washed over Mu Chen, even though he was clearly unable to read or understand those texts.

A ancient voice started to ring and reverberate within his mind, causing his blank and vacant state to feel a sensation of comprehension, while a cryptic message from the ancient antiquity started to flow through his mind.

"The Great Solar Undying Body..."

A tremor shook through Mu Chen's mind, causing him to abruptly sober up, before fiercely sucking in a breath of cold air. His eyes trembling, Mu Chen stared at the ancient golden text before him. The Great Solar Undying Body! This was actually a Divine Art to cultivate one's Sovereign Celestial Body!

Furthermore, it was a rather terrifying Sovereign Celestial Body!

One's Sovereign Celestial Body was a mark of recognition to one's promotion into the Sovereign realm. Only a genuine Sovereign would be able to congeal a Sovereign's Celestial Body, and control the heavens and

earth. Any single wave of its arm possessed power that could decimate the heavens and sunder the earth. Mu Chen had seen the Sovereign's Celestial Body belonging to the Black Dragon Sovereign and Dean Tai Cang before. Those were powers that could cause the whole world to shake and tremble.

That kind of power couldn't be substituted by any kind of method!

However, in the Great Thousand World, being the mark of recognition of a Sovereign level existence, the Sovereign Celestial Body could also be classified into different rankings. According to what Mu Chen knew, as of now, there were a total of 99 different Sovereign's Celestial Bodies that could be ranked!

Every single one of those 99 Sovereign's Celestial Bodies were extremely frightening. Furthermore, their methods of cultivation were all secrets that were withheld and not circulated by the various powers and clans. Only their core members would possess the criteria to cultivate them. Naturally, there were Sovereign Celestial Bodies that were not ranked within those 99. However, compared to those 99, the others all appeared rather normal and ordinary in face of them. Most of them were created from the condensation of one's own Spiritual Energy without any special capabilities. Therefore, they didn't possess the qualifications to enter the top 99 rankings.

If one were to ask what was the most attractive thing to Sovereign realm experts, it would most likely be the cultivation techniques for the Sovereign's Celestial Bodies within the top 99 rankings.

For the sake of those cultivation techniques, there would be some Sovereign realm experts willing to offer their services to powerful clans and influences. From this, one could tell the importance of those cultivation techniques to them!

At this moment, a rather frightening Sovereign's Celestial Body cultivation technique had appeared before Mu Chen's eyes.

The Great Solar Undying Body.

According to the knowledge privy to Mu Chen, there seemed to not be

such a Celestial Body within the top 99 Sovereign's Celestial Bodies. However, he had gotten a piece of soul shuddering news from the mysterious black paper...

This Great Solar Undying Body was, unexpectedly, just an incomplete part of a cultivation technique.

The complete version of this cultivation method would lead to a Sovereign's Celestial Body known as the The Primordial Immortal Body!

Mu Chen's eyes snapped wide open, while a blank expression hung on his face. He could faintly remember that among the top 99 Sovereign's Celestial Bodies that shook the Great Thousand World, the Sovereign's Celestial Body that was ranked 4th was The Primordial Immortal Body!

Chapter 409: The Primordial Immortal Body

The Primordial Immortal Body, ranked 4th among the top 99 Sovereign's Celestial Bodies in all of the worlds and realms!

Mu Chen stood there, stupefied, with his hands trembling, while an incomprehensible message gushed out and filled his mind and heart. He was completely unable to imagine that this mysterious black paper would actually harbor such a frightening thing within it...

The Sovereign's Celestial Body ranked 4th in all of the worlds and realms. If this news was to be spread out, Mu Chen was 100% sure that even the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy wouldn't be able to protect him!

That was because the enticement of this thing was far too great! Countless Sovereign realm experts would turn into mad men to try to snatch and obtain this! Furthermore, they would do so, no matter what the price was!

Although he had only obtained an incomplete version of it, named to the "Great Solar Undying Body", and not the "Primordial Immortal Body", as long as he was able to successfully cultivate this Sovereign Celestial Body, he would possess the qualifications to pursue that "Primordial Immortal Body"! And if he was able to successfully cultivate that in the future, Mu Chen was confident that he would possess the means to charge anywhere, regardless of the Luo God Clan or the mysterious clan his mother was from!

Faced against such enticement, even with Mu Chen's staunch and firm character, his eyes could not help turning bloodshot, while his breathing turned laborious.

Hu.

Continuing to take deep breaths, it took Mu Chen a while to regain his clarity of mind. Feeling slightly absent-minded, he sat straight down on

the floor, licking his lips whilst falling down. Intense flames surged and blazed within the depths of his black eyes. This was the pursuit of strength present within everyone. As long as he possessed ample strength, he would be able to protect the people he wanted to protection. At that time, he would truly be able to stand in front of Luo Li, and brave and weather all storms for the girl he loved!

He could also rush into the mysterious clan his mother was at and bring her out and back to his father without the slightest bit of scruples! He could let his family reunite once again!

"Primordial Immortal Body..."

Slowly clenching his hands, the flames within Mu Chen's eyes gushed forth, while a deep roar resounded within his heart. I want it!

As of now, what he needed was more information!

Mu Chen sank once again into his aurasea, sensing the ancient message contained within the mysterious black paper floating there. This time, there was yet another cryptic and complicated message that appeared within his mind.

"Immortal Catalog..."

"Divine Law of the Ancient Antiquity..."

Faintly closing his eyes, some comprehension of the earlier message rose within his mind. Indeed, with his expectations, the mysterious black paper within his aurasea was an incomplete thing. According to some of the ancient messages recorded on its surface, the mysterious black paper should be part of the so-called "Immortal Catalog". That was one of the true Divine Laws of the Ancient Antiquity.

"So, the mysterious black paper was one part of the Immortal Catalog... that means to say that there should be a total of four similar mysterious black papers like the one within my body..." muttered Mu Chen as he pondered about it. That also meant that there were still three more volumes of the "Immortal Pages" circulating within all the worlds and realms.

The other three Immortal Pages should also contain cultivation methods for Sovereign Celestial Bodies that were similar to the "Great Solar Undying Body".

If he could successfully cultivate all four Sovereign Celestial Bodies, the "Primordial Immortal Body" of legend would appear once again in the world!

It's said that a Sovereign's Celestial Body of this degree would be immortal for eternity, unkillable and undying. Even ghosts and gods would dread such strength.

"Unkillable and undying..." Mu Chen muttered. This truly was too frightening. Were there truly heaven-defying existences in this world?

"However...wanting to search and obtain the other three Immortal Pages...what degree of difficulty would that be, huh?" Mu Chen muttered while a hopeless smile appeared on his face. From the previous messages he had gotten from the mysterious black paper, he already knew that there was something else other than the cultivation method for the "Primordial Immortal Body" recorded in the Immortal Catalog. Other than that, there was also other ancient sacred objects of world-shaking proportions that possessed the terrifying power of being able to destroy an entire realm contained within.

As of now, the Immortal Catalog had already been split into four volumes, forming four Immortal Pages. However, these four Immortal Pages weren't simple, as they inherited part of the power of the Immortal Catalog, possessing their own unique, yet strong, powers. Even some Divine Weapons weren't able to compare to them.

As for what special powers the other three Immortal Pages possessed, that was something that was not yet known to Mu Chen. However, the Immortal Page within his body was seemingly named the "Sealing Volume", and possessed the powers of sealing. This was why, regardless of Nine Nether in the past, or the Great Meru Demonic Pillar as of now, were able to be suppressed and sealed within his body.

This also meant that if Mu Chen was truly able to obtain all four of the

Immortal Pages, he would not only possess the cultivation technique for the "Primordial Immortal Body", he would also possess the sacred object that came from the ancient antiquity!

Although, at this moment, Mu Chen wasn't able to get too clear of a mental concept of what an item of this degree would do and be like, he was faintly able to perceive the world-shaking proportions of this so-called "Sacred Object".

"If this volume of the Immortal Catalog's been activated by the blood essence of the Heavenly Sovereign, wouldn't that mean that I might be able to activate some of its power in the future?"

Thinking about that, Mu Chen licked his lips. After so many years, he had finally uncovered the secret behind that mysterious black paper. However, he never imagined that this activated Immortal Page would have such a severe requirement to the point of actually needing the blood essence of a Heavenly Sovereign. Such a figure was a super existence that ruled over a region of the world. How would ordinary people dare to even think about obtaining the blood essence of such a person?

If not for his stroke of luck and hitting the jackpot, it would be extremely difficult for him to uncover the secrets behind the mysterious black paper, even after many years.

As his thoughts headed down this path, Mu Chen was unable to control a silly smile from appearing on his face. He never imagined that he would obtain such heaven-defying luck before even reaching the area of the baptism in his trip to the Divine Spiritual Mountain. Looks like it truly was the right decision to head over here.

Feeling free and relaxed, Mu Chen stood up. The cultivation technique for a Sovereign's Celestial Body like the "Great Solar Undying Body" required one to be a genuine Sovereign, before it could be cultivated. As of now, what he needed to do was to guard this treasure and quietly wait for that time to come. There was no need for him to get impatient, since no one could take it away from within his body.

Now, Mu Chen held great anticipation for the day he would

breakthrough into the Sovereign Realm. Although this "Great Solar Undying Body" didn't appear within the top 99 rankings of Sovereign Celestial Bodies, being the prerequisite Sovereign Celestial Body before the cultivation of the "Primordial Immortal Body", if anyone were to say it was weak, even if he was beaten to death, Mu Chen would still not believe it.

"I should head out now."

Muttered Mu Chen with a smile. It had been a day since he started cultivating at this location. Thinking about it, the majority of the people would have already rushed and reached the area of the baptism; therefore, he should hurry up. The current journey had already been rewarding for him. Even if he wasn't able to obtain the Divine Spiritual Baptism, it was something that he could endure. However, he was, after all, representing the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. If he was to give no show within this place, it wouldn't be good for the face of the academy.

Thinking about this point, Mu Chen didn't continue hesitating. After arranging himself for a bit, he shot out from the mountain's crevice. Stopping in midair, he surveyed his surroundings. After finding his bearings, he turned and shot of towards the deepest region of the Divine Spiritual Mountain range.

After carrying on his journey, Mu Chen didn't make anymore detours along the way, regardless of the appearance of Spiritual Treasures, since they weren't able to cause any stir within his heart. Increasing his speed, he rushed towards the area of the baptism. After the day of cultivation in the mountain's crevice, there might already be quite a few experts at the area of the baptism, since there's only one area for the baptism within this entire Divine Spiritual Mountain range. Within the eyes of the participants, this was the true and genuine treasure here.

Due to quite a few people having the same destination as him, he was able to obtain some news as he travelled along the way. Although it had only been a day since the opening of the Divine Spiritual Mountain range, the overall situation within this place had already turned into a hotpot of fiery explosiveness, with people and experts from various places having

fought for god-know's how many times. At this moment, one could only imagine the sky-high number of experts that had been buried within this endless mountain range.

From the reports he had obtained, Mu Chen managed to hear about some news with regards to himself. They were actually related to him obtaining the treasure the day before, due to him causing Wu Dong to lose an arm in the process of obtaining the treasure. This had made his name resound across the entire Divine Spiritual Mountain range, causing quite a few people to restrain their initial disdain and contempt towards himself. Regardless of what methods Mu Chen had used, his strength was only at the realm of Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase. Compared to him, that Wu Dong was a famous person that had experienced a Human Body Disaster. Although the latter had failed to pass through his tribulation, ordinary people at the Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase would absolutely not have the guts to boast around in front of him.

Despite that, even Wu Dong had lost an arm to Mu Chen. Other than the handful of top figures within the younger generation of the Northern Heavens Continent, who would dare to belittle him anymore?

Nevertheless, Mu Chen couldn't care less about this new fame and reputation that was attached to him. On the contrary, he would rather have people look down and underestimate him more. That way, if he was to truly take action, his victim would naturally have to pay an extremely high price then.

Other than the news related to him, Mu Chen managed to obtain news that all of the experts within the Divine Spiritual Mountain range had already gathered towards the area of the baptism. For the sake of climbing up the "Nine Heavenly Steps" within the area of the baptism, countless experts had unleashed wave after wave of blood-filled slaughter and massacre.

Raising his head, Mu Chen looked towards the far distance in front of him, a frown appeared on his forehead. He wondered, How's Senior Sister Xia fairing? With her strength, there shouldn't be anything that could happen to her, right?

Mu Chen clearly had extremely favorable views towards his Senior Sister Xia Youran, due the latter offering her help time and time again. Thus, he naturally hoped that nothing would happen to her.

Whoosh!

Taking a deep breath of air, an illusionary dragon shadow surfaced below Mu Chen's feet. With a long roar, his speed rapidly increased, reaching an astonishing level. Shooting across the horizon, he quickly flew towards the deepest region of the Divine Spiritual Mountain range.

Since he had already entered this place, he would absolutely not give up the Divine Spiritual Baptism!

Chapter 410: Nine Heavenly Steps

The most central region of the Divine Spiritual Mountain range.

This was the most central region within the Divine Spiritual Mountain range. At this very moment, it was filled with a sea of humans, while erratic Spiritual Energies rushed towards the skies. In the skies, on the earth, battles between figures raged on everywhere. As countless Spiritual Energies rushed out and converged together, they caused the heavens and earth within this region to appear exceedingly gorgeous and magnificent.

This was the end point of the Divine Spiritual Mountain, and also the terminus of all of the massive battles that raged everywhere.

Experts from various parts of the Northern Heavens Continent would all converge at this place. If one wanted to distinguish oneself and rise above the rest, one would need to display one's true strength to obtain the qualifications to climb the "Nine Heavenly Steps". In this place, the only way to get one's message across was by showing true strength. If not, regardless of having a powerful background, the various experts whose eyes had already turned bloodshot by the enticement of the Divine Spiritual Baptism wouldn't bat a single eyelid to kill anyone. Since this was the case, one should just kill, since this was the rule in this place. That year, even the participants from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy were buried at his place. Compared to them, what would other people amount to?

Without strength, one could only obediently cower and hide!

Within this chaotic region in the centermost position of this area stood a majestic mountain. Dazzling brilliance radiated from the air above its peak. If one was to take a closer look, one would see a set of incomparably massive cloudy steps present within the rays of brilliance. There was a total of nine cloudy steps, with each step containing a dozen stone platforms.The number of stone platforms progressively reduced the higher the step was. At the very top, there seemed to be only five to six platforms present.

Those were the "Nine Heavenly Steps"!

That was the place within the Divine Spiritual Mountain that caused the eyes of countless experts to turn bloodshot. That's because, that was the only place where one could receive the "Divine Spiritual Baptism"!

However, if one wanted to stand on the Nine Heavenly Steps, one would need to possess absolute strength, since there would be countless people with bloodshot eyes battling out like mad men for the opportunity to stand there. If one's strength wasn't sufficient, there would only be one ending! Being killed and sent away from the Nine Heavenly Steps!

Only the true experts would be able to stand on top of the Nine Heavenly Steps. Overlooking the countless others battling it out below, like gods looking down on ants, they would receive the greatest honor and glory the Divine Spiritual Mountain could give, the Divine Spiritual Baptism!

At this moment, there were already a few figures standing proud at the bottommost few steps of the Nine Heavenly Steps, while combatants continuously battled to rush up from below. On the top three steps, however, there was an entirely different scene present there.

On the top three steps, there weren't as many people as below, with the total number not even exceeding thirty. As for the top two steps, there were less than ten people present there...

At this moment, those few figures had occupied the most perfect positions on the top of the Nine Heavenly without the slightest bit of restraint. Standing proudly like valiant heroes, there was not a single person that dared to change and vie for their supremacy.

On the third step from the top, few experts were staring towards the figures positioned on the second step with complicated expressions present in their gazes. Being able to stand at those positions whilst the bloodbath below continued were clear indications of that they weren't ordinary people. Nevertheless, they were still unable to make the step up, since the place above them wasn't somewhere that they could squeeze themselves in.

That was the place where only the most elite of the geniuses from the young generation of the Northern Heavens Continent would be qualified to contend for.

At this moment, although appearing as if everything was calm and tranquil, a rather peculiar atmosphere was present within the second highest step of the Nine Heavenly Steps, which had captured all of the attention of the countless experts below. Seven figures, with each taking a corner of their own, were present there. Although not a single one had sent their Spiritual Energy or aura bursting out, the atmosphere resulting from their presence alone was enough to cause people to be stifled to the point of gasping for air.

An ordinary-looking male dressed in hemp clothing stood at the front-most position with his hands slightly hanging down by his sides. Appearing as if none of the peculiar atmosphere within this step was felt by him, his eyes were even faintly shut, as if he was resting and recuperating his strength. Despite that, however, the gazes sent by the other six people present were brimming with dread as they looked towards him.

That was Mo Xingtian.

Currently the genuine number one figure within the younger generation of the Northern Heavens Continent.

Standing in a corner platform, a solemn expression hung on Xia Youran's face as she stared at Mo Xingtian. Turning her head around, she shot a look at the ground below, where the fires of war and bloodshed were so ever present. Countless people continued to fight and battle, with figures dropping left, right, and centre. Nevertheless, she still wasn't able to spot the figure that she had wished to see.

"Exactly where...did that fellow, Mu Chen, run off to?"

Xia Youran muttered to herself, a shadow of worry appeared on her lovable face. She and Mu Chen had originally planned to meet up together as soon as possible. However, in the end, she had waited at this place for a day's worth of time, with Mu Chen's figure yet to be seen. Therefore, the

only thing she could do was the take the lead and head up here. She never imagined that not a single presence of him could be found since he left her the day before, causing worry to surface within her heart. Could it be that Mu Chen had met with some unfortunate circumstances?

"Haha. Are you still waiting for that brat to appear?" A sneer rang out from a place not far from her, causing her to look over, only to see a sinister smile that had blossomed on the face of the speaker, Liu Ying. After noticing that it was him, she gave a sneer in response, being too lazy to care about him.

"It has been a very long time since that fellow was present. There's only two reasons that can explain this. Firstly, he'd been killed by someone. Secondly, he was sufficiently satisfied after obtaining that small Spiritual Treasure and didn't dare to show up here, then immediately ran off the mountain," said Liu Ying, his smile growing deeper, while contempt and disdain were shining within his eyes. "However, he's truly smart for knowing to not come here. If not, it won't be so simple to just leave this place like that."

"Shut up!" Xia Youran gave a cold roar in reply.

Hearing her roar, a chilling glint flashed within his eyes, before replying with an indifferent smile, "You don't believe what I've said? Alright then, let's wait and see. If he truly dares to show up here, please be at ease, for I'll properly give him a welcome, before asking him to hand over the Spiritual Treasure. After that, I make sure he obediently leaves this place!"

Hearing his taunts, Xia Youran gave a furious clench of her teeth, while her loathe towards Liu Ying rose to the extreme of her limits. However, due to the current unclear situation, rashly taking action wasn't a rational choice. Therefore, the only thing she could do was to sneer back at him. "What's the use of you feeling satisfied, huh? You've started cultivating much earlier than Mu Chen, and even swallowed all of the resources of your Umbra Chamber of Commerce just to reach this level of cultivation. If you wait one or two more years, I'm afraid that you might not even have the qualifications to hoot in front of him!"

Liu Ying's face instantly turned dark as he heard her ridiculing words, before sending a sinister smile back as he replied, "Oh? It seems that you've actually held that little brat with such high regard. Since he's such a menace, I'll wait for him to appear and kill him. That way, everything will be okay, right?"

As he spoke till here, the ridicule appeared even more prominent in Liu Ying's eyes as he continued speaking, "Naturally...we'll have to see if that brat will even dare to appear in this place. From what I can see..."

Roar!

However, just as Liu Ying was about to finish his sentence, a ferocious dragon roar resounded across the horizon. Everyone turned around, only to see rays of brilliance sparkling from the distance, with what seemed like the shadow of a giant dragon soaring through the air, with a slender figure standing tall on its back.

"Mu Chen!" Spotting that familiar figure, elation and happiness gushed out from Xia Youran's beautiful eyes.

"He really does have the courage..." muttered Liu Ying as his gaze grew increasingly dark, while a sinister smile appeared on his face. This brat actually has the guts to show up here. Since that's the case, don't blame me for being merciless!

At this moment, Mo Xingtian slowly opened his eyes, his deadpan eyes, looking at the giant dragon shadow with an indifferent gaze, muttering, "Dragon Soaring Technique? He'd actually cultivated to the "Dragon Soaring" phase. This truly is unexpected..."

Roar!

Standing on the back of the giant dragon shadow, Mu Chen looked towards the earth filled with chaos and disorder, before turning his sight towards the Nine Heavenly Steps at the peak of the mountain.

"That's the place to accept the Divine Spiritual Baptism?"

Looking over there, Mu Chen gave a stomp, causing an astonishing dragon roar to erupt from the the giant dragon shadow, while its speed

furiously increased. Rushing straight across the battle-strewn skies, he shot up towards to the skies, heading straight towards the Nine Heavenly Steps.

"That's the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's Mu Chen?"

Mu Chen's actions immediately attracted the attention of everyone present. Noticing his attempt to scale the Nine Heavenly Steps, the faces of a few experts slightly changed, wanting to take action to stop him. However, upon remembering the news about Mu Chen causing Wu Dong to lose an arm, hesitation momentarily filled their hearts. Although Mu Chen appeared to possess only the strength at the Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase, there was no one present that dared to belittle him. If they were to take action without care, they might have to pay quite a high price for that.

As those experts were hesitating, the giant dragon shadow carrying Mu Chen had already rushed up the mountain peak. With a stomp of his feet, he transformed into a bolt of lightning, rushing up the Nine Heavenly Step, rushing up step after step of the stone platforms at lightning speed. In front of the attention of all those experts, he rushed straight towards the highest step!

The gazes of the numerous experts present started to fluctuate, while their Spiritual Energies rushing out in their attempts of wanting to take action. However, they finally restrained their urges in force, sending their gazes aiming straight at Mu Chen's figure. All of them wanted to see exactly how many steps that man could rush to!

Whoosh!

Shooting up at an extremely fast speed, Mu Chen had crossed multiple steps, already reaching the fourth highest step. Akin to a legendary roc spreading its wings as it flew, Mu Chen proceeded to head up towards the higher steps.

On the second highest step, the seven figures present were all staring at him; however, the feelings present within their gazes were different.

Whoosh!

Landing on a stone platform at the third highest step, presently there were a dozen figures. All of them were clad in powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuations, with not one of them actually appearing weaker than Wu Dong.

Despite that, Mu Chen only spared them a glance, without showing the slightest sign of coming to a stop. Moving, his figure Mu Chen headed straight towards Xia Youran, aiming towards the second highest step where Mo Xingtian and the rest were present.

However, just as Mu Chen had shot across the third highest step, an explosive roar rang out akin to a clap of lightning, resounding across skies.

A long-haired male in green robes had a cold and fierce expression on his face, while boundless Spiritual Energy erupted from him. Shooting out, he appeared akin to a falcon lunging towards its prey. In the next instant, a suffocating shadow enveloped across the entirety of Mu Chen.

"Remain here for me!"

Finally, there was an expert who was unable to endure Mu Chen's straight-line rush! Attempting to take action, he wanted to knock Mu Chen down from the Nine Heavenly Steps!

Chapter 411: Ascending the Steps

"Remain here for me!"

An explosive roar abruptly rang across the skies, as a male in green robes lunged down like a falcon as tyrannical Spiritual Energy erupted from him. Golden-like light sparkled and radiated on his body, giving people a feeling of incomparable destruction. Under his fist, the air before him had completely shattered and exploded apart, causing deep explosive sounds to resound across the horizon.

The green-robed male that had suddenly taken action had immediately attracted the attention of countless people, whose gazes immediately shivered in shock in the next instant.

The green-robed male was called Qing Hu, and possessed extremely tyrannical strength, allowing him to dominate a region of the Northern Heavens Continent, similar to what Wu Dong had done. Although his strength was still lacking when compared to the three great Chambers of Commerce, as well as peak influences like the Western Extreme Palace, he could absolutely not be considered as weak.

The strength of the person in front of Mu Chen, Qing Hu was absolutely not weaker than that Wu Dong from before. Therefore, upon him unleashing his full strength, the imposing aura radiating out caused people's hearts to palpitate. At this moment, all of them were wondering exactly how Mu Chen would be able to rush up under such a tyrannical obstruction from Qing Hu.

Everyone knew in their hearts that if Mu Chen was to show just the slightest bit of being obstructed by Qing Hu, his movement up the steps would end at this level. That's because every other expert standing on the stone platforms at this step were not any bit weaker than the latter, and would absolutely not allow anyone not much stronger than them to leap over their heads to reach the second highest step and enjoy the most perfect Divine Spiritual Baptism.

Standing on the stone platforms at the second highest step, the seven

figures standing proudly there were also observing the scene unfolding on the step below them. At this moment, Xia Youran couldn't help clenching her hands tightly as she looked at the impending attack towards Mu Chen. If Mu Chen wanted to climb all the way up to the second highest step, he would need to demonstrate a strength that would be able to intimidate Qing Hu, since those other experts on the same step weren't any bit weaker than the latter. If Mu Chen was unable to awe and intimidate them, the others might not allow him to do as he wished and climb up to the second highest step.

"Ha." A soft sneer rang out from Liu Ying, with a dark gaze filled with amusement shot towards the figure of Mu Chen below.

Bang!

Under the attentive gazes of everyone present, a low roar rang out from Qing Hu as tyrannical Spiritual Energy was brought along with the frightening windy fists shot out from his fist. Enveloping Mu Chen's surroundings, that swift and fierce punch was more than sufficient to kill a Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase expert!

Clearly, upon taking action, this Qing Hu had immediately unleashed a killing move; he obviously had no intention of showing any mercy to Mu Chen.

Boundless windy fists rapidly grew larger within Mu Chen's vision, while a chilling atmosphere erupted like a tsunami.

Spiritual Energy in the form of black flames furiously erupted from Mu Chen, with black arcs of lightning travelling around the surface of his body. At this moment, a jet-black glow started to surface from his skin as his body grew taller by an inch, while two lightning runes abruptly appeared on his chest!

Diplo Rune Lightning Physique!

At the instant upon the activation of his Lightning Physique, the air around Mu Chen exploded apart, booming outwards due to the eruption of powerful energies from his body. Lines of cracks appeared on the ground below as the earth shattered apart, while an indescribable surge of

power undulated within his body akin to a giant tsunami.

Pouring out his emotions.

As an emotionless expression hung on Mu Chen's face, his sleeves started to flare up and ripple, causing flapping sounds to ring out. Taking a step forward, black lightning surged and erupted from his body, while a punch as sent flying out.

Windy fists akin to lighting.

Not the slightest intention of retreat!

Boom!

Black lightning crazily arced around his fist. In the next instant, brimming with astonishing power, the fist collided head-on with the incoming windy fists!

Bang!

Akin to the collision between two meteors, an energy wave visible to the naked-eye instantly radiated from the point of impact, while the air within a hundred feet of the two people shattered and exploded out, turning into a vacuum-like zone.

At this moment, Qing Hu's face had violently contorted.

The power coming for Mu Chen's fist was incomparably overbearing, akin to lightning striking down from the nine heavens. In an exceeding tyrannical fashion, it had shattered his windy fists apart, before erratically gushing into his body, completely shattering his Spiritual Energy defenses apart.

Puff.

Fresh blood uncontrollably spewed from Qing Hu's mouth, with the bold and powerful figure starting to intensely tremble while he flew across the sky. Landing on the ground below, deep grooves appeared on the hard stone platform as he retreated back dozens of steps, before finally regaining his balance.

At that instant, the Nine Heavenly Steps appeared to have turned

completely silent.

The faces of quite a few experts started to fluctuate, while a shadow of graveness appeared in the gazes the sent towards the young figure in the air. Although they had previously heard about the news of Mu Chen wasting one of Wu Dong's arms, they had all treated that as a rumor. However, the scene that unfurled right before their eyes was no less than the actual truth. Indeed, the youth from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy possessed the qualifications to rush towards the highest step in the Nine Heavenly Steps.

On the second highest step, happiness and jubilation gushed out of Xia Youran's beautiful eyes as she watched the scene that had unfolded before her, while shock and astonishment appeared within her heart. The fist that Mu Chen had unleashed a moment ago was truly too ferocious! Even someone like Qing Hu was instantly smashed back by it! How could a person of Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase unleash such strength?

Only at this moment did Xia Youran understand why Mu Chen was selected to represent the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy with his measly strength at Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase. Indeed, this youth was truly extraordinary.

As opposed to her, Liu Ying's eyes had slightly narrowed, while his expression grew dark and cold.

On the third highest step, after stabilising himself, Qing Hu wiped away the bloodstains at the corners of his mouth. Staring at Mu Chen, he retreated back two steps, not uttering a single word. Nevertheless, the meaning of his actions were clearly stated, that he would not take action again to obstruct Mu Chen.

"Is there anyone out there that wants to make a move?" Looking around at the third highest step, Mu Chen spoke out in a soft voice.

Standing tall against the crowd of experts, no trace of fear was present on the youth's face. Under the erupting Spiritual Energy that blotted the skies, the tall and thin figure, with his handsome face, caused people to be unable to resist taking a few more looks at him.

As for the experts at the third highest step, faint emotional fluctuations could be seen on their faces, while fear and dread filled their gazes that were sent towards Mu Chen. With their strength being at the same level as Qing Hu and the former being able to smash the latter away with a single punch, it was extremely clear that his combat capability had truly exceeded theirs. Although inconceivable feelings gushed out in their hearts towards how Mu Chen was able to achieve this with his strength only at the Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase, the only thing they could do was to accept the reality that was present before them.

Therefore, everyone present remained silent towards Mu Chen's question.

Seeing this, Mu Chen gave a faint smile in response. The tyrannical power of the Diplo Rune Lightning Physique had similarly exceeded his expectations. The intimidation and awe caused by it could clearly be rated as utterly perfect.

"Many thanks."

Raising his head, Mu Chen looked towards the stone platforms present on the second highest step. That was the prime location for the Divine Spiritual Baptism, and the cause of envy within countless experts. Seemingly all of the people that were able to stand on those stone platforms were elites at the top of the younger generation in the Northern Heavens Continent. Clearly wanting to firmly stand there and obtain the qualifications for the Divine Spiritual Baptism would definitely result in a genuinely heaven-shocking battle.

However, he, Mu Chen, would not fear and dread it!

Steely intent erupted from the black pupils of the youth as he stomped on the ground. Shooting up into the sky akin to a giant Peng, under the attentive gazes of the countless people below, he rushed straight towards the second highest step high up in the sky.

"There's yet another person that's trying to ascend to the second highest step!"

As Spiritual Energy erupted out within this region of space, astonished

voices started to ring and reverberate across.

Outside of the Divine Spiritual Mountain

Countless powers and influences of the Northern Heavens Continent stood in the air, with various elderly figures all casting their gazes towards the spatial fissure in front of them. Presently there was a gigantic glowing light screen, with the live image of the Nine Heavenly Steps shown within. However, it only showed the second highest step of the Nine Heavenly Steps. Clearly, the various elderly figures didn't have the heart to observe those meaningless battles below. Only the fights that happened at the highest step would be of interest to them, since only the people present there would be able to obtain the best out of the Divine Spiritual Baptism!

Standing in the sky with his hands crossed behind his back, not a single emotion was displayed on Dean Tai Cang's face as he looked at the image displayed on the glowing screen. The seven figures shown there were the elite figures at the top of the younger generation in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. However, this this point, he had yet to catch a single glimpse of Mu Chen's figure.

Some indistinct gazes shot over towards him from the surroundings, especially from the people of the Demonic Dragon Palace. At this moment, a faint sneer curled up from the corner of the Black Dragon Sovereign's mouth as he thought, That brat by the name of Mu Chen doesn't even have the qualifications to climb up the Nine Heavenly Steps? Look's like I've overestimated that brat. This time, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy would truly lose all of their face here.

The person that they had placed their hopes on didn't even have the qualification to rise to the place where the other top elites of the younger generation were at in the end.

Shooting a ridiculing look towards Dean Tai Cang, he casually shot a glare at the stretch of the world before him, while chilling intent flashed within his slightly narrowed eyes. This time, I'll make sure that you stay here, Tai Cang! The Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy will alway shatter and break apart!

Dean Tai Cang appeared to have not noticed that glare shooting towards him, only training his eyes towards the glowing Spiritual Screen.

Behind Dean Tai Cang, Luo Li and Ling Xi were also training their beautiful eyes towards the glowing screen before them. At this moment, a slight wrinkle appeared on Ling Xi's forehead as she spoke out in a soft voice, "What happened? With Mu Chen's strength, there's no doubt that he possesses the qualifications to climb up to the top..."

"There's no need to be impatient, Elder Sister Ling Xi. He will appear," said Luo Li with a faint smile. Towards Mu Chen, she clearly had more than sufficient confidence in him.

Nodding her small head, Ling Xi tilted her gaze towards the glowing screen, which was now showing some signs of activity taking place.

At this moment, in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy

Within the air above the spiritual academy, there was a similar incomparably large glowing Spiritual screen present, with the image shown within being the Nine Heavenly Steps.

Countless students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy stood in the air around the glowing Spiritual Energy screen, with the sea of humans extending across the endless stretch of the horizon. At the front few positions, Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong, Su Xian, He Yao and the rest of the other top students were tightly staring at the gigantic glowing screen before them.

Within the glowing screen, seven figures quietly stood on the stone platform, radiating with a pressure that caused people to suffocate. At this moment, every one of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy students had solemn expressions hanging on their faces. Those are the top figures in the younger generation of the Northern Heavens Continent? They're truly formidable.

However, where is Mu Chen? Up till now, there's not a single glimpse of him...

However, just as doubt and worry surfaced in the eyes of some of the

students, a commotion suddenly appeared within the glowing screen, causing everyone's vision to immediately shoot towards it.

Within the glowing screen, the sea of clouds suddenly split apart, while sharp whooshing sounds rang out. In the next instant, a glowing figure shot through the air at lightning speed, before diving downwards. Proceeding on to the next instant, an unexplainably fierce feeling erupted from the figure of the familiar youth that had appeared in front of their eyes.

Bang!

His figure landed heavily on the stone platform on the second highest step within the Nine Heavenly Steps. At this moment, appearing like an eagle swooping down from the sky, the youth appeared exceedingly dazzling.

Roar!

Ferocious clamoring and cheering voices sprung up across the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, with the sounds deafened everyone reverberating across the entire stretch of world.

Mu Chen, has finally appeared!

Chapter 412: Qualifications

Second highest step of the Nine Heavenly Steps

As Mu Chen's figure appeared on the stone platform present under the attentive gazes of countless people, gazes filled with various kinds of emotions, ranging from elation, darkness, curiosity or indifference shot out from the seven figures present on this step...

As he landed, Mu Chen raised his head, shooting a look at the place where everyone had focused their attention on. Including Xia Youran, there were only seven figures present here. However, he knew that the seven people in front of him might truly be the top figures within the younger generation of the Northern Heavens Continent. Although he had yet to cross hands with them, he was already able to feel that every single one of them possessed strength that far exceeded that of Wu Dong, and even that Qing Hu who had tried to obstruct him just now.

These people were the truly stumbling blocks towards his goal.

Naturally...there was still the greatest stumbling block for him to overcome.

Mu Chen's gaze shot towards the ordinary and seemingly unspectacular-looking Mo Xingtian, with the latter's deadpan eyes staring right back at him. Present within those eyes was not a single bit of emotional fluctuation, with not even any killing intent present within them. From the looks of it, it appeared as if he was a moving corpse without a single shred of emotion, causing people's blood to run cold.

However, Mu Chen knew that this Mo Xingtian might well be the most thorniest opponent that he would face here.

Following the appearance of Mu Chen, the initially quiet and stifling atmosphere seemed to become even more pressurising. Quietly walking over, Xia Youran grasped Mu Chen's hand as she pulled him back to one side, not allowing him to become the focus of attention, and rescuing him from the stifling atmosphere that had converged on him.

"Why are you so late?" Xia Youran whispered.

"I've gotten slightly injured then, so I had to take a rest for a while," replied Mu Chen with a faint smile, before retrieving the Wind Resistance Pearl out. Passing it back to Xia Youran, he said, "Thank you very much, Senior Sister Xia."

Receiving over the Wind Resistance Pearl, Xia Youran gave a sweet smile as she said, "Not bad. You're quite capable to actually rush all the way here. Look's like I've underestimated you."

Looking over towards the stone platforms in front of him that were radiating with pressure, Mu Chen asked, "What is this all about?"

The group of fellows present had stopped at this step, not going up, nor taking any action, resulting in such a pressurising atmosphere to form. Like pieces of wood stuck to the ground, they looked at each other in consternation, causing Mu Chen to be unable to make any sense of the scene present before him.

"The Divine Spiritual Baptism will descend from there..." said Xia Youran as she pointed towards the position at the highest point of the Nine Heavenly Steps. Presently, there was a gigantic clump of light, radiating with boundless brilliance, akin to a sun. Faintly, Mu Chen was able to discern the rather boundless and frightening fluctuations radiating from there.

"Over there?" repeated Mu Chen as he slightly gawked.

"The higher one stands within this Nine Heavenly Steps, the greater one would be able to absorb the "Strength of Baptism". As for those people below, the "Strength of Baptism" they can absorb is only the scraps remaining from those present at the top..." said Xia Youran with a smile. " However, the current problem is, who, exactly, are those people that have the qualifications to stand at the highest step? The Strength of Baptism isn't endless without any bounds. The smaller the number of people present at the highest step, the greater the

Strength of Baptism available for each individual to absorb."

Only at this moment did Mu Chen realise what was going on. Before he had reached the Nine Heavenly Steps, there were already seven people present at the second highest step. Clearly, it was not possible for all seven of them to stand at the highest level. If that was to happen, it would be no different from the second highest step, which all of them were standing on. Thinking along the lines, none of them would be willing to share that limited Strength of Baptism equal amongst those seven. In such a situation, if there was a ruthless person whose strength far exceeded the rest, which would immediately suppress everyone else and stand firm by himself at the highest step to enjoy the most perfect Strength of Baptism, there would be less confusion. However, the problem before him now was that there was no such person that possessed the strength to suppress the entire crowd.

Even someone as strong as Mo Xingtian might not possess the confidence to proclaim himself being able to defeat the other six by himself and climb to the top.

Therefore, before the Strength of Baptism appeared, they had fallen into this confusingly sticky situation. As of now, with the addition of Mu Chen, the situation had become even harder to disentangle.

A slight feeling pricked Mu Chen's mind, causing him to notice Liu Ying standing not far away from him, sending a sinister gaze towards his body.

"The places on the second highest step are already filled. I'm afraid that they can no longer hold any more people." Liu Ying's indifferent-sounding voice rang out, breaking the pressurising atmosphere present here. Instantly, the gazes from all of the other people present on the second highest step turned towards Mu Chen. Clearly, they had sensed the antagonistic meaning present behind Liu Ying's words.

However, none of them were unhappy about this, since all of them had some ill feelings towards Mu Chen, who had seemingly popped out of nowhere and was attempting to split their share of the strength of baptism.

After all, the seven people present here could be considered to be

familiar with each other's strengths, with fear and dread towards one another present in each other's hearts. However, how could this Mu Chen, who had suddenly popped out from nowhere, be considered as anything? Strength at Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase...although his combat prowess was indeed astonishing, to the point that even Qing Hu was unable to obstruct him... didn't he see Qing Hu and the rest staying obediently on the third highest step, not even daring to attempt to barge up here?

The difference in strength was clearly separated in this place akin to two different dimensions. One could only stand at a step in accordance to one's level of strength, before acknowledging one's fate and absorbing surplus Strength of Baptism leaking from the top. As for whether one could obtain the baptism, that would have to count on one's fortune...

"Liu Ying!" Upon seeing Liu Ying speaking out, Xia Youran immediately knew that he would be antagonistic towards Mu Chen, causing her eyebrows to wrinkle up.

"You should know the rules of this place, Youran. There's no one present here that wants another person coming over here to take a portion of their Strength of Baptism. The people that can stand here should have obtained the recognition of the great majority, at the very least," said Liu Ying with a sneer hanging at the corner of his mouth. Staring towards Mu Chen, he said, "However, take a look around you. Other than you, is there any other people that would approve of him standing here?"

"Haha. What Liu Ying said isn't wrong, Youran. If anyone can just enter here and absorb the Strength of Baptism, it would make a mess out of things. Don't you know how many people down there would make a beeline up here if that happens? At that time, it would create quite a huge problem." A faint smile appeared on the face of the Heavenly Yuan Chamber of Commerce's Dong Yuan as he spoke out.

Although the other people were coldly watching from the side, everyone could tell that most of them had the same sort of line-of-thought as Liu Ying and Dong Yuan. None of them were willing to split a part of their Strength of Baptism to share with one more person.

Out of all of the people, only Mo Xingtian remained unchanged, with not a single fluctuation of emotion appearing on his face as he glared Mu Chen with his deadpan eyes. His mission this time was to eliminate Mu Chen and snatch back the treasure of their Demonic Dragon Palace. However, if he was to suffer defeat in Liu Ying's hands later, or even get killed, that would save him a little bit of effort. If he was needed to personally take action against someone with only that level of strength, it would truly make him feel slightly reluctant.

Hearing and seeing all of the reactions present on the seven people in front of him, Mu Chen's handsome face remained extraordinarily calm and collect. He didn't feel any anger or ignition towards Liu Ying's antagonistic words, since all of these was within his expectations. After all, if other people were to not take any action towards him standing over here, he would definitely feel slightly suspicious and feel that something was amiss.

"You!" growled Xia Youran while slightly clenching her teeth.

"Looking at the matter of our engagement, Youran, I advise you to not interfere in this. If you are to incur the wrath of the crown, you'll also get kicked off from here. At that time, I'm afraid that you'd have wasted your trip this time to the Divine Spiritual Mountain," said Liu Ying with a faint smile.

"You can come here and try!" Xia Youran roared out, her beautiful eyes spewing out flames of fury. However, just as she was able to head forward, she was obstructed by Mu Chen, who had extended his hand to block her.

"Thank you very much, Senior Sister Xia. However, I can't let a lady stand up for me in such a matter." Looking at Xia Youran, a gentle smile appeared on Mu Chen's face as he spoke out to her. Liu Ying stepping forward should be representative of the thoughts of the other top figures in the younger generation of the Northern Heavens Continent. If Xia Youran still had the intention to obstruct them, this trouble would also fall on her, something that Mu Chen clearly didn't want to see.

Hearing his words, Xia Youran bit her lip. Naturally, she had also

understood his point. However, she truly felt ire towards the tone and fashion Liu Ying had used in his words.

"Haha. You've almost made everyone feel slightly flabbergasted. I've thought that you'd let a lady stand out for you once again." Upon seeing Xia Youran and Mu Chen's actions, a contemptuous smile rose up from the corner of Liu Ying's mouth. From what he had known, a few days prior in the Divine Spiritual Pavilion, Mo Xingtian had wanted to deal with Mu Chen. At that time, a lady had stood up and helped Mu Chen to drive Mo Xingtian away. If not, at that time, he should have already become an ice-cold corpse.

Nevertheless, faced against that contemptuous smile, Mu Chen gave a faint smile. Taking a step forward, Mu Chen swept his gaze across the few people that were looking towards him with indifferent gazes, before saying, "What qualifications do I need to stand here and receive the Strength of Baptism?"

Hearing such straightforward words, the ridiculing smile at the corner of Liu Ying's mouth curled even higher. Rubbing his nose, he replied with a faint smile, "That's very simple. You just have to prove your qualifications to remain here."

"How do I prove that?" replied Mu Chen with a smile. At this moment, a chilling shadow had surfaced within his black pupils, while frosty-like air started to slowly spread out from him.

Slowly walking forward, Liu Ying came to a stop right before Mu Chen. Extending his finger out, he made a slow hooking action, while the smile at the corner of his mouth started to slowly grow dark and sinister. As this happened, killing intent started to slowly radiate out within the second highest step.

"You just have to stay alive."

Slowly panning his head, he gave a smile and said, "A word of advice. I don't like to fight with people. Therefore, when I take action, it would result in either death or an extremely miserable outcome. If you're unable to pay such a price..."

Point towards the bottom of the Nine Heavenly Steps, a cold and detached voice rang out.

"Than scram the fuck off. This isn't somewhere that you can be in."

Bang!

Boundless Spiritual Energy furiously erupted in an instant, causing the people standing on the stone platforms to look over in slight astonishment. In the next flash, Mu Chen's figure had appeared right in front of Liu Ying like a spectre. Bringing along waves of surging Spiritual Energy, Mu Chen's leg went flying out, causing even the air to explode apart due to the winds brought about by his leg.

Like a whipping hammer, Mu Chen's leg smashed towards Liu Ying's head without the slightest bit of mercy.

A single kick, direct and efficient.

Bang!

The winds brought about by the kick was blocked by Liu Ying's arm, causing energy fluctuations to ripple out, while fissures appeared on the ground below them.

As he slowly raised his arm, which had blocked the incoming kick, the smile on Liu Ying's face slowly grew increasingly malevolent, while a dark voice filled with killing intent rang out across the stone platforms of the second highest step.

"Haha...you've truly chosen such a straightforward decision. However... you truly are still reckless..."

Chapter 413: Battling Liu Ying

Bang!

Traveling across like a whip, Mu Chen's leg carried along boundless Spiritual Energy as it flung violently towards Liu Ying. Upon seeing this, shock and amazement instantly flashed within the eyes of the other people at this step. They never imagined that Mu Chen would actually not waste a single breath and immediately decide to take action.

"An interesting brat."

Dong Yuan muttered with a faint smile as he looked at the two people in the midst of smashing their hands and feet together with excitement bubbling in his eyes. He truly wanted to see exactly where this youth, whose strength was only at the Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase, get the courage to actually enter a confrontation against Liu Ying.

Tightly clenching her hands, a shadow of worry appeared within the beautiful eyes of Xia Youran. Although Mu Chen had stunned everyone at the previous step due to the imposing manner in which he had defeated Qing Hu, Liu Ying was absolutely not Qing Hu. Although the former had irked her all along, he had genuinely crossed his Human Body Disaster, and was absolutely on a level neither Wu Dong nor Qing Hu could compare to.

However, the only thing she could do was to worry for him. At this moment, she was unable to do anything or interfere in this matter. If Mu Chen wanted to firmly plant his feet here, he would need to prove his qualifications to contend against other people for the Strength of Baptism. That meant that he would need to display a level of strength that would cause genuine fear and dread in the rest of the people present here. If she had insisted on sheltering and protecting him, he would the sole target from all sides. That way wouldn't be any help for Mu Chen.

This time, you can only rely on yourself, Mu Chen, said Xia Youran in her heart as she bit her lip.

There were similar gazes being casted from various places below this

step, since Mu Chen had clearly left a deep impression in the hearts of quite a few people when he had rushed all the way up to the second highest step. Nevertheless, all of them understood that whether Mu Chen could stand firmly on the second highest step would all be determined by the result of the following confrontation.

If he was able to intimidate Liu Ying to back off, that would mean that he possessed the qualifications to share the Strength of Baptism with the other experts present on the second highest step. If not, the only thing that he could do was to back off from the second highest step.

Under the attentive gazes casted from the surrounding crowd, the smile present at the corner of Liu Ying's mouth grew increasingly malevolent. Sending a sinister smile towards Mu Chen, he said, "I've heard that you're quite strong, right?"

As his voice rang out, his gaze suddenly turned cold and dark. The arm that had blocked against Mu Chen's leg rotated downwards in a furious matter, while his hand appeared akin to a the claws of an eagle. His fingers sparkled in a chilling glow, bringing about sharp gales as he gave a furious stab towards Mu Chen's leg.

Humm!

As Liu Ying's claw shot over, sharp whooshing sounds rang out, while faint scars seemed to appeared in the surrounding space as if the fabric of space had been ripped apart by the sharp winds caused by his claws.

A chilling glow faintly appeared in the eyes of Mu Chen as he gave an abrupt jump. Giving a pat towards the air with his palm, his body furiously rotated as he rose into the air, while swift and fierce leg shadows containing power to shatter and split apart mountains brought about boundless gales as they violently kicked towards Liu Ying at lightning speed.

Bang! Bang!

Howls roared out from Liu Ying's claws as not even the slightest intent of evading or retreating was shown by him. Shooting forward in a completely rampant fashion, it completely blocked all of the leg shadows

heading its way. Transforming into a fist, it violently slammed into the centre of the leg shadows.

Boom!

An energy shock wave visible to the naked-eye rippled out from the point of impact, while a tremor shook through Mu Chen's figure as he flew back tens of metres.

However, just as his body had touched the ground, Mu Chen gave a heavy stomp, causing the ground below him to shatter apart as he transformed into a remnant shadow, shooting forward with explosive speed.

Bang!

At the very instant where he had shot out, black lightning sparks furiously blossomed from his chest, as two lightning runes appeared within. At this moment, the muscles throughout his body appeared to have been lit ablaze as boundless Spiritual Energy erupted from within his body akin to an avalanche.

Not displaying any fanciful moves, he sent a single punch rumbling out. Boundless jet-black Spiritual Energy gushed out like a tsunami. Coupled with the surge of his blood within his body, tyrannical power was sent towards his fist.

As the fist headed forward, the air before it exploded apart, while deep fissures appeared on the ground below him.

At the sight of that might, the heart of Qing Hu standing on the third highest step to skip a beat. Compared to before, this punch coming from Mu Chen was clearly much more ferocious and powerful. That fellow actually wanted to enter a head-on confrontation with Liu Ying? He had already passed his Human Body Disaster, you know?! The body the latter possessed would already be extremely hard for people who had frequently cultivated in a Body Refinement Divine Art to match and compare with.

"You don't know the immensity heavens and earth! Now, I'll let you see exactly how strong of a body a person that has crossed over the Human

Body Disaster has!" Liu Ying gave a sneer as he furiously clenched his fists. Dark, sinister brilliance instantly erupted from his entire body, causing him to appear as if he had been casted from steel. Taking a step forward, his hands trembling like spears, he sent a fist piercing straight out. Akin to a bolt of lighting, it smashed head-on against the Mu Chen's incoming fist.

BOOM!

The two fists collided, while ripples spread out from the ground below the two, causing the rock-hard stone platform to instantly turn into dust.

Incomparably erratic Spiritual Energy fluctuations swept out as a tremor shook through Mu Chen's figure, causing him to get shoved back for tens of steps. Every single step that he took would cause the ground to be grinded into dust. After tens of steps, Mu Chen finally managed to forcefully regain control and stabilised himself. At this moment, his handsome face had an exceedingly serious expression appearing on it.

Compared to Mu Chen, who had retreated tens of steps, Liu Ying's condition appeared much better, only retreating a couple of steps. However, not a single shred of happiness was displayed on his face, with a spread of darkness hanging there instead. That's because he knew that although his fist had appeared to have sent Mu Chen in retreat, he wasn't able to injure the latter. His fist, which was more than sufficient to smash and sunder the bones of people of Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase...

The latter's fleshy body truly was rather tyrannical, being able to contend against his body, which had passed through the Human Body Disaster. Looks like the Body Refinement Divine Art that this fellow cultivates in is rather extraordinary...

Rubbing the fist that he had sent out previously, Mu Chen gave a cold glare towards Liu Ying. So, people that have passed their Human Body Disaster possess bodies of such level. This is comparable to my Diplo Rune Lightning Physique. No wonder why people say that ordinary Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phases would absolutely not be the

match of people who passed their Human Body Disaster. Strength of such a degree was more than sufficient to suppress them.

If not for his Thunder God Physique achieving a breakthrough, Mu Chen might've even gotten suppressed in this head-on confrontation.

"You truly have some places that are worth commending. You should have relied on such a superiority to smash Qing Hu away, am I right?" Shooting a cold and detached gaze towards Mu Chen, Liu Ying gave a sneer. "However, do you think that I'll only use my physical strength when fighting with people?"

Boom!

Powerful Spiritual Energy that blotted the skies suddenly erupted from Liu Ying's body, spreading out across the horizon. Grandiose and majestic, the tyrannical Spiritual Energy pressed down from above, causing faint changes to appear on the faces of quite a few people. This is the strength of someone that has passed his Human Body Disaster? Even his Spiritual Energy is much more tyrannical than people of ordinary Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase!

Whoosh!

Spiritual Energy the blotted the skies rushed out. Not wanting to give Mu Chen too much time to react, Liu Ying explosively shot forward. Giving a ferocious grab in the air, greyish-black Spiritual Energy appearing akin to countless shadows lengthened out and was violently thrust towards Mu Chen's entire body.

Roar!

A dragon shadow flitted below Mu Chen's feet as his figure disappeared from his original position in a swish.

Puff!

The greyish-black shadows brimming with exceedingly tyrannical Spiritual Energy violently pierced towards the place Mu Chen had previously stood at, leaving deep holes whose bottoms could not be seen.

Seeing that his attacks had only struck thin air, there was no change in Liu Ying's expression as he waved his sleeve, sending out countless greyish-black glowing figures that hid the skies and covered the earth as they rushed across the horizon, appearing akin to a rain of arrows that blotted the skies.

"Let me see how fast you can move!"

A cold sneer rang out from Liu Ying as he pointed with his finger. In the next instant, the greyish-black glowing figures that blotted the skies enveloped Mu Chen, hiding the skies and covering the earth as they attacked from all directions,

Now, Liu Ying had used his genuine strength, displaying the tyrannical strength possessed by a person that had passed the Human Body Disaster. This caused Mu Chen to feel some pressure, since such an opponent was extremely hard to deal with.

As the greyish-black glowing shadows that blotted the skies came enveloping over, each of the shadows were exceedingly sharp, radiating with a sword-like aura, although they appeared somewhat gloomier, causing no one to dare to underestimate their power.

Taking a deep breath, Mu Chen clapped his hands together, while Spiritual Energy burning with black flames rushed to the sky. In the next moment, as the ring of a bell resounded, it transformed into a gigantic black pagoda, encasing and protecting Mu Chen within it.

Ding! Ding!

The glowing shadows that blotted the skies hammered the black-glowing pagoda from all angles, causing it to slightly shake, leaving behind white scratch marks on its surface. However, the glowing pagoda's defense was exceedingly astonishing, showing not of single sign of collapse, even after enduring such attacks of this degree.

This caused quite a few of the experts observing this confrontation to feel shock and amazement within their hearts. Clearly, none of them had expected Mu Chen to completely defend against all of Liu Ying's attacks. Let's not mention about Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase, even

people at the Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase would not be able to accomplish such a feat.

Indeed, this youth from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy is somewhat extraordinary.

Seeing that all of his attacks had been blocked, the expression on Liu Ying's face grew increasingly dark, while killing intent blossomed and erupted from his eyes. Time and time again, his attacks had failed to eliminate Mu Chen, something which clearly caused him to be unable to hold his usual countenance.

In the sky, the black-glowing pagoda slowly dissipated, revealing Mu Chen's figure once again, Looking down on Liu Ying from above, chilling intent erupted from within his black pupils.

"I'm afraid that you'll not get the recognition from the rest just by showing off some speed and turtle-like defense." Liu Ying's dark voice rang out.

Replying with a sneer, Mu Chen didn't waste any time talking back to Liu Ying. Clapping his hands furiously together, Spiritual Energy erupted from within his body without the slightest restraint. As he formed seals with his hands, a gigantic stretch of starry sky surfaced behind his back.

Roar!

As the stretch of starry sky appeared, stepping out, riding the waves and igniting the skies, three beastial shadows, a white tiger, a black tortoise and a vermillion bird appeared in the sky, radiating with astonishing Spiritual Energy fluctuations.

"Oh? You've finally decided to launch your attack?"

Seeing the spectacle unfolding before him, Liu Ying raised his eyebrows as a cold and detached smile appeared on his face, "However, if you're only at this level, I'll advice you to not throw your face away in front of everyone."

"Oh really?"

A smile appeared on Mu Chen's face, one that appeared exceedingly cold and frosty. Pressing his hands together to form a mysterious hand seal, a cold voice rang, "What about this?!"

Roar!

A dragon roar that shook the heavens and earth resounded all of a sudden from the starry skies as boundless Spiritual Energy crazily rushed out and condensed together. In the next moment, the crowd looked in shock as a giant azure dragon composed of Spiritual Energy snaked around in the air, while an indescribable feeling of pressure radiated across the entire stretch of the world.

This was akin to the descent of a true Divine Dragon!

Four Gods Constellations Scripture, Divine Seal of the Azure Dragon!

Chapter 414: Intimidated

Roar!

It's roar shaking the world, the gigantic azure dragon hovered within the starry skies as an astonishing pressure radiated from it. This spectacle appear as if a true Divine Dragon had descended from the heavens, causing the faces of countless people to change.

On the second highest step, the faces of Xia Youran and Dong Yuan had also froze up as thick feelings of dread flashed within their eyes. The power that radiated from Mu Chen's attack had actually caused them to feel threatened.

Mo Xingtian had also raised his head at this moment. Looking at the giant azure dragon hovering within the starry skies with narrowed eyes, a frown appeared from his forehead. The first ever presence of fluctuations flashed within those set of deadpan eyes as he muttered, " Such a formidable Divine Art...its actually able to mimic a sliver of the fluctuations that a genuine Divine Azure Dragon would give off..."

Liu Ying's face grew dark as he looked at the spectacle unfolding before him. The brat by the name of Mu Chen, truly was hard to deal with. He clearly appeared to possessed strength at the mere level of Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase. And yet, there was no end to his methods and abilities. At this moment, even Liu Ying was starting to get a threatening feeling from the former.

Such a feeling caused the killing intent in Liu Ying's heart to blossom even further. This Mu Chen's younger than us by a few years. If we're to truly allow him to train for one or two more years, the situation might really turn out in the way that Xia Youran had said. He might toss me far behind! Such a thing was something that the narrow-minded Liu Ying would never ever be able to accept.

Therefore, it's best to kill this genius here and now!

"Come and test out my attack, Liu Ying!"

Mu Chen gave a cold roar as he hovered in the air. Following that, the four giant beastial shadows started radiating with astonishing fluctuations from within the starry skies. Taking a step forward, Mu Chen joined his hands together to form a seal as a fierce roar rang out from him, " Four Divine Seals!"

Roar!

Within the starry skies, the four beastial shadows roared towards the heavens as they stepped out from the starry skies. Transforming into four gigantic rays of light sparkling with different colours, they pierced through the air, bring about an imposing prestige that filled the world as they headed straight towards Liu Ying. The incomparably tyrannical Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiating out from them caused all of the faces of the experts standing on the third highest step like Qing Hu to violently contort.

They absolutely couldn't endure such a move!

They never imagined that Mu Chen would actually have such a move hidden within his arsenal. That's why he was able to climb all the way up to the second highest step and challenge the figures standing at the peak within the younger generation of the Northern Heavens Continent.

The imposing prestige coming from the four descending rays of light caused Liu Ying's face to grow increasingly dark. With a chilling smile, he sneered, "You're still too weak to push me over!"

As his voice rang out, Liu Ying gave a furious stomp of his feet, causing Spiritual Energy that blotted the skies to sweep out from him. In the next instant, an explosive roar resounded across the horizon, "Shadow Deity Tier Spiritual Art, Heavenly Binding Shadows!"

Whoosh!

The Spiritual Energy that had diffused into the air started to condense together above Liu Ying, transforming into a gigantic grey-coloured glowing figure approximately 1000 metres long. Expanding in size, the heavens appeared to be masked as all of the rays of light in the surrounding areas were absorbed by this abnormally grey figure.

Swish!

Like a demon god, the glowing grey figure spread its demon-like arms. With a swish, it rushed towards the heavens, before heavily smashing against the four astonishing rays of light heading straight towards Liu Ying.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Ear-shattering Spiritual Energy explosions resounded continuously across the horizon. As erratic Spiritual Energy rushed up time after time, the glowing grey figure continued to spin around, completely blocking and absorbing anything that headed its way akin to an endless shadow. Like a protective screen, none of the Spiritual Energy explosions were able to break through its defenses.

"Hmph! My Shadow Deity Tier Spiritual Art's able to absorb attacks. Do you think you can break it? Only idiots will dream of that!" sneered Liu Ying.

A chilling glint flashed within Mu Chen's eyes. Changing his hand seal, a low roar rang out from within his heart, "Explode!"

Bang!

Just as this roar rang out within his heart, the four rays of light erupted with dazzling brilliance, radiating with intense light akin to scorching suns. As light exploded out, rampaging Spiritual Energy instantly surged and gushed out like a tsunami, covering the earth and hiding the skies as i rushed towards the gigantic glowing grey figure.

The glowing figure continued to crazily spin around as light radiated from it as it attempted to absorb the powerful impacts landing on it. However, it was clear that the rampaging Spiritual Energy had exceeded the limit that it could absorb. In the next moment, the glowing grey figure started to brighten up, no longer appearing like a mysterious shadow, like before.

Seeing this, Liu Ying's expression instantly turned ugly.

Bang!!

As the glowing grey figure brightened up to its extremities, a bang rang out as it instantly exploded apart, transforming into glowing grey spots that blotted the sky before descending down akin to snow.

As the countless glowing dots descended from the sky and blanketed the horizon, Liu Ying's expression had turned into one of extreme gloominess. This damnable brat! He'd actually broken my "Heavenly Binding Shadows"! One had to know that even people of the same caliber as himself would feel slightly troubled by such an attack. However, despite that, Mu Chen had broken that apart without the slightest hiccup.

"I want to see exactly how many times you can compete with me!"

A sinister glow appeared within Liu Ying's eyes as he thought about it. Regardless of how many moves Mu Chen pulled out, he only possessed the strength at the level of Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase. Compared to the former, he had already passed his Human Body Disaster. Therefore, he just had to used the overwhelming advantage of his Spiritual Energy density to squash the former to death!

Tsk!

As a dark expression appeared within Liu Ying's eyes, the glowing dots that blotted the skies instantly scattered apart as a spectre-like figure shot out from with. With bent fingers on both hands, they brought about chilling gales as they explosively thrust towards the former's throat.

"Go and die!" Seeing that Mu Chen had actually dared to rush towards him, a furious sneer rang out from Liu Ying's mouth as he sent a punch straight towards Mu Chen's fingers.

However, just as Liu Ying's fist was about to smash against Mu Chen's fingers, a chill suddenly shook through his entire body as his eyes furious contracted. He saw Mu Chen's finger turning black as ink as a surge or dangerous ripples were distributed out.

"That's not right!"

Being a person that had much experience in schemes and thoughts, a feeling of unease instantly flashed within Liu Ying's mind. In the next

instant, with an explosive roar, he gave a fierce stomp on the ground. Furiously halting his motion of attack, he body shot back akin to a shadow as he retreated from his original path of motion.

"You're too naïve to play such a trick on me, brat!" Liu Ying sneered. It seemed as if Mu Chen's black finger was harboring some kind of highly toxic poison. However, not being as gullible as Wu Dong, it wasn't that easy for Mu Chen to drag Liu Ying into making such a mistake. Furthermore, from the looks of it, it seemed as though Mu Chen could only unleash this move of his in close-ranged proximity.

Staring at the figure of Liu Ying explosively retreating away from him, Mu Chen appeared to have seen through the former's thoughts as the corner of his mouth started to faintly curl up, while a ridiculing arc proceeded to appear.

"Black Lightning Poison Finger!"

Loading a flick, dense black fog instantly erupted in front of Mu Chen's finger. In the next instant, black rays of brilliance exploded from it, before a black finger-sized ray of light shot straight out as a tremble shook through Mu Chen's fingertip.

Chi! Chi!

Shooting across the sky, the black ray of light caused the air to explode into white mist, leaving behind light traces of black scars that appeared to corrode the very being of space.

Travelling at an extremely rapid speed, the black ray of light appeared before Liu Ying in a blink of an eye. At this moment, the face of the latter had already contorted as he sent a fist rumbling out with a fierce roar. Spiritual Energy gushed out from him, blotting the skies as Liu Ying attempted to defend against that unassuming ray of black light.

Chi! Chi!

However, despite his guarding attempts, the black ray of light smashed through his Spiritual Energy in a tyrannical fashion. As it pierced through, even the Spiritual Energy was corroded away, breaking apart in a short

instant as the black ray of light violently shot towards Liu Ying's fist.

Pausing abruptly, Liu Ying stared horrorstruck at his fist, where the black ray of poison started to rapidly climb up his arm.

"What overbearing poison!"

Liu Ying's pupils furiously contracted as he clenched his hand, causing a jade bottle to appear within. Shoving a few pills into his mouth, a low roar rang out from his throat as Spiritual Energy gushed out from within his both, causing his entire arm to erupt with dazzling brilliance.

Under his all-out resistance, the extension of the black poison light was restrained, before slowly starting to retreat, bit by bit. After a span of a dozen breaths, the poison was forced back into his palm. At this moment, Spiritual Energy rushed forth, transforming into a protective screen, inhibiting the corrosion of the poison to the rest of his body. However, despite this, he was clearly unable to use that palm of his, basically being temporarily disabled.

Seeing the actions of Liu Ying, a faint frown appeared on Mu Chen's forehead as he thought, Indeed, this Liu Ying's formidable enough to restrain the Black Lightning Poison Finger. As long as he exits this place, the Umbra Chamber of Commerce will definitely send Sovereign-level experts to help him dispel the Black Lightning Poison.

What a pity! It's so hard to find a good chance to dispose of this fellow.

Looks like the Black Lightning Poison doesn't guarantee a complete success rate against people with a strength over a certain degree.

"Mu Chen!"

Having restrained the corrosion of the poison, Liu Ying's stared towards Mu Chen, his face already contorted up while immense fury filled his eyes. He never imagined that not only would Mu Chen be able to step onto the second highest step today, he was even poisoned by the latter, even after personally taking action. This had caused his palm to be temporarily disabled, which was something that would lead to quite a bit of loss to his combat capabilities.

In such a situation, if he was to continue vying for the Strength of Baptism, with his palm being disabled by Mu Chen, it would undoubtedly lead to him suffering heavy injuries. This caused the fury to erupt and blaze within his heart, wishing with all his might to smash and shred Mu Chen into a thousand pieces.

Seeing the anger and fury displayed on Liu Ying's face, Mu Chen replied with a faint smile as he said, "Do you think that I've the qualifications to stand here now?"

"I'll slaughter you!"'

Liu Ying angrily roared in response, completely being unable to restrain himself from holding himself back from wanting to massacre Mu Chen.

Seeing Liu Ying's actions, a sneer appeared on Mu Chen's face as his finger started to turn jet-black once again.

Liu Ying immediately came to a halt, clenching his teeth as he looked towards the jet-black finger on Mu Chen's hand, eyes brimming with thick feelings of dread. That poison's too overbearing! I can't even force it out off my body! The only thing I can do is to suppress it! If I'm hit by it again, it'll definitely make things worse!

As of now, he clearly couldn't go all-out to take action against Mu Chen without any care as he still needed to contend for the Strength of Baptism that was about to arrive.

Fluctuating with indecision, Liu Ying finally clenched his teeth and sent an incomparably poisonous glare at Mu Chen, before slowly retreating back.

"Thank you very much."

Seeing that, Mu Chen was faintly smiling, which almost caused Liu Ying to rush up once again.

As this scene continued to play out, the countless experts who had observed this spectacle from below sucked in a cold breath of air. Looking towards the handsome youth, their eyes were filled with incredulous feelings. This fellow had actually forced Liu Ying to retreat?!

Relying on his strength at the Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase to force an expert that had passed his Human Body Disaster to retreat...

.This brat's too frightening!

Completely ignoring the gazes heading towards him, Mu Chen slowly walked towards Xia Youran's side as those gazes gradually turned from doubt to amazement and complication, sending a faint smile towards her.

Looking at the youth before her with amazement gushing out from her beautiful eyes, Xia Youran was about to reply to him before a sensation suddenly struck her. As a shiver shook through her body, she raised her head, only to see the gigantic clump of light floating in the sky suddenly erupting in a dazzling brilliance. Under the envelop of its brilliance, it appeared as if some kind of mysterious energy was about to descend.

Seeing this spectacle, happiness instantly welled up within Xia Youran.

"The Strength of Baptism's about to descend!"

Chapter 415: The Tyrannical Mo Xingtian

Humm.

In the skies above the Nine Heavenly Steps, the gigantic clump of light suddenly burst out with dazzling brilliance as if some kind of mysterious power had erupted within it. At the same time, low and deep throbbing sounds started to reverberate within the entire stretch of the world, causing the entire heavens and earth to fluctuate to its beat.

As this happened, the chaotic battles taking place within this region started to slowly stop as countless people raised their heads, looking with scorching gazes towards the gigantic clump of light floating high across the horizon as insatiable greed burst out from their eyes.

"The Strength of Baptism, huh...?"

Mu Chen had also raised his head, focusing his gaze towards the gigantic clump of light. Appearing to be floating high up in the sky, the clump of light was actually located at the extremity of this isolated space. Presently, there were frightening spatial currents, somewhere that no one would ever dare to get close to.

"It's said that this clump of light is the end result of the heart of the Heavenly Sovereign who had passed away here. However, after all these years, there's no one that has managed to get close to it," said Xia Youran softly.

Gasping in surprise, Mu Chen nodded his head in agreement. Not long ago, Mu Chen had seen first hand how frightening the energy contained within just few drops of the blood essence from that Heavenly Sovereign was. Therefore, it wouldn't be too absurd and ridiculous for the spectacle unfolding before him to be caused by the heart of that Heavenly Sovereign. Naturally, Mu Chen also knew that there's absolutely no one within the entire Northern Heavens Continent that had the qualifications to prove the authenticity of this saying.

"Looks like the Strength of Baptism's about to descend."

All of a suddenly, Xia Youran's forehead started to knit up as her beautiful eyes shot a sneaky glance towards the other people present on the same stone platform as her. As of now, there wasn't any decision made for the partitioning of the Strength of Baptism, as it would definitely result in no conclusion at the very end. Xia Youran was clear that such a matter was something that definitely couldn't be settled with words. At the very end, all that mattered was who was the strongest.

At this same moment, a faint flash was present within Mu Chen's eyes as he faintly nodded his head.

Following the commotion caused by the gigantic clump of light, the atmosphere on the stone platform within the second highest step started to slowly calm down as everyone looked towards it with sparkling eyes. However, every single person present had started to quietly circulate Spiritual Energy within their body, while vigilance and precaution filled their gazes.

Before the arrival of the Strength of Baptism, it was clear that there was the need to separate the hierarchy here.

This quiet atmosphere seemed to head down in order, travelling down the third highest step, the fourth highest step to the entire Nine Heavenly Steps, as well as the countless experts present below. At this moment, all of their gazes were focused towards the second highest step, since everyone present here knew that a chaotic battle that would shake the heavens would definitely erupt at this location.

Presently, there were the geniuses at the peak of the younger generation within the Northern Heavens Continent. Since there were people that needed to be eliminated, the process in which that happened would definitely be absolutely miserable.

As for exactly who would be eliminated, this was something that no one was able to come to a final conclusion.

A pressurized atmosphere started to envelop the second highest step in the Nine Heavenly Steps.

This pressure continued for a few minutes, before Mo Xingtian, standing

at the front, gave a smile. Scanning across the people before him with his deadpan eyes, a hoarse laughing voice that came ringing out caused the hearts of everyone present to tremble. In the next instant, every single gaze focused onto his body.

This person, who had yet to speak a single word since the beginning, the one that was considered as the number one figure within the Northern Heavens Continent's younger generation finally could not continue observing the situation as a bystander.

"The most optimum number of people that can enjoy and finish this Strength of Baptism should be four." Mo Xingtian's hoarse voice rang out.

Hearing this, a tremor shook through the hearts of everyone as they thought, Doesn't that mean that four other people will not be able to complete their baptism?

However, exactly which four will rise to the top and which four will remain behind?

As a smile curled up on his face, Mo Xingtian raised his deadpan eyes, slowly sweeping his gaze across every single person present on this stone platform. After completing that, he spoke out in a soft voice, " Dong Yuan, Zhou Xuan and Liu Ying. Follow me up."

The atmosphere instantly froze up.

The various experts present in the Nine Heavenly Steps were also shocked by Mo Xingtian's words. In the past Divine Spiritual Baptisms, one had to depend on one's own capabilities to secure a victory to ascend, where defeat would result in one staying on the second highest step. However, this time around, Mo Xingtian had unexpectedly decided the break this unspoken rule. Was his single sentence able to dictate the winners?

No only them, even Dong Yuan, Liu Ying and even the thin and bony male dressed in greyish-white robes, Zhou Xian had gawked upon hearing Mo Xingtian's words, looking at the latter with slight shock present in their eyes. What do these words of his mean? Did he really think that a single statement from him would be able to dictate who gets to ascend

and receive the Strength of Baptism?

Dong Yuan and the other two still felt somewhat incredulous towards Mo Xingtian's actions. This was Mo Xingtian, someone that was best not to make contact with, had actually offered them a portion of the main attraction here? Nevertheless, it didn't take long for happiness to gush out from their eyes. With the three of them, the entire situation would be absolutely under their control. That's because the other four people remaining didn't possess the strength and capabilities needed to deal with Mo Xingtian and them.

After all, although Mo Xingtian wasn't able to defeat all seven people by himself, even people as arrogant and prideful as Dong Yuan and Liu Ying knew that none of them would stand much chance of victory in a solo match against the former.

While Dong Yuan and the other two were gawking in happiness, the faces of the remaining four people turned slightly ugly, especially the Western Extreme Palace's Xi Qinghai. As for the Heavenly Yuan Divine Sect's Su Buxiu, his gaze slowly started to turn cold. If not for the fact of them dreading Mo Xingtian, they would have lunged over and attack in a fury at the first instant.

"What's the meaning of this, Mo Xingtian?!" Clenching her teeth, Xia Youran roared out in fury.

No one had imagined that Mo Xingtian would actually pull Liu Ying, Dong Yuan and Zhou Xuan over to his side in such a forceful fashion. This would undoubtedly lead to the elimination of Xi Qinghai and the other three. How could they endure such a thing like that?! Yes, you're formidable, Mo Xingtian! But you're not invincible in the Northern Heavens Continent! What you've done today will offend the Nine Summers Chamber of Commerce, the Western Extreme Palace and the Heavenly Yuan Divine Sect!

How could Mo Xingtian do such a thing?!

Giving a faint smile, Mo Xingtian replied, "I've only given them a small benefit, that's all."

Replying with such incomprehensible words caused Liu Ying and the other two to feel baffled. They seemed to not have any sort of agreement with Mo Xingtian.

"Aren't you not afraid of breaking the rules by doing such things, Mo Xingtian?" Wrinkling his forehead, Xi Qinghai slowly spoke out.

"Although the Demonic Dragon Palace is strong, it isn't on the level where it can win against everybody." Added the white-robed Su Buxiu with a faint smile. Being the Young Sect Master of the Heavenly Yuan Divine Sect, he naturally possessed an innate arrogance befitting of his position. If he was to lose in a fair fight, he would be able to wholeheartedly accept the end result. However, what the hell was this? Although Mo Xingtian's always been quiet and silent, Su Buxiu never expected such a level of rampancy to exist within the latter, something which had far exceeded the likes of himself.

Faced against such questioning, Mo Xingtian only gave a smile as he replied with his usual hoarse voice of his, "I've challenged the Spiritual Energy tribulation a month ago. Although I've failed, it should be extremely easy to defeat either one of you.

Hearing his reply, the faces of Xia Youran, Xi Qinghai and Su Buxiu instantly changed slightly. This Mo Xingtian had actually attempted to cross his Spiritual Energy Tribulation?

Like the three of them, Mu Chen's forehead started to slightly wrinkle up. Naturally, he too knew about the three Tribulations of a Sovereign. Although they were extremely dangerous, with the possibility of one completely turning into ashes with a slight slip of a mistake, the promotion in one's strength was absolutely enormous. Even if one had failed to pass their tribulations, as long as one was able survive and live on, one would obtain a huge promotion to one's strength. A prime example would be that Wu Dong. Although he had failed to pass his Human Body Tribulation, his strength had already far exceeded that of an ordinary Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase.

Clearly, the current Mo Xingtian had already taken half a step forward

ahead of Xia Youran and the others.

"Would you three just wait for a moment."

Mo Xingtian said out with a smile. His deadpan eyes shot a glance towards Mu Chen as the arc at the corner of his mouth gave off an arbitrary feeling. However, Mu Chen already understood that he himself was not one of those three. That's because Mo Xingtian had already decided to kill him. Being the one targeted to be killed, Mu Chen naturally didn't have any way out this time.

As his voice rang out, Mo Xingtian turned his body and slowly walked towards the highest step within the Nine Heavenly Steps.

Behind him, Liu Ying, Dong Yuan and Zhou Xuan shot a look at each other before following suit. As Liu Ying turned his body around, he shot a dark yet satisfied glare towards Mu Chen. As long as he was able to obtain the Strength of Baptism this time and obtained the qualifications to attempt the "Spiritual Energy tribulation", if he was able to pass through successfully, wanting to killing Mu Chen would be as easy as a flip of his hand.

Seeing the back figures of the four people in front of them, the faces of Xia Youran, Xi Qinghai and Su Buxia turned dark and sinister as all of them tightly clenched their hands, eyes filled with dimness and gloominess. All of them really wanted to rush up and take action. However, their common sense had told them that they would not be able to defeat the group of four headed by Mo Xingtian.

Hu.

Gently exhaling a breath of air, frosty killing intent flashed within Mu Chen's eyes as he stared towards the back figure of Mo Xingtian.

"Elder Sis Xia, Brother Xi and Brother Su, are you three thinking of giving up just like that?" Turning towards the three people, Mu Chen spoke out with a faint smile.

"Mu Chen, you..." Looking towards the youth in front of her whose eyes were now sparkling with killing intent, Xia Youran could already guess

what he was trying to do, which caused her beautiful face to slightly contort.

"What else can we do?" replied Xi Qinghai in an indifferent tone. Clearly, he wasn't feeling all too good about it.

"Looks like you three are extremely afraid of Mo Xingtian," said Mu Chen with a smile.

"We're not afraid. It's just that our strengths truly are not on the same level as him," replied Su Buxia as he shrugged his shoulders. "There isn't anyone here that is able to defeat him. Of course, it is possible if we group up. However, Liu Ying and the other two would most probably take action to stop us. If that happens, we'll definitely be at a disadvantage."

"If I'm able to deal with Mo Xingtian, would you guys have the courage to step up?" said Mu Chen in a soft voice.

Hearing those words, the eyes of Xi Qinghai and Su Buxiu slightly narrowed as they stared at Mu Chen, both of them having the impulsion of tossing out some words of ridiculement. However, this was fortunately restrained by them. Strange expressions appeared on their faces as they stared at Mu Chen. However, both of them nodded their heads as they replied, "Without Mo Xingtian, there's nothing to dread about Liu Ying and the other three."

"Since that's the case, let's join hands. Leave Mo Xingtian to me. As for the other three guys, I'll leave them to you guys."

Panning his head slightly to look towards the three, Mu Chen smile as he said, "What's the matter? Do you have to guts to do it?"

Hearing such words for Mu Chen, Xia Youran and the other two were stunned as they looked towards the former with incredulous expressions appearing on their faces.

Not saying anymore words, under their stunned gazes, Mu Chen slowly walked forward. With a change of his hand seal, the Great Meru Demonic Pillar within his aurasea instantly erupted with terrifying demonic aura. As it swept out from within his body, Mu Chen's jet-black pupils started to

slowly turn scarlet-red.

Whoosh!

A scarlet red glowing pillar shot straight up into the sky from Mu Chen's crown before a gigantic black demonic pillar surfaced from within, causing a bloody demonic aura to blot out the skies.

Rushing straight up into the sky, Mu Chen descend on the top of the black demonic pillar.

At this moment, the sky appeared to have turned into a dim red colour as the frightening demonic aura started pervading throughout the heavens and earth.

"I'm afraid that there isn't your share in this Strength of Baptism, Mo Xingtian."

As the heavens turned into a dim red colour, the chilling voice of the youth, bringing about killing intent that blotted the skies, swept out across the world, shocking and stunning the countless experts present here.

Chapter 416: Fight Mo Xingtian!

As the demonic aura flooded the heavens, the gigantic demonic pillar stood erect in the world akin to the pillar that propped up the heavens, radiating astonishing fluctuations across the horizon. Every single expert within this region was now staring dumbfoundedly at the figure of the youth standing on top of the demonic pillar as they thought, He actually dares to bring the fight to Mo Xingtian!

"That brat's truly gone mad..." Some people started mumbling out in shock.

Even Xia Youran, Xi Qinghai and Su Buxia, those people at the peak of the younger generation within the Northern Heavens Continent could only swallow their anger and fury in the overbearingness of Mo Xingtian. However, who would have imagined that Mu Chen would actually dare to stand and and issue a challenge straight to Mo Xingtian?

The spectacle unfolding before them caused a dilemma within them. Should they sigh in admiration to Mu Chen's bravery, or laugh in contempt towards his overestimation of his strength...?

However, it had to be said that the slender figure of the youth, standing proudly on top of the gigantic demonic pillar, with howling winds causing his robes to flutter around, with the imposing grandeur he gave out, and the domineering aura that appeared to be able to devour the mountains and the rivers, caused people to be convinced by his will.

Raising their heads to look at the figure before them in a daze, a slightly complicated expression appeared on the faces of Xia Youran and the other two, being especially present on Xi Qinghai's face. Being present at the intense fight Mu Chen had with Mo Longzi then, he had observed their fight by using the standpoint from a higher level. Perhaps, at that time, he never would have thought that this youth would dazzle so brightly to such an eye-piercing level in such a short period of time afterwards.

This growth-rate truly made people gasp and sigh in amazement.

On the podium at the very top, Mo Xingtian and the other three had

come to a halt. Turning around to look at Mu Chen standing on the demonic pillar, the expressions of Liu Ying and the other two started to faintly fluctuate, with Liu Ying clenching his teeth. At this moment, he was even startled and shocked by the imposing aura that was radiating from Mu Chen.

Mo Xingtian had also come to a stop. As all of the gazes coming from the region focused on his body, he paused for an instant, before turning himself around.

Not a single fluctuation was present on his face as his deadpan eyes stared right towards Mu Chen. Giving a smile, he spoke out, "You're really truly going to rely on the strength of the demonic aura coming from the Great Meru Demonic Pillar? Relying on your strength at the Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase, you really are formidable to be able to achieve such a feat."

Staring coldly towards Mo Xingtian, Mu Chen spoke out in a slow and forceful manner, "You've been hanging at the top of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's Bounty List for so many years. This time, it might be the time to remove you from that list."

Bang!

Just at the instant when his final word rang out, Mu Chen suddenly shot out. With his hands in a hugging posture, the Great Meru Demonic Pillar rapidly shrunk down in size, finally turning into a black stone pillar that was approximately 3 metres and landed right within Mu Chen's hugging embrace.

The stone pillar was covered in mottley spots, with the vestiges of time present all over its surface. There were even long and deep grooves left behind by heaven-astonishing battles in the past. Naturally, other than those, there was a dim purplish flower pattern covering its entire surface. That was the sealing power coming from the "Page of Sealing" present within Mu Chen's body.

Due to it being overly ominous and fiendish, if not for it being sealed up until now, the Great Meru Demonic Pillar would absolutely not be

something that Mu Chen could hold and control. Although the strength of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar had drastically weakened after being sealed up like that, it was already more than sufficient for the current Mu Chen to handle.

Whoosh!

Hugging the stone pillar and bringing along an ominous and demonic aura that blotted the skies, Mu Chen rushed straight towards Mo Xingtian in an astonishingly overbearing fashion.

"Hmph!"

Having noticed this, Liu Ying and the other two gave a cold snort, wanting to take action to obstruct the incoming Mu Chen.

Swish!

Before they could take action, Xia Youran, Xi Qinghai and Su Buxiu had already rushed in front of them, obstructing their paths towards Mu Chen.

"It's best that you three wait here and observe the fight over there." With a frosty expression on her beautiful face, Xia Youran spoke out in an indifferent tone.

"Do you really think that brat's able to match Mo Xingtian, Xia Youran?" Liu Ying replied with a dark expression.

"Whether he's a match or not would have to wait for them to finish their fight. At the very least, he has the guts and courage to take action against Mo Xingtian."

A curl of disdain rose from the corner of Xia Youran's mouth as she heard his rebuttal. In her eyes, Mu Chen was stronger than Liu Ying by hundreds of times at the very least.

"That's called guts and courage?" Liu Ying added in a contemptuous tone. "That's just acting with no care for his life. I feel that you should start thinking about how, exactly, you're going to collect his corpse in a little while!"

"There's no need for you to worry about this," replied Xia Youran in a

cold and frosty voice. "If you three want to take action, the only thing we can do is accompany you three awhile."

Hearing her words, Dong Yuan instantly burst into laughter before he said, "How painful would it be for us to take action, right?! Such a situation can't continue for long. Let's wait for that brat to get slaughtered by Mo Xingtian. At that time, you guys can also take a break."

The faces of Xi Qinghai and Su Buxiu sank in response to Dong Yuan's ridiculing words. Nevertheless, none of them continued to reply to that taunt. If Mu Chen truly lost to Mo Xingtian, the only choice they had was to give up on this matter. Faced against a person of such formidable caliber as Mo Xingtian, even they would lose some of their confidence.

Clenching her teeth, Xia Youran raised her head to look towards the sky. If Mu Chen was not a match for Mo Xingtian, she would need to take action to save him, as Mo Xingtian was extremely ruthless and vicious, and would rain killing blows down on Mu Chen. As for her, she clearly couldn't stand at the corner and watch Mu Chen get killed by Mo Xingtian.

Bang!

As Xia Youran, Xi Qinghai and Su Buxiu stood in a confrontation against Liu Ying and the other two, across the horizon, Mu Chen had already taken to the skies. At this moment, his blood-red eyes firmly glared towards the thinly-robed Mo Xingtian below as a killing aura gushed out from his entire body.

Staring emotionlessly towards Mu Chen, who was radiating with an imposing aura, Mo Xingtian gave a point towards the air in front of him, causing Spiritual Energy of the world to explode out from there. In the next instant a beam of Spiritual Energy approximately 30 metres wide abruptly shot out from his finger. The boundless amount of Spiritual Energy that gushed out from Mo Xingtian was on such a level that the faces of Xia Youran and the rest could not help faintly changing their facial expressions. The tyrannical quantity of Mo Xingtian's Spiritual Energy seemed to have already far, far exceeded that of theirs.

Bang!

Looking towards the beam of Spiritual Energy shooting towards him, not the slightest sign of wanting to dodge was present in Mu Chen. Tightly hugging the demonic pillar, a low roar rang out from his throat as he gave it a swing. Akin to wanting to cleave through mountains with his strength, he gave a furious smash straight towards the beam of Spiritual Energy.

Boom!

A deep sound that caused people's scalp to turn numb rang across the sky as the demonic aura gushed out from the demonic pillar, blotting the skies and horizon. Under the wave of the demonic pillar, the seemingly boundless beam of Spiritual Energy was unexpectedly smashed apart, exploding into glowing dots that filled the skies.

Countless people gasped in astonishment as they took in this spectacle while thinking, The current Mu Chen's really too violent.

Swish!

Under the glowing dot-filled sky, Mu Chen's figure shot straight out like a bolt of lightning. In the next instant, he had already appeared right before Mo Xingtian, while the rumbling demonic aura spewed out from the demonic pillar as it swept towards the latter.

A chilling glint flashed within Mo Xingtian's deadpan eyes. All of a sudden, he clenched his hand, sending a fist rumbling out.

"Strength of the Demonic Dragon!"

A hoarse voice rang out as Mo Xingtian's fist smashed violently against the demonic pillar sweeping over. A demonic dragon seemed to condense and trail behind his fist, causing an ominous aura to gush out.

Bang!

A dull sound resounded as a shock wave visible to the naked-eye rippled out from the point of impact. Inch by inch, the ground below Mo Xingtian's feet started to crack, shattering in a wave-like fashion as it spread out, causing the steps around to start collapsing apart.

Upon seeing this, Xia Youran and the others rapidly retreated back in fear of being overwhelmed by the powerful impact incoming their way.

"Aren't you looking down on the treasure of your Demonic Palace Treasure by blocking the Great Meru Demonic Pillar like that?" Mu Chen sneered. In the next instant, blood-red rays of brilliance swept out from the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, covering the earth and hiding the skies as it blossomed out. Appearing akin to an ominous mist of blood surging out across the horizon.

As the blood-clouds billowed out, they surrounded the demonic dragon shade present on Mo Xingtian's fist, before completely shattering it apart.

Feeling the ominous aura surging crazily towards him, Mo Xingtian's pupils slightly contracted. The power coming from the demonic pillar was too fiendish, instantly corroding into his body, without even a weak point to drill into, causing the Spiritual Energy in his body to shake and jolt around.

"Such an overbearing Great Meru Demonic Pillar!"

Mo Xingtian spoke out with his hoarse voice. At his current level of strength, Mu Chen was only able to use about 10 to 20% of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar's ominous strength. However, this was more than sufficient to cause the Spiritual Energy within his body to shake and jolt. Indeed, the treasure of our Demonic Dragon Palace is extraordinary.

Pa!

Waving his sleeve about, he tried to rely on this counter-force to rapidly retreat back like a wisp of black smoke, attempting to evade from such an incisive attack coming from the Great Meru Demonic Pillar.

"Bang!"

However, Mu Chen wouldn't give him such an opportunity. Hugging the demonic pillar, he gave it a sweep, instantly sending the Great Meru Demonic Pillar smashing violently against Mo Xingtian's body.

Boom!

A low and deep rumble resounded before a successive stretch of people sucking in breaths of cold air rang out across the region. As the demonic pillar swept past, Mo Xingtian's body was sent flying in a miserable fashion. Landing on the platform, his feet scraped across the ground, carving deep grooves into the stone for over 30 metres. Finally, after giving a heavy stomp, and shattering the ground, he forcefully stabilised himself . At this moment, the Spiritual Energy surrounding his body was in an upheaval, while his robes had been torn apart, with even a faint sliver of blood appearing at the corner of his mouth.

Although it was sealed up by Mu Chen, being an ominous weapon from the ancient antiquity, fiendish strength pervading from the Great Meru Demonic Pillar was still as frightening as before. It's said that the people struck by it would have the fiendish energies corroding into their body. Corroding away their Spiritual Energy, before collapsing their consciousness, those people would sink within a mad frenzy, while turning incomparably cruel and violent.

As of now, being able to withstand a single blow from the demonic Pillar, this goes to show the extraordinary strength that Mo Xingtian possessed. However, it was clear that resisting that attack wasn't easy for him.

As they observed this spectacle from the air, the mouths of Xia Youran and the others became slightly agape, while their eyes were brimming with shock. They never imagined that Mu Chen would actually gain a slight superiority in this exchange.

Within the dust plumes that filled the air, holding the Great Meru Demonic Pillar in his hands, Mu Chen gave a heavy stomp. As the ground shook, his pair of scarlet-red eyes tightly stared towards Mo Xingtian in the distance.

"Haha."

Patting away the dust strewn across his body, hoarse laughter rang out from him as he slowly raised his head. Finally, waves of fluctuations surfaced within those deadpan eyes, while some shadows of excitement appeared on his usually emotionless face.

"You truly never disappoint me too much..."

With a smile, Mo Xingtian extend his palm out before giving a furious grasp. In the next instant, black light started to condense, forming a black-coloured heavy spear, which appeared within his hand.

The heavy spear was completely covered in black-coloured scales, sparkling with a dark luster. Present at the top of the spear was a design of a demonic dragon in the process of devouring something, with its densely-filled sharp teeth forming the tip and edge of the spear. Appearing incomparably sharp, they seemed to be able to sunder and rip apart the heavens and earth.

"That's..."

Upon seeing that black heavy spear, the countenance of Xia Youran and the rest slightly changed as they exclaimed, "The Peerless Rank Spiritual Artifact of the Demonic Dragon Palace, the Devouring Dragon Demonic Spear?!"

Upon hoisting the black heavy spear, the aura radiating from Mo Xingtian became drastically imposing, appearing akin to a demonic dragon that had broken its shackles and appeared in the stretch of the world to continue its devouring of the heavens.

"Since it has progressed to this, let us have some real fun!"

Chapter 417: All Methods

Bang!

Grasping the black heavy spear, Mo Xingtian's frail-looking figure instantly erupted with a terrifyingly imposing aura. Dark rays of brilliance shown on the surface of the black heavy spear, appearing as if it wanted to transform into a demonic dragon and take to the skies, smashing and shaking the heavens as it did so, causing people to be overwhelmed with shock.

Staring towards the black heavy spear in Mo Xingtian's hand, Mu Chen's eyes had also started to narrow. Clearly, he could sense how extraordinary the black heavy spear was. It was definitely an extremely powerful Spiritual Weapon, and from the looks of it, there's an extremely high possibly for it to have reached the level of a Peerless Rank Spiritual Artifact. Such a weapon of this grade would be extremely rarely seen, even in an elite influence like the Demonic Dragon Palace. From the looks of it, Mo Xingtian really had invested quite heavily just to kill me today.

"I'd originally assumed that I'd be able to settle you with ease. However, it looks like I was wrong about this. However, it's also all-good this way. It has already been a very long while since I've used the 'Devouring Dragon Demonic Spear'. I hope that you'll be able to give it a delightful time today." Staring towards Mu Chen, Mo Xingtian spoke out with his hoarse voice.

"I'll not disappoint you!"

Mu Chen gave a hearty chuckle in reply, his laughter resounded out like thunder. However, there wasn't the slightest bit of smiling intent within those scarlet-red eyes of his, with them being filled to the brim with chilling intent. As his laughter reverberated around, he took a stride forward, while a giant dragon shadow surfaced below his feet. With a swish, it split apart the air before it, appearing right before Mo Xingtian in the next instant. Swing his hands down while in a hugging posture, the remnant shadows of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar appeared in the air as

it was violently swung down.

As the remnant shadows enveloped Mo Xingtian, the ground below him started to sink down a level.

Raising his head, Mo Xingtian looked towards the demonic pillar howling down towards him. Giving a furious clench of the heavy spear in his hand, he strode forward, before shooting up into the sky.

Swish!

Striding up into the sky, Mo Xingtian sent his spear stabbing forward and swept it out like a rainbow. Akin to a demonic dragon roaring and howling as it shot through the skies, the spear heavily pierced towards the black demonic pillar.

Ding!

Clear metallic ringing sounds resounded as shock waves visible to the naked-eye rippled out throughout the skies. However, this time, Mo Xingtian did not end up in the miserable state he was in before. Tapping the air with the tip of his feet, he dispelled the frightening energy that was feedbacked into his spear. Looking towards Mu Chen with his deadpan eyes, his hoarse voice rang out, "So, the Great Meru Demonic Pillar can only show such little might in your hands, huh?"

Remaining emotionless towards Mo Xingtian's words, Mu Chen took a step forward, with the Great Meru Demonic Pillar instantly rushing towards the sky. As its ominous aura rippled out and blotted the skies, the Great Meru Demonic Pillar started to drastically increase in size. In the short span of a few breaths, it had already grown to over 300 metres in size. Extending his hands out and giving the air before him a hug, as if he was hugging the demonic pillar, Mu Chen gave a ferocious downwards swing.

"Bang!"

Warps and distortions instantly appeared in the surrounding space as the air within a 3 kilometre radius around him completely exploded apart, causing this entire zone to turn into a vacuum.

"Devouring Dragon!"

All of a sudden, the demonic spear in Mo Xingtian's hand shook, before black rays of brilliance blossomed from it, blotting the skies. In the next instant, it shot out of Mo Xingtian's hands. As a dragon's roar resounded, black rays of light surrounded it, unexpectedly transforming into a gigantic demonic dragon thousands of metres long, squirming and snaking around as it hovered in the air. As the demonic dragon floated in the sky, it appeared to shroud over the entire region.

Roar!

As the demonic dragon roared, it extended its 300 metre long dragon claws out, grasping towards the demonic pillar that was howling down on it. Surging with frightening power, its gigantic dragon tail violently swung towards the Great Meru Demonic Pillar.

Bang! Bang!

The two gigantic objects smashed against each other with frightening might, causing astonishing energy shock waves to ripple out. Even the surrounding space showed signs of collapsing, indicative of the astonishingly-frightening power of the impact.

This was the showdown between the ominous weapon of the ancient antiquity and the Peerless Rank Spiritual Artifact!

However, the ominous weapon of ancient antiquity was now in a seal state. In contrast to it, the Peerless Rank Spiritual Artifact was now erupting with astonishing might in Mo Xingtian's hands.

As they raised their heads to look at the world-shaking fight happening in the air, the eyes of the countless experts were filled with astonishment and admiration. At this moment, anyone would be able to see that the two people duking it out in the sky were venting all of their murderous auras out. Every single move they made were all killing blows, clearly meant to reap and steal away each other's life.

However, after turning around to think about the grudges and grievances between the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy and the Demonic

Dragon Palace, all of them felt that it was completely understandable. They were already sworn enemies at the very beginning. It would be idiotic for any one of them to stay their hand in this confrontation.

Bang!

Being a Peerless Rank Spiritual Artifact, the Devouring Dragon Demonic Spear clearly possessed a level of sentience. It would be able to automatically hone in on Mo Xingtian's target once he gives his orders to do it. However, being an ominous weapon from the ancient antiquity, the might and prestige of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar was comparable to that of a Divine Weapon. If not for it being in a sealed state, it would be able to shatter the Devouring Dragon Demonic Spear in a single strike. Therefore, seemingly being stimulated by the attacks from the Devouring Dragon Demonic Spear, the Great Meru Demonic Pillar appeared to have become angry, since fiendish energies surged and gushed out of it, violently slamming against the demonic dragon formed by the Devouring Dragon Demonic Spear.

Under the attacks from the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, the gigantic demonic dragon started to howl in pain. Regardless of its state, a starved camel was bigger than a horse. Even though it was sealed up, the might of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar far exceeded anything that a Peerless Rank Spiritual Artifact could compare to. Therefore, in such a head-on collision of might, the Devouring Dragon Demonic Spear was gradually forced into a disadvantage.

Raising his head to look towards the Devouring Dragon Demonic Spear, which was gradually being forced into a disadvantageous position, not a single fluctuation was present in Mo Xingtian's deadpan eyes. Turning around to look at Mu Chen, a faint smile appeared on his face as he said, "Now, without the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, what are you going to bring out to contend against me?"

He had sacrificed the Devouring Dragon Demonic Spear up just for the sake of entangling and holding the Great Meru Demonic Pillar back. Without this frighteningly ominous weapon, the dread Mo Xingtian had towards Mu Chen would clearly decrease by a great amount.

Perhaps the Devouring Dragon Demonic Spear would not be able to constrain the Great Meru Demonic Pillar for long. However, this period of time would be more than sufficient for him to get rid of Mu Chen.

Swish!

Just as his words rang out, Mo Xingtian had already transformed into a wisp of black smoke, shooting straight towards Mu Chen like a spectre.

Upon noticing this, Mu Chen's eyes instantly narrowed. With a shift of his body, a dragon shadow surfaced below his feet as he abruptly retreated back.

"I'm afraid that you're unable to escape from me using this level of the Dragon Soaring Technique," said Mo Xingtian with a cold smile. Taking a step forward, his figure instantly appeared to have turned somewhat illusory. In the next moment, with a shiver, he completely disappeared from Mu Chen's view.

Upon seeing this, Mu Chen's pupils instantly contracted.

Bang!

The glow of black lightning instantly erupted from Mu Chen's body. As lightning arced and danced around his body, two lightning runes surfaced on his chest. His Thunder God Physique was instantly activated.

Bang!

At the very instant when Mu Chen had activated his Thunder God Physique, a palm, appearing to have passed through the void, brought about torrential Spiritual Energy as it heavily slammed towards Mu Chen's back without the slightest bit of restraint.

Not turning his body around, Mu Chen similarly sent a palm slamming towards his back.

Bang!

The two palms smashed into one another, causing frightening shock waves to sweep out from the point of impact.

Mu Chen was sent flying forward, with a sliver of blood seeping out

from the corner of his mouth. In this head-on confrontation with Mo Xingtian, he was able to feel how powerful the latter was. The boundless Spiritual Energy the latter possessed was akin to a large ocean, one that seemed to have no boundaries. Furthermore, Mo Xingtian's Spiritual Energy was clearly more pure and power than any other ordinary Spiritual Energy.

This was due to him having attempted to pass through his Spiritual Energy Tribulation.

As Mu Chen flew forward, a chilling expression had appeared within his eyes. Without the slightest hesitation and ignoring the waves of pain coming from his arm, he furiously brought his hands together as boundless Spiritual Energy gushed out from his body.

In the next instant, a stretch of starry skies surfaced once again behind his back as four gigantic beastial shadows rapidly condensed within it.

Being just a Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase, even with the supplementation of the fiendish energies from the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, he would not be able to overturn the disadvantageous position in a head-on confrontation with Mo Xingtian. Therefore, he needed to rely on the power of his Divine Arts if he wanted to obtain victory.

"This move again?"

Looking towards the starry skies that had formed behind Mu Chen's back, Mo Xingtian gave a cold sneer as he said, "Although this move might have some use against Liu Ying, I'm afraid that it's useless against me."

Remaining as emotionless as before, Mu Chen ignored Mo Xingtian's taunting as he changed his hand seals.

Roar!

As roars started to resound, four gigantic beastial shadows abruptly shot out from within the starry skies, before rushing straight towards Mo Xingtian.

Seeing them heading towards him, Mo Xingtian shook his head apathetically as Spiritual Energy surged out from his body, blotting the

skies. Akin to a stretch of ocean, it appeared vast and powerful, bringing along a power that could crush hills and sunder mountains.

Mu Chen's gaze grew even more frosty as an extremely completely and foreign-looking seal was formed with his hands.

In the next instant, the four beastial shadows raised their heads and raored towards the skies, while rays of brilliance blossomed from within their bodies. As those rays of light came together, they appeared to have transformed into a giant 3000 metre large glowing seal. Within the seal, the azure dragon, white tiger, vermillion bird and the black tortoise all occupied its four corners, while Spiritual Energy gushed out with the might of an ocean, appearing as if it was trying to seal up the heavens and earth.

"Four Gods Constellation Technique, the Four Gods Heavenly Sealing Imprint!"

Humm!

Humming sounds erupted from the gigantic imprint as it transformed into a ray of light, covering the earth and hiding the skies as it pressed down from above. As it did so, the Spiritual Energy present in this region had all been forced away by its might.

As the divine imprint came pressing down from above, the faces of Xia Youran and the others started to quietly change. These changes were especially present on the face of Liu Ying, as shock appeared within his eyes, before he subsequently clenched and grounded his teeth. Exactly how many cards does this brat have in hiding!

Bang!

Under the envelope of the divine imprint, the torrential Spiritual Energy pouring out from Mo Xingtian's body was completely suppressed and scattered. The radiance blossoming out from him was weakened under the might of the divine imprint, as if it had been sealed and brought under restraint.

Raising his head to look towards the divine imprint pressing down

towards him, as well as his Spiritual Energy, which was rapidly being dissipated, fluctuations of a serious expression finally surfaced within those deadpan eyes of his. In the next moment, it seemed as if he had given a gentle sigh, and yet, his sigh was still brimming with killing intent.

"You're actually able to achieve such strength while only being at the Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase... That's why the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy would hold you in such high regard..."

"If you've ignored this event and continued to cultivate, I'm afraid that before a year's up, there'd be no one in the younger generation of the Northern Heavens Continent that would be able to contend against you..."

"However... you might not have such an opportunity anymore..."

All of a sudden, dark-red blood started flowing out from Mo Xingtian's fingertip as he gave a gentle tap on his forehead. As the fresh blood flowed down, it started to crawl, sliver by sliver, into his deadpan eyes. In the next moment, a mysterious and malevolent-looking blood rune started to condense from the blood flowing down his face.

Looking at the strange actions made by Mo Xingtian, Xia Youran and the others gawked before their faces turned deathly pale in the next moment.

"That's the...Dragon Murdering Demonic Rune?"

Chapter 418: Demonic Rune

The patterns created by the blood on Mo Xingtian's face formed a blood rune that caused people to feel their hair stand on their ends. Upon forming, the blood rune started wriggling and squirming about as if it possessed some form of life. If one looked at it closely, one would notice that the blood rune appeared to have pierced into Mo Xingtian's face, with the squirming actions unexpectedly due to it feasting on Mo Xingtian's fresh blood.

At this moment, his face started to grow slightly slimmer and paler than before.

Such a feeling was indescribably mysterious.

As Xia Youran and the rest noticed this spectacle, all of their faces turned deathly pale, while their eyes were overwhelmed with shock. Never, in their wildest dreams, did they imagine that Mo Xingtian would actually be so ruthless as to pull that card out in this fight. From the looks of it, he truly intended to deal with Mu Chen here, once and for all.

Devouring Dragon Demonic Rune.

This was one of the extremely frightening secret techniques of the Demonic Dragon Palace. It's said that by rearing the blood of a true dragon within one's body, when activated, the demonic rune would devour the host's blood and strengthen itself, allowing the host to erupt with extremely frightening strength.

This secret technique possessed extremely powerful might. However, the requirements it possessed were also abnormally harsh. Of the entire younger generation within the Demonic Dragon Palace, Mo Xingtian was the only person that was able to successfully achieve this. Even Mo Longzi was far from being able to achieve success in this. However, over the past few years, this was the very first time that Xia Youran and the rest have seen Mo Xingtian activate the "Devouring Dragon Demonic Rune", since, in the past, the latter didn't even activate it when crossing hands with them.

Clearly, the need to kill Mu Chen was deeply entrenched in Mo Xingtian's heart.

Under the countless terrified and shocked gazes focused on him, Mo Xingtian trained his deadpan-eyes to look indifferently at the divine imprint enveloping over. With a flick of his finger, the blood-red demonic rune on his face started to slowly peel away, before rapidly expanding to a height of 300 metres. As the bloody glow squirmed and wriggled on its surface, it appeared akin to a coiled-up giant dragon, and a dragon roar brimming with anger erupted out from it.

"Die!"

Pointing towards the sky, a voice completely lacking in emotion rang out from his mouth.

Whoosh!

Shooting straight out, the blood-red demonic rune slammed straight against the divine imprint pressing down from above, causing blood-red light to blossom across the horizon. At this moment, the divine seal, which had smashed through Mo Xingtian's Spiritual Energy like twigs a moment ago was now being completely blocked by the blood-red demonic rune, completely unable to move even an inch forward.

Upon noticing this, Mu Chen's eyes slightly narrowed as he felt a chill sweeping across his entire body. At this moment, he could feel an extremely life-threatening flavor from the blood-red demonic rune.

Chi! Chi!

Akin to a net of blood, the blood-red demonic rune started to expand, corroding the divine imprint under its bloody glow. Under that corrosion, the divine imprint rapidly trembled as its vast and boundless might started to slowly decrease. Clearly, the Four Divine Seals weren't a match for the blood-red demonic rune.

Although Mu Chen possessed his cards, Mo Xiantian similarly possessed cards that were sufficient to turn the situation to his favor.

"Break!"

Mo Xingtian spoke out with an indifferent smile as he gave an abrupt clench of his hand, a chilling glint flashed within his deadpan-eyes.

Bang!

The blood-red demonic rune blossomed with blood-red rays of brilliance, appearing akin to a sea of blood. Under the corrosion of this sea of blood, the divine imprint was completely submerged in an instant.

Puff.

As the divine imprint was broken, Mu Chen spurted out a mouthful of blood as a hint of paleness flashed across his face. Clenching his teeth, he thought, This Mo Xingtian truly is formidable. He never imagined that the Four Gods Constellation Technique, which he had mastered to the level of great accomplishment, wouldn't be able to allow for him to obtain victory. Naturally, however, Mu Chen also knew that it wasn't that the Four Gods Constellation Technique was weaker than the latter's demonic rune, but that his own strength being at a disparite distance from Mo Xingtian's.

Even after supplementing himself with the fiendish energies of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, which had allowed him to close much of the distance, his original strength was still at the Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase.

"This is the end."

Staring apathetically towards Mu Chen, whose cards had been broken, Mo Xingtian gave a wave of his sleeve, sending the blood-red demonic rune howling out. Covering the earth and hiding the skies, it enveloped over Mu Chen as a bloody glow radiated from it, seemingly sealing away all of Mu Chen's retreat paths.

At this moment, everyone present could see that Mo Xingtian had already decided to wrap up and conclude this fight.

Will this fight come to an end here?

Countless people waited quietly in bated breaths.

...

At the outskirt of the Divine Spiritual Mountain, the Elders from the various places had their gazes towards the gigantic light screen present, with quite a few people quietly taking a sigh. That Mu Chen from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy truly was formidable to be able to force Mo Xingtian to such a step with his strength at only the Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase. If he was given a number of years more to cultivate, there might not be anyone within the younger generation that would be able to match up to him.

However, its a pity that geniuses always died young.

From the looks of its, Mo Xingtian had clearly decided to unleash his killing move. It looked like he had also discovered the astonishing potential the youth before him possessed; therefore, he decided to not leave a future disaster to haunt him in the future.

A few gazes turned towards the direction of Dean Tai Cang and the group from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. However, on the contrary, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's Dean still had a calm and collected expression, eyes continuing to focus on the Spiritual Energy light screen. The image displayed within it showed that the blood-red demonic rune had already covered all of the retreat paths Mu Chen could take, while a sea of blood billowed out from it as a murderous aura flared and gushed out.

At this moment, Mu Chen was clearly in an extremely life-threatening situation.

Behind Dean Tai Cang, Luo Li tightly grasped her longsword, with her slender fingers already turning white due to the force she had exerted. Clearly, the situation present before her eyes caused worry and unease to rise within her.

Standing beside her, Ling Xi grasped Luo Li's slender hands before speaking out in a soft voice, "Relax. Nothing will happen to him. If there's truly an unforeseen change, the Dean and I will definitely take action."

Hearing that, Luo Li nodded her small head, before focusing her beautiful eyes towards the light screen. Being somewhat clear about the

cards that Mu Chen possessed, she was completely unable to think about exactly how Mu Chen would break away from this life-threatening situation.

...

The atmosphere within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was a stifling and oppressed one, with all of the students tightly locking their gazes towards the Spiritual Energy light screen. Even Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong and the others had hands filled with cold sweat. Clearly, they were able to sense the unfavourable situation Mu Chen was in right now. However, there was absolutely nothing that they could do right now. At this moment, the only thing they could do was to pray for Mu Chen to be able to endure the onslaught. Although, they knew that it was an extremely difficult matter to accomplish...

"Come on, Mu Chen! All of us are watching you right now..."

Shen Cangsheng and the rest spoke out with a soft sigh. The only thing they could do was to support and cheer for him. As for the fight, the only person Mu Chen could rely on would be himself.

...

Rumble!

Akin to a demon god, the blood-red demonic rune brought about a blood of sea that blotted the skies over. The earth-shattering spectacle appearing before them caused the scalps of countless experts below to turn numb. This Mo Xingtian's undoubtedly the person at the highest peak within the younger generation of the Northern Heavens Continent. This move by him might even be comparable to those peak experts that had passed their Spiritual Energy Tribulation.

From the looks of it, it's already extremely hard for that Mu Chen to turn the current situation around.

Xia Youran's beautiful eyes started to fluctuate with her surging emotions. Finally, with a clench of her teeth, she prepared to take action.

However, before she could even make her move, Liu Ying and the other

two before her had already blocked and obstructed her path, before speaking out with an indifferent tone. "Looks like that Mu Chen's dead, without a single doubt. Is there anymore need to cause trouble? In the off chance that you'll provoke Mo Xingtian, it'll not be something nice for you guys to endure then."

Furiously clenching her teeth, Xia Youran shot a vicious glare towards Liu Ying and the other two. However, in the end, she did not make her move, since she knew that she wouldn't be able to shove her way past the obstruction created by the three people in front of her.

Standing behind Xia Youran, both Xi Qinghai and Su Buxiu gave a sigh in the end. Faced against such a strong and powerful Mo Xingtian, they had truly lost quite a bit of their courage and daringness. From the looks of it, they might have to return empty-handed in this Divine Spiritual Mountain's opening.

Under the attention of countless pitiful and sympathizing gazes, a serious expression was present on Mu Chen's face as he looked towards the blood-red demonic rune enveloping over him. The aura of death blasting towards his face caused his heart to rapidly start pumping. In the end, he gave a bitter laugh, while a malevolent shadow started to slowly condense within those black pupils of his.

I, Mu Chen, have faced numerous life-or-death situations in the past few years! However, at the very end, I've endured and passed all of them. I'm afraid that it isn't easy as you, Mo Xingtian think to take away my life!

With a furious wave of his sleeve, a dozen jade bottles appeared in a flash. Appearing to be transparent, those jade bottles were filled to the brim with scarlet-red flames.

Flicking his fingers in succession, Mu Chen smashed all of the jade bottles up, causing the scarlet-red flames to instantly spew out as they shattered apart. As the volume of the flames expanded, they transformed into a sea of scarlet flames, spreading out across the skies with Mu Chen in its centre.

As the temperature skyrocketed, the surrounding space started to warp

and distort. Being in the core of the sea of flames, intense bouts of pain racked Mu chen's body. Being completely unable to control those flames, he was being injured just by releasing them in the air.

"That's..."

Mu Chen's actions caused some cries of doubt as everyone clearly didn't understand what he was planning to do.

Xia Youran had also slightly gawked upon seeing his actions. The flames in those jade bottles were a favor that Mu Chen had asked her to gather for him. However, at that time, she didn't know what he was planning to do with them. From the looks of it, is he planning to use them to contend against Mo Xingtian's demonic rune? That's absolutely impossible! Not to mention the fact that he cannot even control those flames! Even if that's a possibility, it's impossible to defend against Mo Xingtian's attacks with only those flames.

Ignoring those doubtful gazes coming his way, Mu Chen continued to stare at the scarlet-red flames that continued to expand out. Disregarding the intense burning pain racking his body, he took a deep breath, before sitting down in the air. Extending his palm out, a purple-coloured flame started to quietly rise from within.

That's the Undying Fire!

During that day, when Mu Chen had helped Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong dispel the poison within their bodies, he had managed to obtain a bunch of Undying Fire from Nine Nether!

This Undying Fire was the divine flame that the Nine Nether could produce within her body after her evolution. Compared to the Nine Nether Fire he had fused with before, the might of the Undying Fire was numerous times more powerful. Therefore, it was the final card that Mu Chen had up his sleeves!

Creating a seal with a single hand, a low and deep roar rang out as a suction force erupted from his palm.

Hu! Hu!

As the suction force erupted out, the scarlet-red flames in the surroundings howled as they condensed together, finally transforming into a pillar of flames that rushed straight towards Mu Chen's palm. The flame seedling present there gently flickered, cleanly devouring all of the flames that came into contact with it.

In a short span of a few breaths, the scarlet-red sea of flames that had pervaded the surroundings had completely disappeared. As for the clump of Undying Fire within Mu Chen's palm, it had grown larger by a few sizes, with its dim purplish colour appearing extremely mysterious.

As the flame seedling within Mu Chen's palm surged and increased in size, rays of light radiating from it illuminated Mu Chen's face, causing him to appear exceedingly abstruse.

Raising his head, Mu Chen sent a faint smile towards the distant Mo Xingtian. Merely, the smile was frosty, with not a single trace of emotion present on it. After doing a move that caused everyone to exclaim in shock, Mu Chen raised his palm and swallowed that extremely frightening purple-coloured flame straight into his mouth.

"Since you want my life, let me accompany you. Let's see exact who's the one that will be buried at this place."

Chapter 419: Victory and Defeat

"What is he doing...?"

Staring dumbfoundedly at Mu Chen, the faces of Xia Youran and the rest instantly turned exceeding spectacle when he swallowed the clump of purplish flames within his body. Although they didn't know exactly what that seemingly weak and small clump of purplish flames was, the scarlet-red flames that had blotted the skies a moment ago had been completely absorbed by those purplish flames. Clearly, that thing was absolutely something extraordinary.

However, at this very moment, Mu Chen had swallowed it just like that...

Such an action that neared the boundaries of seeking death caused everyone to stare at him in a daze, with some people even unable to resist thinking that Mu Chen had known that he was about to die, and, therefore, had consumed the fire to commit suicide...

Standing in the distance, a wrinkle appeared on Mo Xingtian's forehead as he observed this spectacle unfolding before him. Naturally, he would never believe in such a comical reasoning, since Mu Chen was a person with a tenacious character. Even in a situation where death was inevitable, he would fight with all his might, no matter what injuries or how much blood he had bled. A comical act like suicide was clearly not something that would appear in his repertoire of acts.

A vigilant shadow flashed within Mo Xingtian's eyes as he thought, There's definitely something fishy about this. There's definitely something fishy about Mu Chen's action.

"I'll just kill him to avoid anymore things from sprouting up!"

With a change of his hand seal, the bloody glow from the blood-red demonic seal grew even more radiant as the sea of blood grew in size, turning into a complete shroud as it swept towards Mu Chen at lightning speed. As long as Mu Chen was trapped within it, he would be turned into bloody water, absolutely devoid of vitality.

As the sea of blood pervaded out, Mu Chen, who had devoured the clump of Undying Fire slowly raised his head. At this moment, a purplish shadow started to slowly erupt within his originally scarlet-red eyes. Even his skin started to radiate with a purple luster, while faint but rapid shivering shook through his entire body.

It was a spectacular mess in Mu Chen's body at this very moment. Upon entering Mu Chen's body, the clump of Undying Fire was wrapped up by his Spiritual Energy. Generally speaking, when ordinary people devoured this clump of Undying Fire, they might be turned into ashes in an instant. However, Mu Chen wasn't like any normal person out there.

The Spiritual Energy within his body had already fused with the Nine Nether Fire. As for the Undying Fire, it was the evolved form of the Nine Nether Fire, with the two sharing some origins of strength. Therefore, it was due to this that the Undying Fire wasn't able to create destruction upon entering Mu Chen's body.

As the Spiritual Energy within Mu Chen wrapped around the clump of purplish flames, rampaging fluctuations surfaced from within like a surging lake. Slivers of purplish flame seedlings started to break off and drift about, before finally merging together with the Spiritual Energy.

At the instant when the two merged, Mu Chen's Spiritual Energy looked as though it had swallowed a bulking agent, crazily expanding about. In the end, it turned into roaring flames as it circulated at a high speed within Mu Chen's body.

An indescribable strength like an exploding volcano erupted from within his body. This power seemingly appeared in an instant, causing Mu Chen to lose control over his Spiritual Energy. At this moment, the Spiritual Energy within his body was akin to a rampaging wild horse, completely out of control. Rampaging as it circulated around, Mu Chen was unable to bring it under his complete control.

It was too rampant.

Feelings of intense pain radiated from the meridians within Mu Chen's body. Fortunately, having reached a small level of mastery over his

Lightning God's Physique made his body much stronger and more resilient than before. If not, it would be completely impossible for him to endure the impacts brought about by the circulation of those energies.

Hu.

As Mu Chen's heavy breathing rang out, he stared at the demonic rune enveloping over him with his purple-shaded eyes. Not the slightest shred of fear or dread was present in them, without the a slight bit of craziness frolicking within. At this moment, the energies within his body had to be let out, if not, his body would be completely unable to endure bottling them up within him.

Therefore, faced against the terrifying attack sent by Mo Xingtian, Mu Chen didn't evade or retreat back. On the contrary, he took a furious step forward, before sending a fist rumbling out. This was just a straight punch out, without anything fanciful, rumbling violently towards the gigantic blood-red demonic rune descending towards him.

As the fist rumbled out, Spiritual Energy swept out akin to a hurricane, blotting the skies as it gushed out.

Within the Spiritual Energy gushing out, one would be able to clearly see tiny clumps of purplish flames gently flickering as they fluttered about.

Bang!

Under Mu Chen's fist, the surrounding space started to warp and distort. In that distant, Xia Youran, Liu Ying and the rest a breathed in a mouthful of cold air. How can his fist contain such frightening power...?

Boom!

Spiritual Energy fluttering with purplish flames that appeared akin to a purple sea of fire smashed straight against the sea of blood. However, this time, the sea of blood that appeared to be invincible before had unexpectedly erupted with dense fogs of blood, rapidly melting away at a speed that was visible to the naked-eye.

As the purple flaming seedlings landed on the blood-red demonic rune, the fresh blood present on it instantly erupted with ear-piercing screeches,

as if it was crying out in extreme misery.

Seeing this, Mo Xingtian's expression instantly contorted violently.

"Burn for me!"

A pained low and deep animalist roar rang out as the robes on Mu Chen's body instantly turned into ashes. As if seeping out from every pore of his body, the purplish flame seedlings causing him to appear akin to a god of flames. With a tremble of his fist, it, once again, violently smashed against the demonic rune.

Chi! Chi!

The blood-like patterns on the demonic rune was starting to unexpectedly burn up by the purplish flames. At the end, the purplish flames started to seep through, causing the entire demonic rune to start burning up. With a final bang, the demonic rune that had astonished everyone was completely burnt up by the purplish flame.

Puff!

A mouthful of fresh blood spewed out from Mo Xingtian's mouth, appearing exactly the same as Mu Chen had before. However, this time, his face appeared even more deathly pale than before, with a sliver of shock erupting from within his deadpan-eyes. He was completely unable to imagine that his Devouring Dragon Demonic Rune would actually be cleanly burned up by Mu Chen's first.

"How's that possible?!"

Turmoil and shock surged within Mo Xingtian's heart akin to storm filled waves, while he was completely unable to maintain his indifferent-looking face anymore.

At the same time, the countless people who had seen this spectacle were all overwhelmed with shock and astonishment.

Who would have imagined that the situation would do a complete reversal in such a quick time?!

Gazes brimming with shock and astonishment swept towards the

purplish flames where a naked figure stood within. Revealing his slender body, the youth rushed out from within akin to a god of fire, with purplish intent growing increasingly dense within his eyes. Sending a fist rumbling out towards the demonic rune, he turned his eyes, brimming with slivers of craziness towards the distant Mo Xingtian once again.

The energies within his body had still not been completely released from within his body. If this delayed for too long, he would not be able to endure anymore.

"Come and test another fist of mine, Mo Xingtian!"

Mu Chen's furious howl resounded across the heavens as he took a step forward. Sending a fierce pat out, Spiritual Energy howled without the slightest bit of restraint from under his palm. Instantly, everyone could see a purple ray of light sweeping out from Mu Chen's palm. Seemingly piercing through the currents present in the world, it shot straight towards Mo Xingtian.

Upon seeing this palm, even Xia Youran and the rest could feel their scalps turning numb. They were completely unable to understand why Mu Chen's strength would all of a sudden increase to such a degree!

This incomparably rampaging Spiritual Energy was entirely different from the Spiritual Energy he radiated before!

Exactly where did this power come from?!

Countless doubts and questions surfaced within their minds as the ray of light burning with purplish flames shattered the horizon as it enveloped towards Mo Xingtian.

At this time, Mo Xingtian stared towards the frightening ray of light burning with purplish flames as malevolence started to slowly rise within his gaze. He did not believe that he would actually lose to a Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase brat. After the past few years, he had finally become the number one figure within the younger generation of the Northern Heavens Continent. For the sake of achieving this, due to the cruel and ruthless rules within the Demonic Dragon Palace, those compatriots that had trained with him in the past had died, one by one, by

his own hands. He had used them to refine and temper his strength. That's because, in a place like the Demonic Dragon Palace, one needed to be cruel and ruthless towards anyone, even towards those compatriots that were once close to oneself!

That's because, the Demonic Dragon Palace only preached the most cruelest rule there was for the sake of nurturing a true expert.

"You don't possess the qualifications to end me!"

Mo Xingtian roared with a fierce voice as his black hair scattered about, akin to a rampaging demon. In the next moment, giving a long roar, Spiritual Energy swept out without the slightest bit of restraint, blotting the skies and seemingly encompassing the entire horizon.

Roar!

As his Spiritual Energy swept out, it transformed into a gigantic demonic dragon. As it took to the skies, it shot across the horizon, under the countless shocked and astonished gazes, it smashed straight against the incoming purple fire-clad ray of light!

Boom!

At the instant of impact, the heavens and earth appeared to shake and tremble. As the two frightening energies smashed violently towards each other, both of them started to corrode away as they quickly consumed each other.

However, between the two energies, it was clear that the purple flame clad ray of light was the more overbearing one. As the purplish flames rose up, they continuously burnt all of the Spiritual Energy coming from Mo Xingtian.

The purple flame-clad ray of light inched closer and closer. However, it was similarly being consumed at a rapid pace.

Everyone present tightly stared at the two all-out attacks from Mu Chen and Mo Xingtian.

The purple flame-clad ray of light forced the demonic dragon-shaped

Spiritual Energy back to Mo Xingtian. However, just as it reached 3 metres away from Mo Xingtian, the energy within the purple flame-clad ray of light was finally used up. In the end, with the demonic dragon-shaped Spiritual Energy, both of them dissipated into the air.

"You lose!" Mo Xingtian shrilled out. Although he didn't know exactly how Mu Chen was able to erupt with such terrifying energy, he knew that was obviously reliant on some foreign source of power. Furthermore, Mu Chen had paid an extremely high price for that. At this moment, Mu Chen was as pale as paper. Clearly, he didn't possess any strength left to fight. As long as he could resist Mu Chen's strongest attack, this fight would have its result.

Raising his deathly pale face, Mu Chen shot a look towards Mo Xingtian. At this moment however, a ridiculing smile curled up on the corner of his mouth.

"The one that lost, is you."

Upon hearing that, Mo Xingtian's pupils furiously contracted as he saw a tiny black ray of light abruptly shooting from within the destroyed purple ray of light. In the next instant, with an indescribable speed, it pierced through the space.

In such a short distance, Mo Xingtian was simply unable to muster any kind of defense before the black ray of light shot straight towards his forehead.

A black hole appeared on the forehead of Mo Xingtian before his body instantly froze up.

The countless gazes that had shot over had also froze solid.

Regardless of the inside or the outside of the Divine Spiritual Mountain, or the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy...

The atmospheres in these three places all came to a halt.

Chapter 420: Kill

Not a single sound was present, with even the winds having frozen up for this instant.

On the Nine Heavenly Steps, everyone present had their eyes open wide as they dumbly stared at the spectacle that had just happened before them. An indescribable feeling filled their minds, causing them to be unable to display any exact expression on their faces.

This spectacle truly was too inconceivable.

Xia Youran's red lips was slightly agape as she stared at Mo Xingtian, who had a black hole appearing on his forehead, before uncontrollably covering her mouth up with her hand.

Next to her, Xi Qinghai, Su Buxiu and the rest had similar expressions, with the astonishment in their eyes indicative with the shock present within their minds.

As for Liu Ying, his gaze was dull and vacant, before a chilling intent penetrated through his heart. Looking up at the half-naked youth floating in the air, deep feelings of dread started to surface from the depths of his eyes. This youth, whose strength appeared to only be at the Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase, had truly caused feelings of terror to surface within him.

That's...Mo Xingtian.

He was the topmost elite figure in the younger generation of the Northern Heavens Continent. However, he had actually suffered defeat. Exactly how much shock would it cause in the Northern Heavens Continent when this scene gets circulated around?

Across the horizon, the purplish intent within Mu Chen's eyes rapidly dissipated as an extremely strong feeling of weakness started radiating across his entire body. However, clenching his teeth, he refused to let himself topple over as he sent his incomparably cold gaze towards the figure that had frozen up in the far distance.

The jet-black shadow rapid dissipated from his finger. The attack hidden within the purple flame-cladded ray of light was precisely his Black Lightning Poison Finger.

An attack that had come from the least expected time had finally ended that incomparably violent and dangerous fight.

Mu Chen's gaze stared indifferently towards Mo Xingtian's body. At this moment, his eyes were still wide open, with remnants of being overwhelmed with shock displayed on his face. On his forehead, black-coloured blood flowed out from the bloody hole present there, while the jet-black shadow rapidly extended out from there, spreading through his entire body.

The black lightning poison had already corroded Mo Xingtiang's body. Regardless of how strong Mo Xingtian was, an attack like that was more than sufficient to end his life.

Runic patterns suddenly surfaced on Mo Xingtian's body. With a bang, his body exploded in the air. As blood mists rose up into the sky, a ray of Spiritual Light quietly shot out from it.

A dragon shadow surfaced below Mu Chen feet and with a flash, he appeared in the distant sky. With a grab, Spiritual Energy surged out from him, transforming into a light screen before grabbing the escaping Spiritual glow into his hands.

Within the Spiritual glow was an illusionary-like infant. That was Mo Xingtian's divine soul. Furthermore, the face of the Divine Soul was finally overwhelmed with shock.

"Now, is there anyone else that can save you?" Not containing the slightest bit of mercy, Mu Chen stared towards the Divine Soul in his hands as he spoke out in a tone filled within indifference.

"You've already won, Mu Chen! What else do you want?!" A shrieking voice rang out from Mo Xingtian's Divine Soul, the voice filled within inconceivable dread and terror. At this very moment, it was clearly obvious that he was no longer able to remain as calm and collected as before. His Divine Soul had landed in the hands of Mu Chen, with the latter now

being truly able to end his very life.

"For all these past years, I don't know how many Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy students have died by your hands. What do you think I'm doing?" replied Mu Chen with a smile, merely that the smile contained not the slightest bit of warmth.

"If you kill me, our Demonic Dragon Palace will never let you go!" Mo Xingtian fiercely screamed out

"Oh, really?" Mu Chen laughed. The Spiritual Energy in his hands surged out, heading straight to shatter Mo Xingtian's Divine Soul. Mu Chen felt extreme dread and terror for the latter. This time, if not for him having prepared the card being the Undying Fire, he might have truly suffered defeat in Mo Xingtian's hand. If that happened, Mu Chen would absolutely bet his life that Mo Xingtian would never let him go.

As of now, after so much trouble, he had finally captured this fellow. Mu Chen wasn't willing to let the tiger back up the mountain to cause a disaster for him in the future.

"Brat, you dare!"

However, just as Mu Chen was about to smash Mo Xingtian's Divine Soul violently apart, a furious roar akin to the peal of thunder resounded out across the heavens. In the next moment, the surrounding space started to warp and distort as Spiritual Energy in the form of a giant hand extended out from within. Upon appearing, it instantly made an attempt to grab Mu Chen.

Mu Chen's face instantly contorted.

"Do you think that our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's that easy to bully, Black Dragon Sovereign?!" As the giant Spiritual Energy hand pierced through the space and was about to make a grab at Mu Chen, the space across it started to warp and distort as Dean Tai Cang's furious voice rang out. In the next moment, a giant Spiritual Energy hand extended out from within, smashing against the other hand. As they smashed towards each other, Spiritual Energy gales howled out while the two palms dissipated away.

"Do you think that we're truly afraid of you, you old dog from the Demonic Dragon Palace?! Today, his death is confirmed by me!" Fluttering backwards, Mu Chen's expression turned gloomy. In the next instant, with a furious grasp of his hand, Spiritual Energy erupted out from him, before violently smashing Mo Xingtian's Divine Soul without the slightest hesitation.

Ahh!

A fierce shriek miserably rang across the horizon as Mo Xingtian's Divine Soul exploded apart, transforming into glowing dots that blotted the skies. At the same time, that sharp miserable shriek that was filled with dread and terror reverberated across the skies.

A chilling sensation was felt by everyone one present in this area, rushing from their feet towards their heads as they looked towards the youth present in the air with shock and astonishment completely filling their gazes.

Not a single one of them had guessed that Mu Chen would actually be that decisive, to not have a single shred of hesitation before sending a palm to shatter Mo Xingtian's Divine Soul, completely killing him and removing him from the world.

As everyone looked towards the glowing dots that fluttered out from Mu Chen's palm, everyone's gaze turned blank and vacant. That Mo Xingtian was completely destroyed, just like that? The strongest figure in the younger generation of the Northern Heavens Continent...has disappeared, just like that?

Thick feelings of dread and terror surged within the eyes of Liu Ying, Dong Yuan and Zhou Xuan as their faces were all as white as snow. This Mu Chen's too vicious in his actions! That's Mo Xingtian, you know?! He'd actually been killed just like that...

Was this really a student nurtured by an ivory tower like the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy? Such decisiveness and ruthlessness! He's simply even more outstanding that those people who had lived their lives on the edge of the blades.

On the side, Xi Qinghai and Su Buxiu took in a breath of cold air, but were unable to speak a single word out. Clearly, they were shocked to the core.

Xia Youran's gaze was also blank as she stared at the youth, who was currently revealing the sliver of a cold, fierce and ruthless expression. At this moment, he appeared completely different from the handsome and gentle image that he had presented himself to her before. The imposing aura and attitude he showed caused a faint flush to appeared on her lovable face as a splendor of emotions flashed within her beautiful eyes.

The Mu Chen at this moment had overpowered and killed Mo Xingtian. The bearing he possessed was undoubtedly extremely eye-catching and dazzling.

The entire stretch of the world had turned silent and devoid of any sound.

After shattering Mo Xingtian's Divine Soul , Mu Chen gave a wave of his palm, summoning back the Great Meru Demonic Pillar into his body. At the same time, it had brought a dimly lit black demonic spear. That was precisely Mo Xingtian's Peerless Rank Spiritual Artifact, the Devouring Dragon Demonic Spear.

Mu Chen grasp the black demonic spear that was received in his hand. After the death of Mo Xingtian, not a single bit of activity was shown from the black demonic spear. Added with the earlier suppression by the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, it unexpectedly didn't dare to muster a single bit of resistance in Mu Chen's hands.

Flipping his hand, he stored the Devouring Dragon Demonic Spear away. An Peerless Grade Spirit Weapon's an absolutely extraordinary thing. Such a thing wasn't even sold in the Spiritual Values Hall of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Now, having landed in his hand, Mu Chen would naturally not hand it over. After all, although the Great Meru Demonic Pillar was formidable, Mu Chen didn't dare to use its true power. He was still not able to control it, as of now. However, compared to that, this Devouring Dragon Demonic Spear was different from it. Mu Chen's

strength would increase by quite a bit if he were to use it.

After retrieving this spoils of war, Mu Chen turned his indifferent gaze towards Liu Ying, Dong Yuan and Zhou Xuan.

Upon seeing Mu Chen's gaze, the hearts of Liu Ying and the other two instantly turned cold, before actually retreating a step back. Although they were all clear that Mu Chen was just putting up a strong front, none of them actually dared to muster any bit of intent to retaliate. Even Liu Ying had eyes filled with dread and terror, not daring to take advantage of Mu Chen's current weakness.

"The three of you. Please wait for the next the Divine Spiritual Baptism," said Mu Chen in an indifferent tone.

The faces of Liu Ying and the other two slightly changed as they shot a look towards Xia Youran, Xi Qingxi and Su Buxiu, who were glaring towards them like tigers. In the end, they clenched their teeth in unwillingness. At this moment, carrying the awe and prestige from killing Mo Xingtian, Mu Chen was truthfully too intimidating to be confronted.

Mu Chen turned his gaze once again towards Xi Qinghai and Su Buxiu. At this time, the two of them appeared slightly nervous, as after all, they did not offer any help. If Mu Chen wasn't willing to allow them to enjoy the Strength of Baptism, they would consider to wait awhile, since they didn't dare to take action and could only feel themselves as unlucky.

"Elder Sister Xia, Brother Xi and Brother Su. The Strength of Baptism's about to descend. Let's go prepare for a bit." While they were feeling slightly nervous, Mu Chen gave a faint smile, while the fierceness within his eyes started to dissipate away. Once again, the face of the youth turned handsome and gentle.

Hearing that, a sweet smile appeared on the face of Xia Youran; after all, she could be considered as to understand Mu Chen's character, and knew that the latter would not be the kind to break his promises. Therefore, his words weren't of any surprise to her. As for Xi Qinghai and Su Buxiu, they took a breath of relief, while feeling slightly happy, before sending grateful gazes towards Mu Chen.

Shooting forward, Mu Chen dropped from the sky, descending to the highest place within the highest step in the Nine Heavenly Steps. Following suit, Xia Youran and the other two shot over, descending on the platform positioned slightly below his. That area was higher than their previous position, which would allow for the Strength of Baptism to increase by quite a bit. The highest position was obviously left for Mu Chen, with all of them not having any complaint about it.

Taking a seat, Mu Chen raised his head and looked towards the gigantic clump of light floating high up in the sky. Over there, the rays of brilliance were growing increasingly radiant, before a clear ring seemed to slowly resound across the horizon.

Boom!

As the rays of brilliance reached its prime, countless people raised their heads to turn their scorching gazes towards it, only to see golden raindrops covering the earth and hiding the skies as they descended. At this moment, the entire area grew fresh and uplifting, as if the area was being cleansed.

The Divine Spiritual Baptism's finally descending!

Chapter 421: Commotion

Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy

A stretch of silence filled the entire academy. Not only the students, but even some of the higher-ups in the academy had their mouths agape, while having a dumbfounded expression on their faces.

Their eyes had all clearly rested on the gigantic glowing Spiritual Energy screen. When it displayed Mu Chen smashing Mo Xingtian's Divine Soul with a palm...

The slender, half-naked youth standing tall in the sky. That handsome face appeared abnormally cold, akin to the edge of a knife. Within his palm was the shattered Divine Soul, which had turned into glowing dots that blotted the skies. Appearing pretty and beautiful, it gave people a chilling feeling up their spines.

Mu Chen had actually killed Mo Xingtian!

Shooting a look at each other, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong could see the shock and astonishment present in each other's eyes. That's Mo Xingtian! The man that's listed at the top of their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's bounty list! The strongest fellow in the younger generation of the Northern Heavens Continent...for this fellow, it was unknown how many experts the Punishment Hall sent out, but were unable to capture or kill at the very end.

However, at this moment, the super vicious character that had caused a headache to many of the higher-ups in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had actually met his complete demise in the hands of Mu Chen...

"That fellow's...too ferocious."

Finally, unable to hold it in, Shen Cangshen spoke out with a bitter smile. Although emotions of joy and elation were present in his eyes. For the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, Mo Xingtian was simply like a poisonous lesion, and was someone that couldn't be removed by any Elder.

It was a considerably difficult task for the academy to capture him. However, from the looks of it, he had met his end in Mu Chen's hands, which had removed a big trouble for their academy.

Beside him, Li Xuantong gently nodded as he muttered, "That brat. He's really getting stronger and stronger every time he makes his move. From the looks of it, after this matter, we definitely need to enter the 'Gate of the Northern Heavens'. If not, I don't know which corner we'll be thrown at during the Great Spiritual Academy Competition half a year from now."

Shen Cangsheng heavily nodded his head. He truly didn't want to get beaten down like that.

As the two continued their chat, the peace within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was finally broken with furious, earth-shattering cries and cheering. Ringing out across the whole area akin to thunder, they shook the entire academy up.

All of the students had faces full of emotion, especially those old veterans that were able to enter the Northern Heavens Continent to train and temper themselves, with each one of them breathing out a heavy sigh of relief. In the past, when they were undergoing their real world training, they always had the fear and worry about meeting the two vicious people, Mo Xingtian and Mo Longzi. That's because, once that happened, they might not be able to flee, even if they wanted to.

Now, the first one, Mo Longzi, had been heavily injured by Mu Chen, while the second, Mo Xingtian, had been killed by him. Their greatest troubles had been completely wiped out. When they head outside for real world training in the future, they would not be trembling in fear.

"All hail Brother Mu!"

A few members of the Luo Goddess Association cheered out while their faces were brimming with pride. All of them were considered as Freshmen. However, today, Mu Chen had allowed all of the members from the Luo Goddess Association to raise their heads up high in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Now, even some of the older students didn't dare to recklessly put up airs in front of them. All of this was due to the

awe and prestige that Mu Chen had piled up by winning hard fights, one after another!

Su Ling'er's beautiful eyes sparkled as she focused her gaze towards the figure within the glowing Spiritual Energy screen. The half-naked youth with killing intent condensed within his eyes. This coldness, which was compared to his gentleness, made him appear as if he was two entirely different people. However, this complete contrast in attitude and mannerisms presented an extremely strong stimulation to her. Thinking about that, one couldn't count how many adorable lasses and young girls had their lovable faces flushed as they secretly sized up the youth in the display.

"You've ignited your crush, little lass. Look at you, you're almost going dumb." Seeing the eyes of her younger sister, Su Xuan could not help teasing her while extending her jade-like hand to pinch the lovable face of the adorable lass.

Su Ling'er's lovable face turned red, before she said ,"He'll be alright, right, Elder Sister?"

"Relax. With the Dean there, there'll be nothing that can happen to him," replied Su Xuan with a faint smile.

Only after hearing that did Su Ling'er relax, before sneaking another peek at the youth within the glowing screen. After that, appearing to have thought about something, her little red lips started to pucker up, before her emotions started to sink down. With such an outstanding Luo Li by his side, how would she stand any chance...

...

A stretch of jubilation filled the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, while murderous auras filled the Divine Spiritual Mountain.

At the instant when Mo Xingtian was killed by Mu Chen, the atmosphere outside of the Divine Spiritual Mountain had similarly froze up. The faces of the Elders from the various places slightly changed, feeling shocked in their hearts, due to the decisiveness and viciousness of Mu Chen's action.

"You little bastard! You actually dare to kill the people of my Demonic Dragon Palace! I'll definitely rip you to shreds!"

That frozen atmosphere didn't last long, before a roar filled with rage and anger was heard. In the next instant, thick, liquid-like killing intent shot through to the heavens, blotting the skies. At this moment, the entire world turned dim as rising gales and scudding clouds filled the skies.

The hearts of the Elders from various places skipped a beat as they turned their gazes over, only to see the ashen-green expression on Black Dragon Sovereign, killing intent rippling and surging out from him, akin to a demon god.

"Are you saying that the number of students from our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy killed in the hands of your Demonic Dragon Palace's too little? If you dare touch Mu Chen, Black Dragon, our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy will dare to wage war with your Demonic Dragon Palace once again!" Just as the Black Dragon Sovereign's roar rang out, a low and deep voice sounded out, with unconcealable, thick killing intent, as well as fury brimming within his voice.

The eyelids of the Elders from various places twitched before turning their heads around, only to see Dean Tai Cang, with a dark expression on his face. At this moment, the Spiritual Energy of the world had turned rampant in accompaniment with his emotional fluctuations.

"Haha! Tai Cang! You truly are arrogant. That year, if not for the White Dragon Sovereign rebelling and running away, and stealing the treasure of our palace and preventing us from completing our summoning ritual. Does your Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy wish to defeat our Demonic Dragon Palace?" replied the Black Dragon Sovereign with a furious laugh.

"If you don't accept it, our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy will accompany you once again!"

Dean Tai Cang's thunderous voice exploded to the point of causing the faces of countless people to contort. The two topmost influences in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy were finally going to duke it out

again?

This caused the entire Northern Heavens Continent to feel shocked by this revelation.

...

The golden rain drops covered the earth and hid the skies as they fell from the gigantic clump of light floating high up in the sky. Due to the rain, the entire area became clear and refreshing, with the tense atmosphere from the previous large battles having completely calmed down. Indescribably carefree and relaxed feelings rose and surged within the minds and hearts of everyone present.

At this moment, regardless of the Nine Heavenly Steps or the countless other experts present in the vast land below, everyone rapidly took a seat. Although they weren't able to enjoy the Strength of Baptism as perfect as Mu Chen, they were still able to enjoy some it that leaked out. If they were able to absorb that, it would have an extremely huge benefit to their cultivations.

Sitting at the highest point of the Nine Heavenly Steps, Mu Chen raised his head to look at the golden rain descending from the skies. With a thought, a powerful suction force erupted from his body, instantly absorbing a large stretch of the golden rain.

Puff!

As the golden raindrops came into contact with Mu Chen, it quietly seeped into his body. At that instant, a furious shiver seemed to shake through his body, while abnormally clear and refreshing fluctuations rippled and propagated out. Those fluctuations were exceedingly mysterious, appearing akin to the influx of holy water. Unexpectedly, the wounds that were caused from the great fight with Mo Xingtian started to heal at an astonishing rate.

His dried-up Spiritual Energy started to surge and replenish itself at a rapid pace.

"Such a strange energy."

Mu Chen sighed in admiration. As the golden drops entered his body, he was able to feel that his blood, flesh and bones had turned into hungry ghosts, crazily devouring the golden raindrops. This wasn't something voluntarily done by him, but a result of his innate body function. That's because he was able to feel that the mysterious golden rain was having an extremely good benefit to him.

Entering into a drunk state amidst that wonderful and miraculous feeling, all the pores on Mu Chen's body appeared to have opened wide, making it hard for him to extricate himself from it.

However, still being lucid, Mu Chen continued to circulate his Spiritual Energy, with suction force erupting out from him, continuously sucking in the in the descending golden raindrops. Standing at the topmost position, there was absolutely no one that could compete against him for the Strength of Baptism. However, being so abundant and vigorous at this position, he was unable to covet all of it for himself. Therefore, 70% of the remaining Strength of Baptism continued to flow downwards.

Mu Chen didn't feel any regret towards it. Of all the Strength of Baptism present, he was able to claim 30% of it, with the other experts on the Nine Heavenly Steps being able to claim 30 to 40%. The remaining 20 to 30% was left for the experts present at the bottom to absorb. However, due to the number of people being too high of a number, after the distribution of the Strength of Baptism, each individual present there could only absorb a sliver of it. Therefore, being able to claim 30% of it by himself was more than enough to cause people's eyes to turn red.

As the strength of baptism continued to descend from the sky, a faint golden glow started to appear on the surface of Mu Chen's body. From afar, he appeared to possess a golden body.

Gradually calming himself down, Mu Chen finally sunk his consciousness down to a training state.

Slivers of Strength of Baptism penetrated Mu Chen's blood, flesh, bones and meridians, before finally condensing and dripping into Mu Chen's aurasea.

From there, Mu Chen's Divine Soul quietly sat within. Golden glowing rain drops condensed within the little hands of the Divine Soul. Faintly, a crystal-like structure appeared, looking abnormally mysterious and abstruse.

...

As Mu Chen sunk his consciousness within the Divine Spiritual Baptism, huge waves blotting the skies started to rise on the outside of the Divine Spiritual Mountain. A war that would shake the Northern Heavens Continent was about to erupt.

Chapter 422: Shock

Murderous auras gushed out and blotted the skies outside of the Divine Spiritual Mountain, while the hearts and minds of the Elders of various places were filled with shock.

"Haha. Do you really think that our Demonic Dragon Palace's scared of you, Tai Cang?!"

Upon hearing those words from Dean Tai Cang, the Black Dragon Sovereign started to heartily chuckle, while chilling intent surfaced within his eyes. Taking a step forward, he spoke up with a smile. "Do you really think that our Demonic Dragon Palace does not have one single bit guts after all these years? Even if your Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy doesn't have the guts to start a war, our Demonic Dragon Palace will eliminate you!"

The hearts of countless experts were filled with shock. Even the Elders of the various peak influences in the Northern Heavens Continent had their faces slightly change. The Demonic Dragon Palace had always avoided any straight-up confrontation against the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. However, why did they suddenly respond in such a forceful manner today? Could it be that they're really planning to wage a war? Once a fight of that level breaks out, there would even be the danger of Sovereigns falling.

Without a doubt, Sovereigns falling would be a life-threatening blow for both sides.

"Can it be that your Demonic Dragon Palace's about to wage a war again? This time, our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy will make sure to do a clean job." With a frosty expression on his face, Dean Tai Cang matched each hard word with one of his own. The Demonic Dragon Palace and the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy were sworn enemies to the death. That year, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had knocked the Demonic Dragon Palace from their position as the Overlord of the Northern Heavens Continent, causing the latter's prestige to drop,

and never to recover again. Similarly, while in concealment, only god knows how many Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy students were out for real world training and tempering. Therefore, Dean Tai Cang had more than ample killing intent towards the Demonic Dragon Palace. If they were to truly wage a war, he would be more than willing to pay some price to completely wipe the poisonous scum from the face of the Northern Heavens Continent!

"Haha!"

The Black Dragon Sovereign chuckled heartily, with his smile appearing somewhat mysterious. With a furious wave of his sleeve ,a fierce voice howled out, reverberating across the heavens.

"Today, this Divine Spiritual Mountain will be your graveyard, Tai Cang!"

Bang!

Just as the Black Dragon Sovereign's roar resounded across the horizon, the space in the surrounding skies started to suddenly warp and distort. Five rays of light rushed towards the sky, encompassing the entire world with their glow. The vastness of the Spiritual Energies present appeared to be so substantial that everyone within a thousand kilometres were able to clearly see and notice it.

The faces of countless experts violently contorted as they turned their gazes towards the cores of the five rays of light. Five figures unexpectedly surfaced from within, with the might of Sovereigns gushing out in torrents.

"That's the Five Great Sovereigns of the Demonic Dragon Palace!"

Shock filled the hearts of a few of the Elders. Indeed, the Demonic Dragon Palace had come here with preparation. All the Sovereigns of their inner palace had arrived in full force. Did they plan to massacre Dean Tai Cang here?

Swish! Whoosh!

Countless experts within this area retreated back in haste, deeply afraid of being swept up by the frightening shock waves created by this

formation.

It was clear that the sole target of the Demonic Dragon Palace was Dean Tai Cang. Therefore, they simply didn't care about other people retreating back.

Standing behind Dean Tai Cang, the lovable faces of Ling Xi and Luo Li slightly changed. In the next moment, grabbing onto Luo Li's slender wrist, with a move of her lovable figure, Ling Xi retreated back. A conflict between people of that degree would pose extreme danger for Luo Li. Therefore, it's imperative that she brought Luo Li away from Dean Tai Cang.

Looking at the imposing scene before him, Dean Tai Cang's face sank like the rain. A chilling glint flashed within his eyes as he said, "So, your Demonic Dragon Palace has long prepared for this, huh? However, do you really think that I've descended to such a level?"

"Haha! Let me see you try!"

A shiver shook through the Black Dragon Sovereign's body as rays of light thousands of kilometres long rushed towards the heavens. Vast and boundless Spiritual Energies, stirred the Spiritual Energy present in the heavens as six rays of light thousands of kilometres long appeared to form some kind of formation, surrounding Dean Tai Cang within in. Clearly, the Black Dragon Sovereign had gathered all the strength of the six great sovereigns of the Demonic Dragon Palace for the sake of killing Dean Tai Cang.

A chilling gaze shot out from Dean Tai Cang's eyes. Being a Fifth Grade Sovereign, he was of the same cultivation realm as the Black Dragon Sovereign. As for the other five Sovereigns of the Demonic Dragon Palace, they were all First Grade Sovereigns. Indeed, this formation was extremely life-threatening to Dean Tai Cang. However, isn't the Black Dragon Sovereign somewhat too naive to believe that their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy would not have any experts present at this place?

Ling Xi brought Luo Li to a safe place in the far distance. Casting her beautiful eyes towards the region where the vast and powerful Spiritual

Energy was surging out in torrent, her eyebrows wrinkled up and said, "Luo Li, wait here awhile. I'll go and help Dean Tai Cang."

Although Ling Xi wasn't considered as a subordinate of Dean Tai Cang, holding the title of Elder, she truly did receive care and concern from him for the past few years. Furthermore, the most important point was that she had met Mu Chen here. Therefore, if the latter has any problems, she would definitely not take a back seat and be an observer.

"Okay. Please be careful, Elder Sister Ling Xi." Luo Li nodded her head. Although the scene before her had overwhelmed her with shock, it was something which had happened to some of the Elders of the Northern Heavens Continent. Despite that, there was no presence of nervousness and loss of colour on her face. After all, she was the Princess of the Luo God Clan and their future ruler, which was one of the four great God Clans in the Eastern Heavens World. Such a background exceeded that of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy and the Demonic Dragon Palace. Although they had gradually declined over the years, the Sovereign-level experts within her clan had strength that the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy and the Demonic Dragon Palace absolutely couldn't match.

Seeing Luo Li's response, Ling Xi nodded her head, before shooting back to the region with rampaging Spiritual Energies.

However, just as she took a step forward, her lovable face suddenly turned cold. Chilling intent surfaced within her beautiful eyes as she looked towards the empty space, before speaking out with a frosty voice, "Which scoundrel is it that only knows how to hide his head in the ground?"

As her voice rang out, she extended her slender jade-like hands. Pointing towards the space before her, she gave a furious clench.

Boundless Spiritual Energy shot out, appearing akin to a ray of light, covering the earth and hiding the skies as it gushed out. Transforming into a Spiritual Energy whirlpool a 3000 metres wide, it violently shot towards the empty space in front of her.

"Haha. You really are violent lady." The empty space suddenly turned jet-

black as a figure surfaced from within. With a wave of his sleeve, uncountable shadows surfaced behind his body, completely defending himself against the Spiritual Energy rays of light shooting towards him.

That was a black middle-aged male, appearing well-built, a gloomy shadow in his eyes with black hair fluttering in the air. The aura he gave off was extraordinary, which clearly meant that his was no simple person.

"Who are you?" Looking at the middle-aged male, a frown appeared on Ling Xi's face as she spoke out.

"Liu An," replied the middle-aged male with a faint smile.

"The president of the Umbra Chamber of Commerce, Liu An?" Ling Xi's face slightly sunk as she replied "Looks like your Umbra Chamber of Commerce and the Demonic Dragon Palace have hooked up together. Such big guts to actually attack our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Are you not afraid to stir up a huge disaster for yourself?"

"Haha. Such strong words from you, Miss Ling Xi. Our Umbra Chamber of Commerce isn't planning to go against your Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. It's just that the Demonic Dragon Palace had made an offer that had moved my heart. Therefore, the only thing I need to do is to hold you here, that's all." Liu An replied with a faint smile. "Please know that if you don't make any moves, I'll promise that I'll absolutely not make any move on you, Miss Ling Xi."

"Oh? Are you going to obstruct me?" asked Ling Xi in mocking fashion.

"Haha. I know that Miss Ling Xi is a Spiritual Array Grandmaster. However, please consider that I'm a Third Grade Sovereign. It shouldn't be difficult for me to hold you down, you know?" replied Liu An with a smile.

Hearing that, Ling Xi replied with a sneer, "Are you certain that you haven't smashed your head? If our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's Lord Northern Dragon knew about this matter, he'd immediately head down here, you know? Are you certain that you guys won't be scared shitless when he arrives?"

Upon hearing the words 'Lord Northern Dragon', Liu An's pupils clearly

contracted. Within the Northern Heavens Continent, the Northern Dragon was known as an invincible existence. Due to this existence sitting within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, there was absolutely no influence or power that could shake their seat in the Northern Heavens Continent.

"Since the Demonic Dragon Palace dares to make a move, they'll naturally have a way to deal with the Northern Dragon..." With a smile on his face, Liu An replied with a soft voice.

Ling Xi's heart slightly shook as she heard those words. The Northern Dragon is a Ninth Grade Sovereign existence, and is invincible in the Northern Heavens Continent. The Demonic Dragon Palace actually has a way to deal with the Northern Dragon? Is it possible? Regardless of this, she didn't sneer towards his last words. The Demonic Dragon Palace weren't a bunch of morons. They clearly understood the gigantic threat the Northern Dragon represented to them. If they truly didn't have a way, they'd absolutely not wage a war against the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

"I really want to see exactly what ability you have that can stop me."

Suppressing the shock within her heart, Ling Xi turned her cold gaze towards Liu An as glowing currents started to circulate around her jade-like fingers.

"Sigh. Then I'll have to offend you, Miss Ling Xi."

As Liu An sighed, countless rays of darkness seemed to extend from his back, corroding the heavens and earth in contact with them.

...

WIthin the Divine Spiritual City

Punishment Hall hallmaster Mo You, as well as Elder Zhu TIan, didn't head towards the Divine Spiritual Mountain. However, when those few thousand-plus metre long ray of lights rushed towards the sky, the faces of the two playing chess in a pavillion instantly changed. The chess piece Punishment Hall's hallmaster Mo You's hand fell on the chessboard as a

shiver shook through his fingers, shattering the jade chessboard into dust.

Shooting a look at each other, both of them could see the shock present in each other's eyes. In the next instant, a furious shiver shook through their bodies, wanting to rush towards the Divine Spiritual Mountain at full speed.

"Haha. Please... the two of you accompany me for a game of chess."

As the two of them rose from their feet, a faint laughing voice rang out within the pavilion. Furiously turning their head around, both of them saw a male dressed in white robes slowly surfacing from within. At this moment, the latter was looking towards them with a faint smile present on his face.

"President of the Heavenly Yuan Chamber of Commerce...Dong Ming."

Upon seeing the man, the faces of Punishment Hall's hallmaster Mo You started to turn dark.

...

Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Countless students were still focused on the glowing Spiritual Energy screen. While they were still sunken in an emotional state, a glowing blood-red pillar suddenly stopped towards the skies from a large hall within the academy. As it did so, a hasty ring reverberated across the entire region.

Boom! Boom!

The faces of countless students violently contorted as they looked towards the bloody pillar that had rushed towards the skies, hearts and minds overwhelmed with shock. Within the glowing blood-red pillar, a giant blood-red clock started to shake and ring.

"That's the...Blood Soul Bell?!"

Overwhelming feelings of shock were present in the eyes of Shen Cangsheng and the rest. That's the highest alert level of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy! For all these years, this was the first time they

had seen any activity from the blood red bell.

Chaos and disorder sprung up within the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy as all of the higher-ups rushed over in a hurry, faces overwhelmed with shock as they looked at the scene before them.

Swish! Whoosh!

The two remaining Heavenly Seated Elders that had remained within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy appeared in the sky. Looking gloomily towards the blood red bell, they shot a look towards each other before saying, "Something's happened to the Dean!"

While the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had sunk in chaos and disorder, the urgent bell ringing suddenly came to a stop. Turning their gazes up, everyone saw a weak and frail looking figure appearing by the side of the giant clock. With a wave of his sleeve, he sent it back into the giant hall.

The weak and frail-looking old man had sloppy robes slapped over his body, while his head appeared bald, not presenting any shred of a figure on the higher echelons. At this moment, a faint frown appeared on his forehead as he looked towards the chaotic Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, before shouting out, "Shut up!"

His voice sounded extremely old and ancient. However, it came along with an extremely powerful pressure. With a single roar, he had instantly quelled and suppressed all of the chaos and disorder present.

"Lord Northern Dragon!"

Upon spotting the bald-headed old man, the two Heavenly Seated Elders hastily paid their respects.

"Cao Xiu, I want the both of you to immediately activate the Academy's Spiritual Array, before rushing back to the Divine Spiritual Mountains. As for the other higher-ups, defend the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Prevent anyone from entering or leaving!" said the bald old man with an indifferent tone. At this moment, he no longer appeared lazy and carefree, with faint traces of overbearingness appearing from his seeming

uncultivated appearance.

"Yes!"

Upon hearing him, the two Heavenly Seated elders speedily gave their replies.

Raising his head to look towards the direction of the Divine Spiritual Mountain, the bald old man snorted coldly, "Looks like it's time to get rid of the Demonic Dragon Palace for good."

As his voice rang out, a shiver shook through his body as he rushed to the skies. Rays of brilliance gushed out while the heavens and earth appeared to turn dark. Raising their heads, all of the students looked in shock as a pair of black-coloured wings hung down from the clouds, extending out across the horizon, expanding over thousands of kilometres.

Scree!

The giant bird of unending size raised its head and gave a long howl. With a flap of its cloud-sized wings, space shattered apart as its incomparably gigantic figure disappeared into nihility.

"That's..."

Countless students stared dumbfoundedly, with incomparable emotions surging from within their eyes.

"That's Lord Northern Dragon!"

Chapter 423: Old Ancestor Wu Liang

Within the top of the clouds, where it's hard for the naked-eye to see, a black figure flew across the Northern Heavens Continent at lightning speed. When it spread its wings, it appeared to have pierced through space. Therefore, it made it simply impossible to get a clear image of its entire body. One would only see a black figure shooting through space, appearing thousands of metres away in a blink of an eye.

Such a speed caused all of the ordinary Sovereigns to look on with dumbstruck shock, as it was one that would completely leave them in the dust, with no hope of ever catching up.

The black figure was, naturally, the Northern Dragon who had stormed out of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Although the Northern Heavens Continent was vast and endless, wanting to rush over to the Divine Spiritual Mountain was just a matter of a dozen minutes with his true speed.

The gigantic black figure shot through the space at lightning speed. In the next instant, the space before him shattered apart as black-coloured sea water covered the earth and hid the skies as it swept out from within. From within the shattered space, a seemingly endless gigantic black bird howled out from within.

Scree!

This unforeseen change causing the Northern Dragon to feel a slight shock. In the next instant, its cloud-covering wings flashed forwards, sending its feathers, which were akin to incomparably sharp Divine Weapons, tearing through space, smashing against the water of the black sea.

Bang! Rumble!

Ripples that blotted the skies swept out as multiple spaces shattered apart. Instantly, tornados thousands of metres wide whirled up above the nine heavens.

"Which little rascal is it!? Come the hell out for me!"

Rays of brilliance erupted around the gigantic black figure before rapidly shrinking down. Transforming back to a human form, the Northern Dragon looked towards the space before him as his cold roar resounded across the horizon.

"Haha. Long time no see, Northern Dragon. Your temper's still as explosive as ever." A laughing voice rang out from within the space as the multiple spatial tears rapidly collapsed, while boundless black-coloured sea water gushed out. Rapidly covering the entire region, it appeared as if there were black-coloured tidals waves present within the layers of clouds in the air.

A pillar of water condensed within the sea water, before a figure appeared within it.

The figure present was of an old man dressed in blue robes. Black water patterns were painted on the blue robes, and they sparkled with faint rays of brilliance. At this moment, the blue-robed old man was beaming as he looked towards the Northern Dragon present before him.

Upon seeing the blue-robed old man, the eyes of Northern Dragon slightly contracted, before speaking out in a deep voice, "Old Ancestor Wu Liang? Aren't you exacting tyrannical abuse to the Immeasurable Continent? What have you run to the Northern Heavens Continent for?"

The blue-robed old man was known as the Immeasurable Old Ancestor. It's said that this person was a Ninth Grade Sovereign and controlled a continent more vast and boundless than the Northern Heavens Continent, the Immeasurable Continent. Similarly, there were a few other smaller continents that were also under his control. Therefore, he was considered as an Overlord-level existence within the Great Thousands Worlds, someone that possessed fame and reputation.

However, there was some distance between the Immeasurable Continent and the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Why did the Immeasurable Old Ancestor appear all of a sudden?

"Haha. Long time no see, old friend. The reason I've come here is to

reminisce the old days," said the Immeasurable Old Ancestor with a beaming smile on his face.

Staring towards the Immeasurable Old Ancestor, a chilling glow surfaced within the eyes of the Northern Dragon as he spoke out in a slow fashion, "So, it was the Demonic Dragon Palace that has invited you. I knew it. Why would those bastards get the guts to challenge our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy all of a sudden? So it was you, old fellow, that's pulling the strings in the dark."

Hearing that, the Immeasurable Old Ancestor gave a smile as he replied, "I've long heard that there is a Divine Spiritual Mountain in the Northern Heavens Continent. This old man's quite interest in it. Northern Dragon, after all these years in the Northern Heavens Continent, you've actually not maintained a complete control over it! Why not, let's partner up and rule over this entire continent? At that time, we can cooperate and search that Divine Spiritual Mountain. I don't believe that you wouldn't get moved by the place where a Heavenly Sovereign has passed away in a sitting position."

The Northern Dragon replied indifferently. "Old Ghost Immeasurable, it's best that you scram back to your Immeasurable Continent. Don't poke your nose in the matters of the Northern Heavens Continent."

Upon hearing the Northern Dragon's reply, which was gradually getting impolite, the smile present on the Immeasurable Old Ancestor's face started to fade as he said, "Northern Dragon, aren't you not going to give this humble old man some face at all?"

A ridiculing smile instantly surfaced on the face of the Northern Dragon as he stared at the Immeasurable Old Ancestor, while replying, "Don't try to show your might off in front of me, old ghost. I'm afraid that you've found the wrong person to do that. You, humble? When the Martial Ancestor had just entered the Great Thousand World, you, old ghost, had attempted to dip your fingers into his women after finding how attractive they were. As a result, you were almost smashed to death by a single slap from him. You've shamelessly fled for a year, not even daring to return to your old den at that year. Do you think your shameless self has any such

thing as a thin skin? If you have the guts, you can just scram off and go to find the Martial Ancestor in the "Martial Realm". If you're able to return alive, I'll let you trample all over the Northern Heavens Continent as you wish!"

Those words from the Northern Dragon were as incisive as knives, instantly causing the smile present on the face of the Immeasurable Old Ancestor to slowly freeze up. Terrifying murderous aura surged up into the heavens, spreading across the myriad horizon.

"You're looking to die, Northern Dragon!"

The Immeasurable Old Ancestor's face turned flushed as he roared out. This matter had always been a thorn in his heart. Due to an obsession that occurred that year, he was made a gargantuan laughing stock, which had caused his fame and reputation to plummet and had become the embarrassment in his heart. All these years, he had crazily trained, leading to a drastic increase in his strength. Previously, he had even thought about exacting revenge. However, he never imagined that when his strength increased, that "Martial Ancestor" had rapidly scaled the realms in his cultivation, leading him to rise from a nobody to an Overlord within the Great Thousand World. His subordinating "Martial Realm" had numerous experts akin to clouds in the skies, with a clan that had a background as long as the Ice Spirit Clan willingly giving in to him. Even the position of their clan leader was handed to a wife of the "Martial Ancestor". It was the combination of the Martial Ancestor and the Martial Realm that allowed the death-filled "Ice Spirit Clan" to gradually become the tyrannical force it was today.

Faced against such a frightening existence, the Immeasurable Old Ancestor had lived all those years in fear and trepidation, afraid that the "Martial Realm" would send experts to deal with him. Therefore, let's not talk about avenging his embarrassment, he didn't even dare to recklessly get close to that "Martial Realm".

Bang!

With a wave of his hand, murderous aura surged from the

Immeasurable Old Ancestor as black-coloured tidal waves that blotted the skies instantly swept forward. Each and every drop within those tidal waves was water from the "nether river" founded from the netherworld, nurtured with his boundless Spiritual Energy, before forming his Nether Sea. Wherever his sea howled towards, it would spread over thousands and thousands of meters, transforming anything that came into contact with it into nihility, appearing incomparably overbearing.

Hmph!

Seeing the Immeasurable Old Ancestor take action, a cold snort rang out from the Northern Dragon. A withered palm extended out, transforming into a feathered wing thousands of metres long. With a wave of its feathers, feathery glints covered the earth and hid the skies as they explosively shot out, Piercing through space, they heavily smashed against the incoming black tidal waves.

The black sea crazily gushed and surged. Despite that, it was unable to break the obstruction caused by the feathery glints. The overbearing sea was also unable to corrode the tyrannical feathery glints smashing into it.

"Are you really going to use this method against me? You, old ghost, really have become senile!"

With a frosty expression present on his face, the Northern Dragon gave a wave of his sleeve, causing the countless feathery glints to quickly condense together. Transforming into a fish-and-dragon-like creature, it smashed straight towards the black tidal waves, shattering through them, before shooting towards the Immeasurable Old Ancestor with incomparable force.

Originally being an existence that lived within the unending Northern Sea. Although the Immeasurable Old Ancestor's Nether Sea was overbearing, it was difficult for it to have much effect in the suppression of the former. Instead, relying on the force of the sea, he was able to erupt with a more powerful counter-attack.

Bang!

Giving a stomp with his feet, giant waves that blotted the skies

condensed together within the black sea. Transforming into a gigantic black trident thousands of metres long, it was thrust out in the next instant, ferociously shooting towards the the fish-dragon like giant creature.

Boom!

Frightening shock waves swept out, spreading across thousands and thousands of metres across the horizon. The entire region started to rampage as crazy gales and hurricanes whirled up, causing chaos and disorder to wreak havoc across to the thousands and thousands of metres of the earth below, causing countless experts to flee for their lives, overwhelmed with shock.

Outside of the Divine Spiritual Mountain

Countless experts furiously raised their heads as they stared towards the far distance with shock in their eyes. Clearly, all of them could sense the earth-shattering fight that had erupted there. The fluctuations rippling out from there had caused even the hearts of a few Elders to tremble in fear and shock.

"Who's fighting over there? What's with this frightening commotion?!"

"It's definitely that Lord Northern Dragon from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy!"

"Who's fighting with him? There's actually someone that could contend against him?"

"This...might be the handiwork of the Demonic Dragon Palace..."

The eyes of some of the Elders started to fluctuate as they exchanged looks at each other, before turning to look at the Black Dragon Sovereign and his fellow Sovereigns in shock. That's why the Demonic Dragon Palace dared to take action against the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy! Looks like they've invited a frightening helper.

Dean Tai Cang had also felt the fluctuations radiating from there, which had caused his face to slightly change.

"Haha. What's the matter, Tai Cang? The Northern Dragon has been obstructed. Now, do you think that there's still anyone that can save you?" The Black Dragon Sovereign started to heartily chuckle, his laughing brimming with carefree satisfaction. After being suppressed for all those years, their Demonic Dragon Palace had finally managed to regain the upper hand.

"Your Demonic Dragon Palace really has paid quite a price to deal with our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy!" replied Dean Tai Cang with a sneer.

He naturally knew about the current situation. Not only did the Demonic Dragon Palace invite such a powerful foreign aid like the Immeasurable Old Ancestor, he had even managed to move the Umbra and Heavenly Yuan Chambers of Commerce to obstruct the Elders of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. To do such matters, they would definitely need to pay a considerable price.

"As long as we're able to wipe away your Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, no matter what the price, our Demonic Dragon Palace will pay any price!" replied the Black Demon Sovereign with a chilling smile.

A frosty expression loomed over Dean Tai Cang's gaze. Looks like I've to go all-out today.

"Everyone, this is a war between our Demonic Dragon Palace and the Northerns Spiritual Academy. I hope that no one else interferes in this." Taking a look at his surroundings, the Black Dragon Sovereign roared out in a deep voice.

The faces of the Elders from the various other influences slightly changed. Originally, they had imagined that the Demonic Dragon Palace was seeking their own deaths, since the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had an existence like the Northern Dragon behind them. However, from the looks of it now, the Demonic Dragon Palace had hatched this plan from a long, long time ago. As long as they were able to successfully encircle and kill Dean Tai Cang today, with the fame and prestige of the Immeasurable Old Ancestor, the ending of the Northern

Heavens Spiritual Academy wouldn't be encouraging.

At this time, how would they dare to take action? It's best that they maintained a neutral standing. If not, they might get a whole lot of trouble, if they were to choose the wrong side.

"Form up and let's move!"

With a furious wave of his hand, six thousand-plus metre rays of light spread out from the Black Dragon Sovereign. Akin to a gigantic umbrella, they instantly enveloped the six people from the Demonic Dragon Palace with Dean Tai Cang within them.

The killing formation had already been completed.

A heaven-shaking war was inevitable!

Chapter 424: Completing the Baptism

Within the Divine Spiritual Mountain

The region that was originally wracked by chaotic battles had now become abnormally quiet as everyone present within had all sat down, continuously absorbing the golden raindrops fluttering down from the sky. Presently within them was the incomparably mysterious Strength of Baptism.

As it went past the Nine Heavenly Steps, the Strength of Baptism became thin and diluted. However, there was not a single person that had forsaken any part of it, as everyone knew that if they could absorb just a bit more of it, they might gain an extra sliver of a opportunity to live when they attempt to pass through their "Three Sovereign Disasters" in the future. This was something that concerned their very survival, something that they definitely wouldn't be sloppy or careless about.

As everyone absorbed the Strength of Baptism descending from the skies, some envious gazes shot towards the position at the highest point in the Nine Heavenly Steps. Present there was the thin figure of a youth sitting quietly on the ground, with bright and resplendent golden light seemingly wanting to submerge his entire body into its brilliance. The boundless Strength of Baptism present there caused everyone's eyes to turn red with envy. Nevertheless, they were unable to do anything about it, as all of them knew the difficulty and challenge of the fights that one would have to undergo to obtain that position. As for them, they clearly weren't able to do such a thing.

Therefore, feelings of respect were present, along with the envy they had for the youth, who was able to stand at the highest point in the Divine Spiritual Mountain's Nine Heavenly Steps, where the number of experts were as numerous as the clouds in the skies.

The students taught by the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy truly were formidable. Truly worthy of being one of the Five Great Academies.

Mu Chen quietly sat on the top of the Nine Heavenly Steps,

concentrating his mind and getting rid of all external influences. Golden rain drops continued to cover his entire body, before the Strength of Baptism that was endlessly flooding in entered his body.

At this moment, golden light had already flooded everywhere within Mu Chen's body. There were even faint rays of brilliance radiating from his blood and muscles. An indescribably comfortable and refreshing feeling surged within Mu Chen's body. Although the Strength of Baptism wasn't able to help Mu Chen with any increase in his strength, he was able to feel some kind of miraculous change happening within his body.

This change was unquantifiable. However, Mu Chen knew that when he attempted his "Three Sovereign Disasters" in the future, he might be able to obtain a gigantic benefit then.

Within his glowing golden body, slivers of a golden fluid started to seep through his blood, flesh and meridians, before flowing endlessly into his aurasea. Condensing within the small palm of the Divine Soul present there, golden light radiated out as the golden liquid continued to contract and condense. Within the innermost part, a golden crystal appeared to rapid condense and form.

Humm.

Upon accumulating to a certain degree, the golden rays of brilliance radiating out from Strength of Baptism within Mu Chen's body started to gradually scatter away. All of the golden fluid quickly compressed together with the golden rays of brilliance, humming sounds resounded out as they did so. As the golden light gradually grew faint, a thumb-sized golden crystal surfaced within the palm of the Divine Soul.

"Baptism Crystal."

Upon feeling this, happiness and elation erupted in Mu Chen's mind. As long as he had the crystal condensed from the Strength of Baptism, he would have completed this Divine Spiritual Baptism in perfection.

With a thought, Mu Chen's Divine Soul opened its mouth. With a gentle suck, it absorbed the Baptism Crystal into its body, causing it to transform a ray of golden light as it entered the Divine Soul's throat. After floating in

the position of its heart, gentle rays of brilliance started to slowly merge with the Divine Soul, increasing its condensation rate within.

"Success."

On the Nine Heavenly Steps, Mu Chen opened his eyes, golden light erupted from his black pupils. As the golden light slowly dissipated away, he took a heavy breath of relief. Although there wasn't much increase in his strength, he could feel that his body had become much more light and springy, as if he had undergone a series of tempering and refining.

Raising his head, Mu Chen looked towards the sky, were vast and boundless golden raindrops were still falling down. There was clearly some more time till the end of the Baptism.

Continuing to stare at this scene, Mu Chen didn't stop with his cultivation. With a thought, suction force erupted once again. Having condensed a Baptism Crystal, meant that he had completed his Baptism. From the looks of it, he clearly had some time to condense a second crystal. Naturally, this was done for the sake for Luo Li.

Although he knew about the background of Luo Li's clan, the Luo God Clan, her chances of crossing her "Three Sovereign Disasters" would far exceed that of ordinary people, so it would be in her best interests for her to get another portion of safety. Coming to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, she had given up the bitter training of the Luo God clan to quietly accompany his side. Although this was something that she had done willing, Mu Chen couldn't be as heartless as to do nothing about it. He knew about how heavy the responsibility she had on her shoulders. If he could reduce her responsibility by just a little bit, he would go all-out to do so.

The current him was still too weak. Faced against the Luo God Clan, which was a gargantuan existence, even more enormous than the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, he was unable to provide much help for Luo Li. Therefore, this was the only thing he could do to help Luo Li with her responsibilities.

However, he also believed that there would be a day that he would

possess the strength to stand right in front of Luo Li, helping her block every storm and rain that headed her way!

Golden raindrops that blotted the skies condensed once again towards Mu Chen. Golden rays of brilliance started to come together and condense within his palm.

Seeing those actions coming from Mu Chen, those experts could only sigh bitterly in anguish. He really has no fear of drowning from too much of it. All of them were at the bottom, only able to enjoy a limited amount of the Strength of Baptism. However, Mu Chen was already in the process of condensing a second Baptism Crystal. This truly made people open their eyes wide as they stared at him...However, after all of the bitter sighs, there wasn't anyone that felt any anger or indignation. There's no such thing as absolute equality in this world. Having relied on his own strength to stand at the highest position of the Nine Heavenly Steps, this showed that he had the qualifications necessary to enjoy the most amount of the Strength of Baptism. As long he possessed the strength, there wouldn't be anyone that would complain, even if he were to devour all of it for himself.

The golden rain in this region continued falling in a constant pace. This continued for about half an hour or so, before showing signs of stopping. As the experts started to successively open their eyes, feelings of regret and pity appeared within their gazes. They were clearly unable to complete their Baptisms as they could only absorb as much of the Strength of Baptism that was available for them to absorb, before preparing for their "Three Sovereign Disasters".

At this moment, Xia Youran, Xi Qinghai and Su Buxiu had also opened their eyes, with inconcealable feelings of happiness and elation appearing on their faces. Clearly, they had managed to successfully condense their Baptism Crystals, completing this Divine Spiritual Baptism in the most perfect state.

On the second highest step, the faces of Liu Ying, Dong Yuan and Zhou Xuan appeared somewhat ugly. Although their bodies were faintly radiating with a golden glow, they still had some distance to go before completing their Baptisms. Despite that, the Divine Spiritual Baptism was

about to end, something that they were helpless to do anything about. The only thing they could blame was for choosing Mo Xingtian at the beginning...

"That trash."

The bellies of all three men were filled with flames of anger as they shot a look at each other. Nevertheless, the only thing they could do was to send a vicious bout of curses towards Mo Xingtian. Since that fellow had been completely destroyed by Mu Chen, there was no more trouble that could happen from that.

Across the horizon, the final bit of the Strength of Baptism was absorbed into Mu Chen's palm. Golden light erupted from there, condensing together before a Baptism Crystal started to form.

Rumble.

As the golden crystal appeared, successive sounds of people gulping down their saliva rang out as countless people raised their heads as they stared at Mu Chen.

Seeing himself being stared at with wolf-like gazes, Mu Chen hastily stored the Baptism Crystal in his hands. This one's for my life. Don't pin your hopes on it.

"Haha. Congratulations." A smile beamed across Xia Youran's face as she congratulated Mu Chen, with not a single shred of envy or jealousy present. She had already completed her Baptism. Therefore, the Baptism Crystal had totally no use for her.

"Many thanks for this, Brother Mu Chen." both Xi Qinghai and Su Buxiu cupped their hands towards Mu Chen as they spoke out words filled with gratitude and emotion. Both of them knew that it was all due to Mu Chen that they were able to successfully complete their Baptism.

With a smile, Mu Chen rebuked their words with a wave of his hand. However, just as he was about to reply to them, a ray of golden light suddenly shot down from the skies. As the golden light converged together, the surrounding space started to rapidly warp and distort, before

transforming into a spatial whirlpool. This was the pathway to leave the Divine Spiritual Mountain. Obviously, upon the end of the Strength of Baptism, the Divine Spiritual Mountain was about to close up once again.

Smacking his lips, Mu Chen shot a look towards the gigantic clump of light floating in the skies. Present within, there might just be the greatest secret of this Divine Spiritual Mountain. However, it was a pity that he was totally unable to conduct any investigations on it with his current level of strength. Perhaps, in the future, when he had become one of the peak-level experts in the Great Thousand Worlds, he might be able to conduct an investigation then.

"Let's go."

Sending a smile towards Xia Youran and the others, Mu Chen took the lead, shooting towards the spatial whirlpool.

Below him, countless people took the skies, getting ready to leave this place.

Bang!

However, just as they neared the spatial whirlpool, extremely rampant Spiritual Energy suddenly gushed out from it in a tyrannical fashion. Sweeping out, it instantly sent countless people into a pitiful state, with a few unlucky fellows being tossed thousands of feet away. In an instant, their faces turned deathly-pale, clearly suffering heavy injuries as a result of this impact.

Reacting exceedingly quick, Mu Chen and the others evaded the strongest shockwave. Nevertheless, all of their faces were brimming with shock as uncertainty and doubt fluctuated in their eyes.

"What's going on?!"

Countless whispers erupted as everyone's faces were filled with shock and confusion.

"There seems to be Sovereign level experts fighting outside of the Divine Spiritual Mountain!" A faint change appeared on Xia Youran's face as she exclaimed in shock. The tyrannical fluctuations radiating from the spatial

whirlpool absolutely matched those that could only be created by Sovereign-level experts.

"Sovereign-level experts crossing hands?"

With a gawk, Mu Chen's face contorted as feelings of unease and worry erupted within his heart. There were not many Sovereign-level experts in the Northern Heavens Continent, resulting in all of them having a great restrictive effect on one another. Therefore, this resulted in the current situation where none of them would start a massive war against each other. If a war was to erupt outside of the Divine Spiritual Mountain, the highest possibility would be between two peak-level influences, which would most likely be between the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy and the Demonic Dragon Palace. Furthermore, added with the fact that he had just killed Mo Xingtian earlier...

Complicated expressions flashed across Mu Chen's face. With a move of his body, Mu Chen shot rapidly towards the spatial whirlpool. As his head entered the whirlpool, his faces turned dark as he clenched his teeth. It's best that this fight doesn't involve Luo Li. If not, I don't care if you're from the Demonic Dragon Palace or not! I'll make sure every single one of you will go and accompany Mo Xingtian!

Chapter 425: Crisis

Bang!

Boundless Spiritual Energy swept out from the world as the six thousand-plus metre long rays of light radiated out. As the Spiritual Energy that blotted the skies started to condense, they transformed into a scarlet-red furnace. Within the furnace, six giant dragons of varying lengths roared and howled as they danced around. In the next instant, frightening temperatures started to radiate from within the furnace, hot to the degree that even the space was unable to endure, with signs of collapse gradually starting to appear.

As Dean Tai Cang sat within the furnace, a glowing Spiritual Energy shadow thousands of metres tall enveloped him within it. That was his Sovereign Celestial Body. However, at this moment, it continued to grow under the terrifying temperature of its surroundings, with faint signs of warping and distortions appearing on its gigantic body.

"Haha, Tai Cang! What do you think about this Six Dragon Heaven Incinerating Furnace our Demonic Dragon Palace has prepared for you? I really want to see exactly how long can you endure being in there!" The Black Dragon Sovereign heartily laughed towards the sky as he hovered outside of the gigantic scarlet-red furnace, his laughter brimming with unconcealable killing intent.

At this moment, Dean Tai Cang had fallen completely into his hands. After all, it was a Fifth Grade Sovereign against five First Grade Sovereigns. In such a fight, the latter five had the overwhelming advantage. Therefore, even if he was a Fifth Grade Sovereign, Dean Tai Cang was unable to break free from the grasps of the Black Dragon Sovereign and the other five.

Hearing the roaring laughter coming from the Black Dragon Sovereign, a chilling glint flashed within the eyes of Dean Tai Cang. Despite that, he didn't make any irrational movements, continuing to focus on keeping his Sovereign Celestial Body up to protect his body. In this situation, the only

thing he could do was the continue to endure. As long as the Northern Sea Dragon was able to deal with his opponent, Dean Tai Cang would be able to be rescued.

For the sake of killing him, the Black Dragon Sovereign and the others from the Demonic Dragon Palace had given it their all. However, while they had used all their available manpower to hold the fort here, the other two Heavenly Seated Elders of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy were currently rushing over to his location.

The only thing he could do was to give his all to endure under the encirclement by the Black Dragon Sovereign and the other five from the Dragon Demonic Palace.

Countless experts tens of kilometres in the surrounding area hovered in the air as the expressions on the faces of the various Elders present fluctuated in the presence of the frightening exchange happening in front of them in the far distance. Looking from the corner of their eyes, they noticed two people in confrontation with each other. Those two were the president of the Umbra Chamber of Commerce, Liu An and the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's Ling Xi.

"I never imagined that the Umbra Chamber of Commerce would actually lend a helping hand to the Demonic Dragon Palace. Looks like they'd hooked up a long time ago." The eyes of a few big shots fluctuated as they observed the exchange of blows.

"There's powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiating out from within the Divine Spiritual City. The two Heavenly Seated Elders from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy might have been obstructed. Most likely, the person that's obstructing them is the president of the Heavenly Yuan Chamber of Commerce."

"Could it be that the Umbra and Heavenly Yuan Chambers of Commerce are in an alliance with the Dragon Demonic Palace?"

"That doesn't seem like it. Although Liu An's obstructing Ling Xi, he's basically not daring to launch any killing blows. Clearly, there's some fear and dread in him. Perhaps, the Demonic Dragon Palace might have given

them some compensation that's hard to resist, which made them agree to take some action. Despite that, their actions are limited. Even if the Demonic Dragon Palace gets defeated, this would allow for them to have a buffer for excuses."

Floating in the sky, a serious expression hung on the face of the president of the Nine Summers Chamber of Commerce, Xia Tianyan, as he observed the earth-shattering fights taking place in the region, as rays of brilliance continued to sparkle within his eyes. Like his Nine Summers Chamber of Commerce, the Umbra and Heavenly Yuan Chambers of Commerce were part of the three great Chambers of Commerce of the Northern Heavens Continent, with each one keeping each other in check. However, those fellows had unexpectedly allied themselves with the Demonic Dragon Palace. To him, this wasn't any good news at all.

However, if the Demonic Dragon Palace was allowed to get rid of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy today, they might become the Overlords of the Northern Heavens Continent once again. At that time, those peak influences in the Northern Heavens Continent not on their side would no longer be able to be that free anymore.

However, despite knowing this, Xia Tianyan didn't dare to help the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. After scheming for so long, the Demonic Dragon Palace had even invited a figure as great as the Immeasurable Old Ancestor. Before the latter's fight with the Northern Sea Dragon ends, they would still choose to side with the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. However, if by the off chance that the Immeasurable Old Ancestor wins, they might have a bloodbath waiting for them.

As the frown on Xia Tianyan's forehead grew increasingly wrinkled, a gentle voice rang out beside him. "Haha. President Xia. The matter before us..."

Turning his head to take a look, Xia Tianyan noticed that the person speaking was the Palace Master of the Western Extreme Palace, the Western Extreme Sovereign. At this moment, a faint smile hung on his face, while rays of brilliance similarly sparkled within his eyes.

"Is there anything you are planning to do, Palace Master of the Western Extreme Palace? If you choose the wrong side to stand on, it might invoke a catastrophe for youself."

With a soft sigh, the Western Extreme Palace's Palace Master replied, "If we are to choose between the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy and the Dragon Demonic Palace, I'll naturally choose the former, as it will be better for us. The Dragon Demonic Palace's ambitions are too big. I'm afraid that when they rule over the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, we will suffer the consequences."

"What the Western Extreme Palace Master wants is to help the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?" asked President Xia.

The Western Extreme Palace Master gave a helpless smile, with the presence of a struggle and hesitation present within his gaze. Although he was inclined towards the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, with the current situation being unknown, it wasn't the moment for him to decide which side to stand on.

"What do you mean, President Xia?"

Hearing that question, Xia Tianyan's eyes slightly narrowed before slowly replying, "Don't rush it. The situation now is in a deadlock. It isn't wise to recklessly take action. If the time comes when the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy is genuinely unable to hold out, we can decide then on whether to take action or not. Furthermore, at that critical moment, if we take action and diffuse the difficulty, we might be able to form a greater relationship with the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy."

"Haha. President Xia's truly worthy of being the person in charge of the Nine Summers Chamber of Commerce. You're still able to weigh the pros and cons at this moment." replied the Western Extreme Palace Master with a smile.

"This isn't some kids play. Our entire foundation is in the Northern Heavens Continent. We have to consider it more deeply. The reward of many years of hard work would flow down the generations," muttered Xia

Tianyan as he shook his head. Looking towards the scarlet-red furnace floating in the middle of the sky, a deep feeling of fear and dread flashed within the depths of his eyes.

Hearing those words, the Western Extreme Palace Master nodded his head before softly speaking out. "I hope that Dean Tai Cang can hold on a bit longer. It's best to wait for the Northern Sea Dragon to get over here. That way, the scheme of the Demonic Dragon Palace would fail."

Humm! Humm!

As the two people continued with their conversation, the space around the distant sky started to violently warp and distort, transforming into a spatial passage. In the next moment, countless figures shot out from within like a swarm of locusts.

Just as those people rushed out from the spatial whirlpool, they immediately noticed the scarlet-red furnace thousands of metres tall hovering in the middle of the sky, causing each and every one of them to turn dumbfounded.

Mu Chen was also in shock as the took in the scene before him. In the next instant, his face ferociously contorted as he noticed Dean Tai Cang trapped within the scarlet-red furnace, as well as the Black Dragon Sovereign present on the outside.

"Indeed, the Demonic Dragon Palace has taken action against our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy!" Shock filled Mu Chen's heart. Aren't those fellows too gutsy?

The appearance of the spatial whirlpool immediately attracted the attention of the myriad of experts present outside of the Divine Spiritual Mountain. On the outside of the scarlet-red furnace, the chilling glare of the Black Dragon Sovereign swept across Mu Chen. In the next instant, the frosty killing intent within those eyes appeared to have turned substantial, causing Mu Chen to feel a chill sweeping across his entire body.

"Yellow Dragon! Go and capture that brat, and take back the Great Meru Demonic Pillar!" Panning his head, the Black Dragon Sovereign darkly

spoke towards another Sovereign from the Demonic Dragon Palace.

"Okay."

Hearing the command, the yellow-robed male nodded his head, before turning and leaving. As of now, the furnace had already been stabilized. Although they were now lacking a Sovereign, which would result in the lengthening of the duration they needed to kill Dean Tai Cang, there should not be any unforeseen circumstances that would pop out.

Turning his body around, the Yellow Dragon Sovereign shot across the skies, heading towards the direction where Mu Chen was. Sovereign pressure radiated out, causing the faces of the people coming out from the Divine Spiritual Mountain to contort.They scattered, fleeing in all directions, as all of them could naturally see that the Yellow Dragon Sovereign was rushing straight towards Mu Chen.

A faint change appeared on Xia Youran's lovable face as she hastily shouted out, "Run quickly, Mu Chen!"

Although they had seen how powerful Mu Chen was while they were in the Divine Spiritual Mountain, even that Mo Xingtian would be like an infant before a genuine Sovereign, completely unable to put up any resistance.

Gasping his hands tightly, Mu Chen's gaze instantly grew dark. However, despite that, he didn't turn around and flee, knowing that it would be completely of no use. Faced against a genuine Sovereign, turning around and fleeing would only result in him being killed by a single slap from the latter.

"You really have the courage. I've truly thought that you would turn around and flee like a mouse." Stopping a few hundred metres away from Mu Chen, the Yellow Dragon Sovereign spoke in an indifferent tone as his yellow eyes stared with apathetic eyes towards the former.

"Hand over the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, and I'll give you a quick and painless death," said the Yellow Dragon Sovereign as he extended his palm out.

Tightly staring at the Yellow Dragon Sovereign, a smile appeared on Mu Chen's face as he revealed his pearly-white teeth. "In your dreams!"

Hearing Mu Chen's reply, not a single fluctuation appeared on the face of the Yellow Dragon Sovereign's face, appearing as if he had predicted that reply. Therefore, nodding his head, he replied, "Then, I'll just have to personally take action. I hope that you can endure that kind of pain, as people who have landed in my hands would feel that even death is something they can't wish for."

As his voice rang out, vast and boundless Spiritual Energy flared out from his entire body and Sovereign pressure pressed down on Xia Youran and the others, causing them to be unable to catch their breaths.

Taking a step forward, the Yellow Dragon Sovereign extended his hand out.

Whoosh!

However, at the instant when he took action, a whooshing sound suddenly resounded out as a current of Sword Aura flashed across the horizon. Transforming into a myriad of swords, they covered the earth and hid the skies as they enveloped over the Yellow Dragon Sovereign.

"Insignificant trifle."

Not even turning his head over, the Yellow Dragon Sovereign waved his sleeve, sending Spiritual Energy rays thousands of metres long shooting towards the skies. Smashing straight against the current of Sword Aura, it completely shattered the latter.

Swish!

A glowing figure shot over, finally descending beside Mu Chen. It was Luo Li. At this moment, a chilling expression was present on her lovable face as she stared towards the Yellow Dragon Sovereign, while her slender jade-like hands grasped her Luo Shen Sword tightly. Dark red blood stains flowed down on the body of the sword, causing the sword to appear slightly red.

"The two of you?"

Slightly panning his head, the Yellow Dragon Sovereign sent a smile over, one that appeared cold and indifferent.

"Until death do us part. Alright then, I'll grant your wish."

Chapter 426: Power of the Demonic Pillar, Might of the Divine Sword

Killing intent that blotted the skies gushed across the horizon, transforming into something corporeal as it enveloped over the young girl standing tall in the sky. Despite being faced against the enveloping pressure coming from a Sovereign, not a single shred of fear was present in the eyes of Mu Chen and Luo Li. Their bearings made quite a few people quietly sigh in admiration, before looking at the two of them with regret and pity present in their eyes. The scene before them was truly one that led to death.

Feeling the killing intent surging towards him, Mu Chen darkly stared towards the Yellow Dragon Sovereign. Tightly clenching his hands, he could feel the gigantic threat looming over him. This threat was upteen times more than what he had felt when faced against Mo Xingtian; after all, the former was simply not on the same level as the Yellow Dragon Sovereign present before him right now.

Although the Yellow Dragon was only a First Grade Sovereign, a Sovereign was a Sovereign. Regardless of what Grade he was, everything he did would seemingly be able to suppress Mu Chen.

"You..."

Clenching his teeth, Mu Chen looked towards Luo Li in an attempt to get her to leave. This place was too dangerous for her.

However, before he could finish his words, Luo Li opened her beautiful eyes wide as she looked over, her eyebrows turning vertical as angry fluctuations appeared on her lovable face. Despite that, she didn't say a single word, continuing to stare at Mu Chen, approximately telling him that she was flipping at him.

Seeing her response, Mu Chen gave a helpless smile. Extending his hand to grasp the slender and jade-like hand of the young girl, he shrugged his shoulders before saying, "Alright. I'm wrong. We'll always be together.

Screw them and whatever bird Sovereign he is. Let's chop him up before talking."

"However, the matter before us is extremely troublesome. You have to listen to me." Staring at Luo Li, Mu Chen spoke out in an earnest tone.

After hesitating for a slight while, Luo Li gently nodded her head. She wasn't the type that loved to be pampered, but she just didn't like Mu Chen always putting her behind him. This always resulting in him shouldering all the wounds and injuries, which made her heart hurt. She had already given consideration towards the overall situation. Indeed, the situation before them was extremely unfavorable.

"The Yellow Dragon Sovereign's too strong. However, it's because of him being too strong that we might just have a sliver of a chance. That's because such an expert would always care about their face in such a situation. They won't immediately take action and unleash their true moves right at the beginning. Our chance would appear when this sliver gets bigger."

Rays of brilliance faintly flashed within Mu Chen's black pupils as his soft voice rang within Luo Li's ear. "Therefore, I will take action first. With your Luo Shen Sword, I'll try my best to create a sliver of an opportunity for you. At that moment, you should take action. Remember, we only have one chance. If that's not possible..."

Gentling biting her lip, Luo Li knew that Mu Chen had clearly handed the most dangerous task to himself. Nevertheless, this time, she didn't rebuke his decision, as she knew that between the two of them, the only thing that could pose a threat to the Yellow Dragon Sovereign would be the Luo Shen Sword in her hands. Although Mu Chen had the so-called 'Great Meru Demonic Pillar', which was incredibly formidable, within his body, it was too ominous. At this current moment, Mu Chen was simply unable to control it. Therefore, the only thing they could rely on would be the Divine Weapon of the Luo God Clan in her hands.

"Be careful," replied Luo Li in a soft voice.

Nodding his head, Mu Chen stopped speaking, turning his gaze towards

the leisurely-looking Yellow Dragon Sovereign as a chilling glint flashed within his eyes. If the situation ended up being the most disastrous outcome, the only thing he could do would be to forcefully summon Nine Nether out. Although this would disturb her evolution, it's much better than the three of them dying here. After all, having the bloodline link with him, if Mu Chen dies in the hands of the Yellow Dragon Sovereign, the Nine Nether would be hard pressed to keep her life.

"Are you two done discussing on how to deal with me?" asked the Yellow Dragon Sovereign with an apathetic smile as he shot a slightly amused look at the two. He didn't care about what countermeasure Mu Chen seemed to be discussing with Luo Li, just like how a hunter wouldn't care about two rabbits fighting it out in a cage. His strength as a Sovereign was his greatest and most absolute card.

Bang!

With an emotionless expression on his face, Mu Chen gave a clench, causing black rays of lightning to erupt from the surface of his body. As his body grew taller by an inch, two lightning runes appeared on his chest, his Two Rune Lightning God's Physique immediately being activated. Furthermore, at this instant, a gigantic surge of ominous energy erupted from within his body, power coming from the Great Meru Demonic Pillar.

Mu Chen was extremely clear about the frightening disparity between him and the Yellow Dragon Sovereign. Therefore, he absolutely didn't dare to show the slightest bit of restraint. All of his cards have now been unleashed, with not a single one left hidden.

Fluctuations started to radiated from Mu Chen's body and his robes started fluttering about, causing quite a few big shots present to gasp in shock and astonishment. A youth that was able to defeat Mo Xingtian, had truly caused people to have a whole new level of respect for his capabilities and strength.

Tightly clenching her jade-like hands, Xia Youran stared at Mu Chen, who was unexpectedly planning to take action against the Yellow Dragon Sovereign, as worry filled her lovable eyes. Turning her head around, she

spoke to Xia Tianyan standing beside her, " Father. In't our Nine Summers Chamber of Commerce not planning to do anything? Isn't letting the Dragon Demonic Palace suppress the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy not a good thing for us?"

Shooting a look at Mu Chen, Xia Tianyan gave a smile and replied, "Are you worried about that brat?"

Hearing his reply, a tinge of red appeared on Xia Youran's lovable face as she replied in embarrassment, "I'm discussing a proper matter with you!"

Giving a sigh, Xia Tianyan replied, "Now's not the right time to take action and provide assistance. This time, the Dragon Demonic Palace has made ample preparations. We have to give more consideration into this. If we are inattentive, our Nine Summers Chamber of Commerce might invite a catastrophic disaster."

Hearing his reply, Xia Youran kept quiet for a short while. Both the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy and the Demonic Dragon Palace were gargantuan existences in the Northern Heavens Continent. Even their Nine Summers Chamber of Commerce would be lacking when compared to peak-level influences like them.

"Relax. That brat's considered to have saved you in the Divine Spiritual Mountain. I'm not an ungrateful person. If there's truly no other way, I'll make a move and help him escape with his life," said Xia Tianyan slowly.

Hearing her father's words, Xia Youran gave a quiet sigh. In this situation, that might be the most her father could do.

Humm!

As the tyrannical fluctuations around Mu Chen's body reached their extremity, Mu Chen abruptly shot forwards. The Great Meru Demonic Pillar shot towards the skies, before landing in Mu Chen's embrace. Carrying along surging fiendish energies, it violently howled towards the Yellow Dragon Sovereign!

The demonic pillar casted its shadow as its fiendish energies enveloped over the Yellow Dragon Sovereign. Despite the incoming attack, an

indifferent expression remained on his face, with no signs of wanting to dodge or evade the attack. Extending his hand out, he raised it, letting the demonic pillar to heavily slam onto his palm.

Bang!

Gigantic fluctuations, visible to the naked-eye, rippled and spread out, causing the surrounding space to shake to the point of showing signs of warping. Despite such a huge impact, the figure of the Yellow Dragon Sovereign hovering in the sky unexpectedly showed not the slightest sign of moving. Although his body was disproportionate to the gigantic pillar above him, his frail-looking figure contained earth-shattering power within it.

"The Great Meru Demonic Pillar's truly been wasted in your hands."

Giving an indifferent smile, the Yellow Dragon Sovereign gave a backhanded slap, which heavily landed on the surface of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar.

Clang!

Metallic sounds reverberated across the horizon as the gigantic Great Meru Demonic Pillar was unexpectedly sent flying by a single slap from the Yellow Dragon Sovereign. Hugging the demonic pillar, the shock travelled back to him, causing him to spurt out a mouthful of blood. Despite that, a malevolent shadow flash within his eyes, not backing away a single step. Shooting forward like a madman, he waved the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, sending it howling through the air, sending continuous heavy blows towards the Yellow Dragon Sovereign.

Clang! Clang!

Not moving a single inch, the Yellow Dragon Sovereign leisurely sent slap after slap out, causing astonishingly loud sounds to erupt every time his palm landed on the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. Each time it did, the Great Meru Demonic Pillar would intensely vibrate, with Mu Chen successively spurting out mouthfuls of blood. In an instant, his robes were stained by his blood, causing him to appear frightening in people's eyes.

Behind him, Luo Li furiously bit her lip as her jade-like hands tightly grasped her Luo Shen Sword. Dark red blood continuously flowed down the body the sword. At this moment, faint rays of dark red brilliance radiated from the Luo Shen Sword, seemingly forming a faint blood-red rune on the body of the sword. As this formed, slivers of sword aura that caused people's hearts to palpate that were gradually dissipating started to ripple around her entire body, causing even the surrounding space to get sliced and chopped up.

Ding!

Clear sounds that caused people's heart to jump reverberated across the horizon as everyone present in this region noticed the valiant attacks successively launched by Mu Chen were completely ineffective. Instead, his injuries were growing more and more severe, causing all of them to quietly smack their lips. This brat's truly not giving a care about his life! He actually dares to engage in a fight against a Sovereign! Even if this continues on, he might be killed by the counter impact he receives.

Clearly, the Yellow Dragon Sovereign felt interested in this aspect of his, grinning as he stared at Mu Chen, who continued to launch his attacks akin to seeing a mouse struggling comically around in vain.

Bang!

A scarlet-red glow flashed within Mu Chen's eyes as a furious roar rang out from his throat. In the next instant, the Great Meru Demonic Pillar violently slammed towards the Yellow Dragon Sovereign once again, while the fresh blood seeping out from the corner of his mouth appeared exceedingly scarlet and eye-piercing.

"It's about time," said the Yellow Dragon Sovereign with a smile, eyes brimming with cruel ruthlessness as rays of brilliance started to condense within his hand. Giving a backhanded slap, he heavily sent a hand towards the Great Meru Demonic Pillar that was rumbling towards him.

At the instant when the two made contact, a chilling glint erupted within Mu Chen's eyes. Within his aurasea, glowing purplish runes furiously erupted from the "Page of Sealing". In the next instant, a ray of purplish

light erupted out, shooting as it travelled along the length of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. Finally, it shot through the palm of the Yellow Dragon Sovereign, rushing straight into his body.

As this happened, the smile present of the face of the Yellow Dragon Sovereign abruptly froze up as he felt the vast and unending Spiritual Energy within his body unexpectedly dissipating away. In the next instant, the power pressure he was radiating had quickly dissipated away.

As if it was sealed!

Bang!

The Great Meru Demonic Pillar violently smashed against the body of the Yellow Dragon Sovereign as frightening energies torrentially poured out from it. As a huge bang reverberated out, countless people stared in shock as they saw the Yellow Dragon Sovereign being sent flying across the horizon.

"Luo Li!"

As the webs between Mu Chen's thumbs and forefingers split apart, Mu Chen gave a loud roar.

Hearing his roar, the young girl in the distance shot up towards the sky. At this moment, the longsword within her hands appeared with an abnormally deep red colour. On its surface, a blood-red rune appeared to quietly melt away the blood present on the body of the sword.

Humm!

A sword cry resounded across the horizon, causing the surrounding space to shake. In the next instant, countless people stared in shock as the absolutely beautiful young girl with her slender waist had her silvery hair flutter around and a chilly expression on her lovable face as she sent a stab thrusting out.

The scarlet-red longsword erupted with eye-dazzling rays of blood-red light. In the next instant, a blood-red ray of sword light shot out, transforming into river of blood. Wherever it travelled, space shattered apart. Finally, as sounds of people sucking in cold breaths of air rang out,

the river of blood slashed down on the body of the Yellow Dragon Sovereign, who was sent flying by Mu Chen with not the slightest bit of mercy.

Bang!

Rays of blood-red light spread out across the sky as Sword Aura that blotted the skies howled out, causing the surrounding space to appear as if it was being pierced full of holes.

Seeing the spectacle before them, the various big shots present were completely dumbfounded.

Chapter 427: That Figure

Eye-piercing rays of blood-red sword light blossomed across the horizon akin to a blood-red firework, its beauty permeating with heart-palpitating fierceness within.

Countless people in this region were dumbfounded as they took in the spectacle that had just happened before them. Clearly, this had exceeded the expectations of everyone, as not a single one of them had imagined such a result. The Yellow Dragon Sovereign, who should have an absolute control over the entire situation and not let the slightest bit of unforeseen event to occur, had unexpected been sent flying by Mu Chen, with his demonic pillar, before being struck by the astonishing sword light that suddenly erupted from Luo Li.

Across the horizon, the blood-red rays of sword light present gradually dissipated away under the shocked and astonished gazes that blotted the skies. In the next moment, a figure started to reappeared in their lines-of-sight.

As the figure appeared, the continuous sounds of people sucking in breaths of cold air instantly rang out across the world, without a break.

The figure was naturally the Yellow Dragon Sovereign. However, at this moment, the expression on his face was dark to the point of becoming frightening. On his body, his robes were already torn apart, revealing his chest. At this moment, there was actually a line of bloodstain on his chest, extending up from his belly to his throat...

The Yellow Dragon Sovereign was actually injured!

Countless people looked in shock at the ravishing young girl in black robes hovering in the sky. She'd actually injured a First Grade Sovereign with her strength being of Heavenly Completion Stage? How's that possible...? Let's not talk about a Heavenly Completion Stage, even one that had passed through their Three Sovereign Tribulations wouldn't be able to injure a First Grade Sovereign!

"Such a formidable Divine Sword." Xia Tianyan muttered as he stared at

the Luo Shen Sword tightly grasped in Luo Li's hands, while a sliver of shock flashed within his eyes. He could feel a threatening sensation radiating from that sword. If that sword was to land in the hands of a First Grade Sovereign, he would feel extreme fear and dread.

That definitely had to be a Divine Artifact! Furthermore, it's definitely an uncommon one amongst all of the Divine Spiritual Artifacts.

"Exactly what is that girl's background? She's actually able to wield such a formidable Divine Artifact..." muttered Xia Tianyan in shock and astonishment. A Divine Artifact... That was something that even their Nine Summers Chamber of Commerce was unable to produce. He never imagined that one of them would appear in the hands of a Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy student! Such that it had caused his eyes to turn red with envy.

Nevertheless, despite his envy, Xia Tianyan knew that a young girl that was able to hold such a precious treasure would definitely have quite a formidable background. Whoever dared to recklessly dip their fingers in might have to pay a miserably high price.

Beside him, Xia Youran shook her head while shock and astonishment were present within her eyes. Although she could be considered yo have known Luo Li, she never imagined that the ravishing and quiet young girl would actually possess such a card.

"Nevertheless, she's too weak and is unable to properly wield the power of that Divine Sword. If not, with the two of them, one holding the demonic pillar and the other holding the Divine Sword, even the Yellow Dragon Sovereign would be hard pressed to achieve victory," said Xia Tianyan in a regretful tone. "Furthermore, at this moment... the Yellow Dragon Sovereign might have already gotten mad."

The Yellow Dragon Sovereign was mad with fury. Lowering his head to look at the wound on his chest, a shiver uncontrollably shook across his entire body as his face burned with shame. Although such an injury didn't do any harm to him, it was undoubtedly a vicious slap to his face. Furthermore, it happened right in front of countless experts from the

Northern Heavens Continent... He could already imagine how big of a joke he would be as this matter circulated around.

A Sovereign Realm existence received such a miserable attack from the hands of two Heavenly Completion Stage juniors. A moment of carelessness had resulted in him losing all of his face.

"You two bastards..." Everyone could hear the shivering present in the the Yellow Dragon Sovereign's voice as he stared towards Mu Chen and Luo Li with incomparable malevolence brimming within his eyes, wishing with all his might to tear the two of them into shreds.

"I'll make sure that you two wish that you were dead!"

The Yellow Dragon Sovereign roared out, his body explosively shooting out. In a flash, he had appeared right before Luo Li. With a flick of his finger, the space before him shattered apart, as a frightening ripple containing destructive energies swept towards Luo Li at lightning speed.

Whoosh!

However, just as the frightening ripped was about to reach Luo Li, a dragon shadow shot out, as Mu Chen grasped his hand around Luo Li's waist, taking the lead and rushing out of the range of the incoming ripple.

"You can't even guarantee your own life, and you still want to save other people, little bastard?" The Yellow Dragon Sovereign roared out with a malevolent smile. Tapping his finger out once again, a fluid-like ray of light shot out from it, shattering through space, violently smashing against Mu Chen's back.

Puff.

Suffering such a heavy strike, a mouthful of blood spurted out as Mu Chen tightly hugged Luo Li, the both of them flying thousands of metres back in a miserable fashion. Blood and flesh were indistinguishable on his back. If not for him having reached a small level of mastery of his Lightning God's Physique, that single point from the Yellow Dragon Sovereign might have already pierced through him.

"Mu Chen!"

The blood seeping out from Mu Chen's mouth dripped onto Luo Li's silvery hair, appearing exceedingly striking. Nevertheless, not caring about all of these, Luo Li raised her lovable face to look at the pale-faced Mu Chen. Upon staring at him, a tight clutch grasped her heart as a red print appeared on her bitten lip.

"I'm not dead yet."

Mu Chen muttered with a painful smile. All the bones in his body felt as if they had shattered, causing incomparable pain to rocket through his entire body. Truly worthy of a Sovereign realm expert. Just a slight bit of seriousness had already rendered them totally unable to put up any resistance. He had still underestimated the might of a Sovereign. Even after relying on the miraculous power of the "Page of Sealing", which allowed him to temporarily seal the Spiritual Energy within the body of the Yellow Dragon Sovereign, the two of them combined were still unable to do any genuine harm towards the latter.

"Indeed, you aren't dead yet. That's because I want you two to feel pain beyond any death!" An indifferent voice totally devoid of any mercy rang out from behind them. From behind, the Yellow Dragon Sovereign malevolently stared towards them as he raised his finger once again.

Clenching her teeth, Luo Li grasped her Luo Shen Sword as she wiped the tip of the sword with her finger. As her finger made contact, an incomparably complicated blood red rune surfaced on the body of the sword. Extending her hand, she planned to wipe that rune off, completely unsealing the "Luo Shen Sword".

However, just as she was able to do so, Mu Chen made a furious grasp at the body of the sword, instantly causing his hand to be sliced and bloodied by the fierce sword qi present. Seeing his actions, Luo Li was instantly shocked, causing her to hastily retract the sword qi present on the Luo Shen Sword.

"Let go!" cried Luo Li.

"Don't do this. Relax, I ain't gonna die that easily!" replied Mu Chen between his clenched teeth. Mu Chen knew about some of the formidable

cards Luo Li possessed. If she was to unleash them, she might just be able to subdue that Yellow Dragon Sovereign. However, the price she had to pay would be her earlier departure, something that Mu Chen didn't want to happen.

Luo Li knew what Mu Chen was thinking about. She deeply cherished and loved the times she spent together with Mu Chen. Nevertheless, all of this was ranked below his safety within her heart. If she could forsake them in exchange to saving Mu Chen's life, she would show no hesitation in doing so...

"Believe in me!"

Clenching her teeth, Luo Li looked straight into Mu Chen's eyes, before finally releasing her seal. Gently nodding her head, she replied, "If you don't have any more ways, I'll make my move!"

Her voice sounded resolute and decisive. Clearly, she would not permit Mu Chen to influence her decision in any way.

Giving a helpless smile, a shiver shook through Mu Chen's body as a giant dragon shadow surfaced beneath his feet. In the next instant, his body shot away like a spectre as a ray of light glanced past his ear. Although it had missed, a slash opened on Mu Chen's face.

All of a sudden, extremely terrifying Spiritual Energy fluctuations rushed towards the sky in the distance. As people started to glance over, they saw an astonishing fight taking place where Liu An and Ling Xi was. Ling Xi, who didn't show any interest in her fight against Liu An had a chilling expression blanketing over her lovable face, with her attacks being incomparable vicious. Frightening attacks headed successively towards Liu An, forcing the latter to the point of being caught unprepared.

"Scram off!"

With a frosty expression covering her lovable face, killing intent erupted from Ling Xi's beautiful eyes.

Shocked by the sudden burst of astonishing killing intent that had erupted from Ling Xi, Liu An gave a thoughtful glace towards Mu Chen,

who was escaping in a miserable fashion from the attacks of the Yellow Dragon Sovereign. Giving a helpless smile, he spoke out. "Miss Ling Xi, can we return to what we've done previously? What's the use in taking action now? It won't do any good for the both of us."

Bang!

However, before he could finish his words, with a wave of her hand, fluctuations appeared in the sky as countless rays of brilliance shot out, forming a gigantic thousand-plus metre large scarlet-red Spiritual Array. Within the Spiritual Array was a majestic thousand-plus metre tall volcano rapidly taking shape.

"Scram off!"

Ling Xi gave a cold roar as she gave a wave of her willowy sleeve. In the next instant, astonishing fluctuations erupted out from the majestic volcano. Lava erupted from its crater, transforming into an incomparably gigantic lava python. Surging forward, it howled as it attacked towards Liu An.

Noticing the incoming attack, the expression on Liu An's face changed as he did not dare to show the slightest negligence. With a low roar, a gigantic glowing Spiritual Energy figure condensed behind his back. Appearing like a giant that held the sky up, its breath caused gales and clouds to form. Sending its giant, corporeal-like finger rumbling out, it shattered the space before it, smashing head-on against the incoming giant lava python.

Facing against an angry Ling Xi, Liu An had no choice but to summon his Sovereign Celestial Body out.

As Ling Xi and Liu An unleashed heavy blows against each other, Mu Chen's situation was getting increasingly miserable. The frequency at which the Yellow Dragon Sovereign was sending his attacks grew increasingly fast, causing the wounds to increase in number, flesh blood flowing from all of them.

Embraced in his bosom, Luo Li's eyes turned red as she saw the growing injuries on Mu Chen's body. Clutching her Luo Shen Sword tightly, her

hands started to shiver.

"You've evaded truly well. Are you going to evade this again?"

The Yellow Dragon Sovereign gave a malevolent laugh, extending his ten fingers before furiously pressing down in the space before him.

Whoosh! Whoosh!

As he pressed his ten fingers down, ten frightening rays of light shattered through space, enveloping a circular radius of a thousand metres around Mu Chen. Such an attack was completely unavoidable.

Clenching his teeth, a black pagoda shot out from Mu Chen's hand. Rapidly expanding in size, it transformed into a nine-storey pagoda, enveloping Mu Chen within it.

Whoosh! Whoosh!

Rays of light violently smashed against the surface of the pagoda. Faced against such frightening attacks, even with its defensive capabilities, cracks started to appear on its surface. Finally with a loud boom, the greatest defensive card in Mu Chen's hand was completely smashed apart.

"You two bastards can go and die now!"

With a malevolent smile, the Yellow Dragon Sovereign explosively shot out. With a wave of his large hand, a giant Spiritual Energy hand thousand metres large started to condense. With a violent wave, he sent it smashing down towards Mu Chen and Luo Li, smashing through every inch of space between them.

The Yellow Dragon Sovereign had finally stopped playing and was now attempting to completely erase the life of Mu Chen and Luo Li.

As the Nine-Layered Pagoda shattered apart, Mu Chen spurted yet another mouthful of blood. Within his bosom, an ancient and cryptic blood-red rune surfaced on the Luo Shen Sword within Luo Li's hand with her finger tip extending out once again.

Now in an extremely bad shape, Mu Chen sensed the frightening fluctuations pressing down from his head. Faced against it, he could only

give a bitter smile and sigh. Shaking his head towards Luo Li, he raised his palm up as he planned to forcefully summon Nine Nether, who was currently in the middle of her evolution.

Humm!

However, just as Mu Chen was attempting to forcefully summon her, he discovered that the Nine-Layered Pagoda that was shattered by the Yellow Dragon Sovereign unexpectedly started to radiate with dazzling rays of brilliance. As the rays of brilliance started to converge together, it enveloped Mu Chen within it. At the depths of the brilliance, a figure of a lady seemed to slowly surface within.

As the figure surfaced from within, a sweet and gentle voice loudly rang out across the world. The voice sounded abnormally gentle. However, despite that, it contained a sliver of fury that caused the temperature of the entire world to turn icy-cold.

"Did you think that a measly First Grade Sovereign can harm my son?!"

Chapter 428: Bullying My Son

"Did you think that a measly First Grade Sovereign can harm my son?!"

As the gentle voice that brought along a sliver of fury reverberated across the entire world, shock filled the hearts of everyone present, especially after sensing the Spiritual Energy fluctuations that had flared up all of a sudden across this entire region. Even the faces of the various big shots violently contorted, their eyes brimming with shock as they stared at the figure of the lady that had taken shape within the brilliance.

From there, they were able to feel an indescribable pressure and might.

At this moment, a furious shiver shook through the body of Mu Chen. He was originally in the process of forcefully summoning Nine Nether, who was halfway through her evolution. Turning his head around, he blankly stared at the figure of the lady condensed within the rays of brilliance. The figure started to overlap with the warm and gentle silhouette within the deepest part of his memories. Ever since he had started to remember things, he had yet to see that figure again. Nevertheless, the warm and gentle figure within the deepest part of his memories was just like a brand, never fading away. The brand that originated from his bloodline was something that couldn't be erased, no matter how much time had elapsed.

"Mother?"

While in a somewhat vacant state, Mu Chen muttered out a single word, his voice sounded exceedingly hoarse and astringent, with a slight shakiness to it. It appeared as if he didn't dare to believe that the figure he had bitterly searched for had actually appeared here, right in front of him.

Only God knows how many times this figure appeared within his dreams. Ever since he's young, his dad would force him to diligently train and cultivate. When he was naughty and slacked off, he would get a bout of backside slaps from his dad. While bawling after the scoldings, a warm and gentle figure seemed to appear by his side, appearing flustered as she consoled the little him. At those moments, her warm and gentle voice

would seep right into his heart.

Today, at long last, the figure within his dreams had truly appeared before his eyes...

A complicated and indescribable feeling gushed out from Mu Chen's heart, like a flood, causing the eyes of the ever-so resilient youth to turn red.

While Mu Chen was lost in thought from seeing the figure of the lady, Ling Xi, who was in the process of an intense fight with Liu An, suddenly turned stiff. Turning her head around, she looked in complete disbelief at the exceedingly familiar figure that had appeared in her sight. In the next moment, her eyes turned red, before slashes of tears started to flow down her beautiful face.

"Aunt Jing."

Although she had lost quite a bit of her memories, the figure before her eyes was the most important person in her life. When she was brought out from that hell-like place, Ling Xi knew that the importance of that figure superseded her own life.

Seeing Ling Xi coming to a stop, Liu An breathed a sigh of relief. Ling Xi seemed to be in an unstable state of emotion, making it a good opportunity for him to take action. Nevertheless, he hesitated for a while and did not take advantage of it; afterall, he didn't have any grudge against her, nor was she included in his contract with the Demonic Dragon Palace. They had only requested for him to take action once. In such a circumstance, its best to make it as simple as possible, as he didn't wish to risk everything, including his life for the Demonic Dragon Palace.

Liu An slightly turned his head to look towards the figure of the lady, which had appeared out of nowhere, yet caused the hearts of the people to palpitate in shock. A frown appeared on his forehead as he thought, That shouldn't be a physical body. That's a spiritual form. Nevertheless, even though it was just a spiritual form, he could faintly discern, with a feeling of unease, that the lady before him might not be someone with a simple background.

An unforeseen change might have happened to this entire situation.

As countless people in the region looked over in shock at the beautiful figure that had condensed from the rays of blossoming light, the figure slowly lifted up her hand. With a gentle wave, the gigantic thousand metre large Spiritual Energy palm pressing down on Mu Chen suddenly froze up. In the next instant, cracks started to appear on it, and with a final loud bang, it transformed into glowing dots that blotted the skies.

With a single wave of her hand, the tyrannical attack of a First Grade Sovereign was instantly dispelled!

As this spectacle happened, even experts on the level of Xia Tianyan had their pupils furiously contracting in shock.

"Who are you?!"

The furious roar of the Yellow Dragon Sovereign rang across the horizon as he stared towards the beautiful figure amongst the brilliance in shock. Although the previous attack he had sent out wasn't his full power, it was impossible for anyone to break it as easily as she did. Exactly where did this mysterious lady come from?! Did she say that he was her son?! Could it be that she's the mother of that brat?!

"Your distinguished self, that smelly brat, Mu Chen, has stolen the treasure of our Demonic Dragon Palace. If he's your son, you can take him away, and we won't trouble you. He just has to return our treasure!" said the Yellow Dragon Sovereign in a deep voice.

He wasn't an idiot. He felt extreme danger from the mysterious lady before him. If she was to become his enemy, it would deal a serious blow towards the plans of their Demonic Dragon Palace.

"You've hurt my child! Even the entire Demonic Dragon Palace isn't enough to compensate for that!"

The lady's gentle voice had now turned into one of extreme fury and anger. With a raise of her hand, inexhaustible black light started to condense in her palm. With a whoosh, it transformed into an extremely exquisite black-coloured pagoda. From the looks of it, the black pagoda

was completely identical to the Nine-Layered Pagoda that Mu Chen had just summoned moments ago. Shooting into the sky, gales started to howl as it dramatically expanded in size. As the air rumbled, the entire region appeared to turn dim as to black pagoda grew to a size of thousands of metres in length. Akin to a meteor, it hovered in the air, its shadow shrouding over the entire region below it.

Spiritual Energy exploded throughout the entire region, condensing into gigantic tornadoes in the surroundings of the black pagoda.

This frightening commotion caused the face of the Yellow Dragon Sovereign to violently contort, as he could sense extremely dangerous fluctuations radiating from the black pagoda. In the next instant, with a loud roar, a gigantic thousand metre large Sovereign's Celestial Body condensed behind him. This entire Celestial Body was in a blackish-yellow colour, appearing as if it was cast from gold, giving people a feeling of indestructibility.

This was the "Heavenly Golden Celestial Body" that was the pride of the Yellow Dragon Sovereign. This was the cultivation result of harnessing the Heavenly Golden Smelting Spiritual Energy found in the clouds, tempering it with a unique Celestial Body Divine Art, Although this "Heavenly Golden Celestial Body" wasn't within the list of the top 99 Sovereign Celestial Bodies, it was much more tyrannical than any normal Sovereign Celestial Body. While he was only a First Grade Sovereign, the Yellow Dragon Sovereign was able to contend against a Second Grade Sovereign, all thanks to the "Heavenly Gold Celestial Body" that he had cultivated.

The situation now had clearly caused the Yellow Dragon Sovereign to feel an enormous threat. Therefore, without the slightest hesitation, he had brought out his greatest card.

"Bang!"

Despite that, not giving a single care, the black pagoda immediately suppressed the jet black rays of brilliance radiating from the Heavenly Golden Celestial Body. Like a black hole, it started to revolve, howling about as it descended down, enveloping the Yellow Dragon Sovereign and

his "Heavenly Golden Celestial Body" within it.

Roar!

A myriad of golden light erupted from the black pagoda and the roars of countless dragons resounded. In the next moment, all of the experts present in the region were overwhelmed with shock to see hundreds of giant golden dragons flying around above the black pagoda. Transforming into a golden-coloured flame, they rushed into the pagoda, hiding the earth and covering the skies as they encased the blackish-gold Celestial Body within. Surging forth and flaring out, they appeared to start their refinement of their captured target.

As the golden flames surged forth, the Yellow Dragon Sovereign was overwhelmed with shock and terror to see that his "Heavenly Golden Celestial Body", which could even stand up against a Second Grade Sovereign, was unexpectedly melting away at an astonishing speed.

Bang! Bang!

Brimming with terror, he hastily urged his Heavenly Golden Celestial Body to violently attack against the inner walls of the pagoda. However, despite his rampant attacks, the black pagoda didn't budge a single inch. Clearly, this black pagoda wasn't something that the little toy Mu Chen brought out could compare with.

Whoosh! Whoosh!

As they swept around within the pagoda, the golden flames quickly melted the Heavenly Golden Celestial Body away. In a short span of a dozen breaths, chills went down the spines of countless experts as they saw that the Heavenly Golden Celestial Body had been completely melted. Now, the Yellow Dragon Sovereign was left exposed against the raging golden flames with not a single defense present on his body.

As the golden flames wiggled and squirmed about, they transformed into a hundred giant golden dragons. Swimming around slowly, they malevolently stared at the Yellow Dragon Sovereign. In the next instant, spreading their gigantic bodies out, they swooped down towards him.

Urghh!

The Yellow Dragon Sovereign howled out as boundless Spiritual Energy erupted from his body. Various powerful attacks endlessly rumbled out of him; various Spirit Weapons were tossed out without a single care. Nevertheless, despite his rampant attacks, the giant golden dragons didn't budge a single bit. As golden flames flared out around their bodies, frightening Spiritual Energy currents howled out. At the instant when they made contact with his body, the Yellow Dragon Sovereign was immediately consumed by the surging golden flames.

Arghhhh!

This time, what rang out was an extremely miserable shriek as the Yellow Dragon Sovereign was covered by the golden flames, while his powerful body had started to combust.

Looking at the Yellow Dragon Sovereign being engulfed in the golden flames, and yet was unable to escape from them, Xia Tianyan and the other experts felt cold sweat dripping down their backs. Exactly what kind of skill is this? It's actually that overbearing! It had directly melted a Sovereign's Celestial Body away! From the looks of it, it also wanted to melt the Yellow Dragon Sovereign away!

The Yellow Dragon Sovereign's shrieks grew increasingly mournful. Clearly, he was quickly unable to endure for much longer.

"Please stay your hand, your distinguished self. If there's any area that we've offended you, our Demonic Dragon Palace is willing to compensate you in any way. Please forgive and let the Yellow Dragon Sovereign go!"

As Yellow Dragon Sovereign was quickly about to be refined, a loud roar finally rang out from the distance. Turning around, everyone saw the Black Dragon Sovereign shooting over. At this moment, an abnormally ugly expression hung from his face. Originally, Dean Tai Cang would almost be unable to endure for much longer. He never imagined that out of the blue, such a frightening fiend would appear.

In such a short moment, she had almost refined the Yellow Dragon Sovereign.

Nevertheless, faced against his roar, the lady within the blossoming light didn't show any signs of stopping. As the golden flames continued to curl up, the shrieks coming from the Yellow Dragon Sovereign gradually grew weaker and weaker.

"You's going too far!"

Upon seeing this, the Black Dragon Sovereign instantly roared out, sending his killing intent rocketing up to the skies. In a flash, he appeared right in front of the lady. Sending a palm out, the heavens turned dim as hundreds of dragon shadows surged forth, shattering the heavens and earth in their wake.

This Black Dragon Sovereign was truly worthy of being a Fifth Grade Sovereign. This attack of his clearly revealed a strength that vastly exceeded that of the Yellow Dragon Sovereign. Any action he did was capable of shattering the heavens and the earth.

Within the brilliance, a jade-like palm extended out. There wasn't any rampant Spiritual Energy fluctuations present on it, just a single palm patting out. Just like that, it slammed head-on against the exceedingly rampant palm coming from the Black Dragon Sovereign.

Bang!

As the two palms slammed against each other, an astonishing clap of a thunderous roar resounded out. Cracks appeared in a spherical space tens of thousands of metres around the two as space started to collapse. From a distance, the space appeared like a gigantic piece of shattered glass.

Boom!

Frightening gales and spatial waves swept out as everyone sucked in a breath of cold air when they saw that the Black Dragon Sovereign had actually been sent flying back thousands of metres by a single palm of the lady. In the next moment, after much difficulty, him managed to stabilize himself, while an inconceivable expression of disbelief appeared on his face.

At this moment, the entire world seemed to turn quiet.

The scalps of the various big shots turned numb as they thought, Exactly where did this frightening lady come from?! She's actually that powerful!

"Arghh!"

Miserable shrieks continued to ring out, causing people to hastily turn around to see the figure of the Yellow Dragon Sovereign engulfed in golden flames within the black dragon. Finally as the flames flitted across, a loud bang resounded as the body of the Yellow Dragon Sovereign had actually exploded apart.

However, despite that, there was no bloody mist formed as everything was turned into nihility by the golden flames.

Therefore, as the golden flames dissipated away, there was not a single thing remaining within the black pagoda.

The Yellow Dragon Sovereign had actually been refined alive!

Seeing this, Xia Tianyan, the Western Extreme Sovereign and the other big shots of the Northern Heavens Continent could not help gulping their saliva down. As their faces turned successively pale, shadows of terror and dread flashed within the depths of their eyes.

Such an overbearing ability!

As silence hung over the entire region, the brilliance started to slowly dissipate away as a gentle figure appeared before the countless shocked and terrified gazes.

Raising her head, she looked towards the Black Dragon Sovereign in the distance as a chilling voice rang across the world.

"Since you've bullied my son, I'll bully you. What's the matter?"

Chapter 429: Aunt Jing

"Since you'd bully my son, I'll bully you. What's the matter?"

The lady's cold voice resounded across the entire world as the originally gentle voice had now brought along a sliver of unconcealable fury and overbearingness. In the eyes of her, the Dragon Demonic Palace, known as the overlord of the Northern Heavens Continent , seemed to be absolutely not worth of any single bit of dread.

If not for her refining the Yellow Dragon Sovereign alive before sending the Black Dragon Sovereign flying away with a swat of her hand, there might be many people that would snort their noses disdainfully at her words. However, at this moment, there was no one that dared to laugh out loud as everyone knew that the mysterious lady before their eyes indeed possess the capability to do so.

Within the Great Thousand Worlds, there were indeed too many crouching tigers and hidden dragons. No one would know exactly when would an elite expert would pop out in front of them, just like what this mysterious lady had done.

Therefore, the entire region turned quiet as the chilling voice rang out. Even though the Black Dragon Sovereign's face was brimming with gloominess, he didn't dare to recklessly take action against the mysterious lady again. Although she was just a spiritual form, she actually possessed such frightening power. If her original body was present, how frightening would her true power be?

"Such frightening power."

Xia Tianyan whispered. Beside him, the face of the Western Extreme Palace Sovereign was similarly filled with shock. The mysterious lady before his eyes was truly too powerful.

"She's actually Mu Chen's mother? What background does that Mu Chen have?" Xia Tianyan asked in shock as he looked towards Xia Youran. From the looks of it, this mysterious lady possesses strength that absolutely trumps that of the Northern Sea Dragon. However, if Mu Chen

has such a background, why would he go to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy to train and cultivate? Such a powerful background, would definitely allow him to train and cultivate much faster than in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Hearing her father's question, Xia Youran shook her head. Clearly, she also felt extreme confused about this question.

"Looks like an accident is going to happen to the scheme of the Dragon Demonic Palace." said Xia Tianyan quietly while breathing a sigh of relief. The sudden appearance of such a frightening Sovereign realm expert clearly wasn't something that was under the control of the Dragon Demonic Palace.

As silence hung over the entire region, across the horizon, the lady stared coldly towards the Black Dragon Sovereign in the distance. Hesitating for a while, she didn't take action again. Turning around slowly, her heart started to palpitate as she looked at the youth not far away from her, who was staring right back at her with a blank look on his face.

In the next moment, her eyes, which were brimming with an ice-cold shade moments ago turned moist and red in the next instant. Within her eyes, inexhaustible warmth and gentleness and inconcealable emotions gushed out, with even her body started to shiver.

At the same time, Mu Chen stared right at the figure of the lady. Her white robes, her gentle complexion. That warm and gentle face was just like the warm and gentle figure in the deepest part of his memories. An indescribable emotion started to gush out from the deepest part of his heart, causing his nose to sting and water.

After so many years, he was finally able to see her appearance clearly for the first time. There wasn't any of the so called strange and unfamiliar feeling present, as the feelings from their bloodline connection causing him to tremble emotionally.

"Mother?"

His voice rang out, hoarse and astringent with some trembling present in it.

The hoarse voice of the youth caused tears to flow out from the already red eyes of the female. When she had left him that year, he was still in swaddling clothes. To her, that little life was her everything. For the sake of protecting him, she was willing to endure the knife like pain of not being able to see him and show care for him. After leaving her son and husband to return to her clan alone, she had assumed that was a goodbye for a lifetime. She was never able to she the little fellow that cause her to feel deeply worried and anxious, as this would cause danger for him. Yet, the heavens doesn't forsake those people with hearts. Today's she was finally able to see her little fellow. Although this was just a spiritual body, the hoarse "mum" from the youth was more than able to let her feel that her ten over years of solitude and yearn akin to knifes slashing on her heart were all worth it.

"Yes!"

Her eyes swollen with redness, the lady nodded heavily, before slowly walking forward. Arriving before the youth, she knelt down, placing her trembling, icy-cold hands against the warm face of Mu Chen. A smile blossomed on her face as tears continued to splash down. Choking with emotion, she said, "Little fellow, you've grown so big."

That infant that was crying and making noise in that swaddling cloths had grown into a tall youth in those ten plus years. His face, was even more handsome than his father's during that year.

Feeling the icy-cold palms on his face and seeing the tear stricken face before him, the face that was connected to him, at this instant, even with his resilience, tears fell uncontrollable down Mu Chen's face. Didn't everybody say that men don't cry? He had never felt that frail and weak before. Ever since ten plus years ago, time to time, he would think about this instant. Although his mother had left him ever since he was young, he never harboured the slightest bit of hatred for her, as he was able to feel the warm protection deep within his body, even though she was not by his side.

She, who had remained calm and unflustered even after refining the Yellow Dragon Sovereign alive and sending the Black Dragon Sovereign

flying away, immediate become flustered as she saw the tears streaming down his face. Hastily wiping them away from the youth's face, she spoke out "I'm sorry. It's all mother's fault for not being by your side."

Although she wasn't by Mu Chen side's for all these years, she was more than able to see the strength the latter currently possessed. Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase. Such strength absolutely couldn't be trained and cultivated in a place like the Northern Spiritual Realm. Without her help, Mu Feng clearly didn't have any way of providing much help to Mu Chen on this aspect. Therefore, she was extremely clear exactly how much pain and suffering Mu Chen had to pay to be able to walk from the small Northern Spiritual Realm to this place, something that exceedingly pained her heart.

Shaking his head, Mu Chen wiped off the tears on his face. After all these years of tempering, there were exceedingly rare moments that he would reveal such a weak and frail side of himself. He had never even revealed this side of him in front of Luo Li.

"Mum, I've finally found you. I've promised the old man that I'll definitely bring you back." grasping the hands the lady tightly, the feeling of their connected bloodline causing his palms to be blanketed with warmth and love.

Giving a faint smile, the lady replied, " This is just a spiritual body mum's left behind. It will only appear when your pagoda break. Therefore, mum can't stay here for long. However, appearing now and being able to see you is more than enough for mum."

Hearing her words, an anxious expression appeared on Mu Chen's face as he hastily asked out, "Exactly where are you now, mum?"

A complicated expression sprung up on the lady's face. Giving a sigh, she replied, "Now's not the time to tell you. Mum also doesn't want to leave you two, but its all for your safety that I have no choice but to do it. Therefore, Mu Chen, you can't be too hot headed and reckless, okay?"

"I know. Relax mum, I'll become very strong! Strong enough so that regardless of where you are, I'll be able to rescue you out from there! This

is something that I've promised dad!" replied Mu Chen had his nodded his head firmly, his eyes brimming with incomparably resolution and decisiveness.

Staring blankly at youth in front of him and seeing the resolute expression on his face, a gratified smile blossomed on her face as she spoke out with a soft voice, "The only thing I've wanted for is for you and your dad to live ordinarily and safety..."

"However, that way, our family can never be reunited." shaking his head Mu Chen interrupted. "Dad really missed you, mum. Dad said that his talent isn't as good as mine, so there's some matters that he can't accomplish. Therefore, I'm everything he had hoped for. As for the matters my dad can't do, I'll accomplish it!"

Looking at the youth in front of her, the lady could not help but to rub his head. Filled with gratification, she replied, "My little fellow's truly grown up..."

"Aunt Jing?"

An emotional, shivering voice rang out from behind. Turning her head around the lady noticed a familiar face, causing happiness to instantly bloom on within her eyes. "Ling Xi, you actually also here?"

Her entire body trembling, Ling Xi looked towards the familiar face that wasn't forgotten by her even after her loss of memory. Slowly walking forward, Ling Xi gave her a firm hug, burying her face into the lady's hair as choking sobs rang out.

"I thought that you don't want me anymore, Aunt Jing."

The lady gave a gentle pat on Ling Xi's back, before speaking out apologetically. " It's my bad for not being able to protect you. If I've never brought you back, your memory would not have been wiped.

Nevertheless, its good that you're alright. If not, I'll not rest till I get compensation for what they did."

Ling Xi hastily shook her head as she replied, "Aunt Jing, regardless of the outcome, I'll never regret following along with you. As long as you

don't remove the memories of you, I all good."

"Nevertheless, it seems as you and Mu Chen are bound by fate to actually meet each other at this place." said the lady with a faint smile.

Hearing that, Mu Chen smile, before turning his head around and looking towards Luo Li standing not far behind from him. Waving his hand to her, Luo Li finally walked over apprehensively. Anxiousness was present within her usually clear and tranquil eyes. Clearly, she knew exactly who the lady before her was to Mu Chen.

"Mum, this is Luo Li." grasping Luo Li's jade like hand, Mu Chen sent a simple and straightforward smile towards his mum.

The lady immediately turned her head over. Upon spotting the two holding hands, she made a slight pause as though something clicked in her mind while her gaze started to size up Luo Li.

As she continued to size up Luo Li, the latter immediately grasped Mu Chen's hand forcefully,her heart starting to race as a blush spread across her lovable face. Mustering her courage, she looked straight towards the lady, afraid of any unfavorable aspects in her performance. Other than some incidents that had happened with Mu Chen over the past few years, this was truly the first time that such emotions had appeared within her heart.

"Such a beautiful lady." the lady finally gave a faint smile as she exclaimed in admiration. Her son's eyesight truly was good. The young girl before her had outstanding temperament and an absolutely stunning appearance. Paired with Mu Chen, they truly made a heaven blessed match.

Hearing her words, a deeper shade of red appeared on Luo Li's lovable face, feeling flustered due to not knowing exactly how to address the lady before her.

"Call me Aunt Jing." Aunt Jing said with a gentle smile, extending her hands to grasp the slender hands of Luo Li.

"Nice to meet you, Aunt Jing."

Hearing their words, a silly smile appeared at the corner of Mu Chen's mouth, while a sweet feeling appearing in his throat. Although the injuries that he had suffered were showing signs of breaking out again, he forcefully swallowed the blood in his mouth back down, with not a single sign of it shown on his face.

His actions were extremely discrete, with even Luo Li and Ling Xi not discovering a hint of it.

Nevertheless, a slight wrinkle appeared on Aunt Jing's forehead as she grabbed Mu Chen's hand. After probing the injuries present within his body, a slightly cold shade appeared within her eyes. In the next instant, a ray of brilliance radiated out from her hand, enveloping Mu Chen within it.

Under the warm and gentle brilliance, Mu Chen was shocked to see that the injuries present on his body had actually started to recover. Even his back, where it was just a mess of blood and flesh had rapidly turned clean and unscathed as before.

"Mother, are you going to disappear very soon?" asked Mu Chen with slight nervousness in his voice.

Shaking her head, Aunt Jing gently rubbed Mu Chen's head, full of love and pamper. "Relax. There's still some time. However now, mum needs to get rid of some of these irksome troubles in front of us."

As her voice rang out, she let go of Mu Chen. In the next moment, under to countless respectful gazes shooting over in this region, she slowly turned her body around.

Chapter 430: Fearsome Strength

When Aunt Jing, once again, turned her body around, the hearts of all of the experts present in the region skipped a beat. All of them immediately evaded her look, not daring to cross gazes with the former. From the earlier spectacle, this lady that appeared sweet and gentle possessed a completely unmatched ferocity in her attacks that was an 180 degree reversal from her temperament moments ago.

There was no one that dared to underestimate a protective mother, especially when one's mother was extremely, extremely powerful...

Noticing Aunt Jing's ice-cold gaze shooting over from the distance, the eyelids of the Black Dragon Sovereign started to uncontrollably jump. He never imagined that Mu Chen would actually possess such a background. This made him want to curse and swear out. If Mu Chen has such a formidable mother, why the hell did he have to come to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy to train and cultivate?

"Madam..." Bracing himself, the Black Dragon Sovereign gave an awkward smile as he spoke out, "It's the fault of our Demonic Dragon Palace for the matter that happened here. I hope that you can forgive us. For the sake of compensating you, our Demonic Dragon Palace won't ask for our treasure back anymore. Please treat it as our apology."

Seeing the Black Dragon Sovereign take such a low stance, the various big shots present could not help smacking their lips. Who would have thought that the rude and unreasonable Black Dragon Sovereign would one day be pressed down so much that he couldn't even raise his head, and even have to willingly give away the treasure of their Demonic Dragon Palace.

While they were feeling shocked and astonished, roars of anger and fury filled the heart of the Black Dragon Sovereign. Nevertheless, there was nothing else he could do. Although the mysterious lady before him was just a spiritual body, she was already able to pressure him to the point of death. If her spiritual body was already that terrifying, exactly what realm

was her original form in?

An expert of that realm was an existence that their Demonic Dragon Palace absolutely cannot provoke.

"It is not up to you guys to teach my son," said Aunt Jing with an indifferent tone.

Hearing her words, a shiver shook through the face of the Black Dragon Sovereign. Giving a dry laugh, he didn't dare to respond to her in any other way.

Shooting a glare at him, Aunt Jing cast her gaze towards the gigantic light screen in the distance that was enveloping the entire region, where Dean Tai Cang was currently standing. Having lost the control of a Fifth Grade Sovereign due to the Black Dragon Sovereign's absence, four First Grade Sovereigns were clearly not able to hold him down.

Noticing the direction of Aunt Jing's gaze, the expression of the Black Dragon Sovereign's face slightly changed, before speaking out, "Madam, I beseech of you to not interfere in the matters of others."

Turning to look at the Black Dragon Sovereign, Aunt Jing gave a faint smile and replied, "You're just a Fifth Grade Sovereign. You don't have any right to tell me to do anything."

As her voice rang out, she gave a flick of her finger, causing Spiritual Energy to gush out throughout the entire region. In the next instant, it transformed into a gigantic thousand metre wide ray of light. Piercing through space, it shot straight towards the light screen at lightning speed.

"You!"

In a fit of anger, the Black Dragon Sovereign took a step forward. In the next instant, a Spiritual Energy Celestial Body multitudes larger than the "Heavenly Golden Celestial Body" of the Yellow Dragon Sovereign condensed behind his back. Frightening pressure proceeded to radiate, causing hurricanes to whirl up across the region.

Despite being faced against the Black Dragon Sovereign with his Sovereign Celestial Body summoned out, Aunt Jing didn't even bother to

take another look at him. With a wave of her sleeve, the gigantic ten thousand metre tall black pagoda rushed towards the sky. In the next moment, the black hole at the base of the pagoda started to revolve. As it cast its shadow out, it's pressure was sent straight down on the Black Dragon Sovereign.

Upon seeing this, the face of the Black Dragon Sovereign instantly changed. Just moments ago, he had seen with his own eyes the Yellow Dragon Sovereign being refined alive after being trapped in the pagoda. Thus, he naturally knew how terrifying this black pagoda was. Not daring to show the slightest bit of neglect, he retreated back in a miserable fashion, escaping from the black pagoda's range.

Bang!

The gigantic thousand-plus metre large ray of light violently slammed against the light screen. In the next moment, five thousand-plus metre long rays of light shot out in all directions as four of the First Grade Sovereigns of the Demonic Dragon Palace immediately spurted mouthfuls of blood. At this moment, the light screen that was barely being maintained had also shattered apart.

Whoosh!

Rocketing up towards the sky, Dean Tai Cang shot a dark look towards the Black Dragon Sovereign and the rest from the Demonic Dragon Palace. Turning his gaze towards the direction of Aunt Jing, he cupped his hands and spoke in a dignified manner, "Thank you, madam, for helping me."

He had clearly seen the the unforeseen incident that had happened just moments ago. If not for the tyrannical appearance of the mysterious lady before him, it would truly be extremely difficult for him to escape from the trap that was sprung on him today. Furthermore, the latter's strength and attacks caused him to feel shock and astonishment within his heart. From the looks of it, she seems to be Mu Chen's mother, right? However, from some of the information I know about him, Mu Chen seems to have come from a very small place, with his father appearing to not show any

extraordinary strength at all. However... why does his mother possess such terrifying strength?

While doubt filled Dean Tai Cang's heart, Aunt Jing gave a faint smile towards him. Nodding her head, she replied, "Dean Tai Cang, can you let me deal with these people?"

She had known the in's and out's of the overall situation from Ling Xi, and also got to know that Mu Chen was currently training and cultivating in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Therefore, she was rather respectful towards Dean Tai Cang.

Seeing how respectfully she was to him, Dean Tai Cang instantly gawked. However, nodding his head, he replied, "If you need anything, please just speak out, madam."

However, from the earlier situation, the mysterious lady before his eyes clearly possessed unfathomable strength. After all, if not for her tyrannical appearance, it would be absolutely impossible for him alone to be a match for the Black Dragon Sovereign and the others from the Demonic Dragon Palace.

Giving a faint smile, Aunt Jing replied, "I'll have to thank Dean Tai Cang, then."

As her voice rang out, she turned her head, once again, towards the Black Dragon Sovereign and the rest of the Demonic Dragon Palace, whose faces had started to violently contort.

"Madam... do you truly want to go at odds with our Demonic Dragon Palace?" As an ugly expression hung on his face, the Black Dragon Sovereign spoke out, "Although my strength isn't as good as your own, do you have to go that far, Madam? Furthermore, our allied partner, the Immeasurable Old Ancestor, has already arrived in the Northern Heavens Continent. He's a Ninth Grade Sovereign!"

At this moment, the only thing the Black Dragon Sovereign could do was to use the cover of the Immeasurable Old Ancestor in hopes that it would serve as a bit of a deterrence for the mysterious lady before him.

However, his attempts clearly landed on deaf ears. Upon hearing his words, an amused smile appeared on Aunt Jing's face as she shook her head, speaking out in a soft voice, "Ninth Grade Sovereign? I don't know how many people of this caliber my Divine Pagoda has already suppress..."

"At the beginning, I didn't have any inclination to think about your schemes. However, after so many years and difficulties, I've finally been able to see my son. If I let you guys bully him and not do anything, being a mother, that's too unreasonable, right?"

Raising her palm, rays of light seemed to condense within it, before transforming into countless mysterious and abstruse glowing seals.

"Therefore... today, you all will have to pay some price."

As her final words rang out, she gave a wave of her sleeve. All of a sudden, the entire world turned dim as an endless starry sky surfaced across the horizon. Countless rays of light started to converge together, and when seen from the distance, it appeared like a gigantic Spiritual Array that blanketed the entire heavens and earth.

However, this Spiritual Array was too terrifying. Blanketing thousands and thousands of metres across the entire heavens, it had changed the Celestial Bodies in the sky. Appearing like an independent space, it had completely sealed the entire heavens and earth up.

Within this region, everyone had been enveloped by this Spiritual Array.

Xia Tianyan, the Western Extreme Sovereign and the other Sovereign realm experts looked in shock as they took in the spectacle before them. Within the Spiritual Array, every sparkling star radiated with incomparably frightening Spiritual Energy fluctuations.

Furthermore, all of them could feel that those stars weren't illusionary at all.

If they were truly activated, those stars might howl down like genuine meteors. At that moment, a radius thousands upon thousands of metres wide would be completely obliterated, with not a single life present after their wake.

Such a Spiritual Array was absolutely impossible, even for the for those Spiritual Array Grandmasters... Exactly what background does the mysterious lady before them have?! The attainments for this Spiritual Array wasn't comparable to those of Spiritual Array Masters!

Even amongst the Great Thousand Worlds, that would absolutely be a great figure that would dominate an entire region!

Mu Chen was similarly stunned and in awe by the spectacle before him. Being a Spiritual Array Master himself, he naturally

"That's why dad said that mother is the best at cultivating with Spiritual Arrays..."

Mu Chen muttered out as he scratch his head. Now, he had finally understood why his old man didn't feel it was any accident why he had a god-like speed of improvement in his training and cultivation of Spiritual Arrays. That's because his mom's on the level of Spiritual Array Scholars...

The faces of the Black Dragon Sovereign and the other four First Grade Sovereigns turned deathly pale as terror and dread gushed out from their eyes. Clearly the shock they had felt wasn't small.

"Flee! Quickly! She's only a spiritual body, so it's impossible for her to activate a Spiritual Array of this caliber! Let's run before this Spiritual Array activates!"

Rapidly regaining his clarity, the Black Dragon Sovereign gave a furious clench of his teeth as he growled out. True, the Spiritual Array before him was extremely frightening. However, the one activating it was only a spiritual body. If not, the only thing they could do was to await their deaths.

"Use the Blood Escape Art!"

Giving a fierce roar, the arm of the Black Dragon Sovereign furiously exploded apart. As blood mist perfused out, rampant Spiritual Energy blotted the skies, sweeping out akin to a storm.

Seeing the actions of the Black Dragon Sovereign, the other four sovereigns furiously clenched their teeth, before their arms

simultaneously exploded into blood mists. Torrential Spiritual Energy swept out as cracks started to suddenly appear in the space surrounding them. In the next moment, their bodies started to transform into bloody lights, rushing into the cracks without the slightest bit of hesitation.

Upon seeing the ruthless and decisive actions of the Black Dragon Sovereign and the other four, Aunt Jing felt somewhat shocked and astonished. Giving a flick of her finger, an incomparably eye-dazzling ray of Spiritual Energy light rushed towards the sky like a golden liquid. In the next instant, it rushed straight into the rapidly closing spatial cracks.

Bang!

Astonishing fluctuations radiated out as the surrounding space completely shattered apart. As spatial fluctuations radiated out, they were followed by numerous incomparably mournful shrieks ringing from within, reverberating across the entire region.

As the spatial whirlpools formed quickly dissipated away, the shattered space started to gradually return its original state.

Waving her sleeve, the giant Spiritual Array blanketing the entire region dissipated away. As the rays from the sun illuminated the earth once again, countless experts sucked in a breath of relief, while they felt their whole bodies drenched in cold sweat. Looking back at the mysterious lady, terror and dread gushed out from their eyes.

"That's a pity."

Aunt Jing muttered while slightly shaking her head. Looking towards Dean Tai Cang, she spoke out, "I've already killed two people, while the other three should have severe injuries as they ran away. Truly, it's hard to muster that much strength with just a spiritual body."

Hearing her words, even the usually firm and astute Dean Tai Camg could not help wiping away the cold sweat that had covered his forehead.

Chapter 431: Coming to an End

The vast and boundless fluctuations radiating across the region gradually dissipated away. A heavy curtain had fallen on the various large battles taking place in this region all thanks to the appearance of Aunt Jing. Terror was present on the faces of the various big shots of the Northern Heavens Continent as their gazes towards Aunt Jing were filled with dread. An expert of her level had absolutely no enemies in the entirety of their Northern Heavens Continent.

Now, all of them were clear that following the fleeing of the Black Dragon Sovereign and his associates, the confrontation between the Demonic Dragon Palace and the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had come to an end. For the Demonic Dragon Palace, this end was truly too miserable, with their Sovereign realm experts suffering massive losses. Perhaps, in the future, the Demonic Dragon Palace would no longer have the qualifications to contend against the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy for supremacy.

Truthfully speaking, there were quite a few big shots who had secretly breathed a sigh of relief. Although the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was a leviathan that towered over the other peak influences, they didn't exhibit too much ambition and lust for power over the past years. Compared to the Demonic Dragon Palace, this was much, much better. If not for the all-rounded preparations of the Demonic Dragon Palace, unexpectedly inviting such a big figure like the Immeasurable Old Ancestor, there would definitely be some big shots taking action at the last possible moment to help the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy regain a hold of this situation.

However, there was totally no need to take action now. With Aunt Jing's appearance, she had instantly turned the entire situation around. The Demonic Dragon Palace, which had occupied the superiority from the beginning, had all fled away, with heavy injuries and even death. Thinking about this, they wouldn't be able to recover in the near future. Not only that, they had truly lost the qualifications to contend against the Northern

Heavens Spiritual Academy.

"What a pity." A few big shots secretly sighed in regret. Originally, they had planned to give the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy some help when they were at their weakest. This would allow them to let the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy owe them a favor. However, from the looks of it now, they had lost such an opportunity.

Across the horizon, Aunt Jing shot a look towards the space where the Black Dragon Sovereign and his associates had fled into. Turning to look at Dean Tai Cang, she spoke out in a soft voice, "Now, since the Demonic Dragon Palace has suffered a huge blow to their strength, I think that the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy shouldn't give up on this opportunity. I'm just a spiritual body, and can't stay here for long. However, I believe that the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy will not leave such a big threat around. If not, on the off-chance that an opportunity presents itself for them, they will go into a life and death struggle over it. How much threat will this create for Mu Chen? Therefore, I hope that the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy will be dutiful in this."

Aunt Jing's voice didn't appear fierce at all. Yet, Dean Tai Cang could not help giving a bitter smile in reply. This felt a little like a student's parent holding the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy accountable for putting their child in danger. Nevertheless, he replied in a dignified manner. "Please feel at ease, Madam. This time, our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy will definitely not let the Demonic Dragon Palace go lightly. In the past, we're unable to take action against them, due to the ancient Spiritual Array they had in their old lair. If its activated by the Black Dragon Sovereign and five other sovereigns, even our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's Northern Sea Dragon is unable to break it. Therefore, the only thing we could do was to allow them to hole up. However, after suffering serious losses today, the might of that ancient Spiritual Array would be drastically weakened and won't have much defensive capabilities anymore."

"Therefore, we'll definitely not leave any threats behind!"

As he spoke the last sentence, Dean Tai Cang's voice resolutely and decisively rang out, while killing intent swirled within his eyes. The poison that was the Demonic Dragon Palace had always caused their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy to feel extremely worried and troubled, and caused their students going on real world training and tempering to feel panic-stricken. However, due to some reasons, they weren't able to completely wipe them off the face of the world. At the very end, they could only sign an agreement to not let their Elders take action, while letting their younger generations duke it out.

Hearing his reply, Aunt Jing gently nodded her head. Raising her head up, her gaze penetrated through the layers of sea-like clouds. Looking towards an extreme distance away, she spotted two astonishing figures in confrontation with one another. The frightening fluctuations radiating from there seemed to be able to be felt by everyone in the entire Northern Heavens Continent.

"Is your Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's Northern Sea Dragon fighting with someone? Is that person that Immeasurable Old Ancestor? Ninth Grade Sovereign, huh? He's not too bad." Rays of brilliance seemed to circulate within Aunt Jing's eyes as she spoke out.

Hearing her replied, Dean Tai Cang gave a helpless laugh. A Ninth Grade Sovereign's unexpectedly on the level of "not too bad" in her eyes... If that's so, him being a Fifth Grade Sovereign truly had no face to speak out towards her. However, thinking about how the Black Dragon Sovereign was expelled by Aunt Jing like a cowering stray dog caused him to calm down. The Great Thousand Worlds truly was vast and boundless with crouching tigers and hidden dragons present everywhere. One would be unable to predict when a frightening expert that would shake the entire region would suddenly appear before oneself.

"Madam..."

Dean Tai Cang hesitated for a bit as he spoke out. After shooting a look across the heavens towards a region that was hard to see with the naked-eye, he halted halfway in his words. He wanted to ask Aunt Jing to provide assistance and help the Northern Sea Dragon. Although he didn't assume

that the Immeasurable Old Ancestor would be able to defeat the Northern Sea Dragon, he was worried about any unforeseen circumstances that might occur. After all, the existence of the Northern Sea Dragon was essential for the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy to plant their feet within the five Great Academies. Therefore, it would be an life-threatening blow for their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy if a mishap happened to the Northern Sea Dragon.

Shooting a look at him, Aunt Jing replied, "Your Northern Sea Dragon has already reached the cusp of a Earth Sovereign. After training and cultivating for some time, it shouldn't be hard for him to breakthrough. If they continue fighting, your Northern Sea Dragon will gain the superiority."

"However..." Aunt Jing hesitated for a bit, before giving a smile and continuing, "Since Mu Chen's training and cultivating in your Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, and has received care from you all. Being a mother, I'll naturally have to show my gratitude."

As of now, she was only a spiritual body, being unable to use her original one. Therefore, she wasn't able to stay for long by Mu Chen's side. Therefore, Mu Chen would have to continue relying on the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy for his future training and cultivation. Since this was the case, Aunt Jing didn't mind gifting a favor to the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. "Thank you very much!"

Dean Tai Cang cupped his hands towards her, his voice brimming with gratefulness and appreciation. He clearly understood the reason why Aunt Jing would offer so much help; it's all due to Mu Chen being in their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Waving her hand towards him, Aunt Jing replied, "The remaining amount of energy in this spiritual body should be enough to scare away that Immeasurable Old Ancestor."

As her voice rang out, with a move of her body, she transformed into a ray of light. Shooting across the horizon, she swept past the layers of sea-like clouds, disappearing into the distance in a blink of an eye.

Everyone looked towards the direction where she had disappeared while shock filled their hearts. Clearly, everyone here knew what she was about to do, causing them to secretly grin. Looks like we're going to see something that will broaden our horizons.

Not long after Aunt Jing had disappeared, vast and boundless fluctuations swept out from the distance skies. Across the horizon, gales howled and swept out, with the Spiritual Energy of the world having completely flared and erupted out. Clearly, an extremely terrifying fight was taking place at the distance skies.

Bang!

A crack of thunder resounded as a furious roar seemed to reverberate across the world. "Who are you? Madam, I'm the Immeasurable Old Ancestor of the Immeasurable Continent..."

However, before that roaring voice could complete its sentence, it was interrupted midway as the Spiritual Energy fluctuations of the world grew increasing rampant.

Roar!

The furious roars of the Immeasurable Old Ancestor continued to resound out. In the next instant, countless experts raised their heads in shock to see that the cloud layers in the distant skies had seemed to shatter apart, while storms could be faintly discerned surging out from there.

As that happened, everyone could also see the image of the Immeasurable Old Ancestor suddenly warping and distorting, before he was successively forced to retreat.

"You, you, remember this from this old ancestor! I'll definitely return this payment back!"

The frightening impacts lasted for a dozen seconds, before the Immeasurable Old Ancestor finally gave a furious howl. The cloud layers across the horizon shattered apart as the surrounding space collapsed as black sea water gushed out from within. In the next moment, a somewhat

miserable-looking figure rushed into the collapsed space, disappearing within without a trace left.

The Immeasurable Old Ancestor that had come over from the Immeasurable Continent had actually been frightened to the point of fleeing away!

As Mu Chen took in the scene before him, he couldn't help smacking his lips. His mother's strength truly was too terrifying. The current him seemed to have the potential of being a pampered "second generation". Thinking about this, Mu Chen smiled and laughed out. Naturally, this was just a fleeting thought in his mind. True, his mother was extremely powerful. However, even with such strength, she was still forced to leave his father. Clearly, she believed that her current level of strength wasn't sufficient to protect his father and him, forcing her to leave by herself.

A mysterious clan that was able to force his mother at her level of strength to feel worried would naturally possess unimaginable strength and power.

Thinking about this, Mu Chen tightly grasped his hands as a heavy feeling sunk within his heart. Nevertheless, the gaze of the youth quickly turned resolute. Regardless of anything, he would absolutely not give up! Although the current him was extremely weak, he believed that one day, he would arrive at that unknown place and bring his mother back!

Whoosh!

Two rays of light shot down from across the horizon, transforming back into Aunt Jing and the Northern Sea Dragon. At the moment, the latter was staring in amazement towards the former with shock present in his eyes. "Madam, are you Mu Chen's mother?"

Aunt Jing slightly nodded her head.

A flash of understanding appeared in the eyes of the Northern Sea Dragon. Some time ago, he had seen Mu Chen bringing his pagoda out, allowing him to guess that Mu Chen had some connection to a certain clan. Now, after seeing his mother, all of it was clear.

"So you are..." The Northern Sea Dragon cupped his hands.

Shooting a look at him, Aunt Jing turned around and looked towards Mu Chen in the distance, "I hope that you won't tell this matter to Mu Chen."

Hearing her words, some doubts appeared in the heart of the Northern Sea Dragon. If Mu Chen possessed the bloodline of that certain clan, he should truly be a heaven-favored child. However, from the looks of it, Mu Chen seemed to not know about this other identity of his. However, being just a doubt, the Northern Sea Dragon was intelligent enough to not speak about it, as the matters about that certain clan were too complicated...

"Yes. This old man understands," replied the Northern Sea Dragon as he nodded his head.

Similarly, Aunt Jing didn't give any explanation. Clearly, she wasn't interested in letting other people know about the story behind this. Therefore, turning her head around, she walked towards Mu Chen, extending her hands to grab onto his. At that moment, the rays of brilliance radiating from her were starting to dissipate away, seemingly showing signs of disappearing.

"Mother."

Mu Chen tightly grasped the hands of his mother as nervousness appeared on his face. He could sense that the spiritual body of his mother wasn't able to be sustained much longer.

"Dean Tai Cang, I've some words to tell to Mu Chen," said Aunt Jing as she sent a faint smile towards Dean Tai Cang and the Northern Sea Dragon.

Hearing her words, Dean Tai Cang and the Northern Sea dragon nodded their heads and left, giving some space for this mother and son.

Chapter 432: Separated Again

Aunt Jing held Mu Chen's hand as they landed on a mountain peak. Looking towards the tall and straight youth before her, that face had the same handsome features as his father, added with her gentleness. This undoubtedly caused the youth to appear even more appealing to one's eyes. Furthermore, it wasn't pronounced to the point of being sharp.

"Mother, are you about to leave?" Mu Chen had also sensed what was going to happen, causing him to tightly grasp his mother's hand, while voicing out words with difficulty.

Gently nodding her head, Aunt Jing replied, "Although this is just mother's spiritual body.However, if I stay here too long, I'm afraid that I'll attract some unwanted trouble for you."

"Exactly what is your identity, mother? Where are you trapped now? Please tell me! I won't be reckless!" Mu Chen growled as he clenched his teeth.

Giving a quiet sigh, Aunt Jing extended her hand and rubbed the face of the youth before her as she replied, "It's still not the time to tell you about this matter. Originally, I hoped for you to not rush out of the Northern Spiritual Realm. Although, that way, you might become very ordinary. However, all I wanted was for you to be safe. That's my greatest wish."

"If that happened, I would never ever be able to see you, mother," said Mu Chen with a ridiculing smile. "The feeling of not having a mother isn't too great. The only thing I know is that it isn't easy for dad, too. Therefore, the only thing I could do was to be more sensible and thoughtful as young as possible."

Hearing his words, her eyes couldn't help turning red as she replied, "It's all mother's fault."

In her heart, she was extremely clear that there was nothing more important in Mu Chen's heart as she was. That year, for the sake of protecting the swaddling-clothed Mu Chen, she had quietly left without letting anyone know. The pain of a mother doing such a decision was akin

to knives slashing her heart apart. Nevertheless, there was no other way than that.

"It's already good, mother." Rubbing the tears falling down his mother's face with his palm, Mu Chen spoke out with a soft voice, "Although mother's not around when I was young, I still had dad beside me. However, mother... you should be really very lonely, right? You have done all of this for us. Therefore, dad and I are very clear about this, so we've never ever blamed you for this."

At this instant, the Aunt Jing who had unleashed heaven-shocking attacks and shook the hearts of all the big shots in the Northern Heavens Continent could not help covering her mouth and sob. To her, there was nothing more important in the entire universe than her husband and son.

The infant within the swaddling cloths that year had truly grown up. Furthermore, he's so sensible and thoughtful. This made her feel that those years of solitude were all worthwhile.

"Feel at ease, Mother. Although I'm still very weak now, there will be one day that I'll become strong. No matter how frightening the unknown place you're in is, I'll definitely bring you back home. This is the promise I made to dad." Mu Chen slowly spoke out, his voice brimming with unswerving determination and firmness.

"Furthermore, since my mother's so formidable, being your son, you should have some confidence in me," said Mu Chen as a smile appeared on his face.

Smiling through her tears, Aunt Jing rubbed Mu Chen's head. "Okay, I'll believe you. However, I'll still not tell you about these matters first. When you truly become stronger in the future, you'll naturally get to know some of them."

Hearing her words, the only thing Mu Chen could do was to nod his head in helplessness.

Aunt Jing waved her hand, causing the bodies of Ling Xi and Luo Li, whom were not far away, to faintly move before involuntarily appearing beside Mu Chen.

"Ling Xi, I'll have to trouble you to take care of Mu Chen. Just have him treat you as his Elder Sis, okay? If he doesn't listen to you, you can do whatever you like to him. At this moment, he shouldn't be a match for you," said Aunt Jing towards Ling Xi with a smile.

Hearing those words, Mu Chen gave an awkward smile, whilst Ling Xi and Luo Li started to beam.

"Feel at ease, Aunt Jing. I'll make sure nothing happens to him." Nodding her head, Ling Xi replied in a gentle voice.

"Mu Chen, you can't bully Ling Xi, alright? The Pagoda Spiritual Art is split into two scrolls, Yin and Yang. What you've trained and cultivated is the Yang scroll, while Ling Xi has cultivated the Yin scroll. This martial art is somewhat special, with the Yang being the main part with Yin being the auxiliary. At the place I'm in, the people that train the Yin scroll of the Pagoda Spiritual Art are known as attendants. That's because their Spiritual Energy is extremely beneficial to those that train and cultivate the Pagoda Spiritual Art's Yang scroll. However...Mother doesn't wish for you to use this method, understood?" Looking at Mu Chen, Aunt Jing's face turned solemn for the first time.

Shooting a look at the blushing Ling Xi, Mu Chen nodded his head, a guilty conscience sprouting out within his heart. Previously, the method they had used seemed like the same thing his mother was talking about. Although they had done that without the slightest hint of what it really was, both of them had a slightly guilty conscience about it.

Seeing that, Aunt Jing gave a gratified smile before saying, "Although your dad didn't have much strength, he didn't make me disappointed in his teachings."

As she spoke out, Aunt Jing looked towards Ling Xi once again and rubbed her face tenderly. "Your memories shouldn't have been dispelled, but are sealed up. However, the current me can't help you dispel that seal."

"Why's that?" asked Ling Xi hastily.

"Do you think I don't know about your character?" replied Aunt Jing with a sigh. "All of your sealed memories are those that you've made with me.

To you, those aren't happy memories for you. Furthermore, you will know where I'm currently at, and I don't want you to come over. That's because this place isn't somewhere you like to be."

"But I wish to rescue you from there, Aunt Jing!" Biting her lip, Ling Xi emotionally exclaimed.

"If you really want to help me, you can do so by taking care of Mu Chen," replied Aunt Jing with a faint smile.

Hearing Aunt Jing's reply, Ling Xi went quiet for a while, before finally nodding her head. Despite that, however, some unwillingness was still present within her eyes. Being clear of Ling Xi's character, Aunt Jing didn't continue talking about this, as she knew that she wouldn't be able to dispel the former's intention to search for her. Nevertheless, it was enough to just delay her for some time.

"You're called Luo Li, right?"

Looking towards the young girl standing quietly by Mu Chen's side, Aunt Jing gave a warm smile as she spoke out towards Luo Li.

"Yes." Shooting a look at Mu Chen, Luo Li slightly cramped up as she nodded her head.

"Mu Chen's eyes are better than his dad's," said Aunt Jing with a faint smile. Although the young girl before her was quite young, the temperament and character she possessed were things that no ordinary girl would have.

She clearly had a pretty good first impression of Luo Li.

"How's that possible? Aunt Jing's so awesome, You're also my goal," replied Luo Li as a pinkish shade flashed across her fair and lovable face. What she said truly was the truth. The awe-inspiring techniques and strength Aunt Jing had shown moments ago had caused Luo Li to admire the former deeply. If she could be as stronger as the former, she might just be able to completely shoulder the heavy responsibility of her Luo God Clan.

Holding Luo Li's slender and jade-like hand in hers, Aunt Jing shot a

look at the Luo Shen Sword in the former's hand. At this moment, a flash of astonishment flickered in her eyes as she spoke out, "You're a member of the Luo God Clan? Who's Luo Cangqiong to you?"

Hearing the name Luo Cangqiong, a faint expression of shock appeared on Luo Li's face as she replied "He's my great-grandfather. However, he passed away a long time ago. Could it be that Aunt Jing has seen him before?"

"I haven't met him before. However, there will always be records of peak existences in the Great Thousand World at the place I'm in. I've read about the news of Luo Cangqiong before and have seen that sword." Aunt Jing gave her a reply while shaking her head.

Luo Li understood in a flash. From what she knew, her great-grandfather's strength seemed to have reached the realm of a Heavenly Sovereign, and was considered as one of the foremost existences in the annals of their Luo God Clan. Therefore, it wasn't strange for information about him and the Luo Shen Sword to get collected by others.

"However, the girl that Mu Chen had kidnapped was actually the little princess of the Luo God Clan, huh? Your eyes are truly good," said Aunt Jing with a grin, causing Luo Li's face to turn beet-red, while Mu Chen gave a dry cough in response.

"Okay, my time's almost up..." said Aunt Jing with a soft sigh. Looking towards Mu Chen, one could see the reluctance brimming within her eyes. After this separation, god knows how many months and years she would have to wait before she could see her child once more.

Looking at the gradually translucent body of his mother, Mu Chen's eyes turned red once again. Clenching his teeth, he growled, "Mother, wait for me. Regardless of how frightening the place you're held in is, or how formidable those evil people hold our family from reuniting are, I'll never give up! Wait for me to get strong, and I'll bring you home!"

"Okay." Tears of gratification pooled within Aunt Jing's eyes as she nodded her head.

"Mother will wait for you. Mu Chen, you must live on well!"

Aunt Jing tightly grasped Mu Chen's hands. However, she was now no longer able to exert any force. Her body was getting dimmer and dimmer. Finally, she started to slowly dissipate away, her eyes still having traces of not wanting to leave.

Her body finally dissipated away.

Looking towards the place where his mother had dissipated, Mu Chen knelt down and knocked his head heavily on the ground while muttering, "Mother, please feel at ease! Our family will definitely be reunited!"

Standing beside him, Luo Li and Ling Xi remained silent as they accompanied him. Looking at Mu Chen and his actions, their noses could not help feeling slightly sour.

A gentle breeze blew by, ruffling his robes. This scene of him appeared rather bleak and desolate.

It was a mysterious and unknown place.

In that space, gigantic black pagodas hovered in the sky across the horizon, with each of their layers radiating with black rays of light. Enveloping the entire region, they appeared exceedingly strange and mysterious.

Within the depths of the space.

A giant pagoda thousands of metres tall stood tall on the earth, its body piercing through the cloud layers, causing it to look incorporeal and illusionary.

Within the highest layer of the giant pagoda was a white-robed lady quietly sitting within the jet-black darkness. All of a sudden, a shiver shook through her exquisite frame as her tightly shut eyes slowly opened. Tightly clenching her hands, tears started to flow down from her eyes.

"Mu Chen... my child..."she muttered, her voice brimming with endless yearning and longing.

Nevertheless, she only allowed for the tears in her eyes to last for an instant, before they were instantly evaporated away. In the next moment,

her gaze gradually turned back to the previous indifference.

As her gaze grew indifferent, the surrounding jet-black space started to ripple. As the ripples spread out, a withered tree-like face seemingly surfaced from within. Black rays of brilliance blossomed from that face as it looked towards Aunt Jing, while a buzzing voice filled with anger and fury reverberated within the jet-black darkness.

"The fluctuations moments ago was from your spiritual body, right? How long are you going to hide that bloodline of sin?!"

Chapter 433: Jet-Black Space

"How long are you going to hide that Bloodline of Sin?!"

Within the jet-black space, the old, withered face that had appeared from the folds of space angrily stared at the white-robed figure, his furious voice rumbling out, shaking and reverberating the entire space.

That white-robed lady was naturally Mu Chen's mother. At this moment, she shot a cold look at the old, withered face before replying in an indifferent tone, "I don't know what you're talking about."

"Qing Yanjing, do still want to be that stubborn? Do you think that after allowing a little girl that had no bloodline relationship with you, and letting her train and cultivate the Yin scroll of the Pagoda Spiritual Art, that you will be able to fool and deceive us?" replied the old, withered face in a stern voice.

Hearing that, a cold expression flashed within Aunt Jing's eyes as she growled out towards the old, withered face, "I did not use Ling Xi to fool or deceive anyone, and I've never said that Ling Xi had any bloodline relationship to me. It's just that you bunch of stubborn and obstinate old fellows are too stupid. That's why you all will feel suspicious."

"You've lent the Yin scroll of the Pagoda Spiritual Art out to let her train and cultivate for the sake of obscuring our attention, right? You're really trying to protect that Bloodline of Sin, right?!" The old, withered face continued to furiously roar out.

"Training and cultivating the Yin scroll of the Pagoda Spiritual Art was Ling Xi's own decision. I didn't force her or interfere in any way. I really didn't think much about it when I initially brought her back here. The only thing I thought was that she was pitiful and thus was showing some compassion. However, who would have thought that you old fellows would panic and treat everyone as your enemy. You can't even let go of an innocent little girl!" replied Aunt Jing with a sneer.

"The Divine Meridians in your body has clearly been separated! That Bloodline of Sin has got it for sure! You definitely installed a seal in his

body, right? That's why we're unable to find him even after searching for all these years, right?!"

"Qing Yanjing, being the Saintress of our clan, you have an extraordinary position with astonishing talent. Placed within the Great Thousand Worlds and the thousands and thousands of clans, only you can match up to 'Mo Hetian' of the 'Maha Clan', who are one of the Ancient God clans like us. If the two of you were to get together, not only will it be extremely beneficial for our two clans, there's a possibility of 'Mo Hetian' breaking through the worldly laws and becoming the controller of the universe. At that time, you'll become our queen!"

Hearing her words, the old, withered face turned incomparably furious, with his retort seemingly turning into howls. "However, not only did you fall in love with some ant from some place in your real world training, you

even damaged your own Divine Meridians and gave birth to a Bloodline of Sin! Exactly where have you thrown the long inheritance of our clan to?!"

"What does that ant have that's worth your love? Could it be that he's better than Mo Hetian? He's the true king! In his hands, the Maha Clan has returned to its former splendor! As for you, you could have also achieved such a step, and yet you went to do such a thing! How can you let down the care and nurture our clan has provided for you?"

A slight wrinkle appeared on the forehead of Aunt Jing as she replied, "Although Mo Hetian's formidable, does that mean I have to like him? Great Elder, it looks like you all have rotted away for too long. Anything within your eye might be only ranked on how to increase the strength of our clan. Therefore, you all don't know the feeling known as love."

"Qing Yanjing! Do you understand the significance of the existence of our clan? Do you know the significance of our clan for the Great Thousand Worlds? How can such a selfish thing as love appear in our clan?!" roared the old, withered face.

"Great Elder, indeed, our clan of the past was also my pride. However, you all have sunk too much into this pride and arrogance. This will only

let you all become complacent. Let me ask you, before our clan had that pride and arrogance, what were we like? Were there such rules that you've just spoke of, Great Elder?" asked Aunt Jing in an indifferent tone.

Within the jet-black space, the old, withered face turned silent awhile, before speaking out in a deep voice, "Looks like you've truly let that so-called 'love' overtake your mind to actually dare to question the pride of our clan."

Hearing his reply, Aunt Jing faintly shook her head. Indeed, it's a waste of time to explain stuff like emotions to this old fool.

"Although you are continuing to protect that Bloodline of Sin, I don't believe that you can protect him for an entire lifetime from us! Once we find him, we'll definitely capture him and strip him of the Divine Meridians! Although the bloodline of our clan flows within him, due to his father being too petty and vulgar, it has led to the corruption of the pure bloodline! Therefore, our clan will not recognize him! Towards such existences, the only thing we'll do is exterminate it!" said the old, withered face slowly.

Bang!

Just as his voice rang out, all of a sudden, an ice-cold expression blanketed the face of Aunt Jing sitting within the jet-black darkness. In the next instant, an imposing aura that blotted the skies swept out, causing intense shaking to appear in this jet-black space, with signs of collapse starting to form.

"Qing Yanjing, do really want to rebel against the clan's rules?!" Sensing this change, the Great Elder instantly roared out in fury.

Taking a deep breath, Aunt Jing suppressed the imposing aura that had blotted the skies. Turning her ice-cold gaze towards the old, withered face, she spoke one word at a time. "Great Elder, although I've willingly accepted the punishment over the past years, I hope that you all understand why I'm doing this. This doesn't mean that I'm afraid of you all, as I hope that our clan won't suffer any losses due to me. However, if you all truly dare to hurt my child's life, don't blame me for not showing

any mercy. At that time, even if you all can kill me, I'll make sure that your lives won't be too good, either. At the very least, Great Elder, I can definitely say that I'll absolutely make sure you fall with me!"

"You're too brazen, Qing Yanjing!"

A furious roar rang out from the Great Elder as green veins seemed to squirm on the old, withered face. At the same time, a frightening aura swept out, causing the jet-black space to crazily tremble.

Nevertheless, no fear or dread was present on Aunt Jing's face as she continued to coldly stare at the Great Elder.

Humm.

As the furious roar of the Great Elder rang out, ripples started to from within this jet-black space once again as numerous old, withered faces surfaced out,with varying expressions on them.

"Great Elder, please calm down."

"You too, little Jing. What's the point of antagonizing the Great Elder?"

As those giant faces surfaced, voices started to ring out towards the two initial parties present.

"Elders, I've done nothing to provoke him. It's just that some of those rotten rules have to be changed. Was the bloodline of our clan as noble as you all have assumed since the beginning? Didn't our ancestor break free from the confines of ordinary people, temper himself and train bitterly to stand at the peak of the universe?"

Aunt Jing continued speaking with an indifferent tone. "Then, why do we have to look down on them? Why can't my child be more outstanding than me?"

"Hmph! Do you know how much our clan had invested for your current accomplishments? Without your help, that Bloodline of Sin would not have the faintest bit of background. What can it achieve? The Divine Meridian in it's body's simply a waste!" The Great Elder replied with a snort.

"Within the Great Thousand Worlds, there are too many peaks experts to count. Among them, there are a few well-known figures who had low backgrounds, with some even coming from the Lower Realms. Did they ever have any background at all? Nevertheless, didn't they make their name spread illustriously across the Great Thousand Worlds? As for that astonishing Mo Hetian that you've hung in your mouths, didn't he also get forced to retreat by the Flame Emperor when he had tried to attack the Endless Fire Territory? Within the Great Thousand Worlds, other than the Flame Emperor, there's still the Martial Realm's Martial Emperor, Sword City's Green Shirt Sword Saint, Undying Ground's Gravekeeper..." a calm expression hung on Aunt Jing's face as she spoke out. Each of the names she had mentioned had widespread fame and reputation within the Great Thousand Worlds. As they rang out from her mouth, they reverberated within this jet black space.

"From the beginning, did those peak experts possess any strong or powerful background? No. The only thing they had was the heart of an expert. Its that heart that they were able to spread their illustrious names far and wide in the Great Thousand Worlds. Therefore, Great Elder, if you truly assume that to be a genuine expert, one would need to completely rely on nurturing and resources, then I'm afraid that you're sorely mistaken." Aunt Jing continued talking with an indifferent tone.

Faint fluctuations appeared on the old, withered face of the Great Elder present in the folds of this jet-black space. Feeling angered once again, he tried to rebuke her, but no words were able to leave his mouth. In the end, with a cold snort, he replied, "No matter how much you argue and scheme, you are unable to overturn the decision of the Elder Council."

Faintly closing her eyes, Aunt Jing replied, "What you all decide is your business, not mine. Similarly, what I choose is my business, not yours. I still have deep feeling for our clan. However, if it truly goes to that stage..."

At this moment, no words came out of her mouth as she slowly closed her eyes, not wanting to speak anymore. Clearly, she didn't plan to continue chatting with those rotten old freaks.

Seeing this, the Great Elder could only give an irritated snort as a reply.

In the next moment, those gigantic, withered faces started to disappear from this jet-black space.

Following their disappearance, Aunt Jing opened her eyes. Tightly clenching her hands, she gave a soft sigh. She knew that relying purely on her words would absolutely be unable to shake those old fellows, who had rotten down to their bones. They'll definitely continue to search for Mu Chen's traces. However, the words she had said earlier should have caused some shock in those old fellows; after all, she wasn't someone without the strength to kill a chicken. With her strength, she was considered within the top half within the clan. If anything happened to her, it would be a gigantic loss for the clan.

An expert of her level could not be nurtured just by relying on the so-called "resources".

Therefore, they should not dare to force her too much. This way, it would give Mu Chen quite a bit of time, whom she was confident in. If Mu Chen had become an ordinary person and stayed quietly in the Northern Spiritual Realm, she would also be gratified at that. After all, being a mother, all she wanted was for Mu Chen to be safe.

However, the current Mu Chen had clearly walked on another path. The youth had already grown tall and straight, no longer the crying infant in swaddling clothes. Ever since he was little, he had walked out of the Northern Spiritual Realm and entered one of the five Great Academies, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Furthermore, she could tell that Mu Chen was extremely outstanding, rapidly progressing in strength as he unleashed his potential. There's a possibility that his future path might be even more outstanding than his mother's. Although some Elders didn't believe in that, she, on the other hand, had a deep, unwavering belief in it.

Towards Mu Chen, who had chosen to walk on this path, although she felt pain and lamented in her heart, she also felt a sliver of pride. Her child was extraordinary. One day, those doubtful gazes will all be shocked and astounded by him.

However, this needed time.

A genuine expert needed time to be shaped and tempered. The moment he completed his refinement would be the moment where he dazzles the eyes of the Great Thousand Worlds where outstanding people vie for supremacy.

Tightly clenching her hands together, the gaze coming from Aunt Jing gradually turned warm and gentle, while a low murmur slowly rang out within that jet-black space.

"Mu Chen, since you've decided to walk this path, Mom will support you with all my heart. Mom will wait here for the moment where your name will move the entire Great Thousand Worlds!"

Chapter 434: Destroying the Demonic Dragon Palace

The fight between the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy and the Demonic Dragon Palace in the Northern Heavens Continent finally came to a quiet conclusion.

This great war had undoubtedly shook the entire Northern Heavens Continent. Who would have imagined that the Demonic Dragon Palace would launch an offensive against the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy out of the blue? Furthermore, the various unexpected events that happened after that could only be explained using the phrase, "Mountain road twists around each new peak."

Due to the subsequent appearance of that mysterious lady, the Demonic Dragon Palace, which had perfectly gained the superiority, was completely and utterly beaten down. Of their six great Sovereigns, three were killed, with the remaining three, including the Black Dragon Sovereign, suffering severe injuries and being forced to retreat.

After accomplishing that, the mysterious lady took action once more with greater might, forcing even that Immeasurable Old Ancestor, a Ninth Grade Sovereign, to flee with his tail between his legs. Such astonishing abilities had caused the various big shots of the Northern Heavens Continent to turn dumbfounded and as mute as stone.

Due to their defeat, the prestige and reputation of the Demonic Dragon Palace felt like a brick in water. Although they still possessed three Sovereigns, which was considered a powerful force, when compared to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, they no longer had the ability to contend against the latter like before.

Therefore, after this battle, the territory of the Demonic Dragon Palace rapidly shrunk in size as they crazily gave up on those territories they had painstakingly created and ruled, before retreating back to their main palace. That's because all of them were able to sense that the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy would definitely not let go of this opportunity

to completely decimate them.

True to their expectations, on the day after the battle, the various Elders of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy and all of the higher-ups were completely mobilised, shocking the world in their imposing wake. Observing this scene, the various powers of the Northern Heavens Continent were all shocked to the core. Over the last few years, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had always sat quietly above their continent. Due to their gentle and moderate nature, it had caused people to be unable to discover how many fierce fangs were possessed by them. Therefore, this had also caused many people to neglect and overlook the true power this leviathan really possessed.

It was at this instant that this neglect was completely eliminated.

They could clearly sense how astonishing the spectacle would be when the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy started to reveal its fangs.

Sending all of its experts, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy crazily encircled the old dens of the Demonic Dragon Palace. Faced against such an imposing Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, the morale of the Demonic Dragon Palace had completely dissipated away, it members successively fleeing away disorderly, with some even defecting.

The Demonic Dragon Palace of now was already unable to maintain any control of the situation. With even the Black Dragon Sovereign hiding away and not daring to come out, which other people would dare to come out and confront the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?

Therefore, in just a short span of three days, all of the branch palaces of the Demonic Dragon Palace that were scattered around the Northern Heavens Continent were seemingly destroyed and decimated. After three days, the group of experts from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had arrived at the old lair of the Demonic Dragon Palace, a palace built in the ancient antiquity hidden underneath the surface of the earth.

Upon reaching here, the offense of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, which had smashed through everything as if they were twigs, was forced to slow down. That's because all of the remaining strength of

the Demonic Dragon Palace was congregated at this location. At the same time, this was also the location of their greatest defense, an ancient Spiritual Array originating from the ancient antiquity.

An ancient Spiritual Array of this sort was exceedingly powerful. Wanting to activate it would require the strength of at least five Sovereigns. During the year when the Demonic Dragon Palace had suffered defeat, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had launched their offensive in a similar fashion. However, even after the Northern Sea Dragon had taken action, they were still unable to break that Spiritual Array apart. This led to them eventually being forced to disband that assault, which had resulted in the painful consequence that had happened for the past few years.

Learning from their mistakes, Dean Tai Cang had clearly made the decision to completely eradicate the malignant tumor that was the Demonic Dragon Palace. Therefore, even though the Demonic Dragon Palace had activated their ancient Spiritual Array once again, he still gave the order for assault, resulting in the various Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy experts crazily attacking the ancient Spiritual Array in an attempt to destroy it.

However, such an offensive clearly didn't yield much success. Although there were only three Sovereigns remaining within the Demonic Dragon Palace, which resulted in them being unable to unleash the might of the ancient Spiritual Array, its might still could not be underestimated. Attacking it recklessly would just be a waste of one's strength.

Seeing the offensive fail in its tracks, within his helplessness, Dean Tai Cang could only send people to invite Ling Xi from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Normally speaking, Ling Xi wouldn't care about such matters, which lead to Dean Tai Cang not being sure whether she would take action this time. However, surprising everyone, she had immediately rushed over. With her energetic appearance and killing intent blossoming out, it was clear that her hatred for the Demonic Dragon Palace was not the slightest bit weaker than Dean Tai Cang's.

Upon rushing over, without saying a word, Ling Xi started to analyse the

present ancient Spiritual Array. Although her accomplishments on the aspect of Spiritual Arrays couldn't be compared to Aunt Jing, she was much, much stronger when compared to Mu Chen. Even though this ancient Spiritual Array was rather formidable, it wasn't completely activated at this current moment. Therefore, after submerging herself into analysing it, within a number of days, she had started to be able to sense some of its underlying principles.

...

Fluctuations that blotted the skies rippled within the dark underground, where a gigantic palace sat within the depths like a sitting demonic dragon. At this moment, a gigantic glowing screen had enveloped over it. Appearing somewhat turbid, ancient runic patterns, akin to the patterns on a tortoise shell, extended across its surface as they radiated with a dignified feeling.

Ling Xi stood right in the sky above the glowing screen, her beautiful eyes coldly staring towards the somewhat dimly lit ancient Spiritual Array. Turning her head towards Dean Tai Cang, she spoke out, "Have you prepared according to what I've told you?"

"Yes." Dean Tai Cang immediately nodded his head.

"Senior Northern Sea. Please take action after we've disturbed this ancient Spiritual Array. Please take this opportunity to destroy it in one blow!" said Ling Xi after turning to the Northern Sea Dragon.

"Okay," replied the Northern Sea Dragon as he slowly nodded his head. Turning to stare at the Demonic Dragon Palace, his gaze started to radiate with chilling intent.

Raising her hand, a lovable roar rang out from Ling Xi, "Take action now!"

Bang!

As her lovable voice rang out, boundless Spiritual Energy instantly erupted out from the numerous Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy experts present behind him. In the next instant, rays of Spiritual Energy

swept out, shooting across the horizon, illuminating the entire underground akin to daylight.

The rays of light that covered the earth and hid the skies descend on certain places of the ancient Spiritual Array akin to a storm. In the next instant, fluctuations started to rapidly surface on the glowing screen as circular ripples started to spread out.

As those ripples spread outwards, some of the runic patterns on the ancient array instantly grew dimmer.

Raising her jade-like hand once again, Ling Xi gave it an abrupt swing.

Seeing this, Dean Tai Cang, Hallmaster Mo You, Elder Zhu Tian and those of Sovereign realm all took action at this moment. Raising their hands, Spiritual Energy akin to pillars that hoisted the sky up descended from the heavens, violently smashing against those dimly lit ancient patterns on the surface of the ancient Spiritual Array.

Chi! Chi!

Ear-piercing sounds rang out as the fluctuations on the surface of the ancient Spiritual Array instantly grew more intense. At the areas where the giant Spiritual Energy pillars had landed, the ancient runic patterns grew increasingly dim. At this moment, numerous giant Spiritual Energy pillars started to slowly creep within...

Humm! Humm!

Those giant Spiritual Energy pillars that had inserted themselves in the ancient Spiritual Array seemed to be impeding the Spiritual Energy transport from within. Instantly, the entire glowing screen turned dark and gloomy. As chaotic fluctuations rippled out, a minute tear unexpectedly appeared in the centre of the glowing screen.

"Senior Northern Sea!" Upon seeing this, Ling Xi's beautiful eyes instantly contracted, before roaring out.

Bang!

Taking a step forward, the Northern Sea Dragon appeared to have

instantly passed through space, appeared right before the crack on the glowing screen. Sending a fist rumbling out, the space beneath his fist started to crack and collapse. In the next instant, his fist, which was as heavy as thousands and thousands of mountains, heavily descended on the crack.

Boom!

A furious vibration shook through the entire ancient Spiritual Array. In the next instant, to their incomparable delight, Dean Tai Cang and the rest saw cracks starting to rapidly expand from where the Northern Sea Dragon's fist had landed. Within a short span of a few breaths, they had extended across the entire ancient Spiritual Array.

Bang!

As the cracks extended to all extremities, the ancient Spiritual Array couldn't endure it any long. With a final loud bang, it completely exploded apart. As it did so, frightening shock waves swept out, sending even Dean Tai Cang and the others flying back.

Bang! Bang!

The Demonic Dragon Palace within the ancient Spiritual Array had also suffered the impact of those destructive shock waves, causing their palaces to crumble and collapse, with figures exploding and turning into blood mists that blotted the skies.

As the blood mists rose into the skies, the entire Demonic Dragon Palace was in a state of grief and despair.

Dean Tai Cang, the Northern Sea Dragon and the rest swept the wreckage before them with their gazes. Despite that, they had yet to spot the figures of the Black Dragon Sovereign and the others, causing wrinkles to appear on their foreheads.

"There's Spiritual Array fluctuations over there!"

All of a sudden, Ling Xi pointed towards a place within the deepest region of the wreckage.

With the move of his body, the Northern Sea Dragon appeared at place where Ling Xi had pointed towards. Sweeping his gaze out, a faint change appeared on his face as an abyss appeared before him. At this moment, it was filled with a glue-like sea of blood, while astonishingly fiendish energies continuously radiated from within.

Within the sea of blood were dozens of figures, who were condensing those fiendish energies together. As the fiendish energies converged together, a blood-red Spiritual Array took form underneath their feet.

The Black Dragon Sovereign was among the dozens of figures present there. At this moment, his face appeared pale, which turned even more pale upon noticing the presence of the Northern Sea Dragon.

"Interrupt them! That's a Spiritual Array that's able to pierce through space! They're trying to flee!" A faint change appeared on Ling Xi's beautiful face as she roared out.

However, before her voice could ring out, the Northern Sea Dragon had already taken action. Sending a palm patting out, black rays of brilliance shot out, piercing through space akin to feathers. At lightning speed, they pierced through the figures of the people present in the abyss.

Brimming with extremely overbearing power, as the feathers pierced through their body, they also shattered the Divine Souls within them.

Seeing this spectacle, the faces of the Black Dragon Sovereign and the other two Sovereigns changed, before staring at the Northern Sea Dragon with bitter resentment. With a change of their hand seals, multiple mouthfuls of blood spurted out from their throats, instantly causing the blood-red rays of brilliance to blossom from the blood-red Spiritual Array beneath their feet, which proceeded the envelope them within.

"Haha! Dean Tai Cang, it isn't that easy to destroy our Demonic Dragon Palace! As long as there's green mountains, there won't be any shortage of firewood! Count yourselves lucky this time! However, we'll definitely return! When that time comes, we'll rain blood on your Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy!" As the blood-red light encased their bodies, the Black Dragon Sovereign breathed a huge sigh of relief before roaring out in a

fierce voice.

"That has to come after you're able to walk from here!"

Take a step forward, the Northern Sea Dragon appeared right outside of the bloody light in a flash. In the next instant, multiple palms came flying out, piercing through space before landing heavily on the Black Dragon Sovereign and the other two Sovereigns.

Puff!

The Black Dragon Sovereign and the other two spurted mouthfuls of blood as the Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiating from their bodies declined to their absolute minimum. However, when the Northern Sea Dragon was prepared to unleash the last punch, the bloody light was already radiating out. As it enveloped them, the surrounding space started to warp and distort, before the figures of the three disappeared into thin air.

Seeing this, a chilling glint flashed within the eyes of the Northern Sea Dragon. Piercing his withered palm through the chaotic space, he gave a furious pull.

Blood started spraying out from the spatial fissure, with everyone being able to faintly discern mournful shrieks coming from within. Snorting out coldly, the Northern Sea Dragon pulled his hand into the spatial fissure, with three blood dripping arms along with it...

"They've ran away?" asked Dean Tai Cang, hastily rushing over.

"I've jolted and destabilized their transmission, while also seriously injuring them. Added with their lost arms, they are people on the brink of death, Even if they're fortunate enough to complete their transmission, they would either be dead or suffer serious injuries to the point of not being able to be of anymore danger," replied Northern Sea Dragon as he shook his head.

"The foundations of the Demonic Dragon Palace have been destroyed. Even if the Black Dragon Sovereign still lives on, he would be a stray dog without an owner, someone that's not worth fearing..." said Dean Tai Cang

with a laugh, as his expression finally showed a look of being completely relaxed. He knew that the malignant tumor that was the Demonic Dragon Palace had, at long last, been completely wiped out of the Northern Heavens Continent.

From today onwards, there would be no more Demonic Dragon Palace on the Northern Heavens Continent!

Chapter 435: Preparations of the Spiritual Academy's Grand Tournament

The operation to eliminate the Demonic Dragon Palace took a near ten days before being completely finished in the Northern Heavens Continent. When the numerous experts from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy started to retreat, all of the powers in the Northern Heavens Continent knew that the Demonic Dragon Palace, the power that was once able to contend with the former, would no longer appear on the Northern Heavens Continent any more...

Numerous powers quietly sighed at this result. Nevertheless, it was fortunate that the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy didn't possess a tyrant's heart. If not, there might not be any power left in this Northern Heavens Continent that could contend against it.

However, even though that was the case, after observing the genuine magnitude of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, some of the peak powers had also discarded their previous attitude to the former. In the past, due to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy not showing much attitude in any aspect, not many powers had placed the former in their minds. Now, they had finally discovered that this ferocious tiger creeping in the Northern Heavens Continent had only dozed off. Once this tiger awakened, its fangs were still incomparably ferocious... While the entire Northern Heavens Continent was still in shock, due to the destruction of the Demonic Dragon Palace, joy and jubilation was present within the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy as countless students roared and cheered for this result. For the past few years, the students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy would always face danger in the form of the Demonic Dragon Palace when they went out for real world training and tempering. If they were unfortunate, they would bump into ultra fierce characters like Mo Xingtian or Mo Longzi, which would result in a nigh impossible chance of returning back to the academy. Therefore, whenever students headed out of the academy, they would appear to be extraordinarily vigilant and careful.

However, after today, the malignant tumor in all of the student's hearts had finally been removed. How could they not jump up for joy?

Freshman Region. In that small building, Mu Chen sat on the balcony, looking towards the cheering ringing out from within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Raising his head, he looked towards the endless blue sky, where flocks of Spiritual Beasts flew around, their clear cries resounding across the world.

He had only arrived in this Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy for slightly more than a year. Nevertheless, Mu Chen could clearly sense his personal growth. Slightly more than a year ago, when he had just entered the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, he was merely a Freshman who hadn't even properly stepped into the Heavenly Fusion Stage. However, at this very moment, he had already properly stepped foot into Heavenly Completion Stage. Furthermore, he possessed the greatest reputation and prestige within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Unconsciously, the youth had already started to transform, becoming dazzling and eye-catching in the process.

Thinking about this, a faint smile rose from the corner of Mu Chen's mouth. If his dad knew about this, he would definitely feel proud of him. Naturally, the most important matter was that he had actually managed to find his mother. Although she was only a spiritual body, it had already given Mu Chen inexhaustible confidence. He believed that if he could perserve and grow stronger, there would be a day where he would be able to fulfill the promise he made to his father.

"Old man, be at ease. I'll definitely bring Mom home!"

Muttered Mu Chen as he tightly clenched his hand.

"Are you still thinking about Aunt Jing?" All of a sudden, a warm and gentle voice rang out from behind him. Mu Chen turned his head around, only to see a black-robed young girl quietly standing behind him. The young girl's hair flowed down her head, her skin as white as snow. Coupled with her long and willowy eyebrows and absolutely beautiful cheeks that appeared as if they were made of porcelain, she gave people a

feeling of so much love that no one wouldn't be able to part from it.

Mu Chen started to grow absentminded as he stared at the girl before him. After a year, the young girl seemed to have become increasing classy, Her figure had also grown increasingly alluring. Below that slender white neck was a pair of soft bosoms wrapped by her blouse. Those beautiful arcs, that slender waist that could be grabbed in one hand, those long and smooth legs...

While he was maturing, the young girl beside him had increasingly blossomed into a female beauty capable of captivating even the birds and the beasts.

Now, Mu Chen was starting to get slightly restless.

Noticing the tight gaze coming from Mu Chen towards her, with flames appearing to be gushing out from his eyes, caused Luo Li's lovable face to turn slightly red. This Mu Chen's really covering up less and less of his inner desires in front of me.

"Have you seen enough?" Finally, unable to endure the invasive gaze from Mu Chen, Luo Li shot a question to the fromer as her face turned pinkish with embarrassment.

Leaping over, Mu Chen extended his hand and grabbed onto Luo Li's slender waist. Pushing his face near her sparklingly tender ear, he spoke out softly. "Ah, Luo Li. Look at how my mom likes you. When will you give her a granddaughter?"

Hearing his words, Luo Li instantly gawked, before her lovable face immediately turned as red as a scorching fire as she stared towards Mu Chen with incomparable embarrassment. This fellow's really getting more and more over the top! He even dares to say such words!

Seeing the embarrassment present on Luo Li's face, a cheeky smile appeared on Mu Chen's face as he thought of wanting to tease her a bit more. However, what he saw was Luo Li's little hand covering her scabbard. In the next instant, with a gentle lift, the Luo Shen Sword was unsheathed halfway out from its scabbard, sending a chilling glint shooting and illuminating Mu Chen's throat. The chilling intent present in

the glint caused Mu Chen to slightly shiver.

Cough.

Mu Chen dryly coughed, before carefully grabbing on to Luo Li's little hand. Pushing the sword back into its scabbard, a resentful expression appeared on his face.

Seeing his actions, Luo Li rolled her eyes at him. However, upon seeing the resentful look on his face, she slightly hesitated. With a blush, she rose to her toe tips, and placed her soft lips gently on his.

Such a gentle touch, yet it caused a shiver to run down Mu Chen's heart.

Placing her hands on Mu Chen's chest, Luo Li gave a light shove, pushing him away. With her lovable face flushed with an alluring crimson shade, she spoke with a displeased tone. "Don't misbehave. The Dean's calling us over."

"The Dean's calling for us?" A blank look appeared on Mu Chen's face.

"It's regarding the matter of the Gate of the Northern Heavens. Half a year from now, it will be the Grand Spiritual Academy Tournament. We have to make early preparations for it and increase our strength as much as possible. If not..." replied Luo Li softly.

Hearing that, a faint wrinkle appeared on Mu Chen's forehead. Although the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was one of the five Great Academies, it was considered to be at the bottom in that list. For the past few years, it was commonplace for them to rank last within the five Great Academies. This time, if they weren't able to achieve a better result than that, there's a possibility of people taking advantage of this and causing trouble for the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy by stripping them of their title as one of the five Great Academies. Although this was just a title, it was an extremely critical matter for the Spiritual Academies.

"Let's go."

Nodding his head, Mu Chen held Luo Li's hand before shooting straight towards the giant hall at the centre-most location of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

After a while, Mu Chen and Luo Li finally entered the giant hall, only to see that Sheng Cangsheng, Li Xuantong, Su Xuan, He Yao, Zhao Qingshan and the rest of the elite characters from the top ten ranks of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's Heavenly Rankings were actually already present there. Furthermore, standing above them were Dean Tai Cang, the Northern Sea Dragon, as well as the five great Heavenly Seated Elders. Such a lineup appeared exceedingly serious and solemn.

When Mu Chen arrived in the giant hall, the eyes of everyone present within instantly shot over, some containing complicated feelings, as well as admiration. Ever since the battle at the Divine Spiritual Mountain where Mu Chen had exterminated Mo Xingtian, he had already been considered to possess the title of the strongest student within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Although he has not yet issued any challenge to the Overlord of the Heavenly Rankings, Sheng Cangsheng, everyone was clear that he already possessed the strength and capability to do so...

Arriving at the giant hall, Mu Chen and Luo Li could also feel the serious and solemn atmosphere present within. Shooting a look at each other, they started to walk into the giant hall, before standing beside Sheng Cangsheng and sending a smile towards them.

Upon seeing Mu Chen, Dean Tai Cang also gave a faint smile as a greeting. He was getting more and more satisfied towards the youth in front of him. Finally, after so many years, a monstrous talent has appeared their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy...

"Students, the main reason I've called you all over is for the Grand Spiritual Academy Tournament happening half a year from now."

Sweeping his gaze across the giant hall, Dean Tai Cang's gaze gradually grew solemn as he continued speaking, "I've told everyone before that our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy has always placed last place within the five Great Academies in every Grand Spiritual Academy Tournament held in the last couple of years. There are even some other elite Spiritual Academies who had results that surpassed us, This has caused extreme pressure for our academy for those years. If we are to continue getting the

same results in this Grand Spiritual Academy Tournament, I think that we should remove the title of being one of the five Great Academies from the name of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy."

Upon hearing his words, the entire giant hall turned silent while the expressions on the faces of Sheng Cangsheng, Li Xuantong and the rest also turned solemn. After training and cultivating in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy for so many years, all of them had similarly developed feelings for the academy. They took pride in being a part of the academy. If the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was to be striped of from the title as being one of the five Great Academies, this was something that would be hard for them to accept.

Over the years, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had usually advocated equality, not specially favoring certain students with outstanding talents and also not giving some other students super level statuses. Therefore, it was extremely hard for the academy to attract genius students with absolutely astonishing talent. After all, those people would most likely have arrogance and haughtiness in their package. In other Spiritual Academies, they would be set up high and placed above all ordinary students, while being able to enjoy benefit after benefit. To them, the advantages of this were too many. Therefore, they would naturally not be willing to recklessly enter the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Another reason for this was that the other four Great Spiritual Academies were established much earlier than the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. It's said that all of the four other Great Academies possessed a secret training place that was able to greatly increase the strength of their students. These would increase the strength of their talented students to become even more astonishing. On the contrary, although the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had the "Door of the Northern Heavens", due to its closure for the past few years, it has led to their elite students possessing strength that couldn't be compared to the other four Great Academies. Therefore, this resulted in the lackluster results in the Grand Spiritual Academy Tournament and the eventual laughing stock they had turned into.

However, this time, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was prepared to open the "Door of the Northern Heavens" once again in hopes of letting them bridge this disparity.

"Dean, do you know exactly which of those extremely outstanding students from the other four Great Spiritual Academies are participating?" After slightly pondering, Mu Chen opened his mouth shot a question off.

Hearing that, Sheng Cangsheng and the rest turned their gazes towards Dean Tai Cang. Clearly they were also extremely curious about this question.

"Having a greater and more robust foundation than us, the talents the other four Great Academies can admit are much more than us. Furthermore, they had also used some special methods to attract them over..." replied Dean Tai Cang with a helpless smile, "Therefore, according to the information that we've gathered, up till now, on the aspects of quantity and quality of their elite students, our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy is still in a disadvantageous position."

"As of most recently, there are four extremely prominent talents that have erupted out from the four Great Academies. Furthermore, these four people... are Freshmen that have just entered the Spiritual Academies for a year or so..."

Whoosh.

An uproar instantly rose within the giant hall as shock and astonishment were present in everyone's eyes. It was already enough that their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had a freak like Mu Chen. However, there's actually more of such abnormal people in the other four Great Spiritual Academies?

Hearing that, Mu Chen's eyes instantly contracted. Raising his head to look towards Dean Tai Cang, he spoke in a soft voice, "What's the name of the person from the Saint Spiritual Academy?"

Shooting a deep look back towards Mu Chen, Dean Tai Cang slowly spoke out name that caused Mu Chen's gaze to turn completely ice-cold.

"Ji Xuan."

Chapter 436: Newcomers of the Four Great Academy

"Ji Xuan."

After hearing that name, Mu Chen's face displayed an emotionless expression, yet his eyes were brimming with an ice-cold shadow. He was not one bit unfamiliar towards that name. His banishment from the Spiritual Roads had all started from that fellow.

Naturally, even Mu Chen had to admit that this opponent truly was a rarely seen genius. Not only was he talented in cultivation, he possessed a mind and temperament that far exceeded anyone of his age. Even in the Spiritual Road where geniuses were as numerous as the clouds in the sky, that fellow was able to appear exceedingly dazzling.

Within the Spiritual Road, Mu Chen had met god knows how many experts. Yet, none of them could be remembered as fresh as the conflict he had against that Ji Xuan. In their conflict, both parties managed to score some victories and suffered some losses. However, their final fight ended with Mu Chen being banished from the Spiritual Road. From a certain perspective, Mu Chen might have been placed in a slightly disadvantageous position after this. Naturally, when that fight had happened, Mu Chen was able to surmise what was going to happen to him; however, he had still went through for no special reason but due to the fact that the girl he liked was getting bullied. Being a man, he naturally wouldn't maintain that peace.

Therefore, he had used a bloodbath that shocked the Spiritual Path to bid farewell to his Spiritual Energy cultivation.

As for whether he should or should not leave the Spiritual Road, Mu Chen didn't care about this matter. However, he had a heart filled with a need to kill towards Ji Xuan who had set him up!

Within the giant hall, everyone present had turned to look at Mu Chen. Although there's no fluctuation present on the latter's face, anyone would

be able to sense the killing intent radiating from his body the moment he had heard that name. This caused some shock and astonishment to rise within them. Could it be that he has some kind of beef with that Saint Spiritual Academy's Ji Xian?

Extending her jade-like hand, Luo Li gave Mu Chen's hand a gentle grasp. The lovable and refreshing sensation caused Mu Chen to slowly calm back down. Sending an apologetic smile towards everyone, his expression started to gradually recover to a normal one.

Nevertheless, the ice-cold shadow within the depths of his eyes did not dissipate away.

Ji Xuan, our bouts during the Spiritual Road doesn't mean anything. Since we're able to meet in the Grand Spiritual Academy Tournament, let's have another go at it! However, this time, I'll not give you any chances to live again!

Since you wanna play, I'll play with you to the very end!

Dean Tai Cang spoke out after shooting a look at Mu Chen. "That Ji Xuan is the special recruit personally invited by the Dean of the Saint Spiritual Academy. For the past year, the Saint Spiritual Academy has used numerous resources to aid in his nurturing. As a result, with only a year's worth of time, that Ji Xuan was able leap over his status as a Freshman to become one of the most elite students of the Saint Spiritual Academy. As for those veteran experts among the students, all of them were completely stepped on by him."

Nodding his head, Mu Chen asked, "What about the other three Great Spiritual Academies?"

"The Freshman from the Martial Spiritual Academy's called Wu Ling. This person had also participated in the Spiritual road. Furthermore, his grandfather is the Dean of the Martial Spiritual Academy."

"Wu Ling?"

A faint sliver of shock flashed within Mu Chen's eyes as he was familiar with the name that had just been mentioned. While within the Spiritual

Road, he had also met a youth by the name of Wu Ling. This youth was an expert in various kinds of fighting and killing techniques, and was cruel and merciless. He would frequently do stuff like killing ferocious beasts with his bare hands. Although he would get covered in wounds as a result, he rather enjoyed the pleasure of hand-to-hand combat.

Mu Chen had crossed hands with him once during the Spiritual Road. Although there weren't any deep grudges between them, both of them had suffered some losses before mutually retreating back. After making contact for two-three more times, although they couldn't be considered as friends, it could be counted as a bit of a friendly relationship. Mu Chen didn't doubt the talent of Wu Jing, as the latter could be considered as extraordinary even within the Spiritual Road, where experts were as numerous as the clouds in the sky. However, Mu Chen never imagined that the latter's grandfather would actually be the Dean of the Martial Spiritual Academy. While possessing such a background, he had actually dared to step into such a cruel and merciless ground like the Spiritual Road to train and temper himself. Such a character and temperament definitely wasn't weak.

"The name of the Freshman from the Azure Sky Spiritual Academy is Liu Qingyun. Although he didn't participate in the Spiritual Road, he isn't any bit inferior to those geniuses that had participated. That's because he comes from the Wind Spirit Clan of the Great Thousand Worlds. It's said that he possesses quite a high status within his clan, and is extremely strong. It's also said that on the day when he had entered the academy, he had successfully defeated numerous Seniors that were ranked amongst the top in the Azure Sky Spiritual Academy. The rate of his growth isn't one bit inferior to Mu Chen, too," said Dean Tai Cang as he shook his head with helplessness.

Hearing that, a faint wrinkle appeared on Mu Chen's forehead. From the looks of it, this Liu Qingyun's clearly a young genius that the Azure Sky Spiritual Academy was lent from the Wind Spirit Clan. For the sake of obtaining results, those fellows truly would not stop at anything...

"What about the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy?" asked Sheng

Cangsheng. Of the five Great Academies, the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy was extremely unique, since this Spiritual Academy only accepted female students, and was considered unconventional amongst the numerous Spiritual Academies. However, no one dared to look down on them, since none the ladies that came out from there were easy to deal with.

"The Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy? Haha! That Freshman had also participated in the Spiritual Road. Furthermore, it's said that she's considered the most famous person that has come out from there. At the final point of the Spiritual Road, which was the King of the Hill, the championship was snatched up by that Little Miss from all the numerous other geniuses. Even Ji Xuan had not managed to obtain it. Naturally, that's because Ji Xuan was seriously injured by Luo Li, which resulted in him losing that qualifications to participate," replied Dean Tai Cang as he shot a look towards Luo Li, who was standing beside Mu Chen, with a smile surfacing on her face.

Hearing this, Sheng Cangsheng and the rest looked towards Luo Li in astonishment. Clearly, none of them had imagined that there was such a matter between Luo Li and Ji Xuan.

Giving a faint smile, Luo Li spoke out, "She should be called Wen Qingxuan, right? She's an extremely beautiful girl. Furthermore, her skills are extremely formidable. Due to my target being Ji Xuan, I'd never crossed hands with her before."

"Wen Qingxuan..." This was not the first time that Mu Chen had heard of this name. However, due to him leaving the Spiritual Road midway, he had similarly not seen this girl who had stolen the championship and becoming the most dazzling figure in the Spiritual Road. Mu Chen was clearly somewhat curious about her, since he was extremely clear of how difficult it was to deal with those fellows from the Spiritual Road. Anyone that was able contend for the championship would not be easy to deal with. Since this Wen Qingxuan was able to distinguish herself amongst them, she definitely seemed like someone extremely formidable.

These few opponents truly weren't simple.

"As of now, that Wen Qingxuan's considered as one of the most famous students in the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy, and is rather formidable."

Dean Tai Cang gave a sigh of admiration before continuing to speak, "These four people can be considered to be the most tyrannical characters to come out from the other four Great Academies over the past year, with all of them being extremely dazzling. However, its fortunate that our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had Mu Chen popping out this year. If not, we really wouldn't be able to match up to them."

"Compared to Mu Chen, who is more formidable?" asked Sheng Cangsheng with a smile.

"If we're talking about genuine strength, Mu Chen's clearly the weakest," replied Dean Tai Cang with a smile, before continuing, "Naturally, Mu Chen's strength can't be judged on the surface. Therefore, in a real exchange, it's really hard to say. Furthermore, the last half a year remaining is where the changes would be the greatest. The other four Great Spiritual Academies will all open their secret training grounds. After half a year, the strength of their elite students would definitely skyrocket to a level that absolutely can't be matched by their strength now. At that time, who's stronger and who's weaker would be seen through the improvement after this half-year."

Hearing his explaination, Shen Cangsheng and the rest could not help secretly sighing. The other four Great Academies truly were extremely formidable. All of them had originally assumed that Mu Chen was already extremely abnormal. Who would have thought that there would actually be existences no weaker than him in the other four Great Spiritual Academies. Furthermore, those fellows were all Freshmen too. It seemed that this batch of Freshmen were clearly extremely ferocious. Indeed, that Spiritual Road was an extraordinary place.

"These four people are just the most prominent Freshmen of the four Great Academies. Other than them, the other veteran elite students are also extremely formidable. Naturally, other than the four Great Academies, there are other elite Spiritual Academies with backgrounds not

inferior to our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Therefore, I'm afraid that it's not easy for us to want to obtain a satisfactory result," said Dean Tai Cang with a sigh.

"Dean, since that's the case, just open the Door of the Northern Heavens earlier. For the past few days, all of us have become totally restless about it," said Shen Cangsheng with a smile, scorching flames jumping within his eyes. Mu Chen killing Mo Xingtian days ago was a rather huge shock to him, and he was able to sense that Mu Chen was rapidly surpassing him. Being the Overlord on the Heavenly Rankings, he didn't like the feeling of being tossed behind. Therefore, he could no longer wait to enter the Door of the Northern Heavens. Regardless of the dangers present while training and cultivating in there, he would definitely endure through them!

At this moment, Li Xuantong and the rest had also cast their gazes towards Dean Tai Cang, their eyes brimming with the will to challenge. The final half-year would be the period of when the strengths of the elite students from the various Great Academies would drastically increase. None of them were willing to toss away such a chance to get strong, before losing face in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament!

Looking towards the group of students present before him, a gratified smile appeared on Dean Tai Cang's face. Nodding his head, he replied, "Okay. We've already made the appropriate preparations. From tomorrow onwards, we'll officially open the Door of the Northern Heavens!"

Hearing his announcement, everyone instantly become nervous and excited.

Hearing this, Mu Chen started to purse his lips. He was clearly also extremely curious about this so-called 'Door of the Northern Heavens'. At this very moment, his strength was too low. Although he had killed Mo Xingtian, he had paid a rather miserable price in doing so. He could not always end up hurting himself so badly just to cause damage to such an opponent, were he to meet with one in the future. Therefore, in the end, it's one's true strength that's the most important. After all, those opponents of his were all truly not easy to deal with. He wasn't the only

one that possessed hidden cards. From the looks of it, the disparity of his body's strength would be magnified.

Therefore, he also needed to increase his strength greatly, before the start of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament half a year from now.

"The Door of the Northern Heavens will be temporarily open for the top ten places on the Heavenly Rankings."

All of a sudden, the Northern Sea Dragon opened his mouth. Sweeping his gaze out, his eyes landed on Mu Chen's body, before continuing to speak. "Mu Chen, don't go into the Door of the Northern Heavens this time."

Hearing those words, everyone present was shocked, with even a blank expression appearing on Mu Chen's face as he looked towards the Northern Sea Dragon in dumbfounded shock.

Splitting his mouth open to give a smile, the smile on the face of the Northern Sea Dragon caused a shiver to abruptly shake Mu Chen's heart.

"For the next half a year, I'll be in charge of your special training."

Chapter 437: Gate of the Northern Heavens

"Special training?"

Mu Chen stared in shock towards the Northern Sea Dragon. Spotting the arc of the latter's mouth showing the shadow of a smile, a faint chill shook through his heart, while a reassuring feeling rose within him. Nevertheless, with a dry laugh, he replied, "That isn't too good. Doesn't our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy pay particular attention on being equal in treatment? If you give me preferential treatment, won't it be too inappropriate?"

Hearing that, the Northern Sea Dragon rolled his eyes before snappily replying, "That's because your strength is considered the weakest amongst your group. Due to the Eighth Ranked Convergent Spiritual Array outside of the Gate of the Northern Heavens, you'll gain a pretty good result in your training and cultivation if you enter there. However, it's hard for you to push yourself to the maximum degree. Therefore, enough of this convenience and acting obedient. If not for your outstanding performance on the Divine Spiritual Mountain, I'd be too snappily care about you."

Hearing those words, everyone gave a smile. Patting Mu Chen's shoulder, Shen Cangsheng spoke out, "Since Northern Sea Great Sir sees that much in you, you should obediently undergo the special training, Mu Chen. However, after coming out of the Gate of the Northern Heavens half a year from now, if you trail behind us by too much, don't blame everyone for finding you to compare notes. I believe that they should have great anticipation in wanting to sending you flying with a kick."

At this moment, Li Xuantong, He Yao, Zhao Qingshan and the rest had already cast their gazes over, with slight anticipation brimming within their eyes. This made Mu Chen tug at the corners of his mouth. From the looks of it, his progress this year had been too fast, causing these fellows to remember it in their hearts

On the other hand, Su Xuan covered her smile with her hand, a smile

that was soul-stirring.

Giving a bitter laugh, Mu chen shook his head, ignoring them. Looking towards Luo Li, who was by his side, he spoke out with reluctance, "That means to say that I'll not be able to see you for half a year?"

Luo Li's lovable face immediately turned pinkish in embarrassment, with her gaze turning soft due to Mu Chen's fond reluctance to leave. Holding his hand, she softly replied, "It's nothing. It's best that you properly train and cultivate for the next half a year. With me not around, you'll not get distracted. However, you cannot slack off. If not, you'll truly be tossed behind by us."

Hearing her reply, Mu Chen could only laugh in helplessness, though he truly felt some slight pressure. The Gate of the Northern Heavens seemed to be extremely beneficial towards training and cultivation.

"Okay, everyone should go back first to properly prepare to enter the Gate of the Northern Heavens tomorrow. Once you guys enter, the next time you will come out will be half a year from now," said Dean Tai Cang after waving his hand.

"Yes!"

Hearing that, everyone gave an immediate reply, before turning around and leaving.

Seeing the young men and women leaving from the hall, Dean Tai Cang exhaled in relief, before speaking out while sighing, "From the information we've gotten, amongst the five Great Academies, I'm afraid that the elite students of our academy is still at the last of the five. Next up, lets see what kind of improvement and progress these young fellows can achieve in the next half a year."

"Northern Sea, are you certain that you don't want Mu Chen to enter the Gate of the Northern Heavens?"

Nodding his head, the Northern Sea Dragon replied, "Although the Gate of the Northern Heavens contains vast and strong Spiritual Energy, it isn't especially suited for Mu Chen. I'll use the next half a year to let him

undergo special training. It should be able to let him become stronger by a substantial margin."

"Then, I'll have to trouble you for this."

With the confirmation from the Northern Sea Dragon, Dean Tai Cang could feel at ease. For the next half a year, the elite students of the various Great Spiritual Academies would advance by leaps and bounds in their strength. This was an extremely special period of time. In fact, it would also change the internal elite student rankings in the various Great Spiritual Academies. Any academy that didn't follow this trend might be tossed far, far away by the rest.

He did not hope for Mu Chen to be dropped out from the team just like that.

The next day.

Before the giant hall, Dean Tai Cang looked towards Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong, Luo Li and the rest who had all arrived. Nodding his head, with a wave of his hand, he shot straight towards the deepest part of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Although Mu Chen wasn't going to enter the Gate of the Northern Heavens to train and cultivate, he had also followed along. One reason was to send Luo Li off, with the second reason due to him being rather interested in the Gate of the Northern Heavens.

The group of people rapidly shot over the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, entering the heavily guarded, deepest depths within a dozen minutes. Present before them was a stretch of verdant mountains and forests. However, the entire region was enveloped with dense Spiritual Fog. The Spiritual Aura present in this region was thick and strong to the point of being inconceivable. The fog had even condensed to form Spiritual Liquid droplets, fluttering within the region, while radiating with magnificent splendor.

When the Spiritual Fog of the region had grown to its extreme limit, Dean Tai Cang waved his hands, signalling for everyone to stop. With a wave of his sleeve, a spatial fluctuation rippled out, causing gales to whirl

up across the region. In the next instant, the space before him unexpectedly started to rapidly warp and distort, with rays of brilliance radiating out from it. Faintly, one could discern a gigantic glowing array, approximately ten thousand metres large, taking form within the space.

Space continued to warp and distort within the gigantic glowing array. Within the glowing array was an independent space, with vast and ocean-like Spiritual Energy present within it, gushing out wave after wave. All of the Spiritual Aura present within the entire region of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy originated from here, supporting the students in their training and cultivation.

This was the origin of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

"What a frightening Eighth Rank Convergent Spiritual Array."

Seeing this sight before him. Mu Chen gave a sigh in admiration. This Convergent Spiritual Array already had its own independent space. A Spiritual Array of this degree would absolutely require people whose attainments in Spiritual Arrays had reached Grandmaster realm to be able to arrange it! With a changing of hand seals, rays of brilliance converged before the Eighth Ranked Spiritual Array. In the next instant, one could faintly discern a giant bronze door approximately a hundred metres tall appearing within. The giant door was shut tight, with its surface being covered to the brim in mysterious runic patterns that appeared to be some kind of seal that completely isolated the vast and boundless Spiritual Energy before leaving this independent space.

"That's the Gate of the Northern Heavens?" asked Shen Cangsheng and the others as they cast their scorching gazes towards the giant bronze door, eager to hop in and try it out.

With a flick of his finger, a ray of light shot out from Dean Tai Cang towards the giant bronze door. As it struck, the mysterious runic patterns on its surface started to glow bright, with rays of light extending out, covering the entire giant door.

Creak.

When those runic patterns completely lit up, a heavy sound finally rang

out from the tightly shut giant bronze door as it slowly started to creep open.

Rays of brilliance rushed towards the sky.

Following its opening, vast, majestic Spiritual Aura covered the earth and hid the skies as it swept out. This Spiritual Aura was too vast and boundless, causing it to actually transform into a tornado, wreaking havoc as it crazily spun around. As the Spiritual Aura perfused out, it blanketed the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy at extremely rapid speeds, instantly causing a tremble that shook the minds of countless students. The Spiritual Aura present in the sky was numerous times more vast and stronger then usual.

"Hallmaster Mo You and Elder Zhu Tian will accompany you guys into the Gate of the Northern Heavens. If anything happens, they bring you all out immediately," said Dean Tai Cang with a stern gaze. "Within the Gate of the Northern Heavens, the Spiritual Energy present there is overly vast and boundless. Just some slight commotion will be enough to cause a major upheaval of the environment. Therefore, you guys definitely have to be careful and vigilant."

"Yes!"

Shen Cangsheng and the rest immediately respectfully replied.

"If you're prepared, head inside," said Dean Tai Cang after nodding his head.

"Let's go!"

Taking the lead, Shen Cangsheng shot over, heading towards the Gate of the Northern Heavens. Behind him, after taking a deep breath, Li Xuantong, Su Xuan, He Yao and the rest immediately followed suit.

Being the last, Luo Li looked towards Mu Chen standing beside her. With a faint smile, she said, "It's time for me to go in. In the next half-year, you have to properly train and cultivate under Senior Northern Sea."

Looking towards the young girl before him, great reluctance was still present in his heart. For the next half-year, he would not be able to see

her. This was somewhat unbearable for him. However, the only thing he could do was to extend his arm and hug the little waist of the young girl, before giving a gentle kiss on her glistening forehead. "Be careful."

A pinkish shade appeared on Luo Li's lovable face, before she gave a nod. Pushing against Mu Chen's chest, she turned around, transforming into a graceful swan as she shot into the gigantic bronze door, her figure disappearing within in a blink of an eye.

Behind her, Hallmaster Mo You and Elder Zhu Tian followed suit and entered the giant bronze door. As everyone had completely disappeared within the Gate of the Northern Heavens, the giant bronze door started to slowly close, isolating that vast and endlessly terrifying Spiritual Energy into the independent space.

"Do you have some beef with that Saint Spiritual Academy's Ji Xuan?" Standing beside Mu Chen, a faint smile appeared on the face of the Northern Sea Dragon as he asked the former.

Slightly nodding his head, Mu Chen replied in a soft voice, "A death grudge."

"Then, I'll have to tell you this. That Ji Xuan isn't that easy to deal with. His performance in the Saint Spiritual Academy is not one bit inferior to you. Although you have defeated Mo Xingtian in the Divine Spiritual Mountain this time, according to the information we've received, two months ago, Ji Xuan left for an outbound mission and decimated an entire Sect by himself. Furthermore, there were three people in the Sect who had passed the First Little Disaster of the Three Sovereign Disasters," said the Northern Sea Dragon.

Hearing that, Mu Chen's eyes slightly contracted as he thought, He destroyed a Sect possessing three experts that had passed their Human Body Disaster? That kind of difficulty had even surpassed the difficulty of killing Mo Xingtian. Truly, Ji Xuan's a formidable opponent.

"The Saint Spiritual Academy has a Stand Spiritual Heaven, something that's similar to our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's Gate of the Northern Heavens. It's also a secret training ground for them. As of now, Ji

Xuan has already entered it. Half a year from now, his strength would be even more formidable. At that time, if you only possess the strength you have now, it's best that you don't participate in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, since you will completely be unable to match up to him."

Hearing this, Mu Chen gave a faint laugh. Turning his head towards the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, he replied in a soft voice, "Senior Northern Sea. There's no need for you to say those words to stimulate me. During this half a year, I will accept whatever special training you throw at me. As long as you can bring it out, don't worry about me not being able to endure it. Regardless of how formidable a Ji Xuan is, I will deal with him in this Great Spiritual Academy Tournament."

The eyes of the Northern Sea Dragon faintly narrowed, while a smile surfaced on his withered face

"Good brat, nice guts!"

A smile also surfaced on Mu Chen's face as he raised his head. Looking towards the horizon, a chilling glint started to condense within his eyes.

Ji Xuan, let's have a good fight this time.

Chapter 438: Special Training

On the second day after Luo Li and the rest had entered the Gate of the Northern Heavens to train and cultivate, under the guidance of the Northern Sea Dragon, Mu Chen headed to a place that wasn't foreign, yet made his scalp turn slightly numb. This place was the last level of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's Lightning Territory.

Rumble!

The vast and boundless sea of lightning occupied the horizon within this black space. With a single look, one would not be able to see its end. As it churned and surged, gigantic angry dragon-like Divine Black Lightning would roar from the sea of lightning with astonishing claps of thunder that would cause even space to shake and tremble. The might of this region was extremely frightening.

Standing at the last level of the Lightning Territory, Mu Chen raised his head to look at the jet-black sea of lightning before him. Although he had entered it once before, looking at it still caused his heart to palpitate. The pure jet-black colour gave an extremely suppressed feeling to people who saw it, as if anything would be devoured upon entering it.

"Senior Northern Sea, how are we going to train?" Looking at the rivers of lightning descending from the middle of the sea of lightning, Mu Chen couldn't help smacking his lips, before cautiously speaking out.

The Northern Sea Dragon stroked his bald and hairless head, causing his appearance to look truly comical, appearing not one bit like the great academy protector of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Shooting a glare at Mu Chen, he curled his lip up as he asked, "How's your training in your Thunder God Physique?"

"Diplo Rune Lightning Physique." Mu Chen honestly replied.

Hearing that, the eyebrows of the Northern Sea Dragon twitched before nodding his head in indifference while saying, "That's not bad. However, from now till the end of this period of time, you have to cultivate your Thunder God Physique to Quadra Rune Lightning Physique."

Hearing that, Mu Chen was instantly startled. Any body refinement Deity Tier Spiritual Art was already difficult to cultivate, with the Thunder God Physique being one of the most outstanding within the lot, which made cultivating it even more difficult. For the sake of obtaining his Diplo Rune Lightning Physique, he had spent god-knows how much blood and effort. Wanting to let it leap to a Quadra Rune lightning Physique, how difficult would that be?

"Next up, you'll enter there and cultivate for me, and you're not allowed to come out." The Northern Sea Dragon pointed towards the jet-black sea of lightning hovering across the space, before speaking with an indifferent tone, "In addition, you're not allowed to use the Divine Black Lightning Poison to mask your Spiritual Energy fluctuations."

Mu Chen was immediately startled by those words, while his scalp started to turn numb. Having tested it before, he knew about how terrifying that sea of lightning was. Previously, when he had entered, he had completely relied on the Divine Black Lightning Poison to mask his aura. Only by doing that was he able to stay safe without a hitch. However, now, the Northern Sea Dragon didn't allow him to mask his aura. Wouldn't that lead to the rampant attacks from countless Divine Black Lightning upon him entering?

Although his strength had grow quite a bit since then, compared to the frightening Divine Black Lightning, it still wasn't considered as anything. Furthermore, he could clearly remember that there was still a terrifying Lightning Spirit present within the sea of lightning, a frightening existence that even the Northern Sea Dragon found to be troublesome. What if that thing casually sends an attack at him. At that time, it might already be enough to turn him into ashes.

"There are countless strands of Divine Black Lightning energy within this sea of lightning, and there's nothing more suitable to temper your Thunder God Physique than that. Furthermore, the Divine Black Lightning also contains energies. As long as you're able to endure it, it will have great benefits to your cultivation, not being one bit weaker than cultivating in the Gate of the Northern Heavens."

The Northern Sea Dragon replied lazily, "Naturally, if you're afraid, we can choose a normal method. However, when the half-year training ends, when Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong and the rest come out, they would toss you very far behind."

Spurred by those words, Mu Chen laughed as he shook his head. Not planning to saying anything more, he nodded his head and replied, "Let's start, then."

"That's the way," replied the Northern Sea Dragon, nodding his head. "Don't be concerned about that Lightning Spirit. I've already sealed it up. It's up to you to toss around in the lightning sea, so long as you can endure it.

After muttering for a moment, the Northern Sea Dragon gave a clench of his withered hand, causing a black lightning light to condense within his palm. In the next instant, it transformed into a black jade slip sparkling with lightning light. With a flick, he sent it flying towards Mu Chen, which the latter hastily catching it. Looking over at it in doubt, he saw three ancient words condensed from the lightning present on the surface of the black slip.

Lightning Controlling Technique.

"Lightning Controlling Technique?"

Mu Chen blankly stared at it as he asked in doubt, "Is this an offensive Deity Tier Spiritual Art?"

"Deity Tier Spiritual Art?" Hearing that, the Northern Sea Dragon gave a sneer as he replied, "Dumb brat. This isn't any Deity Tier Spiritual Art, but a Divine Technique!"

"Divine Technique?"

Hearing that, a shock instantly shook through Mu Chen's mind. Within the heavens and earth, there were myriads of unpredictable things, with Deity Tier Spiritual Arts being one of them. As for the so-called 'Divine Techniques', they were incomparably mysterious and profound. It's said that there were various kinds mysterious energies in the heavens and

earth. Once they were shaped and activated, they would erupt with extremely terrifying power. Those familiar skills that were able to do this were known as Divine Techniques.

However, Divine Techniques had extremely harsh conditions for cultivating in them, Furthermore, their memonics were extremely rare. They were things the would have considerable value, even in the eye of Sovereign realm experts. In the past, Mu Chen had only vaguely heard about them. However, he had yet to see any Divine Techniques first hand, with no such thing even being displayed in the Spiritual Values Hall. However, the thing before his eyes that was given to him by the Northern Sea Dragon was unexpected a Divine Technique!

"Generally speaking, Divine Techniques are things that only Sovereign realm experts are qualified to get their fingers on. However, this "Lightning Controlling Technique" has some origin with the Thunder God Physique you're cultivating. As long as you can sense the true meaning of lightning and thunder, you'll be able to successfully cultivate it. When you're against an enemy, with a thought, you will be able to attract lightning and thunder of extraordinary might." The Northern Sea Dragon slowly replied.

"Attract lightning and thunder?" Mu Chen's eyes were brimming with shock and admiration. This was a Divine Technique? It truly was formidable. There were some special Deity Tier Spiritual Arts that were also able to form lightning and thunder to attack one's enemies. However, Mu Chen knew that those kinds of lightning and thunder weren't pure, with most of them being formed from condensed Spiritual Energy. They weren't the pure lightning and thunder of the heavens and earth.

However, the so-called "Lightning Controlling Technique" was able to achieve this. From this point, this Divine Technique truly was much more mysterious and profound than the Deity Tier Spiritual Arts.

"It's extremely difficult to cultivate this Divine Technique. It's best that you properly comprehend it when you're cultivating within the sea of lightning," said the Northern Sea Dragon as he stuffed his hands into his sleeves, his lazy appearance showing not one sign of wanting to give a

detailed explanation to Mu Chen.

Seeing this, Mu Chen could only nod his head in helplessness while he stored the "Lightning Controlling Technique". Raising his head up to look at the jet-black sea of lightning, he took a deep breath as his gaze started to slowly turn cold. Since he had decided to come here to accept the special training, he would naturally not retreat or back down. Wanting to obtain greater power would require a corresponding investment. Power that came with no effort wasn't something that Mu Chen liked, since that wasn't reliable.

"If you're truly unable to endure it within the sea of lightning, just take out the Lightning God's Lotus. It'll protect you." The Northern Sea Dragon slowly said.

"Yes."

Gently nodding his head, Mu Chen stomped his feet, shooting across the horizon like a peng. Boundless Spiritual Energy circulated and protected his body, with lightning light sparkling across his body. Clearly, even his Thunder God Physique had been activated. The sea of lightning before him was a place where death would occur nine out of ten times. Therefore, he could not help being careful and vigilant.

Bang!

Countless black lightning howled about within the edges of the sea of lightning, appearing as if they had detected Mu Chen's approach. Instantly, claps of thunder resounded, with bolts of lightning covering the earth and hiding the skies before striking the latter's body.

Chi! Chi!

Lightning arcs exploded across Mu Chen's body as the robes he was wearing instantly turned into ashes. Intense pain started to radiate across his entire body. Nevertheless, not a change happened to his expression; after all, he could be considered to have some few attainments in his Thunder God Physique, He was completely able to endure the Divine Black Lightning at the fringes.

Nevertheless, Mu Chen didn't have contempt or disdain for those bolts due to this, since he knew that the truly terrifying Divine Black Lightning was hidden within the sea of lightning. Compared to those, the Divine Black Lightning on the outside was not worth even a look.

Hu.

Mu Chen headed forward at an extremely fast speed, nearing the jet-black sea of lightning in the blink of an eye. Looking towards the heart-palpitating darkness present before him, Mu Chen deeply exhaled, before stomping the air. With a plop, his body rushed straight into the sea of lightning.

Chi!

Upon rushing in, Mu Chen could immediately feel the rampant lightning energies crazily gushing over. During the previous time he was here, he had relied on the Divine Black Lightning Poison to mask himself up, which caused the sea of lightning to not treat him as anything. However, after rushing in without any cover, he finally knew what extraordinary power this sea of lightning was hiding.

Boundless Spiritual Energy endlessly gushed out from Mu Chen's body, resisting against the corrosion of the lightning energies. After entering more than a thousand metres deep, he started to slow his speed down. Taking a seat, two lightning runes sparkled on his chest, while black lightning arcs jumped across the surface of his body.

Boundless Spiritual Energy flared and rose up around his body, forcing the black lightning liquid away from him, creating a metre wide space in his surroundings.

Sitting in there, he was able to see bolts of Divine Black Lightning appearing akin to giant dragons wriggling and squirming about within the jet-black depths of the sea of lightning, each of them discharging with frightening power.

"Time to start."

Mu Chen muttered, while a fierce shadow rushed forth within his black

pupils. Now, everyone was making preparations for the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament half a year from now. Although he didn't enter the Gate of the Northern Heavens, he knew that training and cultivating within there would have considerable danger. Since everyone was risking their lives to train and cultivate, he should also put in effort here.

This half a year was where changes would be extremely huge. For the sake of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, the various Great Spiritual Academies would use various kinds of methods to increase the strength of their elite students. Half a year from now, everyone's strength would have improved by leaps and bounds. If he was still feeling immeasurably self-satisfied by defeating Mo Xingtian, he might turn all of the hope the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had for him into froth and shadows.

Taking a deep breath, Mu Chen stared at those giant dragon-like bolts of Divine Black Lightning. In the next instant, a deep roar abruptly rang from his throat.

"Come! Let me see how frightening you all are!"

Bang!

Boundless and imposing Spiritual Energy explosively erupted from his body!

Rumble!

When his Spiritual Energy erupted, it had completely set off the sea of lightning. Rumbling sounds erupted from the giant bolts of Divine Black Lightning as they split apart the sea of lightning, before starting to furiously rumble towards this foreigner present here.

Chapter 439: Bitter Cultivation

Rumble!

Frightening peals of thunder resounded within the jet-black sea of lightning as gigantic hundred-metre long bolts of Divine Black Lightning furiously shot over. As the lightning liquid flared up, a gigantic pathway was created within it. Like a fierce giant python, the bolt of Divine Black Lightning furiously struck against the insignificant body of the figure present within the sea of lightning.

Bang!

Lightning liquid in a hundred-metre radius around the figure was blown away, with the little figure sent flying back thousands of metres. Lightning arcs crazily danced around across his body, while a sweet taste appeared from his throat as a mouthful of blood uncontrollably spurted out, before being transformed into nihility by the lightning liquid.

Clutching his chest, Mu Chen's face had turned slightly pale, while faint and brief trembles shook throughout his body. Indescribably intense pain racked his insides, with his body appearing as if it wanted to fall apart, while his bones gave off the feeling as if they had been shattered.

This Divine Black Lightning was truly too frightening.

If not for his small attainments in his Lightning God's Physique, added with him having some slight resistance against the Divine Black Lightning, he might not have lived from that strike.

Mu Chen raised his trembling hand to wipe of the bloodstains at the corner of his mouth. However, before he could complete this action, peals of thunder resounded across the sea of lightning once again as another gigantic bolt of Divine Black Lightning shot over, striking his body at lightning speed.

Bang!

Yet again, he was sent flying thousands of metres back, the bloodstains at the corner of his mouth growing increasingly thick.

There were too many bolts of Divine Black Lightning within the sea of lightning. They came in succession, with seemingly no stop to them. Such a ferocious attack made people nearly unable to catch their breath.

Mu Chen's body was continuously sent flying back by the successive attacks. As this continued, a faint black shadow even appeared on his body as his skin had been scorched black. Furthermore, under the scorched skin, blood started to seep out from his pores. Clearly, his insides had been smashed into a pile of mess by the successive strikes from the Divine Black Lightning.

At this moment, Mu Chen could precisely understand exactly how frightening this special training was.

Under the successive strikes from the Divine Black Lightning, Mu Chen could even faintly sense the feeling of meeting with death. This special training should be ranked at the Hell-level...

The spectacle happening now was cruel. However, faced against the successive strikes and spurting mouthfuls and mouthfuls of blood, Mu Chen's eyes clearly started to slowly turn scarlet, while his breathing became labored. The intense pain racking his body had grown so much that it had turned slightly numb to him. An abnormally happy feeling brought about when the intense pain had reached its extreme limit started to rise, sliver by sliver, within him, causing his reasoning to quietly submerge.

In this world, if one wanted to obtain a more powerful strength, one would need to pay a price unimaginable to normal people. For the past year, Mu Chen's strength had advanced by leaps and bounds, with normal people only being able to observe his rapid advance. However, no one would have imagined that Mu Chen would have to pay such a price just to possess such rapidly advancing strength.

Time-after-time, he had crossed hands with opponents whose strength surpassed his. Time-after-time, his life had hovered at the gates of death. Due to having experienced time-after-time of fighting with all he had, he was able to walk all the way till now.

All of those bitter difficulties were smashed by him. How could this special training make him, Mu Chen, give up here?

Slivers of blood started to seep out from Mu Chen's eyes as he wiped away the bloodstains at the corners of his mouth. Looking at the gigantic bolts of Divine Black Lightning shooting over from the far distance, a howl rang out from his throat. On his body, the lightning runes sparkled as he unexpectedly took the initiative and rushed forward. Like a mayfly faced against a giant tree, he violently smashed against the Divine Black Lightning.

Bang!

A giant bang resounded as a stretch of lightning liquid swept out as Mu Chen's body was sent flying back once again.

On the outside of the sea of lightning, the Northern Sea Dragon stood with his hands behind his back. Looking at the figure of the youth being sent flying back and spurting blood time-after-time again, not a single trace of emotion was present on his ancient face. Nevertheless, slight fluctuations were present in his eyes. From him entering till now, Mu Chen had already endured 18 bolts of Divine Black Lightning. Even a person who had passed his Fleshly Body Tribulation would be in a considerable miserable state under attacks of such a degree. Despite that, this youth was still preservering on.

His perseverance and tenacity caused even the Northern Sea Dragon to slightly nod his head. Indeed, being able to distinguish himself in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy in the past year, this Mu Chen truly has his redeeming qualities.

"What a young lunatic. My special training isn't for you to lose your tiny life."

Upon seeing Mu Chen endure five more bolts of Divine Black Lightning, a helpless smile finally appeared on the face of the Northern Sea Dragon. At this time, the former was like an arrow at the end of its flight. If he continued to push himself on like this, something might really happen.

With a move of his body, the Northern Sea Dragon disappeared from the

space he was standing on, appearing in the next moment in front of Mu Chen. With a wave of his sleeve, he smashed and dissipated the bolts of Divine Black Lightning that were hurtling over once again. With a smile, he spoke out, "You're able to endure over twenty bolts of Divine Black Lightning for your first time. That's not bad. Take out your Lightning God's Lotus and recuperate your injuries before continuing. This training isn't something you can accomplish just by concentrating and taking it head-on. You have to continue to become stronger under this tempering. That way, you will be able to endure the successive strikes."

Hearing that, Mu Chen gave a painful smile. Yet, such a minute action appeared to cause all the muscles in his body to tear, with his blood and flesh appearing to have been lit aflame. Nevertheless, he raised his fingers and summoned the Lightning God's Lotus, before slumping powerlessly on it, his chest heaving up and down. Clenching his teeth, he endured the intense pain racking within him and sat down. At this moment, his insides had been turned into a pile of mess by the strikes from the Divine Black Lightning, something that he needed to recover as quickly as possible.

Chi. Chi.

Black lightning arcs danced across the surface of Mu Chen's body as slivers of energy from the Divine Black Lightning continuously drilled into Mu Chen, tempering that broken body of his.

Although the intense pain was still radiating across his entire body, at this moment, Mu Chen could faintly discern that the flesh, bones and blood where the intense pain had radiated across appeared to have turned scorching hot, while a power started to slowly increase. Clearly, the previous bout of crazy attacks did not only bring him intense pain and injuries.

His body was slowly growing more tyrannical under the bout of crazy attacks.

Although the degree of increase was extremely small, Mu Chen believed that if this continued to accumulate, there would be a time when he would have a quantitative change to his body.

The long half-year training had just started now.

Sitting on the Lightning God's Lotus, Mu Chen opened his eyes approximately half an hour later. The scorched areas on his body peeled off, revealing fair, white skin beneath them. Merely, that white, fair skin wasn't frail and weak as it contained frightening power within.

Mu Chen cleaned away the bloodstains at the corner of his mouth. Although intense tearing pain still racked his insides, not a single tremble was visible on his face as he forcefully endured all of it.

Shaking and swaying, he stood up from the Lightning God's Lotus, unexpectedly wanting to have another bout with the Divine Black Lightning.

Looking at him, the Northern Sea Dragon frowned as he spoke out, "You brat, aren't you pushing yourself too hard? Your mother's not some simple person. Wouldn't she help you a bit at the very least? With her help, how would your accomplishments be this little?"

"Although my mum isn't simple, my dad is," replied Mu Chen in soft voice as he smiled.

Hearing that, the Northern Sea Dragon blankly stared at Mu Chen, before nodding his head and saying, "So it's like that. The status of your mum isn't a good thing for you."

He seemed to have understood something, since the gaze he sent towards Mu Chen now had an additional sigh within it. With the character of that clan, they might not be able to tolerate this little fellow. That's why his mother couldn't stay by his side...

"However, I've promised my dad that one day, I'll bring my mum back." Mu Chen spoke out in a slow manner.

Nodding his head, the Northern Sea Dragon replied, "As for this, someone as strong as your mother isn't able to accomplish it. If not, she wouldn't leave you two."

Raising his head, Mu Chen looked towards the jet-black sea of lightning, while a smile seemed to appear on his face.

"Since that's the case, I'll have to become stronger than my mum! Strong until I can statter the thing that is preventing us from coming together!"

Raising his head, Mu Chen spread his arms out and gave a hearty roar of laughter. In the next instant, with a move of his body, he shot straight out. As his laughter reverberated across the sea of lightning, Spiritual Energy erupted from his body. Instantly, the sea of lightning started to churn as bolts of Divine Black Lightning crazily hurtled towards him once again.

Looking at the tall and frail-looking figure of the youth in the far distance, a faint smile appeared on the face of the Northern Sea Dragon as he thought, This little fellow's ambition isn't low. However, that clan wasn't something that could be easily dealt with. Placed within the entire Great Thousand Worlds, they were considered to be big shot existences. Nevertheless, who would be able to understand the future achievements of the youth before him?

This was a hazy world, with the Spiritual Energy present within being boundless to a seemingly frightening degree. Converging in this world, the Spiritual Energy had formed an extremely terrifying pressure. Therefore, other than the mountains and hills present within this space, any other plants would grow to extremely short heights, yet were all excessively resilient.

The air present here appeared to be a hundred times heavier than what's in the outside world.

Slow, heavy footsteps rang out from the distance in this quiet, Spiritual Energy filled world. Across the horizon, multiple figures were walking from the distance, pacing themselves as they walked, step-by-step, over from the distance.

It was a group of young men and women. At this time, they were tightly clenching their teeth, their bodies slightly stooped forward. The Spiritual Energy within their bodies was pressed down to a state akin to pools of stagnant water upon their arrival in this space, resulting in extremely slow circulations. Every step they took consumed massive amounts of strength.

The frightening pressure on them caused their bodies to weigh akin to a

ton.

"This is the Gate of the Northern Heavens? The hell! I'm almost unable to endure this kind of torture!" A deathly pale shade covered Zhao Qingshan's face as he staggered and stumbled. Perspiration had already drenched his robes, with the aching pain radiating from his insides, causing him to be extremely tired and exhausted to the point of causing dizziness in his mind.

Although there weren't any frightening sneak attacks, continuing to walk on like that was sufficient to cause a person to collapse.

Ahead of him, Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong and the rest were also profusely perspiring, their lips parched and cracked. Upon entering the Gate of the Northern Heavens, they had walked on like this ever since. The quietness in this place made it appear akin to a dead realm. If not for them walking along the same path together, they might truly be unable to hold on any longer.

"Our half-year training has just begun." Li Xuantong's hoarse voice rang out, "Do you think it'll be easy to obtain strength and power? If you can't persevere, just break the jade slip, and Elder Zhu Tian and Hallmaster Mo You will bring you out."

Hearing that, Zhao Qingshan gave a bitter laugh before saying, "It isn't that I can't persevere, but can't we take a short break? If we continue on like this, I feel that my body will explode..."

Mu Fengyang and the rest shot a look at each other, before nodding their heads.

Both Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong had looked over, with their expressions showing one of slight hesitation.

However, while they were hesitating, a black-robed young girl following behind them had quietly walked passed them. Her jade-like hand holding her longsword, she walked, step-by-step, into the distance. At this moment, sweat had already flowed down her jade-like arm, completely drenching the longsword in her hand.

Seeing the side of the absolutely beautiful face, Li Xuantong could see the young girl clenching her teeth tightly, her gaze just like the stubborn and dedicated gaze she sent out years ago, causing people's hearts to stir.

"Let's go."

With a gentle sigh, he took heavy steps forward, following behind her.

Seeing this, Zhao Qingshan and the rest could only bitterly smile in helplessness. Even a girl could endure and persevere. If they stopped now, they would really lose too much face. Therefore, quietly howling in anguish in their hearts, the group of people continued to slowly tread on under the terrifying Spiritual Energy pressure pressing down on them.

Chapter 440: Well-Prepared

In the space within the final level of the Lightning Territory, where it was dim and dark all year around, the black sea of lightning flowed down from the heavens as low claps of thunder endlessly reverberated within the entire space.

Within the endless sea of lightning, quietly sat a thin and frail-looking figure. Gigantic bolts of Divine Black Lightning howled endless around him, before violently descending towards his body. Under those frightening attacks, the figure intensely shook, while his skin seemed to turn scorched-black. However, compared the previous time, where he was miserably sent flying back, this was clearly much, much better.

Floating in the sky, the Northern Sea Dragon looked towards the spectacle happening within the sea of lightning, causing him to slightly nod his head. Over the past ten days of being struck by those rampant attacks, it was clear that Mu Chen was gradually adapting to his current situation. Although the pain racking his insides didn't lessen by much, he was finally able to endure and hold it back.

The Northern Sea Dragon was also able to sense that the skin below each scorched patch on Mu Chen's body had become slightly stronger than before.

Nevertheless, faced against such tempering by the Divine Black Lightning, he shouldn't be growing stronger by just this little bit. Every single bolt of Divine Black Lightning contained boundless energies of the Divine Black Lightning, as well as Spiritual Energy. However, not much of them were present on Mu Chen's body...this clearly didn't make much sense.

"Is that little fellow purposefully suppressing those energies within his body?"

Faint rays of brilliance flashed within the eyes of the Northern Sea Dragon as an amused expression appeared on his ancient face, before mumbling out, "Truly a fellow with extremely high perception. Is he

planning to amass ample preparation before starting a spurting breakthrough?"

According to the calculations of the Northern Sea Dragon, Mu Chen should be slowly gaining strength under the constant tempering from the Divine Black Lightning. However, from the situation in front of his eyes, Mu Chen didn't choose to undergo this method. He had had absorbed all of those energies into his body and suppressed them together with all his might. When those energies were absorbed as they entered his body, they appeared unassuming. However, if they were condensed together to a certain degree, they would erupt like a ruptured dam, revealing considerably astonishing might.

The cultivation of the Lightning God Physique was considerably difficult, even if one possessed such a natural training ground like this sea of lightning. However, how could raising one's Diplo Rune Lightning Physique to a Quadra Rune Lightning Physique be anything easy? If one used the conventional method to do so, one wouldn't be able to reach such a stage even if one were to train for half a year.

It seemed that Mu Chen was also clear about this point. Therefore, he had opted for a different method, which was to prepare before shooting forward.

He suppressed all of those energies within his body like a teapot filled to the brim with boiling water, while tightly pressing the lid down, not letting any water rush out. However, he could only do so for a period of time, since it's not something that can be done for long. That's because once those energies were unable to be contained anymore, they would erupt with an extremely frightening rush.

Currently, Mu Chen was accumulating just for that kind of rush. Once it reached that stage, he might be able to rely on it to rush towards the heavens in a single leap.

Such an idea was extremely good, yet it required one to endure even more pain and suffering than usual. At this moment, it should feel like dynamite exploding within Mu Chen's body. Once he couldn't control it

any longer, he would have to pay a considerably heavy price.

As he continued to see this spectacle, the Northern Sea Dragon gave a helpless smile. This little fellow truly doesn't let people to stop worrying about him. Looks like I'll have to start watching him more tightly. If something unexpected happens, he would be able to immediately take action.

Rumble.

Just as the Northern Sea Dragon was smiling from his helplessness, bolts of Divine Black Lightning continued to shoot around within the sea of lightning, covering the earth and hiding the skies as they endless struck down towards the lone figure present there.

The energies within his body started to slowly condense together under the rampant onslaught...

Time quietly elapsed by under this dull and bitter training.

...

During this period, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had sunk into a peculiar state of peace, with the elite influential figures in the top ten places of the Heavenly Rankings having disappeared due to closed training. After losing those influential figures, the entire spiritual academy appeared to be much quieter than usual.

Naturally, under this peace and tranquility was a tense and taut atmosphere, with quite a few students mustering their strength and undergoing training and cultivation. After all, the Great Spiritual Academy Competition was around the corner. Although they didn't have the qualifications to participate in it, everyone knew about some details of the current situation of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

The results of their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy weren't good in the past Great Spiritual Academy Tournament a few years ago. Within the five Great Academies, they had taken bottom place. Due to this, there were some elite Spiritual Academies that had been sending covetous gazes at them, attempting to replace them as one of the five Great Academies.

Many of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's students wouldn't remain in the academy for the rest of their lives. After training and cultivating over here, they would leave to either join a stronger place to continue their training and cultivation or to return to their families or clans.

However, even though that was the case, that didn't prevent them from have feelings for the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Although there were innumerable Spiritual Academies present in the Great Thousand World now, not many would allow people to feel a sense of belonging like the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Naturally, this was perhaps due to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy possessing a rather good Dean. Dean Tai Cang's speech then had clearly moved the hearts of quite a few students.

A Dean that would have your back as long as you returned to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, regardless of whatever happens. In the entirety of the Great Thousand World, this was still considered a rarity.

Therefore, everyone was clear that the elite influential figures at the top ten places within the Heavenly Rankings were undergoing bitter training and cultivation in preparation for the upcoming Great Spiritual Academy Tournament. Those ten were prepared to fight for the glory and honor of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Therefore, they naturally could not fall behind those figures.

Perhaps due to discovering such an atmosphere within the Spiritual Academy, the higher-ups of the academy had actually sent word out that students who were able to break through to Heavenly Completion Stage would be able to obtain the qualifications to enter the Gates of the Northern Heavens. Once this news circulated around, it instantly caused the quiet Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy to flare up as the eyes of countless students who possessed pretty good talents became red. During this time, they continued to patronize the Lightning Territory and the various great convergent Spiritual Arrays, making every second count as they trained and cultivated in an attempt to allow themselves to break

through to Heavenly Completion Stage so that they obtained the qualifications to enter the Gates of the Northern Heavens to train and cultivate.

Under this stimulation, everyone managed to obtain pretty good results, since the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was not lacking in talent. There were some Seniors and quite a few students stuck at the Heavenly Transformation Stage that only needed to take one step forward to breakthrough to Heavenly Completion Stage. Therefore, within the short span of two months, among those outstanding students who had stayed stagnant over the past few years, some people had started to break through, causing the training atmosphere within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy to dramatically increase...

While the atmosphere within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had turned fiery, the last level of the Lightning Territory was still as dim and dark, with peals of thunder continuously resounding out.

Mu Chen quietly sat within the sea of lightning, black lightning arcs crazily danced across the surface of his body as they endlessly drilled into his body through his pores. An indescribably rampant energy was faintly discernible as it radiated from him, causing the lightning liquid in his surroundings to continuously flare and surge.

Anyone present would be able to sense how gigantic the stockpile of energies were in Mu Chen's body.

Rumble!

Bolts of Divine Black Lightning still continued to howl within the sea of lightning, descending onto Mu Chen's body, causing the glow of lightning to erupt and blot the skies.

Faint shivers shook through Mu Chen's body as he crazily absorbed the energy of the Divine Black Lightning and the boundless Spiritual Energy that had intruded into his body. However, despite that, his forehead started to wrinkle up as the explosive feeling he was waiting for still did not arrive...

"It's still not enough."

With his hands behind his back, the Northern Sea Dragon looked towards Mu Chen, who was seemingly submerged in the glow of black lightning. At this moment, his forehead too was wrinkled up. Mu Chen had been in there for three whole months, yet the energies he had accumulated within his body had not reached the level required for him to break through in one shot. If he was to trigger their eruption now, both his individual strength and his Lightning God Physique would be promoted. However, it was clear that the promotion level wouldn't make him satisfied.

After the three months of adaptation within here, Mu Chen was starting to gain some resistance towards the Divine Black Lightning.

"Since its the case, I'll give you a more powerful one..." A smile surfaced on the ancient face of the Northern Sea Dragon. In the next instant, with a wave of his sleeve, deep roars seemed to ring out from the deepest part of the sea of lightning. As the lightning liquid rippled, a giant black dragon slowly surfaced from within the jet-black sea's depths.

Brimming with the glow of lightning from its gigantic body, a cold and ancient luster radiated from the surface of the giant dragon's body.

This giant black dragon was impressively the Lightning Spiritual that was present in the sea of lightning some time ago. However, at this very moment, it was sealed up by the Northern Sea Dragon. Therefore, there was some transformation of its shape due to the Northern Sea Dragon's intent.

Opening its eyes wide, the Lightning Spirit looked towards Mu Chen present within the sea of lightning. In the next instant, opening its fierce giant maw, a furious roar rang out from it.

Bang!

All of a sudden, a gigantic glowing pillar of lightning liquid shot out from the giant maw of the Lightning Spirit. Splitting the sea of lightning apart, it violently shot towards Mu Chen's body.

Chi! Chi!

Mu Chen intensely shuddered as the black lightning light crasily sparkled across his body. Tiny wounds actually started to appeared on the surface of his body, signs that he was unable to endure the pressure of keeping the gigantic energies inside of him.

However, despite that, Mu Chen still didn't plan on stopping. On the contrary, he continued to crazily absorb the boundless energies contained within the glowing pillar of lightning liquid. Now, if he suppressed the energies even more viciously, the eruption would be even more ferocious!

He had suppressed them for three whole months, and suffered a three whole months of torment and torture. Therefore, he didn't wish for any little thing to satisfy him.

As he stared at Mu Chen and noticed the blood patterns continuing to extend across his body, the face of the Northern Sea Dragon grew slightly solemn. The appetite of this brat truly isn't small. However, isn't he not scared that he'll get bloated to death like that?

Should I let him continue?

A frown appeared on the face of the Northern Sea Dragon, before he shook his head in helplessness. Leave it be. That brat isn't hot-headed or impulsive. Since he has such an appetite, he should also know the risks and dangers involved in doing so. Now, I should try my best to assist him.

Thinking till there, the Northern Sea Dragon no longer hesitated anymore. With a flick of his finger, the Lightning Spirit roared once more, causing lightning light containing boundless energies to howl out, instantly enveloping Mu Chen's body.

Chi. Chi.

Blood patterns rapidly extended out, causing Mu Chen to appear, from a distance, akin to a porcelain-made person that was able to break, a scene that would cause a person's heart to feel fear and apprehension.

Crack!

All of a sudden, a faint sound seemed to ring out, causing the eyes of the Northern Sea Dragon to furiously contract.

Chapter 441: Quadra Rune Lightning Physique

Crack.

The breaking sounded so tiny it couldn't be heard, making it almost impossible to hear within this sea of lightning against the peals of thunder. However, despite that, when the sound quietly rang out, the face of the Northern Sea Dragon turned solemn, while his body seemed to have almost turned tense in an instant. Sending his gaze piercing through layer upon layer of the sea of lightning, he stared tightly at the thin and frail figure within.

Bang!

All of a sudden, boundless, rampant fluctuations erupted from that location as black rays of lightning brilliance unexpectedly started to radiate from the blood patterns on the youth covered in them. As they extended out, some abnormally tyrannical lightning and thunder fluctuations started to seep out from those blood patterns.

That seal of his appeared to be about to shatter.

Whoosh!

All of a sudden, at this moment, Mu Chen's eyes snapped open. Clapping his hands together to form some hand seals, a fierce roar akin to the clap of thunder rang out. The roar caused the lightning liquid in his surroundings to be driven back, creating a gigantic thousand metre large empty space with nothing being able to get close to Mu Chen.

Black lightning arcs crazily danced across his body before condensing together, forming something akin to a gigantic thunderstorm.

"Were the Divine Black Lightning energies accumulated within his body too powerful?"

The Northern Sea Dragon muttered and he tightly focused on everything happening before him. From the looks of the situation, Mu Chen

appeared to already be unable to suppress the frightening energies he had accumulated within his body. If he continued to forcefully control them, he might risk blowing himself up.

At this moment, Mu Chen was clear about the situation within his body. Despite the dangerous position he was in, his face remained calm and serene. Rapidly changing his hand seals, black lightning light could be faintly seen gushing out from underneath his skin. Two lightning runes condensed on his chest, while a glow of lightning started to crackle as it too started to condense. This was the unexpected the sign of a formation of a lightning rune.

Clearly, Mu Chen was attempting to make a breakthrough now!

Crackle!

Increasingly rampant black lightning arcs continued to gush out from Mu Chen's body. From the distance, his entire body seemed to be encased by lightning arcs. As they crazily sparkled, they finally transformed into rays of lightning light, before drilling into making the third lighting rune on Mu Chen's chest.

As those energies from the Divine Black Lightning gushed in, the third lightning rune started to slowly take form.

As the lightning rune gradually took form, Mu Chen's skin also started to turn jet-black, giving him an ice-cold and solid feeling when looked at, as if there was nothing in this universe that was able to shatter it apart. An indescribable sense of tyranny.

At the same time, Mu Chen's body started to grow slightly taller.

The formation of the third lightning rune wasn't too difficult, since the energies of the Divine Black Lightning accumulated by Mu Chen over these past three whole months came into play. As the energies continued to endlessly gush out, it caused the lightning rune to appear increasingly vivid and lifelike, akin to a true rune formed by thunder and lightning.

This formation lasted for approximately a dozen minutes, before the last black lightning arc on the surface of his body disappeared.The third

lightning rune on Mu Chen's chest had truly condensed and took form. At the instant of its formation, the blood patterns that covered Mu Chen's body disappeared, while dim rays of brilliance gushed out, and a incomparably tyrannical energy fluctuation radiated along with it.

Although Mu Chen was still quietly sitting there, not moving a single inch, he could already give people a feeling as if any movement from him could shatter the earth and rend the skies.

"Triple Rune Lightning Physique?" muttered the Northern Sea Dragon as his eyes slightly narrowed. Being able to have such an improvement after being in there for three months was in fact considered a pretty good result. He was slightly exaggerating when he had demanded for Mu Chen to reach a Quadra Rune Lightning Physique within this half-year; after all, he knew the difficulty required in training and cultivating the Lightning Physique. Cultivating a Body Refinement Art was, by itself, extremely difficult; let alone the Lightning God Physique, which was considered as a rather good Body Refinement Divine Art.

"Oh?"

However, just as the Northern Sea Dragon was quietly thinking, all of a sudden, he turned his gaze around and noticed that Mu Chen didn't show any signs of coming to a stop after the complete formation of his third lightning rune. The youth was tightly clenching his teeth. Due to the past three months of bitter training, a messy stubble had grown on his handsome face. Nevertheless, it caused him to appear exceedingly firm and determined. Clapping his hands together, his hand seals changed once more, unexpectedly continuing to display the mnemonic seal of the Lightning God Physique.

"Harrh!"

A low roar rang out of his mouth, once again, as the thunderstorm behind his back started to expand, enveloping his entire body within it. Gigantic rays of lightning light howled out, streaming endlessly as they smashed into Mu Chen's body.

Under the strikes from the lightning light, little bits of glowing lights

actually started to condense above the third lightning rune on Mu Chen's chest!

He actually wanted to condense his fourth lightning rune with one spurt of energy!

"Indeed, he's banking on this idea, huh?" the Northern Sea Dragon muttered.

Rumble!

The black thunderstorm crazily revolve around Mu Chen's body, with the energies of the Divine Black Lightning endlessly spewing out from the sea of lightning, before finally rushing into Mu Chen's body. This torrential flow was considerably tyrannical. If not for Mu Chen having crazily endured all of the strikes from the Divine Black Lightning, he might not have dared to endure such a flow. However, even though that was the case, he felt that his body appeared to be dissolving apart as intense, searing-hot pain racked him, appearing to want to split his body into pieces.

However, at this moment, he could only clench his teeth and continue to endure.

More and more energies of the Divine Black Lightning howled over. However, despite that, the formation of the fourth lightning rune was clearly a hundred times more difficult than the third one. Even with those boundless energies of the Divine Black Lightning pouring into his body, it was only able to form less than half of that lightning rune. There was still quite a bit before its complete formation.

This ending caused a shadow of deep worry to flash within Mu Chen's eyes. He never imagineed that his three months of accumulation would still be unable to completely condense his fourth lightning rune. Indeed, this Lightning God Physique was extremely hard to train and cultivate.

"Truly such a reckless brat."

The Northern Sea Dragon shook his head in helplessness, before muttering, "When helping people, help to the end. Seeing that your

mother had helped our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, this old man will help you once more."

As his voice rang out, he gave a flick of his finger. All of a sudden, the Lightning Spirit at the depths of the sea of lightning roared out, as if it had heard some kind of order. However, despite that, it appeared extremely unwilling, resulting in it starting to struggle in an attempt to escape its controller.

"Hmph!"

A cold snort rang out from the Northern Sea Dragon. All of a sudden, black feathers started to grow out from the gigantic body of the Lightning Spirit. Drilling into its body, the black feathers appeared to take root in it body. As black rays of brilliance gushed from them, an earth shattering roar of fury rang out, one that sounded of extreme pain.

After struggling for quite a while, it finally started to gradually turn obedient. With a roar, a little ray of black lightning light flew out from its head. That little black lightning light looked like a drop of lightning liquid, yet it appeared as if there was a thunder and lightning world within it. As the lightning flashed and thunder clapped within it, it appeared extremely strange and peculiar.

Whoosh!

The drop of black lightning light liquid rapidly shot across the sea of lightning. Finally, piercing through the thunderstorm, it shot straight towards Mu Chen's forehead.

Instantly, Mu Chen's body turned stiff and rigid as rays of black lightning light exuded from his forehead at astonishing speed. In a blink of an eye, it had extended across his entire body. From afar, he appeared to have been encased in black vines, looking rather mysterious.

Bang! Bang!

All of a sudden, the surface of Mu Chen's body exploded apart as clumps of a blood mist rose up. At this moment, his face started to warp and distort, clearly indicative of the extreme pain and agony he was feeling

now.

As the blood mist rose from the surface of his body, the lightning light that had covered his entire body started to crazily pull back towards the fourth lightning rune on his chest. That lightning light seemed to contain extremely astonishing energies of the Divine Black Lightning, causing the lightning rune that was having difficulty condensing to rapidly extend.

Mu Chen's body continued to explode apart, with more and more blood mists spraying out. Finally, they formed a thick layer of hardened blood, wrapping Mu Chen's body tightly within it.

After an unknown amount of time, the thunderstorm on the outside started to slowly dissipate away.

Mu Chen quietly sat within the sea of lightning, with the lightning liquid being unable to get close to a dozens metres from him. At this moment, his aura seemed to have turned exceedingly weak, with not a single activity being able to be detected from him.

With his hands on his back, the Northern Sea Dragon quietly watched the scene before him. Not showing any signs of taking action, he just stood in the air as he quietly waited.

This wait continued on for five days.

Within these five days, not only did the hardened blood that had encased Mu Chen not make any strange movement, not even a single movement could be detected from the body within. From the looks if it, it appeared as if he had lost all life and vitality.

However, despite that, the Northern Sea Dragon still didn't take action, while his eyelids droopily hung low. All of a sudden, his gaze moved.

Whoosh!

A piece of hardened blood had quietly slid off within the sea of lightning. Like a chain reaction, the pieces of hardened blood rapidly dropped off, quickly turning into dust and fluttering away.

As the hardened blood fell off, a tall and thin figure appeared. As the

youth opened his eyes, black lightning light flashed within his black eyes, appearing abnormally fierce to the point that would cause people to not dare to look straight at him.

He slowly stood up, his black hair fluttering around. Lowering his head, he saw four lighting runes softly sparkling on his chest. The vivid and lifelike lightning runes were akin to the most beautiful lightning arcs in the universe, radiating with immeasurable energy within, as if they contained the prestige of the heavens and earth.

Four lightning runes.

Quadra Rune Lightning Physique!

Looking at the four lightning runes, Mu Chen slowly clenched his hands tightly, while the surging energies akin to a tsunami endlessly gushed out from his body. This was a sense of power he had never felt before. The current Mu Chen had absolute confidence that he would dare to fight head-on against an expert who had passed his Human Body Disaster just purely with this power!

This power would truly cause people to be too intoxicated.

Ah!

An arc curved upwards at the corner of Mu Chen's mouth. Finally, unable to hold it any longer, he opened his mouth wide, raised his head towards the sky and gave a long howl. His roar thundered out, causing huge waves that blotted the skies to form within the sea of lightning. As thunderous claps rampantly howled out, they condensed behind the youth. At this moment, he looked just like a god of lightning descending from the heavens!

After three months of bitter training, he had finally received his compensation!

Chapter 442: First Stage

Rumble!

The black sea of lightning endlessly surged and churned, while claps of thunder resounded across the entire place, causing even the surrounding space to hum and vibrate.

Whoosh!

All of a sudden, the black sea of lighting split apart as a figure radiating with lighting light shot out, before coming to a hover above the sea of lightning. Gigantic bolts of Divine Black Lightning howled out, descending on the figure. Countless rays of lightning light shot out, yet the figure just stretches his hands out, appearing in an extremely intoxicated state.

After promoting his Lightning God Physique to Quadra Rune Lightning Physique, Mu Chen's resistance to the Divine Black Lightning was much stronger than before. No longer would he be struck into a considerably miserable state. In fact, when the rampant energies of the Divine Black Lighting had entered his body, they only brought about a slightly numb feeling, an extremely comfortable sensation.

Hu.

Lowering his hands, Mu Chen exhaled a clump of white mist, within which even sparkled with lightning light. A smile brimming with excitement was present on his face. Indeed, this Quadra Rune Lighting Physique is much, much more tyrannical than the Diplo Rune Lightning Physique.

Raising his head, he looked towards the Northern Sea Dragon in the distance, before shooting over with a move of his body.

Sweeping his gaze across Mu Chen's body, a satisfied smile appeared on the face of the Northern Sea Dragon. Raising one's Lightning God Physique from Diplo Rune to Quadra Rune in the span of three months. This was already a rather good speed of improvement.

"Thanks Senior Northern Sea." Mu Chen spoke out respectfully as he

cupped his hands. He knew that the Northern Sea Dragon's help was essential for him to be able to have such an improvement. If not, he would need at least one more fold of time to be able to obtain similar results.

Waving his hands, the Northern Sea Dragon replied, "Since you're participating in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament for our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, I'll naturally help a bit to avoid losing face."

Speaking till here, he paused for a moment,shooting a look at Mu Chen, before continuing. "However, for the past three months, I can only help you promote your Lighting God's Physique to this level. It doesn't provide too much of a promotion to your Spiritual Energy cultivation."

Hearing that, Mu Chen nodded his head. During the last three months, he had primarily trained and cultivated his Lighting God's Physique. Although his Spiritual Energy had also increased, it wasn't at the astonishing rate of improvement as his Lighting God's Physique. Nevertheless, he was already extremely satisfied. After all, within the short span of three months, it was impossible for him to drastically improve in both aspects. He had to choose one of them to focus on.

"There's still three more months till the half-year mark. For the next three months, I'll do my utmost to train and cultivate my Spiritual Energy and raise my cultivation level," replied Mu Chen with a smile.

Hearing that, the Northern Sea Dragon nodded his head and said, "Okay. However, for the next three months, I'll not be guiding you anymore. You'll be changing places. For the next three months, you're belong to someone else."

"Someone else?" Mu Chen gawked.

"Your final three months will be guided by Elder Ling Xi. It'll be fine if you follow along with her. She said that if you follow her, she'll let your strength rise by leaps and bounds for the next three months."

With a mischievous laugh, the Northern Sea Dragon sent a grin toward Mu Chen while saying, "Training under her is always better than following this uninteresting old man, right? She's such a beautiful lady, and has an

extremely good relationship with you. You have to seize this opportunity, okay? This is the very first time I've seen Ling Xi care so much about a male. Even in front of us, she always appeared cold and icy."

Hearing that, embarrassment filled Mu Chen's face. What kind of words are these...?

"Okay. Time for you to go. I've to close up for a while."

The Northern Sea Dragon placed his hands behind his back, while rays of brilliance seemed to circulate across his ancient face. At this moment, the incisiveness of his gaze was so sharp, it appeared to be able to pierce through space, giving people an indescribable feeling of tyranny.

Seeing this, a faint tremble shook through Mu Chen's heart as he probed. "Senior Northern Sea, are you going to break through?"

Clearly feeling extremely good, the Northern Sea Dragon grinned as he nodded his head. With a sigh, he replied, "I've already been stagnated in this realm for so many years. It's all thanks to you by helping me obtain that Lightning God's Pill. After preparing for half a year, it's time for me to try breaking through..."

Hearing that, Mu Chen smacked his lips. If the Northern Sea Dragon was to succeed in his breakthrough, he would become a genuine Earth Sovereign. Placed within the entire Great Thousand World, he would be considered a Regional Overlord. After all, even a power as strong as the Luo God Clan, their strongest expert, which was Luo Li's grandfather, Luo Tianshen, was only an Earth Sovereign. Being able to protect the Luo God Clan under the covetous glares coming from the other three Great God Clans, this showed exactly how powerful a person of this realm of strength possessed.

Although it was a only a fine distinction between a Ninth Grade Sovereign and an Earth Sovereign, the difference in strength was as different as sky and earth. If the Northern Sea Dragon possessed the strength of an Earth Sovereign in the past, even if one were to give the Demonic Dragon Palace the courage, they wouldn't dare to provoke the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Even to so-called 'Immeasurable

Old Ancestor', wouldn't dare to step foot into this Northern Heavens Continent.

"Then I'll first congrat Senior Northern Sea on your breakthrough here," said Mu Chen respectfully as he cupped his hands towards the Northern Sea Dragon.

With a smile, the Northern Sea Dragon nodded his head. With a wave of his sleeve, space started to warp and distort, before a pathway to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was torn open.

Seeing this, Mu Chen didn't hesitate anymore. Turning his body, he strode into the warped space. As the space chaotically fluctuated, his body completely disappeared within it.

Seeing that Mu Chen had disappeared, the face of the Northern Sea Dragon gradually grew solemn. With a clench of his hand, a smooth, round Lightning Pill appeared within. This pill possessed a jet-black splendor, with lightning covering its entirety, appearing as if it was developing into a lightning world, causing it to appear immeasurably mysterious.

Rumble!

As this Lightning God's Pill appeared, lightning instantly flashed and thunder clapped within the last level of the Lightning Territory as countless bolts of lightning shattered across the horizon, causing this dim and dark space to be lit up like daybreak.

Roar!

A roar rang out from the depths of the sea of lightning at the same time. The Lightning Spirit seemed to have discovered the Lightning God's Pill.

The Northern Sea Dragon shot an indifferent glare towards the depths of the sea of lightning, before retracting it back. Black halos of light started to ripple from his body. In the next instant, his body warped and distorted, rapidly expanding in size. In a short span of a few breaths, his body had transformed into an endlessly gigantic life form.

This life form's body was of a jet-black colour, and appeared like a fish,

yet wasn't a fish, like a dragon, yet wasn't a dragon. It spread it's wings out, wings that looked akin to vertical clouds that seemingly covered half of the space.

As the Lighting God's Pill rushed towards the sky, the Northern Sea Dragon opened it's giant maw, akin to a whale sucking in water. As the Lightning God's Pill descended alongside the endless rampant lightning and thunder, it was completely engulfed up by the giant maw of the Northern Sea Dragon.

Bang! Bang!

As the Lightning God's Pill entered his body, with a jump, the gigantic body of the Northern Sea Dragon rushed into the depths of the sea of lightning. In the next instant, the entire space grew rampant as the sea of lighting surged and churned. Gigantic waves towering thousands and thousands of metres high swept up, appearing to want to destroy the entire space, their imposing might extremely terrifying.

An astonishing breakthrough was quietly fermenting within the depths of this sea of lightning.

After stepping into the spatial pathway, Mu Chen naturally wasn't privy to the astonishing commotion that had happened after he had left the Lightning Territory. Furthermore, even if he knew, he would be of no use at all. A breakthrough to that realm was completely dependent on oneself. Other than praying for good luck for the Northern Sea Dragon, there was nothing he could do.

In the air above the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, space started to warp and distort, before Mu Chen appeared from it. Looking across the azure horizon, he stared at the Spirit Beasts flying across the sky, before hearing the sounds of vitality ringing out from the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. At this moment, he could not help breath a sigh of relief. Every time he came out from the Lightning Territory, he always had a feeling of finally seeing the light.

That place gave people too much pressure when they were within it. Nevertheless, it had to be said that it truly was an absolutely fantastic

training ground.

Hovering in the air, Mu Chen swept his gaze around. After slightly pondering, he shot straight towards the mountain peak, where Ling Xi was living. As of now, Luo Li and the rest were clearly still training and cultivating within the Gates of the Northern Heavens. Therefore, with no need to head back to the Freshman Region, it's best for him to seize every moment and find Ling Xi now.

After a couple of minutes, Mu Chen descended on the quiet mountain peak. This was where Ling Xi lived by herself. Not only did no student dare to come within its vicinity, it was also extremely rare for the higher-ups of the academy to come here; after all, they were all too clear about the icy-cold temperament of Ling Xi. The latter didn't even give much face to Dean Tai Cang, so what about them?

Even though this was the case, there was nothing they could say, since within the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, other than the Northern Sea Dragon and Dean Tai Cang, not even the five Heavenly Seated Elders were a match for Ling Xi. Therefore, she had such a transcendent capital.

After descending onto the mountain, Mu Chen quietly walked into the courtyard. Sweeping his gaze across, he spotted the white-robed female sitting before the bamboo house.

The female possessed a graceful, slender figure, her chest stood outstandingly under the cover of her white robes, her little waist thin and slender with a pair of artistic looking eyebrows. Despite this, however, her beautiful face had too much of an ice-cold expression on it. At this moment, one of her fair hands held the spine of an old book, while the other gently played with her long hair. This spectacle was akin to a scene of a painting, causing Mu Chen to turn slightly absent minded upon seeing it.

Who would have guessed that the person considered as the third strongest expert of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy would actually be such a beautiful young lady...

"What's the matter? Gaping in awe?" While Mu Chen was slightly absent minded, a clear, pleased voice rang out from before him, only for him to notice that Ling Xi had already retracted her gaze from the ancient book in her hand. Raising her lovable face up, she had sent a faint smile towards Mu Chen. At this moment, the ice-cold expression formerly present on her face had completely melted away, replaced by an arc that curled up at the corners of her lips, a scene that would cause the flowers to lose their colour.

Scratching his head, Mu Chen replied with a smile, "Elder Sister Ling Xi's really getting more and more beautiful."

"More beautiful than your little female friend?" asked Ling Xi teasingly.

With a mischievous laugh, Mu Chen walked over and said, "Sir Northern Sea said to allow Elder Sister Ling Xi guide my training and cultivation from here on."

Hearing that, Ling Xi gently nodded, before waving her hand towards Mu Chen to ask him to sit beside her. Placing her jade-like hand on her cheek, she started to quietly stare at the handsome face of Mu Chen.

Mu Chen turned slightly embarrassed by her stare, causing his gaze to wander away.

With a faint smile, Ling Xi shook her head, extending her ice-cold jade-like hands to rub his face. Over the past three months of focused training and cultivation, a stubble had grown on his face, causing the tender and immature appearance of the youth to disappear by quite a bit, replaced by the firm and persistent face of a true man.

Upon being touched by her ice-cold jade-like hand, Mu Chen was slightly startled, before his body turned stiff as he noticed a small sharp blade appearing between Ling Xi's slender fingertips.

"Elder Sister Ling Xi..."

However, not waiting for him to retreat back due to his conditioned reflex, Ling Xi had already moved closer. As her fragrance came buffeting over, faint fluctuations surfaced within her beautiful eyes. Streaking over,

the sharp blade gently shaved off the messy stubble present on Mu Chen's face

Seeing this, Mu Chen gawked as he stared at the absolutely beautiful face just inches before him, before seeing the earnest expression on her face. At this moment, emotions gushed out from him. A Ling Xi like this was truly like an Elder Sister...

Chapter 443: Heart Matters

Before the bamboo house where some shade from the vegetable enveloped over the area, a gentle breeze blew by. Emerald-green leaves swished in the air as they fluttered down, descending onto the bodies of the boy and girl present before the bamboo house.

Ignoring those leaves that had landed on her, Ling Xi was clearing the stubble present on Mu Chen's face. The ice-cold blade's edge swept across his face, causing a slight refreshing feeling to surface on his skin. The earnest expression on the face of the girl before him caused feelings of warmth to surface within his heart.

After giving the final swipe of the blade's edge across Mu Chen's face, Ling Xi looked towards the face of the youth which had regained its sauve and handsome look, before nodding her head in satisfaction. With a sweet smile, she said, "Although your unshaven appearance looks quite good, I still prefer you being clean and shaven."

Scratching his head, Mu Chen replied with a smile, "Elder Sister Ling Xi, you usually have a icy expression on your face. If you continue smiling like that, I don't know how many people would get infatuated and fall head-over-heels for you."

"What a slick mouth. I, your sis, doesn't like that," replied Ling Xi with a faint smile. Putting away the knife blade, she removed her jade-like hand from Mu Chen's face. As she retracted her slender fingers, the remnant warmth at her fingertips caused her eyes to fluctuate, while her beautiful eyes slightly hung down.

"Elder Sister Ling Xi, what do you have in mind for my training from now on?" asked Mu Chen out of curiosity. He had only three more months of time. Within this timeframe, he needed to focus all of his mind towards his Spiritual Energy training and cultivation. After all, regardless of how many aces he had up his sleeves, Spiritual Energy was the foundation of everything. With a Spiritual Energy that was tyrannical enough, no matter how strong his aces were, it would be difficult for him to display them in

full effect, akin to the cleverest housewife that won't be able to cook without rice.

"Can't my Spiritual Energy nourish your Spiritual Energy?" Her beautiful eyes staring at the leaves that had descended on the ground, Ling Xi spoke out in a soft voice.

Hearing that, Mu Chen instantly gave an embarrassed smile before replying, "Don't tease me, Elder Sister Ling Xi. How would I dare to use that method? If mother knew about it, wouldn't she beat me to death?"

Ling Xi slightly tilted her head, causing her black hair to sweep down like a waterfall, covering her sleek and glossy cheek, before gently replying, "In fact, it isn't nothing. Within that clan, the people who train and cultivate in the Yin Scroll of the Great Pagoda Art were originally just servants with with petty and low statuses. It seems that those servants would sacrifice themselves at certain times to fulfill the needs of those who train in the Yang Scroll of the Great Pagoda Art..."

Her voice grew softer and softer, since she could feel that the smile on the face of the youth beside her was slowly starting to become restrained.

Quietly looking at the white-robed girl by his side, with her slender legs faintly curling up, while her lovable figure appeared somewhat frail to the point of her trembling slightly, Mu Chen noticed some vacant moodiness gushing out from her eyes.

"Elder Sister Ling Xi, are you suspecting that my mom letting you train and cultivate the Yin Scroll of the Great Pagoda Art was, in fact, for the sake of letting you become my servant?" asked Mu Chen in a slow manner.

A fierce tremble shook through Ling Xi's body as she abruptly raised her head. Looking at Mu Chen, she shook her head, panic-stricken as her eyes brimmed with a freneticism that caused people's hearts to feel pain for her. "No! I'll absolutely not doubt Aunt Jing! If not for Aunt Jing, I'd be long dead in that ice-cold rain! If not for Aunt Jing giving me a to reason to live on, even if I continued living on, I'd only be a walking corpse!"

Aunt Jing was the pillar propping up her ice-cold life. She was willing to

destroy herself than to doubt Aunt Jing, something she absolutely wasn't willing to do.

When a person lives on, he or she would always need some kind of faith. This faith could be revenge, to protect or even other things. As for Ling Xi, the faith that had kept her living on was the warm and gentle figure that had brought her out of the ice-cold and despair-filled place of death. Therefore, once her faith collapses, she might truly lose all motivation to look ahead in life, completely similar to a walking corpse.

To her, this was a matter that was harder to accept than even death.

Looking towards the panic-stricken Ling Xi, Mu Chen extended his hands. Gently grasping those ice-cold jade-like hands, he spoke out in a soft voice. "Elder Sister Ling Xi, there are a lot of things in this universe that we're unable to clearly decipher and understand. When our eyes are unable to help us obtain the answers, we have to use our hearts to judge and decipher. Do you think that my mother would lie to you?"

Hearing that, Ling Xi gawked, before gently shaking her head. Although the arcs were small, they were resolute and unwavering. She had spent so many years with Aunt Jing. Although her memories had been sealed, those feelings and emotions within the depths of her heart were absolutely not one bit a lie.

"Oh?" With a faint smile, Mu Chen spoke out, "looks like you're jealous of me."

Ling Xi immediately looked at Mu Chen vacantly, with her lips starting to unconsciously pout. "Are you blind or what?"

"Just because you saw my mom, who is that important to you, after seeing how my mother looked at me when we were reunited then seemed to cause your emotions to fluctuate a bit too much, which led you to have wild thoughts. 'So, Aunt Jing's favorite was her own son', right? That way, you felt depressed, worrying about your personal loss, before wasting time on an insignificant problem. From the start, when you said those words, your emotions started to not quite be right..."

Looking towards Ling Xi's increasingly beet-red lovable face, Mu Chen

spoke out with a smile. "Ever since coming back from the Northern Heavens Continent, you have been having wild thoughts, am I right?"

Ling Xi's lovable face had turned a deeper red as she tightly clenched her jade-like hands. Looking at the bright eyes of the youth before her, where some laughing intent had surfaced, she unexpectedly felt a slightly guilty conscience rising within her heart. She didn't know whether what Mu Chen said was right or not, with the only thing she could confirm being that she truly was feeling somewhat depressed after returning from the Northern Heavens Continent.

"I'm sorry," replied Ling Xi as she lowered her head. Mu Chen was Aunt Jing's biological son. The latter having the deepest feelings for him was something totally understandable. Her own wild thoughts seemed to have no rationale behind them.

Mu Chen shook his head in response. He could quite understand what she was going through. When his mother and Ling Xi were together, the former clearly didn't mention about him. Therefore, even Ling Xi didn't know that his mother had a son. Added with the trust Ling Xi had for his mother, it was inevitable that the relationship between the two was the most important to the latter. However, now, he had suddenly barged in. Furthermore, he was his mom's biological son, a relationship that was the continuity of a bloodline, something that Ling Xi was unable to compare with. This resulted in her having such feelings and emotions. When one looked at something with too much importance, one would suffer such losses when in such an outcome.

Ling Xi was clearly suppressing those emotions and feelings. However, despite that, when their chatting touched on some sensitive topics, she was somewhat triggered by them.

"Elder Sister Ling Xi, I don't have any thoughts of competing with you about this. Furthermore, I don't think that my mother would reject or distance herself away from you after finding me. No matter how long it is, you'll always be together with us. I treat you as my Elder Sister. There's no one allowed to bully you. Therefore, you won't lose anything. Instead, you have one more person that would protect you. This is a very worthwhile

matter, am I right?" Sitting before Ling Xi, Mu Chen spoke out with a faint smile.

Raising her head, Ling Xi looked towards the handsome face of the youth before her. Those bright eyes, the warm and gentle smile surfacing at the corner of his mouth, caused her eyes to uncontrollably turn red. Although she had usually appeared rather cold and indifferent, that wasn't what her character was. Due to her early life experience, she was extremely sensitive. After possessing some warmth, she wanted to hold onto it, not wanting to let it go. Therefore, she was extremely exclusive and resistive to people near her.

Although Aunt Jing wasn't her biological mother, Ling Xi had truly treated the former as her mother within her heart. Having only one next of kin, Ling Xi didn't want to lose her.

The past few days of wild thoughts had caused her to develop depressing emotions. However, at this moment, when she looked at the youth before her, her emotions started to slowly stabilise, while the smile at the corners of her mouth erupted in a warm and gentle arc.

She looked at Mu Chen. The youth before her was clearly smaller than her. His strength wasn't on par with her. And yet, it gave people a certain sense of ease. Truly, what a strange fellow.

Ling Xi gently smiled, her smile gradually returning to the state of the one before. Extending her fair and slender hand, she gently rubbed Mu Chen's head, before speaking with a grin, "You're much weaker than me. How are you able to protect me with that strength?"

Shrugging his shoulders, Mu Chen replied with a smile, "It's not possible now, but there's always the future. When I become stronger than Elder Sister Ling Xi, it'll be time for me to protect you."

Speaking till here, Mu Chen looked towards Ling Xi and gave a cheeky smile. "However, I never imagined that the strong Elder Sister Ling Xi would actually have such a childish side. Nevertheless, it quite cute."

Ling Xi's face instantly grew beet-red, as she knew that it could be considered that she had lost a great deal of face. Nevertheless, she could

only shoot a resentful glare at Mu Chen, before turning her stiff lovable face.

With a grin, Mu Chen laughed, as he knew that Ling Xi's face was, in fact, extremely thin. Although he knew that Ling Xi wouldn't stop guiding him in his training and cultivation due to her embarrassment, he knew that there wasn't a need to be so fierce when forcing people. After all, being much stronger than him, it was extremely easy for her to deal with him.

"Ok. This moment stops now. However, as for those words, don't say them anymore, okay? Although Elder Sister Ling Xi has trained and cultivated the Yin Scroll of the Great Pagoda Art, I absolutely don't want you to become my servant. If you say those words again, I'll be angry," said Mu Chen with a straight face.

"Okay, I know." Ling Xi's reply was soft and gentle. How was this soft and gentle demeanor like the dignified and imposing third strongest expert of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?

"What training are we going to do?" asked Mu Chen. Wanting to have a great improvement of his Spiritual Energy in the next three mouths seemed to not be a simple problem.

Slightly tilting her head, Ling Xi thought awhile, before smiling sweetly and replying, "Simple. I'll teach you the Yin Scroll of the Great Pagoda Art to you. That way, you'll be able to obtain the complete Great Pagoda Art. In fact, before she left, Aunt Jing had told me about this. Due to her not having time to teach it to you, she has allowed me to

do it."

Mu Chen gawked, before his head started to heat up.

The complete edition of the Great Pagoda Art?

Chapter 444: Fond

"If you transmit the Great Pagoda Art to me, won't it affect Elder Sister Ling Xi?"

Although being able to have the complete Great Pagoda Art was extremely moving for Mu Chen. He still maintained some calmness as he inquired about it. He was still somewhat afraid that Ling Xi would do something that would harm herself. Even if he was to obtain that strength, it wouldn't make him happy to know.

Hearing that, Ling Xi gave a faint smile as she shook her head. As feelings of warmth gushed out of her beautiful eyes, she replied, "Relax. This is something that Aunt Jing has instructed me about. If you don't believe me, you ought to believe Aunt Jing, right?"

Only at this moment did Mu Chen nod his head. Thinking about it, he muttered, "Why don't I teach Elder Sister Ling Xi the Yang Scroll of the Great Pagoda Art?"

He felt a little problematic about the matter of Ling Xi training and cultivating the Yin Scroll of the Great Pagoda Art. Although he and his mother didn't want Ling Xi to be his servant, the Yin Scroll would always feel some suppression when faced with the Yang Scroll. Mu Chen didn't wish for Ling Xi to feel uncomfortable whenever she was assisting him on this matter.

Still, Ling Xi shook her head, replying with a sweet smile. "There's no need. I know your thoughts. Just relax. I won't have wild thoughts again. Furthermore, the Yang Scroll of the Great Pagoda Art isn't something that anyone could train and cultivate just like that. A specific bloodline is needed. I don't have the bloodline of that clan. If I were to cultivate the entire Great Pagoda Art, it might not be a good thing for me."

"Okay. Then I'll have to trouble Elder Sister Ling Xi, then." Only after hearing that did Mu Chen give up on that thought, before impatiently asking, "Then, are we starting now?"

Rolling her eyes at him, Ling Xi replied, "Why are you so anxious? You've

bitterly trained for three months. Take a rest and recover your body and we'll start tomorrow."

With a grin, Mu Chen nodded his head and replied, "That's good. I'll head back to the Freshman Region, before finding you tomorrow, Elder Sister Ling Xi."

Gently biting her lip, Ling Xi replied in a soft voice. "Luo Li's also not at the Freshman Region. If you go back, you won't have anyone to take care of you. Just stay here and rest for the day. I'll let Sun'er to tidy a room for you."

As she said those words, Ling Xi's lovable face turned slightly pinkish. Clearly, she had somewhat of an obsession towards cleanliness. Furthermore, she was extremely rejective and indifferent to males. On usual days, even Dean Tai Cang and the rest would have to use sound transmission from outside her courtyard, since they're not allowed to enter within. In fact, for all these years, the only male that could enter this courtyard was Mu Chen. As for letting a male stay in a room here, that was a matter that had never happened before.

When faced against Mu Chen, she clearly didn't treat him like other people. The bright and clear eyes of the youth before her seemed to be able to weaken the defenses around her heart. There might be the reason of Aunt Jing within this. Nevertheless, she was also clear that she was rather happy about the leisure, warm talk she had with him.

Hearing this, Mu Chen gawked awhile, before hesitatingly replying, "Isn't that not too good?"

Although it wasn't much to him as a male, Ling Xi was, after all, an enchantingly great beauty. Although she was a rather mysterious figure within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy and didn't reveal her face, a few of the old veteran students of the academy still knew about the present. In fact, in the past, there were even quite a few outstanding students that had attempted to chase after her. Nevertheless, all of them had failed, as the former was too dazzling. With her age, she had become an Elder of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Even Dean Tai Cang

had to give her face. Her level of strength was certainly extremely high. How could those hotheads in this mere Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy be able to catch her eye?

Shooting a glare at him, Ling Xi stiffened her lovable face and replied, "An Elder Sister taking care of the Younger Brother. Isn't that good?"

With this reply, Mu Chen naturally didn't dare to say anything more, causing him to scratch his head in acceptance. Over the past few years, Ling Xi had always been alone. Although she appeared ice-cold, thinking about this, she had always been rather lonely within her heart. It was already difficult for her to have a person to believe in. Being able to accompany her was already a good thing.

Seeing Mu Chen's acknowledgement, Ling Xi gave a sweet smile. That absolutely beautiful smile caused even the beautiful flowers around the bamboo house to pale in comparison to her.

Within the raging Spiritual Aura-filled world, everything was silent, while even the winds present where solidified by the terrifying Spiritual Energy pressure. The entire world appeared to be unadorned and heavy.

At this moment, within a certain mountain valley in this Spiritual Aura-filled world, Spiritual Energy liquid flowed down from the peak of the mountains, forming a gigantic lake within the valley. Faint clouds of Spiritual Mist rose from it, causing the entire region to appear fluttery like an immortal realm, while waves of terrifying Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiated from the lake.

The entire lake was formed from the condensation of pure Spiritual Energy, with the Spiritual Liquid present within weighing akin to a thousand tonnes, causing the mountain to be crushed to dust under it.

Crash!

Clear sounds of water sloshing rang out from the side of the lake as Spiritual Liquid was shoved apart. A slender and beautiful figure surfaced from the middle of the lake, as her bright, sliverly-like hair scattered on the surface of the water, appearing exceedingly dazzling. Under the long hair was an exquisite, alluring physique as tender and soft as lambs. As

Spiritual Liquid dripped down her alluring body, they conveniently flowed down her satin-like body, causing ripples to spread out across the lake.

Although the greater half of her body was hidden under the liquid, it wasn't enough to hide her perfect silhouette. The tall, erect chest and the gorgeous white ravine was more than enough to cause all males to get dazzled and stunned by her. Nevertheless, such a gorgeous spectacle clearly wasn't something that could be seen and appreciated by any male. Also, the only male that could have such a fortune was not present here.

Raising her exquisite and lovable face, she exhaled a soft breath of air. At this moment, her fair, jade-like skin was perfused with pinkish shades, due to her training at this place, being pressed down by the mountainous amounts of Spiritual Liquid.

"Luo Li, you've stayed in there for three entire days..." All of a sudden, a warm and gentle voice rang beside her. Turning her head over, she noticed another alluring body not far away in the lake, Su Xuan. The latter's alluring body was extremely curvaceous, with her voluptuous, fair and enchanting body that was more than sufficient to cause people to suffer nosebleeds.

With a grin, Su Xuan looked towards Luo Li, while her beautiful eyes wandered about the alluring figure of the latter, before giving a gentle sound of appreciation. Although the two of them were training and cultivating together, she would always make comparisons of her body between the perfect physique of Luo Li, leading to her uncontrollably sigh in admiration. Regardless of her appearance, physique or temperament, such a girl was rather perfect in all these aspects.

"Senior Sister Su Xuan has also lasted for quite some time," replied Luo Li with a faint smile.

"I can only last for a day's worth of time. However, I've heard that Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong and the rest have lasted for two days. However, they still can't compare to you," said Su Xuan as she shook her head. The water in the lake was entirely composed of Spiritual Liquid and weighed extremely heavy. Wanting to enter the depths of the lake bottom would

seemingly require one to endure a mountainous weight on their bodies while training and cultivating. Under such a situation, one would ordinarily be unable to last long. Therefore, one would have to leave the bottom of the lake after a period of time to take a break. If not, one's body would not be able to handle it.

As for the past few days of training and cultivation, Luo Li's individual performance was too outstanding, something that no one was able to imagine. This young girl that appeared weak and frail had unexpectedly possessed such toughness. Su Xuan was extremely clear that every single second one spent at the bottom of the lake when one reached one's extreme limits would feel pressure that would drive people mad. However, no one would have imagined that Luo Li would actually last for three whole days.

Such a result caused even Shen Cangsheng and the rest to feel their inferiority to her.

Naturally, she and Su Xuan didn't train and cultivate at the same place as Shen Cangsheng and the other boys. At this moment, the latter group was training within a Spiritual Liquid lake a number of miles away.

Giving a smile, Luo Li didn't reply as her jade-like hands waved around in the Spiritual Liquid, gently rubbing the her jade-like skin that had turned red due to the terrifying pressure at the lake's bottom. In her heart, she was thinking about what Mu Chen was training and cultivating right now. It should be three months by now? Although it was extremely bitter and painful to train and cultivate in the Door of the Northern Heavens, she knew that Mu Chen's training and cultivation shouldn't be easier than theirs.

Thinking about this, the young girl gently bit her lip, before speaking to Su Xuan. "Senior Sister Su Xuan, I'm going to train one more time."

"You're still going on?" Su Xuan was immediately astonishing. Swimming towards Luo Li, her eyebrows creased as she spoke out, "You're training too crazily. If you continue like that, how can you endure it? During that year, even some of the Seniors weren't able endure while they

were in the Door of the Northern Heavens, yet they insisted with their lives for the sake of control, resulting in them almost becoming handicaps..."

"Senior Sister Su Xuan, relax. I know my limits," replied Luo Li softly.

"Why are you pushing so much?" asked Su Xuan helplessly. She never imagined that Luo Li would actually push herself so hard in training and cultivation. During this period of time, Shen Cangsheng and other group of people were stimulated quite a bit by her. Being males, their endurance and resilience weren't able to obtain any advantage over Luo Li, something that made them unable to raise their heads. Therefore, all of them had clenched their teeth and pushed on with their training and cultivation in an attempt to catch up to Luo Li.

There were times that Su Xuan felt exceedingly puzzled by Luo Li's push in training and cultivation. However, she could feel that Luo Li wasn't a girl that placed extreme regard and attention towards strength. In fact, she appeared to be quite easy to satisfy. However, she, having such a character would be that extreme in her earnesty and dedication to training and cultivation.

Hearing that, Luo Li smiled. She naturally couldn't talk, in detail, about the matter of the Luo God Clan to Su Xuan. The responsibilities on her shoulders were too heavy with the millions of citizens of the Luo God Clan waiting for her, this future queen to come to their rescue. Furthermore... there was also him. That handsome face, clear and bright eyes, the youth that caused her heart to become quietly affected...

He told her that he would become an absolute expert, standing before her to block all storms for her.

She had believed it from the start till the end. However, she also knew that the path towards being an absolute expert was full of thorns, sufficient enough to cause people to be laced full of injuries. She loved Mu Chen's smile, which brimmed with self-confidence, which had also infected her. Therefore, she was somewhat afraid that those thorns on the path of an absolute expert would slowly wear off the smile that she loved...

Therefore, she wanted to put in effort in training. If her strength increased to a sufficient level, it might be more easier for Mu Chen by a notch. She wasn't a girl that would do not one single thing in the face of the person she likes when he was continuously giving his all for her.

Mu Chen, I know that you've shoulder many things for me. However, I will also help you.

I, who made you love me so much.

Chapter 445: Cultivating the Yin Scroll of the Great Pagoda Art

Next day

On the elegant and quiet bamboo house, Mu Chen sat down on the soft bedding, his eyes shut tight as he breathed in the Spiritual Qi of the world. After a night of quiet cultivation, his mind felt more clear and refreshed. The little slivers of pressure built up from three months of bitter training within the Lightning Territory had been completely removed.

Knock. Knock.

While in silent training, clear knocks rang from the door outside before the inner doors were pushed open. A little head popped in, her two ponytails appearing extremely cute. As her jet-black eyes looked towards Mu Chen sitting on the bed, a crisp, tender voice rang out. "Big Brother Mu Chen, hurry up and wake up. Elder Sister Ling Xi's asking you to come out."

Opening his eyes, Mu Chen looked towards the cute and pretty little girl standing outside of the door, while his clear and refreshed mind became much more relaxed. With a smile, he flipped himself off the bed, before walking to the door and rubbing the little head of Su'er. As the little girl puckered her little face up, he walked out of the door, only to notice Ling Xi within the courtyard, standing slender and elegant, her long black hair cascading down like a waterfall, appearing alluringly beautiful.

"Looks like your rest is pretty good," said Ling Xi with a faint smile after noticing Mu Chen's clear and refreshed appearance. "Follow me. Let's go to your training and cultivation place. That place is connected to the one and only Eighth Grade Convergent Spiritual Array within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Although the degree of thickness of the Spiritual Energy isn't as dense as the inner section of the Eighth Grade Convergent Spiritual Array, it is quite a bit stronger than the other few Seventh Grade Convergent Spiritual Arrays."

With a smile, Mu Chen nodded his head, before following Ling Xi to enter the depths of the mountains. With a move, the two of them appeared above the Spiritual Mist-wrapped mountain peak, before sitting down on it.

Grasping a strand of black hair, Ling Xi's lovable face turned solemn, before speaking out in a soft voice. "Mu Chen, the Great Pagoda Art is the most basic cultivation art of Aunt Jing's clan, and it's quite difficult to train and cultivate in it. Although you possess a bloodline relationship with Aunt Jing, it isn't able to guarantee that you're able to successfully train and cultivate both the Yin and Yang Scrolls."

"Within the training, I can't be certain what would happen. However, you have to promise me that if anything wrong happens, you must immediately stop. Don't force it."

Seeing the solemness on Ling Xi's lovable face, Mu Chen seriously nodded in return.

Seeing this, Ling Xi clasped her jade-like hands together as she changed her hand seals. In the next instant, faint white light condensed within her palms as rays of brilliance radiated out, containing a shade akin to moonlight.

As the rays of brilliance slowly condensed together, they transformed into a white glowing pagoda sparkling in white rays of brilliance. The glowing pagoda appeared rather exquisite, shimmering while giving off a unique and mysterious feeling.

Seeing the familiar white glowing pogoda, Mu Chen felt slightly shocked and astonished. This appeared exactly the same as the pagoda he was able to condense from within his body. The only differences were the colour and the entirely different fluctuations radiating from it. If the pagoda that surfaced from Mu Chen was fierce and overbearing, the white glowing pagoda that had surfaced from Ling Xi's hands appeared extremely gentle and reserved.

"Concentrate and focus!"

A roar rang out from Ling Xi, causing a jolt within Mu Chen's mind as

he slowly closed his eyes.

All of a sudden, Ling Xi pointed her slender finger out, causing the white glowing pagoda to transform into a ray of white light as it followed along her finger into Mu Chen's head. With a fierce speed, it entered within the mind of Mu Chen.

Bang!

At the instant when the white glow entered Mu Chen's mind, a bang seemed to explode within his mind. Strange and mysterious information furiously gushed out like flood waters, before transforming into line after line of cryptic and mysterious cultivation mnemonics.

There is Yin and Yang in Buddha. When Yin and Yang intersect, they form the great Buddha...

A seemingly ancient chanting sound rang out within Mu Chen's mind, causing those cultivation mnemonics that ordinary people weren't able to comprehend to flow into Mu Chen's heart. At this moment, Mu Chen's mind started to slowly calm down, sinking down into the complicated and cryptic cultivation mnemonics.

The ancient chanting appeared to resound for quite a while, yet appeared to continue for only an instant. With the ancient chanting, Mu Chen's mind regained his clarity, he started to ponder for quite a while as line after line of complicated mnemonics were recalled in his mind. After quite a while, his hands slowly came together to form a seal.

This time, the hand seal was somewhat different from the ones that he had made while training and cultivating the Great Pagoda Art. However, one could faintly discern there were some similar remnants.

Bang!

As Mu Chen slowly formed his hand seals, the white glowing pagoda within his body that was sent out by Ling Xi shook as it split apart, before a minute clump of white light rose from within, entering Mu Chen's meridians.

That was a strand of Spiritual Energy. What sets it apart from other

Spiritual Energy was the shady glow it brought along. Appearing like moonlight spill out, it followed along Mu Chen's meridians as it circulated around his body.

Humm! Humm!

Just as the white-coloured Spiritual Energy circulated around Mu Chen's meridians, he discovered that the Spiritual Energy within his body was actually being agitated. Appearing as if they had received some kind of uncontrollable suction, they attempted to rush out and devour this strand of white-coloured Spiritual Energy.

"Calm down! Use the mnemonics to condense the Yin Seed!"

While Mu Chen was in shock with this unexpected change, all of a sudden, a soft roar rang within his mind, causing a shock to shake through his heart. Hastily, he forcefully suppressed the agitation of the Spiritual Energy. Controlling the strand of white-coloured Spiritual Energy with his mind, he forcefully circulated it quickly within the mnemonics flowing within his meridian pathways.

Following the circulation of the white-coloured Spiritual Energy, its size grew smaller and smaller. Yet, its colour and luster appeared increasingly bright and glittery. Furthermore, Mu Chen was able to sense that following every revolution, he was gradually able to start gaining control of that strand of white-coloured Spiritual Energy. The cool feeling felt ice-cold, causing his state of mind to appear clear and bright.

"Condense!"

When the size of the white-coloured stand of Spiritual Energy shrunk down to its absolute minimum size, a fierce, low roar rang from Mu Chen's heart. In the next instant, the white rays of light blossomed outwards. After dispersing away, a minute spot of white light quietly floated within, appearing akin to a seed.

Mu Chen heaved a quiet sigh of relief. This was the first step of his training. As long as he was able to successfully condense the Yin Seed, he would truly be able to merge the Yin and the Yang scrolls of the Great Pagoda Art. From that, he would be able to condense Spiritual Energy

composed of both Yin and Yang.

The Divine Soul sitting within the Aurasea raised its little hands up. WIth a gentle beckoning, the white speck of light instantly howled across the meridians of Mu Chen's body. Drilling straight into the Aurasea, it hovered before the Divine Soul, whirling about as it rotated on the spot.

Hu.

Spitting out a clump of white air, the Divine Soul formed a hand seal, one that wasn't of the Yang Scroll of the Great Pagoda Art, but of the Yin Scroll.

Bang!

As the Divine Soul within Mu Chen's body formed the Yin Scroll's hand seal, a powerful suction force instantly erupted from within his body. As this happened, dense Spiritual Fog instantly surged out, blotting the skies. Transforming into rays of Spiritual Energy, they howled down, before pouring endlessly into Mu Chen's body.

Clumps of faint white brilliance radiated from Mu Chen's body, appearing somewhat gentle and cool.

Those were Spiritual Energy fluctuations completely different from those radiating from Mu Chen before.

As those Spiritual Energies entered Mu Chen's body, they circulated around his meridians, instantly transforming into strands of white-coloured Spiritual Energy, before finally gushing into the tiny white-coloured Yin Seed hovering before his Divine Soul. As it continued to get larger, Mu Chen ordered the two types of Spiritual Energies to merge together. He needed for them to reach a stage of mutual existence. If not, those strands of white-coloured Spiritual Energy would become nourishment for the black Spiritual Energy present within his body.

Only when the white and black were able to reach equilibrium would they be able to merge perfectly.

Therefore, what Mu Chen needed to do was to nurture and strengthen the Yin Seed.

However, it clearly still needed quite a bit of time. Fortunately, Mu Chen still had three whole months of time to do so. After absorbing crazily for that period of time, he should be able to nurture that Yin

Seed.

On the outside, Ling Xi looked towards Mu Chen, who was greedily absorbing the Spiritual Energy of the world, before nodding her head. From the looks of it, Mu Chen's Yin Seed had already been successfully condensed. The next step was for him to nurture it. The vast and boundless Spiritual Energy gushing out from the Eighth Rank Convergent Spiritual Array should be enough to speed this step up.

However, wanting to successfully cultivate this Great Pagoda Art completely wasn't that simple. Naturally, it could only depend on Mu Chen. Yet, the current him needed to do some preparations...

A faint flash sparkled within Ling Xi's beautiful eyes. Taking a breath, she stood up, and with a move of her enchanting body, she shot into the air.

Whoosh!

Space around her started to warp and distort as multiple figures surfaced from it. They were precisely Dean Tai Cang, Elder Zhu Tian and the four other Heavenly Seated Elders.

"Elder Ling Xi these are the things that you've requested," said Dean Tai Cang, sending a smile towards Ling Xi. With a wave of his sleeve, multiple rays of light shot towards the latter, before coming to a stop before her, hovering. If one was to take a closer look, one would see strange objects resembling a chessboard and tortoise shell among others within those rays. Those items should be unique Spiritual Tools. Although they didn't possess powerful offensive attributes, they contained unique capabilities.

Looking in detail towards those Spiritual Tools, Ling Xi gave a nod, before speaking out softly. "Thank you very much, Dean. However, I might need to trouble you all to help out for this period of time."

Hearing that, Elder Zhu Tian and the other Elders shot a look at each

other as doubt surfaced within their eyes. After all, ever since knowing Ling Xi till now, this was the first time that they had heard the latter asking them for help.

"Is it for Mu Chen?" asked Dean Tai Cang with a faint smile, pointing towards Mu Chen, who was currently encased in a Spiritual Energy that blotted the skies.

Seeing that, Ling Xi gently nodded her head. After hesitating for a bit, she said, "Mu Chen's currently training in an Art. However, once he succeeds, it might be sensed by some people. Therefore, I would need the strength of you all to blanket a Spiritual Array over to isolate him."

Hearing those words, Dean Tai Cang and the rest instantly gawked. He would get sensed by some people? What kind of people would be that formidable? Being able to sense something just by cultivating in some Art?

"This is a matter instructed to me by Aunt Jing. I hope that you will be able to cooperate with me fully on this, Dean," said Ling Xi with a solemn face.

Hearing the two words 'Aunt Jing', the faces of Dean Tai Cang and the rest turned somewhat solemn. That day, due to Mu Chen's mysterious mother, the shock it gave them was considerably heavy. Since they were her instructions, they would naturally not dare to show any disregard about it.

"Be at ease, Elder Ling Xi. Mu Chen's a student of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Regardless of any matter, we'll do our utmost to help." Dean Tai Cang replied without asking anymore questions. Ever since the appearance of Mu Chen's mysterious mother, it indicated that the latter had quite a background. However, not being someone who was into curiosity, Dean Tai Cang knew that knowing some matters might not be a good thing.

Hearing that, Ling Xi gave a faint smile, before bowing respectfully.

"Ling Xi thanks all of you."

Chapter 446: Another Breakthrough

Within the deep mountains, boundless Spiritual Mist rippled and undulated across the region. Due to the Spiritual Aura in the region being overly vast and boundless, everything here appeared exceedingly blurry. Even the mountain peaks were only able to be faintly discerned from behind the Spiritual Mist, appearing exceedingly hazy.

However, although one wouldn't be able to see with one's naked eyes, everyone was able to see the gigantic whirlpool in the air above the mountain peaks. The gigantic whirlpool was approximately hundreds of metres wide, with the Spiritual Aura that covered the earth and hid the skies was being sucked into it. Swirling along with the whirlpool, they endlessly poured into the thin figure seated on the top of one of the mountain peaks.

At this instant, Mu Chen's figure was encased in a billowing Spiritual Energy. Akin to a bottomless hole, his body greedily and crazily absorbed and refined the Spiritual Energy gushing into him.

Throughout this month, his figure had not moved a single inch on this mountain peak.

As this happened, the absorption did not stop for a single moment.

However, as this happened, his training and cultivation didn't show the slightest signs of stopping. This scene caused quite a few of those Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy students who were paying attention to quietly click their tongues. Truly, he's worthy of being the strongest person within their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Just his training and cultivation was already capable of causing such a large commotion.

As Mu Chen was immersed in his training and cultivation, on a mountain peak not far away, Ling Xi's beautiful eyes were locked tightly on the figure of Mu Chen. Raising her head, she looked towards a number of mountain peaks in the far distance. Present on top of every mountain peak were figures, who were Dean Tai Cang, Elder Zhu Tian and the other Heavenly Seated Elders.

Gently clenched within her jade-like hands was a palm-sized black chessboard. Sparkling with mysterious runic patterns, strange and mysterious fluctuations radiated from it.

Rubbing against the exquisite black chessboard, Ling Xi vigilantly cast her beautiful eyes towards the sky. In the eyes of ordinary people, the sky showed not the slightest bit of uniqueness. However, in Ling Xi's eyes, she was able to see glowing threads extending out across the sky. Coming together in a complicated manner, they formed a gigantic Spiritual Array.

This Spiritual Array had consumed a month's worth of her mental energy.

Ling Xi took a slight breath of relief as a shadow of exhaustion flashed within her eyes. She had seemingly not taken any rest during this one month of time, spending every second of concentration on this Spiritual Array. Due to such a gargantuan workload, even she would feel exhaustion.

However, even though she was tired and exhaustion, she wasn't able to rest. That's because she knew that it was extremely important for Mu Chen successfully train and cultivate the entire version of the Great Pagoda Art.

That day, Aunt Jing had secretly mentioned to her that the Great Pagoda Art was the basic Cultivation Art of her clan, and that it was extremely important, since Mu Chen at that time had only cultivated the Yang Scroll. There was naturally nothing wrong with this. However, when the Yin and Yang Scrolls were merged, they would form the entire version of the Great Pagoda Art. Furthermore, once he succeeded in this, there was an extremely high possibility that powerful existences from Aunt Jing's clan would be able to sense this. At that time, there was a possibility that Mu Chen's identity might be discovered...

Although Ling Xi's past memories were sealed, she was faintly able to discern how frightening Aunt Jing's mysterious clan was. There was a dread gushing out from the depths of her heart. Even someone as strong as Aunt Jing was forced to the point of having to leave the infant Mu

Chen. Exactly how powerful was that mysterious clan...?

Ling Xi didn't believe that she had the strength to protect Mu Chen from that clan. Therefore, she could only do her utmost to conceal Mu Chen from being discovered. In any way, regardless of exactly how many powerful existences were in that mysterious clan, they would absolutely not be able to sense Mu Chen that she had concealed from such a far distance away.

"Relax, Aunt Jing. I'll protect Mu Chen."

Muttering to herself, Ling Xi slowly clenched her hands as her beautiful eyes brimmed with resolution and decisiveness.

As Mu Chen continued training and cultivating, time continued to flow like quicksand. Unknowingly, two months had quietly elapsed by...

Within these two months, there was still no movement from Mu Chen, who had continued to endlessly absorb the Spiritual Aura of the world. The mountain peak was already being encased by a gigantic Spiritual Energy whirlpool, with Mu Chen's figure being completely shrouded within, while waves of boundless fluctuations continued to ripple from within.

Anyone was able to sense that the Spiritual Energy radiating from Mu Chen's body seemed to be much more tyrannical than two months ago.

Ling Xi quietly sat on a mountain peak not too far away from him, with her beautiful eyes slightly shut. As a gentle breeze blew by, it ruffled her smooth black hair. All of a sudden, boundless Spiritual Energy seemed to fluctuate from the mountain peak.

Swish!

Ling Xi's eyes sprung open seemingly in an instant. In the next instant, a solemn expression appeared on her beautiful face as she looked towards the mountain peak, while her jade-like hands started to clench tightly together.

"The Yin and Yang are merging?" she muttered, with her alluring body growing increasingly taut, being prepared to take action at any moment to

shield this region from the rest of the world.

As Ling Xi grew nervous and vigilant, the Yin Seed before the Divine Soul within Mu Chen's body had already grown to the size of a fist. From the looks of it, it appeared akin to a pearl radiating with rays of brilliance, with boundless Yin energies contained within it. This was the result of nurturing it with Spiritual Energy absorbed over the span of the last two months.

"About time..."

Those words flashed within Mu Chen's heart. In the next instant, the little mouth of the Divine Soul opened up. With a gentle suck, the pearl-like Yin Seed transformed into a ray of light, rushing into the mouth of the Divine Soul...

Humm!

At the instant when the Yin Seed was devoured by the Divine Soul, boundless rays of white light suddenly erupted from Mu Chen's entire body. As the white rays of lights blossomed, overbearing rays of black light swept out from within, causing Mu Chen's Divine Soul to be tinged in black and white light, appearing exceedingly strange.

Wave after wave of exceedingly boundless Spiritual Energy radiated from the Divine Soul, perfusing every inch of Mu Chen's body.

All of a sudden, Mu Chen's eyes sprung open as Spiritual light shot out from his crown. Transforming into a glowing pillar, it rushed towards the sky. At this moment, the black and white-coloured Divine Soul had also rushed up the sky. Opening its small mouth, the vast Spiritual Mist present within this region instantly billowed out into streams, before being completely sucked into the body of the Divine Soul.

The black and white Divine Soul sat within the air. Extending its tiny hands, it hugged to air, appearing to have control over the sun and moon.

Whoosh!

Black and white rays of brilliance quickly condensed within its palms. One could faintly discern that it had seemingly transformed into a black

and white-coloured Yin Yang board. As the black and white light chased each other, appearing like the fishes of Yin and Yang, waves of strange, boundless fluctuations suddenly radiated across the heavens.

As the Yin Yang board took form, all of a sudden, dots of light surfaced from the depths of Mu Chen's body. Those glowing dots started to converge together, forming what looked like the shape of a pagoda!

Dong!

An ancient bell's ring seemed to pierce through the ancient antiquity, before clearly reverberating from within Mu Chen's body.

Halos started to condense behind Mu Chen's body as a black-glowing pagoda approximately a hundred metres tall slowly condensed within them.

This black-glowing pagoda didn't have too much difference from the pagoda that Mu Chen had displayed before. However, at this moment, slivers of golden flames now danced on the ancient dragon patterns on its surface. Those flames were extremely tiny and minute, yet they were able to cause the expressions of Dean Tai Cang and the other Elders watching not far away to slightly change.

That's because they were still able to clearly remember that such a black pagoda was condensed by Mu Chen's mother when she personally refined the Yellow Dragon Sovereign. Furthermore, not only did the golden flames completely refine away the Yellow Dragon Sovereign's Celestial Body, it had even turned the latter completely into dust.

The golden flames were clearly an extremely frightening thing.

Although the golden flames on the dragon patterns on Mu Chen's pagoda were too small and insignificant, being unable to compare to the might of his mother, they were already capable of causing Dean Tai Cang and the rest to sigh in admiration.

"Dean Tai Cang!"

Seeing the pagoda that had surfaced behind Mu Chen, Ling Xi's beautiful face suddenly turned solemn as her shout resounded.

Hearing her voice, Dean Tai Cang and the rest instantly raised their hands. In the next instant, numerous rays of brilliance rushed towards the sky, rippling across the horizon as a black light screen rapidly extended out. Expanding thousands of metres wide, it completely encased the space within it.

As darkness perfused out, everything within was completely isolated from the outside world.

A serious expression appeared on Ling Xi's beautiful face as the black chessboard in her hands rushed towards the sky. Expanding out, rays of brilliance enveloped down from above, completely sealing the mountain peak where Mu Chen was sitting on. Under the brilliance, Dean Tai Cang and the rest could instantly feel as if the mountain peak in front of them had disappeared. Even the aura coming from within was being isolated.

The feeling was as if the mountain peak didn't exist within the Great Thousand Worlds.

As the black screen and the chessboard expanded out, all of a sudden, Mu Chen's tightly shut eyes sprung open. With a move of his body, he rushed towards the sky. At the same time, the Divine Soul clutching the Yin Yang Board within its arms had also shot down, following along Mu Chen's crown as it entered his Aurasea.

As the Divine Soul returned to its original place, Mu Chen could instantly feel an extremely boundless surge of Spiritual Energy sweeping out within his body like a flood.

This Spiritual Energy wasn't like the usual black colour as before, but one with a splendor merged of black and white. From the looks of it, it appeared akin to two fishes, one Yin and one Yang, constantly swirling around one another, giving off an incomparably mysterious sensation.

This black and white Spiritual Energy had undoubtedly become even more tyrannical that the Spiritual Energy of the past!

An indescribably carefree feeling rushed and perfused within Mu Chen's body, causing him to pour everything out of his mind.

Therefore, Mu Chen took to the skies, spreading his hands and gave a long roar towards the heavens. As the thunderous roar reverberated across the region, the Spiritual Energy fluctuations perfused within his body started to surge little by little within the churning roar.

Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phase, Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phase Peak, Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase, Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase Peak!

When the Spiritual Energy fluctuations drastically increased to Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase Peak, it finally started to slowly stop. At this moment, Mu Chen's eyes grew incomparably bright, while his heart brimmed with excitement. Just one more step, one more step and he would be able to rush into the first tribulation of the Three Sovereign Disasters!

He never imagined that he would actually be able to leap past Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phase all the way to the peak of the Three Heavens Stage!

Chapter 447: Leisure

Mu Chen floated in the sky, feeling the torrential energies surging within his body like a flood. Unable to bear it any longer, a smile cracked open from the corner of his mouth. Indeed, this is worthy of being the complete version of the Great Pagoda Art. Within the span of the past two past months, it was actually able to allow for him to leap past two phases and immediately be promoted to Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase Peak.

As long as he could take one more step, the current Mu Chen would be able to face the first of the Three Sovereign Disasters. If he was to cross it, he would officially take a step on the path towards the Sovereign Realm!

Sovereign Realm! As long as he could take a step into that realm, he would be granted the qualifications to be called an expert in the Great Thousand Worlds!

Anything below Sovereigns were ants.

Thinking about that, Mu Chen tightly clenched his fists. Although he was still some distance away from the Sovereign realm, he believed that it wouldn't take long for him to be able to successfully be promoted to that realm. Once he reached the Sovereign Realm, he would possess the qualifications to train and cultivate a Sovereign's Celestial Body.

Going along this thought, Mu Chen gave a faint smile. The training and cultivation method of the "Great Solar Undying Body" he had obtained from the "Page of Sealing" had long been completely memorised by him. Although the "Great Solar Undying Body" wasn't ranked within the top 99 Sovereign Celestial Bodies, Mu Chen believed that it wasn't any bit weaker than its famous counterparts of the rankings. After all, the evolution of the "Great Solar Undying Body" was the "Primordial Immortal Body" that was ranked 4th in the rankings.

Mu Chen had great anticipation towards the day when he would truly be able to successfully train and cultivate the "Primordial Immortal Body". How strong and powerful would he be? Thinking about that, would he

have the strength and power needed to rescue his mother from that mysterious clan?

Those thoughts flashed within Mu Chen's mind, before being gradually suppressed by him. At this moment, there was no need for him to think so far into the future. What he needed to do now was to advance himself as fast as possible to genuinely step into the Sovereign Realm.

Giving a smile, Mu Chen raised his head, before looking doubtfully at the black screen that had enveloped the skies above him. He could sense some strange and unique fluctuations radiating from there, accompanied with a feeling as if his senses were unexpectedly unable to extend past it. From the looks of it, the black screen appeared like a dark, black prison that had trapped him within.

However, although he was shocked, Mu Chen didn't grow flustered. This was the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. He didn't believe that there would be anyone that would want to do anything to him.

Humm!

As Mu Chen swept his gaze out, the black screen in the sky quickly dissipated away, allowing the warm and gentle sunlight to shine through. As those black dots dissipated away, they completely disappeared within a number of breaths. Finally, a black chessboard shot out within them, landing on a slender, jade-like hand that was not far away.

Looking towards Mu Chen and discovering him appearing safe and sound, Ling Xi took a gentle breath of relief.

Shooting over towards Ling Xi, Mu Chen noticed the sliver of exhaustion present within her beautiful eyes. Being slightly stunned, he asked, "What were you doing, Elder Sister Ling Xi?"

"Did you think that the Great Pagoda Art is that easy to train and cultivate? If not for me sealing this region and temporarily isolating you from the world, I'm afraid that the current you would be discovered by the experts of Aunt Jing's mysterious clan," replied Ling Xi in a displeased and annoyed fashion.

Mu Chen immediately gawked as he understood the gist of it, causing him to feel somewhat guilty. Having focused his entire mind and heart on training and cultivating on the mountain peak, he didn't know how much mind and energy Ling Xi had expended on him.

"Thank you, Elder Sister Ling Xi," said Mu Chen in a soft voice.

"This is something Aunt Jing had asked me to do. What's more, I've said that I'd protect you. How can I look at Aunt Jing if I didn't do so?" Ling Xi replied with a faint smile. Looking towards Dean Tai Cang and the rest of the Elders that were shooting over, she said, "This matter's all thanks to Dean Tai Cang and the other Elders. I, by myself, wouldn't have been able to protect you."

Hearing that, Mu Chen solemnly cupped his hands towards Dean Tai Cang, Elder Zhu Tian and the other Elders and spoke out in an respectful manner. "Thank you, Dean and all the Elders present, for the trouble of this matter."

Waving his hand, Dean Tai Cang spoke out with a smile, "You're the person that's going to fight for the honor and glory of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Naturally, we will do our utmost to help."

As he spoke, he looked towards Mu Chen and nodded his head in satisfaction. With his astute vision, he was naturally able to see the improvement Mu Chen had made. Although he was only at the Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase, all of them were clear that Mu Chen could not be classified as anything ordinary. While he was at the Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase, he was already able to kill Mo Xingtian. With such a great improvement in his strength and cultivation, even people who had passed their Human Body Disaster would find it very hard to appear as a major threat to him.

"Are Luo Li, Shen Cangsheng and the rest still in the Door of the Northern Heavens?" asked Mu Chen as he looked towards the deepest region of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Luo Li and the rest had already been in the Door of the Northern Heavens for close to half a year, with their exact situation being unknown. After being apart for so

long, he had quite a yearning to see that lass, Luo Li.

"Yes."

Nodding his head, Dean Tai Cang replied with a smile, "Relax. We are monitoring the situation within the Door of the Northern Heavens at all times, so as to make sure that nothing happens to them. Furthermore, their progress is even faster than you'd expect. At that time, you have to be careful. Shen Cangsheng and the rest had said that the first thing they would do when they exit there would be to take action and press your limelight down."

Hearing that, Mu Chen gave a smile. With the close to half a year's span of time, he had spent the first three months solely on training and cultivating his Thunder God Physique. Only in the last two-plus months did he calm his heart down and train and cultivate his Spiritual Energy. Fortunately, with the assistance of the Great Pagoda Art, his accomplishments weren't small. However, he also knew that being in the Door of the Northern Heavens, the accomplishments of Luo Li, Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong and the rest might be even greater than him in this half a year's span of time.

Maybe, there might be some people that have already started crossing their Three Sovereign Disasters...

However, although Shen Cangsheng and the rest had improved by leaps and bounds, Mu Chen's improvement was also marvelous. Although his strength at Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase Peak wasn't considered top notch. If he was to truly take action, Mu Chen believed that the current him would be able to contend head-on against people who had passed through their "Spiritual Energy Disaster".

If he had such strength and power when he had crossed hands against Mo Xingtian half a year ago, the latter might not have even been able to force him into such a miserable state during that time.

"Go take a good rest for the next few days. There's still about less than half a month till the start of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament. Also, it's the time for new students to enter the academy for the next few

days, with you guys being able to remove the title of Freshman from your names..." said Dean Tai Cang with a smile.

"New students entering the academy..."

Mu Chen repeated those words while letting out a sigh. Without him noticing, oneplus years have passed while he was in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. In fact, it was closer to two years of time. Thinking back, he had truly transformed into quite a somebody. Perhaps, when he had just entered the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, he never imagined that he would progress to such a realm.

After chatting awhile more with Mu Chen, Dean Tai Cang brought along Elder Zhu Tian and the rest, turned around and walked away.

"Why don't you go back and rest, Elder Sister Ling Xi. Thanks for your hard work." Looking over towards Dean Tai Cang and the other Elders leaving in the distance, Mu Chen turned around and spoke out towards Ling Xi with a smile.

Lazily extending out her slender, jade-like arm and revealing her slim waist that was wrapped in a white robe, Ling Xi gave a stretch. That voluptuous bosom, that tall and erect chest, that perfect figure appeared exceedingly alluring. Shooting a glare towards Mu Chen, she replied, "What's the matter? Having finished your training today, you see no more use in me, and want to toss me out?"

Giving an embarrassed laugh, Mu Chen immediately replied, "How's that possible? I'll stay here for the next few days to accompany you, Elder Sister Ling Xi!"

Ling Xi replied with a sweet smile while slightly stretching her waist, before looking towards the quiet mountain peak. Raising his head, Mu Chen also proceeded to look towards the azure horizon, before deeply breathing out. As of today, he had completed the numerous training and cultivation. Next up would be to quietly await the arrival of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament...

For the next couple of days, Mu Chen had completely relaxed himself. As of now, his strength and power had increased by leaps and bounds.

Therefore, there wasn't a need to get tense during training. After all, training and cultivation paid attention to one's state of relaxation. If one was too tense, it wouldn't bode too well for one's training and cultivation attempts.

Therefore, while waiting for Luo Li and the rest to come out from the Door of the Northern Heavens, Mu Chen had spent the majority of his time on the mountain peak where Ling Xi lived, with the occasional visit to the Freshman Region to gather everyone from the Goddess Luo Association, resulting in him being unavoidably idle and leisure.

Under this leisure pace, day-after-day elapsed by, with the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament getting closer and closer.

Within the quiet courtyard, Mu Chen sat before the bamboo house, with Ling Xi sitting before a tea table gracefully pouring a cup for herself. As her black hair fluttered about around her slender waist, a pair of exquisite feet revealed themselves. Like a pair of white jade, they appeared exceedingly alluring under the illumination of the sun.

Towards other people, Ling Xi appeared rather cold, indifferent and guarded. However, she had completely removed all of these traits when present before Mu Chen. Therefore, he was able to enjoy a great feast for his eyes many a time. Regardless of what he felt within his heart, having such a great beauty before him was an extremely nourishing sight.

Faced with such an unguarded appearance by Ling Xi, Mu Chen didn't show much embarrassment or awkwardness, and was grandiosity sizing up the scene before him with an unavoidable flare of male flames appearing in his eyes.

Holding onto the tea leaves, Ling Xi appeared to have discovered Mu Chen's gaze, causing a pinkish shade to appear on her beautiful face. After hiding her feet within her robes, she shot a gentle stare at Mu Chen, with the latter revealing a innocent look, as if she was the one who purposefully revealed them.

Seeing the look in his eyes, Ling Xi gave a soft snort. Looks like this fellow's too idle for the last few days. In the next instant, her beautiful face

turned emotionless as she revealed a sliver of a dignified look, before speaking out in an indifferent tone. "Did your Spiritual Array training improve over this period of time?"

Hearing that, Mu Chen instantly felt his head swell up. During the past half year, if he wasn't training and cultivating his Thunder God Physique, he would be undergoing closed training for his Spiritual Energy. Where did he have the time to train and research Spiritual Arrays? Indeed, women truly couldn't be provoked.

Chapter 448: Freshmen in the Academy

"Relying on my Heart's Eye State, I'm able to arrange a Rank 5 Spiritual Array. From this point, I guess that I can be considered as a Rank 5 Spiritual Array Master."

Mu Chen sent a dry laugh towards Ling Xi. Over the last half a year, he had invested too little time towards his understanding of Spiritual Arrays, therefore his progress in it wasn't something especially great. The inquisitive look on Ling Xi's face as she asked him about his progress in Spiritual Arrays something that he was somewhat helpless to do anything. Ling Xi was clearly not much older than him, yet she was able to suppress him to death with her strength. This made Mu Chen feel some grief and indignation. Could it be that following by mum's side would be that beneficial?

Thinking about his current progress, he should be considered as extremely outstanding within his fellow peers. However, he could not muster the slightest bit of comparison against Ling Xi.

"Rank 5 Spiritual Array Master?"

Giving an ambiguous smile upon seeing Mu Chen's actions and appearance, she continued speaking in an indifferent tone. "Any Grade under the rank of Spiritual Array Grandmaster is not worth a mention. After all, anything below Sovereign realm is just like an ant. In the aspect of Spiritual Arrays, one can only be considered as genuinely be attuned to it when one reaches the realm of Spiritual Array Grandmaster. If not, one would not be able to truly stand on the grand stage."

"Furthermore, Aunt Jing could be considered on the realm of Ancestral Master rank in her attainments in Spiritual Arrays. Being her biological son, you should not have only ordinary attainments in this aspect."

After being reprimanded like that, Mu Chen could not help feeling somewhat resentful. Unable to hold it in, he subsequently asked, "What Grade of an expert does a Ancestral Master in Spiritual Arrays amounts to?"

Shooting a glare at Mu Chen, Ling Xi replied with an amused shadow appearing in her beautiful eyes. "Looks like you still don't know the depths towards the grading of Spiritual Array Masters. The so-called 'First to Ninth Grade' that is used is just a crude approximation. Generally speaking, anyone above Sixth Grade would be capable of being known as a Spiritual Array Grandmaster. Despite this, there are also different Grades within the realm of Spiritual Array Grandmasters."

"There are three phases within the realm of Spiritual Array Grandmasters: Heaven, Earth and Human, with three Grades for each phase for a total of nine Grades, which just so corresponds to the nine Grades of Sovereigns. What comes after Spiritual Array Grandmasters would be a Scholars, which corresponds to Earth Sovereigns. As for Ancestral Masters, they are what comes after Scholars. You should be very clear about what realm they exist in, right?"

Sucking in a mouthful of cold air, Mu Chen looked blankly at the grinning Ling Xi as he replied, "Heavenly Sovereign?"

He already had some guesses after seeing his mother refining the Yellow Dragon Sovereign, sending the Black Dragon Sovereign flying and even overwhelming the Immeasurable Old Ancestor. However, when this guess became a reality, he still could not help being filled with shock.

Heavenly Sovereign...

Even when placed within the boundless and endless Great Thousand Worlds, people who possessed such strength would absolutely be considered to be regional Overlords. Even those clans with long traditions would have to be courteous towards existences of that realm. Therefore, anyone within the Great Thousand Worlds would absolutely be able to travel unimpeded with the backing of a Heavenly Sovereign.

All along, Mu Chen had always assumed that he had an ordinary background, since his father's strength was truly not worth one bit of mention. However, who would have guessed that his extremely weak old man would be able to find such a terrifyingly strong and powerful wife...

"My old man's too awesome," said Mu Chen as he smacked his lips,

while an expression filled with admiration appeared on his face. What was the definition of awesome? This was exactly its definition. If this matter was circulated, there might not be even a single person that would believe this. However, it had truly happened to his father. Now, Mu Chen really wanted to know exactly what had happened that year for his father to actually drag his pheonix of a mother down from the skies...

Resting her jade-like hand on her cheek, a blank expression was completely present in Ling Xi's beautiful eyes. Clearly, this was something that didn't add up in her mind. In her eyes, Aunt Jing was a completely perfect lady, with her sight seemingly being extremely, extremely high. However, from the news that she had received from Mu Chen, his father seemed to be an extremely ordinary person and came from a small place. Also, his strength didn't appear to be outstanding. However, a person from such an unseeming place was actually able to obtain the love of Aunt Jing. This was truly an inconceivable matter.

"Elder Sister Ling Xi, what Grade are you at in the realm of Spiritual Array Grandmasters?" asked Mu Chen curiously as he looked towards Ling Xi.

With a smile, Ling Xi replied, "I should be at the highest grade of the Human phase, which is equivalent to a Third Grade Sovereign."

"Third Grade Sovereign..." Mu Chen made another sigh of admiration. Her Grade was even higher than Elder Zhu Tian and the other Heavenly Seated Elders. Placed within the Northern Heavens Continent, she was already comparable to those leaders of the other peak influences present here. Although she had the benefit of being instructed by his mother, being able to have such accomplishments at her age clearly showed her extremely outstanding talent.

"Despite that, my cultivation in Spiritual Energy isn't all that great. At this moment, I've actually only just crossed by Divine Soul Tribulation, and not yet stepped into the Sovereign Realm." Casting a glance towards Mu Chen with her beautiful eyes, she continued speaking, "After all, not everyone's like you, having such astonishing talents in these two aspects."

After being around Mu Chen for such a long time, she knew that the latter not only possessed outstanding talent in his cultivation of Spiritual Energy, he had also inherited Aunt Jing's talent in the aspect of Spiritual Arrays. Along his path of progress, he had obtained quite substantial results in both his Spiritual Energy and Spiritual Array cultivation, which had surprised many people.

Giving a smile, Mu Chen finally felt that the matter was somewhat balanced now. From the looks of it, he still had some superiority when compared to Ling Xi.

Noticing the additional shadow of satisfaction present within Mu Chen's eyes, Ling Xi gave an indifferent smile as she said, "Since you know that Aunt Jing's that outstanding on the aspect of Spiritual Arrays, you have to do more research and study on them in the future. At the very least, you have to reach the realm of Scholar; if not, you will definitely let Aunt Jing down."

Instantly, Mu Chen's satisfied look froze up as he rubbed his nose in resentment. With such a formidable mother, he truly had great pressure on his shoulders. Indeed, although he had an extremely high talent on the aspect of Spiritual Arrays, wanting to reach the realm of Scholars wasn't something that could be achieved just by relying on talent. After all, there were too many geniuses within this universe. Yet, those that were able to have accomplishments in the end were an extremely small number amongst them.

Seeing Mu Chen's satisfaction being suppressed down, Ling Xi gave a sweet smile. With her jade-like hand placed on her cheek, she gracefully pursed her lips, before knitting her eyebrows towards the outer region of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy while saying, "What's with the noise in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy today?"

"Today's the day where the Freshmen enter the academy," replied Mu Chen in a lazy fashion.

Today was the day where the new batch of Freshmen would enter the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Therefore, the entire Northern

Heavens Spiritual Academy was extremely lively today. As for Mu Chen's batch of students, all of them were incomparably excited, since after simmering for over a year, they were finally able to toss away the title of Freshmen from their names. From today onwards, they would become figures that were able to show off their superiority.

Slightly nodding her head, Ling Xi didn't care about the matter anymore, choosing to lazily bask in the enjoyment of this idle moment.

The Outer Region of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy

At this moment, there seemed to be a sea of humans present here, with a stretch of black covering the grounds, extending endlessly towards the horizon. The noise and chatter resounding from within perfused throughout the surroundings, spreading and reverberating far and wide.

Countless teenage males and females had gathered here, with everyone having excited expressions on their faces as they sized the cultivation holy ground they had all yearned for, yet appearing exceedingly foreign to them. Being the new batch of Freshmen of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, they had worked and tried their best to pass through all of the tough challenges to obtain the qualifications to stand here today.

They had all come here to train and cultivate to become stronger and more powerful, before dazzlingly returning back to their hometowns.

At the corner of the sea of humans was a group of seven to eight youthful figures standing together. Looking towards the surrounding crowds, they appeared somewhat cramped, with their gazes showing a slight bit of recoil. Although they were considered as the topmost elite students from the spiritual academy they had come from, they had discovered that they were extremely ordinary when placed here. There were quite a few of the Freshmen in their surroundings that caused them to feel some dread, with some being in the Spirit Realm, a level of strength that was even stronger than their parents.

"This is the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy? Indeed, it truly is worthy of being one of the five Great Academies! It's much, much bigger than our Northern Spiritual Academy," said a sweet and delicate young girl

as she sized up her surroundings, before speaking quietly towards the young male beside her. "Brother Qingshan, I've heard that the most outstanding Senior Mu Chen of our Northern Spiritual Academy is also in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, right? How's he doing here? I really want to see him. It's said that he's the most outstanding student in the history of our Northern Spiritual Academy."

"Yu Xi, those aren't good words to say. My Elder Brother Liu Mu is also very outstanding. As of now, he's cultivating in the Saint Spiritual Academy," snorted a bulky youth standing beside them.

"Liu Yang, is there any use of arguing here? We're already in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Being in such a foreign place, and not being all that outstanding compared to the people around us, it's inevitable that you'll get bullied if you don't group up with others," replied the youth being called Brother Qingshan by the young girl as his wrinkled his forehead.

Hearing that, Liu Yang snorted twice. Nevertheless, he did not continue speaking any more words. Although he could be considered as extremely outstanding while he was in the Northern Spiritual Academy, his confidence had already been completely crushed upon coming here. After taking a look at his surroundings, it seemed to him that their strength was only average with not the slightest bit of outstanding aspects present.

"I truly don't know what this is all about with our Northern Spiritual Academy actually being able to obtain so many quotas. Furthermore, its truly strange that we're even able to be exempted from examinations," said Liu Yang doubtfully in a low voice.

Hearing that, the youths that had come together with him from the Northern Spiritual Academy all nodded their heads. This matter was something considerably strange for them. In the past, it was extremely rare for their Northern Spiritual Academy to obtain any quotas, with the added possibility of the people chosen to not be able to enter the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. However, this time, they were able to obtain close to ten quotas, with the added matter of being exempted from any examinations. Such a meaty pie falling from the heavens had seemingly

caused all of them to turn dizzy.

"Oi, the few of you..."

As they were discussing in low voices, a cry suddenly rang out from before them. They hurriedly turned their heads, only to see a number of youths with grins on their faces as they walked over. From the gazes of those people, one would immediately know that they were Seniors of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. This instantly caused Qing Shan, Liu Yang and the rest of their group to tense up, since they were able to sense rather frightening Spiritual Energy pressures coming from the latter few. The pressure radiating out was even stronger than those coming from their parents.

"We're in charge of you group of Freshmen." said a gentle-looking youth as he sent a faint smile towards them. Waving his hands, he continued speaking. "Our Demon's Gate is now accepting foreign members; therefore, you all will become members of our Demon's Gate. There isn't any special requirement, accept that you will have to contribute a certain amount of Spiritual Values every month from now. If anyone tries to bully you all, you just have to say the name of our Demon's Gate and it'll do. Understand?"

Hearing those words, Liu Yang, Qingshan and the rest of their group looked towards each other mutedly. Although they weren't exactly clear what Spiritual Values were, their intuition had told them that this didn't seem like a good matter. In the next moment, braving himself, Qing Shan asked out, "Seniors, could you let us get more familiar with the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy before letting us decide then?"

Hearing that, an ambiguous smile instantly surfaced on the face of the youth. Staring towards Qing Shan and the group, he grinned while giving his reply, "What's the matter? Are you looking down on our Demon's Gate?"

Noticing the smile, cold sweat started pouring out from Qing Shan and the group. The pretty young girl by the name of Yu Xi bit her lip, before speaking out after summing up her courage, "We, we have a Big Brother

here in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy! He's also a Senior. You can't bully us!"

Hearing her words, the few youths could not help instantly bursting into laughter. The Freshmen in the surroundings didn't dare to speak out, as those Seniors before their eyes possessed strength absolutely on the level of Heavenly Fusion Stage. That was a realm that none of the Freshmen dared to go against. Furthermore, Seniors bullying freshmen was an extremely common matter, something that everyone should have encountered before.

"Beautiful little Junior Sister," Restraining his smile after quite a while later, the youth grinned towards Yu Xi and said, "What's the name of your Big Brother? Let me hear it. I want to see if our Demon's Gate's able to subdue him or not."

Hastily, Qing Shan went forward to restrain the young girl. Offending those Seniors clearly wasn't too rational of a decision. Furthermore, if Mu Chen was dragged into this matter, it would really be troublesome.

However, although the young girl was small of age, she was the current batch of geniuses coming from the Northern Spiritual Academy. Although she had only cultivated and trained for a year, her strength was already rapidly catching up to Qing Shan, Liu Yang and the other Seniors from the Northern Spiritual Academy. Therefore, being the gifted one like she was, she clearly didn't face much of this kind of pressure. In the next instant, with a beet-red face, she bit her lip. Flinging away Qing Shan's hand, she raised her pretty face and shouted out in a loud voice, "My Big Bro's name is Mu Chen!"

Her extremely clear voice rang out within the noisy chatter coming from the surroundings, unexpectedly causing the canter around to quieten down. In the next instant, gazes shot over one after another, of which included some of the Seniors who were here to maintain order. At this moment, all of them were looking in shock towards the red-faced pretty young girl who had just shouted out...

Qing Shan was instantly scared by the sudden quieting of the

surroundings, especially those gazes from the various Seniors, which had caused a shock to shake through his heart. Instantly, he placed the young girl protectively behind him. Although Liu Yang and the rest were shocked till they feet started to shiver,

"I'm very sorry, Senior. She's still young and isn't sensible. We agree to the previous matter..." All of a sudden, Qing Shan's forward gaze moved, hastily apologising to the few Seniors which had seemingly been very stiff and rigid.

However, at this very moment, the youth before him who had a slightly amused grin on his face had somewhat froze up, with his lips starting to quiver. A slightly astringent breath started to ring out from his throat, before he lowered his voice and replied, "Your, your Big Brother is called Mu Chen?"

Qing Shan looked towards the youth before him, who appeared to be not quite right, and was instantly confused. At this moment, he could only brace himself and nodded her head in apprehension. However, all of a sudden, he notice quite a few people rushing up and striding over from the crowds of Seniors in the surroundings. All of them seemed to have the same insignia pin on their chests. From the voices coming from the surroundings, they seemed to be members of the Luo Goddess Association.

Upon seeing such a formation, Qing Shan was instantly frightened, while the pretty face of the young girl, Yu Xi had turned pale. Nevertheless, she clenched her teeth and stood her ground in defiance.

However, as the group of Luo Goddess Association flooded over, they unexpectedly didn't do anything to her. On the contrary, they had barged their way in front of those people from the Demon's Gate. Faced against them, those rather bossy Seniors from the Demon's Gate had actually resentfully retreated a few steps back. Clearly, they didn't wish for any conflict against the people of the Luo Goddess Association.

From this, the Freshmen in the surroundings could instantly tell that the Luo Goddess Association was clearly much stronger than the Demon's

Gate.

Nervously taking in the scene unfurling before them, Qing Shan and the group noticed a youth in the lead of the group before them sending them an extremely welcoming smile as he said, "Junior Brothers and Sisters, you know Brother Mu?"

Chapter 449: Why Not?

"Big Brother Mu?"

Hearing the words spoken by the youth in front of them, Qing Shan and the group were clearly shocked by that. Gawking, the young girl by the name of Yu Xi blinked her wide-open eyes, while feeling some apprehension. Big Brother Mu? Are they talking about Mu Chen? Could it be that they are talking about the wrong person? Although they knew that Mu Chen was the most outstanding person from their Northern Spiritual Academy, there were truthfully too many geniuses in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Therefore, they didn't dare to believe that Mu Chen was able to obtain much of any accomplishments during the short year he was in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Furthermore, the Big Brother Mu those people were hanging within their mouths seemed to be an extraordinary person within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

They were a little worried that the other party might have brought up the wrong person.

"Our... our big brother's called Mu Chen. He, might not be the Big Brother Mu you're talking about..." muttered Yu Xi softly. The sudden gazes coming from those Seniors in the surroundings had caused some unease in her. Although she was young, she also knew that they didn't have any support when they entered the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Therefore, they could only work hard and cultivate. At this moment, provoking those Seniors was clearly not a good matter for them.

"Haha, our Big Brother Mu's called Mu Chen." Hearing those words, the smile on the face youth from the Luo Goddess Association turn even more radiant.

"Ah?"

Qing Shan, Yu Xi and their group all exclaimed out in shock as they looked at one another. Could they have the same name?

"Are you guys from the Northern Spiritual Academy?" asked the youth.

Being a member of the Luo Goddess Association, he was clearly privy to some information about Mu Chen.

Hearing that, Qing Shan nodded his head in succession.

"Then there's no mistake here. Big Brother Mu's also from the Northern Spiritual Academy. Looks like we're talking about the same person," said the youth with a smile.

That reply caused Qing Shan and the group to turn dumbfounded, before instantly feeling emotional. In just a short span of over a year, Mu Chen has actually managed to mix so well in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?

Turning around, the youth's gentle face turned somewhat unsightly as he looked towards the people of the Demon's Gate, before speaking out, "Chen Xiu, your Demon's Gate's truly awesome to actually find trouble for Big Brother Mu's friends."

The faces of the people from the Demon's Gate instantly turned stiff, with none of the previous bossy attitude present anymore. Mu Chen's name held a considerable shock-factor towards the Demon's Gate. Furthermore, the current Mu Chen was considered to be the genuine number one person within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. It's said that not only their boss, He Yao, there were even some signs of the former overshadowing those peak influential people like Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong.

Therefore, although their Demon's Gate was still considered a powerful influence within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, they didn't have a single ounce of courage to go against the Luo Goddess Association. After all, the current Luo Goddess Association was considered to be the influence with the strongest voice and power within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy...

"Haha, that's a mistake, that's a mistake..."

Finally, regaining his clarity, the youth by the name of Chen Xiu gave an astringent laugh, before hastily cupping his hands towards Qing Shan and the group, while saying, "Haha. Junior Brothers and Sisters, I hope that you

can forgive our earlier rudeness. We'll bring our apologies in the future."

As his voice rang out, he gave a hurried wave of his hands and brought along the other members and helter-skelter away, not daring to stay there one bit longer.

Seeing the bossy and domineering Seniors now slinking away like that, the Freshmen in the surroundings instantly had a new view of their current situation.

"Mu Chen... he's that formidable in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?" asked Qing Shan as he looked towards the youth before them, his eyes brimming with unimaginable thoughts.

"Haha. Our Luo Goddess Association was created by Big Brother Mu and miss Luo Li. Furthermore, Big Brother Mu's currently the genuine strongest person within our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy."

The youth from the Luo Goddess Association smiled towards them, before pointing towards the majestic steele erected within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. With a face brimming with pride, he said, "See that? That's the Heavenly Rankings of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Only the strongest people would be able to have their names etched on its surface. Big Brother Mu's ranked Third... Naturally, he, in fact, has the power to obtain First. The only thing is that he hasn't taken any action, yet."

Looking over, Qing Shan and the group could see the extremely majestic steele erected there. Indeed, they were able to spot the familiar name present on the dazzling peak of the steele. For a moment, they were somewhat lost for words. Their companion that had once mixed with them in the Northern Spiritual Academy had actually managed to reach a height that was unfathomable by them in the short span of only a year.

"Big Brother Mu's so awesome!" Stars started to sparkle within Yu Xi's large eyes as she spoke out, her voice brimming with worship. While she was in the Northern Spiritual Academy, she had heard quite a bit from the rumors surrounding Mu Chen. She never imagined that she would obtain such shocking news once again just when she had stepped into the

Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

On the side, a complicated expression appeared on the face of Liu Yang. His Liu Family wasn't considered to have good relations with the Mu Family, with his grandfather even being killed by Mu Chen. For the past year, the changes that happened in the Northern Spiritual Realm were too great, with their Liu Family no longer being like before, while the Mu Family was growing increasingly stronger. As of now, they had grasped control of the entire Northern Spiritual Realm. Originally, his Liu Family was still hoping for his brother to come back after becoming stronger. However, from the looks of it today, they might have to dispel this thought of theirs. Although his Big Brother Mu Bai might have some ability, Liu Yang was clear that the former would absolutely not be able to compare with Mu Chen. If their Liu Family had any thoughts, they might...

"Haha. You guys are Big Brother Mu's friends. In the future, you will also be the friends of our Luo Goddess Association. Relax, we'll absolutely not let you guys receive any sort of bullying," said the youth as he sent a smile towards Qing Shan and the group.

Hearing that, Qing Shan and the group quietly breathed a sigh of relief. Only after experiencing the previous spectacle did they know that possessing some background within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was such an important matter. Compared to the other Freshmen, the small and tiny Northern Spiritual Realm they came from was considered to be of not one bit of prestige or fame. However, with their connections with Mu Chen, they were clearly able to reduce much of the bullying that might have occurred to them.

Bang!

However, just as Qing Shan and the group were celebrating about this, suddenly, an astonishing clap of thunder resounded across the region. While everyone was in shock by this and raised their heads, they noticed a thousand metre wide pillar of light suddenly rushing towards the heavens from the depths of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, while vast and boundless Spiritual Energy radiated from it.

Due to this unforeseen spectacle, all of the Freshmen turned somewhat flustered, not knowing exactly what had happened.

"The Door of the Northern Heavens is opening!"

After gawking and being stunned for a moment, a few Seniors could not help exclaiming emotionally, "Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong and the other Seniors are coming out!"

All of the Freshmen had also become restless, eyes brimming with surprise and anticipation as the looked towards the pillar of light. Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong? The influential figures ranked First and Second on the Heavenly Rankings? They never imagined that they would be able to see the heaven-favored sons they had worshipped upon their entry to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy...

The pillar of light was overly gigantic, attracting the attention of everyone within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy as it rushed towards the heavens. Countless students shot into the skies, surprised expressions appearing on their faces as they observed the scene before them. After closing up for half a year, Shen Cangsheng and the rest are finally coming out?

"They're coming out..."

Within the courtyard, Mu Chen had also raised his head, smiling as he looked towards the gigantic pillar of light as a shadow of anticipation appeared within his eyes. He really wanted to see exactly how much Shen Cangsheng and the rest had had progressed during their half-year isolation within the Door of the Northern Heavens.

Humm! Humm!

As the thousand metre wide pillar of light stood tall within the skies, a gigantic glowing bronze door slowly condensed and appeared within it. In the next moment, under the attentive gazes of countless people in the region, the glowing door slowly started to open, causing torrential Spiritual Energy to sweep out, radiating across the entire region.

Whoosh! Whoosh!

As the glowing door opened up, rays of light explosively shot out from within like shooting stars, streaking across the horizon, before appearing in the skies above the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

There were nine figures, all of them radiating with boundless Spiritual light. Standing in the air, vast, endless Spiritual Energy pressure radiated from them, causing all of the Freshmen present in the outer region of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy to quietly smack their lips upon sensing the enormous pressure bearing down on them. These are the strongest students within their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy? Indeed, they are terrifying.

"So powerful..."

The faces of Qing Shan and the group were filled with shock and astonishment. Never, in their lives, did they sense such strong and powerful pressures bearing down on them. Not even the various teachers and Headmaster of the Northern Spiritual Academy could even match up to a portion of this. In the next moment, all of them started to feel emotional. Indeed, such a scene is worthy of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. In the future, will we be as powerful as those Seniors?

Under the countless attentive gazes, the rays of brilliance radiating from the nine figures started to slowly dissipate away, revealing the people present under the lights.

Standing in the middle was Shen Cangsheng, his body ramrod-straight, like a spear erected in the sky, his face filled with unswerving firmness. Although he wasn't as handsome or suave as Li Xuantong, the overbearing aura he radiated was not one bit weaker than the latter.

Beside him stood the thin and handsome Li Xuantong. Dressed in black robes, his black hair fluttered about. God-knows how many Freshmen had their eyes radiating with light as they looked towards him, with quite a few young girls starting to blush in the process.

Although Luo Li stood at the side of the group, truthfully speaking, she was, undoubtedly, the most dazzling existence present within the nine of them. Her silvery river of hair that descended to her exquisitely slender

waist was coupled with her delicate facial features that appeared to be made of porcelain. The pair of glass-like beautiful eyes appeared clear and tranquil, causing people to get drunk just by looking at her.

God-knows how many hearts were furiously sent thumping away by their appearances in the sky.

"Show offs..."

Taking in the spectacle in the sky, Mu Chen shook his head.

While he was laughing to himself, the sharp gazes of Shen Cangsheng and the rest had shot over, with Luo Li's being the only one with gentleness present in her beautiful eyes. Looking towards the youth that she had not seen for half a year, a faint smile surfaced on her red lips, causing her to appear exceedingly alluring and soul-stirring.

As Shen Cangsheng's sharp gaze shot towards Mu Chen, he subsequently crossed gazes with Li Xuantong. Fighting intent blazed within their eyes as they took a step forward, before their roars resounded across the region like thunder.

"Mu Chen, are you up for a fight?!"

After undergoing the half-year isolation and their strength improving by leaps and bounds, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong finally recovered their brimming self-confidence. This time, they personally wanted to seek out Mu Chen for guidance.

As their roars rang out across the region, the contents of which shocked the countless Freshmen present, causing even the Seniors of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy to erupt with an astonishing uproar. Ever since the rise of Mu Chen's fame and reputation till now, he has yet to cross hands with the two most elite students of their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong. However, as of today, this heart shaking scene would finally appear before their eyes?!

The hearts of Qing Shan and the group were filled with shock and astonishment. The number one and two existences on the Heavenly Rankings are inviting Mu Chen for a fight?

"Haha, why not!"

While they were still wallowing in their shock, a clear, hearty laugh instantly rang out from within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy as a glowing figure shot towards the heavens.

As countless students noticed the thin figure, their blood instantly started to boil as ear-shattering cheers started to resound across the region!

Chapter 450: Interchange of New and Old Overlord

As the youth rushed towards the heavens, boundless Spiritual Energy gushed out from him like a flood. Striding into the skies, his hands were crossed behind his back, with his thin figure appearing ramrod straight. A faint smile was present on his handsome face, with the attitude and aura he sent out being not one bit weaker than Shen Cangsheng or Li Xuantong.

"Big Brother Mu!"

When Mu Chen appeared in the sky, astonishing, earth-shattering cheers erupted across the entirety of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. As of now, Mu Chen's fame and prestige in the academy had clearly reached the peak, with not a single person still treating him like a Freshman. That's because the matters that he had accomplished, things that even veteran peak influential figures like Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong weren't able to accomplish.

"Indeed, it's Mu Chen!"

Qing Shan and the group looked emotionally at the all too familiar figure. Over the span of a year, the youth had grown much more mature. Yet, there wasn't too much of a change to his appearance.

At this moment, the young girl by the name of Yu Xi had also opened her eyes wide as she tightly stared at the thin figure in the sky. Faced against such strong and powerful opponents, the former still had a cheerful and leisurely appearance, causing the pretty face of the young girl to turn uncontrollably red as her heartstrings were tugged.

Within the large palace in the central location of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, Dean Tai Cang and a bunch of Elders were smiling from ear to ear as they looked towards the youths in the sky. They had truly not seen such a lively scene for the greater half of the year.

WIthin the sky, Mu Chen raised his eyes, before speaking out with a

gentle smile, "Look's like everyone has greatly improved in strength after this half-year of isolation, huh."

While sizing up Shen Cangsheng and the rest, astonishment and shock were present in Mu Chen's heart as he could sense that of the nine people, He Yao, Su Xuan, Xu Huang, Zhao Qingshan and the other two had reached the realm of Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase, which was equivalent to him. One had to know that they had just reached the realm of Heavenly Completion Stage before entering the Door of the Northern Heavens. Nevertheless, they had actually improved by such leaps and bounds.

Furthermore, other than those six, Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong and Luo Li had surpassed everyone in the group. According to his senses, Mu Chen could feel that the trio might have already crossed their Human Body Disaster.

Having such progress in the span of half a year was considerably astonishing.

"If we didn't have such progress, how could we have to face to participate in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, right?" replied Shen Cangsheng with a grin as he started to size Mu Chen up. Clenching his hands, scorching-hot fighting intent brimmed within his eyes. Not being a person that easily gave up and admitted defeat, when he had first seen the former, Mu Chen was a person that needed to enter a life-or-death battle when he faced against that Bai Xuan. However, who could have imagined that in a short span of the next year, this youth had improved by leaps and bounds, and progressed at such an astonishing pace. Half a year ago, he achieved the accomplishments of defeating Mo Longzi and killing Mo Xingtian, causing the entire Northern Heavens Continent to reel in shock.

Unknowingly, that youth he had seen then had already surpassed him within a span of time that hadn't even reached two years. Even his long-seated position of the Overlord on the Heavenly Rankings was placed in imminent danger by the former. Shen Cangsheng knew that Mu Chen didn't have much of an interest in the Heavenly Rankings. Nevertheless,

being proud and arrogant, Shen Cangsheng didn't need something like modestly yielding to the former.

In the past, after seeing the fight between Mu Chen and Mo Xingtian, Shen Cangsheng had already felt the disparity between him and Mu Chen. Therefore, he had bitterly trained for this half-year, hoping that his progress wouldn't be too small. As of now, he had already passed his Fleshly Body Disaster, and was confident that the current him would similarly possess the might to face against the Mo Xingtian of then!

Although he was still unable to surpass Mu Chen, at the very least, he wouldn't have the same feeling of helplessness he felt then.

"Mu Chen, receive my move!"

The smile of Shen Cangsheng's face slowly dissipated away, replaced by the usual stern expression he wore. Taking a step forward, a low roar rang from him.

Looking towards Shen Cangsheng, who had turned serious, before noticing the scorching-hot and prideful gaze, Mu Chen seemed to understand the gist behind this. Gently nodding his head, he replied in a slow fashion, "Please guide me, Senior Shen Cangsheng!"

With a hearty laugh, Shen Cangsheng strode forward. Clenching his hands tightly, boundless Spiritual Energy swept out, howling across the region like a great sea. A powerful Spiritual Energy pressure radiated out, shocking the world in its awe.

Nevertheless, faced against the astonishing prestige of Shen Cangsheng, a calm and tranquil expression still remained on Mu Chen's face. Not a single tremor could even be seen on his robes.

With a stern expression, Shen Cangsheng clapped his hands together. Suddenly, his hand seals started to fluctuate, while the torrential Spiritual Energy around him flared up. Following the fluctuation of his hand seals, incomparably gigantic glowing seals formed, before condensing behind him, radiating with astonishing fluctuations.

Everyone present could sense how frightening this attack from Shen

Cangsheng was. Clearly, he was absolutely not restraining a single bit of his strength. Furthermore, he had immediately chosen to unleash his strongest attack.

Noticing this, the eyes of Dean Tai Cang and the Elders faintly narrowed as he muttered. "He had actually managed to cultivate the Punishment Divine Art to this step..."

Bang!

All of a sudden, astonishing claps of thunder seemed to resound across the horizon, with Shen Cangsheng's hand seals suddenly stopped. In the next instant, as his gaze turned fierce, he took a step forward, shooting like a lightning bolt straight at Mu Chen. Behind him, countless glowing seals followed him as he shot forward, causing astonishing claps of thunder that shook the entire region.

"Judgement Divine Art, Myriad Life Seal!"

Akin to a spectre, Shen Cangsheng appeared right before Mu Chen. Without the slightest bit of hesitation, his fingers came together to form a fist. Spiritual Energy that swept out of him blotted the skies as bright and resplendent rays of brilliance radiated from him akin to a dazzling sun. With a low roar, his fist imprint came smashing over.

Bang! Bang!

The air present in the region was completely sent exploding away, with patterns of distortion appearing in the surrounding space. Those hundreds of thousands of glowing seals appeared to be condensed from some infallible faith, merging with Shen Cangsheng's fist as it rumbled towards Mu Chen.

This fist contained the extreme limit of Shen Cangsheng's might! Even Mo Xingtian might have to face this fist with all of his strength if he met with it head-on!

The Shen Cangsheng of now truly was much, much more stronger than half a year ago.

At this moment, rays of light blossomed from Mu Chen's black pupils.

All of a sudden, with a furious clench of his fist, low claps of thunder rang out from within his body. In the next instant, black arcs of lightning started to dance across his body, while four lightning runes slowly started to surface onto his chest.

Bang!

The peals of thunder ringing out from Mu Chen's body reverberated across the region. At this moment, his body appeared to be suffused with jet-black lightning light, while indescribable, surging energies started to radiate from his limbs and bones.

This was the first time Mu Chen had completely activated his Thunder God Physique after successfully condensing his fourth rune.

Such strength and power was more than sufficient to sunder the skies and rend the earth!

Chi! Chi!

Black bolts of lightning arcs crazily lept around his body. In the next instant, taking a furious step forward, he showed no signs of hesitation as he sent a fist out.

There wasn't anything fanciful in this punch, yet it contained extremely frightening energies imbued within it.

As the fist rumbled out, ripples seemed to fluctuate around the surrounding space as rumbling peals of thunder reverberated across the region.

Bang!

Under countless emotional gazes below, the two fists smashed into each other. At that very instant, any rumbling sounds were eliminated, with the entire region seemingly being devoid of sound for an instant. However, at the next very moment, crazy, boundless energy shock waves swept out akin to thousand metre high tsunamis, with hurricanes seemingly taking form at the area of impact.

Bang! Bang!

Under the terrifying impact of the energy shock waves, Mu Chen's body sparkled with lightning, while the hundreds of thousands of glowing seals behind Shen Cangsheng's back rapidly vibrated. In the end, with a bang, a shiver shook through the bodies of the two as they both retreated back.

Mu Chen retreated back eight steps, with the lightning light behind his back collapsing, causing rumbling sounds to reverberate.

Shen Cangsheng retreated ten steps back, with the glowing seals on his back collapsing one by one. In the end, all of them completely collapsed apart, transforming into glowing dots that blotted the skies, appeared exceedingly beautiful.

Countless people were turned speechless. The collision of the two fists were exceedingly astonishing. However, from the looks of it, it seemed that Mu Chen was still able to gain the slight superiority.

"I never imagined that you'd actually cultivate your Thunder God Physique to such a degree."

Lowering his head to look at his fist, Shen Cangsheng saw a patch of red being present there, while a numbing sensation radiated from it. Raising his head, he looked towards Mu Chen, before exhaling deeply, while a smile akin to one of relief appeared on his firm and resolute face. As his eyes lit up when he looked towards the glorious Heavenly Ranking steele within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, he spoke out with a faint smile, "It is finally time for I, the First Rank on the Heavenly Rankings to abdicate my rank. From now on, you're the true number one in our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy!"

At this moment, countless students had turned quiet as they looked at the ramrod straight figure of Shen Cangsheng, while a feeling of respect and worship gushed from their hearts. Only at this moment did they realise that this clash of fists was for Shen Cangsheng himself to hand over the most glorious honor of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy to Mu Chen.

Having ruled over for so many glorious years, as of now, this glory had finally found a more suitable host.

Looking towards Shen Cangsheng, Mu Chen turned slightly quiet. He didn't care about this so-called "First Rank" on the Heavenly Rankings. However, he knew that this wasn't the time where he could reject it. That was due to Shen Cangsheng's pride and honor as the previous Overlord of the Heavenly Rankings resting on this. Therefore, cupping his hands towards the former, Mu Chen didn't say a single word, with his expression turning into one of extreme solemn.

As countless students looked towards the exchange of positions from the old to the new Overlord, the blood within them showed signs of boiling and flaring up. In the next moment, ear-deafening roars and cheers resounding across the entire region.

Shen Cangsheng's expression started to turn gentle, yet his gaze turned into one that harbored evil intent. Sending a smile towards Mu Chen, he spoke out, "Do you know what we've decided in the Door of the Northern Heavens?"

Hearing those words, Mu Chen gawked as he noticed similar gazes shooting towards him from Li Xuantong, He Yao, Xu Huang, Zhao Qingshan and the rest, causing some uneasy feelings to surface within his heart.

"If Shen Cangsheng loses to you, all of us will give you a beating!" roared Li Xuantong as he slowly clenched his fists tightly, while boundless Spiritual Energy erupted from him. Similarly, Spiritual Energy started surging from the bodies of He Yao, Xu Huang and the rest. Shooting a look at each other, suddenly, all of them shot straight towards Mu Chen, their Spiritual Energies howling, as they rushed across the horizon.

"You scoundrels!"

Mu Chen's face instantly turned black as he turned around and ran.

Whoosh!

However just as he was about to run, a beautiful figure shot from behind Li Xuantong and the rest. Bringing about the familiar fragrance, she appeared before Mu Chen. In the next instant, everyone noticed Luo Li smiling as she appeared before Mu Chen, her jade-like hand wielding her

longsword that was pointed towards Li Xuantong and the rest.

"Oi, Luo Li! How could you not uphold your words?!" Seeing this, He Yao, Xu Huang and the rest immediately roared in discontent.

"We've clearly talked about this!"

Looking at the discontent bunch before her, Luo Li pushed a lock of her hair behind her ear, before retreating back two steps. Standing side-by-side with Mu Chen, she gave a sweet smile as she replied, "But, I can't bear to do it."

At this moment, countless howls of grief could be heard resounding within the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Hearing those roars, Mu Chen could not help laughing. Perhaps, in the many years to come, the scene before him would still be fresh within his mind. Within this warm and comfortable ivory tower, there weren't too many schemes and fights with others. Even if there were some conflicts, they were easily solved. How could he not help such a Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy to obtain the honor and glory it deserved?

Chapter 451: Old Friends Reunion

With Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong, Luo Li and the other peak influential figures coming out from their isolated training, the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy clearly regained its usual liveliness. Added with the induction of Freshmen to the academy, as well as the big matter of the coming of the new Overlord of the Heavenly Rankings that caused people's blood to boil, the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had sunk into a fervent state.

During this fervent atmosphere, there were more and more students starting to raise their heads and look around in anticipation. In the upcoming Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, the number of elite students from their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy participating in this event was clearly the greatest among the past few batches. All of them held high hopes for their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy to obtain impressive results in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament and continue the honor and glory of their academy.

While waiting for the start of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, Mu Chen had also heard of the news about the arrival of Qing Shan and the group into the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Due to the Freshmen entering the academy, Mu Chen's batch of students were naturally able to strip the title of Freshmen from their names. Therefore, they no longer stayed in the Freshman Region, having all moved into the inner regions of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. The Spiritual Qi present in the new regions were clearly multiple times more dense than the Freshman Region.The headquarters of the Luo Goddess Association was also at an extremely good place, even being in the vicinity of a Rank 7 Spiritual Array, with the density and quality of the Spiritual Energy present caused quite a few societies to look red with envy at them. Nevertheless, none of them could do anything about it, since the Luo Goddess Association was the most famous and prestigious society within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy as of now, with no society that could compete with them.

In the new training grounds of the Luo Goddess Association, Mu Chen met up with Qing Shan and the group. Looking at those familiar faces, unconcealable joy and happiness gushed from his eyes. With a smile, he went forward, before giving the somewhat flustered Qing Shan a fierce hug.

"Qing Shan, welcome to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy."

Mu Chen said with a smile. Thinking back two years ago, he was only a student in the Northern Spiritual Academy, and was still working hard to get accepted into one of the five Great Academies. At that time, these fellows were by his side. Although they might have been small and weak then, the feeling of growing up together was deeply embedded in his heart. Thinking back to those memories caused warm feelings to suffuse within his heart.

Being originally flustered, Qing Shan started to relax after the hug from Mu Chen. He looked towards Mu Chen, before looking behind the latter, where a slender and elegant young lady dressed in black robes stood. This was the girl that had attracted the eyeballs of countless people in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy two days ago. At this moment, a faint, sweet smile was present on her beautiful face as she looked towards the happy Mu Chen before her.

"Big Brother Mu, I never imagined that you would mix so well in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy," replied Qing Shan as he scratched his head. "Now I've finally understood why our Northern Spiritual Academy had managed to obtain such a high quota from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy this time. All of this has to do with you."

After all, Qing Shan wasn't an idiot. At the very best, their Northern Spiritual Academy was a small Spiritual Academy, and would simply not appear in the eye of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. And yet, such a strange matter had occured. Clearly, there was only one reason, and that was Mu Chen being that outstanding within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Hearing that, Mu Chen gave a laugh, before turning his gaze behind

Qing Shan. Resting on the body of Liu Yang, he spoke out with a smile, "You've also come to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, huh."

While in the Northern Spiritual Academy, Liu Yang was at loggerheads with Mu Chen. However, in the end, he was taught a lesson by the latter. It could be said that the relationship between the two wasn't all too good; after all, Liu Yang's grandfather had met his death by Mu Chen's hands. There was no getting away for Mu Chen towards the decline of the Liu Family. Nevertheless, he, Liu Yang, didn't blame Mu Chen. Speaking about this, there was only the Liu Family to blame for all of this.

With Mu Chen's current strength, it's naturally impossible for those little melon seeds to amount to anything within his eyes. If one was to think along this path, it appeared that the latter was too magnanimous. After close to two years of training and cultivation, he was no longer the immature youth from then.

A complex expression was present on Liu Yang's face. As of now, Mu Chen had truly far, far exceeded his current strength. Such disparity made it such that he wasn't even able to feel any hatred. Nodding his head with a slightly depressed feeling, he replied, "If not for you, we might not even have the qualifications to enter the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. We're still somewhat weak."

"Haha, Big Brother Mu, this is Yu Xi. After you'd left, she's the new genius of our Northern Spiritual Academy. After cultivating for less than two years time, she has already caught up to us. Furthermore, you're her worshipped idol." Knowing about the grudges and grievances between the Mu Family and the Liu Family, Qing Shan hastily pulled the pretty little girl standing beside him who was using her big black eyes to stare at Mu Chen and introduced her with a smile.

"Oh?" Feeling slightly astonished, Mu Chen smiled as he shot a look at Yu Xi.

"Nice, nice to meet you, Big Brother Mu Chen. I'm Yu Xi." Yu Xi was so emotional that her little face had turned beet-red, with her little hands clutching the helms of her skirt. All the cleverness and wittiness had all

gone out the window, with her clear voice even becoming slightly stammerish.

This was her idol! Ever since she was in the Northern Spiritual Academy, she had always heard about his legends. However, only when she had truly came face-to-face with him did she discover that those legends were all weak and pathetic before the real thing.

Seeing how cute and pretty she was, Mu Chen had a favorable impression of her. Extending his hand to rub her head, he said with a smile, "Nice to meet you. Properly train and cultivate in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, okay? Although our Northern Spiritual Realm is small, we aren't weaker than anyone."

"Yes, Big Brother Mu Chen! I'll definitely work hard. One day, I'll climb up to the First Rank of the Heavenly Rankings!" Yu Xi's face had turned scorching hot by the intimate actions made by Mu Chen. Nevertheless, she furiously nodded her little head, while her big eyes brimmed with resolution. She worshipped Mu Chen, and treated his path as her goal.

Since Mu Chen's now the First Rank on the Heavenly Rankings, she'd definitely obtain First Rank in the future!

Mu Chen didn't know that just this one sentence from him had made the little girl set such a goal within her heart. Pulling Luo Li over towards him, he sent a grin towards Qing Shan and the group as he said, "This is Luo Li."

"Nice to meet you, Big Sister Luo Li!"

Over the past two days, Qing Shan and the group had long heard about Luo Li, which led them to immediately send their greetings towards her. They had heard that this Big Sister's the Head of the Luo Goddess Association! With the name of the Luo Goddess Association, one can clearly guess that it was created just for her. Furthermore, with such an intimacy between Mu Chen and Luo Li, it clearly goes without saying.

"Nice to meet you all," replied Luo Li with a sweet smile.

"Big Sister Luo Li, you're so beautiful." Yu Xi commented enviously as

she opened her eyes.

"You're also very cute. In the future, if there's anything you need help with, you can just come and find us." Holding on to Yu Xi's hands, Luo Li replied with a sweet smile.

Moving close to Mu Chen, Qing Shan gave a big thumbs up to the latter, before quietly saying, "You're the man, Big Brother Mu. You're actually able to find such a beautiful girl. However, God-knows how hurt Big Sister Qian'er will be if she knows about her."

"Who's Big Sister Qian'er?" Suddenly, Luo Li, who was talking to Yu Xi, panned her head over, a grinning expression within her beautiful eyes as she asked in a casual fashion.

Seeing this, Mu Chen gave a furious glare at Qing Shan, causing the latter the rub his nose in awkwardness.

"They are talking about Big Sister Tang Qian'er. She and Big Brother Mu had grown up together. However, at this moment, she's cultivating in the Myriad Pheonix Spiritual Academy," replied Yu Xi in a lovable voice.

"Oh, so she's your childhood sweetheart, huh?" Luo Li's cresent moon-shaped slender eyebrows jumped as she sent an ambiguous smile towards Mu Chen.

With nothing he could do, Mu Chen rubbed his nose. Looking towards the jade-like lovable face of Luo Li, he noticed a extremely rare shadow of jealousy present within the beautiful eyes of the latter. This caused an extreme satisfaction of vanity to gush out from his heart. Being able to let Luo Li, who was usually calm and tranquil like a silent lake, to feel slightly jealous was truly an extremely hard matter to accomplish.

Therefore, exploiting the opportunity, he replied with a grin, "What's the matter? Feeling jealous?"

Being exceptionally intelligent, how could Luo Li not see that her unconcious reveal of the slight feeling of jealousy had caused Mu Chen's ego to drastically inflate. In the next instant, giving a faint smile, she replied, "Looks like I have to find Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong and the

others and let them cut you up. However, this time, you better not find me to help you out."

Hearing her reply, Mu Chen instantly turned sluggish, before feeling somewhat resentful.

Seeing that he had become deflated and shrunken up, Luo Li gave a sweet smile. Extending her slender, jade-like hand out, she grabbed hold of Mu Chen's hand, intertwining her fingers with his. The warmth coming from her action, caused the alluringly red lips of the young girl to curl up.

Idiot. How could I bear to do that.

After chatting awhile, Mu Chen let Luo Li take care of Yu Xi and the rest, before bringing Qing Shan to tge side and asked, "How's my old man?"

"Haha. Uncle Mu's formidable. The entire Northern Spiritual Realm has already been united by him, with the nine cities no longer existing anymore. Now, there's only the Northern Spiritual Alliance, with Uncle Mu as the Alliance Leader," replied Qing Shan with a smile.

"Oh?" hearing this caused Mu Chen to be astonished. My old man's actually turned the chaotic Northern Spiritual Realm into an alliance?

"Not long after you had left, Uncle Mu haf broken into the Heavenly Fusion Stage. Afterwards, he, with Big Sister Qian'er's father and the others, established the Northern Spiritual Alliance. Other than Liu City, which had resisted awhile, the other cities submitted in succession. As of now, the Northern Spiritual Realm is much stronger than before."

Hearing that reply, Mu Chen slightly nodded his head. Heavenly Fusion Stage can already be considered as extremely strong and powerful within the Northern Spiritual Realm. No wonder why my old man's able to form an alliance. Although such an alliance is somewhat of an abusive act, especially with the existence of Liu City, this can be considered as a slightly concealed danger. Nevertheless, thinking about it, my old man's very clear about this. He will be careful about this.

Nevertheless, he should be more vigilant about this and find a time to speak to the Headmaster to see if he could lend some people to secretly

head to the Northern Spiritual Realm to protect his old man. He didn't want anything to happen to his father.

"Qing Shan, if you have the chance, help me send some news about me back to the Northern Spiritual Realm," said Mu Chen after pondering awhile. With his current accomplishments, it might incite waves of shock if they were to be circulated within the Northern Spiritual Realm. At that time, not to mention the Northern Spiritual Realm, there wouldn't be that many people in the Northern Heavens Continent that would dare to do anything to his old man.

"Okay, I know," replied Qing Shan as he nodded his head.

Patting Qing Shan's shoulder, Mu Chen deeply exhaled. Raising his head up, he looked towards the azure horizon, before his hands started to slowly clench together.

After arranging all of these matters, it should be about time to participate in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament. That was a day he had anticipated for a very long time.

"Ji Xuan, we should properly settle our grudges and grievances in this Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, right? I don't know if the current you has made any preparations. The Blood Calamity of the Spiritual Road has yet to engulf you. This time, I'm afraid that I'll not give you any more chances to escape."

Chapter 452: Rules and Regulations

As time passed, under the anticipation of all of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy students, the starting date of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament had finally reached within two days.

Within the great hall in the central position of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, Mu Chen, Luo Li, Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong and the rest of the elite students in the top ten ranks of the Heavenly Rankings were gathered here. Within the front of the great hall, Dean Tai Cang, Elder Zhu Tian, Hallmaster Mo You and all of the important higher-ups of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy were gathered here. Even Ling Xi had exited her courtyard and had arrived at this place.

Such a line-up could be said to be the grandest scene of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Sitting at the front, a serious expression was present on Dean Tai Cang's face as he looked towards the ten greatest students standing within the great hall that would represent their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Looking at the young men and women standing before him, he slowly said, "Two more days and the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament will start. The Great Spiritual Academy Tournament is extremely important to our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, and I think everyone should already know why."

Within the great hall, Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong, Mu Chen and the rest all had serious expressions on their faces as they slowly nodded their heads. This time, if they didn't managed to obtain outstanding results, there's a possibility that the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy will get stripped of its title as being one of the five Great Spiritual Academies. Such a blow to the name of a Spiritual Academy would be fatal.

"This is also the first time that you all will participate in the Great Spiritual Academy. Therefore, I'll first brief you all about its rules."

Sweeping his gaze across the group, Dean Tai Cang said, "According to the rules of past Great Spiritual Academy Tournaments, you will be split

up into groups, with five people in one group. This time, our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy will only send the ten of you. Which means that you all will be split into two groups to participate together in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament.

"The first group will have Shen Cangsheng as the leader, and Li Xuantong, He Yao, Su Xuan and Yang Lin as members."

"The second group will have Mu Chen as the leader, with Luo Li, Xu Huang, Zhao Qingshan and Mu Fengyang as members."

As both Mu Chen and Shen Cangsheng shot a look at one another, both of them cupped their fists solemnly in reply.

"Although I would very much want to group the best and strongest in one group, we're one of the five Great Spiritual Academies, which means that we have to send out two groups, at the very least. Therefore, there's no choice but for you guys to split up," said Dean Tai Cang with a helpless expression appearing on his face. Their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy could be considered to be the weakest academy of the five Great Spiritual Academies. As of now, they still needed to send out two groups of five, which would result in their strength being further divided.

"Dean, how many groups are there participating in this Great Spiritual Academy Tournament? And how many groups did the other four Great Spiritual Academies send out?" asked Mu Chen after pondering for a while.

"The Spiritual Academies participating in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament number in the amount of tens of thousands, with every Spiritual Academy sending one group, at the very least. So how many groups, you say?" replied Dean Tai Cang with a smile.

Hearing that, Mu Chen and the group all sucked in a breath of cold air. If those words were true, there should be tens of thousands of groups participating in the Tournament. Furthermore, these weren't just the numbers used to fill up the slots, all of them were the elite of every Spiritual Academy, meaning that each and every person would absolutely possess some skill and ability. To distinguish themselves from tens of

thousands of groups wasn't a simple task at all.

"As for the other four Great Spiritual Academies," with a helpless smile, Dean Tai Cang continued his reply, "According to what I know, the Saint Spiritual Academy is sending out four groups, with all of them comprised of the most strongest students within their ranks. The leaders of the four groups are all super geniuses that the Saint Spiritual Academy has spent their blood and sweat to nurture and bring up. Also, that Ji Xuan is the leader of one of the groups."

Hearing that, Mu Chen's eyes slightly narrowed; however, he didn't feel that it was anything accidental. Indeed, Ji Xuan was extremely formidable. Even after entering the Saint Spiritual Academy, where the geniuses present there were as numerous as the clouds in the sky, he would absolutely be able to distinguish himself and stand out from the masses.

The base of the Saint Spiritual Academy was actually that strong to be able to send out four groups of elites! Just based on this point could show why their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy couldn't compare with the former.

"At the previous Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, the Saint Spiritual Academy had also sent out four groups. However, their line-up then wasn't as luxurious as this time. From the looks of it, this time, they have set their minds on using this line-up to shock the other Spiritual Academies. After all, the position of Academy Head had been vacant for decades. The Saint Spiritual Academy has been coveting that position for many years, merely that due to the restrain coming from the Martial Spiritual Academy, Myriad Phoenix Academy, as well as the Azure Sky Spiritual Academy, the Saint Spiritual Academy was not once able to obtain what it wanted. However, over the past few years, the prestige and reputation of the Saint Spiritual Academy has grown increasingly stronger. If its able to show an astonishing performance in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament this time, I'm afraid that the position might really end up in their hands..."

Hearing about this news, the eyebrows of Elder Zhu Tian and the rest started to wrinkle and tighten. The so-called "Academy Head" would mean

being the head of all of the academies. Although one didn't possess the power to abolish other Spiritual Academies, the weight of the words coming from that position was extremely heavy. In the past, while obtaining their title as one of the five Great Spiritual Academies, their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had offended the Saint Spiritual Academy. If they were to let the Saint Spiritual Academy obtain the position as Academy Head, their title as one of the five Great Spiritual Academies might not be that stable, something that added danger to the already existing ones.

"Other than the Saint Spiritual Academy sending out four groups, the other three Great Spiritual Academies all sent out three groups each, with every group consisting of their best students. This time, it can be said that they have gone all-out."

"Other than the five Great Spiritual Academies, there are still quite a few elite Spiritual Academies out there. Of them, there are some that possess solid strength and background, and aren't weaker than our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Over the last few years, they have been covetly eyeing our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, and will definitely do their utmost this time to kick our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy down from the five Great Spiritual Academies and take over that title."

Hearing this, Shen Cangsheng and the rest gave bitter laughs. From the looks of it, the situation their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was in truly wasn't good at all.

"Furthermore, the battlefield for this Great Spiritual Academy Tournament is a remnant piece of a shattered continent." said Dean Tai Cang.

"A shattered continent?"

"In the ancient times, this shattered continent was one of the largest continents within the Great Thousand Worlds. However, due to the great calamity that happened in the ancient times, it had shattered apart, transforming into fragmented continents of various sizes. These

fragmented continents are considered to be lands of treasure within the Great Thousand Worlds. That's because they contain vestiges of the ancient past. People who have good luck might be able to obtain some of the ancient treasures or ancient inheritance present within them."

With a smile, Dean Tai Cang continued explaining. "This fragment of the shattered continent was found by the five Great Spiritual Academies. However due to this continent being overly fragmented, added with the possibility of having some ancient seals still remaining there, all of us didn't dare to search in detail with great fanfare. After discussing, we've decided to make this the battlefield of this Great Spiritual Academy Tournament. Speaking of this, this is a benefit for you guys. If you're able to obtain some inheritance there, it would be extremely beneficial for you guys in your future accomplishments."

As Mu Chen the rest shot a look at each other, everyone could see the sparks of interest appearing within each other's eyes. Indeed, those ancient vestiges and remnants would brew interest in people. At that time, when they enter the battlefield, they should take note of this point.

"However..." Suddenly, Mu Chen thought about something, causing his eyebrows to wrinkle up as he asked, "If that's the case, all of the groups will head towards this fragment of the shattered continent... Won't that lead to a massive massacre?"

In there, other than the group from their academy, everyone else should be considered as enemies. Added with the enticement of those ancient vestiges, this would result in the fights being even more intensified. At that time, which they all took action, the only word that could describe what would happen would be one word: Miserable.

"Indeed, the battles will be extremely cruel and unforgiving," said Dean Tai Cang as he nodded his head. "Tens of thousands of groups. Do you know how many groups have the qualifications to participate in the final fight?"

Mu Chen and the rest shook their heads.

"Eight groups," replied Dean Tai Cang with a faint smile. "Other than the

eight groups, every other group will be eliminated."

Shock waves shook through the hearts of Mu Chen and the rest. Of the tens of thousands of groups, there will only be eight groups that will participate in the final fight? This rate of elimination is truly too terrifying, right? For the sake of obtaining the right to be one of that eight groups, exactly what kind of slaughter will take place in the shattered continent to end in that?

The groups that were able to distinguish themselves among the tens of thousands of groups and qualify for the final fight would definitely be the real deal, and would be incomparably fierce and powerful.

"In the previous Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had tried our best and narrowly squeezed into the top eight. However, in the Best of Eight fight, we were defeated in the first round... leading to us getting the bottom-most score," said Dean Tai Cang with a bitter laugh. Being able to obtain such a ranking was due the that bunch of little fellows risking their lives in battle just to obtain the qualifications of the top eight groups, something that didn't lose the face of their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Serious expressions appeared on the faces of Mu Chen and the rest. The Great Spiritual Academy Tournament had yet to start, and yet, they were able to smell the cruel and vicious fights and the miserable battles that would occur there.

With a wave of his sleeve, ten glowing shadows shot from Dean Tai Cang towards Mu Chen and the rest, before coming to a stop before them. As they swept their gazes over, they noticed that they were transparent plaques radiating with light. As rays of brilliance blossomed from their surfaces, they radiated with strange fluctuations, with the two words "Academy Plaque" etched on their surfaces.

"This is the Academy Plaque of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament. Everyone take one. According to the rules, every group will be allocated a basic amount of points. Once a group gets defeated by another, the winner will be able to obtain half of the points from the

loser's 'Academy Plaque'. When the points on a group's 'Academy pPlaque' can't be deducted anymore, they will be eliminated, and will lose the qualifications to contend for the final fight."

The eyes of Mu Chen and the rest instantly contracted as they extended their hands and grabbed hold of the Academy Plaques.

"Furthermore, while the points of your Academy Plaques are ranked in the Top 16 in the Tournament, information about your team will be transmitted to everyone's Academy Plaques. Even your location and direction of heading will be indicated, causing you to be the target of everyone there."

In a deep voice, Dean Tai Cang continued talking. "However, being in the Top 16 allows you to possess a benefit. That is the conclusion of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament. Once more that half of the top 16 groups ignites their Academy Plaques, the elimination will commence. At that instant, the top 8 groups within the rankings will be promoted to the final fight!"

Hearing this, the eyes of Mu Chen and the rest contracted slightly as they thought, The top 16 groups actually have such a huge benefit...

As Dean Tai Cang's voice rang out, the entire great hall sunk into a momentary bout of silence. Clearly, all of them were reeling in the shock of the cruel and vicious atmosphere that was brought by the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament.

Genius-level figures from various places would come together to stage a heaven-shocking battle.

Dean Tai Cang slowly exhaled, before standing up. Looking towards Mu Chen, Shen Cangsheng and the rest with serious expressions on their faces, he gave a faint smile and said in a soft voice, "These are the rules of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament. I've already said everything I need to say. What's next will be up to you guys. Everyone from our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy will be paying attention to you guys, and hoping for the arrival of the final fight, where we'll be able to see the group of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

"At that time, our entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy will cheer and shout for you!"

"This time, please fight for our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy!"

Shooting a look at each other, Mu Chen, Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong and the rest took a deep breath. Looking towards Dean Tai Cang, they cupped their hands fiercely, before low and deep voices resounded across the entire great hall.

"We'll fight to the death for the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy!"

Chapter 453: Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, Begins!

The last two days passed in the blink of an eye.

When the wisp of the morning sun split apart the darkness and illuminated the world, the atmosphere within the enormous Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had instantly turned into a fervert state. Countless students had faces brimming with emotion and excitement, with the entire academy brimming with an upbeat, excited atmosphere. That's because today was the start of the greatest event for the countless Spiritual Academies in the Great Thousand Worlds. Today was the official start of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament.

This was the greatest official competition for all of the Spiritual Academies, and the gathering point for countless geniuses.

Only the people that were able to distinguish themselves here would be the true ones with outstanding talent amongst the countless students out there!

Although the youths participating in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament couldn't represent all of the youths within the Great Thousand Worlds, there's absolutely no doubt towards the quality of the champions that were able to distinguish themselves from all of the youths present there. That's because there was no lack of champions of the past Great Spiritual Academy Tournaments becoming famous Super-level existences within the Great Thousand Worlds.

As the warm sun rose high into the sky, the atmosphere within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy turned even more scorching hot than the sun beating down a from above. If one swept one's gaze out, black seas of humans had filled the inner regions of the academy, with even the higher levels of the academy having come out in full force. All of their faces had unconcealable excitement as they took in the scene. Everyone present was very clear that this Great Spiritual Academy Tournament was extremely important to the future of their Spiritual

Academy.

Within a house at the headquarters of the Luo Goddess Association, Mu Chen arranged his robes, one that was a green shade. Pressed against the thin body of the youth, he appeared even more capable and experienced. Present on his chest was the insignia of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, a pine tree standing tall on a mountain peak, bold and upright. Present on the mountain peak was the shadow of a sea dragon, spreading its wings as it seized the heavens and earth in its grasp.

This was the academy uniform of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. However, it was extremely rare for a situation as solemn and serious as today. Nevertheless, since they were participating in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament as representatives of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, they naturally had to appear formal and well-knit.

With his slender physique and handsome face, Mu Chen's pair of black eyes appeared like the starry sky. Dressed in his soft, green robes, the youth appeared especially dashing, more than sufficient to cause the eyes of anyone that saw him to light up, and God-knows how many young girls would have their stirrings of love surface within their hearts.

After looking up and down, before feeling adequately satisfied, Mu Chen opened the door and walked out.

The members of the Luo Goddess Association had long packed the outside of the courtyard. Seeing Mu Chen, who had pushed the doors open, their spirits instantly flared up to a fervert level, as gazes filled with worship and admiration shot over. The majority of the members of the Luo Goddess Association were former Freshmen of the same batch as Mu Chen. Initially, they had followed along Mu Chen and Luo Li when they had created the Luo Goddess Association, allowing for them to receive much less bullying and abuse by the Seniors. As of now, they were able to gain that much fame and prestige within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy all thanks to the bloody battles that Mu Chen had engaged time and time again. Therefore, all of the members of the Luo Goddess Association had worship and admiration stemming from their hearts

towards him.

Sending a big smile towards the large bunch of fellows outside, Mu Chen was just about to say something, before the doors of the next room creaked open. In the next moment, as a wisp of sunlight extended into the cracks of the door, a snow-white, slender leg had slowly extended towards the wisps of sunlight.

All of the gazes present instantly turned to look at the young girl that had walked out from the room. For a moment, the frenzied clamoring abruptly turned silent as eyeballs started to gradually grow larger, and a shadow of astonishment even flashed within the eyes of Mu Chen.

It was naturally Luo Li that had walked out from the room. After changing her robes, the clear and cold black skirt that she usually wore was similarly replaced by a green-coloured academy skirt. Being exceedingly figure-hugging, it accentuated the slender and voluptuous curves of the young girl in great detail. Her slender, snow-white neck was as graceful as a swan, while her outstanding chest was accentuated by the blouse to an exceedingly perfect degree. Her little waist that could be grasped with a single arm, her ramrod straight and slender legs...

Her black hair that was usually let down had now been tied into a ponytail. The ponytail was neatly tied up, quietly resting on the slender waist of the young girl.

Gently standing in the wisp of sunlight, the young girl blinked her clear, glass-like beautiful eyes, while a wisp of an arc appeared on her red little mouth, causing the hearts of countless people to skip a beat.

Mu Chen stared unblinkingly at the young girl that had caused no small amount of shock and astonishment in him. At this moment, Luo Li didn't appear as cold and indifferent as before. Her tied up ponytail caused this young girl to display the youth and vitality that she was supposed to have. Such a beautiful scene appeared to have dimmed the sunlight.

"Hey, what are you looking at?" Being stared by countless gazes, Luo Li's beautiful face turned a shade of pink, especially after seeing the unblinking appearance of Mu Chen. Unable to bear it, she bit her lips,

before blushingly speaking, while lowering her head to look at her outfit, "Is it ugly?"

"My saliva is dripping out."

Wiping his mouth, Mu Chen walked towards the young girl. Extending his hand, he slightly bowed his body, before speaking with a grin, "My Queen, your knight's waiting for you."

Luo Li's the future Queen of the Luo God Clan. However, in Mu Chen's heart, this girl was also his Queen.

"Such a bold knight like you will be punished in our Luo God Clan," replied Luo Li with a gentle smile. Nevertheless, despite what she was saying, she gently extended her slender little hand, lightly grasping onto the warm hand as an arc appeared on her lips.

Roar!

Seeing the handsome, tall and straight youth and the absolutely perfect, young girl with a sweet smile, the members of the Luo Goddess Association instantly cheered out, their faces brimming with excitement. The young male and female before their eyes were the pride of their Luo Goddess Association.

"Let's go."

Sending a faint smile towards Luo Li, with a move, Mu Chen and Luo Li transformed into rays of light, shooting off into the distance. Behind them, countless members of the Luo Goddess Association rose into the air, hiding the skies and covering the earth as they followed along.

Within the central-most location of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, the skies and the ground were already covered by seas of humans. When Mu Chen and the group arrived, the seas of humans instantly split apart, creating a pathway for the dazzling young male and female to pass through.

Within the sky filled by the sea of humans was an empty patch. Upon the arrival of the two, Mu Chen and Luo could see Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong, Su Xuan and the others that have arrived earlier and were

waiting for them, dressed similarly in academy uniforms. Standing tall and straight, with the ladies and their lovable appearances, the group had now become the most dazzling image within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

The appearance of Mu Chen and Luo Li had induced earth-shattering sounds of cheering. At this moment, they, who were representing the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy to fight, were clearly the true heroes in everyone's hearts and minds.

"Sorry for being late."

Said Mu Chen as he sent a smile towards Shen Cangsheng and the others.

Shen Cangsheng and the rest gave a smile in return, before turning their gazes, without prior agreement, towards Luo Li standing beside Mu Chen, which caused their eyes to slightly light up, even causing Su Xuan to feel slightly astonished. At this moment, the young girl truly appeared excessively eye-catching. The future Queen of the Luo God Clan seemed to have made all of her splendor blossom out.

At this moment, Dean Tai Cang, as well as the five Heavenly Seated Elders and other Elders, with even Ling Xi, appeared in the sky. Looking towards the young males and females standing tall and straight in the air, Dean Tai Cang couldn't help having a smile appear on his face. In the next moment, his face gradually turned solemn, while the fervent atmosphere within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy slowly started to quieten down.

"Students, they are the most outstanding students of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. From today onwards, they will be stepping into a harsh and cruel battlefield to fight for the honor and glory of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. They are doing so to protect the pride of our academy in being one of the five Great Academies. Therefore, they are the heroes of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy."

Dean Tai Cang's powerful voice resounded across the entire region, causing the faces of countless students to turn red, the blood within their

bodies surging and boiling as they looked, brimming with emotion at the ten figures standing in the skies.

"Therefore, regardless of victory or defeat, they're our heroes!"

Dean Tai Cang gave a faint smile, before slowly bending his body towards the ten youthful figures standing in the sky. Behind him, faint smiles appeared on the faces of the various Elders as they slightly bent over, giving their blessing towards this group of youths that was going into battle for the sake of the glory and honor of their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Whoosh!

An uniformed sound rang out across the entire region as countless students slowly bent over, their heads lower. The faces of those young and immature faces were filled with passion. Youths were supposed to be filled with hot blood. The scene occuring before them caused them to wish they could do their utmost to train and cultivate, hoping to be able to obtain such distinction one day in the future.

In the air, as they took in the scene before them, hot blood surged and gushed within the hearts of Mu Chen, Shen Cangsheng and the group. Sending a smile towards one another, they slowly bent over towards the countless students before them.

"It's time to group up," said Dean Tai Cang with a faint smile.

With a gentle wave of their hands, figures started to converge behind the backs of Mu Chen and Shen Cangsheng. Standing naturally behind Mu Chen's back was Luo Li, Xu Huang, Zhao Qingshan, as well as Mu Fengyang; while Li Xuantong, Su Xuan, He Yao and Yang Lin stood behind Shen Cangsheng.

These two groups represented the greatest strength of this current batch of students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

"Prepare the transmission Spiritual Array."

Hearing the roar of Dean Tai Cang, Lin Xi strode forward. With a raise of her hand, a thousand metre wide glowing pillar descended from the sky.

Rays of Spiritual Energy light gushed out from within the glowing pillar, while a gigantic transmission Spiritual Array could be faintly discerned as it formed, with boundless Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiating from within.

After arranging the Spiritual Array, Ling Xi walked towards Mu Chen. Sending a faint smile towards Mu Chen and Luo Li, she softly said, "Be careful."

"Please be at ease, Elder Sister Ling Xi." replied Mu Chen with a smile as he nodded his head.

Ling Xi looked towards the handsome youth before her, That handsome face, those clear and bright eyes, that ramrod straight back. Unknowingly, he had captured God-knows how many affections of young girls. This caused her to shake her head, before speaking out, "The transmission Spiritual Array has already been arranged. Prepare to make your move."

Hearing that, Mu Chen took a deep breath, before fiercely nodding his head.

Shooting a look at Mu Chen, Shen Cangsheng took the lead, walking forward, before he said with a smile, "Mu Chen, we'll take the lead first. Let's meet in the great Tournament! I hope that we'll both be able to enter the final fight!"

"Let's go!"

As he said those words, Shen Cangsheng gave a wave of his hand. A prideful and disdainful look surfaced on his firm and resolute face. Shooting forward, he took the lead, bringing along Li Xuantong and the others of his group as they shot across the horizon. Finally, under the countless emotional and excited gazes, they rushed into the gigantic transmission Spiritual Array. As rays of brilliance gushed out, their figures completely disappeared within it.

"It's time for us to go, too!"

Mu Chen gave a low roar, causing the eyes of Luo Li, Xu Huang, Zhao Qingshan and Mu Fengyang to contract. The five quickly shot out, rapidly

following behind Shen Cangsheng and the other four as they rushed into the transmission Spiritual Array.

At this instant, the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had completely entered a fervent and frenzied state.

Looking at the frenzied Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, Dean Tai Cang deeply exhaled. Looking towards the gradually disappearing transmission Spiritual Array, he muttered, "It's up to you guys, now. I hope that we'll be able to see the groups of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy before the start of the final fight..."

Chapter 454: A Storm Gathers

While Mu Chen, Shen Cangsheng and the others had entered the transmission Spiritual Array, similar scenes like that were occuring in the countless large and small Spiritual Academies out there, with the prestige of the fervent clamoring shocking the heavens and shaking the earth.

Saint Spiritual Academy

Stretches of great halls were majestically standing straight. At this time, within the most central location of this stretch of the city was a holy, white-coloured, vast, public square, while black seas of humans filling its four corners, with clamoring noises coming from them that rushed towards the sky.

The central position of the public square appeared exceedingly empty, with only 20 figures standing in it. Dressed in white robes, the insignia of the Saint Spiritual Academy was emblazoned on their chests. At this moment, they were the most eye-catching existences in this region.

A youth with his hands behind his back stood ramrod straight at the leftmost position of the group. Possessing an extremely handsome face, a gentle, warm smile like the sun was present on it. The smile was calm and easygoing, gentle and refined, with God-knows how many young girls turned absent minded in its presence.

"Haha, Captain Ji Xuan. Looks like you're still brimming with popularity." Behind the youth stood a similarly aged young male, who was grinning as he spoke. "The other three captains might be extremely unhappy. They've been fretting non-stop about you being able to obtain a position similar to them with your status as a Freshman. From what I can see, if not for you, Captain, without haggling and quibbling with them about this, I'm really quite curious as to exactly which of our four most elite figures of our Saint Spiritual Academy is the stronger one." When the youth by the name of Ji Xuan heard about it, he gave a faint smile and replied, "Mu Feng, what the hell are you talking about? We're all representing the Saint Spiritual Academy to participate in battle. At that

time, we will have to rely on one another, which means that internal strife is a no-no. Furthermore, they're Seniors, something that I naturally don't possess."

"Captain is magnanimous."

The youth by the name of Mu Feng grinned and gave a big thumbs-up, before smiling while saying, "However, about the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, I've heard that the various great Spiritual Academies have sent their most elite students. Therefore, the batch participating in this Great Spiritual Academy Tournament would be the most competitive. Captain, do you have any confidence in winning?"

Shooting a look at him, Ji Xuan gave a laugh, before saying in a soft voice, "You don't have to worry about not being able to show yourselves in the final fight, if you follow me. However, I hope that when that time comes, you'll follow my orders, so as to obtain the most perfect run. If not, for the sake of the overall situation, I might not be able to talk much about friendship with everyone. I hope you can forgive me for this."

Although his voice was soft, it contained an indescribable confidence. This wasn't false bravado, but capabilities that he truly possessed. Although he was one of the four great Holy Sons within the batch of students from the Saint Spiritual Academy, he was the first student within the past few years to obtain the title of a Holy Son with his status as a Freshman.

Holy Son. That represented the greatest accomplishment a student could obtain within the Saint Spiritual Academy. Of the ones that were able to rise to that position, none of them weren't people of outstanding talent.

Upon noticing the smile on Ji Xuan face,an undetectable stiffness appeared on the faces of Mu Feng and the other three group members for an instant, before replying with a smile. Although they were Seniors of the Saint Spiritual Academy, none of them dared to show any bit of arrogance in front of this Freshman, Ji Xuan. That's because all of them were all too clear about the methods of the former.

This was a youth that was one year younger than them and appeared to

be cheerful and gentle. Yet, the methods he employed were truly cruel and vicious.

There were only four positions of the Holy Sons of the Saint Spiritual Academy. For one to be able to ascend to that position, one would first have to defeat one of the existing Holy Sons and snatch the title away. That was how Ji Xuan's Holy Son status came to be. During that process, the Holy Son that was replaced by him was disabled during the match for the title of the Holy Son. Furthermore, he had suffered serious injuries, having yet to fully recover, even as of now. The previous Holy Son of the Saint Spiritual Academy had landed in an extremely miserable state now.

"Captain, it seems that you've been searching for information about the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy? That's a broken-ass Spiritual Academy that's almost about to get kicked out of the five Great Academies. How can they enter your sight, Captain?" With a smile, Mu Feng changed the topic with a question.

"Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy..." Raising his head, Ji Xuan looked towards a certain direction, and replied with a faint smile, "My only opponent's there."

"Oh?" Both Mu Feng and the other three group members instantly gawked.

"According to the information I've received, he's doing especially well in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Haha, truly worthy of the fellow that has defeated me many times in the Spiritual Road..." said Ji Xuan with a gentle smile, yet a sharp and incisive fierceness brimmed within his black pupils.

Noticing this, the faces of Mu Feng and the other group members slightly changed. All of them knew how frightening Ji Xuan could be. After hearing these words, it seemed as if his opponent was actually a Freshman that had entered the Spiritual Road at the same time as the former. Furthermore, that person's actually able to cause a person like Ji Xuan to suffer losses?

"However, it's a pity that the final winner, will still be me..." said Ji Xuan

as he shook his head. Looking across the horizon, he crossed his hands behind his back, while saying with a smile, "However, what happened in the Spiritual Road were only little fights and scuffles. It may be assumed that I'll be able to bump into him while in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament. I really want to see exactly what level that Blood Calamity of the Spiritual Road has progress until now."

"This is truly interesting... however... Mu Chen, I hope that you won't disappoint me too much. If not, it would be too uninteresting..."

Boom!

As clock-like chimes resounded, the transmission Spiritual Array in the centre of the public square furiously erupted with dazzling rays of brilliance.

At this instant, the eyes of the four groups in the public square instantly narrowed. At the heads of the three groups to Ji Xuan's right, three youths slowly opened their eyes, faint indifference was present within as they looked forward. In the next instant, without speaking so much as a single word, they strode forward, bringing along their group members forward, before stopping right before the transmission Spiritual Array.

Bringing his group forward, Ji Xuan sent a faint smile towards the Captains of the other three groups that have also come to a stop beside the transmission Spiritual Array.

"Ji Xuan, the goal of our Saint Spiritual Academy is to occupy four positions in the Top Eight. I hope that you won't fall behind." Of the three people, the youth with an ordinary-looking face, yet possessing a mouth as sharp and incisive as a knife, sent a smile towards Ji Xuan as he said those words. In the next instant, raising his leg, he walked into the transmission Spiritual Array. As rays of brilliance blossomed, his figure immediately disappeared within.

The other two groups appeared uncommunicative, bringing along chilling auras that were rising from their bodies as they walked into the transmission Spiritual Array.

"It really is too early to talk about who will fall behind."

Looking at the figures that had disappeared within the transmission Spiritual Array, Ji Xuan gave a gentle flick of his sleeves as an amused smile curled up at the corner of his mouth. Bringing along his group members, he walked into the transmission Spiritual Array. As rays of brilliance blossomed, they disappeared within under the countless attentive gazes shooting towards them.

...

Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy

Compared to the atmosphere within the other Spiritual Academies, the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy was clearly filled with the warbling of orioles and swallows, with the lovable voices of countless girls filling the region, causing even the air to appear somewhat soft and gentle.

On the majestic platform covered with fresh flowers and it surroundings, one could see, with a single gaze, that they were covered with exquisite figures as countless girls crowded around, causing fragrances to blossom in the air. At this moment, the gazes of countless girls were filled with different feverish shades as they looked towards the front-most position on the platform, where a slender figure was present, attracting everyone's attention.

That was an extremely dazzling image of a beautiful girl. Dressed in golden armor, her armor was soft and supple, tightly hugging her lovable body, displaying her exquisite physique without the slightest omission. Her snow-white neck, her voluptuous chest, her slender and willowy waist, as well as the smooth and slender legs below her battle skirt... every aspect of her appeared exceedingly beautiful and perfect.

She still possessed an appearance as if the Spiritual Qi of the world had gathered around her, with her hands as soft as grass, her skin supple and smooth, resulting in a beauty that was unmatched by anything. An arc brimming with confidence and pride slightly curled at the corners of her red little lips, with her eyebrows slightly raised, revealing a sliver of her heroic Spiritual Aura. Her valiant and formidable-looking appearance made her appear like a goddess of war that had descended from the

heavens, with everything being controlled within her grasp.

This girl was just like a phoenix, grandiose, prideful, confident and never ever bowing down to any other person.

Such a girl possessed an extremely unique form of charisma, one that was extremely attractive to not only males, but even females alike. In the surroundings of the platform, countless girls cast scorching gazes of varying shades over to her, showing clearly how prominent it was.

Although there were similar outstanding girls standing beside her, compared to the former, they appeared to be fireflies basking under the brilliance of the moon, their rays of brilliance being completely outshone by her.

Under the myriad of attentive gazes cast over, the girl slightly raised her lovable face, while some past memories flashed within her mind. Those were of the terminus of the Spiritual Road, where various kings had contended for the crown. People that were able to reach that stage were basically Genius-level figures that were extremely hard to come by. At the final place of the Spiritual Crown, it wasn't just her alone that was there, with a number of opponents that were extremely hard to deal with, with Ji Xuan being one of them.

At that place, she had originally planned to duel with that Ji Xuan. However, if she did so, she would have lost the best opportunity she had to snatch the Spiritual Crown. However, just when she had slightly hesitated then, a black lovable figure shot past her, obstructing the path of Ji Xuan, before engaging in an extremely intense fight that resulted in both parties being seriously injured.

Her path to obtaining the Spiritual Crown had been swept clean of obstacles.

Finally, snatching away the Spiritual Crown, her beautiful eyes lit up with brightness as she looked towards the black-dressed girl that was mutually injured in her fight with Ji Xuan. That girl possessed an absolutely beautiful appearance, her glass-like eyes being clear to the point of causing people to get intoxicated. Even while she was mutually

wounded in her fight with Ji Xuan, her calm and tranquil expression showed not a single sign of change or fluctuation.

This was the first time that Wen Qingxuan had seen a girl of her age that showed a level of appearance that rivaled her own. This made her... extremely happy.

Afterwards, she found out that the girl was named Luo Li, and she had gone to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Humm!

Right before her, the gigantic transmission Spiritual Array abruptly erupted with dazzling rays of brilliance.

The rays of brilliance caused Wen Qingshan to regain her clarity. In the next moment, a sweet smile appeared on her face, one which caused the world to lose its colours in contrast with it. Gently moving her fingers to and fro, disregarding the shrieks and shouts that had hid the skies and covered the earth, she strode into the rays of brilliance. At the same time, she gently clenched her hands, while a smile appeared at the corner of her mouth that looked lovable and full of confidence.

Luo Li, you are mine.

...

At the same time.

Martial Spiritual Academy...

Azure Heavens Spiritual Academy...

And the other peak Spiritual Academies that possessed extremely powerful strength...

Transmission Spiritual Arrays present there successively erupted in dazzling rays of brilliance, before extremely powerful groups disappeared within the rays of brilliance amidst the countless fervent, cheering voices in their surroundings.

They will appear on the battlefield of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament!

Where talents as numerous as the clouds in the skies would converge, as many great heroes will vie for supremacy and prestige!

The gazes of countess Spiritual Academies would be focused there.

Chapter 455: The Continent of Ruins

The rays of brilliance radiating from the transmission Spiritual Array filled the eyes of Mu Chen and the others, even causing the sensation of dizziness due to the transmission. Nevertheless, it was fortunate that this bout of dizziness didn't last too long, before they felt the spatial fluctuations around them starting to gradually turn stable, while the dazzling rays of brilliance before them rapidly dissipated away.

The transmission was about to end.

Obviously not newbies without a shred of experience, Mu Chen and the other four instantly revolved their Spiritual Energies to protect their bodies. In this foreign battlefield, they needed to maintain their vigilance. If they were to fail to such an easily covered issue, they would truly lose too much face.

As Mu Chen and the other four got themselves ready, the rays of brilliance before their eyes completely dissipated away. As their vision turned bright once again, a foreign world appeared right before their eyes.

Before them was a world that filled their eyes, with vast lands stretching endlessly across the horizon. Nevertheless, the world was covered in unfathomably deep chasms. These chasms didn't appear to be formed by nature, but by some kind of frightening war, which had smashed the world up like that.

This entire world had turned into a scene of desolation, with the air giving off a scent of the ancient antiquity, making everything clearly appear old and ancient.

This is the Continent of Ruins? It is also the battlefield of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament!

Mu Chen swept his gaze far and wide, before quickly retracting back. At this moment, they seemed to have appeared on the top of a giant cliff tens of thousands of metres high. This giant cliff appeared like a large mountain. Furthermore, they weren't the only ones on top of it...

As Mu Chen and the other four swept their gazes out, they noticed pillars of light continuously descending from the skies onto the giant cliff. As the pillars of light dissipated, group after group appeared in the air. In the short span of time that didn't exceed a few minutes, the entire giant cliff was unexpectedly filled with hundreds of groups.

Without prior consultation, the members of each group that instantly appeared leaned closer to one another, before casting vigilant and guarded gazes as they sized up their surroundings, while vast and boundless Spiritual Energies rose around their bodies. Spiritual Weapons brimming with Spiritual Energies even appeared in the hands of some people as they started to protect their groups.

Although there was not a single trace of indication where a group would appear, there were already close to a thousand people on this giant cliff, yet no clamoring sounds could clearly be heard ringing out. Instead, a strange silence was present as gazes swept by each other, all of them brimming with caution, as well as hostility.

"Looks like Shen Cangsheng's group has split up with us." Moving close to Mu Chen, Luo Li spoke in a soft voice, since she did not notice the figures of Shen Cangsheng and the other four in their vicinity.

Mu Chen gently nodded his head in reply. With a clench of his hand, the Academy Plaque sparkling with gem-like rays of brilliance appeared within. At this moment, a number "10" had surfaced on it. This should be the basic points that they get for this Great Spiritual Academy Tournament.

"When every group enters the battlefield, they will get 10 points," said Mu Chen as he sent a smile towards Luo Li and the other three.

"What should we do now?" asked Xu Huang as he looked towards Mu Chen, as the latter was now the Captain. Clearly, they should listen to the command and decision of their Captain.

"Do we need to leave this place? With so many groups converged here, I'm afraid that it'll not remain peaceful," asked Zhao Qingshan in a low voice. He could faintly discern the gradually rising tension in the

atmosphere on this giant cliff. Quite a few people were shooting hostile gazes as they continued to size up other people. In here, other than the groups of their own Spiritual Academy, every other group out there was their enemy. That's because only by obtaining the points from their enemies would they be able to distinguish themselves from everyone here.

Mu Chen surveyed his surroundings. He could also see the greed rising within the eyes of some of the groups. In the next moment, with a faint smile, he said, "No need to get impatient. In such a place, the big fish will eat the small fish, while the small fish will eat the dirt. This is how the rules are. If you want to increase your points, you can only snatch it from other groups, and we're not exempted from that. As for here, it's quite a good place to start."

"You plan to take action?!" exclaimed Mu Fengyang in astonishment. Clearly, he didn't expect for Mu Chen to take action so quickly.

"We're the only group here from the five Great Academies," said Luo Li in a soft voice. As her limpid, beautiful eyes swept across the groups present here, she said, "There are a number of groups that come from some large Spiritual Academies, with those groups possessing quite good strength. As for the others, they're insufficient to warrant any concern. Nevertheless, we have to be careful on the off-chance that some other groups might secretly collaborate to deal with us."

"According to a usual situation, our chances of victory are extremely high."

Mu Chen smiled, nodding his head in agreement. Looking at the tense atmosphere present, he could see some of the more stronger groups already unable to control their impatience. Their greedy gazes had already started to deviate towards those weaker groups. Clearly, the taut atmosphere here was quickly about to shatter apart, and when that happens...

The cruel and vicious massacres of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament will be completely on its way.

Mu Chen took in a deep breath of air, seemingly being able to smell the

scent of blood that was perfused into the air. At this moment, a cold and fierce glint had started to gradually awaken in those black pupils of his. The originally handsome face of the youth had an additional shade of asterism. Compared to his gentle nature in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, the current him had clearly turned somewhat different from the him of then.

Beside him, Xu Huang and the other two could also sense this faint change in Mu Chen, causing a faint shock to shake their hearts.

Looking at Mu Chen's face with her beautiful eyes, Luo Li gave a smile. At this moment, the current Mu Chen gave her extremely familiar feelings, since the latter always had such an appearance while in the Spiritual Road, being as cold and sharp as a knife's edge. It was merely him being in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy which had suppressed this incisive edge of Mu Chen. However, at this very instant, the youth which had caused the Bloody Calamity in the Spiritual Road and started to completely release the things that he had suppressed...

"What are you all doing?!"

Just as Mu Chen and the other four were coldly observing the gradual transformation of the surrounding atmosphere, all of a sudden, a furious roar rang out not too far away from them.

Every single gaze instantly turned around towards its source, only to see a group having faces of shock and anger as they looked towards a group that had surrounded them. Sneers were present on the faces of the latter five, their eyes filled with greed as they stared at the former five. Clearly this group had already started to take action.

"Hehe. What's the matter? Hand over your Academy Plaque obediently, alright? It can only be your unlucky day to meet us, the "Barbarian Spiritual Academy." At the front of the group, a youth gave his reply with a sneer as boundless Spiritual Energy radiated from him. Unexpectedly, his strength was in the realm of Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase.

"In your dreams!" Ashen expressions appeared on the faces of the group surrounded by the "Barbarian Spiritual Academy" as they fiercely shouted

back in reply.

"Action!"

With a sneer, the group from the Barbarian Spiritual Academy didn't continue spouting any useless words. Looking at the group before them, whose Captain hadn't even reached the realm of Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase, they were simply a free gift of points. Letting them go would truly be something that the heavens wouldn't tolerate.

Bang!

Boundless Spiritual Energies erupted out as the group from the Barbarian Spiritual Academy rushed forward. Ferocious attacks gushed out like a flood, drowning the unlucky group within their onslaught.

As Spiritual Energies erupted out, tremors shook the hearts of all the groups present on the giant cliff. In the next instant, the greed within their eyes gushed out, before the taut atmosphere was seemingly shattered apart as hundreds of Spiritual Energies furiously erupted out, churning and surging as they rushed towards the heavens, making an absolute mess in the skies.

Bang! Bang!

Chaotic battles erupted all around, as groups rushed forward like ferocious tigers. Not rushing against those seemingly thorny groups, they chose to head towards those Spiritual Academy groups that were somewhat easy to deal with, without any prior consideration.

Compared to the rest of the groups, Mu Chen and the other four stood by the sidelines, his gaze appearing indifferent as he looked towards the chaotic battlefield before him. Faint flashes of light sparkled in his eyes as he slowly swept his gaze out like a hunter. However, despite doing so, he did not choose to take action and join in the shocking snatching of points that was ongoing now.

"We're not going to take action?"

"Snatching will waste too much time," replied Mu Chen with a faint smile. "Wait a bit more. The cleansing hasn't ended yet."

"Oh?" The eyes of Xu Huang, Zhao Qingshan and Mu Fengyang narrowed, before they smacked their lips in excitement, turning their gazes without prior agreement towards those groups that were mowing down others with irresistible force in this region. With regards to the rest, these groups appeared rather tyrannical, with the Spiritual Energy fluctuations coming off some of the group Captains to be even being stronger than others.

Nevertheless, Xu Huang and the other two weren't afraid of them. In their group, Luo Li had already passed her Human Body Disaster, with Mu Chen being even more terrifying. Although his cultivation was at the realm of Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase, which was the same as them, the combat prowess and capabilities he possessed would cause even experts who had passed their Human Body Disaster to pale in front of him.

Mu Chen maintained a calm and tranquil expression as his group didn't move a single inch. This was clearly in extreme disharmony with the exceedingly chaotic fights happening all around. Perhaps, due to the other groups being able to sense how thorny his group was, there was unexpectedly no groups that casted their greedy gazes towards Mu Chen's group.

Naturally, Mu Chen knew that this was just temporary. When this first wave of cleansing has ended, even if no one took action against them, he would take action against others. In the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, other than the group from his academy, everyone else was an enemy.

As the combat zone rapidly shrunk, group after group was badly beaten and bruised before being tossed out, half of the points on their Academy Plaques being violently snatched away by the victors. Everyone that was tossed out appeared exceedingly miserable, their faces appearing ashen as they looked with incomparable rage and fury towards those powerful groups that were tyrannically rushing around.

"The strongest six groups should come from large Spiritual Academies, with two of them actually coming from the same academy. They've been

collaborated with each other to deal with the other groups. Of these six groups, their Captains possess strength greater than Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase. However, they have yet to pass their Human Body Disasters. There's a possibility that they have attempted to do so, but had failed in the end."

Luo Li's beautiful eyes were similiarly cast towards the exceedingly chaotic combat zone before her. Among the groups present there, there were six groups that appeared the most dazzling of them all. They should be considered as the strongest groups there, with quite a few groups suffering defeat in their hands, the points being violently snatched away. Within these six groups, the two groups coming from the same academy were the strongest amongst them, even causing extreme dread in the other four groups towards them.

Xu Huang, Zhao Qingshan and Mu Fengyang cast their excited gazes towards Mu Chen as they rubbed their hands together.

"Since they're the strongest, we'll go find them first. Since the small fishes have eaten, it's time for us to eat them!"

Giving a lazy stretch, Mu Chen took a slow step out. As he did so, cautious and vigilant gazes immediately shot over from within the exceedingly chaotic combat zone.

Chapter 456: Rankings

When Mu Chen walked out, the groups within the region that still possessed fighting strength immediately cast cautious and vigilant gazes over. Those gazes were filled with hostility, with the densest ones coming from the six strongest groups. In fact, upon spotting the insignias emblazoned on the chests of Mu Chen and his group, they knew that this group came from one of the five Great Academies, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Although the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had waned over the past few years, and was ranked bottom of the five Great Academies, with even some elite Spiritual Academies having exceeded it in depth and strength, regardless of those factors, they were one of the five Great Academies. No matter how starved a tiger was, its might still existed. Therefore, even if it was temporary, there wasn't anyone that could recklessly disregard such a tyrannical group.

From their gazes, one could tell that they didn't care too much about Mu Chen. Although his strength at Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase could be considered as formidable, he didn't possess the capability to cause dread in them. What they truly dreaded was the green-robed girl standing behind him. From what they could sense from this Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy group, the absolutely beautiful girl should be their strongest member, and might have even passed her Human Body Disaster.

"Haha. Looks like the squandering is over." Looking towards the groups that had already completed their plundering and had filled themselves to the brim, Mu Chen gave a faint smile as he spoke out to them.

"What do you want?" At this moment, the two groups from the same Spiritual Academy had already gathered together. The tyrannical Spiritual Energy fluctuations rippling from the two Captains were clearly much stronger than an ordinary Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase expert. As their eyes slightly sparkled, they replied with a sneer. "What's the matter? Are you trying to be the oriole that stalks the unknowing mantis

that's stalking the cicada?"

Hearing their words, Mu Chen gave a gentle laugh, before giving a sincere nod of his head.

Clearly not expecting such a straightforward reply from Mu Chen, the two Captains immediately gawked. However, their faces quickly turned ice-cold, before speaking out with a gloomy shadow in their eyes. "Don't assume that we'll be afraid of you just because you're from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. It ain't that easy to use us like that. If you're truly impatient, you might not necessarily be able to eat us up. Furthermore, there's still our friends from other Spiritual Academies here. Heh, on the off-chance that we're mutually injured, I'm afraid that it'll only benefit other people."

"I'll advise you to open your eyes wide. Don't eat more you can chew!"

Chilling intent gushed out from the eyes of the members from the two groups. Although their two Captains have failed in their Human Body Disaster, their strength far surpassed any ordinary Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase. Although they weren't a match for that green-dressed girl individually, it wasn't hard for them to obstruct her if they collaborated. At that time, the other eight members should be able to maintain an indistinguishable fight with the other Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase group members.

Once the two parties were entangled together and both suffered injuries, the other groups would definitely shoot coveting gazes over. At that time, they did not believe that the group from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy group would not get flustered.

The eyes of the four other strong groups standing not far away started to sparkle in various shades of glow, with sneers appearing at the corners of their mouth. There were even some people that crossed their hands before their chests as they looked with gazes of ridicule towards Mu Chen and his group. They had already started noticing Mu Chen's group when they had proceeded to coldly observe them snatch away the points of the other weak groups. The fame and reputation of the Northern Heavens Spiritual

Academy had truly inspired a slight dread within them. Nevertheless, after judging the strength possessed by the group from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, quiet sighs of relief rang out within their hearts.

One person that had passed her Human Body Disaster coupled with four Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phases. Although they were considered to have the strongest line-up present in this region, it was unfortunate that they wouldn't be able to devour all of the groups there, and it was impossible to let them hand over their points obediently.

Furthermore, that brat from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's really too stupid. Walking out like that and speaking with a tone that had put him at odds with all of the other groups present there and caused everyone's hearts to be filled with unhappiness. At that time, if they were to get mutually injured with the two groups, they might be able to truly get to enjoy the comfortable feeling of straddling the head of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Behind Mu Chen's back, Xu Huang, Zhao Qingshan and Mu Fengyang had also heard those warming and threatening words from the two groups. After noticing the mocking gazes coming from the surroundings few groups, anger furiously rose within their eyes. However, just as they were about to head forwards, they were stopped by a wave of Mu Chen's hand.

"Looks like they're worried that our stomachs are too small..."

With a gentle laugh, Mu Chen shook his head. In the next instant, his forehead started to slightly wrinkle as he looked towards the two groups, while a cold and fierce glint started to gush out from within his eyes. "However, you're truly overestimating us on the point that we'll get patted to death after eating the little lives of the few of you."

"What did you say?"

"You're looking for death, brat!"The faces of the two group Captains instantly turned ashen as their gazes turned into ones of ill-intent, with Spiritual Energy surging around their bodies.

Looking towards the two agitated groups, a smile cracked open on Mu

Chen's face, revealing his pearly-white teeth. At this moment, waves of chilling air gushed out from his mouth, before he proceeded to take a step forward. With a whoosh that seemed akin to the crack of thunder, his body mysteriously disappeared from where he stood.

Whoosh!

Seemingly in an instant, rampant Spiritual Energies akin to a storm swept out from the two groups. Four youths of Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phase in the vicinity were instantly sent flying back, spurting blood from their mouths as they were smashed away.

On the giant cliff, the faces of countless people fiercely contorted as, out of nowhere, the handsome youth with a smile on his face had appeared within the two groups, causing a shudder to shake through their hearts. That speed's too fast! That's simply not a speed that a person of Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase should possess!

Furthermore, just a mere palm from him was able to injure and send four people flying under the watchful eyes of the two Captains.

"You dare!"

Immediately regaining their senses, the two Captains furiously roared in anger. In the next instant, the two furiously clenched their fists, simultaneously sending a fist rumbling out. At this moment, their bodies sparkled with golden light, while their skin appeared to be casted from gold. Under their fists, the air was sent exploding apart, while even the earth below started to split and shatter.

Indeed, being able to become Captains, the two possessed strength that could be considered to be somewhat outstanding. With tacit understanding, the two took action together, sending out a fist each which was exceedingly tyrannical in power. Thinking about this, even if they were faced against an expert that had truly passed the Human Body Disaster, they were able to contend and hold their ground.

However, the opponent before them was a monstrous freak that was able to kill an expert that had failed his Human Body Disaster while only being at the Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase.

The incomparably rampant Spiritual Energy fists caused Mu Chen's robes to crazily flutter about. However, despite that, looking at the fierce shadows of the two fists, a faint smile appeared on his face. In the next instant, he furiously clenched his hands. Unexpectedly, not showing even any intent of dodging them, he took a step forward, violently sending his spear-like hands rumbling out.

Bang!

Black arcs of lightning sparkled as they appeared before the fist shadows, causing even the surrounding space to warp and distort.

Boom!

Four fists smashed head on in the next instant.

Rampant Spiritual Energies swept out like a storm, causing those unfortunate fellows close to the two groups to be sent flying away in a miserable fashion. In the next instant, to their overwhelming horror, they noticed strange shades of redness unexpectedly gushing out from the faces of the two Captains.

Pu! Chi!

All of a sudden, two mouthfuls of blood were spewed out from the two Captains. As the blood mist perfused, the robes of the two were smashed into dust by the frightening energies that had rampaged towards them. In the next instant, both of them were sent shooting backwards, bodies rubbing against the ground as they flew hundreds of metres back, leaving two deep gouges on the ground as they did so.

While they spurted blood out as they flew back, the thin figure that had faced them appeared to have turned petrified, not even moving a single inch from where he stood.

On the giant cliff, the surroundings instantly turned deathly silently, as the sneers of the other groups looking towards the battle of the giants abruptly turned stiff, while unfathomable feelings gushed out from their eyes. This brat, whose strength was just at the Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase, has actually seriously injured the two Captains that were of

similar strength as their Captain and sent them flying?!

How's that possible?! Even experts who have passed their Human Body Disaster would be hard-pressed to achieve such a feat! With his strength at the Heavenly Completion Stage, how's he able to do such a thing?

The expressions of the faces of each group wildly fluctuated as the sneers at the corners of their mouths froze up, their eyes overwhelmed with shock...

Slowly retracting the spear-like arms that he had sent rumbling out, Mu Chen gently shook his robes. Looking with indifference at the two miserable figures in the far distance, he spoke out in a soft voice, "Do you have the qualifications to make us mutually injured when fighting?"

This time, the two Captains didn't try so much as to talk back. Instead, they could only stumble and stagger as they wiped the bloodstains of from the corners of their mouths. Shooting a look at each other, both of them could see the pain and bitterness present in one another's eyes. So this brat was actually disguising himself as prey to hunt the hunter. With such strength, how can he possibly be only at Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase?!

"Hand over your Academy Plaques," said Mu Chen with an indifferent tone as he extended his hand out.

Clenching their teeth, the two Captains clenched their fists, causing rays of brilliance to blossom before the two Academy Plaques appeared within.

With a wave of his sleeve, Mu Chen sucked them over. Sweeping his gaze out, he shot a look at the points listed on them, which had reached an approximate value of around a 100 points. Retrieving his Academy Plaque, he swept a glance across it without any hesitation, causing the points listed on it to increase from 10 to 65.

With a casual toss, Mu Chen sent the academy plaques back towards the two captains. According to the rules, the points on an academy plaque could only be deducted once per day. Clearly, this was a protective mechanism to allow for some unlucky fellows to not get instantly eliminated from the competition.

"What about you all?"

Shooting a gaze filled with some chilling intent, Mu Chen looked towards the other strong groups as he spoke with a faint smile, "Do you all think we will get patted to death?"

At this moment, those groups that were eyeing Mu Chen and the two groups covetously in preparation for both parties to get mutually injured looked at each other, before giving out bitter laughs. As if there's still that nonsense of both parties getting injured! The fellow before their eyes had dealt with two of the groups that were similar in strength to them by himself! Clearly, their opponent was not on the same level as them. If they continued to resist, the only result it would lead to was a violent beating.

Clenching their teeth, they tossed over their Academy Plaques with great reluctance.

In the surroundings, upon seeing this spectacle, those few weak groups that had their points snatched in the first round of cleansing were greatly pleased. Although they knew about the cruelty and violence that would be present here, and that Mu Chen and his group wasn't able to hand those points back to them, being able to see those fellows being viciously taught a lesson was enough to make them feel some comfort in their hearts.

After completely taking half of all of the points listed on those Academy Plaques, the final point tally for his Academy Plaque had instantly shot up to 440.

"Tsk, Tsk, truly enjoyable." After seeing the explosive increase in points on their Academy Plaques, smiles cracked open on the faces of Xu Huang and the others.

Playing around with his Academy Plaque, Mu Chen gave a laugh. However, just as he was about to stretch his body, all of a sudden, the Academy Plaque in his hand erupted with rays of brilliance. In the next instant, Mu Fengyang exclaimed in shock, " The Top 16 places have appeared! Fuck me! Are these fellas crazy?"

Upon hearing that, Mu Chen immediately cast his gaze towards the Academy Plaque in his hands. From there, the rays of brilliance had

converged together. Indeed, the Top 16 places have appeared. Sweeping his gaze across the places, his pupils instantly contracted.

1st place - Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy. Captain, Wen Qingxuan. 2530 points.

2nd place - Saint Spiritual Academy. Captain, Ji Xuan. 2000 points.

3rd place - Martial Spiritual Academy. Captain, Wu Ling. 1800 points.

6th place - Saint Spiritual Academy. Captain, Cao Gang. 1400 points.

9th place - Desolation Spiritual Academy. Captain, Ji Qingtian. 1000 points.

13th place...

16th place - Myriad Swords Spiritual Academy. Captain Yan Xiu. 820 points.

Looking at the numbers that had flipped open on the Academy Plaque, Mu Chen's eyes slightly narrowed in response. These fellas are really formidable at exiling people. His point collection speed could already be considered as fast. However, he never imagined that he would not be able to even get into the Top 16...

Rubbing and feeling his Academy Plaque, his slender finger rested gently on the name on the Second Place, while chilling intent erupted from his black pupils.

Chapter 457: Choosing Target

On this giant cliff, rays of brilliance had also erupted from the Academy Plaques of all the groups. After checking those places that had appeared on them, exclamations of astonishment rang out one after another, as the faces of quite a few people were filled with bitter smiles. This was the disparity, huh? Originally, they had tried hard to break a hundred points. However, as of now, the 1st place already had over 2000 points...

That's too frightening. All of them truly didn't know exactly where those ferocious people came from.

"Exactly how did those lunatics do that?!" Mu Fengyang exclaimed, feeling inconceivable as he waved the Academy Plaque in his hand. Originally, he had assumed that the points they had obtained were already high enough. However, the result was that they unexpectedly weren't even able to enter the Top 16 places.

A faint wrinkle appeared on Luo Li's brows as she said, "Those groups might have completely cleansed those groups that had landed in the same region as them... Furthermore, they did not let any points go through any middlemen."

Mu Chen gave a slight nod. According to the rules, when two parties cross hands, the loser would have to foot out half of his points on his Academy Plaque. Similarly, those fellows that Mu Chen had defeated and intimidated had already done a bout of cleansing on those weak groups. Therefore, even after Mu Chen had cleansed them of their points, he could only obtain half of the amount. Henceforth, the points in the hands of those fellow were in fact higher than his collected points.

On this point, the points in Mu Chen's hands had also suffered a loss. After all, the points he had obtained had undergone a transfer from a middleman.

"If I'd known earlier, I'd have personally took action to do the cleansing, one by one." said Zhao Qingshan as he rubbed his chin. "Nevertheless, even if we do so, we might've only barely been able to enter the Top 16.

That group from the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy that's in 1st place, exactly how did they get over 2500 points? Exactly where did those points come from?"

Both Xu Huang and Mu Fengyang nodded their heads, having the same deep feelings. That number of points truly was too disgusting.

"That's very simple. Just seize the moment to defeat those groups that were transmitted in before they could disperse away. The only thing they need is to conduct more cleansings, that's all," replied Luo Li with a faint smile.

Hearing her reply, Xu Huang opened his mouth wide, unable to speak for a moment. Within the short span of time, taking a tyrannical stance and cleansing multiple transmission sites. Exactly how much strength would one need to possess? After all, the groups that were able to participate in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament would absolutely be the best elites of each Spiritual Academy. There's always bound to be some thorny groups at each transmission descent point; of which, there would be experts that would have even passed their Fleshly Body Tribulation. However, despite that, the group from the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy was still able to sweep across every group without the slightest bit of care. Clearly, this group possessed considerable strength and power.

"Wen Qingxuan..."

Looking at the name high up in 1st place, shock and astonishment had similarly appeared in Mu Chen's heart. This girl should be the person that had obtained the championship of the Spiritual Road. One truly had to say that she truly was extremely formidable. Even Ji Xuan wasn't able to surpass her.

"Formidable. I really want to meet with this Spiritual Road Champion to see exactly what kind of divine being she is," said Mu Chen as he shook his head. Due to him being kicked out of the Spiritual Road midway, he had yet to see this girl that was able to obtain the Spiritual Crown at the very end. Clearly, he was somewhat curious about the owner of the

Spiritual Crown.

"You really want to meet her? I've seen her once before. Indeed, she's extremely pretty, " said Luo Li with a sweet smile.

Hearing her words, Mu Chen gave a dry cough. He could sense an ambiguous feeling from the faintly discerning gaze shooting out from Luo Li. Instantly, he made a straight face and replied, "I don't believe that. How can anyone be more pretty than my little Luo Li?!"

Declining to comment, Luo Li raised her little mouth. Clearly, she had completely seen through this method that Mu Chen was trying to employ. However, her expression appeared exceedingly cute.

"This Saint Spiritual Academy's truly formidable. They actually have four groups all ranked within the Top 16..." Looking at his Academy Plaque, Xu Huang wrinkled his forehead, as he discovered that all four groups from the Saint Spiritual Academy were ranked within the top 16 places. Looks like the Saint Spiritual Academy has gone all-out this time, with all four of their groups being this powerful.

"According to the rules, as long as 8 of the 16 groups light there Academy Plaques up, the elimination round would come to an end. As of now, the Saint Spiritual Academy is in control of four places. If they collaborate with some of the other groups in the top 16 places, they would be in control of the ending time for this Great Spiritual Academy Tournament." The faces of Zhao Qingshan and the others had turned solemn. Although one would reveal one's identity if one entered the Top 16 groups, one would possess the authority to end the elimination round. This was an extremely formidable benefit; after all, no one would know when the others would light their Academy Plaques, ending this round of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament.

"It's said that everyone would be informed when the Academy Plaques are being lit up. Furthermore, other than the other groups from their academy, everyone one else is their enemies, too. So, there's no one that would believe in anything they say. After all, letting all four groups of the Saint Spiritual Academy enter the final fight would be an extremely bad

piece of news for every other Spiritual Academy." Slightly shaking her head, Luo Li spoke her thoughts out.

"What should we do now? We have to obtain one of the Top 16 places for insurance purposes. However, the groups that have descended on the transmission gathering points might have already dispersed. Wanting to catch them all in one net might not be that easy anymore," said Xu Huang and the others with deep thoughts.

Hearing their words, Mu Chen unexpectedly gave a faint smile as he said, "The rate of success by finding those scattered groups and snatching their points is too low."

"Oh?" Xu Huang and the others looked doubtfully at Mu Chen, before seeing the latter raise the Academy Plaque in his hand as he replied with a soft laugh. "There's some very prominent targets here, right? Furthermore, most of them are fat sheep. Eating one up will be equivalent to us cleansing a hundred or even more of those groups."

Upon hearing Mu Chen's reply, Xu Huang and the others were instantly dumbfounded. Mu Chen wants to snatch from those powerful groups ranked in the Top 16 places? Isn't that being too gutsy? All of them weren't easy targets, after all.

"Inconceivable, right?" said Mu Chen with a faint smile. "As of the current groups in the top 16 places, other than the minority that are truly powerful and strong, there's quite a few groups that are up there due to them being lucky. I believe that within a day's time, the greater half of the top 16 places will be chopped down."

"All of them were fat sheep. However, it's up to you guys on whether you dare to accept the hunt, right?"

Shooting looks at one another, Xu Huang, Zhao Qingshan and Mu Fengyan clenched their teeth, before replying, "As if we don't dare! As long as you dare to take the lead, we'll dare to follow you in the hunt!"

As their voices rang out, shadows of excitement gushed out from their eyes as their hearts started to race. Indeed, only by following Mu Chen will they be able to experience such exciting stuff. While other people would

try their best by taking action against weaker groups, Mu Chen was the direct opposite of them, aiming his gaze straight at the powerful groups in the Top 16 places.

Although there were some risks involved in doing so, all of them were youths, after all, with the adventurous spirits within them being absolutely of no small quantity.

Only after seeing this did Mu Chen nod his head and laugh.

"So, which group will we take action against?" asked Xu Huang and the other two as they looked at the groups listed on their Academy Plaques.

Sweeping his gaze across his Academy Plaque, Mu Chen's chilly gaze rested on the name being Ji Xuan.

"That can't be, right? You gonna aim for that difficult of a target?" Noticing Mu Chen's line-of-sight, the faces of Xu Huang and the other two instantly turned pale. Can't he not choose that? Why must he immediately lock on to the second highest group?

Noticing their expressions, Mu Chen felt like smiling, before proceeding to shake his head. Although he really did want to cross hands with Ji Xuan, this wasn't the time to do so. There truly was some disparity between the strength of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, compared to the Saint Spiritual Academy. As for his group, other than he and Luo Li, the strength of Xu Huang and the other two were somewhat on the weak side. As a whole, they were definitely not the match of Ji Xuan and his group. As for now, their chances of victory in a head-on showdown wasn't high.

Thinking till here, Mu Chen gave a helpless laugh. In the past, when he was in the Spiritual Road, it was fine for him to have misgivings about himself. However, at this very moment, he represented the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Therefore, he couldn't be too unrestrained and reckless. He needed to take the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy into consideration, with his group also needing that consideration.

From the looks of it, he also needed to come up with a plan to increase the strength of his group.

Gently touching on Ji Xuan's name, a chilling glint flashed within the depths of Mu Chen's eyes. As of now, I won't clash with you first. However, Ji Xuan, since we've both come to here, there'll be a time where we'll meet...

Giving a sneer, MuChen's finger crept quietly down, before finally coming to a rest. "We'll choose this group first. Their position seems to be the nearest to us."

Xu Huang and the other two hastily looked over.

9th place. Desolation Spiritual Academy. Captain, Ji Qingtian. 1000 points.

The Desolation Spiritual Academy was similarly an elite Spiritual Academy with a vast and rich background. In fact, it wasn't weaker than the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. It's said that during that year, the last slot for the fifth Great Academy nearly fell into their hands, before the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy came into existence, snatching away that title from them. Therefore, regardless of that, this proved the might of the Desolation Spiritual Academy.

As for the group from the Desolation Spiritual Academy, they definitely wouldn't be weak.

However, compared to the Saint Spiritual Academy, this Desolation Spiritual Academy was still a better target to deal with.

Xu Huang and the other two exchanged glances with each other. So the Desolation Spiritual Academy it is!

Seeing no objections being raised, Mu Chen gave a laug, storing his Academy Plaque as he said, "Since everyone doesn't object to this, let's get ready to set off."

Fiercely nodding their heads, Xu Huang and the other two could feel the blood within their entire bodies starting to rise and surge, with scorching-hot fighting intent filling their eyes. They had come here for the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. If they were even afraid of a Desolation Spiritual Academy, it would be too big of a humiliation for them!

"Let's go!"

With a faint smile, Mu Chen exchanged glances with Luo Li. Without saying anything more, with a move of his body, he transformed into a ray of light as he shot out, heading towards the direction indicated on the Academy Plaque. Behind him, filled with killing intent, Xu Huang and the others followed closely along.

They had finally stepped on the killing fields of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament!

Chapter 458: Old Competitor

Although this shattered continent appeared to be in a fragmented state, its surface area was still indescribably vast and boundless. Only after they had started on their journey towards the direction of the Desolation Spiritual Academy indicated by the Academy Plaque was Mu Chen and his group able to precisely experience this fact.

After journeying for an entire day, the group from the Desolation Spiritual Academy had yet to appear within the range of their spiritual senses, something which caused Mu Chen to turn somewhat speechless. From the looks of it, this shattered Continent might not be smaller than the Northern Heavens Continent. Furthermore, its was said that this was just a fragment of the entire Shattered Continent. God-knows exactly how vast and boundless the complete Shattered Continent was in the Ancient Antiquity.

Indeed, it truly lived up to its name as one of the largest continents of the ancient Great Thousand Worlds.

While spending the entire day journeying, Mu Chen's group had bumped into quite a few groups along the way. Those groups from the various Great Spiritual Academies that have come here had all been completely dispersed throughout this continent, rushing forth on this fragment like swarms of locusts. As they attempted to snatch the points of other groups in a crazed fashion, extremely intense battles erupted all over the continent.

Just the number of life-and-death fights Mu Chen's group had seen on their journey had already reached the low hundreds, an extremely large number. Along the way, they had similarly bumped into groups that had tried to target them. Towards these groups that had served themselves to his doorsteps, Mu Chen seemed to be all too welcome about it. In their journey, dozens of groups suffered defeat in their hands, allowing Mu Chen's group to gain over 300 more points, bringing their total point count close to 800

However, 800 points was still a considerable distance away from the Top 16. That's because, in the short span of a day, the total amount of points held by the Top 16 had increased at an astonishing rate.

The first place was still held by the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy's group led by Wen Qingxuan, with them unexpectedly having 3300 points. As for the 16th place, it had also risen to 1500 points.

At the same time, just as what Mu Chen had said, within the short span of a day, the Top 16 continued to shift and change. Some of the groups that had initially revealed themselves in the rankings were quickly cleansed one after another by even stronger groups. Clearly, those groups that were genuinely strong and power had started to gradually flex their muscles.

As for the Desolation Spiritual Academy group targeted by Mu Chen, they had miraculously managed to stick on resiliently in the Top 16, with the only change being their drop from 9th to 11th place. Nevertheless, they had not fallen out of the Top 16 within this day.

Seeing this, Mu Chen felt slightly shocked and astonished. From the looks of it, it seemed that he had truly underestimated this group that came from the Desolation Spiritual Academy. Under the assaults from strong and powerful groups from time after time again, they were still able to maintain such a rank in the Top 16. Clearly, they genuinely possessed some skill and ability.

Nevertheless, it was all good for Mu Chen's group. If all of a sudden, the group from the Desolation Spiritual Academy had dropped out of the Top 16, their day's worth of pursuit would have become all for naught.

...

Whoosh!

Numerous rays of light shot across the horizon.

"Mu Chen, we've found the group from the Desolation Spiritual Academy!" As he hurriedly shot across the skies, suddenly, Xu Huang's pleasantly surprised voice rang out. Hearing that, Mu Chen brought his

Academy Plaque out. Indeed, after noticing the group from the Desolation Spiritual Academy, a change unexpectedly happened on the approximate direction originally shown on it, changing into a definitive and precise location.

North West, 300 kilometres.

"We've finally found them."

Seeing this, a faint smile appeared on Mu Chen's face, before abruptly increasing his speed rapidly with the wave of his sleeve.

"Increase speed and get ready."

Whoosh! Whoosh!

Five rays of light drastically increased their speed, shooting across the horizon like stars chasing after the moon.

After tens of minutes later, Mu Chen's group gradually reduced their speed, while Spiritual Energy gushed out from their entire bodies, their gazes turning into ones of caution and vigilance. A group ranked in the Top 16 was just like a magnet. They believed that the people eyeing this group would absolutely not be them alone. Therefore, they naturally had to be more careful as they approached. If not, just a slight gap of their vigilance would result in the hunter turning into the hunted. Such a reversal in roles would truthfully be too much of a joke to make.

"There's quite a few groups present in this region." Luo Li brought a whiff of fragrance as she came close to Mu Chen. As her beautiful eyes swept across this stretch of the world, she spoke out in a soft voice. "Something's a little amiss. The number of people rushing towards this group seems to be somewhat too many."

A faint wrinkle appeared on Mu Chen's forehead as he nodded his head. He had similarly sensed those vague and obscured Spiritual Energy fluctuations, of which there were a considerable number of them. Clearly, those people had the same goal as Mu Chen, which caused some suspicion to grow in him. Why would the group from the Desolation Spiritual Academy be that popular?

Bang!

Just as Mu Chen was deep in thought, suddenly, astonishing Spiritual Energy fluctuations erupted from the depths of the stretch of towering mountains before them. There seemed to be people fighting over there.

Crossing gazes with Luo Li, Mu Chen immediately shot over. In a matter of minutes, they arrived within the mountain depths. As they appeared within the mountainous depths and swept their gazes out, they felt slightly shocked as numerous groups were currently engaged in battle in the air, which was the source for those astonishing Spiritual Energy fluctuations.

"That's the group from the Desolation Spiritual Academy! They've actually been encircled? We're too late!" exclaimed Xu Huang.

Narrowing his eyes, Mu Chen looked over, only to see that there were actually five groups present in the air, However, four of the groups seemed to be attacking towards the same target, collaborating to encircle the group within the centre. As for the group being encircled, it was precisely the target of Mu Chen's group, the group from the Desolation Spiritual Academy.

At this moment, the group from the Desolation Spiritual Academy appeared exceedingly miserable.The four groups that had surrounded them were extremely strong, with every single group possessing strength that wasn't weaker to them. With the four of them collaborating together, it seemed as if the group from the Desolation Spiritual Academy was suppressed to the point of being unable to offer an ounce of resistance.

Furthermore, what shocked Mu Chen's group the most was the actual presence of over a hundred groups standing in the skies above the surrounding mountains and cliffs, locking their sights towards the fight happening in the skies. Precisely speaking, they should be staring covetously at the group from the Desolation Spiritual Academy. However, due to the four teams encircling the one from the Desolation Spiritual Academy, they didn't dare to be too reckless in taking action.

This entire scene appeared somewhat strange and weird.

"Oh? One of the group's actually from the Azure Heavens Spiritual Academy!" Zhao Qingshan suddenly exclaimed.

Hearing his words, both Mu Chen and Luo Li gawked as they turned their sights over. Indeed, they discovered that there was one group within the four that was dressed in the academy uniform of the Azure Heavens Spiritual Academy. This group clearly came from the Azure Heavens Spiritual Academy, one of the five Great Academies. However, upon setting his sights on one of the figures within the group, the expression present of Mu Chen's face instantly changed.

The group from the Azure Heavens Spiritual Academy was clearly the strongest within the five groups fighting it out in the sky. Despite that, however, they did not truly take action, only appearing to stay in an enforcing state, completely sealing off the escape route of the Desolation Spiritual Academy. Within their ranks, all of them had faces filled with ridiculement, having looks as if they were cats that were playing around with mice.

"That's why those groups only dared to observe from afar, not daring to take action. So the people from the Azure Heavens Spiritual Academy are here," said Mu Fengyang as he wrinkled his forehead. "These damnable fellows actually dare to snatch our prey. We've been staring at this group from the Desolation Spiritual Academy for an entire day already."

"Mu Chen?"

Looking at Mu Chen, Xu Huang instantly gawked, as he noticed that the former's expression had unexpectedly started to slowly turn dark, while a chilling shadow gushed out from within his black pupils. Beside him, Luo Li's beautiful face had also turned slightly frosty as her jade-like hand slowly clenched her longsword tightly.

"What's the matter?" asked Xu Huang and the other two in doubt, not knowing why Mu Chen and Luo Li would flip their faces out of the blue.

"Haha. We've bumped into an old acquaintance from the Spiritual Road," replied Mu Chen with a faint smile, yet was one that was perfused with dense chilling intent.

"Qiu Beihai. I never imagined that that fellow had actually entered the Azure Heavens Spiritual Academy..." A sliver of chilling intent flashed within Luo Li's beautiful eyes as she softly spoke out. "Within the Spiritual Road, he was the capable aide of Ji Xuan. When you were kicked out of the Spiritual Road, he brought along some people to surround me, which resulted in me cutting of a few fingers of his. In the end, he had also reached the final point of the Spiritual Road, and was given the title of Sea King... however, at the final point, I was busy dealing with Ji Xuan, so I had ignored him. However, this person truly possesses some capable points."

Hearing her words, the chilling intent in Mu Chen's eyes grew even more pronounced as he said, "There's nothing to worry about. Look's like we're bound by quite some fate, being able to bump into him here."

Xu Huang and the other two looked at each other. From what they could hear, it seemed as if Mu Chen and Luo Li had some past grievances with a fellow from the Azure Heavens Spiritual Academy. They quietly asked, "Exactly, who are we dealing with? The Desolation Spiritual Academy or the Azure Heavens Spiritual Academy?"

Although the group from the Azure Heavens Spiritual Academy seemed to be more thorny that the Desolation Spiritual Academy, Mu Chen was their Captain. As long as he decided to deal with whomever, they would naturally have no qualms to pull out their knives and head towards their target.

"Xu Huang, go take a look and find out exactly what is going on."

Mu Chen spoke out in a soft voice. The situation before them seemed somewhat strange and weird, There were so many groups that had rushed over for the group from the Desolation Spiritual Academy. Even the group from the Azure Heavens Spiritual Academy had come over.

Nodding his head, Xu Huan instantly rushed out, rapidly returning after ten-plus minutes. As shock and astonishment surfaced within his eyes, he spoke out, "This Desolation Spiritual Academy seems to have obtain some information about the relics from the Ancient Antiquity... these fellows have all come here due to that information."

"Information about the relics from the Ancient Antiquity?"

Mu Chen gawked upon hearing that, before his expression turned strange. This Desolation Spiritual Academy couldn't have such good luck, right? They were actually able to obtain such an opportunity. Having arrived in this place not too long ago and being able to obtain such important information. No wonder why they would attract so many wolves to them.

"What should we do?" Zhao Qingshan and the other two were eager to take action. Regardless of the abundant points that the Desolation Spiritual Academy had or the information in their hands, both had already garnered their interest.

Faintly narrowing his eyes, Mu Chen gave a stare at those few figures in the sky. Waving his hand, he replied with a cold smirk, "Let's go."

With a move of his body, he instantly shot across the sky, with Luo Li, Xu Huang and the other two in hot pursuit.

Whoosh!

Without any kind of obstruction, Mu Chen had rushed straight towards the combat zone. Upon their appearance in the skies, they instantly attracted the attention of everyone present, before cries of exclamation rang out.

"Is that the group from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?"

"Dammit! Those fellows had also come over for the information?"

"This makes it even harder to get it now!"

Due to the appearance of Mu Chen and his group, the intense fights taking place in the combat zone in the sky started to slow down, as the faces of the group from the Azure Heavens Spiritual Academy started to sink down.

"Captain, that group's unexpectedly from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. What should we do?"

"Do you want to deal with them? The Northern Heavens Spiritual

Academy has been declining increasingly over the past few years. If they dare to take action, dispose of them!" Looking towards a youth within their ranks, the few youths from the Azure Heavens Spiritual Academy group started a lively discussion about what to do.

The face of the youth they had spoken to turned somewhat dark, while wrinkles started to appear on his forehead. Looking towards the group that was getting increasingly closer to them, he swept a sharp gaze over. However, in the next instant, the expression on his face abruptly contorted as dumbfound shock flashed within his eyes, before he exclaimed out, "Mu Chen? Luo Li?"

Chapter 459: Qiu Beihai

As Mu Chen and his group neared the combat zone, they slowly came to a stop. Looking towards the youth whose face was contorted upon their appearance, a smile brimming with chilling intent surfaced on Mu Chen's face as she said, "Qiu Beihai, we finally meet again."

The dark-faced Qiu Beihai stared with daggers drawn towards Mu Chen and Luo Li. After quite a while, he spoke out with a dark tone. "Mu Chen, I truly never imagined that you, who had been kicked out halfway in the Spiritual Road, would actually still be able to enter one of the five Great Academies. You truly are formidable."

"However..."

All of a sudden, a cold sneer rose from the corner of Qiu Beihai's mouth as he looked with an amused fashion at Mu Chen as he continued speaking, "It seems that you've fallen behind. Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase, huh. Haha! You still dare to enter the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament with that level of strength? You're not afraid that your renowned title of the Blood Calamity of the Spiritual Road would bring an overflowing amount of great disasters for you?"

"As of now, Ji Xuan has already far surpassed you. If you are to bump into him, hehe..."

After a previous bout of being overwhelmed with shock, Qiu Beihai clearly noticed Mu Chen's current level of strength, causing that fear and shock to gradually dissipate away. What replaced it was a feeling of happiness. Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase? Ha Ha! As of now, the Blood Calamity that had caused him to feel incredibly threatened in the Spiritual Road had fallen to such a degree.

A faint frosty intent radiated from Luo Li's beautiful eyes as she spoke out, "Qiu Beihai, looks like you don't want to keep your remaining finger, right?"

Hearing her words, Qiu Beihai's face instantly contorted as he grounded and clenched his teeth towards Luo Li, his hands being tightly clenched.

Both of his hands had one finger missing, being chopped of by her during the Spiritual Road when he had brought along people to surround her. Ever since then, this had always been the pain in his heart. However, his possessed some dread and fear towards the latter. From his senses, he could tell that the current Luo Li had clearly passed her Human Body Disaster, making her cultivation not one bit weaker than him.

Suppressing the anger and fury in his heart, Qiu Beihai gave a sneer before replying. "I've heard that your Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy has only sent two groups this time around? Haha! Looks like the title of being one of the five Great Academies will be stripped of your Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy after this Great Spiritual Academy Tournament. I can't be bothered to deal with you guys. Bring your people and scram off. Mu Chen, if I were you, I'd be smart enough to find a place and hide so as to not bump into Ji Xuan. If not, you'll be totally smashed up and beaten by him. At this moment, your great title of being the Blood Calamity of the Spiritual Road has been completely thrown into oblivion."

"What did you say?!" Upon hearing his words, the faces of Xu Huang and the other two instantly contorted as they furiously roared out in reply.

"Don't you understand what I've just said?"

With a sneer, Qiu Beihai waved his hands, causing his four group members to converge around him. Of the four, one of them slowly walked forward, standing beside the former as he shot a ridiculing gaze towards Mu Chen's group.

"You're only a group with one Human Body Disaster member in it. Haha. Indeed, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's unable to make the cut anymore." The youth that appeared to be older than Qiu Beihai, crossed his arms in front of his chest as he let of a mocking laugh. In the next instant, boundless Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiated from his body. From the looks of it, his strength appeared to be on the same level as Qiu Beihai, having passed his Human Body Disaster as well.

In their group, there were two people that had passed their Human Body Disaster, with the other three being of Heavenly Completion Stage Late

Phase. From their outward appearance, their line-up seemed to be stronger than that of Mu Chen's group.

Furthermore, they still had an alliance with three other groups. Although the three other groups weren't as strong as them, every single one of them possessed a person who had passed their Human Body Disaster. Although they might split up their forces to deal with the group from the Desolation Spiritual Academy, their remaining forces would absolutely deal with and cause the group from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy to lose all temper at all.

None of them believed that this group from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy would dare to have the heart to take any action under the suppression of their line-up.

At the back, the group from the Desolation Spiritual Academy being surrounded by the three groups could also feel the confrontation occurring over there. In the next moment, one of the groups peeled away, with their Captain, sizing up Mu Chen's group with a smile on his face that brimmed with provocation. Turning his gaze to Luo Li, his eyes started to wander around her alluring body as he whistled with a grin, before speaking out, "I truly never imagined that there would be such a beautiful girl in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. I truly can't find such quality in our Great Cauldron Spiritual Academy."

"Haha. Brother Beihai, do you still need help?" asked the youth as he looked towards Qiu Beihai with a grin. At the same time, Spiritual Energy fluctuations started to perfuse from his body. Unexpectedly, he was also an expert that had passed his Human Body Disaster.

The two teams stood right before Mu Chen's group, staring covetously at them like two ferocious tigers.

Seeing this, the faces of Xu Huang and the other two slightly changed. If it was a one-on-one, they weren't afraid to face off against a group like the Azure Heavens Spiritual Academy, However, with the appearance of the group from the Great Cauldron Spiritual Academy, such a line-up was sufficient to change the entire situation.

"It's just a slight trouble," replied Qiu Beihai with a smile, before looking towards Mu Chen in satisfaction. This was an opponent that had once made him feel immense pressure. However, at this very moment, thinking back about the times where he was being totally suppressed, he could not help feeling true pity for the latter.

"Mu Chen, I advise you to tactfully leave. I don't have the heart to deal with you now. Don't ask for trouble," said Qiu Beihai in an indifferent tone as he waved his hands.

Seeing the appearance of Qiu Beihai waving his hands in indifference, Mu Chen could not help bursting into laughter. Tilting his head towards Luo Li, he asked her with a smile. "How should we split?"

"Leave to group from the Great Cauldron Spiritual Academy to me," replied Luo Li with a sweet smile.

"The whole group?" Hearing her reply, Mu Chen's eyebrows were faintly raised.

"You don't believe me?" Luo Li shot a glance at Mu Chen. Waving the Luo Shen Sword in her hand, she sweetly smiled while saying, "If we're to cross hands, you might not even be able to win against me."

Hearing her words, Mu Chen smiled and nodded his head, saying, "Leave the two Human Body Disaster fellows from the Azure Heavens Spiritual Academy to me. As for the other three people, deal with them, Xu Huang, Fengyang and Qingshan. That shouldn't be a problem, right?"

After all, they were a group. Therefore, he can't let Xu Huang and the other two sit on the side as he took action.

"No problem!" Xu Huang and the other two nodded without the slightest hesitation. Other than Qiu Beihai and the other Human Body Disaster expert in the group from the Azure Heavens Spiritual Academy, the remaining three were at Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase, which was on the same level as Xu Huang and the other two. Thus, they would naturally not have any dread or fear in facing them.

"Mu Chen, do not ignore my kindness!"

Seeing that Mu Chen had actually chose to completely ignore him and even went so far as to distribute their targets, Qiu Beihai's face instantly turned slightly ashen as he roared out in a chilly voice.

'Haha, you truly are rampant, little girl. Do you really think that you'll be able to deal with our entire group by yourself?" the Group Captain from the Great Cauldron Spiritual ACademy gave an insincere smile towards Luo Li. Although the former had passed her Human Body Disaster, wanting to deal with his entire group was her indulging too much in fantasy.

Within the skies, there were also the numerous groups present that were watching the commotion that was taking place. Furthermore, upon seeing that the group from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was actually wanting to deal with two groups by themselves, all of them felt shock and astonishment. Within the ranks of this Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, they had only one person that had passed her Human Body Disaster. With such a line-up, they still dared to confront the Azure Heavens Spiritual Academy and the Great Cauldron Spiritual Academy at the same time?

At the rear, upon discovering this scene, the two groups surrounding the Desolation Spiritual Academy immediately slowed down their assault slightly. Being able to enter the Top 16 and last for a day under their encirclement, this group from the Desolation Spiritual Academy truly possessed considerable strength. Only with the encirclement by their three groups, with the Azure Heavens Spiritual Academy keeping watch at the back, were they able to suppress the group from the Desolation Spiritual Academy. However, from the looks of it now, with both the Azure Heavens Spiritual Academy and the Great Cauldron Spiritual Academy having left to deal with the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, they could barely suppress the Desolation Spiritual Academy with the strength of their two groups. Compared to the situation before, they wouldn't pose much of a threat now.

Seemingly discovering the change in the situation, the group from the Desolation Spiritual Academy quietly took a breath of relief. If the

previous situation had continued on, they might not have been able to last much longer.

The Group Captain from the Desolation Spiritual Academy was a somewhat burly-built youth. Looking towards the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's confrontation with the Great Cauldron Spiritual Academy not far from him, a faint flash sparkled within his eyes. As of now, the situation they were currently in was extremely unfavorable for them. If the three groups were to let the Azure Heavens Spiritual Academy join hands and go on the offensive against their group, the result would be extremely worrying for his group. However, at this very moment, they had no other method to hope that the group from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy would truly be able to obstruct the Azure Heavens Spiritual Academy, as well as the Great Cauldron Spiritual Academy. This way, they might be able to obtain a chance to...

Looking towards the somewhat ashen Qiu Beihai, Mu Chen smiled and shook his head. Slowing walking forward as he looked towards the slight wave of the former's hand, the smile at the corner of Mu Chen's mouth gradually appeared cold and fierce.

"Qiu Beihai, I've never been eye-to-eye with you before in the Spiritual Road, and it's the same in this place."

"In my eyes, you don't have the qualifications to jump and hop around in front of me."

The veins on Qiu Beihai's face twitched and quivered while his gaze slowly turned malevolent. "Okay. Let me see exactly who's the one with no qualifications to jump and hop around!"

Bang!

Qui Beihai's robes fluttered as boundless Spiritual Energy swept out from him. In the next instant, his gaze turned cold and sinister as he roared, "Kill them!"

Bang!

At the instant when his roar rang out, he had already shot forward.

Clenching his hand tightly, a scarlet-red longsword appeared from within, while a fierce sword aura rushed towards the sky.

Behind him, the face of the other Human Body Disaster expert from the Azure Heavens Spiritual Academy turned frosty as he also shot forward. One left, one right, rushing towards Mu Chen just like two hawks.

"Come, little girl. Let me see how you're gonna deal with our group by yourself!" sneered the Captain of the Great Cauldron Spiritual Academy group as he viciously stared at Luo Li.

Whoosh!

What replied to him was a swift and fierce Sword Aura in the shape of a silvery river. Splitting the skies apart, the chilling intent brought by it caused his face to instantly contort. With the clench of his hand, a black metal shield sparkling with spiritual light appeared right before him.

Ding!

Piercing explosively towards the metal shield, rays of brilliance sparkled from the Sword Aura as deep slash marks appeared on its surface.

Seeing the deep slash marks on the surface of his metal shield, the eyelids of the Great Cauldron Spiritual Academy Group Captain furiously twitched. However, before he could regain his senses, a beautiful figure had already shot and appeared right before him like a spectre. As sword shadows shot out, they heavily impacted on the surface of his metal shield.

Puff!

That was a Spiritual Weapon that possessed an extremely powerful defense. However, under those sword shadows, they appeared to be as weak as tofu. As the sword shadows shot out, they had unexpectedly pierced through the metal shield. The sharp tip of the sword came to a stop an inch before the forehead of the Great Cauldron Spiritual Academy Captain, with the Sword Aura radiating off of it, causing a drop of blood to drip down from the centre of his brows.

Finally, his face furiously contorted as dread and fear flashed within his

eyes as he furiously roared out. "Move!"

Immediately, the group from the Great Cauldron Spiritual Academy shot out from behind him, launching a powerful assault that encompassed the beautiful figure before them.

Chapter 460: Powerful Suppression

Bang!

Vast and powerful Spiritual Energies swept across the horizon like tidal waves, hiding the skies and covering the earth.

Chilling rays of light sparkled from the scarlet-red longsword in Qiu Beihai's hands. Clearly, this was a fairly high grade Spiritual Weapon, brimming with sharpness that appeared to be able to slice space apart. Locking his dark gaze on Mu Chen, in a flash, he appeared right before the latter, thrusting a stab out.

Whoosh!

Torrential rays of Sword Aura gushed out as the longsword transformed into countless sword shadows. Akin to a rainbow, they hid the skies and covered the earth as they completely surrounded the Mu Chen's vital spots.

As the light coming from the sword shadows were reflected in Mu Chen's eyes, a fierce shadow abruptly gushed out from within. In the next instant, with a furious clench of his hand, a black heavy spear appeared from within. The heavy spear appeared malevolent-looking, with black dragon scales covering its entire surface. The head of the spear was in the shape of a dragon's tongue, with sharp dragon teeth forming its tips, appearing exceedingly malevolent.

Upon the appearance of the black heavy spear, an ominous aura started to radiate from it, causing the surrounding space to slightly tremble.

This black heavy spear was naturally his spoils of war after killing Mo Xingtian, the Devouring Demonic Dragon Spear. This long spear was a genuine Absolute Grade Spiritual Weapon, possessing extraordinary might. During that day, Mo Xingtian had relied on this spear to receive the Great Meru Demonic Pillar in Mu Chen's hands.

Although that was due to Mu Chen not daring to remove the seal on the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, this was more than sufficient to show how

formidable this Devouring Demonic Dragon Spear was.

Roar!

As the Devouring Demonic Dragon Spear appeared in Mu Chen's hand, with a shake of its body, a dragon roar brimming with ominous aura seemed to resound across the surroundings. In the next instant, a spear was thrusted from Mu Chen, with black rays of light howling out from the spear tip akin to a powerful current, immediately washing away the sword shadows that had hid the skies and covered the earth.

Whoosh!

As the ominous aura perfused from the spear shadows shooting out, a sliver of a chilling glint pierced through the torrential shadow swords. Unexpectedly, it shattered through the surrounding space, howling straight towards Qiu Beihai.

As the chilling glint neared him, the face of Qiu Beihai slightly changed. Clearly, he could sense the astonishing killing might that the Devouring Demonic Dragon Spear in Mu Chen's hand possessed. In the next instant, his stopped his movements, while the scarlet-red longsword within his hand wad hastily thrust out. Fresh blood seemed to circulate on the surface of the sword, bringing a ray of blood-red light that pierced with incomparable accuracy towards the sliver of chilling glint.

Ding!

As the spear and sword collided against each other, sparks flew about as incomparably fierce gales formed and swept out. Ripples seemed to fluctuate in the space surrounding the two as rampant Spiritual Energies transformed into a hurricane, sweeping out from the point of contact between the spear and the sword.

A tremble shook through the sword-wielding hand of Qiu Beihai as the malevolence on his face grew much more solemn. After truly crossing hands, he was able to feel a sensation of suppression coming from within Mu Chen's body. That kind of power was absolutely not something that a person of ordinary Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase would be able to possess.

"Bastard!"

Clenching his teeth, Qiu Beihai fiercely roared out, "Shen Jun, take action!"

"Die for me!"

Just as Qui Beihai's roar rang out, suddenly, a figure surfaced behind Mu Chen. That was precisely the other person that passed the Human Body Disaster from the Azure Heavens Spiritual Academy group. At this moment, lightning seemed to sparkle from his hands as they appeared to weigh a tonne, furiously patting down towards Mu Chen's back in an aim to deal maximum damage.

Bang!

Palm winds howled out as even the air had exploded apart.

Clearly, this Shen Jun wasn't just some average character. Upon taking action, his attack was fierce and lethal, attempting to collaborate with Qiu Beihai to rapidly defeat Mu Chen.

Palm winds were sweeping out from his back at lightning speed. With a chilling glint flashing within his eyes, Mu Chen turned around and sent a fist rumbling out, with black lightning arcing across his arm. At this moment, black lightning liquid seemed to flow around his fingers with the energy they contained being more than sufficient to smash the skies and rend the earth!

Bang!

The fist that Mu Chen sent rumbling out smashed head-on against the palm winds coming from Shen Jun. At the instant when they collided, it appeared as if a mountain had collapsed as energy shock waves visible to the naked-eye radiated from the point of impact.

Amongst the peals of thunder ringing out, Shen Jun's face abruptly contorted, as the frightening energy radiating from Mu Chen's fist had instantly suppressed those of his. Furthermore, what's more frightening was that the physique of the latter was exceedingly tyrannical! It was to such a degree, than even he, who had passed through his Human Body

Disaster, was unable to match up to.

"How could his physique be that powerful?!"

A shadow of dumbstruck-horror flashed across Shen Jun's face as he immediately tried to retreat.

"Scram!"

However, at the very instant when he was just about to make his move, a chilling smile appear appeared on Mu Chen's face as his fist ferociously rumble out.

Bang!

Intense pain surged up Shen Jun's arm as a frightening wave of energy poured into it, before he was unexpectedly sent flying back hundreds of metres by this fist of Mu Chen's. A patch of purplish shade appeared on his palm as intense pain radiated out from it, making him feel as if his arm had been smashed apart.

"Hua."

This scene instantly caused waves of clamoring to ring out across the skies, as the faces of those groups paying attention to the combat zone in the skies instantly turned to ones of shock and astonishment. Who would have guessed that Mu Chen, who appeared to be only of Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase, would actually be able to send Shen Jun flying in a one-to-two situation.

Let's not talk about a Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase, even a person who had passed his Human Body Disaster would be hard pressed to achieve such a level of strength!

"Indeed, this Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's Mu Chen isn't simple. That's why he dared to provoke the group from the Azure Heavens Spiritual Academy. This time, we're in for a good show." The eyes of all the groups lit up with dense feelings of interest. Previously, they had felt that this group from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy seemed to be weaker than the groups from the other five Great Academies. However, this youth that appeared to be only of Heavenly Completion Stage Late

Phase had actually possessed such frightening combat prowess.

"Heavenly Sea Sword Art, Heaven-Burying Sword!"

Qiu Beihai's face had also contorted due to the scene before him, which caused him to immediately roar out as he sent his sword out to smash back the Devouring Demonic Dragon Spear in Mu Chen's hands. With a shake of its body, the sword was thrust out like a brush, carving an actual blood-red Sword Rune in the space before it. Under the Sword Rune, a howl rang out from the sword, as it transformed into a giant blood-red sword, furiously chopping down towards Mu Chen.

This chop contained considerable might. Before it could hit its target, the mountain peak below it had already been sliced in half by the Sword Aura that perfused out of it.

Mu Chen's eyes slightly sparkled, and with a move, a dragon's shadow surfaced below his feet. With a flash, he disappeared akin to a spectre. As the sword light flashed over, the only thing it struck was air, with not the slightest bit of the expected result.

"Shen Jun, careful!"

As his sword struck air, Qiu Beihai's face abruptly contorted as he roared out.

Just as his roar rang out, Shen Jun had already seen Mu Chen's figure appear in the air above him like a spectre. At this moment, an indifferent smile had surfaced on the latter's handsome face as he said, "I'll deal with you first."

Bang!

Boundless Spiritual Energy hid the skies and covered the earth as it gushed out from Mu Chen's body. As of now, his Spiritual Energy was completely different than from the past, no longer being of a jet-black colour, but a fusion of black and white. From the looks of it, they were just like the fusion of Yin and Yang, appearing exceedingly strange and mysterious. Furthermore, this black and white Spiritual Energy was clearly much more condensed and tyrannical than his Spiritual Energy from

before.

As Spiritual Energy blossomed from Mu Chen, it transformed into a stretch of starry skies behind his back. Within the starry skies, four gigantic beastial shadows started to condense, before finally transforming into rays of light. Shooting out, they formed an incomparably gigantic divine seal in the air above Shen Jun.

"Four Gods Constellation Scripture, Divine Seal of the Four Gods!"

A chilling glint flashed within Mu Chen's eyes as he clapped his hands together, before abruptly pressing his hand seal down.

Bang!

As the four beastial shadows raised their heads and roared, the divine seal erupted in a bright and resplendent divine light, while the Spiritual Aura in this region rapidly fled away.

Looking towards the divine seal that was pressed down on him from above, Shen Jun's face furiously contorted. Clearly, he could sense how frightening this attack of Mu Chen's was. In the next instant, not daring to show the slightest bit of neglect, he gave a furious roar, clapping his hands together as Spiritual Energy swept out from him without the slightest bit of restraint.

"Heavenly Light Revolving Seal!"

Boundless Spiritual Energy swept out, transforming into a gigantic hundred metre wide halo above Shen Jun. A gigantic glowing seal seemed to condense within the halo as powerful fluctuations started to radiate out from it. In the next instant, howling out, the halo smashed head-on against the divine seal pressing down from above.

Bang!

As the two smashed against each other, spatial fluctuations swept out. However, very quickly, the face of Shen Jun drastically contorted as he could see the seal within the halo collapsing at an astonishing speed under the suppression of the divine seal.

This divine seal seemed to have some kind of sealing power incorporated in it, causing his Spiritual Energy to become suppressed and sealed upon contact with it.

An indifference smile appeared on Mu Chen's face. When he was still in the realm of Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase, the "Four Gods Constellation Scripture" he had unleashed was able to force Mo Xingtian to use his final card. As of now, with his cultivation having progressed to Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase. Furthermore, this Shen Jun clearly wasn't as strong and powerful as Mo Xingtian. Wanting to block and resist his attack head-on was clearly a lunatic's dream.

"Suppress!"

Mu Chen gave a roar as he furiously pressed his palms down.

Bang!

As the divine seal instantly came shrouding over, the seal within the halo was completely crushed. A deathly-pale shade appeared on Shen Jun's face as he retreated back in an attempt to evade. However, at this time, it was clear that it was already too late to evade, as the divine seal came howling down, instantly pressing on his body.

Puff!

A mouthful of blood was spewed out from Shen Jun's mouth as the boundless Spiritual Energy fluctuations around his body rapidly declined. Glowing runes started to surface around his body, appearing akin to seals, causing the Spiritual Energy within his body to be completely sealed up.

With his Spiritual Energy rapidly dissipating away, Shen Jun immediately dropped down from the skies, landing heavily on the mountain peak. As the entire mountain peak intensely shook, cracks appeared while a giant hole appearing in everyone's view. Shen Jun struggled within it, his body covered in blood as he laid down on the ground. Clearly, he was seriously injured.

Hiss.

Across the skies, some groups quietly sucked in a breath of cold air, their

gazes towards Mu Chen being overwhelmed with shock. Who would have guessed that the latter would be that vicious in his offensive. Upon taking action, he had displayed such a powerful move, instantly causing a Human Body Disaster expert to suffer serious injuries.

After sealing Shen Jun up, Mu Chen calmly turned around, chilling intent surfacing within his eyes as he looked towards Qiu Beihai, whose dark expression started to fluctuate, while dumbfounded shock filled his eyes, and said in a soft voice, "I've heard that you've went to surround and attack Luo Li after I had left the Spiritual Road?"

A faint smile started to appear on Mu Chen's face, merely that was cold and frosty, akin to the edge of a blade, causing Qiu Beihai's scalp to turn numb.

"Since that's the case, I want all of your remaining fingers."

Chapter 461: Lightning God's Hand

Swish!

Boundless amounts of fierce Sword Aura perfused across the horizon, transforming into currents flowing through the air. As they flooded out, the longsword in Luo Li's hand slightly vibrated, caused currents of Sword Aura to gush out from the tip of the sword. In the next instant, they howled towards the five figures covered in boundless Spiritual Energy.

Facing against such swift and fierce Sword Aura, the faces of the Great Cauldron Spiritual Academy were violently twitching. Not daring to show the slightest bit of neglect, they revolved the Spiritual Energy within their bodies to their maximum degree. Unleashing various powerful Divine Arts, causing rays of light to shoot out, smashing straight-on against the Sword Aura currents.

Slice!

As the attacks of both parties collided, white light flashed out as the Sword Aura currents sliced through the Spiritual Energy rays in an instant.

The faces of the five-man group from the Great Cauldron Spiritual Academy instantly contorted, as clearly, they never expected that their offensive would be that weak and meager in front of the incoming Sword Aura.

This Sword Aura could not be contended head-on.

Displaying their movement techniques, the five people tried to retreat. However, just as they were about to do so, intense fluctuations suddenly radiated behind their backs. Turning around to take a look, ugly expressions appeared on their faces as they saw that the Sword Aura had flooded over from behind them. With a bang, it enveloped over like a storm, completely sweeping them within.

Faced against the incomparably sharp Sword Aura, the Spiritual Energies that surrounded their bodies rapidly collapsed and shattered apart. Other than the Group Captain, the other four members of the Great Cauldron

Spiritual Academy group were instantly covered in wounds. As blood started flowing out, they appeared to become totally bloodsoaked, while a wave of Sword Aura heavily struck them on their bodies.

Puff.

Blood spurted out from their mouths as four figures were instantly sent flying miserably away, instantly suffering serious injuries before landing on the ground.

The Sword Aura across the horizon came to a slight stop.

As of now, there was only the Captain of the Great Cauldron Spiritual Academy, with his robes torn and tattered, left before Luo Li. At this moment, his face was drained of colour, his eyes overwhelmed with shock as he looked towards the longsword-wielding young girl standing not far away from him, her beautiful face tranquil and devoid of any emotion. Never in his wildest dreams was he able to understand why Luo Li would be that strong, even though both of them were people who had passed their Human Body Disaster.

That's why she dared to deal with their entire group by herself.

At this moment, a smile filled with bitterness hung at the mouth of the Great Cauldron Spiritual Academy Group Captain, since they had truly kicked an iron wall this time.

Raising her bright and beautiful eyes, Luo Li gave an indifferent glance at him, before striding forward with her longsword in her hand. Upon spotting this, the Captain of the Great Cauldron Spiritual Academy immediately took a step back, his fighting spirit now completely absent.

Upon seeing this scene, the various groups present within the surroundings of this region all quietly clicked their tongues, with their gazes towards her being filled with shock and astonishment. Being such a beauty, none of them had imagined that she would possess such astonishing strength to match. In her hands, an opponent of the same cultivation level as her was simply unable to offer much of a resistance.

"Why are there so many formidable girls in this Great Spiritual Academy

Competition? As of now, the First Place has been taken by that Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy's Wen Qingxuan. Now, there's yet another fierce girl appearing..."

"I wonder, exactly who would be more formidable if she was to bump into Wen Qingxuan?"

"..."

A few groups exchanged glances as they quietly muttered about.

...

At this moment, Xu Huang, Zhao Qingshan and Mu Fengyang had taken action and obstructed the other three members of the Azure Heavens Spiritual Academy group. Although all of them were similarly in the realm of Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase, Xu Huang and the other two were able to obtain some superiority. Clearly, their foundation was more firm and strong than the trio from the Azure Heavens Spiritual Academy. Xu Huan and the other two weren't just simple students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. In the past, they were the peak influential figures there, merely that the brilliance caused by Mu Chen's unexpected rise had masked them over. However, there wasn't anyone that wouldn't admit their outstanding talent.

There was always some stifling feelings within their hearts, which grew even thicker, especially after seeing the astonishing power that both Mu Chen and Luo Li possessed. The three of them were Seniors, and yet, they were now being far surpassed by Mu Chen and Luo Li. Despite that, they weren't able to let this stifling feeling out. Therefore, the could only vent it out on the their three opponents. Launching crazy attacks one after another, they suppressed the trio, suffocating them and causing them to only be barely able to resist their assault.

At the other combat zone, Qiu Beihai turned hurriedly around to observe the situation around him, which caused his face to turn completely ashen. Giving a death-stare towards the indifferent-looking Mu Chen before him, he clenched his teeth and said, "Mu Chen, you..."

Bang!

Not giving him any chance to spout any nonsense, a tremble shook through the Devouring Demonic Dragon Spear in his hands as an astonishing ominous aura erupted from it. In the next instant, a hundred metre-long ray of brilliance erupted from the spear, splitting apart the horizon and shrouding over Qiu Beihai at lightning speed.

Rapidly retreating back, torrential rays of sword light erupted from the scarlet-red sword in Qiu Beihai's hand, blocking him from the spear shadows raining down on him. However, as metallic sounds rang out, he was smashed back dozens of steps in a miserable fashion. In the next instant, feelings of anger, fury and unwillingness gushed out from his eyes. From the beginning till the end of the Spiritual Road, he had been suppressed by Mu Chen. If not for him subordinating himself under Ji Xuan, he might have long been killed by Mu Chen within there.

Subsequently, Mu Chen was expelled from the Spiritual Road due to Ji Xuan's schemes, something that gave great satisfaction to Qiu Beihai. Thinking back about then, he had assumed that the former would no longer be dreadful, even if he was to bump into the former in the future. After all, with him possessing the Baptism from the Spiritual Road, he had exceeded Mu Chen's cultivation by a large margin. Indeed, upon bumping into each other again, the former's cultivation realm of Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase caused him to be wildly happy. His chance had come! As long as he could defeat Mu Chen here, the shadow that had formed within his heart would be banished. Therefore, he definitely wanted to squash Mu Chen beneath his feet!

However... the changes to the current situation had clearly exceeded his expectations.

With his mere cultivation realm being at Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase, the combat prowess that Mu Chen possessed had shocked and astonished people. Even under the collaboration and encirclement of two people who passed their Human Body Disaster, he was able to suppress one of them with his terrifying attack and forced Qiu Bei Hai himself into such a miserable position!

How can he be that powerful? Could it be that I, Qiu Beihai, will

only become the stepping stone of Mu Chen?

Ruthless intent gushed out from the eyes of Qiu Behai. Staring viciously at Mu Chen, he gave a fierce cry. "Mu Chen! I'll make sure you suffer defeat by my hands today!"

As his cry rang out, blood suddenly surfaced from the finger tips of Qiu Beihai. The blood appeared exceedingly bright and radiant, while a considerably strong bloody smell perfused into the surroundings, which contained powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuations.

Chi! Chi!

Qiu Beihai's fingers started do a strange and weird dance, with each finger bringing along a line of bright and radiant blood. These lines of blood rapidly converged together in the space before him, and in the next instant, one could faintly discern them transforming into a bloody shadow sword approximately a foot long. As this sword shadow appeared, a bloodthirsty fluctuation radiated from it, causing it to appear rather strange and weird.

Mu Chen slightly narrowed his eyes as he took in the scene before him. Nonetheless, he did not take action to prevent this, with a look of indifference continuing to radiate from his eyes, letting Qiu Beihai unleash his most powerful attack. That's because he didn't want to only defeat Qiu Beihai, but to completely crush the latter's self-confidence. He wanted to plant an invincible shadow straight in Qiu Beihai's heart!

Just an ordinary death wouldn't satisfy Mu Chen.

Bang!

Bloodthirsty fluctuations that blotted the skies erupted from the bloody shadow sword, causing even this stretch of the sky to turn scarlet-red.

"Blood Sea Sword Demonic Art, Blood Demon's Sword!"

Qiu Beihai's complexion grew increasingly pale, yet the ruthless shadow within his eyes grew increasingly heavy. Before him, the blood-like shadow sword expanded to a gigantic size of a hundred metres, with what seemed like blood circulating and flowing on its surface. The bloody smell and

bloodthirsty fluctuations radiating off of it caused the faces of everyone present to change countenance. At this instant,forming the hand seal for the Sword Art, Qiu Beihai gave a fierce roar as he poured all of his Spiritual Energy without the slightest restraint into the bloody shadow sword.

Humm!

Bloodthirsty Sword Aura rushed towards the skies, splitting the clouds tens of thousands of metres in the air.

Whoosh!

With a whoosh, the bloody shadow sword rushed up into the skies at an extremely quick speed. One could merely see a blood-red line shoot up into the air, before suddenly rushing down. In an instant, a surge of bloody light swept across the region as a sea of blood that blotted the skies condensed behind the bloody shadow sword, hiding the skies and covering the earth as it shot towards Mu Chen.

Its speed had almost reached unfathomable levels.

As the sea of blood gushed out, there was nothing that could block it.

"Hehe." Locking his ruthless gaze on Mu Chen, chilling laughter suddenly rang out from Qiu Beihai. This attack of his was more that sufficient to cause serious injuries even to experts of Human Body Disaster. He did not believe that Mu Chen could escape from this attack of his!

"Die for me!"

As Qiu Beihai roared, Mu Chen raised his head. Looking towards the surging sea of blood that was rapidly expanding in size within his gaze, he slowly clenched his fists tightly. Four lightning runes started to condense on his chest as black lightning started to crazily arc and dance on his body.

Rumble.

Deep peals of thunder rang out from within his body, before resounding

across the region.

Mu Chen slowly extended his right hand, with countless bolts of black lightning seemingly being born and destroyed within his palm, appearing akin to a world of lightning and thunder. At this moment, a jet-black shadow could be faintly discerned as it gradually spread out within his hand, appearing abstruse and mysterious.

Flipping his palm up, he gave a gentle pat towards the incoming bloody shadow sword.

"Lightning God's Hand."

A low voice rang out from Mu Chen's heart, and in the next instant, flashes of lightning and peals of thunder furiously rang out from his black pupils.

Rumble!

Black bolts of lightning shot out furiously from within Mu Chen's body as lightning started to form within the region, unexpectedly forming an incomparably jet-black giant hand approximately a hundred metres large in front of him. Black bolts of lightning crazily danced and arced across the surface of the giant hand, before condensing together, seemingly transforming into ancient runes.

Such wildness caused it to appear just like the hand of the god of lightning.

This Lightning God's Hand was an overbearing ability that could only be displayed when one had cultivated his Lightning God's Physique into a Quadra Rune Lightning Physique, something that Mu Chen was unable to do in the past. However, as of now, he was sufficiently able to do so.

Bang!

With a pat of his palm, the jet-black Lightning God's Hand brought about peals of thunder as it howled across the horizon. Finally, under the shocked and astonished gazes in the surroundings, it smashed head-on against the blood demon shadow sword!

Boom!

An astonishingly loud sound rang out as frightening fluctuations transformed directly into hurricanes, crazily sweeping out across the horizon.

At this moment, Qiu Beihai's pale face completely lost all of its colour.

That's because he had actually seen dense cracks appearing on the surface of the blood-red shadow sword in that terrifying collision...

Chapter 462: Tiger's Den

Crack!

Blood-coloured cracks continued to spread throughout the surface of the blood demon shadow sword. Within the short span of a dozen breaths, they had already covered the entirety of the gigantic shadow sword.

Furthermore, due to the sparkling of the incomparably black bolts of lightning, the sea of blood at the back of the blood demon shadow sword had surged and flared while it evaporated away. At this moment, the bloody aura that had perfused the entire region started to rapidly dissipate away.

"This is your final card?"

Looking towards the deathly-pale Qiu Beihai with an indifferent gaze, Mu Chen shook his head in disappointment while saying, "Compared to Ji Xuan, you're truly too far behind."

Suddenly, he clenched his hand, only for the gigantic Lightning God's Hand to give a furious clench. As black bolts of lightning crazily arced and danced on the surface of the palm, it grabbed the blood demon shadow sword within it. In the next instant, the black lightning exploded, and with a gigantic bang, the blood demon shadow sword was completely crushed by the giant black lightning hand.

Puff.

As the blood demon shadow sword was crushed, Qiu Beihai's face instantly contorted as he spurted a mouthful of blood out, while the Spiritual Energy fluctuations around his body rapidly declined. Clearly, he had suffered serious injuries.

The hearts of the various groups in the surroundings slightly trembled as their gazes grew solemn as they took in the scene before them. No one there imagined that the collaboration between two experts that passed their Human Body Disaster would still suffer such a miserable defeat by the hands of Mu Chen.

"How is this Mu Chen this formidable? He's clearly only at the realm of Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase! However, from the looks of his combat prowess, I'm afraid that he might be be comparable to those experts that have passed their Spiritual Energy Disaster..."

"Truly frightening."

"I reckon that this Azure Heavens Spiritual Academy group is finished."

"Looks like the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy is really going to have a meteoric rise in this Great Spiritual Academy Tournament."

Soft whispers of discussion rang out, with unconcealable shock and astonishment present in those voices.

They had originally expected a fierce battle between the two great Spiritual Academies. However, who would have expected that such a scene would happen? As of now, that Mu Chen had clearly not unleashed his true strength yet. However, even with that, his attack was more than sufficient to sort out that Qui Beihai and that Shen Jun.

Mu Chen shot a glance towards Qiu Beihai and his bloodstained lips. At this moment, the latter shot a gloomy gaze back, with an uncontainable feeling of dread and terror surfacing within his heart. In the next instant, he furiously turned around and crazily fled away. He already knew that he did not have any chance of victory anymore.

"Captain!"

Upon noticing this, the faces of the three group members from the Azure Heavens Spiritual Academy that were being suppressed by Xu Huang and the other two instantly contorted as confusion filled their hearts and minds. Due to this, the stalemate was broken by Xu Huang and the other two as boundless palm winds pierced through their defenses. Smashing against their chests, they were sent flying back while spurting blood.

Looking towards the fleeing figure of Qiu Beihai, Mu Chen gave a flick of his finger, sending a ray of light shooting across the horizon at lightning speed.

"Ahh!"

Qiu Bei hai's miserable shriek rang out from the distance as blood flowed out from his hands. His remaining fingers had all been chopped off. Nevertheless, despite being overwhelmed with soul-shocking dread and terror, he did not give any care about his chopped-off digits, opting to hastily flee away like a dog with its tail between its legs.

Mu Chen didn't give chase, as he knew that Qiu Beihai could not only be considered as disabled, his combative spirit had been completely broken, with his heart being filled with the scars of terror. Furthermore, he had tossed his group members aside and fled on his own. Even if he was to return, this group from the Azure Heavens Spiritual Academy would no longer treat him as their Captain. When this matter gets circulated around, he would even suffer the contempt and disdain from all of the students of the Azure Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Such an ending was even more cruel than being killed.

Nevertheless, Mu Chen didn't have any pity for Qiu Beihai. Within the Spiritual Road, the latter had clearly participated in the schemes of Ji Xuan. Furthermore, after forcing Mu Chen to get expelled from the Spiritual Road, he had actually dared to encircle Luo Li. This was something that Mu Chen couldn't endure. Therefore, the latter ending up in such a state was something he could only blame himself for.

Ring!

While Qiu Beihai was fleeing away, Sword Aura pervaded through the air not far away as a shadow sword sliced apart rays of Spiritual Energies, before finally resting right in front of the chests of the Group Captain of the Great Cauldron Spiritual Academy. The swift and fierce Sword Aura caused the latter's body to tremble as he hastily raised his hands in the air while saying with a hoarse, bitter laugh, "I surrender. Please show mercy."

Shooting a glare at him with her beautiful eyes, Luo Li didn't say anything. Instead, she only extended her slender, jade-like hand.

Seeing this, the Captain of the Great Cauldron Spiritual Academy gave a bitter and pained smile before giving a sigh, while cursing and swearing at

Qiu Beihai's entire family in his heart. That bastard! If I'd known that he had provoked such a formidable opponent, I wouldn't have collaborated with him! The current situation wasn't good for his group. As with the saying of trying to lure a chicken only to end up with losing the lure, they now had to hand over their hard-earned points without getting any in return.

With a clench of his hand, his Academy Plaque appeared, before he obediently handed it to Luo Li.

Receiving the Academy Plaque, Luo Li turned around and shot towards Mu Chen. Taking it over, he shot a look at it, before saying out with a smile "Quite juicy."

There was actually over 700 points displayed on the Academy Plaque of this Great Cauldron Spiritual Academy group, which was about the same as their group. From the looks of it, these fellows had spent quite a bit of time snatching those points from other groups. Therefore, without the slightest bit of politeness, Mu Chen transferred half of the points over to his Academy Plaque. Due to this, the number of points his group had broke past the thousand mark, reaching over 1100 points.

"It's a pity. If we're able to snatch the points of the Azure Heavens Spiritual Academy group, we would have been able to enter the Top 16," said Luo Li as she shot a look towards the direction which Qiu Beihai had fled to. Such an Academy Plaque was only held by the Captain, and was the only one that could be snatched by others to transfer the points. Those in the group members hands were used as a source of information.

Therefore, with Qiu Beihai fleeing away, they had no way to snatch his points. "Now's not the time to enter the Top 16," replied Mu Chen as he shook his head. If they were promoted into the Top 16, they would attract the attention of other groups. Although this was something that Mu Chen wasn't afraid of, there would be quite a bit of trouble that would come then. At this moment, the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament had just started. Mu Chen felt that revealing himself wasn't a very smart thing to do.

The reason why Wen Qingxuan, Ji Xuan and the rest dared to do such a thing was not only due to them possessing strength above the masses, but also due to their group members being the elite amongst the elite. Compared to them, Mu Chen's group was clearly much weaker. Therefore, revealing themselves wouldn't be good for them.

Being calm and intelligent, Luo Li immediately understood Mu Chen's decision in an instant, nodding her head in approval. If Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong were placed in their group, they would be able to remove much of the dread and fear that might come with entering the top 16. However, it was a pity, because if they were to distribute the students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy that way, the strength of the second group would be too weak.

With a flick of his finger, Mu Chen sent the Academy Plaque back to the Captain of the Great Cauldron Spiritual Academy before saying with a grin, "Thank you very much."

Hearing his words, the face of the Captain twitched a few times. Looking at his points on the Academy Plaque, which have been deduced by half, he felt as if his heart was starting to bleed from the pain. Those were points that they had tolled and worked painstakingly hard to obtain. However, at this moment, half of them have been snatched away. This really was like the saying, robbers will always be robbed.

Ignoring that Captain, Mu Chen turned his gaze towards the combat zone not far from him, where the group from the Desolation Spiritual Academy was.

The two groups that were originally surrounding the Desolation Spiritual Academy clearly had discovered the changes that had happened on the other side, causing the faces of all their members to turn ugly, especially when noticing Mu Chen's gaze shooting over. This caused their hearts to start jumping in fear. The two Captains clenched their teeth, before raising their hands and stopping their respective groups.

Seeing that, the group from the Desolation Spiritual Academy breathed a sigh of relief.

With a wave of his hand, Mu Chen brought Luo Li and the others as they shot over. Staring at the two groups, he spoke out with a faint smile. "Did you two groups also collaborated with Qiu Beihai?"

"Haha, what are you saying, Brother. We've never collaborated with him. That was just a mutual benefit. However, since he had scrammed off now, we naturally don't have a single bit of relation with him." Hearing Mu Chen's question, the two Captains instantly gave a dry laugh, before replying. They had seen how miserable the outcome was for the Great Cauldron Spiritual Academy. Thus, they naturally didn't dare to make an enemy out of the powerful group before them.

With a smile, Mu Chen nodded his head and said, "Since its the case, would it be inconvenient for you to let us pass?"

Hearing his words, the hearts of the two groups instantly turned cold as they thought, Indeed, this Mu Chen has his sights on the group from the Desolation Spiritual Academy.

Exchanging glances, all of them could see the unwillingness brimming in each other's eyes. After suppressing the Desolation Spiritual Academy after much difficulty to such a state, the information was almost about to enter their hands. However, an obstruction had suddenly appeared, one that was so fierce and ferocious, even defeating the entire group from the Azure Heavens Spiritual Academy...

"Sigh."

Making a helpless sigh, they could only shake their heads and move aside. Mu Chen not dealing with them or taking half of their points away could already be considered as a much better outcome than what the group from the Great Cauldron Spiritual Academy had gone through.

Giving no care about them, Mu Chen slowly walked forward, shooting a look at the Desolation Spiritual Academy. Having clearly experienced a great long battle, the faces of the latter were all somewhat pale, showing their enormous consumption of strength. However, the strength of this group was truly extremely strong, as them being no less stronger than Qiu Beihai's group. There were two experts who had passed their Human Body

Disaster in this group, with the other three members being of Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase. With such strength, it was no wonder why they were able to endure for one whole day in the Top 16.

As Mu Chen was sizing up the group from the Desolation Spiritual Academy, a somewhat burly youth stood up from the latter. With a shift of his gaze, he cupped his hands towards Mu Chen and said, "This Brother, I'm Lin Zhou of the Desolation Spiritual Academy, the Captain of this group."

"Haha. So it's Captain Lin Zhou."

With a grin, Mu Chen cupped his hands and said, "I'm Mu Chen, the Captain of this group."

Seeing Mu Chen's smile, Lin Zhou gave a dry laugh before saying, "Thank you very much for helping us escape, Captain Mu Chen. Our Desolation Spiritual Academy will remember this favor. If you have anything you need help with in the future, please do say so. However, we bid farewell to you all today."

After finishing his statement, he gathered his group in a bid to quickly retreat.

However, before they could turn around, they saw that Luo Li had brought Xu Huang and the other two to block their path of retreat, causing a shiver to run down their bodies.

"Captain Lin Zhou, we've just met today, and have yet to have a proper conversation. Why not leave with us first? Look at all the tigers staring covetously at you in the surroundings. If you leave like that, I'm afraid that nothing good will end for you." Walking forward, Mu Chen gave an intimate pat on Lin Zhou's shoulder and spoke out with a gentle smile. Are you joking? We've been painstakingly chasing you guys for an entire day, and have even crossed hands with the Azure Heavens Spiritual Academy. How can I let you run away that easily?

Lin Zhou's expression turned stiff as he looked towards Mu Chen, before finally giving a bitter laugh. Previously, he had seen how formidable Mu Chen was. The group from the Azure Heavens Spiritual Academy

possessed strength that was comparable to his group. However, they had ended up in such a miserable state in the end. Therefore, let's not talk about their current state, where their energy consumption was that massive. Even if they were in their best state, they would not dare to take action against Mu Chen.

As he and his four other group members looked at each other, all of them became dejected and crestfallen. They never imagined that they would end up in a tiger's den after escaping from a pack of wolves. What luck they have.

Chapter 463: Intel

The various groups in this region that were originally eyeing the Desolation Spiritual Academy group covetously could now only stare mutely as Mu Chen and his group brought them and left into the distance. Nevertheless, despite that, none of them could muster any heart to go forward and contend. What a joke! Even the group from the Azure Heavens Spiritual Academy was dealt with that easily. How would their groups dare to go up and issue a challenge?

Therefore, faced with the two groups leaving into the distance, they could only stare at each other, before heaving a sigh in helplessness.

Mu Chen brought along the Desolation Spiritual Academy group far away to evade those covetously eyeing groups. Once he discovered that there wasn't anyone chasing them, he take a breath of relief. Looks like him defeating Qiu Beihai and Shen Jun early had resulted in no small amount of shock in the hearts of those groups. If not, it would truly be extremely difficult for him to bring this Desolation Spiritual Academy group away that easily under the attention of so many groups.

Exchanging glances with Luo Li, Mu Chen descended on a remote mountain peak. Seeing this, Lin Zhou could only give a helpless sigh, before bringing his group members and descending.

"You guys take a rest first."

Landing on the mountain peak, Mu Chen sent a faint smile towards the pale-looking Lin Zhou and his group before speaking out.

Hearing those words, Lin Zhou and his group immediately gawked. Clearly, they had not imagined that Mu Chen would actually let them rest and recover; after all, they would be able to put up some resistance upon recovering their strength.

"I believe that Brother Lin Zhou should not be the type that would destroy the bridge after crossing the river, right?"

Mu Chen said while sending a smile towards Lin Zhou. Patting the

gigantic rock beside him with his hand, he gave a flick of his finger. With a crack, the rock instantly turned into powder, fluttering about in the air. Patting away the dust on his hand, the smile on his face turned bright and radiant.

Exchanging glances with his group members, Lin Zhou gave a dry laugh. From the looks of it, all of them could feel the threat present within Mu Chen's words.

Silently cursing in their hearts, they could only sit down and close their eyes without delay to recover the Spiritual Energy they had consumed.

Only after seeing Lin Zhou and his group closing their eyes to cultivate did Luo Li approach Mu Chen. Casting her bright and beautiful eyes towards the latter, she softly spoke out, "What are you trying to do?"

If Mu Chen wanted to snatch the points from them, he clearly didn't have to go through that much trouble.

At this moment, Xu Huang and the other two had also looked over and stared at Mu Chen.

"To us, the most important thing now isn't points," replied Mu Chen with a faint smile. "Did you remember what the Dean said? The place we're in right now is a fragment of the Shattered Continent. On this fragment, there are many ancient treasures, as well as inheritances. If we're lucky, we might be able to obtain some of them, which would definitely increase our strength by leaps and bounds."

"Don't just look at how fierce the competition for the Top 16 is. Other than them, there is also a small amount of groups that are genuinely strong and powerful. As for the rest, they simply don't have to qualifications to stand till the very end."

"Those formidable groups have not completely revealed themselves. That's because they aren't anxious to snatch points. Instead, they are looking for remnants across the entire continent, letting their groups become even stronger. As for those groups that are going about snatching points, they would pay the price for that in the end. Without sufficient strength, regardless of how many points you have, you'll just be feeding

other people in the very end."

"Strength and power are still the greatest factors in the rankings in the very end."

Expressions of deep thought appeared on the faces of Xu Huang and the other two, before they fiercely nodded their heads. What Mu Chen said was correct. If one didn't possess sufficient strength, even if they were able to obtain the first place in the point rankings, so what? At that time, they would merely be a fat sheep in the eyes of everyone. Those few groups that have bid their time and concealed their strength would be able to easily defeat them. When that happens, their points would still be snatched away.

"Truthfully speaking, there's still quite a disparity in strength of our group when compared to those elite groups," said Mu Chen slowly as he looked towards Xu Huang and the others.

Hearing that, Xu Huang and the other two scratched their heads. Yet, all of them did not refute his words. After all, that was indeed the reality. In their group, the only ones that were truly able to compare with those experts in the elite groups were Mu Chen and Luo Li. As for them three, speaking bluntly, there was a possibility that they would drag the group down.

"Therefore, I hope that we can increase the strength of our group. At the very least, I want for you to pass through your Human Body Disaster," said Mu Chen in a serious tone.

Hearing that, Xu Huang, Zhao Qingshan and Mu Fengyang all gave a bitter laugh. Human Body Disaster, huh. Thinking about it would bring about fear in them. If one didn't have any external aid and help when attempting to pass through this tribulation, none of them had much confidence in succeeding.

"So you wish to search for remnants to increase the strength of our group?" Shooting a glance towards Lin Zhou and his group, who were in closed-eye meditation, Luo Li spoke out, "You want to obtain the information about the remnants of the Ancient Antiquity from them?"

Mu Chen nodded his head in response. Looking at Lin Zhou, he smiled and said, "I truly don't know if the luck of those fellows is good or bad. Within a day's worth of time in here, they were actually able to obtain information with regards to the remnants from the Ancient Antiquity present here. However, in the end, news about this was divulged out. The critical element was that they were in the Top 16, which caused their location to be revealed. Therefore, it had attracted so many groups to covetously eye them."

At this moment, Luo Li could not help covering her mouth and softly laugh. Her clear and bell-like laughter caused Xu Huang and the other two to cast sympathetic gazes towards Lin Zhou and his group. This group of fellows is indeed pitiful.

"However, will they tell us about that information? That thing should be very important, right? The less people know about it, the better it is." Xu Huang said.

"I believe that if we're sufficiently sincere, coupled with the fact that we've saved them, that Captain Lin Zhou isn't the type that would show ingratitude to a friend," said Mu Chen with a grin. "I've always been very kind to friends. However, if he's the type that would destroy the bridge after crossing it, I won't let him off that easily. Although, according to the rules, the points of a group can only be deducted by half in one day, If we were to 'guard their corpses', we only have to stand guard for a few days to drain them all clean. It's good enough to let them be eliminated."

Hearing that, Xu Huang and the other two were completely dumbfounded. Looking towards the gentle smile present on Mu Chen's face, the three of them could not help shivering. Isn't that too vicious?

Luo Li casted her beautiful eyes towards the cultivating Lin Zhou, with the latter's eyelids seemingly twitching slightly at this moment. Seeing that, she gave a laugh and shook her head, not choosing to say any words.

Not caring about the dumbfounded and stupified Xu Huang and the other two, Mu Chen continued to speak in a lazy fashion. "Now's the time

to rest. Let's wait for Captain Lin Zhou and his group to recover, before having a friendly exchange with them."

Exchanging glances with each other, Xu Huang and the other two could only sit down and wait for Lin Zhou and his group to wake up.

Bringing about a wift of fragrance, Luo Li took gentle steps forward and took a seat beside Mu Chen. An amused expression surfaced in her beautiful eyes as she shot a glare at him, while saying in a soft voice, "You bad boy. You don't have to scare people to death."

Shooting a cheeky smile towards her, Mu Chen looked towards Lin Zhou, whose body appeared to be slightly trembling. Moving near to Luo Li, he gave a helpless sigh and replied, "There's no choice. Being a Captain, I have to take the entire group into consideration. After all, what happens in the future can't always depend on the two of us. I have to find a way to let Xu Huang and the other two increase their strength. Naturally, the remnants from the Ancient Antiquity would bring a massive benefit to use. I believe that those elite groups are searching the entire continent for those remnants. Therefore, I don't want to fall behind."

Complaining bitterly, he said, "Being a Captain truly isn't easy."

Raising her eye towards Mu Chen, Luo Li shot an ambiguous smile towards him before saying, "

Unknowingly, Mu Chen had quietly seized Luo Li's waist in his evil grasp, causing her to slightly freeze up. Looking towards the ambiguous smile on Luo Li's face, he gave a grin, yet he didn't withdraw his face. Instead, he placed his palm on the young girl's waist, with such slenderness causing him to feel reluctant to part.

Seeing that this fellow's skin was that thick, a pinkish shade surfaced on her lovable face as she shot an embarrassed glare at him. Nevertheless, after slightly hesitating, she rested her face gently on his shoulder. As her lovable nose rubbed against Mu Chen's neck, her breath was akin to the fragrance of flowers, giving off an exceedingly alluring sight.

Seeing the intimacy between the two, Xu Huang and the other two turned their heads away by their own initiative as their faces became filled

with envy.

"Luo Li, we've been in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy for close to two years already, right?" Tightly grabbing the little waste of the young girl, Mu Chen spoke out in a soft voice.

Luo Li gently nodded. Seemingly able to guess what it was about, her clear and bright eyes grew slightly dim.

"Perhaps, there's not much time left for me." replied Luo Li slowly.

Raising his head, Mu Chen deeply exhaled, as feelings of disappointment and frustration surfaced within his heart. He knew that there truly was not much time left for Luo Li to spend with him. Being able to leave the Luo God Clan for close to two years of time might be already the greatest compromise her grandfather could make. Once the time was up, she had to return to the Luo God Clan and receive the responsibilities that she should hold, which was to become the next Queen of the clan.

At that time, she would need to hold the heavy responsibility of the lives of the millions of citizens of their Luo God Clan.

He truly didn't know how a girl like her would be able to endure such a heavy responsibility. Just thinking about it caused Mu Chen to feel pain in his heart. However, despite that, as of now, he was too weak, and was simply unable to provide any help for her...

"Luo Li, regardless of what happens in the future, you definitely have to remember to wait for me. Wait for me to head to the Luo God Clan. At that time, I'll squash anyone who bullies you to death!" Lowering his head to look towards the soul-stirring face beside him, Mu Chen spoke out in a soft voice.

Luo Li blushed as a smile surfaced on her face, while her eyes were turning slightly red. She looked towards the handsome and resolute face of the youth beside her. When I'm in the Luo God Clan, I'll have some support, at the very least. However, you'll be alone, traversing the vast Great Thousand Worlds. Wanting to walk on the path of experts, how much hard work and effort will you have to pay?

"Yes."

However, she did not speak the words in her heart, she only chose to gently look towards Mu Chen and slightly nodded her head, just like a little wife.

With a smile, Mu Chen lowered his head, looking straight towards Luo Li's slightly opened eyes, before planting a peck on her lovable lips.

A pinkish shade appeared on Luo Li's beautiful face. Nevertheless, due to her not knowing how long she could still remain by Mu Chen's side, Luo Li, who was usually too shy to be too intimate with him in front of others, slightly closed her eyes, giving in to his philandering.

"Sigh."

However, Mu Chen's enjoyment didn't last for long, as a dry cough broke the atmosphere. This caused Luo Li to instantly regain her senses. With her face turning beet-red, she shoved Mu Chen away and fled away in embarrassment.

Feeling a great sense of disappointment, Mu Chen instantly turned his head around viciously, looking straight towards the just awakened Lin Zhou, who was now awkwardly looking back at him. At this moment, the glare shooting out from Mu Chen's eyes was so fierce to the point of wanting to crush the latter's body into a thousand pieces.

Seeing that glare shooting straight at himself, Lin Zhou's scalp instantly turned numb. Thinking back to the words those devils had said earlier, he hastily raised his hand and spoke out.

"Captain Mu Chen, we're willing to share the information."

Chapter 464: Ruins

"Oh?"

When the words "share the information" entered his ears, the fierce gaze coming from Mu Chen disappeared in the air almost instantly, being replaced by a gentle smile that surfaced on his handsome face. With a laugh, he said, "Captain Lin Zhou's really magnanimous. Mu Chen thanks you for this."

Seeing Mu Chen cup his hands towards him, Lin Zhou could not help twitching his mouth and cry, yet no tears would fall. The fellow before him was simply more frightening than Qiu Beihai and the others.

Mu Chen waved his hands to his group members, gathering them around. Even Luo Li with her flushed lovable face had come over. Nevertheless, her watery eyes, which still contained some shades of embarrassment and the blush on her exquisite-looking face caused Lin Zhou and his group to turn dazed for a moment, before they hastily looked away.

"Captain Lin Zhou, please tell the information that you know for everyone to know. If it's truly worth its value, I think that we might be able to collaborate. This should not be a bad thing for you guys." A serious expression appeared on Mu Chen's face. He knew that just relying on threats would result in them not getting much of an advantage. Only in a situation of mutual benefit would it allow Lin Zhou and his group to withdraw the thoughts of betrayal from their hearts.

Lin Zhou shot a somewhat strange look at Mu Chen. There were a lot of people that wanted to withhold this information for themselves. People like Mu Chen, who would openly announce it, was of the rarity. However, Mu Chen's words had caused Lin Zhou to feel slightly at ease. From the looks of it, the latter should not be the type of person that would turn hostile upon getting the information.

"This information was obtained by us at our transmission descent point..." With a bitter laugh, Lin Zhou started to explain. "At that time,

when crossing hands with other groups, we had shattered a mountain apart. At that moment, a jade slip flew out from within, with the information recorded on it having something to do with an ancient ruin."

Now, the faces of Mu Chen and his group were filled with dumbfound shock and astonishment as they thought, This is also possible? Isn't the luck of these fellows too good?

"There's some directions indicated on the jade slip. As for those ruins, it should be located in the northwestern direction."

"What's inside those ruins?" asked Mu Chen while in deep thought.

"We're not quite sure," replied Lin Zhou helplessly while shaking his head, before saying, "That's the only information recorded in the jade slip. I'm afraid that you would have to head inside those ruins to get more detailed information like that."

"Furthermore... as of now, we aren't the only ones who know of those ruins. According to the information that we've gathered, there might be some groups that have already discovered the ruins. Amongst them, there are some extremely formidable groups..." said Lin Zhou as he wrinkled his forehead. "It seems... that one group from the Saint Spiritual Academy is also rushing there."

Hearing that, Mu Chen's eyes instantly narrowed, while his gaze became much more fierce. "Which group from the Saint Spiritual Academy?"

If it was the group led by Ji Xuan, wouldn't they be bumping into each other in advance?

Shaking his head once again, Lin Zhou said, "In any case, all of the four groups from the Saint Spiritual Academy are extremely strong and powerful. Meeting any of them would be a misfortune. Naturally, from the looks of it, the group led by that Ji Xuan seems to be the most formidable. If we are to bump into him this time, I'm afraid that we won't get much done in the ruins."

Giving a faint smile, Mu Chen replied, "We'll know when we bump into him."

Lin Zhou knew that the youth before him were similarly not your average mill of a student. Nodding his head, he carefully spoke out. "About this, Captain Mu Chen. Are you planning to collaborate with us and head to the ruins? If that's the case, how should we split the spoils of war?"

"We'll care for each other and enter the ruins. As for what happens after that, it will depend on each person's ability on who would be able to obtain the spoils. Do all we can to maintain the same side and deal with any troubles together, with no one getting jealous of one another. Is that alright?" replied Mu Chen with a smile. Lin Zhou's group wasn't considered weak. If they were to collaborate, they would be quite a bit stronger as a whole.

Exchanging glances with his group, Lin Zhou deeply pondered awhile, before nodding his head. This seemed to be good, as it could avoid misunderstandings when the treasures were distributed unevenly then.

"Then, should we make our move?" Lin Zhou said pressingly. They had originally planned to head quickly towards those ruins. It's just that due to the news about the ruins being exposed, which led to them being obstructed and not able to extricate themselves, they ended up in this current situation.

"Before heading off, it's best that we swipe your name off this list. Won't anyone be asking for trouble by fervently climbing up there for no reason?" With a smile, Mu Chen replied with a shrug. "We were able to find you guys by relying on this..."

Lin Zhou and his group started to blush, before replying with awkwardness. "That's not a problem, now. We're already off that list."

Hearing that, Mu Chen was surprised, instantly taking out his Academy Plaque to take a look. Indeed, he discovered that Lin Zhou and his group had disappeared from the names on the Top 16.

"As of now, there's a lot of movement in the Top 16. Due to us not getting any points for this period of time, we've slowly been pushed down," said Lin Zhou.

Hearing that, Mu Chen nodded his head. Following the elapsing time,

the movements in the Top 16 would gradually stabilised. However, when that happened, the groups that were still able to remain in the Top 16 would truly be the formidable ones.

"Let's make our move," said Mu Chen as he stood up.

Without any hesitation, Lin Zhou and his group slightly organised themselves, before the two groups shot to the skies at the same time. Transforming into ten rays of light, they shot towards the northwestern direction.

In the Spiritual Energy-encased ray of light, Mu Chen looked towards the distance, with a shadow of deep thought appearing in his eyes. Half a year ago, he had obtained the "Great Solar Undying Body". Although it was extremely powerful, after doing some research and study on it, he discovered that it had an extremely strict requirement for its cultivation. Not only would one need to be extremely talented, one would also need three Heavenly Treasures as an auxiliary support to be able to successfully cultivate that Sovereign Celestial Body.

Mu Chen had previously searched for those three Heavenly Treasures. However, he wasn't able to find even one trace about them. He had even consulted Dean Tai Cang, with the latter only able to shake his head in helplessness. That's because those three Heavenly Treasures were too precious and hard to find.

Of those three, one was the "Nine Suns Divine Lingzhi". It's said to be an item of extreme Yang that was extremely scarce within the entire universe. It radiated with limitless rays of light, with a Divin Fire being contained within the Divine Lingzi. Even Sovereign Realm experts did not dare to recklessly consume it. However, if one was to refine and use it to temper one's Spiritual Energy, one would possess Spiritual Energy that possessed the power of the sun, something which was extremely overbearing and tyrannical.

Such a miraculous treasure that could change the attribute of one's Spiritual Energy was something that would shake even the hearts of Sovereign Realm experts. Therefore, once it appears, it would lead to a

snatching contest between various Sovereign Realm experts for this exceedingly precious treasure.

The second treasure was the "Void Great Solar Fruit". Born in the void, it absorbed the strength of the sun present in the universe. A mature Void Great Sun Fruit would appear akin to a scorching sun within the region it was in. Even after burning for a thousand years, its brilliance would never dim. As long as one refined it, one would have a chance to cultivate a "Great Solar Body". This was ranked 95th place in the rankings of the top 99 Sovereign Celestial Bodies. Although it was at the rear, there was no one that doubted its strength.

The third treasure was the "Undying Divine Leaf". This item was more mysterious than the other two, as its said to be a leaf from the Udying Divine Tree. This divine tree was a plant, yet it possessed intelligence that wasn't inferior to a human. It could even be considered as a type of living spirit. A mature Undying Divine Tree was something that even a Sovereign realm expert didn't dare to recklessly approach, what's more if they had any intention to obtain the essence-filled leaves on its branches.

Even after going out to gather information, Mu Chen was unable to get any news about these three treasures. Even Dean Tai Cang wasn't able to answer his question, with the only thing he could tell Mu Chen being that those treasures were extremely hard to find in the outside world. However, if one possessed enough luck, one might be able to obtain some information about them within the ruins present in this Shattered Continent.

Hu.

Mu Chen gently exhaled, before flinging his mouth in helplessness. This "Great Solar Undying Body" truly is something that ordinary people can't afford to enjoy. Wanting to collect those three treasures was easier said than done. However, such a demanding requirement caused Mu Chen to have growing anticipation towards the "Great Solar Undying Body".

If he was able to successfully cultivate it, it would have a gigantic benefit

in the promotion of his strength in the future.

As of now, although Mu Chen was still quite a distance away from the realm of Sovereigns, he still had to plan ahead for the future to avoid him being unable to cultivate the "Great Solar Undying Body" upon his promotion into the Sovereign Realm. At that time, it would truly worry the living hell out of him.

"I hope that I'll be able to obtain some clues about three treasures in these ruins..."

Mu Chen muttered. Flinging his head back, he stopped thinking about it anymore, and increased his speed as he shot towards the northwestern direction.

...

The location of the ruins was extremely remote. When Mu Chen and the groups got close to the region, they had already spent the greater half of the day's time travelling. As the sun set, it cast dusky-red rays of brilliance that enveloped the world.

Mu Chen and two groups gradually slowed their speed as they neared the region, with their gazes all pointing towards their front.

Before them was a dark primary forest, with dense undergrowth spewing out from within. This primary forest wasn't teemimg with life. Instead, it gave people a strange gloomy feeling, with its dark colour causing people to feel extremely uncomfortable.

Narrowing his eyes, Mu Chen looked towards the region before him. Wrinkling his forehead, he said, "Looks like the location of this ruins has already been exposed."

Hearing that, Lin Zhou and the rest followed his gaze and look over. Indeed, there were already groups of figures present in the air above the region. Furthermore, whooshing sounds continuously rang out from the distance. This caused them to give a sigh in helplessness. If not for them being obstructed and held back for so long, they might have already been able to search this place. However, as of now, it had attracted more and

more groups to it. Wanting a piece of the pie now would get more and more difficult.

Sensing the arrival of Mu Chen and the two groups, shadows of caution and vigilance surfaced in the eyes of the few groups present in this region.

Whoosh!

However, just at this moment, their gazes suddenly shifted as they looked solemnly towards the northwards direction. At this moment, extremely boundless Spiritual Energy fluctuations were sweeping out from there. If one was to look closely, one could seemingly see that the skies over there were flooded by the boundless Spiritual Energies, while multiple rays of light were shooting over at lightning speeds.

"It's the group from the Saint Spiritual Academy!"

Some people exclaimed, with their voices brimming with dread.

When Mu Chen heard the exclamation, his expression dulled down as he shifted his cold gaze towards the mentioned direction.

Chapter 465: Four Academies Gather

Swish!

Shooting across the skies, the rays of light brought about vast and boundless Spiritual Energies that flooded over the entire region, causing the faces of everyone present to change, with their eyes filling up with dread and fear. Indeed, this Saint Spiritual Academy was truly worthy of being the Spiritual Academy that had obtained the most outstanding results in the multiple past Great Spiritual Academy Tournaments.

Mu Chen darkly looked at the multiple streaks of light shooting over, while beside him, Luo Li had tightly clenched her longsword. Xu Huang and the other two also had solemn expressions on their faces as they prepared themselves. There was some discontent between the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy and the Saint Spiritual Academy. Therefore, they had no choice but to be more cautious and vigilant.

Under everyone's nervous attention, the streak of lights came to a hover in the skies above this region. As the rays of light started to slowly dissipate away, five figures appeared within everyone's sight.

These five people were dressed in white robes, with each and every one appearing tall and straight. Unconcealable arrogance radiated from them, while the gazes shooting from them possessed an attitude of looking down on everyone present.

Present within the centre of the group was an ordinary-looking male with an indifferent expression on face. From his looks, he didn't seem outstanding. Yet, the hands that extended out of his sleeve were exceedingly eye-catching. Those hands appeared rather slender and exceedingly white, to the point of seemingly sparkling with a jade-like luster, something that appeared extremely mysterious.

Among the five people, he stood right in the front, with the other four standing one step behind him. This minute detail made those sharp and astute people know that this seemingly ordinary-looking male was the Captain of this Saint Spiritual Academy group.

"It's not Ji Xuan..."

Looking at the five people that had appeared in the skies, some of the darkness on Mu Chen's face dissipated away. Nevertheless, he still locked his cold gaze onto them, with a large portion of his focus converging on the body of the youth with jade-like hands. At this moment, Mu Chen could sense extremely tyrannical Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiating from the latter's back.

Those fluctuations were even stronger than those from Mo Xingtian!

"An expert of Spiritual Energy Disaster?"

Mu Chen's eyes slightly narrowed. Truly worthy of the academy that had the hope of obtaining the position of Academy Head, Saint Spiritual Academy. Their foundation was actually that strong. An expert of Spiritual Energy Disaster... this was the strongest expert that Mu Chen had seen amongst all the groups he had encountered ever since stepping into the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament.

Furthermore, other than this Captain that passed his Spiritual Energy Disaster, of the other four members of this Saint Spiritual Academy group, there were actually three of them that had passed their Human Body Disaster! The weakest person was even stronger than Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase, most likely having failed passing through his Human Body Disaster. Yet, his strength was already much stronger than any ordinary Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase.

In this group, the Captain had passed his Spiritual Energy Disaster, with three members having passed their Human Body Disaster and the last one having failed his Human Body Disaster...

Looking from the surface, this line-up seemed to instantly suppress Mu Chen's group beneath it.

At this moment, Mu Chen had already felt how tyrannical this group from the Saint Spiritual Academy was, with Xu Huang and the other two having also sensed that, causing their faces to turn solemn. These opponents were truly strong and powerful. If not for Mu Chen and Luo Li, their group simply wouldn't be able to endure even the first wave of

attacks from this group.

Compared to their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, the Saint Spiritual Academy truly had the leading edge. Although their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had been established since a long time ago, their disparity, when compared with the Saint Spiritual Academy, was stretched far and wide just from this comparison.

"That's one of the four Holy Sons of the Saint Spiritual Academy, Xia Hou. It's said that he has already passed his Spiritual Energy Disaster, and possesses extremely tyrannical strength... Sigh. Such a formidable group has come here. This really is troublesome," said Lin Zhou with a sigh. With the appearance of this group from the Saint Spiritual Academy, the groups in the surroundings were shocked to the point of not daring to mess around. Clearly, all of them knew that they absolutely possessed no qualifications to contest with that group for the ancient remnant.

"Xia Hou, huh..." Mu Chen muttered as he nodded his head.

"From what I've heard about the Saint Spiritual Academy, of the four Holy Sons, this Xia Hou had crossed hands with Ji Xuan before. Naturally, the former Holy Son ousted by Ji Xuan doesn't count," said Lin Zhou.

"Oh?" Mu Chen slightly raised his eyebrows while asking, "Who won?"

"There's no victor or loser... However, at that time, Ji Xuan had just entered the Saint Spiritual Academy for no more than half a year. That fellow truly is a mostrous talent. In the short span of half a year, he was able to let one of the Holy Sons, Xia Hou to be unable to do anything to him. In my opinion, among the four Holy Sons, I'm afraid that the strongest one should be Ji Xuan. However, the other three Holy Sons seem to dislike such words," replied Lin Zhou.

Hearing Lin Zhou's reply, Mu Chen nodded his head. Indeed, Ji Xuan possessed talent that surpassed others. Added with the Baptism he got from the Spiritual Road, his progress in his cultivation would exceed others. Therefore, being able to not suffer defeat in a confrontation with that Xia Hou after entering the Saint Spiritual Academy for a short span of half a year didn't cause much shock or astonishment in Mu Chen.

In the air, upon their arrival, the Saint Spiritual Academy group didn't make any other action, only casting their gazes towards the dark original forest before them. However, they could clearly sense the strangeness of this forest before them, leading to them not immediately taking action for a moment.

With them not making their move, the other groups in the surroundings naturally didn't dare to make any reckless moved. Therefore, the atmosphere of this region started to stifle and turn suffocating.

Nevertheless, this suffocating atmosphere didn't last for long, before being broken by whooshing sounds coming from behind. At the same time, a sweet laughing voice resounded over from the distance.

"Keke. Looks like there truly is news about a remnant over here. The people from the Saint Spiritual Academy's actually here, too."

The sweet laughter was filled with flirtatious notes, being sweet to the point of causing people's hearts to jump. In the next instant, quite a few people raised their heads, only to see rays of light streaking over from the distance. As they descended on a mountain peak in the vicinity, slender and graceful figures surfaced from within.

"Its a group from the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy!"

Some people exclaimed in surprise, while the eyes of quite a few people slightly lit up. The Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy was a rather unique existence within the numerous Spiritual Academies present in the Great Thousand Worlds, since the entire academy was composed of lovable young girls. Such a scene would cause countless male students to uncontrollably drool. Unfortunately, the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy absolutely didn't accept any male students. Regardless of how high your talent was, none of that was considered if you were a male. Therefore, only those Spiritual Academies that were under the pretext of a cultural exchange would be able to temporarily stay in the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy and enjoy the miraculous feeling of living amongst the myriad of flowers present there.

At this moment, Mu Chen had also shot a curious gaze over while

thinking in his heart, Could this Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy group be the one led by Wen Qingxuan...?

He shot his gaze over, only to see five lovable young girls standing tall on the mountain peak akin to a lovely scene of blossoming plants swaying the breeze. In the middle of their ranks was a girl dressed in a red gown. Possessing a tall and slender physique, snow-white complexion and slender legs, with a willowy waist, her chest appeared exceedingly voluptuous. Concealed under her gown, their voluptuousness appeared as if they could break through her dress, causing the hearts of quite a few people to rapidly thump.

This girl was exceedingly beautiful, with a pair of long and narrow eyes that appeared akin to that of a fox spirit's, brimming with an unconcealable air of flirtatious intent.

"That doesn't seem like Wen Qingxuan." Although Mu Chen had not seen Wen Qingxuan before, he was able to sense that the girl before him was too coquettish-looking, and would naturally not be the type of person that could obtain the Spiritual Crown amongst the crowds of powers. Furthermore, although she was very strong, she had yet to genuinely reach the realm of Spiritual Energy Disaster. According to Mu Chen's guess, this girl that was dressed in a red grown possessed strength one notch higher than Mo Xingtian. From the looks of it, she should have already passed through her Spiritual Energy Disaster, but had clearly failed her first attempt...

"Haha. She's the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy's Tang Mei'er... its said that she's also an extremely outstanding girl within the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy. Although her fame and reputation isn't as great as Wen Qingxuan's, she has her own merits." Lin Zhou's eyes had similarly lit up as he looked towards this alluring and soul-stirring girl, while speaking with a smile.

Hearing that, Mu Chen nodded his head, yet a sigh rang within his heart. This group from the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy was unexpectedly even stronger than his group in its entirety. Other than Tang Mei'er, they had also two other group members that had passed their Human Body

Disaster.

"Even the group from the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy has arrived. Looks like it's going to be real lively here..." said Lin Zhou as he unblinkingly stared at Tang Mei'er.

Flinging his mouth, Mu Chen was about to say something, before his gaze slightly changed as he said, "Not only the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy... the people from the Martial Spiritual Academy has also come over."

Raising his head, he looked towards another direction, where Spiritual Energy fluctuations were similarly appearing from. In the next moment, rays of light shot over as a loud laughing voice resounded across the region. "Haha! It really is lively here. There's actually four of the five Great Academies here. Are we planning to have a decisive battle before the finale?"

Swish!

Five glowing shadows came shooting over, landing on a giant tree that towered over the land. Appearing from within were five youths dressed in black robes, of which one of them appeared exceedingly eye-catching. That was a rather burly and strongly-built male, with the muscles across his body appearibg as if they were cast from metal. Hoisted over his shoulder was a jet-black metal pole, while his eyes appeared as if they were filled with provocative fighting intent.

"That's the Martial Spiritual Academy's Zhou Yuan... That fellow's a mad demon in love with fighting..." Noticing the metal pole and the ape-like burly-built male whose shoulder the pole rested on, Lin Zhou quietly spoke out. "By no means do you want to provoke this mad man. Once you're set in his sights, he will chase you and beat you till the point where you won't be able to move an inch..."

Hearing that, Mu Chen gave a laugh. Staring at that Zhou Yuan, Mu Chen noticed that the latter's cultivation realm seemed to be at the same level as that Tang Mei'er.

Yet another group that possessed astonishing strength.

Feeling helpless, Mu Chen shrugged his shoulders. He never imagined that this remnant would actually attract groups from four of the five Great Academies over. If the Azure Heavens Spiritual Academy that he had sent flying away earlier was counted, it truly would be the gathering of the five Academies...

"Looks like this time... this remnant's not something good to search and enjoy."

Lin Zhou spoke out, while giving a bitter laugh. Originally, they could've been the first people here. Yet, after being obstructed for quite a long time, the information they were first privy to wasn't worth a single cent now. As news about this place circulated around, God-knows how many more groups would rush over here. Furthermore, there were still the groups from four of the Great Spiritual Academies present here, without a single one being easy to deal with.

Not mentioning the Saint Spiritual Academy, both the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy and the Martial Spiritual Academy were also vicious figureheads. As for the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy that Mu Chen's group had come from, although it appeared to be the weakest amongst the four Great Spiritual Academies present here, Lin Zhou knew that the youth by the name of Mu Chen was absolutely an abnormality. After all, this was the first time that he had seen someone of Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase being able beat and smash Human Body Disaster experts into such tumultuous states...

As of now, with the four groups gathered here, it seemed that there would be a good upcoming show to watch.

Chapter 466: Tang Mei'er

Numerous groups had converged on the verdant mountain range, forming a stretch of black across the region. Nevertheless, although there were quite a few of them present, there wasn't any group that dared to recklessly enter the strange and gloomy dark forest before them.

Firstly, all of them were taking precautions towards this unknown region. Secondly, the groups that had converged over here were too strong. Of the five Great Academies, there were even four of them present here. At this moment, making oneself stand out clearly wasn't a smart move.

At the same time, Mu Chen brought Luo Li and the rest towards a place that was neither far away or near the dark forest, while casting an indifferent gaze sweeping out from time-to-time towards the groups from the other three Great Spiritual Academies.

At this moment, amongst all the various groups that had converged over here, the group from the Saint Spiritual Academy that was led by Xia Hou was clearly the strongest. Furthermore, this group was also ranked in the Top 16, being placed at a not low rank of 7th place, with 2000 points under their belt. Speaking of this, they absolutely qualified to be ranked as a fat sheep. However, with their strength, there naturally wasn't many powerful groups present in this Great Spiritual Academy Tournament that would be able to treat them as a fat sheep.

The stifling and suffocating atmosphere was still maintained in this region. However, there wasn't overly many gazes shooting over towards the Saint Spiritual Academy's Xia Hou.

Mu Chen continued to coldly observe the situation.

Under the multitude of attentive gazes that were faintly discernible, a faint smile surfaced at the corner of Xia Hou's mouth. As of now, with four of the five Great Spiritual Academies being gathered here, it was clear that his Saint Spiritual Academy still held the most weight and authority. Although there were quite a few groups present in this region, there should not be many groups that would dare to contend against them.

"Haha. Everyone really has some order going on here. Was it said that the ancient remnant is in the depths of this forest? The various treasures present in this fragmented Shattered Continent has no owners. Being able to obtain them would depend on one's own luck and ability. Therefore, they won't just become the sole possession of someone. There isn't any exception, despite how powerful or strong they are." All of a sudden, as a smile surfaced at the corner of Xia Hou's mouth, a sweet-sounding and alluring sound of laughter rang out all at once. As everyone turned to look over, they all saw the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy's Tang Mei'er giving of a sweet, gentle laugh, her long and narrow phoenix-like eyes appearing moist, giving off a flirtatious intent that caused people's hearts to jump.

This girl was truly outstanding.

A faint word of appreciation rang out within Mu Chen's heart. Upon hearing about Tang Mei'er's name, Mu Chen thought back about Tang Qian'er. Nevertheless, there should not be any bloodline relationship between the two; after all, he knew Tang Qian'er ever since he was small, yet he had never heard of her having an Elder Sister even once.

As Tang Mei'er's alluring voice rang out, it caused quite a few people to secretly raise their eyebrows . From her words, the so-called "powerful group" she was talking about should be the group from the Saint Spiritual Academy, right?From the looks of it, the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy had some guarded feelings against the Saint Spiritual Academy.

Thinking about this, this could be true. Within the five Great Academies, other than the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, which had growner weaker for the past few years, each of the rest possessed their only merits. Thus, it wasn't that easy for the Saint Spiritual Academy to place themselves over the others.

"Do you think that what I've said is true, Captain Zhou Yuan?" said Tang Mei'er as she grinned towards the group from the Martial Spiritual Academy.

"Haha. What Captain Mei'er said is true. The ancient remnants on this Shattered Continent aren't the sole possession of anyone. This Broken Mountain Pole in my hands won't agree to anyone who wants to devour all of them for their own." Hearing her words, the burly-built Zhou Yuan gave a hearty chuckle, before giving a crisp reply.

Hearing his reply, the numerous groups present exchanged glances with one another. They had also understood that Tang Mei'er and Zhou Yuan seemed to be warning the Saint Spiritual Academy to not attempt to take sole possession over this remnant.

"Are the few of you over there the group from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?" Suddenly,Tang Mei'er raised her seductively beautiful eyes and rested her gaze on Mu Chen and his group. Sweeping her gaze around, she spoke out with a sweet smile, "May I know exactly who is the Captain of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy group?"

Her beautiful eyes rested mostly on the figure of Luo Li, which caused some shock to appear within herself. Being a girl and a person of outstanding talent, Tang Mei'er was naturally able to sense how extraordinary Luo Li was. This was a sense that was privy only to girls. Nevertheless, Luo Li was currently standing behind Mu Chen, resulting in her looking at him. Yet, the latter's outward strength appeared to be only of Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase. This caused even Tang Mei'er to feel somewhat at a loss as to exactly what situation was present in this Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy group.

"Haha. I'm Mu Chen, and I'm the Captain of this group. Please advise, Captain Mei'er." While Tang Mei'er was in doubt, Mu Chen gave a faint smile and made his reply.

"Oh?" Shock appeared in Tang Mei'er's beautiful eyes as she looked towards Mu Chen. A Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase can actually become a Captain?

"You are Mu Chen?" However, Tang Mei'er seemed to have thought about something as her beautiful eyes quickly sprung wide open as she stared at him in astonishment.

Mu Chen instantly gawked at the way she had gasped out in astonishment. Did this Tang Mei'er recognise me? This truly was the first time that he had seen her.

"Do you know me, Captain Mei'er?" Feeling doubtful, Mu Chen asked.

"Hehe. That's right. What's more it's a household name to me." A shadow of amusement surfaced within Tang Mei'er's long and willowy eyes. As she playfully started to size Mu Chen up, she replied, "My younger sister really misses you. Over the past two years, I've heard this name too many times already."

Mu Chen instantly gawked once more. All of a sudden, a thought flashed within his mind, before he spoke out towards Tang Mei'er, "Does Captain Mei'er know Elder Sister Qian'er?"

Within the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy, the only people that Mu Chen would recognise might only be Tang Qian'er and Hong Ling. After hearing those words from Tang Mei'er, it was clear that the only possibility would be Tang Qian'er.

"Looks like you still have some conscience to not let my younger sister worry in vain for you," replied Tang Mei'er with a smile.

Mu Chen shot an awkward look at Luo Li, only to notice that the latter seemed to not have any frustration displayed on her. On the contrary, she sent a smile back at him, one that appeared beautifully sweet. However, this rarely seen sweet and beautiful smile caused Mu Chen's heart to tremble.

Although he thought of giving an explanation about this matter, it wasn't the right thing to do in the current situation he was in. With so many people in the surroundings, and clearly not having any means to explain the relationship between him and Tang Qian'er to Tang Mei'er, he could only give a helpless smile.

Nevertheless, some suspicions rose within his heart. Could it really be that Tang Qian'er and Tang Mei'er are sisters? I've never heard of this before...

"That lass Qian'er has often praised that you're one of those talents that are a rarity in the heavens and of no equal on earth. However, from what I can see, you don't seem to have much of any outstanding areas. Nevertheless, being able to become Captain of your group with your cultivation realm at Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase, you should possess some abilities to match with that, right?" A judging gaze shot out from Tang Mei'er beautiful eyes towards Mu Chen as she smiled and spoke to him.

Her words were somewhat straightforward, barely deviating from bluntly saying that he was too weak. However, despite that, Mu Chen only gave a smile in return, not choosing to give too much of an explanation. To him, strength was something that could only be judged during a fight, not by how one could say it.

"Hehe. Nevertheless, looks like your breath of mind isn't bad." An alluring smile appeared on Tang Mei'er's lips as she spoke out coquettishly. "May I know if Captain Mu Chen has any objections to my earlier statement?"

With a smile, Mu Chen shook his head. Shooting a glance towards Xia Hou and his group, he replied, "What Captain Tang Mei'er said is extremely true. The treasures of the universe belong to those who are fated for them. Everyone has a shot at them, and anyone who tries to dominate all for themselves might be causing pain and suffering for themselves."

Mu Chen didn't conceal any hidden meanings in his words, with the anti-Saint Spiritual Academy intent being exceedingly thick. He didn't have a single bit of any favorable impression towards this Spiritual Academy. From the very beginning, when he was in the Spiritual Road, that Ji Xuan was able to scheme against him by relying on the strength of the Saint Spiritual Academy. Therefore, Mu Chen didn't have any good feelings towards the group from the Saint Spiritual Academy.

Faint sounds of clamoring rang out from the numerous groups present in the region, as they could tell that the groups from three of the Great Academies were taking precautions against the group from the Saint

Spiritual Academy. From the looks of it, even though the group from the Saint Spiritual Academy was strong and powerful, they were not able to fight in a one-to-three situation.

A few Captains exchanged glances with each other and clicked their tongues as they thought, This Tang Mei'er's really not an easy person to deal with. With just a few short statements from her, she was able to garner support and suppress the arrogance of the Saint Spiritual Academy.

As clamoring noises rang out from the numerous groups in the surroundings, the faces of the Saint Spiritual Academy turned dark. One member even sent a chilling glare at Mu Chen, before speaking with a sneer, "A mere Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase still dares to blast his voice here. In our Saint Spiritual Academy, people who are at your strength don't even have to qualifications to participate in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament.

Although the groups from the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy was weaker than the Saint Spiritual Academy by a bit, due to the tyrannical strength of Tang Mei'er and Zhou Yuan, the members from the latter group did not send their rebuke straight back, despite the fury and anger in their hearts. However compared to those two, Mu Chen was completely different. No one knew exactly why such a group would be sent to participate in this Great Spiritual Academy Tournament. Of the five people in his group, the only one whose strength was worth noting would be the girl's. As for the others, they were simply not even worth a look.

Therefore, amongst the three groups in opposition with then, it was the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy that clearly possessed no threat at all. Therefore, the group member that spoke out didn't give a single care about the face of Mu Chen.

"What did you say?!" Seeing that fellow scolding Mu Chen, the faces of Xu Huang and the other two sank as they roared out in fury.

Hearing those roars towards him, the group member from the Saint Spiritual Academy shot a smirk towards the trio, being too lazy to bother

about talking back to them. Contempt and disdain filled his eyes as he thought, What qualifications do mere Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phases have to hoot at us?

On the contrary, Mu Chen only gave a smile as he waved his hand, stopping the furious Xu Huang and the other two in their tracks.

"I don't approve very much about what Captain Mu Chen had said."

At this moment, the indifferent-looking Xia Hou, who had not said a single word since he arrived, finally gave a faint smile and slowly opened his mouth.

"Oh? Please advise, Captain Xia Hou," replied Mu Chen with a faint smile. He knew that the Saint Spiritual Academy would definitely do something in this current situation. If not, wouldn't that show that he was scared of the other three Great Academies present here?

As of now, in this current situation, if the persimmons were ripe for the picking, Mu Chen and his group were clearly the weakest.

"The treasures of the world don't belong to those fated for them, but for the strong..."

Crossing his slender fingers together, Xia Hou slightly raised his eyelids, before saying, "If one doesn't possess sufficient strength, those so-called 'treasures' would only result in attracting a catastrophe for oneself. Therefore, I had to advice some people that if they don't possess that level of strength, they should not be blind and participate to avoid losing their little lives. It's not worth it at all when then happens. Captain Mu Chen, do think that what I said makes sense?"

At this moment, the entire region turned silent as numerous groups held their breaths, as they could faintly sense the sensation of daggers being drawn from the surrounding atmosphere.

Staring straight at Xia Hou, a radiant smile surfaced on Mu Chen's face. Slowly nodding his head, he replied, "What Captain Xia Hou said is correct."

A similar smile surfaced on Xia Hou's face as he gently nodded his head

and said, "Since Captain Mu Chen agrees with me... I'll have to invite you to take your Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy group and leave here, as I believe that you don't have the qualifications to stay here."

Chapter 467: Qualifications

"...Don't have the qualifications to stay here..."

When that statement rang out from Xia Hou's mouth with indifference, the entire region instantly turned silent, with the eyelids of quite a few groups slightly twitching in response. Who would have guess that this seemingly placid Xia Hou would be that fierce upon opening his mouth, to the point of not giving any bit of face?

With this statement, he had completely tore away the face of Mu Chen and his group.

At this moment, a few experts started exchanging glances. From the looks of it, Xia Hou had started his counterattack against the actions of Tang Mei'er uniting the Martial Spiritual Academy and the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. After all, in the current situation, three of the Great Academies were clearly suppressing the prestige of his group. Faced with such a situation, if Xia Hou didn't do something to regain his superiority, it would inevitably weaken the fame and prestige of the Saint Spiritual Academy. Therefore, he needed to make such a move.

Although the cultivation of Tang Mei'er and Zhou Yuan weren't on par with him, both of them were rather formidable, since they had touched the cusp of their Spiritual Energy Disaster, albeit their failure to pass through it. Nevertheless, their strength far surpassed that of ordinary Human Body Disaster experts. If the two of them were to collaborate and take action together, they would be able to create some obstruction for him.

Compared to Tang Mei'er and Zhou Yuan, Mu Chen clearly appeared to pose not a single advantage for himself. With his cultivation at Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase, he didn't even possess the qualifications to reach the lowest level for their group. Therefore, of these three people, if he needed to pick the most suitable one to be the sacrificial lamb, Mu Chen would clearly be the best choice.

At this moment, the expression on Mu Chen's handsome face was still one of calm and tranquility. Clearly, he didn't feel any bit of fury or anger

at Xia Hou's statement. On the contrary, an arc of a smile started to appear at the corner of his mouth.

"Haha, Captain Xia Hou. The way you find your sacrificial lamb truly is great," said Tang Mei'er with an alluring laugh, one which contained tones of mockery and ridiculement. With her level of intellect, how could she not spot the schemes of Xia Hou? Although she didn't have any relationship with the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, due to Mu Chen's relation with Tang Qian'er, it was impossible for her to close an eye towards Xia Hou's action.

Hearing her words, Xia Hou only gave a faint smile, before shooting a glance at Mu Chen and said, "When did the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy need an all-female Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy to protect its honor and dignity?"

The mouths of every group around cracked open upon hearing those words as they thought, This Xia Hou is really harsh.

"You're made a mistake, Captain Xia Hou. This is just something that naturally appears to people with good relations with others," replied Mu Chen with a faint smile. "However, I also have something to tell Captain Xia Hou."

Staring at Xia Hou, a chilling luster started to slowly condense within his black pupils as he continued saying, "I feel that you don't have to qualifications to say that we lack the qualifications."

As Mu Chen sprouted those words, a tremble shook through the hearts of quite a few groups, with even Tang Mei'er and Zhou Yuan shooting astonished gazes towards Mu Chen. Clearly, none of them had imagined that the latter would actually dare to face against Xia Hou in such a straight-up fashion. Nevertheless, this also caused them to slightly wrinkle their foreheads. Although they disliked the arrogance shown by the Saint Spiritual Academy, truthfully speaking, both of them still possessed extreme dread towards Xia Hou and his group within their hearts. Therefore, they didn't go all-out and tore at the faces of the Saint Spiritual Academy by showing some restraint in their words. However, such an

action by Mu Chen seemed slightly too reckless and hot-headed.

After all, the disparity in the strength of their groups was too great, when compared to Xia Hou's. Once they infuriated Xia Hou, he might cause them to pay a miserably great price today.

On the contrary to everyone else, Xu Huang and the other two heaved their chests out while viciously staring towards Xia Hou and his group. Although they were clear on how strong and powerful the other party was, they similarly had Mu Chen and Luo Li on their side. The combat prowess of these two people were absolutely off the charts. Furthermore, the three of them had a deep understanding of Mu Chen, being that the latter would not do any reckless actions due to him getting hot-headed. From the looks of it, since he didn't plan on giving much face to Xia Hou and his group, it clearly meant that he had the capability of handling the other party when they get angry.

Xia Hou coldly stared at Mu Chen for a long while, before a mocking smile curled up from the corner of his mouth. Not giving any reply, he gently gave a wave of his hand.

Behind his back, two youths with faces brimming with ice-cold expressions slowly stepped out, while boundless Spiritual Energy flaring out from their bodies. These two people's cultivation was of Human Body Disaster. If placed in the groups of other Spiritual Academies, they would already be Captain-level figures. However, within their Saint Spiritual Academy groups, they could only be Ordinary-level members.

The two sent a chilling glare towards Mu Chen and his group. Similarly, without saying a single word, with a move of their bodies, Spiritual Energies surged out from them as they instantly transformed into two glowing figures. Shooting out, two long blades appeared in their hands, before both of them sent a slash out.

Bang!

The two gigantic hundred-metre long blade lights swept out, splitting apart the air, while two bottomless blade scars appeared in the ground below. Upon taking action, the two people had sent such a fierce move,

clearly planning to teach a good lesson to Mu Chen and his group.

Letting his hands slightly hang down, not a single fluctuation was present within Mu Chen's eyes as he looked towards the blade lights hurtling over. At this moment, the Spiritual Energy radiating from his body still appeared calm, with him showing not the slightest bit of intent to dodge or to defend.

Swish!

At the instant when the blade lights arrived, reaching a foot away from Mu Chen's body, Luo Li took a dainty step out. Using the Luo Shen Sword in her hand to draw a sword flower and sending it out, she blocked those two blade lights by violently chopping them down like a barrier.

Bang!

As the blade lights and the Sword Aura collided, the gazes that had converged from the surrounding region had fiercely contracted, with even the faces of those Human Body Disaster experts from the Saint Spiritual Academy slightly changing.

Holding a sword in her hand, Luo Li stood before Mu Chen, her exquisite-looking figure not moving a single inch. The combined attack from the two was unexpectedly unable to deal any damage to her.

"Yi. Quite formidable." Tang Mei'er's beautiful eyes lit up. That's why Mu Chen was so calm! He has such a formidable person within his group, and her strength might not be any weaker than our own.

However, if she's that formidable, why did she allow Mu Chen to be the Captain?

"Return a favor with a favor."

A faint chilling intent flashed across Luo Li's clear eyes, before suddenly shooting out in the next instant, with the sword tightly clenched in her hands as she sent a straight slash.

There weren't any bells and whistles attached to her sword slash, yet the Sword Aura radiating from it was sharp and fierce to an extreme limit.

Appearing like a silvery river streaking across the horizon, splitting even the skies into two halves as the light of the Sword Aura rushed towards the two Human Body Disaster experts from the Saint Spiritual Academy at lightning speed.

This sword slash caused the faces of the two to greatly change. Not daring to show one bit of neglect, Spiritual Energies erupted from their bodies without any restraint as they gripped their long blades and furiously slashed out.

"Sea Breaking Divine Blade!"

"Mountain Cleaving Blade!"

Furious roars rang out as the two blade lights flared akin to scorching suns, radiating eye-dazzling brilliance, causing quite a few people to squint their eyes.

Bang!

Like bolts of lightning, the Sword Aura's light shot over, without hesitating one bit to slash down on the two blade lights. In the next instant, clear metallic sounds resounded across the horizon.

Astonishing gales wreaked havoc as they spread out.

Clarity quickly returned to the skies as everyone casted their gazes back, only to see the young girl slowly sheathing the longsword in her hand, concealing the exceedingly fierce and sharp sword light. As for the two Human Body Disaster experts before her, their faces had turned ashen at this moment, while heart-palpitating fear appeared within their eyes.

Both of them vacantly looked at the long blades within their hands. Unexpectedly, a glossy scar had appeared on the surface of those two long blades, which were almost on par with High Grade Spiritual Weapons, before they split into two.

Under her sword, their collaboration had miserably failed, with their Spirit Blades even being sliced in half.

The countless groups in the surroundings were completely

dumbfounded as they looked at the graceful and elegant girl. All of them were completely unable to picture her and her stunningly beautiful appearance with the swift and fierce attack that she had made earlier.

"Formidable."

Both Tang Mei'er and Zhou Yuan gave their own praise. Although Luo Li's cultivation hasmd yet to reach the realm of Spiritual Energy Disaster, she might not be far from it. The two of them never imagined that the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy would actually have such a formidable Freshman in their ranks, something which truly shocked and astonished people.

At this moment, the indifferent face of Xia Hou finally started to slowly turn dark. He never imagined that this beautiful young girl standing by Mu Chen's side would actually possess such strength. That's why Mu Chen dared to provoke and challenge them. It was due to this kind of card up his sleeves?

"Such a good method by Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy to actually hide their strongest person and let a useless fellow obscure everyone's sight, before obtaining the result of catching people off-guard."

Waving his hand, Xia Hou called his two members back, before coldly staring towards Luo Li. At this moment, faint rays of brilliance started to condense around her white jade-like palms. This time, he had thrown away quite a large amount of his face. Therefore, he needed to personally take action.

"However, I really want to ask for advice as to exactly how much capability your Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy possesses!"

A chilling glint flashed in Xia Hou's eyes as he took a step forward, while frightening Spiritual Energy swept out from his body like a hurricane. Under the degree and density of the Spiritual Energy radiating from him, even the entire region showed some change, far surpassing anything that those Human Body Disaster experts could do.

Spiritual Energy Disaster was a qualitative change in one's Spiritual Energy. When one passed through this tribulation, the degree and density

of one's Spiritual Energy would far surpass those that have only passed their Human Body Disaster.

Swish!

Xia Hou explosively shot out, with his figure turning spectre-like, appearing in the air right before Luo Li in a flash. Curling his fingers to form a claw-like shape, a jade-like luster coated his fingertips as extremely sharp sensations started to radiate from them.

"Star Picking Jade Hand!"

With a low roar, Xia Hou's bone-white hand appeared to unexpectedly pierce through space, violently reaching towards Luo Li at an indescribable speed.

Faced against such an attack, not a single shadow of fear or fright appeared within Luo Li's bright gem-like eyes. Instead, the jade-like hand that was clenching her longsword started to slightly relax.

Sensing Luo Li becoming completely relaxed, a frown appeared on Xia Hou's face. Clearly, such an action by her had raised some doubt in him. Nevertheless, faced against his attack, he didn't believe that the young girl before him would truly dare to accept his strike just like that.

Whoosh!

Just as Xia Hou's attack was about to land on Luo Li, the corner of his eyes suddenly twitch as a whooshing sound that erupted like a clap of thunder sharply rang out, while a frightening gale instantly enveloped him.

Sensing the ferocity and fierceness of the gale, the face of Xia Hou slightly changed as he replied with a palm patting out, directly smashing against the fierce gale.

Bang!

As his jade-white palm smashed against the gale, Xia Hou saw a black long spear seemingly sparkling with lightning arcs before him. At the end of the spear was a youth who was currently sending a faint smile towards

him, one that contained endless chilling intent.

That was... Mu Chen?!

Xia Hou's pupils abruptly contracted.

Chapter 468: Dark Origin Forest

As Mu Chen's figure appeared before Xia Hou's sight, the sharp black-coloured long spear had already brought about an overbearingly fierce gale as it was thrust forward at lightning speed, smashing head-on against the palm winds from Xia Hou's hand.

Bang!

At the instant of impact, astonishingly rampant gales instantly swept out like a hurricane. Under the impact of the frightening gales, layers of ripples even started to surface in the surrounding space.

As the frightening impact swept outwards, and was just about to smash against Mu Chen, suddenly, lightning arcs started to sparkle on his body as lightning runes started to surface on his chest. At this moment, his skin turned into a faint-black colour, appearing akin to a black-coloured metal, sparkling with incomparably destructive luster.

Bang!

Contrary to expectations, when the shock wave heavily impacted against Mu Chen's body, metallic sounds erupted out as a tremble shook through it. Despite being sent retreating back, not a single trace of injury was present on his body.

Before him, a tremble had similarly shook through Xia Hou's body. Nevertheless, instead of using his body to endure the impact head-on, he stomped his foot, causing exceedingly powerful Spiritual Energy to erupt out. Smashing head-on against the impact, a dull thump rang out as his body fluttered in retreat.

The two of them retreated a dozen metres back, before finally stabilising themselves.

The entire region sunk into a stretch of deathly silence.

The faces of all of the groups were filled with overwhelming shock as they took in the scene before them, while inconceivable feelings flooded their eyes. That Mu Chen, who's cultivation was only at the Heavenly

Completion Stage Late Phase, was actually able to contend head-on against that Xia Hou, who's cultivation was of Spiritual Energy Disaster? Furthermore, he didn't even receive any injuries at all?

The faces of Tang Mei'er and Zhou Yuan slowly turned solemn as they looked towards the thin, handsome youth in a completely new light.

Both of them knew how formidable Xia Hou was. With the latter's cultivation at Spiritual Energy Disaster, he could be considered as top-notch, even within the entire Great Spiritual Academy Tournament. If the two of them were to face-off in a one-on-one duel with Xia Hou, they might be able to contend with him head-on for a few moves, but would absolutely not have any chance of victory. Therefore, they were still rather dreadful towards Xia Hou.

As for Mu Chen... with his cultivation being at Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase, the disparity with Spiritual Energy Disaster was far too big. After observing Luo Li's strength earlier, they had some assumptions that Mu Chen being the Captain was just a pretense of concealing her. However, from the looks of it, this thought of theirs had been completely shaken.

This youth, who appeared to be of an ordinary realm of cultivation, seemed to possess an extremely frightening combat prowess.

"Tsk, tsk. Looks like we've made an error in our judgement. No wonder why that lass Qian'er would be so enraptured. He truly possesses some ability." Pursing her seductive red lips, Tang Mei'er gave a alluring laugh, while shooting a lovely gaze brimming with interest that swept to and fro across Mu Chen's body.

Licking his lips, Zhou Yuan stared towards Mu Chen. At this moment, his gaze had similarly turned somewhat scorching-hot, while his hands could not help clenching his black metal pole. Clearly, this fighting madman had also been triggered and was feeling itchy for a fight.

In the air, Xia Hou shot a dark stare towards Mu Chen, before slowly saying, "That's why you're that rampant. So it turns out that you have some ability."

Hearing that, Mu Chen gave a laugh, before giving a flick of his finger, causing the long spear in his hand to disappear. Raising his head to look towards Xia Hou, he replied with a smile, "I apologise for my poor performance. Compared to Captain Xia Hou, I still have some ways to go."

At this moment, he slightly paused, before continuing with a light laugh, "Now, do you still believe that we don't have those qualifications, Captain Xia Hou?"

Shooting a deep look towards Mu Chen, a smile unexpectedly surfaced on Xia Hou's face as he replied, "With your strength, if Captain Mu Chen doesn't possess the qualifications, perhaps there's isn't anyone here that would."

Although they were in a head-on confrontation only an instant ago, Xia Hou could feel the thorniness Mu Chen presented to him. Although he did not believe that the latter would truly be his match in an all-out battle, there were more important matters to pay attention to than that.

With a smile, Mu Chen cupped his hands. This Xia Hou truly has character, being capable of knowing when to retreat and be patient. Nevertheless, Mu Chen also knew that if he didn't show that level of strength in the earlier confrontation, that Xia Hou might not hesitate one bit to unleash a lethal blow to set himself up as the sacrificial lamb for everyone to see. However, as of now, seeing that Mu Chen's strength had exceeded his expectations, that fellow had instantly restrained the killing intent within his eyes.

Although they were the strongest group within this region, Xia Hou didn't have the confidence to not be taken advantage of by the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy and the Martial Spiritual Academy after going all-out to deal with Mu Chen and his group.

Therefore, Xia Hou had no choice but to temporarily endure patiently awhile.

Nevertheless... the strength of a Spiritual Energy Disaster truly is extremely powerful.

Thinking about this, a slight frown appeared on Mu Chen's forehead.

Compared to Mo Xingtian, this Xia Hou's strength seemed to be higher than the former by a notch. Although his current strength was much stronger than when he had crossed hands with Mo Xingtian then, he did not dare to harbor any neglect or contempt in his heart. According to his estimates, if they were to engage in a no-holds barred fight, it would result in a fierce battle that would not be inferior to the one he had with Mo Xingtian.

Mu Chen's gaze slightly dropped down. Nevertheless, although Xia Hou truly was a thorny opponent to deal with, Mu Chen hoped that the latter would not intentionally provoke him. If not... he would not mind letting the Saint Spiritual Academy have one of their groups disappear from this Great Spiritual Academy Tournament.

A chilling glint flashed across Mu Chen's eyes, before waving his hand towards Luo Li, while turning around and walking back to his group. At this moment, Xu Huang and the other two were sending a big thumbs-up towards him, while their faces brimmed with pride. As of now, Mu Chen was truly worthy of being the top student of their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Even a elite figure like Xia Hou was actually forced to the point of having to call a temporary truce.

By their sides, the group from the Desolation Spiritual Academy had faces full of worship and admiration. Although they had seen Mu Chen take action before to defeat two Human Body Disaster experts in an one-on-two fight, they could not help continuously feeling shocked once again upon seeing Mu Chen actually being able to engage in a straight-on confrontation with Xia Hou, who was of Spiritual Energy Disaster.

Mu Chen gave a laugh towards them, before sweeping his gaze round in a circle. At this moment, there was no longer any doubt present in the gazes that shot from the groups hovering in the surrounding skies. On the contrary, presently within their eyes were some shades of worship and admiration. At this moment, all of them had finally looked towards the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy as one of the five Great Academies. After all, from the surface, their group truly appeared to be somewhat on the weak side.

Humm!

As Mu Chen was sweeping his gaze out, suddenly, a gigantic beam of light erupted from the depths of the Dark Origin Forest. Rushing straight through the clouds, a fragrance seemed to radiate from within. This smell caused the minds of countless people to tremble, before casting scorching-hot gazes towards the depths of the forest. Indeed, there's some ancient ruins in there!

Such a fragrance appeared to be caused by precious and rare heavenly treasures.

In the skies, the eyes of seemingly thousands of groups lit up at this moment, while they lasciviously licked their lips in greed, with all of them getting restless.

Upon smelling this mysterious fragrance, Mu Chen could instantly feel signs of some fluctuations seemingly appearing within the Spiritual Energy within his body, causing a shade of astonishment to flash within his eyes. Could it be that there truly are heavenly treasures present within the depths of the Dark Origin Forest?

"Looks like the groups here can no longer endure it anymore," said Lin Zhou in a low voice. As of now, the groups that had converged over here were increasing by the number, reaching a level that Xia Hou and his group could no longer be able to completely suppress them by themselves. Added with the current spectacle, the present situation was about to quickly go out of control.

Hearing those words, Mu Chen nodded his head in agreement. At the very beginning, he believed that the situation here would never be completely under control. As of now, with the news about this place being circulated around, that was even more of an impossibility.

"In a while, all of us should get ready to make a move. However, we must be careful, as I feel that there's something amiss about this place." Shooting a looking at the Dark Origin Forest, Mu Chen gave a slight frown. Whenever he looked at this region, it always gave him an extremely uncomfortable feeling.

Hearing his words, everyone nodded their heads, while starting to quietly revolve and circulate around the Spiritual Energies within their bodies

"The ruins have opened. Let's go! It's first come, first serve for such ownerless items!"

As the fragrance wafting around the region grew thicker and thicker, there were some groups that were finally unable to resist such enticement. As they roared out, in the next instant, a dozen groups rushed forward, seemingly in an instant.

Whoosh!

Very quickly, those groups rushed into the air above the Dark Origin Forest. However, just at the instant when they had rushed into the boundary, cries of shock and astonishment abruptly rang out from them as their figures rapidly descended. From the looks of it, it appeared as if the region was a flight-restricted area.

Puff!

Hundreds of figures disappeared as they dropped into the Dark Origin Forest.

Upon seeing this, everyone in the surroundings slightly gawked. From the looks of it, one wasn't able to fly high in the air within that region.

"Since you can't fly high in there, let's rush straight in!"

Very quickly, voices rang out from the surrounding groups once again, before group after group howled out. Descending onto the ground, they shot straight in towards the darkness forest.

"Should we make our move?" asked Xu Huang and the rest with impatience.

In response, wrinkles formed on Mu Chen's forehead, appearing as if he had felt something amiss.

"It's too quiet." Suddenly, Luo Li spoke out.

This instantly caused a shock of terror within Mu Chen's heart. That's right, this forest is too quiet! When those hundred -plus

people had descended into there, there should be some commotion at the very least! Why is there not a single sound yet? Such a feeling was akin to them being devoured at the very instant they had landed in the forest.

"Look's like this place is extremely fishy," said Mu Chen with a solemn expression on his face.

Noticing Mu Chen's expression and response, the faces of Xu Huang and the rest slightly changed as they asked, "So, what now? Are we still going in to search for the ancient ruins?"

"It wasn't easy to find the ruins. We can't just give up so easily like that," replied Mu Chen as he shook his head. Looking towards those groups that were rushing into the Dark Origin Forest akin to a swarm of locusts, he spoke out in a soft voice, "Let's wait awhile and let these fellows feel out the way... look at them. There's still no movement yet from Xia Hou, Tang Mei'er and Zhou Yuan."

Shooting their sights over, indeed, Xu Huang and the rest noticed that there wasn't a single inch of movement from those three groups. Also, there were quite a few groups remaining in the surroundings, with all of their cultivation realms being quite high. Furthermore, all of them had maintained their calmness and rationale.

Crossing his fingers, Mu Chen looked towards the Dark Origin Forest, muttering, "I really want to see exactly what strange and weird things there are in this goddamn place..."

As Mu Chen and his group quietly waited on, they were unable to discover numerous figures concealed in the shadows within the dense woods on a mountain peak behind them. At this moment, all of their gazes were similarly focused towards the Dark Origin Forest, before unsympathetic and sinister laughter softly rang out.

"Looks like we didn't find the wrong place. This should be the Poison Woods. In the time of the Ancient Antiquity, this Shattered Continent was an Overlord-level power, with the Wood Divine Palace being one of the factions present there..."

Chapter 469: Demonic Trees

Whoosh!

Figures started to swiftly shoot over from the ground below, before gushing into the Dark Origin Forest like a swarm of locusts.

As Mu Chen was tightly staring towards the Dark Origin Forest, his expression slightly changed after a while, when he discovered that there was still not much commotion coming out from within, despite the gigantic number of groups that had entered. This gave him a feeling as if this Dark Origin Forest was a stretch of isolated space.

Exchanging glances with Luo Li, Mu Chen's forehead was covered with wrinkles as this situation was slightly strange and weird.

"Get ready to move out. Everyone, be careful."

After pondering deeply, Mu Chen finally came to a decision and signalled with his hand. There wasn't anything free that falls from the sky. If they wanted to obtain some good harvest from the ancient ruins, they would have to take some risks.

Hearing Mu Chen's words, Xu Huang and the rest all nodded their heads, before starting to rapidly circulate the Spiritual Energies within their bodies, with Lin Zhou and his group rapidly following suit. After experiencing the strength of Mu Chen's group, they clearly planned to tightly stick together and stay under the shelter of this great shield.

"Let's go."

With a glance, Mu Chen could spot unrest stirring within the groups of the other three Great Academies as they were similarly unable to contain their impatience. No longer hesitating anymore, he shot forward, landing in the Dark Origin Forest before him in a short span of a dozen breaths. Looking at the jet-black colour surrounding him, it appeared as if they were on the tongue of an evil demon, causing people's hearts to palpitate.

Taking a deep breath, Mu Chen didn't hesitate much, before giving a tap with the tip of his feet, shooting straight into the forest like a wisp of

green smoke. Behind him, Luo Li and the rest rapidly followed along.

As darkness came enveloping, it devoured Mu Chen's figure, causing him to slightly freeze up. The silence he sensed from behind, with even the wind sounds disappearing at this instant made him feel as if everything behind him had vanished, with the entire region around him appearing incomparably deathly silent. This change caused Mu Chen to feel shocked for a moment, before taking a breath of relief upon seeing Luo Li and the rest appearing behind him.

"Looks like no sounds are able to escape after entering this forest, with sounds from the outside similarly unable to enter," said Lin Zhou.

Hearing that, Mu Chen nodded his head. Sweeping his gaze out, Mu Chen saw that this forest was brimming with giant trees that extended high into the skies, with all of them having a jet-black colour. The lush and verdant branches enveloped a circumference of a hundred metres each, interweaving with each other to the point of hiding the skies and covering the earth, even to the point that sunlight was unable to penetrate through. Therefore, it appeared exceedingly dark and gloomy within the midst of this forest.

Mu Chen's team of ten people converged together as they carefully and slowly walked within the forest, boundless Spiritual Energies rippled around their bodies. Any bit of a breeze or grass movement would instantly cause erratic attacks to shoot from them.

Nevertheless, after carefully moving forward awhile, Mu Chen and the team were shocked to discover that they had not received a single attack yet, with this forest still remaining silent and motionless. Although the foliage from those giant trees was incomparably dense, for some strange and mysterious reason, they caused people to not sense any feeling of life and vitality...

"Wait!"

Suddenly, Mu Chen's footsteps came to a halt as he solemnly looked towards his front, as there were dozens of bones unexpectedly present on the ground there.

"Oh? Looks like there were also some people that had came here before." Looking towards those bones, Xu Huang and the rest spoke out in surprise.

"Not 'before'. These skeletons should belong to those groups that entered here earlier," replied Luo Li in a soft voice.

"What?" The faces of Xu Huang and the rest instantly changed. How long ago was that?! Even if they were killed, their skeletons shouldn't be the only things left of them, right? From the looks of the skeletons, all the skin and muscles have been cleanly removed from them...

Hearing her words, Mu Chen nodded his head in agreement, while sizing up his surroundings. A solemn expression was present in his eyes as he whispered, "Be careful. There's something strange about this forest."

Along the way, they have yet to bump into any attacks, and have yet to even see the shadow of a single beast. This forest appeared to have no living creatures present within it. However, the bones before them had clearly told them that there definitely was something frightening within this forest.

The ten people quietly drew even closer to each other, yet none of them were able to discover the earth below their feet starting to slightly shake.

Bang!

Suddenly, the black leaves that covered the ground fluttered up as numerous black rays of light shot out. At lightning speeds, they wrapped around the waists of Xu Huang and Lin Zhou, pulling them up into the air.

The sudden and unforeseen change caused everyone to be in shock. Turning his gaze around, Mu Chen saw that those black rays of light were actually black-coloured vines. At this moment, there was even fresh blood flowing down on their surfaces, before being devoured as the vines squirmed and moved about.

Being wrapped by the vines, the faces of Xu Huang and Lin Zhou greatly changed. Nevertheless, none of them were overly flustered as they

circulated their Spiritual Energies, sending hand blades brimming with fierce and swift gales that violently chopped down on those vines.

However, despite possessing sufficient power to shatter and cleave mountains, upon landing on the vines, their hand blades were only able to cause faint wounds to appear. From the looks of it, the defensive capabilities of these vines were extraordinarily strong.

Swish!

Suddenly, black tree spikes, approximately half a metre long, shot out from the ends of the vines. Whooshing out, dark shadows thrust towards Xu Huang and Lin Zhou without the slightest bit of mercy.

Seeing this, shock and terror instantly overwhelmed the eyes of the two.

Swish!

Nevertheless, just before the incomparably sharp black tree spikes were about to pierce through the throats of the two, an extremely swift and fierce sword light shot over, sweeping over the black vines. With a puff, all of them were sliced apart, causing Xu Huang and Lin Zhou to drop down. Falling onto the ground, they hastily climbed and stood up, their bodies all tense and taut.

"Thanks." With their faces being drained of colour and their hearts palpitating with fear, Xu Huang and Lin Zhou said their thanks towards Luo Li.

Luo Li only gave a slight nod as she clenched her longsword. Although the vines possessed astonishing defenses, under the Luo Shen Sword, they appeared to be as weak as paper. Nevertheless, they were impossible to defend against, making them incredibly troublesome.

Sweeping his gaze slowly around, Mu Chen finally focused his sights towards those black-coloured giant trees. In the next instant, his eyes furiously contracted as he roared, "Be careful! There's something strange about those trees!"

Whoosh!

Just as Mu Chen's roar left his throat, the giant black trees in their surroundings, which showed not one bit of movement earlier, had unexpectedly started to crazily vibrate at this instant. In the next moment, black vines hid the skies and covered the earth as they shot out from those giant trees, enveloping around Mu Chen and the team.

Colour drained from the faces of everyone as Spiritual Energy erupted from their bodies. Various kinds of Spiritual Weapons appeared in a flash, sending swift and fierce attacks to meet with the incoming vines that were shooting over.

Wielding his Devouring Demonic Dragon Spear, spear glints swept out, causing those black vines within his attack radius to instantly shatter and break apart. Nevertheless, the person within their team of ten that had the most easiest time was clearly Luo Li. Being swift and fierce to such a degree, as sword light shot out from the Luo Shen Sword, the countless vines in their path would split apart, with the areas sliced appearing as smooth as mirrors. As they fell down, blood dripped from them, causing the holes to appear as they corroded the ground beneath.

The team formed a circle and they grouped together, sending boundless attacks that completely blocked the assault from those vines. At this moment, the ground in their surroundings was seemingly covered in broken bits of vines.

However, despite that, the assault from those vines endlessly continued, like a stream. Such an offensive was exceedingly terrifying.

"If this continues, we'll be buried alive in here!" growled Zhao Qingshan between his clenched teeth. Without a Divine Weapon like the Luo Shen Sword, it was extremely energy consuming for them to chop and slice up those vines. If this continued, they might expend all of their Spiritual Energy extremely quickly, and when they were out of Spiritual Energy, what awaited them would naturally be the same outcome as those bones.

"Let's push forward!"

Mu Chen decisively roared out, before paving the way with Luo Li. As the Demonic Spear and Divine Sword shot out, they carved out a path

within those vine attacks that had hidden the skies and covered the earth. Taking this opportunity to shoot out, Lin Zhou and the rest tightly followed them, not daring to lag behind even by half a step.

The vines that hid the skies and covered the earth had filled up the entire stretch of forest, wriggling and squirming about like fingers, appearing like an exceedingly ghastly sight to behold.

"Puff!"

However, just as Mu Chen and the team were about to increase their speed in an attempt to escape from the assault from the vines, the black demonic trees in their surroundings started to abruptly tremble. In the next instant, black smoke started to gush out from their trunks, radiating in all directions.

"Careful!"

Being the first to discover the black smoke that was quickly flooding over, Luo Li immediately sent a sword light shooting over. However this time, the sword light was only able to pass through that black smoke, unable to dissipate or destroy them.

Seeing this, a frown appeared on Mu Chen's forehead as he sent a palm patting out. Majestic Spiritual Energy brought along boundless gales as it howled out, shoving the black smoke back some distance. However, very quickly, it started to sweep towards them once again.

"Ah!"

While Mu Chen was getting troubled by that black smoke, a miserable shriek suddenly rang out from behind. Casting a glance over, he saw that the hand of a member from the Desolation Spiritual Academy had come into contact with the black smoke. In the next instant, his hand started to wither at an astonishing speed, with his blood and flesh appearing to be completely devoured, leaving only his bald white bones.

Chopping down with his blade, Lin Zhou severed the arm of that member, before rapidly pulling him within the protective circle of the team.

That severed arm had turned into bones in the blink of an eye, with all the blood and flesh on it having completely vanished.

"Dammit! That's poison!" growled Lin Zhou as he clenched his teeth. "This poison's too overbearing! Furthermore, it has the ability to penetrate through Spiritual Energy. I simply don't dare to even come into contact with it!"

"We seem to be surrounded by that poisonous smoke," said Mu Fengyang with a bitter laugh. At this moment, their team had already come to a stop. That's because the poisonous smoke had already hid the skies and covered the earth as it surrounded them. They had already walked into a dead end, with no path forward or backwards...

A dark expression appeared on Mu Chen's face as he looked at the scene before him. After rushing in here for the ancient ruins, every step was truly laced with astonishing dangers. A moment of carelessness might result in them becoming fertilizer for these demonic trees.

"What should we do?" asked Luo Li while wrinkles appeared on her forehead. The situation before them appeared rather thorny.

Mu Chen's eyes sparkled as he looked towards the layers of poisonous smoke in his surroundings. Suddenly, a thought appeared in his mind as he extended his right hand. Clenching his four other fingers, he extended his middle finger out, before giving a furious stab towards a strand of poisonous smoke.

Upon seeing his action, Luo Li was frightening to the point of her little face turned deathly-pale. The poisonous smoke in their surroundings was extremely overbearing, with the consequences of touching it being extremely severe. Nevertheless, as she had extended her hand to stop Mu Chen, she noticed, in astonishment, that the clump of poisonous smoke fluctuated, before unexpectedly being sucked into Mu Chen's middle finger.

"Are you alright?!" Luo Li anxiously cried out as she hastily grabbed his hand.

With a smile, Mu Chen shook his head. Looking towards the

incomparably overbearing poisonous smoke, a smile cracked open from his lips. This smile no longer contained any of the dread or terror from before. On the contrary, it appeared as if he had seen a treasure.

This poisonous smoke was exceedingly formidable. With it, his "Poison Finger" that was used up during his battle with Mo Xingtian, he could finally replenish its Poison Aura once again.

Chapter 470: Replenishing the Poison Finger

A ring of black poisonous smoke lingered in their surroundings, completely sealing off their paths in all directions. This poisonous smoke was exceedingly overbearing, and even possessed the additional mysterious effect of being able to corrode Spiritual Energy. Therefore, once one came into contact with it, one might have to pay quite a huge price.

Solemn expressions appeared on the faces of Xu Huang and the rest as they tightly clenched their Spiritual Weapons, their palms dripping with sweat.

As their hearts raced and pounded, Mu Chen continued staring at the poisonous smoke, while a smile brimming with surprise and elation surfaced at the corner of his mouth. In the next instant, waving his hand gently, he spoke out, "Don't move from your current positions."

After saying those words, Mu Chen proceeded to take two steps forward, walking straight towards the black poisonous smoke.

Seeing Mu Chen's action, Luo Li couldn't help biting her lips. Although worry and anxiousness filled her heart, she did not go forward and restrain Mu Chen. At this moment, the only thing she could clearly do was to believe that Mu Chen wasn't about to do some nonsensical or idiotic action.

Xu Huang and the rest were similarly staring towards Mu Chen in shock, unable to comprehend what he was planning on doing.

Within their doubtful gazes, Mu Chen slowly extended a finger of his, which subsequently turned into a jet-black colour rapidly. At this moment, a faint, strange smile started to waft out from the fingertip. This finger of his was previously sealed by the Northern Sea Dragon, before being transformed by the Black Divine Lightning Poison that had flooded his body time after time again during his training. Now, this finger of his

undoubtedly possessed an extremely strong poison resistance.

This poison finger of his was considered one of Mu Chen's concealed killing moves. During his intense battle with Mo Xingtian, after being struck by his poison finger, the latter's body had disintegrated, with his Spirit landing in Mu Chen's hands, which was shattered with a single clench.

However, although his poison finger was formidable, it had a downside, which was that Mu Chen wasn't able to produce the poisonous strength that was required for it. To replenish its poisonous strength, he could only absorb the strength from external sources. This sounded simple enough, as there was a gigantic quantity of poisons from various sources present in the world. It's just that wanting to find a poison source that has a poisonous strength that exceeded that of the Black Divine Lightning Poison was clearly something that wasn't easy to accomplish with Mu Chen's current level of cultivation. Therefore, after completely using the might of his poison finger to kill Mo Xingtian, its poisonous strength was completely depleted. This caused him to feel extremely regretfully; after all, he had lost an extremely powerful and lethal trump card. To him, this was quite a big loss.

However, from the looks of it... he seemed to be able to make up for this regret of his.

Although the black poisonous smoke before him wasn't as overbearing as the Black Divine Lightning Poison, it was clearly an exceedingly vicious poison. This poisonous smoke was able to corrode Spiritual Energy. In the future, if he was to engage in a life-or-death fight with people, this was sufficient to be a vicious card to catch his enemy off-guard. Maybe, it might be able to dictate his control of that life-or-death situation then.

Hu.

Mu Chen deeply exhaled on the finger, causing its jet-black colour to turn even more abstruse. At this moment, this finger of his appeared exceedingly different from the other nine slender fingers of his. However, at this moment, a suction force abruptly swept out from the tip of the

finger.

Humm! Humm!

As the suction force swept out, fluctuations instantly rippled within the surrounding poisonous smoke, with humming noises unexpected ringing out from within. In the next moment, Xu Huang and the rest turned completely dumbfounded as they saw the poisonous smoke starting to rapidly rush towards Mu Chen, before streaming endlessly into the jet-black finger of his.

Xu Huang and everyone else were completely dumbfounded.

Sparkling with black light, Mu Chen's finger appeared akin to a bottomless pit, greedily devouring the poisonous smoke akin to having a feast. As more and more poisonous smoke drilled into it, the black colour of the finger grew increasingly abstruse. From the looks of it, it appeared as if it was condensed from a clump of black liquid.

Such feasting continued for nearly ten minutes, with the originally dense black poisonous smoke in their surroundings gradually thinning out.

As the final strand of black poisonous smoke drilled into his finger, Mu Chen could not help letting a smile surface on his face. He never imagined that not only would the thorny poisonous smoke not cause much loss for their team, it had even allowed him to replenish his poison finger.

With a flick, the jet-black shade on his finger rapidly turned faint, before regaining its pale and slender look. Clearly, that poisonous strength had been suppressed by the seal left by the Northern Sea Dragon.

Turning around, Mu Chen looked towards the dumbfounded Xu Huang and the rest. Noticing their expression, he could not help giving a laugh and said, "Let's go. Looks like the poisonous smoke can no longer obstruct us."

"How... How did you do it?" asked Lin Zhou as he opened his mouth wide and stared at Mu Chen. The person before him was someone whose complete strength could never be judged by his common sense. Time and time after again, he had assumed that he had felt the bottom of the latter's

strength. Yet, very quickly, such assumptions were broken by the latter once again...

"Just a small move of mine."

Giving a smile, Mu chen didn't give much of an explanation. Although they had some friendly relations with Lin Zhou as of now, it clearly wasn't to the point that Mu Chen would disclose his cards.

"Let's go. Let's continue moving forward," said Mu Chen as he waved his hand as he looked at his surroundings. After he absorbed the poisonous smoke, the demonic trees in their surroundings had actually turned silent once again, quietly towering within the forest and not moving a single inch. However, Mu Chen knew that when they unleashed their fangs once again, this entire region might be covered with a lot of bones.

Shaking his head, Mu Chen started to recompose his thoughts. He didn't possess the strength or capability to clear out all of the demonic trees present here. As of now, the demonic trees had given up do to them being unable to do anything towards Mu Chen, despite bringing out their strongest card. If he was too vicious in forcing them out, it would result in those demonic trees going all-out. At that time, he didn't believe that he would be able to escape from this dangerous Dark Origin Forest. Therefore, it was for the best for the others to fend for themselves. If one wanted to search for treasure, one would need to be prepared to pay the heavy price for the risks involved.

With a tap of his feet, he shot forward like a wisp of green smoke, rapidly rushing towards the depths of the forest, with Luo Li, Xu Huang, Lin Zhou and the rest rapidly following suit behind him.

As Mu Chen and his team travelled rapidly into the depths of the Dark Origin Forest, all of the other teams in the forest were now suffering the attacks of the demonic trees, with many instantly dying or suffering severe injuries. Some unfortunate teams were completely destroyed, turning into piles of bones, forever to stay in this forest.

Only those strong and powerful groups would be fortunate enough to be able to break through those attacks from the demonic trees, though they

had also paid quite a big price.

In fact, even groups as strong as the Saint Spiritual Academy, Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy and the Martial Spiritual Academy appeared exceedingly miserable, with them pulling out quite a few of their cards. Although they weren't able to break through in an overbearing manner like how Mu Chen had absorbed that poisonous smoke, they had some Spiritual Weapons that were able to resist against the poisonous smoke. Only with them were they able to escape in a miserable state and yet not pay too high a price.

After breaking through the death pit of demonic trees, all of the groups rapidly increased their speed as they shot towards the depths of the forest. With such formidable defenses already present here, the ancient ruins in front of them should not be an easy task to conquer. That also meant that if they were able to obtain a harvest from it, paying what price they had to pay would still be worth it.

While all of the groups were going all-out to break through the bloody death pit created by the demonic trees, a few black figures passed through within the shadows of the forest akin to spectres.

Swish! Swish!

Just as those black figures shot over a stretch of land, the earth below them shivered, as countless vines shot out from below. Extremely sharp luster sparkled from the sharp pointed ends of the tree spikes and vines, with black liquid even dripping from them. Clearly, they were coated with an extremely toxic poison, requiring only slight contact to cause definite death.

Whistling across the air, those tree spikes shot over, completely cutting off all the escape routes of those black figures.

However, despite being faced with such an impending danger, not a single bit of fear or fluster appeared within those black figures. At this moment, a faint smile appeared on the leading black figure as he raised his head, revealing a somewhat pale youthful face. Extending a withered and twig-like hand, green-coloured Spiritual Energy swept out from his

fingertips, before transforming into green-coloured runes.

Whoosh!

As those green-coloured runes explosively shot out, they smashed head-on against those incoming vines.

As collisions occurred, not a single sound of explosions rang out, while those green runes appeared to have drilled straight into those vines. In the next instant, furious shivers shook through the vines as they shot away, with all of them drilling through the other vines present. Those vines appeared to be like guards, protecting those black figures. From the looks of it, those demonic trees we're unexpectedly being controlled by them!

Compared to Mu Chen, such a method was clearly even more mysterious and formidable.

Swish! Swish!

Within this region, demonic trees were crazily attacking one another, with vines piercing through giant trees, causing black-coloured blood to ooze out, making an exceedingly weird and strange spectacle.

Those black figures grinned as they observed this spectacle. After quite a while, only when all of the surrounding demonic trees were pierced and killed by those under his control did the youth wave his sleeve, causing green rays of brilliance to gush out from the remaining demonic trees. With a bang, they exploded apart, sending black blood-like liquid to shoot everywhere.

Clearly dreading those black poisonous liquids, the black figures helter-skeltered and evade them, not daring to let any come into contact with their bodies.

"These poisonous demonic trees have truly flourished. Nevertheless, it's a pity that we don't have time. If not, we would be able to get quite a good price for the Spirit Corroding Poison." A black figure looked towards the black poisonous liquid, before speaking with some regret.

"Leave it be. Our goal is the Divine Wood Plaque within the gateway of the Divine Wood Palace. Once we obtain that Divine Wood Plaque, we'll

be able to find the genuine ruins of the Divine Wood Palace. To our Wood Spirit Clan, that's the real great success," said the leading black figure with a faint smile.

"However, of the groups that have arrived here, there are some that are very strong, especially those from four of the Great Academies. They aren't good to deal with," said a black figure.

With an indifferent smile, the leading black figure replied, "Within a place like this, we are King. Regardless of anyone that obstructs us from obtaining the Divine Wood Plaque, there will only be one outcome..."

With a furious clench of his twig-like arm, a malevolent and sinister killing intent erupted from his pale-white face.

"They will become the fertilizer that nourishes the great land!"

Hearing that, the black figures around him gave low and sinister-sounding laughter, their voices brimming with chilling intent.

"Let's go."

Waving his hand, the leading black figure shot off like a spectre, with the other black figures following close behind. In a blink of an eye, they disappeared into the shadows, leaving behind a mysterious scene of demonic trees pierced full of holes...

Chapter 471: Rescue

Mu Chen and his team brushed through the Dark Origin Forest. They were already approaching the depths of the forest. Along the way, they had suffered the attacks of dozens of Demonic Trees. However, though it was hard to guard against the attacks of those Demonic Trees, the instant they had preparations against it, it was no longer frightening. As for the fearsome poison mist, it became the least threatening of all, with Mu Chen's existence.

Therefore, while they were hastening the journey, it appeared easy for them.

"Looks like we're going to break through this forest." As figures brushed through, Luo Li suddenly raised her eyes and looked up ahead. In the depths of the darkness, there seemed to be faint beams of sunlight.

Xu Huang and the rest instantly felt relieved. Danger lurked in this forest and the pressure made them unable to breathe. They were constantly afraid that the instant they loosened up, there would be a poisonous spike that would sneak up on them.

Mu Chen smacked his lips in regret. Along their way, he had sucked up dozens of poisonous mist. The poison in his fingers was more rampant compared to before. Naturally, their main objective right now was to look for the ruins to enhance the strength of his entire team. Although these side door methods could briefly enhance his strength, he couldn't genuinely rely on it. Thus, even though Mu Chen felt a little pity, he did not continue to remain specifically to suck the poisonous mist.

"Hmm?"

Just when Mu Chen felt pity, his expression abruptly changed. He shifted his gaze towards the depths of the forest, towards his right as he felt powerful Spiritual Energy ripples in that direction. From the looks of it, it should be another team that had run into trouble.

Luo Li also discovered that commotion and shifted her glance towards Mu Chen.

"Forget it, let's not bother ourselves with it." Mu Chen shook his head after a brief consideration. In the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, a majority of the teams were their competitors. Therefore, they did not have the leisure to help others.

Luo Li and the rest nodded their heads in agreement.

Dong!

However, just when Mu Chen was about to lead his team to leave, another set of powerful ripples of Spiritual Energy exploded. This Spiritual Energy left Mu Chen startled, "Xia Hou of the Saint Spiritual Academy? They are laying their hands on the other teams?"

"The ripples of Spiritual Energy earlier on were pretty powerful. It could be Tang Mei'er of the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy or Zhou Yuan of the Martial Spiritual Academy..." Luo Li considered and exclaimed, "Xia Hou actually chose them as his prey?"

Mu Chen frowned his brows. Although Tang Mei'er and Zhou Yuan's team were slightly weaker in comparable to Xia Hou, they weren't such easy targets. If a full-blown battle was to breakout amongst them, even if Xia Hou and his team could digest it, they would also pay a price. It was unwise to pay such a price at this timing. Unless... Xia Hou and his team could easily take down Tang Mei'er and the rest...

"Shall we take a look?" Luo Li shifted her gaze over to Mu Chen.

Mu Chen's eyes flickered and he nodded his head, "It's sooner or later that Xia Hou will set us as his target. An enemy's enemy is our friend. Furthermore, the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy and the Martial Spiritual Academy are not our enemies, or at least we have not reached that step. If we lend them a hand, they would owe us a favour. Not a bad thing for us."

Furthermore... if it was Tang Mei'er, with her relationship with Tang Qian'er, there's no way he could stand watch with folded arms. Except, he could only think about this thought in his heart...

Mu Chen sneaked a glance towards Luo Li. The latter smiled and looked

at him and calmly nodded her head. "Since you have made your decision, then let's go."

Looking at her, who seemed to be unaware of Mu Chen's thoughts, Mu Chen felt a little guilty in his head. On the spot, he could only dryly smile and move. He shifted his direction and rapidly flew towards the direction of the Spiritual Energy ripples.

...

In that Forest of Darkness, violent Spiritual Energy ripples fluctuated to the point that the surrounding demonic trees were shaking from the energy. Cracks also started to appear on the tree bark.

Boom!

In the center of all that rampant Spiritual Energy, two figures were like lightning as they clashed. Following after was the wind from their palms as fearsome Spiritual Energy ripples spread out. In the ground below, cracks spreaded as a huge ravine spread towards the distance.

In that frightening bombardment, one of the figures trembled, while the other slender figure flew out along with a mouthful of blood spurting from her mouth.

"Captain!"

Behind her, four figures flew over and supported her as they yelled.

"Haha, Captain Tang Mei'er seems like your luck is not that good. As a matter of fact, I did not intend to clash with your team. However, who could have foreseen that you gave us such a good chance?" Up in front of her, a figure slowly descend with a faint smile. It was the Captain of Saint Spiritual Academy, Xia Hou.

Behind him, four of his teammates flew over and fixed their eyes on the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy's team.

Tang Mei'er wiped the blood off the corner of her mouth. That face of hers that had always been full of smiles were frost-cold at this moment. In her peach blossom-like slender eyes, there was no longer any of the

sweetness and charm that she used to have. It was replaced with chill as she looked at Xia Hou, "Captain Xia Hou, you're truly born in the year of the dogs, your time of seizing an opportunity is really good."

"It was just fluke." Xia Hou wasn't bothered by Tang Mei'er's mockery as he lightly smiled. He looked at the five girls, all of them had a trace of a black aura from the center of their brows. That was caused by poison. Clearly, they had been poisoned.

If it was normal times, Xia Hou would naturally not move his thoughts to Tang Mei'er. However, who could have expected that when they found Tang Mei'er and her team, they were already poisoned... Except that he was not aware of the poison that infected Tang Mei'er and her team. Although the situation was dangerous here, it wasn't sufficient to force them into such a state. However, suspicions still remained as suspicions. Such a great opportunity, Xia Hou would definitely not let it go.

Outside the forest, Xia Hou had originally thought that Tang Mei'er had formed an alliance with Mu Chen and Zhou Yuan, who suppressed their Saint Spiritual Academy. Back then, he was afraid that the three team would join hands and counter them and hence, he endured. Thus, when he saw that Tang Mei'er and her team was weakened, he naturally would not hesitate to target them.

"Captain Tang Mei'er, hand over your Academy Plaque to us." Xia Hou lightly smiled as he extended his hand out, "Although it doesn't seem too good to lay hands on girls, I believe you can understand our standpoint."

Chill flickered in Tang Mei'er's eyes as she tightly clenched her teeth and stared at Xia Hou with hatred. However, she was a decisive person and knew that they would not be his opponent. If they were to force their way through, it would only cause the poison in their body to breakout. If that happened, the consequences would be disastrous.

"Fine, I will remember this today, Xia Hou. I will settle it with you in the future!"

Tang Mei'er gave a grasp of her hand and the jade plaque appeared in her hand with a flicker and threw it towards Xia Hou.

Xia Hou smiled with his eyes narrowed and extended his hands out to receive the Academy Plaque. However, just when he extended his hands out, a suction burst out and the Academy Plaque flew past Xia Hou and his team.

Xia Hou's expression changed as his eyes were filled with shock, "Who?!"

"Haha, I never expected that I could pick up an Academy Plaque with so many points." A laughter rang out from the Dark Origin Forest behind him as dozens of figures flew out and landed on the empty space. It was Mu Chen and his team and in his hand, he was holding onto an Academy Plaque. Looking at the high points on the Academy Plaque with over two thousand points in it, he couldn't help laughing.

"Mu Chen!"

When Xia Hou saw Mu Chen's figure, his expression instantly turned cold, whereas the eyes of Tang Mei'er and her team lit up. Joy surfaced on their expression.

"Hand the Academy Plaque over!" Xia Hou extended his hand out towards Mu Chen and said coldly.

Mu Chen lightly smiled. He did not go on with any chatter, but with a grasp of his hand, a black spear appeared. Behind him, Luo Li, Xu Huang and the rest of his team fluctuated with Spiritual Energy in their surroundings as they made preparations to fight.

"Captain Xia Hou, if you wish to fight with us here, we'll be more than glad to do so." Mu Chen smiled.

"You're seeking death!" Behind Xia Hou, his four other teammates barked with fury.

Mu Chen did not bother about them as his line-of-sight only remained on Xia Hou. The latter tightly clenched his fist as killing intent gathered in his eyes. However, after a brief thought, he inhaled a mouthful of air and eerily said, "What great courage Captain Mu Chen possesses. The Academy Plaque will belong to you, but believe me, next time, I will let you spit out everything along with interest."

Although he wanted to kill Mu Chen with a palm of his, it was not a good time to fight at the moment. They had to save up their energy to search in the ruins, since there would eventually be a huge fight.

"I gladly welcome you." Mu Chen nodded his head with a smile.

"Let's go!"

Xia Hou's expression was cold as he waved his hand, turned around and left. His four other teammates slightly hesitated, before following up with their teeth clenched.

As Xia Hou and his team decisively left, Xu Huang and the rest also felt relieved. Mu Chen grasped the Academy Plaque as his line-of-sight shifted towards Tang Mei'er. The latter coldly glanced at the figure of Xia Hou's team as they left, before looking up and smiled towards Mu Chen, "Thanks, you can take half of the points on the Academy Plaque as our gratitude."

Mu Chen fiddled with the plaque before shaking his head. He made a flick with his fingers and the Academy Plaque turned into a streak of light as it flew towards the Tang Mei'er's startled team.

"If I require it, I will take it from you guys after you have all recovered." Mu Chen smiled.

Tang Mei'er and her team exchanged glances. The four other charming girls looked at that charming, slender youth with a long spear in his hands as their eyes lit up.

"Hehe, then we'll owe you guys a favor."

Tang Mei'er was not an indecisive person. She only hesitated for a brief moment, before receiving her Academy Plaque with a smile. A charming look, once again, flickered in her eyes as she looked at Mu Chen. "Seems like the eyesight of my little sister is pretty good, to the point that even I, the big sister, am a little attracted by you as well."

When Mu Chen heard her words, his smile stiffened as he could sense the girl beside him was lightly touching her Luo God Sword...

Chapter 472: Collaborate

Cough...

Sensing the glittering gazes shooting over from the young girl beside him, Mu Chen instantly gave a dry cough, not daring to continue replying those questions coming from the audacious and fiery Tang Mei'er that would lead to him burning himself. In the next instant, he gave a smile and said, "Captain Mei'er, are you all alright?"

Giving a helpless pucker of her lips, Tang Mei'er replied, "Due to us being poisoned, we've been targeted by Xia Hou."

"Poison?"

Hearing that, Mu Chen gawked, before starting to wrinkle his brows. Although those demonic trees in the dark forest were exceedingly thorny, they shouldn't be able to force Tang Mei'er and her group to such a point, right?

"We were ambushed by a mysterious group," replied Tang Mei'er while clenching her teeth. Shadows of seriousness surfaced within her beautiful eyes as she continued saying, "The methods that group employed were rather strange and weird, making it appear as if they are able to control the demonic trees in the forest. We had no time to deal with them, and were caught in their move. Although we managed to force them away at the end, we expended a lot by doing so."

Hearing her reply, Mu Chen was slightly shocked. Exchanging looks with Luo Li, he could also see the shock on her face. There is actually such a formidable group hiding in there? Furthermore, it should not be any group from the five Great Academies... Indeed, there were crouching tigers and hidden dragons in this Great Spiritual Academy Tournament. From the looks of it, one could never be too relaxed and complacent in here.

Although the five Great Academies were considered to be at the pinnacle of the myriad of Spiritual Academies out there, in this Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, there were some Spiritual Academies that had some hidden connections to a few powerful clans. They had sent a

few of the geniuses of their clans into those Spiritual Academies to obtain special statuses and treatment, before letting those genius figures represent the Spiritual Academies in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament. Groups with them in it would be extremely strong and powerful, and might even be able to contend against the groups sent out by the Saint Spiritual Academy.

Furthermore, due to the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament this time being especially massive, there would be even more crouching tigers and hidden dragons as compared with the past few times, resulting in an even more thorny situation.

Seeing as it is, this mysterious group that had ambushed Tang Mei'er's group would most likely be classified as one of them... From the looks of it, they had to be more cautious and vigilant; if not, they might be meet with unexpected disasters. At that time, it would truly be too late for regrets.

Mu Chen walked towards Tang Mei'er and her group. Indeed, there's a sliver of black aura present on their foreheads. That poisonous aura gave off familiar fluctuations, precisely being of the poisonous smoke they had encountered earlier while within the Dark Origin Forest. This poison had a corrosive effect towards Spiritual Energy, and upon contact with flesh, it would proceed to devour it like prey. Nevertheless, from the looks of it, it seemed that the poison within the bodies of Tang Mei'er and her group wasn't particularly serious. If not, it would already be hard for them to preserve on.

"Are you alright?" asked Mu Chen.

"Not too great. This poison's very sinister, and is continuously corroding away at our Spiritual Energy; therefore, it requires us to constantly use our Spiritual Energy to suppress it. If not, once it erupts..." replied Tang Mei'er helplessly. The corrosive poison in her body was clearly an extreme headache for her. Due to them being unable to clear out this poison, they were unable to muster their complete strength in combat, something that wasn't good news in this journey to the remnant.

After pondering deeply awhile, Mu Chen said, "Can I try helping you dispel the poison?"

Hearing his words, Tang Mei'er and the other four elegant and beautiful-looking girls of her group instantly gawked. All of them were very clear of how thorny this poison was. Normal methods were completely unable to dispel it...

Seeing their reactions, Mu Chen laughed out. Extending his hand towards them, he said, "Although I don't know exactly if it is possible, is there be no harm in trying?"

A sweet smile appeared on Tang Mei'er's face as she extended her slender, jade-like hand. Placing it within Mu Chen's palm, she replied with an alluring smile. "Then I have to give great thanks to Captain Mu Chen. If you're able to help us dispel this poison, we can't thank you enough for this grace."

Mu Chen felt awkward within his heart by the words said by Tang Mei'er. Nevertheless, not one bit of it was shown on his face. Clenching Tang Mei'er's slender hand, his poison finger descended right into her palm.

After being grabbed by Mu Chen's hand, Tang Mei'er still had a grinning look on her face. Nevertheless, as the warmth from his hand started to radiate from him, her heart beat started to increase. At this moment, a shade of pink started to unknowingly appear on her beautiful face, causing her to give off an exceedingly alluring appearance.

Mu Chen gave a gentle tap with his finger, as a suction force erupted out. In the next moment, the sliver of black aura present on Tang Mei'er's forehead instantly fluctuated. Flowing through her meridians into her palm, it transformed into a ray of black light, drilling straight into the poison finger of Mu Chen.

"You?!"

Upon seeing this, Tang Mei'er's beautiful face instantly changed furiously. Hastily grabbed onto Mu Chen's hand, she urgently spoke out, "You stupid idiot, why are you sucking the poison aura into your body?!"

"Uh..."

Feeling slightly embarrassed, Mu Chen shot a sneaky glance at Luo Li beside him. At this moment, the young girl had her hands crossed before her chest, appearing to have not seen anything.

"It's nothing. My body's somewhat unique, and this poison isn't able to do any harm to me," explained Mu Chen in a beat.

Only after his explanation did Tang Mei'er breathe, while an extra shadow of gentleness and a smile was present in her gaze towards Mu Chen.

"So, which of you first?" said Mu Chen with a smile as he looked towards the other four pretty and beautiful girls.

"Me!"

Four slender, snow-white hands immediately stretched out towards him, before shades of pink instantly appeared of the faces of the four beautiful girls. Nevertheless, their beautiful eyes looked daringly towards Mu Chen, causing his heart to tremble. The girls from the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy appear to not be too good at being provoked...

The process of dispelling the poison in them continued on smoothly, with only jealous gazes shooting out from Xu Huang, Lin Zhou and the other fellows behind Mu Chen's back, taking in Mu Chen touching the hands of each and every one of the beautiful girls. Furthermore, after having the poison in their bodies dispelled, those girls proceeded to stare at Mu Chen with their eyes wide open, with even watery ripples present in their eyes. Clearly, they had somewhat of a favorable impression of Mu Chen.

After the poison in their bodies was dispelled, Tang Mei'er and her group rapidly closed their eyes and adjusted their breathing to recover their Spiritual Energy.

Only upon seeing this did Mu Chen quietly take a breath of relief. Standing up, he gave a vicious glare towards Xu Huang and the others standing behind him.

"Looks like you're very popular among the girls, huh?" said Luo Li as her finger rested and gently tapped on her Luo Shen sword, her glazed-like eyes staring straight towards Mu Chen.

With a cheeky grin, Mu Chen walked beside her and said with a happy smile, "Are you jealous?"

He was clearly extremely happy to see the usually quiet and reserved Luo Li show such an alluring little girl tantrum due to him.

Being clear about his carefulness, Luo Li could only roll her eyes towards him, turning her little face away to show her ignorance of him.

Shamelessly extending his hand out, Mu Chen held Luo Li's hand within his, feeling the delicate and silky sensation on his skin. Only after doing so did he shake his head and speak out in a low voice. "My little Luo Li's still the most beautiful."

Luo Li's beautiful face turned a slight shade of pink as she shot an embarrassed glare at him. Nevertheless, she didn't pull her hand away in the end.

Having the poison dispelled from their bodies, Tang Mei'er and her group were able to recover very quickly, with rich and powerful Spiritual Energies radiating once more out from their bodies.

"Mu Chen, do you want to group up with us awhile?" With her strength having completely recovered, Tang Mei'er gave a sweet smile as she spoke out. At this moment, a chilling and vengeful shadow started to condense within her eyes.

"Hmm?" Mu Chen gawked.

"Let's collaborate. If we bump into Xia Hou and his group while in the ruins, we'll work together to deal with them. I'm alright with giving all of their points to you," said Tang Mei'er, whose beautiful eyes were now brimming with chilling intent. "There's also that mysterious group that had ambushed us. They should appear at the very end. Therefore, if we collaborate, we should be able to guard against them. I think that at that time, you should need a group with the strength like us as partners."

Mu Chen was somewhat shocked by her suggestion. He never imagined that Tang Mei'er would be so resentful over this matter to the point of actually wanting to collaborate with him. Furthermore, she didn't even want the points if they were to obtain them. This showed that she had wholeheartedly wanted to help deal with Xia Hou and his group. Indeed, her group would be of a great help. If they were to bump into Xia Hou and his group in their exploration of the ruins, he would truly be able to take action without any scruples.

Indeed, one could never take provoking women as something light. Once they get enraged, there would be no rationale in their retaliation.

"Okay!"

Mu Chen gave his response after a slight pause of pondering, not wanting to be wishy-washy about this. With the support of a strong group like Tang Mei'er's, there would be sufficient rise to his confidence. After all, in their group, they had to mainly rely on him and Luo Li to shoulder any offensive launched towards them. If they were to start a fight with Xia Hou's group, Xu Huang and the other two would not be able to provide much help, and would in fact somewhat drag the group down.

This was the greatest reason why he had not recklessly gone up and taken action towards Xia Hou and his group.

"Looks like Captain Tang Mei'er's sending us a big gift," said Mu Chen with a smile.

"Proper behavior is based on reciprocity," said Tang Mei'er with a smile. "If it's alright with you, you can just call me Elder Sister Mei'er."

"That's good, Elder Sister Mei'er. Let us collaborate from here," replied Mu Chen without any embarrassment. In the whole scale of things, being able to establish good relations with a group with such strength was, in all, a good thing. Although no one knew how long this collaboration would last, at the very least, they were able to collaborate for now.

"Since everyone has already rested, let us make our move. It seems that we're at the ends of this forest." Waving his hand, Mu Chen spoke out to the group before him.

"Yes."

Hearing that, everyone nodded their heads, with Xu Huang and the others feeling slightly pumped. With a few sudden additions of such formidable collaborators joining their team, this had undoubtedly caused their team's strength to drastically increase. If they were to bump into Xia Hou's group now, they would truly be able to take action...

"Let's go!"

With a smile, Mu Chen gave a tap of his feet, taking the lead and shot forward, with a dozen figures following closely from behind.

As the figures shot past the shadows, Mu Chen looked towards the radiance growing increasingly brighter from the distance. A smile akin to a hunter that had started his hunt started to curl up from the corner of his mouth. Saint Spiritual Academy... I won't be polite and take down the first of your groups!

Chapter 473: Divine Spiritual Tree

As Mu Chen's group sped through the forest as quick as lightning, shadows and humongous trees alike flashed past them. Finally breaking away from the darkness, they were once again enveloped by the familiar sunlight.

The warm sunlight shone down, causing them to inadvertently relax from their state of constant tension. Nevertheless, not being inexperienced rookies, they quickly recovered and focused their attention, cautiously sweeping their gazes around and scanning their surroundings. Suddenly, their expressions froze as shock surfaced within their eyes.

In the deepest part of the forest was a stretch of mountainous woods filled with lush and verdant vegetation. At this instant, an enormous light pillar had shot into the sky from the land before them, appearing clearly visible from more than a hundred miles away. Evidently, this was the origin of the light pillar they had spotted earlier while in the depths of the forest.

Carefully looking over, they discovered that a large, glowing tree stood within the light pillar. Swaying gently, it radiated with rich and exuberant life force, along with a strange, sweet fragrance that hung in the air. Breathing in this fragrance caused them to feel the Spiritual Energy within their bodies to circulate more vigorously.

There seemed to be emerald-green fruits suspended from the large, glowing tree. The fruits had light halos floating around them, and a dense life force diffused from the fruits.

"That's..."

As Mu Chen's group stared at the huge tree in the light pillar, they could not suppress the shock and astonishment from surfacing within their eyes.

Tang Mei'er muttered in shock, "Could that be the Divine Spiritual Tree?"

The Divine Spiritual Tree was an extremely rare heavenly treasure, born from the endless life force of the heavens and the earth. It was said that the fruits from the Divine Spiritual Tree were greatly beneficial in the tempering of one's fleshly body, and were able to remove all impurities from the body. During the Ancient Antiquity, formidable clans and ancient sects had put in large amounts of effort and resources to grow a Divine Spiritual Tree, with the aim of nurturing their younger generations. Hence, their younger generation members would always be exceptionally powerful.

However, as of now, the Divine Spiritual Tree had become extremely rare. Only powerhouses armed with formidable strength could possess such a treasure. In fact, the amount of strength and resources required was so copious that even the five Great Academies lacked the ability to own one. Henceforth, they were shocked to find a Divine Spiritual Tree growing so vibrantly in this location, and even bearing so many fruits.

Xu Huang and the others were now breathing heavily. Currently, they were at the most pivotal moment in attempting to pass the Human Body Disaster. However, due to the extreme danger of attempting to pass it, they could possibly lose their lives if any accidents were to occur. Not daring to rashly attempt it, they could only approach it cautiously. However, if they were able to obtain the Divine Spiritual Fruit, this problem would be easily resolved. Even if it did not offer a perfect guarantee in passing the Human Body Disaster, on the off-chance to them failing, they would be able to keep their lives, at the very least. To them, this was the most important factor.

On the other hand, Mu Chen had quickly recovered from his state of shock. Having undergone the Divine Spiritual Baptism, he did not have to worry about the Human Body Disaster. Thus, the enticement of the fruits did not get to his head. Looking at the Divine Spiritual Tree swaying gently in the light pillar, he slightly scrunched his brows. Something felt slightly off, yet he was unable to put his finger on just what it was.

"Whew."

Everyone's breathing gradually turned heavier, while their eyes slowly

turned red. Unable to restrain themselves any further, they shot forward, each one trying to snatch the treasure for himself.

"Humph!"

Watching the hunger in their eyes, Mu Chen's thoughts wavered. Suddenly, he let out a low roar. Infused with Spiritual Energy, the roar was akin to a sudden clap of thunder, exploding beside the ears of the Xu Huang and the others.

Their bodies spasmed as a buzzing sound echoed in their ears. While the redness in their eyes slightly dissipated, they blankly stared at Mu Chen.

"Be careful, there's something off about this Divine Spiritual Tree." Mu Chen commented softly. The Xu Huang trio were not rash people; however, it felt like their earlier actions were being controlled by something. This was indeed a strange and weird place.

Xu Huang and the others had recovered at this moment, and were spontaneously drenched in cold sweat. Looking back at the Divine Spiritual Tree, their gazes were now filled with caution and wariness.

"Try your best to inhale as little of that fragrance as possible..." Luo Li suddenly voiced out. "Although it seems that the fragrance speeds up the circulation of Spiritual Energy and brings about a soothing feeling, if you lose yourself in that feeling, you will become entranced... this tree, might not actually be a Divine Spiritual Tree..."

Mu Chen, Tang Mei'er, and the rest were shocked. This tree in front of them looked exactly the same as the recorded appearance of the Divine Spiritual Tree. However, they had truly never heard of the Divine Spiritual Tree having the ability to entice people into a trance and cause them to lose conscious thought.

Swish! Swish!

Just as Mu Chen and the others cautiously glanced at the huge tree in the middle of the light pillar, many swooshing sounds suddenly flooded the surrounding area. The Dark Origin Forest behind them showed signs of fluctuations, while a multitude of silhouettes shot out like lightning,

landing in the lush vegetation around them.

These were all groups that had charged through the Dark Origin Forest. However, many groups had suffered heavy injuries and appeared to be in a sorry state, suffering either heavy injuries or missing members. Evidently, they had paid a heavy price to arrive here.

Swish!

Yet another group of shadows shot out and landed on a small hill, with a familiar figure within the group, causing Mu Chen to slightly squint his eyes. Beside him, Tang Mei'er and the rest tightly clenched their teeth and stared at the group with icy gazes. That group was Xia Hou and his group from Saint Spiritual Academy.

Upon arriving, Xia Hou naturally noticed Mu Chen and the others' gazes. Upon realising that Mu Chen was with Tang Mei'er and the others, his gaze slightly froze.

A team member whispered beside Xia Hou, "Captain, it seems like Tang Mei'er has joined forces with Mu Chen. It is very likely that they will take action against us."

Xia Hou slightly nodded. Although he wasn't afraid of Tang Mei'er's group or Mu Chen's group, if they were joining forces, they would be able to cause some trouble to his group. It would seem that their earlier actions towards Tang Mei'er had given Mu Chen a convenient opportunity. Nevertheless,they were too naive to think that teaming up would allow them to topple him.

"It doesn't matter. When the time comes, we'll give them a good surprise..." Xia Hou said with a smirk. Glancing back at the Dark Origin Forest behind him, he commented, "I wonder what happened to the team from Martial Spiritual Academy..."

Swish!

Just as the words left his mouth, swooshing sounds rushed out from the Dark Origin Forest, and multiple figures violently shot out. Their appearance caused many to cry out in surprise.

Mu Chen and Tang Mei'er's gazes instantly swept over, and their expressions instantly changed.

The figures that had just charged out of the forest were familiar; it was the group from Martial Spiritual Academy. However, the group seemed to have suffered greatly. From their original five members, they currently had only four left, with many serious injuries present on the remaining four. Even Zhou Yuan, whose body was solid as a metal tower had an extremely pale complexion. Fresh blood continuously flowed from his hand in which he grasped his metal pole.

They seemed to have experienced a bitter fight.

At this moment, there were at least a hundred teams in this area. Upon witnessing the current state of Zhou Yuan's group, all of them broke out in cries of alarm. They never expected to see his group in such a miserable condition.

Some gazes started shifting around, while dark glints gushed forth from the eyes of some of the stronger teams. Although they would not normally dare to take action against the team from Martial Spiritual Academy, the present situation was an opportunity to take down a weakened titan. Taking this opportunity might net them some considerable benefits...

Clearly noticing those gazes filled with ill intent, Zhou Yuan did not say anything. Simply waving to his teammates, he allowed his team to rest while he stood guard with a dark expression and tightly gripped his metal pole. A ruthless expression, akin to that of a tiger, was present on his face, while his stance had a tinge of craziness present within, intimidating the other teams into not taking one bit of strange action.

As they witnessed this scene, a trace of a smile appeared within the eyes of Xia Hou and his team. Nevertheless, they did not take action, simply glancing at the Dark Origin Forest, before retracting their gaze.

"Zhou Yuan and his group were actually injured to this extent... exactly who did it?" Mu Chen wore a heavy expression as he spoke out. Zhou Yuan's group possessed considerably frightening strength, and yet they had been so badly injured, and had even lost a teammate...

"Could this be the work of Xia Hou's group?" Luo Li enquired, her brows knitted.

Tang Mei'er shook her head. "It shouldn't be; otherwise, the two of them would already be at each other's throats." She knew of Zhou Yuan's temper, and if this was really Xia Hou's doing, the former would have already exploded in anger.

"So..."

Mu Chen's expression froze. "Is it... that mysterious team that you crossed hands with?"

Tang Mei'er was startled for a moment. "I won't rule out that possibility. That team was hiding in the shadows, and they had strange methods. To force Zhou Yuan and his team into such a situation isn't entirely impossible... However, why would they specifically target the strongest?"

"Perhaps it's because we pose the greatest threat to them..."

Mu Chen scrunched his brows. "Seems like we have to be more careful. They are definitely not simple characters, like poisonous snakes hiding in the shadows..."

Luo Li and the others nodded in agreement. Being able to poison Tang Mei'er's group and injure Zhou Yuan's team to this extent, that mysterious team truly did possess some ability.

Mu Chen withdrew his gaze and looked to his front. This was the deepest part of the Dark Origin Forest, but there was only a strange Divine Spiritual Tree here... As for the supposed ancient remnant, they had yet to find even a single sign of its existence.

"What's going on?" Mu Chen muttered to himself.

"Is that the Divine Spiritual Tree?!"

Just as Mu Chen was pondering to himself, the other teams in the area had finally identified the Divine Spiritual Tree. The eyes of many lit up, filling with greed and desire. In the next instant, more than a hundred figures had simultaneously shot out towards the Divine Spiritual Tree,

with the intent to snatch its fruits.

Watching the scene unfold before him, Mu Chen simply kept his cool and watched from the side.

Chapter 474: Palace

Swoosh!

More than a hundred silhouettes seemed to simultaneously burst forth in an instant. Just like the Xu Huang trio before them, all of them stared at the Divine Spiritual Tree with reddish eyes. As their breathing became heavier, unconcealable greed erupted from their eyes. The enticement of this Divine Spiritual Tree truly was too much for them to bear.

Witnessing the scene before them, Mu Chen's group did not take action at all. Instead, with an unsympathetic gaze, they simply watched the fellows whose rationality had been consumed by greed.

Their speed was exceptionally quick. In the span of merely ten breaths, they had already neared the Divine Spiritual Tree. However, there was something unusual happening. They did not face any resistance at all, and with a strong gust of wind, they had barbarically tore the Divine Spiritual Fruit right off the tree one after another into their hands.

"Haha, a Divine Spiritual Fruit! With this, I can survive the Human Body Disaster!"

Grasping onto the Divine Spiritual Fruit that radiated with boundless Spiritual Energy, they could not help heartily laughing in that moment. Eyes filled with ecstasy, they immediately stuffed the Divine Spiritual Fruit right into their mouths in a single bite.

Boundless Spiritual Energy rippled out from within their bodies. However, immediately after, shocked and inconsolable expressions appeared on their faces as they suddenly felt an indescribable heat gushing out from inside their bodies. As this happened, their skin turned crimson red, while black-coloured blood started oozing from all their pores. Unexpectedly, black flames were mixed within the trails of black blood flowing out from them.

"Ah!"

Mournful screeches spontaneously erupted and resonated, as a figure

was suddenly drenched with black blood, and black flames rolled out from inside his body, enveloping him entirely. With a loud bang, he exploded into a bloody mist. The mist floated on the wind, eventually floating back to the Divine Spiritual Tree and condensing, forming another Divine Spiritual Fruit.

This strange scene caused those who had retained their senses and not acted rashly to feel ice-cold all over.

Bang! Bang!

Following the first person who had been engulfed by the black flames, the other unfortunate ones who had similarly consumed the Divine Spiritual Fruit soon met the same fate. Black flames erupted from their bodies, before they immediately turned into clumps of bloody mist. All the blood mists were eventually absorbed by the Divine Spiritual Tree, forming one Divine Spiritual Fruit after another, hanging plumply on the tree, swaying in the wind.

In a short span of only a few minutes, many of those unfortunate souls who had eaten the Divine Spiritual Fruits had exploded into bloody mists, and were turned into new Divine Spiritual Fruits in the process.

Gulp.

Xu Huang and the rest had watched the scene unfold with deathly-pale expressions on their faces, while being unable to help swallowing a mouthful of saliva. Fortunately, they had been obstructed by Mu Chen, if not, their current state would be exactly the same as those people.

Mu Chen also deeply exhaled. Staring solemnly at the Divine Spiritual Tree, he slowly said, "This thing's definitely not a Divine Spiritual Tree!"

In the surrounding region, all of the teams had quietened down with some of them having pale expressions on their faces. Even someone like Xia Hou was watching on with tightly knitted brows. These teams had exhausted all their methods in order to charge past the Dark Origin Forest

full of demonic trees and arrive here. Was it all for naught? What about the supposed ancient inheritance? Could it be that it was referring to this

extremely strange demonic tree in front of them?

"Eh? The Divine Spiritual Tree seems to be changing!"

In this moment of silence, there was a sudden exclamation of shock. As the many gazes hurriedly shot over, everyone saw that within the light pillar, the Divine Spiritual Tree was actually changing gradually from its original emerald-green luster into a slightly black colour. In just half a minute, the Divine Spiritual Tree, originally abundant with a divine aura, had become covered in a demonic aura. The Divine Spiritual Fruits on the tree had also changed in appearance. They actually had sinister human faces on them, with black blood flowed continuously from the fruit.

"This is..."

Tang Mei'er stared at the demonic tree that had just drastically changed, taking in a sharp breath. "It seems like this is actually a Demonic Spiritual Tree. It's absolutely not a Divine Spiritual Tree!"

Mu Chen's group wore grave expressions as they nodded in agreement. Even though the Demonic Spiritual Tree only differed from the Divine Spiritual Tree by just a single word, they were two entirely different objects. It was said that these strange trees had the ability to confuse people's conscious thoughts, and could emit a scent akin to an otherworldly treasure from far away, attracting greedy treasure seekers, while changing its appearance into such treasures. However, once people consumed its fruits, they would be immolated by demonic flames and turned into a bloody mist, before being absorbed by the Demonic Spiritual Tree.

It was then that Mu Chen realised why he had felt that something was off earlier on. As it turned out, the tree in front of them was not a Divine Spiritual Tree, but rather, a strange and dreadful Demonic Spiritual Tree.

"We were enticed here by this damned thing?" Tang Mei'er clenched her teeth in reluctance. "Could it be that the supposed ancient inheritance is also a scam?"

Mu Chen wrinkled his brows.

"Mu Chen!" Suddenly, Lin Zhou whispered, before pulled out an emerald-green jade plaque. There were many tree patterns engraved on the jade plaque, and at this very moment, it was glowing with a lustrous green light. Passing the jade plaque to Mu Chen, he said, "Something seems to be happening to this thing!"

Being instantly startled, Mu Chen immediately received the jade plaque. This plaque should be the piece that Lin Zhou's team had obtained.

As he grasped the medal, he could feel the warmth spreading from the medal. Looking over towards the Demonic Spiritual tree, he could see that at this moment, seemingly as a result of absorbing all the bloody mists, ray after ray of black lights were appearing on the Demonic Spiritual Tree. With every ray of black light that appeared, the jade plaque grew warmer and warmer.

Mu Chen's gaze sparkled. With a flick of his finger, the jade medal transformed into a ray of green light and shot out.

Swish!

As it shot out, the jade plaque had actually charged straight into the Demonic Spiritual Tree. Immediately, mournful screeches seemed to sound out from the tree. In the next instant, rays of light exploded from within the tree and its trunk rapidly split open. Boundless Spiritual Energy undulated in the surrounding space, before distortions started to appear. In the next instant, an enormous wooden palace appeared from within.

The wooden palace hovered in mid-air, while the space surrounding it seemed to have formed its own realm, emanating an ancient air of vicissitudes from within.

This change in the situation caused everyone present to feel shocked, including Mu Chen, who had actually triggered this incident.

Countless gazes were tightly locked onto that ancient wooden palace. However, this time round, no one dared to act rashly again. Those unlucky fellows who had gone ahead of them had already taught them a rather bloody lesson.

Under those countless attentive gazes, the ancient wooden palace suddenly gave out a buzzing sound. The thick, heavy, wooden doors that were tightly closed started to slowly open, bit by bit. An ancient smell swept out, rippling out into this space.

"It seems like only after absorbing enough fresh blood will the Demonic Spiritual Tree trigger a response from the jade plaque." Mu Chen softly commented. It seemed that those ancient experts who had left their inheritance were not kind people, actually requiring such a bloody method to open the wooden palace. Although most of them had lost their lives due to their avarice, normal people would not have thought of such a ruthless and brutal method.

"This should be the ancient inheritance hidden in this location." Mu Chen glanced at Tang Mei'er's team, laughing. "How about it? Interested?"

Hearing this, Tang Mei'er simply smiled charmingly and replied, "After facing so much difficulty in charging into this place, if we return empty-handed, it would not fit our style of doing things."

"Great, let's make a move then."

Mu Chen sucked in a breath, and his expression turned sharp. Shooting a glance at Xia Hou's team, his figure flashed and he shot out directly at that ancient wooden palace. Behind him, Luo Li, Tang Mei'er and the others tightly followed.

"Go!"

Upon witnessing this, Xia Hou chuckled indifferently. With a wave of his hand, five figures turned into rays of light and shot out, tightly following them towards that ancient wooden palace.

With them leading the way, the entire area immediately turned fiery, and team after team hurriedly rose into the air. After the heavy price they paid to summon this ancient inheritance, if they did not receive something worthwhile in return, they would not be able to bear it.

"Captain, are we still going in?"

The Martial Spiritual Academy team's three remaining members stared

at the ancient wooden palace in the distance, asking softly.

Zhou Yuan had a pale complexion, but his expression had a tinge of craziness. Tightly gripping his metal rod, he shouted out, "Go! The team that carried out that sneak attack on us must definitely be around here somewhere too, god damn it, this old man wants to tear them apart!"

Once he said that, he stepped forward without any hesitation and shot out.

Accompanying the continuous stream of teams charging towards the opened ancient palace, this area also became exceptionally lively. Those teams which wear missing members were looking for potential allies instead. After all, wanting to reap a bountiful reward in this place was impossible without sufficient strength.

At the edge of the Dark Origin Forest, shadows fluttered about. Soon after, multiple silhouettes slowly walked out from the shadows. Their leader lifted his pale face and stared at the ancient palace, giving a cold laugh. "It truly is the Divine Wood Palace, it seems that we were looking for the right thing."

"It seems that the teams from four of the Great Academies have all entered."

"What a waste, we had wanted to eliminate one or two in the forest, but we didn't settle even one of them. These fellows truly are not weak, forcing us to use other methods in the end."

The silhouette shook his head, and starting walking. A cold and indifferent laughter spread from the shadows.

"However, I won't be giving you the chance to walk out of this Divine Wood Palace alive."

Chapter 475: Obtaining Treasure

When Mu Chen's group charged into that freshly opened ancient palace, they were clearly able to sense ripples around in the space around them. Subsequently, their surroundings started to undergo huge changes.

They were in a humongous, dark-green hallway. Both sides of the hallway linked to one hall after another, and an ancient smell permeated the deathly silence.

Mu Chen's group took in the scene in front of them, before looking at one another, seeing the heat in each other's eyes. It seemed like this truly was an inheritance from the Ancient Antiquity, with an ancient air that no one would doubt.

"Everybody, let's make good use of the time and search by ourselves."

Mu Chen waved his hand and ordered.

"Haha, see you all later!" Lin Zhou took the initiative, laughing out loud as he decisively led his four teammates and shot off. Having arrived at the location of the ancient inheritance, the rewards that one would be able to reap would depend on one's own strength.

"Then, we'll make a move, too. If anything happens, just send a signal." Tang Mei'er also didn't hesitate, chuckling towards Mu Chen, before leading her team into another ancient hall.

Although they had a working relationship, when it came to searching for treasure, it was best to split up. If not, if the treasures couldn't be split equally, it would actually cause problems.

"Let's go."

Seeing that the team was temporarily split up, Mu Chen immediately waved his hand, and his figure directly shot out.

Just as Mu Chen's group was travelling into the deeper regions of this seemingly maze-like hallway, more and more teams appeared within this area. Once they appeared, they spread out like a swarm of locusts, and this ancient palace hall, silent for innumerable years, spontaneously became

lively again.

Dong!

On the thick and heavy doors of a grand hall, many cracks suddenly started to appear. With a final bang, the doors exploded open.

Waving his arms, Mu Chen swept the dust away, before stepping into this grand hall. This hall wasn't that spacious, with it's area being slightly narrower than the halls from earlier on. However, it was evident that this hall, whether it's appearance or arrangement, was more important than the other halls.

Earlier on, they had grasped the opportunity and charged ahead through several halls ahead of the other teams, but regretfully, they did not find anything worthwhile. This ancient inheritance had obviously been around for a very long time, and many treasures had been worn down and eroded by the passage of time, unable to last and only left ashes behind.

Luckily, this particular hall seemed somewhat different.

A dense smell of medicinal herbs emanated from this grand hall. It seemed that this was a place used to grow various medicines. On the ground, there were clear jade-like receptacles that had unknown mysterious plants growing in them. An intense Spiritual Energy was emitted from the plants, saturating the air around them.

Mu Chen was unable to identify any of the herbs, and from their appearances, these plants seemed to be in a state of slow growth, hence he simply glanced over them before dejectedly shaking his head. He did not have the desire to collect these herbs and spend large amounts of time and effort to grow them.

"Hmm?"

Mu Chen suddenly stopped in his tracks. Raising his head, he spotted a small tree several feet tall at the far end of the hall. The small tree was gently swaying, emitting a vigorous life force.

On that small tree, there seemed to be several emerald-green fruits, and there were strange light halos floating on the surface of these fruits.

Just as Mu Chen spotted the small, glowing tree, Xu Huang's group had also discovered it. However, startled expressions immediately surfaced on their faces, and they even retreated a few steps. Wasn't this thing what they had just seen earlier, the "Divine Spiritual Tree" that had almost taken their lives?

"No need to be so tense, it seems like this is the real deal." Mu Chen's gaze was tightly locked onto the tree, which seemed to have been sculpted from jade.

Upon hearing this, Xu Huang's group breathed a sigh of relief, but their bodies remained tense.

Mu Chen slowly walked forward, and it was only when he neared the Divine Spiritual Tree that he was able to feel the boundless and pure Spiritual Energy emitted from the tree. Chuckling, he planned to snatch the five remaining Divine Spiritual Fruits on from the tree.

Boom!

However, just as his hand was about to touch the Divine Spiritual Tree, from the lingering fragrant mist in front of him, an extremely rampant gale suddenly swept forth, rumbling angrily towards Mu Chen like a mountain.

"Watch out!"

Luo Li was the first to detect it, and with a gentle exclamation, her delicate figure had already shot out. A palm stretched out, carrying an overflowing amount of Spiritual Energy, colliding violently with the withered palm extending from the mist.

Bang!

Violent gales swept forth, and Luo Li swiftly retreated. Within that fluctuating mist, there was actually a ten-foot tall wooden statue charging out. Its eyes glowed with a dark-green light, and its withered body was like a tree trunk, it was not wonder that even Mu Chen was unable to detect it hiding behind the Divine Spiritual Tree earlier on.

Glancing at the wooden statue, Mu Chen didn't give it much thought.

This must be some sort of puppet, and its strength was not bad, comparable to someone who survived the Human Body Disaster.

Roar!

However, the green glowing eyes of the wooden statue were locked onto Mu Chen, who was the closest to the Divine Spiritual Tree. A fist rumbled out, causing rampant gales to spread out.

Mu Chen gave an indifferent laugh, but did not show any intention of dodging. Suddenly clenching his fist, black arcs of lightning burst forth from the surface of his body, and lightning runes directly appeared on his chest. His fist rumbled out with an incomparably rampant force, colliding directly with the wooden statue.

Bang!

Rampant forces rippled out, forcing the Xu Huang trio to retreat more than a dozen steps. The withered wooden statue also trembled, sawdust sputtering out, before its huge body flew back.

Mu Chen's body also vibrated, and he couldn't help massaging his palm with a shocked gaze. The toughness of the wooden statue far exceeded his expectations, and most people who survived the Human Body Disaster would probably be unable to beat this wooden puppet.

Swish!

An incomparably sharp Sword Aura swept over as Luo Li's delicate figure shot past. A ray of white light broke off from her hands and shot directly into the head of the wooden statue, penetrating through and sending a cloud of sawdust bursting out.

Groan!

The longsword penetrated through the head of the statue, before flying around and returning to Luo Li's hands. The green light in the wooden statue's eyes rapidly receded, and it toppled over on the ground, causing the entire hall to tremble.

Witnessing Mu Chen and Luo Li's efficient coordination, the Xu Huang

trio spontaneously grinned. What a frightening pair of lovers!

Mu Chen gently patted his hands, looking at the toppled wooden statue. This kind of puppet was difficult to deal with. Its defensive strength was extremely high, if not for Luo Li having the Luo Shen sword, even if the two of them were to join forces, they would have to spend much effort before being able to resolve this problem.

Mu Chen was stunned at the tyrannical strength of the wooden statue, before moving his attention back to the Divine Spiritual Tree. With a clench of his palm, he directly forced the five Divine Spiritual Fruits into his hand.

Like pieces of jade, the five Divine Spiritual fruits rested in his palm, emitting a boundless and pure Spiritual Energy.

"It seems that out luck isn't bad at all."

Chuckling, Mu Chen raised his head and looked at the Xu Huang trio, whose gazes were locked onto the Divine Spiritual Fruits in his hand. With a flick of his finger, three of the fruits landed in their hands.

"Store it it well, first. After we get out of this place, find a place to absorb and refine it, before trying to attempt the Human Body Disaster, and see whether you can successfully survive it." Mu Chen laughed, if the Xu Huang trio was able to survive the Human Body Disaster, the overall ability of their team would no longer be inferior, and might actually exceed that of Xia Hou's team.

The Xu Huang trio could not hide the emotions swirling in their eyes, nodding seriously in response. Although this Divine Spiritual Fruit could not give a perfect guarantee of them surviving the Human Body Disaster, it would at least protect them from harm. Even if they were to fail, they would be able to keep their lives.

Mu Chen passed one of the other fruits to Luo Li. Although she had the Spiritual Crystal from the Spiritual Mountain, for something like this, naturally, the more the merrier.

Grasping the last Divine Spiritual Fruit, Mu Chen felt the boundless and

pure Spiritual Energy and a grave expression flashed past his eyes. He was currently at the peak of the Heavenly Completion Stage. If he consumed the fruit, he would probably reach the level of the Human Body Disaster. However, now wasn't the right time to attempt it.

Mu Chen stored the Divine Spiritual Fruit, but his gaze couldn't help returning to the Divine Spiritual Tree in front of him, and he grinned to himself. Although five Divine Spiritual Fruits were already quite rare, if one was to consider it's worth, the entire Divine Spiritual tree was obviously worth more.

The Divine Spiritual Tree in front of him had yet to mature. However, to some of the powerhouses, it was a peerless treasure, as it could endlessly produce Divine Spiritual Fruits.

Mu Chen obviously had no good reason to forgo such a priceless treasure. He directly grabbed the Divine Spiritual Tree, and was ready to forcefully uproot the tree and store it.

Swish!

However, just as Mu Chen was about to take the tree, many sharp winds suddenly sounded out as multiple figures shot out towards Mu Chen at a speed faster than the eye could track.

Swish! Swish!

Sharp Sword Qi immediately swept out from Luo Li, who was beside Mu Chen. Sword shadows howled out and landed with absolute precision on those numerous light figures.

Hmph!

The sword shadows flashed past, and the multiple light figures stuck into the ground in front of Mu Chen. They were actually incomparably sharp black tree branches. The tree branches were coated in a black liquid and as the liquid dripped onto the ground, even the ground started to rot. Evidently, it was some sort of poison.

"Who?!" The Xu Huang trio's expression abruptly changed as they immediately shouted out.

Mu Chen raised his head, staring at the doors with a cold gaze. Over there, shadows shot past as five figures appeared like ghosts.

Those five figures were dressed in black robes. Pale young faces were half-hidden under those black robes.

"Hehe, someone has actually beat us to it." The leader of the black-robed group chuckled.

Look at this, Mu Chen's gaze slightly froze, before he softly commented, "You must be the group hiding in the shadows and ambushing the other teams, right? What's this? Have you finally focused your attention on us?"

Chapter 476: Wood Spiritual Academy

"Haha. Looks like you actually know about our existence, huh..."

At the door of the large hall, the black-robed leader raised his head up, revealing a pale, yet youthful, face. Looking towards Mu Chen's group, he subsequently turned his gaze to sweep across the interior of the large hall, before saying with a faint smile, "It should be the group from the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy that had told you about us, right?"

"So it's truly was you guys that were secretly taking action."

Mu Chen said with a faint wrinkle on his forehead. "Where exactly do you come from?"

"Oh, we're the group that hails from the Wood Spiritual Academy. Haha. Our Wood Spiritual Academy isn't as famous as your five Great Academies," replied the pale-faced youth with a smile.

"Wood Spiritual Academy?" Mu Chen frowned. True, he had not heard of such a Spiritual Academy before.

"What connection does it have to your Wood Spirit Clan? Tang Mei'er said that you're seemingly able to control the demonic trees. That's similar to what you might expect of the methods the Wood Spirit Clan would employ," said Luo Li as she walked towards Mu Chen's side, chilling intent surfacing within her beautiful eyes as she looked towards the mysterious group before her.

Upon hearing those words, the pale-faced youth shot a somewhat astonished look towards Luo Li, before saying with a smile. "I never imagined that there would still be such a knowledgeable person here that can even understand the ways of our Wood Spirit Clan. Look's like you're also not simple, huh."

With a smile, Mu Chen said, "I don't know why you've suddenly come knocking. Are you guys planning to change your targets to deal with us?"

Giving a faint smile, the eyes of the pale-faced youth faintly sparkled as he fluttered his gaze over towards the Divine Spiritual Tree. In the next

moment, his gaze slightly drifted away as he shot a look at the greenish wood statue that Mu Chen and Luo Li had dealt with. With a grin, he said, "I don't wish to take action and go into a huge brawl with you guys. However, we're quite interested in that Divine Spiritual Tree. Since you guys have taken the Divine Spiritual Fruits, why not leave the Divine Spiritual Tree to us and let everyone have a peaceful conclusion? How about that?"

Focusing his black pupils on him, Mu Chen slowly shook his head, before saying with a faint smile, "I'm sorry, but I refuse."

This Divine Spiritual Tree was found by them. Therefore, he had no plan of handing it over.

"Oh really? That's truly a pity, then."

The pale-faced youth gave a soft sigh. In the next instant, a chillingly sinister shadow gushed from his eyes as he said, "Looks like we'll be forced to kill you guys first, then."

Swish!

Seemingly at the instant when his voice rang out, his figure had already shot forward as he thrust a palm out. Boundless green Spiritual Energy howled out, transforming into a palmprint seemingly made of withered wood that patted towards Mu Chen with extreme fierceness.

At the same moment, his four compatriots standing behind him had also instantly took action; tree spikes laced with poisonous toxins left remnant shadows in the air as they hurtled and enveloped Luo Li, Xu Huang and the others at lightning speed.

Upon taking action, this group of people had all unleashed exceedingly vicious moves, completely not showing one single shred of mercy.

Mu Chen had long held caution and vigilance against this group of people. Therefore, upon seeing that youth take action, a sneer flashed across his eyes as he tightly clenched his hand to form a fist. Instantly, his Lightning God's Physique was activated as black lightning gushed out, while his fist smashed head-on against the withered wood-like palmprint

coming from the youth.

Bang!

Rampant Spiritual Energy shock waves swept out, causing cracks and fissures to appear on the ground within the large hall.

Palm winds swept out as the figure of the youth did a revolution, transforming into a gale. With a clench of his hand, a long black spear appeared from within. As a tremble shook through his arm, the long spear thrust out akin to a poisonous snake, bringing along remnant shadows that lunged towards the vital points on Mu Chen's body. Black liquid trembled at the tip of the spear, clearly showing that it was laced with poisonous toxins.

"Hmph!"

Mu Chen gave a cold snort, as the Devouring Dragon Spear appeared in a flash. As the ominous aura radiated out, it transformed into a multitude of spear shadoes, hiding the skies and covering the earth as they swept out.

Ding! Ding!

Like bolts of lightning, the spear tips made contact with each other, causing exceedingly rampant Spiritual Energy fluctuations to sweep out with each confrontation, compressing and exploding apart the surrounding air. As layer after layer of compressed air exploded, they caused increasingly dense cracks and fissures to appear on the surface of the ground.

Whoosh!

Yet another collision between the spear tips caused a flash of brilliance to appear within the eyes of the youth. With a tremble of his sleeve, a black ray of light flashed out, transforming into a vine, instantly wrapping around the trunk of the Divine Spiritual Tree behind Mu Chen.

A chilling glint flashed within Mu Chen's eyes as his long spear brought along a bit of the same chilling glint as it wrapped around the vine. With a swishing gale, it broke the vine apart. At the same moment, the figure of

the youth had followed along the gale as he shot towards the right. Nevertheless, at the instant when he shot out, a ridiculing smile surfaced at the corner of his mouth.

Bang!

Tapping the tip of his long spear on the group, his figure descended before the greenish wood statue as he fiercely sent a palm smashing down. Unexpectedly, he had shattered the head of the greenish wood statue with his palm.

Upon seeing this, Mu Chen instantly gawked slightly.

After smashing apart the head of the greenish wood statue, a greenish glow surfaced from within, which was grabbed by the youth. Looking over, Mu Chen spotted a greenish ancient-looking tree leaf, with obscure runes covering its surface, while mysterious fluctuations started to radiate from it.

"Haha. Although the Divine Spiritual Tree is worth a high price, I can temporarily leave it here. However, please feel at ease that you'll not be able to hold on to it, since it will land in my hands at the very end."

The youth grabbed the tree leaf-like talisman in his hand. However, just before he could extricate himself and retreat, the figure of Mu Chen had already shot over, heavily sending a palm smashing down on the former's chest.

The youth instantly sent a fist out in counter, blocking Mu Chen's palm winds. However, just as the palm winds were launched by the latter, the eyes of the former narrowed as he saw two fingers on Mu Chen's other hand appearing bent. With an extremely astonishing speed, it split apart the surrounding space, pointing right towards the tree leaf talisman in his hand.

Although Mu Chen didn't know exactly what it was, since he wasn't able to obtain it, it would be much safer for him to destroy it.

"Hmph!"

Giving a cold snort, the youth flipped his palm around, protecting the

ancient tree leaf talisman within. Nevertheless, Mu Chen's finger had already descended on his palm. WIth a puff, a blood imprint surfaced as the gale pierced through his palm, striking the tree leaf talisman within.

After suffering such a strike, the tree leaf talisman sparkled for a bit, before seemingly turning much dimmer.

Rapidly retreating back, the youth hovered in the air, while his gaze towards Mu Chen appearing exceedingly cold and dark. Subsequently, he gave a cold roar, "Let's go!"

As his roar rang out, the other four figures of his group moved back. With a wave of their sleeves, countless black shadows hid the skies and covered the earth as they enveloped over Mu Chen and his group.

Thump! Thump!

Those long spears laced with poisonous toxins pierced the ground like a bout of rain, obstructing the paths of Mu Chen and his group. During this frame of time, those few figures had already disappeared, like ghosts.

Looking at the direction where the mysterious group had disappeared to, a faint wrinkle appeared on the forehead of Mu Chen.

Landing beside Mu Chen's side, Luo Li looked towards the greenish wood statue with its shattered head and said, "Their goal wasn't the Divine Spiritual Tree."

Mu Chen nodded his head, before grabbing the head of the greenish wood statue in his hand and pondered aloud, "Could that tree leaf talisman from before be the central control unit of this greenish wood statue? However, what's the use in them doing all of that to snatch that thing?"

Hearing his comments, Luo Li and the rest shook their heads, clearly showing their complete confusion and lack of understanding over this.

"They seem to be somewhat familiar with this place," said Xu Huang with a frown. The way the mysterious group had gone about doing their matters appeared rather goal-orientated. Furthermore, from the first words they had spoken, it seemed as if they knew what this large hall

was...

"There's a good chance that this remnant has some connections to the trees and vegetation, something which is similar in the ways and methods of the Wood Spirit Clan. Perhaps, there's some kind of connection in between," said Mu Chen.

"What should we do now? Although I don't know exactly why they had snatched that tree leaf talisman, I have a feeling that it won't be a good thing for us," asked Zhao Qingshan.

"The tree leaf talisman was struck by me, and should have suffered some damage. Regardless of what they want to do with it, that should create some form of hindrance to them."

Looking towards the miserable state of the ground within the entirety of the large hall, Mu Chen's brows tightly bunched up as he thought, This mysterious group possesses rather tyrannical strength. If they truly wanted to go all-out, with their line up, other than me and Luo Li, Xu Huang and the other two might have to pay a huge price. However, they did not seem to have any intent to have a straight-up fight, rapidly retreating away after obtaining the item.

"Let's pack up and prepare to head towards the main hall and group up with Tang Mei'er and her group."

Mu Chen made a decisive choice, turned his body around and dug a large patch of the ground that had the Divine Spiritual Tree out, and tossed it into his Meru Bracelet. After doing so, he turned around and shot out of the large hall, with Luo Li and the rest arranging themselves, before rapidly following behind him.

Heading out of the side hall, Mu Chen didn't come to a stop, and shot across as he followed along the gigantic corridor. After close to approximately ten minutes later, he finally reached the end of the corridor, where an exceedingly vast and large hall was present. The large hall was constructed out of giant green-coloured wood, while it sparkled with a faint green glow. At this moment, the large doors of the large hall were already broken, with figures faintly discernible as they surfaced from

within. In fact, there were even extremely boundless Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiating from it.

Clearly, an astonishing battle had already erupted in this main hall.

Furthermore, roars from a familiar and lovely voice rang out from within. That was Tang Mei'er's voice.

They were already taking action against Xia Hou!

Chapter 477: Main Hall

This was an extremely majestic large hall, with hundreds of gigantic pillars that appeared to rise towards the cusps of the heavens. Green vines covered their surfaces as the entire giant hall appeared to be constructed with giant-sized wood pieces. Faint rays of brilliance sparkled from these giant wood pieces, causing the entire giant hall to appear incomparably strong and sturdy.

Due to the large hall being too overly majestic, everyone present within appeared akin to ants, giving all of them a small and weak feeling. Therefore, although there were already a dozen groups converged within this giant hall, it still appeared incomparably empty and spacious.

Bang!

In the empty space in the hall, two powerful groups were already engaging in an intense exchange.

The strength of these two groups could be considered to rank at the top level. Therefore, once they had started crossing hands, none of the other groups dared to have the slightest intent to head in. Furthermore, such a confrontation between these two powers was something they were delighted to see. After all, this would allow for more opportunities for themselves, if one of them were to get eliminated.

Boom!

Exceedingly rampant Spiritual Energies swept out akin to tidal waves, with the source of the Spiritual Energy ripples being two figures intertwining with each other.

One of the figures was precisely Tang Mei'er. At this moment, her originally alluringly beautiful face appeared ice-cold, while boundless Spiritual Energy rippled around her. Sounds akin to those made by tidal waves resounded as her Spiritual Energy fluctuations caused even the air to be compressed to the point of creaking and groaning.

Before Tang Mei'er was Xia Hou, presently with a faint smile on his face

and his hands behind his back. Even when faced with the swift and fierce attacks coming from Tang Mei'er, he still had a calm and unhurried expression on his face.

"Haha, Captain Tang Mei'er. There's no need to be that aggressive, right? If we're to just start fighting like that, it wouldn't be considered rational to you all, am I right?" said Xia Hou as he sent a faint smile towards Tang Mei'er.

Sending a chilling glare back with her beautiful eyes, Tang Mei'er gave a sneer and replied, "Weren't you acting very formidable just moments before, Xia Hou? Come and have a good fight with me now. Even if I'm unable to defeat you, I won't let you guys have the slightest bit of an easy time. At that time, I really want to see exactly how you are going to contend with the other groups for the treasure of this remnant."

Tang Mei'er knew that Xia Hou was stronger than her. If he was to really take action against her, she would definitely not be able to defeat him. Nevertheless, not one shred of intent of wanting to obtain victory was present in her thoughts, since what she wanted to do was to create an obstruction for Xia Hou. She was completely willing to return empty-handed from this journey of this remnant than to let Xia Hou and his group get any bit of harvest.

When a woman gets infuriated, she wouldn't start talking about gains and loses, as well as rationality, to you.

Hearing her words, Xia Hou's gaze turned somewhat darker. He never imagined that Tang Mei'er would be furious to the point of actually not doing any thinking at all and just wanting to obstruction himself... He could not help feeling slightly regretful about this. If he had know about her reaction, he would not recklessly take action against her. From the looks of it, this girl appeared alluring and soul-stirring. Yet, he never imagined that she would be infuriated to the point of turning back to thinking with her temper.

However, not being an indecisive or irresolute person himself, Xia Hou quickly quelled this little bit of regret within himself. Glaring coldly at

Tang Mei'er, he said, "Captain Tang Mei'er. Although I've backed away numerous times, I still have to caution you about making the right choices. Don't force me to use brute force to destroy a flower."

"Haha! Let me see you really doing it," replied Tang Mei'er with a gurgling laugh. With a clench of her hand, a scarlet-red long whip appeared. Scorching-hot Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiated from its surface. Clearly, this was Spiritual Weapon that possessed outstanding might.

Pa!

With a tremble of her hand, the long whip transformed into a ray of red light. Splitting apart the air at lightning speed, it appeared just like a furious python, flinging heavily towards Xia Hou.

"Hmph!"

Seeing such an overbearing stance taken by Tang Mei'er, a shadow of fury flashed within Xia Hou's eyes. Gem-like rays of luster sparkled on the surface of his slender and jade-like palm as he made a grabbing action. Seemingly piercing through nihility, he had unexpectedly made a grab for the scarlet-red ray of brilliance that was heading his way. In the next instant, taking a step out, Spiritual Energy vigorously rippled from behind him like a tidal wave as an astonishing Spiritual Energy pressure radiated from him, causing the faces of the numerous groups present in the large hall to slightly change.

The density of the Spiritual Energy possessed by the people that had passed their Spiritual Energy Tribulations far surpassed those who had only passed their Human Body Disaster!

Grabbing onto the scarlet-red long whip, Xia Hou gave a tap of his feet, causing his figure to appear before Tang Mei'er in the next instant, like a spectre, before sending a palm smashing out.

At this moment, chilling rays of light sparkled from his white jade-like palm as it radiated with killing intent.

Seeing this, a shadow of solemness flashed within Tang Mei'er's

beautiful eyes as Spiritual Energy erupted from her body without the slightest restraint. At this moment, a flower pattern seemed to surface on her jade-like palm as a massive flower with petals condensed from Spiritual Energy took form.

"Flower Destruction Palm!"

Bang!

As the two palms smashed against one another, rampant Spiritual Energies swept out akin to a storm. A shudder shook through Tang Mei'er's body as a smear of a bloodstain surfaced at the corner of her mouth, while she was sent shooting back. Although she had experienced the Spiritual Energy Tribulation before, she had failed to pass it in the end. Therefore, the density of her Spiritual Energy wasn't able to match up to what Xia Hou possessed.

As Tang Mei'er was sent flying back, a chilling glint flashed across Xia Hou's eyes. Clearly, he didn't plan to have the slightest intent of having any restraint against the opposite sex. Taking a step out, he pursued her flying figure, sending yet another palm straight towards Tang Mei'er's voluptuous chest.

Seeing this, Tang Mei'er could only clench her teeth, while attempting to engage in combat with that fellow. However, just as she was about to summon her Spiritual Energy, an overbearing whoosh suddenly rang out from behind her, before an incomparably swift and fierce shadow spear howled straight towards Xia Hou's throat.

A dark shadow instantly surfaced in Xia Hou's eyes as the direction of his palm winds changed. Patting towards the shadow spear, he smashed it apart before retreating back and darkly staring towards his front.

At this moment, a thin figure had shot forward, extending his arm to clutch onto Tang Mei'er's slender waist while aiding her in dispelling the force sending her flying back. Giving a faint smile, he said, "Captain Xia Hou. When faced with such a beautiful girl, it's still the best to be tender and show restraint."

"Mu Chen!"

As Xia Hou chillingly stared towards the person that interfered, killing intent flashed within his eyes.

"Are you alright, Elder Sister Mei'er?"

Lowering his head to look towards the alluring girl within his bosom, Mu Chen noticed the latter wiping away the bloodstain at the corner of her mouth. The bright colour of her scarlet-red blood caused the sexiness of her lips to slightly increase, while she gave a sweet smile and replied, "Mu Chen, compared to that fellow, you truly are more pleasing to your Elder Sis' eyes..."

Hearing her reply, Mu Chen had turned speechless. She still has the heart to harass me at this very moment...

Four beautiful girls of Tang Mei'er's group shot over, landing beside Mu Chen. Only upon seeing that Tang Mei'er didn't suffer an overly serious injury did they take a breath of relief.

Bracing herself while in Mu Chen's bosom, she pushed her voluptuous and exquisite figure slightly away from him, before clenching her teeth and saying in a somewhat unresigned manner, "truly, that fellow's formidable."

His strength at the realm of Spiritual Energy Tribulation truly made him extremely hard to be dealt with.

Mu Chen nodded his head, before retreating a step back and releasing her. At this moment, Luo Li, Xu Huang and the others rapidly shot over, before sending gazes filled with ill intent towards Xia Hou standing not far in the front.

Mu Chen shot a look at Xia Hou, before turning his gaze around to size up this giant hall. Giant wooden pillars that appeared to prop up the heavens were present within this giant hall, supporting it. Under those giant wooden pillars, Mu Chen and all of the people present here appeared exceedingly small and tiny.

At this moment, there were already a dozen groups that had converged within this giant hall, with the majority being not too weak in terms of

strength. After all, being able to pass through the various areas that could have eliminated them from the competition should mean that they possessed some ability.

"This should be the main hall of the remnant..."

Tang Mei'er said in a soft voice, "Look to your front."

Hearing that, Mu Chen raised his head to look straight in front of him. Presently, at the end of his sight, was a rapidly approximately a hundred metres tall. Present in a green shadow, the appearance of the statue appeared to have the same look as the greenish wooden statue that they had bumped into earlier. However, the two were clearly not of the same level in terms of size. At this moment, a dark greenish armor seemed to be draped on the body of his giant wooden statue.Countless ancient patterns seemed to cover the entirety of its surface, while it sparkled with dim rays of brilliance.

This seemed to be an armor created out of wood.

Other than the armor, there seemed to be a wooden plaque held in the hand of this dark greenish wooden statue. Complicated inscriptions were carved on its surface, causing it to appear incomparably abstruse, with it giving people a strange and mysterious feeling upon seeing it.

"The armor draped on the statue should be a spiritual tool, with the possibility of reaching the realm of Peerless Rank Spiritual Artifacts..." said Tang Mei'er in a low voice.

"Oh?" Hearing that, Mu Chen's eyes jumped. He was extremely clear about the might possessed by a Peerless Rank Spiritual Artifact. Such might was sufficient in raising one's strength by a notch. Furthermore, this appeared to be a defensive-type. If one was able to get it into one's hands, one's ability to endure a beating would be even more tyrannical than people that have passed their Human Body Disaster.

"There's also that wooden plaque... there's an extremely high possibility that inscriptions carved on its surface are a type of Divine Technique..."

"Divine Technique?"

Hearing that, Mu Chen's eyelids immediately twitched. Naturally, he knew what a Divine Technique was, as he possessed one which was known by the name of "Lightning Controlling Technique" that was taught to him by the Northern Sea Dragon, something that Mu Chen had not once used since his arrival in these competition grounds. However, with something like a Divine Technique being able to even move the hearts of Sovereign Realm experts, how could it not do so in them?

"Looks like this should be the central location of this remnant..."

Mu Chen muttered within his heart, before sweeping his sight around. Other than Xia Hou's group, he discovered that the group from the Martial Spiritual Academy was also present here. However, at this moment, a crazed expression was present on the face of Zhou Yuan as he continued to size up the somewhat foreign groups present here in an attempt to find the mysterious group that had ambushed them earlier.

Of the groups present here, the only one that was a threat to them would be Xia Hou.

Licking his lips, Mu Chen exchanged a glance with Tang Mei'er, before gently nodding his head.

Giving a lovely smile, Tang Mei'er proceeded to send a knife-like glare towards Xia Hou.

Noticing her gaze, Xia Hou's expression abruptly turned cold as he noticed Mu Chen lightly making a hand signal. In the next instant, the members of the two groups fanned out as they dispersed, while all of their gazes being locked onto the bodies of his group.

Clearly, Mu Chen and Tang Mei'er were current collaborating.

Upon seeing this, vibrations shook through the hearts of the dozen of groups present in this giant hall. The group from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy has actually collaborated with the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy to deal with the Saint Spiritual Academy?

There... seemed to be a good show to watch. However, no one knew exactly if this collaboration would be able to deal with the exceedingly

cutthroat group of Xia Hou.

Chapter 478: Myriad Wood Realm

An intense atmosphere filled the large hall as Mu Chen and Tang Mei'er locked their gazes onto Xia Hou's figure. As chilling intent was gushing from their eyes, boundless Spiritual Energy started to undulate from their bodies, warping and distorting the space around them.

If the groups were to be compared to their own, Xia Hou's group was undoubtedly the strongest. However, if Mu Chen's group and Tang Mei'er's group were to join forces, they would no longer be in a disadvantageous position against Xia Hou's group. At that time, if an all-out brawl was to start, it would be difficult to tell exactly which side would come out on top.

The other groups that were scattered around the large hall watched on with heated gazes. They knew that these groups from three from the five Great Spiritual Academies would not hold back when fighting. Once it began, the intensity of their fight would definitely exceed their expectations.

As the other groups watched on, Xia Hou darkly stared at Mu Chen and Tang Mei'er. A moment later, he said in an indifferent tone, "It seems like you two intend to join forces against my Saint Spiritual Academy?"

Hearing his words, Tang Mei'er retorted with a charming laugh, "Heh, what about it? Could it be that Captain Xia Hou, who just loves to take advantage of others' misfortune, is finally feeling wronged?"

Simply giving a chilling grin in reply, an expression of ridicule flashed across Xia Hou's face as he replied, "You can't be thinking that by joining forces, you'll be a threat to us?"

"You aren't the only one here with back up."

Hearing this statement, Tang Mei'er's expression froze, before immediately turning around to face the group from the Martial Spiritual Academy. After all, among all the groups present, only the group from another one of the five Great Spiritual Academies could pose a threat.

Zhou Yuan, who had been carefully sizing up the other groups in his surroundings, was also startled by Xia Hou's reply. Furrowing his brows, he stared right back at Xia Hou. "The only thing on my mind, right now, is to find the group that killed my comrade. I can't be bothered to join in with you all."

Upon hearing this, Xia Hou simply gave a somewhat ambiguous smile in return.

"Haha, Captain Xia Hou should be referring to us, am I right...?"

A soft laughter abruptly rang out, echoing in the large hall. Everyone's expression changed as they quickly turned towards its source. Five shadowy figures had appeared at the humongous entrance of the large hall, and the leader of that group was exactly the black-robed youth with the pale-white face, laughing as he swept his gaze over the crowd in the hall.

Mu Chen glanced at this group, and his expression froze. This was the same mysterious group as the one they had crossed hands with earlier.

"Trash, you've finally shown up!"

Just as everyone noticed this group, Zhou Yuan had let out a roar and explosively shot forward with a crazed look in his eyes. His Broken Mountain Pole exploded through the air, carrying a frightening amount of force as he viciously swung it down on the black-robed youth.

"Hehe, Captain Zhou Yuan is really impulsive." The black-robed youth chuckled, swinging a palm out in response. Torrents of green Spiritual Power swept forth, forming a huge palm that was withered and solid, just like the bark of an ancient tree.

Boom!

The huge wooden palm heavily collided with the Broken Mountain Pole, and rampant Spiritual Energy waves spontaneously spread out.

Bang!

As the Spiritual Energy attacks collided, Zhou Yuan's body trembled,

before fresh blood spurted from the hand grasping onto his weapon, and his figure miserably flew backwards. The ferocity that was present in his eyes earlier had been replaced by shock.

This black-robed youth had actually passed his Spiritual Energy Disaster!

Crash!

Shocked voices rang out throughout the large hall, as the other groups stared at the mysterious group. The young leader of the group had actually reached a level comparable to Xia Hou!

Mu Chen furrowed his brow as his expression froze. In the brief exchange he had earlier with the black-robed youth, the latter had no intention to have an all-out fight, and hence did not display his full strength. However, in this moment, he did not hold back, thoroughly demonstrating his full ability.

"These scoundrels!"

Zhou Yuan hastily retreated, with his groupmates supporting him. Even though his anger had not waned, the shock he experienced had pulled him out from his mindless rage. They had lost a groupmate after being attacked by this mysterious group, but with just a single move, he clearly understood that he stood no chance against them in a head-on clash.

A strange atmosphere had permeated the large hall ever since this mysterious group appeared.

"Haha, my name is Zhen Qing, from the Wood Spiritual Academy..."

The black-robed youth grinned at the other groups scattered around the large hall, before his gaze stopped on Mu Chen, and he cupped his hands in greeting.

"So, Xia Hou, it seems that you've already been in cahoots with them, huh? Planning to join forces and wipe out the rest of us?" Tang Mei'er gave a cold laugh. "However, even if you do so, there are still so many other groups here."

The situation had changed too quickly. While Tang Mei'er and Mu

Chen's group had originally held an overwhelming advantage over Xia Hou's group, the appearance of the tyrannical group from the Wood Spiritual Academy completely reversed the situation.

With two experts who had passed their Spiritual Energy Disaster, they had an extremely frightening lineup!

Xia Hou stared at Tang Mei'er with a glint in his eye. While she appeared delicate and charming, her tone and words did nothing to hide her anger, nor her intentions. With a single statement, she had caused all the other groups to start taking precautions against Xia Hou's group. After all, if they joined forces with the group from the Wood Spiritual Academy, their strength would be off the charts...

"Haha, Captan Tang's words sure are vicious..."

Not bothering to wait for Xia Hou to respond, Zhen Qing replied with a cold smirk filled with ridicule and disdain. Sizing up the other groups present in the large hall, he murmured, "Indeed, I want to take down all of you... all the treasures in this ancient ruins belong to us, including those in your grubby hands."

Boom!

All the groups were shocked upon hearing this proclamation, before red-hot fury rose within their eyes. With such a large appetite, wasn't the Wood Spiritual Academy group afraid of biting off more than they could chew?

Even with their frightening strength after joining forces with Xia Hou, there was no way they could beat an alliance formed from every other group present!

Is this fellow dumb, or what?

Mu Chen furrowed his brows. Zhen Qing couldn't be this reckless, right?

He turned to meet Luo Li's gaze, only to see that they were both guarded against the situation. While they did not know much about Zhen Qing, it was impossible for a moron to become a captain of a group. Having made such a proclamation, he had to have some sort of backing; but, just what

sort of backing would give him such confidence to look down on everyone with such disdain?

"Heh, such ambition, Captain Zhen Qing. But are you sure that you have the ability to take on every one of us?" Laughing, Tang Mei'er turned to face the rest of the groups. "Looks like you all are worth less than ants to him."

All the groups wore nasty expressions on their faces. Glaring directly at Zhen Qing, Spiritual Energy started to revolve in their bodies.

At this moment, Zhen Qing had undoubtedly become Public Enemy No. 1.

"Hmph, you want to take down all of us? Come! We'll see just how capable you are!" Finally unable to hold back, some groups shouted, while the rest echoed in agreement. The groups slowly spread out around the large hall. With the large number of groups, it truly was a powerful lineup.

However, Zhen Qing simply gave a smirk filled with ridicule, before lifting his palm. With a flash of green light, an ancient leaf-like talisman appeared in his palm, flickering with an emerald-green glow.

Mu Chen's eyes narrowed upon seeing that talisman. This was the item that Zhen Qing had snatched away earlier.

Swish!

Forming a seal with one hand, Zhen Qing snapped his fingers. A green light shot from his hand, darting across the large hall with a frightening speed, before landing on the enormous wooden statue at the other end of the large hall under the countless shocked gazes.

Swish!

The leaf-like talisman implanted itself in the forehead of the enormous statue, as rays of light spread out from the talisman, diffusing throughout the body of the statue.

As the light rays enveloped the statue, Tang Mei'er and the rest had an ugly expression on their faces. Before their very eyes, the enormous

wooden statue slowly opened its eyes. A rich green glow shone from those two eyes.

"Ladies and gentlemen, now, I shall tell you just how I'm going to wipe the floor with you."

Zhen Qing's smirk became increasingly disdainful. Forming seals with his hands, a boundless Spiritual Energy started undulating out, as the wooden statue started to mirror his seals. An extremely astonishing Spiritual Energy ripple started to spread across the large hall.

"Stop him!"

Mu Chen wore a grave expression as he roared. Both Luo Li and him seemed to have simultaneously charged forward.

"Haha, it's too late..."

Zhen Qing chuckled and shook his head, before his seals froze. His dark voice reverberated around the large hall.

"Myriad Wood Realm!"

As his voice rang out, the entire hall violently trembled. All of a sudden, green light erupted from the enormous pillars in the hall, before innumerable vines exploded forth, hiding the sky and covering the earth. Within the span of a few breaths, the entire hall had been thoroughly permeated with the vines.

Ugly expressions flashed across everyone's faces. Attempting to escape, they discovered that there was nowhere to run, as the vines flooded over, submerging figure after figure.

Boom! Boom!

Within the mass of vines, some individuals frantically revolved their Spiritual Energy, attempting to slice through the vines. However, they immediately discovered that despite appearing to be fragile and weak, the vines could not be broken regardless of how hard they tried. Also, the Spiritual Energy in their bodies was apparently being devoured as the vines squirmed around them...

The originally noisy hall had now become silent. Apart from Zhen Qing's and Xia Hou's group, everyone else, including Mu Chen and Luo Li, had been entirely enveloped by the green light vines.

Within the vines, all that could be seen were pairs of eyes filled with dread and fear. With no way to escape, all they could do was watch as the vines simply devoured their Spiritual Energy.

"Whew."

Witnessing this scene, Zhen Qing coldly laughed. "Once you're trapped in the Myriad Wood Realm, there's no way to break free, and your Spiritual Energy will be slowly consumed and used to awaken this Divine Wood Guard..."

"Captain Xia Hou, I will take all the treasures in these ruins; as for the points, an even split. What do you think?"

"We shall do as you suggest."

Xia Hou chuckled as he nodded with a glint in his eye. Zhen Qing's appetite truly was ravenous, with no intention to leave even a single treasure for his group. However, with the strength that the latter currently possessed, there was not much room for debate. For someone like Zhen Qing, it seemed like the only thing preventing him from acting against Xia Hou's group was the fear of Saint Spiritual Academy's strength and ability.

Zhen Qing nodded, beaming in response, satisfied with Xia Hou's tactfulness.

"Next, we only need to wait for a hour, and this place will be entirely under our control. Hmph, three of the Great Academies... their teams will be eliminated."

Zhen Qing sat down with a smile. Suddenly, his expression turned ugly as he spun around, staring at two particular squirming vines. A frightening heat and a sharp Sword Aura were sweeping out from within the vines.

Bang!

A purple flame burst forth, and the clump of squirming vines simply turned into ashes with a poof.

Swish!

A resplendent sword light swept forth. Before its incomparably sharp edge, even these vines, made with such special materials, were sliced into fine dust.

Zhen Qing and Xia Hou looked up with grave expressions, as the many pairs of eyes trapped within the mass of vines also hurriedly looked over.

Under the countless gazes, a slender youth and a beautiful lady slowly walked out from the rays of light.

Zhen Qing's eyes narrowed, before he heartily laughed.

"Impressive, even the Myriad Wood Realm is unable to trap you..."

Chapter 479: Shocked

Within the vine encased giant hall, numerous gazes converged on the source of the brilliant rays of light while varying expressions appeared on the faces of the people looking over. Over there, two figures had sliced apart the vines and escaped the fetters binding them before appearing before the numerous gazes shooting over.

As the rays of brilliance dissipated away, the figures of Mu Chen and Luo Li finally appeared clearly from within.

"Clap clap."

Looking at the two who had extricated themselves, the eyes of Zhen Qing contracted slightly. However, giving a laugh, he gently clapped his hands and spoke out with a smile. "Never did I expect that even the Myriad Wood Realm is unable to hold you all in. You two truly are formidable..."

At this moment, those vines appeared rather strange and mysterious, being able to even constrain Human Body Disaster experts within them to the point of them being unable to decisively extricate themselves. Furthermore, the Spiritual Energies within their bodies would be gradually devoured as food by the vines, with them becoming more ferocious the more one struggled while in them, while also causing one's Spiritual Energy dissipation to grow increasingly quick.

Mu Chen and Luo Li being able to extricate themselves was something that was clearly somewhat accidental for Zhen Qing. Looks like these two people should have some unique methods of their own. Nevertheless, it was merely just that. The situation before him was completely under his control. With their two groups holding ground over here, even if Mu Chen and Luo were able to extricate themselves, what could they do?

A chilling gaze shot out from Mu Chen as he glared at Zhen Qing, while black lightning arcs sparkled across his finger tips.

"Looks like you've yet to give up and admit your loss, huh."

Xia Hou gave a faint laugh as he shot a mocking look towards Mu Chen and Luo Li. In the next moment, he pointed towards the interior of the giant hall before speaking out with a smile, " However, what else can you two do? Mu Chen, why not I give you a chance. If you leave by yourself, I'll give you a means to survive. How about that?"

At this moment, his smile appeared somewhat execrable. If Mu Chen were to abandon his compatriots and flee by himself, he would be ostracized by the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy in the light of this. Such a result would be even more cruel and vicious that killing him, just like what had happened to Qiu Beihai in the past...

Sweeping his gaze to shoot a look at Xia Hou, Mu Chen gave a smile, shaking his head before replying, "Xia Hou, I'm afraid that you don't have the qualifications to use this method against me."

Hearing Mu Chen's reply, Xia Hou immediately gave a soft laugh. However, at this moment, the smile present on his face showed not one bit of warmth. Planning his head across slightly, he looked towards Zhen Qing and spoke out while massaging his head, "He truly is a irksome fellow. Looks like I have to show him exactly how strong is a person of Spiritual Energy Disaster is..."

"I'm alright with that."

An amused smile rose at the corner of Zhen Qing's mouth, as the situation before him was already completely under his control. At this moment, he only had to awaken the numerous Spiritual Energies within the Wooden Divine Guard. Therefore, he didn't mind spending this time to observe the good show playing out before him.

At this moment, he didn't care too much about Mu Chen. Although the latter was of Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase and possessed such astonishing combat prowess, so what? Regardless of that, he was still of Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase. Regardless of how many cards he was able to pull out from his sleeves, it would extremely hard pressed for him to obtain victory against an expert of Spiritual Energy Disaster.

"This little beauty. When they take action, my eyes will be on you. I hope

that you'll not stir up trouble. Although you're the most heart stirring girl I've seen in these past few years, for the sake of the entire situation, I'll not show too much mercy towards the other gender." said Zhen Qing as he shot a grin towards Luo Li.

Shooting a slightly cold look towards him with her beautiful eyes, Luo Li turned her head towards Mu Chen, who had sent a smile back while gently nodding his head.

Only upon seeing this did Luo Li take two steps back and took a seat down. Continuing to grasp the Luo Shen Sword in her hand, she inserted into the ground before her, causing a wave of a sword cry erupting out, before rays of sword glow perfused out. Such fierceness was present in this sword glow that the surrounding space was even being sliced up into tiny and minute fissures, with layer upon layer of vines in the surrounding being sliced apart. Under the sword glow, all of the vines within a few metre radius around Luo Li were completely sliced cleanly into bits.

Under the envelope of the sword glow, even the unique Myriad Wood Realm within his giant hall was unable to encroach over Luo Li.

"Since you guys want to play, we'll accompany you guys to the end. However, similarly, I will send this back to you. This is a fight between the two of them. If anyone interferes, the sword within my hand might be completely unsheathed. At that time, even I wouldn't be able to know the outcome that occurs. However, Zhen Qing, at the very least, you will die to my sword." said Luo Li as she swept her glass like clear eyes towards Zhen Qing and his group, while her voice sounded soft and soft, yet bringing out some chilling intent.

Noticing the Luo Shen Sword before Luo Li, the faces of Zhen Qing and his group violently contorted as they could sense extremely dangerous fluctuations radiating from its surface.

"That's actually a Divine Artifact?!"

Zhen Qing exchanged glances with Xia Hou as their pupils contracted slightly. Never did they imagine that the beautiful girl before their eyes would actually possess a genuine Divine Weapon. Although her

cultivation seemed only be of Human Body Disaster, coupled with his divine sword, even people of Spiritual Energy Disaster would be feel extreme fear and dread in the light of her.

This young girl was even more dangerous as compared to Mu Chen!

With the Great Thousand Worlds, anything with the two words Divine Weapon attached to their name would absolutely possess extreme awe and intimidation. Although there were also Divine Weapons within the Wood Spirit Clan, such things would absolutely not find their way to Zhen Qing's hands. Therefore, upon noticing that Luo Li actually possessed a Divine Weapon, Zhen Qing could not help but to quietly feel shocked and astonished.

"Looks like you truly have some confidence in Mu Chen." his eyes flashing faintly, Zhen QIng suppressed the shock within his heart as he shot a deep look at Luo Li before speaking out.

With Luo Li sitting there and using the awe and intimidation caused by her divine sword, Luo Li had clearly indicated her motive in helping Mu Chen sweep of any interference. This was clearly due to her being exceedingly confident with Mu Chen. She believed that the latter would be able to defeat Xia Hou. However, did she truly believe that Xia Hou was an affable person?

One of the four great Holy Sons of the Saint Spiritual Academy and possessing a cultivation of Spiritual Energy Disaster. Placed within the entirety of the Great Spiritual Academy Competition, he would absolutely be ranked among the best. In a 1 on 1 duel with him, if not for having some special methods, even Zhen Qing wouldn't have the confidence of defeating Xia Hou, what more Mu Chen, whose cultivation was only of Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase. However, could it be that he still had a way?

In response, Luo Li only shot a look at him, not caring anymore than that as she held her Luo Shen Sword in her hand. As her jade like fingers gently touched the sword, clear crys rang out from it.

Upon seeing this, Zhen Qing gave a faint smile without speaking

anymore, merely that killing intent started to erupt within his heart. There were some unexpected changes to the situation which was under his control. Nevertheless, it didn't matter. As long as Xia Hou dealt with Mu Chen, when they collaborate, even Luo Li would be absolutely hard pressed to turn the situation around even with the Divine Weapon in her hand.

Zhen Qing turned his sights towards Xia Hou, only to see a malevolent smile curling up at the corner of the latter's mouth. From the looks of it, she seems to be exceedingly confidence towards Mu Chen, huh? Nevertheless, would she still be able to maintain such confidence towards the latter after he stomps Mu Chen under his feet?

Within the giant hall, Tang Mei'er, Zhou Yuan and the various other groups were trapped within the vines. Regardless of their full efforts in their struggles, they were unable to obtain any results in attempt to freeing themselves. Therefore, they could only give up in their attempts, casting their gazes through the vines to observe the situation developing within the giant hall. At this moment, shades of worry and concern appeared within their eyes as in this very moment, they basically could only rely on Mu Chen and Luo Li to reverse the situation they were in. However, they were after all two people only...

Before their eyes, Mu Chen had clearly wanted to take genuine action against Xia Hou. Although they were clear that Mu Chen's combat prowess couldn't be estimated using conventional means, regardless of that, Xia Hou had genuinely passed his Spiritual Energy Disaster. Faced against him, even Tang Mei'er and Zhou Yuan didn't have the slightest confidence of winning. What could Mu Chen do?

Furthermore, by the off chance that Mu Chen lost to Xia Hou, the awe and intimidation that Luo Li had painfully created in this situation would be shattered apart. When that happens, even with the Divine Sword in her hand, it will be exceedingly hard pressed for her to deal with the two tyrannical groups by herself.

From the looks of it, everything now banked on the shoulders of Mu Chen.

As gazes converged over from within the giant hall, Mu Chen slowly exhaled a clump of white air. Looking towards Xia Hou, with the malevolent sneer at the corner of his mouth, he gave a faint smile and said, "To not disappoint her, it looks like I have to deal with you."

Hearing those words, Xia Hou laughed out, with his smile turning chilly. At this moment, crystalline rays of brilliance sparkled from his slender and pale hands, causing them to appear exceedingly gorgeous. Yet, under this facade of gorgeousness was a death like chill.

"Looks like that short exchange we had outside of the dark forest had given you too much false confidence..."

Slowly clenching his hands, the expression on Xia Hou's face grew increasingly cold. In the next instant, taking a furious step forwards, dense, boundless Spiritual Energy akin to a large sea swept out, hiding the skies and covering the earth. At the same time, an astonishing Spiritual Energy pressure instantly perfused across the entire giant hall.

At this moment, he had completely unleashed his Spiritual Energy Disaster realm Spiritual Energy without the slightest restraint at all.

That's because he already did not want to continue seeing Mu Chen be that indifferent and boastful in front of himself. He wanted to use his Spiritual Energy Disaster realm Spiritual Energy to violently crush the latter beneath his feel. He wanted to let him know in despair that when faced with the tyrannical power of a Spiritual Energy Disaster expert, he would become as pitiful as a rabbit locked on by a mighty lion, with him not being able to put up even an ounce of resistance!

"Now, I'll crush that so called self confidence into a pile of mess!"

The smile at the corner of Xia Hou's mouth turned incomparably malevolent.

Boundless Spiritual Energy howled out as wave of pressures gushed out, causing Mu Chen's robes to flap and flutter about. Taking a deep breath, Mu Chen clenched his fists tightly as the glow of black lightning sparkled from the surface of his body. At this moment, his skin started to turn jet black, while four lightning runes slowly surfaced on his chest.

Bang!

Black lightning glow crackled as they enveloped the entirety of Mu Chen's body. His Lightning God's Physique had been completely brought forth, with the Spiritual Energy within his body now gushing about within his meridians like a bubbling river. His body had entered into his greatest combat state!

"If you want to play, I'll accompany you. Let's see exactly who's the one that's incapable of playing!"

Fiercy chilling rays of brilliance condensed within Mu Chen's black pupils like the sharp edge of a blade. With a chilling laugh, he took an abrupt stride out.

Bang!

Lightning glow seemed to exploded out from beneath his feet. As black lightning arcs sparkled, his figure exploded forward in an instant.

Boom!

With a sneer, Xia Hou had shot forwards in an instant. Like a sea, dense Spiritual Energy gushed and surged forth, causing even the surrounding air to be compressed to the point of exploding apart.

The tense and taut atmosphere within the giant hall was shatter at this instant.

Everyone's gaze converged over at this moment.

Chapter 480: Battling Xia Hou

Bang!

Exceedingly dense Spiritual Energy howled within the giant hall like tidal waves, before two figures shot across the horizon like meteors streaking across the skies. In the next instant, under the attention of anxious gazes coming from within the giant hall, the two heavily smashed into each other.

There wasn't anything fanciful of this collision, being totally a pure collision of strength.

However, one party had relied on his tyrannical fleshly body, while the other had carried along with him the might of his boundless Spiritual Energy.

The two energies colliding was more than sufficient to cause the earth to tremble and mountains to collapse.

Boom!

At the instant when the collision happened, gales swept up as a storm was whipped out, carving fissures across the surface of the giant hall. Under the impact of such shock waves, layer after layer of squirming vines were shattered apart.

Whoosh!

Two glowing figures shot out from the terrifying impact, while the specially constructed floor of the giant hall was continuously turned into dust under the feet of the two, leaving behind two pairs of deep footprints.

A shiver shook through Mu Chen's body as rays of lightning light sparkled, completely resisting against the boundless Spiritual Energy that had pervaded his body. At this moment, a shade of solemness surfaced on his handsome face. Although Xia Hou's tyrannical Spiritual Energy was unable to cause any injuries on him, who had trained his Lightning God's Physique to a Quadra Rune Lightning Physique, the density of the latter's Spiritual Energy was much stronger than his own.

The Spiritual Energy Disaster was basically a transformative change to one's Spiritual Energy. If one had yet to pass through Spiritual Energy Disaster, the Spiritual Energy one's Divine Soul could contain would be akin to a lake, but it would truly rival a great sea when one passed through one's Spiritual Energy Disaster. Such a disparity was considered to be rather large. If not for Mu Chen managing to cultivate the completed version of the Great Pagoda Art, which had also led to a transformation change to the Spiritual Energy within his body, the current him might have been completely suppressed by the sea-like boundless Spiritual Energy of Xia Hou.

"Ha. Such a tough fleshly body. Looks like you've cultivated a rather formidable body tempering Divine Art. Your attainments are also not shallow in it. That's why you have the courage to challenge a Spiritual Energy Disaster with your cultivation at Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase." In the front, Xia Hou's long and slender hands sparkled with faint rays of jade-like light as he sneered while staring at Mu Chen.

However, underneath his sneer, there was some shock and astonishment present within Xia Hou's heart. Mu Chen's fleshly body was truly too powerful, it might be even more tyrannical that his own body that had undergoing the changes after passing his Spiritual Energy Disaster. He truly didn't know exactly how this fellow was able to successfully cultivate such a body like that.

An indifferent look was present in Mu Chen's eyes as he swept a look towards Xia Hou. However, without even giving a reply, the ground beneath his feet collapsed as a dragon's shadow seemed to take form beneath. With a flash of light, his figure mysteriously disappeared from his original position.

"Such quick speed!"

Xia Hou's eyes slightly contracted, before abruptly clenching his hand to form a first. Without the slightest bit of hesitation, he sent a fist violently rumbling towards the space on his right.

Bang!

Boundless Spiritual Energy swept out as Xia Hou's fist sparkled with rays of jade-like brilliance. This fist possessed more than sufficient awe and might.

Whoosh!

However, this fight-winning fist of Xia Hou wasn't able to obtain the slightest bit of results, shooting passed space and hitting air. Mu Chen's figure did not appear at the location where he had expected.

As his fist landed on air, Xia Hou's expression slightly changed in the next instant. He could feel frightening energy fluctuations furiously sweeping out from behind his back.

Mu Chen's speed was actually fast to the level of causing Xia Hou to make the wrong estimations of his position!

However, although Mu Chen's speed had caused him to make an accidental mistake, Xia Hou wasn't any average person. Giving a tap of his feet on the ground, his body rose half a metre into the air. Like a whip, his leg brought about surging Spiritual Energy, transforming into remnant shadows as they swept at lightning speed towards the the fist gales coming from behind him.

Bang! Bang!

As the leg shadows shot out, even the air was compressed to the point of exploding apart.

Boom!

Hiding the skies and covering the earth, the fist and leg shadows collided into one another, causing a frightening energy storm to take form between the two. In the next instant, it started to wreak havoc in the surrounding vicinity, causing gigantic fissures to appear in the ground.

At this moment, the two had brought forth their strength to their very limit, causing the destructive might of the fist and leg shadows to be exceedingly astonishing.

Bang!

The two figures intertwined in the air within the giant hall as frightening fluctuations shook the air to the point of forming distortions in the surrounding space. As this was happening, the air in their surroundings was forcibly compressed to the point of exploding apart.

Stabilising his body in the air, Mu Chen hastily formed some hand seals, causing boundless Spiritual Energy to transform into a stretch of starry skies behind his back. Four gigantic beastial shadows condensed and took form from within, transforming into rays of starry lights as they explosively shot out.

"Four Gods Heavenly Sealing Imprint!"

The gigantic glowing imprint descended from the skies, completely enveloping Xia Hou's body within it.

"Hmph."

Looking towards the gigantic glowing imprint, a chilling shadow flashed within Xia Hou's eyes as he coldly snorted. Bending his fingers forward, his fingertips appeared to sparkle with the light of stars. In the next instant, he pointed his fingers towards his front, causing the starry light to surge, before a gigantic beam of starry light howled out. Akin to a flood, it surged straight into the space before it.

"Star Shattering Divine Finger!"

As Xia Hou gave a low roar, the beam of starry light had already shot across the air, ferociously smashing against the gigantic glowing imprint descending from the top.

Bang!

At the instant of the collision, a huge thunderous sound resounded as the two gigantic forces smashed into each out, causing a massive shock wave to sweep out.

Looking towards the frightening shock wave sweeping out, Mu Chen's body sparkled with lightning light as he brought forth the might of his Lightning God's Physique to its limits. Rays of lightning wandered about his body, smoothing along his muscles while bringing forth powerful

strength. Tightly clenching his fists, any shock wave impacting his body would cause explosions of lightning brilliance to erupt. While his body shook, he retreated a hundred-plus steps back in haste.

Before him, Xia Hou had waved his hands up, with boundless Spiritual Energy being transformed into a gigantic barrier before him. However, the hastily formed Spiritual Energy barrier was similarly unable to completely defend against the frightening shock wave that was sweeping out. Therefore, it was quickly destroyed, causing Xia Hou to stagger and stumble as he was shot backwards.

Even while unleashing their full might, none of the two were able to obtain an absolute advantage over the other.

Within the giant hall, Tang Mei'er, Zhou Xuan and the others stared at the exchange between the two without ever blinking once, since they could not help having waves of palpitations surface in their hearts. This was the first time that they had seen Mu Chen unleash his complete might. Such astonishing combat prowess coming from Mu Chen caused them to be hard-pressed to stay calm and quiet. Xia Hou had pass his Spiritual Energy Disaster! However, even though that was the case, he was actually unable to obstruct or suppress the Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase Mu Chen.

"This fellow truly possesses some ability." Looking towards the two figures, a shade of darkness flashed within Zhen Qing's eyes. Clearly, the situation before his eyes had slightly exceeded his expectations. In his original expectations, even if Mu Chen was able to fight with Xia Hou awhile, he would be at a disadvantage, at the very least. However, from the looks of the situation before his eyes, it was clear that it was not the same as his predicted outcome.

"Captain, that brat's fleshly body is extremely tyrannical. I'm afraid that we've no one that can match up to him. It's precisely because of this that he is able to fight against Xia Hou." A person whispered from behind Zhen Qing's back.

"Captain, shouldn't we do something about this? In the off-chance that

Xia Hou loses..." said the person quietly, his voice brimming within chilling intent.

A faint light flashed in Zhen Qing's eyes as he shot a look at Luo Li, who was present not far from him. At this moment, the latter's jade-like hands were still grasping that Divine Sword that caused incomparable dread within him. The incomparably swift and fierce sword intent from it was slightly radiating out. Although it wasn't strong or intense, Zhen Qing was able to see dense and numerous pathways sliced up by those sword intent present in the space surrounding Luo Li's body.

That Divine Sword was exceedingly formidable.

"Don't be impatient. Let's wait a while longer. Although that brat's fleshly body is tyrannical, it will simply not be enough to just rely on it to win against Xia Hou." Slightly shaking his head, a chilling smile curled up at the corner of Zhen Qing's mouth as he replied, "Furthermore. At this moment, all we have to do is wait for a while longer, before I let them know what they mean by true despair."

At this moment, all of the gazes in the giant hall had converged in the air as Mu Chen raised his head to look at Xia Hou before him. Now, some shades of darkness was present on the latter's face. Thinking about the combat prowess he had displayed during this fight, the heart of the latter would not calm down and was disturbed.

"Looks like the Spiritual Energy Disaster isn't as invincible as you think."

Mu Chen said as he gave a faint smile. Faintly dropping his eyes down, he gave a clench of his hand, and the Devouring Demonic Dragon Spear appeared in his hand in a flash. Ominous aura that blotted the skies swept out, causing the air within the giant hall to turn much darker and cool. With a flick of his finger, the Devouring Demonic Dragon Spear howled out. As the ominous aura shot out, the spear transformed into an incomparably gigantic demonic dragon, hovering in the air while radiating with an astonishingly ominous aura.

The Devouring Dragon Demonic Spear was an Absolute Grade Spiritual Weapon. While it was in the hands of Mo Xingtian, the latter had relied

on it to temporarily seal and obstruct the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. Therefore, the Devouring Demonic Dragon Spear similarly possessed exceedingly powerful might in combat.

"Go."

Pointing with his finger, the Demonic Dragon gave a roar, before transforming into a ray of demonic light, and hurtled towards Xia Hou.

Giving a dark look at the demonic dragon explosively shooting towards him, suddenly, dazzling rays of brilliance erupted from his white jade-like hands. If one took a closer look, one would see what appeared to be a gauze made of starry light separating itself from his hands. Transforming into two stars like clumps of brilliance, rays of starry light fiercely radiating amongst it's chilling appearance.

"Oh?"

Seeing this, Mu Chen's eyes instantly narrowed slightly as he said, "So the reason why your hands are that formidable is due to that thing..."

That gauze-like item that radiated with starry light was clearly a unique Spiritual Weapon. From the looks of the fluctuations radiating from it, they might have quite a high grade. That's the reason why Mu Chen was able to feel a dull ache coming from his palm from the previous head-on attack.

Bang!

The two stars shot out and collided with the demonic dragon, instantly causing astonishing Spiritual Energy fluctuations to erupt.

Xia Hou strode into the air, disregarding the frightening fluctuations radiating from the space above him as he stared towards Mu Chen with an exceedingly chilling gaze. Slowly clenching his fists tightly, a hoarse voice containing unconcealable killing intent gushed from him. "Next up, I'll let you see with your own eyes exactly how great the disparity you have compared to a Spiritual Energy Disaster expert!"

"In the face of absolute strength of Spiritual Energy, your puny fleshly body will be unable to put up any resistance at all!"

Xia Hou's eyes turned bloodshot as he took a step forward, causing waves of fluctuations to seemingly ripple in the empty space. In the next instant, his hands formed a strange hand seal, while frightening Spiritual Energy fluctuations that caused Mu Chen's face to slightly change erupted from the region akin to a volcano!

As the frightening Spiritual Energy erupted, Xia Hou's chilling voice rang out, one word at a time.

"Star Descent Art!"

Chapter 481: Star Descent Art

"Star Descent Art!"

As Xia Hou's chilling voice resounded across the giant hall, everyone was able to sense indescribable Spiritual Energy torrentially gushing out akin to an erupting volcano from his body. As this happened, the hurricane that resulted from the Spiritual Energy propagation crazily howled across the giant hall.

Striding across the air, Xia Hou's hands moved about as he formed a strange hand seal, with his eyes brimming with chilling intent.

Humm!

Torrential amounts of Spiritual Energy crazily condensed behind his back as three gigantic whirlpools gradually took form, with a starry light seemingly radiating from within. As Spiritual Energy crazily poured in, within a short span of a dozen breaths, they had transformed into three gigantic dazzling stars approximately a hundred metres in length.

As those three stars sparkled with dazzling brilliance, boundless Spiritual Energy radiated from them. Akin to light spikes that covered the entirety of the stars, they gradually appeared somewhat malevolent.

When those three stars were completely condensed from Spiritual Energy, exceedingly rampant Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiated out, bringing along rumbling noise as the Spiritual Energy clashed against the surrounding air.

Within the giant hall, Tang Mei'er, Zhou Yuan and the rest were in shock as they took in the spectacle before them. The Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiating from the three stars caused them to feel a dangerous flavor of death. Clearly, Xia Hou had already started to use his genuine killing move, clearly wanting to end this fight here and now.

"Haha. Truly worthy of the Saint Spiritual Academy's Holy Son."

Looking at the three stars, Zhen Qing's eyes slightly narrowed, before laughing out in a low voice. Looking at the move that Xia Hou had

unleashed, a sliver of seriousness surfaced within his heart. If he was to genuinely cross hands against Xia Hou, he would very likely be forced back by this attack to the point of having to temporarily retreat. This Xia Hou was truly formidable. That's why he could become one of the Four Holy Sons of the Saint Spiritual Academy.

"Looks like this brat is in a world of trouble. Now, he will understand exactly how frightening a Spiritual Energy Disaster expert can be when he is serious."

Zhen Qing spoke out with an indifferent smile, while shooting a glare towards Luo Li. At this moment, the latter raised her beautiful eyes to look towards Xia Hou in the air as her brows slightly wrinkled. It seemed that she had felt some worry, due to the fierceness suddenly present in Xia Hou's move.

Under the attentive gazes of everyone present in the giant hall, Mu Chen's eyes looked solemn as he took in the spectacle before him. In the next moment, slowly clenching his hands, black lightning light rapidly sparkled across his entire body as the four lightning runes on his chest grew increasingly radiant. At the same time, he had summoned forth the limits of his Lightning God's Physique. Clearly, he had also felt the danger present in Xia Hou's move.

"Now, even if you want to feel regretful, there's no chance left for you," said Xia Hou as he looked chillingly at Mu Chen, the smile present at the corner of his mouth becoming even more malevolent.

Slowly raising his hand, he pointed towards the space before Mu Chen, his eyes now brimming within incisive chilling intent.

"Star Descent Art, Triple Heaven Shattering Stars!"

As Xia Hou's murderous-filled voice rang out from his throat, the three gigantic stars behind his back instantly erupted with dazzling rays of brilliance. In the next instant, the three stars had already shot out in succession. Appearing like beams of light, they descended from the skies, instantly enveloping over Mu Chen's figure.

Bang! Bang!

The air within this region had been completely blasted apart at this instant, causing waves of pressure to surge in all directions.

Looking solemnly at the three stars streaking over towards him, Mu Chen took a deep breath. In the next instant, black lightning light sparkled within his palm, before he sent a palm patting out.

"Lightning God's Hand!"

Boundless Spiritual Energy swept out, with the black lightning light in accompaniment. As they crackled and sparkled, they transformed into a gigantic hand made of lightning. Covered with lightning patterns, the giant hand violently patted towards the three incoming stars.

Boom!

The two attacks furiously collided against each other, sending frightening fluctuations rippling out. In the next instant, even greater fissures split apart across the ground, showing the exceedingly astonishing destructive powers contained in the two attacks.

Crackle!

The two energies smashed into each other, crazily trying to corrode one another...

Taking in the spectacle before him, a sneer curled at the corner of Xia Hou's mouth as a change to his hand seal happened. "Star Explosion!"

Bang!

Suddenly, a star exploded apart, with the frightening Spiritual Energy shock wave resulting from it, pushing the giant lightning hand back, even causing the lightning patterns on the surface of the giant hand to appear somewhat dimmer.

Bang!

Yet another star exploded apart, with cracks starting to appear on the surface of the giant hand.

"You're finished." The sneer on Xia Hou's face grew increasingly rich. With a chilling laugh, his hand seal changed, causing the third star to

explode at this instant.

Bang!

As the Spiritual Energy shock waves swept out, the Lightning God's Hand was finally unable to endure anymore impacts. As its Spiritual Energy dispersed, it started to completely collapse. Furthermore, while it collapsed, a remnant beam of light still pierced through, travelling at lightning speed and struck against Mu Chen's body before he could engage in any evasion.

Bang!

Mu Chen's body instantly shot backwards, heavily smashing against one of the gigantic pillars in the giant hall. Even with the special materials used in its construction, a gigantic indentation appeared on the giant pillar.

Upon seeing this, the faces of Tang Mei'er and the rest instantly changed.

Observing the plume of dust that had risen up, Xia Hou gave a sneer, before shaking his head and said, "Have you experienced what it means to be overestimate your abilities?"

Within the plume of dust, a figure extricated himself from the giant pillar. Flinging his head, he wiped off the bloodstain at the corner of his mouth. With a slight wrinkle appearing on his forehead, he looked towards Xia Hou and replied with a faint smile. "It's indeed very painful. However, why are you making an expression as if you've already won?"

Looking chillingly towards Mu Chen, while the latter rubbed away the blood at the corner of his mouth, shock and astonishment appeared within Xia Hou's heart. Originally, he had assumed that this move of his would be sufficient in settling Mu Chen. However, he never imagined that it would only result in an injury. That fellow's fleshly body was actually that strong to such a degree.

"My Star Descent Art is a Superior Deity Tier Spiritual Art. Do you really think that it only possess such might?" said Xia Hou with mocking

laughter. "Since you're able to endure a round of attacks, I'll let you see exactly how frightening a Superior Deity Tier Spiritual Art is!"

As his voice rang out, everyone noticed boundless Spiritual Energy rapidly condensing behind Xia Hou's back once again. However, the Spiritual Energy whirlpools that formed had actually reached the number of nine!

Humm! Humm!

Nine Spiritual Energy whirlpools crazily spun around as hurricanes took from, appearing just like a tornado wreaking havoc within the giant hall.

Frightening Spiritual Energy pressure started to radiate within the giant hall.

This pressure caused even the face of Zhen Qing to slightly change. Tensing his body, Spiritual Energy flowed across the surface. Even he was forced to activate his Spiritual Energy to defend against the incoming pressure.

"This Xia Hou has actually concealed such a formidable card in his hand."

Zhen Qing's heart was filled with solemness. It was fortunate that he had not tore at Xia Hou's face while being immersed in joy. If not, had Xia Hou activated this killing move of his, without utilising some special cards of his, Zhen QIng would be extremely hard-pressed to have even a chance of victory.

As the frightening Spiritual Energy pressure rippled throughout the giant hall, Luo Li's glass-like pupils focused on Mu Chen, with the grip of her jade-like hands grasping on the Luo Shen Sword slightly increasing. Clearly, she had also felt that this killing move from Xia Hou cannot be underestimate at all.

Slightly rotating her vision, she finally rested her gaze on the figure of the slender youth. At this moment, his robes were fluttering about, due to the pressure exerted from Xia Hou's Spiritual Energy. Yet, his figure still appeared ramrod straight, just like a spear that pierced through the

confines of heaven.

Humm!

Nine gigantic Spiritual Energy whirlpools rapidly took form, before transforming into nine stars that appeared behind Xia Hou. At this moment, a shade of paleness appeared on his face. Even with him passing his Spiritual Energy Disaster, such a move had a gargantuan consumption to his strength.

However, regardless of his face turning pale, Xia Hou's gaze still appeared exceedingly excited and malevolent. A grin appeared as he looked towards Mu Chen, who was bitterly enduring the pressure coming from him. At this moment, he seemed to be able to see how miserable the latter was, which appeared just like a stray dog.

"This time, it's truly the end."

Xia Hou licked his lips with bloodlust, before furiously pointing towards the space before him. In the next instant, his voice, brimming with unconcealable frosty killing intent rang out, "Star Descent Art, Nine Sun Piercing Stars!"

Bang!

The entire giant hall seemed to shudder as the nine stars explosively shot out. Intertwining with each other, they pierced through the air, descending from the skies with an indescribably frightening might.

Such a barrage could only be describe with one word: Frightening.

Under this barrage, even the faces of experts who had attempted their Spiritual Energy Disaster like Tang Mei'er and Zhou Yuan were overwhelmed with shock. The strength of Xia Hou had seemingly exceeded both of their expectations. The strength of the Saint Spiritual Academy's Holy Son's was actually to such a degree?

Could Mu Chen really endure an attack of such a degree?

Everyone's gazes converged on the figure of the youth in the air as they held their breath in silence.

"Hu."

Under all of the gazes that had converged on him, suddenly, Mu Chen exhaled a long breath of white air. At this moment, he had unexpectedly slowly closed his eyes. While this happened, a rather ancient and strange hand seal started to form. As this seal appeared, black lightning light started to quietly dance and arc from his fingertips.

"Still gaslighting, huh!"

Seeing this action from Mu Chen, Xia Hou immediately sneered. As if he believed that Mu Chen could still have any cards left that could help him defend against such a terrifying attack.

Rumble!

However, just as Xia Hou gave that sneer, suddenly, low rumbling thunderous noises rang out within the giant hall. These thunderous rumbles contained a sliver of the might of the heavens. They appeared to have not only been created by the condensation of Spiritual Energy, but possessing the frightening energies born of the heavens and earth!

Suddenly, everyone within the giant hall sensed something, causing them to immediately raise their heads, which instantly caused their pupils to violently contract.

Xia Hou had similarly raised his head, which immediately caused the chilling sneer on his face to slowly freeze up.

That was due to the sudden appearance of heavy storm clouds that have surfaced out of the blue in the skies above his head. Those storm clouds weren't formed from Spiritual Energy, but born from the heavens and earth. What's more, black lightning light was crazily condensed within them, while radiating destructive fluctuations.

At this moment, Mu Chen's tightly shut eyes sprung wide open. At this moment, his slender fingers encased in lightning light started to slowly carve downwards, while a mumbling voice quietly resounded within the giant hall. Appearing to have brought along the might of the heavens and earth, they shook the hearts of everyone present.

"Lightning Controlling Technique!"

Chapter 482: Lightning's Might

Bang!

As the low and deep sound brought the might of the heavens and earth, while resounding within the giant hall, the rumbling grew increasingly radiant as the black storm clouds condensed together within the skies of the giant hall at an astonishing pace. Black lightning light sparkled within it, appearing akin to a black lightning dragon coiling its gigantic body.

The spectacle before their eyes had undoubtedly caused everyone's expressions to violently contort.

At this moment, even Zhen Qing was overwhelmed in shock as he looked towards the black storm clouds in the air. The might of the heavens and earth radiating from them had caused the Spiritual Energies within everyone to show signs of shivering. This made them understand that the lightning energies present within this storm cloud wasn't as simple as being composed from Spiritual Energy. Those were lightning energies genuinely born from the heavens and earth.

This brilliance coming from the might of the heavens and earth was something that people of their level would absolutely not be able to summon forth.

Mu Chen's handsome face was covered with a solemn expression as his slender fingers hastily trembled, while faint rays of lightning brilliance sparkled at his fingertips. This was the first time he had genuinely executed the "Lightning Controlling Technique" ever since he learned it from the Northern Sea Dragon. Generally speaking, Divine Techniques were exceedingly hard to cultivate. What's more, this Lightning Controlling Technique was considerably extraordinary. Even after multiple months of analysing and learning, Mu Chen had only grasped a few straws of comprehension in it. However, he fortunately possessed an advantage that ordinary people did not have, which was that he had cultivated his Lightning God's Physique. Having experienced the tempering from so many bolts of Divine Black Lightning, he was able to

feel some familiar responses from the lightning energies of the heavens and earth.

It was actually because he was relying on this that he became able to display the "Lightning Controlling Technique" at this moment.

Rumble!

Black storm clouds surged and churned as the black lightning energies rapidly condensed, faintly revealing their extraordinary prestige.

Beneath them, nine beams of light formed by those nine stars subsequently arrived.

Bang!

Mu Chen's expression turned serious as his hand seal abruptly changed, before the black storm clouds started to contract. In the next instant, cracks of thunder that caused people's scalps to turn numb rumbled across the entire giant hall. Immediately, the giant hall started to shake akin to suffering an earthquake. In fact, the Spiritual Energy present in the world started to disperse apart in succession, appearing to be unable to withstand the might of the heavens and earth.

Everyone raised their heads.

Only to see the storm clouds being split apart as a gigantic bolt of black lightning approximately a hundred metres long accompanied the gigantic rumble. Akin to a lightning dragon baring its fangs and claws, it descended down, with thunderous rumbles howling out as it travelled. As it did so, a long fissure was even carved through space, leaving being a singed smell in the air.

The black lightning bolt pierced through the world with seemingly nothing being able to obstruct it. This was a power that destroyed anything in its path.

Although this bolt of lightning wasn't as terrifying as the Divine Black Lightning that had appeared during Nine Nether's tribulation then, the destructive fluctuations radiating from it were sufficient to cause people to feel extremely terrified.

As the black bolt of lightning descended, lightning light illuminated the entire giant hall, lighting up Xia Hou's face at the same time. At this moment, the latter's face appeared chilly and malevolent, clearly appearing exceedingly terrifyied under the lightning light.

Travelling at an exceedingly fast speed, the black bolt of lightning seemingly took only a flash to pierce through space. In the end, under the attentive gazes coming from the surroundings, it violently smashed against the nine star-transformed beams of light before they could smash into Mu Chen.

Boom!

At the instant when the two attacks collided, eye-piercing lightning brilliance radiated out, causing everyone's eyes to narrow in pain. In the next moment, all of them felt an indescribably rampant shock wave spreading across the giant hall.

Bang! Bang!

Cracks and fissures continued to extend and spread across the surface of the giant hall. Regardless of the special materials used in its construction, the group was still unable to withstand the exceedingly rampant lightning shock waves. In fact, the giant pillars close to the epicentre of the impact had fissures all over their collapsed surfaces. At this moment, those vines that had pervaded the entire giant hall were turned into dust in the light of the lightning light.

Such frighteningly destructive power caused everyone present within in the giant hall to become completely dumbfounded.

Crackle!

At the epicentre of the shock wave, two frightening energies crazily corroded one another. However, as the black lightning light sparkled, it had clearly gotten the upper hand. The overbearingness of the Divine Black Lightning wasn't something that could be easily blocked. After all, even Nine Nether then had nearly failed to pass her Divine Tribulation twice due to the Divine Black Lightning.

Although the Divine Black Lightning Mu Chen had summoned was unable to be compared with the one faced by Nine Nether in her tribulation, the disparity between Xia Hou and Nine Nether was similarly too great.

Looking towards the lightning energies that had gained the upper hand, Xia Hou's face grew ashen. Staring malevolently towards Mu Chen, he immediately changed his hand seal and explosively roared, "Nine Stars Explosion!"

Bang! Bang!

Following his explosive roar, the Nine Stars seemed to explode apart at the same time, causing frightening energies to instantly sweep out.

However, just as this energy shock wave was radiating out, chilling rays of brilliance gushed from within Mu Chen's black pupils as he extended his slender finger and gave a gentle point towards the space before him.

"Break!"

Nothing fanciful, just a single word. Yet, it brimmed with incomparable overbearingness.

Whoosh!

With a single word, the Divine Black Lightning instantly flared as the black lightning light crazily sparkled, rushing like a furious dragon in the end. As the lightning light shot out, the frightening energies from the explosion of the nine stars were unexpectedly destroyed and annihilated

"Impossible?!" Xia Hou's face instantly turned deathly pale as he howled in shock.

Clearly, the Divine Black Lightning had gained the upper hand and had suppressed its contender!

Bang!

As Xia Hou roared, an indifferent shadow appeared in Mu Chen's eyes as he waved his hand. In the next instant, everyone present in the giant hall saw the Divine Black Lightning drown out the nine stars.

Transforming into a beam of lightning, it shattered space apart before enveloping Xia Hou in an unavoidable stance.

Finally, emotions of fear and dread gushed from the latter's eyes as he felt the flavor of death coming from the black bolt of lightning.

"I admit defeat!"

He shouted in shock and terror, with his voice becoming much more shrill and ear-piercing.

However, faced against his cry, a shade of indifference still hung on Mu Chen's face. Clearly, he would not show any type of excessive clemency in such moments. He had summoned forth his strength to the fullest to display the Lightning Controlling Technique, which resulted in a gargantuan consumption of his strength. If he was to get nothing in return, he would be extremely hard-pressed to find another good opportunity like this to deal with Xia Hou; after all, the latter wasn't a helpless kitten. With his cultivation at Spiritual Energy Disaster, he was more than sufficient to bring trouble to Mu Chen in the future, if he's not dealt with now.

Bang!

Therefore, he didn't have any intention to show any mercy and soft-heartedness. With a thought, the bolt of Divine Black Lightning struck Xia Hou's body without the slightest bit of hesitation.

Boom!

At the instant when the Divine Black Lightning landed on Xia Hou's body, everyone could hear a low and scalp-numbing sound ring out. In the next instant, the Spiritual Energy defenses around Xia Hou's body completely collapsed, before being miserably shot backwards like a kite with broken strings. As blood spurted from him, his body drew a thousand metre long gulch within the giant hall, before slamming against a giant pillar.

Boom!

Cracks extended across the giant pillar as it started shaking, appearing

as if it was about to collapse.

Blood flowed from Xia Hou's body as he slid off the giant pillar, with all the bones in his body appearing to have be completely smashed apart. As stone pieces pressed down on his body, suffocating him, his aura grew increasingly weaker. Clearly, he was sent to a point close to death by the severe injuries he had sustained...

The rumbling noises in the giant hall gradually came to a stop.

In the next moment, deathly silence hung over the giant hall.

Gazes filled with dense feelings of being overwhelmed with shock looked towards the bloody corpse-like figure. Who would have guessed that Xia Hou, who had gained the absolute superiority earlier would... actually become like that?

The eyes of Tang Mei'er, Zhou Yuan and the rest were wide open as they vacantly looked towards the scene before them. In the next moment, after slightly turning their gazes with bated breath, they looked towards the body of the youth who appeared slightly pale. He had actually... defeated Xia Hou...

That's an expert that had passed his Spiritual Energy Disaster!

While Mu Chen was only of Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase!

"This freak..." In the end, Tang Mei'er and the rest could only softly sigh in their hearts. At this moment, they were finally able to completely understand why Mu Chen was able to become the Captain of this group from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, with even someone as strong as Luo Li not showing any dissent about this. It turned out that this youth, whose strength appeared to be nothing out of the ordinary, had actually possessed such frightening combat prowess that caused people to be filled with horror.

In this universe, there was no lacking of people that were able to fight above their cultivation realms. However, there were some that were undeniably freaks amongst those geniuses. After seeing the spectacle that had unfolded before them, this Mu Chen might be a member of that

league.

As Tang Mei'er and the rest were sighing in incomparable admiration, all colour was drained from the faces of the group from the Saint Spiritual Academy as they inconceivably looked at Xia Hou, who had fainted due to his severe injuries. They were still somewhat unable to believe the brutal reality that had unfolded before their very eyes.

Shadows of darkness and uncertainty loomed within Zhen Qing's eyes as he looked towards the defeated Xia Hou. Looking towards Mu Chen's figure, there were thick feelings of dread, fear and caution surfacing within his eyes. At this moment, he finally started to treat Mu Chen as an opponent that was genuinely able to pose a threat to himself.

However, on the contrary, Mu Chen didn't give any care towards all of the gazes that had converged on him. Covering his mouth to give a cough, a shade of paleness surfaced on his handsome face. In the end, being a Divine Technique, although the Lightning Controlling Technique possessed extreme might and power, it also possessed extreme consumption of his energy. According to Mu Chen's estimates, he would be extremely hard-pressed to activate it one more time...

Such a move could only be properly displayed by Sovereign realm experts, yet it was executed by him today. Truly, the might it possessed didn't disappoint him.

Looking indifferent towards the unconscious Xia Hou, Mu Chen gave a pull of his hand, causing a suction force to erupt from it. As shattered rocks started to fly up, a ray of brilliance shot from Xia Hou's chest, before landing in Mu Chen's hand. This was the Academy Plaque of the Saint Spiritual Academy.

Shooting a glance at the Academy Plaque, Mu Chen's eyebrows instantly jumped as there was actually 4200 points on this Academy Plaque! Furthermore, they were ranked at 7th place on the rankings listed on it!

This amount seemed to be two to three times more than the points Mu Chen had.

Clutching the Academy Plaque, Mu Chen deeply pondered for a

moment, before retrieving his own, and snatching away half of the points and transferring them to his plaque.

As rays of brilliance shone, the number present on Mu Chen's Academy Plaque instantly rose to 3007.

As this number drastically shot up, the Academy Plaque in Mu Chen's hands was enveloped in dazzling brilliance, while Xia Hou's group rapidly disappeared from the listed rankings. In the next moment, a new group bounded over one group after another at an astonishing speed, before finally coming to a stop at the ninth place!

Great Spiritual Academy Tournament. Ninth Place: Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Captain: Mu Chen.

Looking towards the Academy Plaque in his hand that had lit up, Mu Chen gave a faint smile as his group had entered the Top 16. This way, news about himself would be discovered by all of the groups, with Ji Xuan being amongst them.

Slowly clenching the Academy Plaque in his hand, a chilling shadow condensed within Mu Chen's black pupils.

Ji Xuan, when you see this familiar name, how will you feel?

Chapter 483: Grudges

On a barren mountain range, five figures stood upright on a towering peak, facing into the wind. Despite the erratic gales present around them, these five figures were like boulders, unmoving in the wind. Even their clothes remained still and unaffected by the wind.

Among the five, the leader of the group was leaning on a large boulder. His glanced lazily towards the distant mountain range, where rampant Spiritual Energy fluctuations were sporadically bursting out.

Dressed in white robes, this leader figure had a slender build. Appearing exceedingly handsome, a warm smile hung from the corner of his mouth, giving him a friendly and genial impression as his black hair gently blew in the wind. Although the other four behind him were not average people too, next to him, they definitely dimmed in comparison. His appearance and demeanour really stood out from the crowd.

He was Saint Spiritual Academy's Ji Xuan.

Behind Ji Xuan, a golden-haired youth chuckled as he stared at the distant mountain range. "Captain, that fight seems to be drawing to a close. The twelve remaining teams are of decent strength, and I count at least twelve who have crossed their Human Body Disaster."

Hearing this, Ji Xuan nodded with a laugh. "12 teams... yet another big meal, eh? I wonder if this will actually be too much for us."

"With Captain around, even experts who have passed their Spiritual Energy Disaster would avoid us. Any team that doesn't are asking to be crushed," replied another teammate, whose body was thick and sturdy, with a straightforward laugh. Many scars ran across his face, giving him a vicious and malevolent aura.

"Still waters run deep. There're many crouching tigers and hidden dragons in this Great Spiritual Academy Tournament. If you're overly confident, you might suffer a defeat due to negligence." Ji Xuan slightly smiled, staring into the distance with an abstruse look in his eyes. "Apparently, there are many Spiritual Academies that have secretly

enlisted the help of geniuses and prodigies from large and influential clans for the Great Spiritual Tournament this time. While many of them have yet to reveal themselves, as the Tournament progresses, these hidden experts will naturally reveal themselves. Only then will there be genuinely fearsome fights."

"Even if we disregard all those experts, there's still the teams from the other four Great Spiritual Academies. Those teams won't lose out to ours, and we've yet to meet them. Aren't we already being thoroughly suppressed by Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy's Wen Qingxuan?"

Upon hearing the name Wen Qingxuan, the four behind Ji Xuan wore sullen expressions on their faces. Right from the start of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, Wen Qingxuan's team had snatched the top position in an overbearing manner. Despite the fact that the current leaderboard might not accurately reflect the final standings, their ability to hold onto the pole position was a testament to their ability.

"The rumours say that Wen Qingxuan's a heaven-sent beauty..." Laughing, one of the youths replied, "She participated in the Spiritual Road alongside you, right? With your charm and wit, were you unable to conquer this proud phoenix?"

Ji Xuan nonchalantly shrugged. "She is one of the most frightening ladies from the Spiritual Road... furthermore, beauty and dashing looks have no effect on her."

The golden-haired youth latched onto Ji Xuan's words, questioning, "Wait, there are other girls whom you fear? Who? There's actually someone comparable to Wen Qingxuan?"

Sinking into his thoughts, the smile on Ji Xuan's face faded. Staring into the distance, a dark look flashed past his eyes. "Another one... her name is Luo Li. She did not lose out to Wen Qingxuan in any way, it's just that her personality differs from Wen Qingxuan, and she cared less about contesting for a ranking..."

He could still clearly remember her. Dressed in a black skirt, carrying a longsword, hair like a silver river, and a pair of limpid eyes, clear as glass.

She was so dazzling, so much that one would get intoxicated just by looking at her. If Wen Qingxuan was a proud and respectable phoenix who bowed down to no one, Luo Li was a lone black lotus in the bowels of a deep valley, her breathtaking beauty only blossoming before the person she fancied.

Her innate ability was in no way inferior to Wen Qingxuan's. If she so desired, she could even be as illuminated as Wen Qingxuan in the limelight. However... she simply stood quietly alongside that fellow. That still gaze she levelled at everyone would only show traces of warmth and gentleness when she looked at that fellow. That rare display of softness could spur countless men to move mountains.

Slowly clenching his fists, his finger gouged into the boulder beside him like it was just butter. His gaze turned chilly as his eyes drooped.

"Luo Li..."

Sucking in a deep breath of air, Ji Xuan closed his eyes.

Before he became Mu Chen's sworn enemy, he'd actually met Luo Li once. In that moment, Luo Li was being chased and attacked by ruthless opponents, yet all he did was watch the situation from afar. He knew that helping another on the Spiritual Road was a foolish act, and not being a benevolent person to begin with, he would not risk his safety to save another for no good reason.

Therefore, he simply stood aside and watched.

He watched as an arrow shot out from the forest and pierced into her shoulder with a spurt of fresh blood. As she staggered from the impact, she looked up, and discovered Ji Xuan watching from afar.

As their gazes met, and despite her precarious situation, her still and clear gaze never once wavered, nor did she send a plea for help. She simply turned around and rushed into the forest, disappearing like a shadow, leaving a startled Ji Xuan behind.

He never saw her again.

Upon the next time they met, half a year had passed. She had found a

companion, a slender youth with dashing looks and eyes as deep as the night sky.

This time, he noticed that she had slightly changed. The girl who would maintain a calm expression in the face of death, was now gently smiling when she glanced at the youth beside her. That gentle smile was so breathtakingly beautiful, it caused his heart to tremble and shake.

He had to admit that a seed of jealousy was planted in his heart right there and then.

If he had previously taken action, he might have been the one standing beside her instead...

What he failed to realise was that after saving Luo Li's life, Mu Chen had been hunted down by her for a whole six months. In that six-month-long chase, they had been through hell and back. Day-after-day, the youth had taught her many valuable lessons, only to receive a barrage of attacks in return, leaving him with no choice but to continuously retreat.

And with every successful escape, those calm eyes started showing slivers of emotions from within her, and every so often, the corner of her mouth would arc into a gentle smile.

The chase lasted for half a year, before Luo Li saw through Mu Chen's various cunning methods and finally held her sword at his throat.

He bitterly laughed, only to receive a sweet smile in response.

Ji Xuan would never find out about this, and due to subsequent events, would start a feud with Mu Chen, and through the many attempts on each other's lives, become bitter rivals.

Many might believe that their rivalry would have started sooner or later. After all, both of them were outstanding, and with Ji Xuan's personality, he would not be able to accept another equally talented person occupying the same area as him, and thus their conflict was inevitable... Ji Xuan, himself, did not deny this reasoning, but bystanders wouldn't realise that deep within his heart, there was another reason...

He wanted to thrash Mu Chen, in order to let the girl who moved his

heart see that he was leagues above Mu Chen.

However, as the conflicts between them escalated, Ji Xuan started to consider Mu Chen as a real threat. With his shocking growth, Ji Xuan no longer had a guarantee of preventing Mu Chen from becoming the most dazzling figure in the Spiritual Road.

Hence, he had to eliminate Mu Chen!

Resorting to using underhanded methods, he finally succeeded, resulting in Mu Chen being banished from the Spiritual Road...

Yet, on the day Mu Chen started the Blood Calamity and got banished from the Spiritual Road, Ji Xuan noticed the Luo Li had been watching him from a faraway peak. Those beautiful eyes that he had once lost himself in were now directing a chilly gaze right at him, giving off a strong killing intent.

After she turned and left, she disappeared, and their next meeting was the end of the Spiritual Road.

She had given up the opportunity to obtain the greatest reward from the Spiritual Road, crazily sending attack after attack in his direction. In that bitter fight, both sides had suffered grave injuries.

And despite the heavy injuries, her icy stare never once left him.

"The only reason for me to not kill you where you stand, is that Mu Chen will show you what defeat truly means. In my eyes, you will never reach his level."

This was their first actual conversation, yet she had uttered such words, causing the usually stoic Ji Xuan to rage within his heart.

Bang!

With a violent punch, the huge boulder beside him exploded into a dust cloud that covered the skies.

In that moment, a nasty expression was present on his handsome face as a frightening Spiritual Energy swept out, scattering the violent gales around him.

Behind him, his teammates stared in shock as Ji Xuan momentarily lost control over his emotions. This was the first time they had witnessed this side of Ji Xuan.

After punching the boulder, Ji Xuan took a deep breath, finally managing to compose himself. Clenching his fists, a malevolent aura rose in his eyes. "Luo Li, since you think so highly of him, I'll crush him right before your eyes, and I want him to die a terrible death!"

Seeing his current expression, his teammates were shocked. Just as they were about to speak, their Academy Plaques suddenly gave off a bright flash of light. They hurriedly looked over, before their expressions changed and they let out a cry of alarm.

"Eh? Xia Hou's team has disappeared from the rankings?!"

"There's actually a team from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy on the leaderboards..."

Upon hearing this, Ji Xuan squinted his eyes. With a wave of his palm, his Academy Plaque appeared, and his gaze fell on the name of the team who had just broken through into the leaderboards.

Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, Ninth Place: Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Captain: Mu Chen.

Chapter 484: Targeted

The atmosphere on the mountain peak seemed to have froze up at this moment.

Ji Xuan shot a deathly glare towards the eye-piercing name present on the Academy Plaque, the amiable smile on his face being completely wiped off. Extending his finger, an emotionless expression appeared on his face as he rubbed against that name. Although he had yet to say a single word, every single one of the four people behind him could sense an astonishing wave of killing intent radiating from the body of the former.

Among them, the youth by the name of Mu Feng faintly knew about the grudge and grievances between Ji Xuan and Mu Chen. Shrugging his shoulders, he said with a smile, "Looks like your adversary has appeared."

Hearing those words, Ji Xuan gave an indifferent reply, "You don't know if the current him has enough qualifications to be my adversary."

"Xia Hou's group has disappeared from the Top 16," said a golden-haired youth as he wrinkled his forehead. "And this group from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy has just so happened to rush in at the same time."

Speaking till here, a clear expression of shock and amazement flashed across his eyes as he continued to speak. "Could it be that Xia Hou's group had suffered defeat in the hands of this group from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?"

"That's impossible, right? Xia Hou's group is extremely strong, with he, himself, being someone that had successfully passed his Spiritual Energy Tribulation. Although there are crouching tigers and hidden dragons in this Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, there shouldn't be that many people that could defeat them with ease..." said the burly bear-like-bodied youth with a frown.

Shaking his head, Ji Xuan said with an indifferent tone, "There's no need to make any more guesses. Xia Hou and his group truly have been defeated by Mu Chen's group. Can't you see that there isn't any indication

of the direction of their location anymore? This means that they should have entered some remnant..."

Looking over, Mu Feng and the rest saw that it was true, Mu Chen and Xia Hou's group didn't have any indication of their direction at all...

"Hehe. That group of unlucky fellows. They really have lost all face this time to have actually suffered defeat in the hands of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy," said the golden-haired youth as he flung his mouth aside and gave a mocking laugh. Although all of them were from the Saint Spiritual Academy, they weren't considered to be amicable within the academy itself. On the contrary, there were loads of internal strife. Therefore, he was naturally reeling in happiness at Xia Hou's misfortune of bumping into such trouble.

Looking at the indifferent-looking Ji Xuan, Mu Feng gave a smile as he said, "Do we need to find them now? I believe that they won't hide in the remnant for the entirety of the tournament. As long as they come out, we should be able to find the direction they are at."

Rubbing the Academy Plaque in his hand, Ji Xuan callously eyed the name present on it. Shaking his head, he replied, "There's no need. If he truly possesses some ability, we will eventually bump into him. If he doesn't even possess the ability to last till then, he wouldn't have the qualifications for me to keep him in mind."

Hearing that, Mu Feng nodded his head. As of now, they really should not waste time worrying about Mu Chen's group.

"Time's about up. Get ready to move. Remember. Don't let a single one off."

Ji Xuan looked towards the depths of the mountain, where the rampant Spiritual Energy fluctuations that were radiating from had grown weaker by quite a bit. From the looks of it, a result was gradually forming in the battle taking place there. Therefore, he said that with an indifferent tone, while giving a wave of his hand.

Whoosh!

As his hand dropped down, the four figures behind him had already shot out at lightning speed. Bringing along dense and boundless Spiritual Energy, they appeared like a storm, sweeping across the mountain range akin to an incomparably rampant hurricane.

Looking at their backs, Ji Xuan slightly turned his head to look towards the far north, an incisive chill gushing from his eyes.

Mu Chen, you should work hard to move forward. Once you walk before me, I will let you understand exactly how big the disparity is between you and me. This time, I'll definitely let you be consigned to eternal damnation!

Abruptly clenching his hands, Ji Xuan took a heavy step forward. With a loud bang, he transformed into a ray of light, rushing towards the skies. In the next instant, he had shot ahead of the four figures, showing off his quick and lithe speed.

As he shot out, intense vibrations shook from the mountain peak as gigantic fissures rapidly extended from it. In the next instant, they had spread out and covered the entire peak. As rumbling noises rang out, giant stones rolled down, before suddenly, the entire mountain peak collapsed apart, sending dust plumes spreading out across the horizon.

As Ji Xuan and his group started moving, in a region extremely far away from them, there was what seemed like a gathering point. Within that mountain valley, there were hundreds of thousands of groups that had converged over there, having completed various sorts of exchanges and trades. There was an unspoken rule present here, which was that there could not be any fights in this place. If not, that would result in hostile response from everyone here.

Clearly, there was some noise present in this mountain valley. Yet, the gazes of many groups were indistinctly focused towards the higher region of the mountain valley. Present on the cliff, there was an exceedingly dazzling silhouette.

This silhouette appeared exceedingly slender, with a golden-coloured armor draped across her exquisite and voluptuous figure, vividly and

thoroughly accentuating her soul-stirring curves. Underneath her battle shirt was a pair of long and slender legs that sparkled with a jade-like luster, causing the eyes of countless people to feel slightly unable to decide where to place their gazes on.

A torrent of black hair fell from her head, landing on her straight shoulders. Crossing her jade-like hands before her, it caused her impressively voluptuous chest to become even more eye-grabbing, with quite a few people quietly swallowing their saliva in response to the sight before them.

However, even though the beautiful figure had caused the hearts of countless people to pump and pound, there wasn't anyone that dared to be overly brazen in their gazes, with dread even being present in the eyes of some people. That because the young girl before their eyes was called Wen Qingxuan.

The Captain of the first ranking team in the point rankings in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament.

Although her beautiful figure appeared delicate and graceful, everyone knew how much frightening power was contained under that exquisite and alluring body!

However, at this moment, the young girl that had become the focal point completely ignored those gazes shooting over from the mountain valley as signs of deep thought surfaced in her beautiful eyes as she looked towards the Academy Plaque in her hand. More precisely, she was staring at the group that had just rushed into the Top 16.

"Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's Mu Chen..."

Wen Qingxuan's beautiful eyes slowly narrowed, with this little movement of her's causing her to have an otherworldly charm and allure.

"That Blood Calamity of the Spiritual Road?"

Filled with interest, Wen Qingxuan gave a faint smile. Although she didn't bump into Mu Chen while they were in the Spiritual Road, she had heard stories of the Blood Calamity. Naturally, though, the most crucial

thing was that this Mu Chen seemed to be together with Luo Li.

"Since he's the Captain of that group, Luo Li should also be in that group, right?" muttered Wen Qingxuan as she tapped her snow-white chin, her beautiful eyes sparkling while a shade of excitement surfaced on her beautiful face.

"Captain, our next target is that group from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?" Lovable voices rang out from the two young girls present behind Wen Qingxuan.

These two young girls were dressed in dark greenish robes, with their sweet and soul-stirring appearances unexpectedly looking exactly similar to one another. Clearly, they were a pair of identical twins. Noticing the rarely seen shade of excitement present on Wen Qingxuan's beautiful face, they could not help asking in curiosity.

Giving a laugh, Wen Qingxuan nodded her head and replied, "Pin'er, Le'er. Stare at this group for me, will you? Once the direction for their location appears, we'll immediately head out to find them!"

Exchanging glances with one another, the two young girls asked in doubt, "Won't this delay our plan?"

Spending that many thoughts for one group didn't seem to fit in the plan that Wen Qingxuan had made earlier.

Panning her head over, Wen Qingxuan extended her slender jade-like fingers and raised the exquisite chins of the two young girls before replying within an alluring smile. "There isn't any plan that's more important as compared to her."

Hearing that, the young girls by the names of Pin'er and Le'er obediently nodded their heads.

Slightly raising her beautiful face to look at a place in the far distance, Wen Qingxuan extended her slender jade-like hand, before giving a clench. In the next moment, a sweet smile appeared on her face, that alluring smile seemingly stole away all of the splendor of the daytime within this mountain valley, with countless people emitting uncontrollable

gulping sounds from their throats in response.

This noble and arrogant phoenix before their eyes truly had caused people's hearts to jump and pound. Although everyone knew that it would undoubtedly be even harder to surmount the heavens than to conquer this phoenix, this was what men were. The harder it was to obtain in one's hands, the more one's heart would itch.

Those countless scorching gazes shooting out from the mountain valley finally caught the attention of Wen Qingxuan. A faint shiver shook through her long and slender eyelashes as she swept her beautiful eyes over.

Noticing her gaze shooting over, shivers immediately shook through the hearts of some people in the mountain valley as they hastily evaded their gazes away. Regardless of how alluring and soul-stirring this young girl was, they were extremely clear about the frightening strength the latter possessed.

"This girl's truly flavorful."

However, it clearly seemed that not everyone had evaded her gaze, as the gazes from one group at the fringes of the mountain valley still appeared as scorching as ever. This group possessed considerable strength, and although their Captain had yet to successfully pass though his Spiritual Energy Disaster, he was of comparable strength to Tang Mei'er and Zhou Yuan. As for the other four members of the group, there were two experts of Fleshly Body Disaster. This lineup was in fact not any weaker than any group from the five Great Academies.

However, even though their lineup was considerably tyrannical, the few groups in the surroundings still casted pitiful gazes at them, before quietly retreating away.

On the top of the mountain peak, Wen Qingxuan's beautiful eyes were now locked onto them. In the next instant, an alluring smile immediately surfaced on her face. Giving a sweet laugh, a charming voice instantly rang out. "Oh really?"

Tge body of the Captain froze up, clearly not expecting his words to be

heard by Wen Qingxuan as he had said them with an extremely soft level of voice. In the next instant, giving a dry laugh, his figure immediately retreated away explosively, with the other four members of his group following closely behind.

Upon seeing this, a rich smile was still present on Wen Qingxuan's face. In the next instant, striding out, boundless Spiritual Energy swept out, faintly transforming into what seemed like a pair of gorgeous and gigantic glowing phoenix wings.

Swish!

With a flap of the phoenix wings, her figure disappeared akin to a spectre.

Bang!

At the instant when her figure disappeared, frightening Spiritual Energy suddenly swept out in the far distance as the five figures that had shot over there earlier had unexpectedly spurted blood out while being sent flying back. Their faces overwhelmed with shock, they proceeded to stare at the space before them.

Whoosh!

Like a spectre, Wen Qingxuan had appeared wordlessly before that captain. Extending her jade-like hand, she immediately grabbed hold of the latter's neck. Looking at the shock and dread-filled face, an enchanting smile curled up from her seductive lips. In the next instant, she sent a pat towards the latter's chest, sending him smashing straight into the mountain valley below, before fluttering away.

"I'll give you all the points he has."

As she floated off into the distance, a sweet-sounding voice filled with laughter rang from the distance.

On the top of the mountain valley, four beautiful figures had also transformed into beams of light, shooting off into the distance as they chased after the soul-stirringly alluring figure.

Within the mountain valley, gazes filled with longing and unwillingness shot towards the beautiful figures in the distance. Everyone only returned to their senses after quite a while, before casting gazes of ill intent towards the unlucky Captain that had suffered serious injuries from a single pat by Wen Qingxuan.

Chapter 485: Wooden Divine Guard

Due to the enormous battle that took place here, the interior of the giant hall had turned into a complete pile of mess.

Slowly descending from the sky, Mu Chen's face appeared slightly pale. Yet, those black pupils of his were still flooded within chilling intent as he swept his gaze around. Faced against his gaze, even Zhen Qing's expression slightly froze up, while a shadow of dread surfaced within the depths of his eyes.

Mu Chen's move earlier on had defeated Xia Hou and caused even his heart to palpitate in fear. He knew that if that move was headed towards him, his ending would not be any better than Xia Hou's in any way.

The remaining four members of the Saint Spiritual Academy group glared with endless shock and fury at Mu Chen. Taking a look at Xia Hou, who was unconscious due to his serious injuries, their gazes turned frosty as they looked once again at Mu Chen. Although they would very much like to take action at this very moment, all of them found out that they couldn't even move their legs a single inch forward, since thick feelings of fear and dread had already cemented themselves in their hearts.

The shock Mu Chen had caused to them due to the previous fight was too great.

Who would have imagined that Xia Hou, whose cultivation had reached the realm of having passed his Spiritual Energy Tribulation, would actually suffer such a miserable defeat in the hands of Mu Chen, who's cultivation was only at the realm of Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase?

While still being trapped within the vines, Tang Mei'er, Zhou Yuan and the rest of the groups looked shell-shocked at the scene before them. Only after quite a while did they take a breath of cold air and regain their senses. Suppressing the shock and astonishment in their hearts, they looked with incomparable curiosity at Mu Chen. Such an outcome had clearly exceeded all of their expectations.

Although they never underestimated Mu Chen since the start, regardless

of that, Xia Hou had successfully passed his Spiritual Energy Tribulation. Compared with the latter, there truly was a gigantic disparity.

Such a disparity couldn't be easily covered.

However, Mu Chen had let them experience a miracle-like scene.

Sweeping his gaze across the giant hall, Mu Chen's vision lined up with Luo Li's, with the exquisite and porcelain-like beautiful face revealing a faint smile. Mu Chen didn't let her bitter persistence go to waste. With Xia Hou being crippled and deposed of, the situation before their eyes should be flipped around now.

"Haha. You truly are formidable."

A dark laugh rang from Zhen Qing, slowly resounding within the giant hall.

Panning his head around, Mu Chen laid his gaze on Zhen Qing, before a few wrinkles started to appear on his forehead. That's because he was not able to find a single trace of shock or fluster present on the latter's face.

"That's why you're able to become the Captain of your group. Look's like I've truly underestimated you earlier," said Zhen Qing with a faint smile.

Grasping her longsword, Luo Li stood up, while a chilling glint appeared within her clear, beautiful eyes as she glared at Zhen Qing. Although the only people capable of taking action were her and Mu Chen, if it really came to a fight, Zhen Qing and his group might have quite a bit of an advantage.

"Do you think that you're able to turn the situation around after defeating Xia Hou?" Sweeping his gaze towards Mu Chen and Luo Li, Zhen Qing gave an amused sneer, while a look of ridicule gushed from his eyes. "I admit that your Divine Sword is a mighty deterrence. However, don't treat me as a retard. Did you think that I'd really sit here like a retard and quietly wait for you to deal with Xia Hou before dealing with me?"

"Oh? Otherwise?"

Hearing Zhen Qing's words, Mu Chen gave a faint smile. Yet, the

Spiritual Energy within his body had already started to circulate once again. The massive fight he had with Xia Hou had resulted in the consumption of quite a bit of his energy, which had led to him being temporarily unable to use a powerful move like the Lightning Controlling Technique. However, without Xia Hou, the combat prowess of Zhen Qing's side had clearly been greatly decreased.

However, the smile brimming on Zhen Qing's face appeared somewhat strange and weird.

Standing beside Mu Chen, Luo Li tightly grasped her Luo Shen Sword, while a chilling light surfaced within her eyes as she locked her gaze onto Zhen Qing.

With bated breaths, Tang Mei'er and the rest took in the scene before them. Clearly, they had also felt that something wasn't right with Zhen Qing's reaction to the change in the situation. Faced against the combination of Mu Chen and Luo Li, this Zhen Qing had unexpectedly shown not the slightest bit of fear or dread. What's more, he appeared to be exceedingly confident in himself, appearing to possess an absolute assurance in suppressing both Mu Chen and Luo Li.

However, regardless of the fear and worry present in their hearts, being trapped by the vines, there was nothing they could do but hope that Mu Chen and Luo Li were truly about to deal with Zhen Qing. Then, they would be able to completely remove the vines that were restraining them.

Whoosh!

Upon focusing their gazes, Luo Li's lovable figure had already shot forward in the next instant, while an incomparably fierce Sword Aura swept out. Slicing apart the air in its path, it slashed straight down towards Zhen Qing's head.

With a pat of his palm on the ground, Zhen Qing's body explosively shot forward. As a shiver shook through his sleeve, a black ray of light gushed out. Appearing just like a gigantic black withered wooden log, it smashed head-on against the fierce Sword Aura.

Boom!

An enormous sound rang out as the black withered wooden log shattered apart, sending splintered pieces of wood flying in all directions. However, black rays of brilliance gushed from within, defending against the Sword Aura.

Fluttering back in retreat, the four members behind Zhen Qing locked their frosty gazes on Mu Chen and Luo Li. Boundless Spiritual Energies radiated within the giant hall as they got ready to take action at a moment's notice.

"You all really are impetuous." With a shake of his sleeve, black rays of light radiated from within. Staring at Mu Chen and Luo Li, a chilling shadow gushed from his eyes as he sneered, "You're definitely wondering why I didn't make a single move when you guys dealt with Xia Hou, right? Now, I'll tell you that it's because I needed time. Now, time's up!"

The smile at the corner of his mouth turned abruptly malevolent. "Next up, it should be your time to struggle in despair!"

As his voice rang out, his hands suddenly came together to form a complicated hand seal. Behind him, his four group members had also formed similar hand seals. In the next instant, blackish-green Spiritual Energies swept out of their bodies akin to a flood. Shooting straight into the air within the giant hall, they shot at lightning speeds, before slamming straight against the gigantic greenish wood statue at the corner of the giant hall.

Bang!

As banging sounds rang out, dazzling rays of brilliance erupted from the gigantic greenish wood statue. In the next instant, complex patterns appeared on the surface of its gigantic surface.

At the same time, extremely terrifying fluctuations radiated from it.

Seeing this, the eyes of Mu Chen and Luo Li slightly narrowed. Clenching her sword, Sword Aura howled from it, hiding the skies and covering the earth as it chopped straight down towards Zhen Qing and his group.

Boom!

Seeing this, Zhen Qing gave a cold smile in response. Stomping his feet. Countless vines explosively shot out. Turning into a shield, it blocked the incoming slash from the Sword Aura, turning into wood splitters that filled the air as a result.

"Haha. The Divine Wood Guard has already been activated and controlled by me! Next up, regardless of what moves you all have, you all will undoubtedly die today!"

As the wood splitters were explosively sent across the skies, Zhen Qing fervently looked towards the greenish wood statue within the giant hall, which had started to slowly stand up. With a hearty chuckle, he said, "Mu Chen, did you all assume that dealing with Xia Hou would be able to turn the entire situation around just like that? Yet, you all didn't know that I was also waiting for time! Haha, it's still my win in the end!"

As the Divine Wood Guard stood up, its gigantic dozen metre tall figure radiated with an immense pressure, while glowing runes covered the entirety of its body. At the same time, extremely frightening energy fluctuations radiated from it as it took a giant step forward, causing the entire giant hall to shake and tremble in its wake.

Seeing this, the faces of Tang Mei'er and the rest turned pale. As the gigantic shadow came enveloping over, all of them felt the threat of death. Finally, all of them understood why Zhen Qing still remained unmoved like a rock even when faced with the defeat of Xia Hou. It turned out that he didn't have the intention to go into a head-on confrontation with Mu Chen and his group since the very beginning.

All along, he had been biding his time, using the Spiritual Energies sucked from the bodies of Tang Mei'er and the rest to awaken this frightening Divine Wood Guard!

From the looks of it, this Divine Wood Guard had been successfully controlled by them, with seemingly all aspects of the situation having landed in their hands. At this moment, there was simply not the slightest bit of a chance to flip the situation around!

Solemn expressions appeared on the faces of Mu Chen and Luo as they stared at the Divine Wood Guard. Both of them were able to sense that this Divine Wood Guard possessed extremely powerful energies within it. Although it wasn't to the level of a Sovereign realm expert, it definitely far surpassed that of anyone that was of Spiritual Energy Disaster!

"Although our strength isn't able to allow for this Divine Wood Guard to show all of its power, what happens next is more than sufficient to show you all what despair feels like!"

Facing the sky, Zhen Qing gave a hearty chuckle, his slightly pale face brimming with satisfaction. With a wave of his sleeve, his hand seal changed, only for a glowing tree leaf rune to surface from the forehead of the Divine Wood Guard. In the next instantly, with its massive stride, it dashed straight towards Mu Chen and Luo Li. As it waved its giant fist, boundless Spiritual Energy swept out akin to rampant horses, instantly enveloping over the two.

Swish!

Mu Chen and Luo Li instantly shot backwards in retreat. Clenching his hand, the Devouring Demonic Dragon Spear appeared in a flash, sending its ominous aura gushing out. In the next instant, a fierce spear shadow was already being thrust towards the body of the Divine Wood Guard at lightning speed. Yet, faced with such a fierce attack, it was only able to leave a faint scratch on its body.

Whoosh!

The longsword in Luo Li's hand started to dance, sending waves of Sword Aura gushing out. Smashing right onto the body of the Divine Wood Guard, where inch-deep slashes started to form. Clearly, the destructive power of her attacks was quite a bit stronger than Mu Chen's. However, when compared to the gigantic body of the Divine Wood Guard, they weren't considered to be anything formidable.

Clearly, this Divine Wood Guard possessed an extremely powerful defense.

"Haha. Your resistances are completely useless! As of now, unless there's

anyone who has passed their Divine Soul Tribulation, this Divine Wood Guard is absolutely impossible to be destroyed by the likes of you!" roared Zhen Qing in laughter. As long as he deals with Mu Chen and Luo Li here, he would truly be able to obtain this Divine Wood Guard. At that time, not only would he be able to truly obtain a status in the real "Divine Wood Palace", he would also be able to obtain this Divine Wood Guard. With its strength, how many people would be able to obstruct him and his group's path in this Great Spiritual Academy Tournament?

The champion of this Great Spiritual Academy Tournament would definitely land in the hands of their Wood Spirit Academy!

Seeing the formidable might of the Divine Wood Guard, a shadow of helplessness and bitterness flashed through the eyes of Tang Mei'er, Zhou Yuan, Xu Huang and the rest. From the looks of it, they had truly ended up in a hopeless situation.

Possessing such strength, this Divine Wood Guard was more than sufficient to sweep away everyone present here. Even Mu Chen and Luo Li collaborating together might not be able to defeat it.

Chapter 486: Join Hands

The gigantic Wooden Divine Guard towered over the interior of the giant hall, sending out waves of powerful pressure radiating out.This cause all the Spiritual Energy within the giant hall slow signs of freezing and turning sluggish. This Wooden Divine Guard possessed an extremely powerful level of might.

"Hahaha, weren't you so strong just now, Mu Chen? Want to go for another round with my Wooden Divine Guard?"

Zhen Qing cackled as he watched on. With the Wooden Divine Guard on his side, he could finally relax. No matter how many more tricks Mu Chen had up his sleeves, there was absolutely no way he could turn the tables around.

Furrowing his eyebrows, Mu Chen stared at the Wooden Divine Guard. This latter's gigantic body appeared to be made of weathered wood, with rays of brilliance sparkling out of glowing patterns on the surface. The powerful energies radiating out from it caused prickling pain sensations to be felt on his skin. This was the response his body had in the face of danger. Clearly, this Wooden Divine Guard possessed a frightening level of power that even his Four Rune Lightning Physique wasn't able to endure.

The Wooden Divine Guard before him might possess strength that was comparable to someone that have passed their Spiritual Energy Disaster...Furthermore, according to what Zhen Qing had said, this still wasn't its full strength...

The situation now had indeed become even more nasty than before.

"Next up, all of you can go and die." said Zhen Qing as he grinned towards Mu Chen and Luo Li, his face brimming with a sinister shade. In the next instant, with a change of his hand seal, the tree leaf rune on the forehead of the Wooden Divine Guard started to sparkled before the latter's gigantic body started to shoot forwards. Bringing forth a frightening level of power, its giant fist hurtled straight towards the two.

With a shift of his body, a dragon shade seemed to surface at Mu Chen's feet. In a flash, he retreated back, with Luo Li similarly retreating back at rapid speeds.

Bang!

The fist of the Wooden Divine Guard struck the ground, causing intense vibrations to rock through the entire giant hall. Gigantic fissures extended out across the ground akin to gigantic snakes, showing off its heart palpitating destructive power.

WhoosH!

With its fist striking air, the glowing rune on its forehead sparkled once more. Instantly, its gigantic frame shot out immediately, appearing right before Mu Chen in a flash. Clearly, not only did it possess astonishing might, it also possessed a rather quick speed.

Boom!

The Wooden Divine Guard sent yet another fist rumbling out, causing the air before it to completely explode apart.

Seeing this, Mu Chen's expression changed slightly. With a fierce shake of the Devouring Dragon Demonic Spear in his hand, an ominous aura swept out as it transformed into a gigantic demonic dragon. Bringing forth surging ominous qi, it smashed head on against the Wooden Divine Guard.

Bang!

Energy shockwaves swept out like a hurricane, with the ground below Mu Chen's feet immediately collapsing apart. At this instant, Mu Chen's body was sent flying backwards. Transforming back into a long spear, the Devouring Dragon Demonic Spear landed back into his hand, while his sleeves were torn into shreds. As he did so, a sliver of blood dripped down from the corner of his mouth. Clearly, he had suffered some damage from the head on collision with the Wooden Divine Guard.

The Wooden Divine Guard's gigantic figure rushed straight towards Mu Chen once again, its weathered wood fist enveloping over him like a

shadow.

Swish!

However, before the Wooden Divine Guard could attack Mu Chen once again, a beautiful figure shot abruptly before him. In the next instant, an incomparably fierce Sword Aura current howled out, heading straight towards the head of the Wooden Divine Guard.

Sensing the incoming fierce Sword Aura current, the Wooden Divine Guard suddenly came to a halt. Extending its gigantic palm out, it blocked itself against the Sword Aura current sweeping over, which left a deep fissure on its wither wood palm. Although it indeed possessed an extremely strong defense, Luo Li's Luo Shen Sword clearly wasn't something that could be easily defended against.

If Luo Li's cultivation realm was higher, she would be able to activate the truly power of this Divine Weapon of the Luo God Clan. At that time, a single slash from it would be able to chop of the giant hand of this Wooden Divine Guard.

Mu Chen took this opportunity to retreat back. However, wrinkles started to form on his forehead, as the defense of this Wooden Divine Guard was exceedingly strong. When faced against his and Luo Li's earlier attacks, it had always met them head on with its own. However, this time, it had chose to defend against her attack. This might be due to the dread Zhen Qing had towards the Luo Shen Sword. However, this might not be the entire reason.

As his eyes sparkled, Mu Chen could not help but to rest his gaze on the tree leaf like rune present on the forehead of the Wooden Divine Guard. In the next instant, his shot a look from the corner of his eye towards Zhen Qing. It seemed that every single time the hand seal of that fellow changes, the tree leaf on its forehead would sparkle and light up...

That tree leaf rune was precisely the thing that Zhen Qing and his group had snatched away from them.

From the looks of it, it seems that this tree leaf rune just so happened to be able to allow for the control of this Wooden Divine guard. That's why

Zhen Qing didn't attempt to snatch away the Immortal Divine Tree and rush straight towards that unassuming tree leaf rune...

Fluttering down, Luo Li descended by Mu Chen's side. Shooting a look at him, she spoke out, "Are you alright?"

Mu Chen replied a slight shake of his head. Fortunately, he had cultivated his Lightning God's Physique to a Four Rune Lightning Physique. If not, the fist sent out from the Wooden Divine Guard would cause serious injuries towards any ordinary person who had passed their Fleshly Body Tribulation.

"Haha. Looks like the two of you are unable to create any waves today." looking towards Mu Chen and Luo, who were forced to retreat in succession by the Wooden Divine Guard, Zhen Qing could not help but to laugh out.

Hearing those words, a chilling glow flashed faintly across Luo Li's eyes. Gripping her Luo Shen Sword tightly, she spoke out with a voice tinged with chilling intent. "Isn't it too early to be happy? Do you truly believe that I won't be able to chop of the head of this block of wood?"

A sliver of fury flashed across the exquisite face of the young girl. Having fought all out against Xia Hou earlier, Mu Chen's condition was naturally not good. The previous head on collision with the Wooden Divine Guard should have caused even more injuries for him. This caused her to feel her heart ache slightly, while also causing killing intent to gush out from within.

As her voice rang out, astonishing sword cries erupted out from her Luo Shen Sword while glowing lines seemed to extend all over the body of the sword. In the next instant, an incomparable feeling of sharpness radiated out quietly, causing even the surrounding space to tremble slightly.

Sensing the sharp and fierce sword intent radiating out, Zhen Qing's expression changed slightly, before giving a cold snort. Indeed, that Divine Sword's formidable. If Luo Li had passed her Spiritual Energy Tribulation then, she might truly be able to be a threat towards the Wooden Divine Guard. However, it's a pity that wasn't the case...

"You're truly looking to die."

With a sneer, Zhen Qing changed his hand seal, only for the Wooden Divine Guard to shoot out yet again, displaying its terrifying attack once more.

However, this time, as Zhen Qing was moving the Wooden Divine Guard, Mu Chen was able to clearly see that the tree leaf rune on its forehead had sparkled once again.

With a chilling expression on her beautiful face, Luo Li started to undo the seal on the Luo Shen Sword in an attempt to destroy this Wooden Divine Guard.

"Wait." said Mu Chen as he extended his hand to grab onto her. Although Luo Li's move was extremely powerful, it would lead to a gargantuan consumption of her strength upon displaying it. In this current situation, if they were to expend great effort to destroy this Wooden Divine Guard, that would allow for Zhen Qing and his group to have any easier time dealing with their exhausted selves. If that happens, the situation then would be even more dire.

"You just need to help reduce the impact of the Wooden Divine Guard's attack. Leave the rest to me." said Mu Chen said in a soft voice.

Hearing that, Luo Li shot a doubtful look at Mu Chen, clearly not to sure what the latter was planning on doing. However, due to her trust in him, after a slight moment of hesitation, she nodded her head and replied, "Be careful. If you're injured again, I'll immediately take action."

Her voice sounded resolute and decisive. Clearly, there wasn't too much leeway for discussion.

Seeing that, Mu Chen laughed out. Being unable to stop himself, he extended his hand to touch the exquisite face of the young girl before him while saying with a smile. "I know. My Luo Li's the Queen Luo of the Spiritual Road. Overbearing as ever..."

Seeing that Mu Chen still had the heart to tease her in such a situation, Luo Li could not help but to shoot an unhappy glare at him. Yet, her glare

appeared as soft and gentle as the streams flowing in spring.

"You two still have the heart to flirt now, huh!" with a sinister smile, Zhen Qing changed his hand seal, sending the gigantic figure of the Wooden Divine Guard to cast its shadow over Mu Chen and Luo Li as it shot towards them. While that happened, frightening energies swept out from it like a storm.

Bang! Bang!

As a storm whipped up within the giant hall, akin to a god of destruction, the Wooden Divine Guard wreaked havoc everywhere it went. Compared to it, Mu Chen and Luo Li appeared like flies trapped in a corner, displaying various kinds of miraculous movement techniques to continuously evade its attacks. At the same time, attacks erupted out from them, leaving scar after scar on the body of the Wooden Divine Guard.

Tang Mei'er and the rest watched with bated breath at the intense battle taking place within the giant hall, their eyes brimming with worry.

Zhen Qing sneered as he observed the scene before him, not being impatient at all. On the contrary, he appeared exceedingly calm and leisurely. Regardless of what move Mu Chen and Luo Li employed, they were humans and would become tired and exhausted. Comparatively, the Wooden Divine Guard wouldn't, and would be able to complete his orders perfectly, which was to completely destroy and kill Mu Chen and Luo Li...

Furthermore, Mu Chen and Luo Li clearly weren't able to compete with the Wooden Divine Guard on the consumption of energy. Once they've completely depleted their Spiritual Energies, he would be able to easily get rid of them with a single finger of his.

Now, he only had the treat this as a game, with the ending being grasped in his hands.

Boom!

All of a sudden, the giant fist came enveloping over Mu Chen. However, before it could come into contact with him, a beautiful figure appeared right before him. Rays of Sword Aura currents gushed out, completely

defending against the terrifying fist winds.

At the instant when Luo Li had defended against the incoming attack, Mu Chen's figure had abruptly shot out. As a dragon shade surfaced beneath his feet, it started to coil up. As it extended out, it appeared to pierce through space, with Mu Chen's figure rushing straight towards the head of the Wooden Divine Guard akin to a spectre.

"Bang!"

However, at the instant when Mu Chen's figure had shot out, it seemed as though the Wooden Divine Guard had also sensed it. Instantly open its giant mouth open akin to giving a roar, a frightening Spiritual Energy shockwave exploded out from within like a beam, instantly shrouding over Mu Chen.

Humm!

As the beam struck Mu Chen's body, a shiver shook through him as black rays of light blossomed out from his body. In the next instant, a gigantic black pagoda appeared in a flash, protecting his body within it.

Ding!

A metallic sound rang out within the giant hall akin to a bell.

As the black glowing pagoda dissipated away, Mu Chen's figure appeared right before the forehead of the Wooden Divine Guard. With a clench of his hand, a piece of black paper surfaced on his palm, while mysterious energies started to flow out from it.

Bang!

Seemingly discovering some kind of threat towards itself, the Wooden Divine Guard immediately ignored the attacks coming from Luo Li. Like the peak of a mountain, its giant fist howled out, bringing along frightening power as it exploded the air apart, causing even the surrounding space to wrap and distort slightly.

As the shadow of the fist came enveloping over, Mu Chen show not the slightest bit of wanting to retreat. On the contrary, under the shock cries

of Tang Mei'er and the rest, he continued with his rush.

"You're looking to die!"

Zhen Qing sneered malevolently.

Boom!

Finally, the giant fist smashed heavily on Mu Chen's body. As the frightening energy shockwave blossomed out, the latter's body shot out like a cannonball. Finally, striking against a giant pillar, it caused giant fissures to appear on its surface.

Nevertheless, at the instant when the Wooden Divine Guard had struck Mu Chen, his palm had lightly patted on the rune sparkling with light on its forehead.

Chapter 487: Lotus of the Luo God Sword

Bang!

Mu Chen was sent hurtling like a giant stone by the fist of the Divine Wood Guard. Heavily impacting the ground, the ground caved and collapsed, sending fissures extending in all directions. He created a hundred-plus metre long gorge in the ground, before finally being able to miserably stabilize himself.

Puff.

Blood spurted out from Mu Chen's mouth as his face turned paled. He had suffered quite a thorough blow from that punch. If not for him cultivating the Lightning God's Physique, he might not be able to keep his little life.

Luo Li's beautiful face changed due to the scene before her. With a shift of her body, she appeared beside Mu Chen. Noticing the injuries that he had suffered, which weren't light, she said in haste, "Are you alright? Why didn't you evade?!"

Although the Divine Wood Guard's attack was powerful, if Mu Chen wanted to evade, such an attack would clearly not be able to successfully land on him.

"Tsk, tsk. Looks like's your conditions getting worse and worse," said Zhen Qing in a mocking tone as he grinned towards the injured Mu Chen.

Wiping away the bloodstains at the corner of his mouth, Mu Chen raised his head, sending back a smile towards Zhen Qing. The smile he sent back also contained the presence of ridicule. With a laugh, he said, "Didn't I explain to you the meaning of losing oneself in joy? Now, would you please try to activate this Divine Wood Guard once more?"

Hearing those words, Zhen Qing's face instantly sunk as he rapidly changed his hand seal. However, his expression completely sunk down in the next moment, since he found out that he was unexpectedly unable to have any result in his activation of the Divine Wood Guard. It stood there,

right in the middle of the giant hall, not having the slightest bit of response to his control.

"Bastard! What have you done to my Divine Wood Guard?!" roared Zhen Qing fiercely as his eyelids rapidly twitched.

Giving an indifferent laugh, Mu Chen replied, "Nothing much. I've simply just sealed the symbol you've used the control the Divine Wood Guard, that's all."

Hearing those words from Mu Chen, Zhen Qing hastily turned his gaze towards the Divine Wood Guard. Indeed, black rays of light had surfaced on the tree leaf rune present on the forehead of the Divine Wood Guard. As those black rays of light weaved and intertwined with each other, they appeared to have formed some kind of seal that was actually able to completely seal up the tree leaf rune. As such, it had also severed the control Zhen Qing had over the Divine Wood Guard.

At this moment, Zhen Qing's expression turned exceedingly ugly. He never imagined in his wildest dreams that Mu Chen's sight would be that astute and sharp, being able to spot and identify the tree leaf rune he was using to control the Divine Wood Guard. Furthermore, this fellow actually knew how to create a seal. Zhen Qing was able to sense that the sealing energies used by Mu Chen were exceedingly strange and mysterious, being able to completely sever his seal from the Divine Wood Guard and even his connection to his rune.

As of now, this Divine Wood Guard seemed to have completely no relationship with him.

His greatest trump card had actually been dealt with in such an obscure and unclear fashion!

Zhen Qing was so mad, he started to shake and shiver, while anger and fury rose from his heart. From the looks of it, he appeared to be unable to wait to tear Mu Chen into shreds.

Observing this scene, while being trapped in the vines, Tang Mei'er, Zhou Yuan, Xu Huang and the rest breathed a huge sigh of relief. The greatest card Zhen Qing and his group could rely on was that Divine

Wood Guard. As of now, with it being dealt with by Mu Chen, the combat strength of Zhen Qing and his group had now drastically decreased.

At this moment, Luo Li finally understood why Mu Chen would risk so much to take a head-on blow by the Divine Wood Guard and not evade it. Nevertheless, she still shot an unhappy glare towards Mu Chen while saying, "You always know how to mess around."

With a smile, Mu Chen extended his hand and grabbed onto Luo Li's tender and white hands, his face still appeared slightly pale. True, he had suffered quite the serious injury from the great battle with Xia Hou earlier, along with the intense fight with the Divine Wood Guard. Therefore, his current state was clearly rather bad, something he felt slightly helpless about. Although he had quite a few other cards up his sleeves, his cultivation was only at the realm of Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase. Regardless of him possessing a combat prowess that far exceeded the outer appearance of his strength, as this Great Spiritual Academy Tournament continued on, the opponents they would encounter would become increasingly powerful. Furthermore, as of now, they had already been placed within the Top 16 on the ranking list. Upon leaving this remnant, their location would be exposed. At that time, they would encounter quite a few people wanting to contest them for the points they held.

When that happened, there would be more intense fights than the ones they had just experienced.

Therefore, with his cultivation realm of Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase, it had clearly started to become increasingly difficult for him. After all, he couldn't just expend all of his energy like now every single time he bumped into an expert of Spiritual Energy Disaster. If that happened, it would be sooner or later that such an opportunity would be grasped by those opponents covetously eyeing them.

"Looks like I have to make a breakthrough."

Mu Chem muttered, tightly clenching his fists. Not only Xu Huang, Zhao Qingshan and Mu Fengyang needed to make a breakthrough, even he

needed to increase his strength. If not, would them saying that they would enter the final match be just an empty dream?

Luo Li lightly grasped Mu Chen's hand, before raising her lovable face, At this moment, however, raising her lovable head, a chill surfaced in her eyes as she looked towards the furious Zhen Qing, before saying in a soft voice, "There's no need for you to participate in the upcoming fight. I'll deal with them."

Hearing her words, Mu Chen immediately made a slight gasp. Although they had already dealt with the Divine Wood Guard, their opponents were of a greater number than them. Furthermore, Zhen Qing himself wasn't someone easy to deal with, being no weaker than Xia Hou. Added with his group members, many of which had passed their Human Body Disaster, their line-up wasn't weak. Yet, Luo Li wanted to deal with all of them by herself. "Its best that we do it together, Don't you know that it'll hurt me to see you get the slightest bit of injury?" replied Mu Chen with a bitter laugh.

"I just love you too dearly," replied Luo Li with a grin, a faint pinkish blush appearing on her exquisite and procelainsque face. Clearly, with her gentle and quiet demeanor, it was still extremely rare for her to say such words to Mu Chen.

"Who's the one always causing trouble? This is your punishment."

Extending her hand, Luo Li gently rubbed Mu Chen's face. With a faint smile, she gave a lovely blink of her bright and clear eyes, before saying, "Be obedient. I'll protect you."

Faced against the current Luo Li, who had suddenly radiated with an aura of regality, Mu Chen couldn't help turning his nose. Feeling a wee bit of weakness, he could only shrug in helplessness while replying, " Be careful."

Gently nodding, Luo Li replied with a faint smile. "Relax. I'll be very quick."

Hearing her words, Mu Chen gave a grin. At this moment, although Luo Li haD yet to become the Queen of the Luo God Clan, she seemed to have

already started to reveal an aura of regality. It was merely that she didn't quite like to show herself in the limelight while she was beside him. However, in this current situation, where Mu Chen has gotten injured time-after-time, it seemed that the future Queen of the Luo God Clan had gotten somewhat angry, causing her to no longer conceal herself anymore.

Standing up, Luo Li grasped her Luo God Sword. At this moment, her exquisite face, which had just shown a smile towards Mu Chen, was now covered with frost as she shot a chilling gaze towards Zhen Qing.

"Haha. What's the matter? Do you want to deal with all of us by yourself?" In his moment of rage, Zhen Qing coldly snorted as he looked towards Luo Li.

Choosing not to reply, Luo Li continued grasping her Luo God Sword as she slowly raised it up.

Humm. Humm.

The Luo God Sword vibrated and hummed, while astonishingly fierce Sword Intent radiated from it. This Sword Intent that radiated from it appeared as if it wanted to pierce through the heavens and the earth.

Sensing this Sword Intent, Zhen Qing's expression turned slightly cold as he turned his gaze around. Looking towards the remaining four members of the group from the Saint Spiritual Academy, he spoke out in a deep voice. "Take action with us and defeat her. That way, you guys can also take your revenge. At that time, we'll split the points and the treasures of this place equally with you guys. How's that?"

Although Xia Hou was not seriously injured with his life or death unknown, the remaining four members of the Saint Spiritual Academy group we're still quite powerful. At this moment, being able to pull them over to his side would be beneficial to deal with Luo Li.

Hearing Zhen Qing's words, the eyes of the four instantly sparkled, before clenching their teeth. Although they were extremely shocked by the performance of Mu Chen, at this very moment, the latter's condition was extremely poor. As long as they could collaborate and deal with Luo Li, they could take whatever revenge they wanted.

Whoosh!

With a shift of their bodies, the four immediately appeared behind Luo Li, forming an encirclement with Zhen Qing's group. In the next instant, boundless Spiritual Energies gushed from them, creating an extremely powerful Spiritual Energy pressure on her.

"Hmph. Even if you have the aid of your Divine Artifact, I don't believe that you'll be able to defeat that many by yourself!"

Zhen Qing sneered. They had a total of nine people on their side, with at least half having passed their Human Body Disaster. Added with him, who had passed his Spiritual Energy Disaster, how would Luo Li be able to defeat all of them by herself?

Shooting an indifferent look back at him, Luo Li still did not give any reply. On the contrary, she started to slowly close her eyes. As this happened, bloodline patterns started to seep out from the hand in which she held the Luo God Sword. As those bloodlines flowed down onto her Luo God Sword, they formed a blood-red sword rune.

Bang!

Suddenly, a frightening wave of Sword Aura erupted from the Luo God Sword. As it did so, it gave off a feeling as if a frightening beast was starting to slowly wake up from it's seal.

"Take action!"

Sensing the Sword Aura radiating out, Zhen Qing's face contorted as he decisively roared.

Bang!

As his roar rang out, the nine people took action seemingly at the same time. Attacks filled with boundless Spiritual Energies swept out, hiding the skies and covering the earth as they enveloped over Luo Li.

With her eyes still tightly shut, a shiver shook through the hand grasping onto the Luo God Sword. In the next instant, frightening Sword Aura swept out, enveloping around her body akin to a hurricane. Upon

coming into contact with the Sword Aura hurricane, those incoming attacks were instantly shattered into nihility with overbearing force.

As the blood-red sword rune on her Luo God Sword grew increasingly radiant, a sliver of paleness appeared on the exquisite face of Luo Li.

Humm! Humm!

A low and rapid hum rang out from the Luo God Sword. Suddenly, in the next instant, Luo Li's eyes sprung open. With a wave of her hand, the Sword Aura shot out. Akin to a dragon leaving its den, it left radiant sword scars in the space around its path.

As the rays of sword scars intertwined with each other, Sword Aura instantly burst forth from them. As rays of brilliance sparkled out, a gigantic Sword Lotus, approximately a hundred metres wide, rapidly took form before Luo Li.

This Sword Lotus appeared exceedingly beautiful. Yet, under its beauty, it contained energies that seemed to be able to destroy anything in its path.

The Luo God Sword shook, before the Sword Lotus rose into the air. In the next instant, dazzling rays of brilliance radiated throughout every corner of the giant hall.

As the rays of brilliance radiated out, Luo Li's sweet-sounding voice rang indifferently around akin to a quiet spring gushing from the mountain top.

"The bright and clear heart of the Sword, Lotus of the Luo God Sword!"

Chapter 488: Take Away

Humm Humm!

The radiant Sword Lotus rose from Luo Li's front before hovering in the air, its penetrating rays of brilliance lighting every single corner of the giant hall.

However, those rays of brilliance didn't give people a feeling of warmth. On the contrary, it caused thick feelings of chilling intent to fill the bodies of everyone. At this moment, everyone could sense an extremely frightening and fierce Sword Intent present within those rays of brilliance, appearing as they were able to shatter the skies and rend the earth.

Observing this spectacle unfolding before him, Mu Chen's expression also turned slightly cold. Even could feel his body turning cold in the presence of the Sword Intent present within the Sword Lotus.

At this moment, the faces of Zhen Qing and his groups appeared exceedingly solemn, with their gazes appearing to be overwhelmed with shock. That's because they could feel a thick flavor of death from the beautiful Sword Lotus hovering above them.

Without any plan to give them any chance to warm up, Luo Li had immediately unleashed her true killing move upon taking action!

Faced against their contorted expressions, Luo Li's beautiful face still appeared ice cold as she extended her slender finger out to give a light tap in the space before her.

Humm!

The Sword Lotus trembled once again, before started to slowly unfurl its petals. In the next instant, Sword Aura that blotted the skies swept out, only for ten Sword Lotus petals to abruptly shoot out explosively. Appearing exceedingly beautiful, irresistible sharpness brimmed under their beauty.

Swish Swish!

As the lotus petals shot through space, faint scars appeared as the

surrounding space was sliced apart by them.

Dark and bottomless sword fissures were slashed on the ground below by the Sword Aura gushing out.

Akin to ten divine swords streaking out, the ten beautiful Sword Lotus petals rushed straight towards Zhen Qing and the other nine guys.

Seeing the incoming Sword Lotus Petals, the eyes of Zhen Qing and the nine guys instantly contracted. Before the attacks had arrived before them, their skin had already started to feeling piercing pain. It was hard to imagine exactly how frightening the Sword Intent contained with those petals was.

"Use all your strength!" roared Zhen Qing.

Bang!

With an explosive roar, boundless Spiritual Energy gushed out from his body like a tidal wave, with the other nine summoning forth all of their Spiritual Energies in fear, not hesitating one single bit to execute their strongest and most powerful moves. At this moment, if they were to hold back any single bit, they would undoubtedly be killed. That Sword Lotus was too frightening!

"Wooden Divine Spear!"

"Fist of the Holy Light!"

Fierce roars rang out in succession as surging Spiritual Energies rushed forth, followed by astonishingly mighty attacks.

With a solemn expression on his face, boundless Spiritual Energy swept out abruptly as he sent a pat out. As rays of brilliance sparkled out, it transformed into what seemed like a deep greenish pine like giant hand. Glowing patterns covered its entirety, with this Spiritual Energy surging around it like a sea, giving people an extremely intense feeling of pressure. Clearly, he had also used his genuine killing move too.

"Heavenly Pine Divine Palm!"

Bang!

Under everyone's attentive gaze, mighty attacks swept out, smashing head on against the incoming lotus petals in an instant.

Faced against those incoming attacks, Luo Li's clear and beautiful eyes still appeared cool and calm, with merely a sliver of a chilling glow surfacing within them. In the next instant, extending her slender finger out, she gave a gentle tap out, with space before her appearing to split apart.

Swish Swish!

As the attacks from both sides collided, contrary to people's expectations, no astonishing eruptions took place. Although it appeared weak and frail, the beautiful lotus petals appeared akin to the edges of a divine sword, being indescribably sharp. As the petals shot by, the boundless Spiritual Energy attacks hurtling towards them were instantly sliced apart!

Their attacks were simply unable to provide even the slightest obstruction against the Sword Lotus petals.

At this moment, the members of the two groups were completely overwhelmed with shock, while indescribable fear gushed out from their hearts. Never did they expected that this killing move from Luo Li would actually be that strong to the point that their full strength was still unable to allow for them to put up one bit of resistance.

Whoosh!

While they were overwhelmed with shock, the lotus petals had already shot through space, nearing their bodies with a whoosh.

As chilling air enveloped over them, their faces were blanketed with a deathly pale shade as they hastily attempted to escape. However, it was evidently too late, as the flower petals had shot over at lightning speeds, bringing along with its sword like incisive sharpness.

Instantly, blood spurted out in every direction.

Nine figures instantly turned stiff as blood gushed out from their arms. Nine arms shot towards the sky, their severed locations appearing as

smooth as glass.

Ahhh!

Shrill shrieks of misery rang out as the nine figures landed down, crying out from the pain of their severed limbs, while their powerful Spiritual Energies rapidly dropped and declined. Blood continued to flow out from their severed stumps. Clearly, the fierce Sword Intent had penetrated through their bodies. Regardless of how they activated their Spiritual Energies, they were unable to get rid of it.

Hearing those miserable shrieks, not a single sign of waver was present on Luo Li's face. Looking before her, she noticed that the Sword Lotus Petal present there did not achieve her desired effect, as it was being temporarily obstructed by Zhen Qing's attack. All in all, Zhen Qing had passed through his Spiritual Energy Disaster. Therefore, he was indeed much stronger than the other nine people.

Nevertheless, although Zhen Qing was able to temporarily obstruct one Sword Lotus petal, he had clearly expended all of his strength doing so. At this moment, there were even droplets of sweat flowing out of his forehead. The frightening Sword Intent present in the lotus had pierced his body to the point of causing his Spiritual Energy to show signs of instability.

"Damn it!"

Zhen Qing growled between his clenched teeth. As those miserable shrieks entered his ears, a shiver shook through his heart and mind. Never did he imagine that Luo Li's attack would actually be that terrifying. Such an attack might even be no inferior than the attack Mu Chen used to strike down Xia Hou. Merely, Mu Chen's attack was a focused single target attack, whist Luo Li's attack was able to deal with multiple opponents.

"Indeed, you're worthy of being one that had passed his Spiritual Energy Disaster."

Said Luo Li in an indifferent tone as she shot a look at Zhen Qing below with her beautiful eyes. In the next moment, the Luo God Sword grasped in her hand shook.

Humm Humm!

Sword cries rang out, before the Sword Lotus petals that had disabled those nine people shot back towards her. In the next instant, they shot back out at lightning speeds, shooting straight at Xia Hou in an encirclement formation.

Such a spectacle instantly caused Zhen Qing's soul to leave his body in fright. Just blocking a single petal from the Sword Lotus was already that demanding to him. Now, with there were nine more incoming! Although the energies within those nine incoming petals had been substantially consumed due to their attacks on the nine people, it was more than sufficient to slice him to death!

"Bastard!"

Clenching his teeth, Zhen Qing smashed his palm fiercely on the ground, sending blackish green Spiritual Energy to sweep out, before unexpectedly pouring into the giant hall.

Bang!

At this instant, the surrounding giant pillars started to shake and squirm, before vines hid the skies and covered the earth as they shot out from within. As they did so, they formed layer after layer around Zhen Qing's body like a protective shield.

Bang! Bang!

Shooting out ferociously, the Sword Lotus Petals smashed into the layers of vines, sending them collapsing apart while shooting wooden splinters in all directions.

"Since I'm unable to get them, you guys will to! I'll never leave the treasures here for you!" roared Zhen Qing with a contorted expression displayed on his face. From the looks of it, he had completely lost all of his methods to deal with Luo Li's powerful attack. Therefore, the treasures present in this remnant would never end up in his hands.

Bang!

A malevolent shade flashed within Zhen Qing's eyes. With a fierce change of his hand seal, numerous blackish green rays of brilliance shot out from him, shoot straight towards the towering giant pillars within the giant hall.

Humm.

All of a sudden, ancient tree like symbols appeared on the surface of the giant pillars. Appearing exceeding radiant, those tree like symbols seemed to be alive, as incomparably berserk Spiritual Energy fluctuations swept out from them. In the next instant, fissures started to appear on their surface, before rapidly extending out.

Bang!

The tree like symbols grew increasingly radiantly. In the next instant, those giant pillars that were propping up the giant hall finally exploded completely apart.

Frightening Spiritual Energy shockwaves wreaked havoc within the giant hall akin to a hurricane. At this moment, the vines that had trapped Tang Mei'er, Zhou Yuan and the rest were smashed into bits. However, upon them extricating themselves, all of them were sent spewing out mouthfuls of blood as their bodies were swept up by the berserk hurricane present.

As this went on, the giant hall appeared to have entered a state of collapse as the surrounding space warped and distorted, As spatial fissures were torn open by the shockwaves radiating out, they proceeded to devour the bodies of Tang Mei'er and the rest.

It seemed like Zhen Qing had activated the self destruct function of this giant hall.

"Haha! All of you are about to banished from here! Remember this, this matter isn't over! Next time, I'll repay this debt back with your blood!" growled Zhen Qing malevolently. The situation when seemed to be fully in his control had turned out into this due to the interference of Mu Chen and Luo Li. How could he not be angry and furious?

With a fierce laugh, he waved his sleeve, sending vines shooting out. As

they wrapped around his four other teammates, his figure shot backwards, retreating into a spatial fissure. As for Xia Hou and his group, Zhen Qing clearly didn't have any mood to take any care about this them.

Being slightly shocked by the unexpected change of events that had happened before his eyes, Mu Chen shot forwards, moving by Luo Li's side. At this moment, Xu Huang, Zhao Qingshan and Mu Fengyang had extricated themselves from the hurricane, rushing over as soon as they did.

"What should we do? It seems like this place is about to collapse." asked Xu Huang in an urgent manner.

Hearing that, wrinkles formed on Mu Chen's forehead as he turned his gaze towards the Wooden Divine Guard within the giant hall that had been sealed by him. Clearly, that Wooden Divine Guard was the true treasure of this giant hall.

Having spent quite a bit of effort in here, he absolutely would not come off this empty-handedly!

"Bring it away!"

Mu Chen made a decisive verdict as he roared out in reply. Shooting forwards, he appeared before the Wooden Divine Guard. Grabbing onto it, he attempted to keep it into his storage bracelet, but discovered he was unable to succeed.

"Dammit!"

Mu Chen cursed in response. Looking towards the rapidly expanding spatial fissures around him, he gave a stomp, immediately activating his Lightning God's Physique. In the next instant, he grabbed hold of the Wooden Divine Guard's giant arm. From the looks of it, it appeared as though he wanted to take it away!

Creak.

The weight of this Wooden Divine Guard rivaled a mountain peak. Even with him activating his Lightning God's Physique, Mu Chen was viciously pressed down by its weigh, causing beads of sweat to surface on his

forehead.

Swish!

Seeing this, Luo Li, Xu Huang and the rest rapidly shot over. Extending their hands to grab hold onto the Wooden Divine Guard, they revolved their Spiritual Energy and assisted Mu Chen in hoisting the gigantic Wooden Divine Guard up.

"Let's go! Be careful!"

As the five of them held onto the Wooden Divine Guard, Mu Chen sent a grin towards the other four before taking the lead to head towards a spatial fissure.

Whoosh!

The five rushed along with the Wooden Divine Guard in tow. Eyeing the berserk Spiritual Energy fluctuations wreaking havoc in the giant hall, they rushed into a spatial fissure, rapidly disappearing from everyone's sight.

Bang! Bang!

As Mu Chen and his group disappeared within a spatial fissure, the giant hall finally reached its limits, completely collapsing apart. As the Spiritual Energy hurricane wreaked havoc in all directions, the giant hall completely disappeared into thin air...

Chapter 489: Spoils of War

This was the stretch of a desolated mountain range, showing few signs of human habitation, with everywhere giving off a flavor of the wilderness.

Crackle!

Suddenly, at this moment, the space above this desolated mountain range started to wrap and distort, before transforming into a spatial fissure. As fluctuations rippled from it, numerous figures were being miserably thrown out from within, with one gigantic figure descending like a meteor to the ground, smashing a mountain peak apart as it landed.

Stabilising himself in the air, a shiver shook through Mu Chen as Spiritual Energy rapidly burst forth from within, while he started vigilantly looking around his surroundings.Only upon discovering no presence of danger did he take a breath of relief.

In his surroundings, Luo Li and the other three from his group had also stabilised their bodies while looking at the foreign stretch of land around them. Clearly, this wasn't the place which they had took to enter the remnant they were in before.

"It seems that we've been tossed to somewhere unfamiliar by that spatial fissure," said Xu Huang as he looked towards Mu Chen.

Nodding his head in agreement, Mu Chen retrieved his Academy Plaque to take a look. After confirming their location, he gave a smile and replied, "It's alright. We're still on the same piece of the shattered continent."

"Let's take a look at our spoils of battle."

Shooting down, he descended before the Divine Wood Guard sitting within the rumble of the collapsed mountain peak. At this moment, it quietly sat at the top of the mountain, its withering wooden body sparkling with a faint luster. Faintly, one could discern a heart-palpitating feeling of power radiating from within. This Divine Wood Guard still possessed extremely strong energies within it.

"If we're able to activate this Divine Wood Guard, only experts who have

passed their Spiritual Energy Disaster would be able to defend against it." A slightly solemn expression appeared on Luo Li's beautiful face as she looked towards the Divine Wood Guard. If not for Mu Chen unleashing his special move to seal it, even if she collaborated with him, they might have had to pay a rather high price just to deal with it via normal attacks.

"Spiritual Energy Disaster..." Hearing that, Xu Huang, Zhao Qingshan and Mu Fengyang all quietly smacked their lips. Even within the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, where crouching tigers and hidden dragons existed, people who possessed such strength would be an extreme rarity.

Mu Chen's gaze had similarly turned slightly scorching hot. If he was truly able to control this Divine Wood Guard, it would absolutely become a huge assistance for them.

"However, this Divine Wood Guard seems to only be able to be control using that special rune. With that rune already having been refined by Zhen Qing, it wouldn't be easy for us to gain control of it," said Luo Li while slightly knitting her eyebrows.

"Since that rune has been refined by him, it naturally means that it can also be refined by us," said Mu Chen with a smile. "However, the treasure of that remnant's not only limited to this Divine Wood Guard."

Hearing that, Luo Li and the rest nodded their heads in agreement. When they had set they eyes on the Divine Wood Guard for the first time, it was still wearing mysterious wooden armor that was sparkling with glowing patterns. However, it had vanished upon being controlled by Zhen Qing. Furthermore, it also seemed that the Divine Wood Guard was holding onto a wooden plaque in its hand.

With a shift, Mu Chen appeared right before the forehead of the Divine Wood Guard. Looking towards the tree leaf rune present there, he momentarily pondered, before making a sudden grab towards the rune.

Humm! Humm!

Seemingly sensing's Mu Chen's action, Spiritual Energy fluctuations immediately erupted from the rune, appearing to prevent Mu Chen from

nearing it. However, its actions were clearly futile. With Zhen Qing not being here, and not being able to control the Divine Wood Guard to launch a counterattack, Mu Chen's fingers smashed through each and every Spiritual Energy ripple coming from it. Grabbing onto the tree leaf rune, he pulled it straight out from the forehead of the Divine Wood Guard.

As the tree leaf rune radiating with an ancient aura appeared within Mu Chen's hand, he sunk into deep thought as he stared towards it. He could faintly discern a Spiritual Energy brand present within the core of this rune. The Spiritual Energy fluctuations coming from it appeared to be Zhen Qing's.

This was the brand that Zhen Qing had left within the rune. By precisely relying on this, he was able to control the Divine Wood Guard.

Upon sensing this Spiritual Energy brand, Mu Chen gave a faint smile. With a tap of his finger, a jet-black flame appeared on his finger tip, before drilling right into the tree leaf rune.

Crackle!

Crackling sounds instantly erupted from the tree leaf rune. The construct of the rune's interior was exceedingly complicated. Nevertheless, being a Spiritual Array Master, Mu Chen's ability for the detailed control of his power far exceeded that of any ordinary people. Therefore, as the black flame shot into the rune, it didn't damage any of the complicated construction present within the rune. Heading straight towards the Spiritual Energy brand within, the black flame started to burn it up, bit by bit.

Wanting to remove the brand Zhen Qing had left behind wasn't an easy task to accomplish. Even with Mu Chen's ability, carefully burning it away bit-by-bit took him approximately half an hour before he was able to completely dispel Zhen Qing's Spiritual Energy brand.

After dispelling Zhen Qing's Spiritual Energy brand, the jet-black flame rapidly condensed together to form a Spiritual Energy brand, sticking right where the previous brand was.

This brand was condensed from the Nine Nether Flame. If this rune was snatched away by other people in the future, once they try to wipe this brand away, this clump of Nine Nether Flame would explode and completely destroy the rune.

Clearly, Mu Chen's move was much more brilliant than Zhen Qing's execution.

Having branded the rune, Mu Chen played around with it in his hand. After being controlled by him, the rune started to radiate with faint rays of brilliance. In its entirety, this brilliance appeared slightly dim. Furthermore, he was also able to sense that there seemed to be some damage present within this tree leaf rune.

"It was damaged by me, huh."

Mu Chen muttered to himself. When Zhen Qing had snatched this tree leaf rune, it was attacked by Mu Chen himself. Clearly, the damage was dealt then. Due to that, this slightly damaged rune wasn't able to perfectly control the Divine Wood Guard. If not, sealing the Divine Wood Guard wouldn't be that easy as he had did before.

Feeling regretful, Mu Chen shook his head. From the looks of it, the only idea he could think of was to attempt to see if he could repair this rune. Furthermore, he had also discovered that this rune couldn't be used forever. Every single time this rune was activated, it seemed as if some of the energies within it would get consumed. When all of those energies were drained dry, this rune should completely lose its use.

At that time, Mu Chen would not be able to control this Divine Wood Guard anymore.

Mu Chen gave a helpless smile. From the looks of it, even though he had obtained this Divine Wood Guard, he wouldn't be able to use it brazenly without any fear.

After refining the rune, some changes once again appeared on the Divine Wood Guard before him. At this moment, rays of brilliance sparkled on its withering wooden body as a greenish-tinged wooden armor appeared. Exceedingly complicated glowing patterns appeared on the

surface of the wooden armor as exceedingly powerful fluctuations could be faintly discerned as they started to radiate.

Clearly, this greenish wooden armor was a Peerless Rank Spiritual Artifact that possessed exceedingly tyrannical defensive capabilities.

Grasping her Luo God Sword, Luo Li sent a wave of Sword Aura shooting out that was thrust towards the wooden armor. However, this time, the incomparably fierce Sword Aura was only able to leave a faint scar on its surface. Furthermore, not long after its appearance, rays of brilliance blossomed from the greenish wooden armor, before the scar started to slowly get repaired.

Seeing this, astonishment and amazement appeared in the eyes of Mu Chen, Xu Huang and the rest. This greenish wooden armor actually possessed an auto-recovery capability...

"Truly worthy of a Peerless Rank Spiritual Artifact." Xu Huan and the other two sighed in admiration. If they were able to possess such a formidable defensive Spiritual Item, even people who had passed their Human Body Disaster would not be able to harm them.

"If Zhen Qing was able to summon this greenish wooden armor when he was in control of the Divine Wood Guard, things wouldn't have been as easy as before," said Luo Li in shock. She was all too clear about the sharpness of her Luo God Sword. Although she still wasn't able to truly activate her Luo God Sword, the defensive capability of this greenish wooden armor was truly exceedingly tyrannical.

Hearing that, Mu Chen nodded his head. From the looks of it, due to him having damaged the rune that controlled the Divine Wood Guard, Zhen Qing was unable to rely on it to unleash the greatest and strongest might of the Divine Wood Guard. In fact, he wasn't even able to summon this greenish wooden armor out.

With a flick of his finger, the rune in his hand shot out once again towards the forehead of the Divine Wood Guard. As the rune slowly sunk in, a mysterious feeling of connection gushed into Mu Chen's mind. At this moment, it appeared as if he was able to control the Divine Wood

Guard with a single thought.

Staring at the greenish wooden armor present on the body of the Divine Wood Guard, a grin broke out from Mu Chen. With a thought, the greenish wooden armor transformed into a ray of light as it left the Divine Wood Guard, before finally landing on Mu Chen's palm.

Since the rune was already damaged, even if he could control the Divine Wood Guard, there was no way for him to allow the Divine Wood Guard to use the armor to increase its combat prowess. Since that was the case, why not take it off, right?

"Let Luo Li have this greenish wooden armor. With her Luo God Sword, her offensive capability is above me, and it just so happend that she lacks a defensive Spiritual Item. Now, with her defense on par with her offense, it would provide the greatest rise in combat capability for our group," explained Mu Chen as he looked towards Xu Huang and the other two. This wasn't him being biased towards her. However, this greenish wooden armor was a defense Spiritual Artifact that reached the level of Peerless Rank, and indeed, Luo Li was the most suitable one to use it. As for himself, with his fleshly body being that tyrannical, and possessing astonishing defensive capabilities, this greenish wooden armor would only serve as a decorative ornament.

Hearing his explanation, Xu Huang and the other two smiled and nodded their heads, with all of them having no opinion towards that decision. That's because they were extremely clear that as of now, Mu Chen and Luo Li possessed the strongest combat capabilities within their group. As long as nothing happened to the two of them, their group would be safe.

Blinking as she opened her eyes wide open, Luo Li looked over to see Mu Chen handing the greenish armor over to her. With a soul-stirringly gentle smile, she didn't reject his offer, and extended her hand to accept it. As of now, she really needed a Spiritual Item with powerful defensive capabilities. Only with it would she be able to focus her attention on displaying the astonishingly powerful offensive capabilities of the Luo God Sword.

After handing the greenish wooden armor to Luo Li, Mu Chen's gaze turned towards the other item held in the hand of the Divine Wood Guard.

That was a greenish wooden plaque approximately a foot long, with exceedingly complicated inscriptions covering its surface. At this moment, mysterious and abstruse fluctuations could be faintly discerned as they radiated from it.

Staring at the greenish wooden plaque, a peculiar sensation started to appear within his heart. Somehow, he felt that between the Divine Wood Guard, the greenish wooden armor and this greenish wooden plaque, it seemed like the latter was the most important treasure of the trio...

Chapter 490: Harvest

The greenish wood plaque quietly hovered in the gigantic palm of the Divine Wood Guard. Giving off an ancient feeling, abstruse inscriptions covered its surface, sparkling with faint rays of brilliance, causing it to appear somewhat mysterious.

Mu Chen focused his gaze closer towards the greenish wood plaque. In the next instant, he slowly extended his palm to grab ahold of it.

Humm!

However, just as it was about to be grabbed by Mu Chen, dazzling greenish rays of brilliance erupted from the greenish wood plaque. As the rays of brilliance radiated out, soft grass started to grow from the barren ground in their surroundings. In the next instant, powerful energies started to radiate from the wooden plaque, preventing Mu Chen's hand from coming close to it.

Seeing this, wrinkles started to appear on Mu Chen's forehead, as he could sense the powerful obstruction posed by the energies coming from the wooden plaque. Even with him summoning forth all of the Spiritual Energy within his body, he was unexpectedly still unable to break through the layers of greenish halos around the wooden plaque.

"Hmph!"

As both parties continued the stalemate for a while, a cold snort rang out of Mu Chen's mouth, before, suddenly, black rays of lightning light surfaced from his body. He had immediately activated his Lightning God's Physique, causing black rays of lightning light to encase his palm, which he sent fiercely patting down once again.

Crackle!

As the lightning light made contact with the greenish rays of brilliance, the latter instantly shook violently. Appearing as if it had met with its nemesis, it retreated back. Due to the process of cultivating his Lightning God's Physique, Mu Chen was tempered countless times by the Divine

Black Lightning. This had lead to the light of the Divine Black Lightning to surface from his body every time he activated his Lightning God's Physique. From the looks of it, the energies present on the surface of the wooden plaque appeared to be exceedingly pure and powerful. However, this energy just so happened to be restrained by the Divine Black Lightning.

As layer after layer of the greenish glowing halos were dissipated by the lightning light, Mu Chen's palm broke through the remaining layers of energies around the greenish wood plaque, before quickly grasping onto it within his palm.

Humm!Humm!

At the instant when it landed in his hands, a ray of green light suddenly shot from it, shooting right towards Mu Chen's forehead at lightning speed.

Naturally, Mu Chen had sensed this ray of green light. However, he was able to sense no attacking intent from this ray of green light, which resulted in him not obstructing its path.

As the ray of green light struck against Mu Chen's forehead, it rapidly merged within. At the same time, ancient messages suddenly erupted from within his mind, appearing akin to ancient drawings. From them, Mu Chen could make out a stretch of ancient palaces. Those palaces were even more gigantic than the one present in the remnant they were just in. Furthermore, all of them were constructed from the same kind of special wood, which appeared to be weak and frail, but in reality was incomparably tough and resilient.

This was a stretch of a rather ancient gigantic remnant.

Within the interior of this remnant, even the sky appeared emerald green, with giant trees towering thousands and thousands of metres high into the skies, breaking through the layers of clouds. All of them were radiating with verdant vitality, with vast and boundless Spiritual Energies undulating within this stretch of the world, forming layers of emerald-greenish clouds within the skies.

As picture after picture quickly flashed within Mu Chen's mind, he was able to sense how gigantic and extensive this remnant was, something that caused shock and astonishment to grow within him. An influence capable to leaving behind such an extensive and gigantic remnant definitely had to be an Overlord-level existence that ruled over a stretch of the world in ancient times.

This was the genuine and entirety of the ancient remnant.

There definitely had to be the existence of the ancient inheritance there!

Comparatively, the remnant they were in just earlier simply paled in comparison.

While Mu Chen was still reeling in shock, the pictures continued to flash by, now presently, a mountain peak was surrounded by clouds. Countless rays of beautiful brilliance radiated from it. If one was to take a closer look, one would discover that there were various kinds of heaven and earth treasures growing within each clump of brilliance. These heavenly treasures absorbed the Spiritual Aura from the world and radiated with incomparably pure Spiritual Energy fluctuations. Taking a cursory sweep with his gaze, Mu Chen discovered that there were quite a few rather precious heavenly treasures present there. These items were more than sufficient to cause the eyes of countless people to turn red.

This seemed to be a treasure mountain!

Turning his gaze towards the highest position of the mountain peak, Mu Chen discovered dazzling rays of brilliance radiating from there, appearing akin to the scorching sun. Raising his gaze, his vision grew increasing clear as he discovered a stretch of reddish-yellow approximately a thousand square metres in diameter present there, with no other heavenly treasures present there.

However, at the very top of the mountain peak was a plant gently swaying in the breeze.

This plant was very much shaped like a Lingzhi. Yet compared to an ordinary Lingzhi, which has only one petal, it had nine. Furthermore, its flower petals weren't of the shape of Lingzhi, but approximately a metre

wide scorching and glowing clumps. Those clumps of light radiated with endless brightness, illuminating the heaven and earth akin to a group of nine scorching suns.

As the frightening rays of brilliance continued to radiate out, even more frightening Spiritual Energy fluctuations rippled from its centre, ones that would cause people's hearts to palpitate.

At this moment, Mu Chen's gaze was firmly locked-on this unique Lingzhi, while unconcealable ecstasy and joy gushed from his heart.

"That's actually the Nine Suns Divine Lingzhi..."

A low mutter rang out within his heart with ecstacy and happiness surging from within. Who would have guessed that he would actually be able to find one of the three unique treasures required to cultivate the "Great Solar Undying Body", the Nine Suns Divine Lingzhi.

Three unique treasures were required for the cultivation of the "Great Solar Undying Body" with all three of them being exceedingly rare and precious items. Even Sovereign realm existences would be moved by such treasures. Mu Chen wasn't even able to obtain the slightest bit of information about those three treasures from the Spiritual Treasures Hall of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, something which made him feel somewhat impatient. Although his cultivation was only at the realm of Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase, he still needed to plan for the future. If not, on the day he would be promoted to the Sovereign Realm, due to the lack of those treasures, he would be unable to cultivate such a powerful Sovereign Celestial Body. How anxious would that make him?

However, Mu Chen also knew that those three treasures were too precious. Wanting to collect all three of them would not be an easy task to accomplish. Therefore, it had made him that emotional upon discovering a Nine Suns Divine Lingzhi.

As the huge volumes of ancient information rushed into his mind, they gradually disappeared away. At this moment, his faintly closed eyes started to open, though the remnants of joy was still present on his handsome face.

"How is it?" asked Luo Li with a slight presence of doubt in her voice. It was extremely rare for her to see such a joyous expression stay on Mu Chen's face.

"This time, we've really picked up a treasure," said Mu Chen after taking a deep breath. As a smile surfaced on his face, he waved the wooden plaque in his hands, before continuing to speak. "I believe that Zhen Qing's true goal might not be that Divine Wood Guard, but this..."

Hearing that, Xu Huang and the rest proceeded to look over in doubt.

"The ancient remnant that we've entered earlier should be a remnant of an ancient sect by the name of the "Divine Wood Palace" from the Ancient Antiquity. However, that isn't the true remnant of the Divine Wood Palace. In fact, it could only be said to be an extremely small portion of it. As for the genuine and entirety of the remnants of the Divine Wood Palace, they were right inside this wooden plaque."

Hearing that, Xu Huang and the rest could not help opening their eyes wide. The remnant they were just inside of was actually only an extremely small part of the remnants left behind from the Divine Wood Palace?

Just a small portion of it was already that captivatingly huge. Exactly how many astonishing treasures were present in the genuine location of the remnants of the Divine Wood Palace?

"Where is the location of the Divine Wood Palace's Remnants?" Xu Huang could not help asking.

"It will lead the way for us," replied Mu Chen with a faint smile. Wrinkling his forehead, he proceeded to say, "However, it seems that the sub-remnant that we were in just now isn't on the same piece of the shattered continent as the main location. Therefore, we can't eliminate the possibility that there are other groups that have similarly obtained the same information as us. Furthermore, those groups would naturally be the elite amongst the elite. At that time, if we're to rush into the remnants of the Divine Woodem Palace, the opponents we will have to face might be even stronger than Xia Hou or Zhen Qing."

Hearing that, the faces of Xu Huang, Zhao Qingshan and Mu Fengyang

instantly turned solemn. This time, their encounter with Xia Hou, Zhen Qing and their groups was already dangerous and life-threatening for them. If the groups they would meet with were even stronger, their contributions to their group's overall combat prowess would lead to impending disaster. After all, the strongest people in their group were only Mu Chen and Luo Li. As for the three of them, they were indistinctly already holding the group back.

"For the next period of time, we will temporarily not have any other plans. With here being quite desolate, its suitable for us to train and cultivate. Therefore..." Looking towards Xu Huang and the other two, Mu Chen said in a slow manner, "We'll close up here awhile. We have to increase our strength."

The ones that needed to increase their strength weren't only Xu Huang and the other two. In fact, Mu Chen himself had to make another breakthrough. As of now, the pace of Great Spiritual Academy Tournament was gradually ramping up. As they proceeded on, there would be no lack of various kinds of formidable groups that would emerge. Coupled with the various ancient remnants present in this shattered continent, no one could be sure of which group that would obtain such a large opportunity. Such a chance would allow for them to drastically increase their strength and show disdain to the masses.

Faced with such a scenario, with his cultivation only at the realm of Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase, it was not sufficient for him to feel absolutely confident for the challenges he would face in the future. Although he had obtained the final victory in his fight with Xia Hou, it had consumed much of his strength and energy in doing so. All in all, it was due to him only being at the realm of Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase, which did not allow for him to perfectly control his abilities in a confrontation with an expert that had passed his Spiritual Energy Disaster.

Therefore, the current him needed to start making his breakthrough and pass through the first of the three Sovereign Disasters, the Human Body Disaster!

Hearing that, Xu Huang and the other two fiercely nodded their heads in

agreement. The fight Mu Chen and Luo Li had with Xia Hou, Zhen Qing and their groups had caused them to feel guilty. With the "Divine Immortal Fruit" that they had obtained in the remnant and the protection it offered, they would be able to attempt their Human Body Disaster. If they were to succeed, it would result in a great increase of the combat capability of their group. At the very least, Mu Chen and Luo Li wouldn't need to divert too much attention to protect them anymore.

Looking at the solemn expressions on the faces of the trio, Mu Chen gave a laugh. Tightly grasping the ancient wooden plaque in his hand, his gaze turned peculiar, because when he had obtained all that information, he had also obtained something that made his heart move.

That was a Divine Art that was carved within the wooden plaque.

Lesser Divine Art, Heavenly Divine Wood Wheel.

Chapter 491: Passing the Human Body Disaster

Five spacious caves were carved out from the side of a gigantic mountain cliff, with Mu Chen taking residence and sitting quietly in one of them. This was the place where they would close up and break through for this period of time.

Hu.

Sitting on the stretch of ice-cold mountainous rock, a clump of white air was expelled from his mouth. Looking towards his right, he could faintly discern Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiating from the heavy mountainous cliffside. Clearly, Luo Li, Xu Huang and the other two had already entered their respective mountain caves and had proceeded to prepare for their breakthroughs.

"Human Body Disaster..."

Mu Chen tightly clenched his hands as a scorching-hot gaze gushed from his eyes. This was the first of the three Tribulations he would have to face on the path to become a Sovereign. Undoubtedly, this was the most difficult and most life-threatening checkpoint, since only god-knows how many geniuses had come to a halt at this stage, wasting many years of bitter training trying to pass through these three Tribulations, before dying while full of hatred and bitterness.

The three small Disasters of the Sovereign realm was sufficient to cause the face of anyone below the realm of Sovereign to change colour. Even without personally experiencing it, the terror they brought, coupled by their terrifying awe, had been long drilled deep into the hearts of everyone.

Therefore, regardless of how tyrannical Mu Chen's Human Body had become, which was even stronger than some experts who had passed through their Human Body Disaster, he still felt slightly nervous and tense at this stage. He knew that the stronger one's Human Body was, the greater the pain and difficulty one would experience when passing

through one's Human Body Disaster. Naturally, though, the greatest benefit would be the increase in strength and power of one's Human Body.

Like every increase in strength, it was always accompanied by danger.

Taking a deep breath, Mu Chen slowly closed his eyes, entering a cultivation state. With a slight thought, the Spiritual Energy within his body started to rapidly circulate around in a loop within his body, continous without any end.

Generally speaking, as long as one had reached the realm of Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase, anyone would be able to attempt their Human Body Disaster. Of course, it wouldn't automatically appear. It required the control of any individual for it to appear for them. It's said that as long as one had made one's preparation to attempt their Human Body Disaster, one would just need to circulate all of the Spiritual Energies one had in one's body round and round in a loop. As these Spiritual Energies circulated around one's meridians at high speed, the power they generate would gradually seep into one's meridians, flesh and bones.

When one's strength reached a certain level, one's life force would be strengthened to a somewhat full state. When that life force merged with the energies seeping into one's meridians, flesh and bones from the Spiritual Energies revolving at high speeds within one's body, it would transform into some sort of a blood-fire. As this blood-fire forms within one's body, it would spread through the body. As it burns, it would temper one's flesh and blood , causing one's Human Body to become even more tyrannical. However, at the same time, if one wasn't able to endure such tempering, one's flesh and blood would be burnt and roasted alive by the blood-fire. At that time, one's body would be wrecked, something that would result in massive harm to oneself.

This was the origin of the Human Body Disaster. The fire born within one's flesh and blood was simply unavoidable for anyone, with no help being able to be provided externally. The only way was to rely on oneself. Only then would one be able to truly pass through this Tribulation and obtain a quantitative change in one's Human Body from the blood-fire.

Quietly sitting within the cave for three whole days, Mu Chen maintained a high speed circulation state of the Spiritual Energy within his body. At this moment, if one was able to take a look into his body, one would be able to discover that a faint red colour had appeared on all of the meridians within his body. Clearly, they appeared to be boiling up, while an invisible energy started to radiate from those boiling meridians, slowly seeping into Mu Chen's flesh and blood.

Slivers of intense pain came gushing from every place within Mu Chen's body. Yet, not a single inch of movement was made by him. That's because he knew that this was the first indication of the blood-fire gradually lighting up within his body. As of now, compared to the pain when his Human Body Disaster truly began, such minor pain wasn't even worth mentioning. If he wasn't even able to endure this much, it's best for him to not attempt and try his hand on his Human Body Disaster.

At this moment, his skin had already turned boiling-red hot, with the entire interior of the mountain cave becoming exceedingly dry due to all of the moisture present being evaporated away by the high temperatures radiating from Mu Chen.

As Mu Chen's skin grew increasingly scarlet-red, suddenly, numerous beads of blood started to seep from his pores. Dripping from his boiling hot skin, they sizzled as tiny plumes of white clouds rose into the air.

TSSSSSH!

Those sounds grew increasingly frequent as bead after bead of blood continued to seep from Mu Chen's body, before being evaporated away, sending out puffs of white smoke, which had seemingly covered Mu Chen's body within.

Within the large cloud of white smoke, Mu Chen slightly cracked open his eyes as he furiously clenched his teeth. With a clench of his hand, an emerald-green jade-like fruit appeared. Emitting endless fragrance into the air, rays of brilliance sparkled from its surface, while pure energies started to radiate from it.

That was the Divine Immortal Fruit that Mu Chen had obtain from the

earlier remnant. This Spiritual Fruit had a beneficial effect for those that were attempting to pass through their Human Body Disaster.

Mu Chen rapidly stuffed the Divine Immortal Fruit into his mouth. Instead of biting or chewing, he just held it within his mouth.

Holding onto the Divine Immortal Fruit, Mu Chen's hand seal abruptly changed. In the next instant, the Spiritual Energy circulating within his body started to increase in speed once more.

Shh! Shh!

The temperature of the boiling hot meridians rose once again as slivers of mysterious energies started to rapidly seep into his flesh and blood.

Roar!

Suddenly, an intense shiver shook through Mu Chen's body as blood seeped from his mouth from the force of him biting down on his teeth. At this moment, dense clumps of blood-red flames surfaced within his flesh and blood. Akin to the start of a prairie fire, it spread like wildfire. Before a minute could pass, it had already covered every single inch within Mu Chen's body.

As the blood-red flames burned and raged, they adhered to his flesh and blood. As exceedingly high temperatures started to brew, they appeared to want to melt all of his flesh and blood. What intense pain would that result for Mu Chen?

Uncontrollable shivers racked Mu Chen's entire body with beads of sweat instantly pouring out. However, upon their appearance, they would instantly evaporate into clumps of steam by his boiling-hot skin

Clenching his teeth as hard as he could, veins popped out across his entire body, wriggling and squirming akin to earthworms, giving off an exceedingly malevolent look. At this moment, his handsome face had also appeared exceedingly warped and contorted.

Within his body, as long as it was a place where flesh and blood were present, it would be intruded by the blood-fire. Adhering to his flesh and blood, they crackled as they burned, causing the flesh and blood to brim

with energy and vitality as they wriggled and squirmed akin to having a life of their own. Furthermore, they appeared to start to shrink in size in the presence of the burning blood-fire.

This was a Tribulation that almost appeared like a trial of torture.

Clenching his teeth with all his might, blood trickled down the corners of his mouth. Despite the agony and intense pain radiating from his body, which were more than sufficient to cause people to go mad, Mu Chen did not devour the Divine Immortal Fruit still present within his mouth, as he knew that this was just the start of his Human Body Disaster. For him, it would take quite a while for the completion of the tempering of his flesh and blood.

Therefore, he would be in such a boiled up state for a period of time. In the off-chance that he relaxed and caused his consciousness to go blurry, his body might be turned into ashes by the blood-fire burning within him, something that would cause all the years of bitter training to go down the drain.

"Come! Let me experience exactly how frightening this Human Body Disaster truly is!"

A low roar rang out from his heart, resounding within his scarlet-red body.

Roar! Roar!

Appearing to have heard the roar of fury ringing within Mu Chen's heart, the blood-fire burning within his body started to grow increasingly rampant and ferocious. As the flames of the blood-fire grew more intense, mysterious energies continued to pour out and temper his flesh and blood. As it brought about intense pain and agony, his flesh and blood started to become more and more tempered.

Within the mountain cave, white mist surrounded Mu Chen as intense shivers racked through his body, with beads of blood continuing to seep from his pores. As this continued on, a thick layer of dried-up blood started to gradually form on the surface of his skin, before completely covering him up.

His hands sent punch after punch rumbling towards the ground, relying on such a method to vent the intense pain and agony he felt within his body.

Roar!

Low bestial roars of pain howled from his clenched throat, resounding and reverberating within the sealed mountain cave.

This was the Human Body Disaster! The first of the three Tribulations towards the Sovereign realm that caused terror and torment to countless Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase experts!

This pain and agony would continue all the way till all of Mu Chen's flesh and blood had completed their tempering and underwent a qualitative change under the roasting of the blood-fire.

While Mu Chen was suffering so much pain and agony from his Human Body Disaster, a faint and delicate fragrance had filled the interior of a spacious mountain cave adjacent to his. A young girl was quietly sitting there with her legs crossed, her appearance caused the entire spacious mountain cave to appear much more alluring.

At this moment, Luo Li swept her beautiful eyes to look towards the right side of her mountain cave. Despite the extremely thick layer of rock separating the two mountain caves, she was still able to sense the faint vibrations, as well as the low roars of pain ringing from there. This indicated to her that Mu Chen had already started his attempt to pass through his Human Body Disaster.

Having passed through hers, she knew exactly how much pain and suffering one would need to pass through this Tribulation. What's more, with his already tyrannical Human Body, the Human Body Disaster that Mu Chen would need to experience far exceeded that of many other people. In fact, this was exactly the reason why loads of people did not attempt to cultivate any Body Refinement Divine Art before passing through their Human Body Disasters. With such a powerful Human Body, although one would be able to summon forth even more strength, it would also bring about even greater pain and agony during the passing of one's

Human Body Disaster.

In the off-chance one becomes unable to endure any longer, all of one's bitter training would completely go down the drain.

Since that was the case, why not focus on cultivating one's Spiritual Energy, and wait till the successful passing of one's Human Body Disaster to cultivate a Body Refinement Divine Art, right? In such a way, it would reduce the danger and pain by a great deal. Nevertheless, Mu Chen didn't make such a choice. He had chosen an extremely difficult path, as he knew he needed greater power and strength...

There were many things that he wanted to protect.

Gently biting her lip, Luo Li's beautiful eyes slightly drooped down, with her not daring to take too many looks at the right wall of the cave. If she took too many looks, she felt that she could see the youth present there, suffering in pain and agony, something that was even more painful for her than passing her own Human Body Disaster...

"Mu Chen, I'll not let you suffer alone."

The young girl softly muttered. In the next instant, she furiously clenched her hands as they rapidly formed hand seals before her body. Immediately, vast and boundless Spiritual Energy unexpectedly started to gradually show signs of flaring up within her body.

This was the signal of the impending start of a Spiritual Energy Disaster!

Luo Li's actually attempting her Spiritual Energy Disaster!

Chapter 492: Suffering

The interior of the gigantic mountain cave appeared exceedingly hot and dry as a large cloud of white mist enveloped within. Within, one could faintly discern a figure sitting quietly on the ground, and was also the source of the high temperatures within the mountain cave. The ground within appeared to be in a cracked state as fissures extended across the mountain cave from the figure.

Boom!

Low and deep sounds rang from within the white mist as Mu Chen's fists heavily hammered the ground, instantly causing cracks to rapidly extend further. Both of his arms were completely encased in a layer of dark-red blood clots. This colour, which could only form after multiple layers of dried-up blood, would cause a ghastly sight to the hearts of anyone that could see it.

Although Mu Chen was in a sitting position, his body was crunched up, with labored and painful pants continuously ringing out from his throat.

The blood-fire within his body had already continued burning close to ten whole days.

Within these ten days, he was seemingly always enduring such frightening pain and agony, with the flesh and blood within his body continuously being burnt and roasted by the blood-fire as they underwent their tempering. Although Mu Chen was clearly able to sense the blood-fire burning within his body, with the energy contained within his flesh and blood starting to become increasingly tempered, the pain and agony felt by him had also continued to rise and increase.

Generally speaking, the duration of a Human Body Disaster would be about seven to eight days. However, Mu Chen had already been in such a state for ten whole days. Furthermore, there still wasn't any sign of this coming to a stop.

However, all of this was well within the expectations of Mu Chen. With how tyrannical his fleshly body was, the Human Body Disaster that

resulted from it would naturally be even more frightening. Now, what he needed to do was to clench his teeth and continue to endure. He believed that if he could endure, there would be a gigantic progression of his strength as a result of this.

Crackle!

Blood continued to seep from the surface of the dried-up blood before quickly evaporating away, transforming into patches of dark-red dried-up blood that merged with the layer already present there.

Opening his eyes with much difficulty, his vision clearly appeared somewhat blurry at this moment. Using his strength to swing his head from side-to-side, yet another shiver shook through his body as it seemed that the blood-fire burning within his body had grown stronger yet again. This burning sensation appeared to pierce through his flesh and blood, encasing his entire body, wanting to turn him into ashes.

"How can my journey stop here?!"

As the intense pain and agony continued to spread across his body, Mu Chen tightly clenched his fists as roars resounded within his heart.

Over the past few years, he had experienced god-knows how many life-or-death situations. Youths that were able to possess such a resilient and tenacious personality wouldn't be there for no reason, but was something that was built and tempered from being in life-or-death situations time-after-time again. He had promised his father to personally bring his mother back. He had also promised the young girl that would always be in his heart, no matter where he went, that he would become an unrivaled expert, to block the wind and rain and protect her.

Therefore, how could something as small as a Human Body Disaster obstruct him from his path of progress!

With a forceful bite, Mu Chen finally devoured the Divine Immortal Fruit he had held in his mouth since the start. Instantly, a cool, refreshing and pure energy started to radiate from within his body. This refreshing feeling caused Mu Chen to have the implosion of moaning out in happiness.

At this moment, his blurry consciousness started to become clear once again.

Roar! Roar!

As the refreshing energies of the Divine Immortal Fruit started to spread within his body, the blood-fire grew increasingly vigorous, appearing to be attempting to completely burn away the incoming energies.

"Do you think such a puny Human Body Disaster could stop me?!"

Mu Chen roared within his heart. Clenching his teeth tightly, he continued to endure the intense pain and agony omnipresent across his body. He definitely needed to win this war!

The scorching-hot temperatures within the mountain cave rapidly increased as suppressed beastial-like roars continued to ring within the steam-like white mist around Mu Chen's body...

As of now, he had no path of retreat! The only thing he could do was to persist all the way till the end!

Time continued to elapse under Mu Chen's perseverance. In a blink of an eye, five more days had passed...

Three figures hovered in the skies outside of the mountain caves, which were Xu Huang, Zhao Qingshan and Mu Fengyang.

"Mu Chen and Luo Li seem to show no signs of coming out..."

Looking towards the two tightly shut mountain caves before them, Xu Huang said helplessly while shrugging his shoulders.

Their Human Body Disasters had taken merely five days before ending. Furthermore, due to the Divine Immortal Fruit, it could be said that they had passed through it without any life-threatening danger. Therefore, not only had they obtained a great increase in their strength, they were now considered to be genuine experts at the realm of Human Body Disaster.

"Mu Chen should be just like us and undergoing his Human Body Disaster, right? Why's he taking so long...?" asked Zhao Qingshan in doubt.

"There's only one possibility," replied Xu Huang as he shook his head. "Before even passing his Human Body Disaster, the strength of Mu Chen's fleshly body is even stronger than experts who have passed their Human Body Disaster. Therefore, his Human Body Disaster would be even more frightening than ours, while taking greater time to complete... Thus, don't compare what he's going through now to what we have done."

As he gave his reply, one could hear somewhat of a sob in his voice. All of them had saw Mu Chen start at the beginning as an unassuming Freshman, taking one step at a time all the way to become the number one person of their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Although all of them were also working hard to improve and progress, from the looks of it now, they were still tossed far behind and unable to reach up towards where he was.

In this universe, there's always bound to be some people who would possess monstrous talents. Wanting to chase after them would be something that was futile.

"What about Luo Li? She's also still closed up..."

Said Mu Fengyang as he looked towards the other tightly shut mountain cave, the place where Luo Li had been isolated in. Till now, not a single movement of wanting to come out could be sensed from within.

Hearing that, Xu Huang and Zhao Qingshan exchanged glances with each other, noticing the doubt present in each other's eyes. Luo Li had long already passed her Human Body Disaster. As of now, with her being isolated for so long, could it be that she was also making a breakthrough? That meant to say... that as of now, she was attempting her Spiritual Energy Disaster?

Thinking about this point, shock and astonishment filled the hearts of Xu Huang and the other two, while causing some excitement to gush from within. If Luo Li's able to successfully pass her Spiritual Energy Disaster, that would be a great increase in the combat strength of their group. At that time, they would truly possess the strength to rival those elite groups present in this Great Spiritual Academy Tournament.

"Since we can't interfere with their breakthroughs, it's best that we quietly wait for them here. Both Mu Chen and Luo Li are extraordinary. I think that they will succeed in the end," said Xu Huang.

Hearing that, both Zhao Qingshan and Mu Fengyang nodded their heads. Both of them knew that regardless of Mu Chen's Human Body Disaster or Luo Li's Spiritual Energy Disaster, they would absolutely be much harder than what ordinary people have to experience. However, all of them had absolute confidence in the two. There's no need to talk about Mu Chen, as the dazzling accomplishments he had achieved over the last two years in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was more than sufficient for them to sigh in admiration.

As for Luo Li, she didn't participate in the contest for the so-called "glory within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy", which resulted in her only being ranked 10th on the Heavenly Rankings at the start of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament. However, the strength that she possessed was something that no one among them would dare to underestimate, including Mu Chen.

That's because ever since her entry into the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy till now, there was yet to be someone that had seen Luo Li take action without the slightest bit of restraint.

No one was clear exactly how tyrannical this absolutely beautiful young girl was. Even Mu Chen wasn't able to confirm this point. Merely, while they were in the academy, that young girl had habitually kept quiet and stood by Mu Chen's side, faintly smiling as she observed him obtain dazzling accomplishments one after the other.

Therefore, everyone would unknowingly forget that this young girl, whose beauty was unrivaled in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, would in fact possess the strength that rivaled her astonishing appearance.

...

While Xu Huang and the other two quietly waited for Mu Chen and Luo Li to leave their closed training, they did not know that in a place far away

from them, beams of light were quietly shooting across the skies. The direction those beams of light were shooting towards was precisely the location where Mu Chen and his group were...

There were quite a few of those beams of light. Furthermore, shooting across the horizon, tyrannical Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiated from them. Clearly, not a single one of these people were weaklings.

Rays of brilliance sparkled on the top of a mountain peak, before five elegant and beautiful figures surfaced from within, they slight swayed as they appeared, painting an exceedingly alluring sight.

At the helm of these five figures was a familiar face. Beautiful, noble, prideful, akin to a phoenix soaring across the nine heavens, enjoying the countless gazes of admiration shooting from the earth below.

She was Wen Qingxuan.

"Captain, it seems that there's quite a few people that have the same goal as us," said two exceedingly cute and lovable young girls standing behind Wen Qingxuan as they looked towards the beams of light shooting across the horizon, their sweet voices rang like two black naped orioles.

Hearing their words, Wen Qingxuan gently nodded her head, her slender finger starting to lazily twirl a lock of her long black hair. Slightly tilting her head, she shot a gaze towards the targeted direction with her beautiful eyes, before saying with a sweet smile, "Although the number of points Mu Chen's group have didn't increase for the last half a month, for the time being, they are still within the Top 16. Therefore, their location would naturally be exposed to everyone. What's more... there are even some people that are circulating news about Mu Chen's group having obtained the Divine Palace's invitation of the Divine Wood Palace. It seems that there's a complete ancient inheritance in the Divine Wood Palace. Therefore, there's quite a few groups rushing towards them."

"Captain. The location of Mu Chen's group has not changed since they appeared. Could it be that they don't know that they've long been locked-on and encircled by those groups eyeing towards them?" A frown appeared on a golden-haired young girl with a rather fiery figure standing by Wen

Qingxuan's side as she spoke out.

"Not changing their location for an entire half a month..."

A faint smile appeared on Wen Qingxuan's face as she replied, "They should be cultivating. This is truly interesting. In a situation where their location has been revealed, they actually dared to brazenly close up and cultivate... this Mu Chen truly has quite some courage."

"Captain, do we need to take action to chase those groups away?" asked the identical-looking twins with sweet smiles present on their faces.

"No need."

Waving her hand, an arc curled up from the corner of Wen Qingxuan's mouth as she replied, "We can take advantage of this to see exactly what ability this Blood Calamity of the Spiritual Road has. If he doesn't have any ability, then don't blame me for snatching away the person of his heart..."

Speaking till here, Wen Qingxuan extended her slender fingers towards the far distance, before slowing clenching them into a fist. At this moment, the smile present at the corner of her little mouth was brimming with soul-stirring appeal.

"Luo Li, I've finally found you."

Chapter 493: Attack

Mountain peaks quietly towered over a desolated mountain range as the entire stretch of the world appeared to be in state of silent desolation, with the only sounds present being the gales billowing and wreaking havoc across the entire region.

Xu Huang, Zhao Qingshan and Mu Fengyang quietly sat on one of the mountain peaks present there. From time-to-time, their gazes would look towards the two mountain caves that were still tightly shut, before giving helpless smiles in response. If the time was added up, the period of time which Mu Chen and Luo Li had closed up seemed to have already lasted for close to 20 whole days.

If Mu Chen and Luo Li were truly attempting their Human Body Disaster and Spiritual Energy Disaster respectively, wouldn't that mean that they had been persisting for close to 20 days already?

Just the thought of this point was enough to send shivers crawling over the bodies of the trio. Having experienced the pain and suffering one had to endure when one was breaking through their Human Body Disaster, they knew it felt akin to one's body being burn into ashes, something that would truly cause dread and terror in people's hearts. Their Human Body Disasters had only lasted for five to six days, with them narrowly avoiding defeat in their attempts.

However, as of now, Mu Chen and Luo Li had already persisted for 20 days.

If during all this time, they were under the frightening pain and agony of being burnt alive, exactly how frightening was their endurance and willpower?

Thinking about this, the hearts of Xu Huang and the other two palpitated as they gave a sigh, whilst some unconcealable respect gushed from within them. When ordinary people saw Mu Chen and Luo Li, they would only see their impressive strength. However, who would know exactly how much they would need to pay to obtain such strength? In this

universe, strength didn't fall from the sky.

"Our ranking seems to have dropped to the 14th place..."

Zhao Qingshan took out his Academy Plaque to take a look. After being in isolated cultivation for such a long period of time, with no increase in the points they possessed, other groups had already caught up to them. As of now, they were about to be kicked of the Top 16.

"It's alright if we drop from it," said Xu Huang with a smile as he shook his head. "It's still too early for us to contest for the Top 16. If we stay on the rankings, other people will pay attention to our whereabouts. At that time, the feeling of being stared at all the time wouldn't be good at all."

Hearing that, Mu Fengyang nodded his head in reply. As of now, the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament was just gradually ramping up. There was no need to put too much importance towards the number of points they had. Previously, Mu Chen had also said that points weren't important in this phase of the tournament. What's more important was their strength; after all, without adequate strength, snatching away too many points would only result in serving those points to other people on a silver platter.

"Let's wait for Mu Chen and Luo Li to smoothly come out from their breakthroughs. Then, we can head out to find the true remnant of the Divine Wood Palace. At that time, our group would absolutely not be inferior to any other group!" A scorching-hot gaze shot out from Xu Huang's eyes. Previously, following behind Mu Chen, they had only rushed into a remnant of the Divine Wood Palace's branch, before breaking through their Human Body Disasters. Such a rate of progress could simply be classified as incredible. Just the benefits they had obtained in this branch remnant was already so gigantic. How would the remnant of the genuine Divine Wood Palace be any less extravagant? Maybe, at that time, they might even be able to rush and attempt their Spiritual Energy Disasters.

Furthermore, if they were to succeed in their breakthroughs, their group would finally be able to truly reach their strongest state. At that time, they

would have absolute confidence and challenge any group participating in this Great Spiritual Academy Tournament!

Zhao Qingshan and Mu Fengyang fiercely nodded their heads in agreement, their eyes similarly brimming with the anticipation towards the remnant of the genuine Divine Wood Palace. It's said that presently, there was the existence of a genuine inheritance from the Ancient Antiquity. If they were able to obtain it, it would have an extremely great benefit for their future accomplishments.

Naturally, though, although the Divine Wood Palace was exceedingly enticing, all of them knew that the three of them didn't have the capability to contest for it... It was only due to Mu Chen and Luo Li's lead that they were to able to possess such confidence in pushing forward with this plan. After all, just the remnant of a branch of the Divine Wood Palace had them contending against powerful groups with people the likes of Xia Hou and Zhen Qing. At that time, the groups they would encounter in the remnant of the genuine Divine Wood Palace would naturally be even stronger than the previous two groups.

"Oh?"

As Xu Huang and the other two were having a chat, a shiver suddenly shook through their minds as they raised their heads to look towards the distant horizon. Suddenly, urgent whooshing sounds rang from that locatiob, with numerous tyrannical Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiating from there, too. Clearly, there were quite a few people rushing over from there.

As the trio exchanged glances, the expressions on their faces changed as they abruptly stood up. With a clench of their hands, three long spears radiating with fierce energy fluctuations appeared in a flash as they vigilantly stared towards the direction where the whooshing sounds were coming from. From the looks of the sounds ringing from there, it seemed like all of them were rushing towards their location. Xu Huang and the other two weren't that stupid to believe that those people rushing into such a deserted region were taking a stroll. After all, with them being in the Top 16, their location was clearly broadcasted on all of the Academy

Plaques. Speaking of which, they appeared just like fat succulent sheep. If all of those fellows were rushing towards them...

Dark shadows surfaced within the eyes of Xu Huang and the other two. As of now, Mu Chen and Luo Li were still in their isolation cultivation and could not be disturbed, so they would have to protect those two till they came out.

"Prepare to take action. Even if we have to risk our lives, we cannot let them interfere and disturb Mu Chen and Luo Li," said Xu Huang in a solemn voice, with his gaze turning frosty.

Hearing that, Zhao Qingshan and Mu Fengyang both nodded their heads as their gazes morphed into the likes of fierce wolves.

Whoosh! Whoosh!

Under the vigilant gazes of Xu Huang and the other two, flashes of light sparkled in the distant horizon as beams of light streaked across, quickly heading towards the mountain peak the trio were on. From the looks of it, there were 30 people at the very least, appearing to constitute 6 to 7 groups.

Furthermore, Xu Huang and the other two could sense that everyone present in those groups were fierce and of elite caliber, their gazes we're swift and fierce, while powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuations gushing out of their bodies. At the very least, half of the 30 people had passed their Human Body Disaster.

As the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament ramps up, due to the countless large and small remnants present on this shattered continent, the strength of quite a few groups had clearly risen drastically as a result. Perhaps, at the very beginning, a group possessing a member of Human Body Disaster would already be considered as a pretty good group. However, after a month since the start, things had gradually started to change.

The cultivation realm of Human Body Disaster was no longer sufficient to command respect in people. That's because there were even more people that were relying of the various kinds of benefits they'd gotten in

the Shattered Continent to start to obtain breakthroughs in their cultivation.

Solemn expressions appeared on the faces of Xu Huang and the other two, since the 6 to 7 groups heading towards them gave them immense pressure. From the looks of their movements, those 6 to 7 groups seemed to be working together and not working individually. This caused them to feel slightly overwhelmed with shock, at what time during this Great Spiritual Academy Tournament did such a formation actually appear from?

Other than the groups from their own academies, the groups participating in this Great Spiritual Academy Tournament were largely antagonistic to one another. Wanting to come together to collaborate wasn't an easy thing to accomplish, just like the collaboration between Xia Hou and Zhen Qing. Although they were in an alliance, both of them had their own reserved thoughts and plans, and were utilising each other for their personal benefits and had restrained their strength. This made it hard for the both of them to bring forth their greatest combat capabilities.

However, this mysterious crowd of groups was actually collaborating with a rather high level of perfection. Although they didn't dare to say that the crowd was even more perfect in working together than their own group, the trio were able to see that this was a genuine alliance of groups.

Exactly where did these fellows pop out from? From the looks of it, it seems that none of the groups are from any elite Spiritual Academies.

While Xu Huang and the other two were reeling in shock, the crowd of groups had already appeared in the skies above the mountain peak they were on. Among them, a figure slowly walked out. It was a youth dressed in black robes, with a sinister gaze present on his face. His thin lips looked just like the edges of a knife, causing people to feel his ill-intent with a single look.

Looking towards Xu Huang and the other two standing on the mountain peak, wrinkles appeared on his forehead as he said with an indifferent tone. "Are you the group from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?

Is your Captain, Mu Chen?"

"Who are you? What are you all planning to do?" roared Xu Huang in a deep voice.

"I'm Chen Xi. As for what we're here for..." A mocking smile surfaced at the corner of the black-robed youth's mouth as he replied. "We naturally have a fancy for the points you have... what's more, there's also the Divine Quota from the Divine Wood Palace, which should belong to Zhen Qing."

Suddenly, he turned his gaze to look at the two tightly shut mountain caves. Raising his forehead, he said, "So it turns out that he's in isolated training... making a hasty last-ditch effort. This is truly interesting."

"I'm afraid that you won't be able to snatch the things in our hands!" growled Xu Huang with a sneer. At this moment, he clearly wanted to obtain more time for Mu Chen and Luo Li.

"Even Mu Chen doesn't have the qualifications to say such words to me. As for you three fellows who have just passed through your Human Body Disasters, who do you think you are? The Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's merely like that," said Chen Xi with an indifferent smile. Not being a person that would do a sloppy job, he didn't say too much useless banter. With a casual wave of his hand, he gave his command. "Capture them, before smashing those mountain caves for me."

"Yes!"

Five figures instantly roared in reply behind him, before shooting forward, and immediately rushed straight towards Xu Huang and the other two. These five people had all passed their Human Body Disasters.

"Let's duke it out!"

Fierce expressions appeared on the faces of Xu Huang and the other two as they tightly clenched their long spears. Faced against such a tyrannical formation, they didn't have any intent of retreating. With low roars, the trio rushed forward, heading straight towards the incoming five people. Boundless Spiritual Energy instantly erupted from them, obstructing the five from gaining any ground.

Bang! Bang!

Boundless Spiritual Energy swept out. Although they were in a three-against-five match up, relying on their viciousness, their opponents were unable to gain so much as an inch in their advance.

While a huge battle erupted there, five exquisite figures surfaced on the top of a mountain peak located a distance away. Those five figures merely shot a look towards the direction where the battle was taking place, with no signs of wanting to take any action.

"Captain, the Captain of that Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy group seems to be in isolated cultivation. How will they be able to defend against so many people with just 3 members?" asked one of the two lovable twins in a sweet voice as they scanned the location with their beautiful eyes.

Slightly lifting her head up, Wen Qingxuan showed her slender and snow-white neck, which appeared akin to the grace shown by a swan. With a sweet smile, she replied, "There's no need to care about that, since that's their business. Furthermore, I feel that the renowned Blood Calamity of the Spiritual Road should not be so easily dealt with, even when encountering such trouble. Let's wait here and see, for the time being."

As she gave her reply, Chen Xi was looking indifferently towards Xu Huang and the other two that were giving their all to obstruct the advance of the five people. Sweeping his gaze towards the two tightly shut mountain caves, he gave a flick of his finger towards the space. Instantly, fierce Spiritual Energy transformed into a ray of light, shooting out before fiercely smashing against one of the mountain caves. At the same time, a cold roar resounded akin to a clap of thunder.

"Mu Chen, come out!"

Chapter 494: Out

Bang!

Boundless glowing Spiritual Energy rays smashed against the mountain cave, instantly causing the entire mountain peak to intensely shake. Gigantic fissures immediately extended across the entire mountain peak as giant rocks tumbled down, finally shattering into bits and pieces as they smashed against the ground.

"Bastard!"

Upon seeing this, the faces of Xu Huang and the other two instantly turned cold as their gazes grew malevolent. The long spears in their hands immediately danced about, bringing about intense killing intent as they sent erraric all-out attacks straight towards the five Human Body Disaster experts. Not a single bit of defensive intent was present in their "kamikaze" attacks, causing the faces of the five to change as they hastily retreated back, not daring to risk their lives to contend against the trio.

However, although they didn't dare to risk their lives to contend with the trio, relying on their advantage in numbers, they were finally able to suppress and keep the trio under control. With this, the trio was unable to extricate themselves to protect the mountain cave.

Chen Xi indifferently looked towards the mountain cave that he had attacked. As giant rocks continued to fall down and shatter apart, creating clouds of dust that spread out, the giant rock that sealed the cave was rapidly collapsing apart, before finally splitting into pieces in the end.

Seeing the mountain cave finally being opened, Chen Xi gave another point at the space before him, sending yet another ray of Spiritual Energy sweeping out. Travelling at lightning speed, it smashed straight into the open mountain cave.

Boom!

Rampant Spiritual Energy wreaked havoc within the mountain cave, causing massive sounds to ring out from within. Chen Xi's move was

exceedingly vicious. If there was truly someone that was attempting to breakthrough, the person within would suffer serious injuries in response to such shock. At that time, the person within would fail in their breakthrough, while similarly suffering unimaginably serious injuries from the backlash of this failure as well.

"Go. Toss out all of the people inside for me." said Chen Xi with a faint smile as he waved his hand.

Immediately after saying this, three figures shot out yet again from behind, with the Spiritual Energy fluctuations rippling from them having reached the realm of Human Body Disaster.

The three figures shot towards the interior of the mountain cave at lightning speed, before disappearing within. However, not a single bit of commotion appeared after this.

Seeing this, the face of Chen Xi slightly changed as he watched with a dark look at the jet-black interior of the mountain cave. Unexpectedly, there were no movements detected ever since he had sent the three people in the cave. Furthermore, there wasn't any sign of them coming out. From the looks of it, they had all been dealt with at the instant they had entered the mountain cave.

Such an unforeseen outcome caused Chen Xi to feel slightly shocked; after all, he had yet to feel any Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiating from the mountain cave. Clearly, before they could even take action, those three people had already been dealt with. Wanting to deal with three experts of Human Body Disaster in such a short instant wasn't a task that could be easily accomplished.

"Hmph! Do the people from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy only know how to hide and show their tails?" sneered Chen Xi with a cold and fierce gaze in his eyes.

From the looks of it, his earlier destruction didn't yield much effect as the person cultivating within had successfully broke through long before hand.

Bang! Bang!

As Chen Xi's voice rang out, suddenly, three dark figures flew out from the mountain cave, before tumbling and descending down like thrown balls, forming three giant holes in the ground. As everyone looked over, everyone's faces instantly contorted as all of them saw the three figures lying within, drenched in blood. The trio was the three Human Body Disaster experts that had rushed into the mountain just moments ago. However, at this very moment, no one exactly knew if they were alive or dead.

Looking at the three figures lying in the the holes on the ground, Chen Xi tightly clenched his teeth, his gaze turning cold and dark as he stared towards the jet-black cave before him. Suddenly, rustling sounds rang out as footsteps were heard coming from within.

As the footsteps gradually grew closer, a figure slowly broke through the darkness. Finally, he appeared in the sunlight, appearing in the presence of all of the gazes shooting over from the surroundings.

Upon being able to clearly see the figure, everyone was in shock.

That's because what they saw was a figure covered in thick layers of dried-up blood, causing people to feel shock and astonishment upon him appearing in their sights.

Standing before the mountain cave, not a single shred of emotion was present in the blood-covered figure's eyes as he looked towards Chen Xi and the other groups hovering in the skies. With a slight shiver of his body, the layers of dried-up blood started to crack, before completely splitting apart. As the pieces fell to the ground, Mu Chen appeared once again before everyone.

At this moment, his upper body was completely bare, revealing his ramrod straight body. There were no iron-like lumps of muscles present on his body, with him appearing slightly skinny and frail. However, despite having a body that appeared slightly skinny and frail, one could faintly discern the heart-palpitating feeling of frightening power radiating from him.

In the air, upon seeing Mu Chen, who had successfully come out of his

cultivation, ecstasy immediately erupted from the hearts of Xu Huang and the other two, with them taking a breath of relief, as if a heavy weight was lifted from their shoulders. At the very least, Mu Chen's alright...

Standing under the rays from the sun, the sunlight illuminated Mu Chen's figure, causing his body to sparkle with faint rays of brilliance, appearing as if he was made of jade. As his black hair swayed and gently fluttered in the breeze, his eyes appeared as abstruse as the dark night skies.

"Wa, he's quite handsome."

On the mountain peak in the distance, the eyes of the two lovable and cute twins opened wide and instantly lit up as they noticed the youth standing ramrod-straight under the sunlight.

"He is the Blood Calamity of the Spiritual Road, Mu Chen?" Slight amazement was present in the eyes of Wen Qingxuan as she looked towards the figure standing under the sunlight. From the looks of it, he truly appeared to be quite good-looking. The only thing that wasn't known was how capable he was. His cultivation realm of Human Body Disaster wasn't considered to be all too strong. Clearly, she was able to see through Mu Chen's current realm of cultivation with a single look.

However, regardless of her preliminary view, Wen Qingxuan wasn't stupid. If the Mu Chen before her eyes only possessed strength on the level of Human Body Disaster, he would not be able to walk all the way till this stage. Furthermore, there was the first-hand proof that those three Human Body Disaster experts that rushed into his cave weren't able to put up much of a resistance before being knocked out and tossed out like garbage by him.

"Could it be that there's no one from your spiritual academies that taught you that disturbing other people's training isn't a considerate action?" Raising his head, Mu Chen looked towards the dark-eyed Chen Xi and the others before saying with a faint smile.

Staring back at Mu Chen, Chen Xi sneered before replying, "So you're the Captain of this group, Mu Chen?"

Hearing that, Mu Chen smiled and nodded his head.

"Hand over the Divine Wood Quota of the Divine Wood Palace and I'll let you and your group leave," said Chen Xi in a slow manner as he extended his palm out.

With a smile, Mu Chen shook his head. Looking straight into Chen Xi's eyes, which had turned cold and dark, he replied, "Hand your points over to me and I'll only knock you all out."

"Puff."

Hearing those words, sweet laughing sounds immediately rang out from the pair of cute twin young girls standing on top of a distant mountain peak.

"Stupid death-seeking idiot!" The corner of Chen Xi's mouth twitched as flames of fury gushed from his eyes. Is this Mu Chen a dumb idiot? He had over 15 experts of Human Body Disaster behind him, with he himself being of Spiritual Energy Disaster. As for the rest, all of them were of Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase. With such a lineup, even experts of Spiritual Energy Disaster would turn around and run away in the face of them. However, this Mu Chen had actually dared to recklessly challenge all of them?

"Everyone take action! Grab him and cripple him!" roared Chen Xi sinisterly.

"Yes!"

Hearing that, the experts standing beside him instantly roared in reply, before shooting gazes of ill intent towards Mu Chen. In the next instant, their figures shot out. As boundless Spiritual Energy swept from them, the Spiritual Energy of the world flared up as a dozen rays of earth-shattering Spiritual Energy rushed towards Mu Chen.

However, faced with such astonishing attacks heading his way, Mu Chen still remained standing right outside of the mountain cave, with not the slightest bit of movement detected from him.

Bang! Bang!

The powerful attacks came enveloping over, violently smashing against his body. Instantly, Spiritual Energies wreaked havoc, causing the entire mountain to appear as if it was collapsing.

"Ha! This person's so stupid! He doesn't even try to dodge!" The voices of the twins instantly rang out in shock.

Seeing this, Wen Qingxuan faintly raised her eyes to look towards the place where the Spiritual Energies were wreaking havoc in. However, at this moment, her gaze started to slightly freeze.

"You're looking to die!"

Noticing the cloud of smoke and dust rising and sweeping out, a sinister smile rose from the corner of Chen Xi's mouth. Faced against such a barrage of attacks, even experts of Spiritual Energy Disaster would not dare to meet it head-on. Yet, this Mu Chen was truly stupid to the point of doing so. Could he be that stupid? This is truly amusing.

However, his mocking laughter didn't continue on, because once the cloud of dust had dissipated away, a thin, half-naked figure still quietly stood at the same spot as before.

Seeing this, the smile on Chen Xi's face started to slowly freeze up.

Xu Huang and the other two took a deep breath of relief as they wiped away their sweat-filled foreheads.

Patting away the inexistant dust on his body, Mu Chen lowered his head to take a look, before nodding his head in satisfaction. After passing his Human Body Disaster, his fleshly body was already that tyrannically powerful. In the previous barrage of attacks, he had not summoned forth any Spiritual Energy to defend against them, having completely depended on his physique as defense.

Before he had passed through his Human Body Disaster, he would definitely not be that brazen. However, as of now, he was entirely different from before.

"From the looks of it, you do not approve of my suggestion, huh?" Looking towards Chen Xi, Mu Chen gave a faint smile as he spoke out.

Yet, there was not a slightest trace of warmth present in that smile. "Since that's the case, I've no choice but to take action."

"Take action and deal with him now!"

Chen Xi roared with a dark shadow present in his eyes, while his expression grew much more solemn. So it turned out that the reason why Mu Chen's able to defeat Zhen Qing and his group was due to him possessing some ability. However, with his extraordinary lineup present, once all of them took action, he did not believe that Mu Chen would be able to create any waves at all.

"Humm!"

However, just as his cold roar rang out, astonishing sword cries suddenly erupted from the mountain peak behind Mu Chen. In the next instant, a ray of Sword Aura abruptly rushed towards the clouds. As the Sword Aura swept out, even the mountain peak was sliced into two, as if it was as soft as tofu, with the two sliced halves appearing as smooth as glass.

As the Sword Aura wreaked havoc across the region, a beam of light shot out, before landing by Mu Chen's side. As the brilliance dissipated away, it revealed an absolutely beautiful young girl within.

This young girl held a longsword in her hand, with her long hair shining with a silvery luster, while her glass-like eyes appeared so beautiful it caused people to become intoxicated just by looking at her.

Luo Li had also successfully come out from her isolated cultivation.

At the mountain peak in the distance, soul-stirring splendor surfaced in the eyes of Wen Qingxuan, who had always maintained her languid manner. Looking at the familiar beautiful figure in the distance, an alluring arc slowly curled up at the corner of her mouth.

Luo Li, I finally get to see you again.

Chapter 495: Wen Qingxuan

As Luo Li's slender body appeared right by Mu Chen's side, the Sword Aura that blotted the skies rapidly converged together, before completely entering her body. However, the mountain peak that was sliced into two showed exactly how fierce the previous wave of Sword Aura was.

"Luo Li has also come out!"

Xu Huang and the other two were in joy as they looked towards Luo Li, before finally breathing a sigh of relief as another heavy weight was taken off their shoulders.

Mu Chen's gaze was similarly filled with shock as he looked towards the slender and elegant young girl. Naturally, he was able to sense the faint Spiritual Energy pressure radiating from Luo Li's body. The sensation of this pressure was clearly much more powerful than before.

"You've passed your Spiritual Energy Disaster?" asked Mu Chen in astonishment.

With a sweet smile, Luo Li gently nodded her head.

Seeing her reply, Mu Chen immediately turned speechless, before feeling slightly depressed. It seemed that Luo Li was always present above his head. Although one's Spiritual Energy cultivation didn't represent one's true combat prowess, every time he broke through and assumed that he would be on equal grounds, the latter would similarly break through herself, thereby tossing him behind yet again.

"Looks like it isn't that easy for you to surpass me."

Seeing the slightly depressed Mu Chen, a witty shadow unconsciously flashed within her clear and transparent beautiful eyes. In the next instant, she raised her snow-white chin towards him with slight satisfaction. She, who was always quiet like a lotus would only show an attitude that ordinary young girls would possess in front of Mu Chen.

Rolling his eyes unhappily at her, Mu Chen said, "Don't provoke me. If not, even if you've passed your Spiritual Energy Disaster, I'm still able to

smack your butt."

A deep reddish shade surfaced across Luo Li's face and ears as she heard his words, before a slight shadow of embarrassment surfaced within her eyes as she replied, "Pervert."

If it were other people that said such frivolous words to her, she might have long sent her sword thrusting out. However, faced against Mu Chen, she could only embarrassedly stare towards him, her bearing appearing exceedingly alluring and soul-moving.

"Hmph!"

Seeing the two lovebirds flirting with each other, Chen Xi could not help becoming enraged. The flames of fury burning in his eyes had grown even denser. With a sneer, he roared, "Mu Chen, do you really not plan to hand over the Divine Wood Plaque?"

Panning his head across to sweep his gaze towards Chen Xi, Mu Chen gave a clench of his hand, causing the Divine Wood Plaque to appear within. Waving it around, he replied, "Are you talking about this?"

Spotting the Divine Wood Plaque in Mu Chen's hand, a flash instantly gushed from Chen Xi's eyes. Greedily licking his lips, he said, "Hand it over and I'll not give you any trouble! You are not worthy to have it!"

Hearing that, Mu Chen only gave a smile back in return. Shaking his head, he replied in a soft voice. "Rejected."

"You!"

Flames of fury instantly gushed from Chen Xi's face. Clearly, he had also discovered that Mu Chen was playing with him. In the next instant, he said with a sinister and deceitful tone. "Mu Chen, I'll advise you to not be mistaken about yourself! Although you come from one of the five Great Academies, it is our Academy Alliance that has the say in this Great Spiritual Academy Tournament! If you really do provoke us, I'll guarantee that you won't even have the chance to retire from the tournament!"

"Academy Alliance?" Mu Chen slightly raised his eyebrows as he asked, "What the hell is that...?"

As he said those words, he shook his head as his gaze slowly started to grow cold. "Since you guys don't want to leave by yourselves, then all of you shall stay."

"Take action together and finish all of them!"

Chen Xi was endlessly maddened by Mu Chen's attitude. Does this fellow truly think that he will be able to defeat over 30 of us by himself and his group?

As his roar rang out, his hands abruptly came together to form a seal. In the next instant, powerful Spiritual Energy swept out like a storm, unexpectedly forming a gigantic stone tablet before him. Sparkling with dazzling rays of brilliance, mysterious patterns covered the entirety of its surface. At the same time, unique fluctuations started to radiate from it.

Behind Chen Xi, the dozen experts present there had also fiercely roared in succession, sending boundless Spiritual Energies gushing out. Transforming into beams of light, they shot straight into the stone tablet.

Humm! Humm!

As boundless Spiritual Energy poured into it, the the radiant stone tablet drastically increased in size, instantly growing to a gigantic height of a thousand metres. As it's giant shadow came enveloping over, the entire mountain was covered in it. Instantly, exceedingly overbearing Spiritual Energy fluctuations rippled, causing the entire region to appear even darker and gloomier.

"Let me see what qualifications you have to keep us here!"

"Heaven Suppressing Divine Tablet!"

Chen Xi's face turned slightly pale as he did his utmost to control the stone tablet that had everyone's Spiritual Energy condensed within. Locking his frosty gaze towards Mu Chen and Luo Li, a cold roar rang out from him, before the radiant stone tablet brought along its gigantic shadow as it pressed down towards Mu Chen's group at lightning speed.

Raising her beautiful face, Luo Li looked towards the radiant stone tablet, before saying, "That person does have some ability. He's actually

able condense other people's Spiritual Energies into his own attack. Looks like the Divine Art that he had learnt is slightly mysterious."

As her voice rang out, with the Luo God Sword in her hand, Luo Li gracefully strode forward. With a shiver of her hand, sword light in the form of a silvery river abruptly rushed to the skies from the Luo God Sword. Condensing together, it transformed into what seemed like a gigantic glowing shadow of a sword. Instantly, incomparably fierce Sword Intent radiated out, wreaking havoc across the region, before punching the mountain peak below it full of holes.

"Luo God Shadow Sword."

Luo Li gave a tap with her slender snow-white hand in the space before her, causing the gigantic glowing sword shadow to howl. In the next instant, shooting across the horizon at lightning speed, it appeared right before the radiant stone tablet, smashing against it in a fierce head-on collision.

Bang!

Astonishing Spiritual Energy fluctuations swept out across the skies as the tip of the sword pierced straight into the bottom of the stone tablet. Astonishing fluctuations erupted from the two that were crazily trying to corrode each other apart.

Raising his head to look towards the spectacle in the skies, Mu Chen gave a faint smile, before giving a heavy stomp. Cracks instantly extended from the ground below him as his figure shot into the sky. Quickly, he appeared beneath the sword shadow at lightning speed, before sending a punch rumbling out.

Crackle!

The light of black lightning encased his fist as claps of thunder were faintly heard ringing out. Traces of warping and distortion could even be faintly discerned from the surrounding space. After successfully passing through his Human Body Disaster, the power he could muster had reached a somewhat frightening level.

Bang!

With his black lightning-encased fist, Mu Chen's punch fiercely smashed towards the sword shadow. The frightening power behind his punch instantly gush like a flood, causing the sword shadow give a long cry. Relying on the power gushing into it, the sword shadow pierced straight through the stone tablet with a whoosh.

Bang!

Piercing through the stone tablet, the sword shadow rushed across the horizon, while cracks started to rapidly extend and proliferate across the stone tablet. Finally, it exploded into glowing dots that blotted the skies with a bang.

Puff!

As the stone tablet exploded, the faces of the dozen experts instantly turned white while blood spurted from their mouths. Being the lead, Chen Xi bore the brunt, with the Spiritual Energy within his body exploding apart, sending him shooting back miserably across a few hundred metres while spewing blood out. Instantly, the Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiating from him grew weak. Clearly, he had suffered some really serious injuries.

He stabilised his sorry looking figure as an expression full of shock and terror gushed from his eyes. He was simply unable to believe that their combination attack was actually destroyed by Mu Chen and Luo Li!

The duo of the young boy and girl before his eyes were unexpectedly that strong?

That's why there wasn't the slightest bit of dread present on their faces, even when they were faced against his lineup! They had simply not placed the entire lineup in their eyes!

"Let's go!"

Wiping away the bloodstains at the corners of his mouth, Chen Xi clenched his teeth, immediately making the decisive judgement to flee. The current situation had already progressed to a stage that none of them

could regain control of. From the looks of it, they had truly underestimated the combat strength of Mu Chen's group by far too much. In that group, those three members were insufficient to raise any dread in them. However, Mu Chen and Luo Li, especially that Luo Li, were exceedingly frightening.

According the Chen Xi's estimates, with Mu Chen's and Luo Li's strength, they might be able to rival the various big bosses of their Academy Alliance...

"Mu Chen, you're formidable! However, don't be too satisfied about it! Next time, our Academy Alliance will come knocking on your doors! At that time, I'm afraid that you'll no longer have the chance to struggle anymore!"

An indifferent expression appeared on Mu Chen's face as he observed Chen Xi fleeing away, not taking any action to stop this from happening.

"Why did you let them run away?" Xu Huang and the other two felt slightly confused. If Mu Chen really wanted to take action, he could clearly force Chen Xi and his crowd to stay behind.

Not replying to them, Mu Chen turned his head around while an exceedingly serious expression appeared on his face as he looked towards a mountain peak in the distance.

Panning her head across, Luo Li cast her beautiful eyes similarly towards the same direction, before saying in a soft voice. "That's because there's still some unwelcome guests here.Compared to those fellows before, those fellows aren't considered as anything..."

Upon hearing that, the faces of Xu Huang and the other two instantly changed, before casting their terrified gazes out to size up their surroundings. There's still a stronger group covetly eyeing l us?

Seriously looking into the distance, a roar encased with powerful Spiritual Energy resounded across the region like a clap of thunder. "The few of you have seen enough and should reveal yourselves, right?"

Mu Chen could faintly discern a powerful pressure coming from that

direction. This was the first time he had felt that since he had entered the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament.

Clearly, a truly formidable figure seemed to be staring at them.

Under the attentive gaze of Mu Chen, rays of brilliance suddenly sparkled from the distance. As the rays of brilliance shot over, they appeared in the nearby sky within a few breaths. Immediately, Xu Huang and the others shot their nervous gazes over, before immediately gawking the sight they saw.

As the rays of brilliance dissipated away, five exquisite and alluring figures slowly appeared in the skies.

The five girls all possessed outstanding figures, especially the one standing at the front. The golden battle armor covering her body accentuated her graceful and slender figure, while her slender, snow-white neck appeared akin to the nape of a swan. Her long black hair flowed down her golden battle skirt, with her slender long legs below appearing so dazzling, they caused people to be unable shift their gazes from them.

Xu Huang and the other two slightly gawked as they looked towards this girl, being unable to control their eyes from lighting up. This was the first time they had seen a girl of similar age that was able to rival Luo Li in appearance and temperament.

"Haha. You're truly worthy of the renowned Blood Calamity of the Spiritual Road. This is the first time we've met. I'm Wen Qingxuan."

Dressed in the golden armor, the absolutely gorgeous girl that appeared as beautiful as a goddess of war looked towards Mu Chen, before slightly parting her lips to give a faint smile as she introduced herself.

"Wen Qingxuan?"

As this name rang in their ears, the shock and amazement in the eyes of Xu Huang and the other two instantly disappeared completely. An expression that was overwhelmed with shock crept up their faces. The girl before them was actually the Captain of the group that had towered over the first place on the competition point rankings, Wen Qingxuan?

Chapter 496: Two Beauties

"Wen Qingxuan?"

When this name rang into Mu Chen's ears, even he felt his heart growing slightly colder. Ever since the start of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, her name had been akin to thunder piercing his eyes. That's due to the number one place of the Top 16 rankings of the tournament had been occupied by this group from the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy ever since it started. Even with many other strong groups doing their best to catch up, they were still unable to surpass them.

Wanting to lay claim to the number one place of this Great Spiritual Academy Tournament rankings, where the experts were as numerous as the clouds in the sky, wasn't an easy task to accomplish. This was even especially so when this group was entirely composed of such pretty and exquisite-looking beautiful girls. For them, the difficulty to accomplish such a task would even be intensified.

Therefore, being able to continuously occupy the number one place showed that Wen Qingxuan's group definitely possessed rather frightening strength.

Whoever dared to underestimate and neglect those girls who appeared even more beautiful than flowers might have to pay an exceedingly high price.

Mu Chen focused his gaze on Wen Qingxuan. Although he was shocked in awe of the appearance and temperament of the girl before him, he felt even more of an ambiguous vigilance against her. Not knowing Wen Qingxuan, and with the latter suddenly knocking on their doorsteps, he felt that this wasn't much of a good matter.

The strength of the group currently present before them might be the strongest group they've encountered since the start of the tournament. If they were to truly start a fight, even Mu Chen, who had just broken through, would not dare to guarantee themselves a victory against this group.

"So it's Captain Wen Qingxuan. I've been looking forward to meeting you for a long time."

As those thoughts revolved within his mind, a faint smile appeared on Mu Chen's face as he cupped his hands toward her.

Quietly standing by Mu Chen's side, Luo Li shot a somewhat strange look towards Wen Qingxuan. Although she had seen her before, they couldn't be said to be anymore than aquantancances. Initially, while in the Spiritual Road, Luo Li's mind was only set on dealing with Ji Xuan, which resulted in her not having the heart and mind to form connections.

Looking towards Wen Qingxuan, the latter suddenly panned her head over, causing two similarly beautiful and soul-stirring eyes, yet possessing entire different temperaments, to cross gazes.

These two young girls were both exceedingly outstanding, appearing as if the intelligence of the world had condensed into their bodies. They merely stood there, not saying a single word. Yet, a unique atmosphere started to extend and envelope, causing the people at the side to be unable to interrupt their staredown. Naturally, there was also no one that was willing to break this graceful challenge.

As their beautiful eyes crossed gazes, it appeared as if something scorching-hot seemed to gush from the depths of Wen Qingxuan's eyes, causing Luo Li to become slightly startled. Getting a strange feeling from it, she subsequently panned her gaze away.

Brimming with smiling intent, Wen Qingxuan took light and graceful steps forward, walking towards Mu Chen, as her alluring figure caused other people to be unable to stop following her every move with their eyes. Bringing about a delicate fragrance, she drew closer towards Mu Chen and Luo Li. As she did so, Mu Chen was finally able to clearly see this alluring beauty.

Faced against Wen Qingxuan, even Mu Chen had to sigh in admiration towards her. Just based on her exquisiteness and degree of beauty, Wen Qingxuan was not one bit inferior to Luo Li, merely that her temperament was entirely different from Luo Li. Luo Li was like the lotus resting quietly

within the mountain valley, making the troubles and worries within people's hearts to gradually turn peaceful upon seeing her. Compared to her, Wen Qingxuan had a noble and arrogant air radiating from her, something like a phoenix that was soaring over the clouds would possess. It was extremely hard to find the softness and gentleness ordinary girls would have from her. Accentuating her slender and graceful figure, the tight-fitting golden battle armor on her body gave people a unique feeling of her being a goddess of war.

"Luo Li, we meet again."

Standing before the two, Wen Qingxuan's eyes were currently resting on Luo Li's figure. Extending her slender and jade-like little hand, she said with a smile, "I've yet to thank you for what happened at the end of the Spiritual Road. If not for you obstructing Ji Xuan, I might not have been able to obtain the championship."

With a faint smile, Luo Li shook her head as she extended her hand to give a gentle handshake to Wen Qingxuan. She didn't have a cold and indifferent temperament, merely that she loved to be in a quiet and calm environment. The girl before her, Wen Qingxuan, could be the most outstanding girl of similar age that Luo Li had seen over the past few years. When girls as outstanding as the two met, there would mostly likely be two extremely different outcomes. One would be the rise of some hostility, while the other was them becoming somewhat emotional. This was similar to the so-called "mutual understanding and respect between men."

Therefore, Luo Li did not reject Wen Qingxuan when faced with the latter's friendly action.

"I've some grudge and grievances with Ji Xuan. Since Mu Chen was no longer in the Spiritual Road then, that's why I personally took action. You're very strong, and have relied on yourself to obtain the Spiritual Crown. I didn't give any help to you," replied Luo Li in a soft voice.

"If you had attempted to take the Spiritual Crown, then, I might not have been able to contend against you," replied Wen Qingxuan with a smile as

her beautiful eyes wandered about.

Choosing to reply, Luo Li only gave a smile back in response.

Looking at the two girls from the side, Mu Chen could not help rubbing his nose. For some unknown reason, he could faintly discern himself feeling unnecessary... furthermore, he could feel that the gaze Wen Qingxuan sent towards Luo Li wasn't quite right...

Behind him, Xu Huang and the other two exchanged glances with each other. Under the envelopment of the atmosphere coming from the two girls, They didn't even dare to utter a single word.

"Captain Wen Qingxuan. Could it be that you and your group didn't rush here for us?" said Mu Chen with a soft cough. If it was a male who dared to get so close to Luo Li like that, his face would have already flipped and turned black. However, with the opposite party being such an enchanting girl, the only thing he could do was to endure.

Only at this moment did Wen Qingxuan turn her gaze to look towards Mu Chen. Her pair of noble and arrogant phoenix-like eyes started to size him up, giving off what seemed to be the flavor of an examination. In the next instant, a shade of ridicule curled from the corner of her red lips as she said, "Captain Mu Chen, I'm here to make a deal with you."

"What deal?" asked Mu Chen in slight startlement.

With a clench of her jade-like hand, an Academy Plaque appeared within Wen Qingxuan's hand. Present on the surface of the Academy Plaque was a number nearing 8000, the number of points this plaque possessed. Although they knew about this, Xu Huang and the other two still sucked in a breath of cold air, while their hearts and minds were filled with shock. After exhausting themselves for so long, the number of points they had was actually not even half of what Wen Qingxuan possessed. These girls were too terrifying.

"Captain Mu Chen, I'll give all of these points to you. Furthermore, I'll guarantee your admission into the final match. However, the condition is that you allow Luo Li to join my group. What do you say?" Grasping her Academy Plaque in her hand, a smile surfaced at the corner of Wen

Qingxuan's mouth as she gave her reply.

Hearing those words, Xu Huang and the other two instantly gawked as they vacantly looked at Wen Qingxuan. Clearly, they did not understand the meaning of what she had said. She wants to use those points to exchange for Luo Li?

Mu Chen and Luo Li had also gawked at those words. However, frowns quickly started to slowly appear on Mu Chen's forehead as he thought, This Wen Qingxuan's actually aiming for Luo Li?

A frown also appeared on Luo Li's forehead. Looking towards Wen Qingxuan, she said in a somewhat displeased manner, "Captain Wen Qingxuan, what is this about?"

Not replying to Luo Li, Wen Qingxuan continued to grin as she looked towards Mu Chen.

Staring straight at Wen Qingxuan, Mu Chen's gaze turned dull as he slowly replied, "I don't know exactly what you want to do; however... Captain Wen Qingxuan, let's not talk about a mere 8000 points, even if you use yourself to exchange for Luo Li, I would feel that it's not worth it in the slightest."

Although he knew that the girl before him wasn't benevolent or virtuous, her strength was on a level that caused even him to feel danger. However, Mu Chen could not permit her to act that brazenly and wilfully here. Therefore, he no longer remained courteous with his reply.

"Outrageous!"

Upon hearing Mu Chen's reply, the four similarly alluring and beautiful girls standing behind Wen Qingxuan instantly roared with their sweet voices.

As for Xu Huang and the other two, they quietly stuck out their thumbs. Faced against a girl like Wen Qingxuan, Mu Chen might be the only person that would treat her like that.

"Oh really?"

A grin still hung on Wen Qingxuan's absolutely beautiful face, with the only change being the slight jump in those pair of phoenix-like eyes. Clearly, it was also extremely rare for her to bump into anyone that dared to speak to her in such a manner. Although she didn't have the thought to compare herself to Luo Li, the tone present in Mu Chen's reply, which sounded as if she was absolutely unable to be compared to Luo Li, was something that she wasn't too fond of. After all, there's always some pride and arrogance in every girl's heart. What's more, a girl like her, who was always the centre of attention wherever she went...

Upon hearing Wen Qingxuan's reply, spiritual light sparkled from the hands of the four girls behind her, especially from the twins, with unique fluctuations starting to radiate from them.

Wen Qingxuan wasn't the only strong person with this group. Even her four other group members weren't people that were easy to deal with. If each of them were to go their separate ways, every one of them would be able to take charge of a group by themselves.

Sensing that the atmosphere had turned into something that wasn't quite right, Xu Huang and the other two quietly revolved their Spiritual Energies. Although they knew that the group before them possessed terrifying strength, if it was needed for them to take action, they would go all-out without any restraint.

Luo Li's forehead started to knit up, since she clearly didn't expect that the situation, which was originally somewhat friendly, would turn into this in an instant. Nevertheless, without speaking a single word, she slowly tightened her grip on her Luo God Sword as her lovable face grew slightly frosty. As long as Wen Qingxuan and her group took action, she would not hesitate one bit to take action herself.

Although she had quite a good impression towards Wen Qingxuan, it was nothing compared to her relationship with Mu Chen.

The minute action of Luo Li tightening her grip on the Luo God Sword was noticed by Wen Qingxuan, leading to her gently puckering her little red mouth. Sending a sweet smile towards Mu Chen, she said, "What I've

said just now was a joke. You won't be offended by it, right?"

Sensing the change in attitude from her tone, Mu Chen could only nod his head while remaining silent.

Seeing Mu Chen nod his head, Wen Qingxuan gave a light laugh, with her voice growing increasingly gentle and soul-rapturing. "However... I do take mind in the words you've said earlier. Could the renowned Blood Calamity of the Spiritual Road allow me to experience the ability you possess that made Luo Li stay by your side?"

Bang!

At the very instant when her gentle voice rang out, frightening Spiritual Energy erupted from her body, like a volcano. With a clench of her jade-like hands, an exceedingly gorgeous golden-coloured spear surfaced within. With a whoosh, the spear tip was thrust straight towards Mu Chen.

At this instant, the atmosphere froze up.

Chapter 497: The Blood Calamity and The Champion

Boom!

Boundless Spiritual Energy spontaneously erupted from Wen Qingxuan as she held a long golden pike in her hands. This pike was exceedingly gorgeous, and seemed to be formed from plumes of golden feathers. At the tip of the pike was a phoenix spreading it's wings, with it's wings forming the incomparably sharp edge of the blade. If one were to listen carefully, one could almost hear the resonating cry of the phoenix.

Despite bringing out her pike, a smile remained on Wen Qingxuan's beautiful face. However, a faint threatening atmosphere emanated from her eyes.

Lifting her pike, she levelled it and pointed it right at Mu Chen. The boundless, agitated Spiritual Energy immediately targeted Mu Chen, and it's suppressive force was so extreme, it was to the extent that even the Xu Huang trio behind Mu Chen broke out in cold sweat and were unable to move a muscle.

Mu Chen stared at the golden pike in front of him, and in the depths of his eyes, a chilling intent was surging.

"Captain Wen Qingxuan, don't push it too far!" Luo Li roared in response to Wen Qingxuan's provocation, unsheathing her Luo God Sword. A frightening Sword Aura erupted from her sword.

Slightly panning her head, Wen Qingxuan looked towards Mu Chen as the smile present on her face appeared coquettish and soul-stirring, yet possessed a concealed element of indifference and coldness. "Captain Mu Chen, if you really want to take action, our group might be invincible. Since you don't possess the strength to stand on the same level as us, I believe that you should understand that what I've said isn't a request, but a threat!"

Staring right back at Wen Qingxuan, black lightning started to sparkle

as it slowly surfaced on his body. Wrinkling his forehead, he said, "Captain Wen Qingxuan. I know that your group is indeed extremely strong. However, I also have to tell you that I don't see you being truly capable of devouring us!"

Bang!

Just as Mu Chen's voice that was gradually turning cold rang out, black lightning light furiously erupted from his body. As black bolts of lightning crazily arced and danced on the surface of his body, a frightening energy shock wave rippled, causing signs of warping and distortion to appear in the surrounding space.

"Oh really?"

Looking at Mu Chen, with his entire body clad in a black lightning light, Wen Qingxuan slightly raised her phoenix-like eyes, while giving a light tug to her little red lips. In the next instant, a cold arc appeared at the corner of her mouth as a shiver shook through her jade-like hands. Like a golden bolt of lightning, space was shattered apart as the golden war spear in her hands was explosively thrust towards Mu Chen's chest.

Roar!

A dragon's roar resounded as Mu Chen's body appeared to instantly turn illusionary.

Whoosh!

The golden war spear was thrust straight towards Mu Chen's chest. However, it was unable to draw the slightest bit of blood as the figure before it had started to slowly dissipate away.

"A shadow remnant? What quick speed."

With her spear landing on air, no feelings of shock were felt by Wen Qingxuan. With a sweet smile and a shift of her exquisite figure, she transformed into a beam of light, rushing straight across the horizon. The long spear in her hand was explosively thrust out, causing a golden spear shadow to shoot out, heading towards a certain place at lightning speed.

Bang!

Astonishing gales swept from the space as Mu Chen's figure appeared in a flash. A fist clade in black lightning light heavily smashed against the shadow spear, causing lightning to gush out as Mu Chen's body was sent retreating back a dozen steps. Wen Qingxuan's attack was exceedingly powerful! Although he had relied on his tyrannical fleshly body to block it, piercing pain had already started to radiate from his fist.

Seeing this spectacle, Luo Li's lovable face turned completely cold, with surging Sword Intent sweeping out as she prepared to take action at any moment.

Humm!

However, just as she was about to do so, suddenly, the two exceedingly cute twins clapped their hands together to form a hand seal. In the next instant, rays of brilliance that appeared in the shape of runes shot out from their little hands. Drastically increasing in size as they did, they transformed into a radiant prison, immediately enveloping over Luo Li.

Mysterious runes sparkled within the prison as they fluctuate about. Appearing akin to being alive, they slowly squirmed about as strange energies radiated from them.

Seeing this, a frosty expression appeared on Luo Li's face as incomparably fierce sword light hid the skies and covered the earth as it swept out, smashing right against the rune prison. Crackling sounds instantly erupted within the prison as minute cracks started to appear and extend.

Noticing these changes, the lovable faces of the twins slightly changed. Even experts of Spiritual Energy Disaster would not be able to extricate themselves from this rune prison of theirs. However, both of them had never imagined that signs of it collapsing would appear so quickly in the face of Luo Li's attack.

Only at this moment did Xu Huang and the other two regain their senses, since the changes happening to the situation before their eyes had happened too quickly. Who would have guessed that the exceedingly

amicable showing by Wen Qingxuan a moment ago would change into a confrontation of swords and daggers within a short span of a few minutes? What caused them to feel incomparable shock was that this Wen Qingxuan truly appeared to not be a sociable person. Although she was elegant, beautiful and not one bit inferior to Luo Li, she truly had a completely different temperament, compared to the latter.

Thinking about this, the trio quietly sighed in their hearts, yet quickly revolving their Spiritual Energies to full power. After exchanging glances, the trio immediately rushed towards the remaining two girls of Wen Qingxuan's group that have yet to take action. Since they had started to fight for some unknown reason, they wouldn't stand aside and watch the fight taking place without doing anything.

The remaining two girls of Wen Qingxuan were both also bright and soul-stirring beauties, with one of them possessing a head full of long golden hair, giving off an exceedingly dazzling sight. As for the other, she appeared to be weak, frail and exceedingly quiet and refined. Yet, Xu Huang and the other two did not dare to underestimate her one single bit due to her appearance. After all, the group before them truly held the first place in the rankings...

"Hmph."

Seeing the trio taking an offensive stance and rushing over, fear and dread were absent from the face of the golden-haired girl as she gave a cold snort. With a clench of her hand, a giant axe of exaggerated proportions appeared within, seemingly dwarfing her exquisite figure. Shooting out in the next instant, astonishing gales howled as they followed the giant axe as it furiously chopped down towards the trio.

As for the weak and frail-looking girl, she retrieved an emerald-green jade umbrella. With a shake, incomparably rampant Spiritual Energy instanted gushed out, instantly condensing into the shape of a hurricane. As it took form, it transformed yet again into a giant python that sat in the sky, launching attacks right towards the incoming trio.

"Captain Mu Chen, I know that you aren't as simple as you appear to be.

However, I believe that you don't have the capability to obstruct me in whatever I want to do. Therefore, why is there a need to put up a useless struggle? If you let Luo Li go, I can guarantee that your Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy group will enter the final match."

"I've long heard of the great name of the Spiritual Road Champion, Captain Wen Qingxuan. Since I've the opportunity to meet you today, please advise me."

Looking at the dazzlingly beautiful young girl dressed in golden battle armor with a golden war spear in her hand, causing her to appear just like a goddess of war, a faint smile appeared on Mu Chen's face. In the next instant, his expression turned ice-cold as black lightning light crazily sparkled on the surface of his body. Having summoned forth the might of his Lightning God's Physique till it's maximum limit, four lightning runes rapidly appeared on his chest. Frightening energy fluctuations started to slowly radiate from him, shaking the surrounding space to the point of ripples starting to appear.

After breaking through his Human Body Disaster, Mu Chen's fleshly body had clearly become more tyrannical.

Staring at Wen Qingxuan, he gave a furious stomp, causing the air beneath his feet to explode apart. With a whoosh, he appeared right before Wen Qingxuan.

Wen Qingxuan's eyes brimmed with interest as she looked towards Mu Chen. Grasping her golden war spear, her golden battle armor-encased figure appeared voluptuous and exquisite. She was clearly slightly interested in this Blood Calamity that was similarly famous within the Spiritual Road as her. Being the man that could make a person like Luo Li fall into love with, he should have some ability, right?

Appearing in a flash, Mu Chen's expression appeared exceedingly cold. Giving a hug to the air before him, astonishing ominous energies abruptly erupted from him, rushing towards the dome of the skies. Everyone within a hundred kilometre radius from him was able to clearly sense them.

As the ominous energies blanketed the region, a black-coloured demonic

pillar rushed towards the skies.

Looking at the astonishing ominous energies brought forth by the appearance of the black-coloured demonic pillar, the bright and beautiful eyes of Wen Qingxuan slightly narrowed.

"Captain Wen Qingxuan, would you like to try receiving a move from me?"

As his loud roar resounded, his hands fiercely came together to hug the gigantic demonic pillar. While ominous energies surged and swept out like tidal waves, black lightning crazily sparkled across his body. In the next instant, hugging the demonic pillar, he gave it a furious wave, casting its shadow across the region, while howls seemed the ring out from the Spiritual Energy present in the world.

At this instant, a scarlet-red shadow had gushed out once again from Mu Chen's eyes. Clearly, this was due to the ominous energies from the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, which was being controlled by him.

After entering the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, Mu Chen had yet to use the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. However, from the looks of it, faced against a truly dangerous opponent like Wen Qingxuan, he finally chose not to keep it hidden. Upon taking action, he had unleashed his true killing move.

Bang! Bang!

The air continued to be blasted away, with the mountain peak below being shaken to the point of collapsing apart.

Raising her slender, snow-white neck, Wen Qingxuan looked towards the incoming Great Meru Demonic Pillar as it brought along it's ominous energies towards her. Her phoenix-like eyes contracted, while a sliver of astonishment that was exceedingly rare to appear flashed across her face. This Mu Chen's actually able to reach such a degree of strength with his cultivation realm of Human Body Disaster?

"What can it change if I receive one move from you?!"

Although Wen Qingxuan was a girl, the arrogance in her was stronger

than anyone. She would not yield and admit defeat to anyone! She was just like the phoenix soaring across the nine heavens, always raising her head up high in haughtiness. In this universe, it seemed that there was no one that could let this girl, who appeared just like the spirit of the heavens and earth to yield.

With an alluring laugh, one that was similarly brimming with haughtiness, her jade-like hands tightly gripped her golden war spear. As vast and boundless golden light swept out, they appeared just like the unfurling of a phoenix's wings, presenting an exceedingly spectacular scene.

"Heavenly Shadow Phoenix!"

A lovable roar rang out as Wen Qingxuan turned into a beam of golden light, rushing across the horizon. As golden light radiated from her entire body, she appeared to have transformed into an incomparably gigantic golden phoenix, sending astonishing Spiritual Energy fluctuations flooding across the entire region.

Flapping its wings, the golden phoenix pierced through the heavens, smashing heavily against the gigantic demonic pillar in the next instant without the slightest bit of hesitation.

Boom!

At the instant of the collision, the weather seemed to have changed.

The Blood Calamity and the final Champion of the Spiritual Road had started a genuine confrontation.

Chapter 498: Cooperate

Bang!

The terrifying tornado-like Spiritual Energy erratically swept across the horizon, causing the clouds in the sky to split and shatter apart. As the shock waves surged and rumbled, loud claps of thunder could seemingly be heard resounding across the region.

As the frightening Spiritual Energy shock waves shot out, ripples from it started to affect the battlefield below, causing Xu Huang and the other two to miserably retreat back, their eyes brimming with shock as they looked towards the confrontation happening in the skies. They had never seen such a confrontation before, not even from the fights Mu Chen had with experts of Spiritual Energy Disaster. Indeed, this Wen Qingxuan wasn't simple at all, being actually able to force Mu Chen to such a degree.

Whoosh!

Under their shocked and terrified gazes, the storm of Spiritual Energies swept out, while two figures shot out from within.

Boom!

As they retreated back in the air, every single step they made caused the air to explode apart, while giant craters formed in the ground beneath them. Cracks extended from them like spiderwebs, revealing the astonishing destructive power caused by the collision of their attacks.

Heavily stomping his feet, a shiver shook through Mu Chen's body as he finally got rid of the frightening force of rebound acting upon him. At this moment, his expression became exceedingly solemn, while the Great Meru Demonic Pillar surfaced behind his body, radiating with astonishing ominous energies. Raising his head, he focused his gaze towards the slender and elegant figure in the distance.

At this moment, the golden war spear was still present in Wen Qingxuan's hands, while the golden battle armor encased her slender and exquisite figure. After experiencing the tyrannical head-on collision of

their attacks, she appeared to have not received any injury from it. On the contrary, scorching-hot fighting intent gushed from her pair of beautiful eyes. Mu Chen's power and strength had clearly exceeded what she had expected.

Although the opposite party had the assistance of that black-coloured demonic pillar, this was the first time she had seen someone being able to contend against her with a cultivation only at the realm of Human Body Disaster.

"The Blood Calamity of the Spiritual Road is a well-deserved title for you," said Wen Qingxuan with a smile as she tilted her golden war spear forward.

"The wielder of the Spiritual Road's Spiritual Crown is truly formidable," replied Mu Chen with a faint smile. The black lightning light radiating from his body showed not even the slightest sign of turning weaker. The girl before his eyes, Wen Qingxuan, absolutely possessed the qualifications to make him treat her with caution. Regardless of any connections, just based on talent and strength, there were only two people he had met in the last few years that was able to make him feel especially dreadful and cautious when around them.

One of them was Ji Xuan, while the other one was Luo Li. Now, he had to add Wen Qingxuan to this list.

As the Great Meru Demonic Pillar hovered behind Mu Chen, scarlet-red runes sparkled on the surface of its gigantic body. Boundless ominous energies continued to radiate from it, before pouring into Mu Chen's body yet again, providing him massive levels of power.

"Between you and Ji Xuan, I wonder which of you is more formidable." Suddenly, Wen Qingxuan gave a laugh as her jade-like hands tightly clenched her golden war spear.

"Won't you know it after you've tried?" replied Mu Chen in an indifferent tone as his gaze slightly drooped down.

Hearing the faint and minute fluctuations surfacing within Mu Chen's tone, a crafty smile curled up at the corner of Wen Qingxuan's small red

mouth. From the looks of it, there truly were some deep grudges and grievances between Mu Chen and Ji Xuan.

"Then I, Qingxuan, will accept your invitation!" Fighting intent surged within Wen Qingxuan's beautiful eyes as she gave her reply. Mu Chen's strength had truly ignited the competitive spirit present in her heart. She had never once assumed that she was weaker than any man. Furthermore, the opposite possessing strength exceeding her own was something that was extremely disliked by her.

"Heavenly Phoenix Spear!"

Boundless golden light erupted once again from Wen Qingxuan. With a clench of her jade-like hands, the golden war spear ferociously left her hands. Violently expanding in size, it grew to a gigantic size of a hundred metres in length. As golden light gushed from it, it transformed into a spectacular beam of golden light, shooting at lightning speed towards Mu Chen in an overbearing and incomparably fierce manner.

Upon seeing this, not daring to neglect the incoming attack, Mu Chen gave a hug towards the air before him. Causing the Great Meru Demonic Pillar behind him to rush towards the sky. Immediately, ominous energies hid the sky and covered the earth as they swept out, preparing to face the incoming attack once again.

Scree!

However, just as Mu Chen was about to take action once more, a clear and resonant sword cry resounded across the region. A flash swept by Mu Chen's gaze as a hundred metre shadow longsword split the air apart as it suddenly shot by, instantaneously appearing in front of the golden war spear, before smashing right into it.

Ding!

A clear metallic sound resounded as Sword Aura and Spear Aura swept out.

A slender and soul-stirring figure appeared right on top of the shadow sword. With a raise of her jade-like hand, currents of Sword Aura gushed

from within, heavily smashing against the golden war spear. The might of the surging force immediately sent the golden war spear flying back.

Seeing this, Wen Qingxuan raised her eyebrows, and moved her hand, which caused the golden war spear to rapidly shrink in size, before it returned to her hands as a golden beam of light.

"Captain Wen Qingxuan, if you really want to take action, let me accompany you." Standing tall on the gigantic shadow sword, a frosty expression covered the entirety of her exquisite, porcelain-like face as she spoke out. Staring right at Wen Qingxuan, she spread her jade-like hands apart, and slowly raised her Luo God Sword. In the next instant, astonishingly fierce Sword Intent started to radiate from it.

"Luo Li, it's he who asked me to test it out. Didn't you hear what he said just now?" Seeing that Luo Li was about to take action, a sweet smile appeared on Wen Qingxuan's face as she said in helplessness.

Despite her reply, she gradually started to restrain her boundless Spiritual Energy, while the fighting intent within her beautiful eyes started to slowly withdraw.

Seeing this, Luo Li clenched her hand, causing the Luo God Sword to shoot back into her hand. Looking at Wen Qingxuan with a somewhat helpless expression, she replied, "Captain Wen Qingxuan, we don't have any intention of being hostile towards you and your group. Therefore, please do not cause anymore trouble."

"Okay."

Giving a lovable smile, Wen Qingxuan nodded her head, before shooting towards Luo Li and saying, "However, I don't like the way you address me. I've been searching for you for so long already. Therefore, you have to call me Qingxuan."

Seeing the amicable smile brimming on Wen Qingxuan's face, Luo Li slightly hesitated. Nevertheless, she nodded her head once as she replied, "Okay."

Seeing that Wen Qingxuan had restrained her fighting intent, Mu Chen

had also shot towards Luo Li. Hearing the exceedingly intimate tone Wen Qingxuan was using in her speech towards Luo Li, Mu Chen slightly raised his eyebrows as he thought, If it was a male... I would have immediately hugged the Great Meru Demonic Pillar and sent it smashing down...

"Captain Mu Chen, I've merely wanted to test your strength. You wouldn't mind my earlier actions, right?" A generous and alluring smile appeared on Wen Qingxuan's face as she said while looking towards Mu Chen.

Seeing the stunningly beautiful face of Wen Qingxuan that caused people to lose their breaths, Mu Chen felt a slight ache developing in his head. The girl before him was truly too troublesome to deal with. Such a character on a beauty like her was already excessive, yet she was too hard to be dealt with...

Below them, Xu Huang and the other two had move closer, their faces and hair all covered in dirt and grime. Earlier, despite their collaboration, they were suppressed to a distressed state by the two identical flower-like beauties.

"Hey. You three are no good. Compared to your Captain, you three are trailing behind by too much." The four members of Wen Qingxuan had also shot over. Resting her giant axe on her soft and alluring shoulder, the golden-haired girl looked towards Xu Huang and the other two before flinging her mouth.

Looking up toward those seemingly gentle and weak girls, with smiles pursing on their lips and little dimples on their lovable faces, Xu Huang and the other two could not help feeling somewhat embarrassed. However, the trio knew how formidable those gentle and quiet young girls were, since they were tossed quite vigorously here and there by them.

Depressed expressions covered the faces of the trio. They had assumed that they were able to raise eyebrows and cause people to hold their breaths towards them after breaking through their Human Body Disaster. However, they never expected that they wouldn't be able to deal with two

soft and tender girls.

"They're the group ranked at the first place. Their strength as a whole is naturally higher than us," said Mu Chen with a smile as he patted on the shoulders of the trio.

The only thing Xu Huang and the other two could do was give a bitter smile while nodding their heads. That's why Wen Qingxuan and her group were able to occupy and dominate the first place. With such strength and lineup, they truly were extremely strong and powerful.

Turning his head to look at Wen Qingxuan, wrinkles appeared on Mu Chen's forehead as he asked, "Captain Wen Qingxuan, exactly what reason have you come to find us for?"

With a flink of her finger, her golden war spear disappeared in a flash. Blinking her big eyes towards Mu Chen, Wen Qingxuan replied, "Two reasons. The first is to come and see Luo Li, as she had greatly helped me in the Spiritual Road, while I've not had the chance to thank her for that. As for the second reason... I've wanted to find you to collaborate. Naturally, I needed to test your strength before collaborating."

"Collaborate?" asked Mu Chen doubtfully as he looked towards Wen Qingxuan.

"The Divine Wood Palace Quota." Curling a lock of her black hair behind her ear, Wen Qingxuan gave her reply in a played down manner.

"So you all have also come here for the Divine Quota, huh," said Mu Chen with a slight frown on his face.

"You're too narrow-minded. In the Ancient Antiquity, the Divine Wood Palace was one of the regional Overlords of this Shattered Continent. The inheritance present in their remnant isn't something that you can devour all by yourself." Wen Qingxuan rolled her eyes towards Mu Chen, saying, "Furthermore, you guys aren't the only ones that have obtain the Divine Quota. From what I know, there's a total of six Divine Quotas. You guys have merely obtain one of them."

"The groups that came earlier to deal with you guys are from the

Academy Alliance. You should have heard about them, right?"

"Yes," replied Mu Chen as he nodded his head. Feeling doubtful, he asked, "What's the matter with that?"

"Simply speaking, they're an alliance," replied Wen Qingxuan with a smile. "They're an alliance formed by the groups of numerous spiritual academies. Although the groups from those spiritual academies are naturally not our match in a 1-on-1 duel, after the reorganization in their alliance, their strength has become exceedingly tyrannical."

"Reorganization?"

"Yes... for example, they would split their groups up before gathering all of their experts together."

Hearing that, Mu Chen asked in shock, "Is that possible? Won't that break the rules?"

"There's nothing that doesn't conform to the rules. It's just that those reorganized groups aren't able to enter the final match, that's all. Naturally, at that time, all they need to do is to form their original groups once again. However, at that time, after obtaining the various benefits from the Shattered Continent, their strength would be much greater than before," replied Wen Qingxuan.

"Therefore, although you guys aren't quite bad, you can't rely on the strength of your group alone to contend against an entire alliance, right?"

Hearing her reply, thick creases appeared on Mu Chen's forehead. He never imagined that situation of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament would have such changes during their mere isolation of 20-plus days.

"It's said that the Academy Alliance has also obtained a Divine Quota. Therefore, at that time, when you enter the Divine Wood Palace, you would definitely bump into them. I believe that if we collaborate, it would be extremely beneficial to you guys," said Wen Qingxuan with a clench of her hand, her face brimming with confidence. In the next instant, she cast her pair of bright and beautiful eyes towards Mu Chen.

"So, what do you say?"

Chapter 499: Love Rival?

"So, what do you say?"

Hearing Wen Qingxuan's clear and pleasant voice, Mu Chen sunk into a deep thought. Following the elapsing of time, the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament was currently starting to gear up, with various powerful groups gradually starting to surface. The strength of those groups would not be inferior to those coming from the five Great Academies. This was something that Mu Chen had experienced earlier, with the example being Zhen Qing, whose group wasn't weaker than Xia Hou's group.

Furthermore, it was clear that a situation like the appearance of Zhen Qing and his group wouldn't be a one-off. There might be even more of such similar groups present in the dark. Although Mu Chen was confident about himself, he wasn't blind. Just as what Wen Qingxuan had said, it was extremely hard to rely solely on the strength of his group to contend against an alliance formed by numerous groups.

There were numerous large and small remnants concealed within the fragments of this Shattered Continent. There was no one that could guarantee that a not-too-assuming group would not chance up a great opportunity, and distinguish themselves with a drastic increase of their strength.

What's more, as of now, Mu Chen's group was currently in a phase of strength that could be said as advancing by leaps and bounds. The absolute majority of the people that were able to participate were of Heavenly Completion Stage. After the Heavenly Completion Stage would be the three Sovereign Disasters. This was a unique phase where one wouldn't need much accumulation of bitter cultivation to progress. That's because the tribulations by themselves were a form of tempering. As long as one was able to pass through them, one's strength would greatly advance and rise.

Therefore, with the aid from the numerous ancient remnants present in this Shattered Continent, an absolute majority of the people present here

would obtain great progress within the short number of months they would spend here.

In this phase of great transformation, whoever was able to grasp the right opportunity would be able to obtain the greatest progression of strength from their entire group, allowing them to walk at the forefront of everyone present in this Shattered Continent.

This was the reason why Mu Chen had placed such importance on the ancient remnant of the Divine Wood Palace. Although there were numerous other ancient remnants hidden within the Shattered Continent, there should not be many that were able to rival what the Divine Wood Palace held in store. Therefore, as long as they were able to enter this ancient remnant, it would definitely be extremely beneficial for him and his group.

However, it was due to this Divine Wood Palace's remnant being that perfect that there would naturally be countless groups flocking over towards it, with truly powerful groups among their ranks. At that time, the battles that would be waged would absolutely be unable to be matched by those in the past.

Therefore, at that time, if they were able to collaborate with a group like Wen Qingxuan's, it would be considered as the most perfect scenario for Mu Chen and his group.

"Why did you find us for this?"

Mu Chen asked as he looked towards Wen Qingxuan. From the surface, with their strength, if they wanted to find a group to collaborate with, there would clearly be quite a few better groups to choose from. However, she had decided to find them in the end, something that caused slight doubt to rise within Mu Chen's heart.

"That's because I believe in Luo Li," replied Wen Qingxuan with a sweet smile as she looked towards Mu Chen. A bright and beautiful smile surfaced on her beautiful, snow-white face as she said in a teasing fashion, "Could it be that Captain Mu Chen had assumed that I've fallen for him?"

Hearing her words, Mu Chen gave an embarrassed laugh. He wouldn't

be tricked into her claim of having fallen for him. Furthermore, it was extremely hard for him to imagine that an extremely opinionated girl like her would change her mind for a male.

"Luo Li has helped me before. Perhaps it might be accidental of her. However, I'm unable to not repay this favor. I'm clear about Luo Li's strength. As for you..." Shooting a sizing gaze around Mu Chen's body with her beautiful eyes, Wen Qingxuan slightly raised her red lips before saying, "From our exchange earlier, you really do possess some ability. Therefore, it can be considered that we didn't suffer any losses coming here to collaborate with you."

"I'm truly honored," replied Mu Chen in an unhappy tone as he shook his head. This Wen Qingxuan truly is extremely hard to deal with.

"I don't like collaborating with you men. Therefore, if you say that you're honored, it's indeed quite an honor to do so," said Wen Qingxuan earnestly as she nodded her head, sounding exceedingly impressive as she did so.

This caused Mu Chen to become speechless.

Seeing Mu Chen appearing as if he had hit a wall, Luo Li could not help giving w soft laugh.

"Okay. I agree to collaborate," replied Mu Chen as he nodded his head. Turning around, he pointed towards Xu Huang and the other two and said, "These are my group members, Xu Huang, Zhao Qingshan and Mu Fengyang. They've just broke through their Human Body Disaster."

Shooting a mere glance at the trio, Wen Qingxuan withdrew her gaze in an instant, before nodding her head in a de-emphasizing manner.

Noticing the attitude she had towards them, Xu Huang and the other two could not help bitterly laughing in their hearts, but did not dare to show one bit of discontentment on their faces. Although the girl before them was as beautiful as Luo Li, those pair of beautiful phoenix-like eyes always seemed to possess more than sufficient feelings of encroachment. If it were people or things that didn't garner her interest, her silence and faint smile was more than enough to make many people feel ashamed of

their inferiority.

Only at this moment did they understand exactly how easy it was to get near Luo Li, who always appeared quiet and would only reveal a gentle smile before Mu Chen.

"They are Le'er and Pin'er. They're identical twins. If they collaborate, even experts who had passed through their Spiritual Energy Disaster would not be able to escape from their hands," said Wen Qingxuan as she point towards the two sweet and soul-stirring young girls that seemed to be cut out from the same mold.

"This is Xiu Ling. Don't look down on her. What she cultivates is a strength-based Deity Tier Spiritual Art. Furthermore, after cultivating a Body Refinement Deity Tier Spiritual Art, when she crossed hands with an expert who had passed his Spiritual Energy Disaster, she sent that fellow who tried to tease her was drilled straight into a mountain with a single punch... other than you and Luo Li, there's no one in your group that is her match," said Wen Qingxuan with a grin as she pointed to the golden-haired young girl.

The golden-haired young girl by the name of Xiu Ling nodded her head towards Mu Chen and Luo Li, before sending a faint and indifferent glance towards the embarassed-looking Xu Huang, Zhao Qingshan and Mu Fengyang.

"This is An Ya. She's a young wealthy woman, and god-knows how many Spiritual Items are carried by her. Wanting to defeat her isn't something that's easy to accomplish," said Wen Qingxuan as she pointed to the final quiet and refined-looking young girl.

An Ya sent a somewhat embarrassed smile towards Mu Chen and his group, causing little dimples to appear on her lovable face, giving her an exceedingly pure look.

"In addition, they're able to attempt their Spiritual Energy Disaster," added Wen Qingxuan.

Hearing this last point, Mu Chen could not help sighing in admiration, while nodding his head. That's why Wen Qingxuan and her group was

able to occupy and dominate the first place in the rankings. With such a lineup, the only words that could be used to describe them would be tyrannical. These girls appeared weak and frail, yet each and every one of them possessed strength comparable to those who have passed through their Spiritual Energy Disaster.

Face against such a tyrannical group, if his group took action, Mu Chen felt that they wouldn't able to see the glimpse of victory; after all, their disparity in strength was rather clear. The only people in his group that could stand at the peak would be he and Luo Li. If their opponents were able to hold and obstruct the two of them, Xu Huang and the other two would quickly fall into a disadvantage.

Therefore, this was the main reason why Mu Chen had to give his all to contest the ancient remnant. As of now, they were representing the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, after all, and not fighting for themselves. Not only did he have to consider for himself, he also needed to take Xu Huang and the other two into consideration. If not, they would definitely be in quite a substantial disadvantage in the final match.

"What about you?" asked Mu Chen with a smile towards Wen Qingxuan.

From the looks of it, Wen Qingxuan's cultivation seemed to be of Spiritual Energy Disaster. However, Mu Chen could faintly discern some dangerous fluctuations coming from her. Clearly, she was concealing many things from them.

"Me?" A crafty smile appeared on Wen Qingxuan's face as she replied, " If you're willing to share your secrets with me, I'll consider doing so for mine."

"What secrets do I have?" asked Mu Chen as he slightly narrowed his eyes.

"I'm able to sense a unique feeling coming from your body... it's extremely powerful. However, it seems to be in a state of deep sleep," replied Wen Qingxuan with a faint smile as she cast her alluring and beautiful eyes towards Mu Chen.

Hearing her reply, as chill shook through Mu Chen's heart. Deep sleep?

Is she talking about Nine Nether? Truly an astonishing sensing level. This was the first time he had bumped into someone of similar age to him that was able to sense Nine Nether in the midst of her transformation. Indeed, his Wen Qingxuan is not simple...

"Looks like you're not willing, huh. Nevermind. I'm also lying to you. Even if you tell me your secrets, I won't be willing to tell you mine," said Wen Qingxuan with a wave of her hand. Looking towards Luo Li, she said with a grin, "I'll be willing if it's Luo Li. Luo Li, do you want to know?"

Hearing that, Luo Li only gave a faint smile, and shook her head before replying, "Everyone has their own secrets."

"Did he tell his secrets to you?" asked Wen Qingxuan in a seemingly accidental fashion.

Shooting a look at Mu Chen with her clear, glass-like eyes, Luo Li replied with a faint smile, "He would naturally tell me those that can be mentioned. Furthermore, I believe in him."

Mu Chen glared unhappily at Wen Qingxuan. For some reason, he could feel as if she was trying to incite disharmony between his relationship with Luo Li. However, their relationship was as stable as a cornerstone and not easily moved or shaken by such attempts.

"Luo Li, you truly are good at understanding people. I really like that." Rays of splendor radiated from Wen Qingxuan's phoenix-like eyes. Unable to control herself, she went near to Luo Li, before holding the latter's slender hands in an intimate manner, while saying with an alluring laugh, "Why not toss away this bunch of smelly men and go together with us! We'll definitely be able to become the champions of this Great Spiritual Academy Tournament!"

Despite their different temperaments, when two faces that were capable of causing the downfall of nations come together, they formed an exceedingly attractive sight that caused Xu Huang and the other two to quietly gulp down their saliva. However, the gaze Mu Chen sent towards Wen Qingxuan appeared somewhat weird and strange. Although Wen Qingxuan appeared like she was playing and teasing around, somehow, he

felt that something was not quite right...

Sensing Mu Chen's gaze, Wen Qingxuan appeared to not care one bit as she held on to Luo Li's slender and tender hands. However, while in at an angle that Luo Li was unable to see, she raised her eyebrows somewhat provocatively towards him before slightly opening her mouth.

Seeing this, Mu Chen's eyes grew wide open, as he could decipher the words mouthed out by the alluring little lips of Wen Qingxuan.

"I will make Luo Li mine!"

Chapter 500: Meeting the Blood God Clan Again

The words Wen Qingxuan had mouthed had clearly caused Mu Chen's heart to violently shake, with the gaze he sent towards the former turning somewhat strange. He finally understood the origin of the weird feeling he was having. From the tone and manner of Wen Qingxuan's words, she clearly had a special thought towards Luo Li.

It seems that there is a special... rival in love popping out?

Noticing Mu Chen's strange gaze, Wen Qingxuan showed not one bit of being offended. On the contrary, she revealed an alluring and soul-stirring smile towards him. This smile had the charm that could cause the downfall of a country, causing Mu Chen to give a sigh of helplessness within his heart. Pretty lady, why do you want to head down this path?

Wen Qingxuan held Luo Li's hands in a confident and natural manner. Being exceedingly close to Luo Li, the exquisite figures of the two girls appeared to be pasted together, clearly showing the extreme intimacy between them.

Luo Li also felt slightly flabbergasted by such intimacy shown by Wen Qingxuan. Nevertheless, she clearly didn't think about any weird ideas from this. Therefore, despite being slightly uncomfortable, she didn't reject this intimacy. She had no lack of a favorable view towards Wen Qingxuan, as the latter was similarly outstanding, while possessing an extremely free and unconstrained character. These traits were extremely hard to be found on ordinary girls.

However, although Luo Li didn't mind it, Mu Chen felt jealousy and envy brewing within him. With a dry cough, he extended his hands to grab onto Luo Li's snow-white wrist, before pulling her away. Stepping forward, he separated Luo Li from Wen Qingxuan, before saying with a smile, " Captain Wen Qingxuan, when do we take action?"

Seeing Mu Chen barging in, Wen Qingxuan could not help rolling her

eyes towards him. Twirling a lock of her hair in her hand, she said in an indifferent tone, "Naturally, as soon as possible. As of now, all six Divine Quotas have landed in the hands of people, and they should also know about the location of the Divine Wood Palace. Therefore, they would head there at full force. This Divine Wood Palace remnant isn't like any ordinary remnant. There are quite a few inheritances within it. As long as you obtain one of them, it would allow your group's strength to drastically increase. Therefore, there's no one who would be willing to give up on such an opportunity."

Slightly nodding his head, Mu Chen muttered, "Of the other five Divine Quotas, whose hands did they land in?"

"According to what I know, the Academy Alliance should have one, while the people from the Saint Spiritual Academy and the Martial Spiritual Academy have each gotten one... as for remaining two, I'm not too sure. However, as to the people who are able to obtain and hold on to those Divine Quotas, I believe that no one would believe that those people don't possess an adequate level of strength. Therefore, the groups that would contest for the Divine Wood Palace remnant would naturally be rather strong."

Raising her phoenix-like eyes to look into the distance, Wen Qingxuan continued speaking, "The Great Spiritual Academy Tournament has already started to entered its heated phase. Those powerful groups that are hiding in the dark are all starting to reveal themselves in succession. The Great Spiritual Academy Tournament this time is even tougher than previous times as god-knows how many crouching tigers and hidden dragons there are within this tournament. Even I don't have absolute confidence in achieving the championship. If not, I wouldn't come to find you guys to collaborate."

"There are four leaders within the Academy Alliance; of which, three of them are known by me. Each of them are quite strong and aren't easy to deal with. Furthermore, all of them have rather splendid combat results, with even experts of Spiritual Energy Disaster suffering defeat in their hands."

Hearing her words, Mu Chen's forehead immediately twitched. Being able to defeat experts of Spiritual Energy Disaster... From the looks of it, the three leaders of the Academy Alliance really do possess some ability. In this current phase of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, experts of Spiritual Energy Disaster were already able to dominate fights by themselves. As for people who were able to even defeat them, this showed what peak level they were in.

"There's still one more leader?" asked Mu Chen in doubt. It seemed that Wen Qingxuan had only talked about three of the aforementioned leaders.

"The Head Leader of the Academy Alliance is exceedingly mysterious. Furthermore, he's the creator of this Academy Alliance. I've yet to see his true face. However, being able to let the other three wild and untamable Heads elect him as their Head, I'm afraid that this person should be a formidable opponent to deal with," replied Wen Qingxuan with a slight frown.

Hearing that, Mu Chen nodded his head, his expression turning solemn. From the looks of it, the matter of this Divine Wood Palace remnant truly would not be easy. Even someone as arrogant as Wen Qingxuan appeared to be that vigilant and cautious.

"The people from the Saint Spiritual Academy... was it Ji Xuan and his group?" Suddenly, Mu Chen's eyes slightly flashed as he shot out a question.

"I'm not too sure about this, but each of the four Great Holy Sons of the Saint Spiritual Academy head their own teams. Of them, there are two that needs to be paid attention to," replied Wen Qingxuan as she looked towards Mu Chen.

"Oh?" Mu Chen appeared exceedingly interested as he listened. Clearly, Wen Qingxuan's information was much more accurate than theirs, to actually be able to get such a deep understanding of the Saint Spiritual Academy's four Great Holy Sons.

"From the surface, there isn't any seperation of the four Great Holy Sons. However, that isn't true... Among the four, Great Holy Son Wang Zhong is

undoubtedly the strongest. As for the other one, it is Ji Xuan. He's the one among the four Great Holy Sons that have the least experience. However, at the same time, he's the one whose depths are deep and unmeasurable. I think that you should know about this point, right?" replied Wen Qingxuan.

"Great Holy Son Wang Zhong..." muttered Mu Chen as his eyes slightly narrowed. He had crossed hands with one of the four Holy Sons, Xia Hou, even causing serious injuries to the latter. From what he could see, other than Ji Xuan, he had assumed that the other Holy Sons should not be much apart in strength from one another. However, after hearing those words from Wen Qingxuan, he should pay more attention to this Wang Zhong.

"As for the Saint Spiritual Academy group that would appear in the Divine Wood Palace, there's a very high possibility that it could be either Wang Zhong or Ji Xuan in their lead..." replied Wen Qingxuan.

Hearing that, Mu Chen slightly nodded his head. Regardless of Wang Zhong or Ji Xuan, both of them are exceedingly thorny opponents. From the looks of it, this Divine Wood Palace really would become extremely lively.

"Take your Divine Quota out. We should be making our move now." Not wanting to talk lany onger, Wen Qingxuan looked towards Mu Chen and spoke out.

Not hesitating, Mu Chen clenched his hand, causing the Divine Wood Plaque to appear within. Activating his Spiritual Energy, the Divine Wood Plaque instantly radiated with emerald-green rays of brilliance. After starting to slowly vibrate, it pointed towards the northwest direction.

"Northwest, huh?" Looking towards the shown direction, Wen Qingxuan gave a slight nod.

"Let's go."

Storing the Divine Wood Plaque, Mu Chen gave a huge wave of his hand, before taking the lead. Shooting out, he transformed into a beam of light, with Luo Li, Xu Huang and the other two immediately following suit.

"Let us get on our way, too."

With a faint smile, Wen Qingxuan took the lead, and headed out as the exquisite young girls followed behind her.

...

This fragment of the Shattered Continent was exceedingly vast. Although it was only a fragment of the entire Shattered Continent, it was not inferior in size to the Northern Heavens Continent. Therefore, even after heading on their way for five continuous days, they were still unable to reach the location indicated by the Divine Wood Plaque.

However, during their five-day journey, Mu Chen and the rest were able to clearly sense a gradually change as the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament ramped towards the climax. Along the way, they had seen far too many fights. There were large-scale ones and small ones, with the largest having hundreds of groups duking it out in a radius that seemed to spread over a thousand kilometres. The rampant Spiritual Energy fluctuations caused even the entire world to change colour.

Faced against those fights, Mu Chen and the rest only observed from the side with a detached point-of-view, not interfering with any of them while heading along their journey. He didn't have the slightest bit of thought towards the possibility of obtaining such a gigantic amount of points as he knew that it was still not the time to take action just for the sake of points.

While Mu Chen didn't go out to provoke those groups, there were similarly no groups that came out to provoke them. Naturally, the greatest reason was due to Wen Qingxuan travelling beside them. Faced against the tyrannically powerful group placed first in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, there was clearly no one that dared to recklessly provoke them. However, Wen Qingxuan and her group were attracting too much attention...

As they smoothly went on their way, three more days quickly passed by. Finally, Mu Chen and the rest were getting near their targeted location. That's because Mu Chen was able to sense the Divine Wood Plaque in his hands emitting increasingly bright rays of brilliance. Faintly, he could also

sense it gradually turning warm.

These signs all pointed to the fact that they were starting to get close to the concealed genuine remnant of the Divine Wood Palace.

...

"The remnant of the Divine Wood Palace is very likely at the ancient mountain range two thousand kilometres away from us."

Standing on a mountain peak, Mu Chen held the Divine Wood Plaque as he said that. Looking towards the horizon in the northwest direction, he said with a smile, "According to the speed we're travelling at, we should be able to reach there by tomorrow."

"This should be considered as the central location of this fragment of the Shattered Continent," said Luo Li in a soft voice as she scanned the surroundings with her beautiful eyes. "The groups that have appeared here are getting increasingly stronger... I believe that the location where the Divine Wood Palace remnant have already attracted many groups to converge at its location."

Hearing that, Mu Chen nodded his head. Along the way, they had seen quite a few groups that were heading along the same direction as them. Clearly, the location of the Divine Wood Palace remnant had already been revealed by other people. This would mean that when it came time to harvest the treasures present within it, it would clearly be even more chaotic.

"There should be a transaction base located 5 hundred kilometres in front of us. We might be able to temporarily stop there. This transaction base should be the largest one within a radius of tens of thousands of kilometres. There will be a lot of groups converging there, with quite a few genuine good things present there, especially some Combat Spirit Pills. I think that we should need some of those," said Wen Qingxuan as she looked into the distance.

"Combat Spirit Pills... that's too luxurious," replied Mu Chen as he rubbed his nose. Those Spirit Pills that were able to increase one's combat strength or increase recovery of Spiritual Energy were exceedingly

expensive. Wanting to exchange for them would absolutely require an exorbitant price. He really did want to acquire some of them. However, they were truly luxurious items, things that not just anyone could afford.

"As if I've asked you to pay," said Wen Qingxuan as she rolled her eyes towards Mu Chen. Proceeding to ignore him, with a shift of her exquisite figure, she took the lead and shot off.

Helplessly shrugging his shoulders, Mu Chen brought along the rest as they chased after her.

Five hundred kilometers wouldn't take much time for Mu Chen and the rest. As mountain after mountain shot by beneath their feet, they could feel countless Spiritual Energy fluctuations suddenly appearing in the distance before them. Raising their heads, they could see countless beams of light, hiding the skies and covering the earth as they shot by, finally landing in the ground in the distance skies.

Present in this area was a somewhat large town that had clearly appeared not long ago, quietly sitting on the ground. It was precisely this town that those countless beams of light had landed in.

Clearly, this should be the so-called "transaction base" that Wen Qingxuan had spoken about.

Looking at the luxurious little town, slight curiosity rose within Mu Chen, before hwas about to lead everyone to descend with a wave of his hand.

However, just as he made a move, he discovered that Luo Li had suddenly come to a halt. At this moment, faint chilling intent surfaced from her faintly smiling beautiful face.

Striding in front of Mu Chen, Luo Li's ice-cold gaze shot towards a mountain peak in the distance. A dozen figures were faintly discernible as Mu Chen cast his gaze over, causing wrinkles to appear on his forehead. There seemed to be two to three groups present there, with those people appearing exceedingly unfamiliar. However, blood-red robes were wore by each and every one of them, causing them to appear exceedingly glaring and striking.

Fluctuations that caused Mu Chen to feel somewhat uncomfortable were radiating from them.

"What's the matter?" asked Wen Qingxuan in a soft voice, having also noticed the blood robe-dressed groups that seemed to be also looking over towards them.

Slowly clenching her Luo God Sword tightly, Luo Li looked towards Mu Chen, before replying in a slow manner, "They're people from the Blood God Clan."

Hearing her reply, Mu Chen's eyes instantly narrowed. One of the four God Clans of the Western Heavens World, the Blood God Clan? He never expected them to even send people over to the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament... were they aiming for Luo Li?

Chapter 501: Xue Tiandou

The Blood God Clan, one of the four great God Clans of the Western Heavenly World.

When he was in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, there was a fellow from the Blood God Clan by the name of Xue Shi. He had defeated Xue Shi. Although he had suffered grave injuries from Mu Chen, he managed to send the news of Luo Li back to his clan. From Luo Li's importance to the Luo God Clan, if the Blood God Clan knew about her, they would definitely take some actions.

Therefore, a somewhat cold expression surfaced within Mu Chen's eyes as he looked towards the people from the Blood God Clan.

The Western Heavenly World was exceedingly far away from here, with even Sovereign realm existences needing to take quite a long period of time to reach here. Therefore, he did not believe that it was coincidental that the people of the Blood God Clan would appear here. These fellows had definitely come here for Luo Li.

His gaze incisively shot towards the blood-robed figures standing on the mountain peak in the distance, before focusing on the front of the ten figures present there. There stood a youth with his hands crossed before his chest. This person was similarly wearing a blood-red robes. However, slivers of golden patterns were present at the edges of his sleeves, giving him a sliver of nobility in his appearance. Clearly, his status was different from the rest standing behind him.

The golden-edged blood red-robed youth had an exceedingly handsome face, while his lips appeared exceedingly scarlet-red. At this moment, he had similarly cast his gazes towards Mu Chen and the others. Naturally, precisely speaking, his gaze should be locked onto Luo Li. Subsequently, a faint smile appeared on his face. Nodding his head with a cultured and refined manner, a gentle voice rang from him, "Luo Li, I've finally seen you."

Tightly staring at the handsome youth with her beautiful eyes, Luo Li

slowly gripped her hands tightly as a clear voice with a sliver of frost rang from her, "Xue Tiandu, I never imagined that the fourth prince of the Blood God Clan would actually appear here..."

"You remembering me truly makes me happy."

The handsome youth by the name of Xue Tiandu laugh, waving his sleeve as he brought the numerous figures behind him as they shot forward. Blood Aura seemed to ripple beneath their feet, while a faint bloody flavor that perfused out caused the Spiritual Energies within people's bodies to show signs of flipping and churning.

An emotionless expression appeared on Mu Chen's face as Xu Huang and the rest immediately revolved their Spiritual Energies, while vigilantly staring towards this group of malicious people heading their way.

"Blood God Clan."

Sweeping a glance at Xue Tiandu, rays of brilliance instantly sparkled from Wen Qingxuan's phoenix-like eyes.

Coming to a stop not too far away from Luo Li, Xue Tiandu swept his gaze around, before finally pausing on Mu Chen and Luo Li. Clearly, he could feel somewhat extraordinary Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiating from the two.

"A year ago, Xu Shi passed a message that you've appeared in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. This caused quite a bit of a commotion. Haha. You're the future Empress of the Luo God Clan, and also the final hope left for them. If I'm able to capture you, the Luo God Clan will fall into complete despair. I think that when that happens. Luo Tianshen will receive a seriously heavy blow," said Xue Tiandu with a faint smile. "Therefore, I was sent here."

"The Blood God Clan really think highly of you," replied Luo Li with an indifferent tone.

"Follow me and go back, Luo Li. With the chaos of war continuing in the Western Heavenly World and the Luo God Clan suffering defeat after defeat, as long as you follow me back to the Blood God Clan, I'll request

our marriage with the higher-ups of the clan. At that time, with you married to me, our Blood God Clan and the Luo God Clan would no longer be separated. In addition, we'll be able to eliminate the other two great God Clans. At that time, it would only be our two clans in the Western Heavenly World, and your Luo God Clan will be protected.

A gentle and anticipating smile seemed to surface on Xue Tiandu's handsome face. Staring at Luo Li, he continued speaking. "This way, how many citizens can you prevent the Luo God Clan from losing?"

Clenching her Luo God Sword tightly, chilling intent surfaced within the clear and soul-stirringly beautiful eyes of Luo Li.

However, this time, not waiting for her to reply, Mu Chen took a step before her. Looking towards Xue Tiandu, he laughed out while saying, "Sorry to inform you that this girl's already taken. Furthermore, with your morality and conduct, you might still be a little off from your goal of becoming the great contributor of success for the Blood God Clan, mister."

Instantly, chilling rays of brilliance flashed within the depths of Xue Tiandu's eyes. Looking towards Mu Chen, he said with an indifferent voice, "And who are you? I'm speaking to Luo Li. Who are you to interrupt us?"

"Didn't you hear what he had said?" replied Luo Li with a similar indifferent tone.

Hearing Luo Li's reply, Xue Tiandu's eyes slightly contracted. Finally, his gaze towards Mu Chen turned completely dark, while a mocking arc curled up at the corner of his mouth before saying, "Luo Li, you truly gave me a surprise. There are countless elite youths in the Western Heavenly World with extraordinary backgrounds that are crazily infatuated with you. Yet, you don't even pay attention to them, and have to run to such a small Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy to fall in love with such a fellow? Did you know that if this news arrives in the Western Heavenly World, what kind of trouble it would bring to your Luo God Clan?"

"You should be extremely clear that there's quite a few influences in the Western Heavenly World that are staring covetously at you, the next

Empress of the Luo God Clan!"

His tone had turned somewhat chilling with the additional presence of a sliver of fury and jealousy towards Mu Chen. Clearly, Luo Li admitting to Mu Chen's claim had caused some fluctuations to appear within his heart.

"As if I have any business with you! If you want aim at our Luo God Clan, you just have to take action! Don't tell me that you guys haven't done those despicable acts in the past few years! Furthermore, even if our Luo God Clan were to be destroyed by you guys, we'll definitely make sure your Blood God Clan suffer heavy losses in the process! At that time, your Blood God Clan will suffer the similar decline to our Luo God Clan!" replied Luo Li.

Xue Tiandu's handsome face finally turned completely dark before slowly saying, "Since you're so obstinate as to say those words, the only action I can take is to forcibly bring you back to the Western Heavenly World."

Hearing his reply, Mu Chen gave a faint smile, one that contained unconcealable killing intent. The light of black lightning appeared on the surface of his body, before saying while locking his ice-cold gaze on Xue Tiandu, "I feel that you don't need to consider about bringing people back, but to consider exactly if you're able to stay alive and return or not..."

"Oh?"

As scarlet-red shadow flashed across Xue Tiandu's eyes, while a ridiculing arc curled up the corner of his mouth, before he said, "You truly are a fellow that only knows how to shamelessly boast. Just a mere cultivation realm of Human Body Tribulation, and you dare to hoot at me?"

With a laugh, Mu Chen gave a furious stomp, sending his body shooting straight out. Locking towards Xue Tiandu, killing intent gushed from his eyes. The method of Xue Tiandu actually daring to use the Luo God Clan to force Luo Li had clearly caused Mu Chen to genuinely turn furious. Therefore, being a male, there was no more need to speak any more useless words to Xue Tiandu. What he needed to do was to take direct

action.

"You damnable thing!"

Seeing Mu Chen shoot over, the numerous blood red-robed figures immediately shifted their bodies in preparation to take action. However, they were stopped by Xue Tiandu, who had extended his hand out. At this moment, a bloodthirsty shade had appeared on his handsome face, clearly indicating that he need no one else to interfere and take action for him.

Being the prince of the Blood God Clan, the pride and arrogance within him did not allow for any random person to provoke him like that.

With a tap of his foot, blood mist abruptly swept out from his body as he transformed into a beam of bloody light, shooting out like a bolt of lightning.

Bang!

Bloody light hid the skies and covered the earth as they swept out in an instant, causing the bright skies to turn scarlet-red. At this moment, Xue Tiandu's eyes had also turned scarlet-red as he locked his sights on Mu Chen. With a change of his hand seal, he sent a palm stretching out, while a chilling roar resounded across the horizon, "Blood God's Palm!"

Under his palm, the Blood Aura that had blotted the skies churned and surged, immediately transforming into an approximately hundred-metre wide bloody palm. As it howled, it instantly enveloped Mu Chen beneath it, with the frightening force behind it causing even the surrounding space to slightly warp and distort.

Seeing the might of Xue Tiandu's palm, the faces of Xu Huang and the rest could not help changing. Although this Xue Tiandu caused them to feel ire and loathe, he truly possessed extremely tyrannical strength. Just this palm of his would be able to cause ordinary experts of Spiritual Energy Tribulation to have the only option of fleeing and avoiding.

"This fellow is truly strong," said Pin'er quietly upon seeing the might of Xue Tiandu's attack.

"Can Mu Chen endure it?" asked Lei'er worriedly.

"Indeed, this Xue Tiandu has some ability," replied Wen Qingxuan indifferently as she slightly raised her eyebrows. "However, you shouldn't underestimate Mu Chen. That fellow conceals his abilities extremely deep."

Under the attentive gazes of everyone present, the bloody palm instantly blocked off every escape route Mu Chen had. However, not only did he not stop his movements, he proceeded to look towards the bloody palm. Suddenly, chilling rays of brilliance out from his eyes as his hands furiously came together.

Crackle!

Hand seals rapidly formed as the light of black lightning on the surface of Mu Chen's body became rapid.

As lightning sparkled, lightning runes quickly appeared on Mu Chen's chest. In a flash, four lightning runes condensed and appeared, while powerful energies rippled through Mu Chen's limbs and bones.

However, after the the fourth lightning rune had condensed, the sparkle from the lightning bolts present didn't stop at that. Merely, after the formation of the fourth lightning rune, the lightning bolts rapidly arced around, growing warm before yet another lightning rune rapidly extended from within.

Penta Lightning Rune!

Mu Chen's Lightning God's Physique had actually been promoted to a Penta Rune Lightning Physique!

Bang!

At the appearance of the fifth lightning rune, surges of black lightning bolts gushed from Mu Chen's body, with his body appearing to have grown taller by half a foot. At this moment, bolts of lighting sparkled within his black pupils, with a world of lightning seemingly developing within them.

In the next instant, exceedingly astonishing energies erupted from his body like a volcano.

Raising his head, he looked towards the incoming bloody palm, before slowly raising his arm, slamming it right against the bloody palm.

Bang!

Claps of thunder abruptly resounded across the horizon at the instant of impact, while a black bolt of lightning howled and shot out just like a pillar that propped up the skies. With a bang, it unexpectedly pierced through the bloody palm that contained astonishing amounts of Spiritual Energy!

The glow of lightning rushed across the horizon, illuminating everything present within a hundred kilometre radius.

Under the radiance of the lightning light, the bloody palm rapidly collapsed apart, before finally transforming into glowing bloody dots that blotted the skies as they slowly dissipated away.

As the glowing bloody dots dissipated away, Mu Chen slowly raised his head. Turning his lightning-filled eyes towards the handsome face of Xue Tiandu, which had now turned dark, he slowly said, "The prince of the Blood God Clan is merely at this level?"

Chapter 502: Transaction Base

As the lightning flashed across the horizon, while the bloody palm slowly dissipated away, Mu Chen stood tall in the skies, with the light of black lightning encasing his entire body. Looking coldly towards Xue Tiandu, boundless energies rapidly condensed within his palms.

After passing through his Human Body Disaster, his Lightning God's Physique had clearly followed suit and progressed along with his cultivation, successfully promoting to the level of Penta Rune Lightning Physique. Relying on this tyrannical physique of his, Mu Chen was now absolutely not afraid to cross hands with experts who had genuinely passed through their Spirit Disaster.

That Xue Tiandu before him possessed a level of strength that was even higher than normal Spiritual Energy Disaster. However, he had yet to genuinely breakthrough to realm of Spirit Disaster. Therefore, Mu Chen did not dread or fear him if they were genuinely start a duel.

"Who's this fellow that doesn't know the immensity of heaven and earth, to actually dared to provoke our Blood God Clan!" Xue Tiandu's expression had turned completely dark from Mu Chen's previous statement. At this moment, a bloody light hid the skies and covered the earth as it gushed from his body, alongside a dense bloody flavor that had quietly radiated from within.

Bloodthirsty rays of brilliance sparkled in the centre of his palms as dangerous fluctuations started to radiate from them.

While this happened, the expressions of the people from the Blood God Clan standing behind him had also turned dark, while bloody light gushed from their bodies.

Seeing that their opponent was about to take complete action, Luo Li's face had turned slightly cold. Tightly clenching her Luo God Sword, a clear sword cry resounded, while fierce Sword Intent radiated from it.

"If you want to take action, you can't forget about us. I've heard about the fame of the Blood God Clan. However, this isn't the Western Heavenly

World, so it's still not your turn to show your atrocious behaviour to everyone." At this moment, Wen Qingxuan had also elegantly walked forward. With a sweet smile and a clench of her hand, the gorgeous golden war spear appeared within. Although the tip of the spear had yet to be aimed towards Xue Tiandu and his group of people, they were already about to discern dangerous fluctuations radiating from the former's body.

Noticing this, Xu Huang, Pin'er, Le'er and the rest all entered their combat-ready states as they vigilantly stared towards Xue Tiandu and his group of people.

In an instant, the atmosphere had turned into a state of mutual hostility, with a huge battle appearing to erupt at any given moment.

"Wen Qingxuan?"

Xue Tiandu muttered as he darkly looked towards Wen Qingxuan. Having also participated in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, they naturally weren't unfamiliar towards this group that had placed first on the rankings. However, they never imagined that she and her group would actually mingle together with Mu Chen and his group.

"Precisely," replied Wen Qingxuan with a soul-stirring smile, yet no sudden fluctuations were present in those haughty and beautiful phoenix-like eyes of hers as she stared indifferently towards Xue Tiandu.

"Hmph!"

Rays of brilliance sparkled within Xue Tiandu's eyes as he gave a cold snort. With Wen Qingxuan and her group being together with Mu Chen and Luo Li's, their lineup made it such that even he had no choice but to treat them with caution. If they were to truly start a fight, even if they were able to win in the end, they might have to pay an exceedingly high price. This was clearly something that Xue Tiandu hadn't wished for.

"I'll temporarily let you all go this time! However, do you all still want to go into the Divine Wood Mountain with such appearances? Nevermind! I'll settle this debt with you all while in the Divine Wood Palace's remnant!" said Xue Tiandu with a sneer as he darkly stared towards Mu Chen. "At that time, I'll properly teach you that there's always a taller

mountain present."

"Let's go!"

As his voice rang out, he waved his hands and left.

A chilling glint flashed within Mu Chen's eyes as he sent a palm patting out, instantly sending a black and white current of Spiritual Energy sweeping out that rumbled straight towards Xue Tiandu. Clearly, he did not wish for that fellow to be able to smoothly retreat away like that.

"Although dealing with you all will be somewhat troublesome, if I want to leave, you can't do anything about it." Faced against Mu Chen's goal of obstructing him, a ridiculing smile appeared on Xue Tiandu's face as he clapped his hands together. In the next instant, a bloody light radiated from him, before smashing violently against the incoming current of Spiritual Energy.

Bang!

At the instant of impact, their bodies unexpectedly exploded apart, causing a bloody mist to perfuse out. As this happened, their figures mysteriously disappeared into thin air.

Seeing this, Mu Chen's eye faintly narrowed. As the bloody light exploded apart, he could faintly discern the ten clumps of bloody light sparkling. Clearly, that fellow had used some kind of special technique to cause Mu Chen to be unable to chase after them. Although that Xue Tiandu's loathsome, he's truly worthy of being the prince of the Blood God Clan. With such a mysterious technique, wanting to obstruct him truly was an extremely hard matter to accomplish.

"He's still going to the Divine Wood Palace's remnant..."

Mu Chen muttered in his heart as a chilling glint gushed from his eyes. He really did have some murderous intent appearing in his head towards that Xue Tiandu. Being a person of the Blood God Clan, the latter would definitely bring trouble to Luo Li. Therefore, if he had the opportunity, Mu Chen wanted to let him remain forever within the fragments of this Shattered Continent.

The light of black lightning on the surface of Mu Chen's body rapidly weakened, before dissipating away as he shot back to his group.

"That's the Blood God Clan's Blood Escape Technique. It's extremely formidable at disengaging and escaping. However, as of now, there's no need for us to start a big fight by taking action against them. There will be opportunities to do so in the future." As the frosty expression on Luo Li's exquisite face dissipated away, she sent a faint smile towards Mu Chen as she spoke to him.

Hearing that, Mu Chen nodded his head. Looking towards the place where Xue Tiandu and his people had disappeared at, he deeply pondered awhile, before saying, "Since they wanted to catch you, let's not let them return back home."

Faint feelings of sweetness instantly erupted in Luo Li's heart upon hearing his words.

"Wa, brother Mu Chen's so overbearing," said Pin'er and Le'er with a giggle.

"What's the use of being overbearing? We've yet to reach the Divine Wood Mountain, and we've one more thorny opponent to deal with as a result." Shooting a slanted glare towards Mu Chen, Wen Qingxuan spoke in a lazy manner. "However, you didn't disappoint too much by at least possessing a bit of courage. If you let a girl get bullied and still hide behind her, what's the use in calling you a man?"

Towards her alternative degeratory and praising comments, Mu Chen could only give a helpless laugh in response. Compared to Xue Tiandu, he clearly felt a greater headache towards the person before him now.

Hearing those words from Wen Qingxuan, Luo Li gave a laugh before saying, "Although Xue Tiandu's somewhat thorny, if he truly wanted to take action, he would have to deal with the consequences."

Seeing that Luo Li was helping Mu Chen, Wen Qinguan could not help flinging her little red lips aside. Waving her hands, she said, "We're about to reach the transaction base. Since we don't know how many crouching tigers and hidden dragons are present there, let's seize this moment to

enter it and prepare ourselves properly. There will definitely be huge fights awaiting us within the ancient remnant of the Divine Wood Palace."

Hearing her words, Mu Chen nodded his head in agreement. Indeed, as what Wen Qingxuan had said, they had only more thorny opponents to deal with before even reaching the Divine Wood Mountain. God-knows how many would there be when they arrive there. From the looks of it, there would definitely be a truly huge fight taking place then. Similarly, Mu Chen was extremely curious about one point. Exactly how many of the hidden experts that were concealed in the darkness would reveal themselves there?

Everyone was clear about the importance of the genuine remnant of the Divine Wood Palace. Therefore, those powerful groups that have concealed themselves to bide time would definitely reveal themselves in succession within there. This time, it would definitely be extremely spectacular. In fact, this might shake up the entire situation of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament.

Moving their bodies once again, Mu Chen shot across the sky. In the distant plains, the little town was already faintly visible. Countless figures shot over from all directions, finally landing within this little town, causing the surrounding area to appear exceedingly noisy and lively.

Standing at the outskirts of the transaction base and taking in the atmosphere present within the little town, Mu Chen and the others could not help sighing in admiration. Upon their entrance to the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, it was clearly extremely rare for them to see so many groups converging in such a peaceful manner together. That's because any other place with that many groups appearing and gathering together would definitely be a place where numerous intense fights and battles would have taken place.

"Let's go."

Seemingly appearing somewhat familiar with this place, Wen Qingxuan gave a wave with her jade-like hand as she took the lead and walked forward, with Mu Chen and the rest hastily following suit.

Upon entering the transaction base, the noise and clatter instantly lunged towards them. Clearly appearing to be constructed not long ago, the numerous limestone streets appeared exceedingly wide and spacious, merely that it was filled with numerous figures bustling with activity.

Following Wen Qingxuan as they walked into the little town, Mu Chen and the rest could immediately feel the clamouring reduce by quite a bit as countless gazes shot over towards their direction. Each of those gazes were completely filled with shock, and curiosity, as well as drool...

Naturally, the absolute majority of those reactions were due to Wen Qingxuan, as well as Luo Li.

The fame of Wen Qingxuan had already long been circulated within the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, with everyone being clear how strong the group on the first of the rankings were, as well as how beautiful their female Captain was.

However, what caused them to be astonished was that there was actually yet another girl that was not one bit inferior, when compared to her.

Standing quietly at a side, Luo Li held her Luo God Sword in her hand, with her exquisitely beautiful and procelainsque face appearing calm and elegant. Clearly, she had an entirely different character compared to Wen Qingxuan. Upon entering the little town, she did not pay much attention to the sideways as her glass-like pupils only gave a brief swept.

Compared to her, Wen Qingxuan was different. At this moment, her beautiful face that could similarly cause the downfall of countries was covered in a soul-stirringly beautiful smile, causing people to be unable to peel their eyes from her. However, although her smile was soul-stirring, her phoenix-like eyes were filled with haughtiness and arrogance. As her gaze indifferently swept across the bodies of a few seemingly outstanding youths, it quickly moved away with the same indifference, instantly causing the youths that were quietly pumping up their chests to deflate and be filled with dejection.

Compared to Luo Li, Wen Qingxuan clearly possessed a temperament that was exceedingly hard to tame. However, being the way males are, the

harder it was to obtain, the greater they would chase after the unattainable.

Seeing the transaction base that had turned somewhat quiet, before noticing the gazes of countless people sweeping across Luo Li's body, Mu Chen instantly flung his mouth in unhappiness.

While he was feeling unhappy, Luo Li suddenly gave a faint smile, before unexpectedly taking the initiative to extend her jade-like hand to hold onto Mu Chen's, all while her lovable face turned slightly red.

Whoosh.

As Luo Li held Mu Chen's hand, one could faintly hear a clamoring wave ringing out, with quite a few gazes locking onto Mu Chen, with some of them containing unconcealable hostility and envy.

Mu Chen was also slightly shocked and astonished. Knowing Luo Li's character, other than his occasional hoodlum teasing while they were alone, where she would blush and allow him to do so, she was exceedingly reserved in front of other people. Such an initiative to hold his hand was clearly something that was exceedingly rare.

"This is just a little reward," said Luo Li with a slight blush on her lovable face as she shot a look towards Mu Chen.

Hearing that, Mu Chen could not help letting a smile crack open from his mouth. Naturally, he knew that what Luo Li was saying was that he had seemingly done quite a good job in his performance towards Xue Tiandu earlier.

Wen Qingxuan took half a step forward. However, upon hearing the clamoring coming from the surroundings, she cast a look from the corner of her eye and immediately knew what had happened. This caused her to give a soft snort within her heart, turning her beautiful eyes around, while a slight twitch appeared on her tiny rosy lips.

Due to his point of view, Mu Chen just so happened to notice the arc curling up from the corner of Wen Qingxuan's mouth, causing a not-too-good feeling to rise within his heart.

However, before he could respond to it, Wen Qingxuan had quickly turned around, while a soul-stirring smile appeared on her beautiful face that would cause the downfall of countries. However, at this moment, a somewhat evil intent seemed to appear within her eyes as she unexpectedly extended her jade-like hand out, grabbing onto Mu Chen's wrist before walking straight into the transaction base.

Thereafter, in that instant, the clamoring noises originally still present within the transaction base instantly turned deathly silent.

Cold beads of sweat instantly poured from Mu Chen's back in response. If those gazes that had shot over before were filled with hostility and envy, they were now filled with genuine killing intent...

"I've been made a fool of..."

The corner of Mu Chen's mouth slightly twitched as he thought, This Wen Qingxuan's simple a demoness.

Chapter 503: Spiritual Pills

As Mu Chen and the others walked straight into the transaction base, the waves of clamoring noises coming from the sides had all quietly turned silent. Quite a few people opening their eyes wide at the teeth-clenching scene before them. With such fame attached to her name, and with everyone knowing how hard it was to tame this arrogant phoenix, they had unexpectedly seen her taking the initiative to hold onto the wrist of a young male.

This scene caused countless people to open their eyes wide and trip down while unconcealable envy and jealousy uncontrollably erupted from their hearts.

Exactly where did this fellow come from to actually garner the favour of Wen Qingxuan?

Those gazes appeared as if they wanted to kill someone.

Finally, unable to endure the murderous-like gazes coming from everyone, Mu Chen grasped onto Wen Qingxuan's beautiful and jade-like small hands as he hastily walked towards a small alley nearby.

Upon hiding in the alley, Wen Qingxuan hastily flung her little hand from Mu Chen's grip, while opening her eyes wide to glare at him while shouting, "What are you doing?!"

An angry expression had appeared on her face as she could not help rubbing her wrist. She had a level of fastidiousness, and extreme dislike people of the opposite sex coming into contact with her body. Even in her earlier action towards Mu Chen, she had quietly slipped her sleeve inbetween the hand she used to grab onto his sleeve. Who would have guessed that Mu Chen would actually dare to grab hold onto her?

If not for Luo Li being by their side, she might not have been able to endure it and take action against Mu Chen.

"I've yet to ask you what the hell you are doing. Could you get Luo Li and my approval at the very least before pulling the stunt you did earlier?" said

Mu Chen as he flung his mouth aside.

"You've clearly taken advantage of me," replied Wen Qingxuan somewhat angrily. This fellow still tries to proclaim his innocence after taking advantage of me!

"Thank you, but I'm not one bit interested in enjoying such an advantage," replied Mu Chen unhappily, before leading Luo Li towards the deeper parts of the transaction base. Luo Li sent a helpless shrug towards the somewhat fustrated Wen Qingxuan. Although she was also somewhat astonished by Wen Qingxuan's actions, she clearly didn't voice it out. From the looks of it, Wen Qingxuan seemed to not have the favorable impression that some other girls would have towards him. Similarly too, Mu Chen seemed to only treat her as a collaborating compatriot.

Looking at the backs of the two, Wen Qingxuan could not help stomping her feet and clenching her teeth. Pin'er, Le'er and the rest of her team standing beside her quietly turned their gazes away, all of them not daring to provoke the current Wen Qingxuan. Earlier, upon seeing Wen Qingxuan actually extending her hand to hold onto Mu Chen's wrist, their hearts were completely filled with shock and astonishment. That's because all of them had a deep understanding of the latter. Ever since the start of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, they had seen some powerful groups that have attempted to approach them. However, Wen Qingxuan always maintained a certain degree of distance from those similarly outstanding youths. Although the smiles she wore appeared soul-stirringly sweet and charming, there was a resistance that tossed people thousands of miles away present within the depths of her eyes.

However, right before their eyes, Wen Qingxuan, with her rather great dislike for the opposite sex, had unexpectedly took the initiative to hold the wrist of a youth of the opposite sex. How could they not be shocked by it!

"You better remember this!"

Said Wen Qingxuan hatefully, before quickly following behind the two.

Having learnt a lesson from her previous actions, Wen Qingxuan did not

dare to pull of the same stunt again. On the contrary, she always stood at least 3 steps away from him, with a slightly frustrated feeling clearly present within her heart, despite not having any expression showing on her beautiful face.

Nevertheless, Mu Chen didn't care about her, with his gaze curiously scanning around his surroundings. Simple shops were constructed on the two sides of the spacious limestone alleys. With people walking to and fro, the atmosphere present was rather lively. In such a transaction point, the majority of the shops here haven't been opened for a long time; after all, such a place was a necessity for every group participating in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament.

There were numerous large and small ancient remnants present within this fragment of the Shattered Continent, with quite a few containing treasures within. Although those remnants were concealed extremely well, they were still found by people in the end. Nevertheless, not all of the treasures obtained from those places would be needed by one. Therefore, this had resulted in such a transaction base popping up.

At this place, they were able to bring all of their unwanted treasures here to exchange for stuff they needed.

Strolling around, Mu Chen and the others finally came to a stop after walking for a dozen minutes as a rather gigantic building appeared before their eyes. This was considered the largest construction within the transaction base, with the atmosphere within appearing exceedingly exuberant.

There were various large and small shops present within the building, with dazzling lineups made of various items displayed within every one of them. Spiritual lights sparkled around as unique Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiated from them. All of those items gave off an ancient flavor, clearly indicative of them being hauled out from those ancient remnants present within this Shattered Continent.

Brimming with interest, Mu Chen looked and gazed around. Wen Qingxuan had also walked into it as her gaze fluttered across the shops

present in search for the Spiritual Pills that she needed.

There were quite a few Spiritual Pills present here, with all of them giving of sweet fragrances, causing people to be unable to resist casting drooling gazes over at them. Nevertheless, those Spiritual Pills were considered as exceedingly extravagant items to them. Additionally, most of them were traded using the bartering method. Towards stuff like Spiritual Pills, the majority of the people selling were either masquerading their understanding towards them or had completely no understanding towards the pills they were selling, which lead to people being extremely easily conned towards buying falsified or counterfeit items.Therefore, the number of people that were able to afford the pills were extremely few.

Scanning her beautiful eyes across those Spiritual Qi-filled jade bottles, Wen Qingxuan was able to clearly see the origins of the medicines present within. However, what made Mu Chen feel some doubt was due to Wen Qingxuan's actions. Not only did she not search for those Spiritual Pills that were emitting dense Spiritual Qi, she had locked her gaze towards those seemingly ordinary-looking Spiritual Pills.

Finally, Wen Qingxuan's gaze rested on a somewhat broken jade bottle. With a dull yellow colour, it showed the vestiges of time that have occured to it.

"This is a bottle of Spiritual Pills I've found from a remnant. After trying it, it has a rather good effect towards Spiritual Energy recovery." The one selling this bottle of Spiritual Pills was a skinny youth, who hastily went forward to introduce them upon seeing Wen Qingxuan's gaze shooting over.

Extending her hand towards the jade bottle, Wen Qingxuan retrieved a Spiritual Pill from within. Appearing in a dark greenish splendor, the Spiritual Pill appeared as spherical as a dragon's eye. However, the density of Spiritual Qi coming from it seemed to not be comparable to those previous few Spiritual Pills that she had laid her gaze on.

"What's the price of these?" asked Wen Qingxuan, appearing to be interested in those Spiritual Pills.

"Two High-Grade Spiritual Items, one offensive and one defensive," replied the skinny youth immediately.

Hearing the youth's reply, Mu Chen immediately raised his eyebrows slightly as he thought, What a really high price! There's merely five Spiritual Pills present within this jade bottle. However, that fellow had actually wanted two High Grade Spiritual Items for it! Things like Spiritual Pills truly are extravagant.

Hesitating for a while, Wen Qingxuan decisively nodded her head while waving her hand towards the quiet young girl by the name of An Ya. With a wave of her hand, two rays of light shot out from An Ya, flying straight towards the skinny youth. Hastily receiving them, the skinny youth carefully examined them before elation subsequently gushed from his face.

Without saying a single word more, Wen Qingxuan grabbed the jade bottle, turned around and walked off.

"Those five Spiritual Pills are actually worth that price?" Mu Chen could not help asking. Although he wasn't the spendthrift one, if those two High Grade Spiritual Items were equipped to Xu Huang and the other two, they would be able to increase their strength by quite a bit.

"What do you know?" replied Wen Qingxuan with a returning glare. " The Spiritual Pills in this bottle should be Green Spiritual Pills. Not only can they rapidly recover consumed Spiritual Energy, it can even temporarily increase the strength of one's fleshly body. Truthfully speaking, it's value is even higher than this little bit."

"It can even increase the strength of one's fleshly body?" said Mu Chen in shock.

"However, wanting to obtain such an effect would require a special way of consumption. That would be consuming it with another type of Spiritual Pill, something that the fellow that sold to me was completely unaware about."

Wen Qingxuan's understanding towards Spiritual Pills was clearly much deeper than Mu Chen's. With a clench of her hand, two spherical Spiritual

Pills appeared in her hand. "In addition, there's a Lotus Spiritual Brand present on these Spiritual Pills. That's the insignia of the Pill God Clan. It also means that this bottle of Spiritual Pills came from the Pill God Clan."

"Pill God Clan?" Mu Chen gawked once more.

"Ignorance," replied Wen Qingxuan indifferently. "Within the Great Thousand Worlds, there are 3 place that produce Spiritual Pills of the highest grade, with the Pill God Clan being one of them. The other 2 are the Ancient Myriad Flower Plains and the Endless Fire Territory. The former two possessed a background spanning back countless of years, with the Endless Fire Territory popping up later. The Great Sir that came from the lower plains, the Flame Emperor has a unique style in his pill refining technique, resulting in the Spiritual Pills refined by him being things that Sovereign realm experts dream of having, but are unable to do so. This is also one of the main reasons why the Endless Fire Territory is able to becoming one of the regional Overlords of the Great Thousand Worlds within such a short span of time."

"That Flame Emperor's truly formidable," said Mu Chen while sighing in admiration.

Shooting a look at him, a faint arc curled up the corner of Wen Qingxuan's red lips, before speaking out, "Although I've yet to see the Flame Emperor in person, I've met with his daughter. Do you want me to help introduce her to you in the future?"

Hearing that, Mu Chen immediately felt awkward. At this moment, the only choice he could do was to choose to disregard her words.

With a flick of her jade-like finger, 2 Green Spiritual Pills shot towards Mu Chen and Luo Li. Sending the two a sweet smile, she said, "Don't reject me. After entering the Divine Wood Mountain, there would be quite a few huge fights. The stronger the two of you are, the greater our chances on obtaining the treasures."

Hearing that, Luo Li hesitated awhile, before nodding her head with a faint smile while replying, "Thanks, Qingxuan."

Hearing how Luo Li had addressed her, the smile present on Wen

Qingxuan's exquisite face instantly grew warmer. Compared with how she treated Mu Chen, this was a completely different appearance.

Accepting the Spiritual Pill, Mu Chen shook his head in helplessness. People who obtain benefits have weak mouths towards their benefactor.

"Let's go. We've already obtained the Spiritual Pills." Waving her hand towards everyone, Wen Qingxuan got ready to leave this place.

Hearing that, Mu Chen nodded his head in agreement. However, just as he shifted his feet, something suddenly caught his eye, causing him to turn his head around. Looking over to the depths of the building, he could sense unique fluctuations radiating from there. Showing a gesture towards Wen Qingxuan and the rest, he turned around and quickly headed over towards the building's depths.

Chapter 504: Lesser Thousand Sword Spiritual Array

The building was spacious with a wooden stage standing in the deepest region with the surroundings filled with groups of people as noise constantly came. That area was a small-scaled transaction stage. Generally speaking, those who were able to come here to do trades all possessed decent amounts of power.

Mu Chen was strolling around the transaction stage as his gaze was fixed on the stage.

There stood a youth, holding onto a bronze scroll. The scroll was in a sword shape as it was filled with traces of time. At the same time, the peculiar ripple that was being emitted from the scroll was startling.

"What is that?"

Wen Qingxuan and Luo Li spoke up with their questions of doubt as they followed up looking at the bronze scroll.

"It should be a Spiritual Array Diagram." Mu Chen answered. The ripple that was being emitted from the bronze scroll was the reason why he halted his steps and turned around. After all, he had another identity, a Spiritual Array Master. Therefore, his interest was piqued by the Spiritual Array Diagram.

Wen Qingxuan took a glance at Mu Chen and fell into her thoughts.

"Ladies and gentlemen, as you have already guessed. The scroll in my hand is indeed, a Spiritual Array Diagram." At this moment, that youth raised the scroll in his hand as his robust voice resounded, "This Spiritual Array Diagram should be a Rank 5 Spiritual Array. However, this is a Combination Diagram."

"Combination Diagram?"

When that statement was made, a soft commotion resounded from the surroundings. Many of those that were interested in it slightly focused

their attention as they directed their gazes towards the scroll in the youth's hand.

Spiritual Array Masters are classified in ranks. Once one reaches the level of Rank 5 Spiritual Array Master, they would be unpredictable. One further step and they would become Spiritual Array Grandmaster. Generally speaking, Spiritual Array Grandmasters were existences that could compete with Sovereign Realm experts.

Henceforth, there were huge differences between the weaker and stronger Rank 5 Spiritual Array Masters. Few powerful Rank 5 Spiritual Array Masters could even cause fear for experts that had already went through their Spiritual Energy Disaster or even Spirit Disaster. At the same time, there were also some Rank 5 Spiritual Array Masters that could have trouble dealing with an expert that had already gone through their Human Body Disaster.

There were all sorts of reasons for this difference. The main difference would be depended on the insight one had towards Spiritual Arrays, the second Spiritual Array Diagram.

When some powerful Rank 5 Spiritual Array Diagram falls into the hands of a powerful Rank 5 Spiritual Array Master, the power unleashed would be extremely fearsome.

Generally speaking, those powerful Spiritual Array Diagrams also had an alternate name to them, Combination Diagrams.

They were much more complicated compared to ordinary Spiritual Array Diagrams that ordinary Spiritual Array Masters could not control them, not to even mention about successfully laying it out. Naturally, once such Diagrams were successfully laid out, the might would also be astonishing.

"So it is a Combination Diagram."

Mu Chen muttered to himself as his black pupils lit up. As expected, his interest had already been lured by the Combination Diagram.

After he had entered into the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, he had not revealed his Spiritual Array Master identity. It was not that he did

not wish to use Spiritual Arrays, it was because there wasn't any suitable Spiritual Array Diagram for him. After all, the opponents that he encountered at his level were all those that were already in the Three Sovereign Disasters. Although the Spiritual Arrays that he had cultivated in the past were not too weak, he was also not able to fully display their full potential.

Let's take the Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array as an example. With his current accomplishment in the Spiritual Array field, he had fully studied the Spiritual Array Diagram. That Spiritual Array Diagram could also be considered as a Combination Diagram. It's complete form should be four lotuses. However, with his current strength, he could only unleash it at two lotuses. The Three Lotus-Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array was too powerful and it would require him to be at the level of Spiritual Array Grandmaster in order to execute it.

Therefore, the current him required a Spiritual Array that he could fully unleash it's potential. Without a doubt, this Rank 5 Combination Diagram was perfect for the current Mu Chen.

However, such a Combination Diagram was not easy to find. However, his luck had allowed him to encounter one before his eyes at this moment.

The atmosphere around the transaction stage was heated up at this moment. One could tell that there was quite a group of people that were interested in it. From their reactions, one could tell that those groups had Spiritual Array Masters in their team. However, once they communicated with the Spiritual Array Masters in their team, quite a number of them had disappointment in their eyes.

Clearly, the Spiritual Array Masters in their teams had told them that the Rank 5 Combination Diagram was too complicated for them.

"The name of this Spiritual Array Diagram is called Lesser Thousand Spiritual Spiritual Array. I suppose everyone knows the power of a Combination Diagram at this level. This was found by me in a ruin. I would suggest those Spiritual Array Masters that are not powerful enough to give up on it." The youth smiled as he continued to hold onto the

bronze scroll.

His words caused much disdain. However, no one retorted him as they all knew that the might of such a Combination Spiritual Array could rival a Rank 6 Spiritual Array of Sovereign Realm experts. Although such a Spiritual Array was extremely complicated, the strength was excellent.

"I'm auctioning this Spiritual Array Diagram in this transaction stage. All I'm asking for is 2500 points."

When he finished his speech, it attracted a second wave of uproar to the point that even Mu Chen had his brows slightly frowned. Such a price was not low at this point for them. After all, they only possessed 3700 points, whereas the price of it was 2500. It was impossible for ordinary teams to afford such a price.

Everyone started talking amongst themselves around the transaction stage, with many people shaking their heads inwardly and gave up on it. Although the Spiritual Array Diagram was powerful, the requirement was too demanding. Even if they had managed to obtain it, it was also hard for them to successfully execute it.

Mu Chen pondered for a brief moment before looking at his team. He really was tempted by it. However, the points belonged to the team, so he could not spend it alone.

"I have no objections," Luo Li smiled.

"You are the Captain, you make the decision." Xu Huang and the other two said as they smiled.

"Thanks." Mu Chen nodded his head. He no longer hesitated and declared, "2600."

His voice broke the discussion of others as many startled gazes were directed at him. After they had taken a good look at Mu Chen, they started to discuss again.

"What team is this?"

"From their Academy Emblem, it should be the Northern Heavens

Spiritual Academy..."

"Oh? Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy? Could it be the team of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy that had managed to enter the Top 16?"

"It should be them. Otherwise, how could they afford to many points?"

"..."

In the discussions, many people understood the identity of Mu Chen's team and their gazes turned a little more heavy.

The youth that was on the transaction stage threw an astonished gaze as he shouted out loud, "The team from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy bids 2600 points. Is there any higher bids?"

There were no responses to his question. Many teams could only shrug their shoulders in helplessness. The price was already very high, not to mention that they did not have the capability to lay out such a complicated Spiritual Array. Therefore, there was no need to exchange such an item with the points that they had gathered with so much effort.

The youth on the stage helplessly smiled from the response. Looks like his intention to earn a big sum had fallen. However, at least he had gotten a high price for it.

"Since there was no one else bidding, then this scroll will belong to the team from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy." He waved his hand as he looked at Mu Chen and smiled, "Respected..."

"Three thousand."

An indifferent voice rang out, which caused that youth to halt his voice. It had also caused many people to raise their heads as they looked at the direction that the voice was coming from.

Mu Chen also knitted his brows together as he raised his head. On the second level of the building, there were some shadows standing in the darkness. Standing at the front, there were two people leaning against the pillar. They were smiling as they looked at Mu Chen and his group.

The one on the left had a skinny body with blond hair. He had a charming appearance with a smile hanging on his lips. Sharpness was being emitted from his pair of eyes. On the right, it was a robust man whose figure was comparable to a bear. His bare arms were filled with scars, emitting dense bloodlust.

The two of them were looking at Mu Chen, who was on the first floor. When their gazes met, there was a chill in their circulating between their gazes.

When everyone around the stage saw those two figures, they were startled for a brief moment. They could not help twitching their brows. Those two fellows actually showed themselves. Furthermore, it seems they were aiming at the team from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy... Looks like there's a show for them to watch. This team from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy wasn't your ordinary group. Likewise, those two weren't ordinary as well. Recently, there were many powerful teams that fell by their hands.

Mu Chen's brows wrinkled together as he could sense the peculiar ripple from the two of them. Clearly, the two of them were very powerful. However, he had never seen them before nor is there any Academy Emblem on them...

But from their eyes, those two didn't seem to be too friendly to them.

"Those two are the leaders of the Academy Alliance... Violet Halberd - Qin Feng and Bear King - Liu Xiong. It appears that the two of them are coming for you." Wen Qingxuan's jade-like fingers fiddled with her hair as she removed the doubt for Mu Chen.

Mu Chen's eyes slightly narrowed.

The Academy Alliance?

That alliance that had sent someone to snatch the Divine Quota from him earlier?

This bunch of people were really pestering them.

Mu Chen helplessly flung his mouth as a chill began to circulate in his

black pupils.

Chapter 505: Got It

The atmosphere around the transaction stage became a little solidified as many gazes were rotating between Mu Chen, Qin Feng and Liu Xiong. In this period of time, the Academy Alliance rose up in this Great Spiritual Academy Tournament. They originated from different academies. The main crucial point was that these academies were not the best. Contrary, they were small to medium-sized academies that had only sent out one team for the tournament.

Yet, when these small to medium-sized academies joined together as an alliance, they defeated many teams originating from powerful academies in the short time of a few months. Thereafter, they snatched points from those swaggering teams. At the same time, many people started to understand. In terms of strength as individuals, those small to medium-sized academies did not have much advantage. However, the instant they got together, they could become extremely powerful under someone's leadership.

After all, no matter how small an academy was, they still had one or two outstanding students. After all, this world was not lacking in terms of talent.

Rumor had it that the Academy Alliance had four leaders. Qin Feng and Liu Xiong, who stood before them, were only ranked as the third and fourth. Above them, there were two other leaders. The one whose name that rang out the most was the Ghost King - Mo Yu, standing at the second rank. Some time ago, in a ruin struggle, a team from the Martial Spiritual Academy was defeated by the team that was led by Mo Yu. From that battle, his name became renown.

However, though Mo Yu's fame was well-known, those that knew about the inside story knew that within the Academy Alliance, the most powerful was the leader, who did not make much of an appearance. He was the one that created the Academy Alliance. No one knew what happened within the process of it, but everyone knew that the three other prideful leaders were filled with respect for that Head.

Everyone knew that the three of them possessed strength, as well as means. However, before the Head, they could only maintain their respect. Therefore, even a kid could tell that the Head of the Academy Alliance was not someone easy to deal with.

That had always been how the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament had been. Talents that appeared in the tournament were way too much.

Mu Chen stood before the transaction stage as he maintained a calm composure. His black pupils were looking at the two youths that stood on the second floor. Likewise, the two of them were also looking at him from above as they showed a little ridicule in their smile.

"Haha, I have long heard of Captain Mu Chen of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy for a long time. I never expected that we would meet here. It is truly, my honor." That blond-haired youth Qin Feng looked at Mu Chen as he smiled, "I never expected that Captain Mu Chen would also be interested in this Spiritual Array Diagram. I suppose it was me being rude."

Although his tone was as shown, there wasn't any hint of apology in his eyes.

Mu Chen also smiled in return, "It was an auctionzstyle of trade. There is nothing to be rude about."

"3500." Mu Chen looked at the youth on the transaction stage and gave his bid. Shortly after, he shrugged his shoulders, "We don't have much points. If Leader Qin Feng could outbid me, I'll have to give up in the competition for the Spiritual Array Diagram."

They only had a total of 3700 points, so the bid that Mu Chen had given was already the limit. Similarly, the price was extremely high. There weren't many teams that could be this bold.

"Truly rich and imposing."

When Qin Feng heard Mu Chen's offer, he smacked his lips as he stared at Mu Chen. He smiled as he waved his hand, "However, I have to apologise. We are determined to win the Spiritual Array Diagram. 4000..."

Woah.

Commotion began to break out in the surrounding stage. Many teams had their faces filled with astonishment. Those 4000 points could basically guarantee any team into the Top 16. The Academy Alliance was really rich, as they easily took out that amount without any hesitation. 4000, just how many teams have they robbed and how many bitter battles have they gone through just to obtain that amount?

The eyes of Xu Huang and the rest also had anger surfacing in their eyes. Was the Academy Alliance doing it on purpose?

Luo Li also slightly knitted her brows. However, she did not speak a word and only directed her gaze at Mu Chen.

Mu Chen smiled as he gave a deep look at Qin Feng, before shaking his head, "Let's go. It seems like there isn't any fate in me and the Spiritual Array Diagram."

As he spoke, he had intended to turn around and leave. Although he wanted the Spiritual Array Diagram, the offer of his opponent had far surpassed their bottomline.

"4500."

Just when he turned around, a clear voice suddenly resounded with arrogance. Including Mu Chen, everyone was startled. Thereafter, he directed his gaze towards the dazzling beauty.

Wen Qingxuan's slender jade-like fingers were fiddling with her hair. Her gaze that was filled with arrogance lightly swept towards Qin Feng and Liu Xiong, who stood on the second floor. Her arrogance made others seem like ants before her.

"Wen Qingxuan?"

Wen Qingxuan's reputation was not something that Mu Chen could compete against. The moment she spoke, everyone's gazes shifted onto her almost instantly. Naturally, there were many that had heat in their eyes, as well. Towards the most dazzling girl in the current tournament, there was no one that did not know of her.

"What are you doing?" Mu Chen was also taken aback by Wen Qingxuan's sudden action. Shortly after, he frowned his brows. Although they were currently working together, the cooperation between them was just to take what they each required. Therefore, although he knew that this girl beside him was someone that held the most amount of points, he did not even have any intention to ask her for help, since he was well-aware that the amount of points was not something that any other team could overlook.

"It's not your points, why do you care?" However, faced with Mu Chen's question, Wen Qingxuan could not be as gentle as she was with Luo Li. Therefore, she spoke as she looked at My Chen with pride.

Mu Chen could only remain silence.

"Wen Qingxuan..."

Qin Feng knitted his brows as he stared at Wen Qingxuan. "There isn't any grudges between our Academy Alliance and you. Why are you partaking in this?"

Although the fame of the Academy Alliance wasn't weak, they also held fear towards this team who held the most points in the entire tournament.

"I'm fond of the Spiritual Array Diagram. Can I not?" Wen Qingxuan responded.

Qin Feng's eyes flashed with anger. Just when he was about to speak, a deep voice suddenly resounded from the darkness behind him, "Since Captain Wen Qingxuan has her eyes on this Spiritual Array Diagram, we of the Academy Alliance shall not snatch something that someone is fond of."

From the darkness, a figure slowly walked out, instantly revealing himself under the light.

It was a youth that wore grey clothes. His appearance was ordinary, but his pupils were grey, as if there wasn't any life in him. His line-of-sight was directed towards Mu Chen's group as he lightly smiled, appearing friendly.

"Ghost King - Mo Yu!"

An astonished voice rang out. No one had expected that the three leaders of the Academy Alliance would appear at the same place.

Mu Chen was also looking at the grey-clothed youth as his pair of eyes narrowed. From the latter, he could sense a peculiar fluctuation coming from him.

Wen Qingxuan took a glance at Mo Yu, she did not speak. With a flick of her fingers, the Academy Plaque flew towards the youth that stood on the transaction stage. The latter grabbed onto it and quickly extracted the points that he should be getting, before returning it to Wen Qingxuan along with the Spiritual Array Diagram.

Wen Qingxuan grabbed onto those items and stored them without taking a look at them. Thereafter, she turned around and walked away.

At the sight of this, Mu Chen took another short glance with the grey-clothed youth, before turning around and left.

Seeing as they were leaving, Qin Feng knitted his brows together as he unwillingly said, "Are we going to let them have the Diagram? If they really manage to lay out the Spiritual Array, it would be a huge problem for us."

"There's no point. Since Wen Qingxuan has acted, it's impossible for us to compete with her." Mo Yu made a light smile, before continuing, "However, I have never expected that Wen Qingxuan would actually help Mu Chen to such a degree. That was 4500 points. I expect her team to drop out of Top 16 from first..."

"Why would she be willing to do it? Could it be that she has fallen for that Mu Chen?" Qin Feng said as his tone contained unconcealable envy. Being able to make such a prideful beauty to sacrifice her spot in the top, this accomplishment was something that was enough to make other guys feel unbalanced.

"Not too sure about that." Mo Yu shook his head as he smiled, "Based on this incident, who knows howmany of the guys were interested in Wen

Qingxuan would be disappointed. Go spread the news. Mu Chen and his group should be heading for the Divine Wood Mountain. This time, there are quite a number of powerful figures gathered at the Divine Wood Mountain. If this news goes out, I suppose it would cause them some trouble..."

Qin Feng's eyes lit up. Thereafter, he could not control his laughter. This time, Mu Chen would be unlucky.

...

After exiting the pavilion, Wen Qingxuan made a flick with her fingers and the Spiritual Array Diagram was shot towards Mu Chen.

Mu Chen grabbed onto it as he looked at the Spiritual Array Diagram that still held some remnant fragrance. He spoke helplessly, "This gift seems to be a little too expensive. Because of it, your team has fallen out of Top 16 from the top."

"It's just 4500 points. If I want to earn it back, it would only take a short while." Wen Qingxuan's charming eyes glanced towards Mu Chen, "As long as you are clear that I do not have other feelings towards you. It is just an investment. Therefore, you should watch out. If you cannot deal with this Spiritual Array, watch out that I'll deal with you!"

Mu Chen smiled as he brushed the bronze scroll. He no longer hesitated as he said, "I am grateful for you to have such expectations of me. But since your team fell from 1st Place, I will naturally send you back there..."

As he finish talking, he stored the Spiritual Array Diagram and moved forward, holding onto Luo Li.

"Hehe, Big Brother Mu Chen is indeed resolute." Pin'er and Le'er chuckled, "Captain, don't you agree?"

Wen Qingxuan looked at his back figure as she flung her rosy lips aside.

"Boasting without shame."

Chapter 506: Divine Wood Mountain

Divine Wood Mountain, it was a place that, even back in ancient times, was a powerful force, even within the Great Thousand World. Even in the current situation of the Great Thousand World, it was a huge power that no one could underestimate.

Therefore, everyone partaking in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament was attracted by the inheritance from the remnants.

Every other remnant was too inferior compared to a remnant of such a level.

Thus, when Mu Chen and his group arrived at this region, they were awed by the majestic appearance as there were countless streaks of light rushing over from many different directions that their lines-of-sight covered. The sonic booms caused by their speeds were endless.

Mu Chen and his group stood on a mountain peak. They bitterly smiled as they inhaled a deep breath from the scene before them.

From this scale before him, there were probably tens of thousands of team that came here.

This was a frightful amount of people. Although all the teams that participated in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament was not gathered here, it was at least a considerable amount of people...

From the looks of this scale, the few hundreds of teams that Mu Chen's group encountered in the Divine Wood Palace was incomparable.

"This is what we call a spectacle."

Mu Chen looked at the earth-shattering amount of lights, he could not help inhaling a mouthful of air.

"In this Shattered Continent, the Divine Wood Palace could be considered one of the pinnacle remnants." Wen Qingxuan nodded her head in acknowledgement.

"One of them?" Mu Chen's brows twitched as he could tell that there

was a hidden message in Wen Qingxuan's words.

"Could it be that you thought that in this vast continent, the Divine Wood Palace was unequaled? The vastness of the Shattered Continent is not something that you can imagine. Generally speaking, this Shattered Continent was just an edge of it. Furthermore, even on this edge, the Wooden Divine Palace was not unrivaled. There are still other powers that could be compared to it," said Wen Qingxuan.

"Since the Divine Wood Palace had left behind it's inheritance, it goes the same for other pinnacle forces. Naturally, there were inheritances from those forces left behind. However, compared to those hidden forces, the Divine Wood Palace was easier to discover."

Mu Chen's face was grave. This Remnant Continent was simple too frightening. Just a corner of it could rival the Northern Heavens Continent. It really was worthy of being one of the biggest continents in the Great Thousand World.

"How did the Remnant Continent shatter?" Xu Huang could not resist questioning.

"It was said that it was because of a fearsome war that affected the entire Great Thousand World. No, it could not be considered as a war, it should be an apocalypse... In that battle, there were many pinnacle forces in the Great Thousand World that fell along with countless pinnacle existences..." Rare graveness appeared in Wen Qingxuan's pupils as she continued, "I have no idea what happened in that primordial time. All I know is that in that apocalypse, the Great Thousand World was nearly destroyed..."

Xu Huang and the rest had their faces paled. The Great Thousand World was nearly destroyed? Isn't that a little too exaggerating?

Mu Chen's face changed as well. However, he recalled the Foreign Fiend Tribe that the White Dragon Sovereign had spoken of back then. Those things were not lifeforms of the Great Thousand World. No one knew their origins, as they invaded without any restraints, attacking the Great Thousand World. At the same time, they also seized control of the Lower

Planes in the Great Thousand World. Everywhere they went, they brought forth annihilation of all life.

Whereas the White Dragon Sovereign was a survivor of such planes and escaped from the Great Thousand World.

He wondered if that so-called "apocalypse" had anything to do with those mysterious Foreign Fiend Tribes.

"Let's move. Up ahead of us should be where the Divine Wood Mountain resides. Let's go and take a look. There are actually so many powerful figures that came this time around." Mu Chen shook his head as he shook the thoughts off. No matter what those creatures were, it had nothing to do with the current him. Furthermore, he did not have the qualification to stop those things as the current him was still too weak. He still had to work hard to protect the things that he wanted to protect, not to mention about saving the world...

He took the lead and moved, turning into a streak of light as he merged into that astronomical streak of light and sped off towards the distant.

Dozen of minutes later, Mu Chen's figure gradually slowed before landing onto a huge tree that was hundreds of feet in height. His gaze was focused up ahead. On those layers of mountain ranges, there was a gigantic green mountain that quietly stood, as if it was an ancient dormant huge beast. It was emitting the scent of primordial that gave others a sensation of returning back to the ancient times.

"So this is the Divine Wood Mountain..."

Mu Chen focused on the enormous mountain. The mountain was way too huge. Standing there, they felt as if they were ants. That mountain seemed to be emitting vigorous life force. The greenry made it look as if it would never wither.

"But something about this doesn't seem right..." Mu Chen narrowed both his eyes. Although the huge mountain stood before him, he felt as if he could never touch it.

"If there isn't any special means, no one can enter into the Divine Wood

Mountain. Even if you can see it, you can never approach it." Wen Qingxuan lightly said from the side.

Mu Chen's gaze closely stared at the ancient mountain and instantly narrowed his eyes as he vaguely felt that around the ancient mountain, it seemed to be veiled. However, there were also ripples that could make the hearts of others grow cold. That's... the ripple of a Spiritual Array.

"This Divine Wood Mountain should be covered with a rather fearsome Spiritual Array." Mu Chen slowly said.

"Oh?" Wen Qingxuan's brows twitched. She was not a Spiritual Array Master. Thus, she had no way to sense the ripples that belonged to Spiritual Arrays.

"This ancient Spiritual Array is rather terrifying... Not even Sovereign experts could easily intrude. However, under the elapse of time, there is some damage to it. Otherwise, it would be impossible for me to sense it." Mu Chen smiled.

"Seems like you really are a Spiritual Array Master." Wen Qingxuan's phoenix-like eyes narrowed. The corner of her eyes were extremely charming. The instant she narrowed her eyes, it would emit an alluring feeling to it. This woman definitely possessed the capability of becoming a calamity. However, Mu Chen did not have any other thoughts as there was already a calamity that rested in his heart...

Mu Chen did not acknowledge nor deny and only smiled. He was actually very appreciative of Wen Qingxuan's behaviour and style. Such as her actions yesterday that brought him the Spiritual Array Diagram with a huge amount of points yesterday. That action of hers was rather charismatic. She was well-aware how she could benefit the most from their cooperation.

Although it seemed that she had paid quite a bit of price, it managed to make Mu Chen owe her a favor. Just this point alone, Mu Chen had no way of denying it.

It was best to become partners with such a person. Likewise, if such a person became his enemy, it would be extremely terrifying. So much so

that even Mu Chen did not wish to have her as his enemy.

What this girl possessed was not simply her devastating beauty or temperament.

In the time that they spent talking, there were constant sonic booms that resounded up in the sky as countless streaks of light flew over. Thereafter, those streaks of light turned into human figures as they landed in the surrounding mountains. In less than an hour, the huge trees were gradually filled with people.

Generally speaking, all those that managed to reach here at this timing possessed some capability. Furthermore, Mu Chen could tell that in terms of teams, those teams experienced a huge amount of strengthening compared to when the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament had began.

Clearly, in such a short amount of time, the strength of many teams were rapidly enhancing.

In that ocean-like amount of teams, Mu Chen could vaguely sense concealed, but clear sharpness and dangerous ripples. Without saying, many powerful teams had also appeared.

"It would require all Six Divine Wood Quotas in order to unlock this Divine Wood Mountain before us..." Luo Li swept her charming eyes around as she continued, "The Divine Quotas should be the key to this Divine Wood Mountain."

Mu Chen slightly nodded his head. With a grasp of his hand, the greenish wooden plaque appeared in his hand. He rubbed his palms on the plaque. He clearly knew that there was a Lesser Divine Art in the wooden plaque. Did that mean that the other five that had obtained the Divine Plaques had also obtained a kind of Lesser Divine Art?

If that was the case, then he would have to be cautious when dealing with those fellows. Mu Chen was well-aware of the might of a Divine Art. Even if he had already gone through the Human Body Disaster, he would still suffer grave injuries if he were to be hit by a Divine Art.

"Mm?"

Just when Mu Chen was submerged with thoughts in his heart, his eyes suddenly focused and looked into the distance. There was a blood streak of light that shot towards their direction and turned into ten figures that fell onto the mountain peak. From the familiar ripples, Mu Chen could instantly recognise that it was Xue Tiandou and his party.

"Those fellows really are eyeing the Divine Wood Mountain." A chill flashed within Mu Chen's eyes as he looked at them.

When Mu Chen noticed Xue Tiandou and his party, the other party had likewise sensed their presence. Chilling gazes were being exchanged from both parties.

"Pshhhhhh!"

Not long after Xue Tiandou and his team appeared, another sonic boom resounded. Everyone directed their lines-of-sight over and saw a huge amount of people coming at their direction, before landing on the huge trees. The three that was leading that huge group was the three leaders of the Academy Alliance that they had encountered yesterday.

"Haha, it seems that the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament is finally getting interesting. However, how could we, the Saint Spiritual Academy, miss out on the fun?"

Among the endless racket, a laughter resounded. Shortly after, frightening levels of Spiritual Energy spread out from far away and ten human figures flew over and attracting many gazes at the same time.

"Saint Spiritual Academy..."

Mu Chen narrowed both his eyes and looked ahead. Those fellows really did show up.

It seems that the Divine Wood Mountain remnant really was filled with experts at this point of time.

Chapter 507: Wang Zhong

Dozens of figure walked on the sky under the countless gazes as they approached and hovered above this region, which attracted countless amount of attention.

Mu Chen's line-of-sight was also directed over. Shortly after, his attention was focused onto a human figure, it was a youth that wore a white gown. His longer hair was fluttering in the wind. His white gown and black hair made him confident and at ease. A brilliant smile hung on his charming face, which made him look especially friendly.

"He should be that Head Holy Son of the Four Holy Sons in the Saint Spiritual Academy, Wang Zhong, right?" Mu Chen stared at that person as he spoke. He could sense a decent amount of Spiritual Energy ripples from the latter. The ripples were much more powerful compared to experts that had gone through their Spiritual Energy Disaster.

This person was definitely powerful.

Wen Qingxuan, who stood by the side, gave a glance at this person before nodding her head, "Yeah, he is Wang Zhong. Among the Four Holy Sons of the Saint Spiritual Academy, his fame is the strongest. Furthermore, he is the oldest amongst them. Prior to this, I have cooperated with him once."

"Oh?" Mu Chen was startled, as he never expected Wen Qingxuan to cooperate with Wang Zhong before.

"Then, is he consider as one of your cooperation partners?" Mu Chen smiled.

"For the sake of benefit, it was only that period of time that we cooperated." Wen Qingxuan gave an alluring smile towards Mu Chen, "What about it? You're not feeling too comfortable in your heart? Rest assured, I am your cooperating partner now. Even if you started a conflict with him, I will help your team."

Mu Chen rubbed his nose, "What you say now is what made me feel

uneasy. Doesn't that mean that if you were to cooperate with other people after this, you would say the same thing to them?"

When Mu Chen finished his speech, Wen Qingxuan's brows instantly knitted together. But very quickly, her brows eased out. She maintained her smile as she looked at Mu Chen, except that there was obviously a blade hidden in her smile, "That's for sure. At that time, you would be worthless to us. Not only will I say the same thing, I will still chop you up, do you believe me?"

"Save it for the Finals." Mu Chen felt his hair stand up on the end from Wen Qingxuan's gaze as he gave a dry smile. Shortly after, his expression changed as he sensed a gaze that was filled with bloodlust coming from the direction of Wang Zhong. Shifting his gaze, he found a familiar figure.

Behind Wang Zhong, there was a familiar team. The leader of the team was Xia Hou, the one that was gravely injured by him back then in the Divine Wood Palace.

"That fellow is really fortunate to be still living."

He couldn't help smiling from Xia Hou's cold gaze. However, he was not worried about it. Before he passed the Human Body Disaster, Xia Hou could still cause some trouble for him. But now, if they were to fight again, Mu Chen would definitely let him know how huge the difference between them is.

Only then, did Mu Chen realise that there were three teams from the Saint Spiritual Academy.

Aside from Ji Xuan, the other three of the Four Holy Sons had gathered here. From the force that was gathered by them, it was quite decent.

Just when Mu Chen and Xia Hou were exchanging looks, Wang Zhong shifted his head over as he directed his gaze towards Mu Chen's direction. When he noticed Wen Qingxuan, his eyes lit up in an instant. Instantly, the smile on his face turned even more brilliant as he approached Mu Chen together with Xia Hou.

"Haha, I never expected to see you here, Qingxuan." Wang Zhong

approached as he smiled towards Wen Qingxuan. Within his tone, there was joy and gentleness.

When Wen Qingxuan heard how Wang Zhong had addressed her, her brows slightly wrinkled, before nodding her head.

"You're here for the Divine Wood Palace, right? From the looks of it, there are many experts here. If one wishes to obtain a treasure here, it would definitely not be easy. Why don't we cooperate again?" Wang Zhong smiled. His smile contained confidence. It was the confidence that he had towards his strength. Even with so many experts gathered, Wang Zhong was not an easy target.

Mu Chen helplessly smiled as he was disregarded. He could notice, at least, that Wang Zhong was obviously interested in Wen Qingxuan. However, it was not unexpected, as he knew that with Wen Qingxuan's charms, it was not easy for guys to disregard her.

Whereas this Wang Zhong really was a confident person. He should be well-informed that he and Wen Qingxuan are working together. However, he paid no mind to it and said it before his face. With their formation, no matter how you looked at it, they were stronger then Mu Chen. If Wen Qingxuan chose to join them, it would greatly boost their success.

Wen Qingxuan was also startled by Wang Zhong's words and her brows were immediately wrinkled together. If it was based by strength, Wang Zhong was indeed a much more suitable partner for her. However, if it were to be based on her feelings, she would rather prefer Mu Chen and Luo Li. After being together for some time, she had some understanding towards Mu Chen. Although that fellow appeared to have just passed through his Human Body Disaster, he was still quite reliable. The crucial point was that she did not need to worry that in face of benefits, she would be betrayed.

Within the Remnants of the Divine Wood Palace, that would definitely be an extremely attractive treasure. It was not that she had not seen betrayal before the temptations of treasure. Although she was not afraid of it, but constantly being cautious was tiring. Not knowing why, she did

not have such worry or cautiousness towards Mu Chen.

Therefore, she was in a difficult position from Wang Zhong's suggestion. Then, she shifted her gaze towards Mu Chen. However, Mu Chen had his head turned and was joking around with Luo Li at the moment. He was not the slightest concerned about this matter, which made her grit her teeth.

"That bastard!"

Wen Qingxuan gritted her teeth as she shifted her gaze. Shortly after, a bashful smile appeared on her face as she pointed towards Mu Chen with her jade-like fingers, "Sorry about it. I am currently working together with Mu Chen and his team. Furthermore, he was the leader in our cooperation. So if you want to work together, you have to look for him."

Mu Chen and Luo Li's smile instantly froze as they turned their heads over in astonishment, and looked at Wen Qingxuan, who had an innocent look on her face.

Wang Zhong's smile instantly froze on his face. He had worked together with Wen Qingxuan in the past and was well-aware of the latter's character of dealing with matters. She had a strong character that, even when she was working with other people, she would want to take the lead. But Mu Chen was actually leading in her cooperation with him?

Wang Zhong inhaled a mouthful of air in his heart, before looking at Mu Chen with a brilliant smile, "I suppose this must be Captain Mu Chen? Haha, I have long heard of your name. Knowing your reputation truly is uncomparable to meeting you in person."

Mu Chen forced a smile in return as he could not wish digging out Wen Qingxuan's eyes, who put him in a difficult position and was currently looking at him.

"Captain Mu Chen, I wonder what do you think of my suggestion?" Wang Zhong smiled, "We are of the Five Great Academies. If we three parties joined hands, I believe it would definitely benefit us."

Mu Chen took a glance at Wang Zhong, before looking at Xia Hou,

whose face was filled with a cold look towards him. The Saint Spiritual Academy was in such a miserable position that was caused by them. He refused to believe that Wang Zhong was unaware of such facts. And if he was aware of such an incident, it was impossible for him not to have any barriers in his heart. But even so, he still put down his pride to seek cooperation with them. Such a person had a deep scheming heart, definitely not the kind of comrade that he could entrust his back to.

Mu Chen did not wish to be concerned of having his back stabbed while facing an enemy.

He could only smile and answer, "Captain Wang Zhong, the formation of your group is too luxurious, your strength is too powerful. Your group attracts too much attention and we only wish to take a look in the remnant. With your powerful group, it would not be beneficial to us instead."

Wang Zhong's face could not help twitching as a chill flashed deep in his eyes. Mu Chen's excuse was simply unbelievable. That fellow did not even bother to think of a convincing excuse to refuse. It was already obvious that Mu Chen was unwilling to work together with them.

"You simply do not know how death is written!" Xia Hou said with a chill. The members of the Saint Spiritual Academy also looked at Mu Chen with a chill in their eyes.

When Mu Chen heard his words, he could only smile in reply, "It seems that the lesson from before was not enough for you."

Xia Hou's expression changed as his eyes grew colder.

Wang Zhong waved his hand to obstruct Xia Hou as he stared at Mu Chen. The brilliant smile on his face gradually dulled, "It seems that Captain Mu Chen is looking down on our Saint Spiritual Academy?"

Mu Chen helplessly exclaimed as he looked at Wang Zhong, "I do not have any thoughts of working together with you. If your group could pull away, I have no complaints nor would I obstruct you from doing so."

Wang Zhong stared at Mu Chen as chill rushed forth in the depths of

his eyes. Faint killing intent was being emitted from his body and behind him, the three teams of the Saint Spiritual Academy filled their surrounding bodies with majestic Spiritual Energy. Clearly, they had the intention for battle.

When Luo Li, Xu Huang and the rest saw that, they took half a step forth with icy faces as well.

The atmosphere of both parties turned hostile. This caused a considerable amount of attention to be directed towards their direction. A majority of them were looking as if they were watching a movie. After all, both parties were not nameless nobodies. The moment they fought, the scene would definitely be extremely interesting.

Wang Zhong stared at Mu Chen and suddenly smiled. He extended his hand out and patted Mu Chen's shoulders, "Since Captain Mu Chen does not wish to work with us, then I will not force you. I hope, Captain Mu Chen, that this trip will go smoothly for you. However, it would be extremely dangerous in this round of treasure hunting, I hope that Captain Mu Chen will be cautious."

"I thank Captain Wang Zhong for your reminder." Mu Chen nodded with smile on his face.

Wang Zhong shook his head and left. However, when he turned around, the smile on his face completely disappeared and raging killing intent flashed in the depth of his eyes.

Mu Chen looked at the leaving figures of Wang Zhong's group, before narrowing his eyes. Shortly after, he saw Xue Tiandou, who was coldly watching by the side, taking joy in his calamity. The Academy Alliance could not help flinging their mouths aside. That's just great, all of them are his enemies.

It seems that this trip of theirs to the Divine Wood Palace would be quite exciting.

Chapter 508: Wu Yingying

Looking at the leaving silhouette of Wang Zhong and his group, Wen Qingxuan chuckled towards Mu Chen, "Looks like you have another enemy... Sorry about that, I have brought troubles for you."

Although it was an apology, Mu Chen did not feel any sincerity from her words. On the contrary, he sensed more of her taking joy in his calamity. This made him stare at her in a foul mood as he cast his lips aside, "Our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy did not have a good relationship with the Saint Spiritual Academy to begin with. Even without this rub, the battle would definitely break out between us after entering the Divine Wood Palace."

He, on the other hand, had seen through it. Although he did not have any grudges with Wang Zhong in the past, based on his character that the latter had shown, there shouldn't be any possibility of them being able to coexist. Therefore, even if Mu Chen had not offended him, as long as Wang Zhong had the chance, this person would definitely not be lenient towards him.

Therefore, Mu Chen did not feel that if it wasn't for Wen Qingxuan, they could coexist peacefully.

Wen Qingxuan's brows slightly jumped. Clearly she was a little astonished by Mu Chen being able to get over it so easily. She smiled, "Since you are so magnanimous, it would make me seem like a troublemaker instead."

"How would I dare?" Mu Chen rolled is eyes at her, before pulling Luo Li's slender hands and said with contentment, "After all, not everyone would be so good at understanding others like my Luo Li..."

Hearing his words, Wen Qingxuan could not help having her brows twitch. Shortly after, she extended her hand out to pull onto Luo Li's other hand and smiled, "Indeed, this is why I'm fond of Luo Li as well. Why don't you stinking men move far away from her. No matter what the condition is, I will also agree to it."

"Really any condition?" Mu Chen smiled as he checked out Wen Qingxuan's elegant and seductive figure.

From Mu Chen's gaze, the smile on Wen Qingxuan's face became even more charming as she replied, "Why don't you try and tell me? If you don't say, how will I know if I will agree to it?"

Staring at Wen Qingxuan, Mu Chen could tell that there were hints of slyness and jokes. On the spot, he shook his head. This girl was not a nobody. Who knew when she would dig a hole for him to jump into. If he was not cautious, he feared that not even his bones would be left.

"Coward." Seeing as Mu Chen did not fall for her trick, Wen Qingxuan cast her lips to the side as she said in disdain.

Seeing as the both of them are constantly against each other, Luo Li could not help smiling helplessly.

Mu Chen disregarded Wen Qingxuan's provocation as he shifted his gaze towards his surroundings. As time passed, the amount of teams gathered at this area increased. The majestic scene did look spectacular.

"Six Divine Wood Quotas. I believe that the three other parties are in possession of one each." Mu Chen looked towards Xue Tiandou, the Academy Alliance, as well as Wang Zhong. As he himself is in possession of one, he could vaguely sense the familiar ripples coming from them.

Shifting to a serious topic, Wen Qingxuan no longer fought with Mu Chen as she swept her gaze around. "Including the one you have, there is a total of four here. If we want to disable the layer of Spiritual Array around the Divine Wood Mountain, we still require two other Divine Wood Quotas."

"I wonder, who has the last two?" Mu Chen said solemnly. Those with the capability to obtain a Wooden Divine Quota were definitely not weaklings.

"Wait and we'll find out. Since they fought for the Divine Wood Quota, they would definitely come here. Otherwise, the Quota would be useless." Luo Li smiled.

Mu Chen nodded and spoke no further as he quietly waited for the owner of the other two Quotas to appear.

As time passed, this location became more and more bustling. All the teams were staring, waiting for the colossal Divine Wood Mountain to be unlocked.

Mu Chen stood on the peak of a huge tree with both of his eyes closed. Roughly ten minutes later, his expression changed as his tightly shut eyes opened, directing his gaze towards the west and east. There were two sonic booms that resounded from the two different directions.

Suuuuu!

Under the countless gazes, two streaks of light shot towards this region as they slowed down upon approaching. The lights weakened as two groups of people were revealed before everyone.

On the left side, there were roughly four teams with different Academy Emblems on their chests. Clearly, they were not from the same academy. However, the shocking fact was that every single one of them were emitting rather powerful Spiritual Energy ripples.

"It's the Four Seas Spiritual Academies."

When Wen Qingxuan saw the four teams, her eyes flashed with astonishment.

"Four Seas Spiritual Academies?" Mu Chen was startled as astonishment was reflected on his eyes as well. The so-called "Four Seas Spiritual Academies" was not one Spiritual Academy. They were four collective Spiritual Academies. The four academies were named North, South, East and West Sea, respectively. Thus, they were known as the Four Seas Spiritual Academies by others.

There was something special about the four academies. Individually, they have not reached the level of pinnacle Spiritual Academies. However, when the four academies combined together, they could compete with the five Great Spiritual Academies.

That was because the founder of the Four Seas Spiritual Academies was

the same person.

The cultivation techniques had similarities. Therefore, if they were to join hands, their power would absurdly increase.

All along, the Four Seas Spiritual Academies have not been participating the Great Spiritual Academy Tournaments because of internal reasons. However, no one expected them to appear this time around...

"This Great Spiritual Academy Tournament truly has hiding dragons and couching tigers..." Mu Chen sighed. As time passed, all those powerful teams that were concealing themselves started to appear. God-knows how many black horses there would be when the final battle comes.

"This round of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament could be considered the most intense in the recent years." Wen Qingxuan also nodded in acknowledgement. In the past, although the tournaments were harsh, the five Great Spiritual Academies could still have obvious advantages. But this time around, their advantages were much weaker.

"I'm afraid that the five Great Spiritual Academies won't be able to be obtain the top five ranks this time round." Luo Li said softly.

In previous Great Spiritual Academy Tournaments, aside from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, the four other Great Spiritual Academies all clenched the top positions. Perhaps in this tournament, it would no longer be the same, since the strength of the teams participating were simply too powerful.

Mu Chen nodded his head as he turned towards the west. The team that was approaching from the rest had also shown themselves.

When that batch appeared, Mu Chen could not help being stunned for a brief moment. The leader of that team was a girl that wore a scarlet-red dress, and was holding onto a crescent blade that was even bigger than her height. The scarlet blade's body looked as if it was drenched in blood. The girl had a fair and charming oval-like face, long hair that was tied into a ponytail and under her waist, was her swaying bottom.

It was a girl that appeared to have quite the personality, from her looks.

"Mhm? It's her?" When Wen Qingxuan and Luo Li saw that girl, they exclaimed in surprise, as if they had met her before.

"It's her?"

Mu Chen also cried out in surprise. However, compared to Wen Qingxuan and Luo Li, his tone was a little weird. Furthermore, his face turned ugly when he saw that girl...

"You have seen her before?" Luo Li was curious as she looked at Mu Chen. That red-dressed girl was someone she had met in the Spiritual Road and it was towards the end of it. At that time, Mu Chen was already expelled from the Spiritual Road. So how would he know that red-dressed girl?

The corner of Mu Chen's lips twitched as he dryly laughed, "I knew her way earlier than you... She was the first person I saw in the Spiritual Road..."

Mu Chen's gaze was hidden and he slightly slanted his body as he seemed to be avoiding the gaze of that red-dressed girl.

How could he forget the person that he had first met in the Spiritual Road? Or perhaps, the crazy girl called Wu Yingying that was his first opponent. His memories of her were deep. When he first appeared, it was a stream before him, with no fishes in it. However, there was a beautiful mermaid that was not wearing any clothes...

It was Wu Yingying that was bathing.

What happened after that was not hard to guess. When he sensed the killing intent exploding from the stream, although Mu Chen's first reaction was to run, he had underestimated the speed of that girl. She had only draped her clothes on and chased after him with her blade.

Mu Chen was tangled up with her for an entire day, suffering two wounds from her blade. However, he had won in the end. At that time, the Mu Chen that had just entered the Spiritual Road was not so ruthless yet. When he won, he had pressed that hot pepper onto the ground and gave several slaps to her bottom. Thereafter, he stripped that girl and threw her

into the stream and left under that girl's ashamed gaze.

From there on, Mu Chen had not encountered that hot pepper anymore. However, he was well aware that based on the latter's character, if she were to meet him again, she would definitely continue to chop at him...

Furthermore, he could not tell Luo Li what he did to Wu Yingying.

Thus, he felt his scalp tingling at this moment and could only hide his figure before Wu Yingying noticed him.

However, things would come the more you fear them. Just when Mu Chen was hiding, Wu Yingying, who was not very far away, had turned her gaze over and, as expected, her gaze was focused on him.

In that instant, Mu Chen could practically feel that Wu Yingying had fallen into a daze.

As a result, Mu Chen raised his head and glanced at that girl that wasn't far away. The latter that had her face filled with cold had instantly turned red. A volcanic eruption could be seen exploding from her bright eyes.

"MU CHEN, I WILL KILL YOU!"

Just when Mu Chen had a stiff smile on his face, that girl's roar had resounded throughout the heavens and earth.

Chapter 509: Lecher

When that girl's furious roar resounded throughout the heavens and earth, countless people were dazed as they stared at Wu Yingying, who had her fair face turn red in an instant. The latter's eyes seemed as if her anger would pour out and could burn people into ashes.

Multiple gazes started to shift and landed on Mu Chen, who was not far away and had awkwardness on his face.

Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan both looked at Mu Chen in doubt, as well. Clearly, they had no idea why Wu Yingying would have such a reaction when she saw Mu Chen...

"What's wrong with her?" The twins behind Wen Qingxuan widened their eyes from shock.

"She must be feeling unwell..." Mu Chen dryly laughed.

Boom!

Majestic Spiritual Energy along with rage swept out from Wu Yingying's body. Her jade-like hands wielded the scarlet crescent blade as she tapped the air using her feet with killing intent in her eyes and shot out. She made a slash, which turned into extremely sharp blade light that chopped down towards Mu Chen.

"LECHER, I WILL KILL YOU!"

As the unrivaled blade-like lighr swept over, it brought along Wu Yingying's enraged roar. The current her was like a man-eating leopardess.

"Lecher..."

Wen Qingxuan and the rest widened their eyes as they looked at Mu Chen. Shortly after, Wen Qingxuan covered her mouth and smiled, "Tsk, tsk, seems like you still have a love debt that is uncleared. From the looks it of, it should be an incident behind Luo Li's back, right?"

Mu Chen awkwardly smiled as she looked at Luo Li. The latter lightly gave him a glance as her eyes flashed with hints of a smile and yet not a

smile at the same time, which made Mu Chen become covered in cold sweat.

"Let's deal with her before explaining." Mu Chen could only dryly laugh and moved. From the looks of it, Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan had no intention of helping him. Therefore, he could only rely on himself...

Boom!

Black lightning spread out from Mu Chen as the center. With a grasp of his hand, a black longspear appeared in his hand as Spiritual Energy rippled off of it. As the spear flash shot out, it had clashed together with that blade of light.

Boom!

A metallic crash resounded as erratic gales exploded.

The blade of light and spear flash spread out and Mu Chen's figure lightly trembled. The hand that was wielding the Demonic Dragon Devouring Spear felt numbness. Shortly after that, astonishment could not be concealed as it flashed past his eyes. Wu Yingying's strength had far surpassed his expectation. From his estimation, Wu Yingying's strength was not any inferior compared to the three leaders of the Academy Alliance.

"What luck."

Mu Chen could not help sighing in his heart. Who could have expected that his first opponent that he met in the Spiritual Road was actually not weak?

"Hmph!"

Wu Yingying was also a little shocked that Mu Chen could take her attack. She issued a cold snort as her figure shot out, a blade of light turned into a tornado as she unleashed a rampant attack towards the latter.

"Hey, aren't you done?!"

Mu Chen immediately retreated as he barked. He was also frightened by

Wu Yingying's attack that she had used as if she was fighting him with her life on the line.

"It'll end when I kill you!" Wu Yingying nearly cracked her teeth from her clench as she stared at Mu Chen with hatred. Her attacks became more ferocious as the light blades were wreaking havoc that nearly split the space apart.

Mu Chen was helpless as he stepped on the empty air. Majestic Spiritual Energy rippled from his longspear as it drew flashes and blocked Wu Yingying's frantic attacks.

Boom! Boom!

Everyone raised their heads looking at the Spiritual Energy tornado that exploded. Two figures flashed past each other like lightning. The strength that Wu Yingying had shown surprised many teams. Who could have thought that such a petite girl could be so ferocious?

"Hey, that fellow's enemy is a little too much. Seems like this trip to the Divine Wood Mountain remnants will be fun for him." When the three leaders of the Academy Alliance saw the scene before them, they could not endure their laughter, which contained joy in Mu Chen's calamity.

The second leader known as Mo Yu also slightly smiled as he narrowed both his eyes, while looking at the battle up in the sky.

No one got themselves involved in this fight, sijce they remained on the sidelines to watch the show as they could tell that the companions of Mu Chen and Wu Yingying were not weak. Therefore, they would be very happy to watch the two of them fight to the death.

Bang!

The blade and spear, once again, clashed, which erupted majestic gales that seemed as if they were going to cause a tear in space.

Mu Chen's figure retreated as he looked at the ferocious leopardess, Wu Yingying, and helplessly said, "Do you really wish to fight to the death here with me? Those people in the surroundings are looking at us like monkeys, do you like that?"

Wu Yingying blankly stared as her approaching steps halted. She stared at Mu Chen and coldly laughed, "Why? Aren't your guts pretty big? Only now do you know fear?"

"Back then was a misunderstanding..." explained Mu Chen.

Rustling!

Before he finished his speech, a sharp light blade hacked over. He quickly blocked it with his spear as he raused his head, looking at Wu Yingying's erupting pupils.

"What do you want?" Mu Chen felt a headache.

"To kill you!" Wu Yingying answered as she clenched her teeth.

"Please, I am not that hateful. It's not as if you are not aware of the situation in the Spiritual Road. Even if I were to kill you back then, it would not be too much. See, didn't I let you off back then?" Mu Chen explained.

"You call that letting me off?" Wu Yingying was angered to the point that her face turned red. This bastard stripped me naked and touched every single part of my body before ruthlessly throwing me into the stream. It was harder to accept than to be killed for a girl.

Mu Chen guiltily laughed. Back then, when he did it, he had the intentions to tease Wu Yingying. After all, she had caused two blade wounds on him, which made him dripping with blood...

"Kill yourself on the spot and I will forgive you." Wu Yingying said hatredly.

Mu Chen rubbed his face as he smiled bitterly, "Am I that stupid?"

"Then let me kill you!" Wu Yingying widened her eyes as she was about to attack again.

"Yingying!" A bark abruptly resounded from the back. There was a muscular guy that was with the group that Wu Yingying had come with that blocked her. He first looked suspiciously at Mu Chen, before helplessly saying towards Wu Yingying, "We're here for the remnants. If

we were to fight here, it will not be worth it."

Wu Yingying coldly snorted and no longer bothered him as she stared with hatred at Mu Chen.

At this moment, Wen Qingxuan and Luo Li flew over and stood beside Mu Chen. Wen Qingxuan, however, was looked at both Wu Yingying and Mu Chen with interest.

"I believe that this must be Captain Mu Chen of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?" That robust youth looked at Mu Chen and gave a friendly smile, "I am Deng Tong of the Martial Spiritual Academy."

Mu Chen was dazed as he looked at Deng Tong and Wu Yingying with astonishment. If he comes from the Martial Spiritual Academy, doesn't that mean that Wu Yingying also comes from there?

"Haha, so it's Captain Deng Tong." Mu Chen smiled as he cupped his hands in reply.

"Yingying, you know Captain Mu Chen? How did he offend you? Who knows if it might be a misunderstanding. Why don't you talk about it and we'll work a way out." Deng Tong looked towards Wu Yingying and asked in doubt. Wu Yingying's anger didn't look fake. Although she usually had a hot pepper temperament, it was still the first time that he had seen her so furious.

"You should ask him!" Wu Yingying's jade-like fingers pointed at Mu Chen as she clenched her teeth.

Mu Chen was dazed as he rubbed his nose, "Then I'll say it?"

"You're not allowed to say it!" Wu Yingying stared with her eyes.

Mu Chen awkwardly smiled. Deng Tong and the rest on the side twitched their lips. Clearly, they had no idea what happened between those two...

Wu Yingying saw everyone's expressions as her face flushed red. Shortly after, she stared with hate at Mu Chen and said, "You lecher, you better watch out. I will definitely not let you off!"

Hearing her shouting the word lecher again, Luo Li, Wen Qingxuan and the rest couldn't help looking at Mu Chen with suspicion.

The corner of Mu Chen's lips trembled. He was feeling sorrowful, as if a hero had died.

When Wu Yingying finished her words, she turned around and left, dragging the scarlet-red crescent blade. Seeing as she had stopped, Deng Tong and the rest felt relieved. They made a cup towards Mu Chen, before chasing after her.

When Mu Chen saw the situation, he felt relieved, as if a heavy load had been taken off of him. He then turned around and saw Wen Qingxuan's ridiculing gaze.

"Luo Li, looking at Wu Yingying's expression, it seems that she had suffered quite a bit of grievance. Perhaps the matter to this is not as simple as this."

Seeing as Wen Qingxuan was adding oil the fire, Mu Chen stared with hate towards her.

Luo Li smiled as her expression calmed down and looked at Mu Chen with understanding, "If it's not convenient for you to say it, then don't."

Mu Chen dryly smiled. Although Mu Chen appeared this way, why did he feel that if he didn't say it, he would be doomed...?

"Didn't I say it before, Wu Yingying was the first person I encountered in the Spiritual Road..." Mu Chen shrugged his shoulders and explained what had happened before in one go. Naturally, he simplified the story and only said that he had ruthlessly taught Wu Yingying a lesson... After all, back then, when Mu Chen was punishing Wu Yingying, he didn't have too much of a pure attitude.

"That simple?"

Wen Qingxuan smiled, "Then why does she look as if she had seen a heartless rat that she would not let go the moment she saw you."

Mu Chen cast his mouth aside, "You're not my wife, why should I bother

explaining to you?"

Wen Qingxuan frowned and coldly smiled, "Looks like she did not beat you enough!"

"Okay, okay." Luo Li helplessly shook her head and glanced at Mu Chen with slight annoyance, before continuing, "Anyhow, you better watch out. Looks like that Wu Yingying will definitely not let you off so easily. This is something that you have started, so I will not help you."

Mu Chen nodded his head repeatedly.

"Tsk." Wen Qingxuan pouted her rosy lips. Fooled by that loathsome man again.

Ommm!

Just when Mu Chen felt at ease in his heart, the Spiritual Energy between the heavens and earth rippled. Thereafter, everyone could see light runes that began to spread out from around the colossal Divine Wood Mountain that looked like a huge Spiritual Array and shrouded them.

When that colossal ancient Spiritual Array had appeared, Mu Chen's hands immediately grasped and a wooden plaque appeared. Currently, the Divine Wood Quota was contantly emitting warmth.

Ommmm! Ommmm!

Dark-green light surged from the Divine Wood Quota that turned into a light ball and spread out.

At the same time, five light balls had also appeared in the direction of the Academy Alliance, Saint Spiritual Academy, Xua Tiandou, Wu Yingying and the Four Seas Spiritual Academies. Thereafter, six light pillars shot out towards the surrounding Spiritual Array of the Divine Wood Mountain.

Boom!

The Spiritual Energy between the heavens and earth boiled as countless people looked at this scene with excitement. They knew that the ancient

remnant that was hidden within the Spiritual Array had shown signs of opening!

Chapter 510: Opening of the Divine Wood Mountain

Ommm! Ommmm!

Six powerful light pillars pierced the heavens and into the exterior of the huge ancient Spiritual Array under the countless gazes. As light pillars shot over, the huge Spiritual Array also fluctuated with ripples that spread out, making it look as if a stone was thrown into the water.

The gazes of Mu Chen and his group stared at the colossal ancient Spiritual Array. This Spiritual Array should be the Sect Guardian Spiritual Array with unimaginable power. Not to mention them, even ordinary Sovereign experts could not break through it. Therefore, they could only rely on the Divine Wood Quota to open it, Otherwise, they could only stare at the treasure mountain before them.

Ommmm!

Fortunately, the unlucky situation did not appear. As the six pillars of light condensed, cracks gradually started to spread out on the ancient Spiritual Array. Thereafter, it turned into cracks that measured a few hundred feet.

As the huge cracks appeared, it was as if a huge ancient tornado had spread out from the cracks, which instantly made the heavens and earth look boundless.

The light cracks gradually stabilised, as if it was a huge grate that gradually opened. It was the path towards the genuine remnant that had been passed down since ancient times!

Gulp.

Many people quietly swallowed a mouthful of saliva. Deep in their eyes, boiling heat surged out.

"The remnant of the Divine Wood Palace have been opened!"

No idea who it was that suddenly roared. The originally quiet region

instantly exploded as countless Spiritual Energy ripples surged towards the sky. Thereafter, one after another figure shot forth like lightning towards the huge cracks.

"Let's go!"

Mu Chen's reaction was also extremely quick. The instant the cracks stabilised themselves, he barked as he shot forth first with Luo Li, Wen Qing Xuan and the rest following his steps. Their speed was also fast.

Huge cracks spreads out on the ancient Spiritual Array that appeared like a huge mouth from the ancient times as it devoured the locust swarm amount of light figures.

In less than tens of minutes, this region, which was filled with countless people, had been instantly emptied out. Leaving behind the complete mess that showed the commotion earlier. Far away, there were still constantly many teams that rushed over at their top speed.

Clearly, a contest over the remnant that would shake the entire tournament had begun.

Just who would gain the biggest benefit from this remnant, and which party would be better then the others?

When Mu Chen and his group entered the giant cracks, the light ray before them instantly lit up. What appeared before him was a earth-shattering huge mountain. From the looks of it, be it up, down, left or right, he could not see the end of it.

The huge ancient mountain was horrifyingly large.

Mu Chen and his group was thoroughly startled by the appearance of the huge mountain. However, they had shortly landed their figures onto a mountain peak.

The environment here was filled with dark green, emitting vigorous vitality. The Spiritual Energy between the heavens and earth became especially lively. The facial expressions of Mu Chen and his group turned grave as they realised that the Spiritual Energy between this heaven and earth was harder to mobilise, compared to outside.

"This should be a type of special cultivating technique in the Divine Wood Palace. Once a person gets used to this type of place, the amount of Spiritual Energy that they could utilise when they go back out would increase as well." Wen Qingxuan made a raise with her hand as Spiritual Energy shot out towards a huge tree, turning it into pieces.

"However, in this way, the amount of Spiritual Energy that we would exhaust when we fight would also increase." Luo Li said with a grave face.

"Fortunately, we prepared some Spiritual Pills." Mu Chen smiled as he took a glance at Wen Qingxuan and felt admiration for her preparations earlier on.

Towards his gaze, Wen Qingxuan had a prideful smile rise from her lips. After the days that they had been together, she could tell that although Mu Chen appeared friendly, he was proud to his bones. If anyone wanted to make him feel admiration for that person, it was not an easy task.

"What should we do next?" Luo Li asked as she looked at Mu Chen.

Mu Chen first raised his head towards the sky, since there were constant sonic booms resounding as streaks of light that filled the skies fell onto the colossal ancient mountain. The long peaceful years had been broken on this huge mountain. What happened next would probably be all the teams searching for treasures in this land like locusts.

Mu Chen looked into the distance. Aside from the so-called inheritance in the Divine Wood Palace, it was the Nine Suns Divine Lingzhi. A crucial item to cultivate the Great Solar Undying Body. He knew how precious this treasure was. It was an item that could attract the envy of many Sovereign experts. If he was outside and with his strength, it was simply impossible to lay his finger on such an object. But now, it was an opportunity that came once in a blue moon. Therefore, he had to grasp control of the chance and obtain that Nine Suns Divine Lingzhi!

"There should be a Spiritual Treasure Mountain in this Divine Wood Palace's remnants. There must be quite a considerable amount of treasures and among them, there is something that I require." Mu Chen looked towards Wen Qingxuan. They were currently working together

with Wen Qingxuan, so there were some things that he had to be clear on.

"Spiritual Treasure Mountain?" Wen Qingxuan's slender brows slightly twitched as she lightly said. "Everyone that enters here would first look for the so-called inheritance. Yet you would want to look for the Spiritual Treasure Mountain? Aren't you a little confused?"

Mu Chen remained silent. According to ordinary circumstances, what she said was not wrong. However, he needed the Nine Suns Divine Lingzhi. He knew that if he were to go late, someone else might be the first to obtain it. Who knew how long he would have to wait before he would have more news about the Nine Suns Divine Lingzhi?

His decisions had a considerable benefit for him. But it was not the same for Wen Qingxuan. After the period of time he had spent with her, Mu Chen found out that Wen Qingxuan was a girl that had her strong views. Furthermore, when other forces sometimes cooperated with her, she was the leader of the group that made decisions and orders. Therefore, Mu Chen did not have any confidence that he could make such a prideful girl follow the path that he had chosen.

Just when Mu Chen had no idea of how to say his words, Wen Qingxuan's indifferent expression turned into smile as she waved her hand, "Although your decision might not be correct, I will believe you for once. But I can tell that that if there wasn't any harvest in that so-called Spiritual Treasure Mountain that could make me satisfied, I will look for you for your debts."

Mu Chen looked at her facial expression that quickly changed, he helplessly shook his head at how hard it was to deal with Wen Qingxuan. It was comparable to how he had first encountered Luo Li. Although the latter did not speak much and had just hunted him for half a year.

"But this Divine Wood Palace remnant is so vast, do you have any idea of the Spiritual Treasure Mountain's location? Could it be that you are going to search for it aimlessly?" Luo Li suddenly asked.

When Mu Chen heard her words, he was also stunned. Shortly after, he bitterly smiled as he nodded his head. Although he had planned his path

that way, he never expected for the Divine Wood Mountain to be so huge.

"I admire you seeking treasures his way." Wen Qingxuan said as she rolled her eyes at Mu Chen.

"You have a way?" Mu Chen looked at Wen Qingxuan.

"Since you mentioned that there are quite a number of Spiritual Treasures between heaven and earth in the Spiritual Treasure Mountain, it should be the Spiritual Treasure Garden of the Divine Wood Mountain. Which is the location that some powerful forces use to grow the Spiritual Treasures. All great forces had such similarities. They all had similar places like this, where there is also something similar about all of them." Wen Qingxuan lightly smiled as she appeared exceptionally graceful as she continued, "That would be that these places would have the most amount of Spiritual Energy."

Mu Chen rubbed his nose. He came from a small place of the Northern Spiritual Realm. Although his father was the Lord of Mu City, a force of that level did not have any qualifications to build their own Spiritual Treasure Garden. Only those forces with a deep and unmeasurable base could have the qualifications and ability to create such high-end stuff. This was something that he had no understanding towards and could only ask again, "Then how should we search for the location with the highest amount of Spiritual Energy?"

"You naturally need a special Detecting Spiritual Artifact for that. Were you expecting for us to sense it based on our strength?" Wen Qingxuan rolled her eyes at him.

"We don't have something like that." Mu Chen's face flushed red as he was a little ashamed.

"What undependable men." Wen Qingxuan sighed as she waved her hand. Behind her, a ball of light appeared in the hand of the quiet An Ya. In that ball of light, there was a compass Spiritual Artifact which she passed it over to Wen Qingxuan.

Wen Qingxuan held onto that compass Spiritual Artifact as she transferred Spiritual Energy into it to activate the Spiritual Artifact.

Thereafter, Mu Chen saw the pointer on the compass rapidly turn and a brief moment later, a ray of light shot out from the compass, which roughly turned into the shape of an arrow. As it lengthened, it pointed towards the northeast direction.

"We have already found the direction. The Spiritual Treasure Mountain should be in that direction." Wen Qingxuan kept the Compass Spiritual Artifact as she smiled towards Mu Chen, "So, are you convinced?"

Mu Chen was a little depressed as he felt that he had nearly turned into a country bumpkin in the eyes of Wen Qingxuan.

"Let's go." Mu Chen cast his lips aside as he spoke without strength.

Seeing Mu Chen's expression, Luo Li could not help smiling as she shook her head. She extended her hand to grasp onto his hand, which could be considered as giving him some comfort.

"Still, my own wife is better." Holding onto the tender hand, Mu Chen laughed before going closer and gave Luo Li a kiss on her cheeks.

Luo Li blushed from Mu Chen's sudden action and could only glance at him in bashfulness.

"Shameless!" When Wen Qingxuan saw the scene, she instantly clenched her teeth as she stared at Mu Chen with hatred.

"Haha, let's go. Off to the Spiritual Treasure Mountain!"

Mu Chen laughed carefreely and no longer bothered himself with Wen Qingxuan. He held onto Luo Li and as Spiritual Energy swept out, it turned into two streaks of light as it shot towards the distance. Behind those two, Wen Qingxuan stomped her feet and chased after them with anger. Behind her, Xu Hung and the rest followed thereafter.

Chapter 511: Spiritual Treasure Mountain

Rustle.

Within the lush green ancient mountain range, sonic booms resounded as streaks of light drew on the sky as they flew. Because of the air resistance that was created from the high speed, deep traces started to appear in the forest below.

Majestic Spiritual Energy wrapped Mu Chen's figure as he watched the mountains that quickly past by beneath him. Looking up ahead, he still could not see the end. Clearly, the vastness of the Divine Wood Mountain was a little too frightening.

In the other directions, Mu Chen could sense quite a decent amount of Spiritual Energy ripples. All of those should be from the other teams that had entered this place. With such a huge group entering, it would, without a doubt, wipe off all the quietness that the Divine Wood Mountain had. The constant surging Spiritual Energy ripples made the area here full of life. Originally, the remnant wasn't so lively, but now it was filled up.

Under their hasty travel towards the Spiritual Treasure Mountain, Mu Chen's gaze constantly glanced onto the compass in Wen Qingxuan's hands, The light of the Wen Qingxuan was slightly trembling as it pointed them in the actual direction.

Mu Chen obtained the news of the Spiritual Treasure Mountain from the Divine Wood Quota. There were six of them, so who knows if the five other owners of the Divine Wood Quota had the same news as well. Therefore, he had to rush there at his fastest speed so he could obtain the Nine Suns Divine Lingzhi before anyone else gets it.

He was well-aware of how attractive the Nine Suns Divine Lingzhi was.

Perhaps others could not cultivate the Great Solar Undying Body. However, such a treasure was extremely rare, which possessed fearsome Spiritual Energy. Whether if it was to be absorbed through cultivation or used to refine Spiritual Pills, it was an excellent ingredient. Not to mention people at their level, even Sovereign experts would be tempted by it.

Therefore, if someone else knew of the message about the Nine Suns Divine Lingzhi, he could guarantee that no one could withstand the temptation.

Mu Chen pursed his lips as swiftness and ferociousness flashed through his eyes. The Great Solar Undying Body was extremely important to him stepping into the realm of Sovereigns. Therefore, he would definitely not let any other team obtain that Nine Suns Divine Lingzhi. No matter who it was that tried to obstruct him, he would definitely not show mercy.

Rustle!

As swift and ferociousness flashed through his eyes, Mu Chen's speed shot up and with a rustle, the light around his body extended out to few hundred feet. Behind him, Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan closely followed.

The group of people passed through the high mountain range and roughly ten minutes later, a gap appeared in the lush green before him. It was a vast plains that appeared scarlet-yellow. No signs of green could be seen, as if the lifeforce in this area was cut off.

These plains were filled with holes, while huge and sinister-looking huge cracks intertwined within the depths that could not be seen with the naked-eye. They were dark, like a demon's mouth, as a cold air surged from the abyss. It was as if the abyss was connected to the netherworld that made one's hair stand on the end.

The speed of Mu Chen's group gradually decreased as they gave grave looks towards the endless abyss.

"This place must have experienced a frightening level of battle during the ancient times," said Mu Chen. The sinister-looking cracks were obviously caused by the collusion of some frightening power. Perhaps in the ancient times, this scarlet-yellow region was filled with life, like those places that they had passed by before. However, because of a terrifying battle that took place, it cut off all the lifeforce in this area to the point that only god-knows how many years later, this place was still desolate.

It was hard to imagine how frightening that level of battle was.

"Perhaps after that battle, the Divine Wood Palace was gone." Luo Li's gazed at the desolate scarlet-yellow. She could see some broken Spiritual Artifacts lying on the ground. Those Spiritual Artifacts were thoroughly destroyed without any trace of Spiritual Energy left in them. Vaguely, traces of bones could be seen on this desolate land.

Mu Chen nodded his head as he swept his glance towards his surroundings, since there was the constant sounds of sonic booms resounding. Shortly after, there were figures that made a stop at this area from the distance. Those teams that rushed over here to seek treasures attempted to search this region after seeing that it was an ancient battlefield, trying their luck to find any treasures that were leftover from the battle.

"Let's go."

Mu Chen did not have any intentions to take a look here. Perhaps there really might be treasures that were leftover here but his objective was not them.

"According to the direction that was pointed out by the Treasure Seeking Compass, we must be close to the Treasure Spiritual Mountain." Wen Qingxuan suddenly said as one of her jade-like hands held onto the compass.

After hearing her words, Mu Chen's spirit trembled. He did not speak, but increased his speed once again and flew out.

Under the full speed of Mu Chen and his group, the desolate land before them disappeared after roughly ten minutes later. Streaks of light flew over the towering mountain, before their figures stopped as they directed their slightly astonished gazes before them.

Before them, there was a mountain peak with gem-like light being emitted from it. That mountain peak was not grand nor majestic but was covered by the gem-like light. As glittering light flashed, it made these treasured stones pile into a mountain range that appeared to be extremely dazzling.

The surroundings of the mountain was filled with an earth-shattering

amount of Spiritual Energy that constantly circulated. It was as if there was a rustling noise that came from it that appeared to be agile.

Mu Chen and his group felt their eyes stinging from the dazzling glittering light. They narrowed their eyes as they cautiously looked towards it. There was a neatly divided stone platform and that stone platform looked as if it was built with gems as it was glittering.

At the center of the stone platform, there were multiple lotus-like layers and at the center of them, they could see all sorts of treasures of nature gentlying swaying from the wind. They were emitting dense fragrances that fluctuated around the heavens and earth that could ease the hearts of others.

"So many Spiritual Plants!"

Wen Qingxuan and her group looked at the treasures of nature that filled the entire mountain, astonishment could not be help being revealed from their eyes.

"All these treasures of nature are not ordinary. The Divine Wood Palace's name is well-deserved, this is quite the sum." Wen Qingxuan's eyes lit up. With her understanding towards treasures of nature, she could recognised quite a few of them. All of these were extremely popular in the Great Thousand World.

Her line-of-sight gradually shifted upwards and discovered that the higher the level of treasures of nature in this Spiritual Treasure Mountain, the more precious they were. The Spiritual Energy ripples being emitted were also much more purified.

She looked at the highest mountain and discovered that it was filled with dazzling light that seemed as if there was a sun growing there. Her physical eyes could not see though the object within.

Clearly, the treasure that lied over there would be extremely precious.

Mu Chen's gaze focused at the highest mountain as well. Fire blazed within his eyes as that light was the same light that he had seen from the Divine Wood Quota. Clearly, what was growing at the highest region of

the Spiritual Treasure Mountain was the Nine Suns Divine Lingzhi that he had been yearning for.

Mu Chen could no longer stand still as he moved, appearing in sky of the highest mountain. At such a close distance, he could take a close look towards the treasures that filled this region. There were tons of Spiritual Flowers that had sparkling branches. Every single one of it's petals and fruit were filled with extremely purified Spiritual Energy.

"Water Spiritual Fruit, Flame Spiritual Flower, Dragon-Scaled Tree..." Wen Qingxuan swept her gaze around as she clicked her tongue. She then smiled towards Mu Chen, "You truly have not disappointed me. If we were to obtain all the treasures here, we could at least exchange for some Sovereign Spiritual Liquid from the Great Thousand World."

The Sovereign Spiritual Liquid was something that only Sovereign experts could create. The condensation of such a liquid was so extremely hard that a 1st Rank Sovereign could only create a small portion of it, even if he had used an entire month to condense ut.

However, although it was hard to condense, it was extremely popular among the Great Thousand World. In the Great Thousand World, the necessary factor to decide the foundation of a force would be the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid. Even when Sovereign experts cultivate, it would require the help of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid. It was an extremely divine object that would greatly benefit cultivation!

Mu Chen had rough knowledge of the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid. However, he was not too concerned about it. Although there were tons of treasures in the Spiritual Treasure Mountain, he was not greedy. He only wanted the Nine Suns Divine Lingzhi and paid no attention towards the rest.

"What do you have your eye on?" Luo Li looked towards Mu Chen. She remembered that Mu Chen had mentioned to her that he definitely had to get a Spiritual Treasure, no matter what that grows on the Spiritual Treasure Mountain.

Mu Chen did not answer, but his eyes were closely fixed onto the highest

level of the Spiritual Treasure Mountain.

Luo Li glanced over as she focused onto the endless light at the highest level. She fell into deep thought and shortly after, shock was contained in her voice as she spoke, "That is the Nine Suns Divine Lingzhi?"

Clearly, she had heard of the name Nine Suns Divine Lingzhi before.

"Oh? It was actually the Nine Suns Divine Lingzhi? No wonder you were so anxious." Wen Qingxuan was also startled, "This is a Spiritual Treasure that could even tempt Sovereign experts."

Mu Chen glanced towards Wen Qingxuan.

"Rest assured, although the Nine Suns Divine Lingzhi is rare, it is not worthy enough for me, Wen Qingxuan, to pull my face down to snatch it." Wen Qingxuan seemed to have understood the intention in Mu Chen's eyes as she said with a cold snort.

Mu Chen then smiled, "Since that's the case, then I will take it."

When he finished his words, he was about to rush up to the highest level of the Spiritual Treasure Mountain to seize the Nine Suns Divine Lingzhi that he yearned for even in his dreams.

"Wait."

Just when he was about to move, Wen Qingxuan quickly pulled onto Mu Chen's arm.

"What? You're going to change your mind?" Mu Chen was stunned as he smiled.

"Psh." Wen Qingxuan then released her hand immediately. Thereafter, her expression turned serious as her eyes were fixed on the abnormally calm Spiritual Treasure Mountain, "Don't you feel that there seems to be something wrong about this Spiritual Treasure Mountain?"

Chapter 512: Trap

"Abnormal?"

Hearing Wen Qingxuan's words, Mu Chen was also stunned. Shortly after, he wrinkled his brows as he looked at the Spiritual Treasure Mountain before him. The entire Spiritual Treasure Mountain was emitting dazzling light that seemed as if it was created from gems. Purified Spiritual Energy was spreading out along with a fragrance that covered the entire mountain peak.

However, Mu Chen did not sense anything out of the ordinary. The point being was that this place was too quiet. However, every single part of the Divine Wood Palace was this quiet.

"This kind of place is extremely important to every force. Therefore, some forces would lay countless hidden Spiritual Array traps here to prevent them from being stolen by other people. Although this Divine Wood Palace was destroyed for countless of years, some of the Spiritual Array traps that they have placed here might not have been destroyed. After all, as long as there is a sufficient amount of Spiritual Energy, these kinds of things could last forever. Furthermore, from the looks of it... this place doesn't lack in any Spiritual Energy." Wen Qingxuan said as her charming gaze fell onto the Spiritual Treasure Mountain.

Mu Chen's brows was knitted together. What Wen Qingxuan said did make sense. Therefore, it was better for them to be cautious here.

"Someone's here!"

Just when Mu Chen was pondering, Luo Li's voice suddenly resounded.

Mu Chen's eyes condensed. There was actually someone here already in such a short amount of time, it seemed that many teams that came into the Divine Wood Palace all made their preparations.

Rustle!

In the distant, streaks of light flew over and in a few breath's time, they appeared before this Spiritual Treasure Mountain.

When Mu Chen took a closer look at the two approaching groups, he could not help inhaling a mouthful of air. One of the two groups that came here was Wang Zhong's group from the Saint Spiritual Academy. The other one made Mu Chen feel a headache and the origin of his headache was the fiery red-dressed girl that stood at the front of her group, wielding a huge scarlet-red crescent blade, Wu Yingying.

This time, the two groups that came were his enemies.

Wang Zhong and Wu Yingying's group maintained their distance. Clearly, they were cautious with one another. However, when they saw that the first to reach here was Mu Chen's group, they fell into daze as their expressions somewhat respectively changed.

Wang Zhong still maintained a smile on his face. However, his gaze was a little cold as he constantly looked at Mu Chen and the Spiritual Treasure Mountain.

Wu Yingying, however, tightly clenched her teeth as she stared at Mu Chen with hatred. She still had the look of a ferocious leopardess. If it was not for the youth behind her, Deng Tong, holding her back, she would definitely not be able to endure it and charge forth.

Mu Chen took a glance towards the two parties and looked into the distance again. Thereafter, he discovered that there was a large group of light streaks that was approaching towards this direction. Clearly, this was a huge group. Although these huge groups were fighting for their own, the amount was extremely significant.

These teams were extremely smart. Upon entering the remnants of the Divine Wood Palace, they had followed after Wang Zhong and Wu Yingying, who had obtained a Divine Wood Quote from faraway. They were well-aware that in terms of news of the Divine Wood Palace, Wang Zhong and Wu Yingying had an advantage, since they definitely knew more than them. Therefore, they followed behind them. Even if they could not obtain the biggest benefit, they could still benefit something from it. However, their choice was correct. At least they had found this Spiritual Treasure Mountain.

Mu Chen's eyes flickered before his expression calmed down. He did not panic just because of Wang Zhong and Wu Yingying's appearances and try to seize the Nine Suns Divine Lingzhi. After Wen Qingxuan's reminder earlier, he felt that it would not be so easy to seize the Nine Suns Divine Lingzhi.

"Haha, Captain Mu Chen, your group has arrive quite fast." Wang Zhong stood on the sky as they looked at Mu Chen's group. He first made a smile towards Wen Qingxuan, before speaking with Mu Chen.

"Captain Wang Zhong, you're not too slow yourself." Mu Chen smiled in reply.

"There are extremely precious Spiritual Treasures in this Spiritual Treasure Mountain. So I naturally have to make my way here quick enough. Otherwise, it would be taken by someone else." Wang Zhong smiled as he took a glance at the peak of the Spiritual Treasure Mountain that was emitting endless light.

When Mu Chen heard his reply, he could not help narrowing his eyes. From the looks of it, Wang Zhong and Wu Yingying had also received the news of the Nine Suns Divine Lingzhi...

"Hmph."

Wu Yingying stared at Mu Chen, before coldly snorting. Her jade-like hands wielded her crescent blade. She tilted her blade as an extremely sharp blade of light flickered. The young girl's charming oval-like face was filled with chill as a raging figure filled her eyes.

"Haha, Captain Wu Yingying, since Captain Mu Chen and Wen Qingxuan are working together. Why don't we work together for the moment as well, so that we avoid a situation where we are unable to touch the Spiritual Treasure Mountain?" Wang Zhong laughed as his eyes flashed from looking at the scene.

Mu Chen and Wen Qingxuan were already working together. Although they were only two teams, their fighting strength was absolutely powerful. Although their three teams were not easy for anyone to deal with, there was, after all, some risk. If they could work together with Wu Yingying,

then they would have the absolute advantage.

Furthermore, from Wu Yingying's attitude towards Mu Chen earlier, it seemed that she had a huge grudge towards him, which Wang Zhong could make use of.

Mu Chen's expression turned cold. Clearly, he had seen through Wang Zhong's intention. If Wu Yingying cooperated with them, it would spell some troubles for them.

When Wu Yingying heard Wang Zhong's words, her brows twitched as her eyes were a little irregular. She seemed to have been moved by that idea.

"Although your team is strong, Brother Wu Ling of the Martial Spiritual Academy is not here. Based on your own strength, I'm afraid that you are not their opponent. So if we were to join hands, it would benefit both of us." Seeing as Wu Yingying was a little moved by the idea, Wang Zhong immediately added on to strike the iron while it was hot.

Behind Wu Yingying, Deng Tong and his group exchanged glances as they had no comments. They had given the decision-making over to Wu Yingying. Clearly, among their group, it was Wu Yingying that had been making the decisions.

Wu Yingying took a glance at the sincere Wang Zhong, before shifting her gaze towards Mu Chen. She realised that the latter did not have any expression on his face. This made her chuckle. Whenever Mu Chen was facing her, he was always smiling, which she found annoying. This was the first time that she had seen the helpless and expressionless look on Mu Chen's face.

Sometimes, without any expression was actually a type of expressive mood.

"You're afraid that I will join hands with him?" Wu Yingying said as she stared at Mu Chen.

Mu Chen said lightly, "You're overthinking things."

Wu Yingying coldly snorted as she looked towards Wang Zhong, "I will

definitely not let this fellow off, but I will deal with him myself. I do not need the help of anyone else."

Wang Zhong, who still had a smile on his face, stiffened. He looked at Wu Yingying in amazement. After a brief moment later, he made a ugly smile with his face, "What a regret."

Mu Chen, on the other hand, looked at Wu Yingying in astonishment. Clearly, he had no idea why the latter would give up on a chance that could create problems for them.

"Tsk. Tsk."

Wen Qingxuan by the side pulsed her lips as she sighed. She approached Luo Li with a smile hung on the corner of her face and said with a deep meaning, "Why does this Wu Yingying seem like a wife acting in a fit of pique?"

Luo Li smiled, but she did not reply to her.

After Wang Zhong and Wu Yingying's group have reached, they did not make any rash moves towards the Spiritual Treasure Mountain. Clearly, they were not overwhelmed by the Spiritual Treasure Mountain before them, despite knowing how huge of a temptation the Spiritual Treasure Mountain possessed.

Behind them, the earth-shattering amount of teams rushed over and stopped at the nearby sky. They shot glances towards the Spiritual Treasure Mountain and instantly, there were teams who had their eyes turning red.

"That's... Ice and Fire Vermillion Fruits?"

"Heavens, there are even Blood Dragon Ginseng! This is an extremely precious cultivating treasure!"

"..."

One after another, clamor filled with greed resounded as the breathing of countless people turned heavy. The Spiritual Treasure Mountain before them simply had too many precious treasures. If they could successfully

obtain one of them, their harvest in this trip to the Divine Wood Palace would be quite decent.

Mu Chen looked at all those reddened eyes as his gaze flickered and lightly smiled with Wen Qingxuan by the side.

"What excellent bait." Wen Qingxuan smiled beautifully.

Mu Chen smiled as he knew that all these people who had their minds filled with greed could not endure for long...

Mu Chen's conjecture was not wrong. After a few short minutes, the atmosphere of those people that was filled with greed became heavy. Finally, there were some teams that could not resist the temptation. With a rustle, there was a team that rushed out towards the Spiritual Treasure Mountain.

Following their action, many teams had also moved. Hundreds of team could be seen moving at the same time as they rushed towards the Spiritual Treasure Mountain.

Towards their actions filled with greed, be it Mu Chen, Wang Zhong or Wu Yingying, all of them maintained their cold gazes as they watched from the side.

Suuuuuuu!

Very quickly, all those teams had charged into the Spiritual Treasure Mountain. However, just when they were about to step onto the gemstone-like platform, a brilliant light burst forth from the Spiritual Treasure Mountain as layers and layers of light screens spread out.

Bang! Bang!

A light screen shrouded as a deep collusion resounded. All those teams that had charged towards the Spiritual Treasure Mountain flew back, spewing blood from their mouths with their faces paled.

Mu Chen and the rest focused their gazes over at the change of the Spiritual Treasure Mountain.

Within the Spiritual Treasure Mountain that was covered by the light

screen, not every single one of them was repelled out, as they realised that on every single layer on the platform, there was one figure that was left behind. At this moment, the people that were left behind on the layers gazed around in fear. Clearly, they were frightened by the sudden changes.

"What's going on?" Someone cried in surprise as his voice contained fear.

Mu Chen and his group looked at the figures that were trapped within the stone platform in graveness. Thereafter, they looked towards the Spiritual Treasure Mountain in graveness. In another corner, dazzling light gathered and vaguely, it formed into a light figure...

"So there really are traps in the Spiritual Treasure Mountain?"

Mu Chen and his group looked at the light figure as they instantly raised their guard.

Chapter 513: Rules and Regulations

Brilliant light emitted from the Spiritual Treasure Mountain. It was as if a light screen that shrouded the entire mountain range.

The gaze of Mu Chen and his group fixed on the sky of the Spiritual Treasure Mountain. As the light gathered, there was w light figure that slowly appeared.

There's still people living in the Spiritual Treasure Mountain?

Shock rose in the heart of Mu Chen and his group. Could it be that even after all these years, there is someone still alive from the Divine Wood Palace?

Under the nervous gaze of Mu Chen and his group, the light became clearer in the sky, before turning into figure of light. That light figure seemed to be an old man as he stood on the sky. He said nothing, which caused the originally bustling Spiritual Treasure Mountain to be quiet.

No one dared to speak a word. Those that were sent flying earlier on wiped the traces of blood from the corner of their lips as they looked at that light figure in astonishment. Although they did not know who the light figure was, with the Divine Wood Palace's strength, what they left behind, even casually, was not something that they could deal with.

Spiritual Energy surged in the surroundings of Mu Chen, Luo Li, Wen Qingxuan and their group as their eyes beacme filled with alertness. The instant something went wrong, they would instantly retreat.

"No one is allowed to enter the important place of the Spiritual Mountain. Everything will go by the rules and regulations of the Divine Wood Palace." Just when Mu Chen and his group raised their guards, the elderly light figure spoke. There wasn't any emotions in his voice, which made it sound especially empty. But just that alone could make one's hair stand on end.

"It doesn't seem to be a living person." Hearing that voice, Mu Chen's expression slightly changed as he gazed towards the elderly man. He

realised that the latter did not wear any expression on his face, his eyes were especially empty, without any human emotion.

"Perhaps this is a Spiritual Clone left behind by a certain formidable figure of the Divine Wood Palace." Luo Li said softly.

Wen Qingxuan stealthy breathed out in ease. It was fine as long as that was not the original body of that old demon. Otherwise, they would only flee for their lives.

"However, with him obstructing our path, there's no way for us to make our way past him." Xu Hung said softly from the side. He clearly saw the scene of those unlucky fellows earlier. Furthermore, there was still some people being trapped. Who knows what awaits them?

"Didn't he say that everything will follow the rules and regulations of the Spiritual Treasure Mountain?" Mu Chen said softly as his eyes flickered.

"What's the rules and regulation?" Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan were a little blank and at a loss.

Mu Chen shook his head as his gaze fixed onto that light figure.

"There are a total of Nine Levels in the Spiritual Treasure Mountain. The higher the level, the treasure awaits would be more precious. Every single Spiritual Treasure has a puppet guarding it. Only by defeating the puppet, can one leave with the Spiritual Treasure. Those that fail the challenge will be trapped for half a year as punishment for not working hard in their cultivation and yet, biting off more than what he or she can chew." Just when everyone was in doubt, that light figure spoke.

"So, those are the rules."

Mu Chen and his group then understood. But then shortly after, they were startled by the punishment. Trapped for half a year? If that happens, then they would not be able to participate in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament that would continue to occur.

"It seems like the rules are meant to encourage the disciples of the Divine Wood Palace to cultivate. Perhaps they have never imagined that the Divine Wood Palace would fall into such a situation. None of us here

is a disciple of the Divine Wood Palace," said Wen Qingxuan.

"That means that those fellows have to defeat the puppet guarding the Spiritual Treasures. If they win, they would be able to obtain a treasure from the stone platform, but if they lose..." Mu Chen grinned. Luckily, he did not rashly take action earlier. Otherwise, they might've been trapped to battle the puppet, since it was an extremely dangerous matter for them.

They, themselves, had no idea how powerful the puppets guarding the Spiritual Treasures were.

"Let's take a look and see, then." Mu Chen said solemnly. If the punishment was that heavy and the strength of those puppets were extremely fearsome, then he would have to give up on the Nine Suns Divine Lingzhi, no matter how unwilling he was, since he had no time to be trapped in this place for six months.

Wen Qingxuan and the rest nodded in agreement. Right now, they could only wait and see.

As Mu Chen and his group were discussing, light abruptly surged from the layers on the stone platform. Those that had charged onto the platform all experienced a light figure shooting from the ground. After a brief moment later, the light dissipated and there were puppets being clearly seen by everyone.

The puppets were black in colour, as if they were forged from black metal. There were also profound runes that covered their bodies, flickering with faint light. Vaguely, there were powerful ripples that were slowly being emitted from them.

The eyes of Mu Chen and his group were fixed on those black puppets. However, the ripples around those puppets were especially veiled. Henceforth, they could not gauge the strength of those puppets. Furthermore, those puppets were not identical. Those puppets that were located on the higher layers were emitting an even more powerful pressure from them.

Mu Chen gave a glance. The Spiritual Treasure Mountain had nine levels and no one intruded into the eighth and ninth level. Hence, no

puppets appeared on them. Two people had charged onto the seventh layer and beneath the lower levels, there were more puppets, since there were more people that intruded those levels.

Within the Spiritual Treasure Mountain, those that were trapped on the stone platform were somewhat panicked when they heard the words of that light figure from before. If they failed their challenge, they would have to be trapped in this place for half a year? This kind of price was too heavy, since the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament would have ended by then!

"I refuse to believe that the puppets here are that powerful! After so many years have passed, I bet that their strength has diminished!"

Perhaps the consequences of failure were too serious. One of the intruders that entered the fifth level barked with his face paled as he took a step forward. A majestic amount of Spiritual Energy swept out. The thickness of the Spiritual Energy had already reached the level of Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase and he was only a step away from Human Body Disaster.

The sole of his foot stepped forward as his figure swept out, throwing a palm at the same time. His scarlet-red Spiritual Energy was like a flame as he attacked the black and gold puppet.

Scarlet Spiritual Energy surged out and the light in the empty eyes of the puppet seemed to have condensed. In the next instant, it took a step forward. It did not try to dodge as it's black metal palm was thrown out similarly and the puppet's attack clashed with that person's.

Bang!

A huge collusion solemnly rang out as the light exploded. Thereafter, everyone could see the intruder's body flew out with fresh blood spewing from his mouth as he heavily fell on the ground with his face paled.

Everyone was in silence.

Quite a number of people had astonishment in their eyes. Just one move was all it took to defeat the intruder. Clearly, the strength of that puppet

had reached Human Body Disaster, but that was only just the fifth level!

"Challenge failed, imprisoned for half a year."

The elder's voice resounded in the sky and with a sweep of his hand, shackles of light shot out and tied themselves onto the intruder's body. Thereafter, without caring for his miserable shrieks, the ground cracked open, bit by bit, as his body fell into the hole. In the next instant, the ground was restored to its original appearance and the shrieking was silenced.

Countless people had their faces paled, especially those that had already intruded.

"I don't want to challenge anymore!"

Some people could not stand the punishment as they shouted with their faces paled. Shortly after, they turned around and ran.

"Escaping before the battle, judged as challenge failure. Six months added onto the imprisonment time." The light figure lightly spoke. Shortly after, he made a wave with his hand as countless shackles of light swept out and tied onto those that tried to escape and were swallowed by the mountain.

With that, all those that were trembling from fear that were originally thinking of escaping all held their steps. Escaping before the battle added another six months to the imprisonment time, that would be an entire year of being imprisoned in this land with no living being. Wouldn't that be harder to bear than dying?

"Let's risk it all!"

They could not retreat and only fight for their lives. All these people still had some unyielding spirit in them.

Boom! Boom!

Powerful Spiritual Energy exploded from them and on the stone platform, there were human figures that charged towards those cold puppets and huge battles broke out.

There were Spiritual Energy ripples that exploded on the stone platform, along with astonishing attacks that were released without any restraint.

In less then ten minutes, there was a continuous amount of people that failed their challenge. Those that failed would, without a doubt, be dragged into the mountain and imprisoned. The shrieks coming from them were extremely sharp. However, not everyone failed their challenge. There were those that were lucky and were spared from it, since they did not intrude onto the higher levels. Thus, the puppets that they encountered weren't too powerful. After a round of bitter battles, they actually managed to win the battle.

When they obtained their victory, the light screen that shrouded them slowly disappeared.

As the light screen disappeared, there were people that cried from being too emotional. Under their panic, they had actually forgotten about their reward and escaped, no longer daring to approach any closer.

Mu Chen did not pay too much attention on the battles of those levels. His attention was focused on the seventh level, since there were two people that intruded onto that level. Out of those two, one had undergone his Human Body Disaster. However, his strength had only managed to exchange several moves with the puppet before being defeated.

The strength of the other person was slightly more powerful, since he had the strength of Spiritual Energy Disaster. With his strength, he could be considered as an elite that could become the Captain of a team.

However, his strength at Spiritual Energy Disaster did not get him too much advantage from the puppet. The puppet possessed plenty of fighting experience and also knew a powerful Deity Tier Spiritual Art. The puppet's powerful attack had thoroughly suppressed that Spiritual Energy Disaster expert.

That person had undergone a miserable fight.

That fight lasted for half an hour, before he had exhausted all of his Spiritual Energy. Despite that, he still could not emerge victorious. Fortunately, when his Spiritual Energy was thoroughly exhausted and he

could no longer move, that puppet had also suffered serious damage with cracks on its chest. As it walked, it was swaying left and right, as if it was about to shatter.

"A draw. As you are unable to win, you won't be entitled to your reward. However, you have avoided your imprisonment."

Up in the sky, that elder faintly said as he watched the scene.

Hearing the judgement, that person felt relieved. He dragged his body that was filled with wounds and exhausted Spiritual Energy as he swayingly flew in the air before he was helped by his teammates.

When the battle ended, nearly all of the battles on the Spiritual Treasure Mountain had also ended. More than half of those that had intruded were dragged into the mountain and imprisoned.

Outside the Spiritual Treasure Mountain, there was silence. All those teams whose eyes were filled with greed earlier on were drenched in cold sweat as they patted their chests. It was fortunate that they were a step slower. Otherwise, who knows whether they would end up being imprisoned as well.

Mu Chen also fell into silence. The puppet on the seventh level could cause a Spiritual Energy Disaster expert to be in such a state. If he wanted the Nine Suns Divine Lingzhi, he would have to challenge the ninth level.

Looking at this scene, should he give it a try or should he escape?

If he had succeeded the challenge, he would be able to obtain the Nine Suns Divine Lingzhi. However, if he failed, he would be imprisoned.

Just what should he do?

Chapter 514: Spirit

Outside of the Spiritual Treasure Mountain, although it was still filled with people, the atmosphere was especially quiet. Quite a bit of teams had their faces paled as fear flashed in their eyes. The greed that filled their eyes earlier had been replaced with fear. Although the treasures were extremely tempting, their lives were more important.

Although they would not lose their lives if they failed the challenge, they would be imprisoned for half a year. That sort of punishment was even more harsh than death.

Naturally, they were not the only ones. Even people like Wang Zhong and Wu Yingying had grave expressions. With their strength, the layers beneath the seventh level were not too hard for them. However, their motive did not stop at that level. If there were any treasures that would attract their attention, it would be the treasures from the seventh level and up.

But, in order to obtain those, they would have to face powerful puppets and puppets of those levels were enough to pose a threat to them.

The entire Spiritual Treasure Mountain was exceptionally quiet, without any noise.

Luo Li took a glance at Mu Chen. She knew that Mu Chen desperately needed the Nine Suns Divine Lingzhi on the ninth level, the battle would be extremely dangerous. However, with Mu Chen's character, it was impossible to get him to give up on it.

The young girl's eyes flickered as she tightened her grip on the Luo God Sword.

"Are there anymore disciples that wish to take the challenge?" In that silence, the light figure elder's voice indifferently resounded from the sky. There wasn't any hint of emotion in his voice.

Every single team exchanged glances as they did not dare to move. Although those teams with decent strength could challenge those of the

lower level, the failure was still too severe, which made them especially frightened.

Mu Chen clenched his hands as light flickered in his eyes. Although he was still struggling within his heart, the Nine Suns Divine Lingzhi was too important for him. If he gave it up, who knows when the next time would be for him to find it again.

"Let me challenge the ninth level puppet." Luo Li suddenly spoke as she smiled towards Mu Chen with her hand tightly gripping the Luo God Sword, "Although the puppet would certainly be powerful, have trust in me. I can defeat it and will definitely bring that Nine Suns Divine Lingzhi out!"

Mu Chen was stunned from Luo Li's words. Even Wen Qingxuan, Xu Huang and the rest were stunned. Luo Li plans to take the risk?

Luo Li gently smiled as she looked at Mu Chen, "Okay?"

"No." It wasn't Mu Chen that replied, but Wen Qingxuan as she frowned her brows, "Forget it, leave it to me. Although it will be a little hard, I am a risky person."

Her words contained pride. Indeed, she did have the qualification to speak such words.

As the Captain of the team that was once ranked first, perhaps all the teams in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament knew that Wen Qingxuan possessed extremely powerful strength, although she had yet to truly reveal them. However, no one would belittle her.

"Let me do it, I can deal with it." Faced with Wen Qingxuan's pride, Luo Li shook her head.

"You!" Wen Qingxuan was a little angered.

Just as the two girls were arguing, Mu Chen, who had not been talking at all, deeply inhaled a mouthful of air. Shortly after, he shut his eyes and a brief moment later, he gradually opened his eyes.

When he opened his eyes, the struggle and hesitation within his eyes

disappeared. What replaced them was a firm gaze that fell onto the peak of the Spiritual Treasure Mountain. There wasn't anymore of the fear in his eyes.

Although he could not determine how strong l the puppet would be on the ninth level, he knew that if he fell back here, it wouldn't be beneficial for his cultivation. On the road to an expert, if one didn't have the courage and confidence to strive forward, he would definitely not succeed.

The current him needed to be constantly strengthened as he still needed the strength comparable to a Heavenly Sovereign in order to save his mother from the mysterious land that even his mother feared. He had already declared that he wants to become an unrivalled expert that could protect the girl he loves, blocking out all of the storms for her.

His path to become an unrivalled expert had just begun, so there was no path of retreat for him!

The previous him had too much doubt, since he did not wish to be confined in this place for half a year. When he heard that Luo Li actually wanted to take the risk for him to obtain the Nine Suns Divine Lingzhi, the doubt in his heart was ruthlessly removed from his heart.

He knew that Luo Li had seen the struggles in his heart.

Since when had he become so fearful? Since when had he lost the absolute sharpness that he had in order to become strong? The real path to being an expert was not being so cautious like this and hestating. If he had lost that spirit, it would be impossible for him to break through the layers of obstruction that was holding him back from becoming an expert.

Light surged within Mu Chen's black pupils. He still stood quietly in the sky. However, his slender figure became as tall and towering as a mountain at this moment. In that instant, a sharp aura was emitted from that youth's body as if it was a divine spear that was about to pierce the sky and universe.

Wen Qingxuan and Luo Li stopped their argument as they were a little astonished, looking at Mu Chen. Although he remained silent, they could sense the sharpened aura from the youth.

Within that sharpness, there were also confidence and courage.

Like a soaring eagle, even if the wind resistance was coming at it from all directions, it still chose to soar and fly high.

Luo Li dumbfoundly stared at Mu Chen's face. The edge of the youth's face was filled with sharpness. This made her suddenly laugh softly as she could feel the changes within Mu Chen's heart. Truthfully, after the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament began, she sensed that Mu Chen had been more cautious with things. Although it was good to be this way, she clearly prefered the previous prideful youth more.

The him before could sense the hesitation within himself. However, she did not wish to see Mu Chen fall into that kind of situation, so she willingly stood out to obtain the item that Mu Chen wanted.

However, it was a pity that he seemed to have sensed something.

So he's not going to even give me the slightest chance to perform myself.

The young girl's lips rose as her clear and crystal-like pupils were filled with a smiling expression.

Wen Qingxuan by the side was also looking at Mu Chen in astonishment. She was shocked with Mu Chen's changes. When Luo Li made that previous suggestion, she was actually upset with Mu Chen in her heart. Her character wasn't the same as Luo Li and from the way she looked at it, if Mu Chen cared about Luo Li, he would not let her to speak such words. Since he loved her, he should stand before her, no matter what, and block anything that might possibly cause any harm to her.

When Wen Qingxuan saw Mu Chen for the first time, seeing the guy that shook Luo Li's heart, not only was she disappointed, she was also not satisfied with him. She did not like someone that was being so cautious, she admired someone that would face forward, no matter how many difficulties there were, being arrogant and did not care too much about the cause and effect.

Although the heaven and earth was wide and vast, he could control the cloud and rain with a flip of his hand. That was the character that she

admired.

Wen Qingxuan looked at Mu Chen. The current youth looked like a spear that could pierce the heavens and nothing could obstruct it from doing so. He was slowly fitting into the character that she liked. Only now, did she understand why Luo Li would fall for him. Perhaps this is the Mu Chen from the Spiritual Road.

Mu Chen extended his hand and pulled onto Luo Li's jade-like hands and smiled. He did not say anything and only had the smile hung on his face.

Luo Li, however, gently smiled as she shook her head.

Mu Chen turned his head around as he looked at Wen Qingxuan. When the latter looked at him, her original attentive gaze instantly shifted as she had disdain on her lips.

"You want to snatch something of mine? I do not agree to it." Mu Chen smiled.

"Tsk, who wants it?" Wen Qingxuan said with disdain. Shortly after, she understood the meaning behind his words as she firmly gazed him over.

"Today, I will obtain that Nine Suns Divine Lingzhi."

Mu Chen looked towards the peak of the Spiritual Treasure Mountain that had endless light emitting off of it. He extended his hand and made a light grasp as pride appeared in his eyes.

"Is there anyone that still wants to take the challenge?" Up in the sky, that light figure elder indifferently repeated.

"Haha, Senior, let this Junior challenge it!"

Mu Chen laughed as he took a step forward. His laughter was like lightning as it rang throughout this heaven and earth.

Mu Chen's voice instantly caused the other teams to be astonished. Shortly after, astonished gazes shot over.

Mu Chen did not pay any attention to those gazes. His figure moved as he turned into a streak of light and charged towards the peak of the

Spiritual Treasure Mountain.

"Heavens, he's chosen the ninth level!"

Countless cries of surprise resounded.

Wang Zhong's eyes instantly concentrated. He narrowed his eyes as he looked at Mu Chen. That fellow really dared to move? If he fails, will he be able to endure the consequences?

Wu Yingying was staring at Mu Chen's figure as well. The youth's slender figure that was emitting a sharpness as well as his clear and fearless voice made her a little absent-minded. Shortly after, she couldn't help gritting her teeth. That bastard is trying to get the limelight? If he is imprisoned, how will I look for him to get my debts repaid?

Rustle!

Under the countless gazes, Mu Chen's figure that had turned into a streak of light had charged onto the ninth level without any fear. Thereafter, he was covered in countless lights.

Up in the sky of the Spiritual Treasure Mountain, that light-figured elder was still indifferent as he stood on the sky. However, no one had noticed that when Mu Chen's figure charged towards the ninth level, there was a slight ripple in the eyes of that elder.

Chapter 515: Three Grades of the Spirit Disaster

A streak of light drew across the horizon and under the countless gazes, it flew into that layer of light screen. Thereafter, Mu Chen's figure landed onto the stone platform's ninth level.

When his feet touched the ground, Mu Chen raised his head as he gazed towards the end. There was a jade stone lotus layer with endless light being emitted off of it. It was like a brilliant sun as Mu Chen's gaze penetrated through the dazzling light and onto the item within.

It was a brilliant perfect object that made others unable to open their eyes.

It had a jade-like stone torso that was sparkling and translucent. As the fine branch and leaf swayed, nine light balls faintly trembled as if they were nine suns that rose up. Even the light in the sky was inferior compared to it.

A pure Spiritual Energy ripples that could make the heart of others palpitate were being released from the nine blazing suns and were constantly flow out like waves.

Around the jade stone lotus layer, even the space was twisted from the pure Spiritual Energy.

That was the Nine Suns Divine Lingzhi.

Mu Chen was yearning to get that treasure even in his dreams.

Haaaaaa.

Mu Chen looked at the Nine Suns Divine Lingzhi as he inhaled a deep breath. Thereafter, he forcefully shifted his gaze as he suppressed the surge in his heart. He knew that if he wanted to obtain that Nine Suns Divine Lingzhi, he would have to undergo an earth-shaking battle.

Omnnn!

Just when Mu Chen was suppressing the tidal waves in his heart, a light

that was hundreds of feet high shot out from the other end of the vast stone platform. That light looked as if it penetrated through the Spiritual Treasure Mountain that could be seen within a hundred miles.

Mu Chen's line-of-sight was fixed on that light as faint pressure slowly emitted off of it.

That pressure was not strong, but the pressure was something that could not be seen through, which caused the hearts of others to spread out and, in the end, affect one's spirit. Causing the fighting intent to dissipate.

Majestic Spiritual Energy surged out of Mu Chen's body. Black lightning flickered as it covered Mu Chen's body. Vaguely, there were sounds of thunder booming. Clearly, Mu Chen had used his Lightning God's Physique.

Facing with an opponent of this level, he did not dare to be the slightest bit lax.

Outside the Spiritual Treasure Mountain, there were gazes that shot towards his direction as they raised their heads in expectation. They all wanted to know how powerful the puppet of the ninth level would be.

As countless gazes attentively watched, the dazzling light started to disappear. As the light disappeared, there was a fuzzy figure that also vaguely appeared.

Boom!

A black figure walked out of the dissipating light.

It was a puppet that was pitch-black, as well as flickering with a metallic luster. However, compared to all those previous puppets, this puppet was clearly much more perfect. It's figure was as slender as a human figure and a sharpness was being emitted off of it.

On its body, dark purple runes flickered with faint light as the eyes of the puppet were also glowing in faint purple luster, emitting the smell of danger.

There was a pitch-black longspear being wielded in its hand. The rather

simple spear tip had a blade. Clearly, it was a weapon used to kill.

The puppet was a size smaller compared to all the previous ones. However, anyone could sense the fearsome power contained in its slender body.

"This is the puppet of the ninth level?" Someone muttered with a pale face.

"Judging on the pressure from the puppet, perhaps it possesses the strength to rival Spirit Disaster experts?"

"It is indeed powerful. However, I wonder, what is the exact rank of Spirit Disaster strength it possesses?"

Outside the Spiritual Treasure Mountain, there were people discussing with voices that could not cover up their astonishment.

Mu Chen closely stared at the puppet before him. As it clearly appeared before him, Mu Chen could sense the threat getting heavier. As a cause, the muscles in his body were tensing up as the Demonic Dragon Devouring Spear appeared in his hands.

This puppet really did possess the perfect strength of a Spirit Disaster.

Spirit Disaster was the last gateway towards Sovereign Realm. It was also the hardest amongst the Three Sovereign Disasters. Be it the Human Body Disaster or the Spiritual Energy Disaster, there was something that one could depend on. However, the Spirit refers to a cultivationer's Spirit. Condensing the Essence, Aura and Spirit were the most important factors. The instant something went wrong with the Spirit, it would be fatal.

Accurately speaking, there were three Grades in the refinement of the Spirit. First grade was refining the human body through blood-fire, second being the refinement of Spiritual Energy through the spiritual-fire and lastly, refining the Spirit through soul-flame. That was basically expanding the Human Body Disaster and Spiritual Energy Disaster, and experiencing it with the Spirit once again.

Experiencing the three Grades of refinement again, the Spirit would grow stronger. After fully experiencing the three refinements, the Spirit

would start to change, laying down the best foundation for Sovereign Realm.

Judging from the strength of this puppet, it probably possessed the strength of First Grade Spirit Disaster.

"First Grade Spirit Disaster."

The gaze of Luo Li, Wen Qingxuan and the rest turned grave. Although they had guessed earlier on, when the truth fell, they could not help feeling shakened in their heart.

Through the remnants that were left in the continent, all the teams in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament had a shocking growth in strength. But even till now, the majority of the pinnacle participants in this tournament had yet to step into Spirit Disaster. Take Wang Zhong, and Wu Yingying for example. Although they stood at the peak of the Spiritual Energy Disaster and possessed the qualifications to come in touch with the Spirit Disaster, they were waiting for a chance so that they could successfully step into the Spirit Disaster. But that was in the future, not the present.

In this tournament, those that dared to say that they possessed the strength to fight this puppet would not surpass three.

"This Divine Wood Palace really did leave something behind." Wen Qingxuan said softly.

Luo Li nodded.

"What if he loses?" Wen Qingxuan looked at Luo Li.

Mu Chen's strength was only at Human Body Disaster. Even if he possessed many means, trying to defeat a First Grade Spirit Disaster puppet was definitely not a simple matter. However, the instant he fails, he would be imprisoned for half a year.

"I believe in him." Luo Li lightly smiled as she paused for a brief moment before continuing, "If he loses, I will lead the team and enter the finals. After I have killed Ji Xuan, I will return here to wait for him."

"Wait half a year for him?" Wen Qingxuan's brows twitched.

Luo Li nodded as she helplessly smiled, "Half a year, I still have that amount of time, at least. Although that might be the last period of time for my last bit of freedom."

Her last sentence was extremely soft that not even Wen Qingxuan could clearly hear it.

"What's so good about that fellow for you to treat him so good?" Wen Qingxuan was a little helpless. With how outstanding Luo Li was, in the future, even in the Great Thousand World, she would definitely shine. However, she was willing to be by Mu Chen's side, hiding her brilliance.

Luo Li lightly smiled as her charming eyes glanced towards the slender figure. Wen Qingxuan only saw the current her, but not the her before she entered the Spiritual Road. Or to say, the her before she had met Mu Chen. Her world was dark and when she was young, her father died in battle. The one that was originally her solid ground had fallen. Her mother was too heartbroken that her health gradually fell. The other royalties of the Luo God Clan had no achievements, they were like insects that ate into the wood. The heavy burden of the clan could only fall onto her shoulders. Her grandfather had temporarily carried it for her, but she was well-aware that she had to shoulder it one fine day.

However, she had no confidence. Back then, she even thought that when that day came, it might be the day that she collapsed.

Thereafter, she met him in the Spiritual Road and learnt confidence. In her darkest moments, he was like a sun that shined on her and slowly expanded, finally lighting her world up.

Ever since she returned from the Spiritual Road, her changes made her grandfather shocked. Perhaps this was the reason that he compromised and gave her two years of freedom.

All the changes was brought to her by him. Therefore, she had no reason not to love him so much.

"Mu Chen is exceptionally outstanding. I believe that if you spend

enough time with him, you will fall for him as well." Luo Li smiled as she looked at Wen Qingxuan.

Wen Qingxuan glanced at the figure in the distance as she said with no expression on her face, "This joke is not funny at all. I have seen too many talented people. Furthermore, aside from the five Great Spiritual Academies, the Great Thousand World is very vast."

Luo Li did not retort as she gave a smile, "Seems like your background is not that simple as well."

Wen Qingxuan indolently spread her fine arms out as her golden close-fitting armour shaped her prideful curves. She did not comment any further on the topic as she suddenly glanced towards the peak of the Spiritual Treasure Mountain. There were frightening Spiritual Energy fluctuations that surged through the skies from that direction.

"Are they finally fighting?"

Wen Qingxuan closely stared at the slender figure as her rosy lips rose into a prideful smile. Mu Chen, let me see how you are so worthy of Luo Li's evaluation.

Chapter 516: Battling the Puppet

Boundless Spiritual Energy was like gale as it swept out on the stone platform. Vaguely, there was the sound of thunder rumbling.

Mu Chen held onto the Devouring Dragon Demonic Spear as both of his eyes fixed onto the puppet that stood before him. His body flickered with lightning. Under his muscles was a powerful energy. The moment he moves, he would be able to instantly unleash astonishing destructive power.

Faced with Mu Chen's alerted glare, the eyes of the black metallic puppet flickered with purple light. There was a pressure that wad slowly being emitted from those eyes.

On the platform, the puppet and person did not make any movements as they stared at each other.

However, the situation only lasted for a brief moment.

The puppet did not have any wisdom. Therefore, it did not know the meaning of fear. It stood before Mu Chen. Whether the opponent it was facing was a Human Body Disaster or at Sovereign realm, it would not hesitate to unleash all of its power. Therefore, the puppet took the initiative to break the silence.

Boom!

The ground slightly trembled as the puppet stepped out. The purple runes on its body instantly burst forth with dazzling light. The frightening Spiritual Energy ripples were like tidal waves as it exploded.

Rustle!

The puppet's charging figure disappeared in an instant.

Mu Chen's facial expression changed as he knew that the puppet did not disappear. The speed of that puppet was too fast for the naked-eyes.

That puppet possessed extremely frightening speed.

Roar!

Although Mu Chen was startled by the puppet's speed, he was, after all, someone that possessed plentiful fighting experience. A shadow dragon appeared beneath his feet and as the dragon roared, an afterimage appeared in his location and he retreated.

Rustle!

Wind was humming by his ears. As Mu Chen retreated, he focused his expression. The Devouring Dragon Demonic Spear in his hands brought along torrential killing intent as it became like a demonic python wrecking destruction. It flashed like lightning as it shot behind him.

Bang! Bang!

The space was torn apart under his spear as it left behind faint marks at the empty space.

Ding!

The Devouring Dragon Demonic Spear pierced towards an empty space. A metallic sound rang out as a black longspear shot forth to meet it. The tip of the spear was extremely precise as it clashed against the tip of the Devouring Dragon Demonic Spear. Black light surged and stopped Mu Chen's spear from moving any further forward.

Boom!

Black lightning surged from Mu Chen's body. His body seemed as if it had become taller. The five lightning runes on his body instantly appeared with power travelinh throughout his muscles like waves.

Rustle! Rustle!

Mu Chen's expression was sharp as his arm trembled. Roars burst from the Devouring Dragon Demonic Spear. Spear images that filled the entire sky rained down like frightening lightning without the slightest bit of restraint of strength.

Clearly Mu Chen did not hold himself back as he had utilised the Penta Rune Lightning Physique. Furthermore, borrowing the might of the Devouring Dragon Demonic Spear, even Spiritual Energy Disaster experts

would not dare to take Mu Chen's storm-like attacks and could only hide.

However, Mu Chen's opponent wasn't a Spiritual Energy Disaster. It was a fighting puppet with the strength of Spirit Disaster without any fear nor emotions.

Ding! Ding!

Therefore, even when the puppet faced the attacks of Mu Chen, there weren't any traces of yielding. The spear in the puppet's hands was like a dragon as the spear images spread out. Every single image of the spear was like a light python as it clashed against the incoming attacks.

This was simply a method of force meeting force.

The storm of attacks from both sides clashed. Thereafter, it was silent again as the two attacks canceled out.

Outside the Spiritual Treasure Mountain, the faces of Wen Qingxuan, Luo Li and the rest were grave as they exchanged looks between themselves. Although both sides appeared to be equal, Mu Chen was the one that attacked first. However, every single one of his attacks were blocked by the puppet without being able to take any step forward. Clearly, Mu Chen's battle would definitely be extremely intense.

Ding! Ding!

Seeing the spear images canceling each other out, Mu Chen's gaze turned even sharper. The hand that was holding onto the Devouring Dragon Demonic Spear trembled. There was an impact from every single clash. If the Devouring Dragon Demonic Spear was not a Peerless Rank Spiritual Artifact and not for his physical body reaching the height of Penta Rune Lightning Physique, he would have already been wounded from the earlier exchange.

The strength of a First Grade Spirit Disaster was not on the same level compared to Spiritual Energy Disaster!

Ding!

The earth-shattering amount of spear images disappeared as the two

spearheads accurately clashed.

Bang!

A strong gale broke out and one could vaguely see the traces of an air explosion.

The purple light within the eyes of the puppet suddenly flickered as the puppet suddenly let go of the spear. With a flash of black light, its figure appeared before Mu Chen like ghost. Thereafter, the puppet sent out a palm towards Mu Chen's chest, causing even the space around it to faintly ripple.

The puppet had finally started to seize the initiative as it unleashed a powerful attack.

The control of the fight that the puppet had was truly shocking. In the next instant, Mu Chen's attacks were thoroughly canceled out.

Mu Chen's face slightly changed. The dragon's image appeared beneath his feet again as he let go of the Devouring Dragon Demonic Spear and flew away in a black light.

The puppet pursued as it's palm was fixed onto Mu Chen as it came closer.

There was no way Mu Chen could avoid that light palm.

Faced with the undying pursuit, ferocity surged within Mu Chen's eyes. Since he could not avoid it, then face it!

Boom!

Boundless Spiritual Energy swept forth from Mu Chen's back. Starry skies appeared as four huge beasts rapidly appeared as Mu Chen threw his palm out.

"Four Gods Constellation Scripture!"

As Mu Chen barked, the four beast images roared as they turned into light and shot towards the puppet.

Purple light flickered in the eyes of the puppet as the palm that had

turned into a black light, rustled as rampant Spiritual Energy clashed against the light seal.

Boom!

Heavy clashes resounded as a surge of Spiritual Energy gale swept out from the point of the collision, wreaking havoc. The light seal that seemed huge and sharp only lasted for a brief instant, before it was destroyed. The black palm broke the light as it clashed against Mu Chen's chest.

Boom!

Mu Chen's figure flew back as a heavy sound rang out from the palm.

Outside the Spiritual Treasure Mountain, clamor broke out.

Mu Chen heavily landed on the ground as his figure rapidly retreated back. Both of his palms were heavily grasping the ground, causing the stone platform to crack. After drawing cracks of a hundred feet on the ground, Mu Chen stabilised his body.

When he raised his head after stabilising his body, there was a trace of blood leaking from the corner of his mouth. However, a chilling light flashed through his black pupils.

Rustle!

The Devouring Dragon Demonic Spear appeared behind the puppet as killing intent surged. The sharp spearhead thrust towards the back of the puppet with a tricky angle.

However, just when the Devouring Dragon Demonic Spear was about to stab the puppet, the puppet abruptly turned around. It swept its leg out like a hammer, which caused the air to crack before it hit against the spearhead like lightning.

Bang!

The air trembled and the Devouring Dragon Demonic Spear was sent flying away with a kick from the puppet. However, the leg of the puppet was penetrated by the spear. Clearly, even though the body of the puppet was as hard as metal, it could not neglect the sharpness of a Peerless Rank

Spiritual Artifact.

The Devouring Dragon Demonic Spear turned into a streak of light as it flew across the sky before stopping behind Mu Chen, floating. Torrential aura was unleashed from it as it was like a ferocious python, unleashing its angered roar towards the puppet.

Outside the Spiritual Treasure Mountain, everyone held their breath as they watched the intense fight of those two. The slightest mistake could end up in heavy injuries. As shown, the puppet clearly had the advantage, since it had defeated all of Mu Chen's attacks. At the same time, the strength of a First Grade Spirit Disaster was revealed.

"Mu Chen must have been injured a little from the fight. If this goes on, he will definitely lose. Compared to Spiritual Energy Disaster, Spirit Disaster is way too powerful. Furthermore, with the metallic body of the puppet, it far surpasses the physique of humans." Wen Qingxuan said softly.

Mu Chen's earlier performance was also exceptionally perfect. Facing such a powerful puppet, he could still advance and retreat. However, he could not counterattack. Although it was all blocked by the puppet in the end, he could already pretty much accomplish such feat with the cultivation of Human Body Disaster.

"It truly is not easy." Luo Li also nodded her head. She did not admit that Mu Chen was in the disadvantage. Shortly after, she smiled, "However, before the result is concluded, who knows who is in the advantage."

"Let's hope so." Wen Qingxuan faintly replied as she watched Mu Chen's slender figure slowly stand up.

"Indeed, First Grade Spirit Disaster is really hard to handle." Mu Chen stood up as he said, wiping the traces of blood off the corner of his mouth.

Boom!

The eyes of the puppet were still flickering with purple light. There still wasn't any expression in its eyes as it looked at Mu Chen with indifference. The puppet stepped forward again, causing the ground to

tremble when it was about to begin attacking again.

Bang!

The ground cracked as the puppet turned into a streak of black light, along with the aura of death.

Rumble!

Up in the sky, not knowing when, a rampant Spiritual Energy swept out as the sky turned a little more dark. Everyone could see two black light lotuses forming into a huge Spiritual Array. Shortly after, the light shrouded down, covering the entire region.

"Spiritual Array?" Wen Qingxuan's eyes narrowed as she continued, "However, I'm afraid that a Spiritual Array of this level could not obstruct the First Grade Spirit Disaster puppet."

Two black lotuses quickly rotated as black light shot from the heart of the lotuses and converged together. It was like a cannon as it shot towards the puppet.

However, facing with the attack of the Spiritual Energy, the body of the puppet stopped as it threw a punch out. The black light was like an untrained horse as it exploded from the punch that destroyed the black light along with the Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array.

When the fist of the puppet destroyed the Spiritual Array, it's eyes lit up with dazzling purple light as it could sense a dangerous ripple. When it lowered its head, it saw that Mu Chen was forming peculiar seals single-handedly. As the seals formed, brilliant light burst forth from the countless colossal trees on the Spiritual Treasure Mountain. Green lights shot out as they gathered towards Mu Chen's hand.

Everyone was startled by the huge change of events, since they could sense a frightening ripple rapidly forming.

"The Spiritual Array was only a pretense. What's coming next is the real game." Luo Li softly said as she looked at the figure that was covered in green light.

Up in the sky, a peculiar ripple appeared in the empty eyes of the light-figured elder as he watched Mu Chen absorbing the energy from thousands of trees.

Chapter 517: Divine Wheel of the Heavenly Wood

The lush green Spiritual Energy that covered the entire sky flew out from those colossal trees that filled the region. They whistled through the horizon before gathering in the center of Mu Chen's palm.

The lush green luster was like a huge vortex. Although it seemed gentle, it was emitting a ripple that could make others nervous.

"This is a... Divine Art?"

Staring at the lush green Spiritual Energy of Mu Chen, Wen Qingxuan could tell that those energies were not cultivated by Mu Chen himself, since they originated from the countless trees. What Mu Chen did was simply borrow their strength. Generally speaking, only Divine Arts could borrow such peculiar energy that existed in the world.

"It should be a Lesser Divine Art." Luo Li replied softly.

The so-called "Divine Art" was also further categorised. There were roughly three categories for it. Lesser Divine Art, Great Divine Art and Perfect Divine Art... Accurately speaking, such a method could only be utilised by genuine Sovereign realm experts. However, once a person's strength had reached the Three Sovereign Disasters, they could actually use it. However, it was just weaker and the might could not compete with Sovereign realm experts.

"This Divine Art seems to be from the Divine Wood Palace." Wen Qingxuan thoughtfully watched. Such a method that utilised the strength among the tens of thousands of threes seemed to be a method from the Divine Wood Palace.

Luo Li lightly nodded her head. It seems that, not knowing when, Mu Chen had obtained a Lesser Divine Art that originated from the Divine Wood Palace. Furthermore, looking at him, he had also actually succeeded in cultivating it.

"But... although the might of a Divine Art is pretty good, it requires time

to execute it. However, I fear that the puppet will not give him the time to do so," said Wen Qingxuan. Judging from the fight from before, that puppet possessed plentiful amount of fighting experience. Furthermore, it did not fear nor did it possess any emotions, so it would fight according to its fighting instincts.

Sometimes, an existence like this that fights based on instincts are more fearsome.

Ommm! Ommmm!

The lush green luster was like an ocean as it rippled around Mu Chen. The huge lush green vortex rapidly revolved in his palm. At the edge of the vortex, it seemed that there were faint traces of space being dragged along.

Purple light flashed within the eyes of the puppet. Clearly, it could sense the danger that harbored in Mu Chen's palm from the lush green vortex. It did not hesitate further and with a grasp of his palm, the black longspear shot over from behind the puppet and landed on its hand. In the next instant, it flew out like lightning without any hesitation.

Rustle!

The body of the spear trembled as it pierced the space. The spearhead was shrouded in black light as it seemed extremely sharp.

Just as Wen Qingxuan had expected, the puppet did not wait till Mu Chen was fully ready with his move. It did not hesitate and acted, intending to kill Mu Chen before he was done.

The speed of the puppet was extremely fast and, in a flash, it appeared before Mu Chen. The spearhead shot out and was pointed towards Mu Chen's heart.

The black light spear was growing before Mu Chen's pupils as light flickered among them. The light contained a trace of ruthless.

Tsssssssssssiiii!

The light spear shot over.

However, what they did not expect was that Mu Chen did not avoid the

attack, nor did he activate any defences. He extended his palm and on his palm, there was black lightning violently flickering about. That arm of his turned brilliant and silvery.

Chhhiiii! Chiiiii!

In the instant the spear was about to reach, Mu Chen's hand grabbed onto that sharp spearhead as ear-piercing squeaking sounds rang out. Thereafter, blood constantly flowed down from Mu Chen's palm.

Even if Mu Chen's Lightning God's Physique had reached Penta Rune, he did not have the ability to ignore the attack of the puppet.

Outside the Spiritual Treasure Mountain, there were continuously cries of surprise. Many people had their faces slightly changed as no one had imagined that Mu Chen would use his hand to block the attack of the puppet. Does he not fear that his arm would be crippled?

"Now, he has enough time."

Luo Li faintly spoke. However, Wen Qingxuan's slender brows slightly trembled.

"He was indeed, firm and decisive." Wen Qingxuan nodded as she commented.

Mu Chen's hand that was covered in blood grabbed onto the spearhead as pain came from his palm. The cold and sharp aura nearly destroyed his entire arm. Fortunately, just when he had utilised his Lightning God's Physique to his limits, his arm had become the strongest part of his body for that instant. Otherwise, his entire arm would have been turned to shreds in that instant.

Boom!

On his right palm, the huge green vortex was rapidly turning. Mu Chen looked at the puppet before him as he suddenly smiled, "I'll let you try the good stuff from your Divine Wood Palace."

"Lesser Divine Art - Divine Wheel of the Heavenly Wood!"

A cold voice rang out from Mu Chen's heart.

Omnn!

The lush green vortex rapidly turned and under the high-speed rotation, it had tore through space. The edge of the vortex started to solidify as it turned into a huge green wood light wheel that was nearly a hundred feet tall. The edge of the light wheel was filled with sinister sawblades. Because of the rapid speed, it was as if a serene light ray was rotating.

An indescribable sharpness was being emitted from it.

Mu Chen's eyes were cold. His hand that was dripped with blood was still tightly holding onto the spearhead. Shortly after, his palm suddenly locked down. The sinister and hair-tingling green wood saw turned into a green light as it tore through space and appeared above the puppet, sweeping down.

The green light brought along a sharpness that could destroy anything as it swept down. That atmosphere that could not be blocked made everyone in the Spiritual Treasure Mountain hold their breath. They all knew that if the puppet was hit by this fearsome attack, even if the puppet was made of metal, it would still be instantly sliced into half.

Rustle!

The wooden green light wheel was moving down at a rapid speed. In the next instant, it had appeared above the head of the puppet. However, just when it was about to sweep past the head of the puppet, dazzling black light burst out from the puppet. There was a metallic wing that appeared behind the puppet that abruptly shot out.

The metallic wing trembled as the puppet strangely disappeared.

Rustle!

The green wood light wheel swept across the air before hitting the ground. There wasn't any cracks on the ground, it only left behind a long, slim and deep mark on the ground. That mark was extremely smooth, as if the depths of it could not be seen. Aside from the smooth surface, it was emitting a frightening penetrative power.

This ultimate move of Mu Chen's had landed empty.

Outside the Spiritual Treasure Mountain, the heart of every team heavily jumped. The intense battle had unknowingly sucked their attention. Just when they thought that Mu Chen had failed in his attack, they felt as if they were in Mu Chen's shoes in their hearts, it was hard to bear.

"What a pity."

Someone sighed. The control of Mu Chen's move earlier on could be described as perfect. However, no one had expected that the puppet would also save something. How is that a puppet was simply more frightening compared to a warrior that had gone through a hundred battles?

Clearly, after losing this chance, Mu Chen's victory would become much lower.

The faces of Xu Huang and the rest turned pale.

Wen Qingxuan softly sighed. Only Luo Li maintained her silence.

Under the countless gazes of pity, Mu Chen stood on his actual spot. His face smeared across with paleness. His gaze swept around and the figure of the puppet had already disappeared. However, Mu Chen could sense a trace of black line travelling about. The speed was too fast for his eyes to follow.

Even if the puppet possessed the strength of First Grade Spirit Disaster, it could be considered as the hardest to deal with.

Mu Chen's muscles tensed up tightly, as if it was a fully pullen bow. He could sense the a faint cold killing intent from his surroundings. He knew that the puppet would unleash its killing move next.

Both of Mu Chen's eyes were tightly shut. He could sense the flow of the wind from the outside. Thereafter, the hurricane-like Spiritual Energy that was around his body started to retract, little by little, because he had actually removed his defences.

Looking at his actions, even Wen Qingxuan's face changed. Under these circumstances, the instant Mu Chen's flaw was grasped by the puppet, the attack that would be coming towards him would definitely be extremely astonishing. That move would probably end Mu Chen.

"What is he doing? Is he seeking death?" When Wang Zhong and his group saw Mu Chen's actions, they frowned their brows.

Wu Yingying's charming eyes were closely fixed onto that figure as she clenched her teeth, "Why did that bastard suddenly become a fool?"

Wooooo. Wooooooooo.

The sounds of the wind became even more rushed on the stone platform. There was a small amount here that could vaguely sense that faint shadow. Even people like Wang Zhong and Wu Yingying could only vaguely sense a black streak of light. However, they could not tell the direction of that shadow.

Wu!

The sounds of wind became even more rushed as fine cracks appeared on the space.

Formless air rippled before Mu Chen as a black figure had appeared before him as if it was teleporting. It straightened both its fingers as Spiritual Energy surged. It was like a dagger that was emitting heavy killing intent and pointed towards the center of Mu Chen's brows.

That attack was too fast and too sudden. At such a distance, even an expert of Spirit Disaster could not avoid it.

One blood trace flowed from the center of Mu Chen's brows as if it was caused by the sharp gale.

"It's over..." The faces of Xu Huang and the rest turned pale.

Everyone else also sighed in pity.

Wen Qingxuan's jade-like hands tightly grasped. Veins popped on her fair skin as a golden light could not help flowing around.

The puppet's finger wind was so close to the middle of Mu Chen's brows, he could have his brains penetrated the next instant.

However, in this instant, Mu Chen's closely shut eyes abruptly opened. There wasn't any panic in his eyes, but a ridiculing smile, as if he was looking at a prey.

Under the countless gazes, his hand rapidly formed hand signs.

Boom!

The ground under his feet suddenly trembled. Shortly after, there was a lush green light that abruptly burst out. It was like a light saw that shot out in front of Mu Chen. It had also wiped across the body of the puppet...

The body of the puppet froze as the sharp wind that was formed on its fingertips dissipated.

Plup.

Although its fingers were on the center of Mu Chen's brows, there was no strength behind it as the body of the puppet was split into two. The cut was as smooth as A mirror.

Up in the sky, the ferocious wheel lightly trembled before it disappeared.

Mu Chen looked at the puppet with no light as he faintly smiled, "This is the real attack."

Chapter 518: Harvest

Up in the sky, the huge green wood light wheel disappeared as lush green light fell from the sky. Completely shrouding the figure below.

There was complete silence outside the Spiritual Treasure Mountain as the faces of those teams were ugly. The scene before them seemed to have surpassed their expectations. It should've been a situation where Mu Chen died. But the facts were twisted as the powerful puppet was split into two.

What was with the green wooden light wheel? Didn't Mu Chen's attack miss and why did it appear again?

Daze was shown on the faces of those people. Clearly, they had not recovered from the sudden change of events.

Wen Qingxuan's slender eyes focused onto the figure and softly said, "Purposely throwing the green wooden light wheel into the ground, how smart. After that finishing move, there was actually another finishing move buried below."

When that green wooden light wheel missed, Mu Chen did not immediately take any action, but had hidden in the ground as he was well-aware of how frightening the speed of the puppet was. If it was instantly exposed, it would probably still be impossible to attack that puppet. Thus, he waited for a chance and, at the same time, he removed his defences to bait the puppet. Only at the moment when the puppet attacked, he would have his chance to kill it.

From that method alone, it contained his courage and unwavering spirit. Perhaps it could also be called "self-confidence". However, it was something that made others astonished.

After all, from the looks of his earlier attack, it was already as fast as lightning. Perhaps, at that time, even Mu Chen had not expected that the puppet could avoid that attack that he had been planning for so long. Despite that, he was not being complacent in the slightest. Beyond his finishing move, there was another one which dealt with his opponent.

"It could not be said to be on purpose. It was just a habit of his to be safeguarded." Luo Li said softly. However, Wen Qingxuan could see the chest of the girl slightly rising up and down and within her tone, there was an ease in it that was hard to detect. Clearly, the girl's heart was not serene when Mu Chen fought with the puppet earlier.

"Indeed, worthy of his fame as the Spiritual Road's Blood Calamity." Wen Qingxuan sweetly smiled as she continued, "If he was not expelled from the Spiritual Road, the current him would be even more powerful. Perhaps I would not be the final champion of the Spiritual Road."

The strength that Mu Chen had shown made Wen Qingxuan more or less startled. The courage and self-confidence that he had shown in the battle made her eyes light up.

At the back, Wang Zhong's eyes were solemn as he watched. Although the twists and turns in the battle were brilliant, what he wanted to see wasn't that. He would be more happy to see Mu Chen being defeated by the puppet and imprisoned.

Furthermore, from the methods that Mu Chen had revealed, a layer of cautiousness and fear rose in his heart as he knew that if he was the one fighting with the puppet, he would definitely not be able to accomplish what Mu Chen did.

"That fellow..."

His eyes were dark as he stared at Mu Chen. Why is this new generation so hateful? Even that fellow Ji Xuan is the same.

Compared to Wang Zhong's darkness, Wu Yingying's eyes, however, were complicated. She stared at Mu Chen with her teeth clenching. Hatred filled her oval face and vaguely, there were some other emotions that were hard to sense. Perhaps she would not admit that she admired him. Although that fellow did all those hateful things to her, she had to admit that he was exceptionally outstanding.

Back then, in the Spiritual Road, Wu Yingying nearly went crazy from all those things that Mu Chen had done to her. Thus, she searched around for Mu Chen after that to take revenge for her shame. However, the Spiritual

Road was oo vast and she could not accomplish what she wished. When she heard of Mu Chen's name again, he was already removed from the Spiritual Road.

However, she further found out that Mu Chen had the title of Blood Calamity of the Spiritual Road. When she found out about that calamity, she was undoubtedly startled as Mu Chen did not commit such frightening acts when she encountered the latter. Otherwise, she would not have been released after being teased.

She had also clearly not expected that she would encounter that hateful fellow here. Also, that fellow had also changed a lot over the years. He was no longer the soft and immature guy that she met back then. When he was serious, there was a blade-like chillness that made his originally charming face even more charming.

Pooooh!

As her thoughts travelled to this point, Wu Yingying's face flushed red and immediately spat. She could not help wishing that she could tear that fellow to shreds. How can I have such thoughts?!

Behind her, when Deng Tong and the rest saw the change of expression on the girl before them, they exchanged looks, but did not dare to interrupt her.

Mu Chen stood on the stone platform as he looked at the puppet that was split in two and lightly breathed out in ease. He wiped the trace of blood off the center of his brows. The puppet was, indeed, strong. However, it was still just a puppet. Although it could rely on its instincts to fight, it was still unable to be compared to a normal human.

However, Mu Chen had to admit that the damnable puppet was hard to deal with.

"However, I have finally dealt with it."

Mu Chen curled his lips as he kicked the puppet away. Thereafter, he raised his head and looked at the brilliant light at the end of the stone platform. Within that jadestone lotus, there was the Nine Suns Divine

Lingzhi. Its branch and leaf were swaying with penetrative sparkle. It was like a sun as it slowly wavered, emitting extremely frightening Spiritual Energy ripples.

The Nine Suns Divine Lingzhi.

The Spiritual Treasure that he had been yearning for was finally his.

He stepped out as he approached the Nine Suns Divine Lingzhi.

However, just when he was about to approach the Nine Suns Divine Lingzhi, a light suddenly gathered at the side of the jadestone platform. This sudden change instantly made Mu Chen startled. Could it be that despite him defeating the puppet, he still could not obtain the Nine Suns Divine Lingzhi?

Light slowly gathered under Mu Chen's cautious gaze. Shortly after, the light formed into that white-haired elder.

Mu Chen looked at that white-haired elder in alert as he cupped his hands, "Senior, I have defeated the puppet so I believe that the Nine Suns Divine Lingzhi should be mine, right?"

Although he knew that the white-haired elder was only a spiritual image left behind that did not possess any intelligence, he still maintained being courteous.

That white-haired elder did not speak and only looked at Mu Chen.

Mu Chen frowned his brows and shortly after, he saw the eyes of the white-haired elder narrow as he realised that within the eyes of the white-haired elder, there seemed to be something else there. He was no longer the dead person without any emotions that he was before.

"I never thought that I would see someone that could utilise the Divine Art of our Divine Wood Palace again." The white-haired elder's mouth trembled. Shortly after, a hoarse voice resounded.

Mu Chen's face changed as he looked at the white-haired elder that stood before him in astonishment. When the elder spoke this time, there were actually emotions in his voice. The current him was no different than

a living person!

The white-haired elder actually still possessed intelligence?!

"Don't panic. You have awoken a strand of my conscious when you used the Divine Art of our Divine Wood Palace. This conscious of mine will soon disappear." The white-haired elder said softly.

Mu Chen then felt relieved and asked, "May I ask the name of yours, Honorable Senior?"

"Even the Divine Wood Palace is gone. There's nothing good to remember my name bu." The white-haired elder sighed. His voice contained age as he continued, "You are a pretty decent sapling. Pity that you are not a disciple of my Divine Wood Palace."

He felt pity. His conscious was awakened when Mu Chen used the Divine Wheel of the Heavenly Wood. Likewise, he had also seen the battle between Mu Chen and the puppet.

Mu Chen was stunned. He could tell that there was something hidden from the white-haired elder's words. His eyes quickly blinked twice and smiled, "If this Senior is willing, I can be a disciple of the Divine Wood Palace in the records."

The white-haired elder smiled as he stared at Mu Chen, "You truly are a smart little fellow."

Mu Chen chuckled. The white-haired elder was clearly a stubborn old man. Now that the Divine Wood Palace was gone, there was no issue in him becoming a disciple in the records of the Divine Wood Palace. Clearly, Mu Chen's words were to the taste of the elder. Otherwise, no matter how much he admired Mu Chen, he would not show any signs.

The white-haired elder brushed his beard as he made a flick with his fingers. A green light shot out from his fingertips and shot into the center of Mu Chen's brows. Shortly after, the runes of an ancient rune appeared in the center of his brows and quickly disappeared.

"Your Divine Wheel of the Heavenly Wood must have been obtained from the Divine Wood Quota. Similar Divine Arts are also present in the

other Divine Wood Quotas."

Mu Chen nodded his head as it was one of his guesses.

"If chances surface, perhaps you can obtain the five other Lesser Divine Arts that are in the five other Divine Wood Quotas. The thing that I gave you earlier could help you combine them. At that time, you will get a little surprise." The white-haired elder smiled as he spoke.

"Many thanks, Senior."

Mu Chen was overjoyed in his heart as he immediately cupped his hands.

The white-haired elder waved his hand and his palm lightly pat onto the jadestone lotus. He saw a brilliant light being emitted from the lotus platform. That gigantic lotus platform rapidly shrank along with the Nine Suns Divine Lingzhi within it. In a few breath's time, the lotus platform turned into the size of a palm with a Nine Suns Divine Lingzhi inside.

The white-haired elder waved his robes and the jadestone lotus platform flew towards Mu Chen. The latter received it excitedly as he had finally obtained the Nine Suns Divine Lingzhi.

"Go, if you want to obtain the true inheritance of the Divine Wood Palace, you will have to depend on your strength."

The white-haired elder inhaled a deep breath as he closed his eyes, "How reminiscing."

Mu Chen could see that the eyes of the white-haired elder quickly dulled as it restored the emptiness that was originally inside. Clearly, the remnant conscious of the elder disappeared.

Mu Chen stored the jadestone lotus platform before bowing towards the white-haired elder and flew off of the stone platform.

Chapter 519: Striking Gold

Mu Chen flew off of the stone platform under the countless gazes that were filled with fear. He returned to the side of Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan as he smiled towards the two girls, "By luck, I was able to accomplish it. I suppose that I was not too embarrassing, right?"

Luo Li smiled as she nodded.

"So-so, there's nothing to smirk about. If it was me who was in your position, there was no way that the puppet could force me to such an extent." Wen Qingxuan's lips rose. Her pride wouldn't allow her to admit that Mu Chen truly was powerful. Although he was still somewhat capable for being able to defeat the puppet.

Mu Chen helplessly smiled. After all, there was still some distance between his cultivation and Wen Qingxuan. If he possessed the strength of Spiritual Energy Disaster, it would be much easier for him to deal with the puppet.

"So are you guys going to try out as well?" Mu Chen looked towards Luo Li, Wen Qingxuan, Xu Huang and the rest. According to the rules of the Spiritual Treasure Mountain, he had already succeeded his challenge and obtained the Nine Suns Divine Lingzhi. Therefore, he could not challenge again. However, Luo Li and the rest still had a chance. There were still quite a bit of rare Spiritual Treasures in the Spiritual Treasure Mountain. If they could obtain them, their strength could have quite a bit of increase.

Wen Qingxuan and Luo Li nodded without hesitation. Since they were already here, they could not return empty-handed. Although Mu Chen had already taken the best that the Spiritual Treasure Mountain could offer, the Nine Suns Divine Lingzhi, there were still other precious treasures that are worth quite a decent amount.

"We can as well?" Xu Huang, and the other two hesitated as they exchanged looks. After all, the consequences to their failure was too dire.

"Challenge according to your strengths. As long as you guys don't aim too high, it should still be possible for success." Mu Chen smiled.

"Good!" Xu Huang and the other two grounded their teeth. Wen Qingxuan and her team of girls did not plan to give up. If they were scared of it, it would be too shameful for them.

When Mu Chen spoke, the atmosphere outside the Spiritual Treasure Mountain became lively. The miserable situation that they had seen seemed to have been dulled by a lot when Mu Chen took his victory. Some people regained their rationality. Although they did not dare to challenge rashly, they started to obtain some Spiritual Treasures.

"Let's go."

When Mu Chen saw that the mood of the other teams was recovering, he smiled as he urged.

Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan nodded their heads. Shortly after, their figures turned into streaks of light and charged towards the eighth level of the Spiritual Treasure Mountain. Only this level was something that they could consider, since the Nine Suns Divine Lingzhi had already been taken.

Seeing as Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan had acted, Pin'er, Le'er and An Ya had also acted. They chose the sixth level, since the puppets on that level possessed the strength of Spiritual Energy Disaster. With the sufficient amount of methods that they had, there was nothing that they would fear.

Xu Huang and the other two, however, were slightly weaker compared to them. Therefore, they could only choose the fifth level, since the puppets there possessed the strength of Human Body Disaster. It was something that they could manage.

Their actions had broken the atmosphere in this region as the other teams could not hold back and also turned into streaks of light as they flew into the Spiritual Treasure Mountain.

Among those groups, the speed of Wang Zhong and Wu Yingying was the fastest as they entered the eighth level. Clearly, they had confidence in their strength.

Thereafter, the atmosphere in the Spiritual Treasure Mountain became

heated up.

Ferocious battles broke out from the stone platform. However, the current situation was much better. After estimating the strength of the puppets, the chances of victory rose. Aside from a few unfortunate fellows that could not perform in the battle, a majority of them clenched victory and obtained a Spiritual Treasure of their choice.

Gales swept out from the stone platform from the many joyful faces. Outside the Spiritual Treasure Mountain, the entire region was filled with celebration. Naturally, there were some who were dejected and depressed. The faces of those pale-faced teams lost their teammates without being able to obtain any Spiritual Treasures and had lost them to imprisonment. So as to say, their steps in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament were halted.

Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan also returned with victory. Although the puppets that they faced were powerful, they did not possess the strength of First Grade Spirit Disaster. Therefore, it was easy for them to clench their victory. It was two complete situations, compared to Mu Chen's.

"What did you guys get?" Mu Chen was a little curious.

Luo Li smiled as light gathered in her hand. A jadestone lotus platform appeared and within it was a fiery-red vine. The vine was like a scarlet dragon, since there were small scales one the surface on the vine. Within the vine, there was lava flowing in it, emitting blazing ripples from it.

"This is a Scarlet Dragon Vine that lives in the lava. The lava fluid of it possesses the usage of refining the Spirit. If it is refined, it could enhance the Spirit, allowing one to have more success when undergoing the Spirit Disaster," said Luo Li.

"Mine is a Iceberg Snow Spiritual Fruit. Mine is in contrast to Luo Li's Scarlet Dragon Vine. However, it also possesses quite a bit of benefit for the Spirit. It is definitely a good item for Spirit Disaster." Within Wen Qingxuan's jade-like hands, there was a fruit that was as white as a jade. It seemed to be wrapped by ice and snow as if there was a chill flowing inside.

"Not bad."

Mu Chen praised. It was definitely beneficial for them to obtain powerful Spiritual Treasures that enhanced the Spirit.

Not long after Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan had returned, Pin'er, Xu Huang and the rest had also past through their challenges. Looking at the joy in their eyes, clearly they had a decent harvest, which made Mu Chen smile. It seems like they have struck gold in their visit to the Spiritual Treasure Mountain.

Shhhhuuuuu.

The intense battle of the Spiritual Treasure Mountain had come to an end. Wang Zhong and his group had also returned. Traces of battle could be seen from his body. Clearly, he had undergone an intense battle.

"Let's go!"

The moment Wang Zhong came out, he gave Mu Chen a dark glance. There was caution in his eyes and shortly after, he waved his hand and left at a rapid speed, along with the two groups of the Saint Spiritual Academy. They also had quite a bit of harvest. Adding on to his weakened situation after his battle, Wang Zhong was not worried that Mu Chen would attack them. After all, there was only one chance in entering the Spiritual Treasure Mountain. Which also meant that if they did not rob the treasures that the other teams had obtained, one team could only obtain five.

Mu Chen glanced at their leaving back figures and faintly smiled. He did not obstruct Wang Zhong as the latter had expected. Many people had complicated gazes about the Nine Suns Divine Lingzhi that he had previously obtained. Therefore, many people were hiddenly coveting after it. Although their formation was so strong that those fellows would not easily attack them, the instant his flaws were captured by them, perhaps they would cause a decent amount of trouble for him.

Therefore, this was not a time to act. After obtaining the Nine Suns Divine Lingzhi, Mu Chen was not too concerned about the other treasures.

Behind Wang Zhong, Wu Yingying and her team returned. She glanced at Mu Chen as she softly snorted. Thereafter, she rapidly left with the members of the Martial Spiritual Academy.

Looking at her leaving figure, Mu Chen helplessly shook his head. He did not have any malice with Wu Yingying. But it seemed that the girl had rather ill-feeling towards him.

"What? You don't bear to part with her?" Wen Qingxuan chuckled as she continued, "Do you know who Wu Yingying's older brother is?"

"Her older brother?" Mu Chen was stunned and shortly after, a person's name came out from his mouth, "Wu Ling?"

Mu Chen wasn't a stranger to Wu Ling. He had fought with him in the Spiritual Road. Therefore, he was well-aware that Wu Ling was very powerful. Speaking from a certain angle, Wu Ling wasn't inferior to Ji Xuan. Such an opponent was someone that even Mu Chen did not wish to provoke. Thus, even if Mu Chen had fought with Wu Ling in the Spiritual Road, it was just a small scuffle compared to Ji Xuan. So there wasn't any huge grudges between them.

However, he had never expected that Wu Ling would be the older brother of Wu Yingying. This made him feel a headache. If Wu Ling knew that his younger sister was teased by him before, god-knows what he would do.

"You're really unlucky. All those difficult people from the Spiritual Road have all become your enemy." Wen Qingxuan took joy in Mu Chen's misfortune as she said.

"Yeah, but you, the most dazzling champion of the Spiritual Road is my biggest opponent." Mu Chen smiled as he stared at Wen Qingxuan.

What he meant was not the peculiar thoughts that Wen Qingxuan had shown for Luo Li, what he meant was another matter. Although they were currently working together with Wen Qingxuan, when the final battle comes, he and Wen Qingxuan would probably be enemies. Furthermore, the fear that Mu Chen had for her wasn't inferior compared to Ji Xuan, Wu Ling and all those powerful figures from the Spiritual Road.

"That is indeed, a regret. If I have the chance, I would definitely not hold my hands back." Wen Qingxuan's mouth curled up.

"What should we do next?" Luo Li looked at the two of them opposing each other, she helplessly smiled as she shifted the topic.

Mu Chen rubbed the center of his brows. There was the tree rune that was left behind by the white-haired elder. Within the tree rune, Mu Chen had obtained quite a bit of news of the Divine Wood Palace. Therefore, he was now well-aware of the location that the inheritance of the Divine Wood Palace.

He raised his head and looked towards the southwest direction as lush green spread through the horizon.

According to the information that he had obtained from the rune, there was a special location in this remnant. At that direction, it was one of the important places of the Divine Wood Palace. It was said that a huge amount of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid was hidden there.

The Sovereign Spiritual Liquid left behind by an ancient force was something that could make every Sovereign realm expert tempted by it.

Therefore, Mu Chen was not an exception.

Chapter 520: Hidden Spiritual Courtyard

Shuuuu!

Ten streaks of light flew across the horizon up in the sky of the lush green forest. Sharp gales of wind that was ear-piercing swept out.

The ten streaks of light were naturally Mu Chen and his group that had left the Spiritual Treasure Mountain. As he had obtained the information of the Divine Wood Palace from the white-haired elder, it saved Mu Chen the time to search around aimlessly. He had directly brought his group towards the location where some treasures were located.

Just like the place that they were going to next, a place called the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard.

The Hidden Spiritual Courtyard was extremely important in the Divine Wood Palace. It was not at all inferior to the Spiritual Treasure Mountain. Within the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard, there were large amounts of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid left behind. Generally speaking, it was the most tempting part of a large force.

The Sovereign Spiritual Liquid was a bizarre item. Even in the vast Great Thousand World, it was still something that wad used to measure the strength of a force.

The Sovereign Spiritual Liquid was something that only Sovereign realm experts could refine. A Rank 1 Sovereign could only refine one drop of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid in one month. One could tell how precious the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid was.

When a person's strength passed through the Three Sovereign Disasters, the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid would be crucial. After all, if one wished to step into the realm of Sovereign, they would require a large amount of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid. Only the powerful and pure energy of the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid could allow someone to thoroughly change and step into the realm of Sovereigns.

This realm was a huge game changer in the path of cultivation.

Only by truly stepping into the realm of Sovereigns, could one possess the qualifications to travel the Great Thousand World. Only those of that level could be called experts and receive the respect of others!

Therefore, countless people have had the Sovereign realm as their target. However, who knew how many of those talented youths were stopped before their step towards that realm. That realm didn't only need talent, it needed a large amount of resources, and a large amount of those resources meant the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid.

Ordinary forces could not nurture Sovereign realm experts. Only those powerful forces could create a Sovereign realm expert.

Among the Great Thousand World, even some Sovereign realm experts would serve those powerful forces for the sake of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid, becoming the servants or Elders. They were using their own strength to trade for the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid, an essential resource.

Furthermore, the symbol of a Sovereign realm, the Sovereign's Celestial Body also required a large amount of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid. The more powerful the Sovereign's Celestial Body, the requirement of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid would also increase. It was said that amongst the ninety-nine Sovereign's Celestial Bodies, the last one would already require thousands of drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid.

A thousand drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid, if it was a Rank 1 Sovereign Realm expert refining it, it would take ten years to produce that amount.

Therefore, Sovereign Spiritual Liquid was something that could not be lacked.

That was precisely the reason why the moment Mu Chen knew of the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard with the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid left behind from the Divine Wood Palace, he did not hesitate to rush over. He was already at Human Body Disaster at this moment, a step closer towards the Sovereign realm. Furthermore the place that his mother originated from was extremely frightening and he could not get any help from that place. So much so that if he was discovered by someone of that place, his

outcome would definitely not be good. Otherwise, his mother would not have left him when he was young.

Mu Chen turned into a streak of light as he flew across the horizon. Looking afar, he deeply inhaled a mouthful of air. His hands slowly clenched tightly. He, who was without any background, could only rely on himself.

Behind him, Luo Li, Wen Qingxuan and the rest of the group closely followed. Wen Qingxuan had shown more interest to the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid compared to the Spiritual Treasure Mountain. Clearly, she was also well-aware of the importance that the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid held. Therefore, she did not have any objections towards Mu Chen's leading this time around. On the contrary, she even hurried the rest to speed up, incase there was nothing left for them if they were late.

The group of people increased their speed as they streaked across the horizon.

Along the way, they saw quite an amount of shining spiritual lights. Those were clearly treasures that had been found and there were people fighting over them. However, Mu Chen and his group did not pay any attention to them as they maintained their speed towards the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard.

Compared to the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid, those things were not as attractive.

As Mu Chen and his team were speeding up, they gradually slowed their speed after about twenty minutes. Mu Chen's figure dove as he headed for a mountain peak. Thereafter, his gaze was shifted up ahead of him. It was a patch of lush green spike trees. Those spike trees were black in colour and they were filled with extremely sharp spikes. The looks of it gave others a sensation of chill. There were also purple lights flickering off the spikes. Those were clearly poisonous.

Mu Chen's line-of-sight passed through the towering spike trees and towards the depths. Vaguely, he could see traces of an ancient hall. However, that ancient hall was surrounded by the dense spike trees,

similar to a hedgehog.

"The Hidden Spiritual Courtyard should be in the deepest part of this spike tree forest..." Mu Chen pointed towards the depths of the spike tree forest as he spoke.

"Let us hurry, then." Xu Huang and the rest were overwhelmed by their excitement as they intended to fly over the spike tree forest.

"Wait."

Mu Chen however, stopped them as he frowned, "There seems to be something wrong about this place."

He could vaguely sense that there was a peculiar ripple coming from the vast spike tree forest. The ripples belonged to someone familiar to him.

Mu Chen wrinkled his brows as he muttered to himself. Suddenly, his palm clenched and a longsword Spiritual Artifact appeared in his hands. He transferred his Spiritual Energy into it, before he shot the longsword forward. The longsword that contained his Spiritual Energy flew towards the skies of the densely packed spike tree forest.

Shuuuuu.

Just as the longsword Spiritual Artifact shot towards the skies, Mu Chen and his group saw that the Spiritual Energy that was within the longsword instantly disappeared. Thereafter, the longsword Spiritual Artifact fell from the sky, since it had lost the support of Spiritual Energy, falling into the forest. Thereafter, it was pierced by the spike trees.

"Hissss." Xu Huang and the rest inhaled a mouthful of chilled air. Those spike trees were too sharp. Although that sword was just a Low Rank Spiritual Artifact, it was not made of tofu... Furthermore, why did the Spiritual Energy on the Spiritual Artifact suddenly disappear?

"What's going on?" Wen Qingxuan asked with her brows wrinkled.

Mu Chen frowned as he looked towards the distance. There was a group that was looking over at this direction without any idea what was going on. He waved his hand as Spiritual Energy swept out and forcefully

captured one of the people in that team.

"What is going on here?"

When that youth saw that Mu Chen had easily captured him, he raised his hand immediately and spoke, "We don't have any malicious intent, we were just taking a look here... Furthermore, this region could not be easily entered by anyone. The moment one steps into the region, their Spiritual Energy would disappear..."

Mu Chen released him as he narrowed both his eyes and said softly, "So that's the case. This region should be covered by a Sealing Spiritual Array."

No wonder he felt that the ripples were familiar, so it was the Sealing Spiritual Array.

"Sealing Spiritual Array?" Luo Li was a little astonished as she continued, "From the type of Spiritual Array, the grade is definitely not low. Looks like it should be left behind by the Divine Wood Palace."

Mu Chen nodded in agreement. A Sealing Spiritual Array of such a range was probably something that could be done with several Spiritual Array Grandmasters. All of them that had participated in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament absolutely did not have the capability to accomplish such a feat.

"Seems like we can't fly over it. Otherwise, we would fall the instant our Spiritual Energy disappears. Our outcome would probably be no different compared to that Spiritual Artifact," said Mu Chen.

"But from the looks of it, we would not be able to use any Spiritual Energy the instant we enter the forest." Wen Qingxuan said with her brows frowned. The power that she took the most pride in was her powerful Spiritual Energy. The instant she lost that advantage, her strength would fall by seventy to eighty percent.

Mu Chen nodded and shortly after, he was a little dazed. Doesn't that mean that this was something similar to the Spiritual Road...? Except that the Spiritual Road was definitely way more dangerous compared to this area.

"Erm... I'd advise you guys not to enter." The youth from before spoke.

"Why?"

"This region was already occupied by the Academy Alliance. They had the advantage of numbers. You guys definitely can't win against them." That youth sneaked a few peeks at Wen Qingxuan and Luo Li before continuing, "Perhaps they do not dare to provoke you guys outside of here. But if you enter, then you can't say for sure."

"There were a few batches that came before you, but they were defeated by the Academy Alliance. They seemed to be prepared, since they chose several fellows that cultivated their physiques. Even if they lose their Spiritual Energy, they are still powerful."

Mu Chen furrowed his brows. Those fellows from the Academy Alliance...

Xu Huang and the rest that stood by the side had ugly expressions on their face. They did not excel at the cultivation of physiques. The instant they lost their Spiritual Energy, they would land in a pretty bad situation if they were to face those fellows that were more powerful than them.

This damnable place is truly troublesome.

Luo Li also looked at Mu Chen. From the situation, their advantage from their valiant formation had decreased. If they still insisted on entering, they would fall right into the trap of the Academy Alliance.

Mu Chen looked at the pitch-black spike trees as he pondered for a brief moment, before he opened his mouth, "I'll enter alone, the rest of you remain outside."

Chapter 521: Moving in Stealth

"Alone?"

Hearing Mu Chen's words, the faces of Xu Huang and the rest changed. The Academy Alliance had the advantage in numbers that could even be seen outside. With their advantage in numbers, even Mu Chen would have to hide, not to mention that the region was under the Sealing Spiritual Array. Losing the power of Spiritual Energy, even something that had went through the Spiritual Energy Disaster or Spirit Disaster would suffer a great drawback in strength.

"No." Luo Li's brows frowned as she held onto her Luo God Sword, "I will go with you. Although my physique isn't as strong as your own, it is much stronger compared to a normal person's."

Clearly, Luo Li wasn't too assured to let Mu Chen enter the region that had sealed Spiritual Energy all alone by himself.

"Me and Luo Li will go in with you. Otherwise, our efforts would have been in vain if you were to take all the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid for yourself." Wen Qingxuan said softly.

Mu Chen didn't know whether to laugh or cry as he was helpless towards Wen Qingxuan's pride.

When Mu Chen saw the expression of the two girls, he knew that it was impossible for him to convince the two of them. Luo Li wasn't assured to let him go alone and, clearly, Wen Qingxuan was haunted by her pride. She could not watch as she gains the benefits by relying on Mu Chen. Therefore, she would definitely not allow Mu Chen to take the risk alone and split the harvest thereafter.

However, Mu Chen had to admit that Wen Qingxuan's pride truly was something admirable.

"Then, the three of us will go in and try our luck." Mu Chen did not waste anymore time to convince them. Perhaps the three of them were a little weak, but they were not ordinary people. He believed that despite the

fact that the Academy Alliance had the advantage in numbers, with them being able to come and go as they wished, it should still be possible.

Seeing as Mu Chen agreed to her suggestion, only then did Luo Li smile.

"You guys will wait for us out here." Mu Chen said as he glanced towards Xu Huang, Pin'er, Le'er.

The three of them nodded. Although they did not wish for Mu Chen to take the risk, they might not be able to help them or they might even be their burden if they were to follow.

Pin'er, Le,er and An Ya looked at Wen Qingxuan. Seeing as the latter had nodded her head, only then did they agree to it.

"Let's go. The Academy Alliance actually wants to monopolize the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard with their numbers." Mu Chen looked at the pitch-black forest as a chill flashed across his pupils. He did not have any positive opinion of the Academy Alliance. Therefore, he was not willing to let them have the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard.

He waved his hand and jumped down the mountain peak, then appeared before the pitch-black forest.

The forest was so black that it was emitting faint chill that could be felt on the skin.

Mu Chen's foot touched the ground as his figure charged in without any hesitation. When he charged in, he could feel that the Spiritual Energy within his body abruptly stopped, as if it had been frozen.

Mu Chen's expression was grave. He tried to move his intent, but there was no response from his Spiritual Energy. The faint spiritual light on his body dulled down. The boundless energy that could shatter mountains with a fist also disappeared. It felt as if he had been suddenly weakened, the feeling was hard to bear.

"Indeed worthy of being a Sealing Spiritual Array." Mu Chen muttered as he furrowed his brows.

Behind him, Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan closely followed. They both had

grave expressions hung on their faces as well. Clearly, they also felt the changes in their body.

In this area, the usage of Spiritual Energy was lost.

"Doesn't it feel familiar?" Mu Chen slowly clenched his fist as he smiled towards Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan.

Luo Li lightly smiled in response as reminisce surged within her clear pupils. The feeling here was indeed, similar to the Spiritual Road. At that time, they could not use any Spiritual Energy and could only rely on genuine methods...

Perhaps she was thinking of the life-and-death battle that she had with Mu Chen as her gaze that was staring at Mu Chen gradually turned gentle.

"Those methods could be used now."

Mu Chen retrieved a black robe that he passed to Luo Li. The black robe was similar to the surroundings as it had the effect of hiding one's figure. Perhaps this method did not have the slightest usage when they were outside, but it was useful to this region that had lost the usage of Spiritual Energy and vision became the main method of scouting.

Luo Li took the black robe and wore it. Instantly, her fine figure was covered by the black robe, only her exquisite face was revealed.

"Here." Mu Chen passed another black robe towards Wen Qingxuan.

"It's ugly." Wen Qingxuan said in hesitation. She had quite a bit of mysophobia and thus, she did not have much contact with the opposite sex. Not to mention the robe that was given to her by Mu Chen, god-knows if he had worn them before.

"You're too eye-catching." Mu Chen took a glance at the girl before him. Her yellow battle armour wrapped onto her graceful figure and her curves could be seen. This scene alone could make many people stare inyo blankness, not to mention at this monotonous area.

Wen Qingxuan seemed to have noticed Mu Chen's looks and instantly

glared at him. She snatched the black robe and wore it over. She was, after all, not a reckless person. She would not bring unnecessary trouble for her companions just because of her own preferences.

Mu Chen smiled as he took out another black robe and wore it over his clothes. Thereafter, he waved his hand as he turned around and charged into the pitch black forest with the two girls closely following him.

...

Within the pitch-black forest, light rays were extremely dull. The spike trees had expanding branches that seemed like blades as they drew sinister-looking shadows. They were like the figures of demons as they wiggled to the point that could make one's hair stand on end.

Rustle.

Under the shadows, three figures flashed across at high speed, using the shadows to cover themselves.

The three of them were well-known figures in the Spiritual Road. The environment that they had been through was more ferocious compared to this place. Therefore, they were very skillful as they stealthily moved. They were skillfully using the cover of shadows to hide their figures. At the same time, their gazes were as sharp as an eagle's as they swept through the dark places.

As their figures moved, Mu Chen's gaze suddenly flickered as he hid his figure behind a spike. When his advancing steps stopped, Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan hid themselves towards the left and right at the same time.

Mu Chen's line-of-sight passed through the spike as he glanced towards the darkness not far away. The shadows were a little distorted as a chilling light flickered in the darkness. Those were the luster of blades.

"Six people."

Mu Chen said softly as he discovered the six figures in the darkness. Those six people had concealed themselves well. However, they had forgotten to hide the cold luster of their blades.

Mu Chen extended his hand and made a signal.

Seeing his hand signal, Luo Li shot forth from the right. She and Mu Chen already had extremely high rapport back in the Spiritual Road. She could understand every single hand signal that Mu Chen used. Wen Qingxuan, however, was a step slower. But ,she was, after all, more intelligent compared to others and very quickly, she understood the meaning in Mu Chen's actions and shot forth from the left.

Seeing as the two girls had taken action, Mu Chen tapped his foot as he appeared like a spiritual monkey, flying up the tree that was filled with spikes.

In the darkness not far away, there were six alert gazes that were constantly looking around, tightly gripping their blades and swords. They also had some experience hiding as they remained still on the ground, being covered by the shadows so that they would not be discovered by others so easily. The intersect point of their gazes sealed off this region as any movements would not be possible to avoid their monitor.

Amongst the six, the hands of one of them that was used as support against the spike trees slightly moved. He seemed to have sensed a fine movement that made him startled. A smear of suspicion flashed through his eyes, but he did not discover anything unusual.

After sweeping his eyes around, he shook his head in the end as his tensed body started to relax.

Just when his body was relaxed, he instantly sensed a chill surging forth. Thereafter, an intense pain came from the back of his head and his eyes darkened. His figure gradually went limp. However, just when his body was about to fall, a hand held onto his body that made him seem normal.

"Hmm?"

In front of him, another companion sensed that something was wrong. That person turned his head and looked at his companion in the shadows as he spoke with a low voice, "What's wrong?"

Within the darkness, he was replied with a shake of his hand and a hand

was extended over.

He looked at his companion's hand in suspicion. However, he did not notice anything else. However, before the suspicion in his eyes deepened, a hand traveled at lightning speed and grabbed onto his throat, causing the voice that was about to exit his throat to be pushed back down.

Mu Chen walked out from the shadows as he looked at the person whose throat was grabbed by him. The person's face was red but was not able to speak a word. Mu Chen placed his finger on his lips and made a silent gesture.

That person could see the chill in Mu Chen's eyes. Instantly, sweat dripped down as he trembled with fear and stopped his struggles. He believed that if he were to continue struggling, he would not be able to keep his life.

When Mu Chen saw that he had obediently quietened down, he smiled. He looked towards the left and right, since there was movement from those two directions. After a brief moment later, this area retained it's peace as two slender figures walked over.

"Settled."

Luo Li said softly.

Seeing as the two girls were fine without any injuries, Mu Chen nodded. He smiled with his eyes narrowed as he spoke towards the pale youth, "You're from the Academy Alliance, right? Tell me the how many of you entered this place. Their rough positions, as well as the position of those three fellows..."

Chapter 522: Intrude

Under the stretch of the spike tree shadows, Mu Chen heavily patted his palm against the back of the head of the person that had his throat held by Mu Chen, fainting him. Shortly after, he dusted his hands off as his gaze swept towards the depths of the forest.

He had already obtained sufficient amount of information from the person that was held hostage by him. Judging from the news, when Mo Yu, Qin Feng and the rest entered the Divine Wood Palace, they went for this place straight away. Clearly, this place was their target and were well-prepared. They dispatched dozens of teams. Adding all the numbers, they would have nearly two hundred men...

Furthermore, the main thing about it was that these people weren't too outstanding in their cultivation of Spiritual Energy. The exception was that all these people had more or less cultivated in their physiques, which implied that their physical bodies were more powerful compared to ordinary experts.

If they were all placed outside and could use their Spiritual Energy, even if they had the advantage in numbers, Mu Chen wouldn't fear them a little. However... under these special circumstances, it became a problem.

"If our news is right, Mo Yu, Qin Feng and the rest have already reached the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard. We were a step too late. Fortunately, there is a seal outside the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard. It would take them quite some time to break it." Mu Chen looked towards Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan as he continued, "They have nearly two hundred people that sealed all the paths towards the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard. If we continue to proceed, we might have to come in contact with the other party. And when it comes to that, the situation might be a little troublesome."

"Do you guys still want to continue forth?"

Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan exchanged a glance as they nodded.

"Let's go, then."

Mu Chen smiled. He had already expected this reply. With Wen Qingxuan's pride, how could she retreat and although Luo Li seemed calm and tranquil, she too, had her pride deep in her heart that was not in any way inferior to Wen Qingxuan.

Mu Chen turned around as his foot tapped on the ground. His figure had stuck to the shadows as he flew away. When Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan saw his actions, they quickly followed up.

As Mu Chen and his party left, this area became quiet once again. However, a brief moment later, there was a faint light emitting from the fainted youth's clothing and with a buzz, it disappeared in a flash of light.

At the same time, in the central area of this forest.

This was an empty region with a flat ground spreading over a hundred feet, covered in huge spike trees. At the central area, was an ancient hall. The ancient hall was tightly sealed with light runes faintly flickering outside the hall, sealing the hall like a prison.

Outside the stone hall, there were dozens of figures. They were Mo Yu, Qin Feng and Liu Xiong, the three leaders of the Academy Alliance were all present in this location.

Mo Yu stood upfront with a light disc in his hand. Above the light disc, there were rays of light that shot out. Those rays of light were extremely peculiar. When they shone on the light runes outside the stone hall, the light runes were actually dissipating bit by bit, as if snow had encountered lava.

"According to this speed, it should take roughly half an hour before the seal is broken." Qin Feng looked at the constantly dissipating seal as he smiled. However, when he finished speaking, his expression changed. With a wave of his hand, a streak of light shuttled through the forest and landed on his hand.

It was a pitch black unusual insect that had a small body as smooth as a mirror.

Qin Feng frowned his brows as he stared at the insect. Shortly after, he

lightly tapped his finger and light appeared on the mirror-like back of the insect. It was a scene that showed three figures, Mu Chen, Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan.

"Haha, enemies are indeed, on a narrow road."

Qin Feng looked at the three figures as a cold smile hung on the corner of his mouth. "Seems like these three people are indeed daring. Clearly knowing how unusual this place is and still daring to enter knowing that my Academy Alliance has the advantage in numbers..."

Up ahead, Mo Yu had his brows furrowed as he watched the scene and spoke with indifference, "I need roughly half an hour's time."

"Okay, rest assured. I will not let them reach this place."

Qin Feng lightly smiled as a chill surged forth in his eyes, "Leave it to me. I'll teach those three a lesson. Haha, if I had encountered the three of them outside, I really would not dare to do anything to them. However, the heavens have aided me. Entering here, they will understand the meaning of a tiger's den."

When he finished his words, he turned around and left. He waved his hand as dozens of figures flew towards the forest and closely followed him as they quickly disappeared in the shadows.

From Qin Feng's actions of going all by himself with his men, it seemed that he did not place Mu Chen's party of three in his eyes.

"Let him go alone?" Liu Xiong asked Mo Yu as he looked at the direction that Qin Feng left.

Mo Yu lightly smiled as he replied, "If it was outside, it would be terrible for Qin Feng to deal with any of those three. But here, the outcome might not be the same. Let him go and you stay to guard me. I can't split my attention."

"Okay."

Liu Xiong nodded.

Mo Yu made a sideways glance into the shadows far away as a smear of

a sneer hung on the corner of his mouth. In a short while, Mu Chen and his group will probably get a huge fright and surprise. They will soon understand what a silly decision it was for them to intrude this place so recklessly.

...

The three figures quickly travelled in the shadows of this forest.

Mu Chen's steps suddenly stopped as he looked up ahead, he had sensed an aura from no less than thirty people. Clearly, this was the main path towards the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard with heavy guards of the Academy Alliance.

"We can't sneak anymore, let's do it."

Mu Chen's gaze swept to his surroundings as he spoke helplessly while

shrugging his shoulders. Due to the terrain, they could no longer advance without a sound.

"Okay."

Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan nodded in acknowledgement.

From the looks of it, Mu Chen no longer spoke as he slightly bent his body. His muscles tensed up as he seemed like a leopard that was about to hunt.

Up ahead on the main path, there were dozens of figures spread out as they swept their alerted gazes around their surroundings. All of them had robust figures and also had faint light circulating on the surface of their bodies. Those were all signs that they had trained in the path of physiques.

Standing at the front, there was a towering male, his gaze was like a ferocious tiger that swept around. Clearly, he was the leader among this group.

"Hm?"

Suddenly, the expression of that towering male froze as he heard the trembling of the ground. In the next instant, he abruptly raised his head, fixing his gaze onto a direction. Sonic booms from the break of wind

resounded as a figure shot out like an arrow from the darkness.

"Someone is intruding, stop them!"

That towering male barked as he stomped his foot onto the ground. The ground cracked as he raised his body a little. A powerful energy surged forth from his body.

Bang!

His figure was the first to charge out and clashed with the incoming figure. He had strong confidence with the strength of his physique. Even among the Academy Alliance, only a few could surpass him in terms of physique.

Boom!

However, his expectations had failed him this time. In that instant, when his sturdy body had clashed with the black figure, his facial expression changed. That flimsy figure was like a wild breast that specialised in strength. That frightening strength heavily impacted against him.

With a deep groan, that towering male flew out in a terrible state along the ground, drawing long marks as he spurted blood from his mouth.

When those from the Academy Alliance behind him saw this scene, their faces changed as they clearly understood how powerful the physique of that towering male was. However, that towering male had suffered injuries from a single clash?

When they were submerged in astonishment, that figure stabilised, revealing Mu Chen's flimsy figure as he looked at the towering male. Although that person's physical body was powerful, it was a pity that he met him.

"Go together!" The towering male quickly barked. He could tell that the youth before him had cultivated his physical body to a frightening extent.

Rustle!

As he barked, dozens of figures acted at once and headed towards Mu Chen.

Seeing the overbearing manner of the other party, Mu Chen's expression turned cold. He inhaled a mouthful of air as black lightning flickered on the surface of his body. Under his muscles, there was thunder that gradually roared.

Boom!

His foot heavily stomped on the ground as he flew out, into the crowd. His fist whistled, sweeping out a powerful gale, causing the air to explode from his fist. All those that came in contact with his fist had spurted blood as they flew out without exception.

Behind him, Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan followed. Although their physical bodies weren't as powerful as Mu Chen's, they were still more powerful compared to ordinary experts that had cultivated their physical bodies. Adding onto the Luo God Sword in Luo Li's hands, although they were not able to utilise any Spiritual Energy in this region, the sharpness of the Luo God Sword wasn't something that could be guarded against with just the physical body alone.

Thus, with the three of them entering the fray, despite the fact that the other party had an advantage in numbers, they were losing as they laid on the ground shrieking in pain.

In roughly ten minutes, dozens of experts of the Academy Alliance had already been defeated as they laid on the ground, groaning in pain.

"It's really a hassle not being able to use Spiritual Energy!" Wen Qingxuan clenched her teeth. If they were outside, those fellows would have fainted with a single palm of her's without being able to get close to her.

Mu Chen laughed and just when he was about to speak, his expression changed as it gradually turned cold. He raised his head, there were figures that slowly walked out not far away. From the looks of it, there were nearly a hundred people that surrounded the entire area.

Up ahead, Qin Feng slowly walked out with a smile. When he looked at Mu Chen, there were hints of ridicule in his eyes.

Chapter 523: Qin Feng

Under the shadows of the forest, the figures of people appeared one after another like locusts as they walked out of the darkness. Their vicious gazes were fixed onto the three figures before them.

When Mu Chen saw the formation before him, even his brows furrowed a little. He never expected that he would be discovered by Qin Feng so quickly.

Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan moved near Mu Chen as they cast their cold gazes upon Qin Feng. Although the opposite party had the advantage in numbers, it wouldn't be an easy task for the other party to take them down.

"Haha, Mu Chen, there were other paths for you to walk but you brought yourself upon hell's gate." Qin Feng mocked as he cast his ridiculing gaze at Mu Chen.

"You have thought too highly of yourself." Mu Chen smiled as he swept his gaze around him, "Why? You have the confidence now that Spiritual Energy slumbers in this area?"

"Being so stubborn even at this time."

Qin Feng frowned, "But at this timing, shouldn't you show a little uneasiness?"

Mu Chen pondered thoughtfully as he replied, "You do not possess this qualifications to make me feel this way."

Qin Feng suddenly smiled as he lightly nodded his head shortly after. He lightly waved his palm down and his voice turned endlessly cold. "Deal with them."

Boom!

As he declared, there was a unified shout from nearly A hundred people from the surroundings. A faint luster was emitted from their bodies and flickered on their skin, having a metallic appearance. They emitted a sense of valiant as they charged with heavy steps on the ground.

Because of the grandeur in numbers, it seemed as if there were ten thousand stampeding horses and that put pressure on others.

Mu Chen's pupils turned cold at this point in time as he deeply inhaled a mouthful of air. Black lightning flickered on the surface of this body and shortly after, he stomped on the ground as well. Cracks instantly spread from beneath his feet. Despite the fact that Mu Chen was not able to utilise his Spiritual Energy, the strength of his physical body was not something that ordinary people could contend against.

Shhhuuuu!

His figure turned into a fuzzy shadow as he charged forward, clashing against the group of people that was charging at his direction.

Bang!

Mu Chen threw a fist forward as a powerful fist gale tore the sky. It was like an air cannon as it bombarded onto countless people.

Deep clashes resounded. The chest of several people sank in a little as they spurted fresh blood while flying away. They had lost their fighting capability in an instant.

Bang! Bang!

Mu Chen did not wear any expression on his face as his fist whistled through the wind with black lightning shrouding him. A fearsome power followed his fist and every single time he sent a punch, there were people flying away with blood spurting from their mouths. The current him seemed like a ferocious steel tiger and was unparalleled no matter where he went.

Although there were many people surrounding Mu Chen, there wasn't anyone that could get near him.

Although those people could be considered to have cultivated in the ways of physical body, they were clearly nothing compared to Mu Chen.

Not far away, Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan also had light emitted from their bodies. Their skin turned sparkling and translucent, similar to

gemstones. Luo Li was wielding her Luo God Sword. Although she could not use her Spiritual Energy, the sharpness of her sword did not allow anyone to approach her.

Wen Qingxuan, on the other hand, wielded a golden battle spear in her hands. Spear afterimages flashed as it drew crafty and ferocious angles that created blood holes on the bodies of those that dared to get near her.

In the forest that was under the shadows, shrieks constantly resounded and the sounds of fists clashing onto meat made others feel fear to the depths of their hearts.

Qin Feng stood outside the battle circle as he watched the three of them that did not show any signs of losing, despite being surrounded by over a hundred people. His gaze remained indifferent as he didn't seem to be bothered by the rapid defeat of his side.

"Indeed formidable."

He watched the battle for quite a while before smiling. His line-of-sight was not on the invincible Mu Chen, but on Wen Qingxuan. A blazing heat flashed before his eyes as he muttered, "If I defeat the former number one, perhaps my name will spread throughout the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, right?"

Among the three person, the one that made Qin Feng feel fear was Wen Qingxuan. The team that was led by her had firmly occupied the number one spot sometime back. No matter how similar powerful teams pursued, it wasn't possible for them to surpass her.

Therefore, everyone was clear that Wen Qingxuan possessed rather fearsome strength. If he was to encounter her outside, even if Qin Feng had an additional set of guts, he would still not dare to attack Wen Qingxuan. However, the current situation wasn't the same. Spiritual Energy could not be used in this region and Wen Qingxuan's overall strength decreased by nearly ninety percent. The current her was her weakest moment.

Thinking how the formal number one would fall by his hand, Qin Feng's eyes turned even more blazing.

He stepped forward and with a tap of his feet, his figure was like a great roc as he flew across numerous people and appeared above Wen Qingxuan before sending a palm down.

"Hmph."

At the sight of the situation, Wen Qingxuan coldly snorted. Her jade-like hands trembled as the golden warspear in her hands drew a light image and shot towards Qin Feng like lightning.

"Hur hur."

At the sight of Wen Qingxuan's actions, a peculiar smile was hung on his lips. He changed his palm to fingers as he bent both his fingers. The boundless Spiritual Energy was like a tidal wave as it exploded.

Qin Feng was actually able to use Spiritual Energy here!

Wen Qingxuan's face drastically changed at the sight of it.

Ding!

A metallic clash resounded. Qin Feng's finger gale that contained his boundless Spiritual Energy withstood the speartip of Wen Qingxuan's spear. At the same time, the fearsome gale had sent Wen Qingxuan back dozens of steps. A faint paleness surfaced on her absolutely beautiful face.

"Haha, now do you know why are we so confident? It's because we can still use our Spiritual Energy here. What can the current you be considered as in our eyes?" Qin Feng laughed towards the sky as he stood on the air. Boundless Spiritual Energy swept out with him as the center.

Wen Qingxuan clenched her teeth as her face was filled with frost. She was actually wounded by Qin Feng. How could the prideful her endure such embarrassment?

"Even without the aid of Spiritual Energy, you're still a trash in my eyes." Wen Qingxuan coldly smiled as her voice became filled with disdain.

"Really?!"

A chill flashed across Qin Feng's eyes and with a flicker of his figure, he had disappeared from his original position.

Wen Qingxuan clenched her teeth as she retreated, tightly gripping onto her longspear. In the next instant, afterimages of a spear pierced out, it was like a torrential rain that she unleashed in her surroundings.

Ding! Ding! Ding!

Metallic clashes constantly resounded as sparks flew. Even the space exploded from the collision. Following every single clash, Wen Qingxuan's figure would slightly tremble. She was prideful of her cultivation in Spiritual Energy. The instant her Spiritual Energy was removed, her strength would fall to the bottom.

Clearly, the current her was being suppressed by Qin Feng.

Seeing as Wen Qingxuan constantly moved back from their clashes, the fire in Qin Feng's eyes blazed even further. He laughed as his attacks became even more rampant.

Ding!

The gale on his finger that contained Qin Feng's boundless Spiritual Energy heavily tapped against the speartip along with a mountain of strength. The impact surged forth and Wen Qingxuan's figure trembled as her rosy lips seemed to have turned a little blood-red.

"Haha!"

Qin Feng frantically laughed. He did not let Wen Qingxuan catch her breath as the light on his fingers became even more brilliant that even the wind had formed shapes of his finger.

"Hurricane Finger!"

His toe tapped onto the ground as he rapidly appeared behind Wen Qingxuan, along with the hurricane-formed finger and pointed towards Wen Qingxuan's back.

Wen Qingxuan tightly gritted her teeth as a smear of chill flashed across her phoenix-like eyes. Her jade-like hands formed bizarre seals. However, just when she was about to use the seals, she felt her body tremble, as if there was a figure that appeared behind her. A familiar scent traveled

over, it was Mu Chen.

Mu Chen's arm embraced her fine waist as he tightly took her into his arms.

With this sudden change of events, Wen Qingxuan was startled. Shortly after, she ruthlessly raised her elbow in reflex towards Mu Chen's chest. A groan sounded by her ears as the two of them were sent flying away by a huge force.

When they fell onto the ground, Mu Chen slightly adjusted and his body heavily landed onto the ground while Wen Qingxuan fell onto him without a single injury.

"What are you doing?!"

Wen Qingxuan quickly strugged free from Mu Chen's arm as she said with anger.

"You're too heavy with your hands." Mu Chen rubbed his chest as he bitterly smiled. Thereafter, he glanced towards Qin Feng, who had bountless Spiritual Energy circulating around him, as his gaze turned cold, "Let me deal with him."

"I can deal with him myself!" Wen Qingxuan shot Mu Chen a furiuos glance. Clearly, she was still angry that Mu Chen actually dared to embrace her.

Mu Chen, however, did not pay any attention to her. He extended his arm out to obstruct her before taking a step forth.

Seeing as Mu Chen did not bother about her, Wen Qingxuan's brows were raised. However, when she looked at Mu Chen's back figure, she was startled as there was a huge patch of blood on his back. That's...

Wen Qingxuan shifted her gaze towards Qin Feng and noticed that there was fresh blood dripping from the latter's fingers. However, from his facial expression, it was clearly not his own...

Earlier on, when Mu Chen hugged her, he had blocked that attack for her.

Unknowingly, the rage in Wen Qingxuan's heart gradually simmered down. When she glanced towards Mu Chen's back that was dyed in red, her mouth moved. "You..."

"Rest assured, my skin is thick, this is nothing."

Mu Chen knew that she had already discovered his injuries. However, he waved his hand, "Leave him to me, you go help Luo Li."

Wen Qingxuan looked at the youth's calm expression. However, she felt killing intent and rage underneath his calm demeanor. She bit her lips as she nodded in rare obedience.

Chapter 524: You’re finished

A faint smile hung on Qin Feng's face as he looked at Mu Chen, who shielded Wen Qingxuan from behind. Shortly after, he raised his fingers that was drenched in blood and lightly wiped. "A hero saving the beauty? How cliché..."

"Only after the hero saves the beauty and defeats the villain, can it be finished." Mu Chen smiled in reply.

"Just you?" Qin Feng mocked. He clenched his fist as boundless Spiritual Energy became like gale as it whistled around him. If he was outside this region, perhaps his strength would not be considered very powerful. However, inside this region, where Spiritual Energy was sealed, it was heavens-defying.

Mu Chen stared at the majestic Spiritual Energy that surged around Qin Feng's surroundings. His eyes lightly narrowed. No wonder Qin Feng dared to come obstruct them all by himself, so he had such a trump card...

"You must have used some methods to negate the disruption of this Sealing Spiritual Array, right?" Mu Chen slowly said as he continued, "However, your methods would not negate it entirely. Therefore, a majority of your Spiritual Energy is sealed as well, unabling you to unleash your true strength."

"Your eyesight is pretty good." Qin Feng smiled as he nodded, "However, with just this amount of Spiritual Energy, it is sufficient to deal with you three."

Mu Chen faintly smiled as a smear of a chill flashed across his pupils.

"It seems that you don't believe..."

Qin Feng smiled. Shortly after, the Spiritual Energy ripples around him became even more rampant, as if there was wind howling along them. His feet stomped forth as the rampant gale swept forward. His figure had appeared behind Mu Chen, as if he was a ghost. The hurricane fingers flickered with sharp luster as it shot forth towards Mu Chen's back.

Siiilak!

Black lightning surged forth from Mu Chen's body at this instant as he threw a punch out in response, clashing together with Qin Feng's hurricane fingers.

Boom!

A deep clashing sound resonated as a powerful gale swept out, tearing cracks on the ground. Mu Chen's figure trembled as he was forced dozen of steps back. At the same time, Qin Feng also took several steps back.

"No wonder you are so confident, so you possessed such a powerful physical body."

Qin Feng was a little startled as he looked at Mu Chen. Fron their earlier clash, Mu Chen actually used his powerful physique to withstand his attack. Even when Wen Qingxuan was using her warspear, she was in a disadvantage when she fought with him. Clearly, Mu Chen's physical body had been strengthened to a certain extent.

Although Qin Feng had also cultivated in the ways of physique, he knew that he was inferior compared to Mu Chen in that aspect. However, it's a pity as even a Body Refining Deity Tier Spiritual Art required the support of Spiritual Energy to use. Right now, Mu Chen could not use the full strength of his refined body and could only rely on the pure strength of his physical body to fight.

"A pretty decent target... Let me have some fun before you die."

A sinister light flashed across Qin Feng's eyes as the smile on his lips also became savage. With Mu Chen unable to use Spiritual Energy, not only would his strength fall, even his agility would likewise fall. Therefore, the instant Qin Feng used any agility-based techniques, Mu Chen would not be able to touch him.

Right now, wasn't Mu Chen a meat target that had no ways to dodge in his eyes?

Shhhhuuu!

Qin Feng smiled as his feet tapped on the ground. A hurricane was formed beneath his feet as he turned into a streak of light as he rotated around Mu Chen at lightning speed.

Ommmmn! Ommn!

It was as if Qin Feng had turned into a tornado as he twisted around Mu Chen. The hurricane caused cracks and marks to be left on the ground.

Mu Chen's body did not move as he looked at the surrounding hurricane. Vaguely, he could sense Qin Feng's location. However, he understood the fact that he could not catch up to Qin Feng in his current state. Which implied that the latter could attack him anytime he wished and he had no way of retaliating.

Shhhhuuuu!

A whirlwind along with sharp Spiritual Energy shot out from the tornado as he flashed across Mu Chen's back. Instantly, Mu Chen's clothes were torn apart, leaving behind a trace of fresh blood.

Mu Chen's expression did not change. However, the muscles twitched, implying the intense pain that was brought to him by the wound.

"Haha."

Within the tornado, Qin Feng's laughter thundered as it contained mockery and complacency in his tone. His opponent that he felt was thorny earlier on was like a catfish that was laid on the chopping board, allowing him to slaughter as he wished. The sensation was simply too marvelous.

Shhuuuu! Shhhhhhhuu!

Thereafter, Qin Feng unleashed his ruthless attacks as Spiritual Energy swept past one after another, cutting Mu Chen's body up. However, he seemed to be enjoying the joy that it brought him as he did not attack any of Mu Chen's fatal points. As the wind swept past, Mu Chen was covered in wounds as fresh blood dripped. However, he did not suffer any fatal injuries.

Mu Chen appeared to be in a very miserable state.

Despite so, Mu Chen still did not moved.

Not too far away, Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan had gathered together. When the two of them attacked, no one in the surroundings could get close to the two of them. When they heard the peculiar movements, they directed their charming eyes over to the direction of the commotion, causing their faces to change the instant the scene caught their eyes.

Within the tornado, Mu Chen did not make any movements as blood flowed down from his body, making him appear in a miserable state.

Luo Li tightly clenched onto her Luo God Sword as veins appeared on her arm.

"That bastard!"

Wen Qinguan gritted her teeth as rage surged in her eyes. She suddenly tightened her grip on her longspear as she made peculiar seals. Her tone was frost cold, "I'll go and kill him!"

Luo Li suddenly grabbed onto Wen Qingxuan's hand as she obstructed her from doing so as she shook her head towards the latter, "Leave it to him."

"But... He could not use any Spiritual Energy, thus he is not Qin Feng's equal! We have miscalculated, not only did they have the advantage in numbers, Qin Feng could even use Spiritual Energy in this region!" Wen Qingxuan said solemnly.

"Qin Feng still is not qualified to defeat him, even if he does not have any Spiritual Energy." Luo Li said slowly and within her gentle tone, it was filled with confidence for Mu Chen.

Although she felt throbbing pain in her heart at the sight of Mu Chen's current state and was itching to slaughter Qin Feng, Mu Chen was a prideful person that did not like others barging into his matters.

Hearing Luo Li's confidence for Mu Chen, Wen Qingxuan was slightly startled. Shortly after, she saw that the slender figure that was covered in

fresh blood still stood towering like a spear. He seemed like a mountain that would not fall. She bit on her lips as she turned her head away.

Wen Qingxuan's figure charged towards the party of the Academy Alliance. Her face was covered in killing intent as her figure emitted a glittering luster. Her warspear drew afterimages as she knocked them back, one after another.

She was venting her anger on those unlucky fellows. Over on Mu Chen's side, the whirlwind became faster and faster as it caused the wounds on his body to become even more dense.

"How dull. Forget it, let's not waste anymore time."

When Qin Feng saw that Mu Chen did not struggle or retaliate, he became bored. Shortly after, his sinister laughter resounded as the hurricane speed became even more rampant. Clearly, he was brewing an attack that could thoroughly wound Mu Chen heavily.

Onommm! Onooom!

The hurricane grew even more rampant and, suddenly, the hurricane seemed to have froze as a figure covered in a whirlwind mysteriously flew out towards Mu Chen's rear. Boundless Spiritual Energy gathered in his hand as it was heavily sent towards Mu Chen's back.

Bang!

The air exploded at this instant. Qin Feng knew that Mu Chen must have sensed his attack. But even if he sensed it, so what? With the strength of his physical body, it was impossible for him to defend against such an attack.

Therefore, everything had ended.

A savage smile appeared on Qin Feng face. However, the smile was only for an instant before it froze.

He saw that on Mu Chen's body that was drenched in blood, there was dazzling black lightning flickering as a thunderous roar burst out.

The scene before Qin Feng went blurry and when it focused, Mu Chen's

indifferent face appeared before him.

Mu Chen raised his fist as black lightning twisted around it. A fearsome power was emitted from the exploding thunder that it even made Qin Feng's pupils shrink from how powerful it was.

"Too much rubbish from your mouth. However, it was all thanks to you. Otherwise, I wouldn't have enough time to gather up all the lightning energy that was dispersed throughout my body."

A smear of a smile hung on Mu Chen's indifferent face as it was filled with mockery.

"So...next...."

Mu Chen's fist had already flew out as he spoke. Thereafter, it clashed against Qin Feng's palm under the drastic change of expression by Qin Feng.

"You're finished!"

Boom!

A deep sound resonated as a huge crater appeared beneath their feet. Mu Chen's figure did not move and on the contrary, the majestic Spiritual Energy around Qin Feng was instantly shattered. His arm was twisted as it seemed as if the bones in his arm were shattered by Mu Chen's fist.

Bang!

His body was like a cannonball as he shot away, before heavily landing onto the ground, drawing over a hundred meter long mark on the ground before stopping.

The surroundings, which was originally noisy, suddenly turned silent. All those people from the Academy Alliance looked at the current Qin Feng, who was like a dead dog lying on the ground, who was holding the advantage a second ago. Their faces were filled with disbelief.

Luo Li lightly smiled as she looked at Wen Qingxuan, "See, I was not wrong, right?"

Wen Qingxuan looked at Mu Chen, who was covered in blood, as she

cast her lips aside. Just when she was about to reply in a mocking tone, seeing the wound that Mu Chen had suffered when he tried to save her earlier on, the words that reached her mouth were swallowed down as she lightly snorted.

Chapter 525: Jade Plate

The clamor had toned down at this moment as astonishment covered the faces of those Academy Alliance experts who had ferocious expressions earlier. They were looking at Nie Li in fear as some of them could not help movong backwards.

Mu Chen was not bothered with them as he looked indifferently towards the figure that was covered in fresh blood lying on the ground.

"You..."

Qin Feng struggled to get up with his body covered in blood. The Spiritual Energy ripples around him had also withered to the bottom. If it wasn't for the protection of Spiritual Energy in their clash earlier on, he might have been killed by Mu Chen with a fist. But even so, his eyes were filled with fear at this moment.

He trembled as he looked towards Mu Chen. He could not understand where that fearsome power that exploded from Mu Chen came from. He should not be able to use his Spiritual Energy here...

Mu Chen looked at Qin Feng's expression as he lightly smiled. Indeed, he was not able to use any Spiritual Energy, but the energy that he had used earlier was the energy of the black lightning... His body had been refined by the black lightning countless times. Therefore, there would be some remaining black lightning in his body. If it was before, it would not be easy to sense the black lightning under the surging of his Spiritual Energy. However, the instant his Spiritual Energy had quietened down, Mu Chen was able to sense the black lightning hidden in the depth of his muscles. Perhaps that power could not be considered as powerful, but it was sufficient here.

However, it needed some time for him to gather that energy. Therefore, Mu Chen allowed Qin Feng to attack him as he wished. What he was after was to fight for more time. However, he knew that he only had this one chance as Qin Feng's speed was extremely fast, due to the fact that he could still use his Spiritual Energy. Mu Chen, on the other hand, could not

compete with him purely with the speed of his physical body.

Therefore, not only did he have to gather his energy, he also had to grasp the exact moment that he could truly heavily injure Qin Feng.

All of this needed some kind of judgement and clearly, Qin Feng had been plotted by Mu Chen right from the start. When Qin Feng had become complacent, he clearly did not notice the cold sneer that was hidden deep within Mu Chen's pupils.

It seemed like Qin Feng was not the one that laughed in the end.

"Next up, can you still retaliate?" Mu Chen smiled toward Qin Feng as he moved forward.

Qin Feng quickly moved back from the sight of him. When he moved, his shirt shattered. It was due to the gale that surrounded Mu Chen's fist from before. When his shirt shattered into pieces, there was an object that emitted a faint light that fell off from his chest.

It was a palm-sized jade plate that was emitting a faint luster.

When Qin Feng saw the jade plate falling from his body, his expression changed as he quickly made a grab towards it.

Boom!

The feet of Mu Chen stomped on the ground as his figure shot forth. His expression turned exceptionally ferocious as he charged towards Qin Feng with killing intent, as if he had intended to slaughter the latter.

Qin Feng trembled as he was frightened from Mu Chen's ferocious gaze. His eyes flickered as he gritted his teeth. He withdrew his extending hand as he utilised his remaining Spiritual Energy and turned into a blurry image as he escaped.

As Qin Feng escaped, the experts of the Academy Alliance no longer had any thoughts of fighting as they all respectively escaped.

In less then a minute, the bustling forest had become empty.

Mu Chen did not chase after Qin Feng as he had picked up the jade plate that had fallen onto the ground, and examined it. He had a feeling

that this item was the reason why Qin Feng could still use Spiritual Energy in this region. Otherwise, Qin Feng's face would not have changed so much.

This jade plate had the size of a palm with a smooth surface. Within the jade plate, there were light patterns spreading out, forming a complicated rune. Vaguely, he could also sense a peculiar ripple being emitted from it.

"What is that?"

Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan asked in curiosity as they walked over as they looked at the jade plate in Mu Chen's hand.

Mu Chen stared at the complicated patterns within the jade plate. Perhaps an ordinary person could not see anything from the pattern, but Mu Chen could feel something familiar about it.

"There is a Spiritual Array carved in this jade plate." Mu Chen slowly said after pondering for quite some time.

"Oh." Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan slightly understood. The both of them were not Spiritual Array Masters, so they could not tell what Spiritual Array it was.

Just when Mu Chen was holding onto the jade plate, his expression suddenly changed.

"What's wrong?" Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan quickly asked from the sight of it.

Mu Chen's expression was a little peculiar. Shortly, his body lightly trembled and a bizarre scene was shown before the two girls. A majestic black and white-mixed Spiritual Energy suddenly swept out from Mu Chen's body.

"You're able to use Spiritual Energy now?"

Mu Chen lightly smiled as he looked at the jade plate with a peculiar gaze as he softly said, "So the reason why Qin Feng was able to use Spiritual Energy was due to the Spiritual Array carved in the jade plate..."

"If I have not guessed incorrectly, the Spiritual Array within this jade

plate should be able to isolate the disruption to the human body's Spiritual Energy by the Sealing Spiritual Array. I wonder, who it was that carved it. It seems like there is a powerful Spiritual Array Master amongst the Academy Alliance," muttered Mu Chen.

However, who was it?

Mo Yu, Qin Feng and Liu Xiong clearly didn't look like something that had any deep accomplishments in the ways of Spiritual Arrays... If that's the case, it should be the head of the Academy Alliance that seldom shows himself.

"The Great Spiritual Academy Tournament is indeed, hiding dragons and crouching tigers." Mu Chen sighed.

"You are also a Spiritual Array Master, right? Are you able to carve this type of Spiritual Array?" Wen Qingxuan asked. Not being able to use Spiritual Energy was simply too hard to bear. If she could thoroughly use her Spiritual Energy, would she have needed the help of Mu Chen earlier?

Mu Chen stared at the complicated light patterns within the jade plate as he lightly smiled, "Although this Spiritual Energy is indeed ingenious, the level of it is not high. It would not be hard to do it once I know the diagram. Furthermore, this Spiritual Array is not complete. Perhaps this was the reason why Qin Feng could not fully negate the effect of the Sealing Spiritual Array."

"Can you make it better?" Wen Qingxuan's brows twitched.

"It shouldn't be too difficult." Mu Chen smiled. His smile contained unnoticeable pride. He had absolute confidence in his talent in Spiritual Arrays. No matter what, his mother was a Spiritual Array Ancestor. Even amongst the entire Great Thousand World, she was at the pinnacle level. As someone that had inherited her bloodline, it would be strange if Mu Chen was mediocre in Spiritual Arrays.

"That Qin Feng had gifted us an excellent present. Otherwise, it would be dangerous for us to charge in." Luo Li smiled. Earlier on, no one thought that Qin Feng and his group would possess such a trump card. Although if they were to thoroughly fight, it was not possible for Qin Feng

and his group to deal with them completely, it would at least be at a cost for Mu Chen's party.

Mu Chen nodded as his head as he sat down with his legs crossed as he held onto the jade plate.

"Give me some time."

When he finished speaking, he directed his attention into the jade plate with both his eyes closed, sensing the complicated light patterns. Thereafter, projecting it back to his brain and quickly outlining an ingenious complicated diagram.

Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan sat down beside Mu Chen. Luo Li looked at the youth who was still covered in fresh blood as her eyelashes trembled.

On the side, Wen Qingxuan looked at Luo Li. In her view, Luo Li was clearly a better view compared to Mu Chen. Although that fella's performance earlier was pretty could, it could still not move Luo Li's spot in her heart.

"Luo Li..."

However, Wen Qingxuan seemed to have thought of something and her expression changed.

"Hm?" Luo Li turned her head as she looked at Wen Qingxuan.

"You're from the Luo God Clan, right? Furthermore, not long from now you will become the next Empress of the Luo God Clan." Wen Qingxuan said softly as she looked at the exquisite face.

Luo Li nodded her head as she stared at Mu Chen in daze and fondness. She had no idea what he would be like when she sees him the next time...

"The situation in the Luo God Clan does not seem too good, right?" Wen Qingxuan lightly sighed as she seemed be aware of some matters.

Luo Li smiled, "Perhaps this is the weakest moment in the history of the Luo God Clan. However, it's alright. I will work hard."

Wen Qingxuan looked at the young girl as she hesitated for a moment before speaking, "You... have you heard of the West Heaven War

Emperor?"

In the next instant, Luo Li's figure seemed to have trembled as she looked at Wen Qinguan and nodded her head, "Being able to stand on par with the Martial Ancestor of the Martial Realm and the Flame Emperor of the Endless Fire Territory. How could I have not heard of the name West Heaven War Emperor?"

"I've heard that he had once said that he could protect your Luo God Clan..." Wen Qingxuan lowered her voice as she continued, "Except..."

Luo Li smiled, "Except that I have to go to the Great West Heaven Realm, right? My grandfather has spoken with me about this matter. However, I told him that for us to be this petty and low to be protected by someone for a clan to exist isn't what we need. I will work my hardest to change the Luo God Clan. If...my Luo God Clan were to die, I will die together with my clan members."

"What War Emperor, although his name is intimidating, I have no interest in what he wants me to do in the Great West Heaven Realm."

Wen Qingxuan looked at the charming girl as she asked, "Why?"

Luo Li looked at the youth not far away as she lightly smiled and said in a soft voice, "Because someone told me that one day, he will become an unrivalled expert...so I will wait for him."

Wen Qingxuan looked at Mu Chen. This fellow's...ambition is truly big.

"I have to trouble you not to let Mu Chen know of this matter," said Luo Li.

Wen Qingxuan nodded her head as she knew that Luo Li did not want Mu Chen to feel too pressured. After all, West Heaven War Emperor was too powerful. He was a great figure, even in the Great Thousand World. Even the clan that she resided in could not ignore such an existence.

However, between the choice of clouds and mud, Luo Li did not hesitate to stand by Mu Chen. The trust that she had in him was indeed something that could make others jealous. That fellow is really lucky...

Chapter 526: The Rage of Wen Qingxuan

Mu Chen quietly sat under the shadow with both his eyes closed. The jade plate in his hands emitted a faint light as his powerful Spiritual Energy wrapped around the jade plate. The light patterns on the jade plate seemed as if it was moving as there were fine changes to it. However, the changes gradually made the Spiritual Array within the jade plate to be more complete.

Mu Chen possessed extraordinary talent in the path of Spiritual Arrays. Under his Heart's Eye State, he could grasp the ingenious Spiritual Array within the jade plate that wasn't too complicated as he made amendments to it.

The light on the jade plate lasted for roughly ten minutes, before Mu Chen slowly opened his eyes. He looked at the jade plate, which was even more brilliant compared to before, as a smile hung on the corner of his lips.

"Is it done?" Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan looked over from the side.

Mu Chen nodded his head as he handed the jade plate in his hands over to Luo Li. Luo Li's hand grasped it and used her intent. A surge of powerful Spiritual Energy swept out from her body as joy flickered in her charming eyes, "It could indeed negate the effect of the Sealing Spiritual Array to the Spiritual Energy inside the body. With this jade plate, we would be able to unleash our strength without fear."

"Can you still make two more?" Wen Qingxuan hastily asked. The sensation of not being able to use Spiritual Energy was simply too hard to bear.

"I can, but the effect would not be that good under haste." Mu Chen nodded.

"It's fine, as long as I can use my Spiritual Energy, all those fellows would be considered as trash in my eyes." Wen Qingxuan clenched her fist. Her clear voice contained a frosty chill. Clearly, she had been angered by Qin Feng's actions earlier.

Mu Chen nodded as he smiled. Qin Feng and his group would probably not have a good time after offending Wen Qingxuan.

He made a grabbing gesture as two other jade plates appeared in his hand. Mu Chen closed his eyes as he controlled his Spiritual Energy, causing light patterns to gradually form on the jade plates.

Upon creating two other jade plates, it took him nearly half an hour before Mu Chen reopened his eyes and passed the other two jade plates over to Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan. "Time is too crucial. Under haste, these two jade plates are not as complete as the first one. However, it could allow you to use roughly seventy percent of your Spiritual Energy."

"That's more than enough."

Wen Qingxuan received it as she said in a light tone, "Let's go. We have to seize the moment and rush to the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard. When we do, leave it all to me."

When she finished speaking, she did not wait for Mu Chen's reply and turned around, flying into the depths of the forest. After being able to use her Spiritual Energy again, there was a difference as great as the sky and earth in her strength. Her speed was something that even Mu Chen was startled by.

Mu Chen smiled as he nodded his head towards Luo Li. The two of them quickly chased after her.

Just as Mu Chen and his group were speeding towards the depths of the forest, Mo Yu, who was at the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard, looked at Qin Feng's group, who returned with miserable appearances, in astonishment. Shortly, he furrowed his brows as he asked, "What's going on?"

"We lost by Mu Chen's hands." Qin Feng said with a pale face as he wiped the blood off the corner of his lips.

"He can't use any Spiritual Energy, how are you not his opponent?" Mo Yu questioned in astonishment.

"That fellow's physical body is extremely powerful. Furthermore, there seemed to be something strange with it. Aside from Spiritual Energy, there

was still another energy." Qin Feng gritted his teeth as he hesitated for a brief moment before continuing, "Even my Spiritual Protection Jade Plate is in his hands."

"What?" Liu Xiong's face changed. The reason why they were so fearless in this region was due to the fact that they had ways to use their Spiritual Energy. Therefore, even towards Mu Chen and Wen Qingxuan, they didn't have any fear. However, Qin Feng had lost his Spiritual Protection Jade Plate? Wasn't that their biggest reliance?

Mo Yu's face changed as his gaze turned dark.

"What now?" Liu Xiong looked towards Mo Yu, "I'm afraid that Mu Chen's group is rushing over right now."

"It's fine." Mo Yu's eyes flickered as he shook his head, "The Spiritual Protection Jade Plate that was in the hands of you both wasn't complete due to the lack of time. Even if Mu Chen and his group obtained it, they could only use fifty percent of their Spiritual Energy. There's nothing to fear."

"Furthermore, this seal is about to break. According to Big Brother's words, we should be able to control the Spiritual Array here. At that time, we could gather everyone's strength. At that time, not even Mu Chen and his group could do a thing to us."

Hearing Mo Yu's words, only then did Liu Xiong and Qin Feng feel relieved.

"Gather everyone here." Mo Yu instructed. Shortly after, the light disc in his hand shot forth with light ray once again, shining onto the seal of the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard, dissipating the light runes on it.

Qin Feng and Liu Xiong nodded their heads and immediately issued a hand gesture. Several figures flew from the surrounding forest one after another and gathered in the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard. It was a black patch of people with nervous and guarded gazes as they looked at the dark forest path.

This entire area instantly turned silent, only some heavy breathing could

be heard.

Rustle! Rustle!

Time slowly went past and suddenly, there were fine footsteps coming from the dark forest.

Qin Feng and Liu Xiong's expressions gathered as they looked at the dark forest. The sound of footsteps became clearer and clearer. In the end, three figures walked out of the darkness and appeared on the border of the spike trees.

"Haha, what a huge formation." Mu Chen smiled as he looked at the amount of people.

Beside him, Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan were looking over with chilled gazes.

"Mu Chen, don't be too complacent. You really think that you can defeat all of us just because you obtained the Spiritual Protection Jade Plate?" Qin Feng viciousy looked at Mu Chen as he continued, "My Spiritual Protection Jade Plate only allows you to use fifty percent of your Spiritual Energy. Based on your strength as Human Body Disaster, do you think that you can deal with all of us?"

"So it was called the Spiritual Protection Jade Plate. The person that created this thing for the three of you is pretty capable." Mu Chen smiled. Thereafter, he made a step forward under the guarded gazes of the other group. A mockery smile was lifted on the corner of his lips as he made a grasping gesture with his hand. The boundless Spiritual Energy was like tornado as it swept out.

"I think you're wrong. This Spiritual Protection Jade Plate could allow me to utilize all my Spiritual Energy."

Qin Feng and Liu Xiong's faces drastically changed at this point in time. They looked at the Spiritual Energy around Mu Chen in disbelief.

"Impossible!" Qin Feng exclaimed. The Spiritual Protection Jade Plate was originally his, so he naturally knew how effective it was. It was not a complete Spiritual Array so it would not allow anyone to use a hundred

percent of their Spiritual Energy.

"How is it impossible? I amended this Spiritual Protection Jade Plate a little." Mu Chen smiled as he continued, "I even created two of them in a short time."

As he finished speaking, Spiritual Energy ripples swept out from Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan, causing a whistling of wind in the air.

Qin Feng and Liu Xiong's expressions instantly turned paled as their eyes were filled with fear. They could not imagine that Mu Chen not only amended one Spiritual Protection Jade Plate, he had also create two more in such a short time. If that was the case, didn't that mean that Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan had recovered a portion of their strength?

"I have to thank you for giving us your Spiritual Protection Jade Plate. Otherwise, I would have no ways." Mu Chen smiled towards Qin Feng. Seeing his smile, the latter felt sweetness in his throat, since he had the urge to vomit blood.

Up ahead of them, the Academy Alliance army could not help retreating with their faces paled from the pressure of the powerful Spiritual Energy. Their fighting spirit from before was thoroughly wiped as they understood that it was impossible to obstruct Mu Chen's group of three that had regained their Spiritual Energy.

"It seems like your attainments in the ways of Spiritual Array is pretty high."

A cold voice resounded as Mo Yu slowly turned around. His expression was cold as he looked at Mu Chen.

Mu Chen looked at the Second Leader of the Academy Alliance as he smiled, "There should be someone that has high attainments in the ways of Spiritual Arrays, right? I suppose that is the mysterious Head Leader? He isn't here?"

"If Big Brother is here, how could you be so arrogant?" Qin Feng said, grinding his teeth.

"It's not easy to meet such an outstanding Spiritual Array Master, so I

wanted to get to know him." Mu Chen said with indifference.

"There will be chance for you to do that. Except that your outcome might not be too good." Mo Yu's tone was similarly indifferent.

"I'm looking forward to that." Mu Chen smiled as he continued, "However, it should be your outcome that isn't too good right now."

"Mu Chen, if you take your group and leave now, the grudges between you and the Academy Alliance will be erased. In the future, we would not cause any trouble to you as well. In this place, it's better to have a friend rather than an enemy, how about it?" Mo Yu said slowly.

"Too late."

Mu Chen lightly sighed.

"Hmph, to refuse goodwill and have to be forced." Liu Xiong coldly snorted, "Do you really think that you can deal with all of us with just the three of you? Isn't your appetite a little too big?"

"You're wrong."

An indifferent voice resounded, it was not from Mu Chen. Wen Qingxuan slowly walked up with a cold expression. The black robe that she wore over her had already been removed at this instant, revealing her golden battle armour. The battle armour outlined her figure as she tightly grasped her warspear. The speartip gradually lifted up and was pointed towards the other party. Her cold and prideful voice resounded m in this area.

"Just me alone would be enough to deal with all of you!"

When she finished speaking, brilliant golden light swept out from her body. The brilliance of the golden light vaguely formed a golden phoenix behind her. An honorable and aloft aura was being emitted from it.

The numero uno of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament was finally going to act.

Chapter 527: Courtyard

A brilliant golden light spread out in this Hidden Spiritual Courtyard. Wen Qingxuan held onto her golden warspear as her devastatingly beautiful face was filled with frost. Boundless and vast Spiritual Energy formed into a Spiritual Energy pressure as it swept towards the Academy Alliance.

Faced with Wen Qingxuan's pressure, the Academy Alliance was trembling as they had already lost their fighting spirit.

At the sight of it, Mo Yu's face turned ugly as he said with a solemn voice, "Wen Qingxuan, don't take it too far. Our Academy Alliance has never once offended the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy. Why are you being so overbearing?!"

"I just don't like the sight of you people." Wen Qingxuan's cold voice resounded.

"You!"

Rage flashed across Mo Yu's eyes as he continued to say with a solemn voice, "Wen Qingxuan, although you are powerful, our Big Brother might not fear you!"

"You're trying to scare me with a fellow that only knows how to hide himself?"

Wen Qingxuan coldly smiled as she tapped her foot on the ground and flew out. Golden light surged as if it was a golden phoenix, it was extremely gorgeous. Under the gorgeous sight, her golden warspear emitted a dazzling light as it turned into spear images that covered the skies, surrounding the group from the Academy Alliance.

Boom! Boom!

With Wen Qingxuan's strength, it was hard for ordinary people to withstand it. Not to mention that she could use a portion of her Spiritual Energy, whereas the group from the Academy Alliance could not. The strength of their physical bodies could not be comparable to Wen

Qingxuan's attacks.

Thus, the group from the Academy Alliance fled in disorder from the places that the golden light went. Several figures were sent flying away, spurting blood from the spear images.

In just a short dozen minutes, the group from the Academy Alliance had already been defeated.

"Wen Qingxuan, you're too much!"

Mo Yu's face turned pale at the sight of this as he issued a bark. His feet stomped on the ground as his figure flew forward. A surge of powerful Spiritual Energy swept out from his body as a huge sword image formed in his hands when he made a grabbing gesture. Thereafter, it shot towards Wen Qingxuan in a crafty angle.

"Hm?"

When Mu Chen saw the powerful Spiritual Energy burst from Mo Yu, he gasped as he felt that Mo Yu had exploded all the Spiritual Energy within his body. It wasn't the same as Qin Feng, who could only use half of his Spiritual Energy. Clearly, the Spiritual Protection Jade Plate that he had was more complete compared to Qin Feng's.

"Hmph."

Wen Qingxuan raised her phoenix-like gaze as she coldly snorted when she saw the Mo Yu that was charging towards her direction. The golden warspear in her hand abruptly burst with dazzling light and vaguely, there were cries of a phoenix resounding from it.

"Spear of the Golden Phoenix!"

The golden warspear shot forth as if it was a golden phoenix that had spread its wings. It brought along dazzling golden light as it ferociously clashed with the opposite attack without any retreat.

Ding!

A clear metallic clash resonated. At the moment of the clash of the spear and sword, a fearsome gale swept out, causing deep marks to be made on

the ground from the aura of the sword and spear.

Boom!

The sword images suddenly exploded as Mo Yu's figure trembled for a moment, before flying away. A blood trace appeared on his palm as blood flowed down from his fingers. Clearly, he was at a disadvantage in his clash with Wen Qingxuan.

"Spirit Disaster!"

Mo Yu looked at his palm that was covered in blood as he looked at Wen Qingxuan with a dark expression, "Indeed worthy as the Captain of the once numero uno team. The current you must have already experienced the Spirit Disaster, right?"

Mo Yu's strength was only a step away before he would experience the Spirit Disaster. Ordinary Spiritual Energy Disaster experts were not his opponent. However, his opponent's strength had clearly surpassed himself.

Hearing Mo Yu's words, Qin Feng and Liu Xiong's faces also changed. They were looking at Wen Qingxuan's calm expression with fear. She had actually gone through her Spirit Disaster? Isn't that a little too frightening?

"Lead your people and get lost from here." Wen Qingxuan said indifferently as she held onto her longspear.

Mo Yu, Qin Feng and Liu Xiong's faces turned into an ugly sight. They exchanged looks and could see the chill in each other's eyes. Within the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard, it was the location where the Divine Wood Palace kept their Sovereign Spiritual Liquid. As long as they obtained one drop of it, they would be able to charge against the Spirit Disaster. Therefore, how was it possible to get them to leave?

"I'll see what makes you qualified to speak such words." Mo Yu coldly sneered. Thereafter, he waved his sleeves as a light ray shot out. In a flash, the light rapidly expanded and turned into a greenish wood statue. Boundless Spiritual Energy was emitting from the body of the statue.

"Divine Wood Guard?"

Seeing the familiar statue, Mu Chen's gaze froze. Mo Yu actually possessed a Divine Wood Guard?

"Hmph, Wen Qingxuan, this Divine Wood Guard possesses the strength of a Spirit Disaster. Do you want to try it's might?" Mo Yu coldly snorted. Summoning the Divine Wood Guard had raised his confidence.

"You want to obstruct me with a broken piece of wood?"

Wen Qingxuan gripped her golden warspear even tighter as a chill flashed across her eyes.

"Leave the Divine Wood Guard to me." Just when Wen Qingxuan was about to act, Mu Chen's voice suddenly resounded.

"You're seeking death!"

Mo Yu smiled as he mocked upon hearing Mu Chen's words. Mu Chen's cultivation was just at Human Body Disaster. Even if he possessed some means up his sleeves, how could he fight with the Divine Wood Guard? However, he didn't know that back in the Spiritual Treasure Mountain, Mu Chen had defeated a First Grade Spirit Disaster puppet.

"I don't have to fight myself." Mu Chen smiled towards Mo Yu. Shortly after, he waved his hand and from his sleeve, a light shot out as well and rapidly expanded. Thereafter, it turned into a huge Divine Wood Guard. The size of it wasn't any inferior compared to the one standing up ahead.

"Coincidentally, I have something similar in my hands. I wonder, which one would be more powerful?" Mu Chen smiled with his eyes narrowed as he looked at Mo Yu, who had an ugly expression at the moment.

"Damn it, how do you have one as well?!" Qin Feng and Liu Xiong's faces paled. Never, in their expectations, would they think that Mu Chen would also possess a Divine Wood Guard. And now, their powerful trump card had failed.

Wen Qingxuan was also looking at Mu Chen with a little astonishment. Clearly, she did not expect Mu Chen to have such a trump card as well. A

puppet with a strength comparable to a Spirit Disaster was rather intimidating.

Mo Yu gritted his teeth and waved his hand. The Divine Wood Guard charged towards Wen Qingxuan with the ground rumbling from its steps.

"Haha, let the big fellows play with each other, why bother a girl?" Mu Chen lightly smiled and with an intent, his Divine Wood Guard had charged towards its opponent. It threw out its huge fist, along with greenish light.

Bang!

Two colossal beings clashed and a huge battle broke out that even the ground was trembling.

At the sight of it, Wen Qingxuan nodded her head towards Mu Chen. Thereafter, she fixed her cold gaze onto Mo Yu's group, her warspear had, once again, surged with golden light.

"What should we do?" At the sight of this, Qin Feng and his group's faces changed. With Wen Qingxuan's strength, even if the three of them were to join up, they would not be her opponent. Not to mention that Mu Chen and Luo Li were standing by on the side. Their advantage in numbers had become their burden under these special circumstances.

Mo Yu's eyes were dark but he did not panic. He took a glance at the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard behind him as he muttered "It should be almost here."

"Everyone, take formation as had been spoken of before." Mo Yu coldly barked as he waved his hand.

The spirit of the Academy Alliance group that had previously lost their fighting spirit suddenly trembled. They retreated towards the edge of the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard. There was a protruding stone platform that they sat down on.

"Wen Qingxuan, as I have said. It's not as easy as you think to chase us away!"

Mo Yu coldly smiled. Shortly after, his hand was placed on top of a wooden pillar of the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard. Boundless Spiritual Energy surged into the pillar and on the ancient wooden pillar, green light runes appeared as they spread out at an astonishing speed.

Ha!

At the same time, all those people from the Academy Alliance that were seated on the stone platform around the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard barked out as their palms were placed on the stone platform. Light surged as they directed the Spiritual Energy within their body towards the stone platform. Thereafter, as the Spiritual Energy surged, the entire Hidden Spiritual Courtyard was emitting a dazzling light.

The sudden changes made Mu Chen and his group startled. Wen Qingxuan's face was cold as the golden warspear shot forth with piercing golden light. However, just when the golden light had entered a few feet around the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard, it had been blocked by the greenish light that surged out.

The Hidden Spiritual Courtyard was covered in light as it became even more brilliant. The faces of all those Academy Alliance members that sat on the stone platform had turned pale.

Mo Yu did not bother about his companions that had their faces paled as he directed his cold gaze towards Mu Chen's group of three. Within his eyes, it was filled with cold killing intent.

"Mu Chen, you guys will regret coming here."

The smile on Mo Yu's face turned savage. Shortly after, both of his hand were pressed against the ancient greenish pillar before him as he circulated all his Spiritual Energy.

Onom! Onomm!

Boundless Spiritual Energy suddenly gathered frantically before the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard. Thereafter, it vaguely turned into a fuzzy light image. Within the light image, the powerful ripples being emitted from it caused the faces of Mu Chen and his group to change.

"This is the Courtyard Spirit that guards the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard. Once it's summoned, it would automatically wipe out the lifeforms around the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard. Only those that are within the range of the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard would not suffer its attacks."

Mo Yu coldly smiled as he gazed at Mu Chen's group of three in pleasure.

"Now, you three will become its prey. Mu Chen, the one that laughs till the end will not be you three."

Chapter 528: Successor

The light image gradually took form outside the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard. When that light image appeared, everyone could sense extremely shocking Spiritual Energy ripples being unleashed. The Spiritual Energy pressure froze even the space.

The faces of Mu Chen, Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan turned grave. The sudden change of events had far surpassed their expectations. Who could have thought that the Academy Alliance would hide such a trump card...?

"The strength of this Courtyard Spirit...is something that even First Grade Spirit Disaster probably could not fend against." Luo Li said with a solemn expression as she tightly gripped her Luo God Sword.

Mu Chen lightly nodded his head in agreement with his brows furrowed. The current situation had became exceedingly troublesome. The fluctuation that was released from the Courtyard Spirit was definitely something that ordinary Spirit Disaster experts could not contend against.

"Haha, Mu Chen, how is it? No matter how powerful you guys are, didn't you guys lose this game of chess?" Mo Yu stood within the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard as he looked at Mu Chen's group of three, whose expressions were grave, and he could not help smiling as the proudness could not be concealed in his laughter. With this trump card, no matter how powerful Mu Chen and his group of three were, they could not change this outcome.

"You say that the Courtyard Spirit would indiscriminately clear out anyone that is not within the protection of the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard..." Mu Chen looked at Mo Yu as he continued, "Are you guys planning on hiding inside here even after obtaining the treasure in the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard?"

Mo Yu's expression turned serious. He never thought that Mu Chen would discover this difficult problem that they would soon face. Just as Mu Chen had said, although they were the ones that summoned the Courtyard Spirit, it was impossible for them to control it. They would be

out of the Courtyard Spirit's attacking range when they were inside the protection radius. However, the instant they stepped out of that radius, they would face the hostility of the Courtyard Spirit.

"You don't have to worry about that."

Mo Yu coldly sneered. Although this was indeed a problem, the important issue was to deal with Mu Chen's group of three at this moment.

Just as the two of them were conversing, the eyes of the Courtyard Spirit that was hovering in the sky of the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard shone with brilliance. It swept its eyes out and fixed onto Mu Chen's group of three. Thereafter, a hoarse voice resounded from its mouth, "Kill those who intrude without permission."

"Careful!"

The instant it spoke, Mu Chen yelled with his face changing.

Rustle!

It was as if a Spiritual Energy tornado was scraping around the Courtyard Spirit. With a flash, its figure had appeared before Wen Qinxuan like a ghost. Its palm that was emitting dazzling brilliance carried a hurricane-like Spiritual Energy as it slapped down on Wen Qingxuan without any hint of mercy.

Rumble!

The air exploded in its palm, twisting even the space.

Wen Qingxuan was well-aware of how powerful the Courtyard Spirit was as her face turned grave. The golden warspear burst forth with golden brilliance once again and under the clear cry of a phoenix, it turned into a sharp golden light as it shot towards the palm of the Courtyard Spirit at light speed.

Boom!

The instant the two forces clashed, fearsome Spiritual Energy swept out as Wen Qingxuan's figure trembled for a moment before flying away.

Mu Chen's figure appeared behind Wen Qingxuan at this moment as he pushed his palm against her shoulders. The earth-shattering impact was instantly transferred to him, causing wounds to tear open on his arm.

There was no expression on the Courtyard Spirit's face as it waved its hands, unleashing a powerful ray of light as it surrounded Mu Chen and Wen Qingxuan.

Shhhhuuuu!

Boundless sharp sword light swept out from the rear as it clashed with the Spiritual Energy. The Spiritual Energy Sword Aura wrecked havoc as it tore the earth apart.

Luo Li's figure flashed as she appeared beside Wen Qingxuan. Sharp Sword Intent was being emitted from the Luo God Sword as it fixed onto the Courtyard Spirit as a great opponent.

"This Courtyard Spirit might possess the strength of Third Grade Spirit Disaster." Wen Qingxuan said solemnly.

When Mu Chen and Luo Li heard her words, their faces changed. The Courtyard Spirit was actually so powerful? The strength of a Third Grade Spirit Disaster wasn't something that they could deal with. Furthermore, even if they managed to clench victory with all sorts of trump cards used, they would still have to pay a huge price. However, that was probably what Mo Yu and his group would want to see the most.

"What should we do now?" Luo Li said with a low voice as she looked at Mu Chen.

Wen Qingxuan had also directed her gaze towards Mu Chen. The strength of this Courtyard Spirit that stood before them had strength that surpassed their expectations. If they were to continue on fighting, it would definitely not be good news for them. After all, due to the Sealing Spiritual Array, her and Luo Li's strength were sealed and could not use them to the fullest.

"Retreat."

Mu Chen's eyes flickered as he said with no hesitation. The situation

had already gone out of their control. No matter how many methods they had, they would have to pay a huge price in order to deal with the Courtyard Spirit that possessed the strength of a Third Grade Spirit Disaster. Therefore, no matter how unwilling they were, they could only choose to retreat.

Hearing Mu Chen's words, Luo Li nodded her head without any hesitation. Wen Qingxuan, however, was looking towards the protective radius of the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard, at Qin Feng's group, whose faces were filled with complacency.

Boom!

When the three of them reached the agreement to retreat, the Courtyard Spirit did not plan to let these intruders off. Its figure flashed as it appeared in the sky. Spiritual Energy gathered in its hand as it had turned into a huge Spiritual Energy light seal. That light seal was verdant with a lush green color and complicated runes on it.

"Green Wooden Mountain Sealing Stamp!"

The empty hoarse voice came out from the mouth of the Courtyard Spirit. The light seal grew as it faced the wind, growing to a size of a few hundred feet that had nearly surrounded this land.

Mu Chen's face turned ugly. The Courtyard Spirit seemed to have sensed their intention to retreat as it had unleashed its finishing move.

The degree of the attack had reached to an extent that even First Grade Spirt Disasters could only dodge.

"The two of you retreat first!"

Mu Chen's solemn voice resounded as black lightning frantically flickered on the surface of his body as a thunderous roar resounded.

"It's not your turn to cover the rear with your strength!" Wen Qingxuan said coldly. She had a strong personality that did not like to stand behind a man. Ever since she came here, she had already been saved by Mu Chen multiple times. Her personality would noy allow it if she were to let Mu Chen cover their backs while they retreat.

Mu Chen took a glance at her as he did not speak any rubbish. He extended his hand out to grab onto Wen Qingxuan's tender shoulders as his Spiritual Energy surged out, pushing her towards the direction of the forest.

"You!" Wen Qingxuan's face flushed red in the air. Although she was furious, she did not fly back and could only stare with hatred at Mu Chen.

"You should take caution." Although Luo Li was worried about Mu Chen, she knew that this was not the time to hesitate. She warned Mu Chen as she rapidly retreated as well.

When Mu Chen saw the two girls retreat, his expression turned grave as he stared at the onwards Spiritual Energy light seal. Even with his powerful physical body, he could feel stinging pain from the boundless energy. It was the sign that his physical body had felt danger.

Mu Chen deeply inhaled a mouthful of air as he made a hug at the air. A brilliant light burst forth from his forehead and at the same time, a baleful aura surged out. A demonic pillar flew towards the heavens from the spiritual light. It was the Great Meru Demonic Pillar.

The Great Meru Demonic Pillar expanded in size as it instantly grew a few hundred feet. The frightening baleful aura was spreading out as it filled this entire heaven and earth.

Both of Mu Chen's hands were hugging the air, as if he had hugged the colossal Great Meru Demonic Pillar. Thereafter, he threw a punch out that heavily clashed against the bottom of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar.

Buzz!

Baleful aura swept as the Great Meru Demonic Pillar turned into an ominous light and clashed with the incoming light seal.

Rumble!

The air between this heaven and earth seemed as if it had exploded as a repercussion shock wave blew out. Destroying the surrounding solid spike trees. Countless spikes were sent flying by something that seemed to be like a storm, ravaging the ground.

Up in the sky, Mu Chen's figure rapidly retreated, and his face had an additional trace of paleness. Although he had borrowed the might of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar to withstand that astonishing attack, he had also suffered injuries due to it.

In the vicinity of the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard, Mo Yu, Qin Feng and the rest were closely watching the battle. When they saw that Mu Chen had managed to withstand that startling attack from the Courtyard Spirit, their faces turned ugly as a smear of fear flashed in the depths of their gazes, since they knew that if they were in Mu Chen's shoes, it was absolutely impossible for them to withstand that attack.

"Just how much strength did that bastard conceal?" Qin Feng said as he gritted his teeth.

"Even if he had hidden his strength, it is impossible for him to fight with this Courtyard Spirit." Mo Yu said with a dark expression.

Up in the sky, Mu Chen made a seal with his palm as it commanded the Great Meru Demonic Pillar to fly back to him. When it retreated at high speed, his expression turned exceptionally grave. The strength of a Third Grade Spirit Disaster was indeed out of his expectations. Compared to the puppet on the Spiritual Treasure Mountain, it was simply not on the same level.

"Xuuuuuuu!"

As Mu Chen's gaze flickered, a wind explosion resounded as he immediately narrowed his eyes as he saw the Courtyard Spirit appearing before his face. Its empty eyes were fixed onto him.

"Be careful!"

From a distance away, Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan anxiously shouted as their faces changed.

The Courtyard Spirit was unwavering with its attacks. It did not give Mu Chen any time to react as its palm extended forward. There was a terrifying Spiritual Energy vortex forming in its palm as frightening ripples were emitted from it.

The Spiritual Energy vortex was frantically pulling him in, leaving no path of retreat for Mu Chen.

"Damn it!"

Mu Chen clenched his teeth as ferocity flashed past his black pupils and he was about to utilise the baleful aura within the Great Meru Demonic Pillar.

The Spiritual Energy vortex enveloped towards him; however, just when it was a few feet away from Mu Chen's face, it suddenly stopped. The Courtyard Spirit's empty eyes flickered with light as it's empty voice muttered, "The Successor?"

As it muttered, which made Mu Chen startled, he realised that the Courtyard Spirit was looking at the center of his brows. Over there... an ancient tree rune appeared. It was given to him by the white-haired Elder back when he was at the Spiritual Treasure Mountain...

Chapter 529: Opening

Outside the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard, the boundless Spiritual Energy ripples calmed down. The powerful pressure that was emitting from the Courtyard Spirit also withdrew.

The palm that swept along with a powerful Spiritual Energy stopped before Mu Chen. However, it did not land as it's empty eyes were focusing on Mu Chen. However, Mu Chen knew that it was looking at the ancient tree rune on his forehead.

It was something that the white-haired Elder from the Spiritual Treasure Mountain left for him.

Mu Chen willed the Great Meru Demonic Pillar to fly back and it hovered behind him. His body was still tense. The instant the Courtyard Spirit made any movements, he would immediately turn around and flee.

Fortunately, the situation that Mu Chen wished for not to happen did not take place. The Courtyard Spirit was suspended before him as it's empty eyes were flickering with light. Naturally, it no longer had any hostility towards Mu Chen.

At the rear, Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan, who were about to move and help Mu Chen, also stopped their movements. They had naturally sensed that something wasn't right as the Courtyard Spirit no longer attacked Mu Chen.

"What's going on?" The two girls exchanged a glance and could see a hint of doubt in each other's eyes.

"What's going on?" Mo Yu, Qin Feng and the rest had also issued the same question. However, their tones were more to dark as they could vaguely feel that something was wrong.

Under those gazes, Mu Chen saw that the Courtyard Spirit no longer had any signs of attacking him and gradually relaxed his body. Thereafter, he saw the Courtyard Spirit slowly bow as its empty voice resounded, "Identity confirmed. The Successor has the qualifications to enter the

Hidden Spiritual Courtyard."

"Successor? You're talking about me?" Mu Chen asked as his heartbeat raced.

"You possess the Divine Tree Rune, that deems your identification as the Successor." The Courtyard Spirit's empty voice no longer had any enmity.

"So I'll be able to enter the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard?" The corner of Mu Chen's lips slightly twitched as he could not stop the surging excitement in his heart as he pointed towards the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard.

The Courtyard Spirit nodded its head.

An uncontrollable excitement surged from Mu Chen's pupils, which made him softly chuckle. The sudden change of events made him feel a little unreal. Originally, they should be forced to retreat. But, who could have imagined that he would suddenly become a Successor? Furthermore, possessing the qualification to enter the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard.

Mu Chen's line-of-sight was directed towards Mo Yu and his group that was hiding within the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard in ridicule. The latter seemed to have sensed something as their faces turned pale.

Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan cautiously approached Mu Chen. The Courtyard Spirit did not react to their actions as it only quietly stood beside Mu Chen, seemingly like a loyal servant.

"In the Spiritual Treasure Mountain, that white-haired Elder left me something which made this Courtyard Spirit address me as some Successor." Mu Chen explained upon seeing the doubt in the eyes of the two girls.

Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan was dumbfounded from his explanation. Thereafter, the latter gritted her teeth as she spoke, "Is this Divine Wood Palace founded by your house? Why does it seem that all the benefits goes to you?!"

Luo Li was also nodded in agreement. Not long after Mu Chen entered the Divine Wood Palace, he had already obtained the most precious

treasure of the Spiritual Treasure Mountain, the Nine Suns Divine Lingzhi. And now, he became some Successor. All these windfalls were something that could make others lament.

Mu Chen awkwardly rubbed his nose as he spoke, "This was something that I have obtained after risking my life. Earlier on, I was nearly killed by this Courtyard Spirit."

"Since this Courtyard Spirit listens to you, can you get it to get those fellows out?" Wen Qingxuan pointed towards the Academy Alliance parties that hid themselves in the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard. Her expression was filled with enmity.

Mu Chen smiled as he looked at Mo Yu's group, who had a paled faces at this moment. "Seems like I'm the one that will be laughing till the end."

"You, what do you want?!" Mo Yu said in a stern voice. However, the paleness of his face was not as intimidating as his tone. He was panicking in his heart at this moment. Never, in his wildest imagination, could he expect that the Courtyard Spirit would suddenly listen to Mu Chen's orders.

"Get out." Mu Chen smiled.

"Dream on!" Mo Yu furiously barked. Thereafter, he turned around and sent a palm out towards the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard. He wanted to obtain the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid quickly and leave this place with his men.

Bang!

However, just when he was about to come in contact with the gigantic door, a ray of light burst forth from the door as a fearsome energy charged out, which sent Mo Yu flying.

Puuuuufff!

Mo Yu's figue flew backwards as a mouthful of blood spurt from his mouth.

"Why is this happening, didn't we break the seal here?" Qin Feng and the

rest exclaimed at the sight of it.

"Only the Successor can enter the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard. Anyone else that dares to intrude will be killed." The Courtyard Spirit's empty voice resounded.

Mu Chen was startled at the scene of it. The things in the Divine Wood Palace were really uneasy to take. If he had not met that white-haired Elder from before, even if they had managed to somehow deal with Mo Yu and his group, it was also impossible for them to enter the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard.

The strength of this Courtyard Spirit was simply too powerful. To them, someone that possessed the strength of a Third Grade Spirit Disaster was extremely troublesome.

"I'll give you guys two choices. Everyone get out or I'll have the Courtyard Spirit do it." Mu Chen chuckled as he looked at Mo Yu's party and continued, "So, what is your choice?"

The faces of Mo Yu and his party changed. They wanted to reject with a sneer. However, they saw Mu Chen's gaze gradually turn cold and instantly felt a chill in their hearts. Although there was some rules to this Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, if Mu Chen really wanted to act, he had quite a few means to force them to stay.

From their understanding towards Mu Chen, that fellow was not a lenient person.

"Mu Chen, we'll admit defeat here. How about this, we'll split the things in the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard in half. Thereafter, you will be considered as a friend of our Academy Alliance. We would definitely help if there's anything that you need of us." Mo Yu said as his gaze flickered.

Mu Chen smiled as he looked at them. He shook his head slowly yet firmly.

From his understanding towards a person like Mo Yu, he was someone that was greedy and ruthless. Even if they split the treasures equally now, Mo Yu would definitely bite him if he gets the chance to do so.

"You don't have much time left to make the decision." Mu Chen said in indifference.

Mo Yu's face turned extremely ugly as he glanced at Qin Feng and the group of people from the Academy Alliance. They were dispirited and did not have any intentions to carry on with the fight. He waved his hand in unwillingness.

Seeing his gesture, all those that hid within the range of the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard charged out. They took a glance towards Mu Chen's group of three in fear as they gathered at an area far from those three.

Qin Feng and Liu Xiong stood behind Mo Yu, their faces were as ugly as if their father had died.

"Let's go!" Mo Yu ruthlessly glanced at Mu Chen before waving his hand and was about to lead his party away.

"Wait." Mu Chen smiled.

"What do you still want? Kill all of us here?" Mo Yu sneered. The Great Spiritual Academy Tournament had rules of its own. If they all died here, the Spiritual Academy that stood behind them would definitely not let this matter go. Generally speaking, there was some bottomline rules to the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, it forbade killing.

"Although it's a little troublesome to kill all of you here, but if I want to cripple the three of you, I think it's still within the rules." Mu Chen said without a hint of expression.

Mo Yu, Qin Feng and Liu Xiong's figures jolted as they looked at Mu Chen, who was without any expression. In the end, they could only lower their heads, "What do you want?"

"Hand over the Divine Wood Plaque in your hands." Mu Chen extended his hand out and demanded. He still remembered the words from the white-haired Elder. Every single one of the six Divine Wood Plaques contained a Lesser Divine Art. By combining the six Lesser Divine Arts, it would certainly turn into a powerful Divine Art, even within the records of the Divine Wood Palace.

"You!"

Hearing that Mu Chen was having ideas of his Divine Wood Plaque, fury surged within Mo Yu's eyes.

Mu Chen kept his hand extended as he coldly looked at Mo Yu. On the surface of his body, Spiritual Energy surged forth. Even Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan were looking at them with hostility.

"Consider this your win. Our Academy Alliance will definitely remember today's matters!" Mo Yu suppressed the anger in his heart as he left behind that sentence. Thereafter, his palm jolted as a greenish light flew towards Mu Chen.

Mu Chen grabbed it. When the light dissipated, it revealed a Divine Wood Plaque. Only then, did he nod his head in satisfaction.

"Let's go!" Mo Yu ruthlessly glared at Mu Chen before waving his hand. His silhouette was miserable as he skimmed towards the forest. Behind him, those of the Academy Alliance followed in depression. They had lost all of their face.

Mu Chen glanced at Mo Yu's party, who was quickly leaving as he said with pity, "It's a pity about that Divine Wood Guard."

He wanted to take their Divine Wood Guard as well. However, if that was the case, Mo Yu and his party would willingly risk it and go all-out. Naturally, the main thing was that Mu Chen realised that it was impossible to control it, even if he managed to obtain that Divine Wood Guard as the control rune on the Divine Wood Guard was extremely intact. It was incomparable to his broken goods.

"They were robbed by you to the point that they nearly cried." Wen Qingxuan laughed.

"Only a villain could grind another villain." Mu Chen smiled as he continued, "There's nothing to be lenient about when dealing with those fellows."

"Quickly open the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard. I want to see how much Sovereign Spiritual Liquid is left in the Divine Wood Palace." Wen

Qingxuan anxiously said as she looked at the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard.

Mu Chen nodded his head at her words as expectation filled his heart as well.

When Mu Chen directed his line-of-sight towards the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard, the Courtyard Spirit waved its hands as a ray of light flew out and shot onto the closely shut doors. As the light flew out, a complicated light rune instantly surfaced on the door.

Creak.

In the instant that the light rune appeared, Mu Chen's group of three saw the massive wooden door that had been shut for god-knows how many years had finally slowly opened.

The Hidden Spiritual Courtyard that was sealed shut for thousands and hundreds of years had once again, seen the light.

Chapter 530: Sovereign Spiritual Liquid

Creak...

The massive wooden door opened along with an ancient noise, as if there was an aura that came from the primordial times surging out and covered this entire region.

"Let's go and take a look."

Mu Chen's gaze was brightly lit as he looked at the opening door of the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard. A smear of blaze flashed in the depths of his eyes. Shortly after, he smiled towards Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan as his figure had appeared at the door of the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard. Standing there, the antique aura was blowing on his face, which gave him a peculiar feeling, as if he had gone back in time.

As the huge door opened, greenish light was unveiled. The light was filled with nourishing life force.

Mu Chen carefully stepped into it and as his foot stepped into it and did not sense any peculiar movements, only then did he ease down. He stepped into it and behind him, Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan were cautiously following behind him. Spiritual Energy ripples were fluctuating on them. Clearly, they were holding their guards up.

Behind the door, it was a path as it was covered in greenish light. Mu Chen and his group of three were cautiously walking on the layer of light.

The path wasn't long as they had quickly paced to the end of it. Thereafter, the scene before them turned vast and what followed after was dense astonishment appearing on the surface of their faces.

It was a pool that was floating in the air that appeared before them. The pool was green in colour as it emitted dense vitality, emitting fearsome Spiritual Energy ripples.

Plop.

A sound suddenly came from the green pool as they saw greenish small fishes swimming about. Thereafter, they were wagging their tails as they

swam in the air.

Those small fishes were green in colour as they emitted astral light, appearing to be extremely agile. However, Mu Chen and his group could sense extremely pure and powerful Spiritual Energy ripples coming from the body of those small fishes...

"Where is the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid?" Mu Chen was a little startled as he looked at the greenish pool as his face twitched, "Could that water all be the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid?"

Wasn't that a little too frightening? If that was the case, how much Sovereign Spiritual Liquid was there?

"Dream on." Wen Qingxuan rolled her eyes at Mu Chen. Thereafter, her slender fingers pointed towards those small fishes that were swimming in the air, "Those are the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid..."

Mu Chen widened his mouth as he stared in a daze at those green small fishes. He was like a country pumpkin that had not seen the world before. But of course, this was his first time seeing the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid. Shouldn't that be in a liquid state? Why did it become the appearance of a small fish...

"Sovereign Spiritual Liquid was something that only experts could refine, the Spiritual Energy contained in it is not only pure, but also possesses spirituality. Naturally, that spirituality depended on the refiner's strength. Therefore, Sovereign Spiritual Liquid of higher grades possess the ability to take form." Luo Li smiled, "Generally speaking, the higher the quality of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid, the bigger the form it would take. I have seen the form of a drop of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid that was refined by a Heavenly Sovereign for a year. It was something that I'm afraid that not even this Hidden Spiritual Courtyard could contain."

Mu Chen could not help smacking his lips inwardly. The level of a Sovereign was naturally not something that the current him could imagine. No wonder it was a dividing range for cultivation in the Great Thousand World.

All those beneath of Sovereign Realm were ants.

"These Sovereign Spiritual Liquids...aren't easy to store." Wen Qingxuan's expression turned grave as she looked at those adorable swimming fishes.

"Getting it will be very troublesome?" Mu Chen asked in doubt.

"Do you think that as long as you have entered the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard, you will be able to take all the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid here with a wave of your hand?"

Wen Qingxuan ruthlessly stuck on the aspect that Mu Chen had no knowledge of as she spoke, "Sovereign Spiritual Liquid possesses a trace of spirituality. Speaking from a certain aspect, it possesses powerful energy as well. Although that energy would not explode, it would dodge and escape capture by instinct. Therefore, if you want to capture it, it will not be easy."

"Truly deserving to be called the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid." Mu Chen sighed. Hearing Wen Qingxuan's words, it piqued his interest as he said in eager, "Then, let me give it a try!"

As he finished his speech, his figure moved and burst forth.

Buzzz.

When his figure flew, all those green fishes that were casually swimming seemed to have been startled as they started to disperse. As they dispersed, they unleashed astonishing speed as Mu Chen could only see the numerous streaks of green light and could not see their bodies.

"What astonishing speed."

Mu Chen was also startled. Shortly after, a dragon image appeared beneath his feet as a dragon roar thundered. His speed instantly spiked as boundless Spiritual Energy swept out from his body. It turned into Spiritual Energy hands as it rapidly flew out, grabbing onto a green light.

Boom! Boom!

When the small fish was grabbed by Mu Chen, it frantically struggled. Its small body was banging on the Spiritual Energy palm, emitting ear-

piercing clashes. Furthermore, Mu Chen's Spiritual Energy palm was swaying from its impact as it seemed as if it would collapse.

"What powerful force."

Mu Chen expression finally turned grave. After experimenting it himself, he understood how difficult it was to capture these Sovereign Spiritual Liquids. Furthermore, it was just a small drop. If he was the one that personally grabbed onto it, ithr would have probably suffered injuries already.

The Spiritual Energy palm constantly trembled as Mu Chen immediately controlled his Spiritual Energy. A black and white surge of Spiritual Energy swept out as it continuously strengthened his defense, going into a deadlock.

The deadlock continued for dozens of minutes before it gradually weakened down. Mu Chen waved his sleeve as the light palm disappeared. The green fish that was within had already transformed, into a crystalized green liquid.

The liquid was so beautiful that it made others unable to shift their eyes from it. Within the small liquid, it seemed as if there was an entire world existing within it. As the light diminished, it made people intoxicated in it.

Mu Chen extended his palm as the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid hovered on his palm. He could sense the frightening amount of Spiritual Energy contained within it. The energy contained was even stronger then his Spiritual Energy. However, that form of Spiritual Energy had no offensive characteristics to it. Despite being pure, it had a trace of spirituality mixed within it, being extremely bizarre.

"This is the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid..."

As Mu Chen muttered, his heart shook. This was something that was refined for a month by Sovereigns, their masterpiece. Hereby missing the bigger picture as it contained all sorts of exceptionally brilliant methods possessed by Sovereigns.

It made Mu Chen filled with expectation for that realm.

"How is it?" Wen Qingxuan chuckled as she flew to Mu Chen's side.

"Indeed, it was troublesome." Mu Chen nodded his head. He looked at the huge hall with numerous small green fishes swimming in it as he continued, "With so many Sovereign Spiritual Liquid here, it's impossible for us to take all of them."

"It's fine as long as you're satisfied." Luo Li smiled. Although she knew the worth of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid, she wasn't too strongly attached to it. After all, it was a fool's errand.

Mu Chen smiled, "Since that's the case...then prepare to act. We have to obtain at least as much of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid as we can. It'd have to depend on your capabilities."

"Rest assured, I will leave you far behind." Wen Qingxuan said with pride.

"Really?" Mu Chen smiled in return.

"Why don't we have a bet?" Wen Qingxuan looked at Mu Chen with provocation as a sly smile rose from her lips, "If you lose, then you are not allowed to have any bodily contact with Luo Li during the entire period of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament."

Mu Chen and Luo Li were stunned by her bizarre request.

"It's your bet, how am I involved in it?" Luo Li snapped.

"Then what if you lost?" Mu Chen's brows twitched. Thinking of how Wen Qingxuan had been constantly provoking him. He coldly smiled as his gaze swept towards Wen Qingxuan's exquisite figure.

Sensing his gaze, Wen Qingxuan wasn't angered. A charming smile appeared on her beautiful features as she leisurely approached Mu Chen. She placed her hand onto Mu Chen's shoulders as she softly said, "If I lose, you can do anything to me. If you take a fancy in a lady like me, then I'm willing to present myself. That can be discussed..."

Mu Chen looked mockingly at her as he grabbed onto Luo Li's hand, "Luo Li is more beautiful in comparison. I'm not interested in this

disadvantage deal."

"You're seeking death!"

Wen Qingxuan's face turned chill as her brows stood up. Her gentle palm that was placed on Mu Chen's shoulders suddenly pressed down ruthlessly.

"Haha."

Mu Chen laughed as he fled. He stepped on the sky as his gaze fell onto those small fishes swimming in the hall as he smiled, "If you really want to play, then I'll accompany you this once. Forget about betting. Although I can't fight with you right now, I'm afraid that you won't be able to beat me this time."

As he spoke, Mu Chen sat down with his legs crossed. Thereafter, black and white Spiritual Energy circulated on the surface of his body emitting bizarre ripples.

"Hmph, your tone is pretty big. I'll take a look at how you are going to beat me."

Wen Qingxuan's character was prideful to begin with. Furthermore, she would constantly make comparisons between him and herself. Hearing his words, how could she stand it? In that instant, he coldly snorted as her figure moved. She had already appeared on the sky as her hands clasped together, emitting dazzling golden light that was spreading out.

Luo Li helplessly shook her head as she saw the two people on her left and right competing. Shortly after, she also sat down, placing the Luo God Sword on her knees. A faint sword intent was then emitted as she was prepared to start as well.

Chapter 531: All Sorts of Methods

Pure and powerful Spiritual Energy rippled out which caused the entire space to fluctuate in the ancient hall.

Mu Chen, Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan sat in the sky, occupying different locations as boundless Spiritual Energy spread from them. Clearly, they were going to try to subdue all those Sovereign Spiritual Liquids with their real means.

Mu Chen's face was grave as he had tested earlier. He knew how powerful those Sovereign Spiritual Liquid were. If those Sovereign Spiritual Liquids possessed offensive characteristics, Mu Chen would not dare to have any ideas on them as the Spiritual Energy contained in every single drop of those Sovereign Spiritual Liquids were more powerful than those he had accumulated in his body.

After all, they were things that was refined by Sovereign realm experts at a huge expand of their time.

Huuuu.

A white mist spat out from Mu Chen's mouth as his gaze turned exceptionally grave. Shortly after, both of his palm were pushed forward as black and white Spiritual Energy formed a huge hand and made a grab towards the greenish small fish that were swimming in the air.

Buzzzzzz. Buzzz.

At this instant, Mu Chen had already controlled his Spiritual Energy to the limits as the huge black and white hand flickered, capturing one small fish and subduing it rapidly.

Just as Mu Chen had moved, a clear cry resounded from Wen Qingxuan's location. Golden light flickered and within the golden light, it seemed as if there was a golden phoenix spreading its wings. The golden light swallowed the small fish that were swimming in the air.

After that small-sized golden phoenix had devoured the small fish, it rapidly flew back, turning into a golden feather. That golden phoenix burst

forth with dazzling light, which lasted for half an hour before dissipating.

When the golden light dissipated, Wen Qingxuan's figure appeared. Her jade-like hands made a grab towards those ten drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid hovering above her hand.

In just half an hour's time, she had already subdued ten drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid. The efficiency was several times faster compared to Mu Chen.

Wen Qingxuan looked at the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid in her hand as she nodded in satisfaction. She then shifted her gaze towards Mu Chen's direction with a provoking gaze. The hand that the latter had formed was from his Spiritual Energy. Thus, it was clearly inferior compared to the golden phoenix that she had formed.

Mu Chen also sensed the provoking gaze from Wen Qingxuan as he smiled in response. He was startled by the latter's method. Furthermore, he sensed a familiar fluctuation coming from her golden phoenix.

Buzzzz.

Just as Mu Chen's eyes flickered, a clear sword cry resonated as he directed his gaze over. He saw powerful Sword Intent spreading from Luo Li. That Sword Intent did not have a form. However, he could felt heart-racing ripples expanded out of it.

Buzzz. Buzzzz.

The sword cry became more rapid as the Luo God Sword that was in Luo Li's hands slightly jolted. In the next instant, the Luo God Sword flew out with sword light fluctuating. It formed into a sword river under the sword light. As the sword river whistled, it was like a huge python as it devoured ten Sovereign Spiritual Liquids.

When the sword river devoured those Sovereign Spiritual Liquids, it entrench itself around Luo Li. Mu Chen could see the Luo God Sword emitting sword light within the sword river as it constantly suppressed those retaliating Sovereign Spiritual Liquid. The Luo God Sword was, indeed, worthy of being a genuine Divine Artifact. The power it possessed

far surpassed Mu Chen's imagination.

Mu Chen had also not seen the true might unleashed by the Luo God Sword. However, he felt that if the Luo God Sword was to truly unleash its full might, not even the Great Meru Demonic Pillar to contend against it unless Mu Chen unsealed the seal that was placed on it.

With the power of the Luo God Sword, Luo Li suppressed the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid at a rapid speed. In just half an hour, there were ten Sovereign Spiritual Liquids quietly floating before her from the sword river.

Luo Li grasped her hand as she stored the ten drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid. Thereafter, she looked towards Mu Chen and smiled, wittyly pointed towards Wen Qingxuan's direction as she formed words with her mouth, "Don't lose to her."

Mu Chen helplessly glared at her. This girl was clearly actually enjoying his misfortune.

However, it's time for him to reveal some of his cards. Otherwise, he might really be thrown far away by them. At that time, who knew how Wen Qingxuan would mock him at that time.

Mu Chen inhaled a mouthful of air as his black pupils became focused. The huge hand that was formed from Spiritual Energy was dispersed with a wave of his hand. This method of capturing Sovereign Spiritual Liquid was simply too inefficient as it was incomparable to Wen Qignxuan and Luo Li.

Mu Chen formed seals with both his hands as he shut his eyes as the Spiritual Energy around him calmed down.

Wen Qingxuan and Luo Li had also sensed his actions. Just when they were capturing the Sovereign Spiritual Liquids, they also paid attention to his direction.

Black light surfaced from Mu Chen's body under their attention. The light became more and more dense as it gathered behind Mu Chen. Vaguely forming the shape of a Nine-layered Pagoda.

There were profound runes on the surface of the Nine-layered Pagoda with dragon patterns on every single level, making it to seem vivid and lifelike. The dragons roared as though they were about to struggle free from body the Nine-layered Pagoda.

A bizarre suppression of power gradually spread out. The Sovereign Spiritual Liquids that was swimming near Mu Chen looked as though they had sensed a pressure coming from him as they started to escape.

"What is that...?"

Wen Qingxuan was lightly startled. This was clearly the first time that she had seen this method from Mu Chen. Furthermore, she could feel the pressure coming from the black Nine-layered Pagoda.

Luo Li's charming eyes was fixed on the black Nine-layered Pagoda. This was not the first time she had seen it. Furthermore, she knew how powerful it was. Back then, at the Divine Spiritual Mountain of the Northern Heavens Continent, Mu Chen's mother made her appearance appeared and used a similar Nine-layered Pagoda to refine the Yellow Dragon Sovereign, along with his Sovereign's Celestial Body. That scene was so shocking that it made even those big shots of the Northern Heavens Continent dumbfounded.

Although his current Nine-layered Pagoda was incomparable to his mother's, it was definitely not weak.

As the Nine-layered Pagoda hovered behind Mu Chen, black light swept. Those black lights looked as if they contained bizarre power as small fishes lost the power to retaliate the instant the black light was shone on them. Thereafter, they were sucked into the Nine-layered Pagoda along with the black light.

When the small fishes were sucked into the Nine-layered Pagoda, roars of dragons could be heard from the body of the pagoda. A primordial golden dragon broke away from the body of the Nine-layered Pagoda as boundless golden flames entered it. The golden flames expanded as they swallowed the small fish.

Tssssss Siiiiii!

The golden flames displayed fearsome power when they refined the Yellow Dragon Sovereign along with his Sovereign's Celestial Body back when when Mu Chen's mother had used similar methods.

Therefore, faced with the golden flames, the struggle of those greenish small fishes became weak. In less than twenty minutes, ten drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid were already floating inside the Nine-layered Pagoda.

Mu Chen made a summoning gesture with his hand as the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid flew out and landed on top of his palm.

Mu Chen stared at the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid in his hand as a smile surfaced from the corner of his mouth. Ever since he had successfully cultivated the completed version of the Great Pagoda Art, his Nine-layered Pagoda had grown in power. However, he did not use it frequently when he faced his enemies as it was considered trump card.

Mu Chen stored the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid as he took a glance at Wen Qingxuan. Astonishment were filled on the girl's face. Clearly, she had been startled by Mu Chen's speed.

"Hmph."

However, when she sensed Mu Chen's gaze, she pretended to snort in disdain. She then turned her head and no longer bothered about Mu Chen as started to subdue the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid at full force by controlling the golden phoenix.

When Mu Chen saw that the prideful girl being startled by him, he couldn't help smiling as he winked his eyes at Luo Li.

"You only know how to bully girls."

Luo Li rolled her eyes at him as she smiled. She no longer divided her attention and had also focused on the task before her.

Mu Chen smiled as he retracted his gaze and calmed his heart. Right now, he had to capture the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid as quickly as possible. It wasn't easy to encounter such a place again. Even in the Great Thousand World, with such amount of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid in this

place, it could even attract the attention of countless Sovereign Realms experts to fight for it. At that point of time, it wouldn't be like the small scuffles that they had with Mo Yu and his group.

Therefore, he had to grab hold of this opportunity to capture as much Sovereign Spiritual Liquid as quickly as possible since it would greatly benefit his future cultivation. After all, it would require quite an amount of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid to enter the realm of a Sovereign.

Rumble! Rumble!

As Mu Chen calmed his heart, the Nine-layered Pagoda behind him emitted black lights. Those black lights enveloped the small fish and, thereafter, suppressed and subdued them...

Within the ancient hall, the whistling of Spiritual Energy resounded as the golden phoenix, sword river and the black pagoda occupied a corner. As time passed, those small fishes were turned into Sovereign Spiritual Liquid and stored away by the three people.

The three of them gained the greatest benefit in this trip to the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard.

Chapter 532: Spiritual Condensing Bowl

Time rapidly went past in the hall.

Three dazzling lights occupied three corners as light intertwined with powerful Spiritual Energy ripples being emitted.

Under the envelopement of the three dazzling lights, those small fishes that were swimming in the air were constantly being hunted. Turning into sparkling Sovereign Spiritual Liquid with every single drop of it containing majestic Spiritual Energy.

The three people spent half a day's time to capture them.

As more and more greenish small fish were being captured, the green lake in the center of the hall suddenly made a fine ripple. Thereafter, it was as if a suction force was being emitted as the small fish that were swimming in the air escaped into the lake.

Plop.

The instant they entered the lake, their bodies rapidly liquified as they merged into it and disappeared.

The hall became empty once again.

Because of the disappearance of the small fish, the three dazzling lights gradually faded away as Mu Chen, Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan's figures appeared. They were a little confused as they exchanged looks. Their eyes were still filled with discontent as they were clearly not satisfied yet.

"What's going on?"

Mu Chen stared at the green lake as he furrowed his brows.

"All that Sovereign Spiritual Liquid withdrew. There must be a limit to how much Sovereign Spiritual Liquid one can obtain at a time." Luo Li muttered.

"But I am still not satisfied!" Wen Qingxuan stared at the green lake in unhappiness as she snorted, "If you want to obstruct me, then I'll take you as well."

As she finished speaking, she swept her hands as countless golden feathers shot out, towards the green lake.

Buzzzzz!

However, when the golden feathers came in contact with the green lake, it had dissipated the golden light at a rapid speed as the Spiritual Energy contained within it was rapidly being sucked away by the lake.

"Hm?" Wen Qingxuan exclaimed as her face turned grave. She stared at the lake before her as her eyes flicked and yelled in a startled tone, "It's actually a Spiritual Artifact?!"

Mu Chen's heart was also jolted when he heard her voice. The lake that could hold so much Sovereign Spiritual Liquid was actually a Spiritual Artifact? Didn't that mean that if he could take this Spiritual Artifact, he would have obtained a large amount of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid?

Mu Chen's figure flew out as he stopped at the edge of the lake. He focused his gaze over and realised that there seemed to be an ancient text within the lake.

"This is... Spiritual Condensing Bowl?"

Mu Chen stared at the ancient text as he murmured.

"Spiritual Condensing Bowl? How is that possible?!" When they heard that name, Wen Qingxuan and Luo Li's faces changed. They quickly sped over with their gazes filled with astonishment.

"Why? What is a Spiritual Condensing Bowl?" Mu Chen asked in astonishment when he saw the reaction from the two girls.

"Hmph, ignorant guy. In the Ancient Antiquity, there was a special race. They were known as the Spiritual Condensing Race as they possessed a special ability. The Spiritual Artifact that they created would possess the effect of condensing spiritual Energy. Their pinnacle masterpiece was the Spiritual Condensing Bowl. Activating the bowl could shadow the vast heavens and earth. Any form of Spiritual Energy would be sucked into it and would automatically turn into Sovereign Spiritual Liquid," said Wen Qingxuan.

Mu Chen's face changed. Any form of Spiritual Energy would be turned into Sovereign Spiritual Liquid? There was such a fearsome treasure in this world? Didn't that mean that the one whi possessed this treasure would be equivalent to obtaining an inexhaustable amount of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid?

If that was the case, then this Spiritual Artifact is even more fearsome than a Divine Artifact.

If such an item was placed in the Great Thousand World, even those powerful forces would fight over it.

"The price of a Spiritual Condensing Bowl is something that even my Luo God Sword could not be compared to. It is not a Divine Artifact, but it's at a higher level compared to that, a Primordial Saint Artifact." Luo Li said softly.

The unfamiliar name of Primordial Saint Artifact brought an unspeakable pressure to Mu Chen. Such an item was not something that he could imagine.

"The origin of this thing is so huge?" Aside from being startled, Mu Chen was feeling troubled in his heart. If this Spiritual Condensing Bowl was so frightening, it was not something that he could possess. If even the slightest news of such an item was leaked out, he could guarantee that he would not have peace.

A coarse fellow was not guilty, but in possession of a treasure, he was.

Before he possessed absolute strength, such a treasure was not something that Mu Chen would lay his hands on.

"However, this Spiritual Condensing Bowl is not genuine!" Wen Qingxuan said firmly.

"A counterfeit?" Mu Chen was blanked.

"Correct. Although the Divine Wood Palace possessed great power, it could not be considered as a pinnacle force in the Great Thousand World back then. Even in this Shattered Continent, the Divine Wood Palace could only proclaim monarchy to a corner of it. Such a Primordial Saint

Artifact was not something that the Divine Wood Palace could undertake." Luo Li also nodded her head.

"Therefore, this Spiritual Condensing Bowl before our eyes should be a counterfeit."

"Even a counterfeit is so powerful." Mu Chen licked his lips. His heart that was suppressed before blazed. If this Spiritual Condensing Bowl was the genuine good, he would naturally not have any thoughts about it and would only remember it in his heart, till his strength was powerful enough before he come to take it away. Since it was a counterfeit, the price of it would drop a lot more and it would be worth the risk for him.

"There are many counterfeit Spiritual Condensing Bowls. Some pinnacle force would be in possession of such an item. Therefore, it was not too unbelievable for the Divine Wood Palace to have it," said Luo Li.

"Then, can we take it away?" asked Mu Chen.

Only now did he understand that the most valuable item in the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard was not the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid, but this counterfeit Spiritual Condensing Bowl.

Wen Qingxuan and Luo Li exchanged a glance as they nodded their heads. Their background wasn't weak, but they still could not help but to be tempted by this Spiritual Condensing Bowl, since the amount of Sovereign Spiritual Liquids that they had obtained was only a small portion compared to the amount contained in the Spiritual Condensing Bowl.

Majestic Spiritual Energy swept out from Mu Chen's palm as it twined towards the lake that was formed by the Spiritual Condensing Bowl. However, the instant his Spiritual Energy approached the Spiritual Condensing Bowl, the Spiritual Energy was sucked into it.

His figure jolted as his gaze turned grave.

"The Spiritual Condensing Bowl would automatically absorb any approaching Spiritual Energy. I'm afraid that with our strength, it's impossible for us to take it." Luo Li said helplessly.

Wen Qingxuan also sighed in pity. The treasure was just before her, but she couldn't take it away. It had really made her feel unwilling.

Mu Chen pondered when a light flickered. His expression changed as an ancient tree rune appeared from his forehead.

"Earlier, the Courtyard Spirit mentioned that I was the Successor. Since I'm the Successor, then I will naturally have the qualifications to inherit the things here." Mu Chen pointed at the rune on his forehead as he continued, "Let me try moving it."

Wen Qingxuan and Luo Li nodded. Since they did not have any other methods, why not let Mu Chen give it a try?

Mu Chen's gaze gathered and the ancient tree rune on his forehead flickered with a faint luster. A moment later, the rune burst forth with green light as it spread out and enveloped the greenish lake.

Buzz. Buzz.

As everything became enshrouded by the greenish light, the originally calm lake started to ripple as a faint light was shot from the lake.

At the sight of this scene, Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan felt excited. It was indeed useful!

The light in the lake became more dense and, thereafter, the lake had started to shrink. A few minutes later, the huge lake had turned into an antique greenish jade bowl as it flew over, swaying before landing on Mu Chen's palm that was extended.

Mu Chen, Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan had directed their gazes over.

The ancient jade bowl had quietly rested on Mu Chen's palm as complicated veined patterns could be seen around the bowl. The patterns were a little scarlet-red. It was said that during the creation of the Spiritual Condensing Bowl, aside from various countless materials, there was also an ingredient, blood of the Spiritual Condensing Race.

Within the jade bowl, it was as if there was boundless liquid swaying about. However, it was unable to escape from the mouth of the bowl.

"Quick, look at how much Sovereign Spiritual Liquid is there!" Wen Qingxuan couldn't endure it as she asked.

Mu Chen nodded his head as he controlled his intent into the Spiritual Condensing Bowl. However, as he probed, the Spiritual Condensing Bowl emitted greenish light that blocked off his probe. At the same time, a boundless light appeared from the mouth of the bowl as an ancient rune could be seen in that light.

Mu Chen's face turned stiff at this instant.

"The Spiritual Condensing Bowl is sealed." Mu Chen bitterly smiled.

"Let me try." Wen Qingxuan refused to believe as she extended her hand and grabbed the Spiritual Condensing Bowl. She controlled her Spiritual Energy and realised that it was impossible to look into the Spiritual Condensing Bowl. She also could not extract the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid within it. The light possessed powerful defense and the seal was not something that they would deal with.

"Bastard."

Wen Qingxuan was enraged as she threw it back to Mu Chen with hatred, "It only benefited you."

Mu Chen awkwardly scratched his head as he received it. A jade bottle appeared in his hand, it was sparkling and translucent as drops of liquid could be seen in it. "I have taken a total of one hundred and twenty four Sovereign Spiritual Liquid. I'll give it all to you."

He knew how precious the Spiritual Condensing Bowl was, since it was not something that slightly more than a hundred Sovereign Spiritual Liquid could be compared to. However, he did not have the intention to monopolise it.

"Forget it, it was something that was obtained by you. I don't want it." Wen Qingxuan cast her lips aside as she continued, "However, the Spiritual Condensing Bowl is yours. But me and Luo Li have a share in the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid in it. Take note of it and give back to us double the amount in the future."

Although Wen Qingxuan said those words, she was clearly just rambling.

"Thanks, consider it as me owing you a favor." Mu Chen said in a serious tone.

With Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan's backgrounds, perhaps this counterfeit Spiritual Condensing Bowl wasn't an inseparable treasure. However, to Mu Chen who did not have any background, it was an important item.

"Rest assured, although your favor isn't worth anything, I will still remember it." Wen Qingxuan said as her rosy lips rose.

Mu Chen smiled before looking at Luo Li. The latter gently smiled. With their relationship, there wasn't a need to divide things so clearly between the both of them.

"Let's go. It's almost time and perhaps, Xu Huang and the rest are also anxiously waiting." Luo Li said gently.

Hearing her words, Mu Chen smiled as he nodded. Since he had already obtained the Spiritual Condensing Bowl, there wasn't a need to stay here anymore.

"Let's go."

Mu Chen waved his hand and he turned around without any hesitation. Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan followed his pace. As the three of them left, the gate of the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard slowly closed as it returned to its original quiet state.

Chapter 533: Intimidating with Violence

Mu Chen and his group of three left the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard and quickly sped through the path that they entered on.

The people of the Academy Alliance were long gone. Thus, they were not obstructed along the way. In addition to the three of them being able to use Spiritual Energy, after roughly ten minutes, they had already passed through the spike tree forest and smoothly exited the shadows.

When they walked out of the shadows that were formed by the spike trees, they felt as if their bodies had instantly lightened. The sluggish Spiritual Energy within their bodies surged and in an instant, powerful ripples of energy spread throughout their limbs.

"Huuuu."

When their powers were restored, the three of them felt relieved. The feeling of having their Spiritual Energies suppressed was too uncomfortable.

"What a beautiful feeling."

Wen Qingxuan exhaled as her charming eyes gazed upon the clear sky and earth. After experiencing the feeling of not being able to use any Spiritual Energy, only then did she realise that the Spiritual Energy that flowed between this heaven and earth was so enchanting.

"Why are you being like this? In the Spiritual Road, it was an entire two years that we were not able to use any Spiritual Energy." Mu Chen smiled.

"Because it was too long in the Spiritual Road, I had already forgotten the sensation of using Spiritual Energy back then." Wen Qingxuan smiled in reply.

Mu Chen deeply nodded his head and shortly after, his expression changed. He raised his head and looked beyond the distance of this forest, then realised that there were many other Spiritual Energy ripples in this region...

Both of his eyes were narrowed as he gazed into the distance. There

were figures of people appearing in his sight. There seemed to be several teams that were looking at their direction. In the depths of their eyes was a dense amount of greed and fire.

"What's going on?" Luo Li had also noticed this scene and in an instant, she furrowed her brows. She tightened her grip on her Luo God Sword as she felt that something was amiss.

Wen Qingxuan lightly snorted as a golden warspear flickered with golden light in her hand. Her gaze brought along a chill as it swept through and all those that exchanged contact with her could not help shifting their gazes away.

Shhhhhhuuuu

Not far away, there was a noise caused by the wind from extreme speed that resounded. Mu Chen and his group turned their gazes over and saw a few figures flying over, before landing by their side. It was Xu Huang and the rest that had been waiting outside of the forest.

When Xu Huang and group saw that Mu Chen's group of three had smoothly come out, only then did they feel relieved.

"You guys finally came out," said Xu Huang.

"What's going on?" Mu Chen took a glance at the surrounding movements as he asked. Previously, when they entered here, there weren't so many people around here.

"Half a day ago, the group from the Academy Alliance came out." Xu Huang glanced at Mu Chen's group of three as a smear of astonishment could be seen in his eyes, "You guys were the ones that chased them out?"

Mu Chen nodded his head in acknowledgement.

"What monsters." Xu Huang and the rest were speechless. They had clearly seen the amount of people from the Academy Alliance. They had nearly two hundred in number and all of them had refined their physical bodies in the past. Even if they could not use any Spiritual Energy in the forest, they would still be hard to deal with. However, despite so, the three of them chased them out like stray dogs.

"After the group from the Academy Alliance came out, their facial expressions were ugly. We hid ourselves for the time being. Thereafter, those fellows started to spread some news..." Xu Huang said helplessly, "They announced that there was a Hidden Spiritual Courtyard which contained Sovereign Spiritual Liquid that the Divine Wood Palace had been storing for countless years. There were at least tens of thousands of drops..."

The brows of Mu Chen furrowed. Those people of the Academy Alliance wete indeed vicious. Seeing as they could not obtain the stuff from the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard, they decided to spread the news so Mu Chen and his group could not have any peace.

Tens of thousands of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid, those fellows had quite a wild imagination. However, Mu Chen knew that once this news was released, it would still bring them quite a bit of trouble, even if it was false. The Sovereign Spiritual Liquid was simply too precious. Everyone knew that if the amount had really reached tens of thousands, even Sovereign realm experts would be fighting over it.

Not many Sovereign realm experts had accumulated such an amount of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid.

Tens of thousands of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid could allow a Sovereign realm expert to be suddenly wealthy.

"Furthermore, they further declared that the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid stored in the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard was taken by the three of you." Xu Huang bitterly smiled, "Now, all these teams that are staring at you guys are coming for the three of you. Although they do not dare to do anything to the three of you, the amount that they have gathered is quite troublesome."

"Hmph, just some average fellows. If they have the capability, then come and snatch. If any of them could win against me, I will give them all the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid in my possession. Just that they will probably die from that appetite of theirs." Wen Qingxuan coldly snorted as her face was covered in frost.

Xu Huang dryly laughed as they thought in their hearts, She is indeed, worthy of being someone that has gotten first place once, such dominance...

When Mu Chen was speaking with Xu Huang, there were nearly ten figures that flew among the black patch of people, before stopping roughly a few hundred feet away. The ten figures had powerful Spiritual Energy ripples around them. All of them were actually someone that had gone through Spiritual Energy Disaster. Clearly, they were Captains from a few decent teams.

Behind them, there were nearly ten teams that were staring at Mu Chen and his group.

"Captain Mu Chen, I am Chen Ya from the Spiritual Cliff Academy."

The one leading was an azure-clothed youth with fair skin. His looks were rather handsome but his eyes were filled with greed.

Mu Chen glanced at him in indifference as he turned his head towards Xu Huang and the rest without paying any attention, "Let's go."

"Wait!"

When Chen Ya saw how Mu Chen ignored him, his face changed as a smear of rage flashed across his eyes as he said in a solemn voice, "Captain Mu Chen, we are all well-aware of how powerful your group is. However, there are nearly a hundred teams here waiting for you. If all of us were to fight, you guys might not take it well."

"What do you want then?" Mu Chen finally took a glance at him as his tone was apathetic.

"Haha, we only want Captain Mu Chen to give every one of us ten drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid and we will not make things difficult for your group." Chen Ya quickly said when he heard Mu Chen's reply.

"Ten drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid? Who are you?" Wen Qingxuan said with a chilled face.

She took a step forward as her golden warspear dazzled with brilliant

golden light that spread out. In an instant, a fearsome Spiritual Energy pressure began to expand and under the pressure of that Spiritual Energy, the faces of Chen Ya and everyone else could not help changing as astonishment filled their eyes.

"Spirit Disaster?"

"Wen Qingxuan has actually reached Spirit Disaster!"

"No wonder she was once first in the points ranking..."

Feeling the boundless pressure from Wen Qingxuan, all those staring teams could not help having their faces changed as fear flashed across their eyes.

"Do not be afraid. With so many of us here, even if she is a Spirit Disaster, we could still defeat her with all of us here!" Chen Ya saw those people behind him starting to show signs of fear and he immediately declared. He knew that if they did not make use of their advantage of numbers, no one would dare to obstruct the path of Mu Chen, Wen Qingxuan and Luo Li.

"Trash not knowing the meaning of death!"

Wen Qingxuan's eyes were filled with cold. Just when she was about to act, she saw Mu Chen smiling as he waved his hand. A streak of light flew out, which rapidly grew, turning into a huge greenish wooden statue, it was the Divine Wood Guard.

"Cripple him."

Mu Chen pointed towards Chen Ya as he said in indifference.

Boom!

The Divine Wood Guard stomped as its huge figure charged forward, causing a shadow to immediately shroud Chen Ya.

As the shadow shrouded over, Chen Ya's face changed. The Spiritual Energy in his body swept out as it turned into a powerful force that shot towards the Divine Wood Guard.

The Divine Wood Guard threw its huge fist out and instantly shattered

that force before heavily landing on Chen Ya's body.

Boom!

A deep clash resounded as Chen Ya's figure flew away like a cannon, before heavily shooting into the ground. The ground instantly crumbled as a deep crater appeared with Chen Ya lying in it. He was covered in fresh blood, no one knew if he was still dead or alive.

"You dare!"

The nine other Spiritual Energy experts that came with Chen Ya yelled as their faces changed from the situation.

Shhhhhuuu!

However, just when they had finished yelling, a golden light had already reached them. Wen Qingxuan's exquisite figure appeared before them as powerful spear images followed.

Rustle! Swish!

As the spear imagines swept past, three Spiritual Energy Disaster experts were instantly defeated. Blood holes appeared on their bodies as they fell.

Buzz!

At the same time, a clear sword cry resounded. A sword river whistled out as it brought forth a strand of fresh blood. Three other Spiritual Energy Disaster experts held onto their hands as they retreated. Their faces were filled with fear as fresh blood flowed down from their arms.

Boom! Boom!

Mu Chen's figure had also appeared before the three remaining Spiritual Energy Experts. Black lightning frantically flickered as he threw his fist out in indifference. The wind exploded under his fist as it struck the chests of those three at lightning speed.

As an explosion resounded, the chests of those three caved in as they flew away, shrieking before being deeply impaled into the mountain.

The entire region was filled with silence at this instant.

Ten Spiritual Energy Experts were instantly defeated by Mu Chen's group of three in just an instant.

The lightning momentum was so fast that the other teams behind those ten could not react in time.

Mu Chen stood in the air as he dusted his hands without any expression. Thereafter, he glanced at those teams behind and declared with indifference, "Anyone else?"

He knew the thoughts of the Academy Alliance and, therefore, he did not lay his hands as he knew that if he were to lay his hands in such a situation, it would only become troublesome and there would be more and more people who would gather. Therefore, he had chosen to exhibit his power, displaying intimidating might.

Only then, could he suppress the greed in the hearts of those fellows.

Faced with such greedy people, he could only use violence.

Faced with Mu Chen's indifferent tone, the momentum of the few hundred teams slugged. Some people held fear in their eyes and, at this moment, no one dared to speak.

Up in the sky, Mu Chen, Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan stood with the huge Divine Wood Guard behind them. The impact from their formation made others not dare to oppose them.

At this instant, only then did everyone else realised how big of a gap they had with those three...

"If you are eyeing on the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid in my hand, then come at me. However, I have to issue a warning first. Although killing is a little problematic, I have the means to cripple you here..." Mu Chen's cold voice resounded in the sky as it brought along chilling intent.

Everyone was trembling in that coldness.

Mu Chen coldly glanced at them, before sweeping his gaze turned towards the surroundings as his cold voice resounded, "As for the cowardly Academy Alliance, this method was too substandard. Next time,

do it yourself."

When he finished his speech, he waved his hand as he stored the Divine Wood Guard. His figure moved as he flew towards the distance with Luo Li, Wen Qingxuan, Xu Huang and the rest closely following after. No one dared to obstruct them and could only allow them to leave as they pleased.

Looking at Mu Chen's leaving group, the other teams gathered here powerlessly sighed, before exchanging glances and dispersed. They had ultimately underestimated the two teams...

Concealed in a region here, Mo Yu and his party was looking at Mu Chen's departing group. Mo Yu's face was pale as he firmly stomped his foot, before his cold voice resounded...

"Mu Chen, don't be too proud of yourself. I will get you to spit out the things that belonged to me!"

Chapter 534: Blood Figure

In the azure-blue sky, a wind slowly drifted amongst the loose clouds. The entire heavens and earth had an antique peace.

Shuuuuu.

The sharp piercing sound of wind that resounded from afar suddenly broke the peace. Thereafter, ten light figures streaked across. In a flash, they appeared in this horizon, along with powerful winds tearing apart the loose clouds.

"There doesn't seem to be anyone chasing after us."

Xu Huang turned his head and glanced at the distance. When he saw that no one chased after them, only then did he feel relieved. Although the strength of Mu Chen and the other two was powerful, the other party had an advantage in numbers. Even if they had to kill, they would go limp from the exhaustion itself.

Mu Chen nodded as he waved his hand and lowered his speed. Thereafter, he grasped his hand and a sparkling translucent jade bottle appeared in his hand. Within the jade bottle, there was Sovereign Spiritual Liquid flickering with a luster. Vaguely, there were pure Spiritual Energy ripples emitted from it that could cause one's heart to race.

"This is..."

Xu Huang and the rest stared as their eyes instantly widened, "Sovereign Spiritual Liquid?"

Speaking of this name, even their voices turned a little heated. After all, they clearly knew how precious the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid was. Although it was something that only Sovereign realm experts would perfectly enjoy, it still had a large amount of benefit for them at their current stage.

Mu Chen smiled as he nodded his head. Thereafter, forty Sovereign Spiritual Liquid flew out from the bottle towards Xu Huang and the other three with a flick of his finger. "Ten drops per person. After this trip in the

Divine Wood Palace ends, you guys should be able to aim for Spiritual Energy Disaster."

"For us?"

Xu Huang and the other four were a little at loss as they stared at the ten drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid floating before them. In that instant, they still had not recovered from the shock as they knew how precious the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid was. Forty Sovereign Spiritual Liquids was something that not even a 1-Stage Sovereign realm expert could produce, even if that expert was to constantly refine for a year.

"We are a team, I would also benefit if your strength grew." Mu Chen smiled.

Xu Huang and the other three exchanged looks as they could see the excitement within each other's eyes. Thereafter, they looked at Mu Chen with gratitude as they nodded their heads, "Thanks."

Seeing as Xu Huang and the other three had stored the Sovereign Liquid, Mu Chen redirected his gaze towards Pin'er and her group of three that were anxiously waiting as he smiled. "In this trip to the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard, I have received the biggest harvest. Therefore, I will fork out your shares as well."

He had obtained the Spiritual Condensing Bowl in the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard. Although it was only a counterfeit, the price of it could still not be estimated. Furthermore, there was still quite a lot of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid in the Spiritual Condensing Bowl. Although it was sealed and Mu Chen had no idea how much there was, it should not be a small amount. Generally speaking, Wen Qingxuan and Luo Li also had a share in those Sovereign Spiritual Liquids...

However, due to the reason as it could not be unsealed, there was no way for Mu Chen to divide their shares at the moment and could only wait till the seal was undone. However, at that time, the two girls would probably not be by his side anymore...

Mu Chen's finger flicked as another fourty Sovereign Spiritual Liquids flew towards Pin'er's group. The four girls were a little startled at how

generous Mu Chen was. However, they did not immediately accept it as they directed their gazes over to Wen Qingxuan, since she was the Captain to their team.

"Take it, this is something that he should fork over. Fortunately, you're not that petty." Wen Qingxuan took a glance at Mu Chen before nodding towards her teammates.

When Pin'er and the rest heard her words, only then did they feel excitement as they stored the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid, before sweetly smiling to Mu Chen, "Thank you, Big Brother Mu Chen."

Mu Chen smiled as he looked at the remaining forty Sovereign Spiritual Liquid. He helplessly sighed in his heart. It wasn't easy for him to obtain those Sovereign Spiritual Liquids and in an instant, he had already lost at least half of them. Although he had the Spiritual Condensing Bowl with him, it was sealed at the moment. He also did not dare to get someone to help him with such a precious item, as he was clear that something that could absorb Spiritual Energy and condense it into Sovereign Spiritual Liquid was a miraculous treasure and the temptation it had to Sovereign realm experts.

"Where are we going next?" Wen Qinxguan asked towards Mu Chen. After the two trips with Mu Chen taking the lead and obtaining a huge harvest, she no longer had any opinion with Mu Chen taking the lead.

"Although these Divine Wood Palace ruins are vast, the amount of people that came here to look for treasures is large as well. I'm afraid that most of the places that contain treasures have already been searched." Mu Chen said with pity as he knew that aside from the Spiritual Treasure Mountain and the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard, there were still many places that contained treasures. However, they had spent quite an amount of time in the two places that they had gone to before.

Although he felt pity, Mu Chen was rather optimistic. After all, not all the benefits had been taken. The taboo was being too greedy.

"Let's go to the Divine Wood Academy...the most important place in the Divine Wood Palace." Mu Chen said after some pondering, before raising

his head towards the distance, "I believe that all those teams with decent strength are already making their way over. I'm afraid that this struggle will be even more intense compared to the other two."

"I want to see who has the capability to snatch treasures from me." Wen Qingxuan's phoenix-like eyes narrowed and within her eyes, there was a blazing fire.

"Let's go, then."

Mu Chen smiled as he knew that Wen Qingxuan's character was as prideful as a phoenix. It was impossible for her to lower her head or to admit defeat to anyone.

As he spoke, his figure had flown away like a streak of light. He was as fast as lightning as he streaked across the horizon like a meteor towards the distance.

...

Just when Mu Chen was speeding towards the Divine Wood Academy, the most important area of the Divine Wood Palace, there was a commotion coming from another corner of the ruins.

It was an ancient huge palace built on top of the mountain. The huge palace was built from huge wood as it seemed exceptionally firm. At this moment, there were powerful Spiritual Energy impacts coming from the great palace. Powerful Spiritual Energy ripples swept out, making the mountain seem as if it was trembling.

In the sky around the ancient palace, there were several teams at the mountain peak as they glanced towards the palace from afar with fear in their expressions.

The palace was the most perfectly maintained building within this region. Judging from the scale, it was clearly an important location in the ancient times of the Divine Wood Palace. Therefore, there should be treasures in this area.

This was something that everyone knew.

However, they discovered that when many teams had charged into it in impatience, they quickly came out in a miserable state as fear filled their eyes. No one could have expected this palace to be so dangerous.

Furthermore, they even discovered a guardian with the strength comparable to Spirit Disaster within it.

Facing such obstacles, no other team could successfully enter the palace. It wasn't until half a day later that a team of roughly a dozen that wore red robes appeared.

That team gave off a chilling aura, making no one dare to carelessly approach them. Furthermore, when they reached here, they did not pay any attention to anyone else and charged straight into the palace. Till now, they had yet to return. However, everyone knew that they were not buried in it as they could feel the violent bloody Spiritual Energy ripples.

There should be an intense fight inside the palace.

This fact made everyone else startled as they were well-aware of how dangerous the palace was. However, that red-robed team with unknown origin could actually last so long inside...

Boom!

There was an ear-piercing booming sound coming from inside. Thereafter, the gate of the palace was suddenly shattered as a huge figure shot out, crumbling this mountain. As huge stones fell, it buried half of the figure within. Everyone directed their gazes over and their faces drastically changed, that huge figure was actually that guardian that possessed the strength comparable to Spirit Disaster...

And right now, that guardian was clearly defeated.

Rustle! Rustle!

In the time that they were startled, there were sounds of water flowing from the palace. A bloody river was suddenly seen charging out of the palace, before turning into a dozen blood-robed figures.

At the head of the group, stood a youth with charming features as his

forehead emitted a chill. He indifferently glanced at the shattered guardian before licking his scarlet lips and smiled, "There is indeed some treasures in the Divine Wood Palace, our trip here is not in vain."

As he finished his speech, his gaze suddenly moved as a bloody light flickered in his palm. He narrowed his eyes and a smear of an indifferent smile rose from the corner of his lips.

"That Mu Chen was indeed quite capable... to actually plunder the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard of the Divine Wood Palace... they should be currently heading for the Divine Wood Academy, right?"

"Indeed interesting, if he could obediently hand over all his Sovereign Spiritual Liquid to me, I suppose that I can spare his life."

The youth furrowed his brows as he shook his head shortly, "Forget it, since he dared to be so close to Luo Li, let's just kill him... Otherwise, when he meets that fellow, wouldn't all my merits be taken away?"

"Let's go, towards the Divine Wood Academy. I also intend to meet that unfavourable fellow."

The youth coldly smiled as he waved his hand. His figure turned into a streak of bloody light as he flew away. Behind him, those blood-robed figures closely followed behind him.

As they left, the surrounding teams looked towards the great palace, contemplating if they should go in and take a look. Suddenly, cracks appeared on the palace and under their astonished gazes, it crumbled...

Chapter 535: Divine Wood Academy

The Divine Wood Academy sat at the highest point of the Divine Wood Mountain. Looking from outside the Divine Wood Mountain, one could vaguely see that there was an imposing building on top of the colossal mountain. It stood quietly and towering, as if it was overlooking this land. In the ancient times, this region had the most governing power to the other big and small forces in this region.

Mu Chen and his party did not make any stops along their way and despite so, when they gradually approached the Divine Wood Academy, it had already taken half a day of their time. Fortunately, there wasn't any sunset or sunrise in the Divine Wood Palace. Dazzling light covered this region at anytime and anywhere. Thus, this was why the trees were lush to such a fearsome degree.

Shhhuuuu.

Mu Chen and his party landed on a mountain peak as they directed their gazes over. There was a smear of astonishment surfacing in their eyes.

At a good distance away, there was a mountain towering into the sky. The mountain peak formed blades as it was extremely precipitous. It was impossible to climb over it and on the peak of the mountain, there was a deep green ancient palace quietly sitting on it. There was a green light circle that was roughly a few thousand feet that made it seem like a ring of a planet around the palace's surroundings. The divine appearance of it was astonishing.

"Truly deserving to the called the Divine Wood Palace."

Mu Chen sighed. Even after the flow of time for the hundreds or thousands of years, they could still feel the powerful might of the Divine Wood Palace from the ancient times that could still be emitted from some fine areas that made others feel respect when looking at it.

Mu Chen gradually withdrew his gaze as he swept towards the surroundings. Thereafter, he could see countless streaks of light flying over at this direction from the distance and landed on the peaks that were

tens of thousands of meters high.

Clearly, as time passed, more and more teams gathered onto this region. Mu Chen was not surprised by it as anyone could feel that this palace was the most important location of the Divine Wood Palace.

Boom!

On the tens of thousands of meters peaks, it was as if a bell from the ancient times had suddenly resounded. Within the sound, it gave off a worldly transformation sensation.

"This is the Divine Wood Academy?" Xu Huang and the rest gazed upon the ancient great palace on the peak with blazing gazes as they turned to Mu Chen, "Shall we act?"

"There's no need to rush."

Mu Chen, however, slowly shook his head as his gaze was firmly on the light ring around the great palace as he felt a daunting ripple coming from it as he lightly said, "This Divine Wood Academy is not easy to approach. The light ring is not useless as well. Just with us alone, it's impossible for us to barge into it."

"Correct, the headquarters of various forces have their own powerful defences. Although the Divine Wood Palace has already crumbled with the flow of time, it is still not something that we could recklessly barge in." Luo Li said with her head nodding.

Wen Qingxuan's charming gaze had also landed on the huge light ring as her expression turned grave.

Seeing that response, Xu Huang and the rest immediately broke the anxiousness in their hearts, since they were well-aware of Mu Chen and the other two's strength. Since even they felt danger, then it was naturally not something that they can deal with.

Mu Chen, Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan exchanged a glance as they became silent as they waited.

Time rapidly flowed by as the three of them waited.

As time passed, there were countless sonic booms resounding as an earth-shattering amount of light streaked over. Thereafter, they were like locusts as they landed on trees of the various mountain peaks.

The gazes of all those teams that came here were all directed onto the ancient palace on top of the towering peak. Their gazes were blazing with greed as they knew that this area was the most important location of the Divine Wood Palace.

Shhhuuuuu

Another break of wind resounded as another group of people arrived and hovered in the air.

Mu Chen directed his gaze over and, thereafter, he rubbed his nose. The group that just came was from the Martial Spiritual Academy and the one leading had a fine figure and wearing a fiery-red dress. What caught the attention of others was her crescent blade that was even bigger then herself. She was also returning his gaze with a chill.

It was Wu Yingying.

"You meet again." Wen Qingxuan chuckled as she looked at Mu Chen.

Mu Chen helplessly smiled. Previously, on the Spiritual Treasure Mountain, Wu Yingying did not ally herself with Wang Zhong to deal with him, which made him a little surprised, and caused him to have a good opinion about Wu Yingying. Although this young girl was a fiery spice, her character wasn't unruly.

Therefore, when Mu Chen saw that Wu Yingying had come, he gave her a gentle smile.

"Hmph."

However, in contrast to his goodwill, Wu Yingying's face was chill as she coldly snorted and turned her head around, no longer bothered about him.

Having his warm face on a cold butt, Mu Chen felt a little awkward and could only shrug his shoulders.

After Wu Yingying's group, there were also several other powerful teams

that had appeared. Among them that made Mu Chen startled was that in this Divine Wood Palace, some teams seemed to have obtained a good opportunity, which made their team, as a whole, to rise in strength.

As more and more teams rushed over, several familiar teams began to show themselves, which include Wang Zhong from the Saint Spiritual Academy and the party from the Four Seas Spiritual Academy.

"Hm?"

Mu Chen softly exclaimed when he saw Wang Zhong as his brows furrowed.

"That fellow's strength has grown." Wen Qingxuan had also sensed it as she spoke in astonishment, "It seems that he has already refined the Spiritual Treasure from the Spiritual Treasure Mountain, borrowing it to step into Spirit Disaster."

"Indeed, worthy of being the most eldest amongst the Four Holy Sons of the Saint Spiritual Academy." Mu Chen said softly. This Wang Zhong was indeed capable as he was so decisive in refining the Spiritual Treasure at this time and step into Spirit Disaster.

Mu Chen could naturally sense that the Spiritual Energy around Wang Zhong had grown stronger compared to the time at the Spiritual Treasure Mountain. The faint pressure being emitted from him had already shown that he had stepped into First Grade Spirit Disaster.

When Mu Chen had his attention on Wang Zhong, the latter had also directed his cold gaze over.

However, Mu Chen smiled at his cold gaze. First Grade Spirit Disaster was indeed powerful, but it still wasn't something that could make him feel pressured. This Wang Zhong must have suffered a great blow when Mu Chen defeated the First Grade Spirit Disaster puppet back at the Spiritual Treasure Mountain. Otherwise, he wouldn't make any breakthroughs at this time.

Wang Zhong must be clear that if his strength remained as it was, he would have lost the qualification to fight with Mu Chen in the end.

Shhhhuuuuu.

Another break of wind resounded and Mu Chen directed his gaze over. He saw a large amount of unevenly matched people approaching. However, with their numbers, it was still rather intimidating.

Aside from the Academy Alliance that could gather so many people, who else could it be?

"Those fellows."

However, when he met Mo Yu, Qin Feng and Liu Xiong once again, he was startled as he discovered that the three of them had lost an arm.

"What's going on?" Mu Chen, Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan exchanged gazes and felt dumbfounded. Just who did those three fellows encounter? Why did they become one-armed?

Mo Yu and the other two landed on a mountain peak as their gazes savagely fixed onto Mu Chen and his party. Killing intent could not be covered in their eyes and, furthermore, there seemed to be violence and mockery within their killing intent.

"Seems like after their trip to the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard, those fellows were up to something again." Mu Chen's heart jolted. After their last encounter in the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard, Mo Yu was well-aware that he could not contend against Mu Chen's group. But from their current appearance, it seemed as if they no longer feared him.

"There are many bizarre things in the Divine Wood Palace ruins. Who knows if they might have gotten an opportunity instead, let's be careful about them," said Wen Qingxuan.

Mu Chen nodded his head, Wen Qingxuan wasn't wrong. Opportunity wasn't something that only they could encounter. Although Mo Yu and his group was rather unlucky, who knows, their sorrow might turn into joy instead.

Rustle.

As this region became more and more noisy, there was suddenly yhe

sound of a river and, thereafter, a dense smell of blood came from nowhere and spread throughout this region.

At the scent of that bloody stench, Luo Li's exquisite face was covered in chill.

"Those fellows have finally appeared."

Mu Chen's black pupils were also cold as he looked at the horizon. There was suddenly a river of blood approaching along with a heavy stench of blood.

The river of blood landed under the countless gazes onto a mountain peak. When the bloody light dispersed, a dozen figures that wore blood-red robes appeared, along with chill aura, and the stench of blood spread out.

"Haha, it seems that we're not late."

At the front of the dozen blood-robed figures, Xue Tiandou lightly smiled. However, his smile was filled with murderous flavour. He turned his head over and fixed his gaze onto Mu Chen's party as the smile on the corner of his lips became even more dense.

"Mu Chen, Luo Li, we meet again."

Mu Chen narrowed his eyes as he stared at Xue Tiandou. Among his enemies here, only this fellow that came from the Blood God Clan might make him feel fear. However, he also understood that it was unavoidable for him to have a battle with Xue Tiandou here.

Mu Chen inhaled a mouthful of air as his eyes surveyed the area, before his black pupils instantly turned cold.

Among the six batches of people, the Academy Alliance, Saint Spiritual Alliance and Xue Tiandou's group would undoubtedly target them without any hesitation. He did not have any grudges with the Four Seas Spiritual Academy nor were they friends. As for Wu Yingying, Mu Chen could not see through the heart of that girl and had no idea what she would do under anger.

It seems that it woukd not be an easy matter for them to become to greatest winner again.

However, no matter what, those fellows still didn't have the qualification to make Mu Chen feel fear!

The youth's pupils were as sharp as a blade that made others not daring to look into his eyes.

Chapter 536: Climbing the Mountain

Beneath the mountain peak that was tens of thousands of feet, the breaking of wind resounded as one streak of light after another was constantly approaching this direction. Filling this land with noise and causing it to become even more chaotic and noisy.

Mu Chen and his group stood at a position that was the closest to that huge peak. In this inner circle, all those that possessed the qualification to stop in this region were all teams that possessed powerful strength. After all, there were too many people here and without sufficient strength to hold a good position, they would instantly be thrown away.

In this region, the position they stood was held with strength.

Mu Chen's gaze was cold as he stared at Xue Tiandou. Compared to Wang Zhong, Mo Yu and the rest, this fellow was naturally the one that concealed himself the best. He originated from one of the four God Clans of the West Heaven Realm. It was a clan that possessed unimaginable depth. Clearly, Xue Tiandou's position in the Blood God Clan was not someone like Xue Shi from before could compare to.

This fellow came for Luo Li and, naturally, Mu Chen would definitely not let him lay his hands on her.

Faced with Mu Chen's sharp gaze, Xue Tiandou smiled. His smile contained coldness that should make one shiver.

Luo Li, who was standing beside Mu Chen, was tightly gripping her Luo God Sword. Her crystal clear pupils had a chill moving within them. Her heart was filled with uncontrollable killing intent for someone of the Blood God Clan. If it wasn't for their current situation being unsuitable, she might have not held her hands and killed this person from the Royal Family of the Blood God Clan.

Boom!

Just when they had a chill flowing in their eyes as they glanced at each other, another ancient bell rang from the mountain peak. The bell swayed

in the heavens and earth as it brought along an aura from the ancients...

Buzz. Buzzzz.

When the bell rang, the light ring around the green great palace seemed to have weakened.

Everyone could see the energy on the light ring being weakened by a great amount in that instant.

"Let's go!"

Among the ocean of people, someone barked as his voice resounded like thunder.

Boom!

The atmosphere in this region instantly exploded as countless teams were seen flying up with boundless Spiritual Energy surrounding them. Their figures had turned into streaks of light as they flew towards the colossal peak.

Mu Chen's figure had also flown out at this instant and at his rear, Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan followed with Xu Huang and the rest after them.

Everyone was clear that this was the best time to ascend the mountain. Therefore, no one hesitated.

The earth-shattering amount of light rays streaked across the horizon. After a dozen breaths of time, they had managed to reach the waist of the mountain with the leading light figure not far away from the peak.

Rumble!

Just when the the first person charged towards the summit, the colossal light ring around the palace exploded with a deep sound. Thereafter, countless light beams that were like stormy raindrops rained down from the light ring.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

The light beam quickly hit against a human figure. Although that light beam wasn't sharp, those that were hit by it instantly bounced back, no

matter what powerful defence he possessed or defensive Spiritual Artifact he had. Fresh blood spurted out as that figure was like a bird whose wings were suddenly broken as he fell from the massive height.

Mu Chen's figure charged as he passed through countless light figures. He seemed to have felt how powerful those light beams were, but he still maintained a calm composure as he had expected such an event.

Shhhhhhuuu!

A light beam fell from the sky as it shrouded Mu Chen's figure. That speed had reached a limit that even Luo Li and the rest who were close to him could not provide him any aid in time.

Boom!

Black lightning that was like a lightning dragon burst forth from Mu Chen's body. Lightning flickered on his skin as he seemed like a lightning god, mighty and powerful.

Boom!

That light beam clashed against Mu Chen's body, causing his body to jolt. However, his feet tapped the ground as he pushed through the light beam towards the summit.

Just when Mu Chen was shrouded by the light beam, Wen Qingxuan and Luo Li were also targeted by other light beams.

"Hmph."

Wen Qingxuan coldly snorted as dazzling golden light was emitted as her golden warspear appeared in her hand in a gripping motion. Spear light swept out as she seemed like a war goddess, forcefully clashing with the light beam.

Buzzz.

Luo Li, however, had maintained a calm expression as the Luo God Sword in her hands burst forth with sharp sword light as it slashed down.

Shhhhuuuuu!

The two figures charged through the light beams at the same time as they chased after Mu Chen.

Rumble!

At the same time, a few other figures had charged through as well from other locations. Powerful and boundless Spiritual Energy swept out from their bodies as they had managed to forcefully withstand the descending light beams and charged towards the summit.

Bang!

Deep and muffled noises constantly resounded in the sky as countless figures were bounced back as they spat out blood. However, there were also several powerful people that had managed to break through the light beams. Some people with great eyesight had also noticed the fact that with more people charging towards the mountain, the power behind the light beams would also be weakened. This made others well-astonished. If it was to a solo charge, wouldn't that mean that even Sovereign realm experts would be injured by it?

Rustle!

A dragon image appeared beneath Mu Chen's feet as his figure flashed. He had arrived at the summit of the mountain as his figure landed on a platform that was made from green wood.

Behind him, Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan followed. After a while longer, Xu Huang and the rest followed after, but their states were a little terrible compared to the prior three. Luckily, they did not follow them too quickky; otherwise, they might not have been able to sustain the attack from the light beam. But even so, they were nearly shot down to the bottom.

Shhhhuuuu.

After Mu Chen had ascended the summit, one figure after another had also appeared on the platform. It was a black patch of people but compared to the amount at the bottom of the mountain, god-knows how many were stopped by the first level of defense. At least eighty percent was blocked out.

Mu Chen swept his glance around and saw that Xue Tiandou, Wang Zhong, Mo Yu and Wu Yingying had also successfully ascended the summit.

As everyone reached the summit, the surrounding light ring burst forth with dazzling luster once again. Along with it, there was a heart-alarming thunderous roar.

Deep green light swept out from the light ring as it spread to this platform. Isolating the people here from the Divine Wood Academy.

Rumble! Rumble!

The green light seemed as if it was a green sea of clouds as it surged. Thereafter, deep green lightning appeared amongst the clouds as it flashed through, bring along astonishing roars of thunder.

"That's..."

Everyone looked at the sight of the lightning sea as their faces changed.

"It's the Divine Wood Lightning Dipper..." Luo Li's face was a little grave as she spoke. Within the heaven and earth, there were many bizarre energies born from the world. Their might was unimaginable, similar to the Divine Black Lightning that Mu Chen had previously used to refine his Lightning God's Physique. As for this Divine Wood Lightning Dipper, it was said that this lightning could only be born in a place filled with the aura of wood, after compressing the aura of wood to the limit and, thereafter, giving the birth of lightning.

This energy was extremely bizarre and hard to deal with as it was like maggots. The instant it entered a body, it would cause Spiritual Energy to explode.

Therefore, when everyone saw what was before them, their faces turned ugly.

"This Divine Wood Academy is, indeed, a place that's not easy to enter."

Mu Chen had also softly sighed.

Behind him, the faces of Xu Huang and the rest turned ugly and, shortly

after, they bitterly smiled. They had exerted great effort just to pass through the first obstacle and if they were to charge through this sea of lightning, how could they be able to keep their lives? Seems like they could only hold their steps here.

"Those who wish to enter the Divine Academy has to be purified by the sea of lightning in the time it takes to burn a joss stick."

When the green sea of lightning appeared, an ancient and empty voice indifferently resounded vetween this heaven and earth, as if it came from the ancient times.

Many faces changed when they heard that voice. It wanted them to enter this sea of lightning? Furthermore, they had to hold on for the time it takes to burn a joss stick...doesn't that simply mean to take their life?

Mu Chen's expression was exceptionally grave. However, just when he was about the speak, the empty voice resounded once again.

"Those who obtained the position of Successor has to entire ten-fold the amount of time."

Mu Chen's eyes abruptly shrank. Ten times? This god-damned Divine Wood Palace, what dogshit Successor position was this? Was that meant to play someone to death?

"Successor?"

Many people were confused. Clearly, they had not heard of the term Successor prior to this. However, they felt relieved as that meant that they will not be the ones to suffer. This sea of lightning before them was extremely fearsome. A joss stick of time was still something that they could still strive for, but if the time were to extend by ten times, even Spirit Disaster experts would have to retreat.

Shhhhhuuuu!

Just when everyone was discussing, a streak of light shot out of the sea of the lightning that shrouded Mu Chen, whose face had turned ugly.

The surrounding gazes were astonished as they gazed at Mu Chen. As

for Wang Zhong, Mo Yu and the rest, they were briefly stunned, before having joy surfacing in their eyes from Mu Chen's misfortune.

Mu Chen disregarded those gazes as he maintained an indifferent expression. Just when he was about to step forth, his expression suddenly changed as he saw another streak of light shoot out from the sea of lightning and shone onto another direction. At that direction, Xue Tiandou was also shrouded in the light with a calm expression.

Mu Chen's pupils shrank for a brief moment. This Xue Tiandou had also obtained the identity of a Successor?

So it turns out that he wasn't the only one.

Chapter 537: Lightning Sea

Two light rays shot out from the sea of lightning and under the eyes of everyone, it shone onto Mu Chen and Xue Tiandou and shrouded them within.

"Those two are actually the so-called 'Successors'?"

On the platform, there was suddenly a voice of exclamation. They weren't too clear about the so-called 'Successors'. However, from the meaning held in the word, it should be an opportunity, but it was impossible for the two of them to obtain it.

They glanced at the tubular green sea of lightning that had green lightning dragons roaring within it, unleashing astonishing might. Although the two of them had the opportunity, it was something that they could obtain after being able to keep their lives.

Standing at the side of Mu Chen, Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan also glanced at Xue Tiandou in astonishment. Clearly, they had also not expected that he would be the same as Mu Chen, obtaining the identity of a Successor.

"Haha, I never expected that you would also be able to obtain the identity of a Successor."

Xue Tiandou turned his head over and took a glance at Mu Chen. His handsome face was filled with a smile, except it was a smile with a chill, "But are you sure that you can handle this opportunity? The Divine Wood Lightning Dipper isn't as easy as you think."

"You better not die here." Mu Chen said with a smile.

Xue Tiandou smiled as he nodded.

Rumble.

As the two people smiled towards each other, with killing intent silently surging, another roar of thunder resounded from the sea of lightning as if it was urging the both of them.

Mu Chen deeply inhaled a mouthful of air as a smear of graveness

flashed in the depths of his eyes. Shortly after, he no longer had any hesitation as he took a step forward, turning into a streak of light as he charged into the sea of lightning.

When Mu Chen's figure had moved, Xue Tiandou had also turned into a bloody light as he charged into the sea of lightning without any traces of fear.

Rumble! Rumble!

When Mu Chen entered the sea of lightning, he saw the green clouds roll as the green lightning bolts became like huge pythons as they brought along rampant momentum, before tearing the sky and ruthlessly striking Mu Chen at astonishing speeds.

Boom!

Mu Chen's body flew back a few hundred feet as he was struck. Black lightning flickered around him, but the speed of the lightning was extremely high. If one could see through the lightning, they would discover a black patch on Mu Chen's chest, even his flesh was a little messed up.

"How formidable."

Mu Chen's expression turned grave. He had already cultivated the Lightning God's Physique to Penta Rune Lightning Physique. Not even Late Spiritual Energy experts could hurt him. However, he was clearly injured from a bolt of green lightning. The so-called Divine Wood Lightning Dipper was, indeed, tyrannical.

Mu Chen tightened his fist as black lightning frantically flickered. The five lightning runes on his chest flickered as he had already activated his Lightning God's Physique to the limit. Faced with such a situation, despite the fact that he possessed a powerful physical body, he did not dare to be careless.

Boom!

When Mu Chen suffered another green lightning strike, Xue Tiandou had bloody light surging around his surroundings not far away. The latter

pushed both his palms out as they turned into a huge, scarlet bloody hand as it clashed with the incoming green lightning.

Huge collisions resounded as the bloody hand was shattered. Xue Tiandou retreated a few dozen feet as his eyes flickered.

When countless people looked at the two people, they inwardly smacked their lips. Those two were indeed, not people that were easy to be dealt with. One actually dared to used his physical body to confront the lightning, while the other used his powerful Spiritual Energy to face it. The strength of those two caused fear to rise in others.

"Let's begin as well." Luo Li said as she looked at Wen Qingxuan.

Wen Qingxuan nodded before looking at her team, "You guys stay here. There's no need for you guys to move forward."

This sea of lightning was so extremely rampant that even Spiritual Energy experts would find it hard to go through. If her teammates were to face it, it would be a little too forceful for them.

Pin'er, Le'er and the rest nodded their heads at her words.

"Let's go."

Wen Qingxuan and Luo Li's figures moved as they rapidly flew out, charging into a patch of the green lightning sea.

Shhhhhuuu!

After them, some figures had also flew in. They had powerful Spiritual Energy ripples around them, clearly they possessed powerful strengths. Therefore, they had some confidence in being able to last a joss stick time in the challenge.

Wang Zhong, Wu Yingying and the rest of similar level charged into the sea of lightning as well. They naturally had quite the confidence in their strengths.

Boom!

As one figure after another constantly charged into the sea of lightning, it suddenly turned rampant as one bolt of green lightning after another

shot out from the sea of lightning onto those figures.

Bang!

Low and muffled sounds of explosion constantly resounded as one expert after another who had powerful Spiritual Energy around them instantly suffered. Their Spiritual Energy was thoroughly wrecked by the lightning as it struck them. They flew back a few hundred feet in a terrible state. Many of them were spurting blood as their faces were overwhelmed with astonishment.

Only after experiencing the power of it, did they realise how difficult it was to hold on till the end of the joss stick time.

Outside the sea of lightning, when those who had yet to step in saw the scene unfold before them, they instantly suppressed their hearts that had begun to stir. Although treasures were tempting, their lives were even more important. This Divine Wood Academy wasn't a place where anything could bear fruit.

Explosions of thunder constantly rang by Mu Chen's ears as he swept his glance around. This sea of lightning was in chaos. However, there wasn't anyone in the few thousand foot radius in the area he was in. They were probably afraid that the disaster brought by the identity as Successor would affect them.

Boom!

Another huge lightning pillar shot out of the layers of clouds and struck Mu Chen's body.

Mu Chen was struck back once again as fresh blood flowed down from his arm. The intense pain had made him frown his brows. His charming face had no emotion on it. He looked at the other direction that had bloody light spreadingout. Xue Tiandou was withstanding the lightning using his powerful Spiritual Energy.

Although Xue Tiandou would be forcefully moved back from the lightning, he was in a much better state compared to Mu Chen. The appearance of the latter was much better as he did not have any injuries

on his body. However, Mu Chen had blood flowing down his body, which made him appear in a pretty terrible state

"Big Brother Mu Chen looks terrible." Pin'er said in a soft tone when she saw the scene.

Xu Huang lightly shook his head, "Mu Chen's strength lies in his physical body, whereas Xue Tiandou's strength lies in his powerful Spiritual Energy. From appearances, it would be natural for the latter to look better. If he were to copy what Mu Chen did, he would have already been turned into a bloody figure."

As they spoke, lightning suddenly turned rampant in the sea of lightning as green lightning frantically flickered.

As the lightning became even more rampant, there were people that could not hold on much longer as they were sent flying out of the sea of lightning with blood spurting from their mouths as they fell onto the ground. Their bodies were black as they appeared in a horrible state. The sight of them caused many people to feel fear as they realised that everyone that was sent flying out were all those that had reached Spiritual Energy Disaster in strength.

Even experts like them could not last a joss stick of time. It's hard to imagine how tyrannical the Divine Wood Lightning Dipper was.

Time flowed quickly under the constantly roaring thunder. However, time flowed as if years had past for those that were inside the sea of lightning.

Mu Chen stood on the cloud as the green lightning constantly struck his body that made him move back. The surface of his body was also covered in black as his skin became torn by the explosions with fresh blood flowing down. However, the blood was evaporated by the high temperature.

Haaaa.

Mu Chen's breath was a little messed up compared to the beginning as he realised that it was hard for him to withstand the lightning despite his

Penta Rune Lightning Physique. Although he had not used any means of Spiritual Energy to defend, he had still thoroughly activated his Lightning God's Physique.

Mu Chen swept his glance towards the distance, where a bloody light filled the area. It seemed to have formed into a light sphere with Xue Tiandou being protected within. That fellow seemed to have quite the method up his sleeves.

"A joss stick time should be up."

Mu Chen's eyes flickered as he muttered.

As he murmured to himself, the sea of lightning suddenly became a lot more quiet. Thereafter, everyone could see streaks of light emerging from the other end of the sea of lightning. Those figures that were covered by the sea of lightning were actually brought to the other side of it through suction.

Clearly, those people had already passed through the test.

However, the amount did not exceed a hundred.

The majority of the people that exited through the sea of lightning felt relieved. Some of them were swaying around as they rejoiced in their hearts. It was fortunate that the time was up; otherwise, they would not be able to hold on much longer.

Rumble.

Just when they freed themselves from the sea of lightning, a sudden explosion of thunder resounded from the sea of lightning.

Everyone directed their gazes over and their faces uncontrollable changed as they saw green light spreading in the sea of lightning. Green lightning appeared one after another from the clouds as they seemed like huge dragons unleashing their ferocious might.

At this instant, there were only two people in the sea of lightning.

It was Mu Chen and Xue Tiandou.

Everyone could sense that the sea of lightning had become even more

violent compared to before.

Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan's faces turned grave, while Wang Zhong, Mo Yu and the rest were rejoicing. They couldn't help wishing that Mu Chen would die in the sea of lightning.

The current sea of lightning had just started to show its true might at this moment. Fortunately, only those two could feel its true might. They did not know if they were lucky or unlucky. Everyone was curious, wondering which of the Successors could walk out of this sea of lightning.

Chapter 538: Divine Wood Lightning Dipper

Rumble.

Rampant thunderous roars resounded from the green sea of lightning between this heaven and earth, making others feel alarmed by it.

At the two sides of the sea of lightning, everyone raised their heads to look at the sea of lightning. At the depths of it stood two figures that looked fragile as the green lightning rolled. It was as if they would collapse in the next moment.

Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan exchanged gave gazes because even they could feel some danger coming from the sea of lightning. Previously, they had easily endured for a joss stick of time. But if they were to enter now, it might not be so easy anymore.

"Looks like the Divine Wood Palace is testing the so-called 'Successors'." Wen Qingxuan said softly.

The so-called "Successors" that Mu Chen and Xue Tiandou became did not bring them any benefits here. On the contrary, it brought them quite a bit of trouble as everyone could see that they would have passed this test if it wasn't for the identity of Successors that the two of them possessed.

Luo Li lightly nodded her head, "Since they are Successors, then they naturally can't be mediocre. It was reasonable for the Divine Wood Palace to leave behind such a test. After all, they did not want the inheritance of their Divine Wood Palace to fall in the hands of a useless person."

"Then, we'll see how they are going to break through this situation." Wen Qingxuan softly said.

Boom!

Roaring of thunder continued to resound as Mu Chen stood in the sea of lightning. His face was also filled with solemn at this instant as he could sense how rampant the sea of lightning was at this moment. Beneath the

clouds, there was green lightning slowly wiggling about as if it was a huge green dragon rummaging, emitting fearsome might from its colossal body.

Huuuuu.

Mu Chen deeply inhaled a mouthful of air as both of his fists were tightly clenched. His gaze was exceptionally sharp at this instant.

Boom!

The brewing sea of lightning exploded in the next instant. Everyone could see the clouds being torn apart as the green light appeared. A gigantic green light that was a few hundred feet swept out. It was like a huge dragon as it charged towards Mu Chen.

The surface of the green light didn't seem like lightning, it was more like the surface of an ancient tree, since it was filled with old tree patterns. It did not seem rampant but only the one that was targeted by it could feel its might.

Black lightning was frantically flickering on Mu Chen's body, making his skin to turn black. A metallic luster was flowing on the surface of Mu Chen's skin. Clearly, Mu Chen had pushed his Lightning God's Physique to the limits.

Boom!

The huge dragon that was made of lightning heavily struck against Mu Chen. Black and green lightning clashed, causing even the surrounding space to twist from the powerful energy collision.

Boom!

Mu Chen's figure flew out in a terrible state. He heavily stomped on the air for a few hundred steps, before he managed to stabilise his figure. The cloths on his upper body were already reduced to ashes. Five lightning runes flickered with light on his chest as his shoulders were covered in blood.

At the two ends of the lightning sea, there was a low commotion that resounded. Even Peak Spiritual Energy Disasters would suffer heavy

injuries from that lightning. However, Mu Chen had managed to withstand it. Wasn't that fellow's physical body a little too powerful?

"Hmph, you're courting death. You were already in such a state from the Divine Wood Lightning Dipper. I'll see how you're going to endure the remaining time of nine joss sticks!" Wang Zhong's mouth rose to a mocking smile as he watched the scene.

Mo Yu, Qin Feng and the rest of the Academy Alliance were also sneering at the sight of it.

Wu Yingying stared at the figure in the lightning sea as she maintained a chilled expression. However, the crescent blade was gripped even tighter.

Rumble!

Lightning roared again. However, it wasn't from Mu Chen's direction but was from Xue Tiandou. The latter's face was a little grave as he formed seals with both of his hands. Scarlet blood-coloured boundless Spiritual Energy swept out as it seemed like a bloody river circulated around him that withstood the green lightning.

Scarlet-red Spiritual Energy exploded as Xue Tiandou also moved back from the collision as a smear of blood appeared on his palm. However, it was wiped away without batting an eyelid. He gazed over at Mu Chen's direction as a cold smile rose on his lips. At least compared to Mu Chen, he had a much easier time. If they were to continue, the gap between Mu Chen and him would start to appear. At that time, he wanted to see if that fellow would still dare to talk before him.

That first lightning was clearly just an opening. The lightning sea was barely silent for an instant before everyone could watch in astonishment as huge lightning bolts constantly charged out of the lightning sea as green light rolled. Thereafter, those lightning bolts charged towards Xue Tiandou and Mu Chen.

The previous scene was just paled into insignificance in comparison!

Clearly, the lightning sea had finally unleashed its might.

When Mu Chen saw the scene unfolding before him, his face could not

help changing. Shortly after, he heavily stomped his feet as black and white-coloured Spiritual Energy swept forth, clashing towards the Divine Wood Lightning Dipper.

He was finally forced to use his Spiritual Energy to defend.

Bloody rivers were spreading around Xue Tiandou as his powerful Spiritual Energy swept out. The Spiritual Energy that he had cultivated was reeking of blood as it became especially cold and sharp. The bloody rivers revolved around him, overlapping each other as the green lightning's attack came crashing.

Boom! Boom!

The entire lightning sea exploded as one green lightning after another streaked across the sky as they clashed against the two figures.

The ripples that were caused from the impacts tore a layer of the lightning sea apart.

Everyone's hearts were alarmed by the scene. Based on this scene before them, even a Peak Spiritual Energy Disaster expert would be reduced to ashes.

Rumble.

The huge roaring continued and, in an instant, four joss sticks of time had passed. As time passed, everyone could sense the attack of the Divine Wood Lightning Dipper became more and more rampant...

Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan could not help clench their fists.

Boom!

Another huge dragon made of lightning tore apart the defenses formed by the black and white Spiritual Energy as it heavily struck against Mu Chen. A groan came from his throat as his figure retreated. A majority of his body was charred by it.

Boom!

On another corner, Xue Tiandou was also sent back. His sleeve was shredded to pieces as blood flowed down from his shoulders. Even the

Spiritual Energy fluctuations around him became a little messed up.

It was already the seventh joss stick of time.

However, everyone knew that the last three sticks were the hardest.

The green light that was emitted from the lightning sea as it rolled was extremely dazzling to the eyes.

"Haha."

Facing this scene, Xue Tiandou smiled. He looked at Mu Chen with a playful smile as he chuckled, "If you back off now, you might still be able to keep your life."

Mu Chen indifferently glanced at him and no longer bothered.

Those outside the lightning sea were looking at Xue Tiandou in astonishment, wasn't he worried about himself?

Boom!

As they puzzled over that question, the lightning sea had finally thoroughly exploded. Layers and layers of the lightning sea were torn apart as the dazzling green light became like pillars as they soared to the heavens, before diving down. Green light expanded as it seemed as if the Divine Wood Lightning was about to pierce through the heavens and earth.

"Haha."

Xue Tiandou laughed as he watched the incoming attack. His fist clenched as a green light flickered on his hand. It was a simple and unadorned bell of green wood. The wooden bell did not stand out, but everyone could sense a peculiar energy being emitted from it.

"This Wooden Spiritual Bell was something I obtain from the Divine Wood Palace. It just so happens to be able to restrain the Divine Wood Lightning Dipper. Originally, I did not plan to use it. But looking from this situation, I can't hold my hands anymore." Xue Tiandou chuckled as he looked at Mu Chen. He flickered his fingers as the Wooden Spiritual Bell rapidly expanded in size to a few hundred feet as it hovered above Xue

Tiandou's head.

Boom! Boom!

The Divine Wood Lightning Dipper whistled as it flew down and struck the Wooden Spiritual Bell. An explosion roared. However, no matter how the lightning struck, it could not break through the Wooden Spiritual Bell.

Outside the lightning sea, endless people were looking in envy. No wonder Xue Tiandou was so fearless, so he possessed such a treasure.

"Xue Tiandou had a Spiritual Artifact that could protect him, what about Mu Chen?" Some people looked at Mu Chen. From the current situation, it didn't look to be a problem for Xue Tiandou to withstand the three joss sticks of time. But what about Mu Chen?

Under the gazes of others, Mu Chen's charming face still maintained a calm demeanor as he raised his head, looking at the descending lightning. Shortly after, he deeply inhaled a mouthful of air as light flickered in his black pupils. This made Mu Chen look more prideful.

"If you want to kill me, Mu Chen, it will not be so easy!"

Mu Chen waved his sleeves as the boundless Spiritual Energy around him instantly disappeared.

Those outside the lightning sea widened their mouths from his actions. This fellow was going to call back his Spiritual Energy?

Mu Chen was not bothered with those gazes. Not only did he withdraw his Spiritual Energy, he even sat down as he formed seals with both his hands. The surface of his body was flickering with black lightning. Underneath his skin, his veins were like earthworms as they wiggled, emitting astonishing power at the same time.

He was actually planning to withstand the Divine Wood Lightning Dipper with his physical body!

"That fellow... is he courting death?"

Everyone was dumbfounded by his actions.

Chapter 539: Clearing With Physique

Rumble!

The earth-shattering lightning roared as it resounded in the region. Within the lightning sea, lightning clouds were frantically rolling. Up in the sky, there were huge dragons diving down. Judging from their might, it seemed as if they were intending to destroy this land.

Under the countless dumbfounded gazes, Mu Chen quietly sat in the lightning sea as he had withdrew all the Spiritual Energy around him. His charming face was exceptionally calm at the moment as he slightly raised his head. Insanity surged from the depths of his eyes as his black pupils reflected the green lightning.

"Since the Penta Rune Lightning Physique is not able to stop you...then let's make it stronger!"

Mu Chen tightly clenched his fists as he had an unswerving expression on his face. Although the Divine Wood Lightning Dipper was fearsome, it was also an opportunity for Mu Chen. The cultivation of the Lightning God's Physique could not be separated from lightning. No matter what lightning it was, it was all from the same origin of Dao. Using such energy to refine his Lightning God's Physique would only increase its efficiency. However, it contained quite a bit of danger as well. After all, it was impossible to control such energy. The moment he lost control, he would suffer great injuries from it.

However, since when had Mu Chen's cultivation path strayed from the word danger? Without great willpower, the path to becoming an expert could only be ordinary.

Therefore, this danger wasn't something that made Mu Chen feel fear.

Both of his eyes were tightly shut as both of his hands made the seal to cultivate the Lightning God's Physique. Inside his body, Spiritual Energy was also surging as if there was a great enemy as it made preparations.

Boom!

As the lightning roared, a green lightning streaked across the horizon as it dived down without the slightest leniency as it struck Mu Chen.

It was as if Mu Chen had suffered a great impact as his body trembled. His flesh and skin were torn apart as fresh blood flowed, drenching half of his body in blood. But even so, Mu Chen kept both of his eyes tightly shut. Only his slightly trembling body could show his rebellion.

Tsssssssk.

Black and green lightning flickered on the surface of Mu Chen's body as the two energies started their battle, neither giving way to the other.

Boom! Boom!

Lightning constantly roared as one green dragon lightning after another dived down and struck Mu Chen's body.

Lightning madly flickered as the green light had nearly covered Mu Chen.

In the sky that Mu Chen sat, clouds were torn apart. Within a few hundred feet of him, space was twisted from the violent impact.

The scene was something that made the scalps of others tingle.

The faces of Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan turned even more grave at this moment. Because of how violent the lightning energy was, they could not sense the Spiritual Energy ripples coming from Mu Chen. Therefore, they could not tell if his situation was good or bad.

"That fellow is simply too reckless." Wen Qingxuan could not refrain herself from commenting. Although Mu Chen appeared with the strength of Human Body Disaster, she was well-aware of the number of cards Mu Chen had up his sleeves. If he were to thoroughly unleash them, he wouldn't have landed in such a terrible state by the Divine Wood Lightning Dipper. However, who could have expected that he gave up on those methods and chose the stupidest method?

Luo Li's pupils stared at the region where green light expanded as she did not speak. At this time, she chose to believe in Mu Chen, since the

latter wasn't a reckless person. Since he made his choice, then he naturally had his reason and confidence for doing so.

"Xue Tiandou was fine by using the Wooden Spiritual Bell." Wen Qingxuan looked at another direction where Xua Tiandou stood. The green bell hovered on his head as it emitted faint green luster. The Divine Wood Lightning Dippers that fell from the heavens were all withstood by it. It should be a Peerless Rank Spiritual Artifact. Furthermore, it possessed the ability to counter the Divine Wood Lightning Dipper. Therefore, there wasn't any difficulty for him to carry on.

Therefore, the comparison between the two was rather clear cut.

One had it easy while the other was covered in blood...

"Before it ends, no one can guarantee the outcome." Luo Li said softly.

Wen Qingxuan could only nod at her words.

Such discussion was not only limited to the two of them. Everyone else was doing the same thing in this region. After all, Mu Chen's difficulty and Xue Tiandou's easiness was too obvious.

Time flowed among the discussions.

The three joss stick time was about to end.

Rumble.

Rampant thunderous roars still resounded between this heaven and earth.

Xue Tiandou stood on the air as he had both his hands behind him. Blood-red Spiritual Energy constantly surged out of his body into the wooden bell. The Divine Wood Lightning Dipper was striking the wooden bell as it gave off a sharp and clear sound. However, it was still unable to harm him, only exhausting his Spiritual Energy by quite a bit.

Compared to Mu Chen, he clearly had it too easy.

Xue Tiandou's gaze were indifferent as he looked at the other direction, which had green lightning spreading. Vaguely, he could see that the figure no longer trembled, as if he was forcefully enduring it. A smear of

mockery appeared on his lips. That fellow is really seeking death. Is he really trying to use his physical body to withstand the Divine Wood Lightning Dipper? The one that Luo Li likes is actually such trash?

Xue Tiandou shook his head in pity as the cold sneer that hung on his mouth became even richer.

Time gradually flowed as everyone could sense that the originally rampant lightning sea had gradually started to calm down. Clearly, this was the sign that the Divine Wood Lightning Dipper was ending.

Boom.

The last gigantic green lightning whistled as it dived down. Thunderous roars resounded through the heavens as it thoroughly disappeared. The entire region seemed to have become silent by a lot.

Xue Tiandou stood on the sky as he extended his hand out. The wooden bell above his head rapidly shrank before landing in his hand. He gave it a glance and noticed that the surface of the wooden bell had dulled a little. Clearly, there was wear and tear.

"Looks like it has ended."

Xue Tiandou indifferently smiled. He looked at the brilliant green light far away. There wasn't any Spiritual Energy ripples coming from that direction.

Not only him, everyone at the two ends of the lightning sea had also directed their gazes over. They were thinking the same question, wondering what the situation was like inside...

Under their gazes, the green light gradually dispersed. As the green light dispersed, a figure that was seated gradually appeared before showing himself to the eyes of everyone.

Hissss.

When that figure was clear to everyone, everyone inhaled a mouthful of cold air.

The faces of Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan also changed.

The figure that was quietly seated had dark red covering his body. The surface of his body was covered by dried up layers and layers of blood. The blood covered every single inch of his body. The dark-red colour made others feel their scalps tingling at the sight of it. They could only imagine what sort of pain Mu Chen was experiencing earlier to cause such layers of fresh blood to turn into this colour.

"He couldn't have died, right?"

Someone quietly said as there wasn't any movement in those layers of blood, not even breathing was present.

"He deserves it!"

Those of the Saint Spiritual Academy and the Academy Alliance had joy filling their faces as they forced a voice with their teeth gnashing.

Wu Yingying was also gritting her teeth as the hand that was holding onto her crescent blade had turned white from the strength she used.

Xue Tiandou stared at that blood figure as he smiled indifferently. He then shook his head and paid no attention. He took a step towards one end of the lightning sea. The posture of his firm and steady steps made him look like a winner. He originally wanted to fight with Mu Chen, but who could have thought that the latter did not have the fortune for it?

"Not being able to pass through such a test, saved my efforts." Xue Tiandou said with indifference.

He took a step forward.

Crack.

Just when he moved, there was suddenly a cracking noise that resounded in this quiet region.

Xue Tiandou's steps froze as he turned his head, little by little. He fixed his gaze onto that blood figure that wasn't moving. In the next instant, his pupils shrank as he saw fine cracks appearing on the dried layers of blood as it quickly spread out.

Crack. Crack.

The cracking sound became even more concentrated that even those on the two sides of the lightning sea could clearly hear it. Shortly after, their faces changed as they looked at that figure. Pieces and pieces of dried blood was actually falling off...

After those layers of dried blood had fallen off, a fair-looking skin appeared with fluorescence shining on the surface of the skin. Underneath the skin, faint green light could be seen.

Pieces and pieces of dried blood rapidly fell off completely.

As the layers of blood fell off, Mu Chen's figure had, once again, appeared in the sight of everyone. He was still sitting down with his eyes closed. However, everyone could sense that it was as if light was being emitted from his body. Vaguely, there was fine thunderous roars resounding from his body.

Xue Tiandou had fixed his eyes onto that figure.

Mu Chen's eyes slightly trembled as he slowly opened them under the countless astonished gazes.

Boom!

When he had opened his eyes, everyone could hear the roaring of lightning had that had, once again, resounded in this area. Green and black lightning intertwined in his black pupils, making the youth seem even more mysterious.

Many people had their breathing paused for that instant. Even those of the Saint Spiritual Academy and the Academy Alliance had their sneers frozen on their face.

Mu Chen, he is actually still alive!

He had actually withstood the fearsome Divine Wood Lightning Dipper with his physical body!

At this moment, even Xue Tiandou's face had turned ugly.

Whereas charming smiles appeared on the faces of Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan.

Chapter 540: Ten Pieces of Treasure

The summit was exceptionally quiet. Everyone was dumbfounded as they looked at that slender figure that had appeared after the layers of dried blood shredded off his body, their eyes were filled with disbelief. No one could have expected that Mu Chen would actually manage to withstand the fearsome attack of the Divine Wood Lightning Dipper with his physical body.

"That's too frightening."

Everyone exchanged a glance with each other as they muttered. Just what level did that fellow's physical body reach to be able to accomplish such a feat?

Under the lowered voices of discussions, Xue Tiandou's facial expression was a little ugly. He stared at Mu Chen with a dark gaze. Although the two of them had withstood the lightning sea, the level of their success was categorized as many people had answers in their hearts. After all, he had borrowed the power of an external object, while Mu Chen depended on his physical body.

Although they did not talk about it, they would still feel that Mu Chen had surpassed Xue Tiandou in his accomplishment in the lightni]ng sea. Just this point alone was something that Xue Tiandou could not endure. He came from the Royal Family of the Blood God Clan, his status was something that Mu Chen could not be compared to. Now, he was actually suppressed by Mu Chen.

A smear of bloodlust flashed across Xue Tiandou's eyes as he sinisterly looked at Mu Chen. "Formidable. I never expected you to have such a card hidden in your sleeves."

"You're flattering me." Mu Chen said as he smiled indifferently.

Xue Tiandou shrugged his shoulders as he chuckled, "Now it's interesting. If you died in it, you would have disappointed me. Luo Li's eyesight isn't so bad to such an extent."

"Believe me, you will feel even more interested." Mu Chen said honestly as he stared at Xue Tiandou.

"Really? Then I'll have to stare With my eyes big and watch." A smear of mockery rose from the corner of Xue Tiandou's lips.

"You will have the chance."

Mu Chen smiled and no longer bothered. With a tap of his feet, he had already flown out of the lightning sea and landed beside Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan.

"Are you alright?" Luo Li asked despite the fact that Mu Chen looked good.

Mu Chen smiled as he nodded. Both of his fists were tightly clenched as a smile rose from the corner of his lips. He could feel that his physical body had grown stronger again... The risk that he had taken before was the right path. Although it was painful, strength that was obtained through suffering was the genuine strength.

Mu Chen swept his gaze. Many people that had touched his gaze all shifted their eyes. There was respect in their eyes. Although the latter had only appeared to have Human Body Disaster in cultivation, they understood that not even Spiritual Energy experts could fight him. The physical body of that fellow was simply too powerful. They didn't know how he cultivated it.

When Wang Zhong, Mo Yu and the rest had touched gazes with Mu Chen, their eyes were a little dark. However, Mu Chen paid no attention to them.

Wu Yingying's gaze touched Mu Chen's for an instant, before she turned her head with a cold expression. The hand that was tightly gripping onto her crescent blade had loosened. However, when she noticed her fine thoughts, she was stunned. Shortly after, she felt anger, why would she care about the life and death of a lecher?

Mu Chen's gaze leaped through everyone as he gazed upon the great green palace. This area was already the front of the palace as green stone

stairs before them had stretched to the palace.

This is the Divine Wood Academy. After all their time and efforts, they finally stood here.

When Mu Chen's gaze was staring at the ancient palace, all those that had passed through the test of the lightning sea had also directed their gazes over. When they started out, there were thousands of teams and right now, there were only a hundred people.

The elimination rate was simply too alarming.

"Let's go."

Mu Chen was the first that charged out as his feet tapped on the stone stairs and charged straight towards the palace like an arrow that had been shot out.

Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan closely followed. At the same time, Xue Tiandou, Wang Zhong, Mo Yu and the rest had also turned into steaks of light as they flew out. The Divine Wood Academy was just before them, as long as they made that other step, they would be able to reach the most important place of the Divine Wood Palace.

Rustle!

Rapid breaks of wind resounded as the nearly hundred people present had pushed their speeds to their limits.

Under their speeds, the thousands of steps of stairs only took an instant for them to travel. Thereafter, Mu Chen stood on the summit as his gaze suddenly widened. The ancient palace was clear before his eyes.

The great palace was so extremely majestic that it made them look as small as an ant before it. This palace did not have any walls as it was surrounded by a vast wood-green plaza. On the plaza, there were ten green pillars that stood towering. Those pillars were roughly thousands of feet in height, as if they had pierced through the clouds.

The towering green pillars were filled with profound light runes as faint light emitted. It gave others a feeling that it couldn't be shook.

However, the gaze of Mu Chen and his group only stopped on the ten towering pillars for a brief moment before directing it towards the peak of them. There were ten green light balls and within those light balls, there were waves of Spiritual Energy ripples being emitted from them. Causing the Spiritual Energy between this heaven and earth to seem as if it was boiling.

Everyone's gazes were fixed onto those light balls. Shortly after, there were fiery blazes surging from their eyes as they could vaguely see that within every light ball, there was equipment. They were either swords, scrolls or armours...

However, those items were emitting astonishing amounts of Spiritual Energy ripples. Clearly, they were not your everyday ordinary products.

Everyone's gazes were staring at the ten light balls in heat. Although they could not guarantee what those items in the light balls were, even a retard would tell that those were treasures!

"I'm afraid that...even Quasi-Divine Artifact are present within them."

Luo Li approached Mu Chen as she softly spoke.

When Mu Chen heard her words, he nodded his head, but he actions could not be noticed. His gaze swept past those light balls as he spoke in a voice that only the three of them could hear, "Luo Li, you go for the third left and Captain Wen Qingxuan, go for the fifth right."

Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan were stunned for a moment as they calmly nodded their heads. From the looks of it, it seems that Mu Chen knows some stuff...

"Let's go!"

Mu Chen's eyes flickered and, thereafter, he issued a deep bark. A dragon image appeared beneath his feet as he flew out.

Rustle!

Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan flew out in an instant as they charged towards the light balls that Mu Chen had mentioned earlier.

When they moved, Mu Chen had also pushed his speed to the limit. The one he had targeted was a light ball on the ninth right as he had already known what treasures were there with his identity as a Successor. Those three lights that he had pointed out were the most powerful among all.

Those three were Quasi-Divine Artifacts!

Although Quasi-Divine Artifacts were of the lowest level amongst the Divine Artifacts, they had surpassed the category of Spiritual Artifact. Every single Divine Artifact possessed the power to explosively increase one's strength. Their might was not something that a Spiritual Artifact could be compared to. Currently, aside from the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, Mu Chen only had the Demonic Dragon Devouring Spear that could he called a treasure. Although it was a Peerless Rank Spiritual Artifact, it was vastly incomparable to a Quasi-Divine Artifact.

When the three of them moved, it had thoroughly made everyone that was eyeing those light balls to move as well. Their speed wasn't slow as they immediately burst out. However, they could not judge which was the best among the ten light balls and could only try their luck.

Mu Chen, however, did not have any hesitation. The dragon beneath his feet roared as it became like a soaring dragon. In a wink of an eye, he had already appeared before the ninth towering pillar. Thereafter, his figure exploded and in the next instant, he had already appeared on the peak of the pillar. His eyes were filled with the light that was before him. Mu Chen focused his gaze over and could vaguely see an object in the light.

It was a Stone Seal that was carved from some unknown item. The Stone Seal was dark-green in colour as it appeared extremely antique. There wasn't any unnecessary flowery patterns on it, only a black tortoise carved on the top of it. The tortoise was extremely mottled, as if the countless years and months had left behind its marks.

Mu Chen's line-of-sight was focused on the Stone Tortoise Seal as he could feel the Spiritual Energy within his body become heavy. His gaze froze at that instant. What a formidable object. With just a look, it was as if he had tens of thousands of catties placed on him to the point that even

his Spiritual Energy was affected by it.

"Indeed worthy of being a Quasi-Divine Artifact."

Mu Chen praised in his heart. With the news of the Successor, he already knew that there was a divine object in the Divine Wood Palace that's called the Black Tortoise Seal that could suppress anything. From the looks of it, this should be it.

Since he had already found the treasure, it was impossible for him to give up. He circulated his Spiritual Energy as black lightning flickered on the surface of his body. He extended his hand as it pierced through the light, towards the Black Tortoise Seal at lightning speed.

Shhhhuuuu!

However, just when he was about to grab ahold of the Black Tortoise Seal, an extremely break of wind resounded above his head. A blood pike was aimed at his head as it brought along the reeking smell of blood in an extremely challenging angle.

That attack was extremely vicious. As long as Mu Chen grabbed the Black Tortoise Seal, the pike would pierce through his brain.

Mu Chen's gaze past the long pike. Behind the pike, it was Xue Tiandou, who did not have any expression on his face. As for his gaze, it was cold at this instant. This fellow was really haunting as he had been eyeing him and not letting him go.

Chapter 541: Snatching the Black Tortoise Seal

Shhhhhuuu!

The blood pike swept down along with a sharp wind as it ruthlessly aimed towards Mu Chen's head. The attack was extremely vicious.

Mu Chen's pupils turned cold at the same time as black lightning instantly surge out of his body. He tightly clenched his fist as lightning flickered on it when he threw a punch towards the blood pike.

Dang!

A metallic collision resounded as sparks flew. The fist and pike clashed as an astonishing fluctuation spread out. Mu Chen and Xue Tiandou's figures jolted before flying away.

Mu Chen tapped his foot on the air as he stabilised his figure. He had an indifferent expression as he stared at Xue Tiandou before him as killing intent vaguely surged wiyhin his eyes.

"Haha, your eyesight is pretty good..." Xue Tiandou said as he glanced at the Black Tortoise Seal in the light.

Xue Tiandou was similarly a Successor and thus, he naturally knew some info as well. The Black Tortoise Seal was the most powerful treasure amongst the ten treasures. Therefore, his choice was the same as Mu Chen's.

Mu Chen indifferently looked at him as the Devouring Dragon Demonic Spear appeared in his hand, before a baleful aura surged as he gripped it. He pointed the sharp end of the speartip towards Xue Tiandou as he smiled, "You've not been pleasing to my eyes since long ago. Seems like I no longer have to endure it."

"Are you sure you're not seeking shame yourself?" A mockery smile appeared on the corner of Xue Tiandou's lips.

"I believe you still don't have that qualification." Mu Chen said honestly.

The corner of Xue Tiandou's lips twitched as his eyes gradually turned cold. The hand that he used to hold onto the blood pike had veins popping out. Shortly after, the smile on his face gradually turned savage as he stomped his foot on their air. His figure mysteriously disappeared.

The instant Xue Tiandou disappeared, a dragon image flickered beneath Mu Chen's feet as he had appeared at the side of the pillar in an instant. The Devouring Dragon Demonic Spear in his hand drew a tricky angle as he stabbed towards the the left side of the pillar at lightning speed

Ding!

The blood pike shot out from that direction as it clashed with the Devouring Dragon Demonic Spear. Sparks flew as the surrounding air exploded from the impact.

"If you want to snatch the treasure, defeat me first." Mu Chen smiled as he looked at the figure that had appeared on the left side.

"There isn't any better option."

Xue Tiandou coldly laughed as he stomped his feet. Boundless scarlet-red Spiritual Energy surged out from his body like a tidal wave as it instantly occupied half of the sky. A powerful Spiritual Energy pressure was unleashed towards Mu Chen.

Rumble.

Black lightning frantically flickered on the surface of Mu Chen's body. On his chest, five lightning runes appeared. Clearly, he had used the Lightning God's Physique. Great power filled his limbs, causing the powerful Spiritual Energy pressure to lose effect.

Rustle!

The two figures flew out at the same time, along with sounds of wind breaking, as earth-shattering spear images clashed against the blood pike with boiling Spiritual Energy. It was like torrential rain as they clashed.

Ding! Ding!

Everyone could only hear the metallic sounds ringing as they clashed, as

well as the waves of rampant fluctuations. The two figures, however, were especially blurry to watch. No one dared to step foot in that region. Even those that wanted to seize the treasure had to avoid.

Ding!

Speartip and pike tip clashed as neither was prepared to give an inch. Under the two powerful forces, even the spear and pike seemed vaguely curved. However, they were straightened in the next instant as the air exploded. The two figures were jolted back several steps.

Xue Tiandou's face was frozen cold. Mu Chen's physical body was indeed powerful. Even if he had the upper hand in terms of Spiritual Energy compared to Mu Chen, the latter could make use of his powerful physical body to compensate for it. Seems like ordinary methods would be useless to deal with this fellow.

"Blood God's Palm!"

As he pondered, Xue Tiandou's fist suddenly stretched out as formless bloody light gathered in his palm as he pushed his palm forward. A blood palm with the size of a few hundred feet was like thunderclouds as it shrouded Mu Chen along with concentrated reek of blood spreading out.

Mu Chen's eyes flickered as he clenched his fist. Black lightning frantically sparked as his entire arm became black in colour, giving off a feeling as if it could conquer everything before one.

"Thunder God's Fist!"

He threw the fist out as it carried along tge roar of thunder as it clashed against the blood palm.

Boom!

Wild Spiritual Energy spread out as they caused even the space to start twisting.

When the surrounding people saw their confrontation, their faces couldn't help changing. Even a Late Phase Spiritual Energy expert would be in a terrible state at this level of confrontation.

"Four Gods Constellation Scripture!"

Destroying the blood palm with his fist, Mu Chen did not retreat as he formed seals with his hand. Powerful Spiritual Energy swept out as a starry sky appeared behind him. Four beasts took form as they charged towards Xue Tiandou in an instant.

"Petty tricks."

Xue Tiandou coldly smiled as he suddenly spreaded both his hands out. Boundless Spiritual Energy formed into a bloody screen as it descended before him. The four beasts were submerged as they charged into the bloody screen and quickly dissipated.

Mu Chen lightly smiled at the scene as his figure suddenly disappeared. When he appeared, he was already before the Black Tortoise Seal.

"Before you defeat me, stay your hands!" Xue Tiandou's gaze turned cold at the sight of him as he sent a palm out. The blood palm descended on Mu Chen's head.

Mu Chen narrowed both his eyes as the Devouring Dragon Demonic Spear suddenly stabbed forward. The spear lifted the Black Tortoise Seal as the body of the spear trembled, sending the Black Tortoise Seal flying away.

Rustle!

When the Black Tortoise Seal flew up, Xue Tiandou's eyes flickered as he had turned into bloody shadow, appearing before the Black Tortoise Seal before Mu Chen. He made a grab towards the seal as he coldly smiled, "Thanks a lot, seems like this treasure is unfated for you."

His smile had only been maintained for an instant, before his face changed. He could feel that the Black Tortoise Seal haf suddenly become heavy when it landed in his hands. The feeling was as if he was lifting the mountains with his bare hands. Not only did his body feel heavy, even the Spiritual Energy within his body slowed down.

"You're welcome."

Mu Chen's mocking voice resounded before him. Mu Chen mysteriously appeared before Xue Tiandou as lightning flickered on his palm as he slapped Xue Tiandou's chest at lightning speed.

A violent wind tore the space as Xue Tiandou's face changed. His sleeves trembled as a wooden bell flew out as it instantly expanded in size before him.

Boom!

Mu Chen's palm heavily clashed against the wooden bell as it caused the bell to ring. Sound waves spread out, causing the air in this area to continuously shatter.

The wooden bell rapidly flew back into Xue Tiandou's sleeve under Mu Chen's palm.

"What a pity."

Mu Chen sighed in his heart. Before refining the Black Tortoise Seal, one would only feel pressure from coming in contact with it. That was the reason why he would send the Black Tortoise Seal flying away earlier, because he wanted Xue Tiandou to go after it. And as he had wished, the latter fell for his trap.

If Xue Tiandou did not have the Wooden Spiritual Bell, he would have been wounded by Mu Chen in that attack earlier.

"What a good scheme!"

Xue Tiandou's face was dark as he had reflected. His palm trembled as he sent the Black Tortoise Seal flying once again. The instant the Black Tortoise Seal left his hand, the pressure instantly disappeared. He coldly looked at Mu Chen as rage filled his eyes. He was actually tricked by that fellow.

"Since you're seeking death, I'll let you have a taste of Spirit Disaster!"

Xue Tiandou suddenly clenched both his fists as a torrential blood sea formed behind him. Both of his eyes turned red as concentrated bloodlust appeared on his face.

"Blood God Law - Blood Dragon Suppression!"

Xue Tiandou's scarlet-red fingers pointed at Mu Chen as the bloody sea frantically rolled. It had actually turned into a ferocious bloody dragon as it brought along a strong smell of blood. It tore through the horizon as a colossal shadow shrouded a few hundred feet around Mu Chen. It had sealed off Mu Chen's path of retreat.

Clearly, Xue Tiandou had pushed his strength of First Grade Spirit Disaster to the limits. It was even more powerful compared to the puppet Mu Chen had encountered in the Spiritual Treasure Mountain!

As the Blood God Suppression charged over, Mu Chen's charming face was filled with graveness. However, he did not have the intention to dodge. He deeply inhaled a mouthful of air as the lightning on the surface of his body suddenly grew stronger. The black light had a faint green light mixed within it.

It was as if the lightning runes were growing out of his body and onto his arm. Those lightning runes were black in colour as they filled every single corner of his right arm. Black lightning seemed as if it had formed into a liquid as it slowly circulated on his arm. An unspeakable power was being emitted at this instant, causing even the space to be twisted.

"Arm of the Lightning God."

Mu Chen took a step forth as lightning flickered in his black pupils. He threw a fist forward as the lightning liquid on his arm contained tens of thousands of lightning bolts as it heavily clashed with the incoming bloody dragon.

Boom!

As the two forces clashed, the entire region was silent for an instant. Thereafter, everyone could see fine cracks appear on the space. Thereafter, a fearsome fluctuation swept out, causing those nearby to fly away. At the same time, the ground below was torn as cracks appeared.

The impact wreck havoc as the bloody dragon disappeared in an instant as it turned into a bloody light. Xue Tiandou, who was staring at the scene

before him, had his face instantly pale.

At the direction that he was looking, Mu Chen did not move as he had maintained the posture when he sent that fist earlier. There were still liquid circulating on his arm.

On his chest, lightning flickered as another lightning rune quietly appeared on top of the fifth.

Mu Chen's Lightning God's Physique had undergone a breakthrough, reaching Hexa Rune Lightning Physique!

Lightning flickered as the longspear in Mu Chen's hand swipe horizontally with the spear tip tilting as the Black Tortoise Seal landed on the speartip.

Chapter 542: Thorny

Mu Chen stood on the air. One of his arms had lightning liquid circulating as if the lightning rune was growing on his muscles as it emitted a fearsome power. The other was holding onto the Devouring Dragon Demonic Spear in a tilted angle as the speartip had an ancient stone seal on it.

On his chest, there were six lighting runes that vaguely appeared as rampant lightning energy flowed on his body. As his muscles twitched, the surrounding atmosphere exploded. The strength of his physical body had reached a fearsome degree.

This was a sign that Mu Chen's Lightning God's Physique had reached Hexa Rune Lightning Physique.

It was the benefit that Mu Chen had obtained when he was in the Divine Wood Lightning Dipper.

Haaaaa.

A white mist had lightning mixed in it as Mu Chen breathed out. Lightning flickered as Mu Chen's eyes seemed as if there were lightning born in them. They emitted an indescribable pressure as he looked at the pale-faced Xue Tiandou before him as he had an indifferent gaze. If he did not break through to Hexa Rune Lightning Physique, he might not have the upper hand when he fought with Xue Tiandou. However, no one could have expected his Lightning God's Physique to break through when he was struck by the Divine Wood Lightning Dipper.

Hexa Rune Lightning Physique enabled Mu Chen to fight with any Spirit Disaster expert.

"Looks like you're unfated with this treasure." Mu Chen spoke as he lightly smiled.

Xue Tiandou's gaze was dark as he stared at Mu Chen. However, underneath that darkness, there was a trace of fear. Since the start, he had never placed Mu Chen on the same level as him. However, he couldn't

help changing that kind of view anymore.

That was because he could sense pressure being emitted from Mu Chen's body.

The latter's physical body was much stronger compared to before. To an extent that even he could not disregard.

"You are indeed capable to be able to cultivate your physical body to such an extent. Amongst those of the same generations that I have encountered, your physical body could be ranked in the top ten." Xue Tiandou said as his tone was cold.

Mu Chen smiled in reply, "Thanks for your praise."

"However..."

Xue Tiandou's pupils seemed as if there were blood seas flowing in them as he slowly said, "No matter how strong your physical body is, there is still a limit to it."

When Mu Chen heard his words, he did not express his opinion on it. He shifted his gaze towards another direction. Despite the fact that Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan had encountered obstructions, with the strength of the two girls, the obstructions that they both encountered was lighter compared to his own. Therefore, by the time he obtained the Black Tortoise Seal, the two girls had already gotten the two treasures that he had chosen for them.

Luo Li's hand had a green jade ruler with complicated runes on it. If one were to attentively look at it, one could see dense vitality being emitted from the jade ruler as it seemed like grass.

Wen Qingxuan on the other hand, had a green wooden vine. The wooden vine was extremely simple, unadorned and had a smooth surface. It was similar to a green rope.

Clearly, the two treasures in their hands weren't ordinary objects. From the appearance of them, they seemed even more shiny compared to the Black Tortoise Seal that Mu Chen had obtained.

When Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan had successfully obtained the treasures, the seven other treasures had already fallen in the hands of others. However, there was a limit to the treasures, after all, as most of the people there were empty-handed, which made them feel unwilling, but there was nothing that they could do.

As the ten treasures had fallen in the hands of others, the intense battles from before had settled down. However, anyone could feel the tense atmosphere as there were many eyeing gazes.

The faces of Wang Zhong, Mo Yu and their group were the ugliest. When Mu Chen and Xue Tiandou fought, they had targeted Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan separately. However, the ending results could be seen. From a certain extent, the two girls had sharper means compared to Mu Chen. Despite the fact that they had given their all, they still lost to the two girls and ended up empty-handed.

As for Wu Yingying and the Four Seas Spiritual Academies, they did not partake in the intense battles as they had their eyes on the other weaker seven treasures. Therefore, they had gains from the battle. Although the treasures that they had obtained were Peerless Rank Spiritual Artifacts, they could still be considered as decent harvests.

The atmosphere in this plaza became a little strange.

Xue Tiandou stared at Mu Chen, Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan as light flickered in his eyes. If he was dealing with Mu Chen alone, he still had some confidence. However, with Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan, even someone as prideful as him could only retreat.

"Mu Chen, aren't you guys a little too much?"

As Xue Tiandou's eyes flickered, a cold voice resounded from a corner. Everyone directed their gazes over and saw Wang Zhong staring at Mu Chen with hatred, "There are only three Quasi-Divine Artifacts here and all three of them are seized by your group. Are you going to let us return empty-handed?"

Wang Zhong's words were rather vicious. After all, the demands exceeded the supply. With Mu Chen's group of three gathered together,

their strength was rather powerful and not a single side could gain any advantage if they were to act. Therefore, he was trying to isolate Mu Chen's group.

An uproar resounded in the entire plaza. Some people were unresigned as they couldn't help directing their gazes over to Mu Chen's group as fear and greed flickered in their eyes at the same time.

"Haha, Brother Wang Zhong is right. Mu Chen, a person cannot be too greedy, incase you'll die from bursting." Mo Yu coldly smiled at this instant as well. He had already originally hated Mu Chen. Adding on to Mu Chen's group of three seizing the three Quasi-Divine Artifacts, he would naturally hit him when he's down.

"Mu Chen, looks like you have quite a bit of enemies here." Xue Tiandou smiled as he looked at the scene before him in rumination.

Mu Chen had no expression on his face, whereas Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan's faces turned a little cold. The two girls flew to Mu Chen's side as they swept their cold gazes.

"Friend, from the looks of it, it seems like you have some grudges with Mu Chen's group. Why don't we join hands for once?" Wang Zhong's heart trembled when he saw Wen Qingxuan's cold gaze. He had too much fear for the latter and, therefore, he shifted his gaze and looked at Xue Tiandou. That person's strength could not be underestimated, since he had already reached First Grade Spirit Disaster, judging from his battle with Mu Chen earlier.

"Haha, I'm rather interested in this. You can leave Mu Chen to me to deal with." Xue Tiandou lightly smiled as he nodded his head. Wang Zhong's suggestion was what he had in mind. After all, he knew that it was difficult for him to deal with Mu Chen's group of three all by himself.

Wang Zhong rejoiced at Xue Tiandou's reply. He knew how hard Mu Chen was to deal with. The latter had defeated a First Grade Spirit Disaster when he was in the Spiritual Treasure Mountain. Therefore, it was great news to him that Xue Tiandou was willing to deal with Mu Chen.

"Haha, are the friends of Martial Spiritual Academy and the Four Sea Spiritual Academies interested to join in? I believe that the temptation of Quasi-Divine Artifacts is sufficient, right?"

After pulling Xue Tiandou to their camp, Wang Zhong looked at Wu Yingying, as well as the Four Sea Spiritual Academies. From the looks of it, he was obviously trying to pull people to deal with Mu Chen and his group together.

When Wu Yingying and the four Captains of the Four Sea Spiritual Academies heard his words, their faces changed a little that could not be noticed.

Wu Yingying looked towards Mu Chen. The latter did not have any expression, but the lightning that was flickering on the surface of his body revealed the rage and killing intent in his heart.

"You have already pulled two parties to your camp. If you were to pull us along to snatch for the three Quasi-Divine Artifact, how are we going to split amongst us? Are we going to fight another round?" Wu Yingying said indifferently.

Wang Zhong's face changed at her words because Wu Yingying's words were too sharp to the point that he didn't know how to refute. After all, there were only three Quasi-Divine Artifacts and with Wang Zhong's character, it was impossible for him to return empty-handed. Therefore, there would still be a round of intense battles for the distribution of Quasi-Divine Artifacts after dealing with Mu Chen.

The four Captains of the Four Sea Spiritual Academies exchanged looks as they shook their heads in the end, "Captain Wang Zhong, I apologize. We of the Four Sea Spiritual Academies have no intention to join. Although Quasi-Divine Artifacts are rare, since we have no fate to them, we will not force them."

They rejected Wang Zhong's invitation as they saw that be it Mu Chen's group or Wang Zhong's group, none of them were easy to deal with. Although they had some strength, there wasn't any benefits in them partaking in the battle. Therefore, just as Wu Yingying had said, even after

dealing with Mu Chen's group, it might not guarantee that they would get the Quasi-Divine Artifacts. Who knows if all their efforts would be for naught and benefitted others instead?

Wang Zhong's expression was a little ugly as he couldn't help ruthlessly glancing at Wu Yingying. It was because the latter had picked such a point that caused the other party to withdraw their stirring hearts.

Wu Yingying paid no attention to him as she folded her arms. An arc appeared on her squashed chest as she coldly swept a glance at Mu Chen and snorted, "If you guys want to fight, feel free to fight. When you guys are tired from fighting, I will naturally act."

Mu Chen smiled as he gave a grateful gaze towards Wu Yingying. He knew that her words earlier had dispelled the thoughts for many people.

However, Wu Yingying's face was still cold as she paid no attention to his grateful gaze.

Wang Zhong's face was ashened as he coldly smiled, "It will still be enough without you guys."

As he finished speaking, he waved his sleeve as a ray of light flickered. A huge statue appeared on the plaza. It was a Divine Wood Guard. Furthermore, from the ripples emitted from that Divine Wood Guard, its power did't seem to be any weaker compared to the one in Mu Chen's possession.

Mo Yu chuckled at the sight of it as he flicked his hand and another similar statue appeared.

"Since everyone has summoned this thing, then I'll not stay my hands as well." Xue Tiandou lazily smiled as he summoned another identical Divine Wood Guard with a movement of his hand.

The entire plaza was a little quiet as everyone directed their astonished gazes towards the three Divine Wood Guard. Who could have expected that Wang Zhong's party would suddenly summon three First Grade Spirit Disaster puppets?

Mu Chen looked at the three puppets as he focused his gaze. Seems like

every single team that had obtained the Divine Wood Plaque had also obtained a Divine Wood Guard.

Furthermore, from the formation, three of these Divine Wood Guards would represent three First Grade Spirit Disaster puppets. By adding Xue Tiandou, Wang Zhong and Mo Yu's party, this formation was rather troublesome to them.

Seems like things have started to become thorny.

Chapter 543: Two Girls

Three colossal Divine Wood Guards stood on the plaza as the shadows from their huge bodies had covered the entire plaza. A formless pressure brought by them had caused many people's expressions to turn grave as fear filled their eyes. No one could have expected that Wang Zhong, Xue Tiandou and Mo Yu would have such powerful trump cards in their hands.

A Divine Wood Guard represented a First Grade Spirit Disaster expert. This strong entity was capable of defeating an elite team.

And now, there were three of such Divine Wood Guards.

Many people directed their gazes over to Mu Chen's group of three. However, they saw that Mu Chen's group of three did not panic. Clearly, they had already expected it. Excitement filled their hearts as they had a favourable opinion of Mu Chen, Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan. After all, Wen Qingxuan was once the numero uno, so others couldn't help the fear in their hearts for her.

But. right now, there were three Divine Wood Guards that broke this balance. Three First Grade Spirit Disasters weren't easy to deal with.

Seemed like there would be a genuine ferocious battle this time around.

"Haha. Mu Chen, looks like the situation isn't in your grasp all the time." Wang Zhong smiled as he looked at Mu Chen. Three Divine Wood Guards had boosted his confidence. He refuse to believe that with such an overwhelming advantage, they still could not suppress Mu Chen and his group.

Mu Chen did not have too many ripples on his face as he swept his gaze, before looking at Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan as he softly said, "I'll deal with Xue Tiandou."

Amongst the three, Xue Tiandou was clearly the strongest. Fighting with him would most definitely be the hardest. Although Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan's strengths were rather alarming, this was something that a man had to do at this point of time.

"Can you do it?" Wen Qingxuan took a glance at Xue Tiandou. That fellow was the most dangerous amongst the three. Although Mu Chen had the upper hand during their previous battle and managed to seize the stone seal, a majority of it was due to his powerful physique that far surpassed the expectations of Xue Tiandou. Now that the latter had preparations, victory would probably be much more difficult.

"Don't ask a man this sort of question. Even if he can't, he will still force his way up," said Mu Chen.

Wen Qingxuan was dazed for a brief moment. Shortly after, who knows where her trail of thoughts had led her as redness appeared on her fair skin as she ruthlessly stared at Mu Chen, "Lecher!"

Mu Chen was dumbfounded. Thereafter, he figured it out and he couldn't help having a weird smile as he teased, "I'm speaking about the problem of honor, what are you thinking?"

Wen Qingxuan's blush was comparable to the sunset's glow as she tightly gripped onto her golden warspear as she gritted her teeth, "I dare you to ask again?"

Seeing as Wen Qingxuan was about to explode, Mu Chen laughed and no longer teased her. The current situation wasn't too good and if he were to cause Wen Qingxuan to run from the anger, it would certainly be a headache for him.

"How are we going to divide them?" Luo Li was already immune to the quarrel of them both as she helplessly reminded them of the situation before them.

"Leave Xue Tiandou and his Divine Wood Guard to me." Wen Qingxuan coldly snorted as a chill surged in her phoenix-like eyes. Her face was filled with killing intent. Clearly, she was annoyed with those that dared to find her trouble. Did those fellows no longer fear her since they thought that she was no longer the numero uno?

Luo Li took a glance at Wen Qingxuan. She naturally knew that Xue Tiandou was the hardest to deal with amongst the other party and since Wen Qingxuan chose him at the first hand, it had clearly loosened their

pressure.

Thereafter, Luo Li looked at Mu Chen. The latter was staring at Xue Tiandou as he lightly shook his head.

"What's your opinion?" Wen Qingxuan said unhappily at the sight of his action.

"Can the both of you obstruct them for a period of time?" Mu Chen said softly.

Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan were startled as they looked at Mu Chen in doubt. However, the former quickly thought of something as her charming eyes focused, "You're going to form a Spiritual Array?"

Mu Chen slowly nodded his head.

"Is... is your Spiritual Array... reliable?" Wen Qingxuan couldn't help asking him. Just when that word was about to slip from her mouth, her face blushed as she quickly changed a word.

"Even more reliable than me!" Mu Chen said seriously as he couldn't, but was about to laugh.

Wen Qingxuan rolled her eyes at him as she spoke lightly, "Since that's the case, then I'll believe you for once. Me and Luo Li will obstruct them. However, if your Spiritual Array doesn't have too much of an effect... I'll take charge of the situation next and even you have to listen to my commands."

Mu Chen was startled as he looked at the charming features of the girl before him and nodded with a smile.

"I will hurry up."

Mu Chen nodded his head and, thereafter, he waved his hand and a similar Divine Wood Guard appeared, "This Divine Wood Guard will share some of the burden, the two of you be careful."

Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan exchanged a glance as they nodded their heads. The two girls appeared on the two sides of the Divine Wood Guard. One had a golden warspear in her hand, while the other had a longsword.

Wind whistled as the hair of the two girls fluttered in the wind. That scene was extremely shaking to the core.

Everyone in the plaza could not help having their eyes light up as they looked at the two slender girls. The two girls possessed unrivalled beauty, but their temperaments were different.

Wen Qingxuan held onto the warspear as her golden battle armour covered her exquisite figure and her fine hair dropped down to her waist. Her long and narrow phoenix-like eyes were flickering with coldness and pride. Her current appearance made her look like a war goddess that was emitting fearsome fighting spirit.

Luo Li, on the other hand, stood towering as her longsword was held at a tilted angle. Her long azure dress tightly stuck to her soft body as her alluring curves were drawn out. Despite having outstanding beauty, her crystal-clear pupils were the most charming. They were clear, without any impurities, causing others to be drunk on her charm. Her fighting spirit wasn't as sharp as Wen Qingxuan's but when her eyes slightly hung down, there was a trace of chill that flashed past.

The two girls stood on the left and right of the Divine Wood Guard. The breathtaking appearance made god-knows how many people swallow their saliva. Thereafter, they all felt envy towards Mu Chen. How was that fellow so blessed to such an extent...?

"Haha, you're planning to let the girls lead the fight?" When Xue Tiandou saw Luo Li, a strong possessive desire rose as he mocked while looking at Mu Chen's direction.

Mu Chen wasn't bothered with his mockery as he sat down on the sky with indifference.

When Xue Tiandou saw that, his eyes flashed with a chill as he flicked with his finger and blood-red Spiritual Energy shot towards Mu Chen's direction.

Shhhhuuuu!

An extremely sharp sword light swept past as it instantly shredded the

Spiritual Energy.

Luo Li's fingers rolled a strand of her long hair as she lightly stared at Xue Tiandou, "He doesn't have the time to be bothered with you right now. If you want to fight, I'll accompany you."

Xue Tiandou's face turned dark.

"Hmph, what a big tone from you. I know that the strength of the two of you isn't ordinary. However, aren't you indulging in your fantasy if you think that you can obstruct all of us?" Wang Zhong coldly snorted.

"Even if Ji Xuan is here, he wouldn't dare to speak as such to me. Who are you?" Wen Qingxuan coldly laughed. Her disdainful tone made the corner of Wang Zhong's eyes twitch.

"Since that's the case, then I'll have to experience it!" Mo Yu's eyes were cold when he looked at Mu Chen as he had guessed something. In an instant, his sleeves trembled as three streaks of light flew out. At the same time, Qin Feng and Liu Xiong both had three streaks of light shooting out separately.

Nine streaks of light flew over as they expanded in size. They turned into nine humanoid puppets. Those puppets were a little mottled with a faint green light on the surface of their bodies. On their bodies, there were numerous savage scars, which seemed to have indicated that they suffered a huge battle in ancient time, causing them to be a little damaged.

Despite being damaged, powerful ripples could be felt from their bodies. Although that degree could not be compared to the Divine Wood Guard, they were comparable to a Spiritual Energy Disaster in strength.

Mo Yu and his group still had such a trump card!

"Haha, thanks to you guys, although we did not obtain the treasure in the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard, we found some puppets that were buried in that forest." Mo Yu coldly smiled.

With nine puppets with the strength of Spiritual Energy Disaster, they could even fight with First Grade Spirit Disaster experts. No wonder Mo Yu and his group was not afraid when they saw Mu Chen again, so they

had this kind of trump card.

"Bunch of scraps, why bother taking out to embarrass yourself?"

Faced with their pride, Wen Qingxuan only lightly swept a glance as her casual words made the faces of Mo Yu and his group ashen.

"Since you're so confident of yourself, then let us take a look at your skill."

Xue Tiandou's gaze was dark as he took a step forth. His blood river Spiritual Energy whistled out as it carried along a dense smell of blood and filled this heaven and earth.

Wang Zhong issued a soft snort as he had also pushed his Spiritual Energy to the limits. Although it was weaker compared to Xue Tiandou, it was still the strength of a First Grade Spirit Disaster.

Mo Yu, Qin Feng and Liu Xiong waved their sleeves as their nine puppets, as well as the Divine Wood Guard, took a step forth. They formed a fan-shaped formation as they surrounded Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan.

At this instant, everyone held their breath at the sight of the formation as their hearts began to race.

They, too, wish to know if those two fragile-looking girls could withstand the attacks of such a formation.

Chapter 544: Might of the Two Girls

Powerful Spiritual Energy swept out like a tornado as the powerful might from the Spiritual Energy made everyone in the plaza take a few steps back, fearing that they might be affected by the ripples of the battle.

Xue Tiandou and Wang Zhong both unleashed their strength as First Grade Spirit Disasters, whereas Mo Yu and his team of three controlled the nine puppets, as well as the Divine Wood Guard, as they stared at the opposition as prey. They surrounded Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan in a fan shape as powerful pressure shrouded towards the two girls like tidal waves.

"Hmph."

Wen Qingxuan coldly snorted in disdain, facing the pressure as she held onto her warspear as brilliant golden light swept out from her body. Vaguely, one could hear the clear cry of a phoenix from the surging golden light.

Luo Li, on the other hand, maintained a calm expression as ripples fluctuated from the hand that she used to hold onto the Luo God Sword. A formless sharp sword intent was being emitted as it caused ripples to appear in the space.

"Let's go!"

Xue Tiandou suddenly barked as his scarlet gaze fixed onto the two girls.

Boom!

Boundless Spiritual Energy instantly exploded similar to a volcano. The three Divine Wood Guards were the first to move as they charged forward with their quaking steps. Their fists flickered with green light as they tore through the sky and targeted the two girls standing on the shoulders of the opposing Divine Wood Guard.

Buzz.

A clear sword cry rang out in this heaven and earth as everyone could see an eye-stinging brilliance of sword light bursting forth from Mu

Chen's location. Within the sword light, there was an indescribable sword intent contained, as if it could pierce through the heavens and earth.

Rustle!

Sword light gathered and instantly turned into three sword images the size of roughly three hundred meters. Luo Li's long hair that was originally bundled up had dropped down at this instant and looked like a silvery river that flowed down her waist. Her jade-like hand formed sword seals and her crystal-clear pupils seemed as if there was a sword river flowing in them.

Luo God Sword Art - Forming Sword Image!

Luo Li's slender fingers pointed out as the three sword images swept out while whistling. In a rustle, they had tore the space as they stabbed towards the fists of the three Divine Wood Guards.

Bang!

The huge fists and sword images heavily clashed as a sharp Sword Aura swept out, causing the surrounding space to be twisted.

When the Sword Aura had dispersed, the three Divine Wood Guards' charge was stopped as deep sword marks were left behind on their metallic fists. Fortunately, those Divine Wood Guard did not have any sensation of pain. Otherwise, blood would be flowing down from them, if they were someone else.

Everyone couldn't help staring at that scene as they looked at the slender figure with their eyes filled with astonishment.

Those were three Divine Wood Guards, whose strengths were comparable to First Grade Spirit Disasters. But, right now, they were stopped by a sword from Luo Li, not allowing their colossal bodies to move half a step forward.

Some people inwardly smacked their lips. Previously, they saw how powerful Mu Chen was and they had also heard of some rumors regarding Luo Li. Thus, they did not dare to belittle her. However, no one could have expected that this quiet beauty that stood beside Mu Chen would possess

such fearsome strength.

Just that previous attack alone was even stronger compared to Mu Chen from before.

At the rear, Xue Tiandou, Wang Zhong and Mo Yu's group were startled by Luo Li's sharp attacks. Mo Yu clenched his teeth as the nine puppets flew out. The nine puppets held warlances as they turned into streaks of light. They were flashing from the rear of the Divine Wood Guard as they unleashed their torriential attacks towards Luo Li.

"I have said previously not to embarrass yourself with these scraps of metal!"

Seeing the nine puppets charging out, a cold voice resounded as a brilliant golden light swept out. A golden warspear was like a golden phoenix as it swept out along with extremely powerful Spiritual Energy. The spear light flickered as it pierced through a puppet. Furthermore, that fearsome strength had even sent the puppet flying. At the same time, the remaining gale swept towards the other eight puppets.

Bang!

When the puppet that was pierced through flew away, it powerlessly fell down as the Spiritual Energy was drained, shattering into fragments.

Rustle!

The golden warspear flew back as it returned to Wen Qingxuan's hand. She swept her phoenix-like gaze as her cold stare fixed onto Xue Tiandou and the rest that were at the rear.

Xue Tiandou's face was dark. The surrounding Spiritual Energy around him had been brewed to the limits as the redness in his eyes grew stronger. He made a gripping action as a scarlet-red longspear appeared in his hand. That spear was especially red in colour as there were drops of blood falling off of it. A sinister energy was being emitted from it.

Boom!

Xue Tiandou heavily stomped his feet as the air beneath his feet

exploded. His figure had appeared before Wen Qingxuan at an astonishing speed as his blood-red longspear aimed at the latter's neck at a tricky angle.

"Hmph."

Wen Qingxuan coldly snorted as she did not attempt to avoid Xue Tiandou's attacks. Her hand jolted as her golden warspear stabbed out. Golden light expanded as if it was a phoenix that had appeared from within the spear, showing how tyrannical it was.

Ding!

The speartips accurately clashed together as ripples fluctuated throughout the space. The layers of the surrounding space exploded.

Xue Tiandou's face was exceptionally grave as he could feel the Spiritual Energy ripples contained in the golden warspear. Faced with the waves-like Spiritual Energy, he had also pushed his power to the limits. Despite that, he still could not shake it in the slightest.

The strength of the girl before him had far surpassed his imagination.

Xue Tiandou's eyes flickered as blood light surfaced and his figure mysteriously disappeared.

Rustle!

When he reappeared, he had mysteriously appeared behind Wen Qingxuan. The longspear bolted out as it aimed at the back of the latter at lightning speed.

Sssssssssiiii.

The longspear pierced through the back of Wen Qingxuan. However, there wasn't any flow of blood as that figure gradually disappeared.

"After image?"

Xue Tiandou's pupils abruptly shrank. Wen Qingxuan's speed was actually fast to such an extent? It had even surpassed his Blood God Shadow?

Boom!

A tyrannical gale swept out from behind him. Xue Tiandou quickly turned around to defend in haste as it moved the body of his spear before him as it withstood the golden warspear like a pole.

Bang!

Sparks flew as a powerful energy surged forth from the body of his spear. The impact made Xue Tiandou feel pain on the webs on his hand as his figure flew out in a terrible state for a few hundred meters, before he could stabilise himself.

The surroundings were in an uproar.

Everyone had witnessed the fight Xue Tiandou previously had with Mu Chen. Mu Chen only had the upper hand after rounds of intense battle. But right now, Wen Qing Xuan already held the upper hand in just an exchange. The title of numero uno of the Ranking Board was not in vain.

Wen Qingxuan stood on the air as usual after she had beaten Xue Tiandou back. Her charming face was filled with dense fighting intent as her golden battle armour emitted dazzling light. She seemed like a living war goddess from the pride in her eyes, which made others feel a rush of excitement and felt intimidated, not daring to be profane.

Her rosy lips rose as she looked at Xue Tiandou. However, there was a smear of astonishment that flashed past her eyes. The strength of Xue Tiandou had also surpassed her expectations. No wonder Mu Chen could not deal with him in a short time. That fellow's strength was much stronger compared to ordinary First Grade Spirit Disasters.

Xue Tiandou had no expression on his face as he loosened his numb palm. Thereafter, he tightly gripped his scarlet-red longspear as bloodlust surged forth from his eyes.

"Everyone, do not lay your hands. They are trying to delay time so Mu Chen can prepare his finishing move." Xue Tiandou rwsounded in a cold tone.

Hearing his words, Wang Zhong and the rest directed their gazes

towards the rear. Naturally, they saw Mu Chen sitting on the sky. But not knowing when, there was a frightening amount of Spiritual Energy ripples being emitted as light intertwined. It was clearly a formidable Spiritual Array taking form.

"That's the Lesser Thousand Sword Spiritual Array!" Mo Yu said, gritting his teeth as his expression changed.

He naturally knew that before entering the Divine Wood Palace ruins, Mu Chen had obtained a rather formidable Spiritual Array Diagram. He knew how frightening it was if Mu Chen had managed to lay that Spiritual Array.

"Let's attack with our best!"

The three people exchanged a glance as their hands swept out of their sleeves. The three Divine Wood Guard charged out without fear. This time, the Divine Wood Guards did not have any defense as they unleashed their attack in a rampant manner. Even if they risked having them destroyed, they still had to drain the strength of Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan.

The eight other puppets also charged forth as they unleashed erratic attacks.

Facing those puppets that knew no pain or fear, Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan were tangled up for a moment as well.

Xue Tiandou and the other two looked at the fight as they formed seals with their hands. The seal changes they made were blurred to the naked-eyes.

Dense green light suddenly spread out from their palms as they released astonishing ripples.

"That's..."

When Wu Yingying saw the powerful ripples from the surroundings of those three, her charming eyes froze as well as she spoke in graveness, "Those three are actually unleashing Divine Arts? Furthermore, their Divine Arts seem to be from the same origin."

Wu Yingying furrowed her brows as she saw the intention of those three, before her face turned even more solemn.

Boom! Boom!

Rampant Spiritual Energy ripples exploded from the three people and in the next instant, all three of their gazes turned sharp as they pushed their palms out. A brilliant green luster swept the heavens and earth as they shrouded towards the two girls. At the same time, a deep bark resounded from the heavens and earth like thunder.

"Lesser Divine Art - Divine Dragon Sealing Stake!"

"Lesser Divine Art - Heavenly Wood Mountain!"

"Lesser Divine Art - Divine Wood Binding Vine!"

Chapter 545: Explode

Astonishing Spiritual Energy ripples exploded in the sky as they formed into fearsome Spiritual Energy. They made the air in the entire region seem as if it had frozen.

"They're going to execute three Lesser Divine Arts!"

Someone exclaimed. Everyone here knew how powerful Divine Arts were and generally speaking, they were the means of Sovereign realm experts. Every single Divine Art possessed powerful might that far surpassed Peak Grade Deity Tier Spiritual Art. Likewise, a Divine Art was extremely rare as well and it was not easy to obtain one. Those that obtained one would possess a trump card that could change the entire situation when they executed it at a crucial time.

Therefore, when they saw that Xue Tiandou, Wang Zhong and Mo Yu executed three Lesser Divine Arts, they were startled.

Xue Tiandou and his group was clearly planning to deal with Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan with haste.

"But why are the Lesser Divine Arts being executed by them have such similar ripples...?" Everyone here also had good eyesight and could see that those three Lesser Divine Arts had similar energy ripples as they voiced their doubts.

Wu Yingying and the Four Sea Spiritual Academies weren't in doubt as they knew that those Lesser Divine Arts were from the Divine Wood Plaques that Xue Tiandou and the other two had obtained. Similarly, when they obtained the Divine Wood Plaques, they had also obtained the learning method to a Lesser Divine Art of the Divine Wood Palace. The level of a Lesser Divine Art was of great aid to them. After all, it was something that only Sovereign realm experts could use in their level. Although they could barely execute them and could not unleash the true might of them, Divine Arts were still Divine Arts, they were in a whole different realm. Those who possessed a Lesser Divine Art could easily defeat opponents of the same level.

Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan were being held up by the attacks of the three Divine Wood Guards, as well as the eight puppets. The two girls had also felt the powerful attacks brewing as their charming eyes instantly focused. They could see that their current situation wasn't too good. If they were to fight one-to-one, they would triumph against any single one of them. If Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan were to use their hidden cards, not even Xue Tiandou could obstruct them.

But, right now was not a fair fight, since the other party had a more powerful formation. Furthermore, not a single one of them was an easy target. Despite the fact that they had the help of a Divine Wood Guard, they were still weaker in terms of strength.

"Is that slow fellow still not done yet? If he pisses me off, I will not leave anything for him!"

Wen Qingxuan's brows straightened up as she clenched on her teeth. She took a glance at the rear, looking at Mu Chen, who was still quietly sitting. However, there was a huge Spiritual Array that was gradually taking form around him. Clearly, the Spiritual Array was still incomplete.

Boom!

A huge boom resounded as Xue Tiandou and the other two that weren't far away had brilliant green light exploding from their hand seals.

The green lights soared to the heavens as they spread throughout this region. Everyone raised their heads as their eyes were filled with shock.

There was a majestic Spiritual Energy gathering above Xue Tiandou and the other two. Those Spiritual Energies were green in colour, as if they contained thriving vitality. Underneath them, there was a sharpness hidden as they seemed as weightless as leaves. They were swaying as they fell, but when they swept past, they were as sharp as blades.

Bang!

As the Spiritual Energy rippled, a green mountain that had the size of roughly a few hundred meters appeared. The top of the mountain was filled with ancient tree patterns as if it became three mountains. It dived

down as it instantly appeared above the heads of Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan. The shadow created by it instantly shrouded them as it heavily fell down.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

The air exploded as it created shapeless air cannons as it shot down, creating a deep crater on the ground from the explosion.

Roar!

A green light had spread out as if it was a huge dragon pillar that was bolt upright. It had the shape of a dragon's head on the top. As it roared, it unleashed frightening sound waves that could shatter all things.

Shhhhuuuu!

A green vine that was the size of nearly four thousand meters whistled across as it looked like a colossal python whose head could not be seen. As it wriggled, it was hard to probe the direction of it's attacks. The instant one was bound by it, even First Grade Spirit Disaster experts would have a hard time breaking free.

Three astonishing attacks were positioned top, middle, and bottom as they flew towards Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan's direction. Under those sorts of attacks, it was impossible for them to dodge them.

Everyone held their breath as they did not dare to issue a sound.

Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan exchanged a gaze as their eyes became a little cold.

"I'll defend and you attack!"

Wen Qingxuan softly barked. She knew that Luo Li's strength was not as she had shown on the surface. The Luo God Sword that she was wielding was a genuine Divine Artifact. Furthermore, it wasn't an ordinary Divine Artifact. However, the Divine Artifact was being sealed at the moment, but even so, Luo Li's attacks were extremely powerful.

"Okay." Luo Li nodded her head.

Wen Qingxuan loosened her grip on her warspear as golden Spiritual

Energy swept out. Her slender fingers formed seals at lightning speed. A clear cry of a phoenix resounded as golden phoenix wings that were a few hundred meters in length spread out from Wen Qingxuan. Both of the wings folded as they formed a golden shield, defending her.

Boom! Boom!

The attacks of the three Divine Wood Guards and the eight puppets unleashed rampant attacks against the golden wings but weren't able to shake them in the slightest as they could not break through that defense in that short moment.

When Wen Qingxuan had blocked the Divine Wood Guards, Luo Li's feet tapped on the air as she flew onto the head of Mu Chen's Divine Wood Guard. Her hands that were gripping the Luo God Sword burst forth with dazzling light as both her hands held onto the sword hilt. She raised her hand as her sleeves fell down, revealing her fair and fine wrist. The snow-white skin was even more attractive compared to the sword light.

Her expression turned a little grave as she bit on her lips. In the next instant, sharp sword light flashed across her pupils.

The Luo God Sword in her hands slashed down as her clear yet cold voice resounded in the sky.

"Luo God Sword Art - Sword Slashes The Luo Water!"

Rustle!

When the sword fell, a dazzling light was compressed at an astonishing speed, making it a few feet in size as it concentrated on the tip of the sword, before it burst forth.

The space before her was torn apart as a black crack appeared.

The Sword Aura that was a few feet in size quietly swept out at an indescribable speed. Even people of Xue Tiandou's strength could only see a light flash past and feel a chill down their spine.

Tsssssssk!

The sword light streaked across the horizon.

The green tree mountain that was pressing down suddenly froze in its spot as everyone could see a fine crack appear on the body of the mountain. Thereafter, with an explosion, the tree mountain was split into two. The surface of the cut was as smooth as a mirror.

Roar!

The dragon-shaped stake issued a roar as green light spread out. It was split in half as well.

Crack! Crack!

The long green vine whose end could not be seen also snapped as it broke into pieces.

The faces of Wang Zhong and Mo Yu were dumbfounded.

Xue Tiandou's gaze was also dark. However, he wasn't as shocked as Wang Zhong and Mo Yu. He waved his sleeve as blood-red Spiritual Energy swept out as it formed into a bloody river barrier.

Bang!

A huge collision resounded from the blood-red barrier, as if it was sliced apart. Thereafter, a light charged through the bloody river and dissipated after traveling to a few feet away from Xue Tiandou's party.

The unrivalled rampant Spiritual Energy ripples dissipated in the sky.

Everyone gulped a mouthful of saliva as they looked at the young lady's figure in astonishment. The Lesser Divine Arts that were executed by Xue Tiandou's group of three were actually taken down by her alone?

"Damn it!"

Wang Zhong clenched his teeth as he felt shocked in his heart. Their attacks had reached a realm that even a First Grade Spirit Disaster could only avoid. But this Luo Li before them was only a Spiritual Energy Disaster in cultivation, how was she so fearsome?

"She's not so easy to deal with." Xue Tiandou said with indifference.

"Then, what should we do?" Wang Zhong could not hold back his

question. They could no longer continue further as the Spiritual Array that Mu Chen was forming was almost complete. They felt extremely terrifying danger from that direction. If they could not defeat the two girls and obstruct Mu Chen, their situation would be extremely terrible.

"Explode the Divine Wood Guards." Xue Tiandou said coldly as a smear of ferociousness flashed through his eyes.

Wang Zhong and Mo Yu were startled as pain surfaced in their eyes. They were Divine Wood Guards that were comparable to First Grade Spirit Disasters, he's actually suggesting to explode them? How spendthrift was that!?

"If you guys don't wish for it, then escape while you have the time." Xue Tiandou coldly smiled.

Wang Zhong and Mo Yu exchanged a glance, before they abruptly gritted their teeth. They were already at this point of time and there was no way they could give up. Mu Chen and his group had quite a bit of treasures. If they defeated them, they would be able to recover their loss through their harvest.

"Risk it all!"

The two people said ruthlessly.

Boom!

The three Divine Wood Guards shot out once again. However, there were light runes appearing on their colossal figures at this moment as the light runes filled their bodies. As light was being emitted, ramapant Spiritual Energy ripples swept out as if they were volcanos that were about to erupt.

The faces of everyone abruptly changed at this moment.

"Those three insane fellows are going to explode the Divine Wood Guards?!" A voice involuntarily exclaimed.

Those were First Grade Spirit Disaster Divine Wood Guards. If they exploded, how frightening would that might be?

The faces of Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan slightly changed. If they faced such a situation normally, all they had to do was avoid. But Mu Chen was behind them, the instant they avoided those explosions, Mu Chen's plan would instantly fail...

Luo Li tightly gripped her Luo God Sword as veins surfaced on her arm.

"Bastards, let's not care anymore. I'll deal with them!" Wen Qingxuan clenched her teeth. Right now, there wasn't any more time to wait. Despite the fact that she did not wish to reveal her hidden cards, there was no longer a choice at this point of time.

"Wait."

However, just when she could not endure it anymore, Luo Li suddenly extended her hands and obstructed her.

At this moment, Mu Chen, who was seated on the space behind them, finally opened his eyes.

Chapter 546: Might of the Lesser Thousand Sword Spiritual Array

The three Divine Wood Guards were emitting dazzling light as the ripples around them became extremely wild. At the rear of those three, Xue Tiandou and his party were eyeing the girls like prey and Mu Chen's tightly shut eyes were finally slowly opening at this instant.

A chill flashed through his pair of black pupils.

"That Mu Chen has finally opened his eyes, his finishing move is already prepared?" Some gazes shot over from the surroundings of the plaza. Amongst those gazes, the majority was filled with doubt.

Although they could sense how powerful the Spiritual Array was from Mu Chen's surroundings, there werw three Divine Wood Guards charging at him with the intention of exploding. Those three were comparable to three First Grade Spirit Disasters!

"This fellow is indeed a Spiritual Array Master." Wu Yingying looked at that figure as she clenched her teeth. However, there was a little shock in her heart. Mu Chen's strength had already been revealed when he fought with Xue Tiandou earlier. But who could have expected that he also had the hidden identity of Spiritual Array Master.

Wu Yingying had no choice but to feel a little admiration for that fellow. No wonder that fellow's name was widely spread in the Spiritual Road to the point that even her elder brother, Wu Ling, had high opinions of him.

"However, can this Spiritual Array really deal with the situation before him?" Wu Yingying shifted her gaze towards the three Divine Wood Guards that were about to explode as graveness filled her face.

Not far away, despite the fact that the faces of Xue Tiandou, Wang Zhong and Mo Yu were a little dark, they still coldly swept a glance at Mu Chen as sneers were contained in their eyes. They had already paid the price of exploding three Divine Wood Guards in the current situation. That power was not something that Mu Chen and his party could handle

with any methods.

"I'll see how you will overturn this situation." Xue Tiandou coldly smiled as he looked at Mu Chen.

Shhhuuu.

Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan quickly retreated as they appeared at the sides of Mu Chen. Their faces were filled with solemn as they looked before them, before asking towards Mu Chen, "Do you have the confidence? If not, we'll avoid it and deal with them later."

"No need for that."

My Cgen lightly shook his head. Although his voice wasn't loud, it contained a trace of resolution.

"I'll go next, you guys stay beind me." Mu Chen stood up as he took a step forth, standing in front of the two girls.

Looking at the slender silhouette of that youth, Luo Li lightly smiled. Wen Qingxuan, however, cast her rosy lips aside as she looked unhappy. She did not need anyone to protect her, since she could deal with all these problems herself.

However, staring at that silhouette that wasn't broad but gave her a sense of security, she did not speak and only issued a soft snort, before directing her gaze elsewhere. She'd let this fellow be in the limelight. Later, when he could no longer handle the situation, she would act and let that fellow talk to her with respect next time.

Imagining it, Wen Qingxuan's lips could not help rising.

Mu Chen was unaware of the two girl's thoughts as he indifferently looked at the incoming three Divine Wood Guards. The Spiritual Energy ripples in their bodies had already reached a frightening degree. The feeling that those three gave him was similar to volcanos that were about to erupt.

He indifferently glanced at Xue Tiandou's party that wasn't far away. He did not speak as he formed some seals with a single hand and the gigantic

Spiritual Array started to move.

Boom!

The colossal Spiritual Array burst forth with dazzling light. At the same time as those countless lights ntertwined, the Spiritual Energy in this region started to turn rampant as it frantically gathered together.

Huuuuu. Huuuuuuuuuu.

A powerful wind whistled as Spiritual Energy tornados could be seen taking form within the Spiritual Array. The swaying appearances seemed like huge dragons twisting about.

Everyone could sense the commotion coming from the Spiritual Array as their faces changed. Even Wen Qingxuan's charming eyes froze. Although she previously felt that the Spiritual Array that Mu Chen was creating wasn't a simple one, she did not expect it to have such power.

"Is that a Combination Diagram?"

Astonishment flashed through Wen Qingxuan's eyes. It was the Combination Diagram that caused their points to fall from being in first place. She had paid the highest price for this Combination Diagram and, clearly, she knew a portion of the Combination Diagram's worth when she paid that sort of price.

She knew that Mu Chen was a Spiritual Array Master. However, when she bought that Diagram for Mu Chen back then, she did not expect Mu Chen to be able to create it. After all, this Rank 5 Combination Diagram was something that was close to a Rank 6 Spiritual Array. Thus, it was difficult for Rank 5 Spiritual Array Masters to create it.

Spiritual Energy tornadoes formed in the Spiritual Array and, in the next instant, the tornadoes started to split apart as tornadoes of various size started to revolve at rapid speeds.

Buzz. Buzz.

Buzzing sounds that were caused from the Spiritual Energy tornadoes rapidly spinning resounded in this region as ripples appeared around the

space of the Spiritual Array.

Rumble.

The three Divine Wood Guards had already charged over.

Every single gaze was focused on Mu Chen's slender finger as it tapped down on the sky.

A sword ringing resounded as Spiritual Energy swords started to take form in the rapidly spinning tornadoes. Those swords did not have any physical forms, since they were all formed from the compressed boundless Spiritual Energy. The bodies of the swords trembled as they emitted fearsome Sword Aura.

The Sword Auras were extremely sharp as they even made the faces of Xue Tiandou's group change as they felt the sharpness harbored in the Sword Auras. Although the Sword Auras were incomparable to the slash that Luo Li had unleashed earlier, the amount of swords in the Spiritual Array had already reached hundreds.

This formation was something that could make the scalp of one tingle.

Facing this scene, even the faces of Wu Yingying and the rest could not help changing as a dumbstruck look appeared in their eyes.

"Lesser Thousand Sword Spiritual Array."

Mu Chen's indifferent voice resounded as the wind spread.

Buzz!

A few hundred Spiritual Energy swords whistled out as they became like raindrops shooting out from the Spiritual Array, along with Spiritual Energy tornadoes. All the Spiritual Energy in this region was being shaken by it.

The Sword Aura left deep marks on the ground below.

Rustle! Rustle!

The few hundred swords turned into streaks of light as they instantly clashed against the three colossal figures.

An earth-shattering explosion resounded.

Three dazzling lumps of light statred to expand at this instant, along with some fearsome impacts.

Shhhhhhuu! Sssssssshhh! Suuuuuuu!

However, the three lumps of light did not manage to expand as the hundreds of swords pierced through the lumps of light, along with the sharpest edge. They shredded the terrifying lumps of light into pieces.

Everyone was dumbfounded as they watched the Spiritual Energy lumps of light being shredded to pieces as they sensed the Spiritual Energy ripples within those lumps of light becoming weaker and weaker at a fearsome rate.

Before the explosions of the Divine Wood Guards were unleashed, they were already torn to pieces.

The faces of Xue Tiandou and his party turned extremely ugly as smears of astonishment surged from their eyes.

Shhhhhhuuu!

Especially when they saw that after tearing the lumps of light apart, there were still nearly a hundred swords remaining, their faces turned pale. In the next instant, they did not have any hesitation as they ran. All of their Spiritual Energy rippled to the limit as they flew away at lightning speed.

The power of a Combination Diagram had far surpassed their imaginations.

Mu Chen's gaze was indifferent as he looked at their figures. He made a flicking actions with his finger as the hundred swords chased after his targets at a terrifying speed.

The speed of those swords was extremely fast and, in a few breath's time, they had already caught up to Xue Tiandou's party. Sword lights streaked past as they brought blood along with miserable shrieks.

Plop.

Xue Tiandou's back was filled with sword wounds as his clothes were torn apart. He was in a terrible state with his face turni byg pale as he spurted a mouthful of blood. Both of his hands formed seals as a blood light flickered. Then, his speed increased as he turned into a bloody light, before he escaped in fear.

Wang Zhong and Mo Yu's group ran in separate directions. They were also spurting out blood essences. Even if it might leave behind some repercussions, they could not be bothered about it as they felt Mu Chen's intent to kill them. Although it would be a little troublesome if one was to kill in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, it was not absolute.

Everyone was dumbfounded as they looked at the horizon. Xue Tiandou's party, who was holding the upper hands earlier, was in such a situation now as their sorry-looking figures became pitiful.

However, those pitiful figures rapidly disappeared into the horizon. Splashes of blood could still be seen as they fled. Clearly, in order to escape, they had paid quite the deep price.

Mu Chen still maintained his indifference as he looked at those escaped figures. After a while later, he made a grab with his hand. Dozens of swords flew back, along with Spiritual Energy tornadoes appearing before him. There were three green wooden plaques on three of the swords, they were the Divine Wood Plaques.

Mu Chen waved his sleeves as he stored the three Divine Wood Plaques. Thereafter, paleness rose on his face. The Spiritual Energy swords also started to sway as they crumbled. At the same time, the huge Combination Diagram exploded as it made rumbling sounds.

Mu Chen wiped the smear of blood on the corner of his lips as he helplessly cast his lips. The Combination Diagram was incomparable to an ordinary Rank 5 Spiritual Array. Even in his Heart's Eye state, he could only forcefully create it.

But, fortunately, he had already achieved his goals.

Mu Chen held onto the three Divine Wood Plaques as he smiled. Although there was paleness on his face, no one dared to target him in

this plaza.

The terrifying Spiritual Array earlier had been engraved in their hearts.

Chapter 547: Collecting all the Divine Wood Plaque

The originally rampant Spiritual Energies present within the region finally dissipated completely away as the azure-blue skies regained its peacefulness once again.

Shock and terror hung on the faces of everyone present in the surroundings as they blankly stared at the slender youth present in the air, while dense feelings of dread flashed within their eyes. The might of the Spiritual Array arranged by Mu Chen was truly too powerful!

No one might have expected such an outcome. Mu Chen, who appeared to have a cultivation of no more than Human Body Disaster, was unexpectedly concealing such a formidable trump card. With one single move, he had turned the situation completely around.

Under the frightening Spiritual Array, the domineering attitudes coming from Xue Tiandou and the others had been obliterated from the face of the earth.

A few people started to quietly sigh. Originally, they were planning on waiting for both Mu Chen and Xue Tiandou to get mutually injured before attempting to obtain some benefits. However, from the looks of the current situation, it's best to retract and restrain such thoughts. Although Mu Chen appeared to have consumed much of his strength, there was still Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan protecting him. All of them were extremely clear of the strength the two girls possessed.

None of those three were easy to deal with. Thus, it's best to not provoke them.

In the air, a pale shade was present on Mu Chen's face as his body slowly descended, with Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan following behind him.

Mu Chen swept his gaze around. As he did so, anyone that crossed gazes with him would involuntarily turn their eyes away. Even though they knew that Mu Chen had expended much of his strength, the fear and dread they

had towards him had become even deep than before.

"Everyone. Since all of the treasures here have found their new owners, does everyone still want to remain here?" said Mu Chen with a faint smile.

Hearing that, quite a few groups exchanged glances with each other, before letting out dry laughs. In the next moment, a few people turned around and walked away. Indeed, all of the treasures here already had new owners. Regardless of their unwillingness, they were unable to change the results. Therefore, it's best to leave as early as possible. As for their journey in this remnant of the Divine Wood Palace, it should also come to an end.

As more and more groups left, the plaza started to gradually grow empty.

Crossing her hands before her chest, Wu Yingying shot a cold look at Mu Chen, before turning around and leaving.

"Wait." However, just as she had turned around, Mu Chen suddenly spoke out.

"What's the matter? Could it be that you still want snatch away the Spiritual Item in my hand?" snapped Wu Yingying with a snort as she flung her rosy lips aside.

Hearing that, Mu Chen gave an embarrassed laugh, before scratching his head and replied. "I want to make a deal with you."

"Not interested!" Wu Yingying rejected in a beat.

Seeing her snappy reply, Mu Chen gave a bitter laugh. Originally, he had assumed that Wu Yingying would have a somewhat favorable impression of him, since she had not collaborated with Wang Zhong and the others to deal with him. However, he never expected her to not even give him any face in her reply.

"Mu Chen doesn't have any intention of making things difficult for you, Miss Wu. There's no harm for you to listen to the deal he is trying to tell you about. If you're really not interested, we'll not obstruct you at all. What do you say?" While Mu Chen was feeling helpless, Luo Li, who was

beside him, gave a faint smile as she said in a warm and gentle voice.

Only after hearing Luo Li's words did Wu Yingying turn her head around. Sweeping her beautiful eyes towards the former, a slightly complicated feeling appeared within the depths of her eyes. Even she felt slightly ashamed about herself in the presence of Luo Li's appearance and temperament. She truly didn't know why a girl as outstanding as her would take a fancy for such a pervert.

"Speak, then." Shooting a complicated look at Mu Chen and Luo Li, Wu Yingying finally gave her reply in a cold and indifferent tone.

"From the looks of it, this remnant of the Divine Wood Palace can be considered to have been completely explored. I believe that the Divine Wood Plaque might not have any other use for you. Therefore, is it possible for you to trade it with me?" said Mu Chen. Of the six Divine Wood Plaques, he had already obtain four of them, with only two left for him to complete the set.

"Divine Wood Plaque?" Hearing Mu Chen's words, Wu Yingying instantly gawked, before slightly knitting her eyebrows. Shooting a suspicious look at Mu Chen, she asked, "Earlier, you've already snatched the Divine Wood Plaques from the hands of Xue Tiandou and his gang. Why do you still need the one in my hands?"

Wu Yingying clearly wasn't stupid, but extremely bright and intelligent. With Mu Chen suddenly gathering the Divine Wood Plaques, it had undoubtedly caused some suspicion to rise within her.

"I've somewhat obtained a Successor status from that Spiritual Treasure Mountain earlier. Therefore, if I manage to obtain all six Divine Wood Plaques, I should be able to obtain some benefits," replied Mu Chen after some slight hesitation. In the end, he did not choose to lie and told her the truth.

"Oh?" Hearing that, Wu Yingying's eyes instantly contracted. In the next instant, an ambiguous smile appeared on her pretty face as she looked towards Mu Chen and said, "Are you not afraid that I'll become interested in the Divine Wood Plaques, making it even harder for you to obtain

mine?"

"You've helped me a few times already. Although you might not admit it, I've always treated you as a friend. Therefore, I didn't want to lie to you," replied Mu Chen as he shrugged his shoulders. "If I were to lose such a benefit, I might feel some heart pain over it. However, it's not something that I need to obtain no matter what."

"Friend? Hmph. I can't shoulder that burden," snorted Wu Yingying with a stiff expression on her face. Nevertheless, some of the chilling intent originally present within the beautiful eyes of the young girl had quietly dissipated away.

"If you're willing, I can use ten drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid to exchange for the Divine Wood Plaque in your hands. What do you say?" said Mu Chen in a soft voice. Ten drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid was already a rather high price for it. It may be assumed that anyone would be hard pressed to reject his trade. After all, at this moment, the Divine Wood Plaque had already lost its use. There's no use in leaving something worthless in one's hands.

However, she went against Mu Chen's expectations. Flinging her rosy lips aside in disdain, Wu Yingying replied, "Ten drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid? What a huge sum."

Seeing her response, Mu Chen's heart started to ache, before helplessly saying, "What do I have to do for you to accept this trade?"

"I don't want your Sovereign Spiritual Liquid," replied Wu Yingying. Clenching her hand, an exquisite-looking Divine Wood Plaque appeared. Playing around with it, she shot a look towards Mu Chen with her pretty eyes, before speaking with an ambiguous smile, "I'll even gift this Divine Wood Plaque to you. However, that way, you will now owe me a favor."

Hearing that, Mu Chen instantly gawked, before rubbing his nose with a bitter smile. Indeed, women were creatures that weren't easy to deal with. The hardest thing to trade around in this universe would be favors.

"Exactly what you want me to do?"

"I've yet to decide on it,"replied Wu Yingying with a grin, her crescent moon-like eyes glistening with the craftiness of a fox.

Seeing this, Mu Chen turned speechless. At this moment, the only thing he could do was to nod his head and say, "As long as you're not asking to be stripped naked, I'll treat it as me owing you a favor."

Wu Yingying's lovable face instantly turned beet-red in response to Mu Chen's words. Staring at Mu Chen with incomparable resentment and embarrassment, creaking sounds rang out from her clenched teeth, before she fiercely tossed the Divine Wood Plaque towards him. This bastard, pervert!

"I'll remember this!"

After shooting a vicious reply, Wu Yingying rapidly turned around and fled.

Grasping the Divine Wood Plaque, Mu Chen looked at the lovable figure of Wu Yingying in the distance, before bursting out in laughter.

"Is it fun to tease a girl?" Unable to bear it, Luo Li shot a glare at Mu Chen as she said in an annoyed tone.

"Tsk, tsk. I really am unable to tell. It turns out that Captain Mu Chen's a veteran in picking flowers, huh." Wishing for the whole world to be in chaos, Wen Qingxuan said with a sweet smile.

Being stared at by the the two girls, cold sweat started to seep out from Mu Chen's back. With the only thing he could do being to cough dryly. In the next instant, his gaze suddenly turned around, before locking onto the crowd of people from the Four Sea Spiritual Academies that were about to leave this region.

"Haha, please hold on, friends."

A smile appeared once again on Mu Chen's handsome face as he quickly strode over towards the group from the Four Sea Spiritual Academies.

Towards this group from the Four Sea Spiritual Academies, Mu Chen wasn't as polite as he was towards Wu Yingying, anf immediately took out

five drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid to exchange for the Divine Wood Plaque in their hands. The people from the Four Sea Spiritual Academies also felt suspicious towards Mu Chen's fancy for their Divine Wood Plaque. Nevertheless, they still nodded their heads and agreed, in the end. After all, being in the presence of the latter, they had no choice but to lower their heads. Mu Chen's lineup wasn't something they could contend against with their group of people. Furthermore, he had taken out five drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid, which really moved their hearts in excitement. All of them were extremely clear about the value of the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid.

Therefore, after a somewhat friendly exchange, Mu Chen managed to obtain the last Divine Wood Plaque without a hitch. After obtaining the five drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid in delight, the Four Sea Spiritual Academies group rapidly took off and left.

Thereafter, the entire plaza quickly became quiet and peaceful, not one bit like the liveliness just a while ago.

Hu.

With all six of the Divine Wood Plaques in his hands, Mu Chen gave a huge sigh of relief, as if a heavy load had been shifted off his shoulders. Although he really wanted to immediately assemble the six Divine Wood Plaques together to see exactly what benefit he would get, this wasn't the right place to do so. After deeply pondering for a slight bit, he looked towards Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan before saying, "Let's leave this place, too. The journey of this Divine Wood Palace should be, more or less, complete."

Hearing that, Luo Li nodded her head.

"What are you guys planning to do after this?" Suddenly, Wen Qingxuan asked.

"We'll go into secluded training," replied Mu Chen after a thought. He could feel the arrival of his Spiritual Energy Disaster. Furthermore, after this isolation, they should be able to let Xu Huang and the other two smoothly pass through their Spiritual Energy Disasters, which would

result in an increase in strength of their group once again.

"Then, it's about time that we go on seperate paths," said Wen Qingxuan with a smile. "As of now, the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament should be about to entire its final phase. The various large and small remnants on this shattered continent should have already been searched by the people present. Also, those powerful groups hiding in the dark will appear in succession in the following period of time... when that happens, the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament will have already entered its most lively phase of time."

Hearing that, Mu Chen gently nodded his head. At the starting of the Tournament, all of the powerful groups were all concealing their strengths and biding their time as they secretly searched for remnants to promote the strength of their groups. As of now, with the end of the search about to arrive, what's next should be the display of their true strength, and the period of time to start snatching points.

Clearly, this would result in intense battles that would involve everyone in this shattered continent.

That's because the number of groups that could enter the final match was a measly eight, a number that could be counted with one's fingers. For the sake of obtaining one of those eight quotas, every group present here would risk their lives for it.

In the past, they had given up on points for the sake of raising their strength. However, as of now... they would start contesting for points. If those groups that had filled themselves full of points possess insufficient strength to protect themselves, their ending would undoubtedly be the sacrificial lambs for others.

"You guys try to come out as fast as possible. If not, you all might not even be able to enter the decisive battle for the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament. If that happens, being the Captain, you would really be humiliated," said Wen Qingxuan with a clench of her hand. Slightly raising her red lips, she continued speaking in a haughty manner. "As for me, I'm going to continue taking action. The numero uno on the point

rankings has been snatched away by Ji Xuan. I won't let that numero uno place slip out of my hands."

Hearing that, Mu Chen slightly nodded his head. Ever since Wen Qingxuan's group had fallen off from the numero uno place, the group that had continued to maintain the numero uno place was the one led by Ji Xuan.

Raising his head, Mu Chen looked towards the distant skies. At this moment, his handsome face appeared exceedingly calm. He had a premonition that, not long from now, he would have a formal meeting with Ji Xuan...

That moment was something worth anticipating for.

Chapter 548: Separation

Outside of the Divine Wood Mountain.

Following the ending of the journey in the remnant of the Divine Wood Mountain, the teeming atmosphere dissipated away at an astonishing pace. Of the seas of people present a few days ago, one would only see figures shooting across from time-to-time, with the absence of the clamoring that was incessantly ringing before.

On a desolated mountain peak outside of the Divine Wood Mountain, Mu Chen looked towards Wen Qingxuan and the other girls of her group standing before him. Sending a sweet smile towards him and Luo Li, she said, "Okay. Since the search within the remnant of the Divine Wood Palace has ended, our collaboration has come to a temporary end."

Hearing that, Mu Chen smacked his lips. Looking towards the absolutely beautiful face with a sweet smile present on it, he felt somewhat unwilling to let her go. That's because he knew that with Wen Qingxuan's departure, the strength of his lineup would instantly drop by almost half.

"That's a pity... so many good henchmen," said Mu Chen with a sigh.

"Huh?" Hearing his sigh, the grin on Wen Qingxuan's face instantly grew stiff. Taking a step forward, her jade-like hand grabbed onto Mu Chen's robe. Appearing like an enraged mother tiger, she clenched her teeth and growled, "Mu Chen, are you seeking death?"

"Oh... my mistake. Such good compatriots," replied Mu Chen with a cough.

Hearing Mu Chen's words, Wen Qingxuan gave a cold snort, before shooting a vicious glare towards him. After collaborating with this fellow, she truly didn't know how many times she had gotten mad due to him.

"If not for Luo Li, who would be willing to collaborate with a pervert like you!" What she said wasn't false. During the very beginning. It was she who had searched for Mu Chen and his group, with the only reason being that she wanted to see Luo Li. As for Mu Chen, although she had a sliver

of interest towards the fame and reputation of the Spiritual Road's Blood Calamity, Mu Chen, compared to Luo Li, it was clearly insignificant.

However, as their collaboration grew deeper, Wen Qingxuan's view had gradually changed. That's because she was able to experience the power and strength that Mu Chen had concealed. Being able to obtain the fancy of Luo Li showed that this fellow truly had an outstanding aspect to him. However, Wen Qingxuan would absolutely not say that out loud, as this would only allow for Mu Chen to feel additional satisfaction.

"Can you not do that." Hearing that way of address from Wen Qingxuan, an ache appeared in Mu Chen's head. While speaking to Wu Yingying earlier, he really did have a slight mindset to tease her. However, he had not one single bit of that towards Wen Qingxuan. That's because he was extremely clear on how haughty and arrogant this girl before him was. If he had provoked and teased her for no apparent reason, Wen Qingxuan would show not one bit of hesitation to put him in order.

"Luo Li, anytime you ever snap out of this, you can just just kick this fellow away and enter our group. As for the other problems, I'll always help you settle them," said Wen Qingxuan as she looked towards Luo Li.

Shooting a look at Mu Chen, Luo Li gave a mischievous reply, "Okay. Anytime he offends me, I'll make sure to kick him away."

Hearing that, Mu Chen felt extremely helpless. From the looks of it, he truly cannot allow Wen Qingxuan anymore contact with Luo Li. Such a good girl like Luo Li had almost been turned bad by the former.

As the two girls chatted and laughed, Wen Qingxuan looked towards the sky, before turning around and looked towards Mu Chen while saying, "You guys better make good use of your isolation and increase your strength as much as possible in this period of time. You should be extremely clear about how intense the following period of time in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament will become. Don't regret it if you are unable to enter the final match."

Nodding his head, Mu Chen replied, "Relax. I still owe you the first place. I'll help you once I come out from our isolation."

"Tsk, who needs your help," said Wen Qingxuan in disdain. Waving her hands, she continued saying, "Okay, its time to part. When you guys come out of your isolation, I'll have already regained the numero uno place."

As her voice rang out, the young girl proceeded to turn around, her long black hair fluttering about as she did so. WIthout the slightest bit of hesitation, her soul-stirring figure shot straight out, with her elegant back figure appearing exceedingly free and unrestrained.

"Bye, Big Brother Mu Chen."

Pin'er, Le'er and the other girls sent charming smiles towards Mu Chen, before rapidly leaving to follow behind Wen Qingxuan.

Standing on the mountain top, Mu Chen looked toward the distant figures of Wen Qingxuan and her group, before a faint smile appeared involuntarily on his face as he muttered, "The final phase of the Great Spiritual Academy is finally going to arrive..."

Following the progress of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, the absolute majority of the groups had made gargantuan changes to their strengths. A few of those groups that were exceedingly ordinary at the start might have gotten some change in destiny on the way, causing them to become strong and powerful. There were even some already strong and powerful groups that had grown even stronger as they concealed their strength and bided their time.

Those groups did not reveal themselves and their genuine strength at the beginning of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, with their main focus being to search for remnants and destiny changing opportunities. Only at the final phase would they reveal themselves in succession. At that time, there will truly be battles between tigers and dragons.

Wanting to break out from the hundreds and thousands of elite groups to obtain one of the top 8 places clearly wasn't an easy task to accomplish.

"Let us prepare for close up training. Perhaps, this will be the final chance for us to close up in this Great Spiritual Academy."said Mu Chen towards Xu Huang and the others.

Hearing that, solemn expressions appeared on the faces of Xu Huang and the others as they nodded their heads. This was indeed the last opportunity they had to close up, as there would be no one that would give them a quiet period of time to close up in the final phase of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament.

"I don't know how Shen Cangsheng and the other group are doing now."muttered Mu Chen. Ever since the start of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, they had seemingly not received any information or news about Shen Cangsheng and his group. These fellows appeared to have disappeared entirely from the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament all together.

"Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong aren't simple. Both of them possess astonishing talent. As long as their luck isn't too bad, I think that nothing would happen to them."replied Luo Li in a soft voice.

Hearing that, Mu Chen nodded his head. Indeed, both Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong are exceedingly outstanding, with them not being any weaker than Wang Zhong and people of similar strength to him.

After laying down this though, Mu Chen waved his hand, taking the lead as he shot towards the depths of the mountain, with Luo Li, Xu Huang and the others rapidly following suit.

In the depths of the mountain, Mu Chen and the others found a remote location before heading out to find a mountain peak each to become their training location.

Mu Chen and Luo Li landed on the same mountain, with a waterfall flowing down like a silvery river at the back of it. The rumbling sounds of the water falling down resounded across the mountain, while the moist air caused the minds of people to shake.

Landing on a green rock beside the waterfall, Mu Chen raised his head and took a deep breath of the moist, water laden air. The icy coldness within causing his mind to feel increasingly refreshed.

With a slight fastidiousness to cleanliness, Luo Li gave a gentle wave of her sleeve, sweeping away the dust present on the green rock, before

carefully sitting down.

Seeing the elegant and graceful figure of the young girl, a cheeky smile appeared on Mu Chen's face, before lunging over. A gentle cry of shock rang out from the young girl's mouth as Mu Chen immediately pushing her down on the green stone, while pressing the young girl's exceedingly soft body behind his.

"What are you doing." a faint pinkish shade appeared on Luo Li's lovable face, with her jade like hands crossing reservely across her chest, as she shot a rebuking look towards the handsome face just inches away from her.

"It's hard for us to be alone. Those fellows aren't even one bit conscientious, especially Wen Qingxuan. She really itching to remove you far far away from my side." replied Mu Chen as he flung his mouth aside. Proceeding to look teasingly at Luo Li, he said, "However, never did I imagine that our little Luo Li would have such great charm to the point that even girls would want to eat her up."

Mu Chen gave a cheeky smile as he neared Luo Li's ear and muttered those words.

Hearing his words, Luo Li's lovable face instantly turned beet red, while an embarrassed shade appeared within her clear, limpid eyes. With a blush, she spoke out, "What nonsense are you talking about. Wen Qingxuan's also a girl...how's that possible, how's that possible..."

"Everyone within the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy are girls, with not even a male in sight. Things like that are a extremely common occurrence at there." on the contrary, Mu Chen was not one bit surprised by that. With a grin, he looked towards Luo Li and said. "However, you better not run off with her!"

Luo Li shot annoyed glare at Mu Chen. Unable to bear it, she raised her head and gave a fierce bite at Mu Chen's neck.

Nevertheless, her bite was light causing an involuntary shudder from Mu Chen. Is this little spirit enticing him?

Quickly, Luo Li discovered how inappropriate her actions were, causing her to hastily release Mu Chen. After struggling slightly for a bit, she spoke in embarrassment, "Release me."

A sliver of a scorching hot shade flashed within Mu Chen's eyes. Staring at the porcelain square face of the young girl before him, he extended a finger out and raised the exquisitely beautiful face of the young girl This caused her to raise her eyes slightly to look straight at him, before he buried his face straight down.

Luo Li's soft body instantly froze up. Raising her head slightly, a sliver of fluster appeared within her eyes due to the slightly humiliating and suppressed state she was in. After struggling for a bit, she discovered that the youth before her had not moved an inch. Thus she could only close her beautiful eyes and allow for this bad fellow that had seized her heart to obtain his spoils.

After tasting

As the water drops flew out from the waterfall, they form a mist that perfused out. Yet, little rays of springtime and surfaced by the side of the lake.

Finally, Luo Li had still pushed Mu Chen away in the end after him starting to get more and more excessive. This fellow's hand was not one bit conscientious. Therefore, shooting a resentful glare at him, she clenched her hand, causing the Luo Shen Sword beside her to emit a humming sound.

Hearing that Mu Chen hastily pulled his hand back. Clearly, if he was to going to push it abit more, Luo Li would use the Luo Shen Sword to poke him.

Extending his hand outs, Mu Chen grabbed on to the slender jade like hands of Luo Li. After struggling reservedly for a bit, the young girl gave up and let him do as he pleased.

"Luo Li, will you be heading back to the Luo God Clan after the end of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament?" said Mu Chen all of sudden as he looked towards the young girl beneath him.

A faint shiver shook through Luo Li's alluring figure as she shoot a somewhat unnatural look towards Mu Chen, before nodding her head gently. After this parting, god know when would they ever be able to see each other again.

Taking a deep breath, Mu Chen slowly nodded her head and said, "Do you still remember the words I've said before to you?"

Luo Li nodded her head once more. The youth had said before, that when they met again, he would have become an unrivaled powerhouse, being able to shield her from any difficult or dangerous situations that wanted to harm her by standing before her.

"Regardless of anything, you have to wait for me." said Mu Chen in a deep voice as he held the young girl deeply within his embrace.

Regardless of how arduous and difficult the journey to become an unrivalled powerhouse was, I will always push forward and will flip the earth and shake the heavens for you.

Hearing that, Luo Li gave a light nod, her beautiful eyes turning slightly red. At this moment, an arc started to curl up from her ruddy lips, causing her beauty to elevate to a soul stirring level.

Regardless of whether you will become an unrivalled powerhouse or not, I'll always wait for you.

Chapter 549: Divine Wood Scripture

By the side of the waterfall.

Mu Chen sat on top of a green rock, with Luo Li present near the waterfall not far away. At this moment, she had quietly closed her eyes, clearly gradually entering a training state.

Shooting a look at Luo Li's beautiful figure, Mu Chen started to steady his mind. As of now, with time being that precious, he needed to grasp all the time he could to further increase his strength. If not, as the most intense period of time for the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament arrives, wanting to rise to the top would not a simple task to accomplish.

After all, there were many crouching tigers and hidden dragons present within this Great Spiritual Academy Tournament.

As a shadow of deep pondering appeared within Mu Chen's eyes, he clenched his hand, only for some spiritual light to sparkle. In the next instant, the six Divine Wood Plaques appeared before him. As a green light shone from them, verdant life force started to perfuse from them.

With a casual grab towards Divine Wood Plaques, Mu Chen closed his eyes while extending his senses to them, before flinging his mouth aside in disappointment. That's because he felt that those Divine Wood Plaques were empty within, with the learning method of those Lesser Divine Arts included. Clearly, the Lesser Divine Arts imprinted within those Divine Wood Plaques could only be sensed by a single person. Once they were learnt, the imprints within would disappear.

That's why it wasn't difficult for Mu Chen to obtain the Divine Wood Plaques from the hands of Wu Yingying and the Four Sea Spiritual Academies. It turned out that the majority of the value present in them had already been used up.

Nevertheless, despite that little bit of disappointment, it was still considered to be within Mu Chen's expectations. After all, he had collected these six Divine Wood Plaques not for the sake of obtaining those Lesser Divine Arts imprinted within them.

An ancient tree symbol slowly surfaced on Mu Chen's forehead. A weak green light radiated from it, slowly spreading out, before finally enveloping the Divine Wood Plaques before Mu Chen.

Humm. Humm.

At this moment, the six Divine Wood Plaques started to faintly vibrate, while the green light radiating from them grew in density. After an instant, upon reaching their maximum brightness, Mu Chen discovered that the six Divine Wood Plaques were actually starting to slowly merge together.

Drop after drop of green liquid appeared, before floating in the air. Within a short span of half a minute, the six Divine Wood Plaques had completely merged together, transforming into a large clump of churning green liquid. The surface of the liquid appeared to form multiple layers, just like the bark of an ancient tree.

At this moment, the tree symbol on Mu Chen's forehead grew increasingly radiant. In the next instant, a green beam of light suddenly shot out, shooting straight towards the clump of greenish liquid before him.

Buzzz

Zapping sounds rang from within the liquid, before Mu Chen noticed that the centre-most location within the clump of liquid had actually turned solid. Faintly, it had started to transform into what appeared to be a green-coloured tree bark that was approximately the size of a palm. Exceedingly ancient fluctuations started to radiate from the tree bark, appearing to be brimming with life.

Following the appearance of the ancient tree bark, the tree symbol on Mu Chen's forehead started to slowly disappear, before completely dissipating away.

As Mu Chen extended his finger out, the greenish liquid split apart, while the green-coloured tree bark dropped, finally landing within his palm.

Mu Chen curiously sized up the ancient green-coloured tree bark in his

hand. He was able to see dense ancient words sparkling on its surface, with every single word appearing exceedingly abstruse and mysterious.

"Is this the thing that's hidden within the Divine Wood Plaques?" muttered Mu Chen. In the next instant, a scorching-hot shadow surfaced within his eyes. With a furious clench of his hand, the green-coloured tree bark was tightly gripped within his palm.

Bang!

As a green lihht started to perfuse from his palm, it appeared to penetrate through his hand, before travelling at an astonishing speed towards Mu Chen's mind. At the same time, a low rumble was heard, appearing like an explosion going off within his mind.

Majestic and cryptic ancient information gushed out like a flood.

Green light continuously sparkled within Mu Chen's eyes, before finally slowly subsiding quite a while later. At that moment, an amazed and happy look surfaced on his face.

"Divine Wood Scripture..." muttered Mu Chen.

Present within the ancient information that had gushed into Mu Chen's mind were two portions of a Divine Art. One of them was known as the Divine Wood Scripture. Furthermore, what caused Mu Chen to feel shocked was that this portion of the Divine Wood Scripture had actually reached the realm of Greater Divine Art.

The Divine Arts were categorized into three levels, being Lesser Divine Art, Greater Divine Art and Perfected Divine Art.

Although there was just a word difference between the Lesser Divine Art to the Greater Divine Art, Mu Chen understood the disparity between the two, which was a genuine chasm. If a Lesser Divine Art moved the hearts of Sovereign realm experts, a Greater Divine Art would truly be able to pull the greed out from within them.

This Divine Wood Scripture was a truly genuine Greater Divine Art.

It's said that this Greater Divine Art was the fundamental technique that

led to the establishment of the Divine Wood Palace. Even within the Divine Wood Palace, only Elder-level figures would have the qualifications to learn and cultivate a Divine Art of such a realm.

This Divine Wood Scripture was exceedingly abstruse. Once one was able to successfully learn it, one would be able to absorb the energies with trees in a radius of ten thousand metres, with the determination of its strength being one's level of attainment towards the Divine Scripture. Naturally, there was also another important element, which was the terrain, or the surrounding environment.

If the user was in combat while in a forest, the might of the Divine Wood Scripture would shock and astonish people. Furthermore, the greater the number of extraordinary trees in one's surroundings, the more terrifying the might of the Divine Wood Scripture would be. However, if one was in a desert, or the sea, it wouldn't even possess the might of a Lesser Divine Art.

From the information that had gushed into his mind earlier, Mu Chen was able to know that the Divine Wood Palace had an Elder that had trained in the Divine Wood Scripture in the Ancient Antiquity. This Elder's cultivation had reached the realm of 5-Stage Sovereign Realm. While on an external mission, he had bumped into an opponent whose realm had reached that of a 7-Stage Sovereign Realm, with their place of battle being on top of a primary forest.

It just so happened that there was a small patch of Chinese Parasol Trees present there. This was a kind of spiritual tree which possessed rather pure Spiritual Energies within it.

Therefore, the ending was completely predictable. This 5th Grade Sovereign Elder immediately activated the Divine Wood Scripture, causing serious injuries to the 7-Stage Sovereign Realm opponent in a single attack to the point of him almost dying from it.

One could see from this how important a good environment for battle was for this Divine Wood Scripture.

"So formidable." Mu Chen could not help exclaiming in admiration,

before a helpless smile appeared on his face. Indeed, this Divine Wood Scripture was extremely formidable, but the requirements it had towards the combat environment was slightly harsh. After all, one would not always be able to bump into opponents in an environment that just so happened to have a vast forest. Without it, the might of the Divine Wood Scripture would be greatly diminished.

As for having spiritual trees in the surroundings... that was even more harsh.

This made Mu Chen feel slight regret. If not for the limitation it had towards the environment, this Divine Wood Scripture might very well be one of the most outstanding of all Great Divine Arts.

With some regret, Mu Chen continued to look towards the second part of the Divine Wood Scripture, which caused him to gawk.

The second part of the Divine Wood Scripture wasn't strong at all. On the contrary, it was extremely weak... that's because it's name was called Tree Planting Art. As its name implied, it was a Divine Art, and was used to plant trees. It didn't possess a single bit of offensive capabilities, with its only function being to plant tree seedlings, before letting them grow and mature at an astonishing speed.

A blank expression appeared on Mu Chen's face. Clearly, he didn't quite understand why there would be such a weird Divine Art that specializes in planting trees. Did it want people of cultivation to become farmers?

That's not right.

Mu Chen regained his calm. Being able to be placed together with an important Greater Divine Art like the Divine Wood Art, this Tree Planting Art's absolutely not some useless Divine Art...

Tree Planting Art... tree planting?

Mu Chen muttered, before his faced slightly changed, while a somewhat outlandish shadow gushed from within his eyes. Could this Tree Planting Art be specifically used in concert with the Divine Wood Scripture? The might of the Divine Wood Scripture was decided by the environment it

was used in, while the Tree Planting Art just so happened to be able to cause a vast forest to grow at an astonishing rate...

If one was to unleash this Tree Planting Art, before a fight, to grow trees, wouldn't one be able to possess the most perfect of environments?

Mu Chen's eyes abruptly lit up as he could not help clapping in excitement. This truly was perfect! The idea of this Senior from the Divine Wood Palace truly was unique, to actually be able to think of such a way to cover up the weakness of the Divine Wood Scripture. With the Tree Planting Art, one would be able to stabilise the might of the Divine Wood Scripture.

Furthermore, what's more important was that once it was able to gather the seedlings of a few spiritual trees and plant it down, wouldn't that make it even more terrifying?

Being exceedingly intelligent, Mu Chen was able to come up with quite a few detailed plans. With a few items, it would undoubtedly cause the Divine Wood Scripture to be much more powerful.

However... upon thinking that he would have to plant trees before fighting with people... the smile on Mu Chen's face started to turn slightly stiff. Wouldn't that be too weird...?

Mu Chen gave a bitter laugh in response, shaking his head before temporarily suppressing such thoughts. Although this action seemed slightly weird, as long as one was powerful enough, such details would be ignored.

"From the looks of it, I would have to comprehend this Divine Wood Scripture for a bit during my isolation training."

Mu Chen muttered. Learning a Divine Art of such a grade wouldn't be easy. However, the information that had gushed into his mind had contained the experiences of numerous Seniors of the Divine Wood Palace, allowing for the level of difficulty to drop by quite a bit. As for this Tree Planting Art, it was in fact not even considered as a Divine Art. At the very most, it could only be considered as a Middle Grade Divine Art. To Mu Chen, learning it simply wasn't difficult at all.

Taking a deep breath, Mu Chen suppressed the surging emotions within his heart, before slowly closing his eyes. Clapping his hands together, he gradually entered into a training state.

In the next period of time, not only did he want to break through his Spiritual Energy Disaster, he even wanted to seize the moment and successfully comprehend this Divine Wood Scripture.

Chapter 550: The Climax of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament

Time continued to elapse in an unhurried fashion, with the general situation of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament ramping up and growing increasingly fervent.

At this moment, the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament was ramping up to its final phase. Clearly, this was the phase where the fights and battles were at their most intense, with all of the elite groups that were biding and waiting for their time finally coming to the surface, completely exposing their dazzling brilliance to all.

That's because there was already no need for them to patiently hide during the day. What they wanted was to use all of their methods and ways available to them to obtain as many points as possible, before rushing towards the Top 8. Only by entering the Top 8 would they obtain the qualifications to enter the final match.

This would clearly become a rather cruel match of elimination.

The groups that were able to distinguish themselves and rise to the top would absolutely be outstanding, with them numbering in the hundreds, or even thousands. Wanting to fight and struggle for the Top 8 in such a situation with so many experts would definitely be a rather difficult task.

Yet, the matter was indeed headed this way.

Not long after Mu Chen and the rest had exited from their isolation training, the atmosphere within the entire Great Spiritual Academy Tournament had turned into a powderkeg that had been blown completely up by sparks and pressure coming from all directions. Everyone present could feel the rampant atmosphere perfusing within the air of the centre of the shattered continent, with ordinary groups not even daring to go near the centre region. As for those that dared, all of them possessed a rather high level of confidence towards themselves.

This region had already become the central point of the Great Spiritual

Academy Tournament.

As all those groups brimming with self-confidence gathered towards the central region of the shattered continent, massive battles naturally started to erupt without incident.

After a short span of a few days, the intense flames of battle had seemingly spread through every single inch of this vast region.

Fights and battles had seemingly sprung up at any given moment within this vast region, with each and every powerful group displaying various kinds of methods and techniques in their fights, causing boundless rampant Spiritual Energies to ripple throughout the heavens and earth.

Following the eruption of various intense battles and fights, those elite groups that were hidden in the dark and biding their time had started to quietly reveal their vicious fangs. Within the short span of a days, everyone was able to acutely sense the few unfamiliar and powerful groups that suddenly appeared, before defeating a few previously prominent groups. Finally, with a winner-takes-all stance, they would snatch away all of their hard-earned points...

A few of the previously prominent and strong groups were rapidly squashed. Despite all their efforts in resisting, what they received in the end was a painful sense of the disparity between them. Only at that moment did they start to feel regret. However, while they were continuously pursuing and snatching the points of those weak groups, these people were strolling around the various dangerous realms within the shattered continent, painstakingly searching and finding the chances of breakthroughs in the form of remnants. Under this tempering, their strength had increased time after time again, resulting in the them gradually pulling the disparity apart from those previously prominent and strong groups that were of similar levels of strength at the very beginning.

Therefore, within a short span of no more than two to three days, everyone had started to sense a huge change within the Top 16 on the tournament point rankings. Other than the extremely small number of groups that possessed powerful might, it seemed as if more than half of

those well-known strong groups have been cruelly ousted from the rankings. Clearly, all of them have already been defeated in battle.

As for the groups that replaced those well-known groups, they appeared rather foreign and unfamiliar to everyone's eyes, with the Spiritual Academies they came from being not ranked amongst the elite Spiritual Academies. There was even a group that came from a middle-tiered Spiritual Academy that would appear exceedingly unassuming when placed within the lineup of Spiritual Academies participating in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament.

Out of nothing, they had reached the 8th rank within a short span of three days. Furthermore, they had maintained that place from then till now, with no one still being able to kick them down from there. From this, one could see exactly how strong this group was.

In such a period of time, there would be earth-shattering changes present every day of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament.

Foreign and unfamiliar groups continued to gush endlessly like a stream, before sending challenges towards those powerful groups on the top rankings. Wave after wave, one leading after another. Only those that were able to remain undefeated after those unending waves of challenges would be able to obtain the qualifications to rule over their respective places on the rankings.

The vast central region had seemingly turned into an exceedingly cruel elimination ground. Whenever a group appeared full of spirit, there would always be another retreating away in a miserable fashion. If one wanted to climb all the way to the top in here, there was only one path that awaited them, which was to step on the heads of others and climb up, one step at a time.

Among the groups present here that numbered as much as the stars that twinkle in the night sky, there would merely be eight of them that were able to stand tall at the very end.

Furthermore, it was extremely obvious that these eight groups would definitely be the best of the best.

Time quietly elapsed by, with the competition for the Top 16 becoming increasingly intense as time flowed on. Every single day, it seemed as if there would always be movements and changes to the Top 16, with every single change representing the appearance of an even stronger group, thereby increasing the already difficult level of entry towards the Top 16.

At this moment, the Top 16 were undoubtedly worth even more than their weight in gold than before.

Within the Top 16, the first place was still lorded over by Saint Spiritual Academy's group led by Ji Xuan, with the second place being occupied by the Martial Spiritual Academy's group led by Wu Ling. As for the third place, it was held by a group with a captain possessing a familiar name, being Wen Qingxuan.

Within the short span of a few days, Wen Qingxuan had reveal her astonishing strength once again, defeating one group after another in a considerably overbearing fashion, before finally scaling into the third place in a queen-like fashion. Her beautiful gaze scanned her surroundings with a cold and haughty fashion akin to a graceful and arrogant phoenix, causing the hearts of others to be exceedingly moved, while the same level of dread surfaced from within.

The groups ranked after Wen Qingxuan's group all possessed well-renowned fame, as of now, within the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, with the level of strength causing absolutely no one to dare to underestimate them.

With the constant appearance of powerful groups, the changes within the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament had also appeared to happen exceedingly quick. As the previously prominent powerful groups get eliminated and wrecked one after another, those groups that were previously in the top places of the rankings started to get forgotten by the people. Even if they were mentioned, it would always be in disdain, accompanied by the flinging of mouths, with no more care taken when doing so.

Clearly, Mu Chen's group was also included among this list. Previously,

they had once risen into the Top 16 within the rankings. However, as of now, they had completely disappeared from it. Therefore, when people had remembered about this group that had suddenly risen from the bottom from nowhere, seemingly everyone had already forgotten about them. Clearly, everyone had already treated them as one of the members of the huge army of eliminated groups...

...

As time elapsed, with everyone within the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament becoming badly bruised in their struggle for the Top 16, boundless Spiritual Energies suddenly shot towards the skies from within a desolate area deep within the a mountainous region.

Within three mountain peaks, boundless Spiritual Energies rushed towards the skies, before three figures shot towards the air amidst long roars. Powerful Spiritual Energies rippled around their bodies akin to the surging of waves, appearing exceedingly tyrannical. These three figures were clearly, Xu Huang, Zhao Qingshan and Mu Fengyang, who had been in isolated training.

At this moment, unconcealable ecstacy covered the faces of the trio, as the Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiating from their bodies were numerous times more tyrannical than before their isolation training. Clearly, they had already managed to successfully break through their Spiritual Energy Disaster...

Exchanging glances in the air, smiles cracked open from their lips.

Bang!

As the trio were exchanging glances, an earth-shattering sound suddenly resounded from the mountain behind them. They turned their gazes over, only to see the gigantic waterfall present there had been unexpectedly severed. Present below it was a figure sitting quietly on a green stone, with black and white spiritual energies in harmony radiating from his body, forming what appeared to be a gigantic hundred-metre large Spiritual Energy barrier. It was precisely this Spiritual Energy barrier that had seemingly severed the waterfall in half...

Whoosh!

Suddenly, the barrier made from the fusion of black and white Spiritual Energies exploded, causing rampant Spiritual Energies, in the form of a hurricane, to sweep out, instantly causing a storm that whipped within the entire region.

As the hurricane swirled the lake like a storm, the figure sitting within slowly opened his eyes. The view within his black pupils appeared increasingly abstruse, like a scene akin to a starry sky.

Looking towards the storm that had blotted the skies, Mu Chen gave a gentle wave of his sleeve, causing the storm the instantly freeze, before condensing together.

With a shift of his body, Mu Chen appeared in the air. Sensing the vast and boundless Spiritual Energy present within his body, a faint smile surfaced at the corner of his mouth. After crossing his Spiritual Energy Disaster, the Spiritual Energy present within his body was numerous times more dense than before.

"Truly worthy of the Spiritual Energy Disaster."

Mu Chen muttered to himself with a faint smile.

Raising his head, Mu Chen looked towards the vast forest, before suddenly extending his palm out. Forming a rather unique seal, a luscious green glowing screen started to radiate from his palm, completely enveloping the giant tall trees present within the tens of kilometres below.

Crackle...

Under the envelope of the light, the giant tall trees appeared to have been provoked, instantly trembling and shaking. Finally, with a final slam, they transformed into rays of green light, rushing straight into the glowing screen present within Mu Chen's hand.

Whoosh. Whoosh.

The rays of green light rushed into the glowing screen, before disappearing away. Faintly, a luscious green sea started to become faintly

discernible within the glowing screen...

"What a really wonderful Tree Growing Art..."

Looking towards the luscious green shadow within the glowing screen, before looking at the ground below, which had become completely empty, a sigh of admiration uncontrollably surfaced from within Mu Chen's eyes. Although this Tree Growing Art didn't have any offensive characteristics, the degree of mysteriousness it provided was not one bit inferior in Mu Chen's eyes to the Divine Wood Scripture.

Upon observing this scene unfounding before their eyes, Xu Huang and the other two that were standing not too far away were stunned to complete dumbfoundedness.

Sending them a smile, Mu Chen proceeded to look towards the distance. Present along that direction was the central region of this shattered continent. Despite the vast distance between there and where he stood, Mu Chen could still clearly discern a faint scorching atmosphere perfusing from there...

Slowly crossing his fingers, Mu Chen softly muttered.

"The final phase of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, has finally started..."

Chapter 551: Coming out of Seclusion

Remaining in the air, Mu Chen gave a wave of his sleeve, rapidly restraining the tyrannical Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiating from his body. Turning to take a look at Xu Huang and the other two, he gave a nod in satisfaction. At this moment, the trio had also successfully passed through their Spiritual Energy Disaster, obtaining quite a large increase in their strength.

Seeing Mu Chen look over, Xu Huang and the other two gave a laugh in return, with gratitude present in their smiles. During the short few months they had been together on this shattered continent, their strength had seemingly advanced by leaps and bounds. Such a pace of improvement had an extremely huge connection with Mu Chen, something that the trio was well-aware of. If not for Mu Chen and Luo Li carrying them through the massive turmoil, their group would have already been squashed deep down under the sea of people present here. How would they be even able to walk to such a stage?

Whoosh!

Suddenly, a ray of sword light shot out from underneath the waterfall, radiating with a level of fierceness that sent chills through people's hearts. As it shot out, the waterfall was severed in half, with a gigantic sword fissure with an endless bottom appearing on the mountain cliff behind it.

At this moment, a beautiful figure shot out, before finally appearing by Mu Chen's side, her bright and resplendent long hair appearing like a silvery river as it fluttered in the air. It was precisely Luo Li.

"You've passed through your Spiritual Energy Disaster?" As she appeared, Luo Li looked over to Mu Chen, with a shadow of happiness surfacing within her clear and bright eyes.

Mu Chen smiled as he nodded his head. Thereafter, he directed his gaze towards Luo Li, who was moving back and forth. A smear of astonishment flashed through his eyes as he realised that after this session of seclusion training, the Spiritual Energy within Luo Li's body seemed to be even more

firm. If one did not sense it properly, they might have felt that Luo Li's strength had fallen after this session.

However, the possibility of this happening was close to none. There was only one possible outcome to this situation, Luo Li's strength had, once again, surged... Previously, Luo Li's strength was only at Spiritual Energy Disaster. Now that she had made another breakthrough, wouldn't it be First Grade Spirit Disaster?

"You've passed through the first level of your Spirit Disaster?" Mu Chen could not help asking.

Hearing Mu Chen's question, Xu Huang and the other two had also happily looked towards Luo Li. Being extremely clear about Luo Li's strength, they knew that she was able to use her strength with a cultivation at the realm of Spiritual Energy Disaster to contend against an expert of the first level of Spirit Disaster. If she was about to breakthrough once more, wouldn't that mean that she now possessed a might comparable to someone at the second level of Spirit Disaster?

With such a level of strength, even amongst the experts within the final phase of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament that were as numerous as the clouds in the sky, it was more than enough to rank her amongst the very best.

Upon hearing Mu Chen's question, Luo Li didn't give a reply, only sent a faint smile in return.

"Ah, what a blow." Mu Chen gave a sigh in helplessness. Although his speed of cultivation was already considered to be rather fast, he was always one step behind Luo Li, something that caused him to feel slightly depressed. Although he wasn't very insistent of wanting to surpass Luo Li, being a man, this issue would always remain in his heart.

Tittering in response, Luo Li extended her jade-like hand and held onto Mu Chen's, her tender little hand instantly caused the tiny depressed feeling present within Mu Chen's heart to be instantly wiped clean.

"As of now, I'm afraid that the overall situation of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament has already grown extremely intense," said Luo Li,

while looking at the far distance. Although she had always remain in isolation training for the past ten-plus days, she also had a faint premonition about it. After all, the final phase of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament had already begun.

Hearing her comment, Mu Chen nodded his head in agreement, with his eyes focusing towards the far distance. After a short instant, a scorching shadow gushed from the depths of his eyes. The Great Spiritual Academy Tournament had finally started to gradually proceed to its end. However, he was also extremely clear that the real competition had only just started to descend.

Waiting to extricate themselves from the powerful groups piling on top of one another to finally obtain the mere eight places for the final match wasn't any easy task. However, regardless of what opponent they faced, Mu Chen didn't have the slightest bit of fear nor dread. On the contrary, it was something that he was greatly anticipating... he anticipated crossing hands against the truly powerful groups, as only in such bloody battles would it allow for people to grow and progress.

The path of the strong was something that the weak would never be able to walk down.

"Let's go. We should also move our bodies. Since the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament has already turned completely lively, if we don't show any accomplishments whatsoever, we might truly vanish amongst the crowd," said Mu Chen with a smile as he gave a stretch of his body.

Hearing that, Xu Huang and the other two heavily nodded their heads in response, their eyes fervently burning.

"Let's go."

Without speaking another word, Mu Chen gave a wave of his sleeve, transforming straight into a ray of spiritual light that shot out, with Luo Li, Xu Huang and the rest immediately following behind.

...

While Mu Chen and his group were leaving the place of their isolation

training, there was a desolate valley present at an extremely far place. Bare mountainous rock was present all around it, with the entire region perfused with a desolated flavor.

Bang! Rumble.

Suddenly, low, deep rumbling sounds rang from within the desolated valley, only for a gigantic fissure to split apart from the depths. As it extended all the way to the entrance of the valley, an entire flight of ancient stone steps appeared from within.

Tap, tap.

Faint footstep sounds rang from the end of the stone steps before numerous figures appeared under the bask of the sunlight a moment later.

The people in the lead were two exceedingly handsome youths, possessing tall and straight figures with sharp eyebrows angling outwards from above their eyes, while extraordinary auras gushing from them. Present behind them was a beautiful girl, with her black hair worn exquisitely into a bun, revealing her snow-white neck. A gentle smile hung on her beautiful face, causing her entire body to radiate with a gentle and soul-stirring aura.

Behind these three people were two figures that hastily followed behind.

Standing at the edge of the stone steps, the five looked towards the fissure behind that was gradually closing. All of them quietly took a breath of relief, while giving of a feeling of seeing the light of day after being given a new lease of life.

The appearances of these five were exceedingly familiar. That's because they were Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong, Su Xuan, He Yao and Yang Lin, the second group from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy!

"We're finally out." Looking at the bright sky above, Shen Cangsheng could not help smiling, while a disdainful aura started to radiate from his brows, one that appeared to be even more dense as compared to before.

Beside him, Li Xuantong had also nodded his head in agreement. With a clench of his hand, his Academy Plaque appeared,while he scanned the

Top 16 listed on it. Upon seeing the rankings, a faint twitch appeared on his forehead as he said, "From the looks of it, the struggle in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament has grown extremely intense... the points have reached such high levels."

At this moment, the first place on the rankings was still held by the Saint Spiritual Academy's group, led by Ji Xuan, with their points already reaching 13,000 points!

Such a terrifying number of points caused even Li Xuantong to feel shock within his heart.

"That Ji Xuan's said to be extremely formidable..." said Shen Cangsheng as he nodded his head, before muttering, "Furthermore, from what I know, Mu Chen seems to have some grudges and grievances with him, right?"

"It's seems like that," replied Su Xuan with a gentle nod, before saying with a gentle smile, "I wonder exactly how Mu Chen and the others are doing now. There seem to be no trace of their names at the Top 16. WIth their level of strength, it's unlikely so, right?"

"With Mu Chen and Luo Li there, their group's absolutely not ordinary," replied Li Xuantong.

"Haha. That brat's not that easy to deal with. I believe that we'll be able to bump into them not long from now. Furthermore, even if they were truly unlucky to be defeated, isn't there still us here?" Shen Cangshen gave a heroic laugh as he said, "I can also take back the place of the number one expert of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy at the same time."

"Although you've obtained a huge chance from this Desolate Sect, wanting to take back the title of the number one expert from Mu Chen might not be an easy matter to accomplish," replied Su Xuan with a faint smile, instantly pouring cold water on Shen Cangsheng.

Upon hearing her reply, instead of getting angry, Shen Cangsheng started to laugh. He was similarly extremely clear about Mu Chen's capabilities. That fellow's a monstrous talent. Although his level of strength had progressed by leaps and bounds since then, he was still truly not confident in saying that he was able to completely surpass Mu Chen.

"Let's ignore him, for now. We ought to make our move, carve a path out for ourselves and snatch all of the points. We definitely have to climb up the Top 16 before Mu Chen and his group does!" said Shen Cangsheng with a wave of his hand. In the next instant, with a fierce stomp of his feet, his figure immediately rushed into the sky.

"Let's go." Nodding his head, Li Xuantong clench his hand, causing a powerful Spiritual Energy to immediately sweeping out like a storm, instantly crushing the giant stones in his surroundings into dust. At this moment, his figure had rushed into the sky in a spectre-like fashion.

Similarly, Su Xuan and the other two immediately followed suit, with powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiating from their bodies. Their level of strength had become much, much stronger as compared to what they were when they had just entered the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament. Clearly, they had similarly obtained quite a huge benefit and chance during this period of time.

...

After leaving their isolation training site, Mu Chen and his group orientated themselves to the right direction, before rushing towards the central region of the Shattered Continent.

Along the way, Mu Chen and the rest had also bumped into quite a few groups that clearly had same goal as them.

Faced against those groups, Mu Chen felt slightly astonished within his heart. That was because he could sense that they were rather powerful, with each group seemingly possessing more than three people whose strength was on the realm of Spiritual Energy Disaster, at the very least, with not a single one below the realm of Human Body Disaster.

Such a sight caused Mu Chen to sigh in admiration. From the looks of it, there were quite a few groups that obtained a huge increase in strength from the remnants present within the Shattered Continent. At the very least, during the start of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, people at the realm of Human Body Disaster were sufficient to be considered as experts. However, as of now... people at that level of strength had already

reached the point of almost being eliminated.

However, although they had bumped into quite a few groups along the way, the journey of Mu Chen and his group was mysteriously free and unimpeded, with simply no group daring to find trouble with them. Clearly, those groups were faintly able to sense how thorny Mu Chen's group was, causing their gazes to be filled with dread to the point of not daring to go too close to them.

Such a situation caused Mu Chen to feel somewhat helpless. In actual fact, he hoped for people to come knocking on his door, before gifting points over to him...

However, since no one came to find trouble for them, it's still best for them to continue their journey. He knew that within the vast central region, there would be a sky-high number of points awaiting them to snatch and plunder.

Therefore, the pace at which Mu Chen travelled increased once more.

Their journey lasted closed to three days, they had finally neared the battle-strewn central region. As they did so, Mu Chen and the rest received a piece of news that caused a sliver of shock to appear within his heart.

The news they heard was that... Wen Qingxuan's group had fallen into trouble.

Chapter 552: Xiao Huang

Upon knowing that Wen Qingxuan and her group had met with trouble, Mu Chen and his group were undoubtedly shocked. After working with Wen Qingxuan and her group, they were naturally very clearly of the astonishing strength the latter possessed. Although they had yet to see her taking action without any restraint, even Mu Chen would admit that if he was to truly cross hands with her, even he would not dare to say that he possessed an absolute chance of victory.

This was an arrogant and haughty phoenix from the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy. Not only did she possess a beauty that could cause the downfall of countries, her talent was similarly more than sufficient to cause countless geniuses to pale in colour.

In accordance to Mu Chen's original estimates, although all the powerful groups participating in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament had appeared, there were only an exceedingly few that were able to contend against Wen Qingxuan. Furthermore, Mu Chen was truthfully unable to come up with anyone possessing the capability that could truly cause trouble for her.

Therefore, with some suspicion and doubt within their hearts, Mu Chen and his group proceeded to ask around and gathered information, with a foreign-sounding name finally landing within their ears.

Xiao Huang.

"Xiao Huang? Who's that fellow?" Upon hearing their foreign name, Xu Huang and the other two instantly voiced out in suspicion. Ever since their entry to the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament till now, they have yet to heard about this name before.

The mysterious great leader of the Academy Alliance is known by the name of Xiao Huang," replied Luo Li in a soft voice.

"Academy Alliance?" The faces of Xu Huang and the other two instantly changed. They never had much of a friendly relationship with the Academy Alliance. However, while they were in the remnant of the Divine

Wood Palace, those fellows were given an extremely miserable beating by Mu Chen. Who would have thought that there would still be such a formidable figure present within the Academy Alliance?

"No matter how formidable Xiao Huang is, I don't think that he'll truly be able to cause trouble for Wen Qingxuan, right? Although their might perhaps be some people in this Great Spiritual Academy Tournament that can contend against her, it would be absolutely difficult to surround and trap her," muttered Mu Chen, while a faint wrinkle appeared on his forehead.

"It's said that Wen Qingxuan's not the only person that has been surrounded and trapped. Even Pin'er, Le'er as well as the other two groups of their Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy," replied Luo Li while shooting a look at Mu Chen. "Furthermore, that Xiao Huang is also a Spiritual Array Master, and is even quite accomplished in his attainments in this aspect."

"Oh?" Hearing that, Mu Chen's eyes slightly narrowed. This piece of information had seemingly exceeded his expectations.

"From the looks of it, the reason why Mo Yu and his gang of peeps were able to display the Jade Disk that could create a shielding Spiritual Array in the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard should be due that person," said Mu Chen slowly, while a unique glint appeared in his eyes. The Spiritual Array present within the Jade Disk was exceedingly ingenious. The creator of such a thing would definitely not be any ordinary person. Looks like this Xiao Huang truly was extraordinary.

"According to the news that has been circulating around, as of now, Wen Qingxuan and the others have been surrounded and trapped by the Spiritual Array that Xiao Huang had meticulously arranged, and are unable to extricate themselves from within," said Luo Li.

"As long as the Spiritual Array arranged by Xiao Huang hasn't reach the realm of Spiritual Array Grandmaster, it would absolutely be unable to trap Wen Qingxuan. However... if there are other people besides her, it would be hard to say," muttered Mu Chen. With Wen Qingxuan's level of strength, although it might be thorny for her, wanting to extricate herself

would absolutely be a possibility. However, the problem was the other groups from the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy trapped with her. These people would be unable to easily extricate themselves. Therefore, it was impossible for Wen Qingxuan to break free and leave the rest behind.

"What a good method employed by that Xiao Huang," said Mu Chen in an indifferent tone.

Luo Li nodded her head in agreement. Clearly, that Xiao Huang was relying on this ploy to interfere with the plans of Wen Qingxuan. After all, there were times that the number of people trapped within a Spiritual Array wouldn't amount to any superiority and might even become a burden. Therefore, as long as Wen Qingxuan wasn't able to become heartless and toss her group members aside, this would continue to weigh her down to the point where she would no long be able to endure anymore.

This was clearly something that Xiao Huang was happy to see.

"They say that Wen Qingxuan and the others have already been trapped for three days. However, that Xiao Huang's also kinda strange, since, from the start, he has only made a move to trap them and has not done anything else since," said Luo Li doubtfully in a soft voice.

Hearing that, wrinkles started to faintly form on Mu Chen's forehead. After deeply pondering for a moment, he said, "I believe... that their goal might not just be Wen Qingxuan alone."

Hearing his words, Xu Huang and the others instantly gawked, before saying in shock, "Not only Wen Qingxuan... could it be...?"

As they thought about it, their faces furiously contorted. As of now, they couldn't be more clear about the grudges and grievances between them and the Academy Alliance. All of the plans the Academy Alliance had cooked up was ruined and destroyed by them, with their three leaders even being sent retreating for their lives in a miserable fashion by Mu Chen. Such grudges wouldn't be light. If that Xiao Huang was the great leader of the Academy Alliance, he would definitely not be able to quietly swallow this down.

Therefore, if the Academy Alliance was planning to target someone other than Wen Qingxuan, they would definitely be the first to bear the brunt.

"The only thing Xiao Huang did to Wen Qingxuan was to surround her, but did not attack. This might be due to her strength. However, I believe that there might be quite a large possibility that he wants to lure us to come forward and help her... Haha, this Xiao Huang sure has a big appetite," said Mu Chen with a smile, one that contained a sliver of chilling intent.

"What should we do, then?" asked Xu Huang as he looked towards Mu Chen.

Narrowing his eyes slightly, Mu Chen pondered for a long while before replying in a calm manner, "Since he's anticipating us to knock on his door, we should naturally not let him be disappointed. It just so happens that we needed a large amount of points. I believe that the Academy Alliance might be able to let us eat to our hearts content."

Mu Chen did not wish to avoid such trouble. Even without mentioning the first promise about helping her that he had made towards Wen Qingxuan, it was impossible for them to avoid such an invitation to battle. Mu Chen believed that there might already be people from various groups paying attention to the progress of this matter; after all, regardless of Wen Qingxuan or Xiao Huang, both of them were figures that demanded considerable weight in the current situation of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament. Their crossing of hands would definitely attract the attention of others.

"Okay!" Xu Huang and the other two immediately nodded their heads. Although they knew that the Academy Alliance, being able to trap Wen Qingxuan and the others up, would definitely have arranged for them to walk into a trap, under the leadership of Mu Chen for the past number of months, what kinds of danger had they not walked straight into? Furthermore, they did not assume that Mu Chen would lose to that great leader of the Academy Alliance.

Hearing Mu Chen's words, Luo Li gently nodded her little head; after all, she had some level of friendship with Wen Qingxuan. As of now, with the latter being in trouble, they should try all means possible to provide assistance to her.

"Let's go!"

Seeing that no one had opposed his decision, Mu Chen didn't hesitate any longer. With a wave of his hands, he shot straight towards the central region of the Shattered Continent, with Luo Li, Xu Huang and the other two immediately following suit.

For the next whole day, Mu Chen and his group didn't take any breaks, maintaining their speed to their utmost limit as they rapidly headed towards the central region.

As they grew increasingly close to the vast region, Mu Chen finally started to sense the turmoil and chaos present within. With the continuous increase in the number of groups present, of which all possessed impressive strength and power, all of them were deeply vigilant and greedy. Therefore, this had caused all of them to appear like powder kegs that were inflated to the very extreme. With just the slight bit of provocation, they would completely explode.

Therefore, when every two groups made some form of contact, what proceeded next would definitely be a huge intense battle with neither prepared to give an inch.

Wanting to advance would require defeating the opposite party. In this place, only the victor could continue with their journey.

To the victor goes the spoils. This was played out to the very extremely at this place.

Under such a chaotic situation, even Mu Chen and his group had similarly encountered with obstruction, in the form of a few "quite powerful" groups casting their greedy gazes over. Faced against those groups that had treated him and his group as targets, Mu Chen didn't show the slightest bit of courtesy. Therefore, those groups that dared to take action would be defeated in a swift and powerful fashion, with not

one bit of mercy shown, before snatching away half of their points.

With such fat sheep that had automatically walked right into them, Mu Chen's points had increased by 2 to 3 thousand in the short span of a day. One could say that they had obtained a bountiful harvest.

Naturally, however, such a drastic increase in points wasn't considered much when compared to those sitting in the Top 16 of the rankings. That's because the points held by the Top 16 would change at any given moment, with such changes exceeding over 5000-plus points.

However, after a day's worth of time, Mu Chen's progressive increase in points gradually came to a stop. After suffering defeat-after-defeat, those groups that have been advancing wave-after-wave had finally started to understand how thorny this group they had targeted really was. It was on a level that they absolutely couldn't handle.

Therefore, as dread and fear finally filled them, they had no choice but to completely conceal those greedy gazes of theirs, while no longer daring to take action against Mu Chen and his group.

With such obstructions disappearing, Mu Chen's feet finally stepped onto the exceedingly vast central region on the second day of travel. This place had now already become the place within the entire Great Spiritual Academy Tournament where the spotlight was shining the greatest.

Just as they have stepped on the central region, Mu Chen and his group had received yet another piece of information.

Within these two days, the Academy Alliance had still only continued to keep Wen Qingxuan and the others trapped, while not launching any offensive against them. However, this time, the Academy Alliance had openly sent a letter of challenge. It was exactly this piece of information that was sent right towards Mu Chen and his group.

Mu Chen. I, Xiao Huang, am waiting for you to break the array to save those people.

It was just this short sentence that the Academy Alliance had sent out. However, it had brought about extremely huge waves of commotion

within the central region, while causing some doubts and suspicion to surface in many powerful groups. After all, the group that was led by Xiao Huang had already reached the 9th place on the rankings. Furthermore, they had Wen Qingxuan trapped. Therefore, it had made him absolutely well-renowned within the entire Great Spiritual Academy Tournament.

As for Mu Chen? The majority of the people were unfamiliar to this foreign-sounding name; after all, Mu Chen had only stepped into the Top 16 for a bit of time before disappearing. Up till now, he had yet to step back into the Top 16. Therefore, many people were extremely unfamiliar in regards to him.

However, despite their unfamiliarity, a person that could cause the great leader of the Academy Alliance to send a challenge would definitely not be any ordinary person. This point had indeed attracted the interest of people from various groups. Therefore, numerous groups started to rapidly head towards the region indicated by the challenge.

While this was happening, Mu Chen had also received this letter of challenge that was brimming with provocation.

Faced against it, a faint smile appeared on his face. Yet, without saying anything more, he gave a wave of his hand, while a calm voice followed suit and rang out.

"Let's go. We'll break the array and save them."

Chapter 553: Invitation

Heart of the Shattered Continent, northwest region.

Present here was a stretch of luscious green mountain ranges, with high ridges and peaks that overflowed with greenish life.

Generally speaking, such a place would normally appear exceedingly remote and quiet. However, at this moment, this place appeared exceedingly noisy and was filled with clamoring noises, while whooshing sounds continuously rang throughout the surrounding mountain ridges. Finally, glowing figures shot over, appearing in the sky or the sea of trees present below. Therefore, this place, which was already noisy, became even more lively.

The powerful groups that came from various directions stood in the distant sky. Yet, their gazes had all focused on the centre-most position of the mountain range without any prior consultation. Presently, there was an extremely majestic mountain peak that towered over the region. However, at this moment, bright and resplendent spiritual light had perfused over the top of the mountain peak. This spiritual light appeared exceedingly dazzlingly, appearing just like the rise of the scorching sun, causing piercing pain in the eyes of the people looking at it.

Therefore, the faces of the groups looking over were filled with solemness. That's because they could clearly sense how terrifying the Spiritual Energies radiating from that Mountain Peak were.

"The Multi-Academy Alliance's Xiao Huang's truly formidable, to actually be able to arrange such a powerful Spiritual Array. With such Spiritual Energy fluctuations, even an expert on the realm of the first level of Spirit Disaster would not dare to rush into it." Upon spotting the spiritual light perfusing from the mountain peak, the various groups present could not help whispering to each other.

"If the Spiritual Array's not strong, how would it be that easy for that Xiao Huang to trap Wen Qingxuan?" said some people in a deep voice.

"However, the guts of that Xiao Huang's truly big to actually dare to take

such action against Wen Qingxuan in such a manner. I'm afraid that Wen Qingxuan and her people might be in some trouble this time."

"Hmph. This Xiao Huang had used a really despicable method and captured the groups of the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy, before using them as bait to lure Wen Qingxuan into an already prearranged Spiritual Array. Only by doing so was he able to trap her. If not, if she was to truly take action, that Xiao Huang would definitely not be a match for her." Some people snorted in disdain. Afterall, with her fame and reputation being so big, coupled by her absolutely stunning appearance, these traits were more than enough to attract the adoration and admiration of many people. Although there were many people that knew that this arrogant and haughty phoenix would not cast a gentle and beautiful gaze over to them, all of them already had some indignant feelings upon seeing Xiao Huang use such a method to deal with Wen Qingxuan.

This person's words had attracted some approvement. All of them knew that, although the Spiritual Array that Xiao Huang had arrange was indeed exceedingly formidable, wanting to completely trap Wen Qingxuan was an extremely difficult thing to do. Therefore, although Wen Qingxuan had been trapped for the past few days, this was all completely due to her worry for the safety of her group members. After all, faced with such a formidable Spiritual Array, only she might have the ability and capability to contend against it.

"The only rule of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament is survival of the fittest. What methods or ways used doesn't matter. As long as you can defeat your opponent, who can care about what method or way you use? All of that is just the excuses of the losers." There were also some people with different opinions who voiced their opposition. Therefore, it had also attracted the sneers of people. With the sounds of dispute rising and falling in succession.

The entire region was filled with noisy sounds. Present on the top of a mountain peak not far away were a few standing figures, with their gazes locked on the mountain peak radiating with dazzling spiritual light.

"That Xiao Huang's truly despicable!"

Wearing a scarlet-red dress, a mocking expression filled Wu Yingying's lovable face. Although she didn't have too much of a connection with Wen Qingxuan, they were girls, after all. As of now, seeing that the Multi-Academy Alliance was trying their best to deal with Wen Qingxuan, her heart was naturally biased towards the latter.

"Haha. That person, Xiao Huang, isn't some benevolent person," said a figure standing before Wu Yingying.

This figure appeared tall and thin, with a straight-like appearance, just like an erect spear. The black robe worn by him appeared exceedingly delicate, just like a girl. His facial features appeared slightly similar to Wu Yingying, causing him to have a slightly effeminate appearance. However, everyone from the Martial Spiritual Academy was extremely clear exactly how frightening of a talent this fellow that appeared like a girl possessed...

He similarly possessed the status of a Freshman in the Martial Spiritual Academy. However, within the short span of a year, he had already stood at the highest peak in the Martial Spiritual Academy. Those Seniors who possessed splendid talent could only give long sighs of despair in the presence of that figure.

He was Wu Ling.

As of now, he was the strongest person amongst the members of the Martial Spiritual Academy. At the same time, he was the elder brother of Wu Yingying.

"Wen Qingxuan isn't that easy to deal with. If not for her worrying for the other members of the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy, regardless of how prepared Xiao Huang is, he would not be able to trap her," said Wu Yingying with a cold snort.

Hearing that, Wu Ling gave a faint smile, since he knew that what Wu Yingying said was indeed right. Wen Qingxuan wasn't any ordinary girl. Even he had high amounts of dread towards that girl. Speaking of which, Wen Qingxuan would absolutely be considered as an opponent that he would need to focus all of his mind and spirit on. If Xiao Huang wanted to

truly take head-on action against Wen Qingxuan, Wu Ling knew that Wen Qingxuan would absolutely possess a great chance of victory.

However, other than the frightening aspect of him being a Spiritual Array Master, once he was able to execute the method that he had meticulously prepared, he would be able to have absolute control over everything, just like the current situation. With Wen Qingxuan and her other members being trapped within the Spiritual Array and with it being completely activated, even Wen Qingxuan could only end up in a disadvantage, and be forced in a clearly passive position.

Therefore, it was still truly hard to say exactly who among Xiao Huang or Wen Qingxuan would obtain victory in this time's fight.

"Furthermore, the target of Xiao Huang isn't only Wen Qingxuan. He just wants to use her to lure Mu Chen out, that's all," said Wu Ling with a faint smile, his gaze appearing somewhat peculiar. "Mu Chen should've been his target all along."

This name wasn't unfamiliar or foreign to him, as he had cross hands with Mu Chen while both of them were in the Spiritual Road, with both of them obtaining their respective victories. He was exceedingly interested in this former opponent of his. However, with the occurrence of the matter of Mu Chen being expelled from the Spiritual Road, this had always caused him to feel some regret.

However it was fortunate that he was finally able to heard this name again.

"Why would he want to deal with Mu Chen specifically? That fellow doesn't have much points, and there isn't any benefit in defeating him at all," asked Wu Yingying as her forehead started to wrinkle.

"Who knows? Perhaps, Xiao Huang had set his sights on something that Mu Chen possesses," said Wu Ling with a faint smile.

"From the looks of it, it seems that Xiao Huang had made thorough preparations. The might of this Spiritual Array is astonishing. Furthermore, it appears abstruse and profound. If that fellow Mu Chen truly dares to come, I'm afraid that he won't be able to get much of an

advantage," said Wu Yingying, her voice containing a sliver of worry that was hard to conceal.

"Haha. Don't you hate him to death? Why are you worried about his safety?" Wu Ling shot a strange look at Wu Yingying as a smile appeared on his face.

"Who cares about him! I can't wait for him to be beaten to death!" snapped Wu Yingying back, her eyes wide open while her lovable face turned beet-red.

Wu Ling helplessly shrugged as he looked at his surroundings. There were hundreds to thousands of figures around them. Clearly, they were all attracted to this location. The matter had already spread throughout this vast central region as almost everyone knew that Xiao Huang had trapped Wen Qingxuan to lure Mu Chen.

However, under such circumstances, there was no one that interfered with the entire situation. Regardless of Xiao Huang, or Wen Qingxuan, and even Mu Chen, who had yet to appear, there were many people that were clear about how formidable they were. Therefore, they have great anticipation of the confrontation that would occur. After all, only in this kind of situation would they be able to obtain a chance to gain some benefit.

In such a situation, god-knows how many heavyweight groups were out there paying attention to the matters happening over here. Regardless of whether Mu Chen would appear or not, or that Wen Qingxuan would break out from the array, it would clearly lead to an extremely spectacular confrontation.

"Next up, we have to wait for the appearance of the main character, huh."

As spiritual light radiated from the majestic mountain peak and into the eyes of the everyone around, they could faintly discern incomparably complicated glowing patterns starting to surface from within. These glowing patterns appeared to be carved out of nothing, giving people an insubstantial feeling. This mountain peak was approximately a thousand

metres in diameter. However, as of now, this was within the radius of the spiritual light's reach. This region had already been included in the radius of the Spiritual Array. Therefore, there was simply no one that dared to come close to it.

At this moment, there were two figures sitting quietly on a green stone within a certain location of the Spiritual Array. Behind them stood Mo Yu, Qin Feng and Liu Xiong, the three leaders of the Multi-Academy Alliance, with their faces brimming with nervousness and worship.

"Great Leader, will that Mu Chen really come? He should already know that this place has already become a dangerous location for him..." asked Mo Yu in a quiet voice.

Present before him was a youth with long black hair that possessed an exceedingly ordinary appearance. However, his pair of eyes appeared to be like a deep chasm, causing people to be simply unable to see their depth.

Hearing Mo Yu's question, he faintly raised his eyes, before replying, "The news has already been circulated. Even Wen Qingxuan knows about it. She's a person that pursues perfection, even if it is towards her friends. If Mu Chen doesn't come, she would understand, yet this would result in some ill feelings being born within her heart. This would prohibit her friendship with Mu Chen from here on. This would result in the impossibility for her to collaborate with him in the future."

"If Mu Chen comes over, that's precisely what I want. I've set my sights on the thing from the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard, and he should hand it over. If not, I won't mind letting him know that not even the people from the five Great Academies possess the qualifications to be bossy and domineering in this place..."

"Therefore, I'm able to obtain a harvest, regardless of whether Mu Chen comes or not."

Hearing his reply, shadows of worship and respect instantly gushed from the eyes of Mo Yu and the other two, before excitement appeared on their faces. They were already unable to contain their impatience to see the expression Mu Chen would have when he was defeated. That bastard has

actually forced them to return empty-handed from the remnant of the Divine Wood Palace and even sent them fleeing away like dogs with tails between their legs.

"Now, the only thing we need to do is wait."

Speaking with a faint smile, Xiao Huang proceeded to slowly close his eyes.

However, not long after shutting his eyes, a tremble suddenly shook through his eyebrows, before his eyes rapidly sprung open. Looking with indifference towards the distance, an arc started to curl from the corner of his mouth, one that brought about a sliver of chilling intent.

"You actually came so quickly. Truly befitting of the boldness of an able person."

Chapter 554: Bet

The originally clamoring atmosphere around the verdant mountain range suddenly turned silent, before all of the gazes shooting from everywhere turned towards the northwest direction. A moment later, hurried whooshing sounds rang from there as numerous glowing figures surfaced across the horizon. Finally, in a flash, they appeared right before the figure-filled mountain range.

As the glowing shadows scattered away, five figures surfaced before everyone. Present at the helm was a person, which was precisely Mu Chen. Standing by his side was Luo Li, her slender and elegant figure, with her absolutely beautiful appearance, instantly attracted quite a few gazes shooting her way.

Looking at the Academy Insignia on their chests, everyone instantly understood the status of these five people, instantly causing fervent shadows to appear in their eyes. After waiting for so many days, this main character had finally appeared...

"This is the group from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy? That's their Captain, Mu Chen? Why's his strength only at the realm of Spiritual Energy Disaster?"

"He actually dared to come and keep an appointment with such strength! He truly possesses quite the amount of courage."

"Don't look down on him. This Mu Chen is not one bit simple at all. It's said that in the remnant of the Divine Wood Palace, he had caused the Academy Alliance to return empty-handed. Furthermore, he is a Spiritual Array Master with quite a bit of attainments in this aspect."

"Oh? He's also a Spiritual Array Master? This truly has become interesting. It's extremely rare to see a battle between Spiritual Array Masters. Haha. Who knows, maybe this Mu chen will actually be able to break the array formation that Xiao Huang has arranged, huh."

When Mu Chen and his group appeared in that stretch of the sky, low whispers instantly rang about from the surroundings, while gazes

continuously swept across their bodies.

Standing in the air, Mu Chen's gaze was similarly scanning his surroundings. Looking at the hundreds and thousands of groups present around, he could not help but to let a sliver of astonishment flash across his eyes. That's because the groups present here all possessed rather powerful strength. Clearly, being able to remain in the central region, where the most intense and cruel battles of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament was taking place, how would any of these groups be weak?

Suddenly, Mu Chen's gaze froze as he fixed his eyes on a mountain peak in the far distance. Over there, he spotted a youth in black robes with a delicate, female-like appearance.

Wu Ling.

Mu Chen's eyes faintly narrowed as his expression turned slightly solemn. During the Spiritual Road, there weren't many people that could cause him to feel extreme fear and dread for. Other than Ji Xuan and Wen Qingxuan, he might just have the most fear towards this Wu Ling. Fortunately, though, Mu Chen didn't have too much grudges and grievances towards Wu Ling while in the Spiritual Road, and could be considered as having an ordinary relationship.

Mu Chen's incoming gaze was clearly sensed by Wu Ling. A faint smile instantly surfaced on his delicate face as he sent a nod towards Mu Chen that could be considered as a greeting.

Nodding his head in response, Mu Chen retracted his gaze before turning towards the most crowded location of this region.

Bright and resplendent spiritual light radiated from the mountain peak, causing piercing pain in the eyes of people who looked into it. Looking over, Mu Chen's expression started to coagulate. Perhaps others might be unable to understand those complicated glowing patterns that were radiating from within the spiritual light, but being a Spiritual Array Master, he was able to clearly sense how complicated and formidable that Spiritual Array was.

"Quite a formidable Spiritual Array," said Luo Li in a soft voice. Although

she wasn't a Spiritual Array Master, it did not mean that she wasn't able to feel dangerous fluctuations coming from the gigantic Spiritual Array before her eyes.

Nodding his head, Mu Chen added, "That should be a Rank 5 Combination Diagram. Furthermore, it seems to be somewhat different in layout as compared with ordinary Spiritual Array formations."

The "Lesser Thousand Sword Spiritual Array" that Mu Chen had used to deal with Xue Tiandou, Wang Zhong and their people while in the remnant of the Divine Wood Palace was also a Rank 5 Combination Diagram. Relying on this array, Mu Chen was able to directly destroy 3 Divine Wood Guards, and even completely defeated Xue Tiandou and his entire gang. From this, one could see exactly how astonishing the might of such a Combination Diagram was.

Naturally, this was also within the expectations of Mu Chen. After all, ordinary Spiritual Arrays did not possess the strength needed to trap Wen Qingxuan.

"Haha. Mu Chen, you've finally arrived."

While Mu Chen was casting his gaze over towards that bright and resplendent Spiritual Array, a faint laughing voice rang from within. In the next instant, with a sparkle, an empty space started to surface from within the Spiritual Array. One could immediately see numerous figures clearly present within. Furthermore, the one who had spoken was precisely the youth with long free-flowing black hair.

"You must be the great leader of the Academy Alliance, Xiao Huang, right?" Shooting a look at Mo Yu standing behind the youth, Mu Chen turned his gaze over to the latter before speaking in a slow manner.

Nodding his head, Xiao Huang gave a faint smile before saying, "I've long heard of the great name of Captain Mu Chen. I've been looking forward to meeting you here for a very long time."

"What a true honor."

Mu Chen replied with a smile. Staring at Xiao Huang, before shooting a

look at the gazes coming from their surroundings that were trained on themselves, Mu Chen continued speaking, "I don't know exactly what Captain Xiao Huang plans to do by luring me to here. Could it be that you want to vie for the face of Mo You and the other two?"

Upon hearing his words, the faces of Mo Yu and the other two instantly turned ashen as they shot furious glares at Mu Chen.

"Haha. You must be joking, Captain Mu Chen. Being taught a lesson by you meant that their skills aren't comparable to you. It isn't anyone else's fault," replied Xiao Huang with a smile. "Nevertheless, there's an item from within the remnant of the Divine Wood Palace that I need, but has been snatched away by Captain Mu Chen. Therefore, would Captain Mu Chen be willing to part with it?"

"What thing?" asked Mu Chen calmly.

"It's naturally what you've obtained from within the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard," replied Xiao Huang with a smile.

Mu Chen's eyes instantly slightly narrowed, with a shadow of astonishment surfacing within their depths. What he had obtained within the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard was a counterfeit "Spiritual Condensing Bowl". What a valuable treasure this was, with numerous Sovereign Spiritual Liquids being sealed within. However, the news about him obtaining it was only known to him, Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan. How did Xiao Huang know about this?

"May I know what Captain Mu Chen makes about my request?" asked Xiao Huang as he looked towards Mu Chen, with his gaze appearing similarly calm. However, deep within his eyes gushed a fierceness that was akin to the edge of a blade. Clearly, that was his true nature, not the gentle and warm appearance he was showing on the outside.

Mu Chen turned his gaze similarly towards Xiao Huang, the expression flowing within the latter being picked up by him. He could never relax in the face of this outward courtesy shown by Xiao Huang. Being able to establish the Academy Alliance and completely submit Mo Yu and the other fellows to obedience, such a person would not be a person that

would give in to anyone. Naturally, Mu Chen had similarly not believed that he, himself, was a person that would give in to anyone, too.

Therefore, faced against Xiao Huang's question, Mu Chen gave a faint smile and replied, "I might have to make Captain Xiao Huang disappointed about this. I believe that it's better for you to quickly scatter this Spiritual Array away. If not, if the person within was to truly become angry, I believe you most likely wouldn't be able endure it."

Upon hearing this reply from Mu Chen, quite a few people started secretly smiling. Clearly, Xiao Huang had put down an extremely amount of thought in trapping Wen Qingxuan. However, once this Spiritual Array gets broken, the fury of Wen Qingxuan might cause Xiao Huang to be in an extremely miserable state.

"Looks like you're not willing to settle this peacefully," Xiao Huang appeared to be somewhat regretfully as he gave a sigh, while his eyes brimmed with coldness.

With a faint smile on his face, Mu Chen gave a shrug in return. However, anyone could tell how cold his smile similarly was.

"Since you don't accept my peaceful offer, I can only beat you all down and take it back myself." Suddenly, a faint sneer rang out, causing everyone's gaze to converge, before finally resting on the side of Xiao Huang. Present there was another figure in a sitting position. This figure possessed short hair, with an appearance that had a slight bit of semblance to Xiao Huang, with the only difference being in the exceedingly chilly lines present on his face.

This person had remained quiet the whole time, while sitting beside Xiao Huang, resulting in him not receiving too much attention from others. However, upon him opening his mouth, everyone could feel the knife-like chilliness radiating from his eyes, causing their hearts to feel chilly. So it turns out that this fellow also wasn't any ordinary character.

"That fellow seems to be the brother of Xiao Huang, Xiao Wang. This person is powerful. Although he doesn't understand Spiritual Arrays, even an expert of the First Grade Spirit Disaster has fallen under his hands a

while ago. He can't be underestimated."

Upon noticing the figure, the groups present in the surroundings started to quietly whisper to one another.

Hearing those whispers, Mu Chen shot a look towards Xiao Huang, while his expression turned to one of indifference.

"I'm afraid that you don't possess the qualifications to say such words." A clear and chilly voice rang out at this moment, only for the beautiful eyes of Luo Li to coldly glare at Xiao Huang. As her jade-like hand slowly clenched her Luo God Sword tightly, she took gracefully steps forward, with a sword ring instantly rushing into the sky. This incomparably fierce Sword Intent appeared to want to shatter and split the heavens and earth apart, causing the faces of the countless groups present in the surroundings to violently contort.

At this moment, the expressions Xiao Huang and Xiao Wang had also faintly changed, as they were able to sense the slivers of danger present in the Sword Intent that had radiated from Luo Li. The girl before them seemed to be even more difficult to deal with than Mu Chen himself.

From the looks of it, this group from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had indeed possessed some ability.

Slightly narrowing his eyes, Xiao Huang gave a laugh before spaying, "Captain Mu Chen, I've heard that you're also a Spiritual Array Master. Would you be interested in making a bet with me?"

"Let me hear about it."

"It's inevitable that a normal battle would be somewhat crude and boorish. As of now, with Wen Qingxuan and her fellow students being trapped within the 'Heaven Binding Spiritual Array', as long as you're able to break this array, it would be considered as your win. At that time, not only would I release Wen Qingxuan and the others, I'll even give you 20,000 points," replied Xiao Huang as he stared at Mu Chen, the smile at the corner of his mouth appearing to contain a somewhat amused shade.

"Naturally, if you were to lose, please hand that item over to me. So? Do

you dare to accept this bet?"

Hearing Xiao Huang's words, the eyebrows of quite a few groups were raised. Xiao Huang's really playing his scheme out well. From the looks of it, with this Spiritual Array being able to trap even Wen Qingxuan, if Mu Chen was to rush inside, won't it end up in the same result as her? Once Mu Chen had fallen into the array, wouldn't anything that Xiao Huang say become the law?

However, being able to take out 20,000 points just like that can indeed be considered as exceedingly generous. After all, as of now, 20,000 points was more than sufficient to allow for one to rush into the Top 8. Naturally though, that might also be all of the points that the Academy Alliance possessed.

All of the gazes in this region had now been cast on Mu Chen's figure. All of them really wanted to know exactly if Mu Chen dared to take up this bet that was raised by Xiao Huang.

Under the attentive gazes of everyone present, Mu Chen slightly pursed his lips, before a smile surfaced on his handsome face. Looking at Xiao Huang with a similarly amused manner, he slowly nodded his head in the end.

"Alright. I accept this bet!"

Chapter 555: Competing Arrays

When Mu Chen's voice slowly rang within the region, it had expectedly filled the faces of quite a few people with shock. A few differing gazes locked on the slender figure of the youth. Only after quite a while did people start to secretly purse their lips as they muttered about the good show that they would truly be able to see today.

The groups that were able to be present here have all experienced many challenges and battles, and thus naturally possessed some schemes and plans of their own. From the looks of it, Xiao Huang had proclaimed about the traps that he had laid here, and was wanting to force Mu Chen into them. As long as the latter wasn't an idiot, he should be extremely clearly about this. However, despite that, Mu Chen seemed to not give much hesitation before accepting the bet. There was likely two reasons that would lead him to do such a thing. One was that Mu Chen's ego was so big that it had caused him to seemingly turn stupid, or that Mu Chen had similarly possessed some trump cards of his own...

One can very well eliminate the first reason. Being able to become the Captain of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy meant that Mu Chen would absolutely not be an arrogant or haughty person. The upper echelons of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy should not be stupid to the level of handing the position of Captain to Mu Chen if he was such a person. Therefore, the biggest reason why Mu Chen might dare to accept the bet would be that he wasn't afraid of Xiao Huang.

From the looks of it, this youth, who's cultivation was merely at the realm of Spiritual Energy Disaster, seemed to be not as simple as he appeared to be.

"That stupid idiot." On the mountain peak in the distance, upon seeing that Mu Chen had actually chosen to accept the bet, Wu Yingying could not help clenching her teeth and curse out. Although she can be considered to have some level of understanding towards Mu Chen, from the looks of the current situation, as long as he entered that Spiritual Array, he might fall straight into the hands of Xiao Huang. After all, it was

able to trap even Wen Qingxuan within. How much more would Mu Chen be able to accomplish?

"There's no need to worry at such an early time of their bet," said Wu Ling with a faint smile. Looking at the thin figure of the youth in the distance, he continued speaking. "Having crossed hands with him, I've a good understanding about Mu Chen. Regardless of what he wants to do, as long as he takes action, that would mean that he has some sort of plan within his heart. Although Xiao Huang had made an all-rounded preparation for this, wanting to devour Mu Chen might not be as easy as he think it would be."

"He's that formidable?" said Wu Yingying while pouting her lips. She knew how astute her brother's eyesight was. Amongst their generation, there were truthfully not many that could be marked by him. In fact, he did not even see highly of those geniuses that the few Elders of their Martial Spiritual Academy have unending praise for.

"Haha. In actual fact, you should be extremely clear as to how Mu Chen's exactly like. The only thing is that you're not willing to accept it," replied Wu Ling with a smile. Shooting a look at Wu Yingying, his his eyes faintly narrowed before asking, "However, why do you have so big of a resentment against him? Did he do something to you?"

Hearing her brother's question, Wu Yingying's lovable face instantly turned red before muttering in an unconfident manner. "Don't say such stuff without having the proper understanding about the situation, okay?"

Hearing her reply, Wu Ling shrugged his shoulders why saying, "Although I hold that fellow in high regard, if he dares to bully my younger sister, you just have to tell me and I'll make sure to tidy him up."

"Who needs your help, hmph!" snapped Wu Yingying as she shot a glare at Wu Ling, before proceeding to shut her mouth. Staring at the thin figure in the far distance, she faintly clenched her teeth while thinking, That pervert!

While the Wu siblings were having their own private conversation, on the mountain peak that was radiating with spiritual light, upon hearing

Mu Chen's agreement for the bet, a faint smile instantly surfaced on the face of Xiao Huang. With a grin, he spoke with a sigh of admiration. "Captain Mu Chen is truly bold and courageous. I, Xiao Huang, admire you."

Shooting a look at him, Mu Chen gave a faint laugh before replying, "Since Captain Xiao Huang's intending to send me such a large present, how could I not accept it?"

"That would have to depend on your ability, Captain Mu Chen," replied Xiao Huang with a smile, "You might not able to break this Spiritual Array just by using your mouth."

Although the words coming from the two contain some friendly banter, one could clearly sense the extreme intent of confrontation present within.

Gently nodding his head, Mu Chen panned his head to shoot a look at Luo Li. Seeing this, the latter slightly nodded her head towards him while saying, "Be careful."

Giving a smile, Mu Chen didn't continue saying anymore words. With a move of his body, he transformed into a glowing shadow, shooting across the forest sea below, heading right towards the incomparably gigantic Spiritual Array present on the mountain peak.

As he neared the mountain peak, Mu Chen was able to sense the boundless Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiating from within the Spiritual Array. Instantly, he could not help slightly narrowing his eyes. The Spiritual Array before his eyes seemed to be even more tyrannical than the "Lesser Thousand Sword Spiritual Array" that he possessed. God-knows exactly how this Xiao Huang had managed to chance upon such an array formation.

Whoosh!

Although such thoughts appeared in his heart, Mu Chen didn't show too much hesitation in his actions. Taking a step forward, he rushed straight towards the gigantic Spiritual Array under the attentive gazes of everyone present in the surroundings.

Upon rushing into the gigantic Spiritual Array, a billowing fog instantly appeared before Mu Chen's eyes. This fog seemed to be formed by Spiritual Energy, making it impossible to be blown away. Furthermore, it had a strong effect of hampering one's senses, causing people to be incapable of identifying the location and direction they were at.

As he entered the Spiritual Array, Mu Chen immediately came to a halt, not making any reckless or hot-headed rushes within here. Being a Spiritual Array Master, he knew that after entering a Spiritual Array, the ultimate taboo would be to become reckless and impulsive. Only by maintaining one's composure would one be able to find the chance needed to break the array. Furthermore, this array seemed to not be a Spiritual Array that would launch a direct offensive, but more like a "Trapping Array."

This so-called "Trapping Array" prioritized trapping and besiegement as its core. Naturally, this didn't mean that it was easy to deal with an offensive Spiritual Array. On the contrary, it would cause an even bigger headache for people, as wanting to extricate oneself after being trapped in such a Spiritual Array would truly require one to expend an extremely gigantic amount of effort. Once one's Spiritual Energy was consumed before one could break the Spiritual Array, one would truly become a fish on someone's dinner plate.

From the outside of the gigantic Spiritual Array, everyone was able to see Mu Chen not moving an inch as he stood within, causing doubts to appear in quite a few people.

Nevertheless, while doubt and suspicion rose within the hearts of the onlookers, a faint wrinkle appeared on the forehead of Xiao Huang. This Mu Chen has indeed quite some attainments in the aspect of Spiritual Arrays. Nevertheless, he wasn't worried about that, as he was extremely confident towards his own attainments in the aspect of Spiritual Arrays. He did not believe that Mu Chen would be able to exceed him in this aspect.

"Haha. This Spiritual Array of mine is called the Heaven Binding Spiritual Array, Captain Mu Chen. This array's forte isn't in its offensive

capabilities. However, the people that have entered it would become trapped akin to sinking into a quagmire, forever being unable to extricate themselves, all till their Spiritual Energy is totally consumed. If Captain Mu Chen's unable to break the array, you just have to say the word and hand the item to me, and I'll release all of you."

Xiao Huang's voice reverberated across the entire region, ringing into the Spiritual Array and entering Mu Chen's ears.

Giving no care towards Xiao Huang, Mu Chen raised his head to look towards the bright and resplendent Spiritual Array around him. Upon entering its interior, he could feel as if his body had become heavy, as if a mountain range was pressing down on his body. Furthermore, he could also sense an increase in loss of the Spiritual Energy present within his body.

"Heaven Binding Spiritual Array, huh... truly a bold claim."

As Mu Chen muttered to himself, he proceeded to stride forward, taking step after step towards the depth of the Spiritual Array.

In the outside world, everyone's gaze was tightly locked on the figure of Mu Chen.

Seeing this, a faint smile appeared on Xiao Huang's face. The deeper Mu Chen moves within his Spiritual Array, the stronger the binding was on his body, while the loss of Spiritual Energy would become even greater. Furthermore, the Spiritual Array arranged by him wasn't that simple as what Mu Chen had thought...

"Wanting to break my Spiritual Array... I'm afraid that you're too naive," muttered Xiao Huang. Tightly locking his eyes on Mu Chen as he strode forward, a chilling smile appeared at the corner of his mouth.

Under the attentive gazes of everyone, Mu Chen took approximately a few hundred steps forward, before coming to an abrupt halt. Looking at the complicated Spiritual Array covered in glowing patterns all around him, his eyes slightly narrowed. Relying on his attainments in Spiritual Arrays, he could faintly discern that the array patterns present in this location of the Spiritual Array seemed to be somewhat different from the

rest.

Having locked his gaze right onto Mu Chen, Xiao Huang's gaze slightly contracted upon seeing Mu Chen take an abrupt halt in his stride.

Looking at the array patterns sparkling with radiance that were all around him, Mu Chen's gaze slightly sparkled, before suddenly taking a seat down. Slowly closing his eyes, his mind started to slowly calm down, with any commotion in the outside world being isolated from him at this very moment.

Within the depths of his inner mind, a mysterious eye seemed to start to quietly open up.

This was his Heart's Eye.

As his Heart's Eye sprung open, although Mu Chen had yet to open his fleshly eyes, the surrounding environment had already been imprinted in his heart. Furthermore, everything appeared even more transparent, with his gaze completely penetrating through the voluminous Spiritual Fog present around him. One after another, the complicated array patterns were absorbed by his Heart's Eye, before being slowly understood and deciphered by him.

Under the activation of his Heart's Eye, Mu Chen was finally able to discover the differences present at this place. So it turned out that there were two offensive Spiritual Arrays concealed right before him. Although these two Spiritual Arrays weren't as strong as the "Heaven Binding Spiritual Array", they would absolutely cause serious injuries to him if he was unable to put up his defenses in time.

This Xiao Huang's truly crafty to actually hide Spiritual Arrays within a Spiritual Array!

"Spiritual Arrays within a Spiritual Array, huh..."

A sneer rang within Mu Chen heart before springing his eyes open. Standing up, he took a step forward.

Having turned cold due to Mu Chen's sudden stop, upon seeing the former take a step forward, a shade of happiness filled with chilling intent

instantly flashed across Xiao Huang's face.

Bang!

Suddenly, spiritual light sparkled within the Spiritual Array, before two Spiritual Arrays surfaced quietly from within the Spiritual Fog.

Being concealed by the Spiritual Fog, those two Spiritual Arrays were impossible to be detected by Mu Chen, yet everyone present outside were able to clearly spot them, causing their faces to instantly change. Clearly, all of them understood how crafty and vicious this hidden move of Xiao Huang was...

Naturally, wanting to arrange such an array within an array would require an extremely strong level of control. This caused quite a few people to feel astonished by the attainments Xiao Huang had in the aspect of Spiritual Arrays.

Bang!

As the faces of the crowd outside slightly changed, the concealed Spiritual Arrays had already started to reveal themselves. As Spiritual Energy fluctuations converged together, in the next instant, two frightening attacks that were more than sufficient to cause serious injuries to Mu Chen had already howled.

Whoosh!

However, just as these two concealed Spiritual Arrays were about to become fully activated, suddenly, two incomparably fierce rays of Spiritual Energy had shot out. Like bolts of lightning, they heavily struck against the two Spiritual Arrays. The attack by these two rays of Spiritual Energy was extremely crafty, smashing right against the weakest and frailest point on the two Spiritual Arrays.

Bang!

Therefore, the two Spiritual Arrays instantly froze, before cracks started to rapidly spread and extend across them. In the end, they completely exploded apart, sending Spiritual Energy storms billowing out, scattering much of the Spiritual Fog present around them.

"Hua."

Cries of astonishment and shock instantly rang from outside of the Spiritual Array, with the sneer present on Xiao Huang's face starting to slowly freeze.

As they looked over, they noticed that Mu Chen had maintained a posture with his two fingers pointed out. As of now, the brilliance of Spiritual Energy was still sparkling fervent on his fingertips. Clearly, the incomparably fierce rays of Spiritual Energy was launched by him.

"Formidable. He had actually seen through Xiao Huang's scheme."

Shock filled the hearts of quite a few people. This move by Xiao Huang was obscure and vicious. If they were to be in the shoes of Mu Chen, all of them would admit that they would absolutely be unable to evade the attacks from the two Spiritual Arrays. However, as of now, Mu Chen had actually took decisive action at the most crucial instant and instantly destroyed them by snatching the advantage of time. Such acute senses and method used was more than sufficient to cause shock and astonishment to appear in their hearts.

From the looks of it, both Mu Chen and Xiao Huang were mutually planning against each other. However, it was clear that Mu Chen had won the earlier engagement.

Under the countless astonished gazes coming from the surrounding area, Mu Chen slowly raised his head and shot a faint smile towards the direction of Xiao Huang.

"Your array within an array's still lacking in maturity."

Hearing that, Xiao Huang's face instantly turned chilly.

Chapter 556: Challenging Array with Array

"Your array within an array is still lacking."

When Mu Chen's indifferent-sounding words rang out, Xiao Huang's gaze rapidly turned dark as he coldly stared at the figure of Mu Chen. Giving a ridiculing laugh, he said, "It's too early for you to get happy. Wait till you truly break my Heaven Binding Spiritual Array before speaking again."

Upon hearing that, Mu Chen gave a laugh, though he didn't continue speaking any more words. He knew that the Spiritual Arrays that he had broken were merely the auxiliary killing move secretly arranged by Xiao Huang.

If he wasn't able to break this array, he wouldn't be able to extricate himself from within. Once the Spiritual Energy within his body gets completely consumed, he would become a fish on the chopping board and be under the total mercy of Xiao Huang.

Raising his head, Mu Chen focused his gaze towards the gigantic Spiritual Array around him, The array patterns sparkling with radiance was complicated to the point of causing him to become dazzled. Such a pattern was unfathomable for him. This "Heaven Binding Spiritual Array" was considerably mysterious and profound. Generally speaking, the most important part of a Spiritual Array would be in its central area. However, despite Mu Chen using his Heart's Eye to deeply stare at it, he wasn't able to sense the exact location of it.

If one wasn't able to break the central area of a Spiritual Array of such a rank, even Wen Qingxuan would require to pay quite a high price if one wanted to break out using pure brute force.

Thinking about this, Mu Chen's eyes faintly sparkled. Suddenly, brilliant radiance condense within his eyes, while his black pupils appeared to turn dazzling like the sparkling of gems. As his gaze slowly swept out, his

vision appeared to be able to penetrate through the fog that covered all of his surroundings.

"Heart's Eye?"

At this moment, upon noticing the gem-like sparkling eyes of Mu Chen, shock could not help appearing within Xiao Huang's heart, while his face grew increasingly dark. Only at this moment did he understand why Mu Chen was able to astutely discover the offensive Spiritual Array he had concealed. So it turns out that this fellow has actually managed to comprehend the Heart's Eye State.

Being a Spiritual Array Master, Xiao Huang was naturally extremely clear about how formidable the Heart's Eye State was. This was a state he had touched, yet was still unable to completely master as of now. However, from the looks of it, Mu Chen was actually able to comprehend and master this Heart's Eye State. This caused an unconcealable shadow of jealousy to flash within his eyes.

"Wanting to search and destroy the central area of my Spiritual Array?" A chilling shadow appeared within Xiao Huang's eyes. With a sneer, his hand seal suddenly changed.

Hum. Hum.

Following the change of his seal, spiritual light suddenly blossomed from within the Spiritual Array. In the next instant, the Spiritual Energy radiating from within the gigantic Spiritual Array seemed to have turned glue-like. Rapidly howling out, those strands of glue-like Spiritual Energy started to encase Mu Chen's body in a storm-like fashion.

As the glue-like Spiritual Energy rapidly spun around, not only did it interfere with Mu Chen's probing with his Heart's Eye, he was also shocked to discover that the Spiritual Energy within his body had appeared to have been extracted, unexpectedly showing signs of leaving his body and scattering away. Clearly, Xiao Huang was currently activating this "Heaven Binding Spiritual Array" to its full might.

"Since you want to battle with me on the aspect of Spiritual Arrays, I'll accompany you to the very end!" As Xiao Huang focused his cold gaze on

Mu Chen's figure, his indifferent voice resounded.

Bang! Rumble!

As the gigantic Spiritual Array sparkled with dazzling radiance, complicated array patterns wriggled like snakes as they interweaved into an abstruse orbit. This sudden eruption of frightening fluctuations lead the the unconcealable change on the faces of quite a few powerful groups present in the surroundings. If they were to enter a Spiritual Array of such might, they might be completely unable to extricate themselves.

Looking at the Spiritual Array that had been completely activated, Mu Chen took a deep breath, before the gem-like luster within his eyes grew increasingly bright and abstruse. In the next instant, array patterns started to shoot into his eyes, all of them bringing about layers of unpredictable brilliance.

He had let the tyrannical suction strength absorb the Spiritual Energy from within his body. From the outside of the Spiritual Array, everyone could see Spiritual Energy endlessly streaming out from within Mu Chen's body. As those Spiritual Energies gushed out, they were absorbed by the Spiritual Array, causing the radiance of it to grow increasingly dazzling, with its Spiritual Energy fluctuations growing increasingly tyrannical.

Noticing this spectacle, a sliver of worry flashed within the eyes of Xu Huang and the other two. The depletion of Spiritual Energy from Mu Chen's body was happening too fast. If this continued, he might not be able to endure much longer.

As they came to this conclusion, the three of them shot a look at Luo Li. However, the exquisite and porcelain-like face of the young girl appeared exceedingly calm. Nevertheless, upon noticing her jade-like hand that was tightly grasping the Luo Shen Sword, they instantly understood the presence of a sliver of worry within Luo Li's heart. After all, this Xiao Huang wasn't like the opponents they had bumped into in the past. This fellow possessed a level of strength that absolutely warranted such regard and importance.

Under the focus of various kinds of gazes, Mu Chen still didn't move a

single inch at all. With his hands drooping by the side and retracting into his sleeves, his abstruse eyes sparkling with gem-like luster swept across the interior of the Spiritual Array time and time again.

He was able to sense that there were two spots within this Spiritual Array where the Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiating from were the densest. One of which was right where he was, while the other was at an even deeper region. Over there, the Spiritual Fog was dense to the point of turning glue-like, completely obscuring everyone's vision. Clearly, deep within there was where Wen Qingxuan and the others were being trapped.

"The central area of this Spiritual Array should be uniquely concealed ..."

Despite the probing of Mu Chen, he was still unable to achieve much of an effect in locating the central area. This caused him to slightly narrow his eyes. Indeed, this Xiao Huang had much experience in arranging Spiritual Arrays, to actually know how to use unique methods to conceal the central area of the Spiritual Array. This way, it became difficult for him to locate the central area of the Spiritual Array, even after searching for quite some time.

As a glint flashed within his eyes, Mu Chen abruptly extended his palms from within his sleeves. With a flick of his finger, a Spiritual Seal abruptly shot out, before rapidly merging with the air. Instantly, the air rippled, before a glowing array that was approximately ten metres surfaced around his body. As the glowing array surfaced, the air around Mu Chen's body instantly became blurry, while his figure started to slowly be concealed within the blurry radiance.

"Oh?"

Upon seeing this, Xiao Huang's eyes instantly narrowed. Mu Chen had actually arranged a Spiritual Array within his Spiritual Array. However, the rank of the latter's Spiritual Array wasn't high, resulting in one that didn't possess much strength. However, that Spiritual Array seemed to have some protective effect. Not only did it conceal Mu Chen's figure, it had even lowered the rate of absorption of the Spiritual Energy from within his body.

"Do you think that you can last a bit longer by doing this? What nonsense. My Heaven Binding Spiritual Array's a Rank 5 Combination Diagram," muttered Xiao Huang, while a ridiculing smile appeared at the corner of his mouth. With a wave of his sleeve, boundless Spiritual Energy instantly surged from the gigantic Spiritual Array like a storm. As Spiritual Energy crazily converged together, they transformed into numerous giant Spiritual Energy-formed snakes. These giant snakes wrapped around the exterior of the Spiritual Array arranged by Mu Chen. Opening their giant mouths, suction forces swept out akin to a whale gulping down water, completely sucking away all of the Spiritual Energy present within the Spiritual Array.

Following the crazy devouring from those giant snakes, everyone could see that the Spiritual Array protecting Mu Chen had started to rapidly teeter on the verge of collapse.

Clearly, the Spiritual Array that Mu Chen had hastily arranged was completely unable to endure under to assault from Xiao Huang's "Heaven Binding Spiritual Array."

As gazes tightly locked on the commotion within the gigantic Spiritual Array, the faces of Xu Huang and the other two grew taut. At the same time, an anxious shadow appeared within the beautiful eyes of Wu Yingying in the distance while she tightly clenched her jade-like hands.

Bang! Bang!

The Spiritual Array that was protecting Mu Chen grew increasingly weak and thin. Clearly, it was already reaching its limit.

Seeing this, the smile at the corner of Xiao Huang's mouth grew increasingly cold and callous.

"It ends here," muttered Xiao Huang with an indifferent smile as he gave a furious clench of his hand.

Boom!

Finally, all of the Spiritual Energy within the Spiritual Array had been completely sucked clean. Losing the support from its Spiritual Energy, the

Spiritual Array instantly collapsed apart. The brilliance that was originally radiating started to rapidly turn dim, while the thin figure within appeared once again within everyone's sight.

The youth was still sitting there quietly, his robes fluttering in the air. However, his handsome face appeared exceedingly calm, with his eyes sparkling with gem-like luster, giving off a mysterious and abstruse sight.

"Now, how much more can you last?" Staring at Mu Chen, who had reappeared, Xiao Huang gave a smile as he spoke, his voice containing a somewhat ridiculing tone.

At this moment, Mu Chen slowly raised his head. Looking straight towards Xiao Huang, an arc slowly curled up at the corner of his mouth.

Seeing this, Xiao Huang's heart started to unknowingly sink down, while a feeling of unease started to gush from within.

"Since you wish to see, I'll use Spiritual Arrays to break yours."

As Mu Chen spoke with a faint smile, he gave a furious wave of his sleeve, only for boundless spiritual light to gush from within. Countless Spiritual Seals started to fly from the spiritual light akin to butterflies. Such vast numbers instantly caused quite a few people to become dumbfounded.

Humm! Humm!

Numerous astonishing Spiritual Seals swept out, before merging in the air around Mu Chen's body at an astonishingly rapidly speed. Instantly, frightening Spiritual Energy fluctuations started surging, causing even those Spiritual Energy-formed giant snakes to immediately fall back.

The bright and resplendent array patterns started to interweave like snakes, while a spherical radius of a hundred metres around Mu Chen had been completely flooded with spiritual light.

Under the blossoming of the spiritual light, everyone was able to see a gigantic Spiritual Array surfacing once again before Mu Chen. Two gigantic black lotus were slowly revolving within the Spiritual Array, all while radiating with astonishing fluctuations.

That was the Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array.

"You want to use something that's not even a Rank 5 Spiritual Array to break mine?" Upon seeing the black lotus Spiritual Array, Xiao Huang gave a chilling laugh as he said.

"If one's not possible, let's add another one."

Said Mu Chen with a laugh. As his voice rang out, everyone was shocked and astonished to see that yet another black lotus Spiritual Array had surfaced on the right hand side of Mu Chen.

"He had actually managed to arrange two Spiritual Arrays in such a short span of time!" cried some people in astonishment. All of them understood the need of time that a Spiritual Array Master required to arrange a Spiritual Array. However, Mu Chen had only prepared for a short moment before doing so. Such a speed was simply astonishing.

Seeing this, Xiao Haung's expression turned slightly dark.

Looking towards Xiao Huang, a faint smile appeared once more on Mu Chen's face as he said with a soft voice, "I'm still not done yet."

Extending his thin finger, Mu Chen gave a tap towards the empty space before him, only for spiritual light to blossom once more behind him. In the next instant, yet another black lotus Spiritual Array appeared in a flash before everyone's shocked and astonished gazes.

Three Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Arrays!

Looking at the appearance of the third Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array, Xiao Huang's expression finally turned extremely ugly.

Chapter 557: Neglecting one while attending the other

The three Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Arrays sparkled with dazzling brilliance as they floating around Mu Chen. Wave-like Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiated from them, unexpectedly squeezing much of the glue-like Spiritual Fog in the surroundings to scatter apart. At this moment, Mu Chen appeared to have an area carved out especially for him alone by the three Spiritual Arrays that was helping him resist against the "Heaven Binding Spiritual Array".

Upon seeing this spectacle, the people present outside of the Heaven Binding Spiritual Array could not help exclaiming in admiration. Who would have expected that Mu Chen would actually be able to arrange three Spiritual Arrays that possessed rather powerful might in such an astonishingly quick manner?

Darkly staring at Mu Chen, who was under the protection of the three Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Arrays, Xiao Huang finally said after a while with a sneer, "Do you think that you'll be able to contend against my Heaven Binding Spiritual Array with your three Spiritual Arrays? Could you be that naïve to believe that you'll be able to rely on quantity to supplement the disparity in the ranks between our Spiritual Arrays?"

Although Mu Chen's move was somewhat unexpected by Xiao Huang, it didn't cause him to feel flustered. After all, although the three Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Arrays were quite powerful, he was able to sense that they had yet to reach the realm of a Rank 5 Spiritual Array. If Mu Chen believed that he would be able to break his Rank 5 combination Diagram just like that, he would truly be indulging in a fantasy.

"How will anyone know without trying it out?"

Replied Mu Chen with a faint smile, while an incisive shadow rapidly condensed within his black pupils.

"Oh really?" Shooting a look at Mu Chen, Xiao Huang abruptly changed

his hand seal, instantly causing spiritual light to blossom from the gigantic Spiritual Array. In the next instant, Spiritual Energy-formed giant snakes rapidly condensed from it, with the quantity being close to ten times the number that was previously formed. Upon their appearance, those Spiritual Energy-formed giant snakes instantly opened their giant maws as they started to crazily devour the Spiritual Energy present in the three Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Arrays arranged by Mu Chen.

Clearly, he had planned to devour all of the Spiritual Energy within Mu Chen's Spiritual Array's to cause them to lose their Spiritual Energy support. This way, those Spiritual Arrays would dissipate and scatter apart, no matter how strong or powerful they were.

Seeing this, Mu Chen extended his finger and gave a light tap of the space before him.

Humm.

The three Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Arrays started to revolve. As the black demonic lotuses revolved, astonishingly rampant Spiritual Energy fluctuations instantly swept out.

"Go."

A soft roar suddenly rang from Mu Chen's mouth, before the black lotuses within the three Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Arrays transformed into rays of black light and shot out. They didn't shoot straight towards a single location, instead splitting up into three directions. Although there were bright and resplendent spiritual lights present in all three of these directions, by relying on his Heart's Eye, Mu Chen was able to sense an emptiness present there underneath this brilliance.

Clearly, Xiao Huang was purposely attempting to conceal something. If Mu Chen had guessed correctly, those three points should be where the central area of the Heaven Binding Spiritual Array was. However, there should only be one central area of a Spiritual Array. But, from the looks of it, there were now three. Clearly, this was something done purposefully by Xiao Huang, attempting to use such a method to mislead the probing of

others towards his Spiritual Array.

Being real or faux was the hardest thing to get right.

However, he never imagined that those three suspected points for the central area had all been successfully probed out by Mu Chen. Although the latter was unable to differentiate which was the one where the real central area was present in, it did not matter as the latter had sent his attacks to every one of them!

Upon seeing this, Xiao Huang's face instantly contorted, with shock and astonishment flashed within the depths of his eyes. This Mu Chen's indeed hard to deal with. He has actually found out the central area of the Heaven Binding Spiritual Array that I've spent so much time concealing! The Heart Eye State's indeed extremely formidable.

"However, wanting to break my array's central area is not as easy as you think!"

As a dark expression filled Xiao Huang's face, he waved his sleeves, only for the Spiritual Energy-formed giant snakes to howl one after another from within. Rushing at lightning speeds, they heavily smashed against the glow from the beams of light formed by the black lotuses.

Boom! Boom!

Waves of rampant Spiritual Energy shock waves swept out. Faced against the battering from the Spiritual Energy-formed giant snakes, the speed of the black lotus-formed beams of light immediately became slower, with the Spiritual Energies present within them rapidly melting away. Although the dual lotuses from the Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Arrays were formidable, compared to the Heaven Binding Spiritual Array, a Rank 5 Combination Diagram, there was still some disparity present.

"Explode."

Looking calmly at the black lotuses, which were not hard pressed to gain any ground, a faint glint flashed within Mu Chen's eyes, before abruptly clenching his hands.

Bang!

As his voice softly rang out, minute glowing cracking patterns instantly appeared on the surface of the six lotuses, before growing larger and increasing in number. Finally, reaching their limits, the lotuses furiously exploded apart under the dazzling radiance shining from within.

Bang! Bang!

Storm-like shock waves swept out, instantly shattering every Spiritual Energy-formed giant snake along the way.

Seeing this spectacle, Xiao Huang's gaze grew increasingly dark, while fury and angry rose within his eyes. Did this fellow truly think that my Heaven Binding Spiritual Array's that easy to deal with?!

"Break for me!" Mu Chen's overbearingly aggressive assault was something that Xiao Huang couldn't endure. If Mu Chen truly broke the central area of his Spiritual Array, it would suffer severe damage to the point where collapse might become a possibility. Therefore, at this moment, he was unable to continue remaining calm and collected anymore.

Rapidly changing his hand seals, the Spiritual Energy-formed giant snakes abruptly converged together, before transforming into three gigantic snake disks. As spiritual light blossomed out, powerful fluctuations started to radiate from them.

Bang!

Bringing about frightening shock waves, the exploding lotuses viciously smashed against the three gigantic snake disks.

Spiritual Energy storms swept out, with the Spiritual Energy contained within them wreaking havoc and destruction to the point of causing the entire mountain peak to faintly tremble.

The powerful energies present from both sides violently collided together.

At this moment, a solemn expression had appeared on Mu Chen's

handsome face. Black and white Spiritual Energies in fusion with one another gushed from his body like a flood, before sweeping towards the collision points in a wave-like fashion, attempting to destroy the gigantic snake disks that were obstructing the way of his exploding black lotuses.

"Hmph."

At this moment, Xiao Huang had already stood up, a cold and dark expression hanging on his face, while a chilling glint sparkled within his eyes as he stared right at Mu Chen's figure. With a thought, astonishing sounds erupted from the "Heaven Binding Spiritual Array", only for the dense Spiritual Fog present within the entire array to hide the skies and cover the earth as they gushed straight towards Mu Chen.

He wanted to activate the entire strength of the Heaven Binding Spiritual Array to suppress Mu Chen!

Bang! Bang!

As all of the strength of the Heaven Binding Spiritual Array started sweeping towards Mu Chen, everyone was able to see that the attacks from the black lotuses were unable to gain any ground. In fact, faced against the Spiritual Energy pressure that hid the sky and covered the earth and suppressed over, they were sent retreating back in succession.

Some people started sighing in regret. Even though Mu Chen had arranged three considerably powerful Spiritual Arrays, from the looks of it, he was still unable to contend against Xiao Huang's Heaven Binding Spiritual Array.

The faces of Xu Huang and the rest were covered in solemn expressions, with their eyes brimming with anxiousness and worry.

Luo Li's beautiful eyes was locked onto the confrontation happening within the Spiritual Array, before her eyes started to faintly sparkle.

"Mu Chen's unable to hold on any longer." Noticing this scene, Wu Yingying said as she bit her lips.

Wu Ling's eyes narrowed as he stared into the Spiritual Array. After deeply pondering for a while, he proceeded to shake his head, though he

did not say any words.

Bang!

The attacks from the black lotuses were finally suppressed by the boundless Spiritual Energy, before finally forced to exploded in an overbearing fashion. A violent shiver shook through Mu Chen's body at the same moment as he hastily took a dozen steps back, with slight signs of his Spiritual Energy being thrown into disorder.

"Looks like you're indeed naïve to use this little ability to contend against my Heaven Binding Spiritual Array." Seeing this, Xiao Huang could not help sneering, while a sliver of satisfaction gushed out from his heart.

"Oh really?"

Hearing this, Mu Chen raised his head and gave a laugh, his smile appearing somewhat strange.

Humm! Humm!

Just as Mu Chen's smile surfaced, dazzling brilliance suddenly erupted in the region. As everyone looked over, they could see Spiritual Arrays approximately a dozen metres in size surfacing from within. The ranks of these Spiritual Arrays weren't high. However, what was different was their considerably large numbers. Rapidly enveloping over, they appeared to form small-scale prisons, encasing the boundless Spiritual Energy within the Heaven Binding Spiritual Array.

Within a short span of a dozen breaths, the Spiritual f

Fog within the Heaven Binding Spiritual Array had rapidly dissipated. The considerable number of small-scale Spiritual Arrays had actually sealed the Spiritual Energy of the Heaven Binding Spiritual Array.

"What a good method!"

The eyes of the countless experts watching this spectacular fight from the outside furiously lit up while being unable to bear crying out in astonishment.

The three Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Arrays Mu Chen had

arranged seemed to be just a distraction. He had purposefully lured Xiao Huang to use the Spiritual Energy of the Heaven Binding Spiritual Array to encircle and trap him, while arranging those small-scale Spiritual Arrays in the dark. They didn't possess much power, and would not deal much damage if they were to be used to launch attacks. Yet. Mu Chen had used them in an ingenious manner. Instead of using them in offense, he had miraculously used them as a prison, ones that locked up Spiritual Energies within them...

Shock appeared on Xiao Huang's face as he took in the scene before him, with terror even surfacing within his eyes. However, he quickly regained his clarity, before fiercely clenching his teeth while coldly growling, "Do you think you can split up and dissipate the Spiritual Energy within my array? You're simply making a vain attempt!"

With a wave of his sleeve, the trapped Spiritual Energy instantly grew rampant, rushing crazily against those small-scale Spiritual Arrays. Under the rampant battering, those small-scale Spiritual Arrays started to rapidly teeter on the verge of collapse. Clearly, they were unable to endure for much longer.

"Haha."

Seeing this, Mu Chen didn't put up any resistance at all. On the contrary, he gave a light laugh in response. Staring right at Xiao Huang, he said, "I never planned to break your array in such a fashion. However, you might have neglected something while attending to me."

As he spoke, Mu Chen extended his finger and gave a light tap towards the depths of the Spiritual Array.

Seeing this, Xiao Huang appeared to have thought about something, causing his expression to furiously contort. He hastily turned his head around, before his entire body started trembling uncontrollably. That's because the dense Spiritual Fog that was originally present within the depths of his Spiritual Array had unexpectedly thinned out. As this happened, the figure of an absolutely beautiful girl dressed in golden battle armor with a golden war spear in her hand started to slowly become

clear.

At this moment though, a chilly expression that caused people's hearts to palpitate had covered the entirety of the face that could cause the downfall of countries.

That was Wen Qingxuan!

Chapter 558: Rescuing the beauty

Hua.

When Wen Qingxuan's beautiful figure appeared within the Spiritual Array, clamoring noises instantly erupted across the entire region. Everyone's gaze shot over, only to see what seemed to be glowing Spiritual Energy lines wrapped around her body. Those glowing lines appeared to be binding her, causing her to be unable to extricate herself.

However, at this very moment, those glowing spiritual lines that were originally shining extremely bright had become much more weak and dim.

Present behind Wen Qingxuan's back were a dozen other figures, all of them having the appearance of lovable and dainty young girls. Clearly, they were the group members of the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy,

Gazes converged on the body of Wen Qingxuan. When everyone noticed the drastically weakened glowing Spiritual Energy lines, a wave of shock suddenly gushed from their hearts, before instantly turning their eyes towards Mu Chen...

Only at this did they realise exactly what Mu Chen's plan was! He had actually made the latter purposefully use all of those methods to force Xiao Huang to activate the entire might of his Spiritual Array to deal with him.

That's because not only was he trapped within the Spiritual Array, Wen Qingxuan and the others from the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy were trapped in it, too.

Clearly, Xiao Huang had wanted to trap Wen Qingxuan. To accomplish that, he would require to expend an extreme amount of energy to suppress the latter. However, with that power being forced to the point to be used to deal with Mu Chen, it was inevitable that Xiao Huang wouldn't be able to attend to Wen Qingxuan. This had allowed for the bindings around Wen Qingxuan to become weak.

What kind of person was Wen Qingxuan? The former Numero Uno of

the point rankings, and the current Ranked 3. The strength she possessed was on a level such that even the Numero Uno on the rankings, Ji Xuan would not dare to neglect one slight bit. This time, a large reason why she could be trapped was absolutely due to Xiao Huang's scheme to use her group members to bind her. If not, there was no one that would believe that Xiao Huang would truly be able to deal with Wen Qingxuan by himself.

Therefore, once Wen Qingxuan had broken out of the array, the incoming situation from Xiao Huang would definitely be considerably tragic.

Clearly, from the very beginning, Mu Chen already had such a plan in mind.

"Bastard!"

A sliver of fury as well as heart-palpitating fear finally gushed from the cold and indifferent face of Xiao Huang. This move by Mu Chen's was truly somewhat vicious, seemingly destroying all of his footing in an instant.

He seemed to be able to clearly sense the cold gaze shooting over from Wen Qingxuan's beautiful eyes. Clearly, the latter's hatred for him was not one bit weak at all.

Feeling that, Xiao Huang shot a fierce glare at Mu Chen, before changing his hand seal in haste, wanting to activate the strength of the Heaven Binding Array to trap Wen Qingxuan once again. After all, compared to her, it was easier to deal with Mu Chen.

However, at this moment, most of the Spiritual Energy of his Spiritual Array had been trapped by the Spiritual Arrays arranged by Mu Chen. Even though they were battered to the brink of collapse, Xiao Huang wasn't able to instantly break them apart.

As Xiao Huang hastily activated his Spiritual Energy, Wen Qingxuan shot a chilling glare towards him with her beautiful eyes. In the next instant, with a move of her soul-stirring figure, bright and resplendent golden light started to blossom, while a clear cry of a phoenix seemed to

resound across the horizon from within her body.

As the golden light blossomed, the snake-like golden lines present around Wen Qingxuan's alluring figure started to rapidly dissolve away.

Seeing this, Xiao Huang's face instantly became abnormally ugly, before hastily changing his hand seals. In the next instant, the Spiritual Energy trapped within Mu Chen's Spiritual Arrays started to grow even more rampant as they battered within their prisons. At this very moment, Xiao Huang needed to activate the might of his Spiritual Array once again.

Bang! Bang!

However, after splitting up and trapping the Spiritual Energies of the Heaven Binding Array with much difficulty, how could Mu Chen let Xiao Huang recondense the might of his Spiritual Array that easily? With a sneer, Mu Chen activated his Spiritual Arrays, trying his best to drag the time on. Only by doing so would he be able to let Wen Qingxuan smoothly extricate herself from her bindings.

With the two people activating the might of their respective Spiritual Arrays, they were deadlocked for a short amount of time.

Under this deadlock, Xiao Huang's face grew even more ugly.

"Xiao Huang!"

As the glowing Spiritual Energy lines around Wen Qingxuan's body grew even thinner and thinner, Xiao Huang finally reached his limit, causing him to send a low roar.

Upon hearing that low roar, a chilling glint instantly flashed within the eyes of the cold and fierce-looking Xiao Wang by his side. Clenching his hand, a fiery-red horn bow appeared in his hand. Instantly cocking it, he aimed the arrowhead straight at Mu Chen. As flames started to rise on the arrow tip, extremely fierce and scorching-hot fluctuations started to radiate from it, causing it to appear as if they wanted to shatter the space before them.

Whoosh!

However, without waiting for Xiao Wang to draw his bow, an incomparably fierce sword light suddenly rushed towards the sky. In the next instant, a shadow sword was condensed from the sword light, fiercely chopping down right on the head of Xiao Wang.

Swish!

As the shadow sword chopped down, even the air beneath it was sliced into two. Sensing the sharp and incisiveness that couldn't be blocked, the faces of everyone instantly changed.

Xiao Huang's eyes slightly narrowed as his figure retreated. Tilting the arrow tip horizontally, he relaxed his fingers, instantly sending a fiery-red shadow arrow howling out. As rampant Spiritual Energy encased its body, it shattered the air apart as it travelled.

Whoosh!

As the shadow sword heavily smashed against the shadow arrow, rampant shock waves instantly exploded, with the surrounding mountain peaks shaken to the point of collapse. On the ground, deep fissures were carved on the earth below by the Sword Aura that blossomed.

As the two attacks gradually dissipated, a dark expression appeared on Xiao Wang's face as he raised his head to look at the absolutely beautiful young girl standing not far in the air. At this moment, a long sword rippling with light was present in her hand, while a chilling shadow appeared within the pair of ice-cold pupils as they locked onto him.

"The previous rule does not allow for you to take action."

"You don't have the qualifications to care about whether I take action or not," replied Xiao Wang with a sneer, his gaze brimming with evil intent as he stared right at Luo Li. Although the latter had an absolutely beautiful appearance, something that would cause the hearts of the majority of males to stir, Xiao Wang still remained indifferent towards her. On the contrary, his hands clenched tightly around the fiery-red bull horn bow in his hands. Flames start to bunch up on its body as scorching-hot Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiated from it. Clearly, this fiery-red bull horn bow was a rather powerful Spiritual Artifact.

Shooting an indifferent look at him, Luo Li didn't choose to give a reply. Slowly raising the Luo God Sword in her hand, extremely powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuations started to slowly sweep out. Water-like rippling patterns started to surface on the body of the Luo God Sword, while Sword Aura condensed on its edges, lengthening and contracting indefinitely.

Everyone was able to sense the fierce fluctuations radiating from Luo Li's body. Faced against it, the faces of quite a few experts could not help changing as they stared in shock at Luo Li. At this moment, they were able to sense a dense flavor of danger radiating from the latter's body.

At this moment, Xiao Wang also could not help puckering his face as he tightly clenched the giant fiery-red bow in his hands. Green veins started to squirm along his arm as he tightly stared at Luo Li. However, at the very end, he didn't take action, as he could feel a great threat coming from the latter.

Not only did the young girl before him possess an absolutely beautiful appearance, her strength was equally terrifying...

"Truly worthy of Queen Luo."

On the mountain peak in the distance, Wu Ling tightly stared at the elegant figure of Luo Li as he spoke, a look of admiration surfacing on his delicate-looking face. At this moment, even he could faintly feel piercing pain on his skin, caused by the incomparably fierce Sword Aura quietly roaming from the latter.

"She's extremely formidable," said Wu Yingying as she cast her little mouth to the side. Although she had a haughty and arrogant character, faced against such an outstanding figure like Luo Li, it was inevitable for her to not have taken much confidence in herself.

"Haha. During the final point of the Spiritual Road, if not for her purposefully aiming for Ji Xuan, Wen Qingxuan might not have been able to obtain the championship," said Wu Ling with a smile. "She's an astonishingly talented girl. In the future, even within the Great Thousand World, her splendor would radiate far and wide. That fellow, Mu Chen's

truly lucky with women."

As he reached the end of his words, even with Wu Ling's character, he could not help sighing in admiration. After all, girls like Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan were truthfully too outstanding.

"A toad can't always eat the flesh of swans," snorted Wu Yingying softly as she gave not the slightest bit of care for Mu Chen's face.

"Mu Chen's not a toad..."

Wu Ling said with a smile. Looking at the thin figure standing within the Heaven Binding Array, he muttered, "How can a person that's able to cause fear and dread in Ji Xuan be normal? Haha, this is truly getting interesting. When the two fellows who absolutely can't tolerate each other at all were to bump into each other once again, who knows which one would be able to laugh at the very end."

"That fellow, Ji Xuan's someone that's not good to deal with."

Wu Ling's forehead slightly wrinkled as he spoke about Ji Xuan, with a rarely seen solemness, as well as dread surfacing on his delicate-looking face.

Bang! Bang!

Incomparably rampant Spiritual Energy wreaked havoc within the Heaven Binding Array, causing more and more cracks to appear on the small-scale Spiritual Arrays, due to the increasing assault. Being of quite low ranks, faced under such rampant Spiritual Energy shock waves, the small-scale Spiritual Arrays weren't able to endure for much longer.

This was something that Mu Chen was clear about. Therefore, he had an extremely simple plan, which was to do his best to drag on as long as possible to allow Wen Qingxuan and the others to smoothly extricate themselves from their bindings.

"Break for me!"

A malevolent expression appeared on Xiao Huang's face. With a change of his hand seal, a fierce roar rang from his mouth, rumbling like the

crack of thunder.

Bang!

Rampant Spiritual Energy gushed out like a fierce tiger leaving the mountain, something which the small-scale Spiritual Arrays could no longer endure anymore. With a final bang, they were forced to the point of exploding apart. Instantly, astonishingly vast Spiritual Energy swept out like a tsunami, before condensing together once again.

Bang! Rumble.

A storm started surging once more within the Heavenly Binding Array as the frightening Spiritual Energies started to condense together. Faced against this, even Mu Chen could not help turning solemn. A Rank 5 Combination Diagram was not easy to deal with.

However, it's fortunate that he had already achieved his goal.

Raising his head, Mu Chen looked into the depths of the Heaven Binding Array to see Wen Qingxuan, with a cold expression on her beautiful face as she extended her jade-like hand. Grabbing onto her golden war spear, she took a heavy step forward. As golden light swept out, the glowing Spiritual Energy lines surrounding her alluring figure instantly melted away completely.

As the glowing Spiritual Energy lines dissipated away, the Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiating from Wen Qingxuan instantly increased drastically. Extending her palm, she patted with lightning speed towards Pin'er, Le'er and the other girls present behind her.

Bang! Bang!

As gales smashed against their bodies, golden light flashed, completely shattering the glowing lines present around their alluring figures. Furthermore, the power from her blows had also sent them flying, shooting right out of the radius of the Spiritual Array's boundary.

"Dammit!"

Seeing this, Xiao Huang's face instantly turned dark, before viciously

glaring towards Mu Chen. As an ominous glint flashed within his eyes, he gave a wave of his sleeve, causing all those rampant Spiritual Energies that were about to trap Wen Qingxuan again to condense together. Transforming into a dozen Spiritual Energy-formed giant snakes, they rapidly shot towards Mu Chen at lightning speed.

Since Wen Qingxuan has already broke through her bindings, let's capture Mu Chen and make him a hostage.

Seeing that Xiao Huang had changed his target to him, Mu Chen's eyes instantly contracted. With a clench of his hand, the Devouring Dragon Demonic Spear appeared in a flash. With a shake of its body, the spear explosively shot out. As it transformed into a demonic dragon, it smashed head-on against the incoming giant snakes.

Bang! Bang!

Astonishing Spiritual Energies wreaked havoc as they swept out like a storm. The demonic dragon that transformed from the Devouring Dragon Demonic Spear was sent flying back, transforming back into its spear form as it headed back to Mu Chen.

Extending his hand to grab it, a violent tremble shook through Mu Chen, causing him to fly back. In this furious move by Xiao Huang, he had seemingly activated the entire might of his Heaven Binding Array. In a head-on confrontation, even Mu Chen was forced into a disadvantage.

As Mu Chen shot back, before he could forcibly stabilise himself, a delicate fragrance gushed from his back, before he felt a soft, boneless jade-like hand pressing down on his back, helping him completely defend against the impact that had sent him flying.

Panning his head around, he immediately noticed the beautiful face of Wen Qingxuan that was able to cause the downfall of countries. Shrugging his shoulders in helplessness, he said "This doesn't seem right. It's clearly me, the hero, saving the beauty. How did the roles change?"

Hearing that, Wen Qingxuan could not help letting a smile surface on her originally ice-cold face as she raised an eye towards Mu Chen. However, compared to the haughtiness and arrogance that was usually

present, it was replaced by a somewhat gentle shade.

Hesitating for a moment, a pinkish shade appeared on her exquisite face, while her red lips slightly parted, allowing for her voice to ring out.

"Thank you."

Chapter 559: Breaking the Array

"Thank you."

Thinking back, this was the first time that Mu Chen had heard Wen Qingxuan say such gentle words towards him, causing him to instantly gawk upon hearing her. In the past, regardless of the situation, Wen Qingxuan had always appeared like a phoenix standing high in the skies, with her beautiful eyes brimming with soul-stirring arrogance. This was especially true when faced against the opposite gender, when her strength and unwillingness to admit defeat would be displayed to the extreme.

Therefore, faced against this absolutely stunning figure before him, Mu Chen clearly wasn't feeling quite at ease.

Nevertheless, his stunned state didn't last too long, before noticing the familiar prideful smile appearing on Wen Qingxuan's exquisite face. Flinging a look at Mu Chen, she replied, "You're too disappointing to come over to do the 'hero saves the beauty' act with such little ability. Don't put yourself in the role of a hero."

Mu Chen could not help twitching the corner of his mouth upon hearing that. Staring at this discriminating girl with an ill gaze, an impulsion of wanting to arrange an array and tossing her into it seemed to gush within him.

Spotting the ill gaze coming from Mu Chen, the beautiful smile present on Wen Qingxuan's exquisite face grew even more sweet, before turning her eyes around. Looking straight towards the ashen and dark-faced Xiao Huang, the smile on her face started to slowly dissipate away, with a soul-chilling cold replacing it.

Looking at the chilling face of Wen Qingxuan, Xiao Huang could not help letting a shiver shake through his body.

Outside of the Heaven Binding Spiritual Array, everyone immediately cast sympathetic gazes towards Xiao Huang and his group, as they were able to clearly feel the flames of fury concealed underneath Wen Qingxuan's ice-cold face.

Looking towards Mu Chen, Wen Qingxuan spoke in a soft voice, "Can you let me handle him from here on, Mu Chen?"

Shooting a look at Wen Qingxuan, he was able to spot the dense flames of fury present within those soul-stirringly beautiful eyes. Nevertheless, he shook his head and replied, "This Spiritual Array's not simple. Since you're not an expert in Spiritual Arrays, it would consume an extreme amount of your strength, even if you were to break it. Therefore, you should conserve your strength to deal with those troubling matters that will happen after this. They won't be any simple matters to deal with."

Xiao Huang and his Academy Alliance were indeed extremely strong. Nevertheless, though, they weren't that strong to the level of daring to challenge Wen Qingxuan. However, from the looks of it, they had truly dared to take action. Mu Chen would absolutely not believe that anyone would say there wasn't anything strange in this place.

Mu Chen's words contained a deeper meaning within them, causing a tremble to shake through Wen Qingxuan's heart. Nevertheless, knitting her slender and crescent moon-like eyebrows, she slightly moved her red lips. Although Mu Chen was a Spiritual Array Master, she was extremely clear about how formidable Xiao Huang's "Heaven Binding Spiritual Array" was. From the looks of it, without talking about Mu Chen, even she would have to pay some price to break it apart.

Therefore, faced against such a formidable Spiritual Array, even Mu Chen would feel rather pained to deal with it. By the off-chance that she was to make a miscalculation, it would become a matter of them losing face. Although Wen Qingxuan would usually not give any face to Mu Chen, under the attentive gazes of everyone in the surroundings, she did not wish for Mu Chen to lose face in such a manner.

"Could it be that you're actually worried about me losing face?"

Mu Chen seemed to be able to spot the thoughts swirling within Wen Qingxuan's gaze, causing him to raise his eyebrows in response. Giving a laugh, he raised his head to look towards Xiao Huang in the distance while saying, "However, don't worry. Since I've said those words, I naturally have

my assurance. Although his Heaven Binding Spiritual Array isn't weak, I'm afraid that he doesn't have the qualifications to trap me."

As he said those words, a smile surfaced on Mu Chen's face. This wasn't a smile of satisfaction, but arcs of confidence. One had to say that his smile possessed a considerable amount of charisma and charm.

"As if I care about you dying or not."

Looking at the smile present on Mu Chen's handsome face, a faint ripple appeared within Wen Qingxuan's beautiful eyes. Nevertheless, turning her gaze away upon spotting Mu Chen looking over, she slightly flung her red lips, before replying, "You males always love to show off."

"Okay, okay. Seeing that you've ran such a long way to help me, I won't snatch this from you. You better hurry up and deal with this lousy array. I'm already unable to endure wanting to give that fellow a heavy beating," said Wen Qingxuan as she waved her hand.

Hearing that, Mu Chen gave a laugh and stopped continuing to speak. Slowly walking forward, his gaze grew increasingly cold and fierce, before it locked right on Xiao Huang.

Seeing Mu Chen's actions, Xiao Huang instantly knew what Mu Chen wanted to do. This caused a shadow of fury to flash within his eyes as he sneered, "What's the matter? Having a person to support you has given you quite a bit of confidence, is it?"

"I'm just gunning for those 20,000 points." replied Mu Chen with a smile.

"I afraid that you don't have the ability to back that up!" Noticing the ice-cold expression present on Wen Qingxuan's exquisite face, dread and fear appeared within his eyes as he roared back in reply, "It's best that you two take action together. Wanting to break my array by yourself is nothing but nonsense."

An ambiguous smile appeared on Mu Chen's face as he looked towards Xiao Huang and replied back, "If you're afraid, just say so. There's no need to use such words to provoke us. However, fret not. I, myself, am more

than enough to break your array."

"Such shameless boasting! I really want to see exactly what ability you have to backup your words!"

A faint sparkle appeared within Xiao Huang's eyes, while a chilling shadow of happiness flashed within. From the looks of it, their Academy Alliance already possessed no advantages left. If Mu Chen had collaborated with Wen Qingxuan, even with his "Heaven Binding Spiritual Array", it was simply impossible for him to hold them back. Fortunately, though, that rampant Mu Chen fellow had actually dared to make such a bold claim.

If he was able to capture Mu Chen, they would hold the advantage in this situation once again.

Mu Chen gave a laugh in response, naturally knowing what Xiao Huang was thinking in his mind. Nevertheless, without speaking anymore words, he slowly clenched his hands tightly. Black lightning started to abruptly gush from his body, crackling as they encased his entire body.

At this moment, exceedingly tyrannical energy fluctuations started to radiate from his body.

As the black lightning continued to condense together, they seemed to congeal into what seemed like a lightning liquid, before slowly flowing around the surface of Mu Chen's body. This caused Mu Chen to appear akin to a lightning god standing within the lightning, possessing extraordinary might and power.

At this moment, Xiao Huang could also sense the tyrannical fluctuations radiating from Mu Chen's body, causing him to narrow his eyes. Not daring to show anymore neglect, with a change of his hand seal, boundless Spiritual Energy howled from within the Heaven Binding Spiritual Array. As the Spiritual Energy-formed giant snakes appeared once again, they hissed and flicked their tongues while coldly glaring at Mu Chen.

Raising his head, Mu Chen extended his feet, before fiercely stomping the ground.

Boom!

As the sole of his feet landed on the ground, spider web-like cracks immediately extended out rapidly. The heavy force present by his stomp appeared to have caused even the entire mountain to tremble.

Bang!

As the ground shook, Mu Chen's figure explosively shot out in a spectre-like fashion, while the black lightning present on his body crazily sparkled. At the same time, his black and white fusion Spiritual Energy started to gush forth akin to a flood.

Following his successful crossing of his Spiritual Energy Disaster, the Spiritual Energy present within Mu Chen's body had undergone a drastic increase in quantity. Coupled with his fleshly body, the amount of power he could erupt with was something that was even comparable to experts in the realm of the first level of their Spirit Disaster.

Mu Chen activated his power to his maximum might. Not choosing to recklessly launch an assault, he shot straight towards a certain location of the Heaven Binding Spiritual Array. That was precisely one of the three possible locations where the central area might be.

Being a Spiritual Array Master, Mu Chen was naturally clear that forcefully breaking a Spiritual Array apart would be the most stupidest decision. Only by finding the central area of the Spiritual Array would one be able to break it in the easiest fashion.

"You truly are dreaming if you want to break the central area of my Heaven Binding Spiritual Array!"

Upon seeing Mu Chen's actions, Xiao Huang's expression instantly sunk, before turning into a sneer. With a wave of his sleeve, dozens of gigantic hundred-metre long Spiritual Energy-formed giant snakes split apart the air as they swept towards Mu Chen without the slightest bit of mercy.

Bang!

Bringing along boundless Spiritual Energy, Mu Chen sent a fist rumbling out, causing black lightning to explode the air, before smashing against

the bodies of those Spiritual Energy-formed giant snakes.

Bang! Bang!

As the lightning howled out, it instantly shattered multiple Spiritual Energy-formed giant snakes. However, those Spiritual Energies started to condense together in an extremely quick fashion. As they did so, they transformed back to their initial form of giant snakes before crazily rushing forth once again.

Bang!

Astonishing shock waves wreaked havoc as they swept out from the collisions between the black lightning and the giant snakes, causing the entire mountain range to endlessly shake.

Seeing such a confrontation of attacks, Wen Qingxuan's eyebrows started wrinkling up. Being able to activate all of the Spiritual Energy within his Heaven Binding Spiritual Array, Xiao Huang was not one bit afraid of the possibility of him consuming his strength. However, why would Mu Chen choose such a head-on confrontation?

If this continued, it wouldn't do any good for Mu Chen.

Seeing Mu Chen shatter one of his Spiritual Energy-formed giant snakes after another, Xiao Huang was not one bit flustered. On the contrary, a sliver of ridicule surfaced within the depths of his eyes. He knew that if he continued this, Mu Chen would definitely suffer a defeat within his Spiritual Array.

"Since you're so happy killing my snakes, I'll add a bit more difficulty for you." Xiao Huang's ridiculing voice softly rang out, before proceeding to give a flick of his finger. In the next instant, Spiritual Energy suddenly condensed towards the flicked direction. Transforming into dozens of giant snakes, their giant tails starting to smash down akin to falling meteors.

Bang!

Still not falling back, Mu Chen sent a fist out, rumbling heavily towards those Spiritual Energy-formed giant snakes. In the next instant,

frightening Spiritual Energy fluctuations exploded, the shock waves instantly formed sending him flying back. Such was the impact that signs of disorder even appeared in the Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiating from his body.

Seeing this, the faces of Xu Huang and the others standing outside of the Heaven Binding Spiritual Array grew taut.

"What a fellow, he doesn't know the immensity of the heavens and earth!" Seeing this, Xiao Huang could not help deepening the chilling smile present at the corner of his mouth.

Whoosh!

However, this smile didn't continue for long as his pupils furiously contracted. That's because he noticed Mu Chen making a sudden turn around, rushing straight towards the western side of his Spiritual Array. Spiritual light radiated from the air present there, with array patterns being concealed behind the bright and resplendent spiritual light.

That place didn't seem eye-catching at all. However, Xiao Huang's expression instantly turned ugly, while shock and horror gushed from his eyes.

That's because Xiao Huang knew that that was the place where the true central area of his Spiritual Array lied. However, he never expected Mu Chen to have actually long discover where its location was. He had purposefully launched a fierce offensive in another direction for the sake of lowering Xiao Huang's guard.

Whoosh!

While Xiao Huang's face violently contorted, he hastily activated the might of his Spiritual Array, only for giant Spiritual Energy-formed snakes to instantly rush in a crazily pursuit of Mu Chen.

However, relying on the element of surprise, Mu Chen had already appeared before the array patterns sparkling with spiritual light. In the next instant, an ominous glowing pillar rushed towards the sky from the top of his head.

As a gigantic demonic pillar appeared in a flash, Mu Chen gave an illusionary hug before him. Without the slightest bit of hesitation, he grasped onto the demonic pillar, before violently swinging it down on the spiritual light below.

Seeing this, Xiao Huang's face instantly turned deathly pale.

As he waved the demonic pillar down, Mu Chen's indifferent-sounding voice rang out alongside whooshing sounds of air being split apart.

"After suffering losses two times in a row, you truly are extraordinarily stupid."

"I'm sorry. From the looks of it, those 20,000 points are mine now."

Bang!

Bringing about an ominous aura that blotted the skies, the demonic pillar rumbled down, before finally heavily smashing on the top of the array patterns glowing with spiritual light.

Chapter 560: Hidden Cards

Bang!

The gigantic demonic pillar brought about a billowing Baleful Aura as it violently smashed against the Spiritual Array sparkling with dazzling spiritual light. As the two smashed against each other, astonishing Spiritual Energy fluctuations instantly swept out.

Bang! Bang!

As fluctuations swept out, even the air around it was sent exploding apart, sending deep muffled rumbles ringing continuously within people's ears.

Spiritual Energy crazily gushed out within the Spiritual Array as it attempted to defend against the assault from the demonic pillar. However, due to it having used the absolute might of its strength to attack Mu Chen earlier, it was unable to muster its entire might to muster its defenses.

A fervent sparkle flashed within Mu Chen's eyes as he sensed a boundless attack crazily sweeping out from behind him. Fueled by his rage, Xiao Huang had activated all of the might of his Spiritual Array in an attempt to launch an attack towards him.

However, at this very moment, Mu Chen clearly couldn't fall back. If he did, the Heaven Binding Array would fall into the complete control of Xiao Huang once again. After suffering the earlier losses, the latter would absolutely activate a gigantic amount of Spiritual Energy to protect the central area of his Spiritual Array. When that happens, it would undoubtedly add difficulty for Mu Chen if he still wanted to break the Spiritual Array.

Therefore, at this very moment, he absolutely couldn't get frightened into retreating from the terrifying attack coming from his back.

As an ominous glint flashed across Mu Chen's eyes, a Baleful Aura started to crazily condense within their depths. A low roar fiercely rang out from his mouth, only for the gigantic body of the Great Meru Demonic

Pillar to inflate by a notch. Asura-like roars ringing from the purgatory seemed to resound from it as killing intent gushed from it, blotting the skies.

"Break for me!"

An explosive roar rang from Mu Chen's mouth like the roar of thunder as the Great Meru Demonic Pillar smashed down once again.

Crack!

As Mu Chen activated his Lightning God's Physique to the extremes, he had also pushed the circulation of the Spiritual Energy within his body to the very limit. In fact, he had also pulled out the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. Using such ab ominous weapon to launch such a frightening attack, even the Heaven Binding Array would not to be able to endure it. As the demonic pillar descended, cracks started to extend like a spiderweb.

At this moment, the Heaven Binding Array was on the verge of collapse.

"Bastard!"

At this moment, Xia Huang could no longer remain calm, his face turned ashen as he roared in a fierce voice. With a change of his hand seal, a mouthful of blood essense spewed from his mouth.

As this mouthful of blood essense shot out, the dozens of gigantic Spiritual Energy-formed snakes chasing behind Mu Chen suddenly raised their heads and howled towards the skies, before devouring that blood essence. In the next instant, a bloody light erupted from their bodies, before starting to fuse together at an astonishing rate. As spiritual light blossomed, a colossal snake approximate a thousand metres long appeared.

As the gigantic snake hovered in the air, its shadow enveloped a radius spanning a couple dozen hundred metres. Under it's shadow, even the giant mountain peak started to tremble. Clearly, Xiao Huang and been forced to a point of complete fluster by Mu Chen.

Whoosh!

As the colossal snake took shape, it flung its gigantic tail about while it penetrated through space. Akin to a fierce divine spear that was impossible to block, it was thrust straight towards the back of Mu Chen at lightning speed.

Such speed caused others to feel unfeigned palpitations in their hearts.

Upon seeing this, a faint change appeared on Luo Li's exquisite face. Tightly clenching her Luo God Sword, she took a half-step forward.

However, just as she did that move, Xiao Wang, standing not far away, immediately drew his giant flaming bow. Scarlet flames rose at the arrow tip, causing distortions in the surrounding space.

He aimed the tip of his arrow right towards Luo Li, but he did not release the bowstring. However, once the latter took any strange actions, he would immediately take action to obstruct her.

Although Xiao Wang knew how extremely formidable the girl, Luo Li, standing before him was, he still possessed some confidence in his capability to stop the latter if he was to take complete action.

Although she shot a frosty look at Xiao Wang with her beautiful eyes, Luo Li did not take action. Rotating her eyes around, she looked straight right into the storm-filled Spiritual Array.

Bang!

The pressure that came from behind was similarly detected by Mu Chen. However, not a single bit of panic was present in his eyes. On the contrary, it was filled with a chilling shadow.

Bang!

Staring at the Spiritual Array before him, the extension of the cracks grew increasingly rapid.

Whoosh!

The whooshing sounds ringing from behind rang ear-piercingly within Mu Chen's ears, whilst piercing pain faintly radiated from his back.

Everyone immediately raised their attentiveness, their eyes not even

blinking one bit.

"Break!"

Taking a half-step forward, a chilling glint sparkled within his black eyes as the demonic pillar violently descended.

Crack! Crack!

The Heaven Binding Array, which had already reached its limits, was finally unable to endure such an assault. As the cracks exploded apart, a clear sound finally extended and perfused across the entire Spiritual Array at an astonishing rate.

Bang!

As spiritual light explosively blossomed, the Spiritual Energy instantly exploded apart.

Incomparably powerful Spiritual Energy shock waves swept out like a hurricane, while a violent tremble shook through Mu Chen's body.

Whoosh!

Exceedingly fierce whooshing sounds rang from behind Mu Chen's back, the robes behind him quietly split apart. However, just as the sharp divine spear-like snake tail had shot right at Mu Chen's back, it abruptly froze, while the boundless Spiritual Energy originally present in it immediately dissipated away. At this instant, the colossal snake exploded apart, transforming into glowing Spiritual Energy dots that blotted the skies.

At that instant the colossal snake, which was originally enveloping and about to suppress Mu Chen, had instantly dissipated completely. The glowing dots that blotted the skies descended from around him, appearing exceedingly magnificent.

This spectacle caused everyone present to let out uncontrollable breaths of relief, as if a heavy weight was lifted off their shoulders. Although the one that had received the attack wasn't them, the suppressive feeling from the depths had made them somewhat unendurable.

While they took breaths of relief, everyone looked at the thin figure

standing within the glowing dots that blotted the skies. Exclamations of admiration surfaced within the eyes of quite a few people. Who would have guessed that Mu Chen would actually rely on his own strength alone to destroy the Spiritual Array that was thorny for even someone like Wen Qingxuan...

"Truly worthy of the Blood Calamity."

Standing in the distance as he took in this spectacle, a faint smile appeared on the face of Wu Ling. Looking at the figure of the youth, a heavy regard brimmed within his eyes. When Mu Chen was ousted halfway during the Spiritual Road, it was undoubtedly an extremely heavy blow towards him, as this had seemingly stopped the one-plus year of training that was extremely important to him. In the eyes of people with talent like him, this year of bitter training was more than sufficient to toss other people far, far behind.

With Ling was originally worried that Mu Chen would receive a serious injury from doing so. If that happened, it was inevitable that he would lose an opponent that he treated with high regard. However, from the looks of it, in the end, Mu Chen's truly the Mu Chen he knew...

"Looks like there will indeed be a good show to watch in this Great Spiritual Academy Tournament," muttered Wu Ling. As of now, there was no one that could obstruct the path of Ji Xuan. Similarly though, Mu Chen's momentum wasn't weak. With the extremely deep grudges and grievances between the two of them, there would definitely be a huge battle if they were to bump into each other. Furthermore, if these two similarly dazzling people were to bump into each other, even people like Wu Ling would feel curious in anticipation to the spectacle that would happen.

"However, the matter today might not be that simple. Other than that fellow, who could have such a way to cause those few fellows to take action together?"

A deep intent glowed within the eyes of Wu Ling as he swept his gaze out towards a few locations. After quietly pausing for a moment, an

ambiguous glow sparkled within his eyes.

Puff!

Within the air, Xiao Huang stared blankly as his Spiritual Array broke apart, while paleness gushed from his face. Instantly, a mouthful of blood fiercely spewed out as he staggered back multiple steps, the Spiritual Energy within his body appeared to be in much chaos and disorder.

Clearly, he had suffered quite a bit of injury due to his Spiritual Array being broken.

"That's not possible..." Xiao Huang didn't bother about the bloodstains at the corner of his mouth, only blankly looking at the broken Spiritual Array before him. At this moment, a feeling of inconceivably gushed from his eyes. He was somewhat unable to believe that his powerful Spiritual Array, which was more than sufficient to trap an expert of First Grade Spirit Disaster to death, would actually be destroyed by a person with a cultivation merely at the realm of Spiritual Energy Disaster.

"From the looks of it, your Spiritual Array isn't as strong as you think." Turning his body around, Mu Chen looked right towards the pale-faced Xiao Huang as he spoke with a faint smile.

Xiao Huang locked his stare right at Mu Chen, his eyes appearing fierce and malicious akin to a wolf. However, as of now, an additional shadow of extreme dread was present within. With his Spiritual Array that he had meticulously arranged being broken, he was forced to truly regard Mu Chen with seriousness.

"Since you've lost, according to our bet, you should hand over your 20,000 points honestly," said Mu Chen as he sent a smile towards Xiao Huang.

Hearing that, Xiao Huang's face slightly twitched as a cold and dark shadow appeared within his eyes.

"From the looks of it, you indeed aren't willing to admit your defeat." Seeing Xiao Huang's actions, Mu Chen shrugged his shoulders in slight helplessness. Panning his head across to Wen Qingxuan, he said, "I'll leave

the rest to you."

Hearing that, Wen Qingxuan nodded her ice-cold face. Turning her beautiful eyes towards Xiao Huang, her jade-like hands tightly gripped her golden war spear, while faint killing intent flashed within her long and narrow phoenix-like eyes.

Seeing this, Xiao Huang's face instantly changed as he retreated two steps back, his eyes brimming with vigilance and dread.

Seeing Xiao Huang's reaction, Mu Chen could not help shaking his head, his voice cold and indifferent as he said, "Xiao Huang, is there any need to act like that? Take out whatever method you guys have prepared. Do you truly think we're here to watch a show of you hiding and concealing your hand?"

Upon hearing Mu Chen's words, Xiao Huang's pupils finally contracted, while the vigilance on his face started to slowly dissipate away. Staring at Mu Chen, only after quite a while did he start to slowly say, "How did you sense it?"

"That's because you guys aren't as strong as you think. The lot of you don't possess the qualifications to challenge us just by yourselves," replied Mu Chen in a calm voice.

"Haha. Truly worthy of the Blood Calamity of the Spiritual Road, Mu Chen," said Xiao Huang with a sneer. Panning his head around he stared right at Mu Chen, before saying, "Nevertheless, you truly have quite some courage, actually daring to head over even though you know that this isn't a good place to rush into."

The only reply Mu Chen gave was to continue staring indifferently at Xiao Huang.

Seeing Mu Chen's gaze, the smile at the corner of Xiao Huang's mouth grew somewhat chilling. With a wave of his hand, he said, "Gentlemen, since you've been discovered by him, what's the use of hiding anymore?"

Hearing that, the various groups present in this region started to exchange glances with each other.

"Haha. I originally assumed that we wouldn't have the chance to take action. Indeed worthy of the Bloody Calamity." While the various groups were in doubt, a faint laughing voice finally rang out from a certain location in the sky.

Whoosh!

Countless gazes immediately shot over, only to see spiritual light suddenly surface from a mountain peak. In the next moment, figures started to appear one after another under the gazes of everyone present.

Upon spotting the faces of those figures, the faces of seemingly everyone instantly contorted as shock appeared in their eyes.

Chapter 561: Ji Xuans Testing

Spiritual light flashed on the mountain peak as figures appeared from within. As they appeared, cries of astonishment rang out one after another within the air.

"Ranked 14th on the point rankings, Mo Xiu?"

"There's also Qiu Ning of Rank 15... Rank 16's Liu San... what a powerful lineup. Why did these fellows suddenly gather together?"

"Are they all here for Mu Chen? Isn't this formation too large for this?"

"..."

Cries of astonishment continued to ring out across the region as quite a few people were frightened by the formation that had appeared before their eyes. That's because the three groups that had appeared were unexpectedly powerful groups that were currently placed on the point ranking's Top 16.

Although they were ranked at the bottom of the rankings, the groups that were able to continue standing within the rankings round after round of elimination battles were absolutely not average nor ordinary. Upon bumping into such strong groups, ordinary groups would quietly slink away in response. Who would dare to have any conflict with them? However, from the looks of it, these three powerful groups present on the rankings have actually appeared at the same place. Furthermore, the person they were targeting was unexpectedly the same...

Shock filled the eyes of quite a few people, while they had finally discovered whatever didn't feel quite right. The matters that had happened today seemed to all be aimed towards Mu Chen. Could it be that this fellow had provoked that many powerful groups?

While cries of astonishment continued to ring out in the skies, Mu Chen's gaze and had similarly shot over to the figures that had appeared on the top of the distant mountain peak. What he saw caused him to slightly narrow his eyes, as he could clearly sense how extraordinary those

groups were.

"Looks like you're their true target for all the things you've pulled out today." Slightly narrowing her beautiful eyes as she took in the scene before her, Wen Qingxuan turned to look towards Mu Chen, before speaking in an enthusiastic manner.

Despite the changes, Mu Chen's handsome face still remained calm and collected, while a faint chilling light sparkled within his eyes. Staring at the three powerful groups oozing with astonishing auras, an understanding appeared within his heart.

"Haha. I'm Mo Xiu, and I come from the Fire Spiritual Academy. I've truly heard of the great name of Captain Mu Chen." Standing before the figures on the mountain peak was a youth dressed in grey robes. Smiling faintly towards Mu Chen, he cupped his hands before speaking with a laugh.

"Qiu Ning. Vajra Spiritual Academy." A fierce-looking male that contained some malevolence on his face with a sturdy and iron tower-like body locked his gaze onto Mu Chen as he spoke.

"Liu San. Myriad Willows Spiritual Academy." This time, the one speaking was a rather thin and frail-looking youth. Dressed in green robes, his long sleeves fluttered about, causing him to look as if he would get blown away by the wind. However, not a single person in this region would believe that the person before their eyes truly didn't possess the strength to even truss a chicken.

Mu Chen calmly looked at these three experts that radiated with astonishing auras. From the Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiating from the three, he could faintly discern that they were even more tyrannical than experts at First Grade Spirit Disaster.

"Truly a rare sight. Added with Captain Xiao Huang and his people, you guys have seemingly activated four of the Top 16 groups in the point rankings," said Mu Chen in a slow manner.

"Haha. We've just been entrusted with a task by someone," replied Mo Xiu with a grin.

Hearing that, the faces of quite a few groups instantly changed. Exactly what person would actually possess such a big capability to actually invite these four powerful groups to deal with Mu Chen? The identity of this person's absolutely extraordinary.

There wasn't much change in Mu Chen's expression, yet the radiance sparkling within his eyes grew increasingly incisive. With a gentle flick of his finger, a gust of wind split the air apart, before saying in an indifferent tone, "Has that Ji Xuan fellow become that gutless? It isn't easy for us to bump into each other, and now he even wants to find people to test me?"

Ji Xuan?

Upon hearing that name, shock filled the hearts of seemingly everyone. During this period of time, the name of Ji Xuan had seemingly suppressed the former Numero Uno who had stayed there for quite a long time, Wen Qingxuan. After all, everyone knew that compared to the start of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament to now, the current phase was where the battles and fights were at their most intense. Therefore, compared to the start of the competition, the Numero Uno now was undoubtedly worth more of its weight in gold.

This was especially true due to some time ago, where Ji Xuan had seemingly suppressed three powerful groups that were placed on the Top 16 by himself. When news of this battle circulated throughout the entire Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, it had caused his Numero Uno place to become even more solid, impregnable and unreachable by ordinary people.

Therefore, when everyone present knew that the four powerful groups before them were actually sent by Ji Xuan, a somewhat strange and peculiar look appeared in their eyes as they cast their gazes over towards Mu Chen. None of them had ever expected that Mu Chen would actually have such deep grudges and grievances with Ji Xuan.

"We came here on the behest of Ji Xuan. Our only goal is to confirm whether you possess the qualifications to continue being his opponent, that's all there is to it..."

A faint smile appeared on Mo Xiu's face as he continued speaking. "If you don't... your journey should come to an end here. He said that he does not wish for such a weak you to appear before him."

"He truly has such a big tone!"

Suddenly, an ice-cold, sweet-sounding voice rang out. Everyone turned their gazes over, only to see Luo Li shooting a chilling glare towards the gathering of the three groups with her beautiful eyes. At this moment, a somewhat incisive chill had appeared on the absolutely beautiful appearance of the young girl.

Clearly, Luo Li was truly infuriated. Although she didn't mind Ji Xuan sending people to deal with Mu Chen, she was absolutely unable to tolerate Ji Xuan assuming that he was on a higher pedestal than Mu Chen.

During the Spiritual Road, Ji Xuan had crossed hands many times with Mu Chen. However, when the statistics were brought out, Mu Chen hand obtained more victories over Ji Xuan. If not for that despicable move done by Ji Xuan to infuriate Mu Chen to the point of forcing him to create that Blood Calamity that led to him being kicked out, the person that would have the last laugh at the end of the Spiritual Road might not have been Ji Xuan.

As Luo Li slowly clenched the Luo God Sword in her hand, everyone was able to sense an extremely fierce Sword Intent starting to radiate from her. This Sword Intent appeared to slice the air apart, causing people's hearts to palpitate in response.

Seeing this, the faces of Mo Xiu and the other two Captains finally changed slightly. Focusing their gazes on Luo Li, their gazes grew much more solemn and filled with dread. The young girl with bright and resplendent silvery hair before them had caused an indescribable feeling of danger to surge within them.

"Haha. According to what I know, during the Spiritual Road, when Ji Xuan had fought with Mu Chen, he was at a disadvantage for the majority of the time."

With a sweet smile on her face, Wen Qingxuan said, "Looks like he's

now extremely confident with himself, huh. That's very good. I've not crossed hands with him while in the Spiritual Road. It seems that I have to supplement this in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament this time."

Seeing these two girls speaking out for Mu Chen, shadows of envy and jealousy gushed from the eyes of the various groups present in this region. That's because the two girls were truthfully so outstanding that they had stirred the hearts and souls of every male present here.

This was especially true for Wen Qingxuan. Seemingly everyone knew about her arrogant and haughty character. Furthermore, she seemed to have a slight repulsion towards the opposite gender. Therefore, it was extremely rare for the opposite gender to be able to become her friend. However, from the looks of it, it seemed that way as she had actually spoken out for Mu Chen. In addition, from the words she had used, she did not even give the slightest bit of face to Ji Xuan.

Therefore, everyone could sense that the current Mu Chen was truly too fortunate! That's why he could be the target of focus!

"They truly are good women." At a side, Xiao Huang's eyes sparkled as took in the scene before him. Speaking with a faint smile, his voice had a ridiculing tone present within, one that was exceedingly clear and distinct.

"How can relying on women be considered as any ability at all?" Mo Xiu and the others took the opportunity to toss their ridicule out, yet their eyes were brimming with envy and jealousy.

Wrinkles started to appear on the foreheads of Mo Xiu and the other two. The dread and fear they had towards Wen Qingxuan was in fact not one bit weaker than Ji Xuan. After all, regardless of anything, one of them was the former Numero Uno, while the other was the current Numero Uno.

They had originally assumed that due to Ji Xuan's existence, even if Wen Qingxuan was to have the intent to help Mu Chen, she should have some fear towards the former. However, who would have expected that the girl that had always been arrogant and haughty had now stood right by Mu Chen's side without the slightest bit of hesitation? In fact, she had not

given any care of standing against a powerful opponent like Ji Xuan.

A faint light flashed within Mo Xiu's eyes before he turned to look at Mu Chen. At this moment, the latter had already become the focal point of everyone within this region. However, what made Mo Xiu feel shock and astonishment was that ever since the beginning till now, the handsome face of the latter remained like the tranquil surface of an ancient well, with not one bit of fluctuations present. Even after their round of rather provocative words, Mu Chen's eyes still appeared calm and collected.

However, it was this sort of calmness that caused Mo Xiu to feel somewhat uneasy.

At the end, he wasn't an idiot to show disdain towards Mu Chen. This was an opponent that even Ji Xuan felt extreme dread and regard for. Although the latter had been kicked out of the Spiritual Road midway through, he still did not dare to show any neglect to him. The person before him had actually relied on his own strength to break Xiao Huang's "Heaven Binding Array". This point was more than sufficient for them to show a thorough regard for him.

"Mu Chen. As of now, shouldn't you not let bystanders, especially two girls, help prop up your face?" said Mo Xiu in a slow manner.

Only after hearing that did Mu Chen raise his head. Casting his indifferent gaze towards Mo Xiu, something seemed to congeal within his black pupils. Finally after quite a while did he reply. "Did you all come here on the behest of Ji Xuan?"

He already knew the answer for his question. Therefore, without waiting for Mo Xiu and the others to reply, he gave a gentle nod of his head, before turning around to wave his hand at Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan.

"Stare at those two fellows for me. Don't let them run away." The two he was talking about were naturally Xiao Huang and Xiao Wang.

As he said those words, his gaze still remained on the figures of Mo Xiu and the other two, before starting to deeply ponder for a slight moment. For some unknown reason, despite him being in a state of pondering, it still caused a heart-palpitating feeling of suppression to quietly radiate.

Slowly walking forward, Mu Chen continued to keep his gaze on Mo Xiu and the other two, before speaking out in a soft voice. "Wanting to stop me from walking forward from here, huh. That's possible, and in fact it's extremely simple..."

"Huh?" The eyebrows of the trio jumped up in response.

Countless gazes within the entire region were now locked onto Mu Chen's body.

Slowly extending his thin palm, Mu Chen's handsome face still remained calm and collected, yet his indifferent-sounding voice resounded like the roar of thunder, causing the hearts of everyone to shake.

"I just need you three to receive a move from me."

Chapter 562: Untitled

"You three just have to receive one move from me..."

As Mu Chen's calm and indifferent-sounding voice slowly rang across the sky, the clamoring noises originally present within the region had turned deathly silent, seemingly in an instant.

The jaws of quite a few people started to turn slightly agape, their gazes turning blank as they looked towards the thin figure before them. For a moment, they seem to have a feeling as if they had mistakenly heard him say those words.

Not only did Mu Chen want to take on three people by himself, he had even wanted to use just one move to deal with them?

The mouths of people could not help twitching in response. If not for the abnormal situation before them, they might have already started uncontrollably laughing and sneering, as Mu Chen's words were truly too rampant.

The three people before him were absolutely not just some ordinary people. They were powerful figures that were now ranked among the Top 16 in the point rankings. Although their places were at the bottom of the rankings, the might of their strength would cause extreme dread and fear even in experts of First Grade Spirit Disaster.

Although Mo Xiu and the other two might not have passed through the second level of their Spirit Disaster, they had absolutely started making contact with it already. Compared to them, experts at First Grade Spirit Disaster still had some disparity in strength and power.

After seeing Mu Chen's ability when he broke Xiao Huang's Heaven Binding Spiritual Array, there was already no one that dared to underestimate him again. However, despite that, there was no one that would be able to contend against three experts placed on the point rankings with their individual might, no matter how optimistic the case.

"This fellow..."

Hearing Mu Chen's words, Wu Yingying had tightly knitted her eyebrows. Staring at Mu Chen's figure, she said, "Exactly what is he up to?"

"That's because he wants to show his superiority to Ji Xuan by making a stand now," replied Wu Ling with a smile. "Ji Xuan had sent people over to feel him out. Therefore, he wants to turn Ji Xuan's probe into a palm and send a heavy slap back."

"A while ago, Ji Xuan had defeated three experts on the point rankings by himself, sending them tumbling down from the Top 16. From then on, his name shook the entire Great Spiritual Academy Tournament. What Mu Chen wants to do now is precisely the same. Furthermore... he wants to be even more vicious."

"A one move deal? Won't this be... too risky?" Wu Yingying retracted the word "rampant" before she could speak it. Having some understanding of Mu Chen, as well as his character, she knew that it was impossible for him to get hot-headed and lose all rationale in his thinking.

"You can be considered to have some understanding... This fellow never speaks without thinking."

A bright light slightly condensed within the eyes of Wu Ling. Staring at the figure before his eyes, he said with a faint smile, "Therefore, he should have a certain level of assurance. Haha. I'm indeed extremely curious to see exactly how he's going to accomplish this with his strength at merely Spiritual Energy Disaster. Could he be relying on Spiritual Arrays? If he plans to do so, he would have to arrange an array comparable to the Rank 5 Combination Diagram, the Heaven Binding Spiritual Array, to be able to deal with three experts at First Grade Spirit Disaster, right? Would Mo Xiu and the other two give him such time to do so?"

Hearing her brother's words, Wu Yingying wrinkled her eyebrows once more, while a slightly ugly feeling appeared within her heart.

As the sounds of whispers blotted the skies and shook the earth, Mo Xiu and the other two had similar blank expressions displayed on their faces. Exchanging glances with one another, preposterous and incredulous feelings started to uncontrollably erupt within their eyes.

A person whose strength appeared to be merely at the realm of Spiritual Energy Disaster had actually said that he wanted to deal with the three of them by himself. Furthermore, from the looks of it, it seemed as if he wanted to deal with them using a single move.

Although they knew that Mu Chen's strength should be higher than what his outward appearance was showing... wanting to deal with the three of them using a single move... This caused them to feel so much anger and fury to the point of them involuntary laughing. Does this Mu Chen truly think that he is Ji Xuan?

"Truly impressive, Captain Mu Chen." Mo Xiu could not help giving a sneer. Staring right at Mu Chen, he continued speaking, "From the looks of it, you've also heard about what Ji Xuan had done a while back. However, if you truly want to use a similar method to prove that you possess the qualifications to contend with him, I'm afraid that you've found the wrong people to do so."

Hearing that, a smile surfaced on the calm, handsome face of Mu Chen while he replied, "From what time did Ji Xuan think he's above me? The lessons he received from me in the past should be plentiful enough."

"Those battles during the Spiritual Road are just experiences and tempering. If you've always treated those as your source of confidence, you'll become extremely disappointed at yourself," said Mo Xiu with a sneer still present on his face.

Hearing that, Mu Chen nodded his head in agreement, before replying with a faint smile, "I'll have you guys bring that statement to Ji Xuan."

Mo Xiu's face instantly twitched slightly when Mu Chen gave his reply, before his gaze turned slightly dark. Exchanging glances with the other two Captains beside him, they proceeded to take a step forward. Instantly, three tyrannical Spiritual Energy fluctuations swept out from their bodies like a hurricane.

Bang! Bang!

As their Spiritual Energies swept out, spiritual light flashed, as the suppression brought about by the three tyrannical Spiritual Energies

rapidly radiated, causing the faces of quite a few groups to turn solemn.

Even those Captains of powerful groups who had reached the first level of their Spirit Disaster had their eyes brimming with fear and dread. Indeed, none of the people in the Top 16 were one bit mediocre.

Behind Mu Chen, the faces of Xu Huang and the others were filled with solemness. They had similarly not expected that Mu Chen had planned to contend against those three powerful people by himself. Although they were somewhat worried for the former, since matters had already progressed to this stage, the only thing they could do was to sit quietly and wait.

Shooting a look at Mu Chen's back, Luo Li didn't speak due to her confidence and trust in the former. She similarly knew that Mu Chen would not speak without making any thoughts beforehand.

"Oh? Can you do it?" Wen Qingxuan could not help shoot a question. Although she had already seen the might of the Combination Array Mu Chen had arranged while in the remnant of the Divine Wood Palace, from the looks of the current situation, the opposite party would clearly not give him the time to do so.

"Didn't I tell you that you can't just shoot such a question out at any random time?" Slightly panning his head, Mu Chen shot a smile towards Wen Qingxuan as he gave his reply.

A faint blush of embarrassment instantly appeared on Wen Qingxuan's fair and exquisite face, before shooting a fierce glare at Mu Chen. This fellow actually dares to tease me at such a time!

"Relax."

Mu Chen took a gentle breath as a faint shade of fierceness appeared on his handsome face. "Since there are people that want to test if I would be any of threat to him, I'll naturally not disappoint him."

Hearing that, Wen Qingxuan lightly nodded her head, without saying anymore words. She knew about the grudges and grievances between Mu Chen and Ji Xuan, with seemingly no possibility of reconciliation. If it was

in the past, she might have chosen to remain neutral in the face of their confrontation. However, when Mu Chen had rushed across a thousand miles to help her, this had truly made her consider him as a friend. Therefore, among the two, she would naturally be biased towards Mu Chen.

Even though she knew that Ji Xuan was an extremely thorny person to deal with, this wasn't something she, Wen Qingxuan, would care about. The arrogant and self-confident her would never assume that she would be weaker than Ji Xuan.

"That would have to depend on your performance. As for the few fellows from the Academy Alliance, feel relaxed as none of them will be able to run away," said Wen Qingxuan, shooting a faint glare towards Xiao Huang, Xiao Wang and the others standing not far away with her beautiful eyes.

Sensing her incoming gaze, a faint sneer surfaced on the faces of Xiao Huang and Xiao Wang, giving them an amused appearance. They were all too clear about the strength of Mo Xiu and the other two. If the two of them were to collaborate, they might have some chance of victory. However, they would absolutely not dare to proclaim their ignorance to be able to defeat the trio with a single move.

Hearing her words, Mu Chen slightly nodded his head. With Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan present, regardless of how difficult it was to deal with Xiao Huang or Xiao Wang, Mu Chen did not believe that they would be able to do much in the presence of these two girls.

Therefore, raising his head up, an indifferent light radiated within his eyes as he locked his gaze on to Mo Xiu and the other two.

At this moment, the trio had similarly locked their gazes onto Mu Chen, while a somewhat ugly expression appeared on their faces.

"Looks like Captain Mu Chen's truly determined to carry on like this, huh."

Under the perfusion of boundless Spiritual Energies, Mo Xiu's deep voice rang like the roar of thunder, resounding across the entire region.

"Since you're truly that confident in yourself, the three of us truly want to take a look at exactly how much of your ability matches up to your boasting."

The gazes of the trio started to gradually turn fierce as the Spiritual Energies howling from their bodies grew increasingly rampant. As the Spiritual Energies pressed against the surrounding air, low muffled explosion sounds erupted.

The entire region had now been seemingly perfused by a feeling of suppression brought about by the boundless Spiritual Energies sweeping out.

A few people started to quietly retreat back, since they were able to sense that the battle that was about to take place would be extremely astonishing...

As boundless Spiritual Energies rippled like waves, the faces of Mo Xiu and the other two started to gradually turn cold.

"Captain Mu Chen, you should make your move. The three of us are looking forward to face it at anytime! However, I have to add that we know of you being a Spiritual Array Master. If you're planning on letting us wait stupidly for you to arrange your Spiritual Array, I'm afraid that we're unable to let you do so."

Noticing the boundless Spiritual Energies surging from the trio, a faint glint sparkled within Mu Chen's black pupils. The degree of Spiritual Energy surging from their bodies was a few degrees stronger than ordinary experts at First Grade Spirit Disaster. Clearly, the trio had already started to touch Second Grade Spirit Disaster. If they were given some more time, there was an extremely high possibility for them to be able to successfully cross this step.

Their individual strength wasn't weaker than that Xue Tiandou he had bumped into in the remnant of the Divine Wood Palace. In fact, they might even be a tad stronger.

Therefore, it was no wonder that there would be so many strange-looking gazes appearing when he made his claim.

However... the current him was similarly much stronger than he was while in the remnant of the Divine Wood Palace.

Taking a deep breath, Mu Chen slowly closed his eyes. As his hands gentled clapped together, they quietly formed a somewhat shaky and exceedingly mysterious hand seal.

Following the completion of the hand seal, faint dark-green radiance started to radiate from his palms.

Humm. Humm.

Gigantic dark-green halos, approximated a thousand metres in radius, started to radiate one after another. As they started to ripple, everyone saw the layer upon layer of luscious trees and plants starting to quietly sparkle with a green light.

This was... the Divine Wood Scripture!

Chapter 563: Might of the Divine Wood Scripture

Incomparably gigantic green ripples started to radiate from Mu Chen, with seemingly the entire verdant mountain range being completely enveloped within their radius. This spectacle instantly caused shock and astonishment to appear in the eyes of quite a few people, before being replaced by doubt and suspicion. That's because they weren't able to sense much of any powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuations from within those green ripples...

Mo Xiu and the other two took the spectacle happening before them with calm expressions on their faces; however, their bodies started to quietly tense up. Being able to stand at the Top 16, they were naturally not brainless people. From the looks of it, the current spectacle had brought about some doubt in them, and it was this uncertainty that caused fear and dread to surface within their hearts.

That's because none of them knew exactly what method Mu Chen was preparing to deal with them.

Standing in the air, Mu Chen faintly started to close his eyes. Within the dark-green radiance, his hands started to slowly, but resolutely, form mysterious and ancient hand seals. As the hand seals were formed one after another, the dark-green ripples that were radiating grew increasingly bright and radiant.

Humm. Humm.

Unknowingly, some people suddenly started to sense minute shaking that appeared within the mountain range they were on.

Suddenly, the face of Wu Ling, who was standing on the top of the mountain peak in the distance, changed as a shadow of shock flashed within his eyes. Slowly lowering his head, he looked towards the verdant sea of trees present on the mountain range.

"These fluctuations..."

Bang! Bang!

The trembling started to increase in frequency, before everyone was finally able to sense it. In the next moment, all of them noticed a green light erupting from the sea of trees in the mountain range that was brimming with vitality.

As the green light hid the sky and covered the earth upon its appearance, the faces of everyone fiercely changed as they sensed extremely powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuations present within the green light.

Furthermore, the Spiritual Energy present within was brimming with vitality. Compared to ordinary Spiritual Energy, it appeared to possess even more life and spirituality.

"Where did all of this Spiritual Energy come from?" Some people could not help crying out in astonishment. It wasn't that they weren't able to sense the flow of Spiritual Energy present in the Heavens and the Earth; however, where did all of this vast and boundless Spiritual Energy come from?

"That's not right... the source of that Spiritual Energy seems to be from those trees!" Those people with acute senses were able to sense the origin of the Spiritual Energy.

As those words rang out, they had undoubtedly caused shock to fill the hearts of countless people once more. Everyone knew that the myriad of things present within the heavens and earth possessed spirituality, with the trees being amongst them, with the precipitation of Spiritual Energy happening over an extremely long time. The only difference between them would be in their strengths. However, this Spiritual Energy was exceedingly hard to mobilise. Wanting to extract Spiritual Energy present within other people and objects was an extremely difficult matter to accomplish. Only experts that have stepped into the Sovereign realm would be able to attempt and get some success out of such a method.

However, right before their eyes, such a spectacle had occured with Mu Chen, someone who was merely at the realm of Spiritual Energy Disaster.

Such a shock caused them to be absolutely unable to remain calm and composed any longer.

A sliver of shock surfaced on the beautiful faces of Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan. Clearly, this was also the first time they have seen Mu Chen displaying such a technique. However, after feeling slightly shocked, Luo Li took a quiet breath of relief, while a somewhat peculiar look appeared in Wen Qingxuan's eyes as she looked towards the back of Mu Chen. Every time she bumped into this youth, he seemed to always bring quite a bit of shock and surprise to people.

At this moment, the calm and composed expressions on the faces of Mo Xiu and the other two started to slowly fade away. As their faces started to change, while they stared at the green light rising from the unending sea of trees before their eyes, a look of uncertainty started to fill their eyes.

Ignoring the shocked gazes coming from his surroundings, Mu Chen continued to keep this eyes tightly shut, with the speed at which he formed his hand seals starting to slow down. Faint beads of cold sweat started to surface on his forehead, while slivers of paleness flashed across his face.

The Divine Wood Scripture was a true Greater Divine Art.

Even some Sovereign realm experts were unable to possess a Divine Art of this grade. Therefore, despite Mu Chen's considerable talent, it was absolutely not easy for him to be able to display this Divine Wood Scripture.

A faint light of lightning started to flash on the surface of Mu Chen's body. Clearly, he had already started to quietly activate his Lightning God's Physique, making the display of the Divine Wood Scripture a tad bit easier for him.

While this happened, the shaking present within the sea of trees below grew increasingly clear and distinct.

Suddenly, Mu Chen's eyes snapped open, with a green light unexpectedly circulating within his black pupils. In the next instant, his hand seals furiously changed, while a deep roar resounded from within his

heart.

"Divine Wood Scripture, Wood to Spirit Transformation!"

Mu Chen sent a furious pat down on the verdant sea of trees below.

Invisible fluctuations seemed to radiate from his palm print, while faint ripples appeared within the surrounding space.

Humm! Humm!

Suddenly, dazzling green light erupted from the verdant sea of trees, with the shaking of the earth growing even more rapid. In the next instant, the eyes of everyone present furiously contracted. Before their very eyes, a gigantic tree with luscious green leaves had unexpectedly started turning yellow and was wilting at an astonishing speed.

The yellowing and wilting started from a point, before rapidly spreading out. Layer upon layer of yellowing and wilting continued to spread, travelling at astonishing speeds while doing so.

As this phenomena continued to spread, within a short span of a dozen breaths, all of the trees within a ten thousand metre radius had unexpectedly yellowed and wilted, appearing to have been drained of all of the Spiritual Energy present within them.

When this phenomena continued to the very limit, those trees had unexpectedly exploded apart, transforming into dust and fluttering about.

Bang! Bang!

Low and deep sounds akin to firecrackers going off continued to ring out as they crackled and popped.

Within a short span of time, the sea of trees had transformed into a bare patch of earth, with thick layers of wood dust left on the surface.

Blank expressions of dumbfoundedness filled the faces of everyone as they took in the spectacle before them. Exactly what is this method to actually be so overbearing?!

Everyone's gazes started to shift, only to see boundless dark-green Spiritual Energy howling towards the air above the already bare mountain

range, with soaring vitality present within them.

All of this Spiritual Energy was squeezed out from those exploding trees, with the might of such power causing even the scalps of experts of First Grade Spirit Disaster to turn numb.

As Mu Chen's body slowly descended, he just so happened to land on top of this boundless sea of Spiritual Energies surging beneath, before raising his head to look towards his front. On the mountain peak before him, a sliver of an ashen shade had appeared on the faces of Mo Xiu and the other two, with their faintly twitching eyebrows clearly revealing the shock present in their hearts.

The terrifying spectacle brought about by Mu Chen had clearly shocked the hearts of the trio.

At this moment, their eyes were completely filled with solemn expressions, with them not daring to show the slightest bit of neglect. The suppression they felt surging over towards them caused them to even have a feeling as if their bodies were unable to move.

"What happens next will be up to you three."

Sending a faint smile towards Mo Xiu and the other two, Mu Chen proceeded to extend his finger, before giving a gentle tap at the space in front of him.

"Spiritual Sea Shock Wave."

A faint voice rang from his mouth. As he uttered his final word, the black pupils of the youth instantly turned fierce. Appearing as sharp and incisive as the edge of a blade, it caused a chill to appear in their hearts.

Bang!

A violent shiver shook through the surging spiritual sea before it started to howl. Gigantic fierce waves swept out, blotting the skies akin to a flood that descended from the skies. Without any scruples, they swept across the horizon, appearing just like when Mount Tai was falling over as they pressed down on Mo Xiu and the other two.

As the spiritual sea swept out, signs of warping and distortions appearing in the surrounding space. With its shadow enveloping over, the entire region started to turn dim.

Upon seeing this, everyone instantly retreated back with explosive actions, all afraid of being part of the collateral caused by the spiritual sea. The impact produced by it would cause even an expert of First Grade Spirit Disaster to instantly turn into pulp.

Extremely ugly expressions had appeared on the faces of Mo Xiu and the other two. Exchanging glances with each other, low roars rang out from their mouths as powerful Spiritual Energies erupted from their bodies at their full might.

At this moment, no longer did the trio dare to hold back the slightest bit. The arrogance present earlier in them due to Mu Chen wanting to deal with them by himself had now been tossed unimaginably far away. Only at this moment did they truly realise why even a mostrous talent like Ji Xuan would treat the youth before them as a truly mighty opponent.

"Fire God's Art, Flaming Dragon Burns the Heavens!" Taking the lead, Mo Xiu clapped his hands together to form a hand seal as his roar rang out. In the next instant, scarlet-red Spiritual Energy erupted from him, transforming into a gigantic hundred metre-long flaming dragon. Scarlet-red flames seemed to flutter on the surface of this flaming dragon as astonishingly hot temperatures started to radiate from it.

"Golden Vajra Divine Palm!" Golden light erupted from Qiu Ning as his body started to inflate numerous times over. As the golden light flashed from him, he appeared just like a golden vajra buddha. With a solemn expression on his face, he sent a palm patting out, causing a gigantic golden glowing palm print to howl out.

"Willow God's Flowers!" The skinny and frail-looking Liu San gave a low roar, causing a green glow to radiate from him, before transforming into a gigantic willow tree behind him. As its branches extended, they appeared to be able to hide the skies and cover the earth, whist radiating with boundless power.

At this moment, the trio had respectively displayed their most powerful techniques. Clearly, all them believed that if they were to show even the slightest bit of restraint, only the word miserable would be able to describe their incoming plight.

As vast and powerful Spiritual Energies flooded the entire region, shock filled the hearts of everyone as they took in the astonishing show of power present before them.

Bang! Rumble!

Under the attentive gazes of countless people, the dark-green spiritual sea swept like a flood. FInally, while bringing along a frightening Spiritual Energy suppression, it pressed down on the trio.

Under this absolutely tyrannical surge of Spiritual Energy, seemingly any kind of attack would appear weak and small.

Bang!

As the Spiritual Energy sea pressed down, it heavily collided against the astonishing attacks coming from the trio.

Boom!

At the instant of the collision, the loud clap of a thunderous roar resounded, with everyone within a hundred kilometres being able to clearly hear it. Everyone's eyes were firmly locked onto the place of collision. Over there, Spiritual Energy shock waves were sweeping out akin to storms, wreaking havoc along the way.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Finally, the tense gazes of everyone present within this region transformed into gazes of terror as the Spiritual Energy sea surging with giant waves buried the flaming dragon, golden vajra palm, as well as the radiant willow tree in an instant...

Chapter 564: Crashed

Bang! Bang!

The vast spiritual sea swept across the horizon, suppressing anything in its path akin to a world-ending flood. Transforming everything it touched into dust, it displayed its world-shaking might.

As giant waves that blotted the skies surged from the spiritual sea, the dark-green light seemed to have perfused across the entire region.

Before the spiritual sea, the flaming dragon howled, the golden vajra palm appeared to have wanted to shatter the heavens and earth apart, and the gigantic willow tree sparkled with an astonishing green glow as the three attacks merged together. Such a lineup was more than sufficient to cause the hearts of people to tremble.

However, despite facing such an assault, the spiritual sea still swept out without the slightest bit of delay. Finally, under the surging of its giant waves, it completely engulfed the flaming dragon, golden vajra palm and gigantic willow tree.

Puff!

Upon being engulfed by the spiritual sea, dense white steam instantly erupted from the flaming dragon. Crazily howling, the flaming dragon struggled about. Nevertheless, its gigantic body had started to dissipate at an astonishing speed.

After rushing through a distance within the spiritual sea, the golden vajra started to rapidly turn dim.

The willow tree had similarly started to rapidly wither, appearing as if it had started to rot away.

Enveloping the three astonishing attacks, Spiritual Energy howled from the spiritual sea. Finally, an invisible howl seemed to ring from it. As giant waves surged out, the three powerful attacks had unexpectedly collapsed completely apart. Transforming into glowing dots, they dissolved into the spiritual sea...

Puff.

As the three attacks were wiped out by the spiritual sea, the faces of Mo Xiu and the other two abruptly changed, before involuntarily spewing a mouthful of blood that dyed their chests red.

Hiss...

The people paying attention to the entire fight from outside of the spiritual sea's radius could not help sucking in a breath of cold air. Although they were able to sense how terrifying Mu Chen's attack was, who would have expected that the all-out attacks from Mo Xiu and the other two would actually be completely suppressed in such a head-on manner...?

Standing in the air, Mu Chen indifferently stared at the trio. With a flick of his finger, the spiritual sea that had suppressed their attacks howled out once more, hiding the heavens and covering the earth as it enveloped over them.

Whoosh!

Seeing this, the faces of the trio instantly changed. Upon observing the frightening power that the spiritual sea contained, how would they dare to let it touch them even the slightest bit?! Stomping their feet, they proceeded to shoot towards three different directions.

Bang! Rumble!

As the spiritual sea smashed against the mountain peak, the entire majestic mountain peak instantly collapsed apart, before being razed to the ground.

Bang!

As the mountain peak collapsed, Mu Chen's hand seal changed once more, only for the spiritual sea to abruptly change into three separate currents. Shooting across the horizon at lightning speed, they travelled at an astonishing pace before appearing before the bodies of the trio.

As the sea currents revolved around the bodies of the trio, a frightening

suppression instantly sealed all of their paths of retreat.

Finally, a pale shade gushed from the faces of Mo Xiu and the other two, while they did not dare to make even a single move. All three of them knew that if they made so much as a single strange movement, the spiritual sea condensed from vast and boundless Spiritual Energy would instantly press down on top of their heads. At that time, they would follow their predecessor, which was the mountain peak that had been razed to the ground.

Fortunately, though, the Spiritual Energy sea currents had only surrounded them and did not press down much more.

Not far away from them, Mu Chen had locked his black pupils on the trio, although he had yet to make any sound. Nevertheless, the indifferent gaze shooting from him had caused their hearts to turn cold.

Therefore, exchanging glances with one another, the trio could only give bitter laughs in response. Raising their hands up, they said in astringent tones, "We've lost."

With the fight reaching such a stage, there was already not much else they could do but admit defeat. The youth standing before them, Mu Chen was absolutely not someone that would show mercy and leniency. There was not the slightest bit of doubt in them that if they continued resisting, Mu Chen would ruthlessly smash them down without the slightest bit of hesitation.

As the sound of the trio admitting defeat resounded, the entire region had undoubtedly turned silent. What preceded next was an upsurge of cries of astonishment that uncontrollably rang out.

The changes happening on everyone's faces fluctuated exceedingly splendidly, as such an ending had truthfully exceeded their expectations by far too much.

At the back, Xiao Huang and the people of the Academy Alliance that originally had sneers present on their faces in their wait for Mu Chen to humiliate himself had started to slowly turn stiff.

The corner of Xiao Haung's mouth twitch, while his gaze became filled with darkness as he stared at the figure of Mu Chen. The move the latter had displayed caused even him to feel heart-palpitating fear.

"How's that possible?!" Xiao Wang hoarsely roared out. His strength was on the same level as Mo Xiu and the other two. However, from the looks of this, even after taking action together, the trio had been destroyed by Mu Chen...

Behind their backs, Mo Yu and the others had faces overwhelmed with shock and terror, while their bodies started to involuntarily shiver. They never imagined that within the short span of time, that was less than even half a month, Mu Chen's strength had unexpectedly rose to such a realm.

"He truly has some moves." Staring at the sky, a sliver of astonishment and solemness flashed across Wu Ling's eyes, before slowly nodding his head. Mu Chen truly is Mu Chen. Despite losing some cultivation time after being kicked out halfway through the Spiritual Road, with his talent, wanting to supplement that empty period of time was clearly not too big of a problem.

"That fellow..." A splendid shadow flashed across Wu Yingying's beautiful eyes as she exclaimed. The imposing aura radiating from Mu Chen was indeed somewhat astonishing. Even she was momentarily unable to come up with any derogatory words to nitpick about him.

Luo Li's originally tense body had started to quietly loosen up, while a faint smile appeared on her face as she looked at the back of the youth. This youth had finally started to gradually radiate with the grace and elegance he had shown while in the Spiritual Road. The future him would become even more dazzling.

On the contrary, though, Wen Qingxuan slightly pouted her little red mouth, with her beautiful eyes still brimming with arrogance and haughtiness. Nevertheless, it was even inevitable for her to have a few points of astonishment appearing in her heart. She had started to discover that the youth before her eyes seemed to appear akin to a bottomless pit, one that people were completely unable to judge its depth. Even someone

as arrogant and haughty as her had no choice but to admit in her heart that Mu Chen was indeed exceedingly outstanding...

Standing in the air, Mu Chen didn't pay attention to the various thoughts present in the hearts of the various people that were present in this region, but continued to stare right at Mo Xiu and the other two. At this moment, the faces of the trio appeared dark and gloomy. One had to imagine that the confrontation today had truthfully given them a somewhat huge blow.

After all, being able to walk to such a stage, they were naturally people that possessed exceedingly high talent. Furthermore, they weren't lacking in chances and opportunities. They had assumed that they should be considered as one the very best within the entire Great Spiritual Academy Tournament. Other than people like Ji Xuan, Wen Qingxuan, Wu Ling and a handful of other monstrous talents, they possessed more than sufficient qualifications to rise to the top.

However, as of now, reality had given them a cruel answer.

Even after collaborating, they were immediately defeated by a single attack from Mu Chen. Furthermore, what's most crucial was that the latter's cultivation was merely at Spiritual Energy Disaster...

Exchanging glances with one another, the trio proceeded to sigh. Finally, they had completely understood why even someone like Ji Xuan would possess that much fear and dread for Mu Chen to the point of even sending them to probe him out.

With a clench of their hands, three Academy Plaques appeared within. Flicking their fingers, they sent them flying towards Mu Chen. Being the losers, they were very clear what the rules were, despite their extreme unwillingness. After all, they had suffered much hardship and difficulties just to obtain those points.

With a clench of his hand, the three Academy Plaques were sucked into his hand. Giving them a glance, what he saw made him raise his eyebrows. There was a total of 10 thousand points present on those three Academy Plaques, a quantity that could be considered as extremely high.

"Are you three the subordinates of Ji Xuan?" Playing around with the Academy Plaques in his hand, Mu Chen shot a question with an indifferent manner.

"We've no interest in being anyone's subordinates. We merely owe him a favor, that's all. As of now, after helping him feel you out, this favor can be considered to have been paid," replied Mo Xiu.

Hearing that, Mu Chen slightly narrowed his eyes. After ponder for a short while, he gave a flick of his finger, sending the three Academy Plaques shooting back towards the trio.

"You." Seeing this, the three exclaimed in shock as they looked straight towards Mu Chen.

"This concerns the grudges and grievances between me and Ji Xuan. It's best that you guys don't interfere in the future. If there's a next time, things might not be that easy for you all," replied Mu Chen indifferently. There wasn't much of any direct grudge or grievance between him and the trio. Therefore, he didn't want to be too stiff towards them. These fellows were somewhat capable. Having too many opponents wasn't the result that Mu Chen wanted.

Hearing that, the trio instantly gawked in shock. As their faces alternated between an ashen and red shade, only after quite a while did they take their Academy Plaques back, before saying in embarrassment, "Thank you very much for your magnanimity, Captain Mu Chen."

After all, those points were what their entire groups had obtained together. If they were to hand them all over, it would be hard for them to account towards their groups' members. Therefore, despite their pride that made them not wish to take them back, in the end, rationale had triumphed over face.

With a wave of his sleeve, the spiritual sea surrounding the trio rapidly dissipated away, before finally transforming into glowing dots that filled the skies, slowly fluttering down towards the bare mountain range below.

Seeing this, the trio cupped their hands once again towards Mu Chen, before fluttering back and retreating. Clearly, they no longer had any

plans on taking action again.

Seeing Mu Chen allowing the retreat of Mo Xiu and the others, while even causing them to not have the slightest bit of anger towards him, the people present in the region could not help feeling admiration for the former. After all, not everyone could ignore the gigantic attraction brought about by ten thousand-plus points. After all, such a gigantic amount of points was more than sufficient to send any group into the Top 16.

After seeing Mo Xiu and the other two retreating away, Mu Chen turned his body around. Locking his indifferent-looking gaze onto Xiao Huang and the people of the Multi-Academy Alliance, he said in an indifferent voice, "After enjoying such a long show, where's your payment of 20,000 points?"

A sluggish expression flashed across Xiao Wang's face, before clenching his teeth and growling, "Don't be a bully, Mu Chen!"

"Looks like you're unwilling to hand them over by your own accord," said Mu Chen.

"Why the need for this, Mu Chen?! Worst come to worst, we'll not interfere with the matter between you and Ji Xuan anymore. Let's bury the hatchet for this grudge and grievance. What do you say?" said Xiao Huang in a deep voice.

From the move Mu Chen made to patch up matters with Mo Xiu and the other two, the former appeared to not be so willing to offend too many people. After all, he was already a top ranked target for many. Making too many opponents was clearly something that Mu Chen was trying his best to avoid. Therefore, this had indeed given some hope for Xiao Huang and the Multi-Academy Alliance.

Raising his head to look towards Xiao Huang, whose eyes were currently sparkling, a ridiculing smile slowly curled up from the corner of his mouth. In the next moment, bringing about a chilling killing intent, his voice, which was gradually turning cold, started to ring out across the skies.

"If you don't hand the points over, everyone will leave an arm here."

Chapter 565: Points

"If you don't hand the points over, everyone will leave an arm here."

As Mu Chen's ice-cold voice rang out across the sky, the temperature of the entire region seemed to drop, causing shock to tremble through the hearts of quite a few groups. Looking over towards Mu Chen, everyone immediately noticed the lack of expression present on the handsome face of the former.

Clearly, at this moment, Mu Chen seemed to not be joking around.

"What did you say?!" The corner of Xiao Huang's mouth twitched, before he fiercely roared. He never imagined that Mu Chen would have not the slightest intent to consider putting this matter behind him. Furthermore, he had even wanted them to leave an arm behind!

"I'm afraid that you don't possess the qualifications to make us leave an arm behind!" Xiao Wang chillingly roared out, killing intent gushing from his eyes.

Shooting an indifferent look at them, Mu Chen didn't continue talking any more useless words as the killing intent radiating from his body grew increasingly dense. The only reason why he had let of Mo Xiu and the other two leave so easily truly was due to the lack of any direct grudge and grievance between him and them. However, those people from the Multi-Academy Academy present before his eyes had been at odds with him ever since the beginning. Furthermore, Xiao Huang did not show the slightest bit of mercy towards him when he was trapped in the latter's Spiritual Array earlier.

Moreover, Mu Chen had never believed that having an overly compassionate attitude was any good at all. Being compassionate wouldn't bring about reverence. The reason why he had let Mo Xiu and the other two off so easily really was due to the reduction of future troubles. However, it had similarly allowed for some people to assume that after provoking him, Mu Chen wouldn't make any frightening circumstances. However, once others had such a thought, Mu Chen's future days wouldn't

be peaceful anymore.

Therefore, after showing the so-called 'compassionate attitude', he still needed to show a terrifying move to follow.

Clearly. The former was shown to Mo Xiu and the other two. As for the latter, it should be reserved for the unlucky Xiao Huang and the Academy Alliance.

Turning his gaze towards Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan, Mu Chen slightly nodded his head.

Humm.

With the clench of her hand, the Luo God Sword in Luo Li's hand erupted with a fierce brilliance. And indescribably incisive Sword Qi started to radiate, instantly causing the faint distortions in the surrounding space.

Quietly starring towards Xiao Huang and Xiao Wang, Luo Li slowly raised the tip of her sword, before locking it straight towards the two of them.

At this moment, a sweet smile appeared on Wen Qingxuan's face, one that appeared somewhat cold and chilly. Tightly clutching her golden war spear, her black hair flowed down like a river, while a shadow of indifference appeared within her willowy phoenix-like eyes. Bright golden light started to radiate from her body, bringing along tyrannical waves of Spiritual Energy fluctuations as they swept out.

As the two girls aimed towards Xiao Huang and Xiao Wang, a feeling of suppression abruptly radiated about, causing the hearts of numerous experts present in the region to turn sluggish, while an indescribable feeling of danger started to radiate from within.

"Let's go!"

The eyes of the Xiao brothers rapidly sparkled, before both of them seemingly roared at the next instant. Transforming into rays of light, they rapidly shot across the horizon at lightning speed.

Whoosh!

However, at the instant when they had made their move, Luo Li had already disappeared from her original position. Upon her reappearance, she had already stood right in front of the Xiao brothers like a spectre. At this moment, a calm and serene expression was present on her absolutely beautiful and exquisite face as the Luo God Sword in her hand slowly made a vertical slicing motion.

Swish!

The space before her seemed to have been instantly sliced apart, while a sword light so fierce that it caused people to be unable to open their eyes shot out, hurtling towards Xiao Wang's chest at lightning speed.

Seeing this, Xiao Wang's face instantly contorted. Pulling the bowstring of the giant flaming bow in his hands, a flaming arrow abruptly shot out.

Bang!

Under the chopping motion from the sword light, the flaming arrow instantly split apart. In the next instant, the sword light heavily chopped down on Xiao Wang's chest without the slightest bit of mercy.

Crack.

Xiao Wang's robes were instantly ripped apart, while an inner armor vest that was sparkling with spiritual light appeared in everyone's view. Clearly, this was a defensive Spiritual Item. Dense halos instantly erupted from the inner armor vest, shielding Xiao Wang within.

Crack!

However, this protection only lasted for a split second. Facing against the merciless sword from Luo Li, the defense formed by the inner armor vest only lasted for an instant before being penetrated by the former.

Blood immediately shot out from Xiao Wang's chest as he was sent flying back akin to suffering from a heavy blow. Shooting straight towards a mountain peak, his body was instantly embedded into the mountain cliff, showing an extremely miserable sight.

Holding the Luo God Sword in her hand, Luo Li stood in the air, her long silver hair fluttering about in the gentle breeze, while her robes accentuated her soul-stirring curves. Such an absolutely beautiful and breathtaking spectacle caused everyone who saw her to gasp in admiration.

Bang!

Across the horizon, as golden light perfused, a clear cry of a phoenix rang out as another miserable figure appeared, shaking and causing the towering giant trees along its path to explode as it flew by.

The figure retreated hundreds of metres back before finally being able to stabilise himself in a miserable fashion. As everyone looked over, what they saw was precisely Xiao Huang. However, at this moment, his face was deathly pale, while blood surfaced at the corner of his mouth, no longer giving the same presence as before.

A golden light shot towards him before Wen Qingxuan appeared in a flash. Clutching the golden war spear in her hands, she pointed the tip towards Xiao Huang, while her phoenix-like eyes were brimming with chilling intent.

Although the might of the Spiritual Array arranged by Xiao Huang was powerful, once he had lost his Spiritual Array, the combat prowess he could display was in fact weaker than Xiao Wang by a notch. Therefore, how could he be a match for Wen Qingxuan?

Low clamoring noises instantly rang out across the entire region as the gazes heading towards Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan were filled with gasps of admiration. The strength displayed by the two girls were considerably intimidating to their eyes.

Naturally, though, it wasn't a surprise to them that Wen Qingxuan possessed such strength; after all, she was the former Numero Uno and the current rank 3 in the rankings. However, they were exceedingly unfamiliar towards Luo Li. Although this girl possessed an appearance and personality not one bit inferior to Wen Qingxuan, she had an entirely different character compared to the former.

Wen Qingxuan's arrogance, and strong stance was just like a phoenix soaring across the horizon. As for Luo LI, she appeared calm and quiet, just like a lotus in a deep valley.

Therefore, when they saw that this girl, which had been quietly following by Mu Chen's side, had actually displayed such astonishing strength, it was inevitable for them to become gobsmacked.

Seeing how miserable the Xiao brother's were, the faces of Mo Yu and the others of the Academy Alliance turned deathly pale. At this time, they didn't even have the heart to run away, while the feeling of being powerless after defeat brimmed within their eyes.

The Mu Chen before their eyes was clearly someone that they could no longer contend against. The growth rate of the former had far surpassed their expectations.

Sweeping an indifferent gaze across them, Mu Chen turned his eyes towards Xiao Huang once again. With a faint smile on his face, he said, "There is still no change in your decision, right?"

As his voice rang out, without waiting for Xiao Huang to give his reply, Mu Chen raised his palm and made a throat-slicing action towards Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan.

Seeing this, Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan nodded their heads. As a chill surfaced within their beautiful eyes, they prepared to take action again.

"Wait!" Xiao Huang's face violently contorted as he hastily roared. From the looks of Mu Chen's indifferent gaze, as well as the chilling eyes of the two girls, he knew that if he hesitated just one bit longer, he might truly leave an arm behind.

"I'll give the points!" growled Xiao Huang, before turning his gaze towards Mo Yu and the others. Seeing this, the latter few hesitated awhile. However, upon seeing the fierce gaze coming from Xiao Huang, the only thing they could do was to give a bitter sigh before tossing their Academy Plaques to the former.

Truthfully speaking, they weren't from the same Spiritual Academy as

Xiao Huang. They came together to form the Academy Alliance due to the strength of Xiao Huang and Xiao Wang, as well as wanting to obtain some benefits. However, from the looks of it now, not only did they get no benefits out of it, they had even lost all their points as a result.

This caused them to feel like crying, while an additional feeling of disappointment towards Xiao Huang surfaced within their hearts. Exchanging glances with one another, all of them knew that there was no longer any good left for this Academy Alliance...

Xiao Huang wasn't privy to their thoughts as he received the Academy Plaques from them. Clenching his teeth, he proceeded to toss all of them to Mu Chen.

With a flick of his finger, Mu Chen sent all of the Academy Plaques shooting towards Wen Qingxuan, causing the latter to slightly gawk in response.

"Didn't I say that I owe you a Numero Uno place...? With these 20,000, even though you still aren't able to reach first place again, the distance would be extremely small," said Mu Chen as he sent a smile towards Wen Qingxuan

At this moment, Wen Qingxuan possessed approximately 20,000. As for the first place, Ji Xuan, his points had already reach a staggering 50,000. Clearly, during the few days where Wen Qingxuan was trapped, Ji Xuan had been doing his best to widen the disparity.

Receiving the Academy Plaques, Wen Qingxuan hesitated for a bit, before finally nodding her head. With a flash of radiance erupting from her jade-like hand, she whisked all of 20,000 points away.

As she did so, the number of points her group possessed immediately shot up to approximately 40,000, instantly exceeding the original number 2 on the rankings, Wu Ling.

On the mountain peak not far away, upon seeing the sparkle appear on the Academy Plaque in his hand,Wu Ling gave a helpless shrug. Nevertheless, he didn't feel any worry from this, as he was extremely clear that there would be some earth-shattering changes happening to the point

rankings in the last moments of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament...

"Looks like Xiao Huang and his Academy Alliance have burnt their hands trying to get a piece of the pie," said Wu Ling with a faint smile.

"They're simply frauds." Wu Yingying fumed as she spoke out. Naturally, she was talking about the matter of Wen Qingxuan being stronger than them.

"Those are points that people have risked their lives to obtain. How is that fraudulent?" Wu Ling appeared to not care as he waved his hands about. Yet, his eyes were casting an exceedingly interested gaze towards the figure of the thin youth in the distance.

He knew that after this fight, Ji Xuan and Mu Chen were already in incomplete opposition of one another.

After taking the points away, Wen Qingxuan casually tossed back the Academy Plaques towards Xiao Huang. Upon receiving them and see them with half of their points gone, the latter's heart instantly started to ache while his face started to twitch.

Xiao Huang's group, which was originally placed at 9th on the rankings had half of their points taken away, causing them to immediately drop out of the Top 16.

"Let's go!"

Xiao Huang shot a vicious glare at Mu Chen, his heart brimming with anger and fury. Nevertheless, he did not dare to reveal them. With a wave of his hand, he brought along Xiao Wang, who had finally managed to struggle and tug himself free from the mountain cliff as they rapidly retreated away. Their retreating figures appeared somewhat miserable, akin to dogs running away with their tails between their legs.

After hesitating awhile, Mo Yu and the others followed suit. Nevertheless, they kept an extremely far distance between them and the Xiao brothers.

This time, Mu Chen did not obstruct Xiao Huang and the Academy

Alliance from retreating. Raising his head up, he looked towards the far distance, his handsome face appeared calm and collected. Merely, an extremely fierce and chilling glint gushed from the depths of his black pupils.

Ji Xuan. Since you want to play this game, this time, I'll accompany you to the very end.

Chapter 566: Memories

Rumble. rumble.

This was a deep valley, with a waterfall descended from the giant peak above akin to a heavenly dragon. The loud rumbling sounds ringing from it caused the entire valley to shudder and vibrate.

Bringing along a frightening amount of energy as it rushed downward, the waterfall travelled a certain distance before suddenly arching up. At this location, the waterfall split, transforming into multiple gigantic streams of water rushing down, with some giant rocks below instantly shattering into pieces upon contact with them.

At the place where the waterfall had arched, one could faintly discern the dim radiance of Spiritual Energy. If one was to take a closer look, one would be able to see what appeared to be a figure sitting within the waterfall.

Sitting quietly within, regardless of how frightening the energy contained within the water current smashing against his body, the figure did not even move a single inch.

He quietly sat there, continuing for approximately an hour before finally slowly opening his eyes. Dazzling rays of brilliance surfaced from his eyes, before waves of extremely powerful Spiritual Energy swept out. At this moment, the waterfall above him had completely dissipated away, only resuming after quite a while later.

Standing up, the figure slowly strode forward, walking towards the waterfall. Spiritual light started to perfuse from his body, causing his skin to sparkle with a gem-like luster, appearing to be made out of jade.

As the water current weighing thousands and thousands of pounds came gushing down, it did not cause even the slightest bit of obstruction to him. As he slowly strode past it, the waterfall was unexpectedly unable to leave even a trace of water on his body.

Floating out of the waterfall, with a move of his body, he descended on

the craggy rock beside the waterfall.

Dressed in white robes, the figure's black hair fluttered away, revealing a face that was as handsome as the dazzling sun above. At this moment, a gentle smile hung at the corner of his mouth, causing him to appear cultured and refined. Such an aura had an absolutely lethal level of attraction to some girls.

An insignia of an academy dazzled on his chest, with holy light gloriously shining from it. That was precisely the insignia of the Saint Spiritual Academy.

As for him, he was precisely Ji Xuan.

Whoosh.

Faint whooshing sounds rang out from the side, before a figure appeared right before Ji Xuan. The figure that was revealed was also an exceedingly handsome youth, who sent a smile towards Ji Xuan, before saying, "Xiao Huang's group have dropped out from the Top 16, while Wen Qingxuan's group has risen from 3rd to 2nd place."

"Looks like they've been defeated," replied Ji Xuan, with not much surprise within his eyes.

"Mu Feng, did Mu Chen appear?"

The youth by the name of Mu Feng nodded his head. At this moment, a somewhat astonished look appeared within his eyes as he replied, "According to the news that we've received, Mu Chen appeared. Mo Xiu and the other two had collaborated, but were defeated by a single move from him. Tsk, tsk. That fellow's somewhat formidable, to actually achieve such a feat."

"Defeating them with a single move, huh." Ji Xuan's gaze still remained indifferent as he said, "If it's him, such a feat isn't sufficient to warrant any surprise. However, I never expected that he would actually be able to catch up so quickly. I thought that the year of delay from the Spiritual Road would put quite a stop in his cultivation speed."

"That's right. Why did the points of Mo Xiu and the other two not drop?"

Ji Xuan suddenly asked. He had also paid attention to this, as the rankings of Mo Xiu and the other two were still present at the bottom end of the Top 16.

"Mu Chen didn't take action against them,and had even let them off. On the other hand, he was not one bit courteous towards Xiao Huang and the Multi-Academy Alliance, and immediately told them to leave an arm behind if they didn't hand over the points," replied Mu Feng.

"Merciful on one hand while showing his might on the other," said Ji Xuan as he slightly narrowed his eyes. "Truly befitting of Mu Chen, such a shrewd move. I've originally wanted him to become the common enemy of the masses. I never expected that he would actually not get taken in by this."

Mu Feng understood in a flash, before saying, "That's why you knew that Mo Xiu and the other two would most likely fail, but still let them go! So it turns out that you're trying to dig a pit for Mu Chen to fall in. However, its a pity. That brat's not any other ordinary person."

"If he was any ordinary person, there's no need for me to pay so much care about him," replied Ji Xuan with a faint smile. "There isn't much friendly relations between us and Mo Xiu, Qiu Ning and Xiu San. They've merely owed us a favor due to our initial plan. Now that this matter has came to an end, added with the favor they now owe Mu Chen, they would absolutely not come close to us again."

"They're just a few minor characters. Do they really think that they would be able stabilise their positions at the bottom end of the Top 16 just by relying on themselves? God-knows how many groups possess comparable strength to them that are standing right by behind them. And this isn't including those powerful groups that are stronger than them. After losing our protection, they won't be able to hold on to their places for long," said Mu Feng with a smile.

"What are you planning to do next? From the looks of it, Mu Chen should be moving together with Wen Qingxuan. That girl, Wen Qingxuan, isn't exactly simple. With them collaborating, I'm afraid that it would

cause some trouble for us," said Mu Feng with a frown.

Hearing that, Ji Xuan slightly nodded his head. Indeed, Wen Qingxuan wasn't just another ordinary character. Even he had to admit this fact.

"There's no need to get prematurely worried. Don't get misguided due to worrying about them." A glint wandered within Ji Xuan's eyes, before replying with a faint smile. "Initially, during the Spiritual Road, I've caused Mu Chen to get expelled from there. This time, I'll let him truly understand exactly who the genuine victor is."

Hearing that, Mu Feng nodded his head. After following Ji Xuan all the way till here, he was extremely clear exactly how much frightening strength the person before him possessed. Although he had yet to meet Mu Chen, he did not believe one single bit that there would truly be anyone present within this Great Spiritual Academy Tournament that could triumph over Ji Xuan.

"That's right." Ji Xuan paused for a bit. Looking towards Mu Feng, he could see the rays of indescribable emotion present within the latter's eyes. After quite a while later, he said, "There's a girl by the name of Luo Li by Mu Chen's side, right?"

Hearing that question, Mu Feng nodded his head. At this moment, he was also shooting a look towards Ji Xuan, as he could sense a sliver of a peculiar expression present within the latter's voice that was extremely rarely seen from him.

"That Luo Li's always by Mu Chen's side. She's also extremely formidable, and can even be described as only showing the tip of the iceberg. I feel that she might even be no weaker than Wen Qingxuan," replied Mu Feng.

"How can the next Empress of the Luo God Clan be one bit ordinary?" muttered Ji Xuan. Nevertheless, upon remembering that Luo Li was always accompanying Mu Chen's side, despite his deeply concealed and reserved nature, he could not help flashing a shade of darkness across his face, while feeling extremely uncomfortable within his heart. This state of mind and emotion should be one of extreme envy and jealousy.

Ever since their first meeting during the Spiritual Road, the youthful girl's quiet and serene nature, as well her her bright, resplendent eyes, coupled with her radiant hair that appeared just like a silvery river, had caused his heart to throb exceedingly hard.

Within the Spiritual Road, Mu Chen had become an irreconcilable enemy for Ji Xuan. The latter knew that the reason more of less was due to that young girl that would always quietly stand by side of the former, regardless of anything.

Regardless of what he did, Ji Xuan was unable to garner the care and concern from the young girl. Regardless of what he did, the faint smile at the corner of the young girl's mouth would not blossom for his sake.

This was something he refused to accept. He had been the heaven-gifted son since young, with his outstanding talent causing him to be as dazzling as the radiant sun. Despite this, however, this was the first time he had felt the feeling of defeat from people not caring even the slightest bit about his outstanding talent.

Since he was unable to make her care about him, he would make sure that she would firmly remember him, regardless of whether it be of hatred or killing intent...

Therefore, he had schemed against Luo Li in the Spiritual Road, forcing the usually calm Mu Chen to become completely enraged, before utilising all means and ways to create that Blood Calamity and expel the latter for the Spiritual Road.

On the day when Mu Chen was expelled from the Spiritual Road, Ji Xuan was standing in the far distance as he took in this scene. At that moment, he was able to see the calm expression within the youth's gaze as he departed. However, it was that calm and peaceful expression that caused Ji Xuan's expression to turn dark.

At that moment, Luo Li was also present, merely that she was calmly watching Mu Chen leave, never turning her gaze around from the start to the end. Only after Mu Chen had left did she turn around and leave, leaving a slender, elegant back figure in Ji Xuan's eyes.

It was that day that an extraordinary level of fury and anger surged within Ji Xuan.

He had achieved his target and forced Mu Chen out of the Spiritual Road, and had appeared considerably perfect in the eyes of the majority. After all, within the Spiritual Road, one's methods wasn't important, as they only cared about the results.

Nevertheless, Ji Xuan wasn't one bit happy. The calm expression on Mu Chen's face as he left and Luo Li's figure as she had turned and left caused Ji Xuan to not feel even a sliver of happiness.

Furthermore, after Mu Chen was expelled from the Spiritual Road, Ji Xuan did not see Luo Li again, not until the finale of the Spiritual Road.

The young girl still wore a long black robe, with her long silvery hair falling all the way down to her slender waist. Standing alone, she finally swept a light look towards Ji Xuan with her bright, glass-like pupils.

It was only a glance, yet it had caused Ji Xuan to involuntarily slightly straighten himself up, wanting to completely display all of his dazzling aspects.

Nevertheless, all of that was ignored by the young girl. Under the gazes of countless outstanding geniuses, she slowly raised the long sword within her hand, before point the tip straight towards Ji Xuan.

Not a single word had yet to leave her mouth. As her silvery hair fluttered apart, she had already unleashed her attack.

Swift, fierce, vicious.

In the end, both of them were mutually injured.

The young girl had not said a single word at all. She had given up her qualifications to contend for the Championship, using it to cause Ji Xuan to be unable to obtain that honor. She had used a method to tell Ji Xuan and everyone present about the anger and fury she had suppressed within her heart.

At that moment, Ji Xuan had retreated in a somewhat miserable fashion.

Looking towards the young girl, whose body was similarly covered in wounds, a killing intent that would be able to blot the skies had gushed from his heart in that instant. This wasn't directed to Luo Li, but towards Mu Chen.

That fellow merely had the luck to meet Luo Li earlier than me! It should be me that the girl should be willing to give up everything for! It's all because of that fellow, Mu Chen!

Without him, he, Ji Xuan, would have become the the greatest victor in the Spiritual Road!

Regardless of glory or the girl.

Creak.

Ji Xuan slowly clenched his hands tightly, causing green veins to squirm and dance across his gemstone-like skin. The rumbling sounds and moist air brought about by the waterfall caused him to gradually escape from those memories.

However, his eyes grew increasingly ice-cold, with the chilling intent present causing Mu Feng, who was beside him, to shutter.

Raising his head, Ji Xuan looked into the far distance with his ice-cold gaze.

Luo Li, this time, I'll step on Mu Chen right before your eyes. I will let you know that compared to me, Mu Chen's nothing!

Regardless of ability or strength, I'm stronger than Mu Chen!

Therefore, only I am the most suitable for you!

Chapter 567: Tooth Extraction Mission

The atmosphere within the devastated mountain range was no longer as lively as before. Following the conclusion of the great battle, the various powerful groups that had converged in this region had started to quietly disperse.

Standing on top of a mountain peak, Mu Chen looked towards the horizon, which had cleared up, before turning around to look at the bevy of young girls behind his back.

The three groups of the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy had gathered together. This group of young girls had pretty and beautiful appearances, their gurgling laughters radiated with youthfulness and vitality. Such a spectacle caused Xu Huang and the other two to involuntarily flutter their gazes over and over again.

"Tsk, tsk. I really never imagined that you would become this strong after a period of two months. You truly leave people dumbfounded," said an enchanting and voluptuous girl with a grin as she walked over. She was the person that Mu Chen had bumped into not too long after the start of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, Tang Mei'er.

At this moment, her beautiful eyes were suffused with rays of brilliance as she stared right at Mu Chen. When they had initially bumped into one another, Mu Chen's cultivation was merely at the realm of Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase. However, as of now, he had already passed his Spiritual Energy Disaster. Furthermore, what's more terrifying was that his true combat prowess was on a level that even experts at First Grade Spirit Disaster were hard-pressed to match.

Such a rate of progress was truthfully astonishing.

"What's the matter? Have you two met before, Elder Sister Mei'er?" asked Wen Qingxuan in a somewhat astonished manner. From the looks of it, Tang Mei'er seemed to have not mentioned about having met Mu Chen and his group before.

Proceeding to suspiciously stare at Mu Chen, she continued probing, "He

didn't bully you all, did he?"

Hearing that, Mu Chen's face instantly turned black as he shot a vicious glare at Wen Qingxuan. However, the young girl before his eyes did not pay any notice to his threat. On the contrary, she raised her sharp, snow-white chin up in a haughty hoist, appearing just like a queen looking down on her subjects.

"Hehe. With Little Sister Luo Li around, he won't even have the courage to do so," replied Tang Mei'er with a lovable laugh while she covered her red lips with her jade-like hand.

Hearing that, Luo Li gave a faint smile in response, her clear and limpid eyes gently sweeping across to Mu Chen.

The play acted out by the three girls instantly caused Mu Chen's head to swell. Breaking Xiao Huang's Spiritual Array and dealing with Mo Xiu and the Multi-Academy Alliance appeared much easier, like a heaven's dream, than to deal with the three girls before him.

Seeing the somewhat depressed appearance extruded by Mu Chen, the three girls could not help gently laughing.

"Hey, your charm's pretty good, and your taste is also very high. Could it be that you've taken a fancy for the most prideful and beautiful phoenix of our Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy?" Stealthily moving close to Mu Chen, Tang Mei'er said with a soft laughter.

"However, there's an extremely high degree of difficulty in this. This lass, Qingxuan's too prideful. I'm afraid that you won't be able to make her submit."

Mu Chen being somewhat unable to endure this provocative and straightforward set of words from Tang Mei'er, instantly caused an embarrassed shade to appear on his face. Shooting a look at Wen Qingxuan, who was currently chatting with Luo Li, he said with a dry laugh, "Please don't joke around, Elder Sister Mei'er. I truly don't have any intent to do so."

Mu Chen was extremely clear that Wen Qingxuan did not have any

interest in him. On the contrary, she was interested in Luo Li. Therefore, from a certain perspective, Mu Chen still had to be cautious towards her.

"Nevertheless, I pity my Little Sister Qian'er. Thinking about a certain somebody all day long in the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy. However, that certain someone is imprisoned in a cluster of flowers, while being extremely satisfied with himself," said Tang Mei'er as she shot a look at Mu Chen with her beautiful eyes.

Mu Chen felt that her gaze appeared to treat him akin to a heinous traitor, resulting in him being only able to give a bitter laugh in response. In the face of this, even giving an explanation would not be able to clear up the situation.

"Next up, what are you planning to do?" However, at this moment, Wen Qingxuan and Luo Li had walked over. Shooting a look at Mu Chen. a serious expression appeared on the latter's lovable face as she shot a question towards him.

Hearing that, Mu Chen started to deeply ponder awhile. As of now, the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament had started to somewhat enter its final phase. It's this phase where the fights and battles would become the most intense.

Of the countless groups present, only a mere eight, a number that could be counted with one's fingers would be able to enter the final match at the very end.

Therefore, for the sake of obtaining one of those eight quotas, any group that possessed some level of strength would bet and risk their lives for it.

"Earlier on, Ji Xuan had sent Mo Xiu and the others to feel you out. In fact, this should be considered as sending a challenge to you. Are you going to head out and aim straight for him?" asked Wen Qingxuan with a slight knit appearing on her forehead. "However, I have to remind you about something. That Ji Xuan fellow has extremely deep schemes and plans floating around in his head. As of now, there are quite a few of the powerful groups placed in the Top 16 that can be considered as part of his alliance..."

"Oh?" Mu Chen slightly raised his eyebrows upon hearing that.

"Strictly speaking, the three groups that you have dealt with earlier aren't considered to be a part of Ji Xuan's alliance. They merely owed a favor to Ji Xuan, that's all. In my understanding of Ji Xuan, I'm afraid that there's even an extremely high possibility of him creating the situation in which the debt was owed," said Wen Qingxuan in a deep voice.

Hearing that, Mu Chen nodded his head in agreement. With the schemes and plans of Ji Xuan, it wasn't difficult for him to arrange for such a matter to occur. Furthermore, it really fits his character extremely well. Therefore, Mo Xiu and the other two Captains that appeared today might just be merely his scouting chess pieces, no more than that.

"As of now, who else is part of Ji Xuan?" asked Mu Chen.

"The Rank 10, Lu Tian. He's from the Heavens Spiritual Academy. That's another top ranking Spiritual Academy. Naturally, the most important matter is that Lu Tian and his group have obtained quite a large benefit from the remnants in this Shattered Continent," replied Wen Qingxuan as she shot a look at Mu Chen. "Have you heard about the Bone Sect?"

At a loss, Mu Chen shook his head.

"The Bone Sect should be one of the elite regional influences of the shattered continent in the Ancient Antiquity. Their strength and background were not much weaker than the Divine Wood Palace," replied Luo Li with a faint smile.

Hearing that, Mu Chen shrugged his shoulders in helplessness. Both Wen Qingxuan and Luo Li had extraordinary backgrounds, with the information they knew naturally being much more than him.

"Luo Li's experienced and knowledgable," said Wen Qingxuan as she shot a smile towards Luo Li, before continuing with her reply. "The Luo Tian's group from the Heavens Spiritual Academy has obtained the inheritance of this Bone Sect."

"In addition, there's the Rank 8, Wang Jiang. He's from the Myriad Beasts Spiritual Academy. Similarly, he has obtained the inheritance of the

Demonic Alligator Palace. That Demonic Alligator Palace is another tyrannical influence present on the Shattered Continent during the Ancient Antiquity. Therefore, as of now, they really are quite strong."

Mu Chen slowly nodded his head in response. From the looks of it, it seems that his group wasn't the only ones that had obtained good fortune in the Shattered Continent.

"Are they considered to be part of Ji Xuan's alliance?" asked Mu Chen with slightly narrowed eyes. From the looks of it, Ji Xuan had really made quite some consideration in this. The people that he had roped in weren't just any simple and ordinary figures.

Slightly nodding her head, Wen Qingxuan replied, "As of now, Lu Tian and Wang Jiang can be considered to be people that possess much fame and reputation within the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament. However, there is a bigger heavyweight present within Ji Xuan's alliance."

Hearing that, Mu Chen's eyes instantly slightly narrowed. That Lu Tian as well as that Wang Jiang have already reached 10th place and 8th place respectively. However, there's actually a bigger heavyweight than them?

"Liu Qingyun, from the Azure Heavens Spiritual Academy. He's also a genius from the Wind Spirit Clan. It's said that the Azure Heavens Spiritual Academy has purposefully borrowed him from the Wind Spirit Clan," replied Wen Qingxuan as her exquisite-looking face grew slightly solemn.

"Liu Qingyun..."

At this moment, Mu Chen's eyes had started to slowly narrow, while slight shock appeared within his heart. He never expected that Ji Xuan would actually be able to pull one of the five Great Academies over to his side.

Even Mu Chen had heard a few rumors about this Liu Qingyun. He's an existence that absolutely able to contend for the final eight quotas. Added with Ji Xuan, such a lineup would absolutely be not one bit weaker than the collaboration between himself and Wen Qingxuan.

"Although they are usually fighting for their own respective benefits. Once they encounter an unapproachable trouble, they would collaborate. Furthermore, from my estimations, they would definitely collaborate to deal with you," said Wen Qingxuan in a soft voice. After all, she also knew about the deep grudges and grievances between him and Ji Xuan.

"What a good move by Ji Xuan," said Mu Chen in a calm manner. After so many years of not seeing the former, Ji Xuan's getting more and more experienced in playing this move of forming alliances.

"Therefore, I wouldn't advise you to immediately head out and find trouble with Ji Xuan. You wouldn't have much superiority if you choose to do so," said Wen Qingxuan.

Hearing that, Mu Chen slightly nodded his head in response. Knowing all too well about how thorny Ji Xuan was. Regardless of how formidable he himself was, he wouldn't be able to succeed in dealing with such an alliance just by relying on themselves.

"Therefore, what do you plan on doing now?" After explaining the situation, Wen Qingxuan shot one more question at him.

Hearing that, Mu Chen started laughing. Retrieving his Academy Plaque, he looked towards the names sparkling with brilliance present on its surface. Finally, extending his finger out, he gave a gentle tap on its surface before replying, "There isn't much to consider about. Since Ji Xuan's trying his best to construct this kind of alliance to trap me, we naturally can't just sit here and await death."

"For instance?"

"For instance, when those claws of his are still trying to obtain more points to solidify their places on the rankings..." At this moment, a faint chilling light started to circulate within Mu Chen's black pupils as he slowly clenched his hands.

"We'll start by completely removing all those claws of his!"

Hearing Mu Chen's reply, Wen Qingxuan raised her slender eyebrows in response. At this moment, her bright phoenix-like eyes were brimming

with interest as she stared at Mu Chen. The originally handsome face of the youth now appeared much more serene and deep. This caused him to appear as if he was a lion that had tensed its body up, and was on the verge of lunging straight at its prey.

"Are you interested in earning some points?" said Mu Chen as he shot a faint smile towards Wen Qingxuan.

Flinging her little rosy mouth, Wen Qingxuan replied, "Just speak straight to the point, you need a free hired thug. Why the need for such fanciful words?"

"Everyone has their needs," replied Mu Chen with a smile.

Wen Qingxuan was unable to refute with his reply. After some slight pondering, she nodded her head and said, "Since I owe you a favor for the earlier matter, I'll help you this time to pay this back. Furthermore, that Ji Xuan fellow is someone that I quite dislike. Being able to create some trouble for him isn't harmful for him."

Hearing that, Mu Chen gave a laugh, before doing a slow stretch.

Since Ji Xuan had already started to make a move on him, he need not to show any mercy anymore. Ji Xuan, our confrontation has officially started...

I'll uproot every single one of the claws that you've painstakingly roped in!

Therefore, let this mission be called the tooth extraction mission!

Chapter 568: Encircling

Shattered Continent, southwest zone of the central region.

A vast desert sat within, one with a reddish-yellow colour. Looking across, the seemingly endless yellow sand extended to the end of one's sight.

As of now, this reddish-yellow desert appeared restless as frightening gales wreaked havoc everywhere they went. Wave after wave of storms battered the entire region, sending sand into the air and blotting the skies, obscuring the vision of everyone present.

The origin of those erratic, devastating winds wasn't nature, but the huge battle that had erupted within the desert.

Accurately speaking, this was a battle of a considerably astonishing scale.

Figures hovered in the air as boundless Spiritual Energies radiated from their bodies. As Spiritual Energy fluctuations surged from them, incomparably fierce Spiritual Energies swept out from their hands, before heavily smashing down on the earth before them.

Bang! Bang!

As the earth shook and trembled, gigantic fissures started to extend like spiderwebs. Within the current desert, a few figures were present, retreating and evading in a miserable fashion as they defended against those incoming attacks.

There was approximately a hundred of those figures present there, appearing to be exceedingly few as compared to the figures who were encircling them, which were more than sufficient to contain multiple times their amount.

Clearly, this was a large-scale encircling battle.

Such a spectacle wasn't a rarity within the current central region. Following the increasing intensity of the fights and battles taking place, there were quite a few groups that started to lump together. The result of

this led to the formation of large-scale battles taking place.

For instance, the spectacle happening right now, which was precisely a larger collaborative force encircling a small force.

Their goal was clearly the points held by these groups.

The rampant gales that had wreaked havoc within the desert was a result of the intense battle taking place.

In the sand-strewn skies filled with rampant gales, a figure stood at the lead position. This person wore a set of greyish-white robes, his face appearing exceedingly dry and withered, while his skin was of a slightly peculiar greyish-white colour.

At this moment, he did not take action, with his hands crossed before his chest as he looked expressionlessly at the groups below, who were putting up a stiff resistance. While the rampant gales blew by, they were unable to even cause his robes to flutter.

Numerous figures were present behind this person. These people had ridiculing smiles hanging on their faces as they looked at the struggling groups present below them, appearing to treat this encirclement between two hugely despairing groups as a game for amusement.

This group was precisely the group from the Heavens Spiritual Academy. As of now, they were placed 10th on the points ranking.

"Captain, once we deal with those fellows, we should be able to rise the 9th place after taking the points of those groups." Suddenly, a youth smiled as he spoke towards the greyish white-robed male standing in front of him.

This greyish white-robed male was naturally the Captain of this group, Lu Tian. As of now, he was a first rate expert that possessed considerable fame and reputation in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament.

Upon hearing that, he merely nodded his head, before shooting a look at the other ten-plus figures standing behind him. Powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiated from all of their bodies, with all of their cultivations unexpectedly at First Grade Spirit Disaster.

These people could be considered as their collaboration compatriots. However, it was clear that Lu Tian possessed the greatest say and authority in this large group. One could see this from the respectful gazes shooting from the few other Group Captains towards Lu Tian.

"Fellow Captains. We will take the majority of the points obtained here. I hope for everyone to understand. After all, now's the critical period for us to rush into the Top 8." A smile appeared on Lu Tian's face as he spoke out towards those few Captains.

Upon hearing that, the few Captains hastily shook their heads, although their smiles grew slightly unnatural. Although they had relied on a powerful group like Lu Tian's to obtain quite a bit of points during the most recent period of time, they would offer the most manpower while also suffering the greatest losses. Although no lives were lost, quite a few of their group members had serious injuries present on their bodies. Wanting to completely recover would require a considerable amount of time. As of now, with the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament already entering its final phase, waiting for those severely injured group members to fully recover might result in them missing out in this competition entirely.

With this large group, they had paid the highest price, yet seemingly half of the points would be taken away by Lu Tian's group, while the other half being split equally among the other groups.

This clearly wasn't too fair. Despite that, though, no one dared to speak about it. That's because all of them were extremely well-aware of Lu Tian's strength, with them lacking the qualifications to haggle with him. In this place, if they were to leave the protective envelope of Lu Tian, their ending might be all too similar to those few groups they were currently encircling.

Therefore, even though they were extremely discontent towards the overbearingness of Lu Tian and his group, they did not dare to show the slightest bit of their true feelings.

Sweeping an indifferent look towards the few Captains with somewhat unnatural expressions on their face, Lu Tian proceeded to heedlessly

retract his gaze back. Looking once again at the devastated area of sand below, he said, "It's about time. Zhou Ya, go and settle the fellow that's putting up the greatest resistance."

"Yes, Captain." A smile cracked open from a youth behind Lu Tian as he gave his reply, before locking his chilling gaze towards the ground below. Presently, there was a group that was putting up an especially intense resistance, with numerous attacks being blocked by them. The leader of this group seemed to possess a similar realm of cultivation at First Grade Spirit Disaster.

This youth by the name of Zhou Ya walked out, before descending towards the direction of the group.

As Zhou Ya descended, the group being locked onto had also felt the impending threat, Them drawing closer to one another, ugly expressions appeared on their faces as they stared right at the descending Zhou Ya.

"What should we do... Captain?" In the locked on group, a few group members asked as they looked towards their Captain.

This Captain had a somewhat sturdy built, while his face appeared slightly familiar. If Mu Chen was present, he would be shocked to find out that this person was actually the group from the Desolation Spiritual Academy that he had bumped into not long after the start of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament.

As for this person, he seemed to be known as Lin Zhou.

Mu Chen had even obtained the information of the branch palace of the Divine Wood Palace from them, before collaborating to enter and search for the treasures. The two parties had merely parted ways after the end of the treasure search. They never imagined that they would actually have quite an improvement to their cultivation upon entering the central region.

However, at this very moment, Lin Zhou appeared to be in a slightly miserable state, his gaze that was staring right at Zhou Ya was being filled with dread and fear. Although he had similarly managed to successfully pass the First Grade Spirit Disaster, Lin Zhou knew that he was just lucky

to pass it a while ago. As for Zhou Ya descending towards him, the latter's strength was already close to making contact with Second Grade Spirit Disaster. He was simply not a challenge for the latter.

Furthermore, there were even more powerful figures hovering in the sky above that were covetously eyeing them, especially the Captain of the Heavens Spiritual Academy, Lu Tian, who was an extremely formidable character.

"Hand over your Academy Plaque. We just want your points and not to hurt people. However, if we are to really head to that stage, we won't mind doing it," said Zhou Ya in an indifferent voice as he extended his hands towards Lin Zhou.

"These points have been painstaking accumulated by us! If it's taken away by you just like that, how am I going to account to everyone!"

Bang!

As Lin Zhou's voice rang out, Zhou Ya's face turned completely dark, as powerful Spiritual Energy swept out from him. With a stomp, his figure appeared right before Lin Zhou in a spectre-like fashion.

"Since you don't know how to account to them, let me tell it to you!"

A cruel smile rose from the corner of Zhou Ya's mouth, before sending a palm patting furiously out. His palm was suffused with a white gem-like luster, while one could faintly discern the white bones beneath the flesh and blood present, casting an exceedingly peculiar sight.

Bang!

Sending his palm patting out, the air below his palm exploded apart, while boundless Spiritual Energy patted down towards Lin Zhou's chest without the slightest bit of mercy at all.

Such a fierce attack caused Lin Zhou's face to change. Hastily revolving all of the Spiritual Energy within his body, he immediately sent a fist rumbling out.

Boom!

As the fist and the palm smashed against each other, Spiritual Energies wreaked havoc as they swept out, with the powerful shock waves causing layer after layer of sand to fly away.

Hmph!

A pale shade surfaced on Lin Zhou's face as a muffled snort rang from him, whilst being sent flying back by the impact. Carving out a hundred-plus metre long scar on the ground, and could not help spurting a mouthful of blood.

"Captain!"

Seeing this, the faces of the other members of the Desolation Spiritual Academy group fiercely roared, before hurtling together towards Zhou Ya.

"You all are attempting to do the impossible."

An indifferent smile appeared on Zhou Ya's face as he took a step out, before passing through the four incoming people in a spectre-like fashion.

Bang! Bang!

Suddenly, mists of blood shot out from the chests of the four people, before their figures were hurtled backwards in a miserable fashion. The robes covering their chests had shattered, while a deep bloody palm print appeared within.

Lin Zhou's face instantly turned ashen as he saw what had happened. Struggling to stand up, a vicious expression appeared in his eyes as he stared at Zhou Ya, who was now slowly walking over.

"Now, are you planning to hand over the points or not?" said Zhou Ya as he stared indifferently at the already exhausted and dispirited Lin Zhou.

"You all have been chasing after us for three days... isn't this too overbearing?!" Lin Zhou roared back in fury.

"Childish."

Laughing out, Zhou Ya shook his head before saying, "In this place, as long as you have enough strength, you'll possess the qualifications to be absolutely unrestrained in how overbearing you want to display. Naturally,

if you have an ample solid background or compatriots, we might fear you for an instant. However... will a group like your's have those?"

Ridicule and disdain was present on the smile curling from the corner of Zhou Ya's mouth. Truthfully speaking, the strength of Lin Zhou's group wasn't considered to be that strong. Therefore, Zhou Ya did not believe that they would have any friendly relationship with any of the heavyweight groups.

Furthermore, even if that was the case, so what? His Captain was a person that had a friendly relationship with an expert like Ji Xuan, who was the current Numero Uno on the point rankings. Placed within the entire central region, who wouldn't give them any face?

Hearing that, the expressions of Lin Zhou and his group turned sluggish, while their eyes started to gradually turn dim. Being clear about themselves, among the groups they had a collaborative relationship with, there was not a single one that could compare to the Heavens Spiritual Academy's groups present before their eyes. After all, the latter and his group were placed highly on the current point rankings. Within the entire Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, there truly weren't too many groups that would be able to surpass them in strength.

As for those experts that were able to surpass Lu Tian and his group, why in the world would they see anything in their group at all?

"The nonsense ends here."

Looking at the sunken Lin Zhou, Zhou Ya proceeded to take a step forward, with his palm hurtling towards the former's chest at lightning speed. The tyrannical Spiritual Energy condensed within that palm caused Lin Zhou's body to turn still, with him not daring to show the slightest bit of movement. At this moment, the smile at the corner of Zhou Ya's mouth turned into a chilling one.

"It's extremely unfortunate, but I have to tell you that you've lost your last chance. Therefore..."

As a tremble shook through his palm, tyrannical Spiritual Energy gushed from Zhou Ya.

Seeing this, Lin Zhou closed his eyes in despair.

"Haha. If you're smart enough, this palm will not go down. If not, even your Captain, Lu Tian, would not be able to save you."

However, at the instant when Zhou Ya was about to do the deed, a clear and somewhat familiar sound of laughter rang out in an unhurried fashion. The voice appeared to be neither far nor near, yet it caused a tremble to shake through Lin Zhou's body as he furiously snapped his eyes open.

In the next instant, what he saw on the sand not far away were figures slowly walking over. Present in their lead was an exceedingly familiar-looking figure.

That... was Mu Chen.

Upon taking in this sight, Lin Zhou's eyes grew increasingly wipe open.

Chapter 569: Lu Tian

Within the battering sands, figures were slowly walking out from the sandstorm, before coming to a stop a few hundred metres before the big battle happening before them. As for the person in the lead, it was precisely Mu Chen.

At this moment, a faint smile hung on his face as he surveyed the intense battle happening before his eyes. Staring at Lin Zhou and his group, whose eyes were gradually turning wide, he spoke with a smile.

"Mu Chen!"

Opening his eyes wide, Lin Zhou gawked as he took in the sight of the appearing Mu Chen, before hastily saying, "Why the hell are you here? Leave, now!"

The place before him wasn't a good place at all! Lu Tian and his gang wouldn't let go of any group present here. Mu Chen suddenly intruding here was simply a impending disaster for the latter.

Although Lin Zhou knew that Mu Chen's quite strong from their time in the branch palace of the Divine Wood Palace, he did not believe that the latter would be able to contend against an extremely famous experted like Lu Tian.

"Leave, now?"

Hearing that, a chilling smile surfaced on Zhou Ya's face. Darkly glaring at Mu Chen, he said with a fake smile, "Were you the one that spoke out just now?"

Giving no heed to him, Mu Chen raised his head. Looking right at Lu Tian and his gang standing in the air not far from him, who had similarly started to pay attention to him, he said with a smile, "Looks like we've found the right guy."

"Damnable thing!" The corner of Zhou Ya's mouth slightly twitched. Sending a backhanded patting forcefully towards Lin Zhou's chest, the latter was sent flying a dozen steps back, before yet another mouthful of

blood spewed from him.

Bang!

After sending a palm out to push Lin Zhou away, Zhou Ya's gaze grew increasingly ice-cold. In the next instant, powerful Spiritual Energy abruptly erupted from his body, before moving once again in a spectre-like fashion as he hurtled towards Mu Chen.

"Careful!"

Clutching his chest, Lin Zhou hastily roared.

Despite this, Mu Chen's head was still raised as he looked towards Lu Tian and his gang, appearing to not care the slightest bit towards Zhou Ya shooting straight towards him.

"Stupid idiot!" Seeing that Mu Chen had unexpectedly not cared about him, Zhou Ya's face instantly turned ashen as he malevolently laughed out. At this instant, the white light radiating from his palm grew increasingly dense, while white bones seemed to surface from within his flesh and blood. With astonishing force, his palm furiously patted down towards Mu Chen.

Seeing this, the faces of Lin Zhou and his group instantly turned deathly pale.

Whoosh!

Nevertheless, just as the malevolent-looking Zhou Ya's palm was about to land on Mu Chen's body, a golden light suddenly flashed from behind him. In the next instant, a golden long spear swept out, smashing against Zhou Ya's chest at lightning speed.

Boom!

As a low and deep voice resounded, golden light radiated. Zhou Ya's face seemingly contorted in an instant, with his face fluctuating between green and red. As an intense shiver shook though his body, he was sent flying back in an exceedingly miserable fashion.

Zhou Ya's feet scraped across the ground, creating two gulges spanning

hundreds of metres across the sand. Upon stabilising his body, close to half of his body had already been buried in the sand.

Puff.

Multiple mouthfuls of blood spewed from Zhou Ya, dying the sand before him scarlet-red.

The entire region seemed to have quietened down in an instant.

The mouths of Lin Zhou and his groups started to slowly open wide as they took in the scene in dumbfound shock. They were truthfully somewhat unable to comprehend how Zhou Ya, who had suppressed them to the point of being unable to put up any resistance, had unexpectedly been instantly beaten like a dead dog.

Turning their gazes along the length of the golden war spear extending from Mu Chen's back, they noticed an absolutely beautiful girl dressed in golden battle armor standing right by his side.

This girl possessed a graceful and elegant bearing, with the curves beneath her battle armor appearing exquisite and soul-stirring, causing people's blood to flow quicker upon seeing her. However, at this moment, a golden long spear hung in her hand as an indifferent gaze shot out from her willowy phoenix-like eyes. Sweeping across towards Zhou Ya, who was sent flying by her, her gaze appeared somewhat indifferent and uncaring.

"Wen... Wen Qingxuan!" Blood flowed down the corner of Zhou Ya's face as he looked towards the absolutely beautiful girl. Upon spotting her, terror and shock abruptly gushed from his eyes, before crying out her name.

Wen Qingxuan?

A tremble shook through the hearts of Lin Zhou and the others. To them, this name was akin to thunder piercing their ears. After all, the group led by Wen Qingxuan was now placed 2nd on the rankings. To them, the shock of hearing the name of someone so high up on the rankings was truthfully too strong.

After the momentary shock, all of them proceeded to cast vacant stares

right at Mu Chen. Clearly, they did not understand why Wen Qingxuan would appear by the latter's side, and even take action for him.

Not bothering to look more than a glance at Zhou Ya, Mu Chen raised his head to look towards a place in the sky not far away from him. There, the gazes shooting out had already been trained on him and his group.

Upon spotting Wen Qingxuan, the faces of the people present there involuntarily changed, while thick shades of dread and fear started to surface within their eyes.

"Wen Qingxuan... why would she appear at this place? Why is she taking action against us?" A dozen Captains softly cried out in shock, their voices sounding flustered and worried. Clearly, Wen Qingxuan had quite a bit of a shock factor in this place.

Fiercely staring at Wen Qingxuan, Lu Tian said in a deep voice, "Wen Qingxuan, we've never butted in your business. What's the meaning of this?"

Sweeping a look out at Lu Tian with her beautiful eyes, Wen Qingxuan didn't take notice to his words, merely keeping her long spear back to allow for Mu Chen to head forward.

"Haha. You must be Captain Lu Tian, right...?" said Mu Chen, sending a faint smile towards Lu Tian. "I'm the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's Mu Chen. We've come here today to ask for a favor from you, Captain Lu Tian..."

"Mu Chen?"

Hearing that name, Lu Tian's eyes instantly contracted. Naturally, he had heard about some news of Mu Chen. Furthermore, he also knew about the great grudges and grievances between him and Ji Xuan.

A chilling glint started to surface within Lu Tian's eyes. Nevertheless, remaining calm and collected, he replied with an different tone. "Oh? I seem to have no connection with you... I'm afraid that it'll be somewhat difficult for me to help you."

"I've quite a simple proposition for you, Captain Lu Tian," said Mu Chen

with a smile.

"Oh? Let's hear it."

Staring straight at Lu Tian, the smile hanging on Mu Chen's face appeared somewhat warm and gentle. Replying in a gentle voice, he said, "I wish for Captain Lu Tian to publicly announce that you have dispelled the alliance with Ji Xuan.

Hearing that, Lu Tian's face instantly changed. Sinisterly staring at Mu Chen, he said in a ridiculing fashion, "This joke's not one bit funny."

Wrinkling his forehead, Mu Chen replied, "So, Captain Lu Tian's not willing?"

"Mu Chen, I know that you have some grudges and grievances with Ji Xuan. However I have to remind you that it's best for you to be more honest. Let me tell you a fact! There's not even half an aspect you have that can match up to Ji Xuan," said Lu Tian with a sneer as he stared at Mu Chen. "Compared to Ji Xuan, you're still lacking too much!"

"Looks like negotiations are over then," said Mu Chen with a helpless smile.

"So what if negotiations are over? Do you think that you'll be able to dominate this place just by licking Wen Qingxuan's boot?" said Lu Tian with a sneer. With a wave of his hand, the dozen Captains of First Grade Spirit Disaster gathered around him, proceeding to covetously stare at Mu Chen and his group.

In the end, they were in the same boat as Lu Tian, and naturally did not want to see anything happening to Lu Tian. Although Wen Qingxuan was standing before them, causing extreme fear and dread to surface within them, there was still the existence of Ji Xuan behind Lu Tian's back.

That was the most tyrannical person present on the current point rankings.

If they were able to climb on his boat, there would absolutely be no one in this central region that would dare to aim for them.

Whoosh!

Below, the people that had encircled the groups, with Lin Zhou's included, within had also hastily shot back. Hovering in the air, they sent hostile gazes as they stared right at Mu Chen and his group.

Crossing his hands before his chest, Lu Tian looked down on Mu Chen from above. Although there was the existence of Wen Qingxuan and her group by Mu Chen's side, he had over a hundred men in the groups under his wing. Among them, the experts who were in the First Grade Spirit Disaster numbered a dozen. Such a formation would make squashing Mu Chen to death an absolute possibility.

"With the grudges and grievances present between you and him, Ji Xuan would naturally come and find you without needing me to get involved. For the sake of giving Wen Qingxuan face, if you take the initiative and leave now, I'll not haggle about the matter of you injuring Zhou Ya," said Lu Tian with an indifferent voice.

"That truly is a pity."

Mu Chen gave a helpless laugh, merely that his black pupils turned ice-cold in an instant. With a furious stomp of his feet, black lightning appeared to erupt from his body in an instant.

Whoosh!

Whooshing sounds rang out as Mu Chen appeared to have transformed into a bolt of lightning. In the next instant, appearing right before Lu Tian, he sent a palm abruptly patting out.

Bang!

Lightning converged under Mu Chen's palm. As it traveled, the air was pressed to the point of exploded apart, with signs of distortion and warping even appearing in the surrounding space.

Lu Tian was clearly vigilant towards Mu Chen. Therefore, upon this sudden assault, not a single trace of fluster was shown by him. On the contrary, a sneer rang out instead. "I've long heard about you, Mu Chen. I really want to see exactly how capable you really are!"

Lu Tian sent a palm patting out. His palm sparkled with white light, before a malevolent-looking gauntlet made of bones appeared in a flash. This white bone gauntlet appeared to be covered with bone spikes, with their tips sparkling with a dark light. Clearly, it was an exceedingly powerful Spiritual Artifact.

This Lu Tian truly was crafty, being able to even enact such a malevolent plan out in such circumstances. At this moment, even Mu Chen was not able to pull his palm back anymore.

If he was to forcefully pull his hand back, what would follow would be a fierce attack coming from Lu Tian that would completely suppress him.

However, Lu Tian did not appear to notice the corner of Mu Chen's mouth curling slightly up when his bone gauntlet had appeared. In the next instant, a flash of radiance sparkled form the latter's palm, before an ancient stone seal appeared in a flash.

This stone seal appeared to be in a dark green shadow, with ancient patterns carved on its surface. Present on the stone seal was the carving of a stone tortoise.

As it appeared, frightening gravitational forces started to radiated, causing signs of warping and distortions to appear in the surrounding space. As this happened, even the Spiritual Energies present in the surroundings were forced to the point of scattering away.

The originally chilling smile present on Lu Tian's face instantly froze, with a look of shock replacing it.

From the Spiritual Energy fluctuations, the stone seal that had appeared in Mu Chen's hand was unexpectedly a Divine Artifact?!

Chapter 570: Black Tortoise Force Field

Bang!

As the dark-green stone seal appeared within Mu Chen's palm in flash, it immediately started expanding, instantly expanding to an approximately 1 metre big size. Extremely powerful gravitational force started to radiate from it, causing even warping and distortions to appear in the surrounding space as a result.

This stone seal was naturally the Quasi-Divine Item Mu Chen had obtained from the Divine Wood Palace, the Black Tortoise Seal.

After going through a period of refinement, Mu Chen was clearly able to properly activate it now.

Boom!

The stone seal within Mu Chen's palm rotated, before accompanying Mu Chen's palm as it smashed against Lu Tian's malevolent-looking white bone gauntlet without the slightest bit of mercy.

Bang!

A low bang resounded as everyone saw an incomparably powerful shock wave wreaking havoc as it traveled. The air within a few hundred metre radius instantly exploded apart, while some unlucky fellows who were near to the point-of-origin were sent flying back and spurting blood.

As the Spiritual Energies wreaked havoc, a fierce shutter shook through Lu Tian's body, only for him to shoot back in a miserable fashion. He took a dozen steps back in the air, before finally stabilising himself. Despite that, his face had already turned ashen.

Upon seeing this, the faces of the Captains on the same boat as Lu Tian involutarily changed, their eyes brimming with shock as they looked towards Mu Chen. Clearly, they felt somewhat inconceivable that Mu Chen was actually able to gain an advantage in this first round of exchanging blows.

Stabilising himself, Lu Tian shot a dark look at the white bone gauntlet

on his hand. At this moment, some of malevolent-looking bone spikes present on it had actually shattered apart. The dense white light around it had appeared somewhat dimmer. Clearly, the previous collision of attacks had caused damage to it.

"So that's why you dare to challenge Ji Xuan. So it turns that it's due to you having a Quasi-Divine Artifact in your hands, huh?" said Lu Tian as he chillingly stared at Mu Chen, with ridicule and disdain present within within his tone.

"However, if you believe that you can contend against Ji Xuan just by relying on a Quasi-Divine Artifact, I truly believe that you're just a lunatic raving about his mad dreams."

With a calm gaze present in his eyes, Mu Chen extended his palm. As the Black Tortoise Seal slowly revolved within his palm, he looked straight towards the ashen-faced Lu Tian. With a faint smile, he said, "You really give off the vibe of a henchman..."

"The goal I've come here for... is for the sake of breaking this henchman of Ji Xuan."

Hearing that, Lu Tian's face started to slightly twitch. As he staring straight towards Mu Chen, dense killing intent gushed from his eyes. In the next instant, a chilling smile appeared on his face as he replied, "Since you're seeking death, you can't blame me for it. I'll capture you before tossing you right before Ji Xuan's face."

"Take action!"

As his voice rang out, he gave an abrupt wave of his hand.

Seeing this signal, the hundreds of groups hovering in the air hesitated for a bit. Finally, Spiritual Energies started to condense within their palms, before powerful fluctuations started to radiate from them.

Bang!

As low rumbling noise made by Spiritual Energies gushed out, figures started to abruptly shoot out, rushing straight towards Mu Chen like a swarm of locusts. Fierce Spiritual Energy attacks enveloped Mu Chen akin

to a rainstorm. Such a formation was exceedingly astonishing.

Although these people might not have reached the First Grade Spirit Disaster, with such numbers grouped together, such might would force even an expert in the First Grade Spirit Disaster to retreat or evade.

Nevertheless, Mu Chen did not retreat at all. Hovering in the air, the Spiritual Energy attacks heading towards him like a rainstorm started to be reflected within his black pupils.

Behind him, Luo Li, Wen Qingxuan and the others did not take action, with the only thing they did being quietly watching the scene unfolding before them.

Suddenly, a faint shuddering noise rang out from the Black Tortoise Seal in Mu Chen's hand. Hoisting his hand out, the Black Tortoise Seal instantly rushed towards the sky. Dramatically expanding in size as it did so, it transformed into a gigantic hundred-plus version if its former size.

Surfacing in the air, the Black Tortoise Seal appeared just like a mountain, being unable to budge.

The Black Tortoise Seal came to a stop in the air above Mu Chen's head, casting its shadow down below. Faintly, one could discern a low tortoise's roar as it furiously resounded.

"Mysterious Tortoise Force Field!"

As the ancient tortoise's roar resounded, a dim glowing green screen abruptly descended from the stone seal. This glowing screen was approximately a hundred metres in diametre, instantly enveloping the same radius around Mu Chen.

Bang! Bang!

Powerful Spiritual Energy attacks howled, before all of them smashed against the dim glowing green screen. The spectacle that happened next was an especially peculiar one. At the instant when those attacks struck the glowing screen, they instantly cracked apart, shuttering like dying flames as they rapidly vanished without a trace.

This peculiar scene instantly caused the faces of those who had taken action to instantly contort, before shades of shock and astonishment flashed within his eyes.

"This is the might of a Quasi-Divine Artifact, huh..."

Seeing this, a shiver of shock had also flashed within the eyes of Mu Chen. After acquiring the Black Tortoise Seal, this was the first time that he had truly activated it. Thus, the might displayed by the Quasi-Divine Artifact caused him to feel rather astonished.

The glowing screen seemed to act like a force field. Anything that tries to intrude within its radius would get suppressed and crushed into bits by the force field. Even Spiritual Energy was of no exception. This was the absolute combination of offense and defense in one ability. With such a treasure, Mu Chen need not worry just one bit about the encirclement from those people.

"Revolve!"

With a change of his hand seal, the Black Tortoise Seal started to revolve. In the next instant, the gigantic dim glowing green screen proceeded to envelop over a few groups.

Bang!

As the glowing halo came enveloping over, those bodies of those people that were unable to evade abruptly froze, before terror and dread gushed from their eyes. In the next instant, their faces rapidly turned red, appearing as if they were unable to breath.

The bodies appeared to have a mountain pressing down on them, causing them to be unable to revolve the Spiritual Energy present within their bodies.

Puff!

Puff!

Within the radius of the glowing halo, figures continued to spurt out successive mouthfuls of blood, with their bodies flying akin to birds with

their wings broken. Dropping right out of the sky, all of them plopped completely into the yellow sands below.

As the glowing halo swept out, dozens of people instantly dropped out of the sky, causing a patch of emptiness to appear within the packed sky.

In an instant, an extremely ugly expression appeared on the face of Lu Tian, while a shadow of astonishment flashed across his eyes. He never imagined that the ancient and strange stone seal in Mu Chen's hand would actually be that formidable.

Chi.

Sweeping his gaze, Mu Chen's hand seal changed once more. In the next instant, the Black Tortoise Seal revolved once again, before the glowing halo enveloped straight over Lu Tian.

Bang!

Seeing this, Lu Tian's face instantly changed. Giving a furious stomp of his feet, Spiritual Energy completely blasted out from him, before he shot backwards like a bolt of lightning, which just so happened to bring him out of the radius of the glowing halo.

"There's some flaws in its speed."

Mu Chen muttered as he slightly nodded his head. Although the Black Tortoise Seal's force field was able to combine both offensive and defensive capabilities, it didn't possess a quick movement speed. When met against an opponent with extremely quick speed, the latter would be able to flee from it.

Thinking about this, Mu Chen gave a laugh. With a thought, the dim green glowing halo shot out once again towards Lu Tian.

Seeing this, the only thing Lu Tian could do was to retreat once again.

Mu Chen seemed to be planning on using Lu Tian to test out the capability of his Black Tortoise Seal. At this moment, he had diligently focused on controlling the Black Tortoise Seal. Therefore, despite some comical scenes appearing, the dim green glowing halo continued to

pursue behind Lu Tian's back. Not daring to become enveloped within its radius, the latter could only continue to evade in a somewhat miserable fashion.

...

After suffering the big loss earlier, a few of Lu Tian's compatriots did not dare to take action again. Only at this moment did they understand why Mu Chen and his group would suddenly appear to knock on Lu Tian's doorsteps. The key factor was the assurance of victory. After all, from the looks of the current situation, Wen Qingxuan had not take action since that initial blow. When the time comes for both parties to truly take action against each other, despite them having the numerical superiority, they truly did not possess any confidence at all within their hearts...

"Mu Chen, is your only ability being to use your Divine Artifact to suppress people?" After being forced to move about in a miserable fashion, Lu Tian's face grew increasingly ashen as he roared in a fierce voice.

"If you really possess true ability, you should use your true power to defeat me!"

With a clench of his hand, the Black Tortoise Seal rapidly strunk down, before transforming into a ray of light that shot straight into Mu Chen's palm. Raising his head, he sent a faint smile towards Lu Tian before saying, "I know that you're using such 'I'm not up to the standard' remarks to provoke me. However, regardless of what method I use, there won't be much change to your final ending."

"Let me see you try!"

"Technique of the White Bones, Divine White Bones Physique!"

With a malevolent laugh, Lu Tian took a fierce step forward. A greyish-white radiance started to radiate from him. As this radiance started to congeal around his body, it started to gradually transform into a thin-layered white bone armor.

As the white bone armor encased Lu Tian's body, a chilling luster started

to suffuse on its surface. Faintly, extremely tyrannical energy fluctuations started to radiate from him. Lu Tian appeared to have activated some sort of a body-tempering technique.

The so-called "Divine White Bone Physique" was precisely what Lu Tian had obtained from the Bone Sect and possessed extraordinary might. Regardless of defense or offense, it was incomparably tyrannical. Lu Tian's cultivation can be considered to be at the Pinnacle First Grade Spirit Disaster, with him not yet passing through the second level. However, by relying on this so-called "Divine White Bone Physique", he was able to engage in intense fights against experts at Second Grade Spirit Disaster without suffering defeat.

Upon seeing this, the faces of the various groups alongside Lin Zhou's who had been encircled by Lu Tian's gang all slightly changed. From the looks of it, they too have heard about how tyrannical Lu Tian's "Divine White Bone Physique" was.

"This is the Bone Sect's Divine White Bone Physique?"

At this moment, Mu Chen had also raised his head, his black pupils focusing on Lu Tian, who was now encased in white bones. In the next instant, an indifferent laugh rang from him, before he slowly clenched his hands, only for black lightning to immediately gush from his body.

Low rumbles of thunder resounded across the entire region upon the appearance of that black lightning.

The black lightning bolts appeared to form lightning patterns on the surface of Mu Chen's body as they quietly congealed together.

Clearly, Mu Chen was extremely interested in testing exactly which one was stronger, the Bone's Sect's Divine White Bone Physique, or his Lightning God's Physique.

Chapter 571: Lightning God's Technique VS Divine White Bone Physique

Bang Rumble.

The low rumbles of thunder resounded across the reddish yellow desert, causing even the azure blue sky to seemingly turn dim.

Standing in the air, black lightning bolts sparkled crazily across his body. As the black lightning bolt rippled out in halos, they caused the surrounding space to warp and distort.

As of now, Mu Chen's Lightning God's Physique, had already been cultivated to the level of Hexa Rune Lightning Physique. It's said that when one's Lightning God's Physique reaches the Ennea Rune Lightning Physique, one's physique would be able to rival that of a Sovereign realm expert.

If was able to reach that level, a casual punch from Mu Chen would be truly able to shatter space apart. With a wave of his palm, he would be able to wipe out mountains, showing how exceedingly powerful it was.

While Mu Chen was activating his Lightning God's Physique in complete effect, Lu Tian swept his gloomy gaze over from the skies above. Looking at the lightning sparkling across Mu Chen's body, the corner of his eyes started twitching slightly.

Clearly, he could sense how tyrannical Mu Chen's physique was.

"I don't believe that your physique's even stronger than my Divine White Bone Physique!"

Lu Tian roared out as a gloomy shade filled his eyes. With the entire situation already progressed to this stage, he naturally could no longer under estimate Mu Chen anymore. However, he was similarly extremely confident in his Divine White Bone Physique. This was due to him having crossed hands with Ji Xuan before. Although it had result in his defeat in the end, the strength of his Divine White Bone Physique had caused even Ji Xuan to feel shocked and astonished. This point was more than

sufficient for Lu Tian to feel proud about himself.

Therefore, faced against Mu Chen now, he did not feel any dread or fear.

The chilling white spiritual glow continued to radiate out from Lu Tian's body. Bones white to the point of causing people's hearts to palpitate appeared to have grown out from Lu Tian's body. Forming a dense bony armor, it encased Lu Tian's body within, appearing to have to be indestructible.

Under the white bones, a sinister looking gaze shout out. With a furious stomp, the space below his feet rippled, before his figure instantly disappeared.

"Such a quick speed!"

Upon seeing this, the faces of Lin Zhou, Xu Huang and rest involuntarily changed. Lu Tian's speed was such that they were seemingly unable to observe him with their bare hands, with them only being faintly able to discern slight traces of Spiritual Energy fluctuations.

Due to them being unable to chase up to Lu Tian's figure with their eyes, their gazes instantly turned towards Mu Chen. After all, regardless of how fast Lu Tian was, his goal would always be to attack Mu Chen.

Whoosh!

Just as their gazes locked on to Mu Chen, they noticed ripples appearing in the space behind Mu Chen. In the next instant, a figure glowing with white light appeared in a flash. Bringing along a frightening force, the white bone encased fist rumbled heavily towards Mu Chen's back without the slightest bit of mercy.

Such a speed was akin to that of lightning.

Bang!

THe white bone fist pierced right through Mu Chen's body. However, despite that, there was not a single trace of blood spurting out.

"A remnant shade?"

A faint smile appeared on Lu Tian before swinging his right leg towards

the back of Mu Chen in a whip like fashion. Chilling white Spiritual Energy appeared to form into a gigantic Spiritual Energy gale, chopping down furiously like a battle axe.

Bang!

A palm suffused with lightning patted out heavily from behind, slamming straight against the white bony leg.

Boom!

A loud bang rang out,as energy ripples visibles to the naked eye rippled out, causing the space to split apart. Unable to endure the impact from the collision, the air present in the surroundings exploded apart, sending shockwaves surging out.

A faint shutter shook through the two people. However, in the next instant, both of them shot out in spectre like fashion.

Lightning and white brilliance erupted in the air. However, what's peculiar was that everyone was unable to notice their figures, with them only being able to see the two clumps of brilliance smashing against each other time and time after again. Every single time they collided, frightening energy shockwaves would sweep out, causing berserk sandstorms to swirl up from the desert below.

"Indeed, that Lu Tian possessed some ability, to be able to contend with Mu Chen with his physique." said Xu Huang and the others as their faces grew solemn. They were extremely clear how strong Mu Chen's physique was. However, from the looks of it, Lu Tian was unexpected able to not be in a disadvantage when contending against Mu Chen on this aspect. From this, one could tell how powerful the latter was.

"The Bone Sect is similarly a powerful regional influence within the shattered continent in the ancient antiquity. Their inheritance, the Divine White Bone Physique's naturally not weak."

Wen Qingxuan spoke out. "It's said that this Lu Tian had crossed hands with Ji Xuan. Despite his eventual loss, by relying on his Divine White Bone Physique, he was able to cause some trouble for Ji Xuan. If not, the

latter would not hold the former that strongly in regard and allow the former to join the latter's alliance."

"Furthermore, Ji Xuan's Spiritual Energy is stronger than Mu Chen's by a notch. Although he has yet to breakthrough to Second Grade Spirit Disaster, by relying on the strength of his physique, he's able to put up a fight even against experts of Second Grade Spirit Disaster." said Luo Li with a faint smile.

"That strong?"

Shock and astonishment appeared on the faces of Xu Huang and the rest. As of now in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, although the strength of various groups have all been increasing at an astonishing rate, there were still extremely few people that have managed to breakthrough to Second Grade Spirit Disaster. These people possessed absolute qualifications to enter the final match. From the looks of it, this Lu Tian's unexpectedly able to possess the strength to contend against those at Second Grade Spirit Disaster, clearly more than sufficient to show his might.

Wen Qingxuan and Luo Li nodded towards one another, before raising their slender and snow white necks, casting their beautiful eyes towards the extremely intense fight happening in the air. Both of the knew that although Mu Chen can be said to be crossing hands with Lu Tian, truthfully, this could also be said as another way he was employing to pit himself against Ji Xuan.

Lu Tian had already suffered defeat in Ji Xuan's hands, before being subdued by the latter. On the other hand, although Mu had no interest in subduing Lu Tian, he had all the interest in the worlds to forcefully break the high place Ji Xuan had in Lu Tian's heart.

Bang!

Yet another gigantic bag rang out in the skies, a frightening energy shockwaves rushed out under of the gazes of everyone present. Two glowing figures abruptly shot out, retreating a dozen steps in the air, with every step they take causing the air below to shutter and explode apart.

Everyone's gaze instantly turned over towards them.

In the air, two figures surfaced from within the dazzling brilliance.

At this moment, charred patches were scattered around the white bone encased body of Lu Tian. Clearly, those were injuries brought about by the berserk Black Divine Lightning coming from Mu Chen in their earlier head on confrontation.

Comparatively, Mu Chen appeared to be somewhat in a better state. With the black lightning encasing his body, it had result his body becoming as strong and resilient as metal. Although there were white scratches present on his skin, all of these couldn't even be counted as anything in the presence of Mu Chen's tyrannical physique.

The previous crossing of hands which had causing people's scalps to turn numb had unexpectedly not causing any significant injuries for the both of them.

This scene caused the corner of quite a few people's eyes to twitch. Aren't the physique of these two fellows too overpowered...

"Quite a powerful physique."

Lightning flowed around the surface of Mu Chen's body as he stared at Lu Tian in the air, his eyes sparkling with the same lightning radiance. Every since the start of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, the person before his eyes, Lu Tian, might just be the strongest fellow he had met so far.

"From your expression, could it be that you believe that you've already gotten the advantage?" said Lu Tian with a sneer. In the next instant, chilling white radiance circulated around his body, before the charred clumps rapidly dissipated away.

The white bones around his body shone in a luster brimming with power once again.

"However, you being able to train your physique to such a degree have exceeded my expectations. However, I'm very sorry to inform you that there's still quite a big disparity between you and Ji Xuan!"

With a cold sneer, Lu Tian shot words of ridiculement out. Despite that, what he had thought was different from the words he had spoken. That's due to him knowing how hard it was to train and temper one's physique. If not for that bone pond present within the remnant of the Bone Sect, he might not have been able to cultivate his Divine White Bone Physique to such a level. He had originally assumed that there won't be many people within the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament that would be a comparable physique to him. However, who would have expected that person before his eyes, Mu Chen would possess one that wasn't weaker than his own.

Being able to be heavily regarded Ji Xuan, this fellow indeed possess some ability.

Hearing that. Mu Chen gave a faint laugh in response, before replying in a voice that appeared to be accompanied by the roars of thunder. "Activate your Divine White Bone Physique to the limits. Otherwise, your arrogance won't last much longer."

Hearing that, a chilling expression appeared on Lu Tian's face as he stared at Mu Chen. However, upon seeing the calm, exceedingly abstruse black pupils of his that appeared to have not the slightest traces of ripples, for some unknown reason, he felt a chill surface within his heart.

This chill caused Lu Tian to sink into silence for a while. Extending his hands out slowly, his eyes staring chillingly at Mu Chen, before abruptly changing his hand seal. As his hand seal changed, the white bones on the surface of his body started to slowly radiate with a gem like luster, just like sparkling diamonds. However, everyone could sense that the might of Lu Tian's physique had risen once again.

"Your tone's quite arrogant. I've already cultivated my White Bones Divine Physique to the point of transforming bone into jade. When I cross hands with Ji Xuan some time ago, although I lost in the end, he was unable to break my White Bones Divine Physique. As for now, what about you?" the increase in power erupting out from his physique causing the chill within Lu Tian's heart to rapidly dissipate away, while his voice become gloomy and sinister once again.

Lightning flowed within Mu Chen's black pupils, with not a single trace of any emotion seemingly present within. Slowly clenching his hands, roars of thunder akin to those of a furious dragon erupted out from his body.

Bang! Rumble! Rumble!

The roars of thunder grew increasingly loud, before resounding across the entire region, causing even the hurricanes wreaking havoc within the desert to become suppressed by them.

The skies started to grow dim.

Crackle.

Due to the spectacle unfolding before him, Lu Tian narrowed his eyes slightly. In the next instant, as a chilling glint flashed within his eyes, a dazzling splendor erupted furiously from his jade like body.

Whoosh!

Akin to a jade coloured ray of light, his figure shot across the horizon, hurtling straight at Mu Chen. Clearly, he could sense some threat from the latter. Thus, he did not want to allow Mu Chen to successfully activate his strength to his maximum capability.

"White Bones Divine Physique, Jade Bones Divine Fist!"

A loud roar resounded from Lu Tian, before his figure appeared right before Mu Chen seemingly in an instant, before a jade like fist rumbled heavily out.

Bang!

The surrounding space started to ripple, while all of the air in a hundred metre radius exploded apart. Gigantic fissures started to appear on the desert below, before rapidly expanding out.

Dumbfounded shock and terror immediately gushed out of the eyes of countless people.

They turned their gazes towards Mu Chen, only to see that the black lightning bolts that were sparkling crazily on the surface of his body had

rapidly retracted within his body. Such a scene appeared as though he had been suppressed.

"That's not right!"

However, there were some people who were quick to discuss that something wasn't quite right. That's because the saw that as those lightning bolts retracted within Mu Chen's body, lightning like patterns had suddenly appeared on his arm, before rapidly extending out.

Within a short instant, seemingly half of Mu Chen's body had already been covered by the lightning patterns that were sparkling with a black radiance.

This scene gave somewhat of a malevolent flavor.

While the glowing lightning patterns had covered half of Mu Chen's body, lightning finally erupted out from his jet black eyes, appearing just like the awakening of a lightning dragon.

Bang!

The arm covered in black lightning patterns started to move at a slow, yet unavoidable speed as it sent an attack out.

Boom!

In the next instant, the lightning fist and the jade bone fist smashed heavily into each other.

At the instant of the collision, Lu Tian noticed faint twitching at the corner of Mu Chen's mouth, before an indifferent voice that caused his entire body to turn cold started to slowly ring out.

"Since Ji Xuan's unable to break your White Bones Divine Physique, I'll be the one to break it."

Chapter 572: Great Harvest

Boom!

In this instant, bright and resplendent lightning accompanied by astonishing peals of thunder resounded across the horizon. Akin to giant pythons, bolts of lightning wreaked havoc crazily around as they blanketed the surrounding skies.

A myriad of lightning bolts surged around under the dim skies, causing a exceedingly terrifying spectacle for everyone around.

Figures retreated in miserable fashion on the desert below. At this moment, everyone's ears were filled with the peals of thunder, with some unfortunate people having flood starting to flow out from their ears. Clearly, they were injured by the roars of the thunder ringing out from the skies.

Below the epicentre of the collision, the desert had collapsed down, with gigantic fissures extending out like a spiderweb, while sand flowed down within like waterfalls.

After evading the lightning roars, everyone raised their heads to look towards the origin where they had raidated out from.

Signs of warping and distortions had appeared space surrounding there, appearing to have formed an entire stretch of empty space, with the air a hundred metres in radius around having completely exploded apart.

In the empty space, two figures still maintained their stance, their fists pointed against each other, while their frozen bodies appeared statuesque.

The frightening energies that have been gushing out from the two people had completely dissipated away quietly. The only movement present on them was the gentle breeze blowing at their robes, causing them to flutter slightly.

Every sound within the region had turned quiet, as every single gaze latched on tightly towards the the two figures present there.

Under the attentive gazes of everyone in the surroundings, a faint

shudder shook through Mu Chen's body, before the lightning originally sparkling within his black pupils completely vanished away.

Looking calmly towards Lu Tian standing right before him, he proceeded to slowly release his clenched fist. As his finger quivered slightly, he gave a gentle flick towards the layers of jade like bones covering the surface of the latter's body.

Crack!

This appeared to be a gentle flick that possessed not even one bit of power behind it. However, it had brought about astonished and shocked responses in the people around. Following a minute cracking sound ringing out, everyone's eyes hastily contracted as cracks suddenly started to extend out from the surface of the jade like bones.

Crack! Crack!

The minute sounds grew in frequency. As their gazes shot over, they saw dense cracks have unexpectedly appeared quietly on the bright jade like bones encasing Lu Tian's body.

At astonishing speeds, the cracks extended out, completely covering every spot of the jade like bones in a short span of a few breaths.

At this moment, Mu Chen slowly lowered his fist. As he did so, the faint trace of blood surfaced on his finger tip. Shooting an indifferent glance over, he gave it a light rub to clean it off.

Bang!

Suddenly, the bright jade like bones on the surface of Lu Tian's body shattered apart. As the jade like bone fragments shot out, Lu Tian's originally frozen body appeared to have suffered a strike by lightning as he abruptly shot backwards.

Bang! Bang!

As Lu Tian's body flew out, clumps of blood mist spurted crazily one after another from his mouth. In the short span of a few breaths, everyone could feel the Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiating out from the former

started to decrease at an astonishing rate.

Puff!

Yet another mouthful of blood spurted out from him. Finally, being unable to endure any much longer, Lu Tian dropped straight down from the skies, before burrowing head first into the sand below under the terrified and dumbfounded gazes of everyone around. As blood clumped up the sand as it landed on the desert surface, Lu Tian gave of an exceedingly miserable sight.

As Lu Tian's body drilled deeply into the sand, the wind devastated deserted turned deathly silent once again. Regardless of the various groups that had gathered around Lu Tian, or those groups like Lin Zhou who were encircled by them, at this moment, all of them were at a loss for words.

The suppressive feeling coming from Lu Tian was truthfully too heavy for them. Therefore, upon seeing this person, who was standing high up in the sky, collapse with such a loud rumble, the shock surging out within them was truly quite huge.

"He's won." happiness erupted from the faces of Xu Huang and the others, while their tense hearts started to relax.

Noticing this, Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan both gave a smile without much of any other expression. Clearly, they did not feel much of a surprise with Mu Chen being able to defeat Lu Tian.

The lightning patterns sparkling on the surface of Mu Chen's body had already completely disappeared away. Shooting down, he landed on the sands below, before appearing right by the exceedingly miserable looking Lu Tian.

At this moment, the latter was covered with blood as he continued to gasp painfully for air. Clearly, he had suffered heavy injuries from the confrontation earlier.

As blood flowed out from Lu Tian's mouth, he stared right at Mu Chen's with his eyes wide open, brimming with inconceivable feelings. He's White Bones Divine Physique was unexpectedly defeated by Mu Chen using the

strength of his own body...

This was something that Ji Xuan was unable to accomplish them.

"Looks like your White Bones Divine Physique isn't as strong as you've thought." said Mu Chen faintly as he stared at Lu Tian.

Shooting a vicious glare at Mu Chen, gloominess and malevolence still remained within Lu Tian's eyes. Cracking his mouth open to give a chilling laugh, he spoke out. "Mu Chen, you're formidable. This time, I've indeed made an error in judgement. However, so what if you've defeated me! Even you will be hard pressed to imagine how strong Ji Xuan is now! Being treated as his enemy will be the most sorrowful thing you'll ever experience in your life!"

"You still never forget to be a good henchman even at such a time."

Mu Chen spoke out with a laugh, before squatting down. Looking calmly towards Lu Tian, he replied in a slow manner. "I've never treated defeating you as anything big. In the future, you'll see the showdown between me and him, am I right?"

Mu Chen's voice appeared exceedingly calm, with not so much as a fluctuation present within. However, when Lu Tian stared at him, he was unable to say any ridiculing remarks back. That's because he could feel as though there was a lion hiding within the depths of the calm black eyes of the youth before him, causing his heart to palpitate in fear.

With a clench of his hand, a ray of brilliance shot out from Lu Tian's bosom, before landing within his palm. This was precisely the Academy Plaque of Lu Tian's group.

The quantity of points present on it had reach a high number of 20 thousand.

"You!" seeing this, Lu Tian's face instantly contorted.

"Spoils of war." replied Mu Chen with a faint smile.

Flicking his hand, yet another Academy Plaque appeared in a flash. After transferring half of the points that Lu Tian's Academy Plaque has, the

points on his group's Academy Plaque had risen to approximately 13 thousand.

This was a quantity that Mu Chen and his group had never reached before. However, at this moment, it wasn't even enough to catapult them into the top 16 rankings.

Mu Chen tossed Lu Tian's Academy Plaque back. Seeing this, the latter clenched his teeth, with his gaze appearing to contain some hatred and resentment.

Whoosh!

Luo Li, Wen Qingxuan, Xu Huang and the rest of the groups had shot over at this moment. As Wen Qingxuan walked close, she gently fluttered her gaze towards the numerous groups in the air that had launched attacks at Mu Chen earlier, before speaking out, "How to deal with those fellows?"

Toying with the Academy Plaque in his hand, a chilling shade flashed through Mu Chen's eyes, before he replied. "Since they had taken action, they naturally have to pay some price. Having followed Lu Tian for the past few days to snatch points from quite a few people, they had only themselves to blame for such a result."

Hearing that, Xu Huang was instantly shocked as he spoke out. "There's at least a hundred groups present her. If we are to take action against them, I'm afraid that will be some trouble in doing so."

In the air, the numerous groups that had taken action against Mu Chen seemed to have discovered the gaze filled with ill intent shooting out from the latter, causing a chill to run through their hearts. They proceeded to quietly gather close to one another. WIth so many groups converged together, no matter how formidable that Mu Chen was, he shouldn't dare to anger the masses, right?

Clearly, Mu Chen had also sensed their actions, causing a ridiculing smile to curl up at the corner of his mouth, before turning to look at Lin Zhou and his group.

Noticing Mu Chen gaze shooting towards him, Lin Zhou immediately gawked, before his eyes started to sparkle. He had immediately picked up on Mu Chen's plan. This resulted a chilling smile cracking open from his mouth as he nodded his head.

"Everyone, those bastards had snatched our points so happily just moments ago! Now, we can't just let them go like that, am I right?" leaping up, Lin Zhou stared at the dozens of groups that were encircled by Lu Tian and his gang earlier before roaring out in a fierce voice.

Hearing his roar, the dozens of groups became restless, while anger and hatred surfaced within their eyes. Nevertheless, with their disadvantage in numbers, they did not dare to carelessly take action.

"Everyone, an eye for an eye, a tooth for a tooth. That's the basic rule for the heavens and earth. If there's anyone that doesn't accept that, I'll help you." said Mu Chen with a faint smile on his face.

"You're vicious, Mu Chen!" some people roared out.

However, as those people roared out in anger, rays of brilliance had already erupted from the eyes of the dozens of groups that were encircled earlier. With a furious clench of their teeth, they rose in to the skies, forming an encircling formation, trapping the hundreds of groups within.

"You dare!"

Seeing this, the hundreds of groups instantly roared out in fury. Those groups that they had encircled earlier had actually dared to take action against them.

Hmph!

However, as their roars rang out, a cold snort followed suit, before golden light erupted out, only for everyone to see Wen Qingxuan holding her golden war spear in her hand as she stood in the air. As a chilling gaze swept out from her beautiful eyes, those groups under her gaze started to shiver, while their eyes started to fill up with terror and dread."

"Hand over your points obediently, and I'll remain courteous. If any of you continue to remain stupid and pigheaded, I'll make sure that you'll not

be able to participate in the next Great Spiritual Academy Tournament." Wen Qingxuan's sweet sounding voice rang out, yet the icy cold intent present within causing the hearts of quite a few people to shudder in fright.

"Take action!"

Seeing this, Lin Zhou gave a loud roar, taking the lead as he shot out.

"Take out points back from them!" behind him, the dozens of groups shot out in succession as their roars resounded out.

Instantly, the surrounding skies became chaotic. Although the hundreds of groups had the numerical advantage, their morale had seemingly collapsed completely. Added with Mu Chen, Wen Qingxuan and the others shooting out covetous gazes from the side, they were utterly defeated in a moments worth of time, all of them suffering miserable defeat. The few that attempted to fellow were all forced back by Luo Li.

Therefore, within a short span of ten minutes, the hundreds of groups were completely defeated, with figures dropping down in miserable fashion, before being forced to hand over their Academy Plaques.

Stepping out, Lin Zhou collected all of the Academy Plaques, before carrying them and walking towards Mu Chen. Handing all of them over the latter, a smile cracked open from his mouth as he said, "Although I know Brother Mu's character, the rules are the rules. Only you can take the majority of these points.

Looking at the hundreds of Academy Plaques present before him, Mu Chen could not help but to gawk out.

Chapter 573: Targeted

The hundreds of Academy Plaques placed before his eyes truly possessed a slight shock factor. Even with Mu Chen's character, the scene before his eyes caused him to slightly gawk.

Mu Chen stared at the Academy Plaques. If he was able to obtain all of those points, his group should have enough points to catapult themselves into the Top 8 ...

Beside him, the eyes of Xu Huang and the others turned scorching hot, similarly showing their shock due to the presence of so many Academy Plaques.

Standing by his side, Luo Li didn't say a word, while Wen Qingxuan crossed her jade-like hands before her chest as she cast her beautiful eyes towards Mu Chen.

Behind Lin Zhou's back, the dozens of groups were also staring at Mu Chen, complicated feelings filled their eyes. However, they did not make any noise in the end. That's because they knew that if not for Mu Chen appearing here today, they would be hard-pressed to escape the calamity they were in earlier.

According to the rules, Mu Chen would absolutely obtain the majority of the spoils of war. As for them, being able to obtain the bits that trickle down would in fact be an exceedingly good deal by itself.

Hu.

Under the glare of everyone present, Mu Chen continued staring at the Academy Plaques as he deeply pondered for a bit. Finally, a smile appeared on his handsome face. This smile was entirely different from the dark and sinister one that Lu Tian wore earlier, being able to cause warmth to appear in the hearts of people.

It had to be said that the smiling Mu Chen possessed quite some charm, shown by the gradually relaxed expressions on the faces of the groups behind Lin Zhou.

"Captain Lin Zhou, you've truly given me a hard problem to solve," said Mu Chen as he looked towards Lin Zhou.

Hearing that, the latter gawked, before scratching his head and replying, "You don't need to worry about it. In fact, matters like weak groups being eliminated by powerful groups are too much of a common thing in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament. There's no one that would say anything about it."

"Of the points here, I'll take a one portion, with Wen Qingxuan and her group taking another. As for the last portion, you can distribute it among everyone here. After all, these points are your spoils of war," replied Mu Chen within a smile.

Hearing Mu Chen's reply, Lin Zhou and the rest immediately gawked while blankly staring at Mu Chen as they felt slightly inconceivable towards the former's decision. After all, they had collaborated with some powerful groups before. However, those so-called "collaborations" were in fact those powerful groups wanting to utilise them as cannon fodder or meat shields. Furthermore, when it came to the distribution of points, the powerful teams would seemly seize half or more of them. Only the rest would be distributed to the groups that were in collaboration with them.

Therefore, when Mu Chen had only taken a taken portion, all of them seemed to be slightly unable to believe what they just heard.

"Don't look at me like that. I've not gotten to the stage where points don't matter. On the contrary, I rather love snatching points from them as opposite to those weaker ones." replied Mu Chen with a faint smile as he pointed towards the Lu Tian who was buried in the sand.

Exchanging glances with each other, a slightly unconcealable look of gratitude emerged from the eyes of Lin Zhou and the others after deeply pondering for quite a while. Their groups weren't strong or weak, causing them to feel extremely awkward in the current situation of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament. Generally speaking, upon reaching such a stage, they would seemingly become point banks in the eyes of those powerful groups. Such a status could be considered as low and pitiful.

Therefore, Mu Chen giving them such an extremely large choice was a first for them.

That's because all of them knew what Mu Chen was giving them wasn't just a choice, but respect, too.

"Thank you, Captain Mu Chen." the groups standing behind Lin Zhou cupped their hands towards Mu Chen as they said their thanks in deep voices.

The dozens of group captains cupped their hands towards Mu Chen while saying their thanks, with gratitude present within their eyes. During this period of time, their emotions were truthfully not quite good. Could anyone's honor not be hurt by being exploited by powerful groups one after another before having their points snatched away from them?

Mu Chen was somewhat stunned and amazed by their responses. Giving an awkward laugh, he turned his gaze towards Wen Qingxuan before saying, "Take two portions of the points. I've said before that I'll try my best to let you regain your Numero Uno place again."

Panning her head to shoot a look at Mu Chen, Wen Qingxuan raised her red lips before replying in a low voice, "I never knew that Captain Mu Chen also knows quite a good move to buy the hearts of people."

Unable to tell whether Wen Qingxuan had any intent of ridiculing him with her reply, Mu Chen wrinkled his forehead as he said, "That's not my intention. I purely dislike doing something like that."

"Okay, okay. I never said that you were like that."

Wen Qingxuan replied with a faint smile, with her voice unexpectedly turning somewhat gentle. Looking deeply at Mu Chen with her beautiful eyes, she said, "If you had truly devoured all of those points, I would have become slightly disappointed in you, although this truly is no concern of whether it's right or wrong. I know that power is the say in this place, and that there's no one that's able to criticise or find fault with what you do. Nevertheless, if you're unable to even resist such a temptation, I'd truly be unable to believe that you'd be able to walk far in the path ahead of you."

Shooting a look at Luo Li, she said in a profound manner, "If you're unable to walk that far, don't destroy such a lustrous girl as her."

"Everyone has their own interpretations of the truth. However, it seems as if you're praising me," replied Mu Chen as he rubbed his nose. Truthfully speaking, his thoughts were extremely simple, as he did not want to use such a way to obtain points. That's because he knew that this wasn't the original intent of the creation of this Great Spiritual Academy Tournament. The groups that relied on the weak groups to obtain a large quantity of points would not be able to truly stand at the peak at the end.

"Your skin's quite thick, huh," said Wen Qingxuan as she rolled her eyes towards Mu Chen. The gentleness that was present within her voice was instantly gone, and she regained her arrogant, phoenix-like appearance once again.

As she spoke those words, Wen Qingxuan waved her jade-like hand, before taking out two portions of the points present on the Academy Plaques. As the thick brilliance rose up, the points on her Academy Plaque drastically rose by 20,000 points, inching closer towards the Numero Uno, Ji Xuan.

After taking those points, Wen Qingxuan tossed the Academy Plaques towards Lin Zhou and the others, who hastily took over and distributed the remaining points.

After a moment of chaos, order was regained in the surrounding area, while the gazes shooting towards Mu Chen were filled with gratitude.

"Brother Mu Chen, there's no words that can describe our thanks for this great kindness. All of us will remember your kindness," said Lin Zhou as he slightly bent his waist. Without saying anymore roundabout words, he waved his hands, before turning around and leaving. After expressing their gratitude to Mu Chen once more, the other groups had also started to leave.

Seeing their leaving figures, a faint smile appeared on Mu Chen's face.

"What about that fellow? From the looks of it, he seems to not have any good feelings towards you," said Wen Qingxuan as she pointed her slender

finger towards Lu Tian. At this moment, the latter appeared to have clenched his teeth, clearly possessing an extreme amount of hatred towards Mu Chen.

Upon hearing that, Mu Chen's eyes slightly narrowed. A person of such strength as Lu Tian was considered somewhat of a threat towards him and his group. If he was to let the latter go so easily, upon regaining his stride, the latter would definitely cause some trouble for him and his group.

"Mu Chen, you've already taken away my points! What else do you want? Could it be that you want to kill me?"

"I won't go as far as to kill you," replied Mu Chen with a laugh. As his eyes sparkled, faint black light suddenly surfaced within his palm, with an extremely strange and mysterious power present within it.

This was the power of sealing that came from the page of the "Undying Blueprint" present within his body.

Mu Chen pressed his palm onto Lu Tian's chest, causing the sealing power to rapidly drill within the latter's body. In the next instant, Lu Tian discovered to his horror that the Spiritual Energy within his body had unexpectedly started to decline at an astonishing speed.

Within the short span of a few breaths, Lu Tian, who was already heavily injured, had his strength decrease to roughly the realm of Human Body Disaster, while the Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiating from his body were being supressed to the extremity.

"What-what have you done to me?!" Lu Tian was finally terrified. That's because he could feel that the Spiritual Energy within his body appeared to have been suppressed, causing him to unexpectedly be unable to circulate it at will.

As he probed with his mind, he discovered black rays of brilliance sparkling within the meridians of his body. It was precisely those strange and mysterious black lights that had caused him to lose the absolute control he had over the Spiritual Energy within his body.

"I've only temporarily sealed your Spiritual Energy, that's all."

With Lu Tian's current state, wanting to dispel the sealing force within him would take a month, at the very least. During that time frame, the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament would have already reached its conclusion.

Lu Tian's face lost all colour, with his eyes brimming with unbridled anger and fury.

Nevertheless, Mu Chen did not continue caring about him as he calmly turned his body around. Looking towards Luo Li, Wen Qingxuan and the rest, he said, "Let's go. We should find the next target now."

As his voice rang out, his figure started to rise to the sky, with Luo Li and the rest following suit, leaving being an exceedingly miserable Lu Tian roaring in fury and anger...

The matter of Lu Tian's group suddenly dropping out of the Top 16 had caused quite the big ripples within the vast central region. After all, within this place, Lu Tian was still considered to be a rather famous expert. Who would have expected that his defeat would happen so quickly? As people took in this set of news, all of them could not help sighing and lament. There were truly crouching tigers and hidden dragons within this Great Spiritual Academy Tournament.

On the top of a green mountain peak.

Looking at the Academy Plaque, faint wrinkles started to appear on Ji Xuan's forehead.

"Lu Tian's been defeated," said Mu Feng, who was standing behind him. "Could it be that there are people wanting to deal with us?"

"There're crouching tigers and hidden dragons in this place. With him being too rampant, Lu Tian's defeat was inevitable." On the contrary, Ji Xuan did not appear so overly concerned. After all, rising and falling with the current phase of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament was all too common.

Hearing that, Mu Feng nodded his head, without adding anymore words.

Clearly, the two of them had not placed such a common matter so

heavily within their hearts.

However, their current frame of mind only lasted for a day, before being abruptly broken. At that moment, even with Ji Xuan's state of mind, his face had started to turn dark.

That's because they had heard yet another shocking piece of news on the second day that was circulating around the vast central region.

It was from the Myriad Beasts Spiritual Academy. The group led by Wang Jiang that had obtained the inheritance of the Demonic Alligator Palace had similarly been defeated, with the person doing so being known as Mu Chen.

On the mountain peak, Mu Feng looked towards the dark-faced Ji Xuan. At this moment, they could clearly feel the feeling of being aimed at. That Mu Chen had already started to launch a challenge towards Ji Xuan.

Chapter 574: Approaching Storm

As time had elapsed to this phase, the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament had already entered its final period of the contention for hegemony. More and more powerful groups continued to emerge, before continuing to constantly change the Top 16 with new names.

Therefore, under the premise of such large changes, other than the few groups that truly possessed astonishing strength, the other groups all felt alarmed, anxious and afraid that there would be a powerful group emerging and defeating them at any moment, before standing on their heads and spreading their fame and reputation across the entire competition.

Even under such a period of great change, the defeat of Lu Tian and Wang Jiang, the originally 10th place and 8th place respectively, had still caused quite the big ripples in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament.

That was due to the similarity in the group that had led to the defeat of the these two powerful groups, which was precisely the one from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy that had Mu Chen as their captain.

Furthermore, those people with more informed sources knew about an additional piece of information, which was that Lu Tian and Wang Jiang were both part of Ji Xuan's alliance... as for Mu Chen, he didn't find anyone else, but had specifically targeted those groups that were in an alliance with Ji Xuan. The intent of targeting the latter was already clear and obvious.

Such targeting caused quite a few people to feel amazed and stunned. As of now, Ji Xuan's fame and reputation was too extensive and widespread within the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament. This heaven-gifted son of the Spiritual Road was still as dazzling as the sun, even in a place like this, where numerous geniuses were present, causing people be only able to look up to him.

Quite a few powerful groups had all suffered defeat in the hands of Ji Xuan and the group he led, successfully becoming his stepping stones to

reach greater heights. Therefore, in the current phase of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, the number of groups that were able to send a challenge towards Ji Xuan and his group might not even exceed one hand.

It was also this reason that caused everyone to feel that stunned and amazed upon hearing that Mu Chen had actually dared to target Ji Xuan at this current phase of time. After all, regardless of anything, there was a clear, hard-to-surmount disparity between Mu Chen's fame and reputation, when compared to Ji Xuan.

Therefore, everyone was waiting for the response of Ji Xuan towards such targeting by Mu Chen.

However, what made many people astonished was that after Lu Tian and Wang Jiang's groups were defeated, Ji Xuan had unexpectedly not made any retaliatory actions. Such feelings appeared as if he had forgotten about the focus Mu Chen had made against him.

Such a response by Ji Xuan had seemingly exceeded everyone's expectations. They were completely unable to understand why Ji Xuan, who had always been exceedingly fierce in his actions, would not invoke any retaliatory response. This was clearly unlike his usual mannerisms and attitude.

Nevertheless, regardless of how much Ji Xuan's actions had caused voices of doubt to rise within the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, he did not make any changes to his actions. Appearing to still continue calmly defeating group after group, obtaining more points and steadying his position as the Numero Uno on the rankings.

It was within those blanketing voices of doubt that yet another attention-grabbing matter happened, which was a new group that had rushed into the Top 16. Generally speaking, it was a common occurrence for powerful groups to suddenly rise into the Top 16 during this period of time. Other than causing everyone to feel astonished for a moment, things quickly calmed down.

That was because it wouldn't take long for this dark horse that had

emerged to be brought down by yet another dark horse, something that was common in this current situation.

Therefore, what made people interested was that this emerging group wasn't a dark horse, but a group that was unexpectedly from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Ranked 16th on the point rankings. Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Captain, Shen Cangsheng,

With the addition of this group in the points ranking, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had become the only Spiritual Academy within the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament to occupy two places within the Top 16.

That's because after defeating Wang Jiang, the group led by Mu Chen had rose to the 10th rank on the rankings.

"Ji Xuan's really able to endure."

Standing on a hill, Mu Chen looked towards a small town present before him. From time-to-time, there would be streaks of light descending from the skies, before landing within. This was a small transaction base within this region, and was also their temporary resting ground, for now.

"Why won't Ji Xuan take direct action against us? As of now, we've already stepped into the Top 16, with Ji Xuan being able to find our location," asked Xu Huang, standing behind Mu Chen in doubt. This question had been bugging him for the past few days, as he was guarding against Ji Xuan sending an attack. However, what made him suspicious was that for the past few days, Ji Xuan, who should be getting angry and furious at them for such targeting had not shone any movement at all.

"That's because Ji Xuan's also afraid," replied Luo Li in a soft voice.

"You guys underestimate your Captain too much," added Wen Qingxuan with a smile. "Within the Spiritual Road, he and Ji Xuan are old opponents. Furthermore, in such a confrontation, Ji Xuan doesn't have any obvious advantage over him."

Hearing that, Xu Huang and the others gave embarrassed laughs in

response, with shock and astonishment appearing in their eyes as they looked towards Mu Chen. As Ji Xuan gradually increased in fame and reputation, they had also started to know about the frightening strength the latter possessed. Such a character would absolutely be rated as a heaven-gifted child, and was more than sufficient to cause countless geniuses to pale in colour when compared to him.

However, even this heaven-gifted child seemed to not be able to obtain much of an advantage in Mu Chen's hands. One could see from this that the latter similarly possessed the methods and capability that was not inferior to Ji Xuan.

"That's why there's no one that could obstruct Mu Chen's path in our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. So, it turns out that he's a top-class big shot..." said Zhao Qingshan with a bitter laugh. In the past, they were still brooding about the fact that Mu Chen was a Freshman, with them being his Seniors. However, now, they had no choice but to respect and admire the former.

"You guys better not praise me." Mu Chen could not help laughing. "The accurate reason why Ji Xuan didn't take action is due to fearing the three of us."

His fingers were pointing at himself, Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan.

Among the three of them, other than him, the other two beautiful and soul-stirring girls were also not ordinary people. Within the Spiritual Road, Luo Li forced Ji Xuan to the point of him losing the chance of obtaining the Spiritual Crown, while Wen Qingxuan had obtained it in one sweep, suppressing the outstanding geniuses present there with her skills.

Among the two girls, the fame and reputation of Wen Qingxuan wasn't inferior to Ji Xuan, with her also being the only person in many people's eyes that could contend with Ji Xuan for the number one spot. As for Luo Li, she was the one who had the lowest profile. Even Mu Chen was not clear exactly how much power this future Empress of the Luo God Clan was concealing. Every single time he had probed her out, the young girl

would only give a smile in response without answering, causing Mu Chen to feel itchy all over about it.

With these two heavyweight figures beside him, no matter how prideful or confident Ji Xuan was, he would not dare to carelessly take action.

Furthermore, there were also other reasons behind his decision to not attack them. That's because if Ji Xuan really wanted to launch an all-out battle with Mu Chen and his group, it would definitely result in a heaven-shaking battle. At that time, regardless of who would win or lose in the end, both parties would get seriously hurt and injured.

At this moment in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, there were other heavyweight existences within other groups. To Ji Xuan, those groups had similarly possessed extreme threat to him.

Perhaps, in ordinary circumstances, those few heavyweight groups would not dare to recklessly confront Ji Xuan in battle. However, once he had crossed hands with Mu Chen and suffer serious injuries as a result, those heavyweight groups might be the first to deal with him, who was the opponent with the greatest threat to them.

It was precisely due to such a reason that caused Ji Xuan to not recklessly take action in response to Mu Chen purposefully targeting him, despite knowing that the latter had removed his claws being Lu Tian and Wang Jiang completely away.

This fellow clearly possessed a rather strong level of patience and fortitude.

Hearing that, Xu Huang and the other two quietly breathed a sigh of relief. Not requiring to faces the strongest group in the current Great Spiritual Academy Tournament was something worth relaxing a bit for them.

"You guys are celebrating too early."

Seeing that, Mu Chen gave a faint smile as he spoke out. Crossing his fingers gently, he continued speaking. "With my understanding of Ji Xuan, he would not completely endure this matter without doing anything. As of

now, the reason why he doesn't make any action is due to him not having absolute assurance."

"Ji Xuan's cautious and prudent, and won't recklessly take action. Once he takes action, it would definitely a lightning-quick method."

"Therefore..." Mu Chen raised his head and looked into the distance. As chilling intent surfaced within his black pupils, he continued speaking, "The current tranquility is just the prelude of the storm. Once Ji Xuan takes action, what comes next... would be the true assault of the storm."

Hearing Mu Chen's words, the faces of Xu Huang and the other two turned sluggish. Although Mu Chen sounded calm and neutral, they were still able to hear the chilling intent hidden beneath it.

"Cough... let's not care about him. In any case, we've you three heavyweights. If he really takes action, we aren't afraid of him."

Xu Huang gave a dry cough, before looking at his Academy Plaque. With a smile, he said, "I never would have imagined that Shen Cangsheng and the others would also be able to rush up into the rankings. Those fellows truly are not simple, too."

Hearing that, Mu Chen smiled and nodded his head. Looking at the group at the 16th place, which was now occupied by Shen Cangsheng's group, this clearly showed that their strength had progressed by leaps and bounds compared to before. From the looks of it, they had similarly obtained quite a huge benefit from this Shattered Continent. This caused Mu Chen to feel quite relieved and gratified.

"It truly has been a long time since we've seen them. I don't know how they are doing right now," said Mu Chen with a faint smile. He also wanted to see and meet up with Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong, Su Xuan and the others again.

"Why not we go and find them?" suggested Xu Huang.

Hearing that, Mu Chen shook his head and replied. "As of now, we've already brought the fight to Ji Xuan. If Shen Cangsheng and the others are to move together with us, we'd bring trouble for them."

"Oh?"

Suddenly, Luo Li cried out, her beautiful eyes slightly contracting as she pointed towards the 1st place on the point rankings, before saying in a deep tone, "Ji Xuan's position is changing."

Hearing that, Mu Chen and the others instantly looked over. Indeed, Ji Xuan's location was changing extremely quickly. Clearly, they were currently moving at an extremely quick pace.

"Could they be rushing towards us?" asked Luo Li in astonishment.

Hearing that, faint wrinkles appeared on Mu Chen's forehead as he stared at Ji Xuan's changing location. After an instant, his eyes furiously contracted, while chilling intent gushed from the depths his black pupils.

"He's not rushing towards us..."

Mu Chen's handsome face appeared exceedingly dark at this instant, with his hands abruptly, tightly clenched, while the killing intent within his eyes soaring.

"He's planning on taking action towards Shen Cangsheng and the others!"

Hearing those words, the faces of Xu Huang and the others instantly contorted.

Chapter 575: Retaliate

The atmosphere on the hill froze seemingly in an instant, while a murderous aura started to quietly appear.

Ugly expressions appeared on the faces of Xu Huang and the others. Never in their wildest dreams did they expect that Ji Xuan would turn his spearhead towards Shen Cangsheng and the others.

"He's planning to return an eye for an eye, a tooth for a tooth," said Wen Qingxuan in a slow manner.

During this period of time, Mu Chen had been pulling out the teeth and claws of Ji Xuan's alliance. Therefore, Ji Xuan had now chosen the same exact method to remove the other Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy group, as well as to appropriate a response to Mu Chen.

"Ji Xuan's extremely cautious in his actions. He knows what kind of action you would take if he was to do such a thing. However, he still chose to do so. Therefore... I believe that he should have made his preparations," said Luo Li in a deep voice as she looked towards Mu Chen.

Hearing that, Mu Chen slightly nodded his head. With Ji Xuan always having exceedingly deep and complex schemes, if the latter didn't have the slightest bit of assurance, he would absolutely not recklessly do something like that. However, from the looks of it, he had still gone through and did it. That is to say, did he already put the fear of Mu Chen and the others dealing with him behind his back?

Exactly for what reason caused him to suddenly not worry about such fear?

A glint sparkled within Mu Chen's eyes, while slivers of killing intent gushed from within. Indeed, there had never been a place where this opponent was easy to deal with.

"What should we do?" Xu Huang and the others stared at Mu Chen. If Ji Xuan and his group had come prepared, them recklessly moving out might be something that the former would have expected. At that time, once

they engage in combat, it might start what might be the most intense and cruel fight within the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament.

In such a situation, even Mu Chen wouldn't have absolute assurance of being able to obtain victory.

Ever since he had started to take action against Lu Tian and Wang Jiang, Mu Chen had already anticipated that Ji Xuan wouldn't dare to recklessly start a counterattack against them. This would cause him to silently wait for the right time. It was this silence that would undoubtedly create a blow towards the latter's fame and reputation.

Indeed, the matter had proceeded according to Mu Chen's expectations. However, he had not expected that Shen Cangsheng and the other group would rush into the Top 16 at this moment, causing them to appear in the sights of Ji Xuan.

Therefore, this move by Ji Xuan had turned his originally disadvantageous situation around. At this moment, there might already be quite a few people paying attention to this matter, and would be anticipating a response from Mu Chen's side.

Exactly what should he do? Continue to bide his time, or take the risk of the possibility of Ji Xuan being prepared for him to mount a rescue?

If it was the former, it would result in quite a big blow towards Mu Chen's reputation, as this whole matter was started by him. As for now, Ji Xuan had directed his anger and fury onto Shen Cangsheng and the other Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy group. If Mu Chen was to watch and not take any action, there might be quite a few that would wag their tongues about him.

However, if he chose to do the latter, once he suffered defeat, Ji Xuan might not give them the chance to make a resurgence.

A chilling light slowly congealed within Mu Chen's black pupils, with the surrounding atmosphere turned so tense it appeared to have frozen solid. After an instant, he slowly closed his eyes. Upon opening them, his gaze appeared to have slightly calmed down.

Slowly tensing his body, he said in a calm voice, "Let's head out!"

Xu Huang and the others were startled as they looked towards Mu Chen.

"Regardless of what preparations Ji Xuan has prepared for us, this is something that we've started. Regardless of what the outcome is, we have to carry it on our shoulders," replied Mu Chen in an indifferent tone.

"Furthermore, I really, really want to know what kind of show Ji Xuan has prepared. However, regardless of that, I'll let him know that he might not be able to stomach me, Mu Chen."

"It was like that in the Spiritual Road, and will be the same over here."

Looking towards the calm-faced youth before their eyes, Xu Huang noticed a layer of gloss reflecting out of the latter's black pupils under the illumination of the sunlight. Even when faced against the most elite figure, whose name had shocked the entire Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, the latter still did not show the slightest bit of dread or fear.

Mu Chen's calm appearance caused Xu Huang and the others to gradually calm down, before solemnly nodding their heads.

Staring at Mu Chen's face awhile, Luo Li gave a gentle laugh. She loved the self-confidence that was hidden within the core the youth before her eyes. That kind of self-confidence wasn't brought forth by ignorance nor being impetuous, but one that originated from one's core.

Admittedly, Ji Xuan was powerful. However, he too possessed an intolerable arrogance and contemptuous attitude.

Wen Qingxuan twirled a lock of her black hair that flowed behind her ear as she swept a look towards Mu Chen with her beautiful eyes. At this moment, she knew that the apex clash of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament was truly about to start.

There was only one thing she did not know. Exactly who among these two similarly monstrous talents would end up being the final victor in this clash?

Mu Chen took a deep breath, before giving an abrupt wave of his hand.

As his figure rose into the air, he transformed into a ray of light, shooting straight towards the direction of Shen Cangsheng and his group, as indicated on the Academy Plaque.

Behind him, Luo Li, Wen Qingxuan, Xu Huang and the others immediately followed suit, with dense murderous auras following the whooshing sounds that rang out.

...

While Mu Chen and his group started to rush towards where Shen Cangsheng and his group was, quite a lot of people within the central region had also discovered this change in the situation.

Therefore, the atmosphere was on the verge of exploding.

As of now, there was no one that didn't know about the reputation of Ji Xuan. After all, being able to lord over the Numero Uno place was more than sufficient to show the astonishing capabilities he possessed.

Faced against such a monstrous talent, there might not be any group that dared to show the slightest bit of ignorance towards them. At this moment, everyone knew that the group led by Ji Xuan absolutely possessed the qualifications to aim for the championship.

As for Mu Chen, there weren't many people that knew about him in the earlier phase of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament. However, following his destruction of the large array arranged by Xiao Huang, defeating Mo Xiu, Qiu Ning and Liu San with a single move, as well as destroying Ji Xuan's alliance partners, the former 10th and 8th placed Lu Tian and Wang Jiang respectively, his fame and reputation had risen at an exceedingly astonishing pace.

This was especially true after he had destroyed Ji Xuan's alliance. With Ji Xuan not showing any movement at all, the name of Mu Chen was remembered by more and more powerful groups.

When thinking about a person that was able to cause a monstrous talent like Ji Xuan to suffer losses and restrain his emotions made everyone feel fear and dread towards him.

Therefore, everyone had great anticipation towards the moment when these two people would bump heads, and to what kind of astonishing battle would take place.

Therefore, upon noticing the movements of Ji Xuan and Mu Chen, seemingly all of the powerful groups had turned their eyeballs over. All of them had a premonition that the curtains towards the most eye-catching confrontation within the entirety of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament had already started to draw open.

Whoosh! Whoosh!

Suddenly, countless hurried whooshing sounds rang out across the entire earth, as powerful groups rushed across the horizon in succession. Transforming into rays of light, all of them rushed across the vast earth as they headed towards a certain location.

Seemingly inadvertently, this had quietly caused the fiery and intense atmosphere within this region, where seemingly all of the powerful groups within the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament had converged, to be pushed to its pinnacle.

...

Whoosh!

Rays of light shot over the horizon.

Mu Chen's figure was presently at the lead of those figures, with his eyes tightly locked on the far distance. At this moment, not the slightest fluctuation was present on his handsome face, even when he could sense the suddenly fiercy change in the atmosphere within the entire region, since all of these changes were caused by his actions.

As of now, they might have already become the most prominent group within the masses present within the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament.

"Ji Xuan and his gang seems to have discovered our actions, since his speed has suddenly increased by quite a bit. According to his current speed, I'm afraid that he might reach Shen Cangsheng and his group

before us," whispered Luo Li after suddenly moving closer to Mu Chen.

Hearing that, Mu Chen's eyes slightly narrowed. Taking a look at the Academy Plaque within his hand, he noticed that Ji Xuan's movements really did suddenly increase in speed. Such a speed had caused even him to feel somewhat shocked.

"Let's speed up."

Mu Chen spoke out in a deep voice. They needed to find Shen Cangsheng and his group before Ji Xuan and his gang did. If not, in the off-chance they were to land in the hands of Ji Xuan and his gang, it would be a form of suppression towards Mu Chen. Such a method was something that Ji Xuan excelled in.

As his voice rang out, a shadow dragon abruptly took form beneath his feet. As a dragon roar resounded across the horizon, Mu Chen's speed drastically increased once more.

At his instant, Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan had increased their speed without the slightest bit of restraint as they quickly followed behind him. The only people left behind were Xu Huang and the rest. Nevertheless, at this moment, Mu Chen could no longer care about that.

They had to reach Shen Cangsheng before Ji Xuan does!

...

As the atmosphere within the vast earth had suddenly turned fiery and explosive, the atmosphere in a certain valley had also turned exceedingly depressed.

Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong, Su Xuan and the other two sat within a valley as they quietly recuperated. They had experienced a great battle not too long ago against a group that was quite formidable, causing them to expend a considerable amount of effort to clinch the victory.

Nevertheless, relying on the points they had obtained, they had finally broke into the Top 16.

"That fellow, Mu Chen, really has climbed very fast. He's actually at the

10th place already." After taking a look at his Academy Plaque, He Yao suddenly cast his mouth aside as he spoke.

"That brat's always been remarkable. Him only climbing to the 10th place as of now is something that I've not expected," replied Shen Chansheng with a smile as he opened his eyes.

"However, as of now, our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy is the only Spiritual Academy with two groups in the Top 16," added Li Xuantong with a faint smile.

Hearing that, everyone smiled and nodded their heads.

"Oh?"

Suddenly, Su Xuan, who was playing around with her Academy Plaque in her hand, cried out in shock, before her beautiful face slightly changed. Fiercely raising her head, she said, "That's not right, why are there so many groups suddenly rapidly heading towards our direction?"

Upon hearing that, Shen Cangsheng immediately gawked as he hastily pulled out his Academy Plaque. Indeed, other than them, the groups present at the Top 16 were unexpectedly closing in towards their direction.

Among them included the Numero Uno, Ji Xuan, as well as the 10th place Mu Chen.

"What's the matter?" Sensing that something wasn't quite right, Li Xuantong and the others immediately asked in deep voices.

A slight change happened to Shen Cangsheng's gaze, before he furiously stood up as he replied in a fierce voice, "Let's leave, quickly! We've become Ji Xuan's target! He wants to use us to retaliate against Mu Chen!"

Hearing that, the faces of Li Xuantong and the others instantly changed.

Clenching her Academy Plaque, Su Xuan's voice turned bitter as she said, "I'm afraid that we're too late..."

Shen Cangsheng's face turned dark as he raised his head. At this instant, whooshing sounds were already reverberating as they rang from the distant horizon.

Lowering his head to look at his Academy Plaque, he saw that the Numero Uno, Ji Xuan, was already at a position that was merely a dozen kilometres away from them. Such a position was more than sufficient to indicate that they had already been locked on by him.

Chapter 576: Flee

The atmosphere within the mountain valley froze and turned suffocating as exceedingly ugly expressions appeared on the faces of Shen Cangsheng and the other four. Clearly, they were somewhat caught with their pants down by this sudden trouble...

Although they had obtained quite a big benefit in this fragment of the Shattered Continent, resulting in their strength improving by quite a bit, they were extremely clear that they were absolutely not a match for a group like Ji Xuan's.

Once the two sides were to truly engage in combat, their side would lose without a doubt.

"What should we do?" asked He Yao as he looked towards Shen Cangsheng with an ugly look on his face.

As a dark shade fluctuated over Shen Cangsheng's face, he gave a furious clench of his teeth as he replied, "I'll take the Academy Plaque and run away! You guys scatter and leave!"

Hearing Shen Cangsheng's reply, Li Xuantong's face instantly sunk down as he said, "With such a short distance, they would already be able to lock onto us. Simply running away would be of no use. Furthermore, once they catch you or any of us, it would end up with the same result. That's because if any one of us falls into their hands, they would definitely use us to deal with Mu Chen!"

"And with Mu Chen's character, I'm afraid that he wouldn't just stand by the side and watch! If not, he wouldn't be rushing over here with all his might."

"Let's go together! Although Ji Xuan and his gang are extremely formidable, we ain't just mud on the floor!" growled Yang Lin, the last member of the group.

Creaking sounds rang from Shen Cangsheng's hands as his face turned ashen. At this moment, a feeling of humiliation gushed from his heart.

Being a rather prideful person at heart, he was the Numero Uno on the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's Heavenly Rankings before the appearance of Mu Chen. However, at this moment, they were forced to such a miserable position, yet he was powerless to change it.

Bang!

Shen Cangsheng fiercely sent a punch against the rock wall beside him, causing cracks to rapidly extend from his fist. Taking a deep breath, he said in a deep voice, "Let's scatter first. As of now, Mu Chen and the others are currently rushing over. Regardless of anything, we have to drag the time on and wait for him to arrive. At that time, Ji Xuan will fail at his objective."

Hearing that, Li Xuantong, Su Xuan and the others nodded their heads in agreement. All of them were not willing to land in Ji Xuan's hands and be used against Mu Chen.

"Let's go!"

Shen Cangsheng gave a low roar. Taking to the air, he quickly shot in the opposite direction of where those whooshing sounds were ringing from. Behind him, Li Xuantong, Su Xuan and the other two wore tense expressions on their faces as they rapidly followed suit.

Whoosh!

Increasing their speed to the maximum, the five shot across the horizon at lightning speed, causing sharp and hurried whooshing sounds to ear-piercingly reverberate within the vast mountain range.

Darkness filled the entirety of Shen Cangsheng's face, his eyes brimming with unconcealable anger and fury. With his hands tightly clenched, green veins squirmed and throbbed on their surface. Such a speedy retreat caused him to feel as if his heart was burning up.

Crack!

The sharp and incisive sounds of space being split apart appeared to ring from the horizon behind them.

"Run quickly!" Suddenly, Shen Cangsheng's face contorted as he fiercely roared.

"Haha. These few friends from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, we've hurried over here from a place far, far away. And yet, you all want to leave before even saying any greetings. Isn't this to impolite of you all?" Just as Shen Cangsheng's roar rang out, faint laughter, accompanied by a voice, suddenly rang out within the region.

Upon hearing that voice, the hearts of Shen Cangsheng and the others furiously sunk down.

"Don't worry about him! Continue on!" growled Shen Cangsheng. However, before his voice could fully ring out, his eyes furiously, abruptly contracted. Fiercely raising his head, he saw a figure with his hands behind his back stand on the mountain peak before them, looking straight towards them with a grin on his face.

This figure was dressed in white robes, with a warm and radiant smile covering his handsome face, making it hard for people raise their vigilance against him. Nevertheless, upon spotting him, the faces of Shen Cangsheng and the other four instantly contorted.

"Ji Xuan!"

"Please stay behind, the few of you," said Ji Xuan with a smile as he looked towards Shen Cangsheng and the other four.

"In your dreams!"

Shen Cangsheng sneered in reply. Sweeping a glance towards Li Xuantong and the three, the five of them explosively scattered seemingly in the next instant.

Seeing this, Ji Xuan couldn't help giving a gentle sigh. Not a single flutter of emotion was present within his eyes, before he gave a wave of his sleeve. In the next instant, exceedingly powerful Spiritual Energy instantly swept out from his sleeve just like a long river.

Swish! Swish!

As the long Spiritual Energy river swept out, it split into five parts, appearing right before Shen Cangsheng and the other four in the blink of an eye. As the long Spiritual Energy rivers converged together, they transformed into a giant Spiritual Energy palm that fiercely pressed down from above.

Bang!

A giant thunder-like bang resounded.

Shen Cangsheng and the other four that were originally shooting away were instantly sent in the opposite direction. Other than Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, who staggered back a few steps, muffled groans rang out from Su Xuan and the other two, while a faint shade of paleness appeared on their faces.

This Ji Xuan's strength is actually that terrifying! He had forced the five of them back just with a single palm of his.

Shen Cangsheng and the other four were forced to group up once again. At this moment, a shadow of shock flashed across their eyes. The power and strength of Ji Xuan had far exceeded all of their expectations.

As of now, within their group, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong were both currently at the pinnacle of First Grade Spirit Disaster. As for Su Xuan, He Yao and Yang Lin, all of them had already reached the realm of Spiritual Energy Disaster. Truthfully speaking, such a lineup was considered to be rather strong. If not, they wouldn't be able to rush into the Top 16 by just relying on their own strengths.

However, despite that, their lineup was obstructed just by Ji Xuan alone.

"These few friends from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. You all should be clear that my true target's not you all. As long as you all agree to be captured, I'll not make things difficult for you all," said Ji Xuan in a warm tone.

Not giving a reply, a glint faintly sparkled within Shen Cangsheng's eyes.

Whoosh.

At this moment, more whooshing sounds rang out from behind them as four glowing figures shot over. Splitting up and moving into four separate locations, they completely sealed the surrounding space. The four that had shot over were precisely the members of Ji Xuan's group.

Seeing this, the eyes of Shen Cangsheng and the other four turned dim. From the looks of it, they seemed to have no way to easily escape this predicament.

Exchanging glances with one another, all of them took a deep breath before their gazes gradually turned fierce. Even if there wasn't anymore chances for them to escape, they would absolutely not let themselves be captured that easily! They needed to buy time for Mu Chen!

"Take action!"

Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong explosively shot out seemingly at the same instant. Clenching their hands, long spears appeared in a flash. Spiritual Energies erupted from their bodies without the slightest bit of restraint, while the incomparably fierce spear tips explosively rumbled towards where Ji Xuan was at lightning speed.

At the same instant, Su Xuan, He Yao and Yang Lin had rushed towards another location. They had chosen to collaborate and attack one of Ji Xuan's group members that had sealed that direction.

Bang! Bang!

As the spear tips heavily pierced towards the place where Ji Xuan stood, the mountain peak below had instantly collapsed. As giant rocks tumbled down, Ji Xuan strode through the air, walking straight up into the skies, while his white robes appeared clean and unblemished. The fierce attacks coming from Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong had unexpectedly not caused the slightest bit of harm towards him.

"Looks like you all do not approve of my suggestion, huh." Looking towards Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, Ji Xuan shook his head with some regret, before taking a small step forward.

Whoosh!

As his feet landed in the air, his figure appeared to have instantly shifted right before the two. As the trio exchanged gazes, the eyes of Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong snapped wide open.

Bang!

With exceedingly tacit understanding, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong had sent a palm out each, patting out at seemingly the same time. Bringing along astonishing gales, boundless Spiritual Energies heavily patted down towards Ji Xuan's body.

Boom!

However, just as they had sent their palms patting down, Ji Xuad had sent a palm of his own out in welcome. In the next instant, the palms of the trio heavily smashed against each other.

Astonishing Spiritual Energy gales immediately swept out.

Although Ji Xuan's figure had seemingly not moved an inch, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong appeared to have suffered a heavy blow. Their bodies shot backwards in a miserable fashion, skidding over a hundred metres in the air before finally being able to forcefully stabilise themselves. At this moment, their hands were faintly trembling as intense pain radiated from them, appearing as if their bones had been shattered.

"I believe that you two should be the most elite of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. As of now, with Mu Chen placed above your heads while having the status of a Freshman, shouldn't you two be uncomfortable about it? Since that's the case, why not collaborate with me? If I settle and finish off Mu Chen, I'll guarantee your names in the Saint Spiritual Academy, and will make sure you guys are promoted into the final match," said Ji Xuan in a slow manner as he looked towards Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong.

Being a Freshman in the Saint Spiritual Academy, Ji Xuan was extremely clear how much jealousy and resentment those veteran outstanding students had towards him. With Mu Chen's road being similar to his own, one could tell that the latter's situation wasn't much better than his own. The few people before him should not have good feelings towards Mu

Chen.

However, he had clearly made some errors in his judgement this time. Upon hearing him say those words, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong only gave a laugh in reply. The smiles present on their faces weren't deep, yet it showed of a faint flavor of ridicule and disdain.

It was precisely this ridicule and disdain that caused the genial smile on Ji Xuan's face to slowly disappear.

If the people before him were exchanged for the other groups from the Saint Spiritual Academy, Ji Xuan would dare to bet that they would instantly betray him... however, these fellows from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy were actually defending Mu Chen, who was now standing on their heads?

Form a certain perspective, wouldn't this mean that Mu Chen had obtained a more perfect result than him?

"You two truly don't know what's good for you," said Ji Xuan with an indifferent smile. In the next instant, his figure disappeared once again.

Bang!

Astonishing Spiritual Energy erupted once again, as the figures of Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong were sent retreating once more, with blood flowing down the corners of their mouths. However, before they could react, a spectre-like figure had surfaced once again before them, while an even fiercer attack came enveloping over.

Bang! Bang!

The figures of the two continued to backpedal in a miserable fashion. Even after collaborating, they were still at a complete disadvantage, and were even unable to muster the slightest bit of resistance. Therefore, within the span of a dozen breaths, the amount of blood streaming down the corners of their mouths continued to increase.

Boom!

At the other location, Su Xuan and the other two had collaborated in an

attempt to break through from another direction. However, they discovered that they were unexpectedly unable to obtain the slightest bit of advantage over the youth from the Saint Spiritual Academy before them.

"Haha. Could it be that you've chosen to break through from here because I appear to be the weakest?" After being targeted by Su Xuan and the other two, the youth by the name of Mu Feng spoke out in a ridiculing manner as he grinned towards the trio.

At the other three directions, his three other group members had only sealed those directions without taking action. That's because they knew that if Su Xuan and the other two had chosen them as the direction to break through, the trio might have a slight chance in doing so. However, they had ended up choosing Mu Feng. Other than Ji Xuan, that fellow was the second strongest within their group.

Solemn expressions appeared on the faces of Su Xuan and the other two. Nevertheless, none of them made any noise, with them merely attacking with increasing intensity.

"Don't drag it on anymore, Mu Feng."

Just as Mu Feng was wanting to speak ridiculing comments, an indifferent voice rang out not far away from him. That was precisely Ji Xuan's voice.

"Look's like you three are unlucky."

Hearing that, Mu Feng gave a smile. Looking towards Su Xuan and the other two, his smile started to become abnormally cold and chilling.

Chapter 577: Miserable

Seeing the chilling smile curl on the face of Mu Feng, the expressions on the faces of Su Xuan and the other two grew increasingly ugly. Exchanging glances with one another, Spiritual Energies proceeded to sweep out from their bodies without the slightest restraint.

Whoosh!

The trio explosively shot out. After such a long period of tempering within the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, their teamwork and rapport had clearly reached a state of extreme tacit understanding between each other. Although their cultivation was only at the realm of Spiritual Energy Disaster, when they collaborated, their combined might would cause even an expert of First Grade Disaster to feel fear and dread.

However, the person before them, Mu Feng, wasn't an ordinary person at First Grade Spirit Disaster, but a genuine expert at Second Grade Spirit Disaster. Such a realm of cultivation was even higher than that Lu Tian that Mu Chen had defeated earlier.

Therefore, faced against the ferocious attacks coming from the trio, Mu Feng only gave a faint smile, one which contained ridicule and disdain present within. With a furious clench of his hand, a dark-red halberd appeared, while his gaze grew even colder.

A scarlet-red crescent-shaped glowing pattern appeared to be present on the surface of the halberd, sparkling with heart-palpitating fluctuations.

"Demonic Moon Halberd, Cleaving Moon!"

With an indifferent expression on his face, the halberd in Mu Feng's hands abruptly chopped down, only for blood-red rays of brilliance to erupt from it. In the next instant, they formed into a gigantic blood-red crescent moon. As the crescent moon howled downwards, it brought about an incomparable chill as it came down on Su Xuan and the other two.

As the blood-red crescent moon shot out, a scar was carved into the

space it had travelled past.

Seeing this incoming crescent moon, the faces of Su Xuan and the other two instantly changed. Not daring to show the slightest bit of neglect, they immediately unleashed their most powerful attacks.

"Phoenix Wing Spiritual Umbrella!" With a clench of her hand, a spiritual umbrella that appeared to be constructed from phoenix wings appeared in Su Xuan's hand. As spiritual light sparkled from it, the cry of a phoenix rang out. In the next instant, powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiated from it. Clearly, this was an Peerless Rank Spiritual Artifact that possessed outstanding might.

"Devil Dragon's Blade!" At the same time, a large blade constructed from the head of a dragon appeared in He Yao's hands, with dragon scales covering the entirety of its surface. With an loud roar, a gigantic dragon-shaped arched blade explosively shot from it.

"Hundred Beasts Wheel!" Rays of brilliance erupted from Yang Lin's hand, before transforming into a malevolent-looking glowing wheel. Spiritual light started to perfuse around the glowing wheel, before transforming into the shape of a hundred beasts, with their roars shaking the air around them.

The trio clearly had some luck as they had obtained Spiritual Items that were of quite a high grade. The might they were able to unleash was also extraordinary. At this moment, with their collaboration, they appeared to possess an exceedingly powerful aura.

Bang!

Four fierce attacks smashed together at lightning speed, instantly causing a loud bang to resound across the horizon. Seemingly at the same time, a Spiritual Energy shock wave that could be seen by the naked-eye had also swept out.

"A mantis trying to stop a chariot."

Seeing this, a chilling smile appeared on Mu Feng's face. As his gaze abruptly turned ice-cold, the Demonic Moon Halberd in his hand shot out

once again. This time, a bloody light gushed from it, causing blood-red crescent moons to continuously surface from it, before hiding the skies and covering the earth as they howled.

Bang! Bang!

Faced against the successive battering from the blood-red crescent moons, the attacks of the trio appeared to have instantly collapsed. Although they had the support of their Spiritual Items, the disparity between them and Mu Feng was too large.

This disparity between Spiritual Energy Disaster and Second Grade Spirit Disaster could never be made up by relying on Spiritual Items.

Bang!

As their attacks collapsed and failed, a shudder shook through the bodies of the trio as they miserably retreated back as if they had suffered a huge blow. As they did so, a sweet taste appeared in their throats, before blood seeped out from the corners of their mouths.

Whoosh!

However, without waiting for the trio to suppress the tremors shaking within their bodies, Mu Feng had already appeared behind Su Xuan's back akin to a bolt of lightning. Clearly, he was planning to end this fight as quickly as possible.

"Su Xuan, be careful!"

Seeing this, He Yao's face instantly contorted as he hastily roared.

At this moment, the Spiritual Energy within Su Xuan's body was rolling and surging. She had similarly discovered Mu Feng, who had shot towards her. However, with her strength being exhausted, she was completely unable to evade from him. Thus, she could only stare as Mu Feng's fierce palm blade shot over at lightning speed.

Bang!

However, before the hand blade could land on Su Xuan's body, a huge force came barreling over, sending her body flying away.

He Yao's body had appeared where Su Xuan was a moment ago. In the next instant, Mu Feng's fierce hand blade chopped down towards the former's hand without the slightest bit of mercy shown.

Squirt!

A jet of blood shot out.

A miserable shriek instantly rang out from He Yao's mouth, as his left hand was severed by Mu Feng's palm. His body started to tremble and shake due to the intense pain radiating from his arm, while he unsteadily retreated and staggered in a miserable fashion.

"Go!"

Stemming the blood flowing from his arm, He Yao roared towards the blank-looking Su Xuan.

"What a touching scene," said Mu Feng with a grin as blood dripped down from his palm. At this moment, his gaze appeared as cold as the edge of a blade. In the next instant, he shot out once again towards Su Xuan.

"Bastard!"

With a furious curse, Yang Lin fiercely clenched his teeth. Unable to care much about anything, he rushed straight out, appearing right before Su Xuan's body. As Spiritual Energy howled from him, he sent a fist rumbling straight towards Mu Feng.

Seeing this, a ridiculing smile appeared on Mu Feng's face. Without showing any mercy again, he sent a fist rumbling straight towards Yang Lin's fist like a bolt of lightning.

Crack!

Frightening energy waves gushed out as Yang Lin's arm started to instantly warp and distort. Cracking sounds started to ring out from his bones as he was sent flying akin to having suffered a lightning strike, spewing blood as he went.

Seeing the two people who had suffered serious injuries in the blink of

an eye just to protect her, Su Xuan's eyes started to involuntarily turn red.

At the same time when Su Xuan, He Yao and Yang Lin had suffered a complete defeat, the bodies of Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong were completely covered in blood. Nevertheless, fierce and vengeful shadows were still present in their eyes. Despite being in such a depressing situation, the two of them did not give up the slightest bit of hope. Circulating the Spiritual Energies in their bodies to their absolute maximum, they launched attack after attack right towards Ji Xuan.

Nevertheless, their attacks could only be exchange for an indifferent palm from Ji Xuan, before the two were sent retreating back in a miserable fashion, the blood covering their bodies growing increasingly scarlet-red.

Such a scene appeared exceedingly tragic and full of despair.

At this moment, whooshing sounds endlessly rang out within this region as figures appeared in the distant skies and mountain peaks in a successive fashion, with their eyes all trained towards the huge battle erupting at this location.

Clearly, those were the powerful groups that had rushed over due to them being not far away when the fight had occurred.

Upon seeing such a seemingly one-sided fight before their eyes, all of them could not help quietly givinh a sigh. From the looks of it, this group from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy would suffer a complete defeat today.

However, despite the sighs, there was not a single person that had stepped forward to offer assistance to them. Faced against the group that was considered to be the strongest in the current phase of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, there might not be many who would have the courage to start a confrontation with them.

Puff!

Blood spewed from the mouths of Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong yet again, Looking towards Ji Xuan, who wore a calm expression and faint smile in his face, the both of them could not help tightly clenching their

teeth. They had also sensed the complete defeat at the side of Su Xuan and the other two. Yet, the two of them were powerless to do anything about it.

At this moment, the eyes of the two had turned blood-red, with their pride and arrogance appearing to have been smashed and scattered apart. Originally, the both of them had believed that they had already made great progress in their cultivation. However, who would have guess that they were still that frail and weak, even to the point of being unable to protect their compatriots?

"Looks like you two are feeling extremely sorrowful."

With a faint smile, Ji Xuan said, "In fact, if you want to blame someone, you can blame Mu Chen. Everything's due to him. If he had not acted as if he was clever, you all would not have had to endure such humiliation."

Ji Xuan's words were extremely venomous, appearing to be more so than his actions. Not only did he want to squash Shen Cangsheng and his group beneath his feet, he even wanted to cause them to feel such humiliation, converting this into hatred and transfer it onto Mu Chen.

"There will always be some disparity between you and Mu Chen." However, faced against such heart-rending words, a smile cracked open for Shen Cangsheng as he spoke out, the blood at the corner of his mouth causing him to appear somewhat malevolent.

"What did you say?" Hearing that, Ji Xuan's eyes started to gradually turn cold.

"You'll forever be alone. There will be no one that will trust you. Even those compatriots of yours will give up on you when you meet with such similar troubles as me. However, we will never give up on Mu Chen," replied Shen Cangsheng in a ridiculing fashion.

"Therefore, you'll never ever be able to match up to Mu Chen! He'll always be stronger than you!"

"Haha." Ji Xuan made a soft laugh. Shaking his head, he said, "Who would care about something useless like trust? You're so-called 'belief' is so weak in the face of power and strength that it's really laughable."

As Ji Xuan's voice rang out, his face had already turned completely cold. He proceeded to speak again. "Therefore, you guys should come to a stop at this point."

Whoosh!

As the last of his words rang out, his figure had already disappeared like a spectre.

Without any prior signalling, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong had already explosively retreated.

Nevertheless, at the instant when they did so, a blurry figure had already appeared between their midst. In the next instant, an ice-cold palm shot out towards their throats akin to the talons of an eagle.

Bang!

Their bodies were heavily pressed against the precipitous mountain cliff behind them. As the rocks behind them shattered apart, blood spewed from them once again, while the Spiritual Energies radiating from them dropped to their weakest.

Right before them, an expressionless Ji Xuan stood in the sky, his hands on their throats, causing them to be unable to move even a single inch.

On the other side.

With a smile on his face, Mu Feng looked towards Su Xuan while saying in a soft voice, "Now, is there anyone else that can protect you?"

Whoosh!

His figure had shot out, heading straight towards Su Xuan.

Tightly clenching her teeth, Su Xuan circulated the Spiritual Energy within her body to the utmost degree. At this moment, she could only try her best to endure a bout with Mu Feng.

Boom!

The fierce Demonic Moon Halberd heavily smashed against the spiritual umbrella. As the frightening power came gushing through, Su Xuan's body

shook as the spiritual umbrella in her hands was sent flying away.

Pressing close to Su Xuan, Mu Feng looked towards the pretty face just inches away from him, before giving a faint smile brimming with chilling intent. In the next instant, sending a palm patting out, Spiritual Energy surged from his body, causing the horizon the split apart.

"This ends here!"

As Mu Feng's chilling voice rang out, Su Xuan closed her eyes in despair.

Rumble!

However, at the instant before Mu Feng's palm was about to land on Su Xuan's chest, erratic claps of thunder suddenly resounded across the entire region, causing Mu Feng's face to furiously contort.

A black bolt of lightning split the horizon apart at an indescribable speed. Under the countless astonished gazes shooting from this region, it violently smashed against Mu Feng's body.

Bang!

Mu Feng's body instantly shot away, smashing straight into the ground. As he landed on the earth, the area around him collapsed and caved in, while gigantic fissures extended like a spider web.

After smashing Mu Feng away, the bolt of black lightning didn't come to a stop. With a shift, it rushed straight out, while a fist sparkling with lightning mercilessly rumbled out, immediately heavily smash against Mu Feng's chest, who was now unable to even evade or dodge.

Puff!

Mu Feng's eyes rapidly sprung wide open as he spewed a mouthful of blood. As he did so, the ground beneath him caved in once more.

A roar rang fron him as he attempted to struggle out of his predicament. However, a palm sparkling with lightning immediately clasped over his throat, causing his struggling to abruptly freeze.

The black lightning before his eyes started to slowly dissipate away, before a thin figure finally appeared before everyone's eyes. Present on the

figure was a handsome face, merely that an extremely malevolent expression covered in murderous aura had covered its entirety.

"Mu Chen!"

Cries of shock and astonishment instantly resounded across the entire region.

Not far away, the gaze of Ji Xuan, who had already defeated Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong had also slightly changed. Slowly panning his head across, he looked towards the familiar-looking lightning-clad figure, before a smile started to curl from the corner of his mouth.

"You've finally arrived, Mu Chen."

Chapter 578: Two Kings' Reunion

In this vast region, figures were faintly discernible at the edges of the distant sky as they continued to hide the sky and cover the earth as they shot over. As of now, it was clear that this region had already become the most prominent place within the entire Great Spiritual Academy Tournament.

Various powerful groups were now standing in the air, with all of their gazes focused towards the stretch of area before them. To be precise, they were all trained towards the thin figure clad in black lightning bolts.

They were able to clearly sense the dense killing intent radiating from the figure. Such killing intent appeared to have caused the temperature of the entire region to drop by quite a bit.

That was Mu Chen.

"He has finally arrived..." Whispers quietly rang out as the gazes from everyone in the region converged.

"If he had arrived just a bit later, that Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy group would have been completely wiped out."

"Ji Xuan and his group are truly vicious in their actions..."

"From the looks of it, there won't be an easy conclusion to this matter."

"Ji Xuan's not easy to be dealt with. Although that Mu Chen's fame and reputation has been skyrocketing recently, can he really match up to Ji Xuan? His cultivation seems to only be at Spiritual Energy Disaster..."

"..."

Whispering noises incessantly continued to ring out, while everyone's gazes had converged on the two main characters present within the region. Anyone would be able to sense that an intense fight that would shock everyone present would erupt in this region today.

Under the attentive gazes of everyone, Mu Chen had a hand wrapped around Mu Feng's throat while standing within the caved-in ground

present below, appearing just like a prey within the talons of an eagle. Furthermore, the killing intent radiating from his body informed everyone that if he were to unleash a killing blow, he would absolutely show no mercy nor remorse.

Being within Mu Chen's grasp, Mu Feng's face had already turned ashen, with the blood dripping from the corner of his mouth causing him to look somewhat miserable. A venomous and unwilling gaze shot from him towards Mu Chen. Due to the latter taking such quick action, he was unable to muster any defenses, causing him to become instantly suppressed by the latter.

He absolutely didn't believe that Mu Chen would be able to suppress him in a head-on confrontation!

Su Xuan was staring at the figure standing not too far away from her. It had been more than half a year since she had seen him, yet he appeared to have not changed much, merely that his originally handsome and gentle face had appeared somewhat more healthy and robust. Perhaps, due to the vast killing intent radiating from his body, he appeared exceedingly sharp and incisive, just like an extraordinary divine spear standing tall within the heavens and earth.

Wiping away the bloodstain at the corner of her mouth, Su Xuan's originally tense heart started to slowly calm down. The youth before her appeared to cause people to have boundless confidence in him, causing them to feel calm and steady in his presence.

Panning his head over, Mu Chen looked towards Su Xuan. As his malevolent gaze started to turn gentle, he said, "Senior Sister Su Xuan, are you alright?"

Hearing that, Su Xuan shook her head. Turning her head to look towards He Yao and Yang Lin, her eyes turned reddish as she said, "But they're seriously injured."

Having his hand chopped off by Mu Feng earlier, blood continued to flow out from He Yao's severed stump. At this moment, Yang Lin was completely covered in blood, giving off an exceedingly miserable

appearance. Nevertheless, upon seeing Mu Chen's appearance, the both of them heaved a great breath of relief.

Hearing her reply, Mu Chen apologetically nodded his head towards them.

Squirming his body, He Yao leaned against a rock. Sending a smile with much difficulty towards Mu Chen, he asked, "How confident are you?"

What he meant was naturally about how confident Mu Chen was to deal with the situation before them. After all, he was extremely clear about exactly how tyrannically strong Ji Xuan's group was.

"With me here, they'll not be able to hurt you all," replied Mu Chen in a soft voice.

"I'll leave it to you, then..." He Yao slowly replied with a nod as he looked towards the exceedingly dazzling youth before his eyes.

Slightly nodding, Mu Chen proceeded to raise his head up. At this moment, his gaze turned emotionless and indifferent as he looked towards the figure present not far away from him.

The figure standing over there had also casted his gaze over at the same time.

As their eyes interlocked, the ice-cold killing intent gushing from within appeared to have caused even the air to start freezing.

"You've finally arrived, Mu Chen," said Ji Xuan in a soft voice, with his hands similarly tightly grabbing onto the throats of Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong.

"I came here to see what great show you've prepared for me. Would it be even more spectacular than last time?" replied Mu Chen with a faint smile.

Hearing that, Ji Xuan started smiling as he said, "It shouldn't leave you disappointed."

"I very much anticipate it," replied Mu Chen slowly.

"Release Mu Feng!" Fierce cries rang out across the sky as the three

remaining members of the Saint Spiritual Academy group darkly stared at Mu Chen. Powerful Spiritual Energies gushed from their bodies as they covetously stared at Mu Chen.

The cultivation realm of all three of them was at First Grade Spirit Disaster. Although they were inferior to Mu Feng, they were absolutely not weak. Despite this, Mu Chen appeared to have completely ignored the roars coming from them.

"Hmph!"

Seeing this, the eyes of the trio turned ice-cold. Exchanging glances with one another, they each sent a palm patting out seemingly at the same instant. Boundless Spiritual Energies swept from them, transforming into Spiritual Energy palm prints that started to press down towards Mu Chen.

Despite this, Mu Chen appeared to have not moved even an inch.

Swish!

However, just as those Spiritual Energy palm prints were about to descend, a sharp sword cry suddenly rang from across the sky, before three gigantic sword arcs explosively shot over.

Puff!

As the sword lights howled over, they instantly sliced the three Spiritual Energy palm prints into two, causing them to transform into glowing dots that blotted the skies.

Whoosh!

Countless gazes shot towards the direction where those sword arcs had come from, only to see two glowing figures rushing over at a speed akin to chasing the moon and stars. Finally, two exquisite and beautiful figures appeared right by Mu Chen's side.

The two girls appeared graceful and elegant, while possessing flawlessly beautiful appearances. Nevertheless, they caused people to feel shock and astonishment, with even the somewhat frozen atmosphere in this region appearing to possess some luster upon their appearance.

Seemingly all of the eyes had involuntarily shot over and converged onto them.

"That's Wen Qingxuan!"

"The other girl... she's called Luo Li, right? I know her. She's the Queen Luo of the Spiritual Road. At the end of the Spiritual Road, she had even caused Ji Xuan to suffer serious injuries."

"From the looks of it, they appear to be Mu Chen's helpers. These two girls are definitely not simple. If they were to genuinely take action, even Ji Xuan wouldn't dare to proclaim to have absolute confidence in victory. That's why Mu Chen dared to appear here."

"..."

The appearance of the two girls had instantly caused even greater exclamations. Compared to Mu Chen and Ji Xuan, they were even more attractive for their attention.

Flanking beside Mu Chen, Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan shot a look at the former. Turning their gazes to the front, they rested their eyes on Ji Xuan, who was standing not too far away from them.

With her not having much previous contact with Ji Xuan, Wen Qingxuan was not brimming with interest as she proceeded to size up the former. Being the arch-enemy of Mu Chen, as well as the guy who had snatched first place from her, Wen Qingxuan was exceedingly curious as to who this Ji Xuan was.

Compared to Wen Qingxuan, a calm and tranquil expression was present on Luo Li's face. Her pair of clear glass-like pupils shot a quiet look at Ji Xuan, with not a single fluctuation present within that tranquil gaze of hers.

With Luo Li's appearance, Ji Xuan's gaze had immediately converged to her. Nevertheless, though, the calm and tranquil beautiful eyes of the latter caused the corner of his mouth to involuntarily twitch.

"It has been a while, Luo Li." Suppressing the pounding within his heart, Ji Xuan said in a slow manner.

Resting her beautiful eyes once more on Ji Xuan, Luo Li replied in a soft voice, "Do you still remember what I've said to you at the end of the Spiritual Road?"

Hearing that, Ji Xuan's pupils slightly narrowed, while his expression gradually turned fierce.

That was a scene that he would never, ever forget. By forsaking everything, the girl dressed in black had caused him and her to become mutually wounded. Furthermore, at the very last moment, the girl did not pay any other kind of attention other than to hurt him. WIth a calm voice, she had told him that his life was Mu Chen's to claim. That's why she didn't kill him...

"I believe that he will make you disappointed." A dark shadow was present in Ji Xuan's eyes as he stared at Mu Chen, while the hands gripping the throats of Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong started to grow uncontrollably tighter.

Hearing that, a faint smile that caused the hearts and souls of the people to stir started to surface on her absolutely stunning face. With a gentle tone, she replied, "You'll be disappointed, as he's stronger than you."

Not one bit of ridicule was present in her gentle voice. Yet, that soft and light tone caused the usually calm Ji Xuan to uncontrollably shiver, while a deep shade of darkness was present on his handsome face. At this moment, greenish veins even started to slowly surface on his arms.

Astonishment was present on the faces of Ji Xuan's three group members as they set their gazes on the current Ji Xuan. This truly was the first time that they had seen the usually emotionless Ji Xuan show so much emotional fluctuations.

Every single gaze within this entire region moved around the trio of Mu Chen, Luo Li and Ji Xuan. As if being able to discern something that had happened between them, the faces of everyone present started to turn somewhat strange.

"Oh really? I'm really looking forward to it."

Ji Xuan gave his reply. Taking a deep breath, Ji Xuan suppressed the anger and fury within his heart, before turning his dark and sinister gaze towards Mu Chen. With a smile he said, " What do you have that's stronger than me? Is it your Spiritual Energy Disaster realm, or is it your strength?"

Hearing that, Mu Chen gave a laugh. Shaking Mu Feng that he had grasped within his hand, he replied, "Let's release the people in our hands. I don't assume that you would be that childish to resort to threats like this, right?"

At this moment, Ji Xuan had also laughed; however, it was one that didn't contain the slightest warmth at all. With a wave of his palm, he tossed Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong away.

With a calm expression, Mu Chen tossed Mu Feng away, sending the latter flying against a mountainous rock, smashing it into bits.

Miserably crawling out from the mountainous rock, an ashen expression was present on Mu Feng's face as he stared at Mu Chen. Nevertheless, though, he did not dare to recklessly take action against the latter.

Seeing Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong being thrown away, Mu Chen hastily went forward to assist them. The current appearance of the duo, being entirely covered with blood, caused them to appear exceedingly miserable.

An expression brimming of apology and regret was present within Mu Chen's eyes as he looked towards the duo.

"There's no need to say any unnecessary words. I'll leave the rest to you. That bastard's very strong. If you don't have assurance, we'll just flee as quick as we can. Better have more chances than to lose lives." Words rang from a crack of Shen Cangsheng's mouth as he patted Mu Chen's shoulder.

Hearing that, Mu Chen gave a laugh, before nodding his head.

Whoosh! Whoosh!

The whooshing sounds within the region grew louder and louder.

Looking over, the entire mountain range and plains around were filled with figures. With seemingly all of the powerful groups that have participated in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament being attracted towards this location.

With an indifferent expression on his face, Ji Xuan cleaned away the bloodstains present on his palms. Raising his head, he took a look at the figures that covered the surrounding mountain range and plains, before giving a soft clap.

"The Mu Chen Elimination Operation begins."

Chapter 579: Revealing Cards

Within this vast region, numerous figures were present, blotting the skies and covering the land. However, these figures were split far away from each other as they stood in the air, appearing to be vigilant and cautious about each other.

The black sea of humans stood in the air, extending into the distance, with clear layers of separation between them.

Due the enormous crowd, the Spiritual Energies radiating from their bodies dyed the entire region in a rainbow shade, causing an especially gorgeous and magnificent scene to appear before people's eyes.

At this moment, gazes shooting from all across the sky were locked onto the vast stretch of area before them, where two groups of people were in confrontation against each other.

As of now, the group led by Ji Xuan was, without a doubt, the strongest group amongst all of those that were present here. Furthermore, the most important thing was that Ji Xuan's strength was deep, unfathomable and hard to grasp.

Seemingly since the start of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament till now, Ji Xuan had yet to experience a single defeat. Faced against any opponent, he would always sweep them over as if he was brushing away dried twigs, appearing to be seemingly invincible.

Faced against a monstrous talent like him, there might not be anyone within the entire Great Spiritual Academy Tournament that would not have fear and dread towards him.

However, although Ji Xuan's strong and powerful, Mu Chen and his group weren't any run-of-the-mill characters, either. Without mentioning about the 2nd placed Wen Qingxuan and just talking about Mu Chen, his fame and reputation had recently skyrocketed, appearing just like a black horse that no one could underestimate.

As for Luo Li, she had always kept a low profile. Nevertheless, everyone

who had an understanding of her would know that she was a girl whose appearance and temperament was not one bit inferior to Wen Qingxuan. Other than that, she also possessed a rather frightening level of strength.

The triangle formed by the trio possessed a level of might that would be absolutely more than sufficient to cause people to smack their lips.

Therefore, when these two groups of people were to undergo a head-on confrontation, there would be a great deal of people who would want to know exactly which group would be able to gain an advantage.

Therefore, upon seeing Ji Xuan waving his hand down with indifference, the expression of everyone present in the entire region tensed up, with their bodies slowly following suit.

With his hand hanging by his side, a calm and tranquil expression continued to be present on his handsome face. Aside from him, Wen Qingxuan and Luo Li had gradually started to clench the war spear and longsword respectively in their hands.

The Mu Chen Eliminate Operation...

Just from the words alone, one could tell that it was specifically crafted to target Mu Chen.

Humm. Humm.

Gales blew across the air, bringing along humming sounds. Although all of the powerful groups within the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament had gathered over here, the entire region appeared so silent that one could hear the sounds of the wind blowing.

"Haha. What a really lively place."

The atmosphere within the region, which had appeared to have frozen over, did not continue for long, as a clear and refreshing laughter suddenly rang out, shattering the ice apart.

Whoosh!

Everyone's gazes seemingly turned over in an instant, caused their eyes to look towards a mountain peak in the far distance. As spiritual light

flashed at that place, multiple figures slowly surfaced from within.

Standing right in front of the group of figures was a youth dressed in green robes. As the long hair flowed from the head of the youth, he gave off an exceedingly confident and natural appearance. As people looked over, the rampant winds blowing across the region suddenly turned even more fierce and hurried. Unexpectedly, the rampant winds that blotted the skies started to converge towards his location, before transforming into a howling tornado.

"That's..."

People's eyes proceeded to look towards the chest of the green-robed youth, where a green-coloured Academy Insignia was present. A vast, endless dark-green universe was present there, indicative of Academy Insignia of one of the five Great Academies, the Azure Heavens Spiritual Academy!

"That's the Azure Heavens Spiritual Academy's Liu Qingyun!"

"It's actually the 4th place Liu Qingyun!"

"So it turns out that Ji Xuan has secretly invited him over?"

Following the appearance of those figures, waves of uproar instantly erupted across the entire region. Among the entire Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, Liu Qingyun was similarly an expert at the very peak. Currently placing 4th on the point rankings was more than sufficient to show his strength and power. Such a person possessed similar qualifications to contend for hegemony. However, who would have guessed that Ji Xuan was able to invite him over?

"Liu Qingyun!" Shooting a slightly cold gaze towards the figure with her beautiful eyes, Wen Qingxuan said in a cold voice, "Looks like you want to interfere in today's matter, huh."

Sweeping his gaze over, Liu Qingyun sent a faint smile towards Wen Qingxuan, before replying, "Qingxuan, Mu Chen had gone somewhat overboard in this matter. Therefore, you can't blame me."

"I'm not familiar with you, so you better not call me like that. If not,

don't blame me for being discourteous," said Wen Qingxuan in an indifferent tone as her beautiful eyes slightly drooped down.

"In any case, we've collaborated before..." Liu Qingyun replied with a frown. Proceeding to shoot a look towards Mu Chen, an ambiguous shade flashed across his face, before saying, "Furthermore... it's extremely rare for me to see you walk so close to somebody..."

Hearing that, a sparkle flashed within Mu Chen's eyes. Shooting a look towards Wen Qingxuan, he gave a helpless laugh, before saying in a teasing fashion, "I finally understand what a femme fatale is."

Clearly, Liu Qingyun had known Wen Qingxuan before. Furthermore, from his tone of his voice, one would be hard-pressed to not discover the fancy that was obviously present towards the latter. Perhaps, a large reason for him accepting Ji Xuan's request to take action to deal with Mu Chen might stem from his envy and jealousy.

After all, he had some understanding towards Wen Qingxuan's temperament, knowing that the latter would absolutely not have any close contact with males. Even during the previous time where they needed to collaborate, she had only done her part, before immediately leaving once her goal was accomplished, not giving Liu Qingyun any chance to strike the metal when its hot.

Therefore, this was the first time Liu Qingyun had see Wen Qingxuan collaborating with a male for so long, and would even not hesitate to go against a thorny character like Ji Xuan for his sake.

"Mu Chen! If you dare to speak anymore nonsense, do you believe that I will not trample you to death?!" Wen Qingxuan's willowy eyebrows immediately turned slightly vertical. Staring right at Mu Chen, she proceeded to clench her teeth and growled.

Hearing that Mu Chen immediately laughed.

"With Liu Qingyun added in, this isn't good news for us," said Luo Li in a soft voice as she looked towards Mu Chen. The people they had defeated earlier, like Lu Tian and Wu Jiang, were not a match for this Liu Qingyun. The latter was like them, coming from one of the five Great Academies,

and was even a genius from the Wind Spirit Clan. He was extremely strong, be it his talent or his background. If he wanted to help Ji Xuan, this would create quite a bit of pressure for Mu Chen and his group.

Hearing that, Mu Chen nodded his head and replied, "Furthermore, I'm afraid that Ji Xuan still has more in store for us..."

Ji Xuan stood in the air not far away, a calm and tranquil gaze still present within his eyes as he looked towards Mu Chen. Without any ripples of shock or astonishment present on his face, he raised his hand once more, before giving a gentle wave down.

"Brother Fang Yun, please reveal yourself."

As Ji Xuan's indifferent-sounding voice rang out, a chill seemed to have blown across the expressions of quite a few people. Fang Yun? Could it be that Nine Cauldrons Spiritual Academy's Fang Yun, who's currently the 6th place on the point rankings?

"Cough. Look's like this can be considered as the most spectacular confrontation within the entirety of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament before the final match. Therefore, it would be extremely regretful if I'm absent at here." As Ji Xuan's voice rang out, a laughter rang out. Everyone's sight converged over, only to see the sea of humans suddenly part there, before multiple figures slowly walked out from within.

The person standing in the lead was dressed in white robes, while having a delicate and effeminate appearance. His hair had an ash-grey colour to it, while his pair of eyes appeared exceedingly radiant. At this moment, a faint smile was present on his face as he looked over to the stretch of land before him, where the seas of humans had converged to.

An Academy Insignia was similarly present on his chest, with the image of nine cauldrons present on it.

That was the mark of the Nine Cauldrons Spiritual Academy. A hundred years ago, the Nine Cauldrons Spiritual Academy was once a member of the five Great Academies. Falling into decline thereafter, it had resulted in them losing the title of being one of the five Great Academies.

Nevertheless, though, the Nine Cauldrons Spiritual Academy similarly possessed exceedingly astonishing might. The group they had sent to participate in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament and being about to obtain the 6th place on the point rankings were more than sufficient to confirm that fact.

Not surprisingly, Fang Yun's appearance had caused waves of clamoring to erupt, with shock and astonishment appearing in the gazes of quite a few people.The people that Ji Xuan had invited over were all peak-level characters that possessed the qualifications to contend for the 8 quotas present for the final match.

From the looks of it, Ji Xuan truly had came prepared. He truly wanted to completely destroy Mu Chen and his group.

Gazes that blotted the sky all converged onto Mu Chen, with ambiguous expressions present within their eyes. At this moment, no one really knew if the latter would be able to make a proper retreat under such a line-up prepared by Ji Xuan.

"Mu Chen, are you satisfied in the show I've prepared just for you?" said Ji Xuan with a faint smile as he looked towards Mu Chen. "If you're not satisfied..."

As his voice rang out, he extended his slender palms and gave a gentle clap.

Seeing that action, the eyelids of the crowd around could not help rapidly twitching, while shock overwhelmed their hearts. Could it be that this hasn't come to an end?

Whoosh!

As Ji Xuan's clap rang out, a blood-red shade suddenly swept across from the distant horizon. Appearing as blood-red akin to a river of blood, it swept across the horizon, before rushing towards the region populated by the attentive gazes of countless experts.

Seeing the river of blood, Mu Chen's eyes instantly, slightly narrowed, while chilling intent gushed from the beautiful eyes of Luo Li standing

beside him.

As the river of blood dissipated away, multiple figures appeared in a flash from within. Those figures were dressed in blood-red robes, with a familiar-looking face located in their midst. That was precisely the person that had escaped from the Divine Wood Palace after being injured by Mu Chen, Xue Tiandou.

At this moment, Xue Tiandou was sending a dark and sinister gaze towards Mu Chen. Nevertheless, though, he clearly wasn't the main character there, as a youth with blood-red hair stood right before him.

This youth also wore a set of blood-red robes. Sweeping his red, malevolent eyes over, he finally rested his gaze onto Luo Li's body, before saying with a faint smile, "It truly has been a long time, Luo Li."

Tightly clenching her Luo Shen Sword, Luo Li's clear and beautiful eyes were brimming with chilling intent. As her red lips slightly parted, a clear and cold voice rang out from within, "Xue Tianhe, I never imagined that even you, the third prince of the Blood God Clan would come over here."

"For you, the future Empress of the Luo God Clan, it won't be overboard for any of our Blood God Clan to come over," replied the youth by the name of Xue Tianhe with a smile.

Within the entire region, quite a few gazes fluctuated between shock and doubt as they looked towards this Xue Tianhe. Although this name had yet to appear in the Top 16, anyone would be able to sense the pressure brought about by him, which was not the slightest bit weaker than Liu Qingyun or Fang Yun.

All three of these figures were of the heavyweight-class.

For the sake of dealing with Mu Chen, Ji Xuan had truly done his homework. All of the people that he had called out to absolutely possessed the qualifications to contend for the final match quotas. They were the true figures at the peak of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament.

"Mu Chen..."

A warm and gentle smile surfaced once again on Ji Xuan's handsome face. Looking towards Mu Chen and his group, who were surrounded on all sides, he said in a slow manner, "Are you satisfied with my preparations?"

Gazes blotting the skies all shot towards Mu Chen. Faced against such a frightening line-up, even formidable characters like Mu Chen, Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan should feel extreme pressure.

This wasn't a good situation to break.

The cards that Ji Xuan had brought out all possessed extreme might.

Faced against this situation, what would Mu Chen do?

Under the countless attentive gazes shooting over, Mu Chen slowly raised his head. At this moment, there curiously wasn't much shock or fear present on his handsome face. On the contrary, a faint smile had surfaced on it, before his soft voice rang out.

"Are you done already?"

Despite not sounding deep, when this voice entered the ears of the masses, it caused their hearts to violently shudder.

Chapter 580: Confront

"Are you done?"

As Mu Chen's voice softly rang out, the clamoring originally present within the entire region turned silent once again, with quite a few people looking in shock and astonishment at Mu Chen. That's because they were unable to see much of any shock or fear present on the latter's face.

This made everyone feel stupefied. Could it be that Mu Chen's still not clear about the current situation he was in? Faced against a line-up with the likes of Ji Xuan, Liu Qingyun, Fang Yun, as well as that Xue Tianhe and their groups, even with Mu Chen, Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan, they shouldn't be able to contend against them, right?

There's no one present here that would underestimate the might the trio of Mu Chen, Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan possessed. However, this could also be absolutely said towards the line-up the trio was up against. Each of the people Ji Xuan had invited over were heavyweight figures, and this wasn't a joke.

However, even in such a spot, there was still not a change of expression on Mu Chen's face. What does this mean? Is he truly clueless about his current situation, or does he possess something that can make him so confident in facing such a line-up?

If it was the latter, it was inevitable for some people finding it hard to believe.

After giving some thought about it, the gazes of some people started to faint sparkle. Being able to cause a monstrous talent like Ji Xuan to have so much fear and dread of him, it was clearly that Mu Chen wasn't an ignorant person.

Since Mu Chen wasn't having any fear or dread due to ignorance, there's only one explanation that fits the picture, which was that he had made a similar form of preparation, too.

Such a thought caused the hearts of quite a few people to slightly

tremble, while a weird shadow appeared within the gazes that had focused on the exceedingly calm youth before their eyes.

Naturally, they weren't the only ones that were in shock and doubt. Even the heavyweight characters like Liu Qingyun, Xue Tianhe and Fang Yun slightly narrowed their eyes in response, a sparkling glint present within their eyes as they rested their sights on Mu Chen's body.

"Looks like you've long expected my preparations?" Ji Xuan's eyes had similarly contracted. Looking towards Mu Chen, he said with a faint smile.

"Being opponents for so many years, how would I not understand these methods of yours?" replied Mu Chen with a faint smile as he looked straight back at Ji Xuan.

"Oh?" Hearing that, Ji Xuan's eyebrows twitched, before saying with a smile, "Since it's the case, I really want to see what kind of preparation you can make."

"It's isn't some shocking preparation, merely that there are many experts present in this Great Spiritual Academy Tournament. Since you're able to invite heavyweight figures, how can I not do anything in this regard?" replied Mu Chen with a smile.

As his voice rang out, Mu Chen turned around. Looking towards the sea of humans that had extended endlessly across the horizon, he said with a clear voice and a smile, "Please show yourselves, Brother Wu Ling, Brother Wen."

As Mu Chen's voice rang out, the entire region turned silent, before a slightly helpless-sounding voice slowly rang out from within the sea of humans. "Mu Chen, this collaboration of yours really is a little spicy."

As the voice slowly cracked apart from the sea of humans, a group of figures slowly walked out. The figure in the lead was a youth with a delicate and effeminate appearance. He was impressively Wu Ling from the Martial Spiritual Academy.

Wu Yingying stood quietly behind him, her pair of beautiful eyes trained on Mu Chen standing not far away from him as she muttered, "Really

what a worrisome fellow."

Standing right beside Wu Ling was yet another youth, one who had an incomparably ordinary appearance, and appearing unassuming in any aspect. At this moment, a harmless-looking smile was present on his face. A hand was revealed from one of his sleeves, appearing especially abnormal, as an exceedingly white luster was radiating from it. This caused it to appear as if it was made of gemstones, causing people to have a feeling of being unable to pull their gazes away.

"That's the current 3rd place in the point rankings, the Martial Spiritual Academy's Wu Ling?"

"There's also Wen Bushen, the group currently in 8th place. It seems that they have been at those rankings for a very long time. Although they have yet to rise up, they have yet to drop below the 8th place."

"Indeed, Mu Chen had made preparations for this, to actually invite two heavyweight figures of his own own."

Upon the appearance of Wu Ling and Wen Bushen, waves of clamoring instantly erupted across the entire region, while quite a few people sighed in admiration within their hearts. From the looks of it, this entire matter had truly turned interesting. Both parties had unleashed their remarkable abilities and invited heavyweight figures out. The line-up for both sides might be considered as the strongest within the entire Great Spiritual Academy Tournament.

The few groups that were invited over had the greatest possibility to become the groups that would qualify for the final match.

Looking towards Wu Ling and Wen Bushen, Mu Chen cupped his hands in gratitude towards them. During those few days of hunting, not only did he pluck out the fangs and claws of Ji Xuan, he had similarly sought out allies that could collaborate with him. After all, being all too familiar with Ji Xuan, if the latter wanted to deal with his group without any restraint, he would definitely pull other heavyweight groups to his side.

Therefore, he similarly needed to make some preparations of his own.

From the looks of the current situation, Ji Xuan had pulled Liu Qingyun, Fang Yun and Xue Tianhe, while Mu Chen had Wen Qingxuan, Luo Li, Wu Ling, as well as Wen Bushen. With Mu Chen himself added in, the latter's line-up could be termed as perfect.

The lineups on both sides were absolutely the best of the best within the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament. The scene right before their eyes had caused the blood within quite a few people to show signs of surging and boiling.

This up the beat for the final match.

"I never expect that you would actually team up with Mu Chen, Wu Ling."

A chill suffused through Ji Xuan's eyes as he rested his gaze onto Wu Ling. Indeed, he had not expected that the latter would actually come together with Mu Chen. After all, Mu Chen's relationship with Wu Ling while on the Spiritual Road couldn't be considered to be close.

". Don't look at me like that. I'm also just here to even the field." A smile surfaced on Wu Ling's effeminate face as he gave his reply. Turning around and looking at Wu Yingying standing beside him, his mouth slightly twitched in helplessness. Although he admired Mu Chen, he did not have any plan to into the war between the latter and Ji Xuan, when the latter had sought him out. It was merely due to him being unable to endure Wu Yingying's nagging that he finally conceded and accepted to help.

". You're short-sighted. Don't you know what kind of person Ji Xuan is? That fellow has extremely big ambitions. If he manages to deal with Mu Chen, we might not be able to escape from his future plans. For the sake of clinching the Championship, that fellow would sweep anyone that obstructs his path with no mercy at all." Seeing Wu Ling's expression, Wu Yingying could not help coldly snorting out.

"Are these really the only reasons?" asked Wu Ling in a teasing manner.

"What else are you thinking about?" Wu Yingying growled, her willowy eyebrows turning slightly vertical as a pinkish shade flashed across her

fair complexion. Nevertheless, she still opened her bright and beautiful eyes to shoot a fierce glare towards Wu Ling.

Hearing her growls, Wu Ling gave a dry cough. He was completely helpless against this crafty and unruly younger sister of his. Thus, the only choice he could do was to turn towards Ji Xuan, before saying with a smile, "Ji Xuan, you've really blown the matter up. From what I can see, if our two lineups were to really duke it out. I believe that both parties would pay quite a high price..."

"To pay this price, there's a very high possibility that there will be some people that would lose the qualifications to get promoted into the final match."

As Wu Ling's clear voice rang out across the sky, it immediately caused the eyes of the heavyweight helpers invited by both parties to sparkle. After all, all of them were clear that both sides were absolutely not easy to deal with. If they were to really duke it out, they might have to pay an extremely high price as a result.

Regardless of Ji Xuan or Mu Chen, such a price was clearly not too worthwhile. Due to the grudges and grievances between the two, they could call for help and reinforcements, but they would not go so far as to throw their lives for the two's cause.

Slightly narrowing his eyes to look at Wu Ling, Ji Xuan proceeded to shoot a look at Mu Chen, before saying with a faint smile, "Do you have any good suggestions, Captain Wu Ling?"

"Everyone takes a step back, pack up and go home, before really duking it out in the final match," replied Wu Ling with a grin.

As his words rang out, quite a few groups instantly gawked. Could it be that the astonishing lineups from both sides would just pack up and retreat like that? Is this a joke? Did they gather their heavyweight allies over just to be dazzling eye-candy?

Hearing that, Mu Chen only gave a faint smile, declining to give any comment to it.

Ji Xuan similarly gave only a smile in response. Sweeping his gaze over, he finally rested his eyes on Mu Chen before saying, "I also believe that it isn't worthwhile to start the final match here. However, since everyone's here, there's still things that are needed to be done."

"Mu Chen. Since today's matter is started with the two of us, how makes us concluding it sound for you?"

As those words from Ji Xuan rang out, it caused the hearts of quite a few people to instantly shudder. With the relatively similar line-up between the two, it wasn't likely for a group battle to erupt. Furthermore, the line-up brought together by Ji Xuan was already unable to provide much threat to Mu Chen. Since it was the case, the only thing he could do was to toss away his helpers and personally grace the stage.

However, such a scene still needed to be constructed by Ji Xuan. The majority of the reason why he had feared and dread in Mu Chen was due to Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan. However, from the looks of it, that fear and dread had been suppressed in the current situation.

After all, if Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan still wanted to help Mu Chen take action at this moment, the few heavyweight helpers that Ji Xuan had invited over would not stand back and watch without taking action.

A chilling glint had glazed over Luo Li's beautiful eyes, due to her clear understanding Ji Xuan's plan. So it turns out that this fellow's plan all along has been to force Mu Chen into a duel with him.

From a certain perspective, the current Ji Xuan was indeed extremely powerful. Although she knew that a fight would definitely happen between Mu Chen and Ji Xuan, she did not wish for this to happen now, as Mu Chen's cultivation has yet to truly reach the realm of Spirit Disaster.

As of now, if Mu Chen crossed hands with Ji Xuan, it wouldn't be advantageous for him.

This was something that Ji Xuan was clear about. Therefore, he had unleashed all of these schemes to force Mu Chen to take action. That way, he would be able to force Mu Chen to completely fluster up, resulting in the loss of his most thorny opponent.

Chilling covered Luo Li's beautiful face. In the next instant, tightly grasping her Luo God Sword, she took a step forward. Nevertheless, she was stopped by Mu Chen, who had extended his hand to obstruct her.

Slightly shaking his head towards her, the youth proceeded to raise his head to look towards Ji Xuan. An incisive smile started to surface on his handsome face, before he slowly nodded his head under the countless attentive gazes shooting over.

"Let's do as you wish."

Chapter 581: Earth-Shattering Confrontation

"As you wish."

When Mu Chen's voice spreads to the horizon, experts of all sorts abruptly shrank their eyes as they looked at the mysterious and slender youth. Mu Chen's acceptance of the challenge was out of their expectations.

However, anyone could see from the current situation that Ji Xuan was forcing Mu Chen to fight with him alone. With Mu Chen's cultivation at Spiritual Energy Disaster, he was on the weaker side.

Perhaps Mu Chen had the means to compensate for that weakness. However, that could only be used on ordinary experts. Facing the monstrous Ji Xuan, he would understand how hard it was to compensate for the gap between them.

Who dared to say that Ji Xuan did not have his own means as well?

"Mu Chen."

Xu Huang and the rest looked at Mu Chen with worry. Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong also exchanged looks with their brows furrowed. Clearly, they were not in favor of Mu Chen's fight with Ji Xuan.

Earlier, when they confronted Ji Xuan, they understood very well what sort of horrifying strength that youth possessed.

Wen Qingxuan took a glance at Mu Chen, her rosy lips quivered. However, her expression was heavy as she maintained her silence without a word. She knew that the current Ji Xuan could not be compared to all the other opponents that Mu Chen had encountered so far.

"That fool." Wu Yingying could not help grinding her pearly-white teeth as she heavily stomped her feet.

", if he is a fool, then the amount of normal people could be numbered." Wu Ling laughed as he turned his head towards Wen Busheng, who was

wearing a harmless smile that stood beside him, with a smile as he asked, "What is Brother Wen's view on this?"

Wen Busheng originated from the Undefeated Spiritual Academy. Although the name of the Spirit Academy was extremely lavish, the reputation of the Spiritual Academy was extremely low. The strength of that Spiritual Academy was barely fulfilling the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament. But no one could have imagined that this youth from that particular Spiritual Academy could lead his team to Rank 8 in the point rankings.

It was not an easy task to achieve such a feat as it was a qualification to partake in the finals. Thus, many teams had targeted their team, but not a single one had succeeded in their objective.

The result made it clear that this team from a small-sized Spiritual Academy was the biggest black horse in this tournament.

Hearing Wu Ling's words, Wen Busheng's harmless smile that hung on his face slightly froze as he replied, "Ji Xuan is very formidable."

As he spoke, he made a pause before continuing his words, "However, Mu Chen... is very hard to deal with. Despite the fact that he only possesses the cultivation of Spiritual Energy Disaster, I could feel that the danger coming from him is not any weaker compared to Ji Xuan."

"This confrontation... will be very interesting. But the outcome would have to depend on Mu Chen's performance."

Hearing his evaluation, Wu Ling smiled as he lightly nodded his head. He focused his attention onto that area as he mumbled, "This will be very interesting..."

Under the countless gazes of all sorts, Mu Chen slowly moved forth.

Ji Xuan was looking at Mu Chen with both of his eyes narrowed from smiling as his gaze flickered, "You are truly extraordinary to have made it this far with your cultivation of Spiritual Energy Disaster."

Mu Chen was also staring back at Ji Xuan. However, he did not speak a word as he flew up into the horizon with a stomp of his feet, standing in

the sky. Clenching his fist, black-colored lightning surged out of his body, bring along the roaring of thunder.

"Let's go, I will take a look at how much you have improved all these years." Mu Chen said as he slowly extended his palm out.

Ji Xuan smiled in response without any warmth. In the next instant, everyone could clearly see torrential Spiritual Energy sweeping out of his body.

Rumble! Rumble!

Majestic and powerful Spiritual Energy swept out like the ocean, bring along rumbling sounds. Spiritual Energy pressure also spread out as it engulfed the horizon.

Everyone's faces slightly changed at the Spiritual Energy pressure as it made their bodies feel heavier.

The Spiritual Energy cultivation that was displayed by Ji Xuan was at Second Grade Spirit Disaster. However, he clearly already possessed the qualification to attempt to break through the Third Grade Spirit Disaster. Thus, ordinary Second Grade Spirit Disasters were not his opponents.

"What powerful Spiritual Energy."

Someone could not restrain themselves from muttering in a soft voice. In the current Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, those with Second Grade Spirit Disaster were the top tiers. However, the current Ji Xuan that stood before them had already surpassed that level and would come in contact with Third Grade Spirit Disaster very soon.

The moment he made a breakthrough to the Third Grade Spirit Disaster, the last step that countless people have yearned for would be right before him, the Sovereign Realm!

Mu Chen stared at Ji Xuan, who had powerful Spiritual Energy circulates around him. However, there wasn't any astonishment displayed on his face as it wasn't surprising for Ji Xuan to possess such strength with his talent.

Rumble!

The lightning around Mu Chen became increasingly dense as lightning gathered at his chest, slowly forming into six lightning runes. In that instant, the entire sky turned dark as it seemed as if lightning bolts were swimming about in the sky.

As the black lightning traveled across Mu Chen's body, he also emitted powerful strength that could flatten a mountain range.

Mu Chen stood in the sky, the Spiritual Energy around him wasn't as powerful when compared to Ji Xuan, but the veins underneath his skin were wiggled as if they were worms. His physical body quietly jolted as the energy ripples exploded the space around him.

"He actually managed to cultivate his physical body to such a degree..."

Hovering on the sky far away, Liu Qingyun looked at the ripples of energy around Mu Chen as a flash of astonishment flickered in his eyes. His gaze was even heavier as he stared at Mu Chen.

Before achieving the Sovereign Realm, it was extremely hard to cultivate the physical body. It was much harder compared to cultivating Spiritual Energy. Thus, it was the reason why not that many people paid so much time to cultivate their physical body before achieving the Sovereign Realm.

"I wonder if your physical body can withstand the impact of my Spiritual Energy?" Ji Xuan faintly smiled as he stared at Mu Chen.

"We'll know after we try." Mu Chen extended his palm as he made a provoking gesture.

"Such courage you have."

Ji Xuan's mouth curled into a cold arc as his gaze turned colder. No one saw him moving, but the torrential Spiritual Energy swept forth like an ocean. Spiritual Energy attacks amounting to a dozen shot forth with astonishing speed at the size of roughly a thousand feet. With a flash, it had already arrived above Mu Chen.

"Sacred Light Wheel!"

Ji Xuan clenched his fist as the dozen Spiritual Energy attacks combined together, forming into a Sacred Light Wheel that measured up to a thousand feet above Mu Chen. As the light wheel spun, it turned into a light as it flew down with some rustling sounds coming from it.

Ji Xuan was clearly vicious with his means as he did not show any signs of movement to hint his attack.

Lightning exploded on the surface of Mu Chen's body. He clenched his fist as black lightning runes slowly extended onto his arm as he threw a fist out.

Rumble!

The roars of lightning shook the horizon.

A colossal black light flew from Mu Chen's fist as it roared, which resounded throughout the horizon, clashing against the light wheel.

Boom!

Black and white light tangled together up in the sky, before it dissolved, turning into a violent storm that swept out.

As the storm swept out, Mu Chen's figure abruptly disappeared from his original location.

Rustle!

Mu Chen's figure reappeared at the rear of Ji Xuan. There wasn't any expression worn on his face as he quickly made that instantly made a starry sky form behind him.

"Four Gods Constellation Scripture!"

"Lightning God's Fist!"

Mu Chen sent out images of beasts with his left hand, while his right sent out lightning. Two tyrannical attacks instantly engulfed Ji Xuan.

"Sacred Light Shield."

Ji Xuan extended his hand as brilliant white light gathered, before turning into a huge shield. On the shield, it was filled with sacred runes

that made it look impregnable.

Boom!

Mu Chen's tyrannical attack heavily clashed against the shield. However, he was not able to pierce through it, only able to make the light shield slightly shake.

Ji Xuan's methods vastly outstripped all of his opponents in the past. Not only did he possess powerful Spiritual Energy, the technique in which he cultivated in was also not your ordinary stuff. His fighting strength was acclaimed as the peak of perfection.

"Sacred Light's Hand!"

After withstanding Mu Chen's attack, Ji Xuan pushed his palm out as the gigantic Sacred Light's Hand appeared above Mu Chen as it slammed down, causing the nearby air to explode from the force.

Boom!

Another black lightning soared into the sky as it confronted the Sacred Light's Hand.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The exchange of the two people was extremely fast. In just a dozen breath's time, they had already exchanged dozens of moves. Black light exploded as the sacred light dissipated, causing the entire horizon to be dark and distorted from the two horrifying attacks.

Countless gazes filled with shock were directed towards the fierce exchange between the two, to the point that even a few experts that had broken through to Second Grade Spirit Disaster had the corner of their mouths twitching, since the exchange was simply too terrifying.

During their exchange, Mu Chen was clearly taking more hits. However, with his powerful physical body, he managed to withstand it. Therefore, neither side was on the advantageous side in their fight.

"There won't be any outcome if the two of them were to continue in such a manner," said Wu Ling as he watched the battle from afar.

Wen Busheng lightly nodded his head. Shortly after, his eyes instantly shrunk as he slowly spoke, "So they must reveal some of their cards."

When Wen Busheng spoke, white light abruptly gathered in the sky that looked like a blazing sun that was shone onto the land, along with fearsome Spiritual Energy ripples soaring into the sky.

Chapter 582: Third Grade Spirit Disaster VS Hepta Rune Lighting Physique

Buzzz.

Brilliant white light rays that looked like a blazing sun as rays of light shone into this horizon.

The bizarre scene instantly attracted the attention of everyone.

Boom!

Mu Chen wore a serious look in his eyes as he clenched his fist and sent it out. In an instant, lighting that seemed like an enraged dragon roared as it charged forth along with boundless Spiritual Energy as it sped towards Ji Xuan, who was emitting the endless brilliance.

Ji Xuan stood in the sky and was at the center of the brilliant light as powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuated in his surroundings. His long black hair was fluttering as a chill filled his eyes.

He raised his head as he fixed his gaze onto the incoming black lightning, his mouth curled into a ridiculing smile as he moved, bursting forth.

Rustle!

His figure instantly appeared before the black lightning as he casually pushed his palm out towards the black lightning.

Bang!

Brilliant white Spiritual Energy erupted in the form of a light beam. Wherever the white light traveled, it destroyed the rampaging black lightning in its way.

"Mu Chen, do you truly think that my strength is only Second Grade Spirit Disaster?"

Destroying the lightning with a single palm, Ji Xuan's robes fluttered along with his black hair. He looked down, from up high, on Mu Chen,

who was standing before him, as he had a profound smile on his face.

Hearing Ji Xuan's words, countless experts that were present in this place had their hearts jolted as they became dumbstruck. The meaning behind Ji Xuan's words... could it be that he had already broken the threshold to Third Grade Spirit Disaster?

The gaze of Luo Li, Wen Qingxuan and the rest narrowed as their expressions became a little heavy at this instant. Ji Xuan had, indeed, concealed his true strength...

Up on the horizon, Ji Xuan lightly smiled and made a holding gesture with his hand. In an instant, a terrifying Spiritual Energy pressure spread out as the pressure increased several folds compared to before.

In addition, the boundless white Spiritual Energy was like an ocean around Ji Xuan as it constantly waved, emitting violent energy.

Compared to before, his Spiritual Energy was a lot more robust.

"I never imagined, in my wildest imagination, that Ji Xuan broke through to Third Grade Spirit Disaster... what a deep and immeasurable fellow. No wonder he could firmly occupy the Numero Uno spot. This doesn't spell good for Mu Chen..."

Sighs resounded around this horizon. The sudden surge of Ji Xuan's strength broke the deadlock between the two in an instant.

If Ji Xuan did possess the strength of a Third Grade Spirit Disaster, it would be impossible for Mu Chen to resist him.

"How are you going to resist me now?"

Ji Xuan's gaze was sharp as he looked at Mu Chen. Shortly after, his hand seals changed as a wave of majestic Spiritual Energy swept out with light gathering together. Forming into a huge light seal above Mu Chen.

The light seal emitted a brilliant light as it fell down. The frightening energy had instantly locked a few thousand feet, with Mu Chen in the center, not allowing him to have the slightest chance of escaping.

Compared to before, Ji Xuan's attack was way more powerful. If Mu

Chen still used his previous method to forcefully withstand it, he would definitely be injured.

The instant Mu Chen fell into the disadvantageous position in this confrontation, perhaps the outcome would be decided.

Mu Chen raised his head as his black pupils reflected the brilliant light. The colossal light seal rapidly expanded in his pupils. The pressure that was brought by that attack made the surrounding space around him locked. So much so that even the black lightning that was flickering on his body was suffering under the pressure.

This was how powerful a Third Grade Spirit Disaster was.

That attack was not something that his Hexa Rune Lightning Body could confront. The Ji Xuan that stood before him was indeed, an enemy that would require him to give it his all.

Haaaaaa.

Mu Chen deeply sucked in a mouthful of air as he slowly closed his eyes under the countless astonished gazes.

"Is he giving up?" Far away in the horizon, Xue Tianhe stood in the sky as his scarlet pupils looked at Mu Chen in indifference as he muttered to himself, "Is someone that received the love of Luo Li so weak?"

"Seems like the influence of expelling him out of the Spiritual Road is great." Yun Fang of the Nine Cauldrons Spiritual Academy mumbled with a faint smile. If Mu Chen's cultivation was not disrupted for a year, the current him might not be weaker than Ji Xuan. However, it was a pity that there were no "ifs" in this world...

"Mu Chen, he..." The faces of Xu Huang and the rest were filled with anxiety. in strength had instantly flipped the board around.

Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong also wore heavy expressions on their faces, since they never expected Ji Xuan to be so powerful to the point that he had already managed to pass through the threshold of Third Grade Spirit Disaster. Even in the entire Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, he is the first person that has managed to break through to Third Grade

Spirit Disaster, right?

Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan did not speak, but their charming gazes were fixed onto the scene in the sky. Clearly, they had revealed the worries that they had in their hearts. Ji Xuan was an opponent that no one could belittle.

Rumble!

Just when everyone in this region was astonished by Mu Chen's actions, the sky instantly darkened. Thereafter, someone realized that thunderclouds had appeared above them, without them knowing, as lightning flickered in the thunderclouds with deep roars of thunder resounding.

Tsssssssi!

As the lightning flickered, a colossal bolt of lightning suddenly fell from the sky, tearing apart the horizon, before heavily hitting Mu Chen's body under the numerous dumbstruck gazes.

The black lightning almost buried Mu Chen's figure within. Rays of lightning spread out as they sparkled. The violent ripples caused by it had also made the surrounding space boiling.

However, the black bolt of lightning did not last a long time as it vanished in a rapid speed. The lightning seemed to have been attracted as it was being rapidly absorbed into Mu Chen's body.

In the blink of an eye, Mu Chen's figure reappeared before everyone's eyes.

There weren't any changes in his body, except for the fact that the black lightning that covered his body from before had vanished without a trace.

Right at this moment, Mu Chen slowly opened his tightly shut eyes.

Rumble!

It was as if lightning was being born in his black pupils. Shortly after, he stomped his feet, causing the space beneath him to be distorted. Thereafter, with a rustle, he soared into the horizon.

Boom!

Mu Chen's clothes were shredded apart. As his clothes were torn apart, everyone could see the lightning runes that appeared on his chest.

And there were a total of seven !

Rune Lightning Physique!

Boom!

Roars of thunder rang across the horizon as Mu Chen's figure turned into a bolt of black lightning. Within the black lightning, it contained indescribable overbearing power.

Boom! Boom!

The bolt of black lightning that Mu Chen had formed soared. In the next instant, it had already heavily clashed with the colossal light seal that was falling.

"Break!"

In the instant the two forces clashed, a deep voice suddenly rang out.

The black lightning seemed like a spear of the lightning god that was about to pierce through this horizon, causing this horizon to be instantly darkened. What followed after was even more astonishing, since everyone could see cracks appearing on the light seal as it rapidly expanded.

Crack!

A clear and crisp sound rang out as the black lightning pierced through the light seal.

The faces of everyone, drastically changed.

The bolt of lightning pierced through the light seal, before it slowly dissipated in the sky. Following the dissipation, Mu Chen's topless, figure appeared once again. His black pupils looked as if there was a world of lightning in them as his gaze made others feel fearful.

Beneath him, the light seal exploded as it shattered.

Countless gazes were being widened, bit-by-bit, while following the

shattering light .

Ji Xuan's attack actually collapsed!

"How is that possible...?" An exclamation resounded as the voice was shaking. The current Ji Xuan had already used his strength as Third Grade Spirit Disaster. But despite so, he was unable to defeat Mu Chen?

"His physical body grew stronger." Wen Busheng wore a heavy expression as he looked at the topless and slender figure, Mu Chen. The latter's Spiritual Energy did not grow much, but his physical body was several times more powerful compared to before.

Wu Ling also lightly nodded his head in agreement. "He is indeed not someone so easy to deal with. Seems like the both of them had cards up their sleeves..."

"Haaaaaa."

Shen Cangsheng and the rest breathed out a mouthful of air in relief. Shortly after, their hearts were filled with shock. Comparing Mu Chen to the strength he had when the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament had just begun, he actually grew so powerful.

"This fellow truly has the same character as Ji Xuan. Both of them like to hide their cards up their sleeves." Wen Qingxuan snorted. However, in contrast to her words, her anxious expression was slightly relieved.

"I'm afraid that not even you know how many cards he has hidden up his sleeves, Luo Li."

Luo Li did not reply, but she gave a shallow smile in response.

Under the countless dumbstruck gazes, Mu Chen and Ji Xuan faced off in the sky. One of them had an ocean of Spiritual Energy around him, while the other had lightning runes on his body, both appearing extremely overbearing.

"Truly formidable." Ji Xuan stared at Mu Chen as a chill flowed from his eyes. However, he still had a smile maintained on his charming face.

"Did you truly believe that the strength of my physical body was only at

such a level?" Mu Chen faintly smiled as he returned Ji Xuan his words.

"It's still too early for you to be rejoicing."

Ji Xuan smiled as light circulated in his eyes. "Truth be told. If this is your limit, then you will still remain here today."

Mu Chen slowly extended his hand out as he formed bizarre seals with his fingertips as something like a bladed edge that could even make Ji Xuan feel startled burst from his eyes.

"Now then, it's my turn to attack."

Chapter 583: Retaliate

"Now, it will be my turn to attack!"

When Mu Chen's deep voice resounded, numerous experts present in this horizon narrowed their gaze the whole time, the way Mu Chen fought was Ji Xuan attacking while he defended.

And now, was he finally going to change his way of fighting?

But, even if his physical body had grown stronger, was he truly able to contend against Ji Xuan, who had already achieved Third Grade Spirit Disaster?

Upon the horizon, Ji had surging in his surroundings had his eyes flickered upon hearing Mu Chen's words. Shortly after, he chuckled, "I'll be anticipating, then."

He crossed his arms, not having any intention of obstructing Mu Chen. Although it was out of his expectation when Mu Chen's physical body grew stronger, it was still too naive for Mu Chen to think that he would fear him based on that.

Mu Chen wasn't bothered with Ji Xuan's chuckle since he was already forming blurry seals with his hand when he spoke earlier.

As his hand seals changed, a dark-green halo spread out with his palm in the center.

"Tree Planting Art!"

Mu Chen barked inwardly in his head as the dark-green halo was seen expanding. Under the countless dumbstruck gazes, the green light fell from the sky. A rustling sound was heard before a vast dark-green forest rose up from the ground.

The forest was filled with gigantic trees with light circulating on their surfaces.

"This is..."

The sudden appearance of the dark-green forest made everyone widen

their eyes in shock. However, their expressions changed, not knowing whether to laugh or cry when they could not sense any dangerous ripples coming from the forest.

"Really... what a convenient way of growing trees."

Someone couldn't resist commenting. This was the first time that they had witnessed such a bizarre method, being able to grow a forest in a move.

But, then again, they knew that this wasn't created by Mu Chen out of nothing. As such means of creation wasn't something that they could achieve at their current level.

The forest should be something that Mu Chen had prepared long ago as some unusual Spiritual Artifacts did possess such capabilities. Forming a small interspatial realm where one could keep living things in it.

Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan were exchanging looks since this was the first time that they had seen Mu Chen executing such... a peculiar method.

Shen Cangsheng and the rest quietly wiped their cold sweat. If it wasn't for now not being the right time, they might have laughed out loud.

Mu Chen, who stood on the horizon, wasn't bothered by the unusual gazes of everyone as he glanced down at the vast forest. Thereafter, his hand seals changed again.

Buzzz! Buzz!

Following the change of his seals, dense, dark-greenish light surged forth from the forest. The light was filled with vigorous Spiritual Energy.

The Spiritual Energy was filled to the brim with life force. Compared to the natural mottled Spiritual Energy, it vaguely possessed a fine spirituality.

"Something's not right." The gaze of Wu Ling and the rest who were staring at the dark-green forest suddenly narrowed, along with their expressions becoming a little heavier. They seemed to have sensed something.

Dark-green light spread out from the forest like an ocean as a peculiar pressure began being emitted.

The whispers started to die off since they were starting to feel that something wasn't right. Mu Chen definitely had a reason for creating such a huge forest, not simply for viewing purposes.

Upon the horizon, Mu Chen's expression was calm. Shortly after, his slender fingers quietly intertwined.

Divine Wood Scripture!

Whoosh!

The gigantic trees in the vast forest started to explode as the dark-green spiritual ocean soared up as it suddenly gathered towards Mu Chen.

Rumble!!

The torrential Spiritual Energy gathered beneath Mu Chen's feet, it was like a sheet of the ocean. The dark green was filled to the brim with life force. The of the Spiritual Energy even made Ji Xuan's face slightly change.

He felt danger from the Spiritual Energy.

Haaaaaa.

Mu Chen sucked in a mouthful of air as he fixed his cold gaze towards Ji Xuan as he faintly smiled. However, his smile seemed like there was a blade hidden in his smile, "It's your turn to be receiving attacks from me."

"Lesser Divine Art - Divine Wheel of the Heavenly Wood!"

Mu Chen's eyes suddenly turned cold as his hand seals changed. The dark-green ocean beneath his feet soared up to the sky in an instant as it gathered at a rapid speed. Thereafter, a wooden light wheel with the size of a few thousand feet started to form under the countless startled gaze.

wheel quietly hovered above Mu Chen's head. Although the dark-greenish color made it look as if it was made of wood, it was emitting an unstoppable fluctuation, seems like a deity conducting divine punishment!

The faces of everyone turned heavy. Even those as strong as Wu Ling,

Wen Busheng, Liu Qingyun and various pinnacle experts of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament had slightly narrowed their eyes.

The Divine Wheel of the Heavenly Wood that was created my Mu Chen was a genuine Lesser Divine Art. Adding on to the energy that it had absorbed from the Divine Wooden Scripture and the fact that these two Divine Arts were of the same origin, the of this Lesser Divine Art was much more powerful to all the other times that Mu Chen had used it due to the fact that the two Divine Arts complemented each other.

Faced with this sort of fearsome attack, even an expert that had stepped into the Third Grade Spirit Disaster would be afraid.

"He truly is not simple, to possess such means." Xue Tianhe slowly said as he stared at the scene. Even he could sense danger from Mu Chen's attack. That fellow was indeed able to match evenly with Ji Xuan and stand out from the masses.

Up in the sky, the smile that was hung on Ji Xuan's face slowly faded. He stared at Mu Chen as he clenched both of his fists, causing the white Spiritual Energy around him to grow stronger. Clearly, he sensed how powerful Mu Chen's attack was.

"Go!"

Mu Chen finally extended a slender finger under the countless startled gaze pointing down, his chilling voice resounded.

Buzzzzzz!

Following the action of Mu Chen pointing his finger down, the colossal and antique wheel started to slowly spin as the rotation quickly accelerated at a rapid speed.

Buzzz! Buzzzzzz!

The divine wheel turned into a dark-green arc as ear-piercing buzzes were emitted from it. Even the space had traces of being sliced on the region of the blade.

Wooooooooosh!

The divine wheel flew out when the rotation had reached its limits.

Boom!

The speed of the divine wheel was indescribable, looking like it had teleported. In a flash, it pierced through the space as it appeared barely three hundred meters away from Ji Xuan.

"Sacred Light Divine Art - Sacred Light Guardian!"

Ji Xuan's face turned heavier as his hand seals changed, following a bark that resounded.

Wooooooooosh!

A sacred light that engulfed the heavens and earth surged forth from his body as it expanded around his surroundings at an astonishing speed. In the blink of an eye, it had taken the form of a colossal sacred light image. That image had spread out its wings as it protected Ji Xuan.

Boom!

When the sacred light image made its appearance, the divine wheel had also suddenly swept forth. It seemed like a collision from a meteorite as it clashed against the colossal wings.

Indescribable light exploded as it covered even the sun. This entire region was covered in a dazzling light that made others find it hard to even open their eyes.

Rumble!

The intense dazzling light only lasted for a few breath's time, before everyone could sense a fearsome Spiritual Energy tornado that swept out.

Boom! Boom!

The ground cracked along with the surrounding mountain peaks being sliced off...

Countless people that were closer flew away from the shock. Only several experts who possessed decent strength could barely stabilize their bodies. However, a smear of shock was on their faces.

The clash was simply too startling.

The shock wave of the Spiritual Energy that wreaked havoc lasted for a few minutes, before gradually dying down. When the heavens and the earth had its serenity restored, a complete disorder appeared before everyone. The sight of the crack that was roughly ten thousand feet wide made the eyes of those looking at it twitch.

Rustle!

However, their lines-of-sight only stopped on the ground for an instant, before directing their gazes up.

On the horizon, stood two figures. However, the both of them were sent flying thousands of meters apart. The colossal sacred light image around Ji Xuan was also dissipating before his figure was revealed to everyone.

More than half of his clothes were torn apart, his face was dark as he viciously stared at Mu Chen's eyes.

"He blocked it."

When everyone saw Ji Xuan's current state, they could not help exclaiming. At the same time, they felt fear in their hearts. Ji Xuan was simply too formidable. Even when he was faced with such a fearsome attack from Mu Chen, he could still defend himself.

However, the reason why Ji Xuan was able to defend himself was due to the fact that he grasped a Divine Art. Furthermore, it was a defensive-type Divine Art. Otherwise, he would definitely be wounded.

Nevertheless, Ji Xuan was able to defend himself from Mu Chen's attack.

"Formidable."

Ji Xuan stared at the traces of blood on his arm as he directed his dark gaze towards Mu Chen. He eerily smiled. "You are indeed formidable. To be able to unleash an attack of this level with your cultivation at Spiritual Energy Disaster."

"However... I still have to tell you with regret that it was still impossible for you to harm me, even if you have mastered a Divine Art!"

"And now, what other moves do you have?"

When he spoke to the end, Ji Xuan's gaze was thoroughly filled with a chill.

Mu Chen's black pupils were looking at Ji Xuan in calm. Shortly after, a peculiar smile surfaced on his handsome face as he lightly said, "It's still too early for you to rejoice."

Hearing his words, Ji Xuan's pupils instantly narrowed as he sensed something. He raised his head and saw that after the layers of white clouds were torn apart, black thunderclouds appeared that were hidden behind the layers of white clouds. The black lightning in the thunderclouds looked like a colossal dragon as it rolled, emitting destructive power.

At this instant, a voice quietly rang out in Mu Chen's heart.

"Lightning Controlling Art!"

Chapter 584: Concealed Trump Cards

Rumble!

A huge sound rang out, sounds of enraged lightning instantly resounded between this heaven and earth. The roar made even the sky tremble in that instant.

Black thunderclouds were stacked in the sky as a colossal black lightning that looked like a black dragon was wiggling in the thunderclouds, emitting ripples of destruction.

Everyone was dumbfounded by the sudden scene. Even those as powerful as Wu Ling, Xue Tianhe, and Liu Qingxun were shocked since they did not sense any peculiar fluctuations earlier.

"What a sly method."

Liu Qingyun spoke with a heavy voice. At this instant, he finally understood what was going on. The divine wheel that Mu Chen had used wasn't his final move. The true ultimate technique was the lightning that was hidden behind the divine wheel.

Mu Chen used the divine wheel to cover it up. When he was drawing in the boiling Spiritual Energy between this heaven and earth, he secretly covered up this ultimate technique of his.

"What a deep scheme." Wu Ling faintly sighed. The previous attack was already so frightening. However, Mu Chen was not complacent by it and had hidden a bigger ultimate technique behind his first...

Facing the revealed and hidden twin attack, even if someone had managed to withstand the first one, it would be impossible to defend against the second that was hidden away.

Rumble!

Just when everyone was shocked at the appearance of the thunderclouds, Mu Chen's cold gaze was already fixed onto Ji Xuan, whose expression was a little ugly at the moment.

"Lightning Controlling Art - Go!"

Without any superfluous words, his hand seals changed as he drew down his slender fingers.

Boom!

The black thunderclouds were instantly torn apart as a loud roar resounded across this horizon. When everyone raised their heads, the black lightning looked as if it was conducting lightning judgment as the colossal black lightning fell.

Tsssssssssssi.

The speed of the falling lightning was so extremely fast that it was impossible to avoid. In the places that the lightning had swept past, space was distorted and looked like a glass that was about to shatter at any moment.

Because the black pillar of lightning had extremely fast speed, it had appeared above Ji Xuan in a flash. Currently, the amount of Spiritual Energy around Ji Xuan was frozen still. Because he had to defend himself against the Divine Wheel of the Heavenly Wood from Mu Chen earlier, he had to circulate the Spiritual Energy within his body, which caused it to be sluggish for an instant.

Furthermore, when Mu Chen's attack came, it was the exact moment that the Spiritual Energy within Ji Xuan's body was unable to restore back to its peak.

All of this could be said as invulnerable.

This attack was the true ultimate move that Mu Chen had been brewing!

The faces of everyone froze at the sight as they stared at Ji Xuan, who was engulfed by the black lightning pillar. After dominating the Numero Uno slot for so long and having not been defeated before, was he going to lose today?

Faced with the attack that Mu Chen had perfectly grasped the chance to use, even someone like Ji Xuan had to be defeated, right?

Bang!

Under the countless gazes that had all sorts of moods, the black pillar of lightning finally fell as it hit Ji Xuan, completely engulfing his body.

The black pillar of lightning fell from the sky as if it was a pillar that could prop up the sky as it pierced the heavens and earth. It could clearly be seen from anywhere within a fifty-meter radius.

Liiiiiiiii!

Just when the black lightning pillar shot at the location where Ji Xuan was at, a primordial bird's cry rang throughout this region.

That cry was extremely ancient, with an indescribable ferocity. As if a primordial beast was waking up.

Boom! Boom!

Spiritual Energy in this region exploded from the bird's cry. Sound waves that could be seen with the naked-eye swept out, causing the surrounding space of a few hundred meters to have traces of distortion and was twisting.

Mu Chen's figure trembled as he flew away. His feet were sliding on the sky for a thousand meters before he was able to stabilize himself.

When he managed to stabilize his figure, his facial expression was heavy. His eyes were fixed on the black lightning. Clearly, the fearsome cry originated from that location.

"What is that...?" Mu Chen's brows were furrowed as his palm lightly touched the Mustard Seed Bracelet. When the primordial cry rang out, he sensed that the black egg that was the Nine Netherbird had jolted a little.

All the eyes in this region were looking at the black pillar of lightning. Evidently, the bizarre change-of-event earlier had attracted their attention.

Under the countless gazes, the black pillar slowly dissipated as the lightning scattered. We the lightning pillar started to dissipate, a human figure that was faintly discernible appeared in their eyes.

Everyone widened their eyes in that instant, whereas Mu Chen's eyes

narrowed.

Lightning dissipated as Ji Xuan's figure appeared before everyone's eyes. However, going against everyone's expectations, there wasn't any injury on his body.

His current state was the same as before, not even his skin was charred by the lightning. Under that fearful attack, he was actually unharmed!

"How is that possible?!" Xu Huang exclaimed as his face drastically changed, along with the rest.

Faced against Mu Chen's attack that was unleashed at a perfect timing, even a Third Grade Spirit Disaster would have to pay the price from it. But, right now, how was Ji Xuan still fine?

Luo Li's curved eyebrows slightly knitted together as she became submerged in her thoughts. Thereafter, she gave a glance at Wen Qingxuan and saw the smear of shock that flashed through the latter's eyes.

"That primordial cry from before..." Luo Li said softly.

"It seems to be similar to the super Spiritual Beast Ranked 8th on the Myriad Beast Record, the Primordial Skydragon Hawk..." Wen Qingxuan lightly nodded her head as she continued, "But I have no idea how Ji Xuan was able to unleash that cry. Did he have any treasures in his possession that were linked to the Primordial Skydragon Hawk?"

Luo Li faintly shook her head. Ji Xuan was indeed, someone hard to deal with. She originally thought that Mu Chen's plan was perfect, but who could have expected that it was countered at the crucial time?

An uproar exploded in this region. Everyone was startled by the fact that Ji Xuan was unharmed. At the same time, they could not help feeling respect in their hearts. This fellow that was the Numero Uno of the point rankings was indeed, too ferocious to the point that even such an attack could not do anything against him. In the entire Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, who else could rival him?

Whereas experts on the level of Wu Ling, Wen Busheng, Xue Tianhe, Liu

Qingfun and Fang Yun have a heavy expression as their eyes flickered when they looked at Ji Xuan.

Up in the sky, Mu Chen was also closely staring at Ji Xuan. There wasn't any expression on his face. His attack that should have guaranteed his victory was actually mysteriously countered. This made the degree of danger he had for Ji Xuan in his heart rise.

Far away, Ji Xuan was also standing in the sky. Although he had managed to defend himself against Mu Chen's fearful attack, he wasn't pleased, from the look of his face, as a dark killing intent filled his eyes as he stared at Mu Chen.

"Mu Chen, you have indeed surprised me!" Ji Xuan's eerie voice was filled with killing intent as if it could pierce through the clouds in the sky.

Right now, he clearly wished he could tear Mu Chen to pieces.

Just to deal with Mu Chen, he had revealed too much of his trump cards. Earlier, he nearly revealed the trump card that he had hidden the deepest.

Before the finals, revealing too much of his trump card wasn't good news for Ji Xuan. After all, aside from Mu Chen, there were many other pinnacle experts in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament that were also not easy to deal with.

Especially Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan... the level of danger he had for the two girls wasn't any inferior to Mu Chen.

If he revealed too much of his trump cards, the danger that he would face in the finals would be greater.

Originally, he intended to get rid of Mu Chen while his Spiritual Energy cultivation was still lacking. But who could have expected that Mu Chen could confront him to such a degree...?

Mu Chen looked at Ji Xuan, whose eyes were filled with killing intent, as he laughed, "You have surprised me quite a bit as well. Seems like you are still hiding your trump cards. Why don't you use them and see if you can get rid of me?"

Ji Xuan's pupils narrowed as his killing intent spiked.

Luo Li felt the violent killing intent coming from Ji Xuan as she tightly gripped her Luo God Sword, a chill flowing in her eyes. Wen Qingxuan, who stood by her side, had also tensed her body.

This entire region seemed as if it was engulfed in Ji Xuan's violent killing intent as everyone was shocked to the point that they could not speak.

Mu Chen's gaze was calm as he looked at Ji Xuan, who looked a little terrifying. After a long time, he suddenly lightly smiled. "Stop showing a strong front. Since you no longer dare to attack, let's call it off."

The corner of Ji Xuan's mouth twitched as he loosened his fist.

He knew that it was impossible for this match to carry on unless they were going to risk revealing all of their trump cards. If that was the case, it would definitely not be good news for them in the finals.

In addition, he understood that Mu Chen wasn't an easy opponent from their battle earlier. Although he had his trump cards, he could not guarantee that Mu Chen had used all of his trump cards as well. If he still hid some of his cards, the final result would be the two of them suffering and neither side wins. Thus, it was not good news for Ji Xuan.

He could guarantee that the instant he was injured, no one would give him a chance to make a comeback, be it his opponent or his so-called 'alliance mates'.

Thus, he could no longer continue this battle anymore.

The terrifying killing intent that was emerging from Ji Xuan withdrew at a rapid speed. When the pressure in this heaven and earth dissipated, everyone felt inwardly relieved.

Only those pinnacle experts were somewhat disappointed as their gazes flickered.

Ji Xuan deeply glanced at Mu Chen before turning around and left. At the same time, his eerie voice rang out between this heaven and earth.

"Mu Chen, I will let you taste thorough defeat in the finals. Enjoy your

last moments."

Chapter 585: End of show, for the time being

As Ji Xuan's team left, his cold voice that contained dense killing intent still echoed in this region for a long time.

Under that dense killing intent, countless teams in this region were shocked without words as they exchanged looks.

Although the current scene seemed as if Ji Xuan was forced to retreat, no one thought that he looked miserable, since they could all feel that Ji Xuan had yet to use his true strength.

The primordial hawk cry earlier was the best proof. As everyone knew how powerful Mu Chen's black lightning was, Ji Xuan was still able to withstand it unharmed...

The trump card that Ji Xuan had concealed was clearly very fearsome.

But, under the current situation, it was a shackle for him not being able to unleash his trump cards without any worries, since his opponent was likewise not a fish that laid on the chopping board.

Although Mu Chen's strength only appeared to be Spiritual Energy Disaster, his fighting power was something that could heavily change the expression of any expert here and cautiously deal with them.

Naturally, an opponent like Mu Chen was someone that even the monstrous Ji Xuan would have to fear a little, fearing for a tragic battle.

If that was the case, even if he had managed to defeat Mu Chen, he still had to pay a huge price for it. When it comes down to that, he still had to deal with the enraged Luo Li and the Wen Qingxuan, whose stances were unknown.

Facing the two absolute beauties, even Ji Xuan was not confident that he could win. Unless if he were to risk it all...

Under that circumstances, Ji Xuan had no choice but to retreat.

Although Ji Xuan had retreated, everyone knew that this confrontation

had not ended yet. It was just pushed back a little... because Ji Xuan was waiting, waiting for the finals.

At the finals, he would be able to reveal all of his trump cards without any fear.

At that time, it was another story if Mu Chen would still make Ji Xuan afraid...

When that time comes, it would definitely be a ferocious battle.

Up in the sky, Mu Chen was calmly looking at Ji Xuan as he departed. He slowly eased his tense body as a faint smear of paleness flinted across his face.

It was a great exhaustion for him to execute three Divine Arts, the Divine Wheel of the Heavenly Wood, Divine Wood Scripture, as well as the Lightning Controlling Art, with his cultivation at Spiritual Energy Disaster.

It was also fortunate that he was able to reach Spiritual Energy Disaster, allowing the Spiritual Energy within his body to grow by several times. If he was still at the Human Body Disaster, it would definitely be impossible for him to achieve such a feat.

He directed his sight towards the direction that Ji Xuan left with a calm expression. However, hints of sharpness were surging in the depth of his eyes.

The confrontation could be considered a little as having a strong start, but a weak finish. However, it had also allowed him to know how powerful Ji Xuan was. This opponent of the past had become so deep and unpredictable now.

"What a formidable opponent."

Mu Chen slowly clenched his fist as he muttered to himself, "Spiritual Energy Disaster is still insufficient..."

During their confrontation, Mu Chen could feel that Ji Xuan had hidden many things. The depth of his strength shouldn't be at this level. Thus, it

made Mu Chen feel for the first time that his strength was still insufficient, especially his Spiritual Energy. Compared to Ji Xuan, who was at the Third Grade Spirit Disaster, he was still too inferior.

Although he could shorten the distance with his physical body, Spiritual Energy was the most crucial. If he wished to unleash more powerful trump cards, he would require the larger support of Spiritual Energy.

Thus, if he wished to thoroughly defeat Ji Xuan, he would definitely have to raise his strength.

Mu Chen inhaled a mouthful of air as he suppressed the waves in his heart as he softly muttered, "The Finals... it should be very soon. Ji Xuan, let us unleash all of our trump cards at that time and let us see who will have the last laugh."

The silence in this region lasted for a long time. The torrential killing intent had also thoroughly dissipated, allowing all the powerful teams to be relieved.

They exchanged looks as they strangely looked at Mu Chen, who was up in the sky. Some teams had already started to leave. As the battle had already ended, there was no reason for them to remain any longer, in case they would be targeted by the other powerful teams.

Having this thought, whooshing sounds rang out in the sky as the other teams left in an orderly manner. Even when they left, they maintained their guard to the highest level.

In just a few minutes, this region that had gathered countless teams had emptied out, leaving behind the destruction and the broken mountain peaks as proof that a huge battle had occurred in this location.

"Haha, you're indeed formidable for someone that is fancied by the next Empress of the Luo God Clan." Xue Tianhe said as he smiled towards Mu Chen.

Mu Chen faintly glanced at Xue Tianhe as he replied, "Your Blood God Clan must be bored to have traveled such a distance just to participate in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament."

"Even the next Empress of the Luo God Clan is here, there's nothing odd of us being here."

Xue Tianhe then directed his gaze towards Luo Li as a chill flashed across his scarlet pupils. He pursed up his lips as he smiled, "She's the hope of the Luo God Clan now. If I could kill her, the Luo God Clan would be thoroughly hopeless..."

As he spoke, Mu Chen's gaze turned extremely terrifying. The gaze that he had used to look at Ji Xuan earlier was vastly incomparable to his current one as it had made Xue Tianhe narrow his eyes.

"Then I can only slaughter your trash here."

A savage smile surfaced on Mu Chen's charming face. A red light flashed across his pupils as torrential killing intent spread out.

The startling killing intent that was suddenly unleashed by Mu Chen made everyone here alarmed. They involuntarily shifted their gazes towards Xue Tianhe's party. Clearly, they were unaware of how Xue Tianhe's party suddenly provoked Mu Chen to such a degree.

Luo Li's figure moved as she appeared beside Mu Chen. Her crystal-clear pupils were exceptionally cold at this moment as her hand that was gripping her Luo God Sword had tiny tremblings as a sword cry rang out.

Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong, Su Xuan and the rest below were also fixating their eyes on Xue Tianhe's party.

Wen Qingxuan swept a gaze at Xue Tianhe as she softly snorted. A golden warspear appeared in her hand as it was inclined, pointing downwards. The golden battle armor wrapped around her as it flaunted her startling figure.

When Xue Tianhe saw the reaction that the other party had from his words, he narrowed his eyes as he looked at Liu Qingxun and Fang Yun.

"Haha."

When Liu Qingxun and Fang Yun saw Xue Tianhe's gaze, they smiled. However, they did not have any intentions to help as they tapped their feet

on the air and flew away.

Although they were in alliance with Ji Xuan, they did not have much of a relationship with Xue Tianhe. Thus, it was impossible for them to fight with Mu Chen just for Xue Tianhe.

Especially when Mu Chen had revealed his strength that could cause even them to feel fear.

After all, entering the finals with their strength was a certainty. Therefore, they did not want to offend Mu Chen anymore right now.

Mu Chen gave a look at Liu Qingxun and his group, but he did not obstruct them. At this point in time, he did not wish to fight with those top teams, since it would only push them closer to Ji Xuan.

When Xue Tianhe saw Liu Qingyun and his group leave, his gaze was dark as he issued a cold snort. He tapped his feet on the air as a blood river swept out, engulfing him and his team.

"I'll let you guys enjoy this for now. I will not allow any of you to smile in the finals."

Xue Tianhe's cold voice resounded as the blood river exploded into a bloody light as it flew away, disappearing in the blink of an eye.

Although he wanted to deal with Luo Li, the other party's formation was too powerful. If they were to fight in that situation, they would definitely lose. Thus, Xue Tianhe could only sullenly escape with his team.

Mu Chen did not obstruct Xue Tianhe's party as they left since he knew that this wasn't the right time yet.

"If I come across them in the finals, they can dream of returning to the Blood God Clan!" Mu Chen's eyes were filled with killing intent. Although it would be a little troublesome to kill here, the rules would be gone in the finals.

Clearly, he couldn't wish harder to slaughter the Blood God Clan that had their eyes on Luo Li.

Luo Li turned her head as her cold gaze rapidly turned gentle. Her rosy

lips lightly rose as she looked extremely charming with her smile.

"Why are you so angry?" Luo Li slightly tilted her head. Looking at Mu Chen, there were hints of a smile in her crystal-clear eyes.

It must be because of the shocking killing intent that had suddenly surged out from Mu Chen that made her in a good mood.

"Those bastards are putting their ideas on my wife, how can I not be angry?" Mu Chen snorted.

"Nonsense, who is your wife?" Luo Li's face was red as she looked at Mu Chen, looking angry and shy at the same time.

Mu Chen chuckled as his heart was stirred by the rare looks of Luo Li being shy and he couldn't help extending his hand, grabbing the shy girl's hand into his.

Luo Li was slightly startled. After all, there were too many people present here and on the spot, she struggled a little. But when she saw the hints of paleness hidden on Mu Chen's face, she stopped her struggle as she bit down on her lips, staring at the direction that Ji Xuan left with a cold gaze.

"Cough."

A dry cough suddenly resounded. When Mu Chen raised his head, he saw Wu Ling smiling as he appeared before him. Behind Wu Ling, stood a voluptuous girl wearing a fresh red long dress that did not have any expression on her face. However, her eyes were faintly staring at him.

Chapter 586: The Unfathomable Ji Xuan

"Brother Wu Ling, Brother Wen."

Mu Chen stared at the decent-looking youths before him as he smiled as he cupped his hands towards Wu Ling as well as Wen Busheng next to him. "I have to thank the both of you this time."

The formation of the two sides was important in this fight with Ji Xuan. If it wasn't for the fact that he had managed to pull Wu Ling and Wen Busheng to his side, the one that would be fighting today would not have been Ji Xuan alone, but his entire alliance.

The eyes of that scheming fellow were extremely vicious. The instant he felt that he could deal with Mu Chen if all of them had joined hands together, he would definitely not hesitate.

However, the appearance of Wu Ling and Wen Busheng had strengthened the formation of Mu Chen's party. This made Ji Xuan's alliance know that even if all of them had attacked, there wouldn't be any benefits today. Thus, those fellows chose to watch from the side as they did not see any advantages.

When Wu Ling heard Mu Chen's words, he smiled, "Brother Mu is being too polite. If it wasn't for Yingying adding fuel to the fire, I would also hesitate a little."

Mu Chen was a little flabbergasted as he looked at Wu Yingying. Clearly, he never thought that this girl, who had prejudice of him, would choose to help him.

When Wu Yingying saw his gaze, she snorted in response.

"Thanks." Mu Chen sincerely thanked her.

Wu Yingying cast her lips aside. Just when she wanted to mock him out of habit, a smear of redness involuntarily flushed across her face when she saw the gentle smile on Mu Chen's face as she swallowed her words and changed them, "That Ji Xuan isn't a good guy as well. But if we allow him to carry on pulling people to his side, it will not be advantageous to us."

"I was thinking for my Martial Spiritual Academy, I was not trying to help a lecher like you." Wu Yingying snorted as she pridefully raised her chin.

Mu Chen coughed as he was a little embarrassed by the name that Wu Yingying was calling him, especially when Wu Ling's suspicious gaze was looking at his direction.

Wu Yingying blushed, even more, when she realized her words as she turned her head away in guilt, not daring to look at her own brother.

"We did nothing to help. Brother Mu is truly hiding deep ability, truly worthy of being the Blood Calamity of the Spiritual Road." Wen Busheng laughed as he looked at Mu Chen with interest.

"Brother Wen is not simple as well." Mu Chen smiled in response as he swept his gaze on Wen Busheng. Thereafter, his gaze stopped at the latter's fair right hand. That hand was exceptionally perfect as it was glittering like a gem, flickering with faint luster. Mu Chen could sense dangerous ripples from his right hand.

"I'm just lucky." Wen Busheng smiled as he covered his right hand with his sleeve and did not explain much. Mu Chen also wasn't bothered by it as everyone had their own secrets.

"Perhaps the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament will enter the finale in the remaining time left." Wu Ling looked at Mu Chen as he said, "In this period of time, perhaps there might be countless powerful teams targeting the Top 8 in the rankings. We can't be certain that Ji Xuan doesn't have any plots in his retreat this time. Thus, I feel that we can work closer together in the remaining time left."

Wen Busheng nodded his head in agreement. Their reveal this time had angered Ji Xuan. If Ji Xuan plans to deal with them, it would definitely be troublesome for them.

Although they weren't any pushovers, they did not wish to confront with the monstrous Ji Xuan at this timing.

Mu Chen nodded his head as well, it was always better to have a friend.

Seeing as no one had any disagreements, Wu Ling smiled as he took out three dark-red jade pendants with light circulating on their surfaces. "This is the Messaging Jade that I have obtained from a ruin. If anyone of you encounters trouble, all you have to do is activate it and the two other jade pendants will be able to sense it."

"Furthermore, when we are ready, we can also use it as a signal to burn the Academy Plaques to start the finals."

To start the finals, half of the Top 16 teams have to burn their Academy Plaques. The moment this requirement is fulfilled, the Top 8 teams would then enter the finals.

Mu Chen took a glance at Wen Qingxuan, who was behind him, as the two of them nodded their heads, before taking a jade pendant from Wu Ling, while Wen Busheng took the other.

"Haha, today's event can be considered an end. We no longer have any reasons to stay here."

Seeing as the agreement was made, Wu Ling casually laughed as he made a little chat before bidding his farewell, leading Wu Yingying, whose face was still a little red, as they left.

After Wu Ling had left, Wen Busheng also bid farewell as he left.

Staring at their leaving figures, Mu Chen felt relieved. The paleness that he had been suppressing on his face spread out as his figure staggered a little involuntarily.

When his body staggered, Luo Li quickly supported Mu Chen's arm. When Wen Qingxuan saw Luo Li's reaction, she quietly withdrew her hand that was extending forth. A charming smile surfaced on her face as she teased, "So you are just forcefully holding yourself up."

"Truly Ji Xuan." Mu Chen said with a soft voice as he continued, "If the battle went on, it would be tough to end it."

He had exhausted too much of his Spiritual Energy. If they were to carry on fighting, he would have to start fighting for his life. After all, Ji Xuan was powerful.

"You don't have to undervalue yourself. Ji Xuan didn't look that good in your battle as well since he was forced to reveal some of his hidden cards during the last attack. Otherwise..." Wen Qingxuan replied.

Luo Li nodded her head at Wen Qingxuan's words. The two earth-shattering attacks from Mu Chen could be called perfect. One was revealed, while the other was hidden away, the timing was excellent as well. If it wasn't for that primordial hawk's cry, Ji Xuan would definitely be heavily injured.

"Ji Xuan had concealed his genuine trump card." Mu Chen said slowly as his black pupils flickered with a chill. He had heard the primordial hawk's cry as well, sensing an indescribable danger coming from it at the same time. The danger that he felt far surpassed all those he had faced so far in his generation.

Luo Li pondered for a brief moment, before speaking up, "If I am not wrong, there's a high chance that the cry was from the Primordial Skydragon Hawk, Ranked 8 of the Myriad Beast Record."

"Primordial Skydragon Hawk?"

Mu Chen narrowed his eyes at Luo Li's words as his gaze was a little shaken. No wonder there were movements from the egg of the Nine Netherbird. So that hawk cry actually had such a shocking origin.

The Primordial Skydragon Hawk was Ranked 8 of the Myriad Beast Record, three ranks higher compared to the Nine Netherbird. In the Great Thousand World, the Primordial Skydragon Hawk possessed resounding fame. It was a powerful beast compared to the rest. Even Sovereign Realm experts would be afraid to provoke it.

"Could it be that Ji Xuan had ingested the Primordial Skydragon Hawk's Soul Essence in the past?" Mu Chen muttered to himself as his gaze flickered.

In the Spirit Stage of the Spiritual Energy cultivation path, one had the ability to ingest the Soul Essence of a Spiritual Beast. However, there was a limit to the Soul Essence. After all, when one gets stronger, the Soul Essence that one had refined before would gradually lose its effect. Thus,

many people who had refined Soul Essences have all lost their effect when they grew stronger.

However, it wasn't an absolute situation... when the Soul Essence that one had refined was powerful to an extent, the power would still be present, becoming a powerful method for cultivators.

Take Mu Chen's Nine Netherbird for example...

If Ji Xuan possessed that sort of strength, he should have refined a powerful Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence when he was in Spirit Stage. For example... the powerful Primordial Skydragon Hawk.

Naturally, with his strength at Spirit Stage, it was absolutely impossible for him to refine a Primordial Skydragon Hawk with his own strength, just like how it was impossible for Mu Chen to refine the Nine Netherbird. Thus, there should be a powerful expert that had aided him.

Ji Xuan's background must be rather complicated.

"That's highly possible." Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan nodded their heads with heavy expressions. If that was the case, then the difficulty of handling Ji Xuan would without a doubt increase.

Mu Chen breathed out a mouthful of air as his gaze became a little shaken. However, there wasn't any fear in his eyes. After all, even if Ji Xuan possessed the Soul Essence of the Primordial Skydragon Hawk, he possessed the power of Nine Netherbird as well.

Furthermore, he had a Bloodlink Bond with the Nine Netherbird, the both of them were similar to a single body. So Mu Chen would be more perfect at fusing with the power of the Nine Netherbird.

Certainly, the Primordial Skydragon Hawk was ranked higher compared to the Nine Netherbird. However, that doesn't mean that it was more powerful compared to the Nine Netherbird. After all, when Spiritual Beasts reached that level, it would be hard for them to differentiate their levels when they fight.

The most crucial point was that Nine Nether... was no longer a Spiritual Beast as she had successfully evolved into the Nine Netherworld Bird.

Rising to the levels of Divine Beasts. The instant she awakens, she would possess strength comparable to Sovereign Realm!

"How interesting."

Mu Chen pursed his lips as he smiled. He looked at the direction that Ji Xuan had left as a chill flickered in his eyes, before turning around and left for the opposite direction with a wave of his hand.

Seeing his action from below, Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong and the rest followed behind him.

Ji Xuan, let us see who will have the stronger trump card in the upcoming finals.

No matter what... I will beat you this time!

Let the grudges from the Spiritual Road end once and for all in the finals!

Chapter 587: Fighting for Number one

The battle between Mu Chen and Ji Xuan had spread throughout the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament in a few days. Everyone was aware of the astonishing battle between the two powerful figures.

What made others feel even more astonished was the fact that Ji Xuan, who held the Numero Uno of the point rankings for a long time had actually retreated from the fight, as the fame possessed by both parties were not equal.

Although Ji Xuan did not lose the battle as he retreated, it did show the fear he had for Mu Chen had grown to the extent that he would have to be cautious to deal with Mu Chen, even if he had to lose some of his fame.

Thus, Mu Chen's fame grew to a frightening extent in just a few days time. So much so that he was famed to the point that he could rival Ji Xuan.

At this moment, every single team was well-aware of Mu Chen's name as it was like thunder piercing the ears.

Even if the battle between Mu Chen and Ji Xuan sparked many discussions, the ripple caused by the battle started to quickly die down as the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament entered the most chaotic stage.

There wasn't an exact time for the tournament to end, but as long as eight of the Academy Plaques of the Top 16 were ignited, the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament would enter into the final stage. Because of that, everyone could vaguely feel that the final stage would be approaching soon.

The elimination rate of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament was too harsh. Countless teams had participated, those that could successfully ascend to the next stage were only eight teams.

That sort of elimination rate was simply too frightening.

That was precisely the reason why this period was the most chaotic moment of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament. The eyes of many

teams had turned red in order to fight for points.

The result of this was endless chaotic battles to the point that every single spot of this Shattered Continent's central region had battles breaking out.

All the capable teams had their eyes redden as they hunted for prey. At the same time, without their knowledge, they were already preyed on by teams that were stronger than them when they were searching for prey...

In this period of time, there wasn't a definite classification between the hunters and the hunted.

As the chaotic battles spread throughout the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, there were drastic changes to the Top 16 spots as well. The points were crazily jumping every single moment...

Right now, those in the Top 8 were all familiar teams.

Rank 1, Saint Spiritual Academy - Captain Ji Xuan. [108,000 points]

Rank 2, Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy - Captain Wen Qingxuan. [90,000 points]

Rank 3, Martial Spiritual Academy - Captain Wu Ling. [83,000 points]

Rank 5, Blood Spiritual Academy - Captain Xue Tianhe. [70,000 points]

Rank 6, Nine Cauldrons Spiritual Academy - Captain Fang Yun. [65,000 points]

Rank 7, Undefeated Spiritual Academy - Captain Wen Busheng. [62,000 points]

Rank 8, Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy - Captain Mu Chen. [60,000 points]

...

The current Top 8 were all occupied by the best eight teams in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament. Behind the Top 8, there were teams frantically dashing towards the dividing line. However, they were short-lived as they were stunningly buried by the other dark horses and were

reduced to merely mediocre.

Shen Cangsheng's team managed to reach Rank 10. However, it was tough for them to climb further as they did not possess any qualification to go into the Top 8, even from the fact that the strength of their team was pretty strong. After all, there were too many powerful teams suddenly emerging in this period of time.

If it wasn't for the fact that they had been together with Mu Chen, their outcome would also be being buried by the other dark horses.

The entire Great Spiritual Academy Tournament carried on in the madness. Even if many teams knew that their efforts would all be in vain, they refused to give up so easily...

Flames of war expanded throughout the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament.

...

Boom!

Violent Spiritual Energy soared up into the sky in these plains as more than ten human figures charged towards the slender figure with their eyes reddened, unleashing their powerful Spiritual Energy attacks as they burst forth in waves.

Boom!

However, there wasn't any effect from their attacks. That slender figure merely took a step forth and there was dark lightning that seemingly flew from his body.

Brilliant lightning spread out, sending the dozen or more figures flying back from the impact with blood spurting from their mouths. At the same time, those dozen or so figures drew marks of over a hundred meters in length on the ground.

Lightning dissipated as a charming face of a youth was revealed. Aside from Mu Chen, who else could it be? He was smiling as he looked at those unfortunate fellows. He made a gripping gesture as three Academy Plaque

flew from their sleeves into his hand.

Without batting an eye, he took the points as he stared at his Academy Plaque that had thousands of additional points as he helplessly flung the corner of his lips to the side. He flicked his fingers as he threw back the three Academy Plaques.

He turned around after dealing with those fellows, there was a similar battle as well. Luo Li, Wen Qingxuan and the rest were surrounded by a dozen or more teams. Although the other party had the advantage in numbers, the outcome was close to being one-sided.

Although these teams that were preyed upon by Mu Chen's group had decent strength, it was not on the level comparable to his. Thus, the battle only lasted for a few minutes before it ended.

Luo Li, Wen Qingxuan and the rest divided the Academy Plaques and obtained points.

"That fella Ji Xuan is pretty quick in his actions."

Wen Qingxuan approached as she gave a glance to her Academy Plaque with her brows narrowed. There was an increment of over 20,000 points for Ji Xuan, his speed of increasing his points was faster compared to them.

Shen Cangsheng and his team looked at the points possessed by the Numero Uno of the point rankings as they involuntarily sighed. That frightening amount of points was something that could make those looking at it feel their scalp tingling.

Mu Chen looked at Ji Xuan's name for a long time, before smiling and said, "No worries, we'll work harder than."

Wen Qingxuan shifted her charming gaze towards Mu Chen as she hesitated for a brief moment. "Hey, I will not be taking the biggest share in our collaboration anymore."

"Hmm?" Mu Chen was startled by her words.

"I'm well-aware that you are trying to return me the Numero Uno. But I

feel that the points are already sufficient. Right now, your main objective is to surpass him." Wen Qingxuan responded as her fine fingers pointed at the Numero Uno on the Academy Plaque.

During this period, Mu Chen had given the majority share of the points that they had obtained from assaulting the other teams to Wen Qingxuan. Whereas he only obtained a sufficient amount to maintain at Rank 8.

"Right now, the Numero Uno doesn't mean much." Mu Chen spoke indifferently.

When Wen Qingxuan saw how indifferent Mu Chen was, she was a little furious as she refused him, "Since you are planning to fight with Ji Xuan, you shouldn't be so passive about it. Even if the point rankings don't have much meaning behind it right now, are you okay with him surpasses you by that much? Even if you are okay with it, I... I'm not."

Mu Chen was a little astonished as he looked at Wen Qingxuan, muttering how weird she was. Here, he was trying his best to push her up to Numero Uno and she was unhappy because of it?

Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong exchanged a glance as they spoke out as well, "Captain Wen Qingxuan is right in her words. If you are not planning to fight with Ji Xuan for real, then it doesn't matter if his points surpassed us by this much. But since the fight has already started, then you should suppress the other party with your full strength."

"Perhaps you are not concerned about the points. But who knows if Ji Xuan and his team are mocking you right now seeing your points at Rank 8..."

Seeing as they were taking it so seriously, Mu Chen's mood changed as well as he hesitated for a brief moment, before looking at Luo Li and sought her opinion. "What do you think?"

"I trust in your decisions."

Luo Li shallowly smiled as she held Mu Chen's hand with her ice-cold hands and said with a soft tone, "But, Mu Chen, I have always considered you to be more outstanding than him."

"Do you remember what you had said to me back in the Spiritual Road?"

Luo Li's crystal-clear pupils were looking at Mu Chen as she smiled, "You told me at that time that... you will bring me to stand in the brightest spot in the Spiritual Road."

Her words heavily struck Mu Chen's heart as he blankly stared at the charming face of the girl. Certain old memories resurfaced from the depths of his mind.

At that time, he was still very young and behaved befitting of his age. It was a dark night with a warm bonfire that was lit up. At that moment, he was a little drunk from the alcohol that he had fished out from the tree hole. He held onto the young girl's hand as he spoke directly to her. "I will lead you to stand at the brightest spot in the Spiritual Road."

However, he wasn't able to fulfill his promise as he was expelled from that event...

When he left, the young girl's figure looked especially lonely.

Mu Chen slowly clenched his fist as a peculiar feeling surged forth in his heart, traveling into his brain. Not knowing when it had started, the blood in his body was boiling.

"I'm sorry." Mu Chen responded with a soft tone.

Luo Li smiled at Mu Chen's apology as she shook her head.

"I wasn't able to fulfill my promise to you in the past..." Mu Chen's gaze shifted towards the Numero Uno on the point rankings. As he stared at the name, a fire blazed in the depths of his pupils.

"This time... I will not break my promise."

"The Number One of the point rankings... is mine!"

Chapter 588: Splitting in two ways

The objective was certainly a problem for Mu Chen's current team to aim for Numero Uno in the point rankings. After all, there was an enormous distance between their points compared to Ji Xuan

Mu Chen was well-aware that the huge gap between them wasn't something that could be pulled closer through ordinary means.

Therefore, they couldn't afford to use ordinary methods at this point in time.

It was a common knowledge to everyone that the Top 16 had the most points in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament. Generally speaking, the Top 16 teams represented the strongest teams in the tournament.

Thus, very few teams had the Top 16 as their targets. The majority of the participating teams would search for the teams that they could handle based on their strength to seize points, few would attempt to target the Top 16.

They knew that there was a certain degree of danger to it and thus, they did not aim for those top teams.

If Mu Chen wished to chase after Ji Xuan, he could only take the risk and hope for victory. As a result, he placed his targets on the Top 16 teams that were ranked after the 8, with Shen Cangsheng's team aside.

Furthermore, Mu Chen no longer collaborated with Wen Qingxuan in this mission. He only took along Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong, Su Xuan and Xu Huang for it.

He did not even bring Luo Li along as he required her and Wen Qingxuan for another task, to cause trouble for Ji Xuan.

He did not need the both of them to defeat Ji Xuan. Based on their strength and the support of their teams, they could definitely cause some trouble for Ji Xuan. At least they would be able to greatly decrease their efficiency of gaining points.

Generally speaking, it wasn't too wise for them to split up in this period

of the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament. After all, they could be targeted by the other teams that had teamed up. However, Mu Chen wasn't worried about this factor as he had great confidence with Wen Qingxuan and Luo Li. With the two of them uniting, they were a force that not even he could defeat.

Therefore, Mu Chen was more assured of them both compared to himself.

As for seizing points, that would have to depend on Mu Chen's capability.

...

Violent Spiritual Energy swept out in the plains.

There were a dozen or more figures in the path of the Spiritual Energy. It was clearly a gang up as there were over twenty people in the surroundings. As for their target, it was naturally the team that was trapped inside their encirclement.

Despite the fact that they were at the disadvantage in terms of numbers, the shocking fact was that the group that ganged up on them was the one slowly losing.

"Sssssssss!"

A sharp explosion of wind roared as a human figure mysteriously appeared. He held a black long spear in his hand, the spear tip was extremely sharp, like a hawk's beak. Even space was torn apart as Spiritual Energy flowed.

That figure had powerful ripples of Spiritual Energy around him. He had simply charged into the encirclement, breaking the formation as light spears shone.

The group that was involved in the encirclement was in chaos. No matter how their Captain tried to yell, they weren't able to unite their attacks.

That human figure relentlessly pursued them and in just a few minutes,

the majority of the encircling team was wounded by him. Lastly, there was a painful howl as their Academy Plaque was seized.

"Tsk, tsk, did you think that you would be able to hunt us, the Demonic Vulture Spiritual Academy just because you found help? How stupid!"

That figure halted, revealing his skinny and shriveled body. It was a youth dressed in black robes with a pair of gloomy-looking eyes. He had an aquiline nose as he ruthlessly trampled on a person to the point that blood was spewed from his kick.

"Haha, Boss, we have obtained another 2,000 points."

From the rear of that black-robed youth, four figures skimmed over. They looked at their Academy Plaques as they grinned, "If this goes on, we might be able to catch up to Mu Chen, who is at the 8th Rank."

"Mu Chen? Hmph, that fellow has been in the limelight a lot, recently." When that black-robed youth heard that name, he coldly snorted as he spoke with jealousy in his tone.

"Hehe, Boss, you are not weaker compared to him. It was just that we have not encountered him. Otherwise, we would witness for ourselves how powerful Mu Chen is." Hearing the words of the black-robed figure, the four other teammates immediately gave praise.

Hearing the praise, the black-robed youth's face became a little better. Just when he was about to speak, his gaze suddenly changed as he raised his head, looking at the hillside not far away, there were several figures that slowly appeared in flashes.

"Haha, since you guys want to be witnesses, why don't we make it today? I, Mu Chen, am looking forward to it." A clear and bright laughter resounded from the hillside. A youth with a slender and tall figure appeared in the sight of the Demonic Vulture Spiritual Academy's team.

"Mu Chen?!"

Hearing that name, not only did the faces of the four members of the Demonic Vulture Spiritual Academy drastically change, even the mouth of the black-robed youth was slightly trembling.

"Mu Chen, we have always minded our own business. What are you trying to do by suddenly appear here?" The black-robed youth spoke with a heavy voice as his eyes flashed with alertness. Clearly, the person before him did not come with good intentions.

"I just want to borrow the Academy Plaque from Captain Xu Yao." Mu Chen lightly smiled as he glared at the black-robed youth before him. The team before him wasn't a nameless one.

Captain Xu Yao of the Demonic Vulture Spiritual Academy, was ranked 9th in the point rankings with 40,800 points.

The highest ranking that this team of the Demonic Vulture Spiritual Academy had reached their peak was Rank 6. However, as the competition became more and more intense later on, they were starting to be surpassed and fell to Rank 9 as of today.

However, the strength of this team was extremely powerful. Shen Cangsheng's team had encountered them in the past and fought as well. However, they weren't able to gain any advantage from them and they had to retreat.

Clearly, this team was the first prey chosen by Mu Chen.

"Haha, so you are after our points. Captain Mu Chen, your appetite is pretty big!" Xu Yao furiously smiled. He knew the rules and that those of the Top 16 would generally not interfere with each other as each of them was powerful. At this point in time, paying a considerable price just to deal with their team was absolutely unwise. Thus, from his point-of-view, Mu Chen was blinded by points.

Mu Chen did not reply as he smiled, he chose to speak with his actions.

He took a step forth as black light exploded on the surface of his body. Seven lightning runes surfaced on his chest and at the same time, a scarlet pillar of light soared up into the horizon from his head, taking the form of a titanic demonic pillar.

Mu Chen clearly did not intend to take his time as he pushed his Lightning God's Physique to its limits from the start and he even

summoned the Great Meru Demonic Pillar right from the start.

He planned to end this battle as fast as possible.

"Go!"

Mu Chen did not have any expression on his face as he flew out at lightning speed with a stomp of his foot. He hugged towards the empty air before him as the Great Meru Demonic Pillar fell from the sky, a huge shadow drawn out by the pillar was shrouding towards Xu Yao's team.

At his rear, Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong and the rest of his team had also pushed their Spiritual Energy to the limits as they exploded forth.

Seeing the torrential waves of killing intent from Mu Chen's team, the faces of Xu Yao's team turned extremely ugly.

With that, Spiritual Energy that was even more violent compared to before exploded in this region.

When the battle ended, huge cracks appeared on the plains that looked like spider webs. The wretched sight was heart-alarming.

Mu Chen stood in the sky as the lightning around him had already dissipated. He grasped the air as an Academy Plaque streaked out, landing in his palm from Xu Yao's sleeve, who was embedded in the cracks on the ground.

Mu Chen indifferently took the points from the Academy Plaque. In an instant, the points in his Academy Plaque that was roughly around 60,000 grew to 80,000. His ranking also followed as he flew up from Rank 8 to 6.

"Thanks for that."

Mu Chen threw the Academy Plaque back to Xu Yao as he cupped his hands and flew off. Shen Cangsheng and the rest slightly tidied themselves as they followed behind.

They had to rush to the location where their next prey was at.

As Mu Chen and his team left, Xu Yao gave out an enraged roar. The roar was similar to the roar of a beast.

...

At the same time, Mu Chen defeated Xu Yao.

In another location in the central region, several figures stood in the sky, it was Ji Xuan's team.

"Captain, the points of Mu Chen's team have suddenly soared, they are currently at Rank 6..." Behind Ji Xuan, the youth named Mu Feng said with his brows narrowed.

Ji Xuan's eyes narrowed from his words as he took out his Academy Plaque and looked at it for a long while, before replying, "Xu Yao of Rank 9 was suddenly kicked out of the Top 16..."

"Mu Chen is actually so daring to target a team of this level?" Mu Feng exclaimed.

Ji Xuan's eyes flickered as he coldly smiled, "Seems like he's trying to aim for the Numero Uno of the point rankings, how naïve he is..."

"What should we do, then?" Mu Feng asked.

"We will start targeting the teams after the Top 8 without any reservations. We will target them all!" Ji Xuan's cold voice rang out.

"Great!" Mu Feng grinned.

Ji Xuan waved his hand and just when he was about to move, his eyes narrowed before his hand could fully wave down. He slowly raised his head as he saw a light appearing from the mountain peak. Thereafter, the two leaders of the team were clearly in their sights.

"Wen Qingxuan!"

"Luo Li!"

When Mu Feng saw the two familiar figures, his face instantly changed.

"You guys don't have to harass the other teams now."

Wen Qingxuan laughed as she looked at Ji Xuan. Thereafter, she tightened her grip on the warspear as she spoke, "But then again, if you guys are eyeing on the points we have, then go for it. We'll see who'll be

able to defeat the other."

Ji Xuan's face slowly turned icy.

Mu Chen, what a good strategy!

Chapter 589: The price to pay for rapidly rising in the ranks

In just one day, there was a drastic change to the Top 16 in the point rankings. Clearly, it had also caused a storm of commotion in this vast central region.

They realized that aside from one team of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy that was after Rank 8, the rest of those that were in the Top 16 after Rank 8 were all kicked out of the point rankings.

Those replacing them were powerful teams that had newly appeared.

If it was just one or two teams, the changes might not attract that much attention. After all, the battle for points right now in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament was simply too intense, even those powerful teams could be easily dragged down.

However, when the changes were all at the same time, there would, without a doubt, be astonishments. Especially when they saw the team that was on Rank 8 soaring on the point rankings at a terrifying speed. In the end, that team managed to surpass the Rank 3, Wu Ling. When that team was able to stand firmly on Rank 3, the exclamation of astonishment became heavier.

At this point of time, even a retard could tell why those powerful teams were kicked out...

The cause of this was the one that recently had his name spreading throughout the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, Mu Chen!

"That fella is abnormal. How could he defeat so many powerful teams in one day? Was he not afraid that he would meet with unexpected failure?"

The entire Great Spiritual Academy Tournament was in a clamor. It was out of their imagination that Mu Chen would be insane to such an extent, to the point that he would place his targets onto those powerful teams.

In addition, the terrifying fact was that he succeeded!

In just one day, Mu Chen had defeated seven teams that had experts of Second Grade Spirit Disaster in them!

The achievement made many others dumbstruck as his actions were a little insane. Was Mu Chen not afraid that those powerful teams would put up a life-and-death struggle that would result in his defeat?

In this current situation, the instant Mu Chen was gravely injured, there would be many powerful teams aiming at him... precisely so, that was the reason why those teams in the Top 8 did not lay their hands on those teams as they were afraid as well.

They did not dare to try it, despite knowing that it was an efficient way of obtaining points.

However, no one had expected that the method which they dared not to try was attempted by Mu Chen and he succeeded.

...

At a lonely peak.

Wu Ling was looking at the team that had surpassed him on the Academy Plaque as he helplessly cast his lips aside.

"What is Mu Chen trying to do? Why did he suddenly go crazy, is he trying to snatch the Numero Uno from Ji Xuan?" Wu Yingying, who was behind Wu Ling said in doubt.

"That should be his objective."

Wu Ling smiled, "Didn't you notice that the efficiency rate of Ji Xuan's team slowed down? I heard that they are under pressure at this moment. Wen Qingxuan and Luo Li joined hands to obstruct Ji Xuan. Although it is a little problematic for them to get rid of Ji Xuan with their strength, there is nothing Ji Xuan can do if the two of them are just intending to cause trouble for him. Haha, they are trying to give Mu Chen time."

"The grudges between those two has been fully unveiled. In the Spiritual Road, Ji Xuan schemed against Mu Chen once and this time, Mu Chen is returning the favour."

"However, Mu Chen must have a huge amount of exhaustion as well to challenge so many powerful teams in a day. If he is injured, the other powerful teams would definitely be eyeing him." Wu Yingying said worriedly.

She was well-aware that no matter how powerful Mu Chen was, there would definitely be a considerable amount of exhaustion for him to challenge so many powerful teams. Furthermore, Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan weren't by his side at the moment. Thus, he was probably being targeted by many teams.

Those powerful teams would definitely not allow Mu Chen to recover his strength. Therefore, this period of time was the most dangerous for their team.

"Right now, the difference between Ji Xuan and Mu Chen's points is only around 20,000." Wu Yingying stared at the Academy Plaque. Ji Xuan still held the Numero Uno with over 130,000 points, whereas Wen Qingxuan occupied the second with 110,000 points. Mu Chen on the other hand, was just a little lower compared to her.

In just one day, Mu Chen managed to jump from Rank 8 to 3, pulling the enormous distance between him and Ji Xuan closer.

"His strategy half-succeeded. Right now, he must be thinking about how to keep his points under his huge amount of exhaustion."

Wu Ling said with a faint tone, "Perhaps Wen Qingxuan and Luo Li are rushing over to protect Mu Chen right now to intimidate the other teams that are eyeing him. However, Ji Xuan will definitely not allow them to successfully leave."

Wu Yingying nodded her head as well. Mu Chen's current state might be the worst considering that the battles he had gone through.

"Hmm?"

Wu Ling suddenly exclaimed as his gaze was focused, staring at the Academy Plaque.

"What is it?" Wu Yingying hastily questioned.

"Finally, it seems that a powerful team could not hold it anymore." Wu Ling pointed towards the Academy Plaque. It was a familiar team that was rapidly approaching Mu Chen.

That team was Rank 6 on the point rankings, the team from the Nine Cauldrons Spiritual Academy with the Captain being an ally of Ji Xuan, Fang Yun!

"Fang Yun is going to attack Mu Chen!" Wu Yingying's face instantly changed.

...

Whooooooosh!

Screeches of wind resounded in the blue sky.

Mu Chen's figure rapidly flew with Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong and the other two closely following behind. The Spiritual Energy ripples around them were a little chaotic at this moment.

They defeated seven powerful teams in one day. Although Mu Chen handled the strongest person in the opponent's team, Shen Cangsheng and the rest dealt with the remaining enemies.

Therefore, they had a huge amount of exhaustion. In addition to the lack of time, the Spiritual Energy within their bodies could not recover.

At the same time, they did not dare to remain in one location for too long as they knew that there were many eyes staring at them.

Shen Cangsheng looked at Mu Chen before him. Although the youth maintained a calm expression, he knew that Mu Chen had the greatest exhaustion as he ended his battles as soon as possible. Thus, he exhausted a lot of his strength.

"Mu Chen, Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan must have been hindered. Otherwise, their speed would not be so slow." Shen Cangsheng inhaled a mouthful of air as he said with a heavy voice, staring at the Academy Plaque.

Mu Chen lightly nodded his head. Ji Xuan wasn't someone that was easy

to deal with. Knowing this, he definitely wouldn't let Luo Li's group leave and regroup with them so easily.

"We have to find a place to recover ourselves. Otherwise, we won't be able to last for long." Li Xuantong spoke with a heavy expression, "I can feel that many teams are secretly approaching us."

"Yeah, follow me. When we reach there, our mission can be considered a success." Mu Chen nodded his head as he increased his speed.

When Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong heard his words, their minds jolted as they quickly followed behind.

The group of five traveled at a rapid speed. Along the way, they met some teams that were greedily looking at them. But because of Mu Chen's fearsome power, no one dared to obstruct them.

As they traveled at rapid speed, Mu Chen's speed started to slow down after half an hour. The end of his sight was a pitch-black forest.

The forest was vast and covered with spike trees with a peculiar ripple lingering within. Those thorny trees shaped this forest similarly to a hedgehog.

This forest wasn't unfamiliar at all, it was the spike trees forest of the Divine Wood Mountain. In this forest, there was the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard.

This was Mu Chen's destination, since he knew that the power of this forest was able to seal Spiritual Energy. Anyone that went in could not use their Spiritual Energy. Thus, if they could go in, they would be thoroughly safe. As long as no one bothered them, they would be able to recover their energy. When they had thoroughly recovered, those eyeing fellows would no longer be able to target them anymore.

"Go in!"

Mu Chen made a gesture towards his team. The four people rejoiced as they increased their speed and was about to enter the spike forest.

"Careful!"

However, just when they was about to land, Mu Chen's face suddenly changed as his body flashed, appearing right at the front as black lightning exploded off him.

Boom! Boom!

A shocking Spiritual Energy swept out from a mountain peak as it heavily bombarded Mu Chen. Black lightning flickered as it withstood the bombardment. However, Mu Chen's figure slightly trembled.

His gaze was dark as he stared at the mountain peak. There were several people at the location and the one leading was familiar to him, Fang Yun of the Nine Cauldrons Spiritual Academy.

Fang Yun was holding onto a Divine Cauldron, glittering with spiritual light as he looked at Mu Chen with a smile hung on his face.

"Captain Mu Chen, I have been waiting here for quite some time."

Chapter 590: Dragon-Tiger Cauldron

Outside the black spike forest stood Mu Chen's group of five. Mu Chen's brows were slightly narrowed as he looked ahead. On the hillside, Fang Yun was smiling as he looked at him with four of his teammates behind him eyeing their group, as well as powerful Spiritual Energy ripples around them.

The direction of Fang Yun and his team blocked off the path for them to enter the forest. If they intended to enter the forest, they would have the pass-through Fang Yun's team.

From the looks of it, Fang Yun had been waiting for a long time.

"Haha, Captain Mu Chen, you can't blame me for this, you can only blame yourself for being too greedy." Fang Yun smiled as he looked at Mu Chen.

Mu Chen narrowed his eyes as he spoke, "Seems like Captain Fang Yun is not intending to let me pass?"

Fang Yun lightly shook his head as ferocity flashed past his eyes, looking at Mu Chen. The gentle smile still hung on his face as he replied, "Captain Mu Chen, I know that you are formidable. But after going through seven battles, I believe that you have exhausted a huge amount of your energy dealing with those Captains, right? Do you still have half of your fighting strength right now?"

"Furthermore... even if you managed to maintain your strength, your teammates are already a spent force. If you want to fight with us, I believe that your chances of winning aren't too high."

Mu Chen's expression was indifferent as Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong's gazes grew colder behind him, tightening their grip on their long spears.

"Therefore, I have to ask Captain Mu Chen to hand your Academy Plaque over to me." Fang Yun extended his hand to Mu Chen as he laughed, "Don't try to resist. Right now, there are many people eyeing your

team as well. I'm afraid that your team can't go through another round of exhaustion."

A wind breezed by, but it wasn't able to scatter the frozen atmosphere at this moment.

Fang Yun wore a cold smile on his face. His gaze stared straight towards Mu Chen. Admittedly, after the fight with Ji Xuan, Mu Chen's fame had soared to the peak. However, he, Fang Yun, was not a weakling as well. Otherwise, he wouldn't be able to come this far.

The two gazes interweaved in the air as sparks flickered.

"From the looks of it, you guys don't seem too interested in my suggestion." When Fang Yun saw that Mu Chen had no intentions of handing over his Academy Plaque, he helplessly smiled. However, there wasn't any warmth in his smile.

"Since that's the case, then I can only help myself to it."

Fang Yun slowly lifted his palm up. On his palm, there was a palm-sized Divine Cauldron with spiritual light flowing on the surface. Ancient runes were imprinted on the bronze cauldron, looking vivid and life-like. Roars of a dragon could be heard as if it came from the surface of the cauldron.

This Divine Cauldron quietly floated on Fang Yun's palm. Although there weren't any terrifying ripples coming from it, Mu Chen could sense the dense danger.

"Divine Artifact?" Mu Chen said softly as his eyes narrowed, looking at the bronze cauldron in Fang Yun's hand.

Mu Chen had a Quasi-Divine Artifact, the Black Tortoise Seal. However, he could vaguely sense that the cauldron in Fang Yun's hand was more formidable compared to his Black Tortoise Seal.

The Black Tortoise Seal was a Quasi-Divine Artifact. Therefore, didn't that imply that this bronze cauldron had already surpassed the level of Quasi-Divine Artifact and reached the Low Rank Divine Artifact?!

Low Rank Divine Artifact, entering the category of Divine Artifact,

possessing unmeasurable power!

"Haha, this is the Divine Artifact of our Nine Cauldrons Spiritual Academy, a Low Rank Divine Artifact, the Dragon-Tiger Divine Cauldron..." Fang Yun looked at Mu Chen as he indifferently said, "Mu Chen, did you think that there was no one in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament that could deal with you, just because you could fight with Ji Xuan on an equal level?"

Low Rank Divine Artifact - Dragon-Tiger Divine Cauldron.

When Fang Yun spoke the name, the look on Shen Cangsheng and the rest involuntarily changed. Although they had yet to witness the might of Fang Yun's cauldron, the word Divine Artifact was sufficient to instill fear in their hearts. The Divine Artifact was a powerful term in the Great Thousand World, no matter where it was.

Those that possessed a Divine Artifact could even challenge those stronger than themselves.

Shhhhhhhhu! Suuuuuuu!

Just when Mu Chen and Fang Yun were facing off, there were screeches of wind ringing from the far away horizon. Streaks of light could be seen from far away, traveling at a rapid speed.

Clearly, those were probably teams that were after Mu Chen's team.

Those teams stopped a distance away from the spike tree forest as they threw their gaze over. When they saw that Mu Chen's team was obstructed by Fang Yun, excitement surged in their eyes.

Mu Chen's current state wasn't good. If he could battle with a powerful expert like Fang Yun, he would have to pay a huge price. At that time, they would have their opportunity.

"Fang Yun actually took out his Dragon-Tiger Divine Cauldron... seems like even he fears Mu Chen." The eyes of some were sharp as they saw through the bronze cauldron in Fang Yun's palm with a glance.

"Mu Chen is not an easy opponent. Even if his state isn't in tip-top

shape, it would be stupid to underestimate him. But clearly, Fang Yun isn't someone like that."

"Haha, fight. Fight as ferocious as possible, best if the both of them are gravely injured. At that time, we will have our opportunity."

"..."

Whispers were coming from far away and the gazes directed over weren't good.

Mu Chen had already taken notice of those distant people. Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong exchanged a glance as their hearts felt heavy.

Fang Yun was smiling as he looked at Mu Chen's team. Thereafter, his hand seal changed and the bronze cauldron flew out from his hand. Spiritual light spread out as the bronze cauldron expanded in size, instantly expanding to over a few hundred meters in diameter.

Above the bronze cauldron, spiritual light expanded, emitting unspeakable dignity from it. Even the space showed signs of vague distortions from the dignified ripples.

"Go!"

Fang Yun had an indifferent expression as the bronze cauldron flew out with a rustle, appearing above Mu Chen's team. Thereafter, a fearsome suppressive power that was similar to a mountain was being emitted.

Bang!

When the cauldron pressed down, the space instantly exploded as the shadow engulfed them, causing the faces of Shen Cangsheng and the rest to drastically change from the pressure.

The cauldron had still not landed, yet it was already so terrifying. The might of a Divine Artifact truly was outstanding.

Mu Chen's gaze was cold as he watched the cauldron fall. He waved his sleeves as a brilliant spiritual light shot forth in a streak of light as it clashed against the cauldron.

Boom!

A crisp metallic ringing resounded as the ear-piercing sound waves caused an explosion in this space. An energy fluctuation that could be seen with the naked-eyes exploded, spreading to a scope of a few thousand meters.

Everyone raised their heads, looking at the two colossal objects. There were a dark cyan-colored stone seal and a bronze cauldron...

At this instance, both objects were emitting terrifying Spiritual Energy ripples as they clashed. Every single time they clashed, it would stir up a Spiritual Energy tornado.

The stone seal was the Black Tortoise Seal, a Quasi-Divine Artifact in Mu Chen's possession.

However, the formidable Black Tortoise Seal had finally met its match. No matter how it emitted spiritual light, it was unable to defeat the bronze cauldron. On the contrary, it showed little signs of being suppressed by the boundless spiritual light...

"Haha, Quasi-Divine Artifact? But it seems to be a little inferior compared to a genuine Divine Artifact." Fang Yun watched the scene as he smiled.

Rustle!

Mu Chen faintly glanced at Fang Yun as he stomped his feet. His figure flew towards his target, Fang Yun.

"If you are at your peak, maybe I might not dare to confront you. But to act so recklessly at your current state, are you not being a little too overconfident?" When Fang Yun saw Mu Chen flying towards his direction, he coldly smiled without any panic.

"Palm of the Divine Cauldron!"

Fang Yun's hand seal changed as a boundless Spiritual Energy storm swept from his body, turning into a titanic bronze hand. On the bronze hand, imprints of a dragon and tiger could be vaguely seen on it.

"Go back!"

Fang Yun barked as the titanic bronze hand heavily pressed down towards Mu Chen, along with boundless fearsome power.

Fang Yun was ruthless in his attacks as he knew that Mu Chen's Spiritual Energy had undergone a huge exhaustion. If they were to forcefully clash, the latter would definitely not be able to fight with him.

At the rear, the faces of Shen Cangsheng and the rest drastically changed when they saw Fang Yun's ruthless moves. From the strength of Fang Yun's attacks, that fellow must be endlessly approaching Third Grade Spiritual Disaster.

If Mu Chen was at his peak, he might not have any troubles dealing with Fang Yun. However, he had a huge amount of exhaustion in his Spiritual Energy in his current state. Therefore, the fighting power that he could exhibit was also weakened.

Rumble!

Mu Chen raised his head and looked at the titanic hand that was pressing down. However, going against Fang Yun's expectations, there wasn't any panic on his face.

"You are still going to pretend at this time?" Fang Yun's expression turned cold. His mind stirred as the titanic bronze hand became even more violent.

"Even if my current state isn't good, it is still not something someone like you can make use of!"

A mocking smile surfaced on Mu Chen's indifferent expression. Thereafter, he started to form bizarre seals with one of his hands.

Boom!

In the instant Mu Chen had completed his hand seals, the heavens and earth seemed as if they had violently jolted. Thereafter, everyone could feel the sky turning darker.

Rustle!

Far away, those teams that were watching the fight had their facial

expressions drastically change when they raised their heads.

In the spike forest, those spike trees that were flickering with radiance were suddenly rapidly withering away. As those trees withered, black Spiritual Energy soared into the sky, looking like black tidal waves.

It was a scene that looked like a black flood had fallen from the sky in destruction.

Fang Yun's face changed as well from the sight of it.

Chapter 591: Smashing his way through

The black Spiritual Energy appeared like a black screen in the sky as it flickered with a cold luster as it soared. Powerful Spiritual Energy pressure swept out as if it was trying to set off a tornado in this region.

Everyone was dumbstruck as they watched the scene before them since they could sense how powerful that black Spiritual Energy was. They found it too hard to believe that Mu Chen could still exhibit such strength even in his current state.

Fang Yun was also looking at the vast and mighty black Spiritual Energy with a little shock in his eyes.

"Damn it!"

Fang Yun heavily clenched his teeth. Originally, he had planned to take action while Mu Chen's state wasn't good and seize his Academy Plaque. However, who could have expected that even after so many battles, Mu Chen could still exhibit such strength?

However, there was no way he could retreat at this point in time.

Boom!

Fang Yun's gaze grew cold as he changed his hand seals, causing the titanic bronze hand to ferociously slam down.

Mu Chen still wore an indifferent expression as he flicked his finger. The powerful Spiritual Energy swept out like several tidal waves as it clashed against the bronze hand.

Boom!

Terrifying Spiritual Energy shock waves were sent spreading out as if it was scraping a tornado on the horizon, trying to tear apart the heavens and earth along with a humming noise.

The bronze palm was rapidly falling apart from the black Spiritual Energy. In the end, it was reduced to nothing from the layers of Spiritual Energy impact.

Mu Chen's expression was calm as he glanced at the spike forest. The trees in the forest had already withered as if it was drained of Spiritual Energy.

He had executed the Divine Wood Scripture earlier. Obviously, the might of this Divine Wood Scripture was more tyrannical compared to the one he used when he faced Ji Xuan.

This wasn't because Mu Chen's strength had grown in just a few days, it was because he was drawing power from ordinary trees before and, right now, he was drawing power from those spike trees...

It was a rare species of Spiritual Trees that had absorbed Spiritual Energy between this heaven and earth for a long time, allowing those spike trees to possess a certain level of destructive power. If those spikes on the spike trees were used as weapons, it was easy to penetrate through mountains and shatter stones by injecting Spiritual Energy into them.

The Spiritual Energy that was contained in those spike trees was more powerful compared to ordinary trees. Therefore, when Mu Chen displayed the Divine Wood Scripture, he could draw out such powerful Spiritual Energy.

Mu Chen's hand seals changed after destroying the bronze palm with these tidal waves of black Spiritual Energy. A faint voice rang out in his heart, "Divine Wheel of the Heavenly Wood!"

Buzzzzz!

Torrential waves of Spiritual Energy rapidly gathered as it turned into a colossal black light wheel the size of a few hundred meters under the countless gazes.

An Ice-cold luster was flickering at the corner of the light wheel. The sharpness of it looked as if it could shred the space apart.

Clearly, the power of this Divine Wheel of the Heavenly Wood was more powerful compared to the time he used it on Ji Xuan!

Fang Yun also realized the terrifying might contained within the black wheel as his face changed.

Whooooooooosh!

At the same time, Mu Chen pointed his finger down, causing the wheel to start frantically spinning. In the next instant, it turned into a black light that could not be perceived through the naked-eyes as it made its way towards Fang Yun.

Bang! Bang!

The blurred black light streaked across the horizon, causing faint tears in the space that the black light had passed through.

"Divine Cauldron Art - Divine Cauldron Wall!"

At the sight of it, Fang Yun's gaze turned a lot more heavy as he changed his hand seals, pressing down with his hand on the space before him.

Boom!

Powerful Spiritual Energy swept out as it instantly expanded before Fang Yun. It had turned into a cauldron light wall with the size of a few hundred meters. Bronze color filled the light wall, making it look indestructible.

Boom!

When the cauldron light wall took shape, the black light wheel had already flown over at lightning speed. In the instant, it clashed, ear-piercing metallic ringing rang out in this horizon.

Creak! Creak!

The black wheel was spinning at a rapid speed, exhibiting the astonishing sharpness of the Spiritual Energy. Cracks started to appear on the surface of the cauldron wall and began to spread out.

The black wheel was even sharper than when Mu Chen had used it earlier. Even experts like Fang Yun would have his scalp tingling from the sharpness of it.

Fang Yun's face turned ugly from the rapid spreading of the cracks.

"Break!"

Mu Chen's slender fingers pointed down once again along with a faint voice. The rotation speed of the black wheel rapidly increased at a terrifying speed and with an earth-shattering noise, the cauldron wall was penetrated.

Boom!

The cauldron wall shattered as it turned into fragments, raining down from the sky.

Despite penetrating through the cauldron wall, the power of the wheel wasn't lessened as it was still approaching its target, Fang Yun!

"Damn it!"

Fang Yun's expression paled as he never expected Mu Chen's attack to suddenly be so powerful. He had not seen Mu Chen use such a powerful wheel when he faced Ji Xuan. However, he was certain that this wheel was more powerful compared to the previous one!

The discovery made Fang Yun extremely depressed. Mu Chen had gone easy when he faced off with Ji Xuan? Otherwise, why would the same attack with the same strength suddenly get so powerful?

Rustle!

As thoughts circulated in Fang Yun's heart, his figure was already mysteriously retreating as he attempted to dodge the wheel's attack

However, he had clearly belittled the speed of the wheel. No matter how much he tried to dodge, the black wheel was like a shadow following his body, not allowing him to break away from it.

"Since you want to go at it, then pay the price for it." Mu Chen's gaze was cold as he watched Fang Yun, who was trying to constantly dodge. His hand seals changed as the speed of the wheel exploded, appearing before Fang Yun in a flash as it slashed down. The sharpness of it even tore the space apart.

"Bastard!" Shock filled Fang Yun's eyes as he gritted his teeth. Willing it in his heart, the Dragon-Tiger Cauldron that was suppressing the Black

Tortoise Seal abruptly shot back to his direction.

Roar!

A dragon and tiger roar rang out as the Dragon-Tiger Cauldron dissolved into bronze liquid, flickering with spiritual light, as it engulfed Fang Yun's body.

Fang Yun turned into a bronze statue as the bronze liquid engulfed his entire body.

The black wheel ferociously slashed down as it hacked against Fang Yun's body.

Boom!

Ear-piercing clashes rang out across the horizon as Fang Yun's figure was sent flying back, heavily slamming against a mountain peak. The peak was unable to bear the impact as it exploded and Fang Yun's body was deeply embedded into the body of the mountain.

Hisssss!

Far away, those teams that were watching the battle involuntarily sucked a mouthful of chilled air as disbelief filled their eyes. It was beyond their expectations that Mu Chen was able to suppress Fang Yun with his current state.

Just how frightening is that fellow!

Mu Chen looked at Fang Yun, who was embedded in the mountain, before shifting his gaze to his teammates. When they saw his glance, they tacitly understood as they flew out, charging towards the direction of the spike tree forest.

The faces of Fang Yun's teammates slightly changed as they attempted to obstruct them.

Boom!

However, just when they were about to move, Mu Chen's figure mysteriously appeared before them. He had an indifferent expression, which made the four retreat in an instant with fear and respect filling

their eyes.

Not even their Captain could obstruct Mu Chen. Although they weren't weak, they weren't so daring to attack Mu Chen.

When they hesitated, Shen Cangsheng and the other three had already entered the forest and disappeared into the shadows with a few flickers.

Mu Chen felt relief in his heart at the sight of that. Shen Cangsheng and the other three had the Array Plate that was made by him and thus, they were able to neglect the effect of the Sealing Spiritual Array. Inside the forest, they still retained their abilities to use their Spiritual Energy, whereas those that intrude in the forest would have their Spiritual Energy taken away from them. As long as they made it to the forest, all threats would disappear.

Boom!

Huge stones shattered in the mountain body as a sorry-looking figure soared into the sky. Fang Yun was covered in dirt as he reappeared. At this current moment, his face was ashen, but he still had bronze covering his body. However, there were fine cracks in his chest area.

Mu Chen's gaze involuntarily narrowed at the sight of it. The attack that he previous unleashed could even gravely wound a Third Grade Spirit Disaster expert and right now, aside from looking a little bad, Fang Yun did not suffer any injuries.

"What a formidable Dragon-Tiger Cauldron."

Mu Chen sighed inwardly as he knew that the reason why Fang Yun was able to appear uninjured was due to the protection of the Dragon-Tiger Cauldron. A Divine Artifact was indeed a Divine Spiritual Artifact. It was tough for even Third Grade Spiritual Disaster experts to pose a huge threat to Fang Yun with the defensive capabilities of that treasure.

"Mu Chen!"

Fang Yun's face was still pale as the bronze liquid wiggled on his body, before returning to the shape of the Dragon-Tiger Cauldron. He ferociously stared at Mu Chen. Clearly, he never thought that a task he

had deemed so easy to be so problematic.

Mu Chen's gaze was indifferent as he looked at Fang Yun. With a clench of his fist, the Black Tortoise Seal returned to his sleeve as his body moved. In a few flickers, his figure had mysteriously appeared outside the forest.

He arrived at the edge of the forest as he halted his steps. He turned his head as he smiled indifferently at Fang Yun, whose face remained ashen, "If you still haven't had enough, then follow me. I will keep you company."

Fang Yun tightly clenched his fist but he did not dare to follow as he knew that this region was a little strange. The moment he went in, his Spiritual Energy would disappear.

"Thanks for entertaining me. If there's a chance, I will definitely return it back."

A sneer rose from Mu Chen's lips as he waved his hand towards Fang Yun with his back facing the latter and made his steps into the forest as shadows engulfed his figure.

"Bastard!"

Fang Yun heavily gritted his teeth and could only give up in disheartened. Those teams that were observing from far away were also sighing in regret.

Mu Chen was simply too powerful.

However, they were unaware that the instant Mu Chen stepped into the shadows, his face had instantly turned pale and even his hand was trembling. The Spiritual Energy in his body was violently surging at this instance.

Mu Chen's black pupils seemed to be blazing with fire as he lightly pulled the corner of his lips. He knew the reason for this abnormality...

His Spirit Disaster was coming.

Chapter 592: Spirit Disaster

Within the dark forest, the ancient palace still remained as Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong and the other two quietly sat down with their legs crossed. Their faces were a little pale since the Spiritual Energy ripples around their bodies were exceptionally weak at this moment.

Clearly, they exhausted too much of their Spiritual Energy.

Mu Chen stood outside the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard as he took a glance at the tightly shut gate. The previous time he was here, the Courtyard Spirit had appeared. However, it did not make its appearance this time as the entire Hidden Spiritual Courtyard looked ordinary at this moment and entry was no longer possible.

Mu Chen held his chest as a fiery blaze flared within his eyes. His entire body was in a high temperature to the point that even his Spiritual Energy showed signs of igniting.

This was a sign that the Spirit Disaster was coming.

"Mu Chen are you alright?" As a girl, Su Xuan was more attentive as she instantly noticed that Mu Chen's body was slightly trembling and thus, she went up to support him. However, the instant she came in contact with Mu Chen's skin, she was instantly startled by the temperature.

"Nothing much, my Spirit Disaster is coming."

Mu Chen waved his hand as he sat down at the gate of the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard. He then shifted his glance towards Shen Cangsheng and the rest as he said, "It is impossible to use Spiritual Energy in this forest. However, with the Jade Plates that I have given to you guys, you will be able to neglect the effects of this region."

"Although we are safe for the moment, we will split ourselves into groups of two to alternate our rest for insurance. To prevent any disturbances to us."

Shen Cangsheng and the rest nodded in agreement to his words.

"Furthermore, here are four drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid. When

you guys recover your strength, try to refine them. Perhaps they will be beneficial." Mu Chen flicked with his fingers as four drops of crystal liquid flew towards the direction of Shen Cangsheng and the other three.

The four of them hastily received them with a stretch of their hand. They stared at the crystal liquid that was hovering on their palms as joy surged from the depths of their eyes. Obviously, they had sensed the vast Spiritual Energy contained in that Sovereign Spiritual Liquid.

They had already reached a bottleneck in their cultivation. If they could refine this Sovereign Spiritual Liquid, they might be able to take another step forth.

Mu Chen looked at the four of them, who were filled with joy, as he lightly smiled and became thoroughly relieved in his heart. Heavy exhaustion surged from his heart as he slowly closed his eyes and his mind sank into his body.

He had to prepare for the Spirit Disaster.

When Mu Chen's mind sank into his body and into the Aura Sea, he saw his Spirit quietly seated in his Aura Sea with an enormous spiritual light loop that looked like a planet ring. It was placed beneath his Spirit as it slowly circulated, the scene was magnificent.

In this instance, his Spirit was different from how it was before. The high temperature was spreading from this Spirit as it looked like it would burst into flames at any moment, combusting his Spirit into nothingness.

This was a sign of Spirit Flames gathering.

The Spirit Flames were flames that were born from within the Spirit. These sorts of flames were harmless to the physical body but were extremely fatal for Spirits. The moment he wasn't able to endure the fire, there was a high chance that his Spirit would be burnt to dust.

In the path of cultivation, the Spirit gathered the three energies of the human body. Thus, it was the most important part. If the Spirit was destroyed, not only would the person's cultivation path be ruined, his consciousness would also fade away, leaving behind a body with no

consciousness, which was similar to a puppet.

In the Three Sovereign Disasters, the Spirit Disaster was undoubtedly the most dangerous trial amongst them all. The slightest error would cause the Spirit to be destroyed and there was no way of saving it.

Thus, even Mu Chen did not dare to be careless in this tribulation.

Huuuuuuu.

He sucked in a mouthful of air in his heart as he willed his mind, sinking into his Spirit bit-by-bit. In the instant when Mu Chen's mind sank into his Spirit, the scorching blaze that was wrapped around his Spirit made him involuntarily jolt.

The acute pain started to spread.

The tiny hands of Mu Chen's Spirit slowly formed into cultivation seals as it started to devour the Spiritual Energy between the heavens and earth. After the Spiritual Energy passed through his meridians and was refined, it was injected into his Aura Sea and, thereafter, was absorbed by the small mouth of his Spirit.

Sssssssi tsssssssiii.

As more and more Spiritual Energy was devoured by his Spirit, the temperature around his Spirit increased, causing the scorching pain to become even more intense.

Tsssssssssiiiii!

As the scorching pain grew stronger, the surface of Mu Chen's Spirit suddenly turned sparkling. Thereafter, a tiny flame started to gather.

The tiny flame was sparkling and translucent, it was like a flame of glass. However, the tiny flame was the cause for his Spirit to violently tremble.

His tiny face on the Spirit was twisted from the pain, his hand that was used to form the cultivation seals was constantly trembling. An indescribable pain spread from the Spirit, the pain was similar to his soul burning.

Tsssssssssiii siiiiii.

More sparkling flames appeared on the surface of his Spirit as time passed. In just half an hour, Mu Chen's Spirit was already engulfed by the flames.

His Spirit was engulfed by the sparkling flames in his Aura Sea. Although looking from afar, those sparkling flames didn't appear to be dangerous, but Mu Chen knew that he was in an extremely dangerous position right now.

Compared to facing Ji Xuan and Fang Yun, the danger was way far higher. The slightest mistake at this moment would cause him to pay the price that he would not be able to bear.

However, despite the heart-piercing pain, Mu Chen still carried on with his teeth clenched, since there wasn't any other way for him. This was the tribulation that every cultivator had to experience in order to ascend the realm of Sovereigns.

Only through these stages of pain, can he break open the cocoon and evolve into a butterfly, taking the step to Sovereign Realm and become a genuine expert that everyone would respect in the Great Thousand World!

As time passed, the figure of Mu Chen's Spirit became blurred, bit-by-bit, as the pain was devouring his consciousness. However, regardless of how the acute pain impacted him, he still retains his last bit of consciousness. The tiny hands of the Spirit still maintained the cultivation seals without wavering.

Right now, he had to endure it, no matter what.

One day had passed under his bitter endurance from the pain.

After one day of rest, Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong and the other two had recovered their strength. Both their Spiritual Energy and mind were recovered to their peaks, no longer having any weak sensations from before.

When the four of them recovered to their peak conditions, they understood that Mu Chen was in his most crucial moments of breaking

through to Spirit Disaster, from the pain shown on his face.

Thus, they set aside their own cultivation for the time being as they enhanced their senses, chased away those teams who were not giving up and snuck into the forest.

Based on the Jade Plate that Mu Chen had given them, they could casually use their Spiritual Energy in here. Whereas those teams that had entered this forest had their Spiritual Energy suppressed. Faced with Sheng Cangsheng's team of four, they weren't able to put up any resistance.

Two days passed under their protection.

Outside the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard, Mu Chen's figure quietly sat like a boulder, not moving a single jolt.

Shen Cangsheng and the other three were spread around him as they stood on those towering trees. Their gazes were sharp with alertness as they constantly looked around.

"Mu Chen has still not passed through his Spirit Disaster..." Other than being alert about their surroundings, Shen Cangsheng said helplessly as he took the time to take a glance at Mu Chen.

"Back then, when we were going through our Spirit Disaster, we only took four days. However, judging from Mu Chen's current state, his time might take longer compared to us." Li Xuantong lightly nodded his head. Under ordinary circumstances, the Spirit Disaster took the shortest time amongst the Three Sovereign Disasters. However, the danger in it was the highest in comparison.

"This fellow is getting more and more powerful now." Shen Cangsheng bitterly smiled. Ever since they entered the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, their strengths had also soared. Right now, he and Li Xuantong already had the capability to give Second Grade Spirit Disaster a go. Even amongst the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, their strengths were considered top. However, when comparing themselves to Mu Chen, they seemed a little lacking.

Li Xuantong softly sighed as his gaze became a little complicated. He never imagined that the Freshmen that once received three of his moves would surpass him at a speed that he could not catch up to in just two years.

"Luo Li's eyesight is truly great." Li Xuantong bitterly commented. Back then, he rejected Luo Li's choice because Mu Chen didn't possess the qualification to match her. But the truth made him understand that the ordinary youth whom he had considered back then had stepped out of the ordinary, sharpened on the grindstone as he displayed his brilliant character.

Seeing the bitter smile on Li Xuantong's charming face, Shen Cangsheng patted the former's shoulders to comfort him.

Whoooooosh.

Li Xuantong replied with a shake of his head and just when he was about to speak, his gaze suddenly changed and he shifted his sight forward. There were sounds of whistling wind coming from that direction. Furthermore, what made him even more startled was that there were Spiritual Energy ripples from that whistling wind sound.

There was someone actually capable of using Spiritual Energy in this forest?

Li Xuantong and Shen Cangsheng exchanged a glance as their gazes turned heavy. Thereafter, they made a hand sign, calling Su Xuan and Xu Huang over. Together, the four of them fixed their gazes towards the dark tree shadows.

The whistling wind became even more rushed and two figures appeared from the shadows, flashing at the speed of lightning.

When the two figures appeared, Shen Cangsheng's group of four felt a heavy relief as unconcealable joy appeared on their faces.

The two figures were Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan.

They knew that the moment those two appeared, they would be absolutely safe. In the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, not even Ji

Xuan could bring harm to Mu Chen under the protection of those two.

Chapter 593: Queen Luo shows her Might

When Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong and the rest saw the two girls, unconcealable joy surged on their faces. They had been on the edge guarding Mu Chen for the past few days, fearing that someone would come and disturb Mu Chen's cultivation.

The moment Luo Li came, her crystal-clear pupils were looking at Mu Chen, who was in his cultivating state. Her worrying expression that she had on her face gradually loosened.

"He's undergoing the Spirit Disaster?" Wen Qingxuan, however, looked at Mu Chen in astonishment as she felt the bizarre ripples.

Shen Cangsheng and the rest nodded their heads.

"Are you guys alright?" Luo Li enquired.

Shen Cangsheng and the rest nodded their heads as they bitterly smiled, "It's thanks to Mu Chen for finding this place. Otherwise, it would be hard for us to retreat. That Fang Yun isn't an easy opponent, the Divine Artifact in his possession was extremely strong. Mu Chen had paid a certain price and thus, we were able to retreat here. Precisely so, his Spirit Disaster is more dangerous."

Generally speaking, those undergoing their Spirit Disaster all had their conditions restored to their peak. However, Mu Chen had undergone a battle with Fang Yun and thus, he had to undergo his Spirit Disaster when his condition wasn't at his best.

"Fang Yun." A smear of chill appeared in Luo Li's pupils. Clearly, she was enraged.

"It was probably Ji Xuan's instructions for Fang Yun to attack Mu Chen. The scheme of that fellow runs too deep. He used all sorts of methods to obstruct us to give Fang Yun time to deal with Mu Chen." Wen Qingxuan spoke as well with a cold expression.

Shen Cangsheng and the rest nodded at their words, before taking a glance at Mu Chen and continued, "We have no idea how long Mu Chen

will take. It seems like Ji Xuan will once again pull apart the difference in points that we did so much to pull closer in this period of time."

Right now, their points were Rank 3 with roughly 110,000 points. Ji Xuan still remained Numero Uno with nearly 140,000 points. If Mu Chen was going to take a few days, the gap between them would only grow bigger to the point that it could no longer be recovered.

Luo Li fell into her own thoughts. Right now, the battle between Mu Chen and Ji Xuan had the attention of everyone and she did not want others to look down on Mu Chen.

"Qingxuan, I would like you to stay here for a few days until Mu Chen passes through his Spirit Disaster." Luo Li softly said as she looked at Wen Qingxuan after a brief moment of pondering.

"What about you?" Wen Qingxuan was startled as she asked.

"I will leave with them for the time being. At the very least, I would like to maintain the gap." Luo Li lightly smiled as she continued, "But, naturally, I will give you half of the points I obtain to make up for your loss."

"Only guys like them would fight head-over-heels for the rank." Wen Qingxuan cast her lips aside as she continued, "Rest assured. No matter what, Mu Chen has helped me before in the past. Thus, I will naturally help him as well."

"Thank you for that." Luo Li responded with a faint smile.

When Shen Cangsheng heard that Luo Li was intending to bring them out, they were a little dumbfounded. Although they knew that Luo Li wasn't as simple as she looked, they still thought of her as a girl in their hearts. And, at this timing, they felt a little ashamed that a girl like Luo Li had to hold up the barrier amongst them.

"Rest assured, the team leading under Luo Li won't be any weaker than Mu Chen." Li Xuantong, however, smiled. Although Luo Li had never displayed her true strength from the start, he knew that this girl before him wasn't any weaker than Mu Chen.

"Alright then, we'll give Mu Chen a surprise when he wakes up." Su Xuan smiled as she covered her mouth.

Shen Cangsheng could only nod his head with a bitter smile.

Wen Qingxuan approached Luo Li as she softly said, "From the looks of it, your target isn't a small one."

Luo Li pulled her hair behind her ears with her slender fingers. Her action was extremely charming to the point that Wen Qingxuan's heart was a little stirred. Shortly after, a faint smile surfaced on her face as she said, "I want to snatch Ji Xuan's Numero Uno position back. Thus, my target is Fang Yun."

Wen Qingxuan was startled by her words. She knew that her target wasn't small, but she never imagined that she would be so daring to actually plan to snatch Ji Xuan's ranking. Moreover, Fang Yun wasn't someone easy to deal with either, as he possessed the Low Rank Divine Artifact.

"Rest assured."

Luo Li knew about Wen Qingxuan's worries as she smiled.

"Then, you be cautious." Wen Qingxuan could only nod her head at Luo Li's words.

After their discussion, Luo Li stayed there for another half a day before leaving together with Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong and the other two without wasting more time.

Wen Qingxuan smiled as she looked at the leaving Luo Li. Looks like there will be no more peace in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament. Perhaps it is time for everyone to know the strength of this girl that has always been standing behind Mu Chen.

Wen Qingxuan idly stretched her slender arms as she walked to Mu Chen's side with her hand on her cheek as she slightly curled her lips and spoke in an envious tone, "This fella has it cheap for Luo Li to do so much for you."

...

Three days quickly passed.

During these three days, Mu Chen still had not woken up. However, the surface of his body was turning more and more red as a high temperature was emitting from inside his body, even the space was slightly distorted from it. Under the intense pain, his face was a little hideous.

Clearly, his Spirit Disaster was still ongoing.

Under this situation, Wen Qingxuan, who was guarding him, was also helpless as the Spirit Disaster required one to go through it by themselves with their own ability. There was no room for others to help them.

However, Wen Qingxuan was slightly relieved. Despite Mu Chen's face slightly twisted, there weren't any signs of the Spiritual Energy in his body going berserk. Clearly, he did not allow his mind to be devoured and retained a hint of conscious.

Under this situation, as long as Mu Chen could endure it, it was just a matter of time for him to pass through the Spirit Disaster.

In the three days that Mu Chen was undergoing his Spirit Disaster, the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament shook, which was caused by Luo Li.

Luo Li wasn't like Mu Chen when she led the team. She did not sweep those after Rank 8 like Mu Chen had done. She had directly fixed her aim onto Rank 6, Fang Yun.

Her actions were undoubtedly audacious. After all, everyone was clear on the fact that those within the Top 8 were the most powerful teams in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament. Among those teams, there were several powerful experts, especially when it came to someone like Fang Yun, who possessed a genuine Divine Artifact.

Thus, when the news of Luo Li and Fang Yun's confrontation spread out, a shaking uproar was instantly unleashed in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament. Even when compared to Mu Chen and Ji Xuan's battle, the level of their confrontation wasn't any weaker in comparison.

The earth-shattering battle still took place in the end.

That battle was extremely intense as everyone could see a titanic cauldron rise up in the air, emitting divine light as the roars of a dragon and tiger resounded in the sky. Even the Spiritual Energy in the heavens and earth seemed to be boiling.

However, despite the cauldron being so powerful, everyone watched as the titanic cauldron was being suppressed the moment a crisp and resonant sword cry rang out...

Everyone that watched the battle could clearly witness that scene.

A grandiose sword intent gathered in the sky as it turned into an earth-shattering sea of swords. The sea of swords was like a storm as it whistled its way past. Anything standing before it was torn to shreds by the rampant storm of Sword Aura... even the Low Rank Divine Artifact, whom Mu Chen failed to break through despite using all his strength, the Dragon-Tiger Cauldron rapidly lost its luster in the sea of swords. Thereafter, a colossal sword light took form as it heavily slashed down from the sky.

The sea of swords dissipated as it turned into a longsword, whistling across the horizon as it returned to Luo Li's hands. The Spiritual Energy Sword Intent that even the heavens and earth could not withstand had also dissipated.

Puuuuf! poooffff.

Everyone saw the scene of Fang Yun spewing a mouthful of blood as his face paled. Clearly, he was gravely injured.

It was a closure to the heart-shaking battle.

Fang Yun handed over his Academy Plaque with unwillingness in the end. A total of 40,000 points was bluntly seized by Luo Li, allowing an increase in points for the Academy Plaque of Mu Chen's team from 110,000 to 150,000 points, surpassing Ji Xuan, who only had 140,000 points, in one go.

Henceforth, the owner of the Numero Uno position changed.

The entire Great Spiritual Academy Tournament was shaken. After such a long time, the rank of Numero Uno finally welcomed its third owner...

It was precisely this battle that allowed Luo Li's name to resonate throughout the tournament. Her reputation even showed signs of surpassing Ji Xuan and Mu Chen. After all, in comparison to them, Luo Li had an advantage in terms of her looks and temperament.

But, naturally, the crucial point was her battle with Fang Yun. All in all, she was the only one that dared to attack a team that was within the Top 8 throughout this entire tournament.

After experiencing that battle, Fang Yun's team dropped out of the Top 8. However, with his ability, he had once again entered the Top 8 in just one day. However, he was clearly much more low-profile this time as he did not show any signs of jumping.

It was evident that his drive was thoroughly suppressed by Luo Li.

After the Numero Uno ranking had changed, everyone was curious as they waited for Ji Xuan's reaction. With the latter's character, he was definitely not someone that would give up the ranking of Numero Uno so easily.

Just when everyone was in anticipation of Ji Xuan moving, Mu Chen had finally slowly opened his eyes to the depths of the spike tree forest. His black pupils blazed as if there were crystal-clear flames surging within.

He had finally passed through his Spirit Disaster!

Chapter 594: Disaster Success

The instant Mu Chen opened his eyes, crystal-clear flames seemed to be blazing within his pitch-black pupils, giving a pure and clear look from his pupils.

Haaaaaaa.

A lump of breath faintly containing a high temperature was slowly exiting Mu Chen's mouth. The high temperature even made the space around him show small signs of distortion as if a charred smell was released as well.

"I've finally succeeded!" The flames in Mu Chen's pupils quickly retreated as he returned to normal. His tightly tautened body loosened up as if he was relieved of a burden as he felt the intense burning pain from his Spirit also dissipating.

He had already succeeded his Spirit Disaster.

"Congratulations."

An idle voice rang out from his rear. Turning his head back, Mu Chen saw a charming face with a jade-like hand supporting it on the stone stairs staring at him with a full smile.

Mu Chen was slightly startled when he saw Wen Qingxuan. However, he quickly recovered from his shock as he understood the reason why she was there. "Thanks."

When he was submerged in his cultivation, Wen Qingxuan must have been by his side, guarding him.

Wen Qingxuan waved her jade-like hands as her phoenix-like eyes glanced at Mu Chen, "How's the feeling of Spirit Disaster?"

Mu Chen slowly clenched his fist as he smiled, "Very powerful."

He could feel the powerful surges of Spiritual Energy in his body. Compared to before he underwent the Spirit Disaster, it was definitely much more powerful. Earlier, when he was sweeping those powerful

teams, it would have been so much easier if he had the cultivation of Spirit Disaster. After all, no matter how powerful his fighting power was, there was a limit to how powerful his Spiritual Energy could get. If he compared Spiritual Energy from when he was at Spiritual Energy Disaster, it was naturally way inferior to opponents like Ji Xuan and Fang Yun, who were powerful Spirit Disaster experts.

"My Spirit has grown stronger as well..."

Mu Chen willed in his mind, spiritual light surged around his head as a similar-looking Spirit appeared above his head. The current state of his Spirit had clearly undergone a huge transformation. Its small body became even more sparkling and translucent as if it was made from glass. The hands of his Spirit made a seal with a solemn expression, having a sacred appearance.

Mu Chen's Spirit opened his eyes as he waved his small arm. In an instant, the Spiritual Energy that existed between this heaven and earth rapidly gathered. The Spirit was extremely sensitive towards Spiritual Energy. Thus, the stronger the Spirit, the stronger control, and senses one would have towards Spiritual Energy.

Cultivating to this point, the Spirit was nearly an essence as it was no longer illusory in appearance and the cultivation of their Spirit could be considered as a small success. Even if their physical body was destroyed, as long as their Spirit managed to escape, they would have a chance of reforming their physical body and be reborn.

Naturally, the Spirit Disaster was the most important turning point in the path of cultivation, as it was a bedding a foundation for the Sovereign Realm. As long as the Spirit was sufficiently powerful, only then can one become a true Sovereign.

There were three grades of the Spirit Disaster, which implied the existence of three tribulations. However, they were all preparations for the Sovereign Realm.

Mu Chen's Spirit was flickering in the spiritual light as it returned to his body. He stretched his body. Hearing the crackling sound from his body,

he involuntarily comfortably breathed out.

The sensation of going through levels upon levels of tribulations and becoming stronger was too bizarre.

Mu Chen stood up as he looked around. After a brief moment, he asked in doubt, "Where's Luo Li? Isn't she together with you?"

"Congratulations, the team lead by you is the Numero Uno in the point rankings." Wen Qingxuan flicked her fingers as an Academy Plaque flew towards Mu Chen.

Mu Chen received it in a little astonishment as he swept his glance over. He was stunned when he saw the Numero Uno on the point rankings.

Rank 1 - Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, Captain Mu Chen. [150,000 points]

Rank 2 - Saint Spiritual Academy, Captain Ji Xuan. [140,000 points]

"This is Luo Li's doing?" Mu Chen was stupefied.

"Yeah."

Wen Qingxuan made a lovely chuckle as her hand supported her chin, her charming gaze locked on Mu Chen. "She defeated Fang Yun and seized half of his points. Thus, she successfully surpassed Ji Xuan and replaced the Numero Uno. Right now, Luo Li is the most dazzling person in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament. Probably even you and Ji Xuan are incomparable to her in this factor."

As she spoke, she continued speaking with a teasing tone, "How is it? Luo Li achieved something that you never managed to accomplish. Are you feeling affected by it?"

Mu Chen looked at the Academy Plaque for a brief moment, before smiling. "At the very least, I'm not affected by it. With her talents, it was natural for her to be dazzling. I have never requested for her to restrain herself."

"Perhaps she was well-aware of how dazzling she was. Thus, ever since she entered the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, she has been trying

her best to restrain herself and quietly stood beside me. However, I hope that she can reveal herself as she pleases at times."

Wen Qingxuan looked at Mu Chen, whose gaze was exceptionally gentle at the moment. She felt the deep affection Mu Chen had for Luo Li and on the spot, she went silent for a brief moment, before saying, "She restrained herself out of concern for your feelings. She did not want to bring any unnecessary troubles for you."

Mu Chen lightly nodded his head. He raised his head as he looked at the glimpse of the light ray shooting from the tiny crack in the forest, and extended his hand as it passed through the light. A heavy voice, along with unswerving determination and self-confidence, rang out.

"I know how dazzling is she. Perhaps in the future, there might be an even more powerful figure standing between us. But no matter what, I will never give up. I have promised her that one day, I will become an absolute expert. At that time, no one will be able to obstruct me from holding her hands!"

The heavy and faint voice spread out in this forest, making Wen Qingxuan stunned. She lifted her head up and looked at the slender figure. The handsome youth had sunlight shining on his body, covering him in a layer of light. There wasn't any fear or hesitation in his eyes. He was like a warrior that would blaze a new trail, pacing forth and would neither regret nor hesitate.

"Absolute expert..."

Wen Qingxuan's slender fingers were fiddling with her hair as she muttered to herself. Her gaze was a little complicated. There were too many talented people in this world, but how many of those were able to become an absolute expert, intimidating the entire Great Thousand World?

However, the unswerving gaze from the youth before her slightly shook her heart as she became a little stunned. After that, she felt Mu Chen's gaze looking over at her direction and stopped at her face.

Wen Qingxuan sobered up as a rarely seen smear of redness surfaced

from her charming face. She immediately avoided Mu Chen's gaze as she cast her lips aside. "Talk about becoming an absolute expert after you defeat Ji Xuan, that fellow isn't that simple."

Mu Chen smiled as he nodded, "Indeed, he isn't simple. However, it isn't a simple matter for him to defeat me as well."

"Self-confidence, I like it." Wen Qingxuan gracefully stood up as she chuckled, patting her hand on Mu Chen's shoulders.

"You like guys as well?" Mu Chen said in amazement. However, the instant he spoke those words, he had a bad feeling.

Just as expected, Wen Qingxuan that stood before him had her brows narrowed as she grabbed Mu Chen collar and stuck her ice-frost expression over as she gritted her teeth, "What did you say?!"

Mu Chen dryly laughed as he drifted his sight away.

"Your mother, I only dislike being close to guys. If I meet a guy I like, I will naturally follow him obediently. It's not as if I have a problem!"

Looking at the blushing Wen Qingxuan, Mu Chen awkwardly rubbed his nose. He had stepped onto Wen Qingxuan's Achilles heel. Otherwise, how would someone like her to use 'your mother, I' as a form of addressing herself?

"Okay, fine, I'm in the wrong."

Mu Chen raised up his hand. He gave Wen Qingxuan a glance and was a little curious about her earlier words. He was very curious, how charming would such a prideful girl like Wen Qingxuan be if she was quiet and sweet when she fell for a guy?

"Hmph."

Wen Qingxuan coldly snorted as she calmed down. However, when she realized that she was pulling onto Mu Chen's collar and nearly stuck up to him, she hastily released her grip and pushed him away. However, the redness on her face was much denser and her heartbeat increased. She could only curse at this damnable fellow that broke her calmness.

"Let's go as well."

Mu Chen no longer dared to provoke Wen Qingxuan as he suggested with a dry laugh.

Wen Qingxuan snorted again as she no longer bothered about Mu Chen and flew out first.

Mu Chen wryly smiled as he moved as well, appearing in the sky over the forest. Thereafter, he formed seals with his hands and a colossal ring of light spread out from his palm and rapidly expanded.

Whoooooosh! Whooosh!

As the green ring of light expanded, the spike trees in the forest beneath him turned into black rays of light as they flew up into the light halo in his hand.

A few minutes later, more than half of this forest was emptied.

Seeing the scene, Mu Chen finally stopped as the dark-green halo disappeared. He breathed out a long breath as he shifted his gaze towards the northwest direction, a chill circulated in his black pupils.

He had a premonition that it will soon be the finals.

Let us fight for real this time, Ji Xuan!

Chapter 595: Igniting the Academy Plaque

The lush green mountains stood towering on the ground as the mountain range extended to the end of one's sight.

In this region, the voices were a little noisy as all sorts of commotions gathered and soared into the sky. There were many teams gathered in this region to rest.

Although there wasn't any designated safe region in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, there was naturally rules and regulations set up in places with people. Taking this resting region, for example, a majority of those that came here would lay down their weapons to rest, putting a pause to their battle to prevent enraging everyone.

Every corner in this mountain peak was gathered with people talking among themselves. Even the atmosphere in this area was harmonious.

At this instant, those teams who were chatting amongst themselves earlier directed their gazes towards a mountain peak not far away. On that peak, there was roughly a group of ten.

Amongst that group, there was a slim and elegant figure that attracted most of their eyeballs. It was a girl dressed in a navy blue dress, she possessed a nearly perfectly charming face. Her silvery hair was gorgeous as it looked like a silver river, there wasn't any dust in her crystal-clear pupils that looked fascinating.

The girl quietly sat down, even her expression was calm and tranquil, not affected in the slightest from the gazes that were directed at her from all different directions. She gave off an air of beauty and elegance.

Within the gazes that were directed at her, every one of them had a smear of charmed emotions in the depths of their eyes. No one wouldn't be charmed by such an outstanding girl.

However, despite being intoxicated by her temperament and beauty, it was unexpected that no one dared to approach her. They were all well aware that this girl before them was the Numero Uno of the point

rankings. She was a frightening existence that had defeated Fang Yun and surpassed Ji Xuan in the lead.

Luo Li.

Such a fragile and charming name was already the most dazzling star in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament in just a few days.

Some of the teams here had encountered the team led by the girl before them during these few days. However, the outcome was evident, the points that they managed to obtain through their hard work became the spoils of war for her.

Out of the ordinary, despite the fact that they lost their points, they weren't too furious about it in their hearts. On the contrary, a breathtaking figure was left behind in their hearts.

They were a little ashamed by the thought of it and could only constantly remind themselves of femme fatale. A beauty that could devastate a country... they were well aware of the wide gap between them and that girl. Her beauty and ability was proof of her brilliance in the future...

Just as they were in the center of all that attention, Luo Li still kept her eyes closed on the mountain peak as a breath of wind lifted her long hair, dancing along with the wind, emitting a faint fragrance.

"Luo Li, Ji Xuan's team pulled closer to us by another 2,000 points." Shen Cangsheng suddenly said behind Luo Li as he looked at the Academy Plaque.

"That fella has been tightly chasing after us." Li Xuantong furrowed his brows together. Ever since they surpassed Ji Xuan, the latter had been clearly moving in the dark as he worked hard to seize points in an attempt to surpass their rankings.

This was precisely why they were so busy these few days. Under Luo Li's leadership, they went around seizing points. However, it was fortunate that after defeating Fang Yun, Luo Li no longer went after those powerful teams and chose to go after those teams that wouldn't exhaust too much of their strength. Although this method was slow in terms of obtaining

points, it was clearly a safe method. There wouldn't be another situation similar to Mu Chen, who had swept all the powerful teams beneath Rank 8 and experienced a huge exhaustion of his strength.

In this series of continuous battles, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong's strengths grew. Using the one drop of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid that was given by Mu Chen, they managed to break through to Second Grade Spirit Disaster. As for Su Xuan and Xu Huang, the both of them were able to successfully break through their Spirit Disaster. Thus, their strength as a team grew to the pinnacle.

Right now, regardless of their Captain or members, all possessed strength comparable to those powerful pinnacle teams. The issue of having unequal strength in the team was gone.

Luo Li opened her eyes at this instant as she took a glance at the Academy Plaque. They still occupied the Numero Uno throne with points of 160,000. Ji Xuan stood at second with 153,000 points.

The difference between their points was extremely close.

"Then, let's keep moving." Luo Li stood up, her dress was perfectly outlining her slim waist. Her skin was similar to a jade as it reflected a lustrous light off when the sunlight shone onto her. It was hard for others to shift their gazes off her.

Hearing her words, Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong and the other two immediately stood up. After a brief moment of rest, the Spiritual Energy in their bodies had recovered.

In the past few days, they had personally witnessed Luo Li's strength and thoroughly understood how deep this girl that stood before them had hidden her strength.

The group stood up as they were prepared to move.

Whoooooooosh.

However, just when they were about to move, a screeching sound of wind came from the sky far away. Thereafter, two figures rapidly flew over at lightning speed.

Luo Li paused her step that she was about to take as she looked at the two figures flying over in the horizon. The whole time, her eyes were tranquil, without any ripples, but at this moment, there was joy surging in her eyes.

Everyone in this region saw the abruptly spirited, charming eyes of the girl as they couldn't control their eyes from lighting up. Shortly after, they shifted their gazes over to that direction with two figures approaching. Who was it that could make such a tranquil girl reveal joy from the depths of her heart?

Rustle.

Under the numerous gazes, two streaks of light rapidly appeared in the sky. When the lights dissipated, a male and female figure was revealed with a flash.

Mu Chen stood in the sky. His figure was slender with a handsome face. At this moment, he was smiling as he looked at the girl below him with a gentle gaze.

Beside him stood Wen Qingxuan. Her golden battle armor wrapped around her chest and her fine waist. Underneath her skirt, it was a patch of snow-white skin. Her appearance wasn't any inferior compared to Luo Li, her prideful temperament was being emitted from deep within her bones. Regardless of when it was, that temperament of hers never weakened.

"It's Mu Chen!"

Mu Chen's appearance wasn't unfamiliar to the majority of the teams in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament. The moment those teams saw him, they exclaimed out with undisguisable jealousy in their tones. That jealousy was naturally directed at the smile revealed on Luo Li's face after Mu Chen had appeared.

That bewitching smile.

Mu Chen fell from the sky as he landed beside Luo Li. He looked at the smile hung on the face of the girl as his gaze became even more gentle. He

extended his hand out and swept the hair on the girl's forehead as he said in a gentle tone, "You've worked hard."

"I am also a member of the team, it's my obligation." Luo Li said with a slight smile.

"But, since the Captain has returned, then you can have the spot of the Captain back."

Luo Li handed over the Academy Plaque to Mu Chen as she gave a rare charming blink to him. The scene made the hearts of all those that had their attention directed over to stop. In the past few days when they had encountered Luo Li, she did not have any expression on her face, even when she was facing off against an expert like Fang Yun. But, right now, she was looking so cute before a man which made them grieve and lament.

Mu Chen smiled when he heard her words as he extended his hand to grab onto the Academy Plaque. At the same time, he had grabbed onto Luo Li's hand as well.

Having her hand grabbed by Mu Chen, a faint blush appeared on Luo Li's face. She lightly struggled but it was ineffective. Thus, she could only stare at Mu Chen with a little anger.

Mu Chen looked around and noticed that there were many gazes that were staring at him. He was a little confused by the gazes. He wasn't aware that he had attracted so much jealousy from his actions.

"Let's go, you have worked hard for this rank. I won't let anyone else seize it." Mu Chen said as he looked at Luo Li.

Luo Li lightly smile as she nodded her head.

Buzzzzzz.

However, just when Mu Chen finished his speech, a buzzing noise came from the Academy Plaque in his hand as a brilliant light was unleashed from it. At the same time, all the Academy Plaques held by the Captains in this region also emitted a brilliant light.

Everyone was a little stunned as they lifted their Academy Plaques. However, when they looked at it, their faces drastically changed.

Ji Xuan who was Rank 2 in the point rankings soared at an astonishing speed. In an instant, they had surpassed Mu Chen with points soaring to a terrifying 200,000 from 150,000 points!

Their points increased by over 50,000!

"How is that possible?!" Someone exclaimed. They couldn't understand the reason behind the sudden spike in Ji Xuan's points because there wasn't any from the Top 8 falling out of the point rankings. If there wasn't any team dropping out, that implied that Ji Xuan did not defeat a team in the Top 8. But how did he get so many points?

An earth-shaking commotion covered the horizon as countless startled gazes were directed at Mu Chen.

The smile hung on Mu Chen's face slowly disappeared as he narrowed his eyes. But before he spoke, his pupils shrunk again.

He saw Ji Xuan's name suddenly ignite.

Even Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan's faces drastically changed as well.

Because they knew the reason for his name to be burning, that meant that Ji Xuan and his team had ignited their Academy Plaque...

Ji Xuan was intending to start the final battle!

Chapter 596: Beginning of the Final Battle

Ji Xuan had ignited his Academy Plaque!

An uproar exploded in this region, every team's Captains were blankly staring at the Academy Plaques in their hands. Their eyes were fixed on the flaming Numero Uno ranking as there were all kinds of expressions written on their faces.

According to the rules, as long as half of the Top 16 ignited their Academy Plaques, the Finals would begin in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament. At that time, those in the Top 8 would proceed to the next round.

But, generally speaking, only those teams that were confident in their points would ignite their Academy Plaques. The moment they ignited their Academy Plaques without the coordination of the other teams, their points would be fixed. That way, they might be easily surpassed by the other teams. If they were careless, they might even drop out of the Top 8.

Thus, unless they were confident, they would not ignite their Academy Plaques so easily. Now that Ji Xuan had taken the initiative, was he certain that his spot as Numero Uno was unshakable?

Many teams were looking amongst themselves. Although they were unaware of how Ji Xuan had a sudden surge of 50,000 points, that wasn't sufficient as a guarantee, right?

"What is Ji Xuan doing?" The faces of Shen Cangsheng and the rest had heavy expressions as they voiced their questions when they saw the scene.

Mu Chen narrowed his eyes as he slowly said, "I'm afraid that there will be more follow up..."

When Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan heard his words, they narrowed their gorgeous eyes as well. They were staring at the Academy Plaques. Roughly ten minutes later, the Rank 6 Xue Tianhe, Liu Qingyun and Fang Yun's teams turned red as if they were burning on the plaques as well.

This region shook again.

Even Xue Tianhe, Liu Qingyun, and Fang Yun had ignited their Academy Plaques!

"Now that there are four Academy Plaques that have ignited, as long as there are four more amongst the Top 16, the Finals will begin!"

"That's some patience from Ji Xuan, he was probably waiting for this moment!"

Hearing the commotion that sounded throughout this wilderness, the faces of Shen Cangsheng and the rest turned ugly. It wasn't easy for them to climb up to Numero Uno and then, all of a sudden, the Numero Uno was taken away from them.

Furthermore, they were a little sullen as they had no idea about how Ji Xuan suddenly got the 50,000 points. There wasn't much change in the Top 16 so, evidently, the 50,000 points did not come from anyone amongst the Top 16.

The faces of Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan grew cold as Mu Chen slowly rubbed his Academy Plaque. No one knew what he was thinking from the unknown light flickering in his black pupils.

"Another two Academy Plaques ignited!" Another exclamation resounded. Amongst the Top 16, another two Academy Plaques lit up as well. Those two Academy Plaques belonged to Rank 16 and Rank 14. Generally speaking, those teams would not ignite their plaques so easily as it would deny their entry to the Finals. But, at this moment, such a scene was displayed before them.

Anyone with discerning eyes could tell what was going on. This was definitely the work of Ji Xuan. Otherwise, there wouldn't be so many teams igniting their Academy Plaques at the same time. Everyone could tell that Mu Chen was tricked by Ji Xuan at such a crucial time.

As long as there were two more Academy Plaques lighting up, the Finals would start.

Furthermore, the only way for Mu Chen and his team to obtain another 50,000 points was to defeat a team in the Top 8. However, amongst the

Top 8, Ji Xuan, Xue Tianhe, Liu Qingyun and Fang Yun could no longer increase their points or have their points taken. Thus, his remaining targets could only be Wen Qingxuan, Wu Ling, and Wen Busheng. However, those three teams had a good relationship with Mu Chen. If Mu Chen placed his target on one of those three teams, his fame would be in a complete mess.

This move from Ji Xuan truly was vicious.

"That bastard!" Shen Cangsheng clenched his teeth as his voice became filled with anger. Clearly, they had uncovered Ji Xuan's vicious plans. He was trying to force Mu Chen into a corner.

"What should we do now?" Li Xuantong's face was dark as he spoke and shifted his sight to Mu Chen and Luo Li at the same time.

Luo Li was slightly clenching her fists, but she did not speak. She looked at Mu Chen with a hint of worry in her eyes.

However, Mu Chen looked as if he had not heard their words, because he was still staring at his Academy Plaque.

Wen Qingxuan lifted a strand of hair to her ears as she quietly looked at Mu Chen. Thereafter, she extended her hand with an Academy Plaque flickering with light in her palm.

"Take the points from our team. Even if we lose half of them, we will still be able to stay within the Top 8. Furthermore, these points don't mean much to us as the genuine Champion will be born in the Finals."

Shen Cangsheng and the rest blankly stared at Wen Qingxuan as they never expected the latter to willingly give half of her points.

"This..." They exchanged looks as the present was simply too expensive, which they did not dare to receive.

Luo Li bit on her rosy lips as well as she looked at Mu Chen. The latter was also in shock as he raised his head, looking at Wen Qingxuan.

"Hey, being indecisive at this time isn't good, right?" Wen Qingxuan had her brows furrowed as she looked at Mu Chen, "Perhaps you might feel

that these points aren't too honorable. But isn't it your capability as well for me to willingly give you half of my points?"

"Thus, if you are going to reject me for your so-called 'pride', I will feel that you are not mature. And I do not like having such friends."

Hearing her words, Mu Chen rubbed his nose as he bitterly laughed as a trace of being touched was shown in his eyes.

Those around him did not speak as they looked at Mu Chen, waiting for his decision. As long as he nodded his head, he would be able to surpass Ji Xuan once again, giving a slap to Ji Xuan's face as he reclaimed the Numero Uno.

However, a smear of a smile rose from the youth's handsome face under all the gazes as he lightly shook his head.

"You!" Wen Qingxuan was enraged as she couldn't help stomping her feet on the ground as she furiously looked at Mu Chen.

"Sorry, I'm not denying your points for my pride. I have still not fallen so low as to take that step yet." Mu Chen said softly.

Wen Qingxuan crossed her arms as she tilted her head with a cold expression. At this point in time, what method do you still have? Perhaps, are you going to sweep those powerful teams once again?

If Mu Chen showed any slight intentions, those in the Top 16 would immediately ignite their Academy Plaques.

Seeing her reaction, Mu Chen helplessly smiled as he replied, "I believe I know where Ji Xuan got his points from."

Luo Li and the rest looked over at his direction, even Wen Qingxuan as well.

"They used temptations and threatening means to keep a bunch in storage." Mu Chen said lightly as he continued, "Those in storage could provide Ji Xuan with a large sum of points at the last minute. However, he had it deeply concealed this whole time and has never revealed them."

The so-called "storage" was similar to raising livestock, butchering them

the moment they were fattened. However, it wasn't flesh that was butchered, but points.

"Storage?" The eyes of Luo Li and the rest changed a little. They never imagined that Ji Xuan would resort to such a dishonorable method. It wasn't easy to have storages in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament. There wasn't any meaning to it if it was a small amount and it would easily lead to a rebound as well. The moment hundreds of teams began to fight back, no one could withstand it. The moment there was a large number of casualties, they would have their qualifications in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament stripped from them as well.

"How did you know about it?" Wen Qingxuan questioned in puzzlement. If Ji Xuan had resorted to such methods, he should have concealed himself deep enough that he wouldn't reveal it.

"Because I know him too well. No matter what he does, he would leave a backup plan. Thus, I had someone secretly investigate and, fortunately, there were results of the investigation." Mu Chen replied with a smile.

"Even if you know that he had resorted to such methods, right now..." Shen Cangsheng spoke with a helpless voice. With the current situation, it wasn't an easy task to make a comeback.

"You have also made your preparations, right?" Luo Li's crystal eyes were quietly looking at Mu Chen.

"Pretty much."

Mu Chen smiled with a smear of charming confidence. Thereafter, he flicked his fingers as a pillar of Spiritual Energy soared up to the sky as it emitted an enormous radiance.

Everyone in this region was looking at him in astonishment.

The atmosphere was still tranquil, but after about ten minutes, the peace was smashed. Everyone raised their heads as they saw streaks of light in large amounts across the horizon.

Whoooooosh! Whooosh!

The streaks of light finally stopped in the sky as hundreds of teams were gathered.

Seeing those teams, those that were sharp seemed to have sensed something unusual as astonishment surged from their hearts. Overwhelmed with shock, they looked at Mu Chen.

Amongst the teams, a figure stepped out as he looked exceptionally familiar. He was the Captain of the Desolate Spiritual Academy that was once rescued by Mu Chen, Lin Zhou.

"Haha, Brother Mu, all the teams gathered here were saved by you in the past. We will return the favor we owed you back then."

Lin Zhou cupped his hands towards Mu Chen as his laughter roared in the sky, luring countless startled gazes onto him.

Who could have expected that when Ji Xuan had such a backup plan, Mu Chen had one of his own as well?!

Chapter 597: The Finals

More than a hundred teams majestically stood on the sky. Their formation had attracted the attention of everyone in this region, along with unconcealable astonishment in their eyes.

Even Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong and the rest of the team, with Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan included, were looking at the abrupt appearance of Lin Zhou's group with astonishment in their eyes. Clearly, this was out of their expectations as well.

"What is going on?" Wen Qingxuan involuntarily asked as she looked at Mu Chen.

"Ji Xuan had his method and so I made my own preparations as well." Mu Chen lightly smiled as he looked at Lin Zhou's group and continued, "And, they are the preparations I have made."

"You've created a storage as well?" Shen Cangsheng spoke out in astonishment.

"These teams owed me a favor. After that, I contacted Lin Zhou to contact the other teams with the hope that they could help me if there were any sudden changes."

Mu Chen continued with a soft voice, "But, naturally, if Ji Xuan did not resort to any dishonorable methods, they also would not show themselves."

Shen Cangsheng and the team exchanged looks amongst themselves and couldn't help smacking their lips. They were looking at Mu with odd gazes as these perfect preparations had thoroughly stunned them.

"Don't look at me with those gazes. I have fought with Ji Xuan too many times, so I have an understanding of his methods. In the Spiritual Road, I was tricked by him once. Although I was willing, I will not be tricked by him the second time." Mu Chen smiled.

"But, even if those teams do owe you a favor, it wouldn't be so simple for them to give their points to you, right?" Luo Li's clear pupils glanced at Mu

Chen.

Although only those in the Top 8 would proceed to the next round, while the rest were eliminated, that didn't mean that those points had no use to those teams. If their points were too low in the Great Spiritual Academy Tournament, the academy that they represent would be excluded out for the next tournament.

Mu Chen nodded his head as he spoke, "So I promised them 5 drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid per team."

Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan understood what was going on from Mu Chen's words as they looked at him with peculiar gazes. It turns out that there was an important condition. After all, the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid wasn't an ordinary item at their current cultivation.

Thus, it wasn't too surprising that those teams were willing to help Mu Chen for the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid, including the favor they owed to him.

"How are you going to get so much Sovereign Spiritual Liquid?" Luo Li asked in doubt. They hadn't obtained so much Sovereign Spiritual Liquid back when they were at the Hidden Spiritual Courtyard.

"Could it be that you can unseal the Spiritual Condensing Bowl?"

Mu Chen nodded as he smiled. "Because of the fact that I have grown stronger, I tried using some methods. Although I wasn't able to completely unseal the Spiritual Condensing Bowl, I managed to open a tiny crack. Through that crack, I was able to obtain over eight hundred drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid."

Luo Li nodded her head from Mu Chen's answer. No wonder Mu Chen could be so generous, so it turns out that he had obtained a huge amount of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid.

"That's filthy rich." Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong and the rest smacked their lips. An ordinary person could definitely not give out something like five hundred drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid so easily. The Sovereign Spiritual Liquid was important to even Sovereign experts, not to mention

those that were around their levels who had yet to come in contact with Sovereign Realm.

"I don't want to do this as well..."

Mu Chen sighed as he let out a mouthful of air. Five hundred drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid was not a small amount. Even if Mu Chen had the Spiritual Condensing Bowl, he was heart pained at this decision. But aside from this, he had no other way.

He knew that Ji Xuan was sly, thus to keep things in check, he had to resort to unusual methods as well.

"Indeed, you have already made your preparations, seems like I offered a favor for naught." Wen Qingxuan's slender eyes stared at Mu Chen as she said faintly after understanding what Mu Chen had said as she flung her lips aside.

She was still quite worried earlier, but who could have expected that in an instant, Mu Chen had already flipped the unfavorable situation around? Although the latter had always maintained a cautious mindset, she was also slightly startled or even admired him. However, her prideful character made her feel unhappy. After all, with her character, it was extremely rare for her to have said those words earlier. But who could have imagined that, in the end, she was the one overthinking the situation?

Mu Chen stared at Wen Qingxuan's charming face for a long time, before speaking with an earnest tone, "Although my methods were in place to keep Ji Xuan in check, it isn't too honorable as well. Thus, I have not spoken about it. Furthermore... thanks for that, Qingxuan."

Mu Chen's gaze stopped at Wen Qingxuan's face. Seeing that the former was using an earnest gaze as he looked at her, her face was a little red, but she continued to make a strong front as she replied, "I'm not that close to you, what are you calling me? You only need to explain these matters to Luo Li, it has nothing to do with me. If it wasn't for you traveling a long distance to rescue me back then, and in addition to my loathe for Ji Xuan, I wouldn't bother myself with your matters."

Luo Li pursed her lips as she smiled from the side.

Mu Chen also smiled as he knew how prideful Wen Qingxuan was, thus he did not speak any further and shifted his gaze to Lin Zhou's group. He cupped his hands as he said, "Captain Lin Zhou, I express my gratitude for this."

"Haha, what are you talking about, Brother Mu? We have all received favor from you and, naturally, we will return the favor you gave us." Lin Zhou roared with laughter as he waved his hand. Over a hundred other Captains from various teams took out their Academy Plaques as their plaques flickered with light, turning into streaks of light as they flew out.

Mu Chen raised the Academy Plaque in his hand as rays of light surged, absorbing all those lights directed at him.

As the lights were absorbed, the Academy Plaque in Mu Chen's hand glowed with radiance. Along with it, his points were soaring at a terrifying speed.

180,000... 200,000... 230,000... 260,000...

After reaching 260,000 points, it finally slowed down and the scarlet points instantly made every team in this region suck in a mouthful of chilled air.

The points of Mu Chen's team had flown by nearly 100,000.

When Mu Chen's points soared, the team led by Mu Chen went up as well, surpassing Ji Xuan and stood firmly at the Numero Uno.

In less than half an hour, the Numero Uno ranking had changed its owner again!

Mu Chen looked at the drastic increase of his points with a faint smile. Thereafter, he cupped his hands towards Lin Zhou's group and waved his hand, more than a hundred streaks of light flew out from his sleeve towards the direction of Lin Zhou's party.

Lin Zhou's party knew what Mu Chen's action meant as they grabbed a streak of light each with their hands. The streaks of light turned into

sparkling and translucent jade bottles. Inside those jade bottles, there were five drops of sparkling Sovereign Spiritual Liquid roaming inside, emitting astonishing Spiritual Energy fluctuations at the same time.

Looking at the Sovereign Spiritual Liquids contained within the jade bottle, the eyes of Lin Zhou's group were surging with unconcealable excitement. Soon after, all of them deeply cupped their hands at Mu Chen to express their gratitude.

Numerous teams in this region were looking at Mu Chen with complicated glances. Who could have imagined that the hopeless situation had flipped around under the smile of that youth?

"How formidable." A soft sigh resounded. In this sort of situation, no one would criticise Mu Chen's methods. After all, they were well aware that the way Ji Xuan obtained his points wasn't honorable as well. All Mu Chen did was giving Ji Xuan a taste of his own medicine.

"Mu Chen and Ji Xuan are both monstrous characters. Who knows how intense their battle will be in the Finals when they face against each other..."

On the mountain peak, Mu Chen's gaze fell onto Shen Cangsheng and the rest of the party as he solemnly said, "The Finals will soon begin and I hope that the two teams of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy can be reorganized to participate the Finals with our strongest."

"We'll heed your instructions." Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong, Xu Huang, He Yao and the rest nodded their heads with heavy expressions.

"I plan to reorganize the two teams with Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong, and Su Xuan joining my team." Mu Chen looked at He Yao, Zhao Qingshan and the rest of the group. Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong, and Su Xuan were the strongest aside from him and Luo Li. Thus, if they could reorganize their team, it would naturally become a powerful formation.

"I have no opinions except for one request." He Yao, Zhao Qingshan, Mu Fengyang and the others exchanged a look as they smiled. They weren't bothered by this matter as they understood the importance of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's victory.

"What is it?"

"Defeat Ji Xuan for us!" He Yao's group said with heavy voices.

"Leave it to me." Mu Chen smiled as he extended his hand out.

Luo Li also extended her slender hand out as she placed it on top of Mu Chen's. Su Xuan, Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong followed after as fighting intent blazed in their eyes.

"The Seniors and Juniors of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy are waiting for us, we can't let them be disappointed."

Mu Chen placed his other hand on the Academy Plaque as he looked at Wen Qingxuan, "Qingxuan, are you ready?"

Wen Qingxuan was also holding onto her Academy Plaque as she raised her brows at Mu Chen with laughter. "If we are unlucky and meet each other in the Finals, don't blame me for not having any leniency. Our cooperation ends here."

"Likewise."

Mu Chen laughed as his black pupils surged with spirit.

Tsssssssss!

The Academy Plaque in Mu Chen's hand turned red as a flame sprouted out, engulfing his Academy Plaque.

At the same time, Wen Qingxuan had also ignited hers.

Every single team in this region was looking at this scene with complicated expressions. Eight of the Top 16 had ignited their Academy Plaques, meaning this tournament that lasted nearly half a year had finally come to an end.

Coming up next would be the decisive battle that everyone would be focused on.

Whoooooosh!

When the Academy Plaques in Mu Chen and Wen Qingxuan's hand lit up, every single Academy Plaque in this tournament combusted as well,

turning into radiant pillars of light as they engulfed the teams within them...

Countless pillars of light soared over the horizon.

At this instant, fighting intent filled the entire heavens and earth.

Chapter 598: Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy after Half a Year

The Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy

Compared to the Spiritual Academy Competition, which was full of cruel fights, the atmosphere was quite peaceful here. It seemed even the spiritual energy was flowing indolently. The breeze coming from afar made the whole academy quite vibrant and energetic.

Half a year had passed since the commencement of the Academy Competition.

When Mu Chen and his teammates had just left for the competition, almost all the students from the academy were eagerly looking forward to hearing good news from them. As time slowly went by, they heard nothing from the Academy Competition, so they had to calm down and resume their daily cultivation. From time to time, they would look up habitually at the ancient bell which was placed at the center of the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy.

Once news of the Academy Competition was sent to the academy, the ancient bell would ring.

However, it was quite disappointing that the ancient bell had been silent for half a year.

The Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy was full of vigor and vitality. No one, even Mu Chen and his teammates, who were fighting in the Academy Competition, could stop the academy's pace of progress.

Therefore, after their departure, life in the gigantic academy was still colorful. Countless budding talents kept emerging and making waves in this mighty academy.

However, no matter how marvelous these new talents and dark horses were, nobody could replace the one who ranked first in the Heaven Rank. Even though he had been absent for half a year.

It seemed that name had become an insurmountable mountain in front of all the talents of the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy.

Even so, these talents didn't give up. The sense of pressure caused by that name had been turned into the impetus of their painstaking cultivation. They kept challenging themselves. Even when they failed, they got up excitedly and told themselves that they were a little bit closer to that name.

As a result of this zealous atmosphere, more and more people were cultivating in the Spirit Convergence Arrays and the Lightning Territory of the academy. Everyone got more and more crazed in cultivation. The tutors and elders of the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy were quite gratified to see this proactive situation in the academy.

...

Goddess Luo Association, the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy

The Goddess Luo Association was headquartered in the central area of the academy where the spiritual energy was much denser than that of the peripheral areas. Student societies that enjoyed such a privilege were quite rare in the academy.

Outside the headquarters of the Goddess Luo Association, there was still a vast cultivation platform, which stretched into a huge and limpid lake. Faint spiritual clouds formed by dense spiritual energy were drifting above the lake. The whole area was just like a wonderland.

At this moment, around a thousand people were cultivating on the cultivation platform. The air-rending sounds generated from their practice sessions constantly resounded.

Within half a year, the Goddess Luo Association had experienced remarkable expansion. After finishing their green-hand period, the newbies who joined this society at the very beginning started to reveal their talents and become radiant in their own way in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy.

Currently, the Goddess Luo Association fully deserved the title as the

strongest student society in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy.

The cultivation platform was crowded with members of the Goddess Luo Association, among whom many people kept setting their sights on the central area of the platform during their cultivation. The two beautiful figures at the center of the crowd were naturally the focus of these people.

One of the two beautiful figures, Su Ling'Er, younger sister of Su Xuan, was quite familiar to everyone. This girl, who used to be difficult, had matured a lot within half a year. Wearing a brilliant red dress, she was still very eye-catching. Her graceful and curvy body, as well as her proud posture, were extraordinarily tempting.

Su Ling'Er joined the Goddess Luo Association shortly after Mu Chen and his teammates left for the Academy Competition. Her joining was widely welcomed in the Goddess Luo Association. After all, Su Ling'Er could be regarded as a celebrity in the Northern Heaven Academy. Many people adored her, so her joining could further strengthen the Goddess Luo Association.

Another beautiful figure was Yu Xi, a young girl also from the Northern Spiritual Academy, who greeted Mu Chen before he left for the Academy Competition.

She was quite young, maybe about the same age as Sun'Er. However, Yu Xi had become the most renowned person in the Goddess Luo Association. After entering the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, Yu Xi started to reveal her extraordinary talents. Within half a year, she had catapulted from nobody to second place in the Spirit Ranking.

The first place was the record created by Mu Chen at that time.

Her pace of progress, which might be a little bit slower than Mu Chen's, was amazing enough. If Mu Chen could be regarded as the representation of his contemporaries, it was highly possible that Yu Xi would stand at the top spot among all new students.

Maybe Mu Chen's position could be replaced by Yu Xi in two years. Of course, Mu Chen would have long left the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy by then.

At this moment, Yu Xi was sitting on a huge rock on the cultivation platform. She rested her slim arms on the rock. Her green dress made her slender and graceful body slimmer. Her pretty face was so striking that many people were looking at her.

In the Goddess Luo Association, a busybody fabricated a so-called title of, "Three Fairies of the Goddess Luo Association." Naturally Su Ling'Er and Yu Xi were part of this title, and the last position was given to Sun'Er.

Most of the time, Sun'Er was learning spiritual arrays from Ling Xi. Although the progress of her spiritual energy cultivation was not very prominent, thanks to her extraordinary talent in the spiritual array, she had progressed tremendously in the cultivation of spiritual arrays in half a year. Recently, during a random practice session, she even made a sensation in the academy by defeating a senior who ranked tenth in the Heaven Rank.

Therefore, the most famous people in the Goddess Luo Association were not those seniors but these three girls who were as beautiful as flowers.

Yu Xi was sitting on a cold rock. She had just finished her cultivation. Now she was carefully bending her slender, jade-like legs. She rested her cute and round chin on her knees. Her big, ebony eyes drifted to the ancient bell which was on a mountain in the center of the academy. The adorable sights around her didn't draw any of her attention.

Beside Yu Xi, Su Ling'Er was also raising her head, looking at that ancient bell with her beautiful eyes. Her always-lively expression was now very calm as if she were thinking about something.

"Hehe, you two are missing Mu Chen again, right?" Suddenly tender laughter came through. Yu Xi and Su Ling'Er raised their heads hurriedly and saw Ye Qingling standing aside and smiling at them.

"No one misses that guy!" Su Ling'Er said, pouting her lips. "I was wondering how my elder sister and her teammates are at this moment..."

"No, no..."

Yu Xi's pretty face was flushed. She waved her hands hurriedly and her

big eyes were avoiding eye contact, which made her statements less persuasive. To be exact, she had only met Mu Chen once. However, Mu Chen's name couldn't be more familiar to her. Since she entered the Northern Spiritual Academy, she heard the legendary stories of Mu Chen constantly. Even now that she had entered the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, what she saw and heard were still the dazzling achievements of this young man. Of course, she had to admit that she was totally shocked by the breathtaking fight through which Mu Chen grabbed the first place of the Heaven Rank from Shen Cangsheng.

At that time, she was greatly impressed by that slender figure, which was full of high-spirited fighting will. Of course, that day Mu Chen was really in good shape. It might be assumed that his figure was imprinted in the hearts of many girls of the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy that day.

"Sister Ye, do you think Brother Mu Chen and his teammates could enter the final match?" Yu Xi hesitated a bit but couldn't help finally asking with a blush.

Ye Qingling also sat down beside them. With eyes fixed on that quiet ancient bell, she was silent for a while. Then she said, "I've heard that the Academy Competition of this time is the most hotly contested one compared to the competitions held in the past decade."

With their expressions changed a bit, Yu Xi and Su Ling'Er were biting their lips slightly. They certainly knew Mu Chen's strength, but they also knew Mu Chen's opponents during this Academy Competition were all the most gifted students from other academies. It was not a simple task to stand out from the fierce competition.

"Brother Mu Chen and his teammates will certainly enter the final match!" Yu Xi said firmly, clenching her little fists. She couldn't believe in her heart that invincible figure could be defeated by others.

"We all hope so!" Ye Qingling rubbed Yu Xi's head. Several days ago, Sun'Er told Ye Qingling that an extremely gifted guy emerged in the Saint Spiritual Academy whose name was Ji Xuan. This guy had a long-standing feud with Mu Chen. The elders of the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy

even talked about this Ji Xuan with dignified expressions, which could well illustrate his formidable strength. An opponent of Mu Chen's like Ji Xuan really made them uneasy.

Although Mu Chen was also quite powerful, could he defeat that fearsome guy who could even worry the elders of the academy?

Ye Qingling sighed slightly in her heart and felt a little bit uneasy.

It seemed Yu Xi and Su Ling'Er had sensed Ye Qingling's anxiety, so they fell into silence after making eye contact.

Dong!

When they stayed silent, suddenly an ancient and distant bell's ring resounded between heaven and earth.

The ring of the bell boomed across the whole Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. The academy, which was quite noisy and vibrant before, quieted down immediately. Countless students stared at each other vacantly. After a short while, they came to themselves and realized the meaning of the bell's ring.

On that rock, Ye Qingling, Yu Xi and Su Ling'Er were also frozen for a while. Then they raised their heads and fixed their beautiful eyes on that giant ancient bell in surprise. Excitement and strained expectation showed on their pretty faces.

Whoosh! Whoosh!

Above the academy, ubiquitous air-rending sounds were echoing suddenly. The whole academy was crazy about the ring of the bell.

Everyone knew what the ring of that bell stood for...

The final match of the Academy Competition had begun!

Chapter 599: Arena

Dong!

The melodious ring of the ancient bell resounded between heaven and earth. The mighty Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy fell into silence. However, the silence only lasted for a short while before being broken by the world-shaking exclamations.

The final match of the Academy Competition, for which they had been waiting for half a year, was finally commencing.

The whole Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy was inflamed by this hot atmosphere. Consumed by expectation and anxiety, numerous students were looking with great intensity in the direction where the ancient bell was located.

They wondered very much about the recent developments of the two teams fighting in the competition that were representing their academy.

Whoosh!

Air-rending sounds were resounding between heaven and earth. A dense mass of people was gathering in the sky. At the entrance of the Lightning Territory, the students who planned to cultivate in the Lightning Territory turned back simultaneously and dashed excitedly towards the ancient bell.

News was spreading quickly, even into the Lightning Territory and the Spirit Convergence Array. People who were in seclusion for their painstaking cultivation were awakened. When they heard the news that the final match of the Academy Competition had commenced, all the them stood up excitedly and dashed to the Northern Heaven Academy without thinking about their cultivation.

The atmosphere in the academy climaxed at this moment.

While this boiling atmosphere was permeating the academy, on a distant mountain, a gate which was always closed was opened. A graceful and beautiful figure walked quickly out of the yard.

The beautiful figure was wearing a white dress. Her black hair was

cascading to her tiny waist. She was holding an ancient scroll imprinted with complicated spiritual array patterns in her jade-like hands. Normally her face was filled with apathy as if nothing in this world could attract her attention. Now her face was extraordinarily elegant and pretty.

Her always-apathetic face was uncommonly vivid. A glint of rejoicing was seen in her beautiful eyes.

Standing outside the yard, she raised her head and looked with her beautiful eyes in the direction of that ancient bell. Her red lips formed a charming smile, making her incredibly beautiful.

"Sister Ling Xi, can Brother Mu Chen enter the final match?" Behind Ling Xi, Sun'Er wore a black ponytail and was blinking her big eyes. Her pretty face was also filled with excitement. After half a year's waiting, finally they got news of Mu Chen.

"Of course!" Ling Xi replied without any hesitation. As the son of Aunt Jing, how difficult could it be for Mu Chen to enter the final match of the Academy Competition?

Although Ling Xi was clear about how fierce the competition was, she had transferred some of her excessive admiration and reverence of Aunt Jing to Mu Chen. Therefore, she didn't believe Mu Chen was inferior to any of his peers.

Sun'Er giggled, covering her mouth with her hands. "It seems Sister Ling Xi is most confident about Brother Mu Chen. Previously, even the Chief and other Elders of our academy worried about Brother Mu Chen because one of his opponents was really powerful.

"In addition, Sister Ling Xi never laughed since the departure of Brother Mu Chen. Now you are so delightful as soon as you hear news about him."

Ling Xi's pretty face flushed a bit. Then she squinted her beautiful eyes slightly and tossed an ill-disposed glare at Sun'Er. "It seems the time you spent in the Spiritual Array House last time was too short. Next time I will double the time for you."

"Ah? No, I was wrong, Sister Ling Xi!" Sun'Er said pitifully, immediately

turning pale.

Ling Xi tapped her slender finger lightly on Sun'Er's smooth forehead before letting her go. Her beautiful eyes, which were fixed on the ancient bell, became more solemn. After restoring calm, she had also realized Mu Chen's hardship in this competition.

After all, the one whose name was Ji Xuan was really a tough opponent. Now he might be as strong as some elders of the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy.

Ling Xi had no doubt that Mu Chen would lead his team to enter the final match. However, if he encountered Ji Xuan, a fierce fight would be inevitable.

Ji Xuan was so gifted that he could even be considered a pretty good genius in some time-honored clans.

Whoosh!

When the atmosphere in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy climaxed, several figures flew out from a vast hall of the academy and stood in the air. The one standing in the front was Chief Tai Cang.

At this moment, Chief Tai Cang was also nervously looking at the ancient bell. The two teams representing the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy were powerful and strong. However, Chief Tai Cang and some of the other Elders also knew this Academy Competition could be considered the most contested competition with the most powerful contestants in the past dozen years.

Hence, it was not an easy task to achieve accomplishments in this Academy Competition.

Nevertheless, no matter how difficult it was, Mu Chen and his teammates had to fight, for the result of this Academy Competition was directly related to whether the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy could maintain their title as one of the Five Great Academies.

If they lost this honorary title, it would be a serious blow for all the students in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. Chief Tai Cang and

other elders couldn't imagine how low the morale in the academy would be then.

It would strike a fatal blow to the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy.

Chief Tai Cang made eye contact with Hall Master Mo You and the other elders. All of them could sense solemnity in each other's eyes.

"Chief, it's about time to activate the passage to the arena," Hall Master Mo You said in a low voice. It was useless to worry at this moment. They had to activate the passage to the arena and then they could know whether Mu Chen and his teammates had achieved good results.

Chief Tai Cang nodded slightly. He then changed the spiritual seals and a beam of spiritual light shot out from his fingertip like a shooting star flying in the sky. Finally, the spiritual light hit the ancient bell heavily.

Dong!

The bell's melodious ring resounded again.

Hum! Hum!

As the bell was rung again, suddenly golden light gushed out from the ancient bell like tidewater. It seemed the sky and earth were inundated with the golden light.

The golden light was gathering slowly in the sky and finally formed a golden passage by twisting the space.

"This passage leads to the Arena, which is a small space where the final match of the Academy Competition will be held. All students, except for freshmen, can enter the Arena. Disorderly behaviors are not allowed in the Arena. Offenders will be punished according to the discipline of the academy." Chief Tai Cang looked around the whole academy. His vigorous and firm voice was echoing in everyone's ears.

"Comply!"

Upon hearing his words, numerous students nodded excitedly in agreement, except for the new students who were whining sadly. They knew they could also watch the match through the light screen projection

in the academy. However, the light screen projection could never compare to watching the match in person.

Chief Tai Cang ignored their whines. He took the lead and turned himself into a light beam and then dashed into the golden passage. Behind him, Hall Master Mo You followed him closely.

Whoosh! Whoosh!

The area was filled with the ubiquitous air-rending sound. In the mighty Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, crowds of people jumped into the sky and dashed into the golden passage like a swarm of locusts.

On that mountain, Ling Xi hesitated a little bit when she saw that golden passage.

"Sister Ling Xi, let's also go! I really want to know how Brother Mu Chen is now." Blinking her big eyes, Sun'Er pulled Ling Xi's sleeve.

Upon hearing her words, Ling Xi instantly raised her pretty brows and then said as if nothing had happened, "Fine. Since you want to have a look, I will take you there."

When she was speaking, she noticed Sun'Er was covering her mouth, giggling. Ling Xi's face was a bit flushed before glowering at Sun'Er. Even this little girl had started to make fun of her.

Holding Sun'Er's little hand, Ling Xi waved her hand and dashed out by turning into a beam of light.

"Let's also go!"

In the headquarters of the Goddess Luo Association, Ye Qingling also said excitedly.

"But I am a new student!" Pouting her little lips, Yu Xi almost burst into tears.

"Don't worry. You could sneak your way in. The guys from the Punishment Hall are watching. However, they will show due respect to people from the Goddess Luo Association. The three seniors of the Punishment Hall have all been defeated by Mu Chen before, so they will

not stop you," Su Ling'Er said with a charming smile.

"Alright." After hesitating a bit, Yu Xi nodded, clenching her teeth, for her emotion had prevailed over reason.

"Let' s go!" Waving her hand, Ye Qingling took the lead and dashed out, closely followed by Yu Xi and Su Ling'Er. The three of them merged into the tremendous group of light beams and dashed into the golden passage.

When they were entering the golden passage, Ye Qingling, Yu Xi and Su Ling'Er could clearly sense the violent space fluctuation. Their eyes were filled with golden light, which made them a little bit dizzy.

Luckily, the dizziness only lasted a short while. The golden light in their eyes gradually receded. The landscape ahead started to change and they also started to open their mouths wide.

In front of them, there was a vast area between heaven and earth, which was inundated with the earth-shattering noise.

Looking around, the immense crowd of people seemed to be boundless.

In the distant sky, there were also golden, spiral passages, through which numerous people gushed out. Apparently, according to their garments, they were students of other spiritual academies.

Almost all large spiritual academies could activate the passage to the Arena, so that their students could enter and enjoy the final match.

The huge crowds of people were quite distinct from each other. Students of each spiritual academy gathered in one area and stood in the air in formidable arrays, which were quite spectacular.

Ye Qingling, Yu Xi and Su Ling'Er were also dumbfounded by this grand scene. After a while, they came to themselves and started to look ahead. A gigantic golden stone platform was floating between heaven and earth. Around the stone platform, a golden light cover completely separated the inside area of the stone platform from the outside.

Whoosh! Whoosh!

When the area between heaven and earth was occupied by huge crowds

of people, golden light suddenly fell from the sky outside the golden stone platform. When the golden light dissipated, many teams in different garments appeared.

These were all the teams participating in the Academy Competition.

Numerous people full of admiration fixed their eyes on these teams. These teams participated in the competition by representing their academies. They deserved the respect of everyone in the audience, whether these teams were from their academies or not.

Dong!

The ancient bell was rung again.

This time, almost everyone cast their burning gazes on the most central area of that gigantic battle stage where golden light started to blossom.

The noisy crowds of people calmed down abruptly. Everyone was opening their eyes wide because they knew the strongest top eight teams, which had entered the final match, would appear next.

Chapter 600: The Golden Flight of Stairs

Floating in the sky, the gigantic combat stage was just like the birthplace of the gods. Above the combat stage, the dazzling golden light was so spectacular, it was as if heaven and earth were covered by a golden sea.

The area surrounding the vast combat stage was occupied by students from different spiritual academies. The crowds of people extended into the distance as far as the eye could see.

The students from different spiritual academies all stood in the areas for their academies, which were separated by many light barriers. There were way too many people in the area. Once combat began, these overexcited young bloods might get involved in an extremely chaotic gang fight.

That kind of gang fight had happened before, so normally the Five Great Academies would take precautionary measures to avoid it happening again.

Now all the eyes inside the space were concentrated on the center of the combat stage where golden light was permeating slowly and forming a stage with golden stairs.

The stairway had eight levels that ascended sequentially. The highest level was about 1,000 feet high where the golden light formed the shape of a splendid golden lotus.

This golden stairway was the so-called stairway of the final match. Only the top eight were qualified to stand on that stairway.

Whoosh!

While everyone was looking at the golden stairway, the space above the golden combat stage suddenly twisted. In the next moment, five figures appeared in the air.

When the five figures appeared, golden light condensed behind them and was turned into huge light seats that could be used to overlook the vast golden combat stage below.

In this area, countless students from different spiritual academies were

looking with awe at the five figures. These five figures were principals of the Five Great Academies–in other words, Chiefs of the Five Great Academies.

Sitting calmly in the rear left, Chief Tai Cang's eyes were deep and profound. An indescribable pressure gushed out from his plain appearance and was quite a deterrent.

The one who was sitting on the right side of Chief Tai Cang was an elder in a green robe. With white brows and beard, his skin was also white and tender as an infant's. It seemed there was a green pine tree growing on his palm, emitting green, jade-like rays. The swaying of the pine tree could even slightly twist the space around it.

This was Chief Tian Song of the Azure Sky Spiritual Academy.

A gaunt old man was sitting in the front left. He was quite short and plain-looking, twisting his beard with his withered hand. He had a drowsy look on his face, however, his name was very arrogant.

This was Wu Tianwang, the Chief of the Martial Spiritual Academy.

A beautiful lady was sitting beside Chief Wu Tianwang. Wearing a gorgeous dress, she was graceful and majestic. Her long hair, which was like the tail of a phoenix, was pulled up into a bun. With her jade-like skin, she seemed to be exceptionally young compared to the other four Chiefs. People in the know were aware that among the other four Chiefs, only the Chief of the Saint Spiritual Academy was more senior.

She was Chief Tang Qiu of the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy.

Among the five seats, the most conspicuous one was definitely the one in the middle. A majestic figure was calmly sitting on that light seat. He was awesome and daunting, just like a sky-high mountain erected between heaven and earth.

This was Chief Tian Sheng of the Saint Spiritual Academy, who could be considered the most famous person in the Five Great Academies. His strength was also unfathomable.

The five giants represented the best of the best strength of the countless

spiritual academies. They were apparently the most powerful ones in the field of spiritual academies.

After the appearance of the Chiefs of the Five Great Academies, they made eye contact and nodded at each other as a courtesy.

"Chiefs of other spiritual academies, please take your seats." A glint of a smile appeared on Chief Tian Sheng's angular face. His voice, which could bring happiness to others like a spring breeze, was echoing in each corner of the space.

While his voice was echoing, the space in the sky twisted again. Many figures appeared by tearing the space apart. With a formidable sense of pressure, these people didn't have a powerful fluctuation of spiritual energies around their bodies. However, everyone knew all of these people were principals of various spiritual academies, who also had extraordinary strength.

After their appearance, these Chiefs of various spiritual academies cupped their hands in the distance towards the direction of the Chiefs of the Five Great Academies. Then they waved their robe sleeves to turn the light into light seats in the sky, so that they could overlook the earth by sitting on those seats.

Shooting a glance at Chief Tian Sheng, who inadvertently took the dominant position, Chief Tai Cang curled his lips slightly. Does this Tian Sheng really consider himself as the Chief of the Top Academy?

Although the other three Chiefs said nothing, a trace of dissatisfaction could also be found in their eyes.

It seemed Chief Tian Sheng was unaware of the dissatisfaction of the other Chiefs. Suddenly he turned to Chief Tai Cang and said with a wee smile, "Chief Tai Cang, the Academy Competition at this time is really important to the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy."

Chief Tai Cang also smiled and said, "Don't bother reminding me. The Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy will naturally do its best in this Academy Competition."

"Of course you will." Chief Tian Sheng nodded with a smile. Then he said, "I also hope the performance of the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy will be better this time; otherwise, it will also cause damage to the rest of the academies if you lose the title as one of the Five Great Academies."

Chief Tai Cang replied with a slight grin.

Light flashed in the eyes of the other three Chiefs. Apparently, they had realized there was a confrontation between Chief Tian Sheng and Chief Tai Cang from hearing their exchange. However, they were not surprised because the relations between the Saint Spiritual Academy and the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy couldn't be considered good. The Saint Spiritual Academy had planned to help a top-notch spiritual academy obtain a position in the Five Great Academies, so that the Saint Spiritual Academy could get more support to solidify their position as the Top Academy. However, they didn't expect the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy to jump in and obtain a position in the Five Great Academies, which ruined the Saint Spiritual Academy's wishful plan.

"It is no use to say anything now. Let's just activate the Golden Flight of Stairs. I really want to know which teams have entered the top eight in this Academy Competition." Chief Tang Qiu of the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy smiled slightly. Her smile was full of the charm of a mature women and was quite tempting.

"Hehe, what Chief Tang Qiu said is right. If a student is not capable, it is useless to say anything now. Chief Tian Sheng, you have Ji Xuan from the Saint Spiritual Academy, but don't underestimate the young guys from our academies," the Chief of the Martial Spiritual Academy, who was quite short, said with a smile. He was the most plain looking one among the five Chiefs. However, Chief Tian Sheng said no more. He only nodded and gave a small smile.

The five Chiefs extended their hands and flicked their fingers simultaneously. The next moment, five beams of spiritual light flowed down and covered the golden stairway, which was attracting the attention of all the onlookers.

Whiz! Whiz!

Along with the permeation of the spiritual light, the onlookers found the space above the golden stairway starting to slowly twist.

In that space at that moment, the atmosphere was frozen. The noisy onlookers quieted down immediately. All of them turned their eyes to that giant golden stairway.

As numerous onlookers stared in amazement, the golden light at the eighth level started to dissipate. Five figures slowly emerged before the eyes of the onlookers.

Fang Yun came out with four of his teammates. All of them were wearing the badge of their academy; therefore, they were identified when they first appeared.

"Number Eight is the team of the Nine Cauldrons Spiritual Academy!"

"Awesome! No wonder it used to be one of the Five Great Academies!"

When Fang Yun's team appeared, an uproar burst out between heaven and earth.

While that uproar was permeating the area, the golden light in the next few levels also started to dissipate. Teams with formidable strength appeared one after another.

"Which spiritual academy ranks seventh?"

"It seems to be the Invincible Spiritual Academy... Isn't it a quite mediocre academy? How could it be possible even their team could enter the top eight?"

"Where does that sixth ranked Blood Spiritual Academy come from? I've never heard of it..."

"That's why it is the Academy Competition! It is really full of crouching tigers and hidden dragons! No matter which academy they come from, the top eight can fully demonstrate their formidable strength."

"Number five is the team of the Azure Sky Spiritual Academy. Their team leader should be Liu Qingyun, right? Hehe, finally the teams of the

Five Great Academies start to emerge..."

"Is number four the team from the Martial Spiritual Academy? My Gosh! That's Wu Ling, the most brilliant genius of the Martial Spiritual Academy! A genius like him could only rank fourth? How formidable could the top three be?"

On that golden combat stage, when the five teams valiantly appeared, the space was filled with uproars and countless voices shot up in the sky. Many people were so excited because the brilliance of this Academy Competition had gone far beyond their expectations.

On the light seats in the sky, the Chiefs of the Five Great Academies showed different expressions after seeing this scene. Blowing through his beard, Chief Wu of the Martial Spiritual Academy was apparently unsatisfied with the placement of Wu Ling and his team as fourth.

Chief Tai Cang was still calm; however, light was flashing in his eyes. Now five teams in the top eight had appeared and only the top three hadn't shown up. Not even one team from the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy had appeared.

For this situation, there could be only two results. The first result could be none of the teams from the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy entered the top eight. The other result could be their teams had accomplished good results, going beyond Chief Tai Cang's expectations.

For the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, one result was paradise and the other result was hell.

This world of difference could even create waves in the heart of Chief Tai Cang.

In this situation, even Chief Tai Cang couldn't keep calm, let alone the students of the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy.

In the area where students of the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy were gathered, all the students were on tenterhooks. The tense atmosphere was almost suffocating.

In front of the students, Ye Qingling, Su Ling'Er and Yu Xi also showed

anxiety on their pretty faces. Even Elder Ling Xi, who was standing beside them, was compressing her red lips. She was holding Sun'Er's little hand, her grip gradually increasing. Sun'Er made a bitter face at the pressure, but she didn't dare say anything.

Hum!

Golden light started to permeate the highest three levels of the golden stairway. The figures of the top three teams gradually emerged.

Everyone in the area fixed their eyes tightly on them.

The golden light condensed and then gradually dissipated. On the highest three levels of the golden stairway, the three teams representing the most powerful teams of this Academy Competition finally appeared before the eyes of numerous people.

When the three teams showed up, the atmosphere between heaven and earth was instantly frozen.

Chapter 601: The Top Three

A resplendent golden flight of stairs stood tall above the golden battle stage and at the apex of the platform, three teams proudly stood as they received countless stares from the masses.

Silence permeated the air as glances were directed towards the teams, with many people's eyes widening at the scene before them.

At the third step of the golden stairs stood five beautiful girls. The girl standing right in front instantly attracted the attention of the entire audience.

The lady held a golden spear, her black hair cascading down her shoulders. Golden armor accentuated her slender and soft figure, and her ethereal beauty was as pretty as a painting. Pride shone in her mesmerizing eyes, and her neck was fair and elegant, resembling that of a swan. She was well endowed, with voluptuous curves, a slim waist and long shapely legs. She was a vision.

Although the four girls beside her were rather charming, standing next to her they seemed downright ordinary, as she was so captivating.

Countless eyes were glued to her, along with many heated gazes.

"Wow!"

When this team appeared, cheers erupted from the direction where the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy was located. It was essentially the most conspicuous area of this vast region, as many young girls rejoiced with excitement. This team was a representative of their Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy.

Upon hearing the gleeful cheers from the girls, students from the other Spiritual Academies couldn't help but glance towards them with yearning in their eyes. After all, in the Five Great Academies, the favorite place of many male disciples was undeniably the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy. No man could resist the allure of being surrounded by many

beautiful ladies.

"As expected, Senior Qingxuan got into the top three!"

"Hehe, she's truly worthy to be the person I admire most."

"But I thought Sister Qingxuan could clinch the top position. It seems like there are many hidden masters in this Spiritual Academy Competition."

Amidst the soft and gentle murmuring, people finally started to shift their glances upwards where they saw a majestic team standing on the second step of the golden stairs.

Every member of the team wore white robes and exuded imposing auras. However, their faces were not filled with joy and excitement, but instead had downcast expressions. The leader had an especially livid expression.

"Saint Spiritual Academy wins the second position in the competition's elimination phase!"

"Their captain is Ji Xuan, right? I heard of him long ago. He was forecast as the candidate most likely to be the champion. How did he fall to second position?"

"I'm not sure..."

"If even Ji Xuan is in second place, exactly who is in first place?"

Amidst the uproar, everyone's gazes abruptly shifted upwards, finally stopping to focus on the apex of the golden stairs. All attention locked onto this most prominent point in the area.

As the gazes converged, golden light dissipated, revealing five silhouettes as they came clearly into sight.

The captain was an adolescent, dressed in navy blue robes. He stood tall and upright like a spear, and was boyishly handsome. His obsidian eyes were as dark as the night sky. Despite his young age, his facial features were unlike that of a greenhorn, instead having resilience and confidence that was mature for his age.

Be it his appearance or the aura he exuded, he was on par with Ji Xuan

from the Saint Spiritual Academy.

Standing beside the youth was a graceful figure. She wore a similar long, navy blue dress which accentuated her svelte curves, easily enthralling many.

What amazed the crowd, however, was that her beauty was on par with Wen Qingxuan's. Her complexion was as fair as snow, and she had delicate eyebrows resembling the curve of a crescent moon, a body as slender as a light willow and eyes shimmering innocently like azure crystals. Her beautiful eyes had a magical charm, enchanting many as they forgot about their troubles upon gazing at her.

Her long hair fluttered in the wind and in that instant, everyone had the same thought, consisting of two words: absolutely exquisite.

Facing such an exceptional beauty, even the girls at the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy, who had impossibly high standards, were at a loss for words and did not dare to flippantly compare her to Wen Qingxuan.

Standing beside the girls was a lovely lady with long hair pouring down her shoulders. She had a particularly gentle charm. Although she was not as stunning as the former, she was still rather charismatic.

Next to them stood two tall young men, one handsome and the other arrogant. One glance and you would know that they were no ordinary men. No matter their aura or appearance, this team would have left people astonished.

It was as if the world stood still and silent for a moment while they were awestruck by this team standing at the zenith.

"It's our team from the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy!"

Suddenly, an exhilarated shout pierced through the silence as numerous disciples from the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy converged together, their faces red from letting out roars of excitement.

Everyone's eyes were filled with shock and ecstasy as the scene before them was too surreal. They never thought that Mu Chen and his team could ever obtain first place in the elimination phase of the competition!

They actually surpassed Ji Xuan, Wen Qingxuan, Wu Ling and Liu Qingyun, who were aces from the Five Great Academies!

"Bravo, Brother Mu!"

Numerous students from the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy roared in joy, their faces flushed with agitation. Everyone's eyes were filled with the thrill of it. The roaring cheers were deafening. This type of celebratory scene had not appeared for a long time, not since their Academy made it into the ranks of the Five Great Academies.

Amid the deafening roars, Ye Qingling, Su Ling'er and Yu Xi couldn't help but to gape in shock, surprise written in their eyes.

"Brother Mu is so... so awesome!" Yu Xi's face flushed red with excitement as she stuttered in awe, admiration clear in her doe eyes. Mu Chen and his team's results had completely surpassed the entire Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy's expectations.

"What an unbelievable freak," Ye Qingling muttered.

Stars glimmered in Su Ling'er's bright eyes and even with her spoiled temperament, she was too excited to contain her emotions.

"Wow, Brother Mu is too amazing!" Sun'Er cheered.

Ling Xi heaved a sigh of relief, as she glanced at the young man she had not seen for almost half a year. He seemed to have matured and was now rapidly improving.

The excitement from the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy caught the attention of disciples from the other academies. They looked pensive, especially the disciples from the Saint Spiritual Academy. They had always thought Ji Xuan would clinch the top position, but now they were all caught by surprise.

"What is there to be proud of? This is just an elimination phase. The real final battle starts now," some disciples from the Saint Spiritual Academy remarked disdainfully, as they stared at the cheering Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy disciples.

Similarly, disciples from the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy all directed gentle glances towards the apex of the golden battle stage.

"Who would have thought that the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy would clinch first position in the elimination phase this time?"

"Their captain is rather handsome, though I have never heard of him. When did the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy have such a skilled disciple?"

"..."

Murmured whispers spread through the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy. Many girls were uncertain, due to not having heard of Mu Chen.

"His name is Mu Chen, a newly recruited disciple in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy."

Amid the confusion, a voice rang in the air. The group of girls looked over in astonishment. A girl in a green dress glanced contemplatively at the dazzling figure standing on the golden battle stage.

The girl was sweet in appearance and attracted attention despite being surrounded by a group of girls. Giving off a vibrant disposition, she tied her hair into a ponytail and tucked it neatly around her slim waist.

"Hmm? Qian'Er, you know him?" some girls asked in surprise.

"Qian'Er is his childhood sweetheart." Standing next to her was a girl clad in a red dress, covering her mouth shyly as she smiled. She was a familiar face named Hong Ling, a disciple from the Northern Spiritual Academy.

The Qian'Er she mentioned was Tang Qian'Er, who grew up with Mu Chen, later entering the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy.

In two years' time, the young lady had matured into a beautiful woman. Her bright eyes glanced yearningly at the figure whom she had not seen in a long time.

Despite knowing that Mu Chen was already a remarkable character while he was in the Northern Spiritual Academy, she had never expected

him to be so outstanding after two years.

"Hehe, so Qian'Er actually had a relationship with him? How about you tell him secretly to lose to Sister Qingxuan in the finals. If so, our Chief might make an exception and allow him to join the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy." The girls laughed coquettishly.

Tang Qian'Er blushed at their teasing and stared at them in embarrassment. She later gazed at the figure again and a trace of indiscernible feelings flitted across her face. When she saw the girl dressed in blue—whose beauty was almost comparable to Wen Qingxuan's—standing beside Mu Chen, she could not help but gnaw on her lip.

She didn't know why but somehow, she regretted joining the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy.

However, I'm happy to see that you have become so outstanding now.

Tang Qian'Er pursed her lips as she frowned slightly, before smiling again. Clenching her fists, she thought to herself, Mu Chen, all the best.

If Uncle Mu knew how brilliant you are now, he would definitely be elated.

Chapter 602: The Final Match

When the eight teams stood atop the flight of golden stairs, deafening cheers permeated the atmosphere. No matter which Spiritual Academy they hailed from, or whether their team was qualified for the final match, it did not hamper their anticipation of the final match that was about to begin.

After all, the eight teams at hand stood out from myriad teams from Spiritual Academies and to a certain extent, their capabilities were representative of the highest combat prowess of all the Spiritual Academies.

In the sky, the Chiefs of the Five Great Academies glanced down at the flight of golden stairs but their expressions were somewhat different.

Chief Tai Cang's nonchalant expression morphed into a smile when Mu Chen and his team appeared, as his heart was filled with shock and amazement.

He was not surprised that Mu Chen and his team could enter the final match, but he had never expected them to clinch first position.

Chief Wu from the Martial Spiritual Academy glanced at Mu Chen before commenting with a smile, "Haha, Chief Tai Cang, it seems like the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy has a highly skilled new recruit this time."

"They were just lucky. Wu Ling from your Spiritual Academy is also not one to be underestimated. I guess the reason he didn't vie for the top three positions was because he wanted to conceal his true capabilities?"

Chief Tai Cang smiled but he could not contain his happiness, as the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy had not obtained such exemplary results in many years.

"Looks like the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy has indeed made progress and improved," the usually silent Chief Tian Sheng finally remarked with a faint smile.

"Congratulations, Chief Tai Cang."

Chief Tian Sheng had a faint smile and his deep gaze revealed nothing. It was difficult to decipher his thoughts and emotions. It seemed he was indifferent to Ji Xuan failing to clinch the top position.

"You are too polite, Chief Tian Sheng. It was merely an elimination phase, hence it cannot be counted."

Chief Tian Sheng was a crafty fox but Chief Tai Cang was no slouch, either.

He smiled and remarked, "No matter how powerful the opponent is, Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy will strive to do our very best."

"I do look forward to it then."

Chief Tian Sheng nodded with a smile and glanced at the three of Chiefs of the Spiritual Academies.

"Since the top eight teams have emerged, shall we begin the final match?"

The three other Chiefs nodded in assent.

Chief Tian Sheng rose from his massive seat, his figure a mere speck in comparison to the vast world. However, it somehow seemed that even the heavens and earth were in his grasp. An indescribable majestic aura permeated the atmosphere and faced with this immense power, the cheers gradually faded into silence with everyone looking in awe and reverence.

Standing at the apex of the golden stairs, Mu Chen lifted his head and glanced at the figure clad in white robes. That power shook him and caused him to feel affected. This was the strength of truly powerful characters. Currently, Mu Chen still had a long way to go before he could attain that level of power. However, he would not allow himself to feel discouraged, as he knew that he would certainly be able to achieve his goal. He just needed time to hone himself.

"To begin with, congratulations to the eight teams who are eligible for the final match. No matter the results, all of you have emerged as some of

the best among all the Spiritual Academies."

Chief Tian Sheng announced this calmly, his voice resembling strong sound waves that could move heaven and earth, even causing spiritual energies to circulate in others' bodies.

"The elimination tournament has ended. Now, we will begin the final match of the Spiritual Academy Competition.

"Only the champion of the final match will be deemed as the strongest of all the Spiritual Academies, and he will represent the pinnacle of power among all the Academies."

Countless disciples listened with fiery enthusiasm, as the pinnacle of power was a glory that they were unable to attain. Now, there were only eight teams that could fight for that glory.

"For the winning team, every member will receive 1,000 drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid and one Sovereign Pill."

Woah.

All the disciples gasped in shock upon hearing the statement, many with envious gazes. They were clear about the significance of possessing the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid, as that was the crux of overcoming the Sovereign-level.

One thousand drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid were already a considerable amount even to some sects.

The Sovereign Pill was an even rarer item, as it was the result of condensing Sovereign Spiritual Liquid to a certain degree before it could coagulate into a pill. Thus, the value of a Sovereign Pill was comparable to that of a Low Rank Divine Artifact.

Everyone knew that if one wanted to advance into the Sovereign-level, even if they pulled through the Three Grades of the Spirit Disaster, they would need copious amounts of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid to sustain themselves, and this breakthrough was not a guaranteed success. The moment they failed, the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid that they worked hard to collect would go to waste and everything would be for naught. However,

if they possessed a Sovereign Pill, although it was not a guaranteed success, the probability of success was bound to be several times higher.

Such wondrous effects were even more valuable than Divine Artifacts to people who had yet to attain the Sovereign level.

"A Sovereign Pill... How generous of them."

Even Mu Chen gasped in awe. As he possessed the Spiritual Condensing Bowl, although possessing 1,000 drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid sounded very tempting to him, he was not entirely wonderstruck. The Sovereign Pill however, did appeal to him greatly.

"Rewards gathered by the Five Great Academies are certainly impressive."

Luo Li smiled. Although the Sovereign Pill was a precious artifact, it was not enough to move her.

"You are the future Empress of the Luo God Clan, how would royalty like you be able to understand peasants like us?" Mu Chen teased.

Luo Li scoffed at him playfully, her unintentional charisma enchanting many, drawing attention from the audience below the golden battle stage.

Mu Chen's heart skipped a beat at Luo Li's charm, but he suddenly felt a cold glare directed towards him. He turned his head and saw Ji Xuan staring at him.

Ji Xuan's expression was gloomy and downcast, unlike his usual warm and genial countenance. It was evident that he felt frustrated, as he could not best Mu Chen. Ji Xuan rapidly gained 50,000 points in the critical last moment, thinking that he would trample over Mu Chen, but he did not have long to gloat before Mu Chen's points skyrocketed. Ji Xuan's top position was only momentary, as Mu Chen overtook him.

At that moment, shock and rage swelled in Ji Xuan's heart, clouding his shrewdness. If he had not retained the last shreds of his rationality, he would have formed an alliance with one of the top eight teams to snatch Mu Chen's points...

However, Mu Chen did not give him much time to consider. At the very moment when Mu's points overtook his, eight out of the 16 Academy Plaques were aflame.

Hence, in this elimination tournament, Ji Xuan originally had the intention to play dirty tricks against Mu Chen but he did not expect for the plan to backfire on him, as his actions caused the elimination phase to end prematurely, resulting in the decisive results.

Although the rankings for the elimination tournament had no relation to the final match, the frustration of failure and being trampled on filled Ji Xuan with rage.

He had not suffered such a loss in all these years. Even the battle with Mu Chen in the Spiritual Road ended with his victory.

Mu Chen glanced at Ji Xuan's ghastly glare and smiled faintly, cupping one hand in the other as a gesture of respect.

"Thank you."

Upon hearing Mu Chen's statement, Ji Xuan felt even more suffocated with rage and took two deep breaths. His expression gradually calmed but his gaze turned colder.

"I'm afraid it's too early for you to gloat now."

Ji Xuan smirked coldly.

"You better pray that you won't meet me in the first round in your current state, otherwise, I'm afraid you wouldn't even be able to enter the top four."

"I would say likewise for you." Mu Chen smiled, a chilling glint flashing in his dark eyes.

"Don't worry, I will be sure to give you a good fight this time."

"It seems like the previous fight has made you overly confident." The corners of Ji Xuan's mouth curled upwards into a smirk.

"You should be more careful, pride comes before the fall, and this fall would be very painful."

"You should be careful that you don't die in the fall." Mu Chen shrugged.

Both of them traded barbs in chilling tones and the tension between them was palpable.

Luo Li stood silently by Mu Chen, her clear eyes glancing nonchalantly at Ji Xuan. Although she stayed silent, it was apparent she was fully supportive of Mu Chen. The veins in Ji Xuan's arms throbbed in anger.

"Now, begin to draw lots to determine your opponent!"

In the sky, the majestic voice of Chief Tian Sheng rumbled again and with a flourish of his sleeve, eight spheres of light fluttered from his palm, finally hovering above the battle stage.

"Each person will choose their own sphere. Among the eight spheres, the colors of every other two spheres will differ. The teams that receive spheres of the same color will be opponents."

Upon hearing this voice, Mu Chen and his team lifted their heads. Captains of the eight teams then sucked a sphere of light over to their palm.

The sphere of light hovered in Mu Chen's palm, as he glanced at Luo Li and Shen Cangsheng, the latter members nodding in return.

Phew.

Mu Chen gently exhaled a puff of white air, as his gaze turned sharp. He clenched his fist and exerted force on the light sphere, causing it to explode.

With the explosion of the light sphere, a crimson beam of light resembling flames emitted from his palm and burst into the sky.

At the same time, the other seven teams exerted force on their light spheres. Seven beams of light soared into the air.

With that, the anxious gazes of the masses were directed towards the eight beams of light.

Chapter 603: Battle Between the Top Eight

Eight dazzling pillars of light soared into the sky, piercing through the clouds, clearly visible within a hundred miles.

Eight beams of red, green, black and yellow light intertwined, painting a spectacular scene.

Everyone was staring closely at the eight pillars of light and soon the sound of exclamations rang through the air with excited anticipation, one after another.

Mu Chen lifted his gaze to the sky amid the commotion, his glance fixing onto the other red beam of light. He then glanced downwards and his gaze landed on a team wearing green robes.

Liu Qingyun stood leading the team. He stared straight at Mu Chen and his team with his hands clasped behind his back.

Mu Chen's opponent this time was the team from the Azure Sky Spiritual Academy.

"Phew."

Shen Cangsheng and the other team members heaved a sigh of relief, as they were glad not to have encountered Wen Qingxuan and Wu Ling in the first round. After all, they were friendly with each other and they did not want to see either team eliminated in the first round.

As for the team from the Azure Sky Spiritual Academy, they could be considered allies with Ji Xuan and hence, also their enemies. Now that they would encounter each other, they could teach them a good lesson.

Shen Cangsheng could still recall how Liu Qingyun helped Ji Xuan threaten Mu Chen in the elimination tournament earlier and if Mu Chen had not been proficient, things would have ended disastrously.

Mu Chen looked away from Liu Qingyun and glanced towards the allocation of opponents. He was momentarily stunned when he realized

that Ji Xuan's opponent would be Wen Busheng's team from the Invincible Spiritual Academy.

Among the top eight teams, the Invincible Spiritual Academy was considered to be the weakest and generally speaking, Spiritual Academies of such a weak caliber would not have teams that could make it to the top eight. However, Wen Busheng accomplished this. No matter the results, he would be deemed as the pride and glory of the Invincible Spiritual Academy.

Mu Chen glanced towards Wen Busheng and found the man had a neutral expression, not lamenting his unlucky encounter with such a tough opponent as Ji Xuan.

At this moment, Mu Chen could not help him and could only silently wish him good luck in his heart.

Wen Qingxuan's opponent was the team from the Nine Cauldrons Spiritual Academy led by Fang Yun, who had been previously defeated by Luo Li.

The last group of opponents, however, astonished Mu Chen. The two teams that would be facing each other were Wu Ling from the Martial Spiritual Academy and Xie Tianhe from the Blood Divine Academy.

Mu Chen did not have a favorable impression towards Xie Tianhe, instead having murderous intent towards him, because Xie was clearly coming for Luo Li.

Xie Tianhe had always been an unsettling character and he did not reveal his true strength in the elimination tournament. However, he easily entered the top eight, proving his immense power.

Similarly, Wu Ling was also no slouch and like Xie, also had not exposed his true capabilities in the elimination tournament, instead opting to hide them.

Now that these two teams which had chosen to conceal their true power would clash, no one could seem to predict what would happen.

"How unlucky we encountered Ji Xuan first." Wen Busheng's teammate, who stood behind him, lamented with a frown.

"It is already a feat that we made it into the top eight." Wen Busheng smiled, staring straight at Ji Xuan. His eyes held no trace of fear in them but instead a tinge of desire for combat.

"We just have to try our best in the upcoming battle. We made it so far after going through so much, we have to make the Invincible Spiritual Academy proud, don't we?"

Upon seeing Wen Busheng's composed demeanor, his four team members gradually calmed down and grinned. Indeed, the fact that the Invincible Spiritual Academy could enter the top eight already surpassed everyone's expectations. No matter if they won or lost, they had already accomplished a great feat. Either way, they just had to do their best.

"Well, let us see how strong the team from the Saint Spiritual Academy is then!"

...

"Well, here's Luo Li's defeated opponent."

Wen Qingxuan glanced casually at Fang Yun, her red lips twisting into a scoff. She then looked towards the four pretty girls behind her and remarked, "Don't let me down. If you fail, don't blame me for being ruthless when we return to the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy!"

She extended her palm and clenched it. The originally fierce expression had a playful effect on her beautiful face.

"Hehe, we understand." Le'Er and Pin'Er smiled sweetly like flowers in bloom, charming the hearts of those around them.

However, Fang Yun's team was dreading facing them and even Fang Yun had a downcast expression. He felt very pressured because facing an opponent the likes of Wen Qingxuan was highly daunting.

...

"Blood Divine Academy, is it..."

Wu Ling narrowed his eyes at the team clad in crimson robes, contemplation flitting across his delicate features. He couldn't explain why, but Xie Tianhe gave him a dangerous impression that he was not to be trifled with.

"These fellows are more than what they seem to be," Wu Yingying remarked solemnly, standing behind Wu Ling. The Martial Spiritual Academy had undergone a regrouping at the critical moment, explaining Wu Yingying's presence.

Wu Ling nodded, snapping his slender fingers lightly, his face serene. "I will deal with Xie Tianhe. All of you just have to perform to your usual standards and try not to make mistakes."

Wu Yingying and the three other team members nodded in assent.

...

While the eight teams on the golden stairs were subtly sizing each other up, others among the Spiritual Academies were also murmuring and whispering to each other, although no one could easily draw a conclusion.

Although the top eight each had their individual ranking in the elimination tournament, it was clear that it was a mere elimination phase. These ace teams need not reveal all their cards from the get-go, and hence, the first position in the elimination tournament was not guaranteed to clinch the overall championship.

The scenario in which the last ranking team in the elimination phase surpassed all expectations to clinch the overall championship was extremely rare in previous Spiritual Academy Competitions.

However, in any case, the final match would be absolutely thrilling. In these four groups, everyone was curious which teams could make it to the top four.

In the sky, the five Chiefs had differing expressions when they saw how the teams were assigned. No one seemed to be too worried, however, as they were confident in their own Academy's team.

"Since the allocation of teams has been completed, the eight teams may enter the stage," Chief Tian Sheng stated calmly and with a wave of his hand, the massive golden battle stage below suddenly split apart into four golden platforms nearly 10,000 feet across.

Every platform further divided into five sections. The battle stage glistened with gold light, as if it were formed out of gold and impossibly sturdy.

"In this match where four out of eight teams will advance into the next stage, we will adopt a seven-point system. In every team, so long as one member is defeated, the opponent will obtain a point. If the captain is defeated, the opponent will obtain three points, adding up to seven points in total. The teams who obtain more points will be eligible to enter the top four positions."

"A seven-point system... The captain is actually worth three points."

Mu Chen was taken aback, as the captain alone accounted for almost half of the total points. The importance of the captain was apparent, as they just had to defeat their opponent's captain to determine a high probability of victory. That was unless the other four members were all defeated.

"Are we all clear?" In the sky, Chief Tian Sheng looked over everyone, as he reiterated slowly.

The eight teams nodded.

"If so, get onto the stage then," Chief Tian Sheng commanded with a wave of his hand.

Whoosh!

The eight teams stormed in and in a flash, many exhilarated stares locked onto the four massive golden battle stages.

Mu Chen and his team of four appeared at the golden battle stage on the far left.

"Let me deal with Liu Qingyun." Mu Chen glanced at Luo Li, Shen

Cangsheng and his other teammates.

After regrouping, his team was no less inferior to any of the other teams in the top eight. The presence of Luo Li, in fact, made them even stronger. However, due to the seven-point system where the captain accounted for the largest proportion of points, this resulted in a number of unknown variables. Once the captain was defeated, then the team had basically lost.

Thus, Mu Chen had to deal with Liu Qingyun, since he was the strongest on the opponent's team. Although he was clear that Liu Qingyun was no slouch, at this moment he was fearless, no matter who he was facing.

"Be careful." Luo Li nodded slightly and reminded him. Liu Qingyun was not one to be trifled with, since he was a genius from the Wind Spirit Clan. A clan with a long history was not easy to deal with.

Mu Chen nodded.

Seeing this, Luo Li and the other three members did not comment further and made their moves, appearing on the other four battle stages.

Mu Chen stood alone on the huge golden battle stage, beyond which was an endless sea of people and overwhelming cheers that were rolling in like the tide.

The atmosphere of this space was palpable with tension and anticipation.

Phew.

As if affected by the tense atmosphere, Mu Chen inhaled deeply, his blood circulating in a frenzy. His dark eyes surged like tumultuous waves with the desire for combat.

Swoosh!

The sound of something piercing through the wind rang in the air, as a green figure appeared on the vast golden battle stage like a specter. Liu Qingyun placed a hand behind his back as he directed a nonchalant gaze towards Mu Chen, before smiling faintly.

"Mu Chen, I have come to stop you."

Chapter 604: Battling Liu Qingyun

"Mu Chen, I'm here to stop you."

As Liu Qingyun spoke, his eyes shone with a light of indifference and on his face was an apathetic smile.

Perhaps no one felt that it was inappropriate for Liu Qingyun to say such arrogant things because he did have the capability to back it up. Though Mu Chen may have been first in the playoffs, everyone knew that the final battle was completely different from the knockout phase. All eight teams remaining possessed top strength, and all eight captains were not weaklings who could be messed with.

Nobody could be said to have a hundred percent chance in winning this confrontation. Just one careless mistake could send all previous efforts down the drain and become others' stepping stones.

On hearing those words, Mu Chen also smiled slightly. In a flash, he brandished his Devouring Dragon Demonic Spear, which was emitting ominous Qi, and pointed the spear tip straight at Liu Qingyun.

"That of course, will depend on Captain Liu's skills." Mu Chen's lips remained curled and his voice was peaceful. He was not at all angered by Liu Qingyun's provocation. Instead, his state of mind was so calm that it could be compared to a secluded pond.

Liu Qingyun focused his vision on Mu Chen and some of the indifference on his face dissipated. He was not stupid. After watching Mu Chen and Ji Xuan's battle, he also had realized the importance of the need to guard against Mu Chen, since his strength was already enough to be seen as that of a worthy opponent.

He had only tried provocation to break Mu Chen's state of mind because even the smallest of mistakes could cause the results to change in this confrontation.

Well, sadly, his little trick did not work. "It's going to be a tough match," he said.

Liu Qingyun smiled lightly and his state of mind also grew calm. He held out his palm and suddenly great winds stirred. Green lights seemed to quickly form on his palm.

Whoosh!

As the green lights coalesced, a long, flashy green halberd appeared in Liu Qingyun's hands. Accompanied by the appearance of the halberd, whirlwinds which could be seen with the naked eye instantly started gathering all around Liu Qingyun.

The tip of the halberd seemed as if it were absorbing and gathering all the wind in the world, and even space seemed to become slightly twisted at that point in time.

The green glowing halberd seemed to look more powerful when compared to Mu Chen's Devouring Dragon Demonic Spear.

Mu Chen eyed the halberd. That halberd in Liu Qingyun's hands emitted extremely awe-inducing ripples in the air. However, ripples of that kind were definitely not something a Spiritual Artifact could have.

Mu Chen took a deep breath. An extremely fierce light was surging up in his black eyes.

Spear versus halberd.

Even before the fight started, that was a head-on confrontation between the two.

While Mu Chen and Liu Qingyun were all ready for a showdown on their battle stage, the other battle stages also had surging Spiritual Energy and were surrounded with Spiritual Energy pressure.

Students from different Spirit Academies were gathered near the platforms, all holding their breath in anticipation, their eyes glittering with excitement. The battles of the eight finalists were finally going to unfold.

And no one knew who was eventually going to have the last laugh.

Boom!

The crisp sound of a large bell rang out suddenly and resonated within the world.

Just at the moment when the bell rang, Mu Chen and Liu Qingyun's eyes turned fierce, and strong spirit power shot out of their bodies like a storm.

Whoosh!

Both stomped their feet fiercely on the ground and their figures shot out at each other. All that the audience could see was two blurred figures running at the speed of light. At the next moment, the two figures had already met in the center of the huge gold platform.

Whish!

The Devouring Dragon Demonic Spear stabbed out as the ominous Qi surrounded it. The force was so strong that the spear seemed like a fierce beast pouncing onto its victim. With the amount of Spirit infused in the spear, even the air was torn apart.

The glowing green halberd, on the other hand, carried a strong wind. There seemed to be ancient runes flashing at its tip, looking extremely magical.

Clink!

The tip of the spear and the halberd came straight at each other and met with incredibly accuracy, sending sparks sputtering into the air. Spiritual Energy visible to the naked eye also rippled through the air, causing many sudden explosions.

"That's a good spear."

Liu Qingyun looked at the Devouring Dragon Demonic Spear in Mu Chen's hands and smiled lightly. Then he sneered. "Unfortunately, you should not have confronted me straight on."

"Divine Winds Halberd, Roaring Winds!"

Along with the low bellow from Liu Qingyun, a whirlwind swept out from the Divine Wind Halberd as blue runes flashed at its tip. The force was so great that Mu Chen was taken by surprise and was made to back

up a dozen steps.

"Stabbing Winds!"

Mu Chen backed off but Liu Qingyun approached him like a gust of wind. The overwhelming shadows of his halberd seemed to be integrated silently into the breeze, but it had all of Mu Chen's vital areas within reach.

Liu Qingyun's attacks were fierce and ruthless, and not the slightest bit sloppy.

Mu Chen's eyes contained slight solemness. He shook his arm and his Devouring Dragon Demonic Spear gave out a sharp burst of roars. It then melted into countless shadows, covering all the space ahead of him.

Jingle!

Countless spear and halberd shadows flew and touched crazily in the air. With each touch, piercing noises and beautiful yet deadly dangerous sparks bloomed from them like fireworks.

Anyone could see that both Mu Chen and Liu Qingyun did not hold back even the slightest bit. Those attacks were so powerful that if someone who had just passed his Spirit Stage were to take the blows, he would be pierced through immediately.

In just a few seconds, the spear and halberd shadows had encountered thousands of collisions. That kind of speed left countless people stunned.

However, those with better eyesight wrinkled their brows slightly, because they could tell that with the increase in the intensity of those fierce encounters, Mu Chen was getting gradually suppressed.

Or to be more specific, it was perhaps the Devouring Dragon Demonic Spear in Mu Chen's hands which was suppressed by the Divine Winds Halberd in Liu Qingyun's hands.

Clang!

The countless halberd shadows all over the sky suddenly erupted into dazzling green light. A large, green hurricane a few miles wide shot out

like a wind dragon, directly at Mu Chen.

Mu Chen's eyes flashed and the Devouring Dragon Demonic Spear in his hands also suddenly burst into blood red light. The ominous Qi grew to the extreme and swept out like a blood river.

Boom!

The two attacks crashed together with great force, but the blood river was defeated almost immediately as it got crushed directly by the wind dragon. As for Mu Chen, he was also so shaken that he staggered back a few hundred meters.

Wow!

There was immediately an uproar outside the field. Apparently, no one had expected that Mu Chen, who was ranked first, would be suppressed by Liu Qingyun in just the first round.

"Is Liu Qingyun that strong?" Countless students of the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy looked at each other in awe. Ye Qingling, Su Ling'Er and Yu Xi also stared in astonishment.

"Mu Chen's weapon is too weak," Ling Xi said lightly.

With her sight, it was natural for her to be able to tell that Liu Qingyun's hurricane-summoning halberd was a Quasi-Divine Artifact, whereas Mu Chen's Devouring Dragon Demonic Spear was just a peerless Spiritual Artifact.

In such a level of confrontation, a Quasi-Divine Artifact's effect was highly beneficial to increasing one's power.

"Then what's he going to do?" Sun'Er asked worriedly.

Ling Xi smiled and lightly patted little Sun'Er's head. "Don't worry, the show's just about to start." Her beautiful eyes stayed on the slender figure on the stage.

On the golden platform, Mu Chen looked down at his Devouring Dragon Demonic Spear, which had dimmed quite a bit. Even its ominous Qi had weakened significantly. It was apparent that the weapon had suffered

some damage in combat just now.

He looked up to see Liu Qingyun, who had his halberd in his hands, smiling at him lightly. "Seems that the advantage is mine this time."

Liu Qingyun had just finished speaking when he leapt into the air, vast Spiritual Energy sweeping out from his body, pouring into the Divine Wind Halberd in his hands.

Moan.

Hundred foot tall hurricanes came to life around Liu Qingyun. They roared as if they were wind dragons and threatened to tear the sky apart.

"Divine Wind Halberd, Wind Dragon Swallows the Day!"

Liu Qingyun's eyes looked as cold as ice. The Divine Wind Halberd flew out of his hands and was enveloped in green light. It absorbed all the hurricanes and with that, a huge wind dragon a few hundred feet long formed into existence.

The wind dragon looked almost real with its body covered with cyan scales and gusts of wind whistling around its huge body. Its hideous appearance made countless people turn pale with shock.

And the most amazing thing was that the wind dragon had really emitted the sense of dignity of a real dragon and rightly so, because of the Divine Wind Halberd. In the process of making the halberd, real dragon blood was surely used.

"Go!"

Liu Qingyun stood in the wind and pointed his finger in the air, his eyes full of indifference.

Roar!

The blue wind dragon growled at the sky and its huge body suddenly dashed forward. Its speed was incredibly fast so in just a flash, its huge shadow had already shrouded Mu Chen.

The raging hurricane seemed to rip the sky apart and even the space on the platform became distorted.

Everyone's heart shook with shock at Liu Qingyun's awe-striking attack. So this was what finals were like? It was definitely not something that a normal person could be qualified to participate in...

Could Mu Chen tackle that attack?

All eyes were on the tiny figure which was shrouded in the shadows of the humongous wind dragon.

Watched by countless eyes, Mu Chen raised his head to look at the approaching wind dragon. He took a deep breath and bit by bit, his eyes became cold.

"So, a Quasi-Divine Artifact?"

He muttered and suddenly performed a hand Mudra. Scarlet light swept out from the depths of his black eyes.

Buzz!

At the next moment, everyone could see a black light shooting out from Mu Chen's head straight up into the sky, as if an ancient demon's roaring voice echoed through time and space.

Within the black light was a huge demonic column, and Mu Chen stepped out. His arms, covered in veins writhing like dragons, were stretched out as if to embrace heaven and earth. Above them, lightning flashed.

"If a demonic spear can't defeat you, then come and try my demonic pillar and see if it can suppress you!"

The ominous demonic pillar swept down with great force, its power many times more than that of the Devouring Dragon Demonic Spear.

Everyone's eyes widened.

The black demonic column fell and crashed with the wind dragon, which came roaring forward.

Chapter 605: Divine Wind Shadow

The black column slammed down as if a demonic dragon were roaring, carrying a terrible power that even the heavens could not tolerate. Under the direct gaze of countless eyes, it crashed into the wind dragon's gigantic body with immeasurable force.

Boom!

A deep blast coupled with the collision hammered on everyone's eardrums as it rang through the sky. Immediately afterwards, indescribable storms raged. Even the shimmering battle stage, which looked as if it were made from gold, suffered tiny cracks from such a strong attack.

The battle stages were obviously made of special material, which was no doubt extremely strong. Even the pros who had overcome the difficult Spirit Stages could cause little damage to the battle stage. However, the impact from this battle clearly did, showing how powerful Mu Chen and Liu Qingyun's attacks were.

Roar!

The terrible wind rampaged and the green wind dragon broke out with a shrill roar. The green light, originally dazzling, became suppressed by the black light.

The look on Liu Qingyun's face had also slightly changed.

Crash!

Mu Chen was calm and composed. He held out his arms as if he were actually holding the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. He then waved his arms down, and the pillar crushed all the air around it.

Boom!

The green wind dragon could not withstand the frightful power of the demonic pillar after all. With the force of the attack, the dragon flew backwards and shattered into a million pieces. A green light shot backwards and formed itself into a green halberd that fell into Liu

Qingyun's hands.

Liu Qingyun gripped the Divine Wind Halberd tightly, but the terrible force that came with the weapon still made him stagger backwards. He only finally came to a stop after using spiritual energy.

"Hmph," Liu Qingyun grunted under his breath. His spiritual energy surged into the halberd and with that help, the halberd shook off all the invading demonic power. He looked up to see Mu Chen standing at a distance before him, the gigantic demonic pillar floating above. Demonic force billowed from the black pillar, as if it were the pillar of a demon king.

"What a weapon..." The many chiefs of the Spiritual Academies stared at the Great Meru Demonic Pillar in slight surprise. They naturally could feel the astounding amount of demonic force coming from the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. What's more, the pillar seemed to have more shocking origins. The deep and ancient aura of that pillar was certainly not something that just any Divine Artifact could match up to.

However, the Great Meru Demonic Pillar appeared to be under a seal at the moment. Had it not been, Liu Qingyun's Quasi-Deity Tier Divine Wind Halberd would have suffered serious damage.

Countless onlookers marveled at the battle. It was no wonder that these eight teams had emerged from the numerous Spiritual Academies to compete here in the finals! Their power was truly frightening. For their age group, that could be counted as one of the highest levels of confrontation.

"I see why even Ji Xuan has his attention on you..."

On the battle stage, Liu Qingyun's gaze stayed on Mu Chen. His eyes were ice cold and he slowly tightened his grip on the Divine Wind Halberd. He knew that if he were to completely defeat Mu Chen, he needed to attack without reservation.

Whew.

Liu Qingyun took a deep breath of cool air and with that, his eyes

gradually began to glow with an emerald light. Green spiritual power poured out like a sweeping river, covering the world in the blink of an eye.

The green spiritual power filled the air, seemingly quiet and gently flowing like a stream in the sky. However, it was the kind of quietness that made a lot of students with good perception feel something different.

They could feel chilly waves spreading quietly in the sky.

Those waves of green spiritual force gathered as if to form blades, and exuded an indescribable sharpness, even to the extent of slightly distorting space.

At the same time, a very strong sense of overpowering spiritual force spread out on the field.

Because the people watching had their share of experiences in spiritual force oppression, they raised their eyebrows. This level of spiritual strength definitely belonged to someone who had passed through the Three Grades of the Spirit Disaster. This Liu Qingyun was indeed worth something.

"Mu Chen, you are really good."

Liu Qingyun's body slowly ascended off the ground. Surrounded by the majestic green spiritual force, his green eyes fixed on Mu Chen as if he were summoning tornados.

"So, to show that I think highly of you, I will defeat you with the strength of our Wind Spirit Clan."

Mu Chen's gaze stayed on Liu Qingyun. He could also feel the fierce waves that lingered around Liu Qingyun's whole body. That spiritual force pervaded all corners of the area like blades.

The spiritual force cultivated by Liu Qingyun was different from ordinary spiritual force. His was clearly more aggressive. It was obvious that the martial arts he practiced were of no simple background, either.

"That's the spiritual force of the Wind Spirit Clan. It is said that only the people of the Wind Spirit Clan can cultivate that. The attack power is so

dominant, that ordinary spiritual force is just no match for it." Some chiefs of the Spiritual Academies nodded as they watched in the sky.

Generally speaking, only after one is promoted to the Supreme Realm will his spiritual force undergo a revolutionary transformation. Prior to this, most people's spiritual force was of the same level unless they went through some special cultivation practices. As for those cultivating practices, they were all secrets of the different clans, which outsiders had no way of knowing.

Therefore, if ordinary people fought against these clans, they would be at a great disadvantage in terms of spiritual force. If an ordinary person wanted to gain the upper hand, they would need to use several times more spiritual force before they could suppress the special spiritual force.

"The special spiritual force of the Wind Spirit Clan..." Mu Chen mumbled and narrowed his eyes. His hands suddenly began to form a peculiar seal, the seal of the Great Pagoda Art.

The Great Pagoda Art was a mysterious method that his mother had left for him. It was so deep, that even the present Mu Chen could not fully understand the contents. However, judging from the spiritual force cultivated from practicing the Great Pagoda Art, this method did not have a simple background.

Since Liu Qingyun wanted a match of spiritual force, Mu Chen did not mind trying. So was the Wind Spirit Clan's spiritual force stronger, or was his Great Pagoda spiritual force even better?

Boom!

The blended black and white spiritual force, along with the formation of Mu Chen's seal, suddenly erupted from Mu Chen's body like a tide. The black and white spiritual force, like yin and yang blended, flowed through the heavens.

Compared with Liu Qingyun's fierce wind spirit force, Mu Chen's Great Pagoda spiritual force did not appear too aggressive. A sense of mysteriousness filled the air as it quietly made its way.

"Is he going to do his Great Pagoda Act?" Outside the battlefield, Ling Xi's beautiful eyes brightened as she witnessed the scene. Ever since she gave the Yin volume of Great Pagoda Art to Mu Chen, she had yet to see him display the complete Great Pagoda Art.

She knew the Wind Spirit Clan was a famous clan that had its place in the world, but when compared to the ancient clan that Aunt Jing belonged to, it would just pale in comparison.

Looking at the majestic black and white spiritual force behind Mu Chen, Liu Qingyun felt slightly tense. Although the former's spiritual force did not seem to be very special, he could still faintly sense some unusual fluctuations.

Moreover, his own spiritual force started to waver, as if it had met with a scary enemy.

This spiritual force that Mu Chen has cultivated also seems like something unusual? This idea flashed through Liu Qingyun's mind, but he did not think too much of it. He did not believe there was any way for Mu Chen to have spiritual force that could counter the spiritual force of the Wind Spirit Clan!

"No matter what you've got, I will win this match!" Liu Qingyun bellowed. In this confrontation between their two teams, his match was a very important one. Mu Chen's team also had Luo Li, who would definitely win. The others may have been of similar levels in terms of power, but their chances of winning were not high, either. The two youths named Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong were both very strong. So unless he defeated Mu Chen, it was impossible for his team to advance to the top four.

He must win!

Liu Qingyun looked completely solemn now. He breathed out a white cloud of air and his hands formed a seal. He could no longer hold back!

"Mu Chen! Try this, if you can!"

Liu Qingyun formed another seal with lightning speed. The green

spiritual forces behind him suddenly swept out and, as if turning into countless beams, gathered and transformed into a large and complex light pattern in the sky that was about a thousand feet wide. Those light patterns looked like Spiritual Arrays, yet there were no fluctuations that a Spiritual Array should possess.

Puh.

Liu Qingyun spat out a mouthful of blood essence directly into the huge array of light.

"Divine Wind Art, I pray for the presence of God of the Wind!"

Looking solemn, Liu Qingyun actually bowed down in front of the huge array of light.

Whoosh!

As Liu Qingyun knelt, sudden and terrible winds started raging between the heavens and earth. The audience looked on in astonishment at how tornados and storms formed and rampaged, releasing their terrible destructive power.

Mu Chen's gaze, however, settled on the huge array of light, where green light suddenly shot up. In that glorious light, a huge green shadow started to slowly condense.

With the emergence of that green light, an indescribable sense of coercion suddenly filled the world.

In the sky, the chiefs of those Spiritual Academies could not help but be stunned at the change. Some stared at the green shadow and murmured, "To actually summon the spiritual shadow of the ancestor of the Wind Spirit Clan, the Wind Ancestor... That boy from the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy is going to be in trouble."

Chapter 606: Battle of the Captains

Golden light glittered within the vast space as spiritual attacks exploded on the enormous golden battle stages.

And on those golden stages, with each flickering of the shadows, an attack of shocking impact occurred.

All eight teams were engaged in fierce fighting.

Only by exerting all of one's strength could it be possible to stand out among those eight strong teams.

Of all the matches between the eight teams, the most eye-catching were the matches between the captains because everyone knew that for battles under the seven-point system, if the captain lost the battle, the chances for victory would be slim.

The captain's success or failure could be said to be a team's most critical point.

Thus, it was no wonder that everyone's burning attention was on the four central golden battle stages. Even the Chiefs of the Spiritual Academies all nodded while watching in the sky.

As for the battles on the four stages, spiritual force also kept violently clashing. Besides Mu Chen and Liu Qingyun's duel, the battles between Ji Xuan and Wen Busheng, and Wu Ling and Xue Tianhe were also extremely attention-grabbing.

Regarding Wen Qingxuan's confrontation with Fang Yun, it was easiest to tell who would win. After all, Fang Yun was probably the weakest of the eight captains. Though he was in possession of an Inferior Divine Artifact, which increased his power tremendously, unfortunately for him, he was facing Wen Qingxuan, who had power comparable to Luo Li's.

Therefore, in the confrontation between the two, even though Fang Yun had the Dragon-Tiger Cauldron, his power was still suppressed by Wen Qingxuan. Her figure looked like that of a female god of war with her golden spear by her side. Her terrible attacks were like tides sweeping over

the Dragon-Tiger Cauldron, constantly forcing it to retreat.

Sooner or later, Wen Qingxuan would find a flaw in Fang Yun's attacks and then defeat him.

Compared with the situation where Wen Qingxuan soon had gained an upper hand, the other two battle stages appeared to be at somewhat of a stalemate, especially the battle stage where Wu Ling and Xue Tianhe were fighting.

Both held nothing back and lashed out at each other without reservation. The kind of spiritual power fluctuations they used showed that they had apparently passed through the Three Grades of the Spirit Disaster and were only one step away from the true Sovereign-level.

Whenever Xue Tianhe gestured, blood red spiritual force swept out like a blood river and oozed towards Wu Ling.

As for Wu Ling, he held a black stick in his hand, and his body exuded a faint black light. His face originally had delicate features, but now it looked if it were cast in steel. He had obviously trained his body to become extremely sturdy.

Therefore, when he was faced with the gushing river of blood, he just needed a slight sweep with his stick to form a distorted space, and the terrible force that came with it smashed the river of blood into drops of blood all over the sky.

The fight between the two was so furious, they madly attacked each other without the slightest thought of defense. Such a thrilling battle evoked waves of shocked sighs from the audience.

But overall, their battle was deadlocked.

The last eye-catching battle was the one between Ji Xuan and Wen Busheng.

In this battle, the opponents' fame was unequal. Almost everyone from all the different Spiritual Academies had heard of Ji Xuan, but Wen Busheng was the total opposite. Even his Spiritual Academy, with a majestic name like Invincible Spiritual Academy, had never been heard of

by most.

Therefore, when the audience thought Wen Busheng would soon lose to Ji Xuan, reality stunned them. Wen Busheng had actually managed to handle all of Ji Xuan's attacks.

Moreover, he completely relied on his empty hands to defend against Ji Xuan's fierce spear.

This scene left many people amazed. They had finally understood why this team from the Invincible Spiritual Academy was in the top eight.

This seemingly ordinary young man was nothing ordinary. He proved that even the smallest Spiritual Academies could eventually birth a genius.

However, although Wen was successful taking all of Ji Xuan's attacks, only the Chiefs of the Spiritual Academies in the sky could tell that Wen Busheng's attacks were being gradually suppressed by Ji Xuan.

Whish!

On the battle stage, a spear pierced through the air and on its tip rose violent spiritual power burning like a hot sun, threatening to smash through the void.

The spear went straight for Wen Busheng.

Faced with Ji Xuan's fierce attacks, Wen Busheng looked much more solemn now. His right palm emitted a white light glowing like jade. Pushing his palm out, he made his attack.

Clink!

The sound of metal clinking could be heard when the spear met with the hand, and a huge shockwave, which was visible to the naked eye, made its way outwards, shattering the ground beneath them.

Ji Xuan's body shuddered, whereas Wen Busheng took a few steps backwards, each step leaving a deep imprint on the ground.

Whoosh!

Ji Xuan pointed his spear at Wen Busheng. He looked at him and said

lightly, "If you are only so capable, then you will end here."

As he finished his sentence, Ji Xuan's gaze suddenly became fierce. With his spear against the ground, Ji Xuan put his palms together. Dazzling holy light poured out of him and formed a huge holy sun behind him.

The spiritual force emanated from him like a volcano and was so astonishing, it had almost reached the pinnacle of the Three Grades of the Spirit Disaster.

He seemed to have become stronger than when he fought against Mu Chen.

Wen Busheng was also aware of the dangerous feeling that was radiating from Ji Xuan. He knew that Ji Xuan had no intention of continuing this fight. At that instant, he took a deep breath and slowly extended his right hand.

His right hand was particularly slender and fair, as if it were carved from jade. Dark gold lines seemed to slowly spread out on his palm.

Those golden lines flowed in his palm as if they were blood in his vessels. Within seconds, his right hand turned a dark gold color, and a special coercion filled the air.

The special coercion made Ji Xuan's eyes narrow for an instant. He fixed his glare on Wen Busheng's right palm, and a touch of suspicion crossed his face.

"This fluctuation..."

In the sky, the Chiefs of the various Spiritual Academies also looked over in surprise. They immediately blinked and their faces filled with astonishment.

"That little guy who's from Invincible Spiritual Academy... had transplanted a hand of a Sovereign Master? No wonder his right hand is so strong..."

...

A large green light array floated in the sky. On the light array was a

gigantic green shadow. It looked just like a god who had travelled across time and space, and was here to gaze down upon this vast land.

An indescribable threat spread between heaven and earth.

Numerous eyes stared in awe at the green shadow. Its shape was not clear, but everyone could tell how powerful it was from its coercion.

"What's that?"

"From what Liu Qingyun had said earlier on, that should be the Wind Ancestor of their Wind Spirit Clan..."

"The Ancestor? The one who had created the Wind Spirit Clan according to legend? Has he not passed on yet?"

"Of course that's not the real body of the Ancestor. Liu Qingyun probably used a mystical method of Wind Spirit Clan combined with his bloodline of the Wind Spirit Clan, and summoned a spiritual shadow. But even so, that's going to lend him tremendous power."

"Seems that Liu Qingyun really is planning to give his all. He's even playing such cards..."

"..."

Whispers spread among the numerous Spiritual Academies. Many people's voices were quivering, obviously a result of shock from seeing Liu Qingyun. That huge green shadow could be said to be extremely difficult to handle, even for someone who had passed the Three Grades of the Spirit Disaster.

For Liu Qingyun to reach this point in the competition and still not show any sign of fear when faced with Mu Chen, who had won first place in the knockout phase of the competition, he really had his own strengths.

In the audience of the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, many students had hints of concern in their eyes.

"This Liu Qingyun is indeed very powerful." Ye Qingling sighed. Certainly, among those who were capable of becoming one of the top eight teams, no one was weak. The elimination round was probably just a

warm-up for them. Now was the real time to show their opponents everything they had.

Yu Xi clasped her little hands and asked nervously, "Can Brother Mu Chen do it?"

Ye Qingling gave a wry smile. She was obviously not one who could give any insight on such a level of battle. Now, one could only wait and see if Mu Chen had also kept his most powerful skills unused.

"Although the shadow of the Wind Ancestor summoned by Liu Qingyun is not weak, Mu Chen is not someone so easily dealt with." Lingxi smiled and reassured them. The Wind Spirit Clan might be strong, but Ling Xi really did not think they were so strong that they could surpass the mysterious clan that Aunt Jing was from. It was a clan so strong, even Aunt Jing, who had passed the Heavenly Completion Stage, had concerns about it. So, just a Wind Spirit Clan was probably nothing in comparison.

Seeing Ling Xi smile, Ye Qingling and the others secretly breathed a sigh of relief, but they still stared at the huge golden platform with concern.

On the stage, Mu Chen also fixed his gaze on the huge green shadow.

"Mu Chen, if you can take this move, I will admit my defeat!" Liu Qingyun glared at Mu Chen icily. He then immediately changed his seal, and the green shadow suddenly stepped out of the light array and pressed down its palm against Mu Chen.

Under the palm, the spiritual force between heaven and earth was so shaken that it all dispersed. Before the palm had even fallen, a huge indentation formed on the battle platform.

Mu Chen's clothes also clung tightly to his body. He looked at the terrible green shadow and took a deep breath. His face became solemn, and his hands suddenly formed a seal.

Splash!

Accompanied by the changes of the seal, the black and white spiritual force behind him started splashing around and finally gathered together at an astonishing speed.

With the condensation of the black and white spiritual power, all could see a giant black tower about a hundred feet tall was gradually forming.

The black giant tower stood in the air, and on its ancient body were shadows of golden dragons. Deep and ancient dragon screeches could faintly be heard.

When the black giant tower appeared, even the Chief Tai Cang could not help but jump. He clearly remembered that when Mu Chen's mother showed up, it was the exact black tower she had used to defeat the Yellow Dragon Sovereign.

Had Mu Chen already become so powerful, he was now able to display this formidable technique?

Was this black tower really able to resist the shadow of the ancestor Liu Qingyun had summoned?

Chapter 607: Refining the Spiritual Clone with the Black Tower

A tower of black light appeared behind Mu Chen, attracting countless gazes. Surprise and suspicion could be seen in the eyes of many. The black tower, judging from its appearance, seemed to be less powerful than the Spiritual Clone summoned by Liu Qingyun. Therefore, they were very doubtful Mu Chen's trump card could win against Liu Qinyun's attack.

Only some of the stronger chiefs of the various Spiritual Academies could vaguely sense the unusual fluctuations brought about by the black tower. Immediately, their eyes were filled with brief surprise, after which they nodded to themselves. The battle this time was going to be interesting.

The two young men both had some real skills.

Liu Qingyun stared solemnly at the black light tower behind Mu Chen, then gave a soft humph. He was confident that even Ji Xuan would find his summoned Spiritual Clone difficult to deal with, and certainly did not believe that Mu Chen could block the attack!

"Let me see how much you've got!"

Liu Qingyun sneered and as he changed the seals, the giant palm hovering over Mu Chen turned brighter. The spiritual energy fluctuation was so strong that huge cracks started to appear on the firm golden battle stage.

Mu Chen lifted his head. The power that was infiltrating into the space was already extremely violent, but his body was strong enough to withstand this level of pressure without taking any damage.

All that he had to be careful of was the attack from the green shadow.

Puff.

Mu Chen slowly blew out a gust of white mist. In the meantime, the look from his black eyes turned colder and sharper, just like the blade of a

knife. Just then, the seal formed by both of his hands suddenly changed.

Buzz!

The black light tower behind him instantly began to vibrate and a buzzing sound spread. On the surface of the black tower, a golden symbol resembling a dragon suddenly turned bright. A dragon howl was heard, and the lifelike golden dragon actually broke free from the tower. Sunlight shone on its body and its golden scales reflected a dazzling glow.

It lifted its head and roared, its voice making the sky tremble. Swinging its tail, it turned into a golden ray and shot upwards into the sky. Its might turned into a spreading aura that seemed extremely realistic, and the pressure that resulted was even stronger than the wind dragon previously formed by Liu Qingyun's Divine Wind Halberd.

A golden ray shot upwards and eventually, under the gaze of countless many, collided hard with the giant green palm pressing down.

Bang!

At the instant of impact, the golden light and green light turned into two enormous horizontal planes. As they spread, the whole sky was filled with the two colors.

Under the bright colors, however, there were extremely violent spiritual energy collisions.

At the spot where the two attacks hit, even space was being severely distorted.

"Liu Qingyun's attack was blocked!" someone exclaimed uncontrollably in surprise. That was because under the sweeping golden light, the green palm could actually no longer press down.

"This Mu Chen indeed has some abilities. It is no wonder that he obtained first place in the elimination tournament."

After seeing that his attack had been intercepted in the sky, Liu Qingyun also frowned and changed the seals again. Immediately, it was as if the green shadow made a low roar like thunder. The green palm struck down

like a falling meteorite, covering the entire sky.

Bang! Bang!

A terrific shock wave was raging in the sky. However, to everyone's astonishment, no matter how strongly the green palm attacked, the layer of golden light remained unbroken.

Liu Qingyun finally started to look somewhat strained.

"Since you have completed your attack, it's my turn." Mu Chen gave a faint smile. At once, he stepped forward and stomped his foot on the ground. The huge black tower behind him instantly ascended into the sky.

Vroom!

Under the stares of many, the black light tower charged into the sky and eventually expanded at a shocking speed. In a few breaths' time, the tower increased to the size of a few thousand feet. Then, the black bottom of the tower aimed at the green shadow and moved down toward it.

"Humph!"

Seeing the scene, Liu Qingyun's look turned cold. The green shadow opened its huge mouth and sent out a visible sonic shock which charged towards the black tower like a storm.

However, facing the sonic shock, the black tower did not dodge at all. Its dull bottom shook abruptly and absorbed all the sound waves directly like a bottomless pit. After that, a few waves came from the interior of the tower but they quickly diminished.

"Go inside!" Mu Chen bellowed sharply. The black tower finally flew down, leaving a large patch of shadow below. Then, in front of everyone's startled stares, it sucked the green shadow straight inside.

"You dare to absorb everything. You should be worried that your stomach may burst!" With a cold look, Liu Qingyun changed the seals and violent spiritual energy fluctuations burst out from the green shadow. A powerful slap as quick as a bolt of lightning hit the wall of the tower.

Bang! Bang!

Low noises came out continuously as the black tower trembled slightly.

"Its appetite is too big and your skill is too weak. You want to burst it? Impossible." Mu Chen smiled, even though his look was very serious. Then, he sat down cross-legged in midair and his hands suddenly started to form a seal.

"The Great Pagoda Art. Flames of the Pagoda, refine the world!"

As Mu Chen rapidly changed the seals, he slowly closed his eyes and a low roar sounded in his mind.

Roar!

Just as the roar was heard in Mu Chen's mind, an earth-shaking dragon howl spread from the inside of the Pagoda tower. Everyone could see that from the first level to the third level of the black tower, three faint golden dragon symbols came to life, eventually flying and dashing into the tower. Then, they shook their bodies and started burning, turning into a golden flame that was soaring up into the sky.

The golden flame was raging inside the tower. Actually, the golden flame looked almost exactly the same as the one Mu Chen's mother used to refine the Yellow Dragon Sovereign, only the two clearly differed greatly in scale.

After all, at that time, Mu Chen's mother could turn a hundred golden dragons into flames of the Pagoda. That was the level Mu Chen currently was far from reaching.

However, it was sufficient to be used against Liu Qingyun.

As the golden flames appeared, the green shadow trapped in the tower stopped for a moment. As if it were sensing a life-threatening danger, its originally large body became more condensed under the pressure.

Outside the tower, Liu Qingyun's face also instantly turned serious. He had obviously felt the threat as well.

"Go."

Mu Chen paid no attention and pointed his finger. The golden flame

immediately rushed over and enveloped the green shadow in an instant.

A bright green light came out from the body of the green shadow like a wave, forming a layer of protection and guarding it from the terrifying refining power of the golden flames.

Hiss!

As the two came into contact, the green light started melting down at a shocking speed. The destructive power of the golden flames seemed to be unexpectedly strong.

Everyone could also roughly see the scene through the tower's openings, causing them to immediately feel frightened. The golden flames are actually so scary, even the Spiritual Clone summoned by Liu Qingyun could not withstand them?

In the sky, Liu Qingyun's face was already somewhat livid. However, he suppressed his agitation at once and glanced at Mu Chen with an evil look. Taking a deep breath, he pointed his finger and red blood immediately came seeping out from his fingertip.

Vroom! Vroom!

As his fingertip danced in the air, the bloodstain formed an ancient blood red rune in front of him.

Fizz!

Right after the rune appeared, it blended into the air. Meanwhile, the green shadow inside the tower trembled and the green light started to turn denser. Even its blurry face started to have some facial features.

There was an astounding pressure spreading from it.

"This Liu Qingyun can actually summon a Spiritual Clone to this extent. He is really skilled," a few chiefs praised and nodded slightly after seeing the scene.

Obviously, the clearer the facial features of the Spiritual Clone summoned by Liu Qingyun, the stronger it was. If he managed to train it to the ultimate level, it would even be almost as strong as the Spiritual

Clone of the Wind Ancestor himself.

The green light around the green shadow started to become deeper and also more condensed. As the green light surged out again, the golden flames were actually blocked.

Hiss.

The two terrific powers corroded each other. Although the golden flames were still actively attacking, they were clearly not as fierce as before. If the stalemate continued, Mu Chen's spiritual energy could not be sustained for too long. After all, his spiritual energy did not have a great advantage over Liu Qingyun, who had undergone three grades of the Spirit Disaster.

Many eyes were anxiously locked onto the scene, as they knew that Mu Chen and Liu Qingyun were at the climax of their battle. If anyone went into a disadvantage now, the battle would probably end.

Under the nervous gazes of many, Mu Chen slowly opened his eyes. Staring at the Pagoda tower, his handsome face was calm and his slender hands formed a seal again and changed slightly.

Buzz!

As Mu Chen changed the seals, everyone could see that on the wall of fourth level of the Pagoda tower, which was originally black, a golden pattern started to appear. The pattern spread at an amazing speed and in a short while, another golden dragon symbol was formed.

When the fourth golden dragon symbol appeared, Liu Qingyun's expression changed drastically.

Roar!

A dragon howl was heard. The lifelike golden dragon symbol abruptly broke free from the walls and turned into yet another golden flame, flying into the sea of fire surrounding the green shadow.

Crackle!

As the flame from the fourth golden dragon entered, the golden flames immediately turned extremely bright and the power doubled.

"Flames of the Pagoda, refine!"

Facing the black tower in the distance, Mu Chen extended his palm and then suddenly clenched his fist. A cold voice sounded off in his mind.

Crack!!!

Just as he finished shouting, the raging golden flames in the tower flew out and finally engulfed the green shadow completely.

Chapter 608: Chapter

On the battle stage where Ji Xuan and Wen Busheng were...

Ji Xuan stood in midair and a tremendous amount of spiritual energy gushed out from his body like waves. Behind him, it was as if the vast amount of spiritual energy had formed a faint yet huge sacred sun.

Floating in the air, the sacred sun emitted a shocking spiritual energy pressure, frightening many of the students witnessing the scene. Even those who had undergone three grades of the Spirit Disaster would probably not dare to face this level of attack directly. Ji Xuan had the highest reputation among the eight captains because he indeed had some outstanding abilities.

As many people exclaimed about him, Ji Xuan was, however, gazing ahead with a serious look. Wen Busheng stood there with a calm expression, his palm turning dark gold. It looked as if it were forged by gilding and an inexplicable pressure came from it.

"Sovereign hand bone..."

Ji Xuan stared at Wen Busheng intently and said slowly, "You are really very lucky."

At that moment, Ji Xuan finally understood why Wen Busheng could lead a team that was not very strong but still managed to pass through every round and get into the top eight places. It turned out that this ordinary-looking guy actually had a powerful trump card.

"Sovereign hand bone?"

Around the battle stage, some students heard the competitors speaking. Shocked, they stared at Wen Busheng's golden right hand with astonished looks. There is actually a sovereign hand bone in his palm?

Wu Busheng similarly stared at Ji Xuan and said, smiling, "It's only luck. In the ancient remains of the shattered continent of ruins, I was fortunate enough to obtain a senior's hand bone, which he kept by using his blood essence. Furthermore, it just so happens that the sovereign hand bone and

I are quite compatible. I also know a bit of the art of transplanting, although I just managed to succeed."

"Good luck indeed." Some people could not help but feel amazed. When sovereign-level masters passed away, their bodies could be kept for thousands of years. However, even if someone was lucky enough to obtain such a sovereign bone, he could not transplant it into his body because the bone was not meant to be part of him. Once the bone was transplanted, it would instead cause a backlash, unless he was so lucky that the compatibility between the sovereign bone and himself was rather high.

Though it had an incredibly small chance of happening, Wen Busheng actually encountered such a situation. His luck was really envied by many.

"However, judging from the pressure of your sovereign bone, I'm afraid that its original owner was at most a grade five sovereign when he was still alive. Therefore, if you want to win today just by relying on the power of the bone, it will be difficult," Ji Xuan said emotionlessly.

"If I do not try my best, who will know the result?" Wen Busheng similarly smiled lightly. Even as he faced Ji Xuan, who was very strong, he still did not show the slightest sign of fear.

"Then let me have a taste of the power a sovereign-level master can leave behind after passing away." Ji Xuan glanced at Wen Busheng deeply, but his look started to turn cold. His body gradually ascended into the sky and behind him, the sacred sun formed by the great amount of spiritual energy grew clearer and larger.

Everyone could feel that the spiritual energy all around them started raging. The light emitted from the sacred sun could even boil the spiritual energy of the world.

All knew that Ji Xuan had decided to use an ultimate move to end the battle.

Puff.

Taking a deep breath, Wen Busheng suddenly clenched his golden fist. The sleeve on that arm instantly turned into dust and the blood vessels

there started wiggling like dragons. All the blood in his body began flowing continuously into the palm.

As the blood entered, the dark gold palm turned duller in color, but the pressure coming out from it gradually increased.

Everyone watched in silence, not even daring to breathe loudly. Clearly, the two were planning an attack that would decide the winner.

Rumble!

The violent spiritual energy caused many ripples in the sky. The calm before the terrifying impact even caused the atmosphere to be somewhat frozen.

In the sky, the sacred sun behind Ji Xuan had already expanded to thousands of feet. Floating in front of the sun, his body appeared to be extremely small. The floating sacred sun was like the blazing sun falling from the sky, causing everyone to feel incredibly shocked.

When the sacred sun reached its extreme, a fine light seemed to appear in Ji Xuan's cold eyes. He looked at Wen Busheng from above and his hands started to form a seal. A cold voice spread throughout the sky.

"The Great Sun Art. The sacred sun will cleanse the world!"

Buzz!

The giant sacred sun instantly gave out a buzzing vibration. As Ji Xuan completed his seal, everyone saw to their astonishment that the sacred sun suddenly shot upwards into the sky.

Vroom!

A while after the sacred sun reached high up in the sky, it dove down fiercely like a scorching sun was falling. Carrying a highly destructive power, it fell towards the battle stage under the startled gazes of many.

Under the horrifying attack, a series of dents appeared on the very firm battle stage and soon started to rapidly spread.

An alarming pressure came from the sky and Wu Busheng's look turned more dignified. Lifting his head, the huge sacred sun magnified quickly in

his pupils.

At that moment, he slowly raised up his right hand. It was as if a dark gold liquid was flowing inside the golden palm. Wen Busheng's face turned more and more pale. Just then, he turned his palm upwards and hit the empty space on top gently.

"Hand of the Sovereign!"

A soft voice sounded off in Wen Busheng's mind.

Buzz!

At the place where Wen Busheng's palm landed, space started to fluctuate vigorously to the extent that visible ripples spread out one by one, just like water in a lake.

Golden light bloomed out and all could clearly see that a golden palm print flew out from Wen Busheng's palm. The palm print increased in size as it ascended against the wind and in a short while, it grew to a thousand feet.

The golden palm charged upwards as if a giant were swinging his palm. Eventually, under countless astounded viewers, it fearlessly collided hard with the falling sacred sun.

Bang!

At the moment of collision, the whole world seemed to become quiet. However, the silence was only momentary and immediately afterwards, a bright dazzling light burst out in the sky.

It was as if the scene were caused by two meteorites smashing into each other.

An intense spiritual energy impact spread out in madness as many people raised their heads and watched the collision in awe. The sacred sun and the golden palm slammed into each other crazily as their terrifying powers kept corroding the other, trying to eliminate one another.

However, both powers were exceptionally strong. Thus, the two attacks actually entered a stalemate for the moment.

Seeing the scene from the battle stage, Wen Busheng's golden palm, which was pressing against the empty space, slowly moved again. His face turned paler.

Buzz!

Suddenly, the golden light from the palm turned brighter. Then, everyone saw that the golden palm actually clenched and the sacred sun burst into pieces.

Gasp.

Everyone gasped in shock. Nobody could have imagined that Wen Busheng was this strong and could actually crush Ji Xuan's powerful attack into pieces.

The sovereign hand bone was indeed strong.

Vroom!

After crushing the sacred sun, the golden palm took advantage of the violent spiritual energy explosion and charged upwards in the sky, slapping hard towards Ji Xuan.

That entire space was slightly distorted by the spiritual energy collision, so nobody could see Ji Xuan's expression at that moment. However, as Wen Busheng continued his victorious pursuit, Ji Xuan faced it and did not seem to be planning on dodging it.

Vroom!

The golden palm appeared in front of Ji Xuan and smacked down with a great force.

Ji Xuan was emotionless and a cold look seemed to flash across his eyes.

Screech!

Suddenly, an ancient eagle cry spread throughout the sky. Many people raised their heads and seemed to spot an illusory eagle wing floating in the sky, eventually landing across the golden palm.

The illusory eagle wing only appeared for an instant and disappeared

after passing through the golden palm, causing many to rub their eyes. It was as if the scene had been just a hallucination.

The golden palm suddenly came to a stop less than five feet in front of Ji Xuan and could not move any closer.

Ji Xuan extended his palm with an unconcerned look and gently tapped on the golden palm.

Crack.

Along with Ji Xuan's light tap, the indestructible golden palm actually, to everyone's astonishment, smashed into pieces and turned into golden light spots all over the sky.

Puh.

Wen Busheng, who was below, spewed out a mouthful of blood. The spiritual energy fluctuation in his body was extremely weak. He fell down on one knee with blood dripping down from the corner of his mouth.

Wiping away the bloodstain near his mouth, he lifted his head. At the moment, Ji Xuan was slowly descending and staring at him with a cold look.

"I lost."

Wu Busheng smiled bitterly and then heaved a soft sigh.

As Wen Busheng said this, surprised exclamations were heard all over the place. Nobody could have thought that Wen Busheng, who originally had an advantage in his attack, would lose all of a sudden.

This Ji Xuan was really too strong.

Hearing the exclamations all around, Wen Busheng turned his head and gazed at a battle stage in the distance. There, an incredible spiritual energy fluctuation was being given out as well.

Ji Xuan's reputation is indeed supported by his abilities. Mu Chen, whether Ji Xuan can be defeated or not is all up to you now...

Chapter 609: Emergence of the Top Three

Just as Wen Busheng lost, the fight on the battle stage where Mu Chen and Liu Qingyun were had reached its climax as well.

The huge black tower floated in the sky with golden flames burning fiercely inside it. It was as if the flame could incinerate everything in the world. As the golden flames surged forward wave after wave, they attempted to engulf the green shadow, trapping it inside the fire.

Hiss.

An ear-piercing noise was continuously given off, as if the spiritual energy were being set ablaze.

The Flames of the Pagoda formed by the four golden dragons were incredibly powerful. Under the impact of the flames, the green shadow and the previously condensed green light soon became distorted. The blurry face of the Spiritual Clone showed a pained expression.

On the battle stage, Liu Qingyun's expression could not help but change drastically.

"Break!"

However, before he could do anything, Mu Chen's cold voice already spread throughout the place.

Crackle!

As Mu Chen finished shouting, the ferocity of the golden flames inside the tower finally reached its maximum. Sweeping across, the green shadow could no longer withstand the fire, and cracks actually appeared on its huge body. The cracks enlarged rapidly and eventually, with a deep humph, the shadow thoroughly exploded.

Green light spots burst out everywhere, but they were quickly burned away by the golden flames.

In the tower filled with the flames, there was soon nothing else. The green shadow no longer existed.

The green shadow was actually refined directly into nothingness.

Spit!

Liu Qingyun spewed out a mouthful of blood. His face quickly turned pale and the spiritual energy fluctuation around him also turned extremely weak. Since the Spiritual Clone contained his blood essence, it was connected to his body. Now that the Spiritual Clone was refined, he was severely injured as well.

Gasp.

As Liu Qingyun spit out blood, surprised exclamations could be heard everywhere around the battle stage. Many stared in shock as they could not believe that Liu Qingyun actually lost.

"Liu Qingyun has already displayed such powers, and yet he still lost to Mu Chen..."

"He is indeed strong enough to obtain first in the elimination tournament."

"..."

Many people exclaimed uncontrollably. Although Mu Chen had only passed the first grade of the Spirit Disaster and Liu Qingyun had passed three grades, Mu Chen still won the match. His battling ability was indeed convincing.

"Brother Mu Chen won!" Yu Xi's pretty face was also filled with enthusiasm and her eyes were glittering with excitement.

Ye Qingling, Su Ling'er and Sun'Er also smiled in spite of themselves while the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy students burst out in waves of cheers. Everyone was excited as the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy had not attained such outstanding results in many years.

In previous Spiritual Academy competitions, the people from the other academies would look at them with some amusement. But at that moment, those looks only contained pure astonishment. This made them feel overjoyed.

"This Great Pagoda has indeed somewhat matured." Staring at the young man on the battle stage, Ling Xi also smiled. After all, she had also learned the Great Pagoda Art and could thus understand the power of the Pagoda tower. It was said that this was an extremely powerful art in aunt Jing's clan. When it was cultivated to the ultimate level, even when sovereign-level masters were engulfed by the tower, they would be refined easily; hence, the art was incredibly strong.

However, Mu Chen had just received the complete Great Pagoda Art a short while ago. Judging from his talents, it should not be too difficult for him to reach the ultimate level in the future.

The area where the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy students gathered was filled with charming faces and was definitely a pleasant sight to watch.

At the moment, those chattering beautiful ladies were also looking at the battle stage where Mu Chen was. After all, his fight with Liu Qingyun had drawn a lot of attention.

"This Mu Chen is really very strong. Even Liu Qingyun lost to him."

"I heard that Liu Qingyun is a genius in the Wind Spirit Clan. People who come from this kind of clan all have some real skills. It was really unexpected that even he could not defeat Mu Chen."

"Not strong enough, hehe. That Mu Chen is quite handsome."

"Haha, then you can go and lure him here. We at the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy would not mind having such an excellent student..."

"..."

The words from these ladies were very bold. As they laughed elegantly, a pleasant aroma spread, causing many students from the other spiritual academies to gaze at them with craving looks.

A beautiful lady beside Tang Qian'Er gave her compliments, "Qian'Er, this childhood friend of yours really came from the Northern Spiritual Realm? He is way too strong, right? That Liu Qingyun is a genius in the Wind Spirit Clan."

"Yes, even back in the Northern Spiritual Realm, he was already very outstanding." Tang Qian'Er smiled. Her eyes similarly stared at the slender figure, but with a complicated look. Unknowingly, he was already so bright and the distance between him and her seemed to be growing.

This thought made Tang Qian'Er's intelligent eyes slightly dimmer, but she immediately firmly clenched her fist. The future was still long and nobody knew what was to come. It was just like a long time ago when Mu Chen was still a small boy, walking unsteadily behind her with a runny nose. Maybe back then, even he would not have thought that he could become so bright in the future?

On the golden battle stage...

Looking at the empty Pagoda tower, Mu Chen waved his hand and the Pagoda tower turned into a black ray, dashing into his body. Then, he turned to Liu Qingyun whose face was pale and said tonelessly, "Do we need to continue?"

At the moment, the spiritual energy fluctuation around Liu Qingyun was already very weak, clearly indicating he had suffered a severe injury. If the fight continued, he would not even have the slightest chance of winning.

Wiping away the bloodstain around his mouth, Liu Qingyun glanced at Mu Chen deeply and said, "I will keep my word. You have won this fight."

He had already used his most powerful attack but it was still defeated by Mu Chen. Therefore, if he continued to battle, it would only bring disgrace on himself. Thus, he might as well admit defeat and show that he had the appropriate demeanor.

"Thank you."

Mu Chen folded his hands and smiled. There was no deep hatred between him and Liu Qingyun, so he did not need to force the latter too much.

Standing up, Liu Qingyun looked at Mu Chen and said tonelessly, "Although you have won, you should not be too complacent. Your biggest enemy is Ji Xuan. He is not that easy to deal with."

"I know that he is a tough enemy, but I think that I am not that easy to handle either." Mu Chen's voice was calm, but it contained an indestructible confidence that would cause anyone to be startled.

Liu Qingyun fell into silence. Indeed, while Ji Xuan was strong, the young man in front of him was not weak, either. If the two really started fighting, it would probably be earthshaking.

In the sky, the five chiefs of the spiritual academies all stared below, but with different expressions on their faces.

Chief Tai Cang's face was filled with a smile. Mu Chen's performance was really beyond his expectations as he defeated Liu Qingyun. In this way, the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy would certainly make it to the top four, and this result was already quite outstanding.

"Ha, Chief Tai Cang, the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy really has a very strong newcomer this year. Congratulations." Chief Tian Song from the Azure Sky Spiritual Academy sighed lightly, but he still smiled with some style.

"Chief Tian Song, you overpraise me. Mu Chen was only lucky. Liu Qingyun from your academy is also an outstanding talent." Chief Tai Cang smiled.

"Since the battle of the eight finalists started, three teams have already won," Chief Tian Sheng from the Saint Spiritual Academy said and smiled briefly.

On the four battle stages, Mu Chen defeated Liu Qingyun while Luo Li also defeated her opponent easily. Similarly, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong had both emerged victorious. Only Su Xuan ended up as a draw, but this did not really matter anymore. Their team had attained an absolute advantage.

On the other hand, Ji Xuan bested Wen Busheng and their team had all victories—everyone had defeated his opponent.

Apart from these two teams, the third team led by Wen Qingxuan also won, just as expected. Compared to Mu Chen and Ji Xuan's battles, Wen

Qingxuan won quite easily. After all, Fang Yun was pretty weak among the four captains. If not for the power of her Dragon Tiger Cauldron, she would probably not have been able to persist for so long when fighting Wen Qingxuan.

As for Wen Qingxuan's other four team members, some were victorious while others were defeated. But their score still exceeded that of the Nine Cauldrons Spiritual Academy and thus, they ended up winning the fight.

Since the battle of the eight finalists started, three teams had already been promoted to the top four.

Mu Chen stood on the battle stage. Luo Li, Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong and Su Xuan, who had already finished their battles, dashed towards him.

"Good job." Mu Chen smiled at them.

"Our battles are nothing compared to yours," Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong said resignedly. Although their battles were also quite intense, they clearly could not be compared to the fight between Mu Chen and Liu Qingyun.

"I didn't even manage to win," Su Xuan said in embarrassment. Of the whole team, only she ended up with a draw.

"It's sufficient as long as we can get into the top four," Mu Chen said, unconcerned. The team from the Azure Sky Spiritual Academy was also very strong, and Su Xuan was the weakest among the five. That she could end up with a draw was already an amazing result.

"Actually, Luo Li's battle ended first." Shen Cangsheng laughed. In the eight teams, Luo Li was the first to end her fight. This efficiency had also attracted many exclamations.

Mu Chen nodded, smiling. Even when compared to the eight captains, Luo Li's strength was still among the top. When she only had to deal with one team member, it was obviously too easy.

"Now only one last team has yet to be decided," Luo Li said softly, looking at the battle stage in the distance. Some coldness could be seen in

her clear eyes.

That battle stage was where Xie Tianhe and Wu Ling were fighting.

Chapter 610: The Demonic Blood Beast and War God Ape

The contests in the other three combat stages had finished and the spiritual energies had vanished. However, on the combat stage on the far right, formidable fluctuations of spiritual energies were still gushing out, slightly twisting the space.

That was the combat stage where Xue Tianhe and Wu Ling battled.

With ups and downs on both sides, Xue Tianhe's team and Wu Ling's team had both obtained two points. That was to say, the results for their teammates were two wins and two losses. Therefore, now the two teams were even. The result of the combat between the two captains would decide which team could enter the top four.

"That Xue Tianhe is really powerful! The intensity of their fight is so high!" Shen Cangsheng and the others were quite surprised. Wu Ling was the most eminent genius of the Martial Spiritual Academy. Moreover, Wu Ling hid most of his strength in the elimination matches and had never displayed it in full. Even so, Wu Ling still couldn't easily defeat Xue Tiandu.

"As the prince of the Blood God Clan, Xue Tiandu should be stronger than Wu Ling," Luo Li said in a low voice. She was naturally very clear about the Blood God Clan. Although Wu Ling was the grandson of the Chief of the Martial Spiritual Academy, the strength of the Martial Spiritual Academy still couldn't match the strength of the Blood God Clan.

"I really don't know who the final winner could be." Mu Chen also nodded. In terms of relationship, he naturally hoped Wu Ling could win. After all, he never had a favorable impression of Xue Tiandu and personally, he really wanted to kill this guy who harbored malicious intentions towards Luo Li.

"This fight will be extraordinarily fierce."

Upon hearing this, the rest of the people nodded and fixed their eyes on

that combat stage without blinking.

At the moment, almost everyone in the vast space was looking at that combat stage. All the students of the Martial Spiritual Academy were especially nervous. The Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, the Saint Spiritual Academy and the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy had entered the top four. If the Martial Spiritual Academy was defeated here, they would suffer a great demoralizing fall.

In front of numerous eyes, two magnificent spiritual energies were frantically colliding. The combat stage was divided into two parts by blood red and deep yellow.

Xue Tianhe and Wu Ling were almost covered by their magnificent spiritual energies. Waves of the formidable impact of spiritual energy broke into thunderous bangs. According to the degree of the spiritual energy collision, the fight between them had almost come into the white-hot stage.

Hoo!

During the frantic collision of the two spiritual energies, a roar full of violence and rage came from the combat stage. The roar was not the voice of a human but was more like the howl of an ape. The soundwave knocked back the blood red spiritual energy and made it retreat one step after another.

This scene triggered countless exclamations from the onlookers.

Mu Chen and Luo Li's eyes instantly narrowed. They looked up and found a giant figure over 1,000 feet tall suddenly appearing from the magnificent deep yellow spiritual energy. It seemed the figure was a deep yellow ape. Holding a giant black rod, the ape looked very fierce. Its scarlet eyes were full of violence, rage and bellicosity.

With the emergence of this gigantic ape, it seemed the spiritual energy between heaven and earth was boiling.

"That's..."

Mu Chen couldn't help changing his expression and saying in surprise,

"Is it the War God Ape which ranks 15th in the Earth Rank of the Beast Record?"

Beside him, Luo Li was also surprised. Apparently, she didn't expect that Wu Ling had ingested the beast spirit of the War God Ape. It seemed the Martial Spiritual Academy had rendered much assistance in the ingestion; otherwise, Wu Ling was not strong enough to ingest the spirit of such a powerful spiritual beast.

"It's really horrible Wu Ling even has such a formidable hidden card," Shen Cangsheng and the others exclaimed. Then they started to envy Wu Ling. Normal people would never be qualified to get the spirit of such a powerful spiritual beast, which was not only a great opportunity but also required the assistance of master hands. Otherwise, the backlash of the spiritual beast's spirit would be inevitable.

Although they used to ingest the spirits of spiritual beasts in the Spirit Stage, the spirits of the spiritual beasts they ingested were not powerful. Therefore, along with the improvement of their strength, the strength of the beast spirit would dissipate gradually until it couldn't be used anymore—unless they could ingest the spirits of the top-ranked spiritual beasts in the Beast Record in the Spirit Stage.

"Xue Tianhe can't hold any longer," Li Xuantong said, staring at the combat stage. Once Wu Ling used his hidden card, the deadlock was immediately broken. The massive blood red spiritual energy kept losing ground. Obviously, Wu Ling would be the winner if the situation went on like this.

"It couldn't be that simple." Luo Li shook her head and stared with her beautiful eyes, which were full of coldness, at that figure covered in blood red spiritual energy.

Mu Chen was also staring at the combat stage. He was wondering what Xue Tianhe's hidden card was. Could he still defeat Wu Ling, who was so powerful at this moment?

Boom!

With everyone watching, the gigantic ape Wu Ling created swung the

giant rod and shattered a great deal of blood red spiritual energy. Wu Ling violently stabbed the rod towards the figure hidden in the blood red spiritual energy.

Creak! Creak!

Wu Ling was attacking relentlessly. His rod even left some faint traces in the space. All the dense blood red spiritual energy exploded.

The blood red spiritual energy, which used to be as vast as a sea, was repulsed to a size of merely several hundred feet. The remaining spiritual energy was also about to be crushed under the the rod's impact.

However, when the rod stabbed out violently and was about to crush the remaining spiritual energy, an unforeseen event suddenly happened.

Bang!

A giant fist covered by blood red scales burst out from the blood red spiritual energy and had a head-on collision with the giant rod. The next moment, two formidable strengths spread out, which directly created many cracks in the ground below.

While the fierce wind was raging, all the onlookers, who were greatly horrified, found that the gigantic ape Wu Ling created was knocked back. Its big feet made deep footprints in the ground.

"What?!"

Countless people were screaming and staring in fear at the blood red spiritual energy. What did Xue Tianhe do, exactly, that he could even knock back Wu Ling who had turned into the War God Ape?!

Shen Cangsheng and others were also surprised.

Mu Chen stared at the blood red spiritual energy. When that giant fist covered by blood red scales appeared, he could sense the black egg created by the Nine Nether Bird moving quietly in his Mustard Seed Bracelet.

"Did Xue Tianhe also ingest the spirit of a powerful spiritual beast?"

With flickering eyes, Mu Chen was very serious. These guys indeed hid many secret weapons.

The blood red spiritual energy dissipated gradually. Along with the dissipation of the spiritual energy, a behemoth slowly appeared before everyone's eyes.

Gasp!

When the figure of that behemoth became clear, countless people gasped with surprise.

It was a giant beast in human shape covered by thick blood armor. On its back, there were many blood red bony spikes, which made it quite hideous. An overwhelming ferocious aura permeated the space.

"What's that?"

"It is the Demonic Blood Beast which ranks 13th in the Earth Rank of the Beast Record," Luo Li said in a low voice with a cold look in her beautiful eyes.

"The Demonic Blood Beast which ranks 13th?" Mu Chen was slightly shocked in his heart. It was said that the Demonic Blood Beast was an extremely ferocious beast among all spiritual beasts. Moreover, it ranked 13th in the Earth Rank of the Beast Record, which was only two places lower than the Nine Nether Bird. Its rank could fully illustrate its formidable strength. But this beast was too ferocious. If its spirit was ingested, it could even influence the mind of the ingester, making the ingester ferocious and cruel.

"Inside the Blood God Clan, there are some Blood Seas which were extracted from the blood essence of countless people by the Blood God Clan. They made an agreement with the clan of the demonic blood beasts with those Blood Seas, so that the strength of the Blood God Clan could be enhanced." Luo Li's clear eyes were filled with deep hatred.

"In these years, the Blood God Clan launched massive attacks on our Luo God Clan. They captured many people from our Luo God Clan and turned them into the Blood Seas, which were used to feed the Demonic Blood Beasts."

Mu Chen was shocked. Although he knew the cruelty of the wars

between the clans, he didn't expect the Blood God Clan could be so ferocious and cruel. No wonder Luo Li had an intense hatred of the Blood God Clan.

Looking at the young girl who was biting her red lips, Mu Chen couldn't help taking pity on her. The burden on her shoulders was indeed far beyond his expectation. Billions of her people needed her protection, but she left the Luo God Clan temporarily and spent two years in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. Her sacrifice quite impressed Mu Chen.

She always quietly did many things for him.

Taking a deep breath, Mu Chen held Luo Li's tiny hand. He said nothing, for he knew now he was not qualified to confront the gigantean Blood God Clan. However, one day he would turn this Blood God Clan upside down for her.

Luo Li also sensed Mu Chen's feelings. By holding Mu Chen's palm with her cold little hand, Luo Li felt peace in heart. Then she said in a low voice, "Wu Ling is about to lose."

Mu Chen looked up and found the situation in the combat stage had been reversed. After activating the strength of the Demonic Blood Beast, Xue Tiandu was already stronger than Wu Ling. The gigantic ape kept losing ground in front of the Demonic Blood Beast's bloody fists.

During this scene, everyone realized that the winner of the fight on this combat stage had already been determined.

Bang!

After the last frantic collision, the Demonic Blood Beast was knocked back. The blood scales on its arms were even crushed. However, the gigantic ape was directly blasted up. Its giant body shrank quickly in the air and was finally turned into a human figure, which fell on the ground helter-skelter and created a deep drag mark on the vast combat stage.

Puh! Wu Ling spit out a mouthful of fresh blood. His clothes were also tattered. Staring at the Demonic Blood Beast, Wu Ling's eyes were full of

reluctance and depression. He didn't expect Xue Tiandu could be so strong.

In the sky, the Demonic Blood Beast also shrank quickly and finally turned into the figure of Xue Tiandu. He glanced at Wu Ling ironically. By folding his arms in front of his chest, he focused his eyes on Mu Chen and Luo Li, and smiled cruelly.

Looking at his provocative smile, Mu Chen squinted his eyes and flicked his thumb slowly. Then he turned his thumb down at Xue Tiandu.

In the sunshine, the young man, whose body was quite slender, looked very calm. However, his gesture was impressively arrogant and domineering.

Chapter 611: Mirror of Judgement

The dust gradually settled on the last combat stage. The result of the fight had already been determined.

Of course, the final result surprised many people. None of them expected Wu Ling could be defeated. After all, if all eight captains present were judged according to their popularity, Wu Ling would definitely enter the top three. Even so, he was still defeated. The cruel fact made many people exclaim secretly that the competition of this Academy Competition was very intense.

Staring at each other, all the students of the Martial Spiritual Academy were quite depressed. Presumably, Wu Ling's defeat really demoralized them.

However, they also knew Wu Ling should not be blamed for that. He had already done a good job and even activated the strength of the War God Ape at last, but no one expected Xue Tianhe also had a powerful hidden card.

In the sky, Chief Wu Tianwang of the Martial Spiritual Academy was looking at Xue Tianhe with knitted brows. He couldn't help snorting coldly and saying, "People of this clan are really obnoxious, meddling in everything."

It seemed Wu Tianwang was frustrated by Wu Ling's defeat.

Upon hearing his words, the other four Chiefs said nothing. They also sensed Wu Tianwang's dissatisfaction. However, they couldn't deny Xue Tianhe's qualification in participating in the match; otherwise, the Blood God Clan wouldn't leave the matter alone.

"Hm, since the quarter-finals are finished, let's declare the following matches," Chief Tian Sheng of the Saint Spiritual Academy said with a small smile.

Xue Tianhe had displayed great strength. However, he was really confident in Ji Xuan. Presumably, in this Academy Competition, the Saint

Spiritual Academy would win first prize again.

The other four Chiefs also nodded.

Seeing that, Chief Tian Sheng waved his robe sleeve, and his vigorous and firm voice resounded in the sky like thunder. "The quarter-finals are finished. The four strongest teams have entered the semi-finals.

"They will be the real protagonists of this Academy Competition!

"The Saint Spiritual Academy!"

Along with Chief Tian Sheng's vigorous voice, a dazzling light beam instantly dropped from the sky, illuminating Ji Xuan and his teammates. All eyes were now on them.

"The Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy!"

Another light beam dropped on Mu Chen and his four teammates, creating arcs on them. The audience started cheering thunderously. Of course, the cheers of the students from the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy were the most frantic.

"The Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy!"

A light beam dropped again. Wen Qingxuan was holding her golden war spear with her left hand and resting her right hand on her tiny waist. Her inky long hair cascaded down. Golden armor hugged her curvy and graceful body. The pride of the phoenix could be found in her extremely beautiful face. Stunning beauty radiated from her phoenix-like eyes.

Behind her, Pin'Er, Le'Er and another two girls were as beautiful as flowers and very eye-catching.

"The Blood Spiritual Academy!"

The last light beam dropped on Xue Tianhe and his teammates. Standing in the front, Xue Tianhe folded his arms in front of his chest. His face was quite calm, but his chilly eyes were fixed on Mu Chen.

The four big light beams had attracted the attention of all the onlookers. The four teams were the strongest teams, which couldn't be denied by anyone.

These teams survived the elimination match which had lasted for half a year. Then in the quarter-finals they defeated their opponents, which were as powerful as they were. Finally, they were standing in this position to be hailed and adored by numerous people.

"The top four teams have finally emerged. Maybe the following matches will be fiercer. I am wondering who could ultimately win the championship."

"I think the odds for Ji Xuan from the Saint Spiritual Academy are highest. The strength of this guy is really unfathomable."

"It's hard to say. Wen Qingxuan from the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy is also a hard nut to crack. Although her performance in the previous fights was not very dazzling, even Ji Xuan shouldn't underestimate her strength."

"You are right. I also occasionally heard of her from our Chief. This Wen Qingxuan is really a tough opponent."

"Isn't Mu Chen from the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy a tough opponent? Even Liu Qingyun, who was as powerful as Wu Ling, was defeated by Mu Chen."

"Don't forget that Xue Tianhe. As a guy who could defeat Wu Ling, he is also a formidable opponent for everyone."

"Maybe the champion of this Academy Competition will be the most-contested one in the past century."

Countless whispers burst out at that moment. These four teams were indeed powerful. However, before the final match, no one could predict which team would be the ultimate winner.

While heaven and earth were inundated with thunderous cheers, the four teams were calmly standing on the four combat stages. In front of countless blazing eyes, all of them were calm and quiet without any visible changes in mood.

Teams which could stand there were definitely the strongest ones among all the spiritual academies. They had powerful mental strength and

unshakeable minds.

"I wonder how the following matches are organized," Shen Cangsheng said seriously while watching the other three teams. All three teams were extremely strong. A tough fight was inevitable.

Mu Chen smiled slightly. "No matter which team will be our next opponent, we'll just do our best."

"Anyway, with you and Luo Li, it will be much easier for us," Li Xuantong also said with a smile. Their team had two cores. One was Mu Chen and the other core was naturally Luo Li.

One of them was in plain sight while the other one was in the shadows. Maybe many people still didn't know this young girl, who seldom displayed her strength, was indeed a top-notch expert as powerful as the four captains.

Upon hearing Li Xuantong's words, Mu Chen couldn't help rolling his eyes. As he was about to say something, suddenly he sensed something. His eyes narrowed a bit. Then he raised his head.

At the same time, Luo Li, Ji Xuan, Wen Qingxuan and Xue Tianhe also sensed something and looked up.

They fixed their eyes on the horizon. Suddenly the space in the sky started to twist violently. A huge object, tens of thousands of feet in size, broke the space and slowly emerged.

Gasp!

Everyone gasped at that huge object which emerged by breaking the space.

It was a bronze mirror, tens of thousands of feet in diameter. The frame of the bronze mirror was full of ancient and obscure mystical patterns. The mirror's surface was quite dull, as if it were covered by dust, so it was impossible to see any reflection.

Once the bronze mirror emerged, the space was quite chaotic, as if it couldn't withstand the entry of such a huge object.

The bronze mirror floated quietly in the sky. Its dusty surface gave people the mysterious feeling that it could light up the Great Thousand World.

"That's..."

Shock was found in Mu Chen's eyes. He sensed the slight vibration of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar inside his body. Moreover, what surprised him most was the fluctuation of that Immortal Page in his body.

"It is the divine artifact of the Five Great Academies... the Mirror of Judgement."

Beyond Luo Li's control, the Luoshen Sword in her hand started to radiate sword aura and hum as if it would break away from her hand to fight that mysterious bronze mirror.

"The Mirror of Judgement?"

Upon hearing this name, everyone was shocked. Mu Chen's expression was quite complicated. As a matter of fact, the opportunity of meeting Luo Li in the Spiritual Road was given by this Mirror of Judgement. Everyone who could enter the Spiritual Road was selected by the Mirror of Judgement.

"What is the rank of this divine artifact?" Mu Chen looked at Luo Li and asked in a low voice.

"I'm afraid it is even better than the high rank divine artifact," Luo Li muttered.

Mu Chen gasped again. It was even better than the high rank divine artifact! He didn't expect that such a powerful artifact, which was even difficult for those clans with profound histories to obtain, could be possessed by the Five Great Academies.

"According to the legend, the Mirror of Judgement is a relic of the primordial period. Its radiance could penetrate the barrier of the world and reach the lower planes... no one can hide from its radiance," Luo Li said.

"It is said that in the primordial period, the radiance of the Mirror of Judgement could directly destroy the Sovereign level master hands."

"Is it really so formidable?" Mu Chen had a sudden inspiration. Could he find the whereabouts of his mother with this powerful artifact?

After it flashed in his mind, Mu Chen immediately dismissed the idea. His mother exhausted all her mental efforts to hide him. If he performed detection recklessly, he would be sensed by that mysterious clan. Mu Chen didn't think he was strong enough to face that mysterious clan now.

"It is just a legend... After the primordial catastrophe, it seems the Mirror of Judgement suffered some damage. Now it shouldn't be as powerful as it was before," Luo Li smiled and said.

"I wonder what the Mirror of Judgement could be used for after being summoned by the five Chiefs," Su Xuan asked with puzzlement.

The Mirror of Judgement didn't belong to one certain spiritual academy but was controlled by the Five Great Academies simultaneously. It could only be activated by the synchronized actions of the five Chiefs.

"Could it be used for the following semi-finals?" Shen Cangsheng asked in surprise.

"I guess so." Mu Chen made eye contact with Luo Li. Only this reason could make sense now; otherwise, the Chiefs wouldn't summon this divine artifact.

While everyone was guessing, Chief Tian Sheng also smiled at the sky. He pointed at the Mirror of Judgement, and his vigorous and strong voice echoed again in the ears of everyone in the space.

"The answer is yes. The semi-finals of this Academy Competition will be activated by the Mirror of Judgement."

Wow!

Upon hearing that, the space was immediately filled with thunderous uproars. Even Mu Chen and the other contestants were staring at each other with shock in their eyes.

It seemed the semi-finals were becoming more and more interesting.

Chapter 612: The Sea of Judgement

The huge, ancient bronze mirror floated in the sky. The space around it was obviously twisted as if it were about to crash. It seemed the space couldn't support the existence of such a formidable divine artifact.

Everyone was watching the Mirror of Judgement with eyes full of awe and amazement. For many onlookers, it was the first time they saw such a powerful divine artifact.

"Are the following semi-finals related to this Mirror of Judgement?"

"According to Chief Tian Sheng's words, it is supposed to be this way..."

"That sounds interesting."

"..."

Many people were whispering. Some of them were quite puzzled. This Academy Competition seemed to be different from the previous ones. There was no draw ceremony to pair up the teams. Some other way must have been adopted. However, this uncertainty made people more curious.

In the previous competitions, the Five Great Academies had never summoned the Mirror of Judgement. Therefore, it was a feast for the eyes for everyone this time.

Of course, not only the onlookers were puzzled. Even the four teams on the combat stages also cast their surprised glances towards the Mirror of Judgement. It seemed the contestants also didn't know how the following matches would be chosen.

In front of countless eyes, Chief Tian Sheng stood with his hands behind his back. Then he said with a smile, "Next, the four teams will enter the Mirror of Judgement. All of you share one goal – to walk out of the Mirror of Judgement!

"If all members of a team fail to walk out, that team will lose their qualification and be deemed a loser."

Mu Chen and the other contestants narrowed their eyes a bit. It seemed

the trial inside the Mirror of Judgement could even eliminate the whole team. Under the control of the five Chiefs, their lives wouldn't be endangered. However, once they failed, they would lose the qualification to strive for the championship.

"Do you understand?" Chief Tian Sheng asked slowly, looking at the four teams.

All members of the four teams nodded.

"Well..." Chief Tian Sheng nodded slightly and turned to the other four Chiefs. "Let's open the Mirror of Judgement!"

The rest of the four Chiefs stood up at the same time. After gripping their palms, four ancient bronze seals casting light appeared in their hands. Finally, five light beams burst out and shot onto the dull surface of the Mirror of Judgement.

Hum! Hum!

It seemed as if a strange hum was echoing between heaven and earth. The vast bronze mirror started to rotate. Along with the rotation of the Mirror of Judgement, the space around it was crushed bit by bit. Many scary cracks emerged, pitch black and bottomless.

While the Mirror of Judgement was rotating, its dusty surface gradually became clear and bright. Dim light was radiating from the mirror's surface as if it could penetrate the barrier of space.

On the combat stages, all members of the four teams were staring at the mirror's surface, which was becoming increasingly brighter.

Taking a deep breath, Mu Chen shouted in a low voice and waved his hand. "Let's go!"

Whoosh!

The instant his voice broke off, he dashed out and turned into a light beam streaking across the sky. The next moment, he dashed into the Mirror of Judgement and immediately disappeared. Behind him, Luo Li and the other three teammates followed him closely.

At the same time, the other three teams also dashed into the Mirror of Judgement without any hesitation.

When all the teams had disappeared, the Mirror of Judgement became even brighter. At last, a large image emerged in which the figures of the four teams were displayed.

Everyone widened their eyes to watch the trial of the Mirror of Judgement.

...

When Mu Chen and his teammates dashed into the Mirror of Judgement, dazzling light was radiating in front of their eyes. However, the radiance only lasted for a short while before the light dissipated.

Once the light dissipated, Mu Chen and his teammates were reflexively on alert. With spiritual energy covering their tense bodies, all of them were scanning the peripheral region with their vigilant eyes.

The next moment, all of them couldn't help changing their expressions.

It seemed they were standing in the depths of an extremely vast, chaotic sea. The sea was indeed boundless as far as the eye could see and gave them an unfathomable feeling.

In addition, this chaotic sea was emitting a formidable sense of pressure. The feeling could freeze the blood of Mu Chen and his teammates.

Their team was enclosed in a dim light shield, which separated them from the chaotic sea. However, even with the light shield, that indescribable sense of pressure kept infiltrating their bodies.

Mu Chen fixed his eyes on the chaotic sea outside the light shield. After a sudden twitch in his eyelids he said, "It seems this sea... is formed by an agglomeration of the spiritual energies."

Upon hearing his words, Shen Cangsheng and the other teammates were greatly shocked. Then they started to look at the chaotic sea outside the light shield in fear. Could this sea be formed by pure spiritual energies? The spiritual energy could even be condensed into a substantial

sea! How horrible the strength was!

Moreover, the thing that made them jumpy was it seemed they were just in this formidable sea of spiritual energy.

At the thought of this, Shen Cangsheng and the rest of the teammates turned pale. Even this sea of spiritual energy was not controlled by someone intentionally. The pressure of the spiritual energy alone was indeed too difficult for them to deal with.

Looking around, Mu Chen found another three light shields in the distance, where the other three teams were enclosed. Now the members of these three teams were also probing the place.

When Mu Chen was looking around, a vigorous and strong voice resounded suddenly in their ears. It was the voice of Chief Tian Sheng.

"The light shield which is protecting you will break after 10 breaths. The end of this sea of spiritual energy is right above you. Here you can take all kinds of measures and use any methods, as long as you can reach the end and walk out of the Mirror of Judgement. Of course, if all members of a team fail to walk out, the team will be disqualified."

Hearing that, Mu Chen and his teammates narrowed their eyes and immediately tightened their muscles.

The time of 10 breaths quickly passed by. The atmosphere inside the light shield was quite suffocating.

Crack!

After the tenth breath, the light shield enclosing them immediately became dim. At last it cracked into light spots and dissipated.

Hardly any of the light shield had dissipated when the formidable sea of spiritual energy gushed in and inundated all five of them. The horrible pressure of spiritual energy was raging overwhelmingly.

In an instant, black lightning burst out on the surface of Mu Chen's body and began flashing. Obviously, Mu Chen had activated his Thunder God Physique. Even so, his body still sank down a bit. It seemed the

horrible pressure of spiritual energy which was gushing in from all directions was about to crush his body.

Beside him, Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong and Su Xuan had already activated their spiritual energy to form protection on the surfaces of their bodies. But the next moment, all of them still sank down hundreds of feet. Their faces were flushed.

Only Luo Li could stay side by side with Mu Chen.

"The pressure of spiritual energy is really powerful!" Luo Li's pretty face was serious. Luckily, the sea of spiritual energy was not controlled by someone attacking them. Otherwise, they would have suffered great losses in an instant.

Mu Chen also nodded. He looked beyond and found the spiritual light was flashing in the distance. It seemed the other three teams were also doing their best to adapt to and resist the pressure of this sea of spiritual energy.

"Let's rush up!"

Mu Chen looked up and found the chaotic color of this sea of spiritual energy was boundless. It seemed it was not easy for them to rush out.

They had to finish the remaining journey, no matter how many difficulties they had overcome in the past and what challenges were awaiting ahead.

Luo Li nodded slightly.

Seeing that, Mu Chen took a deep breath. The black lightning on his body was even brighter. Six lightning runes instantly emerged on his chest. The next moment, he stomped his feet in the air to create an airwave, which blasted the surrounding liquid spiritual energy. Meanwhile, his body rose up like black lightning.

The black lightning was flashing around his body, resisting the formidable pressure and squeezing the sea of spiritual energy.

Behind Mu Chen, Luo Li was following him closely. The spiritual energy

was rapidly flowing on the surface of her body. With a subtle method, she diverted some pressure to maintain her speed.

Not far behind them, Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong and Su Xuan were doing their best to keep up with them. It seemed they were walking in a swamp. Their spiritual energy was being rapidly consumed.

In the distance, the other three teams also had set off. Fifteen figures weaved their way in the sea of spiritual energy and dashed towards the end point.

Outside the Mirror of Judgement, everyone was focusing their eyes on the mirror's surface, which was displaying the image of twenty figures rapidly tearing the sea of spiritual energy apart.

Although the onlookers were not in the sea of spiritual energy, they were greatly surprised they could still sense the formidable pressure given off from the Mirror of Judgement. If they were placed in that sea of spiritual energy, it would be extremely difficult for them to move a single step, let alone reach the final destination.

In the sky, the five Chiefs were also staring at the Mirror of Judgement. Watching those twenty figures, their expressions differed from one another.

"Hehe, I wonder how many of them can walk out from the Mirror of Judgement," Chief Tian Song of the Azure Sky Spiritual Academy smiled and said with interest.

"It is not easy for them to walk out from the Mirror of Judgement."

Chief Tian Sheng also smiled. With his profound eyes fixed on the mirror, he said slowly, "I think this time the people who can walk out of the Mirror of Judgement will be counted with one hand..."

Chapter 613: Grievous Loss

Whoosh!

Dozens of figures skimmed like fish over the chaotic sea of spiritual energy. Magnificent spiritual energy was flowing around them, resisting the formidable pressure coming from all directions.

Compared to their speed outside the mirror, the figures were obviously slower now.

The pressure of the spiritual energy in the sea of spiritual energy was intimidating. A huge amount of spiritual energy would be consumed just to take one step forward.

Therefore, even though all members of the four teams were top-notch experts, it was impossible for them to stroll easily through this sea of spiritual energy.

Because of the pressure of spiritual energy, after several minutes, the strength gap between teammates started to show. For example, in Mu Chen's team, Mu Chen and Luo Li were in front; however, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong were lagging behind about 110 feet while Su Xuan was at the rear of the team.

Although Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong had pushed their spiritual energy to the upper limit, they still couldn't catch up with Mu Chen and Luo Li.

Similarly, in the other three teams, the strength gap between teammates also could be clearly seen.

Su Xuan was the last one in the line. Her face was flushed. The spiritual energy permeating around her body was also in disorder. She realized her spiritual energy was about to run out.

"Need help?" Mu Chen's voice, which was wrapped in his spiritual energy, came to Su Xuan's ears.

Clenching her teeth slightly, Su Xuan shook her head and said, "It seems I can't make it this time. The rest is on you. Don't stop for me."

Su Xuan knew what she should do now was not be a burden on Mu Chen and Luo Li. After all, it was unnecessary for all of them to walk out of this Sea of Judgement. As long as one of them could reach the end, it should be a victory for their team.

Hearing her words, Mu Chen hesitated a bit and finally nodded. Now was not a good time to be indecisive and stop for teammates.

"Then I'll go first. You take care!"

As he said this, Mu Chen took a deep breath. The black lightning on his body was brighter than before. Stomping his feet, he blasted the liquid spiritual energy under him. The next moment, he started to abruptly speed up.

Luo Li formed spiritual seals with her jade-like hands. The spiritual energy formed a light, flowing film on the surface of her body. Her measure was not as tough as Mu Chen's measures. However, she could subtly divert some of the spiritual energy pressure to keep her speed.

Behind them, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong had wry smiles on their faces upon seeing Mu Chen and Luo Li drifting away. Their situation was a little bit better Su Xuan's. However, through the rapid consumption of spiritual energy, they realized they couldn't keep up with Mu Chen and Luo Li.

Swish!

The four of them formed two small teams and dashed towards the end, one after the other.

In the distance, obvious gaps could also be found in the other three teams. Only their captains could take the lead in the front.

Splash! Splash!

The sound of striking the liquid spiritual energy was just like flowing water. Everyone's faces were filled with solemnity. When they skimmed over, they also stayed alert. It seemed the Sea of Judgement was tranquil now, but it gave them a vague feeling of uneasiness.

Presumably, this place shouldn't be as simple as it seemed to be.

Mu Chen's eyes were flickering slightly. He was staring at the Sea of Judgement, which was quiet. Suddenly, his eyes contracted. He sensed the liquid spiritual energy around him had been agitated.

"Everyone, stay alert!" Mu Chen said in a low voice.

Hardly were the words out of his mouth when Luo Li changed her expression and said hurriedly, "Look out! Something is beneath us!"

Luo Li's words caused a twinge in Mu Chen's heart. He looked back and found an enormous spiritual energy whirlpool had suddenly appeared beneath them in the sea of spiritual energy. The whirlpool was rotating slowly like a big mouth, as if it were about to devour them.

The spiritual energy whirlpool was emitting a powerful suction force, slowing all of them down.

Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong were at the bottom. They were greatly surprised, for they were in range of the whirlpool's suction force. They were instantly slowed down like snails and were even drawn backwards a bit.

"D*mn!"

Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong immediately looked surly. They had pushed their spiritual energy to the upper limit. However, they found the rotation of the spiritual energy whirlpool was faster and faster, and the whirlpool was rapidly approaching them.

"You go first!"

With knitted brows, Li Xuantong suddenly grabbed Shen Cangsheng's arm and threw him out vigorously. Li Xuantong was pushed back by the reverse thrust and was at last devoured directly by the spiritual energy whirlpool.

With Li Xuantong's aid, Shen Cangsheng temporarily broke away from the whirlpool's suction. However, his face had a wry smile because Li Xuantong's sacrifice only bought him very limited time.

Whoosh! Whoosh!

While Mu Chen and his teammates were in trouble, the other three teams were also in a similar situation. Like gigantic sea beasts, the enormous spiritual energy whirlpools created formidable suction force and devoured anyone lagging behind.

Everyone's blood was frozen at this moment. They knew the Sea of Judgement had finally started to display its formidable power.

Swish!

All of them maximized their speed to skim over the ubiquitous liquid spiritual energy and tried their best to get away from the chasing and devouring of the spiritual energy whirlpools beneath them.

With a flushed face, Shen Cangsheng also maximized the circulation of his spiritual energy. The magnificent spiritual energy flowing on his body pushed away all of the liquid spiritual energy pressing down from all directions.

With his desperate resistance, he finally broke away from the spiritual energy whirlpool chasing him from beneath. When the suction force disappeared, Shen Cangsheng heaved a sigh of relief and couldn't help cursing, "The d*mned thing!"

"Be careful!"

However, he had barely relaxed when Mu Chen's yelling exploded in his ears.

Shen Cangsheng turned around in fear and found the chaotic spiritual energy was surging on his right side. The next moment, a whirlpool formed, devouring him directly before he had time to react.

Staring at each other, Mu Chen and Luo Li didn't expect they would lose all their teammates in less than 10 minutes. Luckily, it seemed the other three teams also suffered serious losses. Among the remaining fifteen figures lurching forward not long ago, only the four captains and Luo Li "survived" now.

However, Mu Chen and Luo Li were not in the mood for thinking about other teams, as they found this Sea of Judgement was in a total frenzy. The liquid spiritual energy was raging frantically. Numerous spiritual energy whirlpools appeared out of nowhere and tried to devour them like monstrous mouths.

At this moment, it was even more difficult to move forward. Mu Chen and Luo Li had to resist the formidable pressure of the spiritual energy. They also had to evade those spiritual energy whirlpools that appeared beside them from time to time...

After only five minutes in this hostile environment, sweat started to appear on Mu Chen's forehead.

Outside the Mirror of Judgement, countless people were watching the five figures forging ahead in the Sea of Judgement. The spiritual energy whirlpools appearing beside them now and then also made the onlookers jumpy. Indeed, it was not easy to walk through this Sea of Judgement...

"Oops, Mu Chen is also trapped in a whirlpool!" In the area for the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, Ye Qingling's expression changed abruptly. From the surface of the Mirror of Judgement, she saw Mu Chen going full speed ahead and then getting sucked into a spiritual energy whirlpool before he had time to dodge.

"Mu Chen can't be trapped in a spiritual energy whirlpool like this. Don't worry," Ling Xi said.

Ling Xi's words were hardly out of her mouth when Ye Qingling and other students from the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy saw dazzling black lightning burst out from Mu Chen's body. He increased his speed abruptly and broke away from that spiritual energy whirlpool. Seeing this, Ye Qingling and the others heaved a sigh of relief.

"But the following spiritual energy whirlpools will be more and more powerful. It will be a lot of trouble for them to be trapped in those whirlpools again," Ling Xi said slowly while staring at the Mirror of Judgement with her beautiful eyes.

Hearing her words, Ye Qingling and the others started to worry again.

In the chaotic Sea of Judgement...

Luo Li looked at Mu Chen, who had just broken away from the spiritual energy whirlpool, and promptly asked, "Are you OK?"

Mu Chen shook his head. Seven lightning runes had appeared on his chest. Obviously, he had pushed his Thunder God Physique to the upper limit to break away from the restraint of the spiritual energy whirlpool.

"Be careful, the whirlpools are becoming more and more powerful," Mu Chen reminded her. The size of the newly-emerged spiritual energy whirlpools could reach tens of thousands of feet. "Intimidating" could be used to describe the spiritual energy in these whirlpools. Once trapped in one, even if they could break away from it, the spiritual energy consumption would be unbearable.

If the same thing happened several times more, even Mu Chen and Luo Li wouldn't be able to hold out for long.

"It seems they are also trapped and in trouble," Luo Li said after glancing with her beautiful eyes at the other three figures in the distance.

Mu Chen nodded slightly. In the next moment, the black lightning was exploding under his feet. He picked up speed again. Seeing that, Luo Li immediately accelerated to closely follow him.

Through mutual assistance, the two of them continued to rush towards the end. On their way, they were more scared than hurt. It seemed they were a little bit faster than the other three people.

In the distance, Ji Xuan skimmed the surface of liquid spiritual energy with his tiptoe and evaded a spiritual energy whirlpool like a ghost. Then he glanced with his cold eyes at Mu Chen and Luo Li in the distance.

Now, among the four teams, only the team of the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy had two people left. If the two of them managed to reach the end, it would be an adverse situation for the rest of the teams.

Ji Xuan's eyes flickered a bit. He turned to where Xue Tianhe was.

After making eye contact, both Ji Xuan and Xue Tianhe nodded

indiscernibly. The expression in their eyes was chilling.

Chapter 614: Super Whirlpool

Whoosh!

In the chaotic Sea of Judgement, Mu Chen and Luo Li were dashing forward like fish. They were quite agile, and through continuous acceleration and dodging, managed to stay away from all the spiritual energy whirlpools that appeared in front of them.

However, the pressure of spiritual energy in the Sea of Judgement was way too strong. The spiritual energy consumption needed to finish any movement was several times that of the outside world. Therefore, this high consumption rate kept weakening Mu Chen and Luo Li.

Sweat appeared on their foreheads. However, both of them still focused their attention without slacking off. More and more spiritual energy whirlpools emerged. The emergence of the whirlpools also became more and more frequent and unpredictable.

Once they were trapped in a whirlpool, even if they could break away from it, the spiritual energy consumption in doing so was very high. The Sea of Judgement was still endless. If their their spiritual energy ran out, it would be extremely difficult for them to move a single step.

Whiz!

Another spiritual energy whirlpool of around 10,000 feet formed in front of them and to the right. The swirling whirlpool was trying to devour them like a ferocious sea beast.

Black lightning exploded on Mu Chen's body. He dashed out like lightning and evaded that whirlpool's suction range.

Luo Li was standing on the Luoshen Sword, which was emitting a fierce sword aura. Even the liquid spiritual energy was torn apart by the sword aura. It seemed the sword had created a small space in the Sea of Judgement in which Luo Li could go through that whirlpool.

After dodging that spiritual energy whirlpool, Mu Chen let out a sigh of relief. An hour had passed and his body had gradually adapted to the

spiritual energy's pressure. Even though his body was quite tough, he could still feel the dull sting on his skin. Maybe the rest of the people there were resisting the pressure with their magnificent spiritual energy.

Even so, their resistance couldn't last long. Mu Chen could sense that the pressure of spiritual energy around him was becoming stronger with the passage of time.

In addition, they didn't dare violently resist the pressure of the spiritual energy because the spiritual energy in the area was extremely frantic. Violent fluctuation of spiritual energy could result in the generation of an enormous spiritual energy whirlpool.

Therefore, all of them had to move forward with utmost caution and care.

Luo Li approached Mu Chen and sent her voice to Mu Chen's ears. "The pressure of spiritual energy here is becoming increasingly stronger. Maybe the end is close."

The pressure of spiritual energy there was too strong to be resisted by those top-notch experts. Presumably, the Chiefs of the Five Great Academies wouldn't prepare a trial which was far beyond their limits. Otherwise, no one could walk out of this Sea of Judgement.

Mu Chen nodded slightly. Then he looked beyond on his left and right sides and found Ji Xuan, Wen Qingxuan and Xue Tianhe were also moving forward.

The spiritual energy whirlpools were becoming denser, so the five of them started to approach each other unknowingly.

At this moment, Wen Qingxuan also saw Mu Chen and Luo Li, so she waved to them. A shining smile was on her sweaty face, which was quite tempting.

Luo Li replied with a small smile. Mu Chen also smiled at her.

In the Sea of Judgement, five people were chasing each other. They turned themselves into light beams and tried to pick up speed by all kinds of measures. Generally speaking, there wasn't an obvious gap between

them.

Mu Chen had pushed his Thunder God Physique to the upper limit. The black lightning kept flashing on the surface of his body. However, once the black lightning emerged, it would be pressed into his body by the formidable pressure of the spiritual energy, resulting in a tingling sensation.

At the very beginning, Mu Chen was seriously bothered by this tingling. It hampered him from concentrating on the sensation of the spiritual energy whirlpools suddenly emerging. This tingling was also the primary cause of his being trapped in the spiritual energy whirlpools several times.

However, after being bothered for a while, Mu Chen was surprised. He sensed that the tingling was turning into numbness, as if his muscles were strengthened by lightning.

Moreover, besides the numbness, Mu Chen could also sense the slight, indistinct increase of strength in his body.

This discovery greatly surprised Mu Chen. After a short while of observation and contemplation, finally he realized that when the black lightning on the surface of his body was pressed into his body by the formidable pressure of spiritual energy, the lightning would shuttle back and forth in his muscles. Together with the pressure of the spiritual energy, this created the numbness.

"So that explains it."

Mu Chen was suddenly enlightened. He didn't expect the pressure of spiritual energy here could be so helpful.

Actually, it is a good place to strengthen my body and enhance my strength. This idea flashed in Mu Chen's mind. He had made up his mind to enhance his strength in this place. Thinking of this, he concentrated his mind and without any hesitation, started to lower his resistance to the pressure of the spiritual energy.

While Mu Chen was immersed in the strength enhancement through the pressure of spiritual energy, he didn't sense that Ji Xuan and Xue

Tianhe were secretly approaching during their frequent evasion of the spiritual energy whirlpools.

Their approach was so stealthy that even Luo Li failed to sense it. Ji Xuan and Xue Tianhe had used high speed movements to dodge those inexhaustible spiritual energy whirlpools.

Therefore, when Luo Li suddenly sensed Ji Xuan and Xue Tianhe's approach, they were only 1,000 feet away from her.

Alertness immediately showed in Luo Li's clear eyes. When it came to cautiousness, she was as good as Mu Chen. After all, she was the future Empress of the Luo God Clan. Compared to Mu Chen, she was even more leery about other people.

However, this time Ji Xuan and Xue Tianhe obviously came prepared. When they saw Luo Li's leery eyes, they replied with a slight smile, which was quite ferocious and cold.

Boom!

In an instant, magnificent spiritual energy burst out from both of them. The Sea of Judgement in this area covered hundreds of millions of square feet. Triggered by their spiritual energy, the sea started to frantically fluctuate.

The liquid spiritual energy was already very violent. After being triggered, this vast area was in total frenzy within the span of several breaths.

Hum! Hum!

The spiritual energy ripples were spreading. Many massive spiritual energy whirlpools rapidly formed all over the vast area.

Luo Li's expression was totally changed at that moment.

Before she had time to react, two intimidating spiritual energy beams swept out from Ji Xuan and Xue Tianhe's hands. However, the two spiritual energy beams didn't target Luo Li and Mu Chen, but were shot into the areas around them.

Boom! Boom!

The spiritual energy exploded and over 10 spiritual energy whirlpools were formed directly around Mu Chen and Luo Li, instantly encasing them. In addition, these spiritual energy whirlpools were very close to each other. In the next moment, these whirlpools merged into an even larger whirlpool.

"You!"

Wen Qingxuan also noticed Ji Xuan and Xue Tianhe's actions. Her expression was also changed. The spiritual energy whirlpools in this area were too large, and could almost encase all of them.

Whiz!

Ji Xuan and Xue Tianhe moved back rapidly. At the same time, they kept flicking their fingers to sweep out many spiritual energy beams, which made the area even more frantic and horrible.

The Sea of Judgement was very violent and sensitive. Ji Xuan and Xue Tianhe seized the moment by ruthlessly taking action when Mu Chen and Luo Li were in the most sensitive area.

They attacked ruthlessly and ferociously by pushing the spiritual energy to the upper limit. The spiritual energy whirlpool they created, which covered an area of hundreds of millions of square feet, could be considered a super whirlpool.

The five of them were all in that whirlpool, but Mu Chen and Luo Li were closer to the center.

"Retreat!"

Seeing the formation of that super whirlpool, Ji Xuan and Xue Tianhe moved back immediately without any hesitation. They gripped their hands and then ancient jade appeared in them. In the next moment, they cracked the ancient jade.

As the ancient jade cracked, the space around their body was twisted. In the next moment, their figures disappeared in a flash of light. When they

reappeared, they were already in a position over 10,000 feet away and successfully out of the influence of that super whirlpool.

Apparently, the two of them were fully prepared this time.

At the same time, Wen Qingxuan was staring at Ji Xuan and Xue Tianhe hatefully. She formed spiritual seals with her jade-like hands. Golden light was permeating her and then turned into a pair of giant phoenix wings behind her back.

Boom!

The phoenix wings flapped and Wen Qingxuan immediately picked up speed. She broke away from the strain of that super whirlpool and dashed out. She had been at the very edge of that whirlpool, so she managed to get out effortlessly.

Wen Qingxuan looked anxiously at the central area of that super whirlpool, where the two figures grew more and more dim.

Mu Chen, immersed in the strength enhancement, was awakened by the noise. Turning his eyes, he realized what was happening. Then his face darkened.

These two guys still refuse to give up their evil designs!

"What should we do?" Luo Li was resisting the formidable suction force coming from the center of that super whirlpool. Then she said anxiously, "If this continues, both of us will be sucked into the whirlpool."

Taking a deep breath, Mu Chen's black eyes were filled with coldness.

"We can't resist the suction force anymore. With any additional delay, none of us will be able to get out of it," Mu Chen said. "Let me send you out!"

Luo Li was slightly surprised. Clenching her red lips, she said, "A fight between you and Ji Xuan is awaiting. This time you shouldn't be absent. So let me send you out!"

Luo Li grabbed Mu Chen's wrist with her jade-like hand. However, before she had time to move, her hand was already held by Mu Chen. A

glint of a smile appeared on the young man's handsome face.

"Indeed, this fight belongs to me. However, please trust me, I am not that fragile... Wait for me to come out!"

Spiritual energy exploded in Mu Chen's palm, pushing Luo Li back. Staring at Mu Chen with her clear eyes, the young girl clenched her teeth and finally stomped her feet. A massive sword aura was emitted from the Luoshen Sword. Her figure was wrapped in the sword aura, which tore the dense liquid spiritual energy apart. Finally, she dashed out from that super spiritual energy whirlpool.

When Luo Li got out of the whirlpool, Mu Chen was sucked into that formidable spiritual energy whirlpool and instantly disappeared.

Chapter 615: The Top Four

The breathtaking scene in the Sea of Judgement was displayed in the clear surface of the Mirror of Judgement. Countless students were watching dumbfoundedly, and then an earth-shaking uproar burst out.

"Ji Xuan and Xue Tianhe are really insidious!"

"What a vicious method! Mu Chen was eliminated directly. Don't forget he is a championship favorite..."

"This couldn't be defined as a vicious method. After all, Chief Tian Sheng used to say they could take any measure to win. I can only say that Mu Chen's failure was caused by his negligence."

"An unequal contest brings no honor to the victor."

"What a pity..."

Many people were whispering. Some of them expressed their contempt while some of them continued their support. For a moment, it was quite noisy in the vast space.

"This Ji Xuan is shameless!" No one was angrier than students of the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. All of their faces were grim with anger. Before, the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy had gained advantages because they had two survivors – Mu Chen and Luo Li. Now Mu Chen was eliminated, and only Luo Li was left. The advantage was instantly gone.

"What a detestable guy!" Yu Xi said angrily. Her tiny face was full of wrath.

Ye Qingling and the others also sighed slightly. None of them expected Ji Xuan could be so filthy as to attack at the most critical moment. However, they also knew Ji Xuan's action couldn't be defined as foul according to the rules.

"It doesn't matter. Even though Brother Mu Chen can't participate in the following fights, Sister Luo Li will definitely stop Ji Xuan from getting what he wants." Sun'Er had to console everyone.

Knitting her brows, Ling Xi was also staring at the Mirror of Judgement. She could sense the pressure of spiritual energy from that super spiritual energy whirlpool. It was very difficult for a master who had reached the level of the Third Grade of the Spirit Disaster to get out from that super whirlpool.

Mu Chen had just reached the level of the First Grade of the Spirit Disaster. The possibility he would get out was very low.

"This Ji Xuan is indeed a bane." Ling Xi's pretty face was full of coldness. A glint of murderous aura was seen in her beautiful eyes.

While the space was filled with uproars, the five Chiefs in the sky also noticed the scene. Chief Tai Cang glared coldly at Chief Tian Sheng. Chief Tian Sheng replied with a small smile.

Tightly clenching his fists in his long sleeves, Chief Tai Cang gradually calmed down. He knew it was useless to lose his temper here. Ji Xuan's behavior was filthy; however, he didn't break the rules.

In the following matches, we have to count on Luo Li. Chief Tai Cang sighed slightly in his heart. Luckily, the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy still had Luo Li. Although Mu Chen was eliminated, they still stood a chance. Luo Li was a girl with a strong background and she always hid her strength.

...

Inside the Sea of Judgement

Outside the super spiritual energy whirlpool, Wen Qingxuan was anxiously looking at the whirlpool's central area. Ji Xuan and Xue Tianhe stood not far from her with smiles on their faces. Their joint action this time could be rated as perfect.

Whoosh!

While they were smiling, a sharp, air-rending sound came out from the whirlpool. A beautiful figure tore the liquid spiritual energy apart and in the next moment, appeared outside the super whirlpool. It was Luo Li.

Seeing Luo Li's emergence, Ji Xuan and Xue Tianhe were surprised a bit but stayed calm. As long as Mu Chen was trapped in the whirlpool, their goal had been achieved.

"Luo Li!" Wen Qingxuan was pleasantly surprised by Luo Li's emergence.

Whiz!

However, now Luo Li's pretty face was full of coldness. She didn't reply to Wen Qingxuan but formed sword seals with her jade-like hands. The Luoshen Sword dashed out. Two unstoppable, fierce sword auras tore the liquid spiritual energy apart and rushed directly towards Ji Xuan and Xue Tianhe.

Seeing Luo Li's direct attack, Ji Xuan and Xue Tianhe were a bit surprised. They waved their robe sleeves and two magnificent spiritual energy beams swept out and collided directly with the sword auras.

Boom!

The fluctuation of spiritual energy was raging and pushed away all the liquid spiritual energy in the area.

Luo Li's pretty face was chilling. She held her jade-like hands and the next moment, the Luoshen Sword appeared in them. Magnificent spiritual energy was radiating from Luo Li's body. Apparently, Luo Li was about to launch a full-scale attack.

"Luo Li, are you really going to fight both of us here?" Ji Xuan said in a low voice, facing Luo Li's aggressiveness.

"Ha, no wonder you are the next Empress of the Luo God Clan. Your boldness is really impressive!" Xue Tianhe smiled coldly and watched Luo Li. She wouldn't have any advantage if she decided to fight Ji Xuan and Xue Tianhe in the area, even though she had the assistance of the Luoshen Sword.

"Luo Li, don't be rash." Wen Qingxuan came over and stopped beside Luo Li. Grabbing Luo Li's arm, she said earnestly, "It is not a good place to fight them."

Staring at Ji Xuan and Xue Tianhe with chilly eyes, Luo Li grabbed the Luoshen Sword. Undisguised murderous aura was radiating from her.

"Luo Li, all measures are allowed in this Sea of Judgement. Mu Chen's failure could only be attributed to his negligence."

Seeing Luo Li's chilly eyes, Ji Xuan was quite angry. He sneered, "What I've done is for Mu Chen's own good. If he couldn't handle such a puny trick, it's better for him to be an ordinary person. The road to power is not for him to set foot on."

"You really don't think I can attack you here?" Luo Li's clear and cold voice was quite emotionless, but it agitated the liquid spiritual energy around her.

"Ji Xuan, if you want a fight, I don't mind giving you a good one here," Wen Qingxuan said coldly and held out her jade-like hands. The next moment, a golden war spear appeared in them.

Ji Xuan and Xue Tian's previous actions were quite distasteful for Wen Qingxuan. Moreover, because of the relationship between her and Luo Li, she couldn't sit still and allow Ji Xuan and Xue Tianhe to gang up on her.

Seeing the aggressiveness of the two girls, Ji Xuan also squinted his eyes slightly. For him, the strength of these two girls was quite intimidating. If they fought in this violent Sea of Judgement and a more formidable spiritual energy whirlpool was created, none of them would escape. Apparently, he didn't want that.

"He he, Mu Chen really has good luck with ladies." Xue Tianhe smiled sarcastically. Of course, deep in his sarcasm, there was inevitably jealousy. After all, even he found these two marvelous girls standing in front of him tempting. Now the two girls sided with Mu Chen, which greatly annoyed him.

"If he is really capable, he should walk out by himself; otherwise, he won't have the chance to fight me this time."

Ji Xuan smiled evenly. Looking at Luo Li, he said, "If you want revenge for Mu Chen, just walk out of this Mirror of Judgement. No matter what

kind of fight you want to have, I will play along."

After saying that, Ji Xuan turned around and dashed towards the end of the Sea of Judgement. Seeing his movement, Xue Tianhe also left by following him.

After their departure, the golden war spear in Wen Qingxuan's hands disappeared. She looked at Luo Li's cold face and sighed helplessly. None of them expected Mu Chen could be stopped in this way.

"He will come out," Luo Li said in a low voice.

Wen Qingxuan replied with a wry smile. She didn't know what to say. If one of them was trapped in this super whirlpool, the possibility of coming out would be extremely low.

"No matter if he can come out or not, it's time for us to go. You won't let Ji Xuan win the championship, right?" Wen Qingxuan looked at Luo Li.

Staring at the super whirlpool, Luo Li finally nodded. It was not time for her to stop. If Mu Chen couldn't come out, she should be the one to stop Ji Xuan.

Clenching her red lips slightly, Luo Li loosened her grip on the Luoshen Sword. She then stepped on the sword, which radiated fierce sword aura, and dashed out by riding it. Luo Li's dazzling long hair was fluttering in the air and was very alluring.

Looking at the super whirlpool, Wen Qingxuan's heart was full of mixed feelings. She followed Luo Li and left.

From then on, nothing happened in the Sea of Judgement. Although the pressure of spiritual energy was increasing, the four of them were really powerful and managed to handle the formidable pressure.

After struggling for over 10 minutes, an unusual fluctuation appeared in the chaotic sea of spiritual energy. A dazzling door of light emerged in the direction of the end point.

Watching that door, the four of them heaved a sigh of relief. Finally, they managed to reach the end point; otherwise, maybe all of them would have

exhausted their spiritual energy.

Whoosh!

Four figures swept over and dashed out of the light door without any hesitation.

Above the golden battle stage, the Mirror of Judgement was quietly floating in the air.

Whiz! Whiz!

Being watched by countless people, the Mirror of Judgement suddenly burst out with dazzling light. Inside the light, four figures flew out and finally stood in the air.

When the four figures emerged, an earth shaking uproar burst out between heaven and earth.

Four teams entered the Mirror of Judgement, but only four people managed to walk out. The fierce competition shocked all the onlookers.

"Mu Chen didn't come out as expected..."

Some people sighed softly in pity when they found Mu Chen was not one of those four figures. None of them expected this unstoppable dark horse would fail near the end.

"Next will be the semi-finals."

Four figures were standing in the air, attracting everyone's eyes. When they dashed out of the Mirror of Judgement, their exhausted spiritual energy was augmented. After the augmentation, their spiritual energy was even stronger than it was before their entry into the Mirror of Judgement. Obviously, they had benefited from the journey inside the Mirror of Judgement.

Luo Li was standing in the air with a sword in her hands. During the earth-shaking cheers, she turned to the enormous Mirror of Judgement. Finally, she took a breath and slowly held out her jade-like hands.

Mu Chen, do come out! You have been waiting for this fight for three years, so don't you be absent from it!

Chapter 616: The Battle for Champion

Splash!

At the bottom of the super whirlpool, the liquid spiritual energy was circulating frantically. Its formidable strength could crush a master who had reached the Third Grade of the Spirit Disaster.

Spiritual light was blossoming at the bottom of the gloomy whirlpool where a figure was sitting with his legs crossed. Black lightning was frantically flashing on his body, creating dull thunderclaps.

This figure was Mu Chen, who was trapped in the super whirlpool.

At that moment, he was not apparently in good shape. The black lightning was flashing on his body, which meant he had pushed his Thunder God Physique to the upper limit. Even so, the formidable force pressing in from all directions still made him confused.

On the surface of his body, fresh blood kept seeping out from his pores, which meant his body couldn't withstand the pressure anymore. The strength of the super whirlpool was irresistible, even though he had the protection of the Hepta Rune Lightning.

Puh!

Mu Chen spat out a mouthful of fresh blood, which was flowing down from the corners of his mouth. The bloodstain made his handsome face look a little bit ferocious. He reached out his hand and slowly wiped off the blood.

His black eyes were full of coldness; however, not a glint of fear could be found in his eyes.

"Indeed, this pressure is irresistible..." Because of the formidable pressure, Mu Chen's voice was quite hoarse, as if his throat were injured.

He raised his head a little bit. His sight was full of rapidly rotating liquid spiritual energy, which continuously exerted formidable pressure on him.

He could sense the acute pain permeating his body, becoming

increasingly stronger. It meant his body couldn't hold out for long in such conditions.

Once he was unconscious due to serious injury, he would be sent directly out of the Mirror of Judgement. In this way, he would definitely lose the opportunity to participate in the battle for the championship. Therefore, Mu Chen would never let that happen.

"Since I am still not strong enough..."

The young man raised his handsome face, which was still a little bit immature because of his young age. However, a perseverance which was quite rare among his peers could be found in his countenance.

He pressed his lips together and started to gradually hold his hands. His eyes were as cold as blades.

"Let me become stronger!"

Much of Mu Chen's insistence on letting Luo Li go first was because he didn't want her to be endangered; however, he chose to stay in the whirlpool alone because he also had his own plans.

Although the pressure of the spiritual energy in the Sea of Judgement was extremely horrible, it was quite helpful for cultivation. Of course, the prerequisite was that the cultivator could handle the risk and suffering caused by the pressure of spiritual energy.

In a whirlpool like this, risks and opportunities co-existed.

In the face of a death threat, strength could be cultivated. Now was exactly the best time to realize a breakthrough.

As the saying goes, fortune comes from taking risks. In this world, no strength came for no reason, which was a truth Mu Chen sincerely believed in. The reason that he could always be prominent in the Spiritual Road, the Northern Spiritual Realm, and the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy was never due to his gift but instead was due to his frequent conquering of those life-threatening challenges.

"Luo Li, this time I won't be absent."

Mu Chen smiled a bit. Then he closed his eyes gradually and quietly formed spiritual seals with his hands. At the same time, the black lighting permeating his body dissipated with surprising rapidity.

Along with the dissipation of the black lighting, the frantic liquid spiritual energy which had been kept out, swept in with the formidable pressure.

Horrible pain started to rage in his body. Mu Chen could clearly sense his body was about to be crushed by the impact of that violent pressure. However, no matter how acute the pain was, he always stayed awake. The black lightning was constantly shuttling in his muscles and bones. Under the formidable pressure coming from outside, the black lightning had nowhere to go and was pressed into his muscles and bones bit by bit...

While the acute pain was permeating his body, Mu Chen's flesh, bones, and meridians also started to become stronger because of the intensification from the black lightning.

In the darkness, the young man was sitting with his legs crossed. His body was gradually covered by the fresh blood seeping out from his skin. The fresh blood turned into a thick scab on his body.

Mu Chen was totally isolated by the scab from all kinds of fluctuations. It seemed his body inside that scab was lifeless.

...

While Mu Chen was being tortured by the darkness and acute pain, the atmosphere outside the Mirror of Judgement had climaxed with the earth-shaking cheers.

Countless people were looking with fiery eyes at the four figures in the sky. No matter how many dark horses emerged previously, finally only these four people could stand in front them.

They represented the highest level of students in all the spiritual academies.

Even some people who disapproved of the measures taken by these four had to admire their gifts and strength. Their achievements had

overshadowed all the rest.

Somewhere outside the golden battle stage, Wu Ling, whose face was quite pale, couldn't help exclaiming slightly when he looked at the four figures above the battle stage, "Even Mu Chen was defeated..."

Behind him, Wu Yingying was clenching her red lips slightly. It seemed she was not very keen on the following fights. Her beautiful eyes looked to the Mirror of Judgement from time to time, as if she were expecting something.

"Forget about it..." Wu Ling smiled wryly and said, "Mu Chen is indeed powerful. This time he fell into Ji Xuan and Xue Tianhe's trap. Those two guys are also very powerful. They attacked Mu Chen, who was unguarded, with their carefully planned trick. In this way, Mu Chen's defeat was fairly predictable.

"Moreover, Luo Li is still there. She is not a simple girl. I would be no match for her in a fight. With her here, I'm afraid it won't be easy for Ji Xuan or Xue Tianhe to win the championship."

Wu Yingying nodded listlessly. Wu Ling couldn't help rolling his eyes at her depression. She wasn't so depressed when he was defeated by Xue Tianhe before.

...

"Mu Chen..."

In the area of the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy, Tang Qian'Er was also pale. She couldn't imagine that young man, who never gave up and could always take care of her even if he was younger than she was, could be stopped here.

Although that young man always had a gentle and easy smile, she knew he never ignored his failures, and he could always rise from those failures.

Maybe this time he could still face the failure with a smile. However, she was upset by just thinking about his smile.

"Mu Chen... please do come out!"

The young girl put her hands together and prayed in her heart.

...

In the sky, the five Chiefs were also staring at the four figures coming out from the Mirror of Judgement.

Chief Tai Cang sighed slightly in his heart. He thought Mu Chen would be the one coming out at last. This mishap went beyond his expectations. Luckily, the team of the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy was not completely annihilated. At least Luo Li was still there.

"He he, since four contestants have passed the trial, I suppose the battle for the championship could be started, right?" Chief Tian Sheng said and smiled at the other four Chiefs.

Knitting his brows slightly, Chief Tai Cang said, "Chief Tian Sheng, is it necessary to be in such a hurry?"

"He he, I am not in a hurry. After all, the result has been determined. Is Chief Tai Cang still waiting for the emergence of someone?" Chief Tian Sheng smiled a bit and said, "Also, according to the rules, as long as the championship hasn't been determined, anyone who comes out of the Mirror of Judgement is still qualified to strive for the championship."

Chief Tai Cang dropped into silence. Although he knew the possibility that Mu Chen could come out was really low, he was still a little bit reluctant to accept that. After all, this Academy Competition was crucial to the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. Once the Saint Spiritual Academy won the championship again, it would be given the title of the Top Academy. As the Chief of the Top Academy, Chief Tian Sheng would probably deprive the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy of its title as one of the Five Great Academies because of its poor performance in recent years.

"Then let it get started."

Chief Tai Cang had to nod. He couldn't lodge an objection anymore.

"Chief Tai Cang clearly knows the right thing to do and the principles to follow." Chief Tian Sheng smiled and then he turned to the four figures on

the battle stage. His thunderous voice was echoing between heaven and earth again.

"First, congratulations to the four contestants who have walked out of the Mirror of Judgement... You have entered the top four and are qualified to strive for the championship of this Academy Competition."

"Next, in the battle for the championship, there will be no rules. You can fight at will. The one who is standing on the battle stage at last will be the champion!"

Wow!

Uproars burst out from numerous people, who were greatly shocked. They didn't even decide the opponents by drawing lots. Were they going to hold a free-for-all?

On the battle stage, the four people's eyes were flickering slightly.

"The announcement is finished. Next, let's start the most important event of this Academy Competition – the battle for champion!"

The words were hardly out of Chief Tian Sheng's mouth when all the onlookers sensed that the atmosphere on the battle stage became abruptly nervous.

Widening their eyes, all onlookers were curious how this battle for the championship would be started.

Stared at by numerous people, Ji Xuan and Xue Tianhe made eye contact and smiled at each other in the air. Both of them disappeared from the place where they were and appeared on the vast battle stage.

Focusing his eyes on the silver-haired young girl who was as cold as snow, Xue Tianhe smiled. His eyes were full of viciousness.

"Xue Tianhe from the Blood Spiritual Academy hereby challenges the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy!"

On the other side, Ji Xuan also smiled slightly and said in a clear voice, "Ji Xuan from the Saint Spiritual Academy hereby challenges the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy!"

Chapter 617: Luo Li vs. Xue Tianhe

"Xue Tianhe from the Blood Spiritual Academy hereby challenges the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy!"

"Ji Xuan from the Saint Spiritual Academy hereby challenges the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy!"

While Ji Xuan and Xue Tianhe's voices were resounding in the vast golden battle stage, the space was immediately filled with uproars. Countless people were shocked. It seemed Ji Xuan and Xue Tianhe had temporarily formed a coalition.

Ji Xuan vs. Wen Qingxuan

Xue Tianhe vs. Luo Li

These pairings thrilled countless people whose heart rates were even accelerated. The four of them were indeed the best of the best.

Only these types of confrontations could be considered ultimate fights.

"Come on, Senior Wen, defeat Ji Xuan!"

"Come on, Luo Li! All the students from the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy support you!"

"Come on, you two beautiful girls! Students from the Nine Ridge Spiritual Academy also support you!"

"So do the students from the Spring Spiritual Academy!"

"..."

The space was filled with earth-shaking cheers. It was hard to deny that Wen Qingxuan and Luo Li overwhelmed Ji Xuan and Xue Tianhe in popularity. After all, among all the spiritual academies present, except for the students from the Saint Spiritual Academy and a handful of people cheering for Ji Xuan and Xue Tianhe, Wen Qingxuan and Luo Li almost got unilateral support from the rest of the students.

Apparently, compared to supporting Ji Xuan and Xue Tianhe, supporting two beautiful girls made people feel much better.

Ji Xuan and Xue Tianhe just smiled a bit. They were not surprised by Wen Qingxuan and Luo Li's popularity, which was much higher than theirs.

However, popularity was not a decisive factor in the battle for the championship.

In the sky, Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan made eye contact and then both of them nodded. In the next moment, they appeared respectively in the golden battle stages where Ji Xuan and Xue Tianhe were.

The two girls were standing gracefully on the battle stages. One girl was holding a golden war spear, and the other girl was holding a long sword. Their long hair was fluttering in the wind. This extremely beautiful scene choked up many people. The cheers, which were even louder now, were resounding again.

Being cheered by countless people, Luo Li aimed her cold and clear gaze at the figure in the blood red robe in front of her. She pointed obliquely at the Luo Shen Sword on the ground. A glint of murderous aura radiated from her always calm, pretty face.

"He he, it seems you really want to kill me." Xue Tianhe also sensed the murderous aura coming from Luo Li. He narrowed his eyes and smiled.

"Since you are in the mood to leave the Blood God Clan, it's not necessary to go back," Luo Li said in a low voice and stared at Xue Tianhe.

"No wonder you will be the future Empress of the Luo God Clan. Your bragging is really impressive..." Xue Tianhe smiled coldly and then he said, "Actually, I also have a similar plan. If I could capture you and take you back to the Blood God Clan, I'm afraid the Luo God Clan could only fall at the feet of our Blood God Clan."

Luo Li's glass-like eyes were still calm and as tranquil as a quiet pool. She looked at Xue Tianhe quietly and then closed her eyes slightly.

Hum!

When she closed her eyes, the Luo Shen Sword in her hands started to emit an earth-shaking hum. Overwhelming sword aura radiated from the

sword and was ubiquitous in the space.

Whiz! Whiz!

Many fresh cuts in different depths appeared on the adamant golden battle stage. These cuts were created by the sword aura roaming between heaven and earth.

Raising her jade-like hand slightly, Luo Li locked down Xue Tianhe in the distance with the tip of the Luo Shen Sword. It seemed the air in front of her couldn't withstand that fierce sword aura and twisted a bit.

Xue Tianhe fixed his eyes on the longsword in Luo Li's hand. He could sense the sting in his skin caused by the fierce sword aura, even though he was so far away from Luo Li.

As the prince of the Blood God Clan, Xue Tianhe naturally knew the strength of the Luo Shen Sword. This sword was the mighty weapon of the Luo God Clan. When it was swung by Luo Li's father, lives of countless Sovereigns of the Blood God Clan were reaped by it.

"This divine artifact is powerful. However, now you are still not strong enough to take full advantage of it, right?" Xue Tianhe smiled coldly.

Seeing his sneer, Luo Li did not reply. Her slightly closed eyes opened abruptly. A sword seal was formed by her jade-like hands. The next moment, she stabbed the Luo Shen Sword forward slightly.

Hum!

It seemed her stabbing was feeble, but the power of her attack shocked many people. The fierce sword aura permeating the space condensed and was turned into a giant sword shadow, which was over 1,000 feet long when the Luo Shen Sword stabbed forward. Whiz! The next moment, the sword shadow had torn apart the space and appeared in front of Xue Tianhe.

On the ground, the sword shadow created a deep cut. The edge of the cut was as smooth as a mirror and was very intimidating.

Staring at the sword shadow rapidly flying towards him, Xue Tianhe's

eyes were full of solemnity. No matter what he had said, Luo Li was still a formidable opponent.

This girl was chosen among all the youngsters of the Luo God Clan to play the leading role in the future. At that time, she would be the Supreme Empress of the Luo God Clan.

Xue Tianhe could look down upon Mu Chen, but he would never underestimate Luo Li.

"Blood Spiritual Wall!"

Stomping his feet, Xue Tianhe moved back immediately. Meanwhile, he rapidly formed spiritual seals with his hands and then he slapped his palm towards the ground.

Boom!

Scarlet spiritual energy rose skyward like waves and was turned into a blood red light curtain in front of him that was over 10,000 feet long. The blood red spiritual energy was raging inside the light curtain.

Whiz!

When the blood red light curtain had just been formed, the fierce sword shadow arrived and then collided with the spiritual energy wall without hesitation.

Boom!

A visible shockwave spread out. The air in the surrounding area exploded because of the compression and created billowing waves.

Standing in the air at a height of about a foot, Xue Tianhe stared at the magnificent spiritual energy wall. The next moment, his complexion changed abruptly.

Crack!

Visible cracks were rapidly spreading on the magnificent spiritual energy wall. Bang! A sword shadow directly penetrated the spiritual energy wall and stuck Xue Tianhe, who had no time to dodge.

Boom!

Xue Tianhe was directly blasted. His feet created a deep scratch over 300 feet long in the ground before he restored his balance. At this moment, he was folding his arms in front of his chest. His two arms were scarlet, like red hot irons. Violent but abnormal strength was radiating from his arms.

Drip!

A deep sword cut emerged in his arms. Fresh blood was dripping on the ground.

Their fight happened in a flash. However, the formidable strength displayed in the fight had frozen everyone's blood. They realized that Luo Li's attack could even defeat an expert who had reached the level of the Third Grade of the Spirit Disaster.

Her attacking thrust could be so powerful!

The earth-shaking cheers resounding between heaven and earth quieted a bit. Many experts were shocked in their minds because all of them had sensed the fierceness of Luo Li's attack.

Among the four people on the battle stage, Luo Li was apparently the least famous one. After all, on Luo Li's team, Mu Chen was always on the front line. In the fight for the top eight, Luo Li won her fight easily. Therefore, many people didn't know her. She was extremely beautiful but always in a low profile. Actually her strength was... considerably formidable.

When Mu Chen was on the team, she was always quiet and calm, hiding her sharpness. Once Mu Chen was not on the team, she would become irresistible and as sharp as her Luo Shen Sword with the seals removed.

At this moment, Luo Li was displaying her sharpest cutting edge.

She was just like a scarlet flower blossoming proudly.

"The Luo Shen Sword indeed deserves its reputation..."

Looking at the bloody wounds on his arms, Xue Tianhe's face darkened horribly. He turned to Luo Li and smiled coldly, "However, in order to deal

with you, I have also made preparations!"

After spitting out his words, he rubbed the sword cut slowly with his palm. His arms, which were already scarlet, turned dark red. Dim flames leapt up from his arms. Being scorched by the blood red flame, the sword cut closed up at an alarming rate.

After the emergence of those weird blood red flames, many blood red ancient runes appeared on Xue Tianhe's arms. Along with the emergence of these runes, his arms abruptly swelled up. Blue veins were creeping in his arms like dragons. Waves of formidable strength burst out from his arms.

Now Xue Tianhe's arms were not only stronger but also longer. His palm was just like the sharp claws of spiritual beasts, totally different from the arms of a human being.

Boom!

Xue Tianhe laughed viciously and punched the ground with his fist. Then to everyone's surprise, his punch created a crack on the hard ground of the golden battle stage. The crack was moving directly towards Luo Li's feet with continuous explosions.

Luo Li narrowed her beautiful eyes slightly and stabbed the Luo Shen Sword directly into the ground. The sword aura burst out along the ground and intercepted the crack. The next moment, the golden rocks on the battle stage were crushed.

Luo Li raised her head slightly and looked at Xue Tianhe's weird, blood red arms. Raising her pretty brows slightly, she said evenly, "This should be the Demonic Blood Arm, a low rank divine artifact of the Blood God Clan, right?"

Xue Tianhe was quite capable. It seemed he had merged the Demonic Blood Arm into his arms, so that he could exert the full power of this divine artifact.

"The Luo Shen Sword is powerful. However, you can't fully use it now. So today..." The sneer on the corners of Xue Tianhe's mouth was becoming

even more ferocious and cold.

"I will completely defeat you, the future Empress of the Luo God Clan, with this Demonic Blood Arm!"

Chapter 618: Wen Qingxuan's Trump Card

While the spiritual energy on the battle stage where Luo Li and Xie Tianhe were was surging crazily, the battle stage on the other side was quiet. Wen Qingxuan held onto the Golden Battle Spear while her delicate, voluptuous body was wrapped in golden armor. She was looking at the battle stage where Luo Li and Xie Tianhe were. She could sense an astonishing spiritual energy exuding from their blows. She looked grave. Xie Tianhe was not a simple person. He had exchanged blows with Luo Li until now...

"Hahaha, it seems like you are very interested in the fight over there," Ji Xuan said with a smile and put his hands behind his back. He was also watching the fight.

Wen Qingxuan looked at him lazily and said with a smile, "Ji Xuan, have you no intention of fighting?"

"I have no feud with you. If we fight, one of us will get hurt. I suggest that we wait for them to end their fight," Ji Xuan said and smiled.

"I think you are afraid of using up too much energy. No matter who wins, you will have a problem, right?" Wen Qingxuan curled her lips and sneered.

Ji Xuan was stunned for a while and then said with a smile, "At the least you will have a better chance as well."

"You are an unlikeable guy. No wonder Luo Li doesn't like you." Wen Qingxuan continued flatly, "No matter how much effort you put in, you will lose to Mu Chen."

Upon hearing this, Ji Xuan frowned and said, "I have defeated Mu Chen

on the Spiritual Road. In this Spiritual Academy Competition, he is not even fit to fight with me. Do you think that I am not better than the loser?"

"You should be well aware of how you have managed to defeat him twice." Wen Qingxuan sneered.

"We only look at the outcome. In this world, losers are not fit to defend themselves," Ji Xuan said flatly.

"You are really thick-skinned."

Wen Qingxuan held the Golden Battle Spear in her hand and went on the stage. She looked coldly at Ji Xuan and said, "During the elimination tournament, you used me as bait to lure Mu Chen out. I will settle the score with you now!"

Boom!

Upon saying this, an astonishing spiritual energy fluctuation surged. Its valiance had surpassed the Three Grades of the Spirit Disaster.

"You don't seem to buy my idea," Ji Xuan said flatly.

Swoosh!

The reply he received was a bright spear. The spear dashed past the horizon like a streamer. In the blink of an eye, it appeared before Ji Xuan.

The spear was quick like lightning. As Ji Xuan looked at it, his body shook slightly. However, he had no intention of dodging it. He stood on the spot and allowed Wen Qingxuan to pierce him in the throat.

However, blood did not spew out. Ji Xuan's body gradually disappeared.

"Afterimage?" someone shouted, looking stunned. Ji Xuan reacted so quickly that they did not even notice when he had moved. His speed was beyond what they could capture with their eyes.

"He is up in the sky!"

Upon hearing this, the audience looked up. They saw Ji Xuan standing in the air above the battle stage. He placed his hands at his back. As the wind blew, his white robe swayed and made him look suave.

Wen Qingxuan was not surprised that she was piercing air. She knew that the attack was useless on Ji Xuan. She stretched forth her hand and formed a seal.

A clear chirping sound resounded in the heavens and the earth. A pair of golden wings appeared behind Wen Qingxuan's back and spread out. The wings were huge, about 10 feet tall. The golden feathers seemed to be made of gold and they were dazzling.

Swoosh!

Wen Qingxuan flapped the wings. A great wind blew upwards and she disappeared.

Ji Xuan squinted his eyes, and before he could move, a great wind surged from behind him. A golden light spread out, and Wen Qingxuan appeared behind him.

"Let's see how fast you can go!" Wen Qingxuan said coldly. The golden spear turned into light and she stabbed out.

Swoosh!

Ji Xuan looked coldly at her and formed a seal with one hand. His body shook.

The spear pierced through but again, it was an afterimage.

Ji Xuan appeared again in the air, 1,000 meters away. However, the moment he appeared, Wen Qingxuan had stabbed out with the spear behind him.

Swoosh! Swoosh!

Two ghostly figures kept shifting in the air. One afterimage after another had been pierced through. Everyone watched the scene in shock. They did not know when the two had shifted until they exchanged blows.

They moved around swiftly like spirits.

Even those top powers like Wu Ling looked grave as they watched their speed. They knew that if they were the ones facing either Ji Xuan or Wen Qingxuan, they would not be able to avoid the blows.

Although their fight was not earth-shattering, their speed was so quick that it made the onlookers' hearts leap.

Swoosh!

Ji Xuan appeared again in the sky, but this time around he looked gloomy. Speed was his forte, but he realized that no matter how quickly he moved, he was unable to shake Wen Qingxuan off.

Wen Qingxuan's speed was comparable to his.

Whoosh!

Wen Qingxuan stabbed again with the spear. She was crafty.

"Ha!" With a shout, a long spear appeared in Ji Xuan's hand. He stabbed out with a backhand. The tips of the two spears hit each other and the sound of metal resounded. A terrifying wave swirled out like a windstorm.

Seeing that Wen Qingxuan had amazing speed, Ji Xuan gave up his attempt to suppress her with his speed.

As the windstorm swirled out, the two ghostly figures were being thrown back.

Wen Qingxuan held onto the Golden Battle Spear and looked at Ji Xuan. She said with a sneer, "Have you had enough running?"

Ji Xuan looked grave and did not say a word. A majestic Holy Light Spiritual Energy gathered crazily behind him. Instantly, it turned into a huge Sacred Sun.

This was the Divine Technique that he had used on Wen Busheng earlier.

However, Ji Xuan deemed Wen Qingxuan's power to be greater than Wen Busheng's. When he changed the seal again, holy light gathered on top of the Sacred Sun. Two more Sacred Suns instantly appeared!

There were three Sacred Suns!

Three Sacred Suns hung behind Ji Xuan. The array was stunning. When Ji Xuan was fighting Wen Busheng, he had not displayed his full strength. He had hidden his actual strength.

"Go!"

Without another word, Ji Xuan flicked his fingers and the three Sacred Suns shot up. They joined together, whizzed down on Wen Qingxuan, and covered her.

As the horrifying Sacred Suns covered up Wen Qingxuan, the shockwave caused the golden battle stage to crack.

Wen Qingxuan gently lifted up her head. She speedily amplified the image of the Sacred Suns in her eyes. She was not fearful. She was still filled with pride.

In the face of such a powerful attack, Wen Qingxuan did not dodge.

Boom! Boom!

The three Sacred Suns bombed down hard, and a bright holy light spread out. The heavens and the earth seemed to be filled with the holy light. Many people were pricked in the eyes and had to keep their eyes shut.

After some time, the holy light gradually dissipated.

Many of the onlookers fixed their gazes on Wen Qingxuan. They wanted to see how she would counter Ji Xuan's terrifying attack.

As the holy light dissipated, the sky gradually became clear. After which, many people widened their eyes. All of them gasped.

Ji Xuan likewise squinted his eyes.

A golden light spread out in the sky. There was a huge golden phoenix in the golden light. It slowly spread out its wings, and golden light spread out from its body. It seemed to be made of gold. It had a beautiful body, and every part of it was filled with innate dignity and pride. It seemed to be the Revered One of the Creatures.

"That is..."

Even the Chief of Spiritual Academy turned pale and muttered, "That is... the Golden Divine Phoenix!"

The Golden Divine Phoenix was ranked number six in the Spiritual Beasts Ranking Chart.

It had been rumored that only the Spiritual Beast that had the blood of

the real phoenix could cultivate the Golden Divine Phoenix. It possessed the power of the Heavenly Sovereign. No one had expected Wen Qingxuan to have cultivated the soul essence of the Golden Divine Phoenix!

Her trump card took everyone by surprise.

The Golden Divine Phoenix slowly flapped its wings. A slender figure with a spear was standing on the huge phoenix. Her beautiful eyes were shining with golden light. She stood proudly and lifted up her head, revealing her long, fair neck. She stretched forth her hand and let down her hair. Her hair fell down like a fountain, and it brightened up the heavens and the earth.

Wen Qingxuan looked extremely attractive at that instant.

Ji Xuan fixed his gaze on Wen Qingxuan and clenched his fists. He had not expected Wen Qingxuan to be this tough to handle.

Wen Qingxuan stared at Ji Xuan from afar. She pointed her Golden Battle Spear and her clear voice resounded throughout. "Ji Xuan, summon your Ancient Dragonhawk now. If you do not, you will not have another chance to do so."

Chapter 619: Luo Shen Sword's True Form

"Demonic Blood Arm..."

Luo Li looked coldly at Xie Tianhe. The blood rays on Xie Tianhe's arms were rising aggressively. His veins were squirming like dragons. His sharp nails were like blades and looked as though they could tear the earth apart.

Luo Li had heard of the Demonic Blood Arm. In the Blood God Clan, the Blood God's Arm was a Divine Artifact that could suppress the Clan. This Divine Artifact was above Middle Rank, and it could destroy the heavens and the earth. Its power was comparable to the Luo Shen Sword that could break any seal. In the past, her father had been seriously injured by the Chief of the Blood God Clan. His Sovereign Sea had been destroyed, and then he died.

The Demonic Blood Arm was an imitation of the Blood God's Arm that the Blood God Clan had come up with. Although it was an imitation, it was powerful and was comparable to the Lower Rank Divine Artifacts.

A killing intent radiated from Luo Li's eyes.

"Hahaha, you seem to detest the Demonic Blood Arm." Xie Tianhe looked at Luo Li's cold face and said with a smile, "Is it because your father was killed by the Wu Clan with the Blood God's Arm?

"It might as well be. Your father was killed by the Blood God's Arm, and you will be defeated by the Demonic Blood Arm. It fits both of you well." Xie Tianhe licked his lips and smiled viciously.

Boom!

Xie Tianhe looked vicious. He stomped his feet and the ground cracked. With lightning speed, he appeared before Luo Li and threw a blow at her.

Pom!

As Xie Tianhe threw the blow, blood rays spread out. The air before him exploded, and there was a space warp. The blow was extremely powerful.

Luo Li's face turned cold, and she held on tightly to her sword. With one hand on the hilt and the other on the end of the sword, she held forth and used it to protect her body.

Prang!

A Blood Fist hit the sword hard, and the sound of metal resounded. The ground under both of them cracked, and a visible blast swirled out.

Swoosh!

Luo Li dashed down and waved the sword. The blade was shimmering, and a Sword Lotus formed by the sword aura appeared. Luo Li pointed the tip of the sword at Xie Tianhe and shot toward him.

"Ha." In face of the sharp Sword Lotus, Xie Tianhe merely snorted at it. He threw a powerful blow and activated the Demonic Blood Arm. His arms were so tough, they were like Divine Artifacts. To fight him head on, even Mu Chen, who possessed the Hepta Rune Lightning Physique, might not even triumph over him.

Dong!

The Blood Fist hit the Sword Lotus and the blood rays exploded.

The sword aura shot up and Xie Tianhe, who was under the protection of the majestic spiritual energy, dashed out. He attacked Luo Li with the wind blast of the fist.

Boom! Boom!

Bloody fist prints whizzed furiously across the horizon. Every fist print carried with it an aggressive spiritual energy fluctuation. Xie Tianhe's power had surpassed the Three Grades of the Spirit Disaster. On top of that, he had the help of the Demonic Blood Arm. His attack had caused top powers like Wu Ling to turn pale. Wu Ling knew that if Xie Tianhe

had used this powerful blow on him, he would have lost.

Swoosh!

As the bloody fist prints whizzed toward her, Luo Li constantly retreated. Sword aura shot forth and it was so sharp, it seemed to be able to slash the space apart.

Xie Tianhe seemed to have the upper hand. The Demonic Blood Arm had merged with his arms, whereas Luo Li's Luo Shen Sword acted upon the different layers of the seal.

The students of the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy were looking on with anxiety. They were worried about Luo Li, because they had seen her being forced to move back continuously. After all, Xie Tianhe had displayed astonishing power.

Xie Tianhe's eyes had completely turned red. He looked extremely vicious. The Demonic Blood Arm was ferocious, and now that it had merged with Xie Tianhe's body, it had affected his personality. Once he activated the Demonic Blood Arm, he would become brutal and have the desire to kill. However, it did not bother Xie Tianhe. In fact, he enjoyed it.

"Hahaha, Luo Li, is this what you are capable of? It seems like there is no one else in the Luo Shen Clan. Why not join my Blood God Clan now? If you are captured by the Wu Clan in the future, you will have to fight them!"

Xie Tianhe roared out in laughter. His attacks became more and more aggressive. Under the attacks of the bloody fist prints, Luo Li seemed to be losing her footing.

Swish!

Luo Li slashed her sword down and split a bloody fist print in two. She looked coldly at Xie Tianhe, who had turned violent. She curled her lips and was filled with killing intent. "Since you wish to see my actual strength, I will let you have a taste of it! I will fulfill a dead man's wish."

There was coldness in Luo Li's eyes. She speedily stretched out her slender finger and wiped the Luo Shen Sword.

Fresh blood started to spread out on the sword. After being tainted with blood, ancient obscure runes appeared on the sword.

The runes were like chains that bound the Luo Shen Sword. When the runes came into contact with the blood, they melted away.

As the runes melted away, a blue ray shot up into the sky. A horrifying sword aura covered the heavens and the earth.

Swish! Swish!

The bloody fist prints that had been attacking Luo Li broke up several feet away from her. The edges of the cracks became smooth like a mirror before turning into lights.

The expressions of the Chiefs of the Spiritual Academy changed as they watched from the sky. They could feel a powerful sword aura that frightened them as well.

The five Chiefs looked toward the source of the sword aura.

Xie Tianhe was stunned for a while. He stared at the spot where the blue ray had spread out and felt uneasy.

A horrifying sword aura covered the heavens and the earth, and then the blue ray finally dissipated. With the dissipation of the blue ray, everyone suddenly squinted their eyes.

Luo Li was standing in the air. A heavy blue sword that was about a foot long hung in the air. The blue sword was transparent and seemed to be made of ice. There seemed to be a blue ice bone within the sword. The ice bone was filled with vicious-looking bone spikes that were at the cutting edges of the sword's blade...

The heavy sword seemed to be as tall as Luo Li. It was wide, and as Luo Li stood before it, she looked tiny. The sword hung quietly before Luo Li. A terrifying sword aura that covered the heavens and the earth radiated from the sword.

This heavy and vicious-looking sword was the same slender and graceful looking sword that Luo Li was holding onto earlier. This was the Luo Shen Sword's true form.

"You..."

Xie Tianhe looked gloomily at the heavy blue sword and was terrified. He gritted his teeth and said, "You have finally shown the true form of the Luo Shen Sword. Do you think you can control it with your strength?"

The sword was a nightmare for the Blood God Clan. For thousands of years, many Sovereigns had died under the sword.

However, although the Luo Shen Sword was extremely powerful, not many people could control it. Without its acknowledgement, even top Sovereigns would not be able to hold it.

Previously, Xie Tianhe was not afraid of Luo Li because he had thought she would not dare to display the Luo Shen Sword's true form.

However, what he had seen was far from what he had expected.

Luo Li looked coldly at Xie Tianhe, and then slowly stretched forth her slender hand. She held the icy blue sword.

Buzz! Buzz!

As Luo Li held the sword, it shook violently and let out a crisp sound.

Luo Li remained calm as the Luo Shen Sword shook. She grabbed hold of the hilt tightly, and her palm was pricked by the sword aura radiating from the sword. Blood was flowing out from her palm.

As fresh blood flowed down, it covered the blue sword.

Luo Li felt as though her arm would be cut off by the sword aura. However, she remained calm and stubbornly held onto the hilt. She had no intention of letting go.

The sword continued to buzz for a while. When the blood had almost covered the entire sword, it stopped buzzing.

Because she had lost so much blood, Luo Li looked a little pale. She lifted up her head and looked flatly at Xie Tianhe, who looked ghastly.

"Now, I will let you experience how it is with the true Luo Shen Sword."

Upon saying this, Luo Li dashed out. In a split second, she appeared above Xie Tianhe. Holding onto the heavy blue sword, she slashed down hard on him.

The sky seemed to tear apart as Luo Li slashed the Luo Shen Sword down. A sword ray of about 1,000 feet tore the horizon apart with its destructive cutting edge. It was merciless.

Xie Tianhe's face instantly turned pale.

Chapter 620: Unforeseen Circumstances

Boom!

A massive beam of light emitted from the sword extending a thousand feet, tearing the space apart with a faint trace. The whole world seemed to be engulfed within the sword's swift and fierce aura.

The light from the sword had yet to land, but the incomparably sturdy, hard ground of gold had become riddled with holes.

After compelling the true form of the Luo Shen Sword, Luo Li's attack power had reached a terrifying stage. Even some of the elders from various Spiritual Academies, not to mention the other disciples, were startled by this formidable attack.

Xie Tianhe's expression twisted into one of aggravation. The sole of his foot sank half an inch into the ground and he was now overwhelmed by the sword's powerful aura.

He could not escape because the beam of light from the sword held him in place and the space around him was as if it had been sealed off by the sword's aura.

Luo Li clearly intended to deal a critical blow.

"With your ability, I don't believe you can truly compel the Luo Shen Sword!"

Xie Tianhe's expression twisted into something distorted. Although Luo Li could compel the true form of the Luo Shen Sword, it didn't mean that she could utilize the sword's full power. Otherwise, Xie Tianhe would have been obliterated by now.

Roar!

Xie Tianhe took a step forward. His throat emitted rumbling growls like a beast, his arms flushed as blood rose up and his veins gradually turned red. Trails of blood seeped through his pores, transforming into two bloody, ferocious, demonic faces above his arms.

A strange and unnerving wave of aura radiated into the surroundings.

"Demonic Blood Arm, Demons Engulf the Sky!"

Xie Tianhe roared and a barrage of magnificent spiritual energy burst out as he clenched his fists and delivered a fierce punch.

Boom! Crash!

The air in front of him exploded section by section, and on Xie Tianhe's arms, countless crimson earthworms wriggled beneath his skin. With a blow of his fist, two bloody beams of red light burst out.

The two bloody beams quickly condensed into two monstrous mouths hundreds of feet in size that devoured the spiritual energies of heaven and earth as if they could devour all things.

Whoosh!

The moment the two frightful demonic mouths condensed into existence, the beam of light from the sword cut them down without hesitation.

Whoosh!

The light of the sword flashed by but no one saw it clearly. They could only see the spark of light, and then the mouths of the two terrible demons in the sky suddenly exploded. The vast golden battle stage beneath rumbled with tremors as a crack about a thousand feet long quickly spread.

Smoke and dust rose, shrouding the battle platform.

Numerous people cast glances towards the direction of the uproar. Luo Li hovered in the air. Although she had a tall and slender physique, she seemed dwarfed in comparison to the Luo Shen Sword held in her hand. However, this contrast depicted her with a different aura than usual; one that was piercingly cold and solemn.

She glanced coldly at the area enveloped in smoke and dust below. A light breeze blew it away, with many casting their gaze towards it.

On the battle platform, a ferocious crack spread and at the end of the

crack where the stage was sunken, the figure of Xie Tianhe appeared.

At this moment, his upper garment was torn into shreds and his arms were crossed in front of him. A deep blade wound was embedded in his terrifying Demonic Blood Arms, spreading from fist to shoulder. The wound was so deep, the white of the bone could be seen. Blood ran down like a stream and where he stood, everything was stained red.

Xie Tianhe's expression was twisted in rage as he looked at the scars on his arms. The corners of his mouth twitched in annoyance. After utilizing the Demonic Blood Arms, his arms were comparable to Low Rank Divine Artifacts, or were even invincible but now, the deep blade mark almost cut his arms off.

Moreover, the terrifying thing was that the fierce aura of the sword was embedded in the scar. Its all-pervasive aura rendered the self-healing property of the Demonic Blood Arms ineffective...

The Luo Shen Sword was indeed intimidating.

Xie Tianhe gritted his teeth with dread and fear in his eyes. Luo Li's capability had surpassed his expectations and despite still having a card up his sleeve, it was unlikely that he would be able to best Luo Li.

It looked like it would be a daunting challenge for him to defeat her.

Something flashed in Xie Tianhe's eyes as he swept his gaze towards the other battle platform. Suddenly, his gaze turned ferocious and his hands began conjuring a myriad of seals at a speed as fast as lightning.

Roar!

As Xie Tianhe's seals transformed, a violent roar burst forth from within his body.

The gush of blood red light spread across the atmosphere and converged into a gargantuan, bloody red beast behind Xie Tianhe. The beast stood with massive feet, and its body was covered entirely with bloody scales and ferocious blood red bone spikes extending out from behind its back. They were sharp, as if able to penetrate space, and its scarlet eyes were full of violence and savagery.

An ominous aura soared into the sky.

"Xie Tianhe actually triggered the Soul Essence of Demonic Blood Beast within him. It seems that Luo Li has forced him into a corner for him to resort to this..."

Many disciples exclaimed in shock upon witnessing the scene.

Luo Li glanced coldly at the massive Demonic Blood Beast, a killing intention intensifying in her gaze.

"Art of the Blood God, Sea that Entraps the Heavens!"

Xie Tianhe roared and blood spurted out of his mouth. Meanwhile, the Demonic Blood Beast also opened its massive jaws and blood gushed out like tumultuous sea waves.

Two streams of blood converged and surged with the wind. In the blink of an eye, they manifested into a sea of blood in the sky. The sea enveloped the world and Luo Li was in the center of the sea of blood.

Boom!

The sea of blood raged in a mad frenzy and transformed into a huge blood red tornado that was about a thousand feet in size, binding and trapping Luo Li into it. The terrible force wreaked havoc in an attempt to annihilate Luo Li.

Boom! Boom!

The sea of blood continued to rage on, its turbulent movements shaking the heavens and earth.

However, just as everyone thought that Xie Tianhe was about to take the opportunity to launch a barrage of attacks, he suddenly leapt onto the Demonic Blood Beast, which retreated out of the great battle stage with large strides.

...

The clear cry of the Phoenix echoed in the heavens and earth as the golden Phoenix flapped its beautiful golden wings and glittered in the sun with a dazzling luster, drawing envious looks from countless disciples.

Wen Qingxuan stood poised atop the golden Phoenix and pointed the golden spear she held at Ji Xuan.

Ji Xuan was hovering upright in the air as he looked at the golden Phoenix under Wen Qingxuan. His eyes were somber but there was not much surprise in them, as he had expected this to happen.

"Haha, how fortunate of you, to be able to refine the Soul Essence of a Golden Divine Phoenix..."

Ji Xuan smiled faintly. It seemed that Wen Qingxuan had a formidable background, otherwise, it would be impossible to obtain the Soul Essence of the Golden Divine Phoenix, let alone successfully refine it.

"I could say the same to you," Wen Qingxuan lifted her gaze and remarked nonchalantly.

"It seems that you don't intend to summon your Primordial Heavenly Dragon Hawk?"

"Currently, I don't think it's necessary. I don't have to go that far." Ji Xuan smiled.

"Is that so?"

Wen Qingxuan's eyes turned cold, no longer polite. Her hands holding the golden war spear jerked abruptly. The golden Phoenix let out a long clear cry as it spread its wings, only to see countless golden feathers soaring into the sky, condensing into a large Golden Winged Spear that was a hundred feet long.

Whoosh!

The Golden Winged Spear struck out at an astonishing speed and appeared above Ji Xuan's head in a flash.

Whoosh!

The long spear in Ji Xuan's hand burst with dazzling light. The magnificent forces of spiritual energy were like a wave that swept through. He dealt a piercing blow with his spear as swift as lightning as the weapon clashed with the Golden Winged Spear.

Clang!

The crisp sound of the collision between metal and gold rang in the air as shock waves wreaked havoc, flinging Ji Xuan's body into the air.

Despite hurtling into the air, a faint smile was still etched on Ji Xuan's face. However, his gaze gradually turned eerie. His hands suddenly cast a myriad of seals and spiritual energy fluctuations erupted out from his body.

"Art of the Great Saint's Light, Descent of Divine Spirits!"

When Ji Xuan's deep rumble permeated the heavens and earth, the dazzling divine light appeared and a massive shadow beam of divine light close to a thousand feet across was seen in the sky above Ji Xuan. The shadow of the divine light was akin to a direct blow of a palm headed towards Wen Qingxuan. The blow was immensely strong, seemingly having the boundless power to shatter the mountains and fill the sea.

It was apparent that Ji Xuan was starting to deal critical blows when facing a formidable opponent like Wen Qingxuan.

"Hmph."

Wen Qingxuan looked at the shadow of the divine light, one that would instill fear and dread in others, but she merely snorted coldly. She did not retreat at all and with a light jerk of the golden spear, the golden Phoenix soared into the sky. Both Phoenix and lady, as if they had transformed into a dazzling golden beam, skyrocketed upwards with an indescribable speed, clashing head-on with the divine light.

Conk!

Heaven and earth seemed to tremble violently. The pervasive divine light and gold light made the sky begin to show signs of distortion.

The spread of the spiritual energies caused shockwaves to emerge, shaking heaven and earth.

Boom!

The shadow of the Divine Light and the Golden Phoenix were clashing

violently, two terrifying forces attempting to devour the other. However, it was apparent the Golden Phoenix was gaining the upper hand, as the shadow of the Divine Light gradually faded under the erosion of the golden light.

Ji Xuan's face remained indifferent, although a callous and cold expression flitted across his gaze as he gave a small nod.

Amid the sea of divine light and gold light, a blood red aura suddenly came into the mix.

The expressions of countless people changed dramatically in shock, especially the girls from the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy, as their beautiful faces twisted in anger.

At this moment, a beam of crimson blood light surfaced behind the golden Phoenix, a gargantuan Demonic Blood Beast stepped forward with an air of ferocity as its huge fist mercilessly swung down.

What was originally a duel between the two now had unforeseen circumstances!

Chapter 621: Silver Hair Darkened to Black

Boom!

The torrent of blood red light swept harshly into the world of golden light and divine light. The brutish Demonic Blood Beast appeared like a demon behind the golden light that the Golden Divine Phoenix had transformed into.

The sudden, unforeseen scene shocked the entire audience.

They could not fathom how this massive fellow barged in, as it did not belong to this battle stage...

"What... is he doing?" Some members of the audience stared with wide eyes and murmured in disbelief.

"Roar!"

In the midst of the crowd's distraction, the Demonic Blood Beast roared ferociously, clenching its massive fists as blood red light spewed forth. A blow of the fist punched out like a crimson meteor at a speed as fast as a thunderbolt as it bombarded straight towards the Golden Divine Phoenix.

The blow was exceptionally brutal.

"Despicable!"

"Jerks! Two ganging up against one!"

"How could they bully a girl!"

"..."

While Xie Tianhe's intention was completely exposed, realization dawned on numerous disciples and immediately, curses of condemnation could be heard. Many were filled with indignation, disdain in their eyes.

No matter what the current rules were, it was a one versus one duel after all. The match was set on the basis of participants fighting with their real

capabilities. Regardless whether they won or lost, they would win the respect of the people. However, Xie Tianhe's actions had tarnished the fairness of the fight when he adopted such an unorthodox and underhanded approach.

Furthermore, two grown men ganging up on a beautiful lady would fill anyone with indignation and disdain.

The people who were most outraged were naturally the girls from the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy. Their expressions were twisted with fury and although they did not lash out with overly harsh and crude words, outbursts of anger still rang clearly. This made the disciples from Saint Spiritual Academy look uneasy as they glanced at each other but they were afraid to refute, lest attracting the wrath of the masses.

Crash!

Xie Tianhe's sudden attack came as an utter surprise to Wen Qingxuan, so when she sensed terrifying bursts of motion behind her, her expression twisted with shock.

However, Wen Qingxuan had a reputation comparable to Ji Xuan's, clearly not just because of her beauty but also due to her own strength and talent—something that even Ji Xuan would not underestimate.

Thus, even at this alarmingly dangerous moment, she was able to remain calm. Gritting her teeth, a golden wing of the Golden Divine Phoenix spread out towards the back as it transformed into a gold shield.

Bong!

The huge blood red fist fiercely bombarded the gold shield. A terrible shockwave wrecked havoc, causing the space to become somewhat distorted.

Above the golden wings, the golden feathers shattered into golden spots of light.

Wen Qingxuan paled. Her defence was too hasty. Even if she could resist the brutal attack from Xie Tianhe, it would deal damage to her.

Boom!

While Wen Qingxuan was distracted by countering the attack from Xie Tianhe, Ji Xuan stood in front of them, smiling nonchalantly. The shadow of the Divine Spirits, which had shown signs of dissipating, suddenly had a blinding glow again as the Divine Light converged above the shadow of a massive hand. A gigantic Divine Light Spear of about a thousand feet surfaced.

"Art of the Great Saint's Light, Descent of the Divine Spear!"

Ji Xuan pointed his fingers with a flourish. The Divine Spear held in the Shadow Palm of the Divine Light pierced down swiftly. In a flash, it appeared over the Golden Divine Phoenix, causing terrible waves of fluctuations, as if it could penetrate heaven and earth.

"Blood Demon's Seal!"

As Ji Xuan launched the offensive, Xie Tianhe smiled grimly while standing on the shoulders of the Demonic Blood Beast. His hands conjured a myriad of seals and as the seals flickered and transformed, the massive Demonic Blood Beast conjured the same seals.

Blood red light soared into the sky. Two seals, a large one and a small one both resembling blood, condensed and surged out, quickly merging in mid-air. It then immediately expanded into an abomination that was hundreds of feet in size. With a gush of bloody aura, it brutally suppressed Wen Qingxuan and the Golden Divine Phoenix as it swooped down towards them.

The attacks of the two were formidable enough to cause any master who had passed the Three Grades of the Spirit Disaster to tremble in fear. This degree of attack was considered to be comparable to that of the most powerful Sovereign!

A huge force of oppression enveloped them as Wen Qingxuan gripped the long spear tightly in her hand, but even in the face of this magnitude of danger, her beautiful eyes were still filled with pride without a tinge of fear—just like the elegant and proud Golden Divine Phoenix.

Wen Qingxuan struck the golden spear heavily on the ground as dazzling golden light poured out from within the Golden Divine Phoenix. These golden lights appeared highly viscous, like a golden liquid, solidifying at an alarmingly fast rate. In the blink of an eye, everyone saw a huge golden ball envelop the Golden Divine Phoenix.

The massive golden ball flashed with a dazzling luster, a perfect sphere without any blemish. Patterns of a golden phoenix taking flight were etched on its surface, and it was so sturdy that it seemed to be able to withstand the most powerful blows in the world.

"Golden Protection!"

When the golden ball condensed, Wen Qingxuan's soft but cold howl echoed in the sky.

Even though Wen Qingxuan compelled the power of the Golden Divine Phoenix's Soul Essence, she revealed her cards and could only trigger the most powerful defensive move while facing Ji Xuan and Xie Tianhe's joint attack.

Crash!

The golden ball condensed into form and at the same time, the two startlingly powerful attacks from Ji Xuan and Xie Tianhe intensely followed. As many watched on anxiously, the blows fiercely bombarded the golden ball.

Bong!

The moment the blows made impact, earth-shattering noises resounded. Golden shock waves wrecked havoc, causing the clouds in the sky to be violently torn to pieces.

Ji Xuan and Xie Tianhe hurtled into the air with the impact of the terrifying shock waves. The Divine Light's shadow shattered as it disintegrated. Even the Demonic Blood Beast suffered a wound, a gaping hole in its huge chest, as it roared in pain.

In this moment, all eyes were on the glimmering golden ball as it stood upright.

Crack.

Alas, the calm before the storm only lasted for a moment. A crack began to spread out at an alarming rate on the surface of the golden ball, causing dramatic changes on everyone's faces.

Bam!

In a short breath's time, the crack extended through the entire gold ball and as its withstanding power reached its limit, it exploded abruptly.

With the explosion, a mournful cry of the Phoenix echoed through the heavens, as the massive body of the Golden Divine Phoenix faded into the void. A slender figure flew out, clearly affected by the impact.

Spurt.

A mouthful of blood spewed out from the slender figure in mid-air, her beautiful face deathly pale. Either Ji Xuan or Xie Tianhe alone was enough to fight on par with her. Now that the two aces had suddenly joined forces, Wen Qingxuan was naturally no match for them.

"They are such b*stards!"

Upon witnessing this scene, numerous disciples began cursing up a storm again.

In the sky, the Chiefs of the Five Great Academies witnessed this situation but no one commented. However, the Chief of the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy, Chief Tang Qiu's expression was particularly sullen but she did not say anything, either. The rules of this championship battle were no matter the means used, the last person standing would be the champion.

No one had expected Xie Tianhe to suddenly attack Wen Qingxuan. Now, it seemed that this fellow obviously knew he alone was unable to best Luo Li. Hence, his plan was to help Ji Xuan defeat Wen Qingxuan quickly, so they could form an alliance to defeat Luo Li.

In the sky, Xie Tianhe looked coldly at Wen Qingxuan, who had been grievously injured. He exchanged a glance with Ji Xuan and a chilling glint

surfaced in their eyes. They were aware how strong Wen Qingxuan was, and now that they had caught the opportunity to act, they had to utterly incapacitate her to the point where she could no longer fight. They could not afford to give her time to counter attack.

Therefore, they ignored the cursing from the masses and attacked again. Two powerful and brutal blows of spiritual energy swept out in a barrage, aiming straight for Wen Qingxuan, whose spiritual energy was in turmoil due to the impact from before.

Seeing their actions, infuriated cursing from the audience intensified, ringing through the arena.

Wen Qingxuan was in mid-air and she was aware of the fierce offensive attacks of the two men. Despite wanting to defend herself, her spiritual energies were in utter turmoil, and she could not control and tap into her energy. She heaved a faint sigh and closed her eyes in despair.

Upon witnessing this, some of the more delicate girls from the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy teared up, their eyes red.

Boom!

Just as the crowd sighed and lamented, suddenly a startling sword aura soared into the sky. Everyone lifted their gaze and saw that the vast sea of blood in the distance was torn apart violently by a massive beam of light from the sword.

The sea of blood subsided and a beautiful silhouette appeared swiftly in a flash of lightning and stood behind Wen Qingxuan. She stretched out her hand to support the latter's slender waist. The Luo Shen Sword in her hand suddenly swept out as the light of the sword raged, tearing apart the two fierce beams of spiritual energy.

Woah!

This unforeseen circumstance once again came as a shock to countless disciples. Earth-shaking cheers echoed throughout the heavens and earth, as the girls of the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy stared in a daze at the beautiful girl in the sky supporting Wen Qingxuan. In the next

moment, stars twinkled in their eyes as they screamed with ecstasy.

"Wow, it's the girl named Luo Li!"

"That was awesome!"

"She's so cool, I like her so much!"

"..."

As countless screams resounded from the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy, they immediately made other male disciples around them almost faint as darkness flashed across their eyes, their faces resentful.

In the sky amid the excited screams, Luo Li loosened her grip around Wen Qingxuan's slender waist. Her beautiful face was cold as she gazed forward where Ji Xuan and Xie Tianhe stood. Her eyes filled with a chilling murderous intention.

"Are you alright?"

Luo Li turned her head to look at Wen Qingxuan, whose face was still pale.

"I'm okay. Let's do it together."

Wen Qingxuan gritted her teeth as she struggled to make a move. Alas, her spiritual energies were too turbulent and were somewhat out of her control as she staggered to her feet.

"You are hurt too badly. Take time to recuperate, I'll hold them back," Luo Li stated slowly.

"No, you can't!" Wen Qingxuan remarked hurriedly, as she was all too aware of how strong Ji Xuan and Xie Tianhe's alliance was.

Luo Li did not say anything further as she slowly stepped out, her hand gripping the Luo Shen Sword. Her usually serene and stunning face was now solemn and deadly. The sharp and powerful aura of the sword permeated the heavens and earth.

Wen Qingxuan looked at Luo Li but suddenly discovered the latter's long silver hair, which was as dazzling as the silver river in the galaxies,

gradually turned to black.

Chapter 622: The Spirit of the Luo River

Luo Li moved with light steps, as graceful as a lotus. With every slow step, her long silver hair, as dazzling as the silver river in the galaxy, turned obsidian black at an alarming speed.

In just a few short moments, her originally cool toned silver hair transformed into inky black strands.

Naturally, there were other changes besides that of her long hair, including her disposition and aura. If the usual Luo Li was as tranquil as the lotus of a secluded valley exuding a beauty of refined serenity, now she exuded an aura of palpable coldness, her crystal clear eyes filled with nonchalance. It was as if she were sitting on the divine throne, overlooking the masses like an empress.

In the sky, Ji Xuan and Xie Tianhe narrowed their eyes as they gazed at Luo Li. Their expressions were somber, as if they could detect an unusual sense of danger unlike before.

They remained silent, as they were aware that Luo Li must have tricks up her sleeve. However, they were not simple characters to be trifled with, either. Now that they had temporarily become allies, even if Luo Li had a strong ace up her sleeve, it would be difficult for her to fight one versus two against them.

"Heh, it seems like you intend to fight us one versus two?" Xie Tianhe cackled, his gaze ghastly.

Luo Li looked at him coldly but did not reply. Her slender hands lightly clasped together, forming an ancient seal, as a soft voice rang out.

"Luo River."

Crash!

When those two words were uttered, a hurricane seemed to have taken form in the world as the spiritual energy between heaven and earth rioted in a wild frenzy.

In the space behind Luo Li, a violent turbulence occurred and amidst

countless shocked gazes, a nearly invisible vast and endless river appeared.

The river, brilliant and dazzling, resembled a primordial ancient dragon, greatly astonishing the crowd. Despite the river being a shadow, the vast majesty it exuded still shook many to the core.

Even the Chiefs of the Great Spiritual Academies in the sky could not help but gape in surprise. Their faces were startled, as the Chiefs of the Five Great Academies stared solemnly at the ancient river.

Whoosh.

There was a faint sound of trickling water and the sound seemed to contain a strange, irresistible force.

Luo Li's lovely face remained composed as she conjured a seal with one hand, placing it lightly before her chest.

Crash!

In the winding ancient river, a gushing water column suddenly burst out, soaring into the sky. Everyone's faces morphed into shock, as a pair of huge majestic wings condensed from water spread out from within the water column.

The spiritual energies between heaven and earth fluctuated in a violent frenzy.

The water column dissipated into mist, revealing the figure within. It was a shadow of about 100 feet, slender and graceful. She floated atop the ancient river and if one scrutinized her face, they would find it to be similar to Luo Li's but at the same time, there were slight differences. She spread her wings with an elegant flourish, exuding an indescribable sense of beauty that made everything in the world pale in comparison.

She seemed to be the embodiment of beauty.

Furthermore, everyone could feel the powerful spiritual energy fluctuations around her.

Everyone stared dumbfoundedly at the scene before them.

In the sky, Ji Xuan and Xie Tianhe's expressions twisted with surprise. The former's eyebrows knitted tightly in frustration, while the latter seemed to have recalled something. Shock flitted through his gaze as he cried out in disbelief.

"This is... the Spirit of the Luo River?"

Ji Xuan's heart jolted in shock as his eyes narrowed.

"The fifth rank in the Beast Record's Earth Ranking, revered to be the most mysterious Spiritual Beast, the Spirit of the Luo River?"

In this vast world, the Beast Record was divided into two lists; the Heaven and Earth Ranking, with the Earth Ranking sometimes called the Spiritual Beasts Ranking, because all the rankings belonged to the domain of Spiritual Beasts. In this ranking, the most mysterious one was that of the Spirit of the Luo River, which was ranked in fifth place.

To a certain extent, the Spirit of the Luo river was the most intriguing existence in the Spiritual Beasts Ranking because it did not rely on the usual methods of reproduction and inheritance of the bloodline, but rather developed from a miraculous existence of the Luo River as its precursor.

In the primordial times of the Great Thousand World, there was once a magical river named the Luo River, which seemed to have an everlasting existence. It was ancient, with infinite power and mystery. However, after the horrendous catastrophe when foreign tribes invaded the land, the Luo River was destroyed and ceased to exist, so it was extremely rare to see the Spirit of the Luo River appear again.

As the birth of the Spirit of the Luo River required very precise and harsh conditions, it not only required the Luo River as a precursor but when it is born, it must find a perfect host, a fetus still in the mother's womb to integrate with. Otherwise, the newly born Spirit of the Luo River would once again fade into nothing and dissipate in the Luo River.

This fusion was rather intriguing, as not only does it not damage the

host, it instead serves a complementary function in the path of cultivation, hence it is highly coveted by practitioners.

In the primordial times, when the Luo River was not yet destroyed, there was a group of Sovereigns who merged with the Spirit of the Luo River, and these top powers were a powerful force to be reckoned with in the catastrophe of guarding the Great Thousand World.

However, now that the Luo River had been destroyed, it was obvious that it was impossible to restore it to its former glory, hence over time, the Spirit of the Luo River became one of the most mysterious ranks in the Spiritual Beasts Ranking.

In the top four ranks of the Spiritual Beasts Ranking, the Four Spirit Symbols consisted of the Azure Dragon, White Tiger, Vermilion Bird and Black Turtle. However, this was in fact only symbolic, as the bloodlines of the four spirits were unable to be restrained by the Spiritual Beasts Ranking. They were not only ranked extremely highly on the Spiritual Beasts Ranking, but even on the terrifyingly formidable Heaven Ranking in the Beast Record. Some also called it the Divine Beasts Ranking.

The reason why these four spirits could dominate the top four of the Divine Beasts Ranking was because they had to go through a period of infancy before they could evolve into the true form of their Divine Beasts.

Hence, to a certain extent, the first rank in the Spiritual Beasts Ranking could be considered as the fifth-ranked Spirit of the Luo River...

Moreover, the Spirit of the Luo River possessed the power of evolution. Although it did not have the power of a bloodline, once it really evolved, it became particularly terrifying, as the Spirit of the Luo River would transform into the God of the Luo River. That sheer magnitude of power could only be rivalled by those who had lived for countless years, and only the most powerful Divine Beasts would be able to best it.

In this era, the Spirit of the Luo River had become a legendary myth. Thus, when Xie Tianhe and Ji Xuan witnessed Luo Li summoning the shadow of the Spirit, their faces twisted into dread.

"She's actually the host of the Spirit of the Luo River, how could it be..." Ji

Xuan's eyebrows knitted in frustration as he murmured incredulously.

Although the Luo River had been destroyed, there had been a remnant of the hidden Luo River in the Luo God Clan. Who would have expected that the little remnant of the Luo River could really birth the Spirit of the Luo River. What a great fortune indeed!

Xie Tianhe's face was livid with rage as he gnashed his teeth.

"I see." Ji Xuan nodded his head subtly.

"Hmph, well there's nothing to be afraid of. The Spirit of the Luo River is clearly still at a juvenile phase. It won't pose as a threat at all!"

Xie Tianhe snorted disdainfully.

Something in Ji Xuan's gaze flashed momentarily before smoothing back into an indifferent expression.

"I would really like to see what you could possibly do to me."

Xie Tianhe's gaze turned chilling. Now that Wen Qingxuan had been defeated, Luo Li alone would not be able to turn the situation around. Even if she had revealed an astonishing card up her sleeve, Xie Tianhe was not a cowardly imbecile who was easily intimidated.

He smiled grimly at Luo Li and then roared ferociously, plunging his unnervingly hideous crimson arms into the crown of the Demonic Blood Beast's skull. The crowd saw his arms wriggling frantically, as dark red blood flowed unceasingly into the Demonic Blood Beast's body.

With the influx of blood, the body of the huge and ferocious Demonic Blood Beast flushed blood red. The crimson blood thorns that grew from its back of red bone thorn extended into something increasingly grotesque and horrendous.

Roar!

The Demonic Blood Beast let out a bloodcurdling roar skyward and its murderous aura pervaded heaven and earth, causing the world to shake ominously.

"Blood Demon Bell!"

As Xie Tianhe's roar permeated the air, a flash of blood red light burst out of the mouth of the Demonic Blood Beast and transformed into a gargantuan crimson red bell. Droplets of blood trickled and dripped down the surface of the bell. As countless ferocious faces emerged, a shrill roar rattled through the world.

The rumbling growl seemed to have the power to influence the minds of the people nearby. Numerous disciples in the vicinity of the battle stage felt their spiritual energies fluctuate uncontrollably and even their blood showed signs of ebullience.

Bong!

The Demonic Blood Beast swung its huge fists, dealing a brutal blow towards the Blood Demon Bell. Suddenly, a murderous aura pervaded the heavens and earth, a beam of blood red light around a hundred feet long spewed out, like a blood dragon howling past, creating unnerving sound waves aimed straight towards Luo Li.

Luo Li lifted her gaze slightly. Her beautiful face remained impassive. With just a gentle lift of her hand, the slender and graceful silhouette behind her mirrored her movement.

Crash!

A gentle stream of crystal clear water flowed out, colliding lightly with the beam of blood.

Whoosh!

In the collision, there was no hard impact causing the spiritual energies to fluctuate and spread. Instead, the blood almost disintegrated entirely at the first touch of the seemingly gentle and clear water.

The ancient Luo River always had the power to cause everything to dissipate.

Luo Li did not give Xie Tianhe any opportunities to regroup as she dealt continuous blows towards his attacks. With a flourish of her hands conjuring up seals, the clear stream of water coalesced into tumultuous waves and in a flicker, appeared above the Blood Demon Bell, engulfing it

entirely.

Whoosh!

The Blood Demon Bell was swept into the water and was reduced to nothing in the gentle swooshing sounds of the water.

Xie Tianhe's expression twisted with dread and terror.

However, before he could attack again, he suddenly felt a turmoil in the space surrounding him. His eyes narrowed as he saw his surrounding space being torn apart. Turbulent waves of crystal clear water surged out, turning into a lake that enveloped him.

A seemingly gentle attack instead made Xie Tianhe feel that he was in mortal peril.

Chapter 623: The True Ace Cards

Whoosh.

The sound of clear water lingered over the sky, but it was this crisp sound that made the scalps of countless disciples tingle in fear. It was clear that they all felt a terrible force contained in the seemingly gentle stream of water.

The clear and soft stream of water transformed into a massive lake, entrapping Xie Tianhe and the Demonic Blood Beast in it.

Xie Tianhe looked at the clear water surrounding him. His face twisted with vexation but he was not one to resign himself to death like a sitting duck. His gaze darkened as he conjured up different seals. The Demonic Blood Beast growled as it opened its large, ferocious mouth. A huge beam of blood red light shot out, and violent spiritual energy fluctuations swept through.

Pssh!

However, when the seemingly ferocious beam of blood red light crashed harshly on the pillar of water, it did not achieve much effect. Instead, it diminished at an alarming speed under the flow of the water.

The seemingly gentle lake, however, had become an impenetrable prison, firmly binding Xie Tianhe.

Luo Li hovered in the air, her crystal-like eyes looking nonchalantly at the fierce resistance Xie Tianhe was putting up. She stretched out her slender fingers and pointed them gently downwards.

Crash!

Suddenly, the waves of the gentle lake thrashed violently, revealing its ferocious side. The currents abruptly shrank and contracted. Billowing waves unfolded carrying strange fluctuations as the lake mercilessly bombarded the massive body of the Demonic Blood Beast.

Tsst-whoosh!

The currents rushed up and suddenly there was a shrill roar of agony as white mist rose up from the huge body of the Demonic Blood Beast. Huge expanses of skin had melted off, revealing the flesh and blood within. The Demonic Blood Beast was not in its real physical manifestation, but merely a force of its Soul Essence. Hence, it was not the real flesh and blood that disintegrated, but the pure spiritual energy and the power of the Soul Essence.

Thus, in the face of the vast streams of water, the crowd could clearly see that the Demonic Blood Beast's massive body was shrinking rapidly as its spiritual energy was being eroded.

Xie Tianhe stood on the shoulders of the Demonic Blood Beast, his face deathly pale and his eyes struck with terror. He found that no matter how much of a defense he put up, he could not resist the seemingly gentle, clear water. He could only watch helplessly as the Demonic Blood Beast melted away while the waves crashed.

In just a few moments, the Demonic Blood Beast trapped in the tumultuous currents had shrunk by nearly half, and the wild spiritual energy fluctuations that preceded it had begun to wither.

"The Serpent of Luo River."

Luo Li's breathtakingly beautiful face remained calm as she conjured up seals with one hand.

Hiss!

In the lake, there was a shrill whine and the water currents were torn with a swish. A dozen giant pythons sprang out. Their huge tails swung around the body of the Demonic Blood Beast, entangling and binding it securely. That terrifying force stopped the Demonic Blood Beast from moving even a muscle and was powerful enough to squeeze the Demonic Blood Beast into pieces just by sheer force.

Xie Tianhe's expression grew distorted as he thrust his arms into the Demonic Blood Beast's body. Despite feeling his Blood Essence surge out, he could barely put up a resistance. He could feel the growing power of the constricting force as his defense began to gradually falter.

The power of the Luo River to dissolve everything was overwhelmingly strong!

Around the golden battle stage, countless disciples watched the scene unfold and were unable to help but gasp in wonder. Who would have thought that Luo Li had such an unexpectedly strong ace up her sleeve? Once she revealed her hand, it had completely suppressed Xie Tianhe.

"All the best Senior Luo Li!"

In the direction of the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, numerous disciples cheered and shouted loudly with excited faces. Although they had lost Mu Chen, who had the strongest combat power, Luo Li's performance had amazed them. Although the victor of this Spiritual Academy Competition had not yet appeared, it was undeniable that the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy had put up the most impressive performance.

Creak!

In the midst of the roaring cheers, Xie Tianhe's face became more and more aggravated. The massive body of the Demonic Blood Beast began to emit soft creaking sounds, signalling that it was at its limit. If this continued, it was bound to be destroyed, dealing irreparable damage to Xie Tianhe as well. He would no longer be able to withstand Luo Li.

Krawk!

Just as Xie Tianhe was about to reach his limit, suddenly an ancient and resounding cry of an eagle rang between the heavens and earth. Everyone twitched in response as they saw a shadow of an eagle's wing descending from the sky. The shadow seemed to sweep through the space as it dove straight into the lake, cutting over Xie Tianhe's body.

Boom! Crash!

As the shadow passed, the huge water pythons burst apart.

Bam!

Feeling the weakening of his restraints, Xie Tianhe hurriedly

manipulated the Demonic Blood Beast. They soared into the sky, escaping from the shrouded area of the lake, and then stopped in a humiliating manner in the sky. His eyes twitched with a tinge of palpitation. He did not expect that Luo Li would be so powerful after revealing her ace card, the Spirit of the Luo River. Just one careless move and he was nearly annihilated.

Upon seeing Xie Tianhe escape, Luo Li's eyebrows knitted together slightly. She lifted her beautiful face to glance towards another direction, her tone stating calmly, "You have finally decided to summon the Primordial Heavenly Dragon Hawk?"

Countless glances shifted upwards as they saw Ji Xuan's figure standing in the sky a short distance away. Behind him, mighty spiritual energy fluctuations permeated the air and in those powerful fluctuations, everyone could see the silhouette of a gargantuan eagle slowly emerge.

The great eagle extended his wings that seemed massive enough to veil mountains as dark purple ran throughout its body. It's head, however, did not resemble that of an eagle, but a ferocious dragon. Its sharp claws were also the sharp claws of a dragon. The creature who resembled a dragon and an eagle but was not entirely either one of them ranked eighth in the Spiritual Beasts Ranking, the Primordial Heavenly Dragon Hawk.

The Primordial Heavenly Dragon Hawk was a ferocious Sovereign Spiritual Beast, and despite it not having the pure bloodline of a dragon, the fusion between two bloodlines led to the emergence of metamorphosis. This resulted in the Primordial Heavenly Dragon Hawk having the power to surpass its predecessor. It was said that the Primordial Heavenly Dragon Hawk, which had the highest level of cultivation, could even feed on the Dragon Clan.

However, these dragons were merely Spiritual Beasts which had some of the Dragon Clan's bloodline. Although it did not paint the full picture, it was enough to prove the ferocity of the Primordial Heavenly Dragon Hawk.

"The Primordial Heavenly Dragon Hawk... It's ranked quite highly but

with its Soul Essence, you didn't think that it would be able to rival the Spirit of the Luo River, did you?"

Her voice calm, Luo Li's crystal-like eyes glanced at the massive Primordial Heavenly Dragon Hawk.

"Haha well, the Spirit of the Luo River is ranked first on the Spiritual Beasts Ranking, and with the Primordial Heavenly Dragon Hawk's soul essence alone, it is naturally difficult to rival the Spirit of the Luo River," Ji Xuan said softly and smiled faintly as he looked at Luo Li.

"To compel the spirit of the Luo River, I'm afraid your ability is now infinitely close to the Sovereign-level. "

This remark, however, caused many disciples' hearts to jump in shock as they stared at the graceful figure in awe and reverence. The Sovereign-level... That was representative of being reborn, a boundary of demarcation to differentiate one from the rest. One could only be considered as a top power by attaining the Sovereign-level. Although the Sovereign-level and the Spirit Disaster were only a line apart, the difference between them could not be compensated for with mere ordinary means.

Now that Luo Li was infinitely close to the Sovereign-level, she could be considered invincible among the others and with this strength, she could even become an elder in some of the Spiritual Academies.

Xie Tianhe's heart shook. With Luo Li's immense power, no wonder he had been suppressed, despite passing through the Three Grades of the Spirit Disaster. Luo Li now had surpassed them by a large margin.

"I originally wanted to leave you to Mu Chen but suddenly, I feel that you don't deserve to be his opponent," Luo Li remarked calmly.

The smile on Ji Xuan's face stiffened little by little as the corners of his mouth twitched slightly. His handsome face suddenly became ferocious, and he glared at Luo Li as if he were going to devour her. Clearly, the latter's remark had dealt such a heavy blow to him, that he was too enraged to maintain his usual composed countenance.

"Are you saying that I'm not worthy to be the opponent of the fellow that has repeatedly been defeated by me?"

Ji Xuan took a deep breath, his face still twisted in rage. He let out an unnerving and eerie laugh and shook his head gently.

"Self-denial does not feel good at all but if he really had the ability, he should stand in front of me and say that statement straight to my face. Unfortunately... he's not worthy enough."

Upon hearing this, Luo Li smiled beatifically without a hint of rage. Her smile dazzled countless people before she lifted her Luo Shen Sword.

"You are not qualified to comment if he's worthy or not. Show me your true ability, and if your ace card is the Soul Essence of the Primordial Heavenly Dragon Hawk, I guess that would be too disappointing."

Ji Xuan's twisted expression gradually smoothed into his usual mask of composure. He cast a significant look at Luo Li before slowly closing his eyes. He spread out his arms gently, his nonchalant voice echoing in the sky.

"Since you requested, then... as you wish. I will let you know, between him and I, who exactly is not worthy enough to be the other's opponent."

Crash!

Just when Ji Xuan's last word rang out, everyone felt a terrible power transcending that of the Spirit Disaster sweep out from within Ji Xuan's body like a raging storm.

In that instant, the crowd's expressions morphed into shock.

Chapter 624: Sovereign Sea

Crash!

The spiritual energy between heaven and earth rioted in a frenzy as everyone looked towards the sky in shock and terror. Ji Xuan stood with his hands clasped loosely, as if holding the sun and the moon in his palms. The space behind him twisted with distortion, even showing signs of rupture.

In the twisted areas of the space, it seemed as if one could see a vast and endless ocean where the sea was particularly dazzling. The area was filled with the spiritual energy of the Holy Light, its vastness seemingly capable of crushing a mountain.

An inexplicable sense of oppression emanated from a sea that seemed to be illusory, and it was this sense of pressure that caused countless disciples to gasp in shock. Terror could be seen in their eyes, as this level of oppression was not something that Spirit Disaster masters were capable of. That familiar aura of domination belonged to the Sovereign Master!

"That's... the Sovereign Sea?"

A few people stared at the ocean appearing distinctly in the broken space and they could not help but gasp, murmuring in disbelief.

The true Sovereign Master possesses two unique symbols, one being the Sovereign celestial body and the other the Sovereign Sea. Once their cultivation reaches a certain level, and if they successfully enter the Sovereign-level, their body's aurasea disintegrates and is replaced by the Sovereign Sea!

It was commonly known that the aurasea was the place where the spiritual energies of the human body converge. If we excluded other external tactics and means, the one who had more powerful spiritual energies in his aurasea would possess stronger capabilities.

However, after stepping into the Sovereign-level, the aurasea inside the

body was broken and replaced by the Sovereign Sea, as the Sovereign Sea was a more powerful and perfect existence.

The existence of the aurasea, although essential, was extremely vulnerable from some perspectives. Once the aurasea was destroyed, the path of cultivation could end, and years of hard work and effort in cultivation would be in vain.

The Sovereign Sea was extremely mystical because it did not exist purely within the human body, but uncovered a small mysterious realm in it. This small realm hidden in the body was highly obscure compared to the aurasea, and even more vast and powerful. That degree of sturdiness was something that the aurasea could not match up to.

Most importantly, 10 percent of the Sovereign Sea's power would enable the practitioner to hide their spirit within it, so that even if the physical body was destroyed, the spirit could still survive under the protection of the Sovereign Sea. As long as the practitioner could cultivate a physical body again, he could make a comeback in the future.

Therefore, the Sovereign Sea and the Sovereign Celestial Body were the most apparent signs of the Sovereign Master—one to protect his life and the other to increase his combat power greatly. This was why everyone coveted reaching the Sovereign-level in this realm.

Now, the seemingly illusory sea that appeared behind Ji Xuan was the Sovereign Sea!

The fact that Ji Xuan could call upon and condense the Sovereign Sea... Doesn't it mean that he had stepped into the Sovereign-level?!

Countless people looked at each other at a loss as they swallowed tightly, eyes full of shock.

Ji Xuan had concealed his hidden depths so deeply and in this case, what was the point of having this match? Disciples of their current stage of cultivation had no chance of resisting the Sovereign-level.

At the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, Ye Qingling, Yu Xi and Su Ling'Er's faces turned pale, as every tactic was virtually impractical and

ineffective in the face of the Sovereign Master's true power.

"His Sovereign Sea is not complete," Ling Xi stated slowly, as she stared intently at the battle stage.

Ye Qingling and the girls glanced over upon hearing Ling Xi's words.

"It is true that Ji Xuan is incredibly gifted, that he can reach the threshold of the Sovereign-level at such a young age, but the true Sovereign Sea is perfect, while the edge of the space shows signs of fragmentation. It is clear that he has barely condensed the rudimentary form of the Sovereign Sea, and the spiritual energy of the Sovereign Sea is somewhat mottled. Thus, I think he has borrowed and tapped into external forces."

Ling Xi was, after all, an elder of the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. Her perceptiveness was on another level, compared to the likes of Ye Qingling. Hence, she could naturally see at a glance the imperfections of Ji Xuan's Sovereign Sea.

However, when she said that Ji Xuan was extremely gifted, she forgot that her age was not much more than Ji Xuan's. Therefore, if Ji Xuan's talent was immense, then she was not one to be trifled with, either. Of course, this was largely due to Ling Xi having always been by Mu Chen's mother's side in the past.

To be under the personal tutelage of a Sovereign who was worthy enough to be compared to the Heavenly Sovereign in the Great Thousand World... People who could have that honor were few and far between.

"Is that so..."

Ye Qingling and the girls heaved a sigh of relief.

"Don't be too optimistic yet. Even if it is an imperfect Sovereign Sea, the power it embodies far surpasses that of the Spirit Disaster. Although Luo Li possesses the Spirit of the Luo River, the Spirit of the Luo River is a growing Spiritual Beast, so at this stage, I'm afraid the power it can lend to her would not be as strong as you all think." Ling Xi gently shook her head and dashed their hopes again.

Ye Qingling and the girls could only smile grimly and nod. Seeing the current situation, they could not give Luo Li any help. All they could do was to pray that Luo Li could defeat Ji Xuan.

Ling Xi lifted her head. Her beautiful eyes glanced beyond the battle stage, looking up to the Mirror of Judgment suspended high up in the air. She ruminated in silence, and then murmured, "Would you give up just like this..."

...

The spiritual energy between heaven and earth was in a wild frenzy as Ji Xuan stood proudly in the sky. A vast, looming ocean appeared distinctly in the broken space behind him, accentuating his majestic aura as he overlooked the masses below.

"Luo Li, do you think he is still worthy enough to be my opponent now?" Ji Xuan sneered coldly at Luo Li.

However, in the face of Ji Xuan's sneer, Luo Li did not retort but smiled gently, her expression resembling that of calm waters. It was her serene and unperturbed demeanor that made Ji Xuan's face twist in fury again, as he could clearly sense the hidden meaning behind her faint smile.

She would not deign to argue with him on that, because her heart had the answer that never wavered.

"I'll see how far you can go no matter what you think, but at least others will understand that he is just a loser, whom I defeated!" Ji Xuan's eyes filled with an eerie chill as he abruptly took a fierce step forward. His eyes surged with a cold gaze as he turned his palm and suddenly dealt a blow.

Boom!

The spiritual energy of heaven and earth rioted wildly as a startling spiritual energy swept out from the vast ocean, directly materializing into a substantial Fist of the Holy Light as it clapped down.

Rumble!

The incomparably strong golden ground shattered, disintegrating into pieces. Ji Xuan did not perform any Divine Technique. Instead, he completely relied on the immense power of spiritual energy but even so, that attack was still indescribably strong.

Luo Li's gaze was cool as she clasped the Luo Shen Sword in her hand. With the clench of her first, the Spirit of the Luo River in the ancient winding Luo River behind her caused the river to surge out, coalescing into a larger sword as they swung the swords down at the same time.

Whoosh!

A thousand feet of light from the swords swept down. The fierce and unparalleled aura of the swords soared to the sky.

Bong!

The light of the swords collided harshly with the Fist of the Holy Light, and the impact resulted in shock waves which raged like a storm.

"I'll see how many attacks you can resist!"

Ji Xuan smiled. As he leapt forward, his body stormed into the sky. With a lift of his hands, everyone felt heaven and earth quake and rumble. The Sovereign Sea, hidden in the space, raised a barrage of turbulent waves as countless beams of Divine Light soared into the sky, quickly transforming into blows of the Fist of the Holy Light.

Upon seeing that scene, the scalps of countless people tingled in fear. Such powerful attacks at such a high frequency would result in the rapid and immense consumption of spiritual energy, but Ji Xuan could do it effortlessly at will.

The heavens and earth darkened as numerous blows from the Fist of the Holy Light tore the sky and earth apart like meteorites before swarming towards Luo Li.

Luo Li's expression turned somber as she took a deep breath. With a wave of her hands, the Luo River swept out, guarding her within, resembling a water dragon as it hovered serpentine-like.

Bam! Bam! Bam!

The mighty blows of the Fist of the Holy Light bombarded the Luo River. As the onslaught of spiritual energy was too strong for the golden battle stage to withstand, huge cracks continued to spread out...

Everyone looked on at the scene anxiously.

With the terrifying barrage of attacks from the Fist of the Holy Light, they could see the Luo River guarding Luo Li was rapidly fading.

Numerous disciples of the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy gnashed their teeth and clenched their fists tightly.

Anyone could see that in the face of Ji Xuan's terrifying degree of spiritual energy, even Luo Li was unable to put up an effective resistance.

Boom!

The Luo River began to falter and finally reached its limit. With a crisp sound, the Luo River burst into spots of light in the sky and the Spirit of the Luo River dissipated with it. It transformed into a beam of light, surging into Luo Li's body.

Luo Li let out a soft groan. Her body trembled as she fell backwards.

"Look out!"

Just as Luo Li's protective barrier had been broken, Wen Qingxuan's expression morphed into shock as she saw a mass of blood red light suddenly emerge behind Luo Li. Xie Tianhe's face twisted grotesquely in rage as he lifted his palm to deal a critical blow to Luo Li's back.

Wen Qingxuan gritted her teeth and leapt forward nimbly on her toes as she summoned the last of her spiritual energy. She quickly rushed behind Luo Li in an attempt to use her body to shield Luo Li from Xie Tianhe's attack.

"Senior!"

At the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy, numerous girls paled in terror.

"Xie Tianhe, you f**king son of a b*tch!"

The Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy disciples cursed in fury, as Xie Tianhe's despicable and underhanded means enraged them once again.

"Hmph!"

In the face of innumerable curses, Xie Tianhe smiled unnervingly. Not only did he not halt his blow, he instead summoned all his spiritual energy, dealing a brutal blow to Wen Qingxuan and Luo Li, clearly intending to annihilate the two ladies.

Wen Qingxuan gritted her teeth and closed her eyes in resignation as she prepared herself to bear Xie Tianhe's fierce blow.

The situation was perilous.

"Die!" Xie Tianhe roared ferociously, his blows landing mercilessly.

Rumble!

However, just as Xie Tianhe's blow was about to land on Wen Qingxuan, suddenly the deafening sounds of a raging thunderbolt rang in the heavens and earth.

In the sky, the Chiefs of the Spiritual Acdemies and the Chiefs of the Five Great Academies suddenly glanced at the Mirror of Judgment with a gleam in their eyes.

The surface of the Mirror of Judgment suddenly rippled, and then a flash of thunder too dazzling for one to look at directly burst out. The light of the thunderbolt had such a swift speed and in a flash, it appeared above Wen Qingxuan. Next, everyone saw a fist cast like a thunderbolt, piercing through the space and thundering like lightning as it landed on Xie Tianhe.

Boom!

Xie Tianhe's body descended rapidly with the force of the impact and he landed heavily on the golden battle stage. Half of his body was mangled and mutilated, leaving him a bloody mess.

The curses permeating the air came to an abrupt stop.

Countless people were dumbfounded for a moment, and then they suddenly looked up and saw a slender figure sweep out in the midst of the thunder. His arms were wrapped around Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan's slender waists, as his body moved in a flash and appeared on the golden battle platform. The thunder then gradually weakened and finally, in the midst of thunder and light, a slender figure slowly emerged.

Chapter 625: Mu Chen Appears

Lightning flickered atop the golden battle platform. Following the dissipation of the lightning, a familiar figure appeared before many astonished gazes.

When they saw the figure's appearance, the eyes of countless people narrowed sharply. Some even blinked their eyes repeatedly, looking frightened as if they just saw a ghost.

"That's... Mu Chen??!"

"Wasn't he trapped within the Mirror of Judgment? How did he come out?"

"How is this possible... Did he break through the binding of the Mirror of Judgment?"

"That's too terrifying..."

"..."

At this point, the uproar resounded through the heavens and earth. Almost all of them had their eyes wide open and shock was written on their faces. It was clear that the scene before them shook them, and the astonishment was no less than the discovery of Ji Xuan summoning the Sovereign Sea.

Many disciples in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy looked at the scene in amazement. When recognition dawned on them, ecstasy suddenly poured out of their eyes, and deafening cheers reverberated like thunder.

"Wow, Brother Mu really appeared!"

"Hahaha, no wonder he's worthy of being the top of the Heaven rank at our Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy!"

"Brother Mu, destroy those two b*****s!"

All the disciples in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy were very

excited. Although Luo Li had also shown her impressive capabilities, she had always kept a very low profile in the Academy. Mu Chen, however, improved and advanced courageously at an astonishing speed from the moment he entered the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. He swiftly became the most dazzling newcomer in the Academy.

As he surpassed himself time and again, he began to truly gain the approval of everyone in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. Even though he eventually replaced Shen Cangsheng as the top of the Heaven rank, no one felt dissatisfied or questioned his ability. They knew that he had the qualifications to occupy that position.

Unconsciously, in the hearts of many Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy disciples, Mu Chen had clearly become the benchmark of their Academy. Thus, when they saw that Mu Chen had finally reappeared, the excitement in their hearts was palpable.

"This fellow..."

Su Ling'er's eyes sparkled at the slender figure atop the golden platform. She bit her lips, and clasped her small hands tightly together with excitement.

"Brother Mu Chen really appeared. I knew he wouldn't disappoint us!"

Yu Xi's beautiful face was full of admiration.

Ye Qingling heaved a quiet sigh of relief as she looked around at the students of the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, who had suddenly burst out with amazing vigor.

They were originally despondent, but at this point it seemed as if they had been infused with infinite confidence, and their faces were full of passionate glee. They seemed to always believe that with the appearance of Mu Chen, the situation could be reversed completely.

Ever since Mu Chen had entered the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, everything he had done during his years there had never disappointed anyone.

The youth had a charisma that had others easily following him, and that

charm came from his self-confidence.

No matter how strong the enemy was, he never backed down, and always faced opponents courageously.

"The moment he appears, he acts all suave and rescues beautiful ladies, please..."

Ling Xi smiled faintly, her stiff body gradually relaxing. There was a smile on her little red mouth. Mu Chen's performance did not disappoint her.

Atop the golden battle platform and amid the commotion that rang through heaven and earth, Mu Chen glanced down at the two women in his arms and asked, "Are both of you alright?"

Luo Li gazed at the familiar face in surprise. A faint smile appeared before she shook her head to signal that she was fine. Wen Qingxuan, however, was stunned in shock when she saw Mu Chen's face. Realization dawned on her when she heard the deafening cheers and felt Mu Chen's arm around her waist. Her cheeks flushed as she hurriedly freed herself from Mu Chen's grasp. She stared at him in fury and embarrassment.

"Trying to take advantage of me?"

Upon seeing the girl was about to get mad, Mu Chen replied exasperatedly,

"Under the circumstances, I was just trying to save you, okay."

"Hmph, it must feel good having two of us in your arms, doesn't it?"

Wen Qingxuan wasn't buying his explanation, as she harrumphed.

"You let two girls fight for such a long time. How ungentlemanly of you!"

Mu Chen scratched his head sheepishly as he lifted his head to glance at Ji Xuan, who stood in the sky. His eyes darkened coldly before smiling in reply. "My apologies. Let me do the next battle."

"Are you up to it? That fellow now can even summon the Sovereign Sea, although he isn't a true Sovereign yet. He's not someone we can resist easily."

Wen Qingxuan glanced at him in apprehension, but worry was hidden in her gaze.

"Let me help you. I can still fight. Even though he summoned the Sovereign Sea, if it came down to it, I might not lose to him," Luo Li said softly.

Mu Chen smiled as he shook his head gently.

"I have been waiting for this battle for a long time."

Luo Li said nothing more, for she knew that the battle before her indeed belonged to Mu Chen.

"Be careful."

Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan glanced at each other before slowly stepping back. They locked a glacial gaze on Xie Tianhe, who had been severely injured by a blow from Mu Chen, as he lay limply on the battle platform. Xie Tianhe had completely lost his combat power. However, the two women, who had been extremely disparaging of his previous despicable means, would naturally not let him off lightly now.

Mu Chen on the other hand, did not care about the state Xie Tianhe was in. He slowly hovered in the air, finally standing in front of Ji Xuan, directly facing him.

Ji Xuan's cold gaze had been fixed on Mu Chen ever since he appeared. Deep in his eyes, a cold glint was intertwined with murderous intent. Finally, a ferocious smile became etched on his face as he tilted his head slightly and stared at Mu Chen.

"I was surprised that you could actually break out."

"Your surprise has just begun."

Mu Chen smiled, but his smile was chilling. His eyes were also filled with sharp, murderous intent. He could feel the spiritual energy surrounding Luo Li was in slight turmoil, which was due to Ji Xuan inflicting injuries on her in their prior battle.

Ji Xuan shook his head as he replied, "It doesn't matter. The fact that you

could appear is what I wanted. I'm thinking, if I utterly defeat you here, will those disciples from the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy still trust and worship you?"

He had clearly seen the sudden outburst of countless disciples from the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, and if he defeated Mu Chen later, the many eyes that had lit up would then turn despondent, and this would make him feel a sense of satisfaction.

Mu Chen smiled but did not say anything more. His hands slowly clenched, and the majestic force of his spiritual energy was suddenly erupting like a volcano.

Boom!

A wave of powerful spiritual energy rippled around Mu Chen's body, the strength far surpassing that from before.

"Oh? The Three Grades of the Spirit Disaster?"

Ji Xuan sensed the spiritual energy fluctuations. As he raised his brow, his mouth twisted into a sardonic smirk.

"It seems that you have gotten a lot of benefits from the Mirror of Judgment."

Before entering the Mirror of Judgment, Mu Chen's ability level was only at the First Grade of the Spirit Disaster. However, his ability now was at the Third Grade of the Spirit Disaster. It was apparent that Mu Chen had passed two Grades of the Spirit Disaster in the Mirror of Judgment...

"However, this level of spiritual energy is of no threat to me, at this stage."

Ji Xuan smiled before his expression turned cold. Pointing his fingers in the air, a huge holy light swept through the Sovereign Sea behind him, as if materializing into something tangible, traversing the space, and shooting directly at Mu Chen.

His casual point summoned such powerful spiritual energy fluctuations that far surpassed that of masters who had passed the Three Grades of the

Spirit Disaster.

Crash!

However, when the beam of holy light containing astonishingly strong spiritual energy fluctuations swept towards him, Mu Chen's expression remained calm. Immediately above his body, bright sparks of thunder burst out. These sparks of thunder wrapped around Mu Chen's body fluidly, quickly integrating into his body.

Whoosh!

The flickering of thunder caused Mu Chen's skin to become as bright as silver. Sparks of thunder glimmered on his chest as thunder marks appeared line by line.

One mark... Five marks... Seven marks... Eight marks... Nine marks!

Mu Chen's Thunder God Physique had attained the powerful stage of the Ennea Rune Lightning Physique!

When the ninth thunder mark emerged, Mu Chen's dark eyes looked as if they were cast by a thunderbolt with flickering sparks of lightning.

He took a step forward, dealing a seemingly slow and mild blow.

Bam!

His fist seemed to be slow, but in an instant, it bombarded the beam of seemingly intangible holy light. The sparks of thunder then burst out in a barrage, shattering the holy light into smithereens with one brutal blow!

"You want to resist the Sovereign with just the strength of your physical body? What a joke!"

Seeing Mu Chen surrounded by thunderbolts, Ji Xuan sneered coldly as his gaze hardened. He could feel that Mu Chen's physical body had become extremely strong, but if he wanted to compete with him on that basis, he was afraid that Mu Chen was overly naive.

"Even someone like you is considered to be a Sovereign?"

Mu Chen smiled, as he gazed intently at the vast and majestic Sovereign

Sea behind Ji Xuan. He smirked and stated slowly, "Isn't it just an imperfect Sovereign Sea? Did you think... that you were the only one who had it?"

Upon hearing Mu Chen's words, Ji Xuan's eyes narrowed in shock.

Chapter 626: Mu Chen’s Sovereign Sea

In the sky, a cold glint flashed in Ji Xuan's eyes as he stared at the thunderbolts surrounding Mu Chen. His eyes narrowed as he thought of Mu Chen's prior statement. However, he twisted his mouth into a sardonic smirk as he replied, "Oh, really?"

Clearly, he did not believe that Mu Chen also possessed the Sovereign Sea. After all, no matter how astonishing an encounter he had, it was impossible to advance from the First Grade of the Spirit Disaster to summoning the Sovereign Sea in merely an hour.

However, in the face of Ji Xuan's sarcasm and condescension, Mu Chen did not say anything more. Instead, he smiled slightly, his expression turning glacially cold. A chilling glint flashed in his thunderous eyes while his hands conjured up seals!

Whoosh!

A red pillar of light suddenly burst into the sky from the crown of Mu Chen's head. Simultaneously, a palpably demonic force pervaded the heavens and earth, as if a primordial, ferocious beast was about to be born.

Everyone looked up at the scene.

Inside the red pillar of light, the gargantuan Demon Pillar stood quietly. The surface of the Demonic Pillar was well-worn and had traces of the vicissitudes of life. It was impossible to tell what could have inflicted the hideous marks, but it was also conceivable that in primordial times, the Great Meru Demonic Pillar most likely had gone through terrible and bloody battles.

On top of the Demonic Pillar, some strange patterns could be seen, such as chains entangled around the surface of the pillar, as if they were binding the Great Meru Demonic Pillar.

These patterns were naturally the seals that Mu Chen called upon from the "Immortal Page" within his body.

After all, the demonic aura of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar was too strong, and previously it had been impossible for Mu Chen to control it. Hence, he could only seal it away.

However, it was time for the seal... to be broken.

A cold glint flashed in Mu Chen's eyes, and he moved immediately, appearing before the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, conjuring a seal with one hand and then dealing a blow to the Demonic Pillar.

Buzz!

A wave emanated from Mu Chen's palm and then spread out. The "Immortal Page" hidden within his aurasea suddenly gave out a slight hum. A dark purple glow bloomed and surged out from Mu Chen's palm.

"Seal, break!"

A faint voice rang in Mu Chen's heart.

Whish-whish.

The dark purple light patterns on the surface of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar swiftly melted away.

Boom!

With the melting of the seal, the Great Meru Demonic Pillar suddenly trembled sharply and violently. The huge Demonic Pillar, which was originally a hundred feet tall, had expanded rapidly without Mu Chen's control. Looking at it from a distance, it seemed it could reach up to the sky. The terrifying demonic power that emanated from the Demonic Pillar increased in sharp bursts, painting the heavens and earth a crimson red.

At the sight of the fierce burst of demonic power, many hearts trembled in fear.

Even the Chiefs of the Spiritual Academies in the sky were slightly unnerved by this terrible force.

Chief Tai Cang looked at the scene, a glint of surprise flashing in his somber eyes, as he murmured, "Is he intending to break the seal of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar? This primordial evil artefact is definitely not

easy to control..."

The Great Meru Demonic Pillar was once the most precious treasure of the Demonic Dragon Palace. Chief Tai Cang was somewhat knowledgeable in this. Hence, he knew its power very well. If the Demonic Dragon Palace could restore the Great Meru Demonic Pillar to its original state, even if the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy had the assistance of the Northern Sea Dragon, it would be difficult for them to win.

Now that the Great Meru Demonic Pillar had landed in Mu Chen's possession, could he truly wield it with his current ability? With such an evil artefact, the moment he lost control of it, he would likely be devoured by its power.

Everyone gazed at the monstrous Demonic Pillar in the sky.

After he had broken the seal, Mu Chen looked up and gazed at the huge Demonic Pillar before him. The surface of the pillar appeared as if it had scarlet cracks, which appeared to be in the form of the mouth of the devil. The unceasing spitting of appalling waves of demonic force revealed the most terrifying side of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar.

Mu Chen moved and immediately appeared at the top of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar.

Crash!

However, just as he landed, the Great Meru Demonic Pillar trembled violently. A fierce demonic force transformed into a beam of blood-red light, sweeping towards him directly. Such an evil artefact could not be tamed easily, and with its legendary origins, such a powerful evil would possess its own intelligence. Mu Chen had sealed it previously. Hence, it could only lurk silently, but now that the seal had been broken, it naturally would be unwilling to let Mu Chen control it.

"Hmph."

Facing the possibility of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar devouring him, Mu Chen snorted coldly. It was clear that he had expected this to happen. Stomping his feet heavily, the dark purple light patterns spread quickly

along the soles of his feet. As the lines spread, the terrifying demonic aura suddenly diminished like a weakening tide.

Despite the Great Meru Demonic Pillar being aggressive and brutal, the "Immortal Page" within Mu Chen's body possessed the power to curb and restrain it.

As it was subjected to Mu Chen's counter-attack, the Great Meru Demonic Pillar appeared to restrain itself, and no longer dared to devour Mu Chen.

"Now that you are obedient, let me borrow all your strength!"

Mu Chen felt the Great Meru Demonic Pillar quiet down. He smiled as he immediately sat down directly atop of the Demonic Pillar. As he lifted his hands lightly, scarlet demonic force soared to the sky, and materialized into a beam of scarlet light, enveloping Mu Chen.

Whoosh!

An endless stream of demonic force poured into Mu Chen's body, and finally, rushed into the aurasea within him like a ferocious dragon.

After the seal of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar had been broken, it became apparent that it was more fierce than when it had been sealed, and the power of the demonic force was far greater than it had ever been in the past.

The fierce and vast demonic force constantly poured into the aurasea, and the entire aurasea turned scarlet red. As its capacity gradually reached its limit, a sense of pain quietly poured in.

In the face of this sharp and immense pain, however, Mu Chen still remained motionless as he triggered the demonic force of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar to continuously surge into his aurasea.

Whish-whish!

As the severe pain surged, the pressure of the demonic force could no longer be accommodated in the aurasea. This resulted in a slight

distortion at the central point of the aurasea. When the distortion reached its extreme, a small black spot emerged, barely noticeable, but a strange fluctuation emanated from it. Within the tiny black spot, it was as if a strange little realm was hidden in it.

When that little black spot appeared, a terrible suction force burst out of it, and suddenly the demonic force inside the aurasea roared before being swallowed up entirely by that small black spot.

In a short time, the aurasea became empty again, without even the slightest spiritual energy lingering within.

Atop the Demonic Pillar, Mu Chen's body trembled slightly. He looked up at the distant sky, directing a smile towards Ji Xuan, who had been staring at him coldly. He then rose up, his hands slowly spreading out.

Boom!

The space behind Mu Chen suddenly appeared distorted, and in that space distortion, it seemed that an ocean of blood was emerging. It also resembled a vast sea of spiritual energy, but the spiritual energy of this ocean was painted crimson red like blood. It looked extremely gory.

Countless people were looking at the blood red ocean in the twisted space behind Mu Chen, as fear flashed in their eyes.

The Sovereign Sea!

"Brother Mu Chen actually summoned the Sovereign Sea?" Yu Xi looked at the scene before her and exclaimed in surprise.

Ye Qingling and the others also had expressions of unimaginable shock. After all, Mu Chen only had the ability of the First Grade of the Spirit Disaster before entering the Mirror of Judgment, but now, he advanced a sudden step to the extent of summoning the Sovereign Sea. Wasn't that too terrifying?

Ling Xi shook her head gently as she stated softly, "That's not the Sovereign Sea that Mu Chen summoned. He only summoned a 'Sovereign Origin' in his aurasea, then filled it with the demonic power of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. However, this power does not truly belong to him,

thus it has its limits and cannot last for long. The Sovereign Sea can only exist for a short period of time before it will dissipate, but that should be his purpose."

The aforementioned Sovereign Origin was the original form of the Sovereign Sea, but in order to form the true Sovereign Sea, it was necessary to perfect it with one's own spiritual energy. Now, Mu Chen did not have sufficient time to do so, so he employed another approach. Lending the power of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar and infusing it with the Sovereign Origin could form a false Sovereign Sea.

However, Mu Chen did not care if the Sovereign Sea was real or false at this point. He just needed the power.

Once he possessed the Sovereign Sea, all of Ji Xuan's advantages would vanish thoroughly.

With the Ennea Rune Lightning Physique and the power of the Sovereign Sea, right now Mu Chen could be counted as truly invincible under the Sovereign-level.

The tumultuous waves of the scarlet sea rolled in the twisted space as Mu Chen slowly lifted his head. He looked at Ji Xuan, who was at a distance, his expression somber. The corners of Mu Chen's mouth twisted into a cold smirk as he reached out his hand, lightly bending it, and pointed to Ji Xuan.

The young man planted his feet on the massive Demonic Pillar. His eyes, one scarlet, the other with flashing thunderbolts, were as dark as the thunder wrapped around him.

An unspeakable aura of oppression slowly permeated the arena. The pressure surpassed that of Ji Xuan's, appearing to be even stronger!

Currently, Mu Chen was akin to a vengeful god full of murderous intent as he intimidated everyone in the arena.

Chapter 627: The Blow of a Sovereign

Mu Chen stepped on the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. The demonic force swirled throughout the heavens and the earth. Everyone held their breath due to the oppression.

They lifted up their eyes to look at the tall and handsome youth. He had a cold look and his red eyes flickered with wrath. He looked flatly at Ji Xuan from afar and said calmly, "There was no outcome with the fight that we had years back. It is time to see who the winner is."

Ji Xuan looked gloomy and said slowly, "It seems like during the Mirror of Judgment, I should not have interfered. I have given you an opportunity instead."

Judging from the situation, Mu Chen must have chanced upon something great when he had been trapped in the spiritual energy whirlpool. His power had suddenly increased tremendously, and he had reached the Third Grade of the Spirit Disaster. He was even able to open up the Sovereign Sea and be on par with Ji Xuan.

Mu Chen disregarded what he said, and looked at Ji Xuan with increased intensity.

"You have not disappointed me, though. Otherwise, I would be made a laughing stock for being wary of you." Ji Xuan clasped his palms together. Holy lights gathered together and a Divine Light Spear appeared. It had wings on it and looked extremely special. It was like the Wings of the Angel.

A forceful, blazing, holy light circled out with an imposing fluctuation.

"The Spear of the Angel..." Chief Tai Cang saw the long spear fluctuating strongly in Ji Xuan's hand and stared at it. He said flatly, "Saint Spiritual Academy is indeed generous. They have given the Low Rank Divine Artifact to Ji Xuan."

"Hahaha, Ji Xuan has been performing well in the Academy. He has also contributed much, which is why he has been given the Spear of the Angel." Chief Tian Sheng of Saint Spiritual Academy smiled and said, "Although the Spear of the Angel is powerful, it is still not as powerful as Mu Chen's Great Meru Demonic Pillar. It seems like the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy has put in much effort as well."

He did not think that Mu Chen had earned the Great Meru Demonic Pillar but rather, that the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy had merely given it to him.

Chief Tai Cang sneered and could not be bothered to explain. He turned to look at the two competitors in the sky. The atmosphere was getting tense. They were at swords' points.

Everyone fixed their gazes on the sky, their eyes burning with anticipation. The two people before them were the most powerful among the younger generation in the Academies. Their fight would be a fight of champions. This would be the main attraction of the Spiritual Academy Competition.

Buzz!

Ji Xuan had a cold look about him as he exerted great force and grabbed the long spear. The moment he moved his body, he disappeared into thin air.

Pom!

However, just as he was about to disappear, Mu Chen threw out a blow toward the empty space before him.

Boom! Boom!

Black lightning surged crazily, and a majestic spiritual energy gathered around it. It shot out with a roar like a ferocious dragon. It contained a terrifying power that was capable of injuring someone who had passed the Third Grade of the Spirit Disaster.

A sharp spear tore the space apart while holy lights surged. The force was overbearing and hot, creating a warp in the space. The spear shot across and its tip hit the lightning-engulfed fist.

Prang!

The sound of crashing metal resounded.

A horrifying windstorm swirled out from where the fist and spear met. A visible fluctuation spread out.

Mu Chen stayed put and looked ahead. There was a space warp, but Ji Xuan was nowhere to be seen. He could only see the spear that seemed to have traveled through space.

"What is the point of probing now?"

Mu Chen was expressionless. He threw out a powerful blow, and it shot past the horizon like a thunderbolt. It was indescribably fast and blasted off in the sky.

Boom! Boom!

A figure had been thrown out at the spot where the thunderbolt blasted and flew backward. After several steps, he then managed to find his balance. It was Ji Xuan, holding on to his spear and looking gloomy.

"Ha."

Ji Xuan gave a cold look and snorted. He looked extremely grave and suddenly formed a seal with his hands. There was a space warp behind him, and a Sovereign Sea filled with holy lights exploded. The Sovereign Sea whizzed crazily and multiple rays of holy light gushed out.

"Holy Light Art, Legions of Angels!"

Following his shout, rays of holy light started to come together and form 1,000 holy light figures. Their faces could not be seen, but there were light wings flapping on their backs. Every holy light figure radiated a powerful

spiritual energy fluctuation. The fluctuation was comparable to the experts in the Spirit Stage.

Many disciples surrounding the Golden Battle Stage were stunned. Ji Xuan was indeed powerful. He had cultivated such a mysterious Divine Technique. It was a miracle. He had shown how powerful that technique was compared to the Sovereign-level and Spirit Stage. It could not be displayed through other means other than real power. If Mu Chen did not open up the Sovereign Sea, he would not be able to fight against Ji Xuan.

"Kill!"

Ji Xuan looked coldly at Mu Chen and shook his spear. The holy light figures whizzed out, formed a powerful array, and surrounded Mu Chen.

Swoosh! Swoosh!

The Angels of the Holy Light grabbed a hold of their Divine Light Spears and shot toward Mu Chen.

"Back off!"

Mu Chen's eyes were cold. He stomped his feet, and multiple scarlet lights shot out of the Sovereign Sea, blasting at the Angels of the Holy Light.

As there was about to be a collision, Ji Xuan curled his lips and gave an evil smile. He formed another seal and shouted, "Funeral of the Angel!"

Boom! Boom! Boom!

An earth-shattering explosion took place, and the Angels of the Holy Light exploded. A terrifying holy light windstorm covered up Mu Chen. The windstorm was about 1,000 feet high, and there were huge cracks on the Golden Battle Stage.

Many people turned pale seeing this powerful array. It was rare to see such a fierce fight in the Spiritual Academy Competition.

The holy light windstorm raged crazily. Everyone fixed their gaze on the windstorm and was afraid of being hit by it. They felt that Mu Chen

should be at his wit's end.

The holy light windstorm gradually died down, but everyone was still staring at the spot where it had been. Suddenly, there were screams of shock and Ji Xuan, who was in the air, looked stunned as well.

After the windstorm had dissipated, Mu Chen remained standing in the air.

His shirt had been shredded, and there was thunder water flowing down his body. Nine lightning runes were glittering around his chest. Thunder emanated from his body continuously. Other than the shredded clothes, Mu Chen was not damaged. Ji Xuan's horrifying attack had not hurt him at all.

Some of the onlookers swallowed hard and said in shock, "What a powerful physique..."

Mu Chen stood shirtless in the sky. His skin was bright like silver. Although he did not look muscular and was a bit thin, he gave one the feeling that he would be unmovable, even if the heavens and the earth fell apart.

Mu Chen's eyes looked bright. Even the demonic force from his body was unable to suppress the force from the thunderbolt. He grasped his palms and looked at Ji Xuan, as though a divine being were looking at an ant.

"If this is only what you are capable of, let me do it." Although Mu Chen spoke lightly, his words were accompanied by thunder, and resounded in the heavens and the earth, causing a fluctuation.

Boom! Boom!

After Mu Chen had spoken, some of the onlookers sensed that the sky had darkened, so they lifted up their heads to look. Dark thunder clouds suddenly surged and covered a radius of 1,000 feet. The dark thunder clouds caused everyone to hold their breath.

A silver thunderbolt writhed around like a huge dragon in the thunder clouds. It emanated an oppressive power.

Boom!

The thunder clouds writhed about and suddenly, an enormous lightning bolt pierced through the clouds and shot downward. The thunderbolt did not hit Ji Xuan, but instead blasted down hard on Mu Chen.

Bang!

A majestic thunderbolt struck Mu Chen. However, Mu Chen absorbed it into his body.

Swish! Swish!

The black lightning water on Mu Chen's body started to solidify. In the blink of an eye, black, vicious-looking Lightning Armor appeared on his body. While Mu Chen had been covered by the armor, his body seemed to have grown many times. He had become a Lightning Giant.

The fluctuation in Mu Chen's body was increasingly terrifying.

"I can kill you with one blow."

A pair of bright eyes looked at Ji Xuan from under the Black Lightning Armor. Booming sounds resounded in the heavens and the earth. Mu Chen stepped forth and in the next instant, he appeared above Ji Xuan. He threw out a blow that consisted purely of ultimate power.

Thunderbolts danced crazily in the sky. The spiritual energy in the scarlet Sovereign Sea whizzed out and entered Mu Chen's arms.

The power of the Sovereign Sea and the Ennea Rune Lightning Physique gathered together and turned into a simple blow.

Boom!

Just one blow, and the space broke out.

Ji Xuan's expression changed. Even the Chiefs of the Spiritual Academies, who were in the sky, looked extremely grave. This blow that Mu Chen had thrown had displayed the true power of a top Sovereign!

Chapter 628: Ji Xuan’s trump Card

Boom!

The heavens and the earth seemed to be quaking.

Thunderbolts were shooting all over the sky while thunder resounded. The blow that Mu Chen had spent so much time gathering his energy for was so powerful, he was taken by surprise. This blow that combined the physique and spiritual energy was perfect. They blended well together, and it was so powerful that it could kill any opponent below the Sovereign-level.

Even Ji Xuan was stunned by this blow.

Dong!

Tiny cracks formed where the blow hit. It looked like glass that had been smashed.

The terrifying lightning had been amplified in Ji Xuan's eyes. He gritted his teeth and formed a seal. Holy lights in the Sovereign Sea blasted out and speedily gathered before him. Within a short period of time, a Divine Shield of about 100 feet appeared.

"Angel's Divine Shield!"

The Divine Shield was extremely plain and primitive. It had a pair of holy wings and seemed formidable. It also seemed to be able to withstand any attack.

In the face of Mu Chen's almost perfect blow, Ji Xuan had to activate his most powerful defense.

Boom!

Mu Chen had thrown out his terrifying blow as the Divine Shield appeared. The blow blasted out and hit the Divine Shield.

When the blows collided, it was as if a meteorite had landed. The heavens and the earth seemed to slow down for a while. Following that,

there was a loud explosion that resounded in the entire space. A visible wave swirled out in the sky up to a few thousand feet away. The entire heavens and earth were in turbulence.

Lightning and holy lights swirled out from the spot where the blows met.

Many people squinted their eyes and fixed their gazes on that spot. Although their eyes were prickling in pain, they refused to look away.

The collision was earth-shattering.

Dong!

A horrifying shockwave spread out. Instantly, a pathetic light figure was thrown down to the Golden Battle Stage.

Dong!

The Golden Battle Stage had been destroyed. A deep hole a few hundred feet wide appeared. Cracks were everywhere, and very quickly, the sturdy Golden Battle Stage collapsed. A huge rock rolled down and covered the deep hole.

Hiss.

Many people gasped. They were obviously shocked by the array. So far, no one had ever destroyed the Golden Battle Stage, which had been specially constructed for the Spiritual Academy Competition.

"Who has fallen?"

The crowd quickly shifted their attention to the duel. Judging from the situation, the one who had fallen must have lost. The winner would emerge from this powerful duel.

The spiritual energy fluctuation was still raging crazily in the sky and it continued for a few minutes. After a while, the sky gradually calmed down, and the lightning and holy lights dissipated.

Swoosh.

Everyone stared at the sky.

As the sky became clear, a figure slowly appeared.

The figure was in black Lightning Armor. However, the Lightning Armor had been smashed. Bits and pieces of the sturdy armor started to fall off.

"It is Mu Chen!"

Many people's eyes widened. Although his face was covered by the Lightning Armor, they could still recognize him.

Many students from the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy shouted with joy. The disciples' faces were red with excitement. They looked at the figure in the sky with adoration.

"Brother Mu Chen has won!" Yu Xi said. She was extremely excited and held tightly onto Su Ling'er's arm.

"He is amazing." Su Ling'er nodded. Her face was red and her big, beautiful eyes were glittering.

On one side of the battle stage, Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan lifted up their heads to look at the figure. They heaved sighs of relief. Luo Li was elated and proud of Mu Chen. Even if she had been the one to defeat Ji Xuan, she would not be so happy. Wen Qingxuan had a complex look. There was admiration in her look, but at the same time, she was reluctant to admit defeat.

Many Chiefs of the Spiritual Academies watched the scene from the sky with different expressions on their faces. However, none of them spoke.

The Chiefs of the Five Great Academies remained silent and watched quietly. Only Chief Tian Sheng clenched his fists and was no longer smiling.

The place was in an uproar. The figure in the sky gently moved, and the Lightning Armor fell off. As all of them had expected, Mu Chen appeared. His eyes had resumed their darkness, and he lowered his head to look at his fist. It was bloody. Ji Xuan's last defense was stunningly powerful. It

was shockproof. If Mu Chen's physique had not advanced to the stage of the Ennea Rune Lightning Physique, his arm would have been smashed.

Mu Chen was oblivious to the uproar and fixed his gaze on the collapsed battle stage. Ji Xuan must have been seriously injured by the blow, but Mu Chen could not understand why he felt so uneasy.

The shouts continued for a while and gradually stopped. Many people turned to look at the Golden Battle Stage that had collapsed. If Ji Xuan did not appear, the result of the fight of the champions would be out...

There was dead silence.

Mu Chen stood in the air, his eyes glittering. Suddenly, he clenched his fists. The Great Meru Demonic Pillar shot up to the sky and carried a demonic force with it. It smashed down hard on the Golden Battle Stage.

Boom!

The Battle stage had already collapsed, but at that instant, it was crushed. The Great Meru Demonic Pillar smashed down onto the hole in the Golden Battle Stage.

Pom!

Golden rocks turned into powder and there were cracks all over.

This blow that Mu Chen had thrown out was merciless. Many people were stunned. It was a deadly blow.

Mu Chen did not bother with what was going on in the minds of the onlookers. When the Great Meru Demonic Pillar fell, his eyes suddenly narrowed and he looked solemn. The spiritual energy that had dissipated started to surge again. The lightning on his body started to shimmer as well.

The disciples were shocked that Mu Chen was fully armed. Immediately,

they collected themselves and stared at the Golden Battle Stage that had collapsed. Is Ji Xuan able to continue with the fight?

Dong!

A deep sound traveled from under the Golden Battle Stage. The Great Meru Demonic Pillar suddenly shook.

Dong! Dong!

The Great Meru Demonic Pillar shook more vigorously, and suddenly, it shot up to the sky and attacked Mu Chen.

Mu Chen's eyes turned cold. He tapped his feet and appeared on top of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. He stomped on it and suppressed it. He became wary of the dark hole in the Golden Battle Stage and stared at it.

Everyone fixed their gazes on the hole as well and held their breath. Their hearts were thumping fast.

Purple lights started to appear from the dark hole and then spread out. A figure slowly floated up and landed gently on a huge rock.

Everyone gasped upon seeing the figure.

It was Ji Xuan. However, he looked different than before. There were purple lights on his body and strange purple light patterns on his face. His eyes had turned dark purple, and they were sharp and cold. He looked hostile.

There was a pair of purple eagle's wings on his back. As the wings flapped gently, a space warp formed around it.

Ji Xuan's face looked indifferent. He folded his arms before him, and lifted up his head to look at Mu Chen with disdain.

Mu Chen squinted and looked at Ji Xuan. He looked so different and

strange now. Mu Chen could feel prickly pain on his skin. He sensed grave danger that could put his life at risk.

Wen Qingxuan and Luo Li turned pale as they looked at Ji Xuan. They felt something was amiss.

The Chiefs of the Academies were taken aback as well. They looked at Ji Xuan with astonishment.

Other than Chief Tian Sheng, Chief Tai Cang and the other Chiefs looked at him with their eyes glittering.

"Something is not right with Ji Xuan," Ling Xi said and looked gravely at Ji Xuan.

"Sister Ling Xi, what is the problem with this guy? He suddenly become very scary," Sun'er said timidly. She was extremely sensitive and could indistinctly feel that Ji Xuan had become more horrifying than before.

Ling Xi did not reply, but fixed her gaze on Ji Xuan.

Ji Xuan slowly curled his lips into a ruthless smile. He gently stomped his feet and a fluctuation spread out. Everyone was shocked to see that the Golden Battle Stage had turned into powder...

Kree!

The sharp cry of an ancient eagle resounded in the heavens and the earth. The cry was piercing to the ears. Everyone saw a huge purple eagle about 1,000 feet tall appear behind Ji Xuan. The eagle had the head of a dragon and the body of an eagle. A terrifying fluctuation emanated from its body as it raged at the heavens and the earth.

Many people looked on with fear. They could sense that the huge, ancient eagle was not an illusion. It was real!

Ji Xuan did not possess the Soul Essence of the Ancient Dragonhawk. He possessed its actual body!

Chapter 629: Re-appearance of Nine Nether

Kuk!

The sharp cry of an eagle resounded in the heavens and the earth. The ear-piercing sound became real, and multiple deep scratches were seen on the ground. A terrifying oppression covered the place. Everyone, including the Chiefs of the Academies, turned pale under the oppression.

A few Chiefs looked gravely at the huge eagle and said, "Is this the actual body of the Ancient Dragonhawk?"

"It is in fact the actual body and not the Soul Essence... but why has the Ancient Dragonhawk hidden itself in Ji Xuan's body? Given his power, he would not be able to tame it," some of the Chiefs said with curiosity.

The Ancient Dragonhawk was ranked number eight in the Spiritual Beasts Ranking Chart. The Spiritual Beasts in this level would have matured, and their power was comparable to the Sovereign-level. Ji Xuan had just managed to open up the Sovereign Sea. Strictly speaking, he had not reached the Sovereign-level, thus he could not have the ability to tame the Ancient Dragonhawk and control it.

Some of the Chiefs looked at one another and were baffled as well.

"The strength of this Ancient Dragonhawk has reached Grade Four Sovereign... it seems like the outcome is obvious. There is no need to continue with the fight," one of the Chiefs shook his head and said helplessly.

In the Academy, those at Grade Four Sovereign could become an elder. The elders of the Five Great Academies were extremely powerful. Their level was a level beyond the reach of the disciples.

"Ha, Chief Tian Sheng, your Academy is cheating. The Ancient Dragonhawk does not belong to Ji Xuan. He has borrowed it. This is

against the rules!" Chief Tai Cang said in a deep voice and looked coldly at the huge Ancient Dragonhawk.

Upon hearing this, Chief Tian Sheng smiled and said, "Chief Tai Cang, what you have said is not right. This Ancient Dragonhawk has nothing to do with our Academy. This is Ji Xuan's own doing. The Ancient Dragonhawk is lodging in him, and Ji Xuan has paid a great price to possess such a great power."

"Lodging?"

The Chiefs of the other three Great Academies were shocked. Lodging was extremely dangerous. When the Ancient Dragonhawk was present in the human body, it could attempt to take over the person's mind and replace it with its own. Likewise, the lodger could attempt to refine its power and control it.

This was betting one's life on it. The one who had been defeated had to pay a great price for it.

Generally speaking, very few people and Spiritual Beasts would go for this method. No man would want to put a time bomb in his body. To a Spiritual Beast, it was too dangerous. They would not want to be placed in such a situation.

Lodging was thus rarely seen.

"The Ancient Dragonhawk is eyeing Ji Xuan's physique and it is trying to take over. Ji Xuan, on the other hand, is eyeing the Ancient Dragonhawk's power. They have thus formed a lodging. Ji Xuan has not borrowed the power, so he has not violated the rules," Chief Tian Sheng said and smiled.

The Chiefs of the other three Great Academies were silent. Ji Xuan was not powerful. The Ancient Dragonhawk could defeat Ji Xuan if it had wanted to, given its power. However, Ji Xuan was ruthless and cunning. He

must be well prepared, or else he would not have done such a dangerous thing.

Chief Tai Cang remained gloomy and was dumbfounded. Although Ji Xuan had taken a shortcut to gain such a great power, he had bet on it with his life. Chief Tai Cang lifted his head and looked up at the youth in the air. He let out a sigh. Mu Chen had fared well, but no one had expected Ji Xuan to hide such a great power within.

...

"This fella... has an Ancient Dragonhawk hidden in his body!" Wen Qingxuan gritted her teeth as she looked at the Ancient Dragonhawk. She said with a wry smile, "It seems like we have underestimated Ji Xuan."

Luo Li clenched her fists and looked at Mu Chen. He looked calm and was expressionless. However, he must have been taken aback.

"Later, you back off first," Luo Li said softly.

"What about you?" Wen Qingxuan asked.

"Mu Chen will not give up. I will stay by him to the end," Luo Li said firmly and smiled.

"The power of the Ancient Dragonhawk is comparable to Grade Four Sovereign. Even if you join forces with Mu Chen, it is impossible for you to defeat it." Wen Qingxuan said anxiously, "Just forget it. This is just a competition. Everyone knows that Ji Xuan is trying to cheat. This power is not cultivated by him.

"He would have been defeated by Mu Chen if they fought based only on their abilities!"

Luo Li shook her head and said with a smile, "Do you think Mu Chen will back out?"

Wen Qingxuan was at a loss for words. She knew about the feud between Mu Chen and Ji Xuan. Although Mu Chen looked mild, he was extremely stubborn. Even if he knew that he would lose to Ji Xuan, he would not admit defeat.

"Silly guy." Wen Qingxuan sighed. However, she must admit that Mu Chen had character when he was stubborn.

Wen Qingxuan gritted her teeth and said, "Let's do it together then!" She had recuperated and regained much of her strength.

Luo Li was shocked and looked at Wen Qingxuan. She had not expected Wen Qingxuan to join them in this fight, in which they did not have much confidence in winning.

Wen Qingxuan blushed when Luo Li looked at her. She quickly said, "Mu Chen has helped me earlier. I am not an ungrateful person."

Luo Li smiled and looked thoughtfully at her. However, she did not say another word and just nodded.

There was not much uproar. The disciples were shocked by the Ancient Dragonhawk and their mouths hung wide open. The degree of oppression had surpassed their limits. They knew that this level was something beyond their ability, at least for the moment.

The people from the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy were silent as well. Many of them looked pale and lost the joy they had earlier.

As the people looked at the sky in shock, Ji Xuan turned his neck lazily. Crackling sounds were heard. He lifted up his face and stared at Mu Chen, and said with a smile, "Are you disappointed?"

Mu Chen was expressionless. He slowly clenched his fists.

The Ancient Dragonhawk that was behind Ji Xuan looked at Mu Chen with hostility. It was not bothered by Mu Chen's strength. It shifted its gaze to Ji Xuan and said coldly, "Is it because of this fella that you have

summoned me? Ji Xuan, do you know that the more you use me, the more I can eat you up?"

Upon hearing this, Ji Xuan smiled and said, "I hope that you can take over my physique before I surpass you.

"But, before that, we are bound together for good or ill. So, please help me finish off this guy."

"I will grant you your wish." The Ancient Dragonhawk looked ferocious. Its eyes were glittering and it laughed creepily. As it flapped its wings, it turned into a streamer and dashed into Ji Xuan's body.

Swish! Swish!

The wings behind Ji Xuan instantly expanded to about 100 feet. His hands became sharp and the purple nails were like daggers. A horrifying spiritual energy windstorm whizzed in the surroundings, and tore the heavens and earth apart. The degree of the spiritual energy fluctuation had reached the Sovereign-level.

Ji Xuan could feel the power in his body and he enjoyed it. His eyes turned sharp like an eagle. He lifted up his head and smiled at Mu Chen. As he flapped the wings, a dark purple spiritual energy windstorm swept out and a peerless force shot toward Mu Chen.

Mu Chen looked grave. He clenched his fists and the Great Meru Demonic Pillar shot up and smashed down hard.

Dong!

The spiritual energy windstorm hit the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. It shook and was thrown back. Mu Chen threw out a blow, but the power shot back at him and caused severe pain in his arms. The web between his thumbs and forefingers tore apart and blood flowed out. He would have been killed if not for his tough physique.

"You are just like an ant to me now." Ji Xuan sneered at Mu Chen. Upon saying this, the wind shrieked behind him, but Ji Xuan did not bother to look. With a backhand, he threw out a blow and a space warp formed. Purple spiritual energy swirled out like a serpent.

Dong!

There was a hollow sound and two ladies were thrown back. They were Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan, who were trying to help Mu Chen. However, judging from the situation, they were no match for Ji Xuan.

Swoosh!

Ji Xuan flapped the wings and multiple afterimages appeared. Before Mu Chen could react, a sharp formidable blow landed on his shoulder.

Bam!

His body was thrown backward and blood was spewing out from his mouth.

"You are so slow."

Mu Chen had just managed to find his balance when a gloomy voice sounded from behind him. Following that, another blow landed on his body.

Pom!

Mu Chen landed heavily on the ground. He wiped off the blood from the corner of his mouth and looked pathetic. However, even if he was on the losing end, he did not show any sign of fear or have any intention of retreating.

"Brother Mu, forget it..." As the people of the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy watched Mu Chen, some of the girls started to weep. Mu Chen had always been full of confidence and warmth at the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. They had never seen him in such a sorry state.

The disciples of the other Academies did not say a word. However, they were filled with admiration for Mu Chen. Regardless of the outcome, Mu Chen had gained their respect with his determination and perseverance.

Mu Chen stood among the rubble and looked extremely pathetic. He wiped the blood from his mouth with his shivering hand. He looked savage. Even if he were to fall, he would pull Ji Xuan along with him!

"Let's see who is more ruthless..."

Mu Chen laughed bitterly. He struggled from among the rubble and stood up. As he was about to strike, his body suddenly froze. A familiar sleepy voice sounded from his heart.

"Tsk tsk, little Mu Chen, you are useless. How can you be bashed up by the shaggy bird?"

Mu Chen was stunned upon hearing the familiar voice. He could not believe his ears and started to rub them.

The voice belonged to Nine Nether, who had been evolving!

Chapter 630: The Power of Nine Nether

Mu Chen was stunned for a moment when he heard the voice. After a while, he recollected himself and muttered in disbelief, "You... Nine Nether? Have you come around?"

However, there was no reply. His heart sank. Is this an illusion?

"Hahaha, you seem to have missed me." As Mu Chen was feeling disappointed, a playful laughter sounded again.

Mu Chen rolled his eyes and heaved a sigh of relief. Nine Nether had slept for about two years, and now finally, had come around...

"You have finally awakened," Mu Chen said and smiled wryly.

"What to do? You are about to lose your life. I do not want to die with you on the day that I have completed evolving," Nine Nether said with a smile.

Mu Chen curled his lips. His relationship with Nine Nether was extremely complex. They had been bound by bloodline. To a certain degree, they had an extremely intimate relationship. Although most of the time Nine Nether was in a deep sleep, they were very close to each other.

"Looks like you are having a serious problem." Nine Nether smiled. Although they were communicating inwardly, Mu Chen could sense a picture flashing across his heart. A girl in black was sitting on a huge black egg that had cracked, gently shaking her long slender legs. She tore a piece of eggshell and put it into her mouth. She looked wild and beautiful, and was basking in her eggshells.

"It is an Ancient Dragonhawk. Its strength is at Grade Four Sovereign."

Mu Chen nodded and asked softly, "Are you able to handle it?"

Nine Nether rested her palms on her cheeks and said lazily, "It is just a shaggy bird that is unable to transform itself. It is able to reach the Sovereign-level simply because it has lived a long time. But, Spiritual Beasts are still spiritual beasts. It is unable to evolve and it basically stops here."

"Which rank are you now in the Sovereign-level?" Mu Chen asked cautiously.

"Hmm, around Grade Four," Nine Nether said and smiled.

"Grade Four Sovereign?" Mu Chen gasped and was stunned. The Ancient Dragonhawk had cultivated for so many years to reach Grade Four Sovereign. However, Nine Nether had gone into a deep sleep for less than two years, and she had advanced to such a high level. He could vividly recall that before Nine Nether had completely evolved, her strength was comparable to his.

"I am the most extraordinary talent in my Nine Netherbird Clan in these 1,000 years. My blood is the purest. Don't you ever compare me to the shaggy bird," Nine Nether said lazily. She did not find it shocking, just as a matter-of-fact.

Mu Chen kept mum. If he had said it out loud, those people who had thought highly of themselves would not have been able to take it.

"This fella is also at Grade Four Sovereign... can you handle it?" Mu Chen asked.

"Under the same rank, a divine beast triumphs over a spiritual beast," Nine Nether said casually.

"Powerful!" Mu Chen said with admiration.

"I will lend you my power for the time being. It depends on how much you can take." Nine Nether swallowed the last piece of eggshell and gently patted her hands. She formed a seal with her hands and purple flame swirled out. A terrifying spiritual energy fluctuation exploded.

Mu Chen stood motionless on the collapsed battle stage. He looked dazed as he was communicating inwardly with Nine Nether.

"It seems like you have given up."

Ji Xuan stood in the air and slanted his head to look at Mu Chen. He said with a smile, "In this case, I shall let you experience what it is like to be devastated. The confidence that you have shall no longer exist."

Upon saying this, Ji Xuan looked even more vicious and ruthless. He stepped forth and his ghostly figure appeared before Mu Chen. He laughed softly and lifted his sharp nails, which were filled with purple lights. He tore the space apart and pointed his sharp nails at Mu Chen's heart.

This was a venomous attack.

Many disciples could not bear the sight and looked away. The disciples from the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy turned pale.

"It is over!" Ji Xuan laughed viciously. Purple lights were getting brighter on his fingers, and the wind that blustered around his fingers was so strong, it could tear apart anything that came in its way.

His fingers whizzed past and landed on Mu Chen's chest with lightning speed.

Swish!

There was an abrupt sound, and those who were staring at the battle stage suddenly looked stunned.

Ji Xuan, looking vicious, suddenly changed his expression. He stared in disbelief. Mu Chen had stretched forth two fingers and gently caught the ferocious fingers that were blustering with wind. The action looked weak, but it had stopped Ji Xuan from moving forward.

Someone suddenly broke out in shock and said, "How is this possible?"

Mu Chen slowly lifted his head. His dark eyes were surging with purple flame.

"You can stop your arrogance," Mu Chen curled his lips and sounded a little hoarse. In the next instant, he lashed out his leg, which was blustering with wind. It was as heavy as a hammer. Before Ji Xuan could recollect himself, the leg had landed on his chest.

Dong!

There was a muffled sound, and Ji Xuan's body flew backward like a

bullet, causing a long scratch on the ground. He smashed the huge rocks along the way into powder.

There was a dead silence in the entire place.

The scene had caused many people's jaws to drop.

Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan, who were about to strike, were stunned as well. They stared at Ji Xuan's pathetic figure that had been thrown out. The change was so sudden that they were unable to react to it.

Ling Xi, who was outside the battle stage, squinted and stared at Mu Chen. She looked shocked and sensed something indistinctly.

Puh.

Ji Xuan balanced himself and spewed out a mouthful of blood. He looked dazed for a while. When he came to himself, he shouted in disbelief, "This is impossible!"

Mu Chen lifted his head and looked flatly at Ji Xuan. He slowly opened up his hands and a huge Purple Fire Pillar shot forth from his body to the sky.

High temperature spread over the heavens and the earth, and the ground under Mu Chen's feet started to melt.

The purple flame was overbearing.

Everyone could feel that the spiritual energy fluctuation from Mu Chen's body was getting more powerful. Within a short period of time, he had reached the Sovereign-level...

Once again, many people were taken aback.

The Chiefs of the Academies, who were watching in the sky, were shocked. They started to look grave as they could feel that Mu Chen's spiritual energy fluctuation had seemingly reached the level of Grade Two Sovereign. He was much more powerful than Ji Xuan, who had barely reached Grade One Sovereign.

"Mu Chen also has a hidden trump card." Some Chiefs looked at one another and smiled wryly. Is this the top disciple among the Five Great Academies? He was indeed powerful, and even the Chiefs felt threatened.

Chief Tai Cang looked stunned, but he quickly recollected himself. He was elated and looked at Chief Tian Sheng, who had been smiling earlier. Chief Tian Sheng now had a gloomy look on his face.

Purple flame swirled out, and there was a pair of huge purple wings on Mu Chen's back. He slowly spread out his wings, and his dark eyes had turned purple. A clear chirping sound resounded in the heavens and the earth.

"Is this the power of the Sovereign..."

Mu Chen slowly clenched his fists. He could feel the power within his body and immersed himself in the feeling. Just one move and he could easily destroy the place.

Even the Spirit Disaster was not comparable to this power.

"It seems like you have a very strong physique since you can take on so much power," Nine Nether's voice sounded in Mu Chen's heart. She had thought that Mu Chen's limit was at Grade One Sovereign. However, he could withstand Grade Two Sovereign.

"I have not been idling these two years," Mu Chen said with a smile.

"You are indeed more powerful than before." Nine Nether acknowledged it. Mu Chen was much more powerful than before. At the least, he was able to catch up with her. It would not have been possible, previously.

Mu Chen laughed softly. He then slowly lifted his head and looked coldly at Ji Xuan, who was looking pale. Mu Chen's eyes were burning with purple flame. He stomped his feet and the purple flame raged. He then disappeared into thin air.

A voice rang out as he disappeared into the flame that had swirled out.

"It is time to end this fight."

Ji Xuan was shocked and moved back aggressively.

Swish.

A palm that was burning with purple flame pierced through the space and caught Ji Xuan by the throat.

The gap was obvious!

Chapter 631: Nine Netherworld Bird

Mu Chen's hand looked like an eagle's claw. When Mu Chen caught Ji Xuan by the throat, many people were still in a daze. They were looking at the previous spot where Mu Chen had been. They now widened their eyes at the stunning sight before them.

Mu Chen stood upright, grabbed Ji Xuan by the throat, and lifted him up. Ji Xuan, who had earlier displayed great power, was now like a vulnerable baby. He looked pathetic and weak.

The entire place was in total silence. The scene was too shocking, and no one dared to make a sound.

No one had expected such a turn of events.

Ji Xuan, who had had the upper hand a while ago, was now suppressed by Mu Chen.

Mu Chen's counterattack was direct and swift.

The onlookers were astonished by Mu Chen's strength. He had reached a terrifying level that had way surpassed Ji Xuan's, even though Ji Xuan had tapped into the power of the Ancient Dragonhawk.

What is going on?

Everyone could see that Ji Xuan's face had turned red. He struggled crazily, looking humiliated and vicious. He nearly exploded out of anger. All these years, he had been invincible and had surpassed those who were of his age. The people respected him, and he had always triumphed over his opponents. He had never expected himself to be in such a pathetic state.

This was not something Ji Xuan could swallow, given his pride. He would rather die than to be humiliated.

"I will tear you up into pieces!" Ji Xuan roared. A majestic spiritual energy fluctuation surged and swirled out like a windstorm. It was like a

ferocious dragon sweeping toward Mu Chen.

In the face of such a forceful attack, Mu Chen simply glanced at it. He flicked his fingers and a purple flame swirled out. The spiritual energy fluctuation was eliminated the moment it came into contact with the purple flame.

Swoosh!

Ji Xuan pointed his sharp, curved nails at Mu Chen's eyes.

Dong!

However, before he could plant his nails on Mu Chen, Mu Chen attacked him with a powerful blow to his chest. Ji Xuan moaned. His chest seemed to cave in and blood was spewing out. Once again, he flew backward pathetically.

Bang!

While his body was still in the air, Mu Chen appeared before him. He looked at Ji Xuan coldly and attacked him with another heavy blow. Intensely hot purple flame surged on his fists, causing a severe space warp to form.

Mu Chen's fist landed mercilessly on Ji Xuan's body. The high heat caused Ji Xuan's body to turn red, as though it were about to burst into flames.

Puh.

Ji Xuan spat out a mouthful of blood and landed hard on the collapsed battle stage. He laid down there with blood flowing continuously out of his body. His handsome face was twisted, and he looked horrifying.

He stared at Mu Chen, who was still in the air. His eyes were filled with bitterness and resentment. He looked as though he wanted to chew Mu Chen up. His body was shivering, and he muttered, "How can he... how can he have such great power?"

Ji Xuan had been about to win, but the turn of events had taken everyone by surprise.

"This power does not belong to him. Moreover, he has a stronger physique than you, which is why he can have greater power." A cold voice sounded in Ji Xuan's heart, "You have borrowed my strength, but you have barely reached Grade One Sovereign. However, he has the power of Grade Two Sovereign. Naturally, you are no match for him."

"I want to kill him. I want to kill him!" Ji Xuan's eyes turned red.

"Yes, you can. Let me control your body and I can easily kill him." The cold, scheming voice laughed.

Ji Xuan gritted his teeth. Under normal circumstances, he would not have agreed to such a deal. However, as he looked at Mu Chen, who was looking down at him with disdain, he was filled with bitterness and resentment. He had lost his mind. He should have been the one to receive the glory from the people. He would not lie down like a dead dog.

He could not lose to Mu Chen!

He had said that he would trample on Mu Chen!

Ji Xuan shivered and said in resentment, "Kill him for me!"

"Hahaha, I will grant you your wish." The eerie voice burst out in laughter.

Ji Xuan slowly closed his eyes.

His body had stopped bleeding, and the disordered spiritual energy fluctuation had gradually stabilized. He slowly opened his eyes, and they were no longer filled with bitterness and resentment. They now looked eerie.

Ji Xuan slowly stood up and twisted his neck. He was enjoying the body that was becoming familiar to him. He laughed out loud and said, "I can finally control the body..."

He lifted up his head, looked at Mu Chen, and said with a smile, "Thanks

to you."

Mu Chen frowned as he looked at Ji Xuan. Although there was no strong spiritual energy fluctuation, Mu Chen felt a sense of danger. Ji Xuan seemed so strange now, and no longer looked the same.

"Are you the Ancient Dragonhawk?" Mu Chen asked.

"You are smart." Ji Xuan smiled and said, "I have promised to kill you... So sorry about that."

Boom!

The moment he said this, Mu Chen had already thrown out a blow. Purple flame swirled out, and a huge, flaming purple palm pressed down on Ji Xuan.

Ji Xuan looked at the attack from Mu Chen and said, "You only have the power of a Sovereign. You are far from being a real Sovereign." He threw out a backhand blow, and it collided against the flaming purple palm. It did not look powerful, but it destroyed the flaming purple palm when it hit.

When the people surrounding the battle stage saw it, they were stunned. They were baffled by the turn of events...

Mu Chen moved multiple steps backward. He looked grave. Ji Xuan was no longer the same. His power had reached the real Sovereign-level.

"You won't be able to escape."

A space warp suddenly formed behind Mu Chen, and Ji Xuan appeared. He smiled flatly and said, "I will let you have a taste of a real Sovereign."

He pointed two fingers in the air, and a dark purple spiritual energy fluctuation swirled out. The spiritual energy was cold and dense. It was filled with sagacity, and it was more supreme than Ji Xuan's spiritual energy.

"Form Sword!"

The dark purple spiritual energy shot forth and turned into a huge, sturdy purple sword. It tore the space apart and speedily stabbed toward Mu Chen's head.

Mu Chen backed away quickly and formed seals. A majestic spiritual energy shot forth and attacked back.

Bang! Bang!

Wherever the huge sword passed, it destroyed everything in its way. Its destructive force stunned everyone.

Mu Chen's expression changed. The huge sword was not horrifying, but it was extremely oppressive and he was unable to move.

Swoosh!

When all the attacks had been destroyed, the huge sword appeared before Mu Chen. Just as it was about to slash down on him, a tiny hand appeared from behind Mu Chen's back and gently flicked its fingers. Purple flame swirled out and burned the huge sword into ashes.

Ji Xuan was shocked and looked behind Mu Chen.

Everyone shifted their gaze and looked at the graceful figure behind Mu Chen. Although they seemed used to seeing unexpected events, they were still caught in shock.

"Who is that?"

The figure became clearer. It was a lady in black. She was pretty, and her eyes looked wild. She seemed untamable. She had a small waist, long slender legs, and she looked attractive.

As the lady in black appeared, chirping sounds resounded in the heavens and the earth. Purple flame was swirling behind her. A huge, indistinct shadow appeared. It looked like a huge black bird. Its chirping sound shook the heavens and the earth.

"That is... Nine Netherbird!"

Some of the Chiefs of the Academies muttered and looked stunned.

"It is also its actual body... Mu Chen has a Sovereign Spiritual Beast in his body as well. The youngsters nowadays are amazing."

"Are Mu Chen and the Nine Netherbird lodging as well?"

"..."

Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan were shocked when they saw the beautiful, unfamiliar lady.

Wen Qingxuan glanced at Nine Nether and said, "Who is she? Why is it that I have never seen her before? Has Mu Chen been unfaithful to you?"

Nine Nether had long slender legs, and she looked beautiful and wild. Even Wen Qingxuan found her gorgeous.

Luo Li thought for a while and said softly, "I think she is Nine Netherbird. She is bound to Mu Chen by bloodline. However, she has been in a deep sleep for the past few years."

"Bound by bloodline?" Wen Qingxuan was shocked and said, "Nine Netherbird is a proud Sovereign Spiritual Beast. How can it possibly be linked with mankind? What has Mu Chen done to it?"

Nine Nether did not bother herself with people. She looked flatly at Ji Xuan and said, "I have not wanted to bother myself with you, shaggy bird. But you are too much. Since you like to stick your nose into the fights of others, I shall play along with you."

"I see that you are from the Nine Netherbird Clan." Ji Xuan looked at Nine Nether and sneered. "Judging from the lifespan of the Nine Netherbird Clan, you have not reached maturity. Do you still dare to challenge me?"

According to the Spiritual Beasts Ranking Chart, the Ancient

Dragonhawk was ranked higher than the Nine Netherbird. Thus, the Ancient Dragonhawk was not intimidated by the appearance of Nine Nether.

"How can you believe in the chart?" Nine Nether curled her lips and said. It shared the same thought as the Primordial Nine Netherbird. A purple flame formed on her fingers and she tilted her head to look at Ji Xuan. She slowly said, "Moreover, I am not a Nine Netherbird now, but a..."

Nine Nether's eyes looked wild. The purple flame darkened, and an indescribably horrifying oppression swirled out from her body. It filled the heavens and the earth, and changed the color of its surroundings.

"Nine! Netherworld! Bird!"

That was a powerful oppression from a divine beast!

Chapter 632: Mandela

Boom!

Nine Nether stood in the air, and a terrifying oppression spread out. The heavens and the earth suddenly darkened, and spiritual energy surged crazily.

Everyone's faces changed under the oppression, including the Chiefs of the Academies, who were in the air watching the battle stage. They could have been enjoying themselves, but they looked grave. They were shocked upon seeing the lady in black with the perfect slender legs.

"It is the Nine Netherworld Bird... this lady is powerful. It is amazing that she is able to completely evolve at this age."

"A Grade Four Sovereign Nine Netherworld Bird... Amazing."

"..."

The Chiefs of the Five Great Academies looked at the scene before them. Chief Tian Sheng of the Saint Spiritual Academy was expressionless, but he clenched his fists.

Chief Tai Cang was stunned for a while, but he quickly looked elated and muttered, "This fella's trump card is shocking..."

The Ancient Dragonhawk that had taken over Ji Xuan's body looked shocked. He said to Nine Nether in a hoarse voice, "You... have you advanced from Spiritual Beast to the Divine Stage?"

The Ancient Dragonhawk's voice was filled with shock and envy. It was the dream of the Spiritual Beasts to advance to the Divine Stage. Evolution was a shortcut for the Spiritual Beasts, and every Spiritual Beast with an ordinary bloodline had the chance to evolve. In the Great Thousand World, there were some ordinary Spiritual Beasts that had become famous when they broke the shackles and transformed.

Although the Ancient Dragonhawk's bloodline was not ordinary, it was

not easy for it to evolve. Nine Nether had failed many times before she succeeded. No one would be able to understand the difficulties that she had gone through.

The Ancient Dragonhawk had tried before, but to no avail. It had tried to go through the Thunder Tribulation but had failed badly. It was nearly turned into ashes, but as it was well prepared, it managed to stay alive. After the Thunder Tribulation, it dared not try again. This was because the power of the Thunder Tribulation would be enhanced according to the power of the one going through the tribulations.

No one would be able to extend any help, and the individual had to depend on its own power to go through the tribulations.

When the Ancient Dragonhawk saw that Nine Nether had successfully evolved, it was envious. Nine Nether had not reached maturity, yet she could have such an achievement and surpass it...

The Ancient Dragonhawk's soul shivered—it could feel the oppression from Nine Nether's bloodline.

The oppression was from the superior to the inferior.

In the world of the Spiritual Beasts, the Divine Beasts were above them.

Nine Nether glanced at the Ancient Dragonhawk and said casually, "If I were you, I would have run away." She was like a queen, looking at her humble subjects.

The Ancient Dragonhawk fixed its gaze at Nine Nether. Its eyes were red and fierce. Although the oppression was pressing on it, the Ancient Dragonhawk possessed the bloodline of the dragon and was proud.

It would never run away. Although its opponent had successfully evolved, her strength was comparable to the Ancient Dragonhawk's. She might not have the upper hand. The Ancient Dragonhawk had gone through many life-and-death battles and considered Nine Nether to be

inexperienced.

"I have survived multiple difficulties, unlike you. You think you can frighten me off merely with a word? You are still not up to it," the Ancient Dragonhawk said slowly. Its eyes were extremely fierce.

"If you want to fight, I don't think you will see the outcome that you want."

Upon saying this, a purple light swirled behind the Ancient Dragonhawk, and a huge figure appeared. It was the Ancient Dragonhawk's actual body. A huge spiritual energy fluctuation raged between the heavens and the earth.

"Heavenly Dragon Roar!"

The Ancient Dragonhawk opened its ferocious mouth, and the heavens and the earth darkened. Its huge mouth was like a wind tunnel, and horrifying spiritual energy surged out. It then turned into the earth-shattering roar of a dragon.

Following the roar, a Heavenly Dragon appeared. It was mighty and bigger than the actual body of the Ancient Dragonhawk. An indescribable might spread out and dispersed the Might of Divine Beast exuded by Nine Nether.

The sound waves consisted of the power of a real Heavenly Dragon.

The Ancient Dragonhawk was truly powerful and not intimidated by Nine Nether, even though she had successfully evolved. His attacks were merciless because it knew that Nine Nether had reached the level of Divine Beast.

It could not underestimate this rival.

The entire heavens and earth quaked at the dragon's roar.

The Heavenly Dragon formed and shook its body. It tore the air apart and sprang toward Nine Nether. The heavens and earth seemed to be crushed by the array.

Nine Nether looked coldly at the soundwave that Heavenly Dragon was pushing toward her. The moment she moved her body, she was standing on Nine Netherworld Bird's head.

A loud, clear chirping sound resounded in the heavens and the earth. When the Nine Netherworld Bird opened its mouth, purple flame swirled throughout the heavens and the earth.

Nine Nether sucked the purple flame into her mouth and gently blew out.

A violet flame shot out like a stream of fire.

The void burst as the stream of violet fire flashed past it. The temperature was so high, the heavens and the earth became extremely hot and even caused the spiritual energy to heat up.

"Unperishable Flame," Nine Nether shouted.

Kuk!

The chirping sound became louder, and the stream of violet fire turned into a delicate Fire Bird, about a foot tall. The Fire Bird flapped its wings and swept across the sky.

Everyone saw the Fire Bird hit directly against the Heavenly Dragon, which was a few thousand feet tall.

The violet Fire Bird looked tiny before the huge Heavenly Dragon.

Although the two were out of proportion, the outcome was astounding.

As the collision took place, the Fire Bird turned into a stream of fire. Its force was irresistible. It broke through the Heavenly Dragon's defense and pierced through its body.

A violet flame spread out from the Heavenly Dragon's body. The flame was so horrifying, it burned the huge Heavenly Dragon into ashes.

The Ancient Dragonhawk shrieked out and roared angrily, "Unperishable Flame!"

It had been rumored that only the Ancient Undying Bird possessed the Unperishable Flame. They would not die or be extinguished. This was much sought after by the top powers. However, this flame was overbearing. Those who could not fit well with it would have their Sovereign Sea burned up if they breathed in even a bit of it.

This Unperishable Flame could only be evolved by the Divine Beasts that possessed the unadulterated bloodline of the Undying Bird. It had never crossed the Ancient Dragonhawk's mind that Nine Nether could possess such soul-flame.

Nine Nether looked calm and stretched forth her long fingers. She pointed in the sky and 10 streams of violet fire shot forth. As they intersected, they were like Flaming Pythons with a horrifying fluctuation that shocked even the Chiefs of the Academies. They then shot toward the Ancient Dragonhawk.

When the Ancient Dragonhawk saw the fire, it quickly moved back. It flapped its wings vigorously, and multiple purple dragon scales shot out and formed huge Dragon-Scaled Shields.

Swish! Swish!

The powerful Flaming Python shot forth and destroyed all the Dragon-Scaled Shields. It then blasted the Ancient Dragonhawk's body.

Bang!

The Ancient Dragonhawk's flesh and blood splattered to the ground and was burned.

Deep groans resounded throughout the area.

They were accompanied by shock.

Although Nine Nether was at Grade Four Sovereign as well, her combat force made the Ancient Dragonhawk fearful of her.

The Ancient Dragonhawk gritted its teeth and intended to admit defeat by controlling Ji Xuan's body. It was smart. It knew that as long as it

admitted defeat in the Spiritual Academy Competition, Nine Nether and Mu Chen could not do anything to it or Ji Xuan.

However, just as he was about to admit defeat, cold lights flashed in Mu Chen's eyes. He had been observing the fight. Ji Xuan was extremely talented and cunning. With the help of the Ancient Dragonhawk, he would achieve much in the future. If Mu Chen let go of this chance to get rid of him, there would be trouble.

Mu Chen would not let Ji Xuan off and give him the chance to make a comeback and create trouble.

Mu Chen lifted his head and as he moved, he appeared on top of the Nine Netherworld Bird's huge body. He sat cross-legged and closed his eyes. The mysterious black sheet of paper in his aurasea suddenly shook.

Mu Chen said in his heart, "Nine Nether, lend me your power again!" In a short while, billowing power started to surge.

The mysterious black sheet of paper was the Immortal Page. It shook more and more vigorously. Purple light patterns spread out and brightened up the paper's dark surface.

Mu Chen opened his eyes and speedily formed a strange seal, like a lotus.

Purple lights exploded, and in the next instant, an extremely beautiful purple mandala flower appeared.

"The Immortal Seal!"

Mu Chen looked cold. He pointed in the air with his fingers, and the huge purple mandala flower disappeared into thin air. When it reappeared, it was on the body of the Ancient Dragonhawk.

The Ancient Dragonhawk's expression suddenly changed and looked extremely frightened.

Chapter 633: Eradication

The huge, beautiful mandala flower petals swayed, and the flower started to bloom. Purple lights were rippling quietly but had caused a terrible space warp.

The purple lights lingered around like a screen and covered the Ancient Dragonhawk.

The Ancient Dragonhawk that had seemed ferocious a moment ago was now panic-stricken. The mysterious mandala flower had a life-threatening impact on him.

The feeling was stronger than when Nine Nether had first appeared.

Dong!

The Ancient Dragonhawk flapped its huge wings and hit the purple screen. The horrifying shockwave caused the purple screen to ripple.

The Ancient Dragonhawk had lost its mind. Mu Chen looked at it flatly and changed the seal of the lotus.

Swish! Swish!

Purple vines suddenly sprang out of the beautiful mandala flower. They looked mysterious and seemed to be formed by runes that had gathered together. The vines were full of thorns.

Swoosh! Swoosh!

The purple vines swirled out and filled up the heaven and earth. They twirled around the Ancient Dragonhawk with lightning speed.

Kuk!

The Ancient Dragonhawk shrieked as the purple vines twirled around it. Its earlier horrifying fluctuation had suddenly weakened, and it seemed to have been subdued.

As Nine Nether watched the scene, she curled her lips. She knew the

power of the mysterious mandala flower. When she had first hidden herself in Mu Chen's body, she had a bad experience with it.

Mu Chen was more powerful than before and with the help of Nine Nether, he could truly summon the mysterious mandala flower. The Ancient Dragonhawk was in deep trouble.

Boom! Boom!

The spiritual energy fluctuation surged vigorously, and the Ancient Dragonhawk sensed something was amiss. It struggled crazily to break free from the purple vines but to no avail. The more it struggled, the deeper the thorns pricked into its flesh, causing blood to flow out.

"Seal!" Mu Chen shouted. His face turned grave, and he speedily changed the seals.

Swish! Swish!

Multiple vines started to retract, and the Ancient Dragonhawk was pulled toward the mandala flower.

Although the movement was slow, it was extremely firm and was not affected by the Ancient Dragonhawk's struggles.

As it was moving closer to the mysterious mandala flower, the Ancient Dragonhawk became very fearful. It quickly said, "I admit defeat. I will not interfere in your feud with Ji Xuan anymore!"

Mu Chen looked calm and shook his head. It was too late for the Ancient Dragonhawk to surrender. Mu Chen would not show mercy at the crucial moment.

The purple vines moved faster and ultimately pulled the huge Ancient Dragonhawk into the purple mandala flower. The petals started to close up and turn into a bud. It totally covered the Ancient Dragonhawk.

Mysterious purple light patterns loomed on the surface of the bud like a mystical seal. It had sealed up all the Ancient Dragonhawk's fluctuations.

Dong! Dong!

Occasionally, the bud would shake vigorously. The Ancient Dragonhawk

seemed to be struggling inside, but it was unable to break loose.

Many people looked at the huge beautiful bud in the sky. They were in a daze. No one had ever expected the mighty Ancient Dragonhawk to be subdued...

That was a powerful Grade Four Sovereign Spiritual Beast!

Some of the Chiefs did not have the confidence to subdue it, but it had been tamed by a youth.

Upon seeing what had happened, some of the Chiefs of the Academies who were more composed became silent. They looked at one another in shock. After a while, they looked at the tall youth with complex expressions on their faces.

This youth was extraordinary.

Mu Chen waved his palm and the huge bud shot back. The Nine Netherworld Bird opened its huge mouth and swallowed it.

Although Mu Chen was able to seal up the Ancient Dragonhawk with the power from Nine Nether, he could not refine it. He would need Nine Nether to help him with it.

Given Nine Nether's strength and the power of the Unperishable Flame, she would have no problem killing the Ancient Dragonhawk.

Ji Xuan was sitting on the ground with his eyes shut. As Nine Nether swallowed the bud, he opened his eyes. His face was pale, and he spewed out a mouthful of blood. He looked depressed and shocked.

Although the Ancient Dragonhawk had been controlling his body, he was well aware of what had happened.

He stared at Mu Chen in disbelief. Mu Chen had... defeated the Ancient Dragonhawk! Ji Xuan had been able to feel the Ancient Dragonhawk because of their lodging relationship, but now he had lost touch with it. It must have been trapped.

Ji Xuan looked pale and muttered, "How can this be..." He was no longer

high-spirited and instead looked dismayed.

He could not accept his defeat!

All these years, he had been a high flyer among his peers. He had even surpassed their talents. Although he had considered Mu Chen a great rival, he had never held him in high regard. He knew that he had a powerful trump card that could suppress all of his peers!

However, he was thunderstruck by the outcome.

Every time he used his trump card, the youth would suppress it and turn the tables around.

The youth whom he had framed and caused to be expelled from the Spiritual Road had surpassed him once again.

Ji Xuan looked at Mu Chen, who was standing on Nine Netherworld Bird. Mu Chen's body was shining, and he became the center of attraction.

Ji Xuan was filled with envy and hatred. The glory and brilliance should have been his!

He was unable to accept it!

As Ji Xuan was gritting his teeth, a cold shiver suddenly ran down his spine. He saw Mu Chen looking at him flatly with a cold killing intent.

Swoosh!

In the next instant, Mu Chen disappeared.

Ji Xuan was struck dumb with amazement. He knew what Mu Chen was about to do. He wanted to eradicate him completely!

"I admit..." Ji Xuan gritted his teeth and turned pale. He had to admit defeat. If he did not do that, Mu Chen would definitely kill him, given his character.

Although Ji Xuan's pride would be hurt, he was not an impractical person. It was better to lose his pride than to lose his life. He could always make a comeback. However, if he lost his life, everything would be over.

He was confident that as long as he lived, he would make Mu Chen regret what he had done!

However, Mu Chen knew his opponent well. He would not give Ji Xuan the chance to make a comeback.

Before Ji Xuan could say the last word, Mu Chen swiftly appeared before him. A majestic spiritual energy exploded and his fingers were bursting with colorful rays. He bent his fingers and like the blade of a sword, stabbed quickly into Ji Xuan's chest.

Swish!

His fingers pierced through Ji Xuan's chest and blood splashed out. Ji Xuan's body flew backward. Mu Chen's gaze was still. He caught up with Ji Xuan and threw out another blow. He was filled with immense killing intent.

"You have gone too far!" Chief Tian Sheng of the Saint Spiritual Academy shouted angrily. He stood up in the sky and the whole place darkened. An indescribable oppression came down on Mu Chen and he was unable to move.

"Ha!"

However, Chief Tai Cang stood up as well and dispelled the oppression. He looked coldly at Chief Tian Sheng.

Mu Chen looked expressionless and was unaffected by the intervention of the two reputable people. He took the chance and continued his attack. He delivered a powerful blow to Ji Xuan's body.

The blow was overbearing and lightning surged.

Bang!

Lightning shot past and Ji Xuan's chest caved in. He spewed out a

mouthful of blood together with some smashed internal organs. His body flew backward in a pathetic state, but his look remained bitter and was filled with resentment.

Swoosh!

The bitterness and resentment were soon overtaken by fear. He saw the Nine Netherworld Bird in the sky, opening up its mouth. A stream of violet fire swirled out and engulfed him.

High temperature covered Ji Xuan's body and everyone saw him turning into ashes.

Swish.

As the ashes dispersed, a tiny light spot shot forth. It was Ji Xuan's Sovereign Sea. Although his body had been destroyed, his spirit could hide in the Sovereign Sea. As long as the spirit existed, he would be able to cultivate the body.

Swish.

However, as the light spot shot forth, purple flame landed on it and burned it up. The light spot exploded and a terrifying spiritual energy raged out.

A devastating scream resounded in the heavens and the earth.

"Scumbag!" Chief Tian Sheng roared out angrily. He waved his hand and a powerful spiritual energy current formed. It whizzed into the raging spiritual energy and caught hold of the gloomy light spot.

The current protected the light spot and retreated quickly. It ultimately landed in the hands of Chief Tian Sheng. He looked at the light spot that was now almost illusory. It was Ji Xuan's spirit, and it had been seriously injured, almost to the point of dissipation.

Chief Tian Sheng turned pale. Ji Xuan's spirit had been seriously injured and was irreparable. Even if he could cultivate in the future, he would not be able to achieve much.

"All of you are too much!" Chief Tian Sheng looked extremely angry. He gave Mu Chen and the Nine Netherworld Bird a glowering look. His gaze was so cold, it caused the temperature of the heaven and earth to drop.

Chapter 634: Champion

"How dare you!"

Chief Tian Sheng's furious roar spread across the sky. It was as if his words alone could cause the earth to shatter. The spiritual energy all around started raging, causing an immense level of pressure, as though a seal had been formed from his speech.

This Chief Tian Sheng was indeed the Chief of the Saint Spiritual Academy. Even his bellow alone was already much more powerful than the Ancient Dragonhawk.

Under the terrible pressure, Mu Chen was like a small boat in a turbulent sea that was going to be capsized in the next second. His face was filled with solemnness.

Vroom.

In the sky, the Nine Netherworld Bird quickly shrank and a charming figure dashed down, standing in front of Mu Chen and blocking the pressure for him. She stared at Chief Tian Sheng with her cold eyes. Although she could feel that the latter had an unfathomable power, no fear could be seen in her charming eyes.

"Humph, Chief Tian Sheng, considering your current position, you actually want to fight a student. I think you are really snubbing the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy!"

Chief Tai Cang also gave out an angry roar. Stepping forward, he appeared directly opposite Chief Tian Sheng. As his burly body stood in midair, he took away all the pressure from Chief Tian Sheng.

In the entire place, all the students were too scared to speak. Even the chiefs from the other spiritual academies did not dare to interfere. After all, whether it was Chief Tian Sheng or Chief Tai Cang, their strength was among the very top in the whole place.

"Humph, you are just trying the poison the well. Chief Tai Cang, you are giving him unprincipled protection. This boy is really ruthless. Ji Xian

already lost, but he still wanted to kill him!" Chief Tian Sheng said in a cold tone, his face turning livid from rage.

"This kind of battle is meant to be dangerous. Just now when Ji Xuan attacked, he also did not show any mercy."

Chief Tai Cang sneered and said, "Also, according to the rules, as long as a person does not admit defeat, the fight will continue to the end. Chief Tian Sheng, just now you intervened without a proper reason and already broke the rules. At present there are so many chiefs here, I'm afraid you have to give an explanation!"

Chief Tian Sheng paused for a while and continued in a low tone, "Just now, Ji Xian already wanted to admit defeat. But Mu Chen was so aggressive, he did not even give him the chance!"

"Chief Tian Sheng, this is not a few kids playing around. We are having the final championship round!" Chief Tai Cang said as the corners of his mouth lifted, forming a mocking smile.

Chief Tian Sheng's face went completely dark. As his face turned gloomy, the space behind him started to distort vigorously. Clearly, because of Chief Tai Cang's sharp words, he was unable to back down with good grace.

"You are just distorting the reasons. I think Mu Chen should not get the championship," Chief Tian Sheng said with a dull look.

"Impossible!" Chief Tai Cang refused to give in. With an icy expression, the space behind him similarly started to severely distort. Vaguely, it was as if a huge shadow 10,000 feet in diameter was slowly forming outside his body.

The giant shadow was pale blue all over and seemed to be emitting a chaotic mist. As it breathed, wind and clouds formed. Meanwhile, an indescribable pressure spread and the entire space became turbulent.

"Chief Tai Cang, are you trying to challenge me?" Chief Tian Sheng sneered. Around him, a shadow radiating holy light gradually appeared as well. The endless light filled every corner of the space.

The two chiefs actually summoned their sovereign celestial bodies. If they really started fighting, the tiny space would probably not be able to withstand the forces.

All the students were dumbstruck. Under those huge sovereign celestial bodies, they felt that even breathing became extremely difficult.

Mu Chen also looked at the two giants standing solemnly in the air. These were real sovereign celestial bodies. Once they were used, they could shatter the sky and crack the earth without much effort. Everyone would indeed long for that power.

While Chief Tai Cang and Chief Tian Sheng were standing in sharp opposition, the chiefs from the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy, Martial Spiritual Academy and Azure Sky Spiritual Academy finally frowned and said, "In front of so many students, you two still act without any composure. I'm afraid it will destroy the reputation of the Five Great Academies."

In the sky, the two sovereign celestial bodies that were sending out terrifying pressure faded and eventually disappeared. Clearly, the two also knew that it would be embarrassing if they started fighting.

Chief Tian Sheng's face gradually calmed down. He said, "Chief Tai Cang, I think it's still too early for you to be so complacent. On the stage now, there are still people not from your Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy."

Below, Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan both appeared beside Mu Chen. The latter heard the speech and immediately said, smiling, "Chief Tian Sheng, do you think I have the power now to fight with Mu Chen for the championship? Also, I am very supportive towards Mu Chen getting the championship."

Wen Qingxuan was extremely smart and could clearly tell Chief Tian Sheng was saying that to Chief Tang Qiu from the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy in an attempt to provoke her. Hence, she spoke right away to prevent that from happening.

Chief Tang Qiu's face was still filled with grace, but she briefly gazed at

Wen Qingxuan. Obviously, she knew what the girl was thinking. However, she could only say reluctantly, "The Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy indeed has no right to take the championship. I think we should just go according to the rules."

Chief Tian Sheng's lips twitched slightly. Eventually, he could only control his unhappiness. Waving his sleeves, he sat back. It was evident he could understand that at the moment, it would be impossible to prevent Mu Chen from getting the title.

"I quit," Wen Qingyun raised her arm and said, smiling.

Luo Li beamed as well and extended her hand.

Thus, Mu Chen became the only one left on the stage. The champion had obviously already emerged.

In the sky, the other chiefs all nodded, except Chief Tian Sheng. Looking around, all the chiefs from the other spiritual academies nodded, indicating that they were approving the final result.

"Since all of you have made your choices, let us, the Five Great Academies, announce officially that the champion for this Spiritual Academy Competition is...

"Mu Chen from the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy!"

When Chief Tang Qiu's graceful voice rang out, there was an instant of silence. Then, thunderous cheers broke out everywhere.

Even the space seemed to vibrate.

Apart from some disappointed students from the Saint Spiritual Academy, most of the students from the other spiritual academies gave out overwhelming applause and cheers. Many gazes filled with respect were directed at the slender figure on the battle stage.

Although the young man was not from the same spiritual academy as they were, the power he had displayed earlier really made them have heartfelt admiration.

He was not only the brightest person in this Spiritual Academy

Competition, but probably the best in hundreds of years.

"Brother Mu is the best!"

Among the cheers all over the sky, the most excited ones obviously came from the students from the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. Their faces were bloated with joy and their looks were full of enthusiasm as their cheers filled the place.

This was the best result that the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy had obtained in the Spiritual Academy Competition since its establishment.

At the gathering point of the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy, Tang Qian'Er's eyes glazed as she stared at the figure glittering in the cheers. Compared to three years ago, he was becoming brighter by the day and was still gradually releasing his amazing potential.

Seeing that he was becoming more famous, she sincerely felt happy for him. However, as she looked at the three similarly bright, pretty figures standing beside him, her smart eyes dimmed uncontrollably and she bit her lips lightly.

The young man in front of her was no longer that timid young boy who would grab her hands tightly and follow her shouting, "Sister Qian'Er." In the future, he would only become brighter and one day, he might even become famous in the whole of the Great Thousand World. Towards this, she did not at all feel ridiculous or arrogant...

Because she believed in him.

"Mu Chen, carry on the good work. You are becoming more and more amazing now. If Uncle Mu knows about this, he will definitely be overjoyed. You are the pride of the Northern Spiritual Realm." Clenching her little fist, a light, touching smile appeared on Tang Qian'Er's charming cheeks.

...

Standing on the battle stage and hearing the cheers in the sky, Mu Chen finally relaxed from his previous nervousness. The moment he started

loosening up, his body trembled.

Beside him, three arms extended simultaneously, wanting to support his body. But when they saw each other doing so, their arms immediately stopped.

Mu Chen did not fall down. It was only that his face was somewhat pale. Obviously, he had depleted a lot of energy in the previous battle.

Glancing at Luo Li and Wen Qingxuan, the Nine Netherworld Bird did not start a conversation. Instead, she moved her body and turned into a beam, dashing into Mu Chen's body.

"Congratulations, champion," Wen Qingxuan said, grinning.

Mu Chen allowed himself a wry smile but did not even have the strength to reply to her tease.

Looking at Mu Chen's status, Luo Li felt rather distressed. Hesitating for a moment, she still bravely extended her hand and grabbed his palm gently. The warm feeling instantly made Mu Chen slightly more energetic. He grabbed Luo Li's hand instead and held it tightly, not willing to let go.

"Oh! Oh!"

At the gathering point of the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, many students saw the scene and gave out a jealous roar. Even their eyes were filled with envy.

Luo Lu's face blushed lightly. The shy look on her lovely face even made the sky look more beautiful.

Under the countless wolf-like stares, Luo Li plucked up her courage, looked at Mu Chen and said softly, "You did it. Congratulations."

In order to reach this day, maybe he had been putting in his very best since the moment he left the Spiritual Road. Outsiders could only see him soaring in the sky but not the price that he had to pay for it, the price that made her feel distressed.

Gazing into the girl's glass-like, clear eyes, Mu Chen tightened the grip on her hand. He lifted his head and sunlight shone onto the young man's

handsome face.

"Luo Li..."

"Huh?"

"Believe me... One day, I will become the strongest in the world. For you, I will turn the world over."

On the girl's elegant face, an extremely gentle smile appeared. She nodded lightly and her hand also held on to Mu Chen's tightly.

"I will wait for you."

Chapter 635: End of the Competition

At the moment when the final champion emerged, the originally tense atmosphere also quietly loosened up. The previous battle had too many ups and downs. Therefore, when the fight ended, many people heaved a heavy sigh of relief in their hearts.

The battle had already been very exciting. If it had continued, many people would probably not have been able to tolerate it...

Because of the closure of the Spiritual Academy Competition, the light screen enveloping the battle stage and the various spiritual academy zones also dissipated. At this final moment, the restriction on the students was finally weakened.

In the sky, the huge Mirror of Judgment slowly turned with light circulating on its surface. Just then, a few figures were ejected and they landed on the ground looking ragged. They were the ones who were trapped in the Mirror of Judgment earlier.

Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong and Su Xuan landed near Mu Chen, after which they gave the thumbs up to the latter. Looking at this, it seemed that although they were trapped in the Mirror of Judgement, they were still able to watch the earthshaking battle.

Mu Chen grinned at them and then turned his head. Looking at Wen Qingxuan, who was stretching and did not mind at all that her actions made her perfect body even more attractive, he said, "After this, you will be going back to the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy directly, right?"

"Yup." Wen Qingxuan nodded. After the Spiritual Academy Competition ended, this space would be closed and all the students would return to their own spiritual academies. If they wanted to meet again, they would have to wait for the Academy Exchange sometime later.

"Why? Will you miss me?" Wen Qingxuan's eyes were smiling as she looked at Mu Chen and said, "Then you can apply to join the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy. Although the academy only accepts female students, you are the champion of the Spiritual Academy Competition. I

think our chief will be happy to open a back door for you."

In response to Wen Qingxuan's tease, Mu Chen could only give an awkward smile.

Wen Qingxuan pushed aside the hair on her forehead and said with a charming smile, "Don't worry, we should still be able to meet in the future. But at that time, I think that I will probably be in another position."

Mu Chen also nodded gently. By that time, he would have already left the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy in order to seek greater power. On the other hand, Wen Qingxuan's background was not weak. When they met again, perhaps both of their positions would have really changed.

"Mu Chen, if we do meet again, I hope that you will not look dispirited. After all, you are the champion of the Spiritual Academy Competition. Although the Five Great Academies are extremely tiny compared to the whole Great Thousand World, if you have lost your sharpness and confidence by then, I think that I will be very disappointed. Also, I will feel disappointed for Luo Li." Wen Qingxuan stared at Mu Chen. Although her tone was joyous, she did not seem to be saying it for fun.

Mu Chen fell into a brief silence. He knew that the path in the future would not be easy and it would be more difficult than the one in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. There, he could at least cultivate in peace. However, after he entered the endless Great Thousand World, he would need to bear much more.

Even though he was close to reaching the sovereign level, that was only the starting point on the road to becoming one of the top powers.

However, on the path to the top, talent was only secondary. A heart that would not be shaken by any external factors was the most important thing. Over these years, Mu Chen had experienced a lot, and if his heart was ever shaken before, it would be difficult for him to reach where he stood at the moment.

Lifting his head, Mu Chen stared at Wen Qingxuan's exquisite face and said gently, "We shall see."

Wen Qingxuan's beautiful face was filled with a smile. Nodding, she said, "If you do not disappoint me at that time, maybe I can consider changing my boyfriend."

As she spoke, her teasing look switched between Luo Li and Mu Chen.

Luo Li glanced at her with a helpless look.

"Brother Mu Chen, congratulations."

As they talked, Wu Ling and Wu Yingying from the Martial Spiritual Academy, as well as Wen Busheng and the other teams, came over to give their congratulations. Mu Chen also had a good impression towards them and his face was filled with happiness. All of them knew that after they parted from the place, it would be uncertain when they could next meet. That was because the spiritual academy was only a stop along their cultivation journeys. In the future, they would all enter the wonderful Great Thousand World that everyone longed for.

By then, everyone would probably have different states of mind and it would be difficult to remain as pure as they were at this moment. Thus, Mu Chen really cherished these friends whom he gained through fighting.

Wu Ling, Wen Busheng and the rest gazed at Mu Chen with complicated looks. In the first place, nobody would have imagined that the final champion of the Spiritual Academy Competition was not the most famous Ji Xuan and also not Wen Qingxuan whose reputation had similarly spread far, but a young man who was really a dark horse...

When Ji Xuan and Xie Tianhe teamed up and caused Mu Chen to be trapped in the Mirror of Judgement, they all felt somewhat sorry for him. However, unexpectedly, the fierce young man actually made his way out and turned the fight around. In the end, he even managed to mightily defeat Ji Xuan.

In addition, the attacks Mu Chen used against Ji Xuan towards the end also made them feel slightly frightened. Although the young man usually looked harmless, when he really wanted to kill someone, he was indeed like a god killer and would not hesitate at all when attacking.

Wu Ling and Wen Busheng were rather arrogant, and even Ji Xuan did not manage to fully convince them of his superiority. But this time, towards Mu Chen, who was about the same age as they were, they had to say that they admired him.

Clearly, in the future, this young man would not be ordinary. Perhaps after a long time, he would even be reputed in the Great Thousand World.

"Hey, you still owe me a favor. Do you remember?" Wu Yingying stared at Mu Chen with her charming eyes and stood with arms akimbo. Still, she looked very proud, but the blush on her white cheeks could not be hidden.

"Missy, how do you want me to pay you back?" Mu Chen said and smiled.

Wu Yingying stared at Mu Chen for a while, after which she finally spoke hesitantly, "I haven't thought of it yet. I will tell you again when I think of something."

Mu Chen was slightly amused. This girl was clearly very adorable. He immediately nodded and said in a serious tone, "By that time, even if I have to climb a mountain of swords and plunge into a sea of flames, I will definitely not even frown."

"Words from a man cannot be trusted, especially when it's from a pervert like you." Wu Yingying gave out a soft humph.

Mu Chen cleared his throat in embarrassment.

"But just now you were... quite handsome. More handsome than my brother. I didn't waste my effort cheering for you." Wu Yingying's face was slightly red as she spoke frankly but her big, bright eyes stared at Mu Chen without the shyness of a typical girl.

"Err... Thank you." Mu Chen scratched his head and smiled brightly. The coldness he had when he fought Ji Xuan seemed to be completely gone.

Seeing the scene, Wen Qingxuan pouted her lips gently. She walked near Luo Li and said softly, "This guy really has a lot of luck with the ladies. After you leave, he will definitely get to know a lot more girls. You are really not worried? I suggest that you may as well kick him away early and

come with me."

Wen Qingxuan's voice was deliberately kept low but just high enough for Mu Chen to hear. Mu Chen's eyelids twitched uncontrollably while Luo Li could only roll her eyes, slightly displeased.

Wen Qingxuan looked at Mu Chen mischievously. While Luo Li was talking to Shen Cangsheng and the rest, she walked near Mu Chen and glanced at the direction where the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy students were. "But you have a friend at our Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy. You don't want to go and see her?"

"Sister Qian'Er?" Hearing that, Mu Chen first paused for a while, and then joy filled his eyes. He similarly looked at the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy zone, where he saw a young lady in a light green dress standing elegantly and staring at him with those intelligent eyes.

Through the years, the lady was slowly becoming more and more mature and radiant. Even though she was just standing quietly among the many fair ladies, she was still very enticing.

Noticing that Mu Chen was looking in her direction, a gentle smile appeared on Tang Qian'Er's snow white face.

Moving his body, Mu Chen dashed directly into the countless pretty ladies in the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy and went to Tang Qian'Er. Beaming, he said, "Sister Qian'Er, it has been a long time."

The young lady still had ponytails which fell gently over her thin waist. She looked at Mu Chen, grinning. With her hands at her back, her body leaned forward slightly and a mischievous smile appeared on her adorable face. "Looks like you are having a good time now."

"Sister Qian'Er, you are becoming more and more pretty. Unfortunately, you are at the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy. If you were at our Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, people would break their necks trying to chase you." Mu Chen looked at Tang Qian'Er. The lady at the moment was becoming increasingly attractive. Because her body was leaning forward unintentionally, the shape of her body was even more pronounced. Judging from her appearance and disposition, if she was in

the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, she would certainly have more admirers than Su Xuan.

"You dare to make fun of me." Tang Qian'Er blushed slightly as she raised her tiny fist at Mu Chen as if she were angry.

Mu Chen smiled and said, "Are you doing well in the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy?"

"No, because she kept thinking about a heartbreaker!" Off to the side, a few young ladies laughed. They seemed to be friends of Tang Qian'Er's and were staring curiously at the brightest young man in all the spiritual academies.

Tang Qian'Er's face instantly turned red. She stared at those ladies with a knife-like look and they quickly ran away, laughing.

Mu Chen gave a dry laugh. Looking at Tang Qian'Er's smart eyes, he did not know what to say.

"Congratulations." Tang Qian'Er, however, did not say anything else on this ambivalent topic. Smiling, she continued, "I think that if Uncle Mu knows about this, he will definitely feel very happy and proud."

Mu Chen also smiled warmly. He missed his father, too.

"Is she the girl that you always liked?" Tang Qian'Er said softly and suddenly turned to look at Luo Li, who was in the distance.

Staring back at Tang Qian'Er, Mu Chen nodded gently.

"She is very outstanding, very beautiful." Tang Qian'Er's long eyelashes blinked lightly as she put on a touching smile.

"Thank you." Mu Chen beamed.

Tang Qian'Er lowered her head and her thin toe gently scratched the ground. After a while, she suddenly raised her head and said, "Actually, I somewhat regret coming to the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy..."

Mu Chen scratched his head but did not dare to continue on the topic. After all, he and Tang Qian'Er grew up together and the two were extremely close. However, all along he did not take the relationship to be a

romantic one.

"Mu Chen..."

Tang Qian'Er's smart eyes appeared to be particularly bright at the moment. It was as if she had figured out something. The smile on her cheeks also turned increasingly charming.

"I will work very hard in the future as well. I will catch up to you!"

The young lady clenched her fist firmly, and the deepest resolve could be seen in the depths of her eyes. She had already regretted a decision once, and did not want to keep regretting. Thus, she had to work hard to catch up. At least in that way, she could stand beside him, just like Luo Li.

Looking into the young lady's eyes, Mu Chen eventually nodded gently. It should be a good thing that she had one more target to work towards.

"Then, I will wait for Sister Qian'Er to surpass me."

Mu Chen smiled heartily. Then, he lifted his head and looked at the space filled with many people. Taking a deep breath in spite of himself, his expression turned nostalgic and relaxed.

The Spiritual Academy Competition finally ended.

After three years of cultivation in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, he finally submitted a perfect answer script, even though he knew that his real path had just begun...

Chapter 636: Before Separation

The Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy

The excitement brought about by the Spiritual Academy Competition still showed no signs of fading almost 10 days after it ended. The whole spiritual academy was immersed in an enthusiastic and cheerful atmosphere.

The spiritual academy also did not stop the joyous celebrations among the students but instead allowed them to celebrate freely. Clearly, even the elders in the academy were equally overjoyed in their hearts. After all, the academy had not attained such good results in a long time, except during its establishment, when the academy was at its strongest.

After many years of suppression, they could finally feel proud for once.

...

In the headquarters of the Goddess Luo Association...

On a tall mountain peak, lush greenery filled the place. Looking down from the peak, one could see the entire Goddess Luo Association. The huge training field there was fully occupied with people.

The place was similarly enveloped in delight.

On the top of the peak, a young man lay quietly on the grass. The gentle wind blew over the grass and rubbed against his face. The lazy and warm feeling made him close his eyes uncontrollably.

He was enjoying the peace there. It was a luxurious enjoyment that could not be afforded in the half-year-long Spiritual Academy Competition. Only after the intense, extremely stressful competition could one understand how precious the moment was.

As the wind blew, a pleasant aroma was carried with it.

Wearing a green dress, the elegant-looking girl quietly went beside the young man. She stared at the smart face and her lips curved up slightly. Then, her slim fingers plucked out a tuft of grass and gently rubbed it

against Mu Chen's face.

The itchy feeling caused Mu Chen to lazily open his eyes. Staring at the jade-like girl in front of him, he also grinned and extended his arm towards her skinny waist.

Seeing this, Luo Li, however, nimbly backed off. Her gorgeous face stared at Mu Chen mischievously and said, "The whole academy is celebrating. You are the main character and yet you are alone."

"I am really too tired." Mu Chen pushed himself up slightly and leaned against a giant rock as a somewhat resigned smile appeared on his face.

Upon seeing his smile, Luo Li, who originally wanted to tease him, felt quite sorry for him. She squatted down beside him and the look from her clear, crystal-like eyes turned gentler.

"You already did a great job. Do you know... the moment you became the champion, I also felt proud of you," Luo Li said softly. The tenderness in her eyes could melt even a man with a heart of stone.

Hearing the gentle, pleasant voice, the resigned smile on Mu Chen's face also faded slowly and was replaced by an indescribable emotion and extreme satisfaction.

In his eyes, even a thousand praises from outsiders were less than the gentle stare from the girl before him.

"Luo Li..."

"Hm?" the girl replied, beaming.

"Let's hug." Mu Chen smiled and extended his arms.

Luo Li's face blushed slightly and she shook her head. "No."

"But I want to!" Mu Chen immediately jumped up. His arms quickly seized the girl's slim waist and he forcefully pushed her onto the grass, holding her down beneath his body.

Looking at the familiar face right before her and smelling the breath blowing against her face, Luo Li's face turned completely red. She raised her fist and patted him in embarrassment. "Pervert."

Mu Chen did not do anything else. Instead, he lowered his head and quietly stared at the pretty, delicate face. Unknowingly, the girl was also starting to become increasingly beautiful. Her temperament was even more shockingly charming, which caused Mu Chen to be slightly dazed. While he was growing, the girl in front of him was also gradually transforming.

Maybe sooner or later, the immaturity of the girl would disappear completely and she would become the real queen of the billions of citizens in the Luo God Clan. By that time, she would perhaps be reputed in the whole Great Thousand World.

She had advantages that ordinary people could not compete with. Her talent was not weaker than anyone else's and in addition, there was the entire Luo God Clan behind her. Sometimes, even Mu Chen could feel the difference between her and himself.

Although he had an extremely strong mother, that did not bring any substantial benefits to him but rather, many threats.

However, Mu Chen did not once complain about this because over the years, he had relied only on his own efforts to progress. He knew from a long time ago that if he just relied on such blessings, he would never become a real sovereign.

Luo Li, who had already closed her eyes and was waiting for Mu Chen to mess about, realized that the latter did not show any signs of acting indecently. Only then did she open her eyes and stare at the handsome face.

His look was somewhat dazed and changing quietly. But eventually, he still smiled warmly, his smile filled with confidence.

Seeing this smile, Luo Li bit her red lips lightly and showed a rare sight of behaving like a sunny teenage girl. That was because the vigor and confidence that Mu Chen had just displayed was what she liked the most.

"Luo Li, you should be leaving soon, right?" Mu Chen's finger slid across Luo Li's white face as he said in a soft tone.

The girl beneath him trembled a little and her glass-like eyes also instantly dimmed. She did not say anything about it, but Mu Chen was still sensitive enough to notice it.

Gazing at Mu Chen's face, she said softly, "This time, my grandfather only gave me two years. Now, the period has already been exceeded..."

Her eyes were growing more dim. She knew that once they parted, it would be uncertain when they could meet next. Although she had always wanted to be with Mu Chen, she could not do so because she was not alone. She was the future queen of the Luo God Clan, and she also had the countless members of the clan who had guarded the place for many years.

"Mu Chen... I'm sorry..."

Luo Li bit her lips tightly and her eyes were slightly red because she knew that while Mu Chen might try to catch up with her in the future, the path was filled with challenges and obstructions. She understood well that in order for an ordinary man to rise in the endless Great Thousand World, he had to pay a painful price.

There were too many geniuses in the world, and the Great Thousand World was really very vast. Many a time, some so-called geniuses disappeared before they could even be noticed.

Those who could stand out in the Great Thousand World were the ones who had undergone intense training again and again. However, many people lost their original selves in the many challenges.

Thus, if it were possible, she would prefer Mu Chen to stay ordinary. At least in this way, his face would always be covered in that sunny smile, and not be injured while trying to follow her steps.

At such times, she should have stayed beside him, but...

Looking at Luo Li's slightly red eyes, Mu Chen, however, smiled and said, "Although I want to keep you at my side, that would be too selfish. I know that you care about me, but... if you can temporarily put down the Luo God Clan and come to my side just for me, what reasons do I have to not work hard for you?

"Luo Li, I like you. Although the Luo God Clan may be too far away from me now, and I cannot make your grandfather and clan members recognize me—they may even suspect your taste and think that you only fell in love with an ordinary kid with good luck—but..."

Mu Chen stared at Luo Li's emotional eyes and said softly, "Trust me. One day, I will go to the Luo God Clan. By then, I will let everyone know that what you have found is not a usual stone in the desert, but a diamond brighter than all the other stones.

"And for that day... I will put in everything I have."

Luo Li's hand covered her mouth, and her charming eyes were starting to turn watery. However, the depths of her eyes were only filled with affection and joy. She nodded hard.

"Alright, don't just think about me. In the Luo God Clan, it will also not be easy for you. But no matter what happens, you must remember, wait for me!" Mu Chen said with a smile as he wiped away the tears on Luo Li's delicate face with his fingertips.

"I will definitely go to the Luo God Clan and find you. I will use this as a promise."

Mu Chen pulled Luo Li's hand away and lowered his head slightly, kissing her rosy lips.

They were as cool and smooth as jade.

As the gentle wind blew, the girl, full of emotion, also reached out her thin arms and held them around the young man's neck and offered her bright lips. The blush on her extraordinarily beautiful face became the nicest view on the peak.

...

In the few days that followed, Mu Chen and Luo Li stayed together like peas and carrots. At the moment, they were the most eye-catching couple in the entire Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. Whenever people saw them, their eyes would be filled with admiration.

However, they did not notice that as the days passed, Luo Li's originally brisk smile turned unknowingly somewhat dull.

Even though she also wanted to look happy, it was difficult for her to keep calm.

This slight unhappiness continued until the eighth day.

On the training platform at the Goddess Luo Association headquarters...

Mu Chen and Luo Li sat back to back on the tall rock, looking leisurely at the association members below cultivating and training. Seeing the intimate behavior between the two, everyone had heartfelt admiration for them.

Luo Li's hand was holding Mu Chen's lightly and a smile could be seen on her face. They kept in this position, until the sun began to set and its red light shone on the ground.

Suddenly, Luo Li's hand trembled slightly.

Mu Chen felt something.

Turning her head, Luo Li did a rare act of actively kissing Mu Chen's face in front of everyone. Then, she stood up and lifted her head, staring at the sky in the distance.

The space there suddenly started to distort violently and eventually turned into a huge space vortex. Everyone saw that inside the vortex, a huge shadow traveled across space. A burly figure slowly appeared in the sky, stepping out as if it could cover the entire sun.

The whole Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy was covered under that godlike figure.

Looking at Luo Li's face, Mu Chen already knew that the figure should be the ruler of the Luo God Clan, who was also Luo Li's grandfather and a superbeing who had reached the Earthly Sovereign level.

Luo Tianshen.

Chapter 637: Luo Tianshen

The space was torn apart and a huge space vortex was formed as if it were connected to another world. A burly figure appeared before the dark, frightening space vortex.

At first, the figure was incredibly large but when it appeared, it had changed to a normal size. Everyone in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy stared at the scene in awe.

It was an old man in black robes. His hair was completely white and his face was somewhat aged, but a fearsome pressure came from him. The pressure even caused the space around him to vibrate slightly.

It was as if the whole world submitted to him.

An indescribable pressure enveloped the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, causing the originally joyous place to immediately turn silent. Even some of the Elders, not to mention the students, watched the figure as their faces turned pale. They had never experienced that level of pressure. Even the strongest in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, Lord Northern Sea, never had such a suffocating pressure.

Who exactly was this person who appeared suddenly? He was actually so strong.

In the distance, the space vortex wriggled. After the godlike old man in black robes emerged, some light spots appeared in the vortex, followed by some low, beastly roars.

After that, everyone saw that about a hundred giant cranes, which were silver all over their bodies and had violent thunderbolts circling around them, flapped their lightning wings and passed through the space vortex, eventually floating quietly behind the man in black robes.

Only at that moment did everyone notice that on each lightning crane, a knight in silver armor sat holding a silver spear in his hand. Although they were all silent, a solemn bloodthirsty aura spread from them like they were going to war. That pressure caused countless students to turn pale.

Clearly, these knights on the lightning cranes had undergone many life and death fights. It was a real army, not one made up of undisciplined, disbanded soldiers.

If this group of lightning crane knights started to attack, even sovereigns would find it difficult to defend.

Mu Chen also stood up and stared at the old man in black robes and the lightning crane knights behind him with a serious expression. Those lightning cranes should be the Lightning-Devouring Cranes which were ranked 24th on the Beast Record. At the moment, so many appeared, it was sufficient to show how terribly strong the Luo God Clan was.

After the mysterious group appeared, the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy was obviously shocked for a while. However, the academy also quickly recovered from the surprise. Immediately, the sound of people traveling through air could be heard throughout the sky. One by one, the Elders in the academy flew over hurriedly, cautiously looking at the group in front.

After these Elders arrived, those in the Punishment Hall also started to be on high alert.

However, against the alerted Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, the group did not move at all. The old man in black robes standing at the front only scanned around briefly, after which his eyes locked onto a particular direction.

There, an increasingly beautiful girl elegantly stood, looking at him with a calm face.

Seeing the girl, a very slight, kind smile appeared on his dignified face. Then, his eyes turned to Mu Chen who was standing beside Luo Li.

Although they were quite far away, at that instant, Mu Chen still felt a terrifying pressure penetrating the space and engulfing him. That pressure even caused tiny cracks to appear in the huge rock on which he was standing.

However, the range of the pressure was perfectly controlled. Apart from

where he was standing, the pressure did not affect other places at all.

Luo Li seemed to have sensitively noticed something. Immediately, she frowned gently and wanted to stand in front of Mu Chen.

Mu Chen extended his hand and held her jade-like wrist. Shaking his head, he knew that if he needed Luo Li to stand in front of him for their first encounter, this ruler of the Luo God Clan would be totally disappointed in him, even though he might never have expected anything much from Mu Chen in the first place.

Mu Chen's face was calm. Only Luo Li, whose hand he held, could feel that his palm was trembling slightly. Sweat seeped out from his back, dampening his clothes.

The pressure from an Earthly Sovereign was really too terrifying.

If Luo Tianshen had a killing intent, he would be able to kill Mu Chen with a snap of his fingers.

However, no matter how much pressure his body was under, Mu Chen's face was still calm. Even though the pressure only continued for less than two minutes, it caused his body to be somewhat numb.

Therefore, when the pressure suddenly retreated like the tides, Mu Chen realized that his body could not move at all. Because his hand was using too much force, it caused a ring of marks around Luo Li's white wrist.

In the distant sky, Luo Tianshen withdrew his gaze slowly and said tonelessly, "Seems to have some endurance. Not as bad as I had imagined."

Behind Luo Tianshen, there were two Lightning-Devouring Cranes that were closest to him. Two men were sitting on top of them. They were about 27 to 28 years old, each wearing silver armor. Their looks were quite handsome and their temperament seemed to be unusual.

Clearly, the two had quite a high status. However, they did not stand too near to each other and conversation between them was seldom. It seemed that their relationship was not too close. However, aggression was hidden in their faces and they were like demons which had closed their eyes.

Looking at the backs of the two, heartfelt respect could be seen in the eyes of the lightning crane knights behind. Obviously, the two men were not that simple.

Hearing the toneless voice from Luo Tianshen, their originally motionless eyes moved slightly and looked towards that direction, their expressions turning somewhat strange.

Vroom!

In the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, a shadow soared into the sky. Chief Tai Cang appeared and looked at Luo Tianshen solemnly. Before he could speak, a familiar laughter spread throughout the sky.

"Ha, a rare guest we have here. I really did not expect that the Luo God Clan would actually come to our Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. We did not prepare a warm welcome. Our mistake." Beside Chief Tai Cang, a humpbacked old figure appeared. It was the Northern Sea Dragon from the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy.

When the many students saw the Northern Sea Dragon appear, they all heaved a sigh of relief. In the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, clearly this was the real pacifier.

When the Northern Sea Dragon appeared, Luo Tianshen also looked towards him. Surprise appeared in his eyes as he became aware of the level of the former.

They were both Earthly Sovereigns.

"You must be Lord Northern Sea from the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. I am Luo Tianshen. I came here without prior notice. I hope that you will not blame us for that," Luo Tianshen said and smiled briefly.

"Oh, you are Clan Leader Luo from the Luo God Clan. I have heard a lot about you." The Northern Sea Dragon also smiled as he bowed with his hands folded in front. Obviously, he had restrained his playful attitude and became much more serious. Although he was also promoted to Earthly Sovereign, he understood that there was still a significant difference between him and Luo Tianshen. After all, the latter had become an Earthly

Sovereign a long time ago while he only broke through one year ago.

While Luo Tianshen was already famous, he only had an ordinary reputation.

"Clan Leader Luo, may I know what is your purpose in visiting the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy?" Seeing the Northern Sea Dragon, Chief Tai Cang also heaved a sigh silently, after which he folded his hands and smiled politely.

"I'm here to fetch my granddaughter home. I think that you two will not stop me, right?" Luo Tianshen smiled and said.

Chief Tai Cang and the Northern Sea Dragon looked at each other, and then at the direction where the Goddess Luo Association was. In the whole Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, only that girl could possibly have some connection to the Luo God Clan. However, they did not expect Luo Li to actually be Luo Tianshen's granddaughter. That meant that she would be the next queen of the Luo God Clan...

"Students in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy have their freedom. As long as it is not against the academy rules, they can come and leave as they wish. We will not intervene unnecessarily," Chief Tai Cang said and smiled.

"Thank you so much." Luo Tianshen nodded and stepped forward, disappearing into thin air. The moment he vanished, the two men right behind him disappeared as well.

In the sky above the Goddess Luo Association...

The space vibrated and three figures emerged directly. Then, under the stares of countless many, they appeared in front of Luo Li and Mu Chen.

Luo Tianshen looked at the girl in front who was becoming more and more outstanding. His dignified, old face seemed to be pleased. Smiling, he reached out his dry hand and said, "Li'Er, come home with me."

Staring at the old man in front of her, Luo Li bit her rosy lips tightly. Turning her head and glancing at Mu Chen, she nodded gently but with difficulty.

She started walking with extremely slow and heavy steps. A pitiful look filled her clear yet dim eyes.

Although Mu Chen was prepared for it, when he watched her back, his nose still twitched and the hands in his sleeves clenched tightly, uncontrollably. If he was sufficiently strong at the moment, maybe no one could bring her away from him.

He was still too weak.

Taking a deep breath, Mu Chen understood at the moment that he needed greater power, because he would not want to experience the scene in front of him for a second time.

Luo Li's steps suddenly stopped. Then, she turned around quickly and ran to Mu Chen. Her thin arms held around his waist firmly and she bit her lips so hard that even some blood could be seen.

Mu Chen also firmly held onto the girl in front of him.

This scene caused every member in the Goddess Luo Association to feel touched.

Luo Tianshen only watched the scene in silence. The look of the two men behind him fluctuated as they glanced at Mu Chen. Then, they turned their eyes slightly away from the scene.

Gradually letting go of Luo Li, Mu Chen lowered his head and spoke softly into her ear, "Next time, I will not let anyone take you away from me. Anyone!"

His voice was soft and slow but firm. It sounded so unquestionable that anyone hearing it would be moved.

Tears started to form in Luo Li's adorable eyes. She knew that for this one goal, the young man in front of her would pay a painful price, many times over. However, she did not say anything but only nodded heavily.

She backed off and finally turned around resolutely. Then, she walked past Luo Tianshen and did not hold his dry hands; obviously, she was still feeling resentful.

"Young Clan Leader."

The two men standing behind Luo Tianshen smiled at Luo Li. Bowing, they clenched their fists and put them at their chest, and said, "Your knights await your return."

Waving their hands, three bright Lightning-Devouring Cranes flew towards them from the distance, one of which was slimmer and more elegant-looking. Moving her body, Luo Li sat on the crane.

As Luo Li sat on the Lightning-Devouring Crane and was about to leave, Luo Tianshen looked at Mu Chen directly for the first time. His old face was emotionless.

Meanwhile, Mu Chen also raised his head and stared at the old man who was supporting the last few brilliant years of the Luo God Clan. His face was extremely young and calm.

He was fearless.

Chapter 638: Conversation

In the sky, a gentle wind blew. Layers of clouds floated lazily by, projecting large patches of shadows on the ground.

Mu Chen and Luo Tianshen were in the shade. Their clothing swung lightly in the gentle breeze. At the moment, their whole surroundings fell into silence, and countless people gazed at them.

Even those who did not really know what was happening could vaguely feel that the atmosphere was somewhat strange.

In the distant sky, Chief Tai Cang watched the scene and frowned slightly. Afterwards, he glanced at the Northern Sea Dragon, who was also staring in that direction. The latter squinted a little, and waving his hand softly he said, "Don't worry. Mu Chen is a student in our Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. Although it is not advisable to offend the Luo God Clan, I will not let him be bullied by outsiders in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy.

"However... It is difficult for us to interfere with the event happening now. After all, Luo Tianshen is Luo Li's grandfather. It is perfectly justifiable for an elder to review the person whom his granddaughter likes."

Chief Tai Cang gave a bitter smile and said, "I'm afraid the old man will try to separate the affectionate couple."

"If things really go that way, it is not necessarily bad for Mu Chen," the Northern Sea Dragon said. He knew that Mu Chen was like an uncut jade. In order to become an exquisite jade, he needed some grinding.

Chief Tai Cang sighed lightly. Just as he was about to speak, his eyes suddenly turned and looked at a quiet green peak in the distance. There, spiritual light was blinking and a streamer flew directly towards Mu Chen.

On the two Lightning-Devouring Cranes were the two men who greeted Luo Li previously. One of the men's expressions changed slightly and as he moved, he appeared instantly on the path where the streamer was

approaching.

"Please stop," he smiled and said loudly, as his long, black hair danced in the wind.

Vroom!

The streamer, however, showed no signs of stopping. Instead, its speed increased and it flew directly forward.

The long-haired man squinted slightly and the aggression hidden in his face suddenly burst out. Closing his palm, a spear blinking with silver thunderbolts appeared all of a sudden. In the next instant, he stabbed out with the spear.

Bang!

In the sky, a thunderous noise broke out, and the entire space actually started to crack. A giant spear shadow penetrated the space directly and flew towards the figure in the streamer like a lightning bolt.

The figure paused slightly, after which she reached out her hand, and star-like light flickered at the tips of her slim fingers. As she flicked her fingers, the stars flew out and a very huge spiritual array instantly unfolded. In the spiritual array, a giant volcano actually appeared out of nowhere.

Bang!

The volcano erupted, and violent spiritual energy swept across the sky, eventually colliding with the large spear shadow.

Loud noise spread, and the two terrifying powers collided and raged in the air.

Brief surprise could be seen in the eyes of the long-haired man. As he was about to attack again, his face suddenly turned solemn because the space around him started to turn dim. The space distorted, and formed a mysterious and sophisticated spiritual array. The array was filled with frightful spiritual energy fluctuations, trapping him inside.

The charming figure flew forward, past the long-haired man's

interference, and appeared in the sky above the Goddess Luo Association's headquarters. However, she only stood in the air, and did not move close to where Mu Chen and Luo Tianshen were, even though everyone could tell that she came for Mu Chen.

Crash!

A shocking spear aurora swept across and finally tore the mysterious spiritual array apart. Breaking free from the spiritual array, the long-haired man stared with surprise at the beautiful woman in a white dress and smiled. "You are a spiritual array grandmaster. I misjudged you."

The person who came was obviously Ling Xi. However, she did not look at the long-haired man, but rather stared at Mu Chen and Luo Tianshen.

Ling Xi's appearance startled Mu Chen for a second. He looked into the emotionless eyes of the former, feeling somewhat touched. He knew that Ling Xi had appeared at that moment only because she did not want him to endure too much pressure from Luo Tianshen.

Although she was also significantly weaker than Luo Tianshen, she showed no signs of hesitation.

Tweet!

While Mu Chen was moved in his heart, a clear, loud sound suddenly came out from his body. Then, everyone saw a purple light ascend from Mu Chen's body into the sky. The light diffused and actually turned into a huge black bird. A purple flame appeared on its body and soared into the sky.

It was the Nine Netherworld Bird.

She stayed in the sky and flapped her wings in the clouds, bringing about a terrifying hurricane. However, she similarly hovered in the sky and did not do anything else.

"Nine Netherworld Bird?"

The two men who had followed Luo Tianshen and who were clearly extraordinary changed their expressions again. They glanced at Ling Xi,

and then at the Nine Netherworld Bird in the sky, and finally at Mu Chen.

For the first time, some surprise could be seen in their eyes. The youngster, whom they considered to be still too weak, indeed had something unusual. At least such a team would not appear beside an ordinary young man.

"Spiritual array grandmaster... Nine Netherworld Bird..."

Luo Tianshen also lifted his head to look at the scene, after which he smiled lightly. Turning and staring at Mu Chen, he said, "If you want to demonstrate your powers using these, maybe your means are still too insufficient."

"If I want to demonstrate my powers, I will do it myself in the future. They are only my friends," Mu Chen said calmly.

Luo Tianshen stared at Mu Chen, who was still composed. After a while, he nodded slightly. He was not too disappointed by their first encounter. If the young man in front of him could not even leave a good first impression, he would not give the man any chance, even if Luo Li would hate him for life.

"What's your name?"

"Mu Chen," he said softly.

"I think that based on your relationship with Luo Li, she should have told you about things in the Luo God Clan," Luo Tianshen said slowly. "Therefore, you should be very clear how important she is to the Luo God Clan."

Luo Tianshen glanced at Mu Chen and said, "In the nearly three years that Luo Li was away, the Luo God Clan has fought hundreds of wars of varying sizes. We lost tens of millions of citizens."

Mu Chen fell into silence. It was as if he could smell the scent of blood in the air and see the flowing sea of blood. That kind of war was definitely extremely cruel.

Luo Tianshen turned his head and looked into the distance. There, Luo

Li sat on a Lightning-Devouring Crane and stared at them. The old man heaved a sigh resignedly and said, "I stayed back to talk to you alone, but it's not to force you to give up Luo Li.

"You see those two?" Luo Tianshen glanced at the two men who had received Luo Li previously.

"One is called Luo Qingya. He is a rare genius in the younger generation of the Luo God Clan today. Furthermore, he does not have the arrogance that any genius should have. Over the years, he started training from the lowest level in the army and experienced many life and death situations. Eventually, at such an age, he has become the commander of the Lightning Crane Army. Even among the four great armies in the Luo God Clan today, he has quite a high reputation.

"The other one is called Luo Xiu. He is from an external branch of the Luo God Clan royal family and did not have a high status. When he was young, people even called him trash. During a war, his father threw him onto the battlefield. Back then, he was only ten years old. In that war, his father died, but Luo Xiu eventually climbed out from the mountain of corpses.

"Now, he has also become one of the best in the younger generation of the Luo God Clan. His future is very promising."

Mu Chen was silent. The two men were certainly not ordinary, and would definitely be among the best in the future. He could feel it; the two before him were even more dangerous than Ji Xuan.

"They are Luo Li's knights. Similarly, they also like Luo Li," Luo Tianshen said and stared at Mu Chen.

Frowning, Mu Chen looked at Luo Tianshen directly and said, "Clan Leader Luo, you are asking me to quit in the face of difficulties?"

"Not asking you to quit, but to let you know that all those who like Luo Li are very impressive. If you don't have the abilities to stand beside her, it will not be a good thing for either you or her," Luo Tianshen said slowly.

"She is way too outstanding, so if you stand beside her in the future,

there will always be people who dislike you. By then, you will be despised or humiliated because you are too weak. At that time, do you expect her to block those annoying people for you?"

Mu Chen went into a brief silence. Just when Luo Tianshen thought that he had stirred up Mu Chen's feelings, the latter raised his head and smiled without any signs of overexertion.

He stared at Luo Tianshen and said in a serious tone, "Clan Leader Luo, although you may think that I am arrogant and ignorant, I still want to say that..."

Mu Chen glanced at the two men in the distance who were so extraordinary, that all the geniuses in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy seemed to be overshadowed. In his black eyes, a sharp look burst out. "...by the time I am the same age as them, they will be far exceeded by me."

Luo Tianshen was stunned for a moment. He looked at the young man's bright, maybe even dazzling, eyes. Mu Chen's dashing spirit and confidence surprised him. The young man was quite brave.

"Seems like you don't agree with my theory. That being the case, I will not say much. We will verify everything with time. Whether Luo Li has chosen an ordinary stone or a brilliant diamond, I think we will all know someday in the future." Luo Tianshen did not say anything else. He knew how strong the dashing spirit of young people was. Over the years, he had seen too many geniuses, but in the end, most of them died young.

When the young man in front of him had been sharpened enough by reality, he would fully understand the difference between him and Luo Li.

By that time, maybe Luo Li would still persist, but he would give up quietly.

Luo Tianshen's voice paused for a second. He hesitated but still said in the end, "Maybe Luo Li did not tell you about this. She should be very opposed to me telling you this, but I still have to say it.

"The West Heaven War Emperor from the Great Western Kingdom... I

think you may have heard of him, and should know what this means. After all, he is a real top power in the Great Thousand World. Once, he wanted Luo Li to enter the Great Western Kingdom. By doing that, the Luo God Clan would be protected by the West Heaven War Emperor and at that time, all the crises faced by the Luo God Clan would be automatically gone. It is just that Luo Li rejected it..."

Luo Li's eyes narrowed slightly. The West Heaven War Emperor was a superbeing in the Great Thousand World who was as famous as the Flame Emperor in the Endless Fire Territory, and the Martial Ancestor in the Martial Border.

That level was too far away from him at the moment.

The young man's face finally became much more solemn. Next, he took a deep breath and his black eyes stared at Luo Tianshen evenly. He said in a low and hoarse tone, "Clan Leader Luo, today you take Luo Li away from my hands. In the future, I will take her back from your hands. By that time, nobody will be able to stop me."

In the young man's eyes, it was as if blood was flickering, like a madman.

By that time, whether it was Luo Qingya, Luo Xiu, or the West Heaven War Emperor, he would be completely fearless!

Chapter 639: Separation

The wind blew and the clouds moved, but the rigid atmosphere could not be blown away.

With his eyebrows furrowed, Luo Tianshen stared at the young man in front of him. He was somewhat surprised at the frightful stubbornness and madness that could be seen in the blood-red eyes of the latter.

The young man indeed had a very strong confidence. Furthermore, the confidence did not just appear blindly, but instead came from his bones or even his bloodline.

At the moment, Luo Tianshen finally understood why her granddaughter, who was so outstanding and had so many admirers, would like this young man.

Compared to other young people, he was indeed quite extraordinary.

However, even though that was the case, Luo Tianshen still laughed off Mu Chen's words. He shook his head, and a faint smile appeared on his stern, old face. "My first impression of you is not too bad. If you want to do so in the future, I hope that you will do more than just talking. Luo Li is my granddaughter, and as long as I am alive, I will not allow her to be bullied at all. If you want to take her away from my hands, next time, use your actions to speak for you.

"Also, it is not possible for Luo Li to wait for you forever. So, if there is a time when you feel that you really cannot catch up to her, then just give up. It should be good for both you and her."

Mu Chen also smiled and said softly, "Then, Clan Leader Luo, please help me to take good care of her. I think that, one day, you will change your opinion of me."

"Hope so. I look forward to our next encounter."

Luo Tianshen smiled faintly and finally spoke no more. He waved his hand at Mu Chen, and then he turned and left by stepping in the air.

The young man had a stubbornness and persistence beyond his

expectation. It seemed that he would not be able to dissuade Mu Chen, but that did not really matter, as time would prove everything. Time would also gradually let him understand the distance between him and Luo Li. By that time, he would no longer be that stubborn.

Watching Luo Tianshen depart, Mu Chen's fist clenched slowly but uncontrollably. Finally, he lifted his head and took a deep breath. Although the conversation was short, he felt an immense amount of stress from Luo Tianshen. Even though Luo Tianshen did not sting him with any biting words, there was still a vague feeling that the two were very distant.

Obviously, he did not think that Mu Chen could really reach a level that he would need to pay attention to.

Actually, Mu Chen did not feel any resentment towards this. After all, with Luo Tianshen's experience, he must have seen many geniuses in the past. At the moment, no matter how firm Mu Chen's words were, he would definitely not be able to change Luo Tianshen's mind.

In the distant sky, Luo Li watched with some anger as Luo Tianshen approached, and even her voice became much colder. "What did you say to him?"

"Why? You are afraid that I would threaten him? If some threatening can cause him to give up, I really doubt my granddaughter's taste," Luo Tianshen said, laughing.

"I have promised you that after I go back this time, I will start to gradually accept the inheritance of the Luo God Clan, and also take over the managing of the clan. No matter how difficult it is, I will persist to the end."

Luo Li's eyes looked down slightly and she said in a soft voice, "However, I hope that you will not interfere with his decision. He is the first person I have ever liked, and will also be the last. Even if in the future, he does not accomplish as much as you would expect, at least..."

She raised her head and stared at Luo Tianshen directly. The expression that burst out on her face suddenly like a crystal actually had the dignity of a queen. "...there's still me!"

Luo Qingya and Luo Xiu, who were standing behind Luo Li, blinked at her statement. They glanced at each other with complicated looks, and stared at the young man in the distance who was gazing at them. Their expressions became unfathomable.

On the other hand, Luo Tianshen stared at Luo Li. The resolve in her eyes caused him to fall silent. He had underestimated the affection between Luo Li and Mu Chen.

After remaining silent for a while, Luo Tianshen eventually smiled bitterly and said, "I really don't know what's so good about that kid that can actually make you protect him so much."

"If it's not for him, I will not have the courage to bear the burden of the Luo God Clan," Luo Li said softly.

"Then it seems that I have to thank him instead."

Luo Tianshen smiled, after which he walked up, gently patted the girl's soft shoulders, and said, "I do not object to your feelings towards him. But sometimes, what a man needs is not protection. In addition, I can see that although this kid is gentle on the surface, the pride in his bones is no less than anyone else's. I actually want to see if there will be one day in the future when he really can take my good granddaughter back from my hands."

"I think that grandfather, you will lose," Luo Li said and gave a faint smile.

"We shall see then." Luo Tianshen did not take it seriously. Then, he said, "Let's go?"

Luo Li stared at the figure in the distance who had been looking in her direction the whole time. Her eyes turned slightly red again. Biting her lips tightly, she finally nodded resolutely. Her hand pulled on the lightning feather of the Lightning-Devouring Crane and the latter gave out a thunderous roar. Flapping its wings, it dashed quickly towards the huge space vortex.

Gazing at Luo Li as she was about to leave, Mu Chen took a sudden,

deep breath and shouted, "Luo Li, wait for me. When I become one of the top powers, I will come find you and defeat all the bastards who dare to bully you!"

Enveloped in strong spiritual energy, his voice spread throughout the place like thunder. All the students in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy were dumbstruck.

"This kid..." The Northern Sea Dragon and Chief Tai Cang were also both stunned. In the next moment, they laughed in spite of themselves, their eyes filled with commendation.

"Ha!"

Even Luo Li laughed as she was about to enter the space vortex, although her eyes turned more red. Her hand covered her mouth and she did not turn around. Instead, she only nodded firmly, and eventually dashed into the space vortex and disappeared.

Behind her, the Lightning Crane Army immediately followed.

Luo Tianshen was the last to leave. He first looked at Mu Chen with a weird expression and then an unnoticeable smile appeared on his stern, old face. However, in the end he still gave Mu Chen a cold humph. Finally, he folded his hands towards the Northern Sea Dragon and Chief Tai Cang, after which he turned and entered the space vortex.

Shmm.

The space vortex rotated slowly and eventually dissipated bit by bit. The sky was once again calm.

As they left, the pressure enveloping the entire Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy was finally gone. This caused all the students to heave a sigh of relief and wipe away their cold sweat.

Mu Chen still stood in silence. His eyes were locked onto the spot where the space vortex disappeared, and he did not move for quite a long time.

Many nearby members of the Goddess Luo Association looked at him, but none went to disturb him. Ye Qingling and the rest also heaved sighs

and asked everyone to leave so that nobody would disturb Mu Chen.

Mu Chen stood in silence for nearly an hour. Eventually, he slowly sat down on a tall rock. Then lying back, he spread out his hands and closed his eyes.

Ling Xi quietly appeared behind Mu Chen. She glanced at Mu Chen but did not say anything to distract him.

The Nine Netherworld Bird in the sky also descended and transformed into a slim, beautiful figure. Seeing Mu Chen's appearance, she frowned and said, "You are becoming dispirited just like that? If this is the case, it is really very disappointing."

"If your understanding of him is only so shallow, your bloodline bond is really too useless," Ling Xi said tonelessly and glanced at Nine Nether.

"Huh?" Nine Nether raised her eyebrows and turned to look at the beauty who was in a white dress and appeared to be somewhat icy. She smiled, but only coldness and danger could be felt from her smile. "Seems like you have a lot of opinions on our bloodline bond."

"If I have the ability, I will definitely unlock the bond. I don't want Mu Chen to be affected for some reason just because he was tied up."

"Unlock the bloodline bond? You are overestimating yourself," Nine Nether said and curled her sexy red lips.

"In that cause, do you need me to try it?" Ling Xi said in a cold voice.

"You can come and try it!"

The two stared at each other and neither was willing to compromise. For some unknown reason, their first face-to-face encounter was filled with the smell of gunpowder, even to the extent of being aggressive.

"Enough!"

However, just when there were vague signs that they were going to fight instead of talk, a roar finally sounded off abruptly. Mu Chen suddenly opened his eyes and stared at them with a dignified look.

However, the dignity was completely useless towards the two in front of

him.

"Little one, you are very prestigious, huh?" Nine Nether moved her perfectly slender legs and walked towards Mu Chen, the smile on her face looking dangerous. She closed her palm gradually and a crack sound was actually produced.

Ling Xi also looked at Mu Chen emotionlessly and star-like light blinked at her slim fingertips.

"Ahem... You two continue." Mu Chen quickly stood up and gave a dry laugh. A wise man knows when to retreat. According to the powers of the two women in front of him, either one could defeat him easily.

Seeing Mu Chen's reaction, Nine Nether and Ling Xi both lifted the corners of their red lips in spite of themselves. However, when they looked at each other, they both gave out a humph and turned away again. They were actually unable to get along with each other at all.

"You are ok now?" Nine Nether asked.

"I am not that weak." Mu Chen laughed and raised his head again, staring at the place where the space vortex vanished. A smile appeared on his handsome face.

"Now, I am really anticipating the day that I go to the Luo God Clan. For that day, I will try my very best.

"Nobody can stop me!"

Looking at the familiar, confident smile on Mu Chen's face, Nine Nether and Ling Xi gently heaved sighs of relief and felt somewhat glad.

Mu Chen stretched. It seemed that the time he would stay in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy was soon to end. But... before that, he must make a real breakthrough.

Only when he got promoted to the Sovereign-level, would he have the right to graduate from the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy!

Chapter 640: Primitive Celestial Body

Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, back hill.

The area was enveloped in dense spiritual clouds. Majestic and vast spiritual energy whizzed through the air, and the sound of waves could be vaguely heard.

Mu Chen stood on a lush mountain peak, on which there was a stone lotus platform. It was connected to the only Eighth Rank Spiritual Convergence Array in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, and was considered to be the place in the academy where the spiritual energy was the strongest.

Generally speaking, this kind of place would not be open to students in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. However, at the moment, Mu Chen, to some extent, had exceeded three grades of the Spirit Disaster, and was already half a leg into the Sovereign level. His powers had far surpassed those of ordinary students.

In addition, he won the championship of the Spiritual Academy Competition for the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. At present, Mu Chen's status in the academy had reached an extremely high level that normal people were unlikely to obtain. The Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy would definitely fulfill his requests, as long as they were not too unreasonable.

Thus, opening the cultivation platform that was connected to the only Eighth Rank Spiritual Convergence Array was justifiable.

Mu Chen took a deep breath, and dense spiritual energy entered his body through his nose, bringing about a relaxing sensation. He sat down cross-legged. A light ray dashed out from his body and turned into a pretty figure beside him.

Nine Nether looked at Mu Chen and said, "You have basically opened up your sovereign sea today. However, your sovereign sea is empty and lacks spiritual energy. It is only a decoration."

Mu Chen nodded. When he was fighting with Ji Xuan, he could use such an enormous power only because he filled his sovereign sea with the aid of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. As for his own spiritual energy, even if all of it entered the sovereign sea, it would be a drop in the bucket.

Therefore, after the power of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar dissipated, his sovereign sea became empty. What he needed to do at the moment was to condense spiritual energy, and fill the sovereign sea completely. In that way, he would be really considered as having entered the Sovereign level.

Nine Nether sat down beside Mu Chen. Her perfect, slim legs curled slightly and she placed her chin on her knee. Then, she looked at Mu Chen and asked him in a low voice, "After you promote to the Sovereign level, what are your plans? I think that the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy will not be able to provide much help to you now. If you continue to stay here, you will probably never in your life be strong enough to go to the Luo God Clan."

Mu Chen nodded slightly. Naturally he would know that if he really wanted to become stronger, he must not stay at the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy.

"We are bloodline bonded. You should also know some of my secrets... for example, this." Mu Chen closed his hand. When he opened it, a piece of mysterious black paper appeared in his palm and began glowing faintly.

Seeing the mysterious black paper, Nine Nether's body tightened uncontrollably. After all, she had suffered greatly in the past because of the black paper.

"Have you heard of the 'Primordial Immortal Body?'" Mu Chen gazed with a scorching look at the Immortal Page in his hand and then smiled.

The Primordial Immortal Body.

When these four words appeared, Nine Nether raised her head abruptly and shock could be seen in her eyes. After a while, she slowly calmed down, but still said in a surprised tone, "The Primordial Immortal Body which was ranked fourth among the legendary 99 Sovereign Celestial

Bodies in the world?"

Mu Chen nodded gently. Although the secret was extremely important, he totally trusted Nine Nether. After all, their lives were tied together.

"If I can obtain and successfully learn it, do you think that... I can become one of the top powers?" Mu Chen asked softly.

"Impossible!" Nine Nether said without hesitation.

"I can't?" Mu Chen was stunned.

"No... I mean, it is impossible for you to learn the Primordial Immortal Body..." Nine Nether immediately shook her head. She stared at Mu Chen with a weird look and said, "Do you know what the Primordial Immortal Body means?"

This time, it was Mu Chen's turn to feel puzzled. He only knew that the Primordial Immortal Body was ranked fourth and should be incredibly powerful, but did not know much about its other details.

"The Primordial Immortal Body is ranked fourth among the 99 Sovereign Celestial Bodies. But you probably do not know that it was one of the ten 'Primitive Celestial Bodies' in the ancient times," Nine Nether said slowly.

"The ten 'Primitive Celestial Bodies?'" Mu Chen was dazed, as he did not know what that was.

"These ten 'Primitive Celestial Bodies' are the strongest Sovereign Celestial Bodies in the world. You cannot imagine their powers. In the ancient times, there was a crisis brought about by an 'extraterritorial race.' At the start, the Great Thousand World retreated in defeat again and again, and countless lower planes were occupied by the extraterritorial race, until ten sovereign masters who cultivated the ten 'Primitive Celestial Bodies' appeared, and turned the defeat into a stable situation. However, when the catastrophe ended, the ten sovereign masters almost all passed away, and five 'Primitive Celestial Bodies' were totally destroyed. Even their cultivation methods were lost. Thus, only five 'Primitive Celestial Bodies' remained. Those are the top five Sovereign Celestial Bodies in the 99 Sovereign Celestial Bodies. Even so, I have never heard of

anyone obtaining them. Therefore, the top five Sovereign Celestial Bodies have only existed as legends.

"The Primordial Immortal Body you have mentioned is one of them."

Mu Chen was dumbstruck. He did not expect the Primordial Immortal Body to have such an incredible origin.

"If you can really cultivate the 'Primordial Immortal Body,' then congratulations, you can become one of the top powers in the Great Thousand World."

Suddenly, Nine Nether stared at Mu Chen doubtfully and said, "But why are you so confident that you can obtain the cultivation method for the 'Primordial Immortal Body?'"

Mu Chen smiled gently and waved the piece of mysterious black paper in his hand, and said, "You know the legendary 'Immortal Catalog?'"

"Divine Law of the Ancient Antiquity, Immortal Catalog?" Nine Nether said and opened her rosy lips slightly in shock.

Mu Chen was surprised by Nine Nether's knowledge. However, he was relieved after thinking about her background. The Nine Netherbird Clan had a deep heritage and should have a lot of ancient books as well. Naturally, Nine Nether would also know a lot of ancient secrets.

"This piece of black paper is a piece from the Immortal Pages, which is also part of the 'Immortal Catalog.' From the information I know, the 'Immortal Catalog' has been divided into three pieces of 'Immortal Pages.' If I can get the remaining two Immortal Pages, I will get the real 'Primordial Immortal Body,'" Mu Chen said in a soft tone.

Nine Nether stared blankly at the vaguely glowing black paper in Mu Chen's hand. After quite a while, she took a deep breath to suppress the astonishment in her heart. She then gazed at Mu Chen with a complicated look. She did not expect Mu Chen to actually have such a heavy treasure.

"You... are so lucky!" In the end, Nine Nether could only heave a sigh and say in a jealous tone, "If one day, you can really gather the three pieces of 'Immortal Pages' and cultivate the 'Primordial Immortal Body'

successfully, even Heavenly Sovereigns could not defeat you, not to mention that old man."

Mu Chen smirked but then said in a troubled tone, "However, the world is so large. It is kind of impossible to find the other two 'Immortal Pages.'"

Nine Nether also pondered slightly, after which she hesitated and said, "Actually, I have a suggestion."

"Yes?" Mu Chen's eyes glittered.

"Your Five Great Academies have a special divine artifact... that thing can penetrate any barriers and sense everything in the world. Maybe, it can be used to detect traces relating to the 'Immortal Catalog.'"

"The Mirror of Judgement?!" Mu Chen's eyes grew brighter and he was somewhat excited. Although he could not know the results, it indeed seemed to be a method worth trying.

As for how to use the "Mirror of Judgement," maybe he could ask Chief Tai Cang for help.

"But now, I suggest that you stop thinking about it. With your strength now, even if you get the Immortal Catalog, it would be a disaster," Nine Nether said tonelessly.

Mu Chen smiled and did not deny it. At the moment, if he obtained the "Immortal Catalog," he would not have the ability to keep it. However, he also did not expect to obtain it in a short time. After all, even for the "Great Solar Undying Body" recorded on the Immortal Page, he could only stare at it because the materials were incomplete.

At the moment, he should wait until he got successfully promoted to the Sovereign level.

Mu Chen took a deep breath to pacify his swirling emotions. Gradually, his mood calmed down. Then, he turned his palm and kept the "Immortal Page" in his body.

"Guard me for a while," Mu Chen said softly. After that, his hands formed a cultivation seal and he slowly closed his eyes.

As Mu Chen closed his eyes, the dense spiritual clouds in the surroundings started to fluctuate and rush towards him at a shocking speed, eventually continuously entering his body.

Mu Chen's mind started to focus on the interior of his body. At the moment, waves of spiritual energy were whizzing over him with a speed far greater than that of previous experiences. Hence, in only an hour, Mu Chen's aurasea was filled with an impressive amount of spiritual energy.

The spiritual energy was so strong, that even his aurasea felt a faint pain, the feeling that it could not tolerate much more.

A sharp pain came, but Mu Chen showed no signs of stopping. Using his mind, the speed at which he was absorbing the spiritual energy became more and more violent.

Spiritual energy gushed in crazily and the aurasea soon reached its limit.

Mu Chen's face also turned extremely serious at that moment, because he knew that the next step was the most important one. Only after the aurasea was completely cracked could he replace it with the sovereign sea.

If this step failed, his situation would be very dangerous.

"Just be cracked. My sovereign road starts now!"

Suddenly, Mu Chen opened his eyes and a sharp look could be seen. Breathing in with his mouth, spiritual energy turned into a torrent and gushed into his body, eventually into the aurasea which had already reached its limit.

Due to the pressure, the spiritual energy there finally totally exploded.

The aurasea instantly cracked!

Chapter 641: Advancement to Sovereign

Boom!

When the aurasea exploded, Mu Chen's body seemed to have been thunderstruck as well. He started to shiver now and then, and cold sweat flowed down from his forehead.

His body was in severe pain, and it nearly made him lose his sanity.

Fortunately, Mu Chen was well prepared. He took a deep breath and quickly calmed himself down. After the aurasea exploded, he could feel the majestic spiritual energy that had been kept within rushing out crazily like an unbridled wild horse.

Without the constraint of the aurasea, Mu Chen lost a bit of control over the spiritual energy that he had cultivated.

If one was unable to restrain the spiritual energy, even the meridians would be damaged, resulting in a serious situation.

Mu Chen would not allow such a thing to happen.

Come back!

Mu Chen shouted out in his heart and suddenly, a tiny light spot shimmered amid the aurasea. The light spot was so tiny that it was unnoticeable. However, it exuded a powerful suction.

Whoosh.

The suction spread out and covered Mu Chen completely.

The spiritual energy that had been raging suddenly slowed down. It then surged speedily toward the tiny light spot.

Swish. Swish.

The tiny light spot was the Sovereign Sea that Mu Chen had previously opened up. It shimmered gently and accepted whatever came to it. It

seemed to be bottomless and sucked in all the spiritual energy that flowed to it.

After two hours, the spiritual energy in Mu Chen's body stopped raging. The light spot, formed by the Sovereign Sea, hung in his body. It was brighter than before.

His thoughts moved and entered into the Sovereign Sea. A vast sea appeared before his eyes and spiritual energy was surging in it. The scale was much greater than the power of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar.

Mu Chen opened his eyes.

Nine Nether, who was watching him from the side, heaved a sigh of relief. She knew that Mu Chen must have completed the step of shattering the aurasea. The Sovereign Sea had successfully replaced the aurasea. Mu Chen would then have to fill up the Sovereign Sea with spiritual energy.

This would require some time, and it was the crucial step for him to advance from the Three Grades of the Spirit Disaster to the Sovereign-level.

"If you can refine the Sovereign Pill that you have gotten from the Spiritual Academy Competition, you should be able to attain the Sovereign-level. It can save you a bit of time," Nine Nether said.

Mu Chen hesitated for a while and then shook his head. He said softly, "I would like to perfect the Sovereign Sea myself."

Nine Nether was shocked upon hearing this and said with a frown, "Are you not refining the Sovereign Pill or the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid? If you don't do that, you will need a long period of time to cultivate the Sovereign Sea."

One would need a large amount of spiritual energy to fill up the Sovereign Sea. If one depended solely on his own cultivation, he would

need a long period of time. Most people would choose to refine the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid to speed up the process.

"I have all the time in the world. The Sovereign Sea is the foundation of the Sovereign-level. I think it will be best to cultivate it myself in order to perfect it," Mu Chen said with a smile.

Nine Nether did not refute this but looked at Mu Chen in a special way. She smiled and said, "I never knew you had such insight."

Nine Nether complimented Mu Chen. His decision was shocking. Many people could not wait to refine the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid in order to advance to the Sovereign-level and have a taste of real Sovereign power. Although there was no harm to it, the spiritual energy was not as powerful as that of one who had achieved it based on his own cultivation.

The Sovereign Sea was the foundation of the Sovereign-level, thus it was extremely important. It was not easy for Mu Chen not to be tempted by power and choose the easier way of building up his Sovereign Sea.

Mu Chen looked up at the spiritual clouds in the sky and muttered, "This is because I am very ambitious."

"I know you are aiming for matchless mastery..." Nine Nether curled her lips. She looked at Mu Chen and said, "This path is not easy. You will realize that there are lots of talents in the Great Thousand World."

"No matter how tough it is, I will have to press on."

Mu Chen put on a big smile and said to Nine Nether, "This is a promise made by a man to the girl whom he likes."

Nine Nether was stunned as she looked at him. After a while, she smiled. This youth had grown up.

"I will need your help."

Mu Chen smiled at Nine Nether, and before she could reply, he shut his eyes and started to cultivate.

"You are too much. You really take me as your bodyguard!" Nine Nether

gritted her teeth and waved her fist at Mu Chen. In the end, she just glared at him and sat cross-legged nearby.

As Mu Chen went into the state of cultivation, a powerful suction surged from his body. Spiritual clouds started to seethe and suddenly, they whizzed down like a windstorm and covered Mu Chen up.

A majestic spiritual energy flowed into his body and after being refined, it went into the Sovereign Sea. The Sovereign Sea was like a bottomless pit. It devoured the continuous flow of the spiritual energy...

At this moment, Mu Chen understood why Nine Nether had said that if he depended on his own cultivation, it would take a long time to fill up the Sovereign Sea.

After cultivating for a whole day, there was no increase in his Sovereign Sea. The spiritual energy that he had refined seemed insignificant.

At this rate, Mu Chen would need to take at least three months to fill up the Sovereign Sea.

This rate of refining is too slow, Mu Chen muttered in his heart. He pondered for a while and suddenly, he had a thought. He put his hands together and formed a seal.

Mu Chen had been completely covered by the spiritual clouds on the lotus platform. The spiritual clouds gathered together and surged toward him like a stream.

At that instant, the spiritual energy in the heavens and the earth fluctuated vigorously. Nine Nether was nearby and sensed it. She quickly lifted her head and gazed at the sky.

A black light tower formed outside Mu Chen's body. When it appeared, it exuded a horrifying suction that caused the spiritual clouds within a lofty radius to surge toward it. They were like huge spiritual cloud dragons that were entering into the light tower.

Roar!

As the huge spiritual cloud dragons flooded into the black light tower, the lifelike Ancient Golden Dragon on top of the tower flew up. It then turned into a golden flame and entered the tower.

Swish. Swish.

When the majestic spiritual cloud dragons came into contact with the golden flame, they speedily evaporated. Ultimately, raindrops floated up and landed on Mu Chen, who was sitting cross-legged in the tower.

Although the fine raindrops were not as powerful as the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid, the spiritual energy was condensed. It was pure and easy to absorb.

"What a domineering flame."

Nine Nether was stunned as she looked at the golden flame. She was good at using fire, and she used to possess the Nine Nether Flame which had become the Unperishable Flame. However, the golden flame that was before her was no ordinary thing.

After activating the Pagoda, Mu Chen's speed in refining the spiritual energy became faster and reached an incredible level. Even some of the elders in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy could indistinctly feel the vigorous spiritual energy fluctuation.

Mu Chen immersed himself in the state of cultivation. He instinctively refined the spiritual energy that he had absorbed and was oblivious to any disturbance.

He did it for one whole month.

During that month, he never rested. He had refined and absorbed large amounts of spiritual energy. The energy coming from the back hill was becoming so great, not only could the elders in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy sense it, but many disciples could also feel the vigorous spiritual energy fluctuation.

Fortunately, everyone knew that Mu Chen was cultivating, and Chief Tai Cang had given instructions that he not be disturbed. The disciples were shocked by the spiritual energy fluctuation.

One month passed by quickly.

At the back hill...

Nine Nether, who had been conserving her energy with her eyes closed, suddenly opened her eyes and looked at the cultivation platform. The black light tower suddenly surged and started to disperse.

Afterwards, a figure sat cross-legged in the air.

There was nothing within a hundred feet around the figure. There seemed to be an invisible shield that not even spiritual energy could enter.

The figure sat quietly in the air, and there was no spiritual energy fluctuation. However, an inexplicable oppression spread out.

Mu Chen, who was sitting like a rock, finally opened his eyes slowly.

Boom!

The radiance in his eyes caused a space warp to form. He moved his body and appeared swiftly in the sky. He slowly opened up his hands and swifty rose into the sky!

Boom!

It sounded like thunder, and a huge spiritual energy light beam gushed out of his body. The light beam bound the heavens and the earth, and an oppression spread out.

Many disciples of the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy looked stunned and stared at the huge beam. They could feel a familiar oppression coming out from the light beam...

It was the oppression from a Sovereign Master!

Mu Chen had successfully entered into the Sovereign-level!

Chapter 642: Loaning of the Mirror

A huge light beam shot up into the sky. It could be clearly seen within the radius of a hundred miles. Everyone could feel a familiar horrifying oppression from the light beam. They had felt it from their elders when they had advanced to the Sovereign-level.

This meant that the one who possessed the light beam had successfully advanced to the Sovereign-level.

Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong were on one of the mountains in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. They lifted their heads and looked perplexed as they watched the light beam.

"This guy is abnormal," Shen Cangsheng said with a wry smile. He was filled with admiration for Mu Chen, but at the same time, he could not take it lying down. When he had first met Mu Chen, Mo Xingtian was seeking to kill him. Within three years, Mu Chen had way surpassed him and entered the Sovereign-level before he did.

Li Xuantong nodded in agreement. He felt more deeply about Mu Chen's progress than Shen Cangsheng. In order to get out of the three rounds with Li Xuantong when they first met, Mu Chen had to put in a lot of effort. He had thought that Mu Chen was not good enough for Luo Li back then.

However, within three years they had seen with their own eyes how outstanding Mu Chen was and how rapidly he had progressed. Li Xuantong had to agree that Luo Li had good taste. Previously, when Luo Li had left with Mu Chen, Luo Tianshen was not very pleased with him. Now that Li Xuantong had seen his progress, he knew that one day, Luo Tianshen would change his view of Mu Chen, just like he had.

This youth was able to surprise people with his wonders.

"I don't think Mu Chen will stay in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy for long," Shen Cangsheng suddenly said. He sounded a bit sad.

He had known Mu Chen for some time, and he had a good impression of him.

Li Xuantong looked at Shen Cangsheng and asked, "What about you?" He knew that Shen Cangsheng was proud, and he would not be tied down and stay in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy for long.

"I will go into seclusion so that I can enter the Sovereign-level. When I have attained it, I will wander around the Great Thousand World as well. Who knows? I may meet Mu Chen there. I would like to spar with him, given the opportunity, and see who is more powerful," Shen Cangsheng said with a smile. He was looking forward to the day he could spar with Mu Chen.

Li Xuantong smiled and said, "Let's do it together. I think I may advance to the Sovereign-level earlier than you."

"Hahaha, it is not easy to surpass me. Do you think that you are Mu Chen?" Shen Cangsheng burst out into laughter.

"We will see." Li Xuantong smiled and looked at Shen Cangsheng warmly. He had considered Shen Cangsheng an opponent with whom he could measure his strength and improve himself. As for Mu Chen, he was a scoundrel. It would be best to get rid of him. Li Xuantong did not want to keep receiving blows from him.

...

In the main hall of the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, Northern Sea Dragon, Chief Tai Cang, and Hall Master Mo You lifted their heads and looked at the huge light beam. They looked pleased with Mu Chen. His achievements during the past three years were a rare case in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy.

Hall Master Mo You said with a sigh, "This boy is powerful. It will be good if he can continue to stay in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy."

Northern Sea Dragon looked angry and scolded Hall Master Mo You.

"You are short-sighted and ruining his future."

Hall Master Mo You's face darkened after being scolded. He said awkwardly, "It was just a casual remark."

Chief Tai Cang laughed upon seeing this. He looked amused and said, "Mu Chen has great potential, but the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy is not able to help him develop it. He belongs to the Great Thousand World.

"If Mu Chen continues to stay with us, his strength will definitely increase, but he will not become a real Sovereign. Mo You, do you believe that in the future when Mu Chen returns, not only us, but Brother Northern may not be match for him?"

Upon hearing this, Mo You's face changed. He had not expected Chief Tai Cang to think so highly of Mu Chen.

Northern Sea Dragon stroked his beard and looked calm. He knew what Chief Tai Cang had said could be possible. This youth... had great potential. Most importantly, he possessed the desire of a top power to pursue after the path of cultivation.

Determination, perseverance, and holding fast to one's conscience...

What was most important to a Sovereign was not his talent, but having the desire of a Sovereign.

This youth would have a great future.

...

"Sister Ling Xi, has Brother Mu Chen successfully made a breakthrough?" You Jing asked happily and looked at the huge light beam in the distance.

Ling Xi sat on her heels in front of the Bamboo House. The sitting

position showed her breathtaking curves. However, no man had the privilege to see them. Ling Xi held the jade pot and poured a drink for herself. She glanced at the huge light beam and nodded casually, "I think so."

Sun'er pouted her lips and asked, "Sister Ling Xi, don't you care for Brother Mu Chen?" She was unhappy with Ling Xi's attitude.

"I don't have to worry about him. There is a beautiful woman helping him now," Ling Xi said flatly.

"Oh..." Sun'er smiled at Ling Xi and teased her, "Sister Ling Xi is jealous of the pretty sister!"

"Is she pretty?" Ling Xi raised her eyebrows and stared at Sun'er.

"She is as pretty as you... No, you are prettier!" Sun'er blurted out. However, when she saw that Ling Xi had raised her eyebrows, she realized that she had made a mistake and quickly changed her words.

"Ha." Ling Xi lightly snorted. She lifted up her face and looked at the spiritual energy light beam in the sky. She gritted her teeth and thought of the time when Mu Chen went into seclusion. She had taken the initiative to ask him if he needed her help to protect him, but Mu Chen had rejected her offer. He was unpardonable!

Sun'er stole a look at Ling Xi and was baffled. Although Sister Ling Xi treats people coldly, she is kind-hearted. She gets along well with Sister Luo Li. Why does she dislike Sister Nine Nether?

She had heard that in Goddess Luo Association, it was known that Sister Ling Xi and Sister Nine Nether were the most popular matured ladies... Although she did not know what matured ladies meant...

As Sun'er was scratching her head, Ling Xi stood up. She gazed at the huge light beam, and was pleased and proud. Mu Chen was indeed Aunt Jing's son. He should be as outstanding as Aunt Jing in the future.

When the day came, she might fall for him.

Ling Xi blushed at this thought and quickly put it out of her mind.

...

The huge light beam covered the heavens and the earth for a few minutes before disappearing into thin air. Before it disappeared, two streamers flashed across the horizon and appeared above the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy.

Many of the disciples looked in that direction and saw a youth standing in the air. He looked the same as before, and the strong spiritual energy fluctuation that had surrounded him earlier had dissipated. Everyone would have thought that he had failed to break through if not for his disposition in the air.

Nine Nether stood gracefully beside Mu Chen. She drew everyone's attention, even more so than Mu Chen. She was tall and slender, and had a graceful neck like a swan. She had delicate collarbones and a voluptuous bosom. Her long, flawless legs were especially pleasant to the eyes. Her eyes were beautiful and wild, and they sent out a message that it would be difficult to tame her.

Mu Chen looked at the people staring at them and smiled. He heaved a sigh of relief and gently clenched his fist. He could feel a horrifying spiritual energy surging in his body like a volcano. The Three Grades of the Spirit Disaster were not even comparable to the power of the spiritual energy.

He could now easily suppress a few hundred masters at the Three Grades of the Spirit Disaster.

The difference was not a matter of numbers.

The power contained pure spiritual energy. Once Mu Chen successfully cultivated the Sovereign Celestial Body in the future, it would be even

more powerful.

What a fascinating power...

Mu Chen was enjoying the feeling, and after he came to himself, he brought Nine Nether to the main hall.

"Hahaha, Mu Chen, congratulations," Hall Master Mo You and the other Chiefs said with a smile as they saw Mu Chen.

Mu Chen cupped his fist and looked hesitantly at Chief Tai Cang.

"Why are you hesitating? Just tell me what you want," Chief Tai Cang said gently with a smile.

Mu Chen looked nervously at Chief Tai Cang and asked cautiously, "Chief, I would like to... use the Mirror of Judgment. Can I?" This was extremely important to him. If he was unable to use it, it would be difficult for him to locate the Immortal Catalog.

Chief Tai Cang and the other Chiefs were taken aback by Mu Chen's request. They looked grave and their eyebrows furrowed.

Upon seeing this, Mu Chen's heart sank.

Chapter 643: Dispute

"You wish to borrow the Mirror of Judgment..."

Chief Tai Cang and the other Chiefs frowned upon hearing Mu Chen's request. After quite a while, Chief Tai Cang looked at Mu Chen and said, "The Mirror of Judgment is jointly controlled by the Five Great Academies. One Academy alone cannot grant the use of it. The Five Great Academies have to vote. If more than three people agree, you can then use the Mirror of Judgment."

Mu Chen scratched his head and smiled wryly. He knew that it was not easy to borrow the Mirror of Judgment. However, he had to depend on it to get information about the Immortal Catalog.

Chief Tai Cang continued, "Among the Five Great Academies, the Saint Spiritual Academy is unlikely to agree to it. However, there might be a chance that the other Three Great Academies will agree."

Northern Sea Dragon, who had been keeping mum, slowly said, "Let me make a trip to the Three Great Academies. They may show me some respect and assent to my request."

Upon hearing this, Chief Tai Cang and the other Chiefs were stunned. Northern Sea Dragon had seldom interfered with the matters of the Academy. He made an exception for Mu Chen.

Mu Chen was stunned as well. He looked gratefully at Northern Sea Dragon and said softly, "Thank you, Senior Northern."

Mu Chen knew that it was difficult to get an Earthly Sovereign to speak up for him. Given Northern Sea Dragon's pride, he rarely took the initiative to ask for favors from others. Mu Chen did not reject the offer. He knew that if he did, the eccentric old man would ignore him immediately. Mu Chen just had to remember his kindness.

"If you had not performed well in the Spiritual Academy Competition, the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy would not have retained our title. What is my dignity compared to this?" Northern Sea Dragon looked at Mu

Chen and smiled, which was rarely seen.

"I am and will always be a disciple of the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy," Mu Chen said with a smile.

"Great. Since you have said this, it makes it worthwhile for me to lay down my dignity." Northern Sea Dragon smiled and looked pleased. He waved at Chief Tai Cang and the other Chiefs and said, "I will make a trip to the Three Great Academies. Mu Chen, you will stay in the Academy and wait for my news."

Having said that, Northern Sea Dragon stepped forth and entered the space warp before him. The space tore apart and he disappeared within.

As Mu Chen looked at Northern Sea Dragon, he was filled with gratitude towards him.

Chief Tai Cang patted Mu Chen on his shoulder. After pausing for a moment, he said, "After this has been settled, I believe that you will be leaving the Academy?"

Mu Chen nodded.

"Might as well. You will not go far if you continue to stay in the Academy. You belong to the Great Thousand World."

Chief Tai Cang gave him a big smile and continued, "I would like you to remember what I have told you before. As long as you do not do anything against the Academy, you will always be our disciple. No matter what trouble you get into out there, as long as you come back to the Academy, we will not allow anyone to bully you."

Mu Chen looked at Chief Tai Cang, who was smiling, and he was moved. He did not say a word but just nodded.

He would forever remember this place.

After chatting with Chief Tai Cang for a while, Mu Chen left with Nine Nether for the courtyard where Ling Xi lived.

When he entered the courtyard, he saw a lady in white sitting on her

heels in front of the Bamboo House. When the lady saw him, she smiled at him. However, when she saw Nine Nether behind Mu Chen, she raised her eyebrows.

"Congratulations. You have finally advanced to Sovereign," Ling Xi said with a smile.

Mu Chen smiled and sat opposite her. He looked at her beautiful face and after a while said, "Sister Ling Xi, I might be leaving the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy soon."

Ling Xi was pouring herself a drink, and her hand shook upon hearing this. She looked at Mu Chen and nodded lightly.

"Sister Ling Xi, will you be going with me?" Mu Chen asked softly.

Ling Xi remained silent for a while before shaking her head and saying, "I will leave the Academy after you. But, I will not go with you. I have other things to settle."

"Other things?" Mu Chen was stunned. He looked at Ling Xi, who was biting her lips, and said with a frown, "Are you going to look for my mother?"

Ling Xi nodded lightly. Her expression turned slightly cold as she said, "My memory has been sealed, but I can still indistinctly sense bits and pieces of it. I intend to check it out alone. We need to know where Aunt Jing is."

Mu Chen's expression changed, and he said in a grave voice, "No, you must not do it alone. It is too dangerous! I will go with you!" Although he had not dealt with the Mysterious Clan before, he could sense that they were horrifying. His mother's strength was comparable to a Heavenly Sovereign's, but she had been captured by them. Ling Xi was only at Grade Four Sovereign. If she were found out by the Mysterious Clan, she would be in danger.

"Don't be silly." Ling Xi smiled gently and said, "Aunt Jing would rather miss you than put you in danger. How can I let you risk your life with me?

"You don't have to worry about me. I know what to do. I will not be rash. I will only be checking secretly. When I have some clues, I will get in touch with you."

Mu Chen looked at Ling Xi. She was suddenly very gentle. She smiled and spoke softly, but her tone was filled with determination.

"After all, you will have to look for Aunt Jing in the future. You will need to be familiar with the surroundings. I will set out in advance and see if I can collect some useful information for you."

She looked straight into Mu Chen's eyes and gently shook her head to signal him not to dissuade her anymore.

After staring at each other for some time, Mu Chen's heart sank. He gritted his teeth and said, "In that case, make one Spirit Seal for me. If not, I will not let you go alone."

A Spirit Seal was made from separating a small part of one's spirit to form a seal. The Spirit Seal would be connected to its owner. If the owner was in danger, there would be a reaction in the Spirit Seal.

However, as the Spirit Seal contained a small part of the spirit, if the Seal was damaged, the owner would be injured. Unless they had a close relationship, no one would hand their Spirit Seal to another person.

Mu Chen and Ling Xi shared a special relationship.

Ling Xi looked at Mu Chen's determined look and finally gave in. She looked a bit helpless and felt cherished at the same time. She smiled and said, "You are really stubborn... All right."

She extended her hand and lights gathered on her fingertips. A golden light glittered and gradually formed a golden seal about the size of a palm. It was small and delicate, like a mini Ling Xi. It even carried her elegance.

"Here, take it." Ling Xi smiled at Mu Chen and passed the Golden Spirit Seal to him.

Mu Chen took the Golden Spirit Seal and played with it curiously. He

stroked mini Ling Xi on her cheek and saw Ling Xi blushing and staring angrily at him.

She was connected to the Golden Spirit Seal. Because they were close, she could feel it as Mu Chen stroked the Seal. His action was disrespectful to her. If it had been anyone else, Ling Xi would have killed him.

Cough... Upon seeing this, Mu Chen coughed and quickly stowed the Golden Spirit Seal. He then said seriously, "Sister Ling Xi, no matter what happens, you must promise me not to be rash. I will take care of it in the future. I will protect you and mother."

"Wait 'til you surpass me." Ling Xi smiled. Although she was angry earlier, upon hearing what Mu Chen said, she became happy.

"By the way, even though you have advanced to Sovereign, you must not neglect cultivating your spiritual array. With your talent, you will be able to find the secret to the Spiritual Array Grandmaster. This is an extremely powerful skill. It will be dangerous in the Great Thousand World, unlike the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. It will be better if you can know an additional skill." Ling Xi looked stern and warned Mu Chen.

Mu Chen smiled and nodded. Ling Xi had suddenly become sentimental and he felt warmth in his heart.

"One more thing..."

Suddenly, Ling Xi turned and glanced at Nine Nether, who was standing aside. Nine Nether looked calm and did not go near her or speak to her. For no reason, the two ladies could not seem to see eye to eye.

"Although you are bonded by bloodline, it should be possible to break the bond."

Nine Nether raised her eyebrows and looked coldly at Ling Xi.

Ling Xi did not avoid her gaze but said flatly, "Don't look at me that way. Mu Chen did not know as he is still young. Do you think I don't know what you are thinking of?"

"What are you trying to say?" Nine Nether said coldly.

"You must hold a high position among the Nine Netherworld Birds since you are able to evolve at such a young age and possess the Unperishable Flame." Ling Xi sneered.

Nine Nether lifted up her chin and said, "So?"

"The Nine Netherworld Birds are extremely stubborn. If you hold an important position and they know that you are bonded by bloodline with a human being, they will be angry. Given your character, they may force Mu Chen to break the bond. If this happens, Mu Chen will be seriously injured," Ling Xi said and looked coldly at Nine Nether.

"No one can force us to break the bloodline bond."

Nine Nether stared at Ling Xi and emphasized each word, "No! One! Can! Do! That!"

As the two ladies looked coldly at each other, the atmosphere was nearing the freezing point!

Chapter 644: Search for the Immortal Catalog

The courtyard was enveloped in a tense atmosphere as the two women stared at each other coldly. The imposing auras they emitted resulted in howling gusts of wind, causing the leaves in the courtyard to blow violently.

Afraid to get embroiled in the imminent conflict, Sun'er quietly hid behind a large tree as she secretly watched the confrontation between Nine Nether and Ling Xi.

Upon witnessing the scene, Mu Chen felt a headache developing. He could not understand why the two women in front of him were always fighting as soon as they saw each other, or why their conflicts were laced with overwhelming resentment towards the other party.

Ling Xi stared at Nine Nether as she stated coldly, "Everyone knows how to say pleasant words of reassurance. If I find out Mu Chen was hurt because of the Bloodline Bond, I won't let you off—even if you are a member of the Nine Netherbird Clan."

Nine Nether raised her eyebrow as she scoffed coldly, "How arrogant of you! I would really like to see how capable you are of backing up your threatening boast!"

"Oh really?" Ling Xi's expression turned chilling as sparks of light shimmered in her slender hand.

"Hmph."

Nine Nether hmphed in disdain as a cold glint flashed in her eyes. A massive shadow that could engulf the heavens and earth emerged behind her back, emitting a terrifying aura.

However, just as the two women were about to engage in combat, Mu Chen finally shouted in anger as he grasped Ling Xi's hand, fury apparent in his expression. "Stop it, both of you! Haven't you both caused enough trouble?!"

Ling Xi and Nine Nether glanced at Mu Chen. He had not merely interrupted them this time. Instead, he was truly enraged. His usually gentle eyes became unusually harsh.

Upon witnessing Mu Chen's true fury for the first time, Ling Xi and Nine Nether's auras weakened, and with a light hum, both restrained their spiritual fluctuations.

Mu Chen looked at the two women, who looked away from each other, and rubbed his forehead in exasperation.

"Sister Ling Xi, the Bloodline Bond between Nine Nether and I was formed when we were both in perilous situations. Hence, even if there is a way to unravel this Bloodline Bond, I won't choose to do so. Nine Nether has helped me a lot over the years. If it wasn't for her, I might not have made it here.

"No matter what danger I will encounter in the future because of this Bloodline Bond, I am willing to shoulder the risk. As long as Nine Nether disagrees, then I will not let anyone get rid of our Bloodline Bond without permission." Mu Chen's voice rang out in the courtyard. Although his timbre wasn't low or deep, the determination and steadfastness in it was moving.

Nine Nether and Ling Xi's cold expressions gradually eased. Ling Xi shifted her gaze as she looked at the youth's determined and serious expression, and then quickly glanced away. Somehow, she was suddenly in a better mood.

Ling Xi stared at Mu Chen as she sighed lightly. "Since you have already said so, I shall not say anything more."

She then smiled brightly as she teasingly glanced at Mu Chen. "However, I didn't think that young Mu Chen would be so responsible. You have truly grown to be a man."

Mu Chen gnashed his teeth as he retorted, "How am I young? You are just older than me by merely two or three years!"

Ling Xi smiled nonchalantly as she lifted her head to look at Nine

Nether. Her tone gradually softened.

"I'm not targeting you specifically, but you should also understand that what I am talking about is an underlying concern. After all, if the Nine Netherbird Clan catches wind of this matter, I'm afraid they would be unwilling to take things lying down."

Nine Nether said calmly, "I'm already of age, so this is my own matter. Even my parents have no say in it. If there is truly trouble in future, I will protect him."

The corners of Mu Chen's mouth twitched as he commented, "I'm not interested in relying on women."

However, Nine Nether ignored his protests as she took her leave. She told them only to take their time to chat as she left behind her beautiful silhouette.

"What a prideful girl. Mu Chen, it seems that you still have a long way to go if you want to subdue this proud little sparrow."

Ling Xi looked at Nine Nether's beautiful silhouette as she smiled. She then lazily stretched her arms, and the curves beneath her white robes immediately became increasingly apparent.

Mu Chen shrugged helplessly.

"Come to me when you have time these days. Don't neglect your Spiritual Array Cultivation. Before you leave, I will try to teach you everything I know."

Mu Chen smiled and nodded. "Alright."

...

For the next few days, Mu Chen remained quietly in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. Most of the time, he was in the Spiritual Courtyard where Ling Xi was located, as he communicated with her about Spiritual Array Cultivation. When he finished practicing, he would celebrate and have fun with everyone in the Goddess Luo Association. Prior to this, when he was in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy he

spent most of his time cultivating, but now that he would be leaving soon, he began to feel reluctant to part with everyone.

He liked the pure and innocent smiles of the members of the Goddess Luo Association. They could ignore their identities and status because in that moment, they were all just members of the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy.

Perhaps when he began to explore the Great Thousand World in the near future, it would be difficult to see these kinds of purely innocent and happy smiles. After all, he would no longer be in a worry-free ivory tower.

Every day when the night came, Mu Chen would sit alone on the mountain and look up at the starry sky. Once upon a time, a young girl would sit quietly beside him, and she would gently lean her head on his shoulder. He loved the feeling of being relied on so much. During those times, he felt as if he had become her world, supporting her...

But now that the girl he loved was no longer beside him, that kind of feeling could only exist in his memory.

Mu Chen slowly laid on the grass. His eyes gently closed as he gradually clenched his hands tightly into fists.

Luo Li, wait for me.

...

Over the next ten days, Mu Chen remained quietly in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy awaiting the return of the Northern Sea Dragon.

Upon receiving news of the Northern Sea Dragon's return, Mu Chen rushed to the main hall immediately. He saw a smile etched on the Northern Sea Dragon's ancient features.

Seeing his smile, Mu Chen heaved a sigh of relief.

"As expected, among the Chiefs of the Five Great Academies, Chief Tian Sheng of the Saint Spiritual Academy—that old humbug—didn't agree to it. Thankfully, the three other Chiefs did agree, so that fellow couldn't say

anything." The Northern Sea Dragon looked at Mu Chen as he smiled.

At this moment, even with Mu Chen's usual calm focus, his heart was filled with excitement.

"When would you want to access the Mirror of Judgment?"

"Can I do it now?" Mu Chen asked, as he couldn't restrain his excitement.

"Alright. Now, then."

The Northern Sea Dragon nodded with a smile. He was not surprised by Mu Chen's urgency. With a wave of his palm, the void in front of him tore apart as a spatial crack appeared. He then stepped forward.

"Follow me."

Mu Chen nodded and immediately followed. Nine Nether also followed behind him.

As Mu Chen stepped into the spatial crack, changes immediately emerged before his eyes. The space seemed to be small, but it was a mass of chaos. Within this small space, a huge ancient bronze mirror approximately 1,000 feet tall was suspended quietly in the air. An indescribably terrifying wave rippled subtly, so that the space was in constant shock and motion.

There was a stone staircase in the space extending all the way out until it reached the ancient bronze mirror. The Northern Sea Dragon led Mu Chen and Nine Nether to this point, and then handed a copper seal to Mu Chen.

"Trigger this item, and you will be able to access the Mirror of Judgment. However, you are unable to use it to attack, as you are incapable of activating this Divine Artifact with your current ability. If you were to misuse it, you would get severely injured with the backlash."

Mu Chen nodded as he received the copper seal.

"I will take my leave first then."

The Northern Sea Dragon smiled as he vanished. He did not insist on

staying, although he was curious why Mu Chen had asked to borrow the Mirror of Judgment. However, he did not probe. After all, everyone had their own secrets.

With the Northern Sea Dragon's departure, the space became silent. Mu Chen lifted his head to look at the massive Mirror of Judgement as his spiritual energy surged into the copper seal in his hand.

A faint beam of light shot out of his palm and directly into the dusky surface of the Mirror of Judgment.

Buzz.

Tiny ripples moved across the mirror, and the Mirror of Judgment gradually became clear. However, the surface of the mirror had a fathomless depth, as if it were the night sky, and emitted a mysterious aura.

Mu Chen took a deep breath as he spread out his hand. Amid the flickering lights, a page of the mysterious Immortal Pages appeared in a flash.

With a snap of his fingers, the page from the Immortal Pages fluttered out, finally stopping in mid-air in front of the Mirror of Judgment.

Buzz.

As the surface rippled, streams of light flickered and transformed into a beam of light. It surged out, enveloping and entering a page of the Immortal Pages.

Buzz.

As the light engulfed it, the Mirror of Judgment suddenly quivered violently, and the ripples on its surface showed signs of losing control.

Mu Chen and Nine Nether looked on anxiously. The Immortal Catalog was indeed terrifying, even though they had used a page of the Immortal Pages as a priming source, the Mirror of Judgment nearly lost control.

Their eyes were fixed on the surface of the Mirror of Judgment, but minutes passed and there was still only darkness.

Seeing this, Mu Chen's eyebrows knitted together tightly.

"Is the Immortal Catalog that formidable, that even the Mirror of Judgment is unable to detect its trace..."

Nine Nether sighed. Indeed, it was worthy of being the legendary Primitive Celestial Body.

Mu Chen remained silent, but he stared at the scene unblinkingly.

A few more minutes passed as the disappointment in Mu Chen's eyes grew. Nine Nether could only pat his shoulder lightly in consolation.

However, just as Mu Chen and Nine Nether thought that all hope was lost, the surface of the mirror, which had remained still all the while, finally rippled violently as a blurry picture began to appear on the dark surface.

Mu Chen and Nine Nether brightened in surprise as ecstasy surged in their eyes. Had the mirror finally detected something?

Chapter 645: Ancient Celestial Palace

Ripples fluctuated on the ancient bronze mirror, and the deep and mysterious dark colors faded away like the tide. The blurry picture began to appear indistinctly.

Mu Chen and Nine Nether gazed at it intently.

In the huge bronze mirror, it seemed that there were endless continents. The mountains spread out seemingly without end. The overlooking point of view seemed to be from a high altitude, as if the sight were still rising...

Mu Chen stared blankly at the strange continents. He had no idea what godforsaken places they were.

Nine Nether, however, stared seriously at the outline of the mountains and terrain. Her eyebrows knitted together as though she were pondering something.

The pictures continued to emerge and finally seemed to transform into a continental map. The continent had an indescribable, overwhelming vastness.

Mu Chen stared at the strange terrain map and could only laugh bitterly. The world was too vast, and there were countless continents. Thus, it was not easy to tell where it was by a mere terrain map.

Furthermore, the Mirror of Judgment did not reveal to them the exact location of the Immortal Catalog. Were they going to search fruitlessly like headless flies on such a vast continent?

The odds of finding it were impossibly low.

Just as Mu Chen could not help but to force a smile, light faintly converged onto the Mirror of Judgment once again. It became an ancient palace above which the sun and the moon were suspended, and the light shone as if it had shrouded that vast continent.

Nine Nether looked at the ancient palace with the sun and moon hovering above it. Her body shook with surprise as astonishment surged in her eyes.

The picture did not last long and slowly dissipated. The surface of the Mirror of Judgment became dark again, and the light enveloping the Immortal Page also dissipated.

Mu Chen stretched out his palm as the Immortal Page landed on it and was swiftly absorbed into his body.

"We don't have any leads at all." Mu Chen sighed softly. He had no clue about the strange continent or the ancient palace.

"Not necessarily." Nine Nether, who had been staring at the Mirror of Judgment, smiled suddenly.

Upon hearing this statement, Mu Chen was stunned. Surprise surged in his heart when he understood the meaning of Nine Nether's words. Had she discovered something?

"If I'm not wrong, the continent that appeared within the Mirror of Judgment should be the Tianluo Continent, one of the ten supercontinents in the Great Thousand World."

"One of the ten supercontinents in the Great Thousand World... the Tianluo Continent?" Mu Chen muttered to himself.

"In the Great Thousand World, the most renowned would be that of the ten supercontinents, which are considered the core regions in the entire Great Thousand World. These regions are incomparably prosperous with countless powerful people, as many as the stars in the sky.

"I'm afraid that when compared with Tianluo Continent, your Northern Heavens Continent where your Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy is located cannot even match up to a firefly. In the Tianluo Continent, any top powers are no weaker than the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy."

Upon hearing this, Mu Chen clicked his tongue in shock. Even though he had known that the Northern Heavens Continent was nothing in this Great Thousand World, he did not expect it to this degree. After all, no matter what, the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy could be regarded as the ruler of the entire Northern Heavens Continent, but in comparison to those supercontinents, it was merely insignificant.

"You seem to be especially familiar with Tianluo Continent?" Mu Chen started at Nine Nether in surprise.

"Do you know where I came from before I failed to pass the tribulation?" Nine Nether smiled.

Shock and disbelief was written on Mu Chen's face as he replied, "It's this Tianluo Continent?"

"Bingo." Nine Nether nodded seriously.

"The Nine Netherbird Clan was also in the Tianluo Continent?" Mu Chen asked in astonishment.

"The Nine Netherbird Clan is not in the Tianluo Continent. I just went to the place when I first began my cultivation. Besides, I have my own territory there." Nine Nether smirked with self-satisfaction.

"You even established an influence and have your own forces?" Mu Chen was really astounded at this point.

"I didn't set up forces, but I was invited by an elder to join one of the top forces. After all, life would be very difficult if one had no background when journeying in the vast world, especially in the Tianluo Continent where there were many hidden top powers."

"Oh? There was actually a top force that you deigned to join?" Mu Chen smiled.

"At that time, I had not been successful in evolution, and I didn't even have the power of the Sovereign. The strength I had was simply insignificant in the Tianluo Continent. The top force I was in was called the Daluo Territory, but you should not underestimate it. It was one of the top forces in the Tianluo Continent, and I'm afraid that its overall strength would only be stronger than that of the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. Moreover, I am also ranked as a senior leader in the Daluo Territory." Nine Nether smiled gleefully.

"You didn't even have the ability of a Sovereign-level then, and you could become a senior leader?" Mu Chen asked doubtfully.

"Heheh. Well, I do have strong support to back me up." Nine Nether's smirk grew increasingly proud.

Mu Chen was exasperated. So she got the rank of senior leader by pulling strings? He shook his head as he glanced at the Mirror of Judgment.

"If what appeared in the Mirror of Judgment was the Tianluo Continent, then what about the silhouette of the palace with the sun and the moon that appeared later? What does that mean?"

Nine Nether's eyebrows knitted together as she pondered for a moment before stating slowly, "I have heard a rumor in the Tianluo Continent, that there is an Ancient Celestial Palace hidden there. Its owner is said to be a Sovereign Existence who could move heavens and earth in primordial times, and even the Heavenly Sovereign could not compare to this figure."

Mu Chen's expression changed in shock. Even the Heavenly Sovereign could not match up to this person? How terrifying is this figure?

"Rumor has it that within the Celestial Palace, there is the existence of a Divine Artifact that the Earthly Sovereign, even the Heavenly Sovereign, would desire. After so many years, however, it seems like no one has even caught a glimpse of the Ancient Celestial Palace, so it has always remained as a rumor."

Nine Nether ruminated over it, as she stated softly, "If the Immortal Catalog is indeed in the Ancient Celestial Palace, I think it is highly possible that this Sovereign Existence could be one of the ten Sovereigns who had control over the Primitive Celestial Body in primordial times. This person might even be the first master of the Primordial Immortal Body."

Mu Chen listened solemnly to Nine Nether's analysis. It made sense though. Perhaps the Immortal Catalog really had some links to the Ancient Celestial Palace, but this information brought him a headache, regardless of whether the Ancient Celestial Palace actually existed or not. Even if it did appear, it would certainly cause a great uproar, and if he wanted to obtain the Immortal Catalog from countless top powers, it was

akin to snatching food from a tiger and was extremely dangerous.

However, come what may, he would not give up easily now that he had obtained some clues after going to all this trouble.

"Looks like we have a goal next," Mu Chen stated softly.

"Make our way to the Tianluo Continent? That is a good place to advance your cultivation." Nine Nether smiled.

"My goal now is to become strong enough to be able to protect the people I want to protect. The Tianluo Continent is one of the supercontinents, so I think it would be more exciting and dangerous than the Northern Heavens Continent."

The Tianluo Continent was indeed a good place, as he could practice his cultivation and ask around to collect information about the Ancient Celestial Palace. In that case, if there was an opportunity at that time, he would be able to have an edge over the others.

Of course, before doing this, he still must enhance his own strength. Otherwise, even if the Ancient Celestial Palace appeared, his limited ability would not qualify him to compete against the rest.

"I didn't expect to be able to go back to the Tianluo Continent, but I do miss it." Nine Nether sighed, feeling sentimental. When she left the Nine Netherbird Clan, she went directly to the Tianluo Continent. Later, due to passing the tribulations, she instead stumbled upon the small Northern Spiritual Realm after several turns of events. Under strange circumstances, she even forged a Bloodline Bond with Mu Chen.

Furthermore, what was even more coincidental was that Mu Chen now needed to go to this supercontinent. Destiny was truly unpredictable.

"Let's go. When we arrive at the Tianluo Continent, I'm counting on you, a local who is familiar with the place." Mu Chen smiled.

"Just give my name, and I guarantee you can do anything you want in the Tianluo Continent." Nine Nether smiled.

Mu Chen rolled his eyes as he ignored her. Despite how strong the

Daluo Territory was that Nine Nether belonged to, it was but one of the top forces in the Tianluo Continent. Although Nine Nether was one of the senior leaders, it was impossible for her to do anything she wanted in the Tianluo Continent.

Mu Chen turned around and swept straight down the long stone staircase before stepping towards the spatial crack. Although he did not get specific information this time, the result was already quite satisfactory. At least he had a general direction, instead of having to go around and search aimlessly like a blind man.

Two figures appeared from within the spatial crack as spatial fluctuations rippled. They appeared directly in front of the main hall of the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. In front of them, the Northern Sea Dragon smiled as he glanced at them.

"Is everything in order?"

Mu Chen nodded as he returned the copper seal to the Northern Sea Dragon and gave his sincere gratitude.

"Thank you, Elder Northern Sea."

With a flourish of the Northern Sea Dragon's sleeve, the spatial crack gradually dissipated. He glanced at the youth before him, his expression softening as he said, "You would be leaving soon?"

"Three days from now." Mu Chen took a deep breath as he suppressed his feelings of longing.

The Northern Sea Dragon nodded lightly, and a smile appeared on his wizened face.

"I look forward to hearing news about you. I believe you will astound everyone by then.

"You are the pride of our Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. I do not wish for our ace disciple to be overshadowed by the countless talents in the Great Thousand World."

"I will do my best."

Mu Chen smiled brightly as he turned his head to glance at the familiar Spiritual Academy which had always been filled with vitality. In the lingering rays of the setting sun, countless silhouettes flitted across the sky towards various areas of the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy.

Goddess Luo Association... Lightning Territory... Spirit Convergence Array... Spiritual Values Hall...

In the dimming afterglow of the setting sun, the familiar locations began to fade away in his field of vision.

Mu Chen stretched out his hands, a smile pulling at the corners of his mouth. He couldn't bear to leave this place, but he also looked forward to the future journey. This was not his end, but only his starting point.

Farewell, Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy.

Chapter 646: Leaving

Three days flashed by in the blink of an eye.

When the morning light of the third day tore the darkness of the night apart and shone on the earth, the whole Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy was once again full of vitality. However, the atmosphere of the Academy was slightly different from the past.

Countless disciples lifted their gazes and converged at the top of the peak in the center of the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, where the silhouette of a slender and tall figure could be vaguely seen.

All the disciples had already received news that Mu Chen was about to leave Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy.

Their gazes were filled with admiration and adoration as they glanced at the figure in the morning light, the most outstanding person in their Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy who had won glory for them in the Spiritual Academy Competition.

Although young people were always a little arrogant, they always showed true admiration and respect from the bottom of their hearts towards Mu Chen.

In the headquarters of the Goddess Luo Association, tens of thousands of members looked dejected. Mu Chen and Luo Li were considered the main pillars of support in their Association. Now that both were leaving, it was a severe blow to the Goddess Luo Association.

However, they also knew that Mu Chen was no longer suitable to remain at the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. He needed a larger stage to develop and perform, and the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy was too small for him.

Hence, despite feeling sorrowful, they were very understanding.

On the training ground, Ye Qingling, Yu Xi, and Su Ling'er all lifted their heads. Yu Xi's eyes were red with tears, as she could not help but cry like a little kitten when she heard the news that Mu Chen was about to leave.

Her little button nose sniffled as tears welled up in her huge doe eyes again.

"It's okay, don't cry." Ye Qingling patted her head gently as she smiled.

"Mu Chen mentioned that you would be the pillar of support for the Goddess Luo Association when he left. This is the mission he left for you, you can't do it badly."

Yu Xi rubbed her eyes, as she nodded solemnly.

"Don't worry, Sister Ye, I won't let the Goddess Luo Association down. I will definitely win the championship at the next Spiritual Academy Competition!"

"You have ambition," Ye Qingling smiled gently before lifting her gaze and staring at the figure. She murmured in her heart softly, "Have a smooth journey, Mu Chen."

Atop the mountain peak, Mu Chen also looked down at the enormous Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. As he registered the countless gazes directed at him, sentimental feelings of departing welled in his heart.

Behind Mu Chen, Ling Xi approached, a gentle smile blossoming on her usually calm face as she lightly and neatly smoothed his clothes.

"Now that you are leaving the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, be careful in everything you do."

Mu Chen glanced at the beautiful face which was close to his, feeling touched by her kind words. He stretched out his arm and held Ling Xi's slender waist, gently hugging her before swiftly letting go.

"Be careful too, Sister Ling Xi. If you meet with any danger, do give up. I promise that I will definitely rescue Mother. By then, no matter how dangerous it is, I will always protect you and Mother."

Ling Xi's slender figure stiffened momentarily at Mu Chen's actions, but her eyes reddened at his words. She was touched by Mu Chen's concern.

She nodded gently before turning to glance and smile at Nine Nether.

"Nine Nether, I was wrong before when I picked at your faults. I'm hope

you don't take it to heart."

Nine Nether froze. She clearly did not expect Ling Xi to take the initiative to apologize to her. She was bewildered, and her pretty face was slightly flushed as she waved her hands and said, "It's alright."

"Please take care of him in the future," Ling Xi said softly.

Nine Nether nodded.

"My life is linked together with his. Naturally, I won't let anything happen to him."

The Northern Sea Dragon and Chief Tai Cang appeared at this moment. They smiled while looking at Mu Chen.

"The Transfer Spiritual Array has been completed. It will transport you out of the Northern Heavens Continent. If you need to travel to other places, you will have to search for the major cities in the other continents and use the Transfer Spiritual Array located there."

"Thank you so much, Elder Northern and Chief."

Mu Chen glanced at the sky, where a huge Transfer Spiritual Array stood.

The Tianluo Continent was very far away. Without the Transfer Spiritual Array, even a Sovereign would have to spend more than half a year travelling to arrive—and that was if the journey had no obstructions.

Between the major continents, besides the vast sea, there existed all kinds of natural disasters that even Sovereigns feared. Some continents were isolated from the flow of space, and if one wanted to pass through, even the most powerful Sovereigns would find it extremely dangerous.

Mu Chen took a deep breath, and despite the longing in his heart, he did not hesitate as he turned to Nine Nether and said, "It's almost time, let's move!"

Nine Nether nodded in response as the two moved and appeared in the Transfer Spiritual Array.

"Mu Chen, don't bring dishonor to the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy in front of outsiders. After all, you're the most outstanding person in our Academy!"

From a near distance, a clear voice rang as Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong stood in the air, looking at them.

"Mu Chen, if we ever have the chance to meet again, don't get dragged down by us again. We won't go easy on you by then."

A smile surfaced on Li Xuantong's suave features.

Mu Chen nodded lightly in response.

"Brother Mu, take care!"

In the headquarters of the Goddess Luo Association, suddenly countless voices rang out in sync, as numerous members of the Association stood up and bowed gently in Mu Chen's direction.

This was their respect for the founder of the Goddess Luo Association.

As Mu Chen witnessed the scene before him, his nose scrunched up as he was deeply moved. However, he did not say anything as he glanced at the Northern Sea Dragon and nodded lightly.

The Northern Sea Dragon sighed and with a curl of its finger, a beam of spiritual energy shot into the Transfer Spiritual Array. Within the Spiritual Array, light glistened as the space violently distorted.

As his gaze blurred, Mu Chen knew that the transfer was imminent. He glanced at the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, which was becoming increasingly indistinct, and murmured in his heart, "Farewell, everyone. Take care, and may we meet again."

Whoosh!

The light of the Transfer Spiritual Array gradually reached its strongest potential as the space twisted into a whirlpool. With a surge of the suction force, Mu Chen and Nine Nether turned into streams of light rushing into the space whirlpool, and disappeared in the blink of an eye.

The Transfer Spiritual Array in the sky gradually faded, and the

originally violent space fluctuations completely calmed down. The sky returned to its usual serenity, but the two silhouettes had disappeared entirely.

Silence loomed over the entire Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy due to the somber atmosphere.

Looking at the scene, Chief Tai Cang could only smile helplessly. It was not as if a famous disciple had never left before, but there had never been an occasion where someone leaving could actually make the entire Spiritual Academy so dejected.

"Is that fellow... that charismatic?"

Chief Tai Cang smiled and shook his head, but did not deliberately try to lighten up the atmosphere. He knew that this downcast atmosphere would only dissipate with time.

Perhaps, when another stunning student emerged in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, Mu Chen's impact would begin to fade. Although... would it be possible to see an appearance of a disciple who was able to surpass Mu Chen?

At the thought of this, Chief Tai Cang could only sigh in regret. However, with regrets, there was also a trace of anticipation in his heart. He would like to know how much the young man who walked out of their Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy would achieve in the future...?

Perhaps, as he had expected, the day the boy returned to the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, his power would shake the entire Great Thousand World.

Ling Xi stood quietly on the top of the mountain as she looked in silence at the place where Mu Chen and Nine Nether had disappeared. Chief Tai Cheng and the others did not disturb her as the crowd quietly dissipated.

Ling Xi stood for a whole day, and as night came and enshrouded the sky, she then reacted and glanced down at the vast Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. It was the same scenery, but somehow, something seemed to be missing. It was boring, as if one were chewing something

tasteless.

She turned to go back to the courtyard where she resided, and came to the closed bamboo house. She pushed the door open and entered. In the neat bamboo house there hung a picture scroll depicting the back of a quiet and gentle lady.

Gazing at the scroll, she smiled and whispered, "Aunt Jing, Mu Chen has left. He is very outstanding, truly worthy to be your child. However, I can no longer stay by his side. Aunt Jing, I will come to look for you."

"No matter who it is, the person who sealed my memories, I won't let him off!"

Ling Xi clenched her fists tightly, cold murderous intent surging in her eyes.

"Aunt Jing, I will definitely rescue you!"

Ling Xi slowly stepped forward, and carefully put away the scroll. She then walked out of the bamboo house, gazing at the place where she had lived for a long time.

"Sister Ling Xi." Sun'er's timid voice rang out as she stood in the courtyard and glanced at Ling Xi, her eyes red with tears.

"Are you leaving too?"

Ling Xi stepped forward and embraced Sun'er as she smiled.

"Yes, Sister Ling Xi has some things to do. Sun'er, after I leave, you cannot neglect your cultivation. If you do, I will punish you when I return."

Sun'er hugged Ling Xi tightly and nodded.

"Sister Ling Xi, will you return like Brother Mu Chen in future?"

Ling Xi gently pressed her delicate chin on Sun'er's small head as she said softly, "Don't worry, we'll both be back."

Sun'er remained silently obedient as she burrowed herself in Ling Xi's embrace. As moonlight shone down on them, the lady donned in white robes looked up slightly. The moonlight formed a light arc on her

beautiful face, forming the most beautiful night scene in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy.

Starting from tonight, the disciples of the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy would soon discover that Ling Xi, a beautiful young lady who charmed the hearts of many and held the role of an elder at a young age, had silently left.

She did not alarm anyone, and when she left, only the silhouette of her departing figure was left behind, which was stunning as always.

Chapter 647: The Sagacity of Spiritual Energy

It was a vast, blue ocean, endless, as if it had no boundaries. From time to time, spiritual beasts taking the forms of fish sprang out, splashing amid the great waves.

Whoosh.

Above the sea, the space suddenly became distorted, raging with the spread of violent spatial fluctuations. A space whirlpool formed, before two silhouettes emerged from within the whirlpool, appearing over the sea. As soon as the pair appeared, they glanced at each other, then shifted their gazes toward the vast ocean, as they were momentarily stunned.

"Where is this?" Mu Chen scratched his head, then asked in bewilderment.

Jiu You was clearly more experienced than Mu Chen, as she slowly took out a scroll with flickering lights on it. She then spread the scroll out, only to see that it was filled with complex patterns of light. It seemed to be an indescribably large map.

She scanned the map, then pointed a slender finger to an area on the map. As she pointed gently, the map rippled, beginning to enlarge, and becoming clearer, until finally, a spot of light appeared in that area.

"There, here we are. This is the sea beyond the Northern Heavens Continent. If we continue onward, we will enter the Southern Hills Continent, and can use the Transfer Spiritual Array located there to head to other continents." Jiu You smiled.

Mu Chen stared at the map, his eyes full of wonder, as he could feel that there were substantial spiritual energy fluctuations within it.

"This is a Spiritual Artifact?" Mu Chen asked in astonishment.

"Yes, this is a Spiritual Map, which is used specially for recording maps in the Great Thousand World. Travellers would normally prepare one, and

this particular map was one that I had prepared in the past. Without it, it would not be easy for us to get to the Tianluo Continent." Jiu You smiled, nodding in confirmation.

"I have nothing to worry about, as long as you are here." Mu Chen smiled, as he buttered Jiu You up with flattering words. However, he also meant these words sincerely. He knew that, if he had travelled solo, he would not have known what to do, unlike Jiu You, who was extremely well-prepared.

Jiu You rolled her eyes at him, and at his obvious flattery.

"How long more before we reach the Tianluo Continent?" Mu Chen asked.

the Tianluo Continent, we have to traverse through at least a dozen continents, and use the teleportation of the Transfer Spiritual Array to transport ourselves. Hence, even if we journey continuously, it will take us nearly two months to get there," Jiu You stated calmly.

"Two months..." Mu Chen twitched his mouth in response.

"And, in these two months, don't think you can get off easy!" Jiu You glanced at Mu Chen, her expression turning solemn. "Mu Chen, you should be aware that you have currently left Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, and the places that we will be heading are no longer ivory towers. In this Great Thousand World, only power is respected. If you do not have enough power, wherever you go, no one will even look you in the eye."

"Moreover, the "Daluo Territory" that I have been in was no peaceful place, as the politics and power struggle there cannot be compared to that of the playful fights and little squabbles at Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. Although, I will try my best to protect you there, but I know that with your character, you won't want me to." Jiu Yu continued her warning.

Mu Chen gave a slight smile upon hearing her words, as he softly said, "Rest assured, I have understood all of these principles long ago."

Daluo Territory was unlike the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy,

where people would do their best to assist in his cultivation. Here, if he couldn't accomplish anything himself, others would trample on him brutally.

Jiu You nodded lightly in response, then said, "Despite having entered the Sovereign level successfully, you are not even close to being a First Grade Sovereign."

"Is that because I haven't cultivated the Sovereign Celestial Body yet?"

Mu Chen stated this question calmly, as he could actually cultivate the Sovereign Celestial Body at this current stage. However, the Sovereign Celestial Body that he would have cultivated would be mediocre, as he had no other method of cultivating it besides that of the Great Solar Undying Body.

Furthermore, he did not wish to waste the precious Sovereign Spiritual Liquid on cultivating a mediocre Sovereign Celestial Body. He understood that, after he gathered the last two remaining ingredients needed for cultivating the Great Solar Undying Body, he would then require immense amounts of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid. Also, if he wanted to cultivate, he would never take the usual route.

"That's only one reason." Jiu You nodded her head slightly, as she continued. "The other reason why the Sovereign Master is revered as being the supreme of the art of cultivation, and why he is differentiated from the rest, is mainly due to his spiritual energy, apart from the Sovereign Sea and the Sovereign Celestial Body. The spiritual energy possesses sagacity, which is a form of intelligence, and that far surpasses the power of ordinary spiritual energy."

"Sagacity?" Mu Chen's eyebrows knit together quizzically.

"Many Sovereign Masters possess spiritual energies, which have unique attributes. Some people's spiritual energies are cold in nature, and some are blazing hot. This is because their spiritual energies have their own sagacities, so that power, likewise, is extraordinary."

Mu Chen pondered these things thoughtfully, as he vaguely remembered that, when he was in the Northern Heavens Continent, the

Demonic Dragon Palace had engaged the help of the Infinity Ancestor. His spiritual energy had been extremely strong, and with a single blow, chilling and dark waves of the sea surged and swept forth. The sea was, in fact, a manifestation of his spiritual energies, as they were overwhelmingly powerful, to the degree with which ordinary spiritual energy could never match.

"How do I let my spiritual energies develop sagacity?" Mu Chen asked.

"Remember how your spiritual energy in the past could merge with my Nine Nether Flame? Back then, your spiritual energy was slightly stronger than ordinary spiritual energy, and in a way, there were similarities between the two. However, it is nothing when compared to spiritual energies that possess sagacity."

Understanding dawned on Mu Chen. This so-called sagacity, simply put, was basically the merging of another material into one's spiritual energies, causing it to undergo metamorphosis and become more powerful.

However, although this sounded easy in theory, it was challenging in execution. Not just any kind of material was suitable to be fused with one's spiritual energy, and once repulsion forces occurred, not only would the spiritual energies be unable to evolve, but such a situation would result in a backlash, which would severely injure the practitioner.

"What material should I choose to merge with my spiritual energies, then?" Mu Chen asked.

Most Sovereign Masters would choose to absorb those peculiar energies in either extremely cold, or extremely hot, places, so that they could fuse these energies together, which is the simplest method. However, the magnitude of increasing the power of one's spiritual energies was also limited.

"You once merged with the Nine Nether Flame. Hence, your spiritual energy is more attuned to materials with the attribute of fire. You also cultivated the Thunder God Physique, so thunder would be suitable as well," Jiu You stated thoughtfully.

"If using materials with the attribute of thunder, you will be unable to

procure a source of thunder powerful enough to carry out the fusion. Thus, we have to find other alternatives. As for fire... My Unperishable Flame would be a good choice."

Mu Chen's eyes lit up. This was not only a good choice, but in fact, it was perfect. He was no longer an amateur, so he was aware of how powerful the Unperishable Flame was. Most importantly, the Unperishable Flame possessed a mysterious and profound attribute: the attribute of being "Unperishable".

Naturally, this was not to say that one would not die with the Unperishable Flame. Instead, the Unperishable Flame possessed a strong healing power, and no matter how seriously injured one was, as long as one's spirit was not destroyed, the Unperishable Flame would be able to heal the wounds gradually. With the Unperishable Flame, when one was engaged in combat, it would increase one's durability, which would then give them the upper hand.

Mu Chen's eyes lit up momentarily, but then he thought of something and turned to Jiu You, smiling with a grimace.

"But if we do this, it would cause harm to you, wouldn't it?" he asked, concerned.

Although Jiu You possessed the Unperishable Flame, it did not simply appear out of thin air. Rather, she had to expend immense amounts of energy and time, before she could cultivate the Unperishable Flame.

If Mu Chen wanted to transform the spiritual energy in his body completely, the amount of Unperishable Flame required would be rather significant. This was a great burden for Jiu You to bear.

Jiu You hedged, as her long and narrow eyes glanced at Mu Chen.

"Although there will be some obstacles, it isn't that much of a problem," she assured.

"But..." Mu Chen began to protest, still unconvinced.

"From today onwards, we will continue to travel without rest during the day, while we attempt to merge with the Unperishable Flame at night. My

ultimatum is that you have to complete the transformation of your spiritual energy before we reach the Tianluo Continent!" Jiu You didn't give Mu Chen a chance to retort, as she stated calmly.

"If you fail..." A dangerous smirk curled on Jiu You's ruddy mouth. "Then don't blame me for being ruthless!"

With a casual blow of her palm, the sea beneath them broke apart, as a massive spiritual beast, which had just leapt up, fell over with the impact. Mu Chen's mouth twitched in fear, as he looked on and wiped the cold sweat that was gathering on his forehead. He was clear about Jiu You's personality, and if things got to that stage, it was likely that she would beat him severely. This sister was really too violent.

"Do you have any problems?" Jiu You smiled, as she glanced at Mu Chen. It was supposed to be a beautiful sight, but it caused Mu Chen to break out in another cold sweat, as he shook his head hurriedly.

"That's good, let's go then." Jiu You nodded satisfactorily.

"Fly over this sea?" Mu Chen was stunned momentarily, before replying.

"How about you revert to your actual form, and then I can ride on you as we fly over. Isn't that a lot faster...?"

However, as soon as he had spoken, he felt a sense of dread, for Jiu You raised her willow-like eyebrows, gave a bright smile, and glanced at Mu Chen. The smile was charming, as she walked forward, a blush on her beautiful face.

"Little Brother Mu Chen, do you want to ride on an elder sister so much?" she teased.

Mu Chen laughed hollowly, before turning to escape.

Boom!

He didn't make it too far, before a torrential wave of spiritual energy in the space above enveloped him, as a huge Cloud Wing flapped towards him, and with a "Bong", fanned him straight into the sea. Mu Chen emerged from the sea, as a slender figure flew past in the sky, followed by

sweet giggles ringing in the air.

"You're not allowed to come out, as swimming out of this sea is also part of your cultivation."

Jiu You felt great indignation, as he gnashed his teeth, murmuring that a wise man would not fight when the odds are against him, he just had to endure for the time being, and when his ability was stronger than hers, he would definitely press her on his thighs and spank her bottom.

"Jiu You, just you wait!" Mu Chen shouted, as he continued to swim forward with all of his might, roaring in his heart.

Chapter 648: An Arduous Journey

The journey to the Tianluo Continent was long and arduous. However, what was supposed to be a monotonous and boring journey, actually turned out to be a painful one, especially after Jiu You had assigned her task. It was not a simple task, this completion of the transformation of their spiritual energies, even to a Sovereign Master.

Although Mu Chen had successfully integrated the Nine Nether Flame with his own spiritual energies in the past, in comparison to transforming one's spiritual energies, the degree of difficulty could be said to be like the huge gap between the light of a firefly and the glow of the moon. Not to mention, the Flame that he was going to integrate this time was no longer the Nine Nether Flame, but the Unperishable Flame, which was countless times more powerful!

Jiu You's method of cultivation was extremely straightforward, but also very brutal. She did not resort to the use of any tricks, but instead, by mobilizing the Unperishable Flame in her body, and directed it straight into Mu Chen's body, the Unperishable Flame finally locating the Sovereign Sea that was hidden in his body, as it surged in.

The Unperishable Flame roared in the Sovereign Sea, as the boiling temperature was close to burning Mu Chen's Sovereign Sea. The sensation of one's spiritual energies burning up inflicted unbearable pain to Mu Chen, such that even the Sovereign Sea seemed overwhelmed by it, as if it were about to be broken.

However, every time his endurance was about to reach its limit, Jiu You would withdraw the Unperishable Flame entirely, waiting for the spiritual energies in Mu Chen's Sovereign Sea to revert to a calm state, before repeating the process again.

In this never-ending cycle of feeling his spiritual energies burn, Mu Chen could only use four words to describe how he felt: fate worse than death.

According to Jiu You, the Unperishable Flame was, after all,

overwhelmingly strong, and something that the Nine Nether Flame could never match up to. Hence, if Mu Chen started out by merging it directly with his spiritual energies, there would only be one result: his spiritual energies would be thoroughly burned by the Unperishable Flame, and even his Sovereign Sea would be affected.

Such a situation meant that, if he wanted to integrate the Unperishable Flame, he would have to allow his spiritual energies to get accustomed with the Unperishable Flame. But, how would he do this? The answer was simple, as he just had to burn his spiritual energies with the Flame repeatedly.

In Jiu You's words, it was akin to being beaten up, as the more you get beaten up, the more you get used to it. After Mu Chen's spiritual energies have reached a sufficient stage of being burned, it would then be accustomed to the Unperishable Flame, so that the next step of integration could then occur.

As such, Mu Chen had no choice but to persevere with this anguishing method of cultivation. In the first ten days of travel, whenever night came, Mu Chen and Jiu You would take a brief respite, during which time, the daily nightmare of Mu Chen would begin...

However, Mu Chen gritted his teeth and persevered, despite having to go through the sheer agony of this method of cultivation. He had known long ago that there was no power that came easily in this world, so if he wanted to attain a complete transformation of his spiritual energies, he would have to put in an equally immense amount of effort.

Moreover, he could feel that, whenever the practice was over, Jiu You's cheeks would turn slightly pale. After all, she had worked so hard to cultivate the Unperishable Flame. With such heavy exhaustion of the flames every day, even if she had successfully evolved, it would still be unbearable.

Faced with this situation, if Mu Chen said he could not persevere, he would not be worthy enough to be a man. With that in mind, the agonizing cultivation continued. Amid the excruciating cultivation every

night, the speed of their journey was not affected, and in just half a month, they travelled across vast continents.

At the beginning, the boy, who had undergone his first experience in the Great Thousand World, expressed curiosity at many things. But, he soon began to adapt, until finally, he began to shift most of his attention to cultivation.

Besides travelling and cultivation, when Mu Chen and Jiu You passed by some continents, they would specially inquire about any information regarding the two spiritual treasures, "Great Solar Void Fruit" and "Undying Divine Leaf", as these were the last two key ingredients needed for Mu Chen to cultivate "The Great Solar Undying Body."

However, the inquiries were to no avail, as the rarity of these two ingredients were beyond Mu Chen's imagination. After all, even Sovereign Masters desired these two spiritual treasures immensely.

In particular, the " Great Solar Void Fruit ", if obtained, could be refined into the Sovereign Sea. What made it intriguing, was the fact that the Great Solar Void Fruit could turn into a scorching sun within the Sovereign Sea, constantly shining on the spiritual energies within it. This would strengthen the spiritual energies greatly by fusing it with the power of the scorching sun.

For this marvellous artifact that could strengthen the power of the spiritual energies, which supreme would not regard it as being the ultimate treasure?

As for the "Undying Divine Leaf," it was also extremely rare. This legendary treasure, was also named the "Substitute Leaf", which meant that, if one met with a truly life-threatening disaster, the "Undying Divine Leaf" could save one's life. This basically meant that one would have an extra life.

Of course, a rumor like this was often exaggerated. After all, if the attack, had been terribly strong, even the " Undying Divine Leaf " would be utterly destroyed. However, possessing such a treasure would still be a perfect safeguard for one's defense.

After knowing about these two kinds of precious, rare spiritual treasures, it finally dawned on Mu Chen how incredibly fortunate he was to have received the "Nine Suns Zoysia" in the Spiritual Academy Competition. After all, this item, was comparable to the two former precious treasures.

As it were, however, it seemed that it would be a long way to go before they could gather these two ingredients together.

...

They continued to hurry along with their journey. In the blink of an eye, it had been nearly a month that had passed, within which time, Mu Chen and Jiu You had crossed dozens of continents. The sheer distance of the journey so far, was an amount of miles that Mu Chen found hard to even imagine.

Some of the continents they had passed through were not large, and could not even be compared to the Northern Heavens Continent. However, some of them were exceptionally vast, and though they still could not match up to the Tianluo Continent, their power was still far greater than that of the Northern Heavens Continent.

In just one month, Mu Chen's experience had soared, and he had even seen some of the other races in the Great Thousand World, which was somewhat eye-opening. Of course, other than widening his exposure, Mu Chen's cultivation also began in earnest, getting him onto the right track.

After undergoing the torment of having his spiritual energies burnt repeatedly, Mu Chen's spiritual energies in his Sovereign Sea began to adapt to the Unperishable Flame, and the pain subsided, at least in comparison to the excruciating pain at the start. It was this subtle adaptation that made Mu Chen heave a sigh of relief, as he saw some encouraging results from the previous period of torturous cultivation.

The moon hung high in the sky. On a mountain, Mu Chen sat cross-legged quietly. In the distance, a magnificent city could be seen in the far distance, its bright lights were as if it was daytime.

The scale of the city was not small. Even at this time, there was still light and shadow that were piercing through the night sky and into the city.

The city was named Blazing Flames City, and the continent that Mu Chen and Jiu You were on was the Blazing Flames Continent. A large portion of it was occupied by deserts, and the spiritual energies of the heavens and earth seemed to be more hot and dry here than elsewhere.

This city had a Transfer Spiritual Array that could transport them to the next continent, but Mu Chen and Ji You did not enter the city. Instead, they chose to stay outside of the city, as Mu Chen's cultivation at night was of immense importance. He could start to feel the spiritual energies within his Sovereign Sea developing in an intriguing manner, and that sensation was indescribable, but extremely crucial.

Mu Chen took a deep breath, his eyes bright. He knew that his psychic powers had reached a tipping point.

Mu Chen turned his head to look at Jiu You, who was by the fire, and whispered, "This time I'm going to integrate the Unperishable Flame."

Jiu You's hand, which had been fiddling with the fire, froze, as she lifted her head, staring at Mu Chen with surprise in her eyes. She then knit her eyebrows together and said, "It has only been a month, isn't it too hasty?"

She had intended to give Mu Chen two months to complete the cultivation of his spiritual energies, but now he had already brought forward the process by half. It was a very dangerous thing to integrate the spiritual energies completely with the Unperishable Flame. In the case where both the energy and the Flame got out of control, they would not be able to control it.

"I'm not being hasty, I really feel that it's time." Mu Chen smiled slightly.

If Mu Chen didn't grasp that wonderful feeling, he was afraid that he didn't know when it would happen again, so he didn't want the opportunity to slip away.

Jiu You stared at Mu Chen, as the latter had an earnest look in his eyes, which made it clear that he was not joking with her. She remained silent for a moment, then nodded lightly.

"Very well then."

"It has been hard on you."

Mu Chen smiled gratefully, and then gradually closed his eyes. With a motion of his mind, he entered the Sovereign Sea, where the vast spiritual energies roared like the ocean. However, Mu Chen's spiritual energies within his Sovereign Sea were slightly different than they were a month ago, for his energies now seem to be mixed with a hint of purple. This was the reason why Jiu You had burned his spiritual energies for a month using the Unperishable Flame.

Whoosh.

On the surface of the Sovereign Sea, a clear and crisp sound of water trickling rang out suddenly. Then, a shadow slowly emerged, the silhouette looking exactly like Mu Chen, as it was his soul.

After successfully cultivating and condensing the Sovereign Sea, Mu Chen's soul had been hidden within the Sovereign Sea. The soul sat cross-legged on the surface of the sea, as he lifted his head and murmured, "Let us begin."

On the mountain, Jiu You sat cross-legged in front of Mu Chen, her face solemn. A month of gruelling torment was what had been required for this seemingly simple step.

She let out a huff of fragrance gently, as she stretched out her finger, lightly placing it between Mu Chen's eyebrows. Purple flames suddenly emerged from Jiu You's fingers, then immediately turned into small pillars of fire, which surged directly into Mu Chen's body. As the purple flame poured into his body, Mu Chen shivered with a fierce tremor, and with his teeth clenched tightly, he remained silent.

Within the Sovereign Sea, Mu Chen's soul lifted his head to look up, his eyes somber. His vision filled with a purple glow, although that was not of his own doing. Rather, it was due to the sea of purple flames in the air above the Sovereign Sea, as it swept through with a terrifying momentum.

This time, the Unperishable Flame began to reveal its true ferocity. This experience would determine whether or not Mu Chen's excruciating cultivation within the past one month would see results.

Chapter 649: Integrating the Unperishable Flame

As if from a different space, the vast sea of purple fire swept through with a fierce aura of devastation above the Sovereign Sea.

Mu Chen had experienced a bitter month of suffering. However, the majestic spiritual energy of the Sovereign Sea was now boiling hot. A kind of indescribable heat surged as if it aimed to burn him.

What an overwhelmingly fierce Unperishable Flame...

Mu Chen's spirit gazed solemnly as the scene unfolded before him and the Unperishable Flame revealed its true extent of extraordinary power. He finally realized how Nine Nether had been letting him off easy in the previous month of cultivation.

If Nine Nether had murderous intent towards him in this moment, his Sovereign Sea would have been instantly burned to nothing.

No matter how brutal you are, I will thoroughly integrate you today! Fierce determination flashed in Mu Chen's eyes as he immediately took a deep breath and waved his palm.

Boom!

In the vast Sovereign Sea, tumultuous waves roared, turning into waves of ten thousand feet as they surged continuously towards the purple sea of fire descending from the sky.

It was a majestic sight to behold.

Whoosh!

However, what seemed to be a powerful offensive attack of spiritual energy wilted in the instant of contact. A massive amount of spiritual energy was evaporated by the purple flames, transforming into curls of white mist as they rose in the Sovereign Sea.

Boom!

As Mu Chen began his attacks, the sea of purple fire also began to show its fierce power. The sea of purple fire condensed and turned into pillars of fire as it burst downwards, resembling fire meteors that could engulf the heavens and earth.

Bong! Bong!

Purple pillars of fire rushed directly into the Sovereign Sea, splashing torrential waves.

Whoosh.

As the purple pillars of fire landed, the entire span of Sovereign Sea gurgled instantly, as if it were boiling. In this boiling heat, Mu Chen could feel the spiritual energy within the Sovereign Sea being gradually evaporated.

The Unperishable Flame was no longer restraining its true power now. If Mu Chen truly wanted to integrate it completely with his own spiritual energy, he would have to conquer it.

There was no shortcut to be taken.

Let's see who can persist until the end then.

Mu Chen's expression was solemn and his gaze cold as he waved his hands without any hesitation. Turbulent waves of approximately ten thousand feet surged in the Sovereign Sea as the majestic spiritual energy transformed into massive water whirlpools that completely surrounded the purple flames.

Two kinds of forces collided harshly.

Whoosh.

There was no violent impact at the moment of contact, but every time the spiritual energy was stained with the purple flame, it was evaporated instantaneously. Even so, Mu Chen still remained calm as he manipulated the spiritual energy to continue flowing.

The spiritual energy continued to evaporate.

The surface of the vast Sovereign Sea bubbled constantly as it boiled. Beneath the surface of the sea, deep purple permeated through it, and in the depths, curls of purple flames burned brightly.

The sea level of the Sovereign Sea descended layer by layer.

Due to the high temperature, even the space of the Sovereign Sea was beginning to distort, as if it were about to be destroyed.

On the mountain in the outside world, Mu Chen's body had become scarlet red, and his clothes had long been reduced to ashes. His face was extremely distorted. It was obvious that he was suffering from great pain, and his sweat evaporated immediately the moment it formed.

The ground Mu Chen had been sitting cross-legged on also began to crack, with the cracks spreading at an alarming rate.

Nine Nether removed her finger from Mu Chen's forehead. She looked at Mu Chen who had turned completely red, and she couldn't help but bite her red lips. At this point, she had done everything that could have been done. As to whether Mu Chen could truly integrate the Unperishable Flame, that would depend on his own perseverance...

Nine Nether clenched her fist slowly as she murmured silently in her heart, All the best, Mu Chen.

Within the Sovereign Sea, a terrifying heat continued to permeate it.

Time seemed to pass very slowly in that space as the boiling water endlessly burst, and the mighty spiritual energy constantly evaporated.

With the evaporation of spiritual energy, Mu Chen could also sense a faint feeling of weakness quietly surging up.

On the surface of his spiritual form, ripples formed constantly. As his rationality began to blur, the fierce Unperishable Flame was not only burning his spiritual energy but was also gradually eroding his spirit.

Once his rationality was completely overwhelmed, the Sovereign Sea would be turned into nothingness in the burning of the Unperishable Flame. Not only would Mu Chen fail in integrating it, but his spirit would

be scorched and destroyed.

To integrate such a domineering substance was, of course, a danger unimaginable to ordinary people.

Mu Chen's rationality blurred increasingly, but he hung onto a last thread and kept a clear mind. He knew that once his rationality was submerged, the price he would have to pay would be near destruction.

It was a price he could not afford to pay—he had promised the girl, thus he could not stop here.

With the slow passage of time, the space in the Sovereign Sea was completely distorted due to the high temperature. As the fog obscured the sight, people were unable to see Mu Chen clearly.

In the boiling Sovereign Sea, Mu Chen's spirit quietly sat cross-legged. His spirit had become much dimmer than before as he continued to close his eyes tightly.

At this moment, he was too blurry to be able to sense any external interference. However, in the innermost of this blurry vagueness, there was still a trace of clarity left.

The trace of clarity was like a light boat in a turbulent sea. With the ups and downs of the waves, it seemed it would soon overturn but despite the odds, it never fell down, and neither did his tenacious will.

In the face of such a fierce Unperishable Flame, Mu Chen had no means of retaliation but to retreat and defend. His only advantage was his persistence that developed through experience as he refused to admit defeat.

He knew that victory would belong to the party who could persist longer.

Mu Chen had unwittingly forgotten the concept of time. He could only rely on his lingering thread of clarity to recall that he seemed to have spent a long time, maybe a hundred years...

In this seemingly long time, Mu Chen's rationality seemed to have become somewhat confused, and in the end, he was vaguely immersed in

that confusion, unable to wake up.

What am I doing?

Am I in the process of cultivation? Did I fail?

I wish I could just sleep like this...

In his blurry thoughts, confused waves of fluctuations rang. Even Mu Chen's lingering clarity was floating precariously in the dark, facing danger as it was uncertain when it would be swallowed up.

At the peak of the mountain, Nine Nether stood in the sky as she stared anxiously downwards. The mountain was now red, and the grass and trees had turned to ashes long ago. The source of destruction was Mu Chen, who was sitting cross-legged at the top of the mountain.

She could see that the pain on Mu Chen's face had disappeared and seemed to be replaced by confusion. Instead of letting her heave a sigh of relief, it had produced a more intense fear and worry in her eyes.

She knew that if Mu Chen could not rely on his clarity to snap out of the trance, then he would probably be immersed in that mental realm of confusion, unable to find his true self.

Nine Nether gritted her teeth as she lifted her hands but ultimately put them down. In the short duration of a day, she wanted to intervene with powerful means countless times, but she was afraid it would inflict heavy damage on Mu Chen.

Nine Nether closed her eyes as she murmured in her heart silently, Mu Chen, you promised her that you would become a top Sovereign...

In Mu Chen's confused mind that was desperately trying to regain lucidity, fluctuations began to ripple as a voice seemed to ring in its deepest depths.

It was so far away but utterly sobering.

"I promised her that I would become the top Sovereign...

"So, how could I be defeated here?

"Wake up now."

As the last three words sounded quietly, the ripples surfacing deep in his heart spread as threads of clarity expanded and occupied his entire heart and soul.

The prior confusion was swept away in that instant.

On the Sovereign Sea, the spirit shivered as its tightly shut eyes slowly blinked open.

He gazed quietly at the Sovereign Sea shrouded with thick fog and purple mist, and then stood up slowly. His sleeve robes swung gently, and the raging wind blew away the purple mist.

The mist dissipated, and the vast sea unfolded in a clear display.

The Sovereign Sea had become purple, and on its surface, purple flames floated gently, the original boiling sea quietly calming down.

Beneath the surface of the sea, turbulent purple flames lurked silently.

Mu Chen's spirit gazed at the calm Sovereign Sea, and a faint smile appeared on his face.

Have I succeeded...

He slowly spread out his hands and saw the magnificent spiritual energy pouring in from his feet. The silhouette of the spirit, which had shrunk quite a bit, immediately recovered to its original state, and the surface of the spirit's body had traces of purple light flowing on it with purple flames rising in its eyes.

The spirit appeared to be more refined than before.

Mu Chen stretched out his palm as he saw an overwhelmingly purple spiritual energy within the Sovereign Sea sweep out and finally gather in his palm. Indistinctly, it seemed to transform into a ray of purple flame. It was an indescribably strange force that rippled and spread.

Mu Chen gazed at this ray of purple flame, a smirk tugging at the corners of his mouth.

He could feel that although there had not been any surge in the spiritual energy within his Sovereign Sea, it was now several times as strong as it had ever been!

He had successfully integrated it with the Unperishable Flame!

Chapter 650: The Continent of Trade

A figure quietly sat cross-legged atop the parched mountain peak. His flushed crimson skin gradually reverted to normal as the terribly high temperature dropped.

Nine Nether landed, heaving a quiet sigh of relief as she took in the scene before her. A touch of surprise flitted across her eyes. Seeing what had happened, Mu Chen seemed to have succeeded.

Just as Nine Nether landed, Mu Chen's tightly shut eyes twitched before slowly opening. Purple flames flickered in his black eyes and emitted an unsettling aura.

Mu Chen lifted his head and glanced at Nine Nether. She stood beside him, her svelte legs looking even more shapely and slender from that angle.

He grinned and said in relief, "I succeeded."

As he spoke, he rose to his feet. The moment he moved, his clothes disintegrated into dust.

Nine Nether's face blushed crimson and her delicate ears flushed with heat as she glared at Mu Chen in shy embarrassment before hurriedly looking away.

Mu Chen's expression was full of embarrassment as he hastily pulled out clothes and put them on.

Nine Nether waited for a few moments before turning back, her expression calming down. However, she could not hide her shy embarrassment and annoyance in her eyes as she glared at Mu Chen.

"It was unintentional, just an accident," Mu Chen said with a grimace. If Nine Nether thought he had been flirting and toying with her and gave him a beating, it would be an undeserved calamity.

Nine Nether snorted coldly. It was too much effort to pick on him. She stated nonchalantly, "Have you succeeded in your cultivation?"

Pleasant surprise was written on Mu Chen's face. He nodded as he clenched his fist. There was purple spiritual energy coalescing in his palm. Purple flames could be seen flickering within the depths of the purple spiritual energy.

With a casual wave of his hand, the purple spiritual energy surged out and struck a nearby mountain.

Boom!

The entire mountain shattered into pieces as the spiritual energy raged. A horrifying heat swept across the mountain, burning the grass and trees, reducing them to ashes in an instant.

Mu Chen looked at the crumbling peak as even the rocks melted. The scene shocked him. Despite his spiritual energy remaining at the same level as before, his combat power had far surpassed that of his past.

Furthermore, he could also control and manipulate his spiritual energy more skilfully and at will as naturally as moving his limbs. In addition, even if the spiritual energy became separated from his body and the link between them broke, his spiritual energy would not dissipate immediately but would instead continue to attack with a lingering will.

This aspect was particularly frightening.

Previously, if spiritual energy left the body and was cut off by an opponent, it would gradually dissipate because it could not be manipulated. However, now circumstances had changed. Even if the spiritual energy was out of Mu Chen's control, it would continue to attack in accordance with Mu Chen's intention and will until it had exhausted its power.

Once it resided within someone, this miraculous power would require a great consumption of energy if others wanted to drive it out. The Unperishable Flame hidden within Mu Chen's spiritual energy was especially mysterious and powerful. If one wanted to erase it, one would have to expend exponentially greater spiritual energy to do so, and by the

time it was successfully erased, the perpetrator's body would have been destroyed.

As Mu Chen felt the change in his spiritual energy, he couldn't help but gasp in wonder. Only after truly ascending to the Sovereign-level could he fully appreciate and grasp the extent of the Sovereign Master's power.

The Mu Chen of the past could never imagine and fathom that there were so many changes and mysteries hidden within the art of harnessing spiritual energy.

Nine Nether nodded as she said, "The spiritual energy within your Sovereign Sea came from your hard work and effort, and you did not rely on external assistance. Now that your spiritual energy has integrated with the Unperishable Flame, when it comes to your degree of power within the First Grade Sovereigns, if it is merely a battle of spiritual energy, not many people would be your match.

"Of course, that is if the opponent does not employ the Sovereign Celestial Body."

"The Sovereign Celestial Body..." Mu Chen couldn't help but gasp. The Sovereign Celestial Body was the signature combat symbol of the Sovereign Master, and it had such terrifying power, it could wipe out mountains in the blink of an eye.

If I manage to cultivate the Great Solar Undying Body successfully in the future, who knows how powerful I could become, Mu Chen thought in great anticipation. He had a hunch that the power of the Great Solar Undying Body would far surpass his expectations.

However, anticipation could only go so far. Mu Chen was all too aware that the last two ingredients needed to cultivate the Great Solar Undying Body were hard to obtain. In the past month, they had traversed dozens of continents and visited countless trading and auction houses, but had never chanced upon the Void Great Solar Fruit and the Undying Divine Leaf.

Nine Nether glanced as Mu Chen's gaze changed. She laughed as if she knew what he was thinking and said, "Rest assured, even if we didn't get news of the two kinds of natural treasures along the way, we should be

able to find them when we reach the Tianluo Continent. After all, it is a supercontinent, and the continents we had passed before could not compare to it."

Mu Chen nodded as he heaved a sigh of relief in his heart.

"Also..." Nine Nether paused as she continued, "There is a Daluo Golden Pool in the Daluo Territory. This golden pool is extremely wondrous, and even on the Tianluo Continent, it is considered a treasure.

"The Daluo Golden Pool possesses the Divine Power of gods and spirits to refine the Sovereign Celestial Body, making it more perfect. If luck is on your side, you could even cultivate the Infinite Golden Light with the Sovereign Celestial Body."

"Infinite Golden Light?" Mu Chen asked in bewilderment.

"The Sovereign Celestial Body is already powerful on its own, but with the Infinite Golden Light, it is akin to giving a tiger wings, thus increasing its power. Most importantly, the Infinite Golden Light has a very strong defense, so it can also render the Sovereign Celestial Body indestructible.

"However, it is very difficult to cultivate the Infinite Golden Light. As far as I know, in the many years that have passed there are very few people on the Tianluo Continent who have been able to cultivate the Infinite Golden Light in the Daluo Golden Pool."

Mu Chen clicked his tongue in shock. Who would have thought that there would be such a wondrous place that could strengthen the Sovereign Celestial Body? There must be many Sovereign Masters who were eyeing it.

"When you follow me into Daluo Territory, you must enter the Daluo Golden Pool," Nine Nether stated solemnly.

"There must be some conditions required?" Mu Chen pondered.

Since the Daluo Golden Pool possessed such a wondrous ability, it was apparent that not just anyone could enjoy it.

Nine Nether nodded lightly. "The Daluo Golden Pool in Daluo Territory

can only be enjoyed by people holding the rank of Commander, and only once every three years, with a quota of people allowed."

Nine Nether glanced at Mu Chen, and her eyes narrowed. "So after entering Daluo Territory, you have to fight for the position of Commander."

"Commander?" Mu Chen asked in disbelief.

"In the Daluo Territory, there is a Dominator. However, this Dominator comes and goes like a specter, and it is hard to get a trace of his whereabouts, so he's a mysterious existence in the Daluo Territory. The main affairs of the Daluo Territory are controlled and managed by the Three Kings under the Dominator.

"Under the Three Kings are the Nine Lords... and I'm one of the Lords." Nine Nether smiled. "Under the Nine Lords are the Commanders. Generally speaking, one has to attain the Sovereign-level before they can fight for the position of Commander."

"The starting point is the Sovereign-level..." Mu Chen laughed bitterly. He wasn't even considered to be a First Grade Sovereign in his present state, thus it would be difficult for him to vie for the position of Commander. No wonder Nine Nether forced him to complete his spiritual energy cultivation in the shortest time possible.

"Not confident?" Nine Nether asked nonchalantly.

Mu Chen smiled, but this smile was much brighter. He stretched lazily as he said, "Well, let me see exactly how strong the Sovereigns are in this Great Thousand World. My journey will not be hindered by a small challenge to become Commander."

A satisfied smile bloomed on Nine Nether's beautiful face upon hearing Mu Chen's words.

"Thank you," Mu Chen said softly as he turned to glance at Nine Nether.

Perhaps when they had just left the Northern Heavens Continent, Nine Nether had already begun to make plans for him. Although he did not know what the Daluo Golden Pool represented in the Daluo Territory, if

Nine Nether was one of the Nine Lords, it was likely that she did not have much say in making decisions.

Hence, he felt touched.

"Oh please, just don't lose disastrously and utterly embarrass me." Nine Nether pursed her lips and harrumphed, but there was mirth in her tone.

"It's time to leave. We should get going."

She didn't give Mu Chen time to blabber on. With a wave of her hand, her silhouette surged out in a flash of light.

Mu Chen smiled and glanced at the slender shadow, and as he clenched his fists, fighting spirit and will ignited in his heart. He owed much to Nine Nether. Now it looked like he would have to become a Commander in the Daluo Territory.

...

In the next month, they were still on their way, traversing the continents without much rest. In their rush, the Tianluo Continent was getting closer and closer.

One day, Nine Nether and Mu Chen gradually slowed down in their journey.

They were now on a continent named the Continent of Trade. This continent possessed a Spiritual Transfer Array that could bring them to the Tianluo Continent directly, hence it was considered the last stop of their arduous journey.

This continent had some of the grandest trade and auction houses among the dozen nearby continents, with countless natural treasures and Divine Artifacts. Many Divine Arts circulated here through a variety of channels.

Despite some of the channels being shady and dubious, no one cared because everyone knew that they could buy anything on this Continent of Trade.

One could buy anything as long as they had sufficient Sovereign

Spiritual Liquid.

It was here that Mu Chen's weary heart felt excitement for the first time in a great while. He finally got the last two materials he needed to cultivate the Great Solar Undying Body: the Void Great Solar Fruit and the Undying Divine Leaf.

Chapter 651: The City of Trade

The Continent of Trade.

As the name implied, this was a trade-oriented continent, where there are numerous auction houses with great fame. Although this continent was not vast, it had a resounding reputation within the Great Thousand World.

The source of this fame came from the countless natural treasures gathered there, treasures from all around the world, which would be circulated to all of the major auction houses. Thus, the slogan promoted by the Continent of Trade was that, as long as one had enough Sovereign Spiritual Liquid, they could buy anything they desired. The slogan was arrogant, but one could see the essence of the Continent of Trade through it.

In this continent, even though it was not vast, there was an extraordinarily eclectic mix of people, ranging from hooligans to the rich. There were countless forces of varying degrees of power, and most of the auction houses had a strong background backing them. Hence, although there were countless treasures there, few people dared wreak havoc.

It was said that, hundreds of years ago, there had been a magnate of top power, who was interested in a Divine Artifact, but had failed to win the bid for it. He apparently then resorted to snatching it in the auction house. This figure even had killed the manager of the auction house, as well as the competitors who had also bid for the Divine Artifact, before leaving with the artifact himself.

This incident had shocked the Continent of Trade, causing them to respond immediately. In just over ten days, the top force in which the magnate was located was encircled and attacked by many powerful forces, resulting in heavy casualties. Even the magnate was severely injured.

In the end, he had to return the Divine Artifact in a state of embarrassment. He also had to pay an extremely large sum of compensation, as terms of reconciliation. Since then, no one has ever

dared ignore the rules of the Continent of Trade, nor killed people to snatch the treasure in auction houses.

It was because of the perfectly comprehensive rules of the Continent of Trade that had first allowed it to gain fame in the Great Thousand World over the years, with countless treasure collectors rushing there to seek their coveted treasure. It was also where Mu Chen had first obtained news of the "Void Great Solar Fruit" and the "Undying Divine Leaf".

...

The City of Trade, the main city of the Continent of Trade, was the most majestic city on the continent, in terms of scale, and it was the hub of the whole continent. When Mu Chen appeared outside of the Continent of Trade, he lifted his head to stare at the majestic city, as if it had been crafted by the gods. A shocked expression flit across his face.

The walls of the city were hundreds of feet high, their dark surfaces glinting with a cold sheen and extended out so far that there was no sign of any corners. On the walls, massive light symbols could be seen flickering.

A terrifying spiritual energy fluctuation quietly rippled, one that would cause people's heart to skip a beat. In the sky above the city, a huge light column soared to the sky, forming a light barrier that enveloped the entire city.

The only way to enter the city was to pass through the city gates, and anything that descended from the sky would trigger the city's great battle array, causing it to immediately be attacked as an intruder.

"What a terrifying battle array." Mu Chen gazed solemnly at the vast light array above the city, which was so large that it shone with countless light rays, then coalesced into an extremely complex Spiritual Array.

"It was said that this was a Spiritual Array that was set up by a Spiritual Array Ancestral Master, and that, even a Sovereign like the Earthly Sovereign would not be able to overcome it in a short period of time," Nine Nether smiled and said, as she stood beside Mu Chen.

"Spiritual Array Ancestral Master." Mu Chen quietly clicked his tongue. This figure was a powerful existence, one comparable to the Earthly Sovereign. The City of Trade was very powerful, since they could invite such a figure to set up a defensive spiritual array for them.

"Let's enter the city, as the two objects you want should be auctioned in the City of Trade today. However, I'm not sure if you can get them." Nine Nether smiled and shrugged, as the "Void Great Solar Fruit" and the "Undying Divine Leaf" were extremely rare natural treasures, and one would have to pay a considerable price to obtain either in the auction houses.

Moreover, success was not guaranteed. This was because most people who came to the Continent of Trade to hunt for treasure had outstanding amounts of wealth, or came from illustrious backgrounds.

Mu Chen nodded, as he touched the Mustard Seed Bracelet on his wrist and sighed. Luckily, he had Nine Nether had broken the seal slightly on the "Spiritual Condensing Bowl" which he had obtained on the Continent of Ruins. Thus, he managed to obtain some amounts of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid. On the whole, this was not a small number, but he did not have much confidence as to whether he could get the two key natural treasures he needed.

However, no matter what, it had not been easy for him to get news of them, so he would not give up easily. Mu Chen gritted his teeth. After all, he had even obtained the method of cultivation for The Great Solar Undying Body, so he wouldn't allow the lack of ingredients to cultivate it to stop his tracks!

Nine Nether patted Mu Chen's shoulder, and with a step of her slender legs, entered the city, attracting a lot of attention along the way. Her figure was tall and svelte, and her face was absolutely gorgeous. Her narrowed eyes gave off a charming aura, but also one that was full of untamed wildness. This aura gave men a strong desire to conquer her at times.

Aware of these heated gazes, Nine Nether knit her eyebrows together, as she suddenly held Mu Chen's arm and dragged him along. The softness of

Nine Nether's hand on his arm stupefied Mu Chen for a moment, as he felt unfriendly glances being cast at him.

With this enviable beauty, the two walked into the city of extraordinary grandeur, and the moment they entered the city, Nine Nether immediately loosened her grip on Mu Chen, not giving him a chance to take advantage of her.

"How cold," Mu Chen commented sardonically.

Upon hearing this, a smile blossomed on Nine Nether's beautiful features, as she approached Mu Chen, stating teasingly, "Do you want to take advantage of me so much? Sure, when your capabilities surpass me someday, even if you want me to warm your bed, I would agree. However, before you even mention this request, you have to make sure that your small frame can take it."

Mu Chen rolled his eyes, as he thought: "This senior sure is bold."

Losing in the bickering match, he began to look at the magnificent city. He could tell that they had arrived just as the city's popularity was reaching a terrifyingly high degree.

Its unusually wide and vast streets were filled with people. On both sides of the street, were all kinds of shops, from which emanated powerful spiritual energy, as the artifacts present were clearly not mediocre objects.

Upon seeing this scene, Mu Chen gasped in astonishment. If the mere shops were already so extraordinary, what superior quality would the auction houses have?

"Let's go straight to the auction houses." Mu Chen glanced at Nine Nether, as he couldn't wait to see the two natural treasures he had been coveting for such a long time.

"Sure." Nine Nether did not object as she nodded, and the two squeezed into the crowds to make their way into the city center.

The shops along the way were filled with a wide variety of dazzling objects, all with strong spiritual energy, which Mu Chen were drawn by. Some of these treasures even tempted him greatly to purchase them. If not

for the sake of preserving money and for the sake of competing for the two great natural treasures, he would have given in to the temptation.

In the distance, there was an extremely large auction house, the largest in the city center. That was also the largest auction house in the City of Trade.

Looking at the silhouette of the auction house far away, excitement filled Mu Chen's heart, as he eagerly quickened his pace. But suddenly, he heard the noise of rioting coming from beside him. He turned his head to look, seeing a shop. A plump man, who was mostly like the boss and owner, roared, his face turning red with agitation.

"How dare you mess in the City of Trade! Are you tired of living, you little rascal?"

In front of the now bellowing plump man, stood a young man in white, who was holding a folding fan. His face was as fair as jade, and he was very handsome.

He nonchalantly replied, "Why are you making such a fuss, as I merely ate a Century Spiritual Fruit of yours..."

When he spoke, his voice seemed particularly crisp and pleasant. Then, as Mu Chen looked at the young man closer, in disbelief, he soon found that it was a lady cross-dressed as a young man! The slender figure and the delicate features made a very clever little beauty.

"Then pay up! That Century Spiritual Fruit is worth two hundred Sovereign Spiritual Liquid, so you better pay up! " The plump man roared, as his expression twisted with rage. He previously looked at this "guy" in front of him, who had an extraordinary demeanour, and had thought that he was the young master of a certain sect. But then, suddenly, the "boy" took out the Century Spiritual Fruit, looked at it, and ate it directly!

The lady in white robes, who was really cross-dressed as the "boy", blushed with embarrassment, as she said, "I... I forgot to bring Sovereign Spiritual Liquid. I'll give it to you when I return next time."

The people around couldn't help but twitch their mouths in response,

and the plump boss nearly fainted. Mu Chen couldn't help but laugh, as he thought that this girl was pretty amusing.

"If you are unable to give the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid today, then forget about leaving How dare you wreak havoc in the City of Trade? You must be tired of living!" The plump boss roared in rage, as guards rushed out aggressively after a wave of his signaling hand.

Upon seeing this, the girl dressed in white robes raised her eyebrows, exclaiming, "Don't you dare! Believe it or not, my father would destroy this rundown place of yours!"

The boss laughed, as his rage reached its tipping point. To dare speak such audacious words in the City of Trade, this little girl must not know her place.

However, just as he was about to command the guards to take action, Mu Chen, who had been watching in the crowd, threw out a jade bottle, announcing, "Here's two hundred Sovereign Spiritual Liquid."

The boss was stunned. He took over the jade bottle and scrutinized it carefully, a flattering smile appearing on his plump face. He then glared at the indignant girl, as he said, "Count yourself lucky this time!"

"A**hole!" The girl dressed in white stomped her foot in anger, as she gnashed her teeth. She had never endured such humiliation in her entire life.

Mu Chen smiled as he glanced at her. He had no intention of striking up a conversation, so he turned to leave with Nine Nether. The only reason he had helped was because of his compassion. After all, this little girl might not be aware of how much trouble would come if she offended someone here.

"Hey!"

Mu Chen and Nine Nether had only taken a few steps, before a crisp sound rang out behind them. It was the girl dressed in white, quickly chasing after them, her pretty face flushed red.

"Uhh... thank you," she managed to stammer.

Mu Chen shook his head as he smiled. "You're bold indeed, to be a freeloader in the City of Trade," he commented.

"I left the house in a hurry and forgot to bring it. It was just an accident... That Century Spiritual Fruit...was too fragrant. I couldn't resist having a bite of it..." The girl dressed in white remarked in a huff, but the longer she spoke, the more guilty her tone became.

"Hey, you helped me this time, and I won't owe people a favor. What is your name, as I will definitely return you the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid." The girl dressed in white glanced at Mu Chen.

Mu Chen was about to decline, but as he saw the serious gaze of the girl, he smiled and relented, then replied, "Mu Chen."

He then turned to leave, without saying anything more.

The girl dressed in white waved, then called out, "My name is Lin Jing."

Chapter 652: Lin Jing

On the crowded street, Nine Nether looked back and then said to Mu Chen abruptly, "That girl seems to be unusual."

"Huh?"

Mu Chen was puzzled.

"She should be slightly younger than you, but probably no weaker." Nine Nether squinted her lovely eyes partially and said softly, "Also, since she has accomplished so much at this age, she has definitely been receiving perfect guidance. This means that her family background should be extraordinary."

Surprise flashed in Mu Chen's eyes. He did not actually notice that the girl in white clothes had hidden herself so deeply. He also did not ponder it much. He was in the Great Thousand World where many powerful people remained in concealment. Without any family background, such a girl who was lacking in social experience would not dare to go outside and act freely anyway.

"I didn't think that much," Mu Chen said and smiled. Indeed, when he went forward to help previously, he did not think; he just did not want to see such a delicate and pretty girl get into unnecessary trouble.

After all, he had already heard some time ago that there were many hidden talents in the Continent of Trade. Even if that girl in white did have some background, she would not be able to get past that kind of conflict easily.

Nine Nether smiled faintly and did not say anything else.

The two walked past a few streets and then turned a corner. Immediately, the view before them broadened up. In front of them, a hall as large as a mountain stood in silence. A tremendous amount of spiritual energy emanated from it and actually formed a column of light that soared up into the clouds.

Outside the hall, a large number of people flooded in. Looking at the size

of the crowd, even Mu Chen was somewhat dumbstruck in spite of himself.

"The Trading and Auction House..." Nine Nether raised her head and gazed at the huge golden words on the exterior of the hall. Smiling, she said, "This should be the place."

"What an enormous scale," Mu Chen exclaimed. The hall was like a prehistoric behemoth which had opened its mouth wide and engulfed the vast number of people inside. Even so, it did not seem to be packed at all.

"This hall..."

Staring at the hall, Mu Chen's eyes suddenly flashed and his surprise became more intense. He realized that the hall seemed to be emitting a strange fluctuation.

Amazement also flashed in Nine Nether's eyes as she said, "This is a Divine Artifact. Such an incredible effort. They actually used a Divine Artifact as an auction hall..."

The hall was actually not a building but was converted from a Divine Artifact. It was no wonder it had that special fluctuation.

"Terrific!" Mu Chen couldn't help giving his compliment.

"Let's go."

Waving her hand, Nine Nether brought Mu Chen into the magnificent hall. Entering the hall, they could clearly feel that the space around them rippled. The scene before them blurred slightly and then became clear.

The hall was unusually lit, and its floor was formed from dazzling crystals. Inside, people filled the place. However, even though so many people gathered there, it did not seem to be crowded at all. Instead, it felt very spacious.

Mu Chen walked into the hall and looked around. He exclaimed like a rural villager entering a large city. The place was many times larger than the Spiritual Values Hall in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy and also looked more spectacular.

On the other hand, Nine Nether did not stop for long. She gave ten drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid to the lady at the counter and then took two tickets for the auction. Pulling Mu Chen along, they crossed the hall and entered a light door.

Through the light door was a place that looked like an arena. Its scale was so huge, it could accommodate over 100,000 people. At the moment, the place was already filled with people. Its popularity was incredible.

Mu Chen pursed his lips but did not exclaim again because he was already somewhat numb.

Nine Nether searched for seats while Mu Chen turned his head slightly and looked to his right. There was another light door not far away through which a few people were slowly walking.

When those few people entered, Mu Chen could clearly feel that many people were looking at them, and the looks were somewhat intense.

Mu Chen also looked at them. There was a lady in a fox fur coat whose body was exceptionally hot and enchanting. She had fiery red hair, and a charming smile on her white, oval face that caused many to feel attracted.

Her slim waist turned like a snake as she slowly walked over. Many eyes followed her delicate steps.

Behind the lady, there was an ordinary-looking middle-aged man. He was always just one step away from the lady. As he lifted his head occasionally, a frightening look could be briefly seen.

Mu Chen stared at the middle-aged man and his heart trembled slightly because he felt some pressure from him. This ordinary-looking middle-aged man was quite strong, and was probably at least a Grade Four Sovereign.

"They are from the Fox Fairy Clan. This clan is one of the top on the Continent of Trade and is extremely strong. They participate in most of the auctions on the continent," Nine Nether said in an emotionless voice.

"This lady should have quite a high status in the Fox Fairy Clan. If not, she would not have a Grade Four Sovereign as a bodyguard."

"Fox Fairy Clan..."

Mu Chem remembered this name in his heart. This was the first strong clan he learned of after coming to the Great Thousand World.

As Mu Chen and Nine Nether were looking at them, the middle-aged man beside the enchanting lady in the fox fur coat seemed to have noticed. He lifted his head and looked at where Mu Chen and Nine Nether were. His eyes stopped at Nine Nether and his steps paused briefly.

Although his action was subtle, the enchanting lady still noticed. She also looked in that direction as if she felt something, and her attractive eyes locked onto Mu Chen and Nine Nether.

Looking at those charming eyes, Mu Chen's heart rate suddenly increased. Even his blood started to flow faster. However, he quickly realized that something was wrong, and his look turned solemn. In his body, it was as if thunder was heard, which completely suppressed the weird feeling.

"Huh?" the lady in the fox fur coat said faintly in surprise. However, she did not do anything else and only smiled gently at Mu Chen and Nine Nether. Then, under the scorching stares of countless people, she walked to the frontmost part of the auction hall, eventually entering a small attic covered with thin muslin. Obviously, ordinary people would not be allowed to go into that kind of place.

After entering the attic, the lady in the fox fur coat finally smiled and said, "Uncle Liu, those two look unfamiliar. They are probably not from the Continent of Trade."

The ordinary-looking middle-aged man said, "That girl is very strong, probably no weaker than me. As for that young man, he should have entered the Sovereign-level as well. It is not easy to have such an accomplishment at that age."

When the lady in the fox fur coat heard the middle-aged man say that Nine Nether was no weaker than he was, she was also briefly surprised. However, her expression returned to normal in a second, and she just nodded slightly, not saying anything else.

Seeing that Mu Chen kept looking at the lady in the fox fur coat as she left, Nine Nether gave out a humph and said, "Stop looking. Based on your ability now, she would probably feel disdain towards you."

Mu Chen was resigned but did not bother to explain. Just as he was about to find a seat and sit down, a familiar clear and angry voice came from the distance. "Scram, I am not interested in men!"

Mu Chen turned around, stunned. At another entrance to the auction hall, he saw the girl in white clothes who was dressed like a man. Her face was turning icy.

In front of her was a young man who was also in white robes. His appearance was somewhat tender, and he was quite handsome. At the moment, his expression was slightly awkward because of the girl's angry words.

He had already seen the girl outside. Although she was dressed like a man, he was a womanizer after all, and could naturally tell the truth with just one look. Furthermore, the girl's exquisite face was emitting an attractive aura. When she grew up, she would definitely be exceptionally beautiful. Therefore, he went forward to strike up a conversation. He did not expect that before he could even speak, he would be scolded very impolitely.

"Ha, girl, I think that there must be a misunderstanding. I have no bad intentions. I saw that you are alone and therefore wanted to invite you to watch this auction with me." However, this tender-looking young man was also not an ordinary playboy. Although he was scolded, he still kept a gentle smile and spoke in an elegant and polite tone.

"Not interested."

His humble attitude was, however, completely useless against the girl in white clothes. She rolled her eyes and rejected him directly, after which, she started to walk away.

The tender-looking young man finally frowned slightly.

Behind him, an emotionless old man in black robes stepped forward, just

blocking the girl in white clothes. He said tonelessly, "He already made the invitation. Girl, you should just accept it."

Seeing the scene, the girl in white clothes raised her eyebrows. But just as she was about to hit the people in front of her with her palm, a hand extended from the side and held her wrist.

The sudden contact made the girl's body stiffen, and she quickly wanted to break free. However, when she saw the familiar face she had met earlier, her struggle weakened.

"Ha, my sister is still immature. I hope that you two will not mind this." Standing in front of the girl in white clothes, Mu Chen smiled at the tender-looking young man and the old man in black robes.

The tender-looking young man squinted slightly and stared at Mu Chen. After which, he saw Nine Nether beside Mu Chen. Immediately, a spark could be seen in the depths of his eyes.

But before he could say anything, the old man in black robes stepped forward, separating him from Nine Nether. He stared at the latter with a cautious look.

Clearly, he had noticed the threat from Nine Nether.

Seeing that, the tender-looking young man lifted his eyebrows. Then, he glanced at Mu Chen and Nine Nether with a faint smile. Without actually saying anything, he smiled, turned around, and walked away. In addition, the place they were going was also an attic at the front of the auction hall.

"These two have an extraordinary background. If I am not mistaken, they should be from the Tian Xuan Hall on the Tianluo Continent," Nine Nether said softly, looking at their backs.

"Tian Xuan Hall?"

"That is also one of the strongest clans on the Tianluo Continent. It is no weaker than our Daluo Territory," Nine Nether said.

Mu Chen shook his head resignedly. He did not expect that before he had even reached the Tianluo Continent, he would have already offended

one of the top clans there. Although the tender-looking young man seemed to be generous, he knew that this kind of person would probably be very stingy.

"Hey, let me go!" Seeing that the two had left, the girl in white clothes, who was called Lin Jing, quickly broke free from Mu Chen's hands. She held her own wrist and stared at Mu Chen with her clever eyes.

Letting go of her, Mu Chen said helplessly, "You are such a troublemaker."

Hearing that, Lin Jing was immediately displeased. She said as if she had been wronged, "What trouble did I make? I don't even know that bastard!

"Also, that bastard actually dared to flirt with me. I am so angry. I must tell this to my dad. No, I will tell Uncle Diao. I will tell Uncle Hu! I will ask them to beat this bastard until he dies or becomes handicapped!"

Lin Jing gritted her teeth and kept scolding. Probably it was her first time encountering someone who was so confident and who dared to flirt with her.

Hearing the scolding from the girl, Mu Chen twitched his mouth resignedly. Without paying attention to her, he and Nine Nether walked directly to the seats in front.

Seeing that Mu Chen had turned around and left, Lin Jing hesitated for a short moment and then also quickly followed them.

Chapter 653: Auction

In the auction hall, there were many people, but it did not seem to be crowded at all. Obviously, the planning had been very perfect. Mu Chen and Nine Nether sat down on the seats near the front.

The seats were made from jade and covered with soft fur. When one sat on them, one could even vaguely feel that a faint spiritual energy would gush into one's body. Clearly, both the jade and the fur were not ordinary.

The decoration in the auction hall indeed far exceeded any of the ones Mu Chen had seen before. After Mu Chen and Nine Nether took their seats, the girl called Lin Jing also sat down beside them. Her appearance was one of pure beauty, and her skin was as white as jade and as delicate as porcelain. At the moment, she was dressed up like a man, but still had a unique beauty that was pretty adorable. However, seeing that she followed immediately, Mu Chen stared at her.

"Don't chase me away. I am just following to take a look." Noticing that Mu Chen was staring at her, Lin Jing quickly put her palms together, and her miserable appearance became lovingly pathetic. But, her bright eyes were only filled with cunning and intelligence, like a little fox.

That, however, did not work on Mu Chen, who said gruffly, "Stop pretending."

"It's fate that we met. You really have no regard for people's feelings," Lin Jing said angrily.

"Since you came, just stay with us. But you must not stir up trouble," Nine Nether, who was at the side, smiled and said, while looking at the girl.

"Sister you are much better." Lin Jing complimented Nine Nether in a sweet tone and said, "Don't worry. As long as other people do not provoke me, I will not make trouble."

Mu Chen twitched his lips, but his eyes were filled with some laughter. Towards the girl that he just knew, he also had a favorable impression.

Otherwise, he would not show up and help her twice. He had to say that a beautiful girl still had an advantage after all, although he did not have any other thoughts at the moment.

After the three sat down, Lin Jing was the first to feel bored, and she started to talk to Mu Chen continuously. However, her voice was very clear, like jade beads falling onto a silver plate, and was exceptionally pleasing to the ears. In fact, from the girl's behavior, her personality was not at all quiet, as her name at first suggested, but rather smart and refreshing.

As they were talking, Mu Chen saw a few groups of people that seemed to be from some strong clans enter the place, one after another. Their statuses were quite high, and they all went into the small attics at the front of the auction hall directly. Obviously, the auction this time had attracted many influential people to the place.

"For this auction, at least five famous clans have come. But I feel that the most threatening people are probably the ones from the Tian Xuan Hall."

Nine Nether said softly, "That guy should have quite a high status in the Tian Xuan Hall. The old man in black robes beside him is also very strong. I think that he is probably at least a grade five sovereign. With such strength, even in the Tian Xuan Hall, he is at least an Elder level."

"Grade five sovereign?" Mu Chen's look sharpened and his face was somewhat solemn. Since such a strong person was sent to protect him, the tender-looking young man must be an important person in the Tian Xuan Hall.

If that person also came for the "Void Great Solar Fruit" and "Undying Divine Leaf", then the situation at the moment would be very tricky. Although Mu Chen had quite some sovereign spiritual liquid, due to the Spiritual Condensing Bowl, that person had the Tian Xuan Hall as his backing, and would definitely be hard to deal with.

"That bastard is from the Tian Xuan Hall?" At the side, Lin Jing overheard the conversation, and gave a soft humph and said, "What's so incredible about that? Don't worry, if he dares to stir up trouble with you, I

will teach him a lesson!"

It seemed that she was angry at this annoying person, who dared to flirt with her.

"Thanks." But towards her words, Mu Chen rolled his eyes in a displeased way. Clearly, he thought that she was only releasing her anger. After all, the Tian Xuan Hall was among the top in the Tianluo Continent, and was extremely powerful.

Mu Chen's attitude immediately caused the girl to raise her eyebrows in anger. However, she quickly realized that she snuck out of her house alone and did not bring anything else. Thus, she gritted her teeth and humphed.

As time passed, the atmosphere in the auction hall gradually reached its climax. Eventually, a light column shot upwards from the center of the auction hall, as if a bell ring had spread.Countless people stared at the place.

In the light column, an old man in white robes appeared. The old man had white hair, a white beard, and his face was solemn and unsmiling, giving people a feeling that he was extremely stern. Generally speaking, people with this kind of personality were not suitable to host an auction. However, when he appeared, the voices in the auction hall quietened, followed by some exclamations.

"This auction is actually hosted by Master Mo Qing. Seems like the standard is quite high."

"You're right. Master Mo Qing is the chief auctioneer in the City of Trade. Whatever treasure it is, he can identify whether it is genuine or falsified, by just taking just one look. On usual auctions, he would not even show up."

"Seems like it was a right choice to come here."

"..."

Hearing the whispering in his surroundings, surprise was also seen in Mu Chen's eyes. He glanced at the old man in white robes, as he did not expect the latter to actually be so famous.

"This old man is about a grade three sovereign," Nine Nether stared at the old man in white robes and said.

Mu Chen twitched his tongue quietly. It was indeed the Great Thousand World, as even a chief auctioneer was a grade three sovereign. If he was in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, he would be one of the strongest Elders. But of course, even in this place, this Master Mo Qing had an extraordinary status.

In the whispering that filled the entire hall, the old man in white robes called Mo Qing scanned around, his eyes stopping at a few attics. Then, he folded his hands and said, "It's nice to meet all of you. The auction today officially starts now."

"Maybe all of you already know my rules. Whenever I hold an auction, only ten items will be sold. However, I think that their quality will make all of you satisfied."

The words from the old man in white robes contained some arrogance, but nobody refuted him. Clearly, they already knew that the master had some rules.

"Interesting." Mu Chen also smiled. It was his first time seeing such a unique auctioneer, who would sell only ten items. In that case, the items should have been picked carefully. This caused him to be somewhat curious as well. He really wanted to see how rare the ten treasures picked by this master would be.

Under the many anticipating stares, the old man in white robes closed his palm and a light ball appeared. In the light ball, there was actually a small boat, which was emitting a seemingly infinite amount of light. Faintly, there were some space fluctuations coming from it.

"This is a space boat, a low rank divine artifact. It has no offensive powers, but when it is travelling at maximum speed, even a grade six sovereign will find it difficult to follow," Master Mo Qing smiled faintly and said. "The starting bid is two thousand drops of sovereign spiritual liquid."

Everyone started to exclaim. It was actually a speed type divine artifact.

Although it was only a low rank one, and also had no offensive powers, its speed, which was even faster than a grade six sovereign, was astonishing.

As long as a person had this kind of a divine artifact, even if he was hunted down, it would be very easy for him to escape. Hence, although this divine artifact had no offensive powers, its speed was enough to make up for it.

Seeing that, Mu Chen also felt exceptionally tempted. However, its price, which was at two thousand sovereign spiritual liquid, made him give up on his thought. After all, the amount of sovereign spiritual liquid he had was not so abundant that he could spend extravagantly. He had to wait for the two treasures that he needed to appear.

"Two thousand and one hundred!"

There were many strong people in the place, who wanted the space boat. After all, life is the most important thing in the world. After having this kind of escape artifact, one would obviously be much safer.

"Two thousand and three hundred!"

"Two thousand and five hundred!"

"..."

In just one minute, the price of the space boat had already increased rapidly, rising from two thousand sovereign spiritual liquid to three thousand! Only after that, the voices calling for outbids decreased gradually. After all, three thousand drops of sovereign spiritual liquid was already not a small amount. If a grade five sovereign was here, he would also need to condense continuously for almost half a year to get that amount.

In the end, the space boat was sold to a middle-aged man with a skinny face at the price of three thousand and one hundred drops of sovereign spiritual liquid. Watching this, Mu Chen also gave him compliments in silence. It seemed that he indeed was not wasting his time by coming to the auction, as the treasures here were indeed eye-opening.

"The second auction item..."

After the bidding ended, the old man in white robes closed his palm, and yet another light ball rose up. In the light ball, a fiery red liquid was flowing. The liquid was like the magma, and as it flew, a flame was drifting and an abnormally intense heat was emitted, causing the temperature of the entire auction hall to increase.

"This is the Heavenly Fire Chalcedony. It is formed from the fire jade that condenses at the deepest part of the magma sea. Only when the fire jade condenses for ten thousand years, can it turn into the chalcedony. In the 99 Sovereign Celestial Bodies, it is said that some of the stronger celestial bodies need this item," introduced the auctioneer. "The starting bid is one thousand drops of sovereign spiritual liquid."

Countless stares were projected onto the item. This Heavenly Fire Chalcedony was indeed not ordinary, but its uses were limited. Only those, who were cultivating the sovereign celestial bodies that required this item, would need it urgently.

After scanning the item, Mu Chen stopped looking at it. Obviously, he was uninterested in it. Then, he turned his head slightly and was momentarily stunned, because at the moment, Lin Jing, who was beside him, was starting at the Heavenly Fire Chalcedony eagerly, her white teeth biting gently on her lips. She was actually interested in the item.

However, the eager Lin Jing very quickly lowered her head unhappily, because she simply did not have that much sovereign spiritual liquid for bidding. Although she needed the item, the girl would not ask for help from Mu Chen recklessly. After all, she knew clearly that one thousand sovereign spiritual liquid was not a small amount to everyone.

She bit her rosy lips, then turned her head around stubbornly. As long as it was out of sight, then it was out of mind.

Beside her, Mu Chen saw her reactions by using the corners of his eyes, which cause him to want to laugh uncontrollably. However, he still sat indifferently and his hand rubbed on the jade armrest, as if he had no intentions to help.

Chapter 654: Void Great Solar Fruit

"One thousand and two hundred!"

"One thousand and five hundred!"

"..."

Although the uses of the Heavenly Fire Chalcedony were somewhat uncommon, it was a rare natural treasure after all, so quite a number of people were interested in it. Therefore, in just one minute, the price increased to around 1,700 drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid.

Lin Jing sat on the chair, dispirited. She rested her adorable chin on her palms and gritted her teeth. Looking at those who were competing for the item so intensely, she remarked bitterly, "If I hadn't left my house in such a rush, I would use the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid to smash all of you to death!"

Mu Chen rubbed his palm on the jade armrest. Scanning around the hall, he observed that all those interested in this Heavenly Fire Chalcedony did not seem to be from big clans. This could be inferred from the ways they outbid one another. Those who were very wealthy would not increase the price by such marginal amounts.

This allowed Mu Chen to heave a gentle sigh of relief.

The bidding gradually continued for a few minutes. The price finally stopped at 2,300 drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid.

Seeing that the bidding had paused, the old man in white robes waited for a while and then wanted to raise his hand to announce the winner. At the moment, Lin Jing had already turned her face away in resentment.

"Two thousand and five hundred," Mu Chen finally declared with a smile.

He drew some surprised looks. Lin Jing was even more stunned. She turned around and gaped at Mu Chen, astounded. Then, she bit her pink lips and muttered something to herself.

The man who had previously raised the price to 2,300 drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid frowned slightly and hesitated for a moment, but did not call for another bid. That was because the price was already the maximum he could afford.

Looking at the situation, the old man in white robes waved his sleeves, and the ring of a bell spread in the auction hall indicating that this Heavenly Fire Chalcedony had been sold successfully.

The auction continued.

Lin Jing's clever eyes moved back and forth, but her face seemed to be somewhat bashful. Her hand twisted the folding fan continuously.

She did not go up and question why Mu Chen had purchased the Heavenly Fire Chalcedony. She did not want to be humiliated in case she was just flattering herself by thinking that Mu Chen bought the item for her.

With a bantering attitude, Mu Chen waited for quite a while. Seeing that she could actually hold back, he laughed uncontrollably and revealed, "This is indeed for you."

Lin Jing blushed and replied, "Thanks. I am also cultivating the Sovereign Celestial Body, and need a lot of similar chalcedony..."

Hearing the conversation, Nine Nether glanced at Lin Jing and a strange look flashed in her eyes. She clearly heard everything that the girl had said; a lot of similar chalcedony.

Although some of the Sovereign Celestial Bodies indeed required the Heavenly Fire Chalcedony to cultivate, there were only a few that would require that much chalcedony, such as the Heavenly Chalcedony Celestial Body, which was ranked 63rd in the 99 Sovereign Celestial Bodies. This particular Sovereign Celestial Body needed chalcedony containing different elements, and the Heavenly Fire Chalcedony was one of them.

If Lin Jing was really preparing to cultivate the Heavenly Chalcedony Celestial Body, her background would probably be quite shocking, because a Sovereign Celestial Body that was ranked that high would have a great

attraction towards grade seven, or even grade eight Sovereigns.

Moreover, although this Heavenly Chalcedony Celestial Body was weaker than those Superb Celestial Bodies whose ranks were even higher, it was most appropriate for a person who had just been promoted to the Sovereign-level.

That was because a Sovereign Celestial Body that was too powerful would definitely be difficult to control, while one that was too weak would also be inappropriate. Therefore, her family obviously had considered everything before asking her to cultivate the Heavenly Chalcedony Celestial Body.

Mu Chen did not think as much as Nine Nether did. After all, he was not too familiar with Sovereign Celestial Bodies. At once, he only asked in a surprised tone, "Your family members didn't prepare all the materials for you?"

The girl should have quite a strong family background. Although the Heavenly Fire Chalcedony was rare, it should not cause her so many difficulties.

"I rely on myself. If I needed them to prepare everything for me, how uninteresting would that be?" Lin Jing answered, supporting her chin and swinging her slender legs.

Mu Chen shook his head resignedly.

"Oh yeah. I said I would not owe someone a favor unnecessarily." Seeming to have thought of something, Lin Jing suddenly removed a jade pendant tied to a red string from around her white, slender neck.

The jade pendant was milky in color, as if a liquid were flowing inside it. On the whole, it seemed to be exceptionally simple, but there seemed to be an indescribable fluctuation emanating from it.

"This is a protective spiritual jade, and it will be automatically activated when you are in the most dangerous situation. As long as the other party does not exceed a Grade Five Sovereign in strength, it will be able to block a fatal blow for you."

Mu Chen and Nine Nether both paused in amazement, and the former was soon visibly interested. The seemingly simple jade pendant was actually so strong, it could defend the fatal attack of a Grade Five Sovereign.

"Forget it. This was prepared for you by your family. I will not take it away." Eventually, Mu Chen shook his head. Smiling, he added, "In addition, the price of your protective spiritual jade is probably higher than the Heavenly Fire Chalcedony."

"No way. If you don't want it, I will also not take the Heavenly Fire Chalcedony." Lin Jing was unusually stubborn. She stared at Mu Chen seriously and was obviously not joking.

This girl had her principles.

"Also, you don't need to worry about me. I still have more of the protective spiritual jade with me. Otherwise, how would I dare to secretly sneak out?" Lin Jing laughed cunningly, raising her wrist at Mu Chen. On her white wrist hung a small, simple-looking jade pendant.

Mu Chen was completely speechless. Eventually, he sighed faintly. Children from a rich family were indeed fortunate. She could wear such precious protective spiritual jades all over her body, and this made him feel like he was almost naked. If he had not obtained the Spiritual Condensing Bowl by luck, he would probably not even have the wealth to enter the place...

"Here." Lin Jing passed over the protective spiritual jade to Mu Chen.

"After all the twists and turns, actually it's me who gained." Mu Chen gave a bitter smile but was no longer hesitant. Reaching out to take the protective spiritual jade, he sighed with a complicated emotion.

"Stop sighing in despair, Mu Chen. You are really a good friend!" Lin Jing assured him, laughing. Then, she gave a thumbs-up to Mu Chen, her fingertip looking as round and cute as a pearl.

Clearly, Mu Chen buying the Heavenly Fire Chalcedony for her had caused her to have a good impression of him. After all, not everyone

would spend over 2,000 drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid to buy something that he did not need for someone whom he just got to know.

Furthermore, being equally intelligent, she could feel that Mu Chen was not that rich to the extent where he could ignore 2,000 drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid. This was exactly why it was commendable.

Although the girl was young, her experience was probably beyond Mu Chen's imagination. She was bright and proud, but she was also obviously clever, and not really just casual and slow-witted.

Mu Chen kept the protective spiritual jade, but did not say anything to Lin Jing, who seemed to be increasingly lively and excited. He only lifted his head and stared at the front. While they had been talking, three or four items were already successfully sold.

These treasures included Divine Artifacts and Divine Techniques. None were ordinary, which therefore led to quite an intense competition. This caused the atmosphere in the auction hall to surge.

However, the Void Great Solar Fruit and Undying Divine Leaf that Mu Chen was anticipating had yet to appear.

This caused him to frown slightly, because he understood that the later an item appeared, the more he would have to pay for it. Of course, most importantly, the many influential characters in the attics at the front had not called out a bid even once.

At the moment, because he had unlocked part of the seals in the Spiritual Condensing Bowl, he had a total of 18,000 drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid in his possession. This was not a small amount, but he was still not very confident that he could obtain the two treasures in the end.

Time slowly passed as Mu Chen waited urgently. When seven auction items had been successfully sold, Mu Chen's eyes finally brightened all of a sudden.

That was because he saw that on the stage, an extremely eye-catching ball of light appeared in the hands of the old man in white robes. The ball

of light was like the scorching rising sun and actually enveloped the entire auction hall.

A unique fluctuation started to fill the place.

The whole auction hall went into a temporary silence, and many stared with burning looks at the radiant light. In the depth of the light, they could see a fruit burning in a milky white flame, and an infinite amount of light was radiating out.

Mu Chen stared at the fruit in anticipation, and even his body straightened. His heart was filled with excitement. He finally found the Void Great Solar Fruit.

While Mu Chen was staring avidly at the Void Great Solar Fruit, some activity could also be noticed from the attics at the front. Many people were focused on the object. Clearly, their attention had been drawn.

"This is a Void Great Solar Fruit. I think that everyone has heard of it before. If you can refine it, a Spiritual Sun will condense in your Sovereign Sea. Under the radiation from the Spiritual Sun, the spiritual energy in the Sovereign Sea will be combined with the power of the Solar Flame, causing your own spiritual energy to be more powerful.

"I think I don't need to tell you directly how precious it is. The starting bid for this Void Great Solar Fruit is 7,000 drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid!"

When Mo Qing finished his speech, many shocked voices could instantly be heard. The high price had caused many people to kill off their thoughts of bidding. Nevertheless, they still stared with a desiring look in spite of themselves. After all, such a treasure that could increase the power of spiritual energy was very uncommon.

"Seven thousand drops of sovereign spiritual liquid."

Hearing the price, Mu Chen's heart also sank slightly. This was only the starting bid and to obtain the item, there would certainly be a round of intense competition. He did not know what the price would be by the time the bidding stopped.

Puff.

Mu Chen took a deep breath and his look turned sharp. Anyway, no matter what happened, he would not give up easily.

If Mu Chen missed the item on this occasion, he would have no way of knowing when he could finish cultivating the Great Solar Undying Body.

Chapter 655: Head-to-head

Endless light rays enveloped the vast auction site, but even so, they could not outshine those passionate eyes from the Void Great Solar Fruit, as the rareness of it was far beyond the previous Heavenly Fire Chalcedony.

Mu Chen was also staring at the scene. But, he quickly adjusted his mindset with a deep breath. Mu Chen was feeling uptight, as he observed the premises. He noticed some slight commotions coming from those lofts in front of him, as soon as he had completely gathered his vision.

Then, his heart sank. As he had expected, those strong-funding fellows were all eyeing the Void Great Solar Fruit. This natural treasure, known for boosting up the power of spiritual energy, was indeed a strong temptation to all the top powers in the Sovereign-level.

On the auction platform, Mo Qing read the movements on the ground, before he faintly said, "Everyone, we will begin our auction."

As soon as he finished making his announcement, the entire scene was silent. Seven thousand drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid was no small amount for a starting bid. Thus, not many people could participate in this auction.

Once the auction started, it was natural to observe the situation first. But, the silence did not last for too long, as someone finally shouted out a first bid.

"7,300!"

The one who made the bid was a middle-aged man with a cold face. Apparently, he had some extraordinary combat strength, as he was surrounded by a strong presence of Spiritual Energy fluctuation. But his bid amount did not maintain for too long before it finally got overbid.

"7,500!"

And, again.

"7,800!"

The continuous bidding broke the silence, as the entire auction ground started to get hyped up. A few interested bidders could not hang in there anymore, throwing off their bids for the Void Great Solar Fruit.

Within a few minutes, the bid price soared to 8,500. Some people were envious about the cost of such a vast amount of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid, which was sufficient to speed up their cultivation by numerous times.

The bidding amount went up and up, the number of bidders who could afford such a price being reduced tremendously. But, almost everyone knew that the big players were coming soon.

"9,500."

When a lazy, yet feminine and soft voice rang out with this new bid, almost everyone looked up at the small loft ahead. A layer of tulle was lifted, and a spellbinding and dazzling face showed up from behind it.

"Look, it's the Heart Fox Fairy from the Fox Fairy Clan."

"She is actually interested in the Void Great Solar Fruit."

With an alluring face that could make any hearts throb, she invited whisperings from the ground, as they had all heard about the great beauty of this spellbinding girl. The auction ground immediately quieted down after the alluring girl named Heart Fox Fairy placed her bid. Even those, who had the previous intentions to bid, stopped, as they did not want to mess with this girl from the Fox Fairy Clan.

Mu Chen could not help but sigh at this scene, as he yelled out, "10,000!"

The commotion soared when his voice rang out with the price. Countless audiences looked into his direction with surprise, finally casting their gazes on Mu Chen, their looks filled with shock and dismay.

Everyone was guessing about his background, as 10,000 of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid was simply not affordable for everyone. Although they looked at him with surprise, he remained calm, fixing his eyes on the Void Great Solar Fruit that was on the auction platform, and not paying attention to anyone else.

Up in the loft, Heart Fox Fairy shifted her peach-eyed enchanting gaze slowly to Mu Chen, looking at him with astonishment. Mu Chen sensed her gaze, then tilted his face and gave her an apologetic smile.

Heart Fox Fairy returned to him her own enchanting smile. Her beautiful eyes flickered coyly, not revealing what she was thinking about. But, judging by her actions, it seemed like she had no intention to continue her bidding.

"Heh, since our Heart Fox Fairy has no great interest in the Void Great Solar Fruit, then allow me to do so." While Heart Fox Fairy remained silent, a chuckle came from another loft that was not far away. The previous juvenile man, with a soft and cold appearance, walked in slowly, wearing a radiant smile and bowing at Heart Fox Fairy with his fist up.

"Hehe, I have too little capital to compete with all of you. If the Young Hall Master from Xuan Tian Hall has an interest in it, I will gladly withdraw," Heart Fox Fairy said, as she looked at the juvenile man, then pursed her red lips with a smile.

That juvenile man bowed to her in a gentlemanly manner once again, before he turned to the direction where Mu Chen was, with a smile on his soft and cold face, and said, "11,000."

Upon his appearance, Mu Chen frowned at him.

"He is really an annoying asshole." Lin Jing could not help but sneer, when she saw him. As this juvenile had teased her previously, she held a grudge toward him. The anger showed up on her face, as she saw that he was in Mu Chen's way now.

"Mu Chen, just win against him with the bids! Even if I had no Sovereign Spiritual Liquid, at most, I would sell some things for it!" Lin Jing gritted her teeth and said angrily.

"Don't worry, if he wishes to play with us, we will just play along with him." Mu Chen smiled with ease, as a cold radiance surfaced in his eyes. Although this juvenile had some status in Xuan Tian Hall, he did not believe that he had the capability to use a few ten thousands of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid.

After all, Sovereign Spiritual Liquid was not just some plain water! In any case, he was determined to get this Void Great Solar Fruit.

A new bid rang out from Mu Chen: "12,000!" Mu Chen was resting on the chair, projecting his calm voice across the vast auction premise. Many people felt astonished, with their jaws dropping, as they had not expected this from Mu Chen.

On the loft, the juvenile was squinting both his eyes, which flickered with a deep cold radiance. He was feeling annoyed by the interference of Mu Chen, as he could tell that Mu Chen was not in league with the lady in white.

Moreover, Mu Chen only possessed the strength that could barely make it to the Sovereign-level. If it wasn't for that beautiful lady standing beside him, who he was wary of, he could have thrown him out. Who knew that Mu Chen would reach out for a yard, after taking an inch by going against him?

"Young Hall Master, the purpose of your trip to this city is not the Void Great Solar Fruit." just before the juvenile man could bid again, the black-robe old man behind him suddenly spoke.

"I know." He knit his eyebrow slightly in response, yet raised his hand and called out, "13,000!"

"I just want to see how far can this ignorant fellow will go, acting up in this way!" He had a chilly smile on his face. To him, Mu Chen was just making an empty show of his strength.

"15,000."

Before his 15,000 new bid even completely tapered in the air, as his voice ended, Mu Chen outbid him with a direct bid of 2,000 worth of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid. This astounded everyone on the floor, including the Heart Fox Fairy, who also looked at Mu Chen with astonishment. This young man clearly had superior generosity and courage.

The face of the juvenile turned slightly pale, and his eyes turned cold again. He looked at Mu Chen icily, but the latter kept his gaze only on the

Void Great Solar Fruit, which was on the auction platform.

He twitched his mouth, suppressed his killing desire, and wanted to bid again.

"Little Hall Master!" The black-robe old man frowned, as he shouted in a deep voice.

The cold juvenile clenched his fist and bit his lips. He swallowed the words he wanted to say in the end, but his eyes were even colder and scarier than before.

He said with a low and cold voice, "Elder Mu, keep this fellow in your mind. The things that I want are not things that can be snatched by anyone."

The black-robe elder nodded his head slightly, a cruel smile curling at the side of his lips, and said, "Little Hall Master, don't worry. Just take it as a sign that he is kind-hearted enough to spend such a huge amount of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid to buy that Void Great Solar Fruit for you."

The cold and angry expression on the juvenile faded off slightly, as he began to smile chillingly, keeping his silence. When Mu Chen raised his bid to 15,000, no one wished to bid against him, as they probably had been struck dumbfounded by his boldness. After a short wait, the Void Great Solar Fruit was finally auctioned successfully by Mu Chen.

When Mo Qing announced the auction results, Mu Chen finally placed the stone in his heart down. But, he immediately sensed a cold gaze being directed at him, so he looked back quickly, staring at the juvenile in his loft, with those same cold eyes.

If it were not for that fellow, who had come in and stirred up such a mess, Mu Chen would not have needed to raise the bid price to such an extent. And, if it were not for such an amount having been spent, he would have some allowance remaining to bid for the next item, the Undying Divine Leaf. But, now he had exhausted a significant amount of the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid, so it would be too hard on the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid, should he attempt to bid for the upcoming Undying Divine Leaf.

"That fellow probably wants to kill you now," Nine Nether suddenly spoke, as a surge of coldness flashed in her beautiful eyes.

Mu Chen nodded. Although the black-robe elder beside him had a strength of Grade Five Sovereign, it was still hard to win against Nine Nether, as she was ultimately the real divine beast. As for the juvenile man, his strength should be at Grade One Sovereign. So, even if they were to fight, Mu Chen was not afraid of him at all.

After he had spun his thoughts in his mind, Mu Chen turned his focus to gaze on the auction platform. At this moment, Master Mo Qing had taken out the ninth auction item of the day.

As Mu Chen had expected, the ninth item was the last ingredient that was required for his cultivation of The Great Solar Undying Body: the Undying Divine Leaf.

Chapter 656: Undying Divine Leaf

A glowing light ball appeared in the dry hands of Master Mo Qing. It was a palm-sized, dark yellow dead leaf with veins running through it. The leaf was not very eye-catching, and if it had not been taken out by Master Mo Qing, no one would have ever recognized it as the rumored Undying Divine Leaf.

On this vast land of the world there was a kind of deity tree known as the Undying Divine Tree. The lifespan of this tree was unbelievably long. Even while the universe underwent numerous catastrophic disasters, the tree remained standing between heaven and earth.

This type of deity tree only sheds a leaf once every thousand years. Thus it was named the Undying Divine Leaf. It was rumored that the leaf could produce a "leaf substitute" allowing someone to be reborn once.

That was why many top powers were chasing after the Undying Divine Leaf. After all, in this world there were many unique treasures but an individual only had one life.

Hence, whenever the Undying Divine Leaf appeared, top powers fought for it without any hesitation regardless of the price.

In the auction, the eyes of the participants were filled with passion and greed. If fighting in this place were an easy thing to do, someone would have lost their mind and resorted to thieving.

On the auction stage, Master Mo Qing looked into eyes that were filled with greed and calmly said, "The Undying Divine Leaf starts off with the bidding price of 10,000 drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid."

When he finished speaking, no one moved. Only the sound of breathing could be heard. Most of the common people would not be able to afford the huge amount of 10,000 drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid.

This divine artifact... could only belong to the richest people.

Mu Chen was too stunned when he heard the starting bid, and could only give a bitter smile.

"What should we do now?" Nine Nether frowned. She also had not expected this price. Moreover, it would rise exponentially after a few rounds of bidding.

The remaining Sovereign Spiritual Liquid they had couldn't handle another game of price wars.

Mu Chen fell into silence for a time and then said, "Let's observe first. If it is really out of our range, I have some worldly treasures and some divine artifacts won from the Spiritual Academy Competition. We can still convert them to some Sovereign Spiritual Liquid."

Mu Chen rubbed his forehead. He finally realized how important Sovereign Spiritual Liquid was in this Great Thousand World. He did not feel the importance of it when he was in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, but now he began to realize that without Sovereign Spiritual Liquid, it was hard to move around in the Great Thousand World.

The Spiritual Condensing Bowl he had contained a significant amount of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid, but the seal on it was so strong that even Nine Nether could only decode part of it.

Nine Nether shook her head, too. Although she had saved up quite an amount of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid, she had had to use it to pass her tribulation, so she could not be of much help now.

Lin Jing was standing quietly to the side and said, "Perhaps I can contribute something to exchange for some Sovereign Spiritual Liquid?" Although it only cost Mu Chen 1,000 drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid for her Heavenly Fire Chalcedony, she felt guilty about it.

Mu Chen smiled and said nothing.

While they were talking, the auction for the Undying Divine Leaf had begun. As he expected, those big players sitting in the loft in front were the interested bidders.

They came with strong backings and a large amount of capital, thus within a short amount of time, the auction had hit its climax.

The auction price soared to an amount of 15,000 drops of Sovereign

Spiritual Liquid.

Mu Chen observed the auction calmly. When the bids hit a new high, there were three remaining bidders. Out of the three, two of them were the juvenile man and the Heart Fox Fairy from the Fox Fairy Clan. The last one was an elder in a grey robe. He was kind-looking with a hideous black skeleton embroidered on the sleeves of his robe.

Nine Nether explained the identity of the grey-robed elder. "He should be someone from the Skeleton Demon Mountain. Skeleton Demon Mountain is the lord of the Skeleton Continent. They have strong supreme power, but they still lose out a little to Daluo Territory and Tian Xuan Hall overall."

Mu Chen nodded slightly. Tianluo Continent was, after all, a supercontinent. It was not easy to become one of the top forces on it, and therefore, it could not easily be compared.

Of course, Skeleton Demon Mountain was not an ordinary force, either. Otherwise, the grey-robed elder would not have vied with Tian Xuan Hall and the Fox Fairy Clan directly.

As Mu Chen observed the grey-robed elder, the latter raised the price another 2,000 with his husky voice, instantly causing an uproar from the ground. "Seventeen thousand drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid.

"Heh heh, this is my last call. If you have any bids higher than this, I will let go as a token of respect to the Fox Fairy Clan and Tian Xuan Hall." The grey-robed elder spoke smilingly to the juvenile man and Heart Fox Fairy.

Heart Fox Fairy gave a lazy smile and shook her head gently. "The Elder Gui Ku has already raised the price to such an extent, how would I be able to afford it? I will let the Young Hall Master, Liu Ming from Tian Xuan Hall, follow up with you."

The juvenile man chuckled when he heard that. Looking confident, he smiled. "If that's the case, I shall not reject the order. I will not let people snatch away so easily the things that I want for myself."

As he was saying this, he cast a look in Mu Chen's direction with icy

coldness deep in his eyes.

"Twenty thousand drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid," Liu Ming said and looked at the elder from Skeleton Demon Mountain with a smile.

There were more deep breaths from the spectators in the auction. Looking at the amount he bid, it seemed like Tian Xuan Hall was determined to get this Undying Divine Leaf. A weaker force might not even have 20,000 drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid as their annual profit.

The sudden increment of 3,000 changed the grey-robed elder's expression. He could only fall back to his chair. Apparently, an amount of 20,000 drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid was over what he could afford.

No matter how valuable the Undying Divine Leaf was, it was still unbearable to part with 20,000 drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid for it.

Nine Nether looked at Mu Chen as the auction was about to end. The latter squinted with coldness filling his pitch-black eyes. He shook his head after a short while.

Obviously, he had given up.

"If you miss this chance, there is no guarantee when you can see it again. Your Sovereign Celestial Body will have to wait endlessly." Nine Nether knitted her willow-like eyebrows.

"It is still early to say so," Mu Chen said and smiled.

"What do you mean?" Nine Nether was confused.

"Because someone is as greedy as a wolf, and I am sure he would want to take Void Great Solar Fruit along with him," Mu Chen said calmly. "If someone is eyeing us, why can't we do it, too?"

"Are you thinking about fighting it out with them?" Nine Nether was shocked. She did not expect Mu Chen would have the guts to do it.

"Not me. But they will," Mu Chen said softly. "Are you confident in handling the old man?"

He was referring to the black-robed elder sticking by Liu Ming's side.

"Well, he has the strength of Grade Five Sovereign, which is a level higher than me. But the combat strength of my Divine Beast is much stronger, so he won't be able to do anything to me. But I'm afraid I cannot kill him, either," Nine Nether said.

"That Liu Ming is of Grade One Sovereign strength, and he must have cultivated his Sovereign Celestial Body. On the surface, he may seem to be stronger than me, so if he gets that elder to hold you up, he would think that he could easily finish me off."

Mu Chen laughed and continued, "Judging from the way he bids, he is someone of arrogance and likes to seek revenge for the smallest grievance. I have caused him to lose face just now, so I'm sure he won't let me off. Seems like it will not be easy to leave this place by then."

"Let them try." A cold radiance flickered in Nine Nether's eyes. If that lad really dared to take them on, she did not mind letting him go for gold only to come up short.

Mu Chen smiled, but there was no warmth in his smile. He did not want to make a fuss out of it, but that did not mean he was afraid to. If Liu Ming really made a move, he would have the perfect excuse to "borrow" the Undying Divine Leaf.

He was not afraid of failure. At most he could ask Nine Nether to run with her actual body. Given the speed of Nine Netherworld Bird, even the black-robed elder with the strength of Grade Five Sovereign could never lay a finger on them.

While they were talking, the auction for the Undying Divine Leaf had come to an end. Liu Ming won the auction without much trouble. The skyrocketing amount of 20,000 was sufficient to keep people away from it.

On the auction table, Master Mo Qing waved his sleeve, and a bell rang. The Undying Divine Leaf now officially belonged to Liu Ming.

Liu Ming laughed with satisfaction upon seeing this. He stroked the armchair's handle slowly and narrowed his eyes. He cast a glance in Mu Chen's direction and mumbled, "This brat who dared to fight with me is

really courting his own death."

Dong.

Another bell rang in the auction house. This time, numerous participants sat up straight. Even the veils were drawn back on those lofts as multiple gazes stared closely at the auction table.

They knew the next upcoming item was the highlight of the entire auction for the day.

There were many strong forces who had actually come to this auction for it.

Mu Chen looked up at the same time and stared at the auction table curiously. He also wanted to know what kind of treasure could be lined up behind the Void Great Solar Fruit and Undying Divine Leaf.

Master Mo Qing held up his hand under the fiery gazes. A golden glow appeared on his palm, drawing the attention of all the participants.

Chapter 657: Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art

On the auction table, a golden scroll appeared in the hand of Master Mo Qing, arriving with a golden glow. As though it had been passed down since ancient times, the scroll seemed to be very old, exuding a long-abandoned smell.

As the golden light flowed, an awe-inspiring dragon seemed to be taking shape. Countless eyes stared closely at the golden scroll, as they could tell that it was an extraordinary item.

Under these gazes, Mo Qing waved the golden scroll gently in his hand, projecting his firm voice across the entire auction arena, "This is a scroll that contains divine technique, which was derived from the Ancient Divine Book. It is slightly incomplete, so I can only say that it is almost a perfect Divine Art. But, it does have boundless potential, so if anyone can comprehend the profoundness in it, and practice it successfully, I believe that it is going to be a power that can be comparable to a perfect Divine Art, or even surpass it."

"A divine technique that can surpass a perfect Divine Art?"

Most of the people felt shocked, as generally, a perfect Divine Art was placed within most of the top forces within a continent, deemed to be a clan treasure. As such, only the core members with high positions in the clan could practice it. And now, Mo Qing actually said that it was almost a perfect Divine Art, and that it could even surpass a perfect Divine Art?

Mu Chen also was shocked upon hearing these words. He gently knit his eyebrows, as he had not forgotten what Mo Qing had said about its possibilities, should anyone be able to comprehend and practice it successfully...

"Hehe, Master Mo Qing, do you mean that it is not easy to learn this so-called close-to perfect Divine Art?" Mu Chen had the same question in his mind, when a soft alluring voice rang out. Heart Fox Fairy from the Fox

Fairy Clan was asking her question, smiling. Apparently, she was also meticulous enough to take notice.

"Heh, you are sharp," Mo Qing smiled with a nod and said. "That's true. So far, none have managed to practice successfully. In my opinion, it is even more profound and unpredictable in its cultivation level, when compared to the rest of the real perfect Divine Art."

His words caused a stir on the spot. Had no one truly ever practiced such a divine technique successfully before?

But, subsequently, they understood that, if there were anyone who could practice this successfully, the owner would not have placed the item up for auction. Such a tremendous divine technique could be the most robust technique, and as such, it could act as a trump card.

"Oh?" Liu Ming stood up with a smile. He observed the golden manuscript closely, with interest. "I have never encountered a divine technique that could not be practiced. I shall give it a try today," he smiled and said.

Although it must have been thanks to all of the resources provided by Tian Xuan Hall that Liu Ming was able to hit Grade One Sovereign at his age, it must also be explained by his own natural giftings. That is why, as conceited as he was, he did not believe that there would be any divine technique that he could not master.

Almost all of the people from the front loft cast their gazes over toward him with great interest. If what Mo Qing had said was true, such a high-potential divine technique would have the utmost benefit to the forces behind it.

"This divine technique is known as the Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art. The bidding will start at 20,000 Sovereign Spiritual Liquid." The faint voice of Mo Qing reverberated throughout the venue, and the skyrocketing bid once again made many faces twitch.

Mu Chen could only curl his lips. Even though he had a great interest in the Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art, he could not afford it. The ones with substantial capital to spend must be those top powers, who had a strong

backing behind them.

Although the expensive price tag of this divine technique could discourage many people, the fight had intensified in comparison to the previous auction items. Those who had not bid in the earlier phases were the big players, who had conserved their capital, waiting for this very round.

For a moment, voices calling out for bids came one after another. Countless people were quite envious and jealous of the rising price tag. Within minutes, the price of the scroll had hit almost 30,000 Sovereign Spiritual Liquid!

The price war for the Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art went on for over ten minutes, and it was almost going to end, as the last bid had just surged up to 32,000 Sovereign Spiritual Liquid. And the highest bidder? It was none other than Liu Ming from Tian Xuan Hall.

This result shocked many people, as it looked like his primary purpose for this auction was the Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art. Otherwise, he would not have prepared such a considerable amount of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid beforehand.

Mu Chen was also secretly shocked. By now, he knew how lucky he was to have vied for the Void Great Solar Fruit. Luckily, Liu Ming's target was not the Void Great Solar Fruit. Otherwise, if Liu Ming had really pushed for it, Mu Chen might not have even stood a chance at all, as his capital was just too weak.

When Liu Ming raised his bid to 32,000 Sovereign Spiritual Liquid. After that, no one wished to vie against him anymore. Some of the top powers had pondering looks on their faces, but even they gave up eventually.

Behind the tulle on one of the lofts, Heart Fox Fairy frowned and said, "Liu Ming is really a spendthrift. Even if he is from Tian Xuan Hall, spending such a huge amount of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid must burn a hole in the pocket."

"He is overconfident indeed," a common-looking, middle-aged man said from behind Heart Fox Fairy. "That scroll of Nine Dragon Nine Elephant

Art is actually quite freaky, and not just anyone can practice it. Even though Liu Ming has some talents, he is still yet far from being able to practice this divine technique. Liu Ming is considered as being passable among the younger generation within the Tian Luo Continent, but when compared to his brother, Liu Yan, he is still not there yet."

"Haha, Liu Yan is the candidate for the next Tian Xuan Hall Master. He is quite famous in the Daluo Continent though," Xin Hu smiled alluringly and said.

"Missy is not any weaker than him," the middle-aged man said, laughing.

Heart Fox Fairy smiled radiantly, as she took notice of something in one of the corners at the auction ground. She rested her gaze at Nine Nether, who was beside Mu Chen, then said softly, "That girl seems to be powerful, to be able to reach her level at her age. I wonder which force she belongs to."

"For this answer, I guess Liu Ming will gladly test it out for you," the middle-aged man said.

"Oh?" Heart Fox Fairy raised her eyebrows at first, but then finally understood what he meant. She smiled and said, "Liu Ming is really not magnanimous at all. But, I wonder if he will be snookered."

The auction had ended while they shared these conversations. The Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art was finally won by Liu Ming for the amount of 32,000 Sovereign Spiritual Liquid.

When the bell rang again, everyone in the auction hall sighed softly. All eyes were enviously staring at Liu Ming, who had obviously reaped the most out of this auction.

Liu Ming looked at their expressions, as they all looked at him and smiled immodestly, watching him enjoy being the eye-catchy one, as this allowed him to feel superior and different from the rest. While he was enjoying being the center of attraction, he saw that Mu Chen had stood up not far away from him, expressionlessly. Mu Chen then left immediately, along with Nine Nether and Lin Jing, without even looking in his direction.

Liu Ming watched as they left, a surge of coldness swirling deep in his eyes. His slender fingers brushed softly across the armrest of a jaded stone chair. The armrest was cut off immediately, leaving the place where it had broken off with a sleek, smooth surface.

"Elder Mu, send someone to follow them. I want to know every move of theirs. Although we cannot make our moves in this city, once they leave, I want them to know that not everyone can be messed around with," Liu Ming said faintly.

The black-robed old man nodded slowly behind him. Liu Ming smiled as he saw Heart Fox Fairy walking out from the loft. Her graceful figure and curvy outline filled his heart with warmness. He walked quickly to her, a beaming smile on his face.

--

Mu Chen brought Nine Nether and Lin Jing out of the auction site. He handed over the bulk of the items, and took what he had auctioned for.

Standing in the enclosed room where the auctions items were collected, Mu Chen looked at the fruit, which had a shape of a sun, and let out of long breath. No matter how hard it was, he had gotten another material. Now, he just needed his Undying Divine Leaf in order to cultivate the Great Solar Undying Body.

He was looking forward to it. He wondered how powerful this Sovereign Celestial Body going to be, since it required such a rare treasure to cultivate.

"This is yours." Mu Chen kept his Void Great Solar Fruit, and threw the Heavenly Fire Chalcedony at Lin Jing.

Lin Jing took it delightfully. Although she had seen many treasures before, due to her identity, this was ultimately something she had earned for herself.

"Thank you!" She laughed.

"But it's me who got the better deal." Mu Chen smiled. After all, the Protective Spiritual Jade that Lin Jing had given was much more valuable,

when compared to this Heavenly Fire Chalcedony.

"But we might need to go our separate ways soon," Mu Chen continued, gently warning.

Lin Jing shook her head and said, "We are, after all, friends, right? Will friends abandon each other in times of need?"

Mu Chen paused for a moment, before he finally smiled at the girl, who now had a joyful look on her face.

"Alright, let's go together. If anything goes wrong, we will flee together," he promised.

Chapter 658: Interception

After the auction ended, Mu Chen did not leave the City of Trade immediately. Instead, he found himself a cultivation inn and stayed put in it temporarily. Since a fight was expected, he wanted to make sure that he was in tip-top shape for it.

The exhaustion caused by the non-stop traveling needed to be eliminated as well.

In the spacious guest room...

Mu Chen was sitting with his legs crossed while Nine Nether was standing by the window. She looked out and turned her head to Mu Chen. "Someone is really following us. They were probably sent by Liu Ming."

Mu Chen nodded. "Those with the surname Liu are always up to no good."

Back in the Northern Spiritual Realm, the Lius had given him troubles, too.

After Mu Chen had just finished his sentence, Lin Jing was standing there with her hands on her waist, staring at him angrily. She waved her small fist at him. "My grandma's last name is also Liu!"

Mu Chen felt embarrassed all of a sudden.

Lin Jing sneered. "If my father were to hear this, he would beat you up."

Mu Chen forced a laugh, as he did not expect a word could bring such misfortune to him.

Lin Jing did not think much about what Mu Chen had mindlessly said. She sat down and with her hands on her chin asked excitedly, "When are we leaving?"

She seemed like she could not wait for the upcoming troubles to start.

"We're not in a hurry. We are being watched by Liu Ming now. The longer we stay in the city, the more he will think that we are afraid of him." Mu Chen smiled.

"Confuse your enemy with your weakness when you are in fact stronger than they thought. You are so cunning." Lin Jing gave him a sly grin.

"The enemy is stronger than us. I had to put some thought into it."

Mu Chen smiled while staring at Lin Jing with a more serious look on his face. "You should know that Liu Ming is stronger than us. Although you and I have already started on the Sovereign-level, we have yet to cultivate our own Sovereign Celestial Body so our combat capacity is much weaker. For Nine Nether, she can only stall that Grade Five Sovereign elder. If there is any unexpected situation, you must leave when I ask you to."

Lin Jing was not very happy when she heard this. But after seeing his serious expression, she pursed her lips and said reluctantly, "Alright."

Mu Chen nodded with a smile and said nothing further. He closed his eyes and entered into cultivation mode.

After Nine Nether spoke with Lin Jing for a while, she leaned against the window and rested with her eyes closed. She did not enter into cultivation mode because she had to constantly stay alert no matter whether they were safe in the city or not.

As for Lin Jing, she covered her mouth with her hand while she was yawning. Subsequently, she slept with peace of mind, as if all the dangers were none of her concern.

The night passed quietly.

The next day, Mu Chen did not make any moves until sunset. In general, most people would let their guard down during the intersections of day and night. Consequently, he chose this time to leave the inn together with Nine Nether and Lin Jing. They joined the crowd and made their way to exit the city.

When they left the inn, a juvenile was holding a teacup in one of the tea pavilions within the city. A chilly smile suddenly formed at the corners of his lips.

He waved his hand, and the handmaiden who was giving him a gentle

massage left the room. He stood up with a slight chilliness in his eyes as he looked in the direction where the city gate was.

"What a naive lad! He thinks he can escape from my grasp?" He smirked and swung his hand. The black-robed elder appeared from behind like a ghost.

"Elder Mu, let's get on with it."

The black-robed elder nodded expressionlessly. The air around them suddenly vibrated, and they vanished gradually into thin air.

While they disappeared, Heart Fox Fairy was cuddling a white fox in a courtyard within the city. Suddenly she gave an alluring smile.

"A good show will be on soon." She gently put the white fox down and smiled at the person behind her. "Let's go. We will follow them secretly. I've got a feeling that Liu Ming will not get his way easily."

The common-looking middle-aged man appeared behind her. With a shake of their bodies, they, too, vanished into thin air.

Three groups of people disappeared and left the city quietly without alarming anyone.

A ruby red evening sun was hanging in the sky. Scarlet rays shrouded the land as the temperature cooled.

Shoo.

A rush of air-rending sound rang across the ruby red sky as three light beams swept across it. They were flitting towards somewhere far away at an alarming speed.

They seemed to be pushing their speed to the limit to avoid a pursuer behind them.

Their full speed lasted for almost an hour before they gradually slowed down, and the three of them landed on a hilltop.

Mu Chen raised his head and looked towards the sky behind him. He suddenly smiled and said, "Both of you have been secretly following us for half a day. Aren't you tired?"

"Haha, looks like you knew about it way earlier."

When Mu Chen finished laughing, a soft and gentle voice came from the vast land. On a hilltop not far away, space was slightly twisted, and two figures appeared in the air like ghosts.

It was Liu Ming from Tian Xuan Hall and that Grade Five Sovereign black-robed elder.

He looked at Mu Chen playfully before he started looking at the surroundings. "Oh well, I see you have found a good place for your own grave."

"How do you know it isn't for you?" Mu Chen smiled. In his pitch-dark eyes, a cold, sharp radiance was gathering within.

"Looks like you are very confident of yourself."

Liu Ming said with a faint smile, "If you are feeling confident just because you have a Grade Four Sovereign beauty by your side, I'm afraid you are going to be disappointed."

Liu Ming stretched out his hand towards Mu Chen. "Give me your Void Great Solar Fruit before I get furious. If your attitude pleases me, I might let you off."

Mu Chen did not answer his question. Instead, he asked him back, "How about your Undying Divine Leaf and Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art? Did you bring them along with you?"

The smile on Liu Ming's face gradually disappeared. He looked at Mu Chen expressionlessly. "You have given up your last chance."

"You talk too much." Mu Chen laughed.

"Hehe." Lin Jing was sneering at Liu Ming with her mouth covered, adding to the mockery towards Liu Ming.

"Elder Mu, just do it." Liu Ming looked down a little, and the smile on his face became horrifying. "No mercy for them."

The black-robed elder walked forward, lowering both of his hands in his sleeves. His pale face was exuding chilliness into the air.

A strong and intense Spiritual Energy Windstorm was released from his body. The dark spiritual energy swept the ground, bringing down the temperature drastically. The spiritual energy exuded from the black-robed elder had an extremely chilly fluctuation.

The hilltop he was standing on gradually collapsed under his spiritual fluctuation. A huge crack slowly formed and spread across the entire mountain.

Just a little pressure from spiritual energy could collapse a mountain. The force from a Grade Five Sovereign was that daunting.

Mu Chen watched as his eyes became a little dignified. This was the first time he was facing a Grade Five Sovereign, and that energy was really compelling.

Nine Nether, who was standing beside him, moved swiftly. Her majestic energy exploded while the space twisted. A giant black sparrow, huge enough to conceal the sun, appeared above her.

On the black sparrow, a purple flame was flaring up.

"Divine Beast?"

Liu Ming and the black-robed elder had a stern look in their eyes when the huge black sparrow appeared.

The black-robed elder stared at Nine Nether and said in a husky voice, "No wonder you are confident. That's because your actual body is a Divine Beast."

Usually a Grade Four Sovereign would not dare to compete with a Grade Five Sovereign, as the difference in just one grade was huge. But it was slightly different when it came to a Divine Beast. Having a stronger physical body and some gifted advantages, the powerful Divine Beast could be much stronger than those of the same grade.

Liu Ming knit his eyebrows before he stepped out, locking on Mu Chen with his cold eyes. "Elder Mu, you will suppress her while I will deal personally with this lad."

The black-robed elder nodded. Even though it was beyond his expectation that the girl in front of him was actually a Divine Beast, both of them were still one grade apart in terms of their strength. It may be hard to kill each other, but suppressing should not be too hard.

Liu Ming looked at Mu Chen and said calmly, "I did not feel any Sovereign Celestial Body fluctuation from you. So I think you have not cultivated your own Sovereign Celestial Body, right?"

Mu Chen did not reply.

"Well, that's too bad because you will never get a chance to cultivate it." Liu Ming sighed with false pity. Suddenly he stomped his foot, and his eyes turned ruthless within a split second.

"But before you die, I will show you the true power of the Sovereign Celestial Body!"

Boom!

The vast expanse of spiritual energy soared into the sky, enveloping the sky and the sun. The scarlet spiritual energy that gathered fiercely around Liu Ming eventually turned into a giant scarlet figure about a thousand feet tall.

A fire was burning around that figure and from far, it looked like an enormous lava giant who had just fallen from the sky.

The temperature around the area surged exponentially.

"Heavenly Flame Celestial Body!"

Chapter 659: First Battle in the Great Thousand World

A giant, burning with red flames, stood on the ground, as if it was going to melt the ground away. An indescribably violent scorching storm started to rage.

Liu Ming's body disappeared completely inside of the red giant. Once the sovereign celestial body was activated, it would form the most perfect defense, protecting Liu Ming, who was inside.

The sovereign celestial body provided the perfect means to both attack and defend. This was also the main reason why all of the sovereigns would use a lot of effort to seek it out.

The eyes of the red giant also opened slowly at that exact moment, fire burning within them. In the meantime, Liu Ming's loud voice, which was full of killing intent, spread in the air.

"Now, do you know what is despair?"

The sovereign celestial body provided a very significant enhancement to the combat force of any sovereign. Therefore, when Liu Ming realized that Mu Chen had not even cultivated his sovereign celestial body, he lowered his guard completely.

The sovereign celestial body that he had cultivated was called the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body, which was ranked 97th among the 99 Sovereign Celestial Bodies. Although its rank was almost the lowest, it would still be very foolish for anyone to look down on it.

In the Great Thousand World, all the sovereign celestial bodies in the 99 Sovereign Celestial Bodies ranking were incredibly powerful. After all, the cultivation method for a sovereign celestial body would be considered as top secret for any clan or force, and as such, would not be given to outsiders easily.

Thus, most of the sovereign masters could only obtain the cultivation methods for some ordinary sovereign celestial bodies. Some could even

just use the most common method, condensing the sovereign celestial body with their own spiritual energy. In that case, there would simply not be any special powers involved.

For example, the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body that Liu Ming had cultivated required him to merge his own spiritual energy with the Heavenly Flame perfectly, before he could successfully cultivate it. The more powerful sovereign celestial bodies would provide the user with a shocking power that would really allow him to fight people of higher grades. Hence, after Liu Ming knew that Mu Chen had not cultivated his sovereign celestial body, he believed that the battle already had an unshakable outcome.

"The Heavenly Flame Celestial Body, right..."

Mu Chen also raised his head at that moment, in order to stare solemnly at the red giant, which was now standing on the ground. This Liu Ming obviously had more than just his mouth, as it was also evident that he indeed had a very strong power, too. With such a strong sovereign celestial body, he would probably even be among the top of all the grade one sovereigns.

"Can you deal with it?" Nine Nether gazed at Mu Chen with some worry in her eyes. Originally, she had thought that Liu Ming had only cultivated a normal sovereign celestial body. However, she did not expect that this guy could actually successfully cultivate the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body.

"You just need to stop that old man. Even if we fail, we can run away," Mu Chen said softly.

"Be careful." Nine Nether nodded gently and spoke no more. In her long eyes, some coldness was seen. Then, she moved and appeared directly on top of the giant black sparrow, after which, she flew away quickly into the distance.

Seeing the scene, the old man in black robes also smiled faintly, then moved his body, vanishing directly. When he reappeared, he was already in front of Nine Nether. As he waved his sleeves, a storm started to rage in

the sky.

When Nine Nether and the old man in black robes were facing against each other, Mu Chen also started to focus fully on the red giant before him. This was the first time he was using his own powers to fight a real sovereign master.

"Take care of yourself," Mu Chen said to Lin Jing, before also dashing out. He stood in mid-air and stomped his foot suddenly. The space behind him became somewhat distorted and vague, as if it was a vast sea that could be faintly seen. And in the sea, a frightful purple spiritual energy was whizzing around.

"I'll let you see the true power of the sovereign celestial body!" The sovereign celestial body that Liu Ming had turned into reached out its giant hand, its red finger pushing down in the air.

Bang!

After its finger pressed down, the space seemed to be distorted, and a red beam of light, which was a few thousand feet large, was ejected. The beam of light was exceptionally viscous, like magma. On the beam, a red flame was flaring, and it appeared to be incredibly violent.

This was formed by Liu Ming, who only pointed into the air without much effort. It was far more powerful than the strongest strike from Ji Xuan at that time! This was the real power being displayed after the cultivating of the sovereign celestial body!

Mu Chen lifted his head. Staring at the magma beam, which was now flying towards him, he took in a deep breath. His robes started to swing, even without wind, and were giving out a fluttering sound. His look suddenly became stern and cold.

He waved his sleeves, and a monstrous purple light surged in the distorted space behind him. An eye-catching purple waterfall also swept out, eventually colliding hard with the red spiritual energy.

Dong!

The two smashed into each other, resulting in an earthshaking noise

that spread instantly. A spiritual energy hurricane swept across, resulting in many huge cracks' bursting out on the ground below.

In the sky, Mu Chen still stood facing the wind. His body was covered with brilliant purple light, and purple flames were soaring in his black eyes. He had actually stopped Liu Ming's attack by relying on the powers of his own spiritual energy.

"You can actually block my Heavenly Flame spiritual energy?!" Some surprise appeared in the eyes of the red giant.

Obviously, Liu Ming could not believe in such an outcome. The spiritual energy he had cultivated was fused with the Heavenly Flame, and its power was far stronger than ordinary sovereign spiritual energy, as it was particularly overbearing. However, it was actually blocked by Mu Chen at the moment.

"So, actually, your spiritual energy is somewhat strange."

Liu Ming was very observant, and quickly discovered that the purple spiritual energy that was hovering around Mu Chen was rather special. Even the Heavenly Flame in his spiritual energy could not suppress the purple flames, which were flaring quietly.

On a mountain peak in the distance, two figures also appeared at that moment. A charming lady in a white fox fur coat stared at the battle in the distance, some surprise flashing in her pretty eyes, as she said softly, "The spiritual energy of the young man seems to be quite unique."

"It should have been mixed with a very strong type of flame," the middle-aged man beside her also remarked in surprise. "It's no wonder that, even though he has not cultivated his sovereign celestial body, he dares to challenge Liu Ming. He indeed has great abilities."

"It's too early to make a conclusion now. Liu Ming's Heavenly Flame Celestial Body is not an ordinary sovereign celestial body," the charming lady smiled and said.

Hearing this, the middle-aged man also nodded in agreement. As they spoke, in the distance, Mu Chen suddenly ascended high into the air. In

the next instant, he actually appeared directly in front of the red giant, a red light manifesting from the top of his head, then soaring up into the sky. An astonishing demonic force had filled the air.

"I will not just block your Heavenly Flame spiritual energy, I will also crush your Heavenly Flame Celestial Body!"

The Great Meru Demonic Pillar appeared in the red light. It expanded rapidly, as it moved against the wind and grew to a thousand feet large. It stood in the sky, like a primordial evil artifact.

Mu Chen's hands acted as if they were holding something, and he swung the Great Meru Demonic Pillar directly. Without hesitation, he smacked the pillar forcefully towards the head of the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body. The terrifying power even caused the space to shatter, resulting in some tiny cracks to surface.

With Mu Chen's strength and the aid of the power from the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, the attack was already shockingly powerful. Even Heart Fox Fairy and the middle-aged man, who were watching the battle from afar, were slightly shocked by the attack.

"Humph!"

A cold humph came from the mouth of the red giant. He clenched his fist, and a red flame swept across, which then turned directly into an enormous red, burning spear. The spear then tore through the sky, bringing about a sea of fire, which eventually impacted hard with the Great Meru Demonic Pillar.

Clang!

A thunder-like metallic sound was heard immediately. The sound waves spread like a storm, causing a violent hurricane in the sky. Mu Chen was blown backwards. Every time his feet landed, it would cause the surrounding air to explode directly. While he flew backwards, the red giant actually also backed up a step, trembling, which then caused a mountain to flatten directly!

"Such an unbelievable strength..."

In the distance, the middle-aged man commented on the scene, shocked. Clearly, he had not expected that Mu Chen could actually use the strength of his body to fight directly against Liu Ming, who had summoned his sovereign celestial body.

"This young man is not simple," Heart Fox Fairy said, as some surprise also flashed across her eyes.

A fierce fire started burning in the eyes of the red giant, which Liu Ming had obviously turned into. In the next moment, he stomped his foot, the ground crumbled, and his large body dashed out like lightning.

At that moment, a red flame enveloped the sky, appearing like the radiant clouds at sunset. Obviously, Liu Ming had started to activate the powers of the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body completely.

Against Mu Chen's stubborn resistance, he was already furious.

"You actually want to use your body to fight against my sovereign celestial body. How foolish!"

Liu Ming's gloomy voice spread in the sky like thunder. Just then, the red spear turned into many spear shadows, which blotted out the sky and the earth. They brought along with them a violent sea of fire, which started to engulf its way towards Mu Chen. The entire region within tens of thousands of feet was filled with the terrifying attack.

Mu Chen stared at the incoming spear shadows, which now covered the sky. Every spear shadow seemed to be real, and the power each contained was sufficient to tear the ground apart, and even to break a mountain into pieces.

His look became increasingly solemn. Then, his hands started to form a seal.

Bang!

The sound of thunder spread, and a bright lightning flashed wildly on Mu Chen's body. His body broadened, and on his chest, nine lightning runes appeared. The nine lightning runes seemed to be more condensed than before, making them appear almost real.

"Let me see..."

Lightning flashed on Mu Chen's body. His black eyes turned colder and more penetrating. He licked his lips, and the corners of his mouth curled up, filled with fighting spirit.

"How strong are sovereign celestial bodies exactly?!"

Mu Chen's hands appeared to hug something, as he controlled the Great Meru Demonic Pillar directly, then dashed out. Lightning and purple flames swept across the place. Under the monstrous sea of fire, his body was as small as an ant.

However, it was still filled with a towering fighting spirit that no one could have any contempt for!

My first battle in the Great Thousand World will start with you!

Chapter 660: The Battle against Liu Ming

Scarlet red flames engulfed the horizon. It was as if the sky were about to be set ablaze.

In the midst of the sea of flames, a gigantic flaming gun was rapidly fired. The blaze blanketed the sky and the land. The whole place was painted in a raging, fiery light. It was an extremely terrifying blitz.

However, despite facing such staggering offensive outbursts, Mu Chen did not show any signs of defeat. He clenched his hands tightly around the Great Meru Demonic Pillar and dashed forward as the majestic purple spiritual energy began soaring up into the sky. Finally, he brandished the Great Meru Demonic Pillar and whirled the flames around.

Bang! Bang!

An earth-shattering collision erupted in the sky. Mu Chen's silhouette seemed tiny before the shadows of the enormous monstrous flame gun. Under the brandishing of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, the countless strobes of flaming gun shadows were shattered into pieces.

A burning inferno pervaded the air.

The figure recoiled every time a strobe of flaming gun shadow was shattered, but he displayed no sign of evasion and faced the threat head-on. It was incredibly remarkable to see.

Below, Lin Jing continuously retreated as she gaped at the rampaging flames. However, her beautiful, button-like eyes were stupefied yet mesmerized by the silhouette whose fighting spirit was further ignited as he fought vigorously against the enemies.

Although the young man was almost her age, it felt as if nothing could extinguish his fiery passion and will to fight. He was unstoppable. Even if an unyielding mountain stood before him, it was clear that he would not hold back.

Such great tenacity seemed rather irksome.

The middle-aged man, who had been watching the battle attentively

from afar, suddenly uttered, "This young man... I am afraid that he will be a tough nut to crack in the future.

"Although I have no clue about his background, I could guarantee that he has relied solely on his own capabilities and powers to achieve such outstanding results at such an age.

"This is because it is difficult for a young powerhouse who is dependant on his clan's resources to possess his level of fighting spirit and boldness."

After hearing the comments from the middle-aged man, Heart Fox Fairy softly bit her luscious red lips. Her beautiful eyes gazed at the retreating, slender silhouette in the midst of the blazing flames. She muttered immediately, "He is truly courageous, but it is not enough to rely on mere courage to win a battle against Liu Ming.

"The formidable force of the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body has yet been fully unleashed."

The middle-aged man nodded slightly and sighed. "If this young man possesses the Sovereign Celestial Body, even if it is of an ordinary level, I am afraid that Liu Ming will not have any advantage in today's battle."

Heart Fox Fairy nodded daintily.

Boom!

Under the brandishing of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, the terrifying force shattered the fiery rain of flaming gun shadows once again. However, the impact from the quake caused Mu Chen's arms to tremble. Fresh blood started trickling from his palms.

He took two steps back and stomped his feet to maintain his balance. The lightning that surrounded him flickered madly.

Although his expression remained calm, his eyes shone with determination. After the previous head-on battle, he finally had a taste of the powers of the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body. If he had not trained his Thunder God physique to the level of an Ennea Rune Lighting physique, the multiple head-on attacks would probably have been sufficient to severely injure him.

Even so, his internal vital energy was currently unstable.

A gigantic blazing red shadow was erected in the skies. Liu Ming fixed his eyes on Mu Chen. Cold light flickered sinisterly in his eyes. However, his gaze looked a little sullen.

Evidently, Mu Chen had ultimately exceeded his expectations because he was able to endure his attacks for so long by purely relying on his own powers.

"That explains the arrogance in his tone. He does have some tricks up his sleeve," Liu Ming's strident voice thundered through the battlegrounds as the gigantic blazing shadow looked down at Mu Chen, who was as small as an ant.

Mu Chen's expression remained calm. He lifted his head and looked at the oppressive-looking giant shadow. He laughed, "It is just your Sovereign Celestial Body. It is not as scary as I had imagined it to be."

"Really?"

Liu Ming's voice had a dash of sarcasm, but he said nothing more. His huge palm suddenly bore a seal, and following its transformation, the scorching red flames blotted out the sky and the land as they gathered in his palm.

A violent, blustering heat wave began to pervade the air.

"Why don't you try to catch this?"

Cold beams flared from the eyes of the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body. With a sudden thunderous clap, the heavenly flames started spreading like wildfire, and the void began to distort. A flaming palm print that enveloped almost half of the sky hurled down unexpectedly.

"Heavenly Flaming Palm of the Burning Sea!"

The palm landed and crumbled the ground beneath it. Mountains were flattened to the ground and forests were burned to ashes. The force was extremely devastating.

Looking at the current situation, Mu Chen's expression merely changed

a little. At the same time, both of his hands formed a seal with lightning speed. With a slight jerk of his sleeves, earth-shattering green rays beamed out, and a black, thorny forest sprouted from the ground where the rays had touched.

Mu Chen uttered in his heart, "Wood Divine Scripture!" The black, thorny forests instantly transformed into countless beams of green rays that soared to the sky as they finally gathered toward Mu Chen. It was as if the green rays were transformed into an emerald ocean. It was filled with vitality.

"Heavenly Divine Wood Wheel!"

Mu Chen's seal transformed again. The emerald ocean started whirling at high speed before it transformed into an enormous Green Wooden Wheel of Rays. Mu Chen pointed his finger at the void, and then it disappeared into thin air. All that was left in the space in front of him was a long black trail.

He sneered!

The speed of the Green Wooden Wheel of Rays was indescribably quick. In a flash, it appeared beneath the flaming palm and started attacking it head-on without any sign of hesitation.

The battle was surprisingly silent. The high-speed spinning Green Wooden Wheel of Rays unleashed its extremely terrifying abilities of spatial piercing. With a slight touch, it was able to impale the flaming palm and instantly dash toward the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body.

"Go away!"

A chilling scream emanated from the insides of the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body. A giant fist charged forward as it ignited a rampaging sea of flames in its violent attack against the Green Wooden Wheel of Rays.

Squeak! Squeak!

A shrill sound resonated in the air. The Green Wooden Wheel of Rays and the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body remained in a deadlock. The impact between the two powerful forces had distorted the space around

them.

Thump! Thump!

Such a deadlock caused Liu Ming to rage in burning fury. Mu Chen had defended his attacks again and again. In his eyes, this was a form of humiliation. Flames started blazing madly in his eyes. A scorching red blaze immediately shrouded his humongous body before surging forward like a Fire Dragon and devouring the Green Wooden Wheel of Rays.

Bang!

Unfortunately, the Green Wooden Wheel of Rays was still unable to resist such brutal attacks. It exploded into pieces and was finally burned to dust.

Boom!

Although Liu Ming gained better ground with this single move, he did not give Mu Chen any respite. As he struck his two fists, a tsunami of scarlet red transformed into two Blazing Red Fire Dragons and began to surge violently toward Mu Chen.

Mu Chen's body retreated again. Beams of majestic purple spiritual energy lashed forward in an attempt to block the attacks from the Blazing Red Fire Dragon, but the attempts were to no avail as they ended up getting burned into ashes.

At that very moment, Liu Ming was obviously unleashing the full powers of the Heavenly Fire Celestial Body.

Boom!

The Blazing Red Fire Dragon moved at lightning speed. Mu Chen avoided the attacks several times but in the end, he was unable to retreat any further. The Fire Dragon surged toward him and knocked down all the spiritual energy from his body.

Bang!

Mu Chen's body received a critical hit. He started falling down before violently crashing into the ground. The violent impact caused the ground

to crumble.

"I thought you were strong? Do you want to try it again?"

Upon seeing how Mu Chen was finally severely injured, Liu Ming started laughing coldly. He stared at the sinkhole. His eyes shone with a desire to kill, and he showed no sign of holding back. As he gripped his fist, a towering, flaming longspear began to gather in his arms. In a swish, it pierced through the void and charged toward the sinkhole.

Swish.

However, just as the gigantic flaming spear was about to pierce through the sinkhole, a beautiful feminine figure suddenly appeared in midair. Her slender hands started forming a seal, and majestic beams of spiritual energy gushed out as it formed a giant water shield. Whirlpools swirled on the water shield.

"Shield of Flowing Waters!"

Bang!

The flaming longspear impaled the water shield and erupted in a violent energy wave. However, most of the energy was devoured by the whirlpools on the water shield.

After the flaming longspear disappeared, Lin Jiao's tiny figure merely trembled a little. Meanwhile, the water shield exploded with a loud bang as it had reached its limit.

"Oh? Another person who has not cultivated the Sovereign Celestial Body, but I will not hold back just because you are a woman." Looking at the current situation, Liu Ming smiled sinisterly. As he waved his palms, a colossal flaming longspear formed again and started charging toward her.

Lin Jing peered at the sudden attack. She clenched her jaw but had no intention of retreating. She took a deep breath, and an azure river began gushing out of her mouth. An extremely vast spiritual energy wave emanated from the river.

The river was rather peculiar. It seemed like it was made up of some

form of spiritual energy, but at the same time, it emanated energy waves similar to those of a Divine Artifact...

The azure river surrounded Lin Jing like a perfect shield.

Boom! Boom!

Beams of flaming longspear ripped open the void. Rogue waves splattered as the rain of flaming longspears was rapidly fired upon the river. As the shield took in numerous terrifying attacks, Lin Jing's face started looking a little pale.

Bang!

After the azure river devoured the final beam of flaming longspear, it began to turn dull, and finally transformed into a mere stream as it returned into Lin Jing's mouth.

She lifted her face and stared coldly at the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body. She scoffed, "So, is that all you've got?"

"I wonder if you can last any longer!" Liu Ming snickered coldly, and his gaze was filled with the overwhelming desire to kill. Lin Jing had acted beyond his expectations. However, she clearly could not compete against his Heavenly Flame Celestial Body.

The girl in front of him was merely putting up a desperate fight.

"Hmm?"

However, just as Liu Ming was prepared to kill her, he froze and abruptly turned his gaze toward the sinkhole where a disturbing fluctuation of energy silently appeared.

Chapter 661: The Form of Three Lotuses

Boom!

The earth seemed to tremble, and in the sky, the Scarlet Flame Giant that Liu Ming had transformed into, gazed in shock at the collapsing earth below. Faintly, he felt some strange waves emanating from beneath the earth.

"That fellow still has energy to spare?"

Liu Ming's eyes were chilling, as his previous attacks should have dealt severe damage to Mu Chen. The raging Heavenly Flame in his spiritual energy should have increased the brutality of his offensive attacks, and it should have dealt heavy damage when it invaded Mu Chen's body.

However, seeing the scene now...

"What tricks are you up to now?" A cold glint surged in Liu Ming's eyes.

As he let out a low growl, scarlet red flames in his spiritual energy spewed out of his mouth, like magma, transforming into magma flame dragons. The flame dragons circled the sky in a dance, absorbing the spiritual energy in the heavens and earth wildly, as their bodies expanded swiftly, unleashing their might as they roared.

Upon seeing this, Lin Jing's spiritual energy surged out, then transformed into a spiritual energy light rainbow. The rainbow soared across the sky in an attempt to resist the magma flame dragons.

However, these magma flame dragons were not directed towards her this time, and dodged her barricade agilely, bursting towards the crumbled earth below. Clearly, Liu Ming did not intend to give Mu Chen an opportunity to counterattack.

Boom!

The magma flame dragons stormed down, dealing a direct blow to the collapsing earth, causing it to crumble apart. The magma seemed to melt the earth, as scarlet red flames circled the earth. Then, the earth began to melt, layer by layer.

Buzz!

As the violent magma continued to melt the earth, a black ray of light suddenly penetrated through the earth. As the dark light permeated the space, the violent magma was rapidly extinguished.

In the sky, Liu Ming's pupils contracted. Lin Jing's eyes blinked in surprise at the scene.

On a mountain in the distance, shock flit across Heart Fox Fairy's seductive eyes, as she gazed at the land, which was being thrown into chaos, then whispered, "There seem to be some unusual fluctuations..."

The middle-aged man beside her also frowned, his eyes becoming more solemn as he said, "It seems to be the fluctuations of a Spiritual Array?" What's going on here?"

In the midst of their dismay, a shadow slowly floated up in the crumbling earth, then he stood in a position a few feet above the ground and raised his head, his handsome face nonchalant.

Indeed, this figure was Mu Chen. His clothes were torn and he was in an embarrassing state, but his dark eyes were as calm as still waters. He gazed at the Scarlet Flame figure in the sky silently, a dangerous light flashing in the depth of his eyes.

"What a fortunate fellow!" Upon seeing that Mu Chen was safe and sound, Liu Ming sneered coldly.

Mu Chen glanced at him, but remained silent, as he gradually lifted his hands and clasped them together in front of his chest, conjuring up an especially complex but familiar seal.

"Array, activate!"

Accompanied by Mu Chen's quiet command, the earth immediately shook violently, as huge cracks began to spread on the earth below him. Within the cracks, black rays of light emerged wildly. As the earth began to sink, mud scattered everywhere. In just a few moments, a massive deep pit, the depth of which was around a thousand feet, formed on the earth.

The massive pit was so deep, that it seemed to be endless. As Mu Chen hovered above it, Liu Ming's gaze was frozen upon the massive pit, as he saw three huge black light lotuses suspended quietly within it.

Countless rays of light emanated from the three black light lotuses, as they intertwined with each other to form an indecipherable battle array that was dizzying to others. Then, a terrifying fluctuation silently spread, permeating the massively deep pit. It was as if the three black lotuses were demonic beasts, looming in the darkness, emitting a chilling aura amid the silence.

"That's..." Lin Jing stared at the three huge black lotuses in terror.

"A Spiritual Array?"

On a mountain in the distance, the charming expression of the Heart Fox Fairy twisted in disbelief for the first time, as she stared, fixated on the massive Spiritual Array that had been formed with the three black lotuses, her ample bosom heaving lightly.

"This fellow is actually a Spiritual Array Grandmaster!" The middle-aged man gasped, failing to conceal the shock in his voice. No wonder he had felt an unusual fluctuation before, it had come from the Spiritual Array that was hidden within the ground that had been set up by Mu Chen!

"This Spiritual Array, I'm afraid it has reached the quality of a First Grade Being."

Spiritual Array Grandmasters were categorized into the three categories of Heaven, Earth, and Being. In each category, there were Three Grades, which were aligned with the Nine Grades of Sovereigns. A Spiritual Array Grandmaster, who was ranked as a First Grade Being, was equal to a true First Grade Sovereign.

However, it was apparent that, in the Great Thousand World, a Spiritual Array Grandmaster, who was ranked as a First Grade Being, was much more rare than a First Grade Sovereign. Furthermore, anyone knew that, as long as a Spiritual Array Grandmaster successfully set up a powerful Spiritual Array, a Sovereign of the same grade would be defeated.

Prior to this, Mu Chen was seemingly defeated, as he careened into the ground. However, he used Liu Ming's attack to set up a Spiritual Array covertly, as the crumbling earth acted as a cover.

"An excellent strategy and a strong sense of battle plans." The middle-aged man couldn't help but to commend the tactics in awe. In comparison to the young man before him, Liu Ming's battle strategies were like child's play.

This time, even Heart Fox Fairy nodded in assent, her beautiful eyes glinting as she stared at the young man's figure, which was still suspended above the deep pit.

"I'm afraid this battle has already reached its conclusion. Although Liu Ming possesses the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body, the Spiritual Array that the boy has set up is not to be underestimated."

From the three black lotuses, he could sense dangerous fluctuations emitting. It was not as if he had not seen a Sixth Grade Spiritual Array, but still, such extremely rare Spiritual Arrays could indeed stir up a real sense of danger in him.

As they spoke, Mu Chen, who had been hovering in the air, lifted his head, glancing at Lin Jing and saying softly, "Lin Jing, step back a little."

The girl nodded, as she retreated backwards.

Mu Chen then turned towards Liu Ming, a cold smirk appearing on his face, as he remarked, "Although I lack a Sovereign celestial body, at least I have this."

His slender fingers pointed towards the Spiritual Array below them, the Spiritual Array that had been formed by three black lotuses, which was the "Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array". This Spiritual Array's most evolved form could cultivate and condense four black lotuses, and the Mu Chen in the past could only cultivate two lotuses.

However, after he had advanced into the Sovereign-stage, and received training under Ling Xi, his cultivation in Spiritual Arrays had improved by leaps and bounds, resulting in his unknowingly becoming a Spiritual Array

Grandmaster. Even Nine Nether was not aware of this hidden move up his sleeve.

Flames flickered in the eyes of the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body that Liu Ming had transformed into, but he no longer scoffed at the scene before him, as he could sense the fluctuations from the Spiritual Array that unsettled him deeply. He had never expected Mu Chen to be a Spiritual Array Grandmaster!

"Damn it!"

He cursed in his heart. If he knew that this would have happened, he would not have let Mu Chen out of his sight, nor let him have the chance to set up such a powerful Spiritual Array out of negligence.

"Now... Let me see if your Sovereign celestial body is more powerful, or if my Spiritual Array is superior."

Mu Chen smiled. As the seals he had conjured changed, a low roar emanated from within his heart.

"Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array, activate!"

Whoosh!

Black rays of light, appearing as if they were ten thousand feet long, surged out from within the Spiritual Array, enveloping the atmosphere. The three black lotuses within the Spiritual Array turned darker, as if formed from black ink.

As the fluctuations in the Spiritual Array grew to their most intense, the three black lotuses materialized, then left the Spiritual Array gradually. The three black lotuses slowly hovered in the air, looming around Mu Chen, twisting and distorting the space greatly.

Liu Ming glared at the three black lotuses, his feeling of unease growing increasingly stronger, even giving him an impulse to turn around and escape. Fortunately, he suppressed this desire to flee.

"I don't believe that you can defeat my Heavenly Flame Celestial Body!"

Liu Ming stated chillingly. He had once fought with a First Grade Being

Spiritual Array Grandmaster, without being reduced to an embarrassing defeat, so as long as he could withstand this Spiritual Array, he could definitely defeat Mu Chen. He was determined that he would not give him another chance, nor time, to set up another Spiritual Array!

"Heavenly Flame Armor!"

Liu Ming bellowed. Suddenly, there was a dazzling scarlet red light, which emanated from the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body. Burning magma flowed out, solidified, and then transformed into a huge scarlet red armor, as if it was the strongest defense in the world.

In the face of the mysterious Black Lotuses Spiritual Array, Liu Ming had activated the strongest defense of the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body to combat it. Mu Chen gazed calmly at Liu Ming, who had activated his strong defense. As his slender fingers pointed in the air, right where his fingers landed, ripples of motion spread within the space.

"Go."

As his fingers landed, Mu Chen's glance turned sharp and cold, like the edge of a dagger.

Whoosh!

The three black lotuses trembled violently, as a buzz emerged, which then caused them to conjoin and soar across the sky, like a black meteor, overcoming the restraints of space at an indescribably swift speed.

In a flash, it appeared before the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body. Without any pause or hesitation, the three black lotuses clashed harshly with it. The three black lotuses had collided with the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body head-on!

Chapter 662: Unforeseen Events

Dong!

The three black lotuses raced across the sky and finally collided with the huge shadow covered in magma armor. Surprisingly, at the instant of impact no deafening sounds were produced.

Black light burst out like liquid and eventually moved along the magma armor at a shocking speed, corroding the armor along the way. Wherever the black liquid touched, the magma was extinguished instantaneously and slowly abated.

There were no earthshaking explosions, but that silent corrosion contained a frightening power.

It was as if Liu Ming's Heavenly Flame Celestial Body had turned stiff. His burning eyes stared at the black light that was spreading like ink on his giant body. In the depths of his eyes, intense horror could be seen.

He realized that his Heavenly Flame Celestial Body was rapidly losing its strength in the places where the black light had spread. It appeared as if even the Sovereign Celestial Body was being contaminated.

"D*mn it, what spiritual array is this?!"

Panic surged out from Liu Ming's heart. Just then, he clenched his teeth tightly, and a deep roar emanated from his throat. The spiritual energy around him started to boil, and more magma gushed out on the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body. The magma rushed towards the bizarre, spreading black light like a magma torrent.

Sizzle!

The two powers collided hard into each other, and a white mist burst out.

The red magma released its violent power wildly in an attempt to eliminate the liquid-like black light, but the latter moved on closely like maggots feeding on a corpse. It did not appear to be powerful, but it still continued to corrode the magma torrent bit by bit at a slow yet steady

pace.

Mu Chen watched the scene with a cold look. Then his seals changed again, and a low voice projected from his mouth. "Black Lotus Corrosion!"

Buzz!

As his seals changed, the corrosion rate of the black liquid suddenly increased. In the span of a dozen breaths, half of the huge Heavenly Flame Celestial Body was contaminated with the color of ink. The spiritual energy within these parts completely vanished.

Liu Ming's face was filled with horror. Finally, he was scared and tried to retreat but realized that his body could not move. He shouted hastily, "Kid, you dare to hurt me? Are you not afraid that my Tian Xuan Hall will chase you to the end of the world?"

Mu Chen was emotionless and ignored him. The speed of the corrosion increased.

Seeing that his threat was not only useless, but instead caused Mu Chen to strengthen his determination to kill him, Liu Ming's voice quickly became more submissive, and he said, "Wait, I admit defeat this time. I will give you the Undying Divine Leaf and the Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art!"

He stared at Mu Chen. However, Mu Chen's black eyes were filled with ridicule. Mu Chen looked as if he were mocking Liu Ming's foolish act.

"Now that you say this..."

Mu Chen raised his slender palm slowly, and then clenched it with a cold look on his face. "You really are as stupid as a donkey!"

Since they had already become enemies, Mu Chen would naturally not show any mercy at all. He knew doing so would bring him a lot of trouble. The clan behind Liu Ming was indeed powerful enough to put him in a serious predicament. Thus, since he had the chance, he would not be so silly as to think that this kind of event could be settled peacefully.

Vroom!

The liquid-like black light spread rapidly. In the end, it moved up along the neck of the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body and then spread across its face, covering the huge celestial body completely.

The Heavenly Flame Celestial Body instantly solidified. Liu Ming's mouth had been about to roar and threaten but suddenly turned stiff. The spiritual energy around him that was originally boiling calmed down quickly as well.

The once majestic Heavenly Flame Celestial Body turned into a piece of black, cold rock just like lava that had been extinguished...

No spiritual energy could be felt.

Looking at the cold, dark, stone giant, some coldness appeared in Mu Chen's eyes again. He stomped his foot and a purple spiritual energy condensing in his palm like a storm suddenly flew out.

A killing intent surged in the spiritual energy.

"How dare you!"

Just as Mu Chen displayed his killing intent, a loud roar came from the distance. The face of the old man in black robes who had been detained by Nine Nether darkened. Obviously, he did not expect Liu Ming to actually lose to Mu Chen.

The old man in black robes backed off quickly and wanted to launch an attack at Mu Chen. If something happened to Liu Ming, the hall master of Tian Xuan Hall would definitely not let him off.

"Humph."

However, just as he backed off, a cold "humph" was heard. In the sky, a violent gust of wind swept across, and a cloud wing burning with purple flames fell down from the sky. It struck down towards the old man in black robes like a bolt of lightning as if it were tearing the sky apart.

The terrifying fluctuation falling from above caused the expression of the old man in black robes to change. He did not dare to ignore the attack because of the frightening purple flames.

If he was hit directly, even if he was a Grade Five Sovereign, he would definitely suffer a significant injury.

Therefore, the old man in black robes could only grit his teeth and slap his palm out. It turned into a huge hand made from spiritual energy and collided with the falling cloud wing.

Dong!

A violent spiritual energy storm spread.

The instant the old man in black robes was stopped by Nine Nether, Mu Chen had already appeared in front of the extinguished magma giant. His palm, which contained a large amount of spiritual energy, smacked onto the chest of the giant like a bolt of lightning.

Bang!

Violent spiritual energy raged below Mu Chen's palm like the tides.

Crack.

Under the impact of the spiritual energy, cracks started spreading rapidly across the stiff chest of the magma giant. In just a few breaths' time, its whole body was affected and in the end, it actually burst into pieces with a loud bang.

Crushed black stones flew out all over the place. In the magma giant, a dim light also shot out in panic, and the figure within spat out a great deal of blood. Eventually, he was ejected into a mountain, and the terrifying power even caused the peak to shatter into pieces. The figure was quickly covered by the rocks.

Mu Chen stood in midair and stared emotionlessly at the wrecked mountain. Moving his body, he appeared above the mountain, after which he waved his sleeves, and all the rocks were thrown out.

The rocks flew away, exposing the battered and bloody figure inside. He lay among the broken rocks looking weak and pale, and stared with a horrified expression at Mu Chen slowly descending toward him.

"Seems like your Heavenly Flame Celestial Body is not as strong as you

have imagined," Mu Chen said tonelessly as he stared at the horrified Liu Ming.

Liu Ming's eyes were filled with viciousness.

Mu Chen ignored his look. Waving his hand, the Mustard Seed Bracelet on Liu Ming's wrist fell into his palm. Although he did not open it, he knew that the Undying Divine Leaf and the Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art would be inside.

"Angel of fortune. You're really a good person, thanks." Mu Chen waved the bracelet in his hand at Liu Ming and gave a mocking smile.

Spit.

Liu Ming was so angry that he spat out a mouthful of blood. He stared at Mu Chen with a vicious look and said with a hoarse voice, "You really think that it's so easy to kill me? I am the next hall master of Tian Xuan Hall!"

His voice was filled with viciousness and ridicule.

Mu Chen frowned slightly, and a killing intent flashed in his eyes. Without any hesitation, he slapped out his palm, and a terrifying spiritual energy torrent rushed fiercely towards Liu Ming's head.

Seeing what was happening, Liu Ming suddenly roared, "Human-Demon Elder, you still don't want to show up? You want to wait for me to be killed by him?!"

Mu Chen's eyes narrowed slightly, but his palm went down faster and more forcefully.

Bang!

However, when his palm was about to hit Liu Ming's head, he could no longer lower his palm. It was as if the space around Liu Ming had become frozen.

Mu Chen's expression drastically changed.

"Such a cruel kid... If you kill him, I can't answer to the hall master," an old and toneless voice sounded off abruptly near Mu Chen's ears. He

raised his head slowly. In the sky above the rubble, an old man in a gray shirt who was as skinny as a dry corpse was standing in midair. Mu Chen did not even know when he had appeared.

The old man in the gray shirt stared at Mu Chen with his gray pupils. His stare would cause anyone to feel uncontrollably frightened.

"That's..."

The old man in the gray shirt who had appeared all of a sudden not only caused Mu Chen's expression to change drastically, but also caused the looks from Heart Fox Fairy and the middle-aged man, who were observing the battle secretly on a distant peak, to change helplessly.

"It's the Human-Demon Elder, one of the three elders from Tian Xuan Hall... He has actually been secretly protecting Liu Ming all along. How unexpected!" Heart Fox Fairy said with a solemn look on her face.

The middle-aged man also looked very scared. The Human-Demon Elder was reputed even on the Tianluo Continent. He was a Grade Eight Sovereign and also had a high status in Tian Xuan Hall.

"That kid can't escape this time." The middle-aged man sighed with some sympathy. Since the Human-Demon Elder had appeared, the battle was basically over.

A Grade Eight Sovereign was far beyond what they could handle at the moment.

Mu Chen stared at the old man in the gray shirt, his eyes narrowing. In the next instant, he backed off quickly and shouted, "Lin Jing, run!"

In the sky not far away, Lin Jing saw the scene and quickly retreated.

"Since you want her to leave, I will not let that happen." The old man in the gray shirt smiled. He stepped out and appeared directly in front of Lin Jing. Then his skinny hand gently slapped towards her.

Lin Jing's face turned pale. A Grade Eight Sovereign was not someone she could fight. Therefore, she could only grit her teeth and wait for the terrifying attack to land on her body.

Vroom!

However, when Lin Jing closed her eyes, a figure quickly rushed over, held her in his arms, and dashed out.

"Since you want to save someone, you will give your life first." The old man in the gray shirt sighed gently. It was as if his skinny palm penetrated through space and hit directly onto Mu Chen's back as he held Lin Jing in his arms.

Spit.

Mu Chen spat out a mouthful of blood. His back was badly mutilated, and even his bones could be seen. If he had not trained the Thunder God Physique to the Ennea Rune Lightning Physique level, the slap would probably have made his body explode.

"Mu Chen!" Lin Jing quickly said in an urgent tone. She opened her eyes to see the scene and some blood spilled onto her face.

Mu Chen fell down, battered. However, as he was about to land, he still held the girl in his arms, and his mutilated back hit the rocks. Immediately, the sharp pain caused him to spit another mouthful of blood.

In the distance, Nine Nether saw the scene, and her eyes instantly turned red. She expanded her wings and wanted to rush over but was stopped by the old man in black robes. At once, she started to attack crazily and actually caused the old man in black robes to be thrown into a panic.

"Mu Chen, are you alright?" Lin Jing asked urgently, not caring about the bloodstain on her white face.

Mu Chen gritted his teeth and shook his head. He pushed Lin Jing and shouted, "Run!"

"No!" Lin Jing quickly held on to Mu Chen's sleeves. She knew that if she left at that moment, Mu Chen would certainly die.

"You!" Mu Chen was angry, but the sharp pain caused him to take a deep breath.

He did not expect the situation to end up like this. Ultimately, he had belittled the power of the clan behind Liu Ming. He really could not deal with such a powerful being at the moment.

"Seems like I have made a bad plan," Mu Chen said bitterly.

The old man in the gray shirt appeared before Mu Chen and Lin Jing and said with a smile, "Since you dare to kill the next hall master of Tian Xuan Hall, you are indeed not smart.

"I'll send you to hell now."

The hand of the old man in the gray shirt penetrated through space again and slapped towards Mu Chen's head.

Mu Chen gritted his teeth firmly. Some insanity could be seen in his eyes. He was about to do whatever he could and use his secret trump card, the "Immortal Page." Even if he could not escape, he would not wait to be killed.

However, just when the skinny palm of the old man in the gray shirt was about to hit Mu Chen's head, the space there seemed to flash. It was as if a bright beam of light flew across.

Swish.

A dry hand fell down quietly onto Mu Chen's body.

The old man in the gray shirt seemed to be temporarily stunned. He stared at his hand. It had been suddenly cut off. His mouth moved but no voice was heard. He did not seem to have recovered from the shock.

He lifted his head slowly. Behind Mu Chen, the space distorted gradually, and then a partially visible figure appeared.

When the figure fully appeared, a clear voice was heard. "You dare to kill the little princess of the Martial Border? You are also very stupid."

Hearing the familiar voice, Lin Jing raised her head abruptly. Surprise filled her red, intelligent eyes. Then she shouted uncontrollably, "Mother?!"

Chapter 663: The Mysterious Lady in White

"Mother?"

The space behind Mu Chen was surging, and a female figure gradually appeared. When Lin Jing shouted in surprise, the figure became clearer.

Mu Chen turned his head and looked in shock. He saw a graceful looking lady in white. She looked extremely beautiful and resembled Lin Jing. She had her hair up in a bun and looked elegant, stunning in fact.

Mu Chen was shocked to learn that the beautiful lady in white was Lin Jing's mother. They looked more like sisters.

She had chopped off the palm of the Human-demon Elder. She had said earlier...the Little Princess of Martial Border. Was she referring to Lin Jing?

Martial Border?

Mu Chen was taken aback. He looked at Lin Jing, who was in his arms. He had never expected her to have such an impressive background. Martial Border was dominant in The Great Thousand World. The founder of Martial Border, Martial Ancestor, was well-known in The Great Thousand World!

Although Tian Xuan Hall was powerful, it was nothing compared to Martial Border. Mu Chen finally understood why Lin Jing could have so many powerful Protective Spiritual Jades all over her body. She was the Little Princess of Martial Border!

"Mother, why are you here?"

Lin Jing widened her eyes and looked at the lady in white. She was elated and ran toward her.

The lady in white extended her hand and knocked Lin Jing's forehead.

She snappily said, "How dare you sneak out." She looked cold, but when she looked at the girl before her, she was filled with love for her.

"It is so boring staying at home," Lin Jing covered her forehead and said in a miserable tone.

"Your father has said that he will not let you off when you get home," scolded the mother.

"Mother, you must help me!" Lin Jing looked distressed and grabbed hold of the sleeves of the lady in white and said. "I want to learn and toughen myself up. You have seen that I have nearly lost my life."

The lady in white squinted her eyes at the mention of it and suddenly, she looked cold. She lifted up her head to look at Human-demon Elder and said flatly, "You are audacious."

"Who are you?" Human-demon elder came to himself and cried out. He had forgotten about his broken palm and looked shocked.

"Are you from Martial Border?" He asked in a hoarse voice. He suddenly remembered what he had heard earlier and his heart sank.

"Mother, don't let him off. He had wanted to kill me earlier. If not for Mu Chen, I dare not imagine what would have happened to me!" Lin Jing said angrily. Since she had someone powerful to back her up, Lin Jing would not easily let this detestable old man off.

The lady in white lowered her head and looked at Mu Chen. His back was bloody, and one could even see his bones. She smiled and said to him gently, "Young man, thank you. Are you all right?"

Mu Chen felt awkward being addressed in such a manner, and by such a youthful looking lady. He scratched his head and said with a smile, "I am fine. My skin is thick, so it is no big deal."

The lady in white saw the injuries on his back, and noticed that purple spiritual energy was surging. There were unique purple flames, and as they went past the injuries, the wounds started to heal.

The lady in white was stunned, but she felt relieved. She turned to look at Human-demon Elder, whose expressions kept changing, and said flatly, "You are so merciless toward the two young ones. Have you no regard for Martial Border?"

Human-demon Elder shivered. He suddenly shot backward swiftly, and his afterimages traveled through the space. He appeared beside Liu Ming, who was seriously injured, then escaped with him.

Heart Fox Fairy and a middle-aged man stood in the distance and watched the scene. They shivered and looked shocked. Who is this lady in white? Why is Human-demon Elder, who has reached Grade Eight Sovereign, so afraid of her, enough to run away?

"Mother, don't let him get away!" When Lin Jing saw that Human-demon Elder was trying to escape, she quickly yelled.

The lady in white nodded her head lightly. She extended her slender hand and gently lifted it up.

Boom! Boom!

The land afar quaked, and a huge mountain raised up from the ground. The mountain was colorful and dazzling. If one had sensed carefully, he would know that this was no ordinary mountain. It was formed by pure spiritual energy, powerful beyond description.

Swoosh!

A huge Spiritual Energy Mountain uprooted itself from the ground and appeared in the horizon in a flash second. It then landed heavily on a particular place. The space suddenly froze, and two figures appeared. One of them was Human-demon Elder.

He lifted up his head in shock, then looked at the huge mountain that had just landed. He cried out in horror, "Appearance of the Heaven and Earth?"

Heart Fox Fairy and the middle-aged man turned pale. They were

shocked. Only those at the Earthly Sovereign could master the Appearance of the Heaven and Earth. Was the lady in white an Earthly Sovereign?

One could easily form mountains and rivers, and even change the shape of the earth with the Appearance of the Heaven and Earth. It was mystical. Mu Chen could destroy the terrain as well, but even he was unable to create a stretch of terrain out of nothing.

Boom! Boom!

The Spiritual Energy Mountain pressed down and sealed up the space. Even Human-demon Elder was unable to move. He could only look at the mountain whizzing toward him and suppressing down heavily on his body.

Pooh.

Human-demon Elder's body was paralyzed. His bones seemed smashed, and fresh blood was spewing out. He landed together with the mountain, and was then suppressed under the ground.

The Spiritual Energy Mountain landed on the ground and was extremely tall. It was the tallest in this piece of land. Human-demon Elder was unable to move under the mountain.

Mu Chen gasped as he saw the scene. This was the first time that he have ever seen the attack of an Earthly Sovereign. It was quick and powerful.

The elderly man in black, who was fighting with Nine Nether from afar, had noticed what had happened, and was frightened out of his wits. He immediately scurried off, as he could not be bothered with the mannerism of a Sovereign Master.

However, the moment he tried to escape, he felt a horrifying power coming at him from above. His body seemed to be hit by a heavy object, and he fell to the ground, creating a large hole.

The huge Nine Netherworld Bird speedily reduced in size, then turned into a slender lady. Nine Nether flew toward Mu Chen and landed beside him. She looked shocked upon seeing the lady in white, who had suddenly

appeared.

"She is Lin Jing's mother," Mu Chen struggled to his feet and explained to her.

Nine Nether nodded and quickly helped to support Mu Chen.

"Mother, what do you intend to do with these people?" Lin Jing asked happily.

"Suppress them for five years," the lady in white said lightly. She waved her hand, and the elderly man in black was suppressed under the Spiritual Energy Mountain. The mountain then started to sink under the ground and disappeared.

Mu Chen was shocked to see that the spot where the Spiritual Energy Mountain had sunken in was now flat. No one would have known that three evil people had been suppressed underneath it.

Human-demon Elder might be able to survive the five years of suppression, as his strength had reached Grade Eight Sovereign level. However, his strength would have diminished by then. As for Liu Ming, he might not be able to survive.

However, Mu Chen would not take pity on them. If not for Lin Jing's mother, he could not imagine what would have happened to him and Lin Jing.

"Mother, you have come at the right time!" Lin Jing held the arm of the lady in white and said with a smile.

"Do you think you can sneak out of Martial Border with your skills?" The lady in white sneered at Lin Jing and asked. "If I had not followed you secretly, you would have been brought back by your father."

Lin Jing looked dejected upon hearing this. She had thought that her plan to escape was perfect, but now realized that she had actually failed.

Mu Chen was thankful that he did not have any ill intentions toward Lin Jing. Otherwise, he would have been killed by her mother, who was hiding

in secret. This Great Thousand World was indeed filled with danger.

Mu Chen sighed within himself. He knew that Liu Ming was powerful, but he had not expected him to be under the protection of such a powerful elder. Mu Chen had nearly failed terribly.

"Young man..." The lady in white looked at Mu Chen and said.

"Senior, please call me Mu Chen," Mu Chen scratched his head and said. He felt awkward to be addressed in such a manner.

Upon hearing this, the lady in white smiled. Her smile was captivating. After secretly following Lin Jing for the past few days, she knew how Mu Chen had treated Lin Jing. Hence, she had a good impression of him and smiled at him, which was a rarely seen sight.

She then said gently, "I shall call you Xiao Mu then. Give me the Mustard Seed Bracelet that you got earlier."

Mu Chen immediately took it out and handed it over to the lady in white. Given her status, he knew that she would not be interested in such trivial things.

The lady in white was pleased with his forthrightness. After taking the bracelet, she injected a light from her palm for a while.

"This Mustard Seed Bracelet contains a mark made by an Earthly Sovereign Master. If you take it away, he will sense it. I have removed the mark now, though, so it will be fine," the lady in white said, as she returned the Mustard Seed Bracelet to Mu Chen.

Mu Chen broke out in a cold sweat. He had not examined the Mustard Seed Bracelet, and he certainly had not expected an Earthly Sovereign Master to leave a mark on it. It must have been the master of Tian Xuan Hall.

"Thank you, Senior," Mu Chen said gratefully.

The lady in white smiled and shook her head. She lovingly stroked Lin Jing's head and said, "You have saved Lin Jing. So, if you don't mind, you may now call me Aunt Ling."

Chapter 664: Queen of the Martial Border, Ling Qingzhu

Hearing the kind tone from the woman in white clothes before him, Mu Chen's guard against the stranger lowered. Even though the woman had an inhospitable temperament, maybe because Lin Jing was beside her, they could finally see her gentle side.

Accordingly, Mu Chen scratched his head and no longer hesitated. "Aunt Ling."

Since Lin Jing was the little princess from the Martial Border, obviously the woman in white clothes in front of them was the Queen of the Martial Border. This identity was indeed astonishing, and if they could get support from her, it would be an amazing backing.

However, Mu Chen did not think too much about it. He approached Lin Jing not because of her identity, but because he had a pure good impression about this vital girl who seemed to be casual but was actually extremely intelligent.

As for the so-called backing that could be relied on, Mu Chen was unconcerned. He understood that a real master could only rely on himself. In this world, only one's own power was the most reliable.

The woman in white clothes nodded with a gentle laugh. Her laughter was clear and pleasing. Even though she had a daughter, she was still charming, and seeing her reminded Mu Chen of his own mother.

Both were so outstanding.

"I will take care of the business here first," the woman in white clothes said smiling as she suddenly turned her head and looked into the distance.

Mu Chen and the rest were all stunned, and their faces turned pale. There are still people around? In that case, their action this time was somewhat of a failure.

In the distance, when the woman in white clothes looked towards Heart

Fox Fairy and the middle-aged man hiding on the peak, their faces changed. Immediately, they backed away separately without hesitation.

However, just as they moved, they realized that the ground around them had risen rapidly, and many stone thorns as sharp as swords extended from the surface. The stone thorns were sparkling with gorgeous colors and were obviously condensed from the purest spiritual energy, just like the spiritual energy mountain previously.

The spiritual energy stone thorns were packed closely around them. Therefore, they did not dare to move.

"Master, we have no bad intentions!" Heart Fox Fairy's plump chest rose and fell gently as she tried to make herself sound calm.

The space before the two fluctuated slightly, and the woman in white clothes stepped out from it. She stared at the two, frowning gently, as if she were deciding whether to suppress them as well.

"Master, we are from the Fox Fairy Clan. Please allow us to live because of the Fox Fairy Empress," the middle-aged man quickly pleaded with a sincere tone.

"Fox Fairy Clan?" Hearing the name, the look from the woman in white clothes suddenly turned somewhat teasing. She smiled and added, "Oh, you are under Hu Meizi from the Fox Fairy Clan."

"Master, you know the clan leader?" Heart Fox Fairy asked softly.

The woman in white clothes smiled and replied, "I have seen her once. It's just that she looked at my husband. However, her Great Art of the Fox Fairy did not seem to be charming enough."

Heart Fox Fairy and the middle-aged man's faces both turned red. They wanted to reply but did not dare to. The woman in white clothes before them was more attractive than their clan leader in terms of appearance. Although Heart Fox Fairy was also charming and alluring, she still appeared to be dim compared to her.

"May I ask, Master, who are you?" Heart Fox Fairy bit her pink lips but still couldn't help asking. The clan leader was the person she respected the

most and normally, many powerful people would do anything just to make her smile. She did not believe that the husband of this woman would cause the clan leader to disregard her behavior.

"Martial Border, Ling Qingzhu," the woman in white clothes responded tonelessly.

Hearing these few words, Heart Fox Fairy's pretty face finally changed drastically. She stared at the woman in white clothes with an unbelievable look and mumbled, "Queen of the Martial Border, Ling Qingzhu?"

At the moment, she finally understood everything. Since the person before her was the Queen of the Martial Border, then her husband would naturally be the founder of the Martial Border, the super-being who shocked the Great Thousand World, Martial Ancestor Lin Dong.

On the other hand, although her clan leader was extremely picky, she would inevitably have some interests in such a hero who could amaze the Great Thousand World.

Heart Fox Fairy was speechless and whispered something, not daring to continue talking.

Ling Qingzhu did not argue with such a junior. Waving her jade-like arm, the sharp stone thorns gradually retracted, eventually sinking into the ground. The quiet, weird movement would cause anyone to feel frightened.

"Just pretend that you saw nothing today," Ling Qingzhu warned.

Although she did not care about Tian Xuan Hall, Mu Chen could not do the same. Once the news leaked, it would certainly cause him some trouble.

"Master, rest assured, we understand that." Heart Fox Fairy nodded continuously. She was very clever and naturally knew what she should say and what she should not. The Martial Border was an enormous force, and their Fox Fairy Clan could not afford to offend them.

Ling Qingzhu nodded and did not say anything else. Her body directly vanished from the spot.

As she left, Heart Fox Fairy and the middle-aged man finally heaved a huge sigh of relief. They could feel that their foreheads were covered in cold sweat.

"So scary," the middle-aged remarked, still frightened. "The power of this Queen of the Martial Border has probably reached a shocking level. Maybe even our clan leader is far behind her."

Heart Fox Fairy exclaimed in surprise, "Really? Our clan leader is an Earthly Sovereign. Maybe there is some gap between them but..."

"Her power is much more than what you can sense. I have cultivated a sensing divine technique, and I'm more sensitive towards the detection of powers. However, from what I detected just now, she is as unfathomable as the ocean. Although an Earthly Sovereign is also very terrifying, they seem to be lesser than that level..." the middle-aged man swallowed and commented.

"You mean..." Heart Fox Fairy's eyes narrowed as she muttered, "This Queen of the Martial Border... has also been promoted to Heavenly Sovereign? The power of the Martial Border is so shocking?"

Generally speaking, as long as a clan had one Heavenly Sovereign, it could become a superpower in the Great Thousand World. From the looks of it, the Martial Border could possibly have more than one.

"If the Martial Border is not strong, why would the Ice Spirit Clan, one that has such a long history, view it as their backing? Moreover, it is said that the Martial Border has two queens, and both are extremely powerful. This is only one of them..." The middle-aged man sighed, feeling scared of the horrifying strength of the Martial Border. Even if the woman in white clothes was not a real Heavenly Sovereign, she was definitely at least halfway into that level.

"How did that kid have a relationship with the Martial Border? And it even alerted the Queen of Martial Border to come out herself..." Heart Fox Fairy felt somewhat incredulous. This kind of being would not show up at all under normal circumstances, so why would she appear just like that?

"That girl in white clothes looked quite similar to her..." The middle-aged

man pondered for a while, and then the two gazed at each other, realizing what was happening.

"Seems that Liu Ming is really so unfortunate this time. But that's good as well. Tian Xuan Hall has suffered a huge loss this time, and it is quite a piece of good news for us." Heart Fox Fairy smiled and did not dare to stay any longer. Moving her body, she started flying away into the distance at a high speed. The middle-aged man quickly followed.

Mu Chen, who stayed at the same spot, saw the woman in white clothes appear again and realized that they had actually been secretly watched. This caused him to feel somewhat embarrassed, as he was always very cautious but had made a few mistakes this time.

On the other hand, Lin Jing pulled Ling Qingzhu's arms and giggled. Her clever black eyes kept rolling around, but before she could come up with something, Ling Qingzhu already flicked her smooth forehead with her finger.

"Stop thinking of a trick. Your dad already said that I must bring you back. Otherwise, next time your dad will appear instead of me," Ling Qingzhu said, smiling.

Lin Jing's face immediately turned mournful. "Mom, just let me stay outside for a while," Lin Jing begged.

Ling Qingzhu smiled and shook her head. Obviously, it was non-negotiable.

Lin Jing lowered her head in depression, but she then quickly lifted her head to look at Mu Chen in anticipation and suggested, "Mu Chen, how about you come to the Martial Border with me. It's very fun there.

"Also, I will protect you there. Certainly no one will annoy you!"

Hearing her words, Mu Chen immediately felt somewhat awkward. The Martial Border was a superpower in the Great Thousand World, and many experts tried to join but were rejected. However, he was not interested in it because he did not come to the Great Thousand World to find a strong backing...

Perhaps, under the protection of the Martial Border, there would indeed be nobody who would trouble him, but this was not what he wanted. In addition, if that really happened, he felt that he would not even have the courage to go and meet Luo Li.

Hence, towards Lin Jing's invitation, he only shook his head slightly and said, "The Martial Border is good, but the place does not suit me."

"Why?" Lin Jing pouted with dissatisfaction.

Ling Qingzhu, on the other hand, looked at the young man once more with her charming eyes. In his eyes, she could see some kind of persistence; that persistence caused her to smile helplessly.

That was because a long time ago, when she was his age, she also saw a young man with this kind of persistence in his eyes. Afterwards, that young man became her husband.

"In the future, if you need help, you can come to the Martial Border," Ling Qingzhu stated softly. Not only did Mu Chen's rejection of the invitation to the Martial Border not cause her to be displeased, but it also made her feel satisfied, and she appreciated his attitude. Thus, while she was usually unfriendly, she now actually took the initiative to extend an invitation, which was very uncommon.

Mu Chen nodded seriously and responded, "Thank you Aunt Ling. If there is ever such a day, I will surely go there.

"Lin Jing, you just behave yourself and stay in the Martial Border first. When you are strong enough, I will play with you again. Now, we will part here." Mu Chen grinned at Lin Jing and said no more. He folded his hands sincerely at Ling Qingzhu and turned to leave.

Nine Nether also nodded gently at Ling Qingzhu and then followed him.

Seeing that Mu Chen had disloyally abandoned her, Lin Jing immediately stamped her foot in anger.

Ling Qingzhu watched Mu Chen leave and smiling, she remarked, "This young man is indeed interesting."

"He's an idiot." Lin Jing pouted. He chose not to go to the Martial Border even though I invited him. Doesn't he know that there, any guidance he receives will be a hundred times better than learning blindly by himself?

"He is not an idiot."

Ling Qingzhu rubbed Lin Jing's head. In her cold eyes, some warmth and appreciation could be seen.

"He's a young man with a huge ambition... This ambition is similar to the one your dad had when he was young. It's just that we don't know how he will do in the future..."

"You actually compared him to dad?" Lin Jing opened her eyes wide. In her heart, her father was the greatest person in the world. One time, in order to save Aunt Bing, her father went to the Ice Spirit Clan alone and turned the place upside down. Whenever she recalled this, she would feel that her father was really incredibly powerful and handsome.

At the moment, there was obviously an indescribable difference between Mu Chen and her father.

Ling Qingzhu smiled brightly. Lifting her eyes, she said softly, "Who knows what will happen in the future..."

Chapter 665: Liu Tiandao

In the sky, a streamer flew past.

Mu Chen turned into a colorful beam of light and flashed across the sky. At that moment, the injury on his back had already recovered completely. Even he was surprised by the speed of recovery.

Obviously, that shocking recovery rate was due to the unperishable flame mixed within his spiritual energy. If it had been in the past, Mu Chen would definitely need to rest and recover before being able to continue his journey.

"The unperishable flame is really mysterious," Mu Chen praised in spite of himself. After that, he turned his head and looked at his rear, sighing emotionally. Clearly, he had yet to recover from the surprise that Lin Jing was actually the princess of the Martial Border.

"What? You are reluctant again?" Nine Nether appeared beside Mu Chen. Staring at him with a strange look, she added, "The Martial Border is much stronger than the Daluo Territory. You actually rejected it?"

Mu Chen smiled and explained softly, "Maybe by joining the Martial Border, I can get protection, and nobody will come and annoy me. But, so what?"

"The matchless master that I was talking about will not come from this way."

Speaking of this, the young man squinted slightly, and smiling, he said, "And... since the Martial Ancestor can go until this level, why can't I?"

"A really big ambition you have there," Nine Nether raised her eyebrows and remarked.

"Ha, it's beyond my abilities now, but if I don't even have this kind of courage, then how can I become a matchless master?" Mu Chen laughed. In his black eyes, a confident look was rising.

Hearing his words, Nine Nether also chuckled. Then, she gazed afar and said, "The next city should have a transfer spiritual array connected to the

Tianluo Continent. By that time, our two-month long journey will end."

Mu Chen heaved a gentle sigh of relief. The two months were exhausting and not easy, but finally, it could end soon.

Mu Chen closed his palm, and the Mustard Seed Bracelet he had obtained from Liu Ming appeared. His spiritual energy gushed into the bracelet, which immediately started blinking with light.

Shortly afterwards, two balls of light appeared in his hand. Within the two balls of light, a blazing sun and a piece of dead leaf floated quietly, emitting a unique spiritual fluctuation.

Mu Chen gazed at them with a burning look, the corners of his lips curling up uncontrollably. In his heart, there was also excitement. Finally, he was able to gather the three materials needed in order to cultivate the "Great Solar Undying Body". It was indeed no easy task.

Mu Chen sighed in his heart. If he had chosen to stay in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, he would probably have never been able to gather all the materials.

"When do you plan to cultivate the sovereign celestial body?"

Nine Nether also stared at the two balls of light and then questioned. If Mu Chen really wanted to compete to become a commander of the Daluo Territory, he would absolutely need to experience a tough fight. His competitors would all be the best in the Daluo Territory, and their powers would not be weaker than Liu Ming, who had relied on many resources to become strong.

Hence, if Mu Chen wanted to win the contest, he must at least successfully cultivate his sovereign celestial body. Otherwise, he would really be at a great disadvantage.

"The cultivation of the sovereign celestial body will take much longer than just one or two days. After we reach the Daluo Territory, I will start the cultivation," Mu Chen thought deeply and responded. The "Great Solar Undying Body" that he would cultivate was not that simple, and nobody would know what would happen during the cultivation process.

At the moment, the two were outside all by themselves and, if by that time, his cultivation drew attention and trouble, causing it to fail, it would indeed be a great loss. After all, if his cultivation was to fail, the three materials that he had prepared would be destroyed in the process.

Nine Nether nodded gently, urging, "Then let's hurry up."

Nine Nether gazed into the distance, some memories pouring out from her long, narrow eyes. She had also left the Daluo Territory many years ago, and did not know what the Nine Nether Palace had now become.

Around the two, a vast amount of spiritual energy gushed out, before each turned into streamers and flew across the sky, as quickly as a bolt of lightning. In the blink of an eye, they disappeared into the horizon.

...

Tianluo Continent, Tian Xuan Hall.

Tian Xuan Hall sat on the Northern part of the Tianluo Continent. As one of the most powerful forces on the Tianluo Continent, Tian Xuan Hall also had an extremely high status on this land, and the territory controlled by the clan was very vast. By just looking at the area, even over ten Northern Heavens Continents combined would not be able to compare with it.

Of this extensive territory, Tian Xuan Hall was the only controller. Although there were also a few other forces there, they all relied on Tian Xuan Hall for survival. Furthermore, every year, they had to hand over a large amount of sovereign spiritual liquid as an offering.

At the moment, at the center of the Tian Xuan Hall, an indescribably spectacular golden palace stood. Clouds surrounded the palace and, as it glittered with golden light, it seemed majestic and ethereal, like a wonderland.

In the deepest part of the golden palace, there was an area filled with spiritual light. At the center of the spiritual light, there seemed to be a light lotus and a person who was sitting cross-legged on the lotus quietly.

The person seemed like a huge rock. His breathing was extremely

regular. As he breathed in and out, the sound of wind and thunder could be heard in the palace. A great amount of spiritual energy whizzed around, like a spiritual sea.

All of the sudden, the person who was immersed in cultivation opened his eyes. The look from his eyes seemed to have penetrated space, and a furious expression appeared.

He extended his hand, where a simple-looking jade pendant lay in his palm. At the moment, the light from the jade pendant was gradually turning dim.

"The spirit seal of Ming'er is weakening... How dare him, there is actually a person who dares to hurt the son of me, Liu Tiandao!" The look from the person's eyes turned fierce. A low voice caused a forceful wind to blow through the palace.

With the flick of his fingers, the unsophisticated jade pendant floated into the air. The person changed the seals, and the spiritual light enveloped the jade pendant in an attempt to detect the location of Liu Ming.

However, after the attempted detection continued for a while, there were still no responses seen from the jade pendant, hence, no messages were sent out.

"Not detectable? How can it be?!" the person exclaimed in surprise. He then stood up suddenly, as the spiritual light around him weakened. It was a middle-aged man in green robes. The man's eyes were as brooding as the starry sky, and as he moved, a terrifying pressure was released.

The person was the hall master of Tian Xuan Hall, who was also a very reputed expert on the Tianluo Continent: his name was Liu Tiandao. At the moment, his face was somewhat gloomy, and his eyes blinked slightly. He knew that Liu Ming must have gotten into a predicament. Furthermore, the person who attacked him was definitely very powerful as well. Otherwise, it would be impossible that his detection was cut off.

"I want to see, who exactly dares to attack my son!"

Liu Tiandao gave a threatening, icy humph. Then, he waved his sleeves and a huge Eight Trigrams Light Disc flashed out. Next, he flicked his fingers and crushed the spirit seal directly. A beam of light shot out and dashed into the Eight Trigrams Light Disc.

Buzz!

The Eight Trigrams Light Disc started to turn at once. Countless mysterious light patterns flew out and enveloped the beam of golden light. The space above the Right Trigrams distorted slightly, as if it was searching for something across space.

The space there became more and more distorted, and eventually, a small spatial crack was torn out. Seeing the scene, Liu Tiandao stepped into it, his body disappearing right away.

The Continent of Trade, where Liu Ming was suppressed.

The space here suddenly started to distort. After a while, a person stepped out from the air and appeared in the sky. His sharp look scanned the place and, finally, locked onto the ground.

In his eyes, spiritual light converged. It was as if he could see through the ground and detect the spiritual light mountain underneath it.

"Appearance of the Heaven and Earth? It was actually an Earthly Sovereign who made the attack?" Liu Tiandao's expression changed slightly, after which, rage could been seen in his eyes. He humphed and waved his sleeve. Then, immediately, the ground below split apart.

As the ground split, the magnificent spiritual light mountain also appeared. Liu Tiandao moved and landed on the spiritual light mountain. Then, his hands formed a seal and a light ray shot out, eventually covering the spiritual energy mountain.

He planned to ablate the spiritual energy in the spiritual energy mountain, so that it could return to its original form. However, as time passed, Liu Tiandao's face gradually turned blacker, because he realized that his method was not quite effective.

That was because there seemed to be a resisting power inside the

spiritual energy mountain. It was the willpower of the mysterious expert, who had made the attack.

"Such a cruel method."

Liu Tiandao's face was very icy. The person who had attacked seemed to have made up her mind that she would suppress Liu Ming at this place. Based on the strength of the latter, he would definitely die, should the suppression continue.

Although Liu Tiandao was also an Earthly Sovereign, he actually could not ablate the spiritual energy mountain within such a short period of time. If he was to break it by force, he would probably injure Liu Ming, who was suppressed beneath it. It seemed that, this time, Liu Ming had offended a person he should not have.

"It doesn't matter who you are. Even if my son is wrong, it's not your turn to suppress him." Liu Tiandao's look changed. Then, he humphed, waved his sleeves, and turned around to leave. Since the mysterious expert wanted to challenge him with her mind, he would fight till the end.

He firmly believed that, once he went back to get the divine artifact from the hall, the willpower remaining in the spiritual energy mountain would not be able to fight against him. As Liu Tiandao left, the ground was restored to its original state after some rumbling. The huge mountain was once again buried under the ground.

Mu Chen and Nine Nether, although they were responsible for all of these events, still knew nothing about them. The two reached the next city with their fastest speeds, after which, they activated the transfer spiritual array.

At the moment when the spiritual array was activated, Mu Chen took a deep breath, in spite of himself, his eyes sparkling with intense anticipation.

Tianluo Continent, here I come.

My journey to becoming a master will start here.

Chapter 666: Daluotian

The Tianluo Continent.

Being one of the very reputable supercontinents in the Great Thousand World, the size and development of this land exceeded Mu Chen's expectation. The continent was embellished with many forces just like the stars, and the extent to which good and evil coexisted was sufficient to marvel anyone.

Precisely because the situation was so complex, there had never been so-called unification on this supercontinent. None of the forces could achieve this. Even a Heavenly Sovereign super-being would not be able to unify the Tianluo Continent.

Because the place was really very vast, and there were also many hidden talents, nobody would know if a super-being had been living in seclusion in the isolated mountains.

Therefore, many powerful forces had always coexisted on the Tianluo Continent. Although they kept fighting with each other and every day many forces were annexed, there were also many more that would appear like spring bamboo after a rain, continuously adding fresh blood and vitality to this supercontinent.

In this chaos, various geniuses and heroes would appear and be celebrated for a short while on this shockingly extensive supercontinent.

...

Daluo Territory.

As one of the top powers on the Tianluo Continent, it similarly had an extremely broad territory whose size far exceeded that of the Northern Heavens Continent. However, when compared to the entire Tianluo Continent, the territory could only be considered a small corner.

Hence, Mu Chen, who had just reached the Tianluo Continent, spent almost an entire week of travelling and passed through ten transfer spiritual arrays before arriving close to the land under the Daluo Territory.

After that, he spent two more days traveling before reaching the headquarters of the Daluo Territory.

Daluotian.

Standing on a mountain over 60,000 feet high, Mu Chen raised his head and stared straight ahead. His handsome face was filled with intense astonishment because a floating island hovering in the sky appeared before him.

However, rather than calling it a floating island, it would be more appropriate to call it a small continent. Its spectacular size would cause anyone to be dumbstruck.

The floating continent was enveloped in a bright light shield. There, many palaces stood and countless streamers were flying in the sky. The overwhelming sight was exceptionally frightening.

Even though Mu Chen was far away from it, he could still vaguely feel that many powerful spiritual energy fluctuations were rippling quietly there.

"This is the headquarters of the Daluo Territory, Daluotian." Nine Nether was standing beside Mu Chen. She held one hand before her eyes and the other akimbo. Since her body was tall and slender in the first place, her white neck, curved breasts, slim waist, and the most eye-catching sexy legs immediately formed a very tempting arc. The arc was so beautiful that even Mu Chen, who was originally just glancing at her, unintentionally stared at her for a bit longer.

"It's really incredible." Mu Chen quickly withdrew his gaze to avoid angering Nine Nether. Then, he gave his heartfelt compliment: compared to Daluotian, even the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy felt less amazing.

The reputation of the Daluo Continent was indeed well-deserved.

Nine Nether smiled charmingly and said, "Let's go. Maybe for a period of time in the future we will stay here."

Mu Chen also nodded. Staring at Daluotian, which was floating in the

air, Mu Chen clenched his fist slowly. His journey in the Great Thousand World would start here.

Nine Nether flew out first and dashed directly towards Daluotian hovering in the sky in the distance while Mu Chen quickly followed.

As they gradually moved closer, Daluotian started to become clearer, and Mu Chen also began to feel its gigantic size. Looking ahead, he could not see the end but rather only the streamers flying within it.

In the sky 100,000 feet above Daluotian, there was a humongous spiritual array. The spiritual array turned into a light shield entirely covering and protecting Daluotian. A shocking spiritual energy fluctuation was rippling slightly, and even space itself was being continuously distorted.

Nine Nether pointed to the spiritual array and explained, "This is the Guardian Spiritual Array of Daluotian. It is said that even someone as strong as an Earthly Sovereign would find it difficult to break the array..."

Mu Chen nodded. He had already felt that the spiritual array was extraordinary.

In the sky outside Daluotian, there was a large light door. The door was about 10,000 feet in size, and behind it was a light path leading directly to Daluotian's interior. It was the only way into Daluotian.

Nine Nether and Mu Chen landed in front of the giant light door.

"Please stop. Outsiders are not allowed into Daluotian. Violators will be killed on the spot!"

Just as the two landed, a loud shout was heard. Hundreds of figures wearing black armor and fierce looks appeared. The spears in their hands were pointed at Mu Chen and Nine Nether.

A bloodthirsty aura spread quietly from them.

With her face still calm, Nine Nether waved her hand and a black ray flew out, eventually landing in the hands of the captain in black armor who was leading the team. The latter took the item. After the light

dissipated, it turned into a dark token on which there was a soaring black bird. Faintly, a clear tweet could be heard.

"Nine Nether Token?"

The captain in black armor was shocked when he saw the token, after which he quickly knelt down on one knee. Behind him, the hundreds of black-armored warriors also all knelt down on one knee. The clear tinkling of armor could be heard.

"Greetings, Lord Nine Nether!"

Nine Nether waved her hand and the token flew back to her hands. She only nodded slightly and then brought Mu Chen to pass through the light door, eventually disappearing at the end of the light path.

Only when she had left did the black-armored warriors stand up in order.

A black-armored warrior went closer to their captain and questioned uncontrollably in a soft voice, "Captain, the lady just now was the Lord Nine Nether who has been missing for many years?"

"Yes. Since she has the Nine Nether Token, how can it be fake?"

The captain nodded. Looking in the direction where Nine Nether disappeared, he added, "I heard that at the beginning, Lord Nine Nether was the weakest among the nine lords. But she is from the Nine Netherbird clan, and the Condor King was taking care of her. That's why she could become one of the nine lords. However, just now the pressure I felt from her is no weaker than the other eight lords. Seems that she has successfully passed the tribulation."

"But these days, the Nine Nether Palace has been having a hard time. If not for the Condor King, it would have probably been destroyed... The Nine Nether Palace now is but a mere decoration," a black-armored warrior sighed.

"Yeah... The Nine Nether Palace commander that Lord Nine Nether brought up herself also switched to become a subordinate under Lord Blood Hawk, Wang Chong... In the past, Lord Nine Nether saved this

person from the battlefield and gave him lots of cultivation resources. Otherwise, he would not have become who he is today."

"Right, he's really an ungrateful person."

"..."

Of course, Nine Nether and Mu Chen did not know about the whispering behind them. After passing through the light path, the view in front of them became brighter. Daluotian in its magnificence appeared clearly in front of them.

Gazing at the spectacular scene before his eyes, Mu Chen also exclaimed in spite of himself.

Mu Chen moved closer to Nine Nether and asked, "Where do we go first?"

"Let's go to my Nine Nether Palace first. That's my territory. So many years have passed, I wonder how exactly they are doing now." Nine Nether smiled and stared to the northwest. She missed the place.

"You have an exclusive palace?" Mu Chen was somewhat surprised.

"I am one of the nine lords and have quite a high status in Daluotian." Nine Nether rolled her eyes at Mu Chen, after which she said in a condescending tone, "Therefore, next time you see me, you must do what those guys did earlier. Otherwise, you are offending your superior."

Mu Chen laughed, amused. "You can continue dreaming."

Nine Nether raised her fist at him. Then she also gave a charming chuckle and stopped joking with Mu Chen. Turning around, she started moving towards the northwest, and Mu Chen quickly followed.

In the sky in Daluotian, there were occasional groups of people whizzing past in an orderly manner. These were the patrolling troops that protected Daluotian and were there to prevent any abnormal events from happening.

Looking at the awe-inspiring and ordered troops, Mu Chen was also inwardly surprised.

After rushing all the way for about an hour, Nine Nether finally slowed her speed. Meanwhile, Mu Chen raised his head to look into the distance where he saw a huge mountain towering into the clouds. The mountain vaguely resembled a giant bird whose wings were spread out, covering the sky and the sun.

At the peak of the mountain stood a continuous chain of tall palaces.

Staring at the palaces, a smile also appeared on Nine Nether's face. Then, she moved her body and emerged directly in the sky above the palace.

Before the palace, there was a spacious cultivation area. At the moment, a few thousand people were sitting down, cultivating in silence. In front of all the people, there were two girls sitting quietly.

One girl was wearing a black cultivation suit, while the other was in light red clothes. Both looked elegant and beautiful. Most amusingly, their faces looked the same. Clearly, they were twin sisters.

It was just that between the two girls, the one in the black cultivation suit appeared to be ice-cold, while the girl in light red clothes seemed more delicate. However, it was precisely because of their similar faces but different temperaments that anyone there would feel attracted.

At least, among those who were cultivating there, many opened their eyes uncontrollably and secretly looked at the two.

"Huh?"

All of a sudden, the girl in the black suit opened her eyes, which turned cold and fierce. Raising her head quickly, she said in a low tone, "Who is there?"

In the cultivation field, everyone lifted their heads in alert, and spiritual energy started to surge around them.

"Haha, Bing'er, you really have become stronger by the day..." Laughter spread throughout the sky. Then a figure gradually descended and landed in front of the palace.

The girl in the black suit stared blankly at the descending figure. The original coldness and sharpness in her eyes immediately melted, and her eyes started to redden.

The delicate girl beside her also gazed with an incredulous look at the lady in front of them. At the next moment, she rushed towards the lady and her nice eyes were as red as a rabbit's.

"Sister Nine Nether, you are finally back!"

Taking the girl who had rushed over into her arms, Nine Nether looked at their red eyes and also felt touched. Rubbing the head of the girl in her arms, she said in a gentle tone, "Yeah, your sister is back..."

Chapter 667: Nine Nether Palace

Before the palace, the thousands of figures were also stunned, as they stared at Nine Nether, who had just appeared. After a short while, they recovered from their surprise and immediately knelt. A respectful voice spread throughout the place: "Master, welcome back to the palace!"

Their voices were filled with intense joy. Nobody had expected that the master of their Nine Nether Palace would actually return at this moment. Originally, they had thought that the master of the Nine Nether Palace would never come back.

Hearing the deafening voice, Nine Nether was also somewhat surprised. Before she had left, there were not that many people in the Nine Nether Palace. Furthermore, she was not good at management, so most of the time, the place was a mess. On the other hand, the people here presently seemed much more imposing.

"You sisters did great. You were actually able to manage the Nine Nether Palace to become what it is now." Nine Nether held the girl in her arms and smiled happily.

"It's all to elder sister's credit," the girl in light red clothes, who seemed to be somewhat delicate, rubbed her red eyes and said in an embarrassed tone.

Nine Nether smiled and stared at the girl in black suit. The latter bit her rosy lips gently, and the original aloofness and sharpness in her eyes all vanished. However, she obviously had great self-control. Therefore, although she was very excited in her heart, she still did not forget herself. Instead, she bowed slightly and said in a respectful tone, "Master, welcome back to the palace."

"Bing'er, we had agreed that you would call me sister."

Nine Nether held the hand of the girl in the black suit. With some affection in her beautiful eyes, she said, "You must have had a hard time during these years. Don't blame me, because I almost couldn't come back as well."

"Master..." the girl in the black suit immediately shook her head. However, seeing that the eyes of Nine Nether were widening, she quickly changed her words and said, "How can I blame sister. Before you left, you put the Nine Nether Palace under our charge. We will naturally do our best."

"In the first place, the Nine Nether Palace is only part of the formality. You are so stubborn," Nine Nether said, resigned. At the beginning, she was the weakest among the nine lords. Hence, towards her becoming a lord, many people in the Daluo Territory were dissatisfied at the idea. However, because of the Condor King and her own background, they did not dare say much.

But, once she left, the two sisters had probably been bullied because of their abilities. Furthermore, Tang Bing was exceptionally resilient, so even if she was bullied, she would probably just grit her teeth and mind her own business.

Clearly over these years, the two sisters had been tolerating everything in Daluo Territory. Thinking of this, Nine Nether felt sorry for them.

"Oh yeah..."

Scanning her gaze around, Nine Nether seemed to have recalled something, and frowning, she asked, "Where is Cao Feng? Before I left that time, I asked him to help you."

Hearing the name, the expressions of the two girls changed slightly. The girl in the black suit called Tang Bing bit her lips firmly, and after hesitating for a while, she finally took a deep breath and replied, "Sister... Cao Feng, he... he already switched to become a subordinate under Lord Blood Hawk... He had already left our Nine Nether Palace..."

Just as she finished speaking, Nine Nether's originally smiling face turned slightly stiff. The atmosphere quickly became somewhat frozen.

The delicate girl, who was in Nine Nether's arms, also bit her lips and said angrily, "That Cao Feng is so ungrateful. After seeing that no news had been heard about you for many years, he left the Nine Nether Palace and switched to take refuge under Lord Blood Hawk."

"At the beginning, sister, you saw that he was so pitiful, and saved him from the corpses. If it hadn't been for you, he would not have become who he is today!"

Patting the girl's head gently, Nine Nether sighed and said, "I know that Cao Feng places heavy emphasis on his own benefits, but I didn't expect that he couldn't even commit for these few years."

Her voice was filled with some disappointment. During that time, the young man had experienced a miserable event, so she showed some compassion and helped him. She did not expect that his moral character would still be so disappointing.

"Sister, rest assured, in the future, I will definitely not let that traitor off!" Tang Bing gritted her teeth. Even though Nine Nether was not really concerned about Cao Feng's betrayal, she could still not tolerate it.

In the past, because of a war, all of the clan members of the two sisters were killed by a hostile clan. At that time, if Nine Nether had not appeared, they would probably have ended up in a situation that was more unbearable than being killed. Thus, they had always viewed Nine Nether as their closest savior. Thus, they would not be able to tolerate anything that would harm Nine Nether.

The Nine Nether Palace was weak, and she was always a step away from breaking through to the sovereign-level. Otherwise, no matter what happened, she would not let the traitor off easily!

Hearing her words, Nine Nether only smiled. She was not too sad about Cao Feng's betrayal. After all, in her heart, she was clearly more concerned about the two sisters before her. They had been persevering all the way, and this caused her to feel very pleased.

"Next time, I will not leave you behind easily." Nine Nether chuckled. Then, she stared at Tang Bing and said, "Bing'er, you seem to have yet to break through to the sovereign-level?"

Back then, when she left, Tang Bing was already in the Heavenly Completion Stage, and was just a step away from the three sovereign disasters. Based on her talent and the resources in the Daluo Territory, it

was nearly impossible that she had yet to break through to the sovereign-level.

Tang Bing blushed slightly and nodded gently.

"Sister Nine Nether, don't blame my sister. These years, when she has cultivated, she has not been using even one drop of sovereign spiritual liquid. All the sovereign spiritual liquid obtained from the Daluo Territory has been used by her to train the newcomers in the palace. Otherwise, Nine Nether Palace would not have the scene it enjoys right now." The girl in light red clothes was called Tang Rong, and at the moment, she quickly helped her sister to justify.

Nine Nether heard her words and was stunned. Then, she looked at the thousands of people, who were kneeling down neatly on the cultivation ground, and questioned, "We Nine Nether Palace should receive ten thousand sovereign spiritual liquid each year, and also, close to ten thousand from the areas under our control. That's still not enough?"

Tang Rou was hesitating as to whether she should speak. However, Tang Bing stared at her, and she could only close her mouth.

"Bing'er, you tell me." Seeing their subtle actions, Nine Nether seemed to have noticed something. Even her voice became more freezing.

Hearing that, Tang Bing could only gave a bitter smile and replied, "Sister Nine Nether, soon after you left, there were other masters, who said that the Nine Nether Palace is unworthy of the name and cannot become a real lord-level organization in Daluo Territory. Therefore, they jointly suggested to the panel of Elders that our Nine Nether Palace be disbanded."

"However, because the Condor King spoke for us, in the end, the Nine Nether Palace remained, but our supply each year dropped from ten thousand sovereign spiritual liquid to five thousand..."

"As for the areas that we control, there were also many developed cities that were annexed by the other masters secretly. We were weak and could not contest with them, so we could only tolerate them."

"Because of these things, the total amount of sovereign spiritual liquid that our Nine Nether Palace can use in a year is no more than five thousand drops..."

Tang Rou also said softly, "Yeah. Sister needs a lot of sovereign spiritual liquid to break through to the sovereign-level, so she never dared break through. Every time, the sovereign spiritual liquid was distributed to the others, which is why she delayed her own cultivation."

"They're really too much!"

Nine Nether widened her eyes in anger, her face filling with rage, while her plump breasts rose and fell gently. Clearly, she was very furious. She did not expect that once she left, the others would dare exploit the Nine Nether Palace to such an extent.

Naturally, she knew that the masters who Tang Bing and her sister were talking about were the other few lords. In the past, when she was still here, those people were already dissatisfied that she was much weaker, but had the same status as them.

However, because of her background, nobody dared say anything. She did not expect that, the moment she had left, these bastards could no longer take it and would react.

Nine Nether's face was filled with iciness, and a huge spiritual energy pressure spread in spite of herself. Immediately, many people on the cultivation ground could not take the pressure, and thus, started lying on the ground.

Tang Bing was also forced to back off a few steps, due to the spiritual energy pressure, but instead, she looked at Nine Nether with surprise and said joyfully, "Sister Nine Nether, you have passed the tribulation?"

At that moment, the spiritual energy pressure coming from Nine Nether was no weaker than the other eight lords. It seemed that, over these years, when Nine Nether was missing, she had successfully passed the tribulation.

Nine Nether nodded gently. Waving her hand, she said in a low voice,

"Today, you can leave first. No matter how much suffering you have endured in the past, now I, the master of the palace, am back, and will not let anyone bully our Nine Nether Palace!"

Obviously, she said these things to the members of the Nine Nether Palace on the plaza.

"Yes Master!"

Hearing her words, the members of the Nine Nether Palace replied neatly at once, in an excited tone. Then, they left in an orderly manner and all seemed to be enthusiastic. Finally, there would again be someone who would support the Nine Nether Palace. They would also be freed from all the humiliations they had suffered in the past.

As the plaza became quiet, the coldness on Nine Nether's face gradually disappeared. Waving her hand, she said, "Mu Chen, you can come out now."

Tang Bing and Tang Rou were both stunned. Then, she saw a figure flying closer and eventually appear beside Nine Nether. Mu Chen showed up and smiled in a friendly manner at Tang Bing and Tang Rou.

Tang Rou was somewhat shy, and turned her eyes away after looking at Mu Chen. On the other hand, Tang Bing stared at him, alert. It seemed that, after experiencing the incident of Cao Feng, she had become cautious about any man that came anywhere close to Nine Nether.

"This is Mu Chen. All thanks to him, I can pass the tribulation this time."

Nine Nether then pointed at the two girls with her slim finger. "This is Tang Bing, Tang Rou. They're my sisters..."

Hearing that Mu Chen had helped Nine Nether so much, Tang Rou endured her embarrassment and glanced at Mu Chen with a grateful look. Tang Bing also looked at Mu Chen once again, before nodding slightly at him, indicating that he was barely approved.

"Bing'er, how much sovereign spiritual liquid do you need to tackle the breakthrough to the sovereign-level?" Nine Nether suddenly asked.

"I need at least... a thousand drops." Tang Bing hesitated for a while, before giving the least amount she could in reply.

Hearing that, Mu Chen smiled. He then closed his palm, and a glittering jade bottle appeared in his hand. He then extended his hand towards Tang Bing and said, "Sister Tang Bing, there are two thousand drops of sovereign spiritual liquid inside. It should be enough for you to break through."

After obtaining the mustard seed bracelet from Liu Ming, Mu Chen also got quite a large amount of sovereign spiritual liquid from it. Therefore, he was very generous.

Tang Bing paused for a while, but did not take the bottle. Instead, she looked at Nine Nether. Seeing that the latter nodded her head gently, she took the bottle lightly, and the aloofness on her face finally became milder. She said to Mu Chen softly, "Thank you."

"In the future, Mu Chen will also be a member of the Nine Nether Palace. We will all be like a family." Holding the hands of the two sisters, Nine Nether smiled and added, "I plan to let Mu Chen use the one commander quota our Nine Nether Palace has and compete for the 'Daluo Golden Pool'. Do you have any objections?"

Tang Bing and Tang Rou were again stunned after hearing that. They stared at each other and did not know whether to speak.

"Why? Bing'er, is it that you also planned to go?" Nine Nether saw that and asked curiously.

"No... of course, sister, you can decide on that matter."

Tang Bing quickly shook her head. After hesitating for a while, she smiled bitterly and said, "Two years ago, the one quota to contest for the 'Daluo Golden Pool' that our Nine Nether Palace has each year was forcefully 'bought' by Lord Blood Hawk using one thousand drops of sovereign spiritual liquid... We did not have the abilities to reject at all. So, our Nine Nether Palace did not have the rights to contest for the 'Daluo Golden Pool' for quite some time already..."

Just as she finished talking, Nine Nether's face became totally icy. She gritted her teeth firmly, and fire seemed to be coming from her eyes. This bastard Lord Blood Hawk is really bullying us too much!

Chapter 668: The Four Great Commanders

Before the palace, Nine Nether's face was filled with frost and her eyes with fire. Clearly, she was enraged.

Beside her, Mu Chen also frowned slightly. It seemed to him that Lord Blood Hawk was really an immoral person. The things he did were so contemptible.

Nine Nether's plump breasts rose and fell gently. She controlled her anger, and her voice gradually calmed, but the coldness in it could not be hidden. "From now on, Nine Nether Palace will take back the quota. Tomorrow, I will attend the Meeting of the Nine Lords to let them know that I, Nine Nether, am back. I'll see who dares to cause Nine Nether Palace trouble in the future.

"For those who have taken things from our Nine Nether Palace, I will make them return it all!"

Tang Bing and Tang Rou both nodded, their eyes filled with joy. Nine Nether had passed the tribulation and returned. Since she became much stronger and was no weaker than the other eight lords, Nine Nether Palace finally had someone to rely on.

Nine Nether looked at Tang Bing and asked, "Bing'er, now in the Daluo Territory, how many commanders are entitled to compete for the quotas in the Daluo Golden Pool?" If Mu Chen wanted to enter the Daluo Golden Pool, he had to fight and win against the other contestants. Therefore, she also had to let Mu Chen know how strong his opponents were.

Tang Bing looked at Mu Chen, who was standing beside Nine Nether. Her eyes were beautiful. If they were filled with aloofness, she would seem extremely unapproachable. However, once her eyes had other emotions in them, they would instantly become very pretty and clever. They would even seem to be somewhat charming and as a result, very attractive.

As she looked at Mu Chen, her eyes were filled with doubt. The pressure

that she felt from Mu Chen seemed to be significantly weaker than that of those reputed commanders in the Daluo Territory.

She was very doubtful whether Mu Chen really had the power to compete with those talented commanders.

However, although she was uncertain, she still answered seriously, "Now in the Daluo Territory, there are a total of 18 commanders, and they all belong to the other lords. Nine Nether Palace had one in the past but..."

The one in the past she was talking about was obviously Cao Feng, who had left Nine Nether Palace.

Nine Nether nodded slightly, and her face was completely calm. "Among these 18 commanders, the most reputed today are the four great commanders."

Tang Bing seemed to smile as she said, "The head of the four great commanders is Xu Qing who is under Lord Asura. He was already promoted to Grade Two Sovereign long ago. I think maybe sister Nine Nether will have some impression of him."

"Xu Qing?" Hearing the name, Nine Nether was temporarily stunned, and she said with surprise, "That ordinary kid has become so strong?"

"Hehe, sister Nine Nether, I heard that this Xu Qing has always liked you. Over these years, many outstanding girls in Daluo Territory have shown their admiration to him, but he has never been moved." Tang Rou covered her mouth and giggled softly.

Nine Nether flicked her slim finger on Tang Rou's smooth forehead and said, "Nonsense. I didn't have much contact with him... Bing'er, you can continue."

"Among the four great commanders, the one who is ranked second is Zhou Yue under Lord Mountain Cracker." Tang Bing paused for a while and then continued, "At the third position is Wu Tian who is under Lord Blood Hawk. He was brought back by Lord Blood Hawk a few years ago from the outside into Daluo Territory. Within just a few years, Wu Tian climbed quickly and soon became one of the four great commanders. That

speed is indeed shocking."

Nine Nether nodded and asked, "Then who's the fourth?"

Tang Bing's rosy lips twitched slightly, and she eventually answered softly, "The person who is ranked fourth is also under Lord Blood Hawk..."

Nine Nether squinted slightly and said tonelessly, "Cao Feng?"

Tang Bing nodded gently.

"Seems like he has found the correct support. In just a few years, he has climbed to such a level," Nine Nether said calmly. The young man was indeed very talented. Otherwise, he would not have been promoted to a commander of Nine Nether Palace in the first place.

"The first three in the four great commanders should all be Grade Two Sovereigns. As for Cao Feng, it is said that he is at the peak of Grade One Sovereign and can enter Grade Two any time. So among the Grade One Sovereigns, he can beat almost everyone."

Tang Bing glanced at Mu Chen and continued, "There are only four quotas for the Daluo Golden Pool, so if he wants to get one, he must defeat one of the four great commanders."

Mu Chen nodded gently. Tang Bing's meaning was clear. Among the four great commanders, the weakest one in comparison was Cao Feng. Thus, if he wanted to obtain the entitlement to enter the Daluo Golden Pool, he must defeat Cao Feng.

Clearly, Tang Bing did not think that Mu Chen would be able to do that. Even though she hated Cao Feng, he became one of the four great commanders because he indeed had some capabilities.

Nine Nether turned her head, smiled at Mu Chen and said, "How? Are you confident? If you are not, we will give up this time."

Mu Chen stared into Nine Nether's eyes. In the depths of her seemingly calm eyes, there was clearly some slight anticipation. If he said that he was not confident and would like to reject the contest at the moment, she would probably be somewhat disappointed in him.

"I don't yet know how strong those so-called four great commanders are, but... I wasn't even afraid of Earthly Sovereigns, not to mention some Grade Two Sovereigns." A smile appeared on Mu Chen's handsome face as he laughed.

"Don't worry. Our Nine Nether Palace will definitely have a share in the Daluo Golden Pool."

Nine Nether raised her eyebrows slightly and did not speak, but a smile appeared on her face. To the side, Tang Rou also stared curiously at the confident Mu Chen, while Tang Bing's face was filled with judgement. His courage was indeed remarkable but... the eligibility to enter the Daluo Golden Pool would not be obtained by mere courage.

Nine Nether did not say anything else. She turned around and walked directly towards the palace. When she entered the palace, her footsteps paused and a soft voice was heard. "Since you said so, no matter how difficult it is to obtain the quota to participate, I will surely get it for you!"

After she finished speaking, she stepped into the palace. Tang Rou glanced at Mu Chen curiously and quickly followed her.

Mu Chen leaned against a pillar. Watching Nine Nether leave, he also smiled gently, and it could be seen in his eyes that he was somewhat touched. Since they left the Northern Heavens Continent, Nine Nether had always been planning for him. She knew his goal, so she had been trying her best to pave the way for him within her abilities.

That was the way to becoming a matchless master.

"Seems that sister Nine Nether is very good to you." Tang Bing crossed her arms and stared at Mu Chen. The iciness had returned to her eyes. Although she was wearing a somewhat loose cultivation suit, this action still caused a plump curve in her chest to be shown under her shirt.

"What's your relationship with sister Nine Nether?" Tang Bing started to question Mu Chen. Over the years, she had always been in charge of Nine Nether Palace, so she looked somewhat formidable. Her inquiring look would also cause much pressure.

However, her contemplation was obviously quite useless against Mu Chen. He smiled at Tang Bing and answered, "It's the kind of relationship where I will not let her get hurt even if I get severely injured."

Mu Chen did not say much more. He changed the topic immediately and said softly, "Sister Tang Bing, if Nine Nether wants to take back that commander quota, will it be very troublesome?"

Tang Bing frowned and replied, "There are only nine lords in the Daluo Territory, and each lord only has one such quota. Lord Blood Hawk took away the quota from our Nine Nether Palace and over the years he has benefited much. Do you think he will give it up easily?

"Even though sister Nine Nether is supported by the Condor King, he alone does not have the final say in the whole Daluo Territory. Otherwise, Nine Nether Palace would not have had such a hard time over these years...

"So the Meeting of the Nine Lords tomorrow will probably not be peaceful." Tang Bing paused. She stared at Mu Chen with her charming eyes and added, "Sister Nine Nether is very good to you. I hope that you will not be another Cao Feng. Otherwise, whether sister Nine Nether would stop me or not, I will definitely not let you off!"

Mu Chen touched his nose and laughed. "Sister Tang Bing, when you threaten someone you look quite beautiful."

At the moment, Tang Bing's already large eyes widened even more uncontrollably. She stared at the smiling young man in front of her, feeling slightly angry. This guy... she was talking to him seriously, and yet he dared to tease her?

Because she was very serious and strict, the people in the palace were all scared of her and would not dare to speak to her like that. Therefore, facing Mu Chen's tease, she could not recover from the surprise for a while.

"Rest assured, sister Tang Bing, that Cao Feng..."

Mu Chen breathed out gently. Just as Tang Bing was starting to raise her

eyebrows, he smiled but some coldness could be felt from it. "I will not let him off."

Although Nine Nether did not seem to have many emotional changes when she heard about Cao Feng's betrayal, Mu Chen could still see some sadness in her eyes. Clearly, the feeling of being betrayed was difficult.

Tang Bing was stunned. Staring at Mu Chen, she hesitated for a while and then said, "It's good enough for you to have such a thought. Cao Feng is not that simple. You should try to be more careful."

"Okay."

Mu Chen smiled and nodded. Then, he scanned around and said, "Sister Tang Bing, show me around. Next time, I will also be a member of the Nine Nether Palace, so I need to get familiar with the place."

Tang Bing looked at him with an annoyed expression but did not reject his request. She turned around to leave and Mu Chen followed her, smiling.

The next day.

It was still early in the morning, but there were already many people waiting in front of the hall in the Nine Nether Palace. The closed palace gates opened slowly, and a slender figure stepped out.

The figure was wearing close-fitting black armor. The armor was attached closely to her exquisite body, revealing her attractive shape. On the armor, there was a light pattern resembling a Netherworld bird soaring in the air.

The figure was, of course, Nine Nether. But at the moment, as compared to the past, she had more of a heroic and vital beauty. Her long hair swung in the air and dignity radiated from her face.

"Greetings, my lord!"

Before the Nine Nether Palace, the thousands of its members instantly knelt down on one knee. Their neat and excited voices spread throughout the place.

Nine Nether scanned around and only nodded slightly. Behind her, Mu Chen, Tang Bing, and Tang Rou all stood in silence.

"Let's go. We'll meet those whom we have not seen for a long time. We'll tell them that anyone who has taken something from our Nine Nether Palace had better return it!"

Coldness surged out from Nine Nether's eyes. She waved her hand, and her body turned into a beam of light and flew out. Behind her, Mu Chen and the other two quickly followed, all looking combative.

Chapter 669: The Various Lords

Daluotian, central region.

At the central region of Daluotian, which looked like a small continent, there was a towering, majestic mountain peak. The peak pierced into the clouds like a sword, producing a spectacular sight.

This peak was called the Daluo Peak, and was the most important place in the entire Daluotian region. It was not only a place where the three kings controlled the whole Daluo Territory, but also one where even the mysterious Dominator was said to be secluded within. It was like the pivot point of the whole Daluotian region, or even the whole Daluo Territory.

At that moment, the Daluo Peak was exceptionally lively. In the sky, whistling sounds could be heard continuously, as people whizzed over from afar, one by one, eventually landing on the magnificent peak.

That day was when the biannual Meeting of the Nine Lords in the Daluo Territory would be held. This was considered to be a very important meeting in the Daluo Territory, so normally, nobody would be absent.

At the highest part of the Daluo Peak, a giant palace stood in silence. The palace was emitting an ancient feeling, as if it had been retained from the olden times, causing many to feel awe.

Before the palace was a series of stone stairs, which were one hundred thousand feet long. All the figures landed below the stone stairs, not daring to fly to the top directly. Instead, they chose to walk up, respectfully using the long stone stairs.

Before the hundred thousand feet long stone stairs, there were already many people congregated. However, most of them stood in various clusters, with clear divisions between the different groups.

Where there are people, there are conflicts, and in the huge Daluo Territory, this rule also applied. For their own benefits, the different clans fought against each other. There was gratitude among some of them, resentment among others, which indeed made for a complicated situation.

Vroom!

As the extensive platform started to be filled with people, a few streamers suddenly flew over from the distant sky, eventually landing on the platform. Everyone's sight was projected onto the few people. When they saw the newcomers clearly, their eyes were all filled with intense surprise. Immediately, some soft whispering spread quietly.

"That's... Lord Nine Nether? She has indeed returned!"

"Yesterday, I already received some news, which seems to be indeed true. Lord Nine Nether disappeared for many years, and it was said that she went for her tribulation. By the looks of it, she has passed the tribulation successfully."

"Incredible. To think that she could pass the tribulation at her age, and turn from a spiritual beast into being divine."

"Seems like the Meeting of the Nine Lords today will be interesting. Over these past years, the Nine Nether Palace has been severely bullied by the other lords, the leading one being Lord Blood Hawk. Based on the character of Lord Nine Nether, she will not leave the matter as such."

"In the past, Lord Nine Nether had yet to pass the tribulation. The Condor King supported her, but she was of no threat still. Today, however, she has passed the tribulation and returned, so things will probably not end that easily."

"..."

On the vast platform, different kinds of whispering spread quietly. Towards those gossiping, Nine Nether acted as if she heard nothing. Lifting her face, she stared at the ancient palace at the top of the hundred thousand feet long stone stairs, her long eyes squinting slightly.

Mu Chen and the two sisters, Tang Bing and Tang Rou, all stood behind Nine Nether, looking steadily forward. Shortly after Nine Nether emerged, more whistling was heard from the sky. A few figures flew over, eventually landing on the platform.

As these figures arrived, a strong spiritual energy pressure enveloped the

place instantly. The people who were walking over were obviously very powerful.

Mu Chen also glanced at them, realizing that there were about three groups of people who had just emerged. On the left, the leader was an emotionless middle-aged man. He wore black robes and his pupils were dark red, making people tremble in fear.

Behind the middle-aged man, a younger man followed closely. The man was tall and straight, and he wore a green shirt. His dashing eyebrows swung in the air, and in fact, he was pretty handsome.

Around him, there was a decent spiritual energy fluctuation. His expression was originally quite calm, but once he saw that slender and tall body, the look in his eyes started to fluctuate uncontrollably.

"That is Lord Asura, who is considered to be the strongest among the nine lords today. In time, he may even be eligible to become one of the three kings." When Mu Chen saw the two people, Tang Bing, who was at the side, said softly.

Mu Chen nodded gently, his look somewhat solemn. The feeling that Lord Asura had given him was even stronger and more unfathomable than the that which he had gotten from the old man in black robes, who was now accompanying Liu Ming.

"The person behind Lord Asura is Xu Qing, the head of the four great commanders. He is pretty powerful."

Mu Chen's eyes turned slightly towards the man in the green shirt. The eyes of the latter were totally locked onto Nine Nether. Judging from his behaviour, it seemed that Xu Qing indeed had some affection towards Nine Nether, confirming what Tang Rou had said earlier.

However, regarding his pleasantly surprised stare, Nine Nether did not seem to have any reactions at all. Only when she saw Lord Asura, did she look at him and nod gently.

Although in the Daluo Territory, it was extremely difficult to get close to Lord Asura, Nine Nether still thought that Lord Asura was clearly much

better than the sinister Lord Blood Hawk. Lord Asura also saw Nine Nether, and his emotionless face moved slightly, eventually also nodding.

In the past, Nine Nether was only a small kid in his eyes, but this time, after she returned, even he felt some pressure. It seemed that, over the years, she had become much stronger.

The man in the green shirt, who was behind Lord Asura, saw that Nine Nether did not look at him at all, and could only give a bitter smile. However, the look from his eyes became increasingly bright, as if he had found his motivation all of the sudden.

Mu Chen turned his eyes to look at the second wave of people. The leader was a very husky middle-aged man, who had a pair of large palms, which revealed dragon-like veins, as if they could crack open a mountain.

"That's Lord Mountain Cracker... also a strong person among the nine lords," Tang Bing said tonelessly.

Mu Chen nodded lightly. Just then, his eyes moved suddenly, because he saw that behind Lord Mountain Cracker, a similarly burly and tough man was looking in his direction, his eyes wavering. Obviously, he was not looking at Mu Chen, but rather, his attention was fixed upon the emotionless Tang Bing, who was standing beside him.

"Hehe, that's Zhou Yue, the second among the four great commanders. He seems to be fond of my sister. In the past, he snuck into the Nine Nether Palace to peep at my sister secretly. Later, he was discovered by my sister, who took a sword directly and chased him out." At the side, Tang Rou snickered.

"Seems that your sister is quite attractive." Mu Chen felt somewhat amused. This Zhou Yue clearly had some affection towards Tang Bing, but judging from Tang Bing's behavior, she did not seem to be interested in him.

Tang Bing raised her eyebrows, glancing at Mu Chen with her eyes wide open. The latter smiled at her, but she could only turn her head away, feeling annoyed. She realized that Mu Chen was quite thick-skinned, and knew that he would not feel at fault, no matter how much she stared at

him.

"Ha, isn't this Nine Nether? We didn't expect that you had really returned. It's such a joy."

Just as when Mu Chen was looking at Lord Asura, a seemingly somewhat hearty but actually gloomy laughter was heard. Then, Mu Chen saw a group of people coming directly towards them. Many people around started to look at them.

The group was led by a middle-aged man with blood-red hair. His eyes were extremely penetrating and gloomy, as if he was an eagle staring at its prey from above, ready to give it a fatal blow at anytime.

At the moment, he smiled and gazed at Nine Nether. As his blood-red hair swung in the breeze, it smelled of blood wafting across the air. This time, even without Tang Bing's introduction, Mu Chen already knew that the newcomer must be Lord Blood Hawk, whose relationship with Nine Nether was very bad.

At the side, Tang Bing and Tang Rou stared angrily behind Lord Blood Hawk, where there was a man in a white shirt. The man's appearance was quite handsome, but at the moment, his face was slightly stiff. His look was evasive, and he did not dare look at Nine Nether, who was just in front.

Seeing this, Mu Chen already knew that the person must be Cao Feng, who had left the Nine Nether Palace...

Beside Cao Feng, there was another man, who was smiling and looking at the twin sisters, whose eyes were filled with anger. Intense desire could be seen in the depth of his eyes. Then, he licked his lips gently, as if he wanted to swallow the twin sisters into his stomach.

This person was Wu Tian, who was ranked third in the four great commanders...

Nine Nether did not pay attention to Lord Blood Hawk, standing before her. Her eyes passed him and glanced at Cao Feng, who was standing behind Lord Blood Hawk, her face being calm.

"Ha, Cao Feng, this is your old master. Isn't it a bit rude not to greet her?" Lord Blood Hawk clasped his hands and laughed at will.

Only then did Cao Feng raise his head and give a stiff smile. "Greetings, Master Nine Nether."

Nine Nether looked at him, her eyes gradually turning calm. Not even much disappointment could be seen. Even though she was somewhat sad upon hearing the news the previous day, when she saw him again, it felt like he was a stranger. She only felt somewhat sorry for him, because the young man, whom she saved from the battlefield in the first place, had slowly changed for the worse.

It seemed that not everyone could always keep their original self on the road to becoming a master, at least not like the young man beside her, who always had a gentle smile on his face, but was full of stubbornness and perseverance in his bones. Watching Nine Nether's gradually calming eyes, and feeling that it was as if she was staring at a stranger, Cao Feng clenched his fist firmly in his sleeves, uncontrollably.

He lowered his head slightly, his face becoming somewhat gloomy and distorted. He was very displeased about the fact that Nine Nether was so calm about his betrayal.

Nine Nether withdrew her look and finally glanced at Lord Blood Hawk. In her icy eyes' glare, there seemed to be frost condensing. Then, she turned around and walked directly towards the palace. Her cold voice even caused the temperature of the surrounding air to drop.

"Blood Hawk, whatever you have swallowed from my Nine Nether Palace, be prepared to vomit out in the future."

Chapter 670: Meeting of the Nine Lords

As Nine Nether left, the atmosphere at the stone platform was still rather frozen. Many people had thoughts flashing in their eyes. It seemed that the Meeting of the Nine Lords this time would probably not be peaceful.

Lord Blood Hawk squinted slightly and stared at Nine Nether as she departed. Some cruelness flashed in the depths of his eyes. Immediately, he smiled slightly and said, "Ha, I did not expect that after she left for a few years, her temper would become so bad.

"But I want to see who can take back the things that I have already swallowed!" He gave a forbidding smile and did not take Nine Nether's threat seriously. Although he knew that the Condor King had Nine Nether's back, he was not afraid. After all, the Condor King was only one of the three kings and could not control everything in the Daluo Territory by himself.

"Let's move!"

Lord Blood Hawk waved his hand and also stepped onto the hundred thousand foot stone stairs, moving up quickly.

Lord Asura, Lord Mountain Cracker, and the rest only watched on the sidelines and did not interfere with the resentment between the two parties. Among the nine lords, Nine Nether always had a weaker foundation and did not have any allies. On the other hand, Lord Blood Hawk was quite reputed, so in previous conflicts, Lord Blood Hawk had always gotten the upper hand. It was just that this time, they did not know what the outcome would be.

Behind Lord Asura, Xu Qing glanced at Lord Blood Hawk's back and frowned helplessly.

Lord Asura seemed to have noticed Xu Qing's view and said tonelessly, "If you don't have the abilities, don't think about speaking out for a woman. You still don't have that capability yet."

Hearing that, Xu Qing gave an awkward smile.

"Moreover, with Nine Nether's strength at the moment, it's not your turn to worry about her. Now she is probably close to becoming a Grade Five Sovereign. Together with her Divine Beast body, even Lord Blood Hawk, who is a Grade Five Sovereign, can't beat her."

Lord Asura stepped forward and a toneless voice passed into Xu Qing's ears. "Also, you should know well that Nine Nether is not like the other ordinary girls. She is aloof and proud. You are still a long way from being able to move her. At least you need to get rid of your status of being a mere commander."

Xu Qing nodded slightly and then followed behind Lord Asura to move towards the palace.

The other lords also stepped onto the stone stairs.

Walking up the stairs, they realized that the ancient palace was already open. Nine Nether brought Mu Chen and the other two, and stepped into the palace. Inside, there were many oval stone platforms whose size increased with the distance from the entrance.

The stone platforms extended along the sides of the palace, and the center of the palace was completely empty. At the highest part of the stone platforms, there was a huge throne on which one could look over everybody else in the palace. However, there was no one on the throne at the moment. Even though this was the case, there still seemed to be an invisible pressure emanating from the throne and enveloping the entire palace.

Obviously, the throne belonged to the real ruler of the Daluo Territory, the elusive Dominator.

Below the throne, there were three golden lotus platforms. There were three people sitting silently on the lotus platforms, and faint halos were emanating from their bodies. The space around them appeared to be distorted.

In the middle was a rather skinny old man. There always seemed to be

light converging in his eyes. It was as if his look could penetrate a person's heart. It was so sharp that it was frightening.

The person on his left was also an old man with white hair. However, his skin was as smooth as an infant's, and no wrinkles could be seen on his face. Even his white hair was shiny, and he did not look like a dying old man at all. His eyes were completely dark and did not have any white at all. The darkness would cause anyone seeing it to tremble with fear.

On his right was a man who looked sleepy. His age could not be told from his appearance, but he looked very lazy, as if he were half-asleep.

Entering the palace, Nine Nether first looked at the skinny old man at the center. Finally, a smile appeared on her always cold face.

"Ah, little Nine Nether, you are finally back. Great." The skinny old man's penetrating look stopped on Nine Nether as he smiled happily.

The old man with white hair and infant-like skin also squinted and glanced at Nine Nether. Some surprise flashed in his eyes.

The sleepy man also opened his eyes slightly to take a look, after which he continued to tilt his head lazily.

"The person at the center is the Condor King. He has some relationships with the Nine Netherbird clan, so he is considered as sister Nine Nether's senior and always takes care of her," Tang Bing said softly to Mu Chen.

"The person on the left of the Condor King is the Spiritual Pupil King. He supports Lord Blood Hawk and some of the rest. Lord Blood Hawk dares to be so arrogant largely because the Spiritual Pupil King is supporting him."

Mu Chen changed his focus and looked at the old man with white hair and black eyes. The latter also seemed to have noticed, and his eyes turned slightly towards Mu Chen. It was as if a strange light was circulating in his black eyes, causing people to be deeply attracted and unable to withdraw themselves.

Suddenly, a somewhat icy hand gently grabbed Mu Chen's palm. The cold feeling caused him to instantly become clear-headed. At once, he was shocked and fear filled his eyes.

The Spiritual Pupil King was indeed quirky.

Seeing that Mu Chen had regained consciousness, Nine Nether let go of his hand and reminded him, "Don't stare into his pupils. The divine technique that he cultivates is in his eyes."

Mu Chen nodded gently.

"The third one is known as the Sleeping King... Over the years, I don't think I have ever seen him completely awake. Hence, the Condor King and the Spiritual Pupil King will decide on most of the matters in the Daluo Territory," Tang Bing continued as she glanced at that always sleepy figure with a strange look.

Amazement could also be seen on Mu Chen's face, and his expression was similarly strange. In the world, there is actually such a weird person?

"Don't belittle him. It is said that he was the first to follow the Dominator to develop the Daluo Territory. He is unfathomable. Even the Condor King is somewhat afraid of him," Nine Nether said softly.

Mu Chen nodded slightly. The three kings before him were probably no weaker than the Human-Demon Elder from Tian Xuan Hall. They were all at least Grade Seven Sovereigns.

"Then how about the Dominator?" Mu Chen asked curiously.

"The Dominator has not appeared for many years," Tang Rou said softly. "The Dominator is the most mysterious person in the Daluo Territory. It is said that he is in seclusion to cultivate, but nobody knows where he is."

Mu Chen smiled resignedly. The Daluo Territory was indeed unique.

Nine Nether waved her hand, and brought Mu Chen and the other two towards a stone chair, after which she sat down. The other eight lords also brought their people in gradually and sat down in order.

"Ha, after so many years, the seats here are finally all filled." Looking at the fully occupied seats below, the Condor King smiled slightly and announced, "Since everyone is here, let's start the Meeting of the Nine Lords."

The region under the Daluo Territory was extremely vast, and was also contiguous with many other similarly powerful forces. There had been continuous battles among them. Many issues that required discussion would be settled during the Meeting of the Nine Lords.

Because Nine Nether had left the Daluo Territory for many years, she did not say anything during these topics. Instead, her slim fingers lightly tapped on the stone platform. Her eyes were partially closed and coldness could always be seen on her face.

Mu Chen, Tang Bing, and Tang Rou stood in silence without looking sideways.

The discussions about the battles continued for about two hours and then finally ended. The Condor King changed the topic and said, "These issues have been settled. Next, let's talk about the contest for the Daluo Golden Pool, which will be held two months from now."

Just as he finished speaking, the atmosphere in the palace immediately became more serious, and the looks from the various lords also turned solemn. Clearly, they understood that this was the highlight. After all, the Daluo Golden Pool was rather attractive.

At the moment, Nine Nether also opened her charming eyes. Her icy look was projected onto Lord Blood Hawk, and her cold voice spoke first. "In this Daluo Golden Pool contest, the Nine Nether Palace will also participate."

Everyone in the place was alarmed, as they knew that Lord Nine Nether, who had just returned, was starting to launch a verbal assault.

Hearing her words, Lord Blood Hawk smiled and said, "Haha, Nine Nether, you have been away for a long time, so you are unaware of many things. The quota your Nine Nether Palace had was sold to our Blood Hawk Palace long ago."

Immediately, anger appeared on Tang Bing and Tang Rou's faces. This person is indeed shameless.

"Sold to you? Did I agree? Lord Blood Hawk, leader of the Blood Hawk

Palace, you should know that for this kind of thing, it only counts when the leader of the palace agrees, right?" Nine Nether sneered.

"Since I didn't agree, that doesn't count. Otherwise, how about I give you 2,000 drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid, and you also sell the quota from your Blood Hawk Palace to my Nine Nether Palace?"

The corners of Lord Blood Hawk's eyes twitched, and his look became much more dour. Then, he gave a forbidding smile and said, "I didn't imagine that you had grown a silver tongue after leaving for a few years."

His palm gradually tightened on the armrest of the stone chair, and a huge spiritual energy pressure burst out as he stared at Nine Nether with a fierce look.

Seeing that, the corners of Nine Nether's pink lips also curled up to form a cold smile. Suddenly, her hand smacked onto the large stone table, and a crack instantly shot out under her palm, flying towards Lord Blood Hawk like a sharp sword.

"How dare you!"

Seeing that Nine Nether actually dared to attack first, Lord Blood Hawk's look became frosty, and he also smacked his hand down suddenly. A blood ray crack also shot out from his palm and collided directly with the incoming crack.

Bang!

The huge stone table immediately started to shake violently. However, before the shockwave could burst out, a gentle power rushed over and ablated the two forces.

The Condor King waved his sleeves and said tonelessly, "No fighting is allowed in the discussion hall."

Lord Blood Hawk gave a cold humph. He stared at Nine Nether with a dour look and mocked, "Even if you get the quota, so what? Your Nine Nether Palace has no commanders, so you are not eligible to participate in the contest for the Daluo Golden Pool."

A commander must be a Sovereign. In the Nine Nether Palace, apart from Nine Nether, even the girl Tang Bing had yet to step into the Sovereign-level.

"Who told you that our Nine Nether Palace has no commanders?"

Nine Nether raised her eyes, and her rosy lips curved up into a mocking smile. Then, she pointed at Mu Chen beside her, and her cold voice spread throughout the entire place.

"From today onwards, he is the new commander of our Nine Nether Palace!"

Chapter 671: Qualification

"From today onward, he is the new commander of our Nine Nether Palace!"

When Nine Nether's cold voice was heard, the whole palace went silent for a while. Then, everyone raised their eyes suddenly, looking at the young man behind Nine Nether, who had been very quiet and now looked exceptionally calm.

"Who is he? He seems to be quite young..."

"From this spiritual energy fluctuation, he seems to have just promoted to the sovereign-level. Is he even competent enough to become a commander?"

"Did she just find a person randomly to make up the number?"

"..."

Some doubtful whispering spread quietly, as all the people stared at Mu Chen with a suspicious look. Even though it was not easy for him to have such power at this age, to become a commander in the Daluo Territory, one must have real strength and not simply talent alone. Obviously, the pressure coming out from Mu Chen was not quite convincing enough.

Lord Asura glanced at Mu Chen emotionlessly, not saying anything. Behind him, the man called Xu Qing looked at Mu Chen for a while longer.

At the moment, Lord Blood Hawk also squinted slightly, as he gazed at Mu Chen. His look was as frightening as a viper. Scanning Mu Chen up and down, the corners of his lips twitched uncontrollably, then he said, "Who is this? He's not from our Daluo Territory, right?"

"He is, at least from now onward. As the leader of the Nine Nether Palace, I naturally have the rights to appoint someone as the commander of the Nine Nether Palace. I don't think you can interfere with this, right?" Nine Nether said tonelessly.

Lord Blood Hawk lowered his eyes slightly, then said, "Although this is

true, the Nine Nether Palace is still under the Daluo Territory, after all, and the commanders in our Daluo Territory are chosen only after undergoing many rounds of intense battles. If you can appoint someone to have such a position at will, isn't it unfair to the other commanders?"

"Furthermore, if the commander you appoint is too weak, the other forces will mock us, saying that the Daluo Territory has no more powerful people. So, regarding the appointment of commanders, I'm afraid you can't just decide such things all by yourself," Lord Blood Hawk asserted firmly.

Behind Lord Blood Hawk, both Wu Tian and Cao Feng were staring at Mu Chen. The former seemed unconcerned, but the latter looked somewhat gloomy, because he recalled that, when he was brought back by Nine Nether to the Nine Nether Palace in the first place, she also had bestowed upon him the position of commander.

However, after Nine Nether had left for so many years, he had also eventually left the Nine Nether Palace, because the Nine Nether Palace without Nine Nether was much weaker than the Blood Hawk Palace. His actions for leaving also showed that he also had not expected Nine Nether to actually return again.

In addition, this time, she had even brought a young man along with her...

"You want to use him to replace me?" Coldness flashed across Cao Feng's eyes, as he stared at Mu Chen with a murky look, while looking down upon him. It was obvious that, when compared to him, Mu Chen was much weaker. As such, it seemed that Nine Nether was becoming worse at choosing talents.

In the palace, a few of the other seven lords also nodded to indicate that they agreed with Lord Blood Hawk's statements. Most of these people had some kind of a relationship with Lord Blood Hawk. And so, at that time, they were the ones who jointly suggested that the Nine Nether Palace should be dismissed.

Seeing this interchange, Nine Nether's beautiful eyes were filled with

more coldness, but not so much surprise. Obviously, she had foreseen that this issue would not be resolved so easily.

On the three lotus platforms, at the highest part of the palace, the Condor King and the Spiritual Pupil King remained silent, allowing the rest of those present to argue, while the Sleeping King had always maintained his signature sleepy look. It was as if even very major events, like that which was occurring at present, would not be able to wake him up!

Tang Bing and Tang Rou also gritted their teeth. In their hearts, they were cursing those who were trying to stop Nine Nether.

Mu Chen smiled gently, before taking half a step forward. He stared at Lord Blood Hawk, whose look was so penetrating, it seemed to be able to pass through a person's body. Smiling, Mu Chen asked, "May I ask, Lord Blood Hawk, what do I need to do to show that I am qualified to become a commander?"

Lord Blood Hawk only cast a fleeting glance at Mu Chen. Then, he leaned back on his stone chair and lowered his eyes, not showing any interest in talking further. Clearly, he felt that Mu Chen did not even have adequate importance to even speak to him.

Indeed, he was one of the nine lords in the Daluo Territory, and was a grade five sovereign. There were many powerful people under his command, and he could decide a person's fate by the snap of a finger. If Mu Chen did not presently have Nine Nether at backing him, Lord Blood Hawk would have already waved his hand and killed him. Therefore, he did not even bother to reply to Mu Chen. Lord Blood Hawk's dismissive behavior had caused the coldness in Nine Nether's eyes to intensify, but Mu Chen simply remained smiling calmly.

"To prove that you are qualified is simple..." Behind Lord Blood Hawk, Wu Tian, one of the four great commanders, suddenly sneered, showing his dense white teeth. "You just need to defeat a commander."

Killing intent was surging in his eyes, and he was clearly despising Mu Chen, because he did not want someone to go near the twin sisters that he

had taken a fancy to.

Hearing his words, Mu Chen laughed. Then, he stared back at Wu Tian with his black eyes and smiled, saying, "That's actually a really good idea."

After he finished speaking, Mu Chen moved to the spacious part of the palace. Then, scanning his eyes around the area, he challenged, "Is there any commander that would like to enlighten me?"

Mu Chen was not too humble, because he could already tell that such so-called humbleness and politeness were completely useless here. At this place, only power would grant him the real right to speak. Otherwise, nobody would respond to his words.

"Quite brave." Behind Lord Mountain Cracker, Zhou Yue, who was also one of the four great commanders, raised his eyebrows and commented. However, he had no intentions of intervening, because everyone could tell that this was a fight between the people under Lord Nine Nether and Lord Blood Hawk. He was under Lord Mountain Cracker, so naturally would not interfere. Moreover, he disliked Lord Blood Hawk's group.

The other lords also watched the scene interestedly. Even those clans that were considered to be allies with Lord Blood Hawk did not come forward to intervene. Although they did not care about Mu Chen, they were slightly afraid of Nine Nether, who had obviously passed her tribulation to become much stronger.

"Humph."

Wu Tian smiled, showing his mouthful of dense, white teeth, which made him look like a beast. He sneered at Mu Chen mockingly, and also did not seem to quite understand why the young man before him had such courage.

The fact that Mu Chen could enter the sovereign-level at his age did indeed indicate that his talent was outstanding. But, in this world, there were too many geniuses who died young. Among them, the large majority met their deaths, due to just such arrogance as Mu Chen was now displaying.

Wu Tian could naturally sense that Mu Chen had obviously just entered the sovereign-level a short while ago, as the spiritual energy fluctuation emitting from him was weaker than that of those experts, who had entered the sovereign-level for many years.

"Zhao Zhong, go and see if he is really qualified to become a commander," Wu Tian instructed, as he turned his head slightly to smile at a man behind him.

He really wanted to kill this young man named Mu Chen, but he was one of the four great commanders, after all, and had quite a reputation to uphold within the Daluo Territory. He would really be degrading his own status, should he deal with the bragging young man himself.

At the side, Cao Feng also folded his arms and stared at Mu Chen with cold eyes. He similarly did not go for the fight himself, because his view on matters was identical to Wu Tian's.

A forbidding smile appeared on the pale face of the man named Zhao Zhong, who was standing behind the two. He was also a commander under Lord Blood Hawk. Even though he was not as well-known as Wu Tian and Cao Feng, he had also been promoted to grade one sovereign a long time ago.

Furthermore, he had fought hundreds of battles, and his every action would reveal a shocking killing intent. Obviously, he had experienced many real life-and-death situations.

Lord Blood Hawk did not speak throughout the entire event, as if he had given Wu Tian all the rights to talk. However, one could tell by just the look coming from the corner of his eyes, that he was waiting to watch an entertaining performance.

Zhao Zhong moved to appear at the center of the palace. He stared at Mu Chen, the smile on his face somewhat ferocious and cruel. Over these years, he had seen too many young geniuses, just like Mu Chen, many of whom had died at his hands.

"Kid, I don't show mercy during a fight. If you scram now, maybe you will suffer less pain. Or, you can switch to our Blood Hawk Palace, as it's better

than that weak woman palace," Zhao Zhong smiled eerily towards Mu Chen as he said these things.

"This disgusting bastard!"

Hearing that this person was humiliating the Nine Nether Palace, Tang Rou's face instantly turned red. Tang Bing's face also became cold. In contrast, Nine Nether had no reaction. Her eyes only stared at Mu Chen's back.

Mu Chen's face was still calm. Hearing the taunt from his opponent, he simply smiled.

"Summon your sovereign celestial body," Zhao Zhong licked his lips and said.

"I have yet to cultivate it," Mu Chen smiled and said.

In the palace, everyone was temporarily stunned, after which, their looks became strange. Is this kid too stupid, or just too crazy, that he dares be so arrogant here, when he hasn't even cultivated his sovereign celestial body?

Even Tang Bing and Tang Rou's faces changed slightly. Clearly, they also did not know that Mu Chen actually had not cultivated his sovereign celestial body yet.

"That's unfortunate."

Zhao Zhong sighed lightly, but the smile on his face became more ferocious. He stepped forward suddenly, and a shocking spiritual energy swept out. Then, an extremely giant spiritual energy shadow appeared around him.

"Since this is the case, you can go and die."

"Extreme Frost Celestial Body!"

A huge, ice blue sovereign celestial body flashed out all of the sudden. A cold mist swept across the space, causing the air to freeze and solidify. After hearing that Mu Chen had yet to cultivate the sovereign celestial body, not only did Zhao Zhong not have any intention to show mercy, but he became more cruel instead. Right at the start, he summoned his

sovereign celestial body. Clearly, he wanted to give Mu Chen the heaviest blow with the quickest speed.

Although the sovereign celestial body that he had cultivated was not considered as being rare, and was also not among the 99 celestial bodies in ranking, it was already sufficient to deal with a kid, who had not even cultivated his sovereign celestial body yet. Mu Chen raised his head and stared at the enormous sovereign celestial body, his black eyes still looking calm. Yet, under that calmness, there was an icy current flowing.

"Sovereign celestial body... is it even strong? I will help you to refine it."

Mu Chen formed a seal with one head. He similarly showed no hesitation, and a bright column of spiritual energy gushed out from the top of his head. In the light column, a black light tower was partially visible.

Chapter 672: Shocking Everyone

Bang!

A light column burst out from the top of Mu Chen's head. In the light column, a black light tower was partially visible. Then, as Mu Chen's seals changed, the light tower immediately rushed out. As the light of the spiritual energy surged, a black Pagoda tower floated silently in the air.

On the surface of the ancient tower, large golden dragon symbols glittered with light as if they were wiggling, and emitted an inexplicable pressure.

As soon as the black Pagoda tower appeared, everyone in the palace started to look at it with a serious expression. Even the Condor King and the Spiritual Pupil King watched with some surprise. Clearly, they had noticed that the black Pagoda tower was extraordinary.

"Humph, just some small tricks."

Seeing that, Zhao Zhong gave a cold humph. He had fought hundreds of battles and had seen much, not to mention the opponent here was far weaker than he was. Without a Sovereign Celestial Body, no matter what other abilities Mu Chen had, he would not be able to beat Zhao Zhong.

"Extreme Frost Finger!"

Zhao Zhong stomped violently on the ground and as his seals changed, his celestial body, which seemed to have formed from ice, abruptly pointed its finger down at Mu Chen. A very icy spiritual energy gushed out, and even the air was frozen.

The ice finger fell down like a hovering iceberg.

Mu Chen raised his head. Staring at the cold mist sweeping towards him, coldness also flashed in his black eyes. Even Liu Ming, who had cultivated the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body, could not beat him. At the moment, the Sovereign Celestial Body cultivated by Zhao Zhong was far weaker than Liu Ming's, so it would be impossible to crush Mu Chen with this attack.

Bang!

Mu Chen stomped his feet suddenly, and it was as if even the palace vibrated slightly. Behind him, space distorted, and a purple sea seemed to have partially appeared.

Vroom!

A purple spiritual energy beam a few thousand feet thick dashed out suddenly just like a python. It flew across the air and collided with the falling ice finger like a bolt of lightning.

Sizzle!

The two smashed into each other, and instantly an ear-piercing sizzling sound burst out. The two powerful beams of spiritual energy charged at each other in an attempt to corrode one another.

Zhong Zhong sneered. "You are trying to use the power of spiritual energy to fight against a Sovereign Celestial Body?" The Sovereign Celestial Body was the strongest power a Sovereign master could use during battle. It was naive for Mu Chen to use his spiritual energy to stop the attack.

"Just freeze!"

His seals changed suddenly. A cold mist poured down from the ice finger like a waterfall trying to freeze all the spiritual energy below.

"Just burn!"

The corner of Mu Chen's lips curled up slightly. A purple flame flashed in his black eyes. Then, in the purple spiritual energy that was competing with the ice finger, purple flames abruptly gushed out.

As the purple flames appeared, the extremely cold mist abated at an obvious rate. Even on the giant ice finger, water droplets started to fall down, and it eventually evaporated into nothingness.

"How is this possible?!" Zhao Zhong's expression changed suddenly. The ice mist contained in his Sovereign Celestial Body had been cultivated by merging many frost jades. When ordinary spiritual energy came into

contact with it, if it was not frozen, it would still be slowed. At the moment, the mist was actually burned away by Mu Chen directly.

"Courtesy demands reciprocity. Now it's my turn."

Mu Chen smiled but his eyes were only filled with coldness as he swung his sleeves. The black Pagoda tower ascended into the sky and expanded as it flew against the wind, eventually growing to a height of 10,000 feet. After that, it crushed down like lightning and engulfed Zhao Zhong's Sovereign Celestial Body.

Roar!

When the black Pagoda tower pressed down, the golden dragons on its surface gave out a sudden, low dragon howl. On the Pagoda tower, layers of golden light bloomed and in an instant, five layers of the Pagoda tower became bright.

When Mu Chen battled against Liu Qingyun in the Spiritual Academy Competition, he could only ignite four layers of the Pagoda tower. However, at the moment he was much stronger than before, so he could ignite five layers easily.

Roar!

Golden light surged on the five layers of the Pagoda tower. On the body of the tower, five golden dragons roared and flew out, dashing into the tower. They turned into fierce golden flames and enveloped the ice blue celestial body.

The golden flames surged and emitted a dangerous fluctuation.

Staring at the golden flames, Zhao Zhong's expression also changed. Obviously, he had felt an intense threat from them. However, he had fought many battles, so he took a deep breath and changed his seals. Immediately, an ice blue light surged on the Extreme Frost Celestial Body. Watching from afar, it was as if the celestial body were a frosty giant surrounded by ice mist

Vroom!

At the moment, the golden flames swept across and engulfed the frosty giant without any hesitation.

Sizzle!

Just as the golden flames gushed over, horror instantly filled Zhao Zhong's eyes because he noticed that as the golden flames swept across, his Sovereign Celestial Body was melting at a shocking rate.

The golden flames were so potent!

"D*mn it, impossible!"

Zhao Zhong gritted his teeth forcefully. Behind his back, his Sovereign Sea also appeared, and a large amount of spiritual energy continuously gushed into his Sovereign Celestial Body.

However, no matter how much he strengthened his Sovereign Celestial Body, the golden flames still burned across at a steady rate. As the flames floated past, the ice-like Sovereign Celestial Body melted rapidly.

Zhao Zhong's face started to turn pale, and cold sweat continuously broke out.

In the palace, the looks from the people who were originally waiting to watch a good performance also changed uncontrollably. The various lords stared at the golden flames in the Pagoda tower with a serious expression. It seemed that they were also somewhat shocked by the golden flames.

"This flame..."

On the lotus platforms, some surprise also flashed across the usually calm faces of the Condor King and the Spiritual Pupil King. The golden flames seemed to be extraordinary.

The always sleepy Sleeping King also opened his eyes slightly and muttered fuzzily, "Such a powerful flame."

The golden flames easily burned everything they touched. Regardless of how much Zhao Zhong tried to resist, the giant ice-like Sovereign Celestial Body quickly shrank.

A stabbing pain surged in Zhao Zhong's body. Even though he did not

merge himself with the Sovereign Celestial Body, the two were firmly connected so he was also affected.

Zhao Zhong gritted his teeth. Although he felt very worried in his heart, he still did not admit defeat. He stared at Mu Chen with a vicious look and was trying to find an opportunity to counterattack.

"Stubborn."

Noticing his stare, Mu Chen also frowned slightly. Without further mercy, he waved his sleeves, and the golden flames swept across fiercely, completely engulfing the Sovereign Celestial Body.

He knew that if he wanted to become a commander of the Nine Nether Palace, he must show his real strength. Hence, what he needed to do at the moment was not to show mercy but to shock everyone!

To achieve that effect, he had to use the most powerful attack!

"Just incinerate!"

Mu Chen closed his palm suddenly. The golden flames began to burn violently, and the ice-like giant Sovereign Celestial Body instantly turned into water and started to pour down, eventually disappearing under the burning of the golden flames.

Sizzle.

Mist started to spread within the Pagoda tower, while the ice giant collapsed with a loud bang.

Spit.

Zhao Zhong forcefully sprayed out a mouthful of blood, and his body fell backwards. He looked extremely miserable and weary. He stared at Mu Chen, his eyes filled with horror.

He could not believe that his Sovereign Celestial Body was actually refined by Mu Chen just like this!

In the palace, the original whispers came to a sudden halt. All the commanders looked solemn, and even the various lords' eyes narrowed. Although the Sovereign Celestial Body cultivated by Zhao Zhong was not

special, it was certain that not everyone could refine it directly.

In addition, the young man before them was much weaker than Zhao Zhong.

Lord Asura stared at Mu Chen with his emotionless face. Finally, his look changed slightly and he muttered, "This young man... is not that ordinary."

Behind Lord Asura, Xu Qing, the head of the four great commanders, also gazed at the scene in surprise and nodded gently. The combat strength of this young man was clearly more than what could be seen on the surface. At the start, Zhao Zhong looked down on him, and he deserved to be defeated.

"Wow, Mu Chen is so strong," Tang Rou stared at Mu Chen in surprise and cheered in joy. At first, she had not been very confident in Mu Chen. He had not even cultivated his Sovereign Celestial Body, after all. However, she did not expect that the battle would end so simply. Not only was Zhao Zhong quickly defeated, but even his Sovereign Celestial Body was refined into nothingness...

Surprise could also be seen in Tang Bing's eyes. She nodded slightly. It is no wonder that sister Nine Nether values him. This guy indeed has some real capabilities.

On the other hand, Nine Nether did not seem to be very surprised. A charming smile appeared on her previously cold face. What Mu Chen did was brilliant.

Lord Blood Hawk stared at Mu Chen with a dour look. He glanced at the dispirited Zhao Zhong and said tonelessly, "What trash."

In his voice, there was hidden anger. At first, he wanted to use this chance to defeat Mu Chen so that Nine Nether could not achieve her goal. However, he did not expect that Mu Chen would carry out such a decisive attack.

Zhao Zhong lowered his head in embarrassment. He glanced at Mu Chen with a vicious look and backed off awkwardly.

Mu Chen ignored him. He only raised his head and with his body straight, stared directly at Lord Blood Hawk with his black eyes. Although he still looked peaceful and mild, nobody looked down on him now.

He folded his hands at Lord Blood Hawk, and smiling he said, "Lord Blood Hawk, may I know if I am qualified to become the commander of the Nine Nether Palace now?"

Chapter 673: Beat to Death

In the palace, after hearing the clear words that Mu Chen spoke to him, some gloom flashed across Lord Blood Hawk's already frighteningly penetrating look. His finger tapped lightly on the armrest of the chair.

Although he did not speak, an invisible pressure spread across the place. It was like a hungry eagle's preying, fierce and fatal.

Mu Chen could definitely not contest with a grade five sovereign master at the moment, but he only frowned gently, his expression remaining calm. At that time, he even endured the pressure from Luo Tianshen, and there was clearly a tremendous difference between Lord Blood Hawk and Luo Tianshen.

"Humph."

Just as the pressure spread, Nine Nether gave a cold humph. The pressure around Mu Chen dissipated instantly.

Behind Lord Blood Hawk, Wu Tian still seemed to be smiling, yet his smile was somewhat surly and chilly. Clearly, he had not expected that asking Zhao Zhong to fight would have given Mu Chen a chance to display himself in such a way. From the attacks and the abilities that he had shown earlier, it was obvious that he was no weaker than an ordinary commander.

"Nice attacks you have there. Actually, I can't wait to fight you. May I know if you could enlighten me?" Wu Tian stared at Mu Chen, smiling, and said with a friendly look.

He knew that Lord Blood Hawk did not want to return the quota to contest for the Daluo Golden Pool back to Nine Nether. At the moment, Mu Chen had defeated Zhao Zhong. If he did not show up and break his opponent's spirit, the Nine Nether Palace would probably get what they wanted.

Hearing Wu Tian's words, many commanders in the palace twitched their mouths slightly. Wu Tian was among the top commanders in the

Daluo Territory, so his behavior at the moment seemed to be somewhat overbearing.

"I think that we can skip the fights between the commanders. If you think that my Nine Nether Palace is too weak, then let's have a battle between the lords. The one who loses will just give all the quota." Nine Nether's face was calm. She knew the strength of Mu Chen.

Although the latter had many different attacks, he had not cultivated his sovereign celestial body. While he may be able to fight some of the grade one sovereigns, Wu Tian was already a grade two sovereign. If they really started fighting, Mu Chen would probably be at a disadvantage.

Her words were rather calm, but they caused everyone in the place to be alarmed. The battle between commanders was still considered as being minor, but if it was to become a battle between two lords, that would be much more serious. Once someone lost, the person's reputation in the Daluo Territory would drop significantly.

Therefore, after Nine Nether said as much, even Lord Blood Hawk's look seemed to be hesitant. If, at the moment, Nine Nether only had the strength she had in the past, he would be wishing for the battle, but now, Nine Nether had passed her tribulation. Hence, her power was obviously not to be underestimated. Before clearly knowing her powers and trump cards, rushing into a complete conflict with her was clearly unwise.

"Ahem..."

On the lotus platform, the Condor King finally cleared his throat lightly, then said in a hoarse voice, "As a lord-level force in the Daluo Territory, the Nine Nether Palace naturally has a quota to contest for the Daluo Golden Pool. In the past, Nine Nether was not here, so the quota was temporarily transferred. Now that she has come back, the quota should be returned."

The Spiritual Pupil King smiled and did not say anything. Hearing this, Lord Blood Hawk glanced at the Spiritual Pupil King. Seeing that the latter did not speak, he could only nod, before he said, "Since the Condor King has spoken, the quota shall be returned to the Nine Nether Palace. As for

the one thousand drops of sovereign spiritual liquid, the Nine Nether Palace can keep them and does not need to return them to us. Anyway, the Nine Nether Palace now has many uncompleted things waiting to be done, all which would need a lot of sovereign spiritual liquid, right?"

When he spoke this last part, he smiled at Nine Nether. The clear taunt could be seen in his smile.

Nine Nether also replied to him with a smile, only her smile was filled with coldness. Then, still smiling, she said, "Since we have settled everything about the quota, let's discuss the cities that were originally under the ruling of the Nine Nether Palace."

Hearing this, Lord Blood Hawk's face instantly darkened. He was not too concerned about the contest for the Daluo Golden Pool. After all, even if Mu Chen could participate in the contest, he did not think that Mu Chen could stand out among all of the commanders to obtain one of the few quotas. As such, he felt confident that he could compromise.

However, Nine Nether seemed to also want to take back the authority to rule the cities that were already under his control at the moment. This was not something Lord Blood Hawk could tolerate.

Every year, those cities would turn in a large amount of sovereign spiritual liquid. For the Blood Hawk Palace to develop rapidly and become stronger continuously, sovereign spiritual liquid was the most essential item. Therefore, he would definitely not return these cash cow cities willingly.

"Nine Nether, you have just returned. Don't you think your appetite is a bit too big?" Lord Blood Hawk said in a cold tone.

"I'm simply taking back the things that belonged to our Nine Nether Palace in the first place," Nine Nether said tonelessly.

"We did not take over those cities by force. You have left the Nine Nether Palace for many years, so how will those cities get any protection from you? Since you cannot protect them, they will naturally find another, better lord," Lord Blood Hawk said with a sneer.

"Lord Blood Hawk, we all know what is happening. Why do you need be so high-sounding? The tricks that you used, those secret threats, you still think that I don't know?" Nine Nether contradicted him directly.

In the palace, the faces of the two were both icy, neither willing to compromise. The other lords also remained silent, letting the two argue, which clearing indicated that they did not want to be involved in the mess.

"You two, please stop arguing."

On the lotus platform, the Spiritual Pupil King, who had not spoken yet, smiled suddenly. His completely dark pupils scanned everyone, as he added, "We in the Daluo Territory have our own rules. Everything within the rules is allowed. As for the ownership of those cities, if you don't like the situation now, you can launch an attack. Go ahead and still that sentence, as long as it's within the rules."

Hearing this, Nine Nether frowned slightly, while Lord Blood King laughed complacently. Being lords in the Daluo Territory, they naturally knew the rules in the Daluo Territory. The regions under the Daluo Territory were extremely huge. There were many cities, most of which were ruled by the Daluo Territory directly, while the remaining terrains were controlled by the nine lords. The nine lords were actually in disharmony, and there were frequent conflicts among them, due to the regions under their ruling.

The Daluo Territory did not stop these conflicts. However, there was one rule, which was that the lords could not be directly involved in such conflicts. Only their subordinates could contest in such a situation.

At the moment, the Nine Nether Palace was indeed considered as being the weakest among the nine lord-level forces. Even for commanders, there was only Mu Chen, who had just become qualified.

On the other hand, the other lord-level forces had many powerful subordinates. If they started to fight, the Nine Nether Palace would obviously be at the losing end.

Hence, the Spiritual Pupil King's words seemed to be neutral, but he actually prevented Nine Nether's attempt to take back those cities. After

all, the Nine Nether Palace could not rely on Mu Chen alone to fight against the many powerful people from the other forces.

Nine Nether gritted her teeth and wanted to say something, but saw the Condor King shaking his head gently at her. Only then, she reluctantly swallowed what she wanted to point out, instead saying in a cold voice, "Since this is the case, we shall see what will happen."

"Anytime." Lord Blood King smiled, not taking Nine Nether's words seriously, as they appeared to be fierce, but actually lacked confidence. After all, there was a huge difference between the strength of the subordinates of the two. Although Mu Chen did defeat Zhao Zhong previously, the latter was only considered as being average among all of the commanders in the Blood Hawk Palace.

Seeing this, Mu Chen did not say anything. Instead, moving his body, he appeared behind Nine Nether.

"Mu Chen, you are awesome," Tang Rou moved closer to Mu Chen and said, smiling. Her face was filled with joy. No matter what, Mu Chen had gained some honor for the Nine Nether Palace this time.

Tang Bing also nodded gently, then gave a rare smile to Mu Chen.

"I risked my life to fight, and finally got a smile from sister Tang Bing. Not an easy thing!" Mu Chen said, seeing that smile. Mu Chen then laughed uncontrollably.

Tee-hee.

At the side, Tang Rou covered her mouth and also giggled. Clearly, she could tell that Mu Chen was trying to tease Tang Bing.

Tang Bing blushed slightly, as she stared at Mu Chen in embarrassment. Then, her face restored its iciness, and she said, "When you really obtain the quota to enter the Daluo Golden Pool, I will smile until you are tired of it!"

"Then, it seems that I have to work hard!" Mu Chen said, seeming to be eager.

Tang Bing gave a soft humph and turned her head away, but the corners of her rosy lips curled up uncontrollably. Her originally tense mood had also relaxed quite a bit.

When Nine Nether realized that she could not reconquer the lost cities at this Meeting of the Nine Lords, she stopped saying anything else. In any case, she had already gotten the quota for Mu Chen. As for those things that were lost, she still had time in the future to reclaim them.

In the next part of the meeting, there were again discussions about other issues, but Nine Nether did not speak at all. After about two hours, the meeting concluded.

When the meeting ended, Nine Nether stood up directly and brought the three to the outside of the palace. At the entrance of the palace, they happened to meet Lord Blood Hawk and his people. The two stared at each other, their eyes filled with coldness. It was as if, even the surrounding temperature had dropped.

"Ha, Nine Nether, it's good for a young person to have a dashing spirit. But remember, the stiffest tree is the most easily cracked," Lord Blood Hawk smiled and said.

"Lord Blood Hawk, you also need to remember that, if you are too greedy, your belly can't take it," Nine Nether said tonelessly.

"Haha, even if I eat the Nine Nether Palace, my belly wouldn't burst," Lord Blood Hawk replied, smiling. Then, he glanced at Mu Chen, who was beside Nine Nether with some coldness flashing in his eyes. Without saying anything else, he stepped out and left the place.

Wu Tian and Cao Feng also passed by them. The former stopped briefly beside Mu Chen. Smiling, he extended his arm and tapped on Mu Chen's shoulder in a friendly manner. He then said softly, "Bro, if you want to participate in the contest for the Daluo Golden Pool, then I have to remind you that..."

His voice paused, as his lips suddenly curled up to form a ferocious smile.

"Be careful not to be beaten to death by me."

He laughed, then tapped on Mu Chen's shoulder again, before leaving elegantly.

Staring at the back of Wu Tian as he walked away, Mu Chen muttered, "Indeed, I really want to... beat him to death."

Chapter 674: Cultivating the Great Solar Undying Body

At the door of the main hall, Nine Nether could hear Mu Chen's murmurs. A smile appeared on her usually cold countenance. "He's very noisy. It's alright if you beat him to death."

"I'll try my best." Mu Chen nodded.

Tang Bing and Tang Rou glanced at each other and smiled helplessly as they stood behind them. They didn't know where Mu Chen got his confidence from, as Wu Tian was a lot stronger than Zhao Zhong. He was considered one of the top among the Commanders in the Daluo Territory, and if they truly clashed, they couldn't imagine Mu Chen's fate.

This fellow was like a newborn calf who was not afraid of tigers. Young people were truly fearless indeed.

"Let's go."

Nine Nether smiled. The chilly aura in the main hall dissipated with a wave of her hand as she attempted to bring them away.

"Nine Nether!"

There was a sudden sound behind her, and Nine Nether stopped in her tracks. She turned to see Xu Qing, who was dressed in green robes. His eyes were bright and happy as he stared at Nine Nether.

"Oh, it's Xu Qing. What's the matter?" Nine Nether looked up and smiled. A cold resistance infused her seemingly gentle tone.

Nine Nether did not have an approachable disposition to begin with, and despite being acquaintances with Xu Qing in the past, they barely knew each other.

Looking at Nine Nether's eyes, Xu Qing froze. His usual calm demeanor vanished instantly as his heart raced. His eyes lit up brightly with heat and excitement.

"Welcome back," Xu Qing said softly.

"Thank you."

Nine Nether was neither cold, nor gentle when she nodded, and she had no intention of carrying on a conversation with Xu Qing as she turned around and left.

Upon seeing this, Xu Qing, who had gathered up the courage to say something more, became crestfallen as he shrugged his shoulders in self-mockery. However, his look of admiration at the retreating silhouette remained unabated.

"Tsk tsk. Looks like you didn't end up any better than me." Behind Xu Qing, there was suddenly a gloating voice. He turned his head and saw Zhou Yue smiling at him.

"At least I wasn't chased away," Xu Qing retorted. The fact that Zhou Yue liked Tang Bing was known by many. When he had hidden in Nine Nether Palace, he had been banished by Tang Bing wielding a sword.

"To put it this way, we are in a similar predicament." Zhou Yue smiled as he narrowed his eyes at the tall silhouette following behind Nine Nether and whispered, "I have heard about it. The man who came back with Nine Nether is called Mu Chen... It seems that this time, Nine Nether is going to let him represent the Nine Nether Palace in the battle at the Daluo Golden Pool. What do you think?"

"Haha, the fight won't get to us anyway." Xu Qing smiled and he knew that no matter if Mu Chen was an ordinary figure or not, he would never shake his chance to use the Daluo Golden Pool because he had absolute confidence in his strength. As the leader of the top four Commanders, he had the capability to prove his worth, and not through mere lip service.

"That is true. There will be a good show to see this time, and I would like to see how far this Mu Chen can go," Zhou Yue said.

Both of them smiled as they turned to leave.

...

Several silhouettes flitted across the sky as Mu Chen approached Nine Nether and stated solemnly on the way back to the Nine Nether Palace,

"Xu Qing has intentions towards you."

"Shut up." Nine Nether rolled her eyes.

Tang Bing and Tang Rou smiled.

Nine Nether turned to look at Mu Chen as she stated seriously, "You have seen Wu Tian and Cao Feng. How is it? Are you confident? If you want to get a slot at the Daluo Golden Pool, you have to defeat at least one of them."

"It's hard to say now."

The young man pondered. A reassuring smile appeared on his handsome features as he clenched his fist.

"But in two months' time, I will win."

In two months, he should be able to cultivate the Great Solar Undying Body successfully, and by then, he would also possess the Sovereign Celestial Body, rendering him invincible among opponents of the same rank.

Even if Wu Tian had the capability of a Second Grade Sovereign, he would not have any trace of fear.

Tang Bing and Tang Rou looked at the self-confidence on the young man's face and were somewhat surprised. They did not know too much about Mu Chen, so they did not understand how he could make great progress within the short period of two months. After all, at his current stage there was still a big gap between him and the likes of Wu Tian and Cao Feng.

Even though they had some doubts in their hearts, they did not speak any more when they saw Nine Nether nod gently. They trusted Nine Nether, and she trusted Mu Chen, so they also believed in Mu Chen.

Perhaps he could really do it.

Tang Bing and Tang Rou both looked at each other and whispered to Mu Chen, "All the best." Encouragement and anticipation blossomed on their beautiful faces, which were almost identical. This would be the first battle

at the Nine Nether Palace after their return, so it was of great importance.

Looking at the encouragement and expectation in the eyes of the two beautiful girls, Mu Chen also raised his head, took a deep breath, and then smiled. It seemed that he must attain the quota at the Daluo Golden Pool.

However, what made him more excited was the fact that he could finally cultivate the Great Solar Undying Body after coveting it for so long...

That would be the starting point of his road to becoming the unparalleled Sovereign Master.

...

Blood Hawk Palace.

Lord Blood Hawk sat on the throne with a somber expression. His eyes were closed, but his overflowing murderous intent made many of the strong men in the hall afraid to speak.

Anyone could see that Lord Blood Hawk was in a murderous fury at this moment.

A strong man in the Blood Hawk Palace asked in a whisper, "My lord, are we slowing down our actions to merge with and annex Nine Nether Palace?"

"Slowing down?"

Lord Blood Hawk opened his eyes and cast a cold glance, and the strong man who had spoken trembled suddenly, feeling cold all over.

"She is merely a woman with whimsically unrealistic thoughts. Why would I be afraid of her?" Lord Blood Hawk stated in a chilling tone.

"Pass down the order to speed up the contact with the various city owners under the Nine Nether Palace. As long as they change sides to my Blood Hawk Palace, I can give them a lot of benefits. If not, it is akin to looking down on my Blood Hawk Palace, and if I pursue matters in the future... " Lord Blood Hawk waved his hand, and smirked coldly.

"Yes my lord!" The high-ranking officials in the Blood Hawk Palace hurriedly agreed.

Lord Blood Hawk's glance turned towards Wu Tian and Cao Feng as he stated nonchalantly, "In the battle of Daluo Golden Pool, I have already garnered the slots for both of you. I hope you won't disappoint me."

Wu Tian and Cao Feng clasped their fists in response.

"In addition..."

A chilling smirk appeared at the corners of Lord Blood Hawk's mouth as he said, "It seems like Nine Nether regards that fellow, Mu Chen, very highly. Since she is so confident... In the battle of the Daluo Golden Pool, destroy him."

Upon hearing this, Wu Tian glanced at Cao Feng. Cruel smirks appeared on both of their faces.

"We always had the intention of doing so."

...

Nine Nether Palace, Cultivation Chamber.

Mu Chen sat quietly, his face calm, and there was no ripple of spiritual energy fluctuation around him. He did not begin to practice cultivation directly, but sat still for nearly four hours, waiting for his mind to reach the true state of tranquillity as he slowly opened his eyes.

He formed seals with both hands, and a beam of dim light emerged from his body. It hovered in front of him, transforming into a mysterious black page. It was the Immortal Pages that hid the method of cultivation of the Great Solar Undying Body.

Mu Chen glanced at it silently. This page of ancient black paper contained a secret that would make the most powerful Sovereigns go into a frenzy. The value of the Primordial Immortal Body was enough to cause even a Heavenly Sovereign to lose his composure.

It was indeed extremely fortunate that he could obtain it.

After summoning this page of mysterious black paper, Mu Chen's seals changed again, and three masses of light surged out of the Mustard Seed Bangle. Within the three masses of light, there was a constant spread of

terrifying spiritual energy fluctuations. The sounds of waves of water rang in the air, a sign that the spiritual energy was very powerful.

Within these three light masses were the three cultivation ingredients that Mu Chen had expended much effort to obtain.

Nine Suns Zoysia.

Void Great Solar Fruit.

Undying Divine Leaf.

The three ingredients were incredibly rare, and the fact that Mu Chen could gather them all must have meant that he had expended much energy and effort. Thankfully, fortune favors the brave, and now all three ingredients were gathered together.

The originally unattainable Great Solar Undying Body could truly be cultivated now.

Mu Chen's long fingers touched the Immortal Pages, only to see faint lights surging on the mysterious black paper. Finally, a torrent of light poured out, entering his body as it travelled along and through his fingers.

The majestic and ancient information exploded in his mind. The torrent made his body tremble, but he forcefully willed himself to endure it as he constantly received the volume of information regarding the complex cultivation methods of the Great Solar Undying Body.

The reception lasted a full dozen minutes before it was over.

Mu Chen's eyes opened suddenly as he fixed his gaze on the three natural treasures before him. His eyes were solemn. From the prior information, he knew that he only had one chance to cultivate the Great Solar Undying Body.

This was not only because of how rare the ingredients were, but an even greater reason was that if cultivation failed, it would be difficult for the body to adapt to the Great Solar Undying Body again. Hence, even if one gathered the ingredients again, it would be impossible to cultivate it successfully.

Such a harsh reality caused Mu Chen's heart to tremble in trepidation.

However, Mu Chen quickly suppressed his shock, and as he took a deep breath, his dark eyes no longer held any hesitation.

No matter how difficult it was to cultivate the Great Solar Undying Body, he would not give up!

What's more, he would definitely succeed in cultivating it!

He had promised the girl!

Mu Chen conjured up seals with both hands, his gaze sharp and determined.

Let's begin then!

Chapter 675: Nine Suns as it's Form, the Envelopment of One's Form with the Great Solar Energy

Mu Chen's heart was as calm as quiet waters, as the spiritual energy around him withdrew in quiet restrain, just like a deep pool, whose depths could not be seen. As his mind calmed, the Sovereign Sea in his body, however, began to rage with tumultuous waves.

Whoosh.

The vast and majestic Sovereign Sea shimmered with purple hints. Its huge waves surged, the sound of water rattled, and a massive amount of spiritual energy condensed within the Sovereign Sea.

To condense and cultivate the Sovereign celestial body required a vast, almost terrifying amount of spiritual energy, and the present Mu Chen must be prepared for it. Within the turbulent Sovereign Sea, a golden light slowly hovered from the sea, and sat cross-legged amidst the waves. It was Mu Chen's spirit, its expression solemn.

Hoo.

A breath of spiritual energy, tinged with a purple flame, gradually emitted from the spirit's mouth. Its gaze turned somber, as its palms conjured complex and unique seals.

Boom!

Just as the seals were completed, a loud rumbling road rang out. Huge pillars of spiritual energy, bursting out of the Sovereign Sea, could now be seen.

Bong! Bong!

The light pillars of spiritual energy soared toward the sky, then suddenly plunged down, like majestic dragons, before finally clashing together harshly. The entire scene was an overwhelmingly shocking sight!

The entire Sovereign Sea was shaken, as turbulent waves raged on, and a brilliant purple light from the sea spread in the air. In the center of the collision, the violent clash of spiritual energy created a sense of distortion within the space.

Mu Chen's spirit lifted his head to glance at the bright scene before him, as he conjured seals again with his small palms.

Boom.

The Sovereign Sea shook again, and countless beams of spiritual energy surged toward the sky, like water anacondas, before finally roaring toward the place filled with purple light. The magnificent scene appeared as if a whale was sucking water, which was extraordinary.

The magnificent spiritual energy converged toward the location continuously, and with its constant surge, the purple light of the land grew brighter. Amid the glimmering brightness, a massive shadow could be seen, forming vaguely.

This was the first step to cultivating the Sovereign celestial body, which was to cultivate its embryonic form using one's own spiritual energy. This step also depended only upon one's own spiritual energy.

In the vast Sovereign Sea, constant pillars of light, with great spiritual energy, soared into the sky. As they did so, Mu Chen's spirit waved his hands, causing them to finally infuse themselves entirely into the massive shadow. The powerful spiritual energy within the Sovereign Sea was consumed and expended at an alarming rate.

However, this step was not much of a threat to Mu Chen, who had a strong foundation in cultivation, as the spiritual energy in his Sovereign Sea was entirely made possible through his own self-cultivation. Coupled with his fusion with the Unperishable Flame, the quality of his spiritual energy was superior to that of ordinary spiritual energy.

When the surging of energy lasted about ten minutes or so, the riot in the Sovereign Sea gradually subsided, and a glaring purple light permeated the air of the Sovereign Sea. Mu Chen's spirit lifted his head to glance at the sky, which was now covered with purple light.

The sky suddenly began to shake, as a massive purple shadow, the height of which was about a thousand feet, slowly stood upright in the sky, terrifying spiritual energy fluctuations rippling around its body. The embryonic form of the Sovereign celestial body had now been formed!

Mu Chen looked at the purple shadow, heaving a quiet sigh of relief. However, he then tensed up again, for he knew that the real cultivation was just beginning.

"Nine Suns Zoysia, transform!"

A low murmur sounded in Mu Chen's heart. In the cultivation chamber, the Nine Suns Zoysia, which had been hovering in front of Mu Chen, shivered suddenly, then transformed into a beam of bright light, rushing straight into Mu Chen's slightly open mouth.

Boom!

The sky above the Sovereign Sea seemed to be torn apart at this time, only to reveal a dazzling ray of light that was descending from the sky, as if the sun were falling. Within the light, one could see a swaying Zoysia, above which, there seemed to be nine scorching suns rising.

Mu Chen's spirit stretched out his fingers and pointed in the air.

"The Nine Suns as its form."

The Nine Suns Zoysia descended straight, as had been commanded, then landed on the massive purple shadow's crown. As soon as the Nine Suns Zoysia entered the giant shadow, it disintegrated sharply, as nine scorching suns surged out, then finally suspended themselves in the head, heart, limbs and other important parts of the giant shadow.

Whoosh.

When the nine suns returned to their position, they seemed to burn in an instant, the terribly high temperature, which they had emitted, spreading rapidly. The immense spiritual energy that was within the massive shadow also burned at an astonishing speed.

The huge form of the giant shadow was also rapidly shrinking. In

accordance to this speed, it would only take a few moments for this embryonic form of the Sovereign celestial body that Mu Chen had expended so much effort to cultivate, to be burned out completely by the nine scorching suns. Once the embryonic form of the Sovereign celestial body was burned to nothing, Mu Chen's efforts would have been all for naught.

In the cultivation chamber, Mu Chen's eyes, which had been tightly shut, now suddenly opened, as he flicked his fingers. The Mustard Seed Bracelet on his wrist trembled, as a torrential current surged out.

When the torrent rushed out, dense fog rose in the cultivation chamber. This fog was what the spiritual energy had transformed into. The current was like a river brook, and it was condensed from the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid. Moreover, in this little river brook, there were at least ten thousand drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid!

Mu Chen had known long ago that, if he wanted to cultivate the "Great Solar Undying Body", he would need a massive amount of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid. Thus, he had been asking Nine Nether to break the seal of the Spiritual Condensing Bowl, which would allow him to obtain close to another fifty thousand drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid.

This was an extremely large number, and Mu Chen could feel that this amount of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid already accounted for most of all the spiritual power that was stored in the Spiritual Condensing Bowl. However, in order to successfully cultivate the "Great Solar Undying Body", paying the price of fifty thousand Sovereign Spiritual Liquid was clearly worth it!

As soon as the spiritual energy river that had been transformed from Sovereign Spiritual Liquid appeared, it was absorbed into Mu Chen, who sucked it in with his mouth. His body shook violently, and as he didn't dare allow such a terrifying amount of spiritual energy to remain in his body, he directly surged it into his Sovereign Sea. As it traveled, it rushed into the embryonic form of the Sovereign celestial body.

Boom!

In the sky of the Sovereign Sea, numerous cracks opened, and floods of spiritual energy poured down, surging into the Sovereign celestial body.

Whoosh!

With the addition of such a huge amount of spiritual energy, the shrinking speed of the embryonic form of the Sovereign celestial body finally slowed down. A wave of magnificent spiritual energy was incessantly burned by the nine scorching suns. But as it burned, a golden mist rose, which curled up and was eventually absorbed by the massive Sovereign celestial body.

Golden spots of light began to appear on the massive Sovereign celestial body, all of which shimmered with purple light. Under the burning of the nine scorching suns, the spiritual energy was consumed at an extremely alarming rate. In only half a day, the spiritual energy river stream, which was made up of ten thousand drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid, was completely burned out.

The effect of the spiritual energy river stream was that it allowed the embryonic form of the Sovereign celestial body to become brighter, as more golden spots appeared...

The seals of Mu Chen's spirit changed again. The sky crumbled again, as cracks appeared, and the mighty torrents of spiritual energy descended. Clearly, he intended to again use the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid that had been prepared prior.

If the first step was dependent upon how strong one's spiritual energy was, the second step would be determined by how much wealth one had...

The speed at which spiritual energy was consumed in the process of cultivating the "Great Solar Undying Body" was also a shock to Mu Chen. If he had not been lucky enough to have won the " Spiritual Condensing Bowl " in the Spiritual Academy Competition, and it just so happened that an ancient sect had accumulated such a massive amount of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid, it seemed that, even if he did gather the ingredients successfully, he would fail, because he couldn't accumulate such a large amount of the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid.

After all, an ordinary Sovereign celestial body would merely require a maximum of one to two thousand drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid. However, this amount of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid, when applied to this context, was entirely insufficient.

Mu Chen gasped quietly in his heart, as he tried to focus. The second step would be to allow Sovereign Spiritual Liquid to continuously surge into the embryonic form of the Sovereign celestial body.

This process took him close to eight days. In these eight days, the surging of spiritual energy did not cease at all, and all fifty thousand drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid had been expended entirely.

As the last drop of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid had been exhausted, even Mu Chen, who had such an optimistic outlook, had been terrified. He knew that, if others found out that he had used fifty thousand drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid in order to cultivate a Sovereign celestial body, they would be shell-shocked. However, the fifty thousand drops of the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid had clearly had a remarkable effect.

Within the Sovereign Sea.

Mu Chen's spirit looked up in the sky. He saw a gigantic shadow, the height of which was about a thousand yards, stand up. This shadow no longer shone with a purple light, but an intense gold.

The golden flow of light pervaded every corner of its huge body, as if it was a golden Buddha, oppressive and mysterious. An invisible, oppressive feeling permeated the air, which was terrifying.

Mu Chen clearly felt that, within the golden shadow, the nine scorching suns were still burning, but could no longer burn the Sovereign celestial body. That was because the Sovereign celestial body was now beginning to take shape.

The second step "Nine Suns as its form" had been successful! Mu Chen heaved a sigh of relief in his heart, but his body tensed up again in the next moment. His gaze turned increasingly somber, for he knew that the

next step would be the most dangerous step in cultivating the "Great Solar Undying Body".

If he was unable to persist, then all of his efforts would be for naught.

In the cultivation chamber, Mu Chen opened his eyes to stare at the fruit before him. That was the Void Great Solar Fruit, and the spiritual energy it possessed was more terrifying than that of the Nine Suns Zoysia.

Mu Chen stared at it, his gaze resolute. He grabbed the Void Great Solar Fruit, and stuffed into his mouth, his dark eyes filled with determination. He did not want to fail at this point, not after so many years of planning and preparation!

Envelopment of one's form with the Great Solar energy!

Chapter 676: Successful Cultivation of the Celestial Body!

The calm Sovereign Sea suddenly raged, and the surface of the golden shadow that stood above the Sovereign Sea rippled.

An indescribable fury descended from the sky, enveloping the entire Sovereign Sea.

Mu Chen's spirit looked up solemnly, and the sky above the Sovereign Sea seemed to be torn apart by a great crack in which a dazzling ray of light permeated the whole sea.

Boom! Boom!

A terribly oppressive pressure descended, only to see a huge golden sun tearing apart the space with a domineering aura and surging into the Sovereign Sea.

The golden sun was clearly one transformed from the Void Great Solar Fruit.

The fierce golden rays wrapped around the golden sun. The terrifyingly high temperature permeated the Sovereign Sea, causing the spiritual energy within the sea to evaporate.

The power of the Void Great Solar Fruit had been more overwhelming than that of the Nine Suns Zoysia.

Mu Chen looked at the scene with shock in his heart. He took a deep breath and suppressed his terror. His hands flashed quickly as he conjured seals, his deep voice reverberating in the Sovereign Sea.

"Envelopment of one's form with Great Solar energy!"

Buzz.

As Mu Chen's roar lingered, the golden sun slowly set and entered the crown of the massive golden shadow bit by bit.

Boom!

The golden flames suddenly poured into the golden shadow, and golden drops of liquid on the gilded surface of the body dripped down as if it had been melted.

Mu Chen's spirit flushed red. He could feel that in this golden shadow, it was as if there were a burning furnace. The golden flames rose and raged as its power increased sharply, as if it were about to burst through the golden shadow.

Mu Chen's eyes were somber. If the previous Nine Suns Zoysia helped to strengthen and condense the embryonic form of the Sovereign Celestial Body, the Void Great Solar Fruit would come to test its firmness. If it was successful, the Sovereign Celestial Body would be truly cultivated, but if it failed, the golden sun would completely destroy the unqualified Sovereign Celestial Body.

Whoosh.

With the golden flames above the golden sun growing brighter and brighter, golden liquid dripped down faster and faster on the surface of Sovereign Celestial Body, and the huge Sovereign Celestial Body gradually shrank.

Mu Chen's gaze grew increasingly somber.

The gold flames emitted from the golden sun grew more and more violent, and the intensity of the frenzy was still rising. At this rate, the Sovereign Celestial Body would not be able to withstand the onslaught.

However, Mu Chen had no route of retreat. If he failed, he would no longer have a second chance to cultivate the Great Solar Undying Body, and this was an outcome he could not bear.

Mu Chen gritted his teeth as he stared fixedly at the Sovereign Celestial Body dripping constantly with golden liquid.

Time flew by in the blink of an eye.

Half a day passed in an instant.

Drip.

Golden liquid flowed down like a stream on the surface of the golden Sovereign Celestial Body, reducing the majestic Sovereign Celestial Body to a fraction of its original size. Its body distorted as if it had been burned to the limit by the high temperature.

A tiny golden flame seeped through the pores of the Sovereign Celestial Body and wound around the body's surface.

Mu Chen's gaze stared pointedly at the spot between the Sovereign Celestial Body's eyebrows as a golden sun transformed into a fireball, its golden flames writhing in a frenzy like coiling snakes.

The golden sun was now too bright to look at.

The violent fluctuations were still rising.

Gradually, Mu Chen's face became twisted. His eyes were bloodshot, and his palms quivered. He looked at the deformed Sovereign Celestial Body and his face paled. He knew that the Sovereign Celestial Body he had condensed could not bear the burning of the golden sun.

That power was too brutal.

"It's going to explode..."

Mu Chen's heart palpitated vigorously. In the middle of the Sovereign Celestial Body's eyebrows, the golden light grew brighter and brighter, and the violent fluctuations showed that the Sovereign Celestial Body had reached its limit.

The golden sun flickered with light like a quietly beating heart, and in that moment, its light suddenly solidified, and a beam of golden bright light burst out.

Whoosh!

Numerous golden pillars of light surged fiercely from within the Sovereign Celestial Body as this originally indestructible body suddenly exploded!

The instant the Sovereign Celestial body exploded, Mu Chen conjured seals with both palms.

In the cultivation chamber, the silently awaiting Undying Divine Leaf shot directly into Mu Chen's forehead, and at the same time, a narrow beam of light skimmed through the sky of the Sovereign Sea, surging into the exploding Sovereign Celestial Body.

Boom!

Terrifying golden shockwaves raged as turbulent waves roared in the Sovereign Sea. The space was intensely distorted, even rendering the Sovereign Sea close to bursting.

Mu Chen's spirit hid within the depths of the Sovereign Sea to prevent itself from being impacted by the terrible shockwaves.

The havoc continued for a long time, and then finally gradually weakened. Mu Chen's spirit emerged from the depths of the Sovereign Sea, and he immediately looked towards the sky permeated by golden light.

The golden shadow was no longer there, as it had apparently been destroyed by the shockwaves.

Had it failed?

Mu Chen stared at that area and suddenly sat quietly cross-legged. His hand conjured seals, and he recited the training chant of the Great Solar Undying Body. It flowed smoothly and quietly within his heart, like flowing water.

"My heart is as the Great Sun, brilliant and everlasting..."

The training chant rang like a song of bells in Mu Chen's heart as he came to a realization. His hands conjured seals as he growled, "Undying Protection!"

The golden light filled the land as it suddenly rippled and spread. Within the golden light, an ancient dead leaf was quietly suspended in the air, and then it disintegrated into tiny spots of light and scattered out.

These lights seemed to possess a magical ability to recover, and amid the

fluctuations, swaths of golden light gathered together. With the convergence of the golden light, a huge golden shadow condensed together bit by bit.

In a short time, the golden light filled the land as a Sovereign Celestial Body condensed and formed again.

Moreover, the Sovereign Celestial Body condensed, and this time dazzled brighter as it was shrouded in golden light. Its gilded body was as if it were the most solid entity in the world, rendering it invincible.

Furthermore, on the surface of the golden Sovereign Celestial Body, some dark purple patterns could be seen. The patterns were simple yet sophisticated, and upon closer inspection, were images of rising suns.

It was as if 10,000 suns had risen in the sky, forming a grand and majestic scene.

This Sovereign Celestial Body sat cross-legged quietly in the sky, and in the silence, golden light flowed. An indescribable sense of ancient majestic aura filled the atmosphere, shocking Mu Chen.

"Without destruction one cannot be formed... One can only be formed after destruction..." Mu Chen murmured to himself.

Now that the Sovereign Celestial Body had been formed, there was no doubt that it was more perfect compared to the one he had condensed previously, as there were no signs of flaws nor blemish on it.

It was clear that the true Great Solar Undying Body had to go through prior destruction to finally become more perfect and powerful with the power of the Undying Divine Leaf.

"Is this..."

Mu Chen lifted his head, shock written in his eyes as he said, "The Great Solar Undying Body?"

The golden light dissipated little by little, and the majestic golden Sovereign Celestial Body became clearer. Its face was no different from Mu Chen's, but from a distance, it resembled a giant golden Buddha with

the power to suppress heaven and earth.

Behind the Sovereign Celestial Body's head there was a huge golden sun hanging in the air. Golden fire surged around the burning sun, mysterious and overwhelming.

The cultivation of the Great Solar Undying Body finally succeeded!

Irrepressible ecstasy flashed in Mu Chen's eyes as he finally succeeded in cultivating the Great Solar Undying Body after much effort!

He had been waiting for this moment for many years.

Mu Chen took a deep breath as his spirit moved, appearing above the crown of the Great Solar Undying Body before gradually descending into it.

As the spirit fused with it, the Great Solar Undying Body's eyes opened suddenly. Golden light permeated the air, emitting a majestic and mysterious aura.

In the cultivation chamber, Mu Chen's tightly shut eyes opened suddenly as he sat up abruptly. Golden light surged out from within his body, and a massive golden silhouette appeared.

Crash!

The cultivation chamber trembled violently, and the golden Sovereign Celestial Body stood above it. Immediately, a huge crack appeared in the chamber as it finally collapsed with a deafening rumble.

Nine Nether had been sitting on a stone platform outside the cultivation chamber. She looked up sharply toward the cultivation chamber filled with golden light, and a thrilling spiritual energy fluctuation soared to the sky.

"Has the cultivation succeeded?"

Nine Nether's heart skipped a beat as she soared into the sky, her hands conjuring seals. A beam of massive spiritual energy descended and enveloped thousands of yards in the vicinity.

As the light shrouded the area, a golden Celestial Body of about a

thousand yards burst out from the cultivation chamber as it stood tall in the heavens and earth.

Nine Nether looked up as she saw the golden Celestial Body that resembled a giant golden Buddha with a golden sun hovering behind it. Shock was written all over her beautiful face.

She knew that the Sovereign Celestial Body that Mu Chen had been cultivating was extraordinary, but she did not expect it to be so spectacular and majestic.

"This is the Great Solar Undying Body?" she murmured, as shock and horror filled her heart.

Chapter 677: Nine Nether Troop

The vast golden Sovereign celestial body stood tall in heaven and earth, as golden light permeated throughout all. The spiritual energy between heaven and earth showed signs of rampage, with torrents of converging spiritual energy wrapping around the Sovereign celestial body, painting a majestic sight.

Nine Nether hovered in mid-air, as she gazed at the Sovereign celestial body, shock written in her eyes. Although she had the physical constitution of a Divine Beast, and thus, could not cultivate a Sovereign celestial body, she was still knowledgeable and experienced enough to have seen many of the 99 Sovereign Celestial Bodies.

However, she couldn't help but feel shocked at what she now saw, for she found that most of the Sovereign celestial bodies which she had seen did not seem to have the power of this Sovereign celestial body now before her.

Nine Nether surveyed her surroundings, as she thought of how fortunate it was that she had isolated this area. Otherwise, many would have noticed the commotion by now, and in that case, Mu Chen's hidden means would have been exposed.

"This is the power of the Sovereign celestial body?"

The golden Sovereign celestial body opened its golden eyes, filled with infinite majestic authority, and its great hands, which were transformed by Mu Chen, slowly clenched, causing the space to twist and distort. An indescribable force of terror rippled through the limbs and shook people, rendering them with the impulses to howl skyward.

The spiritual energy between heaven and earth roared, then transformed into a rainbow of light, which was then inhaled by the Sovereign celestial body. As it breathed, clouds and mist lingered and curled, emitting a spiritual aura.

It was only at this moment, that Mu Chen realized the true extent of the Sovereign celestial body's power. Its was a power that was akin to

beholding a high mountain in awe and admiration. If he had not possessed a hidden ace up his sleeve, like the Spiritual Array Master during his battle with Liu Ming, it would have been extremely difficult for him to defeat the latter.

After all, the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body that Liu Ming had cultivated had been very powerful too. However, Mu Chen was confident that, with his current ability, he could demolish and destroy the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body directly.

Although he was unclear which grade of the Sovereign celestial body the "Great Solar Undying Body", which he had cultivated, could match up to, he was sure that it was definitely countless times more powerful than the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body.

Buzz.

The golden celestial body emitted a slight buzzing sound, as it began to shrink rapidly amid the flickering golden lights. After a few short moments, a slender figure appeared above the sky.

The figure was naturally Mu Chen, as he glanced down to look at his hands, a look of unconcealed glee on his face. He was very satisfied with the power of the "Great Solar Undying Body".

After all these years of expectation, there was no disappointment. After successfully cultivating the "Great Solar Undying Body", he could truly be considered as a First Grade Sovereign!

The him currently was anticipating the battle of the "Daluo Golden Pool" in the near future, for he wanted to borrow the power of the "Daluo Golden Pool" to perfect his "Great Solar Undying Body". Just as the "Great Solar Undying Body" vanished, in the depths of Daluotian, numerous glances were suddenly cast toward Nine Nether Palace.

"These fluctuations... Is that lass Nine Nether up to something?"

One of these glances came from the Condor King, who was one of the three Kings in the Daluo Territory. He gazed toward the direction of Nine Nether Palace, and despite Nine Nether's swiftly setting up a spiritual

energy barrier to mask and isolate Mu Chen's Sovereign celestial body, powerful Sovereigns like the Condor King could still sense that something was amiss. Although the moment was too short for him to perceive what it was clearly, he could still sense the burst of spiritual energy fluctuations.

Another glance came from the Spiritual Pupil King. As he narrowed his eyes, the space before him rippled, and his gaze seemed to pierce through the space, shooting straight into Nine Nether Palace. However, Mu Chen now had reverted to his original state, with only traces of lingering golden light in the sky left to reveal the unusual spiritual energy fluctuations.

The Spiritual Pupil King retracted his gaze, his expression calm. He shut his eyes, and with the extraordinary divine abilities of his eyes, he knew that the unusual fluctuations were caused by the young man named Mu Chen. However, he did not pay much attention to this, as Mu Chen was merely a lad that had just stepped into the Sovereign-stage, merely a nobody that did not deserve his attention.

As they retracted their gazes, a bleary-eyed man opened his eyes abruptly. The man was in an attic, hidden even further in. For the first time, there was a look of wonder on his usually lazy expression.

"What a powerful Sovereign celestial body..." He murmured in a low tone.

...

"Congratulations, you finally got what you desired."

Although Nine Nether had set up the spiritual energy barrier in the nick of time, she did not know that the commotion had already attracted the attention of the top three aces in the Daluo Territory. She moved and appeared in front of Mu Chen, her eyes crinkled with mirth, as she knew how long Mu Chen had prepared for this day to come.

Mu Chen grinned as he asked, "Looking at my 'Great Solar Undying Body', which grade do you think it belongs to among the 99 Sovereign Celestial Bodies?"

Nine Nether pondered and replied, "It's not easy to determine, as we

have not pitted them against each other. Moreover, many powerful Sovereign celestial bodies possess their own unique ability, but judging from its majestic aura, this 'Great Solar Undying Body' is at least within the top 50."

"Only the top 50?" Mu Chen was dissatisfied with the ranking.

In any case, the "Great Solar Undying Body" was one of the necessary conditions to cultivate the "The Primordial Immortal Body", and the "Primordial Immortal Body" was ranked fourth in the 99 Sovereign Celestial Bodies!

"Don't be greedy, a Sovereign celestial body ranked within the top 50 is already considered as being a sect's precious treasure, even in the forces within the Daluo Territory. Even Seventh and Eighth Grade Sovereigns would desire it and be willing to offer their services to the elders just to cultivate it, let alone ordinary folk."

Nine Nether rolled her eyes at Mu Chen, as she thought: This fellow, did he think a Sovereign celestial body ranked within the top 50 was just a common commodity?

Mu Chen rubbed his nose sheepishly, as he knew Nine Nether was right. Even the young hall master of Tian Xuan Hall could only cultivate the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body, which was ranked 97th.

However, he could also feel that there seemed to be a lot of mystery hidden within the "Great Solar Undying Body", and now that he had just cultivated it, it was completely impossible for him to use its full potential. Otherwise, he believed that Nine Nether would never just give an evaluation of it being in the mere top 50 ranking.

With a wave of her hands, Nine Nether dispersed the shrouded aura of spiritual energy. Not far away, two beams of light surged and appeared in front of him. It was Tang Bing and Tang Ruo, and the two beautiful women's eyes were appraising Mu Chen. They were both somewhat surprised, as the oppressive spiritual energy, which emanated from Mu Chen, was obviously much stronger than it had been a month ago.

"Looks like you have succeeded in cultivating your Sovereign celestial

body?" Tang Bing asked in astonishment.

Mu Chen smiled and nodded, as he glanced at Tang Bing and asked in surprise, "Have you advanced through?"

The spiritual energy fluctuations around Tang Bing had become much stronger than they had been a month ago, so clearly in this month's period, she had successfully advanced through and entered the Sovereign-stage.

"It's all thanks to your Sovereign Spiritual Liquid." Tang Bing was elated to have advanced to the Sovereign-stage, revealing as such with a dazzling smile that was now blooming on her usually cold, expressionless face.

Mu Chen smiled, and with a flick of his fingers, a beam of light surged towards Tang Bing, who then hurriedly caught it. A crimson red scroll laid within the beam of light.

"This is the method of cultivation of the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body. I believe it will help you greatly." Mu Chen smiled.

After snatching Liu Ming's Mustard Seed Bracelet, he had found the method of cultivation of the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body within it. He did not care for the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body at this point, but no matter what, this was a Sovereign celestial body that had a famed ranking, and ordinary Sovereigns would desire it. Thus, it was perfectly suitable to gift it to Tang Bing.

Upon hearing that this was the method of cultivation of the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body, which was ranked 97th in the 99 Sovereign Celestial Bodies, Tang Bing was stunned and immediately shook her head, declining it.

"It's too much of a gift, I cannot accept it."

After all, not everyone could have the opportunity to cultivate the "Great Solar Undying Body", and Tang Bing had originally wanted to cultivate any Sovereign celestial body. After her abilities had increased, she would then choose to cultivate a stronger Sovereign celestial body. She had not

expected that Mu Chen would gift her a Sovereign celestial body that had such a reputable ranking.

"Hehe, Mu Chen, are you trying to court my sister? That's generous of you, what with the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid, and now the Sovereign celestial body." Tang Rou teased him playfully, as she grinned cheekily.

"You mischievous lass! I'll tear your mouth out!" Tang Bing blushed. She grit her teeth in a show of mock anger, as Tang Rou giggled, hiding behind Nine Nether hurriedly.

After getting teased by Tang Rou, Tang Bing was at a loss of what to do. She held onto the red scroll, knowing that she couldn't accept it, nor could she return it, so she stomped her foot in exasperation.

"It's alright." Nine Nether finally spoke with mirth in her tone.

She wrapped her arm around Tang Bing's slender waist in an embrace, as she smiled and said, "Just accept it for the time being, as you do need a Sovereign celestial body that suits you now anyway."

Upon hearing Nine Nether's words, Tang Bing nodded and thanked Mu Chen.

"Thank you, I will return you this favor I owe in the future."

Mu Chen was about to decline, but when he saw how serious she was, he just nodded, as he knew that this girl had her own set of principles.

"Bing'er, how's the strength of our Nine Nether Palace now?" Nine Nether asked abruptly.

"Is Sister referring to the Nine Nether Troop?"

Upon seeing Nine Nether nod, Tang Bing smiled and replied, "Rest assured, in these years since Sister left, I did not grow lax. Our Nine Nether Troop is even stronger now than when you first left."

Nine Nether nodded assuredly, as she said, "Now that Mu Chen is one of the Commanders of our Nine Nether Palace, according to the rules, he should lead the Nine Nether Troop, agreed?"

After all, Tang Bing had been the one in charge of the Nine Nether

Troop these years, and it was only fair to gain Tang Bing's permission before letting Mu Chen become the Commander.

Upon hearing this, Tang Bing nodded without any hesitation, and replied, "No problem."

As she finished speaking, she suddenly glanced at Mu Chen with a smile. "However, there are many strong men in the Nine Nether Troop, and each of them are unruly and defiant, so I'm afraid Mu Chen would not be able to tame them."

Mu Chen, who had originally wished to decline this, lest Tang Bing feel dissatisfied that he was going to meddle in her affairs, now raised his brows in interest, saying with amusement in his tone, "Let's have a try then."

Chapter 678: Commanding the Nine Nether Troop

The distribution of power in the Daluo Territory was a little out of the ordinary. With the exception of the army that the Daluo Territory itself ran, every Lord had its own army. If these Lords wanted to gain a larger territory, they had to use their own troops to seize and annex them in territories outside of the Daluo Territory. Thus, each faction of the Lord-ranked individuals vigorously developed the army under its command to make the faction stronger.

For example, the Asura Palace's Asura Troop, Cracking Mountain Palace's Cracking Mountain Army, Blood Hawk Palace's Blood Hawk Troop...

Of course, although these armies were strong and domineering, everyone knew that the most fearsome fighting force in the Daluo Territory was the army directly under its command, the Daluo Celestial Army—except that this army was not under the control of any Lord. It belonged to the unfathomable Sleeping King, and of course, the mysterious Dominator, who was always difficult to find.

The Nine Nether Troop was an army under the Nine Nether Palace.

However, due to the fact that Nine Nether had been away for many years, and because she was not good at managing the army, when she left, the Nine Nether Troop was considered to be the weakest of the Nine Lords' Armies. Fortunately, Tang Bing was diligent in training the troops in the years of Nine Nether's absence, so the Nine Nether Troop gradually become strong. Although they were unable to match up to the Ashura Troop and other powerful troops in terms of resources, they were obviously much stronger than before.

Nine Nether Palace, Training Ground.

In this vast training ground, there were countless black figures standing in silence. They wore black armor and stood upright like a rock,

unmoving. Their breathing was consistent, and their majestic aura was startling, as if thunder and lightning had struck.

On the raised platform in front, silhouettes skimmed through the air as Nine Nether, Mu Chen, Tang Bing, and Tang Rou appeared.

"Our respects to the Palace Master!"

When Nine Nether appeared, the thousand figures, as unmoving as rocks, bowed respectfully with their fists held to their chest. Their voices chorused in unison, reverberating like rumbling thunder.

As Mu Chen stood on the platform, he looked down at the army that resembled a mass of dark clouds, and his eyes were filled with wonder. It was indeed a true army, and it was as if they were breathing as one with their spiritual energy circulating around them, meeting without any resistance.

It was apparent that this had taken years of cooperation and camaraderie to achieve.

"The Nine Nether Troop has always remained at a scale of 1,000 people. We adopted an elimination system. At the end of each year, the last 100 people ranked in the assessment are eliminated and become other forces in the Nine Nether Palace. In the end, rookies who have performed well will replace them." Tang Bing smiled.

Mu Chen was slightly surprised and amazed at the girl's ability. She completely abandoned the advantage of quantity and sought to achieve only quality. This brutal elimination was the main reason for the increasing might of the Nine Nether Troop. Naturally, he could see that everyone in the troop had achieved the level of Three Sovereign Disasters, and the figures standing in the front showed signs of advancing into the Sovereign-state.

In the face of this army, even though Mu Chen had cultivated the Great Solar Undying Body successfully, if they struck together he would have to be cautious and avoid clashing head-on with them.

"You did well," Nine Nether said in commendation. It looked like it had

been the correct choice to entrust the Nine Nether Troop to Tang Bing.

"We had to resort to this as our Sovereign Spiritual Liquid could only develop and sustain a troop of this scale." Tang Bing smiled helplessly. She did want to expand the Nine Nether Troop, but due to the limited amount of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid in Nine Nether Palace, expanding the army would only shake the foundation of the Nine Nether Troop instead.

"It has been hard on you." Nine Nether patted Tang Bing's shoulder. During these years, Tang Bing even distributed her own Sovereign Spiritual Liquid to the Nine Nether Troop. Nine Nether was ashamed of her own contribution when Tang Bing had sacrificed so much.

"It's alright." Tang Bing smiled as she glanced at the Nine Nether Troop. Her crisp voice turned colder. "From this day on, Mu Chen will be the Commander of the Nine Nether Troop."

Upon hearing her words, low murmurs sounded from the Nine Nether Troop which was usually as stable as a rock. Everyone looked towards the young man on the platform before becoming silent.

Silence, at such times, was clearly a sign of opposition.

Tang Bing raised her brows as she asked nonchalantly, "Does anyone have any objections?"

A voice finally sounded. Standing at the front of the Nine Nether Troop was a tall man with the stature of an iron tower. He wore black armour and was armed with a metal spear, his expression firm. "Commander Tang Bing, if you were the one who commanded the Nine Nether Troop, I believe none of us would have any objections.

"We are aware of the difficulties that Nine Nether Palace has faced over the years, and you have contributed your own Sovereign Spiritual Liquid and distributed it to us, so we fully respect you. If your earlier words were orders, we would have followed them. But, I am afraid that some of my brothers will not accept it. "

Mu Chen looked at the man who was as sturdy as an iron tower, and was surprised to find that this man's strength had reached the level of a

First Grade Sovereign, but judging from his spiritual energy fluctuations, he had yet to cultivate a Sovereign Celestial Body.

This level of ability astonished Mu Chen, as he did not expect to find Sovereign Masters in the Nine Nether Troop.

Mu Chen's gaze shifted and found that to the man's left and right, two figures stood still, and the spiritual energy fluctuations of the two men were not weaker than his own.

Three Sovereign Masters.

"The three of them were the strongest and most prestigious of the Nine Nether Troop, and they all had high hopes of being promoted to Commander." Tang Rou stood beside Mu Chen as she introduced the three men to him softly. "The man who spoke is Qiu Shan, standing on his left is Bei Mo, and to his right is Lan Hai.

"They were originally wandering practitioners, but after offending a sect, they were hunted down and eventually saved by me. I then let them join the Nine Nether Troop, and in these years, they have been very loyal. Despite Blood Hawk Palace offering huge sums of money to tempt them to leave, they chose to remain here," Tang Bing commented.

Mu Chen nodded. Being able to join the Nine Nether Troop was considered a pretty good outcome for ordinary wandering practitioners. At least they could obtain free Sovereign Spiritual Liquid here. However, the fact that they could resist the bribery of Blood Hawk Palace surprised Mu Chen as he thought, Looks like these three men do know how to repay the kindness shown to them.

"If you want the Nine Nether Troop to truly respect your command, it's up to you to prove your worth to them," Tang Bing said softly. Although she could command the Nine Nether Troop to follow orders, that would result in the Nine Nether Troop growing resentful and harboring thoughts of resistance. Thus, it could only depend upon whether Mu Chen could tame these recalcitrant guys.

Mu Chen smiled as he walked forward, appearing in the training ground.

"You all refuse to respect my command?" Mu Chen asked as he approached the three figures standing in front.

The three men did not speak as they glanced at Mu Chen nonchalantly. It was apparent that they did not hold much respect for him. They could tell that Mu Chen's ability was that of First Grade Sovereign, and probably stronger than they were, but that was not enough for them to thoroughly respect him.

"Just attack together. If you want to express your dissent, at least let me know if you're qualified to do so," Mu Chen stated calmly.

Rage surged in the three men's eyes as they stated in a low timbre, "We have yet to cultivate the Sovereign Celestial Body."

The implication was that if Mu Chen used the Sovereign Celestial Body to suppress them, there was no way he would gain their respect.

"I will not use the Sovereign Celestial Body," Mu Chen stated nonchalantly.

"Alright!"

The three men's gazes suddenly turned sharp and with no hesitation, they stepped out, and three specters surrounded Mu Chen. Their palms dealt blows with the force of thunder and were as swift as lightning, sweeping towards Mu Chen's vital parts. The moment the three men moved, they exhibited a chemistry in their cooperation.

The magnificent spiritual energy of the three men encompassed the might of wind and thunder as they dealt their blows.

Mu Chen remained motionless but clenched his fists tightly. His skin turned silver at an astonishing speed, and a low rumbling sound thundered as if it were ringing through the bones.

In the face of such a fierce attack, he remained still.

Bong!

The aura of the three men's blows landed heavily on Mu Chen's body as astonishing spiritual energy erupted due to the impact. The earth beneath

their feet immediately disintegrated, forming a huge crack.

The surface of Mu Chen's body rippled with waves of impact that were clearly visible. His body was a resplendent silver, and even his eyes had become silver bright. Thunder circulated on his body, and he resembled a thunder god who had descended onto the earth.

Qiu Shan and the other two's faces twisted in shock as they could feel that their blows had landed on an indestructible rock that had been hardened by the impact of thunder and lightning striking it countless times.

"What a powerful physical form!"

Shock flitted across the three men's hearts as they had also cultivated a physical form, but it was no match for Mu Chen's.

"Retreat!"

Sparks of thunder burst out from Mu Chen's silver eyes. As thunder surged and spread, a terrifying spiritual energy wreaked havoc, causing the three men's bodies to shake violently as they fell in a state of embarrassment. Their feet left deep trails as they scrambled on the ground.

Low gasps of shock came from the Nine Nether Troop, as many men were overwhelmed at the scene before them. They did not expect that the alliance of Qiu Shan and the other two would fail to scratch the young man even in the slightest.

"That's awesome," Tang Rou gasped loudly, with astonishment in her eyes.

Tang Bing nodded as she glanced at the tall and slender figure standing before the Nine Nether Troop. That figure had such a majestic aura, it made everyone focus their attention on him. This young man seemed to have such a unique charm. No wonder Sister Nine Nether valued him so much.

"If you are not convinced, feel free to challenge me again." Mu Chen's silver eyes gazed at the three men nonchalantly.

Upon hearing this, Qiu Shan and the other two smiled bitterly as they shook their heads despondently. The gap between them was too insurmountable. Their joint attacks had failed to even scratch Mu Chen's physical form, and this confrontation proved that they were not in the same league as Mu Chen.

Upon seeing this, the silver light surrounding Mu Chen gradually dissipated. The lightning runes on his chest, which had been concealed by his clothes, also faded silently. Upon closer inspection, there had been the maximum number of ten lightning runes.

Unknowingly, Mu Chen's Thunder God Physique had reached its maximum potential.

No wonder he dared to resist the three men's brutal attacks using his physical form.

"Commander Mu Chen."

Qiu Shan and the other two retreated a step as they clasped their fists in respect. Under Mu Chen's crushing, dominating strength, they were thoroughly convinced of his ability and hence respected him fully.

Chapter 679: Willing Submission

"Greetings, Commander Mu Chen!"

When Qiu Shan and the other two had no choice but to admit their defeat, the Nine Nether Troop finally lowered their heads. The sound of their neat voices resounded like thunder throughout the plaza.

With a calm expression, Mu Chen looked over at that army, which resembled black clouds, before turning his attention back to Qiu Shan and the other two. He then said, "You are all seniors of the Nine Nether Troop. For the past few years, despite going through the toughest times in Nine Nether Palace, you never left. Accordingly, as the new commander, I will reward those who have gained merit."

When he spoke to this point, he paused. Only when he saw the shock in Qiu Shan and the other two's gazes, did he continue to say, "I have a scroll, which holds the method to practicing 'Heavenly Flame Celestial Body', and I will teach it to you later."

"Heavenly Flame Celestial Body?"

Qiu Shan and the other two's expressions changed instantly. They stared at Mu Chen in slight disbelief. "The Heavenly Flame Celestial Body, which is ranked 97th?"

Not only emanating from them, but there were also bursts of outroar coming from within the entire Nine Nether Troop. Clearly, they knew about the title of this Heavenly Flame Celestial Body.

Their gazes turned fiery right away. Although this Heavenly Flame Celestial Body was only ranked toward the end of the 99 Sovereign Celestial Body, it was still on the list. Thus, it was evidently tougher than those others, which could not even get on the list.

Even in the Daluo Territory, a Sovereign Celestial Body of this rank was not something anyone could practice. But now, Mu Chen was using it as a reward. Such a reward could not be seen as a small one.

"Thank you, Lord Commander!"

Due to the enticement of that Heavenly Flame Celestial Body, Qiu Shan and the other two's expressions became more excited. They immediately cupped their fists and thanked him with a respectful tone.

Finally, their feelings of unfairness dissipated completely. After all, someone who was able to reward the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body so easily, albeit with even their young age, must have a verve incomparable to their own.

Mu Chen waved, before sweeping his eyes over everyone and saying with a deep voice, "Hereafter, within the Nine Nether Troop, as long as someone possesses an outstanding war achievement, not only can they obtain enough Sovereign Spiritual Liquid to sprint towards the Sovereign-level, they also stand the same chance to acquire the method to practice the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body after their successful sprint. Of course, you will have to look at your own good fortune, as to whether you can successfully practice it or not."

Wow.

There was once again a burst of outroar within the Nine Nether Troop. Many people licked their lips with fiery gazes. For the past few years, they too were aware of the plight of the Nine Nether Palace. Thus, they usually used their Sovereign Spiritual Liquid carefully. Although no one actually said anything, everyone had the same hopes of obtaining some Sovereign Spiritual Liquid in order to accelerate the speed of their practices.

Furthermore, in order to sprint towards the Sovereign-level, one would require a large amount of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid, which needs a long time to store. But Mu Chen's words dispelled their biggest concerns. In addition to that, was the enticement of obtaining that Heavenly Flame Celestial Body afterwards.

"But the Nine Nether Troop is always recuperating. How are we to obtain war achievements?" There were still some perceptive people within the Nine Nether Troop, who asked this with a small voice right away.

It was then that everyone snapped out of their thoughts and nodded. For the past few years, due to the decline of the Nine Nether Palace, the Nine

Nether Troop never had the chance to go to war. Although the territories belonging to the Nine Nether Palace were being continuously conquered, the Nine Nether Palace was without a master. Thus, despite feeling sullen and hateful, they did not dare take any action.

"The past should be left in the past..." Mu Chen said lightly. "From today onward, we will take back what truly belongs to the Nine Nether Palace. We will fight back against those who still dare to oppress us. So, we must leave those days of recuperation behind us. Those who are not satisfied can leave the Nine Nether Troop, as from today onward, the Nine Nether Troop will be the sharpest spear of the Nine Nether Palace, which will be directed at all our enemies."

He said this calmly, but it was enough to make the whole Nine Nether Troop dumbfounded. Then, their bodies began to tremble in excitement, with some of them even becoming teary-eyed, due to their toilsome endurance for the past few years.

In Daluotian, the Nine Nether Troop had held the lowest social status. No matter where they went, they would attract disdainful looks. In fact, some malicious people would refer to the Nine Nether Palace as the Women's Palace, and to the Nine Nether Troop as the Women's Troop. All this was due to the fact that, for the past few years, every time the Nine Nether Palace was being provoked, they would choose to simply grin and bear it. In the end, they even readily surrendered their place in the Daluo Golden Pool.

After a long period of time, even they felt slightly numb. That was why, when they heard what Mu Chen said, it seemed to encircle around the Nine Nether Troop's determination, and they were suddenly uncontrollably overwhelmed by their emotions.

"As the Commander commands!"

All of the Nine Nether Troop stood still and, just like thunder, they lowly roared in an orderly fashion.

On the high platform, Tang Bing, who was watching this scene, couldn't help but bite her red lips with her pearly white teeth, as her beautiful eyes

gazed at that slender shadow. No matter how strong she was usually, she was still ultimately a woman. Thus, she lacked a sense of bloodlust in her bones, which only men had. When it came to defense, Mu Chen would most certainly be inferior to her. But when it came to offense, clearly she would be inferior to Mu Chen.

Although the Nine Nether Troop gave her great respect, it was still rare to have a moment such as this, where they were overwhelmed by their emotions.

"How about it?" Nine Nether asked with a smile.

Tang Bing nodded lightly, before saying with a smile, "Elder sister Nine Nether has good judgment. Mu Chen is definitely much stronger than Cao Feng."

She pouted slightly, revealing a rare sense of femininity, before saying, "But this fellow may be a bit too generous. How can I give out so much Sovereign Spiritual Liquid?"

Tang Bing could be considered as the housekeeper of the Nine Nether Palace, as she was in charge of the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid. In the past, she had to live through her days, using them only sparingly. She was unlike Mu Chen, who was like a lion with his mouth opened wide, for he let out grand promises, such as being able to sprint towards the Sovereign-level, as well as guarantees in obtaining Sovereign Spiritual Liquid.

"He probably wants to fuel war by warfare," Nine Nether said, while she lazily stretched. A cold color flit through her beautiful, long, and narrow eyes. "It's just like what Mu Chen said. From today onward, the Nine Nether Palace will be changing their ways, whereby we will take back everything which once belonged to us."

Tang Bing nodded silently, for even she had a slight hope in her heart. Of course she had hoped to be able to see a Nine Nether Palace that was filled with vitality and bloodlust, where any enemies who came would receive their terrifying revenge.

For the past few years, the Nine Nether Palace had been bullied terribly. It wasn't that she did not feel angry about it, but they were in such

uncontrollable circumstances that Lord Blood Hawk would always force them to make mistakes, so that they would then have an excuse to disband the Nine Nether Palace. Thus, no matter how wronged she felt, she would never give the opponent a chance.

Mu Chen was rather satisfied with the eruption of enthusiasm by the Nine Nether Troop. He nodded, and without saying another word, he turned back to glance at the high platform. He knew that he now had completely acquired the respect of the Nine Nether Troop.

"I did not expect you to be so familiar with this carrot-and-stick trick," Nine Nether smiled happily and said, while looking at Mu Chen.

Mu Chen smiled. This trick of his could not be considered as new, but it was certainly effective.

"The Nine Nether Troop is not bad," Mu Chen complimented. He was extremely satisfied with this Nine Nether Troop. It was not weak, whether it be with regards to their vigor or their strength. Their only defect was their slightly low number of people, but they still had a lot of potential.

"Of course," Tang Bing smiled. There was a hint of proudness in her eyes, which she failed to conceal. This was because of the fact that, for the past few years, she had focused all her attention on this. Otherwise, how could a Nine Nether Palace that had lost Nine Nether be able to support themselves until Nine Nether had returned once again?

"But it seems to have brought trouble to elder sister Tang Bing," Mu Chen said lightly.

After the Nine Nether Palace lost Nine Nether, from the fact that Tang Bing was still able to train the Nine Nether Troop to the point they were now, and never stopped enduring through the many provocations, it was obvious that she must have sacrificed a lot. Indeed, it must have been extremely difficult for a girl like her to have done this.

No wonder everyone in the Nine Nether Troop treated her with the greatest respect, including Qiu Shan and the other two. Mu Chen could see that, if they revered Nine Nether, then they must have had an immense and sincere respect for Tang Bing.

Tang Bing was slightly startled. She looked over at the smile on the beaming face before her eyes, feeling a light bump on the seemingly soft area of her heart, as well as a sour sting on her pretty nose. Just because she never spoke about the unjust treatment she had received for the past few years, it didn't mean that it didn't exist.

It was just that, after losing Nine Nether, someone had to support the Nine Nether Palace on their shoulders, and she was that model. Thus, she could only show her cold and rigid side, while trying her best to strive on until Nine Nether's return.

"Don't worry, elder sister Tang Bing. In the future, if anyone dare come and cause trouble in the Nine Nether Palace again, I will beat them until they cannot be recognized by even their own parents," Mu Chen said with a smile. The grin on the youngster's handsome face at this moment was gentle and brilliant. It made Tang Bing's pretty face flush slightly. She even lost her usual coldness and rigidness, as she nodded lightly.

"But don't think that, just because you said a few complimenting words, that you don't have to consider the huge amount of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid which the Nine Nether Troop will need. We need so much that you won't be able to take them out, even if you sold me." Tang Bing regained her original colder expression quickly, as she looked over at Mu Chen, saying so with a smile.

Mu Chen nodded. This was definitely a problem. The territories of the Nine Nether Palace's subordinates were severely eroded, and the remaining Sovereign Spiritual Liquid in his hands could not last for long. Thus, if they wanted to continue on for a long time, they would have to rely upon themselves.

"I can only rely on all of you for this sort of thing. But, I will keep my eye on Lord Blood Hawk," Nine Nether said with a smile. According to the rules in the Daluo Territory, the King could not take any active battle action and only servants could enter into combat. This was also the reason that Lord Blood Hawk was not even in the slightest bit afraid of them, because he refused to believe that the small amount of people in the Nine Nether Palace could defeat his Blood Hawk Palace, which was filled with a

galaxy of talent.

Mu Chen nodded and stretched. He gazed into the distance with a sharp eye. "After the battle of Daluo Golden Pool, we should begin to take back what we have lost."

"How are your preparations going?" Tang Bing asked curiously. After all, this was the first time, after so many years, that the Nine Nether Palace would be participating in the battle of Daluo Golden Pool. It was assumed that the other sects must be keeping a close eye on them.

"Everything is in order."

Mu Chen smiled faintly. His bright eyes were filled with confidence. After completing his practice of The Great Solar Undying Body, he was no longer afraid of any opponents of the same level.

But the battle this time was of extreme importance to him and the Nine Nether Troop. Thus, he could not treat it lightly, despite his capabilities.

Mu Chen lightly touched the Mustard Seed Bracelet. Suddenly, he recalled a secret divine art named 'Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art', which was in a scroll that he had snatched from Liu Ming.

Chapter 680: The Strange Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art

Mu Chen quietly sat cross-legged on a hill in Nine Nether Palace. There was a golden scroll in between his palms, and golden lights continuously emanated from it.

After a long while, Mu Chen opened his eyes and looked at the golden scroll. He was baffled and felt at a loss.

The golden scroll contained the Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art that he had snatched from Liu Yan.

Mu Chen had been studying it for three days, but he was unable to get anything out of it. He did not have any clue on how he could cultivate the Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art.

Mu Chen's expressions kept changing. Suddenly, he formed a seal with his hands. As the seals changed, majestic spiritual energy swirled out and turned into a Purple Spiritual Dragon in his palms. The Purple Dragon roared, and the crying of a dragon resounded indistinctly.

Boom!

As Mu Chen threw out a blow with his palm, the Purple Spiritual Dragon whizzed out. It struck a mountain, and cracks started to form on it.

Mu Chen stared at the cracks and frowned. When he had condensed the Purple Dragon, he had used the seal for the Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art. Although he had successfully cultivated it, the power was extremely weak...

Given Mu Chen's current strength, he could easily flatten the mountain. However, after using the Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art, his power seemed to have weakened.

The Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art was full of oddity.

"Why is this so..." Mu Chen muttered. He was baffled. This was his first time encountering such a strange Divine Technique. No wonder the owner had auctioned it off. It was difficult to cultivate.

Mu Chen pondered this while his hand held onto the golden scroll. The power of the Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art could not be what he had displayed. In this case, he might have cultivated it incorrectly.

However, was this not the way to cultivate Divine Technique?

Mu Chen shut his eyes and ran through the cultivation method in his mind. He immersed himself in the words and tried to find out what he had missed.

Mu Chen was in this state for two hours. Suddenly, he paused. His intuition made him stop at one of the lines in the training chant.

"Gather the energy in the Dragon and Elephant..."

Mu Chen frowned. His dark eyes were glittering. Is it referring to the gathering of the spiritual energy in the Dragon and Elephant? He had tried it before...

"Unless I have gathered at the wrong place," Mu Chen muttered. He suddenly had a thought. His mind went into the Sovereign Sea, and majestic spiritual energy continued to whoosh in the purple Sovereign Sea.

Mu Chen's spirit floated up from the Sovereign Sea. He then stood on the surface of the Sea. After pondering for a while, he suddenly formed a seal, and the speed became increasingly fast. Afterimages formed, and one could not see them clearly.

"Rise!" Mu Chen's spirit shouted.

Boom!

The Sovereign Sea raged, and several spiritual energy beams shot up into the sky. The beams crossed one another's paths in the sky, and spiritual energy raged. Indistinctly, it turned into a humongous Purple Dragon.

The huge dragon occupied the horizon, and powerful spiritual energy fluctuations swirled out like a windstorm.

The huge Purple Dragon was condensed by the Dragon Seal of Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art. It was powerful, but something seemed to be lacking in this dragon.

It was similar to a Divine Artifact without a spirit.

Mu Chen's spirit waved his hand, and the Purple Dragon disappeared into thin air. Majestic spiritual energy returned to the Sovereign Sea. Once again, he shut his eyes and went into deep thought.

Half a day passed by.

Mu Chen opened his eyes and looked at the purple Sovereign Sea. Purple flames were moving on the surface of the Sea.

They were the Unperishable Flame.

Mu Chen stomped his feet, and the spiritual energy shot up again. As the seals changed, a huge Purple Dragon formed in the sky.

This time around, when the huge Purple Dragon had been formed, purple flames from the Sovereign Sea swirled out and covered the huge Purple Dragon.

Crackle. Crackle.

The huge Purple Dragon was covered in purple flame. Its body speedily shrank, and it became crystal clear. From afar, it looked as though it were made of purple crystal.

Purple flame was moving in its eyes. It was like a finishing touch which gave life to a dead object that had been formed by the spiritual energy.

Roar!

When the huge Purple Dragon had shrunk to less than 100 feet, its body was dazzling like a gem. The Purple Dragon looked up into the sky and roared. The cry of a dragon resounded in the Sovereign Sea and stirred up a huge wave.

The Purple Dragon flew in the sky and roared again. Suddenly, it whizzed down into the Sovereign Sea.

Mu Chen lowered his head and looked at the Sovereign Sea. The Purple Dragon was lying in the Sea as though it were in a deep sleep. Purple flames moved on its body as it slept. It seemed to be fortifying itself.

As Mu Chen looked at the Purple Dragon lying in the deep Sovereign Sea, he was enlightened. The Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art was unlike the usual Divine Technique. It could only be condensed in the Sovereign Sea. It had to be kept in the Sovereign Sea and be fortified by the spiritual energy.

One would need a special item like the Unperishable Flame in order to condense the Purple Dragon. It would be the finishing touch to bring the Purple Dragon to life.

"Gather the energy in the Dragon and Elephant. The Dragon and Elephant will cross paths and consume the heaven and the earth..." As Mu Chen muttered, his eyes became brighter. In the next instant, he formed a seal and shouted, "Elephant Seal!"

Boom! Boom!

Another majestic spiritual energy shot up into the sky. This time around, it was not a Purple Dragon that had been condensed. It was a huge Purple Elephant.

The huge elephant stepped in the air and looked as though it could uphold the heavens and the earth. It looked majestic.

Mu Chen merged the Unperishable Flame with the huge elephant. Its eyes were surging with flame, and it came to life.

"Dragon and Elephant cross paths!"

Mu Chen lifted up his hand and the Purple Dragon that was lying in the Sovereign Sea whizzed up. It then collided against the huge Purple

Elephant that was in the sky.

When the dragon and elephant collided, purple lights raged out. A bright photosphere appeared in the sky, and the dragon and elephant crossed their paths inside it.

Swish. Swish.

Purple lights glittered before a terrifying power burst out. The photosphere that was filled with horrifying power suddenly dimmed down. Majestic spiritual energy spread out in all directions, and the photosphere turned into spiritual energy light spots and came down from the sky.

As Mu Chen looked at it, he turned pale. Had he failed? Was the Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art so weird?

Mu Chen stared at the light spots in the sky and gritted his teeth. If this were to happen to ordinary people, they would have given up after so many tries. However, to Mu Chen, it made him more determined to succeed.

He did not believe that he could not handle this Divine Technique!

Mu Chen changed the seal again.

The spiritual energy in the Sovereign Sea started to whiz. The Purple Dragon and Purple Elephant continued to condense and cross paths...

However, it always ended up in a failure.

Hoof.

Mu Chen's spirit was panting hard. He had failed many times. He did not know why he would always fail at the last step. When the dragon and elephant crossed paths, they were unable to merge together and exude terrifying power.

Mu Chen gritted his teeth and muttered, "This is not working..." He sensed that once the dragon and elephant came into contact with each other, they would start to disappear. It was like two fires coming together, and he could not bring about any changes.

If he could succeed in this step, he would be able to bring out the power of the Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art... However, this step was not easy.

Mu Chen's spirit laid on the surface of the Sea. His eyes were glittering, and he kept thinking.

The last step was the crucial step to the power of the Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art. Even if he had successfully merged the two powers with the same properties, it would only enhance its power slightly.

Do they need a power with a different property?

Mu Chen squinted. The spiritual energy in his body had merged with the Unperishable Flame. When he used the spiritual energy to condense the dragon and elephant, they would have the same properties.

He needed a special power that had a different property from the Unperishable Flame.

Where could he get such a power?

Mu Chen's expressions kept changing. Suddenly, a thought came to his mind.

Mu Chen opened his eyes and formed a seal with his hands. Lightning started to flash and thunder sounds traveled out of his body. His body had turned into lightning.

Thunder sounds were heard in the Sovereign Sea, and dark lightning landed from the sky.

Mu Chen's spirit waved his hand, and spiritual energy gathered together and turned into a huge elephant. The huge elephant looked up into the sky and roared. It devoured the dark lightning.

Swish. Swish.

The huge elephant that was purple in color speedily turned dark. It then turned into a huge Black Elephant. Lightning was glittering on top of its head.

Mu Chen looked at the Black Lightning Elephant with joy. He waved his hand, and the Purple Dragon in purple flame whizzed out. It then hung itself before the Black Lightning Elephant.

Purple Fiery Dragon. Black Lightning Elephant.

Two different giants hung in the sky. Indistinctly, a destructive fluctuation rippled out.

Mu Chen's eyes shone brightly.

The feeling is right!

This is the power of Nine Dragon and Nine Elephant Art!

Chapter 681: Peak of the Golden Pool

On the top of the peak, Mu Chen opened his eyes abruptly. One of his eyes was suffused with purple flames, while lightning flickered in the other, making him look extremely mysterious and somewhat eerie.

He stood up quickly and swayed his sleeves. Two beams of rainbow-like rays radiated from his palms with lightning speed. They then transformed into a purple dragon and a black lightning elephant in the sky.

As the colossal creatures pervaded the sky, the waves of spiritual energy within the world started fluctuating vigorously.

"The convergence of the dragon and the elephant!"

Mu Chen formed seals on both of his hands. The roars of the dragon and the trumpets of the elephant thundered in the air. The two Herculean creatures appeared, then zoomed past in the sky like comets, before colliding into each other.

Thump!

A terrifying burst of spiritual energy blasted across the place. Two elementally different forces heavily collided into each other. At that very moment, the space began to distort and purple flames and black lightning ricocheted around. Then, a disc that was several meters wide gradually appeared.

The disc was separated into two sides – black and purple. The purple dragon lurked around it, while the lightning elephant stood upright. The scene looked as majestic as a Dragon-Elephant Sacred Pearl. The convergence of the two terrifying powers had led to a horrific transformation that would make one's hair stand on end.

Ka-cha!

The space seemed as if it was unable to resist such forces, as hairline cracks started to spread across the sky...

Mu Chen's expression turned solemn at that very moment. This force seemed to be a little out of his control. The Nine Dragon Nine Elephant

Art was truly frightening.

On the surface of the Dragon-Elephant Disc, a violent energy started to bounce around frantically, to the point that it looked as if it was going to shatter itself into pieces.

Zip!

The Dragon-Elephant Disc began to vibrate at a higher frequency, before it then emitted a loud buzzing sound. As Mu Chen witnessed the scene, he quickly snapped his fingers. The Dragon-Elephant Disc then transformed into a raging beam of rainbow-like rays and sped into the distance.

"Argh..."

Mu Chen lost control of the Dragon-Elephant Disc. His mouth twitched the moment he realized that the Dragon-Elephant Disc was heading in the direction of the Nine Nether Palace. The beam of ray zoomed across the sky, then started to fall toward the Nine Nether Palace.

Swish!

A beam of light started radiating from the Nine Nether Palace; it appeared on the sky and started transforming into a human-like figure. The radiating figure turned out to be Nine Nether. She was stunned at the sudden attack, but she immediately identified the source of it. An exasperated expression suddenly appeared on her beautiful face.

"This fellow."

Nine Nether grumbled a little, then immediately held her fair hands out. A majestic wave of spiritual energy spiralled out and transformed into a pair of giant wings of rays. The wings acted like a shield, purposed for the protection of the frontlines of Nine Nether Palace.

Dong!

The Dragon-Elephant Disc bombarded the wings of rays vigorously. A terrifying wave of spiritual energy blasted into the air. It looked like a grand firework display from a distance.

The people in the Nine Nether Palace also lifted their heads up. They

were stupefied by the sight.

Most of the impact from the burst of spiritual energy after the explosion of the Dragon-Elephant Disc was resisted by the wings of rays. However, as the impact faded away, the wings of rays shattered into pieces, only to reveal Nine Nether's beautiful face! She looked a little stunned.

Mu Chen's offensive attack had actually broken through her shield! Although this was merely a spontaneous act, she still had the abilities of a Grade Four Sovereign. Her status was three grades higher than Mu Chen's. Hence, even if he resorted to all sorts of tricks, it would still be rather difficult to compensate the gap between their abilities.

Nine Nether's beautiful eyes lit up. She took a step forward and immediately appeared on the peak, right before Mu Chen. The latter just laughed a little, as he quickly tried to explain himself. "It's just a slight mistake."

"What was that?" Nine Nether did not put the blame on Mu Chen. Instead, she asked him this out of sheer curiosity.

"It's the Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art that we got from the auction," said Mu Chen with a smile. He had no intentions to keep it a secret from her.

"Oh? You have managed to cultivate it?" Nine Nether arched her brows slightly. Her beautiful eyes widened in astonishment. She had studied its cultivation technique, but she was still stuck in a hopeless tangle. Mu Chen had actually successfully cultivated it?

"Well, I sort of found my way around it." Mu Chen nodded his head. He did not hide anything from Nine Nether. He told her all about the information that he had discovered.

After hearing Mu Chen's new discovery, Nine Nether's brows furrowed slightly. She said, "The Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art cannot be directly exercised. It has to be cultivated in the Sovereign Sea. Plus, to put it another way, we still have to use two distinctly different forces to change the elements of the dragon and the elephant."

Mu Chen nodded his head. This was the most essential and difficult part of the process. Had he not trained his Thunder God Physique, he would not have possessed the power of lightning, which was essential to cultivate the Dragon-Elephant.

"You only managed to possess the powers of lightning with the aid of the Thunder God Physique. Hence, I'm afraid that it would be rather difficult for you to rely solely on these powers to successfully cultivate the Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art," murmured Nine Nether. Although Nine Nether had yet to manage successfully cultivating the Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art, she had still seen and learned a great deal over the years.

Mu Chen nodded his head upon hearing Nine Nether's statements. His brows furrowed. Presently, he merely cultivated the rudimentary stage of the Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art. Thus, he could still manage to withstand the impact by relying on the mere powers of lightning from his Thunder God Physique. However, once he had accomplished this even further, his current powers of lightning would not be sufficient to withstand the demands of the Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art.

If one was able to cultivate the Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art to perfection, they would be able to extricate nine dragons and nine elephants. However, Mu Chen could merely extricate a dragon and an elephant currently...

"What should I do then?" Mu Chen stared at Nine Nether, scratching his head over the vexing question.

Nine Nether thought for a moment. She smiled and said, "It is rather difficult, but it seems pretty easy as well. All you need to do is to fuse some sort of lightning elemental energy."

Presently, Mu Chen's spiritual energy had coalesced with the powers of the Unperishable Flame. If he could fuse it with another type of lightning elemental energy, he would then possess a spiritual energy of two different elements. As such, his spiritual energy would be a perfect fit for the Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art.

Mu Chen could not help but roll his eyes. He went through a torturous

process when he attempted to fuse his spiritual energy with the Unperishable Flame. The process of fusing another special energy would be extremely difficult and dangerous. It was definitely not as easy as one-two-three.

There were many Sovereign Masters, who did not have the courage to fuse two distinctly different elemental energies together throughout their lives. This was due to the fact that, if the two energies were to be in conflict with each other, the impact would definitely be extremely severe.

"Although this might be a strenuous task to an ordinary person, I believe that you might have what it takes, as you have trained the Thunder Body Physique. Your body and the spiritual energy inside of it have a certain level of adaptability to the powers of lightning. Thus, as long as you find a lightning energy that is on par with the powers of the Unperishable Flame, you could give it a try," said Nine Nether, a serious tone in her voice.

"A lightning energy that could rival the power of the Unperishable Flame..." Mu Chen smiled wryly. The Unperishable Flame was not like any sort of common power that could be sourced and cultivated easily. It would be difficult to find the perfect lightning energy to match its powers.

"There's no need to rush. Just take your time to find it. If fate allows it, you'll definitely be able to find it," Nine Nether pat Mu Chen's shoulders gently, attempting to console him.

Mu Chen nodded his head. This was the only mindset that he could currently have. However, it was fortunate that he was not pressed for time. He still had sufficient time to figure out a way to make the Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art work. "

"The Daluo Golden Pool Contest is going to start in three days." Nine Nether stared at Mu Chen with her dazzling eyes. Her lips then puckered into a smile. "The reputation and honor of the Nine Nether Palace is in your hands this time."

"I'll obey your commands, Your Highness." Mu Chen smiled as he saluted her. A burning spirit of enthusiasm flickered in his jet black eyes. This was his first battle since his arrival in the Daluo Territory.

It felt just like when he had first arrived at the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. He was not known for anything back then, just like the present him in the Great Thousand World. However, he knew that one day, when he was able to stand out from the various talents and prodigies in the Great Thousand World, he would finally be able to fulfil the promises of the girl who he yearned for deeply. He kept anticipating for that day to come.

On the mountain peak, the young man raised his head and stared at the zenith. His lips curled up into a smile. He looked confident and charming.

Luo Li, one day, I'll fight them all for you...

...

Three days passed in the blink of an eye.

Dong! Dong!

On the third day, the morning light spilled through the dark night and illuminated the ground. The sound of beating drums gradually rumbled across the world within the Daluo Territory. Everyone was filled with a fiery will to fight. At that very moment, it was as if the spiritual aura in the world started moving around restlessly.

A colossal figure swept across the sky. The piercing howls of the wind reverberated across the heavens and earth.

The Daluo Golden Pool Contest was considered as being one of the grandest occasions in the entire Daluo Territory, as various sects would aggressively compete against one another, just to stand out from the rest. Thus, in order to achieve excellent results, various sects would send their best powerhouses for the contest, along with the expectation that they would be able to increase their sects' prestige in the Daluo Territory.

Evidently, the Daluo Golden Pool was one of the main draws of the contest. The fact that the Golden Pool's magical powers could further refine the Sovereign Celestial Body to perfection was a selling point for numerous Sovereign Masters.

In the depths of the Daluo Territory, there was a towering, verdant

mountain. The peak of the mountain dazzled in gold. It was extremely eye-catching. This was where the Daluo Golden Pool was situated.

The mountain was also known as the Peak of the Golden Pool. It was a forbidden sanctuary in the Daluo Territory. On ordinary days, laymen were forbidden from entering the mountain. The mountain would only be open to the public when the Daluo Golden Pool Contest begin.

Presently, their fighting spirit lingered at the foot of the Peak of the Golden Pool. Loud cheers filled the air.

A sea of people flooded the place. It was an incredibly remarkable scene.

Nine gigantic stone platforms stood erect at the foot of the mountain. The stone platforms were incredibly wide, and one of them towered up into the skies. Eight centaurs with incredibly powerful presences stood quietly. Their overwhelming presences were rather terrifying.

Eight figures sat quietly on the thrones, which were situated right on the stone platforms. From a bird's eye view, they looked as ferocious as wolves and eagles. Many powerhouses did not dare to look them straight in the eye. No doubt, the nine kings of the Daluo Territory were rather prominent figures.

Among the nine stone platforms, the last one was left empty. Everyone was clearly aware of it, but none of them were surprised by the sight. They knew that the site belonged to the Nine Nether Palace. However, over the years, the Nine Nether Palace had always been absent. Thus, everyone had gotten used to it.

In the eyes of many, the Nine Nether Palace had long ceased to exist in the Daluo Territory. They were merely regarded as an empty-title.

Bam!

As everyone secretly curled their lips in disdain, a huge explosion suddenly erupted in the sky. Many people lifted their heads up, as ominous dark clouds gathered overhead, before finally smashing onto the barren stone platform.

Thousands of black armor-clad army troops stood still. Despite being

silent, their fiendish aura caused many raised eyebrows.

At the very front of them, a slender young man with a dashing face lifted his head up calmly. His gaze pierced right across the eight stone platforms. There was no hint of fear in his jet black eyes.

Chapter 682: The Battle of Daluo Golden Pool

When the army that resembled dark clouds quietly stood tall atop the ninth stone platform, the commotion of heaven and earth gradually subsided as astonishment flashed in many people's gazes.

The aura that this army emanated was no weaker than the strongest army under the other eight Lords.

"That's the Nine Nether Troop of the Nine Nether Palace?"

"I didn't expect the Nine Nether Troop to have such a majestic aura. Didn't they say that the Nine Nether Troop was the weakest army in Daluo Territory? Doesn't seem like it at all, judging from this aura."

"Yes, seems like the rumors are not credible. Nine Nether Palace has always been low-key, but they have been silently training their capabilities and biding their time. It's said that the master of Nine Nether Palace, who had been missing many years, has returned, and I'm afraid Nine Nether Palace is going to rise soon."

"It's not going to be so easy. During the time Lord Nine Nether was in Daluo Territory, Nine Nether Palace also remained mediocre and was completely unable to match up to the other eight Lords. Even if Lord Nine Nether is back now, I'm afraid it's no simple feat to compete with the other eight Lords."

"..."

Many glanced at the unmoving army as murmurs spread in the crowd. Nine Nether Palace did not have a famed reputation in Daluo Territory, as Nine Nether in the past did not have a strong ability. When she became the Palace master, there was gossip and rumors about it, but due to the Condor King's support and the support from the Nine Netherbird Clan, no one commented openly. However, it was clear that they had their suspicions and doubts over Nine Nether's position.

Just as the crowds were focused on the Nine Nether Troop, their gazes landed on the slender young man with a calm expression standing right in front, prompting them to ask in curiosity, "Who is that young man?"

"He seems to be the new Commander of Nine Nether Palace named Mu Chen, and he was brought back by Lord Nine Nether."

"Such a young Commander? Hmph, this Lord Nine Nether still treats matters as if they were child's play. Does she think that anyone in this Daluo Territory can rise up in ranks?" Some couldn't resist scorning coldly, clearly envious that Mu Chen could become Commander in Daluo Territory at such a young age.

"Although this Mu Chen is young, it's said that he has advanced into the Sovereign-stage, and two months ago, a Commander under Lord Blood Hawk had challenged him to a duel but was defeated in one move."

"Haha, defeating Commander Zhao is nothing. Lord Nine Nether seems to want this Mu Chen to fight for a slot at the Golden Pool, and this would inevitably pit him in a fight against the four great Commanders. Although this Mu Chen does have some capability, he still lacks experience to match up to the four great Commanders."

"Mmhmm... Your words do make sense. Lord Nine Nether seems to be overly hasty this time. I'm afraid it will not only fail to bring honor, but they will only disgrace themselves..."

"..."

Whoosh!

After the Nine Nether Troop appeared, three beams of light soared across as one landed atop the throne on the ninth stone platform, drawing many glances.

The graceful silhouette was slender and svelte. She wore black armor that accentuated her delicate curves, and she tied her hair up casually, presenting a valiant and heroic charm. The long pale legs under her armor attracted many heated gazes, and some people's mouths went dry upon

seeing such a beauty before them. The beauty had a bodacious figure and cold but elegant features.

Not to mention, a brilliant lady who possessed such a high rank would arouse people's desire to conquer her.

This slender figure was of course, Nine Nether.

Her beautiful eyes swept the surroundings as she sat atop the throne with Tang Bing and Tang Rou on her left and right. They had the same facial features, but exhibited completely different demeanors, and their arrival became the center of attention.

"Haha, Nine Nether, your Nine Nether Palace has finally arrived. I thought you had forfeited your chance and in that case, that would be belittling the slot that you expended much effort to get." As Nine Nether appeared, a loud and boisterous laugh rang from a stone platform not far away. Lord Blood Hawk looked in Nine Nether's direction.

Upon hearing his words, she leveled a cold glance at Lord Blood Hawk and stated nonchalantly, "I won't trouble Lord Blood Hawk to show concern regarding the matters of my Nine Nether Palace."

Lord Blood Hawk smiled as his palm rubbed the armrest of his throne. A chilling and sinister glint flashed in his crimson eyes.

Anyone could clearly feel the tense atmosphere between Nine Nether and Lord Blood Hawk, and all the other Lords looked on coldly from the sidelines with no intention of meddling.

Within the Daluo Territory, the ranks of the Nine Lords were not low, and with the exception of Nine Nether Palace in the past, their capabilities were on par with each other, thus no one was willing to bow down to another. They had also crossed swords to fight over profits and resources, thus they were no stranger to such battles, and were clearly not foolish enough to get embroiled within such conflicts unless they would be impacted directly. After all, Nine Nether was no longer like her past self, as her capabilities could now intimidate the other Lords.

Mu Chen stood silently in front of the Nine Nether Troop. His calm gaze

swept towards the direction of Blood Hawk Palace. Atop the vast stone platform was an army clad in blood red armor. A malicious aura surrounded this army, and they were clearly a ferocious army adept in battle. This Lord Blood Hawk was domineering, and he had many strong men under his command.

Behind Mu Chen, Qiu Shan murmured quietly, his tone filled with resentment, "Commander Mu, this is the Blood Hawk Troop of Blood Hawk Palace. It is commanded by both Wu Tian and Cao Feng. The cities belonging to Nine Nether Palace were wiped out by them, and many of these cities were forced to change their allegiance to Blood Hawk Palace.

"Cao Feng is a lowly animal. If it weren't for our Lord Nine Nether, he would have been reduced to a dead dog, but now he's actually helping others to fight against Nine Nether Palace. That piece of s***. If there were a chance, the Nine Nether Troop would not let him off!" Qiu Shan gnashed his teeth, clearly enraged at Cao Feng's betrayal.

Mu Chen nodded slightly, his expression calm. He was about to speak when he felt two cold glances cast towards him. He lifted his head and saw Wu Tian and Cao Feng, who were standing in front of the Blood Hawk Troop staring at him.

The three men made eye contact. A cruel smirk pulled at the corners of Wu Tian's mouth, while Cao Feng's gaze remained cold, enmity apparent in his hostility.

In the past when he had been in Nine Nether Palace, the Nine Nether Troop had been in his control, and Mu Chen's position was exactly the same as his previously. Clearly, Nine Nether intended to replace him with Mu Chen.

Although he had betrayed Nine Nether Palace and left, Cao Feng still felt uneasy. If Mu Chen had done a more capable job than Cao Feng, wouldn't others say that he was inferior to Mu Chen?

As someone who was also brought into Daluo Territory by Nine Nether, this was something that a petty person like Cao Feng could not take lying down. His personality was clearly one capable of letting others down, but

he would not allow others to let him down.

Cao Feng turned his head as he whispered to Wu Tian, "If there's an opportunity, I will try my best not to let him leave the Peak of the Golden Pool."

"Haha, looks like you do dislike this fellow a lot." Wu Tian smiled as he patted Cao Feng's shoulder saying, "There are bound to be casualties in the battle of the Golden Pool. It doesn't matter how heavy the blows dealt are. However, our main goal is to reach the peak. As for this fellow, our Lord has ordered people to deal with him specifically, so I believe he won't even get the chance to see the Golden Pool."

Upon hearing this, Cao Feng smiled regretfully as he thought, Oh well, this is for the best. If this fellow doesn't even get the chance to see the Golden Pool, that would just highlight his incompetence, and Nine Nether Palace will become a laughing stock.

As Cao Feng and Wu Tian appraised Mu Chen with malicious intention, Qiu Shan warned Mu Chen in low tones, "Commander Mu, in the battle of the Golden Pool, you have to be wary of these two fellows."

Mu Chen nodded slightly. He could clearly see Wu Tian and Cao Feng's gaze, as if they were cats toying with a mouse. However... he smirked. It was hard to say exactly who was the mouse in this equation.

A fragrance suddenly materialized as Tang Bing walked slowly towards Mu Chen, her beautiful eyes surveying the surroundings. She then smiled at Mu Chen, and her charming smile drew many heated gazes.

"What can I do for you, oh Palace Keeper Tang?" Mu Chen smiled teasingly.

Tang Bing rolled her eyes at Mu Chen as she replied, "Sister Nine Nether wants me to tell you that close to one hundred people will be joining the battle of the Golden Pool, and they are no weaklings."

"Why are there so many participants?" Mu Chen asked in surprise. Didn't they say that slots were limited?

"In this battle of the Golden Pool, the three majesties decided to increase

the number of slots, thus the participants are no longer limited to the men under the Nine Lords, but also now include other subordinate forces in Daluo Territory."

At this point, Tang Bing looked towards the direction of Blood Hawk Palace. Worry was apparent in her eyes as she continued, "This is not good news for you. As far as I know, among these subordinate forces, some are on good terms with Blood Hawk Palace, and they might stop you from getting near the Golden Pool in order to please Blood Hawk Palace."

Mu Chen's brows knitted together. After all, he was on his own, and just dealing with Wu Tian and Cao Feng would expend much of his effort. If more people were out to make trouble for him, then it could spell disaster.

This Blood Hawk Palace was indeed detestable.

Tang Bing saw Mu Chen's frown and bit her lips slightly. She glanced at the stone platform a distance away as she gritted her teeth and turned.

"Sister Tang Bing, what are you doing?" Mu Chen looked at her in bewilderment.

"I..." Tang Bing blushed as she said softly, "I'm going to look for Zhou Yue and ask him to lend a hand to help you get rid of those pesky obstacles so that you can conserve some energy."

Although she did not harbor any feelings towards Zhou Yue, she could seek his help at these times.

Mu Chen was stunned. He glanced at Tang Bing before retracting his gaze. He said coldly, "I wouldn't want to trouble Miss Tang Bing."

Tang Bing's expression changed as she bit her lips and stared at Mu Chen, clearly sensing the coldness in his tone. Ever since they had known each other, it was the first time she saw Mu Chen's hostile side. Her eyes welled up with hints of tears, moving those who saw her.

"Ahem, Commander Mu, Sister Tang didn't mean anything. She just wanted Nine Nether Palace to perform well this time to avoid disgracing Lord Nine Nether," Qiu Shan hastily commented. He was a lot older than Tang Bing, but he respected her very much.

Upon saying this, he then turned to Tang Bing whose eyes were slightly red with tears.

"Sister Tang, if you had really approached Zhou Yue, not only does it not reflect well on Nine Nether Palace, but others might say that Commander Mu had to rely on a lady to persuade others to help in a mere battle of the Golden Pool... Although we are aware of Commander Mu's ability, tongues might wag, and gossip is a fearful thing."

Tang Bing's eyes were red with tears. Her usually strong character refused to show a weak side even now as she stared at Mu Chen.

"I am not belittling you. I heard that Lord Blood Hawk has engaged four First Grade Sovereigns to form an alliance to deal with you, coupled with Wu Tian and Cao Feng. No matter how strong you are, do you think you can escape unscathed?"

Mu Chen's eyes narrowed as he glanced Tang Bing. Here eyes were still red with tears, but she was wearing a stubborn expression. His heart softened, and his cold expression became gentler as he said softly, "Sister Tang Bing, rest assured, if they really are out to get me, even if I can't leave the Peak of the Golden Pool, I will make sure all of them stay to accompany me."

The young man's voice was calm and soothing, but underneath was a palpable ferocity and a confidence that could not be concealed. He was not conceited, but it was not mere bravado, either.

Tang Bing gazed at Mu Chen. The young man's calm tone made her lose her courage to retort, hence she could only bite her red lips as if being bullied.

Thus, Mu Chen quickly felt hostile glares directed towards him, even among the Nine Nether Troop. This showed that Tang Bing was more well-loved in the hearts of the Nine Nether Troop and was far more important compared to him as their Commander.

"Ahem."

In the face of increasingly hostile glares, Mu Chen coughed sheepishly

as he murmured, "Sister Tang Bing, don't be like this. Rest assured, I have strong bones. It's not that easy for people to beat me to death."

Tang Bing finally smiled as she glared teasingly at Mu Chen saying, "I don't care if you get beaten to death. It's me being meddlesome and asking for trouble. I deserve to get scolded."

She couldn't help but to have slight resentment in her tone, as it was the first time in years someone had spoken to her in such a cold tone.

Tang Bing turned to leave after saying her piece.

"Sister Tang Bing, rest assured, as long as I'm here, no one can disgrace Nine Nether Palace." Mu Chen smiled.

Tang Bing paused in her tracks as she harrumphed softly, "Prove it with your performance. If not, don't even think about getting a drop of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid from me."

"Yes, I will follow the orders of the honorable Palace Keeper." Mu Chen smiled and clasped his fists.

Tang Bing pursed her lips, ignoring Mu Chen as she returned with quick steps.

Mu Chen turned as he stared at the stone platform where Blood Hawk Palace was. A chilling glint flashed in his dark eyes.

Since you want to play, I'll have fun playing with you then.

Chapter 683: The Battle of Reaching the Peak

Dong! Dong!

When the intense fighting spirit beneath the sky and the earth had reached the extremity, the melodious bell rang and eventually resounded throughout the horizon. As rang, its sound lingered continuously around the place.

In the sky, some rays of light were condensed, and some space distorted. Three light shadows slowly emerged, representing the supremacy within the Daluo Territory: The Condor King, the Spiritual Pupil King, and the unfathomable Sleeping King.

As soon as these three appeared, innumerable people on the ground bowed to, and saluted, them in awe. Even the Nine Lords slightly lowered their heads. The three kings were the only ones standing indifferently, beneath the sky and the earth – their statuses were simply untouchable. After the Condor King waved the sleeve of his robe, everyone suddenly felt a stream of soft power rushing toward them, making their bodies become stiff again.

"Presumably, the rules of the Daluo Golden Pool are known to all of you. So, I'm going to say no more about that. And no one cares how you make it to the mountain peak. In here, the result – not the means – is the only thing that matters."

"There are only four spots available for the entry to the Daluo Golden Pool. Your skills will decide how you may contest for it."

Little by little, the old voice of the Condor King spread everywhere, while the atmosphere beneath the sky and the earth became terrifying, and the eyes of many powerful people present were getting sharp. Every single one of them, who was qualified for the competition, was an outstanding person in their own clan or group,and none of them would get scared facing any sort of competitors. One must undergo a cruel fight in order to

take the four spots from all of these strong candidates.

"The time has come," the Spiritual Pupil King said frigidly, as the lights in his eyes flashed.

Both the Condor King and the Spiritual Pupil King turned their eyes on the ever-drowsy man beside them. The Condor King smiled, commanding, "Brother Meng, please unlock the Peak of the Golden Pool."

Though they were known as the Three Kings together, the Condor King and the Spiritual Pupil King were fairly polite to the Sleeping King, who would never intervene in the internal affairs of the Daluo Territory. They were fully aware of the fact that this man – among the Three Kings – was the one most trusted by the Lord of the Territory.

"Mmm." The Sleeping King yawned, without caring about how this act would make him look, and nodded unhurriedly.

Buzz...

Each of the three kings started to shoot a light ray from their hands, each of which went directly into the Peak of the Golden Pool. Afterwards, everybody witnessed that the spaces surrounding the Peak were gradually distorted, but the appearance of the Peak itself was getting clearer and clearer.

Boom!

When the Peak of the Golden Pool became clearer than ever, an indescribable and majestic spirit energy swept across the entire area, and the sky, as well as the earth, seemed to be dyed in gold. A golden flood torrent poured down from the towering mountaintop, making it look like the Peak of the Golden Pool was actually made of gold.

"That is known as the Golden Pool Torrent," said Qiu Shan, who was standing beside Mu Chen. "It is extremely powerful and can be compared to the force of tens of thousands of sea waves scouring at the same time. Only the top powers at the Sovereign-level may manage to resist it with an effort. All of the mountain climbers, however, must endure and survive the impact of the Torrent, before getting to the peak."

Mu Chen nodded, looking solemn-faced. He had surely perceived the formidable power of the golden torrent. The Daluo Golden Pool was indeed mysterious...

Dong!

As the brightness of the Peak of the Golden Pool reached its apex, the three kings in the air waved their hands simultaneously. The surrounding space rippled, while the clear and melodious bell reverberated back and forth. A sense of feverish excitement was seen in everyone's eyes.

"The Match of Daluo Golden Pool – begins now."

Whiz! Whiz!

Immediately after the cold voice of the Condor King came out from the clouds, numerous light beams of Spiritual Energy rushed toward the sky, and an abundance of light shadows rose straight up from the ground. One after another, they were all heading toward the Peak of the Golden Pool, with fury, at a lightning speed.

"Commander Mu, this time, it all depends on you!" The three mightiest ones among the Nine Nether Troops, Qiu Shan, Bei Mo, and Lan Hai, gave a fist-wrapping salute to Mu Chen in a grave manner. Their home, the Nine Nether Palace, had almost been forgotten over the years. Now, whether they would make a good start or not, would completely depend on how Mu Chen could perform in the match.

Mu Chen cracked a smile, then nodded without a word. He stood on his tiptoes and turned into a light streamer, skimming over the skyline. Then, under the gaze of numerous spectators, he dropped into the lofty Peak of the Golden Pool.

Sitting on the stone terrace-based throne, Jiu You stared into Mu Chen's back. Her slim hands clasped the armrests for a second. If we could only see how Mu Chen could amaze us, then...

"Sister Jiu You, do you think Mu Chen can obtain the entry to the Golden Pool?" Anxiety was obvious on Tang Rou's beautiful cheek. All of the girls knew that this match of the Golden Pool was critical for the Nine Nether

Palace.

"Rest assured. Mu Chen won't disappoint us." A smile appeared on Jiu You's pretty, oval-shaped face. She apparently had great confidence in Mu Chen.

"See how I will punish him if he fails." Tang Bing gazed at Mu Chen's back, too, with a slight sense of bitterness in her voice.

Tang Bing's words made Jiu You smile again.

In mid-air, the three kings waved their sleeves, causing a series of spatial fluctuations, followed by the condensing of their spiritual energy. The energy then formed into a group of light glasses, upon which the images of all people entering the Peak of the Golden Pool were reflected.

...

Boom!

A split second after Mu Chen had landed his feet on the Peak of the Golden Pool, the vast, overwhelming golden torrents rushed toward him all at once, as if they were going to crush everything – including mountains – into power. Under this impact, everyone, who had not yet achieved the Sovereign-level, would be torn to pieces.

The golden torrents were reflected in Mu Chen's pupils. His face, however, was rather calm. He flicked his fingers, which shot out some burning, purple-colored spiritual energy that was twisting like ribbons, breaking the torrents apart.

Rustle!

When a crack appeared on the torrents, Mu Chen dashed into it, like a ghost, then ran toward the peak at full speed, following the trace of the crack. At the same time, bursts of spiritual energy fluctuations were continually seen everywhere. All the people climbing up the mountain were trying as hard as they could to break the golden torrents by burning their energy and going straight to the peak.

Everyone knew that, no matter how fast they could get there, only four of

them would eventually get the spots of entry. This fierce competition meant that almost everyone else was an enemy. Thus, to obtain a spot, one must reduce the number of rivals over and over again.

Because of this, the match showed its cruelty from the very beginning. As some of the competitors were attempting to tear down the golden torrents to make their way to the peak, others were hidden in the dark, seeking to launch a swift and vicious attack.

Aging bursts of spiritual energies spread across the tall the rugged mountains, with lights flashing and killers roaring incessantly.

Dong.

Mu Chen stepped onto a rock with so much pressure that it immediately blew up and turned into powder. Mu Chen's body then flew past the ground, like a shadow. But right after he left the area, there was an ear-piercing sound, charging at him from the back.

However, the sudden attack Mu Chen encountered did not panic him. He made a backhand attack in return, transforming his spiritual energy into a huge palm that collided with the other source of energy in the back.

Dong!

This rampant release of spiritual energy was followed by a muffled groan that belonged to a man who was knocked into the air by the shock wave. The man was then swallowed by the golden torrent, before he backed out awkwardly, having no intention of provoking Mu Chen anymore. Mu Chen also did not want to be aggressive. Hence, as he caught a glimpse of the man, he, too, started rushing out once again.

In just ten minutes, Mu Chen had already faced nearly ten attacks – of course, they were all random, and none of them was made intentionally against him. People entering this place had no allies, while the more enemies they could kill, the more opportunity they would get.

Mu Chen looked up, as he could see that about ten figures were at the forefront of everyone in the golden torrent. Those were the "the first echelon" in the match, each of whom were one of the strongest

competitors, with enormous power.

Mu Chen did not squeeze himself into the first echelon, because he knew that showing all his strengths at this moment would not be the wise thing to do. Also, as Tang Bing had reminded him earlier, Lord Blood Hawk had already sent someone to target him. Loss, or even death, was right ahead, unless he remained cautious.

Zip!

While Mu Chen was sunken in his thoughts, two light shadows clashed with each other, not far from where he was staying. One of them sent out a slap that tore the golden torrents, then rapidly hit the other's chest.

Puff.

Blood was spat out of the mouth of the man being hit, as his body was knocked backwards into the air. The other man, who won the fight, was not following up – he glanced at the surroundings and discovered Mu Chen nearby.

The two stared at each other, both of their bodies taut with vigilance. Mu Chen calmly observed this man. Despite his rather ordinary appearance, he had a tall and strong body that made him look like an iron tower. His eyes, however, were full of caution. This man had unusual strength.

Mu Chen was a little amazed, because he felt a rare, strong fluctuation of spiritual energy on the man's body, and more surprisingly, the man did not seem to be anyone from the Nine Lords' side. Otherwise, he would have had to be from the affiliated powers in the Daluo Territory.

The tall man glanced at Mu Chen, who looked young, but made him smell a great danger, as clearly this young person, who was seemingly gentle and calm, harbored a beast hidden inside him. Thus, he posed a very big threat.

As a result, the man nodded to Mu Chen in a friendly way and left for another direction. He had made it obvious, wordlessly getting his message across: let's just go about our own businesses.

After watching the man disappear, Mu Chen slowed his pace. Inside his

eyes, there was a drastic change of expression, because he now felt four insidious fluctuations of power approaching him speedily.

Those sent by Lord Blood Hawk had finally come to kill him.

Chapter 684: Battling the Four Sovereigns

The golden flood poured down from the majestic peak of the mountain, and the whole world seemed to become brilliant with golden hues. The spiritual energy between heaven and earth fluctuated restlessly.

In the vast open space of the forest, Mu Chen stopped in his tracks, his young face calm and serene with a chilling glint in his dark eyes.

He slowly turned his head and surveyed his surroundings as golden light permeated the area, obstructing his line of sight. However, he could clearly sense the eerie motions of four entities full of murderous intent.

"Since all of you are here, get out and show yourselves. Why hide like rodents?" Mu Chen smirked coldly as he scoffed in disdain, his voice ringing through the forest.

"Since it's already four versus one, don't tell me you still want to preserve face?" As Mu Chen's voice rang out, the forest remained silent. However, this silence only lasted for a few moments and then the slight rustle of footsteps was heard. Four figures stepped out from within the gold light and stood at a near distance from Mu Chen.

The four wore robes of different colors, and the emblem on their sleeves was an indicator that they hailed from different forces. However, it was clear that these forces had links to the Blood Hawk Palace.

The four people just stood there in silence, but powerful waves of spiritual energy emanated from them. Even the earth under their feet collapsed slightly. Their cold gazes locked onto Mu Chen like those of venomous snakes.

Mu Chen also focused his gaze on the four with his dark eyes, and judging from the oppressive spiritual energy from them, the four were at the level of First Grade Sovereigns and had reached their maximum potential. In terms of ability, they were comparable to that of the various Commanders in Daluo Territory.

Lord Blood Hawk had indeed expended a lot of thought and effort to deal

with him.

Looks like it would not be a smooth journey to reach the Peak this time.

Just as Mu Chen was stopped under the Peak of the Golden Pool, countless gazes suddenly shifted to the light glass of spiritual energy where he was, apparently aware of the situation.

As they saw the four men in front of Mu Chen, shock flitted across their gazes as murmurs and whispers sounded among the crowd.

"Those four fellows... seem to be the leaders of Beimang's Four Valleys. Judging from the scene, it looks like they are going to deal with the new Commander of Nine Nether Palace..."

"Heh, Beimang's Four Valleys seem to be on good terms with Blood Hawk Palace. Looks like Lord Blood Hawk has made it clear that he's going to suppress Nine Nether Palace, not even giving them a chance this time."

"Exactly. These four leaders have been First Grade Sovereigns for many years, even compared to the Commanders in our Daluo Territory, they are considered one of the best. Now that the four have made an alliance, I'm afraid that things are not looking good for this Mu Chen."

"..."

As murmurs sounded within heaven and earth, there were many glances cast towards the direction of Nine Nether Palace, some of them sympathetic and regretful, while some were delighted at their misfortune.

Seeing the crowd's glances, Nine Nether remained expressionless, but her eyes stared at the light glass of spiritual energy, and a cold glint flashed within the depths of her eyes.

Beside her, Tang Rou's face was full of anxiety, and even Tang Bing bit her lips, sweat pooling in her palms as she understood the precarious situation that Mu Chen was currently in.

"It's the leaders of Beimang's Four Valleys, those four b*st*rds!"

"I remember them." Nine Nether's eyes were hooded, and her was tone nonchalant, but Tang Bing could sense subtle rage and murderous intent from her. Clearly, Lord Nine Nether already bore a grudge against Beimang's Four Valleys.

Tang Bing nodded in assent. If they had the opportunity in the future, the first they would not let off would be Beimang's Four Valleys.

"Sister Nine Nether, will Mu Chen be alright?" Tang Rou couldn't help but to ask worriedly. Although she knew that Mu Chen was not weak, there were four opponents after all, and each of them was no slouch.

Nine Nether gazed towards the light glass of spiritual energy. Upon seeing the young man's calm expression and composed demeanor, Nine Nether smiled. Mu Chen now was no longer the inexperienced brat that she could frighten easily in the past...

"He will win."

Nine Nether sat upon the throne, crossing her long and slender legs gracefully. She turned her head slightly, her elbows resting against the armrest as her hand supported her face. Her hair was loosely tied up, and strands cascaded down casually. Confidence surged in her wild and untamed gaze.

Tang Bing and Tang Rou looked at each other, and although they were unsure why Nine Nether had so much confidence in Mu Chen, due to her trust, their anxious and tense emotions also began to relax.

...

In the open space of the forest, the five figures had clearly become the focus of countless people, but they did not pay attention to that as subtle murderous intent permeated the atmosphere.

The four figures were rather thin, and this was especially true of the man standing in the center among them. He looked as gaunt as a skeleton. His sunken eyes glinted eerily and were as unsettling as a venomous serpent.

"You must be Mu Chen..."

He stared at Mu Chen, his gaunt features twisting into a grimace as he let out a ferocious smile and stated hoarsely, "You will have to stop here, as someone doesn't want you to go up."

Beside him, a man dressed in black also stared coldly at Mu Chen.

"We don't want to kill you, as that would undoubtedly offend Nine Nether Palace. However... if you choose to be stubborn, then the Peak of the Golden Pool will be a good grave for you, too."

Mu Chen glanced at the four men before him, his eyes looking towards the ground.

"If the four of you don't leave now, I'm afraid you no longer will be able to leave."

His calm voice rang throughout the forest, stunning the four men as unsettling smiles appeared on their faces, the malicious glint in their eyes growing.

"What an interesting fellow..."

"Let's kill him then?"

"Mmhmm..."

The cruel smirks on the four men's faces grew, and in the next instant, they vanished from where they had previously stood.

Whoosh!

Just as they disappeared, the space around Mu Chen had waves of fluctuations. As four specters emerged, four gaunt God of Death's palms carrying the aura of death surged as fast as lightning towards Mu Chen's vital parts.

The four of them had no intention of fighting one on one with Mu Chen. They dealt brutal blows together, clearly intending to get rid of Mu Chen as quickly as possible.

Crash!

The blows of the four landed on Mu Chen's body like booming thunder, but their withered faces changed slightly as the aura of their blows made contact.

The aura of their blows passed directly through Mu Chen's silhouette.

"Afterimage?"

The four Sovereigns' eyes narrowed. Mu Chen's speed was actually faster than theirs?!

Boom!

A low rumbling of thunder roared suddenly as thunderbolts swooped past the four's eyes. Thunder and lightning burst out, and four massive palms transformed from thunderbolts landed on the vital areas of the four's backs.

This counterattack was extremely strange, causing even the four experienced Sovereigns' faces to become somber. They waved the sleeves of their robes hurriedly as their majestic spiritual energy formed a Spiritual Energy Screen behind them as a form of defense.

Boom!

The huge palms of thunderbolts broke through the Spiritual Energy Screens with one blow, but in this moment of defense, the four figures moved and dodged the brutal attack agilely.

The four men retreated swiftly as their gaunt faces became increasingly solemn, and murderous intent grew in their eyes.

"You do have fast reactions there."

Thunderbolts condensed in mid-air as they coalesced into Mu Chen's figure. He was shining resplendently, his body entirely silver, clearly a result of impelling the Thunder God Physique to its maximum potential. He glanced at the four men and smiled in astonishment.

After activating the Thunder God Physique, his speed had reached a terrifyingly fast stage, but the four men could still dodge his attacks, proving that their combat instincts were not weak.

The four Sovereigns stared at Mu Chen with chilling gazes. As they took a deep breath, their hands suddenly clasped together, and then a sharp spiritual energy storm rampaged that was clearly visible even to the naked eye.

Circles of spiritual energy raged in a frenzy as four massive shadows formed swiftly around the four men.

"Withered Wood Celestial Body!"

Accompanying the booming, cold voices and the shadows around the four men converged, transforming into four identical massive shadows. The Sovereign Celestial Body that the four men had cultivated came from the same origin.

The four Sovereign Celestial Bodies towered in the heavens and earth like giants, and were grayish-black in color. From afar, it looked as though they were withered wood that stood tall, and an aura of death emanated from them.

As the four Sovereign Celestial Bodies breathed, their spiritual energy transformed into hurricanes that raged and howled in the heavens and earth. Its terrifying aura caused the top powers on the entire Peak of the Golden Pool to look on solemnly with astonishment.

"Since you refuse to take the easy way out, hand over your life then!"

The four Sovereign Celestial Bodies glared at Mu Chen with murderous rage, and their eerily chilling voices thundered within the heavens and earth as their massive palms dealt direct blows, covering the sun and enveloping the mountain and forest.

Boom!

The earth began to collapse even before the blows of the massive palms landed.

Although the Withering Wood Celestial Body was not within the ranks of the 99 Sovereign Celestial Bodies, four of them appearing at the same time still possessed immense power.

A terrifyingly oppressive spiritual energy descended from the sky as Mu Chen's body was pushed down towards the ground. He lifted his head, and the enveloping grayish-black massive palms reflected in his dark eyes as a cold smirk appeared on his face.

Spinning one hand and clenching the other, the space behind Mu Chen began to twist and distort as the Sovereign Sea emerged with a roar. Suddenly, the temperature within the heavens and the earth increased tremendously as different colors flashed in his eyes.

"I'm afraid people like you are unworthy to take my life!"

The young man stood as straight as a spear, his cold voice thundering through the heavens.

Chapter 685: Brutal Thunderbolt Means

Boom!

The space behind Mu Chen twisted violently, and within this distorted space, the vast Sovereign Sea roared. Its majestic spiritual energy then surged out, resisting the oppressive pressure entirely.

Mu Chen lifted his head, the light of the four massive palms reflecting in his eyes. His hands conjured up seals, a brilliant spiritual light surged out within his body, and in that beam of light, the roar of a dragon thundered.

Crash!

The four massive palms crashed down, as swift as lightning, heading towards where Mu Chen was standing. The earth trembled, before huge cracks spread extensively through the ground, causing the land to collapse.

Countless gazes focused on the light glass of spiritual energy, as they thought: The new Commander of Nine Nether Palace should be done for at this point! The alliance of four First Grade Sovereigns at their most powerful was, after all, not to be underestimated.

Nine Nether's expression remained calm, while Tang Bing and Tang Rou paled. Four Sovereign celestial bodies stood tall in the heavens and earth, as they stared at the collapsed ground. However, their expressions changed when they did not see any sign of Mu Chen.

"Be careful!" The four shouted.

Roar!

However, just as they shouted, the space behind them was torn apart suddenly, as the silhouette of a dragon, which had been formed from Buddha's light, surged out from within the crack of the space. The expressions of the four Sovereigns twisted, as terror flashed in their eyes.

With the ability of First Grade Sovereign, how was it possible for Mu Chen to maneuver spatial cracks? That was only a feat that people, who

had surpassed Fifth Grade Sovereigns, were capable of.

However, Mu Chen clearly did not intend to provide an explanation for their queries. The dragon surged out of the spatial cracks, transforming into a slender figure, as light shimmered throughout the entire space. He conjured up seals with a cold expression, as the roars of a dragon and elephant thundered within the Sovereign Sea.

Boom!

Two beams of boundless light, one purple and one black, surged out from the Sovereign Sea. They were as swift as thunderbolts, and transformed into a massive violet dragon and black elephant.

Mu Chen clasped his hands together, as the purple flame surrounding the violet dragon and the black thunder surrounding the thunder elephant clashed together violently. A terrifying spiritual energy burst out, causing the four Sovereign celestial bodies to dissipate.

Whoosh!

Mu Chen's hands trembled slightly, his expression somber. The seals were changing at a dizzying speed. Within the frenzy of spiritual energy, a Dragon Elephant Disc of approximately a few feet condensed and appeared.

The disc was purple and black, and it had patterns of dragons and elephants standing majestically upon it. Then, an indescribable wave of terrible spiritual energy emanated, causing the space to burst into tiny cracks.

"Kill him!"

The four leaders of Beimang realized the horrifying power that the Dragon Elephant Disc possessed, and their hearts sunk in terror as they shouted.

"Withered Wood Fingers!"

The four roared simultaneously, as immense spiritual energy raged, transforming into four energy light beams that resembled withered wood.

The spiritual energy surged towards Mu Chen with a speed as swift as thunderbolts.

As Mu Chen lifted his glance, a cold flint flashed in his dark eyes, and the changing seals froze.

"Dragon Elephant Disc!"

His slender finger pointed in mid-air, as the Dragon Elephant Disc transformed and soared out as a beam of light. Wherever the disc skimmed through, a long trace appeared, as the space was torn. Attacks from both parties surged through the horizon and collided together violently, as the crowd watched on.

Boom!

A storm of spiritual energy raged fiercely, all of which could been visibly seen. As the forest below was destroyed instantly, wild and unparalleled spiritual energies eroded each other continuously.

"That Mu Chen actually blocked the attacks from the four Sovereigns?" Some gasped in shock, because where the frenzy of spiritual energy had swept, the purple and black beam of light did not show signs of weakening.

"This Mu Chen does have powerful means!"

"To become the new Commander of Nine Nether Palace, he's not simple indeed."

"..."

"Mu Chen blocked it!" Surprise surged in Tang Bing's and Tang Rou's gazes.

"Both of you have been underestimating Mu Chen." Nine Nether smiled, as she had experienced the power of the Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art first-hand, and if the four fellows before her thought that this could withstand Mu Chen's attacks, they were simply too naive.

Crash!

Just as this thought crossed Nine Nether's heart, blinding purple and black light burst out in the sky, as purple flames and black thunder permeated the places of impact, causing the four huge fingers that resembled withered wood to explode and disintegrate into smithereens. All of this came about as effortless as breaking a dead branch from a tree, causing many people's eyes to widen in shock.

"Retreat!" Terror surged in the eyes of the four leaders of Beimang, as they shouted hurriedly.

The four Sovereign celestial bodies retreated, a thousand feet in distance flashing by with the movement of their feet.

Mu Chen stared at the four hastily retreating figures, a cold smirk appearing on his face. If the power of the Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art was limited to this, it would be undeserving of the rank of Perfect Divine Art.

Whoosh!

With a flick of his fingers, the rampaging purple flames and black thunder condensed and converged, entwining with each other like two beams of light. Then, with a whoosh, they disappeared within heaven and earth. In an instant, it appeared before the Sovereign, who was the gauntest, and his face twisted in terror, as he realized he had become Mu Chen's target.

Rather than injuring ten fingers, completely breaking one finger would deal more damage. Although Mu Chen' s Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art was immensely powerful, his cultivation was, after all, still shallow, so it was impossible to defeat all four Sovereigns easily, but it was sufficient to defeat one.

"Technique of Withered Wood!"

The gaunt Sovereign roared, as withered patterns spread on the Sovereign celestial body. Looking from afar, it looked as if it was a withered wood standing tall within heaven and earth.

Boom!

However, Mu Chen paid no attention to that, as the purple flames and black thunder light beams transformed into a violet dragon and thunder elephant, colliding on the massive Sovereign celestial body violently, with a brutal manner that threatened utter annihilation.

Crash!

In the moment of impact, a terrifying shockwave raged, like a volcanic eruption. Then, the Withered Wood Sovereign Celestial Body disintegrated and exploded. A floundering figure shot out, blood gushing as he fell harshly, the collision causing a huge deep pit in the ground. After the impact, his breaths were weak, as he was clearly severely injured, to the brink of death.

Gasp.

The crowd gasped, as no one had imagined that, within moments, Mu Chen would have defeated a Sovereign, who could employ a Sovereign celestial body.

"Big Brother Withered!"

The remaining three Sovereigns had shocked expressions, before their eyes flashed with growing murderous intent, and they stared at Mu Chen, as if they wanted to devour him.

"We are going to tear you apart!"

The three men roared, as massive Sovereign celestial bodies surged towards Mu Chen, the spiritual energy within heaven and earth shaking and rampaging with their fists.

"Activate!"

Mu Chen's dark eyes were still cold, as he saw the three men attacking again. Lifting his hands, he watched as the forest below him crumbled, and a Spiritual Array formed by three black lotuses appeared.

"Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array!"

Mu Chen's seals changed, as the three black lotuses soared and merged together in a row, bombarding the Sovereign celestial body violently.

Boom!

A beam of black light spread like ink drops, and the Sovereign celestial body that resembled a withered wood turned black, like cold stone, then exploded, disintegrating with cracks.

Spurt.

As the Sovereign celestial body was destroyed, the Sovereign fell, blood spurting out, revealing the severity of the injury. The two Sovereign celestial bodies that had rushed out stopped abruptly, fear surging in their eyes. They could not imagine how they had suffered such heavy casualties in just mere minutes.

Of course, not only did they not comprehend this, but even the crowd, who had been watching the battle, were dumbfounded, and they could only stare in shock. Mu Chen's strength seemed to be, at best, equivalent to those of the four leaders. However, why was his combat power so terrifying, that he could annihilate two people within mere moments in two rounds?!

In the sky, the two Sovereigns did not dare approach, as they did not know what other tricks the young man had hidden up his sleeve. If history repeated itself, the two men, who had gone before, would have acted as their warnings.

"Retreat!"

Their gazes flickered, and they roared. The two moves, which Mu Chen had used to easily defeat the Sovereigns earlier, were too great a deterrent, and they were thoroughly horrified. The two Sovereign celestial bodies retreated, losing their desire to battle entirely.

"I'm afraid it's too late to leave now!"

Upon seeing the two retreating figures, Mu Chen scoffed coldly. Since he had made his move, he would not show mercy. Moreover, this was not Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, so being too soft and indecisive was

an utterly foolish thought.

He conjured seals once again, as a beam of light surged out from his crown violently, and a Pagoda roared and expanded, trapping and suppressing the third Sovereign celestial body within. Atop the Pagoda, a golden dragon roared, as golden flames surged. Within a few moments, the third Sovereign celestial body was burned to nothing, and a charred figure fell helplessly, with little trace of life. Another Sovereign had been defeated!

The last leader was now scared out of his wits, as he scrambled to escape desperately. From a distance, it seemed as if a giant had rushed out to the peak of the Golden Pool, as he dared not stay at all.

Mu Chen looked at the desperately escaping figure, and did not pursue him, but rather just heaved a sigh of relief. Continuously displaying three aces up his sleeve had exhausted him, and he could barely withstand it, as most of the spiritual energy in his Sovereign Sea had been expended.

However, he was immensely satisfied that he could defeat three First Grade Sovereigns with such a swift speed. His figure descended slowly from mid-air, his dark eyes sweeping across some areas, as the figures retreated hastily, not daring to show any hostile intent. Mu Chen ignored them, as he flew towards the peak of the Golden Pool, thinking that no one would dare mess with him now.

At the bottom of the Golden Pool Peak, countless people gazed at the travelling figure in the light glass of spiritual energy. The commotion within heaven and earth quieted into silence, and shock was etched on everyone's faces. They had now realized the terrifying tricks up Nine Nether Palace's new Commander's sleeve, as

one versus four, with the one killing the three, was certainly a result to be feared.

In the sky, the Three Kings gazed at the young man's silhouette in the Spiritual Energy Screen, astonishment flashing in their eyes. Even the unfathomable Sleeping King had opened his eyes.

This young man... was not at all simple.

Chapter 686: Daluo Golden Platform

"Mu Chen... won!"

Atop the stone platform where Nine Nether Palace was, the two sisters Tang Bing and Tang Rou stared at the Spiritual Energy Screen in a daze as the young man's silhouette continued on his way. They then regained their senses, surprise surging in the eyes, as Tang Rou cheered gleefully. Even Tang Bing, who was the more stoic of the two, smiled softly.

The capability Mu Chen exhibited had truly surprised everyone.

The four leaders of Mangshan Mountain were rather well-known in the Daluo Territory and had good capabilities. An alliance between the four could resist even a Second Grade Sovereign, but they had suffered such a humiliating defeat at the hands of Mu Chen.

The young man's performance had everyone looking askance in fear and awe.

Among the Nine Nether Troop, Qiu Shan and the others also watched with astonishment as their respect for Mu Chen grew. No matter where it was, strength always reigned. If the Nine Nether Troop had a Commander like him, it might not be a bad thing.

"The battle of ascending the mountain has just begun. If he fails to obtain a slot in the end, it doesn't matter how stellar his performance was." Nine Nether remained the calmest of the three as she smiled at the elated sisters.

"Even if he fails, Mu Chen is young, after all. He just arrived in the Daluo Territory, so even if he fails, it's justifiable. What's more, he would easily be victorious next time if he fails this time." Tang Rou argued and defended Mu Chen, as he had already done a good job.

Tang Bing, however, did not say anything as she stood beside them. Compared to Tang Rou, she was the more mature one, and although she knew that Mu Chen did perform well, sometimes reality was cruel. No matter how outstanding you were, only people standing at the zenith

would receive the glory.

People who failed and end up as others' stepping stones would just be neglected and forgotten.

If Mu Chen failed to obtain a slot, perhaps the shock that he had caused would vanish instantly. At most, people would feel regretful for him and then promptly forget him, as he would just be considered a failure by then.

Nine Nether glanced at the two girls who had reduced their cheering, her red lips curling. She then gazed at the Spiritual Energy Screen and murmured, "However... Mu Chen won't lose that easily..."

As cheers erupted in the arena where Nine Nether Palace was, silence loomed in Blood Hawk Palace where the atmosphere was tense and unnerving. Many strong men stared at each other at a loss for what to do as they furtively glanced at the throne where Lord Blood Hawk sat without expression. They did not dare to disturb him, for they could sense the burning rage in his heart.

Crack.

The armrest on his throne Lord Blood Hawk had been gripping now had small cracks running through it. His chest heaved in agitation as he tried to suppress his fury.

"Four imbeciles indeed..." he murmured, a chilling glint flashing in his eyes as he stared at the Spiritual Energy Screen. He leaned on his throne with a nonchalant expression on his face.

The fact that Mu Chen could break through the barricade of the four Mangshan Mountain Sovereigns did surprise him, but it didn't matter as long as Mu Chen failed to obtain the slot. Otherwise, all his effort would be for naught.

The battle of the Golden Pool had only just begun.

...

On the majestic peak of the Golden Pool, golden torrents poured down. The magnificent sight amazed yet also terrified many. Fortunately, it was

not targeted at a specific person. If that had been the case, even the Nine Lords would find it hard to ascend to the peak, let alone First and Second Grade Sovereigns.

In the sea of forests that glimmered with the golden light of the Buddha, two figures stood tall, glancing towards the direction where Mu Chen and the four leaders of Mangshan Mountain had had a fierce battle.

"That Mu Chen actually defeated the four Sovereigns of Mangshan Mountain?" Wu Tian stared into the distance. They had witnessed the battle, and Mu Chen's strategies were indeed powerful. It was no wonder he could defeat the First Grade Sovereigns easily.

Wu Tian's eyebrows were knitted together, but he then smiled and said, "Things have become interesting then."

He was astonished that Mu Chen could defeat the four First Grade Sovereigns, but that was about it. With his ability now, it was not difficult to achieve because the four Mangshan Sovereigns were not a threat.

The differences between the different Sovereign ranks could not be easily compensated by quantity.

"Looks like the heavens are giving me a chance," Cao Feng narrowed his eyes and smiled faintly.

"Heh heh, we can let others witness the vast difference between the previous and current Commanders of the Nine Nether Troop." Wu Tian smiled as he continued, "However, we can ignore him for the time being. Let's ascend to the peak first. I'll see if we can rise in position this time."

He turned to look at the depths of the peak of the Golden Pool and licked his lips, resembling a starving wolf who had his eyes targeted on a goal and would not rest until he got it.

"Oh?"

Cao Feng raised a brow. "You intend to target Zhou Yue?"

Wu Tian was ranked third among the Four Great Commanders, and if he defeated Zhou Yue, he would be able to rise a rank. However, Zhou Yue

was a great Commander under Lord Mountain Cracker, and had had illustrious battle achievements over the years. He was considered an influential figure in the Daluo Territory and was a formidable opponent.

Although Cao Feng's ability had improved by leaps and bounds due to leaning on the resources of Blood Hawk Palace, he was aware that in this short period of time, it was difficult for him to shake up the positions of the Four Great Commanders. However, if it was Wu Tian, he might have the ability to do so...

"I'm pissed off at this third position."

Wu Tian grinned, revealing his white teeth. With a flourish of his sleeve, he said nothing more and surged forward like a majestic eagle, tearing the golden torrents apart and flying as swift as lightning towards the peak of the mountain.

Upon seeing this, Cao Feng followed closely, and they saw some strong men along the way. The latter, however, did not dare to target them, as both were members of the Four Great Commanders, and that would be akin to courting death.

Just as Wu Tian and Cao Feng were about to continue ascending the mountain, another two figures stood in the deeper parts of the mountain. They were the other two of the Four Great Commanders: Xu Qing, who was ranked first, and Zhou Yue, who was ranked second.

They glanced at the place where Mu Chen had battled previously, surprise flashing in their eyes. However, they didn't comment on it, though interest colored their features. It looked like the battle of the Daluo Golden Pool would see some unexpected odds...

...

Just as everyone was still recovering from their shock at Mu Chen's battle, Mu Chen, as the key character, was heading to the peak at top speed.

Roar!

In the majestic golden torrents, a dragon's roar could be heard as the

silhouette of a dragon soared through the space. It circled in the golden torrents, its speed surpassing that of some of the top powers ahead.

The expressions of those top powers changed as they hesitated, but they did not take action, as they had no confidence in besting someone who had defeated four Sovereigns from the Mangshan Mountains.

This silhouette of the dragon was of course transformed from Mu Chen. He had obtained the Physical Divine Art, Dragon Soaring Art from the Sovereign White Dragon. This Divine Art had helped Mu Chen a lot in the past, but as his abilities increased, the effect of the Dragon Soaring Art weakened until he successfully advanced into the Sovereign-stage...

After advancing into the Sovereign-stage, Mu Chen could finally maximize the highest potential of the Dragon Soaring Art, which was Dragon Soaring. At this stage, he could transform into a dragon's silhouette and lend its divine strength to tear apart space in short distances. He could evade the all-enveloping barricade of the four Sovereigns of Mangshan Mountain exactly because of this power of the Dragon Soaring Art.

Mu Chen now was confident that if he activated the maximum potential of the Dragon Soaring Art, even a Second Grade Sovereign would be unable to catch up to him.

It was this speed which allowed him to surpass the second echelon formation, and catch up with the first echelon formation.

After experiencing the previous battle, he no longer had to conceal his abilities, and everyone would have to consider carefully before targeting him after his display of power.

Whoosh!

The space distorted wherever the dragon's silhouette passed through as it appeared a thousand feet away in a flash. Within the dragon's silhouette, Mu Chen's swept around his surroundings as he neared the peak of the Golden Pool.

He could sense that this arena had 20 or more spiritual energy fluctuations in total, and each of them was immensely powerful in comparison to the Sovereigns he had met before.

People who could enter the first echelon formation were clearly the aces among all the participants.

Mu Chen lifted his head and glanced into the distance as a platform shimmered with gold light. Gold light circulated atop the platform as if crafted from gold. He knew that that was the Daluo Golden Platform, which was the only pathway to the Daluo Golden Pool.

One was only qualified to ascend to the peak by passing through the platform.

With a tip of his foot, the silhouette of the dragon surged forward, but just as he soared a hundred feet, he stopped abruptly as he transformed into his human form while the form of a dragon dissipated.

Mu Chen stood silently in the air as he narrowed his eyes and surveyed his surroundings. Many figures separated by a distance from each other also stood silently in this vast sea of forests.

These figures had eyes as sharp as eagles and peregrines, and powerful waves of spiritual energy circled them like a prelude to howling winds.

These characters were all qualified to reach the Daluo Golden Platform, however, there were not many positions there. Thus, if one wanted to reach the platform, they would have to depend on absolute power to get there.

Mu Chen gazed at the billowing robes and sharp eyes. As he licked his lips, a fiery combat instinct and desire blazed in his dark eyes.

This is the last step. No one can stop me!

Chapter 687: Courageous Spirit

In the sea of forest, bathed in golden light, Mu Chen stood in mid-air, his dark eyes looking forward with a sharp gaze, as seven figures could be seen amid the forest.

These seven figures were standing around, about a thousand feet apart, as majestic spiritual energy surged around them, drawing howling winds. They stared at each other with dread and guarded expressions. They were clear that, if they wanted to ascend to the Daluo Golden Platform, they would have to pose as each other's greatest obstacles.

These seven figures were all aces, who hailed from various forces in the Daluo Territory, and any one of them would not be weaker than the four leaders of Mangshan Mountain. Otherwise, they would not be able to lead the first echelon formation among the other competitors. Also, it was precisely because of their strong capabilities, that the battle would culminate in an inevitable fierce struggle between evenly-matched opponents.

No matter who wished to ascend to the Daluo Golden Platform from this direction, they would draw the enmity and attacks of these seven figures. Hence, when Mu Chen had appeared, seven glances were immediately drawn towards his, before they turned solemn, as they had recognized Mu Chen as the opponent who had exchanged blows with the four leaders of Mangshan Mountain, due to the aftermath of the fierce battle. The combat strength that Mu Chen had displayed had shocked them all.

The seven figures frowned, as they had not thought that Mu Chen would come from their direction, and they knew then that they had gained a fearsome opponent. After witnessing Mu Chen's previous battle, they all understood that, if they fought him one on one, none of them would be Mu Chen's match.

The seven figures glanced at each other knowingly, as their gazes flickered, reaching a common understanding. Although this Mu Chen was formidable, if he wanted to get through them, they would have to form an

alliance to overwhelm him and get him to understand that, no matter how powerful he was, he had to adhere to the rules in their territory.

Mu Chen observed their gazes, his expression remaining calm, as he knew exactly what these seven figures were planning. However, he did not have any intention to retreat. Instead, he took a deep breath, the resolve in his dark eyes turning sharp.

So what if seven Sovereigns were out to stop him? Even a powerful Sovereign like Luo Tianshen failed to stop his tracks, let alone these characters before him? Although the path in front of him was full of prickly thorns, even if he had to bleed, he would break through fearlessly!

Crash!

Mu Chen stepped out abruptly, and as the space behind him distorted, the Sovereign Sea appeared faintly. Then, as if purple flames rose, spiritual energy fluctuations started emanating from where his body acted as the core. The spiritual energy then surged and swept across the entire space, causing the sea of forest below them to crumble and collapse.

Whoosh!

Mu Chen stepped heavily, as his figure transformed into a stream of light, surging forward to the Daluo Golden Platform.

"Stop right there!"

The seven Sovereigns roared in anger when they saw how Mu Chen ignored them blatantly, as he headed straight toward the Daluo Golden Platform.

This Mu Chen was too arrogant, does he see them as nothing?

Fury boiled in the seven's eyes, as they struck at the same time, causing a fierce ribbon of spiritual energy to sweep across the space. It appeared as if a raging dragon that was surging towards Mu Chen with a speed as swift as lightning.

In the sky, Mu Chen's silhouette halted abruptly. He turned to glance at the ribbon of spiritual energy, a cold glint surging in his eyes. He paused in

his tracks, as an obsidian beam of light soared into the sky from his crown, an ominous aura erupting from it.

Within the pillar of light, the Great Meru Demonic Pillar emerged, then expanded profusely to a few hundred feet tall, as if it was a massive pillar that was reaching to the heavens. Mu Chen crossed his arms lightly in front of his chest. As he dealt a brutal blow with the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, the space in front of him shattered, and a pervasive demonic aura caused the heavens and the earth to be shrouded in dullness.

Boom!

As the Great Meru Demonic Pillar landed heavily, it shattered the seven ribbons of spiritual energy. As they erupted, they headed straight towards the three Sovereigns, who were still right in front, with a dizzying momentum.

The Great Meru Demonic Pillar surged forward fiercely with a looming shadow and demonic aura, causing the sea of forests below to be torn apart instantaneously. Meanwhile, the three Sovereigns, who were tangled in the attack, twisted their expressions in shock, clearly aware of how terrifying Mu Chen was.

Boom!

Three Sovereign celestial bodies appeared, surrounding their bodies, their massive sizes colliding with the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. The collision was so devastating, it unleashed a storm that destroyed the sea of forests within a thousand feet radius.

The three Sovereign celestial bodies retreated quickly, their massive feet causing the ground to shake and develop deep pits. As they regained their stability, terror surged in their eyes.

They now understood the fear that the four leaders of Mangshan Mountain had felt. This young man before them was bound to deal fatal blows, without mercy, if he decided to get serious.

They lifted their heads to see Mu Chen hovering in mid-air, the Great Meru Demonic Pillar emanating an ominous demonic aura behind him, as

if it was a Primordial Demonic God. Flames burned in the slender young man's dark eyes, as his handsome face remained expressionless, but his gaze caused their hearts to tremble in trepidation.

His was a gaze of pure determination that nothing could waver. To continue on his journey, the young man was willing to pay the price of even his life, and any opponent that stood in his way would be burned to ashes below his feet.

Boom!

Taking advantage of the moments of their shock, Mu Chen moved swiftly and appeared atop of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, just as the pillar transformed into a beam of lurid light and surged out. Although his speed was extremely fast, if the seven Sovereigns were out to stop him, they could have done so easily.

However, no one dared to take action, for they could sense the malicious aura from Mu Chen that they dreaded, and the latter's determined gaze let them understand that, once they took action, the young man would begin a battle that would only stop when one party was dead.

They had expended much effort to reach this phase of cultivation, and thus valued their lives highly. Although a slot to use the Daluo Golden Pool was highly valuable, it was insignificant compared to one's life.

Furthermore, even if they had ascended to the Daluo Golden Platform, they would have to face the powerful Four Great Commanders. Thus, it would be unwise to battle with such a persistent and fierce character now.

The gazes of the seven figures flickered, as hesitation and conflict surfaced in their eyes. Mu Chen, however, ignored them.

As he stood atop the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, the winds howled, causing his robes to billow. Flames seemed to be surging within the young man's gaze.

Below the peak of the Golden Pool, many people watched the scene unfold with bated breaths, as Mu Chen rushing into the circle of seven Sovereigns was a shocking visual.

Tang Bing and Tang Rou gripped their hands together tightly, as their hearts jumped to their throats. However, while they felt extremely anxious, they also felt that Mu Chen in this current stage was so outstanding, that they could barely shift their gazes away. That young man might have been younger than them, but his courageous spirit easily crushed Sovereigns of the same grade.

Under countless gazes, Mu Chen barged into the circle of seven Sovereigns, but he did not pause at all. His expression remained calm, as he activated the Great Meru Demonic Pillar to surge forward, brushing past the seven Sovereigns.

Even till the end, the seven Sovereigns did not take action. And, when Mu Chen passed by them, they heaved a quiet sigh of relief in their hearts, as the young man's eyes made them understand that, if they had really wanted to take action, even if they could stop Mu Chen today, they would end up paying a heavy price.

They could not imagine why a young man had such a determined and sharp gaze, but many years of cultivation had allowed them to understand: this was a ruthless character, who they could not afford to provoke. Hence, they could only purse their mouths and feel a sense of relief. This young man would achieve extraordinary accomplishments in the future, and they would not be able to stop his footsteps.

Woah.

As Mu Chen passed through the circle of seven Sovereigns, the crowd below the peak of the Golden Pool gasped in shock and bewilderment, as many strong men were astonished and in disbelief. Also, since they were not involved in the situation, they naturally could not understand the actions of the seven Sovereigns.

In the sky, the three Kings gazed at the massive Spiritual Energy Screen. As they glanced at the young man standing atop the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, their expressions flickered.

"This Mu Chen has a promising future,so it looks like a strong character has finally appeared in our Daluo Territory."

The Sleeping King, who had always been watching with bleary eyes, opened his eyes wider, revealing that they were as deep as the dark sky, surging with wisdom. He glanced at the slender figure, then stated airily.

Condor King and Nine Nether were on rather good terms, so he just smiled. Then, the Spiritual Pupil King stated nonchalantly, "There are too many prodigies in this world, and impressive characters are as many as the stars in the sky. At the end of the day, there are too few who truly stand out."

Upon hearing this, the Sleeping King smiled cryptically, as he shut his eyes and reverted back to his laidback demeanor.

Atop the sea of forests, Mu Chen, who had now passed through the seven Sovereigns, waved his sleeve, summoning the Great Meru Demonic Pillar back into his body. He then leapt into the air with a tap of his feet, his figure surging out.

Then, in only a few moments, the resplendent shimmering Daluo Golden Platform appeared before him. He stepped out slowly, his feet landing on it, the sensation causing him to smirk. He had finally reached the Daluo Golden Platform.

Now, as long as he passed through it, he could reach the Daluo Golden Pool.

Chapter 688: Challenging Cao Feng

The shimmering golden platform was the only passageway to the mountain peak. Golden light permeated the atmosphere like a flowing golden liquid. It was extraordinarily dazzling.

Mu Chen stepped onto the golden platform as his gaze swept across his surroundings. The golden platform was about 10,000 feet wide and was very vast. There were only a few figures standing atop this vast golden platform.

To be precise, there were five figures.

Mu Chen had met all five figures. As expected, four of them were the Four Great Commanders of Daluo Territory, and the fifth was a muscular man whom he had seen when he entered the peak of the Golden Pool.

He didn't expect that this man could reach the Daluo Golden Platform.

Just as Mu Chen was appraising the five men on the Daluo Golden Platform, five glances also converged on him. With the exception of Wu Tian and Cao Feng's chilling gazes, the other three were astonished, as they had witnessed how Mu Chen had overcome the circle of seven Sovereigns.

That scene had shocked them, as they understood that Mu Chen didn't rely on merely his capabilities, but on his courageous spirit to stop the seven Sovereigns in their tracks.

In the world, there were many prodigies and even more people who possessed brilliant talent, but those who could become reputable Sovereigns in the end possessed an unwavering determination and an extraordinary spirit.

This spirit could be understood as a kind of fearless courage; that no matter what opponent one was facing, they would not retreat. Even if it were an insurmountable mountain before them, they would charge head-on without a trace of fear.

In moments where chances of survival were extremely slim, as long as

one fought for that sliver of hope for life, one would be able to be reborn.

The composed demeanor Mu Chen exhibited earlier had shocked them, and that shock was stronger than when Mu Chen had defeated the four Sovereigns of Mangshan Mountains.

Thus, even Xu Qing and Zhou Yue, who were ranked first and second respectively among the Four Great Commanders, looked at Mu Chen solemnly, ready to face him squarely.

"Heh heh, how interesting. I didn't think that two dark horses would appear this time. The competition is much stronger than before." Laughter rang out as Wu Tian smiled and appraised Mu Chen and the muscular man with a contemplative and teasing smirk.

Mu Chen's expression remained calm as he slowly stepped forward to the platform's northern corner. The Daluo Golden Platform now had six competitors, including Mu Chen. However, there were only four slots in the Daluo Golden Pool, so two competitors would be eliminated.

To overcome the numerous challenging obstacles to reach the Daluo Golden Platform, standing here were characters considered to be the best of the younger generation in Daluo Territory. If they wanted to defeat two competitors, the difficulty would be even more challenging than in any previous battle.

Mu Chen's gaze changed as his body seemingly relaxed, but the spiritual energy within his body was like a roaring, raging dragon prepared to deal with any attacks with terrifying power.

As Mu Chen remained silent, the five other figures said nothing more, but everyone could feel a tense atmosphere permeating the Golden Platform.

Between the six of them, which two would be eliminated?

Below the peak of the Golden Pool, everyone's gazes were focused on the Daluo Golden Platform as they anxiously looked on. This was the final battle. When the results were out, the four slots of the Daluo Golden Pool would be determined.

Judging from the current situation, Mu Chen and the muscular man were the most likely candidates to be eliminated. Although they were dark horses in comparison to the reputable Four Great Commanders, their foundation was still weaker.

Amid the attention, Wu Tian's gaze shifted like a venomous snake as he stood on the Daluo Golden Platform, glancing between Mu Chen and the muscular man. He smiled saying, "Both of you are newcomers, thus you can choose your own opponent in this final battle. Consider this a privilege given by us seniors. Of course... you can also choose each other to make it easier."

His smile was malicious, as the implication was clear. He wanted to turn Mu Chen and the muscular man against each other, and when one had won, he would vie for the last slot.

Mu Chen remained expressionless and ignored him, while Wu Tian smiled and turned his glance towards the muscular man.

Under Wu Tian's gaze, the muscular man's glance was also changing. Judging from the situation, it was clear Mu Chen was easier to deal with among the five. However, while he seemed coarse and thick in terms of mentality, he was extremely perceptive and had a keen sense that Mu Chen was not a simple character.

It seemed as if a fierce tiger was hidden in the depths of his seemingly polite dark eyes and if unleashed, would cause utter annihilation. Thus, if he had to choose an opponent from the five, he would not choose Mu Chen.

If this person became his enemy, he would have to live his life in fear.

The muscular man's gaze flickered before he took a deep breath and smiled amiably at Mu Chen. He then glanced towards Wu Tian and clasped his fists in a bow saying, "Daluo Territory, Lion Tiger Mountains, Fang Lei, may I ask Commander Wu Tian for this duel?"

As he spoke, Wu Tian's expression darkened, his eyes glaring daggers at the muscular man as he did not expect that this fellow would not only ruin his plans but also provoke him directly.

Now that all Four Great Commanders are present, this fellow chose me instead out of the other three. Does he think that I am the weakest among the Four Great Commanders?

Wu Tian could not bear this provocation. He glared eerily at the muscular man named Fang Lei before smiling to reveal starkly white, beast-like teeth. "Good, excellent. You are very courageous."

Mu Chen was surprised at the muscular man's choice because judging from all the surface aspects, he posed a smaller threat in comparison to one of the Four Great Commanders. However, Fang Lei risked offending Wu Tian and gave up on battling him, which was an astonishing decision.

However, it was this choice that gave Mu Chen a chance, for he could avoid a continuous tag battle that would exhaust his energy.

Thus, he nodded at Fang Lei before slowly stepping out. His eyes flashed with a cold glint as he looked towards the Four Great Commanders. His gaze passed Xu Qing and Zhou Yue before stopping on Wu Tian and Cao Feng, both displaying calm expressions.

"Nine Nether Palace New Commander, Mu Chen. May I know if I can ask Commander Cao Feng for a duel?"

As Mu Chen's nonchalant voice rang out in the Daluo Golden Platform, the air seemed to have become frozen, and the atmosphere instantly became electrifying below the peak of the Golden Pool.

Gasps of astonishment reverberated in the air as countless people were surprised. Their eyes lit up, and their interest was piqued because everyone knew the past relationship between Cao Feng and Nine Nether Palace, and now that Mu Chen was the new Commander of Nine Nether Palace, the old and the new commanders would be clashing, posing a very interesting confrontation.

They wanted to know rather badly if the old Commander, who had betrayed and deserted Nine Nether Palace, was more powerful, or was the new Commander, whom Nine Nether brought back yet again, indeed superior?

Nine Nether had already made a wrong judgment once. Would she make another this time?

Amid the commotion, everyone in the Nine Nether Troop had cold expressions and glared at Cao Feng resentfully. He had betrayed Nine Nether Palace, which was akin to betraying the Nine Nether Troop.

To them, there was nothing more hurtful than their Commander betraying and abandoning them.

Tang Bing and Tang Rou gripped their hands together tightly, anxiety written clearly on their faces. Although they knew that Mu Chen and Cao Fen's confrontation would happen eventually, now that the scene really appeared, they couldn't help but have conflicting emotions in their hearts.

Cao Feng's betrayal was considered a painful part of Nine Nether Palace's history, and they knew that Nine Nether was still hung-up on it. After all, it was hard to forgive and forget the betrayal from someone you trusted.

No one could resolve that knot in her heart except for Mu Chen. He could do it because he was the new Commander of Nine Nether Palace, replacing Cao Feng. Thus, he had to erase all traces that Cao Feng had left behind.

It would not be difficult to do so, as long as he defeated Cao Feng. It would be akin to an official declaration to everyone in Daluo Territory that in the future, Mu Chen was the true Commander of the Nine Nether Troop in Nine Nether Palace.

The people and their reputations from the past would be overshadowed by his brilliance.

A traitor would be forgotten, and after ushering in the right person, Nine Nether Palace would exude her rightful glory.

Of course, the premise for that happening hinged on whether Mu Chen possessed the capability to erase all traces of Cao Feng. Their confrontation would be the moment of truth.

In Daluo Territory, countless people were waiting for this revelation.

Whether Nine Nether Palace could rise in glory was dependent on this battle.

Below the peak of the Golden Pool, countless gasps permeated the air. Cao Feng smiled faintly as he stood on the Daluo Golden Platform. He gazed at Mu Chen, and a cold smirk appeared on his face.

Mu Chen had chosen him to be his opponent; didn't that fulfill his wish?

He would make Nine Nether realize that she could not replace his outstanding abilities with just any person she found.

Cao Feng breathed out a puff of white mist before he stepped out, lifting his palms and bowing slightly to Mu Chen. His gaze was as chilling as daggers, as his laughter rang softly in the Daluo Golden Platform.

"Challenging me? I'll fulfil your wish then, but I hope you have the courage to pay the price..."

Chapter 689: The Duel Between the Old and New Commander

Amid the countless gazes, Cao Feng stepped out gradually, and with every step, the spiritual energy fluctuations emanating from his body increased at an alarming speed. Within a mere three steps, his spiritual energy fluctuations had surpassed that of the maximum potential of a First Grade Sovereign! In fact, the power of his spiritual energy had surpassed any opponent that Mu Chen had met on the peak of the Golden Pool!

As Cao Feng steadied his steps, with a sardonic smirk on his face, his spiritual energy fluctuations had reached that of a Second Grade Sovereign. The overwhelming oppressive energy he was emitting now enveloped the entire Daluo Golden Platform. Cao Feng had actually advanced as a Second Grade Sovereign!

Below the peak of the Golden Pool, countless gasps rang out in the air. No wonder Cao Feng was not fearful of Mu Chen's challenge, for he had reached a breakthrough, advancing him to the rank of Second Grade Sovereign successfully!

Tang Bing and Tang Rou's expressions became somber, as they were clear that the differences between every rank in the Sovereign-stage were significant. Thus, it was not easy to compensate for this difference in ability.

"Sister, Mu Chen won't lose, right?" Tang Rou pulled on Tang Bing's hand and asked quietly. She knew that, if Mu Chen lost this time, Nine Nether Palace's reputation would suffer a disastrous decline, and Lord Blood Hawk would then rake up past matters in an attempt to disband Nine Nether Palace.

Tang Bing hesitated slightly, before gritting her teeth. "Mu Chen is not an idiot, and I believe he had anticipated this to happen. Thus, he wouldn't be so confident, unless he already had methods to counter this."

At this moment, she had no other option but to have faith in Mu Chen.

Upon hearing this, Nine Nether couldn't help but smile, as she said, "Bing'er, you have finally shown some confidence in him."

Tang Bing blushed slightly, as she retorted stubbornly, "I'm just making considerations for Nine Nether Palace. He was so arrogant just now. If he loses, see how I will end him!"

A gentle smile bloomed, replacing Nine Nether's usual cold expression. As she stared at the huge Spiritual Energy Screen, her eyes narrowed at the two figures confronting each other. She then stated softly, "Rest assured... One mere Cao Feng is unable to stop him..."

.....

Cao Feng stood at the center of the Daluo Golden Platform, his gaze looming over Mu Chen. It was the ability of a Second Grade Sovereign that allowed him to have such confidence.

In Blood Hawk Palace, he had always remained low-key, leaving many decisions to be made by Wu Tian, as he had concealed his true capabilities. Other than Lord Blood Hawk, very few people knew that his abilities were barely less than those of Wu Tian.

Furthermore, he was more patient and knew how to bide his time, as compared to Wu Tian. In fact, if it wasn't for Mu Chen, he would have continued to hide his true strength, until he could utterly defeat the three other Commanders, who were currently ranked higher than him.

"Originally, I didn't intend to display my ability..."

A majestic spiritual energy rippled around Cao Feng, causing the space to fluctuate, resulting in a wave of ripples, which were visible to the naked eye. He glanced coldly at Mu Chen. "As the previous Commander of Nine Nether Troop, I believe I need to test if you are qualified enough to become the new Commander."

Mu Chen's brows knit together tightly, as he stared at Cao Feng, before stating slowly, "I hope you never speak this sentence again, as you are not worthy enough to have any relationship with Nine Nether Palace."

He paused for a moment, then continued, "Also, I would like to tell you something... You're an ungrateful and vicious animal. Thus, I want one hand from you to pay the price of the betrayal. Although I think this would dirty my hands, you must be accountable toward the thousands of brothers of the Nine Nether Troop."

Mu Chen's calm voice rang throughout the Daluo Golden Platform, leaving the five men dumbfounded upon hearing it. Even Xu Qing's and Zhou Yue's glances surged with astonishment. They stared at the composed young man with stunned expressions, as it was hard to imagine that such an arrogant threat was issued by such a seemingly gentle and polite young man.

His words had been akin to regarding Cao Feng as a fish on the chopping board, and as one who was on the verge of slaughtering him easily. They wondered if he had forgotten that Cao Feng had already advanced as a Second Grade Sovereign! Even though he had displayed outstanding combat ability, Mu Chen was still in no position to say such arrogant statements in front of a Second Grade Sovereign!

"Heh heh... how interesting." Wu Tian glanced at Mu Chen with an unsettling gaze as he cackled and wondered to himself: Was this new Commander of Nine Nether Palace foolish to such a degree?

Cao Feng stared chillingly at Mu Chen, his calm expression completely wiped off. As the corners of his mouth twitched, his face twisted maliciously.

"Heh heh..."

A chilling laugh emitted from Cao Feng's clenched teeth, as Mu Chen's words had angered him to the point where of incredulity. Over the past years, it was his first time to have met such an insolent fellow.

He had originally intended to humiliate Mu Chen verbally. But, now that the latter had shocked him with such insolent words, it seemed that he did not view him as a threat in the slightest.

"Looks like the new Nine Nether's newly found Commander is truly disappointing," Cao Feng said stiffly.

Mu Chen knit his brows and frowned deeper, staring at Cao Feng, before stating, "Two hands."

"You insolent brat!"

Upon hearing Mu Chen's words, Cao Feng finally lost his calm composure. He began to laugh, his expression twisting into a grotesque grimace. He then surged out violently, as he swore to beat up this brat, to the point of crippling him. Then, he'd see if he still dared to say such foolish words!

Whoosh!

An enraged Cao Feng dealt a blow, its speed appearing in front of Mu Chen, as if it was a specter. Then, without any hesitation, a punch flew out, causing frenzied torrents of spiritual energy to surge out, as if a turbulent sea that was crashing toward Mu Chen.

The power of a Second Grade Sovereign had erupted with one blow of his fist. This blow was sufficient enough to defeat any First Grade Sovereign.

A storm of fists raged with the might of a tumultuous sea, as the golden platform quaked with the impact. Clearly, Cao Feng had not shown any mercy.

The punches expanded swiftly before Mu Chen's dark eyes, but he still showed no signs of retreating. He crossed his arms lightly, his eyes turning crimson red, as a demonic aura permeated the air and swept across the space violently.

Crash!

The Great Meru Demonic Pillar materialized between his arms, as he swung it harshly to block the barrage of punches.

Bong!

The collision caused a low rumble to erupt, as a frenzy of shockwaves

wreaked havoc, causing small cracks to appear on the golden platform. That collision caused even Xu Qing and Zhou Yue to narrow their eyes.

Crash!

In the aftermath, where spiritual energy shockwaves wreaked havoc, two silhouettes fell backwards. The Great Meru Demonic Pillar spun in Mu Chen's hands, before crashing onto the ground heavily. He gripped the Demonic Pillar with one hand, as his body steadied, lifting his head to look at Cao Feng, who now had a gloomy expression.

"I see, that's all there is to a Second Grade Sovereign," Mu Chen stated calmly.

Although his ability was only that of a First Grade Sovereign, Mu Chen's spiritual energy had integrated with that of the Unperishable Flame, so it was naturally stronger than that of Cao Feng's. With the power of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar adding to that, even if it was a direct clash, Mu Chen would not be at much of a disadvantage.

"Aren't you scared that you would be disgraced later, after saying such words?" Cao Feng said scornfully, his gaze growing more chilling, as he clenched his fists.

Majestic spiritual light surged and swept across the space. Then, a crimson red spear appeared in his hand. The spear was blood red, as if it had been through a bloodbath, and it emitted a ghastly aura. At the tip of the spear, a blood red eye of an eagle stood, increasing its unsettling aura.

"That's the Blood Hawk Spear from Blood Hawk Palace, a Middle Grade Divine Artifact and a valuable treasure of Blood Hawk Palace. Lord Blood Hawk is sure generous, to give such a Divine Artifact to Cao Feng." Upon seeing the crimson Blood Hawk Spear, Tang Bing's heart tensed, as she commented.

Worry and anxiety was also written all over Tang Rou's face. With the Blood Hawk Spear in his grasp, Cao Feng's demeanor became more domineering. And, with a jerk of his spear, a sharp cry of an eagle rang out in the sky, immediately followed by a bloody aura ripple, as if it were tearing the sky apart.

Whoosh!

Cao Feng's figure surged out violently, as he transformed into many afterimages, his spear turning into crimson red torrential rain. The crimson rainstorm immediately shrouded Mu Chen, and a murderous intent swept across the entire arena. Mu Chen retreated half a step back, as the Great Meru Demonic Pillar swept out, blocking the spear with its massive size.

Clink! Clink! Clatter! Clatter!

The lightning-fast collision caused sparks to emerge, each clash resulting in terrifying bursts of spiritual energy, as the entire space distorted with the impact. Both parties did not use any defense, but wholly attacked in order to fend off their aggressors' attacks, which was very exhilarating to witness.

Countless people in the crowd widened their eyes to get a better look at the two blurry figures. However, no matter how fierce the other party's attack was, it was difficult for either to break through in order to land a definitive blow.

Shock surfaced in many people's eyes, as they realized that, in this head-on confrontation, Cao Feng, who was supposedly more powerful than Mu Chen, did not gain an upper hand in the least. Cao Feng had clearly realized this, as his gaze turned increasingly chilling. Then, with a tip of his toes, his figure surged into mid-air, as the Blood Hawk Spear in his hand emanated a bloody aura of ten thousand feet, and a sharp and piercing cry of the eagle rang throughout the heavens and earth.

"Eagle Spear, Eagle Splitting the Space!"

A bloody aura spewed forth, as a Blood Hawk soared from the Blood Hawk Spear, its size was massive, reaching to nearly a hundred feet! It extended its wings, as it integrated with the fierce aura of the spear and rushed to envelop Mu Chen, with a momentum as swift as lightning.

"Just die!" Cao Feng roared, his growl permeating the atmosphere.

Mu Chen lifted his head. A sharp glance surged in his dark eyes upon

seeing the brutal attack, causing him to pause to take a deep breath. His hand then jerked the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, causing it to land heavily on the ground, as ancient demonic runes glimmered on the primordial Demonic Pillar.

In that moment, an indescribable demonic aura permeated the heavens and earth, as if a primordial demonic creature had awakened, causing everyone to look on in shock. The crimson red in Mu Chen's eyes grew rapidly, as a low growl sounded in his heart.

"The Great Meru Demonic Pillar, Swinging Demonic Runes!"

Chapter 690: Blood Shadow Celestial Body

"Swinging Demonic Runes!"

When the low roar sounded off in Mu Chen's heart, scarlet ancient light runes appeared instantly on the body of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. The light runes spread all over the Great Meru Demonic Pillar like cracks, causing it to look as if it were going to break.

However, it was precisely this tattered appearance that caused an inexplicable ominous aura to sweep out from the cracks. It made the Great Meru Demonic Pillar look like a Demonic God that was going to wake up and be extremely horrifying.

The Great Meru Demonic Pillar was a Primordial Ominous Artifact and had been possessed by many sovereign masters in the ancient times. Although it was damaged at the moment, as Mu Chen became stronger, its power was slowly starting to be displayed. Ordinary Divine Artifacts would never be this fierce.

Bang!

As the Great Meru Demonic Pillar containing a monstrous ominous aura struck down forcefully, the space was instantly distorted, and the air in the entire sky started to explode. Eventually, the pillar collided with the incoming blood hawk in an extremely shocking way.

Dong!

The two crashed into each other, and an ear-piercingly low noise spread. A terrifying spiritual energy shockwave swept ferociously in all directions like a wave that was 100,000 feet tall.

Rumble.

The violent spiritual energy shockwave raged and seemed to have brought about the continuous roar of thunder.

Everyone stared at the area where the spiritual energy shockwave was

the most destructive. There, a slender young man was standing, his body as straight as a spear. His hands held the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, and his feet rubbed against the ground as he gradually backed off.

Every time he stepped back, the ground was crushed into powder.

A scarlet color filled Mu Chen's eyes, and a low roar seemed to come from his throat. Then, he stomped his foot forcefully and instantly, the golden ground below him cracked open directly in a radius of hundreds of feet.

"Break!"

On his arms, his veins were wiggling like dragons. As he roared, an appalling ominous aura surged on the Great Meru Demonic Pillar.

Tweet!

A sharp eagle's cry could be heard. Many tiny cracks appeared on the huge blood hawk and spread rapidly. In the end, the blood hawk exploded with a loud bang and turned into many blood-red light spots which filled the sky and gradually fell down.

In the sky, a muffled sound was also heard. In the majestic spiritual energy shockwave, a person seemed to have staggered. Mu Chen broke Cao Feng's attack by force, which obviously caused him to be affected as well.

Vroom!

With an icy expression on his face, Mu Chen stomped his foot and ascended, flying high into the sky like the giant Roc that had expanded its wings. The Great Meru Demonic Pillar quickly turned into a dark shadow which struck down hard at the place filled with violent spiritual energy.

Mu Chen's attack was especially fierce. Since he had a slight advantage, he would not give his opponent any chance to relax.

The Great Meru Demonic Pillar tore the violent spiritual energy apart forcefully and smashed down at the figure within.

Dong!

The Great Meru Demonic Pillar stormed into the dense spiritual energy, but Mu Chen's look suddenly turned serious.

A devastating shockwave broke out, and the dense spiritual energy was immediately dispersed. Countless people looked at the place, and their eyes all narrowed suddenly...

A figure thousands of feet in size stood proudly at the region filled with the light of spiritual energy. The figure was blood-red throughout its body, as if it were solidified from blood. On the giant's surface there were strange runes formed from blood. Waves of terrifying spiritual energy fluctuations emanated from the figure and directly caused the entire space to tremble and distort along with them.

At the moment, the giant figure was blocking the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. The pillar struck down with its huge hand which was glittering with blood rays. As the blood rays surged, it was as if blood were continuously dripping down from it.

The giant figure was the Sovereign Celestial Body that Cao Feng had cultivated!

"This Sovereign Celestial Body..."

Mu Chen also stared at the scarlet Sovereign Celestial Body. From the Sovereign Celestial Body, he felt an incredibly powerful spiritual energy fluctuation. His eyes sparkled gently and he said softly, "It's actually the Blood Shadow Celestial Body which is ranked 99th..."

Although the Blood Shadow Celestial Body was only ranked 99th, it was in the rankings after all, and was naturally stronger than ordinary Sovereign Celestial Bodies. It seemed that Cao Feng was indeed very valued in the Blood Hawk Palace. Otherwise, it would be difficult for him to obtain the cultivation method for the Blood Shadow Celestial Body. It was no wonder that he betrayed the Nine Nether Palace in the first place and sought refuge in the Blood Hawk Palace.

"Since you can force me into using the Blood Shadow Celestial Body, you are considered to have some abilities!" The Blood Shadow Celestial Body that Cao Feng had turned into stared at Mu Chen with his scarlet, beast-

like eyes. His cold voice rumbled in the sky.

His voice was filled with rage. At first, he thought that since he was a Grade Two Sovereign, he would be able to defeat Mu Chen easily. However, after fighting he realized that he was actually not at an advantage at all. Instead, he was somewhat suppressed by the weird demonic pillar with the frightful ominous aura. How could he tolerate this?

At the moment, everyone in the entire Daluo Territory was watching them. If he were to lose to Mu Chen, he would no longer have a foothold in the future.

Hence, no matter what, he would definitely need to kill Mu Chen!

An intense killing intent flashed in the blood-red eyes of the Blood Shadow Celestial Body. Right then, his bloody palm slapped hard onto the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. A horrific spiritual energy exploded and caused the demonic pillar to be blown away.

Mu Chen backed off quickly. Waving his sleeves, the Great Meru Demonic Pillar whizzed over to him and stood straight on the ground. He stood on the top of the pillar, staring at the huge Blood Shadow Celestial Body with a freezing look.

"Blood Explosion Art!"

Killing intent surged in Cao Feng's heart. His bloody palms changed seals suddenly, and they grabbed towards Mu Chen from afar like the claws of an eagle.

Bang!

His palms whizzed in the air, and even the sky seemed to have turned scarlet. In the distance, Mu Chen's body stiffened suddenly as the blood in his body actually showed traces of boiling and exploding.

Cao Feng's Blood Shadow Celestial Body could actually detonate the blood inside him from such a distance. The attack was indeed peculiar.

Bang!

Mu Chen stomped his foot abruptly, and brilliant lightning burst out. His body was quickly electrified and became covered in silver light, as if the Thunder God had arrived himself. Then, he punched forward, and the raging lightning, which whizzed past like thousands of lightning pythons, crushed the blood rays.

"Blood Shadow!"

Seeing that, Cao Feng gave a ghastly smile. Countless numbers of bloody waterfalls burst out from his body and flew towards Mu Chen like tens of thousands of shadows, covering the sky and the earth.

The blood shadows emitted waves of screams. As the soundwaves spread, everyone's heads began to hurt badly as if they were going to explode.

Mu Chen frowned slightly. His toes kicked on the ground, and he backed off quickly. The sound of thunder echoed in his ears, resisting the interference from the sharp soundwaves. Then, he punched out fiercely with both hands.

Bang! Bang!

Thunderbolt fist prints that blotted out the sky whizzed over and slammed into the countless blood shadows. Instantly, a continuous rumbling sounded off in the sky. However, with each such impact, Mu Chen was blown away for over 1,000 feet.

Everyone could tell that this time, Mu Chen was at a total disadvantage.

At the Nine Nether Palace zone, Tang Bing and Tang Rou watched in horror, but did not speak because they knew how strong Cao Feng actually was at the moment.

"Now, you are just like a homeless dog. Where's your arrogance just now?"

Cao Feng gave a dour sneer, and his attack became more intense. Then, he stared at Mu Chen, who was just retreating, and the killing intent in his eyes suddenly became extremely strong. His hands abruptly formed a weird seal.

"You think you can just keep dodging?"

"Demonic Blood Clock, corrode the sky and melt the earth!"

Bang!

The sky suddenly turned dark, and even the clouds in the sky seemed to become blood-red. A bloody rain fell down from the sky and enveloped the entire place.

Mu Chen stopped. He frowned slightly because he felt an extraordinary spiritual energy fluctuation around him. Obviously, Cao Feng was starting to perform a real fatal blow.

"Should be about time..." Mu Chen lowered his head and muttered to himself. Meanwhile, his hands in his sleeves quietly formed the last seal.

Buzz!

The space around Mu Chen suddenly turned blood-red. Many blood shadows penetrated across space like vines, and in just a few breaths' time, they condensed around his body.

The blood shadows wound around Mu Chen, and an enormous blood clock appeared out of thin air. Then, it engulfed Mu Chen in a peculiar way.

Buzz, buzz.

The blood clock stood in the sky. On its surface there seemed to be countless ferocious faces. Sharp cries could be heard continuously in the sky causing everyone to feel that their heads were in pain, as if they were going to explode.

As the blood clock appeared and engulfed Mu Chen, the expressions of many people changed, after which they shook their heads quietly. Even if a Grade Two Sovereign at the same level as Cao Feng were trapped in this kind of fatal attack, he would also definitely be very heavily injured.

It seemed that Mu Chen's outcome would be ominous rather than propitious.

At the Blood Hawk Palace zone, a mild smile appeared on Lord Blood

Hawk's always dour face. His look was as cold as a viper and would cause anyone to tremble with fear.

This time, I'll see how embarrassed the Nine Nether Palace will be.

"Just die!"

In the sky, Cao Feng gave an evil smile, and a killing intent could be seen. Then, he changed his seals, and the blood clock started to suddenly vibrate, emitting many blood rays. If he were to detonate the blood clock, then Mu Chen, who was inside, would surely die!

"Demonic Blood Clock, explode!"

Bang!

The giant blood clock finally completely exploded. At the instant of explosion, there seemed to be an endless blood sea that swept across it. The smell of blood filled the whole place.

At the moment, the entire region of space appeared to be broken. Many spatial cracks spread rapidly.

Everyone looked at the area.

The faces of the twin sisters Tang Bing and Tang Rou turned slightly pale, and their bodies trembled gently. Everyone in the Nine Nether Troop also watched with a dim expression, their faces pale.

Only Nine Nether was calm.

The blood sea filled the sky. All of a sudden, there seemed to be a limitless amount of light that radiated through the blood sea. Where the light passed, the blood sea was evaporated instantaneously. In just a few breaths' time, the blood sea that once filled the place vanished totally.

Cao Feng's expression changed drastically, and he suddenly lifted his head.

The many powerful people around also felt something and stared at the sky in the distance with an astonished look. Then, their eyes narrowed.

In the sky, an enormous bright figure stood silently. Behind the bright

figure, a scorching sun was floating and emitting a seemingly endless amount of light. The flame of brightness swept across, and all the spiritual energy in the world began to boil and burn.

A frightening spiritual energy pressure enveloped the place.

In the sky, the looks of the three kings, who had been watching the battle, also turned solemn at the moment. Surprise surged in their eyes.

Chapter 691: The Power of the Great Solar Undying Body

The dazzling flame of brightness came down from the sky like a torrent. Where the flame of brightness passed, the monstrous blood rays that filled the sky were destroyed completely, at an incredible speed, as if they were snow that had come into contact with lava.

In just a few breaths' time, the dark sky became extremely bright. In the distant sky, the huge giant walked over by stepping in the air. The scorching sun behind its head was remarkably spectacular. Everyone watched the scene, dumbstruck.

"That's... that's Mu Chen's sovereign celestial body?"

"What celestial body is this? With such fluctuations, this is definitely not an ordinary sovereign celestial body. But by the looks of it, it also does not seem to be one of the 99 Sovereign Celestial Bodies..."

"So weird..."

Throughout the place, many whispers could be heard. The voices were mixed with shock and uncertainty. Clearly, the mysterious sovereign celestial body had caused them to become quite puzzled. In the sky, the three kings also stared at the mysterious sovereign celestial body in surprise, their eyes sparkling.

"This sovereign celestial body does not seem to be in the 99 Sovereign Celestial Bodies ranking," the Condor King said in surprise.

The Spiritual Pupil King frowned slightly, then said tonelessly, "Although the 99 Sovereign Celestial Bodies ranking is authoritative, the world is too vast and huge, and it contains many strong sovereign celestial bodies that are not in the ranking. Furthermore, some people are very talented and can condense some special sovereign celestial bodies, due to good luck."

Hearing this, the Sleeping King also nodded and said in a light tone, "That's right. There are too many wonders in the world, and the 99 Sovereign Celestial Bodies do not represent everything. However, although

the sovereign celestial body is powerful, it still depends on the strength of the user himself. If the difference between the grades of two people is too huge, even a very strong sovereign celestial body cannot make up for the gap."

He paused for a while, glancing at the two sovereign celestial bodies that were facing each other in the sky. He then smiled and added, "But from the looks of it, the mysterious sovereign celestial body is enough to decide the outcome."

Even though Mu Chen was only a grade one sovereign, his combat force was no weaker than that of Cao Feng, who was a grade two sovereign. At the moment, both of them had summoned their sovereign celestial bodies. As a discerning observer, the Sleeping King could naturally tell that Mu Chen had an absolute advantage.

Hearing that, the Condor King also smiled, while the Spiritual Pupil King frowned, but did not say much. He was not very interested in the battle, because it was between two people of such low grades. Although Cao Feng was under Lord Blood Hawk, if he was considered to be so useless, he would have no more value, and could thus be abandoned.

...

In the sky, Cao Feng stared in horror at the mysterious giant, who was walking over in mid-air. He felt as if his heart was rolling in mountains of wild waves, because he could feel the pressure that penetrated across the space. The pressure was sufficient for him to know that the sovereign celestial body cultivated by Mu Chen was certainly stronger than his Blood Shadow Celestial Body.

"How can it be..."

Cao Feng roared in his mind. He naturally knew how precious such a strong sovereign celestial body was. Even though he had risked his life for the Blood Hawk Palace over these years, he had only managed to obtain the cultivation method for the Blood Shadow Celestial Body. However, the sovereign celestial body cultivated by Mu Chen was actually stronger than his Blood Shadow Celestial Body!

"It must be Nine Nether who gave it to him!" A flame of envy gushed out from Cao Feng's heart. His feelings towards Nine Nether were extremely complicated, as he felt both admiration and inferiority.

In the first place, he betrayed the Nine Nether Palace, partially because he knew that he did not deserve to be with Nine Nether at all. Therefore, he wanted to work hard. Precisely because of this, he could not control his rage and killing intent, when he discovered that Nine Nether had actually found another person to replace him in the Nine Nether Palace. He wanted to prove to Nine Nether that he was definitely irreplaceable.

"You think that you can win over me, just with this sovereign celestial body? Idiotic nonsense!" Killing intent surged in Cao Feng's eyes, rising like the tides. Then he roared suddenly, his hands quickly forming a seal.

Bang!

The appalling blood rays swept out wildly again. Giant columns of blood-red light burst out from the Blood Shadow Celestial Body suddenly, as viscous as blood.

"Sword of the Blood Shadow, spirit-slayer!"

All the blood-like viscous columns of light merged together wildly, then actually turned into a huge blood sword, which measured about a thousand feet large. On the sword, blood flowed down in streams.

Vroom!

The huge blood sword seemed to be distorted. It was like a shadow that was emitting a peculiar, ghastly fluctuation. In the next instant, the blood sword actually disappeared into thin air.

In the distant sky, the space behind the Great Solar Undying Body, which Mu Chen had turned into, suddenly cracked open. A blood ray flew out like a shadow, and without bringing about any fluctuation, it quietly struck down at the head of the Great Solar Undying Body.

Buzz!

However, just as the shadow-like blood sword was about to land its

strike, a huge hand, which seemed to be burning with great solar flames, moved through the air to grab the blood sword.

Sizzle.

The huge hand grabbed the blood sword and clenched forcefully, causing the blood sword to shatter instantly. Blood burst out, then immediately evaporated into nothingness.

Wow.

Throughout the place, many people exclaimed in surprise. No one had expected that such a weird attack from Cao Feng would actually be blocked by Mu Chen so easily.

"Impossible!"

Cao Feng roared uncontrollably. His blood sword was condensed from the blood of many powerful people and spiritual beasts. Its hardness was no weaker than ordinary divine artifacts, but it was crushed into pieces by a single hand from Mu Chen's sovereign celestial body.

Flames of brightness surged in the eyes of the Great Solar Undying Body that Mu Chen had turned into, appearing emotionless. He stared at Cao Feng, as if he was looking at an ant from above.

After truly activating the Great Solar Undying Body, he could feel the wildly skyrocketing power in his body. It was far greater than the power of Cao Feng at the moment. After all, the Great Solar Undying Body was one of the fundamental celestial bodies needed to cultivate the Primordial Immortal Body. Its powers were far beyond the expectations of most people.

Bang!

Mu Chen's look was emotionless. He clenched his giant fist and punched out. Brightness bloomed, and a sun-like fist print whizzed overhead. Flashing, it penetrated across space, then appeared in front of Cao Feng, striking down forcefully.

Against this kind of fierce attack, Cao Feng only managed to cross his

arms before him to guard himself. Then, he felt a terrifying power burst out on his arms.

Dong!

A low roar spread across the sky. The huge Blood Shadow Celestial Body actually trembled, forced to take a step backwards. Every time he landed, he would leave a deep footprint on the ground below.

Bang!

The Blood Shadow Celestial Body stomped his foot suddenly. The ground cracked open, and only then did he stabilize his body. Meanwhile, Cao Feng's eyes were already completely filled with savage rage. The fact that he kept retreating had caused the killing intent in his mind to reach its maximum.

"I must kill him!"

Cao Feng bellowed in his heart, as he could not tolerate being defeated by Mu Chen. Over these years, he was even willing to stoop to betrayal, if it meant gaining greater power. If he was to fail here, all the hard work from these years would have been worthless. Therefore, he must kill Mu Chen!

Cao Feng's eyes were blood-red. He raised his arms high, and a scarlet spiritual energy gushed out from his palms like the tides. This time, there was actually real blood gathering in the spiritual energy. It was the blood from Cao Feng's body.

Splash.

The viscous sound of water could be heard. A blood-red ball, about a thousand feet large, converged between the hands of the Blood Shadow Celestial Body quickly. The surface of the blood ball wriggled continuously. Many blood thorns extended out, then retracted back again.

An extremely violent and frightening fluctuation spread across the sky silently...

On the Daluo Golden Platform, Xu Qing, Zhou Yue and the rest, whose

faces had already been filled with solemnity, saw the blood ball between Cao Feng's palms, and their expressions changed uncontrollably.

"This person is mad!"

They cursed in spite of themselves. They could naturally sense that Cao Feng had actually drawn out all of the blood in his body. Obviously, he had a real intention to kill, and wanted to eliminate Mu Chen completely!

However, he would have to pay a heavy price for this. Even if he won, he would definitely need more than half a year to recover gradually.

At the Nine Nether Palace zone, Tang Bing and Tang Rou both clenched their fists, as nervousness could be seen on their faces. Even Nine Nether also frowned, her face filled with coldness. Clearly, she had underestimated the extent to which Cao Feng wanted to kill Mu Chen.

She straightened her body slightly, ready to move out. Obviously, once Mu Chen was in danger, she would save him.

"Demonic Blood Ball!"

Cao Feng's furious roar spread in the sky. Monstrous blood rays burst out, as the enormous blood ball instantly turned into a beam of blood-red light, striking towards Mu Chen, quick as a bolt of lightning.

Where the blood ball passed, all space was cracked apart, forming many fissures. The ground below was also torn brutally, resulting in an abyss-like fracture.

Mu Chen stared at the Demonic Blood Ball, which was flying towards him at an astonishing speed. Facing such a horrifying attack, he still did not dodge at all. His fist simply clenched slowly.

"I'll show you the true power of the Great Solar Undying Body."

Mu Chen muttered in his heart. Just then, his look suddenly became exceptionally penetrating, as an endless amount of light erupted from the center of his palm. There, it was as if a blazing sun was partially visible.

"Great Solar Palm!"

A deep voice sounded off suddenly in Mu Chen's heart. The huge hand

that seemed to contain a sun slapped out abruptly. It directly penetrated across space, before it collided fearlessly with the ball that contained all of the blood from Cao Feng.

Bang!

The two hit, brightness enveloping the place. Everyone widened their eyes at that moment.

Both had risked their lives in the fight. So, who exactly was stronger?

Chapter 692: Easy Victory

Bang!

A terrifying collision suddenly burst out in the sky. The endless brightness and the scarlet-colored light each occupied half of the sky. The two fierce spiritual energies charged at each other wildly in an attempt to eliminate the other.

At the place of impact, the space kept cracking apart to form many fissures. Such a collision caused everyone to watch with a solemn look. Even the expressions of some of the powerful leaders from the other forces under the Daluo Territory changed.

Everyone gazed at the point of collision. They all knew that the collision should be enough to conclude the battle.

At the Nine Nether Palace zone, Tang Bing and Tang Rou widened their charming eyes in anxiousness. They also clenched their fists so hard that their hands turned somewhat pale. Mu Chen had already reached this point and was just one step away from victory. If he were to fail at this point, it would be extremely unfortunate.

Tang Rou kept praying quietly. Tang Bing also bit her lips gently and stared at the battle without blinking.

Under the countless stares, the terrifying collision still seemed to be in a stalemate in the sky. Seeing this, Cao Feng's face darkened.

He had already gone all out and actually still could not defeat Mu Chen easily.

"This b*st*rd!"

Cao Feng's eyes reddened. He was like a gambler who had lost everything. Staring at Mu Chen with a vicious look, he stomped his foot hard again, and all the spiritual energy in his body poured out completely, along with his remaining blood.

If one could see his body, which was hidden in the Sovereign Celestial Body at the moment, one would realize that Cao Feng looked absolutely

horrible like a dry corpse.

Bang!

After Cao Feng risked his life for such a counterattack, the blood-red light strengthened instantly. For a moment, it actually seemed to suppress the endless brightness.

Exclamations filled the sky.

Behind the endless brightness, the Great Solar Undying Body that Mu Chen had turned into looked at Cao Feng's desperate attack emotionlessly. Then, his hands started to form a seal.

Bang!

In the bright palm print, it was as if a sun were expanding. Waves of dazzling light spread out, and the eye-catching flames of brightness soared up from the bright palm print.

"Great Solar Demon-Destroyer!"

Mu Chen's low voice sounded off in the sky. The palm print, which contained the giant sun, whizzed down and the flames of brightness spread. The monstrous blood rays that were originally increasing were now completely incinerated by the great solar flames in an instant.

The great solar palm print dropped down without obstruction. In the end, the palm directly grabbed the blood ball, which contained the blood from Cao Feng, and clenched hard!

Crack!

A cracking sound was heard, and the blood ball was crushed by Mu Chen's palm. Before its violent power could burst out, the flames of brightness swept out and burned it completely.

In the sky, the blood rays were immediately eliminated.

Horror gushed out from Cao Feng's eyes. The rapidly dimming Blood Shadow Celestial Body turned around and dashed off. He knew that he could no longer defeat Mu Chen.

Mu Chen stared emotionlessly at Cao Feng, who had turned to run away. Waving his sleeves, the bright palm print permeated through space and landed on the Blood Shadow Celestial Body.

Dong!

A frightening sound was heard. The Blood Shadow Celestial Body that Cao Feng had turned into actually exploded and turned into viscous blood that rained down from the sky, instantly turning the ground blood-red.

As the bloody rain fell, a somewhat dim blood ray crazily rushed out.

Coldness flashed in Mu Chen's eyes. The bright palm slapped out fiercely and grabbed towards the dim blood ray. Clearly, he did not plan to let Cao Feng off that easily.

The blood ray Cao Feng had turned into tried to escape, but his speed was far slower than Mu Chen's due to his severe injury. Thus, in the blink of an eye, the bright palm appeared in the sky above him and slapped down mercilessly.

Intense horror immediately surged in Cao Feng's eyes.

Everyone watched the scene, and their hearts trembled slightly. The new Commander from the Nine Nether Palace was young but rather cruel. From the look of it, he was obviously going to beat a drowning dog.

However, just as Mu Chen's bright palm was about to hit Cao Feng, Lord Blood Hawk, who had been watching the battle at the Blood Hawk Palace zone and therefore had a gloomy face, suddenly roared in anger.

"Stop!"

Hearing his shout, Mu Chen totally ignored him. Instead, his attack became quicker and more violent.

"How dare you!"

Lord Blood Hawk's face finally turned completely dark. Although Cao Feng caused him to be extremely disappointed, he was a member of the Blood Hawk Palace, after all. If he was killed by Mu Chen before Lord Blood Hawk, that would be equivalent to slapping the faces of everyone in

the Blood Hawk Palace. This was something that he definitely could not tolerate. In particular, when he saw that Mu Chen actually completely ignored his warning, he became noticeably furious.

"Supercilious kid! Let me teach you what humility is!"

Lord Blood Hawk smacked the armrest with his palm, and the whole throne turned into powder. Moving his body, he appeared in the sky directly. He pointed into the air, and a blood-red feather emerged from thin air. It passed through space and flew towards Mu Chen's Sovereign Celestial Body like a bolt of lightning.

Vroom!

The blood-red feather penetrated through space and instantly caused Mu Chen to feel coldness in his heart. The feather did not look powerful, but the terrifying spiritual energy fluctuation that it contained far exceeded his.

Even though Mu Chen had the Great Solar Undying Body, he could not fight against a Grade Five Sovereign.

Mu Chen's look sparkled slightly. Then, he did an astonishing act again. He actually ignored Lord Blood Hawk's attempt to save Cao Feng by attacking him. The bright palm still slapped forcefully towards Cao Feng.

Seeing that, coldness appeared in Lord Blood Hawk's eyes. Since this is the case, you will die with Cao Feng.

Buzz!

The blood feather permeated through space and appeared directly behind Mu Chen. However, at the instant when it was going to hit, a feather burning with a purple flame also tore through space and appeared suddenly, colliding with it.

Pop!

The two feathers collided but there were no violent spiritual energy explosions. They just corroded each other and quickly dimmed, eventually turning into nothingness.

"It's not your Blood Hawk Palace's turn to teach someone from my Nine Nether Palace!"

As the two attacks annihilated each other, a cold, clear voice also spread in the sky. Everyone turned their heads and looked over to see Nine Nether standing alone in front of her throne. Her icy appearance, swaying hair, and the purple flames that surrounded her all made her look stunningly beautiful and dignified.

Lord Blood Hawk stood in midair and stared at Nine Nether with a freezing look. He was so angry that he smiled instead and said, "What high-sounding sentiments. After disappearing for a few years, your temper has changed for the worse."

"If you are not willing to let this go, we can fight. I have disliked you for a very long time as well. If I can defeat you, I can take this opportunity to annex your Blood Hawk Palace into my Nine Nether Palace," Nine Nether said as the corners of her lips curled up slightly.

"Annex my Blood Hawk Palace? Alright, show me what you've got. I'll see how much you have to actually dare to say such things!" Lord Blood Hawk gave an angry laugh.

"Ah!"

However, just as Lord Blood Hawk finished speaking, a miserable shriek suddenly sounded off. Mu Chen's palm had already smacked hard onto Cao Feng's body without hesitation. Cao Feng's chest caved in directly as he spat volumes of blood and fell vertically like a bird whose wings had been broken.

Dash, dash!

As he was falling, two gusts of strong wind passed by. Then, Cao Feng's arms were cut off. He immediately gave out a sharp, miserable scream again.

Thud!

Cao Feng landed hard on the ground which sank underneath him. Lying on the ground, blood flowed out from his body, and his breath was weak.

Nobody knew if he was still alive.

Hiss.

Everyone gasped quietly and stared at Mu Chen who was in the sky with a frightening look. The cruelty that Mu Chen had displayed caused them to feel somewhat scared even though they had experienced hundreds of battles.

This man was young but his means were high-handed.

In the sky, the Great Solar Undying Body that Mu Chen had turned into also dissipated. His own body appeared, and he stared coldly at Cao Feng. He said tonelessly, "This is what you owe the Nine Nether Palace. In the future, you will not have any relations with the Nine Nether Palace."

Spit.

Cao Feng, who was already extremely weak, spat out a mouthful of blood after hearing this. His eyes dulled, and he finally lost consciousness.

The entire place fell into silence.

Just then, deafening cheers suddenly spread from the Nine Nether Palace zone. Everyone from the Nine Nether Troop looked excited, and their eyes were completely red. Over these years, Cao Feng's betrayal had been a pain in their hearts. In the Daluo Territory, many people mocked them because of it, but they could only tolerate it. However, at the moment the issue had been completely resolved because of the arrival of their new Commander, Mu Chen.

They finally had a heartfelt admiration towards Mu Chen. The new Commander that master Nine Nether had brought back was indeed far stronger and more convincing than Cao Feng.

"Sister, Mu Chen won!" Tang Rou grabbed Tang Bing's arm and cheered joyfully.

A smile could also be seen on Tang Bing's mouth, and joy filled her pretty eyes. She stared at the slender young man in the sky, and her lips curled up slightly. Luckily, you did not disappoint me. Otherwise, I would

not let you off easily.

While the Nine Nether Palace was cheering loudly in the sky, however, Lord Blood Hawk's face was so dark, it seemed to be raining. He stared at Mu Chen with a frightening look and said, "Such a cruel kid!"

A horrific killing intent gushed out from his body and towards Mu Chen like a mountain. Clearly, he really wanted to kill Mu Chen.

Feeling the overwhelming killing intent that was rushing over, Mu Chen's expression also changed slightly. A Grade Five Sovereign was indeed very powerful.

Vroom.

As the killing intent gushed over, a fragrant wind also came. Nine Nether's slim body appeared before Mu Chen. As her hair swayed, she helped Mu Chen to completely block the killing intent.

Nine Nether's face was cold. Clenching her fist gently, a purple flame surged in her palm like a snake. She slowly lifted her long, narrow eyes and stared at Lord Blood Hawk with a freezing look. An icy voice spread in the sky.

"If you are still unwilling to give up, let me fight you."

Chapter 693: To the Summit

In the area, everyone lifted their heads and stared at the sky. There, a rich murderous aura was spreading. Under the influence of the murderous aura, the temperature in the sky also dropped significantly. That was the murderous aura from the two lords.

In the sky, Nine Nether and Lord Blood Hawk stood opposite each other, and the looks from both were particularly freezing. The resentment between them had been long-standing, as both disliked the other. If they were not both lords in the Daluo Territory, they would probably not restrain themselves, and would have fought each other a long time ago. However, by the looks of it now, the two both seemed to be unable to tolerate the killing intents in their hearts any longer.

"I have been wanting to know how strong the Nine Netherbird clan is all along. Today, I really want to see it for myself," Lord Blood Hawk said gloomily. In his scarlet pupils, some fierceness appeared.

As he spoke, a blood-red storm swept out around him. The storm was filled with violent and vast spiritual energy fluctuations, which raged in the sky like blades.

"Then you can come and try," Nine Nether also replied with a sneer. The purple flames that were circling her expanded suddenly. Her hair danced, as the purple flames swept out and a terrifying temperature spread.

Seeing the appearances of the two, everyone's expressions changed uncontrollably. If Nine Nether and Lord Blood Hawk really started to fight, the influence would be far greater than the battles between the commanders.

In the Daluo Territory, commanders still could not be considered as the cornerstones. However, people as strong as Lord Blood Hawk and Nine Nether were really considered as the backbones of the territory.

"Enough!"

Precisely because of this, when the two were standing against each other,

a roar sounded off and a wind-like fluctuation swept across the place. Where the fluctuation passed, the extremely violent spiritual energy fluctuation around Nine Nether and Lord Blood Hawk was actually suppressed back into the bodies of the two.

Everyone looked toward the source of the voice. The Condor King was staring at the two, frowning, as he said in a deep tone, "Is it that you have forgotten the rules of the Daluo Territory?"

In the Daluo Territory, lords could not be directly involved in the conflicts between the different forces. They could only let their subordinates fight. In this way, competition could be maintained, while the greatest number of lords could also be kept intact and stable.

Seeing that the Condor King had acted, Lord Blood Hawk knew that he would no longer be able to deal with Nine Nether on that day. He glanced at Cao Feng, who had become handicapped, but could not let it go. Immediately, he stared at Mu Chen with a gloomy look and said, "Cao feng had already been defeated, but Mu Chen was still so cruel. I think we should take his eligibility away."

Hearing this, Mu Chen's look also turned cold.

"Don't you even think about it!" Nine Nether sneered and said. "Lord Blood Hawk, are you too old, that you can't think properly? In this kind of battle, as long as no one admits defeat, the battle will continue. Even if Cao Feng is killed, instead of just being severely injured, he deserves it. There is no one else to blame!"

"You want my Blood Hawk Palace to tolerate this, and let this go? Impossible!" Lord Blood Hawk was unwilling to compromise at all, as he stood in sharp opposition.

Seeing the two arguing, the Condor King also frowned. At the side, the Spiritual Pupil King smiled briefly and said, "In my opinion, we should swap Mu Chen down for the moment to pacify Lord Blood Hawk's anger. After the event, we will find another chance to compensate him."

Mu Chen's expression changed slightly. His goal was the Daluo Golden Pool. At the moment, he had made it here after many challenges, and so

he would not give up easily. Furthermore, the so-called compensation in the future did not sound convincing, and he did not believe in that.

However, although Mu Chen was somewhat angry, he did not say anything recklessly. At the moment, his status in the Daluo Territory was too low. He did not want to cause any unnecessary trouble for Nine Nether, just so that he could look cool for a moment.

The Condor King frowned and said, "If we do this, who will dare to participate in the Daluo Golden Pool contest in the future?"

"Ha, do you think there are too few people, who want to enter the Daluo Golden Pool?" the Spiritual Pupil King smiled and said.

Hearing the dispute between the two, the Sleeping King, who had always been reticent, suddenly smiled and said, "Old rules, we shall still continue them all."

Both the Condor King and the Spiritual Pupil King were stunned for a moment. After all, over these years, the Sleeping King would very rarely participate in their disputes. It was rather uncommon for him to say something actively like this. Moreover, the words from the Sleeping Kings were clearly trying to help Mu Chen.

Some darkness flashed across the depth of the eyes of the Spiritual Pupil King. However, although he was also one of the three kings, he knew that the Sleeping King was unfathomable. In addition, and also most importantly, the Sleeping King had always been the person that the Dominator trusted the most.

Hence, since the Sleeping King had spoken, he could not oppose. Immediately, he smiled and said, "Since Brother Meng has said so, we will continue, according to the rules."

Lord Blood Hawk's face darkened, but he did not dare say anything. He could just give a gloomy humph towards Mu Chen. Then, waving his sleeves, he turned around and descended from the sky.

Nine Nether also looked at the Sleeping King with some surprise, after which, she nodded at him with some gratitude. Then, she looked at Mu

Chen and said, "Your performance is not bad. Later, whatever opportunities you can get in the Daluo Golden Pool all depends on yourself."

Mu Chen smiled and nodded. Seeing this, Nine Nether did not add anything and turned around to descend.

Mu Chen stared at Nine Nether, who had turned around and left. Then, he turned his head and folded his hands at the Condor King and the Sleeping King respectfully. Finally, he moved and landed directly towards the Daluo Golden Platform.

On the Daluo Golden Platform, a few people stared firmly at Mu Chen, who was now landing. Xu Qing and Zhou Yue's looks were filled with surprise. Clearly, the powers that Mu Chen had displayed earlier caused them to be somewhat shocked. Although they were stronger than Cao Feng, if the latter was to risk his life to fight, it would cause them a lot of trouble.

However, Mu Chen could endure the attack. Just this alone was sufficient reason for Xu Qing and the rest to take Mu Chen as someone who was as strong as them. When Mu Chen landed on the Daluo Golden Platform, a wild spiritual energy fluctuation also burst out in the distance. Just then, a person flew backwards, looking discomposed. His feet rubbed against the ground as he backed away hurriedly.

Mu Chen appeared behind the figure. He put his hands on the shoulders of the person and helped him to take the force away. The person, who was Fang Lei, turned his head around.

Seeing Mu Chen, he smiled bitterly, his face pale. When Mu Chen was battling fiercely with Cao Feng previously, he was also fighting with Wu Tian, but clearly, he had lost in the end.

Before them, some light condensed, and Wu Tian also appeared. He stared at Mu Chen with a somewhat gloomy look, but this time, some fear could also be seen in the depths of his eyes.

Although Wu Tian was fighting with Fang Lei just now, he was also obviously paying attention to the battle of Cao Feng. The amazing combat

force, which Mu Chen had displayed, was sufficient to cause him to be alarmed.

Wu Tian was not stupid. Otherwise, he would not have become a commander, who was so valued by Lord Blood Hawk. Therefore, at the moment, he had taken back all the underestimations that he had towards Mu Chen, as now, he really viewed Mu Chen as one who could compete with him.

"I lost. Brother Mu Chen, I hope that you can gain something in the Daluo Golden Pool." Fang Lei was quite straightforward. He smiled towards Mu Chen, then left the Daluo Golden Platform.

Although he disliked Wu Tian, he understood that he had lost because he was the weaker of the pair. Thus, he did not recklessly ask Mu Chen to help.

Mu Chen watched him leave. Then, he walked back calmly to where he had stood. Even though he also disliked Wu Tian, he knew that now was not a good time to continue fighting.

Previously, he had already spent much of his spiritual energy during the battle with Cao Feng. At the moment, he was not in his best condition, so he did not need to take the risk. After all, the four quotas had already appeared.

Wu Tian similarly did not say anything to mock Mu Chen again, as he walked back with a gloomy look. Originally, he wanted to take this opportunity to challenge Zhou Yue, so that his ranking would become higher. However, he did not expect Mu Chen to emerge all of the sudden. Therefore, he did not dare fight again, in case Mu Chen would benefit at the end of their battles.

The four people stood quietly at the four corners of the Daluo Golden Platform. All of them remained silent and did not interfere with each other. Everyone looked at the four figures on the Daluo Golden Platform, feeling somewhat emotional. They knew that these four were the four great commanders in the Daluo Territory. Apart from Mu Chen, who was a new dark horse, the other three were all previous title holders.

As the atmosphere on the Daluo Golden Platform quietened, in the sky, the three kings glanced at each other. Then, the Condor King's old and low voice spread in the sky.

"The final four quotas for the Daluo Golden Pool have emerged. Now, take your golden talisman."

"Asura Palace, Xu Qing!"

Hearing the roar of the Condor King, Xu Qing stepped forward calmly. Then, a golden beam fell from the sky and turned into a golden talisman, landing in the hands of Xu Qing.

"Cracking Mountain Palace, Zhou Yue!"

"Blood Hawk Palace, Wu Tian!"

The two also stepped forward. As they did so, golden light covered them, and golden talismans fell down.

The Condor King looked at Mu Chen who was the last one. His old face seemed to smile, as he said, "Nine Nether Palace, Mu Chen."

Mu Chen walked forward. A golden beam converged, and eventually, also turned into a golden talisman in his palm. There seemed to be a strange fluctuation being emitted from the golden talisman, and the source of the fluctuation seemed to be the summit. This made sense, as that was where the Daluo Golden Pool was.

"From now on, these four people will be the new four great commanders of the Daluo Territory!"

When the Condor King finished speaking, an overwhelming amount of cheers burst out from the crowd. In any case, the four people before them were indeed considered as the top among the young generation in the Daluo Territory. Their powers had earned everyone's recognition.

Hearing the cheers, the Condor King also smiled gently. Then, he looked at the very top of the peak of the Golden Pool. There, waves of golden light were still pouring down continuously, but this time, all the golden light torrents had bypassed the four people, who were now holding the golden

talismans.

"Now, climb to the summit."

As the Condor King waved his hand, the looks from the four people were instantly filled with anticipation. Then, they stomped their feet and ascended quickly into the air. Under the countless envious stares, they dashed directly past the golden light torrents and turned into rays of light, charging towards the magnificent peak of the Golden Pool!

The Daluo Golden Pool was finally open for them!

Chapter 694: Entering the Daluo Golden Pool

At the summit of the Golden Pool.

Golden light filled the place. When one stared at it, it was as if even one's eyes were colored gold. Golden torrents that seemed to be blotting out the sky poured out, emitting an extremely terrifying pressure.

Mu Chen dropped down from the summit. The place where he landed felt exceptionally hard, as if he were stepping on diamond. He looked ahead with a surprised expression. At the central region, the brilliant golden light seemed to be so strong that it even caused his eyes to hurt.

The golden torrents that filled the entire peak of the Golden Pool were spreading out from there.

As the golden torrents rushed past, they bypassed Mu Chen's body. His toes pushed against the ground, and his body flew out for 10,000 feet. Next, a remarkably extensive golden pool appeared before him.

It was as if the golden pool were filled with golden liquid, and the viscous liquid was sloshing around. Occasionally, a golden bubble would slowly rise and then explode. When it burst apart, a golden torrent would immediately sweep out.

Is this the Daluo Golden Pool?

Mu Chen stared at the golden pool, somewhat astonished. Although the pool looked rather calm, for some reason Mu Chen felt an intense danger, as if the golden pool were a peerless beast.

Since the Daluo Golden Pool had the power to strengthen the Sovereign Celestial Body, it was definitely extraordinary.

Vroom.

The sound of objects whizzing through the air could be heard. Xu Qing, Zhou Yue, and Wu Tian also landed around the area, staring with much anticipation at the pool emitting golden light.

The Sovereign Celestial Body was a very important means for a sovereign master. The Daluo Golden Pool before them could strengthen the Sovereign Celestial Body and make it stronger and more refined. This was undoubtedly strikingly attractive to people like them who had just entered the Sovereign-level.

When the four people, including Mu Chen, appeared beside the Daluo Golden Pool, the virile and low voice of the Condor King spread from the sky like thunder. "The Daluo Golden Pool has already opened. You can enter it individually. In the Daluo Golden Pool, the water has millions of pounds of pressure. The lower you go, the more pressure you will experience, so you cannot rush down recklessly. Otherwise, you will cause yourself suffering.

"As for whether you can cultivate the legendary Daluo Golden Body successfully, it all depends on your own fortune. Remember not to force it."

Hearing so, all four nodded in acknowledgement.

"Haha, you three, let's see who will be luckier this time." Xu Qing smiled gently at the rest. Then, without further hesitation, his toes kicked off the ground, and his body turned into a streamer which flew into the Daluo Golden Pool.

His body charged in, but did not actually cause any waves to be formed on the surface of the pool. It seemed as if he had sunk into a bottomless mire, and it looked somewhat frightening.

Zhou Yue and Wu Tian also followed immediately without any hesitation.

Seeing that the three had vanished into the Daluo Golden Pool, Mu Chen also took a deep breath, and the spiritual energy in his body quietly surged. He turned into a beam of light and dashed into the Daluo Golden Pool directly.

Plop.

When he dashed into the Daluo Golden Pool, a soft plop sounded off

near his ears. Then, golden color filled his eyes. Immediately, a terrifying power gushed towards him from all directions as if it were trying to crush him into pieces.

Rumble!

On the surface of Mu Chen's body, lightning bloomed out instantly, and his whole body was electrified. Obviously, he had activated the Thunder God Physique to its extreme. Then, his feet kicked in the liquid, and his body swam swiftly down the Daluo Golden Pool like a fish.

In the Daluo Golden Pool, it was clear that the deeper he went, the more benefits he would receive. Of course, the pressure below was also much stronger. If a person did not have the sufficient abilities, going down recklessly would be like committing suicide.

Splash.

Mu Chen's body swam across the viscous golden liquid rapidly and brought about the soft sound of water. His body continued to descend.

Golden light filled the surroundings. In the Daluo Golden Pool, it was as if even the senses were suppressed to their minimum range. Outside the pool, Mu Chen could easily sense objects within over 100,000 feet. However, in this place, it was not even 100 feet.

Rumble.

Lightning circled around the surface of Mu Chen's body, but his diving speed was gradually becoming slower because the pressure in the surroundings was increasing. Even though he had activated the Thunder God Physique to its extreme, he still felt waves of pain on his skin.

While the pressure was gushing towards Mu Chen, he noticed that thin rays of golden light were also rushing continuously into his body. That was a very special power: where the golden light passed, Mu Chen could feel his muscles, bones, and even blood gradually becoming hotter, as if they were being strengthened in a stove.

Such a magical and formidable Daluo Golden Pool, Mu Chen praised in his heart. Relying on the Thunder God Physique alone, he could actually

dive to only about 2,000 feet. The pressure there was really terrifying.

I can summon my Sovereign Celestial Body.

Mu Chen's hands formed a seal, and a spiritual energy storm immediately burst out from his body. The golden liquid around him was pushed aside. A huge figure appeared outside Mu Chen and shrouded him.

As the Great Solar Undying Body appeared, the pressure enveloping Mu Chen was instantly gone. He smiled and moving his mind, the Great Solar Undying Body continued to dive quickly again.

After summoning the Great Solar Undying Body, Mu Chen's diving speed increased right away. As he dove deeper, he could feel the golden energy that was gushing towards him also became richer.

When the golden energy came into contact with his Sovereign Celestial Body, Mu Chen immediately discovered in surprise that the Sovereign Celestial Body actually produced a buzzing, trembling sound. It looked like a starving person who saw a lot of food and started to wildly absorb the golden energy at a greedy pace.

As the Sovereign Celestial Body crazily devoured the energy, traces of golden light began to drift on the surface of the giant Sovereign Celestial Body.

Mu Chen still continued to dive.

The dive finally slowly stopped when Mu Chen reached about 8,000 feet deep because even with the power of the Great Solar Undying Body, he still vaguely felt some pressure there.

Mu Chen scanned around, and golden light still flooded his view. Moving his mind, the Great Solar Undying Body sat cross-legged. The golden energy there was already extremely rich and was sufficient for his cultivation.

He remembered the Condor King's earlier reminder. The Daluo Golden Pool was clearly extraordinary, and it would probably be unwise to dive deeper just for the sake of it.

I'll cultivate here.

The giant hands of the Great Solar Undying Body slowly formed a seal. When he breathed in and out, it was as if the sound of thunder could be heard. As Mu Chen entered the cultivation state, the Sun of Brightness behind the head of the Great Solar Undying Body also started to quietly turn.

Boom!

When the sun started turning, the golden water in the area seemed to begin boiling. Golden light turned into torrents and converged towards him continuously. Eventually, the torrents were refined by the great solar flames and absorbed by the Great Solar Undying Body directly.

The water in the Daluo Golden Pool was as heavy as mountains. Although the energy contained in it was magical, it was not easy to separate the energy out. Many people who had entered the pool could only refine the liquid slowly using their own spiritual energy. On the other hand, Mu Chen was absorbing the energy like a whale, and it was so fast that if people were to see it, they would probably have been dumbstruck.

With such speed, the surface of Mu Chen's huge Sovereign Celestial Body also seemed to be covered in a thin layer of golden light. On its body, the drifting traces of golden light began to expand slowly as well.

...

Outside the peak of the Golden Pool, everyone raised their heads to look at the summit which was filled with golden light. Intense envy could be seen in the eyes of many. After all, the power of the Daluo Golden Pool was very attractive to most sovereigns.

In the sky, the three kings stood in midair. Four golden talismans floated before them. These four golden talismans were connected to the ones held by Mu Chen and the rest, and could sense each other.

All four golden talismans were emitting golden light, and the golden light was gradually growing brighter.

The three kings all stared at the four golden talismans. Generally

speaking, the deeper a person dove in the Daluo Golden Pool and the stronger the power he had absorbed from the Golden Pool, the brighter the golden light given off by his talisman would be. Obviously, if he were to go deeper, he would obtain more benefits.

"Seems that the four great commanders this time are stronger than the previous batches. Their locations now should be between 5,000 to 10,000 feet deep." Looking at the light from the four golden talismans, the Condor King smiled uncontrollably.

The Sleeping King also opened his eyes slightly, after which he closed them again and muttered, "Seems that no one could obtain the Golden Body again."

The Condor King and the Spiritual Pupil King both smiled resignedly. It was too demanding. From their estimation over the years, if a person wanted to cultivate the Daluo Golden Body in the Daluo Golden Pool, he had to dive to at least 20,000 feet deep. Only with the help of the pressure there and the extremely pure power of the Golden Pool could he cultivate the Daluo Golden Body.

Unfortunately, over the years there had been very few commanders who could dive to that kind of depth.

"Let's wait and see. It's not over yet, after all," the Condor King said.

The Sleeping King nodded but was non-committal.

The Spiritual Pupil King looked at the Sleeping King suddenly and asked, "Brother Meng, may I ask if there is any news about the Dominator recently? The Great Hunt is approaching..."

The Sleeping King smiled and shook his head, after which he replied, "Brother Spiritual Pupil, don't worry. When it's time, the Dominator will appear naturally."

Hearing so, the Spiritual Pupil King could only smile.

The three kings fell into silence. They stared at the four golden talismans before them, but clearly they were somewhat downhearted. It seemed that nothing surprising would happen.

Among the four great commanders in this batch, is there nobody who can reach that level?

Chapter 695: Twenty Thousand Feet

Splash.

In the depths of the Daluo Golden Pool, a giant sat cross-legged quietly. Around him, the pool water that was as viscous as a golden slurry was flowing slowly. Eventually, it began gushing into the figure steadily.

Behind the head of the giant, a huge sun was turning, emitting waves of flaming brightness, refining the golden slurry that was gushing over everything completely. Then, it was turned into beams of golden light that would eventually be absorbed by the giant.

As more and more golden slurry was refined, the slowly drifting golden rays on the body of the giant were also gradually becoming thicker. Faintly, the golden rays looked like small snakes that were climbing on the body of the giant.

Where the golden snakes swam past, a vague golden trace would be left behind, and a divine power would be given off, as if they were causing the sovereign celestial body to become more condensed. This sovereign celestial body was clearly Mu Chen's Great Solar Undying Body.

At the moment, Mu Chen was sitting cross-legged inside the Great Solar Undying Body. His originally closed eyes now opened slowly, and he looked at the sovereign celestial body that was enveloping him, eventually staring at the area where the golden snakes were swimming.

From what he sensed, the power that he had absorbed from the Golden Pool had turned into eight golden snakes. The eight golden snakes were circling around the sovereign celestial body and, whenever they started to swim, it would bring about a scorching feeling. The spiritual energy then would seem to be particularly brisk, or even boiling.

Mu Chen knew that, by the time he refined the eight golden snakes, his Great Solar Undying Body would become stronger, but... Mu Chen frowned slightly, thinking on this... The increase in power was below his expectation, as he was still far away from the so-called Daluo Golden Body...

"The power of the Golden Pool that I absorb here is far from sufficient."

Mu Chen seemed to still be pondering. Although the power of the Golden Pool contained at this depth was already very abundant, it was clearly impossible to cultivate the Daluo Golden Body at this place.

Mu Chen's eyes sparkled slightly. Then, he looked downwards to stare at the deeper parts of the Daluo Golden Pool, where it was still filled with brilliant golden color. It looked endless, and its depth was somewhat frightening.

After entering the Daluo Golden Pool, Mu Chen knew well how strong the pressure here was. If he did not rely on the Great Solar Undying Body, he would not be able to reach his current position, at least not just by relying upon his own power, which was grade one sovereign.

However, at the moment, even this position could not satisfy Mu Chen, because he knew that he entered the Daluo Golden Pool not just to simply strengthen his sovereign celestial body. He was more ambitious than others, because he needed power.

Mu Chen's eyes sparkled. Then, he took a deep breath, and his look gradually turned cold. He firmly believed that, in the world, he could not obtain any power without working hard. Since he wanted to get that kind of power, he had to pay the corresponding price.

If he was helpless, just because of the Daluo Golden Body at the moment, what could he do when he was faced with more dangerous challenges in the future? Could he keep retreating? In that way of thinking, maybe he would never be able to fulfill the promise that he made to that girl.

Mu Chen, hesitant no more, moved his hands to form a seal abruptly, and the sovereign celestial body trembled, after which, it actually started to quickly descend towards the deeper parts of the Daluo Golden Pool again.

Splash.

The huge sovereign celestial body tore the viscous golden liquid apart

brutally. A strong spiritual energy rippled out, guarding against the terrifying pressure that was gushing towards him, like the tides, from all directions.

One thousand feet... Two thousand feet...

In just about ten breaths' time, Mu Chen had already dove for about four thousand feet again. At the moment, he was about twelve thousand feet deep into the Daluo Golden Pool.

As Mu Chen dove continuously, he could also feel that the pressure gushing towards him was quickly multiplying. The pressure increased rapidly, like many mountains stacked together. However, facing such pressure, Mu Chen still showed no signs of hesitation, but continued to dive!

The spiritual light around the sovereign celestial body was already totally suppressed back into its body, because of the terrible pressure. The pressure was so strong that, even though Mu Chen was protected inside the sovereign celestial body, he still faintly felt some pain.

"It's fifteen thousand feet..."

Mu Chen gritted his teeth lightly and his skin was gradually turning red, but his black eyes showed no signs of retreat. Instead, they were filled with increasing passion and perseverance, because he could feel that, in the deeper parts of the Daluo Golden Pool, the power of the Golden Pool contained in the liquid was strikingly rich. Hence, only in the deepest parts would it be possible to cultivate the Daluo Golden Body.

It's still not enough!

Mu Chen's eyes were slightly red. Again, he controlled the Great Solar Undying Body to continue diving. At such a depth, every time he went down for a hundred feet, the pressure would multiply wildly.

Even though Mu Chen had the Great Solar Undying Body, his diving speed still became slower and slower, as if he had sunk into the mud. This time, half an hour passed, but Mu Chen actually did not even dive for a thousand feet.

Furthermore, the horrible pressure brought about by the thousand feet of depth actually caused the Great Solar Undying Body to decrease significantly in size. Even the originally bright spiritual light became somewhat dim.

However, Mu Chen still did not give up. His black eyes stared at the deeper parts, and he ignored the drops of blood that were seeping out from his red skin.

The viscous golden pool water was torn apart forcefully and the sovereign celestial body continued its dive. Another one thousand feet... one thousand and five hundred feet... two thousand feet...

...

Outside the peak of the Golden Pool.

In the place, everyone stared at the four golden talismans, but the three kings all looked emotionless. Over the years, the Daluo Golden Pool had been opened many times, and they had seen such calm situations many times. Therefore, they would show much emotion.

After all, in their eyes, as long as a person did not cultivate the Daluo Golden Body in the Daluo Golden Pool, the other levels of achievements were all the same and did not differ much. It was, at most, like the difference between a person, who had walked fifty steps, and another, who had walked a hundred.

Buzz.

While the three kings were looking casual, suddenly, one out of the four golden talisman grew brighter. Golden light spread out and actually outshone the light from the other three golden talismans.

Even though the light from the other three golden talismans was also becoming stronger, it was insignificant when compared to the speed at which the brightness of the fourth golden talisman was increasing.

Because of the scene, everyone was somewhat surprised, after which, some exclaims could be heard. Clearly, they knew what the brightness of the four golden talismans represented.

Judging from the brightness, there was obviously someone who was trying to break into the deeper parts of the Daluo Golden Pool. The golden light surged into the eyes of the three kings, whose looks also suddenly turned serious. Even the Sleeping King squinted and stared at the dazzling golden talisman.

"Someone is charging towards the deeper parts of the Daluo Golden Pool," the Condor King said in surprise.

"From this brightness, he should be close to reaching twenty thousand feet deep." The Spiritual Pupil king was also somewhat amused. He knew well the dynamics of the pressure that was present at twenty thousand feet deep into the Daluo Golden Pool.

There, even grade three sovereigns could not tolerate the pressure. At the moment, the four, who had entered the pool, were clearly not that strong.

"Who exactly is it?" Their faces were filled with surprise. Because of the interference from the Daluo Golden Pool, even with their powers, they could not detect the person, who bold enough to actually dare to try reaching twenty thousand feet deep.

"Seems like this person is really ambitious." The Sleeping King finally smiled with some interest. From the looks of it, this person was definitely going for the Daluo Golden Body. Over many years, there were only a few people in the Daluo Territory who could reach such an extent.

"I just fear that he is too ambitious," the Spiritual Pupil King said, after being silent for a while.

The Condor King also frowned. While it was good to be ambitious, sometimes a person had to act according to his own abilities. The danger contained in the Daluo Golden Pool was sufficient to destroy any among the four. If the person was being too stubborn, it would probably cause him to be trapped inside.

"It has been a long time since such things last happened. Let's see if there will be anything surprising this time." The Sleeping King smiled gently and stared at the golden talisman that was becoming increasingly

bright.

Below them, Tang Bing and Tang Rou also stared at the dazzling golden talisman nervously. Then, they whispered to Nine Nether, "Sister Nine Nether, that isn't from Mu Chen, right?"

Although Mu Chen was only a grade one sovereign, who, from the looks of it, could not have dived so deep, they still felt that Mu Chen was probably the one based on the girls' instinct.

Nine Nether stared at the golden talisman and a charming smile appeared on her icy face. Nodding gently, she replied, "It should be him." Her voice was soft but extremely confident.

Among the four, Xu Qing and the other two were strong, but not enough for them to go twenty thousand feet deep. On the other hand, Mu Chen had many hidden skills, and ways and means. Therefore, only he could do such an unexpected thing.

"Let me see what level you can reach this time..." Nine Nether's rosy lips curled up slightly, as she muttered to herself.

Under countless stares, the light from the particular golden talisman became brighter and brighter. After about half an hour, it was so bright that it already seemed to be a golden sun.

The light completely outshone the other three golden talismans, causing everyone's look to be filled with some astonishment at the moment. The looks from the three kings also gradually turned from being originally unconcerned to being solemn and surprised.

Buzz!

A sudden buzzing spread from the golden talisman. Then, it was as if the golden talisman could no longer tolerate it, and actually burst out an endless amount of golden light that enveloped the region within a hundred thousand feet radius.

The bodies of the three kings trembled, and their pupils contracted uncontrollably. That person actually really dived to twenty thousand feet deep!

While everyone was astonished by the dazzling golden light, in the deepest part of the Daluo Golden Pool, a strange fluctuation also seemed to be emitting...

Chapter 696: Person at the Bottom of the Pool

Daluo Golden Pool, 20,000 feet deep.

Howl.

At such a depth in the Daluo Golden Pool, it was supposed to be extremely quiet. However, it was as if waves were violently rolling. The viscous golden pool water whizzed around wildly and seemed to have formed a huge golden whirlpool.

At the center of the whirlpool, there was actually a giant figure sitting cross-legged.

The giant was Mu Chen's Great Solar Undying Body. However, the Sovereign Celestial Body, which was originally thousands of feet in size, was now actually only hundreds of feet in size.

This was all caused by the terrifying pressure from the Daluo Golden Pool.

Inside the Sovereign Celestial Body, Mu Chen sat quietly. His body was trembling gently, and the surface of his body was covered by a thin scab. At the depth of 20,000 feet in the Daluo Golden Pool, the pressure was able to seep through the Sovereign Celestial Body and eventually act on his own body.

If he did not have those notable achievements in his physical body, he would probably have been crushed into pieces by the pressure penetrating through the Sovereign Celestial Body.

Even so, the intense pain that filled his body still caused him to tremble uncontrollably. Nevertheless, he eventually managed to just grit his teeth and tolerate the pain.

Puff.

Below the scab, Mu Chen seemed to have taken in a soft breath, and then his hands slowly formed a seal.

Boom!

When he finished forming the seal, an endless amount of light suddenly burst out from the Great Solar Undying Body. The flames of brightness spread and absorbed all the magical and vast power of the Golden Pool, and were eventually devoured by the Great Solar Undying Body.

Mu Chen had activated the Great Solar Undying Body to its extreme. Therefore, at the bottom of the Daluo Golden Pool, golden energy whizzed over steadily and continuously gushed into the gigantic figure.

The concentration of the golden energy was undoubtedly a hundred times greater than before!

Under the injection of such an astonishing amount of energy, the surface of Mu Chen's huge Great Solar Undying Body was also rapidly filled with golden light. The eight golden snakes swam around swiftly and greedily consumed the waves of golden energy that were gushing over.

The eight golden snakes were growing bigger at a noticeable pace.

A burning sensation filled every corner of the Sovereign Celestial Body, and Mu Chen felt as if he were on a stove. However, as the burning sensation became stronger, he could feel that the terrifying external pressure was gradually weakening. Obviously, the Sovereign Celestial Body was slowly becoming stronger as it absorbed the power of the Golden Pool. Therefore, the resistance against the pressure was also progressively increasing.

Time passed slowly at the bottom of the Golden Pool.

As time passed, the golden light enveloping the Great Solar Undying Body also grew more intense. From afar, it seemed as though the surface of the Sovereign Celestial Body was covered with a gold film.

Inside the Sovereign Celestial Body, Mu Chen's closed eyes opened suddenly, and he stared at the outside of the Sovereign Celestial Body. On its gigantic body, a huge golden snake quickly swam past. As the golden snake wriggled, golden claws suddenly emerged below its body. Golden lumps also rose slowly on the snake's head.

This signaled that the snake was evolving.

Seeing the scene, some thoughts seemed to flash across Mu Chen's eyes. He looked at the other seven golden snakes and discovered that they were evolving slowly as well. As they evolved, Mu Chen could feel that a magical power seemed to be subtly gushing out from their bodies.

The fluctuation caused the Great Solar Undying Body to tremble slightly, as if it could no longer wait.

This Daluo Golden Body actually needs me to turn the snakes into dragons...

Mu Chen's eyes sparkled. It seemed that in order to cultivate the Daluo Golden Body, he had to make the eight golden snakes evolve into dragons. However, this clearly required a very large power from the Golden Pool, and one could only get the sufficient amount of power at the very deepest parts of the pool.

I will let you absorb as much as you want!

Mu Chen grinned. As he changed his seals, a strong attractive force gushed out from the Great Solar Undying Body again and devoured all the power of the Golden Pool, which was continuously rushing over.

As the Sovereign Celestial Body absorbed the power of the Golden Pool at full force, the eight golden snakes also swallowed the power greedily, and the rate of evolution increased once more.

Time passed in the depths of the Golden Pool. In the blink of an eye, three days had passed.

In the Sovereign Celestial Body, when Mu Chen opened his eyes again, he could hear a sudden howl spreading. Raising his head, he noticed that on the surface of the Sovereign Celestial Body, the eight giant golden snakes were struggling continuously. As they struggled, golden scales constantly fell off of their bodies. They wriggled and dragon claws started to slowly emerge.

When dragon horns also grew on the heads of the golden snakes, the howls from the eight golden snakes suddenly became low and actually

turned into real dragon howls. The mighty dragon howls spread and caused golden waves to form at the depths of the Golden Pool.

I did it!

Mu Chen watched the scene in surprise. He had finally fed the eight golden snakes sufficiently.

Roar!

However, just as the eight golden snakes successfully evolved into golden dragons, they did not merge with the Sovereign Celestial Body directly. Instead, they wound around the Great Solar Undying Body and gave out a low roar towards the bottom of the Golden Pool.

The roar seemed to be pressing.

The eight golden dragons opened their huge mouths. A violent gust of wind whizzed out and swept towards the deepest part of the Daluo Golden Pool like a tornado. The deepest part was filled with golden light and looked like particles of endless silt.

The silt was golden in color and looked like molten gold, dazzling and eye-catching.

Splash.

The golden silt was swept off bit by bit and continuously flew towards the Sovereign Celestial Body.

Sizzle!

As the golden silt covered and stuck onto the Sovereign Celestial Body, white mist burst out immediately. The golden silt actually had an extremely high temperature.

At this instant, Mu Chen's expression turned worrisome.

That was because he realized that as the golden silt adhered to the Great Solar Undying Body, it actually started to slowly melt. The seemingly harmless golden silt was in fact the most terrifying object in the Daluo Golden Pool.

Damn it!

Mu Chen gritted his teeth and cursed. The golden dragons had caused him a lot of trouble. But from the look of it, this seemed to be the last step in the cultivation of the Daluo Golden Body.

Thus, regardless of how shocked Mu Chen was, he had to persist no matter what.

Splash.

The golden dragons drew so much golden silt over that it seemed to be blotting out the sky and the earth. Eventually, it poured down like a rainstorm. Covered in the silt rainstorm, the Great Solar Undying Body was also soon engulfed by it along with the eight golden dragons.

Sizzle.

The white mist still continued to rise. Mu Chen, who was sitting cross-legged inside the Sovereign Celestial Body, also started to tremble wildly. His entire body was red and blood continuously seeped out from his pores. However, he gritted his teeth hard and did not make any sound at all.

The terrifying temperature was not only burning the Sovereign Celestial Body but was also transmitted onto his body. He felt as if he had been thrown into a pool of underground magma and would be burned into ashes at any moment.

Mu Chen knelt down with his hands supporting himself in front. Sweat was mixed with blood and rolled down from his body. As he gritted his teeth firmly, there was similarly blood seeping out from the crevices between his teeth. His black eyes were filled with streaks of blood and looked particularly ferocious.

Sizzle.

The golden silt continuously flew over and almost covered the Sovereign Celestial Body completely in the end. Under the burn from the golden silt, the Great Solar Undying Body was also gradually shrinking.

It was as if the Celestial Body was being melted.

Sharp pain crazily charged into Mu Chen's mind. Soon, he could no long tolerate it even with his strong perseverance. As blood flew out from his body, his consciousness began to slowly weaken.

He could feel that under the covering of the golden silt, the eight golden dragons were gradually being merged into the Great Solar Undying Body. As long as he could persist until the end, he would be able to cultivate the Daluo Golden Body successfully.

Hence, at this moment, he must persist!

Splash.

While Mu Chen was trying to hold on at the bottom of the Golden Pool, the golden silt was still being swept away continuously. Layers of silt lifted...

As the layers of golden silt were removed, at some point, Mu Chen seemed to feel something. Enduring the sharp pain, he strained to open his eyes and look below.

Then, his eyes narrowed immediately and were filled with horror.

In the deepest part of the Daluo Golden Pool, the golden silt was dancing around, slowly revealing a golden stone platform. The golden platform was only about ten feet long. At the moment, there seemed to be a tiny figure lying calmly on the golden platform.

There is actually a person at the bottom of the Daluo Golden Pool?

The abrupt discovery caused Mu Chen to feel uncontrollably shocked. For a moment, he could even endure the intense pain from his body. He looked over hurriedly and realized that the figure on the golden stone platform seemed to be a naked girl. The girl looked like she was 11 or 12 and had black hair down to her knees. Even though her appearance could not be seen clearly, her petite look was extremely adorable.

Who is she? Why is she here?

However, at the moment, Mu Chen did not feel that she was cute at all, because it was glaringly obvious that the weird little girl was not simple.

Mu Chen got an incredibly dangerous feeling from her.

Just as Mu Chen was somewhat shocked by the strange little girl who had appeared at the bottom of the Daluo Golden Pool, the little girl's long eyelashes suddenly moved slightly. Then, to Mu Chen's astonishment, she slowly opened her eyes.

She had a pair of golden pupils. However, the apathy within them caused Mu Chen to feel so frightened, it was as if his head had exploded.

Chapter 697: Mandela

Deep within the Daluo Golden Pool, when the strange girl with golden eyes opened her eyes, a chill struck Mu Chen. Without hesitation, he bore the pain within and activated The Great Solar Undying Body. He wanted to leave the place quickly.

Just as he was about to move, the girl with golden eyes looked indifferently at him. She stood up and stepped forth.

Swoosh.

Mu Chen suddenly froze. He looked shocked and dared not move. The little girl had appeared before him. She then passed through the defense of the Sovereign Celestial Body and came before Mu Chen's actual body.

Mu Chen broke out in a cold sweat. He could sense death knocking at his door from the girl's eyes. He believed that the mysterious little girl could easily take his life. There were no feelings in her eyes.

Mu Chen lifted up his head, with much difficulty, and managed to take a good look at the girl. She was fair and expressionless. She looked delicate and had a small build, with long black hair down to her knees.

If Mu Chen had met such a cute girl any other day, he would have been attracted to her. However, he could only feel chilled at this moment. He dared not look at her naked body.

The little girl quietly watched Mu Chen. Her long eyelashes moved, and she stretched out her small hand toward Mu Chen's head.

Upon seeing this, Mu Chen turned pale. He wanted to back away, but the surrounding space had frozen. His connection with The Great Solar Undying Body had been cut off. This girl was extremely powerful.

Mu Chen's body froze, and he could only watch the little girl placing her hand on his forehead. She said softly, "You are feeling pain..."

Red lights suddenly surged in her hand. The red lights then covered Mu

Chen's body, causing him to shiver. He then felt the pain in his body going away. Within a few split seconds, the pain in his body was completely gone.

Mu Chen was shocked, and lifted up his head. He saw that the red lights had retracted from between his eyebrows, back to the little girl's hand.

As the red lights retracted to the girl's hand, her hand shook. Her expressionless face moved slightly, and she seemed to be in pain.

When Mu Chen saw this, he could not believe his eyes. The little girl was able to take away the pain from a person's body! However, when she did it, her body would...

That was to say, she had borne the excruciating pain that Mu Chen had experienced earlier. However, she had only reacted slightly, even while bearing such pain.

Is this little girl a strange creature?

After the little girl had drawn away the pain from Mu Chen's body, she no longer bothered herself with him. Instead, she lifted up her face and scrutinized The Great Solar Undying Body. The golden lights in her eyes seemed to be checking on the Sovereign Celestial Body.

After scrutinizing it for a while, her golden eyes turned grave, and she shivered. She bit her lips, then muttered in a shaky voice, "Is this...The Great Solar Undying Body?"

She spoke softly, but Mu Chen had heard her. He was dumbfounded, as he stared at the mysterious little girl. After so many years, this was the first time that someone had recognized The Great Solar Undying Body...

"You...you know about The Great Solar Undying Body?" Mu Chen asked.

The little girl paid no attention to him, but knit her brows together. She suddenly turned to look at Mu Chen, before laying her hand on Mu Chen's chest.

Mu Chen then became nervous, as he could feel the Sovereign Sea in his body surging. He suddenly sensed the Immortal Page shaking

continuously. It seemed as though an invisible force was trying to grab it away.

When Mu Chen realized this, he was enraged. This little girl was too outrageous.

The Immortal Page was Mu Chen's deepest secret. This was the clue to The Primordial Immortal Body. He would never let anyone snatch it away.

Mu Chen stomped his feet, and The Great Solar Undying Body shone forth numerous colorful rays. The power that had restrained Mu Chen had been released, and he moved back vigorously.

Swoosh!

However, as he dashed out, the rays of light gathered before him. The little girl followed closely behind, with her hand placed on Mu Chen's chest.

Mu Chen's eyes were glittering fiercely. He gritted his teeth and changed the seal. The Immortal Page in his Sovereign Sea exuded a mysterious purple light.

The purple light runes from the Immortal Page spread out, before dashing out of the Sovereign Sea to the top of Mu Chen's head. They then turned into a huge purple mandala flower.

Then, the mandala flower started to bloom. Under the purple light, it was like a vine, as it speedily twined itself around the little girl.

The little girl stopped moving, and Mu Chen used the chance to escape. He was cautious and filled with fear.

The little girl did not struggle. She lifted up her face to look at the mandala flower. Her expressionless face had now turned into a sweet smile. In fact, she looked as though she had seen something that she adored.

As the purple light from the mandala flower shone on the little girl, it entered into her body. Her face livened up, and she no longer looked

indifferent.

Mu Chen was shocked when he saw this. He looked at The Great Solar Undying Body, realizing that the golden silt that had been surrounding the Sovereign Celestial Body had fallen off in pieces. The slits fell off at an increasing speed, shooting forth dazzling golden lights.

Mu Chen stared hard at The Great Solar Undying Body. He wanted to find out if he had successfully cultivated the Daluo Golden Body.

The golden silt had fallen off completely, and dazzling golden lights had swirled out. The Great Solar Undying Body sat cross-legged within the golden lights. Its huge body was dazzling, as though it was made of a gold that could not be destroyed.

There were pictures of eight golden dragons on its body. They seemed to be embedded in the Sovereign Celestial Body, and they looked real. They were majestic and seemed to be protecting the Sovereign Celestial Body.

The Great Solar Undying Body sat at the bottom of the Daluo Golden Pool, like a golden Buddha. It looked invincible, as though no other power could penetrate its Sovereign Celestial Body.

After The Great Solar Undying Body possessed the Daluo Golden Body, it had become more valiant. Mu Chen reckoned that, even if it had been attacked by a Grade Three Sovereign, it would be able to withstand the blow.

He was pleased as he watched The Great Solar Undying Body. It had indeed been worth his pain and effort in cultivating the Daluo Golden Body.

After a while, he recollected himself, as there was a terrifying little girl before his eyes...

Mu Chen turned to look at the little girl, who was under the purple light of the mandala flower. He looked fearful, for he knew that, even though he had successfully cultivated the Daluo Golden Body, it was nothing in the eyes of the powerful little girl.

Mu Chen's eyes glittered, and he changed the seal. The mandala flower

shot backward. It then turned into purple light and entered into his body.

The purple light that was covering the little girl had dissipated. The little girl raised her brows and looked angrily at Mu Chen. Her golden eyes were surging with golden lights.

"This thing belongs to me...I need to make a move." Mu Chen smiled wryly.

The little girl knit her brows and thought for a while, her head tilted. She stepped forth and pounced toward Mu Chen. When Mu Chen saw this, he reflexively caught her in his arms.

Mu Chen went blank, as he touched the little girl's body. It was smooth and tender. When he recollected himself, he felt like throwing her away, for he knew that this little girl was not as cute as she looked...

However, he did not do it. He looked down at her and saw that she was lying still in his arms, her face stuck to his chest. Mu Chen could feel purple lights exuding from the Immortal Page, entering into the little girl's body.

Her exquisite porcelain doll-liked face was expressionless. Mu Chen felt less fearful of her, now that she had shut her eyes. This little girl seemed to adore the Immortal Page in his body.

Mu Chen smiled wryly, as he took out a black top to cover her naked body. After hesitating for a while, he cautiously asked, "Who are you? What is your name?"

The little girl had her eyes shut, and after some time, she said in a low voice, "Mandela."

Chapter 698: The Golden Pool was Sealed

"Mandela?"

When Mu Chen heard this strange name, he was stunned. He got a close look at the girl, but she continued to shut her eyes and could not be bothered with him. Mu Chen could only smile wryly.

He did not know anything about the little girl, and he was curious about her. She was extremely powerful and had surpassed the three kings of Daluo Territory.

She seemed familiar with the Immortal Page. Otherwise, she would not have known that Mu Chen had cultivated the Great Solar Undying Body. This was a rare Sovereign Celestial Body which was not recorded in the 99 Sovereign Celestial Body rankings.

Mu Chen was wary and fearful of her. However, it seemed like she had no intention of leaving and wanted to stick with him. Mu Chen dared not oppose her, for he was afraid that she might kill him if she was enraged.

He would not want to die in that manner.

Moreover, she had stayed because of the Immortal Page.

Sigh...

Mu Chen carried Mandela and sighed helplessly. He formed a seal, and the Great Solar Undying Body shot up, splitting the thick golden lake water apart.

Since Mu Chen had successfully cultivated the Daluo Golden Body, he found it pointless to stay. He could also feel that the Daluo Golden Pool would be sealed up soon.

...

Outside the Golden Pool.

The temperature had been high for the past few days. It came from the golden talisman that had been shining like a scorching sun.

Throughout the years that the Daluo Golden Pool had been open, this was the first time that the rays were so strong.

Anyone would have guessed that someone was cultivating the Daluo Golden Body, and the person had been successful in doing so.

Many people were taken aback and at the same time, curious. They were dying to find out who the genius was among the four great commanders.

After all, many geniuses had failed to cultivate the Daluo Golden Body all these years.

The three kings stood quietly in the air and stared at the golden talisman. They looked increasingly shocked.

The light from the talisman had shone for four days without dimming. That was to say, the person who had gone deep down in the Golden Pool had persevered.

"This is interesting," Sleeping King said in amusement. He had been indifferent, but this had aroused his interest.

Condor King and Spiritual Pupil King were shocked as well. Their eyes were shimmering, and they were keen to find out who it was that had such a great achievement. This was the first time throughout the years that someone had successfully cultivated the Daluo Golden Body. Who is this person?

Nine Nether and the other eight Lords looked shocked as well. Lord Asura, Lord Mountain Cracker, and Lord Blood Hawk were tense. If their commanders were the ones who had made it in the Daluo Golden Pool Contest, that would make them famous.

Sleeping King squinted and said suddenly, "It is almost time. The Daluo Golden Pool is about to seal up."

Boom!

Golden lights shot up from the towering hilltop. Everyone hastily looked

up and saw three huge shadows tearing the golden light apart before appearing in the sky.

All eyes were fixed on the sky.

The three huge shadows were Sovereign Celestial Bodies. Golden lights were dazzling around them, making them look invulnerable and valiant. A strong wind whizzed past them.

When the people saw the three Sovereign Celestial Bodies, they were disappointed. Although the three Sovereign Celestial Bodies were valiant, they were far from achieving the Daluo Golden Body.

Dong!

At the peak of the Golden Pool, a huge golden light beam shot up to the sky, and a huge golden figure stepped forth.

The huge shadow was as bright as gold, with a huge sun hanging behind his head. Eight dragon symbols seemed to be moving on its body, and cries of a dragon could indistinctly be heard.

As the golden light burst forth, an unknown oppression spread out and outshone the three Sovereign Celestial Bodies.

Everyone looked at it and gasped in shock.

"Eight dragon symbols... It is indeed the Daluo Golden Body..."

As the light died down and the Sovereign Celestial Bodies disappeared, the people saw the actual bodies of Xu Qing, Zhou Yue, and Wu Tian.

The three of them were looking at the golden Sovereign Celestial Body as well. Xu Qing and Zhou Yue looked confused, whereas Wu Tian found it unbelievable. He was filled with envy and unhappiness.

No one had expected Mu Chen to have successfully cultivated the Daluo Golden Body!

They had gone deep into the Daluo Golden Pool and knew how

horrifying the pressure was. It was not within their ability to go down beyond 2,000 feet to absorb the power of the Golden Pool.

However, Mu Chen had managed to do it, and he only had the strength of a Grade One Sovereign!

Xu Qing and Zhou Yue looked at Mu Chen and turned grave. They suddenly became fearful of him. This mild-looking youth seemed to have kept many things within himself.

Wu Tian looked grim, and a murderous intent flashed in his eyes. His desire to kill Mu Chen grew stronger as Mu Chen became more powerful.

"It is Mu Chen!"

Tang Bing and Tang Rou were elated. Many people from the Nine Nether Troop were excited as well. They started to look at Mu Chen with admiration. After all these years, Mu Chen was the only commander who had managed to cultivate the Daluo Golden Body in the Daluo Golden Pool.

Nine Nether had looked indifferent but now smiled. Mu Chen's achievement had made Nine Nether Palace famous. No one in the Daluo Territory would ever dare to look down on Nine Nether Palace again.

The eight Lords were shocked with the outcome. Most of them shook their heads in disbelief.

Lord Blood Hawk was the only one who sat on the stone platform looking grimly at the bright golden body.

Sleeping King laughed and said, "Hahaha, it is truly him."

Condor King looked pleased and said, "It seems like Nine Nether has brought back a guy with great potential." Nine Nether had good foresight. Mu Chen was way better than Cao Feng in terms of his personality and potential.

Spiritual Pupil King smiled and looked unfathomable.

The Sovereign Celestial Body that seemed to be made of gold gradually

disappeared, and Mu Chen appeared before the people.

There was an uproar. Although they knew that it was Mu Chen when they saw the Sovereign Celestial Body, now that it had been confirmed, they could not help feeling emotional.

No one had expected such an outcome.

This was the first time in Daluo Territory's history that a Grade One Sovereign had successfully cultivated the Daluo Golden Body. Mu Chen was the only one.

Mu Chen felt at a loss in the sky. He was certain that the little girl, Mandela, was in his arms earlier, but there was no one in his arms now...

"She must have hidden herself."

Mu Chen smiled wryly. This little girl was extremely powerful. If she had wanted to hide herself, even the three kings would not have found her. Mu Chen could not tell if it was a misfortune to have met her.

"Hahaha, congratulations, Mu Chen. You are the first one at Grade One Sovereign to cultivate the Daluo Golden Body. You have broken the record." As Mu Chen was feeling lost, he heard the Condor King laughing loudly.

"Thank you, masters."

Mu Chen looked at the three kings and cupped his fist.

"You are capable." Sleeping King, who was reserved, smiled. He suddenly frowned and looked baffled. After a while, he shook his head and ignored the illusion that he had.

Condor King looked at the crowd and said, "The Daluo Golden Pool Contest ends here." He suddenly lowered his voice and said, "The Great Hunting Battle is around the corner. I hope everyone will hone their skills."

At the mention of the Great Hunting Battle, the noise suddenly died down, and there was a great silence. Indistinctly, a cold, bloody chill filled the air.

"Yes!" the nine Lords replied in a deep voice.

When the three kings heard their response, they did not say another word. They waved their sleeves, and the golden light on the peak of the Golden Pool disappeared. The current had been blocked, and the peak of the Golden Pool sealed up.

Mu Chen landed toward the direction of Nine Nether Palace. Everyone gathered together with joy.

"Let's go."

Nine Nether smiled at Mu Chen and led the people out. She had no intention of staying.

As they were walking down the stone platform, they came face to face with Lord Blood Hawk, who was leading his group of mighty men out. As Nine Nether brushed past Lord Blood Hawk, the killing intent in their eyes was so immense that it sent a cold chill down everyone's spines.

Lord Blood Hawk stopped beside Mu Chen and looked at him with his red eyes. He said flatly, "There are too many geniuses in this world. Be careful. Don't die too early..."

Mu Chen squinted and smiled coldly.

Chapter 699: The Great Hunting Battle

In Nine Nether Palace.

When the Daluo Golden Pool Contest had ended, Nine Nether Palace was filled with joy. Everyone was excited. For the past few years, when Nine Nether went missing, Nine Nether Palace's position in Daluo Territory had been on the decline. Other sects had been suppressing them, but they could only swallow the insult.

Fortunately, they had not waited in vain, as Nine Nether had returned strong. The newly appointed commander had displayed great strength and was driven. He had not only defeated Cao Feng and got a place in the Golden Pool Contest, he had successfully cultivated the Daluo Golden Body, which no one had done before.

All the masters in the Daluo Territory were shocked. No one in the Daluo Territory would ever dare look down on Nine Nether Palace from now on.

...

Nine Nether leaned against a pillar in the main hall, smiling gently as she looked at Nine Nether Palace, which was a place now filled with joy.

"It is all thanks to you," Nine Nether tilted her head and said to Mu Chen with a smile.

Although Nine Nether's return had brought back some life to Nine Nether Palace, she could not interfere in the matters, due to the rules of the Daluo Territory. Mu Chen's achievement had brought back vitality to Nine Nether Palace and increased their confidence.

"It is my honor to serve the princess," Mu Chen said jokingly.

Nine Nether pouted her lips and looked extremely gentle. Her beautiful eyes seemed to be filled with halos, making her look captivating.

"You are in the limelight now, so you have to be careful. Lord Blood

Hawk is narrow-minded, and he will seek revenge for the smallest grievance. I am not afraid of him, but I am worried that he might use covert means," Nine Nether squinted her eyes and said.

Mu Chen nodded. He then asked, "What is the Great Hunting Battle that the Condor King was talking about?"

At the mention of the Great Hunting Battle, Nine Nether looked grave and became serious. After a while, she said, "This is a cruel battle that involves all the forces of the North Territory in the Tianluo Continent."

Mu Chen was a bit shocked. He knew that the Tianluo Continent made up of four territories in the north, south, east and west. The Daluo Territory was located in the North Territory.

North Territory consisted of many forces, be it great or small. There were many strong forces like it around, and it was flooded with top powers. The Great Hunting Battle must be a great event, since it involved all these forces. Hence, the scale must be very big.

"After every Hunting Battle, many forces will disappear. Even those top powers will be seriously injured. For thousands of years, many top powers have been defeated in the Hunting Battle. They were then encroached by the strong groups, only to become history themselves," Nine Nether said softly.

Mu Chen's face changed, as he asked, "Why?"

He was wondering why there was such a horrifying and cruel battle.

"This is all over territory, resources, and ambition," Nine Nether said flatly. "For thousands of years, there were many outstanding people in the North Territory, but no one has successfully become the North Territory Overlord. However, this has been the ambition of everyone. The Great Hunting Battle came about because of this."

"During the previous Great Hunting Battle, there were 10 top forces.

After it ended, four top forces had been defeated and annexed by the remaining six forces."

Mu Chen was stunned. Four top forces had been defeated...He could feel the cruelty and smelled the blood simply from hearing these few words. Many Sovereign Masters must have been killed in this battle.

Although Mu Chen did not know how powerful the four top forces were, judging from the power of the Daluo Territory, they must have been very powerful. Otherwise, they would not have been known as the top forces.

If they had been placed in the Northern Heavens Continent, they would have ruled over it. However, in the North Territory of the Tianluo Continent, they were in danger of being destroyed. Thus, the competition in the North Territory must have been extremely brutal.

"The forces in North Territory will change after every Great Hunting Battle. The winner will become more powerful, whereas the loser will lose everything. No forces can be independent, according to the rules of the North Territory. Unless...the North Territory Overlord appears."

Mu Chen slowly let out the chilled air within him. This was the first time he felt the cruelty in The Great Thousand World, based on what Nine Nether had said. This was not the Northern Spiritual Academy. One could clearly see the concept of survival of the fittest being applied in this place, where even such a top force like the Daluo Territory faced many threats. If there was any slight decline in its power, many people would be eyeing it, and they would not hesitate to encroach upon it.

The Great Hunting Battle was a cruel elimination, using the natural selection method. Moreover, the Hunting Battle would continue till the Overlord appeared in this Continent.

"To survive in the Tianluo Continent, one needs to have the backing of one of the top forces. If not, he will be easily destroyed," Nine Nether said.

Mu Chen nodded his head. In such a place, where there are no rules and regulations, one would have great difficulty in progressing, unless he had someone to back him up. Mu Chen was fortunate to have the backing of the Daluo Territory. As long as the Daluo Territory remained, he would

have it as a backing. He would have to pray hard that the Daluo Territory would not be destroyed in the Great Hunting Battle...

"You don't have to worry about this. We still have some time before the Great Hunting Battle starts. Anyway, there is no point worrying over such things," Nine Nether said with a smile.

Mu Chen smiled wryly. This level of cross swords was beyond his current ability. He could only look up to it. To be in power, one has to be in the top level, like the mysterious Dominator of the Daluo Territory.

"Now, we just have to focus on what is before us." Nine Nether smiled, but her eyes looked cold. "Lord Blood Hawk has lost, and he will not leave the matter at that. Nine Nether Palace should also start to take back what belongs to us. We will participate in the Great Hunting Battle, so we must increase our strength. If not, we will be taken over by the others."

"I also wish to see the capability of Blood Hawk Palace," Mu Chen nodded and said. After Nine Nether left, the territory that had belonged to Nine Nether Palace had been snatched over by the Blood Hawk Palace. This had made them the laughing stock of the Daluo Territory. It was a shame for a Lord not to be able to protect his own territory.

However, Mu Chen would make sure that no one would laugh at them anymore. He would get back all the things that used to belong to Nine Nether Palace!

Nine Nether nodded lightly and as she was about to continue talking, she suddenly focused her attention behind Mu Chen, as she asked, "Who is she?"

Mu Chen was shocked when he heard it, and slowly turned around. A little girl in black was sitting quietly on the railing, gently shaking her legs. She looked calmly at Mu Chen with her big golden eyes.

It was Mandela, whom Mu Chen had met at the Daluo Golden Pool. However, she had disappeared after that, and now, re-appeared out of nowhere...

Nine Nether looked at Mu Chen's ghastly face. She squinted her eyes and realized that something was amiss. The little girl had appeared out of nowhere, and even Nine Nether had not realized it.

The spiritual energy in Nine Nether's body surged, and a purple flame appeared in her hand. Mandela looked flatly at Nine Nether.

Mu Chen hastily stood before Nine Nether and deterred her. He knew that Mandela was extremely powerful and that Nine Nether was no match for her.

"She is Mandela," Mu Chen said.

"Do you know her?" Nine Nether was a little taken aback and asked.

After hesitating for a while, Mu Chen told Nine Nether about Mandela. Nine Nether widened her eyes and looked at Mandela. She was shocked that Mandela had slept in the Daluo Golden Pool for so many years, and especially that the three kings and Dominator did not know of her existence.

Is she a strange creature?

Nine Nether raised her eyebrows, wary and fearful of the little girl. She was thinking about whether she should tell the Condor King about this.

"Don't tell anyone about me. Because then, even the three fellas will not be able to protect you." As she was having this thought, Mandela spoke. Her voice was clear and soft, but it still made one nervous.

Nine Nether turned pale and stared at Mandela. She asked, "Who are you?"

Mandela stood on the railing. Her long black hair flew in the wind, as she lifted up her face and said, "Don't worry. If I wanted to do anything to you, you will not be able to stop me."

Mu Chen shrugged helplessly. She was right. Given her strength, even if she had wanted to kill them, no one would be able to stop her.

Nine Nether looked at Mandela and asked, "Why are you following Mu

Chen?"

Mandela tilted her head and looked at Mu Chen. She stamped her feet and pounced toward him. When Mu Chen saw it, he smiled wryly and extended his arms to catch hold of her.

Mandela laid comfortably in Mu Chen's arms, pressing her face against his chest. She shut her intimidating golden eyes and her voice became soft.

"I want him to carry me to sleep," Mandela pouted her lips and said, before closing her eyes. When Nine Nether heard this, she could not help raising her brows.

Chapter 700: Use the Fists

Nine Nether left. However, before she left, she gave Mu Chen a weird look that caused him to twitch. She looked as though she were looking at a little girl who had been bullied...

He could not explain to her what Mandela had said and could only sigh. He then carried Mandela to his room.

Mu Chen laid her on the bed and asked after a while, "Have you come to me because of the Immortal Page?"

Mandela opened her eyes slightly and looked lazily at Mu Chen and said, "Are you thinking that I am doing this because of you?"

"Do you know about the Immortal Divine Law?" Mu Chen asked, with his eyes shimmering.

Mandela squinted like a cat, but she did not say a word. Mu Chen knew the answer and his heart pounded quickly.

She knew about the Immortal Divine Law, so she must have known about the Primordial Immortal Body!

Who is this little girl, and where is she from?

"It is better not to ask. It will not do you any good." As Mu Chen was about to ask, Mandela turned aside. Although she sounded soft, she also sounded authoritative.

Mu Chen smiled and asked, "Can you tell me, what benefit do you get from the Immortal Page in my body?"

Mandela was silent for a while before saying, "The Immortal Page contains the divine runes of Ancient Mandala Flower. This is a divine flower that has the power to seal everything. I need it to suppress the curse in my body."

"Curse?" Mu Chen was shocked.

"It is a curse that makes one feel like a living hell." Mandela sounded

extraordinarily calm and said, "It continually causes one to be in excruciating pain that even a Grade Nine Sovereign could not take."

Mu Chen was stunned. Even a Grade Nine Sovereign would not be able to take the pain?

"Would you like to try?" Mandela looked at Mu Chen and smiled. She extended her hand, and red light shot out like lightning onto Mu Chen's body.

Mu Chen froze and suddenly shook violently. His eyes turned red, and his face twitched. He let out a groan.

Mu Chen felt excruciating pain in every part of his body.

It made him lose his mind. However, the pain came quickly and went quickly as well. In a split second, the pain was gone.

Mu Chen sat on a chair and broke out in a cold sweat. He looked angrily at Mandela and said, "What have you done?"

Mandela curled up her lips and said, "It is just a short while and you can't take it? I have been bearing that pain all this time."

Mu Chen was stunned. He looked at Mandela, who was sitting on the bed, cuddling her knees. He suddenly felt sorry for her. The pain that he had experienced was only for a split second, but Mandela had been bearing it all the while. Under the torment, she was still able to remain calm. Her ability to endure could be due to her strength, but it also showed her amazing willpower.

"Can the divine runes of the mandala flower in the Immortal Page help you to remove the curse?" Mu Chen asked.

"Remove? It is not possible." Mandala laughed mockingly and said, "It can only suppress it. Only the real Ancient Mandala Flower can remove the curse."

Mu Chen was silent. He had not heard of the Ancient Mandala Flower. It must be more uncommon than the three items that he needed to cultivate

the Great Solar Undying Body.

"Don't worry, I will not snatch away your Immortal Page. It has gradually merged with you. If I snatch it away from you, the divine runes might be destroyed," Mandela said as she looked at Mu Chen. She thought that Mu Chen was worried she would snatch the Immortal Page away from him.

Mu Chen heaved a sigh of relief. He looked at Mandela and asked, "Am I right to say that your name is not Mandela?"

Mandela did not deny it. "It is just a name."

"One more thing..." Mu Chen sized Mandela up and said, "Is this how you actually look? I do not believe that a little girl can be so powerful."

The little girl must be a monster. As Mu Chen thought of himself carrying a monster, he shivered. He found it hard to accept.

When Mandela saw his look, she snorted and said, "Don't use the age of a human being to guess the age of others. In terms of age, the Nine Netherworld Bird is much older than you."

"Are you not a human being?" Mu Chen asked in shock.

Mandela glanced at Mu Chen and did not reply. She tucked herself into bed and said lazily, "You can continue to cultivate. As long as I am near you, I can tap on the divine runes of the Ancient Mandala Flower to suppress the curse."

"How does it benefit me?" Mu Chen asked with smile.

Mandela stuck her little head out of the blanket. She looked weirdly at Mu Chen and said, "I did not kill you. Is this not good enough for you?"

Mu Chen twitched his mouth. He gritted his teeth and said, "You win!"

Mu Chen sat cross-legged beside the bed and did not bother about her. He closed his eyes and made a seal. He gradually went into the mode of cultivation.

Mandela got out of the blanket and looked at Mu Chen. Lights flashed

across her big golden eyes and she muttered, "The Great Solar Undying Body has re-appeared..."

...

In the next few days, Nine Nether allowed Mu Chen to rest after the battle at Daluo Golden Pool. While he was resting, Nine Nether Palace was bustling with activity.

After the battle at Daluo Golden Pool, Mu Chen had helped Nine Nether Palace earn back some dignity. Nine Nether wanted to use the opportunity to restore the reputation of Nine Nether Palace. Among the nine Lords, Nine Nether Palace had the weakest foundation. To increase its strength, they had to at the least get back the territories that had once belonged to Nine Nether Palace.

Every year, these territories would hand over large amounts of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid, which Nine Nether Palace was short of. This was especially the case after Mu Chen had given his promise to the Nine Nether Troop.

Without sufficient Sovereign Spiritual Liquid, it would be difficult for Nine Nether Palace to survive, let alone grow. Now, the sects in the entire Daluo Territory were watching Nine Nether Palace. They were waiting to see if Nine Nether Palace, which had created such great momentum, would become a laughing stock.

On the same day, Nine Nether sent men to those cities that had once belonged to Nine Nether Palace. The message was simple:

Submit themselves to Nine Nether Palace once again.

Many people were shocked with what Nine Nether was doing, and some were laughing at her. Nine Nether, after all, is a woman. She is incompetent in handling things. She thinks that the dukes who have submitted to Blood Hawk Palace will change their minds simply at her words?

The outcome was as expected. More than 50 cities had been notified,

but only a handful of dukes who had been exploited by Blood Hawk Palace had agreed to submit to Nine Nether Palace. The rest of the dukes did not reply. A few dukes who were on close terms with Blood Hawk Palace had not only refused to submit to Nine Nether Palace, they even chased the messengers out. They were extremely haughty since they had the backing of Blood Hawk Palace.

They had no regard for Nine Nether Palace as its power was weak in Daluo Territory.

The top guy in Nine Nether Palace seemed to be in a sorry state. Many people in Daluo Territory shook their heads. Those in Blood Hawk Palace mocked Nine Nether Palace, and vented their anger over the suppression from Mu Chen at Daluo Golden Pool.

As the entire Daluo Territory was watching what Nine Nether Palace was doing, it was peaceful within the palace.

In the main hall of Nine Nether Palace.

The black-armored Nine Nether Troop stood upright, and the atmosphere was filled with fighting spirit that made one shudder.

Nine Nether stood in front of the main hall with her black armor on. She looked at the scrolls in her hands with the recorded responses of the cities.

She looked calm and was not angry at all. She smiled and lifted her head to look at Mu Chen, who was below. With a flick of her fingers, the scroll landed in Mu Chen's hand.

"Here is the list. The ball is now in your court."

Mu Chen held the scroll and smiled. He turned around and looked at the army in black and said flatly, "You must have heard the news in Daluo Territory for the past few days. When some people serve a new master, they forget about the respect that they ought to have for the old. What shall we do with such people?"

"Kill them!" everyone shouted out in unison. The Nine Nether Troop was burning with killing intent. After bearing suppression for so many years, they could no longer take it lying down.

"Others are thinking that our reasoning is all talk..."

Mu Chen looked coldly around, and his body slowly rose up. In the next instant, a majestic spiritual energy swirled out like a windstorm. "Today, we shall let them know that we use our fists to reason!

"Let's go!" Mu Chen shouted. He turned into a streamer and shot out. When Tang Bing saw it, she waved her hand, and the Nine Nether Troop flew up like dark clouds.

The ominous aura that shot up to the sky caused the sects in all of Daluotian to shiver. Nine Nether Palace was about to start using the harsh way...

Chapter 701: Two Options

When the ominous aura from Nine Nether Palace shot up to the sky, the sects in Daluotian were shocked. They looked toward the direction that Nine Nether Troop had gone to with a knowing look.

Daluotian had heard of the messages sent to the cities by Nine Nether Palace and only a handful had submitted to them. Everyone, including Blood Hawk Palace, had treated it as a joke.

Although the people were mocking them, they knew that Nine Nether Palace would not take it lying down. If not, Nine Nether would not be able to gain a foothold in the Daluo Territory in the future. Even if Nine Nether had the support of the Condor King, Nine Nether Palace would not be able to continue to exist if they lost their reputation. Hence, it seemed that Nine Nether Palace was about to take action.

For the past few years, the development in Nine Nether Palace had been slow. Their foundation had been the weakest among the Nine Lords. Although Nine Nether had successfully gone through the tribulations, a force could not possibly depend on one person alone in order to expand.

The other Lords had many masters under them. However, under Nine Nether, other than Mu Chen, who had just joined her, the rest were only average.

The struggles within the Daluo Territory depended upon the people that they had present among them at any time. The Lords were not allowed to get involved in the fights. Thus, many people were doubtful whether or not Nine Nether Palace would succeed in their mission.

Mu Chen's performance in the Daluo Golden Pool was perfect. However, he was only one person. The dukes of the cities were no ordinary people. Some were top powers, who were very reputable within the Daluo Territory. Whether Nine Nether Palace could successfully restore their

reputation remained a question.

Back in the Blood Hawk Palace, Lord Blood Hawk was sitting on his throne in the main hall, stroking the hand rest. He looked out of the main hall with his red eyes and smiled mockingly.

"Nine Nether Palace has finally taken action." Lord Blood Hawk smiled flatly. He looked at Wu Tian and said, "Have you got everything in place?"

"All the dukes have gathered in Demonic Python City. If he dares to be there, he will be humiliated," Wu Tian said with an evil smile. To be the dukes of the cities, they would have possessed extraordinary power, and some of the top powers possessed the abilities of the four great commanders. However, they were older, and therefore, did not have the latent abilities of the four young great commanders.

Now that they had gathered together, they were extremely powerful. As for Nine Nether Palace, other than Mu Chen, the rest were not up to par. Hence, it would be silly to fight the dukes based on his strength alone.

"Women are after all, women. They are incompetent," Lord Blood Hawk said with a smile.

Although Nine Nether had returned strong, she had been too hasty in carrying things out. This inaction had caused her to have a weak foundation. The moment she returned, she had wanted to restore the territories that she had lost.

However, she soon found that it would not be so easy. For the past few years, Lord Blood Hawk had been terrorizing the people with his military force. Did she think that his efforts were in vain?

Although Mu Chen had potential, all the dukes were cunning, and they also had his backing. Mu Chen would lose the glory that he had painstakingly earned at the Daluo Golden Pool. Nine Nether would also be taught to know the difference between Nine Nether Palace and Blood Hawk Palace.

...

In Demonic Python City.

This was a big city, situated in the northwest region of the Daluo Territory. It was also an important city, as it was flourishing and ranked among the best.

When Nine Nether Palace had this city under their reign, many people had been envious. When Nine Nether went missing, Lord Blood Hawk was the first to strike and take over the city.

Demonic Python City was particularly lively on this day. Shadows covered the sky of the city and landed on it. The Transfer Spiritual Array in the city glittered continually.

It had been rumored one day before that Luo Mang, Duke of Demonic Python City, had gathered 50 dukes in Demonic Python City. Those who were well informed knew that it was to fight Nine Nether Palace.

Strictly speaking, everyone was under the rule of the Daluo Territory. However, Nine Nether Palace had weakened in its power, and Luo Mang was ambitious. He would not want to offend Blood Hawk Palace.

Nine Nether Palace had lost its power, and it could not be compared to Blood Hawk Palace, which was extremely influential. Using that influence, Luo Mang had openly gathered the people to fight Nine Nether Palace, as he had the backing of Blood Hawk Palace.

At the center of Demonic Python City, a Demonic Python statue stood in the Square. It was about 1,000 feet tall, and it overlooked the entire city.

The Square was filled with people, and shadows continually flooded into the city. Ultimately, even the rooftops of the buildings and the sky were filled with people.

All eyes were fixed on the people who were sitting under the Demonic

Python statue. They sat according to their ranks, as majestic spiritual energy indistinctly exuded from their bodies.

These people were calm, and lights were surging in their eyes. They were obviously no ordinary people.

Among these people, three of them, who were sitting in the center, had extremely strong spiritual energies. One of them was in black and looked burly. He had short hair and a rough face. Although he was smiling, his deep eyes were like a serpent's, causing one to shiver.

There was a tattoo of a black python on his neck. The ferocious python was baring its fangs, and it looked weird. This same man laid on a stone chair, stroking the hand rest. He did not seem the least bothered with what Nine Nether Palace was about to do.

He was Luo Mang, Duke of Demonic Python City. He had been controlling Demonic Python for many years. He was cunning and merciless. His strength had advanced to Grade Two Sovereign, and had now reached its peak. Among the dukes in the Daluo Territory, he was quite famous.

On his sides were two middle-aged men, who were quite thin. They were the dukes of Blood Vulture City and Black Rock City. Their strength was at Grade Two Sovereign as well. However, they were not as calm as Luo Mang.

In any case, it was not a good thing to offend Nine Nether Palace. Moreover, Nine Nether had successfully gone through the tribulations, and her strength was comparable to Grade Five Sovereign. Hence, she was as powerful as Lord Blood Hawk.

"The two of you need not worry. Although Nine Nether is no longer the same, Nine Nether Palace has a weak foundation. The new commander might be capable, but he is young. He will not be able to achieve much," Luo Mang smiled and said, as he could sense their anxieties.

Having heard that, the two dukes calmed down a little.

"We just need to display our battle array. When the youth is here, that should be enough to put him down. We will then have a good talk with him to scare him off," Luo Mang said with a smile. "Don't forget, Lord Blood Hawk has promised us that if we are able to fend Nine Nether Palace off, we will be able to truly join Blood Hawk Palace. By then, we need not be afraid of Nine Nether."

The two dukes nodded in agreement. If they could truly enter Daluotian, it would be better than slogging hard in their current roles as dukes. Although the income was good, they had to hand over a big portion of their funds when all was said and done.

"Although we have a lot of people with us, most of them dare not offend Nine Nether Palace openly..." Duke of Blood Vulture City said softly.

Luo Mang curled up his lips and said, "That is why they have to be utterly disappointed with Nine Nether Palace. As long as we can fend off the people of Nine Nether Palace, they will naturally know which choice they should make."

The two dukes nodded their heads again. As they were about to speak, their faces suddenly changed. A large beam suddenly shot up to the sky in the northwest direction of the city. It was the ray given out by the Transfer Spiritual Array.

"They are here. The newborn calf is not afraid of tigers!" When Luo Mang saw it, he turned grave and said this phrase mockingly.

The people in Demonic Python City looked at the direction of the beam. They then saw a dark cloud whizzing out. A dreadful atmosphere covered the entire place.

Many of them in the city turned pale. They were shocked and awed by the austerity of the troop. Daluo Territory was indeed amazing. Even Nine Nether Palace, which was the weakest in the Daluo Territory, had such a great and vigorous troop.

As the dark cloud swirled out, it dashed straight to the Square and hung in the air. Although there were a lot of people present, there was only dead silence. The people looked coldly and grimly at the dark cloud.

The expressions of the 50 dukes also changed. Luo Mang squinted his eyes and sneered. He stood up, cupping his fist, and said with a smile, "The Lord of Nine Nether Palace is here. I feel so honored. May I know, who is the new commander of Nine Nether Troop?"

As Luo Mang spoke, the people looked at Nine Nether Troop, seeing a slit in the dark cloud. Then, a slender figure slowly stepped forth from it.

He stood at the frontline of Nine Nether Troop, looking at the dukes at the Square. He smiled and said lightly, "Your battle array is pretty impressive."

Suddenly, his dark eyes turned cold, and his voice was sharp and harsh.

"You have two options. Submit to Nine Nether Palace, or...give up your positions as dukes!"

As his cold voice sounded out, the atmosphere in the city froze. Many people gasped. The new commander in Nine Nether Palace was extremely overbearing!

Chapter 702: The Golden Body

"Give up your positions as dukes..."

When Mu Chen's cold voice rang out in the city, it created an uproar. The people looked at him, stunned.

The atmosphere seemed to have frozen.

No one had expected the new commander from Nine Nether Palace to be so firm. He had just appeared and had not settled down, but he had made such a comment. Was he not afraid of the repercussions and of creating an uproar?

Fifty dukes were present!

Many people looked at one another and were shocked by the actions of the new commander of Nine Nether Palace.

Even the dukes, including Luo Mang, were shocked.

They had displayed the battle array to suppress the people from Nine Nether Palace, and Luo Mang had thought that it was enough to cause Mu Chen, a Grade One Sovereign, to feel pressure. If they could scare Mu Chen out of his wits, they would have the upper hand in the negotiation.

Luo Mang had run through all the possibilities and was well prepared. However, he was now at a loss. He realized that Mu Chen had looked at the battle array with disdain.

After a while, he was furious. He turned grave and stared at Mu Chen. He sneered and said, "This new commander is impressive. Just a word from you, and we have to give up our positions as dukes. Who do you think you are?"

Some of the dukes were enraged as well. However, most of them found it interesting as Mu Chen had displayed great vigor. He did not seem to be trying to draw them to his side. He left no room for negotiation.

Mu Chen looked calm in the air. His eyes were cold, and he knew Luo Mang's intentions. He was well aware of Luo Mang's character. Once he was given an inch, he would want a mile.

He was insatiable.

The only choice was to do away with unfruitful talk and step on his face. Leave him no room even for concession!

"He is speaking on behalf of Nine Nether Palace." Tang Bing, who was standing behind Mu Chen, looked coldly at the dukes and said, "If you cannot accept it, bring it up to the three kings!"

Luo Mang's expression changed and looked grim.

Mu Chen looked coldly at every duke and said flatly, "If any duke pledges loyalty to Nine Nether Palace, we will let him stay. If anyone is thinking of using this opportunity to threaten us, I will make sure he knows that Nine Nether Palace has ownership of these cities. If he is not happy, Nine Nether Palace will strip him of the position. I suppose many people will be interested in that position."

The eyes of many dukes twitched. The new commander of Nine Nether Palace must be crazy. Is Nine Nether Palace not afraid that there will be unrest in the cities if they remove so many dukes from their offices?

If Nine Nether Palace removed them from their offices... they would suffer great losses. As for what Mu Chen had said, many people were eyeing the positions. It would be easy to find replacements among the top powers in Daluo Territory.

Some of the dukes were inwardly lamenting. They were wondering if they had gone overboard. Had they forced Nine Nether Palace into a corner whereby both sides would suffer losses...?

Nine Nether had strong backing. Even if they suffered great losses, they could still continue on. However, once the dukes lost their positions, they would lose their backing and resources. Once they lost the resources of Daluo Territory, their path of cultivation would be extremely tough.

The expressions of many dukes changed. They had been flustered by Mu Chen's nonchalant attitude. Instead of being furious, they became hesitant.

When Luo Mang saw it, he turned cold. He had underestimated Mu Chen. Although he was young, he was extremely decisive. He had immediately suppressed many dukes with his ruthless means.

"Ha, nonsense. These cities are now under the reign of Blood Hawk Palace. They should be the ones to decide who will be the dukes. Who are you to poke your nose into this?" Luo Mang shouted. If he remained silent, the dukes would back out.

"Don't be frightened by him. Lord Blood Hawk will back us up!"

When the dukes heard this name, they were frightened. Compared to Nine Nether, Lord Blood Hawk was more of a terror.

The dukes who had been swayed looked at one another. They smiled wryly inwardly. It did not matter to them whom they served. However, they would inevitably offend one of them. They would not be able to contend with Nine Nether Palace or Blood Hawk Palace.

When Tang Bing saw the dukes who had been swayed by Mu Chen being overawed by Luo Mang, she was extremely angry.

Luo Mang heaved a sigh of relief when he saw it. He then looked at Mu Chen and said, "New commander of Nine Nether Palace, we do not wish to create a scene. If you want us to submit to Nine Nether Palace, I think that at the very least, you should go and ask Lord Blood Hawk. If he agrees to it, we will do it!"

Everyone fixed their eyes on Mu Chen. The situation was such that if the new commander of Nine Nether Palace just walked away, Nine Nether Palace would become the laughing stock of Daluo Territory.

Mu Chen looked at Luo Mang and said with a smile, "It seems like Duke

Luo Mang does not like our proposal."

Luo Mang sneered and said, "It is not that I do not agree. I just would like you to ask Lord Blood Hawk."

"In that case, there is nothing more to say." Mu Chen smiled. The coldness in his dark eyes quickly intensified.

"It seems so." Luo Mang stood up and folded his arms on his chest. His burly build made him look oppressive, and he stared coldly at Mu Chen. This young chap thought that he could easily frighten him with just a few words? Luo Mang did not reach his position by merely talking.

This chap is only at Grade One Sovereign, and he dares to be so presumptuous. Does he think that because he has defeated Cao Feng, he can be so reckless?

Mu Chen smiled, but his smile was filled with killing intent. In the next instant, he stepped forth, and his spiritual energy surged. The cry of a dragon resounded.

Swoosh!

As the dragon's cry resounded, he disappeared from the spot.

Luo Mang was suddenly afraid. He quickly retreated. However, the space behind him tore apart, and a dragon shadow shot out. A palm bursting with purple flame hit Luo Mang hard on his back.

Pom!

Luo Mang's face turned cold. He did not dodge. Instead, he threw out a blow with a backhand. Majestic spiritual energy swirled out.

Dong!

As the blows hit each other, spiritual energy raged frantically.

The place where they stood collapsed, and there were cracks everywhere. The other dukes hurriedly retreated as they were afraid to be implicated.

Swish! Swish!

Both of them were tough. Lightning shone out from Mu Chen's body, and he activated the Thunder God Physique to its peak. His eyes were cold, and he threw out another ruthless blow.

"Do you think that you are the only one who has cultivated your physique?" Luo Mang snorted with laughter. He stomped his feet, and the black snake runes on his body started to writhe. His body instantly turned dark and became sturdy like metal.

Dark rays glittered as he clenched his fist. He punched straight into Mu Chen's fist that was shimmering with lightning.

Dong!

Except for the spot where they stood, the ground around them collapsed. They were so powerful that many became nervous and anxious.

Those who knew Luo Mang's strength were shocked. Luo Mang had fought his way up to become Duke of Demonic Python City. His Demonic Python Physique was extremely powerful and sturdy like metal. His body was tough, and it was considered top notch among the Grade Two Sovereigns. However, he had been blocked off by a Grade One Sovereign who had a tough body as well.

"You do have some ability! However, you are not good enough to take me on!"

The two fists punched against each other, and the space surged. Luo Mang gave a vicious smile, but he was a bit stunned. He could feel that as his blow met Mu Chen's, he was not gaining the upper hand.

Mu Chen slowly lifted his head and smiled coldly. "Is that so? Do you want to try the power of the Golden Body?"

Golden lights surged in his eyes. The silver color that had appeared on his skin speedily turned golden. From afar, he looked as though he were made of gold.

"Back off!"

Mu Chen threw out a punch. It hit Luo Mang's fist, and a terrifying power like a volcano erupted.

Pom!

There was an explosion, and everyone saw Luo Mang's body fly backward. A deep crack appeared on the ground.

Smoke rose up, and the ground was in ruins. Many people gasped.

This youth had sent Luo Mang flying with one blow!

Chapter 703: Removed from Office

Cracks spread out from the dark Square, like a huge python. Many people who were watching, were stunned.

Those top powers who knew Luo Mang looked grave. This was the first time that Luo Mang had been suppressed, while pitting his physique against a youth who was only at Grade One Sovereign. The new commander from Nine Nether Palace was no weakling.

At the end of the crack, a youth in black held his position after throwing out a punch. His body was glittering with golden light, and an indescribable valiance exuded from his body.

The expressions of many dukes changed. They were amazed that Mu Chen could send Luo Mang flying with a punch, using the power of his physique.

Mu Chen slowly withdrew his fist, looking calm. He then lowered his head to look at his fist with a frown.

Given his ability, Luo Mang deserved to be duke of Demonic Python City and leader of the dukes. Mu Chen had realized that, although he had activated the Thunder God Physique to its peak, he was still unable to suppress Luo Mang.

Ever since Mu Chen had cultivated the Thunder God Physique, he had the upper-hand, whenever he was pitted against those who were at the same level as him, at least when using his physique. Thus, even when he met stronger opponents, he was able to prevail.

However, the outcome that he had seen earlier was not what he had expected. The Divine Technique used by Luo Mang was as powerful as the Thunder God Physique.

"It seems like I need to cultivate a more powerful Divine Technique."

This thought came to his mind. The Thunder God Physique, which used to be invincible, seemed unable to keep up with his progressing strength. What Mu Chen had gained most out of the Thunder God Physique was not the tough physique, but the deep strength from the lightning force during the cultivation process.

This had helped him build a strong foundation in his physique. Regardless of the Divine Technique that he would practice in the future, he would spend less effort in achieving the results. No other Divine Technique would be able to do that. In any case, Northern Sea Dragon had been lauded for the Thunder God Physique.

Pom!

As Mu Chen was having this thought, broken pieces of rocks shot up at the other end of the crack. Spiritual energy swirled out violently, and Luo Mang reappeared.

The clothes on his upper body had been shattered and his body looked sturdy, like a rock. There was a huge dark python tattoo on his body. The python twirled around his body, exuding an eerie feeling.

Luo Mang looked grim, as he stared at Mu Chen and said, "You live up to your name as the commander of Nine Nether Palace. You only have the strength of Grade One, but you have a powerful physique."

Mu Chen smiled flatly.

"However..." Luo Mang paused for a while, as he looked coldly at Mu Chen and said, "If you want us to submit to Nine Nether Palace, I will be the first to disagree!"

After he had said that, there was an uproar. Luo Mang had been enraged by Mu Chen. He was no longer willing to put it off, but rejected Mu Chen upfront.

When Mu Chen heard what Luo Mang said, he looked calm and unsurprised. He looked at Luo Mang and said, "Let me tell you this, you have been removed from your office. You no longer represent Demonic

Python City."

"Shameless boasting!"

Luo Mang was angry and laughed. An immense killing intent surged in his eyes. He had never expected Mu Chen to be so ruthless as to take back Demonic Python City and remove him from his office.

Luo Mang stomped his feet, cracking the ground. Violent spiritual energy swirled out like a windstorm. A huge dark figure slowly formed outside of his body.

Dark lights circled around the huge figure, as though a huge Demonic Python was twirling around it. A sharp neighing sound caused the spiritual energy in the heaven and earth to surge.

The huge figure stood upright, then looked at Mu Chen with its eerie eyes. It cried out, "I shall like to know how you are going to remove me from my office?!"

Mu Chen's thoughts swirled, upon seeing this sight: "Is this the Demonic Python Celestial Body? Luo Mang had killed an Omen Python previously, then consumed its Blood Essence. He had then cultivated the Demonic Python Celestial Body. Although it was not recorded in the 99 Sovereign Celestial Body, the Demonic Python Celestial body was powerful and could hold a place in the ranking."

There was an uproar, as the crowd saw the figure's Celestial Body.

Some of the people shouted out in shock. It was risky to use such a cultivation method. When two different types of blood merged together, the body would experience rejection. If not handled carefully, the body would then explode. Luo Mang was fortunate to be able to bear it, and had thus been able to cultivate the Demonic Python Celestial Body.

"You do have some skills." Mu Chen looked at the huge figure and was shocked. Luo Mang was indeed capable, as he had cultivated such a strange Sovereign Celestial Body!

"Are you thinking of using your Sovereign Celestial Body to gain back your dignity?" Mu Chen asked with a smile. However, there was no

warmth in this smile. He put his palms together to form a strange seal.

"I will let you know that you are no match for me in terms of physique. In terms of the Sovereign Celestial Body..."

"All the more, as you are no match for me!"

After he had said this, golden lights covered the sky and burst out. A huge golden figure appeared, exuding a terrifying oppressive force.

A large sun hung behind the golden figure, while dazzling golden lights spread out in all directions. It was like a majestic golden Buddha.

Boom! Boom!

As the Sovereign Celestial Body appeared, the spiritual energy in the heaven and earth spread out like a current. As the people saw the golden Sovereign Celestial Body, they were all shocked.

"Gaslighting!" Luo Mang shouted. He could not believe that Mu Chen's Sovereign Celestial Body had exuded such a great oppression. He could not back out now. If he did that, it would be difficult for him to turn the tables back around.

"Demonic Python Seal!"

Luo Mang dared not give Mu Chen time to display his power. He shouted out, causing dark lights to shoot up to the sky. The huge Demonic Python in his body shot forth to suppress the golden Sovereign Celestial Body, like a seal.

Mu Chen looked indifferently at the Demonic Python Seal, not even attempting to dodge it. Instead, he extended his golden palm. The golden light in his palm burst out like a scorching golden sun.

Bang!

The golden palm pierced through the violent spiritual energy and

grabbed the huge body of the Demonic Python. A bright golden light swirled out and suppressed the dark light.

"How dare a rotten snake talk about suppression!"

Mu Chen's powerful voice resounded in the heavens and the earth. He struck the Demonic Python and it fell to the ground. The huge golden palm pressed hard on the body, like a mountain.

Boom!

The ground cracked, and the Demonic Python cried out. It had been crushed by the palm.

Hiss.

The people gasped. No one had expected Mu Chen to crush Luo Mang, who was so aggressive and confident, with just one blow.

How can Mu Chen's Sovereign Celestial Body be so powerful?

The Demonic Python had been crushed, and the Sovereign Celestial Body that was formed by Luo Mang shook. Luo Mang found it hard to believe.

When they had pitted their physiques against each other, he was still able to withstand. But now that he had summoned the Sovereign Celestial Body, he had lost completely!

Mu Chen looked at Luo Mang with his golden eyes. His huge body shot up to the sky, as bright golden lights exuded from it. Everyone within a hundred mile could clearly see it.

Violent spiritual energy surged crazily in the sky, before it fell to the ground like a golden meteorite. As Luo Mang looked at the golden light in the horizon, he turned pale.

He looked at the duke of Blood Vulture City and Black Rock City and

shouted, "Both of you come and join forces with me!"

The dukes of Blood Vulture City and Black Rock City looked at each other and gritted their teeth. Then, they stamped their feet and shot up to the sky.

Buzz!

As the two of them shot up to the sky, a strange spiritual energy fluctuation surged out. The people saw six black lotuses fly down from the sky, then turn into two huge black beams. They landed hard on the two dukes like meteorites.

A horrifying spiritual energy raged out. The two dukes had been pushed back to the ground.

Boom!

The golden meteorite fell to the ground, and the Sovereign Celestial Body came down from the sky. A huge golden hand that looked like a huge golden sun pressed Luo Mang down.

A terrifying pressure covered Luo Mang, and the ground cracked. Luo Mang's face turned pale. This attack from Mu Chen was powerful.

"I am not easily defeated!" Luo Mang looked savage, as he shouted. He raised up his palms, and all the spiritual energy in his body burst out. This dark spiritual energy caused the sky to darken, and a strong wind raged in the heavens and earth.

Luo Mang's Sovereign Celestial Body was not as powerful as Mu Chen's. However, given that his strength was at the peak of Grade Two Sovereign, his spiritual energy was more forceful than Mu Chen's, and he was not afraid of Mu Chen's toughness.

At the most, both parties would get hurt! As long as he could defeat Mu Chen, it would put an end to the issue of submission!

Boom!

As the huge golden sun fell to the ground, it hit hard on the dark spiritual energy of the Demonic Python. Everyone's eyes widened, as this blow would determine the winner!

Chapter 704: Nine Nether's Fighting Spirit

The Golden Great Sun crashed down with a dazzling radiance under countless gazes. It crashed fiercely and mercilessly into the monstrous spirit energy that seemed like a demonic python.

Dong!

At the very moment of collision, blasts visible to the naked eye spread like a flood. The sturdy square crumbled in layers like sea waves.

The hideous cracks spread without end.

The many figures on the square instantly spread out for fear of being hit by the terrible impact.

"The Strength of Demonic Python Devours the Heavens!"

Luo Mang's face was ferocious in the Demonic Python's celestial body. Vast amounts of spiritual energy madly gushed out of his body and channeled into the celestial body. The dark and overwhelming spiritual energy hissed. As the mass of spiritual energy wriggled around, a pair of bloody red glowing orbs floated within like giant eyes.

A fierce and hostile wave of air suddenly erupted.

Luo Mang absorbed the blood essence of the Demonic Python. This caused his spiritual energies to contain a certain Qi of violence and hostility, making him more aggressive than usual.

When faced with an opponent, Luo Mang usually took advantage of his strength and defeated many foes. However, he did not achieve the same effect this time.

Mu Chen's spiritual energy was not only fused with the Unperishable Flame, but now with the addition of the Flame of the Great Sun, it was on a scale so grand that Luo Mang's energy, one that only absorbed the blood essence of a Demonic Python, could not compare.

As such, when the Demonic Python hissed and howled, the overbearing Golden Great Sun shone even brighter with waves of flames crashing over

it. In a mere moment, thick, white mist burst out from the fierce energies of the Demonic Python, and it immediately disappeared.

Hiss!

A mournful hiss rang within the spiritual energies of the Demonic Python. Luo Mang's visage was immediately filled with disbelief. He could not believe that the spiritual energy he was so proud of collapsed so easily.

Boom!

But before Luo Mang could react, Mu Chen immediately sent the Great Sun crashing mercilessly into the python's huge celestial body.

Dong!

The earth collapsed, and the python's celestial body was sent flying swiftly into the earth. The whole square was caving in, and the statue of the Demonic Python disintegrated, leaving only powder behind.

In the sky, the golden light slowly dissipated, and a gigantic golden shadow stepped into the skies, looking down as if looking upon ants below. It was indifferent, yet majestic.

The smoke below gradually dissipated, and when all eyes were on it, all who were present inhaled sharply. The python was broken beyond imagination within the deep abyss from the collapse. Its chaotic spiritual energies spread out like a ripple, becoming transparent and eventually disappearing completely.

When the celestial body dissipated, an awkward silhouette fell out of it. Luo Mang staggered and dropped onto the floor of the ruins. His face was pale, and his lips were red with blood.

It was apparent that when Chen Mu destroyed the celestial body, Luo Mang was gravely injured.

A cry arose from within the crowd. "Luo Mang's Demonic Python celestial body is destroyed!" Obviously, they were shaken by the sight of this event.

Luo Mang was considered the epitome of a Grade Two Sovereign, and

with the special ability of the Demonic Python celestial body, he should have been almost undefeatable in the ranks of Grade Two Sovereigns. However, his Demonic Python celestial body was deftly broken by a youth who was a mere First Grade Sovereign.

Not a soul would've thought this could happen.

In the surrounding skies, the city lords were anxious having witnessed the incident. The new commander of the Nine Nether Palace was unexpectedly formidable. Could the rise of the Nine Nether Palace be nigh?

The city lords of Blood Condor and Dark Rock were looking rather glum. They were unprepared and so, were defeated by Mu Chen. Therefore, Mu Chen was able to gather his strength to defeat Luo Mang.

In the sky, the Great Solar Undying Body stood straight, and his pair of shining golden eyes stared at Luo Mang with indifference. Then in a nonchalant tone he said, "It seems like I am worthy to dismiss you."

Luo Mang's face turned green, then his lips curved into a wicked smile. Looking at Lords Blood Condor and Black Rock he exclaimed, "Lord Blood Hawk has given his orders; if you think you still will have good days ahead of you after letting this kid go, keep enjoying the show!"

The two city lords' faces soured. After a short while, they both gritted their teeth and took a step forward.

The expressions of some of the city lords who stood behind them changed. Finally, four shadows emerged. The four city lords were intimate with Lord Blood Hawk and could be considered his claws. They understood that if the Nine Nether Palace successfully subdued these city lords, they would not have a happy ending.

That is why they could not allow Mu Chen to go any further.

Although they witnessed Mu Chen's strength and dared not despise him, they were greater in number. With all of them teaming up, Mu Chen could never beat them.

While teaming up would ruin their reputations, now was not the time to

worry about that.

Blood Condor City Lord and the other five city lords suspended themselves in the air, surrounding Mu Chen's Great Solar Undying Body. Intense spiritual energies permeated around them, causing the skies and earth to roar and howl.

Seeing this, the crowd broke out in speculation. "Are these city lords teaming up against Mu Chen alone?"

"Haha, no matter how powerful you are, Mu Chen, can you beat us one on seven today?" Luo Mang laughed and leaped into the air. His cold and delighted gaze focused on Mu Chen.

"Despicable!" Tang Bing scowled in anger.

In the air, the Great Solar Undying Body radiated a golden glow while Mu Chen's shadow emerged at the top of the celestial body's head. He looked at the seven surrounding him and frowned slightly.

With his capabilities now, fending off Luo Mang alone had required much of his tactics. He was, after all, still a First Grade Sovereign. To fight against six others as powerful as Luo Mang would be difficult even for him.

"Mu Chen, I don't want to force you. If you leave now, I will assure your safe departure," Luo Mang spoke in a low voice.

Mu Chen smiled, and then he said to the city lords who had yet to emerge, "Is there anyone else?"

The city lords stared at each other, impressed by Mu Chen's calm composure in this situation. They did not reply, but no one else stepped forward.

Unlike Luo Mang's party, the other city lords joined the Blood Hawk Palace because they had no other choice. They also had their fair share of exploitation by that palace through the years. As such, they did not have much loyalty to the palace. The reason they did not jump ship was only that Nine Nether Palace seemed too weak previously. But now it seemed that Nine Nether Palace was waxing in strength.

"So, just the seven of you, I guess." Mu Chen was satisfied with this. It meant that those who were completely loyal to Lord Blood Hawk were few. And the few of them would be thorny ones. By getting rid of them, the task at hand would be easily solved.

Luo Mang jeered. He crossed his arms while staring at Mu Chen coolly and said, "Since you do not wish to leave, don't blame me for what's next."

"So you plan to overwhelm me with numbers..."

Mu Chen smiled while looking at Luo Mang. "You thought only you could do that?"

Luo Mang's countenance fell as he saw the Nine Nether Troops looking as dark as storm clouds. The stern formation of the troops caused him to squint a little.

"Heh, a mere rabble of misfits," Luo Mang snickered at last. The Nine Nether Troop was the least popular army within the Daluo Territory, and they had always stayed within their Palace, never responding to any provocation. As such, they were looked down upon by many who thought of them as a weak combat force.

"Is that so?"

Mu Chen smiled faintly. With a thought in his heart, the Great Solar Undying Body emerged with a roar, finally standing upon the air above the Nine Nether Troop.

"Nine Nether Troop!" Mu Chen's piercingly cold shout rang throughout the heavens.

"Sir, yes, sir!" the troops' thunderous voices rumbled as one. Their eyes were fierce and piercing, and a wave of indescribable spiritual energy rippled across the skies and tore the heavens.

Innumerable hearts shook as they saw that the Nine Nether Troops, who never displayed their strength within the Daluo Territory, were like ferocious lions who were newly awakened.

"Nine Nether's Fighting Spirit!"

When Mu Chen's deep voice resonated, suddenly, heavy black halberds materialized in the hands of the Nine Nether Troops. In one accord, they stomped the halberds.

Bang!

The sky looked as if it were filled with thunderbolts as streams and gushes of fighting spirit went up into the sky. The fighting spirit materialized, condensed, convoluted, and finally, it was as though the troop had turned into a dark ocean of pure fighting spirit.

Thunder rumbled from within in waves of angry roars.

"Condensing fighting spirit?" Luo Mang and his party's faces fell when they saw this. They did not expect the Nine Nether Troop to be capable of materializing fighting spirit, a feat only the best trained troops could perform!

Luo Mang's eyes shone, and with a harsh voice he shouted, "Worry not. While they may be able to materialize their fighting spirit, no one will be able to control it! Mu Chen has just taken over Nine Nether. It's impossible that he could merge with the fighting spirit!"

The other six city lords nodded in agreement. To control a fighting spirit like this, one must at least be able to fuse with the spirit. Mu Chen was new to the Daluo Territory, and had just taken over Nine Nether for a short while. It was impossible for him to control the fighting spirit of the Nine Nether Troop!

Just as they finished talking, Mu Chen, who was sitting cross-legged upon the head of the Great Solar Undying Body, gave them a smile. He then immediately raised his long and slender palm.

Boom!

As Mu Chen raised his palm, the look on Luo Mang and the gang's faces froze bit by bit. They could not believe their eyes and were drowned in fear...

...Because they witnessed the fighting spirit, which was as vast as the ocean, roll into a storm as Mu Chen raised his palm.

He really could control the Nine Nether Fighting Spirit!

Mu Chen now almost seemed like he was a troop of 1,000 men himself!

Luo Mang and the other six would face a terrifying offense of 1,000 foes!

At this thought, even Luo Mang's face turned ashen.

Chapter 705: Sweeping and Uprooting the Obstacles

The fighting spirit of the Nine Nether Troop gathered above the skies like a vast ocean, murky and dark. As it tumbled, a sound like the countless growls of those who enjoy fighting and raging roars was heard, shaking the heavens and the earth.

The countless gazes within the Demonic Python City were focused upon this view. Their eyes couldn't help but reveal their marvelling and shaking hearts. They understood that, in order to be able to materialize their fighting spirit, the training within the army must have been strict.

The troops must have gone through years of harmonization, converging their individual spiritual energies countless times, before finally reaching the perfect point of equilibrium. Furthermore, each and every soldier must know how to maintain a single attitude, be always fearless, and never look back.

Only when this will was instilled within their spiritual energies, would the individual fighting spirit converge as one, being without obstacles, and creating a truly terrifying force. Only an army with such a focused fighting spirit could possess such a dreadful and awesome strength.

Not only that, but merely manifesting the convergence of fighting spirit was not enough. There needed to be a capable controller. A fighting spirit of this kind was like having a miracle of destructive force. But, to use this miraculous force as an attack weapon of sorts, required a controller.

Manipulating the fighting spirit of an army required that the commander of the army echo it with the fighting spirit, only then may the power within be released. However, to echo with the fighting spirit of a troop, the commander had to train with this troop for a prolonged period of time, until they could understand each other tacitly and seamlessly.

Most importantly, once the controller activated the fighting spirit, it would enter into the body of the controller. If one lacked a firm conviction

and steady mind, it is feared that his will would be drowned in the boundless mass of fighting spirit. Worse yet, he would be devoured by the fighting spirit, resulting in extremely dangerous consequences.

It was precisely due to these multitude of obstacles in controlling a troop's fighting spirit, that the crowd was in awe and shock upon witnessing the black sea of fighting spirit rise and swirl as soon as Mu Chen had raised his palm. After all, it had been less than three months since Mu Chen had first arrived at Daluo Territory, and he had been the commander of Nine Nether for even a shorter time. Thus, no one expected that he could converge and harmonize with the Nine Nether Troop's Fighting Spirit within such a short time.

The color on the face of Luo Mang and the other six turned pale when they saw this, because they knew that, if Mu Chen really could control the fighting spirit of the Nine Nether Troop, they would have no chance of victory. Within their hopeless eyes, Mu Chen remained seated, cross-legged, upon the head of the Great Solar Undying Body, in silence. His eyes were watching over them coldly, and deep within his gaze, a faint surge of flame was alight.

When Mu Chen controlled this majestic and vast fighting spirit, it entered his body. Years of harsh training had bestowed upon Mu Chen a will and mind as sturdy as a rock. So, even when this overwhelming fighting spirit of a thousand soldier tried to devour his will, it was evidently impossible.

The surging fighting spirit flooded within Mu Chen's body, causing Mu Chen's eyes to be set ablaze. He looked at Luo Mang and his party, then slowly raised his palm, then immediately dropped it.

His fingers were descending slowly, as if they were carrying mountains. But at the moment his palm fell, the space before him shattered, like glass, and streaks of cracks, which were visible to the naked eye, projected outwards quickly.

Haaa!

Suddenly, the ocean of fighting spirit below gave out a roar of a battle

call. The dark fighting spirit soared to the sky, then immediately transformed into a gigantic black beam, bursting out from the dark cloud.

The beam was a condensation of the fighting spirit and spiritual energies of the Nine Nether Troop. When coupled with Mu Chen's catalytic activation, its power was so devastating, even Grade Three Sovereigns must evade it in order to avoid serious injuries!

BOOM!

The face of Luo Mang and the other six were convoluted, as they saw the beam bursting out toward them. The seven of them immediately cried out loudly, and as the spiritual energies within them burst out without reservations, their overwhelming spiritual energies turned into seven massive spiritual energy screens. When the shielding screens descended, they were like Hell's Gate, a barrier between life and death.

Thunk!

And yet, the beam of fighting spirit never stalled for even a moment. It flew toward them violently. As the countless eyes looked on, it bombarded fiercely on the spiritual energy screens that extended from the earth to the heavens.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

The beams rushed toward the screens, releasing a mortifying amount of energy, and tearing the seven screens apart one by one. Its posture, like one who was capable of overcoming all obstacles, left the crowd stunned in awe. A wall of defense, set up jointly by seven city lords, was as fragile as a piece of paper when faced with such a scene.

Blrghhhh!

As the seven energy screens were torn apart, the face of the seven reddened, and they immediately vomited blood. Their bodies flew away in a bizarre manner, and their spiritual energies were fluctuating in a messy blunder mashup.

Boom!

All seven of them staggered backward in a sorry state, with the fear in their eyes ever more intense as they witnessed that the beam of fighting spirit was not slightly faltered whatsoever, even by their energy screens, and was instead, still crashing toward them directly. An attack of this caliber would disable, if not kill, all seven of them, if they were to bear the full force of the beam. Mu Chen evidently had no intention of holding back at all!

The seven of them had chills on their spines. This new commander of the Nine Nether Palace was indeed ruthless. It was clear that he was planning to make an example out of them, not even offering them the chance to surrender!

Phsssh!

The beam of fighting spirit surged toward them angrily, and in a blink of an eye, it was right before them. The cracks between space had caused the seven of them to shake in fear. Under the overwhelming fear and pressure, they could not even utter a word of surrender.

Now, the crowd was in a heated uproar. Many city lords, who were spectating from behind, could not help but shake in fear. The new commander of Nine Nether Palace was about to demonstrate his power through murder!

"You're dead!"

In the seven pairs of despaired eyes, the beam of light overwhelmed them all. But, just when they thought they would surely die, a sharp sound, like the cry of an eagle, pierced through the skies suddenly.

Shriek!

At the very moment that the eagle shriek was heard, a red light burst out, as if it had pierced through space itself. Then, in an alarming speed, it crashed into the dark beam of fighting spirit violently.

Thunk!

The two terrifying energies collided with each other, stirring up a storm of spiritual energies. The party of seven were swept away by the impact

wave, then were ejected like cannonballs. On the wide streets in the cities, deep cracks, each of a few thousand feet, opened up.

Mu Chen looked at the merciless spiritual energy windstorm, his eyes squinted slightly, before he immediately turned his head and looked far off in the distance, as in the sky, he saw a sudden burst of bloody red.

The red light zipped toward him, and in a flash, it was in the air above the city. When the blood ray dispersed, an army that was wearing armor that was dyed in blood red emerged from a blood cloud. Every soldier was holding a spear of blood. From their bodies, emitted an ominous aura, which soared upon the skies.

Above this blood red army, was a sudden amalgamation of blood red fighting spirit, which turned into a blood cloud. Within the cloud, a silhouette was standing with hands behind the back.

"That's... the Blood Hawk Troop of Blood Hawk Palace!"

"And that's one of the four great commanders, Wu Tian! Finally, someone from the Blood Hawk Temple is here!"

"Well, well, now even the Blood Hawk Troop has been deployed!"

"..."

When the crowd in the city saw the blood red army, they suddenly roared into a commotion. At once, the faces of many fell. It seemed that the Nine Nether Palace and the Blood Hawk Palace were officially at war now, seeing that each of their troops had been deployed.

Tang Bing also saw the appearance of the Blood Hawk Troop. With her pretty face slightly pale, she moved faintly to appear beside Mu Chen. "It's Wu Tian," she said.

Mu Chen nodded, looking on the shadows of the blood red army from afar. He then laughed and said, "It seems like you finally ran out of patience."

Wu Tian's ice cold eyes stared at Mu Chen. They were prepared to humiliate Mu Chen with their preparations in the Demonic Python City.

To their dismay, Mu Chen was not the one who was embarrassed, but the Blood Hawk Palace instead! If they had appeared any later, it is feared that the the honor of the Blood Hawk Palace would have been lost.

"Mu Chen, take your men and leave at once! The Demonic Python City is a territory of Blood Hawk Palace, we do not welcome your presence!" Wu Tian declared in a grave tone.

Hearing this, Mu Chen only gave a faint smile, and said, "The status of Luo Mang and the other six city lords have been revoked. From now on, these cities belong to us, Nine Nether Palace. If Blood Hawk Palace dares interfere again, do not blame us for the consequences."

Wu Tian's face suddenly changed, and with a maniac laugh, he replied, "Those were some big words! But, if you want to take away these cities, I am only afraid that you are too weak to do so!"

"Blood Hawk Troop!"

As the stern shout of Wu Tian settled, the army like a cloud of blood howled in unison. In that instance, a surge of an ominous aura swirled toward the sky, an overwhelming gust of fighting spirit filled the heavens and the earth, and the smell of blood spread along with it.

The Blood Hawk Troops was an important force within Blood Hawk Palace. There were 5,000 soldiers, making them number a few times more than the Nine Nether Troop. However, it seemed like not all of them had followed Wu Tian here. Even then, their numbers were easily double that of the Nine Nether Troop.

Within this city, countless eyes gazed upon the Blood Hawk Troop. Their faces could not help but show their worry. It was said that, when the Blood Hawk Troop were still on their conquest, they did massacre cities. This was why, in Daluo Territory, the Blood Hawk Troop was an infamous army. Their reputation far exceeded that of the Nine Nether Troop.

Wu Tian stepped on the swirling clouds of blood. His cold eyes fixated on Mu Chen like a serpent on its prey, and his stern voice echoed throughout the city.

"I shall allow you the time of ten breaths to leave this city. Or else, I am afraid the whole of Nine Nether Palace will be crushed today."

Mu Chen looked at Wu Tian, then gave a dismissive smile. His black pupils swirled around coldly, and his clear voice echoed slowly in this blood red sky.

"My apologies, but I refuse."

Chapter 706: Gambled Battle

"I refuse..."

While Mu Chen's laughter echoed clearly in the air above Demonic Python City, the atmosphere between the heavens and the earth slowly tensed. Many stared at each other, and they could faintly sense the sparks flying in the air.

"Heh, such bloodthirstiness."

Wu Tian was not surprised by Mu Chen's reply. His smile turned more sinister, and as he clenched his fist, the overwhelming surge of fighting spirit suddenly exuded a monstrous bloody aura like a sea of blood.

Wu Tian smirked at Mu Chen and said, "Seeing that Nine Nether Palace has decided to invade us, you will have to pay for the consequences. As for now, don't even expect Lord Nine Nether to rescue you."

Though he was all smiles, his extremely intense killing intent was evident.

"That should be my line to you, commander Wu Tian! When Lord Blood Hawk arrives, the only thing he will see is the heavy loss incurred by the Blood Hawk Troop!" Mu Chen exclaimed with a laugh.

"Haha! You have guts!"

Wu Tian leaned back and gave a loud roar of laughter. The next moment, his laughter immediately turned menacing as he waved his hands. Then he spoke with a jeer, "We shall see who will be destroyed today!"

BOOM!

As Wu Tian's palm descended, the Blood Hawk Troop clad in red armor yelled abruptly. Their voices were like thunder, and their blood-red fighting spirit swirled up toward the skies. At that moment, the skies were dyed in the tint of blood red.

The bloody sea beneath Wu Tian's feet grew to be even more enormous.

An immense pressure spread through the heavens and the earth, rousing a devastating storm.

When she saw this, Tang Bing's face changed slightly. Wu Tian had commanded the Blood Hawk Troop for many years. He was deeply familiar with their materialized fighting spirit. When he was wielding the fighting spirit, its power was unbelievably fearsome and valiant.

"Mu Chen..." Tang Bing gazed at Mu Chen, her eyes full of worry.

Mu Chen gave her a gentle smile. He said softly, "Don't worry, Miss Tang Bing. The Nine Nether Troop is the fruit of your labor all these years. They are not weaker than any other army. As Miss Tang Bing has entrusted them to me, I will not allow anyone to defeat them."

Although Nine Nether's disappearance had weakened the position of the Nine Nether Palace, Tang Bing had never stopped training the Nine Nether Troop. She even sacrificed her share of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid to the training of the troop for the sake of their final drop of power. It was not exaggerating to say that she had put her heart and soul into the army.

It was precisely due to Tang Bing's effort that the Nine Nether Troop was able to stand strong without leaving Nine Nether Palace at its lowest point.

While in numbers they were no match for the Blood Hawk Troop, in terms of quality, they were every bit as competent.

Tang Bing looked at Mu Chen's gentle smile. Her heart couldn't help but soar, and the skin around her eyes reddened slightly. Her perseverance all these years was looked down upon as stupidity by others, but still she fought on. Now that her hard work and determination were finally acknowledged, she was evidently touched.

Tang Bing opened her red lips slightly, and her pleasing voice sounded even more gentle than usual. "Be careful, then."

Mu Chen nodded. He looked down at the Nine Nether Troop clad in black armor. There was no longer any fear in their eyes but a will to battle long suppressed. Perhaps they, too, had been waiting for this moment all

this time.

As long as you harbor no fear, I can lead you to face any foe, Mu Chen stated in his heart. His black pupils focused at once, and he signaled with his arm.

"Nine Nether's Fighting Spirit!"

BOOM!

All of the Nine Nether Troop's halberds stomped at once, and a low-pitched bellow echoed in unison through the skies like thunder. A dark fighting spirit rose majestically, shrouding the skies like black clouds.

The two fighting spirits filled the heavens and the earth, seemingly splitting the sky into two.

The crowd slowly evacuated the area occupied by the fighting spirits of the two troops. They clearly understood that the scale of devastation when the battle started this time would be incomparable to the one before. Furthermore, the city might even be destroyed in the process, as the two armies seemed like they were holding nothing back.

The entire city was silent. In the sky, the two fighting spirits howled like a flood, ravaging the heavens and the earth like two gargantuan beasts preparing to savagely face off.

In that tense atmosphere, both Mu Chen and Wu Tian focused their gazes.

FHOOOM!

The two overwhelming fighting spirits rushed out at the same time, gushing like a million waves, sweeping towards each other in a rampage.

All eyes were on the sky. The crowd braced themselves to witness a battle between two great troops in Daluo Territory. The space where the two fighting spirits clashed twisted all of a sudden. A silhouette of light burst out of nowhere. The silhouette turned his palm downwards and slammed on the two colliding fighting spirits, casually extinguishing the immense mass of energy.

Wow!

The sudden plot twist caused an uproar in the city. All eyes were on the individual who had appeared, and then the whole city was boiling with surprise and awe.

"Isn't that... one of the Three Kings of Daluo Territory – the Sleeping King?"

"Who would've thought... even the big shots are alarmed now."

"..."

In the sky, Mu Chen and Wu Tian were both stunned by the sight of the silhouette. They both clasped their hands in a fist and said, "Master!"

The bright silhouette waved his hands. It seemed like the actual body of the Sleeping King himself was not present, but only a manifestation of his spiritual energy. However, he suppressed the fighting spirits of both Blood Hawk Troop and Nine Nether Troop by his spiritual body alone. The scale of his strength was immeasurable.

"While your battle is lawful, Demonic Python City is an important city. If it were to be destroyed, it would cause a huge loss," the Sleeping King explained plainly.

"This was not the intention of Blood Hawk Palace. However, this Mu Chen is overbearing, not knowing his limits. I beg you, Master, revoke his right as a commander!" Wu Tian accused in a deep voice.

"Nine Nether Palace only seeks to regain our lost city, but the Blood Hawk Palace obstructed us time and again. It is only fair to pay the price." Mu Chen defended in an equally aggressive tone.

The Sleeping King gestured again to stop their argument. "This is not a battleground for you to start a war, and you should moderate yourselves. Furthermore, Daluo Territory is embarking on a conquest soon. You are free to conquer the vast territory beyond, so why bother with a city?"

Wu Tian frowned. The Sleeping King was one of the most prominent persons in Daluo Territory, and Wu Tian did not dare to go against his

words. Nevertheless, it was of no benefit to the Blood Hawk Palace to leave matters as they currently were.

"Haha, Master Meng, your words are indeed reasonable. However, the Blood Hawk Palace has operated in these cities for year. Don't you think it's too easy for the Nine Nether Palace to just take back the cities like this?" Just when Wu Tian fell silent, laughter rang in the skies, and an indistinct figure appeared in the air above the Blood Hawk Troop. It was the leader of the Blood Hawk Palace, Lord Blood Hawk.

Wu Tian exhaled in relief as he saw Lord Blood Hawk.

"Oh? So what does the Blood Hawk Palace demand?"

Unexpectedly, when Lord Blood Hawk showed himself, a cold and sarcastic laugh resonated in the air. The blurred figure of Nine Nether had emerged as well.

It was obvious that both of them valued the moment greatly, since they only appeared once the Sleeping King graced them with his presence.

Seeing this, the city became noisy with discussions from the crowd. No one would have imagined that both Lord Nine Nether and Lord Blood Hawk would appear simultaneously. These two forces were as incompatible as fire and water.

"What do you want?"

Lord Blood Hawk's eyes shone for a moment, then he said, "You can retake the cities, but with the condition of defeating my Blood Hawk Troop. Since Master Meng has declared this region unfit for battle, why don't we do it on the battlefield? If you win, I will not only return the 50 cities we have conquered, but I will also give up another 50 of my cites and five Heavenly Pills."

"Wow..."

The words of Lord Blood Hawk created a commotion among the crowd. They were in shock and awe upon hearing his drastic offer. Suddenly, the ownership of 100 cities was being bet upon. Not to mention, the five Heavenly Pills had an immeasurable value. It was rumored that any

Sovereign Masters below Grade Four could raise a single grade by consuming one of those pills during training. Countless Sovereign Masters strove to get their hands on a single Heavenly Pill.

Lord Nine Nether was shocked for a moment, as she did not expect the charisma of Lord Blood Hawk to be this intense. It seemed like he had pulled out all the stops to deal with Nine Nether Palace.

"But... if Nine Nether Palace loses, I will want nothing in return, other than your submission to the Blood Hawk Palace. We will certainly not interfere with your internal affairs," Lord Blood Hawk spoke again with a cold smile.

"You!" Tang Bing's brows tightened, her face white with anger. The voracity of Lord Blood Hawk's ambition was evident. He would do anything to humiliate Nine Nether Palace. As soon as the Nine Nether Palace bowed to Blood Hawk Palace, even merely in formality, Nine Nether Palace would completely lose its morale, destined to never rise again.

Standing beside her, Mu Chen also squinted, his eyes shining with determination.

The Sleeping King scowled, but he did not utter a word. Daluo Territory was a competitive region, after all. It was thanks to competition that the vitality of the vast power was preserved.

"What shall it be, then? If you plan to chicken out, we will not laugh at you. But do not ever think about retaking these cities." Lord Blood Hawk sneered at Nine Nether.

Nine Nether's face turned cold. Of course she understood the cruel ideas in Lord Blood Hawk's mind. She turned her face toward a lone figure below. Lord Blood Hawk obviously lusted for a battle between the two troops, but now, the commander of Nine Nether Troop was Mu Chen.

Mu Chen had the final say on this challenge.

All eyes were focused upon Mu Chen. Wu Tian crossed his arms, looking at Mu Chen with a eerie smile. Lord Blood Hawk wanted to force Nine Nether Palace into a corner.

Under the gazes of countless onlookers, Mu Chen's lips twisted into a smile as sharp as a knife. He then looked up and nodded to Nine Nether.

Nine Nether was startled by his nod. Without delay, she clenched her silver teeth, and then her icy voice resonated throughout the heavens and the earth.

"Very well, my Nine Nether Palace accepts your challenge!

"Three days hence on the battlefield, be prepared to hand over everything, Blood Hawk Palace!"

Chapter 707: War Troop Dispatcher

"Haha! No wonder you are Lord Nine Nether, how admirable!"

Hearing Lord Nine Nether accepting the bet, Lord Blood Hawk could not resist laughing out loud. But within his blood red irises, a surge of cunning and viciousness was boiling.

"If so, I shall overlook the commotion you have aroused today. Three days from now, on the battlefield, we, Blood Hawk Palace, will await the good news."

WIth his goal accomplished, Lord Blood Hawk did not waste any more time on empty dialogue. With a gesture of his hand, a tremendous beam of bright light appeared, swallowing the innumerable soldiers of the Blood Hawk Troop.

Then, it transformed into a beam of blood ray and entered the transfer spiritual array in the city. When the ray of light sprang away, all who were enveloped in it disappeared.

In the sky, the Sleeping King saw this scene and showed a helpless smile. Even as one of the Three Kings, he could not stop a mutually consented bet between two parties. He took a look at Nine Nether and Mu Chen as his avatar slowly dissipated away.

Nine Nether descended by the side of Mu Chen and said, "Good work. Let's return to Nine Nether Palace to discuss."

Mu Chen nodded slightly. Without further ado, he led the Nine Nether Troops to the transfer spiritual array, where they disappeared in it one by one. As the two parties departed, the quiet city was once again filled with a heated commotion.

"Now this is gonna be good. The Blood Hawk Troop and the Nine Nether Troop are going head to head with full force!"

"It's obvious that Lord Blood Hawk is taunting Nine Nether Palace. Nine Nether Troop does not stand a chance against the might and numbers of the Blood Hawk Troop. As soon as large scale warfare is initiated, the Nine

Nether Troop will have a hard time."

"That is not necessarily true. While Blood Hawk Troop may be more numerous, they are split under the authority of several commanders. Wu Tian could only command half of the entire army. If he tried to command the entire troop forcefully, he might be overwhelmed instead."

"But even half of the Blood Hawk Troop should be enough to roll over Nine Nether Troop, which only has a thousand men!"

"Since Nine Nether Palace had the guts to accept the challenge, maybe they have a hidden trump card?"

"Who knows..."

...

Within the Grand Hall of Nine Nether Palace, Nine Nether was sitting at the highest throne, her brows were knit together, the atmosphere within the Hall dense.

"It seems like Lord Blood Hawk is determined to end things with us once and for all." Nine Nether spoke unhurriedly. Lord Blood Hawk was cunning in his vision. He knew that Nine Nether Palace was still weak and desperate to control these cities to obtain sufficient Sovereign Spiritual Liquid. This was why he offered an irresistible bait as a bet for this gambled battle.

To the Nine Nether Palace, this was an opportunity. But it was also a trap filled with the deadliest of dangers.

"Blood Hawk Troop far outnumbers our troop. There won't be any benefit for the Nine Nether Troop to face them head on," Tang Bing said in a worried tone.

In the Hall, Qiu Shan and the rest were silent. They focused their gazes at Mu Chen, who had yet to utter a single word. And yet, Mu Chen's performance on this day had won over their trust.

"How many people do they have?" Under their watch, Mu Chen finally opened his mouth.

"Over five thousand. But with Wu Tian's capabilities, he could only control half of that at most. If he tries to command any more, he would be engulfed by their fighting spirit. Nevertheless, half of their troop still far outnumbers our troop," Qiu Shan answered immediately.

Mu Chen nodded gently. Blood Hawk Troop was not a bunch of misfits, and still they had the upper hand in numbers. In addition, Wu Tian was no weakling. This battle would not be an easy one.

"Mu Chen, how much do you think our odds of winning this bet are?" Tang Bing could not resist asking.

This event was too important for Nine Nether Palace. If they won, they would have more than enough to make a comeback. The prize of a hundred cities would instantly enrich the resources of the Nine Nether Palace. However, if they lost, it would spell the end for them.

The standing of Nine Nether Palace and Blood Hawk Palace was equal in the Daluo Territory. If Nine Nether Palace submits and bowed toward Blood Hawk Palace, they would basically lose this status of being equals, causing a crushing and devastating blow to the morale of Nine Nether Palace.

Mu Chen slowly said, "If Wu Tian only commands half of Blood Hawk Troop, we still have the odds of winning. Besides, it won't be an easy feat for them to beat me."

His tone was deep, and his voice carried a potent bloodiness, sending chills in the spine of all who were in the hall. It was evident that this battle would no doubt be a bloodbath. After all, the very survival of Nine Nether Palace was in question.

Within the hall, the crowd fell silent.

Ka-Chik.

A crisp noise broke through the silence of the hall abruptly. Everyone looked up to see a little girl in a black skirt sitting beside Mu Chen. In her tiny hands was a fruit, which she was chewing at loudly. Of course, she was the illusive Mandela.

"Who is she?!" Tang Bing's eyes widened in shock. This was a strategic location of Nine Nether Palace, heavily guarded by Nine Nether Troop at its perimeter. How could this girl have snuck in?

"Ahem... worry not, she's just... my sister." Mu Chen sighed helplessly.

Upon hearing his words, Mandela's slender eyebrows raised. She took another bite of the fruit, not retorting, but merely spoke lazily, "I can give you an idea, but there's a condition."

Mu Chen was startled for a moment. "What condition?" he managed to ask.

The porcelain doll face of Mandela's turned into a smile. She looked like the purest and cutest girl. Even Tang Bing, who was wary of Mandela, lowered her guard.

Mu Chen, however, raised his guard when he saw Mandela's expression change.

"Don't worry, it's easy! Just lend me the Immortal Pages for ten days," Mandela explained with a sweet smile.

"Never!" Mu Chen turned her down almost instantaneously. The Immortal Pages were too important for him. He would never remove them from his body, especially to entrust it to anyone else.

After all, the Immortal Pages were related to The Primordial Immortal Body. Mu Chen would not doubt the allure of this relic, as even Earthly Sovereigns would certainly be tempted by it.

"You!" Mandela stared at Mu Chen fiercely with her big eyes, but Mu Chen was determined, his expression remaining stoic. After a few moments of staring, Mandela could only turn her face away in anger.

"Why would you suddenly want to borrow the Immortal Pages?" Mu Chen asked doubtfully. According to Mandela, as long as she remained nearby Mu Chen, she could absorb sufficient power from the Datura Flower Sigil to suppress the curse within her body.

Mandela hesitated for a moment, then said, "There seems to be signs of

an outbreak of my curse. Which is why I need the Immortal Pages to restrain it."

Mu Chen frowned. After a short moment of silence, he replied, "When that happens, call me. I'll lend it to you then, but I will stay beside you the whole time. That shouldn't be a problem, right?"

Mandela was stupefied for awhile, then she looked at Mu Chen with surprise. She evidently did not expect that Mu Chen would agree to her condition. She gently nodded and said, "Thanks... thanks in advance, then."

"So, can you tell me your strategy now?" Mu Chen smiled.

Mandela raised her head, her pair of googly golden eyes surveying every person in the hall. Whenever her gaze met somebody, they would shudder as if they felt an enormous pressure, then turn their face away.

"As a spiritual array master, have you heard of war troop dispatcher?" Mandela's rather childish voice resonated throughout the hall.

"War troop dispatcher?" Hearing these words, everyone present, including Mu Chen, was in a daze. But Nine Nether was deep in her thoughts.

"In ancient times, war troop dispatchers were a division of the spiritual array masters. During the calamity of the Great Thousand World, war troop dispatchers were in the spotlight. They led armies of myriad clans, fighting the foreign fiends at the frontlines. But that is precisely why the loss among their ranks was severe. Some of them were even denied the opportunity to pass down their lineages. When the calamity was over, very few of them had survived. As such, not many know of their existence." Mandela narrated in an unhurried manner.

"A war troop dispatcher could converge the strength of an army and release their ultimate power. While commanding an army of considerable size, the best of them could even fight on par with a Heavenly Sovereign. "

There was once again silence in the hall. The breathing of the crowd was somewhat heavier. To go against a Heavenly Sovereign? An existence abysmal and unfathomable like that could actually be resisted with

numbers? How was that possible?

Mu Chen licked his lips unconsciously. His throat was dry, but his eyes were hot with a burning desire. He stared at Mandela intently, then asked, "Do you know how to become a war troop dispatcher?"

"Nope!" Mandela replied sheepishly.

Looking at her sweet smile, Mu Chen's expression froze. He immediately gnashed his teeth and yelled, "Are you screwing around with me?!"

If Mu Chen did not know that the sweet little girl before him was frighteningly powerful, he would have thrown her out of the palace.

"Although I do not know how to become one, this thing should be able to help you." Seeing that Mu Chen was smoking with anger, she slowly extended her pretty tiny hand. A twinkling of light flashed on her palm, and a somewhat damaged bamboo scroll appeared there. Even before being unrolled, it was exuding a metallic and bloody aura.

Mu Chen carefully received the bamboo scroll. On the scroll, some indistinct red little characters could be seen.

"The Heart of Warfare"

"War troop dispatchers are a specialization of spiritual array masters, after all. As you have the foundations of a spiritual array master, it should be easier for you to master this compared to normal people. While this cannot turn you into a war troop dispatcher immediately, it shouldn't be an issue to overcome their numbers and defeat Blood Hawk Troop," Mandela explained.

Mu Chen grasped the worn out bamboo scroll tightly and nodded heavily. There are indeed many mysteries within the Great Thousand World. He had never even heard about war troop dispatchers before this.

It seemed like he had to give it his all to meditate on the The Heart of Warfare. This bet is far too important for the Nine Nether Palace. He could not afford to lose this fight!

This time, he must win!

Chapter 708: The Dilapidated Bamboo Scroll

Blood Hawk Palace.

Lord Blood Hawk was seated at the top of the audience hall as his blood-red pupils slowly swept over the hall. None of Blood Hawk Palace's high-level officials dared to make eye contact with his indifferent gaze.

Lord Blood Hawk looked over at Wu Tian and asked in a light tone, "Wu Tian, how many Blood Hawk Troops can you control?"

Wu Tian hesitated for a moment before saying, "It should be up to about 2,500."

Lord Blood Hawk slightly narrowed his eyes. He pondered for a moment before saying, "Although there is a limited number of Nine Nether Troops, that chap named Mu Chen has some know-how. We have no choice but to put our guard up. As for this fight, you must win!

"Thus... I want you to take control of all the Blood Hawk Troops!"

Wu Tian was surprised. He hesitated for a moment before saying, "My Lord, with my current capability, if I were to take full control of the Blood Hawk Troop, I'm afraid I would be devoured by the fighting spirit."

Lord Blood Hawk clenched his fist, and a dull red pill appeared in a flash. It was continuously releasing miraculous columns of bright light, and a sort of bizarre wave was rippling out from it.

"This is an Ethereal Pill. When the time comes, swallow it, and it will cause you to enter a temporary ethereal state. Then you will be able to bear all of Blood Hawk Troop's accumulated fighting spirit."

Wu Tian was extremely delighted upon hearing this. Who would've thought that Lord Blood Hawk would have such a marvelous pill in his hands? Additionally, with this pill he would be able to take full control of the Blood Hawk Troop. Thus, it would definitely be enough to crush Mu Chen and the Nine Nether Troop.

When the time came, it wouldn't matter how many tricks Mu Chen still had hiding up his sleeve. They would all undoubtedly be doomed to fail!

"Rest assured, my Lord. I will make Nine Nether Palace regret their actions of offending us, the Blood Hawk Palace!" A ferocious smile emerged on Wu Tian's face.

"If there is a chance, then make the Nine Nether Troop disappear. The Nine Nether Palace without its Nine Nether Troop will be reduced to a joke," Lord Blood Hawk said with a satisfied smile.

"As my Lord commands!" Wu Tian said with an awe-inspiring smile. He was already anxious to see the look of despair on Mu Chen's face when he appeared leading 5,000 Blood Hawk Troops.

This time, he would ensure that the Nine Nether Palace was utterly disgraced!

...

News about the eventual crossing of swords between the Nine Nether Troop and the Blood Hawk Troop spread across Daluo Territory like the wind. However, it was not surprising that it caused uproars within Daluo Territory.

For the past few years, the reputation of the Blood Hawk Troop in Daluo Territory had increasingly strengthened. Their overall strength could practically place them within the top three in the rankings of Daluo Territory's many legions. On the other hand, the Nine Nether Troop belonged at the bottom of the rankings.

Thus, many people could see that they were not even on the same level, and so they wondered why Nine Nether Palace would accept this fight, even though the stakes given by Lord Blood Hawk were extremely enticing.

But no matter how enticing the stakes were, they would still need good fortune to enjoy them.

In many people's eyes, Nine Nether Palace must have been tempted by the stakes this time and thus, decided to give it a shot. But didn't they

think of what would happen if they lost? There was a high possibility that the Nine Nether Palace would truly be ruined. Furthermore, when that time came, even if they had the support of the Condor King, it would still be extremely difficult for the Nine Nether Palace to have a foothold in Daluo Territory again.

After all, there were quite a number of similarly strong vassal forces within Daluo Territory. These forces were constantly coveting the positions of the princes of Daluo Territory. This was because the moment they acquired that position, they would be able to truly become Daluo Territory's direct line of power. At that time, the protection and resources afforded by such a position would definitely exceed that of a normal vassal force.

Thus, Nine Nether Palace could not afford to lose this fight.

...

However, while the whole of Daluo Territory was abuzz with discussions about the fight, Nine Nether Palace chose the unusual move of remaining silent, and none of their news was being spread. Additionally, they were even more heavily guarded to the point that outsiders had absolutely no means of finding out about the activity within.

In a mountain deep within the Nine Nether Palace.

There was a vast flat land within the verdant mountain, and currently on that surface were streams of black-armored shadows sitting cross-legged silently. Like a huge rock, their figures were unmoving.

Right above the streams of silhouettes was a slender shadow sitting cross-legged while floating in mid-air. His slightly closed eyes slowly opened. There were rays of light flickering from his palm before a blood-tainted bamboo scroll appeared with a flash.

The bamboo scroll was presented in a tattered fashion and gave off a feeling of dilapidation. But the air of iron and blood that assaulted the senses warned people not to underestimate it, even in the slightest.

Mu Chen's expression was also particularly serious. He held the bamboo

scroll in his hand and soon after, stuck it lightly on his forehead. Suddenly, there was a surge of brilliant rays on the bamboo scroll. Finally, everything was poured into Mu Chen's mind.

An air of iron and blood was directly instilled in Mu Chen's mind like a flood. Countless sounds of fighting at close quarters soared up into the sky. At that moment, it was as if he had a dream of returning to the ancient battlefield.

The ancient and blood-tainted scenes flit through his mind. In those scenes, he could only see dark masses of troops permeating the space between the sky and land. They were walking in an orderly formation, and with every step, even the sky and land would tremble beneath their feet.

That kind of vehemence was simply unstoppable.

Mu Chen shifted his slightly stunned attention towards the middle of the troop. It seemed that there was a blurry shadow silently sitting cross-legged there. That shadow was not upright and tall, but it was enough to let a person know by just a glance that he was the ruler of this terrifying legion.

When Mu Chen looked over, that silhouette's palm was also lifting slightly.

"Fight!"

That troop was so strong, it instilled fear in people. It erupted in a thunderous roar, and soon after, he could only see countless majestic fighting spirits soaring up to the sky. The space was almost going to collapse.

Roar!

The majestic and expansive fighting spirit was practically condensed into a substance. Finally, with a surge of howls, it actually turned into a giant nine-headed dragon. The moment it cried into the air, everything within the perimeter of 100,000 miles immediately disintegrated. After that, the giant nine-headed dragon opened its mouth, and nine lofty and enormous beams intertwined as they burst out.

The target of that terrifying attack was the large fissure in the distance. That seemed to be the world of the Lower Planes. But within it, a strange, towering atmosphere was stirring.

That seemed to be a world of Lower Planes occupied by an extraterritorial clan!

Boom!

The terrifying light beam flooded their eyes, and it was also indescribably fast. With a flash, it pierced through the space of a million miles and shot directly into that world of Lower Planes.

When the terrifying attack burst into that world, there was no earth-shattering explosion like one would expect. Instead, that world of Lower Planes was immediately erased in that space distortion.

At the same time, the extraterritorial clan in those Lower Planes was also wiped out...

With just one move, it managed to obliterate a world of Lower Planes!

Hiss!

When Mu Chen saw this, he suddenly couldn't help but take a deep breath of cold air. What a terrifying troop, and what a petrifying war troop dispatcher... It looked like what Mandela said was right. In those ancient times, a top notch war troop dispatcher did have a shocking strength which was comparable to that of the Heavenly Sovereign.

Nevertheless, they needed to rely on the power of the legion.

The ancient scene was also gradually collapsing. Finally, it completely fragmented and disappeared. Along with the disappearance of these fragments, a seemingly ancient message welled up from Mu Chen's heart.

These message was slightly dilapidated. Clearly it had been damaged, but the few isolated phrases which would occasionally appear revealed a sense of mystery which a person couldn't help but to plunge into.

"The rule of war is that it is most disadvantageous for one to control with strength."

"In contrast, it is the most advantageous for one to control with heart."

"..."

Mu Chen was immersed in those abstruse words. A long time went by before he slowly opened his eyes. His eyes looked as if he were still lost in thought. There was no method of practice for warfare in this dilapidated bamboo scroll, but he was able to realize something due to the things within it.

For example, the mastery of the fighting spirit.

Before this, whenever he controlled the condensed fighting spirit of the Nine Nether Troop, it was always forcefully urged by a feat of his own strength and willpower. But this sort of behavior seemed to be precisely the "most disadvantageous way" the bamboo scroll had mentioned.

"It is most disadvantageous for one to control with strength."

"It is most advantageous for one to control with heart."

But how does one use their heart to control such a majestic fighting spirit?

Mu Chen was lost in thought. Even after a long time went by, he still had no clue. Thus, he lowered his head and looked downwards at the Nine Nether Troop. The moment he waved his palm, the entire Nine Nether Troop made a low sound before the majestic fighting spirit soared up into the sky.

On the other hand, Mu Chen, who was sitting cross-legged in the middle of the majestic fighting spirit, closed his eyes and sensed them.

At the peak of a mountain not so far away, Nine Nether, Tang Bing, and Tang Rou were looking over in the direction of the deep mountain. There was a hint of worry in their pretty eyes.

"Elder sister Nine Nether, will Mu Chen really succeed?" Tang Rou asked in a low voice.

Nine Nether lightly bit her red lips, for even she herself was not certain of this. After all, war troop dispatchers were rare, and there was no one

who could professionally guide Mu Chen. It was obvious that it would be difficult for him to cross the threshold.

"Judging by Lord Blood Hawk's personality, he will definitely use unscrupulous divisive tactics in this fight. If Mu Chen does not succeed, then I'm afraid the chances of us winning will not be too high," Tang Bing said worriedly.

Nine Nether slightly nodded her beautiful head. Then, her pretty eyes looked over at Mandela, who was swinging her pale calves as she sat at the side of the cliff. But before Nine Nether could say anything, the little girl said with a lazy tone, "Don't look for me. I was never supposed to take part in this matter. If it weren't because I have a request this time, I would never have helped you all.

"So whether or not he will come to a realization, that will be up to his own ability. This is all I can do. Otherwise, it would be incompatible with my identity."

"What identity?" Nine Nether asked doubtfully.

But Mandela did not answer. Those big golden eyes only looked blankly over at the slender shadow far away. She, too, was slightly curious as to whether this person would be able to obtain a realization from that dilapidated "Heart of Warfare."

Chapter 709: The Realization of Fighting Spirit

The surge of fighting spirit permeated the space between the sky and land. Mu Chen had his eyes tightly shut as he immersed himself in that sea of fighting spirit, floating and sinking along with it. Yet, every time he attempted to assimilate into that surge of fighting spirit, it would become quite difficult.

He could manipulate these fighting spirits, but it was extremely difficult to assimilate and truly fuse together with them. If he was unable to do so, then the so-called 'to control with heart' would merely be empty talk.

Nevertheless, Mu Chen did not feel dejected due to the continuous failures, as he understood the faintly discernible existence of the fighting spirit. Its birth depended on a person's willpower, while its strength depended on the merging of willpower and spiritual power. It was precisely the fact that every fighting spirit had a different willpower, which made it difficult to perfectly assimilate into them.

Mu Chen settled down, as a few of the dilapidated bamboo scroll's abstruse words continuously flashed through his mind. Then, he heightened his perception in an attempt to obtain clues from it.

Fighting spirit originated from the fusion of willpower and spiritual power. If a person wanted to control that fighting spirit, then he must ensure the obedience of the willpower within the fighting spirit. This was also the most basic requirement for a war troop dispatcher.

But, in a legion, there were thousands upon thousands of strong men with tough willpower, as they had all gone through the honing of blood and fire. If a person wanted to completely embolden the power of that kind of fighting spirit, then both parties must be able to achieve a form of trust and fusion, without reservation.

However, if one used strength to forcefully manipulate it, then it would be most disadvantageous to them. When Mu Chen opened his slightly

closed eyes, there was a hint of indecisiveness in his gaze. After a long while, he suddenly stretched out his arms slowly to regain the spiritual power which was enveloping him back into his body.

At the same time, his willpower was also beginning to relax. He even gave up on his instinct to resist, allowing that surge of vast fighting spirit to violently surge toward him in a craze.

Normally, when a person was controlling the fighting spirit, no matter the number, they would always put their guard up. After all, fighting spirits were violent and overwhelming. The moment they exceeded their limitations of control, then there was a possibility that they would devour that person's consciousness. Thus, Mu Chen's behavior was undoubtedly what people would regard as being extremely reckless.

Boom!

The surge of fighting spirit rushed into Mu Chen's body like a flood. He did not show any sign of resistance, but instead allowed the fighting spirit to rage freely. Along with the lapse of time, as expected, Mu Chen's consciousness was beginning to erode, due to that surge of fighting spirit. But luckily, he was able to strongly defend his sense of clarity, which allowed his consciousness to maintain the line between obscurity and clarity...

He did not know how long had it been since he had sustained this position. Mu Chen's willpower seemed as if it was beginning to slack a little. However, this was not the kind of slack which resembled a crushing defeat, but instead, it was an organized dispersion that was quietly coming into contact, little by little, with the willpower that was hidden within that surge of fighting spirit.

Roar! Roar!

What was similar to the growls of countless men, who were hungry for war, resounded through Mu Chen's heart. His willpower was also beginning its attempt to make contact with the willpower hidden within the many fighting spirit, little by little.

Although the current Mu Chen was someone, who could already receive

the approval of the Nine Nether Troop, this type of approval was only enough to allow him to control the fighting spirit on its surface. So now, he must assimilate deeply into the fighting spirit in order to trigger its true power. Only through this way, would he then be able to become a true war troop dispatcher!

Hence, time started to elapse, and the short period of three days went by quietly. In these three days, news of the fight between Nine Nether Troop and Blood Hawk Troop had completely fermented within Daluo territory, due to the promotion of people with ulterior motives. Hence, everyone knew about this fight.

Of course, they also knew that once the Nine Nether Troop lost, Nine Nether Palace would have to surrender to Blood Hawk Palace. This kind of outcome would be undoubtedly shocking, because for so many years in the Daluo Territory, there had never been an occurrence, whereby a King class force surrendered to another King class force.

Thus, this action was practically pushing Nine Nether Palace to the edge of a cliff. Once they lost, their reputation would suffer a devastating decline. At that time, no matter how much support the Condor King provided, they would not be able to maintain their position as one of the nine lords.

A few people were secretly shaking their heads at this awareness. Lord Nine Nether was still too young, especially when compared to the bunch of sly old men, such as Lord Blood Hawk, she was still lacking maturity.

Nevertheless, no matter how much Daluo Territory had been boiling over, due to this battle, Nine Nether Palace still remained silent, with no news of their panic being spread. This surprised quite a number of people. Could it be that Nine Nether Palace was really not flustered at all by this incoming fight? Did they have that much faith in the Nine Nether Troop?

In the midst of all these suspicions, the period of three days passed.vOn the third day, the moment the bright morning light tore through the clouds to shine on the earth, the attention of almost everyone in Daluo Territory was fixated on Nine Nether Palace, which was still silent.

At the center of Daluo Territory, in front of a dark hall, Lord Asura was looking toward the direction of the Nine Nether Palace with a blank expression. Behind him, the leader of the four great commanders, Xu Qing, was also standing with his hands by his side.

"My Lord, is there still no activity among Nine Nether Palace?" After waiting for a while, Xu Qing couldn't help but ask.

Lord Asura said with a light tone, "Although Lord Nine Nether is still young, she is not a reckless person. Since she accepted this fight with Blood Hawk Palace, then it must be because she has a trump card. The fact that Nine Nether Palace chose to remain behind closed doors, must mean that they are in the midst of preparing something."

"It was said that the fight this time was accepted by their new commander, Mu Chen..." Xu Qing scowled and said, "Actually, he has a rather exaggerated opinion of his own abilities. How could Nine Nether allow him to fool around like this?"

There was an unusual fluctuation in his tone, because he noticed that the relationship between Nine Nether and Mu Chen was not merely a simple one between a master and subordinate. Otherwise, how could Nine Nether tolerate such actions from him?

King Asura looked at him, a smile appearing on his usually blank face. He said, "Why? Are you jealous?"

Xu Qing's handsome face flushed red as he let out an embarrassed smile.

"Don't look down on that young man." King Asura shook his head. He looked toward the direction of Nine Nether Palace with slightly narrowed eyes and said, "I have a feeling that Blood Hawk Palace will regret having provoked him."

Xu Qing was surprised before going quiet shortly thereafter. This was actually the first time, after so many years, that he had heard King Asura give such an evaluation to a young man, who looked to be younger than him.

Blood Hawk Palace.

Lord Blood Hawk was seated on the throne. At this moment, there was a joyous smile on his usually gloomy face. He had two metal balls in his hands, which were being slowly spun around. His gaze was filled with satire, as he looked toward the direction of Nine Nether Palace.

It didn't matter if there would eventually be any activity among Nine Nether Palace, because the outcome would still be the same. When the moment comes, where he finally managed to suppress Nine Nether Palace, no one in Daluo Territory would dare offend them, the Blood Hawk Palace, ever again.

Moreover, when Nine Nether Palace finally lost their power and influence, he really wanted to see that prideful woman, Nine Nether. He wondered what sort of touching expression would be on that beautiful face, which was now only filled with uncouthness. When he thought of this, there was a blaze bubbling in Lord Blood Hawk's eyes.

While King Asura and Lord Blood Hawk were keeping their eyes on Nine Nether Palace, at different parts of Daluo Territory, the other prince forces were also focusing their attention on Nine Nether Palace. If Nine Nether Palace remained behind closed doors for the fight today, then they would surely make a fool out of themselves. That might also be what Lord Blood Hawk wanted to see.

In the deep mountains of Nine Nether Palace, Nine Nether stood silently at the summit. Today, she wore a dark green unlined garment and slim-fit pants, which wrapped around her slender and sexy legs until they were perfectly straight, mellow and full. Her fine black hair was swishing, and there was only tranquility on that cool, elegant, and pretty face of hers.

However, for the two sisters Tang Bing and Tang Rou, who were right behind her, their faces were filled with worry. This was because, in mid-air above that faraway place, there had been no activity from Mu Chen for the past three days.

But, now the fight was about to begin!

If there was still no activity from Nine Nether Palace, then they would

truly have no face to have a foothold in Daluo Territory ever again. There were already people saying that Nine Nether Palace was afraid of war. This would be a fatal blow to their reputation.

"Elder sister Nine Nether," Tang Bing couldn't help but utter, "Why don't we forcefully wake Mu Chen up? Even if we fail in the end, it would still be better than being said to be a people who fear war."

When Nine Nether heard this, she only shook her head lightly before, opening her red lips slightly to say, "Wait."

Tang Bing forced a smile and could only nod at this. At the cliff of the other side, Mandela still looked heedless. After a long while, she finally stretched herself out lazily. That pair of big golden eyes was fixated on that area, which was wreathed with fighting spirit. A hint of imperceptible disappointment swept across her eyes.

In the end, was it still no good?

Mandela sat up and patted her hands together. Just when she was about to leave, she suddenly paused, and slowly turned her head to look over at that deep mountain forest. Over there, the members of Nine Nether Troop that were originally sitting cross-legged silently, abruptly opened their eyes fiercely.

Boom!

Along with the moment they opened their eyes, the surge of fighting spirit, which was wreathed above them, actually roared like a flood, and the fighting spirit hissed into a tornado. That scene was extremely spectacular.

Nine Nether and the rest also looked over in astonishment. Then, they saw that slender shadow finally standing up slowly, after having been seated quietly in that surge of fighting spirit for the past three days. It was still the same shadow, but for some reason at this moment, there was an awe-inspiring fighting spirit permeating from his body.

"Looks like he succeeded." a hint of surprise swept through Mandela's huge golden eyes as she spoke with a smile.

When Tang Bing and Tang Rou heard this, they couldn't help but show how pleasantly surprised they were through their expressions. It was also at this moment that Nine Nether's pale hands, which were tightly clenched all along, began to slowly relax, as if she had been relieved from a huge burden.

From afar, Mu Chen's stature moved slightly, before appearing directly in front of Nine Nether and the rest. Soon after, a smile appeared on his handsome face. That smile was filled with a high-spirited fighting spirit, which was not there before.

"I am sorry to have kept you waiting. Now, we have to go and take back the plunder which belongs to us!"

When Nine Nether and the rest looked at that confident smile on the handsome face before them, their taut hearts were finally at ease. This young man had always been creating miracles that were unattainable by normal people. And this time, it would certainly be the same.

Chapter 710: The Battle Between Two Troops

Daluotian.

The normally noisy Daluotian was unusually quiet. But everyone knew that there were countless eyes looking collectively toward the direction of Nine Nether Palace.

Everyone was waiting for Nine Nether Palace's reaction.

Time was passing little by little, and a number of people furrowed their brows. Was Nine Nether Palace really going to resort to their most disadvantageous plan, which was to avoid the battle?

But what was the point in avoiding it now? Lord Blood Hawk was precisely aiming to discredit Nine Nether Palace. If Nine Nether Palace faced this sort of situation by avoiding the battle, it would be practically worse than losing to Blood Hawk Palace.

Could it be that Nine Nether Palace was really going to resort to such a foolish idea?

Boom!

Just when countless powerful people in Daluo Territory were having their suspicions, suddenly, a monstrous fighting spirit soared up into the sky from the direction of Nine Nether Palace. Everyone instantly shifted their attention to it.

They could only see dark clouds rising from the sky above Nine Nether Palace, and suspended in the sky was the Nine Nether Troop. There was a slender shadow standing straight at the forefront of the troop that was emitting a feeling of sharpness similar to that of a pike capable of piercing the sky.

"Blood Hawk Troop, we, the Nine Nether Troop, quietly await your presence at the battleground!" Beneath the presence of that vigorous and firm spiritual power, the young man's cool and bright laugh resounded

throughout every corner of Daluotian.

Swish!

The moment Mu Chen finished speaking, the Nine Nether Troop immediately turned into a dark cloud, swept across the horizon, and flew toward the direction of Daluotian's battleground.

Wow!

The whole of Daluotian was in an uproar, for Nine Nether Palace had finally made a move. Furthermore, judging by their direct acceptance of Blood Hawk Palace's offensive, it looked like things were about to get lively!

Swish! Swish!

Thus, when the sound of streams of wind suddenly resounded throughout the horizon, they could only see countless shadows soaring up into the sky from every direction. They covered the sky and earth as they streaked toward the direction of the battleground.

Snap!

In Blood Hawk Palace, Lord Blood Hawk originally had a joyous smile on his face, but when he heard Mu Chen's laughter, the metal balls in his hand were immediately turned into dust. An ominous glint swept over his blood-red eyes as his lips curved into a cruel smile.

"Wu Tian!"

Wu Tian was in the audience hall and immediately answered, "Yes, my Lord!"

"Lead the Blood Hawk Troop there. From today onwards, I do not wish to see that brat's face in Daluotian ever again," Lord Blood Hawk said indifferently with his eyes slightly drooped.

"Understood!" There was also a ray of ferocity emerging from Wu Tian's eyes. He grinned and with a shift in his stature, he immediately swept out of the audience hall. Soon after, he waved his palm, and a blood ray capable of covering the sky and earth soared up to the sky from Blood

Hawk Palace.

Suddenly, the aura of death permeated the air.

...

The battleground was situated at Daluotian's northwest area, and it was different from other training grounds. This battleground was the most extensive piece of land in Daluotian due to the fact that those who would usually carry out their fights and swap pointers here would not do it alone but rather with a whole troop.

The many legions in Daluotian had also carried out quite a number of competitions and swapped pointers there. Thus, the area was actually arranged to look like a battlefield and was filled with a killing aura.

No doubt the battleground was certainly bustling with noise, and the reason for this liveliness was naturally due to the eventual crossing of swords between Nine Nether Troop and Blood Hawk Troop.

Whoosh!

The sound of objects piercing the air overwhelmingly resounded through the sky before a dark cloud immediately made its descent. Finally, it fell like iron lances in a perfectly straight manner and stuck itself firmly in the ground. The earth was shaking, but they remained unmoving.

Mu Chen had also landed lightly in front of the Nine Nether Troop. When he saw that Nine Nether Troop's gazes were filled with fighting spirit, he nodded in mild satisfaction.

Although there was a flaw in the Nine Nether Troop's numbers, their vigor was not weak at all. This legion definitely had potential. If they were all able to promote themselves to the Sovereign-level, then it would even be possible for them to directly kill a Grade Five Sovereign.

Whoosh! Whoosh!

When Nine Nether Troop landed on the battlefield, there were also continuous streams of light and shadow streaming towards the same spot from afar. It looked like the fight this time had already captured the

attention of everyone in Daluo Territory.

Moreover, everyone could see that the crowd actually included the physical presence of Daluo Territory's other princes. This showed how much interest the fight had created.

Nine Nether, Tang Bing, and Tang Rou had also rushed over promptly. They stood high up in the sky. Behind them, there were also quite a number of Nine Nether Palace's forces. This time, it was clear that Nine Nether Palace had turned out in full strength.

Boundless attention converged on them. There was a shift in their expressions as they turned their heads to look over in the other direction and could only see that blood-red sky.

Swish!

That sort of blood-red was spreading toward them at a terrifying speed. Eventually, like a blood-red rainstorm, it covered the earth and sky as it descended on the battlefield. Finally, only a thudding sound could be heard before the earth began to shake and patches of blood-red color began to permeate the air.

Everyone's eyelids twitched. The Blood Hawk Troop had finally appeared.

In the sky, Lord Blood Hawk also appeared in a flash. He stood high up in the sky and glanced at the Nine Nether Troop with a shady expression. An awe-inspiring smile swept across his face. Soon after, he smiled at Nine Nether and said, "Nine Nether, if you lose this fight, then it looks like the Blood Hawk Palace will gain another King class affiliated force."

Nine Nether glanced at him coldly before she lightly said, "You would still have to have the good fortune to enjoy it. So you ought to prepare those hundred cities and Heavenly Pills first."

Lord Blood Hawk chuckled. "As long as you all have the ability, Blood Hawk Palace would be more than willing to offer them," Lord Blood Hawk said with a smile. He waved his big hand and said, "Cut the crap and let's just start."

The moment he finished speaking, a heavy gale began to blow in the area where the fog of blood was permeating, and the blood ray was slowly dissipating. The streams of silhouettes wearing blood armor accompanied by the thick smell of blood lingering on their bodies were appearing one after another into everyone's line of sight between the sky and land.

The Blood Hawk Troop was all wearing identical blood armor. On the blood armor there was a Blood Shadow rune for tearing their prey, and an inauspicious air was seeping out from their bodies.

At the forefront of that Blood Hawk Troop, Wu Tian was also wearing blood armor while holding a bloody spear. He had an intensely cold smile on his face. His eyes were fixated on Mu Chen and the Nine Nether Troop, and had the look of a predator about to capture a mouse.

"Mu Chen, seeing how everyone here is from Daluo Territory, if you admit your defeat now, I can still show some mercy to avoid the outcome whereby Nine Nether Palace's heavy loss would prove to be an obstruction in Daluo Territory's incoming battles of conquest. What do you think?" Wu Tian said as he looked at Mu Chen with a smile.

Hearing this, Mu Chen smiled before saying, "Actually, you said the words I initially wanted to say to you."

"You're so stubborn," Wu Tian said with a faint smile. "Looks like you refuse to be convinced until you are faced with the grim reality. In that case, don't blame Blood Hawk Palace for not having any consideration for your feelings."

Mu Chen glanced at the size of the Blood Hawk Troop. He wanted to say something, but suddenly he paused when he saw a strange smile appear on Wu Tian's lips.

"Something is not right!" It seemed that Nine Nether had also become aware of something at that moment, as her pretty face looked toward the battlefield with a slight change in her expression. She discovered that the blood cloud behind Blood Hawk Troop had yet to actually dissipate.

Boom!

The earth was shaking, and the sound of orderly footsteps could be heard. There was a slight change in the expressions of the people who were looking over at that rich blood cloud. The appearance of streams of silhouettes could be seen once again.

These silhouettes slowly stepped out of the blood cloud and appeared at the rear of the Blood Hawk Troop. Impressively, it was once again bulk upon bulk of Blood Hawk Troops!

Their numbers had doubled!

Wow!

Suddenly, the sound of surprise resounded through the sky and land. This time, even Xu Qing and Zhou Yue's expressions changed slightly. Blood Hawk Palace actually dispatched all their Blood Hawk Troops!

But was Wu Tian truly able to control that amount of Blood Hawk Troops with his current capabilities? Was this fellow not afraid of being devoured by the fighting spirit?

Numerous whispers resounded through the sky and land. Clearly no one expected this move from Blood Hawk Palace.

"Looks like Blood Hawk Palace really did take out all of their capital," Mu Chen said while looking at the scene with slightly furrowed brows.

Wu Tian chuckled. "It's too late to regret now." Wu Tian looked at Mu Chen with a smile as well as a ridiculing gaze.

"With your capabilities, are you not afraid of being devoured by the fighting spirit?" Mu Chen said.

Wu Tian smiled. Soon after, there was a flash of light between his two fingers, and a medicine pill flickering with Spiritual Light appeared. Then, he lightly stuffed it into his mouth. His smile became increasingly sinister.

"I can do it now."

"That is... the Ethereal Pill?! How despicable!" When Tang Bing and the rest saw this, the expressions on their faces changed immediately as they exclaimed while gritting their teeth. It looked like she knew the effects of

the Ethereal Pill.

The expression on Nine Nether's beautiful face was becoming increasingly cold. It was clear that Blood Hawk Palace really wanted to win, by hook or by crook.

Lord Blood Hawk chuckled. "Nine Nether, we did not place a restriction on this in our provisions," Lord Blood Hawk said when he saw Nine Nether's cold expression.

Nine Nether glanced at Lord Blood Hawk before clenching her pale hands.

When everyone else between the sky and land saw this scene, they, too, furrowed their brows. Clearly they were not fans of Blood Hawk Palace's usage of such tricks. After all, Blood Hawk Palace was already far stronger than Nine Nether Palace. Yet now they still wanted to use such tricks in order to win...

But it did not matter if they were fans of it or not, for they could not say anything about it. After all, it was true that there was no restriction on it in the fight this time. Now Nine Nether Palace's plight was getting further away from a good outcome.

Nine Nether did not pay attention to those pitiful looks but instead her pretty eyes were only focused on Mu Chen. As if he felt her gaze, Mu Chen also turned his head before smiling while nodding at her.

When she saw Mu Chen's response, Nine Nether also nodded. Her taut heart was slightly at ease.

Luckily, they did not come completely unprepared.

Mu Chen reached out his palm towards Wu Tian and said with a gentle smile, "Make your move. I hope such tricks will be of use to you."

"We are already at this point and yet you are still reluctant to admit your defeat..." Wu Tian sighed before saying with a sinister smile, "But believe me when I say, you will have no choice but to admit it very soon!"

The moment he finished speaking, he firmly stamped the the bloody

spear in his hand.

Boom!

Behind him, all the Blood Hawk Troops had also stamped the bloody spears in their hands. Immediately, the earth was shaking, and the blood-red fighting spirit engulfed the sky and land like the permeation of a bloody sea.

There was a solemn expression on the faces of countless people.

Chapter 711: The Battle of the Fighting Spirit

The envelopment of the bloody fighting spirit began sweeping out, while the bright sky gradually turned dark and gloomy. A thick, pungent smell of blood seemed to be diffusing into the air.

Stern gazes were cast upon the Blood Hawk Troop, who was eluding fearsome fighting spirit. They looked like blood-sucking ferocious beasts who had just climbed out of a mountain filled with corpses and blood. Any enemies who appeared before them would surely be torn apart.

The Blood Hawk Troop was not the strongest among the armies in the Daluo Territory. But the killing desire they possessed was considered to be at the top of the list, and such killing desire was accumulated by the fresh blood they stockpiled.

In most previous wars, countless factions and sects had lost their lives under the blood spears of the Blood Hawk Troop. But now, the blood spears of the Blood Hawk Troop that were smeared with fresh blood were brought out once again. But this time, the tips of the spears were pointing toward the Nine Nether Troop, and no one knew if the Nine Nether Troop could protect themselves from such a strong opponent.

Numerous gazes were cast toward the direction of Nine Nether Troop. They were in rows of black, with their armors on their upright bodies. There was no fear, and no emotion except the will to fight, present in their eyes.

As the attention was all on them, both Mu Chen and Wu Tian stared at each other, with cold radiance swirling in their eyes. The vast spiritual energy was seeping out from their bodies, lifting them up in mid-air, before they then sat facing each other.

"Blood Hawk Fighting Spirit!" Wu Tian did not give Mu Chen any leeway. He gave a sneer and waved his hand, while his angry voice rang through the air.

Boom!

The enveloping scarlet fighting spirit expanded its reach, spreading out like an ocean that was filled with blood. They suspended in mid-air, above the Blood Hawk Troop, releasing a blood-sucking aura.

"Let me see how you can command the fighting spirit, since you have just taken over the troop for only two to three months!" Wu Tian gave him a mocking smile, while pointing his finger in the air.

"Blood Shadow Fighting Spirit! Blood Spears Magic Formation!"

Weng Weng!

With a low scream from Wu Tian, countless red-glowing beams raised themselves into mid-air from the bloody pool of the fighting spirit, turning themselves into a flight of massive bloody spears above Wu Tian. These gigantic spears were formed by the fighting spirit, and they were razor-sharp. Even a Grade Three Sovereign top power would not dare underestimate such a level of attack, because such an attack was not activated by Wu Tian alone, but was supported by a troop of 5,000 warriors in the Blood Hawk Troop.

However, although the Blood Spears Magic Formation was well-known for their formation, it was actually just a hoax. If Wu Tian could really convert the fighting spirit into a war formation, Mu Chen should have just conceded defeat.

Shoo! Shoo!

Countless blood spears were formed in the air. As Wu Tian shook his robe sleeves, a screeching wind-breaking sound could be heard. The blood spears were raining down on the Nine Nether Troops, like a rainstorm of blood, and they had nowhere to escape.

"Nine Nether Fighting Spirit!"

Mu Chen gazed at the bolting rainstorm with his sharp eyes. With the swing of his sleeves, the halberts in the hands of the Nine Nether Troop stomped the ground, excreting an ooze of ink-like fighting spirit into the sky, as if nightfall had just descended.

Mu Chen formed seals with both of his hands at lightning speed, before giving a slap forcefully.

Boom!

The magnificent pitch-black fighting spirit swept across the space, like waves rushing in, transforming itself into a light screen of a thousand feet, then forming a gigantic sturdy black shield.

Sst sst..

The blood spears, which were now shooting from everywhere, landed on the light shield that was formed by the fighting spirit. Smoke was seen as they hit the shield. It was as though they were lava rocks landing in the sea, giving off sizzling sounds before turning into cold stones and falling off.

"Hmph, with only a mere thousand warriors in your Nine Nether Troop, you want to compete with my Blood Hawk Troop? Think on this, who has a more solid fighting spirit?" Wu Tian smirked at the side of his lips, as he pointed his finger into the air once again.

Weng! Weng!

More bloody long spears were formed behind him, shooting out non-stop, as it seemed like Wu Tian wanted to drain off the fighting spirit of Mu Chen and the Nine Nether Troop with his mighty fighting spirit. The spectators frowned, when they saw such a scene.

The Blood Hawk Troop had condensed and formed a fighting spirit stronger than the Nine Nether Troop, due to the numbers they had. Even though Wu Tian had not put up his full force for now, as time passed, the consumption would still be too much for Mu Chen and the Nine Nether Troop to defend against.

"The difference in the number of warriors between Nine Nether Troop and the Blood Hawk Troop is really too huge." Some of the spectators shook their heads, as they could tell that the Nine Nether Troop might not be able to hold out for too much longer. In their minds, the battle outcome was quite evident, right from the beginning.

Mu Chen did not have the time to be bothered by those gazes filled with sympathy. He watched the incoming waves of the rainstorm attack with calmness on his young face. While his sleeves swung, more fighting spirit was emitted, adding on to their defense.

Both the attack and the defense went into a stalemate, but as time passed, the sympathy gazes for the Nine Nether Troop had been substituted by ones of astonishment. They discovered that, even under such an aggressive attack, the defense of the Nine Nether Troop had shown no signs of crumpling or weakening.

"How could this have happened?" Some of the top powers from the Daluo Territory exclaimed.

Lord Asura's, Lord Mountain Cracker's, and the others' eyes flickered. They looked at that juvenile figure sitting on top of the Nine Nether Troop with deep thoughts in their mind, and they mumbled, "This is getting interesting."

Mu Chen lifted his head slowly under the astonishing gazes, as he smiled at Wu Tian, who was looking cold on his face now. "No more child's playing."

Wu Tian's lips twitched when he heard this. He smiled coldly. "It is no wonder you would take up this battle bet, as it seems like you have some reliance on your troop. My bad."

"Show us your true strength. If you are only up to this level, your Blood Hawk Troop will be quite wasted," Mu Chen said.

"You've got me fed up with your words. Those attacks previously were only just a test," Wu Tian said calmly, but killing desire and anger were swirling in his eyes.

"But, since you want to take a good look at the power of my Blood Hawk Troop, I don't mind showing it to you!"

Just as his voice ended, both of his eyes were turning scarlet. While he raised both his hands slowly, the Blood Hawk Troop gave a loud roar below.

Roar!

Wu Tian formed a formation slowly, with both of his hands. As his formation changed, the enveloping bloody fighting spirit gave a deafening roar, and the waves of fighting spirit became even more tyrannical. Apparently, Wu Tian finally understood that Nine Nether Troop was not a troop which could be dealt with easily. Hence, he needed to power up his attack!

"Blood Hawk War Seal, All Suppression!"

Wu Tian paused a little with his formation. With blood rushing into his eyes, he raised his hand, and the bloody fighting spirit transformed into a bloody glowing palm, which was as huge as a mountain. Hideous-looking blood hawks seemed to be gliding on that glowing palm, looking down on the earth with sharp hawk eyes.

With the appearance of the bloody glowing palm, the spiritual energy from the heaven and earth started to rumble, and an indescribable pressure enveloped. Under this pressure, even Grade Three Sovereign top powers would not be able to keep their calmness.

Some of the top powers, who knew something about the Blood Hawk Troop, had stern expressions on their faces. In the past combat exchanges, numerous top powers had been squashed under this Blood Hawk Fighting Spirit.

Wu Tian had finally shown his true strength.

Mu Chen lifted his head, and the huge bloody glowing palm shadow was reflected in his serious eyes. Wu Tian was annoying, but he had to say that this fellow was not an ordinary character. The Blood Hawk Troop, under his lead, had displayed extraordinary strength.

If Mu Chen had not been here, such a compressing attack would cause a substantial setback to the Nine Nether Troop. However, in this world, there was no such thing as "if".

"I shall see what you have to say now!" Wu Tian looked down on Mu Chen and gave a hideous smile. As he slapped his palm down, the

mountain-like bloody glowing palm went through the space, then appeared on the sky above Nine Nether Troop. As soon as it appeared, the palm suppressed the troop with great pressure.

Boom!

The battlefield collapsed immediately, with a big crack in the middle, then spread itself rapidly.

Boom! Boom!

As the land kept collapsing, the robe on Mu Chen was sticking close to his body. He looked down on the Nine Nether Troop, who had been persevering, and smiled.

"Nine Nether Troop! We have been waiting for this day to come for many years. Today will be the day that we soar together. In the name of the Nine Nether Troop, we will make ourselves known in the Daluo Territory!"

The murmuring voice of Mu Chen rang in the heart of every Nine Nether warrior. Their eyes were sharpened, and a fire was burning within them all. After the wait of so many years, finally, the time had come to show their true strength.

Boom!

Countless people witnessed in astonishment, as a huge black light pillar shot from the Nine Nether Troop. Within that pillar contained a shocking amount of fighting spirit.

Most of the top powers had their facial expressions changed slightly, as their eyes filled with surprise. How can the fighting spirit released from Nine Nether Troop be so domineering?

Mu Chen lifted his head, and as both of his hands opened up, he divided his attentions between the raging fighting spirit and the forming of a formation.

Weng!

At the point where countless beams of fighting spirit intersected, the

space was torn apart suddenly. A size of a thousand-feet pitch black glowing wings slowly formed, and the gale between the heaven and earth was blowing at maximum speed.

"Nine Nether Wing, Sky Slayer!"

At this moment, a sharp radiance was forming in Mu Chen's eyes, as he twisted both fingers and pointed out to the space in front of him, before striking forcefully.

Eeek!

A sound from a crying bird seemed to be heard at that instant, while a pitch black glowing wing turned into a sky sword, striking out with full force. The arc of the black-lighted sword collided with the suppressing bloody glowing palm gently.

The moment they collided, all breaths halted quietly.

Chapter 712: Blood Sacrificing Fighting Spirit

Shua!

The pitch-black glowing wing flashed across the sky and collided head on with the suppressing Blood Hawk War Seal.

But as the collision occurred, there was no expected cry. Instead, as the two powerful fighting spirits came into contact, only vibrations could be felt. Both powers were trying to engulf one another, hoping to counter and suppress each other.

Everyone's attention was focused on the sky.

While the two parties refused to budge, Wu Tian's face turned grey. This was not the situation he wanted to be in. His Blood Hawk Troop was almost five times larger in number than Nine Nether Troop. His troop should be overpowering theirs.

"We shall see how long you can last!" Wu Tian said it with a cold face. He changed his formation again, only to see more bloody fighting spirits blasted out, charging towards the Blood Hawk War Seal.

The sudden surge in the Blood Hawk War Seal's strength caused Mu Chen to gaze with a serious expression. He took a deep breath and swung his arm like an axe.

A beam of light swept across the sky. As the black glowing wing swept across, the crack on the Blood Hawk War Seal widened to its maximum, splitting itself into two at the end.

Boom.

The Blood Hawk War Seal was blown up in the sky. Fragments scattered like stardust and eventually dispersed.

Wu Tian and the Blood Hawk Troop stood where the fragments dispersed with dazed expressions on their faces.

Wow!

In the sky outside the battlefield, an uproar burst out in astonishment. The top powers looked at each other and did not know how Mu Chen managed to achieve this.

No matter what, the fighting spirit of the Blood Hawk Troop should be much stronger.

Xu Qing watched in surprise, and could not help but ask Lord Asura, "What's going on?" Under normal circumstances, Nine Nether Troop should have been the defeated ones!

Lord Asura also knit his eyebrow slightly. He squinted and said softly, "Mu Chen is really not that simple. Can't you tell now?"

Xu Qing hesitated for a moment before he said, "The fighting spirit of Nine Nether Troop seems to be more formidable in his hands."

"If you were the commander of the troop, could you do that, too?" Lord Asura asked.

Xu Qing paused for a while and shook his head. If he were to command the Nine Nether Troop, he would not be able to beat the Blood Hawk Troop commanded by Wu Tian.

"That's right. This means that Mu Chen surpassed all of you when it comes to understanding and controlling the fighting spirit," Lord Asura said.

"How could it be possible?" Xu Qing exclaimed in astonishment. "Mu Chen has not been here in the Daluo Territory for long, and he has not come across any fighting spirit in the past, while they have already been studying it for a few years."

"That is why I said he is not simple," Lord Asura said calmly.

Xu Qing was speechless. "So did he win the battle bet this time?"

"Not that easily. Although Mu Chen has a better understanding and control of the fighting spirit than you all, the Blood Hawk Troop is also not an easy opponent. On top of that, Wu Tian is not an ordinary character, either. If he wants to fight all out, Mu Chen will have trouble since Nine

Nether Troop has its own flaw by nature," Lord Asura continued.

Xu Qing nodded and lifted his head again to stare at the slim figure.

On the other side, Lord Blood Hawk was sulking while the two troops were engaged in a stagnant battle. His expression turned livid when the Blood Hawk War Seal was broken.

"Hmph!"

The loud hmph from the Lord Blood Hawk rang like a clap of thunder in Wu Tian's ear, waking him up from his dazed state. His face was instantly pale.

Mu Chen looked at Wu Tian as his face turned pale. He smiled at him and said, "Seems like numbers will not necessarily win the battle." Mu Chen could not let go of any chance to mock him.

Wu Tian's expression was a little twisted. He stared at Mu Chen with hatred and said coldly, "Mu Chen, it's still too early to be happy!

"You really think that my Blood Hawk Troop is made out of mud, that easily defeated?" Wu Tian exclaimed with anger. He stomped the blood spear in his hand with a ferocious look. The engulfing bloody fighting spirit gushed towards Mu Chen all at once like a raging flood.

After losing one round, Wu Tian had lost the calmness he had had at the beginning.

Mu Chen watched the massive incoming attack, but he did not fumble. As his sleeves swung, Nine Nether Troop's fighting spirit gushed out and collided head-on with the incoming waves of Blood Hawk fighting spirit.

Dong! Dong!

Two groups of fighting spirits collided with each other in wave after wave, causing a thunderous roar in the sky. The wind grew violent, whirling up the sand and the stones in the air, creating an appalling atmosphere.

This was the type of attack commanded by Wu Tian, but looking at it closely, his bombastic attacks could neither tear down Nine Nether

Troop's defenses, nor hurt Mu Chen or any warriors in the troop.

His skill in controlling the fighting spirit was less proficient than Mu Chen's!

As Wu Tian increased his attacks, he started to notice this as well. Even though he did not wish to admit it, the cold hard fact made him realize that aimless attacks would only drag out the battle. As time went on, the situation would be disadvantageous to them when they should have been winning effortlessly.

"This a**hole!"

Wu Tian's eyes were sore, red, and raging with fire. He gritted his teeth. No matter what price they needed to pay, they must win the battle or else Lord Blood Hawk would be furious.

"You forced me into it!" Wu Tian mumbled coldly as he swung his sleeves again. The enveloping attacks suddenly halted for a moment. He cast a revengeful gaze on Mu Chen before he lowered his head, looked at his Blood Hawk Troop, and said coldly, "Blood Sacrificing Fighting Spirit!"

Upon his yell, the troop paused for a moment with hesitation in their eyes. Finally, they all bit the tips of their tongues and countless blood arrows shot out from their mouths.

Shoo! Shoo!

These blood arrows rushed to join the massive fighting spirit, adding more color to the bloody fighting spirits. From afar, it seemed like a stream of blood was flowing while the faces of the Blood Hawk Troops paled in comparison.

Boom!

The sticky, bloody fighting spirit tumbled behind Wu Tian, and the pungent smell of the blood soared into the sky, causing the heaven and earth to turn gloomy as if were the end of the world.

"Bloody Devil Broken Deity Spears!"

Wu Tian's face turned malevolent. He made a formation with both of his

hands and then pulled both his palms upwards. An ocean of blood soared into the sky, gathered above the clouds, and eventually, fell like rain.

An approximately 1,000-foot-long Bloody Devil Deity Spear emerged gradually from that rainfall of blood. As the spear appeared, the land seemed to be blowing and shuddering with cold wind.

The facial expressions of the top powers outside of the battlefield changed. Wu Tian must have been really crazy to have used the most formidable trump card in Blood Hawk Troop. That attack could even kill a Grade Three Sovereign in seconds!

Tang Bing and the rest all turned pale. They had never thought that Wu Tian would go to these lengths.

Nine Nether looked coldly at Lord Blood Hawk and said, "People from Blood Hawk Palace are really ruthless."

"We, Blood Hawk Palace, never show mercy when we fight." Lord Blood Hawk sneered.

A coldness flickered in Nine Nether's beautiful eyes. But she did not say anything more, except to focus her attention on the slim figure standing in mid-air above the Nine Nether Troop.

She had already made up her mind. If the situation turned the other way, even if it was against the rules, she would resort to making her moves.

"Mu Chen, let me see how you can evade this!" Wu Tian laughed hideously. As the blood rained down, his face looked even more twisted and horrifying in it.

Mu Chen squinted while looking at the cold Bloody Devil Deity Spear floating in mid-air. He did not answer Wu Tian, who was very excited. Instead, he slowly closed his eyes.

A low voice rang in the heart of every Nine Nether warrior like a murmur, "As long as you are fearless, I will lead you to defeat any enemies."

"Fearless!"

"Dauntless!"

The voice rang in every Nine Nether warriors' heart as they stuck their halberts into the ground, held them with both hands, and knelt down on one knee.

Their heads slowly bowed towards the slender figure in mid-air.

Boom! Boom!

In that instant, a series of magnificent fighting spirits sprouted out like jets of ink. They eventually turned into a whirling windstorm surrounding Mu Chen. The howling cries of the windstorm included the roars of those who desired to fight.

Mu Chen slowly released his palms as he allowed the fighting spirit to roar as loud as it wanted. His will harmonized with the raging fighting spirit...

The fighting spirit windstorm increased at an astonishing speed.

Everyone's facial expressions changed. Even the hideous look on Wu Tian's face was changing.

They could feel that the fighting spirit surrounding Mu Chen had multiplied many times. Within a few seconds, the fighting spirit had already surpassed the fighting spirit formed by the Blood Hawk Troop!

"How could this be possible...?"

Among the soundless exclamations, they watched the figure extend both of his arms within the windstorm. For a while, they were speechless. This young man had already reached such a level in controlling the fighting spirit?

Chapter 713: Victory

As the vast fighting spirit windstorm swirled around Mu Chen fiercely, the surge of the boundless fighting spirit had caused many stern looks to show up on their faces. They could feel that the fighting spirit that had been exploded by Mu Chen had already surpassed the Blood Hawk Troop!

"How could it be?!" Someone could not help but exclaim.

The Nine Nether Troop was only made up of a mere thousand people, while the Blood Hawk Troop was made up of a total of five thousand. The Nine Nether Troop was completely outnumbered. Moreover, the Blood Hawk Troop was more tyrannical than the Nine Nether Troop.

They did not understand how the Nine Nether Troop could have such a fearsome fighting spirit. Only Lord Asura, Lord Mountain Cracker, and the Lords who had excellent eye powers frowned slightly, as they stared at that figure within that windstorm with sterns looks.

"Looks like I have underestimated him," Lord Asura said to Xu Qing slowly. "Given his understanding and control of the fighting spirit, I am afraid that he has the talent to be a War Troop Dispatcher."

"A War Troop Dispatcher?" Xu Qing felt his eyes twitch. He was also a commander himself, and he had led an army before. He knew that a War Troop Dispatcher could be rare and powerful. That was his dream, but unfortunately, he did not have talent in spiritual arrays, let alone the hopes of becoming a War Troop Dispatcher.

"But nowadays, a good War Troop Dispatcher is even harder to come by than a Spiritual Array Master. If there is no proper guidance, it is hard for him to achieve much on war formations," Lord Asura said with some pity. If the Daluo Territory could have a War Troop Dispatcher, it would help in increasing their strength exponentially.

"An ordinary commander can only lead a troop and activate about one or two out of ten in strength in the fighting spirit. But, given Mu Chen's understanding of the fighting spirit, he can unleash the true power of the fighting spirit."

Lord Asura sighed with feeling and said, "Looks like the outcome of this battle bet is obvious. No wonder Nine Nether dared to take up this battle bet of Blood Hawk Palace, as she had something to count on. Looks like Blood Hawk Palace has trapped themselves."

Xu Qing lifted his head without saying any words. The fighting spirit had grown tremendously in mid-air. The battlefield was torn by it, as if it was being ravaged.

"Playing tricks!"

Wu Tian pulled his face long, but deep down in his eyes, a fear flickered, as the strength that Mu Chen was now displaying was good enough for him to be fearful. No matter what methods he resorted to, he could not surpass or suppress this fellow at all.

On that juvenile face of Mu Chen, there seemed to be only unreadable expressions. However, whatever emotions Wu Tian had, he knew that there was no backing out now. He might be able to find a way out, if he fights with whatever he could. But, once he decided to give up or back out, it would only mean death for him.

"I don't believe you can defy the laws of nature with the strength of Grade One Sovereign!" Wu Tian gritted his teeth, and the cruelty within his blood-shot eyes was flickering. He did not have any hesitation, as he swung his palm forcefully. The blood-stained Bloody Devil Deity Spear that was floating in the sky suddenly stabbed down with force.

Shua!

The speed of the Bloody Devil Deity Spear was amazingly fast. As the wind howled, the space was torn apart, and the spear appeared above the fighting spirit windstorm in a blink of the eye. The terrifying force of the wind shook and cracked the space.

The last attack that gathered all the forces from the Blood Hawk Troop was indeed mighty. At this rate, even a Grade Three Sovereign top power could not handle it.

But Mu Chen was still looking calm, as he opened his pitch-black eyes

that were deep, mysterious, and as dark as a night sky. No one could have guessed his thoughts. He formed the formation with both of his palms, as they joined gently together.

Weng Weng!

The fighting spirit windstorm around him started to twist and turn altogether. The glow of it became darker, and it looked like a huge black dragon was going to soar into the sky from afar.

"Nine Nether Feather!"

Mu Chen lifted up his palm, and a huge black feather was seen, rising slowly at the tip of the windstorm. The feather took the shape of a sword, looking like a sword with feathers on it. At the blade of the sword, the edges were filled with tiny saw teeth. The black glow from the sword seemed to be able to penetrate into any spaces.

Mu Chen, looking calm, pointed out both his fingers in the air.

Weng Weng!

That black feather sword vibrated at full speed, and as it stopped vibrating, it vanished into thin air. When it reappeared, it was above the Bloody Devil Deity Spear, pointing down with its tip. The tip of the sword and the tip of the spear looked like needle-like beams, then collided together.

Dang!

The crisp, clear sound of colliding metal came from the sky, and two different fighting spirits were roaring outrageously. Both the black and the red, each occupied half of the sky..

"Break it!"

Wu Tian roared to the sky with a hideous face. Wave after wave of the bloody fighting spirit were sweeping in fiercely, as it looked like he had decided to put up his last fight with all his might.

Mu Chen looked at him calmly with his pitch-black eyes. Both of his fingers stroked the sword gently, "Then, just break it!"

At the tip of the black feather sword, a beam of light was glowing.

Shua!

As the light glowed and disappeared, the feather sword reappeared from behind the Blood Demon Deity Spear, and a tiny crack was expanding itself on the spear body.

Kacha.

As the crack expanded to its maximum, the spear broke into two, then fell helplessly from the sky before it exploded into blazing stardust. As the spear was broken, Wu Tian's face paled all of the sudden, and the warriors from the Blood Hawk Troop had a huge impact, as blood traces could be seen streaming from the corners of their lips.

The sky, which was filled with the fearsome Blood Hawk fighting spirit, was retreating at an astonishing speed. The half-taken sky by the Blood Hawk fighting spirit was cleared out thoroughly within seconds.

The battle between the Nine Nether Troop and the Blood Hawk Troop had officially ended, with the stronger troop, who had the most significant advantage, suffering a complete loss!

Wow!

The sky outside the battlefield burst into an uproar, when they saw this scene. Numerous top powers had serious looks on their faces. Although they did not say anything, an impact was left in their hearts.

The outcome was too overwhelming that no one could feel calm about it. Not only did the Blood Hawk Troop have an advantage in the number of warriors, the commander, Wu Tian, had a strength of Grade Two Sovereign. From both aspects, the Nine Nether Troop should have been on the losing end, but the outcome....Took them by surprise.

The gazes were all now focusing on Mu Chen, as everyone could tell that he was the reason for the win in this battle. This new commander from Nine Nether Palace was indeed formidable.

At this instant, most of the top powers within the Daluo Territory kept

their condescending attitudes, as they looked at Mu Chen. Although on the surface, he had only the strength of Grade One Sovereign, the means that he had displayed were something that could not be matched by many within the Daluo Territory, except Nine Nether and those top powers who had more superior qualifications. The new commander, who was brought by Nine Nether, was much more formidable than was the previous Cao Feng.

As the crowd burst into an uproar, some of these gazes swept secretly onto Lord Blood Hawk. His expression was so cold!

The fighting spirit surrounding Mu Chen faded off gradually in the battlefield, while the Nine Nether Troop looked at him with passion and admiration. Their hearts were filled with excitement, as they had not had a well-known reputation among the Daluo Territory these past few years. In fact, people were disdainful when they mentioned Nine Nether Troop.

But today, under the command of Mu Chen, they finally made a name for themselves for once. From now on, nobody in the Daluo Territory dared mock the Nine Nether Troop again!

"Hehe, thank you for the gift from Blood Hawk Palace." Mu Chen held his fist up, while looking and smiling to Wu Tian, whose face had already paled.

Wu Tian, whose blood was boiling within his body, could not endure his anger and grievances. He spurted out a mouthful of blood, staring at Mu Chen with revengeful eyes, wishing he could hack him into pieces.

But Mu Chen did not bother about him. He turned his head and looked at Lord Blood Hawk, who was outside of the battlefield and wearing a stern look. "Lord Blood Hawk, I wonder, when can we officially take over the hundreds of cities, as you promised?"

The face of Lord Blood Hawk twitched slightly. He stared coldly at Mu Chen and said, "How dare a small commander speak to me like this?"

"Huh?!"

As his chilly voice ended, a mighty spiritual energy shrouded toward Mu

Chen with force.

Boom!

But when the spiritual energy was just released, over ten light beams with purple flaming glows were targeting and attacking his vital spots, without showing any mercy, with the speed of lightning. Lord Blood Hawk stomped his feet, and a blood-red spiritual energy formed a shield around him.

Bang Bang!

The beams of light hit on his shield, and the spiritual energy vibrated vigorously. The spark from the purple flame stuck onto the shield eroding it rapidly. The expression of Lord Blood Hawk slightly changed, and when he saw it, he immediately stepped a few steps back.

The Spiritual energy broke out from his body, before he could stop the purple flame with its fluctuation. He stared at Nine Nether, who was not far away, with his icy cold glare.

"Lord Blood Hawk, you are getting shameless." A mocking smile appeared on Nine Nether's cold, beautiful face. "If you are not convinced, shall we have a try?"

"Do you think I'm afraid?" Lord Blood Hawk said coldly.

"Enough is enough!"

Just when they were about to argue again, a loud voice rang out from the sky above. The Condor King gradually came into sight. On seeing him, everyone bowed to him in respect.

"Since you have lost the battle bet, you should honor your words. Or else, what are the rules for?" The Condor King looked at Lord Blood Hawk and said.

Lord Blood Hawk gritted his teeth and nodded his head. "Alright, since the bet is over, follow me. Our Daluo Territory's conquest is going to begin." The Condor King waved and said.

The top powers on the spot were stern when they heard this. Finally, the

Daluo Territory was going to begin their conquest...

Chapter 714: The Battle of Conquest

The battle between the Nine Nether Troop and the Blood Hawk Troop had undoubtedly caused quite a commotion in Daluo Territory. Perhaps right from the very beginning, no one had ever expected that the Nine Nether Troop, who had no quantitative advantage, would be able to win the battle against the infamous Blood Hawk Troop.

However, before the commotion in Daluo Territory could give rise to even bigger troubles, an even more sensational event had erupted to distract the people of Daluo Territory from the ruckus, and the clamour was erased without a trace from the people's minds.

This was the Battle of the Conquest of Daluo Territory.

Daluo Territory was one of the very few influential figures in the world, but that did not mean that other forces did not dare to provoke them. In fact, the "Hundred Battle Territory," entrenched on the northwest region of Daluo Territory like a vicious tiger, was one of them.

The Hundred Battle Territory was not a name given to reflect its influential powers, but rather it was simply the name of a region. The region was well-known for its constant havoc as the good and the bad mingled as one, and multiple forces of all shapes and sizes converged within.

Three of the most tyrannical forces could be found within the walls of the Hundred Battle Territory: the Valley of Ten Thousand Swords, the Demonic Corpse Sect, and the Giant Sky of Sorrows.

The Valley of Ten Thousand Swords and the Demonic Corpse Sect were the oldest and most experienced forces in that world. Rumor had it that the founder of the Giant Sky of Sorrows originated from the Lower Planes, and that he was once a well-known formidable figure.

Those three forces were the big shots in the Hundred Battle Territory. Although their overall capabilities could not be compared to the ultimate powers of Daluo Territory, they could still be considered first-rank forces. This was especially evident when they joined forces. Even Daluo Territory

would be slightly cautious of them.

In the Hundred Battle Territory, numerous forces looked up to these three forces as leaders since their territories were all connected to each other. Over the years, the Hundred Battle Territory had been continuously usurping the territories of Daluo Territory. Although Daluo Territory would occasionally counter attack, they had shown some form of restraint as their mysterious Dominator lived an ascetic life. Thus, over the years, the Hundred Battle Territory became increasingly arrogant, and they refused to put Daluo Territory before them.

Regarding this, numerous powerhouses in Daluo Territory were actually left in discontentment, but there was nothing that could be done. To start a war, the order could only be given by the Dominator. Even the Three Kings would not have the guts to issue such orders.

The reason for this was that it represented the outbreak of a great war.

Presently, with the upcoming Battle of Conquest, the powerhouses in Daluo Territory were ravished with joy. They knew that only one person in Daluo Territory had the authority to issue the orders for the Battle of Conquest.

That person was none other than the Dominator!

This also meant that the ascetic Dominator had finally returned to the worldly realms again!

Although the many affairs of Daluo Territory were handled by the Three Kings, everyone understood that the spiritual pillar of Daluo Territory was the Dominator himself. Daluo Territory would only truly live up to its name as the most powerful force in the world as long as he still existed within the walls of the territory.

...

Daluotian. Daluo Hall.

The hall was situated at the highest region of Daluotian. Almost all of the higher ups of Daluo Territory congregated in the hall. The hall was so silent, a pin drop could have been heard. An overwhelming suspense was

felt by numerous people in Daluo Territory as they looked up in search of their leader's presence. None of them even dared to take a breath.

Mu Chen followed Nine Nether and stood toward the front of the hall. At the very front of the place, the Three Kings stood with their hands clasped in front of them. They did not look like their usual dignified selves.

The glimmering golden throne was situated at the highest point in the hall. Although it merely radiated faintly, no one dared to look straight at it.

Mu Chen glanced at the golden throne. His curiosity was piqued. He really wanted to know what the mysterious Dominator of Daluo Territory looked like.

While Mu Chen was still stuck in curiosity, bright rays suddenly radiated from the throne. The space around it began to distort.

An indescribable sense of repression ravaged the hall like a tempest. Everyone could not help but to bend their bodies.

The Three Kings' stentorian greetings resonated in the hall. "Greetings, Dominator."

"Greetings, Dominator!"

The hall was filled with thunderous greetings. The haughty Lord Blood Hawk also bowed humbly. There was no sign of his usual arrogance and impudence.

Mu Chen lowered his head as well. From the corners of his eyes, he saw the sudden appearance of a golden shadow on the golden throne. The shadow looked as if it were clad in a golden cap. Blinding golden rays radiated in the air. No one could truly see the actual appearance of the shadow with clarity. Mu Chen could not help but feel a little disappointed.

The shadow sat quietly on the throne. His presence was overbearing to the point that it had distorted the space around it.

"Hmm." He nodded slightly. A somewhat hoarse voice gradually began to speak. "I believe that all of you are aware of the issue at hand. In the

coming days, Daluo Territory will launch the Battle of Conquest, and our target will be the Hundred Battle Territory."

As he uttered those words, the gazes of the higher ups and powerhouses of Daluo Territory lit up in joy. Were they finally going to launch an attack on the Hundred Battle Territory?

"However, I will not attack too readily in this conquest. I believe that the Hundred Battle Territory secretly has the support of Tian Xuan Hall. Otherwise, even if the useless fellows of the Hundred Battle Territory had lionhearts, they would never have the guts to provoke Daluo Territory." The latter statement made by the Dominator of Daluo Territory left everyone in shock.

"This explains the increasing arrogance of the Hundred Battle Territory over the past few years. They actually have the support of Tian Xuan Hall," murmured the Condor King as he furrowed his eyebrows.

"Tian Xuan Hall?" Mu Chen raised his eyebrows slightly. Was the fellow whom he had snatched the Void Great Solar Fruit and Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art from at the Continent of Trade the young lord of Tian Xuan Hall?

"Hence, if I were to make a move in this conquest, it would inevitably attract Liu Tiandao's attention. If that were to happen, I'm afraid that I might have to confront Tian Xuan Hall face to face," the Dominator of Daluo Territory said weakly.

The Condor King and the other kings nodded. Liu Tian Dao was also a well-known powerhouse. If they were to provoke him to make a move, it would create too much commotion.

"Please don't worry, Dominator. You don't have to dirty your hands to deal with the Hundred Battle Territory," said the Spiritual Pupil King with a smile on his face.

"I hope so." The Dominator of Daluo Territory nodded. The blinding rays were like a sharp gaze, seeing through everyone's facades as it scanned through the hall. Anyone who was caught by the gaze would be humbled and bow down to the shadow on the throne.

Mu Chen, who stood behind Nine Nether, felt the enigmatic gaze lingering on him. The piercing feeling sent chills into his bones. He quickly lowered his head.

"After this Battle of Conquest, every territory that has been opened up will be owned by its groundbreakers. I will also reward you substantially."

His words caused an uproar in the hall. The gazes of the powerhouses were ignited with passion. Before, they would directly hand over the loot from their expeditions to open up territories to Daluo Territory. However, this time, every region of Daluo Territory would actually be distributed to all. Wouldn't it be a rather humongous cake?

"Besides, whoever is able to gain meritorious achievements in the battle among the younger generation will be allowed to represent Daluo Territory at the Dragon-Phoenix Rift."

Before the older powerhouses could cry tears of joy, the eyes of the youths in the hall widened in excitement as they heard the Dominator's latter statement. They even started to breathe heavily.

Everyone's eyes lit up, especially Xu Qing, Zhou Qiu, and Wu Tian's.

With a puzzled expression, Mu Chen asked Nine Nether, "What is a Dragon-Phoenix Rift?"

"It is one of the wonders of the world. Apparently, during ancient times, a horrifying bloody battle broke out between the Dragon Clan and the Phoenix Clan. In the end, both of them burned out and collapsed onto the ground. Their blood poured into the space. Coupled with the use of time as a catalyst, a magical force eventually emerged. Anyone who entered into the rift would be able to obtain the Dragon God's Abhiseka or the Phoenix God's Abhiseka, and thus achieve immortality," whispered Nine Nether.

"Immortality?" Mu Chen was dumbstruck. Was the Dragon-Phoenix Abhiseka truly capable of such a miracle?

"Obviously, this is just mere exaggeration. It is impossible for the Dragon Clan and the Phoenix Clan to do such a thing. Realistically

speaking, if one obtains the Dragon-Phoenix Abhiseka, he or she will be able to obtain the incredible vitality of the Dragon and Phoenix Clans. This is absolutely beneficial for your training," Nine Nether laughed.

Mu Chen was left speechless. The Dragon and Phoenix Clans had the most terrifying vitality in the world. It was way stronger than the vitality of the human race. If a human could obtain such vitality, he would be an invincible humanoid beast...

"However, the conditions to activate the Dragon-Phoenix Rift are really strict. It requires several Sovereign-level powerhouses to simultaneously make a move. Thus, the Northern Territory has an unwritten rule; only the youths who are powerful enough can qualify to enter into the rift. When the moment comes, they must go through a heartless battle against one another."

Mu Chen nodded as he was finally enlightened about the situation. That explained the expressions of Xu Qing and the rest. The Dragon-Phoenix Rift seemed so mystical. Plus, if any one of them was able to enter into the Dragon-Phoenix Rift, his name would be in the hall of fame as the strongest youth in the whole Northern Territory. Undoubtedly, anyone would kill to possess such glory.

As Mu Chen and Nine Nether were chatting, the Dominator of Daluo Territory, who was seated on the throne, suddenly uttered, "Wasn't there a military battle between the Blood Hawk Troop and the Nine Nether Troop? Who won?"

The hall suddenly turned silent. Everyone's gaze shifted toward Mu Chen, who looked stunned, and Wu Tian, whose face turned pale upon hearing the question. Neither of them expected the Dominator of Daluo Territory to show interest in such a minor issue.

Lord Blood Hawk looked a little embarrassed. The topic was evidently like a wound in his heart. However, now that these old wounds were reopened by the Dominator of Daluo Territory himself, he did not dare to feel even a hint of anger.

"Hehe, Dominator, it was the Nine Nether Troop who won the battle,"

said the Condor King as he smiled faintly.

"Oh?"

The shadow cloaked in blinding rays smiled. "The return of the Nine Nether King has brought forth a new talent with rather great potential to Daluo Territory.

"I heard that it was a battle. Lord Blood Hawk, do concede defeat if you have lost this battle."

Upon hearing the Dominator's words, Lord Blood Hawk quickly responded in agreement. However, the corner of his mouth twitched a little. Since the Dominator had brought this up, he did not dare to make a scene about the defeat.

The Dominator of Daluo territory nodded and did not say anything more. With just a wave of his hand, his figure vanished in the midst of the radiating lights. The terrifying sense of tension that shrounded the hall also disappeared without a trace.

Everyone in the hall let out a sigh of relief. The majestic presence of an Earthly Sovereign was truly frightening.

While everyone finally let their guard down, they looked peculiarly at the young man who stood behind Nine Nether. The fact that the young man was able to receive great compliments from the territory owner meant that not many people in Daluo Territory would dare to provoke him in the upcoming days.

At the very front of the hall, the Sleeping King glanced at Mu Chen. He looked rather surprised. He had worked under the Dominator of Daluo Territory for the longest time, but this was the first time he had actually paid special regard to a lowly commander...

"This young man is rather interesting..."

Chapter 715: Heavenly Pills

As the meeting between the kings ended, the whole Daluo Territory entered into a commotion. They knew that the dormant Daluo Territory would finally expose their ferocious fangs once again.

The forces that had been provoking Daluo Territory nonstop over these years would finally understand that once this sleeping tiger wakes up from hibernation, they would be confronted with the most terrifying revenge. A string of commands was issued from Daluotian in perfect order. Numerous forces in the Daluo Territory started moving their troops around, secretly plotting strategies to win this battle.

This would indeed be an actual battle!

Nine Nether Palace.

On this very day, the Nine Nether Palace had been completely filled with cheers of joy. Excitement was plastered all over everyone's faces. Years of pent-up anger and frustration was finally released.

From today onward, no one in the Daluo Territory would look at the Nine Nether Palace with mocking gazes ever again. The Nine Nether Hall was a scene of jubilation. Everyone toasted each other and were oddly high-spirited. The Nine Nether Palace was filled with laughter.

Mu Chen lay down on the roof of the hall. The moon hung in the night sky and bright moonlight lit up the dark.

He could hear their laughter. The corner of his mouth curled up into a smile, but he immediately lifted his head and stared at the moon. It was as if he saw a beautiful smiling figure looming in his gaze.

"Luo Li..."

Mu Chen uttered to himself. Looking back, they had already been separated for half a year. He wondered how she was coping in the Luo God Clan. It would not be too easy, right? The heavy burden of the Luo God Clan fell on her delicate shoulders. Mu Chen's heart ached at the mere thought of it.

However, he knew hat his present capabilities were not sufficient to provide her with any help. He could not even appear at the place where she was at, as it would definitely only bring her more woes and troubles. Although she would probably not mind, the ego and arrogance of a man prevented Mu Chen from allowing such matters from happening.

"Luo Li, I am also working hard to make myself stronger. However... believe me, one day, I will become an unrivalled powerhouse. When the time comes, I will not allow you to suffer from any more injustice."

Mu Chen clenched his fists slowly. An unrivalled powerhouse. These simple words held such tremendous weight. Perhaps everyone else would chuckle at his outrageous dreams, but the girl had never doubted him. She always had faith in him.

"Are you thinking about your little lover again?" A delicate voice suddenly appeared from behind. He turned around, not realizing that Nine Nether had been sitting on the steeple of the roof all along. Her black hair cascaded down her face like a waterfall as it blew in the wind.

Mu Chen smiled sheepishly. Nine Nether cupped her cheeks with her lily-white hands. Her solemn expression gradually softened into a rare gentle smile.

"Thank you once again," she said.

Mu Chen shook his head and chuckled. "Do you think I'll still have the guts to not do my best, when you are willing to put Nine Nether palace at stake for the sake of this battle?"

Nine Nether stood up. Her scent wafted near as she breezed toward Mu Chen. She tapped his shoulders lightly with her delicate hands. "Take a chill pill. Since I was the one who brought you out of the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, I will not disappoint you. I have faith in you. One day, when everyone in the Tianluo Continent knows your name, you can finally step foot in the Luo God Clan with pride. Meanwhile, I will try my best to help you achieve your target. This is my promise to you," said Nine Nether, a cheerful smile on her face.

Mu Chen stared at the beautiful face. He was sincerely moved by her

words. As he reminisced about the past, he realized that Nine Nether had been helping him all along.

She was always there to help him at his most difficult moments. Although Nine Nether had initially possessed his body with an undesirable purpose, they tried to communicate with each other after accidentally connecting their bloodlines together. Now, they were inseparable.

"Thank you," whispered Mu Chen sincerely.

Nine Nether smiled sweetly as she waved her lily-white hands. "Alright, stop feeling touched over nothing. Our bloodlines are connected. If you died inexplicably, I would have to die along with you, and I'm not willing to do so!"

Mu Chen could not help but roll his eyes at her. She had completely killed the cordial mood.

"In this battle of conquest, The Nine Nether Palace will probably start their journey very soon. The potpourri of people, the good and the bad of the Hundred Battle Territory will definitely be a tough nut to crack. However, no matter what happens, you must stand out in this battle," uttered Nine Nether, a grave expression on her beautiful face.

His eyes lit up. "Is it because of the so-called Dragon-Phoenix Rift?"

Nine Nether nodded her head gracefully as she spoke. "You should not undermine the importance of the Dragon-Phoenix Rift. I have heard good things about it while I was still in the clan. It doesn't matter whether you have obtained the Dragon God's Abhiseka or the Phoenix God's Abhiseka, either one of them will still greatly benefit your training in the future. The benefits that you'll obtain from the Abhiseka are incomparable with the meek powers of the Daluo Golden Pool."

She continued her speech. "Only the cream of the crop among the youths can qualify to enter the Rift. You are still inexperienced. Thus, if you do not seize the opportunity to shine in the battle of conquest, I'm afraid that it'll be extremely difficult for you to grab that one and only slot."

Mu Chen nodded his head and turned his gaze toward Nine Nether. "You're probably eligible for this as well, right?"

Nine Nether actually had the body of a Nine Netherworld Bird. If her age was calculated based on the years of the Nine Netherbird Clan, she had just come of age recently. Thus, she would still be considered as one of the youths.

"I have the body of the Divine Beast. Thus, the Dragon-Phoenix Rift will only bring little benefit to me." Nine Nether smiled.

Mu Chen fixed his eyes on her. In the end, he never said anything more, just simply nodded his head. Some things were better left unsaid. The sacrifice that Nine Nether had made for his sake was much more than this.

"I will do my best," said Mu Chen, nodding his head.

She extended her hand and a jade bottle appeared in the blink of an eye. A round and plump-looking emerald green pill floated quietly in the translucent jade bottle. The relaxing fragrance of the pill permeated the bottle and lingered in the air.

"This is the Heavenly Pill. It will probably help you. Obviously, this is also your loot," said Nine Nether with a smile. "I will portion out the leftover four pills myself, since it will not benefit you if you overdose on it."

Mu Chen took the jade bottle from her hand curiously. His eyes were fixated on the Heavenly Pill. Then, a wild grin broke upon his face. "Lord Blood Hawk has actually taken it out!"

"Well, initially, there were some setbacks. Judging from Lord Blood Hawk's usual attitude, he will probably procrastinate, even if he does intend to give it to us. However, fortunately, the dominator voiced up today. I doubt he would have the guts to make a scene."

Nine Nether smiled, but she immediately asked in a puzzled manner, "The dominator has never cared about the battles among the peasants. It is rather surprising for him to pay solicitude to this battle. I guess we have

quite the luck."

With his status as the dominator of Daluo Territory, battles like the one between the Nine Nether Troop and the Blood Hawk Troop would probably seem like child's play in his eyes. He had no reason to pay any attention to it.

Mu Chen scratched his head. He was not familiar with the dominator of Daluo Territory. Thus, all he could do was to laugh shamelessly. "Perhaps the dominator thinks I have great potential."

Nine Nether rolled her eyes at Mu Chen, who was feeling a little too good about himself, but she was too lazy to rebut his statements. She waved her delicate hands and floated down to the hall.

Mu Chen smiled as he stared at Nine Nether's disappearing silhouette. He held the jade bottle in his hands, his heart filled with joy. He would finally be able to achieve the status of a Grade Two Sovereign with the aid of the Heavenly Pill's powers.

"I can't believe that a single Heavenly Pill could make you grin like an idiot. You are so lame!" A childish yet sluggish voice suddenly appeared. Mu Chen quickly turned around, and his gaze was immediately greeted by the barefooted Mandela, who was donned in a black dress and had knee-long hair. Her little snow white feet tapped on the sharp eaves of the roof. She stared at him in disdain.

"He whose belly is full believes not him who is starving." Mu Chen pouted, but then immediately reminded her, "The dominator of Daluo Territory has returned to the worldly realms. You better be careful. Don't let anyone discover you."

The dominator of Daluo Territory was the ultimate powerhouse, having achieved the status of Earthly Sovereign. He had a terrifyingly sharp sixth sense. Although Mandela was an extremely mysterious being, there was no guarantee that she would not be discovered one day.

After Mandela heard his statements, she gave Mu Chen a side-eye and said faintly, "If I don't want anyone to find me, no one will."

"Fine, you're the best." Mu Chen was pissed off at her cockiness, but all he could do was roll his eyes and leave.

"Hold on," said Mandela.

"Hmm?" Mu Chen looked at the little girl in confusion. Her skirt fluttered in the night wind.

Mandela bit her lips lightly and hesitated for short while. She then said, "After three days, the curse will erupt in my body. At that time, I will need to rely on the power of the Immortal Pages in your body."

"Why is it happening so quick?" said Mu Chen, astonished.

"For the following period of time, I must make sure that my body is at its peak. Thus, I must first remove this dark thorn," said Mandela, a grave expression on her small face.

Mu Chen contemplated for a while, then nodded his head. Although he was curious of the reason behind Mandela's terrifying abilities, he could not help but question: Why did she need to tune her body to its finest condition? Was she going to face an extreme danger soon?

"After I've suppressed the curse, I'll teach you how to train your Great Solar Undying Body. With your current capabilities, you are still unable to unleash its true powers," said Mandela weakly.

Mu Chen was stupefied. He immediately looked at Mandela with a joyful gaze. This temptation was fatal to him. Although the Great Solar Undying Body was formidable, it was still a profound mystery. He only knew the ways to successfully train it, but he never knew how to unleash the message behind its powers.

"How do you know how to train the Great Solar Undying Body?" Although Mu Chen was ravished in joy, he still could not help but ask the question.

However, Mandela had completely given him a cold shoulder. As her little feet tapped on the roof, her body descended down the hall and disappeared into the dark night. All that was left was a faint voice.

"I will look for you after three days."

(To be continued. If you enjoy reading this novel, you are welcomed to vote for us in the recommended chart! Your support is our motivation!)

Chapter 716: Grade Two Sovereign

Over the next few days, the atmosphere in Daluo Territory became increasingly tense. The princes were busy recruiting troops, and information about the Hundred Battle Territory was flowing continuously into Daluotian. In the vast Daluo Territory, a power struggle had finally begun.

Nine Nether Palace had been rather busy. Those 100 cities belonging to Blood Eagle Temple were quickly conquered. Although this was not enough to give Nine Nether Palace the kind of wealth that speaks louder than words, compared to its previously pathetic state, it was without a doubt many times better. Furthermore, in the Battle of Conquest, this method was the best way to obtain resources. Now that it was seizing the opportunity, Nine Nether Palace would certainly become a powerhouse.

Just when Nine Nether Palace's activities were at their peak, Mu Chen chose to seclude himself in order to reach the Grade Two Sovereign-level. This was possible since many things were handled by Tang Bing, the chief governor. With Tang Bing's systematic delegation and command, even Nine Nether could not do as well as she did.

Hence, Nine Nether Place's operations totally did not worry him or Nine Nether.

Nine Nether Palace, cultivation chamber.

Mu Chen was sitting down cross-legged, adjusting his state of mind. After a long while, he made a fist, and a crystal-clear alabaster jar abruptly appeared in his palm. Inside the alabaster jar there was a round, dark green pill floating within. It emitted a thick fragrance that permeated the cultivation chamber.

Mu Chen stared at this Heavenly Pill. After pondering for a short while, he swung his sleeve, and a resplendent torrent suddenly flowed out, zig-zagging around him.

Within the torrent were droplets of saturated Sovereign Spiritual Liquid. Expansive spiritual energy fluctuations rippled out, making the air in the

cultivation chamber viscous.

There were Nine Grades of Sovereign, and breaking through each of them was not an easy task. The vast majority of people could not break through with years of hard training, thus it could be seen that there was a huge gap between grades.

Therefore, even though Mu Chen had the Heavenly Pill, he would still take in large amounts of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid with the pill to maximize the medicine's efficacy in order to achieve a breakthrough.

This is nearly 2,000 droplets of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid...

Mu Chen watched the torrent, feeling a little distressed. Previously, he had given most of the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid to Tang Bing to support the training of the Nine Nether Troop. Therefore, the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid he had currently did not even amount to 5,000 drops. He obtained it from completely extracting the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid sealed within the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid Collection Bowl.

After advancing in Sovereign-Level, Mu Chen could definitely feel the importance of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid in cultivations. It was almost like eating rice, something that was essential. No wonder so many Sovereign Masters were willing to obey the orders of some forces in order to obtain Sovereign Spiritual Liquid.

While Sovereign Spiritual Liquid did not make the world go 'round, it did allow Sovereign Masters to grind their skill...

That was just to break through First Grade Sovereign. I could not imagine how tremendous the amount of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid needed in future will be, thought Mu Chen helplessly. It seemed that he had to think of a way to store large amounts of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid. Otherwise, when he wanted to make the next breakthrough but did not have enough Sovereign Spiritual Liquid to sustain him, it would really give him immense grief.

He shook his head, trying to suppress those thoughts, and took a deep breath. With a flick of his finger, the crystal-clear alabaster jar in his palm abruptly melted away, and the Heavenly Pill was exposed. Instantly, the

whole cultivation chamber was filled with the pill's fragrance.

Mu Chen breathed in through his mouth, and the Heavenly Pill converted into a stream of light, directly entering his mouth.

Mu Chen quickly formed a seal with both hands. The space warp rippled behind him as the majestic Sovereign Sea loomed behind him. He could feel that there was a huge amount of spiritual energy emanating from his body.

Mu Chen calmed his mind and with a somber facial expression, he gradually closed his eyes and promptly entered the cultivation state. This time, he had to break through the level of First Grade Sovereign with courage!

Three days quickly passed.

During the three days, the cultivation chamber was completely covered with an extremely viscous spiritual cloud. Mu Chen's silhouette could not be seen within.

However, in that opaque spiritual cloud, it could be felt that there was a wave of spiritual energy fluctuation rapidly growing stronger.

The spiritual cloud cover only started to weaken on the third day. The moment the spiritual cloud completely disappeared was exactly the moment Mu Chen was seen opening his mouth, sucking in the last bit of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid.

His surroundings were rippling with spiritual energy, but now it was rapidly fading away. Mu Chen's tightly shut eyes opened slightly.

Boom!

When his black eyes opened, a radiant flash like a thunderbolt emerged all of a sudden, lifting Mu Chen's robe vigorously while making loud noises. A surge of frightful spiritual energy rippled and broke out.

Bang! Bang!

The air in the cultivation chamber instantly exploded. When the shockwave from the explosion swept fiercely into the cultivation

chamber's wall, the concentrated radiance on the wall suddenly flashed and forcibly resisted the shockwave.

The radiance in Mu Chen's eyes lasted for a few minutes before it slowly dimmed. That terrifying spiritual energy fluctuation returned to his body.

The weak radiance under his skin, however, did not dissipate. Mu Chen knew that was because the spiritual energy in his body was too majestic, and he could not hold it in completely at the moment.

Mu Chen stood up, feelling the increasingly majestic spiritual energy in Sovereign Sea. The corners of his mouth curled into a satisfied smile. The gap between Sovereign-levels was indeed very large. Currently, the spiritual energy in his Sovereign Sea was many times stronger than before the breakthrough.

Right now, even if he upset a person with the caliber of the four great commanders like Xu Qing and Zhou Yue, he would not be afraid at all. With this power, he had more confidence in the upcoming Battle of Conquest.

Mu Chen waited for the surging spiritual energy in his body to gradually calm down before he exited the cultivation chamber. Outside the cultivation chamber, there were a few Nine Nether Troops standing guard. The moment they saw Mu Chen walking out, they quickly bowed.

Mu Chen waved his hands and said, "How has the preparation in the palace been going these past few days?"

"All ready. We can depart anytime," the Nine Nether Troop soldier replied respectfully.

Mu Chen nodded. With the presence of Tang Bing as a great governor, everything in Nine Nether Palace was clearly in order. He waved away the Nine Nether Troop soldier, and suddenly his expression changed. He lifted his head and saw in the sky not too far away, a petite silhouette appear out of nowhere like a ghost. That pair of large golden eyes unnervingly intimated people in the night.

When Mandela's little leg touched the void, her body appeared abruptly

in front of Mu Chen. She scanned him with her big golden eyes and said, "Looks like the breakthrough succeeded. It was effective after all."

"With the Heavenly Pill and so much Sovereign Spiritual Liquid, it would be inexcusable if it failed," laughed Mu Chen.

"Then come with me." Mandela nodded. Not saying anything more, she waved her small hand and turned her back to walk into the void. Seeing this, Mu Chen hesitated for a moment, and then quickly followed her.

The two of them were swept out of Nine Nether Palace, and following Mandela's lead, Mu Chen went straight into Daluotian's deep area. She did not cover up at all in the journey. She just flitted with high speed. This made Mu Chen tremble slightly with fear, because the deep area of Daluotian was guarded particularly strictly. And the one standing guard was not just any army, but the Daluo Celestial Army directly under the command of Daluo Territory. It was an elite army that only obeyed the orders of Daluo Territory's master.

However, what Mu Chen worried about did not happen in the end. Although there were powerful patrols passing in the sky all the time, under Mandela's influence, is was as if Mu Chen had entered an uninhabited place, and no one noticed him.

Mu Chen witnessed this great trick of Mandela's again. With this strength, even in the Tianluo Continent, she would never be a nobody.

The two sneaked into Daluotian's deep area without a problem, and they stopped in front of a huge, black mountain peak. Mandela moved her tiny hand, and a big, black light array appeared on top of the peak.

Rumble.

The large peak shook shockingly, and a large crevice slowly cracked open. Mandela led the way into it, and Mu Chen followed.

Entering the mountain through the crevice, the sight Mu Chen beheld gave his eyes a scare. He saw that the entire mountain was emptied, and the internal walls of the mountain were completely carved with lines of black and ancient light patterns, vaguely giving a mysterious feeling.

Mu Chen stared at those ancient light patterns, and his eyes shook for a moment. This was because he realized that those light patterns seemed to form a very strong spiritual array.

The complexity of that spiritual array was beyond his imagination. Clearly, the level of this spiritual array was not low.

"Did you make all of these?" said Mu Chen, baffled. What he could not even figure out was how Mandela sneaked such a big move right under the noses of the top powers in Daluo Territory. Was the master of Daluo Territory completely dumb? Or did he reach some kind of agreement with Mandela?

As always, Mandela did not answer him. Her snow-white tiny feet touched the ground, and she abruptly appeared in the middle of mountain. There was a black pool of water there, and although the pool was like boiling water, Mu Chen felt a chill in his bones from it. The contrasting feelings made him suffer very much.

Mu Chen moved to the side of the pool and asked hesitantly, "What do you need me to do?"

"Wait for my order and just summon the Immortal Pages when I say so," Mandela replied with a tender voice. Although her voice was young, there was an unquestionable dignity in her tone.

Mu Chen nodded while curling his lip. Before he could say anything, his eyes suddenly widened. The little girl totally ignored him and removed her black dress before his eyes, showing a petite, white, and delicate body just like a little lamb.

"If you don't want your eyes anymore, then keep on looking." There was a shiver of coldness coming from the young voice, making him shudder.

Still, he said unwillingly, "It is your fault for not even giving a hint of a warning. Besides, I am not interested in that body of yours."

Bam!

The moment Mu Chen's voice faded away, a large force surged and sent him flying. When he embarrassingly regained his balance, wanting to

complain angrily, he saw that petite body dive into the dark pool of water as if she were a little fish. That scene, however, became an extremely touching one inside that cold mountain.

Chapter 717: Suppressing the Curse

Splash!

The crisp sound of something falling into the water reverberated within the vast mountains. It was Mandela, who had leapt into the dark pool of water. Upon her entering the pool, the bubbling water became more turbulent, with gurgling sounds ringing throughout the space.

Mu Chen glanced over with a solemn gaze, as black thorns began to sprout from Mandela's fair and petite body. He could see that the black thorns were embedded within her flesh deeply. The thorns squirmed around, resembling venomous snakes, absorbing her energy ravenously.

Mandela sat cross-legged in the pool, her eyebrows knit together in agonizing pain. The sight before Mu Chen shocked him greatly. It was clear that the young girl had an extraordinary pain tolerance.

The pain he felt just watching her now was excruciating, so he had to wonder exactly how great was the extent of the pain she was actually going through at the moment?!

As he watched in horror, the black thorns emerged out of her flesh continuously, one by one. Within a few moments, they had surrounded most of her body.

"Is this a curse?" Mu Chen kept staring in horror. Mandela's capabilities were already terrifying, so he could not imagine how scarily powerful a person would have to be in order to cast a curse on her!

As the black thorns continued to grow, Mandela's fair skin started to turn black gradually, until only her golden doe eyes retained their original color. However, Mu Chen could feel her body trembling violently, so he knew that she must be suppressing something with all of her might...

Whoosh!

The black pool of water continued to bubble. Suddenly, Mandela's long hair billowed out, as black beams of light burst forth behind her thin back. Then, a massive black thorn tore out of her body like a venomous python!

Hiss!

The grotesque black thorn writhed around in a frenzy. As it struggled, Mandela would hum in pain, crimson blood dripping down as she gritted her teeth. It was a horrifying sight to behold.

Buzz!

However, just as the black thorn sprouted, ancient light symbols that were carved on the walls of the cave shone brightly, accompanied by beams of spiritual energy light. These sources of supernatural light then surged, converging together to shine on the hideous thorn on Mandela's back.

Whoosh whoosh.

As the beams of light shone, white mist surged out of the thorn and a piercing scream rang out, as if the black thorn had a life of its own. However, the beams of light failed to suppress the black thorn entirely, as the black mutants could still be seen struggling wildly, continuing to emerge from Mandela's body sluggishly. With every newly sprouted thorn, the blood at the corner of Mandela's mouth dripped out a bit more, as if this black thorns were sapping her life away.

Bubble.

The black pool bubbled and boiled wildly, as beams of black light surged out, tussling with the black thorns. In the end, however, they could only alleviate the situation slightly.

As the black thorns continued to grow out of Mandela's body, they tore at her flesh. The gory scene caused even Mu Chen to look on in complete terror. Despite withstanding such excruciating pain, Mandela did not scream out, but gritted her teeth and bore it bravely.

"Mu Chen!"

However, there was a limit to Mandela's tolerance, as she finally lifted her head, cold sweat dripping down her face, and cried out to Mu Chen. She gnashed her teeth, and her normally sweet voice became hoarse, causing anyone to sympathize with her.

Mu Chen nodded to her immediately, his hands conjuring seals. The spiritual energy in his Sovereign Sea surged. Then, a page of mysterious black light burst out, hovering before him.

The Immortal Page hovered in mid-air silently, ancient and mysterious symbols covering its entirety. A faint purple light emanated from it, causing people to feel an inexplicable air of serenity.

Mu Chen gazed at the Immortal Page, then at Mandela, before gritting his teeth. With a flick of his fingers, the Immortal Page rushed towards the girl. Since he had chosen to trust her, there was no time to hesitate.

The Immortal Page hovered above the pool of water. Then, with a weak wave of Mandela's hand, a beam of light shot out and enveloped the Immortal Page, causing it to glow with a dark purple light.

Light burst out, as a massive mandala flower appeared in mid-air, its petals blooming slowly. Then, even more dark purple light descended, enshrouding the flower within it.

Whoosh whoosh!

Under the influence of the dark purple light, the black thorns squirmed in a state of unrest. Wherever they came into contact with the purple light, the black thorns seemed to show signs of melting, as black liquid dripped down from them.

Hiss!

A shrill cry emanated from the black thorns, as the speed in which they were growing finally halted. Then, with the light from the flower, the black demons were slowly suppressed back into Mandela's body.

Boom!

The black thorns were clearly reluctant to being suppressed, so with an explosive burst of black light, the thorns tore through space, sweeping toward the mandala flower as swift as lightning. Facing the attack, the mandala flower continued to emit purple light, which acted as a defensive barrier.

No matter how fiercely the black thorns' attacks were, they could not penetrate through the flower's defenses. Furthermore, the purple light continued to melt with every attack.

Upon seeing this scene, Mu Chen heaved a sigh of relief. Luckily, this method of rescue had been effective.

With the assistance of the mandala flower, the pressure that Mandela was facing was reduced. Only then was she able to slowly relax, her eyebrows no longer knit in a frown.

She reached out her hand to wipe the blood off of the corner of her mouth. Although it was only a small gesture, it was a struggle for her to do so, due to her weakened state.

Meanwhile, still in mid-air, the flower was clearly gaining an edge over the black thorns, as the latter's hideous aura was weakening, causing it to slowly succumb to being returned into Mandela's body. Mandela could sense the sluggish state of the black thorns, so she now could fully relaxed and let her guard down.

She could no longer withstand the agonizing pain in her body. She fell to her knees in the pool, heaving deep breaths, cold sweat dripping down her delicate features.

However, just as she relaxed, one of the black thorns, which had been suppressed to only half a foot, suddenly burst out. At the same time, a thorn that was embedded with spikes charged violently towards her throat!

The reflection of the black spikes expanded in Mandela's golden eyes. She knew that her strength had not yet had time to recover, rendering her defenceless to avoid them. Instantly, her face paled in fear.

Whoosh!

Just as Mandela gritted her teeth in preparation to bear the sudden blow, a sharp gust of wind stopped the spikes mere inches before her throat. Although a small wound was still inflicted, she was remarkably unscathed.

Mandela lifted her head in shock. As her eyes focused, she saw a palm

on the spikes. As her gaze followed the palm, she found Mu Chen standing in front of her. He had grabbed the spikes just in the nick of time.

However, just as he had grabbed the spikes, the incredibly sharp spikes pierced through his palm, causing blood to trickle down profusely, as an excruciating pain bloomed in his palm.

He could only bear the immense pain for a few moments, before he crumpled down. As he knelt on the ground, his eyes turned bloodshot. Gnashing his teeth, Mu Chen refused to loosen his grip, still attempting to pull the black spikes back.

Mandela gritted her teeth, and with a wave of her hand, a dazzling purple light emanated from the flower in the sky. Then, with a whoosh, the black thorns could no longer withstand the fight. They struggled out of Mu Chen's palm, only to be suppressed into her body once again.

Splash.

Mu Chen could no longer bear the pain, as his body fell into the pool. In a state of embarrassment, he trembled before pulling himself out and to his feet, intense fear still apparent on his face.

"Do you want to die?" Seeing that he was alright, Mandela heaved a sigh of relief, before questioning him coldly.

"I'm helping you." Exasperation was written all over Mu Chen's face. He had helped her so much, yet she still reprimanded him...

"You acted without knowing anything! If you didn't possess the Immortal Page, you would now also be infected by the curse!" Mandela reprimanded him coldly.

Mu Chen's expression twisted, as he hurriedly looked down at his palm. Sure enough, a hideous black mark remained there. Fortunately, purple light emitted from his body right at that very moment, erasing the black mark away entirely. Clearly, this was a healing power that could only be from the Immortal Page.

Mu Chen broke out in a cold sweat, realizing what a close call it had

been. He had witnessed how horrifying the curse was. With his limited ability, he knew that, if he had been infected with the curse without possessing the Immortal Page, he would have suffered a fate worse than death!

"Are you feeling alright now?" Mu Chen glanced at Mandela.

"For now." Mandela tried to move, but upon realizing that her strength was completely depleted, she knit her eyebrows in a frown.

Mu Chen stretched out his hand to retrieve the Immortal Page. He then glanced at Mandela and pursed his lips. He then took out a loose black robe to cover her petite body, before carrying her out of the freezing pool.

While all of this was happening, Mandela only glanced calmly at Mu Chen with her golden doe eye. She did not resist, but only leaned into his embrace silently, resting in order to regain her strength.

Still carrying her, Mu Chen leapt out of the pool and placed her on a huge boulder. The young girl sat quietly atop the boulder, her wet long black hair sticking to her body, revealing her every curve despite the loose black robe.

Silently recuperating, she glanced at Mu Chen, who appeared to be quite bored, just sitting off to the side. She then stated nonchalantly, "Thank you for your help. As a token of my appreciation, I will tell you what I know about the mysterious art of the Great Solar Undying Body."

Upon hearing this, Mu Chen perked up in excitement.

Chapter 718: The Power of Nine Suns

In the vast, empty cave, Mandela's petite body was wrapped under the loose black robe. Her big golden eyes glanced calmly at Mu Chen, whose eyes flashed with excitement because of her words. "The Great Solar Undying Body is the foundation to cultivating the Primordial Immortal Body, and although it is not included within the ranks of the 99 Sovereign Celestial Bodies, if it were included, it could at least be ranked within the top 30 positions."

"Top 30? That powerful?"

Mu Chen was surprised. He had never belittled the Great Solar Undying Body, but he had never thought it would be ranked among the top 30, as he was clear that the Sovereign Celestial Bodies who were ranked within the top 30 could be considered as a sect's key treasure among the primordial clans and superpowers. At least, such powerful ranks of Sovereign Celestial Bodies would not appear in Daluo Territory.

"You should know about the origins of the Primordial Immortal Body. As one of the rare Primitive Celestial Bodies, even if the Great Solar Undying Body is just its foundation, normal Sovereign Celestial Bodies could not match up to it," said Mandela.

Mu Chen nodded. After the primordial calamity, only five Primitive Celestial Bodies remained, and the Primordial Immortal Body was one of them.

The power that these five Primitive Celestial Bodies possessed was infinitely stronger than other Sovereign Celestial Bodies.

"Although you have successfully cultivated the Great Solar Undying Body, you have never truly understood its true power." Mandela pursed her lips, as if ridiculing Mu Chen's waste of something so wondrous.

Embarrassment was written on Mu Chen's face. After all, he had just cultivated the Great Solar Undying Body not long ago, and it was natural that he had not yet explored its true mystery. Furthermore, he had obtained the art of cultivation from the Immortal Pages, and it had only

revealed the methods of cultivating it. As for what it was capable of, there were many aspects left for him to explore on his own.

"I will have to ask Lord Mandela to guide me then." Since he needed someone to give him directions, Mu Chen could only humbly seek help.

"Do you know what Sovereign Super Power is?" Mandela asked calmly.

Mu Chen nodded slightly. The Sovereign Super Power was a unique method that only people who possessed a powerful Sovereign Celestial Body could utilize, but among those Sovereign Celestial Bodies he had seen before, he had never seen anyone who possessed the Sovereign Super Power.

"You mean, the Great Solar Undying Body also possesses a Sovereign Super Power?"

Mandela pursed her lips as she commented, "If even a Sovereign Celestial Body like the Great Solar Undying Body didn't possess a Sovereign Super Power, how many other Sovereign Celestial Bodies would be worthy of possessing it?

"The Sovereign Super Power, which the Great Solar Undying Body possesses, is also known as the Power of Nine Suns."

"The Power of Nine Suns?" Mu Chen was slightly stunned before he pondered this and asked, "Has it got to do with the Nine Suns Zoysia that was used to cultivate it?"

Mandela looked at Mu Chen in surprise before commenting, "Looks like you are not that stupid after all."

Mu Chen's mouth twitched.

"After the Nine Suns Zoysia has been cultivated, it transforms into nine Great Solar Crystals within the Great Solar Undying Body. If you can nurture and activate it, the Power of Nine Suns can easily help you defeat countless opponents," Mandela stated slowly.

"Great Solar Crystals?"

Mu Chen's brows knitted together as he closed his eyes, and a powerful

spiritual energy burst out. As gold light surged, the Great Solar Undying Body appeared in a flash while he focused on sensing it. A moment later, he followed the flow of spiritual energy and realized that there were indeed nine spots which had fluctuations that were out of the ordinary.

The fluctuations were so minute that they were hidden under the spiritual energy, and if Mu Chen had not tried to find them intentionally, it would have been difficult to detect them.

Mu Chen focused his attentions more as he inspected these spots, and he discovered that there were indeed nine golden crystals that were spherical in shape in the depths where spiritual energy surged. A powerful fluctuation emanated subtly, yet surely.

"Are those the Great Solar Crystals?"

Understanding dawned on Mu Chen as he dissipated his Great Solar Undying Body. He opened his eyes and asked urgently, "How do I activate these Great Solar Crystals?"

He could feel the immense power embedded within the Great Solar Crystals, and if he could cultivate it, it would cause his abilities to grow stronger.

"That's simple. Just use your spiritual energy to activate them. If you have insufficient spiritual energy, then use Sovereign Spiritual Liquid to activate them. I think if you want to nurture and activate the first Great Solar Crystal, it would require 50,000 to 60,000 drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid," Mandela remarked casually.

"Fifty to 60,000 drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid?"

Her casual statement almost caused Mu Chen to vomit blood. It had taken him only slightly more than 10,000 drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid to purchase one Void Great Solar Fruit. Now, just to activate one Great Solar Crystal, that would exceed more than 50,000 drops. Even if he sold himself he wouldn't be able to pay that much!

"Is that a lot? That's only for activating one Great Solar Crystal. You would need more Sovereign Spiritual Liquid as you progress."

Mu Chen blanched, and then his face turned green. So this supposed Power of Nine Suns was completely dependent on using Sovereign Spiritual Liquid to cultivate it!

"Looking at your sorry state..." Mandela supported her cheek with one hand as she stared teasingly at Mu Chen's expression. She waved her hand lazily and said, "Seeing how you were nosy and helped me just now, I will help you to activate the first Great Solar Crystal then."

Upon hearing the first part of her statement, Mu Chen was exasperated but after hearing the next part, he immediately wiped off his exasperated expression and put two thumbs up saying, "You're a heroine indeed, to know how to repay your gratitude."

Mandela gave him the side-eye and commented, "No backbone at all."

"This is not the time to have a backbone." Mu Chen smiled.

"Summon the Great Solar Undying Body again," Mandela said with a wave of her hand.

Mu Chen immediately complied, and as he concentrated, the Great Solar Undying Body shimmering with gold light materialized within the huge mountain. Under the glow of golden light, it seemed to be made of gold.

Mandela stretched out her small hand as black light coalesced on her fingertips, transforming into a beam of light. The light surged out, entering the Great Solar Undying Body as fast as lightning before appearing in the center of its forehead.

A Great Solar Crystal rested there.

The beam of dim light enveloped the Great Solar Crystal, and Mu Chen could feel a powerful spiritual energy continuously surge into the Great Solar Crystal.

As the powerful spiritual energy surged, the Great Solar Crystal grew brighter, and a terrifying power fluctuated.

The dim light enshrouded it, but the Great Solar Crystal did not hatch and activate as Mu Chen had imagined.

"What happened?" Mu Chen opened his eyes and glanced at Mandela in bewilderment.

The young girl rubbed her forehead gently, as if fatigued. She rolled her eyes and retorted, "Do you think this is as simple as a hen hatching eggs? I left a beam of spiritual energy to slowly nurture it. It needs some time to completely mature."

Understanding then dawned on Mu Chen as he smiled. "Then why don't you activate a few more?"

It was a casual move, but it was akin to the effectiveness of a few thousand drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid. Such power was unimaginable.

"I could, but with your power now, I just need to activate three Great Solar Crystals, and your Great Solar Undying Body would fail to withstand that degree of terrifying power and explode with a boom..." An unsettling smirk appeared on Mandela's face as she reached out with her small hand, light dancing on her fingertips as she smiled. "Here, let me help you."

Mu Chen smiled sheepishly as he retreated two steps. "I'll do it myself, then."

Mandela casually retracted her hand as Mu Chen sat beside her, asking in rumination, "Why are you so familiar with the Great Solar Undying Body?"

He had had this query in his heart for a long time, as he realized that Mandela's understanding of the Great Solar Undying Body had far surpassed his expectations. Generally speaking, people who knew about the Great Solar Undying Body were few and far between.

Mandela froze, and she remained silent. After a moment, she replied, "You're not the only one who has cultivated the Great Solar Undying Body before in this world."

"You have cultivated it before?" Mu Chen asked in shock.

"No." Mandela shook her head before stating calmly, "But I have met people before... So don't think that you are the only one. I also must

remind you, if you meet someone who also cultivates the Great Solar Undying Body one day, you better be careful."

"Why?" Mu Chen asked solemnly.

"What's your goal of cultivating the Great Solar Undying Body?" Mandela asked.

"The Primordial Immortal Body," Mu Chen said softly, before his expression changed. He might not be the only one cultivating the Great Solar Undying Body, but there could only be one person who would successfully cultivate the Primordial Immortal Body. Thus, if there was someone else who also cultivated the Great Solar Undying Body, that person would be his competitor to a certain extent.

"The Primordial Immortal Body is one of the remaining Primitive Celestial Bodies left in this world, and if one wanted to truly attain it, naturally they would have to go through a cruel process of selection. Since you have succeeded in cultivating the Great Solar Undying Body, you have passed the first step. However, to see which point you can advance to, that will have to depend on your ability."

Mu Chen's expression was somber as thoughts flowed rampantly through his mind. Mandela's words had given him a wake-up call, and it looked like the Primordial Immortal Body had many hidden secrets he was not privy to.

"Are the other Primitive Celestial Bodies like this, too?" Mu Chen asked, glancing at Mandela.

"Perhaps." Mandela did not give a definite answer.

Mu Chen smiled as he nodded slightly. "Thank you, I will be careful. Now that you have told me, my interest in the Primordial Immortal Body has grown stronger."

Mandela stared at Mu Chen in surprise. His eyes had a spark of fire in them. This fellow has a courageous spirit indeed.

"It's just something to repay you."

Mandela stood up as she turned to walk out the cave. "Let's go. Daluo Territory's Battle of Conquest will begin soon. You better do as you deem fit and don't get killed. Otherwise, the Great Solar Undying Body will go to waste."

Mu Chen smiled as he clenched his fist, his gaze flashing with determination. No matter how dangerous it was to cultivate the Great Solar Undying Body, he would not give up, and one day, he would attain the Primordial Immortal Body!

That was a path he must take to continue his journey towards becoming a matchless Sovereign master!

Chapter 719: The Beginning of a War

The atmosphere of the Daluo Territory as it was preparing for war had been brewing to a critical point. Countless figures, lights, and shadows could be seen in the sky every day, and an overwhelming battle aura soared amid the sky.

In the Tianluo Continent, which was a land of strife, war was extremely common. From most perspectives in that land, there was no such thing as true justice or evil, which created an "eat or be eaten" mentality. Thus, that realm was known to operate largely according to the law of the jungle.

During the dormant period of the Daluo Territory, the Battle Territory had also waged war multiple times, even having dealt sneak attacks on the cities of the Daluo Territory, robbing and plundering wantonly. Now, the Daluo Territory was merely retaliating, an eye for an eye.

Nine Nether Palace.

In the great hall, the high-ranking members of Nine Nether Palace were gathered. As spiritual light coalesced atop the stone platform, it transformed into a massive and complicated spiritual energy map.

"Now that the Lords of the Daluo Territory have taken action, the other vassal forces have also been gathering their men," Nine Nether said, staring at the complex map.

"There has been such a huge upheaval in the Daluo Territory. I believe the Battle Territory must have sensed something?" Mu Chen glanced at the map and commented.

Nine Nether nodded gently, commenting, "It's nothing. Even if they sense something, in a battle of such a scale, they cannot change anything by just realizing that something is wrong."

Mu Chen nodded. With the great power of the Daluo Territory, no matter what defense the other party had, the Daluo Territory could easily steamroll over them. In essence, any of their weakling strategies were mere furnishing objects in the face of the Daluo Territory's troops'

absolute abilities.

"What about Nine Nether Palace's attack route?" Tang Bing asked.

Nine Nether narrowed her eyes and pointed to the southwest direction on the map with a slender finger, before stopping on a crimson red spot of light. Three striking blood red words were annotated beside the red spot: Thunder Magic Sect!

"Thunder Magic Sect?" Tang Bing and Tang Rou cried out in horror.

Then, Qiu Shan said carefully, "My Lord, the Thunder Magic Sect is rather reputable among the Battle Territory. Also, its clan leader, Qin Tiangang, has an ability of a Fifth Grade Sovereign. I don't think it would be prudent to target them."

Generally speaking, battles and conquests focus on conquering and plundering, so it is simple common sense that one should start with the easiest target. Clearly, the Thunder Magic Sect was far from being an easy target.

"You have to take risks to gain rewards." Nine Nether smiled and continued, "The Thunder Magic Sect has been so overbearing for many years, encroaching upon the Daluo Territory's dominion and seizing countless amounts of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid. This time, we need to take what is rightfully ours. As for Qin Tiangang, I will deal with him personally."

Qiu Shan and the others looked at each other. They were at a loss for what to do, but seeing that Nine Nether had already made up her mind, they accepted her decision with respect.

Since Nine Nether was so confident, they decided that they had nothing to fear. What's more, the entire Daluo Territory would be taking action, so even the Thunder Magic Sect would not dare clash with them head-on.

"All of you go prepare! Tomorrow, we will set off officially!"

"Yes!" Qiu Shan and the others answered in chorus, before taking their leave.

Mu Chen waited for everyone to leave, before glancing at Nine Nether and asking in bewilderment, "Why did you choose the Thunder Magic Sect?"

Although Nine Nether had given her rationale previously, he knew her better, so this reason was clearly not very legitimate to him. Nine Nether glanced at Mu Chen, then explained.

"That's only part of the reason. Within the Thunder Magic Sect, there is a Thunder Magic Abyss. Within the depths of that abyss, it is said that there is a lightning dipper that originated from the earth, called the Earthly Demonic Lightning. Where it converges, there is a possibility that a stronger lightning would manifest itself. And....we call that... the Netherworld Thunder Heart."

"Netherworld Thunder Heart?" Mu Chen was stunned.

"This is an extremely rare power of lightning and thunder. Its power is more terrifying than that of the divine black lightning. However, it requires very harsh and strict conditions in order to manifest. Thus, I am unable to guarantee if it really exists within the Thunder Magic Abyss," admitted Nine Nether.

"You intend to?" Mu Chen glanced at Nine Nether, seeming to be considering something.

"That's right, as you would require it for the Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art that you are cultivating. The power of lightning you possess because of the Thunder God Physique is insufficient to sustain your complete cultivation of the Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art. Thus, you still must integrate a unique power of lightning. The Netherworld Thunder Heart is the best choice, as it can resist the Unperishable Flame," Nine Nether said seriously.

Mu Chen glanced at Nine Nether, dumbfounded. His eyes were full of touched emotion, as he did not think that Nine Nether would choose such a difficult opponent as the Thunder Magic Sect, just to help him.

"Oh please, don't give me that look. I meant what I said just now. One has to undergo risks to get rewards. If we can deal with the Thunder Magic

Sect, our rewards will be far greater than what you can imagine. That is what Nine Nether Palace needs desperately now. If we want to strengthen the Nine Nether Troop, we will require large quantities of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid."

Nine Nether patted Mu Chen's shoulder and smiled, "If we don't take action first, I'm afraid it will never be our turn, as others would vie for it too."

Mu Chen nodded slightly, as this was not the time to refute. Also, he figure that, since it was good for Nine Nether Palace too, then he would be sure to do his best.

"In that case, let's use this Thunder Magic Sect to replenish Nine Nether Palace's expenses then!" He agreed with a smile.

When the next day came, the battle aura that filled the sky of Daluotian, which had been growing for days, had finally reached the critical point. It was now ready to explode.

Silhouettes and figures could be seen flitting across the entire sky, as if they were a mass of dark clouds, continuously heading towards the Transfer Spiritual Arrays located in various places of Daluotian. The battle had clearly begun at this moment.

The various Lords had also taken action, as these battles of conquests were the best opportunities for them to plunder resources to strengthen themselves. Furthermore, the Dominator had said that any item plundered need not be offered as tribute, which only served to increase the competition between the Lords.

Just as countless figures flit across the sky in front of the great hall of Nine Nether Palace, Nine Nether was seen. She was wearing black armor and her long hair was tied up casually. Her whole being emanated a valiant charm and a thrilling sense of beauty.

Her eyes swept across the Nine Nether Troop, each of whom were clad in black, resembling thunderclouds. She gazed at them authoritatively, not saying anything for several moments. She then lifted a hand and with a single wave, commanded, "Nine Nether Troop, set out!"

"Yes!"

A thunderous chorus rumbled in response, as Nine Nether, Mu Chen, and Tang Bing surged forward, transforming into streaks of light and soaring across the sky. Behind them, an imposing mass of dark clouds followed closely, burning with a pervasive battle aura.

Daluo Territory, Southwest Lands, Xiluo City.

Xiluo City was located outside the borders of the Daluo Territory. When Mu Chen led the Nine Nether Troop through the Transfer Spiritual Array and appeared before the city, chaos and riots immediately came into sight.

The city was full of smoke, as figures in the sky flit across the sky from time to time. The chaos caused the city to look more desolate than any of the bustling cities in the interior area. Some of the city guards spotted the arrival of the Nine Nether Troop, as a shadow soared over from within the city, materializing into a silhouette.

"Subordinate Ji Fan, Duke of Xiluo City, here to pay my respects to Lord Nine Nether!" The figure was a middle-aged man, announcing himself as he clasped his fists together in deference to Nine Nether. He had clearly seen many Daluo Territory troops rushing here, so was not fazed at all by the appearance of the Nine Nether Troop.

Nine Nether nodded at him, then asked, "What is the battle situation here?"

"The Battle Territory had been continuously sending their troops to attack, but after the Dominator ordered the start of the Battle of Conquests, they have since retreated. Now, we are counter-attacking, with both parties currently locked in battle within a radius of tens of thousand miles," Ji Fan answered respectfully. "However, a few thousand miles out of the Southwestern Lands lies the territory of the Thunder Magic Sect. Thus, our troops don't dare to intrude there."

With the capability of the Thunder Magic Sect, they had sufficient power to resist the various Lords of the Daluo Territory. Thus, without the help of the various Lords, the vassal forces of the Daluo Territory would not dare offend the Thunder Magic Sect.

"Pass down my orders. Gather all the manpower in this arena and converge towards the Thunder Magic Sect," Nine Nether commanded nonchalantly.

Ji Fan was shocked, before asking cautiously, "My lord, are you intending to attack the Thunder Magic Sect? Qin Tiangang is not one to be trifled with."

"Go, I will deal with Qin Tiangang personally." Nine Nether waved with a flourish of her hand, her firm tone allowing for no argument.

"Yes!"

Ji Fan did not dare say anything more, as he clasped his hands in agreement, before descending from the sky and entering the Duke's Estate. Once there, he spread the order using a unique communication channel.

"Go!"

Nine Nether moved swiftly, turning to charge towards the Southwestern direction without hesitation. The Nine Nether Troop followed her closely, filled with burning combat desire.

Within the city, countless gazes looked at the retreating figures of the Nine Nether Troop in astonishment. It certainly looked like Nine Nether Palace was indeed targeting the Thunder Magic Sect. This was sure to be a head-on clash that would truly be a match between two strong powers, almost as if it were a clash between divine thunder and earth fire!

However, it was still unknown if Nine Nether Palace, who had recently been gaining a rising reputation within the Daluo Territory, would be able to put up a proper fight against the Thunder Magic Sect, which had a famed reputation that shook even the Battle Territory. This battle would truly be one for the books!

Chapter 720: Sweep Across

Thunder Fire Plains.

This was a converging point between Daluo Territory and the southwest arena of the Hundred Battle Territory. With the two behemoth forces starting the war, the flames of war pervaded this vast plain.

Troops from both sides fought and clashed, sneak-attacked, and annihilated, and the fierce battle resulted in violent spiritual energy fluctuations that enveloped the world.

The earth seemed to quiver as the war raged on.

Those who did not belong to either side avoided these war-torn arenas to prevent themselves from being caught in a brutal war that was akin to a meat grinder, as that would clearly bring about devastating consequences.

Within the Thunder Fire Plains, a dilapidated city stood as violent waves of spiritual energy fluctuations swept through it. It was apparent that two forces were vying for possession of the city.

One troop was apparently from Daluo Territory, and the other, from the Hundred Battle Territory. Such battles of conquest were common in the Thunder Fire Plains at this time.

At present, the competition for this city intensified. This city was called the Earth Fire City, which was an important city in the Hundred Battle Territory, thus it had heavy defenses. Previously, there had been several forces from the Daluo Territory who tried to capture the city, but they suffered utter defeat.

However, the forces that set their eyes upon the Earth Fire City were from Daluo Territory's Lion Tiger Mountains. They enjoyed a certain reputation, thus the battle was at a stalemate between both parties.

At this time, there were hundreds of figures standing in the air atop the city gate. Their expressions were solemn as they looked at the interior areas of the city where spiritual energy fluctuations constantly spread.

At the forefront of these men was a burly, middle-aged man. He knitted

his eyebrows and frowned at the city where the defense was unexpectedly strong.

Whoosh!

As he gazed at the city center, a dozen or so shadows swooped in and finally landed in front of them. The leader was a burly man of equal stature. He was no stranger. It was Fang Lei, whom they had met some time earlier in the Battle over the Daluo Golden Pool.

Fang Lei glanced at the middle-aged man and stated gravely, "Uncle Liu, there are two Third Grade Sovereigns hidden within this Earth Fire City!"

"No wonder it was so difficult to conquer it!" The middle-aged man had a somber expression. He was the leader of Lion Tiger Mountain and had the ability of a Third Grade Sovereign. If the other party had only one Third Grade Sovereign, they would still have the upper hand in terms of quantity, but if there were two, they would pay a hefty price.

"Uncle Liu, what do we do?" Fang Lei asked, as he was clear that the other party was more powerful, and if it weren't for the attacks from other troops before, they would have appeared to clash head-on with them.

The middle-aged man's gaze flickered before he gnashed his teeth and made a prompt decision. "Retreat! We'll find another target!"

Fang Lei and the other strong men of Lion Tiger Mountain were surprised, but could only nod unwillingly because they understood that if they were to attack forcibly, they would pay a heavy price.

"Go!"

With a wave of his hand, the middle-aged man retreated as the other strong men of Lion Tiger Mountain followed suit.

Whoosh! Whoosh!

However, just as they were about to retreat, silhouettes surged out from within the city, and the two leading figures emanated incredibly powerful spiritual energy fluctuations.

"Haha, since you are already here, don't leave!"

The two figures cackled maniacally before two streams of raging spiritual energy swept out and charged towards the retreating members of Lion Tiger Mountain.

Upon seeing this, the leader of Lion Tiger Mountain flinched as he hurriedly clashed with the two streams of spiritual energy.

Boom!

The spiritual energy fluctuations burst out, and the leader of Lion Tiger Mountain emitted a low hum as he was pushed a few hundred yards back. He was, after all, only a Third Grade Sovereign, and with the other party fighting him two versus one, he was naturally no match for them.

After being shaken by the attacks, the leader of Lion Tiger Mountain did not dare to remain and shouted hurriedly, "Leave now!" These guys had been feigning weakness all along and had recovered long ago.

"It's too late to leave now!"

Facing the hasty retreat of Lion Tiger Mountain's men, the strong men of the Earth Fire City put up a fierce pursuit under the leadership of the two Third Grade Sovereigns.

"D*mn it!" Upon seeing the persistent pursuit, Fang Lei cursed in fury.

"Let's see where you can escape!"

A silhouette swiftly surged forward as a Third Grade Sovereign appeared before Fang Lei and the rest. With a blow of his palm, a Spiritual Energy Giant Palm enveloped them, casting a looming shadow.

Fang Lei and the rest who were enveloped by the Spiritual Energy Giant Palm paled in terror, as they had no way of escaping.

Boom!

However, just as the Spiritual Energy Giant Palm was about to land, a black beam of battle light surged out from the horizon, colliding with the Spiritual Energy Giant Palm as swiftly as lightning.

Crash!

The Spiritual Energy Giant Palm disintegrated with the impact, but the beam of battle light did not slow its momentum as it landed a brutal hit on the Third Grade Sovereign who was caught off guard.

Spurt.

As if being struck by thunder and lightning, the latter fell back with blood spurting out from his mouth. He stared at the horizon aghast, seeing a mass of dark clouds sweeping towards them and then hovering in the sky.

"It's the Nine Nether Troop!"

Upon seeing this, the strong men of Lion Tiger Mountain gasped in surprise and glee.

Leading the Nine Nether Troop, a figure glanced at Fang Lei, and a crisp laugh rang in the air. "Heh heh, Brother Fang, I hope you have been well since we have last seen each other."

"You... You are Mu Chen?!" Fang Lei glanced the familiar figure, as his eyes widened.

Mu Chen smiled and nodded. Along the way, he had led the Nine Nether Troop and defeated many Hundred Battle Territory troops, but he had sensed the violent spiritual energy fluctuations, causing him to rush here.

"Ah, so it's Commander Mu Chen. I'm the leader of Lion Tiger Mountain, Liu Shi." The leader of Lion Tiger Mountain clasped his fists together in respect as he gazed at Mu Chen with a strange look, most likely having heard of the reputation of Nine Nether Troop's new Commander.

"Ah, it's Mountain Master Liu." Mu Chen clasped his fists and smiled, but he did not waste time on pleasantries and continued, "I will deal with one Third Grade Sovereign. As for the others, you have to deal with them yourselves."

"Thank you Commander Mu Chen!" Upon hearing this, Liu Shi could not help but be pleased because this meant that Mu Chen did not seem to want to vie with him for the city, so Lion Tiger Mountain could gain

something this time.

Mu Chen smiled and nodded, but his eyes suddenly turned cold, and with a wave of his palm, a burst of battle instinct swept out, charging directly against the Third Grade Sovereign whom he had wounded.

However, he had overestimated the other party's combat desire, and with the terrifying aura of the Nine Nether Troop and overwhelming battle aura, even a Third Grade Sovereign would be fearful.

Furthermore, if the Nine Nether Troop was here, could the Master of Nine Nether Palace be far behind?

At the thought of this, the Third Grade Sovereign's gaze flickered, and he fled directly. His escape caused the strong men of the Earth Fire City to falter, and one after another fled.

The men of Lion Tiger Mountain regained their morale as they started their relentless pursuit, their previous despondence wiped clean.

Mu Chen smiled faintly as he glanced at Liu Shi and Fang Lei. "Gentlemen, Nine Nether Palace's target is the Thunder Magic Sect. If Lion Tiger Mountain has completed your conquest, you could consider going towards the Thunder Magic Sect."

"The war is pressing, and we shall not stay much longer. We will take our leave!"

Mu Chen clasped his fists and with no hesitation, he waved his hand and led the Nine Nether Troops as they transformed into dark clouds and charged ahead, leaving the people in awe and astonishment.

"What a capable young man. He has only been in Daluo Territory for a short time, yet he has such a good command over the Nine Nether Troop." Liu Shi looked at the mass of dark clouds and sensed the pervasive raging battle instinct, so he couldn't help but commend Mu Chen.

"He is indeed terrifying. He is now even stronger than when I met him previously." Fang Lei sighed. The last time he saw Mu Chen, he was confident that he could match him in a battle, but now he understood that he was no longer Mu Chen's opponent. The speed at which Mu Chen was

improving shocked him.

"At this rate, I'm afraid it will only be a matter of time before a new Lord emerges in Daluo Territory..."

Liu Shi shook his head enviously before waving his hand in a flourish. "Let's go. We'll conquer Earth Fire City before heading to the Thunder Magic Sect. Haha, we absolutely cannot miss such a magnificent scene!"

As his voice rang out, he charged swiftly while the other men of Lion Tiger Mountain immediately followed.

...

Although Nine Nether's target had always been the Thunder Magic Sect, she wisely did not attack them recklessly and slowed her speed as she infiltrated the Thunder Fire Plains. At the same time, she sent Mu Chen to command the Nine Nether Troop alone. With his capability and the assistance of the Nine Nether Troop, they could easily dominate the arena.

Hence, wherever the Nine Nether Troop passed, some of the people in the Hundred Battle Territory, who were still stubbornly fighting, had been utterly defeated. Mu Chen, however, did not conquer the cities that they had passed but instead, handed them over to those who had fought hard before.

Although these actions caused them to suffer some losses, in a short time, it had created an excellent reputation for the Nine Nether Palace, so when the Nine Nether Palace asked the other forces to unite to suppress the Thunder Magic Sect, almost everyone agreed.

Thus, when the Nine Nether Troop charged towards the Thunder Magic Sect the next day, there were already more than a dozen forces coming from other directions, surrounding and trapping the Thunder Magic Sect.

The scene was majestic and magnificent as figures soared across both sky and ground with battle instinct permeating the horizons. Even the sky seemed to dim.

It was in this terrifying encirclement and suppression that Mu Chen led the Nine Nether Troop to finally step into the territory of the Thunder

Magic Sect.

Chapter 721: Thunder Magic Sect

When the forces of the Daluo Territory entered the Thunder Magic Sect's territory, they were surprised to not be met with a counterattack. Also a surprise, was the fact that the cities along the way had lifted all of their defenses.

This unusual situation was also puzzling to both Nine Nether and Mu Chen. However, they soon realized that the Thunder Magic Sect was not retreating out of fear, but were contracting all of their forces, so that they could then converge them to create explosive power at critical moments, just like a thunderstorm!

"Looks like they intend to have the final battle with us at the foot of Thunder Magic Mountain." Nine Nether smiled nonchalantly, with no trace of fear in her eyes. She waved her hand gently, signaling the troops to continue advancing.

After half a day, the speed of the army's advance finally slowed down, because the plain ahead was beginning to come to an end. What lay ahead was only a dark sky, the mountains, and the rumbles of thunder that constantly resounded in the air.

The thunder did not come from the sky, but from the depths of the earth. As it rumbled, it caused the earth to shake constantly.

A towering black mountain stood like a giant in front of it. The dark hill had such strength, it seemed to be indestructible.

Whoosh! Whoosh!

Behind where the Nine Nether Troop stood quietly, vast light and shadows swept in, forming the shape of a fan and fencing in the area. These were the vassal forces of the Daluo Territory.

Mu Chen stood before the Nine Nether Troop, his eyes squinting at the massive mountain. Although there was a violent thunderous force permeating the world, he could sense faintly that there were also countless powerful spiritual energy fluctuations present. After all, this was

the headquarters of the Thunder Magic Sect!

Nine Nether lifted her gaze, as her crisp, cold voice rang out. "Since you have already hidden for so long, I think there's no point of you continuing to hide!"

"Haha, Lord Nine Nether is worthy indeed, and truly a heroine."

Just as Nine Nether finished speaking, there was a loud rumble of thunder that reverberated in the heavens and the earth, accompanied by a sudden burst of bright thunder sparks that exploded in Thunder Magic Mountain.

Thunder poured down. Finally, in the dazzling light, countless silhouettes flashed out from mid-air. The previously suppressed spiritual energy fluctuations burst out in a barrage, causing even the heaven and the earth to dim in comparison.

More than half of the figures in the sky were incongruous with the Thunder Magic Sect. Thus, it was clearly apparent that they were not members of the sect. Looking at the scene, the Thunder Magic Sect and Nine Nether had thought of similar strategies.

As Nine Nether was gathering other vassal forces to encircle and annihilate the Thunder Magic Sect, the Thunder Magic Sect was also gathering other forces to deal a fatal blow towards Nine Nether Palace! In the battlefield in the southwest arena, seven out of the ten forces had converged here, making for a line-up that is enough to start a massive scale war!

Mu Chen looked towards the center, where the power of thunder and lightning raged the most violently in heaven and earth, only to see a figure hovering in mid-air amid the sparks of lightning and thunder. He was a burly, armored man. His arms were folded around his chest, and the entire space surrounding him was shimmering with gray and black thunder, accompanied by a strong sense of oppression, which permeated and enveloped the heavens and the earth.

The figure was none other than the Clan Leader, Qin Tiangang! Who else would possess this magnitude of power?!

Many among the Daluo Territory forces were unsettled to see this massive figure, who so closely resembled a demon god! After all, the reputation of the Thunder Magic Sect's Qin Tiangang was quite renowned! In fact, to some extent, it had even surpassed that of Nine Nether.

"I have long heard that Lord Nine Nether was beautiful. Now that I have seen you today, you are certainly worthy of your reputation. However, battles are done by men, and with such a pretty face as yours, I couldn't bear to lay a hand on you." Qin Tiangang gazed at Nine Nether, as his boisterous laughter rumbled like thunder.

Upon hearing his words, Nine Nether smiled faintly, before stepping forward slowly. With every step, a crisp cry rang in the air and terrifying waves of spiritual energy permeated the heavens and the earth.

Then, the sky behind her transformed into a massive obsidian black sparrow. The clear and crisp cry rang out again, causing Qin Tiangang's oppressive aura to dissipate.

"Nine Netherworld Bird?"

Countless gazes were directed towards the massive obsidian black sparrow. Although many knew that Nine Nether was a member of the Nine Netherbird Clan, they were not aware that she had successfully evolved into the form of a divine beast!

Qin Tiangang's pupils contracted at the sight of the huge obsidian sparrow, his expression turning solemn. He had greatly underestimated this woman!

Nine Nether was only a Fourth Grade Sovereign, and even with the power of the Divine Beast, a Fifth Grade Sovereign would still find such a feat difficult to tackle!

"Lord Nine Nether, do you intend to clash head-on with the Thunder Magic Sect?" Qin Tiangang asked gravely. "You should know that this battle would not give you many benefits. Also, even if we clashed, there are many more targets better than us."

"Why? Are you afraid now?" Nine Nether smiled mockingly. "If you don't

want to fight, just surrender Thunder Magic Mountain, then I will let you leave."

Qin Tiangang's gaze was chilling, as he stated, "I'm kind enough to give you a chance to retreat, but you are audacious enough to reject it! Do you really think we are such pushovers?!"

"Pushovers or not, we'll have to fight to know that," Nine Nether replied nonchalantly.

"Looks like you are hell bent on seeking trouble with the Thunder Magic Sect. Oh well, if I annihilate Nine Nether Palace in this battle, that would strengthen the reputation of our sect!" Qin Tiangang scoffed coldly, an eerie chill flashing in his gaze.

He was well aware that, if they destroyed Nine Nether Palace, it would help increase their reputation. They would then be ranked equally with the Valley of Ten Thousand Swords, the Demonic Corpse Sect, and the Sorrowful Sky, thus becoming the fourth top force in the Hundred Battle Territory!

It was this ambition that spurred him to gather the scattered forces in order to begin preparation for the final battle with the Nine Nether Palace at the foot of Thunder Magic Mountain.

"I'm afraid you won't have the fortune to enjoy that," Nine Nether stated calmly, as she stared at Qin Tiangang. "Since you have prepared for this for such a long time, regardless of whatever tricks you have up your sleeve for this battle, Nine Nether Palace will gladly take you on."

"Really?" Qin Tiangang scoffed coldly, then shifted his glance towards Mu Chen, who was standing behind Nine Nether. He smiled. "I heard that Nine Nether Palace had been stirring up a storm in the Daluo Territory recently. So, this chap must be the new Commander of Nine Nether Palace?"

"Heh heh, I'm Mu Chen, glad to meet you Clan Leader Qin." Mu Chen clasped his fists in greeting and smiled.

"I have heard that the Nine Nether Troop is rather renowned recently."

Qin Tianggang smiled and stared at Mu Chen, as if he was a venomous snake spitting out its tongue. "In the past, I had heard that the Nine Nether Troop were just a bunch of useless good-for-nothings. So, I'm curious if the matters that y'all stirred up previously were true or false."

"What does Clan Leader Qin want to do then?" Mu Chen smiled and asked.

Qin Tiangang waved his hand, his expression cold.

Rumble.

Behind him, amid gray and black thunder sparks, a low rumble of thunder growled, before it quickly dissipated. A troop donned in gray and black armor appeared silently behind Qin Tiangang.

With the appearance of this troop, torrents of fluctuations emanated in a frenzy. They looked like the eyes of beasts as they flashed under the black armor.

"That's Thunder Magic Sect's Thunder Magic Congregation, an army that is also rather reputable." Tang Bing, who stood behind Mu Chen, explained solemnly.

Mu Chen nodded, as he had some understanding of the Thunder Magic Sect before he had arrived there. Thus, he naturally knew about the troop known as the Thunder Magic Congregation. This was an army that had been carefully trained by the Thunder Magic Sect. To a certain extent, their combat capabilities were no weaker than Nine Nether Troop.

Mu Chen stared at the Thunder Magic Congregation. His gaze then focused on a figure, who had just stepped out to stand right at the front.

The figure was donned in grey and black robes and his long hair was unkempt, giving him a wild and unrestrained aura. His features were handsome, but his thin lips looked as if they had been carved by knives.

"Heh heh, I'm Qin Ling, an elder of the Thunder Magic Sect." The figure smiled politely at Mu Chen.

However, Mu Chen's eyes narrowed upon hearing this name, as he had

definitely heard of Qin Ling. It was said that he was one of the two great elders of the Thunder Magic Sect, and that his strength had already reached the level of a Third Grade Sovereign.

He was also the Commander of the Thunder Magic Congregation. Apparently, under his command over the years, they had plundered many cities within the Daluo Territory. Some of the vassal forces had even been destroyed by him. Indeed, he was considered to be a very vicious figure.

"Oh, I have heard of you. In fact, just hearing your name feels like thunder has pierced my eardrums." Mu Chen smiled through gritted teeth.

"Heh heh! Well, we have heard much about the majestic and impressive achievements of Commander Mu Chen. We, the Thunder Magic Congregation, have not eliminated such a famous opponent before, so it looks like we have to seize this opportunity." Qin Ling smiled, equally faking sincerity.

"I'm afraid the Thunder Magic Congregation will no longer exist in the Hundred Battle Territory anymore," Mu Chen smiled and replied.

Although both parties were smiling, they were exchanging barbs tit-for-tat, even to the point of being imbued with murderous intent! Upon hearing this interchange, even the many forces in the heavens and the earth trembled, as it seemed that this war was inevitable.

"Lord Nine Nether, let me witness today the power of your Nine Netherworld Bird!"

Qin Tiangang's boisterous laughter, as if it were thunderbolts, rattled the heavens and the earth. His gaze turned chilly.

Then, with a heavy step, he soared into the sky, shouting, "Qin Ling, annihilate this Nine Nether Troop!"

"Yes, Clan Leader!" Qin Ling smiled and clasped his fists, staring at Mu Chen, as if he were a cat staring at a mouse.

Chapter 722: Thunder Magic Fighting Spirit

Rumble.

Thunder rattled through the heavens and earth as Qin Tiangang's figure transformed into a thundering rainbow that soared towards the sky with wild and unparalleled spiritual energy fluctuations rippling in the world.

Nine Nether lifted her head, and a cold flash glinted in her narrowed eyes as she stared at the thundering rainbow. She turned to look at Mu Chen and said, "I will deal with Qin Tiangang and leave the Thunder Magic Congregation to you, then."

The only troop that had a chance of fighting head-on was the Nine Nether Troop, as the other forces were far inferior to the Thunder Magic Congregation.

"Leave it to me." Mu Chen nodded slightly. Despite the fact that Qin Ling's capability was at the level of a Third Grade Sovereign, fortunately, Mu Chen had advanced to the rank of Second Grade Sovereign. With regards to control over fighting spirit, Mu Chen was confident that he was not inferior to Qin Ling.

"I will take care of him as soon as possible." Nine Nether nodded and without any hesitation, she moved to the massive obsidian sparrow behind her. The sparrow let out a long cry before fanning its Cloud Wings and causing wild gales of wind to rattle the heavens and earth. Its massive silhouette transformed into a black beam of light and soared up into the skies.

Qin Tiangang stood high amid the skies at an altitude that was approximately tens of thousands of feet above the ground. Piercingly cold wind billowed around him. Only such powerful Sovereigns would dare to engage in an intense battle in that environment.

He folded his arms in front of his chest as he glanced at the massive Netherworld Bird flapping its Cloud Wings. He then focused on the svelte

figure atop the sparrow before smiling faintly and clenching his fists. Grayish-black sparks of lightning surfaced and slithered on his body like pythons.

Whoosh whoosh.

As sparks of lightning flickered, Qin Tiangang's body seemed to expand. Generally speaking, people who cultivated lightning-based divine techniques would have a stronger physique. Qin Tiangang was similar to Mu Chen, as both had cultivated their physique.

"Nine Nether Palace has chosen to target the Thunder Magic Sect. All I can say is that you all are blind." Qin Tiangang smirked coldly as he glanced at Nine Nether.

Upon hearing this, Nine Nether did not waste any time retorting. With a light move, the Netherworld Bird let out a long cry, and as it fluttered its wings, powerful spiritual energy surged out, transforming into black feathers that enveloped Qin Tiangang like torrential rain in a thunderstorm.

"Insignificant skill."

Qin Tiangang clenched his fists, and gray and black sparks of thunder and lightning burst out, forming a ring of lightning as a defensive barrier. As the black feathers came into contact with the barrier, they disintegrated into spots of light and dissipated.

"Is it?"

A smirk appeared on Nine Nether's red lips. Pointing her finger, a single feather surrounded by purple flames suddenly burst into the lightning barrier. Purple flames surged and surrounded the entwining gray and black lightning, burning it into ashes. The feathers were like the sharpest sword aimed straight towards a fatal point, the center of Qin Tiangang's forehead.

The sudden fierce attack caused Qin Tiangang's expression to twist, but he was a Fifth Grade Sovereign after all, and with a blow of his palm, thunderbolts and lightning emerged.

Boom!

The auras of the blow and the purple flame feathers clashed together, and violent spiritual energy fluctuations spread and raged. In a flash, Qin Tiangang appeared hundreds of feet away. As he looked down to see his scorched black palm, his expression turned grave.

"Did you think that with just your little power of lightning, you could take on my Unperishable Flame?" Nine Nether scoffed in disdain.

"Hmph."

Qin Tiangang snorted coldly. With a heavy stomp of his feet, gray and black lightning bolts burst out of him like an ocean, and in a few short moments, the clouds turned into dark thunderclouds. Even the crowd tens of thousands of feet below could clearly feel the terrible waves of spiritual energy fluctuations.

When a Fifth Grade Sovereign was truly enraged, their power was indeed enough to shake heaven and earth.

With a flourish of Nine Nether's hand, black spiritual energy erupted from her body, and in the tumultuous black waves, purple flames surged, causing the space to distort and warp intensely.

Two powerful and terrifying forces each occupied one side of the skies. The clash was like a meteorite collision.

Two cold gazes intertwined in the air, and in the next moment, the two silhouettes turned into shadows and suddenly swept out. Behind them was a barrage of powerful spiritual energy, flowing and colliding with each other like turbulent waves.

Boom!

In the skies, a storm of spiritual energy raged in a frenzy as the piercing cold wind dissipated with its impact, and within a radius of hundreds of thousands of feet, spiritual energy from both parties permeated the atmosphere.

This battle was destined to be thrilling and nerve-wracking.

Below them, countless gazes stared in shock at the commotion in the skies. However, some of them divided their attention between the two competitors, as both Nine Nether and Qin Tiangang were extremely powerful, and it was difficult to determine who would emerge victorious in the battle.

Just as it was difficult to determine victory or defeat in the skies, the confrontation on the ground was also particularly important. The victory would also affect Nine Nether and Qin Tiangang because in that kind of duel, once a party was distracted, it was likely to expose their flaws.

Everyone started to look towards the two figures leading the Nine Nether Troop and Thunder Magic Congregation, respectively.

Amid the countless gazes, Qin Ling smiled at Mu Chen and said, "Since the Clan Leader has given the command, I can't let you off today."

He was clearly very confident, as the Thunder Magic Congregation outnumbered the Nine Nether Troop, and as for the Commanders, Qin Ling's capabilities surpassed Mu Chen's as a Third Grade Sovereign.

Combined with the dazzling battle record he had led the Thunder Magic Congregation to achieve over the years, he had every reason to despise the new Commander, who had just risen to fame in Daluo Territory.

"I'm afraid Commander Qin Ling would find the results disappointing." Mu Chen smiled calmly in the face of his confidence.

"Haha, you're bold." Qin Ling gave a thumbs up as he smirked coldly and said, "This is interesting. I hope you won't let me down later. I abhor people who are only talk!"

Boom!

As he finished speaking, Qin Ling stomped his feet, his figure charged forward, and behind him, thunder rumbled in the heavens and earth as the Thunder Magic Congregation transformed into thunderbolts and lightning, and soared into the sky.

Mu Chen raised his palm upon seeing the scene before him.

"Be careful, Mu Chen." Tang Bing reminded him gently, as Qin Ling was already at the rank of a Third Grade Sovereign and was stronger than any of the Four Great Commanders of Daluo Territory. Although an individual's power was not the most important element when commanding a troop, it did have a significant influence.

"I'll leave things to you over here." Mu Chen nodded. The battlefield had been separated into three sections. Nine Nether and Qin Tiangang were in one section. The Nine Nether Troop and the Thunder Magic Congregation were about to engage in a final battle, so that section was the most chaotic, as various forces from both parties were attempting to suppress each other.

"Rest assured, they won't be able to interfere with you." Tang Bing smiled calmly. She had been in communication with many forces on Daluo Territory's side. Once the melee began, she would temporarily take control of the situation.

Mu Chen saw the girl's confident and calm smile and said no more. His raised palm suddenly fell, and his gaze turned fierce.

"Nine Nether Troop, set off!"

"Yes!"

The sound of thunder chorused and reverberated as the Nine Nether Troop suddenly rose, transformed into a mass of dark clouds, and soared into the sky, finally appearing in front of the Thunder Magic Congregation. Majestic combat desire permeated the atmosphere.

In a flash, Mu Chen appeared directly above the Nine Nether Troop, and the majestic Nine Nether Fighting spirit converged and gathered like a black ocean around his body.

Qin Ling glanced at Mu Chen nonchalantly, raising his palm gently. His calm voice rang out, "Thunder Magic Fighting Spirit!"

Behind him, under the gray and black iron armor of the Thunder Magic Congregation, savage and wild gazes appeared in their eyes as roaring rumbles of thunder began to rattle.

Crash!

Thunderbolts flickered between heaven and earth, as countless gray and black fighting spirits soared into the sky like thunder pythons and converged behind Qin Ling. The scene was spectacular and magnificent.

"I would like to see what is so great about the recent laudable Nine Nether Commander in Daluo Territory!" Qin Ling smiled and stretched out his fingers, pointing at Mu Chen, who was far away.

Boom!

A vast thunderous fighting spirit hundreds of feet wide stormed out like a raging dragon. Flashes of dazzling bright light caused countless gazes to look towards the commotion.

The thunderous fighting spirit appeared before the Nine Nether Troop in a flash. However, just as it was about to land a brutal hit, an obsidian-black fighting spirit swept to counter it, transforming into a shield of feathers.

Crash!

The violent clash between them resulted in a wild frenzy of fluctuations, but the seemingly weak shield of feathers never broke or gave way. It only gradually dissipated when the thunderous fighting spirit was fully expended.

The scene caused countless strong men to focus their attention. Judging from scale and numbers, it was obvious that the Thunder Magic Congregation possessed more superiority, as their fighting spirit was more violent.

However, their attacks were easily resisted and blocked by the Nine Nether Troop.

"How formidable. I heard that Commander Mu Chen had defeated 5,000 men from the Blood Hawk Troop with 1,900 guards from the Nine Nether Troop. Today, it seems that the rumors are true."

"Looks like Commander Mu Chen's understanding and control of

fighting spirit far surpass that of other Commanders."

"..."

On the side of Daluo Territory, many powerful men could not help but exclaim and immediately heave a sigh of relief. After all, they were also worried that if Mu Chen was defeated, it would distract Nine Nether, and if Nine Nether lost, then they were bound to suffer an utterly humiliating defeat.

Boom!

In the sky, Mu Chen calmly looked at the thunderbolts dissipating in a flash. Immediately he looked up. His dark eyes stared at Qin Ling with a fierce look surging in their depths like a sharp knife.

"Today I will let you see exactly who would destroy the other!"

He conjured seals with both hands, and in the next instant, the majestic Nine Nether Fighting Spirit increased at an alarmingly swift rate. Within a few moments, the sky darkened, and even the wild rumbling sounds of thunder were suppressed entirely.

He had always been calm and composed, but now, he was finally beginning to reveal his malicious side.

Chapter 723: Disturbance

The majestic Nine Nether Fighting Spirit roared in the heavens and the earth. Its degree of power was no weaker than than that of the Thunder Magic Congregate's in the slightest.

An ocean of fighting spirit swept around Mu Chen's body. From a distance, it looked like black sea water was surging forth from the spatial cracks, seeking to drown the entire world. Facing such a domineering fighting spirit, even a Third Grade Sovereign would not dare to clash head-on with its might.

Qin Ling stood in the air. As he looked at the majestic fighting spirit of the Nine Nether Troop, his pupils shrank. It seemed that it was precisely as he had been told: this boy named Mu Chen had a keen sense of control over the fighting spirit. If he didn't, it would have been absolutely impossible for him to have elevated the Nine Nether Troop's fighting spirit to this degree.

A glint flashed in Qin Ling's eyes. With a stomp of his foot, the gray and black layers of thunderclouds condensed from the Thunder Magic Fighting Spirit that was stacked behind him. Raging thunder rattled through the heavens and earth, its raging momentum overwhelmingly strong.

"Don't treat us, the Thunder Magic Congregation, as useless imbeciles from the Daluo Territory's Blood Hawk Troop!"

Qin Ling sneered. Immediately, his gaze turned chilly. Lifting both palms, the Thunder Magic Fighting Spirit burst out into a rumbling roar, as gray and black thunderbolts converged in a frenzy, transforming into a massive Lightning Spear amid the layers of thunderclouds.

Gray and black lightning snaked around the spear, like huge pythons. Its roar shook the heavens and the earth.

Qin Ling had no intention of testing Mu Chen's ability. His first attempt was to use powerful attacks, seeking to gain the upper hand at the fastest speed, in order to defeat the Nine Nether Troop.

"Lightning Magic Spear!"

Gripping the spear, Qin Ling hurled it down fiercely. The massive gray and black Lightning Spear suddenly burst out, shattering the space. In a flash, it appeared in the space above the Nine Nether Troop.

"Nine Nether Feathers!"

Mu Chen's seals changed. As the ocean rolled turbulently, a massive obsidian feather surged out, clashing head-on with the lightning spear.

Boom!

A loud roar reverberated, as violent waves of fluctuations raged. Even though it churned like a storm with all its might, it could not dissipate the majestic fighting spirit from both parties.

Seeing that the first move failed, Qin Ling's gaze still remained composed. He then changed his seals in a flash, as swift as lightning. Magnificent fighting spirit raged violently, as many massive lightning spears coalesced into form, filling the sky in mere moments.

Many strong men were horrified, and their skin crawled at the sight. If it had been any other Third Grade Sovereign, who had dealt an attack of such intensity alone, it would have required an extreme expenditure of effort. However, Qin Ling seemed to do it effortlessly. This was the terrifying power of the fighting spirit!

"Go."

With a flick of his fingers, the lightning spears charged forward. With his every action, mountains crumbled and the earth shattered. Even the heavens and the earth dimmed in comparison to his outstanding aura and impressive demeanor.

However, facing this barrage of attacks, Mu Chen showed no trace of fear. Although the Thunder Magic Congregation was stronger in numbers, he had the advantage of understanding and manipulating fighting spirit. Thus, if Qin Ling attempted to use fighting spirit to overwhelm and suppress him, it would be a fruitless attempt to defeat him.

Mu Chen immediately controlled the Nine Nether Fighting Spirit as it surged out, transforming into turbulent waves and colliding harshly with the countless lightning spears.

Boom! Boom!

The raging growls continued to ring in the sky. There, a hurricane raged, twisting and distorting the entire space.

Below them, countless strong men lifted their heads to look at the exploding sky. The duel between both sides was clearly a battle of fighting spirit.

Also, anyone could see that Qin Ling, who was launching a fierce barrage of attacks, was not gaining an edge in the slightest. In fact, every one of his attacks was blocked by Mu Chen, so he could not advance even an inch!

This scene caused many people to gasp in awe, as the reputation of the Thunder Magic Congregation had spread far and wide over the years, with countless forces having been annihilated by them. However, that ferocious power had finally been blocked and resisted today.

At this moment, even if the Nine Nether Troop could not destroy the Thunder Magic Congregation, they could at least encircle them. Thus, it looked like the new Commander of Nine Nether Palace was capable indeed!

Rumble!

In the sky, violent spiritual energy fluctuations raged for more than ten minutes, then finally stopped gradually. Qin Ling also stopped these senseless fierce attacks, because he knew that, if he continued them, it would only prolong the inevitable outcome.

The key to winning any military battle of fighting spirit was to be precise and fast. If the number of troops was huge, one must win by quantity. If it was an encirclement and suppression campaign, the tactic would naturally be to trap the enemy. Regardless, when it comes to victory or defeat, armies must use the strongest means to defeat the other party for each

situation, thus destroying their will to fight and attaining victory.

At the moment, the Nine Nether Troop's fighting spirit was not much weaker than the Thunder Magic Congregation's. Hence, continuing to fight like this would only be an unnecessary waste of time. Clearly, this result was not what Qin Tiangang nor Qin Ling wanted.

Qin Ling's gaze flickered, his thin lips appearing more malicious.

"What's the matter? Don't you want to continue?" Mu Chen smiled, seeing that Qin Ling had halted his attacks.

Qin Ling stared at him coldly, as he remarked nonchalantly, "Boy, I have to admit that you do have some talent in terms of fighting spirit, but... I have to say, you are still inexperienced."

As he finished speaking, an unsettling smirk unfurled on Qin Ling's lips. Seeing his smile, Mu Chen knit his eyebrows together and frowned, unease welling up in his heart.

At this moment, Qin Ling clenched his fist, and a glimmering gray and black lightning stone appeared in his hand. As he grasped it firmly, the thunderstone exploded in his grip.

Boom!

The gray and black thunder burst out and permeated the atmosphere. Thunder and lightning spread wildly, but did not cause any harm.

However, Mu Chen's expression suddenly twisted abruptly. He had realized that the thunderbolts were acting as a massive forcefield. Within it, the fighting spirit that had converged around him dissipated swiftly.

"What's going on?"

Mu Chen stared at Qin Ling coldly, as he realized that the Thunder Magic Fighting Spirit that was converged around him was also vanishing quickly! Clearly, they were both being affected in the arena of thunderbolts.

What was this fellow up to?

"Heh heh, did you realize that you can no longer trigger your fighting

spirit?" Qin Ling glanced mockingly at Mu Chen, then clapped gleefully. "This is the Thunder Magic Crystal, and with its connection to Thunder Magic Mountain, it can develop a lightning forcefield. In this arena, it can cause severe disturbances to fighting spirit. Thus, we can no longer trigger fighting spirit, at least as long as we are here."

Mu Chen knit his eyebrows and closed his eyes to detect fighting spirit. Indeed, he found that there was an invisible force interfering with him, and he was unable to shield himself from that disturbance with his present strength.

Commotion spread within the Nine Nether Troop. If Mu Chen was unable to trigger fighting spirit, then the Nine Nether Troop would be rendered useless! This was because Mu Chen was the soul of the Nine Nether Troop, the only one who could control fighting spirit! Once a troop lost its fighting spirit, they were akin to stragglers or disbanded soldiers!

"What's happening?"

Numerous strong men had discovered the scene, and many were voicing their doubts (some aloud, some only in their minds). What is Qin Ling doing? If he continues like this, he won't be able to mobilize the fighting spirit of the Thunder Magic Congregation to launch an attack!

"Now, you have lost the Nine Nether Troop, and likewise, I have lost the Thunder Magic Congregation."

Qin Ling smiled at Mu Chen, before pointing at him, then at himself. "Now, there's only you and me left."

As he finished speaking, everyone finally understood his intentions. Mu Chen, who had lost the Nine Nether Troop, was only a Second Grade Sovereign, but Qin Ling was still a reputable Third Grade Sovereign!

Mu Chen was naturally able to fight on the same level with Qin Ling, as long as he had the backing of Nine Nether Troop's fighting spirit. But now that he was deprived of it, Mu Chen's capabilities would return to their original form.

Whereas before, both parties were on the same starting line. However,

with the loss of fighting spirit, that gap had been widened! This must have been Qin Ling's true motive all along!

"Despicable!" Tang Bing gnashed her teeth and snapped in a rage, before her gaze turned chilling. She ordered coldly, "Do it! Destroy Thunder Magic Congregation!"

Behind her, the Daluo Territory's various forces were raring to go. As they heard the command, they couldn't hold back any longer. As they sped forth, spiritual energy burst through the horizon and sounds of battle rang throughout the world. Countless streams of light swept across the sky, charging towards Thunder Magic Mountain, seeking to wipe them out.

"Block them!"

Seeing the advancing scene, the forces of the Hundred Battle Territory immediately charged forward. They all understood that, at this time, the two battles in the sky were closely linked, and that now that Qin Ling had set up a trap for Mu Chen, as long as they could stop the other party's offensive attacks, the victory of the war would tilt to their favor! At this point, retreat was not an option!

The terrible torrents converged in the sky, and the whole world began to tremble.

Boom! Boom!

This confrontation between both parties had resulted in a chaotic commotion. Countless battles between the sides caused powerful spiritual energy fluctuations, making the earth tremble constantly.

One mountain after another was reduced to powder in the onslaught of clashes between spiritual energy. A massive crack, as deep as an abyss, split on the ground.

In the sky, Qin Ling folded his arms across his chest, as he let the spiritual energy run rampant below. His gaze was cold and unsettling, as he locked eyes with Mu Chen, a malicious smile unfurling on his face.

"Now, what else can you do?"

Mu Chen stared at Qin Ling, his tightly knit eyebrows gradually relaxing. He smiled and nodded, then said, "Not using fighting spirit... Actually, that's exactly what I want."

Upon hearing his words, Qin Ling's pupils contracted and his gaze became ferocious. He couldn't believe that he was still defiant and retorting back! What an insolent brat!

Chapter 724: Grade Two Against Grade Three

The golden lightning force field spread out in the sky and enveloped the entire region. Mu Chen stared at the lightning force field. Contrary to Qin Ling's expectations, not much panic could be seen on Mu Chen's young face.

"Interference of the fighting spirit..."

Mu Chen smiled. Lifting his head, his eyes locked onto Qin Ling, who was folding his arms, and coldness flashed across his eyes. To some extent, Qin Ling's action was actually to his liking.

Although Mu Chen could gain some advantages by relying on his control and comprehension of the fighting spirit, the Nine Nether Troop had a weak foundation after all, and the Thunder Magic Congregation was also far from ordinary. Therefore, if he were to rely solely on Nine Nether Troop's Fighting Spirit, he was actually not certain whether he could win. He could at most simply keep the battle going.

However, if both of them lost their fighting spirits, they could then only rely on their own powers. Maybe in the eyes of others this would be a terrible event for Mu Chen. After all, he was only a Grade Two Sovereign, while Qin Ling was Grade Three.

But for Mu Chen, the chance of winning started to actually increase when they lost their fighting spirits.

Mu Chen felt very troubled dealing with Qin Ling when he had the Thunder Magic Congregation, but now... without the Thunder Magic Congregation as his shield, Qin Ling actually became significantly less dangerous in Mu Chen's opinion.

"Seems like you are very calm."

Qin Ling stood in midair and folded his arms. Gray-black lightning flashed around him and behind him, and the space was rippling. It was as if a vast sea had appeared, and a terrifying spiritual energy pressure

enveloped the sky.

"Thunder Magic Physique!"

Qin Ling smiled. Then his look suddenly turned cold, and his hands formed a seal. His body actually started to expand at a shocking speed, and his skin quickly turned an iron-like black. His veins wriggled like dragons under his skin. In only a dozen breaths' time, Qin Ling transformed into a black giant surrounded by gray lightning.

An invincible, powerful feeling spread out. Obviously, the Thunder Magic Physique cultivated by Qin Ling was also a very strong lightning-based, body-refining, divine technique!

"I can feel some power of thunder in your body. You have also cultivated a lightning-based divine technique, but... you are displaying your skills in front of an expert." Even Qin Ling's voice became violent. The roar caused everyone's ears to hurt.

"Thunder Magic Physique?" Mu Chen stared at Qin Ling's black body with some surprise. Then, he grinned uncontrollably and said, "Then today, I really want to see who is actually trying to display his skills in front of an expert!"

Mu Chen's hands formed a seal, and dazzling lightning also burst out abruptly from his body. In an instant, bright silver light filled his body. Clearly, he had activated the Thunder God Physique to its extreme to become that electrified.

Even though Mu Chen's body was still not as big as Qin Ling's after activating the Thunder God Physique, the deep roars of thunder actually exceeded the thunder pressure brought about by Qin Ling.

"Huh?!"

Looking at Mu Chen, who had been electrified, Qin Ling's look also became more serious. Previously, he had indeed felt the power of thunder within Mu Chen's body. However, he did not expect that after activation, the seemingly negligible thunder would actually burst out so powerfully.

But this alone obviously could not scare Qin Ling. He sneered and

suddenly stomped his foot. His ghost-like body appeared directly in front of Mu Chen. His palm slapped forcefully towards Mu Chen's head.

The sound of wind and thunder spread throughout the place, and his attack was as quick as a bolt of lightning.

Dong!

However, while his speed was fast, Mu Chen was even more swift and violent. Before Qin Ling could push his strength to the extreme, Mu Chen clenched his fist and punched at Qin Ling's palm directly with an overbearing strength. A terrible power burst out and shattered the wind blast formed by Qin Ling's palm.

Vroom!

Nonetheless, Qin Ling was not an easy opponent. After all, his battle experience far exceeded that of an ordinary person. Seeing that his attack was ineffective, his leg instantly turned into a beam of lightning and kicked towards Mu Chen's chest continuously, bringing about waves of afterimages and cracking the space apart.

Without any changes in his expression, Mu Chen similarly kicked out like lightning and collided with Qin Ling's attacks head-on.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

The attack speed of the two was so dazzlingly quick, ordinary people could only see all the lightning-like afterimages flashing across the sky. Violent roars of thunder spread wildly throughout the sky.

In merely ten breaths' time, the two had attacked over a hundred times. Moreover, they had both only relied on the powers of their physical bodies. Every impact was like two pieces of steel smashing into each other. The head-on collisions were so fierce, the eyelids of many observers started to twitch.

Dong!

Thunder tore the sky apart. The two lightning-filled figures crossed each other again, and their fists collided hard with one another. Instantly,

lightning burst out from their fists, and the two were both blown backwards.

Mu Chen was blown backwards a hundred steps, after which, his foot stomped on the ground as he stabilized his body. His arm trembled, and his sleeves turned into powder which fell from the sky.

On the other hand, Qin Ling only backed up dozens of steps. In any case, his power as a Grade Three Sovereign had a significant advantage in these kinds of head-on attacks.

Qin Ling folded and twisted his hands, producing the clear sound of bones. He stared at Mu Chen with a dour look, and some surprise could be seen in the depths of his eyes. He did not expect that the young man in front of him could actually fight him just with his physical body.

He had trained his Thunder Magic Physique for dozens of years in the Thunder Magic Abyss to be able to have such achievements. However, the physique cultivated by the person before him was actually no weaker at all.

He was not pleased with this outcome.

He had set up the battle to deprive both parties of their fighting spirits, so he did not want both of them to be evenly matched again!

Some gloominess flashed across Qin Ling's eyes. He took a deep breath, and his hands suddenly formed a seal. Immediately, layers of thunderclouds emerged in the sky. Gray-black lightning rapidly converged around him and within a few breaths' time, an enormous lightning giant appeared around Qin Ling.

"Thunder Magic Celestial Body!"

When Qin Ling's low roar rang out, the lightning giant formed completely. The giant put his large palms together and pulled abruptly. With a zapping sound, a gray-black lightning whip 10,000 feet long condensed out. It tore across space with a vroom sound and wound towards Mu Chen like an angry dragon.

"Thunder Magic Whip!"

Mu Chen's body trembled. The huge lightning whip had already shot out from space and violently penetrated his body.

Having landed his attack, Qin Ling, however, was not delighted. Instead, he frowned because he saw Mu Chen's body vanishing slowly. It was only an afterimage.

Vroom!

Qin Ling's eyes sparkled. The lightning whip shot backwards suddenly and flew towards his back, creating a gorgeous arc in the sky.

Boom!

The space behind him was torn apart, and a dragon-like figure flew out. Just then, a monstrous ominous aura gushed out. The Great Meru Demonic Pillar smashed forcefully towards the lightning giant, casting a patch of shadow on the ground.

Zap!

The lightning whip was astonishingly fast. It quickly wound around and tied up the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. The gray-black lightning started its corrosion with a zapping sound, trying to refine the Great Meru Demonic Pillar.

Sizzle.

On the other hand, the ominous aura from the Great Meru Demonic Pillar also surged out and resisted the lightning that was trying to corrode it.

"This ominous artifact is not bad. I want it!" Qin Ling licked his lips and smiled darkly. The lightning whip suddenly increased in power and actually pulled the Great Meru Demonic Pillar towards him. The power was so strong, that even though Mu Chen had activated the Thunder God Physique to its extreme, he could not hold on. After all, Qin Ling had already summoned his Sovereign Celestial Body.

"You want my stuff? I'm afraid it will make your stomach burst!"

Mu Chen's face became icy. A golden light surged in his eyes, and

dazzling golden rays burst out in all directions. In an instant, a huge celestial body that seemed to be built from gold appeared in the sky. A gigantic sun was floating behind its head, making it look extremely powerful.

It was the Great Solar Undying Body!

The huge hand of the Great Solar Undying Body grabbed the Great Meru Demonic Pillar directly and instantly offset the strong force. No matter how hard the Thunder Magic Celestial Body tried, it could not pull the pillar any further.

"You want it? Then I'll give it to you!"

Coldness flashed across Mu Chen's eyes. On the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, an appalling ominous aura suddenly spread out and actually forced the Thunder Magic Celestial Body's huge hand away. The Great Solar Undying Body stepped forward. As the golden light surged, even the sky seemed to be trembling.

Bang!

Dazzling golden light gushed out like a liquid and turned the black Great Meru Demonic Pillar a glittering gold color, as if it were made from gold itself. Then, the golden demonic pillar, along with the powerful strength of the Great Solar Undying Body, crushed the layers of thunderclouds in the sky and smashed forcibly towards the Thunder Magic Celestial Body's head.

"Thunder Magic Mountain-raiser Hand!"

The terrifying power that suddenly enveloped the sky also caused Qin Ling's expression to change drastically. He could not understand why Mu Chen was so strong. However, he could not afford to hesitate. Immediately, his hands formed a seal, and the hands of the Thunder Magic Celestial Body punched forward. Sky-blotting gray-black lightning converged and turned into an enormous lightning palm. Its was as if the lightning palm were supporting the sky, and it was as majestic as a mountain.

Bang!

Under countless stares, the golden demonic pillar smashed down hard. An earthshaking, frightening sound spread out.

An extremely violent spiritual energy storm raged in the sky.

The sound even caused the chaotic battlefield below to pause momentarily. Everyone stared at the sky uncontrollably.

There, the golden demonic pillar was slowly pressing down. The huge lightning palm that seemed to be able to support the sky was sinking bit by bit.

The fall was slow but inevitable.

Immediately, Qin Ling's face turned pale.

Crack.

As Qin Ling's face turned ever more pale, a soft cracking sound was suddenly heard. Everyone's eyes narrowed. It was as if a subtle golden light bloomed out on the lightning palm. Then, the golden light suddenly became brighter.

Boom!

The golden light poured down from the sky from all directions. The powerful lightning palm exploded!

Everyone gasped quietly in their minds.

Nobody had expected that after Qin Ling had summoned the Thunder Magic Celestial Body, he would instead be suppressed by Mu Chen, who was only a Grade Two Sovereign!

The scene was clearly not in the script that Qin Ling had planned!

Chapter 725: Thunder Magic Tribulation

The golden demonic pillar crushed the thunder magic hand and continued its descent. Eventually, under the countless shocked stares, it smashed hard onto the huge arms that were crossed in front of the Thunder Magic Celestial Body.

Bang!

At the moment of collision, a loud sound erupted. The gigantic Thunder Magic Celestial Body immediately fell from the sky, its feet causing two mountains to collapse. Its ten thousand foot tall body sank into the ground, right up to its waist, and many large cracks spread out rapidly.

Upon seeing such a scene, everyone's eyes widened. In the sky, the Great Solar Undying Body stood in mid-air. Its dignified golden pupils stared at the Thunder Magic Celestial Body, which had been struck into the ground. Meanwhile, Mu Chen's thunder-like mocking sound spread throughout the space.

"It seems like someone else was displaying his skills in front of an expert."

In the Thunder Magic Celestial Body, Qin Ling's face darkened. Obviously, he did not expect the sovereign celestial body that had been cultivated by Mu Chen to be so strong. During the previous impact, even he felt somewhat frightened by the force that had been transmitted.

The sovereign celestial body that was cultivated by Mu Chen was definitely not ordinary. However, Qin Ling could not tell the exact origin of the Great Solar Undying Body.

"It's too early for you to be happy!"

No matter what, it was impossible for Qin Ling to admit defeat. So, he had immediately sneered, then sent the huge hands of the Thunder Magic Celestial Body smashing onto the ground. The impact was so fierce, it caused the ground to be crushed and many rocks to be shoot outward. Then, the Thunder Magic Celestial Body charged up into the sky.

The two enormous sovereign celestial bodies stood opposite each other once again. At the head of the Thunder Magic Celestial Body, the gloomy-looking Qin Ling flashed out. He stared coldly at the Great Solar Undying Body, which seemed to be like a Buddha and gritted his teeth uncontrollably.

"What exactly is this sovereign celestial body that was cultivated by this guy? He is only a grade two sovereign, but it is surprisingly difficult to deal with him with my Thunder Magic Celestial Body." Qin Ling's eyes sparkled.

"Qin Ling, can you not even win against a grade two sovereign?" While Qin Ling's eyes were sparkling, a deep, inquiring roar suddenly spread out from the sky above them.

The roar was filled with a slight tinge of anger. It came from Qin Tiangang, who was fighting fiercely with Nine Nether. Clearly, he had also noticed the battle happening below.

He was highly dissatisfied with the outcome of that battle. Hearing Qin Tiangang's angry roar, Qin Ling's expression also changed.

He stared gloomily at Mu Chen. Taking a deep breath, before his face gradually returned to calm.

Seeing his expression, Mu Chen frowned slightly. He then moved to also appear near the head of the Great Solar Undying Body, his black eyes locking with Qin Ling's.

"Mu Chen, since you can reach this extent as a mere grade two sovereign, you are indeed strong! It is no wonder that you are becoming famous in the Daluo Territory!" Qin Ling stared at Mu Chen, his low voice spreading out across the space.

"But... today's battle, it is one you will definitely lose!" Some coldness flashed across Qin Ling's eyes. "Because, we have the topographical advantage!"

Hearing this, Mu Chen's pupils contracted uncontrollably. Qin Ling's hands quickly formed a seal. Then, his palms suddenly pressed down in

the air. When he did this, his low voice had already begun to spread throughout the sky.

"Place of the thunder magic, world-destroying thunder tribulation!"

When Qin Ling's deep voice filled the area, Mu Chen's body suddenly tightened and caution filled his eyes. He had never underestimated Qin Ling, especially when he knew that Qin Ling had the temporal and topographical advantages in this battle!

Boom! Boom!

Vaguely, the sound of thunder seemed to rolling in from the distance. Everyone lifted their heads in unison. They stared at the sky, trying to locate the origin of the thunder.

The ground also shook slightly at the moment, the vibration slowly becoming more and more violent. Mu Chen also stared at the sky. However, after a while, his expression changed suddenly and he lowered his head. His eyes were locked onto the ground below, because he had just realized that the sound of the thunder was actually coming from deep underground!

"Be careful!" he shouted at the forces from the Daluo Territory.

Boom!

Just as he finished shouting, the ground was abruptly torn apart. Countless huge, gray-black columns of lightning charged out ferociously towards the sky like angry dragons.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

In just a few breaths' time, the gray-black lightning filled the entire region. The gray-black columns of lightning were so tall, they could even be clearly seen from a million feet away! The scene was extremely spectacular.

Qin Ling stood on the Thunder Magic Celestial Body. Surrounded by the countless gray-black columns of lightning, he looked like a terrifying, glowing demon!

His hand formed a seal again. Meanwhile, the huge palms of the Thunder Magic Celestial Body closed together.

Boom!

When he finished doing this, the countless gray-black lightning in the sky zigzagged fiercely, before eventually converging between the hands of the Thunder Magic Celestial Body in a wild flash.

Zap!

The terrifying lightning started to rage. Its zapping sound caused everyone's faces to turn solemn, because there seemed to be a destructive power emanating from the lightning.

The power was enough to instantly kill any grade three sovereign! Hence, this was an absolutely fatal attack!

Higher up in the sky, two figures came into contact, then immediately backed away from each other. Nine Nether emerged from the meeting, but her expression had changed suddenly. As she looked down from above, some coldness now surged on her already icy face.

"Haha, Lord Nine Nether, you think that it's so easy to take down my Thunder Magic Sect? This time, you will pay for your arrogance!" Qin Tiangang laughed.

"Seems like you really want to die." A terrifying coldness gushed out from Nine Nether's body. Her voice was so icy!

"Humph, although you have the power of a divine beast, you are but a grade four sovereign and can only match me evenly. Now, you can just watch that kid turn into ashes!" Qin Tiangang sneered.

Nine Nether took a deep breath of cold air. At the moment, there seemed to be a very dangerous look flashing in her long, narrow eyes. Her hands clenched slowly and her cold voice caused Qin Tiangang's laughter to stop abruptly.

"Who told you that I am still only a grade four sovereign?"

A faint light was glowing from Nine Nether's eyes. She stepped forward,

and an extremely terrifying spiritual energy windstorm burst out wildly. The Nine Netherworld Bird shadow that was behind her also expanded rapidly at that exact moment.

Her body trembled slightly and a pair of giant, graceful wings extended from her back. Opening up the wings gently, she looked like a fallen angel from the Nine Netherworld.

"Grade five sovereign?!" Qin Tiangang's expression changed drastically. He did not expect Nine Nether to have been concealing her powers, only to release her true strength now!

Even though they were both of grade five, Nine Nether was never before able to match him evenly. However, at the moment, her powers had increased significantly. Hence, he was certainly no match for her!

"Even if you are also a grade five sovereign, don't even think about going and saving that kid now!" Some ferocity flashed wildly in Qin Tiangang's eyes. Then, he gave a brutal smile. Stomping his foot, a lightning giant that was thousands of feet large appeared beside him.

It was also a Thunder Magic Celestial Body. However, his Thunder Magic Celestial Body was clearly much more powerful than Qin Ling's.

Qin Tiangang also realized that Nine Nether seemed to value Mu Chen very much. After all, she was even willing to reveal her hidden powers for him!

At the moment, Qin Ling had already made his attack. As long as he could stop Nine Nether for a short while, Mu Chen would surely die! He was quite confident about his ability to stave off Nine Nether for at least a bit.

"I want you to watch that kid turn into ashes!" Qin Tiangang laughed ferociously. Then, the giant palm of the celestial body swept towards Nine Nether with great force.

Nine Nether's face was icy. She glanced down and gritted her teeth. Mu Chen... Hold on for a while, I am coming.

The wings behind her back flapped suddenly. At the same time,

terrifying attacks also swept out like a storm.

Below this battle, Qin Ling also seemed to have felt something, causing him to look up. Then, he sneered towards Mu Chen and said, "Now, don't expect anyone to come and save you. This time, you will definitely die!"

Qin ling's look was cold and he suddenly formed a seal.

"Thunder Magic Art, Thunder Magic Tribulation!"

Rumble!

The sound of thunder burst out in the sky. A lightning sun ten thousand feet large rose gradually from the hands of the Thunder Magic Celestial Body. The spiritual energy in the entire place became extremely violent, its fluctuations causing everyone to feel frightened.

"Die!"

Qin Ling's face slowly turned pale. Then, his finger pointed in the air and his look was ruthless.

Boom!

The sound of thunder erupted from the lightning sun. In the next instant, under the astonished stares of many, it tore across the sky and turned into a beam of gray-black light, flying directly towards Mu Chen.

Its incredible speed was unavoidable! From below, Tang Bing saw the scene, her face turning pale.

Rumble.

The violent thunder rumbled across the sky, its terrifying power causing Mu Chen's skin to hurt. However, he did not try to dodge it. Instead, he lifted his head, locking his black pupils' gaze onto the lightning sun.

Then, he glanced at the higher parts of the sky. He could feel that Nine Nether's breath was somewhat uneven and labored. He worried that it was because of her worrying over his current situation.

Mu Chen clenched his fist slowly, then closed his lips firmly. Then, his eyes closed gradually.

Don't worry, Nine Nether, I will not be a hindrance to you.

Mu Chen sat cross-legged near the head of the Great Solar Undying Body, while his mind was focused on the center of the eyebrows of the Great Solar Undying Body. There, a Great Solar Crystal was enveloped within a strong power.

Crack!

The Great Solar Crystal seemed to have noticed the activation from Mu Chen's mind, as tiny cracks appeared suddenly and silently. Just then, a dazzling golden light swept out from it wildly.

Snap!

The Great Solar Crystal finally cracked open completely. Dazzling golden light that was so bright that it could tear darkness apart suddenly swept out from the center of the eyebrows of the Great Solar Undying Body. Then, everyone felt a shocking energy fluctuation burst out from the Great Solar Undying Body!

Mu Chen's eyes opened suddenly amid all the commotion!

Chapter 726: Victory

The instant Mu Chen opened his eyes, two dazzling beams of golden light shot out. It was as if nothing could hide in the golden light.

At the center of the Great Solar Undying Body's eyebrows, brilliant golden light was blooming as if from an eye-catching golden sun. A shocking energy fluctuation rippled out, attracting countless astonished stares.

Mu Chen was sitting cross-legged on the head of the Great Solar Undying Body. He lifted his head and saw the enormous lightning sun falling towards him. Its shadow enveloped the entire Great Solar Undying Body.

The lightning sun had yet to explode, but its power had already caused the ground below to collapse layer by layer.

That was Qin Ling's attack after making use of his topographical advantage, and it was indeed horrifying. It was enough for him to win, even if he faced a Grade Three Sovereign, not to mention a Grade Two.

Unfortunately, his opponent this time was not ordinary.

Puff.

Mu Chen gradually blew out a ball of white mist. His hands formed a seal and immediately, golden light spread out from the center of the Great Solar Undying Body's eyebrows while its giant hands clenched tightly.

The liquid-like golden light gushed out from the center of the Great Solar Undying Body's eyebrows and converged onto its hands. The golden light solidified and actually turned into a layer of golden crystals.

The layer of diamond-like crystals wrapped around the Great Solar Undying Body's fists. The surface of the crystals seemed to be filled with the most primitive mysterious runes. An indescribable fluctuation rippled quietly.

"Sovereign Super Power, the Power of One Sun!"

Coldness suddenly surged in Mu Chen's black eyes. Then, the Great Solar Undying Body stepped in the air and its fist, which was covered with the layer of diamond crystals, punched hard at the lightning sun as it was falling down.

The diamond-like fist seemed to penetrate across space and appeared below the lightning sun instantaneously. It punched without any hesitation.

The two collided forcefully into each other, but unexpectedly, no deafening sounds were produced. Everyone's eyes narrowed because they saw that the diamond-like fist actually pierced through the lightning sun directly at the point of collision.

There were no obstructions at all. It was as if it had pierced through a mere piece of tofu.

The glittering diamond fist was like the invincible hand of God and was extremely terrifying.

Sizzle!

Many viscous-looking golden rays burst out from the violent lightning sun in all directions. In the end, the lightning on the sun started to disappear at a shocking speed.

In only a few breaths' time, the lightning sun, which previously seemed to be able to destroy the earth, gradually dimmed and vanished...

Gentle wind blew across the battlefield, but the entire region was filled with silence.

Spit.

In the sky, Qin Ling's face turned very pale. Just then, he spat out a mouthful of blood, and his body started to tremble as he watched the scene in horror.

He could not understand why Mu Chen could block such a powerful attack so easily!

This guy was only a Grade Two Sovereign!

On top of the Great Solar Undying Body's head, Mu Chen also stared at the lightning sun that had been crushed in just one punch, and astonishment flashed in his eyes. The power of the Great Solar Undying Body's Sovereign Super Power was also beyond his expectations.

The Great Solar Undying Body is indeed worthy of its name... Mu Chen praised in his heart.

According to Mandela, the Great Solar Undying Body could at least be ranked among the top 30 in the 99 Sovereign Celestial Bodies ranking. Previously, he had been somewhat doubtful, but as he gradually began to open up the Great Solar Undying Body's powers, he also started to feel how amazing it really was.

He glanced at Qin Ling, whose face was pale. Coldness flashed in Mu Chen's eyes, and his hands formed a seal. The Great Solar Undying Body's diamond-covered palm penetrated across space once again and appeared directly in front of the Thunder Magic Celestial Body, smacking down at it.

Bang!

Air exploded directly at that moment, and visible spiritual energy ripples violently spread out.

Qin Ling's face darkened. He grit his teeth and did not dare to hesitate. Lightning surged around the Thunder Magic Celestial Body and quickly formed an enormous lightning screen in front of it, as if it were a lightning shield.

Bang!

However, the diamond palm once again displayed its terrifying power and penetrated the lightning screen in just one hit. It felt as if nothing in the world could stop it.

It could truly destroy anything.

When the diamond-like palm penetrated the lightning screen, Qin Ling's expression finally completely changed. However, before he could retreat, the diamond palm had already hit the Thunder Magic Celestial Body with an unavoidable speed.

Boom!

Golden light burst out, and a visible shockwave spread out. The Thunder Magic Celestial Body trembled and was blown directly backwards. As it flew, it crushed many magnificent mountains into flat land.

A streak that was a 100,000 feet long appeared on the ground.

At the end of the streak, dust filled the air, and cracks filled the Thunder Magic Celestial Body. In the end, the cracks spread, and the celestial body finally reached its limit. It cracked completely open and turned into many light spots that filled the air.

Spit.

When the Thunder Magic Celestial Body was crushed, an awkward figure also flew backwards from it. He spat out a large amount of blood, and his body collided hard into another mountain. It was as if his entire body were embedded in the mountain.

Wow.

Everyone in the place stared at the scene, after which shocked exclamations erupted. People from both the Daluo Territory and the Hundred Battle Territory widened their eyes and could not believe what they saw.

Qin Ling actually lost!

Moreover, this was the outcome after Qin Ling made use of his topographical advantage...

"This guy..." Everyone stared with some horror at the golden celestial body standing in the sky. They all swallowed uncontrollably. How exactly did this person manage to do it?

People from the Daluo Territory looked at each other and finally felt some real awe towards Mu Chen. Although this young man had spent less time in the Daluo Territory than they had, he was really capable. In the foreseeable future, he would surely become a very popular person in the Daluo Territory. Maybe he could even be among the top in the younger

generation of the North Territory.

Mu Chen smiled gently under countless stares. The Great Solar Undying Body slowly vanished. His face was somewhat pale, probably due to the fact that he had also spent a great deal of spiritual energy.

He reached out his hand and clenched forcefully. Just then, the mountain cracked open, and an awkward figure was lifted across space. Qin Ling's body was covered with blood, and the spiritual energy fluctuation around him was a mess. Clearly, he was severely injured and could not resist Mu Chen anymore.

Mu Chen raised his head and looked at the intense battle above him. His somewhat cold voice rang out, "Clan Leader Qin, it seems that Elder Qin did not meet your expectations."

At Mu Chen's words, Qin Tiangang's spiritual energy instantly became disordered. Obviously, he had also noticed that Qin Ling had been caught by Mu Chen. Immediately, he roared in anger, "Little bastard, put him down!"

"You still have the ability to care about others?" a cold and clear voice answered. Higher in the sky, the wings behind Nine Nether flapped, and her body turned into an afterimage as she flew out. The wings were like the sharpest divine artifact and tore across space. It turned into a windstorm and swept towards Qin Tiangang.

Bang! Bang!

Qin Tiangang also tried his best to fight back, but Nine Nether was clearly more powerful than he was. Furthermore, Mu Chen had won, and Nine Nether no longer had anything to worry about. Immediately, her fierce attacks caused Qin Tiangang to be at a disadvantage.

In the chaotic battlefield below, the morale of the Hundred Battle Territory started to fall. They could all tell that the situation at hand was extremely unfavorable for them.

Qin Ling had been caught by Mu Chen, and Qin Tiangang was also losing and clearly could not fight against Nine Nether.

Morale dropped and the forces from the Hundred Battle Territory finally did not dare to continue fighting. In the end, some people started to back off, and this immediately caused a chain reaction. In only a few minutes, the previously highly-spirited Hundred Battle Territory lost all its morale, and everyone started to escape in all directions.

On the other hand, the forces from the Daluo Territory started to chase and attack. The sound of people being killed spread throughout the battlefield.

Now, the outcome of the war was already very obvious.

"Bastard!"

In the sky, Qin Tiangang gave a furious and dispirited roar. Immediately, his palm collided head-on with Nine Nether and trembling, he was blown backwards 10,000 feet. He grit his teeth and descended quickly. Within a blink, he appeared above Mu Chen.

Seeing that Qin Tiangang had actually come for him, Mu Chen's look also turned serious. He pushed his palm out in the air and Qin Ling was blown backwards, spitting out blood along the way.

Qin Tiangang stared at Mu Chen with a vicious look, and then looked at Qin Ling who was flying backwards. Finally, he grit his teeth and rushed towards the latter. He grabbed Qin Ling's shoulders and backed away quickly.

"Humph!"

A cold humph came from the sky. A black wing burning with a purple flame tore across space and hit Qin Tiangang's back like a bolt of lightning.

Spit.

A ferocious bloody wound resulted, and he spat out a large quantity of blood.

Qin Tiangang's body trembled intensely, but he did not stop. He grabbed Qin Ling and escaped into the distance. Only his vicious roar could be

heard from afar.

"Nine Nether, Mu Chen, just wait. My Thunder Magic Sect will not let you off easily!"

As the roar faded away, Qin Tiangang also quickly disappeared into the horizon.

Watching Qin Tiangang retreat, Mu Chen heaved a sigh of relief. Judging from Qin Tiangang's powers, if he really wanted to risk his life to fight, he would also certainly pay a heavy price.

Therefore, the best outcome was to make him flee. In any case, what Mu Chen and the rest wanted was only the Thunder Magic Sect and not Qin Tiangang's life.

Vroom.

Nine Nether dashed down from the sky. Her tall and slender body appeared beside Mu Chen.

Nine Nether's bright eyes stared at Mu Chen and she asked, "Are you injured?"

Mu Chen smiled and shook his head. He stared at the damaged ground in front of him and glanced at the magnificent Thunder Magic Mountain, after which, he grinned uncontrollably.

The Thunder Magic Sect now belonged to them.

Chapter 727: Heart Demon Lightning Lotus

The echoes of war still enveloped the region. The Daluo Territory decidedly had momentum going in its favor. Thus, as it swept past the enemy territory, it was as unstoppable as a fierce tiger. However, the morale of its troops following the Hundred Battle Territory dropped, due to the defeat of Qin Tiangang and Qin Ling. Without any spirit left to fight, their ranks started to collapse. In light of this twist of events, this battle seemed to already have an obvious outcome.

Mu Chen and Nine Nether stood in mid-air. They did not launch another attack, but rather allowed the other forces to end the war. Instead, they led the Nine Nether Troop onward, to take over the Thunder Magic Mountain directly. This would be their prize.

Regarding the Nine Nether Palace's occupying the mountain, the many other forces did not object to this, because they all knew that this had been the ultimate target of the Nine Nether Palace in the first place. Furthermore, the Nine Nether Palace had obviously made the greatest contributions towards the victory of the war.

Hence, it was the consensus that these spoils of war were more than deserved, as the most powerful person would naturally take the biggest fruit. On the Tianluo Continent, this had long been a common principle.

After taking over Thunder Magic Mountain, Nine Nether brought Mu Chen, Tang Bing, Tang Rou and the rest of the troop to the most important treasure room. Generally speaking, a sect would gather all of its most prized collections in one single place. The most important resource, the sovereign spiritual liquid, would also be placed there.

The treasure room was guarded by spiritual arrays. But, these spiritual arrays did not hinder Nine Nether. She merely had to wave her hand and the huge bronze door of the treasure room cracked open.

Buzz!

As the huge bronze door opened, a wave of majestic and pure spiritual energy gushed out. For a moment, the air in the entire area became viscous.

Nine Nether entered into the room first, followed closely by Mu Chen. Then, Mu Chen saw many crystalline torrents, zigzagging in the treasure room like pythons. Pure spiritual energy fluctuations spread out continuously, all of which were formed by the convergence of sovereign spiritual liquid.

Generally speaking, it was highly unusual for the sovereign spiritual liquid in any sect to be stored in a Mustard Seed Bracelet. Instead, it was most often stored using a special spiritual array, because only this could maintain the purity of the sovereign spiritual liquid in the most perfect way. Precisely because of this, Mu Chen and the rest did not need to worry about anyone taking away the sovereign spiritual liquid that was stored in the Thunder Magic Sect.

In addition, Qin Tiangang obviously had not expected them to lose the war. Hence, he had not even completed these preparations that should have been performed in the case of their defeat.

"Seems like most of the sovereign spiritual liquid is completely preserved." Mu Chen smiled. From the looks of it, even if the Thunder Magic Sect had taken away some sovereign spiritual liquid beforehand, being cautious, they had still left most of it behind.

Standing off to the side, Tang Bing's usually cold face had turned completely red. She stared at the torrents formed from the sovereign spiritual liquid with her already red eyes.

Seeing her appearance, Nine Nether also laughed pleasantly. She tapped gently on Tang Bing's shoulder and said, "Bing'er, do some counting. In the future, we will no longer need to live our days feeling that pressed for finances."

It was also the first time that Mu Chen saw the normally cold Tang Bing being so attracted to wealth. Immediately, he teased her. "The other forces also made some contributions. How about we share this treasure with

them?"

"No way!" Tang Bing instantly turned to Mu Chen, a fierce look in her bright eyes, then said, "Our Nine Nether Palace has been so carefully watching our spending all this time. We don't have extra sovereign spiritual liquid to give them! If you want to give some to them, you might as well give me away, too!"

Hearing this, Mu Chen immediately laughed out loud. He felt that Tang Bing was being very adorable at the moment.

Seeing his teasing smile, Tang Bing finally understood that Mu Chen was just joking with her. At once, she blushed and stared at Mu Chen with her charming eyes, clearly embarrassed.

"You dare to bully Bing'er. Be careful, your Nine Nether Troop may rebel against you later." Nine Nether also rolled her eyes at Mu Chen. Then, she held her arm around Tang Bing's slim waist and smiled. "But don't worry. Even if he has to give himself away, he would be unwilling to give you away!"

"Sister Nine Nether!" Hearing Nine Nether's words, Tang Bing's face turned even more red.

Mu Chen gave a dry laugh, but did not dare stay on the topic. He quickly turned his head to look around the treasure room. After a while, he stepped forward and walked further into the room, eventually stopping at a stone platform.

On the stone platform, there were a few crystalline jade boxes. A few scrolls, enveloped in lightning, were inside the jade boxes.

Mu Chen waved his sleeves, releasing spiritual energy, which then swept out and cleared the spiritual energy barrier on the platform. Then, he stretched out his hand, and a lightning scroll landed right into his palm.

He glanced at the scroll. Three words, glittering with lightning, were partially visible: Thunder Magic Physique.

The scroll was the Thunder Magic Physique that Qin Ling had cultivated. It was also a lightning-based body-refining divine technique.

Mu Chen closed his eyes and read through the Thunder Magic Physique. Then, he shook his head, because he realized that, although it was also a lightning-based body-refining divine technique, the Thunder Magic Physique was far less complicated than the Thunder God Physique.

In addition, the Thunder God Physique could train the physical body to a deeper extent and build an extremely solid foundation for more powerful body-refining divine techniques in the future. Just based upon this criteria alone, the Thunder Magic Physique was far less superior.

Mu Chen kept the scroll in the Mustard Seed Bracelet. Then, he checked out the other few scrolls that he had found. They were all lightning-based divine techniques, but he felt that they were still too weak to be of use to him.

After checking the scrolls for a while, he shook his head in disappointment. Just when he was about to leave, something suddenly caught his eye. It was another stone platform, but this one was made of black stone.

On the black stone platform, there was a gray bamboo slip, upon which were some vague lightning stripes. But the bamboo slip was a drab and unattractive gray color, and did not appear appear to be special in any way.

However, out of instinct, Mu Chen still took the gray bamboo slip into his hand. Then, his hand clenched and spiritual energy gushed into the slip, extracting its hidden information out...

The Heart Demon Lightning Lotus is cultivated by using the Netherworld Thunder Heart as its material, combined with a special refinery method...

After a while, Mu Chen opened his eyes. Some surprise flashed across his eyes, because he realized that the information recorded in the bamboo slip was not an ordinary divine technique. Instead, it was actually the method to produce an item known as the "Heart Demon Lightning Lotus".

This so-called "Heart Demon Lightning Lotus" was a detonatable divine artifact, so it could obviously only be used once. Furthermore, it required

the Netherworld Thunder Heart as its material.

Although the requirements to produce it were difficult to achieve, it was very powerful. When it was detonated, even a grade five sovereign would need to dodge the blast!

And this was only the power of a single piece! If they could be produced in bulk, by throwing out dozens of them, even a grade five sovereign could only flee in panic.

"The Thunder Magic Sect actually has this kind of treasure!" Mu Chen's eyes were filled with surprise. If the information recorded was accurate, and the Thunder Magic Sect really had such a powerful weapon, why had they not used it?

As Nine Nether walked toward Mu Chen, a pleasant aroma accompanied her every step. Upon seeing her approach, Mu Chen passed the bamboo slip in his hand to Nine Nether, expressing his doubts.

"It's actually the Heart Demon Lightning Lotus..."

Nine Nether seemed to have heard about the power of the weapon before, as even her expression changed slightly. Then, she frowned and said, "It's probably not that Qin Tiangang did not want to use them, but rather that they have not even managed to produce them yet..."

"Haven't produced them?" Mu Chen was stunned. In the Thunder Magic Mountain, there was the Thunder Magic Abyss, whose depth was filled with the Earthly Demonic Lightning. Also, the Earthly Demonic Lightning was a breeding ground for the Netherworld Thunder Heart. How could it be that, throughout all these many years, the Thunder Magic Sect still had not found any Netherworld Thunder Hearts?

"Don't think that the Netherworld Thunder Heart is very common." Nine Nether shook her head gently and said. "After all, that is an extremely unique lightning that is comparable to the unperishable flame. Hence, it is far more powerful than the divine black lightning, so it is quite possible that the Thunder Magic Sect has been unable to find it all this time."

Mu Chen twitched his lips in surprise. Even though he knew that the

Netherworld Thunder Heart was rare, he had not expected it to actually be so very rare...

"Since we have occupied the Thunder Magic Sect, we can rest for a while. Later, we will go and take a look at the Thunder Magic Abyss," Nine Nether's eyes sparkled, and she spoke in a thoughtful manner.

Mu Chen nodded. Apart from the sovereign spiritual liquid, the other reason that they had attacked the Thunder Magic Sect was the Thunder Magic Abyss.

The two walked out, and Tang Bing also moved over with a red face. Her eyes were filled with excitement, which she could hardly conceal. It seemed that she was extremely satisfied with the outcome of her inspection.

"Sister Nine Nether, from a rough estimate, there should be one hundred and thirty thousand sovereign spiritual liquid here. There are also many divine artifacts and divine techniques. If they were to be converted into sovereign spiritual liquid, they should be worth about sixty or seventy thousand."

Hearing Tang Bing's report, even Mu Chen twitched his lips uncontrollably. The Nine Nether Palace could only get about ten thousand drops of sovereign spiritual liquid a year. On the other hand, the treasure room in the Thunder Magic Sect already stored one hundred and thirty thousand. This gain could allow the resources in the Nine Nether Palace to grow quickly.

Nine Nether also smiled and said, "This really solves our urgent need."

Previously, the Nine Nether Palace had to spend very carefully, and could sustain itself only by relying on the sovereign spiritual liquid that Mu Chen had taken out. Now, they had obtained such a huge amount, that the Nine Nether Palace had become much wealthier in an instant.

"Ask someone to organize these things. For this period, we will remain stationed here," Nine Nether said.

"Alright!" Tang Bing gave a sweet reply.

Nine Nether flicked Tang Bing's smooth forehead gently with her slim finger. Then, she and Mu Chen left the treasure room, directly moving toward the deeper parts of the Thunder Magic Sect. They could feel that, in the deeper parts, an extremely violent lightning fluctuation was spreading out.

At the deeper part of the Thunder Magic Sect, Mu Chen and Nine Nether appeared in the sky, both looking below them. There, an enormous crack was torn among the mountains.

The crack was about ten thousand feet long and seemed black and bottomless. The rumbling sound of thunder came from the bottom of the abyss, causing the ground to tremble slightly.

A strange power of thunder passed over through the vibration. This place was Mu Chen's target, the Thunder Magic Abyss!

Chapter 728: Thunder Magic Abyss

Thunder Magic Abyss.

Mu Chen and Nine Nether stood in mid-air and stared at the bottomless black abyss. The abyss was like a demonic dragon that was snaking and lurking deep underground. It was extremely terrifying.

Rumble.

The deep roar of thunder rang out continuously from the depths of the abyss and caused the ground to shake.

"This is the Thunder Magic Abyss." Nine Nether stared at the black abyss, and her face turned somewhat dignified as she said, "In the Thunder Magic Abyss, the Earthly Demonic Lightning comes into being. This lightning is rather special. Although it is a type of lightning, it can communicate with the earth. When activated, it can easily crack the earth open and cause earthquake-like destruction."

Mu Chen nodded. He had cultivated the Thunder God Physique and had also trained in the Lightning Territory in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. Being quite familiar with the power of lightning, he could therefore feel the terrifying power of lightning that was converging in the Thunder Magic Abyss.

However, although the Earthly Demonic Lightning was strong, it was inferior to the Unperishable Flame. If he were to use it for spiritual energy fusion, the Earthly Demonic Lightning would definitely be burned away by the Unperishable Flame.

Therefore, he had to find lightning that could match the Unperishable Flame. The Earthly Demonic Lightning was clearly not strong enough.

Thus, Mu Chen's target was not the Earthly Demonic Lightning but rather the Netherworld Thunder Heart that was hidden in the deeper parts of the Thunder Magic Abyss and was also more powerful!

"But the Netherworld Thunder Heart is so powerful, even if we can find it, it will not be easy to fuse it," Mu Chen said in a thoughtful manner.

Previously, when he was fusing the Unperishable Flame, he had spent a great amount of effort. At the moment, to fuse the Netherworld Thunder Heart would definitely be even more difficult and very dangerous.

"But if you fuse it successfully, your spiritual energy will have the properties of both lightning and fire. It will be much more powerful than ordinary spiritual energy," Nine Nether said and smiled.

"Of course, it doesn't mean that the more properties your spiritual energy has, the more powerful it is. For example, if you just talk about fire, the Flame Emperor from the Endless Fire Territory is probably the strongest in the Great Thousand World. He is really the emperor of fire and can easily control any flame in the world."

"So if I specialize in one area, I will be stronger?" Mu Chen asked. The Flame Emperor had really cultivated the way of fire to its extreme. At his level, other types of powers would probably be unattractive.

Nine Nether shook her head and replied, "You can't say that, either. The world is really mysterious, and no path is the best. I heard that the spiritual energy of the Martial Ancestor in the Martial Border has many different properties. He is adept at not just the powers of lightning and fire. That time he broke into the Ice Spirit Clan, the power of ice that he had shown was so strong that even the Ice Spirit Clan, which was an ancient clan that relied on the power of ice to survive, found it difficult to deal with."

"Martial Ancestor? His spiritual energy actually has so many properties?" Mu Chen was temporarily stunned as he recalled Lin Jing, whom he had met on the Continent of Trade. The Martial Ancestor should be her father, right?

"It is said that this is because the lower plane he is from is special. Although the Great Thousand World is where countless worlds converge, some lower planes also have remarkable parts. Some of their unique cultivation methods are not ordinary, even in the Great Thousand World."

Nine Nether smiled gently and continued, "Therefore, in the world, there is no cultivation path that is the strongest, only one that suits you the

most. As long as you can find your own path, in the future you may even be able to match the most powerful people in the world."

Mu Chen nodded, after which he gave a bitter smile and said, "But it's too early to talk about this now. We haven't even found the Netherworld Thunder Heart."

Mu Chen looked at the Thunder Magic Abyss with some unease. At first he was quite optimistic, but now when he realized that over so many years, the Thunder Magic Sect still had not found the Netherworld Thunder Heart, his hope dropped to a minimum.

It was unlikely that if the Thunder Magic Sect had not found the Netherworld Thunder Heart after spending so much time and effort, that he would be so lucky to find it.

"No matter what, we have to try," Nine Nether said.

Mu Chen nodded. Then, he and Nine Nether glanced at each other and turned into two beams of light that descended quickly into the Thunder Magic Abyss. As they whizzed down, darkness instantly engulfed them.

Rumble.

Low roars of thunder kept rumbling out from the darkness below. Mu Chen and Nine Nether descended at an extremely fast speed, and in only ten breaths' time, they were 100,000 feet below the ground. Their speed gradually slowed down because they could feel that at such a depth, the lightning that filled the place seemed to be more and more violent.

Mu Chen and Nine Nether stood in place. Mu Chen flicked his finger and bright balls of spiritual energy rose slowly from his fingertip. Eventually, they expanded quickly and bright light burst out, banishing all the darkness at the bottom of the Thunder Magic Abyss.

Darkness retreated, and the scene surrounding them also became clear. Mu Chen scanned around, and his look turned serious. The walls of the abyss were filled with dense black holes, each about ten feet wide. In these dark holes, gray-black lightning shuttled to and fro like snakes. The deep rumble of thunder caused the ground to shake.

That gray-black lightning was the so-called Earthly Demonic Lightning.

Rumble!

The Earthly Demonic Lightning spread all over the abyss, and a violent fluctuation was given out, causing the space to distort. When the bright balls of spiritual energy appeared, the lightning also seemed to have sensed the intruders. Immediately, countless lightning strikes shot out from the black holes and swept towards Mu Chen and Nine Nether.

Mu Chen and Nine Nether did not panic. Nine Nether waved her hand, and a fire shield formed from purple flames and enveloped them. The Earthly Demonic Lightning rumbled over and was eventually burned into nothingness by the fire shield formed from the Unperishable Flame.

"Look below."

Nine Nether ignored the interference from the Earthly Demonic Lightning. Her slim finger pointed below and her face was solemn.

Mu Chen also looked below. Flicking his finger, a ball of spiritual energy flew towards the deeper part of the dark abyss. Then, the ball burst open and countless light spots swept out, lighting up the region below.

Gasp.

When Mu Chen saw the scene below, he gasped uncontrollably. In the deeper part of the darkness, gray-black lightning seemed to have formed a sea and filled the entire bottom of the Thunder Magic Abyss. It was so dark, it seemed to be a passage leading to another world that looked extremely terrifying.

The lightning sea was actually completely formed from the Earthly Demonic Lightning.

"It's no wonder that the Thunder Magic Sect could not find the Netherworld Thunder Heart after searching for so many years." Mu Chen sighed gently. Nobody had expected the Earthly Demonic Lightning in the depths of the Thunder Magic Abyss to actually be so vast and majestic. Even if Qin Tiangang was a Grade Five Sovereign, he would not dare to come to this place lightly.

Nine Nether nodded gently, after which, she frowned and said, "It seems that in order to find the Netherworld Thunder Heart, we need to go deep into the lightning sea formed by the Earthly Demonic Lightning."

Mu Chen also stared at the lightning sea and nodded slowly. However, he did not start the search directly. Instead, he looked at the Thunder Magic Abyss, which was filled with the Earthly Demonic Lightning, and some thoughts flashed across his mind.

Mu Chen said suddenly, "Nine Nether, I plan to bring the Nine Nether Troop here to cultivate."

"Huh?" Nine Nether said, slightly surprised. "The Thunder Magic Abyss is filled with the Earthly Demonic Lightning. Although you and I are not afraid of it, it is probably quite dangerous for the Nine Nether Troop."

"I plan to pass the Thunder God Physique to them," Mu Chen said slowly. "This Thunder Magic Abyss is a very good place to train the Thunder God Physique. If the Nine Nether Troop can successfully cultivate the Thunder God Physique, the fighting spirit condensed by them will definitely be significantly stronger."

The Thunder God Physique was extremely beneficial to the training of the physical body. However, as Mu Chen became stronger, the increase in combat ability brought about by the Thunder God Physique was also becoming less significant. On the other hand, if the Nine Nether Troop could cultivate the Thunder God Physique, their overall power would increase greatly. Mu Chen was very confident that by that time, with just the 1,000 people from the Nine Nether Troop, he could beat any troops in the Daluo Territory, except the mysterious Daluo Celestial Army.

Furthermore, in the longer term, if one day he really needed to go to the Luo God Clan, he definitely would not go alone. He therefore also needed a power that belonged to himself.

The Nine Nether Troop was obviously a good choice. Although at the moment, they were not strong enough, they had the potential to become so.

"Alright."

Nine Nether thought about it briefly and then nodded. She could also vaguely understand the thoughts that Mu Chen had in his heart. Even though to some extent, the Nine Nether Troop was her personal army, she had no objections at all to the idea. Based on the relationship between the two, these things clearly had no effect.

Since they had made the decision, Mu Chen did not delay any further. He flew out of the Thunder Magic Abyss and then gathered the Nine Nether Troop, after which, he brought them all into the Thunder Magic Abyss.

Based on the strength of the Nine Nether Troop, they naturally could not enter as deeply as Mu Chen and Nine Nether had. They could only reach the depth of 30,000 feet and could not go deeper.

Seeing this, Mu Chen ordered them to stop. He waved his sleeves, and many scripts flew out from them, landing in the hands of each Nine Nether Troop soldier.

"This is the cultivation method of the Thunder God Physique that I have cultivated. From today onwards, you will cultivate here."

Hearing Mu Chen's toneless voice, Qiu Shan and the rest were all stunned and stared at Mu Chen. After a while, an intense gratitude gushed out from their eyes because they were aware of the value of the Thunder God Physique. In other forces, it would be extremely difficult to obtain such a body-refining divine technique. On the other hand, Mu Chen actually just passed it to them...

"Thank you, commander!"

Qiu Shan and the rest glanced at each other. Then, they held tightly onto the scripts and knelt down on one knee in mid-air, their faces filled with heartfelt respect and support. They did not flatter unnecessarily, but their deep voices were filled with gratitude.

A soldier will die for the person who recognizes his worth. With such a commander, they would all give their full support.

Mu Chen nodded gently. He similarly did not say anything unnecessary

and only waved his hand. Then, under the thousand respectful stares, he dashed towards the depths of the Thunder Magic Abyss directly.

He had already achieved what he wanted. In his opinion, using the Thunder God Physique in exchange for the loyalty of the Nine Nether Troop was a very good deal.

Since he had already made a proper plan for the Nine Nether Troop, he could also search for the Netherworld Thunder Heart that he wanted in the Thunder Magic Abyss without further worries.

Chapter 729: The Search

In the depths of the Thunder Magic Abyss, Mu Chen and Nine Nether stared at the black lightning sea with solemn looks. Although the lightning sea looked calm, the two could clearly feel the violence hidden beneath. In fact, they shuddered to think of what terrifying things were hidden within the bottomless darkness below.

"Let's go in together," Nine Nether said. She obviously could not allow Mu Chen to enter this kind of dangerous place alone.

Mu Chen nodded gently in agreement. Then, moving his body, he turned into a beam of light that shot towards the black lightning sea. Behind him, Nine Nether, whose whole body was now covered with purple flames, followed closely.

Splash.

In the vast lightning sea, the sound of water could be heard. The two charged into the lightning sea, their bodies quickly vanishing into the darkness. It looked as if they were engulfed by a huge mouth of darkness.

Rumble!

When the two entered the lightning sea, the extremely violent roars of thunder enveloped them within an intense vibration. In fact, the most powerful attack from the Earthly Demonic Lightning were shock waves. Hence, the shock wave was more than sufficient to tear the entire surrounding ground apart.

Although Mu Chen and Nine Nether were both protected by their spiritual energies, waves of ripples still appeared on the spiritual energy covers that were surrounding the two, due to the shock waves.

Mu Chen scanned the area, but could only see the dark color of ink. Furthermore, because of the Earthly Demonic Lightning, his spiritual energy sensor was also very limited. To find the Netherworld Thunder Heart in this place was obviously as difficult as finding a needle in a haystack!

However, since they had already come so far, they could not give up now. No matter how difficult it was, they had to give it a try!

With renewed determination, Mu Chen and Nine Nether dove deep into the lightning sea. They had figured that, logically speaking, the Netherworld Thunder Heart was superior to the Earthly Demonic Lightning. Hence, if it was to form, it would definitely be found at the place where the Earthly Demonic Lightning was the most concentrated.

Rumble!

In the lightning sea, the violent rumbles of thunder could be heard continuously. Mu Chen and Nine Nether swam quickly. The light of spiritual energy surged around their bodies, making them the only sources of light within the dark depths of the lightning sea.

As the two dove deeper, they could also feel that the shock waves that were gushing towards them were becoming stronger. Therefore, they had to slow their swimming paces. However, as time passed, they still did not manage to sense any fluctuations that belonged to the Netherworld Thunder Heart.

Slowing down even further, the two glanced at each other and sighed gently. It seemed that, just as they had expected, finding the Netherworld Thunder Heart in the lightning sea was incredibly difficult. It was no wonder that, after so many years, the Thunder Magic Sect still had not found a single one.

"The Thunder Magic Abyss leads to the very deepest parts of the underground. The deeper we go, the more violent the power of lightning will become. By that time, even we will probably not be able to tolerate it," Nine Nether said with a stern look.

Mu Chen nodded gently. He had also realized that, if they continued to use this silly method, they would not be able to find the Netherworld Thunder Heart, even if they were to spend one or two years trying!

But, apart from this, are there any more efficient methods?

"The Earthly Demonic Lightning here has interfered with our spiritual

energy sensor, and we cannot detect our surroundings at all," Nine Nether said resignedly. "If we could only find a way to be shielded from the interference of the Earthly Demonic Lightning, it would be much easier for us to carry out the search."

However, Nine Nether only said this half-heartedly, as she knew all too well that the Earthly Demonic Lightning was extremely violent and aggressive, and also repulsed external objects. So, even with their powers, it would be impossible to shield the interference.

Hearing all of this, Mu Chen frowned. Indeed, just like what Nine nether had said, there was only one way for them to find the Netherworld Thunder Heart in this place. They had to use the Earthly Demonic Lightning as a medium, but... The Earthly Demonic Lightning was very aggressive, and would definitely be unwilling to become a medium.

Nine Nether saw Mu Chen pondering, so she did not disturb him. She also did not interrupt because, at the moment, she did not have any other ideas.

After being silent for a while, Mu Chen said, "I will try the Thunder God Physique."

After he had finished speaking, the spiritual energy shield around his body dissipated. Immediately, as the Earthly Demonic Lightning rushed over, his body quickly became electrified. Then, dazzling lightning surged on his body.

Bang! Bang!

However, Mu Chen's plan did not work, as he had underestimated the extreme power of the Earthly Demonic Lightning. The fiercely vibrating Earthly Demonic Lightning collided onto his body heavily. Even though Mu Chen's physical body was very strong, the shocks still caused the blood in his body to surge.

Seeing this, Nine Nether, who was watching from the side, quickly cast the Unperishable Flame around Mu Chen to protect him. Frowning slightly, she said, "It doesn't work. Even though you have cultivated the Thunder God Physique, it doesn't mean that you are immune to all types

of lightning!"

There were many different types of lightning in the world, each possessing different properties. Clearly, Mu Chen would not be immune to all lightnings, just by relying on the Thunder God Physique.

Mu Chen smiled bitterly. At first, he had thought that he could simply rely on the Thunder God Physique to make the Earthly Demonic Lightning less aggressive. But, by the looks of it, it seemed that this was only wishful thinking.

"The Thunder God Physique is also useless..." Mu Chen muttered to himself and frowned. After a while, an idea suddenly came to him. He recalled a divine technique that he had cultivated in the past, but that he had been using only very rarely since: The Lightning Controlling Technique.

When he was still in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, the Northern Sea Dragon had passed the divine technique to him. The divine technique was somewhat special, as it was said that it could allow one to communicate with all of the lightnings in the world, and therefore, attract any lightning.

However, there were many restrictions for the divine technique, particularly if it was to be used in a battle. Hence, Mu Chen had only rarely cast it. Nevertheless, at the moment, it may actually solve his urgent need!

"I will try again," Mu Chen said to Nine Nether. He then sat down cross-legged and closed his eyes. His hands quickly formed a mysterious seal, as he completely stopped moving, just like an old, meditating monk.

As Mu Chen calmed down gradually, his mind power spread out quietly. Then, he carefully tried to make contact with the Earthly Demonic Lightning that filled the place.

A fluctuation spread out from Mu Chen's mind power. It was the Lightning Controlling Technique.

The fluctuation was emitted outward, wave by wave. Then, a surprising

scene appeared. The Earthly Demonic Lightning that was originally rippling violently around Mu Chen and Nine Nether slowly became calm. Nine Nether watched the entire scene in surprised amazement.

This guy had actually succeeded?

Mu Chen's closed eyes opened gradually at that exact moment, and he was similarly filled with surprise. The magical properties of the Lightning Controlling Technique had exceeded his expectations.

Although he could not really control the Earthly Demonic Lightning in this place, and especially not in such a short time, he was at least able to obtain some preliminary communication. Now, the Earthly Demonic Lightning no longer repulsed and attacked him violently.

Next, he only needed to somehow use the Earthly Demonic Lightning as the medium. By controlling his mind power, he could then search the horrifying lightning sea at an incredible speed.

Mu Chen closed his eyes again, while his mind power adhered quietly onto the many bolts of the Earthly Demonic Lightning. Then, it started to spread out at an astonishing speed...

Nine Nether stood beside Mu Chen to protect him. Although the spreading of the mind power could not be seen, she could feel that something was sweeping out into the depths of the lightning sea, just like a beam of light that was flashing across the sky.

Wherever his mind power passed, the rumble of thunder could be heard continuously. However, because he using the Lightning Controlling Technique, the Earthly Demonic Lightning would not attack Mu Chen's mind power. Otherwise, the fragile mind power would be completely destroyed by the violent Earthly Demonic Lightning in an instant.

Countless images appeared in Mu Chen's mind continuously. However, it was all still only darkness, as no special fluctuations could be felt. Nevertheless, Mu Chen did not hurry. Instead, he condensed his mind power and kept searching.

Time passed slowly, as the search was dull and boring. However, Mu

Chen did not dare relax his efforts. He cautiously analyzed the tiny fluctuations that were transmitting, trying to find his target, which was hidden somewhere within the lightning sea.

However, he was still unsuccessful.

One day... Two days... Four days...

Four days had passed now. In these four days, Mu Chen was totally motionless, as if he was a monolith. His closed eyes did not open at all.

Nine Nether also stood guarded silently beside him for these four days. As the time passed, her fists had clenched quietly, mirroring her tense thoughts. Even if he does this, he still may not be able to find the Netherworld Thunder Heart...

She turned her head slightly to stare at the stern yet handsome face of the young man. On that face, the original immaturity had already faded away gradually, making way for the signs of perseverance that could now slowly be seen. His tightly closed lips, just like himself, looked stubbornly persistent.

Sigh.

Nine Nether sighed gently. Her sigh fell into the ears of Mu Chen, as his body began to tremble abruptly. Wild joy suddenly surged on his stern face.

The reason for this scene was due to the fact that, in the extension of his mind power, he finally had found an abnormal fluctuation. Moreover, he could feel that even the Earthly Demonic Lightning would not dare approach that direction, as if it was afraid of something.

Rumble!

However, as Mu Chen inspected the mysterious region with an intense desire, a thunder that sounded like the howl of a ghost suddenly roared in his heart. Mu Chen's body trembled and his face turned pale. Then, all of his mind powers shattered. But, just before his mind powers had shattered, he had vaguely seen that, in the darkness, there seemed to be a broken stone tablet that was partially visible...

Mu Chen's eyes opened suddenly, as a cold sweat rolled down from his forehead. His hand held onto his chest, while distracting thoughts surged wildly in his mind. Even the spiritual energy in his body seemed to be out of control.

A cold hand was placed on his back. Warm spiritual energy gushed in quickly, repressing all of the spiritual energy in his body that was out of control.

"How are you?" Nine Nether asked anxiously.

Mu Chen panted for a while. Then, he turned his head and looked at Nine Nether's charming face, which was filled with worry. He grinned, joy filling his smile.

"Found it!"

Chapter 730: Supreme Heart Demon Chant

"Found it?"

Hearing Mu Chen's words, a surprised look burst out from Nine Nether's charming eyes, and then she felt some disbelief. After all, the Thunder Magic Sect had not managed to find the item for so many years, but Mu Chen had only taken four days to detect the fluctuation from the Netherworld Thunder Heart.

"Should be it." Mu Chen nodded in excitement. He lowered his head to look at his palm and said with a solemn look, "But the Netherworld Thunder Heart is really overbearing. Just its sound caused me to lose myself."

"The Netherworld Thunder Heart is a very weird lightning among the many types of lightning in the world. Its power is not fierce and violent like the other types of lightning. Furthermore, it does not attack through actual lightning but rather through a lightning roar," Nine Nether explained.

"Lightning roar?" Mu Chen squinted slightly.

"The Netherworld Thunder Heart can ignore most defenses. It is formed from the heart and appears directly in a person's soul. The lightning roar can cause a person to have many disturbing thoughts and feel like there is a demon in his heart. He may even lose control of his own spiritual energy and die from the backlash of his spiritual energy." Nine Nether's expression was serious. Clearly, she was quite afraid of the Netherworld Thunder Heart.

The attack was indeed impossible to effectively defend against.

Mu Chen's expression was filled with shock. In this way, no matter how strong a person's physical body was, he would still be unable to defend against the lightning roar from the Netherworld Thunder Heart. With such a unique ability, it was no wonder that the Netherworld Thunder

Heart was comparable to the Unperishable Flame.

Thinking about this, he became increasingly interested in the Netherworld Thunder Heart.

"Let's go. I also want to see the legendary Netherworld Thunder Heart for myself." Nine Nether gave a charming smile. It was obvious that she was also very curious about the Netherworld Thunder Heart.

Mu Chen nodded, and then he extended his hand towards Nine Nether, who was about to set off.

Nine Nether looked over at him, puzzled. Then, a smile appeared on her elegant face, and she said, "What? Little Mu Chen, you want to take advantage of me?"

Mu Chen's lips twitched and he said resignedly, "The Earthly Demonic Lightning in that area was extremely violent. If you enter carelessly, you will definitely be attacked. On the other hand, I can avoid it by using the Lightning Controlling Technique."

"Really?" The corners of Nine Nether's rosy lips curled slightly as she reached out her hand. Putting her hand on Mu Chen's palm she said, "Then I will trust you for now. Anyway, you would not dare to do anything."

Mu Chen held onto the cold, delicate, and slim hand in his palm. Then, he brought the slender, soft lady into his arms. His arm held her tightly around her flexible waist. Immediately, a pleasant aroma gushed towards him, and his body came into full contact with her warm body.

Landing in Mu Chen's arms, Nine Nether seemed to be caught unprepared. However, before she could struggle by reflex, Mu Chen whispered in her ear, "Don't move."

Spiritual energy gushed out of his body and enveloped them. Then, his toes kicked out, and they turned into a beam of light, charging quickly towards the dark and bottomless depths of the lightning sea.

The violent Earthly Demonic Lightning rapidly swept past the two. Feeling the heat from their body contact, Nine Nether's face blushed

slightly through her composure. Then, she stared at Mu Chen with her eyes wide open.

Feeling her embarrassed look, Mu Chen could only give a dry laugh and then speed up.

The streamer crossed the dark lightning sea. Where it passed, the violent Earthly Demonic Lightning automatically split apart and formed an unobstructed path. By relying on the uniqueness of the Lightning Controlling Technique, Mu Chen could obviously travel freely in the lightning sea.

However, even though his journey was unimpeded, he still spent more than half a day to slowly reach the region felt by his mind's power...

Vroom.

The streamer flew across the dark lightning sea, but its lightning-like speed started to gradually slow down. The spiritual energy vanished gently, and Mu Chen and Nine Nether appeared.

Nine Nether pressed her hand against Mu Chen's chest and pushed him back by a step, lightly freeing herself.

"How can you abandon me after making use of me?" Mu Chen said, looking indignant.

Nine Nether rolled her eyes at Mu Chen, feeling both annoyed and amused. She ignored him and looked ahead. Then, her face turned somewhat solemn.

Mu Chen also stopped joking and looked in that direction. In the dark region before them, there was actually a vacuum zone. There seemed to be nothing in the zone, but the Earthly Demonic Lightning did not dare to go near it.

The region of darkness was extremely terrifying, looking like a black hole that led to a place of death.

"The Netherworld Thunder Heart that I have sensed is right here," Mu Chen said in a low voice. Although it was totally silent, for some reason

Mu Chen's body tightened uncontrollably. That was because his body felt danger and automatically entered a defensive stance.

Nine Nether nodded gently. The two looked at each other, and both nodded. Then, they stepped forward simultaneously and went out of the lightning sea, entering the dark vacuum zone directly.

No sound could be heard as the two carefully moved forward step by step. After a few minutes, Nine Nether's eyes were suddenly filled with caution. However, before she could speak, a weird lightning roar that sounded like the howl of a ghost abruptly burst out in the hearts of Nine Nether and Mu Chen.

Bang!

Their bodies stiffened instantly, especially Mu Chen's. Some veins actually started creeping on his face, and his originally handsome face appeared extremely ferocious.

The weird lightning roar had erupted directly in the deepest part of his soul. The lightning roar rippled and instantly caused the spiritual energy running in his body to be out of control. If he did not have such a strong foundation, his spiritual energy would have gone wild. Even so, he could not move at all and seemed to have lost control of his body.

While Mu Chen was trying his best to resist the lightning roar in his heart, beside him, Nine Nether's stiff body slowly relaxed. Purple flames quickly started burning and enveloped her.

Her hand, which was burning in the purple flames, grabbed Mu Chen's palm. The purple flames swept out and gushed into his body. The crackling sound of fire also started to cover the lightning roar.

Mu Chen's body recovered slowly.

Nine Nether turned her head slightly, displaying her pointy chin and white cheeks as she said, "Activate the Unperishable Flame to defend against the lightning roar."

Mu Chen nodded, and the Sovereign Sea in his body surged. As his spiritual energy rushed, traces of the Unperishable Flame seeped out. Even

though his Unperishable Flame was not as vast as Nine Nether's, it was sufficient to protect his body.

The two walked forward again. During the next part of their journey, every time they took a step, a lightning roar would erupt in the depths of their hearts. However, they had now taken precautions, along with having the power of the Unperishable Flame. Their pace was slow, but they eventually managed to continue walking.

Mu Chen counted silently in his heart. When the lightning roar sounded for the thousandth time, he finally felt Nine Nether, who was in front of him, stop. He also halted and lifted his somewhat pale face to look ahead. Then, his eyes narrowed.

In front of them was an extremely dark region. In the darkness, there was, however, a peculiar light that was partially visible. It seemed to be a gray-colored light.

It seemed as if nothing existed in the gray light. However, Mu Chen felt a terrifying fluctuation from the region. There must be something there!

It was just that his eyes could not see it!

"The Netherworld Thunder Heart has no shape or form..." Nine Nether said softly. At the moment, her body had already tightened, and the Unperishable Flame started to burn wildly. She stared at the gray region, and her voice gradually became cold. "The Netherworld Thunder Heart is right in front of you!"

Mu Chen's eyes narrowed immediately. He stared attentively at the region, and purple flames also started to surge in his eyes. Then, the space in the gray region seemed to have distorted. Vaguely, he could see an invisible python 10,000 feet long coiled up there. Its emotionlessly gloomy eyes stared at him coldly.

Slither.

It flicked its tongue slowly, and a weird sound resonated, as if it were the hypnosis song of Death itself.

Is this the Netherworld Thunder Heart?!

Mu Chen gasped. He did not expect the Netherworld Thunder Heart to have taken the form of a snake whose powers could not be underestimated. Mu Chen did not know if he could conquer the snake by working with Nine Nether.

"Huh?"

Just as Mu Chen was staring at the invisible Netherworld Thunder Heart, something suddenly caught his eyes, and he looked at the back of the python. There, gray light was surging, and there was actually a broken stone tablet which was partially visible.

"What's that?" Mu Chen said softly to Nine Nether.

Nine Nether also looked in that direction. She frowned gently and focused her attention on the region. On the broken stone tablet, light was surging, and some ancient words gradually appeared.

"Supreme Heart Demon Chant?"

Nine Nether carefully identified the ancient words. After a while, her eyes suddenly sparkled, and she muttered in a shocked tone, "I think it's the... Supreme Heart Demon Chant?!"

"Supreme Heart Demon Chant?" Mu Chen was momentarily stunned. Its name sounds overbearing, but what exactly is it?

"In the ancient times, there was an extremely fierce demon, known to the people as the Heart Demon Lightning Emperor. During that time, he roamed the Great Thousand World freely and was very reputed. Later, during the apocalypse of the Great Thousand World, many powerful people from the Extraterritorial Race were killed by him. However, he also disappeared in the apocalypse. Today we actually found the Supreme Heart Demon Chant here," Nine Nether said in surprise.

"It's no wonder that the Netherworld Thunder Heart is here. During that time, the Heart Demon Lightning Emperor was very skilled at using the Netherworld Thunder Heart."

"Oh. Maybe this is where the Heart Demon Lightning Emperor passed away?" Mu Chen also said with surprise.

"I don't know about that." Nine Nether shook her head. Staring at the broken stone tablet, she could see that the Supreme Heart Demon Chant on it seemed to be incomplete.

"When we defeat the Netherworld Thunder Heart python, we will know everything." Nine Nether's fist slowly clenched.

Mu Chen also nodded gently. He stared at the invisible giant python, and his look also slowly became cold. He had spent so much effort to find the place and had to obtain the Netherworld Thunder Heart no matter what!

Chapter 731: Suppress the Demon

The huge formless python laid quietly in the dark. Its merciless eyes made one shiver. This was different from the other brutal lightning skills. The Netherworld Thunder Heart was eccentric and petrifying.

Mu Chen and Nine Nether looked gravely at the Formless Lightning Python in fear. Even Nine Nether smelled danger.

"Its strength was comparable to a Grade Five Sovereign. Fortunately, it had the same look, but not the spiritual intelligence. We still stand a chance to win," Nine Nether said softly.

Mu Chen nodded. Although the Formless Lightning Python looked terrifying, its eyes did not reflect any spiritual movement. It only showed its ruthless instinct. However, it was even more dangerous than Qin Tiangang, the Leader of Thunder Magic Sect.

Puff.

Mu Chen let out a breath to suppress the unsettled emotions that he had earlier. He had previously seen such miraculous things formed by lightning at the highest level of Northern Spiritual Academy. Its power was even more terrifying than the Formless Lightning Python. Back then, Northern Sea Dragon, who was at Grade Nine Sovereign level, had found it tough to handle as well.

Although the Formless Lightning Python was formed by the Netherworld Thunder Heart, it ranked above others in the Lightning Territory. However, due to a few reasons, it was not as powerful as it seemed. Otherwise, Mu Chen and Nine Nether would have run for their lives.

"We must break up its body to subdue it," Nine Nether slowly grasped her hand and said. "I will strike first. Take care of yourself!"

This level of fighting would require Nine Nether to step in. Mu Chen's power was only at Grade Two Sovereign level, which was next to nothing.

"Be careful." Mu Chen nodded. If he got himself involved in the fight, he might be a burden to Nine Nether.

Nine Nether simply nodded, not saying another word. She tapped her feet and dashed out. A powerful purple flame then surged out from her body. Then, the temperature in the sky instantly rose.

Swish.

A pair of huge and beautiful black wings spread out on Nine Nether's back. She held multiple wing shards in her hand, which then turned into a long wing shard spear. Purple flames also surged on the spear.

Swish!

As Nine Nether activated her spiritual energy, the Formless Lightning Python sensed danger. It started to hiss, as it stared at Nine Nether.

Nine Nether flapped the wings. Then, with a whoosh, she appeared on top of the Formless Lightning Python. As the spear shook, its ray was overwhelming, swirling downward. Every ray was deadly, and was accompanied by purple flames.

Splat!

The Formless Lightning Python lifted up its head, then opened its ferocious mouth. The sound that it let out was not the hissing sound of a snake, but the sharp cry of thunder!

The thunder sound traveled outward. As the spear aurora crossed paths with the thunder sound, it disappeared.

Nine Nether's body shook. The thunder sound of the Nine Netherworld Thunder Heart had once again attacked her body. However, she had the protection of the unperishable flame, so she was able to withstand the attack.

Boom!

A large tail suddenly appeared from above, then darted down like lightning toward Nine Nether. The huge wings behind Nine Nether speedily covered her body like a wing shield.

Dong!

The tail of the snake flung on the wings. The thunder sound was extremely powerful. Nine Nether had been thrown back, but she managed to find her balance. She continued to flap the wings.

Splat!

The Formless Lightning Python regarded Nine Nether as an offender. It attacked her ferociously. Sharp thunder sounds traveled out constantly from its terrifying mouth.

In the face of the endless attacks, Nine Nether could only remain on the defense. She seemed to be suppressed by the creature.

When Mu Chen, who was outside the battle range, saw this scene, he turned grave. The Formless Lightning Python was amazingly powerful. Even Nine Nether had been suppressed by it.

We must quickly finish it off. If this continues, Nine Nether will not be able to take it.

Mu Chen's eyes glittered. The Formless Lightning Python had been formed by the Netherworld Thunder Heart. Thus, it had endless power. Nine Nether would not be able to defeat it, if this continued as such.

However, he could not strike rashly, just in case the Formless Lightning Python would then turn to attack him. That would only make the situation worse!

Mu Chen frowned, then slowly moved toward the battlefield in order to sense the range of attack. After a while, he appeared somewhere in the sky and stepped forth.

Splat!

As he stepped forth, a thunder sound resounded in his heart. Immediately, his body stiffened. The veins on his face moved and twitched, as if they were about to explode.

Purple flames surged in Mu Chen's eyes. The unperishable flame had been activated. It suppressed the thunder sound, and just as Mu Chen was about to relax a bit, the thunder sound began again.

He had entered into the Formless Lightning Python's range of attack, so he had been affected by its power. Mu Chen slowly closed his eyes, thinking hard about how he could deal with the Netherworld Thunder Heart. If he could not find some way, he would not be able to help Nine Nether!

Swish! Swish!

Thunder God Physique!

His body dazzled with lightning, but he instantly realized that the Thunder God Physique had no effect on the Netherworld Thunder Heart. He then activated the Lightning Controlling Technique, but it was of no use either.

The Netherworld Thunder Heart was unlike the Earthly Demonic Lightning. Thus, the force of this aggressive lightning could not be controlled by his Lightning Controlling Technique.

Mu Chen had used various means, but they were next to nothing in this fight. As the fight between Nine Nether and the Formless Lightning Python became more aggressive, Mu Chen was greatly affected by it.

He sat cross-legged in the vast space, and his face speedily turned pale. The thunder sound in his body became more frequent, to the point that he could barely take it.

No, I cannot give up! Mu Chen gritted his teeth. Nine Nether was fighting hard. If he gave up now, he would be letting Nine Nether down.

Mu Chen took a deep breath, channeling his spiritual energy. He activated the unperishable flame to fend off the assaulting power. His eyes were glittering crazily.

The Formless Lightning Python was extremely powerful. Judging from the situation, it would be difficult to break its form.

Since there was no way to break its form, there was only one way to deal with it...

Seal it.

Seal it?

The best option would be to use the Immortal Page in Mu Chen's body to seal it up. Even Mandela, who was extremely powerful, had to depend on the Immortal Page.

Mu Chen was very decisive. He put his palms together and speedily formed a strange seal.

Buzz.

A majestic spiritual energy shot forth from the Sovereign Sea. A space warp appeared in front of Mu Chen, which he immediately pointed at.

Dark mysterious lights spread out from the Immortal Page, rising to the sky. A beautiful mandala flower also slowly rose up.

Mu Chen took a deep breath. All of his spiritual energy surged out, then entered into the mandala flower.

Buzz. Buzz.

As Mu Chen injected the spiritual energy into the mandala flower, the petals started to bloom. Mysterious ancient runes then appeared on the petals.

Dong!

As Mu Chen was activating the mysterious mandala flower, shrieking thunder sounds were heard. They were coming from the fierce battle in the distance. The thunder sounds raged even more than before.

Bang! Bang!

Space warps formed in the passing wake of the thunder sounds. The purple flame from Nine Nether's body had been pushed back, causing her to be thrown backward quite some distance.

"Crap!"

Nine Nether gritted her teeth and bawled. She had never expected the Formless Lightning Python to be so powerful. Add to that the topographical advantage, and it was even more powerful.

After exchanging blows with it, Nine Nether knew that she would not be able to suppress the Netherworld Thunder Heart, at least not based on her strength alone.

It seems like I have to retreat and get myself a powerful helper in the Daluo Territory.

This thought flashed across Nine Nether's mind. However, she was only on good terms with a handful of the top powers in the Daluo Territory. The Condor King was busy with the Battle of Conquest, so he would not be able to help her.

"Nine Nether, move back!"

As Nine Nether was getting anxious, she suddenly heard a shout from behind her. It was Mu Chen's voice.

Nine Nether was stunned. She did not know why Mu Chen had gotten himself involved in this level of fighting. But, as she trusted him, she immediately flapped the wings and retreated.

As she retreated, a huge mandala flower in a dark purple light flew past her. It then hung on top of the Formless Lightning Python.

The mandala flower slightly slanted itself. Its pistil was aimed directly at the Formless Lightning Python, which was beneath it.

Swish! Swish!

As the mandala flower slanted itself, the Formless Lightning Python that had been emotionless before, now suddenly shrieked out irritable thunder sounds. The roaring thunder sounds swirled toward the mandala flower.

Bang!

As the thunder sounds reached the dark purple light of the mandala flower, they suddenly died down.

Swoosh!

The beautiful petals bloomed, while dark purple lights shot down in a beam. They covered the Formless Lightning Python, causing a strange power to burst forth. The Formless Lightning Python then began to drift

toward the mandala flower.

Boom! Boom!

The Formless Lightning Python, realizing that it was in danger, then began to struggle fiercely. A terrifying Netherworld Thunder Heart burst out and created a severe space warp.

Small cracks began to show on the dark purple lights that were covering the Formless Lightning Python. It struggled vigorously.

Seeing this scene, Mu Chen's face changed. This was his last resort. If the Immortal Page was unable to seal up the Netherworld Thunder Heart, he would have to give up. Given his current spiritual energy, he could only activate the mandala flower to this level.

"Crap!"

Mu Chen gritted his teeth and bawled. However, just as he was at his wits end, a cold hand landed on the back of his hand. Nine Nether said, "Use my spiritual energy!"

Boom!

Mu Chen's body shivered, as a powerful spiritual energy flooded into it. Then, as it spread, all of the limbs and bones in his body were filled with the spiritual energy!

Chapter 732: Broken stone Tablet

Boom!

Vast majestic spiritual energy entered Mu Chen's body and filled every part of him. The spiritual energy that Nine Nether had passed on to him was obviously more powerful than his.

Generally speaking, people abstained from directly infusing spiritual energy into another person's body. No matter how tough a person's physique was, internally, the body was fragile. If one started to falter when the spiritual energy entered the body, the energy could snap the body's meridians.

However, there were no barriers between Mu Chen and Nine Nether. They were bonded by bloodline and were bound together for good or ill. They had complete trust in each other.

When Nine Nether's majestic spiritual energy entered Mu Chen's body, he formed a seal with his hands without hesitation. Spiritual energy surged out from his body and flooded into the mandala flower.

Buzz.

The help that the mandala flower received was like a divine help. The flower expanded, and the mysterious petals became more beautiful. Under the dark purple light, it quickly turned bright. The cracks created by the Formless Lightning Python disappeared completely.

Dong! Dong!

The Formless Lightning Python struggled hard, but this time around, it was unable to have any impact on the dark purple beam that appeared seemingly weak. Its huge body slowly and steadily flew toward the mandala flower.

Mu Chen looked at the Formless Lightning Python moving closer to the mandala flower and heaved a sigh of relief. He changed the seal, and the Formless Lightning Python was completely engulfed in the pistil. The beautiful petals started to close up, and mysterious ancient runes shot

forth and shone on the Formless Lightning Python.

Swish. Swish.

The runes seemed seared onto the body of the Formless Lightning Python, and it let out a cry. The body started to melt and ultimately, it turned into a formless lightning egg and rested quietly on the pistil.

A broken stone tablet stood beside the lightning egg.

"This thing is powerful." When Nine Nether saw it, she was shocked. After exchanging blows with the Formless Lightning Python, she was well aware of its power. However, it had been put back to its original form by the mandala flower.

"The mandala flower has the power to seal things up. Things can go on so smoothly because the Netherworld Thunder Heart does not have a real form, and it is afraid of the power of the mandala flower." Mu Chen smiled. As he waved his hand, the mandala flower flew down and hung before him. He took a look at the Netherworld Thunder Heart that had turned into a lightning egg before shifting his gaze to the broken stone tablet.

Nine Nether had mentioned before that the stone tablet had recorded the Supreme Heart Demon Chant. Although Mu Chen had not heard of this, if it could cause Nine Nether to be taken aback, it must be extraordinary.

Mu Chen waved his sleeve, and the broken stone tablet flew out and stood before him. The stone tablet looked run-down. Ancient text appeared indistinctly on the stone tablet and emitted a strange oppression.

Mu Chen looked at the top of the stone tablet that was covered with ancient text. It was the Supreme Heart Demon Chant... However, as the stone tablet was broken, it became incomplete.

"Is the Supreme Heart Demon Chant so powerful?" Mu Chen asked Nine Nether.

"Have you heard of Lightning God Palace?"

Mu Chen was shocked and nodded. He was no longer a greenhorn and had some knowledge about the Great Thousand World. Lightning God Palace was a well-known powerful force in the Great Thousand World.

"Lightning God Palace passed on from the Primordial Lightning Palace. In the Primordial Age, the Heart Demon Lightning Emperor was from the Primordial Lightning Palace. According to what I know, the Supreme Heart Demon Chant was Lightning God Palace's Super Power to quell the Palace," Nine Nether said.

"Quell the Palace? Super Power?" Mu Chen picked up the last two words. He was excited. If it was a Super Power, it was not a Divine Technique!

In the Great Thousand World, the mysterious Super Power was above Divine Technique. However, this level of skills was too powerful and way beyond the reach of an ordinary Sovereign.

Whenever a Super Power existed, many Sovereign masters would fight over it. The Supreme Demon Heart Chant was the Super Power to quell the Palace, thus it must be powerful and important.

"In the Lightning God Palace, only a handful of people are qualified to cultivate the Supreme Heart Demon Chant. It is a pity that it is incomplete. I think it can now only reach the level of Near Perfection Divine Art," Nine Nether said with disappointment.

"At the level of Near Perfection Divine Art?" Upon hearing this, Mu Chen smiled and said, "It is enough for me. This is what I need."

If the Supreme Heart Demon Chant was complete, he would not be able to cultivate it given his current strength. It was a good thing that it was incomplete.

Nine Nether stared at him, and found him annoying and amusing at the same time.

"The Supreme Heart Demon Chant is formidable because when one has successfully cultivated it, he can enter into the Heart Demon State." Nine Nether looked at the broken stone tablet and turned grave.

"Heart Demon State?" Mu Chen was stunned.

"This is a formidable state whereby one will not be disturbed by the outside world. The person will have total control, and every spiritual energy and power in his body will be activated to its optimum. To a certain extent, you can say that once one enters into the Heart Demon State, he becomes a fighting machine. His combat force increases tremendously as well," Nine Nether slowly said.

"The Prince of Lightning God Palace was halfway into the realm of Heavenly Sovereign. Once he enters completely into the Heart Demon State, he will be able to reach a powerful level comparable to the Heavenly Sovereign."

Mu Chen gasped upon hearing this. Although he was far from the realm, he could feel that there was a big gap in between. Since the Prince of Lightning God Palace was able to use it against a Heavenly Sovereign, it had proven its power. It was understandable why it could be the Super Power to quell the Palace.

"I am so lucky," Mu Chen said covetously. He had a good harvest. Not only had he gained the Netherworld Thunder Heart, he had gained an incomplete invincible Super Power.

"Before you cultivate the Supreme Heart Demon Chant, you must master the Netherworld Thunder Heart. It is better that you first merge with the Netherworld Thunder Heart."

Nine Nether threw a wet blanket on Mu Chen. "Don't think that it is easy to merge with the Netherworld Thunder Heart. When you merged with the Unperishable Flame previously, it did not show its power because we are bonded. However, the Netherworld Thunder Heart will not show you any mercy."

Mu Chen frowned and then said with a smile, "We have spent so much effort in obtaining the Netherworld Thunder Heart. No matter how tough it will be, I will definitely be able to tame it!"

Nine Nether held up her thumb and said, "You've got guts." Although she was smiling, she was looking forward more to seeing the terrible fix that Mu Chen would be in.

Mu Chen glanced at Nine Nether and became serious. He knew that it was not easy to refine the Netherworld Thunder Heart. However, that was not a good reason to give up.

Hoof.

Mu Chen took a deep breath and moved his body. He appeared in the pistil of the mandala flower and sat cross-legged in it. He waved his hand and the lightning egg, which was about the size of a head, fell into his hand.

The lightning egg remained formless. However, when Mu Chen held it in his hand, he could sense the sharp thunder sound roaring out from the seal. It caused the spiritual energy in his body to vibrate.

"It is still so violent after it has been sealed."

Mu Chen frowned and then nodded at Nine Nether with a smile.

Nine Nether moved back but she continued to fix her gaze on Mu Chen. She had planned to intervene should things get out of hand. She had no qualms about destroying the Netherworld Thunder Heart should there be a need.

"Be careful." Nine Nether warned him.

Mu Chen nodded and closed his eyes. He crossed his palms, with the formless lightning egg hanging quietly between them.

White smoke shot out of his mouth. He pressed his palms together and hit the lightning egg hard. A horrifying power raged out, and cracks appeared on the lightning egg.

Bang!

The lightning egg exploded, and formless lightning swirled out. It then turned into a thunderstorm and engulfed Mu Chen within. The formless lightning flooded into his body.

The Sovereign Sea.

In the vast Sovereign Sea, dreadful waves were surging, and the spiritual energy was raging. Clusters of purple fire appeared on the sea's surface.

Mu Chen's spirit also appeared on the sea's surface, and he stepped on the waves. When he lifted his head, he saw that in the space above the Sovereign Sea, severe space warps started to form. The space warps broke out, and formless lightning covered the heaven and the earth. The lightning tore the Sovereign Sea apart as it landed on the sea's surface.

Crackle! Crackle!

The purple fire on the Sovereign Sea started to burn up as it sensed danger. Mu Chen's spirit was within the purple flame, and formless lightning reflected in his eyes.

He immediately held his palms closely together.

This is my territory. Whether you are a dragon or a tiger, you had better behave yourself!

The purple fire surged, and it seemed to go against the majestic lightning.

Chapter 733: Unperishable Flame on the Right Hand and Heart Demon on the Left

The space above the Sovereign Sea tore apart, as formless lightning whizzed down. Thunder sounds roared and resounded in the Sovereign Sea, causing boisterous waves. It felt almost like it was the destruction of the entire world.

As Mu Chen looked at the scene before him, he turned grave. The formless lightning kept falling, like meteorites, into the Sovereign Sea.

Plop! Plop!

Vast spiritual energy surged like billowing waves. Wherever the Netherworld Thunder Heart fell, the purple spiritual energy would melt and become formless. The sparks of purple fire died out, fizzling under the attack of the formless lightning.

The Sovereign Sea, which had previously been filled with purple lights, suddenly filled with all different colors within a short span of time. All of these changes were direct results of the attack of the Netherworld Thunder Heart.

Judging from the looks of it, the Netherworld Thunder Heart and the unperishable flame obviously did not seem to get along well with each other. The friction made sense, as both of them were highly unusual and belonged to different classes. Hence, it was quite impossible for them to get along with each other and share the same space.

Mu Chen sighed helplessly. He could sense even more trouble coming his way...

Boom! Boom!

The Netherworld Thunder Heart landed with great force, and its attacks were fierce. Formless colors speedily spread throughout the vast Sovereign Sea. In the face of the sudden aggressive attacks from the Netherworld Thunder Heart, the unperishable flame kept retreating and subsiding.

As the two powers kept coming into contact with each other in the Sovereign Sea, the attacks continued incessantly. However, with each attack, the two powers gradually merged more and more into the spiritual energy.

This was Mu Chen's Sovereign Sea. If either power was to successfully triumph over the other, it would have to depend on the spiritual energy. The more they merged into the spiritual energy, the more powerful they would become, and thus, would then have the upper-hand.

This situation was exactly what Mu Chen had wanted. He had to wait for the Netherworld Thunder Heart to merge into the spiritual energy in order for him to balance the two powers' strengths. In this way, he would have control over them.

He waited for 10 days for this to happen. Within those 10 days, the Netherworld Thunder Heart continued to expand in the Sovereign Sea. On the last day, it had taken over half of the Sovereign Sea and settled its boundary dispute with the unperishable flame.

The expansion of the Netherworld Thunder Heart had come to a deadlock. After all, the unperishable flame was no weakling. After it had resisted the attack of the Netherworld Thunder Heart, it managed to hold its ground and prevent the Netherworld Thunder Heart from going beyond its boundary.

Mu Chen's spirit was now in the air. As he floated, he looked down at the Sovereign Sea. Half of the Sovereign Sea was purple and the other half had already become formless. The two different shades of color made a clear distinction between the two in the Sovereign Sea.

As the two colors came into contact with each other, brutal attacks took place. The purple flame and the formless lightning clashed together, releasing deafening sounds of battle. As the strong waves with two different colors fell upon each other, it seemed to cause the entire Sovereign Sea to quiver.

Mu Chen frowned upon seeing that the Sovereign Sea had been separated. The two powers had each conquered half of it. This meant that

his spiritual energy would now be split. So, if he activated the spiritual energy that had been merged with the unperishable flame, the spiritual energy that had merged with the Netherworld Thunder Heart would not act according to his wish! And vice versa!

In this way, not only would his strength not be enhanced, his spiritual energy would actually be weakened. According to what he could see from the earlier attacks, if he did not control it now, he would all lose control over it, to the point to where it might even turn against him! In the end, no matter what, he would suffer.

Mu Chen was certain that the only way to let the two powers get together was to let the Sovereign Sea explode. However, given his current strength level, he was unable to accomplish this at the moment.

"Since I am unable to let the two come together, I can only control them separately for the time being."

Mu Chen was smart, however, quickly thinking of an alternate way. His eyes glittered after pondering for a while, then he muttered, "In this case, the unperishable flame and the Netherworld Thunder Heart will have to accept each other."

Mu Chen decided that he had to stop the two spiritual energies from being on the offensive. If not, he would have no peace. This was not an easy task, as the unperishable flame and the Netherworld Thunder Heart were not weaklings. And, if they did meet, they would keep fighting fiercely with each other, as there cannot be two tigers on one mountain!

"Two tigers on one mountain?"

Mu Chen's eyes glittered at the challenge of this idea. He had to believe that it was not impossible for these two "tigers" to live together. He had to stay put in the mountain and place something that could suppress the two tigers, so that there would be a balance between the two.

What could he use to suppress the two tigers? Although the Immortal Page was powerful, it was not suitable for this situation. So, what could he use?

Mu Chen stood in the air, deep in thought. He was definitely facing a dilemma. If he could solve this problem, he would be able to control the two different powerful spiritual energies. However, if he was unable to solve it, he would not dare fight with the others.

Boom! Boom!

As Mu Chen was pondering all of these things, the vast spiritual energy of the unperishable flame and the Netherworld Thunder Heart in the Sovereign Sea continued to attack each other. As the battle raged, the spiritual energy that Mu Chen had painstakingly cultivated was being used up at an alarming rate.

Sparks from both the purple fire and the formless lightning reflected in his eyes. After a while, Mu Chen suddenly squinted his eyes. He had remembered that there was something that he could use to suppress the two powers!

Mu Chen smiled and formed a seal. A humming noise resounded in the Sovereign Sea. Then, a huge Pagoda slowly appeared in the sky.

The huge Pagoda was the only item that Mu Chen's mother had given him. Mu Chen trusted in its power, but he was unable to bring its power into full play. However, it should still be able to suppress the two tigers in the Sovereign Sea.

As Mu Chen looked at the huge black mysterious Pagoda, he flicked his fingers. The Pagoda whizzed down, and a huge shadow landed heavily on the dividing line between the two spiritual energies.

Swish. Swish.

When the huge Pagoda pressed down, dark lights shot out along the dividing line. Within seconds, the two spiritual energies had separated themselves.

The dark lights isolated the two spiritual energies, and instantly, the contact points calmed down. The huge Pagoda had suppressed the aggressive attacks!

Mu Chen was elated! He had never expected the huge Pagoda to suppress the two powers to such an extent! It had settled the problem like it was a piece of cake!

The huge Pagoda stood quietly on the surface of the Sovereign Sea. The dark lights from it now separated the two spiritual energies.

In the future, Mu Chen would only need to infuse his spiritual energy into the huge Pagoda, which would then automatically spread out the spiritual energy into the two powers, thus maintaining a balance.

Mu Chen heaved a sigh of relief. It had been unexpectedly smooth sailing to merge the Netherworld Thunder Heart. However, he knew that, without the huge Pagoda, he would not have been able to accomplish this within such a short span of time.

Mu Chen's spirit looked at the now calm Sovereign Sea with satisfaction. Then, his spirit gradually disappeared. The Sovereign Sea had become even more splendid and powerful.

...

Nine Nether sat cross-legged near Mu Chen amid the depths of the dark lightning sea. She kept looking at Mu Chen with anxiety and worry.

Mu Chen had been in his present state for more than 10 days, and he still was showing no signs of snapping out of it. The Netherworld Thunder Heart that had engulfed Mu Chen had disappeared upon entering his body.

Although he looked calm, Nine Nether knew that the Sovereign Sea in his body must be in significant turmoil. However, she could not be of any help to Mu Chen. He would have to handle this himself.

Nine Nether grasped her fists and gritted her teeth. She reminded herself not to get too tense. However, even after half a day of meditation, she found that she could not take it anymore and suddenly stood up.

As she was standing up, she saw Mu Chen's eyeballs moving. Then, very slowly, he opened his eyes.

Nine Nether was elated. She hurried to his side and asked, "How are you?"

She could not tell from Mu Chen's expression whether or not he had succeeded. Mu Chen lifted up his head and smiled calmly at Nine Nether with confidence. He stood up and placed both of his hands together.

Swish!

As he did this, his right hand surged with spiritual energy that was burning with a purple flame. On his left land, a transparent spiritual energy appeared. A thunder sound seemed to transmit from the transparent spiritual energy.

She now could see clearly....The unperishable flame was in his right hand and the Heart Demon was in his left! The two different spiritual energies surged in Mu Chen's hands. Although Nine Nether had been very composed before, she could no longer hide her excitement.

He is truly amazing!

Chapter 734: Molding the Nine Nether Troop

Purple flame and formless lightning rose from Mu Chen's hands. There were two different colors reflected in his eyes. He was filled with joy.

He had successfully merged the Netherworld Thunder Heart!

Nine Nether looked at it with joy as well. She smiled at Mu Chen and said, "Congratulations! You have succeeded."

She had thought that there was no harm in trying. She knew that it was tough to make the two different spiritual energies exist together in the Sovereign Sea. However, this was a pleasant surprise. From the time she knew Mu Chen, he had continuously done things to surprise others.

"I am lucky," Mu Chen said with a smile. If he had not possessed the huge Pagoda, he did not know when he could have possibly suppressed the two aggressive spiritual energies.

"However, you have not completely merged the two together." Nine Nether noticed immediately that the two spiritual energies were out of tune with each other. They had not merged completely.

Mu Chen nodded helplessly. He knew that once the two spiritual energies were in tune with each other, the power would move up one level. However, given his current strength, he was unable to merge them.

"It is all right. This is sufficient for you for the time being," Nine Nether said with a smile.

Mu Chen had merged the Netherworld Thunder Heart with the intention to perfect the Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art. He had the power of the two, thus he would be able to bring out the Near Perfection Divine Art to the best of his ability.

Mu Chen nodded in agreement. It was already a great gain for him to be able to merge the Netherworld Thunder Heart. He must not be too greedy. He believed that as his strength increased, one day he would be able to

merge the two spiritual energies.

"You have the prerequisites to cultivate it now." Nine Nether pointed at the broken stone tablet and looked at it with envy.

She had long heard of the Supreme Heart Demon Chant. She was tempted now that she had seen it, but she was fully aware that it was not compatible with her. She was different from Mu Chen. The Unperishable Flame was in her bloodline. If she tried to merge the Netherworld Thunder Heart just like Mu Chen had, she might explode.

She was envious, but she did not covet it. She knew that as long as she could cultivate the Unperishable Flame to its optimum, it would be as powerful as the Supreme Heart Demon.

Mu Chen turned to look at the broken stone tablet. His eyes radiated interest. However, he was not in a hurry to study it. He asked Nine Nether, "How long have I been cultivating?"

Nine Nether counted and said, "We have been here for about two weeks."

Mu Chen pondered and asked, "We have disappeared for two weeks. Will there be any problem with the Battle of Conquest?"

"Don't worry. Don't underestimate Daluo Territory. Although the Hundred Battle Territory is powerful, it is not as powerful as us. Moreover, we have captured the Thunder Magic Sect, and this is a great accomplishment. It is reasonable for us to take a rest," Nine Nether said with a smile.

Upon hearing this, Mu Chen nodded. He waved his sleeve and put the broken stone tablet away. He said, "Let's go. We need to find out how Nine Nether Troop is doing."

Two weeks ago, he had passed the Thunder God Physique to the Nine Nether Troop. He wondered how many of them had successfully cultivated it with the help of the topographical advantage.

He darted out. He turned into a shadow and tore the dark lightning apart.

Nine Nether looked at him and smiled. As she was about to make a move, she looked curiously at the dark lightning sea. She had indistinctly sensed a strange fluctuation deep in it.

However, the fluctuation was extremely weak, and Nine Nether had indistinctly noticed it. When she tried to feel it again, there was dead silence. She was puzzled and shook her head. She then quickly caught up with Mu Chen.

After the two had left, deep down in the lightning sea, it was gloomy. Something seemed to be rippling.

...

Mu Chen and Nine Nether traveled in great speed. After half a day, the lightning sea in the Thunder Magic Abyss tore apart. Two shadows shot up from the Thunder Magic Abyss like streamers.

Boom! Boom!

Not long after they shot up out of the lightning sea, a violent thunder sound was heard somewhere from above. Earthly Demonic Lightning sprang out of the abyss like pythons.

About 1,000 people were sitting cross-legged on the places where the Earthly Demonic Lightning struck. They were like rocks and simply allowed the Earthly Demonic Lightning to attack them. Although some of them had turned dark, they gritted their teeth and bore the Earthly Demonic Lightning's attack.

These were the soldiers from the Nine Nether Troop who were cultivating the Thunder God Physique.

Mu Chen and Nine Nether stood in the air and watched the spectacular scene. They were pleased to see that almost half of the Nine Nether Troop had successfully cultivated the Thunder God Physique.

Some of them had cultivated it to the Mono Rune Lightning Physique. A few masters like Qiu Shan, who were at the Sovereign-level, had made rapid progress. They had triple lightning runes on their chest.

When Nine Nether and Mu Chen appeared, Qiu Shan and those who were more powerful sensed them and opened their eyes. As they were about to stand up to salute them, Nine Nether stopped them.

"How is the progress?" Mu Chen asked.

"Commander, 513 of us have reached the Mono Rune level. Ninety-eight have reached the Diplo Rune level, and the three of us have reached the Triple Rune level."

Mu Chen nodded slightly. He was pleased with the progress. The Nine Nether Troop's strength was more powerful than Mu Chen's had been when he was cultivating the Thunder God Physique. With the help of the Thunder Magic Abyss, it was within his expectations to have such progress.

If they continued at this speed, within a year, everyone in the Nine Nether Troop would be able to reach the Ennea Rune Lightning Physique. Their combat force would take everyone by surprise.

However, the Battle of Conquest had not yet ended. Mu Chen had a premonition that there would be more intense battles coming up. He needed all the soldiers in Nine Nether Troop to cultivate the Thunder God Physique to the Mono Rune level.

Seeing Mu Chen's look, Nine Nether knew what he was thinking and said, "We have two weeks to rest and reorganize the Troop."

"I will stay here for two weeks," Mu Chen said decisively.

"All right. I will hold the fort at the Thunder Magic Sect in case there is unrest due to my absence," Nine Nether said with a smile. The Thunder Magic Sect was rich in resources, and many people were eyeing it. Tang Bing would not be able to handle it alone, so Nine Nether could not go missing for too long.

Mu Chen nodded, and Nine Nether immediately set out. She turned into a streamer and darted out of the Thunder Magic Abyss.

After Nine Nether left, Mu Chen turned around and sat cross-legged in the air. He looked around and said to all the soldiers in a deep voice, "If

you wish to cultivate your physique, there is no shortcut to it. If you want to have more power, you need to put in more effort. I will activate all the Earthly Demonic Lightning to attack you. Will you be able to take it?"

"Yes!" all the soldiers in Nine Nether Troop shouted with determination.

Mu Chen was pleased when he saw it. He looked serious and clenched his fist. The spiritual energy that was merged with the Netherworld Thunder Heart surged out. As he waved his sleeve, the spiritual energy burst out and covered the area.

Boom! Boom!

Formless spiritual energy raged out, and the Earthly Demonic Lightning that was hidden in the cliff also rushed out. It had been violent, but at this moment, it was shivering. It dared not come into contact with Mu Chen's spiritual energy.

The Netherworld Thunder Heart was more powerful than the Earthly Demonic Lightning, thus the Earthly Demonic Lightning was fearful of it.

Boom! Boom!

The Nine Nether Troop looked at the scene in shock. The ferocious Earthly Demonic Lightning had turned mild in Mu Chen's hands and allowed him to direct it wherever he wanted.

The expressions of the Nine Nether Troop soon changed. Dark lightning surged from all directions, causing invisibility. It then poured down mercilessly onto the Nine Nether Troop, engulfing them.

When Mu Chen saw it, he smiled flatly. There was no shortcut to cultivating one's physique. The only way was to go through hardship, which he had gone through. He would use the same method on the Nine Nether Troop.

In the next two weeks, he wanted the entire Nine Nether Troop to have successfully cultivated the Thunder God Physique. In this way, they could then bring their fighting spirit to another level!

Mu Chen let out a breath. He looked at the violent lightning and

pondered for a while. As he waved his sleeve, the broken stone tablet appeared before him. As the Nine Nether Troop was cultivating the Thunder God Physique, he could study the Supreme Heart Demon Chant to see how powerful it was...

Chapter 735: Seed of the Heart Demon

The violent thunder continually reverberated out from the Thunder Magic Abyss.

Boom! Boom!

It had not even stopped for a moment. About a thousand people sat cross-legged in the sky, while dark lightning prowled around like a python. These people sat quietly, like rocks, and allowed the Earthly Demonic Lightning to attack them.

They formed the same seals with their hands. Then, dark lightning entered into their bodies through their pores, refining their bodies and bones.

Mu Chen sat cross-legged in the air a few hundred meters away from them. He did not close his eyes, but stretched forth one of his palms, which held the broken stone tablet that had been reduced to a smaller size.

He blinked and then shut his eyes. After a few moments, he then slowly opened his eyes, in a daze. He stared at the stone tablet in shock.

Other than helping the Nine Nether Troop to train and build their physiques, Mu Chen had spent the rest of his time focusing on the Supreme Heart Demon Chant that was recorded in the broken stone tablet. After studying for a few days, he had gained a basic understanding of it. It was just as Nine Nether had said, the Supreme Heart Demon Chant that was recorded in the stone tablet was incomplete.

The Heart Demon State that Nine Nether had mentioned existed as well. However, the Heart Demon State was separated into three realms: Small Heart Demon State, Big Heart Demon State, and Perfect Heart Demon State.

Nine Nether had mentioned that the Prince of Lightning God Palace had cultivated the Supreme Heart Demon to its Perfect realm. If he had not done so, it would be impossible for him to be an even match against a

Heavenly Sovereign, given that he was only halfway into the Heavenly Sovereign-level.

For the incomplete Supreme Heart Demon Chant, even if one cultivated it all the way, he could only reach the Big Heart Demon State. One would need the complete Supreme Heart Demon Chant to reach the Perfect realm.

Given Mu Chen's current strength, even if he had the complete version, he would not be able to cultivate it. Thus, he did not this to be any great loss. Plus, he was already having enough problems with the two realms.

This is crazy...

Mu Chen thought of the ancient information that was in his mind. He let out a long sigh and looked a bit strange. He had figured that, in order to cultivate the Heart Demon State, it would require the honing of many abnormal skills.

He would first need to cultivate the Seed of the Heart Demon. For this, he would have to use the Netherworld Heart Thunder to attack his heart, letting its power flow into his heart. It would then gather slowly in his heart, until it turned into the Seed of the Heart Demon!

To many people, this method of cultivation was similar to a person getting himself killed. This made sense, as the heart was man's weakest area. Even the slightest damage done to it would be a great damage done, and it could kill a person. Hence, no one would dare allow such an overbearing force like the Netherworld Thunder Heart to attack his heart!

Any slight mistake, including the sound of thunder, could cause the heart to explode. Therefore, any ordinary person would not even try to cultivate the Supreme Heart Demon Chant, even if they had the opportunity.

But Mu Chen was no ordinary person. Mu Chen held the stone tablet and licked his lips. He was understandably a bit hesitant. After a while, he made up his mind.

He had promised the girl that he would become a matchless master.

There were many geniuses in this world, and he knew that he would not be able to reach that level based on talent alone.

A true master was fearless. Hence, he would not be afraid of anything!

Mu Chen smiled broadly, and his looks were sharp. He then shut his eyes and activated his mind. The spiritual energy that had merged with the Netherworld Thunder Heart flowed along his meridians. It then rushed out like a current toward his heart.

Splat!

The shrieking thunder sound spread out and echoed in Mu Chen's heart. It caused his internal organs to vibrate. Even the circulation of his blood had been hindered.

Pooh.

Mu Chen threw out a mouthful of blood and looked pale. The veins in his face wriggled and made him look weird. He was breathless. He placed his hand on his chest and bore the sharp pain bravely. However, the thunder sound seemed to be tearing his heart apart.

"Crap." The pain was so unbearable that Mu Chen started to rage. The Supreme Heart Demon Chant was indeed demonic. In fact, it was pure evil. This was the first time that he had encountered such a self-sacrificial cultivation method.

Hoof.

Mu Chen gasped for breath. His body gradually began to calm down. He gritted his teeth, then activated the Netherworld Thunder Heart again.

Pooh...

In the dark Thunder Magic Abyss, a youth kept spewing out fresh blood, but he seemed to be enjoying it. This scene looked so strange, that some of the soldiers of Nine Nether Troop were shocked to see it. However, they dared not say anything. Instead, they quickly shut their eyes and continued their cultivations.

Mu Chen spent almost two weeks cultivating the Supreme Heart Demon Chant, spewing blood and allowing himself to be struck by the Netherworld Thunder Heart. During this same time, Mu Chen and Nine Nether Troop had been cultivating in the Thunder Magic Abyss for a month. In this one month, the Battle of Conquest, which had been instigated by the Daluo Territory, had become more and more vigorous.

The Daluo Territory was, after all, the top force in the North Territory of the Tianluo Continent. Its strength was much stronger than that of the Hundred Battle Territory. After the war had started, the Hundred Battle Territory had unsurprisingly been on the losing end. Although they had been brave and attempted to fight back, they were ultimately unable to change the overall situation.

However, the Hundred Battle Territory would not be pushed around. As their line of defense continued to retreat, they gathered together, becoming more powerful. Thus, the attack by the Daluo Territory had at least been slowed down. Thus, they were not able to completely crush the Hundred Battle Territory like before.

In the face of such a situation, the Daluo Territory started to conserve its power, no longer using it loosely. The top levels in the Daluo Territory were well aware that the core of the Hundred Battle Territory was the Valley of Ten Thousand Swords, the Demonic Corpse Sect, and the Sorrowful Sky.

Ever since the battle started, these three forces had not acted. Only if the three forces were defeated, would the Hundred Battle Territory be completely annihilated.

The Daluo Territory started to conserve its power and was getting ready to beat the three forces down. Once they were finished with this war, the Daluo Territory would be famous!

As the Daluo Territory was attacking the Hundred Battle Territory, the three forces were gathering their power as well. They were fully prepared to fight the Daluo Territory.

As all of this was happening, many people in the North Territory were

watching, as the Daluo Territory and the Hundred Battle Territory were reputable there. Hence, the outcome of their final battle would have a great impact upon the North Territory.

And the audience wasn't just limited to the North Territory. In fact, before the final war started, people from all over were watching with intensity.

Ignoring the outside world's commotion over the final war, Mu Chen continued to sit quietly in the Thunder Magic Abyss. His body would shiver now and then, and his face would twitch. These were two direct results of the attack on his heart by the Netherworld Thunder Heart.

However, he was feeling much better now. He seemed to have adapted himself to the attacks and the spewing of blood whenever the Netherworld Thunder Heart struck his heart.

Mu Chen's body shivered for a while, before he opened his eyes and let out a breath. He felt a little tired, and rubbed his forehead.

He had been badly tortured during this period of time. Obviously, the crappy Supreme Heart Demon Chant was not meant for humans!

After having suffered so much, Mu Chen had at least seen some results. Although he was unable to condense the Seed of the Heart Demon, he could feel the power of the Netherworld Thunder Heart gathering in his heart. As long as he continued to cultivate it, he would be able to condense the Seed of the Heart Demon.

Mu Chen patted his chest lightly, then lifted up his head to look at the Nine Nether Troop. He raised his brows, for he saw that lightning runes were looming on the chest of all the soldiers of the Nine Nether Troop.

Some had more runes and some had less. Qiu Shan and the others, who were more powerful, had Quadra Runes on them. This revealed that they were progressing extremely fast.

However, Mu Chen knew that their cultivation of the Thunder God Physique would start to slow down. They still had a long way to go, before they could reach the Ennea Rune Lightning Physique. For the moment,

what they had cultivated was good enough.

Mu Chen stood up and waved his sleeve. The Earthly Demonic Lightning that had attacked the Nine Nether Troop immediately disappeared, fleeing to hide in the cliff.

The soldiers of Nine Nether Troop opened their eyes. Dark lightning filled the areas around their pupils.

"Congratulations," Mu Chen said with a smile. "You have successfully cultivated the Lightning God Physique."

Swoosh!

Nine Nether Troop stood up and knelt down on one knee. Their voices were in unison, which caused the thunder sound in the Thunder Magic Abyss to pause.

"Thank you, Commander!"

Mu Chen waved his hand. He could feel the vigor of the Nine Nether Troop. He was happy to see that his efforts had not gone down the drain.

It is about time to leave this place. Mu Chen thought to himself.

The next moment, Nine Nether's voice rung in his ears. "Get ready to leave. The Daluo Territory and the Hundred Battle Territory are about to have their final battle."

Chapter 736: Three Thousand Swordsmen

In the main hall of the Thunder Magic Sect.

"So far, we have captured almost half of the territory."

A Spiritual Energy Screen was spread out in the main hall. Nine Nether pointed at the map of the battling territory. Almost half of it had been taken over by Daluo Territory. One could imagine that within one month, both parties must have had multiple wars.

As Mu Chen looked at the screen, he could indistinctly smell the scent of blood. For every city that had been captured, there was bloodshed and killing. War was brutal and without mercy.

This was not the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy.

"The real war starts now," Nine Nether said calmly.

Mu Chen, Tang Bing, and the other top powers of Nine Nether Palace nodded and looked grave. The three top forces in the Hundred Battle Territory had not acted during this period. If they had, Daluo Territory would not have been able to capture part of the territory so quickly.

"In the Valley of Ten Thousand Swords, are there any movements from the Demonic Corpse Sect and Sorrowful Sky?" Mu Chen asked. Since the line of defense had shrunk tremendously, the three top forces would not possibly continue to forbear it. Otherwise, the other forces in the Hundred Battle Territory would be unhappy with them.

"According to the latest information, all the people of the Valley of Ten Thousand Swords, Demonic Corpse Sect, and Sorrowful Sky are gathering at this place." Nine Nether squinted and pointed at the map. It was the most sophisticated line of defense in the Hundred Battle Territory.

"Battle City."

Mu Chen stared at the city on the map. He had heard that it was an important strategic city, and the scale was grand. It had been controlled by three forces. At this moment, it was the best line of defense in the Hundred Battle Territory.

Even Daluo Territory found it knotty in the face of such an important strategic city.

Nine Nether turned grave and said, "The masters and other powerful people of the Valley of Ten Thousand Swords, Demonic Corpse Sect, and Sorrowful Sky will gather here. It will be very powerful.

"The Hundred Battle Territory has challenged us to the final war. The entire North Territory is watching us. Any retreat or sign of weakness will tarnish our reputation."

"Challenged us to the final war?" Mu Chen turned pale. The Hundred Battle Territory had the audacity to challenge them to the final war!

"With Tian Xuan Hall secretly helping them, the Hundred Battle Territory has become bold," Nine Nether said with a sneer.

Mu Chen nodded. When the Battle of Conquest had started, the Dominator of Daluo Territory had mentioned that Liu Tiandao of Tian Xuan Hall had been eyeing them, so he could not get himself involved. If Daluo Territory lost such a top power like the Dominator, they would lose their dominant position.

The Hundred Battle Territory had the audacity to challenge Daluo Territory because if they managed to win the war, they could step on Daluo Territory to assume their position. Their reputation would skyrocket.

This would not be an easy battle for Daluo Territory.

"What did the Three Kings say?" Mu Chen asked. The Battle of Conquest was controlled by the Three Kings. Since the Hundred Battle Territory had issued the challenge, the Three Kings would have reacted.

"The Three Kings have commanded all the top powers in Daluo Territory to gather outside the Hundred Battle Territory. War is going on within a thousand miles in the region," Nine Nether said.

Mu Chen nodded. Given Daluo Territory's position, they had to accept the challenge. The upcoming battle would be extremely intense and horrifying.

It would be a fight between the two great powers. The earlier fights would be nothing compared to it.

Mu Chen looked at Nine Nether and asked, "What about us?" Since Daluo Territory had mobilized all the top powers, Nine Nether Palace would not stay out of it.

"Let's go to Battle City!"

Nine Nether stood up without hesitation and waved her hand. Her cold voice resounded in the main hall. As a citizen of Daluo Territory, they would not back down from such a crucial war.

The top powers in Nine Nether Palace cupped their fists and shouted, "Yes!"

Mu Chen lifted his head and looked out of the main hall. In the northwest, the sky was gloomy and filled with warfare.

He could feel his blood pulsing through his veins. He needed such combat, as this would help to sharpen his skills toward the path of being a matchless master.

One day, everyone in Tianluo Continent would know him. By then, he would have fulfilled the promise that he had made to the girl.

Luo Li, wait for me.

...

Battle City.

This was a lofty city that had been passed down from the Primordial Age. It had withstood many fierce battles and continued to stand tall on this piece of land.

The ancient city had once again gone to war.

A great light array in the sky covered the entire city. It looked like a huge bowl that had been turned over. Many shadows darted across it, and powerful spiritual energy fluctuations shot up into the sky.

Outside the city far away, many figures were standing in the air. The

powerful spiritual energy caused distortion in the sky.

Battle City was the battlefront, and it slowly spread out to as far as the eye could see.

Southwest of Battle City.

Although this place was far from Battle City, the war had never stopped for a moment. The two troops had been trying to wipe each other out.

The fight was extremely fierce, and the people involved were no ordinary men. Both troops had strong fighting spirit!

The men on the left had yellow armor that looked like golden armor. They held heavy halberds in their hands. The majestic fighting spirit raged like a tornado in the heavens and the earth.

Gilt patterns were on the golden armor. They were the Kingo Troop that was under the command of Lord Gilt. He was one of the nine Lords in Daluo Territory.

Although the Kingo Troop was not as famous as the Asura Troop, Cracking Mountain Army, Blood Hawk Troop, or other powerful troops, it was quite powerful. It had established splendid records in battles.

However, their current situation did not look too good.

Their opponent was an army in green, holding long swords. A terrifying sword aura raged between the heaven and earth, and caused the sky to be in a devastating state.

They were the Three Thousand Swordsmen from the Valley of Ten Thousand Swords!

They had identified themselves as the Three Thousand Swordsmen through their unique style. The Three Thousand Swordsmen troop was the most powerful troop in the Valley of Ten Thousand Swords. Its combat force was one of the best among those in the Hundred Battle Territory.

The Three Thousand Swordsmen troop was more famous than the Kingo Troop.

Swoosh! Swoosh!

Sword aura covered the sky and weakened the fighting spirit of the Kingo Troop. In the face of the attack by the Three Thousand Swordsmen, the Kingo Troop could only be on the defensive.

Other forces from the two sides were fighting as well, but as the Three Thousand Swordsmen had suppressed the Kingo Troop, the morale of the army from the Valley of Ten Thousand Swords was boosted. On the other hand, the army from Daluo Territory kept retreating.

A figure in green stood in the air above the Three Thousand Swordsmen and said, "Hohoho, Commander Qian Long, your Kingo Troop does not seem to be able to hang on anymore. Why don't you just give up and prevent the unnecessary loss of lives?" He was carrying a long green sword on his back. He looked at the Kingo Troop, who was trying to resist the Three Thousand Swordsmen, and smiled.

He was the commander of the Three Thousand Swordsmen, Lin Qingfeng.

His position was comparable to Xu Qing and Zhou Yue's in Daluo Territory.

A burly man from the Kingo Troop stood in the air and looked at Lin Qingfeng. He gritted his teeth and thought of how unlucky he was. He was just clearing out the remnants, but the Three Thousand Swordsmen suddenly appeared. He knew the power of the Three Thousand Swordsmen. In Daluo Territory, only the Asura Troop led by Xu Qing and the Cracking Mountain Army led by Zhou Yue could defend against it.

It was fortunate that not all of the Three Thousand Swordsmen were present. Otherwise, the Kingo Troop would have already been defeated. Even at this moment, they could only resist the attack.

Qian Long gritted his teeth and shouted, "Lin Qingfeng, don't be too cocky. Our top powers are on their way here. When they arrive, you will see what will become of you!"

"Hohoho, you have reminded me to quickly finish you off," Lin Qingfeng said with a smile. He bent his fingers and pointed in the air. A strong sword aura swirled out and covered the region. It turned into an extremely

huge sword, and its spiritual energy tore the space apart.

When Qian Long saw it, he turned pale. He could sense grave danger. He shouted, "Gilt Divine Shield!"

Boom!

A gilt fighting spirit shot up and turned into a huge golden shield. The golden shield was thick and solid like a mountain.

Swoosh!

The huge sword did not pause for a single moment. It slashed down hard on the golden shield, and a horrifying sword aura burst out.

Crack.

The sword aura raged, and Qian Long's expression changed abruptly. He saw that the golden shield had been cracked by the huge sword.

"Oh no!"

Qian Long turned even more pale. The Kingo Troop would suffer severe losses.

Lin Qingfeng looked calm. As he was about to destroy the Kingo Troop with his huge sword, he suddenly looked stunned. A violent thunder sound resounded in the sky from afar.

Boom!

Dark lightning like a raging dragon shot toward Lin Qingfeng.

Lin Qingfeng frowned. He changed the direction of the huge sword to strike the dark lightning dragon.

Dong!

A spiritual energy windstorm raged out. The top powers were shocked, and they lifted their heads to look at the sky.

"Who is stopping me?" Lin Qingfeng asked. The sharp sword aura spread out and cut the clouds apart. He looked sharply at the sky and saw that it had gradually turned dark.

The thunder sound continued to be heard.

As the thunder sound traveled across the sky, the sound of laughter accompanied it.

"Daluo Territory, Nine Nether Troop from Nine Nether Palace!"

Chapter 737: The Final Battle

Sounds of laughter accompanied the thunder sound, as both echoed throughout the heavens and the earth. The top powers, who were battling in this region, looked at the sky in the distance. The top powers of the Daluo Territory, who had felt dejected after the defeat of the Kingo Troop, suddenly felt hopeful.

"It is the Nine Nether Troop!"

"The men of Nine Nether Palace have finally arrived. I heard that they defeated the Thunder Magic Sect..."

"Great. The sound seems to be coming from Commander Mu Chen. With him around, we need not be afraid of Lin Qingfeng!"

The people were whispering everywhere. The spirits of the Daluo Territory's top powers had all been uplifted. In less than six months, almost all of the top powers knew about the the Nine Nether Troop, which had sprung up in an astounding speed, along with their new commander, Mu Chen.

Lin Qingfeng squinted his eyes to look at the direction where the dark clouds were coming from. The atmosphere was dreadful.

A troop in black armor whizzed toward them with a dark fighting spirit. Indistinctly, violent thunder sounds were heard. The army stood quietly in the sky. The austerity of the entire scene was not to be underestimated.

"Hohoho, is it the Nine Nether Troop from Nine Nether Palace? I have been hearing of you all for a long time now," Lin Qingfeng said with a smile. He squinted his eyes and looked at the black army.

"I have heard how impressive the Three Thousand Swordsmen of the Valley of Ten Thousand Swords is. I can see that you have lived up to your reputation," Mu Chen said with a smile. He appeared above the Nine Nether Troop, looking at Lin Qingfeng.

"You must be the new commander, Mu Chen." Lin Qingfeng stared at Mu Chen, then slowly said, "I have heard that you have not only defeated

the Blood Hawk Troop, but that even the Thunder Magic Congregation has been defeated by you."

Mu Chen smiled. He looked at the unsettled Kingo Troop and said, "Commander Lin, this situation is a mess. Why not leave with your men?"

"Hohoho. Are you planning to save them?" Lin Qingfeng smiled mockingly. He gently tapped on the sword on his back and said, "You can. However, you will be getting yourself into trouble."

Although Lin Qingfeng had heard of the accomplishments of the Nine Nether Troop, he was not afraid of them. After all, he was the Chief Commander of the Valley of Ten Thousand Swords. Only a handful of commanders were on par with him in the entire Hundred Battle Territory. And, although not all of the soldiers of the Three Thousand Swordsmen were present, he was confident and he despised the other commanders.

"Commander Lin is right."

Upon hearing this, Mu Chen nodded with a smile. He knew that, given Lin Qingfeng's reputation in the Hundred Battle Territory, it was impossible to save anyone from his clutches by merely talking. So, since it was useless to talk, he would have to use his fists.

Cold ray gathered in Mu Chen's dark eyes. Without hesitation, he stomped his feet. The Nine Nether Troop, which was now below him, shouted out in unison. A dark fighting spirit shot up to the sky, followed by the sounds of thunder. Nine Nether Troop's fighting spirit was clearly much stronger than it had been a month ago!

Buzz.

When Nine Nether's Fighting Spirit burst out, Lin Qingfeng waved his sleeve. The clashing sounds of swords resounded, and the fighting spirit of the sword aura whizzed out. It was like a windstorm, encircling Lin Qingfeng entirely.

"Commander Mu Chen, if you want to save your men, take a blow from me!" Lin Qingfeng sneered, then formed a seal with his palms.

"Sword sense, Lotus Spirit Sword!"

Swoosh!

Majestic sword aura swept out, then turned into a Sword Lotus. The Sword Lotus blossomed and churned around. Even the space surrounding it had been cut by it.

Although the Sword Lotus did not make a sound, everyone could feel its razor edge. Lin Qingfeng was merciless. The moment he struck, it was obvious that he had used the death blow.

Lin Qingfeng looked flatly at Mu Chen and flicked his fingers. The Sword Lotus shot forth, leaving afterimages in the sky. Its speed was like lightning!

The Sword Lotus speedily magnified in Mu Chen's eyes. However, there was no reaction on his face. He changed the seal, causing the majestic Nine Nether's Fighting Spirit to surge out. It turned into a black fist print, and dark lightning could be seen glittering crazily on it.

"Nine Nether's Fighting Spirit, Nine Nether Lightning Punch!"

Mu Chen threw out a punch, and the black fist print shot forth. It hit hard against the Sword Lotus.

Boom!

The sword aura and the dark fighting spirit that was dazzling with lightning swept out. Space warps were formed and shockwaves raged out. However, the two armies remained immovable.

Many people looked at the battle in the sky. They were shocked. It was obvious that the attacks from the Three Thousand Swordsmen were no match for the Nine Nether Troop.

"The Nine Nether Troop is more powerful than they were before, when they fought with the Blood Hawk Troop." Some of the top powers were sharp. At one glance, they could tell that the Nine Nether Troop had become much more powerful.

"They have a good commander. When they were under Cao Feng, they did not have such vigor."

Commander Qian Long of the Kingo Troop looked at Mu Chen with a complex stare. He had secretly mocked Mu Chen after Mu Chen had become the commander. He did not think that a youth could have adequate ability for such a role.

However, a series of events had happened to cause him to realize his short-sightedness. The Nine Nether Troop, which had been unknown in the Daluo Territory, had started to catch the eyes of many people. The troop was now able to fend off the Three Thousand Swordsmen of Valley of Ten Thousand Swords, which was a highly reputable foe.

"Commander, shall we help?" someone from behind Qian Long asked.

Qian Long shook his head and said, "Lin Qingfeng is no match for Mu Chen. They will not fight."

He could tell that, although Lin Qingfeng was powerful, it would be tough for him to defeat Mu Chen. Unless the Three Thousand Swordsmen came in full force, they would not have a chance to win against Mu Chen.

As Qian Long had expected, Lin Qingfeng looked at the Nine Nether Troop, which had easily countered their attacks, and frowned. He finally smiled, then said, "It seems like what I have heard is true. Commander Mu Chen is amazing."

"Thank you," Mu Chen said with a smile.

"Since Commander Mu Chen has stepped in, I have to show you some respect. I will let the Kingo Troop off today. I hope that when we start our war, Commander Mu Chen can still remain so calm." Lin Qingfeng cupped his fist and smiled. He then waved his sleeve and left with his men.

Mu Chen frowned as he watched the people leave. Lin Qingfeng had lived up to his reputation of being the Chief Commander of the Valley of Ten Thousand Swords. In the short exchange of blows, he could tell that Lin Qingfeng would be a hard nut to crack.

"No wonder the Valley of Ten Thousand Swords had become one of the top forces in the Hundred Battle Territory. They are indeed capable," Mu

Chen muttered. He knew that the upcoming final battle would be earth-shattering.

"Commander Mu Chen, thank you." As Mu Chen was pondering, Qian Long had brought the Kingo Troop along with him to thank Mu Chen.

"You are welcome, Commander Qian Long. We are from the Daluo Territory. We should help one another." Mu Chen cupped his fist and replied. Lord Gilt had been keeping a low profile in the Daluo Territory. Although they would not be grateful to him for having helped them, at the very least, the relationship between Gilt Palace and Nine Nether Palace would improve.

Qian Long, who looked stern, smiled. He was a bit grateful to Mu Chen. He had seen many young talents who were prideful. However, Mu Chen was not proud at all. It was no wonder that Lord Nine Nether thought so highly of him.

"Since Commander Mu Chen is here, should Lord Nine Nether not be here as well? Hohoho, we will need Lord Nine Nether to be here for the final battle," Qian Long said with a smile.

"Yes. She has gone to meet the three kings," Mu Chen nodded and said. Nine Nether was one of the nine Lords, making her among the top powers in the Daluo Territory. Thus, she would naturally be involved in the final battle.

Qian Long nodded. And, as he was about to say something, a deep drumming sound was heard from the distant horizon. The drumming sound was filled with fighting spirit.

"It is the battle drum of the Hundred Battle Territory!" Qian Long said, turning grave.

"What is the matter?" Mu Chen asked.

"The Hundred Battle Territory is about to start the war!" Qian Long exclaimed, then said in a low voice, "Commander Mu Chen, we have to get back to our military base, quickly!"

Mu Chen was a bit shocked. Why is Hundred Battle City so eager to start

the war? Anyway, he had no time to think of this further. He waved his hand and dashed out with Qian Long, the two armies following closely behind.

Two streaks of streamers darted across the horizon like lightning. The ancient deep drumming sound became clearer.

After traveling at full speed for about half an hour, Mu Chen and Qian Long started to slow down. In the distance, they could see that the light barrier that was covering Hundred Battle City had been torn apart. A large number of people swirled out, covering the area like locusts. Even the light from the sky was being blocked by the people.

Facing such a terrifying array, one could only see endless shadows of people. Powerful spiritual energy fluctuations shot up to the sky, the violent nature of which caused the spiritual energy in the heavens and the earth to be heated up.

Two horrifying arrays were in a head-to-head battle. The sky was about to collapse.

As Mu Chen watched the scene, he let out a deep breath. The final battle was indeed astounding...

Chapter 738: Big Shots

In the outer vicinity of the Hundred Battle Territory, the sky looked gloomy. Both armies congregated there. The formidable array of troops marched forward in a mighty formation, as if they were going to blanket the sky and the earth with an impenetrable barricade. Numerous beams of spiritual energy soared up into the sky, stifling the movement of the air around them.

This was a face off between two leviathans.

The moment the war broke out, it would definitely be earth-shaking. Numerous powerhouses would perish in the war, and freshly-spilled blood would bathe the universe in crimson red. Such a horrifying scene would be sufficient to make one's blood run cold.

Mu Chen led the Nine Nether Troop to join the rest of the troops of the Daluo Territory. He peered at the sea of souls in the sky of the Hundred Battle Territory. His expression turned solemn. At this very moment, he finally knew how powerful the Hundred Battle Territory was.

"If this battle were to break out, I'm afraid that we would enter into a state of chaos and darkness," murmured Mu Chen to himself. In order to conquer the Hundred Battle Territory, a price must still be paid, even if they were the almighty Daluo Territory.

"I'm afraid that it won't be that easy to start the war," Tang Bin said softly as she stood beside Mu Chen.

"Hmm?" Mu Chen seized in terror.

"Although the Hundred Battle Territory has made sufficient military preparations for the war, they do not have the courage to die in the name of honor. Had Tian Xuan Hall not incited them surreptitiously, they wouldn't have had the guts to provoke us."

A ray of light glimmered in her beautiful eyes as she smiled. "If this happened during ordinary times, Daluo Territory would still be willing to pay a small price to conquer the Hundred Battle Territory. In fact, we

would quickly recover and become even stronger. However, it is currently not the right time to start the conquest. The Great Hunting Battle is around the corner. If we choose to go to war now, it will not bring us any good news.

"Both parties have no intentions to go all out in this battle. Hence, it is rather difficult to start the war."

Mu Chen looked at the confident Tang Bing and could not help but to pinch the bridge of his nose. "So, the whole invitation for a battle was merely a facade? The Hundred Battle Territory seems to have nothing better to do. Why would they provoke the Daluo Territory?"

"They have probably made a pact with the Tian Xuan Hall," muttered Tang Bing. A smile was immediately plastered on her face again as she said, "However, although we don't have to go all out in this battle, today's fiasco will not end with a breeze as we are under the watchful eyes of one too many people."

Mu Chen nodded. Before he could say anything, three beams of shadow figures emerged from the very front of the Hundred Battle Territory's troops. Numerous powerhouses from the Hundred Battle Territory looked on in awe.

Among the three figures, one of them was an elderly person who was clad in a green robe. He carried a scabbard on his back. He had a cold, stern gaze. It was as if his spiritual energy and sword aura were circulating in his eyes. One could only sweep their eyes over him, but no one dared to look straight into his eyes.

Meanwhile, a scrawny old man clad in a black robe stood beside him. He looked like a bag of bones. At first glance, he even looked like a dried corpse. His whole body was shrouded by cold, gloomy air. It was rather unsettling.

A bald, middle-aged man stood on the right. He looked frail. His placed his hand right in front of him. Although his appearance was rather ordinary, it was if the galaxy were contained in his eyes; they looked extremely mysterious.

As the three of them showed themselves, the spirits of the Hundred Battle Territory were suddenly lifted. Deafening cheers thundered in the air to the point that the sky and ground quaked a little.

"These are the current big shots of the Hundred Battle Territory. The old man in the green robe is the valley owner of the Valley of Ten Thousand Swords. He is known as the Sword-Hiding Elder. He has already achieved Grade Seven Sovereign. Meanwhile, the scrawny old man is the clan leader of the Demonic Corpse Sect, the Old Corpse Ghost... The last person there is the founder of the Giant Sky of Sorrows, the Demonic Sorrow Sovereign. Although he came from the Lower Planes, his abilities are unpredictable. I'm afraid that he might be the most difficult one to read among the three of them," said Tang Bing as her beautiful eyes were fixated on the three figures.

After hearing Tang Bing's final statement, Mu Chen also could not help but to take another glance at the bald, middle-aged man. Although the Lower Planes was a considerably lower tier in comparison to the Great Thousand World, this was precisely why those Lower Planes powerhouses, who were able to break through the social system shackles and come forth to the Great Thousand World, were definitely the cream of the crop. In the present Great Thousand World, the most famous person from the Lower Planes was the Flame Emperor, Martial Ancestor... No one could surpass their success.

The so-called Demonic Sorrow Sovereign who stood before him was actually from the Lower Planes. Plus, he had actually created such an impressive legacy. Such a figure definitely possessed mystical abilities.

Mu Chen nodded slightly. The three big shots were comparable to the three kings of Daluo Territory. Such abilities were considered to be rather powerful already. This explained why they were able to control the Hundred Battle Territory.

"Hehe, my old friends, the three kings. Are you still planning to hide in the dark?" After the three big shots of the Hundred Battle Territory appeared, the scabbard-carrying old man in green chuckled. His laughter pierced everyone's ears in heaven and on earth.

"Hehe, we will meet on the battlefield soon. We might not be able to be friends again."

As the three kings appeared, the spirits of Daluo Territory were equally lifted.

"Hehe, I think the Daluo Territory is making a big fuss over nothing. All we did was snatch some of the cities at the border. I can't believe that the almighty Daluo Territory had to involve so many people to settle such a minor issue." The scrawny corpse-like old man in black cackled hoarsely. His cackles sounded jarring.

"As long as this concerns the reputation of Daluo Territory, it will not be considered a small issue. Since the Hundred Battle Territory had the intention of provoking us, you will all have to pay for the consequences," the Spiritual Pupil King muttered nonchalantly.

As the big shots from both sides were having a conversation, the whole place fell into complete silence, allowing the high and mighty to compete with one another.

"Although Daluo Territory has an impressive reputation, the people of the Hundred Battle Territory are not weaklings who can be stepped on as you like." The Sword-Hiding Elder of the Valley of Ten Thousand Swords smiled. "Plus, if your Dominator chooses to stay on the sidelines, you will never be able to conquer us if you just rely on the powers of your three kings. Hence, I'm thinking that the three of you should just invite your Dominator out onto the battlefield."

The Condor King furrowed his brows slightly. A cold gaze lingered in his eyes.

"It seems like you are desperate to see me." Before the Condor King could say anything, a husky voice suddenly echoed in the air. Following the echoes of the voice, everyone felt an overbearing sense of power descending from the sky. At that very moment, its presence blanketed around 10,000 miles of the area.

Everyone was astounded as they looked at the presence for the first time. Suddenly, blinding bright rays came together right before the three kings.

The rays of light directly transformed into a golden throne. A figure shrouded in brilliant rays sat quietly on it. Although the figure did not look tall or built, numerous powerhouses all over the world were awestruck by its overwhelming presence. No one dared to say a word.

"Greetings, Territory Lord!"

The three kings were also taken aback by the presence of the Dominator. They immediately made their salutations as a sign of respect. Meanwhile, at the back, numerous powerhouses of the Daluo Territory saluted with great respect, creating a staggering, earth-shattering force around them.

In contrast to the intimidating momentum of Daluo Territory, the Hundred Battle Territory fell into immediate silence. The eyes of the powerhouses were filled with fear. They understood that as they stood before the mysterious Dominator of Daluo Territory, even if the Hundred Battle Territory had the support of the three big shots, they did not dare act recklessly.

At that very moment, the Sword-Hiding Elder stiffened in fear, especially when he felt a heartless gaze watching him from the throne. Even with his current abilities, he could still feel chills crawling up his spine.

Although he possessed the abilities of a Grade Seven Sovereign, it was still a far cry from the Dominator of Daluo Territory who already possessed the level of an Earth Sovereign.

"Hehe. The Dominator of Daluo Territory. It has been so long since we have met. How are you?"

However, while the Sword-Hiding Elder's heart was enveloped by an intimidating sense of terror, laughter suddenly rang from the skies.

The space in the skies of the Hundred Battle Territory suddenly ripped apart, and a figure stepped out. The middle-aged man dressed in green carried himself with great elegance. His eyes dazzled like galaxies; everyone could not help but be mesmerized by those dazzling eyes.

He stood there with a gentle smile on his face. However, anyone who

was present could clearly sense the fact that his presence could rival the overwhelming authority of the Dominator from Daluo Territory.

The Sword-Hiding Elder let out a breath of relief when he saw the man in green.

"He is the hall master of Tian Xuan Hall, Liu Tiandao!" said Tang Bing solemnly as she stared at the descending figure whose presence could easily suppress the powerhouses from both parties.

"Is he Liu Tiandao from Tian Xuan Hall?" Mu Chen's heart skipped a beat. His eyes lit up. Liu Ming is his son, right? Would the fellow rage if he knew that I was the culprit who quashed Liu Ming?

"Liu Tiandao, you finally appear." The voice of the Dominator of Daluo Territory, who was still seated on the throne, remained calm. It was evident that the appearance of Liu Tian Dao was in accordance with his predictions.

Liu Tiandao smiled. His galaxy-like eyes were locked on the figure but there was a slight furrow in his brows. Based on the information that he had gotten, the Dominator of Daluo Territory had probably suffered from extremely severe injuries, which explained why he was living the ascetic life for such a long time. Logically speaking, he should be in his weakest state now. Why did he still have the courage to show up?

Or... Could it be that the Dominator of Daluo Territory was actually frail on the inside despite his strong appearance?

A light seemed to flicker in Liu Tiandao's eyes. He immediately raised his palms, and the spiritual auras from within the world started coming together in a frenetic manner. Everyone lifted their heads. A multicolored hill made up solely of the congregated spiritual auras directly appeared out of thin air.

Although the hill looked ordinary, it actually had the weight of millions of tall mountains. Thus, even a Grade Nine Sovereign might not be able to withstand such force as it was made up of extremely pure spiritual aura from heaven and the earth.

Two worlds merged into one.

Only an ultimate powerhouse who had achieved the status of an Earth Sovereign could use such a tactic – to be able to effortlessly maximize the use of the spiritual aura from within the world.

"Dominator of Daluo Territory, here's a gift for you!"

Liu Tiandao ruffled his sleeves, and the hill cast an enormous shadow as it started to shroud the powerhouses of Daluo Territory. It was extremely simple to find out if the strong appearance of the Dominator of Daluo Territory was merely a facade to hide his frail health. All he had to do was to test it out himself.

If his predictions were right, the former would definitely be at his weakest state at this point in time. Thus, today might be a great day to completely exterminate the Daluo Territory. He coerced the Hundred Battle Territory to provoke the Daluo Territory with an ultimate motive in mind. He wanted to pressure the Dominator of Daluo Territory to reveal his true identity...

Bam!

As the shadow began to shroud the crowd, all the faces of the powerhouses of Daluo Territory were white with fear. As they were faced with such violent attacks, they knew that they did not even have the leeway to escape. Their abilities were evidently a far cry from the powers of an Earth Sovereign.

Thus, everyone turned their sight toward the figure that remained stationary on the throne.

Mu Chen also looked at the throne in panic. His palms were sweaty. It would be absolutely horrific to just die in this manner.

Under the fixated gazes of millions of people, the figure on the throne just lifted his head a little, and immediately looked as if he were inhaling air into his lungs. Suddenly, the world started to tremble, and the hill that was compacted with spiritual auras swirled into a beam of rainbow-colored rays. The figure seated on the throne then sucked it into his

mouth and swallowed it while.

Hiss!

Everyone's eyes nearly popped out of their heads.

Chapter 739: A Battle

Everyone in the world was dumbstruck as they gaped at the figure who was seated on the throne. Evidently, no one had ever expected that the terrifying attack from Liu Tiandao would be sucked into his mouth with such ease.

Mu Chen was completely blown away. There was an astonishingly large difference between the abilities of an Earth Sovereign and an ordinary sovereign. Looking at the offensive move just performed by Liu Tiandao, if the dominator of Daluo Territory had not blocked it, the attack would have caused thousands of casualties in the Daluo Territory in the blink of an eye. His abilities had reached such a level that, it would be almost impossible to even rely on quantitative advantage to mitigate the failures, unless they had a war troop dispatcher with an extremely formidable troop...

As Liu Tiandao witnessed this scene, his sunken eyes squinted a little. His micro-expressions also seemed a bit solemn. Although he had not unleashed his full powers in the previous attack, he had already achieved his main goal.

He was able to conduct his offensive attack with such ease! There was not even a slight fluctuation in his internal spiritual energy! Evidently, the dominator of Daluo Territory was not as weak as he had expected him to be.

"How could this have happened..." Liu Tiandao's gaze turned slightly cold. It is impossible that the information that he had received could have been wrong. The dominator of Daluo Territory's internal injuries should be flaring up at this point in time, which would leave him extremely vulnerable and frail. However, looking at the current state of affairs, his abilities were still as powerful as ever.

"It seems like Clan Leader Liu intends to have a friendly battle with me?" As Liu Tiandao's gaze shifted a little, the husky voice of the dominator of Daluo Territory, who was seated on the throne, also thundered across the

place. The strident sound wave caused by it had actually distorted the entire space around it!

"Hehe, I was just testing to see if the dominator of Daluo Territory had actually perfected his skills over the years."

Liu Tiandao swayed the sleeves of his robe and smiled faintly. His gaze immediately shifted toward the grandiose battlefield, as he said, "But, it will be rather unfair if you were to join this battle, considering that you are, after all, the almighty dominator of Daluo Territory. Tian Xuan Hall has close bonds with the Hundred Battle Territory. Thus, if you intend to oppress the people with your powers and authority, I'm afraid that Tian Xuan Hall will not be able to just sit back and watch."

"Well then, I'm intrigued to see Tian Xuan Hall's level of endurance," the dominator of Daluo Territory sneered, remaining seated on his throne. There was no hint of fear in his tone, despite the interference from Tian Xuan Hall.

Liu Tiandao smiled and glared at the dominator of Daluo Territory, "Why would the dominator of Daluo Territory say such a thing? We are both well aware of the situation at hand. If you were to make a move, I would have no choice but to stop you from doing so, as only then would I be able to prevent you from meddling with this battle. Besides... I would still wish you the best, even if all of you still intend to instigate a life-and-death battle with the Hundred Battle Territory."

The rays that shrouded the body of the dominator of Daluo Territory flickered a little. He then smiled faintly and said, "Well then, you should stop spouting nonsense. What do you want? Cut to the chase and lay all of your cards on the table."

Liu Tiandao smiled. "No doubt, the dominator of Daluo Territory is truly pleasant to deal with. However, I'm not the host. You should direct that question to the three leaders of the Hundred Battle Territory instead."

As Liu Tiandao finished speaking, the Sword-hiding Elder of the Valley of Ten Thousand Swords smiled cheekily at the dominator of Daluo Territory. He then said, "Looking at today's situation, both parties are

clearly unwilling to fight a life-and-death battle, but we cannot allow the Daluo Territory to go home empty-handed. Thus, the Hundred Battle Territory is willing to set up a prizefight instead. As such, we will be able to avoid hurting each other, but a concise decision can still be made. When the time comes, the losing party will have to compensate the winner with a million Sovereign Spiritual Liquid and a thousand cities. What do you think?" He turned to address his question directly to the dominator of Daluo Territory.

"One million Sovereign Spiritual Liquid? A thousand cities?"

As news of the exact sum of the compensation spread, the crowd was thrown into an uproar. Even the eyes of the three kings lit up. Although the Daluo Territory was able to provide a million Sovereign Spiritual Liquid, it was still a rather hefty price.

The price of one thousand cities was also astonishingly high. Even if they were to divide out some parts of the Daluo Territory, it would still be a pain in the neck.

Mu Chen was stunned. Even when they had turned the Thunder Magic Sect upside down, the value of the loot that they had obtained was not even equal to the price of two hundred thousand Sovereign Spiritual Liquid. And to think, the Hundred Battle Territory demanded a million Sovereign Spiritual Liquid as the prize of the fight!

The three kings stared at the dominator of the Daluo Territory. They were obviously waiting for him to make the final decision.

With all eyes upon him, the dominator of Daluo Territory paused for a short while before he spoke. Then, his voice firm and stern, he said, "What would be the fight's criteria and rules?"

"Simple..." the Sword-hiding Elder began to explain. "The fight will be divided into three battles – the battle of the kings, the battle of the Lords, and the battle of the commanders. This means that the Daluo Territory will have to send out three representatives – a king, a lord, and a commander. Likewise, the Hundred Battle Territory will also have to do the same. Whoever wins the most out of the three battles will be the final

victor."

"Why go to all of that trouble? The three big shots from the Hundred Battle Territory should just make a move on us. We, the three kings, will just directly take you all down. Isn't this easier? Don't you guys have confidence in yourselves?" the Condor King snickered.

"Hehe, that would be such a meaningless fight. In such an event, we should give our younger members a chance to shine," said the Sword-hiding Elder with a smile plastered on his face.

The Condor King's eyebrows furrowed. He then looked at the dominator of Daluo Territory on the throne. The fact that the opponent had made such a move had evidently created some uncertainties regarding the fight.

The rays around the Daluo Territory flickered a little, almost as if they were directly related to the flickering gaze now emanating from the dominator of Daluo Territory himself. After he scanned through the various powerhouses for a short moment, his stern, husky voice thundered, "Alright, we will take part in this fight."

"The dominator of Daluo Territory sure is a bold person!" the Sword-hiding Elder smiled, bowing in respect.

"Send out your three representatives of the Hundred Battle Territory. I'm truly curious of the abilities that your people have," said the dominator of Daluo Territory nonchalantly.

The Sword-hiding Elder smiled upon hearing the words of the dominator. Before he could utter a response, the silent Demonic Sorrow Sovereign of the Giant Sky of Sorrows suddenly stepped forward. His galaxy-like deep eyes looked toward the dominator of Daluo Territory. His voice remained monotone, "Allow me to compete with the king-level powerhouse of the Daluo Territory."

Witnessing how he had volunteered himself, the Sword-Hiding Elder and the Old Corpse Ghost just smiled and expressed no objections. It seemed like they had expected such a development.

"The Demonic Sorrow Sovereign will be making the move as expected,"

Tang Bing's expression turned grave as she stared at the bald man. Among the three big shots of the Hundred Battle Territory, although the Demonic Sorrow Sovereign was the one with the most low profile, he was evidently also the least predictable of the three.

Mu Chen nodded his head lightly. The Demonic Sorrow Sovereign was evidently a tough nut to crack.

As the Demonic Sorrow Sovereign stepped forward, the Sword-hiding Elder waved his hand again. Suddenly, a crack crept open, and a black figure slowly walked out of it.

A rotten smell filled the air as the black figure appeared. Everyone looked over, their sights greeted by a thinly clad humanoid figure. His body was wrapped in black bandages, just like a mummy. There seemed to be some strange symbols on the black bandages as well. The appearance of the peculiar figure stirred up the crowd once again.

"That person is... The Spiritual Corpse King from the Demonic Corpse Sect. I thought he had disappeared! It's shocking that he has suddenly reappeared..." said Tang Bing, astonished.

"The Spiritual Corpse King?" Mu Chen was seized with terror.

"He is the highest-positioned Elder in the Demonic Corpse Sect. His abilities are apparently inferior only to the Old Corpse Ghost. However, he disappeared several years ago. Some even thought that he had died, but I guess not," said Tang Bing.

Mu Chen's brows furrowed upon hearing this. The Spiritual Corpse King gave off a rather unnerving vibe.

"I wonder which powerhouse the Hundred Battle Territory will send out for the battle between the commanders..." said Mu Chen quietly. In comparison to the other two battles, he was clearly more interested in this category, since it was the one that involved his own scope of abilities.

"The Hundred Battle Territory will evidently select their most powerful commanders. Clearly, their most powerful leaders are none other than the dynamic three: Lin Qingfeng from the Valley of Ten Thousand Swords, Mo

Mo from the Demonic Corpse Sect, and Qin Bei from the Giant Sky of Sorrows. Among these three, Lin Qingfeng is the most reputable, Mo Chen is the most cunning, and Qin Bei is the most low profile," said Tang Bing.

Mu Chen grumbled, then nodded his head.

"However, you shouldn't get your hopes up too high. In this battle between the commanders, I doubt that the Daluo Territory will send you out as a representative." Tang Bing smiled as she glanced at Mu Chen. She continued, "I'm not trying to rain on your parade. It's just that Xu Qing and Zhou Yue have better backgrounds than you do. Although you have risen up in the ranks in an impressively short span of time, they still seem more reliable in the eyes of the other members. Thus, it is likely that the dominator will pick one of them to be the representative."

Mu Chen rubbed his nose and smiled. "Xu Qing and Zhou Yue are really strong, too. I'd have no complaints if they were to be selected as the representative. At least then I wouldn't have to risk my life in the battle!"

"I'm glad that you are keeping an open mind. However, we do all know that you're just as strong as them!" Tang Bing consoled him with an encouraging smile.

Mu Chen shook his shoulders and lifted his head up. The Sword-hiding Elder waved his hands once again. This time, a commander-level powerhouse would be selected to represent the Hundred Battle Territory.

At the back, three figures descended from the sky. One of them was Lin Qing Feng, who Mu Chen had previously met. Another, named Mo Mo, was dressed in black from top to toe. On the far left, the third figure, was scrawny man who was wearing a dark green robe. Mu Chen figured this was most likely Qin Bei, the most low-profile commander among the three of them.

As the Sword-Hiding Elder waved his hand, Lin Qingfeng and Mo Mo glanced at each other. Their faces looked as if they were frowning. They then took a step back together, making way for Qin Bei, whose eyes were slightly closed. Evidently, they had selected Qin Bei to represent them as the commander-tier powerhouse.

"They have actually selected him." As Tang Bing witnessed this moment, her arched brows twitched a little. Although members of the Giant Sky of Sorrows had always kept a low profile, they were evidently the most difficult to deal with.

"Hehe, dominator of Daluo Territory, we have already selected our representatives for the Hundred Battle Territory. I wonder, which three participants are you going to send out for the battles?" asked the Sword-hiding old man smilingly.

All eyes were fixated on the dominator of Daluo Territory once again. The rays around him started to flicker a little more. He lounged on the throne and said calmly, "The Sleeping King."

Among the three kings, the groggy-looking Sleeping King opened his eyes and stared at the Demonic Sorrow Sovereign, who was standing at a distance. He smiled only briefly, then nodded his head. Evidently, the Daluo Territory needed the equally mysterious Sleeping King to deal with the Demonic Sorrow Sovereign.

"Lord Asura," the dominator of Daluo Territory spoke up again.

The choice of candidate was still within everyone's expectations, as Lord Asura was still considered to be the most powerful among the nine lords. After selecting Lord Asura, the dominator of Daluo Territory paused for a while, as everyone's gazes shifted to Xu Qing and Zhou Yue. The two of them were unperturbed, their expressions remaining calm and seemingly unaffected by the happenings surrounding them at the moment.

The dominator of Daluo Territory tapped his fingers lightly on the throne. His piercing eyes swept pass Xu Qing and Zhou Yue. Finally, he suddenly turned away from them to stare directly at Mu Chen, who was presently getting some shut-eye.

"Mu Chen."

Everyone was shocked at the decision! Even Nine Nether, who was standing nearby, was extremely stunned! Evidently, nobody had expected that the dominator of Daluo Territory would actually pick the most inexperienced one among his ranks!

Chapter 740: Grade Eight Sovereign

"Mu Chen..."

As the Dominator of Daluo's voice resonated, the massive crowd momentarily fell silent before an unsuppressed commotion of whispers broke out.

Everyone was stupefied and looked at Mu Chen, who was equally stunned.

Xu Qing and Zhou Yue were startled for a moment, and then they looked at each other. Their lips moved, but they could not utter a word, as they dared not go against the choice of the Dominator of Daluo.

Though they spoke not, their eyes revealed their suspicions. They had witnessed clashes between Mu Chen and Wu Tian before, therefore, they knew that there was more to the young man than met the eye.

However, Mu Chen did depend on the Nine Nether Troop's fighting spirit during his battle with Wu Tian. But in the upcoming fight, he could only rely on his own strength. The crowd couldn't help but doubt him.

As the furor spread, not only was the crowd dumbfounded, but even Mu Chen could not stop himself from leaving his mouth open. He looked at Tang Bing beside him, whose lovely face was equally startled.

Evidently, she could never have imagined Mu Chen being selected by the Dominator of Daluo.

Although many expressed their disbelief, the Dominator of Daluo's commanding authority was absolute, and no one dared disapprove. The silence after an agitated uproar created an uncanny contrast.

Nine Nether gave Mu Chen a strange look. After a short hesitation, she finally cupped her right fist with her left palm and said, "My Lord, Mu Chen is still inexperienced. Would it not be too risky to send him?"

The three upcoming battles were of extreme importance, and any selected candidate would be put under enormous pressure. If they won, all would be well, but if they lost, the stress they would have to bear would

not be light. Although Nine Nether also hoped that Mu Chen could shine in this fight, she could not allow herself to put Mu Chen in such danger.

Upon hearing this, the Dominator of Daluo waved his palm and said with a relaxed smile, "Worry not. He will do."

At Dominator of Daluo's insistence, Nine Nether resisted no more. However, she still had a curious look in her elegant eyes. She still could not fathom why the Dominator of Daluo was so keen on Mu Chen. Logically, with his power level at this point, Mu Chen shouldn't even have the right to be noticed by the Dominator of Daluo.

The crowd kept quiet when they saw this. The word of the Dominator of Daluo was absolute. Since he was determined in his choice, not a soul dared to go against him.

And so, the candidacy in the battle of commanders fell upon Mu Chen's shoulders just like that.

The countless powerful masters in Daluo Territory looked at each other, every one of them sighing in their hearts. Now they could only hope that they won the first two matches, as Mu Chen's result would not matter then.

Facing the countless sighs and odd looks, Mu Chen could only curl his lips. He was equally ignorant about which nerve in the Dominator of Daluo went haywire, causing him to insist on sending Mu Chen.

"Hehe, it seems like the Dominator of Daluo has picked his candidate!" The Sword-Hiding Elder laughed. He took a glance at the drowsy Sleeping King, and dread rose in his eyes. He clearly understood that the Sleeping King was the most unpredictable among the Three Kings.

Then he looked at Lord Asura. He was clad in armor and was expressionless. But underneath his seemingly peaceful eyes, a terrifying massacre was surging, and those who saw it quivered in fear.

Among the Nine Lords of Daluo Territory, Lord Asura was no doubt the strongest. It was said that if a top power were to be promoted to king, it would most certainly be Lord Asura.

Finally, the old man set his sights upon Mu Chen, and he was shocked at once. Grade Two Sovereign? When had the commanders of Daluo Territory gotten so weak?

A sliver of doubt flashed in the eyes of the Sword-Hiding Elder, but he did not show it. He merely let out a laugh. "Since the candidates have been chosen, let the Dominator of Daluo decide on the order of the battles."

The Dominator of Daluo shone with a bright light, and then he took a look at the Sleeping King. The latter walked out unhurriedly and said with a smile, "Let's start with the strongest, then."

With a leap, his figure appeared high up in the air, and he looked at the Demonic Sorrow Sovereign saying, "It was rumored that you broke through the shackles of the world and are an exceptional genius. I am honored to be able to witness that today."

The Demonic Sorrow Sovereign laughed, and his figure rippled and disappeared eerily. Then, like a wave of water, he materialized before the Sleeping King.

"I have also heard of Brother Meng's Great Dream Nerve that enables meditation in a half-asleep state. Such a fascinating technique. Hopefully, I will learn a lot from you today," the Demonic Sorrow Sovereign spoke slowly while staring at the Sleeping King with his eyes that looked like two galaxies.

"Your words are too kind."

With a laugh, the usual drowsiness and grogginess dissipated from the Sleeping King's eyes and was replaced by a sharp glint.

With a wave of his sleeves, the blue skies were seemingly twisted. Then, a horrifying spiritual energy pressure great enough to crush the skies covered the heavens and the earth.

Bang! Bang!

Above the heavens, all layers of clouds exploded and shattered, and space itself seemed to have twisted. Violent cracks spread throughout space. As the Sleeping King grasped the air, blackish spatial cracks

appeared on his palm like tiny, slithering snakes. Only those with a wise eye could tell how dangerous the power of those tiny snakes formed from spatial cracks was.

That was the power of space.

"Grade Eight Sovereign, spatial control!"

Between the heavens and the earth, innumerable powerful individuals inhaled sharply. To bend space to one's will was a feat only Grade Eight Sovereigns could achieve. Obviously, the Sleeping King had attained Grade Eight!

At the back, while the Condor King and the Spiritual Pupil King were watching this scene, they could only smile. It seemed like the Sleeping King had taken the lead. While they both had met the requirements to be a Grade Eight Sovereign, they were still a distance away from actually entering its gates.

"As expected from Master Sleeping King." Tang Bing unknowingly let out the words of praise. According to her knowledge, the last time the Three Kings displayed their prowess, their strength was around that of Grade Seven Sovereign. Now, it was obvious that her knowledge was outdated.

Mu Chen nodded slightly in response. He looked at the silhouette standing erect in the sky. The power emanating from his body was truly capable of obliterating the heavens and the earth.

Focused on by countless gazes of shock and awe, the Sleeping King gave the Demonic Sorrow Sovereign a mischievous smile, and with a flick of his finger, the tiny black snakes in his hand disappeared in a peculiar fashion.

BOOOOM!

It was at this moment that the space around the Demonic Sorrow Sovereign suddenly convulsed, immediately followed by a tear in space. Spatial cracks, black and ferocious, started to materialize, like scissors cutting through space, flying toward the Demonic Sorrow Sovereign without hesitation.

While that type of attack wasn't one that packed an earth-shattering

spiritual energy, it was far more vicious than the collision of spiritual energies. The power embedded within the spatial cracks could instantly dice a Grade Five Sovereign into pieces. Most importantly, normal individuals could never evade that attack. As fast as one could be, no one could outrun the shredding of space.

The spatial cracks tore space apart, but the Demonic Sorrow Sovereign's expression was stoic. He only put an arm out in front of himself and smiled faintly. The space around him was twisted at once, and spatial cracks that were equally ferocious spread out from him and clashed with cracks that were surrounding him.

Crrrrrk! Crrk!

Thin noises echoed through the air. As the spatial cracks collided with each other, they merely canceled each other out and dissipated in puffs of smoke. They did not cause any devastating shockwaves.

"Spatial control?!"

"Even the Demonic Sorrow Sovereign has entered Grade Eight!"

Several exclamations emerged from the crowd. Anyone who saw the event would see that the Demonic Sorrow Sovereign used the same technique to defuse the attack of spatial cracks.

Obviously, the Demonic Sorrow Sovereign had attained the capability of a Grade Eight Sovereign!

"This fella, he truly is a powerful individual who has broken the shackles of the world," Tang Bing said while she knitted her brows.

"It seems like to determine a victor, a difficult battle will have to take place." Mu Chen's face was grave. It was no wonder that the Demonic Sorrow Sovereign was selected as the opponent of a King-level, powerful individual. It seemed like they hid many of their capabilities as well. This Grade Eight Sovereign should be considered the strongest among the Big Three of Hundred Battle Territory.

"Interesting. After a long hiatus, I hope I am not rusty." The Sleeping King could not stop himself from smiling when he saw the incident. The

look in his eyes had started to sharpen. This opponent was worthy of his full attention.

"I'm looking forward to your lesson, Brother Meng," Demonic Sorrow uttered with a smile, but his eyes were emotionless.

The Sleeping King smiled in return and gently shut his eyes. As his eyelids closed, the wide space behind him started to twist and turn. It was as if that area had turned into a black hole, frantically devouring the spiritual energies in the heavens and the earth.

As the spiritual energies turned into rays of rainbows and converged in that area, a gargantuan figure of a few tens of thousands of feet gradually took shape.

That figure was sitting cross-legged in the void, its whole body covered in dazzling light. But it wasn't a mere projection. As the light flowed in between, the figure became an actual body, a real giant!

Furthermore, a gigantic golden dragon seemed to be circling above the figure. The humongous dragon remained on top of the figure with its head raised high, as if it wanted to devour the heavens and the earth.

When the monstrous figure appeared, the whole sky shuddered and shook, as if it could not bear the pressure of the figure.

ROAR!

The gigantic golden dragon roared at the sky, and its voice resonated in the heavens. A golden tide of sound swept out. At that very instant, the heavens and the earth shattered!

Below, Mu Chen gazed at the enormous figure and the gigantic golden dragon around it. He could not help squinting, and he mumbled to himself, "Is this... the Sky Dragon Celestial Body?"

The Sky Dragon Celestial Body, ranked 70th among the 99 Sovereign Celestial Bodies!

Chapter 741: The Unpredictable Sleeping King

The majestic and enormous Sovereign Celestial Body was sitting cross-legged. Its immense and vast spiritual energy wave was howling like a sea, sending out wave after wave furiously. It was an extremely spectacular scene.

Above the Sleeping King's Sovereign Celestial Body, a giant golden dragon was coiling around it. Its mouth opened, and its roar echoed throughout the skies. The air was completely filled with its might.

This was the Heavenly Dragon Celestial body, ranked 17 among the 99 Sovereign Celestial Bodies!

Innumerable powerful individuals within the heavens and the earth looked in astonishment at the gargantuan body of the dragon. It was so colossal, it appeared almost as if to be covering the heavens and the earth.

With the force of a Grade Eight Sovereign, the Sovereign Celestial Body that the Sleeping King had summoned was so concentrated, it was no different than a physical body. In fact, the degree of concentration was so dense, even Mu Chen's Daluo Golden Body could not match even a fraction of it!

Mu Chen stared at the humongous Heavenly Dragon Celestial Body in awe. It was the strongest of all the Sovereign Celestial Bodies that he had ever witnessed. Of course, this was mainly due to the terrifying power of the Sleeping King. After all, among the ranks of powerful individuals, even the most common Sovereign Celestial Bodies harbored horrifying destructive powers.

"Rumor has it that, in order to attain the Heavenly Dragon Celestial Body, one has to capture an actual Heavenly Dragon as a medium for their training."

What was more even shocking to Mu Chen was the Heavenly Dragon Celestial Body itself. In order to master the Heavenly Dragon Celestial

Body, it required the body of a Heavenly Dragon as a medium. The medium was needed to absorb its spiritual energy and then combine it with one's own spiritual energy.

Furthermore, Heavenly Dragons were of the highest rank among all dragons, as they are exceptionally ferocious and valiant, not to mention their having a strong backing. To capture one of them is a nearly impossible task. The fact that the Sleeping King was able to grasp such an opportunity, implied that destiny was at work.

Amid the shouts and yells, the Demonic Sorrow Sovereign slowly looked up. His usually calm visage looked at the enormous figure, which seemed infinite in size, with solemn eyes. He then formed a seal with his hand.

BOOM!

As he formed the seal, a monstrous spiritual energy burst out. A blinding golden light gathered behind the Demonic Sorrow Sovereign. Within a few breaths, the golden light materialized into a physical being. A golden Celestial Body that was as enormous as the Heavenly Dragon Celestial Body appeared, now standing erect behind the Demonic Sorrow Sovereign.

That Celestial Body looked like it was cast in pure gold. In one of its giant hands was a golden bowl. On the bowl were countless ancient runes. A golden liquid seemed to be overflowing from the golden bowl.

"That's the Great Vajra Celestial Body, ranked 73 among the 99 Sovereign Celestial Bodies!"

The countless gazes from the crowd were now set upon the golden Celestial Body. It looked like it was made of diamonds, glittering, resplendent, and appearing to be unbelievably sturdy. It was obvious that this Sovereign Celestial Body of the Demonic Sorrow Sovereign was equally remarkable.

The two enormous Sovereign Celestial Bodies were standing upright, their heights extending from the ground to the skies. Even the sky had darkened, due to the intense pressure emanating from the two. Each and every soul held their breath when they saw this spectacular display.

The figure of the Sleeping King floated in the air steadily, finally halting above the head of the Heavenly Dragon Celestial Body. His gaze was focused on the Great Vajra Celestial Body. He did not waste his time on small talk, as they both knew that only one winner must emerge today.

To emerge victorious, at their level, they would have to unveil their trump cards. No one know what would happen once that time came.

BOOM!

The Sleeping King was not an indecisive person, and therefore, he did not hesitate to act. With a shine in his eyes, he stomped his foot. Immediately, the golden Heavenly Dragon seated upon his Sovereign Celestial Body opened its eyes and spread its menacing jaws, before inhaling sharply.

BAM! BAM!

As the space before the dragon crumbled, infinite pieces of spatial shards were sucked into its mouth. In the next moment, a golden spiritual energy that was embedded with dark spatial shards was launched from its mouth, flooding forth like a wave.

"Dimension Crushing Dragon Breath!"

Swooosh!

The flood of golden spiritual energy pierced through space, ignoring the distance and materializing before the Great Vajra Celestial Body. This torrent of gold, which gathered the shards of space, could obliterate anything in its path.

"Great Palm of Vajra!"

With a solemn look, while channeling his thoughts, the Demonic Sorrow Sovereign's Great Vajra Celestial Body quickly extended its palm. As the palm went against the wind, it expanded and shone with a bright golden light. Then, just like a mountain made out of diamonds, it collided ferociously with the golden torrent.

Thunk!

The heavens and the earth shook vigorously at the exact instant of collision. Meanwhile, tornadoes that were ten thousand feet tall were birthed from the clash, leaping and dancing without restraint and shattering the earth and the heavens.

As the golden torrent striked the palm, layers of clouds splintered and scattered. The giant palm of Vajra was sent propelling backwards for several thousand feet. But at that moment, the golden torrent that was carrying spatial shards was blocked completely.

The hurricane continued to rage throughout the heavens and the earth. The spectators' hearts almost fell out their chests from shock. The extent of this collision was too great a trauma.

The eyes of the Demonic Sorrow Sovereign glinted with gold flecks. Looking at the spiritual torrent, the expression in his eyes suddenly became somber, but his body relaxed steadily.

"This is to be expected from the strongest of the Three Kings."

His calm voice resonated in the heavens and the earth, along with the hurricane. He stared at the Sleeping King, who was standing above the Sky Dragon Celestial Body. Then, he took in a long, deep breath. At their levels, neither of them could win simply by using normal techniques. If that were so, there would be need for either to hold back.

"If you can endure this move of mine, I'll concede this match!"

The Demonic Sorrow Sovereign shut his eyelids slowly, then put his palms together and clasped both hands into a fist. As he did so, the golden bowl that was being held by his Sovereign Celestial Body began to float.

The golden bowl expanded rapidly, growing to several thousand feet within a blink of an eye. On the surface of the bowl, the ancient golden runes were glimmering fantastically.

Then, the bowl swiftly turned, aiming itself toward the Sleeping King and his Heavenly Dragon Celestial Body. As the golden bowl flipped, the raging hurricane stopped abruptly. In this moment, even the air flow slowed dramatically.

As all of this was happening, a silent aura of danger spread throughout the heavens and the earth. Every powerful individual could feel its chill on their skins.

It was clear that the Demonic Sorrow Sovereign had no intention of prolonging the battle. Instead, he planned to execute his last resort in order to swiftly end this battle and determine a winner.

Mu Chen watched with a sullen look. He could feel the frightening waves surging within the golden bowl. This must be the strongest attack in the entire arsenal of the Demonic Sorrow Sovereign.

"What does he want to do?" Tang Bing could not help asking.

Mu Chen's eyes glimmered for a moment, then he said, "I am afraid he's gonna use his Sovereign Super Power."

A Sovereign Super Power was a skill only available to the more powerful Sovereign Celestial Body. The Great Vajra Celestial Body obviously possessed this ability.

A Grade Eight Sovereign exerting his Sovereign Super Power, how devastating would that power be? Mu Chen could not even begin to imagine...

Phhhhhheeeeeew.

The focus of countless gazes in the heavens and the earth, a white puff of breath blew out of the Demonic Sorrow Sovereign's mouth. After which, he promptly opened his eyes. His normally peaceful pupils now appeared like avalanches and earthquakes, filled with a violent rage.

He changed the seal with both hands, then roared as his eyes widened. "Sovereign Super Power! Heaven Obilerating Vajra Bowl!"

BOOM!

With a shake of the giant golden bowl, the ancient runes flew out, causing the bowl to vibrate fiercely. The next moment, a golden torrent swirled out from the middle of the bowl. The endless torrent crushed space itself into smithereens, splitting into countless jets, before rushing

toward the Sleeping King from all directions.

On each golden jet, ancient runes were engraved. Even a single jet could terrify a Grade Seven Sovereign. And now, with so many of them, even a Grade Eight Sovereign wouldn't dare face them head-on!

This was clearly an attack that was completely free of all reservations from the Demonic Sorrow Sovereign! The golden streams of torrents filled the skies, flying past the countless gazes of shocked onlookers. However, the figure of the Sleeping King was unmoving, standing completely still upon the head of his Heavenly Dragon Celestial Body.

Within the entire heavens and the earth, only the Dominator of Daluo remained emotionless. Liu Tiandao, who was on the other side, however, knit his brows slightly.

Ka-boom!

The golden torrents rained down from above, then burst forth. All the while, a smile remained on the Sleeping King's face. Then, he quickly formed a seal with both of his hands. As he did so, a glint of golden light could clearly be seen within his eyes.

RAWRRRRRR!

The golden Heavenly Dragon sitting upon the Heavenly Dragon Celestial Body roared at once, before immediately stretching out its jaws and inhaling deeply. The innumerable crowd marveled, as they watched the terrifying streams of golden torrents being so nonchalantly swallowed up by the golden dragon.

The heavens and the earth fell silent. Who would have thought that the most powerful attack from the Demonic Sorrow Sovereign would be impeded so easily by the Sleeping King?!

"Awesome..." Tang Bing exclaimed in awe, while cupping her own mouth.

Mu Chen's expression changed as well. He stared intently at the silhouette of the Sleeping King. In the previous moment, he could feel a miniscule change in the spiritual energy fluctuation surrounding the

Sleeping King.

Commotions and uproars arose in the crowd. On the side of the Hundred Battle Territory, the faces of the Sword-hiding Elder and others could not help but turn pale. This turn of events was certainly beyond their expectations!

"How is this possible? They are both Grade Eights, so how could he block the Demonic Sorrow Sovereign's most powerful attack with such ease?" The Sword-hiding Elder wondered aloud.

On top of the Great Vajra Celestial Body, the Demonic Sorrow Sovereign stared at a silhouette in the distance. As the golden light dissipated, the figure of the Sleeping King emerged once more, but the horrifying spiritual energy surrounding him was nowhere to be found.

Although his spiritual energy had disappeared, the Demonic Sorrow Sovereign could still feel a truly menacing aura closing in and enveloping him. This caused his calm visage to turn pale. He looked at the Sleeping King, then said "It seems like I have overlooked you!"

To create an aura enough to pressure a Grade Eight Sovereign like him, it was clear that the Sleeping King's capabilities had far surpassed his! The Sleeping King's capabilities were not those of a Grade Eight's, but a Grade Nine's!

Many were shocked and speechless. Even the Condor King and the Spiritual Pupil King could not keep from inhaling sharply. Who would've thought that the drowsy, groggy Sleeping King had such unfathomable powers?

"It's my loss."

The Demonic Sorrow Sovereign was straightforward in his admittance. He knew it was impossible for him to win this match, so he dispersed his Sovereign Celestial Body at once. He then turned his back and left, returning to the Hundred Battle Territory camp.

"The first match goes to the Daluo Territory!"

"It's in the bag!"

Astonishing cheers erupted within the camps of the Daluo Territory. Tang Bing couldn't stop herself from smiling. With the victory of the first match, they just had to clinch another match to win this entire gambled battle!

After the end of the first match, the second match was soon started...

"Lord Asura versus the Undead Army Spiritual King!"

As the Daluo Territory was still rejoicing with deafening shouts and cheers, and were in a state of relaxed celebration over the first match, the second match had already ended with an alarming speed! The shocking result instantly silenced the joyful cheers in the camps of the Daluo Territory.

The entire crowd was staring wide-eyed, their faces filled with disbelief. Within just three rounds, Lord Asura had been defeated with a grave wound!

(To be continued...)

Chapter 742: Corpse Doll

After three rounds, Lord Asura was defeated and gravely wounded!

When Lord Asura retreated with heavy injuries, the atmosphere between the heavens and the earth was immediately frozen. Not only were the strong people of Daluo Territory gaping in awe, but even on the side of the Hundred Battle Territory, the crowd's faces were painted with shock.

Of course, this was a surprising result to them.

Lord Asura was not only famous in Daluo Territory, but was also well known in the Hundred Battle Territory. Although the Undead Spiritual King was rather bizarre, many expected this fight would be a closer match than the battle between the Sleeping King and the Demonic Sorrow Sovereign.

However, the result made everyone's jaws drop.

"How could this be..." Tang Bing mumbled as her face turned pale from watching Lord Asura, who was wounded and retreating.

Mu Chen stared at the sky with the same pale complexion on his face. He peered intently at a point far away in the sky. There was a figure wrapped completely in black bandages. He was emanating a strange and sinister aura.

When Lord Asura fought with this Undead Spiritual King just now, both their strengths were thoroughly revealed.

Grade Seven Sovereigns!

Lord Asura and the Undead Spiritual King were both Grade Seven Sovereigns in terms of capabilities. They were obviously the strongest among all the lords in their respective camps. Their ability could even equal that of kings.

As both of them were of the same grade, this generally meant that the fight should be a deadlock. And without a special move to break the tie, they could even end with a draw.

But while everyone was expecting that, a sudden change occured in that battle.
Everyone could see that after exchanging a few blows, the Undead Spiritual King had suddenly retreated. Then, with a wave of his sleeve, a darkened mummy emerged from his side.

The mummy was almost a skeleton, and eerie black runes were scribbled all over its body. An uncomfortable wave of chills spread from it.

That was a special move of the Demonic Corpse Sect, a Demonic Corpse!

The powerful practitioners in the Demonic Corpse Sect possessed a strong affinity in controlling corpses. They could manipulate the corpses of some powerful individuals, using them to battle. That was why the Demonic Corpse Sect practitioners generally depended on the power of Demonic Corpses to outnumber their enemies.

Everyone could tell by looking at this darkened Demonic Corpse that it was the Undead Spiritual King's Life Demonic Corpse.

After the Life Demonic Corpse was summoned, the Undead Spiritual King's bandages were instantly torn apart. In the next moment, his body ruptured. Most of his flesh and blood left his body and attached to the Corpse.

The sight of that was absolutely bloody and hideous. Anyone who saw it was frightened to the bone.

When most of the Undead Spiritual King's flesh and blood were combined with the Corpse, he waved his sleeves, and the Corpse rushed towards Lord Asura, and... it self-destructed, just like that.

The Life Demonic Corpse's strength was, to a certain extent, a Grade Seven Sovereign's after absorbing the flesh and blood of the Undead Spiritual King. With this level of power, even one as powerful as the Condor King would have to steer clear of the explosion to protect himself.

When the Demonic Corpse self-destructed, Lord Asura gave his all to defend himself, but he was still gravely wounded to the point of defeat!

Many were still unaware of the situation because the conclusion was too sudden. Their eyes were still sluggish, as they could not have imagined that the Undead Spiritual King would be that insane.

A Life Demonic Corpse was closely bound to its master's body. Although the self-destruction of a Life Demonic Corpse would not cause its master to die, the trauma inflicted upon him would be unimaginable. Besides, to train a Life Demonic Corpse was an extremely difficult task. Although the Undead Spiritual King had won through detonating his Life Demonic Corpse, it may not have been a worthwhile trade in the long run...

...Which was why everyone was stupefied by the Undead Spiritual King's reckless and unhinged act.

The price of his victory may have been too hefty...

Huuuuuuuu...

Mu Chen took a long, deep breath of chilly air. He looked at the silhouette of the Undead Spiritual King. Blood was oozing out from underneath his black bandages without stopping, dripping downward. The spiritual energy fluctuation around the Undead Spiritual King had weakened to its lowest point. It was clear that the self-destruction of his Life Demonic Corpse had also wounded him greatly.

"This lunatic..." was most likely the impression of most people toward the Undead Spiritual King right now.

Fshuuuu!

The Condor King leaped forward, catching Lord Asura's wounded body in his arms. He trained his cold stare at the Undead Spiritual King and said, "That was a brilliant strategy, but are you not worried that this may be too great a price to pay?"

Underneath the black bandages of the Undead Spiritual King were two cold eyes. With a sinister smile, he raised his shaky palm slightly. In his palm was a humanoid doll carved out of a bone, and the doll was full of cracks.

"A Corpse Doll?"

When the Condor King saw this, the color in his face drained. The Corpse Doll was an extremely ominous item. It was rumored that it could take a deadly blow for a person.

But since the method to create one was extremely bloody, not many people had one. Who would've thought that the Undead Spiritual King had such a treasure to absorb the fatal damage? In this case, there would be minimal repercussions upon the Undead Spiritual King, justifying his recklessness.

The Spiritual Pupil King, Nine Nether, and others also saw the Corpse Doll, and their complexions turned pale. Obviously, the Undead Spiritual King had come prepared. No wonder the Hundred Battle Territory proposed holding this gambled battle.

If it weren't for the Sleeping King's unpredictability clinching their first win, Daluo Territory could have already lost completely.

"Ahah, it seems like we, the Hundred Battle Territory, have gotten an easy win!" The Sword-Hiding Elder jeered with a smirk. Within the eyes of those in the camp of Daluo Territory, that smirk was absolutely disgusting.

The Condor King's eyes were cold as he carried Lord Asura, who had passed out from his injuries, back to the camp. Then, he left Lord Asura in others' care, and looked at the Dominator of Daluo, ever unmoving on his throne.

"Heh, a win and a loss."

The light around the Dominator of Daluo started to vibrate gently, then a soft laughter resonated. However, in that laughter was a sliver of discouraged spirit. "It seems like you are well prepared, Hundred Battle Territory."

Liu Tiandao, who had yet to utter a single word, now spoke with a smile. "Ohoh, you are mistaken, Dominator of Daluo. The Hundred Battle Territory is not as powerful as the Daluo Territory to begin with. They are merely giving their all to survive."

With the help of a powerful Earthly Sovereign like Liu Tiandao, the

Sword-Hiding Elder and the others were less fearful of the Dominator of Daluo. With a smile, the Elder spoke. "Dominator of Daluo, we are now tied after two matches. If you would kindly retreat, we can forget about the third match."

With a win and a loss, the third match of this gambled battle had unexpectedly become the most important yet. The candidate for the third match from the Hundred Battle Territory was Qin Bei. Among all the commanders in the Hundred Battle Territory, he was the one with the lowest profile. However, his capabilities were even acknowledged by the arrogant Lin Qingfeng. Many believed that his capabilities were considered rare, even among the younger generation of the North Territory.

On the other hand, Daluo Territory's candidate was a Grade Two Sovereign commander. While he may have had some fame, his was like earth compared to Qin Bei's heaven. Which was why for the third match, the Hundred Battle Territory was very confident. After all, as long as Qin Bei remained undefeated, this gambled battle could be considered their victory. Since Daluo Territory had brought such a crowd to the Hundred Battle Territory, even when they were ranked above the Hundred Battle Territory, they would become the laughingstock of the North Territory if they were to end this battle miserably.

On the side of Daluo Territory, countless powerful individuals looked at each other. Then they could not help staring at the youth standing before the Nine Nether Troop. Their eyes were filled with helplessness.

They had expected to clinch the first two matches. In that manner, the third match would not even matter. But who would have anticipated this turn of events...

A battle that shouldn't even have mattered had become the most important one.
The tide of change was truly unfathomable.

Facing the countless helpless gazes, Mu Chen could only shrug. He then looked at the Dominator of Daluo. To send him into battle or not clearly

still depended upon the will of the Dominator.

The countless gazes moved away from Mu Chen and toward the Dominator of Daluo. While everybody was focused on him, the Dominator laughed. There was not a shred of surprise within his laughter.

"It seems like the result is just as expected." As the Dominator's gentle laugh echoed, the expression on the faces of the powerful individuals in the camp of Daluo Territory turned solemn.

What does this mean? Had he anticipated this situation from the beginning? Why would he pick Mu Chen to fight in this most important battle? Is he that confident in him?

The Dominator of Daluo looked straight at Mu Chen, and a faint voice asked him, "The honor of Daluo Territory is dependant on the third match of this gambled battle. How confident are you of winning?"

Mu Chen held his right fist with his left palm and replied calmly, "I will give my all." He was still doubtful of the Dominator's interest in a minor character like himself. But since this opportunity has presented itself, he had no reason to reject it.

"Very well."

The Dominator of Daluo laughed and said, "Go. Fight in the third match."

In Daluo Territory's camp, innumerous powerful individuals forced bitter smiles. Since it seemed like the Dominator of Daluo had no intention of changing his mind, they could only wait and see if this new commander called Mu Chen was worthy of the Dominator's election.

"Good luck, Mu Chen!" Tang Bing tightened her fists as she encouraged Mu Chen. While she may not have known how this match would turn out, she still had to give Mu Chen her support.

Mu Chen nodded at her. When he wanted to move, he felt a gaze projected onto him. He raised his face and saw Nine Nether staring at him with a worried expression.

Mu Chen gave Nine Nether a smile. Without another word, his body vanished. And under the gaze of countless powerful individuals from both camps, he appeared in the sky. He then faced the Hundred Battle Territory's camp, his left palm clasping his right palm, and a clear and sonorous laughter resonated.

"Mu Chen of Nine Nether Palace from Daluo Territory, coming forward!"

Chapter 743: A Fierce Battle Between Giants

"Mu Chen from the Nine Nether Palace of the Daluo Territory has come for advice!"

The young man stood high up in the sky, as his clear and bright voice spread across the land. It also attracted the attention of countless powerful people within that battle territory. Soon after, as expected, this scene led to a low commotion.

The commotion was filled with alarms and sneers. This was because the people could all see that the young man in front of them only had the capability of a Grade Two Sovereign. This capability could only be considered as the bare minimum, when placed in accordance to their battle territory's commander levels. But, if it was to be compared with the abilities of top notch commanders, such as Qin Bei and Lin Qingfeng, there was just too much of a difference.

"Is there no one else in the Daluo Territory, such that they would actually have to send out this adolescent to battle? Would it not be easier to just admit your defeat?"

"Ha ha, you're right."

"..."

Many whispers, each filled with ridicule, were spreading around, but the handsome face of the young man in the sky remained calm, despite all this mockery.

"Hmph, it's this fellow again!"

At an area of the battle territory, Qin Tiangang was looking at Mu Chen's shadow with a gloomy gaze. Behind him, Qin Ling's face was also livid. His Thunder Magic Congregation was defeated by Mu Chen, resulting in heavy casualties. Now that they had met again, it was only natural for him to be furious.

"This brat has an exaggerated opinion of his own abilities. So much so, that he thinks of Qin Bei as being someone who can be easily challenged." Qin Lin grit his teeth as he spoke, while his tone was filled with taunting.

The only reason why Mu Chen could have defeated him was because he was more skilled in his control of fighting spirit. But the sort of fight now was the kind where troops would be useless, and yet, he still dared to show up. He really was so arrogant, to the point that Qin Ling did not know what the dominator of the Daluo Territory was thinking to place the task of such an important fight unto this brat!

"Actually, I want to see how battered he would be after experiencing Qin Bei's power." Qin Ling looked at Mu Chen's shadow with a dense gaze. He was already quite anxious to see the look of a lost dog on Mu Chen's appearance later.

While these people were whispering, at the forefront of the battle territory, Qin Bei who was wearing a green garment, raised his head. He looked over at Mu Chen's shadow, yet there was no hint of contempt in his eyes. The fact that he had come this far could only mean that he was not a stupid person.

Moreover, even if Mu Chen was truly just a phoney, he was still going to do his best against him. This type of steadiness had increasingly distinguished Mu Chen for the past few years, becoming known as his most reliable quality. So now, just like a lion wrestling with a rabbit, he was also going to give it his all.

"Qin Bei, we're relying on you for the final battle," Sword-hiding elderly said with a low tone, as he looked over at Qin Bei.

Qin Bei nodded and did not say another word. He took a stride and appeared in front of Mu Chen, with a flash of his figure. Then, his dull voice began to spread.
"Battle territory. Sorrowful Sky. Qin Bei."

Mu Chen looked at this man, who had a dull expression on his face, which was accompanied by a slightly grave stare. Although this man had yet to operate his spiritual energy, the transmission of a faint pressure was

enough to make Mu Chen aware that this person before him could possibly be even stronger than Qin Ling from the Thunder Magic Sect. It was clear that Qin Bei's capability was at least at the level of a Grade Three Sovereign.

"The fact that you could be chosen by Daluo's dominator, despite only having the capabilities of a Grade Two Sovereign, must mean that you have some outstanding properties. I hope you can enlighten me," Qin Bei said lightly, while staring at Mu Chen.

He did not continue saying anything else, but instead, took a light step across the space behind him, which was suddenly beginning to distort. The expanse of the Sovereign Sea was partly visible, as the fluctuation of the surging spiritual energy engulfed the sky and land.

This sort of fluctuating spiritual energy was one that exceeded the peak of a Grade Three Sovereign. In fact, the current Qin Bei must have already begun to step into the level of a Grade Four Sovereign. With more practice, it would even be possible for him to complete his breakthrough and become a Grade Four Sovereign!

Over at the Daluo Territory, many strong people felt the fluctuation of the spiritual energy being emitted from Qin Bei's body, as the displeasure was clear on all of their faces. As for Xu Qing and Zhou Yue, their expressions were solemn.

Both of their capabilities were actually up to the standard of a Grade Three Sovereign. But, when compared to Qin Bei, they were lacking by a good length. Hence, if they were the ones sent in for this fight, everything would probably end in disaster.

Both of them shared a look, before letting out a soft sigh. Qin Bei was truly the most low profiled, yet the most capable commander in the battle territory.

"Has he already begun to step into the level of a Grade Four Sovereign?"

Mu Chen was also staring at Qin Bei's shadow with a solemn look. This sort of capability was truly the strongest out of all the commanders he had ever seen.

He sneered.

A bright flash of lightning began to flicker from the surface of Mu Chen's body. Soon after, he clenched his hand, and his whole body instantly turned into thunder, while nine lightning runes emerged from his chest area.

When the Thunder God Physique was urged to its peak, Mu Chen's gaze suddenly became chilly. He took a step firmly, and his figure actually strangely disappeared during a space warp.

When Mu Chen's shadow disappeared, Qin Bei's gaze fluctuated for a moment. Soon after, he vigorously formed a seal with one hand, then beat it toward the space behind him. In that seal, the spiritual energy, which was as majestic as the sea, stirred along with it.

Boom!

Suddenly, there was a crack in the space behind Qin Bei. A dragon's shadow swept out in a flash, immediately turning into Mu Chen's shadow. As for his extremely powerful wind blast of fist, it had already turned into Rushing Thunder, and was now aiming to strike Qin Bei's head in an extremely vicious manner.

At the same time, Qin Bei's seal had also coincidentally swept over. Then, their fist prints collided.

Thud!

The blast from the violent spiritual energy wreaked intense havoc. Mu Chen's shadow jolted slightly, before his stature shot out from below. He had to stamp his soles heavily in the air in order to stabilize his body. A numb feeling was emitting from that fist.

He raised his head to look at Qin Bei, but he seemed to have only taken a few steps back. Clearly, there was not much effect, despite his having used the Dragon Soaring Art's sky piercing attack.

"Despite only having the capabilities of a Grade Two Sovereign, you still managed to make a tear in space from a short distance. You really do have some skills," Qin Bei said lightly, while staring at Mu Chen.

Mu Chen smiled, but did not reply.

"I don't like to probe when I fight. So don't blame me for not giving you the chance to prove yourself." Qin Bei smiled as well, but that smile was slightly cold.

He waved his sleeved robe, and it began to move on its own. Suddenly, it drummed up and made a fluttering noise. At the same time, that spiritual energy, which was as majestic as the sea, had also swept out overwhelmingly.

With a shift in his stature, he immediately appeared high up in the sky. Then, he held out his palm across the void from Mu Chen, pressing down lightly. The moment he pressed down, what seemed to be a light rune appeared on his palm. That light rune resembled a stone tablet.

Boom!

Suddenly, the bright spiritual energy began to spread downward, as it was actually following the pressing motion of Qin Bei's palm. Then, it turned into a huge palm of spiritual energy. And, in that palm, ten thousand fathoms of radiance abruptly burst out from a stone tablet rune. It was as if this palm could suppress even mighty mountains and rivers.

"Large Monument of Spiritual Hand!"

While Qin Bei was making a low sound, that huge palm of spiritual energy was already turning into a shadow, as it began to envelop Mu Chen, causing him to be unable to dodge it.

Phew.

Mu Chen took a deep breath, as the cold rays in his black eyes stirred. All of a sudden, an appalling ominous aura soared up to the sky. A huge Demonic Pillar appeared in a flash, and was immediately held tightly in Mu Chen's arms. Then, it began to whirl and violently shake together, along with that huge palm of spiritual energy.

Dong! Dong!

The terrifying spiritual energy continuously stormed over, engulfing

everything. Along with the repression by the huge palm of spiritual energy, Mu Chen, as well as the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, were also descending to the earth, section by section. Clearly, this sort of direct confrontation was more beneficial for Qin Bei, who had strong spiritual energy.

Dong!

Mu Chen's figure fell unto the peak of a mountain, and immediately, the peak was crushed. The Great Meru Demonic Pillar was holding back the Spiritual Hand Stone Tablet. The bright lightning on Mu Chen's body was madly fluctuating.

Soon after, there seemed to be a low growl coming from his throat. At this moment, the ancient demonic rune on the Great Meru Demonic Pillar seemed to be squirming. At the same time, that fierce demonic force, which made a person's heart palpitate, had also completely erupted.

Boom!

At this moment, the blood-red ominous light beam directly pierced through that Spiritual Hand Stone Tablet. The Great Meru Demonic Pillar had also penetrated the Palm Print Stone Tablet, before completely shattering it.

Despite having shattered this Spiritual Hand Stone Tablet, Mu Chen did not show any sign of relaxing in his expression. Instead, he raised his head with a solemn expression, as he saw huge Palm Print Stone Tablets continuously falling from the sky. The sort of repression caused by such strong spiritual energy had directly caused the mountain peaks to show signs of collapse.

When Qin Bei took action, it was exactly like how he said it would be, where he would not have any plans to hold back. This sort of violent offensive was enough to kill any strong person with a Grade Three Sovereign rank.

Over at the Daluo Territory, countless strong people shuddered with fear, due to Qin Bei's offensive. Xu Qing and Zhou Yue's expressions were even more glum, when compared to the rest, because they knew that, if it

was them who had been sent for this fight, they would have been defeated by this round's offensive.

They simply did not know how Mu Chen was going to cope with this sort of attack.
Their gazes were fixated upon that collapsed mountain peak.

The young man supported the Great Meru Demonic Pillar with his hands, as he stood on a huge rock. Although there was a solemn expression on that handsome face, it was still calm and fearless. As for Tang Bing and the other strong people from Nine Nether Palace, their fists were clenched tightly, their eyes filled with worry.

From the battle territory's aspect, many strong people's demeanors were gradually relaxing. According to them, it seemed like there was already a result from this fight. Qin Bei's offensive had made it extremely disadvantageous for that brat called Mu Chen.

Streams of Spiritual Hand Stone Tablets descended in a whizz, and were reflected in Mu Chen's eyes, as if they were causing landslides and tsunamis. But, there was still no hint of fear in his expression. Instead, he closed his eyes and suddenly formed a seal with both his hands.

A bright golden light seemed to be sweeping out the very moment the streams of Spiritual Hand Stone Tablets crashed down. Suddenly, there was an overflow of light beams, which enveloped everything between the sky and land.

Boom! Boom!

The sound of a roar resounded through the air, while the earth was trembling wildly. All the mountains were beginning to collapse, and streams of large cracks were continuously spreading away from their lines of sight. Smoke and dust permeated the air.

There was silence throughout the space between the sky and land. Over at the Daluo Territory, countless people's faces were tightly wound up. However, over at the battle territory, there were some people who couldn't help but laugh out loud...

However, their laughter only lasted for a short while, as that smoke and dust, which was soaring up to the sky, had bright golden light shooting out from amongst it. High up in the sky, the usual dull expression on Qin Bei's face had uncontrollably changed.

With a wave of his sleeved robe, a fierce wind swept away all the smoke and dust. Once all the smoke and dust dispersed, he concentrated his gaze to see a tall and huge shadow standing upright within the ruins of the collapsed mountain. A gold scorching sun was suspended behind him, and at the same time, an indescribable feeling of repression began to envelop him.

At that area which was covered by the tall and huge shadow, which was emitting golden rays, was Mu Chen, who was standing still, quietly and unscathed. He raised his head and looked up at Qin Bei.

The moment the both of them made eye contact, within the fluctuation of a cold ray, there were sparks surging. It seemed as if, even the area where they looked face to face, was beginning to distort.

Only a scene like this could be considered as being the true battle between giants!

Chapter 744: The Arhat Celestial Body

A bright golden light permeated the air while that huge golden shadow stood tall within the ruins of the mountain. A golden scorching sun was suspended behind the shadow's head. Like the sudden appearance of a giant Buddha, it brought a fearful aura of coercion.

Countless powerful people in the world narrowed their eyes in response to seeing the sudden appearance of that huge golden shadow. This was due to the fact that they felt the strong oppressive feeling emitted from that huge shadow's body.

This sort of oppressive feeling was not something a Grade Two Sovereign could possess.

Although they could all see that the huge shadow, which resembled a golden Buddha, was the Sovereign Celestial Body trained by Mu Chen, everyone who was present found it difficult to figure out the origin of this Sovereign Celestial Body.

Because this sort of Sovereign Celestial Body didn't seem to exist within the 99 Sovereign Celestial Body ranking, and this kind of valiant oppressive feeling didn't seem to be from a normal unnamed Sovereign Celestial Body.

"Could it be a mysterious Sovereign Celestial Body, which has never been recorded in the rankings?" There were whispers among the powerful people. To many Sovereign Masters, this kind of powerful Sovereign Celestial Body had a fair amount of attractiveness.

In the sky, Qin Bei also had his brows furrowed while looking over at that Sovereign Celestial Body which was so bright, it looked as if it had been cast in gold. He said, "You really do have some skills."

But he was not surprised by this. After all, Mu Chen was the person chosen by the Dominator of Daluo. No matter how stupid a person may be, they would not doubt the choice of a Earthly Sovereign Master.

Boom!

While Qin Bei was thinking, Mu Chen, who was below him and standing on top of the Great Solar Undying Body's Celestial Spirit Cover, did a change of seals with a cold gaze. There was a surge of golden light before he stamped the feet of the Great Solar Undying Body and immediately soared up into the sky.

Swish!

Although the body was huge, it had the speed of rushing thunder. Everyone could only see a golden streak soaring up into the sky. Then, the Great Solar Undying Body appeared in the air above Qin Bei.

Dong!

A huge palm of golden light immediately clapped down on Qin Bei with a loud bang. As it fell from the sky, the huge gold palm looked as if it had shattered the void and carried with it a glaring golden light as well as an earth-shattering feeling of oppression.

The strong wind, which seemed as if it could suffocate a person, was beginning to oppress him. Qin Bei's face turned grave before vigorously shooting out another palm. A Spiritual Hand Stone Tablet roared out.

Dong!

Two huge palm prints firmly shook together, but this time, Qin Bei's Spiritual Hand Stone Tablet no longer gained the upper hand. Instead, the instant those two palm prints made contact, it was immediately crushed.

A shockwave swept out. Qin Bei's body jolted before being pushed back a few hundred yards by the attack of that strong wind.

Wow.

Suddenly, over in the direction of the Hundred Battle Territory, the sound of surprise erupted. Clearly, they did not think that Qin Bei, who had the upper hand just a short while ago, would be so quickly suppressed. It was also then that they put away the contempt they had in their hearts towards Mu Chen. This brat, who looked as if he only was a Grade Two Sovereign, seemed to truly possess some unique skills.

"If you still don't want to summon your Sovereign Celestial Body, then I'm afraid you will not have the prestige which you had a while ago," Mu Chen said as he stood on top of the Sovereign Celestial Body and directed a smile at Qin Bei.

Qin Bei's gaze turned cold. He stared at Mu Chen before taking a deep breath and saying lightly, "Then I will do as you wish!"

Suddenly, he placed his hands together and soon after, the seal changed with the speed of lightning leaving only an afterimage.

Boom!

The spiritual energy, which was surging like the sea, erupted from within Qin Bei's body. Behind him, a huge shadow created out of cohesion soared up into the sky. That huge shadow had a similar approximate height of 10,000 feet and stood upright in the sky. The Celestial Body looked as if it were wearing a golden kasaya, and lying sideways within its arms was the huge golden staff of a Buddhist monk. A bold and powerful aura swept out.

"That is the Arhat Celestial Body, which is ranked 93rd in the 99 Sovereign Celestial Body ranking!"

When Qin Bei's Sovereign Celestial Body had been summoned, it immediately caused many people to cry out in surprise. It was assumed that they were rather familiar with this Celestial Body. After all, this was also considered Sorrowful Sky's top Celestial Body. Only the most prominent disciples could have the qualification to practice this.

"The Arhat Celestial Body which is ranked 93rd?"

Mu Chen looked over at that Celestial Body, which possessed a bold and powerful aura, but he only smiled faintly. If they were to really discuss the subject of the ranking of Sovereign Celestial Bodies, then perhaps no one else who was present had a higher ranking than the Great Solar Undying Body.

If the capabilities of both parties were of the same rank, then Mu Chen had the utmost confidence that with the Great Solar Undying Body, he

could completely annihilate anyone who was present.

Boom!

Clearly, Qin Bei did not know the meaning of politeness as the moment he summoned the Arhat Celestial Body, he stamped his feet vigorously, causing the Celestial Body to violently sweep out. That golden staff of a Buddhist monk had also turned into a powerful flood and was directly sweeping towards the Great Solar Undying Body.

The flood created by the golden staff was magnified in Mu Chen's eyes. He made a beckoning motion with his hand, and the Great Meru Demonic Pillar appeared in the hands of the Great Solar Undying Body. Soon after, there was a violent surge of an ominous aura before it directly moved upwards uncompromisingly.

Although Qin Bei had already begun to step into the level of a Grade Four Sovereign, Mu Chen did not fear him at all if they were to compare their Sovereign Celestial Bodies!

Dong!

The collision of two giants in the sky seemed to cause even the space to quake. The flood from the staff and the afterimage of the Demonic Pillar were continuously banging against each other. The gold and metal resounded like muffled thunder while the glaring sparks blossomed in the sky like fireworks.

Everyone watched the battle in the air with shock on their faces. Both parties did not seem to show any sign of holding back as every attack was vicious and merciless. If they were hit by one of these attacks, they would surely be seriously injured.

In the time span of only a few minutes, the two giants had already fought hand to hand like lightning for up to a hundred rounds in the air. The fluctuation of that surging spiritual energy caused everything in the space to distort.

Over at Daluo Territory, almost a majority of the powerful people were staring at the crossing of swords in the air in shock. As for Xu Qing, Zhou

Yue, and the rest, their gazes were even more surprised and perplexed.

As compared to the previous crossing of swords with Wu Tian, the capabilities that Mu Chen was currently showing clearly disclosed how much stronger he was now. In fact, he could hold his own while fighting hand to hand with Qin Bei, who had already begun to step into the level of a Grade Four Sovereign. This one point was something that even they had to admit they could not do.

They made eye contact and forced a smile. They had not noticed that this young man, who had only been in Daluo Territory for less than a year, had already grown to this extent. No wonder he was chosen by Lord Dominator.

"After this battle, I'm afraid I will have to yield my position as one of the four great commanders." Xu Qing smiled. On the contrary, he was far from being jealous, though he did feel a little discontent. It looked like he would have to intensify his practice later on. Otherwise, if Mu Chen exceeded him too much, it would be a rather big blow to him.

Zhou Yue nodded as well and said, "This Mu Chen is certainly much better than Cao Feng's flow."

Boom!

While many powerful people were changing their minds, the crossing of swords in the air was relentless as the violent attacks continued.

Qin Bei was standing on top of the Arhat Celestial Body's Celestial Spirit Cover, and his stature was as though it had fused together with the Arhat Celestial Body. But as they continued to fight hand to hand, the more he fought, the more he was scared. This was because he could not feel any sign of decline in power from Mu Chen's Great Solar Undying Body. Furthermore, the power transmitted by that Demonic Pillar was causing the golden light on his Buddhist monk's staff to weaken a little.

"There is something strange about this fellow's Sovereign Celestial Body!" There was a shift in Qin Bei's gaze, and soon after, his expression gradually became more fierce. It looked as if this battle could no longer be dragged out in this manner.

"That should be good enough."

Qin Bei's gaze swept through the space before he suddenly placed his hands together to form a seal.

When he was forming the seal, that Arhat Celestial Body also stepped about a few thousand yards backwards. Its huge hands clapped together violently and caused a loud buzz to spread out like thunder, "Arhat Golden Zen Array!"

Buzz!

Just when that loud sound began to spread, Mu Chen's gaze suddenly turned grave. He raised his head abruptly and saw that the space he was in was actually fluctuating. The golden light had actually turned into several Buddhist monk's golden staffs. They appeared around him and were surrounding him from every angle.

There were approximately a thousand Buddhist monk's golden staffs. Their influence was extremely shocking, and the violent fluctuations of spiritual energy had also caused the sky and land to convulse.

The sudden appearance of this scene had also shocked the countless powerful people from both sides. Everyone's gazes upon Qin Bei were filled with astonishment. This fellow was truly the Hundred Battle Territory's most low-profiled yet most impressive commander. Who would have thought that he could actually arrange such a murderous array in secret while fighting closely with Mu Chen.

The so-called Arhat Golden Zen Array was not a Spiritual Array, but rather something secretly created out of cohesion by Qin Bei. Such a scale of attack was enough to determine the result of this battle.

"This battle has ended."

When Elder Cang Jian and the rest saw this scene, they suddenly started to smile faintly because they were all aware that this Arhat Golden Zen Array was one of Qin Bei's hidden killing trump cards. The moment he laid out that kind of attack, it would be enough to wreck any opponent.

For the past few years, countless people's Sovereign Celestial Bodies

were turned to dust due to Qin Bei's Arhat Golden Zen Array.

Mu Chen raised his head and looked over at the densely packed Buddhist monk's golden staffs. While he felt the violent fluctuations of spiritual energy, his gaze also became slightly solemn. Qin Bei was certainly someone who could not be easily dealt with.

Boom!

When the battle array was complete, Qin Bei waved the sleeves of his robe without any hesitation. Those Buddhist monk's golden staffs, which were all over the place, pierced through the void and turned into countless golden ribbons which were now rushing towards that huge Great Solar Undying Body.

Whoosh! Whoosh!

An earth-shattering attack began to envelop him. Mu Chen took a deep breath before quickly forming a seal with his hands. While he was forming a seal, he could see something similar to a golden sun blooming from the space between the Great Solar Undying Body's eyebrows.

"Sovereign Super Power, the strength of a sun!"

Within the eyes of that Great Solar Undying Body, what seemed like the essence of a golden light shot out. Soon after, it folded its hands, and a golden light enveloped an area of 1,000 feet within its range.

The attack of that Golden Zen, which was all over the place, had already arrived.

Bang! Bang!

However, just while the thousands of Golden Zen ribbons were beginning to rush into the area covered by golden light, they suddenly exploded in thin air and turned into a golden light, filling up the sky right in front of everyone who was watching in horror.

There were continuous sounds of explosions. That circle of golden light was like a barrier which was capable of overrunning all fortifications. No matter how much the Golden Zen attack bellowed, it was simply unable to

go near that huge body.

The sound of explosions went on continuously everywhere. Only that golden Sovereign Celestial Body stood quietly upright in the midst of the golden light, and remained towering and unmoving no matter how destructive the attacks were.

At that moment, all the noise in the world had quieted down.

At the same time, the smiles on the faces of Elder Cang Jian and the other tycoons of the Hundred Battle Territory had also turned a little stiff.

The world was silent save for the explosions from that Golden Zen, which lingered in their ears.

Chapter 745: The Hand of Blood Asura

Dong! Dong!

In the quiet world, the golden flood attacked the huge body, which was standing still in between the sky and land, just like a rainstorm. However, the moment these floods entered into that circle of golden light, they were all decrepitated. Although the attack was intensely scary, it was still unable to make contact with that huge body.

Hiss.

Silence continued within the camps of both sides. Then, there were the sounds of people sucking breaths of cool air. It could be assumed that no one had expected that Qin Bei's long prepared attack could be so easily stopped by Mu Chen.

Before this, they had thought that this sort of attack was enough to end this fight. But that young man called Mu Chen had shown them once again the meaning of "keeping one's own counsel".

Phew.

Over at the Daluo Territory, Nine Nether and Lord Mountain Cracker, as well as many other strong people, quietly let out breaths of relief. That day, there was a hint of surprise that swept over the eyes of the Condor King, the Spiritual Pupil King, and even the Sleeping King. Clearly, Mu Chen's performance had similarly exceeded their expectations.

It was also clear that the dominator of Daluo, who was seated on the throne, was the only still calm one. The light that enveloped him was slightly fluctuating, as if it was also paying attention to the fight in the air.

While the above mentioned were letting out breaths of relief, over at the Hundred Battle Territory, Elder Cang Jian and the rest had ghastly expressions on their faces. The smiles they had worn before were no longer there, having been replaced by solemn looks in their eyes. The extent of Mu Chen's trickiness was clearly beyond their expectations.

Boom! Boom!

The continuous sounds of explosions in the air had also begun to gradually grow thinner. The power of the omnipresent Golden Zen ribbon also started to show signs of decline. Finally, it disappeared completely. At that moment, the world had truly quieted down.

Qin Bei stood on top of the Arhat Celestial Body. There was a ghastly expression on his face. He was looking from afar at that huge golden body, which had remained unscathed.

Then, he took a deep breath in order to constrain the surprise and anger in his heart. He slowly said, "As is to be expected from the person hand-picked by the dominator of Daluo, you are certainly impressive."

The word impressive was not said in a mocking tone. In fact, at this moment, he truly considered Mu Chen to be an opponent of the same level. Thus, he no longer dared to underestimate him, even in the slightest bit.

Mu Chen raised his head as well. He directed a faint smile at Qin Bei, but his gaze was still extremely fierce. He slowly clapped his palms together, then said lightly, "It is impolite not to reciprocate. You should try experiencing one of my moves!"

Boom!

Both palms of The Great Solar Undying Body had also clapped together with a loud bang. At the area between its brows, that golden scorching sun was getting increasingly brighter as well.

Then, the gilded light, which was liquid-like in nature, surged out and circulated alongside that huge body, before finally surging to the top of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. The Great Meru Demonic Pillar, which was filled with an ominous aura, immediately became resplendent with light.

Those golden liquids appeared as if they had turned into golden crystals, as they covered the entire top of the Demonic Pillar. In the midst of all the flickering golden light, it seemed like there was nothing it could not accomplish!

Dong!

The huge golden body stamped its feet heavily, and the body turned into a golden streak, before soaring up into the sky. In a split second, it directly appeared in the sky above Qin Bei. Without any hesitation, the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, which was like a golden pillar in his hands, swooped down heavily, carrying a bright golden light with it.

Bang!

When the golden light whizzed past, streams of black cracks were immediately formed, due to the shattering of the space. The scene was dramatic, looking similar to glass on the verge of breaking. When Mu Chen hurled down his Demonic Pillar, he operated the spiritual energy in his body to the extreme.

He then added on the power of a sun, which was on the area between the brows of The Great Solar Undying Body. This sort of power was nearly reaching its peak.

The golden light flooded Qin Bei's eyes. He, too, could not help but display a change in his facial expression. He gritted his teeth vigorously, before biting and swallowing a medicinal pill that had been hidden in his mouth.

Boom!

A surge of spiritual energy suddenly erupted from within Qin Bei's body. He formed a seal with both hands at lightning speed. His low call resounded through the world: "Spiritual Mountain Protection!"

When the surge of spiritual energy whizzed out, it actually turned into a huge and faintly discernible mountain outside of that enormous Sovereign Celestial Body! At the top of the mountain, it seemed as if there were towering golden halls, each standing tall while emitting a mysterious aura.

However, the golden Demonic Pillar did not seem to be bothered, as it continued its peremptory smash. Finally, while carrying a seemingly earth-shattering power, it exploded at the top of the huge mountain.

Bang!

The sky was shaking. Suddenly, streams of cracks were beginning to

spread outwards from the top of the mountain. Bright lights could be seen shooting out from those cracks, until finally, the mountain collapsed, layer by layer, as the golden Demonic Pillar brutally crushed down from within the cracks.

Boom! Boom!

The huge mountain may have been exploding entirely, but Qin Bei's defense was still extremely impressive. With every deeper penetration of the golden Demonic Pillar, the golden crystals covering its top were also crushed a little.

Everyone was watching this scene and shuddering in fear. At first, they thought that, considering the amazingness of the previous two outstanding battle rounds, the third battle round would be extremely boring. However, the current situation was telling them that, if they were to compare the level of danger between these battle rounds, then perhaps the third round would be the most magnificent one of all!

The golden Demonic Pillar continued to vigorously destroy the mountain. Clearly, with that sort of momentum, it was planning to force out Qin Bei, who was hiding within in order to inflict serious damage later.

When the mountain had already been destroyed halfway, the Sovereign Celestial Body, which was hidden within, finally revealed itself. Qin Bei's shadow was still standing tall on top of the Sovereign Celestial Body's Celestial Spirit Cover.

"Found you!" The fierce look in his eyes were surging. The golden Demonic Pillar, which had already peeled off more than half of the golden crystals, emboldened its final power and smashed downwards violently onto Qin Bei.

At this moment, Qin Bei abruptly raised his head. The radiance in his eyes appeared to have become even more glaring. Then, he changed his seal, and the golden staff of a Buddhist monk in the hands of the Arhat Celestial Body heavily collided with the golden Demonic Pillar.

Clang!

A golden light erupted from the point of collision. Mu Chen felt a jolt in his heart, for he could feel that Qin Bei's strength seemed to have had a powerful upgrade once again.

The ability of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar to descend was obstructed. Then, the golden Buddhist monk's staff shook violently, causing the layer of golden crystals at the top of the Demonic Pillar to immediately shatter.

The Great Meru Demonic Pillar was also blown away at this time. The huge hand of The Great Solar Undying Body reached out and grabbed it, while Mu Chen looked over at Qin Bei's shadow with a solemn expression in his eyes.

Qin Bei's robe fluttered in the air. Soon after, he raised his head abruptly. His eyes, flickering with a glaring radiance, focused straight on Mu Chen. Then, the spiritual energy within his body erupted in full force.

Boom!

That broken mountain of spiritual energy turned into light spots, which then dissipated and filled up the sky. Only Qin Bei's surge of spiritual energy was steadily rising, permeating the space between the sky and the land. Suddenly, it attracted countless voices filled with fright.

"With this sort of spiritual energy fluctuation, could it be that Qin Bei has already advanced into a Grade Four Sovereign?!"

"Although there is a slight irregularity in his breathing, he is certainly stronger than he was before!"

"Could it be that he was hiding his capability until just now? This is too terrifying!"

"..."

The sounds of surprise immediately resounded throughout the world. This was most likely due to the shock caused by the sudden rise in Qin Bei's capabilities.

With a flicker of Spiritual Light in the Spiritual Pupil King's eyes, he saw through the condition in Qin Bei's body, then said in a cold voice, "His

breathing is disorganized, and his spiritual energy is slightly violent. This is not the behavior of a voluntary breakthrough. He must have used some sort of medicinal pill."

The Condor King furrowed his brows slightly. This Hundred Battle Territory really wanted to win this battle by hook or by crook. Did they not know that there will always be residual effects caused by the act of forcing a breakthrough? It may not necessarily be a good thing in the long run."

In the sky, Mu Chen had also let out a breath lightly, as he stared at Qin Bei's shadow with furrowed brows. This fellow is extremely troublesome, to the extent that he could actually bear such tricks!

On top of that Arhat Celestial Body, Qin Bei's stature was rising slowly to the sky. He stared at Mu Chen with a sharp look and said lightly, "You are considered to be the first person to have ever forced me to this step! And, with just the capabilities of a Grade Two Sovereign! Thus, in order to express my respect for you, I will use my strongest means to defeat you."

When Qin Bei finished speaking, he lightly clapped his hands together. With that, his palms began to tremble, and faint traces of blood began permeating out from the pores of his palm. The blood was flowing, and in just a short amount of time, it had already rendered Qin Bei's hands completely scarlet. There was also a faint air of ferociousness emanating from it.

When the strong people from both sides saw this scene, there were immediate sounds of surprise spreading out...

"Is that Sorrowful Sky's top Divine Art, the Hand of Blood Asura?!"

"The moment this Divine Art is put to use, both palms could be disabled for a month. This Qin Bei is really going to go all out."

"This time, it looks like Mu Chen will be in actual danger."

While the sounds of surprise could be heard everywhere, Qin Bei's palms were becoming increasingly scarlet, and a hint of pain had swept across his brow. The thick scent of blood was beginning to emit from his palms. The blood had even caused the sky to turn scarlet as well!

Mu Chen's expression was growing increasingly solemn, as he asked, "Are we going to carry out the final fight?!"

Mu Chen knit his brows, a sharp look emerging in his black eyes. For the past few years, he had encountered innumerable dangerous situations. Thus, not only was this sort of life threatening act insufficient to scare him, but it had also evoked a ferociousness that was normally hidden in his bones.

Phew.

Mu Chen took a deep breath. His hands hung down slowly. In his right hand, the spiritual energy, which was burning with purple flames, was quietly surging. Meanwhile, a spiritual energy that was formed by the circulation of formless lightning, emerged from his left hand.

At this very moment, two spiritual energies with completely different attributes began to appear...

The Sovereign Sea could be partly seen from the space behind him. Faintly presenting two colors, it had also attracted countless expressions of shock. This was because all who saw it could instantly sense that the spiritual energy within the Sovereign Sea clearly possessed two completely different attributes!

This young man called Mu Chen had actually merged the bizarre powers of two properties within his spiritual energy! No wonder he could confront Qin Bei with just the capabilities of a Grade Two Sovereign!

However, even with this amazing development, it did not seem like enough to stop Qin Bei's final attack..

The sky was already completely scarlet, even Qin Bei's eyes had turned red by now. The next moment, his hands, which were clapped together, separated themselves slowly. The streaks of hideous scars on his palm were clearly visible now, and looked like some strange rune that was emitting a daunting pulse.

Qin Bei sucked in a deep breath from the bloody air. Then, with a sudden vigorous look in his eyes, his palms shot out abruptly!

Boom!

All the bloody aura in the world was converging wildly, before immediately turning into a huge Shadow of Blood Asura behind Qin Bei. Then, the tall and enormous bloody palm began to loom overhead, as it relentlessly carried a bloody surge that was capable of freezing a person's blood. Countless people held their breaths at this dramatic moment.

When that heinous bloody aura came pouring in, Mu Chen raised his head abruptly as well. Suddenly, he clenched his palms tightly. In his black eyes, there was the fluctuation of a purple flame and the flickering of lightning.

Meanwhile, within the Sovereign Sea behind him, there was a surprising sound of the cries of dragons and elephants, which resounded throughout the horizon.

Chapter 746: To Risk One’s Life

The bloody red Hand of Asura fell from the sky just like a demon from outer space attempting to wipe out all living beings on earth. The rich aura of blood permeated the air throughout the world.

Countless powerful people had a solemn expression on their faces as they looked at Qin Bei's all-out attack. Even for a true Grade Four Sovereign, they could only temporarily avoid the spearhead of this level of attack.

How was Mu Chen going to withstand that sort of attack?

Countless gazes immediately shifted as everyone looked towards the young man's shadow, which was standing in mid-air. Suddenly, Mu Chen formed a seal with both hands right in front of everyone's eyes.

Roar!

The resonant cries of a dragon and elephant suddenly spread out from the vast Sovereign Sea behind Mu Chen. Soon after, towering stormy waves began to roll over and over from the Sovereign Sea.

Splash!

A giant dragon burning with purple flames vigorously rushed out from the Sovereign Sea's surface. During the appearance of this giant dragon, another gigantic elephant covered with formless lightning had also broken through the surface of the sea.

The dragon and elephant immediately rushed out from the Sovereign Sea, and then they were suspended in the air above Mu Chen. Suddenly, a powerful and unparalleled fluctuation of spiritual energy was emitted from within their bodies. For a moment, even the bloody air sweeping over them was also greatly diluted.

Countless people's expressions were frozen as they stared at the scene. They could clearly see the formidability of Mu Chen's means. For a moment, everyone quietly held their breath. Could it be that this fellow was really capable of withstanding such an all-out attack from Qin Bei?

Buzz!

The dragon and elephant stood tall at the horizon before directly colliding with each other. Immediately, there was a surge of purple flames and lightning. When the two types of brilliant rays erupted, it seemed to change into a bright circle of light that was intertwined by a huge dragon and elephant. Two spiritual energies with completely different attributes merged together in this manner before immediately setting off a terrifying hurricane of spiritual energy.

The huge Dragon Elephant aureole was suspended in mid-air. The fluctuation carrying everything away caused countless powerful people's eyes to twitch. However, they could still see that although Mu Chen's move was impressive, it still lacked the maturity to contend with Qin Bei's Palm of Blood Asura.

Over at Daluo Territory, there was an anxious look on the faces of countless powerful people. Even the princes' hearts were beating quickly. If this was the extent of Mu Chen's move this time, it might not be enough to block Qin Bei.

The Dominator of Daluo remained seated on the throne without any unusual change in the radiance surrounding him. Judging by his appearance, he did not seem to be worried at all about Mu Chen's defeat.

Over at the Hundred Battle Territory, Liu Tiandao stood with his hands clasped behind his back. He looked over at the Dragon Elephant aureole formed in the sky above Mu Chen. His brows were beginning to furrow, and there was a flicker in his eyes.

With everyone's eyes locked on him, Mu Chen had also raised his head to look at the huge Dragon Elephant aureole suspended in the sky above him. Soon after, he sucked in a deep breath. Of course, he knew that he might not be able to contend with Qin Bei using just a Dragon Elephant aureole created through the cohesion of a dragon and an elephant.

If this battle had taken place in the past, Mu Chen would have been at his wit's end. But now that he had successfully integrated the Netherworld Thunder Heart, he would finally be able to truly unleash the power of the

Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art.

White puffs of air blew out from Mu Chen's mouth while his black eyes turned vigorously fierce. Suddenly, there was an irregular change in the seal in his hands.

Boom!

Instantly, towering stormy waves began to roll over and over from within the Sovereign Sea, and an overwhelming radiance burst out. Two enormous swirls formed at the surface of the Sovereign Sea and were immediately followed by two huge rays of light shooting up into the sky.

Roar!

The resonant cries of a dragon and elephant resounded through the world once again. Within the light beam, a dragon and an elephant shot out before immediately turning into two bright rays of light which plunged into the Dragon Elephant aureole situated in the sky above Mu Chen.

Bang! Bang!

Following the participation of the dragon and elephant, the Dragon Elephant aureole, which was initially already huge, suddenly expanded at a surprising speed. At the same time, the violent fluctuations of spiritual energy were also steadily rising.

At this moment, there was an abrupt change in the expressions of countless people.

A pale look appeared on Mu Chen's face. It could be assumed that it was currently extremely burdensome for him to fully utilize the Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art to this extent. But at this point in time, he had no choice but to sustain himself.

I couldn't do it a while ago, but what about now?!

The cold rays in Mu Chen's eyes were surging. Soon after, without any further hesitation, he shot out a palm, and the enormous Dragon Elephant aureole, formed as a result of the cohesion of two dragons and two elephants, immediately burst out.

Swish!

With an indescribable speed, the Dragon Elephant aureole pierced through the void in a flash. By the time everyone could see it with their naked eyes, that Dragon Elephant aureole had already appeared underneath the repression of the Palm of Blood Asura.

"Break it!" Qin Bei called out with a glare, and the spiritual energy in his body was emboldened to the extreme. Suddenly, the huge palm, which had a bloody aura permeating the air around it, began its suppression before directly bumping with that Dragon Elephant aureole.

Boom!

At the moment of the impact, it was as if two meteorites tore through the sky and hit each other with an apocalyptic force. The shockwave, which could be seen with the naked eye, swept everything away. Immediately, it caused that space to be crushed, layer upon layer, while countless sharp shards shot out overwhelmingly.

The repercussion of the shockwave was so big that it caused the powerful people from both sides to hastily move. Suddenly, countless Spiritual Energy Screens flickered to form an enormous defense used to resist all the space shards shooting towards them.

As for Mu Chen and Qin Bei, who were over at the deep area where the shockwave had originated, they hurriedly retreated into their respective Sovereign Celestial Bodies, as they were afraid of being hit by the terrifying shockwave.

Mu Chen's figure fell into the Great Solar Undying Body, and by using the powerful defense it provided, he managed to withstand the shockwave as well as all the space shards. However, there were deep cuts on the Sovereign Celestial Body. Judging by the cuts, if Mu Chen had not obtained the Daluo Golden Body, just the shockwave would have been enough to seriously injure the Sovereign Celestial Body.

While the shockwave was raging wildly, countless people had their attention focused on the match high up in the sky. The Dragon Elephant aureole's light beams were getting increasingly violent during the

confrontation. When the two dragons and elephants let out what seemed like a crazed howl, the aureole actually started to spin wildly like the world's sharpest sawtooth.

However, this sawtooth was created by a dragon and an elephant.

After facing the terrifying lethality of the Dragon Elephant aureole, a small crack actually appeared with a snap on that Palm of Blood Asura.

Suddenly, there was a change in Qin Bei's expression.

The crack began to spread with surprising speed. Within the span of a few breaths, it had already spread all over that huge scarlet palm. In the end, it could no longer bear it, and that huge scarlet palm actually split into two!

Wow!

The sound of frightened uproars resounded throughout the world.

Although the Dragon Elephant aureole had greatly dimmed after tearing apart the Hand of Blood Asura, it was still able to lock onto that Arhat Celestial Body with surprising speed. Clearly, Mu Chen wanted to take this opportunity to make a move against Qin Bei.

When Qin Bei, who was within the Arhat Celestial Body, saw Mu Chen's actions, he did not panic, despite his ashen complexion. Instead, he gritted his teeth and vigorously changed the seal. The Hand of Blood Asura, which had been initially torn into two, became small in size and the spiritual energy also became disordered. However, it did not dissipate but instead whizzed out toward the Great Solar Undying Body.

The two of them chose to initiate the final attack regardless of their own safety!

Countless people watched with twitching eyes. These two fellows were unexpectedly equally ruthless with their decisions.

Dong!

The Dragon Elephant aureole was the first to make the attack against the Arhat Celestial Body. However, the moment it was hit, that Arhat

Celestial Body evaded it by shifting its body. Thus, when that beam of light swept across, half of the Arhat Celestial Body's shoulder was immediately cut off.

At the same time, the Hand of Blood Asura, which had been torn into two, had also slapped heavily onto the Great Solar Undying Body. Immediately, a golden light that filled up the sky sputtered out, and the sound of gold and metal resounded through the sky.

The two Sovereign Celestial Bodies were blown back 10,000 yards before staggering to their feet.

Countless gazes shifted over and saw the appearance of two deep palm prints on the Great Solar Undying Body's huge chest. Although this attack was shocking, it was clear that the Great Solar Undying Body's defense had exceeded everyone's expectations.

Whereas, when they looked over at Qin Bei's Arhat Celestial Body, they could only see that half of its shoulder had been cut off, and its spiritual energy was leaking out while showing signs of disorder. The Sovereign Celestial Body was beginning to show signs of dissipation.

Mu Chen's figure appeared once again on the Celestial Spirit Cover of the Great Solar Undying Body. There were traces of blood at the corners of his mouth. Soon after, he lightly wiped it away while fixing his cold gaze on the severely injured Arhat Celestial Body.

Clearly, both parties were exhausted from having exerted themselves to this extent.

Bang!

With the flash of an ominous glint in Mu Chen's eyes and a stomp of his feet, the Great Solar Undying Body, which was filled with wounds, shot up into the sky once again. Immediately, it appeared in front of the Arhat Celestial Body and ruthlessly swung down its fist.

Qin Bei hastily urged the Arhat Celestial Body to block the attack, but how was a one-armed Sovereign Celestial Body going to block the attack of the Great Solar Undying Body? When that huge fist rumbled down, it

immediately broke the Arhat Celestial Body's arm. It had also pierced through the Arhat Celestial Body's chest with just that one punch.

Bang!

The Arhat Celestial Body finally reached its limit, and with a bang, it turned into spots of light in the air. A staggering shadow fell down from it while wildly spitting blood before finally landing heavily on the peak of a mountain. The huge force from the fall caused the peak to shake until it collapsed.

Rumble.

While the huge mountain was rolling down, the camps from both sides suddenly went quiet. Their eyes, which were slightly bulging out from their sockets, expressed how shocked they felt at that moment.

Not only did Mu Chen block Qin Bei's strongest attack, he also took the opportunity to defeat Qin Bei once and for all!

The moment that the Arhat Celestial Body disintegrated, the result of the battle was clear!

However, that outcome was not something anyone could have expected from the beginning...

In the sky, the Great Solar Undying Body was also on the verge of collapse. Finally, it gradually dissipated, and Mu Chen's staggering shadow appeared with a similarly pale complexion along with traces of thick blood at the corners of his mouth.

Clearly, the confrontation against Qin Bei had also caused Mu Chen to suffer from quite a number of wounds. He was certainly very strong, but luckily, he was the one to smile all the way to the end of this potentially life-ending battle.

He slowly wiped off the traces of blood from the corners of his mouth and looked over at both camps. Soon after, he turned towards the direction of Daluo Territory before cupping his hands to greet the Dominator of Daluo, who was seated on the throne. A smile appeared on his pale face with great difficulty.

"Lord Dominator, I was fortunate enough to not have failed this mission."

Chapter 747: A Secret Uncovered

A slender figure stood in mid-air above the shambles. Although he looked exhausted after going through the fierce battle, his eyes were still as bright and sharp as before. His eyes brought a sudden halt in the hearts of those top powers, as no one would dare look down on him after witnessing the remarkable battle.

Numerous gazes were looking at the slender figure on this quieted land. It seemed like no one had yet recovered from their shock after the last round of the battle.

The silence remained for quite some time, before those gazes turned passionate. At that moment, an overwhelming uproar burst forth from the base camp of the Daluo Territory.

Who would have thought that this seemingly insignificant battle would decide the fate of the winner and loser of both parties?

Most of the lords heaved a sigh of relief, as if a heavy weight had finally been lifted off of their minds. A cheery smile also surfaced on the cold, pretty face of Nine Nether. She looked at the figure in that faraway sky, feeling comforted. The young man, who used to be fresh and innocent, was now growing at an astonishing speed.

Xu Qing and Zhou Yue both looked at each other and sighed softly. A surge of admiration surfaced in their eyes. In the previous battle with Wu Tian, Mu Chen had only managed to gain some recognition, as they were too proud of themselves.

But this time, he had earned their full respect. They knew that, if they were to have gone to battle, they would have lost to Qin Bei, especially under such an immense pressure to overturn the outcome.

Not far from them, Wu Tian from the Blood Hawk Palace was feeling resentful. He knew that, from now on, the gap between Mu Chen and him would only grow wider.

Within the Daluo Territory base camp, the ones that cheered the loudest

were from Nine Nether Palace. At that moment, even the coolest among them, Tang Bing, had a blush on her face.

Her beautiful eyes were staring at the distant figure. Ever since Nine Nether Palace was formed, it was the first time they had enjoyed such a glorious moment.

"Hehe, our Territory Lord has some foresight." The Condor King watched, smiling. Mu Chen was introduced by Nine Nether, and as such, he did have some expectations of him.

"Not too bad." Even the quiet Sleeping King commented with a smile.

The Dominator of Daluo sat on his throne, while the glow around him fluctuated, as if he was laughing, "He has great potential. Nine Nether has brought a real talent into our Daluo Territory."

Everyone could tell that he was very pleased with Mu Chen's performance this time.

In comparison to the loud cheer in the Daluo Territory, dejection and silence filled the Hundred Battle Territory. The top powers were looking ghastly pale, as they did not expect that they would be defeated.

Sword-hiding Elder and Old Corpse Ghost did not wear pleasant expressions either. They had estimated that they had a high chance of winning this battle bet. Hence, they even suggested it previously. The outcomes for the first two rounds of battle were still within their expectations, except for the last fight, which was a gross miscalculation.

Given the strength of Qin Bei, he could make a clean sweep of all the commanders in the Daluo Territory, including Xu Qing and Zhou Yue, as apparently, neither was a match for him. But, who would have expected that a new low profile commander, Mu Chen, would appear here in their midst all of a sudden?

This battle bet involved a million of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid and a thousand cities. If they lost this bet, even the Hundred Battle Territory, which possessed a significant amount of wealth, could feel the hole that burning in their pocket.

Sword-hiding Elder and the rest of the top powers were staring at Mu Chen with extreme chilly gazes. They looked like they could not wait to tear him apart.

"Three rounds of battle bets are over. We have two wins and one loss. Please prepare one million of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid and a thousand cities as soon as possible, or else I will have to force it out from you!" The Dominator of Daluo projected his faint voice, scaring the guts out of the top powers in the Hundred Battle Territory.

Sword-hiding Elder and Old Corpse Ghost gritted their teeth and turned their attention to Liu Tiandao. The latter had a calm expression, and his glittering dark eyes were not looking at them, but at Mu Chen, who was far away in the sky.

As soon as Mu Chen sensed his gaze, he felt chilliness all around him. In that instant, his level of his alertness raised its bar exponentially!

"Hehe..."

Liu Tiandao finally gave a faint laugh and said, "Since we have lost, we will definitely honor our words."

Sword-hiding Elder and the rest all nodded with a pinch in their hearts upon hearing that. Given the character of the Dominator of Daluo, if they refused to pay honor, the Hundred Battle Territory might be forced to pay a higher price for it.

"Lord Liu is indeed a man of words." The Dominator of Daluo smiled.

Liu Tiandao smiled and did not answer him. He cast a sharp gaze, which seemed to be able to look through anyone, on Mu Chen again and said, "I wish to consult some matters from Commander Mu Chen from the Daluo Territory."

Mu Chen's heart skipped a beat. A coldness surged about as well, as Liu Tiandao seemed to be making things difficult for him all of the sudden. Did he know about Liu Ming?

Nine Nether's expression on her pretty face also changed slightly behind him, as her beautiful eyes flickered.

"What would Lord Liu like to ask?" Despite the fact that he was feeling nervous, Mu Chen was looking calm outwardly.

"About half a year ago, my son went to the City of Trade and bid on a scroll named Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art" at a high price in an auction. However, he went missing while he was on his way back. Two elders, who were protecting him, one in the open and one in the dark, went missing with him as well." Liu Tiandao's faint voice projected itself well, bringing chillness into the air.

Sword-hiding Elder and the rest looked at Liu Tiandao with surprise, as they could sense something was amiss They then looked at Mu Chen again, their eyes flickering.

Although they did not know what Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art was, the formidable art that Mu Chen displayed towards the end seemed to have some similarities with it.

"After my investigation, I discovered that my son and the other two elders were trapped under a mountain. I also found out that the person who trapped them had a strength of an Earthly Sovereign!"

Liu Tiandao said these things without any expression on his face. "And now, you are holding on to this Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art in your hands. Maybe you would like to explain yourself..."

Mu Chen shivered. Liu Tiandao was really quite resourceful, since he was able to spot the location where Liu Ming was trapped.

"Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art may be hard to find, but this is not the one and only copy. If I manage to find it, isn't that through my own efforts? Did Lord Liu think that I could invite an Earthly Sovereign powerhouse for a fight? I don't have such a capability." Mu Chen decided to deny it first, for fear of getting Liu Tiandao agitated, Such a situation was just not something he could handle.

"Really?"

Liu Tiandao stared at Mu Chen emotionlessly and laughed coldly. He swung his robe sleeves,then the air was torn apart, revealing an air

passage. Beams of lights shot forth from the passage, and two figures were brought out from behind Liu Tiandao.

Mu Chen looked over, his expression turning immediately when he recognized one of them. It was Liu Ming, who was trapped by Lin Jing's mother back then! This fellow had been rescued!

Another man in white was standing beside Liu Ming. He had both of his hands behind him. Both of them looked alike, but Liu Ming's deposition could not be compared to the man in white.

"Ming'er, can you recognize this person? " Liu Tiandao said.

Liu Ming lifted his head and locked his gaze on Mu Chen, endless vengefulness pouring out from his eyes. He smiled and said, "Heh heh, I had a hard time looking for you!"

Mu Chen felt his heart sink. The top powers from both sides seemed to have understood the story. Mu Chen had a fight with Liu Ming, trapped him somewhere, but did not finish him off. Thus, this secret was uncovered today.

Everyone was gloating in Hundred Battle Territory, while the others at the Daluo Territory were looking stern. If this matter was not resolved, they would risk their relationship with Tian Xuan Hall. The consequences would be far more severe than just declaring war with the Hundred Battle Territory, as both the Daluo Territory and Tian Xuan Hall were considered to be the top powerhouses in the region.

"The Earthly Sovereign that you hired was quite capable. Even I cannot break the spell. I had to pay a high price for such a big shot to save my son. But, his meridians were ruined almost completely, while his spiritual energy dissipated. Although he is recovering, his whole life will have limited development." Liu Tiandao smiled, but the desire to finish Mu Chen off could not be hidden in his voice.

"So, did you cause Liu Ming to dissipate his spiritual energy?" The man in white, who was beside Liu Ming, knit his brow slightly. He stared at Mu Chen and said casually, "Then you shall also dissipate your own spiritual energy."

As soon as he finished his sentence, the figure shook. He then appeared in front of Mu Chen spookily. On his hand, a jade fan was pointing towards the center of Mu Chen's forehead.

As he made his move, the man in white displayed his formidable ability. Mu Chen, who had just gone through a fierce battle, had depleted his spiritual energy. Thus, he found it hard to evade the incoming attack.

However, he was going to just sit still and wait for death to court him! Just as he was about to activate his spiritual energy, a slender figure dashed in front of him. Her long finger was pointing out, clashing against the jade fan.

The frightful spiritual energy exploded from the collision point. The slender figure shook, while the man in white took ten steps back. He opened up the jade fan, seeing that there was a blazing fire burning within it. The cold eyes were looking at the slender figure in front of him.

"Liu Ming mentioned that there was a lady beside Mu Chen, who had extraordinary capabilities. I guess it must be you." The man in white stared at Nine Nether, who was standing in front of Mu Chen.

Nine Nether was protecting Mu Chen from the front with an icy cold expression. But Mu Chen noticed that her hand was clenched, as she hadn't expected this impromptu episode.

Liu Tiandao stretched his hand out to stop the man in white. He looked indifferently at Mu Chen and Nine Nether, before shifting his gaze to the Dominator of Daluo. "These two people are responsible for my son's handicap, so it is not a simple feud. I hoped you could hand them over to me. Then, as a token of appreciation, Tian Xuan Hall will present two million of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid to the Daluo Territory, along with our promise to not go against the Daluo Territory in the Big Hunting War."

Gulp...

The speech from Liu Tiandao had surprised the numerous people within the Hundred Battle Territory. Even the top powers from the the Daluo Territory were overwhelmed by these attractive conditions that had just been proposed by Liu Tiandao. Even without the two million of Sovereign

Spiritual Liquid, it would be very appealing for the higher management to know that Tian Xuan Hall would not be going against the Daluo Territory. As the Big Hunting War concerned the life and death of the top forces, no one wanted to have another formidable enemy like Tian Xuan Hall.

These conditions were just too attractive! Even the Dominator of Daluo might not be able to resist them. Moreover, they just needed to sacrifice Mu Chen and Nine Nether to meet the requirements. For many people, it was a good deal that required no consideration.

The expression on Nine Nether's face changed at this moment. She did not think that Liu Tiandao hated them to such an extent! However, Nine Nether was a rational person, so she understood that this was an irresistible temptation to any forces.

She held Mu Chen's palm with her cold hands. Then, using a volume that only the both of them could hear, she whispered, "If there is any change in the situation, flee as fast as you can!"

Mu Chen wore a cold expression on his face, as he knew Nine Nether would have thought of the worst case scenario. The unfathomable Dominator of Daluo might desert them for the benefits of the agreement, regardless of whether or not Mu Chen made any significant contributions.

This is the real world, this Tianluo Continent! He was no longer in the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, which was filled with only fond memories. The uptight atmosphere felt extremely suffocating, filling the entire space.

Liu Tiandao had his gaze fixed on the Dominator of Daluo. He did not think highly of Mu Chen nor Nine Nether, because he was very confident that, as long as the Dominator of Daluo was a rational person, he would not reject such a good bargain. After all, a Nine Nether Lord and a commander were not worth mentioning at their level.

Under the gazes of everyone, the Dominator of Daluo, who was sitting on the throne, finally fluctuated his glow around him. "This is a very tempting bargaining chip," he said.

Both the expressions on Mu Chen's and Nine Nether's faces changed

again, while they prepared to activate their spiritual energies for fleeing.

"But," there seemed to be a mocking aura that was beaming out, as one of the glows surrounded him. A husky voice rang again, causing everyone to be dumbfounded.

"I declined!"

Chapter 748: The Real Identity of the Dominator in Daluo

"I reject!"

When the slightly husky, faint voice was heard, the noisy environment suddenly froze, as most of the top powers could not believe their ears.

Mu Chen and Nine Nether, ready to flee, were also shocked.

Even formidable personnel like Liu Tiandao were stunned, too. He looked at the Dominator of Daluo with a dazed expression, as if what he heard was a hallucination.

The people in the Hundred Battle Territory were also showing bewilderment on their faces.

No one had anticipated that the Dominator of Daluo Territory would reject such an attractive deal to protect a Nine Nether Lord and a plain, ordinary commander.

Could the callous Dominator of Daluo Territory suddenly turn into a righteous person all of a sudden? The top powers wore a peculiar expression on their faces as they felt the irony of the situation.

The Condor King, who had a stern expression on his face, felt relieved. His eyes were filled with gratitude. He had been a follower of the Dominator of Daluo for many years, and he knew perfectly how cold-blooded he was. The Condor King was almost certain that given his character, the Dominator of Daluo would definitely sacrifice Nine Nether and Mu Chen. But the situation took a sudden turn.

Though the Spiritual Pupil King had a mixed expression on his face, he did not say anything. The Sleeping King looked at the Dominator of Daluo in astonishment, then turned his gaze to Mu Chen and Nine Nether. His eyes flickered with thoughts.

"Dominator of Daluo, do you know what you are saying?!" Liu Tiandao was ultimately an Earthly Sovereign. He came to his senses quickly, and

there was slight anger in his cold expression.

"I don't need you to tell me what to say," the Dominator of Daluo said calmly. "These are my people. I have to protect them."

"Heh, when did the ruthless Dominator of Daluo learn to talk about ties and comradeship? Are you insulting my intelligence?" Liu Tiandao laughed in anger. On this Tianluo Continent, the law of the jungle applied. Anyone or anything could be betrayed as long as the benefit was right. Moreover, it was only a Grade Five Sovereign and a young commander at the Grade Two Sovereign level. Liu Tiandao felt the choice that he has just made was a joke.

"I want to be a good person now. Won't you let me be one?" The Dominator laughed coldly.

Liu Tiandao's blood was boiling, and his veins could be seen on his forehead. He took a deep breath and said, "These two people have stolen the treasure that my son had bid on. They even got an Earthly Sovereign to seal him off, resulting in his spiritual energy dissipating. If I do not avenge him, I will not be able to make a stand in the North Territory anymore."

Mu Chen retorted, "Hmph, this is sheer nonsense! It was Liu Ming who was eyeing our treasure first. He tried to kill us along with the elders. We did that in self-defense, and he deserved it."

Mu Chen heaved a sigh of relief when he saw that the Dominator of Daluo was determined to protect them. He smiled coldly and said, "It was the Queen of the Martial Border who sealed him. If Tian Xuan Hall has the guts, head to the Martial Border and avenge him there!"

All of the people were shocked when they heard Mu Chen. Even Liu Tiandao and the Dominator of Daluo fluctuated their spiritual energy. The name, "Queen of the Martial Border" seemed to have made an impact on them.

Martial Border was the real mighty power in the Great Thousand World. Even though Daluo Territory and Tian Xuan Hall were considered to be top forces, they paled into insignificance by comparison.

Liu Tiandao would not have dared to look for trouble from the Queen of the Martial Border, Ling Qingzhu, even if he had infinitely more guts.

Mu Chen knew this perfectly well, thus he brought up the name of Martial Border.

Liu Tiandao stared at Mu Chen coldly before saying, "You little rascal spouting nonsense! Who do you think you are to seek help from the Queen of the Martial Border? This is absolutely a joke!"

Having said this, Liu Tiandao still could not help but twitch the sides of his lips, as he had seen the mountain that had trapped his son. The trap was so powerful that he could not break its seal. In the end, it was a great man who saved Liu Ming. That kind of power is even more daunting than any ordinary Earthly Sovereign.

And apparently, the Queen of the Martial Border was capable of doing it.

Liu Tiandao flickered his eyes as ruthlessness gathered within them. It did not matter if the Queen of the Martial Border had done it, as long as he could vent his anger once Mu Chen and Nine Nether were taken out.

He did not believe that Mu Chen had any relationship with the daunting Queen of the Martial Border, given his insignificant position.

"Since the Dominator of Daluo refuses to hand over these people, I will have to do it myself!"

Liu Tiandao stepped forward, and the sky immediately darkened. He pointed his palm towards Mu Chen and Nine Nether, and tightly clenched his fist.

Boom!

The air around them suddenly exploded. The bright-colored spiritual energy seeped through the air from the explosion, and eventually turned into a powerful spiritual cell, trapping both Mu Chen and Nine Nether in it.

The cell was sparkling with a metal glow as it was created by a very pure spiritual energy. It was indestructible, and the quality of the cell was so

superior that it was not what Mu Chen and Nine Nether had expected.

This was the symbolic play of the Earthly Sovereign, as they were the only ones who could cultivate such pure spiritual energy from the earth. In a few moves, the strength of the divine technique displayed was much more powerful than those which Mu Chen displayed with all of his might.

Mu Chen and Nine Nether had a change in their expressions. They immediately activated their spiritual energy, but their attack fell onto the spiritual cell without even shaking it a bit.

They were still unable to counter the attack from an Earthly Sovereign with their abilities now.

"Hmph, arresting my people in front of me? I don't think you are capable of it!" The cold voice of the Dominator of Daluo rang out. As he flicked his finger, a beam of spiritual energy hit the cell. A slit instantly appeared on it and eventually opened with a loud cracking sound.

Both Mu Chen and Nine Nether fell backward and landed in front of the base camp in Daluo Territory. They were shaken by the force that came from the Earthly Sovereign. Is this what they can do? It was indeed compelling.

Liu Tiandao brought his hands up with a cold look on his face. Everyone could feel the massive spiritual energy from the earth gathering furiously above him.

The spiritual energy that was assembled in patches was sucked into Liu Tiandao's body with a gulp.

Subsequently, he spat out a beam of spiritual energy that looked like a galaxy.

That beam of spiritual energy contained spiritual stardust, and it had almost materialized. The moment the spiritual energy was absorbed into the body, Liu Tiandao was able to cultivate the patches of spiritual energy into a pure beam of energy.

Even a Grade Nine Sovereign would have a hard time achieving this. Moreover, it was done within a short period of time.

The beam of spiritual energy flickered and twisted into a sword 1,000 feet long. There were some ancient engravings on it. Daunting sword energy rose into the sky, leaving a long slit in the air as it passed through.

"We haven't fought in so many years. Let me see how much you have grown!"

Liu Tiandao gave a sneer and squinted before he pointed both fingers to the sky and shouted, "Heaven Way Sword!"

Weng!

As though it were formed by all the stars, the gigantic sword dashed through the space and reappeared in the sky above Daluo Territory. Without any hesitation, the sword swung itself downward, tearing up the space and leaving a huge black gap.

The formidable destruction stunned most of the top powers.

The Dominator of Daluo looked up and watched as the enormous starry sword swung itself. He opened his mouth and blew a gush of black air out of his mouth. The black air rose up into the sky with a shua, shua sound, and a bunch of vast and weird-looking black thorns were growing in it within a short period of time. Not long after, the sky was filled with a forest of black thorns.

Boom!

As the long starry sword cut into the black-thorned forest, instead of withering, the thorns spread and entangled themselves around the sword. The sword slowed down as if it had been sucked into a deep pool of mud and eventually stuck in the thorned forest.

The Dominator of Daluo flicked his finger again, and the bunches of black thorns gave out a loud screeching sound. They seemed to have turned into a gigantic dragon, wringing the starry sword into stardust.

It was a bizarre and frightful way of battle.

There was displeasure on Liu Tiandao's face as his first attack missed. He immediately stepped forward again and appeared before the

Dominator of Daluo. With both of his hands clapping forward, his palms seemed to be swinging effortlessly, but everyone could feel the vibration from the space.

The force behind the slow push was even more daunting than the sword attack earlier on.

However, the Dominator of Daluo was not afraid at all as he put his palms forward to receive it.

Both of the palms collided together.

No loud sound could be heard, but everyone was looking at the sky with their mouths wide open. The spot where they were had turned into a massive black hole at the height of 1,000 feet. The air in it was crumpled by the forces emitted from their palms.

But both of them had absolute control over their powers. Their battle was not as impetuous as Mu Chen's battle had been but the pressure emitted was sufficient to make the the top powers tremble on the spot. If their attack had not been contained, a tiny bit of their power could have injured most of the people there.

Dong!

Two figures shook and bounded off of each other in that black hole.

Liu Tiandao took 13 steps backward.

The Dominator of Daluo took a mere five steps back, but as both spiritual energies collided, the spiritual glow he had around him dispersed.

As the glow dispersed, a figure appeared.

All eyes were on it, and everyone's jaws dropped. Their eyes narrowed and were filled with disbelief.

Mu Chen was also dumbfounded with his mouth open, as a tiny, slender figure appeared at the point where the glow dispersed.

She was wearing black with long hair down to her knees. She had a small, good-looking face. Even without any expression on it, she was still looking cute.

She was not a stranger to Mu Chen since she had been tailing behind him, being secretive all the time. She was none other than Mandela!

She was actually the Dominator of Daluo!

Chapter 749: Confronting Each Other

The repercussions of the daunting spiritual energy still lingered in the sky. The top powers looked at the small little figure with their mouths wide open. Who would have thought that such a pretty little girl would surface out from the glow?!

This was indeed most shocking! To realize that...the most renowned figure in the North Territory, the Dominator of Daluo, was actually a little girl?! Everyone had dazed looks on their faces.

"She is the Dominator of Daluo?" Nine Nether, Tang Bing, and the rest of the top powers from Nine Nether Palace, all of whom had seen Mandela before, had unbelievable looks on their faces and murmured in unison.

Mu Chen was also dumbfounded. He slowly recovered from the initial shock, but still was feeling a little lost amid his thoughts. No wonder she could sleep and cultivate in the Daluo Golden Pool, could roam around freely in the Daluotian without the worry of being discovered, and possessed such a daunting strength...So, she is actually the mysterious Dominator of Daluo!

"No wonder she protected us." Nine Nether cast a glance at Mu Chen, as she finally understood why the callous Dominator of Daluo had ignored the attractive deals given by Liu Tiandao, choosing instead to protect them. The reason was undoubtedly due to the relationship between her and Mu Chen.

Mu Chen wore a bitter smile. He did not think he shared an in-depth relationship with Mandela, except helping each other out in previous times of need. So, he appreciated her withstanding the tremendous amount of stress involved in making the decision to protect them.

In the sky, Mandela was not bothered about the commotion caused by revealing her identity. Her golden eyes swept across the entire space, silencing the commotion at the side of the Daluo Territory with just one stare.

No one dared meet these golden eyes of hers, as the coldness and awe

within them were sufficient to cast fear in the bravest soul. As Mandela swept her calm gaze around, they snapped out of their dazed states immediately.

Although the little girl image looked cute, she was still the Dominator of Daluo, regardless of how her appearance had changed. After all, a mere sentence from her could still decide between their very lives and deaths.

The Condor King and the Spiritual Pupil King took a look at Mandela secretly with astonishment. This is the first time that they had seen Mandela's original feminine appearance. Only the Sleeping King had a calm look on his face, as it seemed like he had known about this beforehand.

"No one would have thought that the original outlook of the renowned Dominator of Daluo is that of a little girl. You have a peculiar taste." Liu Tiandao gave a sneer, while staring at Mandela.

With their strength levels, they are free to change their appearances, according to their individual tastes and preferences. As such, Liu Tiandao assumed that Mandela had transformed into her current look. Otherwise, logically speaking, she would not be able to have such dominant strength, that of an Earthly Sovereign, at her current age.

But Mandela had no evident expression on her face, despite his mockery. She said calmly, "Liu Tiandao, even if you used up all of your strength today, you would not be able to take anyone from my hands. Stop your fruitless acts, and leave now."

After she recovered her original look, her usual screeching, husky voice turned crisp, clear, and innocent. But to most of the top powers, her innocent voice was even more mysterious and eerie than before. Ultimately, behind that little body and innocent voice, lay the greatness and cruelty of a sovereign.

Liu Tiandao had a cold radiance in his eyes. He knew that what Mandela had said was true. In the previous match just now, he could feel that Mandela possessed a higher level of strength than him. If a fight were to break out, he would not have many advantages.

"Seems like you are determined to become enemies with Tian Xuan Hall," Liu Tiandao said coldly.

"Aren't we enemies already?" Mandela inferred.

"Heh, fine." Liu Tiandao gave an angry laugh and nodded. He then cast a ghastly look at Mandela, saying, "I will remember what the Dominator of Daluo said today. I hope you will remain tough in the Big Hunting War."

The Condor King and the rest all changed their expressions when they heard this. The Big Hunting War was too gruesome, as the top forces were taken over each time.

Moreover, the Daluo Territory had been making more and more enemies. Thus, adding Tian Xuan Hall onto the growing enemy list was the worst news possible for them.

However, Mandela was still looking indifferent, despite Liu Tiandao's threats. This left Liu Tiandao quite upset.

The man in white, who had attacked Mu Chen and was countered by Nine Nether, stepped forward suddenly. He stared at Mu Chen, saying calmly, "Looks like you are the person who will top the younger generation among the Daluo Territory."

Mu Chen frowned. As he was looking at this man in white, he could sense a tinge of danger emanating from him. He must be a formidable opponent.

"Who are you?" Mu Chen asked.

"Liu Yan from Tian Xuan Hall." The man in white smiled.

Nine Nether's beautiful eyes sharpened. Then, she said softly, "He is the young master of Tian Xuan Hall, and he is also the big brother of Liu Ming. With such strength as he possesses, he is being considered as one of the most outstanding among the younger generation of the North Territory. He is much more powerful than Liu Ming."

Mu Chen felt a tremble in his heart. This man was indeed a difficult opponent.

"Looks like I will not be able to dissipate your spiritual energy today, but it's alright. I believe you will be representing the Daluo Territory in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift in the North Territory. We will meet each other then." Liu Yan gave a smile to Mu Chen, but the smile was one that sent chills down one's spine.

Mu Chen squinted both his eyes. Liu Yan had excellent foresight. After the matches today, his reputation in the commander level of the Daluo Territory would certainly rise exponentially. Even Xu Qing and Zhou Yue were unable to surpass him. So, the only qualification for the upcoming Dragon-Phoenix Rift would obviously be his.

Given the current situation, Liu Yan was going to attend the Dragon-Phoenix Rift too. If they met each other then, there would surely be no one able to protect him anymore.

But... Liu Yan thought he could bully him easily.

Mu Chen laughed out loud, while he looked at Liu Yan. "Well, we shall wait and see then. But, I hope you will be careful. Otherwise, you will become a mere stepping stone of mine."

Liu Yan gave a grin, while his jade fan was knocking against his palm. He did not say much, but his lips curved in a mocking arc, belittling Mu Chen silently.

Clearly, he had not taken the young man, who had just achieved outstanding results in the previous battles, to heart. It was not because he was arrogant, but rather that he was the future master of Tian Xuan Hall, and hence, much more superior in his qualifications and level.

Liu Tiandao was quite satisfied with Liu Yan's speech, as it allowed many of them to save face. Although they would have to wait until the Dragon-Phoenix Rift to take their revenge, it was not a big deal. As long as Mu Chen dared to participate, he would be doomed! And, if Mu Chen chickened out and gave up his seat, Liu Tiandao would still have his ways of embarrassing the Daluo Territory.

"This time, Dominator of Daluo, you won. But I hope you can have the last laugh."

Liu Tiandao looked at Mandela again, an eerie smile curling at his lips. He said casually, "Oh, I have heard that the Netherworld Celestial Sovereign from the Netherworld Palace has returned from his meditation. He seemed to be holding a grudge against you for the plot you set up that caused him to be hurt..."

Upon hearing "Netherworld Celestial Sovereign", the formerly emotionless face of Mandela finally showed a slight change. Mu Chen also knit his eyebrows tightly.

He had now fully comprehended the various forces within the North Territory. He also knew the mightiness of the Netherworld Palace. They were the oldest, yet one of the most formidable, forces within the North Territory. Since they were able to survive three to four rounds of the Big Hunting War, it was clear that they had daunting powers.

Since Netherworld Celestial Sovereign was the master of Netherworld Palace, he must possess an unpredictable level of strength. But Mu Chen did not expect there would be a personal feud between Mandela and him. It sure did seem like danger was lurking everywhere in this Daluo Continent!

Liu Tiandao spotted the slight change in Mandela's expression, and he laughed out loud with relief. Without speaking any more words, he swung his robe sleeves, embracing both Liu Yan and Liu Ming in a light glow, then flew off into a twisted space.

Mandela watched as Liu Tiandao left. A cold radiance was sharpening within her golden pupils, but all she did was give a cold humph. Her beautiful golden eyes turned to stare at Sword-hiding Elder and the rest of the elders from the Hundred Battle Territory.

Without the leadership of Liu Tiandao, Sword-hiding Elder and the rest of the elders got goosebumps while standing under her gaze. They did not dare meet her eyes' intense gaze.

"Hand over the millions of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid and the thousand cities within three days. If there is any delay, I will come looking for all of you, then disband your sect." Mandela projected her calm voice in the air,

causing those top powers in the Hundred Battle Territory to shiver.

Mandela did not continue after her last sentence. Instead, she turned around and took a look at Mu Chen, before her little body shook, then vanished into thin air.

"Withdraw troops!"

Just before she disappeared, a faint voice, carrying her last words, called out.

As the palm of Third Prince waved, he started to withdraw the massive troops in an orderly manner. The breaking sound of the wind came furiously all of a sudden, and the scene was magnificent.

Sword-hiding Elder watched as the Daluo Army withdrew. His face was flashing with anger, and he could not help but grit his teeth. "It was all because of that unforgivable fellow!"

If Mu Chen had not won the last match, they would not have been so embarrassed!

Old Corpse Ghost trembled his lips, then said coldly, "Let them be complacent for now. Once the Dragon-Phoenix Rift begins, that rascal will be doomed."

Other top powers nodded in agreement. Apparently, in their hearts, the ending of Mu Chen and Liu Yan's battle had already been predetermined.

The saddest thing that could happen to a genius was for him to meet a more outstanding genius. In their eyes, Mu Chen was former, while Liu Yan was the latter.

Chapter 750: Training

Daluo Territory had finally achieved victory in the Battle of Conquest against the Hundred Battle Territory. All the information regarding the battle spread like wildfire the moment the battle ended, and it finally reached the ears of the various forces who had paid great interests in the battle.

Looking from another perspective, the results were still within expectations as everyone knew that the abilities and potentials of Daluo Territory were much stronger than the Hundred Battle Territory. If the Hundred Battle Territory did not have the support from Tian Xuan Hall, it was highly unlikely that they would have had the guts to provoke Daluo Territory.

However, although the results were as expected, many forces were still taken aback by the process of the battle. According to the information that they had gotten, Daluo Territory had been stabbed in the back in this so-called prizefight. Nobody had expected the Spiritual Corpse King of the Demonic Corpse Sect to resort to such cunning and ruthless ways to hurt Lord Asura by combusting his own Undead Demonic Corpse, all for the sake of winning the round for the Hundred Battle Territory.

From that very moment onward, Daluo Territory immediately spiralled downwards. Everyone believed that Daluo Territory was at a distinct disadvantage as Qin Bei, the last representative of the Hundred Battle Territory, seemed to be far more experienced than the new commander of Daluo Territory.

As everyone was fixated on this mentality, Mu Chen, who seemed like he was going to be defeated in the third battle, turned the tables on his opponent and won the battle instead. Everyone's jaws dropped.

Nobody had ever expected that a young commander with the mere ability of a Grade Two Sovereign could be able to turn the tide to his favor. Not only was he undefeated, he was even able to pull out of the fire and crush Qin Bei, who had almost achieved the status of a Grade Four

Sovereign.

Due to this unexpected battle, the tables were turned in favor of Daluo Territory, and they finally achieved victory. Such results were evidently rather comedic, as anyone in their right mind would not be able to initially imagine that the final, most significant battle to regain the honor of Daluo Territory would fall on the shoulders of a low-ranking commander.

Besides, the confrontation between Mu Chen and the young lord of Tian Xuan Hall that happened at the end of the battle had also circulated around the territory. This had undoubtedly caused a stir among the crowd.

The commotion obviously had a negative effect on Mu Chen. The majority of the people assumed that Mu Chen was a proud and flimsy newbie who had taken advantage of Liu Yan's reputation to rise in ranks. They were not to be blamed for their assumptions, as Mu Chen was too inexperienced in comparison to Liu Yan, who was already known as one of the most powerful youths in the North Territory. Although he had recently shot to fame after defeating Qin Bei, it was still insufficient to prove his worth.

The gap between them was still too wide.

No matter what others said, at least a name who was once unknown was now publicized all over the North Territory. Many forces knew that a rather capable new commander named Mu Chen had appeared in Daluo Territory...

Although they were unsure if this figure was just a one hit wonder in the arena of talents in the North Territory, at the very least, Mu Chen now started to shine a little brighter than he did before.

However, it remained a mystery as to whether this new star would be able to make himself known throughout the North Territory. Perhaps the public still needed to see if he would be able to truly transform his hidden potential into actual strength.

Evidently, the answer would be revealed to everyone in the upcoming Dragon-Phoenix Rift, as the young lord of Tian Xuan Hall, Liu Yan, would definitely not let him off the hook.

While the news about the battle between Daluo Territory and the Hundred Battle Territory circulated around the North Territory, Mu Chen was enjoying some peace and quiet after the war at the Nine Nether Palace. Although the Nine Nether Palace seemed pretty busy, as they were going to receive a large amount of cities, Mu Chen and Nine Nether did not have to worry about it at all as Tang Bing, the supervisor, was overseeing everything.

Besides, after the war ended, everyone in the Nine Nether Palace sensed that their position had increased tremendously in Daluo Territory. Not only did the slanderous gossip stop circulating, but various forces also started treating them courteously when they met each other. Plus, the Blood Hawk Palace, who had always treated the Nine Nether Palace like an eyesore, recently started avoiding them. Clearly, they did not dare to size them up with disdain like they did before.

The reason behind the sudden change of attitude was due to the fact that the Nine Nether Palace had performed brilliantly in the battle, and all the more so because the Dominator of Daluo Territory had came forward to protect Mu Chen and Nine Nether in the final battle...

The Dominator was still the only ruler of Daluo Territory. Her words were absolute. Even someone as harsh and cruel as the Blood Hawk King did dare to display even a slight hint of arrogance as he stood before the Dominator of Daluo Territory. The fact that the Dominator of Daluo Territory had openly expressed her care and concern toward Mu Chen and Nine Nether was sufficient to frighten those who were resentful toward him.

The back hill of the Nine Nether Palace.

Mu Chen sat cross-legged on the peak. He closed his eyes tightly. Invisible thunderbolts coiled around his body, and the wailing sound of thunder boomed in the sky.

The sound of thunder was like a gunshot to the ears. Its movements were also rather abnormal. If there were passersby around the vicinity, they would feel as if the roaring thunder had penetrated into their minds,

and it would send them into a state of hysteria.

This thunderous sound was known as the Netherworld Thunder Heart. Currently, Mu Chen was still using the powers of the Netherworld Thunder Heart to cultivate the Supreme Heart Demon Chant, which he had obtained from the depths of the Thunder Magic Abyss.

The roaring thunder went on for an hour before Mu Chen slowly opened his eyes. He put his palm on his chest, right over his heart. After his heart was bombarded by the Netherworld Thunder Heart numerous times, he could feel the power of the Heart Demon becoming even stronger. However, Mu Chen still felt a little disappointed, as he was still unable to condense the so-called Seed of the Heart Demon.

I guess it is pretty difficult to cultivate the Supreme Heart Demon Chant. Mu Chen curled his lip in frustration. However, if it could be easily cultivated, then the Supreme Heart Demon Chant would not be as terrifying as it seemed to be.

He lowered his head and gazed down at the Nine Nether Palace. Although it was already late at night, the Nine Nether Palace still seemed extremely busy. With the aid of this battle, the Nine Nether Palace had obtained a huge amount of resources. Under the command of Nine Nether, they had even recruited about 4,000 backup soldiers for the Nine Nether Troop. Evidently, their combat abilities were still a far cry from the Nine Nether Troop, thus more training needed to be done.

However, overall, the Nine Nether Palace seemed to be thriving. They no longer looked lifeless like they did a year ago.

All these transformations came about after Nine Nether's return and the emergence of Mu Chen. Mu Chen felt a tremendous sense of satisfaction about the little changes that he had brought about.

"Is this the Netherworld Thunder Heart?"

While Mu Chen was still immersed in the changes of the Nine Nether Palace, a rather peculiar childish voice suddenly rang out from behind him. Mu Chen was shocked. He quickly turned around and was immediately greeted by the sight of a little girl who was standing on top of

a giant rock. The little girl wore a black dress that revealed her fair calves. She seemed to be caught off guard as well.

It was no other than Mandela, the Dominator of Daluo Territory.

When Mu Chen saw Mandela, he quickly stood up and gave her a forced grin. Previously, he had acted too casually around her. Thus, he felt a little awkward having to act formally and respectfully around her now.

"You could just treat me as Mandela." Mandela glanced at Mu Chen with her golden eyes. Her little hands cupped her cheeks as she said, "Plus, I'm pretty sure that you will not treat me respectfully even if I'm the Dominator of Daluo Territory. So, you should stop being pretentious."

Mu Chen smiled awkwardly. He feared the powers of the Dominator of Daluo Territory, but it was rather impossible for him to sincerely express his respect from the depths of his heart. Although Mandela had read him like a book, he quickly smiled in a casual manner. "Thank you very much."

He was evidently talking about the day when Mandela had stepped forward to protect him and Nine Nether. He was not an idiot. He knew that Mandela had paid a huge price just to protect them.

"You have contributed greatly to Daluo Territory. If I choose to abandon you in a blink of an eye, many people will be bitterly disappointed," Mandela said carelessly.

Mu Chen touched his nose. It sounded a little funny to hear such words being uttered by an Earth Sovereign. Since Mandela's powers were extremely strong, the so-called loyalty was in truth a sense of fear toward her. Thus, she was not worried about the people's loyalty to her.

"Besides, since you have helped me, I'll definitely return the favor." Mandela's words sounded as if she had given it a lot of thought. This made Mu Chen speechless. Indeed, in her eyes, the only time he helped her seemed to carry more significance than the times he helped Daluo Territory.

"Here." Mandela waved her little hand abruptly. A beam of rainbow-like rays lashed out toward Mu Chen. He caught it in his hands and was

stunned at the sight as he lowered his head. A translucent jade bottle had appeared in his palms. The jade bottle seemed to be filled with a crystal-like liquid. An overwhelming wave of spiritual energy emanated from the bottle.

"This is..." Mu Chen looked stunned as he stared at Mandela.

"This bottle contains 200,000 drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid. All thanks to you, we managed to win the three battles against the Hundred Battle Territory. So, this is considered a reward for you," said Mandela nonchalantly.

Mu Chen felt a little dizzy after he was given the huge amount of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid. They had only managed to obtain about 100,000 drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid after wasting so much effort to ransack the Thunder Magic Sect. Plus, he did not keep any of it for himself, as he was aware that the Nine Nether Palace needed a huge amount of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid to sustain their development.

The Sovereign Spiritual Liquid was essential to the training of a Sovereign Master, as it sped up the training process tremendously. Plus, in order for Mu Chen to activate the Sovereign Super Powers of the Great Solar Undying Body, he would need gallons of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid. However, he was currently too broke, and he had been stressing about this issue. He did not expect that 200,000 drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid would suddenly appear just like that. He was giddy with happiness.

Mu Chen held the jade bottle in his hands. Although he had initially intended to reject her offer in pretense, he still curled his lip and accepted it without any hesitation. He then earnestly nodded at Mandela. "Thanks."

Mandela stood up from the giant rock. As the wind blew across the night sky, her knee-long hair blew madly in the wind. It made the little girl look extremely frail at that very moment. She looked at Mu Chen and said, "After three months, you will be representing Daluo Territory at the Dragon-Phoenix Rift. Liu Yan will definitely find a way to gang up on you. Thus, I'll train you personally in these three months. If you fail to reach the expected standards when the time comes, you'll be disqualified from

taking part in the rift."

Although she sounded calm, there was still an underlying sense of authority in her voice.

As her voice faded, she turned around and floated away, leaving a dumbstruck Mu Chen, who was still holding the jade bottle in his hands.

Chapter 751: Daluo Celestial Army

Apparently, Mandela was serious about the training she had mentioned. So, on the next day, when Mu Chen was inspecting the Nine Nether Troop reserve team, he saw a little girl wearing a black dress arrive by walking on the sky. Upon her arrival, she landed on a stone lion statue. With her tiny hands crossed in front of her chest, her golden eyes stared at him flatly.

"Greetings Master Dominator!" Mandela's sudden appearance had made the high authorities of Nine Nether Palace hastily bow. Even Nine Nether herself bowed to welcome Mandela.

Mandela gently nodded her head. Then, she directed her golden eyes towards Mu Chen and said, "Come with me."

Mu Chen put on a long face. He never would have thought that Mandela's way of life would be so swift and strict. She was actually going to do the thing she had discussed just yesterday, right now!

However, since Mandela had already come here herself, he naturally had to respect her. So, he told Nine Nether the whole story. When Nine Nether heard that Mandela was actually going to train Mu Chen in person, she could not help but show a glimpse of surprise in her eyes.

Since she had already stayed in the Daluo Territory for quite some time, she naturally knew that the Master Dominator was not normally approachable. For example, Mandela would not pay extra attention to her underlings.

So, it was needless to say that things like wasting time on training someone in person, well.....were extraordinary. Hence, the attention that the Dominator of Daluo was giving to Mu Chen was nearly unbelievable.

Nine Nether's beautiful eyes turned towards Mu Chen. Seeing his bitter face, she could not help but whisper, "Don't you take this undeserved gain for granted. Since the Dominator intends to train you, you should not turn down her good will."

To receive the teaching of a Sovereign with Earthly Sovereign class was a

great fortune, one that countless people could only wish for. Thus, it was totally intolerable that Mu Chen was still showing a bitter look about this opportunity.

Mu Chen smiled helplessly. He knew that Mandela's teaching was invaluable, it was just that he could not adjust to her high social status right away.

Mandela did not say anything. After giving Mu Chen a look with her golden eyes, she turned around and stepped on the air to depart. Seeing this, Mu Chen greeted everyone and hastily followed her, leaving them with only their jealous looks to keep them company.

Swoosh.

In the high altitude of Daluotian, with a light stride of her tiny feet, she teleported a distance of 1000 feet. Behind her, Mu Chen had transformed into a streamer and followed hastily. However, no matter how much he increased his speed, he still could not surpass the petite figure in front of him.

It seemed that Mandela had noticed this, as she had slowed down her speed to position herself next to him, thus allowing them to travel side by side. In that sky, there were many powerful people that passed by from time to time. When these people saw the two of them, they quickly bowed and left. It was only after the two were in the distance, that these powerful people stared at Mu Chen's figure with a surprised look. Apparently, they were shocked by the fact that a puny commander like Mu Chen could travel side by side with the Dominator of Daluo!

Looking at Mandela, Mu Chen could not help but ask, "Where are we going?"

Mandela's golden eyes were fixated in front of her, and she did not answer Mu Chen directly, saying, "Among the younger generation in the North Territory, Liu Yan's strength is enough to be among the top five. From my estimation, he should be at Grade Four Sovereign right now."

She looked at Mu Chen and continued. "Do not compare Qin Bei's Grade Four Sovereign with Liu Yan. Qin Bei just borrowed the strength of the pill

to break through. If he fought with Liu Yan head-on, he could not even last 10 rounds."

Mu Chen made a slightly more dignified face. He had fought Qin Bei before, so naturally he knew how tough he was. Even though he had used all of his tricks, Mu Chen barely defeated Qin Bei under the premise of being heavily injured himself. And now, Mandela was telling him that Qin Bei could not last 10 rounds against Liu Yan.

Although he knew that Liu Yan was no ordinary person, he never thought that he would be as strong as this! The young hall master of Xuantian Temple was indeed living up to his name.

"Right now, if you duel with Liu Yan, the chance of victory is extremely low."

Mandela was not reserved in her choice of words. Mu Chen only smiled in response. Although he was not afraid, it did not mean that he was an idiot. After all, he was still a Grade Two Sovereign right now.

The reason he could defeat Qin Bei was that he had borrowed the Great Solar Undying Body and the Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art. However, even though the power of these was formidable, it did not mean that he could ignore the limitation of the grade. It was already unimaginable that he was able to defeat Qin Bei by surpassing his grade. If he wanted to defeat Liu Yan, who was even stronger than Qin Bei right now, it would require more than a miracle.

"All the participants of the Dragon-Phoenix Rift are outstanding people from the young generation of North Territory, and therefore, they are older than you. Thus, when you face them, this would be to your disadvantage," Mandela told him flatly.

Mu Chen nodded. In this type of battle, as long a person fulfilled the requirements, nobody cared about his exact age. All of them would only look at the result, regardless of how beautifully the person fought.

"That is why, in this three months, you must raise your power to Grade Three Sovereign. Otherwise, no matter how many tricks you have, you won't go far in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift."

Mu Chen's mouth corner twitched. He just broke through to Grade Two Sovereign recently, and now he had to break through again, in such a short period as three months?! The difficulty of achieving this was extraordinarily high.

However, he also knew that Mandela's words were true. No matter how many tricks one had, their level of strength of spiritual energy was the most important thing. Without the vital support of spiritual power, even if he had the Great Solar Undying Body, he would only have a strong defense externally, not a strong offensive power.

"It seems quite hard," Mu Chen said honestly, while scratching his head.

"With me around, there will be nothing that is hard." Mandela turned her head, a smile emerging from that exquisite tiny face of hers. But, when Mu Chen saw that smile, it filled him with chilled sensations and made him shudder.

As the two talked, Mandela's speed gradually slowed down. When Mu Chen lifted his head, he saw a vast black mountain range. Mandela was bringing him directly to the most majestic black giant peak on the entire mountain range.

When Mu Chen's feet landed on that mountain peak, he instantly felt a hot sensation surge into his body, rising up from his sole. This feeling was like stepping on boiling lava.

However, when the hot sensation flowed into his body, Mu Chen was surprised to find that the hot sensation had actually turned into a string of spiritual energy that diffused into his body! Eventually, it then refined into the powerful spiritual energy that was now circulating in his meridians.

"What is this place?" Mu Chen asked, surprised.

Mandela did not answer, she directly walked towards the most central point of the mountain peak and stopped. When Mu Chen caught up with her, he saw a huge, hollow pit. Looking at the shape more closely, it was actually a volcanic crater!

Mu Chen stood on the edge of the volcanic crater. As he looked down,

he could not help but gasp.

The volcano was extremely deep, but one could still vaguely see that, at its depths, was scarlet red lava. It was boiling wildly, releasing heat at an extremely high temperature. Under such conditions, when one breathed the air here, it would felt as if their organs were being ignited.

Mu Chen lightly knit his brows. The lava here did not seem normal at all. As he breathed in the hot air, he felt as if the spiritual power in his body was also becoming heated.

Normal lava could not make the spiritual energy have such a reaction. This volcano did not seem simple at all!

Just when Mu Chen's eyes sparkled with interest, Mandela suddenly grabbed his arm and jumped into the volcano crater. With a flash, the two appeared in the depths of the volcano.

The scarlet red lava was only 1000 feet away now. Suddenly, there was a scary surge of heat that swept towards them, instantly making Mu Chen's skin sting with pain. This situation made him quickly use his spiritual energy to protect his body.

Swoosh!

Then, Mu Chen suddenly heard another sound ring out. He quickly turned his head and his pupils shrank.

In the surrounding mountain wall, there appeared numerous black platforms. On those black platforms, were lines of black clothed silhouettes. At this moment, those black clothed silhouettes kneeled on one leg, facing in the direction of Mu Chen and Mandela, with respectful demeanors.

As Mu Chen stared at those mysterious silhouettes, he felt a shock in his heart. This was because he felt that every one of the silhouettes possessed a very strong Spiritual Energy fluctuation, meaning that all of these people had actually broken through to the Sovereign-Level!

"They are my most elite army of the Daluo Territory, the Daluo Celestial Army," Mandela said flatly.

Mu Chen took a deep breath of the air that was as hot as fire. So, this was the strongest and most mysterious army in the Daluo Territory! The number of people in this army might not be more than the Nine Nether Troop, but Mu Chen knew that, if these two armies fought, the Nine Nether Troop could be annihilated by a mere sweep of the Daluo Celestial Army's fighting spirit. This was because every member of the Daluo Celestial Army already possessed the power of a Sovereign-level!

If facing an army that was entirely made up of Sovereign Masters, even the powerful people at the level of the Condor King and the Spiritual Pupil King would not dare underestimate them.

Swoosh!

On the numerous black platforms, there were four lines of silhouette that rose into the air to appear in front of Mandela. They then bowed respectfully and said, "Greetings Dominator!"

These four people wore the same black clothes. Their expressions were respectful, but the Spiritual Energy fluctuation released from their bodies gave Mu Chen's heart a shock again. The strength of these four might even have reached the level of Grade 5 Sovereign! The Daluo Territory was definitely true to its name of being the top force of the North Territory!

"There are five commanders in the Daluo Celestial Army, and these are four of them. The remaining one is currently in seclusion," Mandela told Mu Chen with a smile. "And in the following three months, this will be your cultivation place."

The smile on Mandela's small face widened. In the direction that her tiny fingers pointed was special lava, its color so scarlet red that it terrified Mu Chen.

Chapter 752: Spiritual Blazing Marrow

The red magma rolled in a frenzy in the volcano, and the terrifyingly high temperature was released in bubbling spurts, tearing spatial cracks within the volcano.

Mu Chen stared at the endless sea of magma for a moment as he swallowed in fear. It was impossible for ordinary magma to reach this level of terror.

"The Daluo Blazing Pool is connected to a Spiritual Energy Fire Pulse deep below the earth, so the magma contains powerful spiritual energy, and that high temperature is also caused by the burning of spiritual energy."

Upon hearing Mandela's words, realization dawned on Mu Chen, shocking him. The magma was burning with vast spiritual energy, so it was no wonder that it had such an overwhelmingly scorching temperature.

"You don't want me to practice my cultivation in the magma, do you?" Mu Chen seemed to understand something as his mouth twitched.

Mandela pursed her lips as she nodded slightly, causing Mu Chen's heart to freeze in terror. Even if he had the capability of a Second Grade Sovereign, it would still be torturous to rush into the sea of magma.

"The magma here is infused with spiritual energy and has the effect of strengthening the meridians. If you can refine your cultivation in the magma, the absorption efficiency of that power will be several times faster than that of the outside world."

Mandela pointed at the surrounding stone platform where the Daluo Celestial Army was and said, "See them? They suffer from the burning heat every day to cultivate, so they can be the most powerful army in Daluo Territory."

Mu Chen surveyed them and saw that although the people clad in black robes were flushed red because of the high temperature and were

sweating profusely, no one chose to retreat. They sat cross-legged quietly, as firm as rocks.

Mu Chen did not see the slightest glint of giving up in their eyes.

To be a member of the most mysterious army in Daluo Territory, it was clear that it was not possible to be chosen without superior skill and fortitude.

Mu Chen nodded with a gasp. Such a powerful army, if utilized in the war with the Hundred Battle Territory, would definitely be invincible, but clearly, the Hundred Battle Territory was not worthy enough to warrant sending out the Daluo Celestial Army, which was Daluo Territory's ace.

One of the four leaders of the Daluo Celestial Army standing by suddenly spoke, and Mu Chen glanced over in surprise, as it was a lady who spoke. "Normally, our Daluo Celestial Army would practice on the stone platform here. Only some of the best in the army will be able to enter the Daluo Blazing Pool and hunt for the Spiritual Blazing Serpent."

The lady was dressed in black, and her figure was svelte yet curvaceous. She had delicate features, but her expression was frosty. This coldness was quite different from Tang Bing's. Tang Bing appeared cold but was actually passionate. The woman in black before him was cold inside out.

Mandela smiled and introduced her. "She's the third commander of the Daluo Celestial Army, Bing Xin."

Mu Chen clasped his hands together in respect for the frosty commander. Her power even in Daluotian would be sufficient to rank as a Lord, but she was willing to stay as a Commander in the Daluo Celestial Army...

Mu Chen acutely heard the unfamiliar terms in Commander Bing Xin's words and immediately asked, "Spiritual Blazing Serpent? What's that?"

Hearing his question, Bing Xin glanced at Mu Chen in surprise. She then looked at Mandela, and as the latter nodded slightly, she said, "The Spiritual Blazing Serpent is a special by-product of the Daluo Blazing Pool, but it is not exactly a real creature and it has no intelligence. It is the

product of the fusion of spiritual energy and magma to an extreme degree."

A pale hand reached out from Bing Xin's sleeves and with a flick of her finger, a beam of spiritual energy light burst out, charging towards the sea of magma.

Boom!

The magma splashed with huge waves, and under the magma, a massive python about a 100 feet long and made of magma surged out. It was extremely ferocious. Magma trickled down from its body, and its scarlet pupils were full of destruction and fury.

With a violent swing of its tail, a magma pillar soared towards the sky, charging towards Mu Chen and the others as swift as lightning.

With a wave of her hand, a ribbon of spiritual energy swept out from Bing Xin's palm and destroyed the magma pillar. It then descended and tied the magma python securely, dragging it out from the sea of magma.

After the magma python was dragged a short distance away of Mu Chen, it exploded in Bing Xin's grip. As magma burst out in spurts, a crimson red light swept out, suspended in front of Bing Xin.

It was like magma flowing in the red glow of the light, but Mu Chen could clearly feel the blazing hot and pure spiritual energy fluctuations contained in it.

"This is the Spiritual Blazing Marrow." Bing Xin grasped the ball of red light and stated calmly, "This is of great benefit for cultivation, but it is a little painful to absorb."

"I'll lend you one to try." With a flick of her fingers, the Spiritual Blazing Marrow shot towards Mu Chen, but he caught it hastily. With a slight hesitation, he sucked it into his mouth.

As soon as the Spiritual Blazing Marrow entered his mouth, it immediately flowed down like magma. Mu Chen's face flushed almost instantly, as if he could smell the burning magma flowing through his meridians...

Mu Chen's spiritual energy flowed hurriedly, enveloping the pure and scorching magma spiritual energy. Channelling the Great Pagoda Art, he gradually refined the magma spiritual energy.

This cultivation lasted for ten minutes before Mu Chen slowly opened his eyes. He opened his mouth and spurted out a mass of white gas. When the white gas met the air, it burned.

"What an amazing Spiritual Blazing Marrow." Mu Chen's eyes lit up with surprise. After he refined the Spiritual Blazing Marrow, he could clearly feel the increase in spiritual energy, and most importantly, the body's meridians became more resilient after the absorption of the marrow.

If he could pair it with the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid and cultivate them together, it would achieve wondrous results.

"Of course it's amazing. This Spiritual Blazing Serpent is extremely difficult to capture. The previous one was only 100 years old, but its strength was comparable to that of a Third Grade Sovereign. In our army, there are not many people who are qualified to enter the Daluo Blazing Pool to capture one," Bing Xin said nonchalantly.

Mu Chen was shocked to hear this. Bing Xin had killed a Spiritual Blazing Serpent effortlessly, thus he had not expected its power to match that of a Third Grade Sovereign.

"You owe me a Spiritual Blazing Serpent." Bing Xin suddenly stared at Mu Chen, as she stated seriously, "I told you I was only lending you one to try."

Mu Chen was stunned, before nodding in exasperation. He did not expect the cold Commander to be so brutally direct.

"Since the Dominator allowed you to come here to practice your cultivation, you should be allowed to enter the Daluo Blazing Pool to hunt and kill the Spiritual Blazing Serpents, too. But in our army, only those who are Third Grade Sovereigns and above are qualified to enter the Daluo Blazing Pool," she said. "The rest of the people can only practice. With your ability as a Second Grade Sovereign... I'm afraid you are far

from ready."

As she stared at Mu Chen, she pointed to the stone platforms around her, and without much politeness said, "So if you intend to stay here to cultivate, I suggest you stay on the platform to practice. Hunting Spiritual Blazing Serpents is not something you can do now."

On the surrounding platforms, many members of the Daluo Celestial Army glanced over. Their gazes held mirth in them, as they were very familiar with Bing Xin's personality. It looked like this boy, whom the Dominator brought over, was going to be schooled properly...

Mandela smiled and added, "Although I'm the Dominator of Daluo Territory, I have handed jurisdiction of the Daluo Blazing Pool over to them, so if they don't agree, I can't interfere."

Clearly, she wanted Mu Chen to earn the qualifications to practice here with his own skills.

Mu Chen was exasperated by how Bing Xin belittled him. He smiled helplessly and immediately looked down at the magma sea below. His eyes narrowed slightly.

Whoosh!

His figure suddenly flashed as he charged down, and with a blow of his palm, a brilliant rainbow of spiritual energy bombarded the waves of magma. With a roar, a Spiritual Blazing Serpent no less inferior to the previous one suddenly burst out and surged directly towards Mu Chen while he was in mid-air.

Around the stone platforms, many stared in surprise, apparently shocked at how Mu Chen dared to provoke this ferocious Spiritual Blazing Serpent.

"He doesn't know the severity of the situation." Bing Xin frowned slightly, as she thought Mu Chen's act was one of mere bravado to prove a point.

Mandela folded her arms across her chest, smiling calmly as she watched the scene unfold.

Boom!

Under the many gazes, a dazzling golden light burst out from Mu Chen's body. As a massive shadow of golden light formed behind Mu Chen, a huge golden palm landed a brutal blow.

A terrifying spiritual energy typhoon swept out.

Boom!

As the huge golden light palm landed, it gripped a Spiritual Blazing Serpent and with a firm grasp, the serpent exploded with a deafening boom, surging out in spurts of magma.

The faces of the soldiers of the Daluo Celestial Army twisted in surprise as they stared at Mu Chen in shock. Who would have expected that a boy ranked as a Second Grade Sovereign would have a such a strong combat power.

The massive palm of golden light lifted as a crimson red glow of light rose.

Mu Chen stood atop the head of the Great Solar Undying Body, and with a wave of his hand, the Spiritual Blazing Marrow landed on his palm. He lifted his head to glance at Bing Xin, whose expression had changed minutely, and with a flick of his fingers, the Spiritual Blazing Marrow shot towards her.

"Commander Bing Xin, I return this to you."

Standing atop the crown of the Great Solar Undying Body, Mu Chen's handsome features exuded a palpable charm under the glow of the crimson magma.

"Would I be qualified to cultivate in the Daluo Blazing Pool now?"

Chapter 753: Hell Mode

Inside the fiery volcano, the red magma bubbled, releasing a terrifyingly high temperature. The gazes of the Daluo Celestial Army looked a little surprised, as they stared in unison at the young figure on the stone platform.

The rank of a Second Grade Sovereign was not at the very top in the Daluo Celestial Army, but even within their army, a top warrior with the rank of a Third Grade Sovereign would find it difficult to kill a century-old Spiritual Blazing Serpent so effortlessly, let alone a Second Grade Sovereign! The man who had been brought by the Dominator did possess some ability after all.

Many gazes flickered, but some of the teasing mirth in their eyes had diminished. The Daluo Celestial Army was the most powerful army in the Daluo Territory. All of their entrants were chosen after many trials, which shows they took extreme pride in their prowess, too.

Although Mandela was the Dominator, it was impossible to force them to accept a useless person among their ranks willingly. But now, Mu Chen had proven his own capability, making them finally understand what attitude they should treat him with: one of respect!

"Heh heh, he has great strength." Among the four Commanders, a strong, tall man looked at Mu Chen with amazement in his eyes, a smile on his face.

He was the second commander of the Daluo Celestial Army's Five Commanders, Commander Tie Shan. He had reached the pinnacle power of a Fifth Grade Sovereign. With his words, even the frosty Commander Bing Xin could not say anything to refute, for she was also astonished by the strength of Mu Chen.

"Don't underestimate him. In the Battle of Conquest, he's the one who defeated Qin Bei from Sorrowful Sky." Mandela remarked nonchalantly.

"Oh?"

The four Commanders were slightly shocked, as they had definitely heard Qin Bei's name, but did not expect him to have lost to the young man before them.

"Looks like there's finally a worthy commander amid the young commanders in the Daluo Territory." Bing Xin looked at Mu Chen, her words seeming to show her disdain towards the supposed Four Great Commanders in the Daluo Territory.

However, she was qualified to show this disdain. After all, Xu Qing's ability as a Third Grade Sovereign was nothing in the eyes of Bing Xin, who was a Fifth Grade Sovereign.

Mandela's golden eyes looked towards Mu Chen. She then said, "For the next three months, you will stay here to practice. After three months, if you want to leave, you will have to overcome the Nine-Nine Flaming Dragon Array that I have laid out in this Daluo Blazing Pool. And, you must do this alone." If you fail to break through it, don't even think of coming out. I'll send someone else for the experience of the Dragon-Phoenix Rift."

"Nine-Nine Flaming Dragon Array?" Mu Chen froze, glancing at Bing Xin and the other commanders. He could see clearly that they, too, were shocked, as they stared at him with pity and doubt in their eyes.

"What's that?" Mu Chen could sense that it was not something good, but he could only grit his teeth and ask.

"That was an obstacle trial that the Dominator had personally set up. Generally speaking, if anyone in the army could overcome it alone, he or she would be qualified to be promoted to the role of Commander. However, only a handful of people have been able to break through it over the years." Bing Xin pursed her red lips, seeming to be gloating a little.

The corners of Mu Chen's mouth could not help but twitch, his thoughts starting to swirl in his mind...

So, this was the trial to select the Commanders of Daluo Celestial Army. According to his estimate, this so-called "Nine-Nine Flaming Dragon Array" was probably difficult to overcome, even by Fourth Grade

Sovereigns. However, Mandela set this as a condition for him to leave, which seemed extremely harsh...

Even if there had not been any conflict between him and Mandela, Mu Chen would have still wondered if she was deliberately trying to toy with him.

"What? You don't dare?" Mandela's big golden eyes stared at Mu Chen. She then said meaningfully, "If you don't have the courage and confidence, then later, when you meet some of your competitors, I can hardly believe that you could have any chance of winning."

Mu Chen froze. As he looked at Mandela, he understood the hidden implications in her words. She had once told him that there might be other talented people in the world, who had also gained great opportunities to practice the Great Solar Undying Body. However, there was only one Primordial Immortal Body in the world, and if he wanted to succeed in the end, he would naturally clash with another opponent, who also had the same chance...

Mu Chen could only imagine how terrifying that kind of opponent would be, which was definitely unlike the kind of relatively easy competition he had met so far. Under the gaze of Mandela's golden eyes, Mu Chen nodded gently.

In this world, power was not so easy to obtain, and if one wanted to achieve something, they naturally had to give up something in exchange. Ordinary people could only see the dazzling trajectory of his take-off, but they never knew the hardships and training he had undergone in order to achieve those brilliant performances.

When the four Commanders, including Tie Shan and Bing Xin, saw that Mu Chen dared to agree, they couldn't help but be even more surprised. However, their eyes held a more relaxed gaze now, as they were also more than a little impressed by Mu Chen's courage. After all, not many people had the courage to rush into the "Nine-Nine Flaming Dragon Array"!

Mandela nodded contentedly, a rare smile appearing on her little face. "I'll wait for your good news then," she said. "These commanders will tell

you how to practice."

As she finished speaking, she vanished in a flash. Her speed astonished Mu Chen and the other commanders, who all looked on in envy. They seemed as vulnerable as infants, standing in front of a Sovereign and the Earthly Sovereign.

Upon seeing Mandela leave, Mu Chen then turned towards Tie Shan, Bing Xin, and the other commanders. Clasping his fists in respect, he said, "In the next three months, I will have to trouble the four commanders."

Tie Shan smiled and waved his hand. Although he looked as strong as an iron tower, he was not stupid. It could clearly be seen via the tone Mandela and Mu Chen used in conversation that the two obviously shared a relationship that was not merely one between a high and mighty Dominator and a small Commander. Hence, he did not dare be too casual towards Mu Chen.

"Regarding the cultivation in the Daluo Blazing Pool, let Bing Xin explain to you in detail. If there is any problem, you can come to us at any time." Tie Shan smiled at Mu Chen, then at Bing Xin. The remaining three of them returned to the surrounding stone platforms to test the practice of the Daluo Celestial Army.

Bing Xin looked at Mu Chen with a cold stare. "I don't know what the relationship between you and the Dominator is, but since she placed you here, I will set the same requirements for you. Thus, you must adhere to the strict rules of the Daluo Celestial Army!"

Mu Chen smiled and nodded.

"How should I begin?" Mu Chen had no intention of bantering with the cold, beautiful lady and asked directly.

"I had intended to make you train like the other warriors of the Daluo Celestial Army, practicing on this platform. But, since you have the ability to deal with the Spiritual Blazing Serpent alone, then I will lead you to the deeper depths of the Daluo Blazing Pool, where you will continue to hunt down more Spiritual Blazing Serpents, obtain the Spiritual Blazing Marrows, and speed up your cultivation progress," Bing Xin said.

"In addition, the temperature inside the Daluo Blazing Pool is quite high. Hence, with your strength, you can only enter a thousand feet deep. If you reach deeper depths, you would hit your limit. Also, there are even more powerful Spiritual Blazing Serpents in there, which you are unable to handle with your current ability."

"There's even more powerful ones?" Mu Chen was shocked. This Daluo Blazing Pool was no benevolent place indeed!

"The Spiritual Blazing Serpent that you hunted before is only a hundred years old. The longer its life span, the more powerful it will be. This life span can be distinguished from the size of the Serpent, but the more powerful Serpents are known to be in the deep depths of the Daluo Blazing Pool," she said. "As long as you don't trespass, you shouldn't encounter them." Although Bing Xin was cold, she gave a detailed explanation to thoroughly answer all of Mu Chen's queries.

"Is it true that the more powerful the Spiritual Blazing Serpent is, the larger and purer the Spiritual Blazing Marrow is within the body?" Mu Chen smacked his lips.

The Spiritual Blazing Marrow that he had previously refined was only a century-old. If it were older, the effects of cultivation would have been better.

Bing Xin could not help but roll her eyes at Mu Chen. She thought that this guy was not very old, but his disposition was so arrogant! After all, of course everyone wanted to obtain a Spiritual Blazing Marrow in the body of a Spiritual Blazing Serpent that lived more than 500 years, or even thousands of years. However, one also needed to have a certain degree of skill before being able to do so!

Mu Chen could only laugh dryly at Bing Xin's obvious eye roll.

"Follow me. Since you are so confident, I'll take you to a good harvest." Bing Xin smirked, as she led Mu Chen to the deep depths of the Daluo Blazing Pool. Mu Chen hurriedly tried to keep up.

While they made their way, two streams of light skimmed over the abyss. As he got closer to the Daluo Blazing Pool, the temperature became

more and more horrifying. Even with his strong physique, Mu Chen felt a faint tingling pain, which shocked him. After all, he had not yet even entered the Daluo Blazing Pool...

In the depths of the Daluo Blazing Pool, Mu Chen sensed the vastness of it. It was almost an entire sea of underground magma, the abyss around having been melted out like a complex terrain by the lava. The huge cavern had strange formations, like an elaborate labyrinth.

Mu Chen followed Bing Xin through the huge caverns. Then, after nearly ten minutes, the speed of Bing Xin finally slowed down.

Mu Chen also poked out his head from behind her. What he saw made his pupils shrink suddenly.

In front of him, there was still a sea of red magma, but on the sea of magma, the Spiritual Blazing Serpents were slithering and gliding, creating huge magma swirls.

Shrill hisses rang out from time to time. Roughly estimating, there were at least a hundred Spiritual Blazing Serpents. This vast quantity caused even Mu Chen's scalp to tingle in dread.

A smile appeared on the cold face of Bing Xin. She looked at Mu Chen, her slender hand gently waving an introduction. She smiled, saying, "Welcome to the Daluo Blazing Pool, Hell mode."

Chapter 754: Torturous Magma Cultivation

Within the crimson magma, Spiritual Blazing Serpents slithered swiftly, stirring up streams of lava whirlpools. Hissing sounds could constantly be heard, unsettling people and making their scalps tingle in fear.

Under the circumstances, even with Mu Chen's focus, he could not help but look a little stiff. Judging from their size, most of the Spiritual Blazing Serpents were far from a century old, but even the remaining handful could not be underestimated.

Despite his seemingly effortless hunting and killing of a 100-year-old Spiritual Blazing Serpent previously, that was due to him completely exerting the full power of his Great Solar Undying Body.

Now, in the face of such a large number of Spiritual Blazing Serpents, even if he possessed the Great Solar Undying Body, it would prove to be extremely daunting.

"Isn't this a little too difficult?" Mu Chen smiled stiffly. He was confident, but not arrogant. He did not believe that he could easily deal with so many Spiritual Blazing Serpents by himself.

After all, these creatures were not made out of clay.

"The Dominator says you have only three months to practice here, so if you really want to challenge the Nine-Nine Flaming Dragon Array in three months' time, you have to practice it this way." Bing Xin crossed her arms in front of her chest, and the soft fabric accentuated her curves. A teasing smile was on her face as she stared at Mu Chen.

"Of course, this is just a suggestion. You are the one who will make the choice."

The corner of Mu Chen's mouth twitched a little, and at this point, did he still have room to refuse?

Upon seeing Mu Chen's exasperated expression, Bing Xin smiled and

said, "Alright, you can cultivate here. In the meantime, you can come to me if you meet with any problems."

After speaking, she turned and in a few breaths time, disappeared from Mu Chen's field of vision, leaving him standing there alone. He stared speechlessly at the scorching hot sea of magma.

Mu Chen smiled bitterly as he regained his composure. It was not his personality to grumble and complain, and since he was already there, no matter how torturous the cultivation process would be, he would persevere.

Phew.

Mu Chen took a deep breath of boiling hot air. The air went into his lungs like a flame, giving him a burning sensation. The burning pain began to cause his black eyes to turn sharp.

Mu Chen gazed at the crimson magma, and after a brief observation, he saw that there were many Spiritual Blazing Serpents in the lava. However, the distribution was not regular. There was an area where they were dense, and in some places, they were much less so.

With Mu Chen's current capability, it should be no problem dealing with Spiritual Blazing Serpents that were 200 to 300 years old, but once there were too many, he would be exhausted. Thus, before adapting to this location completely, he should start slowly, before delving in...

At this point, Mu Chen no longer hesitated. With a tap of his toes, his figure appeared like a specter in another corner of the magma. He hovered about ten feet in the air, then stepped cautiously above the sea of lava.

Hiss!

Just as Mu Chen had stepped into the magma, a dozen Spiritual Blazing Serpents slithering in the lava were immediately aware of his invasion. Immediately, the magma burst, directly turning into a huge lava rainbow, charging swiftly towards Mu Chen as fast as lightning. Its ferocious fangs were like flowing, burning lava, possessing a deadly force.

Mu Chen's expression remained calm as his body quickly manifested

into its thundering form, and nine lightning runes emerged on his chest. Imprints of fists suddenly flashed out, and as thunder rumbled, ten beams of thunder and lightning swept out harshly, colliding head-on with the dozen serpents.

Boom!

The dozen Spiritual Blazing Serpents were far less powerful than the one that Mu Chen hunted before, and they were only a few decades old. Thus, their attacks did not seem to have much effect in Mu Chen's eyes. When the thunder swept out, these serpents exploded into bits of magma.

With a blow of his palm, a dozen Spiritual Blazing Marrows surged and were collected by him. His expression then turned solemn, as the fluctuations had spread, and beams of lava torrents flowed on the surface of the sea of magma. Under the torrents, ferocious Spiritual Blazing Serpents slithered menacingly.

Many of them were massive, and it was clear that they were at least a century old.

Crash!

Huge waves of magma rose into the sky, and the shrill hisses spread as the beams of fiery magma light penetrated the space and poured out towards Mu Chen.

In the face of this scale of attack, Mu Chen dared not have the slightest lapse in concentration. Focusing, he summoned the Great Solar Undying Body, and as it condensed, golden light surged as magma light beams bombarded the huge body.

Whoosh.

Although the attacks from the serpents were violent, the Great Solar Undying Body was not only astonishing in its defense, but also possessed the strength of the Daluo Golden Body, so the attacks only left scorch marks on the surface of the massive body.

At this time, the Great Solar Undying Body began the massacre. With a blow of a massive golden light palm, it directly penetrated the magma,

grabbed the ferocious serpents, and squeezed them until they exploded.

Boom!

Under the Great Solar Undying Body, the sea of magma rolled in a tumultuous frenzy. As the waves rioted, hissing screams permeated the surroundings.

After summoning the Great Solar Undying Body, Mu Chen could easily kill the serpents that were merely a few decades old. Only the massive century-old serpents that could match a Third Grade Sovereign were left that were capable of resisting his attacks.

However, although these serpents were not intelligent, they had a geographical advantage and the advantage of being large in quantity, so that when the endless offensive attacks bombarded the Great Solar Undying Body, Mu Chen could also detect the rapid depletion of spiritual energy in his body.

Even the dazzling golden light surrounding the Great Solar Undying Body was gradually becoming dimmer.

Boom!

The massive palm of the Great Solar Undying Body penetrated directly into the magma as it grabbed a century-old Spiritual Blazing Serpent and tore it apart with a rip of his palms.

A crimson Spiritual Blazing Marrow flew out as Mu Chen, who was hiding within the Great Solar Undying Body, promptly collected it.

In just four hours, he had killed five century-old Spiritual Blazing Serpents and more than a dozen decades-old serpents.

Of course, the price to pay for such battle results was that the light of the Great Solar Undying Body began to gradually dim due to the extensive consumption of spiritual energy. Such a never-ending battle had exhausted Mu Chen's spiritual energy even more than the fierce duel between him and Qin Bei had.

However, Mu Chen did not dare to relax even in the slightest. He had to

keep his spiritual energy running unreservedly, or he would lose utterly if his weak points were detected by the ferocious serpents.

Now the weaker serpents did not dare to come too close. Thus, most of the attacks on Mu Chen were from those that were at least a century old, and sometimes he even had to deal with more than eight serpents attacking him simultaneously.

The high intensity of the battle resulted in an exhaustion of spiritual energy that was gradually overwhelming Mu Chen.

Within the Great Solar Undying Body, Mu Chen's face was pale. At the current rate of consumption, the spiritual energy in his Sovereign Sea would be completely exhausted within an hour.

Under normal circumstances, when spiritual energy was consumed to this extent, the strategy was to get out of battle as soon as possible, find a quiet place to regain one's powers, and then continue fighting.

However, Mu Chen's dark eyes grew more and more scorching, and he did not seem to have any intention of retreating, for he could feel that the spiritual energy of his body was becoming unusually active.

Constant fighting, constant consumption of spiritual energy—this was the most energetic manifestation of spiritual energy.

The more one felt he was at its limit, the more one could not retreat!

As soon as he clenched his fist, he saw red balls of light suspended in front of him, all the Spiritual Blazing Marrows that he had acquired. He stared at them and without any hesitation, opened his mouth and swallowed them.

Cultivating and refining the Spiritual Blazing Marrows would bring a scorching pain to one's body as if being burned by fiery flames, thus people would find a quiet place to cultivate it under normal circumstances. People like Mu Chen, who dared to cultivate it directly in a battle, were few and far between.

Boom!

Just as Mu Chen absorbed the Spiritual Blazing Marrows into his body, his face and entire body flushed red as if he were burning up.

Spiritual energy as hot as magma flowed wildly through his meridians. Excruciating pain burned the meridians, causing Mu Chen's face to twist in distortion. He clenched his teeth, and streaks of blood seeped through them, but he had no intention of stopping.

While summoning the Great Pagoda Art to cultivate and refine the scorching magma-like spiritual energy in his body, Mu Chen controlled the Great Solar Undying Body to avoid the fierce attacks.

Blood spurted out from his mouth, but he smirked as the heat in his eyes grew more and more intense.

He was wild and persistent, for he felt a majestic and vast spiritual power developing in his body.

At the same time Mu Chen fell into the endless struggle, on that stone platform there was a light screen displaying the scene as the Great Solar Undying Body dimmed and fell into a frail struggle.

Bing Xin, Tie Shan, and the other Commanders, as well as the soldiers of Daluo Celestial Army, looked up at Mu Chen, who was engaged in a bitter battle, as their mouths curled.

"What a reckless fellow. Judging from the scenario, I'll have to save him later. He truly doesn't know the gravity of the situation, and is still not retreating at this point in time," Bing Xin stated in displeasure. Originally, Mu Chen could have had sufficient spiritual energy to rush out of this encirclement, but he did not retreat. Now, he was entangled by more Spiritual Blazing Serpents. According to the circumstances, there was only one fate awaiting Mu Chen. When he had exhausted his spiritual energy, he would be torn to pieces by the serpents.

The other three Commanders nodded in agreement as they thought, this Mu Chen did not seem like the reckless kind... Why would he commit such rash actions?

Bing Xin glanced at the Spiritual Energy Screen once again as she shook

her head in disappointment and was about to make a move. However, just as she took a step, low gasps of astonishment spread amid the onlookers on the stone platform.

She lifted her head abruptly before narrowing her cold eyes.

In the encirclement of the Spiritual Blazing Serpents, the Great Solar Undying Body, which had lost its glow, suddenly burst with dazzling light, shining brilliantly.

An even more magnificent wave of spiritual energy erupted like a volcano in that massive body.

Chapter 755: The Great Hunt

On the stone platform, many soldiers of the Daluo Celestial Army looked at the Spiritual Energy Screen in front of them in amazement. On the screen, the Sovereign Celestial Body, which had dimmed, due to the depletion of spiritual energy, was once again projecting a bright golden light.

Moreover, anyone could feel that the spiritual energy fluctuations that were flowing out from the Sovereign Celestial Body were more powerful than they had been before.

"How could his spiritual energy have been restored?" Someone gasped in astonishment.

"He's cultivating the Spiritual Blazing Marrow in battle." Surprise flit across Commander Tie Shan's face, as he spoke the words solemnly.

"What?"

Upon hearing this, even Commander Bing Xin was stunned. The soldiers of the Daluo Celestial Army around him were equally stunned, as they were extremely familiar with the Spiritual Blazing Marrow.

They understood that, when one was absorbing and refining it, the body had to endure so much burning pain during the process, that it was most common to look for a quiet and safe place for cultivation. Hence, they could not even think of such a bold act as attempting to cultivate it amid a battle! After all, no one had the skills or the confidence to be able to endure the burning pain, while also maintaining an unwavering fighting spirit.

"Isn't that too daring?" Many of those gathered could not help but mutter, as they looked at the bright golden silhouette on the Spiritual Energy Screen, glints of admiration in their eyes. No matter what, this young fighter's courage was admirable. And, most importantly, he had actually succeeded...

Bing Xin's originally tense expression relaxed gradually. The young man

named Mu Chen, who was so valued by the Dominator, did seem to stand out from among the others.

Originally, she had great doubts about whether or not Mu Chen could overcome the "Nine Flaming Dragon Array" in three months. However, after seeing this fellow's reckless abandon throughout his cultivation process, it was hard to determine how things would turn out.

Along with the many people on the stone platform, who were amazed by the sudden restoration of spiritual energy in Mu Chen, Mu Chen himself was as surprised as them! His surprise stemmed from the fact that he could feel the mighty spiritual energy inside him.

The strength of the spiritual energy was stronger than it had been before. It was obvious that his spiritual energy had reached a break through.

There was a significant distance required to break through to the rank of a Third Grade Sovereign. In normal circumstances, it would take a long period of time to and many hours of practice to be able to achieve this kind of refinement. However, it only took a few hours for Mu Chen to attain that level now.

In such a high pressure situation, it only served to make Mu Chen stronger. This revealed the truth that the more dangerous the challenge was, the more it could inspire one's potential. Hence, although danger lurked everywhere in the Daluo Blazing Pool, it brought about great benefit to cultivation.

Mu Chen's dark eyes grew sharp, as a valiant aura surged in his heart. He had experienced countless life-threatening battles in his journey thus far, so this small Daluo Blazing Pool was not going to stop him in his tracks!

Mu Chen laughed. Then, a golden light swept through the Great Solar Undying Body. A golden palm emerged, carrying the terrifying power of crashing mountains and overwhelming the two Spiritual Blazing Serpents. As they fell back, they emitted shrill shrieks of agony.

Boom!

It was at this time that the Great Solar Undying Body stepped directly into the crimson red magma, and the golden light swept across madly towards the Spiritual Blazing Serpents. His current attacks were even more ferocious than his prior assaults, as waves of magma splattered everywhere violently. The serpents that were encircling him now rioted in panic, as each time the golden giant fist of light landed, a serpent was blown to pieces.

However, these Spiritual Blazing Serpents lacked intelligence, so they did not have the capability to show or feel true fear. Yet, Mu Chen's murderous intent had triggered their combat desire. With shrill hisses, the serpents charged out incessantly, unafraid of death.

Amid the red magma, a massive golden silhouette waved its giant fist, the golden light it emitted carrying violent and unmatched spiritual energy as it swept across the arena. Then, from within the magma, ferocious Spiritual Blazing Serpents rushed out in a frenzy.

The magma rolled in tumultuous waves, due to the chaotic massacre. The raging battle caused even the veteran warriors of the Daluo Celestial Army to be dumbfounded.

Despite Mu Chen having restored his spiritual energy by cultivating the Spiritual Blazing Marrow, he could not continue fighting indefinitely. This was because, even though his spiritual energy could be restored, human vigor could not be recovered by relying on external materials.

Thus, when the insane battle lasted for a whole day, the Great Solar Undying Body, who was surrounded by Spiritual Blazing Serpents, suddenly burst out of the magma territory in a brilliant flash. As golden light flashed about, a figure took the distracting opportunity to hide inside a nearby cave.

As soon as Mu Chen went into the cave, he sat down cross-legged immediately. His face was deathly pale and his expression was thick with exhaustion. The high intensity of the battle had almost completely exhausted his energy. If not for his strong willpower, he would have passed out long ago.

Although he was done battling at the moment, he had no time to rest, as now was the best opportunity to practice his cultivation. With a wave of Mu Chen's hand, a bright red Spiritual Blazing Marrow hovered in front of him. As he held it gently, a sparkling jade bottle appeared in his hand.

From the bottle, a small, clear stream flew out, winding and tangling around Mu Chen. The stream was filled with the purest form of spiritual energy. Now, both the Spiritual Blazing Marrow and the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid were ready!

Sitting cross-legged, Mu Chen used his hands to conjure up several seals rapidly. As he did so, he closed his eyes in exhaustion. He then entered the state of cultivation, his mouth opening and closing in order to absorb the Spiritual Blazing Marrows and drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid.

Mu Chen's originally expended spiritual energy fluctuations slowly awakened in his body, becoming stronger and condensed. It was a great success! During the following month, Mu Chen's cultivation continued in this same constant cycle.

Meanwhile, amid the crimson red magma, turbulent waves and chaos emerged every day. Golden light pervaded the area, as the huge golden figure behaved like a tireless fighting machine, battling nonstop with the incessant Spiritual Blazing Serpents.

With every battle, he would persist until his energy reached its limit. He would then drag his tired body out of the magma territory, returning to the depths of the cave to continue cultivating. Mu Chen's cultivation was so insane, even the warriors of the Daluo Celestial Army, who were no strangers to constant cultivation, were shocked at his intense determination.

The young man looked warm and kind on the surface, but they had never expected him to possess such a high degree of persistence and stubbornness! However, this is what moved them to respect him.

Even Tie Shan, Bing Xin, and the other Commanders of the Daluo Celestial Army were shocked by Mu Chen's performance this past month. At the same time, they sighed, as they now understood why this young

man was so valued by the Dominator.

In fact, Mu Chen's improvements were astounding. He had put in an immense effort, and during a short period of just one month, the spiritual energy in his body had become increasingly powerful. Although he was still unable to attain a break through, it was still twice as powerful as it had been a month ago. Mu Chen's combat resilience also had greatly improved!

In the beginning, he had tried his very best, only to last most of a single day. However, after a month, he was able to persist in combat for nearly two days at a time!

And, with every new day of battle, his body began to gradually adapt to the cruel scorching environment of the Daluo Blazing Pool. Now, as he inhaled its hot air into his body, it brought a warm feeling of comfort instead of a sense of scorching, menace.

Also during in this month, countless of decades old Spiritual Blazing Serpents had been hunted down and killed by Mu Chen, many of which were centuries old. In fact, the body count had reached a staggering triple-digit count thus far!

Following these battles, the arena where the Spiritual Blazing Serpents had gathered had almost been entirely cleared by Mu Chen. The current sparse, shabby environment before him now was nothing like the spectacular gathering that had been held here just a month ago.

Although the Spiritual Blazing Serpents were not intelligent, they could sense the blood from their own kind flowing in this magma arena. This mixture of their own kind's blood mixed with the lava made them realize that this was a very dangerous place.

Thus, as they fled to escape the obvious danger, the number of Spiritual Blazing Serpents in the area rapidly decreased. Then, a month later, Mu Chen discovered that all of the creatures had escaped entirely. There was not a single serpent left for him to hunt.

On a rock that was protruding from the magma, Mu Chen stood still, his eyes surveying his surroundings. From this vantage point, he could not see

any prey, which made him purse his mouth helplessly, before mumbling to himself.

"The spiritual energy in the Sovereign Sea seems to be reaching its saturation point..."

Mu Chen looked down at his palm. His hands clenched slowly. Feeling the surge of spiritual energy flowing in his body, he could not help but grin.

But, then he frowned, as he could feel that the growth of spiritual energy in his body had begun to stagnate. He soon realized that, no matter how much he refined the Spiritual Blazing Marrow and the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid these days, it was getting harder to allow the spiritual energy to increase.

It was obvious that he had reached the spiritual energy bottleneck. As such, he was no longer able to use the same methods to achieve the same results as he had previously.

His eyes shone sharply, as he stared at the crimson red sea of magma, licking his lips. It was a tough pill to swallow, knowing this The Spiritual Blazing Marrow was no longer enough for his cultivation.

If he wanted to break through this bottleneck, he knew that he needed a stronger Spiritual Blazing Marrow. He also knew that this level of Spiritual Blazing Marrow, one that lasted for several years, would only appear in the deepest depths of the the Daluo Blazing Pool.

However, the extreme temperature of the magma in those deepest depths was absolutely harrowing. It was so terrifying, in fact, that even powerful figures like Tie Shan, Bing Xin, and the other Commanders dared not face it.

However, this was not enough to stop Mu Chen. He raised his head and smiled. He could feel the fluctuations of spiritual energy there. Bing Xin and the others were also paying attention to it. He took a deep breath. Then, without hesitation, he transformed into a stream of light, charging straight into the sea of magma.

Splash.

Magma sputtered and raged wildly. Mu Chen had leapt into the Daluo Blazing Pool! On the stone platform, Commander Bing Xin and the others could only watch and look at each other, speechless!

Chapter 756: The Change in Role

Splash.

When Mu Chen rushed into the crimson magma, the terrible temperature burst into a frenzy. Even though he had pushed the Thunder God Physique to the extreme and protected his body with his spiritual energy, the temperature still caused bursts of burning pain on his skin.

Whoosh.

Mu Chen transformed into a shadow that tore the thick, viscous lava apart. He surged quickly into the depths of the magma, and though he knew it was a very dangerous thing to go deep into the Daluo Blazing Pool, he could not get a high return without taking high risks. In order to advance to the rank of a Third Grade Sovereign, he had to try, no matter how dangerous it was.

In the magma, groups of roaming Spiritual Blazing Serpents could be seen. Mu Chen did not want to get entangled with them, so he carefully avoided them and went deeper.

In a short period of time, Mu Chen reached a depth of 1,000 feet in the Daluo Blazing Pool. The magma had hints of purple hues because the temperature was overwhelmingly high.

Even Mu Chen's Thunder God Physique could not withstand that degree of heat.

Phew.

Taking a deep breath, Mu Chen focused, and a dark purple flame emerged from the surface of his body, forming a fire membrane that enveloped his body.

That terrible heat instantly weakened.

The dark purple flame was, of course, the Unperishable Flame. Although the temperature in the Daluo Blazing Pool was extremely high, it was difficult to penetrate the protection formed by the Unperishable Flame.

This was why Mu Chen had to cultivate it despite not activating it, though it was suitable for hunting and killing Spiritual Blazing Serpents with longer lifespans.

Whoosh!

With the help of the Unperishable Flame shielding him from the surrounding high temperature, Mu Chen's speed skyrocketed. In just a few minutes, he went to a depth of 2,000 feet. The spiritual energy contained in the lava was so powerful and violent that some of the magma even solidified and floated in the molten magma like red ice cubes.

Most oddly of all, it was as if a vacuum had been formed surrounding the solidified magma, and no lava could trickle in.

Mu Chen fell on a giant magma platform as he felt the pressure instantly disappear. The feeling was as if the solidified magma rocks perfectly counteracted the pressure and heat deep in the Daluo Blazing Pool.

"What an amazing place indeed."

Mu Chen stomped his feet, but the giant magma rock remained motionless. He could not resist letting out a sigh of admiration. The Great Thousand World was so vast, it was filled with all kinds of wonders indeed.

Mu Chen surveyed his surroundings as he murmured in doubt, "Why haven't I seen a Spiritual Blazing Serpent yet?" He found that he did not seem to see any serpents at this depth, which was quite different from the situation above, where it was teeming with serpents.

As Mu Chen stared blankly, a solidified rock of magma not far from him exploded, and a giant serpent tail tore through the magma, smashing down hard on Mu Chen's head.

The sudden attack caused Mu Chen's face to twist as he swiftly leapt away.

Crash!

The serpent tail plummeted down brutally, blowing the giant magma rock to pieces. Mu Chen was swept away by the aftershock as the impact forced him to stagger back dozens of steps. He then hurriedly stabilized his body.

He looked up with a somber expression and in the magma, a huge Spiritual Blazing Serpent slithered, larger than any he had seen before.

"Impressive fellow. He must be at least 400 hundred years old!"

Mu Chen gasped. The size of the Spiritual Blazing Serpent was two to three times bigger than that of the century-old serpents.

A Spiritual Blazing Serpent with this lifespan was no weaker than Qin Bei.

This was a tough guy to handle.

Hiss.

The ferocious python stared savagely at Mu Chen and immediately, it opened its huge mouth, and a beam of red magma light hurtled towards Mu Chen.

The spiritual energy this beam of magma light contained was unparalleled compared to the serpents that Mu Chen had encountered, thus he did not dare to have the slightest lapse in concentration. A surge of golden light burst out as the Great Solar Undying Body was summoned.

Bang!

The golden light palm clashed with the beam of magma, and a terrible wind raged, shattering the surrounding massive suspended magma rocks.

Mu Chen's figure appeared around the Great Solar Undying Body's head, and his eyes stared sharply at the fiercely attacking Spiritual Blazing Serpent. He conjured seals as the Sovereign Sea emerged behind him with the roar of dragons and elephants reverberating.

Whoosh!

Twin dragons and twin elephants flew out as they condensed into a

Dragon Elephant aureole. Mu Chen pointed his finger, and the aureole pierced through the void space with a whoosh.

Mu Chen had called upon the most powerful Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art immediately, as he understood how formidable this Spiritual Blazing Serpent was. Thus, he did not need to make any redundant tests of strength.

Hiss!

The Spiritual Blazing Serpent let out a skyward roar, and its scales stood as if it were aware of the deadly danger.

Boom!

A red aureole continuously burst out of the Spiritual Blazing Serpent's body as if it were a tangible substance. Its appearance was a layer of protection guarding and surrounding the serpent.

Judging from this alone, the power of the Spiritual Blazing Serpent was far greater than that which he had encountered before. After all, Mu Chen had not seen other serpents execute such a powerful defense.

However, Mu Chen was very confident of the Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art, as even Qin Bei was defeated by it. He did not believe that a Spiritual Blazing Serpent, which did not possess any intelligence, could withstand it!

Whoosh!

The Dragon Elephant aureole appeared above the Spiritual Blazing Serpent. Under the high-speed rotation, it seemed to have the power to brutally tear everything apart. Coupled with the power of the dragon and elephant, it was practically unstoppable.

The Dragon Elephant aureole surged past with a whoosh and in the blink of an eye, the layers of red aureoles around the Spiritual Blazing Serpent were destroyed and exploded as a shrill screech rang out.

Mu Chen glanced over as the ferocious Spiritual Blazing Serpent was severed in two at the waist. He grinned as he saw the success of such a

powerful move, using the Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art. No matter what it was, it would be annihilated.

Boom!

However, before Mu Chen could completely relax, the Spiritual Blazing Serpent, which had been severed in two, had once again opened its ferocious mouth, and a raging red pillar of light shot forward, enshrouding Mu Chen.

Crash!

The Great Solar Undying Body crossed its arms as it blocked the scarlet pillar of light with its massive body, but cracks appeared on its arms.

Mu Chen's mouth twitched. He did not expect the Spiritual Blazing Serpent to be so resilient as it put up such a resistance despite being severed.

"No matter what, I will get your Spiritual Blazing Marrow." Mu Chen scoffed coldly. He did not believe that this severed Spiritual Blazing Serpent was capable of more tricks.

Hiss!

However, just as Mu Chen was preparing to deal the fatal blow, the Spiritual Blazing Serpent did not charge forward mindlessly. Instead, it turned and ran away, which startled Mu Chen. Apparently, he did not expect that the serpent, which had lived for 400 years, was not only strong but also knew when to escape, which was quite different from those he had encountered before.

Mu Chen focused, and the Great Solar Undying Body gave chase. It had been rare to encounter such a precious Spiritual Blazing Serpent, and he would not let it escape at any cost.

Boom!

However, the moment his body moved, his hair suddenly stood up. A sense of unutterable danger came to mind, and it was this feeling that brought the Great Solar Undying Body to an abrupt halt.

Crash!

In the depths of the magma, a red shadow sprang out at an indescribable speed, wrapped directly around the Spiritual Blazing Serpent, and thrust a scarlet red needle into the serpent's head.

The Spiritual Blazing Serpent struggled frantically, but in just a few moments, its huge body became shrivelled, as if all the blood had been sucked out of it.

Mu Chen stared shell-shocked at this scene as he lowered his head stiffly, only to see a massive crimson snake scorpion loitering in the depths of the magma.

The crimson snake scorpion had a scorpion-like head, but its tail was a serpent's tail, and on the tip of the tail there was a shimmering scorpion thorn. A terrible spiritual energy fluctuation emanated from its body.

The power of the fluctuations was so much stronger than that of the 400-year-old Spiritual Blazing Serpent.

Gulp.

Mu Chen swallowed in fear as his palms turned cold. He did not expect the depths of the magma to unexpectedly hide such a horrifying snake scorpion. No wonder there were no Spiritual Blazing Serpents in this area!

The cold, ruthless eyes of the crimson snake scorpion turned at this time, and then landed on Mu Chen. There was no intelligence in those eyes, but there was pure murderous intent and fury.

Mu Chen took a deep breath and in the next moment, the Great Solar Undying Body below his feet dissipated as he retreated swiftly like a specter.

This crimson snake scorpion had a terrifying strength that he could not resist at all, and Mu Chen knew that if he did not escape, he would probably end up exactly like that Spiritual Blazing Serpent.

Although he lamented dearly the loss of the 400-year-old Spiritual Blazing Marrow, it was clear that his life was more valuable.

Mu Chen desperately tried to escape. He had intended to flee upwards, but the pieces of suspended solidified magma became his biggest obstacle, so he had to give up and run in a straight line.

As he was running for his life, Mu Chen looked back. This glance caused him to break out in a cold sweat, for he saw the mysterious snake scorpion surging across the magma in hot pursuit.

Clearly, this massive fellow did not intend to let his prey escape!

"A**hole!"

Mu Chen gritted his teeth and cursed. He did not expect to become the prey instead, as he was originally there to hunt and kill Spiritual Blazing Serpents...

Whoosh!

Mu Chen pushed his speed to the extreme and began to flee frantically, but behind him, the terrifyingly formidable crimson snake scorpion followed closely.

Murderous intent emanated from the depths of the magma as the roles of predator and prey quietly changed.

Chapter 757: Huo Mei'er

Boom!

At the bottom of the glowing-red magma sea, the lava rocks were burst by a forceful speed, and a loud bang could be heard. A shadowy figure, who was surrounded by a dark purple flame, flit across rapidly.

Not far from behind where the lava rocks had cracked open, a vast, hideous crimson scorpion burst forth from the flowing stream of magma, chasing to catch up to the shadowy figure at an alarming speed.

Although it had a massive body, it was moving as fast as lightning, sending chills down the spines of all present. It was, of course, none other than Mu Chen and that mysterious scorpion, who were the ones fleeing and chasing respectively.

At this point in time, Mu Chen had an utterly sad face. He did not think that he would be so unlucky as to have stomped directly into the territory of this mysterious scorpion, especially immediately as he entered the Daluo Blazing Pool.

Judging on the situation, hunting down those spiritual blazing serpents was out of the question now. At this point, Mu Chen would be lucky just to not get himself hunted down by this mysterious scorpion.

"I have to get out first!"

Mu Chen gritted his teeth and sped up, as he could feel the massive presence behind him. He realized that the mysterious scorpion was not something that he could compete with.

Hiss!

Even though Mu Chen sped up, the mysterious scorpion was not in a hurry to catch up anymore. Instead, it let off an easygoing hissing sound, implying that it had complete confidence in its inevitably having Mu Chen as its comfort food in the net regardless.

So, the man and the scorpion flit across the Daluo Blazing Pool swiftly. Along the way, they met numerous spiritual blazing serpents, but the

snakes escaped, as soon as they sensed the immense pressure from the mysterious scorpion behind them. Seeing this scene freaked Mu Chen out even more, as this scorpion was obviously not an ordinary scorpion.

Why did he provoke such a powerful lord, as soon as he came?

Mu Chen felt like weeping. But, before he could even have a chance to pity himself, a sharp whistling from behind sent all of his hair standing on end.

As he took a glimpse out of the corner of his eyes, a reflection flashed upon him. Part of the scorpion's stinger was flickering coldly behind him, and he could feel pins and needles all over his scalp.

Mu Chen clenched his fist and beamed out Great Meru Demonic Pillar. He swung his hand from behind, colliding his fist with its stinger.

Dang!

A sound that seemed like a collision between two metals was heard. An intimidating force was coming straight at him, causing him to spit blood, leaving a blood trace that could be seen at the corner of his mouth. The brutal force from the collision flung his entire body outward.

"This fellow has at least the power equivalent to a Grade Six Sovereign!" Mu Chen exclaimed, as he was shocked by the injuries that he sustained from this random exchange of blows. The ability of this mysterious scorpion was considered to be first-class among the princes in this Daluo territory.

Throughout the previous exchange, Mu Chen had come to an understanding of the combat capacity of this mysterious scorpion. He dared not have any close contact with it anymore. Thus, with the help of the previous thrust, he sprinted out even faster.

Yet, the scorpion continued to follow him closely. No matter how fast Mu Chen went, he just could not shake it off.

Over time, Mu Chen looked even more depressed, as he noticed that the scorpion seemed to be toying with its prey. Apparently, it was waiting to exhaust all his energy before it finally preyed on him.

His eyes flickered, as he gathered his thoughts. Although the scorpion was more powerful, it did not seem to have much intelligence. If he could try with all his might, he may still have a chance to escape.

However, in order to achieve this, he knew he would have to pay some price for it inevitably, but at this point, Mu Chen had no choice. Gritting his teeth, he intended to fight for his life, but just before he could fire up his spiritual power, there was another crack from the blazing lava rocks in front of him. Another figure was charging at him at full speed!

The sudden appearance of the figure stunned Mu Chen, and as he looked at it, he was even more astounded to find out that shadow was actually a woman. She had long, red hair with a sexy body, and was wearing thin and revealing clothes, which showed off a significant amount of her fair skin. Even though the timing was not quite right, Mu Chen could still feel his heartbeat accelerating.

Moreover, she was beautiful and charming. She also had a beauty mole at the edge of her red lips, enhancing her sexiness and charm.

Deep within the Daluo Blazing Pool, the sudden appearance of such a beautiful lady captivated Mu Chen, slowing down his speed for a while. Just when he spotted the red-haired beauty, the latter also discovered him. She was looking with astonishment upon him, the look on her face changing as soon as she saw the mysterious scorpion chasing after Mu Chen.

"Run!" Mu Chen yelled at her quickly.

His voice ended abruptly, when he fixed his eyes at the back of the red-haired beauty. There, an enormous red python, had emerged from the cracked lava rocks, and was now following closely behind, exuding a strong ferociousness.

That is a three-headed spiritual blazing serpent!

It could be easily seen that the Spiritual Energy emitted from it was not any weaker than the scorpion that was chasing after Mu Chen. As Mu Chen surveyed this scene, he came to a realization: She is now a prey as well, just like him.

"We are done for."

Mu Chen sulked, as he thought of all the unfortunate things that had coincided themselves within the day. If it was just a scorpion, he probably could still try his best to escape. But now, he was at the end of his rope, especially if yet another three-headed spiritual blazing serpent, with a similar combat capacity, appeared.

The red-haired beauty was not as pessimistic as Mu Chen. Her enchanting peach-looking eyes took a glance at the scorpion behind him. With a low groan, she flit before Mu Chen.

An alluring fragrance, accompanied by the wind, swept his face, and before he could even indulge in it, the red-haired beauty reached out to grab Mu Chen by the waist, then disappeared with him into thin air.

The two of them then re-appeared at a distance of about hundred-feet away from their previous location. As the red-haired beauty waved her slender white hand, the magma around her gathered, forming a ball-like shield for them, and leaving only a tiny gap from which to observe the situation outside.

Mu Chen did not dare move about in this cramped place, as he was cuddling the girl closely in his arms. The softness and tenderness of her body caused his entire body to stiffen. Moreover, he could tell from the Spiritual Energy that she had emitted just now, that she was definitely no ordinary character.

But she had no time for Mu Chen now. Her peach-looking eyes were staring into the gap, observing the situation from the inside. After both of them disappeared, the scorpion and the three-headed serpent lost their targets, leaving the beasts with nothing to do but to stop and stare at each other fiercely.

"What is going on?" Mu Chen could not help but ask, when he saw this.

"The one that was chasing after you is named the Blazing Dragon Scorpion. It is one of the rulers in this Daluo Blazing Pool, and its specialty is to hunt down spiritual blazing serpents. This three-headed spiritual blazing serpent is also one of the rulers among the serpents. They are

natural sworn enemies, and they will always fight until the end, once they meet."

The red-haired beauty continued to say, "Looks like luck is on our side, since we have brought them together here. We will go out and have our treat, after they fought till their last drop. Heh heh, I have been eyeing the Spiritual Blazing Marrow in their bodies for a very long time. And now, the opportunity has finally arrived!"

Mu Chen was breaking into a cold sweat upon hearing this. This sister must have some guts to be reaping benefits from the fighting between such beasts!

"Will we get discovered?" Mu Chen asked, worried. If both of the beasts turned their sight back on them, they would be doomed.

"No, they will not be able to find us ,since they are now facing each other. After all, they are sworn enemies," she said.

Mu Chen felt a little relieved. As he could feel the girl in his arms edging closer to him, he tried to shift his body and said embarrassedly, "Should I go out first?"

"Once you leave this place, they will discover us immediately. It will be complicated again." The red-haired beauty frowned a little. She finally tilted her head and looked at Mu Chen, asking, "Are you one of the troops from the Daluo Celestial Army? Why have I not seen you before?"

"The territory lord let me in to train myself," Mu Chen answered honestly. It seemed like this red-haired beauty was also someone from the Daluo Celestial Army.

"And you are?" Mu Chen asked carefully.

"I'm Huo Mei'er." Her voice paused, as she gave Mu Chen a very bewitching smile, before continuing, "And, I'm also one of the commanders in the Daluo Celestial Army."

Mu Chen shivered upon hearing the latter. He was stunned, as he had not expected that a commander of the Daluo Celestial Army could be such an enchanting beauty.

"You are quite a gentleman. I will let you off this time, for taking my advantage. If news of this gets to a third person, don't blame me if I have to silence you." She gently patted Mu Chen on his face, still smiling. But, Mu Chen broke into a cold sweat again upon hearing her last sentence.

Huo Mei'er may seem to be very warm and easy to get along with, but the danger she portrayed was much stronger than even Commander Bing Xin. She ignored Mu Chen after she finished her speech, as her focus was all on the two gigantic creatures confronting each other on the outside. As she watched their fight, her curvy body curled up once again against Mu Chen.

Mu Chen felt agony and drew his lips. His arm immediately stiffened. As he could no longer endure any more, his arm landed quietly on her snake-like, slender waist, the softness of the body being so alluring that it was unforgettable. But Mu Chen did not dare move any further. In fact, he relaxed and looked outside.

Huo Mei'er stiffened up a little when his palm touched her waist. She took a glance at him out of the corner of her eyes. His eyes were pitch-black and clear. She relaxed her body more, moving closer to Mu Chen.

Within a narrow space, the crisis had slowly disappeared, leaving a tinge of endearing affection.

Chapter 758: The Fight between the Two

Boom!

As the storm of the Spiritual Energy roared within the boundaries of the Daluo Blazing Pool, almost all the lava rocks within a radius of 1,000 feet were wiped out. Everything seemed to have ripped apart as the battle between the Blazing Dragon Scorpion and the Three-Headed Spiritual Blazing Serpent started.

As Huo Mei'er had mentioned, both of them were natural sworn enemies, and the moment they saw each other, they fought with all they had. Compared to prey like Mu Chen, killing off their foe was much more critical now.

In the wavering storm of the spiritual energy, the ball of magma that was formed did not have any slightest crack. Instead, it was floating steadily in the air, surviving the impact. Mu Chen was surprised for a moment, as it was clear that this commander was not an ordinary character.

"Given your capability, you wouldn't be afraid of them if you were to duel with them alone. Am I right?" Mu Chen tilted his head and asked Huo Mei'er, who had her undivided attention on the fight between the two creatures.

Even Bing Xin possessed the capability of a Grade Five Sovereign. As a commander, Huo Mei'er's ability could not be underestimated.

"It's a little difficult to handle because they have a tendency to self-destruct their Spiritual Blazing Marrow when they are being forced to a certain extent. To subdue them, we have to be swift and forceful with our blows. " Huo Mei'er glanced at Mu Chen with her seductive eyes, smiled, and said, "I don't want to waste my effort to get nothing in return."

Mu Chen suddenly realized the logic in getting both Blazing Dragon Scorpion and the Three-Headed Spiritual Blazing Serpent to battle until they got worn out. No wonder she did not want to compete with them on her own.

"How much longer do they need to fight it out?"

Mu Chen stared at the daunting tornado storm. The two fearsome creatures were attacking each other without holding back. The lava rocks trembled and were dislodged by their loud and angry roars.

"I guess we will have to wait for a while more. These creatures are making use of the geographic location to play to their advantage. Plus, they have strong spiritual energy with combat capabilities that are on par with each other. It is not that easy to have a winner," Huo Mei'er answered him calmly.

Mu Chen nodded and did not continue. Instead, he set his mind to observe the match between the two creatures.

As Huo Mei'er had predicted, the match lasted for quite some time. The daunting storm from the spiritual energy wreaked havoc for almost an hour before the trembling weakened.

Both Mu Chen and Huo Mei'er immediately looked over. Mu Chen could not help but take a deep, cold breath.

Within the magma pool, both of them stood face to face in confrontation. However, there were wounds all over their bodies. The Three-Headed Spiritual Blazing Serpent had two of its heads ripped apart. The body of the Blazing Dragon Scorpion was covered with hideous wounds.

The momentum of the two massive creatures had slowed down by quite a bit. They were staring at each other with their red eyes, and the fearsome looks on their faces were disappearing, but both of them remained vigilant.

Although they had no intelligence, based on their natural instinct, they could sense that there would not be a good ending if they continued the fight.

Therefore, even though they seemed to be confronting each other, both showed signs of retreating.

"They are retreating!" The look on Mu Chen's face changed when he saw

it. If the two creatures decided to retreat now, their efforts in keeping guard here for almost half a day would be in vain.

Huo Mei'er frowned a little, but she stretched out her fingers and flicked them.

Wong!

With a flick of Huo Mei'er's fingers, a fiery red stream of spiritual energy shot out. It swept across and entangled itself with the lava rocks. The rocks burst and exploded swiftly from behind the Three-Headed Spiritual Blazing Serpent. A stream of magma spurted towards the Blazing Dragon Scorpion's body.

The magma splashed onto its body, and the Blazing Dragon Scorpion let out a loud scream of pain as its angry red eyes glared at the serpent. Eventually, it charged madly towards the serpent.

As dumb as it was, the Blazing Dragon Scorpion thought that the attack was triggered by the Three-Headed Spiritual Blazing Serpent.

As the scorpion charged towards the serpent again, it let out a loud roar to warn the scorpion off, but the warning was in vain. The serpent's eyes became even more fearsome and it greeted the scorpion without fear.

The two massive creatures were fighting again.

When Mu Chen saw this, he could not help but put up his thumb and praise Huo Mei'er. "Good move!"

Huo Mei'er replied with an alluring smile that was so enchanting. But this only lead to Mu Chen thinking that the bewitching girl in front of him was actually a rose with thorns.

Since she was one of the commanders in Daluo Celestial Army, how simple could she be?

While watching the fight outside, Huo Mei'er asked casually, "What's your name?"

He smiled and said, "Nine Nether Palace, Mu Chen."

"Oh, so the new commander who was brought in by Nine Nether was

you?" Upon hearing the name, Huo Mei'er turned her beautiful gaze away from the scene outside and looked at Mu Chen with much interest.

Mu Chen nodded. He asked, "Do you know Nine Nether?"

"Haha, we are as close as real sisters. Back then we came to Daluo Territory together."

She giggled and looked at Mu Chen from top to bottom. Her tender body got closer and closer to him. She smiled and asked again, "Come, tell me, what is your relationship with her?"

Mu Chen gave a smirk and rolled his eyes. Apparently, he did not really believe what she had said, because if she and Nine Nether were on such good terms, Nine Nether would have said something about her. Moreover, from Huo Mei'er's tone, he could sense that something was amiss.

What a vigilant fellow.

She stroked his face gently while her lips curled slightly. But she decided not to say anything further. She shifted her attention towards the battle outside. "When both of them are badly wounded, I can only take down one of them at a time. If you wish to obtain the other Spiritual Blazing Marrow, you will have to get it yourself, and be fast."

Mu Chen was dumbfounded before he frowned. Both of the creatures possessed a higher combat capacity than he did. Even if they were seriously injured, he did not have much of an advantage. Moreover, he had to do it within the shortest possible time.

Although it was hard for him to manage, he did not make any further comments. From her tone, he could sense that she had no intention of helping him at all. The transition was a little too drastic, and the cause of it must have been Nine Nether.

Huo Mei'er and Nine Nether must have had something going on between them.

But Mu Chen had no interest in understanding the relationship between them. He may have seemed warm on the outside, but only people who understood him well knew how prideful this young man was. Since Huo

Mei'er had no intention of helping him, he would not bring himself down to beg.

That was why he only nodded after hearing what she had said.

Although Huo Mei'er had been observing the fight, she still cast some glances at Mu Chen. She raised her eyebrow at first after she saw that he knitted his eyebrows and subsequently returned to his usual state.

Her relationship with Nine Nether ran deep. Both of them were the most popular candidates vying for the position of new ruler in Daluo Terrority back in those years. But when Nine Nether became the ruler, Huo Mei'er entered the Daluo Celestial Army and worked her way up to become a commander.

Just when she could control the Daluo Celestial Army, Nine Nether went missing in action. To Huo Mei'er, it was like a punch in the gut. The years of effort went down the drain, and suddenly all of it did not matter anymore. The feeling was so complicated that she was uncertain about it.

However, the return of Nine Nether now had once again spurred her fighting will. She must get Nine Nether to admit that she was stronger than she was in all ways!

The competition between the two women caused her to be difficult with Mu Chen, especially when he was now the hot topic in Daluo Territory - a new commander in the Nine Nether Palace.

Of course, she would not be too harsh on him. As long as Mu Chen could lower himself a little, she would not mind helping him. Who knew this young and gentle-looking chap had such a prideful character.

Go ahead and act strong.

Huo Mei'er smirked without anyone noticing. To her, Mu Chen's arrogance, which came out of nowhere, was just a useless act. He failed to understand the situation and was unable to tolerate it. In conclusion, he was just inexperienced. So she did not understand why Nine Nether would have favored Mu Chen and brought him to Daluo Terrority.

Would he be another useless thing like Cao Feng?

Her eyes flickered with coldness. If so, she would prefer Mu Chen to die in this place, to avoid disgracing Nine Nether next time.

While Huo Mei'er had her thoughts, Mu Chen was staring at the fight outside. In his mind, he could not stop thinking about how he should win the match later.

Because for all he knew, slaughtering a wounded Dragon Blazing Scorpion and a Three-Headed Spiritual Blazing Serpent may be an easy task for Huo Mei'er, but to him, it was still a challenging assignment.

Any random attacks from those two creatures would cause him to sustain serious injuries.

Roar!

Just when his eyes flicked with those thoughts, two loud groans from the far end deep within the magma sea could be heard. After a fierce fight, the two vile creatures had blood gushing out from their hideous wounds all over their bodies. The strong spiritual energy fluctuation was at its lowest now.

They looked at each other, losing all the fighting spirit in their eyes. Their combat capacity had reduced down to ten percent, and they had lost all their fearsomeness during the life and death match. Both of them decided to flee in opposite directions.

"Now!"

Huo Mei'er let out a soft groan as soon as both creatures were trying to make their escape. The ball of magma instantly exploded, and she flitted as quickly as a ghost towards the Three-Headed Spiritual Blazing Serpent.

Mu Chen gritted his teeth and ran towards the wounded Blazing Dragon Scorpion without any hesitation.

No matter what, he could not give up at this moment.

Only when he got the Spiritual Blazing Marrow from the Blazing Dragon Scorpion, could he then break through his current level and upgrade himself to a Grade Three Sovereign!

Chapter 759: Decisiveness

Shoo!

The moment Huo Mei'er made her move, Mu Chen charged at the escaping Blazing Dragon Scorpion, while a tremendous Spiritual Energy permeated throughout his body. However, as his combat capability was not as valiant as Huo Mei'er's, it was not as easy for him to tackle the Blazing Dragon Scorpion, even though its combat capacity had significantly been reduced by its injuries.

Mu Chen was extremely fast in his speed. On top of that, the scorpion had suffered a heavy blow, both before and hence, allowing Mu Chen to catch up with the fleeing scorpion within a few breaths.

Roar!

The scorpion let out an outraged roar, as soon as it discovered that Mu Chen was chasing from behind. Its scarlet eyes were filled with ferociousness, as it recalled that it was Mu Chen who had led it there.

However, being angry is one thing, yet the scorpion knew its current condition very well. Hence, it did not attack Mu Chen, but merely issued a warning to him, before accelerating its escape.

Unfortunately for the scorpion, however, Mu Chen was like maggots feeding on a corpse, following closely behind it. Finally, as his eyes flickered, he clasped his hands, and the Great Meru Demonic Pillar appeared. It transformed into a colossal silhouette, hitting the scorpion without mercy.

Boom!

A sizable magma pillar burst forth from the huge mouth of the Blazing Dragon Scorpion, colliding with the Great Meru Demonic Pillar and trembling the region with a powerful and frightful vibration. The Great Meru Demonic Pillar was reversed by the shock of the vibration, as Mu Chen quivered a few thousand feet away, unable to hold back the horror now surfacing on his face.

All it had taken was an attack by himself, before he could realize how powerful the scorpion truly was. Moreover, it was severely injured. If it had been in its prime, this exchange of blows could have caused Mu Chen to sustain serious injuries.

Roar!

The scorpion stared at Mu Chen fiercely, before it made its escape again. Apparently, it did not want to stay in such a dangerous place, at least not just because of Mu Chen, who was merely a little bug in its eyes.

Mu Chen stared at the running scorpion. He gritted his teeth, hesitated for a moment, then adopted a fearsome look, which took over his entire face.

Shua!

Mu Chen raised his foot and stomped forward, aiming at the head of the scorpion this time.

Roar!

The Blazing Dragon Scorpion could no longer endure Mu Chen's repeated provokes. It erupted with a loud roar, and in the opening of its hideous mouth, a stream of magma was rippling. The opening of its mouth aimed right at Mu Chen, and then, swallowed him whole!

Mu Chen watched as the huge mouth engulfed him. His eyes flickered, and he stomped his feet again. Instead of dodging it, he had dashed straight into the mouth, which was filled with magma.

At the same time, from the opposite direction, a sad and shrill cry rang through the sky. A bright red, glowing light ray that looked like a flaming blade, which could divide all the supreme beings on earth, was slicing off the last head on the Three-Headed Spiritual Blazing Serpent.

The magma-like fresh blood spurted into the air, and the shrill cry came to an abrupt end. The little body of Huo Mei'er was floating in mid-air. As she flicked her slender finger, the last head of the serpent that was soaring in the sky exploded into fragments. A little red glowing light, which was a few feet long, dropped and drifted in front of her.

That was the Spiritual Blazing Marrow from the serpent. Within the glow of light, there seemed to be endless, pure flaming spiritual energy, which was flowing in the stream of magma.

Huo Mei'er raised her hand and kept the Spiritual Blazing Marrow. Her sweet-looking expression changed a little. As she looked back, it was the exact moment when Mu Chen had been gobbled up by that huge mouth of the scorpion.

No matter how calm she had been before, her facial expression changed totally when she witnessed it. Anxiousness and worry reflected in her beautiful eyes. Although her relationship with Nine Nether could be really complicated, they did not bear each other any deep grudges. Instead, what they shared was more of a mutual recognition of each other's talents from the past competitions they'd had. If Mu Chen were to die here, given Nine Nether's character, she probably would not let her off.

Huo Mei'er had splashed Mu Chen with cold words, as she wanted to test the ability of this new commander who had been introduced to Nine Nether. Who knew he would be so dumb as to get swallowed.

"This dumbass!

Huo Mei'er gritted her teeth and flit towards the Blazing Dragon Scorpion rapidly. She armed herself with an extreme surge of her Spiritual Energy between her palms.

Just when she was ready to launch an attack, the huge body of the scorpion gave a jerk, and a loud cry of pain came from its throat. Huo Mei'er was bewildered. She turned her focus to the mouth of the scorpion, just as a beam of gleaming golden light shot out. Furious spiritual energy went berserk and exploded.

Balls of magma were spat out from the mouth of the scorpion, as if it was coughing up blood. Even the most robust scales on its body were blown up into fragments. Apparently, the berserk energy was exploding from within its body.

If the scorpion had been in its best condition, it would have been able to suppress the blow from within. But now that it had sustained severe

injuries from the previous fight, it could only moan in pain, while sizzling magma continued to spurt out, like fresh blood.

Huo Mei'er looked at it, astonished. She quickly knew what was going on, and raised her eyebrow with a serious look, commenting, "This fellow is quite ruthless."

Huo Mei'er was, after all, a commander in the Daluo Celestial Army. So, she could understand the true intentions of Mu Chen. He could not possibly kill the scorpion, if he were to go head-on with it.

Moreover, if the scorpion was driven into a dead corner, it would probably go berserk and self-destruct its Spiritual Blazing Marrow. Until then, Mu Chen would have to return with empty hands. So, this fellow merely made use of its arrogance, thus making his way into its body to activate his fatal kill.

To a certain extent, this method may seem to have been the most effective way, but it could also be the most dangerous way, as the body of the Blazing Dragon Scorpion is like a furnace. As such, anyone who entered it, might get dissolved immediately. And, if the scorpion was at its prime conditions, even Huo Mei'er dared not barge into its body!

But, the truth is, the scorpion had suffered from significant injuries, and its current condition was not even ten percent of what it had been during its prime days. Thus, the body was no longer a restricted area. Mu Chen got this fact right, at least. Hence, he could enter its body relentlessly, then breakthrough from within.

This may seem simple, but the decision-making process required unwavering decisiveness and true ruthlessness. Not everyone could make this kind of decision in such a short period of time. The seriousness within Huo Mei'er eyes was partly due to this awareness.

It was not Mu Chen's ability that was impressive to her, but it was his decisiveness that had changed the way she now looked at him. She had finally come to an understanding about why Nine Nether would allow a young chap like him to lead the Nine Nether Troop.

Boom!

As Huo Mei'er was gathering her thoughts, a ray of golden light beamed through the neck of the scorpion, and magma was spurting out from it furiously. The Blazing Dragon Scorpion let out its final cry. The cry eventually weakened, before finally, the body collapsed with a loud thud.

Bang!

At this time, the head of the scorpion exploded, as the golden ray beamed out and transformed into a massive silhouette, which was none other than the Great Solar Undying Body.

The Great Solar Undying Body was piping red amongst the glow, causing it to look like a melting gold bar, which had just been taken out from the furnace. The Great Solar Undying Body dimmed down rapidly, and eventually, vanished. A slim figure appeared.

Cough!

As soon as he revealed himself, he coughed out a mouthful of fresh blood. The clothes he was wearing had almost turned into ash. His skin was scorching red, and a significant portion of his muscle seemed to be melting off, revealing his bare bones.

Despite the protection from the Great Solar Undying Body, he had made a huge sacrifice when he entered the body of the scorpion. Luckily, he managed to kill it before he was completely melted.

Mu Chen traced off the blood stain at the edge of his mouth, then stretched out his hand toward the dead scorpion. A crimson ball, with a glow that was as bright as the one Huo Mei'er possessed, drifted in front of him.

Within the glowing ball, the crystal clear magma was streaming and the pure spiritual energy emitted was so attractive, that Mu Chen wet his lips with greed. The purity of this Spiritual Blazing Marrow was much more powerful, as compared to the previous ones he had made.

Mu Chen clapped his hand tightly. With this marrow, he could now break through to the Grade Three Sovereign.

"Heh Heh, you have some guts, huh." A crisp clapping sound came from

the side. Huo Mei'er flit over, smiling. She tilted her head and looked at Mu Chen with affection.

"Not bad. I'm still alive." He could not be bothered with her, yet he was also not resenting her, as both of them were not yet sharing any particular relationship. Thus, she had no obligation to help.

"Haha, are you angry with me?" Huo Mei'er came up to Mu Chen, laughing. She placed her soft little hand, without any embarrassment, on his bare chest. Her body closed up against him, as she smiled lovingly at him, saying, "Looks like I have underestimated you. Nine Nether finally brought a capable person."

Huo Mei'er was enchanting and bewitching, and she seemed to have a bold and uninhibited character. Mu Chen blushed, as her fragrance lingered in front of him. He was thinking to avoid it, but he observed a slight cunningness and teasing within the eyes of the girl in front of him. So, he drew his lips and reached his arm out to cuddle her curvy waist instead.

Tsk Tsk

Huo Mei'er tilted her head slightly, before his hand could even touch her. Her long red hair twined across his arm, and her finger stroked softly on Mu Chen's chest, before she chuckled like a goblin and moved quickly away.

"Little one, you are still too young to take such advantage. Wait till you become a Grade Six Sovereign first!" Huo Mei'er quickly disappeared into the lava rocks, leaving her bell-like laughter behind.

"Grade Six Sovereign, huh? Just you wait!"

Mu Chen looked in the direction where she had just left and gritted his teeth together. Someday, he will definitely teach this little devil a lesson.

But, all these were just wishful thinkings yet, as the thoughts just flashed and disappeared. Mu Chen held the ball of Spiritual Blazing Marrow in his hand. The thing he needed to do now, was to breakthrough his current level and hit Grade Three Sovereign!

Otherwise, he might be disqualified from the Dragon-Phoenix Rift by Mandela, and that would be a disgrace.

Chapter 760: Cultivation Completed

After he parted with Huo Mei'er, Mu Chen returned to the previous location where he was doing his training. Since he did a massacre earlier on, the spiritual blazing serpents had become extremely sparse. Now the area had become the best location for him to retreat to for his cultivation.

Mu Chen blew up another hole in the karst cave for his cultivation. He ducked into the new cave and sat in it with his legs crossed. He closed his eyes and gradually entered into the state of cultivation.

He did not start off by refining the Spiritual Blazing Marrow from the Blazing Dragon Scorpion. Instead, he chose to cultivate quietly to adjust his body's condition.

As Mu Chen could feel the intense heat emitted from the pure spiritual energy in the Spiritual Blazing Marrow, he knew that he needed to prepare himself, as it was not an easy task to refine it.

He needed to adjust his state to its peak, and it took him ten days to do so.

During those ten days, Mu Chen sat there like a rock, remaining patient regardless of the time spent. He closed his eyes tightly, sinking all his heart and soul into the deepest Sovereign Sea, heaving along with the tide of the spiritual energy.

On his tenth day of cultivation, he finally opened his eyes. A deep spiritual glow sparkled in his eyes, and his skin glowed in the dark.

It was a sign that the spiritual energy in his body had come to a saturation point.

After ten days of intensive cultivation, Mu Chen felt a sense of saturation from the Sovereign Sea. An individual Sovereign Master who has a power that is too vast can only be accommodated by the inner space within the Sovereign Sea. But the Sovereign Sea had its own limitation. It must be expanded with its own strength.

If Mu Chen wished to have another breakthrough, he would need to hit

Grade Three Sovereign.

Almost there.

As he clasped both palms together, he could feel the great vitality of the spiritual energy that was similar to the force from the raging sea. He heaved a sigh of relief. The sensation emanating from the substantial power was too intoxicating.

He flicked his finger, and a glowing red ball of light that was several feet long appeared with crystalized magma running in it. The purity of the spiritual energy emanating from it had reached its utmost level, fogging the entire cave.

After calling out the Spiritual Blazing Marrow, Mu Chen waved his hand. A crystal clear torrent flowed out like a creek suspended in the air, and the splashing sound of water could be heard.

The stream was formed by over 10,000 drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid. The spiritual energy from the Spiritual Blazing Marrow was too overbearing, and as such, it required the mild and purified energy from the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid to neutralize it. With the help of the neutralization, it would achieve the perfect effect.

Mu Chen looked at both valuable items in front of him. He could not help but smack his lips. Apart from the talent, the cultivation of spiritual energy also relied on resources. Just like having the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid that was required to make a breakthrough to the next level, most solo practitioners without any background or resources would feel powerless and frustrated.

It was no wonder those younger talents mostly had a strong background. If they practiced from the time they were young, their achievements would definitely be incomparable to those of ordinary people.

Mu Chen took a deep breath and closed his eyes again. With his command of thoughts, the Spiritual Blazing Marrow floated right above his head, and the piping red magma streamed down from it.

Ssst...

The piping hot magma fell on top of his head, and a sizzling sound could be heard. The look on Mu Chen's face was twisted because of the searing pain from the burn.

The magma followed his body contour, and within a short while it covered half of his body in thick layers of magma.

Shoo.

At the same time, the stream of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid that poured down on him turned into a crystal-clear liquid, wrapping up the other half of Mu Chen's body.

Mu Chen was sitting quietly on the boulder with half of his body covered by magma, and half of his body covered by the crystal clear liquid. Both halves were slowly circulating, and it was a peculiar scene.

As his physical body entered into such a peculiar state, an earth-shaking transformation was erupting within his body at the same time.

He immersed his mind and soul into it until the body was fully red on the inside. The magma-like liquid penetrated into the pores of his entire body like a tidal wave, drowning every corner in it.

Sst...

As the liquid flowed through every inch of his body, he felt a burning sensation on his skin and flesh as if they were going to melt away. An unbearable pain spread across his entire body, so much so that he could feel his meridians twitching.

The intensity from the Spiritual Blazing Marrow of Blazing Dragon Scorpion was more powerful by far than those long-life spiritual blazing serpents.

Luckily, Mu Chen had it all prepared. When the magma-like liquid was injected into the body, on the other side, the mild and cooling Sovereign Spiritual Liquid rushed in quickly, eventually combining with the magma-like liquid.

Sst...

General speaking, when two different spiritual energies of drastic nature come into contact, it definitely becomes a life-or-death struggle. But Sovereign Spiritual Liquid is a kind of spiritual energy that was the mildest and easiest to absorb for cultivation. Hence, when it was in close contact with the magma-like liquid, it could dissolve itself, neutralizing the impact from the magma-like liquid.

Mu Chen took the opportunity and activated his Great Pagoda Art. With the activation of the spiritual energy, it followed the path of the meridian, refining the energy generated, perfusing the Sovereign Sea.

And within the Sovereign Sea, the sky seemed to be torn apart as the magma fell from the air like a waterfall. With a loud splash, it entered into the Sovereign Sea, and the endless downpour caused the sea level to gradually rise.

Mu Chen's cultivation had begun.

A month gradually passed while he was cultivating himself.

On the individual stone platforms above the Daluo Blazing pool, a group of figures was sitting quietly with their legs crossed, breathing in the piping hot magma-like spiritual energy of the place to refine their meridians.

Huo Mei'er stood on one of the stone platforms with Bing Qing while the other three commanders gathered behind her.

"That fellow has yet to complete his cultivation?" Huo Mei'er stretched her back, showing off her curvy lines. Her voice was so soft and sweet that it could quickly make hearts throb.

But right behind her, the other three commanders were looking down on the ground. The rest of the soldiers from the Daluo Celestial Army were closing their eyes, and no one dared to look at her. Apparently, this commander held an awe-inspiring position in the army.

Bing Qing nodded coldly as usual. "He should be trying hard to make a breakthrough to Grade Three Sovereign, but I'm not sure if it will work."

"Maybe he's too anxious about it." Another commander, who stood right

beside Bing Qing, shook his head. It was unlikely that Mu Chen could make a breakthrough since he had only been training there for a little over two months.

"He has one Spiritual Blazing Marrow from the Blazing Dragon Scorpion. If he can cultivate and absorb it, he will have a chance to succeed." Huo Mei'er smiled alluringly.

Bing Qing and the other three commanders were visibly moved by her words, as they all knew how daunting the Blazing Dragon Scorpion could be. Moreover, even given their abilities, they might not be able to capture it. So how did Mu Chen do it?

"Sister, previously did you say you got your Three-Headed Spiritual Blazing Serpent because of a Blazing Dragon Scorpion?" Bing Qing flickered her eyes as all of a sudden she recalled the account that Huo Mei'er had told her.

She nodded and said, "Yes, that's right. The Spiritual Blazing Marrow that Mu Chen owns now belongs to that Blazing Dragon Scorpion."

"Sister, your assistance did not seem to comply with the rules. The territory lord had said that any cultivation over here must depend on no one but himself." Bing Qing frowned her willow-leaf shaped eyebrow.

"I did not help him at all," Huo Mei'er drew her red lips. "He really did it on his own."

Bing Qing was stunned when she heard this, as she knew that there was no need for Huo Mei'er to lie to her. But Mu Chen only had the strength of a Grade Two Sovereign. Even if the Blazing Dragon Scorpion was severely injured, he was still no match for it.

Huo Mei'er rolled her eyes and asked abruptly, "Did the territory lord ask him to conquer the Nine-Nine Flaming Dragon Array?"

Bing Qing nodded and asked, "Sister, do you think he would have any chance of conquering it?"

"It would be difficult."

Huo Mei'er paused and shook her head before she continued, "Nine-Nine Flaming Dragon Array is an examination to allow soldiers from Daluo Celestial Army to advance to commander. Even a Grade Four Sovereign who does not know the conquering techniques could not conquer it. On top of that, if he could make a breakthrough to Grade Three Sovereign, given that combat strength, it is still challenging to conquer it.

"But..."

She paused for a while as she thought of the young man who had his ruthless and merciless decisiveness when dealing with the Blazing Dragon Scorpion. She pursed her red lips and said, "We cannot underestimate this fellow. It would depend on his capability if he can conquer the Nine-Nine Flaming Dragon Array."

Bing Qing and the rest were quite surprised. Almost none of them was optimistic about him. They did not expect Huo Mei'er would actually hold a certain amount of uncertainty.

"Well, let's just wait and see. It is less than half a month away from the three-month deadline." Huo Mei'er smiled and gazed at the bottom of the Daluo Flaming Pool. Her beautiful eyes sparkled with the glow from it.

While Huo Mei'er and the rest waited, another ten days passed quietly.

Five days were left before the three-month deadline was up.

All the soldiers from the Daluo Celestial Army opened their eyes as they wanted to witness the outcome of an outsider challenging their Nine-Nine Flaming Dragon Array.

But judging from how the present situation looked, could that fellow Mu Chen be missing in action to avoid the test?

At the thought of this, someone could not help but grin.

Time was moving on day by day. Another three days were gone, too.

Huo Mei'er sat cross-legged at one of the rock boulders with her long red hair gently fluttering in the breeze. Suddenly, her expression changed as

she looked up. Light beams flitted in and finally stopped in mid-air.

The one leading had a petite body and at the same time, possessed a dominating presence. The only one within the Daluo Territory who had such a presence was none other than Mandela.

Following behind Mandela was Nine Nether, and even the Third Prince and the other princes showed up. With this lineup, surprise was written all over the faces of the Daluo Celestial Army's soldiers.

"This lad has a huge group of spectators." Huo Mei'er looked at the lineup and smiled charmingly. As she lowered her head, a huge vortex was forming on the magma sea below.

Boom!

The magma gushed up into the sky, and as it got higher, a figure stepped on the flowing magma, making his way slowly under the gazes of countless eyes.

The juvenile was slender and handsome, looking calm and relaxed with his pitch-dark eyes. Apparently, Mu Chen had completed his cultivation.

Chapter 761: Nine-Nine Flaming Dragon Array

When Mu Chen appeared on top of the Daluo Blazing Pool, countless people in the place turned simultaneously to look at him. Then, their looks all turned somewhat solemn.

At the moment, a powerful spiritual energy fluctuation was rippling around Mu Chen. His black eyes were as resplendent as the stars, and spiritual light was blooming out of them. As he moved his body casually, a shocking spiritual energy fluctuation was released. He was clearly much stronger than he had been three months ago.

Among the nine grades of the sovereign-level, there was a huge difference between any two consecutive grades. For an ordinary person to break through into the next grade, it would require much time and effort.

However, Mu Chen was able to complete the transition within just a few months. Although he had relied on the unique power of the Daluo Blazing Pool, the ability to do so was still considered a marvel to many.

"He has indeed managed to break through." Bing Qing and the other commanders of the Daluo Celestial Army stared at Mu Chen in surprise.

Obviously, it felt somewhat incredulous that Mu Chen could really complete the break through in just three months. The Daluo Blazing Pool was indeed very beneficial to cultivation, but the benefit was clearly not so large.

In the sky, Nine Nether saw the scene, which caused a smile to appear around her rosy lips. However, she did not feel too surprised. After all, she had been with Mu Chen for so many years, so she was used to him creating miracles.

Not many fluctuations could be seen in the golden pupils of Mandela either. As she waved her hand, everyone appeared on the stone platform alongside the Daluo Celestial Army. All the soldiers of the Daluo Celestial Army quickly knelt down to salute her.

"Greetings, Dominator." Huo Mei'er also bowed to salute.

Mandela waved her hand once more. Although she had the appearance of a little girl, no one dared to be even the slightest bit disrespectful toward her. They all knew that, even when a super-being, such as an Earthly Sovereign, moved around casually, the pressure leaking out would still cause a usual sovereign to be terrified.

"Haha, Nine Nether, you have brought back a nice successor this time."

Smiling, Huo Mei'er stared at Nine Nether, who was standing behind Mandela. She laughed and said, "I am quite interested in Mu Chen. How about you give him to my Daluo Celestial Army? I will agree to any conditions."

Seeing Huo Mei'er, Nine Nether also seemed to have missed her. However, hearing her words, Nine Nether's face immediately turned cold. But before she could speak, Huo Mei'er walked up to her and smiled, then said, "Seems like you are very reluctant. But this guy is really not bad."

Nine Nether rolled her eyes, not even bothering to reply. Mandela looked at Mu Chen with her golden pupils. Then, she nodded gently and said, "The three months time limit has passed. If you want to represent the Daluo Territory and participate in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift experience in the North Territory, you must get through the Nine-Nine Flaming Dragon Array."

Hearing about the Nine-Nine Flaming Dragon Array, Nine Nether also frowned and looked at Mu Chen with a worried expression. It was obvious that she was familiar with the name. In fact, she knew its power well.

"The Nine-Nine Flaming Dragon Array is very powerful. Even a grade four sovereign, would not be able to get through it easily. So... do you still dare to try?" Mandela stared at Mu Chen and asked slowly.

Under the many stares, Mu Chen, who was standing on the magma, also lifted his eyes. A smile appeared on his handsome face. Then, he folded his hands and said calmly, "Dominator, please arrange the array."

The young man's smile was calm and relaxed. Even though he knew that

the array was dangerous, he was still fearless. His attitude soon attracted much admiration from the powerful people of the Daluo Territory.

The young man could become famous in the Daluo Territory in such a short period of time exactly because he indeed had many remarkable aspects. Of course, there were also some people who twitched their lips secretly.

Most of them were the soldiers in the Daluo Celestial Army. Even Bing Qing and the other commanders did not express any admiration about Mu Chen's calmness. It was not that they were looking down on Mu Chen. But rather, it was that their knowledge about the Nine-Nine Flaming Dragon Array far exceeded the others.

In the past, when they were trying to break through the array, they had failed many times, before finally succeeding. Moreover, during that time, they were already stronger than the current Mu Chen.

Knowing that they had failed many times, it made Mu Chen even more motivated to get through it in just one try. However, this seemed to be almost impossible.

Mandela ignored the many stares. After Mu Chen made his declaration, she also nodded gently and said, "Since you do not intend to quit, we will respect your decision. As long as you can pass through the Nine-Nine Flaming Dragon Array, I will allow you to become the sixth commander of the Daluo Celestial Army."

Her words immediately led to many surprised exclamations in the place. The Daluo Celestial Army was the most powerful troop in the Daluo Territory!

Nevertheless, its commanders were commanded by the Dominator directly, and it was considered one of the trump cards of the Daluo Territory. Also, it was common knowledge that the other people, even the lords, could not get involved in it. At the moment, however, the Dominator would actually allow Mu Chen to become the sixth commander.

The eyes of the various lords sparkled, and they eventually looked at Mu Chen with envy. They all asked themselves why the Dominator was

actually taking care of the this young man so much. Not long ago, she had offended the Tian Xuan Hall just for him, and now, she even wanted to train him as a commander of the Daluo Celestial Army!

Huo Mei'er and the rest were also rather surprised, but they did not question what Mandela had said. After all, if Mu Chen could really get through the Nine-Nine Flaming Dragon Array, he would indeed be more than eligible to become a commander of the Daluo Celestial Army.

Nine Nether similarly did not say anything, because even if Mu Chen became a commander of the Daluo Celestial Army, he could still command the Nine Nether Troop. Therefore, she actually hoped that Mu Chen would succeed. After all, the Daluo Celestial Army was indeed very strong.

Just as Mandela finished speaking, her little hand raised up again. Immediately, everyone felt a terrifying fluctuation gush out from the depths of the Daluo Blazing Pool. Then, they saw the magma surface of the Daluo Blazing Pool actually rising at a shocking speed.

Rumble.

The magma rolled. It looked as if there were thousands of huge waves slapping onto a bottomless abyss. The large force even caused the entire volcano to vibrate slightly.

Boom! Boom!

As the Daluo Golden Pool rose continuously, many magma pillars that were each ten thousand feet large also ascended into the sky. They then turned into many magnificent magma rivers in mid-air.

The rivers surged forward, then split apart, forming a magma sea in the sky directly. In the sea, red magma runes rose up steadily.

Roar!

The magma runes quickly converged and fused together. Vaguely, there seemed to be a violent dragon howl that was heard. In the end, a red light soared up above and nine dragons, so large that their bodies could not be seen fully, were condensed.

The nine huge dragons were all completely red. They were coiled up in the magma sea, with red magma flying along their enormous bodies. A terrifying pressure spread out, causing the looks from many people to dramatically change.

This was because they could feel how powerful the nine magma dragons were. Furthermore, the nine dragons did not seem to be condensed from nothing. Instead, their bodies were emitting the real pressure of those from the Dragon Clan.

"The nine magma dragons are not illusory. They are formed from the Ancient Flaming Dragon Blood that flew into the depths of the Daluo Blazing Pool by chance. As long as the magma exists, they cannot be destroyed." Mandela stared at Mu Chen with her golden pupils, as her young and toneless voice spread into the sky.

Mu Chen's look was dignified. Each of the nine magma dragons had a violent spiritual energy fluctuation. When the nine dragons were all out in full force, even a grade four sovereign would not dare fight them head-on. With such power, it was no wonder that this could become the trial used to select the commanders of the Daluo Celestial Army!

"The array has been formed. If you are ready, you can enter. But after going in, you have only your own powers to rely upon. Even if you are about to be killed, nobody will come and save you. Over these past years, quite a number of people in the Daluo Celestial Army were killed during this challenge."

Mandela gave her warning solemnly and tonelessly, before adding, "So now, you still have one last chance to change your mind..."

Puff.

Mu Chen took a deep breath. He had indeed felt a dangerous fluctuation from the Nine-Nine Flaming Dragon Array, but it alone was insufficient to make him cower or turn back.

The black eyes of the young man gradually grew more fierce. Without saying anything, his toes kicked out. Then, under the countless stares, he turned into a streamer, charging directly towards the majestic magma

array in the sky.

As he moved closer, a strong, scorching gust of wind gushed towards his face, as if it was going to set him ablaze. The temperature was so high, even gold would be melted. This showed how dangerous the array truly was!

However, Mu Chen's speed did not slow down at all, as an enormous amount of spiritual energy gushed out from his body. Eventually, he turned directly into a beam of light, before dashing straight into the magma sea that was emitting a terrifying pressure.

Boom!

At the instant that Mu Chen charged into the Nine-Nine Flaming Dragon Array, a frightening heat swept towards him, and a magma wave a hundred thousand feet high fell upon him. It looked as if a mountain was crushing him, the likes of which could turn him into mere powder.

The attack was extremely unexpected, but Mu Chen did not seem to panic at all. His foot stomped on the ground and golden light surged in his eyes. The Great Solar Undying Body was summoned instantly.

Dong!

The enormous pillar of magma hit the Great Solar Undying Body and magma flew down along the golden body. The high temperature caused the golden body to be increasingly bright and dazzling.

Then, Mu Chen appeared on the head of the Great Solar Undying Body. He stood proudly above the red sea, staring at eight places in the array with a penetrating look. There, eight magma dragons were coiled up quietly. Their red eyes looked at the golden giant from above, and the fluctuations that were emitting out of their bodies also became more and more violent.

"Nine-Nine Flaming Dragon Array... Let me have a taste of how strong you really are!"

Mu Chen took in a deep breath of the hot, flame-like air, his look as sharp as a blade. In the next moment, he stomped his foot, sending the

Great Solar Undying Body into the air. Its huge fist clenched and the Great Meru Demonic Pillar flashed out. Then, the giant swept down with a terrifying fluctuation, then flew towards a magma dragon directly.

Against such a powerful array, Mu Chen not only did not wait to see what was going to happen, he immediately launched a full-on attack!

The dramatic scene caused the eyelids of many people outside to twitch in shock and surprise.

Chapter 762: Sky-burning Rune

Bang!

The Great Meru Demonic Pillar swung down, along with a monstrous ominous aura. The giant shadow fell from the sky, carrying with it a wave of spiritual energy that was surging like a torrent directly towards a red magma dragon.

In the attack, Mu Chen had activated the spiritual energy in his body to its extreme because he could feel the frightening, dangerous fluctuations from the Nine-Nine Flaming Dragon Array. The power contained in the array was definitely beyond his imagination. Thus, if he still chose to conceal his power at the moment, he would only disgrace himself.

The huge shadow dropped down, but the enormous magma dragon showed no signs of dodging it. Its red eyes seemed to be sparkling with disdain. It opened its ferocious mouth, and a beam of red light spurted out. In the sky above, the red light turned into a 1,000-foot-long shield covered with red dragon scales.

The dragon scale shield was flashing with a dazzling light. Although it was not thick, it was emitting a fluctuation that seemed to be indestructible. It floated silently and allowed the huge demonic pillar to forcefully strike down.

Clang!

The two collided hard into each other. Immediately, the crisp sound of clashing metal could be heard, and a shocking spiritual energy windstorm started to rage.

At the moment of collision, Mu Chen's expression also changed uncontrollably because he could feel the terrifying force bouncing back from the dragon scale shield. The force almost caused the Great Meru Demonic Pillar to be blown away.

Just one magma dragon alone was already so difficult to deal with. If all nine dragons were together, his situation would probably be anything but

reassuring.

Roar!

Just as the thought flashed across Mu Chen's mind, many dragon howls rang out, one after another. Mu Chen lifted his eyes, and his look turned more serious. In the red magma sea, the red eyes of the nine dragons were staring at him. On their enormous bodies, the dragon scales seemed to be standing and were filled with aggression.

Pop!

The nine large bodies suddenly trembled. Red light burst out, and the red dragon scales on their bodies actually shot out in all directions, pouring towards Mu Chen like a rainstorm.

Every piece of dragon scale was glittering with sharpness. When they tore across space, many faint traces were left behind. Furthermore, they were so large in number that even Mu Chen's face trembled uncontrollably.

Puff.

He took in a deep breath, and golden light surged in the depths of his black eyes. A burly golden giant appeared around him, and golden light poured out. From afar, it looked as if it were a golden Buddha, and nothing in the world could move it.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

The dragon scales continuously bombarded the golden giant from all directions, but when they were about ten feet away from the burly golden giant, they started to explode under the radiance of the golden light. The aftershocks impacted the Great Solar Undying Body, but were not much of a threat because the Great Solar Undying Body had been strengthened with the Daluo Golden Body.

"This guy's Sovereign Celestial Body is quite special." In the Daluo Celestial Army, many soldiers saw the scene, and surprise flashed in their eyes. Clearly, they had felt the uniqueness of the Great Solar Undying Body.

"The power of the Nine-Nine Flaming Dragon Array has just started to be displayed. The next part will be more interesting." Bing Qing folded her arms, and her face was calm. She knew that Mu Chen was not stupid. Since he dared to enter the array, he surely had something to rely on. Therefore, she was not surprised by the fact that Mu Chen was able to easily block the attack.

Nevertheless, the Nine-Nine Flaming Dragon Array was not that weak, either.

Many people in the area stared at the turbulent magma sea. There, the golden giant still stood quietly. In the silence, a stunning pressure spread out.

Roar!

Deep and clear dragon howls erupted along with an intense dragon pressure. The nine dragons coiled up, and red light blinked on their bodies. The dragon scales that had previously been ejected grew out again. Red light surged in their eyes and finally, they opened their monstrous mouths simultaneously.

Vroom!

Immediately, the magma sea started to become very rough, and nine enormous pillars of magma charged into the sky. Red light ascended along the pillars in the magma. The red light eventually broke out of the magma and turned into nine ancient runes in the sky covered in magma and burning with flames.

The nine magma runes were fire-red. When they appeared, the temperature in the whole region started to increase, and even space itself became red. From afar, it looked extremely majestic, as if the flames were burning the sky.

"Those are the Nine Dragon Sky-burning Runes." The looks from Bing Qing and the rest all turned solemn, and their expressions became serious. Obviously, they were not unfamiliar with this deadly attack in the Nine-Nine Flaming Dragon Array. In the past, when they were trying to get through the Nine-Nine Flaming Dragon Array, they were often defeated at

this stage.

Boom!

When the nine magma runes appeared, the whole place was instantly lit, and flames soared into the sky. Eventually, they turned into nine red beams of light and started revolving around Mu Chen, staying about 10,000 feet away from him, as if they were burning meteors streaking crossing the sky. At once, the space around Mu Chen started to distort at an obvious pace, and the temperature was so terrifying that even space seemed to be melting away.

Mu Chen's look also turned particularly dignified. He could feel the terrifying heat sweeping towards him. Under the temperature, even the surface of the Great Solar Undying Body, which had been strengthened with the Daluo Golden Body, was starting to dim.

I can't let these nine runes continue running. Mu Chen frowned. As the nine ancient magma runes circled, the heat released became more intense. If they were to continue, even the Great Solar Undying Body would probably not be able to tolerate it.

The Nine-Nine Flaming Dragon Array was indeed not easy to deal with.

Mu Chen closed his lips firmly. He stood on the Great Solar Undying Body's head, and his hands slowly extended out from his sleeves. Then, two different types of spiritual energy gushed out from separate palms, one burning with purple flames, and the other flashing with an invisible lightning.

Bing Qing and the rest immediately exclaimed in surprise. "Huh, it's actually spiritual energy with two very different elements." Being sharp-eyed, they could naturally tell that the spiritual energy on Mu Chen's palms had been fused with strong and unique powers.

Boom!

The nine magma runes trembled and turned into nine burning meteors crossing the sky and charging towards Mu Chen.

Waves of hot air whizzed overhead, and the terrifying temperature

caused the golden light around the Great Solar Undying Body to continuously shrink. Meanwhile, Mu Chen's expression turned sharp. The nine magma runes were too powerful so if he got hit by one, even the Great Solar Undying Body would be damaged.

Thus, he must weaken their powers.

Mu Chen stomped his foot and charged into the sky while his palms pushed out as if he were going to move mountains and drain seas. Right away, two amazing waterfalls of spiritual energy swept out. Among the two spiritual energy waterfalls, one was filled with purple flames, and the other had the sound of the Netherworld Thunder Heart. At the moment, Mu Chen still could not fuse the two types of spiritual energy together perfectly, but even when they were separate, they were still far more powerful than the spiritual energy of an ordinary Grade Three Sovereign.

The two waterfalls, which contained all of Mu Chen's spiritual energy, swept out and collided head-on with the burning meteors formed by two of the magma runes.

Bang!

Even the sky seemed to tremble in that instant. In the magma sea, many gigantic waves swelled and then crashed down all over the place.

Everyone squinted and stared at the region of collision. As the magma poured down, the two burning meteors formed by the two magma runes also exploded.

"He can crush the Sky-burning Runes even though he is a Grade Three Sovereign?" Some of the people were rather surprised. The power of even one Nine Dragon Sky-burning Rune was sufficient to make a Grade Three Sovereign helpless. All nine had been out, and even if a Grade Three Sovereign used all his powers, he would not be able to break any of the runes. However, Mu Chen had actually broken two of them.

"His spiritual energy was fused with some powerful and unique elements." Huo Mei'er's charming eyes blinked gently, and she was able to tell at once the reason for Mu Chen's powerful spiritual energy.

"However, it is far from sufficient to break just two Sky-burning Runes."

In the array, Mu Chen seemed to know what everyone was thinking. He looked at the magma pouring down from the sky, and his hands suddenly started to quickly form a seal. Then, in the sky, a strange fluctuation rippled.

Nine Nether, Huo Mei'er, and the lords' expressions all changed slightly. Clearly, they felt something.

"What's that?" Bing Qing and the rest suddenly exclaimed in surprise. In the sky above Mu Chen, space started to distort violently, and three black lotuses emerged out of thin air. Their appearance was quite sudden, and their fluctuations were also very different from the usual spiritual energy attacks.

Finally, someone shouted out loud, "It's a spiritual array!" The complicated array runes and the unique spiritual energy fluctuation actually belonged to a real spiritual array.

"This guy is actually also a spiritual array master?" Bing Qing and everyone else's mouths fell open wide. Mu Chen's hidden strategy was obviously beyond their expectations. After all, they had never seen Mu Chen cast a spiritual array.

The spiritual array with the three black lotuses was clearly the Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array. As Mu Chen's powers and understanding of spiritual arrays grew, the Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array he had arranged was surely stronger than arrays he had arranged in the past.

Vroom! Vroom! Vroom!

The three black lotuses shot out and turned into three black beams of light, colliding into three of the Sky-burning Runes. As the spiritual energy raged, another three Sky-burning Runes were crushed.

However, there were still four Sky-burning Runes, which broke through the many attacks and moved quickly towards Mu Chen, appearing about 1,000 feet away from him. Immediately, the space started to fiercely

distort as if it were going to burn.

This time, it was already too late to intercept the attack.

Everyone stared nervously at Mu Chen. Now, what else can he do?

Puff.

Under their stares, Mu Chen exhaled gently. He put his hands together and at the same time, the huge hands of the Great Solar Undying Body also folded. A fierce expression appeared on Mu Chen's handsome face.

Since I cannot intercept them, I will collide with them head-on!

My Great Solar Undying Body is not as weak as you all think!

Brilliant golden light erupted from between the eyebrows of the Great Solar Undying Body, as if a golden sun were slowly rising. In the end, the light enveloped the entire Great Solar Undying Body like gilt.

The four Sky-burning Runes crashed towards him and eventually collided forcefully onto the huge Great Solar Undying Body like meteorites.

Dong!

The space itself trembled, and many huge cracks spread like a spider web as the red light engulfed everything.

Everyone stared at the scene, riveted.

"Four Sky-burning Runes are already sufficient to severely injure a Grade Four Sovereign!" someone in the Daluo Celestial Army said in a soft voice. Some other people also shook their heads in silence. Mu Chen's performance was not bad, but it was very difficult to stop the nine Sky-burning Runes.

"Wait!"

However, just as their voices diminished, the eyes of some people narrowed.

Everyone stared at the place where magma was pouring out. There, a golden giant stepped out into the air. A golden sun floated behind its head,

and golden light shone out in all directions as if it were an indestructible Buddha. Its shocking stance caused many people to quietly gasp.

That was because the golden giant was actually not injured at all!

Chapter 763: Ancient Flaming Dragon Blood

Dazzling golden light burst out into the sky. A golden giant tore through the red-hot waves, as if a golden Buddha had been created. Its fierce appearance caused the expressions of many people to change uncontrollably.

Then, their looks turned suddenly solemn. This was because the people were so dumbfounded that four Sky-burning Runes had not caused any damage whatsoever to Mu Chen! Even a grade four sovereign had to avoid that level of attack!

"How can this be?" Bing Qing and the other commanders exclaimed in surprise. The outcome was clearly unexpected. It was impossible that a grade three sovereign could withstand the four Sky-burning Runes!

"Haha! From the start, I have said that this kid is no weakling." Huo Mei'er laughed. However, a bit of surprise also flashed across her charming eyes, because she could feel that the sovereign celestial body that Mu Chen had cultivated was way too strong.

Under the many surprised stares, Mu Chen appeared on the head of the Great Solar Undying Body again. Then, he stomped his foot, causing the golden sun between the eyebrows of the Great Solar Undying Body to become increasingly bright. The gilt-like light seemed to be flowing over every square inch of the huge body.

Boom!

The Great Solar Undying Body charged forth. Its speed was extremely fast, and in the blink of an eye, it appeared on top of a magma dragon. Then, its gilt-like palm landed on the head of the dragon, just like a bolt of lightning. A terrifying golden light burst out!

Dong!

The golden light spurted out, and the magma dragon immediately roared in pain. Many golden cracks spread on its head, causing it to explode

directly with a bang, releasing magma all over the sky!

By using the sovereign super power of the Great Solar Undying Body, which was the power of one sun, Mu Chen made a quick attack. He was able to slay one magma dragon in an instant!

This unforeseen event caused the looks of many people to turn serious. In their hearts, they exclaimed about the decisiveness and mercilessness of Mu Chen's attack.

Clearly, he knew that he could not let the nine magma dragons continue launching such attacks. Otherwise, even if he had a powerful sovereign celestial body, he would not be able to persevere to the end.

Vroom!

After killing the magma dragon swiftly, Mu Chen did not stop. Moving his body, he charged towards another magma dragon!

Roar!

However, by this time, all the other magma dragons had been able to recover from their initial surprise. Immediately, they roared in anger. Their red dragon claws, on which magma was flowing, penetrated across space, slapping fiercely towards the huge golden body.

The eight huge dragon claws flew overhead. The astonishing power fluctuations this flight caused then locked directly onto the space around Mu Chen, making him unable to dodge them.

However, his expression was still calm. Changing his seal, the golden sun between the eyebrows of the Great Solar Undying Body became increasingly bright. Obviously, he had already activated the power of one sun from his sovereign super power to its extreme.

The Great Solar Undying Body stood proudly in the air. Its huge hand clenched, causing the Great Meru Demonic Pillar to flash out. An ominous aura and the golden light surged together. Then, it waved, as many beams of light charged out from it brutally, colliding hard with the eight dragon claws.

Bang! Bang!

A shocking power fluctuation raged like a windstorm. Everyone stared at the sky with their mouths wide open. There, golden light surged, and the Great Solar Undying Body that was activated by Mu Chen was fighting in close combat with the eight magma dragons.

Mu Chen's attack was particularly fierce, as during every attack, he had given up his defense. The price for doing so was that, in just a dozen rounds, many imprints were left on the huge Great Solar Undying Body by the dragon claws.

However, whenever the golden light flashed past, all of the marks would disappear. Hence, the defense of the Great Solar Undying Body was beyond everyone's expectation! Now, with the augmentation of the Daluo Golden Body, Mu Chen was not afraid of participating in such close combat with his sovereign celestial body at all.

In the sky, the giant sovereign celestial body and the eight magma dragons collided hard into each other. Such close range, face-to-face combat caused the eyelids of many people to twitch. In particular, Mu Chen's fierce attacks caused them to twitch their lips uncontrollably.

This kid is young, but far more fierce than anyone else!

The violent and noisy fight continued in the sky. In just ten minutes, five magma dragons had already been crushed by the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. After having been crushed, they then immediately exploded!

Of course, Mu Chen had also paid a high price. On the chest of his sovereign celestial body, deep claw prints could be clearly seen. The scorching power of the magma still remained on the claw prints. Even though the Great Solar Undying Body had the ability to recover quickly, even it could not repair the claw prints in such a short time.

At the moment, there were only three magma dragons left in the sky...

"Awesome!" many people praised out loud.

But, Huo Mei'er and Bing Qing only shook their heads gently.

"If this continues, he will no longer have the chance to break out of the array." Mandela looked at the scene calmly, speaking tonelessly.

Hearing this, Nine Nether's expression changed abruptly. She was not familiar with the Nine-Nine Flaming Dragon Array, so she did not understand why Mandela would say such a thing.

Mandela, however, did not explain any further, because at the moment, there was another sudden change in the magma array. The magma rolled, as huge magma pillars ascended into the sky again.

Just then, dragon howls spread from the magma and sharp dragon claws suddenly stretched out. Another six magma dragons had emerged in the sky!

After this, there were a total of nine dragons again. The hard battle that Mu Chen fought earlier seemed to have been totally useless!

Seeing this, not only did Mu Chen's expression change, but the pupils of those who were not familiar with the Nine-Nine Flaming Dragon Array also contracted.

Many people were puzzled, but they had finally seen the powers of the Nine-Nine Flaming Dragon Array. It was no wonder that it could become the trial to select the commanders of the Daluo Celestial Army.

"You can't break the array just by dealing with the magma dragons with brute force," Huo Mei'er muttered softly.

In the magma, Mu Chen also stared at the scene, frowning tightly. Then, his eyes quickly sparkled. It seemed that the Nine-Nine Flaming Dragon Array was not as simple as he had imagined. Although the nine magma dragons were terrifying, the array would not be destroyed by defeating the dragons.

From the looks of it, no matter how many times the dragons were defeated, they would still come back again. Hence, continuing on in this same pattern would only consume his powers unnecessarily.

"How can this be?" Mu Chen stared at the red magma below and squinted slightly. After a short while, he suddenly recalled the sentence

that Mandela had said casually at the beginning...

"As long as the magma exists, the magma dragons cannot be destroyed."

Originally, Mu Chen was still somewhat doubtful about this. However, after trying it out, he realized that what Mandela had said was indeed true. But, did he really have to destroy the magma here completely? That seemed like an impossible task! After all, the place was connected to an underground fire pulse.

Mu Chen stared at the red magma sea. Golden light suddenly flashed across his eyes. In that instant, he clearly felt a strange fluctuation passing out from the depth of the magma array.

Vroom!

Mu Chen's eyes sparkled rapidly. In the next moment, he suddenly kicked his toes, causing his body to descend vertically, charging directly towards the magma array!

Roar!

Seeing this, the nine magma dragons immediately howled in anger and tried to stop him. However, golden light also gushed out from the Great Solar Undying Body. Then, the Great Meru Demonic Pillar swept out and blocked all of the dragons!

Splash!

Mu Chen charged directly into the magma, attracting many surprised stares. However, the eyes of Mandela, Huo Mei'er, and the rest of the group sparkled joyfully.

Mu Chen charged into the magma and quickly descended. Purple flames formed a layer of protection on the surface of his body, guarding him against the terrifyingly high temperature.

Meanwhile, his senses spread out quickly. After about ten breaths' time, his body trembled abruptly, as he scanned the area below him with his keen gaze.

In the depths of the magma, nine red balls of light were floating. Inside

each ball of light, a drop of magma-like blood was floating. There seemed to be a flaming dragon coiled up in the blood, the fluctuation of which it emitted was so terrifying, it seemed to be able to burn up the entire sky! In addition, the flaming dragons seemed to be coiling within a burning scale, from which Mu Chen could smell a terrifying scent.

"Blood essence from the Ancient Flaming Dragon!"

Mu Chen stared at the nine drops of red blood essence, finally understanding what was going on. It turns out that they were here creating magma dragons! Hence, if they were not destroyed, he would not be able to break out of the array!

However, even though he had found the source, it was not so easy to crack the array. Although it was only the blood essence, he could still vaguely feel how strong the owner of the blood essence had been in the past. That kind of powerful being was probably very famous in the world.

Nonetheless, no matter how difficult it was, he had to find a way. Resolute, Mu Chen took in a deep breath, but then closed his eyes gradually in intense concentration.

Outside of the magma, Mandela waved her hand. The light in front of her spanned out, revealing the image at the depths of the magma brightly. Mu Chen and the nine drops of blood essence of the Ancient Flaming Dragon were all included in its radiant glow.

"You finally found it." A faint smile appeared on the small face of Mandela. Then, she said, "But the blood essence is protected by the scale of the Ancient Flaming Dragon outside. It will not be easy to penetrate through the dragon scale."

Worry also appeared on the face of Nine Nether. The Ancient Flaming Dragon was among the top in the Divine Beast Record. Moreover, this particular Ancient Flaming Dragon must have reached a very powerful level when it was still alive. Otherwise, it would be impossible for just its nine drops of blood essence and scales to have such powers!

"Don't worry. As long as he can take away one drop of the Ancient Flaming Dragon Blood, he will be considered as having passed. Also, by

that time, the Ancient Flaming Dragon Blood that he has obtained will be given to him as a reward," Mandela smiled and said. "It's challenging to break all of the nine dragon scale protections of the Ancient Flaming Dragon. After all, when Huo Mei'er became the great commander, she had only taken away four drops of the Ancient Flaming Dragon Blood."

"Huh?"

Just as Mandela finished speaking, she suddenly exclaimed in surprise, as her golden pupils stared at the spiritual energy screen in front of her in astonishment.

There, Mu Chen had suddenly opened his eyes again, revealing them to now be completely black, without any white! They looked like deep black holes and were exceptionally strange! In addition, when Mu Chen's eyes turned black, the spiritual energy fluctuation that aws emitting from his body also seemed to have turned extremely strange.

Seeing this scene, Nine Nether's look turned serious. Then, she began muttering to herself uncontrollably.

"This is... the Heart Demon State of the Supreme Heart Demon Chant?"

Chapter 764: Small Heart Demon State

Mu Chen stood quietly in the depths of the magma. His eyes were as dark as black holes, and anyone who looked at them felt as if they would be trapped inside. Meanwhile, his hair also began to grow rapidly. Eventually, it turned into long, black hair that hung down loosely.

Such a strange change attracted everyone's attention. Even Mandela's eyes were filled with some doubt. Clearly, she had never seen Mu Chen make such a weird move before.

"The spiritual energy fluctuation around him did not become any stronger." Behind Mandela, the Condor King, one of the Three Kings, frowned. The spiritual energy around Mu Chen indeed did not become stronger because of his change. At first glance, the spiritual energy around him actually became weaker.

Nevertheless, for some unknown reason, Mu Chen currently seemed to be much more dangerous than he had been previously. Even the knowledgeable Condor King along with everyone else felt baffled by the strange change.

The only person who knew what was going on was Nine Nether, because she and Mu Chen had obtained the Supreme Heart Demon Chant together. What surprised her was only that Mu Chen could actually grasp the real cultivation method of the Supreme Heart Demon Chant in just a few months.

From the look of it, he had obviously already learned the fundamentals of the chant.

Even Nine Nether marveled about his talent in her heart uncontrollably. This guy indeed has limitless potential.

The countless uncertain and surprised exclamations outside did not, however, cause Mu Chen even the slightest interference. His eyes, which were as deep as black holes, stared quietly at the nine balls of light that enveloped the Ancient Flaming Dragon Blood. His face was filled with an indescribable calmness. With such calmness, even if the earth were to

shatter, he would probably not be emotionally moved at all.

That was because the calmness represented an absolute rationality. He would not be shaken at all by any external factors.

This was the Heart Demon State!

Mu Chen's palm gripped lightly on his chest. Inside his heart at the moment was a slowly formed, bean-sized black bead, which others could not see.

That was the Seed of the Heart Demon!

After hitting his heart with the Netherworld Thunder Heart countless times over the past few months, the power of the thunder that infiltrated his heart finally condensed successfully into the Seed of the Heart Demon!

The Seed of the Heart Demon would not cause Mu Chen's powers to increase significantly all of a sudden, but it would provide Mu Chen with an absolute rationality. This rationality would allow Mu Chen to cast his powers in a nearly perfect way.

Furthermore, in this state, nothing would be able to interfere with his mind. In addition, when he faced a life-and-death situation, he could still find the possible ways to survive in the situation with an absolute calmness.

At the moment, Mu Chen had merely condensed the Seed of the Heart Demon. At most, he could only be considered to have reached the first level in the three levels of the Heart Demon State, the Small Heart Demon State. If one day he could reach the Big Heart Demon State, nobody would know how powerful he would be. It was no wonder that the leader of the Lightning God Palace could actually fight against a Heavenly Sovereign by relying on the final Perfect Heart Demon State.

Mu Chen extended his slender fingers and then slowly clenched his fist. He was uncontrollably fascinated by the feeling that he had absolute control and could easily use every bit of his powers.

Bang!

Outside of the magma, a violent spiritual energy fluctuation spread out all of a sudden. The nine dragons were charging wildly, trying to break through the obstruction from the Great Solar Undying Body so that they could chase Mu Chen out.

"You can feel the danger as well?" Mu Chen's calm face seemed to have smiled. His fingers pointed at the nine drops of Ancient Flaming Dragon Blood from afar.

Roar!

Just as Mu Chen extended his fingers, the nine drops of Ancient Flaming Dragon Blood actually gave out a violent, deep roar. The blood essence rolled and vaguely, nine tiny Ancient Flaming Dragons seemed to have appeared. Red light bloomed out from the red dragon scales.

Rumble.

The magma in the region started to flow. Faintly, there were actually indications that magma dragons would be condensed once again...

Outside of the array, everyone stared at the scene anxiously. They all wanted to know how Mu Chen, a mere Grade Three Sovereign, could take the blood essence away when the blood was protected by the power of the dragon scales.

Meanwhile, under many watchful eyes, Mu Chen's fingers suddenly gently flicked.

The space seemed to have fluctuated, and an invisible substance gushed out. Right then, a scream-like lightning roar continuously charged out.

The invisible power tore across the magma, leaving nine cracks, and dashed quickly towards the nine drops of Ancient Flaming Dragon Blood like lightning.

Buzz!

The dragon scales guarding the blood essence below suddenly gave out a buzz, and red light burst out. A dragon symbol wandered about in the light, forming the strongest protection and defending the blood essence

inside.

Vroom!

However, the nine invisible lightning roars still charged straight forward. In just an instant, as everyone stared, the roars collided with the light formed by the dragon scales.

Pop!

The two collided, but to everyone's astonishment, no fluctuations appeared on the dragon scale light barrier. Instead, the Ancient Flaming Dragon Blood inside started to fluctuate violently. It seemed as if a miserable roar rang out.

Red light gushed out wildly from the nine drops of Ancient Flaming Dragon Blood, as if they were trying to defend against some attack. But what puzzled everyone was that nothing seemed to have charged in and penetrated the protection of the dragon scales.

Mu Chen looked at the violently vibrating Flaming Dragon Blood quietly with eyes as deep as black holes. His slender fingers flicked again.

Once again, the scream-like lightning roar erupted.

Boom!

The nine drops of Ancient Flaming Dragon Blood could no longer withstand it and were actually blown out directly. Under many dumbstruck stares, they actively flew out from the light under the protection of the dragon scales.

Vroom!

Mu Chen disappeared from his spot. In the next instant, he already appeared behind the nine drops of Ancient Flaming Dragon Blood. His palm twisted, and an attractive force gushed out fiercely, sucking the nine drops of Ancient Flaming Dragon Blood directly into his palm.

Roar!

The Ancient Flaming Dragon Blood was still roaring and wanted to struggle, but two streams of spiritual energy quickly gushed out from Mu

Chen's palm. Among the spiritual energy, half was burning with purple flames while half had an invisible lightning surging in it.

The two streams of spiritual energy, which had different properties, had reached a perfect equilibrium. Complementing each other, they actually turned into a light barrier and trapped the nine drops of Ancient Flaming Dragon Blood inside.

Such a control of spiritual energy was clearly much more perfect than when Mu Chen was in his usual state. At least, during his normal state, he still could not combine the two types of spiritual energy and could only drive them separately.

Vroom! Vroom!

The Ancient Flaming Dragon Blood was taken away, and intense red light also burst out from the nine pieces of dragon scale, which then charged quickly towards Mu Chen like nine bolts of lightning. Even space was torn apart, leaving behind faint traces.

The attack from the nine pieces of dragon scale was so fast that Mu Chen did not have enough time to dodge.

Rumble.

However, just when the dragon scales were about to hit Mu Chen, the magma was abruptly torn apart. A golden hand stretched out into the depths of the magma and then grabbed Mu Chen.

Bang! Bang!

The dragon scales hit the golden hand, immediately crushing it into pieces. However, when the hand broke, a figure also ascended quickly. In a few breaths' time, he charged out from the surface of the magma sea.

The magma sea surface was already in disorder. Because the Ancient Flaming Dragon Blood was taken away, the nine magma dragons also turned into magma, which poured down as they lost the power to sustain themselves.

The Nine-Nine Flaming Dragon Array had lost its most important source

of power and looked very unstable. Clearly, it was about to collapse.

Mu Chen stood in the air and his long, black hair danced in the wind. His deep black eyes stared at Mandela and the rest outside. Still no fluctuations could be seen on his handsome face.

"How can this be..." Everyone was dumbstruck, especially the commanders of the Daluo Celestial Army such as Huo Mei'er and Bing Qing. They blinked their eyes uncontrollably, and their faces were filled with shock.

Mu Chen actually took away nine drops of Ancient Flaming Dragon Blood? When Huo Mei'er was promoted to the great commander, even she had only taken away four drops of blood essence... Could it be that Mu Chen is currently stronger than Huo Mei'er?

That was clearly impossible!

"That's..." Mandela's eyes were similarly locked onto Mu Chen. She said slowly, "The Netherworld Thunder Heart? It's no wonder that it can ignore the protection from the dragon scales and attack the flaming dragon in the blood essence directly."

"Netherworld Thunder Heart?"

Everyone behind her was momentarily puzzled, after which they realized what was happening. The Netherworld Thunder Heart could penetrate physical defenses and explode in a person's soul directly. Its attack mode was extremely unusual. However, they did not expect Mu Chen to actually use it to deal with the Ancient Flaming Dragon Blood.

"The willpower of the Ancient Flaming Dragon had been left behind in the Ancient Flaming Dragon Blood. This kind of willpower is most afraid of such a lightning roar. Hence, he has used a very big trick this time," Mandela said tonelessly.

Everyone quietly heaved a sigh of relief. Fortunately, Mu Chen was using a trick. Otherwise, they would all feel extremely embarrassed because a Grade Three Sovereign had completed what they could not. It was almost like slapping them in the face.

"Then does this count?" Nine Nether asked.

A smile appeared on Mandela's delicate and pretty little face as she said, "Of course he wins. There is no such thing as playing a trick in the world. As long as he can emerge victorious, it does not matter what means he uses. Even if it is just luck, it is still part of his powers.

"He can find the method to crack the array in such a short period of time, and also control the Netherworld Thunder Heart to such an extent. It's not merely coincidence."

Rumble.

As Mandela finished speaking, the huge magma sea suddenly broke apart, turning into a magma-fall which poured down into the Daluo Blazing Pool with a rumbling sound.

In the sky, Mu Chen's body trembled gently. His deep, black eyes quickly returned to normal, and his long hair also retracted. In just a few breaths' time, he had returned to his original state.

As Mu Chen left the Heart Demon State, his handsome face also instantly became emotionally vivid. Only now did he have the vitality that he was supposed to have.

As Mu Chen's eyes regained their original intelligence and vitality, Mandela's young voice also leisurely rang out. "From now on, you will be the sixth commander of the Daluo Celestial Army."

Below, the soldiers of the Daluo Celestial Army looked at each other. Then, they all bowed respectfully and folded their hands. Their deep voices rang out together.

"Greetings, sixth commander!"

Chapter 765: Dragon-Phoenix Record

"Greetings, sixth commander!"

In the sky, Mu Chen looked at the soldiers of the Daluo Celestial Army, who were all bowing respectfully. As he did so, his originally calm heart rippled slightly. After all, the Daluo Celestial Army that was standing before him was the strongest troop in the Daluo Territory.

Although the potential of the Nine Nether Troop was definitely worthy of note, if the two troops were to fight against each other at the present moment, the Nine Nether Troop would probably be wiped out completely in just a matter of minutes. After all, the Daluo Celestial Army was formed by very powerful people, all of whom had already entered the sovereign-level. In fact, if the power of this troop were to be unfolded completely, apart from the three kings, even the lords in the Daluo Territory would probably lose to them.

Since the Daluo Celestial Army was so strong, it was not easy to become one of their commanders. Even though Mu Chen had passed the Nine-Nine Flaming Dragon Array, he knew that the Daluo Celestial Army was most likely not really convinced about his worthiness yet in their hearts. After all, he was much weaker than their other commanders.

Nevertheless, Mu Chen was not unhappy about this. He knew that there was still some gap between him and the other five commanders at the moment. But, given enough time, there would eventually be one day, when everyone in the Daluo Celestial Body would take back any previous contempt towards him.

Mu Chen descended slowly from the sky, then landed near Mandela and the rest. He waved his hand, where an alabaster jar was lying. In the jar, two streams of spiritual energy with different colors were surging.

Enveloped in the spiritual energy were nine drops of blood essence, which were flowing like magma. Waves of scorching fluctuations spread out from among them. That was the blood essence of the Ancient Flaming Dragon.

"Do they belong to me now?" Mu Chen smiled at Mandela and asked.

Mu Chen naturally coveted the Ancient Flaming Dragon. Even on the Divine Beast Record, where there were many powerful beings, the Ancient Flaming Dragon could be ranked among the top. Its powers were no weaker than those of the Northern Sea Dragon.

During that time, Mu Chen had spent much time and effort in obtaining one drop of blood essence of the Northern Sea Dragon at the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. Now, he managed to obtain nine drops in one shot, so he was obviously extremely delighted. Mandela nodded, unconcerned. Even though the Ancient Flaming Dragon Blood was precious, it was no big deal for her.

"Since you have passed the Nine-Nine Flaming Dragon Array, the only quota in the Daluo Territory that is allotted to the 'Dragon-Phoenix Rift' will be given to you."

Mandela glanced at Mu Chen and continued. "The Dragon-Phoenix Rift is a major event among the young generation in the North Territory. Everyone there is outstandingly gifted and has a powerful background. You definitely cannot compare them to any of your other peers."

Mu Chen nodded. Naturally, he would not look down on those geniuses, who had been brought up by the various top-notch forces with all of their endless resources. Although he had yet to meet anyone else, Liu Yan from the Tian Xuan Hall alone was sufficient to make him feel threatened.

"There are some restrictions in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift, meaning that we all cannot enter. Therefore, you can only rely on yourself at that time. Even if you are killed there, you can only blame yourself for being too weak."

"Has anyone from the Daluo Territory participated in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift in the past?" Mu Chen thought for a while, before he asked.

"Yes, but the person was killed by someone from the Netherworld Palace after entering for only a short while," Mandela said, her little face turning slightly angry at the remembrance. During that time, the Daluo Territory was mocked by many others because of this.

"In the past, the young generation of our Daluo Territory was slightly weaker than those from the other top-notch forces. Ha, the Dominator does not seem to be very interested in the event," the Condor King said.

"Who has so much time to wait for all the young people to grow up slowly? I can kill all the so-called geniuses in just one slap, so what's the point of bringing them up? As long as I am here, the Daluo Territory will remain untouched. If I am gone, no matter how many geniuses we have, it's all useless," Mandela said these things, while staring at the Condor King with her golden eyes.

Mu Chen twitched his mouth uncontrollably. Although Mandela said this, she clearly did not mean it. Over these years, she had been trying to train the young generation, but nobody seemed to have reached the level that would satisfy her.

However, what she had said was also not wrong. The main reason why the Daluo Territory could stand among the top forces in the North Territory was precisely due to her presence.

After all, she was an Earthly Sovereign super power. As long as she was here, nobody would dare to attack the Daluo Territory. On the other hand, if she was gone, no number of young geniuses would be able to support and protect the Daluo Territory.

"Haha, in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift this time, I hope that Mu Chen can have some remarkable performance, so that everyone in the North Territory will know that our Daluo Territory now has an outstanding young man," the Condor King smiled and said.

Mu Chen nodded gently and said, "I will do my best."

Even though he knew that all of those participating in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift would be geniuses among the many top forces, he did not have any fear. The others were strong, but Mu Chen himself was no weakling! If he did not have such confidence in himself, he could never have reached his current position.

"It will be good if you can gain some achievements, but don't get killed by those unknown people! That would only make them famous instead.

Should that happen, you will have caused the Daluo Territory to be humiliated." Mandela dampened Mu Chen's brief flare of enthusiasm.

Mu Chen gritted his teeth and said, "Which other dominator will be like you?!"

Everyone around was horrified by their conversation. In the Daluo Territory, Mandela was basically the sole ruler, so nobody dared go against her words. Although her current appearance of a little girl was very adorable, nobody dared show any disrespect. Therefore, when they saw that Mu Chen actually dared to talk to Mandela in such a way, they were all dumbstruck.

However, Mandela did not appear to be angry. Instead, her lips curled up teasingly. Then, she clasped her hands behind her back and turned around to leave. As she left, her young voice spread out.

"Come with me. In five days, the Dragon-Phoenix Rift will open. I will give you something, lest you say that, as the Dominator, I do not care for my subordinates."

Hearing this, Mu Chen was also stunned. Then, he waved his hands at Nine Nether and followed up quickly.

Seeing the two people leave, the Condor King and the rest all looked at one another, after which they smiled bitterly. They were really unsure of the relationship between Mu Chen and the Dominator. Clearly, from the conversation between the two, they certainly did not have a principal-subordinate relationship. Otherwise, with Mandela's cold personality, she would have killed Mu Chen with the snap of a finger long ago, should Mu Chen have dared to talk in such a way.

Nine Nether also smiled and shrugged her shoulders. She was naturally very happy that Mandela would care so much for Mu Chen. In the first place, she had brought Mu Chen to the Daluo Territory because she wanted him to have a better environment to cultivate. Although she was also unsure about how exactly Mu Chen came to share such a relationship with Mandela, it was ultimately not a bad thing.

Following behind Mandela, Mu Chen flew across Daluotian. In the end,

they landed on a peak among the deep mountains. On the peak, there was a quaint pavilion.

Mu Chen landed before the pavilion and scanned his eyes around. Then, his body became tightened reflexively, because he felt some dangerous fluctuations that were seeping into his bones.

"This is the scripture pavilion of the Daluo Territory. All the divine techniques, spiritual arrays, and inheritance from the sects and clans that we have defeated over the years are stored inside. It's considered to be an important place in the Daluo Territory. In addition, this is also where Little Meng spends her seclusion," Mandela said casually.

"Little Meng?"

Mu Chen was stunned. Then, he realized that she was probably referring to the Sleeping King. Immediately, the corners of his lips twitched uncontrollably. The Sleeping King was the head of the three kings, but Mandela called him such a funny name!

"So this is where the Sleeping King guards..." Mu Chen's body relaxed slowly. It was no wonder that he had felt an intense danger. With the protection from such a powerful person, ordinary people would not dare go near this place.

"Although you have managed to break through now, you are still only a grade three sovereign, and there is still some gap between you and all of those geniuses. I heard that Liu Yan from the Tian Xuan Hall became a grade four sovereign long ago. He is many times stronger than Qin Bei, whom you defeated sometime ago." Mandela's young voice spread out in front of the pavilion.

"Furthermore, you have crippled Liu Ming, and Liu Yan has also made his opinion known about you. Therefore, he will definitely deal with you in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift."

Mu Chen nodded slightly. Liu Yan was indeed very strong, and Qin Bei could not compare with him at all. Mandela waved her little hand, causing the quaint door of the scripture pavilion to open slowly. Immediately, a shocking fluctuation swept out, but it did not even manage to move the

dress of Mandela, who was standing at the front.

Mandela walked in, with Mu Chen quickly following. Entering the pavilion, many different colors instantly filled his eyes. The many stone platforms were filled with balls of light, in which scrolls were floating.

Those scrolls were all emitting powerful spiritual energy fluctuations. Clearly, they were not ordinary.

The superb collection caused Mu Chen to be dumbstruck. He twitched his lips uncontrollably. This was the foundation of a top force!

Although he deeply desired to have something, Mandela did not let Mu Chen choose anything. Clenching her hand, a streamer flew over and landed in her hand. Then, she threw the object at Mu Chen.

"Since you are going to participate in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift, you need to know your enemies. On this, all of the outstanding people among the young generation in the North Territory are now recorded. You can take a look at it, so that you will be prepared upon meeting them in the future."

Hearing Mandela's words, Mu Chen started to focus intently, quickly taking over the streamer. The light dissipated and the object turned into a bronze scroll. The sides of the bronze scroll were surrounded by dragons and phoenixes. Then, faintly, the fair howls of the dragons and phoenixes seemed to spread.

He opened the scroll slowly. Immediately, golden light circulated and three flamboyant golden words appeared in front of his eyes...

"Dragon-Phoenix Record."

Chapter 766: Datura Sky-wrecking Light

As the bronze scroll spread out, golden light entered Mu Chen's eyes. The shining ancient writing seemed to come to life and moved before Mu Chen's eyes.

"Number nine in the Dragon-Phoenix Record, Snake Shrine Scarlet Blood. The actual body is a Scarlet Blood Python which possesses the bloodline of divine beast. It is cruel, loves blood, and has massacred up to 100 cities."

"..."

"Number seven in the Dragon-Phoenix Record, Ding Xuan of Djinn Clan. He has innate divine power and can lift up mountains. He has challenged people from all over and has gone through many battles. He has even defeated 100 Sovereigns."

"Number five in the Dragon-Phoenix Record, Demon's Gate Snapper. Flirtatious and eye-catching. Her name is well-known in the North Territory. Many geniuses have been infatuated by her. One of the geniuses from a top force has betrayed his sect because of her."

"..."

As Mu Chen came to this part, he was shocked. How beautiful is this lady by the name of Snapper that she could seduce someone to the extent of betraying his sect?

Amazing, Mu Chen complimented. Although her accomplishments were not stated, Mu Chen was not so silly as to think that she had been ranked in the fifth position due to her beauty.

What about Liu Yan of Tian Xuan Hall? Mu Chen suddenly thought of it and continued to read on. Given Liu Yan's talent and strength, he must have held a position in the Record. As Mu Chen had expected, he found Liu Yan's name in the fourth position.

"Number four in the Dragon-Phoenix Record, Liu Yan of Tian Xuan Hall. He has cultivated the Myriad Flame Celestial Body which is extremely

overbearing. Wherever the flame passes, everything will be burned into ashes. He has fought with Grade Five Sovereigns and has escaped unscathed."

Myriad Flame Celestial Body...

Mu Chen stared at the words. Although there was only a difference of one word between Myriad Flame Celestial Body and Heavenly Flame Celestial Body, the Myriad Flame Celestial Body was much more powerful than the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body. Among the 99 Sovereign Celestial Body rankings, the Myriad Flame Celestial Body was ranked number 69. In order to cultivate it, one would require a few hundred unique flames from the heavens and the earth. After the spiritual energy had been purified, one could then refine the Myriad Flame Celestial Body. Once one had successfully cultivated the Myriad Flame Celestial Body, the power would be overbearing.

Compared to Liu Ming, Liu Yan was much more powerful. Mu Chen was surprised to learn that Liu Yan had fought with a Grade Five Sovereign and escaped unscathed.

It seemed like he was not the only one to challenge those above his rank. The other geniuses were able to do that as well.

"He is really a hard nut to crack," Mu Chen muttered. He had to be more careful in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift. Opponents of such caliber were watching in secret, thus he could not afford to be careless.

As this thought flashed across his mind, Mu Chen read on. He became more and more interested in the Dragon-Phoenix Record. Even Liu Yan was only ranked fourth. Which influential people take the top three positions?

Golden lights surged, and the golden writing moved around. Mu Chen fixed his gaze on the third position.

"Number three in the Dragon-Phoenix Record, Su Biyue from Holy Mountain. She is holy and pure, and she is as famous as Demon's Gate Snapper. She has gone around the North Territory and seldom fights. However, whenever she fights, she will defeat her opponents within ten

rounds. She has fought with Snapper before and won by a small margin."

Win within ten rounds? Mu Chen was shocked. The records in the Dragon-Phoenix Record were valuable. These people were extraordinarily powerful. The thought of the ability to win within ten rounds was enough to make one terrified.

"Number two in the Dragon-Phoenix Record, Prince of Netherworld from Netherworld Palace. Netherworld Palace grooms geniuses by the use of venomous insects. Among the many geniuses, the one who walks out of it will become the Prince of Netherworld."

Mu Chen stared at the row of golden letters and felt a chill up his spine. Although nothing had been recorded on the achievements of the Prince of Netherworld, those few words were enough to make one shiver.

To groom geniuses through the breeding of venomous insects was extremely cruel. One could imagine that for the Prince of Netherworld to walk out of the place, he must have gone through much pain and many near death experiences.

Mu Chen remembered that Liu Tiandao had mentioned the Netherworld Palace a few months ago. It was an old school top force in the North Territory. They were not on good terms with Daluo Territory.

Mu Chen stared at the Prince of Netherworld and listed him as dangerous. Although he had not met him before, since they did not have a good relationship with Daluo Territory, he had to be extra careful.

What about number one? Mu Chen's heart jumped. Even the Prince of Netherworld has been ranked only as number two. Who is ranked number one?

As Mu Chen looked on, a row of ancient writing appeared at the top of the scroll.

"Number one in the Dragon-Phoenix Record, Fang Yi from Divine Pavilion." Although the words were few, it was enough to cause Mu Chen to turn grave. With such a simple introduction, he was able to assume the number one position. Mu Chen could only describe him as horrifying.

Mandela's voice was heard from afar. "The Divine Pavilion has been a top force throughout the ages in the North Territory. Fang Yi is gifted, and he has survived five rounds of the Big Hunting War. All these years, Divine Pavilion has spent lots of effort grooming him. It looks like they have the intention of making him the next successor."

Mu Chen was shocked. No wonder Fang Yi was so powerful. He had been groomed by Divine Pavilion, a powerful and longstanding top force.

"The North Territory is full of people with unusual abilities," Mu Chen commented. It was only when he had entered the Great Thousand World that he realized how big the world was. It made life more exciting as well. The path of the masters was essentially filled with challenges. He could only slowly press on before he could stand out from the rest.

"Now you know how powerful those people who will be participating in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift are. Don't be proud simply because you have defeated those people of the lower grades," Mandela warned him. She spoke as though she were a senior, but her young and tender voice was a mismatch.

Mu Chen glanced at her and said, "When have I become proud?" Although he was confident of himself, he was not rash. He would not be silly enough to think that he was invincible.

"Are you not?" Mandela pouted her lips and said, "Are you still game to participate?"

Mu Chen stared at the Dragon-Phoenix Record in his hand and smiled. He kept it and said, "When the Dragon-Phoenix Rift ends, I will be in the top ten."

The names that were listed in the Dragon-Phoenix Record were the geniuses. They were the giants among the men. It would be a great opportunity for Mu Chen to toughen himself up if he could cross swords with them. He had never been afraid of such fights. When he was at the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, he had looked upon Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong, and the others as invincible masters. However, when he left the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, he was better than

they were.

He might not have a distinctive family background like the geniuses, but he had never considered himself inferior to them. He had his pursuits. He had promised his father he would bring his mother back to him.

He had also promised the girl, who had always been in his mind, that he would become a matchless master. He would protect her.

He would have no fear as he traveled this path. Mu Chen always looked far ahead. Mandela looked at the smile on his face and was shocked. She gently clapped her hands and said with a smile, "Not bad, you have a great mind. Although you are not as powerful as you seem to be, you have not tarnished the name of the successor of the Primordial Immortal Body."

"Where is my gift?" Mu Chen asked with a smile. He ignored what she said and stretched forth his hand. Given Mandela's status, whatever she would be giving him must be something extraordinary.

Since Mu Chen knew that those who would be participating in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift were extraordinary people, he had to learn more skills. Although he was confident of himself, after seeing the top three in the Dragon-Phoenix Record, he knew that they were formidable.

Mandela glanced at Mu Chen and turned toward the pavilion. Mu Chen followed closely behind.

They passed through many bright stone platforms. Although the scrolls above were exuding extremely strong fluctuations, Mandela continued to move on. After about ten minutes, she slowed down her pace, and they came to the far end of the pavilion.

Mandela finally stopped walking.

Mu Chen lifted his head and saw a stone statue that looked indistinct. It was grey in color and formed a seal with one hand. The hand was facing upward, and a strange flower was hanging on its palm.

The strange flower was purple in color, and the petals were beautiful. A strange light circled around it and exuded a strange fluctuation. Mu Chen was in a daze and was nearly blown away by it.

Boom! Boom!

The Netherworld Thunder Heart in Mu Chen's heart suddenly thundered, and he regained consciousness. He quickly stepped back and stared at the strange purple flower. This thing could cause one's mind to be befuddled.

Mandela waved her hand, and the purple flower landed on her palm. After looking at it for a while, she flicked her finger, and the purple flower flew toward Mu Chen.

Mu Chen caught it with care. He realized that there were ancient words on the petals.

"This is a Primordial Divine Art. It is known as Datura Sky-wrecking Light. When it displays its power, the heavens and the earth will darken and be oppressed. Its power is enough to destroy the heavens and the earth."

Mandela said flatly, "If you want to cultivate it, you will need the power of the mandala flower, the Ancient Divine Flower." Mu Chen was stunned when he heard that. The Ancient Divine Flower was mystical, and it had spiritual intelligence. Every mandala flower was comparable to a Sovereign in terms of its power. How would he be able to get hold of it?

Mandala seemed to have read his thoughts. She extended her hand and gently pointed to his abdomen where his Sovereign Sea was. A mysterious black page was in the Sovereign Sea...

Mu Chen suddenly realized it and was elated. There were divine runes of the mandala flower on the Immortal Page. The Datura Sky-wrecking Light was specially made for him! No one would be able to cultivate it other than him!

Although Mu Chen had been extremely composed, at that moment, he could not help bursting out in laughter. The present from Mandela was wonderful!

Chapter 767: Set Forth on a Journey

In the next few days, Mu Chen went into seclusion in Nine Nether Palace to practice Datura Sky-wrecking Light.

After practicing, Mu Chen gradually found that this divine art was mysterious and unpredictable. Although Mandela had not told him which level of divine art Datura Sky-wrecking Light belonged to, Mu Chen presumed it to be at Perfect Divine Art.

This seemed to be the most powerful divine art that Mu Chen had acquired. Even Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art was not up to this level. It could only be considered as a pre-perfect level of divine art.

High level of divine art would naturally be difficult to cultivate. Even with Mu Chen's talent, he found Datura Sky-wrecking Light extremely difficult to cultivate.

Under the guidance of Mandela, Mu Chen had only managed to grasp a bit of light. He was fortunate to have the divine mark of the Mandela flower, which would help him with his cultivation of Datura Sky-wrecking Light.

He believed that it was just a matter of time before he mastered, and he was looking forward to seeing the power of Datura Sky-wrecking Light after he had done so.

These few days, Mu Chen had been spending some time looking into the Spiritual Array. Although he seldom used it, this was his prevailing skill and trump card. Moreover, he still had to continue to cultivate his spiritual energy.

His mother was a genuine Spiritual Array Master at Ancestral Master rank. She was so powerful, in fact, that even Mandela was not her match.

Sometimes, Mu Chen wondered if others knew that his mother was in such an awesome Heavenly Sovereign level. If they had, there would not be many people who would dare provoke him in Tianluo Continent.

However, he quickly put away this thought. His mother was currently in

dire straits, and given his character, he would not exploit his mother's power.

Mu Chen sighed within himself. He could not call himself a powerful second-generation by proxy. He had to depend on himself.

During his free time, he would go to the pavilion to look for books on spiritual array. He had a feeling that, in Dragon-Phoenix Rift, the fights would be violent. Hence, it would do him good to know more skills and to protect himself.

He had to be vigilant with those powerful people listed in the Dragon-Phoenix Record. He dared not look at them with disdain.

Mandela had given Mu Chen the greatest support during this period. She had allowed Mu Chen to have free access to the pavilion, and allowed him to practice in it. Because of this, some of the princes had been envious of him, as they saw this as special treatment.

Everyone knew that there was a large amount of treasure in the pavilion. During normal days, they were not allowed to enter, unless they had performed exceptional meritorious services. However, Mu Chen could freely come and go, which made the princes yearn to enter as well.

However, none of them dared say a word. Everyone could tell that Mu Chen and the Dominator had a special relationship. With the Dominator to back him up, no one dared provoke Mu Chen in Daluo Territory.

Take the Lod Blood Hawk for example, he no longer dared offend Mu Chen, as he knew he would lose his position, if the Dominator was displeased with him. Mandela had let Mu Chen have access to all the resources, and time flew quickly, as Mu Chen helped himself to them freely.

On the fifth day.

Nine Nether Palace was bustling with people. The entire Daluo Territory had gathered together. Mu Chen was smiling at them, cupping his hand to show obeisance.

"If you are ready, get going. We will not be sending you off. Dragon-

Phoenix Rift is located northwest of Dragon-Phoenix Mountain. You shall go there alone," Mandela waved her hand at Mu Chen and said.

"Am I going alone?" Upon hearing this, Mu Chen was stunned. Although he had been in the northern boundary for some time, he had never left Daluo Territory on his own. He had expected to be escorted, which in his mind, would display some power, and frighten off thieves.

"You are no longer a kid. Do you still need someone to keep you company?" Mandela pouted her lips and said, "If you dare not go alone, you are better to just not participate at all. Don't disgrace yourself."

Mu Chen was enraged. If the little girl before him did not have the ability to suppress him, he would have taught her a lesson right then and there.

"The lord is kidding you. Only those who are participating are allowed in Dragon-Phoenix Rift. Those top powers are also not allowed to enter. This is why everyone has to go there alone. No one will accompany them," Nine Nether, who was standing beside them, said this with a smile, then continued, "No matter what situation you encounter at Dragon-Phoenix Rift, you will have to handle it yourself."

Mu Chen sighed helplessly. It seemed he had to go alone.

"Take this."

As Mu Chen was feeling a bit depressed and about to set off, Mandela flicked something from her fingers. A ray of light shot toward Mu Chen. When he caught it, he saw that it was a piece of ancient jade. There was a strange formidable wave in the ancient jade.

"If you are in a life-or-death situation, smash it," Mandela said flatly.

Mu Chen was shocked. Nine Nether had mentioned that Dragon-Phoenix Rift had prohibited top powers like Mandela from entering. Those who entered would get themselves into trouble. If he smashed the ancient jade, Mandela would sense the wave and come to his rescue.

She would have to pay a price for it, if she did that. Mu Chen was touched, but he did not say a word. He held the ancient jade, and kept it in

the universal bracelet. He would have to be extremely careful in Dragon-Phoenix Rift.

"Hahaha, Mu Chen, although we are not going to Dragon-Phoenix Mountain, we will be keeping an eye on the situation. All of us will be waiting for you," Condor King laughed and said.

"We will be waiting for you to bring glory to Daluo Territory!"

Mu Chen cupped his fist and said respectfully to Condor King, "Lord, please rest assured, I will do my best!"

Having said that, he flew up to the sky.

"If you can successfully return, I will let you become the 10th prince!" Mandela looked at Mu Chen and shouted.

"Hahaha, thank you, lord. Please keep the position for me!" Mu Chen laughed out loudly. He turned into a streamer and flew through the sky. Within a short while, he disappeared into thin air.

As all of them saw that he had gone far away, they sighed.

"Lord, I have heard that the fights will be very intense in this Rift. Those top powers had sent the young leaders that they had painstakingly trained up to the Rift."

Spiritual Pupil King looked in the direction where Mu Chen had disappeared into, then turned to Mandela and said, "The caliber of our candidates had been on the downhill for the past few years, and they had brought disgrace to us. Although Mu Chen is not bad, I am worried..."

The rest of the top powers nodded their heads in agreement. A talented youth from Daluo Territory had participated in Dragon-Phoenix Rift previously. However, the moment he stepped into the Rift, he had been killed by the genius from Netherworld Palace.

This had brought much disgrace to Daluo Territory, and from then on, they had refrained from participating in Dragon-Phoenix Rift. This round, Mandela had sent Mu Chen.

Although Mu Chen had performed well, those geniuses, who would also

be participating in the Rift, were more powerful than him. Should Mu Chen fail, he would, once again, bring disgrace to Daluo Territory.

"It is about time we get off of our shelves, after so many years." Mandela smiled. She looked at Spiritual Pupil King and said, "I know you do not have much confidence in Mu Chen, but I have confidence in him. Let's wait for the outcome."

Spiritual Pupil King dared not say another word, after hearing what Mandela had said. He nodded his head and smiled wryly. He was not against Mu Chen, but what he had said was true. As compared to those geniuses, whose names had been listed in Dragon-Phoenix Record, Mu Chen was far from their calibers.

However, since Mandela trusted in him, they could only choose to believe likewise. They hoped that this round would be different. Previously, when they had sent out a candidate, he would never return.

Many of the top powers lifted up their heads and looked toward the north. Very soon, that place would be the main attraction in the northern boundary.

Many geniuses would be contending for hegemony. Some would rise up from there, and some would fall.

Regardless of the outcome, when Dragon-Phoenix Rift ended, the list in Dragon-Phoenix Record would change as well.

Chapter 768: The Encounter in the Mountains

Dragon-Phoenix Ridge was located in the renowned ancient region of the North Territory. It was renowned due to the fact that the Dragon-Phoenix Rift was hidden within it.

According to legend, there was once a dragon and a phoenix that were fighting in the Ridge. A large area of land, including the firmament, had been destroyed due to this fight.

Within the dragon race and phoenix race, the real dragons and real phoenixes were the most powerful. They possessed the formidable rank of Heavenly Sovereign.

During the fierce battle, the two powers had fallen. The place where they had landed, became what is now known as Dragon-Phoenix Rift. It had been rumored that there was a large amount of fresh blood belonging to the real dragon and real phoenix in Dragon-Phoenix Rift. This blood had made Dragon-Phoenix Rift magical, and hence, many treasures could also be found in this place.

If one was able to find the blood of a real dragon or real phoenix and refine it, he would then be able to cultivate the body of a real dragon or real phoenix. Thus, his body would be powerful like the dragon race and phoenix race.

The most crucial point was that, the blood of the real dragon and real phoenix could give strong vitality to men. The divine beast was intimidating, as it had strong vitality. If men had similar vitality, they would benefit greatly in their cultivation.

Other than this factor, it had been rumored that the real dragon and real phoenix had left behind their inheritances in Dragon-Phoenix Rift. One would be able to progress tremendously, if he was able to get his hands on them.

During the past few years, Dragon-Phoenix Rift had been opened a

number of times. However, no one had managed to lay their hands on the inheritance of the real dragon and real phoenix. Hence, one could not rule out the possibility that the inheritance was merely a rumor.

However, whenever Dragon-Phoenix Rift was about to open, many younger generations in North Territory would be tempted to enter. Even those top powers outside North Territory were tempted and they would send their men over.

As time passed by, Dragon-Phoenix Rift had become the standard of comparison, when sizing up the younger generations. It was due to this, that the Dragon-Phoenix Record first came about.

In any case, every time Dragon-Phoenix Rift opened up, everyone in the North Territory would be vigilantly watching.

After Mu Chen left the Daluo Territory, he headed straight to Dragon-Phoenix Rift. As the Ridge was far away from the Daluo Territory, Mu Chen had to pass through many strong nations.

So far, he had enjoyed a smooth journey, and as he was traveling at a great speed, within two days, he was approaching the northern part of the North Territory. He could feel the presence of much spiritual energy rushing toward the direction of Dragon-Phoenix Rift.

The masters of the spiritual energy were young and powerful. However, Mu Chen was not very impressed with them. The power of those people whom he had met was about the same level as that of Xu Qing and Zhou Yue.

Mu Chen did not take the initiative to get to know them. Instead, he avoided the crowd and chose to travel in the mountains. Although his speed had slowed down, as the Spiritual Beasts had occupied the mountains, he did not need to bother himself with any disputes. Thus, he could quietly practice his Datura Sky-wrecking Light without any disturbance.

As nightfall hit, in the darkness, Mu Chen could hear the different beasts roaring. The sounds traveled far out to a distance.

A fire was being lit in the jungle, and a long figure was quietly sitting cross-legged on the ground. He shut his eyes, and a purple flower that was exuding purple lights was circling around his palms.

Within the purple lights were ancient writings. They flowed to his palms, then entered into his body, seeming to form a mysterious mark.

The figure was none other than Mu Chen. He had been traveling in the mountains for two days, pondering alone, and had benefited much.

The purple lights encircled him for two hours, before slowly dissipating. Mu Chen opened his eyes to look at the purple flower in his hands, and then kept it.

This is truly mystical. Although I have been pondering on the mandala flower mark on the Immortal Page, I only managed to grasp a bit of light. Mu Chen sighed within himself. The Datura Sky-wrecking Light was indeed a Perfect Divine Art. He was having a hard time with it, though, as it was extremely difficult to cultivate.

Mu Chen let out a breath and suppressed his thought. He decided to work on his cultivation.

"Oh?"

Suddenly, he waved his sleeve and put out the fire before him. Like a civet, he moved robustly past the forest.

After a while, Mu Chen landed quietly on a huge tree, looking out at the land from among the leaves. He was stunned by the scene he saw before him.

There was a clear lake in the forest, and the moon was hanging up high. As the moonlight shone on the lake, lights sparkled on the surface. However, Mu Chen was not captivated by the lake.

A fair lady was bathing gracefully in the lake. Her black hair spread out like a waterfall in the water. Mu Chen could only see half of her face, due to the angle that he was at. However, her beauty, even on only one side, was breathtaking enough.

She had arched eyebrows, a pointed nose, rosy lips, long eyelashes, and big, clear eyes, like obsidians. There seemed to be a layer of light on her fair skin.

Mu Chen could not help but gaze down her body. Her neck was long and graceful, like a swan. Her collar bone was slim and sexy. The rest of her body was hidden in the water. However, Mu Chen could vaguely see her cleavage.

Her beauty was among the top three beauties that Mu Chen had ever seen. Even the most stunning beauty in the North Territory, Demon's Gate Snapper, was not as beautiful as her.

Splash!

As Mu Chen was staring at the girl, the water behind her suddenly surged. A colorful python came out of the water and dashed toward the girl.

When Mu Chen saw it, he turned pale. Just as he was about to rush out to save her, he suddenly stopped.

The girl laughed, and her laughter was clear, like pearls bouncing off a marble floor. When she waved her little hand, the colorful python immediately shrank, becoming the size of a palm. It then laid on her shoulder. This colorful snake had been bred by her.

Mu Chen heaved a sigh of relief. As he turned away, and was about to leave, the girl suddenly looked in his direction.

Oops! I have been discovered.

Mu Chen was shocked to see him, and quickly retreated. Although the girl was pretty and attractive, he knew that she was not simple, and he did not want to meddle with her.

Swoosh!

In the twinkle of an eye, Mu Chen shot up about 1,000 feet in the air. However, he suddenly froze, falling on a big tree. A figure in black was sitting on a branch, looking at him with a smile.

It was a youth. He was good looking. Although he was smiling warmly, when Mu Chen saw him, his body started to tense up. He could sense danger.

"Friend, if you run away, I will be punished." The youth in black scratched his head and smiled at Mu Chen helplessly. He then stepped forth.

Mu Chen squinted his eyes, then started to retreat.

Swoosh!

As he was about to retreat, the youth was already standing before him. He placed his palm gently on Mu Chen's shoulder, and Mu Chen's spiritual energy stopped flowing.

Mu Chen was stunned. The youth was extremely powerful, and he was not as young as he looked.

He grabbed hold of Mu Chen's shoulder, and in one move, both of them appeared beside the lake. He then let go of Mu Chen.

Mu Chen carefully took a few steps back. As he was about to speak, he saw the girl from inside the lake walking on the water, coming toward him. She was dressed in light colored clothing, and she stopped to stand before Mu Chen.

Mu Chen could see the girl clearly now. She was young and charming. Her youth and charisma made her seductively charming.

As the girl was moving forward, the youth in black smiled fawningly at her, and ran toward her. He put on a long face and said, "Sis, I was about to drive away the Spiritual Beasts that were nearby, when this chap came and foiled my plans. You cannot blame me for not doing a good job!"

Mu Chen dropped his jaw. The girl was so young, yet she had a younger brother who was so powerful. The spiritual wave in her body was not as powerful as her brother's.

She looked coldly at the youth in black with her seductive eyes, and then turned to look at Mu Chen. The colorful snake on her shoulder had crept

out, and was now hissing at Mu Chen.

"Erm..."

Mu Chen gave out a dry cough, and as he was about to speak, the girl extended her hand and spoke in a clear voice that petrified Mu Chen.

"I can smell the Ancient Flaming Dragon blood in you. Compensate me with five drops of it."

Chapter 769: The Girl and the Youth

"I can smell the Ancient Flaming Dragon blood in you. Compensate me with five drops of it."

The girl's clear voice sounded out across the lake. Mu Chen was shocked, as he looked at the small, fair hand that was before him. After he had recollected himself, he smiled wryly and said, "I do not have it."

Mu Chen felt that the girl must be toying with him. He had put much effort into getting nine drops of blood from the Nine-Nine Flaming Dragon. Also, he had given Nine Nether four drops, as it would help her in her cultivation. Hence, he was now left with only five drops. Although the girl was young, she had an unreasonably great appetite.

"You do not have it?" The girl smiled at Mu Chen. Her eyes were bright like the moon. She was stunningly beautiful, and even the moonlight had dimmed because of her beauty.

Mu Chen was in a daze, as he looked at her. There seemed to be a voice that urged him to hand over the Ancient Flaming Dragon blood voluntarily.

Boom! Boom!

The Netherworld Thunder Heart in Mu Chen sounded, startling him out of the daze. He was shocked that the girl's frown and smile could be so captivating.

Swoosh!

After Mu Chen had collected himself, he moved back vigorously. His residual shadows appeared in the air and, like lightning, he sped toward the forest.

"Xiao Lin." The girl was taken aback, when she saw that she could not use her charms on Mu Chen. Immediately, she extended her fingers and flicked gently.

The youth in black nodded his head helplessly, and disappeared. Mu Chen had dashed into the forest, but, in only a few breaths, he appeared

again at the previous spot.

"Friend, do not run anymore. You will be in hot water if you provoke my sister." The youth appeared beside Mu Chen and shrugged.

Mu Chen stared at the mysterious youth, disappointed. This guy was extremely powerful. His strength was way beyond Mu Chen's.

Since Mu Chen could not run away, he calmed himself down and looked at the girl. He lifted up his hand and said, "I am sorry. I came here earlier, as I heard some noise. I did not mean to..."

"I know." The girl gently stroked the colorful snake on her shoulder with her hand, then said, "If I did not know, I would not only ask for the Ancient Flaming Dragon blood."

"Why do you think you should have it?" Mu Chen gritted his teeth, asking. He saw her unintentionally, and so now he was supposed to compensate her with five drops of Ancient Flaming Dragon blood? It was too expensive!

"I should have it, because you cannot escape from me," the girl said with a smile.

The corners of Mu Chen's mouth twitched. Although he was dejected, he waved his sleeve, and an alabaster jar flew toward the girl.

The girl did not react, but the colorful snake on her shoulder flew out like lightning. It swept its tail on the alabaster jar, breaking it into pieces. The five drops of Ancient Flaming Dragon blood dripped out, and the snake opened its mouth and consumed it.

Mu Chen was stunned at the scene. He looked strangely at the colorful snake. He had not known that the colorful snake was so powerful. The Ancient Flaming Dragon blood contained the willpower of the Ancient Flaming Dragon. However, after the snake had swallowed it, it did not seem to be affected by it, but was still very active.

"Although Xiao Cai is not a Spiritual Beast in The Great Thousand World, once she has been awakened, she will be as powerful as those Sovereign Divine Beasts," the girl stroked the body of the snake and said.

Mu Chen was stunned. The colorful snake is not from The Great Thousand World? Is it from the Lower Planes? How about these two people? Are they from the Lower Planes as well?

After swallowing the five drops of blood, the colorful snake snuck back into the girl's sleeve to rest. It needed to refine its power. Having seen this, the girl smiled. She looked extremely beautiful.

"It seems like the blood helps." The girl smiled at Mu Chen and said, "Thank you."

Mu Chen pouted his lips, and could not be bothered to say much. He felt the heartache of losing five drops of Ancient Flaming Dragon blood for no reason. He snappily said, "Can I go now?"

The two people were extremely mysterious. They did not seem simple, and Mu Chen did not wish to have anything to do with them. He had to be careful.

"Hahaha, do not be angry, friend. Fate has brought us together. Since you have given Xiao Cai a treat, we shall give you a treat as well." The youth in black put his hand over Mu Chen's shoulder, as though they were familiar with each other.

Mu Chen felt like puking when he heard that. What do you mean, I have given your snake a treat? If you had not forced me, I would not have wasted the Ancient Flaming Dragon blood on it!

Mu Chen had intended to use it to strengthen his body!

"No thanks," Mu Chen firmly refused. However, the youth was very enthusiastic, and pulled him to a huge tree. He set up a fire, and started to roast meat. The oil dripped onto the fire, creating sparks.

"Come, let's eat!"

Before Mu Chen could refuse, the youth in black had stuffed the roasted meat into Mu Chen's hand. He then started to gorge himself on the meat. He ate so quickly, that Mu Chen stared at him blankly. Mu Chen had encountered weird things in the middle of the night.

He looked at the sky quietly. He was in no mood to think. The youth was so powerful, that Mu Chen was in no position to resist him. Mu Chen then started to eat as well.

As both of them were eating, the girl sat by the side and watched them, with her chin resting on her hands. The moon was high up in the sky, and there was a mess beside the fireplace.

Mu Chen rested himself against the huge tree and rubbed his stomach. He had not had such a big meal in a long time. When one had reached a certain level of cultivation, they seemed to fast easily.

"Hahaha, this friend is forthright. I am Gu Lin. This is my elder sister..." The youth wiped his mouth and said to Mu Chen with a satisfactorily look.

"Cai Xiao," the girl glanced at the youth and said.

Mu Chen rolled his eyes. He was not good at making up a fake name. He let out a sigh and said, "I am Mu Chen. I am on my way to Dragon-Phoenix Rift."

"Dragon-Phoenix Rift? I have been hearing this name recently," Gu Lin scratched his head and said, with a puzzled look.

"Are you not from North Territory?" Mu Chen was shocked. All the people in North Territory would have known Dragon-Phoenix Rift.

"You are right. We are not from Tianluo Continent either. We just happened to pass by this place," Gu Lin said with a smile.

Mu Chen nodded, then stared at Gu Lin for a long while before asking, "How long have you been cultivating?"

Gu Lin looked slightly older than Mu Chen, but he was extremely powerful. This was a blow to Mu Chen. If Gu Lin looked truly his age, Mu Chen would not have been able to take it.

Upon hearing this, Gu Lin gave an awkward smile. He said vaguely, "Do not compare yourself with me...I have been cultivating for a long time, definitely longer than you."

Mu Chen heaved a sigh of relief. If Gu Lin looked his age, he would be a monster, and not a human.

Mu Chen then turned to look at the charming girl. Her gaze looked weird. She should be Gu Lin's sister, as they had mentioned. Since Gu Lin had been cultivating for many years, her age would be...

Mu Chen had goosebumps when he thought of the girl's apparent age, as compared to her actual age. As though she had sensed what Mu Chen was thinking, Cai Xiao raised her eyebrows and said, "I am not a witch!"

Gu Lin, who was sitting beside Mu Chen, laughed, then went near Mu Chen and said, "My sister's body is a bit unique. She often falls into a deep sleep, which is why she looks so youthful."

Mu Chen smiled, embarrassed now. Although he was curious about the uniqueness in her body, he dared not ask, as they had just met each other.

Cai Xiao stared at Mu Chen and suddenly asked, "I have heard that there is real dragon blood in Dragon-Phoenix Rift. Is it true?"

Upon hearing this, he realized that both of them were ignorant of Dragon-Phoenix Rift. So, he told them everything about it.

"Truly there is real dragon blood." After hearing what Mu Chen had said, Cai Xiao's eyes sparkled.

When Gu Lin saw this, he jumped up in shock and quickly said, "Sis, we are not here for Dragon-Phoenix Rift. We have to finish the task that father has given us."

"You will complete the task alone. I am going to Dragon-Phoenix Rift. If I can get ahold of the dragon blood, Xiao Cai will be able to evolve, and I will not go into a deep sleep constantly," Cai Xiao said openly.

"Ah?" Gu Lin quickly said, "Are you going alone? No. Father has said that you cannot travel alone. If he found out about it..."

"If you keep it from him, he will not know about it," Cai Xiao smiled at him and said. She waved her fist at him and continued, "You know the consequences of betraying me, don't you?"

"Sis, don't do that!" Gu Lin shouted. He instantly stared at Mu Chen. He regretted giving Mu Chen a treat.

Mu Chen pretended not to see it. He touched his nose and was prepared to set off. He wanted to stay away from the two of them.

"Hey."

Before he could refuse, Cai Xiao looked at him seductively, with a smile, and said, "Please bring me to Dragon-Phoenix Rift."

Mu Chen froze. He looked at the fiery glare on Gu Lin's face, and instantly understood what it was like to shoot himself in the foot.

Chapter 770: Tagging Along

Under the moonlight, Mu Chen was beaming at the girl, who was staring back at him with a pair of glistening, marble-like eyes. He could not help but feel his face stiffen. Apparently, he had not expected that he would invite trouble upon himself.

Indeed, if this dazzling girl in front of him could be his travel companion, it was something that most people would wish for. But, as he sensed the mystery hanging over the two of them, he did not want to deal with it too much.

Before he could say anything, Gu Lin, on the other side of him, rejected the idea immediately, "No way!"

If their parents knew that Cai Xiao was participating in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift, on top of that, along with a stranger, they probably would skin him alive. Mu Chen heaved a sigh of relief, when Gu Lin objected.

He nodded with agreement, and said frankly, "Sorry, we do not know each other that well yet. I guess it is not only uncomfortable for both of you, but it is also the same for me."

Upon hearing this, Gu Lin threw him a glance, subtly expressing a look that said: "I'm glad you know it", but Mu Chen pretended not to have seen it.

Cai Xiao sat with her long slender legs curled up, resting her sharp chin on her knees. She looked over to Gu Lin and Mu Chen with her lovely eyes, and said, "Objection is overruled. I've already decided. Even if you are not bringing me along, I can always find someone else. I don't see why I cannot find someone to lead the way, since everyone is heading to the Dragon-Phoenix Rift now."

Mu Chen shrugged his shoulder, as he was indifferent about it. As long as he was not the one, she could find anyone she liked. Gu Lin, still on the other side, and whose face had turned grey, cried out, "Sis, you are creating trouble for me!"

As he sounded extremely desolate, Mu Chen could not help but grin. Although this fellow possessed a terrifying ability, he seemed to be powerless in front of this young girl.

Cai Xiao smilingly said, "You have two choices now. Get him to lead the way, or I will find someone else."

Gu Lin's delicate face was quivering, as he knew his sister's character too well. The moment she decided on one thing, no other persuasion could change her mind.

"I will take my leave first."

Sensing the trouble, Mu Chen gave a chuckle and turned around. Just as he moved, a hand was on his shoulder.

Mu Chen jerked his head and saw Gu Lin, tears welling up in his eyes. Mu Chen bit his teeth and said, "Bro, I've already given you five drips of the Ancient Flaming Dragon Blood, so don't rip me off anymore."

He was not kidding when he said this. This girl before him possessed a similar beauty as Luo Li, except for the difference in their dispositions.

Luo Li had more of a cold and desolate type of personality, while Cai Xiao was bewitching and mesmerizing by nature. Basically, a "danger zone" was always formed around this type of girl, especially one with such beauty. If she tagged along with him, he could foresee that she would bring a lot of inconvenience to him.

"Choose the lesser of two evils." Gu Lin patted Mu Chen's shoulder, his face filled with regret.

Mu Chen could not help but roll his eyes. "Can you really trust me with her?"

Mulling over putting a charming girl under the care of someone they barely knew, Mu Chen could not really understand what this fellow was thinking. Moreover, based on Cai Xiao's Spiritual Energy fluctuation, her ability was not as supreme as that of Gu Lin.

"Rest assured that, the one who can take advantage of my sister has not

born yet," Gu Lin laughed and said secretively. "You might lose out big time, if you look down on her."

Mu Chen was stunned for a moment, and could not help but look at Cai Xiao again.

"Bro, help me out, just this time. Even we have not known each other for long, and I already think you are more trustworthy than many others." Gu Lin smiled again, and continued, "If someone, who has lost five drips of his Ancient Flaming Dragon Blood due to extortion, can remain calm while talking to us, then this is not someone with merely an ordinary magnanimity."

"And, of course, the most important thing is...," he pointed at Cai Xiao, "My sister has extremely sharp senses. If she can accept you, then there will be no issues."

Mu Chen pouted. Apparently, he could not agree to this last reason.

"Can I refuse?" Mu Chen asked resignedly, rubbing the spot between his eyebrows.

Cai Xiao smiled brightly, and said, "If you do, I will have to trap you here till the Dragon-Phoenix Rift ends."

"Ok, I will agree." Mu Chen nodded, without hesitation in his voice, as he knew all too well that a wise man does not fight when the odds are against him. He did not doubt her words for it. Based on her ability now, as compared to his, she was definitely capable of doing it.

"Clever." Cai Xiao gave a sweet smile. All her smiles exuded a bewitching charm that could stun anyone. It was lucky that Mu Chen had a strong-will, and he managed to keep his manner in front of her.

"Don't worry. It is not a bad thing that I come along with you. Although my ability has its limitation, for now, due to my body condition, I will not be getting in your way. Like what you have mentioned, the younger generation from the North Territory, who are participating in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift, are the cream of the crop. I am sure they all have extraordinary abilities. Who knows, you might need my help then."

As she finished her sentence, she clapped her hands, cunningness flashing across her eyes, "In conclusion, you will have more advantages than disadvantages, if you lead the way. So, you have no reason to refuse."

Mu Chen was speechless. Gu Lin, on the other hand, patted his shoulder sympathetically, "See, I told you! You can't win against my sis. Better to resign to your fate."

Mu Chen rolled his eyes. Since this matter had been cast in stone, he was too lazy to ponder over it, but instead asked, "When can we go?"

"Rest for a night. We will continue on our way tomorrow," Gu Lin quickly said, for fear that Cai Xiao would just leave with Mu Chen immediately.

Cai Xiao lifted her alluring face, alighting gracefully onto a tree, without any effort. Her slender figure was concealed between the dense leaves.

Gu Lin turned his gaze towards Mu Chen, holding up his fist, as he said, "Brother Mu Chen, thank you for your help. I will remember this favor of yours. And if you require any help next time, just ask me for it."

Mu Chen shrugged his shoulders, and replied, "You have the upperhand. If I continued to refuse, I would have been the one losing out regardless."

Generally, the stronger ones, like Gu Lin, would not have cared about the choice made. Gu Lin could have forced him to agree, since he was powerless against both of them. However, both of them did not stoop to that level, which actually left some good impression on Mu Chen.

"Hehe, even if you really refused us, we would not do anything to you. For if we did, and our mother were to hear about it, we would get it from her!" Gu Lin smiled.

Mu Chen laughed out loud, his fondness for Gu Lin having significantly increased. The two of them were now sitting around the campfire, chatting happily.

While on the tree, the girl was leaning against the branch. She closed her bewitching eyes, raising her lip lines while listening to their laughter her perch above.

"Hee, Mu Chen?"

The next day, early morning.

In the midst of the mountain range, which was filled with nothing but trees, Mu Chen looked at Cai Xiao, who was standing beside him. Once again, he sighed helplessly. He looked at Gu Lin, who was standing in front, shrugging his shoulders as well.

Both of them could not handle her, evidently.

"Brother Mu Chen, I shall leave my sis in your care. If you see any ignorant fellow, just take him out. I will take care of the consequences." Gu Lin held his fist up and smiled.

In his long black robe, he looked delicate and fine. Mu Chen could tell that both of them came from an extraordinary family.

Mu Chen nodded his head, smiling in his reply, "It's almost time, and we have to go. Once you are done with your mission, you can wait for her outside the Dragon-Phoenix Rift."

"Goodbye."

Mu Chen held his fist up, cast a glance at Cai Xiao, and took his leave first.

Gu Lin watched his back as he left, before he turned to Cai Xiao and sulked, "Sis, don't be too harsh. If our parents find out, I will be getting a scolding again."

"Be good. Keep a secret for me, and I will reward you." Cai Xiao grinned, as she bid goodbye, "I'm leaving!"

She did not wait for Gu Lin to continue. Without any hesitation, she waved her hand and vanished into a beam of light, sweeping across the sky to chase after Mu Chen, who has already gone far.

Gu Lin gazed as they slowly disappeared. He sighed resignedly.

"Little Lord, will Missy be alright with him alone?" A space behind Gu Lin started to twist open in the air. A dark and unclear shadow mystically surfaced, with an old and hoarse voice asking.

Gu Lin nodded, but scratched his head, his face filled with helplessness. It is true that the Real Dragon Blood is precious, and hard to get, but this sister of his had seen all sorts of treasures. Logically speaking, she should not get too tempted with the Real Dragon Blood. But why had she decided to go Dragon-Phoenix Rift then?

"Don't worry, although her power has been suppressed, I doubt anyone from the younger generation in the North Territory will be her match. If the rest of the Sovereigns are ignorant, they should consider themselves unlucky. Our dad has left his Soul Mark in mine and her bodies."

"Let's go, we have to move, too."

Gu Lin swung his arm, turned around, and stepped forward. He disappeared into the twisted space in front of him, vanishing into thin air. The dark shadow went missing as well.

The forest was back to its peacefulness once again.

On the other hand, Mu Chen moved at full speed across the sky. Within a few minutes, he was out of the mountain range. He glanced aside and saw the girl, her arm behind her, following after him effortlessly.

He did not manage to shake her off.

Mu Chen curled his lips and slowed down his speed.

"You wouldn't be so naive to think that you could shake me off, right?" Cai Xiao and Mu Chen were moving side by side now, as she tilted her head and asked mockingly.

Mu Chen touched his nose, feeling embarrassed. "Can we have a deal?"

"Speak out."

"Can you put on a veil? If you smile at anyone like this, that would be a huge problem." Mu Chen gave her his honest suggestion.

The girl stared at him with her bright eyes, ignoring his suggestion entirely. As soon as her fair-skinned foot stepped itself forward gracefully, she darted to the faraway land, and only her crisp and clear voice could be heard from afar:

"No way!"

Chapter 771: Dragon-Phoenix Pavilion

Dragon-Phoenix Ridge

This ancient region, ever since the existence of the North Territory, was exceptionally renowned within the territory. Especially after Dragon-Phoenix Rift was discovered, the popularity of this vast area had soared tremendously, turning itself into one of the most prominent regions in the North Territory.

During this time, Dragon-Phoenix Rift would be revealing itself once again. Thus, the region had been receiving an overwhelming, almost close to a truly horrifying, amount of visitors. Within thousands of miles, the neverending breaking sound of the wind could be heard, as flying figures flit towards Dragon-Phoenix Ridge, showering the sky like a swarm of locusts.

Dragon-Phoenix Rift was so renowned in the North Territory, that almost all the top powers from the younger generation would not dare forgo this chance to make a name for themselves. But the most essential reason for its fame was, of course, due to its own attractiveness.

When Mu Chen and Cai Xiao arrived at Dragon-Phoenix Ridge, the timing was just right to witness the spectacular scene, where the immense horde swarm to the town, like locusts in transition. Even Mu Chen was taken aback by such a display.

Those figures were not like any other ordinary people. They came from various forces, and in their respective forces, they were the cream of the crop, from the younger generation. However, even the brightest stars would be buried under the overwhelming crowd when they would arrive here.

Mu Chen was extremely amazed, as he had met some of the most outstanding among the younger generation in the Northern Heavens Continent, but none of them were comparable, be it in numbers or quality, to these people in the North Territory. After all, this was the place that gathered all the elites from the Great Thousand World.

By this time, Mu Chen finally grasped the vastness of this North Territory. Even Daluo Territory was only comparable to one of its corners. And to think that the North Territory makes up just a small part of the Tianluo Continent! This Tianluo Continent, undoubtedly, is right to be known as the supercontinent.

"Let's go to the Dragon-Phoenix Old Town. That is the closest place to the opening of Dragon-Phoenix Rift." Mu Chen pointed to a place located deep within Dragon-Phoenix Ridge as he said this. A faint outline of a magnificent town was visible at an incredibly far distance.

Cai Xiao looked around curiously, then nodded without adding any other opinion.

Mu Chen darted out, but slowed down his speed after about ten minutes. He was slightly shocked by the scene in front of him. Towering mountains seemed to have been forcibly squeezed and pushed together by a dominant force. On each of the mountains, giant palm prints could be vaguely seen.

Above those mountains, an ancient town, with no end in sight, was resting upon them. The mountains were filled with the mottled traces of time, while the old and run-down town was engulfed with vicissitudes of life.

At the edge of the town stood towering stone pagodas. On top of the pagodas, the presence of the Spiritual Energy fluctuation vaguely remained. This presence was not something new to them. It was none other than the Spiritual Array fluctuation.

In that ancient time, there must be a mighty Spiritual Array overhead, that faded with the passage of time. This dominant Spiritual Array, which had once disdained the entire universe, was also unable to withstand time, and thus, would eventually wear off.

The town was shockingly enormous. Even with the endless rays of lights sweeping across it, landing in the city like locusts, it did not seem to have even the slightest congestion.

Mu Chen and Cai Xiao plunged into the town, finding themselves

standing on a busy stone street. As soon as they appeared, they attracted numerous pairs of eyes, all staring at them.

To be exact, the glares were all directed at Cai Xiao, who was following Mu Chen. Cai Xiao, who was already accustomed to such attention, could naturally ignore them. However, Mu Chen was not used to it at all. The onlookers' focus would shift to him, after they saw Cai Xiao. The hostility in their gazes was startlingly self-evident.

"Troubles."

Mu Chen could not help but sigh.

Cai Xiao threw him a glare that eluded her spell-binding charms, which could even make his heartbeat skip, not to mention the rest who had been captivated by her charms. Hence, Mu Chen fled with Cai Xiao immediately, before the situation could become uncontrollable.

However, even though she had been attracting too much attention along the way, she still seemed to have her ways of sussing out information effortlessly. She just had to beam and ask a person, and that person would stumble and reveal everything he knew.

"Let's go to the Dragon-Phoenix Pavilion."

Another unlucky fellow was getting bewitched by Cai Xiao. Mu Chen looked over to the south of the town. According to the information she had obtained earlier, there was a place named the Dragon-Phoenix Pavilion in this old town. All the latest and most complete information about Dragon-Phoenix Rift could be found there.

They walked through the bustling town, eventually stopping at the north side of the city. They looked up in front of them, only to see a tall and upright golden pavilion, standing in silence.

The pavilion was unique in shape, decorated with dragons and phoenixes mingling at the side. A faint aura, containing the energy from a real dragon and a real phoenix, was emitting from its outer walls. At this time, many light rays were beaming towards its direction.

Based on his instinct, Mu Chen could sense that those shadows who

flitted here were generally more supreme than the rest of those found in the other parts of the town. Apparently, most of the people, who were qualified to be here, were elites from the younger generation of the North Territory. Understandably, those who knew about their own incompetence, would definitely avoid coming here, to prevent disgracing themselves.

However, Mu Chen did not stop there because of this. He fixed his eyes on the Dragon-Phoenix Pavilion and walked straight into it.

Entering the Dragon Phoenix Pavilion, one's view widened up immediately, and the commotion from the crowd could be heard. Mu Chen looked up to see that the building was separated into well-proportional floorings, each floor filled with people.

Everyone seemed to be surrounded by a powerful, fluctuating Spiritual Energy. Even those on the higher grounds were emitting remarkable spiritual energy that was just extraordinary.

When both of them walked into the pavilion, the noises on different floors softened gradually. Numerous eye-catching sights were directed at Cai Xiao, who was standing beside Mu Chen.

Mu Chen wore a calm expression. He found a corner for the pair of them, and sat down quietly. According to their same previous source, it seemed that there would be an announcement made in this pavilion, regarding the latest news of Dragon-Phoenix Rift. All they needed to do now was to wait.

Mu Chen's original plan was to retrieve the information quietly, but now that he had brought Cai Xiao, the magnet of the attraction, he knew that he would be targeted by countless men, and who knows, someone might have already started asking around about his identity.

And true enough, a familiar gaze accompanied by a sharp chill was cast from the higher floors as soon as he had entered into Dragon-Phoenix Pavilion. It was Liu Yan.

Liu Yan was sitting on the top levels, and he looked calmly in the direction where Mu Chen was seated, before his attentions were drawn to

Cai Xiao. At the same time, he was surrounded by a crowd, himself situated at the center of it.

It was not an ordinary circle, as it was formed by the well-known characters among the younger generations from the North Territory. However, there were two central figures in the circle. One was Liu Yan, but apparently, he was not that important. On his right-hand side stood a slender figure, who was smiling brightly and attracting countless passionate sights within the pavilion.

That figure dressed in a crimson red, long skirt. Her skin was as white as snow, and her hourglass body, with its curves fully outlined by her dress, was very arousing.

She had a ravishing appearance, with eyebrows that bent like crescent moons. Her watery, long-slit eyes were filled with spell-binding charms that could steal a soul. As her eyes moved around, hearts were sent fluttering. She was surrounded by many young men, all of whom were well-dressed and refined on the surface, yet deep within their blazing eyes, a fire blazed, revealing that they could not wait to swallow her all at once.

This vamp possessed a captivating power that could trigger desires.

"Oh, what a beautiful little sister."

The red-skirted girl also took notice of the outstanding Cai Xiao. She stole a glance at Mu Chen, whom she was not that familiar with. She covered her red lips with a small hand, as she said laughingly, "But I have never seen this young man before. Did a young talent, that I am not yet aware of, just sprout from the North Territory?"

"He is the new leader, who has emerged from the Daluo Territory recently. Heh... He has quite a bit of skill. Liu Ming was doomed at his hands."

Liu Yan smiled faintly, "I reminded him not to come for the Dragon-Phoenix Rift, out of kindness, but from the looks of it now, it seems he did not heed my advice."

The well-known top powers from the younger generation in the North

Territory, who were within the circle, understood their connections immediately. A few of them, who shared a close relationship with Liu Yan, smiled and stared mockingly at Mu Chen, who was below them.

"Ah, a talent from the Daluo Territory," the red-skirted girl noted, as she looked at Mu Chen with a smile. "It seems like Daluo Territory has an impressive newcomer now."

"Haha, although Daluo Territory is one of the strongest forces in the North Territory, the younger generation from that area is not very flattering. They have had no business in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift these few years. I wonder why they would come now. Perhaps it was not disgraceful enough for them the last time." A young man, who was quite close to Liu Yan, spoke the words, full of aggressiveness.

He did not tone down his volume. Instead, he deliberately wrapped his voice with Spiritual Energy and blasted off from the top. The Dragon-Phoenix Pavilion quieted down at once. Countless scene-watchers were looking at the young figure now sitting at the corner.

That figure paused at the same time, but he did not feel angry at all. Instead, the handsome young face was rather calm-looking.

Liu Yan was toying a teacup in his hand. He did not look at Mu Chen, but instead chuckled softly. He then gave a barely noticeable nod to the young top power, who did the talking just now.

Seeing his gestures, the young top power grinned and took a leap as he tipped his toe. He plundered down and appeared in front of Mu Chen like a tower stamping in front of him. He stretched out his palm, trying to grab Mu Chen by the shoulder.

"Our brother Liu Yan wants to invite you up for a chat. Little fellow, come with me."

His palm landed on Mu Chen's shoulder, but the figure remained as still as a rock. Mu Chen did not move an inch, but a soothing voice was accompanied with a sharp chill, projecting out and reverberating within the pavilion.

"If you want to pick a fight, do it with your own hands. Getting a two-bit person to do your bidding, won't it taint your name as the Young Lord of Xuantian Hall?"

Chapter 772: The Thunderbolt Move

As Mu Chen's cold voice traveled throughout Dragon-Phoenix Pavilion, the noise in the Pavilion died down, and it suddenly became quiet. Everyone started to ponder.

Some people were looking at a figure on the upper level. Liu Yan's name was popular among the younger generation in the North Territory. He was ranked number four in Dragon-Phoenix Record. This was proof that he was influential.

Although most of the people in the Pavilion were the younger generation elites in the North Territory, all of them were fearful of Liu Yan. Liu Yan was the most powerful contestant in Dragon-Phoenix Rift, and no one would hold him in disdain. When they heard someone calling out his name, they found it interesting.

When Liu Yan heard what Mu Chen had said, he remained calm and simply smiled. Mu Chen was a nobody, and his status was not comparable to Liu Yan's.

He would be lowering himself down, if he took it to heart what Mu Chen had said. The young top powers, who were on good terms with Liu Yan, sneered and looked nastily at the young figure below. The girl in red, who was the main attraction of Dragon-Phoenix Pavilion, laughed softly and looked on with interest.

Everyone was looking in one direction. The young top power, who had attacked Mu Chen earlier, looked gloomy. He had never expected someone, who was only at Grade Three Sovereign, to have no regard for him.

However, he was subtle, and did not turn hostile. He took a step back, cupped his fist, and said, "I am Lyu Yang from Snow Dragon Mountain. May I know how to address you?"

Snow Dragon Mountain was one of the great powers in the North Territory. Their power was comparable to those from the Hundred Battle Territory. Lyu Yang was one of the elites among the younger generation in

Snow Dragon Mountain. His strength was comparable to Qin Bei's from the Hundred Battle Territory.

Although Lyu Yang was less famous than Liu Yan, he had built some reputation in Dragon-Phoenix Pavilion. As such, many of those present had heard of him.

Mu Chen had his back facing Lyu Yang. His handsome face looked cold. He had never expected to see Liu Yan in the Pavilion. All the more, he had never expected Liu Yan to be so impatient, and had attacked him even before he could warm the seat.

Liu Yan was proud. He had attacked Mu Chen mainly because he felt that Mu Chen was inferior. Influenced by his instigation, his friends jumped up and joined him.

Cai Xiao sat beside Mu Chen, resting her chin on her hands to watch the scene. She smiled at Mu Chen and said, "You seem to be good at creating trouble, just like me. He is here to find trouble with you."

Mu Chen's face remained calm. He did not turn to look at Lyu Yang. Daluo Territory was the top power in the North Territory. On any other day, the people from Snow Dragon Mountain would behave like cowards. However, this guy was now throwing his weight about. Mu Chen would be bringing disgrace to Daluo Territory if he reacted against him.

Although Liu Yan was proud, he did not know that the handsome and gentle youth before him was much more arrogant than him. After Lyu Yang had introduced himself, Mu Chen did not respond. The corner of his eyes twitched, and Lyu Yang became hostile, thinking of how crazy it was for a Grade Three Sovereign to dare to behave so haughtily before him. Does he think that he is still in Daluo Territory?

"It seems like our friend looks down on those of us from Snow Dragon Mountain...Hahaha, indeed. Daluo Territory is powerful, and those from Daluo have the right to behave in this manner." Lyu Yang smiled. He looked sarcastically at Mu Chen and said, "However, do you think you are qualified to behave in such a manner?"

Boom!

Immediately after he had finished talking, a majestic spiritual energy surged violently from his body. It was so powerful, that many top powers in the Pavilion were shocked.

Lyu Yang's power was near to Grade Four Sovereign. Among the younger generation, although he was not the most powerful, he had reached a level above many others.

Dong!

Lyu Yang's face looked cold. He stomped on his foot and shot out swiftly. The majestic spiritual energy gathered on his palms, and he mercilessly struck at Mu Chen.

He intended to show Mu Chen his real power, so that he would not be so haughty. No one cared where one came from in this place. If one was not powerful enough, he should get out of Dragon-Phoenix Pavilion.

"Snow Dragon Palm!"

As Lyu Yang shouted, he threw out chilled air from his palms. A huge snow dragon shot out, covering the area that Mu Chen was seated at with snowflakes.

The people in the Pavilion were stunned by the scene. Lyu Yang was ruthless. The blow that he had just thrown out was a death blow. It contained the chilly air of Snow Dragon Mountain. Anyone who had been hit by it would have his spiritual energy frozen. Even if the air had been expelled from the body, the nerves would have been affected. The person would not be able to participate in Dragon-Phoenix Rift.

Although there were snowflakes around him, Mu Chen remained seated on his chair, unmoving. Cai Xiao, who was sitting opposite him, suddenly stared at him...

She saw that Mu Chen's eyes had speedily turned dark and deep. He looked indifferent, and was no longer angry. Also, Mu Chen's spiritual energy was surging earlier, but it had now withdrawn.

However, the energy had not diminished. He was able to control his spiritual energy to a near perfect stage all of the sudden.

He lifted up the cup and drank from it. A gust of chilled air swirled toward him from the back, and some snowflakes landed on his hair.

Many top powers were stunned that Mu Chen had remained calm. Did he not know that he was in grave danger?

Mu Chen did not seem to have the intention to counter the blow.

"What is he trying to do? Is he trying to court his own death?" someone muttered.

Many of them were puzzled at the strange scene. Even some of them, who were sitting on a higher level, were stunned.

"Since you have asked for it, don't blame me!"

The attack was quick, like lightning. Lyu Yang curled up his lips. At such a distance, it would be too late for Mu Chen to counteract.

Daluo Territory has sent an idiot over. It seems like Daluo Territory will become a laughing stock again.

Boom!

As Lyu Yang was curling up his lips, the space before him seemed to have twisted together. The sound of thunder traveled in a strange manner, shot past his defense, and exploded in his chest.

This sound of thunder came too abruptly, and Lyu Yang was not prepared for it at all. He lost control of his spiritual energy, sending it surging crazily. He was in a trance.

Splash!

A mouthful of fresh blood spewed out from Lyu Yang's lips. The Snow Dragon Palm print had dispersed and turned into snowflakes. The seven apertures of his head were dripping with blood.

As the snowflakes were sweeping toward him, Mu Chen had turned around. He traversed swiftly to Lyu Yang, then threw a blow onto his chest.

Pom!

A majestic spiritual energy and fresh blood spewed out from Lyu Yang's mouth. He flew backward, and on his way, he created an extremely long scratch mark in the Pavilion. With a long bang, he crashed onto the window and flew out of Dragon-Phoenix Pavilion.

There was dead silence in the entire Dragon-Phoenix Pavilion.

Everyone was shocked. The scene was too strange. Mu Chen did not seem to have done anything, but Lyu Yang's attack had dissolved by itself, and he had been seriously hurt.

"What has he done?" Many of the top powers were stunned. Very soon, they turned solemn. Mu Chen was able to defeat Lyu Yang within such a short period of time. Not many were able to do that in Dragon-Phoenix Pavilion.

This young top power from Daluo Territory was not someone to be trifled with. Some of the people looked at one another, and then at Mu Chen, with fear.

Everyone was silent. Liu Yan looked gloomy, and the eyes of the girl in red brightened up. She stared thoughtfully at Mu Chen. Those, who were sitting on a higher level, looked down as well, shocked.

"This is interesting," someone commented indistinctly.

Mu Chen's dark and deep eyes had resumed their normal look, when the Pavilion had become silent. He lifted up his head, looked coldly at Liu Yan, and spoke.

"Is it your turn now?"

The cup in Liu Yan's hand cracked and turned into powder. Liu Yan patted the powder on his hands with disdain, as he slowly stood up. The atmosphere instantly tensed up as he stood up.

Is the number four influential person in Dragon-Phoenix Record about to do it, personally?

Chapter 773: Su Biyue and Snapper

Liu Yan stood on the higher floor of Dragon-Phoenix Pavilion. Although he did not have a big build, he had made the atmosphere in the Pavilion very tense. Indistinctly, the pressure that had surrounded the Pavilion came from him.

As the number four most influential person in Dragon-Phoenix Record, he was many times more reputable than Mu Chen, among the younger generation in the North Territory. Many people considered Mu Chen and Liu Yan to be of different levels.

Although Mu Chen had defeated Lyu Yang with the Thunderbolt Move, no one thought that he was a match for Liu Yan. Now, Liu Yan stood on a higher plane, looking down indifferently at Mu Chen. His look was cold, and Mu Chen could feel the pressure coming down on him.

The air around Mu Chen gathered together, and spiritual energy came down on him, suppressing him. With Liu Yan's strength, he could easily suppress an ordinary Grade Three Sovereign. However, he was not able to do that to Mu Chen.

Thunder light seemed to be glittering on the surface of Mu Chen's body. The sound of thunder was vaguely heard from his body as well. The powerful suppression did not seem to have any effect on him.

Mu Chen and Liu Yan looked at each other, and the coldness of their intense stares brought down the temperature of Dragon-Phoenix Pavilion greatly.

"You have improved. No wonder you are so unruly," Liu Yan said coldly, with a tinge of killing intent. He looked sharply at Mu Chen, then pointed in the air with two fingers.

"However, with your level, you are still not qualified to behave so arrogantly before me."

Boom!

As Liu Yan pointed in the air, there was a great surge, which swirled out

like a flame of fire.

"Balrog Finger."

When Liu Yan's cold voice sounded, a huge crimson finger formed in the crimson light. A fire was burning, and the entire Dragon-Phoenix Pavilion became hot and dry.

Boom!

The crimson finger pierced through the air and crushed toward Mu Chen.

The top powers that were surrounding Mu Chen quickly retreated. They were afraid of being hit by the powerful attacks of Liu Yan. Cai Xiao was the only one who stayed on with Mu Chen.

She smiled happily, as she watched the confrontation. She had no intention of helping Mu Chen. Her beautiful clear eyes were filled with much enthusiasm, as she watched the scene.

Boom! Boom!

Mu Chen lifted up his head and saw the oppressive, huge flaming finger. He looked calm, as he placed his palms together. Two different spiritual energies rose up from his palms.

Roar!

The cries of a dragon and elephant sounded out together. Two rays of colorful light shot out from Mu Chen's palms, and the figures of a dragon and elephant formed on top of his head. The dragon and elephant entangled together, forming a Dragon Elephant Disc. It whizzed toward the huge flaming finger, hitting hard on it.

Bang!

There was a loud noise, and the spiritual energies surged violently. Percussion reverberated in the air. The Dragon Elephant Disc shot out a bright radiance, which smashed against the huge flaming finger.

The spiritual energies surged toward Mu Chen and Liu Yan, but they easily diffused them. The surge in the air gradually dissipated, but the look

in Liu Yan's eyes became sharper.

He had casually launched an attack that could easily suppress any Grade Three Sovereign, but Mu Chen had easily diffused it. Liu Yan was not happy with the outcome.

All of them could feel the icy chill from Liu Yan and the powerful surge of his spiritual energy. Their faces turned pale.

The beautiful, red-skirted girl chose not to get involved, but continued to watch. She was not very close to Liu Yan, and although Mu Chen was only at Grade Three Sovereign, she had to be careful. She would not underestimate him, thus, getting into uncharted waters.

Mu Chen lifted up his head and looked at Liu Yan. Cold light was flashing in his eyes. Although he did not know if it was wise to fight in the Pavilion, should Liu Yan attack him, Mu Chen would at least show him that he was not an easy target to bully.

"If you do not want to be thrown out of Dragon-Phoenix Pavilion, you should leave now," Liu Yan said flatly, as he looked at Mu Chen from the top floor, and pointed at the door of the Pavilion.

Mu Chen smiled and said, "Then I will have to trouble you, Young Master Liu Yan."

"You do not know what is good for you!"

Liu Yan looked completely cold. The moment he moved, a terrifying spiritual energy swirled out from his body like a storm. There was a majestic spiritual energy in him. He turned into light and shot toward Mu Chen.

He had struck!

Mu Chen fixed his gaze. There were waves in the space behind him, and the Sovereign Sea was looming. The majestic spiritual energy whizzed up, and in between his palms, the two different spiritual energies gathered speedily together. The cries of the dragon and elephant constantly sounded out from the Sovereign Sea.

Mu Chen's body turned into thunder, and lights were glittering all over him. He stomped on his foot, flew up, and rammed into Liu Yan.

Many top powers were looking earnestly at the scene before them. Before Dragon-Phoenix Rift had opened up, a top-level battle was already going on.

The two of them were dashing violently before the crowd, and just as they were about to exchange blows, a gentle voice was heard within Dragon-Phoenix Pavilion.

"Gentlemen, please stop. This is not the place for you to exchange blows."

When the voice sounded out, it was as though a ray of light had descended from the heavens. The light shone on the spot where Mu Chen and Liu Yan were about to strike. The gentle light spread out, hindering the movements of the pair.

Although the power could not stop them from fighting, when Liu Yan heard the voice, he stopped moving to stare. After that, he retreated back to the top floor.

Mu Chen slowly landed on the floor, then withdrew his spiritual energy. When he looked up to the upper left corner of the Pavilion, he saw a beautiful and slim lady.

She was dressed in white, and her face was clear and beautiful. She was as beautiful as the red-skirted girl. There was a red mark in between her brows, which made her look very pure.

When she appeared, the entire place was in an uproar. Many people were looking at her with admiration.

"Gentlemen, Dragon-Phoenix Pavilion will soon be providing us with the information on Dragon-Phoenix Rift. Please stop fighting," the lady in white said gently, with a smile.

"Hehe, it is Su Biyue Fairy." Liu Yan looked at the lady, smiling pleasantly at her. He nodded and said, "Since Fairy has requested, I will let him off for the time being."

When Mu Chen heard this, he laughed softly. When Liu Yan heard his laughter, his eyes turned slightly cold. Although he did not strike, his intention to kill Mu Chen grew.

Mu Chen did not bother himself with Liu Yan. He knew that Liu Yan was looking for an excuse to back out. Many top powers were in Dragon-Phoenix Pavilion, and both Mu Chen and Liu Yan could sense danger in this place.

If Liu Yan fought with Mu Chen, regardless of the outcome, he would have to pay a price for it. Others might take advantage of the situation. Those who entered Dragon-Phoenix Rift were competitors. As Liu Yan was a powerful opponent, everyone would take the chance to disqualify him from entering.

Mu Chen was surprised to learn that the lady in white was ranked number three in Dragon-Phoenix Record. She was the saintess, Su Biyue, from the Holy Mountain. She had great power.

"Hahaha, Sister Su, you have spoilt the fun. This is so disappointing." The red-skirted girl laughed charmingly, as she looked at Su Biyue. She was so charming, that the men were captivated by her.

"You will have lots of fun in Dragon-Phoenix Rift. Snapper, and will be able to enjoy yourself then," Su Biyue said with a smile.

"You are right. However, sister, you must not use underhanded means, like the previous round. Otherwise, you might not be able to win," Snapper said with a smile.

"I hope so," Su Biyue nodded and said.

As the two beauties were talking, the Pavilion became silent. Everyone knew that the two of them were being sarcastic to each other. Most of the people in the North Territory knew about their feud, which was why they enjoyed watching them fight. It was more interesting to watch the spirits fight than to follow the confrontation between Mu Chen and Liu Yan.

Mu Chen was not interested in the disputes of the two ladies. Thus, since Liu Yan no longer had the intention to fight, he decided to go back to

his seat.

"Hello, friend from Daluo Territory, would you like to join me up here?" Just as Mu Chen was about to go back to his seat, Su Biyue turned to look at him, and spoke the invitation with a smile. She seemed interested in Mu Chen.

"Hahaha, handsome, would you like to come and sit with me?" Snapper looked charmingly at Mu Chen as well. She looked irresistible.

Swoosh!

Many people were looking at Mu Chen with envy.

Mu Chen was stunned as well, and his mouth started to twitch uncontrollably. The two spirits were fighting verbally, and had dragged him into the middle of it. He did not want to become the enemy of the public.

Yet, no matter who he sat with, he would offend someone. Mu Chen decided that he would rather offend Liu Yan than the beautiful women, who were powerful and cunning.

As Mu Chen was feeling at a loss, Cai Xiao, who was watching by the side, smiled. The eyes of the people brightened up as they looked at her, including Su Biyue's and Snapper's.

Cai Xiao spoke, and her voice was like a pearl bouncing off a marble floor.

"Sisters, are you vying for him?"

Chapter 774: The Dragon-Phoenix Pool

As Cai Xiao spoke with her clear voice, many people looked at Mu Chen. They looked as though they wanted to pierce through him with their glares.

The three ladies were top beauties, and all of them were talking about him. This made the men envious of Mu Chen.

The looks from the men made Mu Chen feel chilled, and he stared at Cai Xiao. He then cupped his hand and said to Su Biyue and Snapper, "Thank you for your invitations. Your seats are too high up. Thus, to avoid contention, I shall remain where I am."

Mu Chen sounded sarcastic, and he was obviously targeting his satire at Liu Yan. Some people turned to look at Liu Yan, who was looking indifferent.

Seeing that Mu Chen had rejected their offers, Su Biyue and Snapper smiled, choosing not to persist. They looked at Cai Xiao, as it seemed natural for beauties to be sensitive toward one another. They could sense that she was a dangerous person.

They were shocked to get such a feeling from Cai Xiao. Given their strengths, there were only a handful of people among the younger generation in the North Territory that could make them feel such an emotion. They wondered where the charming girl came from.

Light flashed across their eyes, and both of the women went back to their respective seats.

Mu Chen went back to his seat and looked sharply at Cai Xiao, who was smiling. He said, "Are you trying to get me into trouble?"

Cai Xiao rested her chin on her hands and replied with a smile, "These two beauties are dangerous. I am helping you, to ensure you are not seduced or hurt by them."

"You are more dangerous than them!" Mu Chen said snappily. Su Biyue and Snapper were not simple, but Cai Xiao was much more dangerous.

"You are so ungrateful," Cai Xiao said, as shook her head. She looked at the top floor of the Pavilion and continued, "There are a few powerful people among the younger generation in the North Territory."

Upon hearing this, he looked up as well. Other than Su Biyue, Snapper, Liu Yan and a few others, he could feel some powerful spiritual energy fluctuations hidden on the top floor. One of these fluctuations made one feel extremely cold, like the ice that had been hidden deep within Nine Netherworld.

As Mu Chen was sensing this cold spiritual energy fluctuation, the other party seemed to have noticed it as well, and started to move toward him like a venomous snake. It seemed as though one would be bitten the moment he came into contact with the coldness.

Mu Chen had not expected the person to be so aggressive. He was only checking things out, but the other party had attacked. He frowned and quickly withdrew his Spiritual Energy Sensor. As he withdrew the Sensor, he could still feel the cold air in his bones.

A purple flame in Mu Chen's eyes lit up. The undying flame surged, burning off the cold air. Under the protection of the undying flame, Mu Chen's Spiritual Energy Sensor withdrew into his body.

"The cold air is so domineering." Mu Chen sounded dignified, as he looked at one dark corner. He had guessed who the person was.

He should be the Prince of Netherworld, who had been ranked number two in the Dragon-Phoenix Record.

"Fang Yi, who has been ranked number one, has not appeared," Mu Chen muttered to himself. He had yet to sense another fluctuation that was more powerful than the Prince of Netherworld's. There were only two reasons for such a phenomenon.

The first reason was that, Fang Yi was not around, and the other one would be that, he had reached such a level, whereby he could keep the fluctuation within himself, without Mu Chen being able to sense it. If it belonged to the latter, Fang Yi's power would be terrifying.

Mu Chen looked grave. He could not belittle those top powers listed in the Dragon-Phoenix Record. The rankings could not be completely trusted, as they could be fabricated. Those who ranked behind Liu Yan might be more powerful and more tough to handle than him. Hence, Mu Chen was not confident, standing out from the rest of the participants in Dragon-Phoenix Rift.

The atmosphere in Dragon-Phoenix Pavilion had now returned to normal. However, those people, who had looked down on Mu Chen earlier, were a bit fearful of him now. They had realized that Mu Chen was someone not to be trifled with.

Mu Chen felt more relaxed now. Although he had displayed some of his power earlier, it was worthwhile, since it had helped him to solve some of the problems. As Mu Chen was thinking of the strength of the top powers, who would be participating in Dragon-Phoenix Rift, the bell tolled. The entire Dragon-Phoenix Pavilion immediately quieted down.

Everyone looked eagerly at the top floor of the Pavilion. An elderly figure walked out slowly, everyone becoming excited upon seeing him.

"Hohoho, Dragon-Phoenix Rift gets livelier with each round..."

The elderly figure looked at the crowd of young but strong impetus figures with a smile and said, "Ladies and gentlemen, I am Mu Qiu, Master of Dragon-Phoenix Pavilion."

"Pavilion Master Mu, nice to meet you," echoed the crowd.

Although those people within Dragon-Phoenix Pavilion were elites, they showed respect toward Mu Qiu, who was well-known, and was considered to be the top power in the North Territory. Although there were few people in Dragon-Phoenix Pavilion, it had been around the North Territory for a long time. Hence, only a handful of rivals could vie with them.

Although Dragon-Phoenix Pavilion had held its grounds in the Dragon-Phoenix Old Town, it had also expanded into other territories. They did not have many rivals, and not many dared offend them.

"Old Master Mu, please tell us about the situation in Dragon-Phoenix

Rift," Su Biyue said in a gentle voice.

It had been said that those people from Dragon-Phoenix Pavilion had acquired their skills from Dragon-Phoenix Rift, and hence, were able to check on the changes that had taken place within Dragon-Phoenix Rift. Therefore, before Dragon-Phoenix Rift opened up each time, they would provide some information to the participants.

"Hohoho, sure."

Mu Qiu smiled warmly and said, "All of you wish to enter the Dragon-Phoenix Rift because of the Blood Essence of the real dragon and real phoenix. However, there are constant changes within the Rift. Every time it opens, the situation will be very different."

"I have bad news for you. There will only be five Dragon-Phoenix Pools in the Rift this time around."

"What? Only five pools?" The Pavilion was in an uproar, and many of the top powers turned pale.

"What is Dragon-Phoenix Pool?" Cai Xiao looked at Mu Chen, asking him softly.

"I have heard that, during the Primordial Age, when the real dragon and real phoenix had fallen into the Rift, there were bones all over the Rift. When the bones of the real dragon and real phoenix came together, they formed the Dragon-Phoenix Pool. There were many Spiritual Beasts in the Rift, and they carried the blood of the real dragon and real phoenix in their bodies. When the fresh blood went into the Pool, together with the strength of the bones of the real dragon and real phoenix, one would be able to cultivate the Pseudodragon body and Pseudophoenix body," Mu Chen explained.

"Pseudodragon body and Pseudophoenix body?" Cai Xiao blinked when she heard this.

"Yes. The most crucial place is inside the Dragon-Phoenix Platform. The only prerequisite to stand on the Platform is to have the bodies of the Pseudodragon and Pseudophoenix...This means, in order to acquire real

treasures, one would have to cultivate in the Dragon-Phoenix Pool," Mu Chen nodded and said.

"Previously, there were nine pools. However, it has been reduced to only five pools now," Mu Chen sighed helplessly. This would be adding fuel to the fire. The competition would be extremely fierce in this Dragon-Phoenix Rift.

Cai Xiao finally understood, nodding her head.

As they were talking, Mu Qiu had waved his hand to quiet everyone down. As he gently moved his wrinkled palm, a Spiritual Energy Screen spread out. It was a blurry map, and there were five bright dots on the map.

"Here are the locations of the five pools," Mu Qiu said. The minute he said that, almost everyone had his gaze fixed upon the map. Spiritual lights were dancing in their eyes, and all of them put the map into their memory.

Mu Chen stared at the Spiritual Energy Screen, quickly remembering the map. Although the map was blurry, it would be better than nothing.

Cai Xiao stared thoughtfully at the map, then asked suddenly, "How do they know the locations of the Dragon-Phoenix Pools?"

Mu Chen was stunned, and said with a frown, "The people in Dragon-Phoenix Pavilion have acquired their skills from Dragon-Phoenix Rift. That explains why they are able to enter into the space."

"That is to say, there may be more than five pools. If I am not wrong, some of the pools are more powerful," Cai Xiao said with a smile.

Mu Chen was shocked, and nodded in agreement. He said, "You are right. However, Dragon-Phoenix Rift is filled with danger. Many beasts have acquired the Blood Essence of the real dragon and real phoenix, and have become powerful Spiritual Beasts. Although they have low spiritual intelligences, they are extremely powerful. If we do not know where we are going, it will be very dangerous. Generally speaking, no one will perform any other checks."

Cai Xiao stroked her hair gently, as she smiled seductively. She looked at Mu Chen and said softly, "I know how to find a more powerful Dragon-Phoenix Pool. Would you like to try and find it with me?"

Chapter 775: The Man in White

"I know how to find a more powerful Dragon-Phoenix Pool. Would you like to try and find it with me?"

When Mu Chen heard what Cai Xiao had said, he found it tempting. His heart thumped. Although he had tried to restrain himself, he could not help but give Cai Xiao a surprised look. He asked her softly, "How do you do that?"

If it was so easy to locate this Dragon-Phoenix Pool, the participants would have not fought so intensely every time the Dragon-Phoenix Rift opened up.

"If they can discover the locations of Dragon-Phoenix Pool, why can't I?" Cai Xiao said with an enigmatic smile. Mu Chen was stunned, but he knew that Cai Xiao was a mysterious person.

"Will it be very dangerous?" Mu Chen asked.

"If one wants to get something that others could not have, he has to pay a price that they are not willing to pay, isn't that correct?" Cai Xiao looked at Mu Chen and said. "I don't think that you are the type of person, who will do nothing, while waiting for manna to drop down from the sky. Am I right?"

"I just don't want to waste my efforts," Mu Chen said, as he smiled. He slowly nodded his head and said, "I am interested in what you have suggested. If you would like to try it, you can count me in."

Clap.

Cai Xiao gently clapped her hands together, then said with a smile, "Let's do it, then. If my method works, we will first have to look for a Dragon-Phoenix Pool. Thus, when we are in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift, we will have to seize one of the pools."

"Do we still have to seize the pool? In this case, it will be meaningless for us to look for other pools," Mu Chen said with a frown.

"Don't be silly. The power of some of the pools are strong, and some are

weak. The Pseudodragon body and Pseudophoenix body are similar. If we can train in another pool, it will benefit us greatly in the upcoming tests in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift." Cai Xiao explained, as though she was already very familiar with the Dragon-Phoenix Rift.

After pondering this for a while, Mu Chen agreed with Cai Xiao. It seemed like they did indeed have to seize a pool. However, this would mean that there would be a fierce fight, since there were only five Dragon-Phoenix Pools. Mu Chen dared not imagine the intensity of such a fight.

As Mu Chen and Cai Xiao were talking softly to each other, the Dragon-Phoenix Pavilion became noisier. The participants seemed upset with the number of pools.

When Mu Qiu saw this, he shook his head helplessly and said, "Tomorrow, the Dragon-Phoenix Rift will be completely opened. It will be the best time to enter. I hope everyone is well-prepared, as it will be dangerous. Although the beasts are not spiritually intelligent, due to the fall of the real dragon and real phoenix, they are still extremely powerful."

Having said that, Mu Qiu turned and walked away. The Pavilion became increasingly noisy.

"Let's go and get ready for tomorrow. There is nothing much going on here." Mu Chen stood up, as he spoke the words to Cai Xiao.

Cai Xiao nodded, and both of them left the Pavilion.

Some people were watching them leave the Pavilion. Lights flashed across the eyes of Su Biyue and Snapper. Although Mu Chen was only at Grade Three Sovereign, the combat strength that he had displayed was way beyond his rank.

It seemed like there would be some dark horses in the Rift.

Liu Yan looked indifferently at Mu Chen and Cai Xiao as they left the Pavilion. He looked cold, as he muttered to himself, "I will let you off today. However, when we get into the Dragon-Phoenix Rift, I will let you know that it is better off for you to be dead than alive."

In the meantime, no one knew that, when the two had left, a shadow on

the top floor had disappeared into thin air.

Mu Chen and Cai Xiao headed toward the western part of Dragon-Phoenix Old Town, in search of a place to rest. After passing through many old streets, just as they were entering a quiet alley, Cai Xiao suddenly stopped. She squinted her beautiful eyes like a cat.

"You have been tailing us for some time. It is time to show yourself."

When Cai Xiao spoke, the thunder light on Mu Chen's body exploded. He grasped his fist, and a Great Meru Demonic Pillar appeared. Without hesitation, he threw it into the space behind them.

A hand extended out in the air, pushing away the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, and creating a surge in the air.

Buzz.

The ground cracked, as the Great Meru Demonic Pillar was thrown back. Mu Chen's body shook, and the slate beneath his feet turned into powder. A figure in white gradually appeared in the direction the surge had come from.

The person had long, dark hair, and his eyebrows were straight, slanting slightly upward. His eyes were bright, and he looked handsome. He had a mystical fluctuation around him.

"Hahaha, you are powerful. You can even sense my Void Remote Technique. Since when did the North Territory have such a powerful person?" the man in white asked with a smile, as he fixed his gaze on Cai Xiao.

Although he looked gorgeous, and could make a girl fall head over heels for him, Cai Xiao merely glanced at him and said, "What is so great about the Technique? It's no big deal."

"Who are you? Why are you tailing us?" Mu Chen said with a frown.

"Please pardon me. I heard your conversation by chance, and I am interested in your plan," the man in white said.

Mu Chen was taken aback. He had surrounded their conversation with

spiritual energy, but this man could still hear it. He was extremely powerful.

"If you are interested, you can do it by yourself. We do not need extra help," Cai Xiao said coldly. She was not interested in such people, those who had offered themselves voluntarily.

The man in white had never expected Cai Xiao to reject him, so boldly, right to his face. He frowned slightly and said, "With my help, I believe that it will be easier for you to succeed. No one will bother us, too."

"It seems like you have a big appetite," Cai Xiao waved her hand and said. "Buzz off. I will forgive you for eavesdropping and tailing us."

"Will you not reconsider my offer?" the man in white said, with glitters in his eyes. He said softly, "Isn't it better to have one more friend?"

"Are you trying to threaten me?" Cai Xiao laughed. She was so charming, her looks could make one's heart race.

The man in white was silent, and just stared at Cai Xiao. After a while, with a grave look, he disappeared into thin air.

Swoosh!

As he was about to disappear, Cai Xiao had disappeared from the spot where she was standing. She re-appeared on a spot, a few hundred feet away, then pointed her finger at the space.

Buzz!

The space started to surge. Cai Xiao's finger seemed to have pierced through the air. There was a powerful Spiritual Energy Windstorm, and it crushed the slates on the street into powder.

After she had done this, Cai Xiao returned to the previous spot, and the space resumed its natural peace. Cai Xiao raised her brows and said, "This man is powerful. It is a pity that there are so many seals in my body. Otherwise, I would have locked him up in the space, and he would not be able to escape."

It was obvious that, when they cross-sworded with each other earlier,

she did not have the upper-hand.

Mu Chen thought for a while, then said softly, "If I am not wrong, he is Fang Yi, ranked number one in Dragon-Phoenix Record."

"Oh? Then you have almost offended all of the entire top five in the Record!" Cai Xiao said, sounding shocked. However, she could not hide the playful look in her eyes.

Mu Chen gritted his teeth. He looked at her and said, "You are the one who has offended him!"

"This man is cunning. I don't like him, and I have no wish to collaborate with him." Cai Xiao shrugged and did not seem bothered by the man in white. Neither did not seem to be afraid of the number one influential person in Dragon-Phoenix Record.

"It is up to you." Mu Chen nodded. The man in white was oppressive, and Mu Chen was not keen in collaborating with him either. Although it would spell trouble for Mu Chen to have offended him, Mu Chen was never afraid of a little trouble.

Cai Xiao was surprised to learn that Mu Chen shared the same sentiment as her. She said with a smile, "I thought that you would be unwilling to let him go. After all, if you befriend him, Liu Yan would not dare find trouble with you."

"If Liu Yan wants to find trouble with me, my door is open. I have never been afraid of him. Moreover, I don't befriend people just to make use of them." Mu Chen smiled. He then looked at Cai Xiao and said, "I still have you, don't I? Although Fang Yi is powerful, you are powerful as well."

"I was filled with a bit of admiration for you just a moment ago, but now..." Cai Xiao stared at him, before turning away to walk down the street. Mu Chen laughed, as he ran to catch up with her.

After the two of them had left, a white figure appeared on the rooftop of a house some distance away. He looked at the direction where the two had traveled, and then looked down. There were blood traces on his fingers.

His dark eyes were glittering, and he was smiling. He waved his sleeve,

and disappeared into thin air.

"Who is this girl...her presence will be indeed prove interesting in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift."

Chapter 776: The Sea of Insects

The following day, at the break of dawn, the rays of the sun shone upon the earth. The spiritual energy of the heavens and earth indistinctly rose up.

The Ridge was extremely noisy, as it was filled with people. They were like locusts, covering Dragon-Phoenix Old Town. In just one night, everyone had received news that the Dragon-Phoenix Rift would be opened this day.

Mu Chen and Cai Xiao stood on the top of a tower. As Mu Chen saw the sea of people, he let out a sigh. The Dragon-Phoenix Rift had attracted a lot of people. Almost all of the younger generation in the North Territory had gathered, and the scale was extremely large.

As the rays of the morning sun shone down from above, everyone looked excitedly at the Ridge. There seemed to be a wave that was surging in the space, with a vast amount of air spreading out and filling the sky. That was the exact place, where the opening of Dragon-Phoenix Rift would be.

When the sun was hanging high up in the sky, the number of people present had increased tremendously. There were lots of spiritual energy fluctuations and space warps in the sky.

Buzz.

Suddenly, the spiritual energy within the heavens and the earth started to surge crazily. Boundless spiritual energy gathered on top of the ancient mountain. Indistinctly, one could see the boundless spiritual energy turning into waves, as it covered the heavens and the earth.

The space warps had been caused by the surge of the spiritual energy. Many people were filled with anticipation and excitement, and theirs hearts raced crazily.

When the space warps were at their optimum stages, a huge beam of light appeared. It then tore the space apart.

Endless rays of light shone forth. At that moment, it seemed as though

the cries of the dragon and the sounds of the phoenix had traveled far, from old, and now echoed in the heavens and the earth.

Mu Chen had never heard such dragon cries before. The cries were filled with much authority, which made one shiver.

"The Dragon-Phoenix Rift has opened up!" Someone shouted out excitedly, which immediately stirred up the fiery atmosphere.

Swoosh! Swoosh!

The eyes of many people turned red. In the next instant, spiritual energy rushed up, and lights tore through the heavens and the earth. Sharp noises blasted out, as the participants flooded into the space like grasshoppers, causing a great commotion.

Mu Chen sighed, upon seeing the scene. He looked at Cai Xiao and said, "Let's get going."

Cai Xiao gently nodded.

The two of them turned into light and shot out, joining the rest of the people and entering into the space, where the cries of the dragon and voice of the phoenix had been heard.

As they were entering into the Dragon-Phoenix Rift, Cai Xiao suddenly grasped Mu Chen's hand in hers. Mu Chen was stunned, as her hand was icy cold. Before he could speak, there was a turbulence around him, denoting that the space warp was getting stronger.

Thankfully, the feeling of uncertainty that came along with this quickly disappeared. Mu Chen felt that he had landed on solid ground, and the surroundings rapidly became clear.

He opened his eyes to a stunning scene, as what lay before him had completely changed. The mountain had disappeared, and a crimson prairie now spread out before his eyes.

He and Cai Xiao were on a hill of the prairie. The wind blew gently, causing the grass to sway. It was like a sea of blood, which looked terrifying.

Buzz! Buzz!

The space above the prairie fluctuated constantly, and the people started to appear. They had to travel through the spatial crack in order to enter into the Dragon-Phoenix Rift.

As they were traveling through the spatial crack, there were spatial fluctuations. Cai Xiao had held Mu Chen's hand earlier, to prevent them from being separated from each other.

As the people started to appear, the crimson prairie lost its peace. Many of the people looked around curiously at the strange place. Some of them even wasted no time in dashing out.

Mu Chen frowned, feeling uneasy as he looked at the crimson prairie.

Buzz! Buzz!

At this instant, the grasses in the prairie flew up. Once they were in the air, they turned into crimson fog, and carried away those who had just dashed out.

Boom!

Those top powers, who had dashed out, were quick to react. They immediately released their spiritual energy, trying to disperse the crimson fog. However, as the spiritual energy and the crimson fog hit against each other, the majestic spiritual energy was unable to block it. As the crimson fog swept past, the top powers turned into skeletons, falling to the ground even before they realized what was happening.

The noise in the prairie quieted down. Many of the top powers turned pale.

"What is that?" someone asked in shock.

As Mu Chen was staring at the crimson fog, he suddenly squinted his eyes. He realized that the crimson fog was not a fog. Instead, it was made up of countless, strange crimson insects.

The strange insects were about the size of one's thumb, and there was a large number of them. They would devour all of the spiritual energy that

crossed their paths.

A thought suddenly crossed Mu Chen's mind, and he waved his sleeve. His spiritual energy swept toward the crimson prairie. As his spiritual energy passed through the prairie, lots of crimson grass flew up, turning instantly into the red insects' fog.

Mu Chen was stunned when he saw it. It was not a prairie! This so-called prairie was formed by a sea of insects!

"Let's get out of this place, quickly!"

Mu Chen grabbed Cai Xiao's arm and flew up. He had not expected the Dragon-Phoenix Rift to be so dangerous. One could turn into a heap of bones, if he was not careful.

As Mu Chen shot up to the sky, many young top powers followed his lead, having also realized that they had been sent into a land of the dead.

Buzz! Buzz!

The movements of the people had alarmed the strange insects. The entire crimson prairie seemed to have come alive, and tornadoes started to form. The tornadoes charged toward those who were trying to escape.

Buzz!

One of the tornadoes swept toward Mu Chen, and he quickly released his majestic spiritual energy.

Bang!

His spiritual energy hit against the tornado, but much of it had been devoured by the crimson strange insects. However, after they had devoured the spiritual energy, many of the insects caught fire, revealing a purple flame flickering in their wakes.

When Mu Chen saw this, he was shocked.

"There is a flame inside your spiritual energy. Use it. Although they are able to devour spiritual energy, they are afraid of fire," Cai Xiao told him.

Mu Chen nodded, activating the purple flame in his body. It formed a

fire overcover, which covered him and Cai Xiao completely.

Swoosh!

Under the protection of the undying flame, Mu Chen dashed into the sea of insects. As the purple flame went past those strange insects, they were turned into ashes. Screeching sounds kept ringing out.

Mu Chen dashed through the insects with full speed. He could hear the cries of many young top powers as he went. They had turned into skeletons, and had fallen onto the ground.

However, Mu Chen was unable to save them. Although he had been protected by the undying flame, if he were to be surrounded and attacked by the sea of insects, he would soon die of exhaustion.

Whoosh.

After about 10 minutes, Mu Chen flew out of the crimson prairie and landed on a bare rock hill. He turned and saw red smoke rising up from the crimson prairie. It looked like a catastrophe.

Other than Mu Chen and Cai Xiao, some other participants had escaped as well. The spiritual energy of these people contained fire, which had saved them from the attack.

"Many people have died."

Mu Chen looked grave. There were about 1,000 people earlier, but now, less than 100 people had managed to escape. The death rate was alarming. Mu Chen had not expected the Dragon-Phoenix Rift to be so dangerous.

He shook his head, trying to calm himself down. He then flicked his finger, and a map was formed with his spiritual energy. This map was the one that had been shown to them at the Dragon-Phoenix Pavilion.

However, the map was blurred. Hence, he and Cai Xiao took quite a while to find their exact location.

"We should be here."

Cai Xiao pointed at the lower left portion of the map. She gradually shifted up, bringing her pointer finger to rest at a bright dot that was

nearest to them. "A Dragon-Phoenix Pool should be here. We shall go to this pool first."

As long as they could locate a Dragon-Phoenix Pool, Cai Xiao would be able to use it to locate other pools.

Mu Chen nodded, and without hesitation, waved his sleeve and kept the map. He looked toward the south-west direction, and took a deep breath. This was his first time in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift.

He could not imagine how terrifying it would be around a Dragon-Phoenix Pool. It would be even more frightening and dangerous. However, these dangers would not stop him from moving forward.

"Let's go," Mu Chen said softly. He flew toward the direction of the Dragon-Phoenix Pool, with Cai Xiao following closely behind.

Chapter 777: The Skeleton Hill

Swoosh!

Two streamers shot past the vast horizon. They were traveling at a great speed, but not a sound was made as they soared through the sky. They had intended to keep their movements inconspicuous.

They traversed thousands of feet in the mere twinkling of an eye. When they reached the peak of a mountain, they suddenly stopped, then went into hiding. After they had hidden themselves, the space between the heavens and the earth shook. Then, about 100 huge, strange beasts flew past, roaring, as if they were hunting for blood.

Mu Chen looked at the strange beasts, then shook his head. The strange beasts in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift were extremely large. Although they had low spiritual intelligences, they were extremely powerful, due to the Blood Essence of the real dragon and real phoenix.

If a person were to be surrounded by the strange beasts, even if he could escape from their attacks, he would have been exhausted. Throughout the journey, Mu Chen and Cai Xiao had been trying to avoid the big groups of beasts.

"We are not far from the Dragon-Phoenix Pool," Cai Xiao looked around and said.

Mu Chen nodded. He could feel an extremely strange fluctuation from afar, which was extremely oppressive. Even though Mu Chen was far away from it, he could still sense that his spiritual energy had been obscured by it.

"I wonder which influential person has eyed this pool as well."

Mu Chen's eyes glittered. There were only five Dragon-Phoenix Pools in the Rift. However, there was a large number of top powers all vying for them. Hence, there would be fierce battles to come.

Those, who had managed to break through the layers of defense and reach the pools, would be the elites among the top powers. Their battles

would be even more aggressive.

Mu Chen and Cai Xiao continued their journey, after the strange beasts had flown past them. In less than an hour, they had come across dozens of groups of strange beasts. Although they had tried their bests to avoid the strange beasts, there were still some strange beasts that they could not detect, resulting in the both of them having to fight them off. This factor had inevitably hindered the pair's speed and progress.

However, this abnormality made Mu Chen feel more certain that they were moving toward the right direction. If this was not the case, there would not be so many strange beasts working to block their way.

He had heard that the strange beasts that were protecting the Dragon-Phoenix Pools were more powerful than the rest. Hence, he had to be more vigilant.

The rest of the journey was smooth. After flying past a mountain, Mu Chen and Cai Xiao landed on a peak. Squinting their eyes, they looked out upon the scene before them.

The land was in ruins. There were deep marks on the ground, and it looked as though a great battle, one that had shaken the heavens and the earth, had taken place.

A mountain was towering over the ruins at the very center. Clouds covered the peak of the mountain, and the mountain appeared to be white in color. As Mu Chen looked more carefully, he realized that it was a skeleton hill!

The name came from the fact that there was a large amount of skeletons, which had been gathered together to form a large "skeleton hill"! There were light patterns on top of the skeleton hill, which were flickering gently, and seemed to possess life. One could feel a terrifying oppression exuding from the skeleton hill. It made one shiver.

"The Dragon-Phoenix Pool should be on the skeleton hill," Mu Chen looked at the top of the skeleton hill and said. Clouds were floating around it, and Mu Chen could feel an extremely strong oppression emanating from it.

Cai Xiao looked at the ruins and the skeleton hill, then said, "Many people have been here."

Mu Chen gently nodded. He could feel many spiritual energy fluctuations on the piece of land. Quite a number of powerful people had indeed entered into the Rift.

"Let's wait for a while. Although the Dragon-Phoenix Pool is just before our eyes, it will not be easy to go near it," Mu Chen said. He did not lose his head over the Dragon-Phoenix Pool, as he knew that grave danger would always be around the places where treasures had been hidden.

Hence, the Dragon-Phoenix Rift was filled with danger. It had not been easy to reach thus far. And more than likely, there would be greater danger the nearer they got to the Dragon-Phoenix Pool.

Cai Xiao was not surprised at Mu Chen's attitude. After being with him for the past few days, she knew that he was extremely wise, and had very strong willpower.

However, not everyone could remain unmoved by the allure of the treasures. After a while, some other participants appeared in the sky, accompanied by very strong spiritual energy fluctuations swirling around them. They were not ordinary people, since they were able to pass through those strange beasts to arrive at the Dragon-Phoenix Pool.

There were about 100 people, and they knew that the skeleton hill was filled with danger. Hence, they did not head straight in, but instead, started to befriend one another. They could then join forces, if they faced danger at the hill.

Whoosh!

About 100 streamers flew past, then spread out. They were heading toward the skeleton hill.

Mu Chen watched the scene quietly. Suddenly, his gaze froze. He had heard a sharp cry, and then saw that heat was coming out of the peak of the skeleton hill.

Ouch!

At this moment, the skeleton hill started to shake violently. Its peak shook and started to crack. White figures started to fly out in between the cracks.

More than 10 young top powers, who were at the forefront, had been surrounded by about 100 white figures. The white figures pierced through the space with their sharp claws.

The top powers were quick to activate their spiritual energies to protect themselves.

Slash!

Alas, the spiritual energy had not protected the top powers. Claws with dark scales tore the layers of spiritual energy protection apart, then slashed down hard on the top powers. Fresh blood splashed out from their bodies, and before they could even cry out, they had been split in half.

Ah!

Cries were heard from another direction. All of the young top powers retreated in fear. Within a few breaths, almost half of the people had been torn apart.

"What a horrifyingly strange beast!"

Mu Chen looked gravely at the scene before him. The Spiritual Light in his eyes glittered, as he stopped to take a good look at the white figures. They were ape-like, strange beasts, each a few feet tall, with big dark claws. The dark portion of the beasts was formed by dark scales. Under the refraction of the sun, the look made one shiver.

There were pairs of wings behind their backs, which allowed them to travel at great speeds.

"The Blood Essence of the real dragon and real phoenix have created a big mess in this space," Cai Xiao curled her lip and said. There was nothing special about the space in the beginning. However, with the fall of the real dragon and real phoenix, coupled with some special conditions, the strange creatures with special powers started to breed.

Mu Chen nodded. The individual power of the white apes was either at Grade One Sovereign or Grade Two. There was a large number of them, and as they jumped out together, they made one shiver.

Moreover, Mu Chen could see that, in the deepest part of the skeleton hill, there was a more violent fluctuation. It was not easy to get into the skeleton hill. The smell of blood filled the air with its stench. After the white apes had killed the intruders, they lingered around the skeleton hill. There were so many of them, in fact, that they almost covered the hill.

The top powers, that had managed to escape from the attacks, turned pale. They could not calm themselves down, as they were filled with fear. The earlier encounter had indeed been a great blow to them.

The facial expressions of the top powers, who had been taking on a bystander approach, changed. No one dared make any move, and all of them were filled with great fear.

However, the silence did not last for long. Everyone knew that, as time passed by, more people would get to this place. Then, the chances of getting to the Dragon-Phoenix Pool would then be much slimmer.

"Ladies and gentlemen, we should not continue to wait and do nothing. Although the white apes are powerful, if we join forces, they will not be able to stop us." Someone finally spoke up, after giving it much thought. His powerful voice sounded throughout the sky.

"All right, let's join forces!"

Many participants echoed this suggestion. They should be able to get past the white apes, if they joined forces. After all, they should not delay any longer.

Boom! Boom!

Many powerful spiritual energies shot up. Many lights also started to rise up to the sky above the faraway hill. The number was so large, that it was alarming.

"Let's go."

Upon seeing this, Mu Chen smiled. He had been waiting for the top powers to strike. With their help in breaking through the formation of the white apes, he would catch hold of the opportunity to get up the skeleton hill.

"You are not the only one trying to benefit from this," Cai Xiao said with a smile.

There were many top powers around, and some of them had concealed their strengths. Obviously, they had shared the same thoughts as Mu Chen.

"Let's see who is better."

Mu Chen smiled, and looked ready to fight. He was determined to get his hands on the Dragon-Phoenix Pool.

Chapter 778: To the Peak

Swoosh!

Countless lights shot past the sky, creating whizzing sounds. Every light carried majestic spiritual energy around it. The scene was awesome.

Howl!

The white apes around the skeleton hill sensed that they were in danger, and started to howl. Their howling was filled with the strong desire for blood.

The two strong formations quickly came together, clashing against each other. The spiritual energy fluctuations surged crazily, as they filled the sky.

The spiritual energy was like a streamer, streaking past the white apes, killing them. However, there was a large number of the apes, and every time one batch had been killed, another batch would replace them. The continuous attack had caused many of the top powers to be killed.

This region had become a place of slaughter. The smell of blood covered the entire area.

Although there were many white apes, they had extremely low intelligences. When the top powers joined forces, the white apes lost their footing, and started to retreat.

Bang!

Mu Chen waved the Great Meru Demonic Pillar in his hands, creating afterimages. He smashed the white apes that were approaching him with the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. He then squinted his eyes, concentrating his stare at the skeleton hill, which had been protected by several white apes. With the attacks of the top powers, the white apes that were protecting the hill had started to space out.

Mu Chen turned to look at the side. Cai Xiao had disappeared once the fighting had begun. However, he was not worried about her. Cai Xiao was extremely powerful, and not many people in the Rift would be able to

harm her.

It is about time.

Mu Chen looked at the chaotic sky, his dark eyes gradually turning sharper. In the next instant, he disappeared into thin air, and a space warp appeared a few hundred feet away.

A dragon shadow flew past the white apes, heading straight for the skeleton hill. As Mu Chen flew past the white apes toward the skeleton hill, more than 10 top powers from all the other directions did likewise.

These people were extremely powerful, and they had been waiting for just such an opportunity as well. As Cai Xiao had mentioned, Mu Chen was not the only one who wished to benefit from this circumstance.

However, Mu Chen did not bother himself with these people. As he went past the defense of the white apes, the skeleton hill appeared before him. He headed straight in, turned into a streamer, and like a lightning bolt, shot up to the peak.

Mu Chen was traveling at full speed, and his body was very tense. The spiritual energy in his body kept churning. He knew that it would not be easy to reach the Dragon-Phoenix Pool.

Dong!

Mu Chen was alert. He noticed that the land of bones that lay before him had suddenly cracked, and a huge claw came up out of the hole, then started to attack him.

Mu Chen looked grave. The Great Meru Demonic Pillar that he was holding possessed majestic spiritual energy. He waved it hard, hitting the huge claw.

Boom!

A violent spiritual energy exploded out like a windstorm. The land of bones cracked, and Mu Chen was thrown back several steps.

With a somersault, Mu Chen landed on the ground. He looked in front of him with a frown. Above the land of bones, a scarlet beam had shot up

to the sky. A huge, strange beast slowly appeared in the beam.

The strange beast looked similar to the white apes, but was red. It looked more vicious, too, and had scales all over its body. As the sun shone upon it, the beast emitted a cold luster aura.

This Demonic Ape had the blood of the real dragon.

Mu Chen was shocked that it exuded such a powerful spiritual energy fluctuation. Even a Grade Four Sovereign would have a hard time dealing with it. This must be one of the dangerous spiritual energy fluctuations that he had sensed earlier.

Roar!

The Demonic Ape stared at Mu Chen with its red eyes. Its mouth was dripping with saliva. As it roared, a huge skeleton rod appeared in its hand, and it charged toward Mu Chen.

The Demonic Ape traveled at a stunningly great speed. The huge skeleton rod turned into afterimages, swirling crazily toward Mu Chen. Wherever the rod passed, space warps would be formed, following in its wake.

At the moment, there was a space warp behind Mu Chen, and the Sovereign Sea was looming behind that. A powerful spiritual energy surged up, and he whizzed out the Great Meru Demonic Pillar.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Several afterimages of the rod whizzed out, colliding against the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. A powerful spiritual energy windstorm raged in the heavens and the earth.

As Mu Chen was fighting the Demonic Ape, other areas of the hill shook as well. Spiritual energy fluctuations shot up. The other top powers had encountered some powerful strange beasts, too.

Dong!

A visible Spiritual Energy Shockwave exploded, and Mu Chen and the Demonic Ape were thrown back. Mu Chen frowned, as he looked at the

Demonic Ape that was now roaring.

As the Demonic Ape had a low spiritual intelligence, it was fearless. It crazily attacked Mu Chen, which shocked him. If it had been another Grade Three Sovereign, he would have been smashed by the Demonic Ape.

Mu Chen did not want to spend too much effort on a strange beast that had such a low spiritual intelligence. However, it would not leave Mu Chen alone.

Dang!

The Great Meru Demonic Pillar hit against the skeleton rod again. Mu Chen shot up to the sky and looked coldly at the Demonic Ape that was dashing now toward him. His eyes started to turn dark and hollow.

Boom! Boom!

A loud thunder sounded from the heart of the Demonic Ape, catching it off guard. At the sound of the thunder, its body froze, and it lost control of its spiritual energy.

Netherworld Thunder Heart was able to subdue these strange beasts with their low spiritual intelligences. However, the Demonic Ape was not so easy to deal with. It suddenly looked up and howled, hitting its chest crazily with its fists, which created drumming sound waves. As the sound waves traveled to its body, it suppressed the sound of the thunder.

Swoosh!

As the Demonic Ape was suppressing the sound of the thunder, Mu Chen had swiftly attacked it. He appeared on top of the Demonic Ape, then bent his fingers together. Lightning appeared, turning into a Spiritual Energy Spear. Mu Chen aimed at the Demonic Ape's eyes, then pierced it with the Spear.

Pom!

One of its eyeballs exploded, causing fresh blood to spew out. Half of its face had exploded as well.

Roar!

The Demonic Ape roared in pain. Before it could turn more violent, Mu Chen had hit it hard on its tough head with the Great Meru Demonic Pillar.

He had used his full force. The strong wind created by the Great Meru Demonic Pillar tore the space apart. Even though the Demonic Ape's head was strong as metal, it exploded.

Boom!

The huge Demonic Ape fell, and the ground quaked.

Mu Chen slowly let down his hand. The blood of the Demonic Ape flowed down from the Demonic Pillar. As Mu Chen looked at the Demonic Ape, he heaved a sigh of relief. The Netherworld Thunder Heart had helped him greatly. Without it, he would have had a hard time dealing with the Demonic Ape.

Mu Chen lifted up his head to look at the other directions of the skeleton hill. There were spiritual energy fluctuations in all directions. Fierce fights had indeed been going on.

Suddenly, Mu Chen's eyes glittered. He grabbed hold of the Demonic Ape's dead body, as he flew up to the Dragon-Phoenix Pool.

The journey went smoothly. Mu Chen believed that all the strange beasts had gone after the other top powers.

Within a few minutes, Mu Chen shot up into the clouds and landed on top of the skeleton hill. With a somersault, he landed on the ground. His eyes turned grave, as he looked at the scene before him.

There were skeletons on top of the hill. Two extremely huge bones were lying in the center. The two bones were like huge rocks that weighed millions of tons. They did not seem to belong to the same owner. An oppressive energy exuded from these bones, which caused the surrounding air to become still.

As the two huge ancient bones came together, they formed a bone pool that was about 100 feet wide. Ancient light patterns had been carved in this bone pool. Light was glittering, and it seemed as though a powerful

life force was constantly breathing.

An indescribable, strange force was lingering in the bone pool. This special pool must be the Dragon-Phoenix Pool that the top powers had been looking for!

Mu Chen's eyes were burning with excitement. As he was about to step forth, he suddenly caught sight of three other directions. Two extremely forceful spiritual energies shot up.

In two of the forceful spiritual energies that shot up, one of them was on the right, and the other on the left, with Mu Chen in between them. Both of them were obviously targeting him. Mu Chen's face turned cold, as he sensed that one of the spiritual energy fluctuations was familiar to him.

Swoosh!

A figure appeared on the peak. It was Liu Yan, who was dressed in white. He looked at Mu Chen with disdain, and threw away the huge body of a strange beast that he was holding on to.

"I have told you, you cannot escape from me."

Liu Yan patted his palms gently, and one could tell that he was sneering at Mu Chen.

Chapter 779: The Two Top Powers

Liu Yan stood in the air and threw the body of a huge beast down to the ground. Blood was still flowing out from its body, and the smell of blood stank up the entire place. He looked at Mu Chen with disdain.

Mu Chen looked back at Liu Yan and frowned. He had not expected to see him at the first station. What a coincidence!

"This is not a coincidence," Liu Yan said, seeming to have read his thoughts. He smiled, then said, "When you were sparring with me at the Dragon-Phoenix Pavilion, I left a special spiritual seal on you. That is why I can sense where you are."

Mu Chen was shocked, and immediately, his face turned grave. The purple flame in his body started to burn, and a strange fluctuation started to churn on his hair.

Pooh.

As the purple flame swept past, one of his hairs was burnt. The strange fluctuation then disappeared.

Mu Chen looked coldly at Liu Yan. He had been extremely careful, but he had not realized that Liu Yan had secretly left a seal on him. Liu Yan seemed to have some special skills.

Fortunately, he had removed the seal. If he and Cai Xiao had found the other Dragon-Phoenix Pools, Liu Yan would have followed behind them, and created problems for them.

"You seem confident in defeating me," Mu Chen said, as he stared at Liu Yan.

"Don't worry. I will not look down on you. To ensure that you will stay forever in the Dragon-Phoenix Pool, I have put down my ego, and recruited help." Liu Yan smiled, as he clapped his hands lightly.

Boom!

As he clapped his hands, a beam of spiritual energy shot up to the peak

of the skeleton hill. After the light had dissipated, a man appeared. The man had long red hair and red eyes, like those of a snake. He looked fierce and vicious.

As the man appeared, a strong scent for the desire of blood covered the sky.

Mu Chen stared at him, looking grave. He could sense a threatening fluctuation emitting from the man. He was not a simple person.

"Please...Liu Yan. Why have you asked me to help you deal with a Grade Three Sovereign? What has happened to you? When did you become such a coward?" The red-haired man stared at Mu Chen with his snake eyes, as he laughed weirdly.

"The lion wrestles the rabbit. I give it my all. I always leave no room for failure," Liu Yan said, as he looked at Mu Chen. "He is Scarlet Blood from the Snake Shrine. He is ranked number nine in the Dragon-Phoenix Record...I think I truly do hold you in high regard. Two people from among the top ten in the Dragon-Phoenix Record are here in order to send you off."

"Scarlet Blood from the Snake Shrine?"

Mu Chen's heart gave a thud. He furrowed his brows, as he stared at the red-haired man. No wonder he smelled so strongly of blood. This was the notorious ruthless man that had slaughtered the people of many cities.

Mu Chen was surprised to see Scarlet Blood. He had not expected Liu Yan to get a helper, even though he was supposed to have the upper-hand. Liu Yan was much more cautious than was his younger brother, Liu Ming.

"I feel so honored," Mu Chen said, as he looked at the position that he was in and laughed. He was in between the two. Although he looked shocked, he was not fearful or flustered, as Liu Yan had expected him to be.

"It seems like you have no idea what is going to happen to you." Seeing that Mu Chen was not afraid, Liu Yan's face became all the more indifferent. However, before he could finish what he had wanted to say, he

saw a slender figure on top of the Demonic Ape.

The girl had a seductive look. Her hair blew gently in the breeze, and she sat on the dead body of the Demonic Ape. She rested her chin on her hands, she looked at them with a lazy gaze.

Liu Yan and Scarlet Blood suddenly looked cold, as the girl had appeared without their knowledge. This had caused them both to be alert.

"Pardon me, I also have a helper," Mu Chen looked at Liu Yan, speaking the words with a smile.

Liu Yan looked coldly at Mu Chen, and then at Cai Xiao. When they were at the Dragon-Phoenix Pavilion, he had not sensed that this girl was so powerful. However, when she had appeared earlier, he could sense danger.

He did not brush the feeling away, because he knew that it was not an illusion. He had always thought of the worst case scenarios, and that had helped him to defeat his opponents throughout the years.

It was similar to how he was currently dealing with Mu Chen. Although he was powerful enough to kill Mu Chen, he had roped in the help of a top power. Therefore, he had left no room for failure. Thus, he had not expected things to get out of hand, although he had it all well-planned.

"Lady, this is between him and us. Xuan Tian Hall owes you a favor, if you do not interfere," Liu Yan took a deep breath and said. He cupped his fist and spoke politely.

Upon hearing this, Cai Xiao pursed her lips together, then seemingly laughed, as she said, "What is so great about gaining the favor of Xian Tian Hall?"

Liu Yan's countenance fell.

Cai Xiao could not be bothered with Liu Yan. She looked at Mu Chen and said, "What is your plan?"

"Can you help me deal with that big snake?" Mu Chen pointed at Scarlet Blood, asking her with a smile. Given his current strength, he might not be

able to deal with the two of them, if Scarlet Blood and Liu Yan joined forces to attack him.

Although he had plenty of confidence, he was not conceited. After all, he was only at Grade Three Sovereign, but Liu Yan and Scarlet Blood were at Grade Four Sovereign!

"Do you want me to finish off the two of them for you?" Cai Xiao slanted her head to look at Mu Chen, asking this with a smile.

"Although I don't mind depending on a woman, especially such a beautiful one, there are things that I need to settle myself," Mu Chen said with a smile.

"You are a man of character. In this case, leave the big snake to me." Cai Xiao gave him a thumbs up. Although she sounded as though she was teasing him, her eyes were filled with admiration for him. She admired him for the self-confidence that he had exuded. She knew that it did not come from external factors, or because she was around to help.

Mu Chen was only a Grade Three Sovereign, whereas his opponent, Liu Yan, was a Grade Four Sovereign. He had remained fearless and confident, and not many people possessed such a bold spirit.

"Boastful guy." When Liu Yan heard their conversation, he sneered.

A cold look flashed across his eyes. He was fearful of Cai Xiao, but not of Mu Chen. He was still brooding over how he should deal with Cai Xiao, when Mu Chen offered to deal with him.

On the other side of the horizon, Scarlet Blood fixed his gaze on Cai Xiao with his red snake eye. He was a Scarlet Blood Divine Python, and had the bloodline of the Divine Beast. His combat strength was more powerful than the top powers of those on his same level. However, when he looked at Cai Xiao, who had such a small build, he felt coldness exuding from the blood within his body.

Scarlet Blood's face changed. He showed his brutal personality, as he smiled viciously at Cai Xiao. His white teeth seemed evil, as he laughed weirdly and said, "Little girl, you are young, but you talk big. Wait till I

capture you. I don't think this smooth, tender flesh of yours can stand my torture!"

As Scarlet Blood was talking, he kept looking lasciviously at Cai Xiao's body. He was a lecher, who had been eyeing her beauty. He would have laid his hands on Cai Xiao, if he had not been fearful of her.

Cai Xiao merely smiled at his filthy language. This made Scarlet Blood's desire soar even more.

"The blood of this stupid snake is of some use. Although it is not as good as the Blood Essence of the real dragon, it should be useful to Xiao Cai," Cai Xiao smiled at Mu Chen and said. She gently tapped her feet, causing her to appear in front of Scarlet Blood. She then pointed in the air with her finger.

As she let down her hand, the space surged. Scarlet Blood felt that his skin had tightened, and he moved back aggressively. Afterimages appeared in the sky.

Pooh.

He was quick, but Cai Xiao was quicker. As the space surged, the afterimages had dispersed. Among the afterimages, a figure flew backward, battered. Scarlet Blood covered his shoulder, as there was now a hole on it. Flesh blood was spewing out of the wound. All the shield that he had did not protect him.

No matter how hard he tried, he could not stop the blood from flowing out. There seemed to be a mysterious power that was attacking his spiritual energy.

"How can this be?!" Scarlet Blood was stunned. He had not expected to be hurt by such a beautiful girl.

As he was still in shock, Cai Xiao had walked toward him in the air. As he looked at her, the previous lascivious look was now replaced by one of fear. He suddenly realized that he had met a powerful opponent.

At the same time, Mu Chen had dashed out toward Liu Yan. He pointed the Great Meru Demonic Pillar at Liu Yan and smiled.

"Young Master Liu Yan, it is your turn."

Chapter 780: The Fight with Liu Yan

Liu Yan stood with one hand placed at his back in the air. His gaze was cold, as he stared at the figure that was before him. After a while, he gasped, his gaze gradually becoming indifferent.

"Silly fella..." he muttered. He curled up his lips, stared at Mu Chen, and softly said, "I will not give you a chance for regrets. I will let you bring along your regrets to hell."

Liu Yan laughed and stepped forth. As he placed his feet down, a majestic spiritual energy exploded. The crimson spiritual energy covered the horizon, and it looked as though the sky was burning from afar.

Liu Yan's power had surpassed the ordinary Grade Four Sovereign. He had reached the Peak of Grade Four Sovereign. As compared to Qin Bei of Sorrowful Sky, Liu Yan far surpassed him.

Any ordinary Grade Three Sovereign would not be able to take this blow. Liu Yan was confident that no one could retaliate.

Mu Chen looked gravely at the crimson, majestic spiritual energy. He had never before let his guard down, when dealing with opponents of Liu Yan's level.

A few months ago, he would not have been able to defeat Liu Yan. When Liu Yan provoked him back then, Mu Chen had simply chosen to stomach it.

However, he no longer had to do that, as Mu Chen had had a breakthrough within these last three months. Although there was a gap between his level and Liu Yan's, it no longer posed a problem for Mu Chen.

The Great Meru Demonic Pillar was floating on the right side of Mu Chen, swirling out a demonic force. Mu Chen stared at Liu Yan, who had extremely powerful spiritual energy. He held his hands in the air, and the Great Meru Demonic Pillar turned into a shadow, pressing down mercilessly on Liu Yan.

Liu Yan looked at the Great Meru Demonic Pillar with disdain, as he grabbed his fist. A crimson spear appeared in his hand. There seemed to be a fire burning on the spear.

Dang!

Liu Yan pointed the tip of the spear upward, and the Great Meru Demonic Pillar stopped at its position, causing the spear to bend slightly. Liu Yan had displayed his power.

Buzz!

The crimson spear shook violently, and a terrifying force exploded. The Great Meru Demonic Pillar had been thrown back. Liu Yan instantly threw out a blow with his spear.

Boom!

At this blow, a crimson magma shot out. The violent and hot spiritual energy caused the surrounding temperature to increase tremendously.

The magma stretched over the horizon, like a Flaming Dragon, heading toward Mu Chen. A hot wave swirled toward Mu Chen, and the strong spiritual energy fluctuation seemed to tear the horizon apart.

Mu Chen's face turned grave. A space warp and the Sovereign Sea appeared behind him. He condensed his spiritual energy into the Demonic Pillar, slashing down hard with it.

The Demonic Pillar and the magma collided in the air, causing the magma to explode. A space warp was formed at the area where they had collided.

As the magma exploded, Mu Chen had been thrown back as well. The temperature on top of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar was high, and it seemed to be attempting to melt it down. However, the high temperature had been eliminated by the demonic force of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar

Mu Chen felt that his palm had started to become numb. He let out a frown. Liu Yan had lived up to his ranking as the number four influential

person in the Dragon-Phoenix Record. After exchanging blows with him, Mu Chen realized that he was extremely powerful. Liu Yan would certainly have the upper-hand, if Mu Chen went head-to-head with him.

"I will be extremely disappointed, if this is all that you are capable of."

Liu Yan sneered at Mu Chen. He stood in the sky, making a seal with his hands. A crimson spiritual energy swirled toward Mu Chen, like a wave. It turned into a huge flaming palm print, pressing down on Mu Chen.

"Balrog Palm!"

There were dark prints in the palm, which exuded an overbearing destructive force. Liu Yan ridiculed Mu Chen with his words, as he attacked him mercilessly. He did not give Mu Chen any breathing space, as obviously, he wanted to kill Mu Chen quickly.

Mu Chen looked at the attacks of Liu Yan, seeing that they had become more and more powerful. He took a deep breath, his eyes speedily turning dark and deep. His short hair had become long, instantly, and his new image made him look mature and suave.

Also, the impervious nature of his look caused one to be wary of him. He had entered into the state of the heart demon.

In this state, Mu Chen could activate his spiritual energy to its perfect stage. This was something he could not achieve in his normal state.

Mu Chen tipped on his feet, immediately appearing on top of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. Two different spiritual energies surged between his palms. He made a seal with his palms, and sudden changes took place.

Roar!

The cries of dragons and elephants sounded out. Two beams shot up from the Sovereign Sea, entangling together. They formed a Dragon-Elephant Halo, as they hit against the Balrog Palm.

Dong!

There was an explosion in the sky. It's impact was like fireworks, dazzling and dangerous.

As these "fireworks" rose up, a figure suddenly burst out to stand before Liu Yan. His long hair was dancing in the sky. Mu Chen aimed his right palm, which was dazzling with thunder light, at Liu Yan.

Boom!

As the thunder light flashed, Liu Yan could feel his body shake. A sharp, thunder sound boomed out from his heart. As the thunder sound vibrated, the spiritual energy in his body went into concussion.

"Is this...Netherworld Thunder Heart?" The look in Liu Yan's eyes changed. He was indeed the young master of Xuan Tian Hall. He was well-informed, and immediately knew the skills that Mu Chen had displayed.

Boom!

Mu Chen looked calm. His right palm was directed at Liu Yan, and he had activated the Netherworld Thunder Heart at the same time. This spiritual energy on his left hand was burning with the purple flame. It turned into a streamer, and like a lightning bolt, shot toward Liu Yan's chest.

This was a perfect blow. It forced Liu Yan to move back in a fluster. His spiritual energy had gone into concussion, due to the Netherworld Thunder Heart, and Mu Chen took this opportunity to attack him with full force.

Liu Yan crossed his arms in front of his body in order to protect himself with the spiritual energy. He managed to block off the attack, but his sleeves had turned into ashes, and his arms had been charred. Although he was not seriously hurt, he was in a sorry state.

Liu Yan had been thrown back a few hundred feet. He had managed to subdue the thunder sound in his body, but when he looked at his charred arms, he turned pale.

As Mu Chen and Liu Yan were exchanging blows, the other top powers started to appear. They had broken through the defence of the white apes.

When they saw Mu Chen and Liu Yan exchanging blows, their expressions changed. They looked fearful, and dared not go near them.

They clearly saw that, Liu Yan, ranked number four in Dragon-Phoenix Record, was oppressive.

They were smart. They had intended to watch the fight at first, then join in at the appropriate time, so that they could benefit from it. They had expected the fight to end soon. After all, Mu Chen and Liu Yan were not of the same level.

However, after a while, when they saw that Liu Yan was in a sorry state, they had a different thought. They squinted their eyes, and were shocked. No longer were they looking down on Mu Chen.

Liu Yan looked palely at Mu Chen. Mu Chen, who was in the demonic state, was not bothered by the look. He dashed out again, and lifted up his right palm, which was glittering with thunder light.

When Liu Yan saw this, he was stunned, and quickly consolidated his energy in order to suppress the Netherworld Thunder Heart.

Roar!

As he was consolidating his energy, Mu Chen had speedily formed a seal with his palms. Four colorful rays shot up from the Sovereign Sea, turning into two dragons and two elephants.

"Nine Dragons Nine Elephants Art!" Mu Chen flatly said, as he changed the seal. The two dragons and two elephants condensed into a huge Dragon-Elephant Halo.

Swoosh!

The Dragon-Elephant Halo flashed, as it appeared above Liu Yan. It then slashed down hard upon him.

The veins in his head started to throb and pulsate. Liu Yan had never expected Mu Chen to display such a skill. He quickly moved backward. However, as he was moving backward, Mu Chen had lifted up his palm again.

Boom!

This time around, the sound of thunder reverberated in Liu Yan's heart.

The wailing of the thunder caused delays in his movements. Although these delays were temporal, they could still cost him his life in such a crucial fight.

Everyone saw the Dragon-Phoenix Halo slash down with a sharp fluctuation. Even though Liu Yan was powerful, if he had been hit by it, he would surely be injured.

Dong!

Violent spiritual energy fluctuations exploded in the sky. Crimson spiritual energy billowed out, like flames. Everyone was watching the scene intensely.

Mu Chen watched the place, where the crimson spiritual energy had exploded, and raised his eyebrows. As the majestic crimson spiritual energy gradually dissipated, the top powers, who were standing around, looked shocked.

A huge figure appeared in the sky. The figure crimsoned, and it was burning in flames of different colors. When looked at from far, the figure looked like a Fire God.

The temperature in the heavens and the earth became extremely hot. Mu Chen stared at the flaming figure with his deep eyes, and muttered, "Is this Myriad Flame Celestial Body..."

Chapter 781: Heaven Incinerating Feather

A huge figure, that looked like a Fire God, stood between the heavens and the earth. A colorful flame was burning on his body. The temperature was so high, that the heavens and the earth became extremely hot, and even the air smelled like it was burning.

Mu Chen squinted his eyes to look at the flaming figure. He looked indifferent, and had only moved slightly. Although Mu Chen was in the state of the heart demon, he could feel a dangerous fluctuation.

"Myriad Flame Celestial Body is indeed powerful," the top powers, who were at the peak of Skeleton Hill, were shocked and said.

Myriad Flame Celestial Body was well-ranked in the 99 Sovereign Celestial Body. It was extremely difficult to cultivate. One would need to spend a large amount of money in order to collect the different strange flames. And, even if an ordinary top power was able to do so, he might still have difficulty cultivating it.

Liu Yan was fortunate to be the young master of Xuan Tian Hall. Otherwise, it would be impossible for him to successfully cultivate it.

The flame was surging at the Celestial Spirit Shield of the Heavenly Flame Celestial Body. Liu Yan suddenly appeared on the Shield. He looked gloomily at Mu Chen, with killing intent in his eyes. He had not expected himself to be forced to display the Sovereign Celestial Body!

"Cunning guy," Liu Yan said through gritted teeth. He was filled with hatred for Mu Chen. If Mu Chen had not attacked him with the Netherworld Thunder Heart, catching him by surprise, he would not have exposed his weak points, nor had to resort to using the Sovereign Celestial Body to protect himself.

Although Liu Yan was furious, he had put up his guard. He no longer looked down on Mu Chen.

Puff.

Liu Yan stood on the Celestial Spirit Shield, and took a deep breath. His

furious look gradually changed to a look of indifference.

When Mu Chen saw this shift in demeanor, he frowned. Liu Yan had resumed his calm disposition, and would not easily expose his flaws now. He would also be on his guard against the Netherworld Thunder Heart. Thus, it would be difficult for Mu Chen to gain any advantage from it anymore.

"If you want to defeat me, then use your skills. Don't use underhand means, bringing disgrace to yourself!"

Liu Yan looked coldly at Mu Chen. Without hesitation, he put his hands together, and his body was burning with colorful flames. He made a seal with his palms, and flames swept out. The flames formed a Fire Suzaku that was extremely beautiful.

"Myriad Fire Spirit!"

As Liu Yan shouted, the beautiful Fire Suzaku spread out its wings, as it shot out. It flapped its wings and formed a track. Although it looked beautiful, it posed a deadly threat.

Mu Chen amplified the Fire Suzaku in his eyes, as he looked at it. He made a seal with his hands, and a bright, golden light exploded. A golden figure then appeared in the air.

A golden sun slowly bloomed in between his eyebrows, a huge golden palm was being extended, and gilded light was surging on the palm. The huge golden palm hit against the Fire Suzaku.

Boom!

The beautiful flame burst out, like fireworks. Due to the great collision, a strong space warp had been formed, and a Spiritual Energy Shockwave now swirled out. The top powers turned pale, and quickly backed away. They were afraid of being caught in the wave.

"Is this the guy's Sovereign Celestial Body?"

Liu Yan squinted his eyes to look at the huge golden figure, which resembled a golden Buddha. His expression changed, as he could sense an

oppressive feeling exuding from the figure.

Liu Yan felt discombobulated. His Myriad Flame Celestial Body was ranked number 69 in the 99 Celestial Body, which was not low in ranking. However, the Sovereign Celestial Body displayed by Mu Chen had caused him to feel oppressed.

Is Mu Chen's Sovereign Celestial Body ranked in the top 30 Superb Celestial Body?

Liu Yan stared at the The Great Solar Undying Body that was now hanging in the air. He was unable to pinpoint what exactly it was, as it did not seem to fall into any of the 99 Sovereign Celestial Body.

Is this some mysterious Celestial Body that has not been recorded?

Liu Yan frowned. In the end, he just shook his head, as he was unable to get an answer. Although Mu Chen's Sovereign Celestial Body was mysterious, he would need to have the strength to bring the power out. Liu Yan believed that he would be able to defeat a Grade Three Sovereign with his strength, coupled with the Myriad Flame Celestial Body!

Boom!

As he smiled coldly, the golden light in front of him started to swirl toward him. The The Great Solar Undying Body was carrying the Great Meru Demonic Pillar in his hands. The dark Demonic Pillar seemed to be made of gold. Wherever it passed, the sky burst into an array of flames and sparks.

"Huh!"

Seeing that Mu Chen had attacked him, Liu Yan let out a sneer. He grasped his hands, and a flame surged. It turned into a huge flaming spear, and as it shook, an overwhelming spear shadow swirled out.

Bang! Bang!

Mu Chen and Liu Yan were fighting in the sky. The heavens and the earth quaked, and the peak of Skeleton Hill cracked. The spiritual energy raged, roaring crazily, like a hurricane. No one dared to step within the

radius of ten thousand meters of Skeleton Hill.

The tops powers stared in disbelief, as they watched Mu Chen fight fiercely with Liu Yan. Liu Yan was reputable among the younger generation in the North Territory, as he was ranked number four in the Dragon-Phoenix Record. However, Mu Chen was a nobody. Although he had gained some points, since he was from the Daluo Territory, as compared to Liu Yan, the favored one, there was a big gap between the two.

This youth, who was yet unheard of, had an intense fight with Liu Yan. As he did not have the upper-hand, it was not easy for him to have persevered so long.

Boom!

The Demonic Pillar collided against the flaming spear, once again. There were cracks in the space where the two had collided. A visible shockwave burst out.

The two huge figures had been thrown back. Although Liu Yan now had the upper-hand, he looked pale. The outcome that he had wanted was much more than this. Indeed, the power of Mu Chen's Sovereign Celestial Body was beyond his expectations.

This guy's Sovereign Celestial Body is powerful. Liu Yan looked coldly at Mu Chen. He then sat down on the Celestial Spirit Shield, speedily making complicated seals with his hands.

Flare.

As the seals changed, the flame around the Myriad Flame Celestial Body started to burn fiercely. The colorful flames rose, then gathered on top of Liu Yan. An indescribable heat lingered in the heavens and the earth. The faces of the top powers, who were watching from afar, changed. They could feel their spiritual energy boiling, to the point of burning up.

They quickly moved back. They could feel that Liu Yan was getting impatient with Mu Chen. He had decided to end the battle.

Mu Chen lifted up his head. The beautiful flame reflected in his dark

eyes, and he gradually looked grave.

"No matter what your Sovereign Celestial Body is, I will burn it down to ashes!"

Liu Yan smiled at Mu Chen, as he suddenly clapped hard. The beautiful flames merged together. As the flames surged, they turned into a huge tripod furnace, which was about a few thousand feet tall.

The tripod furnace was extremely beautiful, but it exuded a horrifying fluctuation. Liu Yan stared coldly at Mu Chen. As he waved his sleeve, the tripod furnace disappeared into thin air.

Suddenly, Mu Chen felt that the sky had darkened. He instantly knew that the sky had not darkened, but that, in fact, he had been trapped in the tripod furnace.

Liu Yan looked at Mu Chen and his The Great Solar Undying Body that was in the Tripod Furnace, and he smiled viciously. He put his palms together, as he shouted out loudly, "Smelting Furnace Myriad Fire, Heaven Incinerating Feather!"

Boom!

As Liu Yan shouted, the colorful flames in the tripod furnace burned, and then they turned into a beautiful sea of fire. Flames rose from the sea of fire, which had now formed into a huge swirl. The beautiful flames turned into sparks, and then gathered together. These were the essence of the strange fire, of which, even a small spark was intense enough to burn down a mountain.

The sparks gathered together, before turning into a colorful feather that was about one foot long. There were multiple flame prints on the feather. It hung in the air, and looked mild. However, it exuded an extremely high temperature, which caused cracks to form in the space.

The power of this little colorful feather had caused Mu Chen, who was in the state of the heart demon, to tense up. He felt that he was in grave danger.

This Liu Yan was extremely tough to handle!

"Watch how I am going to turn this Sovereign Celestial Body of yours into ashes!"

Liu Yan smiled grimly, as he watched the scene.

Chapter 782: Heavenly Sun Golden Seal

The blazing fire pulsated within the furnace, its extreme heat hitting such a level that, if Mu Chen did not enter into the Heart Demon state, he would lose control over his Spiritual Energy.

But, at this point in time, Mu Chen did not notice the rising heat around him. He was too captivated by the resplendent flaming feather, which was ascending from a sea of flame.

The feather was only a few feet long, looking extravagant in its beautiful, intertwining colors. Yet, Mu Chen could feel the fatal danger that was lurking amid its beauty.

Apparently, Mu Chen had forced Liu Yan to use his ultimate deadly stance. Thus, this flaming feather must have possessed a killing ability powerful enough to slaughter a Grade Four Sovereign.

Glaring gold lights were beaming out from the Great Solar Undying Body, enabling it to resist any corrosion from the severe heat. Mu Chen stood above the body, his pitch-black eyes glimmering. A moment later, he took a deep, magma-like breath. He had an aura of awe on his fine-looking face.

This attack from Liu Yan was much more tyrannical than he had expected. His thoughts were flashing, only to realize that, even the Great Solar Undying Body could not defend the blow.

He frowned a little, as he sat down on top of the body. The golden lights were surging, while he quickly plunged into the Great Solar Undying Body. As he tossed his sleeves, a vast torrent came whistling, bringing with it a pure Spiritual Energy wave that fluctuated as it flowed. This torrent was transformed by the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid.

Mu Chen stared at the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid within the torrent. He had used up an astounding 200,000 units of the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid, which Mandela had given him early on.

"It should be enough."

As Mu Chen looked at the Spiritual Torrent, his lips twitched. Then, he took out 200,000 units of the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid. Even if he was in the Heart Demon state, he could still feel the pinch, when he emptied his inventory.

But right now, he could not be bothered anymore. His dark eyes were glistening, as he put up his hand to form a seal. A wheel of golden rays beamed out from the chest of the Great Solar Undying Body. Amid the rays, a golden seed was forming.

At the snap of Mu Chen's finger, the torrent, which contained 200,000 Sovereign Spiritual Liquid units, spurted toward the wheel of the golden ray, without stopping.

Buzz, buzz...

The golden seed, like a black hole, was sucking up all of the gushing Sovereign Spiritual Liquid. But, just as all of the Spiritual Energy that flows in the stream kept injecting its energy into the seed, it glowed brighter, like a scorching sun, as if it were breaking out of its shell.

While Mu Chen hid in his Great Solar Undying Body, the flaming feather had refined itself inside the furnace. As Liu Yan watched its transition, he relaxed his tense body, drawing up his lips coldly.

"Do you think you can escape in that Sovereign Celestial Body?" Liu Yan smiled sarcastically. He reached out his long finger, tapping softly in the air.

The top powers, who were speculating outside the Skeleton Hill, constricted their pupils, as they could also clearly sense the formidable energy that was fermenting in the furnace. Under the impact of such power, even a Grade Four Sovereign could not escape death.

"This Mu Chen isn't a simple character. After all, he can push Liu Yan to display his Sovereign Super Power. But everything has to end somewhere." Some of the top powers could not help but comment. They knew the formidable power of Liu Yan's attack. According to the recent years' rumors, four of the Grade Four Sovereigns did not survive under Liu Yan's attacks, and were turned to ashes in their defeats.

Most of the people nodded in agreement, sympathizing with Mu Chen. He was still young, and possessed exceptional talents. They knew that, if he had a few more years of cultivation, he would become the best among the younger generation of the North Territory.

They also knew that, even if he met Fang Yi, the number one rank of the Dragon-Phoenix Record, he probably would still stand a chance to fight it out. But unfortunately, in this world, all talents die before their time.

Buzz...

While most of the top powers were feeling sorry for the inevitable ending, the huge furnace made a hollow sound in the air, the heat dispersed from it twisting and crumpling the space. After the flaming feather fluttered resplendently in front of spectators, it charged toward the magnificent Sovereign Celestial Body, which was releasing dazzling golden rays.

As the speed of the flaming feather ascended, it transformed into a flaming meteor, bursting the surrounding as it charged. Slits of space cracks developed, until they were visible to the naked eye.

The lights on the Great Solar Undying Body dimmed very quickly, as even the golden solid figure was showing signs of melting. The flaming meteor was fast approaching! But, just before the flaming meteor was about to hit, Mu Chen, who had his eyes closed in the Great Solar Undying Body, awakened.

Ka-Cha!

The moment he awoke, the golden seed, which was lying deep in the chest of the Great Solar Undying Body, had a subtle crack to surface upon it.

Ka-Cha!

The dazzling golden light was shining out from the crack, and the entire seed exploded open. Suddenly, a bright gold beam filled the Great Solar Undying Body.

A golden sun was rising from the chest of the Great Solar Undying Body.

At the same time, in the center of the forehead of the Great Solar Undying Body, there was another sun echoing it.

Two golden suns were hanging in mid-air, emitting a glow of golden rays. At this point, the Great Solar Undying Body ceased from melting, and the golden beam transformed itself into a faint purple light.

On the outside, Liu Yan, who had been observing the furnace, had his eyes sharpened, and noticed the changes in the Great Solar Undying Body.

"Getting ready for a life and death match?"

Liu Yan gave a sneer, as apparently, he thought that the changes in the Great Solar Undying Body were a sign of its weakening. At his rate of attack, no matter what tricks Mu Chen had up his sleeves, he would surely be doomed in no time.

Mu Chen did not show any signs of intimidation on his face from within the furnace. He closed up his palm gradually, setting up his formation. Then, a murmuring voice came from his mouth.

"Nine Sun Super Power, Heaven Sun Golden Seal!"

The hands of the Great Solar Undying Body formed a seal, then gathered all of the extravagant rays, as if it was condensing the golden seal under its hands' palm. The golden seal seemed to be the intersection point of the two golden suns. A sketch of the mysterious and ancient image, resembling the birth of the sun, appeared in the suns.

The Heaven Sun Golden Seal was an extended weapon, derived from the Nine Sun Super Power. The way to actualize it, was to draw both powers from the suns. Mu Chen was unable to perform this before, but as he practiced on the Nine Sun Super Power, he was finally able to display it at this moment.

"Boom!"

The gold-like seal formed on the palm of the Great Solar Undying Body. Along with the whistling sound from the palm movements and dazzling golden lights, there were no signs of it holding back, as it collided against itself with the flaming meteor.

As the collision occurred, the entire universe seemed to be in complete silence. This went on for a short while, and a striking, eye-catching golden light shot out from the furnace, almost blinding everyone present.

In fact, all heaven and earth seem to be soaked in this golden beam. A shockwave that was indescribable sent the furnace shaking, even more vigorously than before. It was hard to imagine how it could contain such daunting power.

Dang! Dang!

The loud sound rang continuously in a short and quick pulse. The pupils of the spectators constricted, as they saw a few cracking lines show up on the surface of the furnace.

"That furnace can no longer hold anymore!" Someone from the crowd cried out, loud, in horror, and the top powers retreated instinctively.

Boom!

As they were evacuating, the furnace finally exploded entirely, with daunting gold rays shooting out from a blaze of fire. The shockwave impacted everything within a thousand miles.

Pzzt!

The top powers around the Skeleton Hill were directly hit by that strong shockwave. They spat blood as they fled. One by one, bodies were thrown off of the hill, as the entire hill was beginning to collapse, due to the impact.

The heaven and earth were thrown into total chaos, all of the sudden. The shockwave went on for more than ten minutes, before it gradually dissipated. Among the ruins, devastated figures jutted out, watching the peak of the Skeleton Hill in shock.

They were eager to know who had won the final victory in this appalling battle. As they were gazing at the peak, their pupils constricted, and the sound of their collective gasping in disbelief filled the air.

Both Sovereign Celestial Bodies were standing opposite each other on

the peak of the hill, each closed to a crumpled state. They were so dim, it seemed like they were going to vanish at any time. Fluctuating on top of their heads, the Spiritual Energy had been weakened down to its minimum.

They stared at one another, a trace of blood dripping off from their mouths. Then, almost at the same time, they erased it from their lips.

Bang!

The Sovereign Celestial Bodies had reached their limits, bursting out of thin air. Such an earth-shaking confrontation actually ended up with the result of both sides being defeated and wounded. Hence, neither side gained in this war!

Chapter 783: Snatching Food from the Jaw

Bang!

When the Sovereign Celestial Bodies burst into fragments in the air, Mu Chen and Liu Yan were both shaken. They stumbled backward, looking embarrassed as they fumbled.

Mu Chen could hardly stabilize himself, as he traced the blood off from the side of his mouth slowly. He reinstated his appearance, returning back to his long black hair and dark pupils, as he withdrew himself from the state of heart demon.

He looked calmly at Liu Yan, yet at the same time, he was taken aback by Liu Yan's ability. At first, he thought he could use 200,000 units of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid to catalyze the power from the second sun of the Nine Sun Super Power.

It should have been sufficient to suppress Liu Yan, but it turned out that Liu Yan was not someone who was easy to deal with, since he could defend the Heavenly Sun Golden Seal that was activated with the power of the two suns.

While Mu Chen was taken aback, he did not know that Liu Yan was having his upturning moment, as his body trembled, with shock, horror, and disbelief in his eyes. This result was clearly unacceptable for him.

Even against any Grade Four Sovereigns in the past combats, the battles were considered to be done deals, whenever he sent out his Heaven Incinerating Feather. So, he was sure that Mu Chen would definitely be doomed this time, when the Heaven Incinerating Feather was out.

However, the end result was not what he had expected. Mu Chen, who was supposed to be dead, retaliated at the final moment. It was so powerful, that even Liu Yan felt extremely threatened by it.

If it had not been for the power, which the Heaven Incinerating Feather had released, he could not have defended the blow. He knew that, if he had not persisted, the outcome would not have been two wounded men,

but rather, one who was wounded, and one who was probably dead!

"How could this be?!"

Liu Yan was looking pale and murmuring, as his mouth was twitching. After a while, he could not hide the hatred in his eyes, as he looked at Mu Chen. At the bottom of his heart, he had a desire to remove him, once and for all.

Mu Chen's performance in the combat had posed a significant threat to Liu Yan. This young chap was not even at his same age, yet he displayed remarkable combat capacity, which did not pale beside him. Given another one or two years of cultivation, Mu Chen would definitely surpass him.

Liu Yan then understood the reason why the Daluo Territory would allow a mere Grade Three Sovereign to attend the Dragon-Phoenix Rift. Given his current combat capacity, even a Grade Four Sovereign could hardly beat him.

"Do you want to kill me now?"

Mu Chen had discovered the intense killing desire erupting from Liu Yang's eyes. He smiled subtly and said, "Do you even have the strength to do it now?"

Although he suffered from a setback, he was certain that Liu Yan had reached his limit, too. Liu Yan was staring at Mu Chen with his cold and relentless eyes. He gritted his teeth, as his eyes were flickering, then he gradually clenched his fist.

"Boom!"

Just as his eyes were flickering, a loud thud was heard, and a colossal silhouette descended from above, having been thrown off the peak of the Skeleton Hill.

As Liu Yan looked over, a tinge of horror surged on his face. That silhouette belonged to a gigantic python, with scales all over its body. It was soaking in a pool of blood, dispersing an evil aura that indicated how fearsome it was.

However, all the scales on this fearsome creature were fragmented, and blood was streaming out, coloring the peak of the hill in red. There were no signs of vitality on its body.

Ssst!

The top powers, who were watching this scene unfold, from outside of the Skeleton Hill, all took a deep, collective breath. They could not help but shiver, as they recognized the corpse as being the Scarlet Blood Python in that pool of blood.

And, there was only one Scarlet Blood Python here, ranked ninth on the Dragon-Phoenix Record, from the Snake Shrine named Scarlet Blood. That is to say, the Scarlet Blood Python, which had lost all its vitality on the peak, now was Scarlet Blood?

But, wasn't Scarlet Blood dead?!

This horrifying situation not only sent chills down Liu Yan's spine, but even those top powers, who were away from the Skeleton Hill, had their hairs standing on end. Although Scarlet Blood was only ranked ninth in the Dragon-Phoenix Record, even Liu Yan felt intimidated by it, especially if he had to fight against it.

He could probably win against the beast, but to actually slaughter the python, that could be something very tough for him. Moreover, beasts with such a combat power could be terrifying, especially if they decided to retaliate with the last blow.

Mu Chen was staring at the corpse of the gigantic snake. But, before he could say anything, a petite figure appeared on top of the snake's body.

Cai Xiao was stepping on the head of the enormous python with her bare foot. As she squatted elegantly, patting the python's head gently, a colorful snake wandered off from her sleeve, biting into the head of the gigantic python.

Ssst!

The gigantic body was drying up at a speed that was visible to the naked eye. Within a short period of time, there was nothing left, except for a

dried-up snake corpse. Numerous spectators, who witnessed this scene, were dumbfounded.

The colorful snake lifted its head with satisfaction, and flicked its tongue at Cai Xiao. Looking very pleased with it, she then stroked its head gently, before it slipped lazily back into her sleeve again.

After executing the unusual moves she had performed under the watchful eyes of these people, Cai Xiao stretched her body. Her slender waist and her S-line body curves were particularly tempting. But none of them dared to look at her without any respect, for they knew that the most appalling person there, was the mysterious and beautiful young lady.

"Is it over?"

Cai Xiao lifted her head up, as she took a glance at Mu Chen and Liu Yan. She smiled at Mu Chen and said, "I didn't want to kill it, but it kept shooting its mouth off, so ..."

Mu Chen twitched his mouth, and gave a hollow laugh. Scarlet Blood was indeed unlucky. It could verbally abuse anyone, at any other time, but treating this young lady casually, was indeed asking for it.

"Not settled with him yet?" Cai Xiao turned to Liu Yan, asking. But, as she took a glimpse, Liu Yan got uptight, and stepped back, his eyes filled with vigilance and alertness.

"Shall I do it instead?" Cai Xiao was smiling radiantly.

Shoo!

As soon as she finished her sentence, Liu Yan did not even wait for Mu Chen's reply, before he retreated at the speed of lighting. In the blink of an eye, he had already withdrawn out of the Skeleton Hill.

That decisiveness stunned Mu Chen, too, causing him to wonder. So this fellow is afraid of losing huh...

As much as he would like to keep Liu Yan there, he did not stop him from fleeing, since he could not do so in his current condition.

"Mu Chen, just you wait! We are not done yet!" Liu Yan shouted out his

final words from afar. Then, without any hesitation, he disappeared into a ray of light.

Mu Chen could not be bothered about him at all. Instead, he focused on the remaining top powers, who were still outside of the Skeleton Hill. As soon as their eyes met his, they could not help but take a step backward with wariness.

Having witnessed the earthshaking battle between Mu Chen and Liu Yan, no one would dare treat him like a regular Grade Three Sovereign anymore.

"Is there anyone, who would want to fight for this Dragon-Phoenix Pool with us?" Mu Chen swept his glance across them, asking with a deep voice.

All of the top powers were looking at each other. But, they all decided to back off reluctantly. Mu Chen must have depleted all of his energy during the fight with Liu Yan, yet despite that, he still had a more daunting and mysterious young lady beside him, who could slaughter a beast like Scarlet Blood easily. That was the most intimidating part of the situation at hand.

Therefore, no matter how reluctant it was to give up on the Dragon-Phoenix Pool, it was wiser to choose to stay alive versus having the unique Dragon-Phoenix Pool all to themselves. Mu Chen was feeling relieved, when he saw that all the top powers were backing down.

All of them were incredibly talented people, and if they were really desperate to make any moves, it would also mean trouble. Now, if they could back down at present, it would be a win-win situation for both of them.

Cai Xiao clapped her hands, when she saw them backing off, then said, "Let's activate the Dragon-Phoenix Pool now!"

Mu Chen nodded in agreement. He grabbed the Demonic Ape, which he had slaughtered, and with a swing of his blade, he slit its blood vessel. The warm, fresh blood from the ape infiltrated the Dragon-Phoenix Pool, like a stream or river.

Grooooo...

The fresh red blood gathered swiftly within the Dragon-Phoenix Pool. Within a minute, the fresh blood had filled the entire half of the pool, and the rich smell of blood filled the air.

Weng...

As the blood filled the Dragon-Phoenix Pool, the pool gave off a slight trembling sensation. An ancient trace of light could be seen in the bony white pool. The singing of the Dragon and the Phoenix came loudly from the pool, bursting forth into song throughout the earth.

Gululu...

Within the pool, blood blobs started appearing, popping up, as though they had been boiling. A silhouette of a dragon and a phoenix seemed to be swimming in the pool.

As the silhouettes moved, the thick blood was clearing itself up, evaporating all of its impurities, and removing the stench from the blood. Within a short period of time, the Dragon-Phoenix Pool transformed from a blood pool into a divine pool, releasing mystical power into the air.

Cai Xiao stood by the pool, smiled at Mu Chen, and said, "Go ahead and enter."

"Aren't you coming?" Mu Chen asked, startled. The pool was ready, and if they were to enter now, they could reap great benefit from it.

"I just need some Real Dragon Blood. But the blood here is not as thick as I thought," Cai Xiao casually mentioned. She swung her hands and said, "Don't be so wishy-washy! Hurry!"

"Thanks," Mu Chen said, as he held up his fist with gratitude. He was ready to enter the activated Dragon-Phoenix Pool.

Bang!

Just as he was about to move, a mountain of skeletons suddenly exploded at the peak of Skeleton Hill. Fragments of the bones burst out into the air. A blurry shadow shuttled between the spaces among these

fragments, catching ahold to the entrance of the pool, before Mu Chen could reach....

The look of Mu Chen changed all of the sudden, as a deep killing desire rose in his eyes. Someone was trying to snatch his food from his jaw!

Chapter 784: Prince of Netherworld

Swoosh!

A black figure swept toward the Dragon-Phoenix Pool. The change of events stunned Mu Chen, but he reacted quickly. When he noticed the figure, he automatically attacked him. His palms were glittering with formless lightning, and the Netherworld Thunder Heart instantly thundered.

Throughout the years, Mu Chen had gone through many life-and-death battles, and he was very experienced in combat. Within this short span of time, he did not use his spiritual energy. He used the quickest method, which was the unfathomable Netherworld Thunder Heart.

Boom!

When the shrieking thunder sounds resounded, dark light swirled out from the black figure and speedily devoured the thunder.

However, the movements of the black figure suddenly stopped.

This pause made the figure lose his opportunity. Cai Xiao disappeared into thin air, and in the next instant, she re-appeared before the black figure. She quickly tapped her fingers.

White light shot out from her fingers. The space surged and was torn apart.

The black figure dared not take Cai Xiao's attack lightly. He curved his fingers, and dark light surged as cold energy swirled out.

Bang!

When the fingers touched each other, visible power rippled out. The water in the Dragon-Phoenix Pool billowed. Cai Xiao's body shook, and she took a step back.

Swoosh!

The black figure shot backward. He landed on his toes, and found his balance. The dark light dissipated and revealed his face.

The people around Skeleton Hill speedily turned their focus in the same direction, and people started to scream in shock.

"That is... the Prince of Netherworld from Netherworld Palace!"

Upon hearing the screams, Mu Chen turned and looked as well. The black figure stood in the air. He had long hair and was good looking, but he had a cold look to him. His eyes were sharp like a knife and seemed to pierce through anyone who looked at him.

His face was calm and expressionless. There was no trace of panic as he faced Cai Xiao. The way he presented himself was much better than how Liu Yan had.

"You are the Prince of Netherworld, ranked number two in the Dragon-Phoenix Record." Mu Chen stared at the man in black and frowned. He said flatly, "Given your status, you should not be doing stealthy things like this."

"Why not? I use the simplest method for the greatest gain." The Prince of Netherworld laughed. He looked sharply at Mu Chen and said, "Liu Yan is not a weakling. I enjoy watching internecine fights."

"Too bad you have failed to profit from our fight." Mu Chen smiled. He was wary of the Prince of Netherworld, as he could feel that he was extremely dangerous. He was like a serpent in the dark. When he struck, it would be deadly.

"It is indeed a pity." The Prince of Netherworld nodded in agreement. He had used a special means to hide himself. He had planned to kill Mu Chen and Liu Yan when they were seriously injured so that he could seize the Dragon-Phoenix Pool. However, he had not expected Cai Xiao to appear and spoil his plan.

The Prince of Netherworld shifted his gaze to Cai Xiao and said, "Who are you? I have never heard of you among the younger generation in North Territory."

Cai Xiao ignored him and pointing outside Skeleton Hill said, "If you do not leave now, you will not have the chance to do it later."

The Prince of Netherworld squinted and stared at Cai Xiao. Dim lights seemed to be surging in his eyes, and space warps started to form around him.

When Cai Xiao saw it, she simply raised her brows.

The top powers watching outside Skeleton Hill were filled with excitement and anticipation. They would stand a chance if the Prince of Netherworld and the mysterious girl fought each other.

Although the mysterious girl was powerful, the Prince of Netherworld was not an easy target to deal with. Their fight would be more intense than the fight between Mu Chen and Liu Yan.

As the air surrounding Skeleton Hill became still, the fluctuations around the Prince of Netherworld suddenly died down. He retreated, and the fight that everyone was anticipating did not take place.

The Prince of Netherworld did not lose his mind over the Dragon-Phoenix Pool. He knew that it would be difficult to snatch it away from the mysterious girl. He found her unpredictable.

As for Mu Chen, he did not have any regard for him. Although Mu Chen had fought with Liu Yan and his skills were remarkable, they were not up to a level where people of his caliber would feel threatened.

Since he was not confident about contending for the Dragon-Phoenix Pool, he did not see a need to persist. Time was precious, and there was more than one Dragon-Phoenix Pool.

The Prince of Netherworld was decisive and immediately retreated. He could not be bothered with how others would view him.

Before he left, he looked sharply at Mu Chen. His cold look sent a chill up Mu Chen's spine, but it did not bother him. The relationship between Daluo Territory and Netherworld Palace had been extremely bad. Previously, the geniuses of Netherworld Palace had killed the geniuses of Daluo Territory the moment they saw them in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift, causing Daluo Territory to be humiliated. This naturally soured their relationship.

Even if they had not met today, Mu Chen knew that in the future, the Prince of Netherworld would attack him when he had the opportunity.

"It seems like I have additional problem," Mu Chen muttered to himself. He had just defeated Liu Yan, and the Prince of Netherworld suddenly appeared. Including Fang Yi from Divine Pavilion, whom he had met in the Dragon-Phoenix Old Town, Mu Chen seemed to have offended the few top people listed in the Dragon-Phoenix Record.

Mu Chen simply shrugged helplessly. The demand had exceeded the supply. If one wanted to grab hold of the opportunity, he would have to offend others. This was human nature.

Mu Chen looked in the direction the Prince of Netherworld had disappeared into, and then turned to look at the people who stood to gain from the situation. When they saw Mu Chen looking at them, they retreated sulkily.

Mu Chen ignored those people who were trying to take advantage of the situation. He nodded slightly at Cai Xiao and immediately got into the Dragon-Phoenix Pool, which was filled with divine spirit.

Buzz!

Mu Chen totally immersed himself in the Dragon-Phoenix Pool. Thick white mist shot up into the sky and as the mist spread out, it covered the peak of Skeleton Hill.

Shadows of dragons and phoenixes seemed to flash within the white mist. Their cries rang out.

A strange, pleasant scent spread out from Skeleton Hill. Those who smelled it felt as though their spiritual energy had become unsettled. It was a feeling from within the bloodline that enticed people to have the desire to come into contact with it.

Many of the top powers were envious, but they dared not dash to the peak of Skeleton Hill. They knew that if they did, they might be killed by the mysterious girl.

They believed that the girl who had killed Scarlet Blood would not show

them any mercy.

As all of them were drooling over Skeleton Hill, Mu Chen was sitting cross-legged at the bottom of the Dragon-Phoenix Pool. The water formed by the blood of the Demonic Ape covered Mu Chen's body. The warm feeling speedily healed him of the wounds from the fight with Liu Yan. He recovered the spiritual energy that he had used up earlier as well.

Buzz. Buzz.

At the bottom of the Dragon-Phoenix Pool, ancient light runes were glittering on the bones of the real dragon and real phoenix. They then swam toward Mu Chen and covered him up.

Dark golden traces of blood could be seen indistinctly in the ancient light runes. They contained extremely strong vitality. These traces of blood were the Blood Essence that had been left behind by the real dragon and real phoenix!

As the ancient light runes covered Mu Chen's body, his body gradually shone with golden light.

Cai Xiao looked at the golden light coming from the bottom of Dragon-Phoenix Pool and nodded slightly. The Dragon-Phoenix Pool indeed contained the Blood Essence of the real dragon and real phoenix.

"It is still not thick enough, though."

Cai Xiao waved her hand, and the ancient light runes from the Pool moved toward her. They then hung before her. She formed seals with her hands, and a Crystal Compass about the size of a palm appeared before her.

She kept the ancient light runes in the Crystal Compass.

The Crystal Compass shook, and the needle pointed at the Dragon-Phoenix Pool in front of her. White light shone forth, and it seemed to be checking the power of the Dragon-Phoenix Pool.

This seems useful. When Cai Xiao saw it, she smiled. The Crystal Compass was made from the scales of the real dragon. It could sense any

similar bloodline in the heavens and the earth, even if they were far away.

Let's see which place consists of the most Blood Essence of the real dragon and real phoenix.

Cai Xiao formed a seal with her hands and gently touched the Crystal Compass. The Crystal Compass buzzed, and the needle spun crazily. After a few minutes, the needle started to slow and pointed toward the northwest.

As the needle pointed, a bright beam burst out from the Compass. The ray was so powerful that it outshone the brightness of the Dragon-Phoenix Pool in front of Cai Xiao!

"I have found the big fish."

Cai Xiao was stunned for a while, and then she smiled. Her smile was truly captivating.

Chapter 785: Pseudodragon Body

The thick white mist covered the peak of Skeleton Hill. A strange, nice scent captivated the people, and the cries of the dragon and the phoenix resounded in the heavens and the earth. Everyone could feel a strong vitality gathering on the peak of Skeleton Hill.

After the Dragon-Phoenix Pool had been stimulated, the Blood Essence that had been left behind by the real dragon real phoenix had come to life again. If one could merge its vitality into his bloodline, it would be a great help to his cultivation.

However, not every ordinary person could have the opportunity to experience this. Although those who were surrounding Skeleton Hill knew that they no longer had the chance to get into Dragon-Phoenix Pool, many top powers were still reluctant to leave. They were simply not yet resigned to their fates.

However, they could not do a thing to change the situation. They did not have the courage to fight over the Dragon-Phoenix Pool, so they could only look on with envy.

Time flew by, and the mist on the peak of Skeleton Hill became thicker. It remained in this state for almost an hour, before suddenly, there was a whiz...

Roar!

The cries of the dragon and phoenix resounded, causing everyone to be stunned. All of them lifted up their heads to see a golden beam shooting up towards the horizon. Those who were within a radius of 1,000 miles could clearly see it.

Golden Dragon-Phoenix symbols circled around the golden beam. As they whizzed around, they raged like a storm in the heavens and the earth. Although the real dragon and real phoenix had passed away, the might of the Sovereign Divine Beasts continued to exist.

As the dragon symbols and phoenix symbols circled around, they

seemed intolerable of each other, as if they were wanting to devour each other. It was like the Primordial Age, when the real dragon and real phoenix had once had the life-and-death battle in this very place. After they had passed on, it seemed like their Blood Essences were still unable to get along with each other.

After the dragon symbols and phoenix symbols had attacked each other for some time, the dragon symbols finally triumphed over the phoenix symbols. Before the phoenix symbols had been completely devoured, the bright golden beam gradually shrunk and disappeared back into where it first came from.

By that time, the Dragon-Phoenix Pool had dried up. It seemed to have been exhausted. A figure sat cross-legged quietly at the bottom of the pool.

His body was shimmering with golden light. Even his clothes seemed to be made of pure gold. Golden dragon symbols entered into his body, causing his body to shake. He then opened his eyes.

Roar!

His dark eyes were now filled with golden lights. Deep in his eyes, there seemed to be the shadow of a dragon. A strong oppression exuded from Mu Chen, spreading out in all directions. Even the sturdy bottom of the Dragon-Phoenix Pool cracked.

The golden lights in Mu Chen's eyes glittered for a while, then dissipated. He moved his body to instantly appear outside the Dragon-Phoenix Pool. He shut his eyes, feeling intensely the power that was surging in his body.

The power completely filled his limbs and bones. He was like a wild beast that had been released, ready to display its destructive power. This power was even stronger than the Ennea Rune Lightning Physique!

Mu Chen clasped his fingers and felt the blood rushing in his body. It was as though it was trying to break through the restrictions of the body and was about to explode!

He moved his thoughts, and the golden light underneath his skin surged again. The golden light surrounded his body, while the golden dragon symbols danced around. The cries of a dragon continued to sound out.

Are these dragon symbols? It looks like I have obtained the Pseudodragon Body!

Although the Dragon-Phoenix Pool was formed by the bones of the real dragon and real phoenix, which meant that it also contained their Blood Essences, when the two powers met, the stronger power would devour the weaker one. To determine which was stronger, one would have to see whether there was more Blood essence of the real dragon or the real phoenix.

Judging by the golden dragon symbols, the answer was obvious. There was more dragon Blood Essence in this Dragon-Phoenix Pool.

There are only 32 dragon symbols...

Mu Chen looked at the golden dragon symbols that were circling around his body and frowned. According to what he knew, the most powerful Pseudodragon Body had 99 dragon symbols. The Pseudodragon Body that he had just cultivated only had 32 symbols. It seemed like the Blood Essence of the real dragon and the real phoenix was not extremely strong in this Dragon-Phoenix Pool.

Mu Chen shook his head in pity. He immediately felt that he was being too greedy. Although there were only 32 dragon symbols in the Pseudodragon Body, it was still more powerful than the Thunder God Physique.

Moreover, the Dragon-Phoenix Rift had just started. He still had the opportunity to look for more Blood Essence of the real dragon. He would then be able to strengthen his Pseudodragon Body. Hence, he might ultimately be able to turn the Pseudodragon Body into a real dragon body!

The golden dragon symbols on Mu Chen's body disappeared. If he were to fight with Liu Yan again, Liu Yan would definitely lose. Although the Dragon-Phoenix Pool was unable to help him enhance his spiritual energy, his combat force had enhanced to almost another level.

"Is this the Pseudodragon Body?" Cai Xiao appeared beside Mu Chen, sizing him up. She was a bit shocked. After that, she said with a smile, "You look different, but something is amiss. If you are able to cultivate the real dragon body, you will be very powerful."

Cai Xiao was extremely sharp. At one glance, she was able to sense the vital energy and blood within Mu Chen's body, as the vitality in the Blood Essence of the real dragon had entered into Mu Chen's blood of recent days!

Although it could only allow Mu Chen to possess the vitality of the Sovereign Divine Beast, it was much more powerful than a human body. After all, Cai Xiao had high expectations. For her to make such a comment, it showed that the real dragon body was truly extraordinary.

Mu Chen smiled and looked at the white mist that was dissipating from the peak of Skeleton Hill. He asked, "Did you manage to locate the other Dragon-Phoenix Pools?"

He sounded eager. After he had experienced the wonders of the Dragon-Phoenix Pool, he had developed a taste for its uniqueness. It was just as Cai Xiao had said, there were too many flaws in this Pseudodragon Body. If he could have enough Blood Essence of the real dragon, he could repair the flaws in order to perfect it.

Many people must be fighting over the other four Dragon-Phoenix Pools by now. If he wanted more real dragon Blood Essence, he had to go to the one that had not yet been found.

He would have to depend on Cai Xiao for this. As Cai Xiao saw Mu Chen's eager look, she smiled. She held out her hand and a golden compass appeared.

"I have found a Dragon-Phoenix Pool."

Mu Chen was elated when he heard what Cai Xiao had said.

"However, ..." Cai Xiao paused for a while. She played with the compass and said, "This is a bit unexpected."

"Why? Have you found a Dragon-Phoenix Pool that is weak in power?"

Mu Chen was stunned. The first thought that came to his mind was the worst case scenario.

"It is the opposite of what you think," Cai Xiao shrugged her shoulders and said. She looked grave. "I have found a Dragon-Phoenix Pool that is extremely powerful. If I have guessed correctly, this is where the heads of the real dragon and real phoenix are.

Hiss.

Mu Chen was stunned and gasped. He knew that the head and the heart were the most important parts of the Divine Beasts. The Dragon-Phoenix Pool that was before them obviously had some ordinary parts of the real dragon and real phoenix. However, it was nothing compared to the head.

The Blood Essence of the ordinary bones alone could allow the Pseudodragon Body to possess 32 dragon symbols. Hence, the power of the Dragon-Phoenix Pool that was formed by the heads of the real dragon and real phoenix must be extremely powerful!

One might even be able to cultivate the real dragon body before he stepped onto the Dragon-Phoenix Platform! This was tempting, and Mu Chen's eyes were burning with desire. However, he quickly recollected himself.

He looked at Cai Xiao and asked, "Is it very dangerous?"

As Cai Xiao looked at Mu Chen, she could see that, although Mu Chen had a burning desire, he remained level-headed. She smiled and found him praiseworthy.

She then nodded her head lightly and said, "It is extremely dangerous. The one guarding it is far more powerful than the Demonic Ape. If you are not careful, you may lose your life."

Mu Chen was shocked. Even Cai Xiao, who was so powerful, was wary of it. It seemed like this place of the superb Dragon-Phoenix Pool must be extremely dangerous.

"What is your plan?" Mu Chen frowned and looked at Cai Xiao.

Cai Xiao stroked the colorful snake that was resting on her shoulder, then said with a smile, "Of course, I will go. It has what Xiao Cai needs." She smiled at Mu Chen and said, "You don't have to go with me. The people must be still fighting over the other four Dragon-Phoenix Pools. If you go now, you may still have a chance to get into one of them."

Mu Chen curled up his lips. It must be extremely dangerous, for even Cai Xiao to be wary of the place. It might be wiser for him to go to the other four pools..

However, the thought of just leaving Cai Xiao in a lurch after he got what he wanted, this was something that he could not bring himself to do. Mu Chen lifted up his face and smiled broadly. He shook his head at Cai Xiao and said, "I will go with you."

Chapter 786: Dragon-Phoenix Deity Fruit

In the sky above, an ancient aura spread out. The white clouds seemed to have been affected by the aura. They became dense and froze in the sky like a painting. It looked mysterious.

Swoosh!

Two streamers darted across the sky, and the white clouds were torn apart. In the twinkle of an eye, the two streamers disappeared into the horizon. Their speed caught the attention of those who were searching for the treasures in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift.

Everyone could sense the strong spiritual energy fluctuations from the two figures, and no one tried to hinder them.

After taking over one Dragon-Phoenix Pool, Mu Chen and Cai Xiao left for the superb Dragon-Phoenix Pool. Their target was not the other four Dragon-Phoenix Pools. Although Cai Xiao had warned Mu Chen that it would be extremely dangerous, he had decided to go with her.

Mu Chen approached Cai Xiao and asked her, "How far are we from the Pool?" They had traveled a great distance over almost half a day.

"Another four hours," Cai Xiao replied.

Mu Chen was shocked upon hearing this. He could feel that they had started to enter a remote area in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift. It seemed that no one had entered the old-growth forest. The smell of strange, ferocious beasts was getting stronger.

Cai Xiao suddenly stretched out her hand and grabbed Mu Chen's wrist. Her touch was cold and tender. Multicolor lights shone out from her and turned into a shield that covered the two of them.

Cai Xiao looked at Mu Chen and said, "We may encounter some strange beasts that have strong senses. Although you are able to hide your spiritual energy, they may still find you. It is better that you stick to me."

Mu Chen nodded. It was better to avoid the strange beasts if they could. If not, it might affect their plan.

Swoosh!

As the multicolor lights covered them, their speed suddenly increased, and they sped across the horizon.

In the next four hours, Mu Chen saw how dangerous the Dragon-Phoenix Rift was. Strange beasts were all over the old-growth forests. Some were as huge as the mountain, and they all looked ferocious.

Along the way, Mu Chen could feel some fluctuations that scanned past them. These were from the strange beasts with strong senses. If not for Cai Xiao, they would have found Mu Chen if he had used his spiritual energy to hide from their senses.

This ancient area was not to be trifled with.

Although there were strange beasts along the way, Mu Chen and Cai Xiao did not get into any danger. After four hours of traveling, Cai Xiao's speed gradually decreased. They had entered into the heart of the remote area.

Mu Chen's face turned grave, as he could feel an oppression fluctuating in the air. The air had slowed down, and the spiritual energy had become dense. This area was different from the other places. The forest and mountain were shorter, as they had been covered by the oppression.

Cai Xiao looked around and said with a smile, "It looks like this is the place." The superb Dragon-Phoenix Pool must be there since there was such an oppression around.

Mu Chen frowned and said, "There do not seem to be any strange beasts here." He realized that the area was extremely quiet, and he could not feel any spiritual energy fluctuation from any strange beast. There seemed to be no life force in the place.

Cai Xiao nodded. "That is because no strange beast dares to enter."

She then pointed to a place that was deep in and said, "Let's go. The superb Dragon-Phoenix Pool is deep within. Be careful. This place is dangerous."

Mu Chen nodded and both of them darted in. They were cautious, and the spiritual energy around them surged. They were ready for any unforeseen circumstances.

When they had gone deep in, they were surprised that there was nothing to stop them. When they crossed over a hill that was in front of them, they were shocked.

Before them was a big piece of land that had cracked. A very deep hole that seemed to be bottomless appeared in the ground. It was like a dark hole where the demons lived. The look of it made one shiver.

Mu Chen and Cai Xiao were not taken aback by the dark hole, but by the two huge objects that were hanging above the dark hole.

The two huge objects were white in color, mixed with a bit of dark golden light. It seemed savage.

They were the head of the dragon and head of the phoenix! The two heads were bigger than the mountain. They were biting each other. Even though they had been reduced to bones after such a long time, their bitterness continued to pass through time and space.

Hiss.

Mu Chen gasped as he watched the scene before him. He muttered, "It is indeed the heads of the real dragon and real phoenix..." The Skeleton Hill that had been formed by the bones of the real dragon and real phoenix was nothing compared to what he saw before his eyes.

Although the two of them were far away from the heads of the dragon and phoenix, the domineering spirits of the heads swirled toward them like a windstorm that caused Mu Chen to have difficulty breathing.

Cai Xiao looked at the heads of the dragon and phoenix and darted toward them. When Mu Chen saw it, he quickly followed.

As they went near the heads that were hanging above the dark hole, they felt shaken.

The bitterness of the dragon and phoenix as they bit each other swept

toward Mu Chen and Cai Xiao. One could imagine during the Primordial Age, the real dragon and real phoenix must have had an earth-shattering battle.

They were comparable to two Heavenly Sovereigns.

"Where is the Dragon-Phoenix Pool?" Mu Chen asked, looking around for their target.

Cai Xiao pointed at the place where the dragon and phoenix bit each other. A bone pool appeared indistinctly at their point of contact. The pool was filled with golden water. As the water churned, Dragon-Phoenix symbols rose up. The cries of a dragon and phoenix resounded indistinctly.

A strange, thick scent exuded from the area. It caused Mu Chen's blood to be in turmoil, and golden lights shone forth from his body. The Pseudodragon Body that he had cultivated had activated by itself.

Mu Chen let out a deep breath and tried to suppress the turmoil in his body. He had never expected the Pseudodragon Body to be so deeply drawn to the Dragon-Phoenix Pool.

The earlier Dragon-Phoenix Pool was nothing compared to the one that was before him.

"The Dragon-Phoenix Pool is not the most precious thing here," Cai Xiao suddenly said. She looked at the spot where the dragon and phoenix bit each other.

Mu Chen turned and fixed his gaze on it. Golden lights were surging, and a golden plant sprang out from the bones of the real dragon and real phoenix. Although the trunk of the plant was small, it was sturdy like a dragon.

Three beams of golden light were hanging on the golden plant. The three beams were golden fruits, and they were unique. They were shaped in such a way that the dragon and phoenix intertwined with each other. They were the Dragon-Phoenix Fruits.

Out of the three Dragon-Phoenix Fruits, only two had ripened. The third

one had just budded. It looked underripe. Its fluctuation was far beneath the other two that had ripened.

The three Dragon-Phoenix Fruits were rare treasures!

Mu Chen's eyes were burning with desire as he looked at the three Dragon-Phoenix Fruits. He could feel that they were the most precious treasures there. They contained the essence and power of the heads of the real dragon and real phoenix.

The superb Dragon-Phoenix Pool was not as powerful as the Fruits.

"Those are Dragon-Phoenix Deity Fruits. They have been formed after the Blood Essence of the real dragon and real phoenix completely merged together. They are rare treasures," Cai Xiao said with a smile. She was elated when she saw them.

Mu Chen licked his lips. As he was about to move forward, he suddenly saw the golden water in the Dragon-Phoenix Pool starting to ripple. A water beam shot up into the sky and cracked. A golden figure burst out and tore the space apart. It suppressed Mu Chen with its palm.

The palm consisted of the roaring of a dragon. It was so powerful that it could suppress the heaven and earth.

A horrifying oppression engulfed Mu Chen, and he turned pale. Before he could react, Cai Xiao stepped forth. Colorful spiritual energy burst out, and she quickly threw out a blow. It hit the golden palm.

Bang!

The big palm and small palm hit hard on each other and formed space warps. Visible fluctuations raged out crazily.

As the shockwaves raged, Cai Xiao's body shook, and she moved back several steps.

Mu Chen was stunned upon seeing this. This was the first time that he had seen Cai Xiao being beaten. They had met a strong opponent.

Chapter 787: Guardian of the Golden Armor

The violent spiritual energy's shockwave was raging, distorting the entire space. At the area above the superb Dragon-Phoenix Pool, a golden shadow stood still quietly. The shadow was surrounded by golden rays of light.

This shadow possessed the posture of a human being and was wearing a thick and heavy golden armor. The golden light on the armor was sparkling brightly. It had clearly been made out of dragon scales, which caused it to be extremely durable and firm. Hence, it would be difficult to destroy it.

A golden battle spear rested in the shadow's hands. On its arm, the veins were curling like a dragon. Its large palms possessed extremely sharp nails, similar to a dagger.

It quietly stood still, high up in the sky. Underneath the golden armor, which was enveloping its whole body, a pair of emotionless gold eyes looked out indifferently at Mu Chen and Cai Xiao.

Mu Chen glanced at this golden armored shadow with a solemn expression. Soon after, he appeared beside Cai Xiao and asked, "Are you alright?"

He was clearly shocked, as he understood how mysterious and despotic Cai Xiao was. Since the beginning of their journey, there was rarely anyone who could match her as an enemy. But here, after directly confronting this golden armored silhouette, she actually was operating at a disadvantage. So, of course, this had shocked Mu Chen.

Cai Xiao shook her beautiful head, her pretty eyes similarly staring at the golden armored silhouette. A hint of seriousness swept across her bewitching and attractive face as she said, "Looks like it is the guardian of this place. Be careful, it seems to be very skillful."

Mu Chen nodded. Even someone as tough as Cai Xiao was forced to be

at a disadvantage. If he was in her position, he would probably find it more difficult to bear.

"Intruders, leave or die!"

The silhouette that was sparkling with golden light was now staring at Mu Chen and Cai Xiao with its emotionless gold eyes. Suddenly, an extremely hoarse voice could be heard. Although the voice wasn't very loud, the murderous intent within it was enough to make Mu Chen shiver slightly in fear.

"It actually possesses spiritual intelligence?" Mu Chen shared a look with Cai Xiao, both seeing the surprise in each other's eyes.

Within this Dragon-Phoenix Rift, although the strange animals were aggressive, the majority of them did not have spiritual intelligence, much less possess the ability to speak.

Clearly, this Guardian of the Golden Armor was quite unusual. After attaining spiritual intelligence, its combat force would have certainly rose along with it. This was the main reason for Mu Chen's headache at the moment.

"Leave!"

The Guardian of the Golden Armor pointed his golden battle spear at the two from afar. Its monstrous killing intent immediately whipped into an extremely frightening hurricane.

Mu Chen glanced at Cai Xiao, the both of them furrowing their brows. Considering all of the trouble it had taken just to get here, added to the fact that the most valuable treasure was now right in front of their eyes, there was no way that they would leave so easily.

"How arrogant you are, especially for a mere humanoid monster, without any flesh and blood," Cai Xiao said coldly. Her beautiful eyes were locked on the Guardian of the Golden Armor. Meanwhile, between her lily-white hands, a rainbow-colored spiritual energy was beginning to surge out.

Boom!

The murderous intent in the Guardian of the Golden Armor's eyes was surging violently. Without another word, it stepped out. Immediately, the space was distorted, while its shadow directly turned into a bolt of golden lightning, heading straight for Cai Xiao!

"Hmph!"

Cai Xiao snorted coldly. Then, suddenly, a rainbow-colored longsword emerged in her lily-white hands. Without even flinching, she retaliated, shooting forth this new rainbow-colored spiritual energy. Immediately, the whole sky was rendered magnificent!

Clang! Clang!

Two shadows interlaced in the sky. As they came together, the sound of gold and iron resounded through the air.

When the spear and sword collided, the terrifying attack of spiritual energy swept out like a hurricane, causing the thick layer of clouds above the horizon to tear open. This sort of collision was extremely intense!

Mu Chen's expression was solemn, as he gazed at the intense battle in the sky. It was difficult to determine who was gaining the upper hand in this confrontation, but the Guardian of the Golden Armor's murderous aura was so vigorous, as if it were a killing machine. If this sort of battle were to continue on, it would be difficult to predict the end result.

Clang!

In the sky, the tip of the spear and sword made contact. Due to the terrifying power of the spear and sword, they both became extremely curved upon impact. Suddenly, in the next moment, they recovered, but the force that had erupted from it had already caused the two shadows to be blown away.

Boom!

The two shadows were then shot by that huge force into two mountain peaks far above the top of the Dragon-Phoenix area. Suddenly, the whole mountain peak began to collapse and huge rocks poured down.

Cai Xiao swept over the spiritual energy around her, turning all of the huge, falling rocks into powder. Her lily-white hand gripped the longsword tightly, its tip slightly tilting.

There was a sharp look shining in her beautiful eyes. She had not expected that this golden armored shadow would be so troublesome.

She reckoned that this golden armored shadow's strength was within the level of a Grade Five Sovereign. There was not much of a gap between this level and the capabilities which she could draw upon. However, the golden armored shadow had on that golden armor, which was made out of dragon scales, making his defense especially astonishing!

Cai Xiao gritted her teeth. If it wasn't because of the issue with her physique, whereby her father had set up many seals within her, the task of exterminating this Guardian of the Golden Armor would have been a piece of cake.

Bang!

Over at the collapsed mountain peak, huge rocks were suddenly blown off. At that very moment, a golden shadow stepped out, taking slow but heavy footsteps.

The Guardian of the Golden Armor's emotionless eyes were locked on to Cai Xiao. Along with its footsteps, what seemed like streaks of golden dragon symbols were emerging from its armor. At the same time, rays of light were actually converging behind it. One could faintly make out that these rays of light had turned into what seemed like an enormous pair of phoenix wings!

With a flap of the phoenix wings, the ground that it was standing on was immediately crushed. Like a spider web, streaks of cracks were rapidly spreading, until they permeated a few thousand meters worth of area.

At this moment, there was a change in Mu Chen's and Cai Xiao's expressions, for they both felt the shocking speed of which this Guardian of the Golden Armor's strength was rising.

"That's the Real Dragon Rune and the Real Phoenix Wings..." Mu Chen

couldn't take his eyes off of the dragon symbol on top of that Guardian of the Golden Armor's dragon scaled armor, as well as the wings behind it.

There was a slight expression of disbelief in his eyes. How could the strength that the Real Dragon Real Phoenix possessed appear on its body at the same time? Weren't those two strengths completely incompatible?

"It was born by absorbing the Blood Essence of a Real Dragon Real Phoenix. Thus, it should possess their powers within its body," Cai Xiao explained with a low voice.

"What should we do?" Mu Chen asked promptly. Judging by its posture, this Guardian of the Golden Armor seemed like it was going to use its killing blow at any moment. That level of spiritual energy fluctuation was rather frightening!

"Help me to block it for a moment. I need some time, okay?" Cai Xiao's eyebrows furrowed.

Then, with a slight flash in her beautiful eyes, she looked over at Mu Chen. With the way she was staring at him with those eyes, Mu Chen feel the blood in his body flowing quicker.

This was because he knew how tough the Guardian of the Golden Armor was. Its strength far surpassed even that of Liu Yan! An opponent with such capability was just too powerful, making Mu Chen realize that he really didn't know if he could block it.

He looked over at Cai Xiao's eyes, which were as bright and clear as an obsidian gem. Finally, he took a deep breath. It seemed like no man had ever been able to deny her requests.

Of course, at this moment, he really couldn't cower regardless. Thus, he nodded lightly, facing Cai Xiao's gaze.

Cai Xiao saw this and smiled sweetly. That smile was devastatingly beautiful. Then, she slowly closed her eyes. Once they were closed, a rainbow-colored rune appeared on her delicate body in a flash. It was clear that she also knew that, if she did not use a few hidden tricks, it would be impossible to dispose of this Guardian of the Golden Armor.

A rainbow-colored rune wrapped itself around Cai Xiao's body. At the same time, the land began to tremble slightly.

Boom!

However, just while Cai Xiao was gathering her energy, that Guardian of the Golden Armor actually shot over, descending with a thunderous footstomp on the unstable earth.

It was extremely fast. In fact, whenever it flapped its phoenix wings, it immediately caused the sand to fly about and the stones to hurtle through the air.

When Mu Chen saw this scene, there was a change in his expression. This Guardian of the Golden Armor was rather cunning. Clearly, it was also aware of the danger that Cai Xiao posed. Thus, it did not plan to give her any time to gather her energy.

But the current Cai Xiao still had her eyes tightly shut, as if she could not sense the Guardian of the Golden Armor's rushing towards her with that menacing murderous aura.

"Damn it."

There was an irregular change in Mu Chen's expression, before he finally gritted his teeth and swore. Soon after, the expression in his eyes suddenly turned chilly. With a flash of his stature, he directly appeared in front of Cai Xiao. A majestic spiritual energy erupted without reserve, sending a surge of golden light and immediately summoning the Great Solar Undying Body. At the same time, the Great Meru Demonic Pillar had also appeared, bringing along with it an intensely ominous aura.

"Boom!"

The Great Solar Undying Body held the Great Meru Demonic Pillar in its hands as golden light exploded. Then, with a terrifying force, it smashed down mercilessly on the Guardian of the Golden Armor.

At this moment, the earth was beginning to rupture. However, that golden shadow did not seem to be obstructed at all. The phoenix wings behind it suddenly spread wide open. Then, like the edge of a knife, it

collided with the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, which was currently crashing down.

Boom!

The spiritual energy fluctuation surged forward, engulfing everything and causing the Great Meru Demonic Pillar to be directly blown off and completely separate itself from the control of the Great Solar Undying Body. The power of this Guardian of the Golden Armor was truly terrifying!

At this moment, Mu Chen's face was pale, but the coldness in his eyes still fiercely surged out. With a shift in his state of mind, the huge golden fist of that Great Solar Undying Body rumbled down ruthlessly on the Guardian of the Golden Armor.

There were no emotions within the gold eyes of the Guardian of the Golden Armor. With a tremble of the golden battle spear in his hands, it turned into a spear aurora and shot out, directly causing streaks of cracks to appear on the huge golden fist of the Great Solar Undying Body.

As for its figure, it continued to rush out in an unstoppable manner, while that pair of gold eyes remained locked on Cai Xiao. Clearly, it did not seem to be paying any attention to Mu Chen, who was attempting to stop it.

While Mu Chen stood at the top of the Great Solar Undying Body's head, he looked at that golden light that had just swept over violently. He gritted his teeth, his eyes becoming extremely fierce. No matter what, he was going to stop this creature!

Mu Chen formed a seal with both hands. Then, at the center of The Great Solar Undying Body's eyebrows, as well as at its chest area, two golden scorching suns rose up. The suns' bright golden light immediately gathered together, then rushed into Mu Chen's body.

"Nine Sun Super Power, the Power of Two Suns!"

The golden light on Mu Chen's body appeared as if it was going to turn into liquid and envelop him. As the golden light permeated the air, Mu

Chen stamped his feet once again. Immediately, the sound of a dragon's cry could be heard and streaks of golden dragon symbols bore out from under his skin, enlacing his whole body.

"Pseudodragon body!"

With two extremely powerful forces having been exhaustively initiated, the current Mu Chen was not only surrounded by golden light, but was also entrenched with dragon symbols and an aura that was absolutely astonishing. Then, he swept downwards vigorously. At that moment, it was as if the god of war had descended.

Below it, the Guardian of the Golden Armor's figure, who was originally bolting out violently, finally became slightly sluggish. For the first time, that pair of emotionless gold eyes actually looked over at that golden shadow that was diving over.

It was clear that it had finally detected a dangerous sign...

Chapter 788: One Finger Swallow Sky

The dazzling golden light rainbow dove down from the sky. Its power and extreme brilliance almost shattered the space, and the land instantly collapsed.

The Guardian of the Golden Armor, who was at the center of collapsing land, stopped sprinting. Its ruthless, golden eyes looked up for the first time, directly facing the diving golden light.

The power at this level was enough to attract its attention.

Creak.

It clenched its fist, which was covered with dragon scales. As the dragon scales rubbed against each other, there was an unexpected ear-piercing sound as a tremendous strength shot out, instantly making the space around its fist ripple with visible waves.

Its golden pupils locked onto the golden light without a single trace of emotion.

Boom!

As the golden light rainbow was diving down, Mu Chen's eyes, however, reflected the image of the Guardian of the Golden Armor's indifferent eyes. The Guardian of the Golden Armor's ruthless eyes were enough to break those without a strong mind.

Mu Chen obviously was not that kind of person. He held his gaze on the Guardian of the Golden Armor. In that pair of pitch black eyes, not only was there no fear, but instead, keenness as sharp as a blade surged out of them.

Roar!

At his back, the Sovereign Sea emerged with the cries of the dragon and elephant. There were pairs of dragons and elephants instantly flying out that quickly transformed into the Dragon-Elephant Halo in his palm.

"Cut it up!" Mu Chen roared like thunder, and all of his energy

accumulated in his palm, making the Dragon-Elephant Halo spin madly. All of the sudden, the space trembled until there were black cracks in it.

Swoosh!

The Dragon-Elephant Halo whistled down in a flash like lightning, and mercilessly swooped down towards the Guardian of the Golden Armor's Celestial Spirit Cover. Sharp rays scattered from the contact, instantly creating deep cracks on the land.

Roar!

The Guardian of the Golden Armor's pupils reflected the image of the Dragon-Elephant Halo swooping down, and at the same time, its throat let out a beast-like growl. Suddenly, it clenched its fist, and the dragon scales on its arm glowed. It let out a punch with explosive power like an erupting volcano, clashing directly with the Dragon-Elephant Halo.

Dong!

At the moment of collision, bright lights soared into the sky, making even the daylight dim. Blinding golden lights almost shrouded an area around a few hundreds of thousands of feet square.

Bang! Bang!

The land below the Guardian of the Golden Armor was collapsing non-stop. Mu Chen and the Guardian of the Golden Armor's eyes were radiating cold rays, with each combatant having fierce killing intention.

Boom!

A burning sun seemed to slowly rise up from the collision point, and in the next moment, it exploded, instantly releasing a terrifying shockwave that rippled ragingly. Mu Chen and the Guardian of the Golden Armor's bodies trembled vigorously before being sent flying back by the shock wave.

Bang!

Two figures flew out backwards in a sorry state, passing right through numerous mountain peaks along the way. The mountain peaks began to

collapse non-stop, and loud rumbling sounds echoed between the sky and the land.

The violent golden light gradually dissipated while smoke ascended from the land to the sky.

As the smoke ascended, an embarrassed figure climbed out from under the rubble of a faraway collapsed mountain peak. Mu Chen's head was covered in dirt and dust, and that handsome face of his was also slightly pale. Blood was dripping down from his fingers into his right palm, painting the gravel red.

Apparently, that terrifying collision was not exactly a piece of cake for him.

Mu Chen slowly wiped away the blood from the corner of his mouth, but his eyes were quivering. He finally understood the horror of the Guardian of the Golden Armor after fighting it physically.

If it were not for the Pseudodragon body he had, one of his arms might have been shattered.

"What a tough opponent to deal with." Mu Chen gave a wry laugh, but when his laugh died off, countless boulders suddenly exploded into dust with a bang.

As the dust was falling, a golden-armored figure slowly emerged. It was holding its golden battle spear as usual, and the golden glow around its body was also still bright. That pair of golden eyes locked onto Mu Chen emotionlessly.

Faint cracked dragon scales could be seen on its slightly lifted arms. Apparently, Mu Chen's attack did have some effect.

However, when Mu Chen looked at that figure, he got the creeps. That attack before could be considered his strongest attack, but it only left the Guardian of the Golden Armor with some cracked dragon scales on its palm. Clearly, this was far from what Mu Chen had aimed for.

"D*mn it!"

Mu Chen cursed with gritted teeth. Compared to Liu Yan, this Guardian of the Golden Armor was countless times more troublesome.

Boom!

The golden pupils of the Guardian of the Golden Armor stared at Mu Chen. In the next instant, it vigorously dashed forward, crushing all the boulders along its way into dust. The golden battle spear in its hand was aimed towards Mu Chen.

It finally lifted up its spear against Mu Chen. Previously, it apparently did not think it was needed against this weak-looking youngster. It seemed like the attack before changed its opinion of Mu Chen.

It now viewed Mu Chen as a sufficiently dangerous enemy.

However, Mu Chen clearly did not wish it to raise its danger level to this extent. Therefore, he turned on his heels and retreated as fast as lightning.

Fighting head on with the Guardian of the Golden Armor again would definitely be an extremely reckless action.

Boom!

However, the Guardian of the Golden Armor did not seem like it was letting him go. It rampaged towards him, instantly crushing anything in its way into dust.

Golden light surged in its body, and its speed suddenly skyrocketed, causing afterimages to emerge.

Mu Chen saw this and instantly had a big change in his facial expression. Not only had the Guardian of the Golden Armor accelerated its speed, but the space in front of it was also getting torn apart. A blurry golden shadow appeared in a flash. That golden battle spear seemed to have no hesitation. It directly transformed into a golden rainbow, and ruthlessly flew towards his throat.

The spear throw was extraordinarily stunning. Whether it was its speed or trajectory, it had reached a perfect degree. Therefore for a moment, Mu Chen could only look helplessly at the sharp spear tip that quickly

magnified in his eyes, and he actually could not dodge it.

As horror surged from Mu Chen's eyes, he suddenly gritted his teeth. He unexpectedly extended his hand to grab that spear. In that instant, it was all he could have done. Even if he paid a high price, it was better than that spear piercing through his throat.

However, the instant Mu Chen's palm almost touched the spear tip, the space in front of him suddenly strangely twisted. A colorful sword tip came out from that virtual space, precisely striking the spear tip.

A metallic sound rang out, and spiritual light surged from the contact. The golden battle spear unexpectedly trembled, and the Guardian of the Golden Armor shook until he was knocked backwards.

The Guardian of the Golden Armor took over 100 steps back to balance its body. It lifted its head as its golden eyes stared at the space in front of Mu Chen. The space at that location was warping, and a beautiful figure gradually emerged.

Mu Chen also lifted his head to look at that slim, beautiful figure. Cai Xiao was still the same old Cai xiao, but her originally black hair had turned into a beautiful, multi-hued color.

Her colorful hair swayed with the wind, and its beauty was incomprehensibly mysterious, giving people a chill in their hearts.

Cai Xiao slightly tilted her head, and her beautiful eyes also turned colors. As she stared at Mu Chen, there was a smile on her charming face.

"Well done," she said with a smile. In her clear voice, there was admiration that she could not hide. Apparently, she was surprised that Mu Chen could do this much.

Mu Chen gave a wry laugh and sat down on a rock. As his tense body completely relaxed, pain suddenly surged in his body. He curled the corner of his mouth and said, "I will leave the rest to you."

A hard collision with the Guardian of Armor obviously made his blood surge. If Cai Xiao had not come in time, he would have been badly injured.

The valiance of a Grade Five Sovereign was so much stronger compared to Liu Yan's Grade Four Sovereign level.

"Leave it to me."

Cai Xiao's beautiful head nodded, and then she turned towards the Guardian of the Golden Armor in the distance. In her colorful eyes, there were dim lights accumulating and suddenly, a colorful light spot emanated from her body.

Roar!

The Guardian of the Golden Armor roared as if it were a beast. It locked onto Cai Xiao as its instinct told it that Cai Xiao was currently countless times more dangerous than before.

The Guardian of the Golden Armor's golden eyes seemed to glow. In the next moment, he suddenly dashed out. The golden battle spear in its hand surprisingly turned into a golden beam that seemed to be touching the sky. It released an indescriptible pressure.

In that golden light, it was as if shadows of the real dragon and real phoenix danced and wrapped around the spear. This power even made the sky and the land tremble.

Apparently, the Guardian of the Golden Armor was putting everything into this attack.

As Mu Chen watched this scene from a distance, he could not help but clench his fist. Can Cai Xiao really withstand this attack?

Under Mu Chen's anxious gaze, Cai Xiao's hair swayed in the wind as she slowly lifted her long, delicate finger. There was a lustrous white glow on her finger as white as an elephant's tusk. Its beauty would make anyone unable to avert their gaze.

However, it was this beautiful, thin, and delicate finger that emitted a seemingly fatally dangerous wave.

Cai Xiao moved forward with small steps. Her delicate fingers pointed out and directly but gently collided with the mighty golden battle spear.

In the instant of collision, her red lips parted slightly. It seemed like some mumbling resounded through the sky, causing continuous thunder.

"One Finger Shallow Sky!"

Chapter 789: Dragon-Phoenix Golden Armor

A slender, fair finger pointed in the air, hitting the golden spear that took the form of the real dragon and real phoenix. When the collision took place, there was a great silence.

Mu Chen fixed his gaze on the spot of the collision. He had expected a loud explosion to take place, but that did not happen. He saw Cai Xiao pointing in the sky, and suddenly, a dark spot started to spread out.

As the dark spot spread out, it looked as though a drop of ink had fallen into the water, and was spreading out quickly. In the twinkle of an eye, it had turned into a black hole, measuring about 100 feet wide.

The black hole was churning, as though it was trying to devour everything. Anything that fell into the black hole would be utterly destroyed.

Roar!

The golden spear exuded an astonishing readiness for war, carrying the roaring sound of the real dragon and real phoenix. The golden spear attempted to pierce through the black hole, but in actual fact, it had been sucked in by it, uncontrollably.

The Guardian of the Golden Armor was roaring furiously. Golden lights were surging crazily, struggling to break free, but to no avail. Cai Xiao had displayed her great power, which took everyone by surprise.

The black hole churned, as Cai Xiao pointed at it. Gradually, it devoured the golden spear, before it finally disappeared within.

Swoosh!

After the black hole had devoured the golden spear, it shrunk, becoming a mere black dot. It looked as though a black dot had stained itself onto Cai Xiao's fingertip. Cai Xiao pointed in the air again, and her fingertip instantly touched the forehead of the Guardian of the Golden Armor.

No sound had been heard, but the Guardian of the Golden Armor froze. Even the glimmering golden light had instantly dimmed down.

The trembling arm that had been covered by the dragon scales now lifted up, trying to grab hold of Cai Xiao. However, it was so weak, that it fell to the ground, together with its body. The majestic spiritual energy had dissipated completely.

Mu Chen was stunned by Cai Xiao. Her attack was extremely swift.

As Cai Xiao was watching the Guardian of the Golden Armor that was lying on the floor, her beautiful hair had resumed its color and silkiness. Her colorful pupils had also regained their original color.

Her body shivered, and she fell backward. Mu Chen swiftly caught her by her waist, and realized that Cai Xiao looked pale. She must have exerted too much strength, when she killed the Guardian of the Golden Armor in a split second.

"Are you hurt?" Mu Chen asked with concern.

Cai Xiao shook her head, as she stood up. Mu Chen let go of her arm, and did not linger in the softness of the touch.

"I am fine. Finally, I have killed it." Cai Xiao looked at the Guardian of the Golden Armor that was lying dead on the ground, then heaved a sigh of relief. If she could not kill it, they would have to retreat.

Mu Chen moved toward the Guardian of the Golden Armor, then carefully tapped it. He was stunned to hear that it sounded empty. When he opened up the armor, it was empty. The Guardian seemed to have disappeared into thin air.

"It has been devoured by my Heavens-devouring Finger," Cai Xiao casually said.

Mu Chen gasped upon hearing this, as this skill was extremely powerful. Cai Xiao was indeed mysterious and powerful.

"This is not an ordinary armor." Cai Xiao grabbed her hand, and a golden armor hung before her. The golden armor was made from the scales of the

real dragon, and was extremely sturdy. At the back of the armor were prints of wings.

"This armor contains the power of the real dragon and real phoenix..." Mu Chen came over, saying in shock. When the Guardian of the Golden Armor spread out its wings, it had relied on the armor to do it.

"This is good stuff," Mu Chen exclaimed. The Dragon-Phoenix Golden Armor consisted of the strong defence of the scales of the real dragon, and possessed the speed of the real phoenix. Even the top grade Divine Artifacts were not comparable to it. If word of this spread, many people would be eyeing to attain it.

"You are still ignorant of the real power of this Dragon-Phoenix Golden Armor," Cai Xiao said with a smile.

Mu Chen was stunned upon hearing this.

"The power of the real dragon and real phoenix are incompatible. You should know this better than me, since you have cultivated the Pseudodragon body. Although there are Blood and Essence of the real dragon and real phoenix in the Dragon-Phoenix Pool, they will attack each other. When the winner emerges, you can then absorb it."

Cai Xiao gently tapped on the Dragon-Phoenix Golden Armor and said, "This armor is different. It can merge the two powers together. I don't think the Guardian of the Golden Armor is very powerful. It can have the power of the real dragon and real phoenix, all because of this armor."

"You mean..." Mu Chen's eyes twitched, as they were burning with excitement.

"You are right. If you have this armor, you might be able to absorb the Blood and Essence of the real dragon and real phoenix. You will be able to cultivate the bodies of the real dragon and real phoenix at the same time... Hahaha, it will be more appropriate to call it the Dragon-Phoenix Body," Cai Xiao happily said.

"Dragon-Phoenix Body," Mu Chen repeated, as he licked his mouth. He had been able to restrain himself so far, but he was a little excited at the

moment. Ever since the Dragon-Phoenix Rift opened up, he had heard that there were people, who had acquired either the body of the real dragon or the real phoenix. However, he had never heard of anyone, who had acquired both at the same time. It seemed unrealistic to even think of it.

However, it seemed that there could be a possibility to achieve the impossible. At this thought, Mu Chen could not contain himself.

It took him quite a while to calm himself down. He looked at the Dragon-Phoenix Golden Armor, and then at Cai Xiao, and said, "You are the one who has killed the Guardian of the Golden Armor..."

He did not get carried away by his desire. If it had not been for Cai Xiao, he would not have come this far, let alone have had anything to do with the divine object.

"Take it. Don't be wishy-washy. If you had not helped me, I would not have been able to kill it. Moreover, although this armor is rare, I am not interested in it," Cai Xiao waved her hand, as she said this with a smile. She flicked her fingers, and the Dragon-Phoenix Golden Armor turned into a golden light, which then shot toward Mu Chen.

"You are very generous," accepted Mu Chen.

Although Mu Chen knew that Cai Xiao was making an excuse to give it to him, he shook his head, and did not argue with her. He stretched forth his hand to receive the Dragon-Phoenix Golden Armor, sincerely nodded at Cai Xiao, and said, "Thank you. In future, if you need my help, do feel free to come to me."

"Wow, you talk big," Cai Xiao looked at Mu Chen and teased him. Given her status, if she truly needed help, she did not think that Mu Chen would be of any help to her.

"I may not have the ability now, but who knows what will happen in the future!" Mu Chen stroked the cold scales on the armor and smiled. Although he sounded modest, Cai Xiao was shocked with his confidence. She could feel that he was not being conceited, but rather that he now had confidence in himself, as well as a great determination.

Who knows? Every dog will have his day!

Cai Xiao looked at Mu Chen for a while, then smiled. She nodded and said, "All right. It is quite a good deal for me to exchange the Dragon-Phoenix Golden Armor with a favor from the future super power."

Upon hearing this, Mu Chen smiled in embarrassment. If he had made such an empty promise to some others, they would have looked at him with disdain.

"It is time for us to reap the harvest," Cai Xiao said, as she turned to look at the Dragon-Phoenix Pool that was filled with golden water. She then looked excitedly at the golden plants at the further end. There were three Dragon-Phoenix Fruits hanging on the plant, and they were shimmering. They were undeniably the center of attraction.

Cai Xiao and Mu Chen looked at each other, before they moved their bodies. They instantly appeared before the golden plant, then reached out their hands to pluck the Dragon-Phoenix Fruit.

Whoosh!

At that instant, there was a space warp around the golden plant. The space warp was like a blade, which went past the plant. The three Dragon-Phoenix Fruit fell, then disappeared into the space warp. Both Cai Xiao and Mu Chen were stunned by this sudden change of events, and their faces turned cold.

"Why are the talents in the Dragon-Phoenix Record so sneaky?" Cai Xiao looked at the sky and sneered.

Swoosh!

Having said that, she disappeared and reappeared in the sky, throwing out a blow into the space.

Pom!

A palm appeared in the space, striking Cai Xiao's palm. A spiritual energy fluctuation swirled, and Cai Xiao was slightly affected, as after the battle with the Guardian of the Golden Armor, she was still not in her top

form.

However, it would be impossible to snatch the fruit away from her. She made a seal, and colorful lights appeared. She stabbed her finger into the space, then slashed across.

The space shattered, and a few drops of blood spewed out. A light figure flashed out, like lightning, so fast that even Cai Xiao was unable to catch up with it.

Cai Xiao looked coldly at the light figure that was now afar, and after a while, she flicked her fingers. Two golden Dragon-Phoenix Fruits appeared before her.

"He has snatched one away," Cai Xiao said, sounding cold. Although she had managed to retrieve two Dragon-Phoenix Fruits, she was mad at having lost one.

Mu Chen looked at the two Dragon-Phoenix Fruits, then heaved a sigh of relief. They were ripe. The one that had been snatched away had just set.

He turned to look at the spot where the light figure was, and instantly turned cold. Although he did not see the face of the light figure, he knew who he was.

In the Dragon-Phoenix Rift, only one person would know their whereabouts, be able to track them down, and be able to snatch the Dragon-Phoenix Fruit away from Cai Xiao. He was ranked number one in Dragon-Phoenix Record.

"It is he, Fang Yi of Divine Pavilion..."

Chapter 790: Refine

As the fluctuations in the space dissipated, the sky became calm. Cai Xiao looked unhappy. Although the Dragon-Phoenix Fruit that Fang Yi had snatched away had just set, she had yet to suffer any losses in all these years. She was furious, and determined to kill Fang Yi.

"This guy is cunning," Mu Chen said, frowning. He became more wary of Fang Yi, as Fang Yi had shown his great ability in snatching away the Dragon-Phoenix Fruit from Cai Xiao, despite the fact that Mu Chen and Cai Xiao had joined forces.

They had no idea how Fang Yi had tracked them down. Cai Xiao had been cautious, and she would have been on the look-out along the way. However, she had not realized that Fang Yi was trailing them. He had obviously found a new and effective way to deal with Cai Xiao, after having been found out previously.

Moreover, he was good at controlling himself. He waited patiently, while Cai Xiao was exchanging blows with the Guardian of the Golden Armor. After Cai Xiao had thrown out a powerful attack, her strength depleted, he suddenly struck.

However, he had underestimated Cai Xiao. At the crucial moment, Cai Xiao had managed to retrieve the two ripe Dragon-Phoenix Fruits from him.

Since he had been discovered, he would not dare return. For, if he returned, Cai Xiao would surely kill him.

"I will not let him off," Cai Xiao knitted her brows, declaring coldly. She did not intend to let this sneaky thief off easily.

Mu Chen smiled, as he felt sorry for Fang Yi. Although Fang Yi was a top power, being ranked number one in the Dragon-Phoenix Record, he would have a tough time dealing with Cai Xiao.

"You had better start refining the Dragon-Phoenix Golden Armor. This guy will have to think twice, if he dares to come back," Cai Xiao said,

gradually suppressing her anger as she turned to address Mu Chen.

Mu Chen nodded with a smile, not saying a word. Instead, he sat cross-legged on a rock beside the Dragon-Phoenix Pool, holding out his hands. The Dragon-Phoenix Golden Armor appeared on his palms, and shimmered with golden lights.

The Dragon-Phoenix Golden Armor was exquisite. The golden dragon scales were outlined with runes. The most astonishing thing was, they were not formed by man, but by the scales of the real dragon, and the feathers of the real phoenix. Coupled with the Blood Essence, they had created a divine object that possessed all the spiritual aura within the world.

As Mu Chen grabbed his palm, a spiritual energy with a purple flame appeared. It engulfed the Dragon-Phoenix Golden Armor, while emanating a high temperature. Thus, the heavens and the earth speedily became extremely hot.

As the Dragon-Phoenix Golden Armor was being burnt in the purple flame, Mu Chen bit the tip of his tongue, then spewed out a mouthful of Blood Essence. The Blood Essence fell on the golden armor, exploding with crackling sound upon contact.

Golden lights were surging on the Dragon-Phoenix Golden Armor, and the cries of the dragon, and sounds of the phoenix, rang out indistinctly. The golden lights attempted to stop the Blood Essence from intruding into the armor.

And yet, Mu Chen did not lose his patience. He controlled the purple flame, while continuously burning the Dragon-Phoenix Golden Armor. As time passed, golden liquid appeared on the surface of the armor, revealing that the dragon scales had been calcined.

Although the golden liquid was only the first level of defence on the Dragon-Phoenix Golden Armor, it was good enough for Mu Chen. He suddenly saw the Blood Essence and the golden liquid merging together, covering the Dragon-Phoenix Golden Armor.

After the two had merged together, Mu Chen's Blood Essence left a print

on the armor, which connected Mu Chen to the armor. It was not easy to refine a Divine Artifact. Fortunately, the Dragon-Phoenix Golden Armor did not have a master, and there was not much resistance from it.

Moreover, Mu Chen had cultivated the Pseudodragon body, and had the breath of the real dragon. The Dragon-Phoenix Golden Armor did not reject the Blood Essence Print, but freely accepted it. Hence, everything seemed to flow naturally.

After the print had been formed, Mu Chen felt connected to the Dragon-Phoenix Golden Armor. He was elated and couldn't stop smiling. He had not expected things to flow so smoothly.

As he waved his palm, the Golden Armor turned into a golden light and shot toward him. The golden light on its surface spread out, and in split seconds, a mighty and ferocious golden armor suit appeared, covering Mu Chen's body.

Mu Chen looked down at the armor suit that was now covering his body. The golden dragon scales were shimmering, exuding a powerful defence as they shone. Such a suit seemed to be able to withstand any forms of attack.

Mu Chen could feel the sturdiness of the armor. If he should fight with Liu Yan again, even if Liu Yan used the Heaven Incinerating Feather on him, Mu Chen knew that he would be unscathed.

"This is truly a treasure," Mu Chen admired aloud, and was filled with praises for the Dragon-Phoenix Golden Armor.

Its defence was stronger than the Thunder God Physique. However, one was good for his physical body, while the other was a sturdy object.

His mind moved, and the Dragon-Phoenix Golden Armor turned into a light, hiding inside his skin. Thus, he could activate the armor with his thoughts.

After the Dragon-Phoenix Golden Armor had been refined, Mu Chen stood up. His looked excitedly at the Dragon-Phoenix Pool, which was now filled with golden water. The Dragon-Phoenix Blood Essence in this pool

had surpassed the earlier pool that he had seen.

He would like to try merging the Blood Essence of the real dragon and real phoenix together, with the help of the Dragon-Phoenix Golden Armor. Then, he would be able to cultivate the Dragon-Phoenix Body that no one had ever cultivated.

"Hoof."

Mu Chen took a deep breath, then nodded gently at Cai Xiao. Without hesitation, he turned into a light figure, then dashed into the superb Dragon-Phoenix Pool.

Splash.

The golden light shot up, every drop of water seeming to be heavy. When the water fell down to the pool, huge waves were being created.

As Mu Chen was in the pool, he could feel his body become heavier. The water pressed on his body, causing him to feel sharp tingling sensations all over.

"This is indeed a superb Dragon-Phoenix Pool."

The situation was abnormal, but Mu Chen was not alarmed. In fact, he was elated, because he could feel the intensity of the Blood Essence of the real dragon and real phoenix in this pool.

The Blood Essence was free from the contamination of other strange beasts. Thus, it was needless for him to refine it. Its purity was much stronger than the blood of the Demonic Ape that he had used earlier to condense the Dragon-Phoenix Blood Essence.

Mu Chen had gradually sunk to the bottom of the pool. He seemed to have to endured the weight of the entire Dragon-Phoenix Pool. It was so heavy, that his skin started to crack. His flesh would have been torn to shreds, if he had not cultivated the Pseudodragon body.

He felt as though stacks of mountains had been pressed down upon him. Mu Chen slowly opened up his arms to make a seal. Then, his body started to suck in the Blood Essence.

Buzz! Buzz!

A whirlpool started to form at the bottom. The golden water whizzed around Mu Chen, and indistinctly, drops of dark golden liquid formed on the surface of his skin.

When the golden liquid was on his skin, it seeped through his pores, and instantly, dazzling golden light began to exude from Mu Chen's body. One could indistinctly hear the cries of the dragon and sounds of the phoenix.

Then, Dragon-Phoenix light pattern started to appear on his skin. However, the moment they appeared, they started to attack each other. They were intolerable toward each other, and hence, wanted to devour each other.

They have indeed started to devour each other.

Mu Chen took a deep breath, as he sensed what was happening. He moved his thoughts, and a golden light exploded, which then moved to cover his body with the Dragon-Phoenix Golden Armor.

The moment that the Dragon-Phoenix Golden Armor appeared, a golden dragon shadow loomed around his chest. Following that, a real phoenix shadow started to appear behind him.

Splash.

As the shadows of the dragon and phoenix appeared, the water in the Dragon-Phoenix Pool started to rage. The golden water in the pool split into two sides. One side seemed as though the birds were flying back to their nest, and swarmed toward the shadow of the dragon on the other side.

Roar!

A Dragon-Phoenix Light wheezed out to the sky, then turned into two golden lights. It then merged together on top of Mu Chen, with the heads and tails of the dragon and phoenix joined together. They had transformed into a rotating Dragon-Phoenix Divine Wheel.

Boom! Boom!

Two types of entirely different golden waters whizzed toward the Dragon-Phoenix Divine Wheel, flowing in. Glittering golden lights spread out, causing a pricking pain on Mu Chen's eyes. Although it was painful, Mu Chen opened his eyes wide, staring at the rotating Dragon-Phoenix Divine Wheel.

Golden lights spread out, and as more Dragon-Phoenix Blood Essence flowed into the Dragon-Phoenix Divine Wheel, it indistinctly started to glitter. As the golden light was shining brightly, Mu Chen suddenly squinted his eyes. He saw a drop of dark golden Blood Essence starting to form in the Dragon-Phoenix Divine Wheel.

He could also see a mini real dragon and a mini real phoenix moving around in the drop of Blood Essence. An obscure fluctuation exuded from the drop of blood.

Hiss.

Mu Chen took a deep breath. The drop of Blood Essence was able to contain both the power of the real dragon and real phoenix. The Dragon-Phoenix Golden Armor indeed had amazing power!

Buzz! Buzz!

The dark golden Blood Essence condensed together, as it dropped before Mu Chen's eyes. It then seeped into the skin in between his eyebrows.

Boom!

As the drop of Blood Essence seeped in between his eyebrows, Mu Chen's head seemed to have exploded. The ancient cries of the dragon and sounds of the phoenix penetrated through time and space, resounding far into the distance!

Chapter 791: Dragon-Phoenix Body

Roar!

The distant and ancient cries of the dragon and phoenix sounded as if they were from ancient times, having travelled across time and space to resound in Mu Chen's mind. At that moment, the blood in Mu Chen's body seemed to be boiling in response.

A bright golden light began to expand from the center of Mu Chen's eyebrows. Then, in just a short moment, it managed to spread to every corner of Mu Chen's body. Moreover, when that type of golden light penetrated into his flesh and blood, an extremely intense burning sensation was immediately emitted.

The burning sensation instantly caused Mu Chen to twist his face in pain. His body was continuously trembling, and traces of blood were actually beginning to escape through his pores.

At this moment, that one small drop of dark golden-colored Blood Essence had revealed its incomparable overbearance. It actually wanted to burn up all of the blood in Mu Chen's entire body!

This scene was clearly not what Mu Chen wanted to see. He was well-aware that, if the blood in his body were to be completely burnt out, it would cause him to be severely injured. At that time, the Dragon-Phoenix Blood Essence would take over. If this happened, he feared that even his flesh would be destroyed!

"No matter what you are, the moment you enter my body, you have to behave!" Mu Chen gritted his teeth, while his state of mind was being stretched to its limit. The spiritual energy in his body began to operate quickly, to the extent that even the speed of the flow of blood in his body was also quickening.

He knew that he could not cower in the slightest. No matter how overbearing this Dragon-Phoenix Blood Essence was, he was definitely not going to allow it to incinerate all of the blood in his body!

The golden rays of light were seeping into his flesh and blood, causing it to glimmer. But under Mu Chen's control, and along with the help of the spiritual energy, the blood in his body began its counterattack, once again suppressing the golden rays of light.

The two began a tug of war within his flesh and blood. With every clash, his flesh and blood squirmed. The immense pain that was being emitted caused Mu Chen to shout uncontrollably, as that kind of pain was as unbearable as the sensation of having one's flesh cut off!

But, at this moment, he had no way to retreat. In order to cultivate this Dragon-Phoenix Body, he would certainly have to bear all the risks.

If a person were to look at the exterior of Mu Chen's present body, they would notice that it was emitting blood red and golden colors. The two colors were continuously making contact, as if each wanted to corrode the other. Then, while the two rays of light were shining, Mu Chen's twisted face became particularly ferocious.

Although that Dragon-Phoenix Blood Essence was overbearing, it was still rather weak. Thus, once this type of tug of war face-off ended, the golden light finally subsided.

Just as Mu Chen was letting out a slight breath of relief, above his head and underneath the Dragon-Phoenix Divine Wheel, a golden light was blossoming once again. Then, another drop of Dragon-Phoenix Blood Essence fell down, landing into the center of Mu Chen's eyebrows.

"Bastard!"

Mu Chen only had time to mentally curse in rage, before he was hit by a surge of severe pain. He could only hold on tight to his previous state of mind, thus preventing his consciousness from being dispersed, due to that sharp pain.

In this current state, for the next few moments, Mu Chen began to savor the wonderful feeling of living death. With each new round of the tug of war, he could perceive that the flesh and blood in his body was as if it was being split into countless pieces. It was a similar feeling to the sensation of being cut again and again by a sharp knife.

In the end, he did not even know how long this tug of war had been going on. He did know that he had lost all of his senses, except for his consciousness, which was still a little foggy, however.

While Mu Chen was stuck in this condition of muddle-headedness, he was not aware that, within the flesh and blood in his body, along with each tussle, traces of dark golden wisps of blood were actually appearing. These wisps of blood could be found everywhere within the flesh and blood, slowly squirming outside of his skeleton. It was like an extremely terrifying life force was faintly emitting out from his very bones!

On the surface of Mu Chen's skin, there was also a surge of dark golden rays of light. Then, indistinctly, what seemed like finely and closely woven dark golden scales emerged from within his skin. At this moment, his whole body seemed to be going through a tremendous change.

Within this superb Dragon-Phoenix Pool, the water level of the golden waters in the pool was continuously decreasing. It was also at this time that the originally bright golden light began to dull. Clearly, it was due to Mu Chen's considerable absorption of the Dragon-Phoenix Blood Essence, which was contained within it.

Cai Xiao, who stood outside the Dragon-Phoenix Pool, looked at the pool. Along with the continuous decline of the water level, the shadow of Mu Chen, who was originally sitting cross-legged at the bottom of the pool, could also be faintly seen. Judging by this sight, it seemed that Mu Chen's training had not yet come to an end.

"Even the Dragon-Phoenix Blood Essence within this Dragon-Phoenix Pool is unable to support the formation of the Dragon-Phoenix Body," Cai Xiao mumbled to herself.

Soon after, she knit her long, shapely eyebrows and pondered slightly. Then, with a grip of her lily-white hands, a Dragon-Phoenix Fruit, which was interlaced with a dragon and phoenix, appeared in a flash. The bright light that erupted resembled a small sun.

The amount of Dragon-Phoenix Blood Essence that was required to cultivate the Dragon-Phoenix Body slightly exceeded Cai Xiao's

expectations. If she allowed this to go on, then perhaps it would be impossible for Mu Chen's training to reach the perfect level.

This was because the moment the Dragon-Phoenix Blood Essence runs out, he would then have to automatically stop his cultivation as well. If he lost this chance, it would be extremely difficult for him to get to this point again. Thus, at this moment, Cai Xiao took out a Dragon-Phoenix Fruit resolutely.

"I'm actually allowing you to have this advantage."

Cai Xiao glanced at Mu Chen, who was sitting cross-legged at the bottom of the pool. She lightly pouted her small rosy lips. Then, with a flip of her fingers, the Dragon-Phoenix Fruit immediately turned into a golden light. The light shot out in a straight line, directly landing into the Dragon-Phoenix Divine Wheel, which was just above Mu Chen's head.

The moment the Dragon-Phoenix Fruit entered the Dragon-Phoenix Divine Wheel, an overwhelming golden light shot out violently. Then, a golden light beam soared to the sky. The beam was so enormous, it could be clearly seen within the radius of a thousand miles.

Roar!

Within that enormous golden light beam, the ancient cries of a dragon and phoenix began to ring out, leisurely echoing throughout the world. It also seemed like the shadow of a Real Dragon Real Phoenix was spiralling within that light beam.

At the source of the golden light beam, Mu Chen was sitting cross-legged silently. At this moment, the dark golden-colored Dragon Phoenix Blood Essence was flowing downwards, like a small stream, directly covering his whole body within it.

Sizz.

When the Dragon-Phoenix Blood Essence flowed down, Mu Chen's skin felt as if it was being burned, as it let out a constant stream of sharp sizzling sounds. It like like this Dragon-Phoenix Blood Essence was not blood, but rather was recently melted magma of gold and iron.

Mu Chen's body was trembling wildly within the cocoon of the Dragon-Phoenix Blood Essence. The hoarse sound of a low roar, which was constraining endless pain, was continuously spreading out. Both of his fists were hitting the ground wildly, causing streaks of cracks to appear at the bottom of the Dragon-Phoenix Pool.

Cai Xiao's beautiful eyes were firmly fixed on that trembling shadow. She couldn't help but to curl up her lily-white hands into fists, ready to forcibly drag Mu Chen out of that state of cultivation.

She knew that, if this current situation were to continue, the moment Mu Chen failed to persist, even his flesh might be melted away entirely by the Dragon-Phoenix Blood Essence. It was obvious that they had underestimated the degree of the Dragon-Phoenix Blood Essence's overbearance.

"Hang in there," Cai Xiao said with a low voice. If she forcibly dragged Mu Chen out of his state of cultivation, then it was possible that all of the cultivation he had done thus far would come to naught. It would also mean that they would have wasted a Dragon-Phoenix Fruit as well. Thus, she would only make this unwise decision later, if she truly had no other alternative.

The golden light beam soared straight up to the sky. It continued on for a few hours, yet there still seemed to be no sign of decline. However, as time went on, that wild smashing sound also quieted down, and Mu Chen's body, which was initially trembling violently, also gradually calmed down.

When Cai Xiao saw the unmoving Mu Chen, she couldn't control the change on her pretty face. She saw that Mu Chen appeared to be weakening rapidly.

"You've failed?"

There was an irregular change in Cai Xiao's eyes. Soon after, she gritted her teeth and tapped her pale feet in the air, sending her immediately to the bottom of the pool. Then, her lily-white hands reached into the golden light in order to pull Mu Chen out.

"No...Don't..."

However, just when Cai Xiao was going to pull Mu Chen out from that golden light, an extremely hoarse and blurred sound could be heard weakly, echoing out from that light beam.

Cai Xiao's lily-white hand went stiff in mid-air. She firmly fixed her eyes on that glaringly bright golden light beam. In the end, she could only put down her pale foot lightly and retract her hand slowly. Mu Chen's tenacity had similarly exceeded her expectations.

The golden light remained bright for quite some time. Then,it finally began to show signs of weakening, shrinking little by little. Finally, it turned into a small ray of light before disappearing into thin air.

When that light beam had completely vanished, the situation at the bottom of the pool had also become clearer once again. Cai Xiao's beautiful eyes looked over and saw a layer of golden crystals covering a silhouette. That silhouette was like a mosquito within amber, as his body was rigid and his twisted face was solidified. At this moment, all of his life force seemed to have disappeared.

Cai Xiao kept her beautiful eyes firmly fixed on the shadow within that golden crystal layer. At this moment, even she could not detect Mu Chen's breathing. Thus, she did not know if the current Mu Chen had succeeded or failed...

Snap!

However, just when Cai Xiao could not hold back the uneasiness in her heart, and attempting to forcibly make a move to shatter that crystal layer, the surface of the crystal layer suddenly cracked. Then, the crack began to spread out rapidly! Within a short time, it had already caused the surface of the crystal layer to be crammed within it...

At the same moment within that crystal layer, Mu Chen's tightly shut eyes jolted slightly. Then, right before Cai Xiao's happy gaze, those eyes slowly opened.

Boom!

A bright golden light violently shot out form Mu Chen's open eyes. With a boom, the golden crystal layer immediately exploded, before turning into an overwhelming golden light that was shooting everywhere.

While the golden light was exploding and filling up the air, a golden shadow had soared up to the sky. Soon after, he howled to the sky. The howl was actually accompanied by the cries of a dragon and phoenix, too!

While the golden light was permeating the air, behind him, a huge dragon shadow and a phoenix shadow could be faintly seen. At this moment, a terrifying feeling of oppression permeated the entire world.

The golden shadow stood upright in the sky, accompanied by a dragon and phoenix. Just like a god, it was domineering without compare.

Chapter 792: Eight Dragon-Phoenix Pools

Golden rays dazzled in the sky and painted the clouds gold. It was an extremely remarkable sight.

A figure ascended to the skies.The golden rays radiated from his body. A gigantic Dragon-Phoenix Shadow soared behind him. Finally, it let out a thunderous, earth-shattering roar as it entered into his body and disappeared without a trace.

Mu Chen kept his head down. His palms gradually curled into fists. The force in his body surged like a flood; his powers had reached their peak. If they exploded, it would definitely result in extreme destruction.

Mu Chen had never experienced such a powerful physique. Even the strength of the Ennea Rune Lightning Physique could never be as powerful as this. He could sense that his body was undergoing a tremendous transformation; such strong vitality was truly unprecedented.

The torturous pain he had gone through previously was truly worth it.

Mu Chen's lips curled into a smile. With a single move, he appeared directly before the magnificent Dragon-Phoenix Pool. He stared at Cai Xiao and said earnestly, "Thanks."

Although he was previously in the deep state of training, he realized that the sudden powers of the Dragon-Phoenix blood essence did not originate from the Dragon-Phoenix Pool; they were actually from the extremely rare Dragon-Phoenix Fruit.

Had it not been for the Dragon-Phoenix Fruit, his training would definitely have ended midway. As such, not only would he have failed to train the Dragon-Phoenix Physique, he would have also wasted too many valuable items. He would have evidently suffered great losses.

Thus, he was truly grateful to Cai Xiao for all her help. Besides, they were partners in crime. He had gotten quite a few benefits throughout the journey.

Cai Xiao smiled nonchalantly. Her beautiful eyes started sizing Mu Chen

up in high spirits. She even gently pinched Mu Chen's shoulders with her delicate fingers as she said with a smile on her face, "This truly is the Dragon-Phoenix Physique. There are definitely some parts that are worth seeing."

She was experienced and knowledgeable; she also had a good eye. Naturally, she would be able to see the remarkable vitality possessed by Mu Chen's body. With the possession of such powerful vitality, so long as Mu Chen did not sustain any form of deadly injury, he would be able to heal with astonishing speed.

Mu Chen also nodded. He was extremely impressed with the powers and durability of the Dragon-Phoenix Physique. If he were to stumble upon Liu Yan now, it was evident that victory would be in his hands.

Since he was now equipped with the abilities of a Grade Three Sovereign coupled with the powers of the Great Solar Undying Body and the Dragon-Phoenix Physique, anyone whose abilities were lower than a Grade Five Sovereign would not be able to rival his powers.

"It seems like you already have a pretty great physique to begin with," Cai Xiao complimented him in a casual manner. If an ordinary person were to go through this form of training, it would be impossible for them to successfully cultivate the Dragon-Phoenix Physique, even with the aid of the Dragon-Phoenix Fruit. She was aware of the fact that the powers of the Dragon-Phoenix Body were extremely overbearing. Anyone with a frail physique would definitely not be able to withstand the powers of the Dragon-Phoenix's blood essence. Not only would their blood boil, but they would also not be able to protect their body.

Mu Chen smiled. Although the Thunder God Physique that he had trained was not the best technique to cultivate one's body, it still had its own advantages. The Thunder God Physique was able to further refine every single part of the body. Not only would it strengthen the body to an unimaginably powerful state, but it would also provide the cultivator with an extremely fit body, which would allow them to train other body-cultivation techniques and yield twice the results with half the effort.

After remaining silent for a moment, Cai Xiao said abruptly, "Although you have successfully trained the Dragon-Phoenix Physique, I'm afraid that you'll not be able to fully unleash its powers just by relying on the usual tricks."

"Hmm?" Mu Chen stared at her blankly.

"You are only human. You don't know the hidden potentials of the Dragon-Phoenix Body. In order to cultivate it to perfection, you'll have to rely on the cultivation technique of the Real Dragon Real Phoenix," said Cai Xiao.

"The cultivation technique of the Real Dragon Real Phoenix?" Mu Chen furrowed his brows. The Real Dragon Real Phoenix was the most powerful cultivation technique that existed within the Dragon and Phoenix clan. Even if their cultivation techniques were considered one of the best in their clans, not many forces nor powerhouses would have the guts to snatch the cultivation technique from them, even if they were to step foot in the Great Thousand World.

"Why do you need to snatch it? There are ready-made ones in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift, right?" Cai Xiao asked as she rolled her eyes at Mu Chen.

After listening to her claims, Mu Chen immediately understood. "Are you talking about the inheritance which was passed on by the Real Dragon Real Phoenix?"

Having said this, he could not help but to smile wryly. The Dragon-Phoenix Rift had been activated for so many years, but no one had ever truly possessed the inheritance from the Real Dragon Real Phoenix. Evidently, it would be an indescribably difficult task.

He was confident, and dared to pat his chest proudly and guarantee that he would definitely be able to obtain the inheritance. The Dragon-Phoenix Rift had attracted a sea of talents. All eyes were fixated on the inheritance of the Dragon-Phoenix. That included Fang Yi, the Prince of Netherworld, Su Biyue, and other privileged figures. The first two possessed terrifying abilities which could rival Cai Xiao's. It would definitely be a strenuous

task to be able to stand out from those people.

"What's wrong? Are you afraid?" Cai Xiao smiled.

"I'm not really scared, but there is indeed some level of difficulty." Mu Chen smiled and immediately looked into the distance. A burning spirit to fight started flickering in his eyes like fire.

"However... I'm quite interested to see for myself how strong the prominent figures among the youth of the North Territory truly are."

Cai Xiao stared at the young man who stood before her. She saw a burning ambition flickering in his eyes, the ambition to go through a journey to be the strongest in the world. Plus, he was firm about his ambition; there seemed to be no reason for it to waver.

This actually convinced her that perhaps in the near future, the young man in front of her would definitely be able to stand at the top of the world and look down upon the heavens and earth.

"Let's go. Regardless of whether you truly are bragging or not, the truth will be revealed soon on the Dragon-Phoenix stage."

Cai Xiao could not help but be a little dazed for a short moment. She immediately broke into a smile. Without saying anything further, she just uttered to herself, "He is a rather interesting fellow."

They had already enjoyed the pleasures of the Dragon-Phoenix Fruit and the Dragon-Phoenix Pool. Thus, the two of them did not remain there. They quickly packed their things and left immediately.

Looking back, they had already been in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift for more than a day. There was no difference between day and night in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift. Hence, time passed without them noticing it.

However, there was not much time left. Based on Mu Chen's prediction, five of the Dragon-Phoenix Pools that had already been explored had probably been long divided and possessed by the rest. However, he wondered who had taken over the other four remaining Dragon-Phoenix Pools.

However, since the Dragon-Phoenix Pools had been completely divided, numerous talented powerhouses would definitely be rushing toward the most significant event of the Dragon-Phoenix Rift, the Dragon-Phoenix Stage... Rumor had it that the Dragon-Phoenix Inheritance could be found there.

Mu Chen and Cai Xiao had their eyes on the same target as well.

Thus, in the following journey, the two of them did not make any stops. After clearly identifying the direction, they rushed there quickly. In a short span of four to six hours, they had left the remote place behind.

On their way there, Mu Chen stumbled upon various powerhouses who were traveling in groups. However, these fellows were not heading toward the Dragon-Phoenix Pools. They were actually working together to rob the powerhouses who were traveling alone.

In the Dragon-Phoenix Rift, only a minority would be able to obtain the Dragon-Phoenix Pools. However, there were tons of valuable treasures which could be found in them. Those were the targets.

However, when they were intending to rob Mu Chen and his partner, they had sealed their unlucky fates. Thus, Mu Chen managed to obtain the latest information from those unlucky fellows about the many incidents which had happened within a day in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift.

The information had evidently given him a great shock.

This was due to the fact that in the Dragon Phoenix Rift, there were actually eight Dragon-Phoenix Pools, including the one that he had possessed in the beginning!

Initially, the information had noted that there were only five pools that had been explored. Thus, in the span of a day, there was actually a lucky fellow who had also managed to find three unidentified Dragon-Phoenix Pools!

However, the eight Dragon-Phoenix Pools were now possessed by someone else. Mu Chen was rather surprised by the news. Among the eight Dragon-Phoenix Pools, he had taken over one of them. Su Biyue from

the Holy Mountain, Demon's Gate Snapper, and Ding Xuan from the Djinn Clan had each possessed a Dragon-Phoenix Pool for themselves as well.

Mu Chen was taken aback by the fact that there were four remaining Dragon-Phoenix Pools. The Prince of Netherworld had monopolized two of the pools while Fang Yi, the man who had snatched the unripe Dragon-Phoenix Fruit away from them, had actually possessed one of them. Meanwhile, the final Dragon-Phoenix Pool had fallen into Liu Yan's hands.

"These fellows do have some tricks up their sleeves. It seems like the six of them have cultivated the Psuedodragon Body or the Pseudophoenix Body. I just wonder what level they have achieved."

After hearing the news, Mu Chen could not help but to let out a sigh. The talented figures who were able to take part in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift were truly a part of the privileged.

"Among them, I'm afraid that Fang Yi and the Prince of Netherworld are the toughest nuts to crack," uttered Cai Xiao.

Mu Chen nodded. Although Fang Yi had only obtained a single Dragon-Phoenix Pool, there was still a Dragon-Phoenix Fruit in his hands. Although it was unripe, the blood essence of the Dragon-Phoenix contained in the fruit would be much more powerful than the powers of the Dragon-Phoenix Pool. Meanwhile, the Prince of Netherworld, who had obtained two Dragon-Phoenix Pools, had probably cultivated a rather powerful Pseudodragon Body.

"There will be a rather thrilling sight on the Dragon-Phoenix Stage."

Cai Xiao smiled excitedly. "In the Dragon-Phoenix Rift, there will be various treasures which will contain the blood essence of the Dragon-Phoenix. Thus, some lucky folks will be able to cultivate the Pseudodragon Body and the Pseudophoenix Body. These people will also qualify to step onto the Dragon-Phoenix Stage."

Mu Chen nodded and took a deep breath immediately after. He looked into the distance. In the hazy surroundings, he seemed to see a rather majestic ancient stone platform.

Meanwhile, in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift, all the privileged would congregate and compete with one another.

This battle would truly be filled with vigor and a fiery fighting spirit.

No matter what happened, the so-called Pseudodragon Body and the Pseudophoenix Body would always be in the shadow of the Dragon-Phoenix Physique.

Chapter 793: Congregation of the Strong

The Dragon Wind Territory, which was the very center of the Dragon-Phoenix Rift, was considered to be the most important area. Its importance stemmed from the fact that the Dragon-Phoenix Platform, which was rumored to be the heritage point of the real dragons and phoenixes, was located there.

Unlike the other areas within the Dragon-Phoenix Rift, where strange beasts were a common sight, not a single beast dared to dwell in this area. This was due to that fact that this was the actual place where the real dragon and real phoenix had fallen. Even after tens of thousands of years, the residual pressure still deterred the strange beasts, which had absorbed the Blood Essence of the dragons and phoenixes, from getting close.

In the past, this area was mostly filled with deathly stillness. Between the heavens and the earth, even the sound of the wind would be suppressed by the pressure surrounding the area into silence, turning the entire place into a land of death.

Now, however, the deathly stillness was nowhere to be found. Replacing it, was an uproar that reached up to the skies. In the heavens and the earth, which were filled with an ancient breath, innumerable figures approached from all directions, covering every side. They rained down upon the land like locusts, and the fuss and buzz from their commotion completely shattered the deathly stillness in the land.

These figures belonged to the many young powerful individuals who had rushed to Dragon-Phoenix Platform. While they were faced with many crises when they roamed the Dragon-Phoenix Rift, they had also received many rewards. And now, with such a number of them now here, there was a common understanding among them that, there would soon be held an earth-shattering contest!

As time went by, more and more powerful individuals gathered here at an alarming rate. The buzz of their collective commotion pierced the sky. All of the hubbub even turned over thick layers of clouds!

Fuishhhhh!

When a shocking amount of people were gathered, a fearsome spiritual energy fluctuation suddenly burst forth from afar. Immediately, a light scratched through the sky like a meteor, before it finally landed on a towering lone peak amid countless gazes.

Bam!

A figure emerged, stepping on the peak. Suddenly, a humongous crack extended from its feet. WIthin a few breaths, the cracks spread throughout the mountain. The mountain was falling apart, almost crumbling!

On the peak, the light dissipated, and a towering figure of fifty feet emerged. He was heavily clad in armor and held a great axe in his hands. A ferocious aura swept through the area. The figure was like a primordial savage giant, displaying its unmatched ferocity.

"That's Ding Xuan of the Djinn Clan!"

His appearance stirred up a commotion between the heavens and the earth. It was obvious that this person was not just some nameless fellow, but was a rather reputable person in the North Territory!

"It is rumored that this Ding Xuan has obtained a Dragon-Phoenix Pool, and also has attained a 'Pseudodragon Body'. Djinns are born fighters to begin with, and with the added strength of the 'Pseudodragon Body', it seems like his ranking is going to rise up quickly in the Dragon-Phoenix Record."

Fshiu! Fshiu!

While everyone was still busy chattering in awe, three consecutive wind-breaking sounds resonated from afar. Along with them, came a terrifying spiritual energy fluctuation.

Swishhh!

Two figures, one after another, sped towards the mountain from afar. They then intertwined swiftly in the air. Their fearsome spiritual energies swept forth and clashed into each other violently.

A violent Spiritual Energy Fluctuation rippled through the space. As it did so, the two figures retreated from the collision, each landing on a mountain top.

"Hoho, big sister Su has indeed improved a lot! You really know how to make me envious!" The light around the figure dissipated, revealing Hong Yu, who was wearing a bright red skirt. She covered her lips, while she spoke with a smile. Her smile was so charming and alluring! Many onlookers were stunned.

"Little sister Hong Yu is not simple either. It seems like your cultivation of the Devil Divine Spiritual Art has been completed, no?" On the other peak, the figure had also revealed herself. Donning a white skirt, she had a beautiful face and was emanating a holy aura. This beauty was obviously Su Biyue of the Holy Mountain.

As the two beautiful ladies emerged, the atmosphere between the heavens and the earth reached a climax in an instant. Numerous gazes were directed at them.

Among the ranks of the younger generation in the North Territory, they may not be the strongest, but their charm ranked even higher than Divine Pavillion Fang Yi, who was the first on the Dragon-Phoenix Records' rankings.

"I am also curious if big sister Su has completed her cultivation of 'Pseudopheonix Body'," Hong Yu said with a laugh, while cupping her red lips with her palm. Her flattering laughter could set people on fire with desire.

Su Biyue's lips curled into a nonchalant smile. "It seems like little sister Hong Yu would want to experience it in combat. Is that right?"

"I'd hoped to, but it would be a shame if someone took advantage of us were we to battle now. Not that I care for myself, but it'd be a pity if big sister's reputation as the Undefeated Saintess was tarnished," Hong Yu said with a sinister laugh.

These two talented and beautiful ladies had an obviously strange relationship! Although they referred to each other as "sisters", it was clear

that they were quite wary of one another.

Hearing this, Su Biyue shook her head lightly. She knew how hard it was to deal with Hong Yu, so she refrained from extending this conversation. As her gaze swept away from Hong Yu, she caught sight of Ding Xuan for a moment. She then turned and walked away.

The atmosphere was rather rowdy after the appearance of the two beauties. As time passed, many strong individuals with astonishing spiritual energy fluctuations began arriving as well. An indistinct pressure emitted from their bodies, which was a direct result of absorbing the blood essence of real dragons and real phoenixes.

Obviously, all of the powerful people gathered here had obtained at least one treasure that was imbued with the blood essence of dragons and phoenixes. Hence, they were all equally worthy of climbing the Dragon-Phoenix Platform.

Among the ranks of these powerful individuals, Liu Yan was the most noteworthy. Yet, after his appearance, his face was solemn. Standing alone on a mountain peak, his immense spiritual energy was howling around him. A terrifying killing intent permeated the air, striking fear into the hearts of the people.

In fact, his grim expression had even prompted many to whisper in secret.

"I heard that when Liu Yan was snatching a Dragon-Phoenix Pool, he lost to Mu Chen of the Daluo Territory... and even the Pool was snatched away by Mu Chen."

"Mu Chen? That kiddo whose power level is barely a Grade Three Sovereign?"

"That's the guy. Don't look down on him just because he's a Grade Three Sovereign. I was there to witness the battle between him and Liu Yan. That kid ain't ordinary! Even Liu Yan's Sovereign Super Power might not suppress Mu Chen. "

"You really can't judge a book by its cover, eh? No wonder the Daluo

Territory sent him here."

Overhearing the whispers, Liu Yan's face convulsed involuntarily, causing his expression to become even more gloomy. His killing intent also intensified greatly.

Both Su Biyue and Hong Yu could not help but look at the solemn Liu Yan. Of course, they had heard the news as well, but they did not believe it at first, as Liu Yan's reputation was too great. Compared to the almost nameless Mu Chen, most would place their bets on Liu Yan, were there to be a fight between the two.

But in the end, reality betrayed expectations. Liu Yan, who should have won, failed even in snatching the Dragon-Phoenix Pool.

"Mu Chen was unexpectedly strong." The expressions on the two ladies' faces were unchanged, but their hearts were shaking. When they were in the Dragon-Phoenix Pavilion, they were surprised at Mu Chen's courage. They had no idea that this young man, who seemed lesser than a Grade Three Sovereign, not only had incredible courage, but also had the capabilities to match!

As Hong Yu and Su Biyue were glancing around, their sights suddenly froze. They were staring towards two mountain tops in the distance. On the two mountain peaks, space seemed to have warped around itself, followed by two figures that were surfacing out of thin air!

Their appearances were so abrupt! It was precisely this sort occurrence that sent chills down every spine of the powerful individuals present.

"Those are..."

Countless gazes focused upon the two figures, as unsuppressed shouts and gasps of awe could be heard. Each and every one of the powerful individuals, who were effusing the smell of Dragon-Phoenix Blood Essence, had a grave look on their face. Their eyes were also clouded in extreme fear and caution.

"Those are... the ones ranked first and second on the Dragon Phoenix Records, Divine Pavillion Fang Yi and the Prince of the Netherworld!"

"They have finally appeared!"

The appearance of the two figures had caused many to cry out in fear and astonishment. Compared to everyone else, these two were the real heavyweights!

Under the focus of countless gazes, the two figures stood tall upon the mountain tops, their hands behind their backs. Their figures, black and white respectively, were now the most noticeable colors between heaven and earth. Any powerful individual would be dull in comparison to their present shining glory.

Among the younger generations in the North Territory, these two were considered to be monumental characters. Even talented prodigies would have much difficulty in surpassing them.

The whole heaven and earth quieted down upon their emergence. It felt as if their oppressive aura had permeated throughout the entire air space.

Fshhhiuu!

However, before this freezing oppression lasted for too long, a rushing sound of wind from the sky broke the silence. Two more figures zipped past the skyline as the crowd watched on. Before the two figures could land, an icy, crisp voice echoed from one of them.

"How dare you show your face, you surreptitious wretch! You thought I couldn't take you down?"

As the crisp voice rang out, the figure seemed to have made a hand seal. A finger pointed in the air, and space was torn apart in an instant. A rainbow-colored light flew out, racing through the skies like a thunderbolt.

Innumerable gazes followed the rainbow-colored light, and many powerful individuals took in sharp breaths simultaneously. They had realized that the end of the rainbow-colored light was aimed directly at the first in the Dragon Phoenix Records ranking, Divine Pavilion Fang Yi!

Who is this person, who is so ferocious? And who is bold enough to be targeting the strongest person, Fang Yi, right after appearing!?!

Chapter 794: The Appearance of the Dragon-Phoenix Platform

Boom!

A colorful light swept directly across the horizon right before countless people's shocked gazes. Like rushing thunder, it headed straight for Fang Yi, who was standing at the mountain's peak.

This sudden attack had clearly attracted everyone's attention. For a time, even people like Su Biyue and Snapper were astonished. Clearly, they did not know exactly who would have the courage to make a move directly against Fang Yi.

He was a super influential person who ranked number one in the Dragon-Phoenix Record!

In the world, countless bewildered eyes were flickering. But just when many people thought that the person who made a move was overconfident, Fang Yi, who stood at the mountain's peak, furrowed his brows and stared at the colorful light violently sweeping over. Soon after, he did something which left countless people stunned; he did not show any signs of wanting to make a move. With a shift in his stature, an afterimage emerged and he actually took the initiative to avoid the attack.

Boom!

When the rainbow-colored light hit the mountain's peak with a boom, the mountain immediately collapsed, and countless huge rocks smashed downwards. In just a short moment, the whole mountain was razed to the ground.

This scene caused quite a number of people's eyes to twitch.

Two brilliant lights stood upright in that sky, and when the rays of light finally dispersed, the two shadows within became apparent as they appeared in countless people's line of sight.

When these two shadows appeared, it immediately caused an uproar

throughout the world.

"That is... Daluo Territory's Mu Chen?!"

"How dare they make a move against Fang Yi. Do they want to die?!"

"They will find it difficult not to die after having angered Fang Yi!"

"..."

There were some people who were so aghast that they went speechless, and the looks directed at Mu Chen were extremely weird. Although Mu Chen had obtained a Dragon-Phoenix Pool from Liu Yan, which caused his fame to rise, if this was the reason he dared to make a move against Fang Yi, then he could only be considered a fool.

This was because although Liu Yan was considerably skilled, compared to a person who seemed to be so monumental like Fang Yi, he was definitely lacking a level!

Almost everyone overlooked the overly beautiful girl who stood beside Mu Chen.

When Mu Chen saw those looks, he could only smile helplessly. Then just when he chose to speak, he felt a gaze filled with killing intent shoot towards him.

He turned his head slightly and saw Liu Yan, who looked extremely sullen.

Mu Chen squinted as he stared at Liu Yan before a similar hint of cold murderous intent swept across his eyes. A day before, he had had a hard battle with him which ended with neither side winning. But if he were to fight him again, he had the utmost confidence that he would truly be able to defeat Liu Yan.

Their gazes intertwined in mid-air and immediately, a murderous aura began to permeate the area. Clearly, both of them did not have any intention to cover up the killing intent within their hearts.

While Mu Chen and Liu Yan were confronting each other, over at the sky above the collapsed mountain, a white shadow slowly emerged. Fang

Yi's white robe and black hair made him look extremely refined. He looked profoundly at Cai Xiao before cupping his fist in the other hand, and with a smile he said, "Miss, I admit that my previous actions were slightly inappropriate. But the Dragon-Phoenix Fruit was truly the Dragon-Phoenix Rift's mystical treasure. If a person got their hands on one of them, surely they would be able to cultivate the Real Dragon Body or the Real Phoenix Body. Also, out of the three Dragon-Phoenix Fruits, I only have one which is still unripe, whereas the other two ripe Dragon-Phoenix Fruits are still in your hands."

When Mu Chen heard this, he couldn't help but to look solemn. This Fang Yi was extremely manipulative for actually exposing the news about the Dragon-Phoenix Fruit in front of so many people. He was well aware of the astonishing allurement which the Dragon-Phoenix Fruit possessed, as it was something which was far better than the Dragon-Phoenix Pool.

Wow!

Just as Mu Chen expected, the moment Fang Yi said this, the world erupted into an astonishing uproar. Countless boiling hot gazes, which almost seemed to be able to burn people up, were immediately directed towards Mu Chen and Cai Xiao.

"They actually obtained two ripe Dragon-Phoenix Fruits?!"

"That's the mystical treasure which would allow a person to directly cultivate the Real Dragon Body or the Real Phoenix Body!"

"..."

In the world, countless powerful people's eyes turned very red. Aside from the ordinary person, even powerful people like Su Biyue and Snapper couldn't help but to freeze the expression in their eyes at that moment.

When Mu Chen saw the countless bloodshot gazes directed at him, he furrowed his brows as well. He glimpsed at Cai Xiao, but that beautiful face was currently emotionless. She stared indifferently at the smiling Fang Yi, yet she did not say another word. Then, that bare foot, which was as white as jade, took a light step and her delicate body immediately disappeared.

Just when Cai Xiao's figure disappeared, Fang Yi had also squinted slightly. Soon after, he formed a seal with one hand and directly struck down as he faced the void before him.

"Void Great Handprint!"

When that call escaped Fang Yi's lips, the void before his handprint actually began to distort. Within that distortion, it was as if a huge, seemingly invisible handprint was being formed indistinctly. Although seemingly invisible, the terrifying power which permeated from that handprint caused countless powerful people to go numb with fear.

Swish!

However, just when that huge, seemingly invisible handprint was about to tear open the void and clap outwards, there was a surge in the space ahead, and a petite shadow appeared in a flash. While high up in the sky, she bent her beautiful finger and pointed it downwards. Immediately, it briefly touched that Void Great Handprint.

"Break!"

The girl opened her red lips slightly, and an abundance of white light bloomed from her beautiful finger. Within that surging space, what seemed like a muffled sound of something popping rang through, and that enormous Void Great Handprint was actually pierced through by one finger.

A bright white light pierced through the Void Great Handprint. Then, it immediately shot towards the space between Fang Yi's eyebrows with an unavoidable speed. Finally, amid the sound of countless frightened voices, it fully pierced through.

However, amid the sound of shocked voices filling the air, no blood came flowing out from between Fang Yi's eyebrows. Instead, his body gradually turned illusive before he finally disappeared, leaving only an afterimage behind.

Over at a faraway place behind where he stood, a white robed shadow emerged once again. It was Fang Yi.

When Fang Yi appeared once again, the world became silent. The bloodshot eyes staring at Mu Chen and Cai Xiao earlier looked as if cold water had been poured on their heads as they suddenly calmed down.

This was because they finally understood that the girl standing beside Mu Chen, who initially just possessed an appearance which left people stunned, actually possessed such a terrifying capability as well!

Her capability could actually rival the capabilities of a super influential person such as Fang Yi.

Who exactly was this girl?!

Countless powerful people looked at each other in dismay and no longer dared to show any signs of malice.

When Mu Chen saw this, he quietly let out a breath of relief as well. Cai Xiao's counterattack was done beautifully. Fang Yi had clearly planned to use the Dragon-Phoenix Fruit as bait in order to surround them in hostility. But no one could have expected Cai Xiao to be more quick and powerful. Her immediate thunder-like move revealed her astonishing capabilities, which intimidated these fellows to the point that they became obedient.

Over at the other mountain peaks, powerful people who were extremely well-known such as Snapper, Su Biyue, and Ding Xuan were staring at Cai Xiao with an odd look in their eyes. It was assumed that they were rather shocked since no one would've thought that this seemingly delicate girl would actually possess such a terrifying capability rivaling Fang Yi's. Since when did such a monstrous genius appear within the younger generation of the Northern Territory?

Cai Xiao stood upright high up in the sky. She looked over at Fang Yi, who still had a smile on his face, and said with an indifferent gaze, "No matter what trick you use, I will not let you off today."

If someone else had said this, that person would have been exposing themselves to ridicule. But after seeing Cai Xiao's earlier move with their own eyes, everyone was shocked, but no one dared to laugh. At first, they thought that Fang Yi would definitely be the champion of the Dragon-

Phoenix Rift once again. But who could have expected this girl, who had turned up all of a sudden, to actually not be inferior to Fang Yi, even in the slightest bit.

It seemed like there would definitely be a truly fierce battle between giants in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift this time.

When Fang Yi heard Cai Xiao's words, the expression in his eyes froze. Soon after, he smiled slightly and said, "May I know who you are? I don't think a person like you exists within the younger generation of the Northern Territory."

Cai Xiao's beautiful face remained emotionless. She completely ignored Fang Yi's question, and with a turn of her body, she appeared beside Mu Chen.

When Fang Yi saw this, he only smiled without saying anything else. The hand behind his back and the flickering of his profound eyes made it difficult for a person to guess what was actually on his mind.

The world's atmosphere turned quiet and strange. Everyone could feel the surge of undercurrent between these top-notch powerful people. However, they did not immediately start a war as they were all waiting for that Dragon-Phoenix Platform to appear...

Moreover, the moment they got on that Dragon-Phoenix Platform, an astonishing battle would most likely erupt in an extremely fiersome manner.

When Mu Chen felt the nearly stagnant atmosphere of the world, he squinted slightly as well before silently operating the spiritual energy within his body. He could smell the oncoming storm in this quiet atmosphere.

All the powerful people were gathered in the area, including Fang Yi, who repeatedly managed to walk away safely from his confrontations with Cai Xiao as well as the Prince of Netherworld, who had kept silent since the beginning while watching by the side with cold eyes just like a poisonous snake's.

Additionally, there was the undefeated saintess Su Biyue, Demon's Gate's Snapper, Djinn Clan's Ding Xuan, and of course, Liu Yan, who had a murderous look on his face as he locked his cold eyes on him.

All these people were extremely tough. Moreover, aside from them, there was quite a number of powerful people with similarly shocking capabilities hiding within the crowd.

It seemed like there were bound to be many fiersome battles on the Dragon-Phoenix Rift this time.

The stagnant atmosphere continued. After about an hour, the expression in Mu Chen's eyes suddenly froze. At the same time, Fang Yi, the Prince of Netherworld, and others looked into the sky.

They did not know when it began, but the space there had actually started to distort drastically. In that space distortion, an extremely ancient aura filled the air indistinctly.

Roar!

The ancient cries of a dragon and phoenix rang through time and space. Countless people widened their eyes and saw an endless ancient rock platform emerging slowly within that space distortion.

The enormous Real Dragon Real Phoenix intertwined as they bore that ancient rock platform on their backs. They connected their heads and tails to form the sturdy golden platform!

Countless people's eyes turned crimson. The Dragon-Phoenix Platform had finally appeared!

Chapter 795: Ascend to the Platform

Weng!

A huge stone platform, sparkling in gold, slowly emerged from the distorted space. Its surface area was enormous, spanning as far as the naked eye could see.

The top layer of the Dragon-Phoenix Platform was enveloped in layers of thick clouds. Only a faint golden light could be seen flickering.

The feeling of an intense oppression came tumbling down, forcing the top powers to have difficulty breathing. The platform itself was exuding an overbearing sense of pressure.

Despite all of this, the top powers continued to fix their enthusiastic gazes on the floating platform, high above the sky. Their eyes were full of greed, as it was said that a legacy was left behind by a real dragon and a real phoenix on the top of the Dragon-Phoenix Platform. The temptation of catching a glimpse of these legends was so high, it could drive any Sovereign Masters crazy.

"So, is that the Dragon-Phoenix Platform?"

Mu Chen looked up as well, fixing his gaze at the ancient stone platform. He could feel the blood accelerating in his body, seeming to have been triggered by some strong and unseen force.

As he gazed upward, it looked like something was on that platform. Moreover, it appeared as if it could be something quite perfect for their cultivation.

"The Dragon-Phoenix Platform has appeared!"

The silence went on for quite some time, before someone let out an exclamation, rejoicing with wild excitement. All of the sudden, the air was filled with the sound of rushing wind, as numerous figures flit towards the Dragon-Phoenix Platform.

Most of these people, who had not yet obtained the Dragon-Phoenix Blood Essence, were trying to hedge their bets, making a dash for the

platform. After all, since the platform was right in front of them, they had to give it a try!

Mu Chen and his group watched calmly, waiting patiently as the horde of others clamored over one another, making their ways to the platform. The sky was full of the rushing sound of the wind, as more and more figures flit towards the platform. It was truly a spectacular scene!

The figures flew at an astonishing speed. Within seconds, they closed in upon the platform. But, just as they were a mere thousand feet away from the platform, intense golden rays beamed forth from the platform. As the golden rays beamed out, the air seemed to fill with loud ancient cries of a dragon and a phoenix.

Bang! Bang!

Those approaching figures, who were now directly in the line of the beams of golden light, were shaken violently, causing them to repel back from the lights immediately. The figures spat mouthfuls of blood, as they fell from the sky, like birds with broken wings.

Dong!

Countless figures came crashing down, creating numerous deep pits on the floor. If these fellows had cultivated to a degree that was great enough to withstand the impact, it would not have been an issue. However, most of those figures had yet to reach such a cultivation level, so they sustained serious injuries.

The sky suddenly became empty, directly following the dramatic sweep of the golden lights. Even though the light beams had wreaked abundant havoc, they had not entirely wiped out all of the figures.

A dozen figures arose,then continued to flit against the golden rays. There was a faint Dragon-Phoenix glow that was emitting from their bodies, revealing that they were among the few that must have cultivated the Dragon-Phoenix Blood Essence before. Hence, they had been able to withstand the golden light beams' devastating wipeout.

"Let's do it!"

Upon seeing this dramatic scene, Mu Chen urged Cai Xiao. He then took the lead, beaming into a light and flitting towards the platform. Cai Xiao followed closely thereafter.

While Mu Chen and Cai Xiao made their moves, Fang Yi, the Prince of the Netherworld, Su Biyue and the rest started to flit from the various mountain peaks towards the platform as well, traveling at an impressively fast speed.

Back down on the ground, in a land that was full of wailings, the top powers watched helplessly as all of the extraordinary talents made their moves. From where they stood, they could only give a loud sigh, as it seemed like they did not qualify for the journey to the Dragon-Phoenix Platform.

However, they felt a small consolation in knowing how fierce a fight was awaiting those heading to the platform. It would indeed be one of the most outstanding battles for the younger generation in the Northern Territory.

Shoo!

As Mu Chen rushed closer to the platform, an immense pressure enveloped him instantly, just as the golden rays permeated the space surrounding him. The air seemed to stagnate instantly, as if invisible walls were blocking him.

However, this did not hindrer Mu Chen in the slightest. On the surface of his body, a faint golden glow was emitting. All the previous stagnancy and pressure had now disappeared completely. Like a fish in water, he boosted his speed, effortlessly ascending to the old and magnificent Dragon-Phoenix Platform.

As he set his foot on the stone platform, it felt cold and hard, like a block of ice. He swept his gaze across the ground, seeing that it was made of fine and indestructible golden dragon scales.

As he looked up, he saw a massive wing with golden feathers, which stretched out in layers on the enormous stone platform. Each layer of golden feathers represented a stone tower on the platform. These layers

extended upwards, as far as the eye could see, before they finally disappeared into the thick clouds.

Shua!

Beams of lights flickered, announcing the appearance of new figures on the Dragon-Phoenix Platform. But, these new figures all stood at a distance, guarding against one other.

Cai Xiao stood beside Mu Chen, directing her cold gaze towards Fang Yi. Apparently, she had decided to make him her enemy.

As Fang Yi felt the hostile gaze of Cai Xiao, his expression remained unchanged. However, he did narrow his eyes at her, as he was quite wary of this mysterious Cai Xiao. If she was to take issue with him, it would be very troublesome indeed.

Dozens of figures were on the stone platform now, each of which were surrounded by immense spiritual energy fluctuations. Most of them, except a small handful, had already reached Grade Four Sovereign level! Thus, these people were the real top-notch leaders among the younger generation in the North Territory.

But, as soon as they appeared on the wide Dragon-Phoenix Platform, the crowd sank into silence. Everyone could feel the intense pressure that was circulating in the air.

Mu Chen was, however, looking surprisingly calm. Although everyone there was talented and highly proficient, he believed that, if he teamed up with Cai Xiao, there was no need to feel intimidated by anyone. This was mainly due to the fact that, those who had already witnessed the strength of Cai Xiao, would not dare lay their hands on them!

The silence continued on the platform. A few minutes later, a golden light burst forth from the platform suddenly. Then, the glow from the dragon scales flickered, turning the entire ground into a golden mirror.

Mu Chen and the rest now found themselves standing on this golden mirror. Also on the golden mirror, a golden radiance was circulating, swirling almost like a liquid.

The radiance eventually gathered around everyone's feet. As the radiance rushed to wrap around their feet, everyone felt an invisible wave come over them, scanning their bodies from top to bottom.

Weng!

As the golden radiance swept through, beams of golden rays, varying in levels of brightness, flowed forth from each body. Loud cries by a dragon and a phoenix could be heard amid these golden lights.

"It's the Blood Essence Detector!" Everyone realized this all of the sudden, as the detector seemed to be scanning for the strength of the Dragon-Phoenix Blood Essence within their bodies.

In fact, the strength level of the blood essence would probably affect their chances of acquiring the Dragon-Phoenix Legacy. As such, everyone looked at the glows that were emitting from their bodies anxiously.

Boom!

While everyone was nervously watching, trying to figure out how to estimate the glows that were being emitted, a dozen-foot tall golden light pillar shot up to the sky. This pillar, beyond a doubt, had the brightest glow of all!

Everyone looked towards the light pillar, while the burly Ding Xuan laughed, his mouth wide open. Apparently, the Dragon-Phoenix Blood Essence that he had cultivated was quite strong!

Boom!

But, just as he finished laughing, another similarly robust golden light pillar shot out! Cries from the dragon rang out amid the golden lights.

Liu Yan was looking at Mu Chen coldly, expressionless. Meanwhile, some expressions on the faces of the top powers changed slightly, as it seemed like Liu Yan and Ding Xuan had already surpassed them.

Eeek!

Another two loud Phoenix cries broke out at the same time. This time, the golden radiance circulated around Su Biyue and Hong Yu, just as a pair

of phoenix wings extended itself under the glow. This power was not any weaker than that of Liu Yan or Ding Xuan! They had cultivated a Pseudophoenix body!

Shua!

At this time, many gazes turned to Fang Yi and the Prince of the Netherworld. They could clearly see that the golden radiance that was gathering under both of their feet was extremely intense.

Boom!

The next moment, tall golden light pillars shot towards the sky, causing a dismayed look to appear on all the faces of the remaining top powers.

"Such a fluctuation! These two fellows must have cultivated the Real Dragon Body!" Some of the top powers admitted these things unwillingly, as it looked like Fang Yi and the Prince of the Netherworld would be the ones dominating the platform again.

"Wait, what is going on with Mu Chen?"

Suddenly someone noticed Mu Chen, because he was the only one who did not have any golden radiance appearing at his feet. This was quite shocking to most of them.

Had he not cultivated the Dragon Phoenix Blood Essence before? Otherwise, how would he have been able to get to this platform?

Despite all of their doubtful looks, Mu Chen remained undaunted and expressionless. He stared at the golden radiance flowing farther below his feet, yet he was untouched. He could also feel the fluctuation wave proliferating within his body. The blood streams in his body were beginning to accelerate, due to this fluctuation.

Then, the acceleration increased its speed profusely, eventually hitting its maximum. Mu Chen closed both of his eyes slowly, then spread his hands up high.

A beam of light darted out towards the sky, shot forth from Mu Chen's body. Although it was also about a hundred feet tall, the luster of the gold

appeared to be darker, and a near endless pressure was circulating around it.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

As the dark, golden light pillar shot out from the body of Mu Chen, the rest of the light pillars burst into golden stardust, falling from the sky. Now, only the dark golden light pillar remained at the apex, standing tall between the heaven and earth. As it towered in the sky, it gave off a bright glow, covering the entire platform.

Then, just as earthly officials bow down to their rulers, the rest of the light pillars seemed to be bowing down to the dark golden light pillar in a similar fashion. It was as if they were trying to distinguish the significant difference between them.

At this moment, all of the onlookers were shocked by this dramatic scene!

Chapter 796: The Battle Begins

The dark golden light pillar stood between heaven and earth, penetrating the thick clouds. The entire Dragon-Phoenix Platform was dazzling under the illumination of the dark gold light pillar.

Everyone looked blankly at the pillar, which stood out from the rest. As the light shone on their faces, their expressions began to change.

They did not understand the result of Mu Chen's detection. What did it mean? Did it mean that the Dragon-Phoenix Blood Essence in Mu Chen's body was so powerful that it was incomparable?

Judging from the previous detections, Fang Yi and the Prince of Netherworld had successfully cultivated the Real Dragon Body, and this had shocked almost everyone. Who would have thought that the result of Mu Chen's detection was far more daunting?

How did he manage to achieve such a rich intensity of Dragon-Phoenix Blood Essence in his body, and how much did he have?

Not only did many top powers on the ground feel shocked about it, but the top powers on the platform were also looking at each other, feeling bewildered, too.

Fang Yi and the Prince of Netherworld frowned slightly as they stared at Mu Chen, who was standing in the light pillar. Their eyes were flickering while they looked at each other with intertwining gazes before finally looking away.

Su Biyue, Snapper, Ding Xuan, and the rest looked stern, as they sensed strong oppression emanating from Mu Chen.

The expression on Liu Yan's face darkened. His eyes became somber as the killing desire deeply intensified.

The dark gold light pillar continued to shine under countless gazes before it gradually weakened and disappeared completely into Mu Chen's body.

Mu Chen slowly opened his half-closed eyes and took a glance at the

quiet Dragon-Phoenix Platform. His brow knitted slightly as his spiritual energy started to circulate again.

The sudden revelation of the Dragon-Phoenix Blood Essence in his body was beyond his expectation. If possible, he would rather not have revealed it at all. It made him everyone's target since he would be the person with the highest chance of obtaining the Dragon-Phoenix Legacy.

In that case, it would inevitably invite jealousy and hatred from the rest. He could see it already in those wary gazes that were cast on him now, and such wary gazes had been previously directed at Fang Yi and the Prince of Netherworld.

Fortunately, he and Cai Xiao had joined hands, which could stop any top powers from doing anything reckless.

The light beams dissipated, and the platform returned to silence once again. The eyes of the top powers flickered, but none of them took the lead in any action.

Mu Chen lifted his head and took a look at the platforms made from the Phoenix wings. The Dragon-Phoenix Legacy was on the highest point of the platforms. Whoever wanted to obtain it would need to climb to the top.

And whoever reached the top would have a greater chance of obtaining the legacy. Right now, none of them dared to break the current stalemate situation, lest they attract hostility from others.

However, Mu Chen knew that this stalemate would not last for very long.

The first person who budged was Fang Yi, who was a fearsome person ranked number one in the Dragon-Phoenix Record. His eyes swept across Mu Chen and Cai Xiao. He smiled and said, "Since no one wants to take the lead, let me be the first then."

He was a daring person with formidable skills. Apparently, he did not care if anyone was bold enough to fight with him. Without waiting for an answer, he stamped his foot and rose from the ground as his body floated

in mid-air.

Boom!

While Fang Yi made his move, the Prince of Netherworld beamed into a light that flashed like lightning across the sky as he quickly flitted across the platforms.

Bang! Bang!

The peaceful situation on the platform was instantly stirred as both of them made their moves. All the spiritual energy surrounding the bodies of the top powers started to fluctuate profusely. The platforms shook as the figures rushed towards the sky.

Mu Chen and Cai Xiao looked at each other before they beamed out, too.

Countless gazes were watching the various beams of light excitedly because they knew the long-awaited battle on the Dragon-Phoenix Platform was finally unfolding.

But they were unable to anticipate who would ascend to the top of the platform. Nonetheless, a significant change was going to be made to the Dragon-Phoenix Record in the North Territory.

Shua!

Mu Chen maximized his speed as he overtook each level of the platforms. As he looked up, he used his spiritual energy to send a message to Cai Xiao. The higher you go, the fewer platforms there will be. The platforms are the only way to get to the top. By then we should occupy one each.

From the information Mu Chen had, the base levels had enough platforms to accommodate all of them. Therefore, it was easy to make their way through without the need to fight. But as one got closer to the top, the number of platforms decreased drastically. At that point, there were fewer platforms and eventually, a battle would have to break out for them.

Cai Xiao nodded and said, "Be careful then!"

Shoo! Shoo!

Close to 100 beams of light flitted towards the sky like comets. They passed the golden platforms without stopping. The scene was quite spectacular, yet the rest of the people who stood between the heaven and earth gradually clenched their fists, as they could sense the aggressive spiritual energy circulating in the dark around the figures.

Suddenly, someone from the crowd exclaimed, "The number of platforms has decreased!" and countless people looked up. High above the sky, the platforms that were once abundant in number had reduced significantly. There was obviously an insufficient amount of platforms for all of them to advance to the next level.

Boom!

Nearly 100 streams of light rushing up in a straight line began to split. Those figures who were at the front flitted like lightning, and took the lead to occupy the platforms.

However, none of the top powers were easy-going people. It was obviously impossible for them to buy the idea of first-come-first-served. Thus, some of their eyes flickered with killing intent and rushed towards platforms that were already taken. Violent spiritual energy rushed towards the sky.

Bang! Bang!

Spiritual energy violently swept out almost instantaneously. The previous harmonious atmosphere had already been replaced with raging killings.

Mu Chen and Cai Xiao's speed was considered to be fast. Thus, they seized a platform each right from the beginning.

But when Mu Chen had just set foot on his platform, a violent spiritual energy fluctuation swept towards him, and a loud scream was heard, "Get out of my way!"

Mu Chen remained calm, but there was a faint golden light glowing on the surface of his skin that looked like a layer of fine golden dragon scales. Subsequently, he slapped his palm forward.

A shockwave visible to the eyes instantly radiated out as both fist and palm pressed firmly against each other. Mu Chen did not move an inch while the figure quivered a few steps back.

Mu Chen lifted his head and saw a man in a black robe staring at him with a sullen look. Mu Chen had never seen him before, but judging from the spiritual energy fluctuating around him, this person had also reached Grade Four Sovereign. However, he was still way far off from Liu Yan.

"I am Chen Fan, from the Ghost Shadow Sect, hoping to borrow your platform." The black-robed man gave Mu Chen an icy look. His eyes were full of killing desire. Although he knew that Mu Chen was not an ordinary character, it would not be a reason for him to back off. Since Mu Chen and Cai Xiao had temporarily gone separate directions, he decided to break through past Mu Chen.

But Mu Chen stared at him indifferently and immediately turned away.

"You're courting your own death!"

Boom!

Tremendous spiritual energy broke out from his body and turned into a massive black shadow. The black shadow was surrounded by gruesome energy that looked like Asura. Chen Fan did not have any plan to test the waters as he summoned the Sovereign Celestial Body at once.

"Ghost Shadow Celestial Body, Thousand Shadows Demon!"

While the eyes of the black shadow surged in redness, he immediately pushed out his palm. Under the palm, overwhelming black shadows that looked like ghost spirits burst out. With a loud screeching noise, the space was distorted by the fearsome spiritual energy fluctuation.

"That is Chen Fan from the Ghost Shadow Sect! He is fighting with Mu Chen!"

"That Chen Fan is a formidable character, too. The Ghost Shadow Celestial Body is known to be extremely vicious. Anyone who is killed by the Ghost Shadow Celestial Body will have their soul swallowed and eventually turned into a ghost power!"

Apparently, numerous top powers were focusing on Mu Chen with great interest. Therefore, they immediately attracted many shocked gazes when the platform he was on was impacted with spiritual energy.

And of course, not only were they paying attention to Mu Chen, but the rest on the other platforms also cast their gazes in that direction. Although other platforms were bursting with spiritual energy, no one could set foot easily on those platforms.

These people, including Fang Yi, Prince of Netherworld, Su Biyue, Snapper, and so on, were the top-notch players in the Dragon-Phoenix Record.

They fixed their gazes on the platform where Mu Chen was because they wished to find out if he had the skill to complement the intense Dragon-Phoenix Blood Essence in his body.

Sst!

The ghosts enveloped the sky with their loud screams, and everyone watched as the big black palm shadow shrouded Mu Chen.

Mu Chen stood still under the shadow-filled sky. He looked up at the black palm, which engulfed the entire sky, with his deadpan expression while he clenched his fists.

Golden light erupted from his body. It was like a rising sun giving off blinding rays causing everyone to squint.

But within that instant, people with sharp eyes saw a golden phoenix stretching its wings while the light was shining. The wings swept fiercely out like a sharp blade swinging across the sky.

The glaring golden light flashed once and disappeared.

Mu Chen returned to his usual state, and he walked forward without

looking back. The enormous black palm shadow and the Ghost Shadow Celestial Body stayed still in the sky. A faint golden light ray started to beam from the palm, extending itself upwards until it reached the top of the Ghost Shadow Celestial Body.

Boom!

The golden ray exploded, and the Ghost Shadow Celestial Body burst into stardust in the sky. An embarrassed figure fled out from it and eventually spat a mouthful of blood. He fell from the sky without any strength, crushing a mountain into ruin.

Countless people were dazzled as they watched the scene. After a while, everyone was breathing out cold air in shock as the slender figure walked on the platform.

Just one move from him defeated a Grade Four Sovereign!

Mu Chen had become even stronger compared to the previous time he fought with Liu Yan.

Chapter 797: The Invincible Spirit Revealed

Once the spiritual energy fluctuation had dissipated on the platform, only silence remained. Speechless, everyone locked their gazes on the slender figure that was standing in the middle of the platform.

Their eyes were full of horror and disbelief. The fact that Mu Chen had defeated a Grade Four Sovereign in one stroke had given them a shock.

Su Biyue and Snapper looked on in surprise, narrowing their eyes. Although they had heard of the previous confrontation between Mu Chen and Liu Yan, a time when both of them had lost to each other, they had not witnessed it themselves. Moreover, Cai Xiao, who has been following close behind Mu Chen, was too overpowering, which caused them to feel uncertain about predicting any result.

However, since they had now seen Mu Chen with their own eyes, they had to admit that this young man, who looked like he only had the strength of a Grade Three Sovereign, was not as simple as they had first thought. To them, it was no wonder that he dared to fight Liu Yan, as his power was compelling, too!

The looks on the faces of both Fang Yi and the Prince of the Netherworld seemed to be quite calm, except for the fact that they had squinted their eyes when Mu Chen had released a glaring gold light.

At that moment, they could feel a sense of oppression coming from Mu Chen. Such an oppression was clearly not derived from Mu Chen's own strength, but was from the Dragon-Phoenix Blood Essence in his body! Apparently, the amount of essence in his body has already surpassed the amount that they possessed!

However, this was not a surprise to Fang Yi. He was already well-aware of the superb Dragon-Phoenix Pool that was found by Mu Chen and Cai Xiao. On top of this, he knew that they had obtained two ripe Dragon-Phoenix Fruits, which could allow anyone to cultivate a "real dragon body"

or a "real phoenix body".

Fang Yi crossed his fingers, looking down and thinking to himself. Mu Chen is indeed good, but he is still far from any level that needs to concern me. On the contrary, the mysterious girl beside him is far more tricky...

Mu Chen was standing quietly on the platform, while everyone gazed intensely at him. He swept his black eyes across the scene slowly, stopping at those top powers, who were unable to occupy a platform themselves. They did not dare meet his eyes. Some even broke into a cold sweat, trying to extinguished this daunting young man from their thoughts.

Judging by the incredible strength that Mu Chen had displayed early on, whoever regarded him as being just an ordinary Grade Three Sovereign would be a fool.

It was clear that Mu Chen was able to make his way there by his own strength and merit, not because of the beautiful, mystery girl by his side. Hence, his own strength was not to be underestimated!

Mu Chen stood in the middle of the Dragon-Phoenix Platform. From this position, he watched the rest of the platforms in the distance. On those other platforms, spiritual energies were exploding, and huge Sovereign Celestial Bodies were confronting one another ceaselessly. Also, a violent storm had just broken out.

Fighting for a chance to ascend to the top of the Dragon-Phoenix Platform, all of the top powers had bloodshot eyes. They were clearly unleashing their most formidable skills, raising their efforts to the utmost levels that they could.

Mu Chen swept his glance across the various platforms. He saw the numerous spiritual energies raging violently. He then turned to look at those few figures, who were standing still on several other platforms, all of which were equally as quiet as his.

From the very beginning, no one dared to set foot on those platforms, as everyone knew that the real formidable people among the younger generation in the North Territory occupied them. These people were the

very ones who possessed the qualifications to ascend to the summit of the Dragon-Phoenix Platform.

Among these people, Mu Chen spotted Liu Yan, who was staring back at him with cold eyes. The sharp radiance that was surging deep in his eyes felt like it could pierce through Mu Chen.

The grievances between these two men had remained irreconcilable, ever since their last fight. The undisguised killing desire in Liu Yan's eyes said everything there was to say.

But, even before Mu Chen had cultivated his Dragon-Phoenix Body, he had never been afraid of Liu Yan. Moreover, his strength had grown tremendously since he had last met him. Hence, if both of them were to confront each other again, he would show Liu Yan that he would not be easily defeated.

In response to Liu Yan's cold stare, Mu Chen returned a faint look. He then glanced in the direction of Fang Yi and the Prince of Netherworld out of the corner of his eyes.

Compared with Liu Yan, he was much more wary of these two unfathomable men, who had somehow managed to safely escape from Cai Xiao's clutches. He knew that, if he wished to ascend to the summit and obtain the Dragon-Phoenix Legacy, it would be this pair of jokers that might just be the two thick walls that could hinder his way.

Boom! Boom!

While Mu Chen was deep in his thought, the spiritual energy fluctuations from the other platforms grew more vigorous and forceful. The battles had climaxed on all the other sides.

As the fierce fights continued, those who failed and were severely wounded fell helplessly from the sky. After which, the violent spiritual energy fluctuations in the sky finally began settling down.

Mu Chen saw that thirty-two platforms were now floating in the sky, all of which were occupied.

"Only thirty-two people are left?"

Mu Chen was shocked, as previously, there had been more than a hundred top powers represented on the platforms. But, now, more than half of them had been eliminated.

Mu Chen lifted his head to look at the sky in the distance. Golden lights were radiating, and sixteen platforms were suspended in mid-air, encapsulated within that faint glow. Apparently, this meant that only sixteen people would be left...

Mu Chen surmised now that, according to this pattern, every level of platforms ascended would eliminate half the number of people. Such extreme eliminations seemed quite intense and cruel!

Weng!

While Mu Chen was sighing about the cruel elimination criteria of the competition, the platforms under all of their feet suddenly gave way, revealing only dazzling golden light. Countless dragon scales and phoenix wings were vibrating at the same time. While the lights surged, a stream of golden fluid flowed through the platform, eventually entering the body of Mu Chen and the rest via their feet.

"The Dragon-Phoenix Blood Essence?!" Mu Chen felt a very familiar energy pour into his body, causing his eyelids to twitch slightly. He assumed this was a reward for those who had made it to the qualifying round!

The Dragon-Phoenix Blood Essence that now gushed out from the platform was quite pure. For some of the top powers, it would be an unexpected fortune! However, to Mu Chen, who had already experienced the Dragon-Phoenix Pool and refined a Dragon-Phoenix Fruit, it was only icing on the cake.

The intense golden light wrapped around the thirty-two figures, causing all of the spectators to be intensely envious. After a long while, the golden light suddenly rushed forth, catapulting the thirty-two figures further up into the clear blue sky.

The light was extremely fast, shooting through the air in a flash. After the golden light dissipated, thirty-two figures were floating in mid-air at an

even higher level of the sky.

Suspended in front of these thirty-two figures, were the sixteen platforms that seemed to be made of gold. Looking at the remaining sixteen platforms, no one uttered a word. Fang Yi, the Prince of the Netherworld, and the rest of the top powers, landed on each of their own platforms first.

Mu Chen also found himself a platform, but he could feel sharp looks shooting in his direction. He cupped his fists and shouted out a challenge, "Is there anyone who would like to give me a try?!"

Among the dozen figures that were floating in mid-air, some of their eyes flickered, but only one gray-robed man flit onto the platform where Mu Chen stood. An energy that felt like a sharp knife blade was eluding from him, distorting the entire space.

"Yu Lu from the Domineering Sword Sect, hoping to spar with you!"

When the low voice came out of the mouth of the gray-robed man, the man dashed out fiercely. His overbearing energy rose towards the sky.

This top power came from the Domineering Sword Sect and had a similar strength to the previous Chen Fan, who was from the Ghost Shadow Sect. So, the battle did not last very long, as Yu Lu could tell their differences immediately. Once Mu Chen pierced through his knives energy and surrounded him with only one finger, Yu Lu knew that he must surrender straightaway.

He was wise not to continue the fight. Instead, he cupped his fists and took the initiative to withdraw from the battle. Mu Chen had won again!

After he defeated Yu Lu from the Domineering Sword Sect and made his way to the top sixteen qualifying round, Mu Chen continued on, beating another top power that came from the top force in the North Territory. Finally, he advanced into the quarterfinal round, astonishing and impressing everyone present.

In the quarterfinal battle, Mu Chen's opponent actually withdrew from the fierce fight, before it ever even began! Mu Chen took a deep breath in

relief, upon realizing his easily obtained new victory. He looked up once again, seeing that there were now only four majestic Dragon-Phoenix Platforms left high in the sky.

His hands were clenched tightly. Mu Chen knew that, with each elimination, the competition would only grow more fierce.

In order to prepare, Mu Chen felt that he would have to go to the summit of the Dragon-Phoenix Platform, to measure up his opponents. Despite his having Fang Yi, the Prince of the Netherworld, and the rest of the formidable opponents, it was still hard for Mu Chen to be fearful of them. Yet, he must be prepared!

"Let me see who can stop me!" Mu Chen grinned widely. There was a flame burning fiercely in his eyes.

The golden light emerged once again on the Dragon-Phoenix Platform. Mu Chen spread his arms widely in order to allow Dragon-Phoenix Blood Essence to seep into his body. The essence turned into a majestic force, spreading from his head to his toes.

When the golden light dissipated, Mu Chen opened his eyes suddenly. A sharp radiance surged from deep within his pupils.

Now, the last eight figures were left floating in mid-air, but the spiritual energy fluctuation that were emitting enveloped the entire world. Countless people were watching this scene quietly from below. They knew that this long-awaited battle of the Dragon-Phoenix Platform had finally reached its climax!

The battle of the quarterfinals!

Chapter 798: An Incense Stick's Time

Far above the horizon, eight silhouettes stood in the air. Although they were all standing still and silent, the magnificent spiritual energy fluctuations that emanated from their bodies raged in the heavens and earth like a tornado. Even the thick clouds on the horizon were shattered.

Countless people held their breath at this moment, and the oppressive atmosphere before the great battle made them a little breathless.

The eight figures in the air represented the existence of the aces among the younger generation in the North Territory. Their strength, even if placed among the major top forces, was capable of being the best out of the elite with unlimited potential.

Now that these outstanding aces had to clash with each other, it was no doubt a collision between comets that would be earth-shattering.

"Who knows who can reach the top this time..."

"Should be Fang Yi or the Prince of Netherworld... Those two have been dominating the Dragon-Phoenix Record as first and second respectively, and no one has ever shaken their positions."

"It's hard to say. That mysterious girl is not simple, either. Even Fang Yi seems to dread her..."

"That doesn't mean the others don't stand a chance. Su Biyue and Snapper are no weaklings, either. If one underestimates them, it's not impossible for them to suffer an unexpected defeat."

"There is a stalemate in this situation. After all, no one is strong enough to completely ignore the others."

"..."

The tense and frozen atmosphere could not conceal the murmurs, as the powerful characters who were here were no ordinary people and had a certain level of skill. Thus, they did not know how to judge others and give a sound analysis.

As the murmurs in the crowd subtly spread, Mu Chen could sense the tense atmosphere in the sky. A glint flashed in his dark eyes.

The top seven before him were familiar, and with the exception of Cai Xiao, the other six were reputable figures in the Dragon-Phoenix Record. The one whom he was not so familiar with would be Ding Xuan from the Djinn Clan. He more or less had some interaction with the others.

Among these people, he and Ding Xuan had no grudge with each other, and he wasn't exactly friends nor foe with the two ladies, Su Biyue and Snapper. The remaining three were much harder to handle.

Needless to say, Liu Yan was his mortal enemy, and their relationship was irreconcilable. Both Fang Yi and the Prince of Netherworld had clashed with him and Cai Xiao because of their previous incident, hence there were hostile intentions, to say the least. However, it was unclear if this hostility ran deep.

Faced with this situation, even he felt that it was difficult to act.

Just as Mu Chen pondered how to break the stalemate, he suddenly felt a sharp look full of murderous intent directed at him.

Mu Chen tilted his head, and unsurprisingly, saw Liu Yan's expressionless face. As Liu Yan noticed his glance, his expression turned colder.

In the frozen atmosphere, Liu Yan suddenly clenched his fist and with a flash of light a spear materialized. He pointed it at Mu Chen and said indifferently, "The last time you were lucky to escape with your life. This time you will not have the opportunity to do so again."

Mu Chen smiled and replied, "The one who escaped like a dog with its tail between its legs wasn't me."

Upon hearing this, Liu Yan did not show signs of anger but said calmly, "If it wasn't for her, do you think I would let you off?"

The "her" he was referring to was Cai Xiao. The last time he had clashed brutally with Mu Chen, it wasn't because he couldn't continue fighting, but he was shocked at the moves Cai Xiao used to kill Scarlet Blood, thus

he had to retreat in embarrassment. This caused him to feel indignant, as he believed that Mu Chen then had also reached his limits, and if they continued their fight, he would be the last man standing.

Judging from the current circumstances, if he were to take action against Mu Chen, even Cai Xiao would not be able to intervene, as the others would not want to see them form an alliance again.

Mu Chen smiled and said, "So it looks like you want to pick a fight with me here?"

Liu Yan smiled nonchalantly as he turned to look at the others. "Looks like I will take action first. I believe the rest of you don't have any opinions?"

Snapper giggled. The little demon from Demon's Gate stated with a soft and teasing tone, "Hehe, everyone's hands and legs are on their own bodies. If you wanted to do something, no one would be able to stop you. However, our friend from Daluo Territory is no soft persimmon and pushover. Liu Yan, don't break your feet kicking an iron plate." Her words seemingly were not taking a side, but they were very provocative and would provoke any man to do his best.

The rest did not say anything, but apparently they were pleased that Liu Yan would take the lead in dealing with Mu Chen, for they also knew that this stalemate could not last for long, and that it was an excellent way for Liu Yan to take the lead.

Just as the others acquiesced in silence, Cai Xiao stepped forward, her gaze cold.

Although she only took a step forward, all eyes were on her in that moment, and as the most mysterious person present, the dread and apprehension others had towards her was apparent.

Liu Yan's eyes narrowed when Cai Xiao stepped forward, and if Cai Xiao wanted to help Mu Chen at this time, he would be at a great disadvantage.

However, just as Liu Yan's face twisted at the sight of Cai Xiao, Fang Yi, who had remained silent, smiled as he said gently to Cai Xiao, "Haha, at

this moment, I don't think you have to make a move?"

"If I wanted to make a move, what could you do?" Cai Xiao scoffed coldly.

Fang Yi smiled and replied, "Then I would have to stop you. After all, it's not wise to break the rules of the game."

He stepped forward slowly, his robes rustling, and the space around him twisted sharply and rippled. A breathtaking force of spiritual energy pervaded the atmosphere.

The others, such as Su Biyue and Snapper, could feel the oppressive aura Fang Yi emanated as their gazes turned fearful. Judging from the fluctuations, Fang Yi was stronger than they were.

"You?" Cai Xiao stared at Fang Yi and light bloomed on her slender pale fingers. Though her fingers seemed delicate, they wielded a power so strong that it intimidated even the likes of Fang Yi.

Fang Yi stared at Cai Xiao, his gaze turning increasingly somber. Behind Cai Xiao, the Prince of Netherworld suddenly took a few steps forward, cornering Cai Xiao with Fang Yi in front and him behind, surrounding her.

"What if I joined in, would that be enough?" The Prince of Netherworld stated nonchalantly. Light flowed around him as if it had engulfed the light in the heavens and earth. His hoarse voice was chilling and unsettling.

Countless people in the crowd were astonished. They stared at the scene, and even Su Biyue and Snapper couldn't help but be shocked. Apparently, they did not expect the two most powerful men dominating first and second place in the Dragon-Phoenix Record to be in the same camp!

In the past, Fang Yi and the Prince of Netherworld did not have friendly relations!

Woah.

An uproar broke out between the heavens and earth. If news of this scene spread, it would shake the younger generation of the Northern

Territory. After all, Fang Yi and the Prince of Netherworld were figures at the peak among the younger generation. Now, however, these two monumental figures intended to work together to suppress the same person, and that person was just a young girl!

Upon seeing this, Mu Chen's calm expression darkened, as he did not expect Cai Xiao's gesture to help him, resulting in Fang Yi and the Prince of Netherworld ganging up on her to suppress her.

"Two men ganging up against a girl, as the first and second ranked of the Dragon-Phoenix Record. This is ridiculous." He knew that Cai Xiao was extremely mysterious, but as she said, she had many seals in her body, so her ability to utilize her full power was also limited. According to Mu Chen's estimation, she would have a chance of beating either Fang Yi or the Prince of Netherworld, but once they had formed an alliance, even Cai Xiao would not be able to gain an edge.

The Prince of Netherworld glanced at Mu Chen nonchalantly as he remarked hoarsely, "You are not qualified to intervene in the matters here, so just beat Liu Yan fair and square. She's caught in such a dilemma because of you. If you feel you have the backbone, then use your ability to overcome the situation, or else..."

He paused as his nonchalant glance swept over Mu Chen. There was no contempt in his eyes, but he also did not put Mu Chen at a level equal to him as he said, "You don't have the right to speak here."

A glint flashed in Mu Chen's dark eyes as he stared at the Prince of Netherworld and retorted, "Oh really?"

The world was quiet. No one expected the situation to become like this, and Su Biyue, Snapper, and the others made the wise choice to protect themselves and stay out of it. Anyway, they did not wish to get involved in the grudges between these people. As far as they were concerned, they were naturally happy to see them fighting against each other.

Cai Xiao tilted her head, and her long hair billowed in the wind. She glanced at Fang Yi and the Prince of Netherworld, and a brilliant smile bloomed on her face. Her smile was so dazzling, that even beauties such

as Su Biyue and Snapper paled in comparison.

Cai Xiao turned to glance at Mu Chen as she smiled and said, "It will be troublesome for me to deal with these two, but starting now, they will not dare to make a move, so I will give you the time it takes for an incense stick to finish burning to deal with Liu Yan, then..."

Her glowing fingers slowly moved as she pointed towards the Prince of Netherworld standing behind as her crisp and cold voice rang in the air, "You'll stop one, while I'll kill the other. Can you do it?"

The world remained silent as they directed astonished glances at Mu Chen. They clearly did not understand why Cai Xiao had so much confidence in Mu Chen, not to mention how strong Liu Yan was. Even if Mu Chen defeated Liu Yan, it would be wishful thinking for him to stop the Prince of Netherworld with his abilities.

However, Mu Chen ignored all the incredulous gazes as he stared at Cai Xiao wordlessly. He turned his head suddenly, his dark eyes locking on Liu Yan.

"An incense stick's time is enough."

Chapter 799: Battling Liu Yan Again

"I just need a blink of an eye to defeat you!"

As Mu Chen finished speaking, he moved rapidly and appeared on a Dragon-Phoenix Platform, his dark eyes glaring sharply at Liu Yan.

"What boastful claims!"

Liu Yan smiled in rage, he didn't think Mu Chen would be so audacious, to dare claim that he could defeat him the blink of an eye! Did he not know that it was only out of sheer luck that his first fight with Liu Yan had managed to result in a standstill?

"This time, you are dead meat!"

Liu Yan smiled chillingly. His figure flashed, then appeared on the Dragon-Phoenix Platform, where Mu Chen was waiting. Liu Yan's eyes stared like daggers at Mu Chen, the murderous intent in his gaze shockingly intense. It was clear that this was his best opportunity to kill Mu Chen, as the mysterious girl was currently suppressed by both Fang Yi and the Prince of Netherworld, leaving her unable to help Mu Chen at all.

Boom!

The vast and majestic spiritual energy instantly burst out from Liu Yan's body. The crimson red spiritual energy rolled in turbulent waves behind him, while the temperature of the whole world rose rapidly.

"Myriad Flame Celestial Body!"

Liu Yan immediately conjured up seals with both hands, causing a vast spiritual energy to surge. Then, a massive crimson red silhouette suddenly appeared on the Dragon-Phoenix Platform. He had actually summoned a Sovereign Celestial Body!

After his first intense battle with Mu Chen in the past, Liu Yan no longer dared to underestimate him. Liu Yan knew that, should he be defeated unexpectedly this time around, he would be utterly humiliated.

Upon witnessing this scene, many powerful characters clucked their

tongues. Although Liu Yan had expressed his disdain for Mu Chen, he did not dare belittle or underestimate him.

"Leave your life here and die!"

Liu Yan's figure appeared directly above the head of the Myriad Flame Celestial Body. With a roar, he dealt brutal blows with his palms, as the crimson red palm blows from the massive Myriad Flame Celestial Body transformed into a huge Flaming Palm, before charging down harshly on the arena where Mu Chen was.

Tumultuous heat waves spread, and the air between the heavens and earth seemed to be burning up. There was no doubt that Liu Yan was strong. Otherwise, he would not have been able to occupy the fourth place in the Dragon-Phoenix Record. Also, now that he was fighting with all his might, even a Fourth Grade Sovereign would avoid facing him!

However, in the face of Liu Yan's anger, Mu Chen did not show any sign of retreat. As he looked up at the huge Flaming Palms that were threatening to engulf him, his right hand clenched slowly, causing a dark golden light to seep through his skin. Upon closer inspection, these were dense, dark golden scales that had just emerged on his arm!

Then, a force that was powerful enough to shatter a mountain gushed madly within him. It was the power of the Dragon-Phoenix Body!

Boom!

When the golden light surged, Mu Chen dealt a blow with his palm directly. As if it had a golden sun rising from its palm, it clashed brutally with the huge Flaming Palm.

Crash!

The shock waves, which were visible to the naked eye, were raging! Mu Chen's feet plunged onto the ground. Watching the scene, everyone's pupils had shrank slightly, for they saw that Mu Chen had just blocked the force of Liu Yan's huge Flaming Palms with one hand, preventing its landing on him.

"Get out!"

Mu Chen sneered coldly. After cultivating the Dragon-Phoenix Body, his combat power had increased sharply since even the previous day. At the very least, Mu Chen knew now that it was impossible for Liu Yan to defeat him with such attacks.

Boom!

With a burst of golden light, the huge Flaming Palms were shaken, causing its retreat. Mu Chen's palms flushed red, emitting a terrifyingly high temperature. Clearly, if his physique had not become much stronger with the Dragon-Phoenix Body, he would not have dared to clash head-on with Liu Yan's Sovereign Celestial Body.

Woaha...

An uproar erupted, as countless strong men were astonished by the scene. The fact that Mu Chen's fist had managed to cause Liu Yan's Sovereign Celestial Body to retreat was utterly shocking!

"He had his ways indeed." Su Biyue, Snapper, and Ding Xuan were solemn, realizing that this young man named Mu Chen was not simple at all! It was no wonder that he had dared to state such bold claims!

In the other part of the sky, three figures stood still like rocks. However, their breaths seemed to be locked together, as whoever made the first move would attract a thunderstorm barrage of attacks upon the entire tro.

These three figures naturally were Cai Xiao, Fang Yi, and the Prince of Netherworld.

The three figures stood still, and even their breathing became extremely subtle. Their attentions were clearly focused on the clash between Mu Chen and Liu Yan.

Just as Fang Yi and the Prince of Netherworld saw Mu Chen defeating Liu Yan's Sovereign Celestial Body with one blow, their gazes flickered. Cai Xiao smirked, satisfied with Mu Chen's performance.

Under the gaze of countless eyes between the heaven and the earth, Liu Yan stood on the head of the Myriad Flame Celestial Body. His face was cold and his hands were clenched. He watched as Mu Chen slowly pulled

his feet out, after having plunged them into the ground. Naturally, he was aware that Mu Chen was stronger now than he had been a day earlier.

"Did you think I wouldn't meet with an opportunity this day?!"

Liu Yan's gaze was chilling, as he conjured up seals with both hands, swift as lightning. Simultaneously, the Myriad Flame Celestial Body did the same, releasing a surge of countless crimson red ribbons that then transformed into a massive tripod furnace.

Upon seeing the tripod furnace, Mu Chen's eyes narrowed. It was clearly apparent that Mu Chen was no stranger to it, as this was the exact thing that had injured him in the last battle!

"Smelting Furnace Myriad Fire, Heaven Incinerating Feather!"

As Mu Chen had expected, along with Liu Yan's roar, flames of different colors now surged within the huge tripod furnace. They then condensed into a resplendent colored feather, from which, a destructive fluctuation emanated.

"Still the same old tricks, eh?" Mu Chen sneered in disdain.

Liu Yan's eyes swept coldly across Mu Chen, and the corner of his mouth was raised in a cruel smile. The smirk was mocking, but he did not say more, as his seals then changed abruptly.

Whoosh!

The colorful feather that was burning with flames then burst forth from the tripod furnace. Surprisingly, even though it contained intensely violent power, the feather did not attack Mu Chen directly, but shot towards Liu Yan instead!

As the colorful feather charged towards him, Liu Yan opened his mouth to swallow it, knowing that it possessed overwhelming power. Everyone present could only stare at the scene, completely dumbfounded. Even Mu Chen couldn't help but to be startled.

Boom!

As he swallowed the feather, Liu Yan's body instantly turned crimson

red. Hs eyes became scarlet and his skin began to dry, as if all of his moisture and blood were burning into nothingness simultaneously.

Crack.

A slight crack spread out on his skin, which was soon followed by even more cracks, making him look like a broken porcelain figurine. This haunting sight induced a chilling fear in the hearts of everyone present.

"Liu Yan has gone insane! He actually dared to swallow this sheer magnitude of destructive power into his own body! Isn't he afraid that his body will explode into pieces?" Many strong men murmured such things, clearly aware of the dangers of Liu Yan's recent actions.

However, Su Biyue, Snapper, and the others only silently pondered over the scene's recent happenings.

"Haha, underestimating such an opponent, who can rank fourth on the Dragon-Phoenix Record, is never a wise thing to do!" Fang Yi smiled faintly.

Cai Xiao glanced coldly at him, her face turning solemn. Clearly, she had realized how powerful Liu Yan's move was.

Buzz!

Amid countless gazes, Liu Yan clasped his hands together, changing his seals. Golden light immediately emanated from his body. Also, vaguely, a dragon's roar could be heard.

Then, golden light surged, before transforming into dragon symbols and circling on the surface of Liu Yan's body. As the symbols flowed along it, Liu Yan's body turned from a scarlet red to a bright golden. The cracks on his body also healed, having been repaired gradually.

"That's...the Pseudodragon body!"

"So that's it! He sought to employ the protection from the Pseudodragon body to counter the raging force in the colorful feather! So, he could then drive it and protect the body from breaking!"

"There are at least 70 dragon symbols, meaning that the Dragon-Phoenix

Blood Essence that Liu Yan obtained is rather pure!"

"Mu Chen is going to be done for then!"

Liu Yan's body became as if it was crafted entirely by gold. As it did so, the danger of his body exploding vanished entirely, causing a realization to dawn on many strong men present. Liu Yan had this extreme and intense method of self-preservation, thus, he must be insane!

Mu Chen glanced at the golden figure in the sky, his gaze turning somber. Liu Yan was no pushover, especially when he had such methods.

In the sky, Liu Yan stood tall and proud. As he loomed over Mu Chen, the murderous intent in his eyes was obvious to all, as was the maliciousness of his smile.

"As I said before, the only reason you could escape my clutches before was merely due to sheer luck! But, now, even your best luck would be like powerless little ants in the face of my absolute strength!"

Liu Yan's eyes were ferocious. As he crooked his fingers, clusters of different colors condensed at his fingertips, before finally turning into a pure gold flame. And, in that flame, the roar of dragons reverberated.

A terrifying fluctuation then suddenly caused the space around Liu Yan to shake violently. The expressions of Su Biyue, Snapper, Ding Xuan and the others twisted when they felt the extreme fluctuations.

"Myriad Flame Divine Technique, Heavenly Dragon Flaming Finger!"

When Liu Yan's chilling voice rumbled in the air, a bright golden flame pillar burst out suddenly from his two fingers. The beam of light that it emitted then twisted, as if a heavenly dragon that was burning with golden flames had just roared past the sky, causing the space to disintegrate inch by inch.

With Liu Yan exerting his full power with this finger, heaven and earth started to fragment and shatter, as if they were unable to withstand the onslaught!

Countless people widened their eyes! They also gasped in pity, as such

an attack was fierce indeed...

Mu Chen would surely die, without a doubt!

Chapter 800: The Power of the Dragon-Phoenix Body

The golden pillar of flame roared across the sky like a dragon, and then, with a terrifying aura of utter destruction, it brutally landed.

A slender figure could be seen enshrouded within the golden flame. He looked up, and the golden flame was magnified in his dark pupils, however, he did not move. It seemed he was shell-shocked by this devastating attack.

"What a pity..."

Countless strong men lamented and sighed, as Mu Chen's talent and potential were amazing. If he had several more years of training, he would surely be one of the best among the young generation of leaders in the Northern Territory. Unfortunately, amazing talents and brilliant geniuses were like shooting stars; they burned brightly but eventually suffered a swift fall.

Boom!

As countless strong men, along with Su Biyue, Snapper, and others in the sky watched solemnly, the golden pillar of flames landed brutally, causing the heavens and earth to tremble in its wake.

On the Dragon-Phoenix Platform, the golden dragon scales on the ground were melted by the golden flames. Golden liquid flowed as the entire platform melted at an astonishing rate.

That degree of destructive power caused many powerful figure's eyelids to twitch in horror. Liu Yan's blow at full force was horrific... The fourth ranked in the Dragon-Phoenix Record lived up to his name, indeed.

Su Biyue, Snapper, Ding Xuan, and the others who were in the top ranks of the Dragon-Phoenix Record looked somber, as if they were the ones who had to face Liu Yan's attacks. Even if they could have made it out alive, they would have been severely injured.

Now Mu Chen might be blown to smithereens, with not even his ashes left behind...

Fang Yi, the Prince of Netherworld, and Cai Xiao were still suppressing each other as they glanced at the Dragon-Phoenix Platform with narrowed eyes. However, Fang Yi and the Prince of Netherworld were nonchalant, whereas Cai Xiao knitted her brows, clearly worried.

Both Fang Yi and the Prince of Netherworld were shrewd men, as they saw Cai Xiao's worry in one glance. The former smiled but did not say anything. He did not value Mu Chen much, so it did not matter at all if he lived or died. However, Mu Chen's death would surely cause Cai Xiao to waver and lose her focus, and that subtle flaw would cause her to reveal a weak spot.

Although Fang Yi's body was still relaxed, his vast, majestic spiritual energy quietly flowed. Like a lurking beast, the force of destruction was about to erupt.

In the air above the Dragon-Phoenix Platform, Liu Yan stood on the head of the Myriad Flames Celestial Body. His face was pale. Apparently, he had expended a great amount of energy with his previous attack, but his gaze was as ferocious as a wolf's, staring eerily at the melting platform.

This move was his strongest ace card, and anyone ranked lower than a Fourth Grade Sovereign would not be able to resist it, let alone Mu Chen, who was merely a Third Grade Sovereign. Even if he had other moves up his sleeve, he would not be able to escape alive.

"Audacious brat, you deserve to be buried here."

Liu Yan chuckled, but just as he laughed, his eyes suddenly narrowed and he raised his head, casting an incredulous look towards the melting Dragon-Phoenix Platform.

In the sky, Su Biyue, Snapper, and the others also sensed something as they glanced in shock at the melting Dragon-Phoenix Platform ablaze with golden flames.

The golden sea of fire surged, releasing a terrible heat, but in the depths

of the sea of fire, heavy footsteps could be heard. Each step was like a mountain, and with every step, the Dragon-Phoenix Platform trembled.

The others were aware that something was amiss. The uproar stopped abruptly as they stared in horror at the sea of golden flames.

Suddenly, a hurricane swept by, causing the golden sea of fire to dissipate. A great silhouette stood silently.

The figure was dressed in dark gold armor. The golden armor was like dragon scales transformed and appeared to be extremely ferocious. Dragon silhouettes encircled the scales, emanating a terribly oppressive aura.

Moreover, behind the golden-armored figure, a pair of huge Phoenix wings slowly extended out, and as they fanned out, there were hurricanes raging between the heavens and earth.

The golden-armored figure stood on the melting Dragon-Phoenix Platform. The figure burned crimson with golden flames and emitted white smoke, but everyone could see that under the golden armor, a chilling gaze shot out from his eyes.

That was Mu Chen!

He had blocked Liu Yan's blow at full might!

Countless people widened their eyes in shock and incredulity.

"No way!" Liu Yan's face was horrified as he roared in disbelief, shock reverberating in his heart. He did not understand how Mu Chen could still be standing after suffering such a terrifying blow.

High in the sky, Su Biyue, Snapper, and the others gasped. There was no longer any trace of contempt when they glanced at Mu Chen. Even they could feel the extreme danger of Mu Chen's abilities now. This was a person who was worthy of making them feel a deadly threat.

In the sky at the other end of the area, Cai Xiao glanced at the figure. A smirk appeared on her red lips as Fang Yi and the Prince of Netherworld's gazes flickered.

Clank!

The golden-armored figure took a heavy step, and as he walked, blood appeared between the dragon scales of the Dragon-Phoenix Golden Armor. Clearly, even with the protection of the Dragon-Phoenix Golden Armor, Mu Chen had not escaped completely unscathed.

But even so, the dark eyes under the golden armor were still as sharp as a blade, and he paid no heed to the sharp pain he felt in his body. His eyes were staring at Liu Yan like a hawk's. With a slightly hoarse voice he said, "It's my turn now."

Liu Yan's eyes shrank as the spiritual energy in his body surged violently like a crimson light sweeping across the sky towards the horizon.

Boom!

Mu Chen stomped heavily, causing the solid Dragon-Phoenix Platform at his feet to break apart. Golden light flickered, and he suddenly soared into the sky.

He appeared directly before the Myriad Flames Celestial Body, and then he let out a skyward roar accompanied by the rumble of a dragon's roars and a phoenix's cries.

Bright golden light burst out from his body as a true dragon silhouette condensed in front of his chest, and behind him, the cries of a Phoenix rang as wings fanned out.

The chorus of a Dragon and Phoenix caused an ancient oppressive aura to permeate throughout the heavens and earth. Even the Dragon-Phoenix Golden Platform shook violently, as if in response to the cries of the Dragon and Phoenix.

"What's... that?"

Countless powerful men stared at the Dragon and Phoenix silhouettes in front of Mu Chen. That kind of ancient oppressive aura was not something the Dragon Clan possessed; that was the power the real dragon and real phoenix possessed!

"Dragon-Phoenix Body?!"

Su Biyue gasped in disbelief. Her melodious voice sounded hoarse, and shock was written in her eyes.

Snapper, Ding Xuan, and others were dumbfounded, their expressions horrified.

The Dragon-Phoenix Body? The legendary physique that required Dragon-Phoenix Blood Essence from real dragons and phoenixes to be condensed within a body to cultivate? How was that possible?! The Dragon-Phoenix Blood Essence was entirely incompatible, and if it existed in an entity, the body would be bound to explode, and one would die!

Even a Sovereign as powerful as an Earthly Sovereign would not be able to accomplish this, let alone any of them!

According to nature, this would hold true. Thus, no one ever thought that Mu Chen would attain the Dragon-Phoenix Blood Essence and condense the Dragon-Phoenix Golden Armor. Borrowing the power from a Divine Artifact, he could integrate the Dragon-Phoenix Blood Essence, and thus cultivate the unique Dragon-Phoenix Body.

The Dragon-Phoenix Rift had been open for many years, and although the myth of the Dragon-Phoenix Body had always existed, no one had ever cultivated it. Thus, when they saw the Dragon-Phoenix silhouette encircling Mu Chen, they had been utterly shell-shocked.

Fang Yi and the Prince of Netherworld, who had been suppressing Cai Xiao, were always nonchalant, but their faces changed upon witnessing the scene. They glanced at Mu Chen, as they felt a sense of danger and crisis.

This young man could really threaten their ranks.

Boom!

Mu Chen ignored them amid countless startled gazes as he looked at Liu Yan's frightened face. The corner of his mouth drew up in a ferocious arc. Without making any fanciful moves, he clenched his fist and landed a fierce blow.

It was a simple punch, but was accompanied by gushing golden light sweeping out. In that golden light, the silhouettes of the real Dragon and Phoenix howled, transformed into a golden fist, and charged towards the Myriad Flames Celestial Body.

This punch triggered the spiritual energy within Mu Chen to the extreme, and also capitalized on the power of the Dragon-Phoenix Body with the help of the Dragon-Phoenix Golden Armor.

With one punch, the situation changed drastically as winds howled and clouds surged.

Thunderous roars reverberated in the sky!

Liu Yan's expression twisted in dread as he hurriedly conjured up seals. The Myriad Flames Celestial Body expended its full power as a massive fist burst out with scarlet flames.

Boom!

Two fists of completely different magnitudes tore through the void, and in the next moment, clashed harshly as many looked on in terror.

At the moment of collision, the clouds on the horizon were torn apart, and the two Dragon-Phoenix Platforms in the vicinity shattered into pieces.

Golden light surged as countless strong men stared unblinkingly, then their eyes narrowed sharply.

They saw that when the fist accompanied by the silhouettes of the Dragon-Phoenix landed, cracks spread rapidly on the massive fist of the Myriad Flames Celestial Body, and in few moments, it exploded.

Boom!

The massive Myriad Flames Celestial Body had exploded entirely from Mu Chen's punch!

Countless strong men watched in trepidation as this battle's victory and defeat had clearly been determined.

This result had once again defied everyone's expectations.

Chapter 801: Defeating Liu Yan

Boom!

When the massive Myriad Flames Celestial Body exploded, it dissipated into brilliant shards of light. These shards then shot into the sky. At that very moment, everyone present saw a floundering figure fall backwards.

Spurt.

The figure, while still in mid-air, spit a few mouthfuls of blood. The spiritual energy fluctuations within his body were extremely weak, revealing that he had obviously been severely injured.

"Liu Yan lost!"

Many powerful figures exclaimed in shock and dismay, as it was clear that Liu Yan was grievously injured. Thus, his combat power had been reduced drastically, rendering unable to compete with Mu Chen any longer.

Mu Chen maintained his fighting posture. His sharp eyes peered through his golden armor, then locked their gaze onto Liu Yan. Murderous intent flashed in the depths of Mu Chen's eyes. Then, without hesitation, he stormed out, heading straight for the seriously injured Liu Yan.

Mu Chen's fierce murderous intent shocked everyone, as they realized that Mu Chen was really ready to kill Liu Yan! Moreover, they saw that Mu Chen was really capable of doing so!

This Mu Chen was young, but his methods must not be underestimated...

Upon seeing Mu Chen charging towards him, Liu Yan twisted his face grotesquely. He then turned toward Mu Chen, roaring, "Brat, if you dare kill me, Tian Xuan Hall will make sure that you die a terrible death!"

His abilities had been reduced drastically. In fact, should Liu Yan continue to fight, his life would undoubtedly be in mortal peril.

Facing Liu Yan's roar, Mu Chen's cold gaze did not waver one bit.

Instead, with a confident move, Mu Chen appeared directly in front of Liu Yan. His palm, which was encased within scaled armor, surged with majestic spiritual energy fluctuations.

As he landed a blow towards Liu Yan's crown mercilessly, a look of sheer terror surfaced on Liu Yan's face. He had not expected Mu Chen to be so brutal!

"It's not that easy to kill me!"

Liu Yan, unlike his brother Liu Ming, was somehow able to retain his composure, even at such a critical moment. He knew he must do his best to fight back. Then, with a low growl, cracks appeared on Liu Yan's body, as a violent spiritual energy surged out.

Upon seeing this, Mu Chen's eyes twitched. This fellow actually wants to explode his own mortal physique!

Whoosh.

Mu Chen retreated quickly. At the same time, Liu Yan's physique exploded, causing a terrifying storm of spiritual energy to be unleashed. The spiritual energy storm went forth, wreaking havoc, distorting space, and causing spatial cracks to emerge and spread throughout the entire surrounding area.

Its impact also landed on Mu Chen's body. A low harrumph sounded in his throat. Fortunately, he had the protection of the Dragon-Phoenix Golden Armor. Thus, he was not injured severely, though the impact alone had caused him to fly out at least a thousand feet.

Amid the storm of spiritual energy, a beam of spiritual light soared across the horizons, before it vanished swiftly in the twisted space. That beam was Liu Yan's spirit, into which he had escaped via the explosion of his physique.

Upon seeing this scene, Mu Chen narrowed his eyes, but no longer gave chase. Mu Chen knew that Liu Yan's exploding his physique would also cause Liu Yan's spirit to suffer injury. Hence, even if Liu Yan escaped with his life, he was basically rendered a paralyzed person, and thus, was no

longer a threat.

In the sky, the storm of spiritual energy gradually calmed. Then, everyone looked up. All they could do was stare in awe and shock at the golden armored figure now hovering in mid-air.

The figure stood silently in the horizon, but a terrifying aura emanated from him. When faced with this majestic aura, even the most powerful Sovereigns, including Su Biyue and Snapper, looked solemn.

After all, they were facing someone that was able to defeat Liu Yan, and also who had forced Liu Yan to explode his own physique and escape with his spirit. So, of course, everyone present would dread a figure like that!

In the sky, golden light surged on Mu Chen's body, as the Dragon-Phoenix Golden Amor integrated with his flesh. Concealed under his skin, it virtually illuminated his entire figure!

As Mu Chen's figure was revealed, countless Sovereigns were shocked yet again.

Even from a distance, they could see that Mu Chen was covered with a thin layer of blood scabs, which were formed after the blood coagulated. On the layer of blood scabs, horrific wounds could also be seen. Clearly, these injuries had been dealt by Liu Yan's last blow.

Mu Chen's body trembled slightly, and the blood scabs immediately fell off. Then, his deep, ferocious scars began to recover at a speed that was so swift, it was visible to the naked eye! In just a few moments, his body had completely recovered. Many powerful people were stunned at such a miraculous rate of recovery!

Mu Chen was also extremely satisfied with the speed at which his injuries recovered. This was due to the Dragon-Phoenix Blood Essence, which was now integrated into his veins, bringing with it a vitality as powerful as a Divine Beast's!

After Mu Chen felt that his body had been completely restored, he raised his head to glance at his surroundings. The depths of his dark eyes looked as if they contained a terrifyingly ferocious beast! His intense gaze was

fierce and palpable. In fact, following this strong victory over Liu Yan, Mu Chen's majestic aura was finally at its peak!

At this moment, even powerful Sovereigns, such as Su Biyue, Snapper, and Ding Xuan, held dread in their hearts. They averted their gazes, not making direct eye contact with Mu Chen, while simultaneously not daring to show any signs of hostility. This young man before them was not to be trifled with!

Silence permeated throughout the heavens and earth, as innumerable strong men looked at each other, each stunned by Mu Chen's majestic aura. At such times, it was obvious that no one would dare underestimate or disrespect Mu Chen.

Mu Chen's gaze swept over the sky, finally locking on the other side of the sky. There, three figures stood in the air, suppressing each other. Around their bodies, stretching to a radius that was easily thousands of feet wide, formed an aura so strong that people dared not even approach.

However, at this point, Mu Chen's fierce gaze somehow was able to produce a trace of turbulence within that trio's aura. At the same time, everyone directed their gazes at the sky. Although Mu Chen and Liu Yan's fight had been brutal, it was clear to all that the real battlefield was in this arena in the sky!

Although Mu Chen and Liu Yan were strong, compared to Cai Xiao, Fang Yi, and the Prince of Netherworld, they were still lacking experience. Even though Mu Chen had defeated Liu Yan, if he knew that if he really wanted to make any headway with these three aces, he would have to face the Prince of Netherworld, who was even more powerful than Liu Yan!

The Prince of Netherworld was the brilliant ace that had dominated the rank of 2nd on the Dragon-Phoenix Record for many years. Even a prideful man like Liu Yan would dread having to face the Prince of Netherworld! Thus, even though Mu Chen had defeated Liu Yan, no one would expect him to be able to withstand a brutal figure like the Prince of Netherworld.

Amid the countless gazes, Fang Yi and the Prince of Netherworld knit their brows together in a frown. They had definitely not expected this

current situation to happen!

"It looks like this has disappointed both of you," Cai Xiao stated nonchalantly, a dangerous glint flashing in her beautiful eyes.

Fang Yi smiled faintly. His body tensed, for he could feel the chilling murderous intent emanating from Cai Xiao's body. Clearly, the latter was about to make a move.

"If you intend for him to stop the Prince of Netherworld, I'm afraid he will die," Fang Yi stated calmly.

A cold smirk bloomed on Cai Xiao's red lips, as she retorted, "Before that can happen, I will end you first."

Fang Yi narrowed his eyes, a cold glint flashing in his nonchalant gaze. He tilted his head, glancing towards the Prince of Netherworld.

The latter, sensing Fang Yi's gaze, thought quietly for a moment, then said, "We'll split the inheritance." He was naturally referring to the Dragon-Phoenix Legacy.

"Alright." Fang Yi nodded in agreement to the Prince of Netherworld's condition, as he knew that he needed the Prince of Netherworld's strength in order to deal with both Mu Chen and Cai Xiao.

"Don't spare him, but end him fast. As for her, she's not going to be easy to deal with." Fang Yi stated slowly, nodding over towards Cai Xiao.

The Prince of Netherworld also nodded. As he had fought with Cai Xiao before, he was deeply aware of how terrifying this mysterious girl was. On his own, even he had had little chance of beating her. Hence, he had to get rid of Mu Chen as quickly as he could. This would free him up to then join forces with Fang Yi to kill Cai Xiao.

The Prince of Netherworld turned to glance at Mu Chen, nonchalance written all over his face.

"Haha, what a bold claim."

Cai Xiao smiled sweetly, but in her glance, a chilling cold clearly spread. She stared at Fang Yi, then turned towards Mu Chen, "Can you stop him

for a while?"

Mu Chen's eyes locked onto the Prince of Netherworld. Mu Chen felt a strong and dangerous aura emanating from him, but he still nodded gently.

"I won't let him interfere with your battle," Mu Chen said softly.

Cai Xiao glanced at Mu Chen meaningfully, before nodding gently. She was aware of Mu Chen's ability. Thus, she was uncertain if Mu Chen could really stop the Prince of Netherworld. Yet, she also knew that she and Mu Chen had no other way of breaking the stalemate. Thus, she could only choose to place her faith in Mu Chen.

"Stop me?"

The Prince of Netherworld stood in mid-air, glancing at Mu Chen emotionlessly. Then, a faint smile appeared on his pale face, as if he found Mu Chen's confidence to be highly amusing.

"Fool! Liu Yan's end should serve as a warning to you..."

He murmured this veiled threat, before twisting his palms. There, a black spiritual energy converged and condensed, as if it had been transformed into a black hole. His surrounding space fluctuated violently, an overwhelming oppressive spiritual energy coalescing there. As it swept out amid the heavens and the earth, it appeared as if it had the power to shake mountains and overturn seas.

Sensing the terrifying spiritual energy that was surrounding the Prince of Netherworld, Su Biyue, Snapper, and the others gasped in shock. Their faces twisted in fear, as they collectively gasped, "Fifth Grade Sovereign?!"

Upon hearing them, Mu Chen's heart skipped a beat. This Prince of Netherworld had advanced to the rank of Fifth Grade Sovereign?!

If this was true, it would be extremely difficult to determine who would attain this victory!

Chapter 802: The Prince of Netherworld

The Prince of Netherworld stood aloof. His pale face was indifferent, and the terrible power of his spiritual energy flowed out of his body like a flood, causing the world to shake turbulently.

Everyone's expressions changed under the oppressive aura of the spiritual energy, including Mu Chen's.

The oppressive aura surpassed that of an ordinary Fourth Grade Sovereign and reached the rank of a Fifth Grade Sovereign!

Had the Prince of Netherworld advanced to the rank of Fifth Grade Sovereign?!

Countless powerful figures were shocked, as a Fifth Grade Sovereign could be considered the top elite in the myriad of top forces, let alone the younger generation in the North Territory. His power made others feel that it was utterly out of reach.

Some glanced at Mu Chen in pity. Mu Chen still had a chance when he was battling Liu Yan but faced with someone who had the ability of a Fifth Grade Sovereign like the Prince of Netherworld, his odds of victory were extremely slim.

Amid the many pitying gazes, Mu Chen glanced solemnly at the expressionless Prince of Netherworld as he tried to regain his composure. The power of a Fifth Grade Sovereign was enough to be ranked as a Lord in Daluo Territory!

Liu Yan's ability might be a strong contender among the Fourth Grade Sovereigns, but compared to the Prince of Netherworld, the gap was too significant.

Is this the difference between the second and third ranks of the Dragon-Phoenix Record? Mu Chen clenched his fists as he stared at the Prince of Netherworld unflinchingly. He could feel sparks of pain blooming on his physique, as he could sense the threat and danger ahead.

Although there was only one rank difference between a Fourth and Fifth

Grade Sovereign, this difference was far greater than between previous ranks.

In the Nine Grades of a Sovereign, the first four grades differed only in the level of power in spiritual energy. Once one advanced to the rank of a Fifth Grade Sovereign, significant differences appeared between ranks, the most obvious being that a Fifth Grade Sovereign would possess the power of traversing between spaces.

This was a rather powerful defensive and offensive move which could catch others off guard, and with this ability, Fourth Grade Sovereigns would be utterly thrashed if they encountered a Fifth Grade Sovereign.

Hence, this was why, when the other powerful figures realized that the Prince of Netherworld possessed the power of a Fifth Grade Sovereign, they cast pitying glances towards Mu Chen. They felt that the outcome of the battle was already determined.

No matter how powerful Mu Chen's methods were, it would be impossible for him to defeat the Prince of Netherworld.

"Do you still wish to continue?" the Prince of Netherworld asked nonchalantly.

Mu Chen smiled but did not reply. His dark eyes held no trace of fear in them. The Prince of Netherworld was indeed powerful. However, if he wanted Mu Chen to surrender without a fight, that was not going to happen. To put it bluntly, the Prince of Netherworld was far from worthy of simply being surrendered to.

Seeing Mu Chen's gaze, the Prince of Netherworld had his answer. However, his gaze remained unperturbed as he smiled faintly and replied, "Looks like another talent from Daluo Territory will fall in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift."

Narrowing his eyes, Mu Chen was just about to reply but his pupils suddenly shrank, for he saw the space around the Prince of Netherworld distort before his figure vanished like a ghost.

Boom!

The space behind Mu Chen twisted violently, and a blow containing powerful spiritual energy charged towards his back like a specter.

The sudden unsettling offensive move caused Mu Chen's expression to change, but he was always on his guard. He instantly conjured up seals with one hand, and in a flash of light, his figure seemed to have turned into a vague dragon silhouette, and as it moved, the space around him twisted, and his figure disappeared in the distorted space.

The blow of a palm landed but missed its mark as the Prince of Netherworld appeared in a flash. Seeing this, surprise flitted across his gaze before he said softly, "I didn't think that a mere Third Grade Sovereign like you could traverse between spaces, too... But what a pity, your method of leaning on physical prowess is too weak."

Just as he finished speaking, his figure vanished again, leaving behind fluctuations in the space.

A thousand feet away, the space rippled as a dragon silhouette soared across, but just as the silhouette transformed into Mu Chen, his expression changed yet again.

In front of him, the space rippled as a specter-like figure rushed out. The blow of a palm surged fiercely with a momentum capable of destroying mountains and seas.

This time, Mu Chen could not avoid it.

The suffocating majestic aura from the palm surged, and golden light flowed on Mu Chen's body as the Dragon-Phoenix Golden Armor appeared in a flash. At the same time, a layer of dark golden dragon scales emerged on the surface of his skin.

In just a few moments, he had triggered the power within his body to the extreme, and with a blow from both palms, he clashed straight on with the Prince of Netherworld's blows amid countless dumbfounded gazes.

Boom!

In the moment of collision, a terrifying thunder blast erupted. An impact that was visible to the naked eye swept out, and the space within a radius

of 10,000 feet twisted and rippled like turbulent waves.

The shockwaves wreaked havoc as Mu Chen's figure crumpled and fell 1,000 feet backwards. Blood gushed up in his throat as he spit it out in a gasp.

Excruciating pain bloomed in his arms as if his bones were crushed, causing his gaze to turn increasingly somber. The Prince of Netherworld was immensely powerful indeed, and without the protection of the Dragon-Phoenix Golden Armor and the power of the Dragon-Phoenix Body, he would have broken both his arms in this direct clash.

Just as Mu Chen flew backwards, the Prince of Netherworld's body shook, too. As he retreated a dozen steps, his nonchalant face finally showed a glint of emotion with a chilling cold flashing in his eyes. He did not expect his blow to fail to paralyze Mu Chen.

The Prince of Netherworld stared at Mu Chen as he stated, "No wonder you could defeat Liu Yan. You do have a lot of tricks up your sleeve." In the previous clash, any Fourth Grade Sovereign would have been severely injured, but Mu Chen had only spit out a mouthful of blood.

Mu Chen stared coldly at the Prince of Netherworld. As he wiped away the blood at the corner of his mouth, scorching combat desire burned in his eyes. He was not cowed by the power of the Prince of Netherworld in the slightest.

He conjured up seals as golden light swept out from within his body. It transformed into a massive golden silhouette standing tall between the heavens and earth. Spiritual energy surged tremendously with brilliant and dazzling golden light.

Mu Chen stood atop the head of the Great Solar Undying Body, and with the clench of his fist, the Great Meru Demonic Pillar burst out, landing on the huge palm of the Great Solar Undying Body.

The Prince of Netherworld gazed at the strange Great Solar Undying Body as he knitted his eyebrows in a frown. He did not recognize the origins of the Sovereign Celestial Body before him. However, he could feel that this Sovereign Celestial Body was not an ordinary one.

"No matter how desperately you put up a fight, the outcome won't change."

The Prince of Netherworld did not care too much about Mu Chen's resistance. He gently clasped his palms and a dim light gathered between them that finally turned into a black obsidian halberd.

The long halberd gave off extremely chilling spiritual energy fluctuations, and this caused even the spiritual energy between heaven and earth to freeze and solidify.

"That's a Top Grade Divine Artifact from the Netherworld Palace, the Netherworld Divine Halberd!" Many powerful figures gasped in shock, clearly familiar with the halberd the Prince of Netherworld was wielding.

"Looks like the Prince of Netherworld truly does not intend to spare Mu Chen, going as far as to summon the Netherworld Divine Halberd." Others sighed. If the Prince of Netherworld had held any contempt and belittlement, Mu Chen could still have had a slim chance, but the latter, who was clearly experienced in bloodshed, was not willing to commit such a rookie mistake.

Even a lion hunting a rabbit would exert his full strength, and for the Prince of Netherworld to become the best among the young generation in Netherworld Palace, he clearly would not commit the mistake of losing because of underestimating his opponent.

"You have yet to truly advance to a Fifth Grade Sovereign." Mu Chen glared at the Prince of Netherworld.

After the brief clash, Mu Chen could sense the powerful strength of the Prince of Netherworld, but he could also sense that he was not a true Fifth Grade Sovereign, and according to his deduction, he should be at the critical point of breakthrough.

Despite this, the Prince of Netherworld was far more dangerous than Liu Yan.

Seeing that Mu Chen had deduced his true power, the Prince of Netherworld was astonished before he smiled faintly and said, "Would an

ant bother about whether it's a wolf or a tiger that squishes him?"

Mu Chen smirked coldly, and with the stomp of his foot, two golden scorching suns rose at the crown and chest of the Great Solar Undying Body.

"Sovereign Super Power, the Power of Twin Suns!"

Mu Chen roared as the golden scorching suns erupted, and a mighty force majestic enough to crush a mountain spread throughout the Great Solar Undying Body.

"Haha, that's interesting."

The Prince of Netherworld glanced at Mu Chen, who was increasing in both aura and power. His expression changed as he smiled and said, "So you intend to go all out? I'm afraid it's all for naught."

"Whether it's futile or not, it's too late to say now!"

With a chilling growl, golden light surged within the Great Solar Undying Body as it enveloped the Great Meru Demonic Pillar in a dazzling golden hue. It then exploded in the void, carrying a massive shadow and strength of utter annihilation that enshrouded the Prince of Netherworld.

Facing such a strong opponent, Mu Chen naturally also triggered his power to the extreme.

Countless powerful figures watched solemnly as Mu Chen launched his powerful attacks. They were astonished and awed by his courage.

However, in such a battle where one was obviously at a disadvantage, just having courage could not achieve much.

Only power would reign!

This battle would only be more bloody and intense than the last!

Chapter 803: The Two Battlefields

Boom!

The Great Meru Demonic Pillar was bathed in brilliant golden light. As it soared through the horizons, a massive shadow and overwhelming power accompanied it.

It hurtled towards the Prince of Netherworld, who was hovering in mid-air. Its movement was as swift as lightning, and countless onlookers stopped to gaze at it in awe.

Under the Demonic Pillar's power, even the surrounding space showed signs of distortion. This display also revealed the the immense power of Mu Chen's Power of the Twin Suns, which had been summoned from the Great Solar Undying Body.

However, even in the face of Mu Chen's full-force attack, the Prince of Netherworld's demeanor remained unperturbed. He lifted the Netherworld Divine Halberd in his grasp, a malicious glint flashing in his eyes. He had finally made a move.

Whoosh!

Everyone watched, as a faint light tore through the sky. Then, a crisp, clashing sound of gold and metal rang out. It was the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, which had descended brutally, before solidifying suddenly. The immense force contained within it seemed to have been extremely weakened!

Countless gazes followed the scene, looking towards the tip of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, where a black halberd now blocked the pillar. Although the obsidian black halberd looked extremely weak and frail in comparison to the great size of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, such a slender halberd could actually block the massive pillar completely!

Many strong men gasped in astonishment at this revelation. Was this the power of the 2nd rank of the Dragon-Phoenix Record? This degree of power was terrifying indeed, as this strength being exhibited had

surpassed even Liu Yan!

Mu Chen, who was a dark horse, had finally overcome all of the trials in order to meet with a worthy opponent. But, alas, who knew if he could continue his journey?!

Mu Chen stood atop the Great Solar Undying Body. He glanced solemnly at the Prince of Netherworld, who had blocked the Great Meru Demonic Pillar single-handedly with the halberd. He then took a deep breath, his gaze turning sharper. He knew that this battle would not be an easy one.

Just as Mu Chen and the Prince of Netherworld were about to begin their final showdown, at the other end of the sky, the atmosphere was equally tense. Although there were no intense storms of spiritual energy there, it still attracted the crowd's attention.

They knew, that no matter how intense the battle was between Mu Chen and the Prince of Netherworld, this arena was the most important battlefield, for the two that were confronting each other there were the most powerful existences in the entire Dragon-Phoenix Rift!

Fang Yi, who was ranked first in the Dragon-Phoenix Record, was a renowned and highly reputable figure among the younger generation in the Northern Territory. Many talents and geniuses paled in comparison to him. Also, many people believed that he just might become the next Pavilion Master in the Divine Pavilion in the future, thus making him the top ace character in the entire Northern Territory!

As for Cai Xiao, she was such a mysterious one! Her mere presence struck fear in people's hearts. Also, she had dominated all of her battles thus far, so even outstanding talents and geniuses, including the Prince of Netherworld and Fang Yi, had not gained an edge over her. Hence, this showdown between the two was the key factor that would determine who would win the Dragon-Phoenix Legacy!

As Cai Xiao's petite and dainty foot stepped on the void, her cold and charming eyes locked onto Fang Yi. At that very moment, a seven-colored beam of spiritual energy flickered in her palm.

Although Fang Yi's expression was nonchalant, his gaze was solemn.

Facing the mysterious Cai Xiao, even though he was confident, he still did not have absolute faith that he would win. However, he had no road of retreat now.

Fang Yi clenched his fists slowly, as a majestic spiritual energy surged violently. The space behind him rippled, causing the spiritual energy to sweep out like torrents of water.

"Let me have a taste of your methods, then." Fang Yi smiled, pointing immediately to the spiritual energy that was surging behind him. It then transformed into massive purple light swords, which were approximately a few hundred feet long. The massive swords emanated a sword aura, which was so strong, it seemed like it could tear apart the the heavens and the earth!

The sheer vastness and power of the sharp sword aura caused many powerful figures to tingle in fear. It was hard to believe that only a beam of light would be powerful enough to cause dread in the heart of even a Fourth Grade Sovereign!

And now that they converged together, the power was even more overwhelming! Clearly, Fang Yi was aware that, facing such a powerful opponent as Cai Xiao, if he did not go all out, he would just be asking for humiliation.

Buzz!

With a flick of Fang Yi's slender fingers, the cry of swords reverberated. They rang out thousands of miles away, as the crowd saw the purple swords roaring by, like a torrential rain, charging towards and enveloping Cai Xiao.

The entire scene was rather terrifying! However, facing a powerful attack akin to a barrage of ten thousand arrows, Cai Xiao drew an arc in the sky with her fingers. As she did so, the space before her was torn apart by a dark spatial crack.

Whoosh!

The aura of the purple swords howled, but was then directly engulfed by

the spatial cracks. As such, the aura completely failed to deal any injury to Cai Xiao, who was standing behind the protection of the cracks.

As the crowd witnessed how Cai Xiao had effortlessly neutralized Fang Yi's attacks, their gazes became more focused. They saw that this Cai Xiao was formidable indeed, and they now also understand why Fang Yi was so wary of her.

"Why humiliate yourself with such inane tricks? Cai Xiao sneered coldly. Then, with a gentle leap of her foot, she vanished in mid-air, the space fluctuating in her wake.

She was about to make her move. Just as Cai Xiao vanished, Fang Yi's pupils contracted. Then, the space surrounding him rippled, as he disappeared into thin air as well.

Upon seeing the two fighters vanish, many powerful figures widened their eyes in disbelief. This specter-like speed was extremely difficult to maintain, and a Fifth Grade Sovereign was significantly more powerful than that of a Fourth Grade!

Crash!

At a void, which was a thousand feet away, a violent turbulence of spiritual energy spread out. Within that distorted space, two specter-like silhouettes appeared, their palms clashing with each other harshly. The palms' collision caused shockwaves to spread, as both figures shook and fell backwards. However, it was apparent that Fang Yi had clearly retreated further...

Struggling to regain his balance, Fang Yi knit his brows in a frown. He then clenched his fist, a long purple sword in his grasp. The sword aura was so sharp that it tore apart the space. It was clearly a Top Grade Divine Artifact!

Whoosh!

Without a hint of hesitation, the spiritual energy within Fang Yi's body erupted. Then, his figure vanished within the distorted space, leaving behind only a sharp and brutal sword aura soaring into the sky.

Cai Xiao and Fang Yi's battle was not earth-shattering, but rather silent and unsettling. The two silhouettes flashed and moved instantaneously, appearing in various spots in the sky. They moved at a speed so swift that the crowd could only gasp in awe.

In the sky, Su Biyue, Snapper, and Ding Xuan watched the two battlefields, shaking their heads and laughing bitterly. These fellows were putting on a performance in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift this time, and they were mere spectators.

"We don't know who will win," Ding Xuan muttered in a low, muffled voice. He always craved battle, but seeing this battlefield, he clearly did not dare to intervene. He refrained because he knew that he would be in trouble if they decided to divert their attacks on him.

"It's hard to tell who will win Cai Xiao and Fang Yi's battle, but the Prince of Netherworld had the upper hand in his battle with Mu Chen. However, if Mu Chen's intention is to hold the Prince of Netherworld back, then he did manage to do it. Although, the Prince of Netherworld did not let him succeed so easily," Su Biyue said gently. She was one of the elite among the young generation in the Northern Territory. Thus, she could assess the battle circumstances with just one glance.

"Once the Prince of Netherworld defeats Mu Chen and joins forces with Fang Yi, Cai Xiao would be doomed."

Upon hearing Su Biyue's words, Snapper giggled. "Oh, so sister thinks the Prince of Netherworld would win? I think Mu Chen won't be easily defeated by him."

"It's true that Mu Chen is not simple, but the Prince of Netherworld is not to be trifled with either." Su Biyue smiled, choosing not to take a side, but simply stating what she saw in a matter of fact manner.

"Is that so? Let's see then." Snapper smiled. She knew all of these things too. However, out of her habit of singing the opposite tune from Su Biyue, she refused to agree with the other party.

As they conversed, the fighting in the two battlefields intensified. Terrifying spiritual energy fluctuations caused the thick clouds in the ten-

thousand-mile radius to shatter and disintegrate into remnants of clouds, floating in the sky.

Boom!

The Great Meru Demonic Pillar carried a terrifying force as it swung, but no matter how ferocious it was, it was still unable to shake the long halberd in the hands of the Prince of Netherworld.

In the confrontation between the two men, Mu Chen was in the midst of launching a fierce offensive attack. Even though everyone could see that he was the disadvantaged party, he was surprisingly not anxious about it.

Mu Chen knew keenly the gap between himself and the Prince of Netherworld. Had it not been for the power of the Great Solar Undying Body and the Dragon-Phoenix Body, he could not have clashed head-on with the Prince of Netherworld.

Yet, he was satisfied with the current situation, as Mu Chen had never intended to defeat the Prince of Netherworld, even from the start. Instead, all that he needed to do, was to buy some time for Cai Xiao.

Just as Fang Yi and the Prince of Netherworld envisioned, Fang Yi hoped that the Prince of Netherworld could defeat him swiftly, so that they could then join forces to deal with Cai Xiao. Mu Chen was also waiting. He was waiting for Cai Xiao to defeat Fang Yi...

Time went by in the fierce battle. The four's gazes flickered, for they all felt that they must begin to determine a result soon.

Cai Xiao and the Prince of Netherworld's gazes turned sharp simultaneously, as the battle aura around them transformed drastically. Sensing a change in their aura, Mu Chen and Fang Yi's pupils contracted and their bodies tensed.

"They intend to determine an outcome!" Su Biyue and Snapper's face changed, their expressions anxious.

The two battlefields intend to determine victory and defeat at the same time!

Chapter 804: Each Exhibiting Special Prowess

When Cai Xiao and the Prince of Netherworld's gazes turned sharp at the same time, the air between the heavens and earth seemed to suddenly stop flowing as chilling murderous intent permeated the atmosphere.

All the other powerful people's eyes suddenly narrowed, and even Su Biyue, Snapper, and others solemnly looked up. Powerful spiritual energy fluctuations protected their bodies, lest they be affected by the battle.

Cai Xiao stood gracefully in the sky with her long hair billowing in the wind, and her mesmerizing eyes flashed with a freezing chill as if they could freeze the world.

An indescribably dangerous aura emanated from within her body.

She could also feel the change in aura from the Prince of Netherworld on Mu Chen's battlefield, and as she expected, he was also intending to deal Mu Chen a fatal blow.

However, she was not distracted by this, as she knew that both parties were taking a gamble. Fang Yi was betting that if the Prince of Netherworld could defeat Mu Chen swiftly, they could then unite to defeat her, and she was betting that if Mu Chen could hold the Prince of Netherworld back and give her enough time, she could kill Fang Yi.

What she needed to do now was to not worry about Mu Chen, but get rid of Fang Yi as quickly as possible, as this would be the greatest help to Mu Chen.

"Looks like we have a consensus on this." Fang Yi looked at Cai Xiao as her hair billowed, and his body was suddenly tense. The dangerous aura emanating from her caused pain to bloom in his body, and he looked increasingly somber.

"But the outcome will not be one that you expect." Cai Xiao's tone was nonchalant, but the chilling intent behind it caused the temperature in the air to drop.

"Is that so?" Fang Yi smiled. He was courageous indeed, even in the face of Cai Xiao's extremely dangerous state. He still did not get flustered but remained calm, and judging from his composure, he was worthy of being ranked first in the Dragon-Phoenix Record and of being at the peak of the young generation of the North Territory.

"I'm afraid another person will give way first."

"Is that so?" Cai Xiao retorted with a cold smirk, and without any hesitation, she conjured up seals with her slender hands. The seals swarmed, transforming into a barrage of afterimages that flashed in a blur.

The space surrounding her fluctuated in a frenzy, bubbling and spreading like boiling water. Seven colors surged out from Cai Xiao's body, and within a few moments, they had permeated the heavens and earth with their magnificent colors, but under that brilliance lurked a deadly danger.

The seven colorful beams of light coalesced in Cai Xiao's palms at an alarming speed as the spiritual energy within the world wildly converged. Everyone witnessed a colorful whirlpool emerge in her palms.

The colorful whirlpool expanded rapidly to 100 feet across. The whirlpool was like a black hole, but instead was full of myriad colors that only increased its mysterious aura.

The colorful whirlpool materialized before Cai Xiao, and as the surrounding space was torn into smithereens, dark cracks visible to the naked eye spread swiftly.

Everyone was horrified at the destructive power of the colorful whirlpool, and some powerful people even retreated in fear.

Anyone could sense the terrifying danger of Cai Xiao's attack.

The seven colors reflected in Cai Xiao's eyes were intoxicatingly gorgeous, but she only stared at Fang Yi coldly. In the next moment, she pointed her dainty fingers, and a melodious voice rang out in the sky, "Art of Heaven-Devouring Colors, Engulfing the Heavens!"

Just as the cold voice rang out from Cai Xiao, Fang Yi's body tensed, and the space surrounding him quickly twisted, his figure disappeared out of thin air, and even his breath and spiritual energy fluctuations disappeared entirely.

Buzz!

In the face of Fang Yi's disappearance, Cai Xiao was entirely unperturbed, and with a quiver from the colorful whirlpool, it also disappeared into thin air.

The moment the colorful whirlpool disappeared, an area in the sky thousands of feet beyond burst into pieces, and between the spatial distortions, a blur of light and shadow swept by.

Just as the silhouette appeared, the space over his head also tore apart, and a huge colorful whirlpool surged out, suspended directly above him. Colorful light pillars shot down, quickly enshrouding Fang Yi.

Enveloped within the light pillars, Fang Yi's original ghostly speed immediately froze, for he found that even the surrounding space was reinforced, and he could not tear it apart and escape.

Furthermore, in the huge, swirling, seven-colored whirlpool above, there was a constant release of a terrible, devouring suction force. Under that suction, not only was his body was pulled closer to the colorful whirlpool, but even the spiritual energy within him showed signs of being sucked out!

"What a horrifying devouring force!"

Fang Yi's expression finally twisted as if this colorful whirlpool were full of maggots deeply embedded in one's bones, and there was no way of evading it. Once one had been engulfed by it, it was relentless, and would not cease until it had devoured its prey.

Fang Yi lifted his head as he glanced at the colorful whirlpool, sensing fatal danger in it. If he became engulfed by the whirlpool, he was not confident that he could escape alive.

He had never underestimated Cai Xiao, but her methods had terrified

him. Where exactly did this mysterious young girl hail from?

However, this was just a passing thought. At this point in time, he could not afford to get distracted. He must withstand Cai Xiao's attacks, and at worst, he just had to delay her...

...to buy time for the Prince of Netherworld to kill Mu Chen!

Boom!

A glint flickered in Fang Yi's gaze, and in the next moment, he swiftly conjured up seals. Spiritual light bloomed around him, and indistinctly, mysterious and cryptic fluctuations emanated from the light.

"Heaven Piercing Divine Art, Heaven Piercing Divine Lotus!"

Along with Fang Yi's roar reverberating in the sky, spiritual light condensed at his feet. Finally, it transformed into a Divine Lotus Throne that was ten feet tall. The throne was dark green, and ancient light patterns covered its petals. Cryptic and mysterious ripples revealed powerful spiritual energy fluctuations.

Clearly, Fang Yi had activated his defensive techniques to their maximum potential.

The Divine Lotus Throne appeared before Fang Yi's feet. Its petals rose gradually, transforming into a light barrier, protecting Fang Yi within it. This defense was so strong that it seemed like even in the face of the collapse of the heavens and earth, this Divine Lotus Throne would not shatter and give way.

As the Divine Lotus Throne appeared, the rate at which Fang Yi was being sucked rapidly towards the colorful whirlpool slowed, as the throne was emitting a wondrous force that was resisting the colorful whirlpool's devouring force.

The two forces clashed harshly, causing the space to twist and distort violently.

Cai Xiao glanced at the scene before her and raised her brows. Fang Yi's many methods had surprised her. The ace of the North Territory's younger

generation was no mediocre man, indeed.

However, this was not enough to stop her.

With a flourish of her hand, the colorful whirlpool spun at a faster speed than before. The devouring force became more overwhelming, and Fang Yi's body, which had been protected by the Divine Lotus Throne, began to slide towards the colorful whirlpool yet again...

Although the speed was slower than before, it was apparent that with Fang Yi's myriad methods, he had failed to resist, and it was only a matter of time before he would be devoured by the colorful whirlpool. Once he was sucked into it, no matter how powerful he was, he would not be able to escape alive.

Countless powerful people watched on in abject horror, as they did not expect such a powerful ace like Fang Yi to fail to withstand this mysterious young girl.

Ding Xuan stared at the fearsome battle in terror as he commented, "If this continues, I'm afraid Fang Yi will lose."

Su Biyue and Snapper nodded solemnly before they turned to look at the other battlefield where terrifying spiritual energy fluctuations rippled.

"But Fang Yi should be able to persist for a while more. If the Prince of Netherworld can defeat Mu Chen, they can form an alliance and turn the situation around."

This thought was a shared consensus by the other powerful characters. As they glanced towards the other battlefield where spiritual energy roared, the two figures wildly activated the spiritual energy within their bodies.

As Cai Xiao and Fang Yi were at a standstill, everyone knew that the other battlefield would be the deciding factor.

Amid the countless gazes, a barrage of spiritual energy surged as Mu Chen and the Prince of Netherworld stood at opposing ends. The latter's eyes were nonchalant with vast spiritual energy surrounding him as he gazed at Mu Chen perched above the Great Solar Undying Body. The

Prince of Netherworld murmured, "It's about time to finish this."

He had sensed that Fang Yi was in a fix, thus he understood that it was time for him to end Mu Chen once and for all.

The Prince of Netherworld clasped his hands together. He closed his eyes, and as his mouth moved, an ancient sound rang out.

It sounded like it came from the Netherworld, carrying a freezing chill as the temperature of the heavens and earth dropped drastically. Snow fell, but the snowflakes were black and possessed an eerie chill cold enough to freeze the air.

Endless black snowflakes fell and converged behind the Prince of Netherworld. The black snowflakes burned and transformed into a continuous stream of black flames, flowing around the Prince like a liquid.

This eerie scene made countless powerful people gasp in fear, for they realized that wherever the black liquid flames flowed, spiritual energy seemed to coagulate.

The Prince of Netherworld lifted his head, his dark eyes locking onto Mu Chen emotionlessly. He pointed his fingers, and the flowing black flames became like fiery dragons from the Netherworld, surging out with a whoosh.

At the same time, the Prince of Netherworld's cold voice reverberated throughout the heavens and earth with an eerie chill.

"Netherworld Divine Art, Netherworld Divine Flames of Destruction!"

Chapter 805: The Final Showdown

"Netherworld Divine Flames of Destruction!"

Just as the Prince of Netherworld's chilling voice rang out, black sparks of flames swept across the void. As they passed, spiritual energy froze and coagulated. The spiritual energy then transformed into black crystal fragments, integrating within the black flames, which caused its power to grow stronger.

Everyone looked at the black flames that were skimming across the sky. They watched, as all things that stood in front of the approaching flames would melt and integrate within them, becoming one with them.

"That's a Top-Grade Divine Art from Netherworld Palace, and it has reached the Near Perfection Divine Art! Apparently, if this Divine Art has been perfected, within a radius of ten thousand miles, anything will be melted into its origin form of spiritual energy, then transform into the power of that dark flame!"

"It's said that the Palace Master of Netherworld's Palace had used it once, and that where the black flames passed, it had annihilated a powerful sect entirely, melting them down and devouring them."

"Although this Prince of Netherworld is still not showing its full power, this force is strong enough that others, who are not at the same level, would fail to withstand it."

Some powerful figures were sharp enough to recognize this technique. Hence, murmured whispers spread, as they were astonished that the Prince of Netherworld had chosen to use such a trump card.

After their astonishment began to subside, they then began to pity Mu Chen. Under such an attack, even the likes of Liu Yan, Su Biyue, and Snapper would certainly perish!

"I'm afraid that Mu Chen will lose." Some sighed such sentiments as the latter, knowing that, under these circumstances, where the black flames swept across the skies, Mu Chen would be melted instantly. However,

Fang Yi could persist for a while, and although it was for just a few moments, those few seconds could be crucial in this situation.

Once the Prince of Netherworld had dealt with Mu Chen and joined forces with Fang Yi, the outcome of this battle would be determined. In the other battlefield, which was now at a dangerous stalemate, Cai Xiao and Fang Yi's attentions were drawn to the other battlefield. With a glance, both of their expressions changed.

Fang Yi's expression was gleeful, while Cai Xiao's face turned grave. They could both sense the overwhelming power of the Prince of Netherworld's black flames.

An attack of such magnitude would be threatening to both of them, let alone to Mu Chen, who was only a Third Grade Sovereign. Although he had defeated Liu Yan, and others were afraid to belittle him, in comparison, the Prince of Netherworld was much more powerful than Liu Yan had ever been.

Fang Yi stood atop the Divine Lotus Throne, glancing towards Cai Xiao. He smiled faintly. "Looks like this is an unexpected outcome."

As he spoke, he subtly activated the defense power of the Divine Lotus Throne in an attempt to withstand the devouring force of the colorful whirlpool. He was clearly hoping to buy some time, while distracting Cai Xiao.

However, this was just wishful thinking, as Cai Xiao stared at him coldly, and instead of weakening, the terrifying devouring force from the colorful whirlpool increased in intensity! This turn of events made Fang Yi frown, and he could only hurriedly activate his spiritual energy to resist.

After forcing Fang Yi to shut up, Cai Xiao then glanced towards Mu Chen's direction, chewing on her lips. At this time, even she could not lend a hand to Mu Chen. He would have to rely solely upon his own strength.

"Mu Chen... You have to hang in there..." Cai Xiao clenched her fists and murmured. She knew that, should Mu Chen lose, her advantage would instantly vanish. Thus, she could only place her faith in Mu Chen.

Although she was unsure if Mu Chen could withstand such a powerful opponent as the Prince of Netherworld, she was hopeful that this young man just might be able to create miracles today.

Just as everyone was watching the scene unfold, a multitude of sighs and gasps rang out. Mu Chen, who stood atop the Great Solar Undying Body, was not despondent and terrified as they had thought he would be. Instead, his dark eyes had turned brighter and sharper.

The black flames rolled turbulently, charging over like a torrential black flood, as if nothing could stop them! Mu Chen could sense the terrifying spiritual energy fluctuations contained within the black flames, revealing to him that this Prince of Netherworld was a tough nut to crack indeed, and that his power far surpassed that of Liu Yan!

However, it was not so easy to annihilate Mu Chen, either! Mu Chen pursed his lips tightly, and his expression turned grave. Clasping his hands, he conjured up ancient strange seals. As the seals transformed, mysterious and profound chantings of Sanskrit scriptures rang out in the heavens and the earth.

At this point, many onlookers cast startled glances at his actions, clearly perceiving them to be a desperate strike back. However, it was really a brave counterattack!

Still, the outcome was not one that could be changed by courage alone. If Mu Chen failed to create a wondrous miracle again, this would be a hopeless ending indeed.

The chanting of Sanskrit continued to reverberate throughout the heavens. Mu Chen closed his eyes. Then, a dark purple spiritual light bloomed on his body, before converging and transforming into mysterious and enchanting purple petals.

The petals gradually gathered together, transforming into a huge mysterious flower underneath Mu Chen. The flower was about 100 feet tall, and was entirely dark purple. It was enchanting and mysterious. Upon its petals, there were countless ancient patterns.

Mu Chen's face was solemn, as he could feel the swift consumption of

the spiritual energy in his Sovereign Sea. Even the blood in his body was vibrating in his veins, and all the spiritual energy in his body was now pouring into the mysterious flower, like a tidal current.

Mu Chen stretched his palms flat, then conjured up seals with two fingers. The mysterious flower bloomed slowly, its heart aimed straight at the ferocious black flames.

Mu Chen's face paled. Then, his spiritual energy surged at an alarming speed, yet he had showed no signs of stopping, his dark eyes only growing brighter.

"If you want to annihilate me, it's not going to be that easy!"

Such an extreme measure as he had just taken was the primordial divine art that he had received from Mandela. Even during this period, Mu Chen had never stopped cultivating it.

Although he had failed at executing it every time before now, he had still attained an epiphany through every failure. Now, at such a critical moment, he had finally displayed it successfully!

Buzz!

Just as the cold voice rang in Mu Chen's heart, the ancient patterns on the mysterious flower's petals grew more distinct. Almost as if the light patterns were suddenly resurrected, they flowed towards the heart of the flower. Then. purple spots of light began to converge in the heart of the flower.

The heavens and the earth began to dim, with only the primordial flower's heart emitting the brightest light. It was almost as if the light from the world had been absorbed into the heart of the flower.

Many powerful figures watched in shock, as they could sense unusual fluctuations occurring. Mu Chen's methods made them wonder with awe.

As the world grew dimmer, even the space shook violently. Mu Chen's pallor turned deathly pale. However, the gaze in his eyes only grew sharper. In the next moment, his slender fingers pointed gently in mid-air.

"Go forth, Datura Sky-wrecking Light!"

As the murmurs in Mu Chen's heart rang, the world turned dark. At that time, the enchanting primordial divine flower was the only source of light in all of the heavens and the earth.

Next, everyone saw the primordial divine flower shake, as a dark purple light erupted from within the flower, like a blazing volcano. The purple beam of light did not carry a destructive aura that would tear apart the heaven and the earth, yet as it soared across the void, everyone still seemed to hear the sound of space shattering. As the beam of light passed through, it wiped out all traces of life, and its domineering aura caused everyone to feel a bone-chilling fear in their hearts.

Doubt and surprise flit across the Prince of Netherworld's usually emotionless demeanour, before his expression turned malicious. At this point in time, he would not allow any unexpected circumstances. He had to destroy Mu Chen!

The Prince of Netherworld conjured up seals, as the black flames surged forward at an increasingly ferocious speed. Then, in a flash, the flames completely disintegrated the space, as if a black dragon roaring within the depths of the Netherworld had emitted a deathly chill over the entire land. It clashed directly with the purple beam of light amid many shocked gazes.

Crash!

At the moment of collision, dazzling light soared towards the sky. This intense introduction of light into the dark world grew so blinding, many had to squint their eyes.

Then, a frenzied eruption of violent spiritual energy shock waves rippled across the space within a radius of ten thousand miles. The sturdy golden Dragon-Phoenix Platforms that were hovering in the skies disintegrated into dust.

Su Biyue, Snapper, Ding Xuan and the others fell backwards, as their strong spiritual energies formed a protective barrier in front of them, resisting the impact of the aftershock. The terrifying shockwaves wreaked

havoc, but the blinding light had weakened, allowing everyone to briefly glance at the sky.

They all wanted to know, who would be the last man standing after such a horrifying clash! Would it be the incredibly powerful Prince of Netherworld? Or would it be Mu Chen?

The brilliant light in the skies dissipated, allowing the scene to grow clearer. The enchanting primordial divine flower in the sky closed its petals, also dissipating into spots of light. Just as it vanished, a slender figure appeared before everyone.

Although his face was pale, he showed no signs of weakness or defeat! It was Mu Chen!

Incredulous gasps of surprise erupted from the onlookers like a volcano, and countless people were stunned. Mu Chen had really blocked the Prince of Netherworld's fatal move, which had been aimed to kill!

This fellow had actually succeeded!

Chapter 806: Victory!

The spots of light slowly descended from the sky, and silence enveloped the heavens and earth as everyone stared, dumbfounded.

Shock and disbelief were written in their gazes, as this outcome was entirely unexpected.

That was the Prince of Netherworld!

An ace in the Dragon-Phoenix Record ranked second only to Fang Yi in the younger generation of the North Territory, any talent had to admire him. Even brilliant talents like Liu Yan and Su Biyue felt fear and dread when faced with the Prince of Netherworld.

In the previous battle, even if it were the likes of Liu Yan or Su Biyue, not to mention Mu Chen, who was only a Third Grade Sovereign, it would be impossible for them to counter that fatal blow!

However, reality was full of miracles...

Everyone stared shell-shocked at the slender figure in the sky, and as the silence continued for a moment, it was finally broken by astonished whoops and cheers.

In the sky, Su Biyue and Snapper stared at each other at a loss before bitter smiles appeared on their beautiful faces.

"This Mu Chen... is really too formidable," Ding Xuan stated gravely. Even someone who craved battle as much as he did had to acknowledge that Mu Chen's performance was incredibly outstanding. He admitted to himself that if he were the one who had to counter the Prince of Netherworld's fatal blow, even if he could have escaped alive, he would have had to pay a heavy price.

"It wasn't a fluke that he defeated Liu Yan." Su Biyue and Snapper nodded. If they had thought that Liu Yan lost to Mu Chen because of underestimating him, they now understood that Mu Chen was indeed immensely powerful and was capable of defeating Liu Yan.

"Looks like after this Dragon-Phoenix Rift, Mu Chen's reputation will be

renowned across the entire North Territory..."

As the world was enveloped by shocked gasps, Mu Chen remained unperturbed, though he was extremely pale. The Datura Sky-wrecking Light he unleashed previously had expended much of his energy.

Although he had resisted the Prince of Netherworld's fatal blow with the Datura Sky-wrecking Light, Mu Chen's body did not relax in the slightest as he stared sharply into the distance where the Prince of Netherworld stood. However, the latter's emotionless demeanor now morphed into something livid, and his gaze became chilling and malicious.

Clearly, his miss caused him to be livid with fury as rage surged in his heart.

He was in disbelief, as his fatal move he held absolute confidence in had been countered by a mere Third Grade Sovereign!

Even Liu Yan and Su Biyue would have failed to counter it!

"Haha, looks like I had poor judgment this time..." The Prince of Netherworld's gaze was piercing, as if he wanted to impale Mu Chen, and his low voice rumbled with fury.

"However, the counter-attack previously must have expended your spiritual energy, right? What next then?!" The Prince of Netherworld's tone was chilling as murderous intent surged out from him, causing the temperature in the atmosphere to drop.

"Netherworld!"

Just as fury erupted in the Prince of Netherworld's heart, a roar reverberated from the battlefield at the other end of the sky. This roar caused the Prince of Netherworld's face to change as he hurriedly lifted his head to glance over. The colorful whirlpool's devouring force increased magnificently in Cai Xiao and Fang Yi's battlefield as the Divine Lotus Throne at Fang Yi's feet showed signs of cracking.

Fang Yi, who sat atop the Divine Lotus Throne, was incredibly somber as his spiritual energy flowed towards the throne continuously in an attempt to strengthen his defense.

He was now groaning inwardly, as he had been paying attention to the battle between the Prince of Netherworld and Mu Chen, but had not expected Mu Chen to counter the Prince of Netherworld's fatal blow. This had shocked him to the point where a flaw appeared in his manipulation of spiritual energy.

Although Fang Yi's flaw was very minute, Cai Xiao had caught this mistake with her sharp eyes. The devouring force caused cracks to appear in the Divine Lotus Throne, diminishing its power greatly. Although Fang Yi immediately tried to salvage it, he had lost his decisive advantage...

In such a battle, losing a decisive opportunity would be enough to doom him.

Thus, under the high-speed rotation of the colorful whirlpool, Fang Yi's magnificent spiritual power was constantly swallowed up. As the cracks on the Divine Lotus Throne spread, it was clearly impossible for him to persist much longer.

At this point, even with Fang Yi's composure, he couldn't help but roar at the Prince of Netherworld. If he failed to end Mu Chen, Fang Yi would fail as well.

Hearing Fang Yi's roar, the Prince of Netherworld's gaze flickered as he gritted his teeth and stomped his feet. The space twisted as his figure vanished.

However, just as the Prince of Netherworld disappeared, massive phoenix wings sprouted from Mu Chen's back, and as they fanned out, his figure appeared in a flash 1,000 feet away.

Just as Mu Chen vanished, the Prince of Netherworld's silhouette appeared where Mu Chen had just been. His expression was livid as he stared at Mu Chen, who was on guard a distance away.

Clearly, Mu Chen had expected his move.

"Looks like both of you have lost." A smirk appeared on Mu Chen's pale face as he stared at the Prince of Netherworld.

"Oh? Escaping like a rat now?" The Prince of Netherworld smiled

chillingly, and as his laugher rang out, he vanished into thin air again.

Whoosh!

Mu Chen's figure disappeared to a safe distance again as he smiled faintly. "Why use such an inferior way of goading me to fight?"

Mu Chen was clearly aware that the Prince of Netherworld wanted to force him to clash head-on with him, but Mu Chen would not do such a silly thing. Besides, after a series of excruciating battles, his spiritual energy was weaker now, and clashing head-on would be a foolish thing to do.

He just had to delay the Prince of Netherworld, and the scales of victory would tilt in their favor, for he could feel that the usually calm and composed Prince of Netherworld was beginning to lose his cool.

It was precisely because he was beginning to lose his composure that Mu Chen could avoid his relentless pursuit.

Two shadows flickered in the sky, one in hot pursuit, the other in escape. Although there were precarious moments where they nearly encountered each other, Mu Chen did not give the Prince of Netherworld a chance to strike.

This cat and mouse pursuit continued for a few rounds, and everyone could sense the growing murderous intent surrounding the Prince of Netherworld. His malicious stare wanted nothing more than to tear Mu Chen apart.

There was another flash as the Prince of Netherworld stopped in his tracks. He glared at Mu Chen eerily, and that glance caused the latter to tense, as he was on high alert.

The Prince of Netherworld did not strike out of anger, but took a deep breath as the blazing fury in his eyes dissipated. He was no ordinary man after all, and he knew that if he carried on, he would be unable to capture Mu Chen.

As the Prince of Netherworld's gaze returned to its usual nonchalance, Mu Chen's heart skipped a beat. This fellow is hard to deal with indeed, to

regain his composure so quickly. A Prince of Netherworld who had calmed down was the most dangerous to deal with.

The Prince of Netherworld glanced coldly at Mu Chen before conjuring up seals. A dim light surged out from within his body and transformed into two blurry shadows.

His own body also blurred, transforming to look exactly like the two dark silhouettes.

Whoosh!

The three shadows vanished into thin air unsettlingly.

Mu Chen's expression changed as he felt a fatal danger approaching. He fanned out his phoenix wings and swiftly retreated.

Buzz!

Just as Mu Chen retreated, the space surrounding him suddenly distorted as the three silhouettes appeared out of thin air and surrounded him.

"Try and escape again. Shall we see what will happen?!"

The three silhouettes chillingly spoke simultaneously as they dealt blows full of murderous intent that charged straight at Mu Chen. If the blows landed, even if Mu Chen had cultivated the Dragon-Phoenix Body, he would be grievously hurt.

In the face of a sudden stealth attack from the Prince of Netherworld, Mu Chen had no way of avoiding it. His gaze flickered wildly.

Boom!

However, just as the Prince of Netherworld was about to strike, horrified gasps rang amid the heavens and earth while in the other battlefield, the Divine Lotus Throne beneath Fang Yi could no longer withstand the terrifying devouring force and exploded with a deafening boom.

The moment the Divine Lotus Throne shattered, Fang Yi was directly exposed to the devouring force.

Cai Xiao glanced coldly at Fang Yi as he was sucked towards the colorful whirlpool vortex. Once he had been devoured, his death was certain, and even his spirit would fail to escape!

Fang Yi struggled valiantly but it was futile, and even summoning his Sovereign Celestial Body was for naught, as the colorful whirlpool was too overwhelmingly powerful.

Fang Yi's expression was grave, and he lost his previous composure entirely as he glanced at the approaching colorful whirlpool. The dangerous fluctuations emanating from it caused even his scalp to tingle in trepidation.

"D*mn it!"

Fang Yi finally couldn't help but curse. With a gnash of his teeth, he clenched his fists, and an ancient crimson jade appeared in his hand. He crushed it without hesitation.

Boom!

The piece of ancient jade shattered, and as the surrounding space around Fang Yi warped in a frenzy, it formed a spatial black hole and swallowed him before immediately vanishing.

As Fang Yi vanished, his voice rang in the heavens and earth livid with fury, "I will remember today's humiliation and soundly repay it in future!"

Countless powerful people stared dumbfounded as the scene unfolded before they gasped.

Fang Yi actually chose to escape!

The ancient jade he had crushed was the protective treasure that the Divine Pavilion had given to him, and once shattered, it had the ability to pierce space and allow one to escape. Hence, Fang Yi should have escaped out of the Dragon-Phoenix Rift, and this would mean that he had forfeited competing for the Dragon-Phoenix Legacy...

Cai Xiao stared coldly at Fang Yi, who had ultimately chosen to escape, and in the next moment, her figure vanished into thin air.

At the other side of the sky, the blows of the three shadows landed brutally in an attempt to kill Mu Chen, but Mu Chen's gaze, which had been flickering wildly, suddenly became calm, and a mocking smirk appeared on his face.

"Sorry, but we have won."

Upon hearing Mu Chen's words, the Prince of Netherworld's heart lurched in shock, and malice flashed in his gaze. No matter what, he could not let this brat off!

Boom!

The murderous intent surrounding the Prince of Netherworld surged as three powerful blows charged brutally towards Mu Chen's head with a speed as swift as lightning.

However, just as the aura of his blows was about to land, a cold hand rested on his back like a specter, and a chilling voice rang out, causing him to freeze.

"Make another move, and you're dead."

Chapter 807: Ownership of the Legacy

In the sky, the majestic spiritual energy swept through like a storm. Then, suddenly, it solidified under the girl's cold voice...

Everyone was looking at the sky, their pupils contracted. At that moment, Mu Chen stepped into the void. The dark shadows of the three hazy shadows pervaded throughout the space.

Just as the fierce blows were about to land on Mu Chen, with killing intent strong enough to inflict serious injuries, there occurred an intervention...

From behind the three dark silhouettes, the young girl's petite hand landed on the back of one of the silhouettes. The terrifying spiritual energy coalescing in her palm caused the silhouette to tense and freeze. The blow, which was about to land on Mu Chen, stopped dead in its tracks!

The air in the sky froze, and all was suddenly still. No one dared disrupt the silence.

The Prince of Netherworld's gaze flickered wildly, oscillating between one of malice and one of fear. The change in his gaze caused his emotionless demeanor to distort.

The Prince of Netherworld then glanced towards Mu Chen, his obvious spite apparent on his face. If he had a few more moments, he could have ended Mu Chen right then and there.

However, he hadn't expected that... Cai Xiao would be even faster! For her to appear behind him, it was clear that Fang Yi had already lost this conflict. What's more, Fang Yi's defeat in this moment would mean that his plan to deal with Mu Chen had also failed.

Mu Chen glanced at the Prince of Netherworld, whose gaze was flickering wildly, and smiled. Despite the ferocious blows that were about to land on him, there was no trace of fear in his eyes. He simply retracted the phoenix wings on his back, causing them to dissipate into spots of

light.

"Both of you have lost." Mu Chen glanced at the Prince of Netherworld and repeated.

"Are you asking for death?" the Prince of Netherworld said in a low menacing voice. It seemed that, now that Mu Chen's life was in his grasp, the latter was not fearful at all.

"You wouldn't dare exchange your life with mine." Mu Chen's dark eyes locked onto the Prince of Netherworld, a mocking smirk appearing on his face.

The Prince of Netherworld's pupils shrank. Although Mu Chen had landed in his grasp, during the two's confrontation, the latter's aura had completely overwhelmed him.

Under Mu Chen's fearless gaze, a subtle terror surfaced in the Prince of Netherworld's heart. Although he hated to admit, he was aware that, just like Mu Chen had said, he did not have the courage to die together with Mu Chen.

The Prince of Netherworld's gaze flashed, as he took a deep breath and turned his head to look at Cai Xiao. "We'll stop at the same time. I don't think we should really engage in a deadly duel, for that surely won't do us any good."

Cai Xiao glanced at Mu Chen, as the latter nodded at her. Their goal was to obtain the Dragon-Phoenix Legacy. Thus, there was no need to force the Prince of Netherworld into a corner. After all, even a rabbit at its most desperate would strike back and bite his aggressor, let alone the Prince of Netherworld, who was a ferocious wolf!

The Prince of Netherworld and Cai Xiao were no ordinary characters, thus they were not people who would go back on their word. Both retracted their moves simultaneously, as the storm of spiritual energy dissipated.

Whoosh!

The Prince of Netherworld's figure flashed. He then appeared a few

thousand miles away, staring at Cai Xiao and Mu Chen guardedly.

Mu Chen heaved a sigh of relief. He had expended too much spiritual energy in his body, and if the battle had continued, he would have been in great peril. Fortunately, Cai Xiao had defeated Fang Yi first.

"Impressive."

Mu Chen gave Cai Xiao a thumbs up. Although he had not fought Fang Yi, he was, after all, ranked first in the Dragon-Phoenix Record. Hence, his reputation was even stronger than the Prince of Netherworld's.

Furthermore, he had experienced the methods of the Prince of Netherworld prior to this confrontation. Thus, he was in awe that Cai Xiao could defeat the more powerful Fang Yi.

Cai Xiao's cold expression warmed, and her smile charmed the masses, causing everyone's attentions to focus on her. However, their glances were ones of respect, as Cai Xiao's capability had indeed shocked them all.

"You did pretty well, too, so it seems that I didn't make a wrong judgment." Cai Xiao smiled, admiration filling her gaze. In this battle, if Mu Chen had not done his best to delay the Prince of Netherworld, she would not have been able to defeat Fang Yi.

"I nearly lost though!" Mu Chen said in exasperation.

Mu Chen was clear that, with his current ability, if he had clashed directly with the Prince of Netherworld, he could only have put up some resistance. Once the battle turned serious, his odds of winning would have been very low.

No matter what, he was only a Third Grade Sovereign, and with the Prince of Netherworld's capability almost being that of a Fifth Grade Sovereign, this ability was enough to be ranked as a Lord in the Daluo Territory! Hence, no matter how many tricks Mu Chen had up his sleeve, it would have been difficult to defeat the Prince of Netherworld, like Mu Chen had defeated Liu Yan.

"The fact that you, as a Third Grade Sovereign, can accomplish this is already very astonishing. I think, if you were at the same grade as him, he

would be far inferior to you," Cai Xiao said.

Mu Chen had to acknowledge that such melodious praise from a beautiful girl had boosted his ego immensely. As such, he felt his heart flutter a bit.

After praising Mu Chen, Cai Xiao glanced at the Prince of Netherworld, before commenting nonchalantly, "You are still not leaving?"

The Prince of Netherworld's expression changed, as he stared at the two chillingly, before focusing in on Mu Chen. Then, he spoke, his voice cold. "Netherworld Palace will remember what happened today, but I hope that the next time we meet, you won't need to rely on a girl to save you."

Upon hearing this, Mu Chen smiled. "If we meet the next time, you will be the one who needs to look out."

Although it was difficult for him to defeat the Prince of Netherworld at his current stage, Mu Chen had the confidence that he would catch up. So, if they meet again next time, and the Prince of Netherworld still wanted to force him into a corner, like today, Mu Chen would make him understand that such a desire would be mere wishful thinking, as Mu Chen would improve by leaps and bounds in a short period of time!

"Such boastful claims."

The Prince of Netherworld scoffed, as the ace among the younger generation in the Northern Territory, he was extremely prideful. He found it preposterous that Mu Chen thought that he could surpass him. To him, if Cai Xiao hadn't saved Mu Chen, he would have been dead by now.

The Prince of Netherworld had no intention of remaining in this frustrating place. So, as he glowered at Mu Chen and Cai Xiao, he transformed into a stream of light that soared across the sky, heading straight towards the horizon.

He was aware that in order to obtain the Dragon-Phoenix Legacy, Cai Xiao would not allow a dangerous character like him to remain in the vicinity. And, since he could not obtain the Legacy, there was no point for him to stay any longer. He would simply have to settle this feud in the

future.

"You're in for trouble, Mu Chen!" Cai Xiao glanced at the Prince of Netherworld's retreating figure, smiling at Mu Chen teasingly.

Mu Chen froze.

"I'm not from the Northern Territory, so I will leave after the Dragon-Phoenix Rift. But, you're from the Daluo Territory, so you will eventually meet Fang Yi and the Prince of Netherworld. By then..." Cai Xiao teased.

Mu Chen nodded. Offending the two powerful figures, who were the first and second ranks of the Dragon-Phoenix Record, was not good news. But, throughout his journey, Mu Chen had offended countless powerful opponents. However, he chose to see these all as being mere trials and tribulations, which he could use to advance to higher levels.

Thus, Mu Chen did not fear these underlying threats. Instead, he anticipated them, for such pressure would only make him stronger!

"If you're worried, you can leave with me after the Dragon-Phoenix Rift. I can bring you to a place that will suit you better than the Daluo Territory. You might even obtain better conditions for cultivation there." Cai Xiao smiled and offered.

Cai Xiao's capability was enough to prove that she had an extraordinary background. In fact, according to Mu Chen' s deduction, her background was unparalleled to anyone in the Northern Territory. And, just like she said, if he went to where she came from, he might even attain better conditions for cultivation, which was something many powerful figures desired.

However, Mu Chen just shook his head. He was not used to being protected, and instead preferred to carve a name out for himself, relying on his own ability to become a true powerful Sovereign. He simply did not desire to rely on any other powerful forces or resources to protect and develop his reputation.

"Don't worry about me. Next time, I will help you deal with them." Mu Chen smiled.

Upon hearing Mu Chen's polite refusal of her aid, Cai Xiao raised her brows. But, she had to admit that she was astonished by the confidence in Mu Chen's words, as she was aware of Fang Yi's capabilities.

Even she had expended much effort in her moves today. So, now that Mu Chen said that he would deal with the both of them, in the eyes of ordinary people, that could only be wishful thinking on his part.

However, Cai Xiao did not mock him, but appraised Mu Chen and laughed gently. "Alright then, I hope that you will bring me good news the next time we meet."

Mu Chen smiled and nodded.

Cai Xiao then glanced at the countless gazes, which held fear and reverence in them, before looking towards the sky, where Su Biyue, Snapper, and Ding Xuan stood. She then stated faintly, "Do you have any opinions regarding our receiving the Dragon-Phoenix Legacy?"

Upon hearing Cai Xiao's voice, Su Biyue, Snapper, and Ding Xuan looked at each other, before sighing faintly in unison. Even such powerful figures, like Fang Yi and the Prince of Netherworld, had been defeated, so how would they dare say anything? Thus, only they shook their heads.

"Thanks a lot!" A brilliant smile bloomed on Cai Xiao's face, her charm overshadowing even the remarkable beauty of both Su Biyue and Snapper, as even they paled in comparison.

Mu Chen lifted his head to glance at the zenith of the Dragon-Phoenix Platform, where dazzling golden light emanated, as if it contained many wondrous and magical secrets. Excitement tingled in his heart.

The Dragon-Phoenix Legacy finally belonged to them!

Chapter 808: Dragon-Phoenix Step

In the sky, the storm of spiritual energy had already dissipated, and the breathtaking battle had reached its conclusion. The two figures hovering in the air were the center of attention.

Amid many heated glances, Mu Chen stared fixedly at the peak of the Dragon-Phoenix Platform as golden light glimmered brightly, and the ancient cries of the Dragon and Phoenix reverberated in the air.

That was where the Dragon-Phoenix Legacy lay.

Buzz.

The Dragon-Phoenix Platform seemed to have sensed the reduction in the number of competitors, and a golden flood rushed down from the peak of the Platform, condensing into a golden flight of stairs.

At the end of the stairs lay the Dragon-Phoenix Legacy.

"Go get the reward." Cai Xiao looked at the golden staircase and smiled. It had not been easy to get there after all the bloody battles, and it was time to enjoy the fruits of their labor.

Mu Chen nodded, and they appeared before the golden staircase, stepping up amid envious glances.

Standing behind them, Su Biyue, Snapper, and Ding Xuan followed. Although they could not obtain the Legacy at the highest level, they were able to get some great benefits at the lower levels.

The group went up to the golden staircase and finally stopped. Mu Chen looked up to see that at the end of the staircase there was a golden altar with distinct levels.

The altar was in the form of a Dragon and Phoenix intertwined with each other, and it emanated an ancient aura. This aura caused the world to feel as if it were back in primitive times, and as they continued, the aura grew increasingly pervasive.

That oppressive aura seemed to cause even the space to freeze and

coagulate.

There were less than ten steps from the top of the altar, but those last steps were incredibly difficult to climb, and the horribly oppressive aura that the Dragon-Phoenix was emitting was threatening to turn those who attempted to ascend into minced meat.

"The oppressive aura here..." Cai Xiao's expression was grave as she tightly knitted her brows, for she could feel that the Dragon-Phoenix aura there was terrifying, especially the ten golden steps before her. She felt that if she stepped up, that horrifying aura would swarm around her.

The oppressive aura there was even stronger than that of the superb Dragon-Phoenix Pool.

"It's said that when the real dragon and phoenix fell, their hearts descended here and transformed into the Dragon-Phoenix Platform, also sealing the Legacy... I'm afraid this place has the strongest oppressive aura in the entire Dragon-Phoenix Rift.

"The ten steps in front of you are also the ultimate test of the Dragon-Phoenix Legacy. These ten steps are called the Dragon-Phoenix Step. Only those who have successfully ascended it will be able to obtain the final Legacy."

Mu Chen gritted his teeth, as he also felt the terrible Dragon-Phoenix aura. If he had not cultivated the Dragon-Phoenix Body, he would have failed to withstand it.

"In the many years of the Dragon-Phoenix Rift, many powerful characters have made it here, but even the most elite have only reached the ninth step..."

"Oh?" Cai Xiao's gaze turned somber and her expression grew increasingly solemn. This Dragon-Phoenix Rift was so powerful, that even after being open for so many years, no one had actually made it to the tenth step?

"What do you think?" Cai Xiao glanced at Mu Chen and asked.

Mu Chen lifted his head to glance at the end of the Dragon-Phoenix

Step. It was bathed in golden light, and a powerful oppressive aura permeated where the ancient Dragon-Phoenix Legacy was hidden.

"It's not that easy for me to give up!" Determination burned in Mu Chen's dark eyes as he scoffed, and without any hesitation, he stepped onto the Dragon-Phoenix Step.

Boom!

Just as Mu Chen stepped onto the Dragon-Phoenix Step, the thunderous roar of a dragon rumbled, and a horrifying oppressive aura surged.

Mu Chen's body felt as heavy as mountains.

However, he gritted his teeth as he continued to trudge on with shaky footsteps.

Mu Chen's figure shook unsteadily on the Dragon-Phoenix Step, clearly under immense pressure. With every step, sweat dripped profusely, and his muscles bore an excruciating pain as if they were being torn apart.

Cai Xiao followed him, and although she wasn't having such a hard time in comparison, her steps were also heavy, as she was clearly also withstanding a terrifying pressure.

Behind them, Su Biyue, Snapper, and Ding Xuan were finding it torturous to climb with every step they took.

Everyone gazed at the five figures slowly climbing up the Dragon-Phoenix Step, and they were dying to know exactly who could ascend to which step in this Dragon-Phoenix Rift?!

Amid countless gazes, Mu Chen's wavering steps stopped at the sixth step, as he could feel his flesh being torn apart and blood trickling down his back.

The Dragon-Phoenix oppressive aura was so strong that even the Dragon-Phoenix Body was overwhelmed.

Cai Xiao followed behind Mu Chen, sweat dotting her forehead. Even with her immense power, she could not belittle the horrifying pressure here.

"You still want to continue?" Cai Xiao gritted her teeth as she glanced at the blood seeping out from Mu Chen's back.

Mu Chen remained silent and only nodded gravely. His dark eyes showed no signs of retreat and in the next moment, he took another step.

Spurt.

A wound surfaced on his shoulders, and blood gushed out, flowing down Mu Chen's to feet, leaving a glaring red footprint on the golden steps.

More blood gushed out from Mu Chen, with gashes appearing on his face. Blood blurred his vision, but he continued trudging on doggedly.

His steps finally paused at the eighth step.

Mu Chen was now covered with blood from head to toe, the terrifying pressure threatening to cause his body to explode. A dark golden light glowed within his flesh as the Dragon-Phoenix Blood Essence mended his battered body.

If it weren't for the protection from the Dragon-Phoenix Blood Essence, his physical body would have exploded by now. Even now, he felt that he had lost his sense of sight and hearing, as he couldn't hear any sounds from the world. He only sensed the oppressive pressure surging towards him that was as heavy as the mountains.

Mu Chen stood shakily on the eighth step as Cai Xiao stood beside him on the same step. Sweat trickled down her fair and slender neck, and her slightly damp clothes revealed her graceful curves.

Her beautiful face was pale, and as her chest heaved, her expression was solemn. She glanced at Mu Chen worriedly.

She finally realized why after all these years, no one had reached the tenth step. According to her estimation, even she could only reach the ninth step, and that was the limit. If she tried to advance further, her physical body would explode.

Behind them, Su Biyue, Snapper, and Ding Xuan stood on the sixth step and stopped, for they knew that was their limit. If they persisted, their

physiques would fail to withstand the pressure.

They sat cross-legged on the wide steps and lifted their heads to look at the two silhouettes before them. Respect and admiration crossed their gazes when they saw Mu Chen's bloody figure.

Mu Chen was only a Third Grade Sovereign, but could make it to the eighth step. The pressure he was withstanding was clearly horrifying. Any person who had less determination and resilience would have broken down by now.

The fact that Mu Chen could defeat Liu Yan and fight with the Prince of Netherworld despite only being a Third Grade Sovereign had baffled many, but now they understood how this young man had performed so many miracles.

These miracles were not opportunities that fell from the sky but instead were created by his own persistence and resilience.

Su Biyue, Snapper, and the others looked at each other with complex gazes.

Cai Xiao dabbed at her chin and wiped off her sweat as she glanced at Mu Chen, who was covered in blood, and stated solemnly, "Don't continue."

The blood coagulated into blood clots and covered Mu Chen's face. "You can go up." His voice had become incredibly hoarse, as if his throat were damaged by the terrifying Dragon-Phoenix aura.

Cai Xiao nodded and gritted her teeth, moving daintily. Majestic spiritual energy surrounded her, defending against the Dragon-Phoenix oppressive aura as her shaky steps finally landed on the ninth step.

The ninth step!

Gasps rang among the crowd, as only one brilliant talent had managed to step on the ninth step after the Dragon-Phoenix Rift had been open for so many years. Now, another talent had appeared.

Amid the ruckus, Mu Chen, who was drenched in blood, struggled to lift

his head as he stared at the peak of the Dragon-Phoenix Platform with blurry eyes. Golden light shimmered, as if the real dragon and phoenix encircled the platform, looming over him and emanating an incredibly oppressive aura.

That pressure was enough to make any one break down.

However, Mu Chen clenched his fist. What stood before him was an insurmountable mountain. Even with his powerful physique, he could not withstand the power of the Dragon-Phoenix aura.

Mu Chen could feel that if he stepped onto the ninth step, cracks would appear on his physique. If he stepped onto the tenth step, there was an 80% chance that his physical body would explode.

Now... should he give up?

Mu Chen's vision turned blurry, and in the darkness, a slender silhouette emerged. The young girl was dressed in a black robe and had long, billowing hair. Her crystal-like eyes gazed at him gently.

Luo Li.

The girl who had motivated him to keep on running... Now, she should be in the Luo God Clan, bearing the pressure of saving the clan. The pressure she would be facing was no less than what he was facing.

And he had promised her... that he would become the most powerful Sovereign...

His eyes, which had been blurred with blood, suddenly opened, and his gaze no longer held any hint of hesitation. The road to becoming a powerful Sovereign was destined to have many trials and tribulations, and if he gave up easily, how would he fulfil the promise made to her?

"Ah?!"

Shocked gasps rang in the world as Su Biyue and Snapper covered their mouths in shock and stared in astonishment. The wavering figure who was about to fall suddenly had a surge of majestic aura, and he let out a skyward roar as he stepped forward!

With one step, he stepped onto the ninth step!

Cai Xiao's eyes widened, shock flitting across her face as she realized that bloody wounds had emerged on Mu Chen's body with blood spurting out of them.

Excruciating pain surged, almost overwhelming Mu Chen's rationality, but in the frenzied growls, he stepped forward once again!

Cai Xiao was utterly stunned.

Everyone gasped, as they knew what Mu Chen intended to do.

Amid everyone's shell-shocked glances, Mu Chen stepped onto it!

The tenth step!

Mu Chen stood atop the peak of the Dragon-Phoenix Step as Cai Xiao's face twisted in horror, for she saw his body explode!

Blood spurted everywhere!

His physical body had exploded!

Chapter 809: Dragon-Phoenix Bloodbath

Boom!

When fresh blood spewed out from the top of the Dragon-Phoenix Platform, everyone froze and was taken aback. No one had expected Mu Chen to be so bold. He had not only traversed nine steps in one move, he had even moved on to the tenth step!

However, when he was on that tenth step, he seemed unable to bear the oppression from the dragon and the phoenix. The flesh on his body even started to tear apart. All the top powers swallowed hard and sighed. If Mu Chen could not accomplish this feat, then no one could possibly cross over to the tenth step!

All of the people present were shouting out in shock. As she looked at the scene before her, Cai Xiao turned pale. Fresh blood was spewing out everywhere, causing her to look with devastation at Mu Chen, who was about to be killed. She had not expected Mu Chen to go so far!

Did he not know that the tenth step was the step that could kill him? This dangerous step was not a simple matter of strength. In fact, throughout the years, even the most outstanding talent would stop at the ninth step! No one was allowed to take this step...

Cai Xiao gritted her teeth, her expression changing. As she was about to dash out to save Mu Chen, who was about to fall down, Mu Chen managed to balance himself. Then, he knelt down on one of his knees and cried out.

"Ah!"

His cry was filled with pain, but it carried with it a fierce determination and perseverance that moved everyone present. His body had become so bloody, one could even see his bones!

Also, a large part of his flesh had been torn apart. His body would have been entirely destroyed, had he not had the vitality of the Dragon-Phoenix Blood Essence!

Yet, even in this vulnerable state, he had no intention of giving up! His cry was like a lion's roar, resounding in the heavens and the earth!

The top powers looked at the top of the Dragon-Phoenix Steps in shock. Mu Chen lifted his head up, crying out. Seeing this scene, all of the extraordinary masters, including Cai Xiao, Su Biyue, and Snapper, were taken aback by Mu Chen's present show of fortitude and determination. Mu Chen's strong conviction had indeed moved them.

"He is amazing!" Ding Xuan was stunned and gave him a thumbs-up. Mu Chen had gained even more respect in this face-off than he had when he contended with the Prince of the Netherworld!

At that moment, the cry that resounded in the heaven and the earth caught the attention of many top powers. At this same instant, the cries of a dragon and a phoenix resounded at the top of Dragon-Phoenix Platform.

Everyone was shocked. At the end of the Dragon-Phoenix Steps, a majestic golden light beam shot up to the sky. Mu Chen could be seen kneeling on one knee within the light beam.

Also, liquid seemed to be flowing within the golden light beam. If one looked carefully, it could be seen that this liquid was the completely pure golden Dragon-Phoenix Blood Essence!

The golden Dragon-Phoenix Blood Essence then whizzed down like a storm, landing on Mu Chen's broken body, continually covering him. His flesh, which had been torn apart, speedily regenerated itself.

Seen from afar, Mu Chen looked like a Golden Arhat. He exuded an awe-inspiring oppression that harkened back to ancient times. The oppression was directly from the real dragon and the real phoenix!

"This is the...Dragon-Phoenix Bloodbath!"

All the top levels were stunned at this sudden change of events. After a while, they were then filled with envy, as they noticed how pure the Dragon-Phoenix Blood Essence was! No number of Dragon-Phoenix Pools could ever compare to it!

"This guy is so lucky!" A top level said, looking envious.

That was the Dragon-Phoenix Bloodbath. Even someone with a weak physique could be transformed after being washed in the Dragon-Phoenix Bloodbath.

Luckily, Mu Chen had strong physique, making it that much easier! After this, he could contend with his same rank, based on his physique alone.

Although many people were envious, they knew that Mu Chen had been able to obtain the Dragon-Phoenix Bloodbath by his strong determination and boldness. They would not have had the courage to take the risk of going up the forbidden step!

"The tenth step is only a test." Su Biyue and Snapper looked perplexed as they watched the scene. They had truly believed that anyone that stepped on the tenth step would surely lose his life. Even after all of these years, no one had dared risk his life. But, now, this Mu Chen had broken the record!

Cai Xiao heaved a sigh of relief. She definitely found Mu Chen interesting. Although he was young, he had such strong convictions and determination. Even she was moved by him. As she looked at Mu Chen, she truly felt that he would become very well-known in The Great Thousand World one day.

Buzz.

Some of the Dragon-Phoenix Blood Essence from the golden light beam spread out to Cai Xiao, Su Biyue, and Snapper. Although it was nothing compared to what Mu Chen had received, if they could refine it, they would benefit greatly from it. They immediately sat cross-legged, absorbing as much Dragon-Phoenix Blood Essence as they could.

The golden light beam swirled around the heavens and the earth, accompanied by the cries of the dragon and the phoenix. After about 10 minutes, it gradually dissipated.

The people immediately turned to look at the top of the Dragon-Phoenix Platform. The golden light beam had disappeared, and they saw Mu Chen kneeling down on one knee.

He was topless, and golden lights were shimmering all over his body. His bloody flesh had clearly been healed. As the golden lights surged, an oppression exuded from his body.

One could see the golden phoenix symbol on Mu Chen's back, its wings spread out majestically. It seemed to have come to life! In fact, with it outspread wings, it looked as though it was about to fly up to the sky!

A golden dragon symbol was on his chest. As the huge dragon looked down, it looked very imposing. It seemed to be looking at the world with disdain, wordlessly announcing that its majesty was not to be trifled with!

Mu Chen slowly opened his eyes. His dark pupils had turned golden. He looked incredibly awe-inspiring, stunning everyone.

After a while, the golden color disappeared from his eyes. He then lowered his head, looking at his healed body. He slowly grasped his fists, feeling the power that was surging in his body. He could distinctly sense that there were a real dragon and real phoenix in his body.

He touched the Real Dragon Symbol on his chest, his eyelid twitching at the same time. The Real Dragon Symbol and Real Phoenix Symbol seemed to have a rare vitality and energy within them! These were clearly not mere symbols, but were alive!

Whatever they were, Mu Chen had successfully overcome the catastrophe, so he was grateful! He could feel that the vitality in his body was more than 10 times stronger than it had been before.

Moreover, he had totally recovered from the injuries from his fight with the Prince of the Netherworld. He found the rate of his recovery to be amazingly fast! Thus, it looked like he had won this round!

As the golden light beam dissipated from the heavens and the earth, golden lights shone forth from the altar of the Dragon-Phoenix Platform. Dragon scales and phoenix feathers could be seen within the golden lights. Ancient texts also indistinctly appeared on the dragon scales and phoenix feathers.

"Those are the legacies of the real dragon and the real phoenix!"

There was an uproar when the dragon scales and phoenix feathers appeared, as many people were filled with envy. They thought that, if they could get their hands on one of the things left behind by the real dragon and real phoenix, it would help them greatly in their cultivation.

The dragon scales and phoenix feathers swirled around the Dragon-Phoenix Platform, engulfing the Dragon-Phoenix Steps. Luckily, Cai Xiao, Su Biyue, and Snapper were able to get ahold of them. However, as the steps got higher, the inheritance objects became more precious.

The power of the dragon scales and phoenix feathers were determined by the golden lights that exuded from them. The higher the steps got, the less dragon scales and phoenix feathers were present. However, the lights only grew stronger with the ascent.

When Su Biyue and Snapper saw the dragon scales and phoenix feathers, they were overjoyed. They wasted no time in trying to get ahold of them.

Mu Chen looked at the top of the Dragon-Phoenix Platform. The golden lights were sparse. In fact, as compared to the dragon scales and phoenix feathers that were on the lower steps, there were far less at the top. In his estimate, there were only about 10 rays present at the top.

Within these rays, one could see dragon scales, dragon bones, phoenix feathers and other objects. The objects consistently exuded out fluctuations that were clearly from ancient times. They were extremely mysterious.

Mu Chen looked at the 10 rays, knowing that he could only choose one object. He pondered for a while, shutting his eyes. Since it was difficult for him to make a choice, he decided that he would let nature take its course.

Thus, he slowly opened up his hands in a calm manner. Dim golden lights shone forth from his body. The Dragon-Phoenix Body had activated by itself!

The Real Dragon Symbol and Real Phoenix Symbol gently vibrated. Then, a golden beam suddenly shot out toward the right side of the 10 rays.

Swish. Swish.

The golden beam caught one of the rays, then brought it back to Mu Chen. Mu Chen opened his eyes to see the golden ray now hanging before him. He stretched out his hand, just as the golden ray landed onto his palm. Then, the ray dissipated, leaving an object in his still upturned palm.

Mu Chen saw that it was a golden bone filled with ancient runes. The runes seemed to be ancient texts, as they exuded an intense and mysterious fluctuation.

Mu Chen closed his fist around the mysterious golden bone, holding it tighter. As he did so, he felt his blood and body shaking. He was stunned. It appeared that this golden bone must be very special to the Dragon-Phoenix Body!

Chapter 810: The Dragon-Phoenix Scripture

The ancient golden bone laid quietly in Mu Chen's hand. There were mysterious, strange-looking runes on the bones.

Mu Chen studied the mysterious golden bone. It seemed to be closely related to the Dragon-Phoenix Body he had cultivated since the Dragon-Phoenix Body only reacted to it.

Mu Chen rubbed the golden bone with his palms and tried to infuse spiritual energy into it. However, he failed to do that. There seemed to be a power in the golden bone that did not allow any other power to enter it.

Mu Chen's eyes glittered. In order to know the secret of the golden bone, he would have to infuse power that it was willing to accept...

The power that it is willing to accept?

Mu Chen suddenly had a thought and smiled. He clenched his hand into a fist and allowed his fingers to prick into his palm. Fresh blood flowed out and dripped onto the golden bone.

As the fresh blood covered the golden bone, the ancient runes seemed to come to life and started moving. They whooshed out, turned into a golden ray, and entered Mu Chen's body between his eyebrows.

Boom!

Mu Chen's body shook, and his head was like an erupting volcano. The explosive sound caused the energy and blood in his body to surge.

He felt the world turning around, and there was darkness before him. After a while, golden lights replaced the darkness. Mu Chen looked around and found himself standing on a stretch of golden ocean.

There were ripples on the surface of the golden ocean, and they started to gather together. They formed a tidal wave and swirled toward Mu Chen.

As Mu Chen looked at the wave, he suddenly saw a figure sitting cross-legged on top of the wave. The figure was covered with golden lights, and

Mu Chen was unable to see the face. The oppression that exuded from the figure weighed Mu Chen down.

The mysterious figure suddenly lifted his head and cried out. It sounded strange. It was like the cry of a dragon as well as the cry of a phoenix. It was like a combination of the two and was extremely powerful.

Swoosh!

Golden lights burst out from the mysterious figure and turned into a huge real dragon and real phoenix.

Hiss.

Mu Chen gasped. As he watched the dragon and phoenix circling around the mysterious figure to protect him, he suddenly came to a realization. The figure had cultivated the Dragon-Phoenix Body!

The Dragon-Phoenix Body was so powerful that it could turn the Dragon-Phoenix Symbols into the real thing!

Although this real dragon and real phoenix did not possess the combat force of the real dragon and real phoenix of old, they had destructive power. If this real dragon and real phoenix joined forces with their master, they could be more powerful than those Sovereigns whose power was comparable to the real dragon and real phoenix.

"What a powerful Dragon-Phoenix Body!"

Mu Chen was excited. Although the Dragon-Phoenix Body that he had cultivated was at its initial stage, he was confident that one day he would be able to reach the realm of this mysterious figure.

As Mu Chen looked on with envy, the mysterious figure stood up on the tidal wave and waved his sleeve. The real dragon and real phoenix circling around him suddenly cried out and crashed against each other.

Bright golden lights exploded. Mu Chen froze and was taken aback. He saw that the real dragon and real phoenix had disappeared, and a humongous mysterious creature had appeared.

It had the body of a dragon covered with glittering golden scales. It also

had a huge pair of phoenix wings, and as they spread out, they covered the sky.

The mysterious creature was majestic. It seemed to be the most perfect creature in the heavens and the earth. It caused one to be in awe of it.

"Is this..."

Mu Chen was shocked and muttered, "Is this the legendary Dragon Phoenix?"

According to legend, the Dragon Clan and Phoenix Clan were the top clans among the Divine Beasts. They refused to accept each other and had fought many battles against each other. There was a period recorded in history when the Dragon Clan and Phoenix Clan formed an alliance. The one who had led the Dragon Clan and the Phoenix Clan was the Dragon Phoenix!

Only the Dragon Phoenix had gained recognition from both the prideful Dragon Clan and the Phoenix Clan to become their leader.

However, the Dragon Phoenix rarely existed. After so many years, no one had heard a thing about the Dragon Phoenix, and they knew nothing about it. Even Mu Chen had only heard of it from Nine Nether once in a while.

A Dragon Phoenix had now appeared before Mu Chen's eyes.

"What a powerful Dragon-Phoenix Body," Mu Chen muttered. He was in a daze. He had not expected one to be able to cultivate the Dragon-Phoenix Body to a level that could make the real dragon and real phoenix come to life. Moreover, he could make them merge together and form the legendary Dragon Phoenix!

This power was beyond what one could imagine.

Hoof.

After a long while, Mu Chen let out a deep breath. The Dragon-Phoenix Body was mysterious. To cultivate it to the realm of the mysterious figure, he would have to go through many hardships.

The Dragon Phoenix started to fade away and scattered into golden light spots. The mysterious figure standing on the wave flicked his fingers, and the golden light spots gathered before Mu Chen and formed ancient text.

Mu Chen gazed at the ancient text and saw a few words at the top. A majestic aura spread out.

"Dragon-Phoenix Scripture!"

The golden text turned into a streamer and entered Mu Chen's head. The golden ocean started to crash up, and the figure on the tidal wave started to dissipate as well.

Before the figure dissipated, Mu Chen felt that he was looking at him. His look seemed to pierce through Mu Chen's soul.

Before Mu Chen could recall the look, he had opened his eyes. He was on the Dragon-Phoenix Golden Platform. The golden bone in his hand had turned into powder and had flown away with the wind.

He could sense some obscure information in his mind. It should be the legendary Dragon-Phoenix Scripture.

Mu Chen curved his lips with joy. Although he had cultivated the Dragon-Phoenix Body, without the cultivation method from the Dragon-Phoenix Scripture, the Dragon-Phoenix Body would only be slightly more powerful than the Thunder God Physique. It would be impossible for him to reach the level of the mysterious figure.

He was fortunate to have obtained the Dragon-Phoenix Scripture.

"It seems like you have had a good harvest." Cai Xiao came behind Mu Chen and laughed. Cai Xiao was able to reach the top of the Dragon-Phoenix Platform, as the horrifying oppression had completely disappeared after Mu Chen had successfully stepped onto it.

Mu Chen nodded and smiled. He immediately said, "Thanks a lot."

He meant it, as he knew that without Cai Xiao's help, he would not have been able to come this far. Given his current strength, it would be impossible for him to contend with Fang Yi and the Prince of Netherworld.

He was fortunate to have met Cai Xiao and to have not prevented her from following him.

Cai Xiao just waved her hand and said, "We have got what we wanted. Without you, I would have gotten myself into trouble as well. You deserve it."

Mu Chen smiled. As he was about to say something else, he suddenly saw a golden light above the Dragon-Phoenix Platform. It then turned into a space whirlpool.

This was the space passageway that would lead them out of the Dragon-Phoenix Rift.

"It looks like the Dragon-Phoenix Rift is about to end." Cai Xiao looked at the space whirlpool and was a bit hesitant. After a while, she patted Mu Chen's shoulder and said with a smile, "Nice working with you."

Mu Chen nodded and also said with a smile, "Nice working with you."

As the space whirlpool appeared, most of the top powers showed no desire to stay. Many shadows whooshed into the space whirlpool.

Likewise, Mu Chen took one last look at the place and turned into a streamer. He dashed into the space whirlpool together with Cai Xiao.

They were in the space whirlpool for a few seconds, and then there was a great change to the surroundings. The feeling of being in a desolated, ancient place disappeared. They saw a clean place which made them feel relaxed.

Mu Chen and Cai Xiao were on the Dragon-Phoenix Ridge. Many people were there as well, and the top powers darted out of the space whirlpool like locusts.

The entire place was in an uproar.

Mu Chen and Cai Xiao stood in the air, and as people passed by, they would avoid them. All of them were wary of Mu Chen and Cai Xiao.

With their strength, Mu Chen and Cai Xiao had won the respect of many of the proud and overbearing top powers.

Mu Chen looked around, and as he was about to leave the place with Cai Xiao, he suddenly stopped. He could feel a horrifying spiritual energy swirling out in the area.

The spiritual energy oppression was directed at him!

An angry voice filled with killing intent resounded in the area and caused many top powers to turn pale.

"How dare you destroy my son's physique and harm his spirit. I shall tear you into pieces!"

Mu Chen was shocked. It was Liu Tiandao, hall master of Tian Xuan Hall!

Chapter 811: The Three Great Powers

An angry voice thundered, resounding throughout the area. A horrifying spiritual energy windstorm swirled up, its sheer intensity taking the top levels aback. Then, as the horrifying spiritual energy oppressed the area, it slowed down the spiritual energy flow of many of these top powers.

Mu Chen turned pale, as he knew that the spiritual energy oppression was being directed at him. The oppression had even cause the space around him to become frozen. In fact, the sheer intensity of the oppression was comparable to that of the Dragon-Phoenix Steps!

Bright golden rays encircled Mu Chen's body. He gritted his teeth, then tried to activate the Dragon-Phoenix Body. At the same time, he fixed his gaze towards the sky.

There, he saw a great space warp, from which, a man had just stepped out into the sky. He was dressed in green and had an imposing spirit. His cold look caused the temperature in the area to drop drastically.

As he stood in the air, the heavens and the earth seemed to be pulled towards him. All of the top levels also felt an irresistible oppression coming from him, one that completely rendered them unable to stand upright. This was undoubtedly the oppression of a Sovereign!

"Is that Liu Tiandao, hall master of Tian Xuan Hall?"

"Oh no, why is he here?"

"Is he here to deal with Mu Chen..."

When Liu Tiandao appeared, the entire place was in an uproar. No one had expected Liu Tiandao, one of the top forces in the North Territory, to come to this place!

Many of them looked at Mu Chen. If the Earthly Sovereign struck, it would be impossible for Mu Chen to survive!

The horrifying oppression caused Mu Chen's muscles to twitch and his back to fill with sweat. However, he looked calm, not showing his anxiety.

He lifted up his head to look at Liu Tiandao, then said loudly, "Hall Master Liu, we have to accept whatever happens in this Dragon-Phoenix Rift. Are these not the rules? Are you disregarding your status by seeking revenge for Liu Yan?"

"Rules?"

Cold lights surged in Liu Tiandao's eyes. He seemed to pierce straight through Mu Chen's soul as he looked at him.

He then said flatly, "Do you not know that we set the rules in the North Territory? You are silly to be talking to me about these rules."

Mu Chen's heart sank. He had not expected Liu Tiandao to disregard his status. If he should attack Mu Chen, Mu Chen would definitely be killed!

"Hohoho. You are just an unsophisticated overlord, but you talk big." As Mu Chen was thinking of how he could escape, Cai Xiao, who was behind him, sneered at Liu Tiandao.

She looked mockingly at him with disdain. Many of the top powers were stunned. This was the first time that they had encountered someone talking to an Earthly Sovereign in such a bold manner.

"Ignorant girl!"

Liu Tiandao looked coldly at Cai Xiao. He stretched forth his hand...

Boom!

The space in front of them collapsed, as a Spiritual Energy Giant Hand instantly appeared. As the Spiritual Light dazzled, the Hand looked like a bright gem. This was a sign to represent that the spiritual energy had been refined to an extremely high level.

No ordinary Sovereign would be able to do such a thing! Needless to say, it was extremely powerful.

The bright Spiritual Energy Giant Hand was as quick as lightning. It pierced through the air, appearing above Mu Chen and Cai Xiao. When Mu Chen saw it, he turned pale and pulled Cai Xiao behind him.

Then, the golden lights from his body shot up to the sky. Also, the

golden dragon symbol on his chest and the golden phoenix symbol on his back both started to heat up. Although he knew that there was no way for him to contend with Liu Tiandao, he had no choice but to try!

Boom!

The bright Spiritual Energy Giant Hand pressed down. Mu Chen gritted his teeth.

Then, just as Mu Chen was about to bear the destructive blow, the space above him suddenly tore apart. A small figure appeared in the air, then gently hit upward with her palm. The space tore apart, instantly destroying the Spiritual Energy Giant Hand.

A Spiritual Energy Shockwave swirled out. Mu Chen lifted up his head, completely startled by the scene. He saw a familiar figure in the air, a horrifying spiritual energy fluctuation encircling her. The spiritual energy was causing crackling sounds to echo throughout the space.

"Mandela!"

As Mu Chen looked at her, he was overjoyed. He heaved a deep sigh of relief. Mandela was here to help him. If she had not arrived, he would not have been able to escape!

"Wow!"

There was a collective uproar in the area. Although the top levels were unfamiliar with Mandela, the horrifying spiritual energy fluctuation that surrounded her had revealed her power and status. Other than the Dominator of Daluo Territory, no one would stand up for Mu Chen, much less be able to contend with Liu Tiandao!

The Earthly Sovereigns were the most influential people in the North Territory. Thus, ordinary top levels were unable to see them most days. However, these leaders of two top forces had suddenly appeared in this place. This surprising turn of events gave the top levels quite a shock!

Mandela was dressed in a long black dress. The dress had golden flower prints on its hem. She looked extremely elegant.

Then, completely ignoring the uproar, Mandela looked at Mu Chen. She rebuked him and said, "Don't be rude. Address me as Lord Dominator!"

After she had said this, she smiled. "You have done well. You did not bring disgrace to us." Judging from her tone, she already knew about Mu Chen's performance in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift.

"I was nearly killed!" Mu Chen said snappily. If Mandela had appeared slightly later, he would have surely been killed by Liu Tiandao. Mu Chen did not have any confidence in his taking that blow from such a fierce opponent.

"Don't worry. He is not capable of killing anyone from my territory," Mandela smiled and said flatly. Although her voice was gentle, it was authoritative and domineering. It was also extremely powerful.

"Ha!" Liu Tiandao snorted in the air. He stared at Mandela and said coldly, "Dominator of Daluo, this boy has abolished the skills of my two sons. I will not take such an insult lying down! If the Daluo Territory is shielding this boy, don't blame Tian Xuan Hall for killing your men during the Big Hunting War!"

Mandela glanced at Liu Tiandao and said, "We have established ourselves in the North Territory, not because someone has shown mercy to us. If you want to fight, we will take you on at any time."

The top powers were shocked. Although the Dominator looked extremely cute, her tone was tough and forceful, as though she could dominate the world! Everyone knew that, once the top forces started a war, they had to pay a high price. If they were defeated, they would surely be encroached upon. However, the Dominator still showed no signs of fear.

Liu Tiandao turned gloomy, looking at Mandela with a strong killing intent.

"Liu Tiandao, stop tooting your own horn! You don't have the capability to snatch anyone away from me," Mandela said. She was not threatened by Liu Tiandao's look.

Upon hearing this, Liu Tiandao sneered and said, "Since you are not

afraid of me, then what if I add one more person?"

Mandela stared at him, then tilted her head to the side. A blood shadow appeared from the horizon, then surged toward her like a sea of blood. In split seconds, the shadow figure appeared before her.

Many people watched the scene in awe. The figure was dressed in red. He was a middle-aged man with a sharp thin face. His lips were thin and his pupils were triangular. He looked cold and exuded an ominous aura. When he appeared, a strange scent spread out.

"That's the Venomous Revered Snake from the Snake Shrine!" The top levels shouted out, recognizing the figure in red.

"Venomous Revered Snake?" When Mu Chen heard this, his heart sank. It was the hall master of the Snake Shrine. He recalled that Scarlet Blood from the Snake Shrine had died at Cai Xiao's hands during the Dragon-Phoenix Rift.

When Mandela saw Venomous Revered Snake, she frowned. She was not afraid of Liu Tiandao. However, she knew that facing two Earthly Sovereign masters would be tough for her to handle.

"Is Venomous Revered Snake planning to war against the Daluo Territory as well?" Mandela looked at Venomous Revered Snake and asked coldly.

"Hiss, hiss..."

Venomous Revered Snake laughed, but his laughter sounded more like the hissing of a snake. He pointed at Cai Xiao, who was standing beside Mu Chen, then said sharply, "I can smell Scarlet Blood coming from your body. It seems like you have refined his bloodline..."

"Dominator, if you give her to me, I will stay out of your disputes."

Venomous Revered Snake licked his lips. He stared at Cai Xiao, as though he wanted to strip her. Although snakes were lustful, given his power, he should be able to control himself! However, when he saw Cai Xiao, he was unable to suppress his animalistic desire. He felt that Cai Xiao would be able to help him greatly in his cultivation!

When Mu Chen saw Venomous Revered Snake targeting Cai Xiao, his heart sank. But, just as he was about to say something, Cai Xiao stopped him. She smiled charmingly at Venomous Revered Snake, beckoning him closer with her finger. Her laughter resounded in the heavens and the earth.

"If you want me, you can come over and try to get me."

Chapter 812: The Imperial Flame

"If you want me, come and try to get me."

Cai Xiao stood in the air and mocked Venomous Revered Snake. The top powers heard what she had said, and they were shocked. They were baffled that Cai Xiao could remain so calm in the face of such a powerful master like Venomous Revered Snake.

Does she not know how powerful an Earthly Sovereign is?

They were not the only ones who were shocked. Even Venomous Revered Snake was taken aback. He then smiled weirdly. He stared at Cai Xiao and said sharply, "How dare you talk to me in such a manner. Hiss, hiss. This is interesting. I want to have you all the more!"

Having said that, Venomous Revered Snake immediately acted. The space tore apart, and he swiftly appeared before Cai Xiao. He stretched forth his hand to grab Cai Xiao's wrist.

When he struck, the space around Cai Xiao froze, and she was unable to move. Even the spiritual energy in her body could not be activated.

When Mu Chen saw this, he turned pale. As he was about to help Cai Xiao, he saw Cai Xiao curling up her lips, looking scornfully at Venomous Revered Snake. Mu Chen was baffled and held back.

What is Cai Xiao up to?

Cai Xiao remained calm and looked coldly at Venomous Revered Snake. As Venomous Revered Snake was about to grab her hand, she flipped her hand over, and a red jade tablet appeared in her hand.

Fire runes were carved on the jade tablet. Cai Xiao grabbed the jade tablet and crushed it.

Crackle!

As the jade tablet was crushed, flame swirled out and engulfed Cai Xiao. As the flame spread out, the top powers squinted.

The flame that surrounded Cai Xiao was unique. It was colorful and had

several different properties.

The colorful flame circled around Cai Xiao like a stream, and it looked stunning.

One could tell that the color was extremely pure, and it exuded a horrifying fluctuation that could destroy anything.

Mu Chen had seen flames with many different properties before. The Myriad Flame Celestial Body that was cultivated by Liu Yan had a similar power. However, the flame was nothing compared to the one that was circling around Cai Xiao.

"The flame..." Mandela was stunned. She looked grave as she stared at the pure, colorful flame. Even with her strength, she could feel an intimidating fluctuation emanating from the flame.

Venomous Revered Snake was taken aback as well. He was an Earthly Sovereign master and was extremely sensitive. When he saw the flame around Cai Xiao, he felt a chill go down his spine and immediately retreated.

He moved so quickly that it was impossible to catch up with him.

Cai Xiao simply stretched forth her finger and tapped gently.

Swoosh!

The flame around her body swirled up and disappeared into thin air. Venomous Revered Snake, who had retreated, suddenly screamed. The flame had traveled through space, appeared around him, and entrapped him.

The top powers gasped. The flame was extremely strange. Distance was nothing to it, and it had appeared around Venomous Revered Snake in an instant.

It traveled so quickly that it caught one off guard.

"You!"

Venomous Revered Snake was enraged. He waved his sleeves and spiritual energy swirled out like a stream. Just a tinge of the spiritual

energy was enough to destroy heaven and earth. However, when the spiritual energy came into contact with the colorful flame, it completely dissolved.

"How can this be?" Venomous Revered Snake shouted. He no longer looked dignified; he looked shocked. Even he was no match for her. He found it hard to believe that someone as weak as Cai Xiao could have such powerful means!

Boom!

Venomous Revered Snake immediately formed a seal with his hands. Red fog gushed out from his body and covered him like a shield.

When the red fog appeared, it dissolved the spiritual energy in the heavens and the earth. That was the divine poison that Venomous Revered Snake had been proud of. Even the Earthly Sovereign masters were wary of it.

The red fog swirled out and formed a Blood Dragon. It roared and darted toward the colorful flame.

Swish. Swish.

When the Blood Dragon and the colorful flame collided, a shocking scene appeared. The Blood Dragon gave out a miserable cry, and the poison was burned up by the colorful flame and speedily evaporated.

The colorful flame went near Venomous Revered Snake and burned his body.

Venomous Revered Snake was alarmed. He could feel that he would be seriously injured if he were to continue to be burned by this horrifying flame.

However, there was no way for him to stop the colorful flame from burning. It seemed determined to burn him into ashes.

"Crap!"

Venomous Revered Snake turned pale. He gritted his teeth and formed a seal. His body suddenly exploded and fresh blood spewed all over. The tail

of a colorful snake was in the flame, but the actual body had disappeared into thin air.

In the sky afar, the space exploded. Venomous Revered Snake dashed out pathetically. His lower body was bloody, and fresh blood flowed out continually.

The top powers were shocked when they saw Venomous Revered Snake in such a pathetic state. Even Mandela and Liu Tiandao looked extremely grave. Although Venomous Revered Snake had advanced to Earthly Sovereign only a short time ago, he was an Earthly Sovereign master. Even if they were to fight with him, it would take some time for them to triumph over him. However, he had now been forced to break away from his tail in order to escape. Most importantly, he had been beaten to such a pathetic state by a girl who was not powerful!

"Who is she?"

Many top powers, including Mu Chen, were stunned. They looked at Cai Xiao, who was standing in the air. Although Mu Chen knew that Cai Xiao was not a simple person, he did not expect her to have such a powerful trump card!

"You! Who are you?"

Venomous Revered Snake shouted and looked aghast at Cai Xiao. He nearly went berserk. However, he managed to suppress his killing intent.

He knew that Cai Xiao did not own the flame. It was the owner of the flame that Venomous Revered Snake was fearful of.

A jade tablet alone was enough to cause him to be in such a pathetic state. The owner must be extremely powerful!

Is the owner a Heavenly Sovereign?

As Venomous Revered Snake thought of this, he shivered.

"Are you not intending to get me?" Cai Xiao looked at Venomous Revered Snake and sneered. She waved her hand, and the colorful flame shot back and gathered on top of her head. It turned into a fire emblem. It

was a furnace with the shadow of a man on it.

The shadow had his hands behind his back, and his black hair was blowing in the wind. A huge black sword was on his back. The shadow stood as though he were standing on top of the world.

He looked awe-inspiring as though he ruled the world.

Many top powers were unfamiliar with the fire emblem. However, when Venomous Revered Snake saw it, he was shocked and cried out, "This fire emblem... you are from the Endless Fire Territory! How are you related to the Flame Emperor?"

His voice was filled with fear. He had never expected Cai Xiao to be from the renowned Endless Fire Territory!

"No wonder..." Mandela's face turned grave. She looked at Cai Xiao and said, "If she is from the Endless Fire Territory, then the flame... should be the Imperial Flame. No wonder it is so overbearing!"

"Imperial Flame?" Mu Chen was stunned.

"The founder of the Endless Fire Territory possesses the flame... It has been rumored that Flame Emperor has smelted different unique flames in the world to form it. It is known as the King of All Flames. In the Great Thousand World, no other flame is comparable to it." Mandela smiled and said, "Since she has the fire, she must be closely related to the Flame Emperor. Hohoho, Venomous Revered Snake has gotten himself into hot soup."

Cai Xiao stood in the air and disregarded the looks of the people. She looked mockingly at Venomous Revered Snake, who was terrified. Her words sent a chill down his spine, and he was shocked.

"Oh, the Flame Emperor... Coincidentally, he is my father. If you wish to have me, should you not at least ask for his permission?"

Chapter 813: The Majesty of Flame Emperor

When Cai Xiao spoke in a cold and mocking voice, all of the top powers were stunned. Only a complete silence filled the space.

Cai Xiao was the daughter of the Flame Emperor from the Endless Fire Territory!

Gulp.

The top powers swallowed hard, looked shocked. The Endless Fire Territory was the most formidable force in The Great Thousand World. In fact, in all of the North Territory, and even in the entire Tianluo Continent, not many top forces would dare to provoke them.

The founder of the Endless Fire Territory, the Flame Emperor, called the shots in The Great Thousand World. Although the Endless Fire Territory had been established much later than the other top forces, it was still among the top forces that one should not provoke!

Among the reputable Heavenly Sovereigns in The Great Thousand World, the Flame Emperor was the cream of the crop. When the people heard that Cai Xiao's father was this famous Flame Emperor, they were stunned. Immediately, they turned to look at Venomous Revered Snake, who had turned ghastly pale.

Venomous Revered Snake was considered to be an Overlord in the North Territory. He was superior to the top powers, thus making him entirely beyond their reaches. However, Venomous Revered Snake was nothing in comparison to the legendary Flame Emperor!

As the people looked at Venomous Revered Snake, they sympathized with him. He was unlucky to have gotten himself into such hot water, all because of the daughter of the Flame Emperor...

As the people looked at Venomous Revered Snake with sympathy, he grew even paler. He looked at the fire emblem above Cai Xiao's head, his mind in a mess. Only those people of his same level truly understood what

it meant to be a Heavenly Sovereign.

Heavenly Sovereigns were supreme...

Cai Xiao looked coldly at Venomous Revered Snake and sneered, "You seem very interested in me. If you think there is a need, I can ask my father to talk to you."

Venomous Revered Snake shivered. He quickly forced out a smile and said, "I was too rash earlier. I didn't mean to offend you."

Venomous Revered Snake had toned it down a bit now. He must have been shaken by Cai Xiao's status. Given his strength, he could not even be compared to the top forces in the North Territory, let alone the Endless Fire Territory, which had countless masters!

"So, are you not taking revenge for the tail that you have lost?" Cai Xiao asked flatly.

Venomous Revered Snake laughed her question off. Even though he was indeed enraged, he knew that he could do nothing. After all, he dared not kill Cai Xiao. If he killed her with so many witnesses around, news would spread, and then the Endless Fire Territory would hunt him down to kill him.

"What to do? My skills are inferior. I am leaving."

Venomous Revered Snake had been humbled. He had no intention of staying any longer, as he was afraid of enraging Cai Xiao. If she had sent a signal to the Flame Emperor, given his power, he would shutter through the space, regardless of the distance, and appear instantly.

Venomous Revered Snake grit his teeth and turned around. He disappeared into thin air with only the upper half of his body. He looked pathetic.

The top powers dropped their jaws, watching as Venomous Revered Snake left in embarrassment. They were unable to accept the fact that an Earthly Sovereign had been reduced to such a pathetic state.

"The Endless Fire Territory is so terrifying...The Flame Emperor is

horrifying."

Mu Chen was also shocked. He looked incredibly serious. He had considered an Earthly Sovereign as being superior. However, in the face of the Endless Fire Territory, these Sovereign masters were terrified. It was clear now that the Endless Fire Territory was the invincible force and Flame Emperor was the invincible master in The Great Thousand World.

"The Flame Emperor is an extraordinary person." Mandela nodded her head. Even Mandela agreed that the Flame Emperor was amazingly talented. No other top power in The Great Thousand World could be compared to him.

When Liu Tiandao saw what had happened, he turned pale. He had thought of joining forces with Venomous Revered Snake in order to force Mandela to hand Mu Chen over to him. He had not expected the daughter of the Flame Emperor to get involved, much less for her to cause Venomous Revered Snake to run for his life. He had indeed landed himself in dire straits.

"Liu Tiandao, your 'helper' does not seem to be of much help to you." Mandela looked at Liu Tiandao, mocking him.

Liu Tiandao turned gloomy, especially when he saw Cai Xiao looking at him coldly. His mouth twitched uncontrollably.

Mu Chen seemed to be on good terms with Cai Xiao. Hence, if he struck, he might get himself into trouble.

Although Tian Xuan Hall was more powerful than Snake Shrine, and his strength was stronger than Venomous Revered Snake, they were nothing in the eyes of the Endless Fire Territory. Thus, Liu Tiandao was caught in a difficult situation.

"Take it easy, Dominator. I have heard that you have offended a lot of people. Netherworld Palace and Divine Pavilion would not take such an offense lying down. When the Big Hunting War starts, your men will probably be killed." Liu Tiandao looked coldly at Mandela and sneered.

"They can try and see if we are pushovers," Mandela looked cold and

said. "However, even if the Daluo Territory is being destroyed, we will make sure that we will pull Tian Xuan Hall along with us."

"Oh?"

Liu Tiandao returned her threats tit for tat. He waved his sleeve and said, "I will be looking forward to the Big Hunting War. Let's see if you can survive!"

Liu Tiandao knew that he was unable to get his hands on Mu Chen. He looked sharply at Mu Chen, the coldness in his eyes causing Mu Chen to feel a pricking pain over his entire body.

However, Mu Chen reacted calmly to his look. When Liu Tiandao saw his reaction, he snorted and disappeared into the space warp.

After Liu Tiandao had left, the spiritual energy oppression immediately dissipated. The top powers could finally heave a sigh of relief.

At that moment, Mandela looked at the spot where Liu Tiandao had just disappeared into, frowning.

"Will there be any problems?" Mu Chen went near Mandela and asked softly.

Although he did not fully believe what Liu Tiandao had said, he could feel that the Big Hunting War was brutal. Although the Daluo Territory was a top force, they might still be exterminated in the battle.

"It has nothing to do with whatever that has happened in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift." Mandela shook her head. Regardless of the outcome, whatever had happened in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift would not affect the Big Hunting War.

"We will definitely have some problems. Anyway, after the Big Hunting War, some top forces will most certainly be exterminated and encroached upon." Mandela smiled flatly, then said, "The Daluo Territory will not be devoured by them. Those who want to try their luck must be prepared to be devoured as well."

Mu Chen nodded. He had learned that The Great Thousand World was

cruel. Many people were secretly eyeing the Daluo Territory, even though they were already quite powerful.

Cai Xiao came over to them and smiled at Mandela, a showing of respect. Mandela nodded at her. Although Mandela had been cold towards the people, she had to show some courtesy to the daughter of the Flame Emperor.

"I will have to leave this place." Cai Xiao looked at Mu Chen and stretched out her hand. She smiled and said, "Happy working with you."

Cai Xiao did not belong to the North Territory, so Mu Chen was not surprised that she had to leave. After being with her for the past few days, he found that she was a nice person. Thus, he was happy to have her as a friend.

"Nice working with you. Thank you for your help," Mu Chen said. He was grateful to her, as Cai Xiao had not only helped him in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift, but she had also helped him to get out of a tight spot earlier.

Cai Xiao waved her hand, then said with a smile, "Since you know who I am, how about going to the Endless Fire Territory with me?"

When Mandela heard this, she raised her eyebrows and simply looked at Mu Chen.

Mu Chen was stunned for a while, then shook his head. He recalled that, when he was at the Continent of Trade, the Princess of Martial Border, Lin Jing, had invited him as well. Her status was comparable to Cai Xiao's, but Mu Chen had not accepted her invitation. His reason for rejecting the invitation still remained unchanged.

What he needed was not protection...

Cai Xiao was not surprised that Mu Chen rejected her invitation. In fact, she now admired Mu Chen even more. She smiled at Mu Chen and said, "I understand. I am looking forward to our next meeting. I wonder, by then, which level you will have moved up to."

Having said this, she waved her hand and left. Her graceful figure turned into a streamer, which speedily disappeared into the horizon.

As Mu Chen looked at Cai Xiao, he grasped his fists together tightly. If they were to meet again, he would not want to be asking her for help. He had to start his cultivation.

Chapter 814: Ceremony of Bestowing Lordship

After Cai Xiao had left, the top powers in the Dragon-Phoenix Ridge left as well after seeing that everything had returned to normal. The incidents that had taken place in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift and Dragon-Phoenix Ridge would spread to the entire North Territory like wildfire.

Mu Chen, who used to be a nobody, had become the dark horse of the younger generation in North Territory.

As Mu Chen looked at the dispersing crowd, he heaved a sigh of relief. The Dragon-Phoenix Rift had finally come to an end.

"Why did you turn down the invitation to go to the Endless Fire Territory?" Mandela asked, sounding a bit surprised. The Endless Fire Territory was a top power, and even Daluo Territory could not hold a candle to it.

"If I told you that before I came to Daluo Territory, I turned down an invitation from the Martial Border, would you be even more surprised?" Mu Chen said with a smile.

Mandela's eyes widened. If someone else had told her this, she would have brushed it off as a joke. However, she believed Mu Chen and became curious. The Endless Fire Territory and the Martial Border were top powers. They would not give out an invitation to any ordinary person. Although Mu Chen was not powerful, he had received their invitations. Even Mandela found it hard to believe.

Mu Chen looked at Mandela and said with a smile, "The Endless Fire Territory and the Martial Border are top powers. With their help, I believe that my path of cultivation would be smoother. However... I don't need that."

When Mandela heard this, she was silent for a while. She then looked at Mu Chen with admiration. He was a contented and peaceable person.

Mandela nodded and said, "Now I understand why you were able to

become the master of the Great Solar Undying Body."

Mu Chen smiled broadly. He felt flattered to hear these words from Mandela.

"Let's go back to Daluo Territory. You have done well and brought glory to us. Nine Nether and the rest are waiting for you to return to celebrate."

Mandela smiled and after a while, she continued and said, "After we are back, we will hold the Ceremony of Bestowing Lordship... I hope that you can become the tenth Lord of Daluo Territory."

Mu Chen was taken aback and looked at Mandela. He had mixed feelings. When he first came to Daluo Territory, those lords seemed superior to him. However, he was now able to be on par with them. Although he was not particular about the position, it was a recognition of his efforts throughout the year.

Mu Chen frowned and asked, "I am only a Grade Three Sovereign... If you bestow lordship on me, will this cause any problems?" He had not lost his head over what Mandela had said.

Mandela raised her eyebrows. She was not surprised at his sensitivity as she got to know his sober character. She nodded and said, "Bestowing lordship is an important event in Daluo Territory. We have a big territory, and there are many top forces here. There are about 1,000 dukes, and many of them have contributed to Daluo Territory. Generally speaking, we select a new lord out of these dukes. Many people are eyeing the position of tenth lord."

Mu Chen shrugged it off and said, "In that case, you can give the position to someone else."

Mu Chen did not particularly care whether he got the position. The only advantage of being the tenth lord would probably be to increase the fame of Nine Nether Palace. It did not mean anything to him.

"No," Mandela said flatly.

Mu Chen touched his nose awkwardly. He thought that he had offended Mandela. After all, she called the shots in Daluo Territory.

"If you had not appeared, there were two people who would have stood a chance," Mandela said calmly and continued, "One of them is Qin Zhong, Duke of Tianluo City. Tianluo City is the biggest city in Daluo Territory."

"Qin Zhong of Tianluo City?" Mu Chen muttered. He had heard of this name from Nine Nether. Qin Zhong was a veteran in Daluo Territory. He was as reputable as the nine lords. However, as he had not broken through to Grade Five Sovereign, he could not be bestowed the title of lord.

"The next person is Qiu Taiyin, leader of the Ghost Clan..."

"Qiu Taiyin." Mu Chen frowned as he heard the name. Qiu Taiyin was another reputable figure who had helped to establish Daluo Territory.

"Both of them are more suitable for the position than me," Mu Chen said. Although he had built up a reputation for himself throughout the year, the two candidates were more qualified than he was. There would be a lot of problems if he assumed the lordship.

"Qin Zhong is loyal to me. I don't mind if he is bestowed lordship." Mandela's eyes were cold as she said, "Although Qiu Taiyin is powerful, he is extremely ambitious. I have received news that he is secretly dealing with Tian Xuan Hall."

Mu Chen was stunned when he heard it. Given his previous status in Daluo Territory, he would not be able to hear such news.

"However, I do not have concrete evidence. On top of that, he has contributed much to Daluo Territory over the years. If I deal with him without a valid reason, the people will lose confidence in me," Mandela said flatly.

"I could have taken my time to observe him, but we are now running out of time."

Mu Chen frowned and asked, "Is it because of the Big Hunting War?"

Mandela nodded and said, "Before the Big Hunting War starts, I need to have the ten lords in place. I cannot allow someone who is not loyal to become the tenth lord. I cannot have such a dangerous person with me."

Mu Chen pondered and asked, "What do you mean?"

"During the Ceremony of Bestowing Lordship, Qiu Taiyin will definitely ask to be bestowed the title. I will ask Qin Zhong to intercept. If Qin Zhong manages to do it, I will make him the tenth lord. However, if he fails..." Mandela looked at Mu Chen and said, "You will have to do it and become the tenth lord!"

Mu Chen smiled wryly and said, "I should have known that it was not so simple. This is not an easy task."

Although Mu Chen had not met Qiu Taiyin before, he must be someone who was not easy to deal with given his reputation in Daluo Territory. Mu Chen reckoned that Qiu Taiyin's strength must be comparable to the Prince of Netherworld's.

Mu Chen had no confidence of winning if he were to fight with Qiu Taiyin.

"Don't worry. If you can complete this mission, I will grant you any wish that you may have," Mandela said with a smile.

When Mu Chen heard it, he could not help asking, "Really?"

Mandela nodded and saw Mu Chen curling up his lips. She sensed something amiss.

When Mu Chen saw it, he passed Mandela a scroll and said boldly, "If I manage to complete my mission, please help me to get all these things."

Mandela looked baffled and took the scroll. When she saw the scroll, she was stunned. Bright text was shimmering on the scroll:

Ten drops of Blood Essence of Primordial Hydra.

Ten drops of Blood Essence of Sky-devouring Swallow.

Ten drops of Blood Essence of Void Beast.

...

There were ten different Divine Beasts' Blood Essences listed on the scroll. These Divine Beasts were well-known in the Great Thousand

World. Their Blood Essences were rare and expensive.

Mandela gritted her teeth and asked, "What do you need these Blood Essences for?" Even with the wealth and power of Daluo Territory, it would still be extremely tough to gather all the Blood Essences of the Divine Beasts.

"I have use of them." Mu Chen shrugged. He needed the ten different types of Blood Essences to cultivate the Dragon-Phoenix Scripture. When he first realized that he needed these different types of Blood Essences, he was depressed. He knew that given his ability, it was impossible for him to gather all of the Blood Essences. Since Mandela had given her word, it could save him a lot of trouble.

Mu Chen looked at Mandela, who was looking a bit stunned, and asked, "How is it? Will you be able to do it?"

Mandela glared at Mu Chen and said, "Have you been eyeing me to help you get them?"

Mu Chen must have thought of using the Ceremony of Bestowing Lordship to extort these from her when she had proposed it. He was cunning. He had put on a false front earlier.

When Mu Chen heard it, he smiled in embarrassment.

"If you are able to take over the position of the tenth lord, I will gather these different types of Blood Essences for you. If I cannot find them in Daluo Territory, I will get them for you at the auctions in the entire North Territory." Mandela gave Mu Chen a threatening look and snorted, "If you fail in your mission, don't blame me."

Having said that, she turned into a streamer and left.

Mu Chen shivered when Mandela stared at him. He shook his head helplessly. The Dragon-Phoenix Rift had just ended, and he had to handle the Ceremony of Bestowing Lordship...

I hope Qin Zhong is able to deal with Qiu Taiyin.

Mu Chen curled up his lips and quickly caught up with Mandela.

Chapter 815: News of Luo Li

When Mu Chen returned to the Daluo Territory, they had a great celebration. The entire Daluo Territory knew of his performance at the Dragon-Phoenix Rift. He had brought much glory to the Daluo Territory!

Throughout the years, although the Daluo Territory had been a top force in the North Territory, the younger generation had still come in last among the top forces. It was especially so during the year when the young geniuses had been killed by the geniuses of Netherworld Palace, at the moment they had entered the Dragon-Phoenix Rift. It had brought shame to the Daluo Territory. In fact, they had refrained from participating in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift ever since.

So, when Mandela announced to the top levels that she would be sending Mu Chen to take part in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift, they had understandably felt uncomfortable about it, although they did not say a word. They knew that Mu Chen had great potential, but compared to the geniuses of the North Territory in the Dragon-Phoenix Record, he was beneath them.

Only a few people were supportive of Mu Chen at first. Most of them had not yet overcome the past trauma of the shame that had been brought upon them. Regardless of what the others thought, however, Mu Chen had indeed made it to the Dragon-Phoenix Rift.

The entire Daluo Territory then received stunning news. Mu Chen had defeated Liu Yan and fought with the Prince of Netherworld! He had stepped onto the tenth step of the Dragon-Phoenix Steps, and he had successfully obtained the most precious inheritance in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift. Mu Chen of the Daluo Territory had surpassed all the other well-known younger geniuses!

The entire Daluo Territory was in an uproar. Those top levels, who had initially been doubtful of Mu Chen, were at a complete loss for words. Although they found it hard to believe, they had to admit that Mu Chen, whom they had not valued, was now a rising star in the North Territory.

Surely, he would soon become a prominent figure.

During the celebration, the people of Nine Nether Palace were extremely excited. They were clearly very proud of Mu Chen.

Mu Chen had followed Nine Nether to Nine Nether Palace and become their commander. He was outstanding, and had renewed a joy and vitality to Nine Nether Palace that had been suppressed for a long time. No one in the Daluo Territory would dare to look down on Nine Nether Palace any more!

The celebration continued for two days, before the excitement gradually died down. Afterwards, Mu Chen finally could return to Nine Nether Palace to rest. He found the celebration more tiring and tougher to handle than even the killings and combats that he had faced in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift!

The moon was hanging brightly over Nine Nether Palace. Mu Chen lay on the roof, looking lazily at the moon in the sky. As the cool breeze swept past his tense body, he slowly started to relax. The smell of blood in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift thankfully started to fade away as well.

Mu Chen gazed at the moon and thought of a beautiful lady with long hair. Her cold look had been deeply carved in his heart. It made his heart throb. This beauty was Luo Li.

"How have you been?" Mu Chen muttered. Since they had parted, he had gone into the dangerous Great Thousand World and fought many battles. He had placed himself into many near-death battles, just to fulfill his promise to her.

He had promised her that, one day, he would become a matchless master, then walk beside her on the Spiritual Road. He would stand before her, like a knight, and protect her. He would overcome all obstacles for her.

He was doing these things for his mother as well. These two women were the most important people in his life. No matter how tough the road to becoming a matchless master was, he would not back out.

He needed to be powerful in order to protect them. Mu Chen squinted his eyes, then slowly relaxed the grasp in his palms.

"You look so carefree."

Mu Chen heard sounds of laughter and opened his eyes. He saw Nine Nether standing beside him, smiling. As the moonlight shone on her, she looked captivating. Mu Chen curled up his lips lazily as a response.

"I have two pieces of news that might interest you." Nine Nether sat gracefully beside Mu Chen. Her voluptuous figure and the scent from her body caused one to be aroused.

"The first piece of news is that I have gathered all of the information about Qin Zhong and Qiu Taiyin." Nine Nether smiled. She had a close relationship with Mu Chen, so she was the first to know about Mandela's plan for him to become the tenth lord.

When Mu Chen heard this, he looked up lazily. He did not seem too interested in this piece of news.

When Nine Nether saw this, she continued and said with a smile, "Another piece of news comes from the Western Kingdom."

"The Western Kingdom?" Mu Chen was stunned and quickly sat up.

He was pleasantly surprised and looked at Nine Nether. The Luo God Clan was in the Western Kingdom! Nine Nether was obviously about to tell him about Luo Li.

"The Western Kingdom is far away from the Tianluo Continent. If it wasn't for our special connections, I would not be able to get this piece of news. I have paid a high price to get it." Nine Nether looked at Mu Chen and smiled. She teased him and asked, "Are you interested in this news?"

Mu Chen touched his nose and smiled sheepishly.

When Nine Nether saw it, she stopped teasing him and said, "According to the information that I have received, the Blood God Clan in the Western Kingdom has increased their attacks drastically. The two clans have fought many times, causing much bloodshed. Many have been killed

and injured."

"Your girlfriend seems to be doing well. After she returned to the Luo God Clan, she did not sit around with the royals, but led her elite army to guard the border. Since then, she has fought many battles with the Blood God Clan." Nine Nether spoke with admiration for her.

When Mu Chen heard this, his expression changed. The Luo God Clan and the Blood God Clan were more powerful than the Daluo Territory. There would be many masters in the war. Even Sovereigns were nothing in comparison. Luo Li had put herself in grave danger by leading this army.

"She has done it right," Nine Nether glanced at Mu Chen and said flatly. "The royal families in the Luo God Clan seem to be in a mess. If Luo Tianshen had not held the fort, the Clan would have been scattered. Although Luo Li is a distinguished figure, she is still young. She has personally led the army to fight the enemy, which is good training ground for her. The army's morale will be boosted, and she can enhance her status in Luo God Clan, thus winning the support of her people and the senior statesmen."

"Furthermore, the outcome has proven that she has done the right thing. Within this year, she has continuously led the elite army of the Luo God Clan to attack the Blood God Clan. Her people have been cheering for her, especially the top powers in the younger generation. With the support of Luo Tianshen, she will soon become the next queen of the Luo God Clan."

"The Luo God Clan will then rise up again, under her leadership." Nine Nether let out a breath and said, "It is not easy for her. She has done well."

After hearing what Nine Nether said, Mu Chen looked up at the moon. He breathed in the cold air and shut his eyes.

He seemed to hear the sounds of fighting in the air. People swirled all over from the heavens and the earth, clashing against one another. Fresh blood and spiritual energy were bursting out. The entire heavens and earth were shaking.

A girl was holding her long sword on a hill in the battlefield. Her long hair was blowing in the wind, and she was looking at the sea of dead

bodies. She looked frail amid the battlefield that was filled with such immense killing intent.

Mu Chen opened his eyes. His heart ached as he thought of the scene. When he had entered into The Great Thousand World, Luo Li, who had returned to the Luo God Clan, had not been able to enjoy peace. The danger and pressure that she had to go through had far surpassed him.

Every time he went through near-death battles, Luo Li might be leading the army to fight an earth-shattering battle with the Blood God Clan. She knew that Mu Chen would work hard for the promise that he had made to her. Even if he encountered any perilous situation, given his stubborn character, she knew that he would not back out. She was working hard as well, as she knew that, by doing so, she was relieving him of some pressure.

She was not someone who would simply sit and wait patiently for him, doing nothing. She would not just look at Mu Chen from afar, feeling sorry for him as he struggled on the path towards the matchless master. However, as she did these things for him, Mu Chen's heart ached for her.

"I am still not powerful enough..." Mu Chen muttered. When he felt that he was trying hard enough, he had forgotten that, somewhere faraway, a girl was working extremely hard to take some pressure off of him.

"Don't worry, Luo Li. I will definitely keep my promise."

Mu Chen grasped his fists and looked unstoppable. The laziness that was in him earlier was now completely gone. He knew that he had to become stronger.

Nine Nether looked at Mu Chen, who had suddenly changed. She smiled and said to herself, Mu Chen, I believe that one day, you will become a matchless master.

"Please pass me the information about the two people. I am now interested in them."

Mu Chen smiled at Nine Nether and stretched out his hand. He had to secure the position of the tenth lord. In this way, Mandela would get the

10 different types of Divine Beasts' Blood Essence for him.

He had to do it for the girl who was working hard...

Chapter 816: Seizing the Lordship

For the next ten days, Mu Chen did not set foot out of Nine Nether Palace. He withdrew from everyone and went into the cultivation chamber for his practice.

After hearing news of Luo Li, he knew that he was not working hard enough and not progressing as he should. Compared to Luo Li, he had not done enough.

He was far from fulfilling the promise he had made to Luo Li. He must not relax and be content.

He had to be stronger!

As Mu Chen drew into himself for his cultivation, news about him spread in North Territory. The top powers in North Territory were shocked to learn that so many years after the Dragon-Phoenix Rift had started, someone had finally stepped onto the tenth step of the Dragon-Phoenix Step. No one had ever done it before.

They were even more stunned when they discovered that Mu Chen was only a Grade Three Sovereign. He had not only defeated Liu Yan, but he had also fought with the Prince of Netherworld.

Every time after the Dragon-Phoenix Rift finished, there would be changes to the Dragon-Phoenix Record. It was the same for this round. Mu Chen, the dark horse, had caught the attention of the people.

Whether he had defeated Liu Yan, contended with the Prince of Netherworld, or had stepped onto the tenth step of the Dragon-Phoenix Step, any of these was enough to make him famous among the younger generation in North Territory.

After the assessment of many top powers, they changed the Dragon-Phoenix Record. Mu Chen replaced Liu Yan, who had been ranked number three. He had overtaken Su Biyue, Snapper, and the other younger top powers who had been listed in the Dragon-Phoenix Record.

The Prince of Netherworld and Fang Yi had maintained their rankings.

The two of them had displayed great strength that could suppress the other top powers. Even Mu Chen could barely contend with the Prince of Netherworld.

Cai Xiao's performance was the most outstanding in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift. She was like a myth. After the Dragon-Phoenix Rift had ended, she left North Territory immediately. As she was not from North Territory, her name did not appear in the Dragon-Phoenix Record. However, those younger top powers who had participated in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift would never forget her. She was astoundingly beautiful. She was like a queen who was beyond one's reach. Even Fang Yi and the Prince of Netherworld were way beneath her.

When Cai Xiao revealed who she was at the Dragon-Phoenix Rift, the top forces in North Territory had been taken aback. Even the Divine Pavilion dared not take it lightly when they knew that she was the daughter of the Flame Emperor. Only people of their level knew how powerful the Endless Fire Territory was in the Great Thousand World.

As the Divine Pavilion and Netherworld Palace recalled that fact, they must have been fearful. Fortunately, Cai Xiao had won when she fought with Fang Yi and the Prince of Netherworld. If she had been defeated and injured by them, the Endless Fire Territory would have been enraged. That would have been detrimental for them.

As they thought about it, the top forces in North Territory were upset. They were superior in North Territory, but now they were troubled. If they had hurt someone and brought calamity upon themselves...

One could not blame them for having such thoughts. The Endless Fire Territory was extremely powerful and terrifying.

After Mu Chen had been ranked number three in the Dragon-Phoenix Record, the fervor in Daluo Territory gradually died down. Another big event had taken over the people's interest.

It was the Ceremony of Bestowing Lordship.

This big event gained the attention of the top powers in Daluo Territory more than the Dragon-Phoenix Rift. The Ceremony of Bestowing Lordship

was closely linked to their personal gains.

Daluo Territory was a large territory, and there were many top powers. They were extremely strict. The Dominator called the shots in Daluo Territory. There were three kings, nine lords, and many commanders, dukes, and other affiliated forces. As one's title was enhanced, his resources and status would be enhanced as well.

The three kings were extremely powerful. They had to be at least Grade Seven Sovereigns before they could become kings. Not many in Daluo Territory were qualified.

Many people were envious of the lordship. As a lord, he could form his own army. Every year, he would receive a large amount of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid from Daluo Territory. He might be given some cities to take charge of. When he fought with other forces, the spoils that he had to hand over would be much less than what the other dukes and affiliated forces had to give up. That was the reason many top powers were eyeing the title of the lordship.

However, one had to be a Grade Five Sovereign in order to be a lord. Nine Nether was an exception. She was from the Nine Netherbird Clan. Even Mandela was wary of the established divine beast race, thus Nine Nether had been given special treatment.

The other top powers could only depend on their strength to fight for the lordship.

The Ceremony of Bestowing Lordship was the time to confer the title of lord, and it carried much weight in Daluo Territory.

While some in North Territory were still in shock over Mu Chen's ranking in the Dragon-Phoenix Record, the top powers in Daluo Territory had turned their attention to the oncoming Ceremony of Bestowing Lordship.

Once they became lord, their status in Daluo Territory would be greatly enhanced.

The Ceremony of Bestowing Lordship was finally taking place, and the

top powers had waited eagerly for it.

Swoosh! Swoosh!

This day was the liveliest day that year in Daluo Territory. Many shadows whizzed across the horizon and appeared in Daluo Territory.

The guards were stricter, and the armies of the lords helped to maintain order to prevent riots. They would not want to bring disgrace to Daluo Territory.

From the look of it, the Ceremony of Bestowing Lordship was the most popular event in Daluo Territory. All of the top powers were interested in it. Everyone was eager to find out who would become the tenth lord in Daluo Territory.

In Nine Nether Palace.

Two ladies were standing outside the cultivation chamber. The one standing in front was Nine Nether, with Tang Bing standing behind her.

Tang Bing looked at the cultivation chamber that was shut and said, "The Ceremony of Bestowing Lordship is about to start. He is still not out yet."

Nine Nether was calm and said with a smile, "We must be well-prepared. To become the tenth lord is not an easy task."

"Ha, it has not been easy for me to get more than 20,000 drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid for him. If he fails in this mission, I want him to pay me back." Tang Bing felt the pinch and snorted. She was the Chief Steward of Nine Nether Palace, and she was in charge of all the Sovereign Spiritual Liquid. Nine Nether had taken 20,000 drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid from her and given them to Mu Chen.

"You are a miser. Don't worry, he is worth investing in." Nine Nether laughed. She touched Tang Bing's face and teased her. "You can invest yourself in him as well. You will have good returns."

"Sister!" Tang Bing blushed and became shy. She usually looked cold and dignified in Nine Nether Palace. It was rare to see her behaving in such a

feminine manner.

"Who wants to invest in me?" At that moment, the door of the cultivation chamber opened. Mu Chen laughed and stepped out. He smiled at the two beautiful ladies.

Tang Bing looked at Mu Chen, and she blushed even more. After sizing him up, she raised her brows and said, "Have you not broken through?"

The Spiritual Energy around Mu Chen was more condensed, but he was still a Grade Three Sovereign. He had not broken through to Grade Four Sovereign as Tang Bing had expected.

Mu Chen found it funny and at the same time annoying. He said, "Who do you think I am? All I have to do is withdraw into practice, and I will be able to break through?"

Tang Bing blushed and muttered, "So much Sovereign Spiritual Liquid has been wasted."

Mu Chen glanced at her and gave a helpless look.

Nine Nether walked around Mu Chen with her eyes glittering. She was sharper than Tang Bing. She could sense that the spiritual energy in Mu Chen's body was in abundance, and he had intentionally suppressed something.

"It seems like you have gained much," Nine Nether said with a smile.

Mu Chen simply smiled and stretched. He looked up at the sky outside Nine Nether Palace. He could sense a large spiritual energy fluctuation in the area.

"This is indeed the most popular event in Daluo Territory," Mu Chen said in shock. This was the first time ever since he stepped into Daluo Territory that so many top powers had gathered together.

"Are you ready?" Nine Nether smiled and looked at Mu Chen.

Mu Chen took a deep breath. He looked solemn and nodded. The strengths of Qin Zhong from Tianluo City and Qiu Taiyin from the Ghost Clan were comparable to the Prince of Netherworld.

If Mu Chen wanted to become the tenth lord, it would be a fierce battle.

Regardless of what would happen, he would never back out.

Mu Chen lifted up his head and thought of Luo Li. He clenched his fists and walked out.

"Let's go."

He must become the tenth lord.

Chapter 817: Meeting of the Two Top Powers

On any other day, Daluo Square would be closed. It was opened only for a handful of important events, such as the Ceremony of Bestowing Lordship. The Square was packed with people on this particular day.

The people were talking excitedly, their voices filling the air. In fact, the entire Daluotian was bustling with people. This was not surprising, as after all, Daluotian was very a popular place within the Daluo Territory!

A huge stone platform was at the center of the Square. The people in the Daluo Territory called it the Platform for Bestowing Lordship. Every new lord in the Daluo Territory would emerge from this platform.

As the people were talking, shadows kept darting toward the Square from afar. Several stone seats, arranged in descending order, were in front of the Square. They were arranged according to the different levels of those who would be seated in them. The seat at the highest level was golden in color, and it was glittering under the sunlight, exuding a majestic aura.

When Mu Chen and Nine Nether appeared in the sky, many people turned to look at them. Nine Nether Palace was no longer the same. The weakest power among the lords had risen in power again. When the top powers in the Daluo Territory saw Nine Nether and Mu Chen, they turned grave.

Within a year, Nine Nether Palace had become increasingly famous. Many top powers looked at Nine Nether, then turned their gazes to Mu Chen, who was standing beside her. They sized Mu Chen up, as his name had become quite well-known in the entire North Territory recently.

The veteran top powers in the Daluo Territory were shocked with Mu Chen's achievements in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift. They knew that Mu Chen had been in the Daluo Territory for less than a year. Given some time, he would most certainly become a prominent figure in the Daluo

Territory.

Nine Nether and Mu Chen ignored the looks of the people, landing toward the direction where the men of Nine Nether Palace had gathered. They then waited patiently for the ceremony to begin.

As Mu Chen stood beside Nine Nether, he looked around the Square. The other eight lords had arrived. Each of their presences showed how much they valued the Ceremony of Bestowing Lordship.

As Mu Chen was looking around, the other eight lords were looking at him as well. Lord Asura, Lord Mountain Cracker, and the rest looked at him with great admiration. It was obvious that Mu Chen had not only gained the respect of many young top powers in the North Territory, but also even the respect of the veteran top powers.

Lord Blood Hawk, who held some grudges against Mu Chen and Nine Nether, looked pale. He gritted his teeth. When Mu Chen first stepped into the Daluo Territory, he was nothing but a small fry. However, that small fry had somehow managed to humiliate Blood Hawk Palace!

Within a year, that same small fry had grown to a level that Lord Blood Hawk had become wary of. Although he was confident of suppressing Mu Chen, he had to admit that he would have to pay a price in order to do that. Mu Chen was no longer the tiny ant that he had once known.

Lord Blood Hawk was unhappy with the change in Mu Chen's status. However, he dared not lay his hands on Mu Chen.

Everyone in the Daluo Territory knew that Mu Chen was close to the Dominator. So, with the Dominator to back him up, even the Spiritual Pupil King, whom Lord Blood Hawk had submitted himself to, dared not touch Mu Chen. Thus, Lord Blood Hawk could only keep his unhappiness to himself.

Swoosh!

As the lords were sizing Mu Chen up, there was a sharp whizzing sound that came from the horizon. A powerful spiritual energy swirled out, causing many people to turn to look at it.

"Qin Zhong...he has finally arrived!"

"Hahaha, I knew that he would not give up!"

"I wonder if he will become lord."

When the people saw Qin Zhong, they started to talk among themselves.

Is this really Qin Zhong, duke of Daluo City? Mu Chen's eyes glittered.

Qin Zhong appeared above Daluo Square, then came down halfway. He cupped his fist and smiled at the crowd.

Mu Chen looked up and saw a burly middle-aged man. His eyes were bright, and he was smiling. He seemed surprisingly approachable.

A powerful spiritual energy fluctuation was looming around him. From what Mu Chen could see, Qin Zhong's strength was comparable to the Prince of Netherworld's.

"After so many years, this fella does not seem to have improved," Nine Nether looked at Qin Zhong and said.

Mu Chen looked at Nine Nether in shock. Judging from her tone, she and Qin Zhong seemed to have been friends at one time.

Before Mu Chen could ask her to confirm this, Qin Zhong darted toward them and laughed loudly. "Hahaha, little Nine Nether, how have you been? I thought you had failed in your evolution, since you disappeared for such a long while!"

"After so many years, you have still not broken through to Grade Five Sovereign. Given your lack of progress, are you not ashamed to come for the Ceremony of Bestowing Lordship?" Nine Nether said. She obviously did not show any respect to him.

Qin Zhong was silent for a while, then said, "I helped you before. Don't attack me this way."

Mu Chen could not refrain from laughing. Qin Zhong seemed to be a very interesting person.

When Qin Zhong heard his laughter, he turned to look at Mu Chen. He

smiled and said, "You must be Mu Chen. The people in the North Territory have been talking about you recently. You are quite capable, it seems. You are so young, but you have reached such an amazing level!"

"Thank you for your compliments, Duke Qin Zhong."

Mu Chen cupped his fist and smiled. Qin Zhong had left a good impression on him during this first encounter. He could sense that Qin Zhong was a candid person by nature. From the way the top powers had looked at him, Mu Chen could also tell that Qin Zhong was popular among the people in the Daluo Territory.

"Don't flaunt your seniority. I am sure that you will not be selected as lord," Nine Nether smiled and said, speaking directly to Qin Zhong again.

Qin Zhong was stunned. He looked at Mu Chen and said with a smile, "It is all right. After all, I have failed so many times. It doesn't matter if I fail again. However, if I were to fight, I would give it my best. I would like to see how powerful the number three young top power in the Dragon-Phoenix Record is."

As Mu Chen was about to say something, he suddenly looked up. Qin Zhong and Nine Nether lifted up their heads as well. Black smoke suddenly whizzed toward the Square, coming from the blue horizon. The black smoke was like a meteorite, its coldness causing one to freeze.

As the black smoke dissipated, the crowd saw a man in black standing in the air. The man was good looking, but he looked unfathomable. His thin lips were like blades, causing one to shiver at the sight of them.

He was smiling at the crowd. He cupped his fist and said, "How is everyone? I am Qiu Taiyin of the Ghost Clan."

The crowd responded to him immediately. Qiu Taiyin was reputable among the veteran top powers in the Daluo Territory. He was known to be the next candidate for the lordship in the Daluo Territory. He seemed determined to be the tenth lord.

Qiu Taiyin smiled and landed on the ground. Many of the top powers approached him and were friendly towards him. He seemed to be popular

among the people as well.

Qin Zhong looked flatly at Qiu Taiyin, then folded his arms before his chest. Mu Chen could sense the spiritual energy fluctuation in Qin Zhong's body. This was clearly a meeting of the two top powers.

Is he Qiu Taiyin, leader of the Ghost Clan? Mu Chen looked at Qiu Taiyin and frowned. He could sense that Qiu Taiyin was a dangerous person.

Qiu Taiyin had lived up to his reputation in the Daluo Territory. Hence, it would not be easy to stop him in the Ceremony of Bestowing Lordship.

Dong!

As Mu Chen's eyes were glittering, the bell tolled. The top powers lifted up their heads to see a small figure appearing on the golden seat. The three kings appeared below the golden seat as well, watching the top powers of the Daluo Territory from above.

"Welcome, Dominator!"

The top powers cupped their fists and welcomed the Dominator. Mandela waved her hand, as she looked flatly at the top powers. She looked at Qin Zhong and Qiu Taiyin, then finally rested her eyes on Mu Chen. Her voice was gentle, but it was filled with authority.

"For this Ceremony of Bestowing Lordship, three people are qualified to fight for the lordship."

The entire place was in total silence. As Mandela's voice resounded in the heavens and the earth, all of the top powers looked tense. One could fight for the position of the tenth lord only with Mandela's approval.

"Qin Zhong, duke of Tianluo City."

"Qiu Taiyin, leader of the Ghost Clan."

Many people were sighing with disappointment in the Square. However, most of them were not surprised at their choices. These two people were the most qualified ones to become lord.

After pausing for a while, Mandela spoke again, announcing her third

choice.

"Mu Chen of Nine Nether Palace."

Chapter 818: Qin Zhong vs. Qiu Taiyin

"Nine Nether Palace, Mu Chen."

As Mandela's last sentence reverberated, the noise in Daluo Square seemed to have stopped for a moment, and then a thousand stares of astonishment were cast towards Mu Chen's direction, and the commotion resumed.

"Mu Chen? The new Commander of Nine Nether Palace?"

"Even he can join the Ceremony of Bestowing Lordship? Isn't it too hasty? He entered our Daluo Territory only less than a year ago."

"Although he excelled in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift, the Ceremony of Bestowing Lordship is much more difficult than that, and it was said that Mu Chen could only win the first prize in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift because of the help of the daughter of the Flame Emperor."

"It is said that there is this reason..."

"..."

After all, the time Mu Chen had spent in Daluo Territory was too short, and the speed of his rise was too rapid. Ordinary people had to struggle in the world of Daluo Territory for many years to achieve success, but he could do it in less than a year.

This difference always caused many people to feel jealous and envious, so it was inevitable for them to pick on Mu Chen.

Qiu Taiyin was dressed in a black robe and smiled at Mu Chen, but at the same time, he did not show any emotion. In his eyes, only Qin Zhong could pose a threat to him. As for Mu Chen, he may have immense talent but after all, he was too young to be viewed as a threat.

He must win the position of the tenth Lord!

Mu Chen paid no attention to the overwhelming uproar that questioned his qualifications. He kept his eyes down, and his expression was calm. Tang Bing, Tang Rou, and the members of the Nine Nether Palace behind

him were indignant for him, but they did not argue and refute them as Nine Nether had stopped them from doing so.

Arguing and stating refutations at this time would obviously be ridiculous and useless, as facts were needed to prove a point.

Atop the golden throne, Mandela's little face was expressionless as she looked at the uproar in the square. Her petite hands pressed down gently, and the crowd in the square immediately quieted down.

In this Daluo Territory, she was the sole ruler. Whatever she said was an irrevocable law.

"Now that everyone has arrived, I declare the Ceremony of Bestowing Lordship officially started." Her little hand waved gently, and her majestic voice made it seem as if the world was trembling slightly.

Bong!

The bell rang once again throughout the world, and countless powerful people's eyes blazed with passion. They knew that the Battle of Bestowing Lordship was bound to be a fierce one.

Whoosh!

Amid the countless gazes, Qiu Taiyin smiled faintly. His body moved and directly appeared on the Platform of Bestowing Lordship. He had one hand placed behind his back. He ignored Mu Chen and pointed to Qin Zhong and laughed. "Brother Qin Zhong, I hope you can teach me much in this duel."

Qin Zhong took a look at Mu Chen. A smile appeared on the latter's young face, and with a flash, he appeared on the Platform of Bestowing Lordship like a specter, standing opposite Qiu Taiyin.

The confrontation between the two men saw great spiritual energy that swept over the atmosphere. An oppressive pressure permeated the platform so that even countless strong men's gazes turned grave.

Qin Zhong's eyes locked onto Qiu Taiyin sharply, and his fists slowly clenched. The latter was now gaining popularity among many of the old

strongest men in Daluo Territory, and the supposed man who was next in line to become a lord was no mere rumor.

The Battle of Bestowing Lordship today would not be an easy one.

Boom!

Mighty and powerful spiritual energy erupted from Qin Zhong's body like a storm, and his gaze immediately turned cold. His feet stomped, and his figure soared straight into the sky. His palms looked as if they were transformed from white jade and sparkled with a beam of jade light that emanated a powerful force.

"Jade Tripod Palms!" Qin Zhongli roared. In his white, jade-like palms there was a hidden Jade Tripod Symbol that emerged, and then the mighty spiritual energy transformed into the blow of a palm that surged out. In that spiritual energy palm, there was also a Jade Tripod light symbol, emitting infinite power as if it could suppress majestic mountains.

"Haha, for a long time, I have heard that Brother Qin Zhong's Jade Tripod Divine Art is powerful indeed. Well, I'll have to try it for myself today." Qiu Taiyin saw Qin Zhong's aggressive attack. He smiled nonchalantly, and with a twirl of his palms, rolling black smoke gushed out. That thick smoke was filled with spiritual energy chilling enough to freeze the atmosphere.

Whoosh!

The thick black smoke squirmed like a living creature, and eventually turned into a massive black python soaring into the sky, directly clashing with the blow of the Jade Tripod.

Bong!

The violent spiritual energy swept out domineeringly, and the impact of the shock waves distorted the space.

Qin Zhong's eyes flashed, and his hands suddenly conjured up a myriad of seals, resulting in a glittering light suddenly rising from his body. His whole body unexpectedly transformed into white jade.

"That's..." Mu Chen's eyes looked at Qin Zhong's body in astonishment. He could feel that Qin Zhong's body seemed to become especially strong.

"That is the Divine Jade Tripod Physique. Qin Zhong obtained this Divine Art from an ancient ruin. He was able to become the Duke of Tianluo City because he possessed this," Nine Nether explained quietly.

Whoosh!

During the conversation between Nine Nether and Mu Chen, Qin Zhong, whose body became sparkling, suddenly disappeared from thin air. When he appeared again, he appeared behind Qiu Taiyin like a ghost. Then, a glimmering fist carrying a terrible force that could shatter a mountain bombarded the latter's back with a speed as swift as lightning.

In the face of Qin Zhong's thunderbolt offensive attack, it seemed that Qiu Taiyin had no time to react to it and could only allow Qin Zhong to deal his blow.

Psh.

Qin Zhong's fist directly penetrated through Qiu Taiyin's chest, but when it penetrated, Qin Zhong's face suddenly changed because he saw that where his fist pierced, Qiu Taiyin's body was like smoke.

Qin Zhong had an ominous feeling in his heart and hurried to withdraw his fist.

"Haha, Brother Qin Zhong, one should give as good as one gets. You should also try my foggy body." Qiu Taiyin's mouth curved into a strange smile, and the fog around his chest suddenly solidified. The terrible chill directly froze Qin Zhong's arm, and black ice spread rapidly along his arm, as if attempting to freeze his entire body.

The sinister cold invaded Qin Zhong's body and attempted to freeze his spiritual energy, which caused his expression to change dramatically. His gaze turned grave immediately, and his spiritual energy burst out without any reservation.

Boom!

The vast spiritual energy swept through, forming a powerful oppressive aura. This immediately attracted numerous gasps and exclamations, because everyone could feel that Qin Zhong's spiritual strength had surpassed Fourth Grade Sovereign level and was one step into advancing towards Fifth Grade Sovereign.

"It seems that Qin Zhong has made some progress in these years. If he is given some more time, he will soon break through to become a Fifth Grade Sovereign." Some people sighed. Qin Zhong had remained in the realm of a Fourth Grade Sovereign for many years, but now he had finally made some progress.

A flash of surprise colored Mu Chen's eyes. Qin Zhong did have some cards up his sleeve. Such strength was similar to the Prince of Netherworld's, as the latter was also one step into the rank of Fifth Grade Sovereign.

Crash!

On the Platform of Bestowing Lordship, the spiritual energy swept over Qin Zhong's arm, and the black ice shattered into pieces. His body staggered backward, while the spiritual energy fluctuations caused the chill that invaded his body to dissipate.

"Ah, so Duke Qin Zhong is already one foot into becoming a Fifth Grade Sovereign. My sincere congratulations." Black smoke surged as Qiu Taiyin slowly turned to face him. His lips curled and were as sharp as a knife's edge.

Qin Zhong's face was calm, and his immense spiritual power rippled all around him like the sea. With every move, the power of shattering mountains emanated.

He kept a close eye on Qiu Taiyin. Although he was one foot in to becoming a Fifth Grade Sovereign, he did not know why he still felt a trace of pressure from the latter.

It looked like he had to give it his all, then.

Qin Zhong took a deep breath, and immediately his hands conjured up

seals at a speed as fast as lightning. Suddenly, a brilliant jade light burst out, and a massive figure condensed and emerged.

On the white, jade-like body, an ancient symbol of a tripod could be seen. A powerful force rippled between the sky and the earth, which made people feel oppressed.

"That's... Qin Zhong's Jade Tripod Celestial Body!" When the huge, white, jade-like shadow appeared, an uproar emerged in the heavens and earth, as they were clearly no stranger to seeing Qin Zhong's Sovereign Celestial Body.

Qin Zhong's figure appeared on the top of the massive white jade shadow. He looked down at Qiu Taiyin in a condescending manner.

"At last, you have employed the Jade Tripod Celestial Body." Qiu Taiyin also looked up at the dazzling white, giant jade shadow with a faint smile on his face.

"It seems that if I want to beat Brother Qin Zhong today, I'll have to go all out." Qiu Taiyin laughed, and with a wave of his sleeve, the black fog rolled up into the sky like wolf smoke, and finally the wolf smoke condensed into a huge, dark, giant shadow.

The dark mist around the giant shadow was like a black dragon, and the chilling air lowered the temperature between the sky and the earth.

Some people exclaimed, "That is Qiu Taiyin's Lunar Celestial Body!"

Mu Chen looked at the two huge figures. These two Sovereign Celestial Bodies were ranked among the last in the 99 Sovereign Celestial Bodies, but it was obvious that both Qin Zhong and Qiu Taiyin had cultivated them to a great degree.

"It's really hard to say who will win in a straight fight."

Qiu Taiyin also appeared above the Lunar Celestial Body's head in the fiery gaze of the crowd. He looked at the figure of Qin Zhong, and his lips seemed to curl into an unsettlingly smile.

"Hard to say who will win? I don't think so..."

Qiu Taiyin's hands slowly spread out, and his gaze turned extremely cold and fierce. Black spiritual energy like wolf's smoke surged from his body like a tornado.

The originally bright day was suddenly darkened by the wolf's smoke covering the sky and overwhelming the earth with an extremely strong oppressive power.

Aware of the power of this oppressive spiritual energy, Qin Zhong's face changed drastically.

Mu Chen and Nine Nether's eyes narrowed fiercely. They took a deep breath involuntarily, for the power of this kind of spiritual energy had reached the true rank of a Fifth Grade Sovereign!

Qiu Taiyin had actually already completed the breakthrough and took the lead in advancing into the rank of a Fifth Grade Sovereign!

Chapter 819: Fifth Grade Sovereign

The world was enveloped by an immense spiritual power, and an oppressive spiritual energy was spreading in waves, causing the entire space to be in great turbulence. The massive dark shadow stood like a demon, giving off a palpable pressure and a chilling aura.

Around the square, countless strong men's expressions changed, due to the power that burst out of Qiu Taiyin's body. Everyone could feel that such power and pressure was far beyond a Fourth Grade Sovereign. As such, it had truly advanced into the rank of a Fifth Grade Sovereign!

Many strong characters were secretly shocked, this Qiu Taiyin had already completed the breakthrough, so it was no wonder that he was hell-bent on attaining the rank of the tenth lord.

Mu Chen's and Nine Nether's faces became grave at the same time. Their eyebrows were knit, as they knew how troublesome things would become once Qiu Taiyin was really a Fifth Grade Sovereign.

This would mean that Qiu Taiyin was qualified to attain the title of lord! Moreover, with his ability of a Fifth Grade Sovereign, he could easily dominate any top power who was beneath the Nine Lords.

A glint flashed across Mandela's large golden eyes, as she looked down on the battlefield. However, her small face remained as passive as a god that was looking down on mortals.

In her eyes, whether Qiu Taiyin was a Fourth or Fifth Grade Sovereign, he was still as inferior as an ant to her. In fact, if it wasn't for her fear of shaking the Daluo Territory armies' morale before the Great Hunting War, she would have destroyed him brutally! However, at the moment, Mandela was obviously unable to do so.

On the Platform of Bestowing Lordship, Qin Zhong also looked at Qiu Taiyin, a powerful oppression surging from the latter. It made him feel quite pressured.

Although he had touched the rank of Fifth Grade Sovereign, he was still

a step away from the real breakthrough. So, in a situation where both sides were equally powerful, this step made a big difference!

"Give up! You don't stand a chance." Qiu Taiyin crossed his arms in front of his chest, then smiled at Qin Zhong.

Qin Zhong's face changed, then he immediately took a deep breath. Yet, there was no sign of him admitting defeat. No matter how low the probability of his winning was, he would not throw in the towel.

Qin Zhong looked at Qiu Taiyin, his face becoming increasingly solemn. Immediately, he slowly clenched his palms. Suddenly, a glittering jade light burst out of his palms, and the Jade Tripod Celestial Body at his feet dazzled with a brilliant light. The crowd paid close attention now, as they could tell that Qin Zhong intended to give this meeting his all!

"How obstinate." Qiu Taiyin narrowed his eyes and shook his head, then murmured lowly under his breath.

Boom!

The brilliant jade light almost enshrouded half of the sky! Soon after, the jade light condensed in the sky above Qin Zhong at an astonishing speed. It then transformed into a huge ancient white jade tripod.

The ancient tripod was carved with mysterious ancient symbols and runes. As the runes twinkled, it looked like a wind tunnel, which absorbed the spiritual power between the heavens and the earth. A powerful oppressive aura permeated the entire atmosphere.

Although Qin Zhong had yet to thoroughly advance into the rank of Fifth Grade Sovereign, his strength could not be underestimated. Such powerful means as his were extraordinarily fierce!

"Jade Tripod Divine Art, Heavenly Tripod Transforming the Galaxy!"

Qin Zhong's eyes burst with jade light, and his roar reverberated like a thunderbolt. As soon as his conjured seals changed, his spiritual energy surged out, pouring into the massive tripod.

Whoosh!

The giant tripod soared directly to the sky, then turned into a huge and unparalleled jade-colored torrent. It swept across the vast sky and the space shattered into pieces suddenly, sending numerous brilliant jade-colored lights floating in the sky. It looked like a brilliant galaxy!

Countless strong men were all looking at the impactful blow gravely. This was Qin Zhong's strongest attack by far! Such an attack was enough to kill any strong man of his own rank.

However, when the jade torrent surged towards him, Qiu Taiyin merely looked indifferent, a cold glint flashing through his gloomy eyes. He then raised his head, the majestic jade torrent reflecting in his pupils.

"I'll show you how significant the difference is between you and a true Fifth Grade Sovereign!" Qiu Taiyin smiled indifferently, then raised his right hand slowly. His whole arm grew dark at an astonishing speed, as the thick black liquid condensed and dripped down.

Buzz!

At his feet, the massive Lunar Celestial Body also vibrated, while numerous black beams of light burst out of the Sovereign Celestial Body, before quickly converging at the fingertips of Qiu Taiyin.

Whoosh.

The black beams of light condensed rapidly. After a few moments, a black crescent moon, about 100 feet in size, formed on Qiu Taiyin's fingertips. Around the crescent moon, there was an endless amount of chilling aura that was emanating from it. Even the air was frozen to coagulation.

Drops of black liquid flowed along the black crescent moon. When it dripped down, it directly corroded and pierced through the entire space. It then disappeared, a sign of how terrifyingly corrosive it truly was!

"Lunar Divine Art, Lunar Moon!"

A nonchalant voice came from Qiu Taiyin's mouth, and with a flick of his finger, the black crescent moon, which emitted a terrible cold aura, penetrated the space directly. It then collided brutally with the jade torrent

that was sweeping towards it!

Boom!

The sound of the collision was like two streams of torrential floods, pouring down a mountain, then crashing into each other frantically. The impact felt as if the heavens and the earth were shaking.

Countless powerful men looked up, their eyes locked onto the land where the collision had happened. There, the space was twisted and was distorting violently, as the crescent moon and the torrent were releasing their energies frantically, trying to destroy each other.

However, in this confrontation, it was obvious that Qiu Taiyin gradually had gained the upper hand. The chilling black aura was corroding and invading the jade torrent, as shards of black ice started to form on it. Qin Zhong's pallor turned increasingly pale.

"As I said, you are no match for me." Qiu Taiyin's lips, like a blade of a knife, curled into an arc of a sneer. Immediately, his eyes were cold, while his seals suddenly changed.

Crash!

The chilling aura that was surrounding the black crescent moon suddenly surged, then turned into a faint glow that swept across the sky. The jade-colored torrent was torn and shattered apart, exploding into spots of light.

When the jade torrent disintegrated, Qin Zhong's face paled, as he spurt out a mouthful of blood. Qiu Taiyin's eyes were cold. Then, his body suddenly disappeared! At the same time, a black spear was condensed in the giant hand of the Lunar Celestial Body that was under his feet. With a whoosh, the spear had pierced through the void!

The black spear penetrated into the Jade Tripod Celestial Body at the speed of lightning. The chilling black aura permeated the space, while a layer of black ice spread out on the surface of the Jade Tripod Celestial Body. Qin Zhong's expression twisted drastically.

"Worry about yourself first!" A cold voice rang out from the front, as a

ghostly figure flashed out. Qiu Taiyin's eyes glanced at Qin Zhong sharply, and as he spoke, the power of a swift and fierce kick was delivered, looking as if it was carrying the power to shatter mountains! It landed on Qin Zhong's chest.

Qin Zhong was dealt with a hard blow. As he spurt out a few mouthfuls of blood, his body fell from the sky like a cannonball.

Boom!

As Qin Zhong was in distress, the Jade Tripod Celestial Body completely shattered and turned into light spots, totally dissipating. The world was then quiet, and countless strong men looked at the scene, shocked.

Who could have imagined that Qin Zhong would lose so quickly? How embarrassing!

The eyes of the lords also turned grave. The strength of Qiu Taiyin was indeed not to be underestimated.

Mu Chen and Nine Nether's eyebrows were knit tightly. Qin Zhong was really no match for Qiu Taiyin.

Under the gaze of countless eyes in the crowd, the Lunar Celestial Body at the foot of Qiu Taiyin faded away. He folded his arms in front of his chest and descended slowly, landing on the platform.

He looked indifferently at the seriously injured Qin Zhong, whose body had been invaded by the chilling Lunar aura that had been dealt by the kick. The chill had rendered Qin Zhong immobile. The result of this battle was clearly evident.

After defeating Qin Zhong, Qiu Taiyin looked directly at the direction where Mandela sat. His face appeared to be respectful, as he bent over and clasped his fist and said, "Dominator, can we declare the result of this Battle of Bestowing Lordship?"

As soon as he said this, there many strange gazes were cast in the direction of Mu Chen, as everyone knew that Mu Chen was the third person qualified to be crowned lord. Now, Qiu Taiyin's behavior was clearly disregarding him!

Obviously, Qiu Taiyin did not think that Mu Chen could pose any threat to his being crowned lord. Under the countless gazes, Mu Chen's expression remained calm, but still pursed his lips lightly.

"Mu Chen... Let's forget it." Behind him, Tang Bing hesitated for a moment, then whispered. After seeing Qiu Taiyin's overwhelming power, she could not help but worry about Mu Chen.

Now that Qiu Taiyin had really entered the rank of a Fifth Grade Sovereign, unless Nine Nether battled him personally, no one in the entire Jiuyou Palace would likely be capable enough to be his opponent.

"The 200,000 drops of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid, we'll just treat it as Nine Nether Palace's sponsorship of you," Tang Bing added.

When Mu Chen heard this, he couldn't help but look at her, exasperated. This miser...

Nine Nether also knit her brows. Looking at Mu Chen, she whispered, "Even Qin Zhong is not his opponent, so if you want to go, I'm afraid your odds of winning are not high."

She still had some knowledge of Mu Chen's strength, but Qiu Taiyin was not someone Mu Chen, a Third Grade Sovereign, could deal with. The world was quiet, and everybody's eyes were fixed on Mu Chen. Even Mandela, who sat on the golden throne, had her golden eyes on him.

It seemed that everyone was waiting for Mu Chen's response. Under the watchful gazes of countless men, Mu Chen also took a deep breath, then immediately smiled. In that smile, he showed no tinge of fear at all.

Looking at Mu Chen's smile, Nine Nether and Tang Bing already knew his decision. In a flash, Mu Chen appeared on the Platform of Bestowing Lordship, where everyone's eyes were currently focused. He then smiled at Qiu Taiyin and clasped his fist, as a clear voice rang out in the air, immediately causing the crowd to burst into an uproar.

"Nine Nether Palace and Mu Chen would like to seek guidance from Clan Leader Qiu." (Meaning: Let us fight!)

Chapter 820: Take the Stage and Seize the Lordship

"Mu Chen of Nine Nether Palace has come to seek advice from Clan Leader Qiu."

When that young and clear voice rang out from the Platform for Bestowing Lordship, the originally silent surroundings could not help but break out in an uproar. Quite a number of people were looking at that slender shadow in surprise. Clearly, they did not think that Mu Chen would still have the courage to go on stage after witnessing Qiu Taiyin's doughty capabilities.

"This Mu Chen is actually rather brave. It is a rare trait. No wonder he has so many achievements at such a young age..."

"But he is still too young. There is no need for him to make himself known now, for he will lose face if he is defeated later on."

"It is only normal for him to be defeated. Consider how old he is, then consider how old Qiu Taiyin is. Give him a few years' time, and perhaps Qiu Taiyin will not even have the qualifications to fight him."

"Who can say what will happen in the future..."

"..."

The sound of whispers began to spread from below the stage. Some people admired Mu Chen's bravery, whereas some felt that Mu Chen was too reckless and could not control his temper. For a moment, the area was rather lively due to the divergence of public opinions.

In the midst of all that clamor, Qiu Taiyin was also looking indifferently at Mu Chen, who was on the upper platform of the Platform for Bestowing Lordship. Soon after, a smile appeared on those thin lips. However, the appearance of that smile on his face seemed somehow false.

"Commander Mu Chen is actually rather courageous."

Mu Chen smiled faintly. He was not afraid of Qiu Taiyin's sharp gaze.

He said, "If I didn't possess such courage, perhaps I would not have been able to reach this point."

Qiu Taiyin was noncommittal. He looked at Mu Chen in a calm manner with his hands tucked into his sleeves. If they were to be compared in terms of status within Daluo Territory, then Mu Chen and Qiu Taiyin would be considered equal. But when Qiu Taiyin displayed this attitude, he was just like a senior. Clearly in his heart, he did not consider Mu Chen to be on the same level as he was.

"Since Commander Mu Chen is so courageous, of course I will help him achieve his aim. But fists and legs are without eyes, so when the time comes, I will not be courteous," Qiu Taiyin said slowly.

Mu Chen smiled, but he did not continue to pay attention to him. Instead, he turned and walked towards the heavily injured Qin Zhong. Qin Zhong was covered in blood, and a cold blackness was continuously emerging from the surface of his body. This was due to the incursion of Qiu Taiyin's chilly spiritual energy.

When he became aware of Mu Chen's presence nearby, a bitter smile appeared on Qin Zhong's pale face. But before he could speak, Mu Chen placed his palm lightly on his chest.

"You?"

Qin Zhong was startled. Then, he could feel Mu Chen's spiritual energy surging into his body, attempting to help him expel that chilly spiritual energy. This caused a slight change in his facial expression before he promptly said, "Stop it. This chilly spiritual energy is extremely overbearing. It'll be troublesome if it penetrates your body."

Qiu Taiyin was also looking at this scene with a smile on his face. The center of his spiritual energy had merged with a Lunar Crystal, and that was why the center of his spiritual energy contained the chilly spiritual energy. Even for a strong person of a similar level, it would be rather troublesome to expel it once the chilly spiritual energy penetrated within. With Mu Chen's capabilities as a Grade Three Sovereign, the moment he was infused with the energy, his basic combat powers would all be lost.

Thus, when he saw that Mu Chen actually wanted to help Qin Zhong expel the chilly spiritual energy from his body, he could not help but to allow his lips to curl into a cynical smile before murmuring, "What a people pleaser who has an exaggerated opinion of his own abilities..."

When Mu Chen heard Qiu Taiyin, he directed a smile at him. Soon after, a purple flame suddenly surged on his palm before he finally beat it into Qin Zhong's body with a clap.

Sizz!

White smoke began to rapidly rise from the top of Qin Zhong's head. Then he noticed with surprise that the chilly spiritual energy within his body was currently disappearing at a rapid pace.

"This is... the Unperishable Flame?" Qin Zhong was slightly shocked as he looked at Mu Chen. It turned out the center of Mu Chen's spiritual energy had once merged with the Unperishable Flame. No wonder he was not in the slightest bit afraid of Qiu Taiyin's chilly spiritual energy.

Mu Chen nodded and retracted his hand before retreating.

At that moment, a commotion was beginning to spread around the Platform for Bestowing Lordship. The looks which were directed at Mu Chen were especially bizarre. Although this youngster only had the capabilities of a Grade Three Sovereign, the tricks he had used were rather amazing.

"Thank you."

Qin Zhong stood up slowly and directed an appreciative nod at Mu Chen. Soon after, he looked at Qiu Taiyin, who had a grim expression on his face, and said, "You should be careful. He's hard to tackle."

Mu Chen nodded slightly. He was fully aware how difficult it was to deal with Qiu Taiyin. If they were to truly discuss him, perhaps even the Prince of Netherworld could not beat him. It wouldn't be easy for him to win today.

But no matter how difficult it was, he could not turn back because Qin Zhong had failed. If he were to give up, then Qiu Taiyin would win the

position of the tenth lord and it would mean that he had failed at his task. And if he failed, his ten types of Divine Beast Blood Essence would also come to nothing, and it would be more troublesome for him to cultivate that Dragon-Phoenix Scripture.

This would lead to an obstruction in his path of becoming stronger.

Thus, he had to be involved in this situation.

When Qin Zhong saw Mu Chen's determined expression, he did not continue to speak but instead gave him a light pat on the shoulder before sweeping down from the Platform for Bestowing Lordship.

"Commander Mu Chen actually does have some tricks. No wonder you could mix with the people in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift in such a prosperous manner," Qiu Taiyin said as he glanced at Mu Chen.

Mu Chen smiled. A light was flickering slightly in his black eyes as he stared at Qiu Taiyin.

"Although I want to cherish such an excellent youngster like you, I have never shown mercy to my opponents. Since you stand here, you must pay the price for your actions."

The expression in Qiu Taiyin's eyes was cold as he locked onto Mu Chen. Soon after, he slowly extended a finger and gave a tap towards Mu Chen from afar. "On the Platform for Bestowing Lordship, no matter if you live or die, no one will save you."

Boom!

At the end of Qiu Taiyin's sentence, the majestic spiritual energy of a Grade Five Sovereign erupted from his body like a storm. That type of powerful coercion was like a monstrous wave as it began to envelop Mu Chen.

If he were a normal Grade Three Sovereign, then perhaps his combat power would have immediately disappeared due to this type of coercion. But there was still no sign of fear in Mu Chen's eyes.

Mu Chen closed his eyes slightly. Soon after, his black hair began to

grow rapidly and became quite long as it hung loosely down. The moment he opened his eyes, they had turned a strange color, similar to a black hole.

Small Heart Demon State!

Mu Chen suddenly clenched his fists tightly, then the spiritual energy which was burning with purple flames and the spiritual energy which had flickering formless lightning appeared respectively on each of his palms at the same time. Those two spiritual energies, which were merged with differently attributed powers, were perfectly integrated when they entered into the hands of Mu Chen, who was in the Small Heart Demon State.

The coercion which had been enveloping him instantly disappeared until not a single trace was left.

Mu Chen's eyes were like black holes as they stared at Qiu Taiyin without any sign of happiness or sorrow. Entering into this sort of state, Mu Chen was definitely calm, sensible, and his heart would not waver in the slightest bit due to any external disruption.

Qiu Taiyin furrowed his brows after being stared at by Mu Chen's strange dark eyes. Although his capabilities were far better than Mu Chen's, he couldn't help but raise his guard. According to his extensive combat experience, he could feel that Mu Chen in this state seemed to be slightly eccentric.

Grade Three Sovereign. Even if I forgive you, you can never create a big disturbance ever again. Qiu Taiyin sneered mentally. Soon after, without any further hesitation, he flicked his finger, and a spiritual energy ribbon swept out. Like a black python, it swept over to Mu Chen while a chilly energy permeated the area within that dark spiritual energy.

Mu Chen violently retreated. At the same time, he clapped out his left palm, and the ribbon of spiritual energy burning with purple flames clashed violently with the ribbon of dark spiritual energy. Meanwhile, he clenched his right fist in Qiu Taiyin's direction, and a formless lightning flickered in the gaps between his fingers.

Qiu Taiyin glanced at Mu Chen's right palm, and the expression in his

eyes froze slightly. Before he could respond, the wailing roar of thunder could suddenly be heard from deep within his soul.

Dong!

The sound of the roaring thunder was like an explosion. Qiu Taiyin's body jolted vigorously and at that moment, the spiritual energy in his body was actually beginning to shake.

Swish!

At that moment, Mu Chen's stature had fully exploded and had actually directly crossed over that collision of spiritual energy ribbons. With the clench of his fist, the Great Meru Demonic Pillar appeared in a flash, and he immediately smashed it down ruthlessly on Qiu Taiyin.

The cold rays in Qiu Taiyin's eyes were flickering. His body jolted, and his spiritual energy began to agitate before breaking out in a soundwave that actually repressed the lightning roar within his body at a rapid pace. Soon after, he turned his hand over and clapped out with a cold expression.

Dong!

Qiu Taiyin's dark palm slapped heavily onto the top of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar whizzing downwards. While the space was shaking, the earth beneath his feet was crushed, but that huge Great Meru Demonic Pillar had been directly blown off by his slap. Mu Chen's stature was also so shaken that he was shot backwards.

Mu Chen's soles smeared a long trace on the ground, but his handsome face was expressionless.

"Although your capabilities are not very strong, you have quite a number of strange tricks. Looks like the only reason why you can stand out from your peers is because you rely on those tricks. But I have to tell you, that in front of someone who is far more capable than you, those tricks are just child's play!"

Qiu Taiyin's facial expression was cold. Initially, he was taken by surprise and was almost hit by Mu Chen's attack. This was undoubtedly

what caused an evil fire to surge in his heart. A brat who was a mere Grade Three Sovereign was simply no match for his capabilities as a Grade Five Sovereign.

Qiu Taiyin looked at Mu Chen coldly, and then his body slowly rose up into the air. The dark spiritual energy continuously rippled out from within his body to form a wave before spreading outwards.

"Lunar Ice Prison!"

Qiu Taiyin changed his seal before grabbing onto the air in Mu Chen's direction. Then, the ground beneath Mu Chen's feet was immediately crushed. A dark spiritual energy rushed up into the sky and actually turned into a black ice cage which trapped Mu Chen within it.

"Freeze!"

Qiu Taiyin sneered. With the clench of his fist, that ice cage started to shrink rapidly, and cold, dark air began to gnaw wildly at Mu Chen. Even a Grade Four Sovereign would be frozen by that attack.

Countless strong people shook their heads in pity. After all, the difference between a Grade Three Sovereign and a Grade Five Sovereign was too big. No matter how many tricks Mu Chen still had up his sleeve, it would still be difficult to contend with this level of spiritual energy suppression.

Within the ice prison, Mu Chen's eyes, which were still like black holes, were fixated on that cold air sweeping over him. Purple flames were surging around him, but it was only enough to slightly block that cold air. Although the Unperishable Flame was overbearing indeed, there was too big of a difference between Mu Chen and Qiu Taiyin's levels of spiritual energy overbearance.

The spiritual energy of a Grade Three Sovereign was not enough to allow Mu Chen to confront a Grade Five Sovereign skillfully and easily like he always did.

"Is a Grade Three Sovereign not enough?" Mu Chen mumbled to himself. Soon after, his eyes slowly closed, and his palms folded together

quietly right in front of everyone's shocked gazes.

Since a Grade Three Sovereign is not enough... then I'll just make a breakthrough!

Chapter 821: Breakthrough

Within the ice prison that was molded out of black ice, a dark cold air was seething. That sort of chilly sensation was enough to freeze the spiritual energy within a human body. At this moment, Mu Chen stood still and silent in the prison, with his palms folded together.

As he stood, the convulsive sounds, similar to a buzzing, were beginning to ring from within his body. Then, a majestic spiritual energy whizzed out like a flood, permeating throughout all the limbs and bones of his body.

The spiritual energy was rippling all over his body, while simultaneously beginning to swell at a surprising speed. Then, it began to overlay upon itself, as if the layers were also surging, causing it to begin to sweep over towards that even stronger level.

Mu Chen had received many lucky chances during the Dragon-Phoenix Rift. In this time period, the spiritual energy in his body had already progressively achieved the peak level of a Grade Three Sovereign.

However, Mu Chen did not make a breakthrough at that time, because he knew that his body was making progress much too quickly. Sometimes, when progress is too swift or violent, it would result in an unstable foundation for the process.

Thus, even though he had refined a great amount of Dragon-Phoenix Blood Essence in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift, he still did not attempt to make a breakthrough to a Grade Four Sovereign. He also knew that the moment he completed his breakthrough, the Prince of Netherworld would no longer go easy on him, at least not like he did when they confronted each other before.

Thus, Mu Chen had to be patient until his return to the Daluo Territory. It was only through that seclusion, which had lasted for almost half a month, that Mu Chen was able to completely take control over his ever-increasing power, which he had further developed during the Dragon-Phoenix Rift. Hence, the current spiritual energy within Mu Chen has almost reached a state of overflow.

Currently, he only needed to move the spiritual energy in his body slightly to cause the flood-like spiritual energy to automatically overflow. Then, naturally, he would be able to complete his breakthrough.

At this time, around the Title Bestowing Platform, countless eyes were fixated on that ice prison. Among those eyes, quite a number of people were shaking their heads in pity.

Clearly, they thought that Mu Chen had failed. After all, the majestic spiritual energy of a Grade Five Sovereign was certainly not something a mere Grade Three Sovereign could match.

"Elder Sister Nine Nether, Mu Chen, he..." Tang Bing couldn't help but mutter, while she and the rest also wore worried expressions on their faces.

Nine Nether's brows were slightly knit, as she stared at that ice prison. According to her keen perception, she could faintly perceive a slightly abnormal fluctuation coming from within. Thus, she did not make a sound.

On that golden throne, Mandela's golden eyes had also flickered slightly. Soon after this, she curved up her small rosy lips, thinking of Mu Chen.

This fellow does have quite impressive skills...

"This boring battle should be over by now."

Qiu Taiyin was also smiling indifferently, right before everyone's eyes. To him, the difference between the capabilities of him and Mu Chen were just too big. Indeed, he had quite a number of surprising tricks, but unfortunately, this could not fill the gap between him and a Grade Five Sovereign.

But, to be able to crush this young talent, whose fame had recently spread throughout the whole North Territory, still brought Qiu Taiyin much pleasure and peace of mind. Qiu Taiyin sneered mentally, then extended his palm from afar, aiming it towards that black ice prison, before abruptly clenching his fist.

Boom!

Just when Qiu Taiyin clenched his fist and was prepared to destroy that ice prison, a majestic blazing spiritual energy erupted like a volcano! A purple flame was combusting, along with formless lightning, all within that powerful spiritual energy.

Both the purple flame and the lightning were unbending, celestial, and incomparably violent. With this one rush, the ice prison instantly evaporated, until there were no traces of it left.

"What?" At this moment, Qiu Taiyin's expression changed abruptly.

The countless strong people were also looking at this scene with consternation. Then, the huge spiritual energy light beam shot up to the sky! Soon after this, it shrunk at a rapid pace, before finally dissipating completely. After the light beam dissipated, a slender and young shadow appeared in the sky.

Swish!

Everyone's gazes were thrown in that direction. It was Mu Chen, still having his same long black hair and black hole-like eyes, which could make one's heart palpitate. But, the fluctuation of Mu Chen's rippling spiritual energy was clearly much stronger than it had been before!

This type of spiritual energy's powerful enhancement instantly caused countless people to exclaim aloud, "He actually made a breakthrough?!"

The people's faces were filled with stunned expressions, before they started to shortly wonder out loud, uncontrollably. No one thought that Mu Chen would actually make a breakthrough at such a critical moment. This fellow was truly incomparable with ordinary people, as he had achieved such an accomplishment in only the short span of one year!

"But, even if he had completed his breakthrough, he is still just a Grade Four Sovereign. There is still a huge gap between him and Qiu Taiyin."

There were also some strong people who said such things, while shaking their heads. Clearly, they did not think that, just because Mu Chen had completed his breakthrough this time, he would be able to contend with Qiu Taiyin. After all, this breakthrough had only decreased the gap

between him and Qiu Taiyin, not bridged it entirely.

Some strong people also nodded in agreement. There was indeed still a gap between a Grade Four Sovereign and a Grade Five Sovereign.

As the sound of whispers filled the air, Qiu Taiyin looked at Mu Chen, who was standing high up in the sky and wearing a slightly gloomy expression. Clearly, this scene was beyond his expectations.

"Commander Mu Chen is really a young person with outstanding abilities, as he was able to make a breakthrough at such a dangerous moment!" Qiu Taiyin smiled lightly and said, "But, even if one managed to make a breakthrough to become a Grade Four Sovereign, there might still be no point for it. Thus, I would suggest that this battle end here. Otherwise, if we continue, I'm afraid I will not be able to stop."

When Mu Chen heard this, he had to ask, "Then, who will be the winner?"

Qiu Taiyin's expression was gradually turning ice-cold. His lips curved up into a cynical smile, while he said indifferently, "Since Commander Mu Chen really wants to compete and see who is the best, then it looks like I can only accompany you."

At the end of his sentence, a murderous intent swept across the depths of his eyes. What he had said earlier was exactly what he thought. However, who would've expected for this fellow to actually be so ignorant as to ask this sort of question in reply.

With a sudden clench of his dry and thin fingers, his sleeve robe waved. Immediately, the dark spiritual energy swept out overwhelmingly, before directly turning into a huge dark sword. With a swish, it ripped through the void and was directly cut down by Mu Chen.

Mu Chen's eyes, which were as dark as a black hole, flickered slightly. He did not dodge the attack, but instead, he suddenly folded his palms together. Immediately, that majestic spiritual energy, which was burning with purple flames and had the flickering Netherworld Thunder Heart, merged together. It then turned into a spiritual energy ribbon, which swept out, before colliding with the huge dark sword.

Boom!

The two collided! But, this time, Qiu Taiyin's attack did not help him achieve the similar victory that he had obtained earlier with such incredible ease. Instead, it was only after a short moment of deadlock, that the spiritual energy ribbon was cut off. Before that spiritual energy ribbon could be cut off, however, a crack emerged from that same huge dark sword.

Clearly, after advancing to a Grade Four Sovereign, just with the spiritual energy alone, which has been merged with the imperishable flame and the Netherworld Thunder Heart, was enough for Mu Chen to not be too far behind Qiu Taiyin's capabilities during their confrontation.

At least it was no longer possible for Qiu Taiyin to be like before, whereby he could rely solely on his spiritual energy to suppress Mu Chen. Clearly, Qiu Taiyin had also become aware of this sort of situation. Thus, his face which was slightly chilly and turning more gloomy by the second.

Mu Chen retained a calm expression. After entering into the Small Heart Demon State, he was clearly in a state of absolute calmness, which just happened to be the most perfect combat state. Under this type of state, his combat force also had an extreme increase, for he could use every single spiritual energy within his body to the extreme, without a shred of it being consumed pointlessly.

"Commander Mu Chen truly has some good skills. Today, I want to know exactly how many tricks do you still have up your sleeve?!" Qiu Taiyin's expression was cold. Soon after he said this, he stamped his sole. Immediately, a majestic spiritual energy rushed up to the sky, before an enormous huge dark shadow appeared in a flash, a chilly energy monstrously surging in its wake.

That is the Lunar Celestial Body!

Clearly, the current Qiu Taiyin already understood that, if he wanted to really get rid of Mu Chen, then he could not just rely on the pressure of his spiritual energy. Thus, he had to display his true means as well. He also wanted to let Mu Chen know that, even if he made a breakthrough

and became a Grade Four Sovereign, it was still impossible to change the ending of this battle.

Qiu Taiyin appeared at the top of the Lunar Celestial Body. He stared at Mu Chen with a sharp look in his eyes. Soon after this, he extended his pale and skinny fingers. At the tip of his finger, a dark spiritual energy gathered wildly. Then, a black crescent moon, which was emitting a chilly air, appeared once again.

When everyone saw this, their eyes froze. Previously, Qin Zhong was defeated by Qiu Taiyin, when he used this move. Thus, everyone was very clear about the power of this black crescent moon!

Mu Chen's black eyes fluctuated. Then, with a wave of his sleeved robe, a bright golden light swept out from under his feet. Finally, it turned into a huge golden shadow. If looking carefully, one could also see that a golden scorching sun was suspended behind the head of that huge shadow.

The moment the Great Solar Undying Body was called out, it caused the spiritual energy in this world to shake violently, as a golden light permeated the air throughout the world. Even with the wreath of that Lunar Celestial Body's chilly air, it was still unable to erode the area with the golden light.

Everyone could see how impressive Mu Chen's Sovereign Celestial Body was. Even if it was confronting a Sovereign Celestial Body that had been cultivated by a Grade Five Sovereign, its vulnerability still could not be seen.

"Hmph!"

When Qiu Taiyin saw the Great Solar Undying Body beneath Mu Chen's feet, his expression froze as well. Clearly, he had become too casual and used to this Sovereign Celestial Body. However, he only gave a cold snort mentally.

Even if the Sovereign Celestial Body that was cultivated by Mu Chen was unusual, no matter how impressive a Sovereign Celestial Body was, it would still require the support of one's own spiritual energy. Also, even if a Grade Nine Sovereign had merely cultivated an unpopular Sovereign

Celestial Body, it would still be more powerful than the top 10 Sovereign Celestial Body that were cultivated by a Grade One Sovereign.

"Since you're so confident..."

The corner of Qiu Taiyin's lips curved up in a cold smile. He slowly spread out his palms, immediately causing an overwhelming dark spiritual energy to whiz out from that Lunar Celestial Body, before finally gathering under Qiu Taiyin's palm.

Upon seeing this, the onlookers were taken by surprise, their exclamations resounding throughout the world. They had just realized that what they saw were five black crescent moons, appearing one after another, under Qiu Taiyin's palm!

Previously, even just one black crescent moon was enough to make it difficult for Qin Zhong to resist. Now that five moons had come out together, even if Mu Chen had stepped into a Grade Four Sovereign level, that kind of power may still be impossible to contend with!

This Qiu Taiyin really did not plan on giving Mu Chen any chance!

Chapter 822: A Fierce Battle with Qiu Taiyin

Buzz buzz!

The spiritual energy in the world was fluctuating severely. There was black liquid flowing across the tops of the five crescent moons gathered under Qiu Taiyin's palm, and they were all emitting an extremely shocking corrosive atmosphere.

At this moment, the expressions of the countless strong people in the world turned solemn. They had all felt a trace of murderous intent in Qiu Taiyin's attack. Clearly, he did not plan to waste any more time with Mu Chen but instead planned to use quick means to end this battle which he had deemed as boring.

Nine Nether's and the other lords' complexions were slowly returning to their normal color. Although Qiu Taiyin had clearly just made a breakthrough to Grade Five Sovereign, this level of attack had already reached an extent that would make people take him seriously.

"Go!"

Qiu Taiyin looked at Mu Chen coldly. Soon after, he waved his robe sleeve, and those five black crescent moons immediately vibrated before disappearing into the air. In the next moment, those five crescent moons appeared in the sky directly above Mu Chen, shuttling back and forth quickly like spiritual fish.

Qiu Taiyin sneered at Mu Chen, who was at the top of the Great Solar Undying Body, with the coldness in his eyes surging. Since he wanted to make a move, of course he would want it to be one which would complete destroy Mu Chen's courage. With this thought in mind, he clenched his fist at once.

"The Unity of Five Moons!"

Five dark crescent moons emitting endless chilly air suddenly swept across the sky violently and collided before actually merging. Immediately,

the already surprising attack turned even more terrifying, and that empty space was torn open.

There was a change in everyone's expressions as they could all feel Qiu Taiyin's resolute murderous intent.

Mu Chen stood still quietly at the top of the Great Solar Undying Body as his dark eyes looked at that astonishing attack violently shooting towards him. Both of his hands also suddenly folded together, and the seal was changed irregularly with the speed of lightning.

Buzz!

Along with the irregular change of Mu Chen's seal, a golden light immediately radiated out from between the Great Solar Undying Body's brows as well as from its chest area, like the blooming of two golden scorching suns.

The golden light radiated out before surging directly into Mu Chen's body, causing his body to become a brilliant gold.

Nine Sun Super Power, the Power of Two Suns!

It seemed as if a golden light flashed in Mu Chen's dark eyes when the seal changed once again. A low call rang from his heart, Nine Sun Super Power, Heavenly Sun Golden Seal!

Swish!

An ancient golden light print rapidly formed under Mu Chen's palm. Finally, it turned into a golden streamer and swept across the horizon as it shot out without any hesitation towards the dark beam coming from that torn space.

Even after displaying such a level of Divine Art like the Heavenly Sun Golden Seal, Mu Chen did not stop there because he knew that it would be impossible to block a full-on attack by a Grade Five Sovereign so easily.

Roar!

Thus, he stomped his foot vigorously, and a power which was as majestic as a dragon whistled from within his body. The shocking cries of a dragon

and elephant also suddenly rang out from within Mu Chen's body. At that moment, the whole sky was trembling.

Swish! Swish!

Four light beams suddenly shot out violently from within Mu Chen's body. They rapidly changed into four enormous dragons and elephants. The huge dragons were entrenched, and the huge elephants stepped on the air as they emitted an incomparably violent fluctuation of spiritual energy.

"Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art!"

Among those were two burning with purple flames, while the other two had the continuously flickering formless lightning. Different spiritual energies of different attributes seemed to be incomparably violent.

Boom!

When the two dragons and two elephants collided, a violent spiritual energy fluctuation surged open like the tide, and a huge Dragon-Elephant Halo rapidly formed. Finally, it turned into a streamer and shot out.

A Heavenly Sun Golden Seal followed by a Dragon-Elephant Halo were two types of powerful attacks displayed by Mu Chen without reserve. That power and influence had similarly caused countless people to watch with sternness in their hearts. Although Mu Chen had just made a breakthrough to become a Grade Four Sovereign, perhaps even a great amount of people present who were already Grade Four Sovereigns would not have been able to resist that level of attack.

But would it be enough to withstand Qiu Taiyin's killer move?

Countless eyes were watching nervously as Qiu Taiyin's streamer-like attack finally tore open the space on the horizon. It was like a stony meteorite flying across the horizon as it collided ferociously with Mu Chen's attacks.

Dong!

When they collided, a terrifying spiritual energy storm instantly carried

everything away. The continuous spiritual energy attacks were like lofty billows raging wildly. The overwhelming sound of crashes rang out in the space.

The dark light and the golden light each occupied half of the horizon as they crazily attacked each other with corrosive power.

Qiu Taiyin watched the collision of those two shocking powers with an indifferent expression. Soon after, the chilly color in his eyes became increasingly rich as he said with a cold voice, "Crush it!"

Buzz!

The giant crescent moon formed by the five black crescent moons jolted violently, and the chilly force surged monstrously. With a swish, the space tore apart, and that golden light print was crushed.

After that giant black crescent moon peremptorily tore through that golden light print, it did not show any sign of stopping and rushed towards the Dragon-Phoenix Halo sweeping over. Both parties crossed each other.

The Dragon-Phoenix Halo burst and turned into light spots before dissipating. But at the same time, that black crescent moon also turned particularly dim, and there were even cracks emerging on it.

"My remaining power will be enough to get rid of you." Qiu Taiyin sneered. Although he had used a lot of spiritual energy defending Mu Chen's attacks, his remaining power was enough.

At the top of the Great Solar Undying Body, Mu Chen's dark eyes glanced at the crescent moon violently shooting over toward him. However, he did a shocking move whereby he did not show any sign of wanting to evade it. Instead, with a stomp of his foot, he rushed up into the sky and actually rushed towards that crescent moon!

Wow.

Sounds of surprise immediately resounded through the surroundings of the Dragon-Phoenix Platform.

"You are courting death!" The cold ray of light in Qiu Taiyin's eyes was

surging.

Buzz!

A bright light erupted from within Mu Chen's body. On the surface of his body, it was as if the huge shadows of a dragon and a phoenix had emerged, and then in a flash, golden armor appeared on the surface of his body.

He punched out his fist with a rumble, and the golden light surged. Immediately, that fist ruthlessly struck the black crescent moon which was emitting a shocking, chilly force.

A violent spiritual energy shockwave raged out.

Mu Chen was so shaken that he was immediately shot backwards.

However, while he was flying backwards, everyone saw that cracks were quickly spreading out on the black crescent moon where Mu Chen had punched. Finally, with a boom it completely exploded and shattered before turning into a sky full of dark light spots.

That full-on attack by Qiu Taiyin was still ultimately repelled by Mu Chen!

As Mu Chen's silhouette shot backwards, the Great Solar Undying Body extended its huge hand and took hold of him. That terrifying brisance even made cracks appear on the Great Solar Undying Body's huge hand.

Mu Chen landed in the Great Solar Undying Body's hand before his golden armor dissipated. Everyone saw that there was blood on his palm flowing down along the area between his fingers.

Mu Chen only took a glimpse at the blood on his palm. It felt numb. If he had not possessed the Dragon-Phoenix Golden Armor and the Dragon-Phoenix Body, perhaps that crescent moon would've instantly torn through his body.

One certainly should not underestimate the full-on attack of a Grade Five Sovereign. Even if that type of attack had made him use a majority of his power, it was still enough to kill and behead a Grade Four Sovereign.

However, Qiu Taiyin had also clearly underestimated Mu Chen's abilities.

At the same time, everyone in the world could not help but to let out an uproar. It was assumed that many people were amazed by the fact that Mu Chen had only paid the price of minor injuries in order to stop Qiu Taiyin's full-on attack.

Similarly, Qiu Taiyin was watching the scene with a cold expression. He looked over at Mu Chen, whose expression remained calm to the point that no turmoil could be seen, yet the anger in Qiu Taiyin's heart was gradually getting more and more dense.

Mu Chen's actions that had caused him to accidentally slip up again and again had clearly caused him to lose face very badly.

But after feeling surprised and angry, Qiu Taiyin also began to truly treat Mu Chen as an opponent. He knew that if he continued to hold onto his initial mentality of contempt, perhaps today he would be failing miserably at an easy task. And this point was something that he absolutely could not tolerate.

Phew.

Qiu Taiyin sucked in a mouthful of cold air, and the anger in depths of his eyes was beginning to converge before being replaced by dense coldness.

When Mu Chen saw Qiu Taiyin's change, he furrowed his brows. Clearly it would be more difficult to deal with Qiu Taiyin in this state.

Qiu Taiyin looked at Mu Chen coldly. Then with a stomp of his feet, a black weapon like the full moon congealed on the huge hand of that Lunar Celestial Body. An extremely sharp cold air was revealed on that moon blade's edge.

Boom!

The Lunar Celestial Body shot out violently while carrying along that cold air, which seemed to be all over the sky as it directly began to unfold its most rabid attack towards Mu Chen. The Qiu Taiyin merged his own

spiritual energy with the Lunar Celestial Body. The attack launched by both parties at the same time seemed as though it could cause the earth to shatter with mere gestures.

When Mu Chen saw this, he changed his seal as well. The Great Meru Demonic Pillar appeared in a flash, and the Great Solar Undying Body held it with its huge hands before sweeping out violently.

Boom!

Two huge shadows collided and crossed swords while high up in the sky. Instantly, the wind and clouds in the world surged, and the wild wind whistled. Even the clouds higher in the sky were torn to shreds. It was clear to see how intense the crossing of swords between those two parties was.

Everyone looked at those colliding Sovereign Celestial Bodies with a solemn expression.

"Elder Sister Nine Nether, Mu Chen doesn't seem to be looking so good," Tang Bing couldn't help but say as she and the rest looked at the sky. Clearly, the Lunar Celestial Body was gaining the upper hand in the conflict between those two huge shadows.

Nine Nether also nodded her beautiful head solemnly. After all, Qiu Taiyin was not someone who could be easily dealt with. After experiencing repeated slipups due to his initial underestimation of Mu Chen, he had already straightened out his attitude.

He did not continue to compare means with Mu Chen, but instead chose the combat mode which was most advantageous to him, which was to converge the powers of his own body and the Sovereign Celestial Body.

He possessed the capabilities of a Grade Five Sovereign. In terms of the brutality and power of spiritual energy as well as persistence, he was far stronger than Mu Chen!

Thus, if they continued to fight this way, Mu Chen would definitely be defeated in the end.

Clearly it was not only Nine Nether who saw this, as the other princes

were also secretly shaking their heads. The tempo of this battle was already under Qiu Taiyin's control. If it weren't for the fact that the Sovereign Celestial Body cultivated by Mu Chen was unusual, perhaps he would have been defeated already. Even so, he had only extended the time before his defeat.

At this moment on the golden throne, Mandala had also knit her brows. Could it be that even Mu Chen was unable to stop Qiu Taiyin from being bestowed a lordship?

As everyone in the world watched, Mu Chen, who was standing at the top of the Great Solar Undying Body, raised his head to look at the Lunar Celestial Body's sharp attack. At the top of the Lunar Celestial Body, Qiu Taiyin directed a densely cold smile at him.

Clearly, anyone could see how disadvantaged Mu Chen was.

Mu Chen lightly sucked in a mouthful of cold air. Then as everyone watched, he slowly closed his eyes, and his body sank bit by bit into the Great Solar Undying Body.

If you want to get rid of me this way, I'm afraid it will not be as easy as you think...

Chapter 823: Mu Chen's Trump Card

The incomparably violent spiritual energy raged within the heavens and the earth like a storm. The two figures crashed into each other fiercely in the skies. The Sharp Moon Wheel and the Demonic Pillar smashed into each other, causing the spiritual energy shockwave to explode forth and shaking the space intensely.

When the two clashed violently, Mu Chen's figure dove into the Great Solar Undying Body. He was obviously relying on the Great Undying Body's protection in order to evade the brunt of Qiu Taiying's attack.

"You think you can just hide within your Sovereign Celestial Body, like a turtle in its shell?" Qiu Taiying jeered at Mu Chen.

The frustration from being blocked by Mu Chen several times not long ago had now dissipated. It was replaced, instead, by an intense euphoria. As everyone could tell that Qiu Taiying had the absolute upper hand, it seemed like his victory had already been determined.

Qiu Taiying wore a sinister smile on his face, the spiritual energy within his body erupting like a volcano. In that instant, the eerie and cold aura surrounding the Lunar Celestial Body became even more sinister. Its attacks towards the Great Solar Undying Body grew fiercer as well.

Under the brutal barrage of Qiu Taiying's attacks, the golden light on the Great Solar Undying Body began to bend disorderly. It was clearly evident that even the Great Solar Undying Body could not ignore the combined siege of Qiu Taiying and the Lunar Celestial Body.

Every powerful individual between the heavens and the earth looked on apologetically, as the Great Solar Undying Body gradually retreated. However, not a single scoff or taunt was heard.

Everyone understood clearly that Mu Chen's having cornered Qiu Taiying into fighting conservatively, only relying on his newly attained Grade Four Sovereign powers after his breakthrough, was already a surprising feat. After all, even Qin Zhong, who was halfway into Grade Five Sovereign, could not force Qiu Taiying into fighting so seriously.

As they looked on, all of the powerful individuals present slightly frowned. They looked at the retreating Great Solar Undying Body with doubt in their eyes.

With their exceptional intuitions, they could tell that the immense spiritual energy surrounding the Great Solar Undying Body seemed to be steadily diminishing. It felt almost as if Mu Chen's spiritual energy was also starting to fade, rendering it unable to continue supporting his Sovereign Celestial Body.

Many would say that this was caused by Qiu Taiying's strong attacks. However, these powerful individuals did not think so, as they understood Mu Chen's capabilities clearly. While this fella was young, his unpredictable moves had even warranted caution from many who were much stronger than him. This was why they were slightly puzzled at Mu Chen's sudden withdrawal.

Between the heavens and the earth, only Mandela, who was seated on the golden throne, and the Condor King, along with the other two of the Three Kings, were staring at the Great Solar Undying Body. They were astonished, as they gazed at its shining eyes, with the golden light surrounding it waning.

As the light from the Great Solar Undying Body dimmed, they felt a strange fluctuation. However, the fluctuation was overshadowed by the immense spiritual energy that was emanating from the Great Solar Undying Body. Hence, they were unable to sense it accurately at that moment.

Yet one thing was certain... Mu Chen was not retreating in defeat, as everyone was thinking. Instead, he must be plotting something in secret.

This discovery had piqued the curiosity of Mandela and the Three Kings. They were eager to know how Mu Chen would turn this difficult situation around.

Under the innumerable gazes between the heavens and the earth, the spiritual energy fluctuation grew fiercer. It was obvious that Qiu Taiying was worried that the battle would drag on for too long. This concern was

why he had intensified his offense. As fast as lighting, Sharp Moon Wheels slashed at the Great Solar Undying Body, causing cracks to appear all over the golden figure.

"This battle should end now!"

Qiu Taiying, who was now upon the head of Lunar Celestial Body, focused his cold stare on the dimming golden shine of the Great Undying Body. In the depths of his eyes, a streak of killing intent shimmered.

Then, he immediately formed a seal with both hands. The spiritual energy within his body gushed into the Lunar Celestial Body like a tide.

Fwhoom!

A dark light pulsed around the Lunar Celestial Body, as if it was a physical material. Then, the Lunar Celestial Body immediately let out a dull growl, as dark spiritual energy gathered spontaneously on its giant fists, forming an enormous knuckle of black ice.

"Lunar Fist!"

With a loud shout from Qiu Taiying, the fist of black ice pierced the void. As it did so, the wind blast from the fist froze the air into layers of black ice. The dark and chilling powers were terrifying!

This punch of Qiu Taiying's had almost drawn the very extent of a Grade Five Sovereign's power. Coupled with the Lunar Celestial Body, its force could shatter the firmament of heaven itself! In fact, with just one look, countless powerful individuals sensed the ferocity of this punch.

Facing such a fierce attack, Mu Chen could only look on, watching as the fist of black ice penetrated the empty space, then rammed itself into the Great Solar Undying Body at the speed of lightning.

BOOM!

At the moment of collision, the surrounding space shuddered. Also, a terrifying spiritual energy was fiercely released from the icy fist. Everyone could see black cracks growing on the surface of the Great Solar Undying Body, rapidly covering its entirety.

It's over.

The countless powerful individuals gave out a collective sigh. After taking such an astonishing hit from Qiu Taiying, Mu Chen could not even maintain his sovereign celestial body. Having lost his sovereign celestial body, Mu Chen could not possibly go against Qiu Taiying in this condition.

Thus, the result of this battle was clear...

Bang!

The cracks multiplied on the huge body of the Great Solar Undying Body. Then, golden light was shone through the cracks, before shooting out in a dazzling explosion. Suddenly, with a loud bang, the celestial body was blown into smithereens!

Standing on top of the Lunar Celestial Body, Qiu Taiying stared intently at the blinding gold light. His lips could not help but curl into an icy smile. Surely Mu Chen, with his sovereign celestial body now obilerated, could not manage a comeback, even if he had godly powers!

As Qiu Taiying also came to this realization, his own thoughts started to run wild. I will have the last laugh in this battle. The seat of the 10th Lord in Daluo Territory will remain mine, Qiu Taiying's!

"Haha!"

As he thought of these things, even the usually calm and calculating Qiu Taiying could not stop himself from laughing. As his laughter became louder, his high-spirits could be felt by everyone.

No one dared rebuke him as he was reveling in his triumph, for they knew that he would soon be the 10th Lord of the Daluo Territory. At that time, there would only be four persons greater than him in the entire Daluo Territory. Finally, he would then be considered a true winner!

A blinding golden light filled the heavens and the earth. While Qiu Taiying was indulging in his own laughter, the lords looked at the golden light intently. Surprise was written all over their faces.

On the golden throne, Mandela's big eyes shone brightly. The Three Kings were slightly stupefied as well. At that very moment, a calm voice resonated throughout the heavens and the earth.

"Isn't it too soon for celebration?"

It was not a loud voice, but it rendered the entire plaza filled completely silent. Then, after the pause, a series of gasps and shouts exploded.

Mu Chen was not yet defeated?!

Disbelief was practically oozing from the eyes of the countless powerful individuals. Qiu Taiying's loud laughter was cut short at that moment. He looked at the ground, which was now permeating with golden light, with a sullen face, then said in a solemn tone, "You dare talk back at this moment? Do you think I won't kill you?!"

A surge of killing intent swirled in Qiu Taiying's eyes.Then, with a swift wave of his sleeves, he sent a devastating hurricane sweeping forth. It completely cleared away the golden light that had previously permeated the heavens and the earth.

As the golden light dissipated, the situation was laid bare for all to see. The uproar was immediately silenced, and many could not help but drop their jaws slightly.

"That's..."

Qiu Taiying's pupils immediately shrank. As he looked forward, he saw a pale Mu Chen standing on air in the sky. Four enormous black lotuses floated by quietly, surrounding Mu Chen.

The four black lotuses seemed to be devoid of any spiritual energy fluctuation. However, they did have countless ancient and obscure runic symbols carved on their petals. The runes shimmered and glittered, a horrifying wave spreading out from them.

"Is that a spiritual array?!"

Lord Asura and the others let out gasps of disbelief. The four black lotuses seemed extremely calm, but they could feel the strange spiritual

energy fluctuation.

It was a fluctuation belonging to a spiritual array. And, it was a rather high level spiritual array at that! This was known because the four black lotuses' hearts were even palpitating with fear.

Swoooooshhh...

Sharp gasps could be heard all over the heavens and the earth. All of the powerful individuals were extremely shocked by Mu Chen's surprise comeback.

No one would have imagined that Mu Chen not only had alarming capabilities, but was also an adept Spiritual Array Master! Now, it was clear that Mu Chen hid in his Sovereign Celestial Body not from cowardice, but so that he could silently lay out his spiritual array under the cover of his Sovereign Celestial Body!

"This spiritual array, consisting of four black lotuses, is nothing ordinary! Such an advanced spiritual array could only be arranged by a Earth Grade Spiritual Array Master!" a trembling voice said.

Not even Grade Five Sovereigns would dare to face the sharp edge of a spiritual array that had been laid out by a Earth Grade Spiritual Array Master!

"Inconceivable!"

With a darkened face, Qiu Taiying roared in anger. He had not expected this twist to happen in this fight. After all, he had thought his victory was already in the bag!

"I don't believe that you are an Earth Grade Spiritual Array Grandmaster, so your facade will not scare me!" Qiu Taiying bellowed harshly, his face twisting.

Mu Chen, with his pale face, calmly looked on as Qiu Taiying's face continued to tighten. Without another word, Mu Chen raised his slender finger, then lightly tapped downward on the air. A soft sound resonated within his heart.

Perfect Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array, activate!

Chapter 824: A Narrow Victory

Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array, activate.

When these words flowed softly through Mu Chen's heart, the four black lotuses floating in the sky slowly bloomed. A light as black as ink rippled forth, silently emitting a wave that moved people's hearts.

Anyone could feel the terrifying power hidden within the four black lotuses.

This was the final death blow from Mu Chen.

The perfect form of Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array consisted of four lotuses. In the past, Mu Chen had been limited by his own capabilities and was unable to manifest four black lotuses.

However, as Mu Chen broke through his power's limits again and again, his affinity in forming spiritual arrays had deepened. Although he rarely exposed his identity as a Spiritual Array Master after his arrival at Daluotian, he did not neglect his spiritual array cultivation. As he improved, his affinity in his spiritual array cultivation strengthened as well.

This fact was so deeply hidden by Mu Chen that even Nine Nether and Mandela did not know about it. Without a soul noticing it, Mu Chen's understanding of spiritual arrays reached rather astonishing heights.

The perfect form of Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array was a type of Earth Grade Spiritual Array. Spiritual Arrays of this level, especially the stronger ones, were feared even by Grade Five Sovereigns. Furthermore, Earth Grade Spiritual Arrays of higher levels could fend off Grade Six Sovereigns!

There were three grades of Spiritual Array Grandmasters: Heaven, Earth, and Man. Initially, Mu Chen was a high level Man Grade Spiritual Array Master. At that grade, the probability of successfully deploying a perfect Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array was extremely low. But as Mu Chen broke through the barrier of Grade Four Sovereign, his inner

spiritual energy was strengthened, and in turn, his accomplishment as a Spiritual Array Master was as well.

With the help of the marvelous Small Heart Demon State, he ultimately attained Earth Grade, and was able to successfully deploy the perfect form of Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array!

And when the four black lotuses appeared, Mu Chen could vividly feel the heavens and the earth suddenly fall silent. Around the Platform for Bestowing Lordship, innumerable powerful individuals dropped their jaws in awe. Even the lords' faces turned pale, evidently surprised.

They knew about Mu Chen's identity as a Spiritual Array Master as Mu Chen had laid out a spiritual array before their eyes previously. But at that time, Mu Chen's attainment level in spiritual arrays was not sufficient to warrant fear.

But now, looking at this spiritual array before them consisting of four black lotuses, even they could feel a sliver of danger, and their faces turned grim.

Mu Chen's capabilities as a Grade Four Sovereign may not have earned their caution. However, combining that with the fact that he was an Earth Grade Spiritual Array Grandmaster, the lords no longer dared to despise him.

"Impossible!"

At the very moment Qiu Taiying let out an alarming shout of anger, Mu Chen's slender finger had already tapped downward. His pale, young visage was as calm as water.

Ringggggg!

The four black lotuses blossomed and tilted towards the Lunar Celestial Body, and four lights as dark as ink gathered at the pistils. Suddenly, with a tremble, four pillars of light as black as ink shot out without a sound.

The surface of the black pillars of light was seemingly riddled with ancient patterns, mysterious and unpredictable.

As the pillars tore through space, they did so quietly, but wherever the pillars passed through, four dark, long crevasses lingered.

"Shield of Lunar!"

All the hairs on Qiu Taiying's body stood up. His face blackened, and he hastily formed a seal with both hands, releasing his inner spiritual energy in an explosion without restraint. Black runes started to shine on the Lunar Celestial Body's surface, forming a gigantic shield of black ice in front of it.

Swoooooshh!

The four black beams of light flew past in the air silently, crashing into the shield of black ice as countless nervous gazes watched.

Tsktsk!

At the moment they collided, it was silent. There was no loud bang or crashing, and immediately countless eyes widened, as the seemingly impenetrable shield did not even delay the pillars one bit.

The shield melted like ice that had come in contact with lava and was instantly penetrated.

Qiu Taiying looked at the four mysterious black beams that seemed to have pierced through the ice shield in an instant. His face was flushed with the color of fear. Before he could react, the horrifying black beams closed the space between them and hit the Lunar Celestial Body's huge figure ferociously as he looked on with a sliver of terror in his eyes.

The black light pillars projected into the Lunar Celestial Body. At the point of entry, a black floral pattern spread forth with an alarming speed, covering the entire Lunar Celestial Body extremely quickly.

As the black floral pattern grew, Qiu Taiying's face turned pale because he could feel the immense spiritual energy quickly dissipating wherever the patterns reached.

No matter how he tried to stop the dissipation, it just wouldn't stop.

How is this possible?! Qiu Taiying shouted in his heart, but it was

obviously a fruitless act. Within ten breaths, everyone could see the coldness around the Lunar Celestial Body thinning, and the huge figure was turning transparent, which was a sign that the spiritual energy could no longer support the sovereign celestial body.

As the spiritual energy of his sovereign celestial body dissipated, Qiu Taiying's visage turned increasingly pale. A sovereign celestial body was connected to its host, thus the dissipation of his sovereign celestial body's spiritual energy was a heavy injury to him as well.

Qiu Taiying could feel his body getting weaker and weaker. His expression darkened. It was clear that he did not expect Mu Chen's spiritual array attack to be so eerie. While the black beams did not seem to possess destructive abilities, the strange power that dissipated spiritual energy could very well be lethal.

Bang!

The Lunar Celestial Body turned more and more pale, until it could no longer sustain its manifestation. With a bang, it exploded into black spots of light that filled the air as countless eyes looked on.

Plurghhhhh.

When his sovereign celestial body was destroyed, Qiu Taiying convulsed violently and vomited a mouthful of blood. His spiritual energy fluctuation dropped to its lowest point.

In the air, Mu Chen looked nonchalantly at Qiu Taiying, whose face was as white as paper. Then, he formed another seal, turning the black lotuses to focus on Qiu Taiying, and the black light bloomed once more.

Seeing this, a fearful expression surfaced on Qiu Taiying's face. He had not expected Mu Chen to able to launch his frightening move again. Without his sovereign celestial body, he would suffer near lethal damage if that attack hit his exposed actual body. He bellowed with haste, "Mu Chen, do you have no mercy?!"

Mu Chen ignored him, and ethereal light gathered rapidly at the pistils of the lotuses.

"D*mnit, I surrender!" Qiu Taying acknowledged Mu Chen's intense killing intent, and shouted out of the fear in his heart.

Hearing Qiu Taiying's surprising surrender, the heavens and earth erupted in commotion. The innumerable powerful individuals stared at each other, shaking their heads while sighing. Who would've thought that Qiu Taiying, the one who had the ultimate advantage, would surrender voluntarily?

Mu Chen smiled faintly after hearing Qiu Taiying's words. His long black hair instantly reverted to its normal form, and his eyes, which were as dark as black holes, became normal as well. As Mu Chen terminated his Small Heart Demon State, his face was lively once again.

"Thank you for letting me win, Clan Leader Qiu." A smile surfaced on Mu Chen's pale face as he said those words with sarcasm. As he spoke, the four lotuses immediately vanished into thin air, and the expression in Mu Chen's eyes calmed. Everyone could tell that Mu Chen had run out of strength.

The merciless move to kill Qiu Taiying just now was just a facade!

Countless powerful individuals dropped their jaws, followed by strange smiles on their faces. They could not help pitying Qiu Taiying, who was trembling with rage. This fella had been tricked by Mu Chen.

Qiu Taiying's spiritual energy had waned, but he obviously still had fight in him. However, Mu Chen had totally depleted his reserves. If the battle continued, Mu Chen had no energy left and would have to surrender.

He had just become a Grade Four Sovereign after all, so his inner spiritual energy was unstable. It was only natural that he was no match for Qiu Taiying in an extended battle.

But no one expected the fatigued Mu Chen to frighten Qiu Taiying into surrender.

The innumerable powerful individuals stared at each other, then sighed while shaking their heads. This Mu Chen was too cunning!

Restrained laughter resonated throughout the plaza. Qiu Taiying stared

at Mu Chen as his whole body trembled. The anger in him almost exploded as he heard the humiliating laughter. He could imagine the scar on his reputation that would result if word of this incident spread around.

"Little trash, you should die!"

Qiu Taiying's eyes reddened, and the fury within him overwhelmed his logic. With a roar and clench of his fist, a pearly white jade scroll appeared in his hands. Sophisticated runes were carved on the jade scroll, and an extremely violent spiritual energy fluctuation seemed to be emanating from them faintly.

Swoooosh!

Qiu Taiying's face scrunched up and with a shake of his arms, the white jade scroll suddenly launched itself forward and exploded. A ferocious spiritual energy surged out like a storm, turning into a raging lion of spiritual energy, brandishing its claws and teeth. Moments later, it rushed toward Mu Chen in a killing frenzy.

An extremely terrifying spiritual energy fluctuation surrounded the raging lion. Even the lords' countenances fell as they witnessed the fluctuation.

"Seal of the Sky Lion?!" The Three Kings widened their eyes in shock, and their faces turned pale. The Seal of the Sky Lion was a technique exclusive to the Xuan Tian Hall. Only the most important core members of the Xuan Tian Hall could own that seal.

The humongous raging lion of spiritual energy leaped and landed right in front of Mu Chen. Under the frightening spiritual energy pressure, Mu Chen seemed as miniscule as an ant. The lion immediately opened its jaws and fiercely clamped down towards Mu Chen. Even a Grade Five Sovereign would surely be killed by this attack!

At that moment, Mu Chen could only look on powerlessly as the enormous mouth of the raging lion expanded rapidly before his eyes.

Bang!

However, when the lion's mouth was about to touch Mu Chen's body,

the shouts and screams vanished immediately, and the heavens and the earth were silent.

Mu Chen could feel that the rushing lion had been frozen in its tracks. His nervous heart was suddenly at ease, because he could see a petite figure slowly appearing before him.

Chapter 825: Bestowing Lordship

The space before Mu Chen shook. Then, like a ripple in a body of water, a petite figure slowly appeared. As Mu Chen saw this figure appearing, his tense body relaxed completely.

It was Mandela, who had manifested before Mu Chen. Her tiny face was cold, and her big golden eyes looked at the charging raging lion with indifference. She then extended her slender hand, before patting the lion softly.

Bam!

With a light pat, the raging tiger that even Grade Five Sovereigns would find troublesome shattered like a piece of fragile glass! However, Mandela's face was devoid of any expression.

As she formed a cup with her hand, the light spots gathered in her palm, transforming into a spiritual energy ball of light. The ferocious spiritual energy was as gentle as a sheep in her hands.

She played around a bit with the spiritual energy lump of light, then swiftly looked up. She looked at the pale Qiu Taiying cooly, then calmly asked, "Seal of the Sky Lion? Why do you possess such an item, which is exclusive to the Xuan Tian Hall?"

The commotion surrounding the plaza had instantly quieted down, as countless pairs of suspicious eyes locked onto Qiu Taiying. Since Xuan Tian Hall was considered an enemy of the Daluo Territory, how could one not doubt Qiu Taiying, when such an item, which was exclusive to the Xuan Tian Hall, was found in his possession?

Qiu Taiying looked at Mandela's expressionless visage, his body trembling involuntarily, his face as white as chalk. He painfully regretted using the Seal of the Sky Lion. He had not expected Mu Chen to anger him to such an extent, where he would lose his sanity!

"Lord Dominator, this Seal of Sky Lion was looted from a powerful Xuan Tian member, during a mission to kill him." Qiu Taiying lied through his

teeth.

"Is that right?" Mandela looked at Qiu Taiying with her big golden eyes. Feeling her knowing stare, the latter could feel his whole body grow cold.

"To activate a seal like this, it would require a special activation technique. Even within Xuan Tian Hall, only a handful of elders possess such a technique. From your words just now, I assume that you have killed an elder of the Xuan Tian Hall?"

Mandela's usually sweet and childish voice was now emanating fierce coldness into the air. "Would you mind telling me, which elder of the Xuan Tian Hall did you take down? Also, why would you hide such a meritorious feat? If you truly did kill a Xuan Tian elder, I will bestow upon you a lordship, despite your loss today."

Qiu Taiying trembled and broke into a cold sweat, almost wetting through his whole garment. He could feel the stare coming from Mandela's golden eyes. Her gaze alone filled his heart with an overwhelming terror.

At this crucial moment, even the heavens and the earth were quiet. All eyes were on Qiu Taiying, and the resulting pressure had made his sanity crumble in an instant.

"HARGHHHH!"

When Qiu Taiying could no longer take the pressure, he gave out an uncontrollable roar. His inner spiritual energy exploded forth violently, as he transformed into a stream of light, escaping the boundaries of Daluotian as fast as lightning.

Mandela looked at the escaping Qiu Taiying coldly. With a gentle wave of her hand, the entire surrounding space was frozen, causing Qiu Taiying's body to freeze as well. He was like a fly trapped in amber, unable to move a muscle...

Mandela then flicked her finger, sending Qiu Taiying flying onto the Platform for Bestowing Lordship, hi entire body now embedded in the ground. The spiritual energy within him had been completely shattered by

Mandela, rendering him immobile.

"Take him away. It seems like quite a number of Xuan Tian spies have infiltrated the Daluo Territory. I expect he will know some of them."

As Mandela spoke with a calm demeanor, an enforcement team emerged instantly, hoisting the beaten Qiu Taiying up and swiftly carrying him away.

The countless powerful people watched as Qiu Taiying was being brought away. Then, they turned their gazes towards Mandela, whose face was ice cold. No one dared utter a single word, as they could sense the anger raging within Mandela's heart.

Mandela looked at all the powerful individuals from above, her calm voice resonating in each and every ear, "The Battle of The Great Hunt is at hand, I believe you all understand what this implies. Even we, the Daluo Territory, the strongest force in the North Territory, might be divided and devoured in The Great Hunt. And, should the Daluo Territory ever cease to exist, you will all lose your positions and protection."

The hearts of the countless powerful individuals sank. In the fiercely competitive North Territory, it was so much more dangerous to cultivate one's power alone, without the protection of a powerful force.

"Therefore, to keep yourself protected, and to not become a prey that can be simply hunted down, show your loyalty to the people of the Daluo Territory! Then, I shall not treat you with any ill intention."

"Yes, Lord Dominator!" the powerful individuals replied in unison, their voices filled with respect, fear, and veneration. They knew that the reason they were able to stand firmly within the the North Territory and obtain resources for their cultivation, was thanks to the protection of the Earthly Sovereign Mandela.

Mu Chen observed this whole process quietly. His heart was also shaken by the power that super entities like Earthly Sovereigns possessed. Only these extremely powerful entities could protect an entire territory.

Mandela turned her golden eyes toward Mu Chen, then said, "As the

Ceremony of Bestowing Lordship has been concluded, I announce that, from this day onward, Mu Chen shall be the 10th Lord of the Daluo Territory."

Countless envious eyes instantly focused on Mu Chen. To become a lord of the Daluo Territory at his young age was no regular feat!

The lords nodded and sighed, while Lord Blood Hawk observed Mu Chen with jealousy and regret. He obviously had not expected Mu Chen's growth to be so rapid. If he had known, he would have been more careful to not have irked Mu Chen. After all, provoking a foe with such potential was an extremely foolish thing to do!

"As the 10th Lord, you will have the right to build your own force." Mandela looked at Mu Chen.

Generally, if one becomes a lord, they gain access to abundant resources from the Daluo Territory. With these resources, Mu Chen could build a force on par with the other Nine Lords. But, of course, time was required to develop such a force.

All eyes were on Mu Chen, especially those from Nine Nether Palace. They stared straight at Mu Chen, their eyes filled with worry and reluctance.

As Mu Chen builds his own force, he will have to leave Nine Nether Palace. He will also have to relinquish his position as the commander of Nine Nether Palace. No matter how good the relationship between his future force and Nine Nether Palace is, it will never be the same as being a part of the family.

After all, Mu Chen had only been in the Daluo Territory for a year, which all of Nine Nether Palace knew all too well. Hence, without Mu Chen having gone through life-and-death battles again and again, his position at Nine Nether Palace would not be exalted as rapidly.

"Hehe, you're awesome, Mu Chen! You've become a lord so soon!" Tang Rou was a naive girl, so she was laughing gently, feeling happy for Mu Chen.

Upon hearing this, Tang Bing could only roll her eyes at her scatterbrained younger sister. Her reaction was to cross her arms, as she was slightly puffed with anger.

She did not take a single look at the rather smug Mu Chen. She knew that losing Mu Chen was a great blow to Nine Nether Palace. But, she also understood that she couldn't blame Mu Chen, as the position of a lord is vastly superior to that of a commander.

Surprisingly, Nine Nether was the calmest of all. She did not worry, but looked at Mu Chen with a smile.

She had a deep relationship with Mu Chen, as the linking of their blood made it almost as if they shared a single body. As such, she did not mind if Mu Chen were to build his own force.

In the sky, Mu Chen was slightly stunned by Mandela's official proclamation. He quickly turned towards the people of Nine Nether Palace.

Looking at their gazes, he spoke with a smile. "I shall not build my own force, and I will stay in Nine Nether Palace. This should not affect the resources that I can access, right?"

He understood how complicated it would be to build a force after a year in Nine Nether Palace. If he put his effort in that direction, it would definitely affect his cultivation. So, it was obvious that he would not be so foolish as to ruin his own future for a force.

What's more, he was free to use any power within the Nine Nether Palace. Nine Nether would not stop him from doing whatever he pleased. So, he clearly did not have to leave.

Mu Chen decided with a clear reasoning, but many powerful individuals were shocked after hearing this. This was the first time that they had seen a person decline the opportunity to build a force. After all, having one's own force meant possession of a personal army!

The people of Nine Nether Palace were stupefied as well, but they broke into cheers after a short while. The whole of Nine Nether Palace looked at

Mu Chen with eagerness and excitement. They had not expected Mu Chen to give up his chance to create his own force, choosing instead to stay with Nine Nether Palace!

Tang Bing could not help but stare at Mu Chen in shock, her lips twitching slightly. "What an idiot."

Despite her words, she could not hide the joy in her eyes. At least this fella seems to have a good conscience, not making her efforts in collecting sovereign spiritual liquid droplets to help his cultivation come to naught!

Nine Nether lips also curled into a smile. This answer did not seem to surprise her. Still, her gaze toward Mu Chen seemed to have softened.

In the sky, Mandela looked at Mu Chen with a surprised expression. She then exclaimed with laughter, "Do what you want. Since you have given up your right to build a force, those resources shall be added to the share of Nine Nether Palace. So, of course, you will have the right to use them as you please."

Mu Chen nodded, swiftly moving closer to Mandela in order to speak to her in a whisper. "Compared to all those things, I am more concerned about my reward for this mission... hehe."

At the end of his sentence, Mu Chen smiled sheepishly, then rubbed his fingers in front of Mandela. The thing he desired most at that moment was, naturally, the Ten Divine Beast Blood Essence that he required for his cultivation of the Dragon-Phoenix Scripture.

Looking at the salivating Mu Chen, Mandela did not know whether to laugh or cry, so she simply rolled her eyes.

"Don't worry, you'll have your fair share."

Chapter 826: Battle Preparations

The grand Ceremony of Bestowing Lordship gradually ended with countless sighs. The many powerful individuals of Daluo Territory had exclaimed in surprise at the outcome. No one expected that Mu Chen, who was a mere Grade Three Sovereign, could emerge as the final winner.

The exclamations were filled with envy and excitement, but lacked the disdain that had previously been abundant. Mu Chen had displayed his true power through combat at the Platform for Bestowing Lordship, shaking the hearts of every powerful individual in Daluo Territory.

His capabilities of a Grade Four Sovereign combined with his identity as an Earth Grade Spiritual Array Grandmaster could rival those of a Grade Five Sovereign. Even within Daluo Territory, where powerful people were abundant, he could be considered among the cream of the crop.

As such, while many were envious of Mu Chen's conferment as the tenth Lord of Daluo Territory, none of them were dissatisfied. After all, might and capabilities were respected everywhere, and Mu Chen's display of strength had earned the acknowledgement and respect of the many powerful individuals of Daluo Territory.

He was no longer the newbie who had just arrived in Daluo Territory, and had just broken through into Sovereign-level.

Furthermore, the Nine Nether Palace backing Mu Chen could not be seen the same as before. They had been the weakest force among the forces of the Nine Lords, and as such, they were despised and neglected. But throughout this year, Nine Nether Palace rose in strength, and their reputation grew day by day. Most importantly, Nine Nether Palace was now the only force with two lords under the command of Daluo Territory!

In this case, Nine Nether Palace would also receive a double portion of resources compared to the forces of other lords. With the support of such substantial resources, it was clear as day that Nine Nether Palace would grow even stronger.

In the future, the strongest force under the command of Daluo Territory

could change, which was why provoking Mu Chen and Nine Nether Palace at that moment was the most foolish act possible.

Another winner in this Ceremony of Bestowing Lordship was the Duke of Tianluo City, Qin Zhong, who had received multiple benefits as well. Although he was not conferred a lordship, Mandela had promised to aid him in his breakthrough to Grade Five Sovereign due to his efforts in his conquest for Daluo Territory. What's more, if he could successfully attain Grade Five Sovereign, he would be confirmed as the eleventh lord of Daluo Territory after the Great Hunt.

This blessing had no doubt excited Qin Zhong greatly. The many other powerful individuals were eyeing him enviously, too. Mandela had also promised rewards to those with great merit in the Great Hunt. The worth of the rewards pricked the desire within the hearts of the lords, as well as all the powerful individuals beneath them. The morale of the entire Daluo Territory was uplifted, and their fighting spirit flew high.

Seeing this, Mu Chen could not stop himself from smacking his lips covertly. Mandela's tactic to drive her subjects was perfectly refined. She was indeed the only Ruler of Daluo Territory.

After the ceremony ended, Mu Chen rested calmly in Nine Nether palace, trying to stabilize the surging spiritual energy within right after he broke through to Grade Four Sovereign. Other than that, he used his remaining energy to train the Nine Nether Troop. As the Great Hunt drew nearer, Mu Chen could feel the tense and serious atmosphere around Daluo Territory.

Although Daluo Territory could be described as a top force in North Territory, forces just as strong had been obliterated in past Great Hunts, decimated and divided by other top forces. The powerful individuals under the destroyed forces could only escape or join other forces, and the losers would suffer scorn and jeering wherever they went.

As such, the Great Hunt was crucial to them. To avoid becoming a homeless cur, they had to fight with all their might to ensure the survival of Daluo Territory in the Great Hunt.

That's why the entire Daluo Territory was making preparation for war during that period. The atmosphere was heavy and grim.

Nine Nether Palace was no exception. Although Mu Chen had now been bestowed lordship, he was still in command of the Nine Nether Troop. Through the developments of the year, Nine Nether Troop's scale had expanded exponentially. On top of that, with the abundant resources for cultivation in Nine Nether Palace, the Nine Nether Troop could truly be considered a formidable army. Their strength was several times stronger than compared to a year ago.

According to Mu Chen's prediction, he would require strength from the Nine Nether Troop in the Great Hunt. Therefore, he could not be at ease and needed to improve his compatibility with this army as quickly as possible.

On an enormous training ground in Nine Nether Palace.

The Nine Nether Troop clad in black armor filled the grounds like waves of water. They were all sitting down cross-legged in silence. A dark fighting spirit oozed from their bodies and gathered in the air above them.

The fighting spirit moved like a gushing black sea, sending out indistinct roars, and the heavens and the earth seemed to be shaking slightly.

In front of them, on top of a statue of a giant lion, Mu Chen sat cross-legged. His eyes were closed as he formed a seal with both hands. A gush of spiritual energy shot out from his body and dove into the immense sea of the Nine Nether Troop's fighting spirit.

His spiritual energy swam freely within the cloud of fighting spirit. Mu Chen wanted to control that fighting spirit, so he needed to prevent any possible rejection from the Nine Nether Troop's fighting spirit.

Previously, Mu Chen's compatibility with the Nine Nether Troop was impeccable. However, after dealing with the Dragon-Phoenix Rift and the Ceremony of Bestowing Lordship, along with the expansion in scale of the Nine Nether Troop, the compatibility had obviously deteriorated. With time on their hands now, he clearly had to take this opportunity to improve their compatibility.

Mu Chen continued to cultivate and nurture his compatibility with the troop for about four hours. As he finally opened his eyes, he saw the Nine Nether Troop was like a black sea. Above them in the sky, their dense fighting spirit was like thick black clouds. Indistinct howling resonated like thunderbolts, terrifying people's hearts.

Perhaps the strength of a single Nine Nether Troop soldier would not be feared by Mu Chen, but their combined fighting spirit could even make Mu Chen feel pressured.

According to Mu Chen's prediction, as a Grade Four Sovereign, coupled with the fighting spirit of the Nine Nether Troop, even experienced Grade Five Sovereigns could be easily overpowered by him.

While Nine Nether Troop is strong, there's still an enormous difference between them and the Daluotian Army. Mu Chen gave out a sigh while he observed the Nine Nether Troop. Although the Nine Nether Troop was getting stronger, there was still a huge gap in power between them and the strongest army in Daluo Territory, the Daluotian Army.

However, due to the Daluotian Army's strength, Mu Chen understood that controlling their fighting spirit would be no easy feat. Mu Chen guessed that even the commander of the Daluotian Army, Huo Mei'er, would have difficulty controlling their fighting spirit perfectly.

The Daluotian Army consisted of several thousand Sovereign-level individuals. If their terrifying fighting spirit could be controlled, perhaps only Mandela and the Three Kings could suppress them.

"Perhaps it's time for these armies to do their part in the Great Hunt," Mu Chen talked to himself in a low voice. In the Great Hunt, the power of individuals would be insignificant, unless one were as powerful as the Three Kings. Otherwise, no one person could turn the tide of battle. As such, the combined power of armies was required to alter the outcome of a war.

We can't let our guard down in this Great Hunt.

Mu Chen looked up, and staring beyond the Nine Nether Palace, he could not help but sigh. He could feel the atmosphere change in Daluo

Territory as the Great Hunt drew nearer. The armies under the command of the lords trained daily, and their bloodthirsty aura could be felt even from afar. Even Nine Nether had secluded herself for training and cultivation, and the many affairs of Nine Nether Palace fell onto his shoulders. Thankfully, Tang Bing, the "housekeeper," came to the rescue. If not for her help, Mu Chen would definitely have thought of escaping.

But it could be seen from this situation how cruel the Great Hunt would be. Even Daluo Territory was riddled with danger, as no one could guarantee the existence of Daluo Territory within the North Territory after the Great Hunt.

At the thought of this, Mu Chen's heart sank heavily. Although he had offended quite a number of people in Daluo Territory within the past year, he did receive their protection after all, which led to his speedy improvement in capabilities. As such, he was grateful to Daluo Territory.

Not to mention that Mandela was the Dominator of Daluo Territory. Mu Chen had a rather good feeling toward this little queen, who was absolutely adorable but inwardly violent. After all, she really had helped Mu Chen a lot throughout the year. Most importantly, of course, was that Mu Chen did not feel like he was treated as a subject by Mandela. Their relationship had exceeded their respective statuses to a certain extent.

So if Daluo Territory was destroyed and divided in the upcoming Great Hunt, it would be a hard pill for Mu Chen to swallow.

It looks like I have to do my very best. Mu Chen laughed bitterly. Considering his terrible relationship with Xuan Tian Hall, Liu Tiandao would not let him go lightly if Daluo Territory disappeared.

Mu Chen shook his head, then with a wave of his hand, he was about to order the Nine Nether Troop to continue their training.

Buzzzz.

But as his palm came down, he saw the space before him fluctuate. A dusty, petite figure emerged from the fluctuating space. The figure waved her arm, and ten alabaster jars flew towards Mu Chen.

As the alabaster jars flew, her childish voice was filled with loathing and echoed as she said, "Here, take your ten Divine Beast Blood Essences. Darnit, to gather them all for you, I had to go to every big auction in North Territory!"

Chapter 827: Spiritual Deity Liquid

As the alabaster jars were flying directly towards Mu Chen, he quickly caught them with his hands. He stared at the Blood Essence that was contained inside the alabaster jars. There were several different colors represented, but without exception, all of them contained extremely pure and potent spiritual power. This made Mu Chen lost in thought for a moment, before he lifted up his head once more.

Looking at the twisted space in front of him, Mandela was standing there in mid-air. She currently was looking a little travel-strained. When she noticed Mu Chen's gaze upon her, she twitched her small lips snappily.

Mu Chen, who was now holding those 10 alabaster jars, was unable to contain his ecstasy. He could not help but ask, "Are these jars of the Divine Beast Blood Essence? Did you get them from the auction site?"

"Duh, would you rather have me travel around and find these divine beasts, then kill them one by one? Were you thinking that these divine beasts were some stray dogs and cats on the streets that could be killed with a single stomp?"

Mandela rolled her eyes at Mu Chen, then said, "To get the Divine Beast Blood Essence, I had to use a lot of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid droplets. Furthermore, those sellers at the auction only sold them to me at such a discounted price, because I am the Dominator of Daluo. Anyone else could not have bought them, even with a sufficient amount of Sovereign Spiritual Liquid droplets."

Hearing this, Mu Chen nodded his head. He naturally understood that the Divine Beast Blood Essence he required was not simple to obtain at all, as even a few of the Divine Beasts among them was ranked quite high in the Beast Record. Hence, the Divine Beast's Blood Essence of this grade was generally considered as being extremely rare, making it understandably expensive. So, collecting any amount of such a treasure was immensely difficult!

Those sellers at the auction only sold the Divine Beasts Blood Essence to Mandela because she was the Earthly Sovereign of this land. If Mu Chen been the one at the auction, he might not have been able to buy a single bit!.

"Thank you very much, Mandela."

Mu Chen thanked her quite sincerely. To complete this mission, he asked Mandela to collect the Divine Beasts' Blood Essence for him. This situation alone was suspiciously similar to blackmailing, since, to some extent, as a citizen of the Daluo Territory, he should be solving problems for Mandela, not putting forward his own conditions to her!

However, Mandela did not seem to mind this at all. Instead, she happily used her energy and fortune to search for the Divine Beast Blood Essence on his behalf. This could be guessed from Mandela's travel-strained appearance and her recent absence. During this absence, she might have gone to every big auction site within the entire North Territory in search of the Divine Beast Blood Essence! Her actions had, without a doubt, made Mu Chen feel quite touched.

Mandela's little face was originally unhappy, due to her constant running around these past few days. However, upon hearing Mu Chen's sincere gratitude, her facial expression became a little unnatural.

In the Daluo Territory, everyone treated her with the utmost respect, due to her identity. Hence, their normal conversations could never be like how Mu Chen treated her. When Mu Chen talked with her, he did not think of her as the Dominator of Daluo Territory, but as a simple friend.

This intimacy made her feel at ease. In fact, maybe it was precisely because of this feeling that she was willing to overlook some of Mu Chen's offenses towards her.

Regardless, Mandela was full of pride, so she obviously would never show any other emotion at this moment. When her small face was properly straightened, she said in a businesslike tone, "As a Dominator, I naturally keep my word. You have helped me get rid of this snake in the grass, Qui Taiyin. These are your rewards for that."

Mu Chen smiled, not intending to argue with the prideful Dominator. He asked, "Then, what happened to the problem regarding Qiu Taiyin?"

Speaking of this, her small face sank a little. "As I expected, Tian Xuan Hall had embedded quite a number of spies in the Daluo Territory. Qiu Taiyin was only one of them. He spilled a list of them to us, so we just had to follow the clues to get rid of these suspicious guys as soon as possible.

Mu Chen just nodded, knowing that he could not interfere this matter. Plus, with Mandela's capability, she should be able to solve this problem perfectly by herself.

Mu Chen looked towards Mandela and asked, "There is still about two months before The Great Hunt. Can you explain The Great Hunt to me? Currently, I am a Daluo Territory citizen, so I would like to have a hand in this if possible."

Although he had heard of The Great Hunt so many times, he still do not understand the specific details of it.

Mandela took a glance at Mu Chen, then stretched her back lazily. Moving to sit next to Mu Chen, she said, "There is actually not much to say. The Great Hunt was just a cruel war of the survival of the fittest. Although the North Territory had a lot of top forces, in actuality, this situation was only like a pack of wolves coexisting, instead of having a tiger to lead groups of beasts."

"And The Great Hunt happened because some wolves wanted to be a tiger?" Mu Chen asked, his eyes lighting up.

"In this world, the thing that most definitely is not lacking is ambition," Mandela said dully. "Only after unifying the North Territory, can one can possibly stand out and then become an overlord in The Great Thousand World."

"This is the unwritten rule of the North Territory. It is unknown when it was handed down. However, once the rule had been made, there was no one who could break it, because anyone that broke the law would automatically be deemed an enemy of all the other forces."

She continued her explanation. "And so, The Great Hunt has been passed down each generation. Yet, even until now, there has still been no appearance of a tiger! However, I do think that a tiger might appear this time."

Mu Chen, who was a little shocked by her last words, stared at Mandela and asked, "Why?"

"Do you know the location of The Great Hunt?" Mandela asked, tilting her head.

Mu Chen was startled a little, then quickly nodded his head, answering, "Meteorfall Battlefield?"

Meteorfall Battlefield was a forbidden land within the North Territory. It was said that, in the Primordial Age, when the tribes of the outer lands were invading The Great Thousand World, they had fought until they reached the edge of the North Territory. It was there, at that place, that an armageddon like war was unleashed upon this supercontinent!

Currently, this Meteorfall Battlefield was one of the locations of that ancient war. At the time, there were countless powerful people that had fallen there. Hence, people later named this place Meteorfall Battlefield. The name signified the cruel sacrifices of the time.

The Meteorfall Battlefield also had quite a loud reputation, which attracted a lot of powerful and wealthy people to swarm into the area. However, among those who tried to treasure hunt among that wealth in the Meteorfall Battlefield, only few made it out alive at the end.

This was because there were too many powerful people fallen in the Meteorfall Battlefield, making the spiritual power there brew violently, like an erupting volcano, which occasionally erupts a Spiritual Energy Windstorm, such that even the Earthly Sovereign grade powerful people feared it very much! Therefore, with more and more treasure hunters going in, without coming back out, the Meteorfall Battlefield had become an infamously bloody and forbidden land.

"Correct, it is the Meteorfall Battlefield." Mandela slowly nodded her head and said, "In ancient times, there were once some Earthly Sovereign

grade powerful people that had fallen there, and the ultimate goal of The Great Hunt is connected to these fallen Earthly Sovereigns."

Mu Chen froze.

"Do you know about the Spiritual Deity Liquid?" Mandela asked once again.

Mu Chen, who was stunned, shook his head.

When an Earthly Sovereign powerful person has fallen, his Sovereign Sea will weather as time passes. When his Sovereign Sea has weathered to its end, it will be refined into Spiritual Deity Liquid, making it the last essence of the Earthly Sovereign powerful person." Mandela lightly licked her small lips. As she was speaking about the Spiritual Deity Liquid, her golden eyes had a glimpse of thirst and desire.

"This type of Spiritual Deity Liquid is extremely beneficial to those of us who have reached the Earthly Sovereign grade. However, the Spiritual Energy Windstorm that erupts in the Meteorfall Battlefield is extremely scary. Only at special times will the storm will weaken, and it is in this period of time that The Great Hunt is held."

"The Divine Pavilion has experienced The Great Hunt five times, and they survived the war! Therefore, the Divine Pavilion's ruler can now be considered as the person who has obtained the most Spiritual Deity Liquid among all the the rulers of all the top forces in the North Territory. According to what I know, that guy's level is currently at the peak of Lower Earthly Sovereign grade. He may even have already reached the Upper Earthly Sovereign grade. If he successfully obtains the Spiritual Deity Liquid once again, it is very likely that he will complete his breakthrough to advance to Upper Earthly Sovereign grade. "

She took a deep breath, before continuing. "If not for him, the rulers of Netherworld Palace and other top forces might also have such a possibility..."

With a heavy face, Mandela added, "If anyone had the power of Upper Earthly Sovereign, then almost nobody from the North Territory could stop him. In the future, that said person would become a tiger, thus

unifying the North Territory."

"Upper Earthly Sovereign?" Mu Chen frowned, as this level of grade was both distant and unfamiliar to him.

Mandela looked at Mu Chen helplessly, then explained, "Earthly Sovereigns naturally also have the classification of realms. We split them into three realms -- Lower Earthly Sovereign, Upper Earthly Sovereign, and Complete Earthly Sovereign. In these three realms, there is a dreadful distance between each level, Currently, all the rulers of the top forces in the North Territory are at the level of Lower Earthly Sovereign. Once the ruler of the Divine Pavilion completes his breakthrough, with the help of The Great Hunt this time, then it will be very troublesome."

Mu Chen's eyes became dignified. So, this was the world of the Earthly Sovereigns! He just had never thought that, between the realms of the Earthly Sovereigns, there was such an unexpectedly dreadful difference.

From Mandela's words, he could also understood how dangerously attractive was the Spiritual Deity Liquid to Earthly Sovereigns. The source of the cruel war, The Great Hunt, might just be the Spiritual Deity Liquid entirely!

I wonder which level of Earthly Sovereign Luo Li's grandfather is at?

Mu Chen suddenly had this thought, remembering Luo Tianshen, whom he had met at the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. However, based on his estimation, Luo Tianshen might just be even a little stronger than Mandela.

"The Great Hunt, this time, might just be the most soul-stirring one in history." Mandela smiled softly.

Lifting up her small face, her large, golden eyes did not show a single sign of fear. Instead, there was only a boiling fighting spirit glowing within them. Then, looking at the sky in the distance, her small lips curled.

"Let us see, who can breakthrough in the Great Hunt this time!"

Chapter 828: Godly Blood Quenching Body

On top of the stone lion in that training ground, Mu Chen could not help but shudder when he looked at Mandela. She was under the sun, and her eyes were currently filled with the fighting spirit of a battle maniac.

Never would he have thought that this Dominator with the appearance of a lolita actually had some crazy genes. Where the other forces shunned the Great Hunt, Mandela welcomed it like a hunting ground she was wishing for.

However, the other top forces were not little lambs who could be dealt with easily. Their strong existence was so malicious that they could make the whole North Territory tremble with their actions.

Mu Chen twisted his mouth. Although the Great Hunt was not here yet, he could already faintly sense a thick and bloody smell. In the Great Hunt this time, which of the top forces would be divided and conquered by other top forces...?

No matter which party came out on top, the result would definitely cause a large amount of turmoil in the North Territory. This was because the territory and resources of any top forces were enough to make one green with envy.

The frantic enthusiasm in Mandela's eyes was abruptly contained, however. Her golden eyes were looking towards Mu Chen when without warning, she smiled and asked, "Do you know the Ancient Celestial Palace?"

Suddenly hearing this name, Mu Chen's body quivered, and he quickly lifted his head. Feeling a little wild with joy, he looked at Mandela while his heart rate increased nonstop.

His original goal when he followed Nine Nether to the Tianluo Continent was exactly the Ancient Celestial Palace!

This was because in the Ancient Celestial Palace, there were Immortal

Pages which could make his Great Solar Undying Body evolve again!

"Seems like the reason you came to Tianluo Continent was because of the Ancient Celestial Palace." Mandela smiled. She glanced at Mu Chen and added, "Don't fuss, you have the Great Solar Undying Body, so logically you should have some information about this already. And the Ancient Celestial Palace does have what you wish for."

Mu Chen's eyes were suddenly filled with excitement, and even his breathing was rapid. He could finally confirm this information for the first time. Although he was still not clear about what exactly the Ancient Celestial Palace was, this answer confirmed that the thing he wished for was indeed on the Tianluo Continent.

Looking at Mandela, Mu Chen could not help but ask, "Do you know where the Ancient Celestial Palace is?"

Mandela's little red lips curved, and she said, "The Ancient Celestial Palace is indeed hidden on the Tianluo Continent, but nobody knows where it is. Based on my speculation, it should be an independant space that was sealed using big means."

"Even those of you who have reached Earthly Sovereign grade cannot detect it?" Mu Chen asked and frowned.

Giving him a big eye roll, Mandela replied, "The Ancient Celestial Palace, even at the Primordial Age, was a well-known force in the Great Thousand World, and the master of the palace was an invincible master. Do you think the seal laid by such powerful person before his fall could be detected by mere Earthly Sovereigns?"

Mu Chen laughed embarrassingly while feeling awe inside.There is always someone who is better in this world!

"Although we're unable to detect the Ancient Celestial Palace's existence, in the Meteorfall Battlefield there was once a powerful person from a palace in the Primordial Age who fell right there. I think some information related to the Ancient Celestial Palace could be found there."

Mu Chen nodded. Although this information was hardly discernible, it

was still information. At least this would be better than trying to find the palace cluelessly. His main goal in coming to the Tianluo Continent was to obtain another Immortal Page.

This was because Mu Chen knew that if he really wanted to start on a journey to become a matchless master, the Immortal Pages would surely provide an immense amount of support.

The day he could evolve his Great Solar Undying Body into the Primordial Immortal Body, he would actually have what it takes to become a renowned person in the Great Thousand World.

When that time came, whether it was the Luo God Clan or the Mysterious Clan his mother belonged to, he would never ever fear them again!

"Seems like I really have to go to this Meteorfall Battlefield," Mu Chen muttered to himself. Whether or not he could obtain the information about the Ancient Celestial Palace in the end, he still had to give it a try in order to obtain the Primordial Immortal Body.

In the remaining two months, as Mu Chen was training the Nine Nether Troop, he also made the best use of his time for cultivation. The Great Hunt would involve the top forces in the whole North Territory, so the scale of this war would certainly reach an extremely terrifying level.

Although Mu Chen was already considered as having a high level of strength in Daluo Territory, he understood that his strength was not nearly enough in a war of the magnitude of the Great Hunt.

Once the war had begun, even Mandela might not be able to take care of everyone. Therefore, he must try his best to raise his power level before the Great Hunt started.

Seeing as he just broke through to Grade Four Sovereign a short time ago, the spiritual energy in his body had just begun to stabilize. Apparently, it was not suitable to relentlessly impact his spiritual energy again, hence another method was required to raise his power level.

For example, cultivating the Dragon-Phoenix Scripture.

Deep area of Nine Nether Palace.

Mu Chen sat down cross-legged next to an empty stone pool. Staring at the stone pool, ten alabaster jars appeared in front of him with a flick of his finger. There were light patterns glowing on the surface of the alabaster jars. These were a simple seal that was used to seal the Divine Beast Blood Essences inside. Otherwise, their raging spiritual power would instantly erupt.

Staring at these ten alabaster jars, his face seemed a little down. Although he obtained the legendary Dragon-Phoenix Body in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift, he clearly understood that the Dragon-Phoenix Body was just an initial stage. This could only make his body became a little stronger, and to reach the level of the real dragon real phoenix, he had to go through a very hard cultivation.

And right now was the first step.

Mu Chen took off his clothes, revealing a body that was not strong, however, anyone could tell there was terrifying power inside the slender body. There were real dragon real phoenix symbols on his chest and back.

Mu Chen lowered his head, looked at the real dragon real phoenix symbols, and touched them gently with his palm. Those were not simply painted symbols. They gave off a strange feeling of being alive.

From the Dragon-Phoenix Scripture, cultivating the Dragon-Phoenix Body was separately into three stages. The first stage was activating the real spirit, the second was shape forming, and the third stage was the realization of the dragon and phoenix.

The two symbols on Mu Chen's chest and back should be called the real dragon real phoenix's spirit. This was because the symbols contained a trace of the real dragon real phoenix's remaining real spirits.

In this stage, a lot of Divine Beast Blood Essence was needed to activate the real dragon real phoenix's spirits, subsequently giving Mu Chen a stronger power.

When the real dragon real phoenix's spirits were activated completely,

the "Shape Formation Stage" could be reached. Reaching this step, the real dragon real phoenix symbol could then be removed from the shackles of the physical body, moreover, it awakened the power belonging to the real dragon real phoenix.

And the third stage... Just looking at the name alone, one could guess what it meant.

What Mu Chen wanted right now was the first stage, "Activation of real spirit."

Hoo...

Mu Chen gently let out a breath. He had already stopped staring at the symbols. Without hesitation, he flicked his finger, and a Spiritual Light shot out, instantly breaking an alabaster jar.

Crash.

With the breaking of the alabaster jar, a few drops of dark red, thick Blood Essence instantly fell from the sky. Just as their speed increased, the sound of splashing waves rang out.

The Blood Essence dropped into the huge stone pool. The Blood Essence began to expand at a terrifying speed, and in a short time, the Blood Essence became a pool of thrashing blood rippling inside the stone pool.

A raging spiritual energy and thick blood smell suddenly floated up from the pool. The Blood Essence was certainly extraordinarily overbearing. Once it was spilled, it abruptly corroded the stone pool. Fortunately, Mu Chen had prepared for this earlier. The stone pool was made with special material and was not disintegrated by the corrosion of the Blood Essence.

"It was indeed the Blood Essence of the Primordial Hydra..."

Looking at the thrashing blood pool, he could not help but sigh. A few drops of Blood Essence was enough to become a whole pool of blood. This Primordial Hydra indeed deserved its ranking on the list of the Divine Beasts.

The Blood Essence of this Divine Beast did not experience any

refinement, therefore, it was full of offensive power just as Mu Chen required. Only such a primitive Divine Beast's Blood Essence could activate the real dragon real phoenix's spirits.

However, the process was extremely painful.

Mu Chen looked at the thrashing blood pool as his fist slowly clenched. Next, without any hesitation, he jumped directly into the blood red pool.

Plop!

Fresh blood splashed outwards as Mu Chen sat down cross-legged in the blood pool and formed a seal with his both hands. Suddenly, the blood pool thrashed, forming a blood red whirlpool, and the source of the whirlpool was Mu Chen.

Hiss.

It was as if countless hissing sounds fizzed in the blood pool. As the blood was thrashing, it unexpectedly turned into many miniature blood-red hydras that ferociously bit Mu Chen's body.

Mu Chen trembled vigorously, and the intense, surging pain made his face turn pale.

However, the intense pain was not enough to break Mu Chen down. Instead, he took a deep breath and changed his seals to begin the activation of the Dragon-Phoenix Scripture.

As the Dragon-Phoenix Scripture was activating, the symbols on Mu Chen's chest and back also began to glow with Spiritual Light. It seemed that the low-pitched cries of a dragon and phoenix rang out, and then the miniature hydras were instantly shattered into lines of blood flowing down from Mu Chen's skin before ultimately being devoured by the real dragon real phoenix symbols.

Although the Blood Essence of the Primordial Hydra was overbearing, compared to the real dragon real phoenix's spirits, it was clearly at a lower tier.

However, Mu Chen knew that the Godly Blood Quenching Body had just

begun.

Chapter 829: Humanoid Divine Beast

Splash...

Within the stone pool, blood red water kept overturning, forming countless tiny Nine-Headed Snakes. Then, they lashed their jaws toward Mu Chen, revealing their extremely offensive natures.

Upon being faced with this reaction from the Nine-Headed Snake Blood Essence, the real dragon real phoenix symbol on Mu Chen's body let out a clear cry of a dragon and a phoenix, as if being provoked. Then, the voice shattered all of the Nine-Headed Snakes into pieces, which were then absorbed into the Dragon-Phoenix symbols.

As the Nine-Headed Snake Blood Essence gushed out continuously, the Dragon-Phoenix symbols on Mu Chen's chest and back seemed to be gradually turning brighter. But, at that very moment, an inexplicable sharp pain broke out inside Mu Chen's body.

The sharp pain caused Mu Chen's face to turn pale instantly. This was due to the Nine-Headed Snake's having rushed into his body, causing destruction inside his body without restraint.

The blood essence from this type of Divine Beast was particularly ruthless and offensive in nature. However, Mu Chen could not forcefully contain it, as it would also affect the activation of the true spirit. If he were to fail, he would not be able to shamelessly ask Mandela to gather it for him again.

"Dang!" Mu Chen could not resist cursing. If this continued, he was afraid that the Nine-Headed Snake Blood Essence would make a mess inside his body. Only at that very moment did he fully understand how tricky it was to cultivate the Dragon-Phoenix Scripture.

But, he had just started refining the first Divine Beasts' Blood Essence! If he could not withstand this, how would he be able to bear the torture of the remaining nine Divine Beasts' Blood Essence?

Mu Chen frowned, his gaze sparkling rapidly, as he thought of ways to

overcome this obstacle. His gaze continued to shine, as he made a cold smile with the corner of his mouth.

Nine-Headed Snake Blood Essence, you think you are fierce, huh? But, alas, my body has something even fiercer inside it!

Mu Chen slightly closed his eyes. Then, with an intention from his mind, his inner body radiated forth dark golden rays of light. Within his blood vessels, strands of dark golden light swept through. Then, the cries of a dragon and a phoenix resonated within his entire body. This was the Dragon-Phoenix Blood Essence!

Mu Chen's body absorbed a large amount of the Dragon-Phoenix Blood Essence, allowing it to even cultivate the Dragon-Phoenix Body! Therefore, his body now also contained a slight presence of a real dragon and a real phoenix.

Although the ranking of this primordial Nine-Headed Snake on the Divine Beast's Record was not considered as being low, it was obviously of a class lower than the sovereign Divine Beasts of a real dragon and a real phoenix, which ranked at the top.

Therefore, when the golden light started spreading out, and the cries of the dragon and phoenix echoed, the Nine-Headed Snake Blood Essence, which was still wreaking havoc in Mu Chen's internal body, reacted, just as if it was up against an overbearing enemy. Wherever the golden rays enveloped, the Nine-Headed Snake Blood Essence immediately dispersed. Finally, under the pursuit of Mu Chen, they are were all absorbed by the Dragon-Phoenix Symbols that were located at his chest and back.

With the help of the Dragon-Phoenix Blood Essence, Mu Chen's condition started to improve greatly. He started recovering his focus, allowing him to absorb the Nine-Headed Snake's blood essence with the best of his abilities.

This absorption process continued for as long as four days. Within these four days, Mu Chen was able to faintly sense that there was something slowly reviving within the blood and muscles of his chest and back.

Then, in the evening of the fourth day, the water in the stone pool

gradually dried up. When the pool was completely exhausted, Mu Chen flicked his fingers. This time, two bottles broke into pieces at the same time, releasing a few drops of blood essence. It then became a flowing stream of blood water that covered both the stone pool and Mu Chen.

Mu Chen sat at the bottom of the stone pool cross-legged, every inch of his body still. The Dragon-Phoenix symbols at his chest and back were getting brighter. The original symbols started to look alive, as more and more of the Divine Beasts Blood Essence poured out. Then, strands of blood rays slowly intertwined on the surface of Mu Chen's body, covering it bit by bit.

In the following half month, Mu Chen never left the stone pool. As more and more Divine Beast Blood Essence was dropped, the stench of blood formed blood rays that shot up to the sky, causing much turmoil within the Nine Nether Palace.

This turmoil even alarmed Nine Nether, who was in seclusion. She quickly rushed over to the stone pool. After a series of observations, which showed that Mu Chen did not face any sort of accident or danger, she let out a breath of relief, then ordered the region to be sealed off.

This guy is too reckless.

Nine Nether stood outside the stone pool, looking at Mu Chen, who was cultivating at the bottom of the pool. She shook her head helplessly.

With this sort of ruckus, resulting from his cultivation, how could he not have anyone guarding his surroundings? What if something were to happen to him?

Although Nine Nether blamed Mu Chen, she stopped her cultivation temporarily, immediately sitting down with her legs crossed. She was fully prepared to stay here to protect Mu Chen.

When Nine Nether sat down, only then did she realize the extremity of the violent spiritual energy that was contained within the blood water in the stone pool. Her expression changed, revealing the surprise in her beautiful eyes.

What is this guy cultivating that requires so many types of Divine Beast Blood Essence?

Nine Nether's heart trembled a bit, and her expression became more serious. Although the Divine Beasts Blood Essence had the function of strengthening one's body, it was still quite overbearing, making it difficult to be absorbed. Moreover, Mu Chen intended to absorb 10 types of the Divine Beasts Blood Essence simultaneously. Once the types of the Divine Beasts Blood Essence started rejecting each other, then there would definitely be trouble.

However, her worries did not last long, as she could faintly hear the cries of a dragon and phoenix coming from Mu Chen's body. Her heart began to tremble again.

As part of the Nine Netherbird Clan, especially now that she had evolved into the Nine Netherworld Bird, this sort of clan could be considered as a prominent clan, even among the Divine Beasts. Also, within the body of the Nine Netherworld Bird, flows the blood of the Undying Bird.

The Undying Bird could also be categorized under the Phoenix Clan to a certain extent. In fact, it was considered as being the most prominent existence in the Phoenix Clan. But, because it was rarely seen, its reputation did not exceed that of the real phoenix.

Thus, when Nine Nether sensed the pressure of a real phoenix that was contained within Mu Chen's body, her charming face became a little peculiar. This boy's internal body was really not lacking anything!

Nine Nether shook her head helplessly. Then, she temporarily stopped overthinking everything so much, focusing on calming her mind and waiting for Mu Chen to finish his cultivation.

However, this wait lasted for an entire month...

In the inner part of the Nine Nether Palace, the sky and the earth were painted with a scarlet red. Looking at it from afar, it seemed as though there was fire burning in the clouds, displaying an exceptionally spectacular sight.

However, Nine Nether was not presently in the mood to pay attention to this scenery. Instead, she was looking at the stone pool with a frantic gaze, because there were various howling and roaring sounds coming from within it.

The blood pool kept seething. At the bottom of the blood pool, Mu Chen sat with his legs crossed. At this moment, numerous giant blood shadows formed around his body, howling at him crazily.

The blood shadows were actually formed from the Divine Beasts' blood essences that Mu Chen had absorbed and refined. The blood essence contained traces of their individual wills.

At first, Mu Chen was able to suppress them with help from the Dragon-Phoenix Pressure. However, as Mu Chen absorbed more and more Divine Beasts' blood essence, it started to join forces to defy the Dragon-Phoenix Pressure. This was because, the Essences felt that, if they did not resist now, then the remnants of their wills might end up being destroyed, resulting in their being completely absorbed and refined.

It must be noted that the wills of these Divine Beasts Essences were a hassle to deal with. When they united together in going against Mu Chen, even the Dragon-Phoenix Pressure within his body found it difficult to prevail. That was why, at the very end, he could not complete the last stage of his cultivation.

Since I already cultivated up to this stage, how could I let you all ruin my efforts?!

Mu Chen gripped both of his fists tightly, took a deep breath, then steeled his resolve.

Since you all want to thwart me, I will give you the chance!

Once he had this intention, the golden rays of light that were lingering around his body immediately started to disperse. Without the obstruction of the golden rays of light, the 10 light beams of the Divine Beasts immediately howled sinisterly, then plunged into Mu Chen's body. The blood rays immediately spread outwards from Mu Chen's body, before spreading also throughout his whole body.

When Nine Nether saw this scene, her charming face immediately changed. She had figured that absorbing so many Divine Beasts' blood essences would end only in trouble.

Roar!

While Nine Nether was secretly worried, Mu Chen braced himself. He tried his best to directly activate the power of the Dragon-Phoenix Body and the Dragon-Phoenix Blood Essence that were hidden within his blood and flesh.

Majestic dark golden rays of light penetrated through his blood and muscles, mercilessly suppressing the blood light. The two light rays were corroding one another violently within Mu Chen's body.

However, since it was in Mu Chen's body, when Mu Chen thoroughly released his Dragon-Phoenix Body and Dragon-Phoenix Blood Essence, the blood light that was formed by the 10 divine beasts started to retreat, bit by bit.

Of course, this outcome had directly turned the insides of Mu Chen's body into a battlefield. If it wasn't for the Dragon-phoenix Body that Mu Chen had cultivated, which had increased his toughness, the shockwave produced from the collision would have torn his blood and muscles apart.

Swallow it all!

Mu Chen's face at that moment had a sinister expression on it, due to the great pain he was suffering. But, there was not the slightest hint of hesitation in his gaze. He bellowed loudly in his heart, causing the golden ray to suddenly rush out.

The golden light rushed along majestically, while sounding the intimidating cry of a dragon and a phoenix. Under such impacts, the blood light formed by the 10 Divine Beasts was shattered into pieces.

During that time, all of the blood rays were being absorbed by the Dragon-Phoenix Symbols that were located at Mu Chen's chest and back. Mu Chen's eyes suddenly opened.

He could feel something vibrating in his blood and muscles, directly at

his chest and back. Within his blood and muscles, it felt as though something had quietly cracked into pieces, awakening after a long incubation.

Roar!

Mu Chen's figure charged out violently, howling towards the sky. The howl sounded like a dragon's and a phoenix's. A big golden ray of light rushed out from his body. It even tore the clouds in the sky apart!

Nine Nether raised her head to look at the figure, which was currently encompassed within the golden light. At that moment, she faintly felt a slight pressure enveloping her. This was not a spiritual energy pressure, but a pressure that would only be naturally released when two Divine Beasts of similar strengths met each other.

She felt as if the current Mu Chen was a Humanoid Divine Beast!

Chapter 830: Meteorfall Alchemy

The golden light between heaven and earth gradually dispersed. When the golden light had completely disappeared, the pressure emanating from Mu Chen's body totally vanished as well. When he looked down at his chest, he could not help but be astonished.

Visible on his chest was a mini-sized real dragon that swam around under Mu Chen's skin. The dragon looked so real, like it was a living thing. It really looked as if there were a real dragon contained within Mu Chen's body.

Mu Chen's face showed surprise, as he never thought that the original dragon symbol would evolve into this state upon activation. He could even faintly sense that this mini real dragon contained a tremendous power within it.

His gaze softened as he formed a vague intention toward the mini real dragon. The mini real dragon then actually followed his intention and quickly swam to his fist. With his five fingers gripped tightly, he punched out.

Roar!

When the fist punched out, the whole heaven and earth resonated with a loud dragon's cry. The space ahead was directly shattered into obvious cracks by Mu Chen's extremely casual punch.

Sss.

When Mu Chen saw this, he couldn't resist lightly breathing in a mouth of cool air. The punch was again casual, and he merely used the mini dragon slightly. Never could he have thought that it would release such a shocking destructive force.

After activating the Dragon-Phoenix Real Spirit, he had become much more powerful than before.

Shua.

Nine Nether's figure appeared in front of Mu Chen. With astonishment,

she looked at the mini real dragon that swam back to Mu Chen's chest while her eyebrows slightly lifted. She also possessed the Divine Beast's Constitution, so she could faintly sense the majestic aura emanating from the mini real dragon...

...that came from the most genuine bloodline of a real dragon.

Mu Chen sensed the real dragon swimming on his chest, then with a slight change of expression he told Nine Nether, "Attack me once."

Nine Nether threw a suspicious look at Mu Chen but did not question him further. She flicked her long fingers, and a sharp piece of cloth swept out horizontally like an electric light, shooting toward Mu Chen's chest as swift as lightning.

Facing Nine Nether's attack, Mu Chen did not take any defensive stance. Even the spiritual energy on the surface of his body was put away, allowing the cloth with spiritual energy to smash his body.

Swoosh!

However, the moment the cloth contacted Mu Chen's body, the real dragon that was swimming around his chest let out a deep and low-pitched cry. Then it opened its mouth and swallowed the cloth all at once.

After swallowing that cloth with spiritual energy, the real dragon's spirit merely trembled once before recovering and quietly swimming beneath Mu Chen's skin again.

Nine Nether witnessed what happened and was surprised, of course.

Mu Chen on the other hand, could not resist curving his mouth and laughing. This real dragon's spirit not only granted him enormous strength but also possessed an owner-protection ability. The strong defensive power may not lose to even the Dragon-Phoenix Golden Armor. If Mu Chen summoned the Dragon-Phoenix Golden Armor again, together with his own body's defensive power, attacking him meaningfully with these three layers of defense would be challenging even for a Grade Five Sovereign.

If he had managed to activate the Dragon-Phoenix True Spirit during the

battle with Qiu Taiyin a month ago, he would not have been forced to hide inside the sovereign celestial body to arrange a spiritual array for a counter attack.

"What have you been cultivating?" Nine Nether finally could not resist asking this question. Mu Chen now looked more like a Divine Beast than she did.

Mu Chen gave a hollow laugh. He did not hide anything from Nine Nether and told her about the Dragon-Phoenix Scripture.

After listening to what Mu Chen said, Nine Nether felt a little speechless. But she immediately knit her eyebrows while staring at the real dragon's spirit swimming around Mu Chen's chest and said, "If you ever meet any person from the dragon and phoenix clan in the future, do not simply let them discover that your body contains the real dragon real phoenix's spirit..."

"Why?"

"The Dragon Clan and Phoenix Clan are considered one of the top clans among the Divine Beasts Clan. Their power is on par with the Primordial God Clan who have been hiding in total seclusion. A real dragon real phoenix is considered to be a figure standing at the highest pinnacle within these two clans. Thus, if they found out that your body contains the real dragon real phoenix spirit, they might unreasonably take action by forcefully extracting it from you," Nine Nether said.

Mu Chen's expression slightly changed. He obviously did not think that the Dragon Clan and Phoenix Clan would be unreasonable to that extent. However, luckily, the real dragon real phoenix within his body was currently too weak, so it should not attract the Dragon Clan and Phoenix Clan's attention. As for the time when the real dragon real phoenix spirit has been cultivated to the highest level, Mu Chen by then would no longer be a small character that anyone could bully.

"I will take note of that." Mu Chen nodded.

Nine Nether's charming face became slightly relaxed. Just when she was about to speak, suddenly there was a loud bell-ringing sound that rang

throughout the Daluotian. That bell sounded urgent and carried a murderous aura.

When Mu Chen and Nine Nether heard the sound of the bell, their gazes became more focused before looking toward the direction of the inner part of Daluotian. They knew that this was the bell that signaled the start of a meeting between various lords. At the same time, it also signified the start of the war.

"War is about to start."

Daluotian Main Hall.

The main hall had a heavy atmosphere. The Dominator of Daluo, the third prince, ten lords, and even those lords of subordinate parties with relatively stronger power had all gathered within the main hall. This level of standard was considered the highest within the continent of Daluotian. It was obvious to see how serious the Continent of Daluotian was about the Big Hunting War. Going full throttle was not an understatement.

Mu Chen sat on the stone seat in the main hall. On his right was Nine Nether, and along the road upward were the remaining various lords. At a higher place was the third prince and Mandela, who overlooked the whole place from the highest position.

The last time he participated in this meeting of lords, Mu Chen could only follow Nine Nether, standing behind her like her bodyguard. However, as he had now managed to become one of the lords in the Continent of Daluotian, he deserved the same level of treatment.

Inside the main hall, the atmosphere was heavy and depressing. On the main seat, Mandela stood at the highest point, looking at everyone. A tender voice said bluntly, "Seven days from now, Meteorfall Battlefield's Spiritual Energy Windstorm will fall to its weakest state. At that time, the Big Hunting War will officially begin."

Although everyone was already prepared, when they heard this speech, their gazes still trembled. Facing a cruel war like the Big Hunting War, even if they were the top forces of the northern Continent of Daluotian, they still could not look down on others.

Mandela waved her little hands and spiritual lights immediately rushed out to form a huge and complicated Spiritual Energy Light Map in mid-air. Looking at the geography, it was the Meteorfall Battlefield on that map. However, a large portion of the map belonged to the dark region, which was probably at an unknown location.

"Due to the existence of Meteorfall Battlefield's Spiritual Energy Windstorm, every time it is opened, the landscape inside will have a significant change. Thus, the previous maps that we are familiar with will most likely lose their function. Upon entering the Meteorfall Battlefield, the geographic landscape will depend on your own exploration.

"Our Daluotian Continent Army will enter from the northwest region of Meteorfall Battlefield. After entering, the army will be scattered around. Each of you will lead an army into the deep parts of Meteorfall Battlefield to search for relics and snatch the Meteorfall Alchemy."

"Meteorfall Alchemy?" Mu Chen was curious about this. Apparently, the term Meteorfall Alchemy was unknown to him.

"Due to the special condition of Meteorfall Battlefield, any masters who have fallen inside will have their Sovereign Sea refined by the wind for ages. It will lastly form the so-called Meteorfall Alchemy. This Meteorfall Alchemy is very beneficial for cultivation, and it is a vital object to break the Earthly Sovereign Secret Treasure." Nine Nether's voice gently transmitted from the side to clear up Mu Chen's confusion.

"Earthly Sovereign Secret Treasures are in the places where the Earthly Sovereigns died. However, the places of death of those level of masters are hidden very secretively. Also, they are protected by the Meteorfall Battlefield's array where even Earthly Sovereigns cannot forcefully destroy it. The only solution is to use the Meteorfall Alchemy to break it apart because the energy within Meteorfall Alchemy comes from the same source as the Meteorfall Battlefield.

"So, snatching the Meteorfall Alchemy is the first and most crucial step of the Big Hunting War. Every party will fight to snatch the Meteorfall Alchemy.

"In order to use the fastest speed to snatch the most Meteorfall Alchemy, splitting into small groups is the only way. Otherwise, a large army sweeping toward one direction will only waste our strength unnecessarily."

Mu Chen massaged his forehead and smiled bitterly. This Big Hunting War was really troublesome. Since this Meteorfall Alchemy was so important, the competition later would then be extremely brutal.

Mandala's golden pupils looked at the ten lords as she said with a deep voice, "Once we enter the Meteorfall Battlefield, the third prince and myself will first head toward the inner part of the battlefield to search for the Earthly Sovereign Secret Treasure. Therefore, the mission of snatching the Meteorfall Alchemy will be passed along to all of you.

"I don't care how you all normally compete with each other for obtaining resources, but this time, I hope everyone can put any gratitudes, grudges, and differences aside to help one another. You can't depend on individual strength to bring back enough Meteorfall Alchemy to our rendezvous. And without enough Meteorfall Alchemy, we will have no other method of breaking apart an Earthly Sovereign Secret Treasure. By then, we would have practically failed, and you all should know the price to be paid for that.

"This stage of snatching the Meteorfall Alchemy will have to depend on your collective strength because at that time, I, myself, and even the third prince will not be able to provide any form of assistance to you all. We need to monitor the highest tiered powers from other parties to prevent them from going against you."

Mandela's golden pupils gave off a huge pressure and aura, and all the lords who looked at them could not help but nod with respect.

Mandela looked at the situation, waved her small hands, and ten streams of light rays shot out, landing in front of the ten lords. The light rays dispersed into ten green bronze mirrors. In each mirror, there was blinking spiritual light.

"These are the enchanted mirrors. When faced with grave danger, drip your fresh blood onto one of them. Others will be able to sense your

location from this and proceed to provide assistance. By then, the rendezvous will also be informed through these mirrors.

Mu Chen and the rest nodded as they received and kept the enchanted mirrors.

After Mandela finished her briefing, she stood up. What appeared to be a small body was giving off a pressure that caused all the masters to not dare to look at her. Those golden eyes had a majestic feel to them.

"Then, for Daluotian to remain the pinnacle of the northern region after this Big Hunting War...

"Everyone, let's fight!"

Inside the main hall, all the masters stood up with a passionate gaze in their eyes and heightened fighting spirit.

"Fight!"

Chapter 831: The Big Hunting War Commences

When the Big Hunting War was about to commence, the sky in the entire North Territory was gloomy and filled with dark clouds. The top powers in the North Territory could sense the foreshadowing of upcoming killings, lingering in the air ominously.

The various forces were shuddering under such a daunting atmosphere. Even the strongest forces among them felt uneasy. This trepidation was caused by the stronger forces having been divided out in the Big Hunting Wars.

Back then, not even the founders could escape from the cruel Meteorfall Battlefield. Eventually they had all perished. Hence, not even top powers, such as Earthly Sovereigns, were immune to the cruelty of the wars. In fact, due to their knowing how dangerous the war would be, it made it that much more surprising that none of the top powers had chosen to resist and withdraw from it.

Speaking of dangers, in the Meteorfall Battlefield, there was something that even the top forces could not resist: the Spiritual Deity Liquid. Although these overlords already had amazing power already, even such that could almost destroy the earth, everyone still thrived to reach higher and higher levels.

However, increasing their strength, even by a little, was nearly impossible. As such, the Spiritual Deity Liquid, which could be found on the Meteorfall Battlefield, was well-known to aid the advancement in levels. Naturally, this made it an irresistible attraction to the Earthly Sovereigns.

In the past, some of the Earthly Sovereigns from the other territories had been envious of those who possessed this treasure. So, they had attempted to seize the Spiritual Deity Liquid from the Meteorfall Battlefield. However, all of the top forces in the North Territory joined together to expel them completely from the region.

Ever since that day, the most significant reason for Earthly Sovereigns to join forces in the North Territory is due to the Spiritual Deity Liquid. Therefore, just before every Big Hunting War starts, the oppressing atmosphere surrounding it would linger in the entire North Territory. This was due to everyone's anticipating the intense eruption of life and death matches that were certain to take place soon.

The top powers that possessed the strength of Earthly Sovereigns could not even be sure of their escaping from such carnage. Even thinking about the disruptive battles, much less actually fighting in them, would bring fear to the heart of anyone!

In the Northwest region of North Territory, Daluotian. Nine Nether Palace.

Mu Chen and Nine Nether stood in the main hall. The Nine Nether Troops entered into the hall, clad in their black armor. Their appearance was like a huge, black wave, sweeping over the entire square.

A sense of stern fighting spirit was eluding from the warriors' bodies. The spiritual energy that was presently fluctuating around them seemed to be united, as if it were one tyrannical force.

The entire square remained quiet at this time. All eyes were fixed on the two figures standing at the main hall.

While everyone was looking at him and Nine Nether, Mu Chen looked down quietly, remaining silent. The long black robe complemented his well-built body, and he seemed to be relaxed and calm.

After having gone through so many hardships and tribulations for more than a year, the last innocence that previously could be found on the young man's face had now disappeared entirely. Instead, he had replaced it with a more mature, calm, and composed disposition.

Nine Nether was standing right beside Mu Chen. She wore close-fitting black armor that wrapped around her body, outlining her curvy figure. Her long legs could cause a rush in the bloodstream of any man. She possessed a wild charm on her cold face, one that could trigger anyone's desire to conquer her.

Right behind them, Tang Bing and Tang Rou stood. Behind them, a crowd of people, who were not participating in the war, had gathered.

Dong!

The still silence did not last for long, as the bell, full of fighting spirit, rang suddenly.. At that moment, the vast amount of killing desires within the whole realm skyrocketed, surging forth from all directions.

In the next moment, the sound of the breaking wind picked up, and dark clouds rushed up into the sky, casting shadows over the entire area. Those dark clouds rose above the mass of troops, who were filled with strong fighting spirit and ready to launch into war.

"Everyone, listen to my command. Set off!"

As soon as the overwhelming fighting spirit filled the air, the awe-inspiring voice of Mandela could be heard.

"Boom!"

The sky seemed to be blown apart by the mighty army, who then turned into countless shadows, before flitting across the sky, like a swarm of locusts, heading towards the boundary of Daluotian.

Nine Nether turned to Tang Bing and said, "I entrust the palace to you."

"Sister Nine Nether, you all have to be careful. We will be waiting for your victorious return."

Tang Bing and Tang Rou both nodded, as they knew how terrifying the Big Hunting War was. Even a top force like the Daluo Territory was in danger of being wiped out completely. No one could guarantee anything, nor know what to expect.

Mu Chen and Nine Nether both looked at each other, then gently nodded. Mu Chen raised his palm, then waved it down. His eyes were looking sharply ahead.

"Nine Nether Troop, listen to my command! Set off!"

Mu Chen and Nine Nether took the lead, flitting forward in a beam of light. Right below them, the troop skyrocketed forward as well, sweeping

out like a sea of dark clouds to follow behind.

The mighty army stormed out from the headquarters, before it finally passed through the Daluo Territory. The top powers all stopped and watched as they passed.

As the mighty troop passed through the city, there were occasionally a few other smaller troops that would join in en route. These were the affiliates around the Daluo region. With their participation, the army had become even more vast and mighty.

Dark clouds continued to cast shadows over the entire space, and a palpable fighting spirit overwhelmed all. Wherever the troop passed, the other top powers watched with fear, as the fighting spirit that the army exuded was incredibly overpowering.

As they watched, these onlookers did not dare activate any spiritual energy, just in case it would offend these warriors, thus sparking a war with offensive strikes! Also, in front of this overpowering army, anyone ranked lower than an Earthly Sovereign would not dare to block their way.

While the army of the Daluo Territory made their way to battle, other vast armies, each of which were carrying overwhelming fighting spirit, also swept across the sky. Their progress was like a gusty wind, approaching from all directions, representing the different regions of the North Territory.

The entire North Territory was shaken by force. The shadows seemed to be foretelling of something ominous to come. It appeared to be just like one of the scenes from a movie, when the world is coming to an end.

Some of the weaker ones, those who had escaped this war, felt lucky, yet also envious, as they watched from the sidelines. They were fortunate to have avoided this war, yet they envied the stronger ones, who were deemed worthy and brave enough for this war.

But, regardless of whether being a part of it was fortunate or a curse, the most terrifying Big Hunting War in the North Territory was about to begin at this very moment!

In the land, in the extreme west region of the North Territory.

Compared with the prosperity of the other areas in the North Territory, the land in the west was much more desolate. Some peaks stood off by themselves, kept company only by the occasional roaring of nearby wild beasts. This lonely pairing only served to make the entire scene feel even more remote and isolated.

Within the entire area, a sense of coldness seemed to be enveloping the space. It was an intense coldness, one that could chill to the bone. Even the spiritual energy that it eluded had an icy undertone.

Voices of the killings seemed to come from somewhere far, yet the place was empty, as if it was a ghost town. As one gazed even farther and deeper into the land, the earth started to reveal its ugly side, exposing a deep crack that stretched hundreds of thousands of feet, which had torn open the ground.

The crack was endlessly deep. It was dark at the bottom, as though it was the opening to the netherworld. The chilling wind gushed out from the crack constantly, as if the crack were a barrier that was separating the inner world from the outside world.

On the other side of the crack, a grey aura filled the air, while many sharp and pathetic screams could be heard. The entire surrounding felt as if there were armies that were battling life and death within it.

This was the setting of the Meteorfall battlefield, the forbidden land in the North Territory. Countless top powers had come here to seek treasures, but none of them had come out alive. And, today, this would be the most eye-catching place in the entire North Territory!

Shoo! Shoo!

There was an overwhelming breaking sound of the wind, shredding the grey sky apart. In the far distance, figures were seen approaching, swooping towards the area like a swarm of locusts. Eventually, they covered up the whole area, as almost all of the elites from the entire North Territory had come to gather at this battlefield. The majestic spiritual energy that roared at this moment had blown off the cold wind that had

previously pervaded the entire Meteorfall Battlefield.

Meanwhile, in the region just outside the battlefield, the army from the Daluo Territory had arrived, and now occupied a massive area of about a thousand miles. Some of the remaining forces fled upon seeing the amassed troops. They did not dare get in the way of such a strong and powerful army!

Mu Chen stood on a peak quietly, while Mandela, the Third Prince, and the rest of the lords stood in front of him. They were all looking ahead of them, waiting for their commands.

On the land filled with cracks, the black current that was blowing out from it had weakened visibly. Thus, the barrier of the Meteorfall Battlefield was also turning weak rapidly!

Between the heavens and the earth, various top powers watched the scene quietly. They knew that, at the very moment that the black storm dissipated, it would mark the official opening of the Big Hunting War.

The moment came very quickly. In fact, ten minutes was all it took before the black storm has dissipated entirely.

When the storm disappeared, Mu Chen seemed to hear the sudden roar of the fighting spirit thunder forth from between the heavens and the earth. Mandela, still at the forefront, gently lifted her little hand, then slowly let it down.

"Let the war begin!"

Chapter 832: Before the War

When the canopy-like black storm disappeared, the entire land became rowdy as a few forces beamed into lights and flitted fiercely towards the Meteorfall Battlefield. The sight was incredibly spectacular.

The army of the Daluo Territory acted under Mandela's command. As she waved her hand, the army flitted over the large crack, which was about 10,000 feet deep, before they rushed onto the battlefield.

When the army reached the battlefield, everyone could feel a sharp chill engulfing them. The cold was odd, as it was unblockable by any strong spiritual energy. This phenomenon caused the army to be slightly disorganized, but the sensation was quickly calmed down under the lords' control.

Mu Chen was standing at the forefront of the Nine Nether Troop. He was looking at the gray sky with a stern look on his face. His sense for spiritual energy seemed to be greatly disturbed here. The chilliness from the cold seemed to surround him, and he could not shake it off. Although it appeared that the cold inflicted no real harm, it caused Mu Chen to feel ill at ease.

"Be careful. Thousands of top powers left their lives on this battlefield, and that is why the natural spiritual energy here seems to have mixed with the thoughts from the dead. It is rather troublesome, as it is invisible and intangible. If one gets too much of it, it will enter into the body and consume your spiritual energy. Eventually, it will significantly damage your combat effectiveness," Nine Nether reminded the troop from the sidelines.

"To resolve this hidden danger, you will need to rely on the supreme yang power."

"Supreme yang power?" Mu Chen's heart skipped a beat. His spiritual energy had cultivated the Unperishable Flame and the Netherworld Thunder Heart before. To a certain extent, they could be the natural enemies of these strange forces.

When he thought of this, he activated his mind power, and a purple flame flashed through his body. His body was filled with heat, and the chilliness disappeared completely. A pleasant and comfortable feeling passed through him, relieving the troubled expression on Mu Chen's face.

"No wonder it is a forbidden place," Mu Chen sighed softly. This Meteorfall Battlefield was indeed a forbidden place. They had just entered the battlefield, and the first thing they met was troublesome energy that even tyrannical spiritual energy could not stop except by using some special power.

To resolve the chilliness, Mu Chen started to look around the battlefield. Currently, the Red Plains that the army was on seemed to be washed over and covered with layers of blood. There were huge and hideous-looking cracks, as if they were scars on the Earth entangling themselves. It was such a horrifying scene.

It was hard to imagine how destructive the wars were when they broke out in ancient times.

"Oh, why didn't we see those bones from the extraterritorial races?" Mu Chen looked at the white bones occasionally exposed on the ground. He knit his brows and felt something was amiss. After a short while, he finally realized that he had not seen any bones here that belonged to the extraterritorial races.

This was apparently illogical, as it was impossible to have only the bones of their people in the Great Thousand World when such destructive wars broke out.

"The extraterritorial races were very wicked. Once they died, their bodies melted and turned into corpse gas. The corpse gas was extremely poisonous. Once it spread, the entire spiritual energy in the world became eroded and polluted. Absorbing the energy would be impossible for cultivation," Nine Nether explained.

Nine Nether pointed to the land and continued, "Meteorfall Battlefield was once polluted as well. But after the war, many top powers used their Grand Super Power to nurture the land to its original state. Even so, it took

thousands of years to regain its spiritual energy here."

Polluting the spiritual energy?

Mu Chen could not help but change the expression on his face. Deep horror and seriousness were swirling within his eyes. The reason why the Great Thousand World could become a gathering place for many lower planes was partly due to the existence of its high-end spiritual energy. The extraterritorial races turned out to be so vicious that they simply wanted to utterly obliterate the source of all the practitioners in the Great Thousand World.

Mu Chen could imagine that this would be a fatal blow to the world if most of the regions in the Great Thousand World were to lose their spiritual energies.

Without the spiritual energies, the Great Thousand World would definitely not be a match for the extraterritorial races. The entire Great Thousand World would be controlled by them, and those who had lost their spiritual energy would be at their mercy.

"They are really vicious," Mu Chen said in a low voice. It was no wonder that all the practitioners in the Great Thousand World regarded the extraterritorial races as their foes. Back in the ancient times, they even abandoned all their grievances and joined forces to work against the attacks of the extraterritorial races.

"In that ancient war, although it seemed that we had won, in fact, it was not a win according to the information I got from the old books in the family." Nine Nether let out a soft sigh.

"Not a win?" Mu Chen gave her a stern look.

"The Great Thousand World of today is only half of what it was in the ancient times," Nine Nether said.

Mu Chen suddenly narrowed his eyes, and a surge of fear appeared on his face. He looked at Nine Nether incredulously. He asked with difficulty, "The remaining half..."

Nine Nether answered, "It was, of course, occupied by the extraterritorial

races. Even though we had repelled the aggression, we had also suffered heavy losses. There was insufficient strength to recover the lost land, and all we could do was guard the remaining continents."

Mu Chen kept quiet as he was quite shocked. Although he had not interacted with anyone from the extraterritorial races, they were still the biggest weight in the hearts of the top powers in the Great Thousand World. It was like a fishbone getting stuck in the throat.

"But don't worry too much about it. Even though numerous top powers from the Great Thousand World perished in that ancient battle, we still have a galaxy of talents and big shots such as the Martial Ancestor—the father of Lin Jing, whom we met in the City of Trade. Or the Flame Emperor from the Endless Fire Territory, whose daughter was the girl you met at the Dragon-Phoenix Rift. Or the caretaker from the Land of All Tombs. Last but not least, the Green Shirt Sword Saint from the Sword City..."

Nine Nether smiled. "All these great people were considered the invincible masters in the ancient times. Their strength can never be underestimated. If the extraterritorial races were to create trouble, these people would definitely help."

Mu Chen nodded. As he listened to Nine Nether reciting all the big names from the Great Thousand World with her rosy lips, he could not help but feel excited about it. This is how it should be when one became a top power.

He was hoping that one day, he would be able to stand on the top of this world without any fear of obstacles lying in front of him.

Phew...

Mu Chen took a deep breath to suppress his excitement. That was his goal, to become stronger. He had the confidence to reach that level, and he believed that he could do it. But he needed time to grow.

Right now, he needed a chance to make himself stronger.

The people from the top level of Daluo Territory gathered on a hilltop in

the Red Plains. Mandela was standing at the highest point with her hands clasped behind her. She may have seemed small in size, but the sense of oppression she exuded could even make top powers like the Third Prince lower his head in respect.

"We have entered the Meteorfall Battlefield. I can sense that the rest of the people have stormed into this place. The current battlefield has turned into a war zone." Mandela's faint voice resounded in everyone's ears.

"We will start following our plans now. The Third Prince and I will detect the secret hiding location of the Earthly Sovereign, and the mission for snatching the Meteorfall Alchemy will fall on everyone."

Mandela looked closely at everyone. "I hope you all will not let me down."

"We will do our best!" the lords said with stern voices.

Mandela nodded before she waved her hand, and light rays beamed towards the lords.

Mu Chen and the rest of them felt something in their hands. The rays turned into scrolls with a simple map on each one of them. Apparently, everyone had a different piece of the map.

"There is a relic on each of the maps in your hands. This is the only information we have currently, and if you want to get more information about the relics, you will have to explore on your own."

"Yes!" The lords all nodded.

Mandela did not speak any further. She swept her golden gaze on the lords and paused briefly on Mu Chen. Her chin dipped quite unnoticeably to remind him to be careful.

Mandela's move was very subtle, hence none of the lords noticed. After all, she could not show any differential treatment at this time.

Mandela took a deep breath and said, "Since the instructions are clear, all lords will lead your various troops and set off."

The lords nodded and headed back to the place where their respective

troops were. As the commands were issued, the earth rumbled, and beams of light flitted out from the main army of the Daluo Territory. They were howling like the wind in all different directions.

Mu Chen and Nine Nether did not go their separate ways, as the Nine Nether Troops would be split as well. This would not be a good move for them. After all, to fight single-handedly in this Meteorfall Battlefield had no benefits at all.

Therefore, both of them combined their troops, and the soldiers flitted out at a hand signal. The scene was spectacular.

As the troops left the main army one by one, the size of the original army shrank rapidly. Mandela stood on the hill, looking in the direction where the troops had left. She tightly clenched her small fist.

The stage was finally set for the Big Hunting War.

Chapter 833: Grade Three Relic

Massive ravines crossed each other, leaving hideous markings that created a dreadful sight on this gray and barren land. A repressed and cold atmosphere pervaded each and every corner of the entire area.

Shoo!

Suddenly, a loud wind broke the silence of the lone and cold atmosphere. In a far distance, the gray sky was torn, revealing a troop of a thousand men that were flitting across the sky at a low altitude.

The troop was dressed in black armor. As they moved, the spiritual energies surrounding them seemed to have all integrated into one. Their sharp and fierce fighting spirit instantly dispelled the chilliness in the region. At the forefront of the troop were two figures, Mu Chen and Nine Nether, who were moving at a steady pace.

"The relic that was indicated on the map that the Lord Dominator gave us should be in the Northwest direction. We probably will reach it in another half day's time," Nine Nether said. She then took a look at the surroundings, tilted her head, and smiled at Mu Chen.

"Although I did not see the relic, I'm guessing it should be a Grade Three relic."

"A Grade Three Relic?" Mu Chen was astounded.

"It is a rating given to those relics from the previous Big Hunting Wars. Apart from those small-scale relics, or those that did not qualify for the rating criteria, the rest of the relics were divided into three grades. Grade Three ranked the lowest, while Grade One ranked the highest," Nine Nether explained. "The so-called Earthly Sovereign Secret Treasure is ranked at Grade One. But, this high-ranking secret treasure can only be found deep within the Meteorfall Battlefield, with an array protecting it. Not only it is hidden deeply, but it will also be troublesome to open it."

"The relic that we are rushing to now should be ranked as Grade Three. Hehe, it is just nice for us to give a shot."

Mu Chen nodded and said, "Will there by someone else, who will be eyeing the same relic?"

Nine Nether knit her willow-like eyebrow, then answered him. "I guess so. When the Meteorfall Battlefield is opened each time, the landscape will change greatly, due to the various torrent of spiritual energies. Thus, all of the maps in the past are of no use now. The location depicted on our map was a brief indication on a small area. This means that the relic is not located deep within the battlefield. Hence, there might be a chance that other people will find the spot before we do. Thus, our only chance is to get there faster than the rest, extract the Meteorfall Alchemy from it, then leave as quickly as possible."

Mu Chen shrugged his shoulders when he heard this. There wasn't much he could say, as it is still the best to be well-prepared for battles at all times. If there were too many forces entering the battlefield, he believed that others would have the luck of finding the relic first.

Mu Chen tapped slightly on his toes and sped up. The Nine Nether Troop accelerated and beamed into lights, flitting closely behind at a low altitude. When they started tracing the location of the relic, they finally felt the start of the Big Hunting War.

They had discovered dozens of different forces in just a short day. Some of them, who had not spotted any relic, started to exchange blows, due to some grudges that they held previously. The impact that exploded from these various swirling spiritual energies shook the entire land.

Mu Chen's troop attracted a few wary gazes, as they were not a small army. But, in general, it was a smooth journey for them. After all, everyone understood that the fearsome fighting spirit that was eluded from the Nine Nether Troop could not be found in any other ordinary forces.

In this North Territory, to train such a well-equipped and powerful army required a vast amount of resources. Just by the stance of Nine Nether Troop, it was not difficult to tell that it had taken more than an ordinary force to train such a troop. As such, no one dared mess with them or follow behind them too closely.

As the road was clear, Mu Chen and the troop started to slow down their speed after half a day. The land, which was colored in pale black, appeared to be extremely desolate. The repression in the atmosphere intensified gradually. As they entered into their current zone, the cold air got even more chilly.

"It should be around here." Nine Nether and Mu Chen exchanged gazes, then simultaneously gave hand signals. The Nine Nether Troop slowed down even more, looking around the area with their sharp eyes.

Both Nine Nether and Mu Chen made a move and flit onto a mountain peak. The horizon became wider in front of them, and a black swamp came into their sight.

A thick fog was lingering around mid-air of the swamp, and the outlines of some black halls could be seen. It seemed like the thick and dense fog that was continually flowing from the black halls, was gathering into clouds of black whirlpools on top of the halls.

"These are the Meteorfall gases, which are used to extract the Meteorfall Alchemy!" As Nine Nether watched the black whirlpools, her eyes brightened. She smiled. "Judging from the density of the gas, it looks like we will be able to extract hundreds of Meteorfall Alchemy. Not bad for a Grade Three Relic."

Mu Chen looked curiously at the black whirlpools, as they seemed to be emitting a great deal of spiritual energy. But the energy seemed to be unusually cold and damp, as it was a unique force that had been generated from the willpower of the dead, who had perished in this battlefield. Thus, it was an essential item!

Mu Chen stopped looking, swung his palm softly, then flit down the peak. The rest of the Nine Nether Troop swept down to follow, like a fast-flowing current, before landing safely outside the swamp.

Mu Chen wanted to strike, but once he reached the swamp, both Nine Nether and his gazes narrowed, sensing impending danger. Both of them now sensed a sudden surge in the spiritual energy fluctuations around this region, alerting them that their location was being targeted.

Apparently, someone had discovered this Grade Three Relic...

"Seems like it is not easy to take this relic." Mu Chen shrugged his shoulders at Nine Nether.

"Hmph, I want to see who dares snatch it away from the Nine Nether Palace." Nine Nether gave a cold hmph, as she was obviously angry.

Mu Chen grinned, standing still. He was not in a hurry and had no intention of laying his hands on the Meteorfall Gas, as extracting the Meteorfall Alchemy required some time to do so. If they did not eliminate the external interference, it would prove very troublesome during the process of the extraction.

The Nine Nether Troop behind them all knew about the interference, revealed by the fierce looks in their eyes.

Shua! Shua!

Mu Chen and the rest waited for a few minutes, before the breaking sound of the wind swept across the sky. Mu Chen lifted his head to see a large number of figures flitting over.

All of these people came from different forces, and they had a large army. Within it, some of them had strong spiritual energy fluctuations, which could not be underestimated. However, Mu Chen just watched the scene calmly, no expression on his handsome face.

"Looks like our luck is good! We found a Grade Three Relic here."

"But, it seems like someone was here first..."

"They look strong. Seems like they are from the Nine Nether Palace from the Daluo Territory."

"Bad luck for us. We have met a tough opponent."

When batches of people arrived in the same area, they also noticed the Nine Nether Troop outside of the swamp. Some of them had good eyesight, as they could immediately tell the background of Mu Chen and his troop. Some of them had a change in their expressions, as top forces like the Daluo Territory had an overpowering influence over most of the

ordinary forces.

If they were in the North Territory, they would not dare to initiate an attack. But in the Meteorfall Battlefield, the chaotic situation lessened the fear and level of respect for these top forces. Therefore, although they were still a bit afraid, their eyes were still fierce and flickering.

Mu Chen looked indifferently at these people, projecting his faint voice with his spiritual energy, "I'm Mu Chen from the Daluo Territory. Since we this relic first, we hope everyone can show respect to us by not interfering with it."

"Mu Chen? Is he the third in the ranking of the Dragon-Phoenix Record?!"

"Oh? Is that Mu Chen, the dark horse that shone in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift?"

The name of Mu Chen triggered many amazed responses, as his fame had already become widespread. Some of these people looked at each other with an intention to retreat. After all, with the reputation of the Daluo Territory, plus Mu Chen's and their army's strength, it would not be an easy thing to steal food from this tiger's mouth!

Mu Chen relaxed his expression slightly, once he noticed that the various forces were showing signs of retreat. Just as when he thought that he could resolve the situation without direct combat, a thunderous sneer came from the other side of the sky.

"Haha, you are only a lad, and you dare to talk so wildly. What's the big deal with the Daluo Territory? You don't even know if you can live through the Big Hunting War. You should stop decking yourself out to frighten people. Others may be afraid of you, but the Dragon Snake Sect is not!"

A sound of the breaking wind could be heard from afar, as another batch of figures rushed over and landed, just as this laughter was heard.

Mu Chen raised his head to look at the figure who had just landed. His expression slowly hardened.

Chapter 834: Dragon Snake Sect

As the thunderous laughter echoed throughout the land, everyone watched with surprise as beams flashed across the sky and landed on the ground.

When the light rays dissipated, an army in gray armor appeared in front of everyone. The numbers of this troop were not any less than compared to the Nine Nether Troop. A big, black, hideous-looking serpent exuding a bloodthirsty aura was emblazoned on their armor.

Two middle-aged figures stood arrogantly at the forefront of the army. One of them was clean-looking, while the other one was more rowdy-looking. His body was well-built like an iron man. The earth seemed to shake beneath him.

The iron man sneered as he looked at Mu Chen, who was standing outside of the swamp. Apparently, the thunderous voice had come from the iron man.

"That is... Lu Wu and Lu Kui, the two clan leaders from the Dragon Snake Sect!"

Everyone else was coming to that realization as well. As they quickly recognized the army's identity, they could not help but exclaim in shock.

"The Dragon Snake Sect?"

Mu Chen stared at the army in the distance with his dark, cold eyes. He had also heard about them before. They were one of the top-notch forces in the North Territory. However, they were far from Daluo Territory and seemed to have a relationship with the Divine Pavilion. With such a background, they naturally did not need to fear Daluo Territory, unlike the rest of the forces.

Mu Chen tilted his head and exchanged glances with Nine Nether. Their eyes surged with cold radiance.

"I am Lu Wu from the Dragon Snake Sect. Heh heh. I presume you are one of the nine lords in the Daluo Territory, as well as the lord of the Nine

Nether Palace, right?" The clean-looking, middle-aged man looked at Nine Nether and smiled faintly.

Nine Nether glanced at him indifferently and said, "The Dragon Snake Sect seems to have plenty of guts. How dare you fight with Daluo Territory? Do you really think that having a relationship with the Divine Pavillion will stop us from doing anything to you?"

Lu Wu smiled when he heard this. "Perhaps during normal times we would think twice about it. But Daluo Territory cannot even save themselves in this Big Hunting War. So don't try to scare me with your name."

"Nine Nether Palace is capable of dealing with the likes of you," Nine Nether said calmly.

"Heh, shameless boasting."

The iron man, Lu Kui, stood beside Lu Wu and smiled hideously as he clasped his hands in front of his chest. He looked mockingly at the Nine Nether Troop behind Mu Chen and said, "As far as I know, Nine Nether Troop is the weakest army in the entire Daluo Territory. They have been bullied for years, and they don't even dare to rebel against it. Don't you feel ashamed bringing them out for a stroll?"

A bloodthirsty aura immediately surged in the eyes of thousands of soldiers when they heard his verbal abuse. They stared at Lu Kui with sharp and piercing eyes, and a vast fighting spirit seemed to be surging among them.

Lu Kui naturally noticed the surging of the fighting spirit. His mocking look disappeared as his eyes narrowed. As a leader of a troop, he knew that such fighting spirit could not be cultivated by just any Tom, Dick, or Harry.

"I heard that there are two renowned troops, the Dragon Troop and Snake Troop, in the Dragon Snake Sect. I guess the one behind you should be the Snake Troop, right?" Mu Chen spoke calmly as his pitch-black eyes swept across the troop behind Lu Kui.

Not only did the troop share an identical strength with Nine Nether Troop, but they had eerie fluctuations lingering around them as if poisonous snakes were hiding in the dark. Hence, it would not be wise to belittle them.

This troop was considered to be by far one of the strongest troops Mu Chen had met on his way.

"You, lad, are green, but you have good eyesight."

Lu Kui grinned widely as he looked at Mu Chen. "Mu Chen, the one who has provoked much discussion lately in the North Territory? Having such an achievement at your age is uncommon. But now, this is not child's play here. Go back and practice for another ten years or more before you come out again."

"You seem to have overestimated yourself." Mu Chen shook his head and smiled.

Lu Kui's meaty face twitched as he narrowed his eyes and released a sharp killing radiance. A surge of powerful spiritual energy surrounding him slowly spread out.

Mu Chen could sense the pressure exuded from that spiritual energy. He raised his eyebrow slightly. Even though Lu Kui's character was not superior, his strength was considered to be acceptable. Given such an amount of spiritual energy, he should have reached the level of Grade Five Sovereign. Compared to Qiu Taiyin, who just recently reached the level of Grade Five Sovereign, Lu Kui was much more powerful.

"You dare to show off your power when you are only a Grade Five Sovereign?" Nine Nether sharpened her gaze, and a surge of purple flames appeared to be radiating from her body. The heat from the flames dispersed the coldness in the air, and at the same time, eased the pressure that came from Lu Kui's spiritual energy.

"Heh, don't be angry, Lord of Nine Nether Palace. If you're not impressed with the Grade Five Sovereign strength of my third brother, perhaps I can please you a little more."

That clean-looking Lu Wu smiled softly while his palms clapped together. A sudden vast spiritual energy shot up into the sky as if the power from the ocean was drifting in mid-air. There seemed to be the sound of water gushing out. Apparently, his spiritual energy had reached a shocking level.

The power of this spiritual energy was undoubtedly much stronger than Lu Kui's!

Lu Wu had reached the Grade Six Sovereign stage!

"Spiritual Energy Solidify, Grade Six Sovereign?"

Nine Nether's cold and beautiful eyes narrowed slightly as she sized up Lu Wu. She did not think that the latter had already achieved such a standard.

It seemed like the Dragon Snake Sect had some foundation to become a top-notch force in the North Territory. Such strength could be considered a high mid-range level among the lords in the Daluo Territory.

It was also said that there were three clan leaders in the Dragon Snake Sect. Lu Wu and Lu Kui were only ranked second and third.

The rest of the people from the various forces understood that a fight was inevitable once they saw this scene. Although Daluo Territory had a well-known reputation, only the Nine Nether Troop was there at the moment. Despite the fact that the Dragon Snake Sect was weaker than Daluo Territory, they were also considered to be one of the top-notch forces. That was all the more reason why they would not allow the relic to be taken.

Since both parties were not willing to compromise, the ownership of the relic would have to be decided by the most practical method - with fists!

The rest were happy to see a confrontation because if a war started, someone was bound to get hurt. They could fish in troubled waters during such a time.

Mu Chen squinted slightly at their formation. From a certain point of view, their strength was not any less than that of Nine Nether Palace. If it

had been, they would not dare to snatch the relic from them. It seemed like a war was unavoidable if they wanted that relic.

"I will handle that guy," Nine Nether said to Mu Chen while looking coldly at Lu Wu. Her body slowly rose in mid-air, gathered all the light beams, and transformed them into a pair of purple wings with a purple fire burning fiercely on them.

Eek!

A crisp, bright, and sharp chirping sound came from Nine Nether's body. The formidable spiritual energy fluctuation surged around the land. The sound of the chirp dispersed Lu Wu's spiritual energy.

"The Nine Netherworld Bird?"

Lu Wu's eyes sharpened and became cautious. He knew how troublesome it was to deal with those with a body that contained a Divine Beast.

Something flickered in Lu Wu's eyes, and he smiled. "Lord of Nine Nether Palace, I know you are a Nine Netherworld Bird with majestic powers. But if we are to fight, I am afraid there will be no end to it."

Nine Nether felt indifferent to his words. "If you don't wish to fight, then get lost."

Lu Wu raised his eyebrows. "Why don't we use another method to decide the ownership of this relic?"

"What do you want to do?" Nine Nether gave a cold smile. She did not make a move immediately. It would not be an easy fight since Lu Wu had some foundation. She needed to conserve her energy since there might be more and more forces attracted to their current location.

"I have heard that the Nine Nether Troop is one of the elite troops in Daluo Territory. I wonder who would win if they were to fight with our Snake Troop from the Dragon Snake Sect."

Lu Wu smiled and continued, "Why not let the two armies give their best shot and whoever wins gets the relic? What do you think?"

"Heh heh, I think the young lad has no guts." Lu Kui laughed hideously as he crossed his arms in front of his chest. He was able to tell that the Nine Nether Troop was under Mu Chen's command.

Although he looked big and burly, he had a deceitful mind. He wished to goad Mu Chen into competing with him using his mockery and contemptible words.

Lu Kui was not afraid of Mu Chen, who was still a young commander, since he had personally led the troop for many years with notable achievements.

But when Nine Nether heard their plans, she was not angry. Instead, her lips curved slightly.

Mu Chen on the other hand, smiled as he turned to look at the Nine Nether Troop. "Someone wishes to pick a fight with us. What should we do?"

"Kill!"

Thousands of soldiers displayed a fearsome look in their eyes as they let out a low growl accompanied by intense killing desire. Even though Lu Kui had a fierce look on his face, he could not help but also narrow his eyes.

He saw a curve at the corner of Mu Chen's lips and suddenly felt uneasy. He thought he could break through easily via Mu Chen, but the situation seemed to be beyond his expectation.

But, Lu Kui was, after all, not an ordinary character. He quickly dismissed the thought and regained his composure as his eyes turned cold.

He had been through numerous wars over so many years. Hence, he did not believe such a lad could get in his way!

He was going to wipe out the so-called Nine Nether Troop!

Chapter 835: Snake Troop

The two armies were confronting each other outside of the black swamp. All of their eyes were filled with killing intent. The strong fighting spirit that was eluding from both troops could fluctuate the spiritual energy of the entire land.

The various forces around the peak were watching the confrontation between the two parties. Apparently, they were interested in it, because Mu Chen's name had stirred up much commotion within the North Territory. As such, most of the forces knew about the up and coming young man from the Daluo Territory.

Back in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift, Mu Chen had made a name for himself among the younger generation from the North Territory. He did this by showing off his remarkable combat achievements.

However, Lu Kui was not just any man from the younger generation. Although he ranked third among the three clan leaders in the Dragon Snake Sect, he was well-known as a commander in the Dragon Snake Sect. In fact, the Snake Troop from the Dragon Snake Sect had wiped out many opposing forces under his leadership. The numbers of young talents, who had perished at his hands, were numerous.

Therefore, the onlookers were all very curious about what would be the results of this meeting between the dark horse, Mu Chen, who had recently emerged from the North Territory, and a veteran commander.

Nine Nether and Lu Wu faced each other in mid-air. Nine Nether looked calm, while Lu Wu was watching the confrontation smilingly from above.

He gave a joking smile to Nine Nether. "Lord of Nine Nether Palace, do you really intend to fight against the Snake Troop, led by Lu Kui, with the Nine Nether Troop, led by him? Hehe, I think we should just take a step back and share the relic together. We can avoid wielding weapons against each other and thus, hurting our relationship. What do you think?"

Nine Nether spoke indifferently, "Clan Leader Lu Wu, thank you for the concern. But in Nine Nether Palace, there is no such thing as giving up,

but only giving our best."

Nine Nether stared at Lu Wu. She was not someone who was ignorant of worldly affairs. She knew that each of the three clan leaders of the Dragon Snake Sect were full of greed. Thus, she would not believe any nonsense about sharing the relic with them. He was merely testing the waters with his words.

Nine Nether was sure that, if she showed any signs of retreat, Lu Wu would only be revealing his side at that time. However, Nine Nether kept these thoughts to herself, and only continued to look at him coldly. Apparently, the latter did not think highly of Mu Chen or the Nine Nether Troop. This could be due to the confidence that he had placed in Lu Kui and his Snake Troop. But... Nine Nether knew that his confidence would be tarnished eventually.

Everyone must pay for a price belittling Mu Chen here...

With such a thought, mockery set in deeper in Nine Nether's eyes. Unphased by her glare, Lu Wu swung his palm and said indifferently, "Lu Kui, since Nine Nether Palace has such an apparently strong backbone, you don't have to bother being polite with them, then."

"I had no intention of doing so, right from the start!"

Lu Kui laughed hideously, as he stomped his foot. While the earth shook, he gave a low moan, "Snake Troop!"

Roar!

The Snake Troop answered with a low moan from the back. Something seemed to be torn apart with their moanings, as a dark gray fighting spirit swept out from their bodies.

That fighting spirit lingered over the Snake Troop, spreading out violent spiritual energy fluctuations. Everyone on the peak looked stern, as hurricanes formed on the land.

The Snake Troop was indeed well-prepared to snatch food from the jaws of the tiger. Despite having a strength of Grade Five Sovereign, it would still be hard to beat Lu Kui, even for a Grade Six Sovereign, at least once he

circulated the fighting spirit of the Snake Troop.

"Haha!"

Lu Kui moved his body to appear within the fighting spirit, lingering in mid-air. He waved his hand, causing the fighting spirit to soar. At that moment. dark gray clouds formed, spreading out with an offensive presence.

"Young lad, let me teach you how to play with the fighting spirit!"

Lu Kui laughed wildly. He stomped his foot immediately, and the dark gray fighting spirit surged even more violently, like rising tides. Eventually, the fighting spirit surge turned into hundreds of huge spiraling fighting spirits, charging out.

As the fighting spirits spiraled throughout the area at a shockingly high speed, massive destruction forces exploded and spaces were twisted and torn. A sharp screeching and breaking sound of the wind could also be heard.

The looks on the spectators were stern. Lu Kui had just displayed his remarkable ability in controlling his fighting spirit with a casual hand signal. It was no wonder that he had been able to lead the Snake Troop to wars so successfully all these years.

As the screeching wind-breaking sound approached, hundreds of spirals of dark gray fighting spirits seemed to become like giant serpents, which would bite and hiss fiercely at anything. A flash of surprise shone in Mu Chen's eyes, as he lifted his head to watch the influx of the fighting spirit. Lu Kui's ability to control the fighting spirit was indeed unexpected from Mu Chen.

But... that was all.

When Mu Chen took over the thousand-men Nine Nether Troop in the past, he had won the war with the Blood Hawk Troop, which had five times more manpower than his troop. Although the commander of the Blood Hawk Troop, Wu Tian, was less competent than Lu Kui, Mu Chen had already become much more formidable than he had been back then!

Hence, Lu Kui may have excellent control over the fighting spirit, but what he did not know was that the young man in front of him was much formidable than him in regards to understanding and control the fighting spirit.

Mu Chen raised his palm calmly under the gazes of the spectators, then waved it down slowly. The Nine Nether Troop, whose eyes were filled with anger, released their bloodthirsty aura, before stomping all of their heavy halberts on the ground. Their thunderous roars resounded throughout the entire land.

Boom!

The pitch-black fighting spirit stormed out like a torrent, gathering above them. Immediately, the violent fighting spirit caused a rapid change in the entire sky's color.

Mu Chen appeared above the Nine Nether Troop. The violent pitch-black fighting spirit that was whistling out like ocean waves transformed into a black light shield, which then stopped to hover in front of the troop as he flicked his finger.

Dong!

Hundreds of spiral dark grey fighting spirits charged against the Nine Nether light shield repeatedly. Despite such a violent offensive attack, only a few sparkles could be seen on the light shield. Unlike what everyone had imagined, the shield did not break! It seemed to be much more sturdy than it looked.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The strong fighting spirits continued their attacks, cracking the ground on the earth of this vast swamp.

Kacha.

On the light shield that was formed by the fighting spirit of the Nine Nether Troop, cracks started to appear. Like a mirror, the shield was slowly cracking and shattering.

"Little kid, playing fighting spirit with me is equivalent to courting your own death!" Seeing that Mu Chen's defense was giving way, Lu Kui could not help but laugh hideously.

However, Mu Chen only smiled in response to Lu Kui's sneer. As the cracks on the shield increased, a cold radiance surged within his pitch-black eyes, but no panic could be seen.

Bang!

The shield finally reached its limit, shattering into pieces under everyone's watch. As the shield burst, Mu Chen gripped all of his fingers gently.

Swish!

As his fingers were gripped, the scattered pieces of the shield suddenly regrouped themselves, forming into an overwhelming number of black feathers, which were now shooting forward furiously. The black feathers were made of fighting spirit, and each of them possessed a fantastic killing power.

Even a Grade Five Sovereign would be extremely overwhelmed if they faced such an offense. Such an imposing attack could only be formed so easily by the hands of Mu Chen, using the fighting spirit of the Nine Nether Troop.

As the black feathers swept out, they flew through the gaps between the dark gray tornado, shattering into spots of lights. With a gentle wave of Mu Chen's hand, after he had broken apart the fighting spirit of the Snake Troop, the countless black feathers turned into spots of lights, then merged with the intense fighting spirit of the Nine Nether Troop.

This series of moves was made so smoothly by Mu Chen, and there was no hesitation on his part at all. The spectators, who were all experts, could clearly tell that Mu Chen had achieved a shocking level in his ability to control the fighting spirit of the Nine Nether Troop. If Lu Kui manipulated his fighting spirit wildly and crazily, Mu Chen's control could be described as much more dazzling and beautiful, like a piece of fine art.

The spectators looked at one another and sighed softly, shock flashing in their eyes. No one had thought that this recent star among the younger generation of the North Territory would have such an amazing combat capability. Even his talent in handling the fighting spirit was too shocking for them to fathom.

Lu Kui stared at Mu Chen with a cold face. The spiteful look in his eyes had disappeared completely. Judging from the previous control of fighting spirit that Mu Chen had displayed, he knew clearly that Mu Chen was no weaker than him.

Although he felt disbelief at this thought, he was a veteran that had gone through countless fierce battles, which had enabled him to circulate his fighting spirit to such an extent.

So, how could Mu Chen, at his age, be comparable?

Lu Kui had a cold look in his eyes. This young man, Mu Chen, was clearly a threat. If he was to be an enemy, it would be best to kill him now. Otherwise, he would be an endless source of trouble.

"Looks like you really want to kill me now."

Sensing Lu Kui's killing intent, Mu Chen smiled at him. But, like a block of ice, the smile had no warmth. He raised his palm again, causing the pitch-black fighting spirit to linger around his fingertips, like flowing water.

"But now, it's my turn to teach you how to play with the fighting spirit!"

Chapter 836: Gap Between Two Different Fighting Spirits

"But now, it's my turn to teach you how to play with the fighting spirit!"

When Lu Kui heard what Mu Chen had said, his meaty face twitched without realizing it. He laughed angrily as killing intent overflowed from his eyes. Although he was ranked third among the three clan leaders in the Dragon Snake Sect, he had his own merit, which was the talent with fighting spirit. This may not have sufficed for him to become a War Troop Dispatcher, but it was not difficult for him to control a thousand-man fighting spirit.

Judging from this standpoint, he was way better than the second clan leader Lu Wu, as the entire snake troop was controlled by Lu Kui and not the mightier Lu Wu.

The top powers who had dealt with Lu Kui before knew that despite Lu Kui only having the strength of Grade Five Sovereign, once the Snake Troop was in his control, even Lu Wu, a Grade Six Sovereign, could not belittle his power.

If Lu Kui gathered the power of the entire Snake Troop on top of his own, he could even fight it out with a Grade Six Sovereign!

The greatest benefit of controlling fighting spirit was allowing people to possess a strength that was beyond their own.

Therefore, the talented Lu Kui almost exploded like a volcano when he heard that Mu Chen wanted to teach him how to play with fighting spirit. The hideous smile on his face looked like he could almost tear Mu Chen to pieces.

The people around the peak also looked at one another as they were shocked by Mu Chen's arrogant words. Mu Chen had always been a tranquil and gentle person. The sudden contrast caught most of them by surprise.

While they were surprised, they also could not help but frown at his

words. After all, Lu Kui, who had achieved significant combat results with his Snake Troop during the past few years, was not an ordinary character. At least no one dared to speak to him the way Mu Chen did.

So Mu Chen gave them the feeling that he was still young and cocky.

But Mu Chen did not really bother about what they thought. The Nine Nether fighting spirit surrounded him like strong currents. His face was still as calm as before without any surge in his eyes.

Lu Kui did have a little talent in fighting spirit, but such talent would never be able to make him a true War Troop Dispatcher, as his understanding of the fighting spirit was only at a beginner's level.

The law of the battle array was that physical control would never beat mental control.

But Lu Kui was only at the level that used physical control. This made a significant difference with Mu Chen, who had comprehended the Battle Array of Mind.

The same army with two different levels of control would have a world of difference in the amount of the fighting spirit's power that was released.

Mu Chen spread out his hands, setting out his mind unreservedly. He merged his thoughts with the roaring Nine Nether fighting spirit perfectly without any resistance.

The roaring was full of fighting spirit, but this did not hinder Mu Chen's thoughts as his mind power grew stronger with the rising fluctuations of the fighting spirit.

Swoosh!

The pitch-black violent fighting spirit gathered and surrounded Mu Chen. Anyone could feel the fighting spirit of Nine Nether rising to higher levels.

The oppression quietly shrouded the entire area.

In Mu Chen's black eyes, a sharp radiance surged and with a glance, his

palm clenched, and the fighting spirit exploded.

Boom!

A gush of powerful Nine Nether fighting spirit rushed up into the sky and gathered in mid-air. As it was grouping together, the fighting spirit transformed into a gigantic black feather about 100 feet long. A glimpse of lightning flickered at the feather's tip. The black feather was charged with extremely destructive power.

As soon as the top powers saw the black feather, their eyes narrowed, and some of the Grade Five Sovereigns even had a slight change in their expressions as they could sense the intense threat from the black feather.

"Go."

Mu Chen lowered his gaze slightly and snapped his fingers. The black feather pierced through space in an instant like a sword. With an incomparable fierceness, it swung itself forcefully towards the snake troop.

Pzzt.

The ground below cracked deeply even though the feather sword had not landed.

"I would like to see how a lad like you could teach me how to use fighting spirit?!"

Lu Kui could feel the sharp and chilly fighting spirit exuded from the black feather sword, but he was not fearful at all. Instead, he let out hideous laughter and yelled, "Snake Troop!"

"Kill!"

Below him, the Snake Troop's dark gray fighting spirit erupted with killing roars. With both of his fists tightly clenched, the fighting spirit gathered madly, forming a huge and appalling dark gray snake halbert. The coldness emitted by the halbert caused the temperature to drop by a few degrees.

"Snake Demon Halbert!"

As Lu Kui stomped his foot, the halbert twisted like a snake. With a jump, it tore the space apart and the next moment, it collided head-on with the black feather sword.

Mighty power rippled in the sky. The space continued to twist and turn as both torrent-like energies wrestled and tried to swallow each other.

Everyone was staring into the vortex above.

They were surprised, as the Nine Nether fighting spirit seemed to have the upper hand after the collision. Within that fighting spirit, thunder seemed to roar, and the cold energy from the Snake Troop fighting spirit could not penetrate it at all.

Dong!

The wrestling did not go on for long before the Snake Demon Halbert was shattered into pieces. The black feather dimmed greatly as apparently, the shattering of the halbert consumed a substantial amount of energy. This was why it was quickly shattered by a hand wave from Lu Kui, as it tried to carry the remaining power to attack him.

But Lu Kui looked dismayed. Anyone could see that the Nine Nether fighting spirit had a slight upper hand in the previous engagement.

"Is this the fighting spirit you wanted to teach me? That's not very impressive," Lu Kui said with a sullen face.

As the words came out, numerous people pouted as they could see the situation for themselves. The offense had caused a significant threat to Lu Kui, but he refused to admit it.

On the other hand, some people were secretly still wary of Mu Chen, as previously they thought he was just talking big. But now, this young man proved he really had an amazing talent for fighting spirit, and could not be belittled even though he was young.

Mu Chen heard what Lu Kui said, but he gave only a faint smile before he closed his eyes and spread out both his hands.

Grooo.

The vast power of the Nine Nether fighting spirit began to surge again. The strong fighting spirit shook, and finally beamed into light rays and shot towards the sky.

The light rays gathered and formed even more black feather swords.

These swords were as strong as the first one, and even the top powers let out a cold breath as more than a dozen swords gathered around.

One black feather sword had already caught Lu Kui off guard. If a dozen of them were to attack, even a Grade Six Sovereign would be extremely vexed!

"How did he manage to control the fighting spirit to such an extent?" Some top powers could not believe it. It was not easy for an ordinary commander to circulate the fighting spirit to such a level.

At a higher altitude, Nine Nether and Lu Wu watched as the former gave a smile, while the latter looked dismayed. He said coldly, "Looks like we have underestimated both of you. The kid has concealed his talent well. No wonder you were not anxious about it."

Shoo!

While the land was full of exclamations, Mu Chen did not hesitate as he swung his sleeves. Dozens of huge black feather swords shot out lightning fast towards Lu Kui.

The look now on Lu Kui's face was extremely stern. Although he was equally shocked by Mu Chen's ability in circulating the fighting spirit, he had to block the deadly offense first.

At this point in time, Lu Kui had to admit that Mu Chen was better than he was at comprehending the fighting spirit. At least, he knew that he would not be able to multiply the Snake Demon Halbert in numbers as easily as Mu Chen had.

"Snake Demon Shield!"

Lu Kui's hand formation changed quickly. He yelled, and the fighting spirit of the Snake Troop started to fluctuate. The fluctuations eventually

turned into a dark gray light shield with massive silhouettes of dark gray snakes gliding around the shield, giving out enormous spiritual energy fluctuations.

Just when the shield was formed, the black feather swords tore through the void and blasted out mercilessly.

Bang!

The crisp, clear sound could be heard, and ripples on the shield could be seen every time the black feather swords hit and burst on the Snake Demon Shield.

But as each feather sword burst, the snakes on the shields gave out a screeching sound, and the shield started to fluctuate rapidly.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The sounds of the broken feather swords continued one after another. When the final feather sword burst, the shield finally broke into pieces, revealing Lu Kui's hideous face.

Dong!

Lu Kui faced the last round of attacks by the feather swords with a hideous look. He did not step back, but he gathered all his vast fighting spirit on his fist. With all the power and might gathered together, he punched the last feather sword.

Boom!

The power punch not only burst the space but also shattered the feather sword, which could give severe injuries to a Grade Five Sovereign, into pieces!

All of the top powers exclaimed loudly as Lu Kui was, indeed, a formidable character.

Using one fist to burst the feather sword, Lu Kui seemed to have reached his maximum. He threw a stare at Mu Chen and gave an ugly laugh. "Ignorant lad, you think you can beat me?!"

Mu Chen looked at the imposing Lu Kui without any panic. Instead, he

smiled with interest and nodded slightly. With a cold breath, he muttered, "Come out..."

As his voice was softly projected, the Nine Nether fighting spirit started to rage again behind him. Within the raging fighting spirit, it seemed like something was breaking out of its shell.

A strange sense of fluctuation started to spread.

Lu Kui was the first to feel this fluctuation. His imposing stance disappeared almost in an instant. His hideous face turned pale, and his eyes were full of fear when he looked deeply into the raging fighting spirit. All his hair stood on end as if he had seen a ghost.

"How could this be possible?!"

Chapter 837: Spirit of Fighting Intent

Grooo!

The vast Nine Nether fighting spirit was raging like a storm, sweeping across the land. As the fighting spirit piled up, layer upon layer in the sky, it formed into huge waves behind Mu Chen.

While the fighting spirit was raging, everyone could feel a strange fluctuation emerging from it. The fluctuation was concealed, but it was undeniable. That slightest fluctuation could accelerate a person's heartbeat, bringing killing screams into their memories.

The eyes of the top powers narrowed and flickered. Finally, a few of the top powers, who had some understanding of the fighting spirit, recalled something that caused their expressions to harden with horror, as they looked at the Nine Nether fighting spirit wave with fear.

"This fluctuation... could it be?"

Lu Kui appeared pale, as he looked at the dark wave with incredulous eyes. Deep within that wave, the strange fluctuation caused his voice to crack.

"Spirit of Fighting Intent?"

Upon hearing the words, all of the spectators could not help but let out cold breaths. They had a shock in their eyes, as the name had blown them away.

Spirit of Fighting Intent?

It was said that only when one reached a very high level of comprehending the fighting spirit, is it then possible to cultivate such a thing that could bring out the true strength of the fighting spirit. But, it was tough to cultivate the Spirit of Fighting Intent, and it was said to be the prerequisite to becoming a war troop dispatcher.

The basic qualification to become a war troop dispatcher was to be able to develop a fighting spirit into the Spirit of Fighting Intent. However, to be able to reach such a level was too arduous for most.

Even Lu Kui, who had some talents and experience with dealing with the fighting spirit, was unable to do it. This was why they were blown away that Mu Chen had cultivated the Spirit of Fighting Intent!

"That is impossible! It is not easy to cultivate the Spirit of Fighting Intent! Stop being pretentious!" Lu Kui yelled angrily, his face distorted.

Although such fluctuations did feel like they were the Spirit of Fighting Intent, he refused to believe that this lad, who had just gotten in touch with any worldly affairs, was able to do achieve what he himself was unable to.

The rest of the spectators nodded their heads in agreement. Doubts surged in their eyes, as the cultivation of the Spirit of Fighting Intent could not be achieved by just anyone!

An ordinary commander could only actualize less than half of the strength of an army. Only a commander, who could cultivate the Spirit of Fighting Intent, was able to bring out the full force, or even more than that of an army!

Mu Chen's being able to cultivate the Spirit of Fighting Intent also meant that he possessed the qualifications to become a war troop dispatcher. If he became one, he would be one of the most highly sought-after people among the top powers in the the North Territory, as everyone knows a strong army could release daunting energy, when it was being controlled by a real war troop dispatcher!

The young man before their eyes was displaying such qualifications just now. How could anyone be so calm about it?

Even after seeing the doubts in the people's eyes, Mu Chen looked tranquil as usual. He stared at the trouble-maker, Lu Kui, then shot a sarcastic smile his way. He did not rebuke him, but simply took a deep breath and changed his hand formation.

Grooo!

The vast Nine Nether fighting spirit continued to rage behind him. Finally, a Nine Nether light pillar shot out. Within the lights, everyone saw

a pair of huge black wings spreading out. As it fanned out its wings, the pillar broke into pieces, and a black Nine Netherbird appeared in the sky, just above the sea of the fighting spirit.

The Nine Netherbird was covered with a black mist that was transformed by the fighting spirit. There were complicated and obscure engravings on its massive body.

Everyone was dumbfounded, watching the black Nine Netherbird. Stunned expressions filled their faces. At this point in time, they could no longer deny what was happening, as a Nine Netherbird, with a body full of the engravings of the fighting spirit, was indeed the Spirit of Fighting Intent!

In fact, it was a Spirit of Fighting Intent that genuinely belonged to the Nine Nether Troop. No one could have ever thought that Mu Chen could cultivate a Spirit of Fighting Intent from the Nine Nether Troop's fighting spirit!

All of the eyes of the Nine Nether Troop grew passionate, almost in a worshipping look, while they watched the slender figure above them. The Spirit of Fighting Intent, also known as the Nine Netherbird, was materialized by their willpower, and only Mu Chen had the ability to do this. He had brought honor and glory to the soldiers, who were once just an ordinary troop!

"Nine Nether Troop Wins!"

The orderly and thunderous cheer moved the hearts of the men and shook the earth.

"It was really the Spirit of Fighting Intent..."

On the other hand, Nine Nether and Lu Wu watched, equally astounded. Nine Nether knew that Mu Chen was qualified to be a war troop dispatcher, but she had never thought that he could cultivate the Nine Nether Spirit of Fighting Intent at this moment!

Compared to the shock that Nine Nether had, Lu Wu was even more terrified. He stared hard at Mu Chen, horror surging within his eyes. As a

clan leader of the Dragon Snake Sect, he knew precisely what consequences a commander that could cultivate the Spirit of Fighting Intent could bring to war.

"How could it be?"

Lu Kui's face was as white as a sheet. He stared blankly. He knew that he had lost the battle, once the Spirit of Fighting Intent was cultivated in front of him. He would never be able to stop an army with the Spirit of Fighting Intent under Mu Chen's control. The Spirit of Fighting Intent would significantly increase the strength of the Nine Nether Troop, bringing them to the next level!

Without any emotions in Mu Chen's eyes, he looked at Lu Kui, who was still in a daze. In a flash, he appeared on top of the Spirit of Fighting Intent, then pointed his thin finger towards Lu Kui.

The Nine Netherbird, which was formed by the Spirit of Fighting Intent, gave a loud chirp. The vast fighting spirit could be clearly felt, even from a thousand miles away, as the bird dashed out to the sky.

The wings of the bird were burning with fighting spirit. The moment it swept its wings out, a glaring light ray came shot through the void in the sky. The next moment, it appeared in mid-air above the Snake Troop. Then, like a sky sword, it poised itself at the Snake Troop forcefully.

The land cracked open immediately. Lu Kui's expression changed suddenly, and all of his hairs stood on end, as he could sense this deadly danger coming his way. He gave a loud growl, then circulated the fighting spirit of the Snake Troop furiously. Numerous light pillars emerged from the fighting spirit, rushing towards the glaring black ray in an attempt to block its offense.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

However, his defense was futile, as those fighting spirits were easily destroyed, shattering as they passed through the black ray. Finally, everyone witnessed the scene, when the black beam hit forcefully on the body of Lu Kui.

Pzzt!

A mouthful of blood was spat from Lu Kui's mouth. He collapsed, his chest facing down, while his body was thrown out to the swamp, leaving a deep hole of about a hundred feet. For a moment, the mud could not even fill up the pothole.

Pzzt!

The Snake Troop below suffered a similar forceful impact, as they all fainted after spitting out blood from their mouths. In an instant, the fighting spirit that was soaring in the sky dissipated. At this moment, it looked like, even if the lives of the Snake Troop could be saved, their power would still be greatly reduced!

The various forces watched blankly, as the Snake Troop was defeated with just a stroke. They did not recover from their states of dazed confusion for a long while. All of their eyes were filled with shock and wariness.

The fighting spirit of the Snake Troop was not any weaker than the Nine Nether Troop in the beginning. But, after the Spirit of Fighting Intent was cultivated, the latter achieved a crushing victory. Such a battle truly revealed the enormous gap between the two fighting spirits.

Lu Wu watched as Lu Kui and the Snake Troop suffered the defeat. His body shook uncontrollably, as he focused in on Mu Chen, his eyes surging with killing intent.

This Mu Chen was a daunting person, as he could manipulate the fighting spirit to such an extent at his young age. What if he turned out to be a fearsome threat to them in the future, when he became a war troop dispatcher?!

At that point, the entire Dragon Snake Sect would be wiped out by him instantly!

I cannot leave this endless threat behind!

This lad must die!

With killing intent surging intensively in his eyes, Lu Wu did not have any hesitation, as he darted out towards Mu Chen.

"You dare!" Nine Nether yelled fiercely, as a long, black feather sword appeared in her hand. Clenching it, she immediately beamed out behind Lu Wu.

However, Lu Wu gritted his teeth and ignored the dangerous move made by Nine Nether. With furious spiritual energy gushing out from his palms, he slapped on top of Mu Chen from behind.

Violent spiritual energy swept towards Mu Chen. The expression on Nine Nether's face changed drastically. She did not expect that Lu Wu would be so determined to kill Mu Chen, especially with the risk of sustaining critical injuries from her as punishment! Apparently, Lu Wu had realized that, if Mu Chen continued to improve on his own, he would be a dangerous threat in the future!

"Mu Chen, be careful!"

When Mu Chen heard the voice of Nine Nether, he lifted his head, just in time to meet with the killing palm accompanied by Lu Wu's full force attack. His body tightened immediately upon impact.

At this moment, he was like a cheetah, ready to pounce on his prey. A fierce radiance shot out from his eyes.

If you want to kill me, I will make sure you pay a bloody price!

Chapter 838: A Life for a Life

Boom!

The vast, ocean-like palm wind was accompanied by mighty spiritual energy. It was as if a huge mountain had dropped from the sky and enveloped Mu Chen. Such an intense offense was enough to scare the hell out of any Grade Five Sovereign.

Lu Wu was desperate to kill Mu Chen.

As the spiritual palm appeared before Mu Chen, his eyes surged with fearsome radiance. No doubt Mu Chen was stunned by the killing move from Lu Wu, but he did not show any fear on his face as now he could make use of the fighting spirit from the Nine Nether Troop to increase his strength to a daunting level.

With such a power, he could manage a regular Grade Six Sovereign.

Eek!

The Nine Nether Spirit of Fighting Intent below him immediately let out a loud and long scream towards the sky. The complex engravings that wrapped on its body started to squirm and spread towards Mu Chen at an astounding speed.

Within a short period of time, Mu Chen's skin was covered by the same engravings as the Nine Netherbird.

Boom!

Suddenly, a blazing glare shot out from Mu Chen's eyes as he gave a long shriek. Bursting with majestic spiritual energy, he shot towards the sky. The fighting spirit roared, emanating a visible air current.

Mu Chen's eyes were on fire as his body seemed to have many fearsome beasts running and roaring around it, bringing about a destructive force that was way beyond his own in the form of the Nine Nether Fighting Spirit.

In general, most of the commanders controlled the fighting spirit like an

artifact. They would not dare to absorb it into their body, as the fighting spirit was extremely violent and contained immeasurable willpower from the soldiers. If anything went wrong and the body went out of control, it would immediately explode.

Only when the fighting spirit was able to condense into the Spirit of Fighting Intent would a commander be able to achieve exquisite control of it. Thus, it could temporarily be absorbed into the body for its own use.

But of course, Mu Chen was currently unable to perfect his control. Consequently, his internal body trembled while the fighting spirit poured into him. If it weren't for the Dragon-Phoenix body, which was strong enough to withstand the vast fighting spirit, he would have landed himself in serious trouble.

"Wish to kill me? Fat chance!"

Mu Chen let out a low roar and blasted out his palm. There was no trick with his attack. He circulated his own power and the vast fighting spirit in full force, and the combined strength could easily smash and bust the space.

Lu Wu's expression changed as he saw Mu Chen's attack. His face suddenly stiffened as the palm attack was not to defend his offense but was aimed right at his chest.

The sudden change caused Lu Wu's eyelid to twitch. He did not think that Mu Chen would give up on his defense and decide to fight using his life!

"You are courting your own death!"

But Lu Wu was not a pushover. He understood that he would not be able to evade the joint attack from Mu Chen on the front and Nine Nether at the back. His eyes flickered with daunting radiance. Without any hesitation, the mighty palm came crashing down, and hit right on Mu Chen's chest with lightning speed.

Before Lu Wu's palm could come into contact with his chest, Mu Chen released a golden ray from his body. The Dragon-Phoenix Golden Armor

cast out, and the Spirit of the Real Dragons surfaced on his skin around the chest area. With a low roar, the golden ray transformed into layers of dragon scales that wrapped around Mu Chen's body.

All his defenses broke out instantaneously. At the same time, Mu Chen's palm, which held a powerful fighting spirit, hit Lu Wu's chest hard.

Bang!

Mu Chen's body was shaken by the rippling majestic fighting spirit which started spreading from Lu Wu's palm wind. He bounced off of it backward and landed on the ground. A huge circle of land around him collapsed, causing deep cracks to quickly extend out.

On the other hand, Lu Wu was not any better off. That strike from Mu Chen was just as powerful as his palm. His body darted backward like a cannon. His chest sank deep into his body while he spat out fresh blood along with some broken pieces from his internal organs.

Pzzt!

Suddenly a black feather sword penetrated his chest from the back. A purple flame was burning on top of the sword.

Argh!

Lu Wu let out a terrifying scream. He turned his head, and his face was twisted in pain. With a cold look in her eyes, Nine Nether circulated the Unperishable Flame, burning his body as she stood behind him

Anger surged within Nine Nether's eyes as she said coldly, "If you wish to take a life, leave yours first!"

Lu Wu trembled with intense fear in his eyes, as he knew if Nine Nether continued her Unperishable Flame, he would undoubtedly perish.

"I will fight it out with you!"

Lu Wu let out a roar and formed a seal with both hands. His body inflated quickly, and a daunting spiritual fluctuation exuded from it.

The expression on Nine Nether's face quickly changed as she drew her sword away and quickly retreated.

Boom!

Lu Wu's body exploded in a flash. The dark gray spiritual energy burst like a loud and beautiful firework in the sky. The firework looked appealing, but it was filled with the chilling intention of self-destruction.

Although Nine Nether retreated quickly, the explosion hit her slightly, and a tinge of blood could be seen on her lips.

The various forces were all terrified by the scene, as no one would have thought that Lu Wu would resort to self-destructing. He was a genuine Grade Six Sovereign!

Minutes before, he was still holding an advantageous position. But now he had self-destructed. The situation had changed so quickly that everyone was dumbfounded.

Nine Nether suspended herself in the sky not far away. As she observed the violent storm of spiritual energy, her eyes narrowed when she saw a gray light flash across the space. The light dashed into the swamp hole where Lu Kui previously had been, and it swept up a body towards the sky. It was unknown if the body was dead or alive. Within a few seconds, both of them vanished.

That gray light belonged to Lu Wu's soul, and he saved Lu Kui with the remaining strength from his self-destruction. He could not rescue the rest of the Snake Troop, so he escaped with only Lu Kui.

The remaining Snake Troop lost their morale as Lu Wu abandoned them. The previous circulation of fighting spirit was dispersed as they started to flee in all different directions.

These soldiers were able to release an enormous amount of power when they formed into an army, but once they lost their fighting spirit, they were once again ordinary beings. Their fates had already been sealed when they were on this dangerous battlefield. Therefore, Nine Nether took a quick look and did not bother to chase after them.

She flitted to the location where Mu Chen was shot down with a worried expression on her face. After all, the deadly blow from Lu Wu had the

power to kill a Grade Five Sovereign in seconds.

Shoo!

Just when Nine Nether was ready to check on Mu Chen's situation, a light ray beamed out from the enormous pothole and landed in the sky with a stumble.

As soon as the figure appeared, numerous gazes were cast towards it. His top was torn into pieces and blood was all over his lips and body. A hideous, shocking wound extended across his chest.

Sst.

The various forces let out a cold breath as soon as they saw his injuries. What was even more shocking to them was that Mu Chen did not seem to be bothered by his injuries at all.

"Are you alright?" Nine Nether quickly showed up beside Mu Chen as she could not help but frown when she saw the terrifying wounds on his body.

"He is still a noob if he wants to risk his life fighting with me."

Mu Chen wiped the blood from his lips and grinned. He pulled off all the torn pieces of clothing revealing a golden ray flickering underneath his open wound. The wound was healing itself at an astounding speed.

Nine Nether heaved a sigh of relief when she saw this. She had forgotten that Mu Chen was now a Humanoid Divine Beast with superb self-recovery in his physical body. It was no wonder that he dared to exchange his life for Lu Wu's.

Lu Wu would never, ever have thought that the immense impact he dealt with his offense was not at all terrifying to Mu Chen.

Mu Chen lowered his head and saw that the Spirit of the Real Dragons underneath the skin around his chest was dimmed. Apparently, it was not easy to take on a full-blown attack from Lu Wu. If it were not for the Dragon-Phoenix Golden Armor and the Spirit of the Real Dragons, he would have been killed by that palm.

A Grade Six Sovereign was not easy to deal with. If it were not for the strength from the Nine Nether fighting spirit, he would have had to stay away from top powers of such caliber.

The wound on Mu Chen was healing quickly on its own. Both Mu Chen and Nine Nether exchanged gazes and fixed their eyes on the rest of the various forces who were still around.

Those people shivered when the gazes were cast over them. Their original plan was to sit around, hoping to gain some benefits from the fights. But now it seemed like Mu Chen and Nine Nether were still standing strong, especially with the Nine Nether Troop, who was exuding a daunting sense of morale and fighting spirit from below.

Nine Nether Palace had completely taken over the entire situation.

The various forces looked at each other and sighed. Without any hesitation, all of them retreated from the swamp.

Both Mu Chen and Nine Nether finally loosened up when they saw the retreat. Although the rest of them could not be compared with the Dragon Snake Sect, it would be a hassle if they were entangled in more fights. Now that they had retreated, it would be the best situation for both of them.

Mu Chen and Nine Nether waited for all of them to retreat before they set their passionate gazes on the relic deep within the swamp once again. This Grade Three Relic was finally theirs.

Chapter 839: Refining Meteorfall Alchemy

Finally, the last batch of the forces left the swamp. Mu Chen and Nine Nether lowered themselves to the ground just outside of the black swamp.

As black mist rose in the swamp, a pungent odor lingered in the air, indicating that the mist was poisonous. Deep in the swamp, shadowy black figures could be seen passing through the mud, exuding signs of alert.

Mu Chen and Nine Nether exchanged gazes, before Mu Chen gave a hand signal. The Nine Nether Troop immediately flit forwards, encircling the boundary of the swamp.

"Keep a watch outside. Don't let anyone disturb us." Mu Chen gave his order. This place was not suitable for many people to enter, so it was best to place the troop on guard around the perimeters of the swamp.

"Yes!"

The earth seemed to tremble, due to the thunderous yells of confirmation from the thousands of soldiers.

"Let's go!"

Mu Chen and Nine Nether nodded, looking at each other. Both of them then beamed into lights, before dashing through the black poisonous mist, deeper into the swamp. They were in search of that relic!

The spiritual energy majestically surrounded them, as the purple flame from the unperishable flame blazed into a fire, burning off all of the poisonous mist. Although the toxic fog was considered to be dangerous, it was not a threat to the pair of travelers, as the flame was able to protect them.

Shoo!

Both Mu Chen and Nine Nether maxed out their speeds at this moment. Even though they had already frightened off the various forces, they knew that other forces may also discover this relic very soon. To avoid any situational changes, they had to refine the Meteorfall Alchemy from its

Grade Three Relic status as quickly as possible.

Boom!

As they journeyed deeper into the swamp, a sudden glow shot out. They could smell a stench charging directly at them.

Nine Nether kept calm. With a flick of her finger, a black feather spiritual energy, which was burning with a purple flame, burst forth, shooting through the glow. Immediately, the fire burned away everything within that light glow.

When the glow turned into ash, Mu Chen saw an ugly-looking black, poisonous crocodile. The fierce crocodile had smelly saliva that was dripping from its mouth, as well as a strong spiritual energy that was surrounding it.

Even though Nine Nether was able to kill the poisonous crocodile with one stroke, she showed no signs of delight on her face. Instead, she knit her willow-like eyebrows. Mu Chen, who was by her side, also frowned.

Suddenly the swamp began to vibrate. Countless, faint lights began to glow up from the mud. In the blink of an eye, numerous poisonous black crocodiles began sprouting out from the mud, all of their blood-shot eyes locking onto Mu Chen and Nine Nether.

They knew instantly that the both of them could not conquer such a vast number of crocodiles. And, although they were not afraid of being killed by the crocodiles, they were worried that, if they were to be stalled much longer, it would significantly delay their refining of the Meteorfall Alchemy.

"What should we do now?" Mu Chen looked at Nine Nether, feeling a bit helpless. It seemed like they would have to force their ways in.

Nine Nether muttered to herself for a moment, before tapping her foot. Instantly, the majestic spiritual energy transformed into an incredibly huge Nine Netherworld Bird. The overbearing aura of coercion that was emanating from the divine beast was overwhelming.

Pzzt Pzzt!

The poisonous crocodiles began to stir up a commotion, as they could feel the divine pressure that was being exuded by the Nine Netherworld Bird. Some of the crocodiles retreated quickly. These were the ones that had low intelligences, yet even they could at least sense that they were unable to beat an opponent with such a high level of coercion power.

Mu Chen's eyes brightened upon seeing this. He stepped forward, releasing his Dragon-Phoenix Real Spirit from his chest and his back. An aura of extreme tyrannical coercion was released at the same time.

As soon as he released his Dragon-Phoenix Real Spirit, all of the crocodiles were terrified. They started to flee in all directions.

The pressure that the Dragon-Phoenix Real Spirit brought was much stronger than the Nine Netherworld Bird's. After all, the Nine Netherworld Bird ranked slightly behind the Dragon-Phoenix Real Spirit. Unless the Nine Netherworld Bird coudl evolve again into the legendary Undying Bird, it would be unable to match up against the Dragon-Phoenix Real Spirit.

In just moments, the crocodiles had all fled.

Mu Chen grinned at Nine Nether. "How was that?!"

Nine Nether looked annoyed, as she faced the smug Mu Chen. However, even she had to admit that Mu Chen's Dragon-Phoenix Real Spirit was quite impressive, rivaling even her own divine beast.

Nine Nether felt mixed feelings about this. She was unsure as to when exactly that weak, young boy that first was introduced to her began to catch up to her, blooming on his own gradually.

Nine Nether felt proud of Mu Chen, yet at the same time, she felt melancholy. Perhaps sooner or later, she would not even be able to chide him, as he may surpass her in rank. She needed to speed up her cultivation as well!

"When I can fully revive the blood of the Undying Bird, your Dragon-Phoenix Real Spirit will no longer be superior." Although Nine Nether was filled with her own thoughts, she drew her lips tight, before speaking

disdainfully to Mu Chen.

Mu Chen just gave her a smile, as he knew that Nine Nether was proud and unwilling to show any sign of weakness in her words. So, he did not tease her any further. Instead, with a hand signal, he flit deeper into the swamp.

As they journeyed, they discovered even more fearsome creatures. Fortunately, they were able to make use of the pressure that was being exuded by the divine beasts in order to pass through all of the obstacles. Moreover, the pressure also enabled them to travel at the fastest speed, all while expending very little energy.

After ten minutes, Mu Chen and Nine Nether slowed down. They could vaguely see an outline of an ancient temple amid the poisonous fog.

Shoo!

Suddenly, two figures flit out. As they did so, the fog immediately cleared, as though they were being covered by a shield. Their visions instantly became clear.

Nine Nether and Mu Chen were slightly stunned, when they looked in front of them. As far as their eyes could see, there was only a vast land, filled with ruins.

Amid the ruins, an old and wrecked temple stood tall, exuding a sense of ancient mystery. In fact, the temple seemed to have crossed over from the ancient times. The mere sight of it was truly breathtaking.

"Let's get ready!"

Nine Nether, after having regained her senses, looked at Mu Chen and said, "Let's split up, so we can do this as quickly as possible. Any questions?"

Mu Chen laughed, while making a hand gesture that signified no. After seeing his confirmation, Nine Nether did not hesitate, before she made her way to one of the halls in the wrecked temple.

Mu Chen did not delay either, as he turned to another ruined hall and

flit into it. Once there, he saw scattered bones that were lying around on the floor. Apparently, the bones' owners had been waging a fierce battle when they died.

Even though a few thousand years had passed, the entire hall was still filled with a spirit of tragic energy. Mu Chen stared at the bones with solemnity, before he bowed at the scene. No matter what, these people had been fighting for The Great Thousand World in the ancient wars.

"Excuse me!"

Mu Chen spoke softly inside the hall. He then formed a formation with both of his hands, causing a majestic spiritual energy to break out. He then used the energy to create a huge vortex in his palms. The vortex possessed an extremely strong suction force.

The ground started to rumble, as a black qi began to waft out from the bones. The black qi was then transformed into numerous black glow beams, as they were all sucked into the huge Spiritual Energy Whirlpool within the palms of Mu Chen.

These black qi were Meteorfall gases, which were unusual gases that had been unified. They had been taken from the special force of the Meteorfall Battlefield and the Sovereign Sea, which had come from the bodies of those top powers who had perished.

The Meteorfall gas gathered rapidly within the Spiritual Energy Whirlpool. Then, when it had condensed into its final state, a glimmer of light dashed out from the Spiritual Energy Whirlpool.

With suction from Mu Chen's palm, the glimmer of light dropped to float in front of him. The size of its glow was about the same as a longan, and it was mellow and full. The pitch-black pill rotated in front of him, emitting a similar fluctuation as the Meteorfall gas. Obviously, this was the Meteorfall Alchemy, the most important resource in this Meteorfall battlefield!

Mu Chen waved his sleeves, safekeeping the Meteorfall Alchemy within them. He then circulated his spiritual energy again, continuing to absorb the rest of the Meteorfall gas.

The remaining Meteorfall gas allowed Mu Chen to refine another five Meteorfall Alchemies. When the last Meteorfall Alchemy had been extracted, all of the spiritual energy in the bones had been completely depleted. Once this happened, the skeletons all immediately turned into ashes.

Mu Chen let out a sigh. With a swing of his sleeves, the ashes whistled, before being condensed into various unnamed dominoes, stacked neatly on the ground.

After doing this, Mu Chen bowed in respect again, then left the hall. For the next hour, Mu Chen found 18 halls and refined 53 Meteorfall Alchemies, which was an abundant harvest for him.

As Mu Chen entered into the last hall, which was deep within the relic, he repeated his same pattern of refining formalities. However, before he could continue refining the Meteorfall Alchemy, his expression suddenly changed. He encircled himself with his spiritual energy immediately.

His eyes were locked onto a spot deep within the hall. There, a gray-robed figure sat cross-legged and alone.

Mu Chen narrowed his eyes, carefully watching the gray-robed figure.

There is a living being in here?!

Chapter 840: Gray Robed Silhouette

Deep in the ruins of the great hall, a gray-robed silhouette sat quietly, as if immovable. When Mu Chen saw this shadow, his eyes suddenly narrowed.

This was because he found that the gray-robed silhouette was not the same as the skeleton he had seen before. A wizened face could still be seen under those robes, but Mu Chen could not feel a trace of life from his body.

Dust had gathered on the gray-robed figure. Although he vaguely perceived that there seemed to be Meteorfall gas contained within this body, he also sensed an aura of danger.

It was a rather eerie occurrence that a person could retain his form for thousands of years after his fall.

Mu Chen's gaze flickered. He did not step further into the hall, but instead began to cautiously retreat. The Meteorfall Battlefield was full of deadly crises, and if he was not careful, he would end up being buried in this place, too. Mu Chen was not willing to perish here, just because he wanted to obtain some Meteorfall Alchemy.

Rustle.

Mu Chen's footsteps glided quietly across the ground. However, just as Mu Chen was about to retreat from the hall, the gray-robed figure suddenly shivered and lifted his wizened face. His sunken eyes flashed an unsettling scarlet and black.

Boom!

Mu Chen's face twisted and without any hesitation, he swiftly backed away.

The gray robed figure's withered palm looked like a boney claw and shot out fiercely. A black obsidian light condensed in his palm like a black hole, and a terrifying suction force burst out.

Mu Chen's swiftly retreating body froze. The dreadful suction force was

impossible to resist, and with a swoop, his body swept towards the gray-robed figure.

Mu Chen's face twisted in horror, as he had apparently not expected the gray-robed figure to be so powerful. The simple display of this move alone was far more powerful than Lu Wu's moves had been.

Mu Chen was sucked quickly into the hall, and as he approached, he could see the dark scarlet-black color of the gray-robed figure's sunken eyes, which were so full of destruction and fury that it was hardly human.

Not a human? Mu Chen's heart dropped. Could this gray robe be one of the Extraterritorial Race?"

Mu Chen's gaze flashed rapidly. He gnashed his teeth and behind his back, a golden glow surged as the Spirit of the Real Phoenix emerged, transforming into a pair of massive phoenix wings.

With a sweep of the phoenix wings, a hurricane roared as Mu Chen's body steadied. With another flap of his wings, he appeared above a stone pillar. Clenching his fist, the Great Meru Demonic Pillar emerged, its massive shadow bringing about a demonic force that smashed brutally onto the gray-robed figure.

However, in the face of Mu Chen's wild attack, the gray-robed figure just stretched out a dry palm and gently clapped. The loud clang of gold and iron clashing resounded as the ruins of the hall collapsed.

Mu Chen's figure was blown back, and he looked solemnly at the ruins of the collapsed hall. The gray-robed figure still sat silently and unperturbed in place. Mu Chen's attack had not shaken him in the slightest.

That pair of eerie scarlet-black eyes filled with destruction and fury landed on Mu Chen once again.

Mu Chen's skin shivered and with the fanning of his phoenix wings, he vanished into thin air.

Whoosh!

The moment Mu Chen disappeared, a withered hand glowed with an obsidian light, piercing through the place where Mu Chen had stood, and the gray-robed figure slowly appeared in the sky.

Mu Chen, who was standing a hundred feet away, looked on in horror. The gray-robed figure was too swift, and if he had not activated the Spirit of the Real Phoenix and increased his speed, he would have been killed on the spot.

However, even so, he also felt that the attack of the gray-robed figure seemed to be growing crazier and more volatile. If he were caught, he would certainly fail to counteract it. After all, the Nine Nether Troop was not present, and without the support of the Nine Nether Troop's combat intent aura, it was clear that he could not stand up to such a powerful man.

Whoosh!

Just as Mu Chen's thoughts desperately flashed through his mind, the space in front of him had already undulated yet again as the gray-robed figure rushed out. A fierce barrage of offensive attacks shrouded him, forcing him to back away.

Boom!

Mu Chen's body landed on the stone pillar, causing it to disintegrate into powder, and as it scattered, the gray-robed figure appeared before him like a specter, and his scarlet palms landed mercilessly on Mu Chen's crown.

Mu Chen's face twisted in terror, hurriedly activating the Great Solar Undying Body in defense.

Crash!

Just as he completed conjuring his seals, a black feather sword burning with purple flames shot forward.

The gray-robed figure dealt out a blow with his palm and scarlet-black light surged, directly disintegrating the black feather sword, but when the black feather sword was crushed, its purple flames wound around his palm, and terrifying heat emanated from them, scorching the gray-robed

figure's arm.

The gray-robed figure backed away, and suddenly a strange scarlet-black light emerged on the surface of his body. This light eroded the purple flames, extinguishing them little by little.

Mu Chen wiped the blood from the corners of his mouth. Beside him, Nine Nether's silhouette flashed as she looked at the gray-robed figure gravely and said, "What exactly is that thing?"

"I don't know, I somehow just encountered it." Mu Chen shook his head, laughing bitterly.

Roar!

The gray-robed figure extinguished the purple flames on his arm, and it was only then that he saw the two. A deep growl rumbled in his throat, and his bright red eyes looked extremely ferocious, containing waves of destruction.

He glared at Mu Chen and Nine Nether, seemingly trying to tear them apart again, but his body suddenly stopped, and the scarlet-black in his eyes weakened a little as a hint of a struggle loomed on his wizened face.

However, this struggle only emerged momentarily and was quickly diffused by ferocity and eeriness. The pupils in his sunken eyes transformed into inverted triangles, like a merciless venomous serpent.

Nine Nether saw the change in his eyes, and as her face twisted in horror she exclaimed, "Invasion of evil energy?"

"Invasion of evil energy?" Mu Chen froze.

"His body has been invaded by the power of the Extraterritorial Race, thus he could retain his physical body for thousands of years, but his willpower has also been invaded by the evil energy and is now full of destruction."

Nine Nether stated gravely, "Leave quickly. I'm afraid this fellow had already attained the rank of Ninth Grade Sovereign when he was alive. Now that he is severely injured, his power is still that of an Eighth Grade

Sovereign. We are unable to fight him!"

Upon hearing this, Mu Chen nodded. Although, if he could obtain the Meteorfall gas in his body and cultivate Meteorfall Alchemy... But it was clear that they did not have the chance at the moment.

The two retreated hurriedly simultaneously, but their bodies were still tense. As spiritual energy surrounded them, they stared guardedly at the gray-robed figure.

Roar!

The gray-robed figure stared at the two with his scarlet-black eyes and suddenly growled. His palms surged out, and a gush of black and red aura transformed into two massive scarlet-black hands, tearing directly through the space and charging towards the two as fast as lightning.

In the face of such an evil energy, even Mu Chen and Nine Nether did not dare to engage and chose to hurriedly retreat.

Boom! Crash!

One by one, the ruined halls collapsed entirely under the destruction caused by the gray-robed figure's attack. Smoke and dust permeated the air as Mu Chen and Nine Nether backed away hastily. They both felt that the gray-robed figure's attacks seemed to be getting faster and faster.

His power seemed to be reviving bit by bit.

This discovery caused Mu Chen and Nine Nether's hearts to sink. If this gray-robed figure restored his power, they wouldn't even have the chance to run.

Nine Nether gritted her teeth as she yelled at Mu Chen, "You leave first!"

Mu Chen knitted his brows as he dealt a blow towards Nine Nether. Spiritual energy landed on her, causing her to fly out of the way. "I have the wings of the Real Phoenix, you leave."

Nine Nether, however, ignored Mu Chen and rushed forward, for she knew that once she retreated, with Mu Chen's ability, it would be impossible for him to withstand the gray-robed figure.

Mu Chen smiled in exasperation as he helped Nine Nether with all his might. He clearly would not abandon her.

However, even with their alliance, it was difficult for the two to compete against the gray-robed figure. They would have been defeated long ago if they had not had some means.

Nonetheless, they were in a sticky situation.

Nine Nether gritted her teeth and stated solemnly, "I'll force him away, then you have to take me away."

Mu Chen's expression twisted, for it seemed that the means Nine Nether intended to exert would have a great impact on her, but at this time, it seemed that there was no other way and thus, he could only nod gravely.

Nine Nether took a deep breath, and in the depths of her eyes, purple flames began to burn.

Buzz!

However, just as Nine Nether was prepared to use the means of causing destruction to both herself and the enemy, all of a sudden, an ancient buzzing sound rang in the ruins. Mu Chen's expression changed. He was astonished to see countless beams of white light shoot out suddenly from the ruins. The white light was suspended in mid-air, and with a careful look, one could see they were actually blank dominoes!

These dominoes were what Mu Chen had set up for Sovereigns who had perished here.

"This is?"

Nine Nether was shocked at the scene before her.

Whoosh!

The countless blank dominoes swept out like a storm around the gray-robed figure, shining white lights onto his body.

Buzz!

The white light seemed to do great harm to the gray-robed figure, under

which the scarlet-black aura began to melt while the grey-robed figure roared bitterly.

Mu Chen and Nine Nether were surprised at this. Who would expect that Mu Chen's prior random behavior would lead to such an outcome?

The scarlet-black aura around the body of the gray-robed figure grew fainter and fainter, and after a few minutes, it completely dissipated. The ferocious look on his wizened face disappeared and was replaced by relief.

And as the gray-robed figure's face gradually returned to normal, there seemed to be a palace-like ancient symbol emerging on his forehead.

Nine Nether caught the ancient symbol with her sharp gaze and upon seeing it, she was utterly shocked and gasped, "Primordial Celestial Palace?!"

Chapter 841: Xiao Qingyun

"Primordial Celestial Palace?"

When these four words had left Nine Nether's mouth, Mu Chen jerked with a shock. His eyes were filled with disbelief, as he glanced at the gray-robed figure.

He had not thought that this strange man in front of him could actually be one of the members of the legendary mysterious Primordial Celestial Palace?! This was the first time that he had encountered such a being, who knew of this mysterious Celestial Palace after having been in the Tianluo Continent for such a long time.

"He's a member of the Primordial Celestial Palace? Did you get the wrong person?" Mu Chen swallowed hard, continuing to stare at the gray-robed figure in disbelief. He still just could not believe that he could obtain the information that he so greatly desired, especially after just entering the Meteorfall Battlefield.

"I wouldn't recognize him wrongly, as the unique spiritual symbol on his forehead is what the members of the Primordial Celestial Palace all possess. It would appear naturally, if one cultivates the Divine Art from the Celestial Palace, and it cannot be replicated by other objects."

Nine Nether stated this confidently. After all, she was from the Ninenether Bird Clan, which made her aware of many secrets from the primordial ages. Thus, she had some insider understanding of the Primordial Celestial Palace.

Mu Chen heaved a sigh of relief. His gaze had been intensely focused on the gray-robed figure. The figure's ferocious expression, held within his strange scarlet-black eyes, had now dissipated entirely, replaced by a gentler expression.

Boom! Boom!

When the scarlet-black color of the gray-robed figure's eyes had dissipated entirely, the numerous bone dominoes that surrounded him

began to explode, disintegrating into spots of light, then vanishing.

When the countless spots of light had dissipated, it was as if they could see countless silhouettes, but only vaguely. The silhouettes turned, then bowed slightly to Mu Chen, as if they were thanking him for arranging their bones in a proper way. After these silhouettes had bowed in gratitude, they turned into spots of light, then vanished entirely from this world.

Mu Chen sighed, then clasped his fists, returning the gesture of respect, as he faced towards where the spots of light had just dissipated. In this posture, he thanked them for helping him at this crucial moment.

After Nine Nether discovered what Mu Chen had done, she sighed and remarked, "Thanks to your gathering of their broken bones, they were able to retain their last traces of willpower, which caused them to sense the evil energies. This activated their final shred of willpower, allowing them to join forces in order to banish the figure's evil energy."

Mu Chen smiled bitterly, as he obviously had not imagined that his casual act would have created such consequences.

"How is he now? Is he still alive?" Mu Chen's eyes turned back to the gray-robed figure. If the latter was really a man from the Primordial Celestial Palace, then he would probably know a wealth of information about the Primordial Celestial Palace.

"Haha! I fell thousands of years ago, when the evil energy entered my body and sealed my willpower. Although it also preserved my body, it was only a superficial illusion. Now that the evil spirit has dissipated, my body should soon be reduced to ashes." A slightly hoarse voice suddenly rang out gently, relief evident in his aged voice.

Mu Chen and Nine Nether were astonished, before realizing that the gray-robed figure had come to his senses, a light now twinkling in his eyes. However, anyone could tell that this twinkling was the last radiance of a man's setting sun, as it was clear that he would die soon.

The gray-robed figure, having regained his senses, now glanced towards the two. He bowed deeply. "Thank you for ending my suffering. It was

torture being invaded by that evil energy."

Mu Chen and Nine Nether hurriedly bowed back in respect. "Elder, you are too polite. You fell while carrying out your duty to protect the Great Thousand World, so that the next generation, like us, could live in freedom. Hence, we are honored to be of any assistance to you."

The gray-robed figure smiled gently. "My physical body will not be able to sustain much longer. Thus, I am unable to show my gratitude for your generous help. But, if you would like to know anything, I am glad to tell you as much as I can."

Clearly, he could tell that Mu Chen and Nine Nether were very curious about his identity as one of the members of the Primordial Celestial Palace. Mu Chen could not hide his glee, as he clasped his fists respectfully. "Is Elder a member of the Primordial Celestial Palace?"

"I am the Chief Disciple of the Fourth Hall Master of the Primordial Celestial Palace, Xiao Qingyun." The gray-robed figure smiled. He was clearly proud of his identity and of where he hailed from.

"The Fourth Hall Master?" Mu Chen and Nine Nether looked at each other, a bit confused. This was a term that was quite foreign to them.

"The Primordial Celestial Palace had seven halls. Each hall had a master. Above the seven hall masters, would be the Master of the Celestial Palace."

Xiao Qingyun, seeing the bewilderment on the pair's faces, knit his brows in a frown. Melancholy flit across his gaze. He then asked hesitantly, "I'm not sure what the Primordial Celestial Palace is like in the Great Thousand World now..."

Mu Chen smiled bitterly, before replying, "Elder, the Primordial Celestial Palace no longer exists..."

Xiao Qingyun's expression froze. He remained silent for a few moments, his entire being becoming instantly downcast. He then murmured, "So, even the Primordial Celestial Palace failed to withstand the great calamity..."

"Elder, it's been said that the Primordial Celestial Palace is now hidden deep within the space of the Tianluo Continent, and that it cannot be found by ordinary people. However, the Primordial Celestial Palace has something that I need! Thus, I would like to enter it. I was wondering if you would be able to help me?" Mu Chen asked this cautiously, as he glanced somewhat nervously at Xiao Qingyun.

Upon hearing this, Xiao Qingyun froze, before smiling bitterly. "I'm sorry. If anyone has kept the Primordial Celestial Palace hidden, that would be the Master of the Celestial Palace. He is extremely powerful, and if he truly wanted it to remain hidden, I'm afraid that I wouldn't know how to locate it either."

Mu Chen's heart turned cold upon hearing this, as he had hoped that Xiao Qingyun would be able to give him some information. Mu Chen had never imagined that he would know even less about the situation than him.

Seeing Mu Chen's dejected expression, Xiao Qingyun coughed awkwardly, then remarked, "Don't be too anxious. Even though I don't know the whereabouts of the Primordial Celestial Palace, I think my mentor, the Fourth Hall Master, would know."

"The Fourth Hall Master?" Mu Chen's head was beginning to hurt. Such an ancient character would have fallen long ago. Moreover, if he had to search for him, he might as well just search for the Primordial Celestial Palace straight in the Tianluo Continent. Both were needles in a haystack!

"It's true that the Hall Master had also fallen in this battle. However, with his capability, his willpower would still be lingering. Hence, if both of you can locate it, you should be able to obtain information about the Primordial Celestial Palace." Xiao Qingyun sighed.

Mu Chen froze, then looked at Nine Nether. The Fourth Hall Master of the Primordial Celestial Palace should also have the capability of an Earthly Sovereign, which meant there was a high possibility that his willpower would be hidden within an Earthly Sovereign Secret Treasure!

However, finding an Earthly Sovereign Secret Treasure, which would be

concealed by a great array of the heavens and the earth, would be extremely challenging. In fact, it was something that even Mandela may not absolutely be confident in achieving. Hence, with their lesser abilities, the pair doubted whether it would be possible for them to achieve it.

Xiao Qingyun smiled at the two, as he searched for something in his robes. Finding it, he took out a black compass, which had strange light symbols glowing vaguely upon it.

"Although I have been as good as dead for thousands of years, I still know about the changes that have occurred in this battlefield. This Spiritual Compass is an object of the Primordial Celestial, which is capable of exploring the strange power of this battlefield. It was originally the Hall Master's. It still has a trace of his mark, so it will give you some guidance on your approach to the site where he fell."

Mu Chen's eyes lit up. As he took the black compass, his heart beat faster. He now understood the strange power of this battlefield. It was the Meteorfall gas that they needed the most now!

That was to say, as long as they possessed the compass, they would know the direction of these ruins! This was extremely beneficial for their quest to obtain the Meteorfall gas and to cultivate the Meteorfall Alchemy.

Furthermore, this compass could also guide them in searching for where the Fourth Hall Master of Primordial Celestial Palace had fallen. There was the true Earthly Sovereign Secret Treasure, and if they found it, it would be a great advantage for the Daluo Territory!

Mu Chen and Nine Nether glanced at each other, surprise written in their gazes. Xiao Qingyun had truly given them a great gift!

"This is the last thing that I can do to help you." Xiao Qingyun smiled. His physical body was glowing, as it disintegrated slowly. Clearly, he had reached his limit, having persisted for so long.

Mu Chen and Nine Nether clasped their fists together, showing their respect and gratitude. Admiration rose in their hearts for this Sovereign, who had fallen to protect the Great Thousand World.

"Before my willpower dissipates entirely, please let my body contribute one last thing." Xiao Qingyun smiled, as majestic Meteorfall gases surged out from within his body, transforming into Meteorfall Alchemy pills, like a mighty current. They then moved to hover around Mu Chen and Nine Nether.

Mu Chen and Nine Nether stared in shock, as there were around 200 Meteorfall Alchemy pills now surrounding them, which was a terrifyingly large number. In fact, it was more than the total found in these three ruins combined!

As the last of the Meteorfall gases condensed into Meteorfall Alchemy pills, Xiao Qingyun's body disintegrated into spots of lights, then dissipated. Only his voice of relief, after having been delivered from his suffering, reverberated unceasingly in Mu Chen's and Nine Nether's ears.

"Thank you, for letting me regain my senses in my last moments. The world is constantly changing however, and the great calamity has yet to end. In the future, you must protect the heavens and the earth. May you last forever, together with the heavens and the earth."

Chapter 842: Seeking Help

Xiao Qingyun's figure had completely dissipated as his voice reverberated into silence. Only the Meteorfall Alchemy pills suspended in the air surrounding the two proved his existence.

The Chief Disciple of the Fourth Hall Master of the Primordial Celestial Palace had completely vanished from the face of the earth, leaving no trace behind.

Mu Chen sighed as he looked at the place where Xiao Qingyun had disappeared. From some information revealed by the latter's words, he could vaguely see how important a mammoth the Primordial Celestial Palace was in those ancient times. The seven Hall Masters were probably at the rank of Earthly Sovereign, and the Master of the Celestial Palace was most likely a true Heavenly Sovereign.

However, even such horrifyingly powerful characters had eventually fallen, proving that the invasion from the Extraterritorial Clan had been a terrible calamity.

Mu Chen could not imagine the magnitude of a war that could impact an entire plane of existence.

Seeing the atmosphere become increasingly somber, Nine Nether smiled and said, "Don't dwell on it. Although the Extraterritorial Clan is formidable, we of the Great Thousand World are no pushovers, either. Our top elites and powerful Sovereigns have always been alert and have kept their guard up against them."

Mu Chen nodded. With his current strength, thinking of them would cause undue worry.

"Let's go. There are no longer any traces of Meteorfall gas in this Grade Three Relic."

With a wave of her hand, Nine Nether gathered the Meteorfall Alchemy pills surrounding her as a gleeful smile appeared on her cold and beautiful face. "Together, we have obtained more than 300 Meteorfall Alchemy

pills. This is far more than what is available in an ordinary Grade Three Relic."

Mu Chen nodded. Generally speaking, the number of Meteorfall Alchemy pills that could be extracted from a Grade Three Relic should be around a hundred, but they were lucky enough this time to actually meet Xiao Qingyun, who had been invaded by evil energy. Thus, Xiao Qingyun's body, which had not been destroyed, had been a Ninth Grade Sovereign before his death. Although the years passed, and his strength had also declined, the Meteorfall gas contained in him was obviously more complete than that of the other fallen powerful figures in this ruin.

Of course, compared to the Spirit Seeking Compass they had obtained, the few hundred Meteorfall Alchemy pills were not considered much of a surprise.

Mu Chen smiled as he tossed the dark compass in his hand. As long as they had this Spirit Seeking Compass, they would be able to seize the first chance in the next search amid the ruins, hence this was an artifact that would aid them greatly in the fight for Meteorfall Alchemy pills.

"Let's go."

The two surveyed the completely ruined relic and then no longer lingered. They moved out immediately, transforming into two streams of light that flashed out of the swamp.

Outside the swamp, the Nine Nether Troop was spread out like a black tide. Their eyes watched the surroundings vigilantly and guardedly, and their hands always firmly grasped their long spears. Their bodies were tense like cheetahs.

On a far off mountain, there were also soldiers from the Nine Nether Troop, apparently monitoring the area to prevent anyone from disturbing Mu Chen and Nine Nether from their extraction of the Meteorfall Alchemy pills.

Whoosh!

Two streams of light suddenly swept out of the swamp and appeared in

mid-air above the Nine Nether Troop. The alert Nine Nether soldiers saw them, and their faces suddenly burst out with joy as they hurriedly bowed.

"Have there been any other forces approaching?" Mu Chen looked at Qiu Shan, who was originally the most powerful person in Nine Nether Troop. This year, with the help of a large number of resources provided by Nine Nether Palace, his strength had also been rapidly enhanced and had already reached the level of a Second Grade Sovereign. Now, he and three other powerful people had been promoted by Mu Chen to the four Captains of the Nine Nether Troop in order to train the soldiers.

Hearing his question, the massive Qiu Shan hurriedly clasped his fist and replied, "Commander, some forces have approached before, but we have blocked them all."

Mu Chen nodded in satisfaction. Although he and Nine Nether were not present, the Nine Nether Troop now compared to when he first came to Nine Nether Palace was much stronger, and ordinary forces would not dare to trifle with them.

"Palace Master, Commander, which direction shall we go next?" Qiu Shan and the others looked towards Mu Chen, their eyes full of fighting spirit. This year, they had received a large number of training resources given to them by the Nine Nether Palace, so their strength increased very rapidly. They also understood the reason for training an army for thousands of days; it was so they could shine in one battle. Now, the time had come for them to reveal their power in the Great Hunting War.

They wanted to let Mu Chen and Nine Nether know that the massive cultivation resources were not wasted on them.

Mu Chen smiled, as the map Mandela gave them would have reached its limit here. If they had followed their original plan, they would have wandered around like headless flies and relied on luck to locate the other relics. Fortunately, they were now able to change that.

"It's time to try this." Mu Chen smiled as he took out the dark Spirit Seeking Compass and then channelled his spiritual energy into it. Immediately, complex spiritual symbols emerged on the surface of the

compass. Light bloomed, an intricate spiritual energy light screen appeared on the surface of the compass, and beams of spiritual energy light in the form of rings of light emanated from it.

Mu Chen and Nine Nether stared at it nervously. This object had been hidden by Xiao Qingyun for thousands of years. Who knew whether it would still have any effect? If it had been damaged, then they would have rejoiced too soon.

Beside them, Qiu Shan and the others looked at each other as they were bewildered regarding what Mu Chen and Nine Nether were up to.

Time passed slowly, but above the compass, the rings of light still spread out. There were no other signs occurring, which made Mu Chen and Nine Nether look increasingly somber.

However, just as they were about to be disappointed, the black compass shook, and the light screen suddenly revealed a small red dot that was flickering continuously.

"There's some movement!" Mu Chen's eyes lit up.

Just when Mu Chen spoke up, another light spot emerged in a location further away from the red dot, and the intensity of this spot was obviously even greater.

In a few short seconds, the Spirit Seeking Compass had located two relics that hid Meteorfall gas!

With the speed of this search, other forces would be green with jealousy if they caught wind of it. With such an artifact, the task of finding the Meteorfall Alchemy pills would be effortless!

"Let's go!"

Mu Chen and Nine Nether's expressions were full of surprise, and without any hesitation they gathered the Nine Nether Troop. The group turned into a vast stream of light and swept out of the swamp heading straight towards the direction indicated on the Spirit Seeking Compass.

The Nine Nether Troop swept forward at full force as they encountered

other forces along the way. The other forces retreated guardedly, clearly overwhelmed by the intense fighting spirit emanating from the Nine Nether Troop.

Some of the other powerful forces were not willing to go to war with the Nine Nether Palace, so they also chose to retreat. After all, although the Nine Nether Palace was not terrifying, it had the backing of the powerful Daluo Territory, a genuine top-notch force, thus many other forces were fearful and wary of them.

For all these reasons, this time they were unexpectedly successful. There were occasional obstructions, but ultimately they were not much hindrance to their pace of march.

Hence, just four hours later, they arrived at the first relic marked on the Spirit Seeking Compass.

To their slight disappointment, the relic was not as strong as the one they had encountered before, as it was not even a Grade Three Relic.

Although disappointed, it was better than nothing, and it was more than some forces had who couldn't even locate relics after looking everywhere. So with this thought, Mu Chen and the others swept through the ruins of the relic and gathered approximately 50 Meteorfall Alchemy pills.

After scavenging the ruins, Mu Chen and the group rushed straight to the direction where the second red spot was located. This relic did not disappoint Mu Chen, as the Meteorfall gas had also reached that of a Grade Three Relic.

It was only when fighting over this Grade Three Relic that Mu Chen finally met with an obstacle again. It was a force called the Iron Blood War Clan. This was also a very famous top-notch force in the North Territory. This clan was extremely war-loving, therefore, they were extremely fond of conquest, which caused them to be the most feared among the many forces in the North Territory.

Thus, when they saw the Iron Blood Army, they already knew that war could not be avoided. However, Mu Chen did not hesitate to condense the fighting spirit of the Nine Nether Troop, and they were ready to battle. The

leader of the Iron Blood Army retreated immediately and as they retreated, distant curses and swearing could be heard.

"D*mn it, it's a crazy fellow who can condense fighting spirit..."

When Mu Chen heard the distant cursing and then saw the orderly retreat of the Iron Blood Army, he didn't know whether to laugh or to cry, but he was glad to avoid a direct confrontation with the Iron Blood War Clan. From the behavior of this Iron Blood War Clan, it seemed that they were not the intense war-loving warmongers they were rumored to be. Thus, they retreated wisely knowing they would pay a heavy price if they didn't.

With the withdrawal of the Iron Blood War Clan, the relic once again landed in Mu Chen's hands.

This Grade Three Relic also added 200 Meteorfall Alchemy pills to their collection. In total, they had about 600 Meteorfall Alchemy pills.

This kind of achievement, according to Nine Nether, was absolutely outstanding. After all, it was quite rare to be able to find three relics in such a short period of time, unless there were other forces who also had the same means to detect Meteorfall gas.

Whoosh!

After scraping the site clean, Mu Chen and Nine Nether let the Nine Nether Troop take a break while the two took out the Spirit Seeking Compass again and prepared to continue their exploration.

However, just as they were about to explore the direction of the other relics, Mu Chen and Nine Nether's expressions suddenly changed. With a clench of their fists, a green bronze mirror appeared in their hands, a token given to Lord Nine Nether by Mandela before the beginning of the Great Hunting War.

At this time, in this green bronze mirror, a blood-red spot of light flickered wildly, an extremely critical distress signal!

Mu Chen and Nine Nether glanced at the blood-red spot of light reflected on the green bronze mirror, and their expressions turned grave.

A lord-ranked troop of Daluo Territory had been forced into a desperate situation and had to use the bronze mirrors to seek help!

This Great Hunting War was perilous, indeed!

Chapter 843: Rescue Coming from a Thousand Miles

"What should we do?"

Nine Nether's beautiful eyes looked towards Mu Chen, who looked distraught. It was clear that the two had lost their calm, due to their having received the sudden distress signal.

The nine Lords, who were under the command of the Daluo Territory, had nine armies in all. Thus, they constituted the backbone of the Daluo Territory. If they lost one of these armies, it would certainly weaken their strength.

As the present Great Hunting War was extremely cruel, in order to survive, it was a must to preserve every force, at least as much as possible. Thus, when Mu Chen and Nine Nether saw that, within the first day of the Great Hunting War, a Lord-ranked army had already found themselves in a desperate situation, it came as a shock to them.

Mu Chen was very clear about the pride of the Lords. They were the greatest in the Daluo Territory, perhaps even in the entire North Territory. They could also be regarded as being rather reputable Sovereigns, together with the powerful armies under their command. Hence, for them to have resorted to seeking assistance from other Lords, they must have been forced into an extremely dark and hopeless corner.

"I don't know which Lord is calling for help. And, who exactly did they encounter? I can't believe that they were forced to take such desperate measures." Nine Nether clenched her fists, while exclaiming.

Mu Chen also shook his head. The bronze mirror could only call for help and locate the direction vaguely. Thus, it was impossible to transmit the rest of the information.

"Now that all of the elite members of the great powers have ventured deep into the Meteorfall battlefield to search for the Earthly Sovereign Secret Treasure, only another top force could force a Lord to this level of

extremity. And... It's very likely that they were lured into a trap and surrounded."

Nine Nether narrowed her eyes at Mu Chen. "What do you intend to do? If it's as you said, if we go to their rescue, we might get embroiled within the battle, too."

After a moment's silence, Mu Chen took a deep breath and said, "No matter how dangerous it is, we have to go. We cannot let one of our Lord-ranked forces be wiped out. Plus, Mandela has said that, just by relying on our own strength, there seems to be no way to venture deep into the Meteorfall battlefield."

Nine Nether nodded gently in agreement, clearly admiring and appreciating Mu Chen's actions and thought processes. Even though all of the Lords were under the command of the Daluo Territory, there was still all kinds of competition present. Thus, there would always be some disharmonious factors within the ranks, just like those that existed between the Nine Nether Palace and the Blood Hawk Palace.

As a matter of fact, the relationship between the two Palaces was not very good at the moment. Therefore, when Mu Chen received the call for help, he could actually decide to go to their rescue immediately, showing a kind of generous magnanimity that was appreciated even by Nine Nether.

"Let's not delay any further. Let's go!" Mu Chen looked at Nine Nether, before glancing towards the Nine Nether Troop, who was already gearing up.

He said nothing more. Then, with a wave of his hand, his figure soared towards the sky. Behind him, Nine Nether and the Nine Nether Troop transformed into countless shadows, then followed him closely.

Whoosh!

Time was running out, so the Nine Nether Troop was basically pushing their speed to the extreme, rushing at full speed in the direction that was indicated on the bronze mirror. Along the way, they met many other forces.

These forces were all surprised to see the murderous aura that the Nine Nether Troop emanated. As such, no one dared to stop them.

After about an hour of rushing at full speed, they finally got closer to the area where the distress signal had come from. Shortly after entering the area, they received some information, which caused Mu Chen's face to turn grave.

Just as they had speculated, it was not only one of the most powerful forces that had targeted the Daluo Territory, but it was the most powerful force in the North Territory: the Divine Pavilion! This mammoth force, which was said to have gone through five Great Hunting Wars, even filled the Daluo Territory with dreadful wariness.

"According to some of the information that we have just gathered, the Blood Hawk Palace might be in deep trouble." Nine Nether's beautiful eyes looked towards Mu Chen, as she pursed her red lips in exasperation.

Apparently, she hadn't expected that it would be the Blood Hawk Palace that would send them a distress signal. In the Daluo Territory, they were not on friendly terms with one another. In fact, they were even downright hostile!

"It was the Divine Pavilion's Lord of Alligator Mountain, commanding the Heavenly Alligator Troop, that drove them to such a desperate situation," said Nine Nether.

"The Master of Alligator Mountain..." Mu Chen's brows knit in a frown.

Now, he was no longer a rookie, who had no knowledge of the North Territory. In fact, he was well aware of the top forces.

In the Divine Pavilion, the ruler was the Master of the Divine Pavilion. Under him, were the four masters of the four directions, The North, South, East, and West Pavilions, which should be regarded as the equivalent of the Daluo Territory's Three Kings. Under these four masters, there were the Lords of the Ten Mountains, which were named after birds and beasts, such as the Lord of the Alligator Mountain.

"There is an old nemesis there, so it seems that one truly can't avoid his

enemies." Mu Chen looked to the distance, smiling in exasperation, for it was not only the Lord of the Alligator Mountain, who had struck at the Blood Hawk Palace, but also an old acquaintance of his. It was Fang Yi from the Divine Pavilion, the one who was forced by Cai Xiao to flee in humiliation from the Dragon-Phoenix Rift, but who was still firmly ranked as first in the Dragon-Phoenix Record.

Mu Chen and Cai Xiao got along well. But Cai Xiao had left, and she was now the daughter of the Flame Emperor, so even if Fang Yi channeled all of his courage, he would not dare to go to the Endless Fire Territory to seek trouble with her.

Instead, he would naturally target Mu Chen to vent his anger upon. Thus, Mu Chen could already imagine how furious Fang Yi would be upon seeing him. At that time, war would be inevitable.

In the face of this prodigy, who had dominated the Dragon-Phoenix Records for many years, even if Mu Chen had now advanced to a Fourth Grade Sovereign, he still dared not claim that he could defeat him.

He was also well aware that this Fang Yi was not a simple figure, as the latter could not have been standing still while he was making progress. With the aid of the vast resources of the Divine Pavilion, the speed of his training and the aces up his sleeve were bound to be very amazing. After all, Mu Chen was not like Cai Xiao, who was a supreme talent who was meant to defeat brilliant prodigies.

"Now that the Blood Hawk Palace has been forced into a deep valley hundreds of miles away, it has been completely surrounded. This incident has caused quite a lot of trouble in this region and attracted a lot of forces." Nine Nether gently shrugged her shoulders.

In this Great Hunting War, when the top forces began to fight against each other, it was the most wonderful and cruel thing to watch. Also, now that the Daluo Territory and the Divine Pavilion were up against each other, many people would be alerted. So, once there was any news, it would inevitably attract widespread attention.

"It's Lord Blood Hawk. That idiot. Are we still going?" Nine Nether

glanced at Mu Chen in frustration. Qiu Shan also looked at him, waiting for him to make a decision.

"What a jerk."

Mu Chen rubbed his forehead, cursing under his breath. He was clearly conflicted over this. After all, the Nine Nether Palace and the Blood Hawk Palace were far from being on good terms. If it were other Lords, Mu Chen would not hesitate at all. But, now that it was Lord Blood Hawk, his head hurt from having to make a decision.

"Although this guy is a thorn in our eyes, he is also a member of the Daluo Territory. If we allow them to be destroyed by the Divine Pavilion, it will not be good for us." Mu Chen finally took a deep breath, then stated solemnly, rational thought overriding his disdain towards Lord Blood Hawk.

"We have our own means of dealing with the feud between us. Hence, we will not rely on the external force of the Divine Pavilion to deal with them. If we save them and he dares to turn on us, I will teach them a lesson."

Qiu Shan and the others looked at the suddenly dominant Mu Chen, passion burning in their eyes. They knew that their Nine Nether Troop's combat prowess had surpassed that of the Blood Hawk Troop at the hands of Mu Chen. Thus, Mu Chen was qualified to say this.

"Go!"

Mu Chen glanced at Nine Nether. Seeing the latter nod gently, he no longer hesitated, but soared towards the sky in a stream of light.

They came to a huge red valley that was rather dim and dark, as if covered with blood, and depressingly gloomy.

In this valley, there were many people standing upright. They were donned in blood armor. Their eyes were fierce, but their majestic fighting spirit was clearly in disarray, having obviously suffered a heavy blow.

In the center of the army, Lord Blood Hawk, donned in blood armor, looked darkly across the valley, where countless silhouettes and shadows

were suspended in the sky. Apparently, a mighty fighting spirit had sealed off the entire valley, so that they could not escape.

"My lord, we have lost nearly a thousand soldiers." Standing beside Lord Blood Hawk, the bloodstained Wu Tian murmured, his originally cold face full of shame and heartache.

Upon hearing this, Lord Blood Hawk trembled. Losing a thousand soldiers of the Blood Hawk Troop, which accounted for almost one-fifth of the entire troop, was a devastating blow.

"My lord, I will lead the Blood Hawk Troop to engage in a final stand, tearing the blockade open. I will ask you to leave as soon as possible!" Wu Tian wiped the blood off of his face.

Lord Blood Hawk roared, "You want a Lord like me to flee, like a dog with its tail between its legs? How would I then be able to establish my stand in the Daluo Territory? If they want to attack later, you will charge ahead with me. Since they want to treat us as pushovers, I must make them understand that, if they attempt to devour Blood Hawk Palace, they must also be prepared to be bitten back!"

Lord Blood Hawk's expression was full of ferocity. The savage fury in his bones had clearly been triggered.

"My Lord, do not worry. We have sent out a distress signal. As long as we can hang in there for a little while longer, there will certainly be reinforcements coming!" Wu Tian saw that Lord Blood Hawk had the intention of engaging in a deadly struggle, so was attempting to persuade him against this decision.

"It's too late." Lord Blood Hawk shook his head, then looked sharply at the sky beyond the valley, where the majestic fighting spirit had begun to oppress the valley. It was obvious that the Heavenly Alligator Troop were geared up for an attack.

As the Blood Hawk Troop felt the fighting spirit approach, they clasped their long halberds tightly, ready to die in battle. Lord Blood Hawk took a deep breath. Then, with a clench of his fist, a blood-red long halberd appeared in a flash, while powerful spiritual energy fluctuations emanated

from his body.

However, just as Lord Blood Hawk was preparing to engage in a deadly final stand, his gaze suddenly froze. He saw that, outside the valley, the Heavenly Alligator Troop's majestic fighting spirit had suddenly fluctuated in disarray.

"My lord, our reinforcements are here!" Wu Tian, seeing this scene, suddenly rejoiced. He noticed an equally powerful majestic fighting spirit, which was rapidly permeating the battlefield! It was one that clearly did not belong to the Heavenly Alligator Troop!

"Which Lord is it?"

Lord Blood Hawk stared into the distance, his expression becoming a little more complicated. Then, after a moment of silence, he murmured, "It's Lord Nine Nether and Lord Mu Chen."

Chapter 844: Xu Ba

Beyond the valley, on the top of a steep solitary peak and in the sky around the peak, numerous shadows stood in the air, and the majestic fighting spirit surged out like a tide, almost permeating the whole world.

At a rough glance, those figures were enormous in size and almost 10,000 in number. An army of that size, even among the Lords of the Daluo Territory, was absolutely ranked among the top.

When such a large army was gathered together, naturally their fighting spirit would also be majestic to a rather alarming degree. Fighting spirit permeated the environment, enveloping the valley like a birdcage, shrouding all the people in the valley within. Even a fly could not escape from it.

Above the top of the hill, a silhouette swept through the sky, kneeling on one knee as he clasped his fists in respect and reported, "Your Excellency, the Blood Hawk Troop has been forced into the valley, and if we launch an offensive attack, they will surely be wiped out!"

On the top of the mountain, two figures stood at the front. One of them was an old acquaintance of Mu Chen's, the man Cai Xiao had forced to escape in humiliation from the Dragon-Phoenix Rift but who still firmly occupied the first rank of the Dragon and Phoenix Record, Fang Yi.

Fang Yi, who was clad in white robes, still appeared elegant and composed without the slightest hint of despondence because he had been defeated. His eyes were actually brighter, because he had learned from that failure and had become increasingly strong. After all, the Divine Pavilion had high hopes for him, and it was apparent that he was obviously a determined man who would not lose his willpower because of a mere failure. If he had, he would have soon been abandoned by the Divine Pavilion.

Fang Yi stood with one hand behind his back, his demeanor radiating scholarly elegance. This image was completely unlike that of a ruthless man dominating the first rank of the Dragon-Phoenix Record.

Standing beside Fang Yi was a man with an overwhelming aura. He was a middle-aged man and unlike Fang Yi's elegance, he was emanating a chilling air of brutality. His eyes were like a ferocious beast's, and ordinary men would be fearful upon seeing him.

The man was clad in dark black armor, on which a primordial alligator was engraved. The ferocious alligator stepped on the mountain, and a malicious aura permeated the heavens.

This man was one of the ten Lords of the Mountains, the Lord of Alligator Mountain, Xu Ba!

Upon hearing his subordinate's report, Xu Ba nodded as he gazed at the distant valley with a fierce look and a grim smile etched on his face. "This Blood Hawk Palace had the audacity to compete with my Heavenly Alligator Mountain for the relic. What a ridiculous daydream. The Blood Hawk Troop actually wants to contend with my Heavenly Alligator Troop, biting off more than they can chew."

Fang Yi smiled slightly and looked into the distance around them. There were constantly groups of people sweeping towards them, those who were drawn by the news of the battle between the two top powers of the Divine Pavilion and Daluo Territory. No matter what the outcome would be, it would be rather earth-shattering.

"If Lord Xu could really devour the Blood Hawk Palace, it would have been a great achievement, and your reputation would have spread in this Great Hunting War." Fang Yi smiled.

Xu Ba grinned when he heard what Fang Yi said, but there was a strong ferocity in his smile. He said, "It's all thanks to you, or we wouldn't have found the mouse that stole the relic right from under our nose."

"However, although the Blood Hawk Palace is now a trapped beast, Lord Xu should still be careful. Lord Blood Hawk is a Fifth Grade Sovereign at his maximum potential, and if he is desperate, things could become a bit tricky," Fang Yi warned.

"Fifth Grade Sovereign at his peak?" Xu Ba said, twisting his lips in a scornful arc. "Among our ten Lords of the Mountains, this kind of strength

can only be regarded as the bottom. That Lord Blood Hawk has no ability to escape from me."

However, despite his words, Xu Ba clearly did not intend to complicate matters and with a wave of his large hand, he was ready to order an attack, completely wiping out the Blood Hawk Troop.

Buzz!

However, just as his palm was about to swing, his and Fang Yi's expressions suddenly changed. As they looked towards the northwest, the sky shook startlingly, and fighting spirit surged towards them like a rapidly approaching storm.

The many forces hidden in the world also perceived this occurrence at this time and cast countless astonished glances in that direction. They were obviously surprised. After all, everyone knew that this was a battle between the Divine Pavilion and Daluo Territory. Ordinary forces dared not interfere indiscriminately so as not to get embroiled and bring fire upon themselves.

Whoosh! Whoosh!

Amid the countless gazes between heaven and earth, a dark screen of light emerged at the distant edge of the sky, and in that vast screen of light, numerous dark shadows roared out. Majestic fighting spirit emanated from their bodies, as if carrying wind and thunder, announcing their arrival in this world, overwhelming the powerful characters.

"Who are you, who dare come to meddle in the affairs of the Divine Pavilion?!" Xu Ba looked at the majestic dark army, and his eyes suddenly froze as he presumably was aware of this army's majestic fighting spirit. Roaring fiercely, his shouts echoed like rumbling thunder between the sky and the earth.

"Who are you?!"

In the sky outside the valley, nearly 10,000 soldiers of the Heavenly Alligator Troop roared together, and suddenly, horrifying fighting spirit rose to the sky, causing the wind and clouds to change and the world to

shake.

Under such terrifying fighting spirit, even a Sixth Grade Sovereign would have to avoid their sharp aura!

However, the black torrent-like army which had surged forward remained motionless and unwavering. Standing in front of the army, a slender figure flashed out, and a clear laughter echoed and rang in the air. "Daluo Territory, Nine Nether Palace!"

"Nine Nether Palace!"

A divine light burned in the gazes of the soldiers of the Nine Nether Troop. The vast fighting spirit was like turbulent waves surging, roaring like thunder as it continued boundlessly. It caused the oppressive fighting spirit of the Heavenly Alligator Troop to become scattered and dissipated.

Between the heavens and earth, two horrendous auras of fighting spirit pervaded the skyline by halves, and even the sky shook violently as cracks spread from the clash.

"Nine Nether Palace?" Xu Ba's gaze flickered as shock surfaced in his eyes. As far as he knew, the Nine Nether Palace was at the bottom of the rankings among the nine Lords of Daluo Territory, but now to see this majestic aura, why was it even more powerful than that of Blood Hawk Palace?

Beside Xu Ba, Fang Yi knitted his brows and frowned. His deep gaze was locked onto the slender figure standing in front of the Nine Nether Troop as he commented faintly, "Lord Xu, your information is too outdated. This man is Mu Chen, the tenth Lord of the Daluo Territory. Nine Nether Palace is now commanded by two lords, which is unique in Daluo Territory."

"Mu Chen?"

Xu Ba was slightly stunned before he smiled and said, "So he's the young man who has been stirring up a storm in North Territory recently..."

After speaking, his gaze turned ferocious as he glared at Mu Chen's silhouette far away. He laughed maliciously. "A brat who is still wet

behind his ears dares to come to rescue someone? He's overestimating himself!"

Xu Ba's voice reverberated in the air as countless glances were directed towards Mu Chen. Curiosity was apparent in their gazes, clearly having heard of this familiar name in this period.

Mu Chen and Nine Nether stood in the air, the latter's gaze turning chilling hearing Xu Ba's cackle as majestic spiritual energy surged in her palm.

"I suppose this is the Lord of Alligator Mountain?" With a faint smile, Mu Chen looked at the fierce Xu Ba, then at Fang Yi beside him, smiling as he clasped his fists in greeting.

"You inexperienced brat, don't bother with the pleasantries. Get out of here, before I end you, too." Xu Ba was obnoxiously rude, his voice dripping with sarcasm and fierce disdain. It was obvious that he completely did not regard Mu Chen and Nine Nether Palace at all.

Upon hearing this, Mu Chen rubbed his nose and smiled. "Seems like we have nothing to talk about, then."

"You're asking for death!" Xu Ba remarked coldly, and with a wave of his sleeves, 5,000 soldiers from the Heavenly Alligator Troop left their battle formation, and a malicious fighting spirit emanated from their low, rumbling roars.

In Xu Ba's eyes, the number of Nine Nether Troop soldiers was a measly 5,000. It was enough for him to delegate 5,000 Heavenly Alligator Troop soldiers to deal with them. After all, in the previous clash between the Blood Hawk Troop and the Heavenly Alligator Troop, the Blood Hawk Troop's soldiers were defeated in a short period of time, which was the time needed to burn approximately half a joss stick of incense.

The most important thing for him now was to get rid of the remnants of the Blood Hawk Troop in the valley, and then he would end Nine Nether Palace.

Boom!

The Heavenly Alligator Troop roared across the sky. The majestic fighting spirit was like a sea of crimson blood soaring across the sky. As their aura surged, it directly transformed into a million massive spears, charging towards the direction of the Nine Nether Troop.

Even a Fifth Grade Sovereign would be killed in such a battle formation.

However, Mu Chen only looked up, his black eyes calmly looking at that howling barrage of thousands of battle spears. He smiled faintly and said, "You seem to look down on us Nine Nether Troop..."

He lifted his palm gently, before landing it.

Boom!

The black tide was like a volcano as it rose and surged from the Nine Nether Troop. The majestic Nine Nether fighting spirit condensed directly into massive dark wings of light, and on the edge of the light wings was a ray of light sharp enough to tear space...

Whoosh!

With a flick of Mu Chen's fingers, the dark wings of light disappeared, and no one could see it, but a ray of light swept across the sky, and where the light passed, the countless battle spears were almost instantly shattered, turning into bright spots of light all over the sky.

It was a destruction as effortless as pulling a dead branch from a tree!

Whoosh!

The beam of light flitted across the myriad astonished stares of the crowd and eventually crossed the Heavenly Alligator Troop, hitting the barrier of fighting spirit that enveloped the valley in the distance.

Crack!

At the moment of collision, the barrier of fighting spirit condensed from the fighting spirit of the Heavenly Alligator Troop disintegrated and shattered completely as if it were fragile glass.

With the collapse of the barrier of fighting spirit, the Blood Hawk Troop in the valley was also revealed, but in that moment, they were somewhat

shocked at the scene before them, and it was apparent that they had also witnessed Nine Nether Troop's astonishing strike.

Xu Ba's face twisted at this scene, and even the calm and composed Fang Yi couldn't help but to narrow his eyes, as they were shocked at the overwhelming fighting spirit exhibited by the Nine Nether Troop.

Who would have thought that the Nine Nether Troop, which only had around 5,000 soldiers, would have such a horrifyingly strong fighting spirit?!

Amid the sea of shocked glances, Mu Chen smiled as he looked at Xu Ba, whose face had turned red with fury. His laughter rang in the air, but no one dared to ignore and belittle him.

"Well, can we have a good talk now?"

Chapter 845: The Heavenly Alligator Troop

"Can we talk it over nicely now?" Mu Chen said.

He sounded calm. No one dared look down on him, as he exuded a horrifying fighting spirit.

Even Xu Ba squinted his eyes and looked at Mu Chen viciously. He said, "I have belittled you. Although you are young, you are able to keep your fighting spirit well under control."

Mu Chen simply shrugged. He looked at the Blood Hawk Troop that had been trapped in the valley, then said, "Lord Xu, it does not seem wise for us to start a war now. If you wish to encroach upon the Blood Hawk Palace, you will have to pay a high price for it. Hence, I suggest that you withdraw your troop. We will settle our scores another day. What do you think?"

Mu Chen stood in the air and smiled. Although the Heavenly Alligator Troop looked ferocious, he showed no signs of fear. His calm disposition took many top forces by surprise.

Xu Ba was equally shocked by his calmness. However, he was agitated by what Mu Chen had said, so he started to laugh. He pointed at the large Heavenly Alligator Troop, then said with a weird look, "Young man, do you think that you are capable of making me pay any price?"

Although the majestic fighting spirit that was exuded by the Nine Nether Troop had taken Xu Ba by surprise, it only showed that they were capable enough to take on the Heavenly Alligator Troop. However, he had 10,000 soldiers in his troop, while Nine Nether only had 5,000. Hence, if they were to fight, Nine Nether would definitely be defeated. Naturally, the price that Mu Chen had mentioned sounded like a joke to Xu Ba.

As Lord Blood Hawk and the Blood Hawk Troop looked out from the valley towards the sky afar, where the confrontation took place, they had mixed feelings. They could feel that the Nine Nether Troop was very different than it had been a year ago.

"Master, Nine Nether Palace is no match for the Heavenly Alligator Troop..." Wu Tian hesitated for a while, then spoke softly.

He had mixed feelings about the help that had been extended by Nine Nether Palace. What he had said was indeed true. They had fought with the Heavenly Alligator Troop before, so they knew how powerful they were. Although the Nine Nether Troop was powerful now, when compared to the Heavenly Alligator Troop, they were still inferior.

According to Wu Tian, the only troops that could take on the Heavenly Alligator Troop would be the Asura Troop, which was led by Lord Asura, and the Cracking Mountain Army, led by Lord Mountain Cracker. Only these two fine troops could triumph over the Heavenly Alligator Troop. Hence, the Nine Nether Troop was still not quite up to the mark.

When Lord Blood Hawk heard this, he nodded. He then said, "Wu Tian, if the Nine Nether Troop strikes, you will lead the Blood Hawk Troop to fight together with them, in order to ease them of some of the burden. As for Xu Ba, I will handle him. I will distract him from controlling the situation."

Wu Tian nodded. The only way for them to break away from the entrapment of the Heavenly Alligator Troop would be to work with the Nine Nether Troop.

As the two of them were talking, Mu Chen squinted his eyes. He had heard how Xu Ba was mocking them. Xu Ba had thought that he had the upper-hand, as he had a large army. This caused him to look down on the Nine Nether Troop.

In that case...

Mu Chen formed a seal with his hands. The calm look in his eyes turned sharp, and a sharp aura exuded from his body suddenly, like a sword.

"Nine Nether Troop!" Mu Chen shouted. "Fight!"

The soldiers of the Nine Nether Troop stamped their spears on the ground and shouted. Their voices thundered across the horizon. Dark fighting spirits surged up to the sky, like a huge, rolling wave. From afar, it looked like a dark sea that was covering the entire area.

Chirp!

Mu Chen stomped his feet, causing a dark fighting spirit to surge behind him. The sound of a bird with a frantic fighting spirit resounded in the air. A huge Nine Netherbird, with battle runes carved on its body, had formed from the fighting spirit. As it spread out its huge wings, it covered the sun.

The Nine Netherbird cried out to the sky. The people saw dark fighting spirits gushing up to the horizon, like a fountain. Within seconds, the entire place was filled with vast fighting spirits.

"Spirit of Fighting Intent!"

The people shouted in shock, and the area was in an uproar. The top forces turned pale, staring in disbelief at what was before them.

"Mu Chen has condensed the Spirit of Fighting intent of the Nine Nether Troop..." Lord Blood Hawk and Wu Tian were stunned. They looked at each other and gasped.

They finally understood why Mu Chen and Nine Nether had the audacity to come to this place, even though they knew that the Heavenly Alligator Troop would be here. They were full of confidence!

Everyone knew that the Spirit of Fighting Intent was extremely important to a troop. It could enhance their power manifold entirely!

"This guy..." Wu Tian had mixed feelings.

He sighed and recalled that, one year ago, when Mu Chen came to the Daluo Territory, he had looked down on the young man. However, one year later, Mu Chen had not only been ranked number three in the Dragon-Phoenix Record, he had surpassed Wu Tian in leading the army. Even Wu Tian had to admit that there was now a big gap between him and Mu Chen.

"Spirit of Fighting Intent?"

As Xu Ba stared at the Nine Netherbird, which was filled with majestic fighting spirit, he turned pale. He had not expected Mu Chen to have such a trump card.

He finally understood what Mu Chen meant, when he had said that Xu Ba would have to pay a price. It was not because Mu Chen was young and aggressive. It was because he truly had the means to make it so.

Although the Nine Nether Troop was inferior to the Heavenly Alligator Troop in terms of numbers, Xu Ba was no longer confident that he could defeat them. He knew that the Spirit of Fighting Intent was extremely important to a troop.

Fang Yi, who was beside Xu Ba, frowned. He looked gravely at Mu Chen. He had never taken Mu Chen seriously, even after Mu Chen had performed so well in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift. He knew that, had it not been for Cai Xiao, he would have easily suppressed Mu Chen in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift.

Judging from the current situation, he seemed to have belittled this opponent. Fang Yi knew that, one who could condense the Spirit of Fighting Intent of a troop, had great potential and could pose a great threat.

Xu Ba looked gloomy. He stared sharply at Mu Chen and said, "Do you think that, just because you have the Spirit of Fighting Intent, you are able to contend against us? I would like to see how powerful your Spirit of Fighting Intent is!"

Although Xu Ba knew that the Spirit of Fighting Intent was powerful, he would not back down, even though he knew that he would have to pay a high price If they were to fight. At that instant, Fang Yi stretched forth his hand to stop Xu Ba, who was about to strike.

He looked at Mu Chen, then said with a smile, "You have indeed surprised us..."

"Thank you," Mu Chen smiled and said. "If both of you wish to avoid a life and death struggle, which others would then benefit from, I suggest that we all take a step back. This will be the best option for everyone."

Fang Yi smiled, then said slowly, "It seems like you have no wish to fight the Heavenly Alligator Troop, as you know that the Nine Nether Troop will have to pay a high price as well. However, if you want us to simply let

the troop go, it seems like you may be expecting a bit too much from us."

Mu Chen squinted his eyes, then said, "Do you want to see who is tougher?"

Fang Yi waved his hand, then said with a smile, "There is no point in starting a war. However, you should know that, if we simply let the troop go, it would be a disgrace to the Divine Pavilion."

"So, what do you suggest?" Mu Chen raised his brows, while looking at Fang Yi with a smile.

Fang Yi smiled back. He tilted his head to look at Xu Ba, then said, "Lord Xu, can I decide for you?"

Xu Ba pondered for a while, then nodded his head. Fang Yi held a special position in the Divine Pavilion. Although he was young, he would achieve much in the future. Thus, Xu Ba welcomed his interference.

Moreover, the situation had become tough for him to handle, since this intervention of Nine Nether Palace. In fact, he would be happy to let Fang Yi take over the situation.

When Fang Yi saw that Xu Ba had nodded his head, he turned to Mu Chen and said with a smile, "You are aware that, if we start a war, both parties will have to pay a price. However, if you want to rescue the troop, you cannot simply ask for it to be so."

"So?" Mu Chen smiled. He tilted his head to look at Fang Yi.

"I have seen your performance in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift. You have done well. However, I believe that you performed so well only because of your friend."

Fang Yi slowly stretched out his hand. Spiritual energy was glittering around his fingertips, like lightning, and dangerous fluctuations spread out.

"I have a suggestion that can resolve the situation, thus bringing the loss to a minimum. However, I do not know if you have the guts to do it."

Mu Chen's gaze turned grave.

Fang Yi smiled warmly, but there was an unfathomable fluctuation in his eyes.

"Have a duel with me."

Chapter 846: 500 to Duel

"Have a duel with me..."

Fang Yi stood on the mountain and placed one hand behind him. As the wind blew, his white garment fluttered.

His confidence impressed even the top forces, who were filled with praise for him. Fang Yi could become the leader of the younger generation in the North Territory, as he possessed amazing abilities.

Although he had met with setbacks in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift, because of Cai Xiao, he had not become depressed over them. Instead, he reflected upon them as being lessons, then used them to advance his strength further.

In fact, his spirit of seeking a breakthrough in the face of such adversity had won the praises of the people. This was the spirit of a true master.

Fang Yi smiled and looked at Mu Chen, who was standing in the air. He then said, "If you can defeat me, the Divine Pavilion will automatically retreat."

Wow.

His words caused an immediate uproar among the people heard. Fang Yi was challenging Mu Chen to a duel! Many forces watched with intense interest.

The two of them were popular among the younger generation in the North Territory. One of them had been the overlord of the Dragon-Phoenix Record for many years. The other was a dark horse, who was a rising star in the North Territory.

If the two of them had a duel, many people would be watching, as they were relatively famous. The people were dying to know if Mu Chen would advance triumphantly, or if he would fall from his position.

Fang Yi was the more reputable of the two. He also had a higher status than Mu Chen.

Some of the top powers felt that it was not fair for Fang Yi to invite Mu Chen to battle. After all, Mu Chen was still a nobody, while Fang Yi was already well-known in the North Territory.

"Do you really think that, under such circumstances, you are still able to choose the method of fighting?" Nine Nether looked at Fang Yi coldly, then sneered.

She could tell that Fang Yi had advanced to Grade Five Sovereign. If Mu Chen were to have a duel with him, she was afraid that Mu Chen would be at a dangerous disadvantage. After all, he was only a Grade Four Sovereign.

"Hehe, if you want to have a war, our Heavenly Alligator Troop is ready to take you on. However, you may lose more than half of your troop," Xu Ba said, with immense killing intent.

"I will make sure that every single man in your troop dies!" Nine Nether said coldly.

Fang Yi smiled, then stopped Xu Ba from talking. He looked at Mu Chen and said, "You are smart. You should be able to tell from this situation that, if we start a war, both sides will suffer great losses. Although you are able to condense the Spirit of Fighting Intent of the Nine Nether Troop, you are still small in number."

Having said that, Fang Yi pointed at the forces that had gathered together, then said with a smile, "You know very well that there are many people out there, who are waiting to benefit from our war. It will not do us any good if we fight. So, the best way to resolve this matter will be to have a duel instead..."

Mu Chen looked at Fang Yi and said with a smile, "Well said. However, I can see a strong killing intent in your eyes. Hence, I think, you still wish to kill me."

Fang Yi squinted his eyes. Mu Chen had hit the nail on the head. He had never taken Mu Chen to heart, until he saw that Mu Chen had condensed the fighting spirit of the Nine Nether Troop. He felt the potential in Mu Chen, so he now saw him as a threat.

If Fang Yi allowed Mu Chen to continue to grow in strength, Mu Chen would become a great threat to the Divine Pavilion. Thus, he had to kill Mu Chen before this happened.

"I can understand if you refuse to duel," Fang Yi said flatly. "After all, you are new. It is already a great achievement for you to have come this far. Even I am impressed by you."

"Your reverse psychology isn't going to work on me," Mu Chen said with a smile.

Fang Yi frowned. He finally knew how difficult it was to deal with Mu Chen. Although Mu Chen was young, he was sharp and very mature. He was not rash and competitive, like so many other youths. In fact, Fang Yi was rather annoyed with Mu Chen's unshakable disposition!

"However..." As Fang Yi was frowning, Mu Chen smiled and said, "It is not impossible, if you wish to duel with me. In fact, it is extremely simple..."

"500 Meteorfall Alchemy." Mu Chen stretched forth five fingers and shook his hand.

The atmosphere that had already been tense, now froze at this juncture. Even Fang Yi was taken aback. No one would have expected Mu Chen to say such a thing, much less in this kind of a setting.

"500 Meteorfall Alchemy?" When Xu Ba heard it, he laughed. He then looked viciously at Mu Chen and sneered, "Young man, do you think that you are worth 500 Meteorfall Alchemy?"

Mu Chen must be joking. 500 Meteorfall Alchemy was what they had gained. They were fortunate to have reached the few historical sites before the rest of the people and had refined the relics. Mu Chen had now asked for the 500 Meteorfall Alchemy, just to have a duel.

Who does he think he is?!

"It is not up to you to determine if I am worth it."

Mu Chen continued to smile at Fang Yi, who was looking shocked. He

stretched forth his hand and said, "Brother Fang Yi, if you are dying to kill me, I don't think this is a high price to pay. Of course, if you think that this method is not feasible..."

As he said this, Mu Chen suddenly stopped smiling, his dark eyes turning cold. He then said, "Let's have a war. I would like to see if the Heavenly Alligator Troop is capable of making us pay a high price!"

Mu Chen's voice was suddenly filled with killing intent. The whole area turned cold, and the top powers were shocked by his sudden change of expression.

There was a ferocious tiger among their meek youth! When one had exceeded the limit of Mu Chen's patience, he would turn cold and sharp.

Xu Ba turned pale and was furious. However, Fang Yi stopped him again. Fang Yi looked coldly at Mu Chen, then said, "Mu Chen, don't you think it is meaningless? Some things are just not meant for you, even if you own it."

"Five hundred, I said. Nothing less than that. If you are willing to give it, we will duel. If not, let's start the war!"

Mu Chen smiled and waved his hand. When Xu Ba saw it, he was so angry, his face twitching uncontrollably. He felt like tearing Mu Chen apart!

Nine Nether could not refrain herself from laughing. She looked snappily at Mu Chen. He had turned the duel into a monetary transaction, causing the onlookers to be dumbfounded.

Fang Yi stared at Mu Chen with an extremely cold stare. However, he did not lose his cool entirely, but smiled calmly and said, "Since this is your wish, let's do it."

"Lord Xu, sorry to trouble you." Fang Yi turned to look at Xu Ba.

Xu Ba's face twitched, and he felt the pinch. The 500 Meteorfall Alchemy was all that they had. If he gave this away, they would have worked for nothing!

"They will not be able to get away," Fang Yi said.

Since Fang Yi had said this, Xu Ba gritted his teeth, then waved his sleeve. Immediately, 500 Meteorfall Alchemy whizzed out, flying towards Mu Chen. The people looked on with envy. Even the forces were tempted by the 500 Meteorfall Alchemy.

Mu Chen grabbed his palm, and the 500 Meteorfall Alchemy hung around him. After he had roughly counted them, he smiled. He then said, "Brother Fang is really generous."

Fang Yi smiled, before replying calmly. "It is all right. I will let you have them for a while. Then, I will get them back with interest later."

Mu Chen nodded and said, "I hope so."

"Is it too risky?" Nine Nether asked softly. Since Fang Yi had given out 500 Meteorfall Alchemy, he must be confident of his defeating Mu Chen. It did not seem wise to duel with him otherwise.

"If both troops fight, we will have to pay a high price, and this is something that I cannot bear to see," Mu Chen said softly.

Regarding what Fang Yi had said, even if the Nine Nether Troop managed to defeat the Heavenly Alligator Troop, they will have to pay a high price. Although the losses would not be as great as what Fang Yi had said, Mu Chen could still not bear to see a single loss of life.

It suited Mu Chen well to have a duel with Fang Yi instead of starting a war. However, he did want to make them upset and incur some monetary losses before this duel occurred.

Nine Nether nodded. She knew that, in order to rescue Blood Hawk Palace, they had to fight. The Heavenly Alligator Troop would not be intimidated by them.

However, Fang Yi was no weakling. He had been the overlord for many years in the Dragon-Phoenix Record. No matter how powerful Mu Chen had become, Nine Nether was still not confident that Mu Chen was an adequate match for him.

After he had kept the Meteorfall Alchemy, Mu Chen stepped forth. His dark eyes turned sharp, and the aura from his body was also sharp, like a Divine Spear. Fang Yi felt the aura coming from Mu Chen, which caused him to raise his eyebrows.

"I want his head!" Xu Ba gritted his teeth and said. He hated Mu Chen to the core, especially after he had taken 500 Meteorfall Alchemy away from him.

"I will fulfill your wish. He shall die this day."

Fang Yi smiled flatly. He stepped out in the sky, before appearing directly in front of Mu Chen.

The people fixed their gazes on the two of them. The overlord of the Dragon-Phoenix Record and the dark horse would be having a duel this day...

Chapter 847: Dark Horse vs. Overlord

Fluffy white clouds hung in the blue sky. As the two figures stood in the air facing each other, majestic spiritual energy shot up into the sky and tore the clouds apart.

Everyone watching fixed their gazes on the two figures.

Many streamers from afar darted toward that direction. It seemed like they had received news of the duel between the overlord in the Dragon-Phoenix Record and the mighty dark horse.

Many of them were interested in such duels.

Fang Yi looked suave as he stood in the air, with his white garment fluttering and his black hair blowing in the wind. He looked flatly at the people who had rushed over and then turned to look at Mu Chen. He said, "You have been in the limelight recently in North Territory."

"It Is all thanks to you," Mu Chen said and smiled.

Mu Chen was mocking Fang Yi, but Fang Yi did not take it to heart. He said with a smile, "You are welcome. However, since I can make you famous, I can also make you a nobody again."

"Oh?" Mu Chen shrugged. He looked at Fang Yi and said, "I am looking forward to it. However, I would like to suggest that you do not go overboard. If you lose your overlord position in the Dragon-Phoenix Record, it will be too late for regret."

"You need to have the capability to do that."

Fang Yi remained expressionless, but the coldness in his eyes quickly surged. Majestic spiritual energy surrounded him like a windstorm and started to rage.

Mu Chen could feel the spiritual energy oppression emanating from Fang Yi's body. Although he had said that he would not back out, he knew that Fang Yi was tough to deal with.

Judging from the spiritual energy oppression, Fang Yi had steadily

advanced within the realm of Grade Five Sovereign. He was obviously much more powerful than Qiu Taiyin.

This would be an intense fight!

As the spiritual energy of the two powers started to gather, more people came together. They watched the two of them and started to whisper to one another.

"Hahaha, this fight is interesting. The overlord in the Dragon-Phoenix Record is fighting the mighty dark horse. I wonder who will win."

"I think Fang Yi has a greater chance of winning. After all, he is a Grade Five Sovereign, whereas Mu Chen is only at Grade Four."

"I don't think so. Mu Chen's actual strength is more powerful than what you see. I heard that during the Ceremony of Bestowing Lordship, he defeated Qiu Taiyin, who is also a Grade Five Sovereign."

"Qiu Taiyin has just attained Grade Five Sovereign. You cannot compare him with Fang Yi."

"It will be good if Mu Chen fails to defeat Fang Yi. He has been in the limelight recently, and it is time to bring him down. He has to learn that one should keep a low profile in the North Territory."

"..."

The people whispered among themselves, and most of them expected Fang Yi to win. After all, Mu Chen had only risen in fame recently, but Fang Yi had been the overlord in the Dragon-Phoenix Record for a long time. Mu Chen was still incomparable to him.

Most importantly, Mu Chen was only a Grade Four Sovereign, but Fang Yi had long ago attained Grade Five Sovereign.

The people knew about Mu Chen's performance, and that his actual combat force was more powerful than what it seemed. An ordinary Grade Five Sovereign would have a tough time dealing with him, but... Fang Yi was not an ordinary Grade Five Sovereign.

As part of the younger generation groomed by the Divine Pavilion, no

one knew what trump card he was holding.

Lord Blood Hawk, Wu Tian, and the rest who were trapped by the Heavenly Alligator Troop looked up to the sky at the two of them from their position in the valley. They looked grave. Although they had seen how powerful Mu Chen was at the Ceremony of Bestowing Lordship, they knew how awesome Fang Yi was, too.

Fang Yi was not a simple person, as he was able to hold the number one position in the Dragon-Phoenix Record for so many years.

"If Mu Chen manages to get out of the duel unscathed, he will be famous among the younger generation in North Territory," Lord Blood Hawk said. Mu Chen had risen too quickly in North Territory, and this had brought doubt to the people watching. Many of them had attributed his performance to the daughter of the Flame Emperor. They were still contemplating his number three ranking in the Dragon-Phoenix Record.

This duel would remove all doubts about his ability.

At the same time, there were some risks. If he were to be defeated by Fang Yi, he would fall from his position, and that would be the end of his future.

No one would remember a loser in the cruel world of the North Territory.

Boom!

Majestic spiritual energy thundered and whizzed around Fang Yi like a sea. The whole area seemed to be quaking.

Mu Chen turned grave. When they were in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift, he had only seen how badly Fang Yi had been beaten by Cai Xiao. It was only now that Fang Yi was standing before him that he could feel the oppression emanating from him.

He was a strong opponent.

Fang Yi looked at Mu Chen and said coldly, "It is too late for regret now. Sometimes, people have to pay a price for their arrogance."

Mu Chen curled his lips and ignored him. He clenched his fist, and the Great Meru Demonic Pillar appeared in his hand, filled with demonic force. He stomped his feet in the air, turned into a streamer, and shot out.

Boom!

In the twinkle of an eye, the Great Meru Demonic Pillar struck down mercilessly on Fang Yi. It carried with it a huge shadow and horrifying power.

Fang Yi looked expressionless, and golden lights surged in his palms. He hit the Great Meru Demonic Pillar with a backhand strike.

Clang!

A loud sound of metal was heard, and visible ripples of power swirled out. Under the attack of the power ripples, Mu Chen was thrown back, and the Great Meru Demonic Pillar shot up into the sky.

"You will be sorry if you think I am like those ordinary Grade Five Sovereigns that you have dealt with before." Fang Yi looked at the scene with disdain and stepped out. He appeared on top of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar and hit it.

"Let me give it back to you!"

Majestic spiritual energy burst out, and the Great Meru Demonic Pillar turned into a dark shadow. With a screeching sound, it struck down hard toward Mu Chen. Even an ordinary Grade Five Sovereign would not dare to take that powerful blow.

Ha!

When Mu Chen saw it, he snorted within himself. Fang Yi was cunning. He was using Mu Chen's own Great Meru Demonic Pillar to attack. If Mu Chen chose to avoid the blow, it would weaken his momentum and allow Fang Yi to seize the opportunity. If he took it head on, which was what Fang Yi was yearning to see, he would suppress Mu Chen with his powerful spiritual energy.

All eyes were fixed on Mu Chen.

"You have no right to use my stuff!"

As the people looked on, Mu Chen's face turned cold. He quickly formed a seal with his hands, and golden lights shot out from his chest. The cry of a majestic ancient dragon resounded in the heavens and the earth.

As the golden lights surged out, the Spirit of the Real Dragon appeared on Mu Chen's right arm. Its claws covered Mu Chen's right palm and merged with his fingers.

Golden lights surged in Mu Chen's eyes. His right arm seemed to have expanded, and the veins under his skin seemed to be moving like a dragon. Mu Chen felt as though a huge dragon was residing in his right arm!

As Mu Chen's strength was enhanced, he displayed the power of the Dragon-Phoenix Body!

Boom!

The Great Meru Demonic Pillar fell down like a mountain. Fang Yi had covered the Great Meru Demonic Pillar with his frantic spiritual energy for the time being, and isolated it from Mu Chen's control.

The Great Meru Demonic Pillar could not recognize Mu Chen as its master at this moment.

Mu Chen did not move, but magnified the Demonic Pillar in his eyes. After taking a deep breath, he punched the Demonic Pillar.

Dong!

It was a simple punch, but the power that it contained caused the space around him to crack.

Clang!

A metallic sound thundered in the area, and the vital energy and blood in the top powers surged. However, they continued to fix their gazes on the sky.

Mu Chen maintained his posture as he punched out. The Great Meru Demonic Pillar had stopped moving.

All the people saw clearly that the golden spiritual energy that had covered the Great Meru Demonic Pillar dispersed as Mu Chen punched the Demonic Pillar.

Many top powers were taken aback by the power of Mu Chen's punch.

Mu Chen moved and appeared on top of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. His eyes were like those of a ferocious dragon and looked oppressive. He looked at Fang Yi, who had turned grave.

"In the future, don't touch things that do not belong to you and bring shame upon yourself." Mu Chen sneered. He stepped on the Great Meru Demonic Pillar and looked sharply at Fang Yi.

Fang Yi squinted and nodded slightly.

"Let's see who will be the one to bring shame upon himself!"

Chapter 848: Cosmic Divine Scripture

The clouds surged in the horizon, as the two figures stood in the sky. They looked at each other sharply, animosity in their eyes. An aura of cold killing intent indistinctly spread out.

This was a fight between two strong powers!

The crowd was shocked, as they looked at Mu Chen, who was standing on the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. The earlier punch had left a deep impression on them. Many top powers looked grave, as they knew that no ordinary Grade Five Sovereign would be able to take on such a powerful punch.

Mu Chen had the audacity to accept the duel, as he was indeed powerful. He had lived up to the name of the mighty dark horse. However, it was still unknown, as to who would emerge as the winner of the duel.

Fang Yi remained calm, looking at Mu Chen. He found the fluctuation of the wind blast of Mu Chen's fist familiar. It was the power that he had received from the Dragon-Phoenix Body at the Dragon-Phoenix Rift.

The Dragon-Phoenix Body was extremely mysterious. It had allowed a Grade Four Sovereign to have such amazing power! However, if Mu Chen had thought that he could challenge Fang Yi with this level of strength, he was being much too naïve.

Light flashed across Fang Yi's eyes, as he stomped his foot hard. The air screeched below his feet, while visible sound waves swirled out beneath his feet.

Boom!

As Fang Yi stomped his foot, a horrifying spiritual energy swirled out from the space behind him. Its movement was like a tidal wave, shaking the entire space.

Fang Yi stood on the spiritual energy tidal wave, looking small in comparison. However, he was like a monarch that ruled the area. Even Nine Nether, Lord Blood Hawk, and Xu Ba were shocked with the spiritual

energy oppression that he exuded.

Mu Chen could feel the oppression as well. He was shocked to see that Fang Yi had become more powerful. When they were at the Dragon-Phoenix Rift, Fang Yi was an ordinary Grade Five Sovereign. However, he must have reached the Peak of Grade Five Sovereign by now, as h seemed to have made good progress during this period.

"It is amazing that you are able to defeat Grade Five Sovereigns at your level. However, among the Grade Five Sovereigns, no one has been able to defeat me!" Fang Yi looked at Mu Chen, sounding confident.

Mu Chen had performed well, and so had he. Ever since he had attained Grade Five Sovereign, no one within the same rank had been able to defeat him!

Boom! Boom!

Majestic spiritual energy roared behind Fang Yi. It complemented his demeanor, making him look like a divine being with a strong oppression.

Dong!

Fang Yi suddenly shot up to the sky, then formed a seal with his hands. He then pressed the void with his right hand. Ancient light runes speedily spread out from his palm.

The huge tidal wave behind him turned into numerous rays of light that burst out. It then gathered under his palm like lightning. Then, an oppression started to spread out in the area.

Many top powers looked grave. Even the Grade Five Sovereigns were frightened, as they sensed that Fang Yi's attack was a deadly one.

Fang Yi was obviously out to kill. He wanted to end the duel as soon as possible. He wanted the people to know that no one would be a match for him, the overlord of the Dragon-Phoenix Record. He was determined to show clearly that any of those that challenged the overlord would be trampled into ashes!

Mu Chen also turned grave, as he felt the oppression from Fang Yi

strongly. Fang Yi was indeed extremely powerful.

Hoof.

Mu Chen took a deep breath, his eyes turning dark, like a black hole. His black hair also speedily grew long.

As his long hair danced in the wind, his lively face turned calm, like a deep lake. He stood still, and seemed at peace, almost as if nothing seemed to affect him.

Supreme Heart Demon Chant, Small Heart Demon State!

When a lion desired to catch a rabbit, it would go all out. Fang Yi was not a rabbit, but was a ferocious tiger! All the more, Mu Chen had to use different trump cards to fight with him.

Boom! Boom!

Spiritual energy raged on the horizon, creating friction within the space and causing loud bombing sounds. Fang Yi's eyes turned cold and sharp. He looked down at Mu Chen, then pressed his palm, which was filled with ancient light runes, on the void. His indifferent voice resounded throughout the air.

"Cosmic Divine Scripture, Cosmic Seal!"

Dong!

The people looked perplexedly at the Cosmic Star Atlas that had formed under Fang Yi's palm. Vast spiritual energy oppression spread out, then turned into a Spiritual Seal that was carved with stars. It then pressed down.

Wherever the Star Atlas Spiritual Seal passed, visible cracks were formed in the space. The oppression that came along with it caused the top powers to turn pale.

"This is one of most powerful Divine Scriptures in the Divine Pavilion. This is a Near Perfection Divine Art. Fang Yi is indeed amazing!"

"Any Grade Five Sovereign will be defeated by it. Fang Yi has lived up to his name!"

"The Divine Pavilion is indeed amazing. Ordinary people will not have a chance to see it. Only those in the Divine Pavilion have the chance to cultivate it."

As Fang Yi was throwing out the blow, the crowd whispered among themselves. Many top powers were envious and impressed by the Near Perfection Divine Art that Fang Yi had displayed.

"Is this a Near Perfection Divine Art?

Mu Chen lifted up his head to look at the Star Atlas Spiritual Seal. As he was in the Small Heart Demon State, even if a dreadful blow was before him, he would look expressionless.

Buzz!

Mu Chen speedily formed a seal with his hands, causing a space warp to form behind him. The Majestic Sovereign Sea indistinctly appeared, the spiritual energy within it surging. As it did so, four rays of beams shot out from it.

Roar!

The cries of a dragon and elephant resounded. Two huge dragons and two elephants instantly appeared above Mu Chen. As they stepped on the void, the space quaked.

All of the top powers could feel the oppression from the two dragons and the two elephants. However, if Mu Chen was using this to contend with Fang Yi, it would still not be powerful enough.

"If two dragons and two elephants are not enough...I shall add more."

Mu Chen muttered to himself. He had cultivated Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art for about a year. Although he had not perfected it, he had at least advanced to another level.

Given Mu Chen's current strength, the two dragons and two elephants were not his most powerful means. Mu Chen's dark eyes flickered, as he changed the seal. The cry of a dragon and elephant resounded again in the Sovereign Sea. Then, the people saw two streamers shoot out from the

Sovereign Sea.

Additional dragon and elephant!

The top powers turned grave, as they looked at the three dragons and three elephants that were standing in the sky. Even the Grade Five Sovereigns felt oppressed.

Before they could recover from their states of shock, they were taken aback again. After summoning three dragons and three elephants, Mu Chen had changed the seal again!

Was he summoning even more?

The top powers were extremely shocked. Although Mu Chen was only a Grade Four Sovereign, he had displayed great power. They could sense that the Divine Art that was being displayed by Mu Chen was as powerful as the Cosmic Divine Scripture that was displayed by Fang Yi!

Boom!

Suddenly, Mu Chen stopped forming the seal, leaving the Sovereign Sea behind him in a state of turmoil. Two streamers shot out from it.

Four dragons and four elephants!

When the eight huge creatures appeared in the horizon, even Xu Ba and Lord Blood Hawk were stunned. Fang Yi looked gloomy, hitting his fist down on his palm. The huge shadow, formed by the Cosmic Divine Seal, then moved toward Mu Chen, covering him up. Fang Yi did not believe that, with his strength being at Peak of Grade Five Sovereign, Mu Chen would be able to counter the Cosmic Divine Scripture!

"Cosmic Divine Seal, Control Cosmic!"

Mu Chen placed his palms on top of each other, his deep voice resounding in his heart.

"Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art, Four Dragons Four Elephants Hate the Firmament!"

Four dragons and four elephants cried out to the sky, while visible sound waves swirled out. The space was in constant state of turbulence.

The eight streamers that were formed by the four dragons and four elephants clashed together, sending spiritual lights bursting out. They then turned into a huge ancient halberd, which was about a thousand feet tall. The four dragons and four elephants then rested on the huge ancient halberd, like a divine force.

"Dragon-Elephant Divine Halberd!"

Mu Chen's eyes were bright. He lifted up his hands and roared.

Buzz!

The huge ancient halberd buzzed loudly. Then, in the next instant, it turned into a streamer, tearing the void apart at a speed of lightning. In the twinkle of an eye, it then appeared below the Cosmic Spiritual Seal! It then slashed hard on the Cosmic Spiritual Seal that was above it!

The Dragon-Elephant Divine Halberd and the Cosmic Spiritual Seal were like two meteorites that had fallen from the sky. They carried with them destructive fluctuations, which clashed hard against each other.

The top powers fixed their gazes on the point where they had clashed. Everyone was dying to know, now that the two powerful Divine Arts had clashed together, which one would be more powerful?!

Was the Divine Art from Divine Pavilion more powerful than the mysterious Divine Art displayed by Mu Chen?

Chapter 849: Each Displaying His Prowess

The top powers looked intensely at the sky. The two terrifying powers clashed together like meteorites...

Clang!

There was a loud explosion. A horrifying spiritual energy windstorm raged and swirled out, covering a radius of a thousand miles.

The mountains were flattened by the windstorm, and large rocks turned into powder. Cracks formed on the ground...

In the face of such destructive power, even the Grade Five Sovereigns turned pale. They knew that given their power, they would not be able to attain such a high level.

However, they saw this level of power in the duel between Mu Chen and Fang Yi.

They were not surprised by Fang Yi's power, but Mu Chen had taken them by surprise. It was not easy for a Grade Four Sovereign to come this far...

Some of the top powers looked at one another and saw the grave look on one another's faces. Mu Chen had not been pushing himself too hard when he accepted Fang Yi's challenge. He was indeed powerful.

The duel between the dark horse and the overlord was extremely interesting.

As the top powers were dwelling on it, two rays of colorful lights attacked each other crazily. They were Fang Yi's Cosmic Seal and Mu Chen's Dragon-Elephant Divine Halberd...

The two rays of colorful lights had activated their spiritual energy to the optimum. However, they were caught in a situation in which neither could destroy the other.

Mu Chen's Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art was comparable to Fang Yi's Cosmic Divine Scripture!

Fang Yi stood behind the colorful lights and looked coldly at the scene. He was furious, as he had not expected such an outcome.

He could tell that the Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art displayed by Mu Chen was a Near Perfection Divine Art. In terms of ranking, it was comparable to the Cosmic Seal. However, Fang Yi's strength was at the Peak of Grade Five Sovereign!

His realm was higher than Mu Chen's. Logically speaking, the power of a Divine Art of the same ranking would depend on the spiritual energy of the martial artist. Fang Yi should have the upper hand since his realm was higher, but this was not the case.

His spiritual energy is not as powerful as mine, but he is able to control it well. He is able to condense it when he activates it...

Fang Yi's eyes glittered. After persisting for a while, he started to realize why Mu Chen was able to be on par with him. Fang Yi started to become doubtful. He found it hard to believe that a Grade Four Sovereign had the ability to control the spiritual energy in his body and condense it so well.

Even Fang Yi was not able to do it!

"Eh?"

As Fang Yi was thinking of ways to defeat Mu Chen, he suddenly looked up. Two huge rays of colorful lights clashed against each other, and the Dragon-Elephant Divine Halberd exuded a spiritual energy fluctuation that was extremely violent.

Mu Chen intended to blast the Dragon-Elephant Divine Halberd!

Boom!

As the Dragon-Elephant Divine Halberd exploded, the area suddenly darkened. Dazzling colorful lights that were brighter than daylight spread out and brightened the area.

As the rays of light burst out, humongous spiritual energy shockwaves swirled out. Visible cracks were seen within a large area in the sky.

The Cosmic Seal blew up as well.

The top powers turned pale and speedily retreated. They were fearful of being caught by the horrifying shockwaves.

Fang Yi looked cold. He shot backwards to avoid the shockwaves, leaving only afterimages. He fixed his gaze on the space where the spiritual energy windstorm had taken place.

Mu Chen should be in that direction. Given his speed, he would not be able to pull himself out of the horrifying shockwaves in time. Moreover, he was near the Dragon-Elephant Divine Halberd.

Buzz!

As these thoughts were running through Fang Yi's mind, he was suddenly taken by surprise. He felt that the space behind him had been torn apart as a shadow appeared. The shadow had a pair of huge Phoenix wings, and as the wings spread out, they covered the sun.

Dong!

When the shadow appeared, Mu Chen immediately threw a punch at Fang Yi. The real dragon symbol indistinctly squirmed around his fist. The wind blast of his fist caused cracks in the space.

Even Fang Yi was shocked at his power. However, he was not a weakling. He clenched his fist, and majestic spiritual energy swirled out from his palm.

"Cosmic Spiritual Shield!"

The spiritual energy turned into a primitive Spiritual Shield in front of Fang Yi, and the Cosmic Star Atlas glittered on the surface of the shield. It seemed sturdy and unbreakable.

Dong!

The wind blast that contained the real dragon's spiritual energy hit the shield and caused ripples to be formed. As the ripples became more rapid, it caused the shield to burst.

Fang Yi came to himself and looked glum. He had not expected Mu Chen to escape from the terrifying shockwaves and come from behind

without his knowledge. If he had not been on guard, Mu Chen would have hurt him.

"Since you have sneaked your way here, don't ever think of escaping!"

Fang Yi sneered. He activated his spiritual energy to the optimum at the Peak of Grade Five Sovereign. Golden lights surged on the surface of his skin, and the cry of a dragon resounded.

Fang Yi had possessed the Real Dragon Body from the Dragon-Phoenix Rift!

Although the Real Dragon Body was not as powerful as the Dragon Phoenix Body, his power had been greatly enhanced. With Fang Yi's powerful spiritual energy at the Peak of Grade Five Sovereign, not many Grade Five Sovereigns would be able to contend with him.

Bang! Bang!

Fang Yi shot out like lightning. The wind blast was powerful like a dragon. Every punch that he threw caused the space to crack. The wind blast covered Mu Chen's paths of escape like a storm.

Fang Yi was powerful in close combat as well!

Under such a forceful attack, even a martial artist at the Peak of Grade Five Sovereign would lose.

Mu Chen turned grave. He had not expected Fang Yi to be so difficult to deal with. His surprise attack had not given him the outcome that he expected, but it had given Fang Yi the chance to suppress him with his spiritual energy.

Mu Chen's eyes glittered as he entered into the Small Heart Demon State. He looked calm and suddenly sprang out as the crowd shouted out in shock.

Dark golden light emanated from Mu Chen's body, and the Spirit of the Real Dragon squirmed around. The Spirit of the Real Phoenix turned into a pair of Phoenix wings and flapped on his back, causing a gale.

Mu Chen had fully activated the power of the Dragon-Phoenix Body and

complemented it with the Unperishable Flame, the Netherworld Thunder Heart, and the Small Heart Demon State.

With these various means, a majestic wind blast whizzed out from his palms and clashed against the blow Fang Yi had thrown out.

Dong! Dong! Dong!

The two of them were like ferocious dragons fighting each other in the sky. The wind blasts from their fists thundered as they hit each other. The space rippled, and a spiritual energy windstorm raged.

The top powers were amazed by Fang Yi and Mu Chen's aggressive attacks.

"This guy is able to take on Fang Yi to this level!" Xu Ba looked gloomy as he watched the fierce fight between the two of them. Although he could tell that Fang Yi had the upper hand, Fang Yi was still unable to defeat Mu Chen.

Mu Chen was unexpectedly difficult to deal with.

However, Xu Ba was not the least worried. He knew how powerful Fang Yi was. If Fang Yi continued to attack Mu Chen, Mu Chen would soon reveal a fatal flaw.

Nine Nether and Lord Blood Hawk frowned and became worried as they thought likewise.

"You are just a Grade Four Sovereign, and you have the audacity to take me on. You think too highly of yourself!" Fang Yi said coldly.

They hit each other hard again, and Fang Yi's eyes suddenly turned sharp. Forceful spiritual energy like a windstorm filled the majestic wind blast from his fists. Fang Yi threw out a blow towards Mu Chen's arms at lightning speed.

Bang!

The space shook and Mu Chen flew backward like a bullet. Traces of blood flowed down from the corners of his mouth. Mu Chen was injured by this powerful blow.

Wow.

There was an uproar as the people saw what had happened. Mu Chen had lost out to Fang Yi.

As Mu Chen was being thrown back, his eyes turned sharp like an eagle's.

When Xu Ba, Nine Nether, and Lord Blood Hawk saw it, they were shocked.

Purple light swirled out from behind Mu Chen, and a huge, beautiful flower appeared.

Fang Yi turned pale when he saw the flower. He could feel a dangerous fluctuation emanating from the mysterious flower!

Chapter 850: Primordial Star Descent Celestial Body

Mu Chen flew backwards, like a bullet in the sky. Dark purple light spread out, then turned into a large beautiful divine flower, which appeared behind him.

As the flower bloomed, ancient runes appeared on its petals, swirling outward. The area darkened, causing a mysterious power to exude from the flower. The top powers, sensing a dangerous fluctuation, stared at the mysterious flower that was behind Mu Chen.

"How could he possibly have so many different means?!" When Xu Ba saw this, he exclaimed, turning pale. He looked extremely grave, as he saw that the Divine Art that Mu Chen had just displayed was more powerful than even the Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art!

The Nine Dragon Nine Elephant Art is a Near Perfection Divine Art! Does Mu Chen possess a Perfect Divine Art?

Xu Ba's eyelids twitched, while these thoughts swirled in his mind. He knew that the Perfect Divine Art was precious and rare. Even in the Divine Pavilion, it was considered as being the most powerful Divine Art. Given his status, he would certainly not be able to obtain it.

Most importantly, this level of Divine Art was not easy to cultivate. It demanded much from the person cultivating the skill, and it was extremely difficult to attain. Thus, when Xu Ba saw that Mu Chen had successfully cultivated a Perfect Divine Art, he became tremendously envious of him.

The people were stunned by the mysterious flower that had just appeared behind Mu Chen. Mu Chen licked the blood that was at the corner of his mouth, then looked with disdain at Fang Yi, who was looking extremely pale.

Without hesitation, he formed a seal with his hands. The beautiful mandala flower bloomed instantly, its dark pistil directing itself at Fang Yi.

Swoosh!

Upon seeing this, Fang Yi turned. He transformed into afterimages, then retreated, as he could sense the strong power of the attack. In the face of such a powerful attack, even Fang Yi had chosen to flee.

Fang Yi had seen it in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift. When the Prince of Netherworld threw out a deadly blow, Mu Chen had used it to counter the attack. Thus, Fang Yi was well aware of its power.

Mu Chen had obviously become more powerful than before. Although he was performing the same movement, this time was much more powerful than before.

Buzz! Buzz!

Mu Chen looked nonchalantly at Fang Yi, who had retreated. He slowly shut his eyes, then said in a cold voice that was filled with immense killing intent, "Datura Sky-wrecking Light!"

Mu Chen stretched out his finger and tapped on the void. The moment he tapped on it, the space cracked, like a thin piece of glass.

Bang!

The beautiful mandala flower bloomed even more. In the next instant, the pistil shook violently, shooting forth a purple beam.

As the purple beam darted across the horizon, the entire area darkened. It was as though the lights had been devoured by the purple beam. It looked extremely mysterious.

The speed of the beam was extremely fast. It was like a python, squirming around in the space. Wherever it past, the space cracked. Distance was not an issue.

Within a short span of time, the purple beam, which was filled with destructive fluctuation, appeared before Fang Yi. Fang Yi had completely turned grave. He took a deep breath, then formed a seal. Powerful spiritual energy swirled out, then turned into an extremely large Star Atlas.

"Cosmic Star Atlas!"

The Star Atlas spread out, looking incredibly mysterious. It had an extremely powerful spiritual energy fluctuation.

Boom!

The purple beam shot toward the Star Atlas, hitting it hard.

Crack!

As the purple beam came into contact with the Star Atlas, the Star Atlas cracked. The crack then spread out, covering the entire Star Atlas rapidly.

Boom!

The Star Atlas burst, then immediately turned into colorful dazzling light spots.

Swish!

The destructive beam continued to pass through the light spots, before hitting the blurry figure that was standing among the light spots. At that instant, the sky seemed to have collapsed completely.

The top powers turned pale. Even though Fang Yi was at the Peak of Grade Five Sovereign, he would be badly injured by such a horrifying attack.

"He is so powerful!" Wu Tian was stunned by the scene.

He looked at Mu Chen with disbelief. Although he had seen the power of Mu Chen at the Ceremony of Bestowing Lordship, he still found it hard to accept that Mu Chen was able to contend with a top power, who was at the level of Peak of Grade Five Sovereign.

One year ago, when Mu Chen came to the Daluo Territory, he was a nobody, who had not even secured the Sovereign-level. However, he was now able to fearlessly take on the overlord of the younger generation in the North Territory.

Even Wu Tian, who was extremely prideful, was at a loss for words. Everyone continued to stare at the bright light spots that were spreading out in the sky.

Nine Nether, Xu Ba, and Lord Blood Hawk did not say a word. They were looking sharply at the aggressive spiritual energy fluctuation in the sky.

Mu Chen stood in the sky, wiping off the blood stains that were at the corner of his mouth. He looked at the spot where the light spots had started to spread out. There was a stillness there, and Fang Yi seemed to have disappeared into thin air.

Had Fang Yi been killed?

Mu Chen squinted his eyes, feeling shocked.

Boom!

The light spots exploded, sending light waves surging outward. A huge figure shot forth from the light spots, then appeared before Mu Chen. A large palm, which was like a mountain, then hit down hard on Mu Chen.

The attack was too sudden, catching Mu Chen off guard, even though he was at the Small Heart Demon State. As the wind blast of the palm was about to land on Mu Chen, golden lights shimmered on his body. Immediately thereafter, the Dragon-Phoenix Golden Armor appeared.

Dang!

When the huge palm hit Mu Chen's body, a metal sound resounded. Mu Chen fell, crushing a hill into ruins and causing large cracks on the ground.

This sudden change of events had taken everyone by surprise. When Mu Chen had been thrown onto the ground, the crowd suddenly became alert. They speedily lifted up their heads, looking at the sky, where a large figure stood in the air, exuding a powerful spiritual energy oppression.

The large figure was about 1,000 feet tall. Numerous stars were carved on its body. As the star lights connected to one another, they formed a mysterious Star Atlas. One of the arms of the large figure had been smashed. It had turned into a one-armed giant!

"What is that?"

Many people were stunned upon seeing the one-armed giant. After a

while, they shouted numerous exclamations of wonder and inquiry.

"Is that the Primordial Star Descent Celestial Body?"

"Is that the Primordial Star Descent Celestial Body, which is ranked number 65 in 99 Sovereign Celestial Body?"

"That is right! I have heard that the Primordial Star Descent Celestial Body is a powerful Sovereign Celestial Body in the Divine Pavilion. I never expected Fang Yi to have successfully cultivated it. Not many people have been powerful enough to display it."

"It is ranked number 65. It is such a powerful Sovereign Celestial Body. I have heard that, when the Primordial Star Descent Celestial Body has been cultivated to its optimum, it can turn into a starry sky. When the Star Descent Celestial Body is covered by starlight, it will be indestructible and become extremely powerful."

"Hmnn, no wonder he is able to counter the formidable blows from Mu Chen. Fang Yi has used his trump card as well."

The place was in an uproar. Fang Yi appeared above the huge Star Descent figure, looking pale. He had been injured by the earlier blow that was thrown out by Mu Chen. Even though he had summoned the Sovereign Celestial Body, he had lost an arm, which had weakened the power of the Star Descent Celestial Body.

Fang Yi looked gravely at the collapsed ground below him. He had used up much of his spiritual energy. Although he had never taken Mu Chen lightly, he had not expected Mu Chen to push him to such an intense level of fighting.

"You deserve to be ranked number three in the Dragon-Phoenix Record."

Fang Yi sounded cold. His eyes were filled with extreme killing intent. He knew that, if he did not kill Mu Chen now, Mu Chen would only become more famous.

By then, Fang Yi would have become his stepping stone towards his rise to the top. This was a situation that Fang Yi did not want to see!

Fang Yi formed a seal with his hands, sending a bright starlight burst out from the complex Star Atlas that was on the Star Descent Celestial Body. The starlight then gathered on the huge palm, before turning into a huge Star Spear.

"Galaxy Ancient Divine Spear!"

"I will finish you off with one blow!"

Fang Yi roared like a dragon, then stomped his foot. His body seemed to merge with the Star Descent Celestial Body. He then whizzed down like a starlight beam. The Star Spear carried with it a majestic fluctuation that blasted toward the collapsed ground.

The top powers looked grave. Everyone could tell that Fang Yi had activated his power to the optimum, as he obviously had the intention to finish off Mu Chen.

The battle between the dark horse and the overlord had ended with one fatal blow!

Chapter 851: Activate Three Suns!

A humongous spear came down from the heavens like a falling star. It carried with it a destructive power. Its irresistible force shocked the top powers, and they quickly retreated.

Everyone could see that Fang Yi was determined to kill Mu Chen. He was giving it everything he had.

Bang! Bang!

The ground collapsed continuously, and there were large cracks all over the place.

Huge rocks at the spot where Mu Chen had fallen started to explode. They turned to dust under the power of the horrifying oppression.

Fang Yi had consolidated all of his power in this blow. Together with the Primordial Star Descent Celestial Body, the power had become extremely great. Even Nine Nether, Xu Ba, and Lord Blood Hawk raised their eyebrows.

Everyone stared at the collapsed ground Mu Chen was buried under. Ever since Mu Chen had fallen into the ground, it had been quiet. No one knew if he would still be able to contend with Fang Yi.

It seemed tough for the dark horse to challenge the overlord.

"Do you think that you can escape by hiding away like a rat?"

The Star Spear shot down to the ground. Fang Yi stood above the Star Descent Celestial Body and looked coldly at the stretch of ruins. He could feel Mu Chen's breath within the ruins. Although he had struck Mu Chen, he knew that it had not done Mu Chen much harm.

However, no matter how Mu Chen had hidden himself, the outcome would be the same!

This was because Fang Yi had dealt a deadly blow!

"Come on out!"

Fang Yi clenched his fists, and the horrifying spiritual energy from the

Star Spear spread out, cracking the already ruined ground.

As the ground cracked, everyone saw a figure in Dragon-Phoenix Golden Armor standing on a huge rock deep within. A pair of dark eyes gazed at the horrifying blow that had been thrown down.

"I have finally found you, rat!" Fang Yi's eyes were filled with killing intent. The Star Spear shook and shot down toward Mu Chen.

Everyone held their breath and looked at Mu Chen, who was wearing the Dragon-Phoenix Golden Armor. They were wondering what Mu Chen would do to counter Fang Yi's deadly blow.

Mu Chen should have used up his spiritual energy by now.

Mu Chen let out a breath.

Hoof.

He gently lifted up his hands and suddenly clenched them!

Mu Chen shouted in a deep voice, "Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array!"

As he finished shouting, a stunning spiritual energy fluctuation swirled out from where he had collapsed.

The ground around it also collapsed, and four black lotuses floated up from below. As they churned around, they exuded extremely powerful spiritual energy fluctuations.

"Is that... a spiritual array?"

When the forces saw the four black lotuses behind Mu Chen, they could feel a special spiritual energy fluctuation emanating from the lotuses. They could not refrain from crying out when they sensed that the spiritual array was a powerful one.

When Fang Yi heard the cry, he was not affected. He had done research on Mu Chen so he knew much about him. This included Mu Chen's status as a Spiritual Array Master. He even knew that Mu Chen had used a spiritual array to defeat Qiu Taiyin at the Ceremony of Bestowing Lordship.

"Qiu Taiyin has only advanced to Grade Five Sovereign. He has not even stabilized himself in this realm. You are too naïve if you are thinking of using the same tricks on me!"

Fang Yi curled up his lips and sneered. He clenched his fist, and the Star Spear pressed down, ready to kill Mu Chen.

Mu Chen looked calm and changed the seal with his hands.

Boom!

The four black lotuses shook and bloomed. Dark lights speedily gathered around the pistils. In the next instant, four huge black beams shot out from the pistils!

Buzz! Buzz!

The four black beams swirled rapidly around one another like four large, black dragons. They carried with them powerful spiritual energy fluctuations and shot up to crash against the Star Spear that was coming down!

Dong!

When they clashed, the area seemed to be in a state of destruction. Visible shockwaves swirled out, and the ground quickly collapsed. Within seconds, there was a large, deep hole in the ground.

Majestic Dark Light fought crazily with the Star Spear. Every time they clashed against each other, the hole became bigger.

Everyone was shocked by the aggressive attacks. However, they were even more shocked at Mu Chen's powerful defense.

The all-powerful Star Spear had been countered by the powerful Black Lotus Spiritual Array.

Mu Chen calmly looked up at the fierce fight taking place in the sky.

When he had fought with Qiu Taiyin, he had used the Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array. However, he had just broken through then and was not able to control the spiritual array well. The four lotuses were not at their peak performances then.

Now that Mu Chen had consolidated his spiritual energy, and with the help of the Small Heart Demon State, he was able to construct and control a more perfect and powerful Spiritual Array.

Fang Yi would be in trouble if he did not take this spiritual array seriously.

"Rat!"

As Mu Chen had expected, Fang Yi turned pale. The trump cards he thought would help him win the duel always disappointed him. This was unacceptable to him.

"You will not be able to escape today!"

Fang Yi was filled with killing intent. When they had been at the Dragon-Phoenix Rift, Mu Chen had had to use every means at his disposal to force the Prince of Netherworld to retreat. He had nearly been killed in the process. However, within just a few months, Mu Chen had grown so much more powerful. Even Fang Yi had to use various means to fight him now. He had progressed too quickly, and that alarmed Fang Yi. If Fang Yi let Mu Chen off today, he was not sure he could defeat Mu Chen in the future.

Thus, Mu Chen had to die right now!

Cold lights flickered in Fang Yi's eyes. He stomped his foot hard and hit the top of the Star Descent Celestial Body. Blood flowed out from his palm, and the head of the Star Descent Celestial Body turned into a Star Atlas formed by blood.

Fang Yi shouted, "Blood Star Atlas!" and blood spread out from the Star Descent Celestial Body's head. The blood turned into blood rays and splashed onto the Star Spear at lightning speed.

Boom!

Spiritual energy fluctuations burst out from the Star Spear. The space quaked like boiling water, and a horrifying spiritual energy windstorm burst out!

Bang!

The dark beams that were swirling around like four black dragons seemed to be defeated. The beams started to crack and ultimately, exploded.

The chaotic spiritual energy from the Star Spear fell down straight onto Mu Chen, carrying with it an immense killing intent.

However, when the Star Spear had destroyed the Butchering Demonic Spiritual Array, it had paid a high price. The Star Atlas that had spread out onto the Star Spear had dimmed.

Even so, the blow was still powerful and caused the top powers who were at the Peak of Grade Five Sovereign to shiver.

Mu Chen looked at the Divine Spear falling onto him. Although he was protected by the Dragon-Phoenix Golden Armor and Dragon-Phoenix Body, he could feel the prickly pain caused by the horrifying oppression.

"Indeed, it is not enough..." Mu Chen muttered.

The Butchering Demonic Spiritual Array was not powerful enough to counter Fang Yi's attack. The Primordial Star Descent Celestial Body lived up to its name and ranking.

However, Mu Chen had never been fearful of going against a Sovereign Celestial Body.

Hoof.

Mu Chen put his palms together and bright golden lights suddenly burst out. An extremely huge figure instantly appeared. A large golden sun hung behind the figure and exuded a strong oppression.

When the Great Solar Undying Body appeared, even Fang Yi was shocked. He could feel a strange fluctuation from the Primordial Star Descent Celestial Body. That was a red alert.

Sovereign Super Power, Power of Nine Suns! Mu Chen shouted within his heart.

Buzz! Buzz!

Two golden suns rose up from between the Great Solar Undying Body's eyebrows and Mu Chen's chest. A horrifying power flowed out. However, that was not all. Golden lights gathered at his abdominal area, and another golden sun started to form!

"Power of Nine Suns, Activate Three Suns!"

As Mu Chen shouted, the top powers turned pale when they saw its power. The Great Solar Undying Body erupted like a volcano!

The whole situation suddenly changed!

Chapter 852: Both Sides Defeated

Three bright golden scorching suns rose up from the center of the Great Solar Undying Body's brows, chest, and lower abdomen, before turning into a majestic golden light that permeated throughout the air.

The golden light was like a thick golden liquid. Wherever it surged past, it shone even more brightly than before. Looking at it from a distance, it seemed like it was a statue of a golden Buddha, standing tall at the space between heaven and earth.

Suddenly, an extremely shocking energy fluctuation rippled out, causing the entire space to shake. At this moment, Mu Chen's body assimilated into the Great Solar Undying Body.

His line of sight pierced through the Great Solar Undying Body, then directly locked on to that Star Spear, which was dropping from the sky. Although he was facing Fang Yi's full-on attack, there was not even a trace of fear in his eyes. Instead, there was a thick passion and fighting spirit present in his pupils.

Out of the Great Solar Undying Body's Power of Nine Suns, he had already unlocked the Power of the Three Suns. This type of power unlocking was like a huge dragon, surging forward and roaring in his body, as it brought along a terrifying power, which was enough to twist the whole world!

Although Fang Yi was one of the strongest Grade Five Sovereigns and had cultivated such a high ranked Sovereign Celestial Body, just like the Primordial Star Descent Celestial Body, if they were to compare the two Sovereign Celestial Bodies, Mu Chen had the utmost confidence in the Great Solar Undying Body that had been cultivated by him.

This was because the ultimate evolution of this Great Solar Undying Body was what was mentioned in the legends. It was The Primordial Immortal Body, which was one of the Top Ten Primitive Celestial Bodies.

Although this Great Solar Undying Body could only be considered as the lowest form of Primitive Celestial Body, even a small lion would have

sharp claws, and even a young tiger would have its special kind of prowess. Thus, anyone who underestimated it would have to pay the price.

Roar!

What sounded like an angry roar exploded from within Mu Chen's heart. After he had abruptly formed a seal with both of his hands, the Great Solar Undying Body clapped upwards with one hand.

Then, a golden seriflux flowed forth, directly covering the Great Solar Undying Body's enormous arm. Immediately, its whole arm was covered by a thick layer of golden colored crystals. What seemed like countless mysterious and ancient runes were imprinted within the golden crystal, and a sort of terrifying power was quietly rippling out.

Boom!

When the Great Solar Undying Body clapped out its huge palm, the surrounding space immediately shattered under its palm. A golden colored shockwave swept out in a craze, showcasing the terrifying power that was contained within Mu Chen's ultimate palm attack. This was the pinnacle of what was obtained from the cohesion of his own spiritual energy and the Great Solar Undying Body's Power of Three Suns.

The many strong people in this world had all changed their countenances, due to this one palm trick, which Mu Chen had just accomplished with all of his strength. Even the expressions of quite a number of the strongest people, who had reached the Grade Five Sovereign, became solemn. They clearly detected a densely dangerous fluctuation!

"This Mu Chen is truly remarkable! It is really hard to imagine that a mere Grade Four Sovereign could have the capability to break out such a surprising combat force!" Those strong people's eyes were filled with shock, because they knew that there was a huge difference between every Grade within the Sovereign Nine Grades, and also that it was especially difficult to fill in this gap! Thus, they could not help but find it slightly hard to believe that Mu Chen could actually reach this point, with just the capabilities of a Grade Four Sovereign!

Moreover, what was important was that Fang Yi was not a simple Grade Five Sovereign, either. In addition to his capabilities, he had many hidden trump cards. Thus, perhaps no one within the rank of a Grade Five Sovereign could contend with him...

But now, Mu Chen had done it!

Above the horizon, that Star Spear, which was coming down like a shooting star beam, was suppressing downwards. The people all stared, awestruck. Then, it collided viciously together with that huge golden hand that was soaring upwards.

Dong!

At the moment of the collision, the world suddenly quieted down. Countless sounds of uproar had thoroughly disappeared, and time seemed to have stopped completely.

A golden colored twister seemed to have formed instantly, before it finally merged into the wind. Within a few short moments, it had already grown lofty and enormous. In the end, it raged outwards!

Within the golden colored twister, the spiritual energy was already extremely violent. Even the expressions of the strong people, like Nine Nether, Xu Ba, and Lord Blood Hawk abruptly changed, when they saw that kind of destructive power!

And, of course, the first things that the rage of the golden colored twister rushed towards were those two gigantic Sovereign Celestial Bodies...

Bang!

The Great Solar Undying Body's arm, which was covered with a layer of golden colored crystals, was immediately minced by the storm. At the same time, Fang Yi's Star Spear shattered completely.

A shockwave, which could be seen with the naked eye, burst out. Immediately, the huge bodies of the Great Solar Undying Body and the Star Celestial Body flew backwards. When they flew out, those enormous bodies were instantly filled with numerous cracks. Clearly, this type of terrifying attack had directly crushed their powerful defenses.

Two enormous shadows flew backwards, before finally coming down, right in front of countless astonished gazes. Their impacts had directly caused two deep traces, which were almost ten thousand fathoms long, to be smeared on the ground. Along the way, several hills were directly shaken, until they exploded, filling the sky with huge rocks that sputtered as they soared.

Bang!

After shattering yet another mountain, the strengths of those two enormous shadows were finally dispelled completely. Then, when the impact had dispersed, the two enormous shadows turned into light spots, before disappearing.

Boom!

Two sorry figures shot out from within, crashing into the disorderly rocks. They collapsed in the ruins of the disorderly rocks, unable to move, save for their blood, which was continuously flowing from their bodies. Their breathing had also became extremely weak.

After a long while, that terrifying golden colored storm above the horizon had finally dissipated. Thus, the attention of everyone in the world quickly turned towards those two shadows in the ruins.

If it hadn't been for the fact that the chests of those two shadows were still rising and falling, perhaps everyone would have thought that they had been shaken to their deaths in that terrifying collision. The whole world was now silent.

Countless strong people's expressions were shaken. No one would've thought that this battle between a dark horse and an overlord would actually reach such an extent! It made the people shudder in fear. Moreover, such an outcome was also beyond their expectations!

This was because they had initially thought that this was going to be a battle, where an overlord kills a dark horse. But, the final outcome was that neither side won!

Countless strong people looked at each other in dismay. Soon after this,

they couldn't help but lightly suck in a mouthful of cold air in their hearts. If news of this outcome was spread, then it would definitely cause another great disturbance!

Although Mu Chen did not obtain a crushing win in this battle, everyone knew how shocking his combat achievement was, just by the fact that he had actually caused his capabilities to reach the peak of a Grade Five Sovereign! Moreover, he had accomplished this by using just his capabilities as a Grade Four Sovereign!

Also impressive was that he had managed to force Fang Yi, who had cultivated the Primordial Star Descent Celestial Body, to end the battle in a manner whereby neither side won. After all, when Mu Chen was facing the Prince of Netherworld, who was ranked second in the Dragon-Phoenix Record in the Dragon Phoenix-Rift, he was still surrounded by perils. In the end, he could only forcibly buy time, before the Flame Emperor's daughter defeated Fang Yi.

But now, with just the span of a few months' time, he could already rely on his own power to contend with Fang Yi and not be defeated! This sort of improvement was enough to make people feel shocked.

"This boy is impressive. In the future, there will definitely be a warrior born from the Daluo Territory!"

Some strong people gave Mu Chen high compliments, saying such things in whispers. This was because they all knew how rare it was for Mu Chen, with his identity as a latecomer, to be able to stand out in the North Territory within such a short time.

In that valley, all of the Blood Hawk Troops were rendered speechless. Wu Tian's face was filled with shock, and even Lord Blood Hawk's expression became extremely solemn.

In the past, he had overlooked Mu Chen. Even if Mu Chen had defeated Qiu Taiyin, to him, there was still a small gap between Mu Chen and the other experienced strong people, like himself.

But, after witnessing the battle between Mu Chen and Fang Yi, this previous mentality was completely eliminated, because he knew that, even

he would not have dared to ignore that previous all-out attack by Mu Chen!

This youngster was certainly like a tiger! Thus, he should not be underestimated!

"Bastard!"

Xu Ba's face was ashen, and his eyes were flickering with a murderous light. His countenance and expression were also extremely gloomy.

While this type of outcome had shocked him, he also felt heartache, along with anger. This type of heartache was natural, because of their loss of the Meteorfall Alchemy.

"Many thanks to Lord Xu for your gift." At this moment, a smile finally emerged on Nine Nether's previously tense face. Her beautiful eyes were looking at Xu Ba, as she spoke with a smile that was filled with ridicule.

The skin on Xu Ba's face twitched. He gripped his fist, and the veins on his arms were shaking.

While the world was feeling shocked by this outcome, two shadows, which were covered in blood within those ruins, wobbled, then staggered to their feet. Mu Chen's complexion was pale, as he wiped away the traces of blood from the corners of his mouth. He looked towards Fang Yi, who had a gloomy look in his eyes from afar, then opened his mouth and said, "Looks like you can't kill me this time."

Fang Yi glared at Mu Chen with a cold and stern expression in his eyes, while an endless rage surged in his heart. Although he had never underestimated Mu Chen, he could never have expected that he would actually be dragged into a situation whereby neither side would win.

This sort of situation was clearly extremely unfavorable for him, because in the younger generation of the North Territory, it was simply impossible for Mu Chen's prestige to be comparable to his own. But, after the news of today's result spread, perhaps anyone would think that Mu Chen already had the qualifications to be on equal footing with him.

How could he bear such a thing?!

"I shall kindly accept your Meteorfall Alchemy."

Golden lights were flickering on the surface of Mu Chen's skin. At this moment, the Dragon-Phoenix Body began to move hastily, as the Dragon-Phoenix Blood Essence within his body, which was flowing, began to rapidly repair the severe injuries within his body.

The reason that he dared to fight Fang Yi so recklessly, was precisely because he possessed the Dragon-Phoenix Body, which would allow his body's repairing ability to be comparable to that of a Divine Beast. As long as they were not fatal injuries, he would be able to repair them quickly.

Fang Yi swept off the traces of blood at the corner of his lips, as he looked at Mu Chen coldly. After a while, he suddenly raised his head to look at a distant place, then closed his eyes to sense his surroundings. Then, a corner of his lips slowly lifted up to form a strange smile.

"Although this result had certainly exceeded my expectations, I..."

Fang Yi turned to the side slightly, staring at Mu Chen with a cold look in his eyes. He then said, "The current situation is still within my control...Perhaps I should tell you that, although one of my main aims of fighting you was to kill you, the other aim was just to stall for time, because I wanted to completely obliterate both of your troops. And now...not even one of you can escape!"

Fang Yi's finger pointed towards the sky in the distance. Suddenly, countless red hot lights and shadows swept over from the north, as the sound of howling wolves, which were filled murderous intent, spread over from afar.

Whereas, at the south, snowflakes were falling, and in that sky that was filled with snowflakes, what seemed like the ancient sound of growling bears spread out in a frightening manner.

At this moment, the looks on NIne Nether's and Lord Blood Hawk's faces changed suddenly. This was because they knew that this was the Divine Pavilion's Flaming Wolves Army and the Celestial Bear Army!

This meant that another two Lords from the Ten Lords of the Divine

Pavillion had also rushed over! This time, they were completely surrounded, leaving them at an impasse!

Chapter 853: Reinforcements

Awoooooooooooool!

ROAR!

Everyone's faces immediately turned pale as the howls of the wolves and bears, filled with killing intent, rang through the skies and echoed between the heavens and the earth.

They hurriedly raised their heads and looked towards the direction of the howling. As one terrifying noise faded, another rose in its place, echoing throughout the land.

"Aren't they the Flaming Wolves Army and the Celestial Bear Army of the Divine Pavilion?"

"It turns out that Fang Yi was purposely stalling so that the reinforcements from the Divine Pavilion could arrive! It seems like the people from Daluo Territory are going to be in trouble. Not a soul from Nine Nether Palace and Blood Hawk Palace can escape!"

"This Fang Yi is truly cunning..."

"Since the Flaming Wolves Army and Celestial Bear Army have appeared, Lord Flaming Wolf and Lord Celestial Bear should be here as well. They are both Grade Six Sovereigns. With their presence, even Mu Chen with his condensed Spirit of Fighting Intent won't be able to do much."

"Daluo Territory is going to suffer a huge loss this time."

"..."

Nine Nether and Lord Blood Hawk looked up to the sky simultaneously. Both of their faces turned ugly. If only Xu Ba were on the opposing side here, they could still make him wary, and he would not dare to attack easily. However, when two more forces from the Divine Pavilion arrived, the balance was instantly shattered. It would be impossible to fend off the three opposing forces with just their two.

This was not looking good.

"Haha, Xu Ba, how could you not inform us of such excellent prey! Now you know the price of selfishness!" From afar, icy cold and crimson auras spread forth. Then, innumerable figures filled the sky, transforming into two armies standing majestically upon the skyline. Their terrifying fighting spirit rose into the air in a rush.

At the forefront of one of the armies, a middle-aged man with red hair arched backwards and laughed. On his robes, flaming wolves were galloping and howling.

"If we did not rush here today, I'm afraid that the reputation of the Divine Pavilion would be ruined because of you." At the front of the other army stood a burly and terrifying figure. He was like a tower of iron, emanating a boundless pressure. On his face, a scar ran from the corner of his eye diagonally downward, adding to his menacing look. At that moment, he laughed with his mouth open wide, like a giant primordial bear.

Hearing their jeering, Xu Ba's face darkened but he did not retort. He only gave out a unsatisfied moan. He understood that he would have faced extreme difficulty in taking down Blood Hawk Palace and Nine Nether Palace without the help of the Flaming Wolves Army and Celestial Bear Army.

"Sorry to have troubled you two."

Fang Yi looked at the two armies from below with a smile and said, "The Great Hunt is crucial to the Divine Pavilion's reputation, but the reputation of an individual is of no value. I will definitely report the aid from you two Mountain Masters to the Pavilion Master after this."

"Haha, Master Fang really knows how to talk... hmm?"

Lord Flaming Wolf laughed loudly, then he immediately looked at the bloodied and slightly awkward Fang Yi. He swiftly let out a gasp of surprise, and turned his gaze toward Mu Chen, who was facing Fang Yi, and the surprise in his eyes intensified.

He clearly understood Fang Yi's strength. Among the younger generation of North Territory, he was almost matchless. But now, one who was younger than Fang Yi was able to corner him into this awkward state. This truly baffled Lord Flaming Wolf.

"Who is this kid? He cornered you into this state?" Lord Flaming Wolf said, surprised.

Fang Yi's icy eyes scanned Mu Chen and said plainly, "He is the acclaimed dark horse in North Territory, Mu Chen. Master Wolf, do not look down on him. His control of fighting spirit may be even stronger than yours, because he was able to manifest the Nine Nether Troop's Spirit of Fighting Intent."

"Oh?!"

Hearing this, Lord Flaming Wolf was not shocked, but Lord Celestial Bear looked at Mu Chen with suspicion in his eyes. As leaders of armies, they understood what the Spirit of Fighting Intent meant, as it greatly amplified the strength of an army. Overall, it was like receiving divine aid in a battle.

Of course, the most fearful thing about a condensed Spirit of Fighting Intent was that it granted one the right to become a war troop dispatcher. Regardless of its probability of success, once a person became a war troop dispatcher, it would be like a fish leaping into the dragon's gate.

As long as a war troop dispatcher—even one of the lowest grade—controlled a powerful army, their combat force would be extremely horrifying.

"No wonder you sent us an emergency message," Lord Celestial Bear said. His slightly menacing eyes scanned Mu Chen. While Mu Chen's individual strength was not enough to warrant their caution, his potential as a war troop dispatcher was enough to make them see him as a threat. If there were an opportunity to eliminate this kind of threat, the sooner they did it, the better.

Fang Yi smiled faintly. Although he was covered in blood, his smile made him look surprisingly calm. His eyes were as sharp as knives when

he looked at Mu Chen and said with a smile, "Although you have done well in the previous battle, this should be your last."

Fang Yi's emotions had calmed down. Although he was a little frightened by the result of the previous battle, if Mu Chen were to be buried here, the previous results would vanish like smoke and clouds.

In the North Territory, no one would remember the dead.

Mu Chen knitted his brow when he saw this. The Three Mountain Masters of the Divine Pavilion were all here, and their three armies congested the entire heavens and earth. Breaking out of this situation would not be an easy feat.

Swish!

Nine Nether emerged beside Mu Chen, and she looked on with a solemn face. With a low voice she asked, "What now? If we act by ourselves, we may be able to fight our way out, but we can't bring along Blood Hawk Palace that way."

With Mu Chen's control of the Nine Nether Troop's fighting spirit, they could fight their way out of the surrounding enemies if they fought with their lives, but they would have to abandon Blood Hawk Palace.

"Hoho. What is it now? Abandoning your friends? If this were made known to the public, I'm afraid Nine Nether Palace would hardly have a place in Daluo Territory." Before Mu Chen could respond, the smiling Fang Yi had already read Nine Nether's intentions.

A glint of surprise appeared in Nine Nether's eyes. Fang Yi was excessively cunning. He was trying to provoke Blood Hawk Palace with his words.

"Lord Nine Nether, Lord Mu, if you see the opportunity, please escape at once. Just remember to avenge us if you get the chance in the future!" Lord Blood Hawk's voice suddenly echoed, and he looked at Fang Yi solemnly. Then he turned his gaze toward Mu Chen and Nine Nether, and his usually sullen eyes appeared much calmer at the moment.

Lord Blood Hawk may not be one with a big heart, but he also did not

have a dull mind, or else he wouldn't have become one of the Nine Lords of Daluo Territory. As such, he noticed Fang Yi's thoughts, and he would not allow Fang Yi's plot to work.

"Hoho, as expected from Lord Blood Hawk, such charisma!"

Fang Yi spoke calmly with a smile. "If so, the moment Nine Nether Palace breaks through us will be the moment of Blood Hawk Palace's utter destruction."

"Try me!" Lord Blood Hawk challenged Fang Yi with an icy voice, his cold eyes filled with piercing killing intent.

Fang Yi rose steadily in the air, and his falcon eyes surveyed the other forces present in the sky and the earth. He said, "This is a battle between the Divine Pavilion and Daluo Territory. I hope the rest of you can kindly leave us alone."

Hearing this, the hearts of the other forces shuddered. They understood that Fang Yi was preparing to clean up the field. No one in their right mind would interfere in this fierce battle. Immediately, countless figures rushed toward the sky and retreated to a safe distance.

Nine Nether frowned when she saw this. The struggle in her eyes seemed to show her indecisiveness in abandoning Blood Hawk Palace and escaping.

But while she was struggling, Mu Chen squinted slightly, and his lips swiftly curved upwards. His tensed body gradually relaxed.

He looked at Fang Yi above and said with a laugh, "It seems like you think you've won today."

Fang Yi stared at Mu Chen with a stern face. "Did you think you could turn this around? How much spiritual energy do you still have? To what extent can you still control the fighting spirit of the Nine Nether Troop?

"If you are wise, I urge you to surrender, or else the Nine Nether Troop shall face complete annihilation."

Mu Chen smiled. "We will not abandon Blood Hawk Palace."

His words caused a commotion among the Blood Hawk Troop in the valley, and countless gazes of gratitude were cast towards him. Even Lord Blood Hawk and Wu Tian were perplexed at that moment.

Their relationship with Mu Chen was rather rocky, so they did not expect Mu Chen to want to save them, even in such a dire situation.

"With you alone?" Fang Yi's lips curved into a sarcastic smile, his eyes taunting. Lord Flaming Wolf and Lord Celestial Bear were also looking at Mu Chen from above with a sneer and crossed arms, seemingly looking forward to his little tricks at that dire moment.

Mu Chen looked up and spoke with a smile. "You thought I was really in a frenzy, willing to play along for so long so that you could stall?"

Fang Yi's eyes turned solemn, and he stared at Mu Chen icily.

"You aren't the only one who can stall for time and wait for reinforcements."

Mu Chen smiled faintly, and then he pointed to the sky. He said, "Please excuse me. This time, I have slightly more reinforcements than you."

Boom!

The heavens and the earth a distance away were suddenly shaking. The hearts of countless powerful individuals shivered. As they looked up, they could see three majestic streams of light rushing toward them and enveloping their surroundings.

There were three figures heading up each of the streams, emanating immense spiritual energy as vast as oceans that could be felt even from afar.

"Cracking Mountain Palace of Daluo Territory!"

"Cave Grand Cliff of Daluo Territory!"

"Spirit Sword Mountain of Daluo Territory!"

Three deep, manly voices rumbled and echoed, finally coming together like a huge clap of thunder, shaking the heavens and the earth. Even the faces of Lord Flaming Wolf and Lord Celestial Bear turned pale.

"Who dares to kill one of us from Daluo Territory?!"

Chapter 854: Turning the tables

Seen amid the faraway horizon, an influx of mighty light and shadow swept in, blotting out the sky and the earth. It then transformed into three enormous armies, which stood tall, spreading across the land.

Seeing this, every man could not help but open their mouths slightly, gaping in awe. Only after a long time, did they draw in a deep breath, while staring at each other. To their surprise, these were the three King class armies that had just arrived at the Daluo Territory!

At that moment, the number of armies from the Divine Pavilion and the Daluo Territory had already reached to around 100,000. This statistic alone was almost enough to initiate a large scale battle.

Not many would have thought that an originally small siege would actually turn into such a large military confrontation! If these two sides really engaged in a war, surely there would be a stormy battle, resulting in numerous corpses being strewn all over the field. There would also surely be much spilling of blood, enough to paint the ground red!

The forces, who were looking upon this land, began to slowly retreat. Looking at the present situation, if a war was started, then it would be a bloody fight between the two top forces, the Divine Pavilion and the Daluo Territory. Judging from their capabilities, any other forces would not be able to handle the consequences, if they were to get involved in this battle.

As the men of other forces of the land were quickly evacuating the area, Fang Yi, Xu Ba, and a few others, such as Lord Flaming Wolves and Lord Celestial Bear, wore ghastly expressions on their faces. Apparently, they had not anticipated that the Daluo Territory would have such valiant reinforcements!

The strength of Lord Mountain Cracker was among the top three of the princes in the Daluo Territory. Lord Hongya and Lord Spiritual Energy Sword were quite famous as well, and the armies that were under their commands were also extraordinary valiant. After combining them, along with the forces of Nine Nether Palace and all of the injured Blood Hawk

Hall, the difference in strengths between the two sides was almost instantly reversed.

This was because, at the side of the Divine Pavilion, there were only three Grade Six Sovereigns. Meanwhile, at the side of the Daluo Territory, the number of Grade Six Sovereigns increased from two to five in the blink of an eye. If they were to go all out, the Divine Pavilion would certainly pay an extremely high price.

In contrast, Fang Yi, Nine Nether, and Lord Blood Hawk let out sighs, as if they had just been freed from a heavy responsibility. Fortunately, the reinforcements came just in time. Otherwise, they would have been in trouble.

"So, you planned to wait for reinforcements, ever since the beginning?" Nine Nether rolled her eyes at Mu Chen. This guy was actually cunning, just like Fang Yi. Both of them had intense killing intents.

"To defeat the Heavenly Alligator Troop with just the forces available to the Nine Nether Palace, I am afraid we would be paying quite a price for that. Therefore, waiting for reinforcements was the best choice."

Mu Chen smiled, then said, "I just never thought that Fang Yi would have been thinking the same thing. Fortunately, our reinforcements are stronger than his."

Nine Nether nodded. She could finally let go of her worry, because right now, the situation was clearly more advantageous to the Daluo Territory. This time, it should be Fang Yi's, Xu Ba's, and their people's turns to worry.

"Hehe, I was thinking about who was fighting against us, the Daluo Territory. So, it is the Divine Pavilion, hmmm. They do not seem to have any strong people, though, as neither Lord Heavenly Dragon nor Lord White Tiger are here?"

In the sky, Lord Mountain Cracker stood with his hands behind his back, getting read to address the Cracking Mountain Army, who were full of fighting spirit. The sound of his laughter, which contained strong pressure, was ringing across the battlefield.

Lord Mountain Cracker had a formidable demeanor, and among the Daluo Territory princes, he also had a very high ranking. He could even become part of the top three soon. In terms of reputation, he was even more renowned than Nine Nether, Lord Blood Hawk, and the other two princes of this land.

And, apparently, he had the power to match his demeanor. Although Lord Mountain Cracker was a Grade Six Sovereign, just like the other princes, Mu Chen could feel that the pressure that he exerted was certainly stronger than theirs.

In this battlefield, whether it was among the ranks of the Daluo Territory or the Divine Pavilion, there seemed to be no powerful person stronger than Lord Mountain Cracker. Therefore, his words had made Xu Ba's, Lord Flaming Wolves', and Lord Celestial Bear's faces all turn gloomy.

However, none of the three retorted. This was because they could feel that Lord Mountain Cracker's power had already reached the peak of Grade Six Sovereign, meaning that he was already at a level stronger than them.

However, Fang Yi was currently quite calm. He looked at Lord Mountain Cracker directly, then said, "If Lord Heavenly Dragon and Lord White Tiger were here, maybe Lord Mountain Cracker would not spit out such words."

As the cream of the crop among the younger generation, who were specifically trained by the Divine Pavilion, Fang Yi was naturally not fearful of Lord Mountain Cracker's power, which was at the peak of Grade Six Sovereign.

"It is pointless to make such a meaningless assumption, Fang Yi." Mu Chen beamed. His teasing had made Fang Yi's face turn pale, as he was full of anger right now.

Fang Yi had originally thought that he was in control of the situation, but now the tables had turned in an instant. This situation was as if a rabbit that was about to be eaten suddenly grew long teeth, then tried to devour its predator!

"So, you think that your victory is ensured, just because your

reinforcements are slightly stronger?" Fang Yi replied coldly. With his sharp eyes staring at Mu Chen, he added, "If we really go all out, you guys will still have to pay a price, so I suggest you..."

Mu Chen did not care about his threat at all, so he did not even wait for Fang Yi to finish his sentence, before he raised his head to look at Lord Mountain Cracker and the other two princes, saying, "Prepare to attack, you three. Blood will be spilled this day!"

Mu Chen turned to the Blood Hawk Hall. Then, he said with a deep voice, "Lord Blood Hawk, please lead the Blood Hawk Troop in the attack."

"Roger that!"

Lord Mountain Cracker cracked up at that moment, his laughter full of admiration. Apparently, Mu Chen's decision was very much to his liking. Since they had the advantage,they should go all in, as sacrifices were inevitable in everything. There was no way that they should avoid necessary tasks, just because there was a price to pay.

As Lord Mountain Cracker's loud laughter faded, the mighty Cracking Mountain Army instantly shouted loudly. Their shouts were like thunder rumbling, loudly echoing across the land. Meanwhile, an astounding fighting spirit soared among them.

The number among the Cracking Mountain Army already reached over 10,000, its scale being far bigger than the Nine Nether Troop. This point alone had shown how deeply rooted Cracking Mountain Hall was within the Daluo Territory. Even if Nine Nether Palace were catching up with all of their might during this year, there was still a large power difference that existed between them and such a historical King class force.

The other two kings also followed the example of the Cracking Mountain Army, raising their armies' fighting spirits. The three armies directly looked at the Flaming Wolves Army and the Celestial Bear Army.

Fang Yi's, Xu Ba's, and others' faces were completely pale. Apparently, they did not expect that Mu Chen would be so decisive. It seemed almost as if he did not care at all about the great price that he needed to pay for this bloody war.

"What should we do now?"

Fang Yi, Xu Ba, Lord Flaming Wolves and Lord Celestial Bear discussed among them, their voices covered by spiritual power. Currently, the Daluo Territory had completely gained the advantage. If Mu Chen, Lord Mountain Cracker, and the others were really willing to make such a sacrifice, their three armies of the Divine Pavilion might really suffer heavy injuries.

Fang Yi's face color immediately changed. Then, he gritted his teeth and said, "Let's retreat. We should reserve our strength, as we have no reason to fight them, especially when they are greater in number. When we meet up with the Divine Pavilion Army, we will then have the chance to seek revenge for today!"

Xu Ba, Lord Flaming Wolves, and Lord Celestial Bear could only grit their teeth and nod upon hearing his words. Looking at this situation, if they really went all out, they would suffer huge losses. Even though going all out might make the Daluo Territory pay in some small way, without a doubt, their own price would be a higher one.

Bang!

Since a decision had been made, Xu Ba and the others did not hesitate any longer. With a wave of their arms, the enormous armies' fighting spirit soared. They retreated quickly, going in three directions, after transforming into bright lights.

"Since we have are here already, we should at least get something done!" Looking at the situation, Lord Mountain Cracker let out a snort, then suddenly waved his hand.

In an instant, the Cracking Mountain Army was overflowing with astounding fighting spirit. Their entire ranks blotted out the sky and the earth, completely enshrouding the direction that the Celestial Bear Army was retreating towards. The other two kings were also leading their armies at the same time, relentlessly attacking the Flaming Wolves Army.

Bang!

Although the Celestial Bear Army and the Flaming Wolves Army were retreating, they apparently still had their defenses up. As the enemies' attacks were coming at them, they immediately defended themselves with their fighting spirit. As the armies' fighting spirit collided, the entire battlefield was shaking. The terrifying fighting spirits were storming, and the mountains were being razed to the ground, one by one, in the blink of an eye.

Nevertheless, the Celestial Bear Army and the Flaming Wolves Army apparently could not fend off the Cracking Mountain Army and the other two King Class armies' all out attack. As their fighting spirits clashed, the Celestial Bear Army's and the Flaming Wolves Army's fighting spirits began to crumble. During this time, many were injured or died.

Mu Chen also soared into the sky at this moment, quickly showing up in front of the Nine Nether Troop again. His body was glowing with golden light. Also, the injury that he had received while crossing swords with Fang Yi was almost completely healed, thanks to the regenerative power of his body, which was comparable to a Divine Beast.

Nine Nether appeared beside Mu Chen, eagerly asking, "Who should we fight against now?"

Mu Chen's eyes were directly set on Fang Yi, who was following the Heavenly Alligator Troop. He certainly dreaded Fang Yi.

As such, he immediately determined that he could not let Fang Yi simply run away, not after his having tried so hard to injure Mu Chen!

"We cannot let him go!"

Therefore, Mu Chen pointed his index finger towards the faraway Fang Yi. Mu Chen's black eyes were flowing with killing intent.

"Attack!"

Mu Chen waved down his hand, causing the Nine Nether Troop, which was behind him, to instantly rampage. After holding back for half a day, it was finally time for them to show off their fighting skills!

Chapter 855: To Beat a Drowning Dog

When Mu Chen resumed command of the Nine Nether Troop, the majestic fighting spirit instantly came crashing back to him in huge waves. Its intensity and tenacity caused Lord Mountain Cracker and his followers to be suddenly seized with an unknown terror. Not knowing the cause, they almost doubted their senses.

However, Mu Chen didn't pay attention to that. He was standing in mid-air with the fighting spirit swirling like a tumultuous inky sea beneath his feet. With his eyes partly closed, he immersed himself in the fighting spirit, as if it were an infinite roar resonating in his heart, causing his blood to boil.

For Mu Chen, regaining control of the Nine Nether fighting spirit was like putting a tiger back in its cage. Within the ocean of fighting spirit, he could easily feel his mighty power, capable of crushing the world to pieces by just lifting his finger.

Had he been able to use this power in his previous battle with Fang Yi, the latter's so-called Primordial Star Descent Celestial Body would have been utterly destroyed.

Because that's the power of the fighting spirit.

Although the fighting spirit did not originate from oneself and was restricted in multiple ways, nevertheless, sometimes even the top powers had to acknowledge its extreme destructive power.

In ancient times, the fame of top battle strategists was comparable to that of the invincible masters between heaven and earth. It is true that a battle strategist's power would be greatly reduced without the support of their massive army, but when a top battle strategist had the support of a massive elite army, not even those considered supreme among the invincible masters would dare hold him in the slightest contempt.

"In our previous battle, both sides suffered huge losses. I think it is time for another go." Mu Chen's sharp black eyes gazed far off into the distance where the Heavenly Alligator Troop had assumed a defense

formation to beat a hasty retreat. Fang Yi was among them, hidden in the crowd of horses and people, but his icy gaze still pierced Mu Chen to the core.

Slam!

Mu Chen slammed his palm down decisively, and with a prompt of his mind, the Nine Nether Fighting Spirit immediately rolled out like jet black waves, releasing a clear bright cry that rang out across heaven and earth. The spirit instantly turned into a gigantic Nine Netherbird with complex battle runes engraved all over its enormous body. That magnificent fighting spirit was actually strong enough to create ripples in the air around him.

"The Spirit of Fighting Intent?!"

It was only when the Spirit of Fighting Intent materialized that Lord Mountain Cracker and his followers finally realized what was happening. With their pupils dilating in fear, they looked in Mu Chen's direction.

"This Mu Chen, to think he is able to attain such a high level of mastery of the fighting spirit despite being so young," commented Lord Mountain Cracker solemnly. He had numerous top fighters and countless outstanding commanders under his command, but none of them had ever managed to reach Mu Chen's level of being able to materialize the Spirit of Fighting Intent.

Standing not far behind Lord Mountain Cracker, Zhou Yue was also watching the Spirit of Fighting Intent hovering above the Nine Nether Troop with an unreadable expression on his face. He who was once acknowledged as one of the four greatest commanders of the Daluo Territory could only sigh in admiration. Mu Chen's move shocked him so badly he even lost the will to challenge and give chase.

Whoosh!

Under everyone's watchful gazes, the Spirit of Fighting Intent flapped its wings downward the moment it materialized, cutting through the air with a whooshing sound and releasing a flash of light that sliced apart the sky like an extremely sharp blade. In the next moment, it was right above the

Heavenly Alligator Troop, ruthlessly roaring down on them.

A flash of light split the sky in two.

Xu Ba stood among the Heavenly Alligator Troop watching the flash of light hurtling downward. Breaking out in a cold sweat, he promptly let out a mighty roar.

"The Fighting Spirit of the Heavenly Alligator!"

Boom!

A scarlet fighting spirit suddenly shot upward from among the Heavenly Alligator Troop and transformed into fighting spirit ribbons which travelled across the horizon, furiously rushing toward that flash of light in an attempt to block it.

Bam! Bam!

However, his attempt at blocking was ultimately fruitless; the fighting spirit ribbons fell apart where the flash of light pierced through them. Witnessing the effortlessly destructive momentum of the flash of light, the commanders of the Heavenly Alligator Troop froze in fear.

The flash of light sharp enough to split apart the sky finally reached the ground, and suddenly piercing screams rang out. Among the Heavenly Alligator Troop, bodies spurting blood dropped to the ground, clearly affected by the light's attack.

It was just their first encounter, but the Heavenly Alligator Troop had already lost hundreds of its skilled warriors.

Xu Ba's facial muscles were twitching rapidly, giving him a savage look. Beside him, Fang Yi was green in the face. He never expected Mu Chen to become this powerful after commanding the Nine Nether Troop.

"Retreat immediately!" Xu Ba growled under his breath, realizing that the Blood Hawk Troop currently trapped in the valley was preparing to fight their way out and surround the Heavenly Alligator Troop together with the Nine Nether Troop. When that happened, they would be in serious trouble.

They had no choice but to retreat by themselves, because Lord Flaming Wolf and Lord Celestial Bear had been forced to retreat by Lord Mountain Cracker's three troops and simply couldn't afford to send help.

Mu Chen watched the large-scale retreat of the Heavenly Alligator Troop indifferently. He evidently had no intention of letting go of this opportunity to kick them while they were down. With a wave of his hand, the Nine Nether Troop appeared like a massive black cloud. Above them, the Spirit of Fighting Intent flapped its enormous wings, and with a surge of majestic fighting spirit, transformed the Nine Nether Troop into countless black feathers which shot toward the ground like sharp arrows.

Above the heavens, a huge army was hastily retreating with another army hot on their heels. Each time the two fighting spirits had a vicious face-off, the air would shudder, and the ground below would crack open.

With every face-off, both sides suffered losses, though clearly the losses suffered by the Heavenly Alligator Troop, whose hearts were not in the battle, were more serious. Although they held the advantage in terms of numbers, the Nine Nether Troop managed to make up for the gap with the support of the Spirit of Fighting Intent.

Mu Chen's silhouette appeared above the skull of the fighting spirit. He observed the hasty retreat of the Heavenly Alligator Troop, or rather, of Fang Yi among them, with narrowed eyes, twirling his finger. Suddenly, he stopped and lightly tapped the air.

Buzz!

The black feathers shooting downward in all directions suddenly changed directions. Quick as lightning, they evaded the Heavenly Alligator Fighting Spirit's barrier and homed in on Fang Yi as their target, shooting furiously at him.

Clearly, Mu Chen was planning on taking this opportunity to destroy his arch-nemesis, Fang Yi.

Fang Yi's face changed once he saw the black feathers shooting toward him. He could feel the immense power surrounding the black feathers, for that power was the converged fighting spirit of the entire Nine Nether

Troop!

Mu Chen had definitely changed!

Boom!

Despite knowing this, Fang Yi was also not the type to wait helplessly for death. With a low growl, he released all his regained spiritual energy without holding back. A huge shadow once again took shape around him. It was the impressive Primordial Star Descent Celestial Body.

Mu Chen smirked when he saw the Primordial Star Descent Celestial Body. With a light swipe of his finger, the dozens of black feathers pierced through the void and ruthlessly descended upon the Primordial Star Descent Celestial Body.

Ping!

The violent spiritual energy rolled out, and the Primordial Star Descent Celestial Body, which had caused Mu Chen much grief before, immediately fell apart. Fang Yi's shadow recklessly lashed out, resulting in blood pouring out of multiple wounds on his body. His face turned as white as a sheet.

It was just their first clash, but Fang Yi had already been defeated!

Crash.

The people who were still watching this chaotic scene from a safe distance were all stunned. Who would have thought that the Mu Chen who had to exhaust himself just to come to a draw with Fang Yi, was now so powerful that he only needed a single strike to defeat the latter?

While Mu Chen didn't just rely on his strength but rather, had the help of the concentrated power of the entire Nine Nether Troop, this was a battlefield, and no one would care that he only won the battle with outside help. The only thing that was important was the result, not the process.

Only a fool would believe in the concept of absolute fairness.

Mu Chen coldly watched the badly defeated Fang Yi. The latter no longer had the elan he had previously when they were fighting one-on-one,

because the two were no longer on the same level.

Tsk!

With a sweep of his sleeves, dozens of black feathers again shot out quietly from among the black feathers surrounding the entire Heavenly Alligator Troop, speeding toward the battered Fang Yi. Clearly, Mu Chen intended to see this through to the end.

Fang Yi immediately sensed Mu Chen's murderous intent, and urgently retreated, his face ashen. He realized he could not contend with Mu Chen and his mastery over the Nine Nether Fighting Spirit by himself.

However, Mu Chen evidently was not going to give him a chance to retreat. The extremely sharp black feathers surrounded by the vast Nine Nether Fighting Spirit pierced through the void like lightning, arrived above Fang Yi in just a few breaths, and started furiously shooting downward.

Fang Yi's escape route was blocked, and he was trapped.

Boom!

However, just as the black feathers were about to blast Fang Yi's body apart, Xu Ba appeared with lighting speed in front of him, and with a horrific roar, released a majestic fighting spirit explosively like a storm.

Ping!

The minute the black feathers came into contact with the violent storm-like spiritual energy, they were blown apart.

"How dare you kill someone in front of me, you arrogant brat still wet behind the ears!"

Xu Ba glared at Mu Chen ferociously, and barked at the Heavenly Alligator Troop, "Retreat first. I'll deal with this arrogant brat!"

Faced with Xu Ba's violent roar, Mu Chen smiled coldly and abruptly formed a seal with one hand. The Spirit of Fighting Intent threw back its head and let out a loud cry, and immediately the horrific fighting spirit descended upon heaven and earth.

"You think you're so great just because you're a Sixth Grade Sovereign. Well, if you insist, I'll use you as the sacrifice for the battle flag of my Nine Nether Troop!"

The black feathers which filled the sky changed directions with a whoosh, and locking in on Xu Ba as their target, furiously shot down toward him with clear murderous intent.

All the men between heaven and earth sucked in a breath in shock. The audacity of Mu Chen! To think he actually intended to use the power of an entire troop to annihilate a Sixth Grade Sovereign!

Chapter 856: The Thousand Mile Pursuit

Buzz! Buzz!

The air trembled, and countless black feathers split apart the void like sharp arrows, shooting out furiously toward an alligator-like figure. The figure was standing with his feet in the void, emitting an overwhelming murderous aura.

This figure was obviously Xu Ba, the Lord Heavenly Alligator. He glared ferociously at the incoming assault, without the slightest trace of fear on his face. Although Mu Chen managed to use the Nine Nether Troop's fighting spirit to materialize a spirit of fighting intent, this power was not boundless.

"Heavenly Alligator Divine Art, Sky Swallowing Mouth!"

Xu Ba stomped his foot viciously, giving a ferocious glare, while the vast spiritual energy was immediately swept away. In its place, the massive jaws of a huge fierce alligator appeared. The huge black jaws, which looked like they could swallow the whole world, opened, releasing a powerful magnetic force. With just one mouthful, the black feathers that were shooting downwards ferociously were swallowed whole.

Ping! Ping!

A loud explosion was heard from within the massive jaws of the alligator, and the horrific attack from the violent spiritual energy immediately distorted the massive jaws. Then, finally, with a loud boom, it exploded.

The violent spiritual energy rushed toward Xu Ba, causing him to disperse a shock wave, with just a vibration of his torso. Levelling Mu Chen with a dark look, he mocked him, "Brat, don't think that you have free reign, just because you are relying on the Nine Nether Fighting Spirit. After all, that fighting spirit is just an external object! It can't make you invincible."

"Obviously, it's impossible to become invincible. I'm content just using

this against you," sneered Mu Chen.

Under normal circumstances, with his level of skill, he wouldn't even have a fighting chance against Xu Ba, who was a master of the Sovereign Sixth Rank. However, with the power of the Nine Nether Fighting Spirit, he did not fear the latter at all.

"You arrogant thing!"

Xu Ba was so angry, he let out a hysterical laugh. Twirling, he then transformed himself into a flash of light, then shot toward Mu Chen. At the same time, he clenched his fist, and a blood-red scimitar, which was engraved with scarlet battle runes, appeared in his hand, its murderous energy overflowing. It was clearly a very powerful weapon!

Whoosh!

Xu Ba, still airborne, slashed down with his scimitar, causing the air ahead of him to split open. Hundreds of huge blood-red scimitar tips swept out from the crack, then immediately slashed downward towards the Nine Nether Troop.

This move of Xu Ba's clearly demonstrated the great power of a Sovereign Sixth Rank. Even Fang Yi, who was top among the Sovereign Fifth Rank, could not defeat the might of this scimitar! Mu Chen watched Xu Ba's swift attack with a cold gaze, not shaken in the least. He then altered his seal, sending out a vast fighting spirit, which transformed into a fighting spirit ribbon to grapple with the scimitar tip.

Ping!

A shocking attack of spiritual energy rolled out, immediately smashing both the fighting spirit ribbon and the scimitar tip to pieces. Somehow, they were both evenly matched!

Xu Ba's expression darkened. He attacked without pause, his body flitting across the space violently. Suddenly, countless sharp scimitar tips filled the sky, raining down toward Mu Chen and the Nine Nether Troop like a thunderstorm.

Mu Chen was not afraid in the slightest, despite facing Xu Ba's attacks

alone. Instead, he controlled the immense Nine Nether Fighting Spirit to meet Xu Ba head-on. The two sides collided with a terrifying intensity that shook the air. However, this kind of conflict, where neither party had the upper hand, rapidly devolved into a stalemate.

The people watching this stalemate couldn't help but be stunned speechless, inwardly impressed by Mu Chen, the dark horse. Previously, when he had been battling Fang Yi on the basis of his own strength, both sides had come out of it with huge losses. But now, relying on the Nine Nether Troop's strength, he had come to a stalemate with Xu Ba, who was a veteran master.

This level of military accomplishment was truly shocking. By the end of this huge hunting war, provided the Daluo Territory had not been razed to the ground, Mu Chen would have surpassed Fang Yi to become the new overlord among the younger generation of the North Territory!

While the stalemate was ongoing, Nine Nether was pursuing the retreating Heavenly Alligator Troop. At the same time, the Blood Hawk Troop, which was being led by Lord Blood Hawk, also rushed over, starting to manically attack the Heavenly Alligator Troop.

While there were many commanders among the Heavenly Alligator Troop, who were directing the troops in defense, the two Sovereign Sixth Ranks and the Blood Hawk Troop were hard to contend with, because none among the Heavenly Alligator Troop had the ability to form the spirit of fighting intent like Mu Chen. Hence, the attacks of spiritual energy caused many figures to drop from the sky, clearly being killed directly by the vibrations from the spiritual energy's attack. In just a short while, many among the Heavenly Alligator Troop were killed or injured.

In the opposite direction, the two Divine Pavilion Troops, which were sent to provide aid, were also starting to have trouble resisting the attacks by the Lord Mountain Cracker's three troops. However, they at least had Lord Flaming Wolves and Lord Celestial Bear holding the fort down, so that they could retreat.

Witnessing the chaotic battle scene and the defeated retreat of the

Divine Pavilion Troop, the forces of the world couldn't resist exclaiming that, as of today, the Divine Pavilion had passed its prime! Xu Ba finally had no choice but to back out of his battle with Mu Chen, especially after figuring out that the latter had no intention of fighting to the death, but only wanted to detain him in order to give Nine Nether and Lord Blood Hawk time to massacre the Heavenly Alligator Troop. Having lost the Heavenly Alligator Troop that was under his command, he clearly would not be a match for both Nine Nether and Lord Blood Hawk.

"Mark my words, brat, I'll hack you to pieces one day!" Xu Ba roared furiously, quickly escaping Mu Chen's clutches.

He then returned to the Heavenly Alligator Troop with a few flashes of light, readying to lead their speedy retreat. He couldn't afford even the slightest delay! Nine Nether and Lord Blood Hawk seized this opportunity to attack the Heavenly Alligator Troop, causing even more casualties and injuries.

"I never would have thought that the mighty Heavenly Alligator Lord would actually turn out to be a cowardly mouse," Mu Chen's laughter rang out in the sky, as he immediately deployed the Nine Nether Troop to pursue the Heavenly Alligator Troop.

Hearing Mu Chen's voice ringing out in the sky made Xu Ba so furious, he vomited blood, then glared at Mu Chen with bloodshot eyes, barely able to resist hacking the latter into tiny pieces. However, he was no idiot, and he knew Mu Chen was just trying to provoke him. So, swallowing down his anger and humiliation, he focused on leading the speedy retreat of the entire Heavenly Alligator Troop.

This game of cat and mouse, which took place between the heaven and the earth, lasted approximately an hour and spanned across a thousand miles. The Heavenly Alligator Troop suffered major losses, which made Xu Ba so angry, he almost went mad.

Whenever the thousand mile pursuit passed any masters along the way, those masters all gaped at each other disbelievingly, especially after they got a good look at those being pursued, realizing that it was the troops of

the Divine Pavilion! Among the top forces of the Northern Territory, the Divine Pavilion was acknowledged to be of immensely strong heritage, possessing numerous strong fighters. Nobody would have thought that the Divine Pavilion, which in their eyes was as fierce as a tiger, would fall to such a sorry state. After getting over their initial shocks, they all had much to say about the matter...

"Heavens, that was Lord Heavenly Alligator of the the Divine Pavilion! How could he end up in such a pathetic state?!"

"The one chasing them... was it Mu Chen of the Daluo Territory?! I've seen him before in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift!"

"Mu Chen, that dark horse? How is that possible? He couldn't even defeat the Prince of the Netherworld in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift."

"Trust me. It seems the Heavenly Alligator Lord even had Fang Yi on his side. Tsk tsk, how could they have suffered such a pathetic defeat, with such a brilliant battle array? There must have been an earth-shattering, big fight! Seeing the outcome, the Daluo Territory clearly won!"

"What a pity, I missed the big fight."

Xu Ba and Fang Yi listened to the shocked comments along the way, with ashen faces. However, they could only roar furiously in their hearts, as they dared not risk even the slightest delay.

Finally, Mu Chen chose to retreat, knowing that there would not be any benefit in continuing to give chase, as they couldn't really exterminate the Heavenly Alligator Troop. Furthermore, if they backed Xu Ba into a corner, he might recklessly decide to sacrifice the entire Heavenly Alligator Troop in a final showdown.

In that case, the Nine Nether Troop would definitely pay a huge price. Moreover, they would be in trouble, if other troops were deployed by the Divine Pavilion, so they'd better stop while they were ahead.

Thus, after a thousand miles, Mu Chen firmly ordered a retreat. Although Lord Blood Hawk wanted to exterminate the troop, he no longer dared treat Mu Chen as he had before. That, added with the fact that Mu

Chen had saved his life, caused him to not protest Mu Chen's decision.

The Nine Nether Troop and the Blood Hawk Troop regrouped, then started to retreat, transforming into an overpowering bright light that disappeared across the horizon. After realizing that Mu Chen and the rest had retreated, Xu Ba and Fang Yi, who were in a panic, finally heaved sighs of relief, feeling as if a huge burden had just fallen off of their shoulders. Taking great care, they then led the Heavenly Alligator Troop to set up camp on a mountain top.

The Heavenly Alligator Troop were dispirited and low on morale. All the commanders were dejected and depressed. Upon counting their losses, they turned white as sheets. In this pursuit, they had lost almost one-third of their skilled warriors.

After listening to the commander's report, Xu Ba contorted his face, then glared in the direction of Mu Chen's departure. He roared out uncontrollably, "Mu Chen, I will never let you get away with this!"

He had spent many years cultivating the Heavenly Alligator Troop, and that one-third had taken him so much time and resources to train! They had just died at Mu Chen's hands in an instant...

Fang Yi interrupted his thoughts, "Lord Xu, once we rejoin the rest of the Divine Pavilion troops, exterminating Mu Chen will be a breeze."

Xu Ba glared fiercely at Fang Yi, his fury about to explode, but he finally controlled himself and stated coldly, "This fellow has some skill, to be able to materialize a spirit of fighting intent at such a tender age."

Speaking thus, Xu Ba suddenly squinted his eyes, as if he was recalling something. As he did so, the edges of his mouth lifted into a cold sneer.

"Well, well, spirit of fighting intent is it?"

Chapter 857: Recruiting Helpers

A solitary peak rose high above the plains. When Mu Chen, Nine Nether, and Lord Blood Hawk commanded their two troops and arrived on the mountain, they saw that Lord Mountain Cracker, Lord Spiritual Sword, and Lord Hongya were already waiting there.

"I have troubled the three of you this time."

Mu Chen, Nine Nether, and Lord Blood Hawk clasped their fists in thanks to Lord Mountain Cracker and the two other lords. If the three lords hadn't rushed in to help in time, they would have been defeated and would have had to retreat in humiliation.

Lord Mountain Cracker waved it away as he stated boisterously, "As members of Daluo Territory, it's our responsibility to help each other out. Lord Mu and Lord Nine Nether let bygones be bygones to come to Blood Hawk Palace's aid. That's a very gracious act."

At this point, Lord Mountain Cracker glanced at the embarrassed Lord Blood Hawk, who had been a pompous show-off in Daluo Territory. He had no great impression of Lord Blood Hawk, so he could not help but to be slightly hostile with his words.

However, as they were saved by Mu Chen this time, Lord Blood Hawk was obviously grateful, so he did not get mad upon hearing Lord Mountain Cracker's words. He only looked at Mu Chen and Nine Nether, clasped his fist, and said, "Thank you for coming to our aid. I will repay this favor in the future when I get a chance."

Perhaps it was heartfelt because Lord Blood Hawk's gloomy expression was sincere, and his demeanor caused Lord Mountain Cracker's expression to relax.

Mu Chen and Nine Nether looked at each other but only smiled. Although they still held a slight grudge over what Lord Blood Hawk had done in the past, they were able to distinguish what was important, so when they received the Blood Hawk Palace's signal for help, they had gone as quickly as they could.

Now it seemed that the rescue had impressed Lord Blood Hawk, but they had done so inadvertently. Although Mu Chen and Nine Nether no longer feared Lord Blood Hawk, it was good to get this thorn out of their side and avoid unnecessary trouble.

"It seems that after this, Lord Mu's reputation will spread in this hunting war. The Spirit of Fighting Intent is not something that ordinary people can condense." Lord Spiritual Sword smiled at Mu Chen, his eyes full of astonishment.

Lord Mountain Cracker also smiled and nodded. "There are not many people in the North Territory who can condense the Spirit of Fighting Intent," he said.

"Are there people in the other top powers who can also condense the Spirit of Fighting Intent?" Mu Chen's gaze flickered upon understanding the meaning of Lord Mountain Cracker's words. It seemed that people from some of the other top powers have achieved this, too.

"There are many geniuses in the North Territory, and there will always be people with special talents. They are the targets of all the top forces hoping to recruit them."

Lord Mountain Cracker nodded and said, "According to some information we have obtained, there are probably not more than five people in the top forces in the North Territory who have succeeded in condensing the Spirit of Fighting Intent, but these geniuses are different from Fang Yi because of their importance. Most of the top forces choose to hide their intelligence. Thus, it's hard for the average person to know that they exist, and the top forces won't expose them easily, because these people tend to attract all kinds of assassination attempts..."

Mu Chen nodded sympathetically. Before their encounter, Fang Yi knew that he had condensed the Spirit of Fighting Intent. Thus, he tried all means to obliterate him, because Fang Yi knew how threatening a man who could condense the Spirit of Fighting Intent would be.

Of course, from a certain point of view, that's because those who condense the Spirit of Fighting Intent had the qualifications to be war

troop dispatchers. Although this success rate was rather low, what if it succeeded? That would be a great force of assistance for a top power with many elite troops.

Thus, Mu Chen understood why these top powers hid their Geniuses of War.

Mu Chen ruminated for a moment and asked, "Which top powers do the five people hail from?" It was vital for him to be aware of this important information, for in the future he might be confronting these Geniuses of War currently hidden by the top powers.

"Divine Pavilion, Netherworld Palace, Tian Xuan Hall, Demon's Gate, Holy Mountain..." Lord Mountain Cracker shrugged his shoulders and said helplessly, "Daluo Territory also tried to recruit these Geniuses of War but the Dominator was in deep slumber for many years, so she didn't pay much attention... So, over the past few years, we have never had such a Genius of War in Daluo Territory."

Lord Mountain Cracker looked at Mu Chen and said, "Fortunately, now that you are here, Daluo Territory also has a Genius of War."

Mu Chen also smiled helplessly, knowing that Mandela had not neglected her duties intentionally, but had done so because she needed to remain in slumber to suppress the curse in her body and could not afford to divert her attention to take care of things in Daluo Territory.

"Is there any information about the Genius of War in the Divine Pavilion and Tian Xuan Hall?" Mu Chen asked after a moment's silence, as he had a great deal of enmity and resentment towards the two forces. Thus, he was especially interested in this information.

Lord Mountain Cracker touched his chin and said, "The Genius of War of the Divine Pavilion seems to be a girl, but the one in Tian Xuan Hall seems to be a madman..."

Mu Chen was stunned and looked at the Lord Mountain Cracker. "That's all?"

Lord Mountain Cracker spread out his hands and said, "This kind of

information is generally hidden well as far as possible by the various forces, and is not well known until they have been employed."

Mu Chen could not help but roll his eyes, as what was said was essentially not of any help. Oh well, as long as they knew of their existence and took it to heart to keep a close eye out.

"Now that the crisis here is resolved, we have to leave. Time is precious, and we have to search for other relics and collect the Meteorfall Alchemy pills." Lord Mountain Cracker clapped his hands and planned to command his army to leave.

Mu Chen, however, was silent for a moment. He looked at the four lords present and laughed. "I have a proposal that we come together and explore the ruins together. In that case, we should meet with much less trouble like today's."

Now that the four lords had gathered here, they were akin to being free helpers. If they could work together, it would undoubtedly improve their efficiency several times over.

Hearing Mu Chen's words, the four lords were all astonished. They immediately frowned and said, "Although gathering together will make us strong, it will slow down our search for the relics. The loss outweighs the gains."

It wasn't that they had never thought of gathering together and sweeping through the battlefield, but the relics of the Meteorfall Battlefield were too hard to find. The forces had to be dispersed to maximize their search for the relics. If they were together, the results would be worse than being scattered.

Mu Chen smiled and asked directly, "How many Meteorfall Alchemy pills have you all collected now?"

Lord Blood Hawk did not know what Mu Chen was getting at but he took the initiative to answer, "We found a total of two Grade Three Relics, and now we have 300 Meteorfall Alchemy pills."

"We have approximately 200 pills," Lord Spiritual Sword answered

exasperatedly.

"I also have approximately 200," Lord Hongya smiled.

Lord Mountain Cracker looked at the three men and grinned, laughing a little more smugly. "It seems that we were lucky. We have 500 in our hands."

When the other three kings heard this, they were immediately surprised, and some of them looked at Lord Mountain Cracker with envy. After all, it was not easy to find the hidden relics in the Meteorfall Battlefield. Moreover, they had to be on guard against the interference of other forces at any time.

Looking at how proud Lord Mountain Cracker was, Mu Chen couldn't help laughing and said, "We have a total of 1,200 Meteorfall Alchemy pills in our hands."

Lord Mountain Cracker stopped laughing, and the other three lords stared at Mu Chen, utterly stunned. For them, 1,200 Meteorfall Alchemy pills was a huge sum. To obtain that amount, they figured Mu Chen's forces must have found seven or eight Grade Three Relics. Did Mu Chen encounter relics just by randomly exploring?

Mu Chen smiled and waved. Suddenly, the Meteorfall Alchemy pills turned into a torrent that whistled out and hovered around him. He looked at the four lords, who were staring with wide eyes, and said, "About half of the Meteorfall Alchemy pills were won from Xu Ba's hands. We extracted the others ourselves."

"How many relics have you found?" Lord Mountain Cracker asked incredulously. They had 500 Meteorfall Alchemy pills entirely because two forces tried to rob them. However, they retaliated, and the forces' pills were taken by the Cracking Mountain Army instead. Otherwise, they might only have had about 300 Meteorfall Alchemy pills by now.

Mu Chen did a rough estimation and remarked casually, "Including some relics that were not Grade Three, there should be approximately six to seven relics."

The four of them stared at each other and then looked at Mu Chen strangely. If they had not known Mu Chen, they would all think that he was talking nonsense.

Mu Chen saw their glances and was not surprised. He shrugged and stated nonchalantly, "We obtained a treasure in this Meteorfall Battlefield that can locate some of the relics, so..."

"B*stard."

As soon as Mu Chen concluded his sentence, the four lords' eyes became red, and Lord Mountain Cracker couldn't help but curse. The four men stared at Mu Chen with fiery eyes, for they knew very well what his casual words represented. A treasure that could be used to locate the relics in the Meteorfall Battlefield was truly a powerful Divine Artifact and would be extremely valuable to the various forces!

As long as they had such a treasure, it would be effortless for them to collect the Meteorfall Alchemy pills!

The four men stared at Mu Chen with red eyes. If Mu Chen had not been part of Daluo Territory, they would have thought of snatching it away from him.

Mu Chen noticed their gazes and smiled. "Now I invite the four of you to go with us. If we are lucky, there's a possibility we can find a Grade One Relic!"

The four lords licked their lips, then nodded without hesitation.

"We're in!"

Rather than wander around the Meteorfall Battlefield blindly, it was better to follow the purposeful actions of Mu Chen, who had a detector. Even fools could clearly calculate the difference in efficiency between both methods!

Mu Chen smiled at Nine Nether upon seeing how readily the four lords agreed.

With these four strong helpers and their armies following, it was time

for them to dominate!

Chapter 858: Actions from Various Parties

Meteorfall Battlefield.

In this ancient battlefield that was full of crises, the passage of time seemed to have slowed down drastically. This was because the sky was covered by violent spiritual energy throughout the entire year, so that day and night in this battlefield was difficult to detect. Yet, no matter how the environment was, the cruelty of the Great Hunting War still quietly lingered throughout the entire course of time.

In just a few days, more and more forces had continued to pour into this ancient battlefield. They explored the ruins like rats. Whenever a ruin was found, it was inundated by hordes of people, as if they were sharks smelling blood.

In order to fight for the ownership of those ruins, a blood bath was inevitable. In that bloody war, countless strong people fell. It had been a truly brutal massacre.

But, back to the chess game that was really a life and death match, which was about to take place...

The news of the battle between Mu Chen and the Divine Pavilion had rapidly spread over the course of just a few days. After all, Mu Chen had pursued the Heavenly Alligator Troop for thousands of miles, and that kind of action taken would be hard to conceal, even if they had the intentions of doing so.

After all, the Daluo Territory and the Divine Pavilion were the top forces in the North Territory. Their every action was particularly noticeable, so when news of them spread, it was not unexpected that it caused a lot of uproar, especially when Mu Chen had managed to deal so severely with Fang Yi by his own strength!

In fact, when this news of his commanding the Nine Nether Troops to crush Fang Yi with the Spirit of Fighting Intent, then holding back the leader of the Heavenly Alligator Troop, Xu Ba, spread out, the uproar quickly turned into shock and disbelief!

Mu Chen's name spread throughout the North Territory after the Dragon-Phoenix Rift, but there were many people, who expressed uncertainty over him being ranked in the third position on the Dragon-Phoenix Record. In those people's eyes, the reason why Mu Chen could become the biggest winner in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift, was because of the help that he had received from the Flame Emperor's daughter.

Therefore, his results had attracted much doubt and criticism, too. However, this doubt had been smashed to smithereens by now!

A few months ago, even if Mu Chen had tried his best, he could only delay the Prince of Netherworld in the Dragon-Phoenix Rift, so he obviously was the weaker party. However, in only three or four months, he had greatly improved. This had been proven, as he had been able to rely on his own strength to fight to a standstill with the top position in the Dragon-Phoenix Record, Fang Yi! This vast improvement in his capabilities had impressed many.

In addition, it also shocked many powerful people that Mu Chen was able to control fighting intent, even succeeding in condensing the Spirit of Fighting Intent. They heard this and thought, if he could integrate this force into his body, even Fang Yi would be crushed by him! In fact, he could even contend with a powerful and experienced Sovereign, like Xu Ba!

Such strength was enough to cause all forces to be cautious! Hence, no one dared to easily dismiss Mu Chen as a fledgling amateur anymore.

Indeed, in this Great Hunting War, in which a brutal struggle surfaced, Mu Chen's reputation had begun to spread gradually. However, this time, no one dared to question it at all!

Boom!

The raging spiritual energy exploded amid the heavens and the earth, as if it had been transformed into a ribbon running through it, directly blasting into the sky. The Prince of Netherworld clenched his fist expressionlessly, then descended from mid-air. Behind him, a figure flashed, then whispered from beside him.

"Mu Chen..."

The Prince of Netherworld narrowed his eyes, shock flitting through them. He had not expected that the man, who had been forced into dangerous circumstances by him, would have improved so much in only a few months. Moreover, he had never expected that he would ever have been able to fight Fang Yi to a standstill!

The Prince slowly retracted his hands, then turned away, his cold voice ringing in the air. "I wanted to defeat Fang Yi personally, but since you can fight with him like this, if I met you, then I'd get rid of you first. But, this time, no one can save you."

...

Majestic fighting intent permeated an ancient ruin, as a large army soared in the air. In the sky, a figure stood, a sea of fighting intent beneath his feet.

The figure was grinning, while looking ahead. There was an army before him, but this army's fighting intent was suppressed by him entirely.

"It's time for all of you to die."

He sneered with a scoff, his voice tinged with bloodthirst. Then, his palms clasped, causing the ocean of fighting intent to flow in torrents, condensing into a blood-red python. This was also a Spirit of Fighting Intent!

Boom!

The huge tail of the python, which had been transformed from fighting intent, pierced the heavens and the earth instantly. Then, like a giant axe, it tore apart the army in front of it. Immediately, countless agonized cries rang out. Then, one by one, people fell from the sky amid a rainstorm of blood.

The figure laughed, as he looked at the scene. He then turned his head to look at another figure behind him. He laughed, then said, "Young Hall Master, the man you called Mu Chen, news about him is spreading rapidly now."

Behind the figure, there was a somber face. It was Liu Yan's of Tian Xuan Hall. His expression was full of deep hatred.

In the Dragon-Phoenix Rift, Mu Chen had destroyed his body. If his father hadn't spent a great deal of energy remodeling it for him, he would have been entirely destroyed.

"I had no idea that this brat could not only control fighting intent, but could also condense the Spirit of Fighting Intent," Liu Yan said chillingly.

The figure smiled slightly. He stuck out his tongue, then licked his scarlet lips. The blood in his eyes grew thicker.

He whispered, "Young Hall Master, let's make a deal. I'll let Mu Chen lie down in front of you, like a dog, if you can help me get the position of Chief Commander of Tian Xuan Hall."

Liu Yan's eyes narrowed, a malicious glint flashing in his eyes. After a moment, he nodded his head.

"Alright!"

The two were were on a plain at the moment, amid a scene of complete chaos. Countless corpses were strewn about, their blood flowing like a river.

On a hill in the plain, a young girl was sitting in a wheelchair, her long black hair flowing down. She looked quietly at the chaos ahead of her, while behind her, a black army spread out, breathing in unison. Their majestic fighting intent permeated the heavens and the earth.

Everyone gazed at the thin figure of the girl reverently. Then, a figure suddenly descended from behind the young maiden, as the latter opened her eyes slightly.

"Commander, there's news coming. It's Xiao Fang." The figure behind the girl spoke softly. "She wants to ask you to deal with the Daluo Territory's Mu Chen. It is said that Mu Chen has condensed the Spirit of Fighting Intent, and Master Xiao Fang said that, if you can deal with Mu Chen, he will obtain the Nine-Days Soul Revival Herb for your younger sister."

Hearing the name of the Nine-Days Soul Revival Herb, the girl's deep pool-like eyes finally showed some emotion. She then raised her fair and beautiful face, nodding gently.

"I understand."

In this vast and endless Meteorfall battlefield, cruelty enshrouded it at all times. With the passage of time, a brutal battle continued to erupt, the weak being annihilated by the strong. This was a law of nature that was enacted vividly.

During the shock caused by the defeat of several armies of the Divine Pavilion, Mu Chen, who was the protagonist, did not pay any attention to the uproar. After he had tried his best to win over the four Lords and their four powerful armies, he began to use the Spirit Seeking Compass to its maximum potential.

At this time, everyone was furiously vying for the Meteorfall Alchemy pills. If they were able to obtain sufficient Meteorfall Alchemy pills, the masters of various forces could seize the privilege of the opportunity to obtain the Earthly Sovereign Secret Treasure. So, since Mu Chen had such a Divine Artifact as the Spirit Seeking Compass in his hands, he could not let it go to waste.

With the help of the Spirit Seeking Compass and the extensive exploration of Mu Chen's armies, they had achieved remarkable results in just four days. During these days, they had explored more than 30 relics, among which were a dozen that had not reached Grade Three. There were also about a dozen Grade Three Relics, and even one Grade Two Relic!

Among the 30 relics, they had acquired nearly 10,000 Meteorfall Alchemy pills, which were distributed proportionally, each force obtaining more than 2,000 pills. Such a huge harvest caused even Lord Mountain Cracker's calm demeanor to become overjoyed! If they had had to search blindly, it would have been impossible to obtain such amounts of treasures in just four days!

Mu Chen was also satisfied with this, as he knew that other forces had noticed these relics, but had to choose to give up on their own initiatives,

after seeing the horrifying obstacles that they would have to surmount to reach them. Thus, Mu Chen knew he and his methods were superior to theirs!

Moreover, there were also many complications involving some of the relics, such as the only Grade Two Relic that they had found. This Grade Two Relic had brought them a lot of trouble, and even some casualties, which was why Mu Chen had brought the other Lords along. If Nine Nether Palace had broken into the place alone, the death toll and casualties would have been much more severe! Thus, he was glad to have asked the other Lords along.

Beyond an ancient relic, several large armies stood in perfect order. The sea of people seemed overwhelming, especially since they had just completed a search and were preparing for recuperation.

Mu Chen was sitting cross-legged on a solitary peak, his eyes closed in meditation. He then suddenly opened his eyes, looking downward, where all five armies, including the Nine Nether Troop, were now sitting in silence. Above them, a powerful fighting intent surged.

The five streams of great fighting intent were incompatible with each other, so they were entrenched in one side of the sky. Mu Chen stared at the five streams, emotion showing in his black eyes. Suddenly, a strange thought emerged from his heart.

He wondered if he could control the Nine Nether Troop, while also manipulating the fighting intent of other armies...at the same time...

Chapter 859: Cultivating Fighting Intent

Five armies encircled the hill. Above them, five streams of fighting intent surged while all five armies were at rest, so the offensiveness of the aura of fighting intent seemed to be restrained and even somewhat docile.

However, Mu Chen, who had knowledge of fighting intent, knew that this meekness was only a superficial phenomenon. The origin of fighting intent was the combination of each soldier's own spirit and will. So long as these soldiers were full of fighting spirit, the fighting intent would immediately rise with the change of their will and become full of aggressiveness.

Mu Chen's black eyes stared at the five distinct streams of majestic fighting intent as he ruminated. He could now control the Nine Nether Troop's fighting intent with perfect precision, but the number of soldiers in the Nine Nether Troop was limited, after all. With the improvement of Mu Chen's strength, he was no longer satisfied with just controlling the fighting intent of the Nine Nether Troop...

However, such a well-trained army could not be trained overnight, and every soldier needed a long time to integrate the spiritual power with their will. Only after the spiritual power and the will were matched could they integrate. Otherwise, it would be like a bucket of loose sand, and the fighting intent would not have the slightest power.

When comparing a thousand members of a motley crew with a thousand combatants who were capable of merging spiritual energy and will, it was clear that the latter would crush the former.

Thus, even if Mu Chen felt that the Nine Nether Troop could no longer satisfy him, he did not have too many ways to become a war troop dispatcher. If there was no huge elite army acting as support, it would be impossible to accomplish anything. It would be like expecting a cook to make a meal without any ingredients. No matter how skillful the cook was, it just wouldn't be possible.

The power of a war troop dispatcher came from one's army.

Mu Chen now had a great opportunity to try with the other four armies before him, including the Cracking Mountain Palace's Cracking Mountain Army, Blood Hawk Palace's Blood Hawk Troops, Spirit Sword Mountain's Spirit Swordsmen, and Cave Grand Cliff's Grand Army...

If he could use his own strength to resonate with the four armies, then it would show that he was likely able to control the four armies' fighting intents.

If he could really achieve that, Mu Chen's power was bound to reach an astonishing degree. He was able to compete with Xu Ba, a Sixth Grade Sovereign, by virtue of the Nine Nether Troop's fighting intent alone. He would no longer need to fear the Sixth and Seventh Grade Sovereigns if he could advance with the help of the other four armies.

Of course, Mu Chen was not a fool, and he knew that his current strength now may not be enough to control the majestic fighting intent of five elite armies. Unless he could really become a war troop dispatcher, the vastness of fighting intent alone could erode and destroy his willpower.

That would only cause things to backfire, and he would have to let nature run its course.

However... control might be impossible, but if he could resonate with the armies, it would at least prove that he had that potential, and perhaps he would be one step closer to becoming the mysterious war troop dispatcher.

Although this kind of interference in the other lords' armies seemed to be overstepping his boundaries, Mu Chen had ways to resolve the problem afterwards.

Thinking of this point, Mu Chen could not help but take a deep breath of cold air. Hesitating no longer, he slowly closed his eyes. His mind was in the dark night sky, rippling like waves.

His vision was dark, but the perception of his mind became increasingly vast. In Mu Chen's sense of perception, the five oceans of fighting intent surrounding the mountains quietly rippled. It seemed that there was a lot

of fighting intent roaring, shaking the space.

Amid the five oceans of fighting intent, Mu Chen felt one that was incredibly familiar, and that was from the Nine Nether Troop. As for the other four, each of them was hovering like ferocious dragons and tigers.

Mu Chen pondered and spread out his thoughts to approach the four great oceans of fighting intent. Hesitating slightly, he then tried exploring to make contact.

Boom!

However, just as Mu Chen's mind had barely made contact with those four streams of fighting intent, it was harshly rejected and rebounded back, attracting unconscious resistance and an attack from the majestic fighting intent, shocking Mu Chen's mind.

The first attempt at contact concluded in failure.

Mu Chen knitted his brows and frowned. The streams of fighting intent seemed extremely resistant to unfamiliar minds approaching. If his thoughts had been mixed with any aggression before, he would have been attacked by the four streams of fighting intent.

These fighting intents were too sensitive.

After a long silence, Mu Chen's frown relaxed slowly, as he was quite familiar with the concept of fighting intent and knew that it was useless to control it by force.

Mu Chen gradually calmed down his fluctuating state of mind, quietly waiting for his heart to calm down completely, only then spreading his thoughts out again. This time, he did not deliberately touch the four streams of fighting intent, but instead let his thoughts spread in the night sky like a wave of water, gradually rippling out, and finally making contact with the four great streams of fighting intent again.

Buzz.

In the moment of contact, Mu Chen's body shook violently, and in his mind, it seemed as if there were innumerable roars of battle that suddenly

reverberated as the violent fighting intent seemed to be seizing his mind and taking control.

However, the roar of fighting intent did not cause much hindrance to Mu Chen. He was not a rookie when it came to understanding fighting intent, so he immediately steadied his mind and let the fighting intent make its impact. Moments later, the roar gradually weakened until it completely dissipated.

At the same time the roar had dissipated, Mu Chen's thoughts had spread out like a swimming fish, swimming down the stream into the vast sea.

His thoughts had finally entered the four vast oceans of fighting intent.

He felt as if he had intruded into a raging volcano with different degrees of violence and rage, and with different attributes.

For example, the Blood Hawk Troop was full of bloodshed, the Cracking Mountain Army full of resolve, the Spirit Swordsmen full of sharp intent, and the Grand Army full of decorous intent...

These attributes were due to the long-standing characteristics of each army or, in a sense, a reflection of an army's style and what it was good at.

Mu Chen's thoughts mingled with the violent oceans of fighting intent. The numerous chaotic roars of war were constantly channelled into Mu Chen's heart. If it were any other person, he would have been destroyed by the streams of fighting intent and would have found it impossible to remain sane.

Fortunately, Mu Chen was no ordinary person.

Moreover, after mingling with the four great streams of fighting intent, Mu Chen was not anxious to become one with these fighting intents, but rather to allow his own thoughts to ripple in the oceans of fighting intent.

It was as if a river fish were diving into the sea, letting itself blend in with the others as much as possible.

Of course, the most important thing was that Mu Chen did not

intentionally conceal the existence of his thoughts, so when his thoughts rippled in the four oceans of fighting intent, the thoughts amid the fighting intent were also aware of him.

Those intentions came from the soldiers in the four armies.

Thus, when they perceived the slightest thought of Mu Chen entering, among the four armies beneath the hill, countless soldiers suddenly opened their eyes in amazement, disbelief in their expressions.

Generally speaking, if they had this thought that did not belong to their army, they would have attacked and wiped out the intruders but now, the intruder was Mu Chen...

These days, Mu Chen led the Nine Nether Troop hand in hand with them, and they were envious that the Nine Nether Troop could condense the Spirit of Fighting Intent in Mu Chen's hands and achieve a burst of astonishing power. Thus, when they perceived Mu Chen's thoughts, they did not show resistance reflexively, but after a moment's hesitation and seemingly no excessive action from Mu Chen, they had accepted the existence of Mu Chen's thoughts. After all, they and Mu Chen both belonged to Daluo Territory and were considered partners.

However, although the ordinary soldiers accepted this, there were still many commanders of the four armies under the leadership of the four lords. As high-ranking officers of the army, they naturally could not regard it as nothing. After hesitating for a moment, they passed on the truthful news to their leaders, the four lords.

Whoosh! Whoosh!

When the news arrived, the four lords soared into the sky at the same time. They looked at the mountain with the same expressions of astonishment.

Nine Nether also appeared in the sky at this time, and when she did, the four lords looked at her. "Lord Nine Nether, what is Lord Mu trying to do?"

Although the four lords were still polite, Nine Nether could still sense some of their doubts. After all, this kind of behavior of intervening with

the other lords' armies without asking seemed rather brash.

Nine Nether smiled exasperatedly and was just about to reply, when a thought spread out and Mu Chen's voice echoed in the night sky.

"May I borrow the four lords' armies for cultivation? If it is successful, it may help the four armies gain a deeper understanding of the Spirit of Fighting Intent."

Mu Chen's soft voice rang out and made the four lords' eyes light up. Bright smiles appeared almost instantly on their faces.

"Haha, if Lord Mu thinks they are worthy, then take them." Even the silent and taciturn Lord Hongya could not help but laugh. In these days of working together, they saw the effect of the Spirit of Fighting Intent on an army. Thus, they were all envious, but had no genius such as Mu Chen and could only look on. Now that they heard Mu Chen's words, even with the composure of the four lords, their eyelids could not help but to twitch rapidly.

If it weren't for fear of causing other people's discontent, they all wanted to say, as long as you can condense the Spirit of Fighting Intent, do whatever you want with my army.

Nine Nether smirked upon seeing how the four lords were so eager to give Mu Chen their armies, but she then knitted her brows in a frown, glancing at the figure atop the mountain.

This fellow has made such exaggerated promises. It's not that easy to cultivate a Spirit of Fighting Intent...

Chapter 860: Blood Hawk Spirit of Fighting Intent

After sending the four Lords away, Mu Chen's thoughts merged with the four great oceans of fighting intent again. Then, perhaps with the consent from the four Lords, the soldiers of the four armies withdrew all of their forces against Mu Chen. This resulted immediately in many thoughts within the surging seas of fighting intent to accept Mu Chen's thoughts, which were unfamiliar to them.

Mu Chen was very careful to quietly integrate his thoughts. He did not want to interfere with how the the four armies' fighting intent operated. Instead, he was like a bystander, quietly drifting with the waves.

As such, if one wanted to resonate with fighting intent, they must first integrate with it. In this state of drifting with the waves, Mu Chen's mood became increasingly calm. The innumerable bellows of warfare that were previously roaring in his mind from the sea of fighting intent now weakened. Gradually, they dissipated completely. The whole world seemed to be quiet at this time.

In the eyes of all the people outside, the atmosphere around Mu Chen seemed to become restrained. The four Lords looked at each other's armies, seeming to find that the surging fighting intent had also become much quieter...

They were not quite sure what the cause of the change was, but their eyes grew brighter, as the change at least indicated that Mu Chen seemed to have a great talent for controlling fighting intent! Perhaps, it was possible that Mu Chen could help their army condense the Spirit of Fighting Intent.

They were not worried about what Mu Chen would do to their troops. After all, they were all from the Daluo Territory. Hence, if Mu Chen did anything detrimental, the Daluo Territory would not condone it. Furthermore, after the interaction over these days, they had developed some understanding of Mu Chen's temperament. This allowed them to

believe that he would not do such a despicable thing.

Time passed slowly in the night. After about six hours, Mu Chen's thoughts had been transformed into the thoughts of an ordinary soldier, completely integrated into the sea of fighting intent that was formed by the four armies.

He could feel that the four armies no longer had total repulsion towards him. Yet, he still felt that it was not enough.

"Do all of you want to condense the Spirit of Fighting Intent and become stronger?" Mu Chen's idea spread out into the sea of the four armies, being transmitted to every soldier.

Buzz!

The sea of fighting intent suddenly fluctuated. It signaled the strong, immediate response from the soldiers of the four armies, who were filled with almost mad excitement. The most coveted thing for every trained army was to condense the Spirit of Fighting Intent, since it could only then be an army with a soul. Otherwise, they would always be like stragglers, unable to achieve great success.

Mu Chen listened to the numerous eager responses, smiling. With their strong anticipation, it would be much easier to trigger resonance. The four Lords also felt the sudden boiling fighting intent of each other's armies at this time. They immediately rubbed their hands together excitedly.

"Fellow Lords, this is the first time that I'm trying this, so I can't help you try to condense the Spirit of Fighting Intent at one go. At the moment, the Blood Hawk Troop has the least soldiers, so I'll start with them."

When they heard Mu Chen's words, the faces of the three other Lords stiffened, while Lord Blood Hawk grinned. His obvious glee caused the other three Lords to glare at him, frustrated that the Blood Hawk Palace would be the first to try.

They did not fully expect that Mu Chen could really succeed, after all, since condensing the Spirit of Fighting Intent was no simple task. Yet, they couldn't help but wonder what would happen if he really succeeded! At

just the thought of the Blood Hawk Troop's being able to condense the Spirit of Fighting Intent, the three other Lords pursed their mouths in displeasure.

Mu Chen did not pay attention to what they were thinking. He knew that, with his present ability, if he tried to help all four armies condense their fighting intent at one go, his mind might be destroyed by the raging sea of fighting intent.

Thus, he had to do this one by one, and the smallest Blood Hawk Troop was clearly the best testing subject. Mu Chen's thoughts retreated from the three other armies quickly, then surged into that of the Blood Hawk Troop. The troop immediately burst out in the warmest welcome, directly letting Mu Chen' s thoughts in to rapidly integrate.

"Let all of your fighting intent erupt." Mu Chen's thoughts spread into every soldier's mind.

Boom!

Upon hearing Mu Chen's words, the Blood Hawk Troop immediately roared together, causing the majestic fighting intent to sweep out like a sea of blood, before charging brutally into the world, full of bloodthirst.

Mu Chen's thoughts were heightened. He looked out upon a dramatic vision, as if he was in a sea of blood amid mountains of corpses. The whole world seemed to turn blood red.

The Blood Hawk Troop's fighting intent was condensed and strong, but it was still inferior to the Nine Nether Troop. So, Mu Chen's thoughts had no fluctuation, but gradually sunk, before finally falling into the deepest depths of the sea of bloody fighting intent.

The sea of bloody fighting intent, with infinite bloodthirst, poured into Mu Chen's mind. As countless images of killing and fighting flashed in his heart, he recognized that these were the fierce battles that the Blood Hawk Troop had once experienced.

However, from Mu Chen's perspective, the fighting intent of the Blood Hawk Troop was still not condensed enough. This was because there had

never been a leader who could really command the entire situation, because the Blood Hawk Troop had always been controlled by a number of commanders. With such a division of labor, although it can help in expanding the number of rulers, the commanders were still slightly different from each other, which made it hard for them to condense the fighting intent to a similar degree.

In order to condense fighting intent, there can only be one sole controller, such as with Mu Chen, when he commanded the Nine Nether Troop. However, to command the fighting intent of the Blood Hawk Troop, one needed to get the approval and recognition from all of its soldiers.

"Give me your fighting intent." Mu Chen's thoughts quickly spread out in the sea of fighting intent.

His words caused some uproar amid the Blood Hawk Troop. These soldiers were from the Blood Hawk Palace, after all, and fighting intent was their greatest reliance, regardless of the situation, so letting a stranger command their fighting intent was a great taboo.

Sensing the turmoil within the the Blood Hawk Troop, Lord Blood Hawk immediately rolled his eyes, then shouted angrily, "Do what Lord Mu Chen says!"

With the roar from Lord Blood Hawk, the Blood Hawk Troop no longer hesitated. As their majestic fighting intent surged, Mu Chen's thoughts instantly diffused and spread, mingling together with the fierce fighting intent.

A strong bloodthirsty aura rushed madly into Mu Chen's mind. In fact, if it had been any ordinary Sovereign, that bloodthirsty aura might have eroded his mind into a killing frenzy!

However, it had no effect on Mu Chen, who ignored the endless bloodthirst. Instead, with a thought, he sent a hurricane blowing wildly in the midst of the bloody sea of fighting intent. Then, a scarlet pillar of light suddenly sprayed out of the sea of blood, causing a bloodthirsty atmosphere to instantly pervade the world.

Mu Chen's thoughts remained silent, completely melted into the sea of

bloody fighting intent. He could intensely feel the fiery bloodthirst, as well as their past fights to the death...

All of the Blood Hawk Troop soldiers looked solemn at this moment, their eyes sparkling. They felt as if an invisible hand was forcibly bringing their fighting intent together. The hand seemed to be extremely broad and powerful, capable of exploding their power to the extreme apex. What they were feeling was Mu Chen's willpower.

They had never felt such a strong willpower! It was a willpower that no other commander of their Blood Hawk Palace could reach.

All of the Blood Hawk soldiers tuned out the external interference, channeling that sense of peace that allowed them to focus on doing their utmost best.

Buzz!

The bloody sea of fighting intent surged wildly, as Lord Blood Hawk looked on with great anticipation. He could clearly feel the rapid rise of the fighting intent that was coming from the Blood Hawk Troop.

No leader of the Blood Hawk Troop had ever condensed the fighting intent of the troop to this degree! This was a true prodigy of fighting intent! Only in the hands of such a gifted prodigy of fighting intent could the force of a military troop become invincible!

Lord Blood Hawk sighed, as he looked at Nine Nether with envy. Then, grinning bitterly, he said, "You have brought back a wonderful fellow."

Nine Nether smiled, a trace of pride flitting across her cold and beautiful face. When Mu Chen had first arrived in the Daluo Territory, everyone had belittled him. But, they now understood that they had all been wrong.

The other Lords also stared up at the sea of bloody fighting intent, unblinking. There were countless scarlet beams colliding with each other, the majestic fighting intent causing the space to ripple constantly. With their keen senses, they could feel what seemed to be taking shape in the depths of the raging fighting intent!

Blood-red light permeated the heavens and earth.

Scrawk!

All of a sudden, a sudden sharp cry of a hawk reverberated in the sky. Lord Blood Hawk's body trembled violently. His palms clenched, and his face was full of excitement. Lord Mountain Cracker, Lord Spiritual Sword, and Lord Hongya's eyes were also lit up with anticipation.

Countless soldiers in the troops looked up at the blood red fighting intent. There, blood-red light permeated the entire sky, and a huge red hawk slowly unfolded its wings. It then fluttered its wings, sending an overwhelming fighting intent sweeping through the world. That blood red hawk was the Spirit of Fighting Intent that was condensed by the Blood Hawk Troop!

The other Lords gasped in astonishment, looking at each other. Their eyes were full of shock and ecstasy.

Mu Chen had actually succeeded in helping the Blood Hawk Palace condense a Spirit of Fighting Intent!

Chapter 861: The Pseudo Spirit of Fighting Intent

Scrawk!

The huge blood hawk fanned its massive wings. Torrents of fighting intent surged, and the space shook violently as everyone could clearly feel that the fighting intent of the Blood Hawk Troop had far surpassed its previous level!

This was the power of a Spirit of Fighting Intent!

Lord Blood Hawk raised his head as he looked at the huge eagle with a stunned expression. A moment later, his body trembled, and uncontrollable ecstasy poured out of his usually grim face.

He had been cultivating the Blood Hawk Troop for so many years, and now they had actually successfully condensed a Spirit of Fighting Intent!

Beside him, the other three lords were aghast at the sight, for they knew very well what earth-shaking changes would take place when an army condensed the Spirit of Fighting Intent.

Although the Blood Hawk Troop was previously intercepted and attacked by the Heavenly Alligator Troop and suffered a loss of nearly half of its men, now that the Spirit of Fighting Intent had been condensed, its combat effectiveness had surpassed its previous peak.

All these changes made the other three lords' hearts pound with heated anticipation. The armies under their command should be stronger than the Blood Hawk Troop in terms of strength, especially Lord Mountain Cracker's Cracking Mountain Army, which had more than 10,000 strong men, enough to rank as kings in the top three ranks among the lords. If it condensed the Spirit of Fighting Intent, its combat effectiveness would be overwhelmingly powerful.

At this moment, the other three lords glanced heatedly towards the distant mountain where a silhouette could be seen sitting silently. The figure seemed rather slender, but even powerful Sovereigns such as Lord

Mountain Cracker dared not underestimate him.

The lords knew very well what horrifyingly strong potential a man had who could help other armies condense the Spirit of Fighting Intent. Mu Chen was indeed a rare prodigy of fighting intent.

In their fervent gazes, Mu Chen suddenly rose and looked at the giant hawk over the Blood Hawk Troop. He could feel that the fighting intent of the Blood Hawk Troop was under his complete control.

As long as he was willing, he could immediately consolidate the Nine Nether Troop's fighting intent. In this way, he controlled the two armies and that level of power was greater than before.

This attempt made it clear that Mu Chen had the ability to control the fighting intent of other armies.

With a flick of his sleeve, the mighty Spirit of Fighting Intent over the Blood Hawk Troop transformed into countless streams of blood falling down into the troop's sea of fighting intent.

He appeared before the lords as they hurriedly clasped their fists in respect, appearing more polite than before.

Before they could speak, Mu Chen looked at Lord Blood Hawk and said, "Lord Blood Hawk, do not be anxious to thank me yet. To be exact, the Blood Hawk Troop has yet to condense the real Spirit of Fighting Intent."

Lord Blood Hawk and the others were startled when they heard this and looked dubiously at Mu Chen.

Mu Chen smiled bitterly and said, "When I stepped in, the Blood Hawk Troop really succeeded in condensing the Spirit of Fighting Intent, but they did so under my control. Once I withdrew from their minds, the soldiers were still unable to rely on their own strength to maintain the existence of the Spirit of Fighting Intent."

The smile on Lord Blood Hawk's face stiffened at once, and a moment later he gave a bitter laugh. Mu Chen was not their commander, so naturally, it was impossible for him to follow the Blood Hawk Troop everywhere. However, even if that had been the case, it would be hard to

determine who this army now belonged to.

It was impossible for Lord Blood Hawk to find a man as capable as Mu Chen, for a powerful character like him would never be satisfied with joining the Blood Hawk Palace.

While Lord Blood Hawk and the other lords were disappointed, Mu Chen smiled. "Although the true Spirit of Fighting Intent cannot be maintained by your own strength, you can really rely on your strength to condense the Pseudo Spirit of Fighting Intent."

"The Pseudo Spirit of Fighting Intent?" The lords looked at each other in bewilderment. What was this? Was there a difference between the true and false Spirits of Fighting Intent?

Mu Chen smiled and said, "My previous actions were not totally ineffective. I have sealed all the marks of the Spirit of Fighting Intent in the minds of the Blood Hawk Troop, so the next time they trigger their fighting intent, they can activate that mark and condense the Spirit of Fighting Intent, but... This is not the Spirit of Fighting Intent that is condensed by the Blood Hawk Troop itself. So in terms of power, of course, it would not be as great, so I call it the Pseudo Spirit of Fighting Intent."

Lord Blood Hawk and the others looked astonished. It was the first time they realized that the Spirit of Fighting Intent could still be condensed by external forces. However, what Mu Chen said caused them to feel relieved. Whether the Spirit of Fighting Intent was true or false, they were glad as long as they could use it, as they did not expect to ascend to the sky at once.

"In addition, the seal I created cannot be used indefinitely, and when the seal's power is exhausted, it will dissipate automatically and need to be supplemented." Mu Chen shrugged his shoulders.

The other lords broke out in cold sweat. This thing still requires charging... It seemed that if they wanted to keep the imprint of the Spirit of Fighting Intent for a long time to come, they couldn't really afford to offend Mu Chen.

Mu Chen looked at their faces, scratched his head, and said, "There are a

lot of drawbacks to this. If you are not satisfied with it, then we can forget about it..."

"No!"

Lord Mountain Cracker, Lord Spiritual Sword, and Lord Hongya shouted in unison. As soon as they spoke, they looked at each other in dismay. Lord Mountain Cracker laughed and said, "Lord Mu is too modest. Although the Pseudo Spirit of Fighting Intent is not as miraculous as the true Spirit of Fighting Intent, I am afraid no army would forgo such treasures. Thus, I would have to trouble Lord Mu to assist our three armies, too."

Lord Hongya, who was usually silent, also clasped his fists and said, "This kindness will be remembered in our hearts. If Lord Mu needs anything in future, do let us know."

Mu Chen waved his hand and said, "It is natural that all of us should help each other as members of Daluo Territory. If the three lords are willing, I will try my best to condense the Spirit of Fighting Intent for your armies over the next two days. But I also have a request and need your consent."

"Lord Mu, please!"

"I just want to borrow some of your troops at critical moments," Mu Chen said, smiling.

Mu Chen now knew that he could resonate with other armies. That is, he could control other armies' fighting intent at a critical moment. Of course, it must be with the consent of the four lords, who would be recognized by the warriors of the four armies, and then he could put them under his control. After all, some of the troops were neither Nine Nether's nor belonged to him.

The lords looked at each other with a smile and said, "No problem, and I think if we did reach that point, we would all be in danger. So long as Lord Mu has the ability, our armies would be in your control."

They also agreed readily because they knew that Mu Chen could only

borrow their troops, and could not take them away. After all, these troops were trained by their hard work, and the soldiers only obeyed their orders. As long as they refused, no matter how brilliant Mu Chen was at controlling fighting intent, he could not trick them and take control over their armies.

Thus, at that time, handing over control of their armies to Mu Chen was also in their scope of acceptance. In any case, they could treat it as reciprocity towards Mu Chen, who helped them condense the Pseudo Spirit of Fighting Intent.

When Mu Chen saw their agreement, he smiled and nodded. He really didn't have any other ulterior motives. He just wanted to take control of the other troops at the critical moment and improve their combat effectiveness.

Since he became aware of the fact that among other top forces, they also had a prodigy of fighting intent who could condense the Spirit of Fighting Intent, he had increased his vigilance. After all, the Nine Nether Troop had developed rapidly this year, but there was still some shortage in its number and scale. Generally speaking, much of the strength of the Spirit of Fighting Intent depended on the size of the armies on both sides.

However, at a time like this, it was clear that there was no chance of expansion for the Nine Nether Troop, and that the army could not be trained to be more skillful in a short period of time, so Mu Chen had to turn his mind to the elite armies of the other lords.

Although it may have seemed more difficult and troublesome to control other troops, there was obviously no other way for Mu Chen. In this crisis-ridden battlefield, one had to depend on oneself for everything.

Mu Chen looked at the crowd and said, "During the next two days we will slow down a little in our search for relics so that I can condense the Spirit of Fighting Intent for the other three armies. Then we will continue our search."

Lord Mountain Cracker nodded and paused before stating, "I have received news regarding the prodigy of fighting intent from Tian Xuan

Hall."

Mu Chen's gaze turned somber upon hearing this.

"That guy has a reputation in the Meteorfall Battlefield lately, because all who encounter his forces are ultimately massacred, and less than ten percent managed to escape alive..."

Lord Mountain Cracker turned to Mu Chen and said, "According to our information, this guy seems to be looking for you."

"Tian Xuan Hall is it..."

Mu Chen's gaze was calm, and he nodded slightly. He had a deep grudge with Tian Xuan Hall. Since the man hailed from there, it was no wonder that he would come out to deal with Mu Chen.

"In addition... We also got news that the prodigy of fighting intent from the Divine Pavilion managed to defeat many elite first-class troops recently. According to my instincts, it is very likely that they are coming for you."

Mu Chen's eyebrows knitted together in a frown. Getting targeted by two prodigies of fighting intent was troublesome indeed but...

Phew.

Mu Chen breathed softly, laughing faintly, but confidence surged in his calm voice, which made people look askance.

"If they are really coming for me, it's up to them. I don't mind letting them know what it's like to fail."

Over the years, he had seen too many brilliant geniuses, but he had never been afraid. He never was and never would be.

Chapter 862: Death Relics

It took two days for Mu Chen to completely condense the Pseudo Spirit of Fighting Intent for the other three armies. After completing the task, he was left feeling utterly weak for an entire day.

Refining the Spirit of Fighting Intent was not only draining in regards to one's spiritual energy, but it also took a toll on one's willpower. To control the will of tens of thousands of people required a high degree of willpower. This was one of the main reasons why many strong and powerful men are still unable to control the will of fighting intent.

Continuously condensing the Spirit of Fighting Intent for four armies, and finally sealing the imprint in the minds of all the soldiers, was no easy task. Hence, when Mu Chen was done, he was very fatigued, only gradually recovering the next day.

The next day, when Mu Chen had finally recovered, the other four lords were the first to come and thank him. This polite gesture from them had never been seen before! But, when Mu Chen was still weak the day before, they had tested the power of the Pseudo Spirit of Fighting Intent. Although it was not really the true spirit, it still allowed their troops to improve their combat prowess greatly.

Thus, after experiencing the benefits themselves, they became more aware of Mu Chen's importance, so they felt the need to be on good terms with such a powerful figure. Otherwise, their army would be reduced to its original form after the fighting intent seals were exhausted.

Upon seeing the demeanor of the other four lords, Nine Nether, who had been standing beside Mu Chen, could not help but feel amused. Yet, she also sighed.

When she was crowned as a lord in the Daluo Territory, although the other lords did not target her, like how Lord Blood Hawk did, they still did belittle her. After all, regardless of age, strength, and qualifications, Nine Nether was not as worthy of the title back then.

The Nine Nether of today had clearly surpassed her past self, and her

strength was no longer inferior to the other lords. But, she was still very clear that this could only make the proud lords no longer belittle her. She still desired more, specifically, for them to truly respect her.

Now, even the arrogant Lord Mountain Cracker had to be polite to the Nine Nether Palace, as they dared not offend them. All these were changes that were brought about by Mu Chen.

This young man may not have overwhelmingly strong power, but he really relied on his own means, causing even powerful figures, like Lord Mountain Cracker, to bend down and make his acquaintance.

"The four of you are welcome. As we are all from the Daluo Territory, naturally, we need to support each other in this Great Hunting War." Mu Chen also responded politely towards the four lords' harmonious response.

The four lords saw how Mu Chen remained polite and was not arrogant, just because he had mastered such an important skill, like the seal of fighting intent. This made them feel much more at ease, their expressions becoming kinder.

"Haha. Lord Mu Chen, these days we have been slowing down the speed of our exploring the relics. Do we need to give our all to the endeavor now?" Lord Mountain Cracker asked with a smile, clearly looking to Mu Chen to make the decision.

Mu Chen pondered this, then asked, "What's the situation at Meteorfall Battlefield?"

All of his energy had been used to condense the Spirit of Fighting Intent. As such, he hadn't yet been able to concern himself with what was happening at the Meteorfall Battlefield.

"It's getting more intense," Lord Mountain Cracker said gravely. "We are now going towards the depths of the Meteorfall Battlefield. Generally speaking, those who can go further will be some forces with extremely strong strength. Hence, if we start a war, it will be a brutal war. As far as we know, in these two days, the forces that have been destroyed have reached into the hundreds. Among them, there is no shortage of elite first-

class forces."

Mu Chen's gaze turned grave. These first-class forces were not considered weak in the North Territory. But, they were still destroyed, so it was difficult to imagine how cruel the war really was.

"Do we have any news about the other forces from the Daluo Territory?" Mu Chen asked.

"The Meteorfall Battlefield is so vast, which causes intelligence gathering to be limited. So, it's not clear how other forces are doing now." Lord Spiritual Sword shook his head as he spoke.

Mu Chen nodded, then said, "I'm afraid that we do not have sufficient Meteorfall Alchemy pills."

Although they had the help of the Spirit Seeking Compass, they still had brought more than 10,000 Meteorfall Alchemy pills in their hands. But, it is said that to unlock even the first seal on the Earthly Sovereign Secret Treasure, it would require at least tens of thousands of Meteorfall Alchemy pills. Hence, what they had was far from being enough!

"Right now there are not enough pills to be able to extract from Grade Three Relics, so we need to look for more advanced relics." Nine Nether frowned slightly.

Generally speaking, they should be able to extract hundreds of Meteorfall Alchemy pills from a Grade Three Relic. At the beginning, that was considered to be a very large amount, but now it seemed grossly inadequate. In addition, they were several armies combined, and the hundreds of pills that were allocated to various armies would cause everyone to only get a small amount.

Although they could be compensated by the number of Grade Three Relics, with the help of the Spirit Seeking Compass, the value of the Grade Three Relics was ultimately too low. In fact, the remains of some heritage treasures among the relics proved entirely unimpressive to the lords.

"Higher ranked relics..."

Mu Chen ruminated for a moment, above the Grade Three Relics were

the Grade Two Relics. These relics were really extraordinary. In fact, the last time that they had met one by chance, even though they had paid a price for it together, the harvest was really delightful.

It was only one relic, but it was enough to be worth ten Grade Three Relics. Besides the numerous heritage treasures, thousands of Meteorfall Alchemy pills had also been extracted.

However, although the Grade Two Relics were rich with treasures, they were very difficult to find. Before, even if Mu Chen had the help of the Spirit Seeking Compass, they could still only find one.

In today's Meteorfall Battlefield, as long as there was news of a Grade Three Relic, there would be an imminent influx of forces flocking over to stake their claims.

"About those higher ranked relics... I wonder if you have heard any news these two days?" Lord Hongya, who had been silent, suddenly spoke.

"Oh?" Lord Mountain Cracker and the others knit their brows. He then frowned immediately and said, "Are you talking about news of the Death Relic that has been spreading?"

"Death Relic?" Mu Chen was also stunned, obviously not understanding what this was.

"Recently, in the northwest area of the Meteorfall Battlefield, it is said that a relic was found. It is also said that, so far, all of the people who entered, never came out. This is apparently why some people call it the Death Relic," Nine Nether explained.

"Now that news of the Death Relic has been passed down, there are a lot of first-class and top-notch forces that have shown great interest in it. According to their speculations, the so-called Death Relic is likely to be a Grade One Relic!"

"Grade One Relic?!" Mu Chen's eyes were wide open, as that was the second most privileged relic, just below the Earthly Sovereign Secret Treasure! Even with the help of the power of a Spirit Seeking Compass, they had not found a Grade One Relic! This fact alone showed how deep

the relic was hidden.

"That is the news, but we do not know whether it is truly a Grade One Relic. After all, in an eerie place like the Meteorfall Battlefield, anything can happen. Nobody knows what they can obtain, if they spend enough effort to break in. But..."

Lord Mountain Cracker paused, staring at Mu Chen. He then continued, "It is said that there seem to be traces of a fallen war troop dispatcher in the Death Relic..."

War Troop Dispatcher?!

Mu Chen's expression changed drastically, as he directed a burning gaze towards Lord Mountain Cracker. That kind of legendary existence was extremely rare in today's vast Great Thousand World! Thus, he was not clear how to become a formal war troop dispatcher, even if he could control fighting intent. However, he was only at the initial level, so he had to rely on his own exploration to cultivate.

Nine Nether, seeming to have expected such a reaction from Mu Chen, then said, "It is said that a large number of corpses from armies have been found there. So, it is speculated that the remains of the dead may have been left there by the war troop dispatcher."

Mu Chen's agitated mood calmed slowly. He nodded slightly after a moment. Although the Death Relic was indeed extremely attractive, the danger must have been unimaginable. So, even he could not help but hesitate a little.

If it's just a bunch of people from Nine Nether Palace at the moment, Mu Chen naturally would want to try it out. After all, the war troop dispatcher held a lot of attraction for him.

But, now that there were other lords present, Mu Chen wasn't sure if they were willing to take such a big risk, especially for some unrealistic and unconfirmed rumors. Although they had not seen the Death Relic, it was obviously not a good place, since it had such a malicious reputation!

"If you are interested in the Death Relic, you must decide as soon as

possible. It is said that the two prodigies of fighting intent from Tian Xuan Hall and the Divine Pavilion are now rushing towards the Death Relic. So, if my speculation is right, they are targeting the information of the war troop dispatcher." Nine Nether smiled, further tempting Mu Chen.

"Haha, if Lord Mu Chen is interested, we would accompany you. At present, all four of our armies have the Spirit of Fighting Intent. I think that, no matter how dangerous the Death Relic is, we should have the ability to protect ourselves." It seemed that he was aware of the hesitation in Mu Chen's mind, and the other four lords smiled, looking from one to the other.

"We haven't tested how formidable a Grade One Relic is, so now we can try out its prowess."

Upon hearing his words, Mu Chen was relieved. If only Nine Nether Palace had gone to explore, it would have been too dangerous, as they had to support themselves. However, with the support of the other lords, the probability of safety could be greatly raised. This is all thanks to his help in condensing the other armies' Spirit of Fighting Intent. Otherwise, the other lords would not have been so willing to step into such unknown murky waters!

No matter what, they now had the approval of the other lords, so they could now target the Death Relic! Mu Chen clenched his fists tightly, a burning gaze surging in the depths of his dark eyes.

He was anticipating the appearance of a war troop dispatcher. Hopefully, this Death Relic would not disappoint him!

Chapter 863: Zhantai Liuli

The Death Relics were located in the northwest of the Meteorfall Battlefield, some distance from where Mu Chen was. After they had made up their minds, they went straight ahead without any hesitation.

Due to time constraints, they were all in a hurry. Even though the Spirit Seeking Compass detected many relics along the way, and there even seemed to be a Grade Two Relic, Mu Chen ruthlessly ignored it, as his mind was set on the Death Relics.

Of course, to be exact, it was the information about the war troop dispatcher in the Death Relics that drove Mu Chen.

In today's vast Great Thousand World, war troop dispatchers were even more scarce than Spiritual Array Masters, so information about war troop dispatchers was rather rare. Anyone who had the opportunity to become a war troop dispatcher would most likely not pass up this opportunity.

Perhaps the two prodigies of fighting intent from Tian Xuan Hall and the Divine Pavilion had the same idea as Mu Chen, or else they would not have rushed so quickly.

Thus, with the same mindset, Mu Chen was heading as quickly as possible to the Death Relics that were now increasingly known to more and more people.

However, even though Mu Chen had pushed them to the extreme, it wasn't until the next evening that they set foot in the northwest.

Northwest region.

When Mu Chen stepped into the arena, it seemed that the heavens and the earth were darker, as the number of people there was much higher than anywhere else along the way.

On all sides of the sky, a steady stream of forces of different sizes roared past, then galloped toward the depths of the northwest.

Obviously, these men were coming towards the so-called Death Relics. Although it was clear that the Death Relics must be a murderous place,

the rumor of the Grade One Relic was enough to tempt countless forces to the point of losing their rationality.

After all, the Grade One Relic was second only to the Earthly Sovereign Secret Treasure, including the legacy of the Divine Arts, natural treasures, divine artifacts, and so on, thus Sovereigns ranked lower than Earthly Sovereign would naturally be tempted.

Mu Chen looked at the level of activity bustling in the northwest, and his brows knitted as he frowned. Obviously, he had not expected that the uproar would be so great in the Death Relics.

Although the situation was somewhat chaotic, Mu Chen was not too worried. Their forces were strong, including their regular troops, four elite troops, plus four Sixth Grade Sovereigns. Such a lineup would be able to match some of the first-class forces who had come out in full force.

No matter how it was, this kind of strength under this prevailing trend would be sufficient to fight on par with the other powerful forces.

Mu Chen gazed into the distance, and in that deep place, there seemed to be a dark shadow looming over the heavens and earth. It was depressing, but in the end, it did not cause Mu Chen to be afraid. He smiled faintly.

"Let's go. How can Daluo Territory miss out on such a grand event? Let's see how many powerful men have come to the Death Relics."

As soon as he finished speaking, he was the first to sweep out. Behind him, Nine Nether, the other four lords, and their elite armies transformed into silhouettes and followed closely behind.

With such a massive movement of people and horses, the magnificent gesture suddenly caused other forces' expressions to change as they hurriedly avoided them, not daring to obstruct them. They waited until Mu Chen had gone before murmurs began to spread.

"That seems to be the forces from Daluo Territory..."

"That leader, could it be Mu Chen, who has a famed reputation spreading wildly recently? I didn't expect him to rush here, too."

"It is said that the Death Relics have information about war troop dispatchers, and that Mu Chen seemed to be able to control fighting intent, and naturally would not let this opportunity pass."

"Heh heh, the two prodigies of fighting intent from Tian Xuan Hall and the Divine Pavilion have come, too. They seemed to be looking for Mu Chen before, but they didn't expect him to charge here himself."

"I have seen many battles between strong men. This confrontation between the gifted and talented prodigies will be my first time witnessing it. Now it is time to open our eyes and be impressed."

"Looks like this trip to the Death Relics will be rather interesting."

"..."

...

Deep in the Northwest region.

There was a vast darkness looming over the sky and the earth ahead, and in that darkness, it seemed as if the light had been swallowed up. Darkness surged, inflicting palpitating fear. This was where the Death Relics were located.

The bustle of activity reached its extreme on the periphery of the dark ruins, and countless silhouettes came in from the distance. Finally, they descended on this land.

Some powerful forces occupied the closest position to the Death Relics. If there was any change, they could seize the first opportunity at any time, while weaker forces could only retreat, not daring to compete for the favorable positions.

In such a place, it was clear that those who were stronger got better treatment.

All the forces in the world looked around, assessing the strength of others to determine how many competitors they would have on this trip.

These sweeping glances full of fear were mostly directed towards the various mountains ahead. On those peaks were the most famous and top-

notch forces in the North Territory. They were incredibly strong and had a frightening lineup.

The most striking of them was near a mountain in the north, above which there were only a few figures, but all of their surroundings had astonishing spiritual energy fluctuations, the power of which could be clearly felt even at significant distances.

However, they apparently were not the focus of attention on the mountain. In front of them, there was a woman in a white dress sitting in a wheelchair. The woman's hair flowed freely down. She had fair skin like snow, her face was exquisite, and she had a kind of delicate and gentle demeanor, which made people want to embrace her, giving her a tender feeling of love.

However, although the girl in the white dress emanated an aura of weakness, the forces present dared not underestimate her, because they all knew that the person in front of them was the hidden prodigy of fighting intent.

Zhantai Liuli.

Although many people in the North Territory knew Fang Yi, the best of the young generation in the Divine Pavilion, only some really capable people knew that in the Divine Pavilion, in terms of potential, Zhantai Liuli was superior.

Although the latter was inferior to Fang Yi in terms of cultivation, in terms of being gifted in fighting intent, she far surpassed Fang Yi. The Master of the Divine Pavilion had made it clear that Zhantai Liuli was bound to become a true war troop dispatcher, and such a statement was sufficient to determine her extraordinary position in the Divine Pavilion.

However, the hidden prodigy of the Divine Pavilion did not pay attention to the countless gazes on her. Her gaze was calm as water, and looked only at the distant Death Relics enshrouded in the darkness, her eyes flashing as if they were detecting something.

In the silhouettes behind her, there were many "acquaintances" of Mu Chen's. Not only was Fang Yi there, but also Xu Ba, Lord Flaming Wolf,

and Lord Celestial Bear. The lineup was equally extraordinary.

At the foot of the mountain, a silhouette suddenly swept up, and then whispered something to Fang Yi. The latter's face sank immediately. He turned to the crowd and said, "The forces of Daluo Territory are here, and Mu Chen is among them."

Upon hearing Mu Chen's name, Xu Ba and the others' faces turned steely.

The lady dressed in white remained calm, and there were no fluctuations in her beautiful eyes. A moment later, she just sighed softly and said gently, "Lord Xiao Fang, at present the relic remains the most important thing, and... there will be some people helping to test how capable the other party is."

Upon hearing her words, Fang Yi's expression flickered as he looked at a mountain in the distance and nodded slightly.

Whoosh!

Not long after they finished speaking, there was suddenly a gust of wind behind the arena, and countless forces turned around as a huge army that was like a rainstorm emerged, causing many people's expressions to twist in fear.

"Those are the forces from Daluo Territory!"

Among the numerous exclamations in the heavens and the earth, the vast army appeared directly in the sky, and Mu Chen, Nine Nether, the other lords appeared.

Mu Chen's gaze swept across the sky and the earth, feeling the strong and powerful spiritual energy fluctuations. Their eyes were slightly narrowed. This time, the relics had indeed attracted a lot of powerful forces.

"Let's head there."

Soon, Mu Chen turned his attention to the best places in front of them, and though there were already strong men gathering there, they were

equally fearless due to their esteemed position in the North Territory.

Lord Mountain Cracker and the others nodded arrogantly, and then, with a wave of his hand, Mu Chen led a large army to pass by and to be stationed on the huge mountain that had been vacated.

However, just as Mu Chen was about to descend under the gaze of countless eyes, a shrill little chuckle was suddenly heard in the sky and the earth.

"Everyone, this place is not somewhere you can come and go as you please..."

Lord Mountain Cracker and the others felt a sudden chill as they turned their cold eyes to a distant peak where they could see the same majestic spiritual energy surge, and a figure emanating great spiritual power stood proudly.

Those were the forces from Tian Xuan Hall!

In front of the crowd, a black-clad man with bloodshot eyes smiled as he looked at the emotionless Mu Chen.

"I'm Xiao Tian from Tian Xuan Hall..."

His scarlet tongue licked his lips and then smiled unsettlingly at Mu Chen.

"I would like to borrow your head."

Chapter 864: Xiao Tian

"I am Xiao Tian from Tian Xuan Hall, and I would like to borrow your head..."

When the man in black laughed, the area that had been in an uproar earlier dropped into a still silence. The people looked at the handsome figure, who was standing in the sky in front of all of the Daluo Territory.

The forces looked on with interest at what was going on. They had heard Mu Chen's name. After his duel with Fang Yi, Mu Chen had secured his status among the younger generation in the North Territory.

No one had doubted his abilities ever since that duel. Although Mu Chen was powerful, the man in black was no ordinary person. He was Xiao Tian, the Genius of War!

In terms of strength, Xiao Tian was a Grade Four Sovereign. He was considered to be outstanding among the younger generation in the North Territory. Hence, no one dared to look down on his status as the Genius of War.

Everyone knew that people like him could have destructive power, as they had control over a group of elite soldiers. Mu Chen looked calmly at Xiao Tian, not affected whatsoever by what he had just said.

"Where has this silly fella come from? How dare he talk such nonsense? Do you believe that I can kill you easily?" When Lord Blood Hawk saw how prideful Xiao Tian was, he was unhappy. He looked at Xiao Tian with immense killing intent, as Xiao Tian had the audacity to challenge Mu Chen in their presence.

"Talk nonsense? Do you think that we have no men here from Tian Xuan Hall?" A familiar figure walked out from behind Xiao Tian and sneered.

Mu Chen was shocked when he saw him. It was Liu Yan, who had been pushed to the wall by Mu Chen at the Dragon-Phoenix Rift, and who had destroyed his own body. Liu Yan looked at Mu Chen with hatred.

"So it is Liu Yan, the young master. Master Liu is rich. Within such a short period of time, he has helped you build up your body." Mu Chen smiled at Liu Yan.

Liu Yan turned pale. He looked gruesome, and felt like tearing Mu Chen into pieces. His reputation had been tarnished by Mu Chen at the Dragon-Phoenix Rift. If his father had not paid a high price, he would not have been able to get back his body that had been destroyed.

"Mu Chen, don't be too proud. If the Daluo Territory wants to have a share in the Death Relics, you have to seek approval from us!" Liu Yan said.

After he said that, four muscular figures, who looked like iron pagodas, stood beside Liu Yan. Their shadows covered Liu Yan up entirely!

Although their impressive builds caught the attention of the people, what daunted the people most was their strong spiritual energy oppression. Only Grade Six Sovereigns possessed such a powerful spiritual energy oppression!

"It is the Seven Heavenly Generals of Tian Xuan Hall." Lord Mountain Cracker looked at the four figures and sneered. He continued to look at them with disdain, then said, "Do you think that you can stop us with these four generals, who are ranked lowest among the Seven Heavenly Generals?"

"Ha. You are boastful. Do you think that you are invincible? I would like to see if you are as powerful as you have deemed yourself to be!" The first iron pagoda figure said this, while looking at Lord Mountain Cracker with an ominous aura.

"Come on, then." Lord Mountain Cracker laughed, then stepped out. A vast spiritual energy oppression swirled out like a windstorm at that moment, darkening the sky. Many top powers turned pale, as they sensed that Lord Mountain Cracker had reached the Peak of Grade Six Sovereign.

When the iron pagoda Heavenly General sensed the powerful spiritual energy oppression that was coming from Lord Mountain Cracker, his expression changed. However, he showed no signs of fear. As he was

about to spring to action, Liu Yan stopped him.

Liu Yan looked coldly at Mu Chen, then sneered, "Mu Chen, you should be well aware of the current situation. If you want to start a war, you will be wiped out in no time."

Mu Chen squinted his eyes. Under normal circumstances, he would have no qualms about taking on Tian Xuan Hall. However, he could not do so with so many top powers around. Many of the forces were watching and waiting to pounce on them.

Although the Daluo Territory was a powerful force, if they showed any signs of weakness, others would take advantage of this, encroaching upon them. Thus, they would not want to fight with Tian Xuan Hall under such circumstances.

"Hohoho, Brother Liu Yan, we can join forces to drive the Daluo Territory out." Someone suddenly laughed and said. The top forces were stunned. They immediately turned to look at another hill, which had been occupied by the Divine Pavilion. It was there that the voice had come from.

It was Fang Yi, who was smiling faintly, while looking at Mu Chen. The top forces were taken aback. Would the Divine Pavilion join forces with Tian Xuan Hall to take on the Daluo Territory?

This news would surely hit the headlines! Mu Chen turned to look at Fang Yi, then said flatly, "How dare such a loser like make so much noise?! Is it not enough to have been hunted down previously?"

When Fang Yi and Xu Ba heard this, they turned cold and looked solemnly at Mu Chen.

"If you wish to join forces, go ahead. However, just know that, even if we die, we will definitely pull you along with us!" Mu Chen spoke sharply, as he looked fiercely at them.

As Fang Yi looked at Mu Chen, he was taken aback. Taking into account the array of the Daluo Territory, if they decided to lay their lives on the line, Fang Yi would have to pay a high price as well.

"Friend, the Divine Pavilion has no intention of contending with you at this moment. We will settle our score with you another day. We will now leave you to settle your score with Tian Xuan Hall." A gentle voice was suddenly heard, one which softened the tense atmosphere.

Mu Chen saw an elegant lady in white, sitting on a wheelchair. He was stunned. Then, after pondering for a while, he realized that she must be the Genius of War from the Divine Pavilion.

The lady had no intention of fighting the Daluo Territory, but had let Tian Xuan Hall take the lead instead. The Divine Pavilion might have the chance to benefit from it, once the two parties had been exhausted.

Although the lady looked weak, she was no weakling at all...

"Mu Chen, stop acting tough. If you dare to fight Tian Xuan Hall, you will not get your hands on the Death Relics that have been left behind by the war troop dispatcher."

"What do you plan to do?" Mu Chen smiled flatly.

Xiao Tian smiled. He looked at Mu Chen with bloodshot eyes, as he laughed foolishly. He then said with a smile, "I have heard that you have cultivated the Spirit of Fighting Intent as well."

He slanted his head to look at Mu Chen, then said, "If you wish to have a share of the Death Relics, but at the same time, you have no wish to start a war with Tian Xuan Hall, that will be very simple. Let me see if you are up to it."

Mu Chen looked at Xiao Tian with disdain. He was not surprised at Xiao Tian's words. In fact, Xiao Tian had seemed to be targeting him from the beginning.

Tian Xuan Hall had thought of venting their anger on Mu Chen by defeating him. As for Mu Chen, he wanted to kill Xiao Tian as a warning to the others. Mu Chen could tell that there were many people waiting to pounce on them. Hence, he had to display his power to frighten them. In a way, Mu Chen was actually happy about what Xiao Tian had done.

"Hohoho, I hope that, when I take your head off, you will keep this smile

of yours." Xiao Tian laughed out loud. Everyone could tell that there was an immense killing intent in his laughter.

As Mu Chen looked calmly at Xiao Tian, Xiao Tian stopped laughing. His eyes were like a serpent, staring sinisterly at Mu Chen. When their eyes met, the mutual killing intent caused the entire area to turn cold.

Many top forces were excited. The two Geniuses of War from the Daluo Territory and Tian Xuan Hall were about to fight! The fight between these Geniuses of War would be far more interesting than a fight between any top powers of the same rank!

"I will wipe out all of your men!"

Xiao Tian laughed aloud, his eyes turning cold. He lifted up his hands, then brought them down with a shout.

"Tian Xuan Troop, show yourself!"

Boom!

After Xiao Tian shouted, the whole area quaked. The forces saw a horrifying fighting spirit shoot out of the mountain that was behind Xiao Tian.

At that instant, everyone in the area was shocked!

Chapter 865: Tian Xuan Troop

Boom!

Majestic fighting spirit swirled out like a windstorm. It was so powerful that even Grade Six Sovereigns turned pale.

"What an amazing fighting spirit!"

Even Lord Blood Hawk and Lord Mountain Cracker turned grave. Although Xiao Tian was haughty, he was indeed powerful. He was unafraid of Mu Chen, who was now famous and powerful.

Mu Chen looked grave as well. Out of those people whom Mu Chen had met in the North Territory, Xiao Tian had maximized his ability to control his fighting spirit. No one had been able to do that as well as he did.

Xiao Tian was indeed the Genius of War!

As the people looked at him, Xiao Tian burst out into laughter. He then waved his hand, and a large number of shadows shot up into the sky from the mountain behind him and hung in the sky. Powerful fighting spirit emanated from them and shocked the top powers.

That was the Tian Xuan Troop, led by Xiao Tian!

A large number of people covered the sky, and horrifying fighting spirit surged quietly. The troop was in silver armor, dazzling brightly in the sunlight.

The troop exuded an awful aura, showing themselves to have gone through many life-and-death wars.

What stunned most of the people was the number of soldiers in the Tian Xuan Troop. There were about 15,000 of them, which was much more than even the Cracking Mountain Army.

"That is the Tian Xuan Troop. Tian Xuan Hall has invested heavily in them to build them up over the past few years, and Xiao Tian has been controlling them!" Lord Mountain Cracker said softly. He looked at Mu Chen, looking worried.

Lord Mountain Cracker knew of Mu Chen's achievements in his fighting spirit. However, Xiao Tian was a Genius of War as well, and he had condensed the Spirit of Fighting Intent. With his large army, he had the upper hand. He was a strong opponent.

Mu Chen nodded and did not say a word. He waved his sleeve, and the Nine Nether Troop thundered. They had no intention of retreating.

Boom!

Nine Nether's majestic Fighting Spirit spread out like an ocean. It was so overbearing that many top powers turned grave. However, compared to the Tian Xuan Troop, Nine Nether was still behind them in terms of numbers.

"Hahaha, are you contending with my troop with only 5,000 men? What a joke!" Xiao Tian said and looked mockingly at the Nine Nether Troop behind Mu Chen. This level of fight would depend greatly on how overbearing the troops were, in terms of the quality of the soldiers and their numbers. Tian Xuan Hall had used many resources in grooming Tian Xuan Troop for the past few years. The Nine Nether Troop had a weak foundation compared to the Tian Xuan Troop. The difference was too great. If they were to fight, Tian Xuan Troop would definitely win.

Boom!

Xiao Tian was a vicious and merciless person. As he mocked Mu Chen, he immediately struck and gave Mu Chen no time to react. He formed a seal with his hands, and majestic fighting spirit shot up into the sky from behind him. It turned into rays of colorful lights and rained toward Mu Chen.

As the Rainbow Fighting Spirit swirled across, the space surged. The fluctuation that it carried caused even Grade Six Sovereigns to turn grave. Although Xiao Tian was a Grade Four Sovereign, after controlling the fighting spirit of Tian Xuan Troop, even a Grade Six Sovereign became wary of him.

Mu Chen looked at the overwhelming attack and frowned. He changed his seal, and a majestic fighting spirit behind him surged. It turned into a

huge Fighting Spirit Screen.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Several rays of Rainbow Fighting Spirit hit the Fighting Spirit Screen and caused it to rapidly thin. It then exploded with a loud bang.

As the screen exploded, the remaining Rainbow Fighting Spirit swirled toward Mu Chen.

Chirp!

Cold light flashed across Mu Chen's eyes, and a clear chirping sound was heard. A vast Spirit of Fighting Intent appeared on the surface of the ocean. Its wings swirled out like blades and blasted the violent spiritual energy fluctuations of the Rainbow Fighting Spirit into light spots.

As the people looked at Nine Nether's Spirit of Fighting Intent, they were shocked.

"Is that the Spirit of Fighting Intent? It is indeed powerful. Nine Nether's Fighting Spirit has enhanced so quickly!"

"No wonder they have said that in order to have a real troop, one has to condense the troop's Spirit of Fighting Intent. The Spirit of Fighting Intent is indeed powerful!"

"..."

The top powers started to whisper among themselves. There were only a handful of troops that had been able to condense the Spirit of Fighting Intent. It was an eye-opener for them to see it in action.

"Hahaha, is this the Spirit of Fighting Intent that you have condensed?" Xiao Tian looked at Nine Nether's Spirit of Fighting Intent and mocked Mu Chen.

"Let me show you what the Spirit of Fighting Intent really is!"

A powerful fighting spirit swirled out and condensed crazily. Majestic fighting spirit filled the area. The mountain below started to crack as though there was an earthquake.

A large number of shadows appeared behind Xiao Tian, which shocked the top powers.

A humongous Python Fighting Spirit formed and covered the void. As it hissed, the space trembled. Battle runes were carved on its body, and it exuded a powerful fluctuation.

The Python Fighting Spirit was much larger than Nine Nether's Fighting Spirit. There was a vast difference in the spiritual energy fluctuation between the two as well.

"Mu Chen thinks too highly of the Nine Nether Troop. They only have 5,000 men, but Xiao Tian has threefold in his troop. There is a vast difference in the Spirit of Fighting Intent between the two." Fang Yi sneered as he saw the fighting spirits of the two troops.

When Zhantai Liuli, who was in front of Fang Yi, saw it, she was shocked. She gazed at the Spirit of Fighting Intent condensed by Mu Chen and was stunned further.

"The Spirit of Fighting Intent condensed by Mu Chen contains more than 4,000 battle runes, whereas Xiao Tian's contains more than 6,000," Zhantai Liuli muttered.

When Fang Yi and the rest heard that, they were taken aback. After a while, Fang Yi smiled and said, "Then Mu Chen will surely be defeated."

Although they did not understand what the battle runes represented, from Zhantai Liuli's look, it seemed to mean that the more battle runes it had, the more powerful it would be.

Zhantai Liuli ignored Fang Yi and continued to stare at Mu Chen.

Many people did not understand the power of fighting spirit and found it mysterious. Even those commanders who had just started to control the fighting spirit did not know much about it. Zhantai Liuli suspected that even Mu Chen and Xiao Tian did not fully understand the meaning of the battle runes.

Zhantai Liuli had read about the fighting spirit from a Fighting Spirit Ancient Text. She knew that there was a difference in the Spirit of Fighting

Intent and a difference in power. The battle runes on its body determined its power. A troop with stronger fighting spirit would have more battle runes on its body.

It looked as though the battle runes of the Spirit of Fighting Intent condensed by Mu Chen lost out to Xiao Tian in terms of numbers. However, Xiao Tian's troop was three times more than Mu Chen's. If Mu Chen had had the same number of troops, he would have suppressed Xiao Tian's troop.

Zhantai Liuli found it amazing that with only 5,000 soldiers in the Nine Nether Troop, there were already more than 4,000 battle runes on the Spirit of Fighting Intent.

Mu Chen was truly capable.

"Hahaha, Mu Chen, do you see the gap between us now? You lose out to me even in the Spirit of Fighting Intent!" The huge Python Fighting Spirit was entrenched behind Xiao Tian as he laughed out loud. He could sense that the Spirit of Fighting Intent that Mu Chen had condensed was weaker than his. It was obvious who would be the winner.

Mu Chen frowned and looked calmly at the huge Python Fighting Spirit.

"I detest your look. It is time for you to die!"

As Xiao Tian saw Mu Chen's calm look, he was filled with killing intent. He wanted to see Mu Chen look flustered, not calm!

When he shouted, the huge Python Fighting Spirit hissed toward the sky. The battle runes on its body shone, and horrifying fighting spirit spread out.

Bang!

As the huge Python Fighting Spirit opened its ferocious mouth, its hiss melted the void and moved mercilessly toward Mu Chen.

Mu Chen changed the seal, and Nine Nether's Fighting Spirit chirped. It spread out like a shield and blocked off the hissing.

Swish! Swish!

When the two fighting spirits came into contact with each other, they clashed and the battle runes on Nine Nether's Fighting Spirit gradually dimmed.

That was a sign that the fighting spirit had diminished.

Although the battle runes on the huge Python Fighting Spirit had dimmed as well, it had not done so as quickly as Nine Nether's Fighting Spirit. It seemed that Nine Nether's Fighting Spirit would gradually lose out in no time.

Many people had realized it and started to whisper. Mu Chen had kicked the wasp nest this time.

Nine Nether and Lord Mountain Cracker, who were behind Mu Chen, frowned and panicked.

Hoof.

As they watched intently, Mu Chen simply let out a breath. He turned his head and smiled at Lord Blood Hawk.

Nine Nether and Lord Blood Hawk were shocked when Mu Chen said, "Lord Blood Hawk, I would like to borrow your Blood Hawk Troop!"

Chapter 866: Lend Me Your Troop

"Lord Blood Hawk, I wish to borrow the Blood Hawk Troop!"

When Lord Blood Hawk and the rest heard what Mu Chen had said, they were shocked. They looked at Mu Chen, baffled.

Was Mu Chen thinking of using the fighting spirit of the Blood Hawk Troop at this crucial moment?

Would it be possible for him to control both the Nine Nether Troop and the Blood Hawk Troop at the same time?

Although they did not understand much about fighting spirit, they knew that, when two contradictory powers were put together, they would clash, if not handled well. Although Mu Chen had helped their troop to condense the Spirit of Fighting Intent, that had been a gradual process. It was different from the current situation, whereby he would control their troop, while activating the fighting spirit of the Nine Nether Troop simultaneously!

"Sure!"

Although Lord Blood Hawk had his doubts, he was decisive. He nodded his head and waved his hand. The Blood Hawk Troop whizzed out, like a stretch of Blood Clouds, then formed behind Mu Chen.

"Thank you."

Mu Chen thanked him, then immediately looked back sharply at the Blood Hawk Troop. The Blood Hawk Troop thundered in unison, as a majestic fighting spirit swirled out.

Mu Chen triggered his thoughts, channeling them in order to give part of his mind power to the majestic fighting spirit of the Blood Hawk Troop.

"Is Mu Chen thinking of using the fighting spirit of the Blood Hawk Troop?"

Mu Chen's action had caused an uproar among the people. They were shocked. They couldn't help but stare at Mu Chen, baffled. They found it

all to be quite ridiculous.

"Mu Chen is desperate!" Fang Yi frowned, then sneered.

"He is not desperate." Zhantai Liuli, who was in front of Fang Yi, shook her head and said. She then looked at Mu Chen. "It is not impossible to control two different kinds of fighting spirit at the same time. This would require an extremely high level of control."

"Is he able to do it?" Fang Yi turned pale and asked.

Zhantai Liuli shook her head, then said, "I have no idea. However, Mu Chen is cool-headed. He will not do anything without a good reason. He should be able to do it, since he has decided to go ahead with it."

Fang Yi looked gloomy, feeling unable to refute her. He had exchanged blows with Mu Chen before, so he knew his character. Mu Chen seldom did things that were not beneficial.

However, it was difficult for Fang Yi to accept the fact that Mu Chen was able to control the two different fighting spirits at the same time. He would rather believe that Mu Chen was trying too hard. He did not expect Xiao Tian to finish Mu Chen off, but he had hoped that Xiao Tian could at least disgrace him a bit.

"Are you thinking of controlling the two types of fighting spirits? You are so presumptuous." Xiao Tian looked coldly at Mu Chen, his eyes glittering. As a Genius of War, he knew how presumptuous Mu Chen was. Even he would require much time and preparation, before he could control two types of fighting spirits. So, surely Mu Chen and the Blood Hawk Troop could not possibly conform to each other.

Xiao Tian's attack became more ruthless. He attacked aggressively, utilizing the huge Python Fighting Spirit. Although Nine Nether's Fighting Spirit kept retreating under the attack, it was not beaten.

Some of the people were watching the fight between the two fighting spirits, but most of them looked at the majestic fighting spirit above the Blood Hawk Troop. The fighting spirit surged like a sea of blood. The people looked forward to seeing how capable Mu Chen was at controlling

the two different types of fighting spirits.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The two different fighting spirits clashed against each other like a windstorm, causing the whole area to shake. Even after that, Mu Chen had still not moved at all. He shut his eyes, alienating himself from all disturbances. He focused on controlling his mind power, then speedily merged with the fighting spirit of the Blood Hawk Troop.

After a while, he opened his eyes. Red lights were clearly evident within them now.

Boom!

As Mu Chen opened his eyes, the fighting spirit of the Blood Hawk Troop, which was surging vigorously, suddenly thundered. Several beams of Bloody Fighting Spirit shot up, intersecting with one another in the sky.

The people were surprised at such a scene! Soon, they became shocked, as a humongous Blood Hawk spread out its large wings! Suddenly, an astonishing fighting spirit spread out from it.

Chirp!

The loud cry of a hawk resounded across the heavens and the earth. The forces looked at the humongous Blood Hawk, their jaws dropped. After a while, they started to gasp.

Mu Chen had not only controlled the fighting spirit of the Blood Hawk Troop, he had even awakened the Blood Hawk Troop's Spirit of Fighting Intent! This meant that Mu Chen was able to control the two Spirits of Fighting Intent!

"This is impossible!" Fang Yi turned pale, looking grave. Every time he had met Mu Chen, Mu Chen had become tougher to handle.

"He has condensed the Blood Hawk Troop's Spirit of Fighting Intent!" Zhantai Liuli was shocked as well. She looked at the Blood Hawk's Fighting Spirit, then said softly, "There are 3,000 battle runes on the body of Blood Hawk's Fighting Spirit. That is less than Nine Nether's Fighting

Spirit. It seems like Mu Chen is unable to control the Blood Hawk Troop's Fighting Spirit as well as the Nine Nether Troop's. However, with the combination of the two fighting spirits, it will be enough for him to deal with Xiao Tian."

Xiao Tian turned pale, when he saw the Blood Hawk's Fighting Spirit. He looked cunningly at Mu Chen, then said, "You do have some means!"

Mu Chen looked flatly at Xiao Tian, ignoring what he had just said. He changed his seal, causing the Blood Hawk's Fighting Spirit to suddenly chirp and flap its wings. It shot out to appear above Xiao Tian. It then shook its wings, sending Blood Feathers shooting down, which tore the space apart.

"Crap!"

Xiao Tian's countenance fell immediately. He quickly withdrew the attack of the huge Python Fighting Spirit. As the tail of the huge Python Fighting Spirit swept past the Blood Feathers, it smashed them up.

When Xiao Tian withdrew the attack of the huge Python Fighting Spirit, Nine Nether's Fighting Spirit immediately shot out, taking its position below the huge Python Fighting Spirit. With the Blood Hawk's Fighting Spirit above it and Nine Nether's Fighting Spirit below it, the huge Python Fighting Spirit was trapped in between the two.

Boom!

The three fighting spirits now faced one another. Cold rays of light flashed across the eyes of Mu Chen and Xiao Tian, while the three Spirits of Fighting Intent shot out. The fighting spirits were extremely violent, colliding together.

This was a fight that would be determined by the forcefulness of the fighting spirits. Although the huge Python Fighting Spirit was more powerful than Nine Nether's Fighting Spirit, with the additional power of Blood Hawk's Fighting Spirit, the huge Python Fighting Spirit faced a big setback. It went into a standstill position, which kept depleting its power.

When Liu Yan saw that Mu Chen had turned the tables, he turned

ghastly pale. He had never expected Mu Chen to use such means, especially in such a dangerous situation!

"Stupid guy!" Liu Yan gritted his teeth, extremely furious. However, he could do nothing.

Boom! Boom!

The three fighting spirits contended in the sky. Every time they collided, the space would shake. At the last collision, the three fighting spirits were hit by the violent shockwaves, which caused them to turn into light spots. The fighting spirits of both parties had come to a draw!

"How can this be?!" Xiao Tian looked angrily, trying to make sense of what had just taken place. He could not accept the fact that it was a draw.

After all, this elite troop that he was controlling was the Tian Xuan Troop! Mu Chen was controlling the Nine Nether Troop, which had a weak history. Even with the additional numbers from the Blood Hawk Troop, there were only around 10,000 in number, which was far less than the Tian Xuan Troop's ranks. Thus, the outcome was not at all what Xiao Tian had expected!

"What a waste that the troop in under your charge." Mu Chen looked at Xiao Tian, who was now red with anger. Mu Chen's calm voice only enraged him further.

"You are courting your own death!" Xiao Tian shouted, having lost his cool. As he was about to activate the Tian Xuan Troop again, Liu Yan appeared beside him, stopping him.

Tian Xuan Hall had been instructed by Liu Yan's father to check on the Death Relics. If they were seriously injured, they would not be able to carry out their mission. Liu Yan had only wanted to use Xiao Tian to put Mu Chen down. He had no intention of starting a war!

"We will deal with him after getting our hands on the Death Relics," Liu Yan said to Xiao Tian.

Xiao Tian looked furiously at Mu Chen, before retreating. Mu Chen looked calm, and after Xiao Tian had retreated, he glanced around. He saw

Fang Yi, who was standing on the peak of the mountain, then said coldly, "Does anyone else doubt our ability?"

There was a dead silence. No one dared to offend Mu Chen. Even the Grade Six Sovereigns were wary of him.

Mu Chen had indeed established himself with this fight. Fang Yi looked gloomy, not saying a word. When Mu Chen saw that there was only a dead silence, he turned around to go back to his troop.

Dong!

Just as he was turning around, there was an earth-shattering roaring sound. It sounded as though many warriors were in pain. The roaring sound carried with it a killing intent, which caused the entire area to darken.

This sudden change of events took all of the forces by surprise. They lifted up their heads, looking at the Death Relics, which had just been covered by darkness.

The strange roaring sound had come from that direction!

Chapter 867: Barge In

Roar!

A strange screaming sound filled with much pain came from the dark Death Relics. It sounded so heart wrenching that it sent chills up the spine of the top powers.

A constant roaring sound followed the scream. The roaring sound contained a special power that caused the area to darken and suppressed the people in the vicinity.

The top powers looked at the dark Death Relics from afar. Although they had not entered into the Death Relics, they had already felt their horror.

"This fluctuation..." Mu Chen turned grave and looked at the Death Relics, shocked. He found the special power in the roaring sound familiar. It was the power of the fighting spirit.

The Death Relics were indeed related to the war troop dispatcher!

Mu Chen was excited. It seemed that whatever was inside the Death Relics had been triggered when it sensed the fighting spirit outside.

Mu Chen's eyes glittered, and he retreated to his troop. He said softly, "It looks like these Death Relics are related to the war troop dispatcher. I can sense its fighting spirit fluctuation."

Nine Nether and Lord Mountain Cracker shivered as they looked at the strange Death Relics. If they were related to the war troop dispatcher, they must be extremely dangerous. They would have to be extra careful.

"When shall we go?" Nine Nether asked softly.

Mu Chen shook his head and said, "Let's wait for a while." After he had confirmed that the Death Relics were related to the war troop dispatcher, Mu Chen calmed down. It would be risky to take the lead in such a dangerous environment.

Nine Nether and the rest shared the same thought and nodded. They then rested on a mountain at the forefront and watched the Death Relics

carefully.

As the troop from Daluo Territory rested on the mountain, the strange roaring sound from the Death Relics became softer, and ultimately, stopped...

After the Death Relics had resumed their peace, the forces started to get excited. The strange behavior from the Death Relics had proven that it was unique. This could be a Grade One Relic.

If they could be the first to enter, they would be able to refine a large amount of Meteorfall Alchemy before the others. The amount of Meteorfall Alchemy that a Grade One Relic could refine was so huge that it would shock everyone.

Moreover, there must be many Divine Weapons, Divine Art, and other precious items left behind by the primordial top powers in the Death Relics. These were enough to tempt anyone.

Some of the forces who had intended to wait outside the Death Relics started to become impatient. They were burning with greed.

Not many people were able to remain sober under such a great temptation. Everyone thought that the lucky stars might shine on them.

Swoosh!

After more than ten minutes, some of the forces could no longer suppress their greed, and they started to jump up from the ground. There were about 1,000 of them. They turned into colorful lights and shot toward the dark Death Relics.

Those people were all from the same force, and some of them were extremely powerful. Needless to say, in such a place, unless one is powerful, he would not openly show his greed.

The people became restless, and after the force had taken the lead, the rest of them could no longer hold back. Many other forces led their men and shot out as well. They did not want the other forces to wipe out the treasures before they could lay their hands on them.

Swoosh! Swoosh!

One after another, the forces shot up into the sky, and the area was bustling with noise. A large number of shadows whizzed past the horizon, and the scene was majestic.

However, those top powers who were nearest to the Death Relics kept their cool. They simply looked flatly at those forces that had flooded into the Death Relics.

Mu Chen stood on top of the mountain and looked calmly at the forces that had rushed into the Death Relics like moths to a flame. He did not find them pitiful. It was a great sin to be greedy. Since they were greedy, they had to pay a price for their greed.

Mu Chen looked around at the other mountains. The Divine Pavilion and Tian Xuan Hall did not take any action. Other top-notch forces were not rash, either. They were waiting for the most appropriate time to act.

These forces had been around the North Territory for many years, and they were praiseworthy. As these thoughts ran through his mind, Mu Chen turned his gaze back to the Death Relics. He could sense a violent spiritual energy fluctuation coming out from them as more and more people barged in.

Indistinctly, an explosive fighting sound with the Relic Spiritual Energy came out of the Death Relics.

The forces that had gone in must have met with some obstructions, which came as no surprise to Mu Chen. If they had not met any obstructions, Mu Chen would not dare to enter.

There must be hidden danger in anything that was abnormal. Mu Chen was a careful person. He would not get involved in things that were abnormal, as they would usually lead to death.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Violent spiritual energy burst out continuously from the Death Relics. Even those who were outside could see that there was a chaotic fight in the darkness.

"It is about time," Mu Chen said suddenly after watching the Death Relics for some time. He felt that the fighting spirit fluctuation in the Death Relics had weakened.

"Let's go!"

As Mu Chen finished speaking, Zhantai Liuli, who was with the Divine Pavilion on another mountain peak, said the same.

Boom!

Vast spiritual energy fluctuations shot up into the sky. Large troops whizzed out one after another and covered up the sun. The men of the Divine Pavilion shot toward the Death Relics.

After the Divine Pavilion had taken action, Tian Xuan Hall started to move as well. Zhantai Liuli and Xiao Tian must have also noticed that the fluctuation had weakened.

"They certainly act fast." Mu Chen looked at the large amount of people and smiled flatly. He turned to look at Nine Nether, Lord Mountain Cracker, and the others and said, "Try to stick together after we get into the Death Relics."

"Alright!" They nodded in agreement. They knew that they had to stay together and look out for one another in such a dangerous place.

"Let's go!" Mu Chen smiled and immediately waved his hand. He took the lead and shot out. Nine Nether, Lord Mountain Cracker, and the others followed suit, with the troop following closely behind them.

The troop swirled out like dark clouds. Within a short while, they appeared outside the Death Relics. It seemed gloomy and cold in the darkness, which sent a chill up one's spine.

However, the troop was not deterred by the darkness. As the majestic aura swirled out, the place became not as dark. One could indistinctly see a dark piece of land that was filled with skeletons...

As Mu Chen looked at the skeletons, he was shocked. The skeletons maintained the same postures as they had had in life. They remained

immovable like rocks even in the face of death.

They used to be a troop.

Even when the troop was facing death, they remained fearless.

The war troop dispatcher who had controlled the troop must have been an extraordinary person.

Mu Chen looked deep into the Death Relics excitedly. Some war troop dispatchers must have died in the Death Relics. If he could chance upon them, he might have the opportunity to become a true war troop dispatcher!

If he could become a true war troop dispatcher, his status in Daluo Territory would surpass that of the lords!

With this thought in mind, Mu Chen immediately turned into a shadow and shot out. He moved into the darkness, with the troop following closely behind him. They were soon totally engulfed by the darkness.

When the troops from Daluo Territory, Divine Territory, and Tian Xuan Hall barged into the Death Relics, darkness surged deep inside. Indistinctly, a low, inhuman roaring sound resounded. The roaring sound was filled with destructive force.

There were fluctuations in the darkness, and a stone seat appeared deep inside. A figure in black armor sat quietly on the stone seat. He had white hair, and a black aura circled around him, sending destructive fluctuations from his body.

He slowly lifted up his head in the darkness. His eyes were red and filled with destructive force.

"This is my territory... those who barge in... die!"

A hoarse voice filled with killing intent traveled out in the darkness. It was eerie and filled with destructive force.

Chapter 868: Decomposed Troops

In the dark Death Relics, the smell of death was extremely strong. In fact, it covered the entire area. It was like a place of the dead, causing one to shiver.

Swoosh!

The silence in the Death Relics had been completely disturbed by the large number of people who had just barged in. The sounds of chaotic fighting caused the Death Relics to bustle with noise.

Mu Chen led his troop into the Death Relics. They were unstoppable. They swirled deep into the area at lightning speed.

However, they soon faced some obstructions. There were up to 1,000 decomposed warriors, all of whom were attired in rotten armor. Their bodies had dried up, and they looked like skeletons. The only things left behind were their shiny red eyes. These eyes looked evil, ready to destroy everything.

These decomposed warriors had stopped the forces who had just barged in. A majestic spiritual energy burst out, while the forces and the decomposed troop went into a fierce battle.

The decomposed warriors had lost their minds, and were acting like zombies. They did not feel any pain, but simply fought on fearlessly. Their attacks were constant, and they all moved in unison, as if they were one entity.

As the spiritual energy with the rotten smell merged with the attacks, they were extremely lethal. Many powerful forces, having been taken by surprise, were defeated by them.

As Mu Chen looked at the decomposed warriors, he was stunned. He exchanged looks with Nine Nether, both of them looking grave. The aura surrounding these decomposed warriors was similar to the one possessed by those elders from the Primordial Celestial Palace in the first relic.

"Before these warriors passed away, they must have fought with the

Extraterritorial Race. The evil energy must have invaded into their body, causing them to look as they do now," Nine Nether said softly.

"Extraterritorial Race?" When Lord Mountain Cracker and the rest heard her words, they turned grave. Although the Primordial War had happened a long time ago, they knew how horrifying the Extraterritorial Race was. These were the worst enemies of the entire Great Thousand World!

"Be careful," Mu Chen reminded them, then darted out. After receiving the command, the troop started to be more cautious. A majestic fighting spirit surged, as the troop put up their guards, looking around.

Mu Chen's big troop swirled past, like a windstorm. The smaller groups of decomposed warriors did not get in their way, due to the power that the troop had exuded. Thus, they simply let them go past.

Mu Chen did not let down his guard, but became even more cautious. Very soon, when they dashed past a dark piece of land, violent fighting spirit fluctuations burst out from a dark cave in the distance. Numerous black torrents then swept past, carrying with them a rotten smell.

There was a strong fighting spirit within these torrents. Mu Chen turned grave, looking at the cave. At that moment, a few thousand dried figures floated up in the cave. Majestic fighting spirit spread out, filling it with the cold fluctuation of death.

"Lord Mu, leave them to the Spiritual Sword Troop," Lord Spiritual Sword looked at the decomposed troop, then said to Mu Chen. He waved his hand, and the Spiritual Sword Troop behind them shouted in a low voice. Majestic fighting spirit spread out, and a shadow with a huge sword appeared above the Spiritual Sword Troop.

The shadow had been formed by the fighting spirit. This was the Spirit of Fighting Intent that Mu Chen had helped the Spiritual Sword Troop to condense.

Buzz! Buzz!

The sound of swords clashing resounded loudly, as the figure slashed down hard with the huge sword in his hand. The sword, that was a few

hundred feet in length, swept out, carrying with it an overbearing fighting spirit.

Swoosh!

The sword ray darted across the horizon. It whizzed past the black torrents, tearing them apart. The figure activated his fighting spirit to its optimum level. The overwhelming sword ray immediately whizzed out, covering the whole decomposed troop.

Bang! Bang!

As the two parties fought, violent fighting spirits raged out, turning the whole place upside down. The Spirit of Fighting Intent of the Spiritual Sword Troop was more overbearing, and in no time, they were able to defeat the decomposed troop.

As the decomposed warriors were killed by the sword ray, the rotten smell on their bodies started to dissipate. Finally, they turned into ashes.

Just as they were turning into ashes, they each broke into a smile, as though they had been relieved of a great burden. It was not because they were still conscious, but rather was an instinctive relief.

Strange powers started to surge, shocking Mu Chen and the rest. This was the Meteorfall gas that they had been looking for!

Lord Spiritual Sword laughed and waved his sleeve. He absorbed the large amount of Meteorfall gas. Then, after a short while, he had refined a few hundred Meteorfall Alchemy. The quantity was comparable to the harvest from a Grade Three Relic.

"This Death Relic must be a Grade One Relic." Lord Mountain Cracker and the others looked envious. They found Lord Spiritual Sword to be quite cunning. After all, he had been so quick to react.

"It is all because of Lord Mu, who helped us condense the Spirit of Fighting Intent. If not for him, we would have had to pay a high price in order to defeat them." Lord Spiritual Sword cupped his fist at Mu Chen, saying the words politely with a smile.

If the Spiritual Sword Troop had not condensed the Spirit of Fighting Intent, they would not have defeated the decomposed troop so easily. Thus, with the help of the Spirit of Fighting Intent, they had won the battle triumphantly, leaving relatively unscathed.

Mu Chen smiled at Lord Mountain Cracker and the rest, then said, "This is just the beginning. You will be forced to strike later, even if you have no intention to."

When they heard this, they licked their lips and looked excited. They were fearless. This was a good start, and now, they had been provoked to the hunt!

"Let's speed up."

Mu Chen looked into the distance. He sensed that there were violent spiritual energy fluctuations all over the place. The forces must have realized that these decomposed warriors possessed large amounts of Meteorfall Alchemy within them. The Meteorfall Alchemy in this place was so overbearing, it was more powerful than the ordinary Grade Three Relic. They would really have to speed up their hunt!

Mu Chen looked at the deepest part of the Death Relics, suddenly turning grave. The top powers, who had been killed, must have been invaded by the evil energy of the Extraterritorial Race.

Mu Chen wondered if the war troop dispatcher that they were looking for had met with the same mishap. If this was so, ultimately, they might have to face a war troop dispatcher that had lost his mind due to the invasion of the evil energy.

Mu Chen dared not think how much power the war troop dispatcher would be left with. In any case, no matter how weak a war troop dispatcher was, he would still have some power.

In the current situation, no one would be willing to retreat. No matter how dangerous it would be, Mu Chen had to press on.

After all, a master has no fear...

At this thought, Mu Chen waved his sleeve, then immediately darted out,

his troop following closely behind him. They were so dynamic, they had caught the attention of the forces quickly.

As they went in deeper, they encountered larger and more powerful troops. These obstacles had slowed down their speed, but as Mu Chen had a large troop, they were only slightly affected.

As Mu Chen and his troop moved on, there were less forces in the surroundings. However, those that were left were powerful and had large troops. In fact, one would surely be killed in such a dangerous place, unless he was truly capable.

As the troop went deeper into the Death Relics, Mu Chen suddenly became more tense. This feeling could only be described as his premonition regarding danger.

Mu Chen suddenly stopped in the dark sky. He frowned and looked in front of him. About 1,000 battered figures flew backward, blood dripping from their bodies. The spiritual energy fluctuations that they flew amid were weak and chaotic.

Mu Chen lifted up his hand to stop the troop immediately, looking wary.

"Those are the men from the Jiwu Sect..." Lord Mountain Cracker looked at the battered figures, then said softly. Mu Chen, Nine Nether, and the rest were shocked. The Jiwu Sect was a top-notch force in the North Territory. They were known to be very powerful. There was even a Grade Six Sovereign among them earlier, but he was no longer around...

"The Grade Six Sovereign has been killed." As if reading everyone's thoughts, Mu Chen looked into the distance, while speaking the words.

"How do you know?" Lord Mountain Cracker asked, shocked.

Mu Chen pointed out in front of him, where an overwhelming black fog swirled out. Then, loud footsteps were heard coming out from the black fog.

The area shook. Then, as the black fog dissipated, a large number of figures in black armor appeared. That same rotten smell pervaded the entire space immediately, while a stunning fighting spirit whizzed above

the troop like a wave.

A dark fighting spirit gathered crazily, then turned into a huge Black Demonic Wolf, lingering menacingly just above the troop. The decomposed troop possessed the Spirit of Fighting Intent!

Lord Mountain Cracker, Nine Nether, and the others immediately turned pale, screaming in terror. The Jiwu Sect had been destroyed by this horrifying troop!

Mu Chen looked shocked as well, as he shifted his gaze above the troop. There, a dark figure loomed, as the fighting spirit surged around it.

Mu Chen took a deep breath, then shouted, "Someone is leading this troop!"

Chapter 869: The Five Lords Join Forces

The black troop spread out like a tide before Mu Chen. Dark fighting spirit surged above the troop, and a Demonic Wolf cried out to the sky. The fighting spirit surged and brought about an astounding oppression.

Nine Nether, Lord Mountain Cracker, and the rest turned pale.

Even they felt threatened by the majestic fighting spirit's oppression. They now knew why the Grade Six Sovereign from Jiwu Sect had been killed by the troop.

Mu Chen looked gravely at the troop and shifted his gaze to the sky above them. The dark figure in the sea of fighting spirit said, "There is a commander in this troop. He can also condense the Spirit of Fighting Intent."

Nine Nether and the rest were stunned. The Death Relics were filled with danger. Even the decomposed troop, who had lost their minds, possessed the ability to condense the Spirit of Fighting Intent.

As they watched carefully, the dark figure that was above the troop lifted his head. He looked at the direction where Mu Chen and his troop were, and shouted in a hoarse and hollow voice.

"I am Sky Array Emperor's fifth commander. Those who barge into the Emperor's territory will be killed!"

The hollow and ancient voice shouted again without any emotion. The commander of the troop had been invaded by the evil energy, and his body was broken and immortal. He was like a zombie.

"Sky Array Emperor? Fifth commander?"

When Mu Chen and the others heard the hollow voice, they were shocked. Were these the Death Relics that had been left behind by the Sky Array Emperor? If this was the case, Sky Array Emperor would be the war troop dispatcher that they were looking for.

"He is indeed a war troop dispatcher. Even his commander is able to condense the Spirit of Fighting Intent and control such a powerful troop."

Nine Nether marveled. If the dark figure had been in any of the top forces in North Territory, he would have been at the top level. However, under the Sky Array Emperor, he was only ranked number five.

The war troop dispatcher was indeed powerful.

Mu Chen stared at the Demonic Wolf Fighting Spirit and said, "This troop is more powerful than any of us." The majestic fighting spirit that it exuded was way above that of the Nine Nether Troop. There was a huge gap between the scale of the two troops. There were more than 20,000 soldiers in the decomposed troop, and even Xiao Tian's troop was fewer in number.

Mu Chen looked at Nine Nether, Lord Mountain Cracker, and the rest and said softly, "Let's join forces and strike together."

The fighting spirit of the decomposed troop was majestic and overbearing, and could kill a Grade Six Sovereign. However, there were a total of five Grade Six Sovereigns on their side!

If Mu Chen combined the Nine Nether Troop and the Blood Hawk Troop, they were comparable to a Grade Six Sovereign. To be more accurate, there were six Grade Six Sovereigns!

Mu Chen had gained his confidence from this array. He was glad that the Nine Nether Troop had not come alone, otherwise, they would be in a difficult position. This Meteorfall Battlefield was filled with danger, and Nine Nether Palace would not be able to overcome it.

"Hahaha, Lord Mu, please command the troop and leave them to the five of us. We cannot let this big fish slip out of our hands." Lord Mountain Cracker laughed. He instantly turned into a ray of rainbow light and dashed out.

Swoosh! Swoosh!

Nine Nether, Lord Blood Hawk, and the other three lords shot out as well. Their spiritual energy burst out, and vast spiritual energy fluctuations shot up into the sky. It was so majestic that it caused a Spiritual Energy Hurricane in the area.

Boom!

When the decomposed troop saw it, they burst out with violent fighting spirit, and the stench was sickening. The Demonic Wolf Fighting Spirit opened its ferocious mouth, and a black fighting spirit beam about 1,000 feet long swept out. It targeted Lord Mountain Cracker, who was at the forefront.

"You have come at the right time!" When Lord Mountain Cracker saw it, he laughed and was not afraid. He clenched his fist and threw out a punch. Majestic spiritual energy flooded out and turned into the shadow of a mountain. The punch was as powerful as a mountain.

"Five Mountains Divine Fist!"

The space before Lord Mountain Cracker smashed as he punched out. The heavy fist ray whizzed out like lightning and collided against the fighting spirit beam.

Bang!

Violent fluctuations swept out and caused the space to surge. Lord Mountain Cracker was thrown back about 1,000 feet by the shockwaves. He landed hard on his feet and smashed the space below in order to stabilize himself.

He was shocked. He looked at the troop and said, "What a powerful fighting spirit. This is great. Even I am unable to beat it!"

When Nine Nether and the rest saw that Lord Mountain Cracker, who was the most powerful among them, had been thrown back, they turned grave and looked at one another. They struck almost at the same time.

"Nine Nether Feathers!"

"Celestial Spirit Sword Technique!"

"Blood Hawk Shattering Wings!"

"..."

Four powerful attacks from the Grade Six Sovereigns shot out and caused the space to crack. The darkness in the area had been dissipated by

the surge in the spiritual energy.

Roar!

The commander of the decomposed troop roared among the majestic fighting spirit sea. It had sensed danger from the four Grade Six Sovereigns. It waved its sleeve and fighting spirit surged. The Demonic Wolf Fighting Spirit cried out, and the black battle runes on its body glittered. A black crescent then formed in its large mouth.

There were battle runes on the crescent, and majestic fighting spirit spread out.

When Mu Chen saw it, he was taken aback. The fighting spirit that had been activated was well condensed. Even Mu Chen had not been able to display such a sharp fighting spirit attack previously.

Buzz! Buzz!

The Demonic Wolf Fighting Spirit swung its head, and the black crescent shot out. The speed was so fast that it was beyond description. It appeared in a flash and pierced through Nine Nether and the other three lords' attacks.

Bang! Bang!

The attacks from the two parties were fierce. The black crescent was extremely destructive. It destroyed the three attacks as it shot past, before disappearing into thin air after using up its fighting spirit.

Even so, the sharp attack took Nine Nether and the rest by surprise. It was so powerful that it was able to destroy their three attacks!

Boom!

Before the black crescent broke into pieces, the last attack from Nine Nether tore the void apart and hit the decomposed troop. Violent spiritual energy raged out. Up to 1,000 decomposed warriors had been destroyed and turned into ashes.

Roar!

The fifth commander roared, and fighting spirit surged more violently.

He started to attack Nine Nether and the rest crazily. Spiritual Energy Fighting Spirit whooshed out, and the area looked majestic.

Mu Chen looked at the battle from afar. He had instructed four troops to seal off the area. Although the decomposed troop was tough to handle, it was much sought after. Mu Chen had estimated that if they could purify the troop, they could at least refine a few thousand Meteorfall Alchemy pills, which was a considerable amount.

Most importantly, they might be able to get some information on the Sky Array Emperor from the fifth commander.

Dong! Dong!

As Mu Chen was dwelling on these things, the battle became more and more aggressive. The powerful spiritual energy fluctuations took him by surprise.

He was shocked that the decomposed troop was still doing its best to resist the fierce attacks from the five Grade Six Sovereigns. Every time the Demonic Wolf Fighting Spirit attacked, it would put Lord Mountain Cracker and the rest in danger. Thus, they dared not go all out and attack.

However, this situation was sustained only for a short while. Although the troop was powerful, it was not powerful enough to fight against five Grade Six Sovereigns. The outcome was not a surprise to Mu Chen. After about ten minutes, the decomposed troop lost more and more of its warriors, and the majestic fighting spirit started to become chaotic.

Under the attacks of Lord Mountain Cracker, Nine Nether, Lord Spiritual Sword, and the other two, the Demonic Wolf Fighting Spirit started to dwindle. This was because it was using up its fighting spirit at a fast pace.

Even in the face of such a dire situation, the fifth commander had no intention of retreating. Destructive force emanated from his body and became stronger.

Boom!

Three huge rays of spiritual energy shot forth from Lord Mountain Cracker, Nine Nether, and Lord Spiritual Sword. They pierced through the

Demonic Wolf Fighting Spirit, and it moaned. Its huge body speedily burst out.

When the Demonic Wolf Fighting Spirit burst, the fighting spirit of the decomposed troop crumbled as well. The violent fighting spirit was instantly at rock bottom.

Roar!

The fifth commander roared and sounded unhappy. He could not accept the outcome and refused to admit defeat. He shot out and tried to fight Lord Mountain Cracker and the rest.

After the fifth commander had lost his troop, his combat force was not even comparable to a Grade Four Sovereign's. He posed no threat to Lord Mountain Cracker or anyone else. However, his fearless spirit had commanded the respect of Lord Mountain Cracker and the rest. After all, during the great calamity, the fifth commander and those who had fought in the battle with the Extraterritorial Race had died while trying to defend the Great Thousand World.

"Leave him to me." Mu Chen sighed and dashed out. He appeared before the fifth commander and looked into his hollow eyes. Mu Chen pressed his palm quickly on his chest, and majestic spiritual energy burst out from his palm like a windstorm.

Boom!

As the violent spiritual energy entered into the fifth commander's body, he seemed to receive relief and regained his senses temporarily.

Before the fifth commander exploded, Mu Chen heard him stammering in his hoarse voice, "Thanks to the Spiritual Four Battle Array! Be careful of my emperor!"

Chapter 870: The Troops Gathered Together

"Be careful...my emperor..."

As the hoarse voice resounded throughout the heavens and the earth, the fifth commander disappeared. Mu Chen looked solemnly in the direction that he had disappeared into, then cupped his fist.

"The Spiritual Four Battle Array..."

Mu Chen looked deep into the Death Relics, where there was total darkness. The suppression that was emanating from within the Death Relics made one feel uneasy.

Lord Mountain Cracker, Nine Nether, and the rest joined him, looking baffled. One of them said softly, "The Spiritual Four Battle Array?"

"The real battle array should be in front." Mu Chen nodded.

When Lord Mountain Cracker and the rest heard of the battle array, they became wary. They knew that only a war troop dispatcher could form a battle array. Then, once the battle array had been formed, the power would be earth-shattering!

An ordinary Spiritual Array Master would tap into the power from the heavens and the the earth to form an array. However, a war troop dispatcher had countless ways of forming an array. Even the heavens and the earth were fearful of its vast fighting spirit.

Although the current force was about half the force of the Daluo Territory, if they had encountered a battle array that was formed by a war troop dispatcher, they would have been extremely wary.

However, they were fearless at the moment. They had come this far, and if they should choose to retreat now, the lords would bring disgrace upon themselves.

"Let's first refine the Meteorfall Alchemy," Mu Chen said.

When Lord Mountain Cracker, Nine Nether, and the rest heard his

instruction, they became immediately alert. They directed their attention to the majestic Meteorfall gas that had been left behind by the decomposed troop after the purification.

Those forces that had just arrived watched the majestic Meteorfall gas with envy. However, they were afraid of Mu Chen's large troop, so dared not covet after it. Other than Lord Mountain Cracker and the rest, there were still four elite troops that were watching them.

They could only watch Mu Chen and the rest refine the Meteorfall gas into Meteorfall Alchemy. The quantity produced was around 10,000 pieces. Such a harvest was comparable to the gains produced from a Grade Two Relic!

When Mu Chen and the rest had finally refined all of the Meteorfall gas, they then wrapped everything up. They had refined more than 9,000 units of Meteorfall Alchemy. After dividing everything out among them, each of them was left about 2,000 pieces, which was quite a good harvest!

"This Death Relic must be a Grade One," Lord Mountain Cracker said. One troop alone was able to refine almost 10,000 units of Meteorfall Alchemy. Given an ordinary Grade Three Relic, one would have to get more than 30 relics in order to amount to this quantity!

Although the harvest in the Grade One Relic was good, it was much more dangerous than an ordinary relic. If they had not had such a big troop, they might have ended up like the Jiwu Sect!

"Next..."

Lord Mountain Cracker and the rest looked at Mu Chen, seeking direction. According to the fifth commander, there was a powerful battle array that was deep inside the Death Relics. The emperor, who the fifth commander had referred to earlier, must be the Sky Array Emperor.

As such, he should be there! There could also be many treasures there, but it might be extremely dangerous as well.

"Let's go over and take a look. If it is too powerful, we will just leave, then hunt for some Meteorfall Alchemy." Mu Chen said.

Although he badly wanted to get some more information about the war troop dispatcher, he would not allow Lord Mountain Cracker and the rest to come to any harm because of it. When Lord Mountain Cracker and the rest heard Mu Chen's words, they nodded in agreement.

"Let's go."

Mu Chen looked out. He saw that the forces, who had watched their fight with the decomposed troop from afar, had now dispersed. Thus, they did not attempt to rob them.

Mu Chen waved his hand, turning immediately into a streamer. He then flew deep into the Death Relics, his big troop following closely behind him.

Along the way, Mu Chen and his troop constantly encountered decomposed troops, jumping out at them from the dark. The decomposed troops had slowed down their progress, so they had no choice but to fight them at this time.

As they encountered more and more obstructions, the men started to get injured. If Lord Mountain Cracker and the rest had not extended a helping hand, the situation would have been truly disastrous!

Navigating these strong obstructions as best they could, Mu Chen and his big troop moved slowly and surely, nearing the deepest part of the Death Relics. On their way, they saw some men, who had ended up in a terrible state.

These men belonged to the top-notch force in the North Territory. Among them, were many Grade Six Sovereigns, which had ultimately been defeated by the large number of decomposed troops. Although some of the top powers were quick and escaped, many of their men lost their lives.

Mu Chen and the rest turned cold, while surveying the overwhelming losses of these top-notch forces. If one was careless in such a dangerous place, he could possibly lose his entire troop!

Almost half of the elites of the Daluo Territory were in the Death Relics now. Thus, if they should meet with any mishaps, it would be a great blow

to the entire Daluo Territory.

...

Mu Chen's big troop whizzed past the dark land. Its majesty shook the sky. Mu Chen looked around cautiously at the big piece of land, while majestic spiritual energy surged around his body. He was ready to fight!

Within only a few hundred miles, they had encountered obstructions from many decomposed troops. They had even been obstructed by a troop that was as large as theirs, which had caused them to lose some of their men as well. Even Lord Spiritual Sword had been injured in the resulting fight. They had not expected that it would be so dangerous inside the Death Relics!

"This should be the deepest part of the Death Relics," Mu Chen said.

When Lord Mountain Cracker and the rest heard his words, they started to tense up. Nine Nether looked around, then said with a frown, "Why is it so quiet? We can't even see a single decomposed soldier or troop."

"No other beasts dared to enter into the tiger's territory." Mu Chen looked into the distance, suddenly squinting his eyes. He then said softly, "Be careful."

He then dashed out, spiritual energy surging all around him. Seeing this, his troop became extra careful, focusing on maintaining the battle array with great care.

The troop darted quietly across a dead black mountain. Mu Chen, who was leading the way, then suddenly stopped. He looked shocked.

Lord Mountain Cracker and the rest looked grave. Everyone took a deep breath...

"What is this..." They all shouted in unison.

Mu Chen's mouth quivered, as he stared hard at the front. There was a large stretch of dark plain, which was slightly hidden behind the mountain. It was completely filled with decomposed troops! The troop stood firmly on the ground, like withering wood, while a vast rotten

fighting spirit spread out, causing the entire area to quake.

There were tens of thousands of warriors in this troop! Roaring sounds resounded from within the battle flag. The decomposed troop spread out as far as the eye could see. In the face of such a large troop, even Lord Mountain Cracker was fearful! Those troops that he had encountered before were nothing compared to the one that was now before them.

"There are simply too many of them! Even if all of us go in, we will be completely wiped out." Lord Mountain Cracker turned pale.

There were only about 10,000 to 20,000 men in their troop. However, there were tens of thousands in the decomposed troop. And, with the true war troop dispatcher with them, even if the three kings were around, they would still be incredibly fearful of them.

Mu Chen sighed, then nodded his head. He was sharper than Lord Mountain Cracker and the others, when it came to judging the fighting spirit. As such, he was aware of the powerful fighting spirit on the plain. There was a strange fluctuation within it, which caused Mu Chen to shiver. He believed that there was a real battle array hidden within the troop! The moment they entered in, they would be completely wiped out.

Swoosh!

As Mu Chen was thinking of his next course of action, sounds of wind breaking resounded on the right side. As they turned to look, a large troop had whizzed toward them, landing just outside the plain.

"Those men are from the Divine Pavilion!" Lord Mountain Cracker, who was clearly shocked, said. "These fellas have found their way here!"

Mu Chen nodded, then looked in another direction. The Tian Xuan Troop had made it through the obstructions to find their way here as well.

Within the next 10 minutes or so, more big troops continued to arrive. They were not top forces, but they were still large in number. As one looked more carefully at them, one would have noticed that these were some forces that had gathered together to form allied forces. Mu Chen finally understood why they were able to come this far.

As more powerful people arrived, instead of looking shocked, Mu Chen appeared happy. With these people around, the previously hopeless situation could now be turned around!

As Mu Chen was having this upbeat thought, a light burst out from the direction of the Divine Pavilion. A weak and soft voice sounded out. "Can all of us gather to discuss how we can breakthrough this situation together?"

Chapter 871: Destroying the Battle Array

"Can we discuss how to deal with the current situation together?"

Everyone was stunned when they heard the gentle voice in the dark mountain range. Their eyes flickered. All the various forces who gathered here were competitors. They guarded and plotted against one another. But now, Zhantai Liuli from the Divine Pavilion wanted them to join forces?

Mu Chen had a slight change in his expression, but he remained calm. Zhantai Liuli may have looked soft and weak, but she had some resolve. Moreover, it was impossible to break the deadlock individually, even if one tried his best.

But it was up to Zhantai Liuli to convince the various forces who had an ax to grind to join together.

Whispering followed after Zhantai Liuli spoke, but no one agreed... yet. Everyone clung to their hostilities.

Zhantai Liuli did not find their cold response surprising, so she continued to speak slowly. "I guess everyone is definitely not satisfied with the little harvest you all had on this trip. As you can see, the big feast is just right in front of everyone. If this army is purified, it will be able to refine at least over a 100,000 Meteorfall Alchemy pills. We can complete our collection tasks successfully, too."

The various forces held their breath when they heard her words. Over 100,000 Meteorfall Alchemy pills was a considerable sum to any one of them. With this amount of Meteorfall Alchemy pills, they might be able to decipher the seal on the Earthly Sovereign Secret Treasure.

"Apart from the Meteorfall Alchemy, there were a lot of top powers who perished a long time ago in this army. You can also benefit from the powerful Primordial Divine Art they left behind, if you can find one.

"As for this army, they are indeed formidable. Neither one of us can deal with it alone. But they are not indestructible. According to my source, there is a tyrannical Spiritual Four Battle Array hidden in this army that

even a Grade Seven Sovereign cannot handle if he enters."

The various forces were speechless when she made the sudden remark about the Spiritual Four Battle Array. Their facial expressions changed when they heard it was unbreakable, even for a Grade Seven Sovereign.

She knows quite a lot. Mu Chen was a little surprised. She seemed to know more about this death relic than anyone else. They only learned about the Spiritual Four Battle Array a short time ago.

While everyone had their own thoughts, Zhantai Liuli spoke again. "Although the array is powerful, it is not flawless." Strange confidence was in her soft and gentle voice.

"Where does your confidence come from when a Grade Seven Sovereign can't even break through?" Some of the top powers could not help but speak their mind. They did not believe her.

"As long as everyone agrees to join forces, I will reveal the breakthrough method. I will not include anyone who is not keen on this," Zhantai Liuli said indifferently.

Everyone looked at each other, wondering if Zhantai Liuli really had ways to overcome the array.

Mu Chen and Nine Nether looked at each other with surprise. Could Zhantai Liuli really break through the array? If so, she was even more dangerous than they thought.

Mu Chen thought about it before he smiled and said, "Hehe, if Zhantai Liuli is really confident in it, we, Daluo Territory, are interested." He was very keen on the Death Relics. They had already made it this far, and they should give it a shot if Zhantai Liuli really had a solution.

Of course, Mu Chen was not naive at all. Zhantai Liuli would not be so generous. She just wanted to make use of the combined power to destroy the array.

After the breakthrough, there would be another brutal conflict ahead of them when they needed to fight for the treasure of the relic.

On the other side, Liu Yan kept quiet before he finally spoke. "If what you say is true, Xuan Tian Hall is willing to give it a try." Their mission for this trip was to obtain the method of cultivation left in the relic by the previous war troop dispatcher. But apparently, it was impossible to do it by themselves.

Therefore, Liu Yan shared the same thought as Zhantai Liuli.

Xiao Tian, who was standing beside Liu Yan, was looking at Mu Chen with his bloodshot eyes and his darkened expression. But Mu Chen did not even mind and chose to completely ignore his death stare.

The agreement to work together from the two top forces stirred some commotion as the rest of the forces, who were hesitant earlier on, were considering whether they should change their minds.

They were smart enough to understand that Zhantai Liuli was only using them. But even if they were to cut a deal with her, they would need to ensure that they could preserve their own strength, so that if they could not vie for the treasure, they could at least scrape together some Meteorfall Alchemy pills and quickly retreat.

The various forces quickly did some calculations in their heads. Finally, they came to a conclusion without any further hesitation.

"Since the Divine Pavilion has such great confidence, the Qing Yun Sect would love to be part of it."

"Same for the Vajra Sect."

"The Obelisk Sect, too."

Each of those voices represented a sect from one of the regions. Although they may not have been able to overcome a top-notch force as individuals, when they combined their strength and power, they could even cast fear into the hearts of any top-notch forces.

Mu Chen looked at those who agreed to join forces indifferently. Both Mu Chen and Nine Nether exchanged gazes and smiled faintly. With such a combined force, they were looking forward to a breakthrough in the deadlocked situation.

But Mu Chen was really curious about how the array could be overcome. As he was sensitive to the fighting spirit around him, he could sense a faint fearsome fluctuation emanating from the dark army in the plains.

With such a fluctuation, he doubted any Grade Six Sovereign could put up much of a fight.

While Mu Chen had his thoughts, a few figures flitted over from the Divine Pavilion. Zhantai Liuli was the first to land on one of the mountain peaks.

She was in her wheelchair, and she looked frail and weak in her white gown. Her red lips revealed a slight trace of persistence.

Fang Yi stood at the back like a guard, sweeping his cold-looking gaze occasionally in Mu Chen's direction.

"Can all the commanders of the troops come forward to discuss the plan to break the array?" Zhantai Liuli said with a smile while casting her gaze on all the various forces.

Mu Chen and Lord Mountain Cracker looked at each other and nodded. They flitted together and showed up at the peak along with Nine Nether. Mu Chen cupped his fist with a smile and said, "Mu Chen from Daluo Territory. Nice to meet you, Zhantai Liuli."

Zhantai Liuli looked over at Mu Chen and was surprised by his youthful and handsome appearance. The gentleness he had with him now was very different from the sharp radiance he had displayed when he fought with Xiao Tian.

"Nice to meet you too, Lord Mu." Zhantai Liuli nodded slightly.

Shoo!

Liu Yan and Xiao Tian flitted over, but the way both of them looked at Mu Chen was so cold, a fight would have broken out if it were not for the inappropriate venue.

Shoo! Shoo!

Other leaders from the various forces landed on the peak, too. Within a

short while, the summit was crowded with all the top powers, and the line-up was extravagant.

Liu Yan cupped his fist and asked, "Miss Zhantai, can you tell us now about how we can destroy the array?"

The rest gazed at Zhantai Liuli, who looked weak and soft. But she did not show any timidness, even though all the top powers were staring at her. With a gentle voice she said, "From the information I got, the current army was known as the Spiritual Four Army in ancient times. The commander of this army was called the Sky Array Emperor. He was a true war troop dispatcher.

"There were millions of soldiers when the Spiritual Four Battle Array was in its prime. Judging from their current scale, their strength was left with less than half of their original number. But even so, they are still difficult for us to manage now."

Everyone looked stern when they heard about the army with millions of soldiers. After all, the soldiers were not any disorderly troop. They were elite warriors who had been cultivating for at least a few years. Anyone below Earthly Sovereign would not be able to fight against the fighting spirit that they gathered.

"But there is no need to fear. Although they were strong, now they have all turned into rotted corpses with less than half of their previous power."

Zhantai Liuli smiled and continued, "The Spiritual Four Army is divided into the internal and external troop. The external troop has a large number of soldiers, which makes it hard to break through, while the internal troop is guarded by the Spiritual Four Battle Array. This array is so powerful that breaking it by force is not going to work. As the array is further separated into four smaller arrays, we must destroy all four of them at once. Otherwise, if only one is damaged, it will be repaired immediately by the other three.

"Most importantly, all of us cannot rush in together with our attacks, as the arrays will get stronger whenever they meet a stronger opponent. As such, we can only invade the array and destroy it with one army's strength

lead by one of the four commanders."

Zhantai Liuli looked at everyone and continued, "So we need the combined troops to deal with the external troop, and another four talents to control the fighting spirits to join hands and destroy the four internal arrays."

Chapter 872: The Grand Alliance Army

"Four fighting spirit talents?"

Mu Chen and the rest gave stunned looks and knit their brows slightly upon hearing Zhantai Liuli's words, as there were only three talented ones over here: Mu Chen, Xiao Tian, and Zhantai Liuli. If Zhantai Liuli wanted to find another one it would not be easy, as there were less than ten proclaimed talents to be found in the entire North Territory.

Zhantai Liuli saw the frowns on their faces, then said with a smile, "I know it is troublesome to find the fourth talent, so I have another solution. The fourth person can be replaced by three commanders, who are highly proficient in the fighting spirit. They can lead the troop into the array."

"This might not work." Being talents themselves, they knew very well that three commanders would not excel, because they are on completely different levels in regards to understanding and control. Moreover, if the three of them could not fight against the array together, it would be difficult for them to overcome the Spiritual Four Battle Array on their own.

"According to what you have said earlier, even if we destroy three arrays, our efforts will be futile, if the fourth one is not destroyed as well, right?" Mu Chen asked.

"Yes, but that is only if all the other arrays were in good condition," Zhantai Liuli said softly. "But, due to the years of erosion, the four arrays were no longer in perfect condition. This will at least give us some leeway. As long as we can destroy the three arrays within the shortest period of time, the fourth one will then be weakened significantly. Thus, it will be easier to destroy it."

"So, the fourth person will just need to hold out, while the three of us destroy the arrays."

Zhantai Liuli gazed at everyone, a smile on her smooth cheeks. "What does everyone think about that?"

All of them looked at one another. They had no idea about the Spiritual Four Battle Array, but since she said it was so, they had no other comments about it. If worse come to worst, they could just retreat.

Mu Chen watched the fair-looking girl. He did not say anything, and his only expression was a flicker in his eyes.

"Since no one has any comments, let's get ready to act. Please choose the strongest commander from each of your armies. These will act as the three commanders to replace the fourth talent," Zhantai Liuli said with a nod, a stern look on her face.

Everyone looked at each other without saying much, before retreating back to their individual camps to prepare for the war. Mu Chen did not leave immediately. Instead, he waited for everyone to leave, before he smiled at Zhantai Liuli and asked, "How did you know this place so well, even being familiar with the ways to destroy the array?"

Zhantai Liuli looked at Mu Chen, then laughed. "I was lucky enough to meet some of the remaining commanders, who had been commanded by the previous Sky Array Emperor, upon my arrival at this place. I am sure Lord Mu would have seen them before."

"But, my limited knowledge was not as detailed as yours. Since we have decided to work together, I hope you will not play against us." Mu Chen was not convinced by her explanation, but since she did not want to reveal the intricate details, he did not wish to probe any further. He held his fist up, then left with Nine Nether.

Fang Yi was watching Mu Chen as he left, his sharp, cold eyes intent upon his back. He then looked at Zhantai Liuli and said, "You promised to help me deal with Mu Chen."

"He is not an easy target. Moreover, the death relic is more critical, as it determines if I can become a real war troop dispatcher. So, get your priorities right. Otherwise, it will be hard to answer to the Pavilion Master." Zhantai Liuli lowered her eyes, speaking with a weak and indifferent voice.

Fang Yi frowned, but kept quiet for a moment. He then spoke coldly, "I

have already made my terms clear. You may have the time, but your sister might not be able to wait that long. The Nine-Days Soul Revival Herb is a precious thing in the Divine Pavilion. Even though you are one of us now, it is hard to earn our trust, due to past events. I can only beg for an opportunity for you."

Her slanted fringe of hair left a shadow on her fair-looking face. She paused a while, before she lifted her head to give a faint smile. "Don't worry. The Big Hunting War has just started. We still have time."

Fang Yi nodded, then left. Zhantai Liuli watched him leave. She had a calm look, but her hands were clenched tightly under her sleeves. All of her slender fingers turned pale, due to her forceful grip.

After all of the leaders from the various forces returned to their base camps, they started to prepare their troops for war. The vast and mighty line-up of the army was daunting.

Mu Chen stood at the peak, his mighty troop from the Daluo Territory spread out behind him. The vast fighting spirit that they eluded seemed like a lurking beast, stretching its massive body.

Nine Nether was watching the troop from behind Mu Chen. She frowned slightly. "Do you think that what Zhantai Liuli said was true?"

"She is definitely making use of us, but none of the people here are dumb. So what if she makes use of us? Nobody wishes to return empty-handed. All of them knew that joining forces would be the only way to gain any advantage. But, no one is able to take the lead. Since Zhantai Liuli has the capability, so be it."

"But, we should at least be careful. I have a feeling that she is hiding something from us." Mu Chen squinted his eyes, looking in the direction where Zhantai Liuli was.

Nine Nether nodded.

The mobilization of the troop took an hour to complete. A large army with strong military strength spread across the skies of the vast mountainous area. The surging of the magnificent fighting spirit also

soared through the sky. From afar, the scene looked extremely spectacular.

"Is everyone ready?" Zhantai Liuli projected her gentle voice over the loud roars in the air. She attracted much attention instantly.

All parties cupped their fists towards the mountain peak where Zhantai Liuli was standing. This was the official signal that they were ready.

"Since we are all ready, let us prepare for action! Although the external troop was not as talented and strong as the internal troop, they had an advantage in numbers. But, fortunately, they presently were operating with less than half of the fighting spirit as compared to before, when they were in their prime. As long as everyone listens to my command, I can guarantee that our losses will be minimized." Confidence could clearly be heard in her slow and steady voice.

The various forces nodded. Everything was good, assuming Zhantai Liuli could break through the troop, without incurring much damage. However, if she was discovered to have been only using them as cannon fodder, they would withdraw immediately, thus leaving her in the lurch. In this way, Zhantai Liuli would not dare to just blindly follow her, doing whatever she likes. Mu Chen and Lord of Mountain Cracker exchanged gazes, before they also nodded.

"Everyone, the Divine Pavilion will be the vanguard, while the rest of the army will stay as wings. Let's move!" Zhantai Liuli took a deep breath, while many people looked at her. Her eyes were usually calm, but passion now surged within them. She lifted up her fair hand, then slammed it down with force.

Boom!

The massive army from the Divine Pavilion roared towards the sky, emanating a magnificent fighting spirit that flowed like great, vast oceans. Instantly, the sky turned dark and violent.

Shoo! Shoo!

The enormous army whistled away amid the dark clouds. The rest of the

forces flit orderly and closely behind the great army of the Divine Pavilion.

The forces of the alliance army were overwhelming. They shook the earth and mountains wherever they moved. Although the fighting spirits were individualized among the ranks, and they were not gelling together, the amount of it was already daunting.

Mu Chen led the army of the Daluo Territory, following right behind the main troop. He was stunned secretly, as he saw the scale of the grand alliance force. He was feeling excited.

The dark clouds that were formed by the black figures of the troop flit across the sky. They rushed into the dark plains within an hour. The endless now decayed soldiers showed up in front of them with standing flags, eluding fighting spirit. Everyone felt nervous about it.

But Zhantai Liuli, who was leading the main troop, did not have any fear. The fire in her eyes was burning, and her clear voice rang out in everyone's ears.

"Charge!"

Boom!

With the Divine Pavilion as the vanguard, the entire army charged forward like a sharp knife, piercing through the defense line of the decayed army. They bashed against each other, like two colliding waves, shaking the earth.

The tyrannical fighting spirit soared towards the sky. As it did so, the entire space vibrated. The ground also cracked, as two fighting spirit collided. The first defense line of the decayed troop was torn instantly. The grand alliance army broke into their defensive line, like violent torrents. They rushed deep into the heart of their enemy, as quickly as a cheetah.

Countless decayed soldiers turned into ash, then disappeared with the wind. But, the grand alliance army still did not stop their pace. They continued to sweep in, tearing the decayed army apart with fierce looks in their eyes. The alliance went even deeper.

Mu Chen, being part of the alliance army, took a deep breath, as he saw

the collision of the fighting spirits. It was such a grand scene!

He watched the figure in white, who standing far ahead, a stern look on his face.

This woman is really something!

Chapter 873: The Capability of Zhantai Liuli

Dong!

The flag poles stood on the dark plains. The decayed fighting spirit roared in the sky. But the decayed army was badly shaken now as a similar daunting alliance army was aggressively breaking through their defense line.

The tyrannical fighting spirit from the alliance army reduced the numerous decayed soldiers to ashes scattering in the air.

The daunting alliance army was, of course, led by the Divine Pavilion.

The alliance army displayed their magnificent strength right from the start. They broke through the first line of defense, penetrating far behind the enemy's line like a raging sea.

They quickly rampaged all the way into the heart of the enemy's territory.

Mu Chen watched calmly. He did not look excited like the rest of the forces, as he knew that this easy situation would not last long.

Even though the decayed army was an external troop, it would not be easy to deal with them. The weak defense must have given them a good start.

Moreover, the alliance army may have seemed strong, but they were fighting individually. The fighting spirits had not gelled like the decayed troop had, blending their fighting spirit perfectly with each other. Although both armies had similar strengths, they had a huge gap in their power.

If the decayed army had not lost their minds, the alliance would have suffered a massive number of deaths and injuries had they circulated their fighting spirit.

But even so, it would not be easy to break through the blockade of the

entire army.

Eventually, things turned out how Mu Chen had expected. The alliance army slowed down their pace after the smooth beginning. The decayed fighting spirit, like dark clouds, surrounded and engulfed them furiously. The pressure exuded shook the earth.

At the vanguard, the Divine Pavilion army felt the intensified pressure from the vast fighting spirit. They were suppressed, and their fighting spirit could not match up to the decayed fighting spirit. They began to gradually lose their hold on the forefront.

Just when the fighting spirit of the Divine Pavilion army weakened, Zhentai Liuli gave a soft yell, "Qing Yun Sect and Vajra Sect, circulate your fighting spirit!" Her gentle voice was mixed with a stern tonality.

The Qing Yun Sect and Vajra Sect were right behind the Divine Pavilion army. The respective leaders nodded after hearing the orders. They quickly rushed out with violent fighting spirit. Together with the Divine Pavilion army, they managed to oppress the daunting fighting spirit ahead of them.

Boom Boom!

Two daunting fighting spirits confronted each other. Shockwaves filled the air. The space twisted continuously so that even a Grade Five Sovereign would have been shocked.

"Young Hall Master, I will leave the right wing to Xuan Tian Hall." Zhantai Liuli looked in the direction of Xuan Tian Hall. They were at the right of the alliance army, and enormous fighting spirit was sweeping from the right in an attempt to tear them apart.

As the alliance army had been surrounded by the decayed troop, Liu Yan dared not be careless. After all, if the alliance army was crushed, they would suffer a severe loss when they retreated.

Liu Yan immediately gave a nod to Xiao Tian. Xiao Tian then gave a hand signal to the troops behind. Their fighting spirit soared even more. The earth shook when the soaring fighting spirit gushed out like roaring tides. The violent fighting spirit exuded blocked the decayed fighting spirit

from the right.

Mu Chen was watching from the back. He raised his eyebrows slightly. Although Xiao Tian was an irritating fellow, he did have some skill. They were able to stabilize the situation at the right wing with the power from Xian Tian Hall alone.

"Lord Mu, I will leave the rear of the army in the hands of Daluo Territory." Zhantai Liuli shifted her gaze in his direction. The gentle voice passed into Mu Chen's ears.

Mu Chen held up his fist from afar and nodded. "Everyone is in the same boat now. We will do our best."

"Thank you." Zhantai Liuli nodded.

She spoke once again at a steady pace, "All troops, you are to remain at your various positions. Remember to seek help when you are losing your fort."

Her gentle voice was incredibly calm. She did not seem to panic even though they were surrounded by the decayed army. In fact, she was able to command the entire army in an orderly manner with her calmness. Her defense was flawless. Mu Chen was admiring her ability from the bottom of his heart. He could tell that she was talented in warfare even though she might look soft and weak.

He knew that if he were the commander of the army, he might not be able to command such a smooth offense and defense with divided forces from various parties.

"This woman has some skills." Nine Nether sang her praises as well. Lord Mountain Cracker and the rest all nodded in agreement. They envied her, too. She had a talent for fighting spirit, and she could lead an army. She was considered to be an extraordinary person.

Who knew? She might be able to take out the external troop as a leader of the alliance army and compete with the Spiritual Four Army in the Spiritual Four Battle Array.

While Mu Chen and the rest were singing her praises, the violent

fighting spirit broke out from the alliance army, defending the decayed fighting spirit that was coming from all directions.

As the two great armies collided, there were no fancy tricks. Every collision reduced countless decayed soldiers into ashes. But at the same time, the alliance army incurred losses as well. The number of casualties was still acceptable by the various forces. They knew if it were not for Zhantai Liuli, they would not have been able to make it this far, even if they had sacrificed the entire army.

With each collision, the formation of the decayed army collapsed. The alliance army went deeper into the darkest area of the plains.

The front line of the alliance army sustained the highest pressure among all other areas. No troops would be able to stay alive if they remained in the same position for long. But Zhantai Liuli was smart enough to rotate the troops. Dozens of soldiers rotated their positions under her command. When one's fighting spirit weakened, another stronger one replaced it. Consequently, they were able to keep charging and breaking the defense line of the Spiritual Four Army.

Zhantai Liuli took care of the other wings even though she was looking at the front. All the positions were well taken care of by her.

But most of the superior forces took the position at the vanguard most of the time. In contrast to the Divine Pavillion, Daluo Territory and Xuan Tian Hall, who were stabilizing their positions, had more losses.

In those situations, Zhantai Liuli explained to the rest of the forces who suffered more significant losses, "The three armies had to conserve energies for the upcoming battle in the Spiritual Four Array. If we consumed too much of our fighting spirit now, what would be the purpose of our trip?"

Upon hearing her, the rest of the forces could only swallow whatever words they had in their mouths, as they knew that they could only reap any benefits after the Spiritual Four Battle Array was destroyed.

And they could only rely on Zhantai Liuli, Mu Chen, and Xiao Tian to do it.

Mu Chen gave a faint smile. He looked at Zhantai Liuli from afar with thoughts in his mind. He then turned and smiled at Nine Nether and the rest. "It should not be difficult to break through the external troop soon."

They all nodded in agreement. They could feel that the weakening of the decayed fighting spirit was because they were closing in on the border.

However, they could not lower their guard even after breaking through the external troop's defense. In fact, all of them were nervous about it. They cast their gazes into the deepest part of the plain. In the darkest area, a giant beast seemed to be waiting for them. Although they could not see it, they could feel the pressure from it.

The Spiritual Four Battle Array laid in the most daunting part of the Death Relics.

No one had absolute confidence that they could destroy the array. And if the army failed to do so, they would have even more casualties.

The earth continued to shake under the collision of the fighting spirits. As countless decayed soldiers turned into ashes, numerous soldiers battled to their last breath as they spat out their last mouthfuls of blood.

Although Zhantai Liuli was good at commanding, the damage from the collision was real. The entire army could perish if they were not careful.

But when two of the superior forces were getting ready to take over the vanguard position with their circulated fighting spirit, the immense pressure that shrouded the body like a mountain suddenly completely disappeared.

Countless soldiers lifted their heads in astonishment. They realized that the endless decayed troops in front of them had disappeared. The alliance army stood in an open space, and the countless decayed soldiers at the back seemed to be in great fear as they refused to move a step more.

"We have made it!"

The various forces lifted up their spirits. Their faces were filled with surprise. After close to two hours of fighting, they had finally made it through the blockade of the external troop.

But while they were feeling excited, Zhantai Liuli, Mu Chen, and Xiao Tian had a change in their expressions. They lifted their heads and looked at the faraway land in front of them with serious looks on their faces.

They could not breathe as the more immense and daunting oppression engulfed them from the darkness as if dark clouds were over their heads.

There lies the Spiritual Four Battle Array!

Chapter 874: Spiritual Four Battle Array

The rotten smell lingered around the land of darkness. Bones were vaguely exposed, scattered along the soil. The ground was filled with hideous cracks, which signified the numerous fierce battles that broken out here in the ancient times.

The alliance army entered into an empty zone between the external troop and the internal troop, having made it through the blockade. The external troops had never been to this piece of land before.

They opted to no longer attack the alliance army at the moment, even though they have lost their minds. Thus, the alliance army was able to take a small break from the intense battle.

But, while the army regrouped, the leaders from the various forces wore stern looks, gazing forward. The darkness loomed, blocking any clear vision ahead. Everyone could sense the daunting pressure that was exuding from the darkness. Even the expression on the face of a Grade Six Sovereign could not help but change.

Everyone knew that the most dangerous spot in the entire death relic was right there in the darkness. It was the Spiritual Four Battle Array! The real battle array was still exuding its intimidating power,despite the many years that had passed!

Zhantai Liuli stared at the darkness, while standing at the forefront of the troop. Her eyes flickered. After a short while, she turned to smile in the direction of Mu Chen and Xiao Tian. "Everyone spent a great deal of effort in sending us here. So now, it's our turn to do our job."

Upon hearing her words, the leaders all turned to look at Mu Chen and Xiao Tian. Although they did not say anything, their eyes were full of excitement and expectation.

In the previous battle with the external troop, the three top forces suffered a small loss, at least when compared to the rest of the sects. But, the reason that they hadn't given it their all yet, was because they had been conserving their energies for the Spiritual Four Battle Array! Now

that they had finally made it this far, it was time to see if the three top forces would indeed be able to destroy the array, just as Zhantai Liuli had said.

Mu Chen could also sense the expectations of the others. He drew his lips together. Judging from the current atmosphere, they might turn resentful, should they fail to destroy the array. But, since the team was being led by Zhantai Liuli, they should not be coming after the Daluo Territory.

With this thought, Mu Chen took a glance at Zhantai Liuli. With a gentle smile on her pretty face, she looked calm and steady, despite the pressure being exerted by the other forces.

This startled Mu Chen a little, as he pondered in his heart many things.

Why does she look so confident?

Does she really have ways of destroying the Spiritual Four Battle Array?

Boom!

While Mu Chen was having his thoughts, a clap of thunder rumbled from deep within the darkest part of the plain. Everyone was startled. They lifted their heads, seeing that the darkness that was looming over the plain now seemed to be receding. Then, when the darkness had finally completely receded, everyone's eyes narrowed.

The receding of the darkness had revealed the endless dark army, right in front of everyone! There was no end to the vast number of soldiers now before them.

They stood there quietly in the dark plain, like javelins. All of them had an ancient aura about them, lingering around them, as if they were ethereal beings.

The new army did not have nearly so vast a number of soldiers. Hence, everyone had difficulty breathing when they saw the stone-like army.

The army spread out across the vast plains. They were divided into four regions. It seemed like they were grouped into a random formation. But,

when Lord Mountain Cracker and the rest cast their sights over, they instantly felt chills all over their bodies.

The real Spiritual Four Army was right before them! This was the only army that belonged to the Sky Array Emperor!

Weng!

The earth suddenly shook, while everyone was shocked by the dark army that had just appeared out of the blue in the distance. Everyone watched in horror. The army that was standing still, like stone statues, finally opened their eyes. These were the same eyes that had been closed for thousands of years!

Dong!

Desires to battle were flashing deep in their recently opened eyes. They were born to kill, and they would continue to fight, even unto death!

At the same moment, a tsunami-like black fighting spirit soared towards the sky above the army. The entire land shook beneath such an appalling fighting spirit.

Boom! Boom!

The fighting spirit rippled out like an ocean. The space seemed to be screaming in sorrow. The vast fighting spirit changed the expression of Mu Chen, Zhantai Liuli, Xiao Tian and the rest.

"What an intimidating fighting spirit!" The rest of the leaders exclaimed in horror. They had fear on their faces, as they knew that even a Grade Seven Sovereign would have difficulties in escaping it.

Zhantai Liuli clenched her hands tightly. She stared hard at the huge army, her face stern.

Shoo!

While they were still staring, shocked, the fighting spirit above the Spiritual Four Army transformed again. The black light expanded into four different squares of light shields, which were hundreds of thousands of feet tall! The light shields expanded in all directions, while the connecting

mysterious light runes on the light shields exuded mysterious and strange fluctuations.

Seeing this, Mu Chen narrowed his eyes. He could see a lurking troop within those four gigantic light shields. But, he could not see it clearly, due to the lingering fighting spirit.

This he knew to be the so-called "Spiritual Four Battle Array." However, Mu Chen could not detect how powerful it was, as the array was not yet activated.

"Everyone, this is the Spiritual Four Battle Array. The death relic will be broken, as long as we destroy it. The decayed soldiers will also get purified. That will be the moment that we reap our benefits." Zhantai Liuli watched everyone with her beautiful eyes, a smile on her lips.

"Miss Zhantai, are you really confident in this?" one of the leaders asked. They were a little intimidated, especially after witnessing the power of the array.

"Do we have any other choice?" Zhantai Liuli smiled. "Yes, the Spiritual Four Battle Array is indeed powerful. But, don't worry about it. They are dead soldiers, and their power has been reduced dramatically. So, we do actually have a chance to succeed."

"Well, we will need the full assistance from Lord Mu and Xiao Tian." Zhantai Liuli turned towards both of them, while she said the words.

"Heh, I would like to test out the Spiritual Four Battle Array!" Xiao Tian gave a cold sneer.

Mu Chen took a look at Zhantai Liuli, a flicker in his eyes. "What should we do?"

Zhantai Liuli looked over to the other forces. "Has everyone chosen the three commanders? The ones who will look after the fourth array?"

The rest nodded. Three people walked out from the crowd, sharp radiances emitting from their eyes. They were the strongest commanders in their respective forces. Although they were not as talented as some in controlling the fighting spirits, they were still not to be underestimated.

"The fourth array will be taken care of by these three commanders."

Zhantai Liuli nodded to the three of them. She then turned around to look at Mu Chen and the rest. "This time, there is no restriction to the scale of the army, but you can only lead the troop by yourself, as the array will increase its power if it is challenged by more powerful people. Luckily, no one is controlling them now. But, top powers with strong spiritual fluctuations cannot enter the premises without permission. Otherwise, it will only increase the formidableness of the Spiritual Four Battle Array."

Mu Chen was slightly stunned. He turned to look at Nine Nether and the clique. According to what Zhantai Liuli had said, Nine Nether and Lord Mountain Cracker, who possessed strong spiritual fluctuations, could not enter the array with him.

The clique looked at each other, pondered for a while, then nodded. "Lord Mu, you can dispatch our troop at any time. Just be careful."

Mu Chen nodded, then cupped his fist, a sign of appreciation.

"Are there any other objections?" Zhantai Liuli said smilingly.

Everyone shook their heads.

"Okay then, let's get ready to leave. I hope we can join hands to destroy the array," Zhantai Liuli smiled. "Since the battle was initiated by the Divine Pavilion, we will take on the vanguard position this time."

She turned, ready to lead the troop into the array. However, just as Zhantai Liuli was preparing to leave, a voice sounded off.

"Wait!"

Everyone was startled and looked over. Xiao Tian was staring at her, not knowing if he was smiling or not.

Zhantai Liuli frowned at Xiao Tian. With slight unhappiness in her voice, she said, "What do you mean by this?"

"Miss Zhantai Liuli has contributed so much information. It will be really too much for us to let you lead the front. So, I was thinking that it would be better if I lead the troop." Xiao Tian grinned.

Hearing this, Mu Chen's eyes flickered. Xiao Tian did not seem to trust Zhantai Liuli. Zhantai Liuli hardened her expression.

"Why? Are you unwilling to do so? Or, is there something else that we do not know?" Xiao Tian laughed.

The surrounding gazes now gathered on Zhantai Liuli. They had some doubts in their eyes, as Zhantai Liuli had been leading the battle. They could not help but suspect that Zhantai Liuli might be hiding something from them.

Under the gaze of everyone, she drew her lips together, then gave a faint smile.

"Since you have the courage to do so, you may take over the lead."

Chapter 875: The Five Armies

"Since you dare to do so, you may take over the lead," Zhantai Liuli said with an indifferent expression. Although she looked calm, everyone could feel the coldness in her words.

"In that case, let me be the first to try out the power of the Spiritual Four Battle Array for everyone."

Xiao Tian did not mind her coldness. He grinned and exchanged gazes with Liu Yan, who was at his side, before he swung his palm.

Boom!

As his palm swung, violent fighting spirit soared from the back of the alliance army. A large troop of soldiers dashed towards the sky. It was the Tian Xuan Troop, an army directly commanded by Xiao Tian.

The Tian Xuan Troop hit a scale of 15,000 soldiers, a number that even Mu Chen and Lord Mountain Cracker could not compare to, even though they had a large number of soldiers as well.

However, while everyone thought that Xiao Tian was only going to lead this Tian Xuan Troop, the latter gave a faint smile and took a cold glance at Mu Chen. He waved his palm again.

Boom!

Another fearsome fighting spirit roared once more. The rest of the forces were shocked to see that another army of about 10,000 men appeared at Tian Xuan Troop's side.

The new troop that appeared was part of the Tian Xuan Army, but it was not directly under Xiao Tian's command. It looked like he was going to lead the two troops into the Spiritual Four Battle Array.

Xiao Tian's action was undoubtedly a shock to many forces. They spoke in whispers immediately.

"Xiao Tian can actually control two troops at the same time?"

"This is his trump card. If he had revealed his hand when he was up

against Mu Chen, Mu Chen would not have had any advantage at all."

"Xiao Tian is really amazing."

"..."

Xiao Tian stared at Mu Chen with his lips curled when he heard the whisperings. This backup troop was indeed his trump card. But to use this troop, he had had to make a little sacrifice. If it were not for this reason, he could have used it against Mu Chen, then there would not have been any chance for Mu Chen to show off in front of him.

Mu Chen sensed Xiao Tian's cold gaze but he did not mind at all. He was looking down with surprise as he was not expecting this from Xiao Tian.

He could feel it. The backup troop may not have been as elite as the Tian Xuan Troop, but they were definitely not weak, either. Most importantly, Xiao Tian and the backup troop cooperated very well with each other.

That was to say, both of them had been training together for an extended period of time.

Mu Chen could not help but secretly gasp. After all, his time in Daluo Territory was too short, and therefore, his preparation was insufficient when compared to Xiao Tian, who had been in Tian Xuan Hall for many years.

But that was all. Even though Mu Chen was surprised by Xiao Tian's backup troop and the ability to control the fighting spirit of 20,000 soldiers, there was still no room for him to concede defeat.

With this thought, a sharp radiance surged in his eyes.

Xiao Tian made a move and appeared in the front of the two troops. As he looked down, he could sense the apprehension and fear in the eyes of various forces. He curled his lips even more. Without any further hesitation, he swung his palm and yelled, "Follow me!"

"Yes!"

Hundreds of thousands of voices roared together like thunder rumbling in the land. The tyrannical fighting spirit whooshed like storms.

Looking at the strong army behind Xiao Tian, Zhantai Liuli turned to Mu Chen and said, "Lord Mu, if you don't feel comfortable, you can move ahead of me, too."

Mu Chen laughed. "No, I trust Miss Zhantai, so you can go first."

Although he was wary of her, he did not think it was necessary to go ahead since Xiao Tian had already made the first move.

Zhantai Liuli saw Mu Chen smiling and nodded. She turned around and swept her gaze at the large army led by Xiao Tian. She curled her red lips into a sneering smile.

But she quickly covered up the smile, and no one saw it except Mu Chen, who had been keeping an eye on her. He was slightly shocked by it.

Zhantai Liuli raised her delicate hands. With a gentle wave and a clear voice she said, "Liuli Army, listen to my orders!"

"Yes!"

The thunderous voices resounded fiercely. Countless top powers were shocked. They quickly looked up and saw a dazzling cloud rise from the alliance army, suspending itself in the air.

But that was not a real cloud. It was made up of a huge army. They were wearing crystal-like armor made of glass. The army was emitting a strange fluctuation.

"This troop..."

Mu Chen's eyes narrowed immediately when he saw the troop, as they were made up of an astounding 30,000 soldiers.

Moreover, the soldiers were all trained together as they exuded the same fighting spirit.

Zhantai Liuli hid her army well. Mu Chen was a little shocked. When the alliance army first came in contact with the decayed troop, he observed the Divine Pavilion army. But he did not discover the Liuli troop. Obviously, Zhantai Liuli deliberately camouflaged them with the rest of the soldiers in the Divine Pavilion.

Thirty thousand soldiers almost suppressed the impressive display from Xiao Tian's army.

Xiao Tian's expression darkened. After a while, he smiled. "Miss Zhantai should be careful with 30,000 of soldiers. Don't be too hard on yourself. The violent fighting spirit might consume your own willpower."

Controlling the fighting spirit was not as easy as it sounded. The vast fighting spirit contained the spirit and the willpower of countless soldiers. Consequently, the commander must have a strong will to control it. If the willpower was not strong enough, the violent fighting spirit would destroy one's own willpower and eventually cause one to lose their mind.

This was also why large scale armies such as those under Lord Mountain Cracker had many commanders to share the load. Among them, no one dared to control all of the troops directly.

"You don't have to worry, Xiao Tian Commander," Zhantai Liuli replied indifferently. Instead, she looked at Mu Chen and said, "Lord Mu, the Spiritual Four Battle Array is a tough array. Your Nine Nether Troop could be a little lacking in number."

Zhantai Liuli was not being sarcastic. It was true that with a strength of 5,000 men in the Nine Nether Troop, it was incomparable to the Liuli Army. The Tian Xuan Troop was already thrice as much as his. Moreover, each soldier could not counter thousands of super soldiers. So if Mu Chen was relying on only the Nine Nether Troop, he would not be able to get past one array regardless of how capable he was.

Mu Chen smiled politely to Zhantai Liuli. After which, he turned to Lord Mountain Cracker, Lord Blood Hawk, and the rest.

Sensing Mu Chen's gaze, Lord Mountain Cracker said without any hesitation, "If Lord Mu has the need and is capable of handling it, our troops are under your dispatch."

"Thank you all." Mu Chen cupped his fist in appreciation. He paused for a while before he displayed a bright smile on his handsome face. "Then I shall borrow four troops!"

"Four troops?!"

The smile on Lord Mountain Cracker and everyone's faces hardened. Even the rest of the leaders nearby stared at Mu Chen as if they had seen a ghost.

Nine Nether also looked at Mu Chen with a shocked expression. She had not expected that Mu Chen would borrow four armies at the same time. In that case, he would need to control five armies including the Nine Nether troop!

These five armies had different fighting spirits, and the soldiers added up to more than 30,000! It would not be easy for Mu Chen to control all five armies!

Zhantai Liuli also showed surprise on her pretty face for a short while before regaining her usual composure. She looked at Mu Chen hard, but she did not say much.

"What an arrogant fellow!" Xiao Tian said coldly. In his view, Mu Chen deliberately tried to borrow them from other Daluo Territory's commanders so as not to lose out to him.

If this army was not controlled well, Mu Chen would lose his mind before he could go through the array.

"Lord Mu..."

Lord Mountain Cracker and the rest woke up from their shock and looked at Mu Chen with astonishment. But when they saw Mu Chen's calm face, they knew that he was not joking with them.

They looked at each other and gritted their teeth. "Since you are so confident, we will hand over our armies to you!"

At that point in time, they could only choose to believe Mu Chen's capability in controlling five different armies with five different fighting spirits.

Mu Chen did not pay attention to those gazes that were looking at him as though they were looking at a madman. He cupped his fist in front of

Lord Mountain Cracker. "Thank you."

He did not say anything further. He looked in the direction of Daluo Territory and waved his palm.

Boom!

Five armies of different scales rose into the sky. The mighty postures seemed to be even more powerful than the Tian Xuan Troop and Liuli army.

After all, it was made up of five troops.

Mu Chen made a move and appeared in front of them. He ignored all the shocked gazes and showed an open hand gesture to Xiao Tian with a smile.

"Commander Xiao Tian, please!"

Chapter 876: Xiao Tian Was Set Up

In a hidden corner of the dark plain, several massive troops were standing tall in the sky, their vast and mighty fighting spirits surging out in continuous waves that distorted the air unceasingly. These were the troops that were led by Mu Chen, Zhantai Liuli, and Xiao Tian.

After summoning their troops, the other three commanders also led out their strongest soldiers. This immediately caused a strong fighting spirit to pervade the air.

Standing at the head of the Tian Xuan Troop, Xiao Tian looked down at the crowd. His eyes swept over Mu Chen coldly. Then, the edges of his lips curved into a mocking smile, seeing the five massive troops behind Mu Chen.

He found Mu Chen's behavior to be utterly idiotic, but reasoned that the latter probably knew that it would be impossible for him to break the array with only his tiny Nine Nether Troop. Hence, that is why he seemed to be dragging the other troops along, relying on strength in numbers to improve his chances in breaking through the array of troops.

"Please don't hold us back. If we lose because of you, the Daluo Territory would have to bear the consequences of breaking the array," Xiao Tian sneered at Mu Chen.

Xiao Tian clearly had an ulterior motive in saying this. This is because, if they fail to break the array, he could blame Mu Chen, thus igniting discontent among the other forces towards the Daluo Territory.

But, Mu Chen merely gave him a glance, then replied, "The same to you, Commander Xiao Tian, do be careful not to shoot yourself in the foot."

"You two should stop arguing! Instead, you should focus on joining forces to break the array," Zhantai Liuli interrupted their hostile bickering, casting Xiao Tian an unamused look.

"Tian Xuan Troop, with me!"

Xiao Tian gave Mu Chen and Zhantai Liuli a look, but didn't say

anything. With a sweep of his sleeves, he let out a cold yell. He then pushed ahead viciously, taking the lead, with his troops following closely behind, sweeping away in an all-encompassing manner towards the Spiritual Four Battle Array that was engulfed in black light.

"Let's go!"

Zhantai Liuli watched Xiao Tian's diminishing figure. Then, with a soft yell, she flew out in her chariot, speedily followed by the brightly resplendent Liuli Army.

"I'm leaving too," Mu Chen muttered towards Nine Nether and Lord Mountain Cracker.

"Be careful."

Nine Nether paused, lightly biting her silver tooth. She then said, "If you can't break the array, forget about it and save yourself. This death relic isn't that important."

Clearly Nine Nether was also aware of the frightening power of the Spiritual Four Battle Array. Moreover, she was worried that Mu Chen might not be able to control the five troops. If Mu Chen stubbornly held his ground, there might be disastrous consequences.

Reading the concern between Nine Nether's words, Mu Chen nodded with a smile. He did not reassure her, knowing full well that breaking the array would not be an easy task.

"I will try my best," Mu Chen said softly. Then, without further hesitation, he pushed ahead viciously, with his five mighty troops behind him, moving with a whistling sound that rang out across the horizon.

Behind Mu Chen, came the coalition army, which was led by the other three commanders. They seemed much less imposing, when compared to Mu Chen and the other two ahead of them.

Under the numerous watchful eyes in heaven and earth, that vast and mighty army had also appeared in front of the Spiritual Four Battle Array. Xiao Tian looked at the pervasive black light, hesitating slightly. After a few moments, he finally set his jaw and pushed onwards.

The minute they rushed into the black light, their figures disappeared. It was as if that had been swallowed whole!

Whoosh! Whoosh!

Behind Xiao Tian, Zhantai Liuli and her Liuli Army resolutely marched forward. Behind her, Mu Chen did the same.

The screen of black light was like a bottomless black hole, swallowing the vast army that entered it, without even the slightest ripple. This sight struck a chill in the hearts of all of the spectators.

"They are in the Spiritual Four Battle Array!"

However, that spine-chilling darkness did not last long. Suddenly, a loud cry echoed from within it. Above the Spiritual Four Army, the spectators saw that a bright light was shining from within the four massive black arrays, which were separated from one another by black light. When the light faded, the four vast armies appeared inside the Spiritual Four Battle Array.

Roar!

The moment the four armies appeared inside the light array, everybody heard the soldiers of the Spiritual Four Army let out a low growl. The growl reverberated through the air, creating menacing ripples.

Buzz buzz!

The black fighting spirit rolled out like a black hurricane, surging out like giant waves. The whole world trembled under the might of this fighting spirit!

All of the forces watched the abrupt violence of the Spiritual Four Army, stunned. Half a second later, they took a deep breath, their expressions turning solemn. They knew that the Spiritual Four Battle Array was now finally operating in full force. However, they still couldn't predict whether the joint efforts of the three Geniuses of War would truly be enough to break this battle array.

While the numerous forces were looking on nervously from the outside,

Mu Chen was also assessing the foreign environment in front of him. They were currently in a dark space. The all-enveloping darkness that was enfolding them, layer by layer, was stiflingly thick.

Although the forces could see them clearly from the outside, Mu Chen and the rest of the troops naturally did not have a clear view from inside the battle array. Although his vision was obstructed, Mu Chen did not panic, as he had guessed the reason behind it.

Turning his head to look at the five troops behind him, he found that his soldiers also were not panicking, because they had focused their sights on Mu Chen. As the commander was the heart of a troop, as long as Mu Chen was alright, the soldiers would still maintain their morales and fighting spirits.

The five troops that were standing behind him, gave Mu Chen a lot of confidence. With these five troops, he could remain calm and unafraid, even when facing a master of the same level as Lord Mountain Cracker.

Let's see just how scary your Spiritual Four Battle Array is!

Mu Chen mumbled to himself, his eyes surveying the dark space surrounding them.

Boom!

Mu Chen had barely finished his thought, when the dark space shook. Mu Chen sharpened his gaze, as he noticed the black fighting spirit that was emanating fervently from the darkness.

The vast and immense fighting spirit immediately transformed into a black ocean in the dark space, surging violently. Mu Chen tensed up, immediately vigilant. Just as Mu Chen had put up his guard, a faint ancient voice resounded gradually from the darkness.

"The Spiritual Four Battle Array was created from the four spirit symbols, which were transformed by the fighting spirit. The four arrays are the Azure Dragon Array, the White Tiger Array, the Black Tortoise Array and the Vermilion Bird Array. The first of the four arrays is the Azure Dragon Array. Therefore, it is the mightiest. Thus, the first person

shall enter the Azure Dragon Array, the second shall enter the White Tiger Array, and so on. The four arrays must be activated at the same time, and the first to break the array will have passed the battle array's test. He shall then be allowed to pay his respects to my king."

The ancient voice stunned Mu Chen. He never would have thought that the Spiritual Four Battle Array assigned the battle array according to the order of entry. This meant that he, as the third to enter the battle array, should be in the Black Tortoise Array now.

Zhantai Liuli was in the White Tiger Array, which meant that Xiao Tian must have entered the strongest Azure Dragon Array. Mu Chen couldn't help but slightly twitch his lips, when he finally recalled that Zhantai Liuli had planned it all out!

She never intended to be the first to enter the battle array, because she didn't want to face the strongest Azure Dragon Array! But, if she had revealed that information beforehand, nobody else would volunteer to be the first to enter the battle array. Hence, she revealed a flaw on purpose, in order to make Mu Chen and Xiao Tian suspicious of her. That way, they would not let her take any initiative and would even object to anything that was suggested by Zhantai Liuli!

For instance, when Zhantai Liuli acted like she wanted to be the first to enter the battle array, Xiao Tian, who was more distrustful of her, immediately stopped her in her tracks, choosing to go instead! Thus, he was automatically assigned to the strongest Azure Dragon Array!

What an incredible lady. The Spiritual Four Battle Array was also not at all like how she had described it. She told us that all four arrays must be broken simultaneously, but in actual fact, the first person to break the battle array that was assigned to him would be able to escape the array and receive the Sky Array Emperor's inheritance!

Mu Chen inwardly smacked his lips, realizing that they had been played by Zhantai Liuli all along. By withholding some information, she had managed to manipulate everyone!

Recalling Zhantai Liuli's delicate appearance, Mu Chen couldn't help

but shake his head, lamenting that one really could not judge a book by its cover. He had been a little suspicious all along, but he had never once imagined that the latter had been seriously playing them all along!

However, Mu Chen was not angry in the slightest. This was because it was really Xiao Tian, who should be furious, as he was the one that had been assigned to the Azure Dragon Array! Since the Azure Dragon Array was considered to be the strongest array, it would be the hardest to defeat. Xiao Tian would be lucky if he got out alive! For him to break the array before them, would be nearly impossible.

Looking at it from a certain angle, Xiao Tian had already lost the right to the Sky Array Emperor's inheritance. Mu Chen was obviously very pleased with this. He didn't have a good opinion of Xiao Tian, so he could only laugh at his misery after being set up so harshly by Zhantai Liuli!

What an unlucky fellow.

While Mu Chen was laughing and mumbling to himself, on the other side of the dark battle array, Xiao Tian's face turned ashen. Finally, he couldn't resist tilting his head and roaring to the sky.

"Zhantai Liuli, I will remember this!"

Boom!

Following Xiao Tian's furious roar, the Spiritual Four Battle Array was activated. A rumbling noise was heard, immediately followed by a strong murderous energy, which exploded from within the battle array.

The Spiritual Four Battle Array had finally been activated!

Chapter 877: The Black Tortoise Array

Boom!

The entire dark space seemed to be shaking. Vast and mighty black fighting spirit seeped out from the darkness like a black ocean and dominated the dark space.

Mu Chen eyed the space in front of him warily. The black fighting spirit had already changed into an ocean so vast that its ends could not be seen, with huge waves and a growl roaring out endlessly from its depths. A terrifying sense of oppression emanated from this black ocean formed by the fighting spirit.

The Spiritual Four Battle Array could already be considered to be truly activated. Therefore, the space they were in would reveal its savage side very soon.

Mu Chen glanced backwards and waved slightly.

Boom!

The moment Mu Chen made the gesture, the Nine Nether Troop and the Blood Hawk Troop behind him almost simultaneously burst out their fighting spirit. Two powerful fighting spirits emerged together in the space behind Mu Chen.

After initiating the fighting spirits of the two troops, Mu Chen's gaze never again left the vast black fighting spirit ocean. The sheer size of it was at least ten times stronger than the fighting spirit ocean formed by the Nine Nether Troop and the Blood Hawk Troop...

Splash.

While Mu Chen was waiting warily, the sound of water splashing rang out from the vast black fighting spirit ocean. Mu Chen saw extremely huge waves rising from the fighting spirit ocean. Within the waves he could faintly see the outline of a massive object being unveiled.

Hiss!

A bizarre growling noise rang out abruptly from the huge waves, shaking the space. The already shocking sense of oppression became more stifling, so much so that even Mu Chen's breathing had turned sluggish.

"It's coming!"

Mu Chen tensed his body in preparation, clenching his fists tightly.

Boom!

The huge waves finally came crashing down, splattering the vast fighting spirit everywhere. Within the waves, a giant black tortoise slowly came into sight.

The giant black tortoise was enormous beyond belief. It had a savage-looking head and a python-like tail. It was making a hissing sound while flicking its tongue in its snake-like mouth. Its torso was completely decorated in black battle runes. Terrifying fighting spirit fluctuations emanated from the tortoise's huge torso that made it so fearsome, it was as if its terror could swallow the sky and the earth.

So this is the battle array spirit of the Black Tortoise Array.

Watching the enormous monster emerging from the black fighting spirit ocean, Mu Chen's heart rattled in his chest, and his expression turned somber. He could feel just how terrifying the fighting spirit fluctuations emanating from the Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit in front of him were. Facing this type of Spirit of Fighting Intent, even a peak force of Grade Six Sovereign like Lord Mountain Cracker would quail in fear.

Roar!

The Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit stood like a mountain peak with its four feet planted firmly in the fighting spirit ocean, and its huge, awe-inspiring gaze was fixed directly on Mu Chen. It released a roar which sounded like thunder and actually stirred up a storm in the area.

Boom!

Since its appearance, the Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit had shown no sign of resting. The countless battle runes on its huge torso sparkled.

While it surged with fighting spirit, black light gathered in its huge mouth. The next moment, a huge black beam of fighting spirit shot out violently piercing through the void, immediately enveloping Mu Chen and the troops behind him whole.

Clear ripples appeared in the space where the black beam of fighting spirit swept past. The Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit did not pull its punches. An attack of this caliber would overwhelm even a Grade Six Sovereign.

Mu Chen gazed somberly at the terrifying attack that came hurtling out from the void. Without risking even the slightest delay, he stomped his foot. Behind him the mighty fighting spirits above the Nine Nether Troop and Blood Hawk Troop suddenly roared to life.

Squawk!

Amid sharp cries, the Nine Netherbird Fighting Spirit and the Blood Hawk Fighting Spirit materialized in the air above the two troops almost simultaneously. With a shake of their wings, two huge fighting spirit ribbons swooped outwards as quick as lightning and started grappling with the black beam of fighting spirit.

Boom!

Upon impact, an astonishing shockwave was ferociously released. Mu Chen was pushed backwards by the force, but in the next moment, his inner spiritual energy burst out and resisted the power of the shockwave.

Behind him, the Nine Netherbird Fighting Spirit and the Blood Hawk Fighting Spirit were similarly forced backwards by the impact. Some of the soldiers in the two troops let out a faint cry, and their faces were drawn and pale, clearly affected by the impact.

Mu Chen's face twisted. He never thought that the army at his side would be completely suppressed by just the first random clash. The Black Tortoise Array Spirit was indeed incredible. It was capable of resisting the attacks of his side's two fighting spirits with its own strength while being able to achieve complete suppression.

So this is the power of the battle array?

Mu Chen pursed his lips tightly. When the fighting spirits of the two sides collided, he could clearly tell that the Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit was undoubtedly more cohesive and powerful.

Needless to say, the power of fighting spirits could be differentiated into high and low grades. And clearly, the Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit was of a higher grade than the fighting spirits of the Nine Nether Troop and the Blood Hawk Troop.

The high grade power originated from the strength of the battle array, which made the power of the fighting spirit even greater.

Had Mu Chen only relied on the fighting spirit of the Nine Nether Troop to resist, it would have caused huge losses to the Nine Nether Troop because the gap in strength between the two sides was too big.

Mu Chen looked at the Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit standing tall in the far-off black fighting spirit ocean. He gradually clenched both fists tightly. Although he had firsthand experience of how terrifying that fighting spirit was, it was not enough to make him afraid. On the contrary, fiery passion glinted within the depths of his black eyes.

Perhaps in this clash with the Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit, he could experience how a fighting spirit boosted by a battle array differed from a normal fighting spirit.

Hence, he might be able to figure out the key to becoming a war troop dispatcher.

Just as Mu Chen's gaze blazed with heat, Nine Nether, Lord Mountain Cracker, and the rest in the outside world witnessed the clash between Mu Chen and the terrifying Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit through the black screen.

Their expressions darkened when they saw that Mu Chen was almost completely suppressed at the first clash, despite commanding both the Nine Nether Troop and the Blood Hawk Troop that had materialized their fighting spirits to confront the enemy.

"The fighting spirit materialized by the battle array is not an easy opponent," Lord Mountain Cracker commented somberly. He understood well how powerful Mu Chen was with the support of the fighting spirits of the two troops. In that regard, Mu Chen was comparable to a Grade Six Sovereign, and yet now he was backed into a corner by the Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit. By this turn of events, he could tell just how powerful the Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit was.

"Will Mu Chen be okay?" Lord Spiritual Sword could not help asking. His concern for Mu Chen was genuine, but he was also equally worried for his Spiritual Sword Attendants whom he had trained for many years. If they were completely annihilated here, he would be so sad that he would have no tears left to cry.

While the cold expression on Nine Nether's pretty face had turned slightly somber, she still had the utmost confidence in Mu Chen, despite him not having the slightest advantage in the confrontation before him.

"Don't worry too much, Mu Chen would not have so rashly led all five troops into battle without a trump card," stated Nine Nether.

Lord Mountain Cracker hesitated a while but could not help asking, "Can Mu Chen really control five troops with different fighting spirits?" Exactly what kind of astonishing fighting spirit talent would be able to do that?

Hearing this, Nine Nether smiled bitterly and shook her head saying, "I have no idea, but he would definitely have his reasons for doing so."

Lord Mountain Cracker and the rest also could only smile bitterly while shaking their heads. If that was the case, they could only wait and see what cards Mu Chen would play.

"The situation within the other three battle arrays is also not looking good."

Nine Nether's pretty eyes turned towards the other three battle arrays where extremely violent confrontations were also taking place. And just like Mu Chen, none of them were able to gain the upper hand.

Zhantai Liuli was faring the best out of the four. She had clearly entered the White Tiger Array with preparation. She had brought along along 30,000 soldiers in her Liuli Army, but she only deployed 20,000 soldiers to materialize a mighty fighting spirit, which was bitterly resisting the maniacal attacks of the White Tiger Fighting Spirit...

Despite being at a disadvantage, Zhantai Liuli managed to keep her cool. It seemed everything that was happening was within her calculation.

Apart from Zhantai Liuli, Xiao Tian and the three coalition commanders were in dire straits.

Xiao Tian, who had entered the strongest array, the Azure Dragon Array, was completely suppressed pretty much the minute the battle array was activated. Between the roars of the Azure Dragon Fighting Spirit, terrifying fighting spirit ribbons shot out ferociously, encompassing the area and bombarding the Python Fighting Spirit Xiao Tian materialized from the Tian Xuan Troop to the extent that it kept on letting out mournful wails. Some of the soldiers were already spitting blood...

As for the three coalition commanders who entered the weakest Vermilion Bird Array, they had joined forces because individually they were vastly inferior to Mu Chen. However, they still incurred the most severe losses among the four arrays.

In the outside world, the powers to which the three commanders belonged, who were witnessing this scene, were so anxious that their eyes turned red. However, they could not do anything because none of them dared to rashly enter the battle array at this critical moment.

The murderous battle array was already in force, and they could do nothing but wait to see who would be the first to break one of the four arrays.

Within the Black Tortoise Array.

Boom! Boom!

The terrifying fighting spirit continued wreaking havoc. Its attacks, which were as heavy as the entire weight of Mount Tai, kept on sweeping

towards Mu Chen. Under the assault of these attacks, Mu Chen kept on retreating, and the Nine Nether Troop and the Blood Hawk Troop managed to persist only with much difficulty. The battle runes on the torsos of the two fighting spirits were starting to dim, apparently no match for the Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit.

Whoo.

Mu Chen, who was retreating in reverse, fell on the torso of the Nine Netherbird Fighting Spirit. Looking at the dimming battle runes on the its torso, uneasiness flickered across his handsome face. He immediately took a deep breath. While eyeing the three other troops behind him, he slowly raised up his palm.

All the soldiers of the three troops at the back tensed in preparation.

Seeing Mu Chen raising his palm from the outside world, the eyes of Nine Nether, Lord Mountain Cracker, and the rest narrowed all of sudden, and they even stopped breathing. This was because they knew that Mu Chen was finally going to release the fighting spirits of all five troops.

But could he really control them all?

Even Nine Nether could not help but clench her delicate fists tightly.

Under numerous shocked gazes, Mu Chen resolutely waved his palm, and his low-pitched command resonated in the ears of all the soldiers of the five troops.

"Activate the fighting spirit!"

Chapter 878: Simultaneous Emergence of the Five Fighting Spirits

"Fighting spirit, activate!"

When Mu Chen's low growl erupted, the battle cries of the five armies behind him exploded like thunder. Their vast fighting spirit swept through the sky and the earth, like a furious storm.

Boom!

The five fighting spirits of completely different elements hovered above the five armies, as if projecting countless roars from within. The spirit of violence from this scene had the whole space rippling.

The five fighting spirits suffused the air. But, they still existed independently, without blurring the lines between one another. None of them showed signs of polymerizing with one another, despite the absence of any hostility. After all, they could be considered as the same force of energy, at least up to a certain extent.

The fighting spirits were filled with the consciousnesses of tens of thousands of warriors. It was impossible to combine all of these consciousnesses without the control of a single strong and forceful consciousness.

Among the five vast and immense fighting spirits, the Nine Nether Troops and the Band of Blood Shadow had already condensed their spirit of fighting intents. These two fighting spirits had always been in control of Mu Chen.

As for the fighting spirits of the other three armies, they were only roaring and bellowing with rage, showing no signs of their spirit of fighting intent condensing whatsoever. At a moment like this, these three troops of armies basically could not contribute much, especially if their spirit of fighting intent could not be condensed!

This is why Mu Chen knew that he must condense all five of the spirit of fighting intents simultaneously. Only then would he be able to contend

against the spirit of fighting intent from the Black Tortoise Battle Array.

Hufffffff.

Mu Chen took a deep breath of the chilly cold air, his face straight and serious. He fully comprehended the challenges that were involved in condensing and controlling five spirits of fighting intent. Such a difficulty level might even surpass that of Zhantai Liuli's, when she controlled thirty thousand Liuli Troops alone!

Mu Chen tipped his toes, then abruptly took a few steps backwards. Immediately, he emerged directly above the Mountain Cracking Army. Right beneath his feet, the immense fighting spirits from the three armies gushed forth furiously, like a torrent.

Mu Chen slightly shut his eyes, sending his consciousness rushing out and instantly gushing into the spirit above the three armies.

Wham! Wham!

A deafening roar thundered towards him, as Mu Chen forced his consciousness into the spirit. This roar converged the minds of over a hundred thousand warriors!

However, Mu Chen had already experienced this kind of situation, when he had attempted to condense the spirit of fighting intent of the Mountain Cracking Army. He did not resist. Instead, he dropped all of his defenses, allowing his own consciousness to swiftly seep into the fighting spirit of the three armies.

As Mu Chen's consciousness started to penetrate it, the fighting spirit began to surge, as if it possessed an intelligence of its own. Then, the condensing started quickly, but did not succeed immediately. The spirit of fighting intent had yet to form a shape of its own, but only revealed a vague impression of its existence.

A drop of sweat glided down Mu Chen's face. Both of his fists were clenched tightly. His expression showed his struggle.

The process of condensing the spirit of fighting intent was not easy. After all, he had to focus on all five simultaneously. This wasn't something

that could be easily achieved, even for a prodigy like him.

As he focused on condensing the spirit of fighting intent from the other three armies, the fighting spirit of the Black Tortoise did not merely sit around and wait for him to succeed. Instead, it kept launching waves of attack. Under such an assault, the fighting spirit of the Nine Nether Troop and the Blood Hawk Troop kept backing down, causing the battle runes on their torsos to gradually dim.

Standing beyond the battle array, Nine Nether and Lord Mountain Cracker were anxious. They could not hide the worry on their faces.They understood that, if Mu Chen failed to condense the five battle spirits, he would not stand a chance against the fighting spirit of the Black Tortoise.

Wham Bamm!

The fighting intent whirled crazily above the three armies, while countless warriors looked on. The fighting intent seemed to have inched towards forming a shape, but at a painfully slow pace.

"Mu Chen should be able to do this! He just needs more time. Hopefully, the fighting spirits of the Nine Nether Troop and the Blood Hawk Troop can fend off the assault from the fighting spirit of the Black Tortoise long enough." Nine Nether let out a sigh of relief, as they watched the slow formation of the three spirits of fighting intent. They remained anxious, as they watched the fighting spirit of the Nine Nether Troop and Blood Hawk Troop ebb and flow.

Drip.

Droplets of sweat kept gliding off of Mu Chen's forehead. However, even at critical moments like this, Mu Chen only became more composed. He knew that, the more he fretted, the closer he would be to failure.

'"Almost there..." Mu Chen muttered softly to himself.

Wham!

Another ray of extremely violent fighting intent bombarded the shield, which had been formed by the spirits of fighting intent of the Nine Nether Troop and the Blood Hawk Troop. This caused numerous warriors in the

troop to cough up blood.

Roar!

The Black Tortoise's fighting spirit growled ferociously, its enormous eyes suddenly locking onto Mu Chen. It seemed to have sensed something.

The huge python tail of the Black Tortoise abruptly stretched open its serpent mouth. In a split moment, a dark fighting intent pierced through the void, between the defense area that was created by the spirit of fighting intent of the Nine Nether Troop and the Blood Hawk Troop, like a javelin. It was heading straight at Mu Chen! Nine Nether and Lord Mountain Cracker panicked at the sight of it.

Wham!

The black fighting intent swept by in an instant. Just as it was about to reach Mu Chen's body, the oceanic fighting intent soared angrily above the three armies. The fighting intent exploded, causing the three vast spirit of fighting intent to form almost simultaneously!

Above the vast ocean of fighting intent that was on top of the Spiritual Sword Troop, a sword-wielding giant figure slashed its gigantic sword downward, protecting Mu Chen in front of him, like a shield. As the figure did this, he also blocked the fighting intent that was coming towards him!

Bang!

The great sword bounced back, as the fighting intent dissipated. Mu Chen seized this short window of opportunity to readjust himself. He sprung into the air, hovering above the five armies.

At that moment, five vast spirits of fighting intent appeared above the ocean of fighting spirit. Strong gushes of fighting spirit permeated the space, shaking the space violently.

The appearance of the five spirits of fighting intent was obviously shocking to many. Beyond the battle array, all parties were astonished to witness the incident. Liu Yan, who was from the Tian Xuan Hall, and Fang Yi, who was from the Divine Pavillion, could barely mask the shock in their eyes. Their faces also turned deathly pale.

''I can't believe he was able to condense them all at once!''

Lord Mountain Cracker let out a long sigh of relief. He then applauded, "What a talented young man Lord Mu Chen is. Condensing and controlling the five spirits of fighting intent is hardly possible to be achieved, even for Geniuses of War!"

Lord Spiritual Sword relaxed his face, then even smiled a little. They could not help but catch themselves in awe, as they watched the momentum that was boiling among the five armies. Although they were not joining the war themselves, they could still sense that the spirit of fighting intent that was condensed by Mu Chen was far different than those that they had condensed in the past. Troops like this could only operate as a truly divine weapon, when they were being led by a Genius of War, like Mu Chen!

Just like everyone beyond the battle array felt a huge weight had been lifted from heir anxious shoulders, Mu Chen himself was also relieved. Fortunately, he had condensed the fighting spirit for the Mountain Cracking Army previously, which had contributed to his familiarity with them.

Otherwise, it could have taken even longer to condense the spirit of fighting intent. In that case, the fighting spirits of the Nine Nether Troop and the Blood Hawk troop would have collapsed completely under the constant waves of attack! Luckily, he made it in time!

Mu Chen took a look at the spirit of fighting intent that was hovering within the ocean of fighting spirit above the five armies. Aside from the spirit of fighting intent of the Spiritual Sword Troop, which wielded the Great Shadow Sword, the spirit of Mountain Cracking Troop was wielding the Great Shadow Axe with ferocity. The Hong Army's spirit was a physical shadow of a giant turtle, emitting a sense of sturdiness to its surrounding.

"The Cracking Mountain's spirit should be the strongest among all of these spirits of fighting intent."

Mu Chen felt that the spirit of fighting intent from the Mountain

Cracking Army was radiating the strongest waves of power. There were over six thousand stripes of battles runes on its body, making it seemingly more powerful than the Nine Nether Troop's spirit, which had four thousands stripes of battle runes.

Of course, this did not mean that the overall fighting quality of the Mountain Cracking Troop was better than the Nine Nether Troop. After all, they had an advantage in number, as the tens of thousands warriors in their troop was twice the manpower of the Nine Nether Troop.

"Since they weren't troops that were directly under my command, their compatibility and cooperativeness were too low." Mu Chen expressed his regret aloud.

With the five thousand warriors from the Nine Nether Troop, he was able to condense a spirit of fighting intent that had over four thousand battle runes. In contrast, with the Mountain Cracking troop, tens of thousands of warriors could only summon a spirit of battle intent that had two thousand more battle runes. Although such a result was pitiful, Mu Chen also knew that he had done all he could to fend against the spirit of fighting intent from the Black Tortoise.

Right now, I have control over thirty thousand warriors. Yet, I can vaguely feel something starting to slip out of my control. If there were any more of them, I am afraid I would collapse, and my consciousness would be flushed away by this hurricane-like fighting intent...

Mu Chen's eyes glistened a little, as a thought kept running in his head.

How do the great war troop dispatchers manage to control hundreds of thousands of warriors, or even millions of warriors, all at once? How can the mind of a person be so powerful? There must be something that I am missing. Perhaps, that is the ultimate secret of a war troop dispatcher...

Mu Chen's black pupils flashed. War troop dispatchers in this era were rather mysterious. Rarely did any information about them circulate among the general population. This was exactly why the inheritance of war troop dispatchers had become so precious in the Death Relics.

Nevertheless, if he were to make it out of here alive, he would finally be

able to learn the secrets of a war troop dispatcher! By then, he would be able to overcome his own bottleneck to become a true war troop dispatcher himself!

Mu Chen gradually tightened his fists. Then, with a gaze as hot as scorching flames, he lifted his head to glare directly at the ferocious Black Tortoise spirit of fighting intent.

Try me, if you can! But, with the five spirits of fighting intent backing me, you won't beat me today!

Chapter 879: Brutal

In this dark space, frantic fighting spirit surged furiously like ocean tides. Periodically, the impacts even left the space in turmoil. The space in this very moment had been conquered by endless fighting spirit.

Mu Chen hovered in the air, and below him were five enormous Spirits of Fighting Intent lined up next to one another. They locked their gazes forward, eyeing the Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit in the black fighting spirit ocean.

The Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit naturally had the absolute advantage in terms of sheer size when all six fighting spirits were in confrontation. It was almost twice the size of every Spirit of Fighting Intent on Mu Chen's side. However, Mu Chen had the advantage of numbers with five against one, and their combined fighting spirit contributed to enhancing their position.

At least the Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit was showing some reservation in its waves of attack at the moment. It had slowed down compared to its violent assault a moment ago. There was a brief moment of deadlock as every party held their ground without moving a single muscle.

This deadlock gave Mu Chen joy. He ordered the injured Nine Nether Troops and the Blood Hawk Troops to take a moment of rest to reassemble themselves after taking in all the impacts from the previous attacks. They would have to stabilize the disturbed surges in their veins due to colliding fighting intent in order to prepare themselves to reach peak performance. This was so they could engage in a real fight with the Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit.

With his previous experience, he was aware how much of a challenge Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit could be. Even now that he possessed control over the Spirits of Fighting Intent from the five troops, he still did not have the full confidence to take down the Black Tortoise's Spirit of Fighting Intent.

Whatever it took, he still had to give it everything he had.

As Mu Chen was pondering, the Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit did not allow the deadlock to continue. Although it was not quite intelligent, and its current form was only held together by the ruins of this battle array, it had an unmovable mission, which was to wipe out any enemy that attempted to enter this battle array.

Roar!

Looking fierce, the gigantic spirit of the Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit let out a deafening roar that shook the heavens and earth. Countless battle runes on its body glimmered with vibrant color, and its raging fighting spirit even evolved black glowing rings that spread on the surface of its body.

The Black Tortoise's Fighting Spirit had become a living beast of Black Tortoise.

Boom!

The Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit stomped the ground with its mighty foot, causing the black ocean of fighting spirit beneath it to rock with great waves. The wall of waves was up to thousand feet tall and hurtled towards Mu Chen with all its ferocity.

Roar!

The five Spirits of Fighting Intent simultaneously exploded with furious growls, and five fighting spirits of different colors swept out like blades. Combining forces with one another, they forcibly tore apart the great wave wall that had transformed from the black fighting spirit.

At the moment the great wave was torn, Mu Chen's gaze turned grave, and he commanded the spirits with his thoughts. The five Spirits of Fighting Intent lashed out on their own and closed up to trap the Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit.

Wham!

The Spirits of Fighting Intent from the Nine Nether troop and Blood Shadow flapped their wings. The wings transformed from fighting intent were like the deadliest shower of sharp blades as they overwhelmingly

rushed at the Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit.

Meanwhile, the other Spirits of Fighting Intent, such as the Cracking Mountain and Spirit Sword, were sprinting towards the front line. They relentlessly cut down the Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit with their Great Sword and Great Axe filled with majestic strength.

The five Spirits of Fighting Intent were now deploying a siege against the enemy.

Being outnumbered five-to-one, the Black Tortoise Spirit of Fighting Intent did not flinch at the confrontation. It flipped its head vigorously, and then a majestic fighting spirit surrounded its body like a shield of light.

Boom! Boom!

The five Spirits of Fighting Intent's attack fell limp on its shield, and only a circular ripple formed on the surface of the shield from its impact. The attack did not even manage to break the shield. This showed how strong its defense was.

Roar!

The Shield of Fighting Spirit blocked off all attacks coming from the five Spirits of Fighting Intent. The Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit stretched its large, fearsome mouth. The rage of the fighting intent surged within it. Its sharp fangs could actually rip the space apart.

The Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit extended its head, and its speed was even faster than a speeding dragon, fast and precise. It locked its teeth on one of the wings of the Blood Hawk Troop's Spirit of Fighting Intent. With a violent jerk, half of its wing was forcibly ripped from its body.

Mu Chen had already suffered damage on his side merely from the first contact. Warriors in the Blood Hawk Troop threw up blood as a result from the damage they took along with their Spirit of Fighting Intent. The looks of the warriors showed the state of turmoil they were in.

Mu Chen felt a chill run down his spine as he watched all this take place.

Vroom!

The Great Axe and the Great Shadow Sword suddenly descended from above, simultaneously landing on the same spot on the Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit's shield. A huge eruption of fighting spirit occurred, and it split the shield into pieces.

The fighting spirit of the Nine Nether Warrior soared. Both its wings were like the sharpest blades, tearing space apart, slitting through the protective shield in lightning speed. The blade landed on the exposed head of the Black Tortoise, exposing a deep long crack. Within the crack, black fighting spirit leaked.

Roar!

The Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit howled. Its python-like serpent tail transformed into a violent black ray, and the berserking fighting intent that it carried threatened to collapse the void.

Swoosh!

A humongous shadow of a tortoise rushed out of nowhere and blocked the front, allowing the huge serpent to strike violently upon its shell. A fearsome wave of impact spread, pushing the giant tortoise back a thousand feet.

The giant tortoise was transformed by the fighting spirit of the Hong Troop. This troop excelled in defense, thus their fighting intent was also thick and sturdy like a mountain. Although their attack did not threaten the tortoise as much, their defense, however, surpassed all other Spirits of Fighting Intent.

If it were any other Spirit of Fighting Intent that had taken on that strike from the Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit, they would have suffered great damage like the Blood Hawk's Spirit of Fighting Intent did. However, with the Hong Troop's impressive defense, these attacks were merely brushed off.

As the giant tortoise took on the incoming attack, the other four Spirits of Fighting Intent went berserk and hurled themselves towards the enemy.

Fighting spirits were swept everywhere, bombarding the Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit.

Confronted with such circumstances, the Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit did not show any hint of weakness. It returned the attacks with even fiercer might. The Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit made the space tremble. With overpowering forces, every counter move it made sent the other four Spirits of Fighting Intent scattering to dodge its strikes. The Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit might have even torn them to pieces if it were not for the defense held strongly by the Hong Troop's Spirit of Fighting Intent.

Despite that, a siege attack by the five Spirits of Fighting Intent was still extremely brutal. Under the crazy attacks, cracks gradually appeared and fighting spirit seeped out from the five Spirits of Fighting Intent.

Beyond the war array, all parties were astonished as they watched the war array Mu Chen was in.

Although every strike by the five Spirits of Fighting Intent was received by the Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit, and every counter move it made also did great damage to other Spirits of Fighting Intent, everyone could see that the five Spirits of Fighting Intent were gradually combining their forces of attack cooperatively under Mu Chen's command. Thus, as cracks on the five Spirits of Fighting Intent gradually accumulated, cracks also formed on the Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit's body.

Who would have thought these five Spirits of Fighting Intent that were not considered powerful on their own could demonstrate such fearsome power after being combined by Mu Chen.

"What an impressive feat Lord Mu has achieved...The Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit is obviously much stronger than any of these five armies. If they were to face it on their own, they'd probably be shredded into pieces before lasting more than three rounds. It is truly impressive that Lord Mu could utilize the distinctive attributes of five Spirits of Fighting Intent for their defensive and attack roles. Together they are as good as the Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit itself." Lord Mountain Cracker could not help but find himself in awe as he watched the brutal battle taking place in the war

array.

Although they were not geniuses in fighting intent, they were not weaklings, either. They knew very well how difficult it was for Mu Chen to battle against the Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit with five Spirits of Fighting Intent that were far less superior.

"The battle array Zhantai Liuli is in seems to be stabilizing itself," Nine Nether suddenly said. Her soft gaze locked onto another war array, and her face seemed surprised. Within the White Tiger war array, the White Tiger Fighting Spirit started to stabilize itself against the Liuli Troop's Spirit of Fighting Intent after going through the initial rounds of brutal attack. Gradually, it was the Liuli Troop that was showing signs of counterattack.

"Zhantai Liuli, too, is a genius."

Lord Mountain Cracker's face twisted as he realized Mu Chen was engaged in a battle with the Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit. Zhantai Liuli took a leap to suppress the White Tiger's Spirit of Fighting Intent. If she successfully found an opportunity, she could easily take down the White Tiger Fighting Spirit and be the first one to break the array.

However, there was nothing they could do to stop her. Zhantai Liuli came prepared. The 30,000 warrior troop that they brought, up to a certain extent, was much more powerful than the five armies of theirs combined. They were, after all, one entity that did not need to be seperated.

It seemed to be that probably only Zhantai Liuli stood a chance of breaking the array before Mu Chen managed to do so. As for Xiao Tian, the most he could do was to save himself from the attacks of the Azure Dragon Fighting Spirit, even if he activated his entire Xuan Tian Troop. He did not stand a chance of fighting back, let alone breaking the array.

In the White Tiger battle array.

Zhantai Liuli looked at the White Tiger Fighting Spirit as it charged forward with such ferocity. She squinted just a little and then slowly tightened her fists. "Almost there," she muttered to herself.

She lifted her hand gently and then made a forceful motion downwards.

Right behind her, a blinding ray shot up into the sky above the vast Liuli Troop, and fighting spirit soared.

Boom!

Within the Black Tortoise battle array.

A black fighting spirit transformed by the Hong Troop's fighting intent swept by and struck violently on the giant tortoise's shell. The thick shell instantly split into several pieces. Hundreds of Hong Troop warriors suffered badly from the blow.

Bang!

The Great Axe, the Great Sword, and the sharp Light Wings descended from the sky. They seized the opportunity to bombard the Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit mercilessly. All the rage of the fighting spirits bombarded the Black Tortoise's Spirit of Fighting Intent as it backed off with a roar.

However, with its ferocity, even as it was pushed back by the attack, it could still give out a mighty roar that managed to fight off the Nine Nether's Spirit of Fighting Intent. This made Nine Nether's Spirit of Fighting Intent crash heavily to the ground, and cracks were seen everywhere on its gigantic torso.

Mu Chen trembled as he hovered in the void. His face was pale, and sweat slid down his face. Controlling fighting intents did not cause physical damage, but it did take a great toll on his consciousness. Mu Chen could vaguely feel a sharp, painful sensation coming from deep inside his mind

That was a sign that he was reaching his limit in controlling the fighting spirits

This cannot be dragged out further.

Mu Chen tightened his jaws at the thought. Whoever broke out of this array first would claim the inheritance of the Sky Array Emperor. Although he knew it was impossible for Xiao Tian and the other three

generals to break through first, Zhantai Liuli posed a great threat.

If he kept on dragging this out, Zhantai Liuli may possibly break through first. By that time, there would be no point in Mu Chen breaking the array.

That was why he could not procrastinate any longer.

Right now, the Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit stood in front of him like a mountain. Even with the seamless cooperation between the five Spirits of Fighting Intent, they still could not take it down completely. The five Spirits of Fighting Intent were not sharing a body, after all. Their attacks could damage the Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit, but they were not fatal.

"If such is the case..."

Mu Chen's dark pupils glistened as he tightened his jaws.

"All or nothing it is!"

As his words faded, Mu Chen did not hesitate any longer. He lifted his palm, and his voice rang in the ears of every warrior, causing their hearts to race.

"Attention all warriors, combining the five spirits!"

Chapter 880: Condensing the Five Spirits

"All armies heed my command! Five Spirits, condense!"

Mu Chen's low growl was like thunder, ringing in the ears of every warrior on the battlefield. The natural instinct to obey was triggered by the sound of the command, and the warriors were stunned for a moment, doubt beginning to creep into their eyes.

However, the moment of indecision was gone in the blink of an eye, and the warriors clenched their teeth to suppress the urge. As warriors, their many years of training had taught them that, as long as the commander was present, they were to heed any and all commands, even if some of those commands were sometimes incomprehensible to them.

As such, the warriors of the Five Armies suppressed their hesitations extremely quickly. As their hearts and intents moved, the Five Spirits of Fighting Intent suddenly made an ear-splitting sound. Then, the ferocity of their hearts shot out, taking the form of explosive beams of light, which struck each other in the sky.

Boom!

At the moment of impact, an earth-shaking explosion reverberated throughout the heavens. Differently colored fighting spirits gushed out, then turned into a magnificent ring of light. Within the ring of light, a unique majestic fighting intent could be felt colliding with the others. Every collision jarred the space around it.

Beyond the edges of the battle array, each force looked upon the situation before them with fright. Five minutes later, they helplessly exclaimed, "Has Mu Chen lost his mind? Only a crazy person would dare try to combine five totally different fighting intents together!"

Nine Nether and Lord Mountain Cracker looked at each other, both paling. The disturbance and distress was apparent in their eyes. It was clear that the actions of Mu Chen were beyond their expectations as well.

Even though they were not exceptionally gifted with fighting intent, they

were still very skilled individuals. As they say, mastering one path opens up insight into others. It was obvious to both of them how crazy Mu Chen's actions were. He meant to force all five different fighting intents to combine!

Intending to amalgamate energy of different types was truly insane to attempt. This involved taking spiritual energy with different characteristics and forcefully mashing them together. The only result would be a spiritual energy explosion, which would likely blow the one who attempted it into smithereens!

Even though Nine Nether did not know if this fighting spirit would react the same, even getting to that stage was incredibly difficult.

"Lord Mu, you are too brave." Lord Mountain Cracker laughed bitterly. They naturally knew that, should the five fighting intents be united, the potential power would definitely be stronger than it had been when they were apart. While this was easy in theory, actually performing it would be incomparably dangerous.

A true war troop dispatcher might be capable of integrating different fighting intents, but it was evident that Mu Chen was not truly a war troop dispatcher yet. Thus, the move he was making was extremely dangerous.

However perturbed the others seemed to be on the outside, Mu Chen remained completely undisturbed. The latter had his eyes shut tightly, as a cold sweat dripped down his forehead. The veins in his forehead throbbed, and a painful expression spread across his face.

Condensing the five different fighting intents, even for Mu Chen, was extremely difficult. But, in order to quickly break the array, the only way was to fuse the five fighting intents together, then launch the strongest attack possible to thoroughly destroy the Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit. Otherwise, if they were drawn into a deadlock, it was likely that the first person to gain the advance would be Zhantai Liuli.

In his heart, Mu Chen knew clearly that Zhantai Liuli had come prepared. The Liuli Army's fighting spirit clearly outranked the five armies, which were not working together. That was why, if the battle

continued to drag on, the latter might be able to break through the array first, then steal away the inheritance of the Sky Array Emperor. This would mean that Mu Chen's group would be left with only the unwanted scraps.

This was obviously not the result that Mu Chen desired. That was why, no matter what, he had to take a gamble!

However, Mu Chen did not have absolute certainty that his plan would work, especially since every time the five fighting spirits directly interacted with each other, he could feel how strong the rejection and resistance between the spirits were. There was not much that Mu Chen could do about the resistance, so he could not try the most heavy-handed method, which was to try to introduce and use his own consciousness in order to force the coalescence of all five forces!

Unfortunately, the toll of this method on the consciousness would be extremely high. Imagine when one consciousness is to rule over countless millions of other wills, and those wills are struggling against each other, exactly how large a burden that would be on a person's own consciousness! Even if one was an extremely skilled person of Lord Mountain Cracker's caliber, it was not guaranteed that their consciousness would not be totally annihilated, thus causing immense or even fatal trauma to one's mind and spirit.

Had Mu Chen not been a Spiritual Array Master, possessing a consciousness that was stronger than the average person, and had the five fighting spirits had even a shred of resistance towards Mu Chen, this method would not even be a consideration, regardless of how confident Mu Chen might be.

Even so, the Mu Chen presently had an agonizing headache. It felt like his head was about to split apart! The veins on his forehead twitched alarmingly in a horrifying manner.

As Mu Chen's forehead vein throbbed, the fathomless ring of light in the sky lit up in beautiful colors, thundering repeatedly through the sky. Its immense beauty was a representation of the confrontation between the fighting spirits.

Boom!

While Mu Chen tried to merge the five fighting spirits, the Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit also began to notice the ring of light, emanating an undulating aura of menace. With a piercing scream, its ghastly eyes locked onto Mu Chen. Instantly, Mu Chen felt a chill come over him.

Without pausing, the Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit viciously swung its python tail. At that moment, an enormous glow tore across the void to envelop Mu Chen.

The glow emitted a terrifying aura. It was so fierce, even a typical Grade Six Sovereign wouldn't dare to face it directly. Without the protection of his fighting spirit, Mu Chen's battle prowess was only at the level of Grade Four Sovereign. To him, this level of attack would be fatal.

The Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit was incredibly crafty. It seized the very moment that Mu Chen was distracted with the fusing of the five fighting spirits to attack him.

This situation was seen from outside of the battle array, garnering several shocked exclamations from onlookers. The expressions of Nine Nether and Lord Mountain Cracker, among others, changed dramatically, while they watched the scene.

Boom!

The glow was too quick. Before anyone could react, it was already in front of Mu Chen. The menacing undulations sent barbs of pain through his body. In the space of a single heartbeat, he clenched his teeth, his hands working fast to form a seal!

Ommm!

A valiant spiritual energy rose up like a storm, bursting forth from Mu Chen's body. A great shadow emerged suddenly, protecting Mu Chen within it. Behind the head of the huge figure, a golden sun was suspended in the air.

It was The Great Solar Undying Body!

At that critical moment, Mu Chen used everything in his power to move his spiritual energy, summoning The Great Solar Undying Body.

Boom!

The glow howled past, mercilessly throwing itself upon The Great Solar Undying Body at the very moment that the brilliant light exploded. The seemingly strong Great Solar Undying Body had been shattered apart!

Mu Chen's pride, The Great Solar Undying Body, was only able to hold off the glow for a moment. The second that The Great Solar Undying Body shattered, a miserable silhouette fell backwards. Then, a part of the glow splintered. It then shot towards Mu Chen as fast as lightning, hitting him square on his chest.

Poof!

The glow burst apart on Mu Chen's torso. His face lost all of its color, and a mouthful of blood sprayed out from his lips. The clothes on his upper body were blown to dust, and a vein was exposed at his shoulder.

Mu Chen's pathetic figure was blown back quite a distance, causing his face to become as pale as paper. He looked down upon the fresh blood that was now spurting from his bloody wound, as his eyes slowly filled with horror.

At the entrance of the wound, a purple-gold dragon symbol slowly emerged. It was the golden dragon symbol, but this particular golden dragon symbol was especially dark and wilted. This was because it had withstood a trauma for Mu Chen's sake. Otherwise, Mu Chen's shoulder would not just be wounded, but would have totally been turned to dust!

With just one hit of the Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit, Mu Chen's Sovereign Celestial Body had been broken apart. In fact, the blow had almost cost him his life!

"Without fighting spirit as a backup, I am not much different from a Grade Six Sovereign," Mu Chen muttered to himself. If the Spirit of Fighting Intent had been protecting him, there was no way for the Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit to hurt him. But, the moment the Spirit of Fighting

Intent disappeared, it was almost impossible to contend, at least by only using his Grade Four Sovereign strength.

Boom!

The Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit could see that the attack had not yet eliminated Mu Chen, which caused it to roar in anger. Then, a dark fighting spirit emanated from its large ferocious mouth, focusing at one point violently.

As she was watching from afar, Nine Nether's face grew pale. Without the Five Spirits of Fighting Intent, it was impossible for Mu Chen to resist the Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit's attack!

Boom!

The Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit viciously shrieked through the dark space. Then, as that unfathomable fighting spirit beam pierced through, it headed directly towards Mu Chen!

Unable to condense his energy in such a short time, especially after the destruction of his Sovereign Celestial Body, Mu Chen, facing this level of destructive power, would surely be killed! All forces were looking at the scene, their expressions changing constantly.

Liu Yan, Fang Yi, and others had looks of surprise. While they were watching the scene, their shared happiness was apparent.

Boom Boom Boom!

The dark fighting spirit beam pierced through. However, Mu Chen stood bravely facing the terrifying attack of the Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit once again. Mu Chen was able to easily wipe away the blood at the corner of his mouth, his black gaze gushing out menacing killing intent.

"You want to kill me, using only that mongrel that lacks any spiritual intelligence?!"

A low, vicious shout came from Mu Chen, as he quickly formed a seal. As he changed the seals, countless other powerful people felt a change happening in their hearts. Their heads jerked up, seeing that, within the

void, was the brilliant fathomless ring of light.

Then, they all suddenly shrieked, as an iridescent pillar of light shot down from the sky! The imposing fighting spirit that was emanating from the pillar of light made countless powerful people pale in terror. They could feel that, imbued within the pillar, the coalescence of the five fighting spirits was raging on!

At the last moment, Mu Chen had actually managed to thoroughly combine the fighting spirits into one!

Chapter 881: Breaking through the Array!

Boom!

A huge, devastating spiritual energy fluctuation ran through the cloud as quick as lightning. In a blink of an eye, it appeared before Mu Chen, and with a ruthless swing like the scythe of a reaper, it shrouded Mu Chen.

Shadow was projected onto Mu Chen's face, but he remained calm and was not terrified by the incoming devastating attack. Instead, he crossed two of his fingers and made a oblique stroke downwards.

A whisper seemed to come from his mouth at that moment.

"Down!"

Rip!

There was an ear-piercing ripping sound in the sky. Mu Chen raised his head slightly, and a beautiful light beam with eye-catching luster projected into his eyes. That simple light beam came from the circular light high in the sky and unexpectedly consisted of five different fighting spirits!

That was the embodiment of the combination of the five fighting spirits.

Mu Chen actually managed to successfully merge the five fighting spirits together with his strong perseverance!

Although there was imperfection, the merged fighting spirit was still far stronger than the five fighting spirits individually.

Boom!

Under countless shocked gazes, the beautiful light beam swooped down. The beautiful light beam bombarded the black fighting spirit the instant before it struck Mu Chen.

At that moment of impact, glaring lights suddenly engulfed the sky, and an attack wave visibly spread out...

Puh!

The wave nonetheless struck Mu Chen. Blood instantly burst out from

his mouth, and he flew back in a sorry state. However, the corner of his mouth actually twisted up as if he were relieved of heavy burden, and he gestured slightly with his fingers.

Boom!

The gorgeous light beam directly destroyed the enormous black spiritual light. The sky was painted with a glorious trail that looked like the trace of a comet in the sky. Eventually, it appeared on top of the Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit. There was a moment of stagnation, and then in the next moment, it brought down a devastating attack wave in a clean sweep!

...

At the same time, the Black Tortoise Battle Array was having a huge change in the tide of battle. Zhantai Liuli kept on defending in the White Tiger Battle Array, and then her beautiful eyes were suddenly stunned for a moment.

This was because she discovered that the sharp attack pattern of the White Tiger Fighting Spirit looked like it was slowing down slightly and seemed to be starting to weaken.

"Finally feeling tired, eh? Although the four battle arrays have not disappeared, their regenerated power is not perfect. I knew that its fighting power could not recover to its prime!"

Zhantai Liuli smiled gently, but her beautiful face suddenly became serious. In an instant, her delicate hand transformed, and unexpectedly she made an extremely strange hand seal. The hand seal seemed to contain many mysteries.

"Liuli Battle Seal!"

As Zhantai Liuli's shout faded, there was a huge, crystal-clear shadow behind her. The huge shadow also made the same strange hand seal Zhantai Liuli did with a single hand.

Vroom!

Violent fighting spirit madly gathered at the Liuli Fighting Spirit's hand

seal. Blinding light burst out, and eventually, a 10,000-foot-long light seal appeared under the Liuli Fighting Spirit's huge palm.

The light seal was extremely peculiar. There was a pattern of lines inscribed on its surface, and the line pattern was not unfamiliar. It was precisely the battle pattern made up by fighting spirit!

This light seal was actually made up of the cohesion of the fighting spirit!

What Zhantai Liuli did shocked countless strong people. This was because it was the first time they had witnessed someone who could refine fighting spirit to such an extent!

This method was clearly more exquisite than Mu Chen and Xiao Tian's, who controlled fighting spirit roughly. Zhantai Liuli actually knew some of the true method of using the fighting spirit!

Boom!

However, Zhantai Liuli did not realize the shock caused by her actions. Instead, with her beautiful eyes focused on the White Tiger Fighting Spirit, she swung down her hand.

The Liuli Fighting Spirit's huge hand also swung down at the same time. The Liuliu light seal pierced through the void in a swoosh, and then appeared on top of the White Tiger Spirit in the blink of an eye before relentlessly slamming down!

Boom!

Before the palm slammed down, the space around the White Tiger Fighting Spirit was already in a crumbling state. The White Tiger Fighting Spirit's fur on its whole body stood up, and it roared madly. There were actually some signs of fear in its roars.

Bang!

But no matter how it roared, the strange light seal was coming down in repression, and finally slammed on top of its huge body.

Boom boom!

At that moment, the darkness was rocking violently.

...

Outside of the battle array, all forces stared in shock at the major turn of events in the battles in the White Tiger Battle Array and the Black Tortoise Battle Array. The White Tiger Fighting Spirit and Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit, who had had the upper hand, were now unexpectedly in a dire situation.

"Zhantai Liuli and Mu Chen are very powerful... they actually can force such strong fighting spirits into this situation!"

"Zhantai Liuli seems to be more skillful than Mu Chen. In terms of initiating fighting spirit, she was better than him. "

"But what Mu Chen did is impressive. He actually can forcibly combine five different fighting spirits together, which Zhantai Liuli might not be able to do."

"This is interesting, but it is an unknown which one of them will be the first to break through the array."

"It seems like this is their last resort, breaking the array will be hopeless if they fail."

"..."

Every kind of murmur spread out around the outside of the battle array. People from all forces had their impressions shaken. Apparently, they were shocked by Mu Chen and Zhantai Liuli's performances.

Both Nine Nether and Lord Mountain Cracker let out a sigh as if they had been relieved of a heavy burden, and then they smiled bitterly at each other. Mu Chen had so many ups and downs in his battle, that if he had been replaced with any normal person, they might suffer from a heart attack due to the anxiety of just watching this battle.

Liu Yan was looking at the battle array gravely. He felt very angry about Mu Chen's comeback, especially when he saw Mu Chen and Zhantai Liuli both showed signs of breaking through the array. On the other hand, Xiao

Tian was devastated. He was still being oppressed in a sorry state while his men kept on dying. Thinking of this, Liu Yan's veins could not help but throb with anger.

But no matter how angry he was, he could not alter the outcome of the battle array. The only thing that he could do was curse Mu Chen's comeback, hoping that he could not defeat the Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit.

...

Under countless gazes, the bright light within the Black Tortoise array gradually dimmed. The violent fighting spirit that could tear the sky and earth apart was also starting to wear off slowly, like an ebbing tide.

All gazes instantly turned towards it.

The light faded away. The Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit remained standing on the fighting spirit ocean. It did not move its enormous body at all and was like a rock.

When Nine Nether and the others saw the surviving Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit, they were somber, but they did not feel hopeless. Instead, they were shocked. This was because there were huge cracks starting to spread on the body of the spirit of the Black Tortoise. Majestic fighting spirit was seeping out of those cracks.

Crack!

The cracks were spreading at an astounding speed. Within ten seconds, they actually spread over the entire enormous body of the Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit.

Boom!

When the cracks could spread no more, the Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit finally let out a miserable moan before its huge body suddenly exploded in front of numerous shocked gazes.

The fighting spirit ocean under the Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit also disappeared completely as it exploded.

The dark surroundings became quiet again, and it was as if nothing had ever happened.

Puh.

When the Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit was gone, Mu Chen's face quickly became pale, and blood burst out from his mouth. He could no longer stand on his own feet as the spiritual power in his body wilted.

The circular light in the sky also disappeared. The armies from the five troops had exhausted expressions, and the fighting spirit surrounding them was not even at half of its full power. Although the Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit was successfully defeated, the five troops had paid a high price to achieve that success.

Mu Chen wiped the blood from around his mouth. Thanks to the valiance of his Dragon and Phoenix body that was comparable to that of Divine Beasts, his injuries had healed rapidly. He lifted his head and looked towards the place where the Black Tortoise Fighting Spirit exploded. He saw that the dark space there suddenly twisted and gradually formed a black space gate. There was only darkness within the gate, which made people afraid.

However, when Mu Chen saw the black gate, a blinding light burst out from his eyes. He only hesitated for a moment before suddenly clenching his teeth and transforming into a light that directly flew towards the black gate.

Even though he had no idea what was behind the gate, his goal of obtaining the inheritance of the Sky Array Emperor had motivated him to get to this stage. Therefore, he naturally would not give up this rare opportunity.

However, Mu Chen did have a backup plan, as he had not ordered his warriors to follow him. He had secretly instructed them to inform the other lords outside to forcibly break through the battle array if something went wrong.

From Mu Chen's understanding, although they could not see the outside world, Nine Nether and the others should still be able to observe the

things happening inside the battle array.

The moment Mu Chen rushed towards the black gate, an exclamation rang outside the battle array.

"Mu Chen actually successfully broke through the array. That gate must be a passage to the deepest part of the Death Ruins!"

"This should be where the inheritance of Sky Array Emperor lies, so Mu Chen is going to be the one taking it?"

"The black gate also appeared in the White Tiger Batter Array! Both Zhantai Liuli and Mu Chen managed to break the array simultaneously!

"..."

As the people exclaimed, the White Tiger Fighting Spirit also shattered at the same time, similarly leaving a black gate in its place.

The moment the dark gate appeared, Zhantai Liuli rushed towards it almost without hesitation. Hence, both she and Mu Chen actually ran into the dark gate at the same moment!

They both disappeared from the two battle arrays simultaneously!

Chapter 882: A Fragile Collaboration

The moment that Mu Chen's body rushed into the massive dark gate, he could clearly feel the darkness fading away like a tide. On the other side of the gate, it was an entirely different world.

It was a world that was filled with dark red. The earth and the skies were dyed a tint of mahogany. The ground was punctured with countless holes and covered in menacing scars. It was clear that an extremely fierce battle had taken place here.

The very moment that Mu Chen entered the crimson world, his body immediately tensed. A purplish golden light shone on his shoulders, and his wounds quickly healed. Owing to his body being as strong as a divine beast, the degree of these injuries was obviously of no real threat to Mu Chen.

An immense amount of spiritual energy gathered around Mu Chen. He looked around cautiously. Then, just when he wanted to take a step forward, his face turned grave. He had noticed something shimmering in the space on his right. Immediately, a slender figure emerged from the distorted space.

The two faced each other. As their eyes locked, they were both startled for a moment. With shocked expressions on their faces, they both retreated a few steps.

"Mu Chen?!" The charming figure shouted in surprise, her elegant face painted with shock. It was apparent that seeing Mu Chen here had struck her like lightning.

"Oh, hello there, Miss Zhantai." Overcoming his initial surprise, Mu Chen quickly calmed down. He looked at Zhantai Liuli with a half-hearted smile.

When she saw the smile on Mu Chen's face, she forced a smile as well. Her eyes were shimmering, hiding the disbelief in her heart.

She clearly had not expected Mu Chen to emerge from the Spiritual Four

Battle Array at the same time she did, arriving here after passing the test.

How could this Mu Chen could triumph over the Black Tortoise Battle Spirit, especially with only five rag-tag armies?

Thinking of this, Zhantai Liuli could not help but clench her fists and bite her lip.

"Oh, it seems like Miss Zhantai is surprised that I am here?" Looking at Zhantai Liuli, Mu Chen spoke with a faint smile.

Crossing his arms, he looked at Zhantai Liuli teasingly. Previously, Zhantai Liuli had obviously tricked everyone. If it weren't for Mu Chen's desperate attempt in forcibly amalgamating the powers of the five fighting spirits, he could not have possibly broken out from the array. If Zhantai Liuli was able to snatch the advantage, they would've given it to her for free!

"Lord Mu Chen is truly capable, as breaking through the Black Tortoise Battle Array is nothing short of a miracle!" Zhantai Liuli stepped two steps back, speaking with a forced smile.

Now, her Liuli Army had yet to arrive, and she had only recently attained the level of Grade Four Sovereign. To Mu Chen, who had defeated Fang Yi by his own strength, her power obviously did not pose any real threat.

Without her army, Zhantai Liuli did not have the means to oppose Mu Chen. She was not like Mu Chen, who not only had an astonishing talent in controlling fighting spirits, but who also possessed keen skills for spiritual energy cultivation.

"Miss Zhantai really does know how to take advantage of others," Mu Chen said with a faint smile.

Hearing this, Zhantai Liuli could only laugh bitterly. Finally, she stopped beating around the bush. "The Great Hunt is supposed to be full of deceit and competition. Moreover, we, the Divine Pavilion, are an enemy of the Daluo Territory!"

Zhantai Liuli's frankness surprised Mu Chen slightly. He squinted his eyes."So that means that you have no qualms about what I am going to do

to you?"

"We are enemies. Even if you kill me here, there is nothing strange in that," Zhantai Liuli said calmly.

"Oh, really?" Mu Chen's eyes focused into a cold gaze, an indistinct killing intent surging within them. Zhantai Liuli could be considered as a dangerous threat, at least once she regained control of the Liuli Army. In that case, Mu Chen, even with the strength of the five armies, would have great difficulty in dealing with her.

Zhantai Liuli's eyes dropped slightly. She spoke with a calm tone. "But, instead of your killing me, the inheritance of the Sky Array Emperor should be the thing that you want the most. I am more familiar with the situation here. Thus, if you are willing to team up with me, your chances of obtaining the inheritance may be higher."

"Cooperation? Now you want me to trust you? Moreover, if I kill you, wouldn't there be no one else for me to have to compete with for the inheritance?" Mu Chen jeered.

"Strange traps and occurrences abound within the Death Relics. Lord Mu Chen, as cautious as you are, you must not have thought it would be easy to obtain the inheritance of the Sky Array Emperor! Although we have broken through the array, who can say for sure that the real threat does not begin now?"

Zhantai Liuli smiled faintly, the confidence seeming to have returned to her eyes. She raised her elegant face, looked at Mu Chen, then said, "From what I know, Lord Mu Chen is a decisive person. If you really wanted to kill me, you would've done it long ago, instead of just blabbering on."

Mu Chen squinted his eyes, then stared at Zhantai Liuli faintly. He was struck with awe, as Zhantai Liuli's cool demeanor and sharp wit were totally out of his expectations. He was surprised because she was right about this strange land, which also caused him to become more cautious and uneasy.

Although he had broken through the battle array, he could still feel, for reasons unknown, that it wasn't the most dangerous thing within the

Death Relics. Zhantai Liuli was more familiar with the area, and she also possessed significant strength. As such, seeing that she could be of help, he did not seek to destroy her immediately, when he first saw her.

"If you want to collaborate, give me something to assure me that I can trust you." The coldness in Mu Chen's eyes gradually diminished, but he his eyes were still locked onto Zhantai Liuli's.

Zhantai Liuli bit her lip. Then, after a short hesitation, she said, "Your intuition is right. Merely overcoming the battle arrays will not grant us an easy path to the inheritance. From the info I have obtained, this may be the most dangerous place within the Death Relics."

Mu Chen's face turned grave. He frowned, then asked in a low voice, "What do you mean?"

"Not only was the Spiritual Four Army invaded by evil energy, but so was the Sky Array Emperor in the great war. So, the most dangerous one here would be the Sky Array Emperor!."

Zhantai Liuli's expression turned solemn, then she said, "Due to the evil energy within him, his body is still preserved. If I am right, he should be in the depths, waiting for our arrival."

"Do you mean that, after breaking through the battle array, we have entered a land of death?" Mu Chen let out a sneer.

If what Zhantai Liuli had said was true, the Sky Array Emperor had been invaded by evil energy and lost his sanity. Thus, he was not someone to be easily dealt with. Yet, Zhantai Liuli, knowing this, still chose to enter!

Had she lost her mind?!

"I chose to enter because there is an opportunity that I can take advantage of." Zhantai Liuli understood Mu Chen's suspicions, so she explained her reasonings calmly, "When the Sky Array Emperor was invaded by evil energy, he prepared a battle array to suppress himself and the evil spirit in him within the depths of the Death Relics. In this way, he prevented the evil spirit from wreaking havoc with his body. If we can reach the depths and activate that battle array, we could suppress the evil

spirit. Then, when the Sky Array Emperor regains his remaining sanity, we could obtain his inheritance from his hands!"

Having listened to her words, Mu Chen could feel that Zhantai Liuli did not seem to be lying. In fact, he sensed that there was a degree of truth to her words.

Of course, Mu Chen naturally could still not completely trust her. After several encounters, Mu Chen already understood the fox-like cunning nature of Zhantai Liuli.

"How do we activate the battle array?" Mu Chen's eyes shone, directly asking her the most crucial question.

"I chanced upon an ancient scroll that was left behind by the Sky Array Emperor. The method of activation is recorded in the scroll. As such, I am the only one who can activate it." Zhantai Liuli spoke without a sliver of hesitation.

"You mean that I have no choice but to get your help, if I want to obtain the inheritance?" Mu Chen asked with a laugh.

"That is a fact."

Zhantai Liuli nodded, ignoring the mocking tone in Mu Chen's laughter. She then said, "Don't even think of asking me for the method. I will not hand it over, even if you kill me. The only win-win situation that is possible here, is if you choose to work together with me."

Mu Chen squinted his eyes to focus on Zhantai Liuli. She returned the stare, not backing down a single inch. After locking eyes for awhile, Mu Chen retracted his gaze, then fell silent for a moment.

Then he nodded, saying, "Let's do it as you suggested. But, let me say this, if I notice anything strange about you, I will immediately take your life! Do not think you are my match! With your limited capabilities, and your being without the Liuli Army, killing you is as easy as flipping my palm!"

At the end of his speech, a fierce killing intent could be heard in Mu Chen's voice. Zhantai Liuli felt the killing intent, but remained calm and unfrightened, only smiling elegantly. She then extended her small and fair

hand, saying, "I hope that we can cooperate cordially."

Mu Chen smiled faintly, then shook her hand. At that moment, a collaboration was formed between them. But, to what extent their trusts reached in this collaboration, only the two of them know...

Chapter 883: Sky Array Emperor

Silence permeated between the dark red sky and earth, and not a trace of life could be sensed. It was as if the land were dead, and the deathly silence seemed as if it had begun eons ago and continued to this day.

Whoosh!

Suddenly, there was a gust of wind rushing across the deathly silent world, and there were two streams of light in the distant sky. At last, they flew across the sky in the blink of an eye.

With the emergence of those two streams of light, the dead silence between the heavens and the earth was finally broken, and fluctuations emerged in the depressing atmosphere.

These two streams of light, naturally, were Mu Chen and Zhantai Liuli, who had intruded into the place. The two had decided to form a temporary alliance.

After all, in this strange land, both of them were on guard and fearful. If they could work together, they were more likely to succeed.

However, there was not much conversation as they rushed in. Mu Chen did not take the initiative to chat, but instead remained behind Zhantai Liuli, allowing her to lead the way. Apparently, even though the two had chosen to cooperate, he was still cautious and did not trust Zhantai Liuli wholeheartedly.

The two of them hurried along in silence for about ten minutes or so. As Zhantai Liuli gradually slowed down, her beautiful face became more and more solemn.

Feeling her slow down, Mu Chen's eyes looked far into the distance, and then his expression was slightly shocked. In the distance, the originally dark red world was gradually darkening even more. The dark area looked as if it were a bottomless prison.

In the black hole-like space, a stone pedestal could be seen. On that stone pedestal, there seemed to be a vague figure. A strong sense of

oppressive aura emanated from that figure and gradually filled the whole space.

Mu Chen and Zhantai Liuli stopped at the same time, not going in, but instead gazing into the dark area and at the vague figure on the stone pedestal.

"I have been waiting for thousands of years, and finally, the next generation has come...."

A hoarse and ancient voice came from the dark area. The darkness there was fluctuating slightly, and the blurry figure above the stone pedestal also raised his head slowly.

It was a sallow and weathered face, the traces of time apparent on his features. His eyes were hollow but they seemed to shine when he saw Mu Chen and Zhantai Liuli.

"I am the Sky Array Emperor. Both of you could break through the Spiritual Four Battle Array I have left behind, so you must have potential for controlling fighting intent. My willpower is dissipating soon, but my inheritance will be left to those who are destined for it..." the blurry figure said in a hoarse voice. His strength seemed to be fading, and then he waved weakly and said, "Come forward, the both of you..."

When they heard this, Mu Chen's and Zhantai Liuli's gazes flickered, but surprisingly, neither of them moved. They just stared at the Sky Array Emperor.

Seeing how the two remained unmoving and did not show any overwhelming joy in receiving the inheritance, his stiff face seemed to pause, but he did not say anything more. He leaned slowly against the stone pedestal, and his body grew weaker and weaker, as if his thoughts were about to fade away.

However, Mu Chen and Zhantai Liuli stayed rooted to their spots.

The figure was silent, and the world became silent again, a strange stiff atmosphere enveloped the area...

The dead silence dragged on for ten minutes... Twenty minutes...

Zhantai Liuli narrowed her eyes and frowned. She looked at Mu Chen, but the latter gently shook his head imperceptibly, so she could only endure the anxiety in her heart.

As time began to pass again, the figure on the stone pedestal, which had his eyes closed feebly, opened his hollow eyes violently. The evil light in his eyes instantaneously burst out, and an unsettling malice twisted his features as he glared at the two viciously. His sharp voice was full of fury, "You two little brats are patient indeed!"

Hearing his voice, Mu Chen and Zhantai Liuli heaved a sigh of relief. The former smiled and said, "You were really boring, even playing this kind of trick."

"Pchh."

Upon hearing this, Zhantai Liuli couldn't help but to giggle softly. Her beautiful eyes glanced across at Mu Chen. The evil spirit who was capable enough to invade the Sky Array Emperor's body was akin to a mere child who was throwing tantrums, in Mu Chen's estimation.

The "Sky Array Emperor" glared at Mu Chen maliciously. His stiff, skull-like face twitched as he said chillingly, "Even ants are superior to a Fourth Grade Sovereign brat like you. How dare you act so presumptuously in front of me!"

Mu Chen remained calm and said, "If you had the ability to do so, you'd have gotten rid of me already, so why would you still waste time spouting nonsense with me?"

The "Sky Array Emperor" glared eerily at Mu Chen and then he sneered. "There's a cautious fellow here, but if you want to delay it, feel free to waste time. I've survived for thousands of years, why would I still care about time? If you want to obtain that guy's inheritance, I'm afraid you are delusional. You'll have to get rid of me first."

Mu Chen paid no attention to him, but looked at Zhantai Liuli and asked, "Where are the battle arrays left by the Sky Array Emperor that you mentioned?"

The "Sky Array Emperor" was apparently taken over by evil spirits, and although Mu Chen was not sure how much power he had left behind, he would never easily enter the dark area.

Thus, the only way to get rid of this fellow was to rely on the battle array left behind by the Sky Array Emperor.

Zhantai Liuli surveyed the environment but a moment later, she knitted her brows in a frown because she could not find even half a trace of a battle array.

"Was the battle array destroyed by him?" Zhantai Liuli frowned, but quickly dismissed the idea. If the battle array had been destroyed, the evil spirit would not have used such deception at all but would have directly obliterated them.

Zhantai Liuli's gaze flickered. A moment later, she suddenly looked at the dark area. With a wave of her hand, immediately spiritual energy conjured a gust of wind that swept across, only to see that beneath the dark area, a black gas was blown away...

With the black gas dispersing, the scene below was also clearly revealed to Mu Chen and Zhantai Liuli. Immediately, the two's gazes were focused.

Beneath the dark area, there was an army of about 10,000 troops. However, the army seemed to have been transformed into statues. Their motionless bodies were covered with black patches but they emanated a murderous aura. Even after thousands of years, it still existed.

"What a strong army!" Zhantai Liuli praised gently.

"They are not stone statues." He noticed that although the army had a stone-like appearance, their expressions were not devoid of emotion.

"This army was probably the most powerful guard army under the Sky Array Emperor's command. After he was invaded by evil spirits, this guard army petrified themselves and transformed into stone statues, forming a battle array, trying to kill the evil spirits in the body."

Zhantai Liuli sighed. "We are lucky that this guard army was not in the previous battle of the Spiritual Four Battle Array, otherwise, even if the

battle array had been weakened over the years, it would not be something we could break through."

Mu Chen nodded and looked carefully at the "Stone Army." His gaze suddenly flickered as he saw that there seemed to be tens of thousands of gray light rays shining from the crowns of the Stone Army. The gray light rays passed through the dark area and seemed to converge under the stone pedestal where the "Sky Array Emperor" was.

It seemed that it was because of the gray light that the "Sky Array Emperor" could not leave the dark area.

In that dark area, the "Sky Array Emperor" saw that Zhantai Liuli had discovered the hidden Stone Army. His stiff face twisted, and his evil-spirited eyes began to turn vicious.

"Just you two brats can also activate the battle array that guy left behind?!" The "Sky Array Emperor" sneered, his voice full of sarcasm. With Mu Chen and Zhantai Liuli's strength, if he were in his heyday, he would have obliterated them with one breath, thus he belittled them completely.

"Miss Zhantai, I'm afraid I'll have to depend on you from now on." Mu Chen looked at Zhantai Liuli and smiled.

Zhantai Liuli nodded gently, clenching her fists. A flash of light emerged, and a rough stone seal appeared in her hand. The stone seal was only palm sized, but its surface had strange patterns. Mu Chen was familiar with these patterns, as they were battle symbols...

Mu Chen also found that when Zhantai Liuli took out this stone seal, the dark area beneath the Stone Army seemed to have emitted a sound of vibration.

"Lord Mu, this stone seal can activate this Stone Army, but to activate this stone seal would require a considerable amount of spiritual energy, which I may not be able to do alone, so I hope Lord Mu can help in this, too." Zhantai Liuli smiled.

Mu Chen took a deep look at Zhantai Liuli. The woman was also cautious as she was apparently worried that she would not be able to

compete with him after she had expended her spiritual energy, which was why she planned for them to do this together.

However, Mu Chen did not object to this, as the most important thing was to get rid of the "Sky Array Emperor," thus he nodded and held out his hand.

The stone seal was suspended between their palms, and in the next instant, immense power poured out of their palms, quickly merging and fusing with the ancient stone seal.

Buzz.

And as the two streams of spiritual energy poured in, the stone seal buzzed and vibrated, and the dim battle symbols gradually became brighter.

Moreover, when the stone seal became bright, the Stone Army beneath the dark area, whose eyes had been closed for thousands of years, awakened little by little!

Atop the stone pedestal, the "Sky Array Emperor's" expression twisted violently!

Chapter 884: Trust

Buzz!

Beneath the darkness, thousands of stone statue troops, along with the glowing stone seal in the palms of Mu Chen and Zhantai Liuli, opened their eyes. These eyes had been closed for thousands of years.

Boom!

At the moment they opened their eyes, it seemed as if the scarlet world was shaking, and an indescribably horrifying fighting intent rolled out like a tumultuous wave. It seemed to rage throughout the entire world.

The fighting intent was as sharp as a spear, It felt as if it could pierce the heavens and the earth. In fact, it was more intense than any army that had ever been seen before. According to Mu Chen's expectations, in the heyday of the army, there was no Sovereign below the Earthly Sovereign that could contend with them.

Together with the Sky Array Emperor's battle array, even if this army encountered a powerful character like the Earthly Sovereign, they might still have had a chance to fight them valiantly.

When compared to the 10,000 Stone Army soldiers, even a million of the Nine Nether Guards were no match for them. This fact just shows the significant gap between the two sides.

When the Stone Army was activated by Mu Chen and Zhantai Liuli, the Sky Array Emperor's expression on the stone pedestal suddenly became distorted. His hollow eyes surged fiercely, and his gaze seemed like it could tear them apart.

"You two brats!"

The Sky Array Emperor growled, as he rose up suddenly from the stone pedestal. As he did this, darkness swept through his body and his figure burst out into a black light.

Clank!

However, just when the figure rushed out a hundred feet from the stone pedestal, the sound of iron chains clattered beneath him. His figure paused abruptly, as the powerful impact had made him stagger.

Mu Chen and Zhantai Liuli glanced towards him. There were four gray chains wrapped around the limbs of the Sky Array Emperor.

The chains were gray and black, and they were covered with battle symbols, which were originally dim. However, with the awakening of the Stone Army below, the battle symbols on the chains had gradually brightened.

As the battle symbols on the chains grew brighter and brighter, the chains pulled the Sky Array Emperor back to the stone pedestal, bit by bit. At the same time, lime fell off on the stone pedestal, unexpectedly exposing a dense pattern of complex battle symbols that also were starting to glow brighter.

"You darn thing! You've been dead for thousands of years, and you still want to trap me?" The Sky Array Emperor snarled, his face becoming particularly distorted. He screamed skyward, as a huge amount of black gas suddenly swept out of his body.

The black gas was extremely thick, like ink, and wherever it made contact, even the space surrounding it became corroded and cracked. The thick black gas permeated everything around it with a strong and evil aura.

In the face of the Sky Array Emperor's counter-attack, the dragging force of the battle symbol chains was also forcefully resisted. All the while, the sticky black gas spread to the chains, beginning to corrode away the battle symbols upon it.

As the battle symbols on the chains gradually corroded them, the Sky Array Emperor struggled, little by little, out of the darkness. All the while, he was staring at the two with hollow and ferocious eyes, apparently intending to crush them to pieces. Upon seeing the tenacity of this fellow, Mu Chen and Zhantai Liuli's expressions changed drastically.

"Lord Mu Chen, don't show any mercy. Do your best to activate the

spiritual energy. Once we let the Sky Array Emperor break out of the battle array suppression zone, the battle array will no longer work!" Zhantai Liuli said urgently.

Mu Chen nodded gravely. Although he did not really trust Zhantai Liuli, he did understand that, if the Sky Array Emperor really broke out of the scope of suppression, neither of them had any chance of escaping.

Mu Chen swirled his palm, then dealt out a blow. Suddenly, his spiritual energy gushed out like a tidal current, pouring into the stone seal. Beside him, Zhantai Liuli, who no longer had any reservations, also poured her spiritual energy into the stone seal.

Buzz.

With the two working together with all their powers, the speed of vibration of the stone seal grew more and more rapid. The light that bloomed upon it also became increasingly dazzling and bright.

Roar!

When the stone seal transformed, it seemed that the army was also encouraged, as it emanated a deep and thunderous roar. The roar caused the world to tremble violently.

Boom! Crash!

The growing immensity of fighting intent surged from their bodies, causing tremors. The light that had originally been emitted from their bodies, was also rapidly expanding at this time. It eventually turned into ten thousand gray beams of light, which was a quite spectacular sight!

The beams of light then swept across the sky and eventually made it into the dark arena, where they then poured into the stone pedestal. At that moment, the four battle symbol iron chains that bound the Sky Array Emperor became even stronger and more secure.

Clang.

The chains shook, trembled, then slowly pulled the Sky Array Emperor toward the stone pedestal.

"You jerk!"

The Sky Array Emperor roared furiously. His eyes were blood-red, and he glared at the two of them, growling, "Today, I will reduce the both of you to ashes!"

Boom!

After the sound of a roar was heard, black liquid began dripping down his eyes. The liquid seemed to have a life on his own, as it writhed slowly on his face. Then, finally, he seemed to be transformed into an incredibly strange black rune.

The rune was eerie and wicked. It looked like a crying grimace, which, in conjunction with the twisted face of the Sky Array Emperor, made it look even more terrifying.

Clang!

With the emergence of the evil rune, the power of the Sky Array Emperor surged. He then forcefully trudged forward, stepping into the void and heading out into the dark. Upon seeing this, Mu Chen and Zhantai Liuli grit their teeth, then continued to activate their spiritual energy.

Boom! Crash!

Overwhelmingly volatile fluctuations constantly spread throughout the space. Mu Chen and Zhantai Liuli did not dare relax at all, using all their might. The Sky Array Emperor obviously did not want to give up this good opportunity to escape, as he knew that it may be his last chance!

The Sky Array Emperor activated his powers madly, attempting to counter the vast fighting intent that was now surging out of the Stone Army below. He glared at Mu Chen and Zhantai Liuli, growling ferociously, "You are just two weak ants! I don't believe that your spiritual energy can persist for long!"

This was also shrewd of him, as he knew that the strength of Mu Chen and Zhantai Liuli was limited. So, even if they had the power of the stone seal, the amount of spiritual energy it consumed was terrifying, which

meant that Mu Chen and Zhantai Liuli would not be able to persist for long.

Hearing his voice, Mu Chen's and Zhantai Liuli's hearts sank, because they were keenly aware of their own state. It was just as the Sky Array Emperor had said, they simply could not persist for long.

"If you two want to get that guy's inheritance, there is no need to die with me! As long as you let me out, I can swear that the inheritance will be surrendered! But, after all, this inheritance can only be obtained by one person. So, between the two of you, who wants it?" The Sky Array Emperor suddenly smiled, his harsh voice becoming gentler.

The gazes of Mu Chen and Zhantai Liuli both flashed. Then, Mu Chen immediately laughed and said, "Why do you use such a clumsy method for trying to make us turn against each other? Faith is worth nothing to you evil spirits! So, if we release you, I am afraid that the first thing that you would do is try to destroy and mutilate us."

Zhantai Liuli also chuckled, then said, "Well said, Lord Mu Chen! I completely agree."

The Sky Array Emperor saw that he had failed in turning them against each other, but had instead only ironically caused the two to sing even more in unison. His face suddenly became extremely ferocious, as he looked at both of them with malice, without saying a word.

He then desperately triggered the thick black gas, corroding the battle symbol chains madly. The two sides, like playing a terrifying game of tug of war, fell into a stalemate.

Zhantai Liuli looked at the stalemate situation, clenching her teeth. Then she said, "Lord Mu Chen, this is not the way to continue. We must force the evil spirit back to that stone pedestal, so that we can then completely activate the battle array to wipe out the evil spirit. Then, we can awaken the remnants of the Sky Array Emperor's willpower, so that we can obtain the inheritance..."

"Do you have a plan?" Mu Chen was also frowning. He knew that it would be extremely detrimental to them, should this stalemate persist, but

there seemed to be no other alternative!

Zhantai Liuli was silent for a moment, then immediately said, "I have a way to detonate and explode the power of the stone seal in a very short period of time. If someone can attack the evil spirit directly to distract it from the battle symbol chains, then we can work together to drag it back to the stone pedestal."

Mu Chen heard her words and frowned even deeper. He turned to Zhantai Liuli. According to her, someone had to confront the Sky Array Emperor head-on, which was undoubtedly a very dangerous thing to do, especially with their limited strengths.

After all, they might be completely obliterated by the Sky Array Emperor in such a direct confrontation.

Unless...This was a scene that Zhantai Liuli wanted to see happen?

Under the flickering gaze of Mu Chen, Zhantai Liuli raised her beautiful cheeks to look directly at him. There was not a trace of a guilty conscience in her eyes.

Zhantai Liuli calmly said, "I suggested this because of the circumstances, but if Lord Mu Chen thinks that Liuli is intending to harm you, then treat it like I didn't say anything."

Mu Chen watched Zhantai Liuli's water-like eyes for a long time. At last, he took a deep breath, then turned his eyes to the dark area and said faintly, "I believe you, but just this once."

Hearing the equally calm voice of Mu Chen, Zhantai Liuli shivered. Her eyes looked at Mu Chen. She had complex emotions in her heart, as she knew exactly how dangerous the his actions were. If she did something sneaky then, she would probably cause Mu Chen to fall into mortal peril. But, he still chose to trust in her.

Although she had gained the trust of Mu Chen and many people through some of her tactics before this, this decision still made Zhantai Liuli feel a little conflicted. The trust that she had gleaned in the past had come from her deception, but this time, Mu Chen, even after knowing all

of the dangers involved, as well as her cunning nature, chose to believe in her.

Looking at Mu Chen's handsome and young face, Zhantai Liuli bit her red lips lightly, then finally nodded gently.

"Well then, please be careful, Lord Mu Chen."

Chapter 885: Joining Forces to Defeat the Evil Spirit

After reaching a resolution with Zhantai Liuli, Mu Chen didn't hesitate much, either. He just looked at her, but he didn't say anything more. Instead, he turned and flew out.

Where he charged towards was, of course, that dark area where the "Sky Array Emperor" was tugging at the battle symbol chains, trying to break out of them to escape the battle array.

When he saw that Mu Chen dared to approach that area, his eyes suddenly flashed with malice. He licked his lips, and his face was full of intense murderous aura.

"You little brat, you are courting death!"

The "Sky Array Emperor" laughed fiercely, and his palm lifted sharply so that the black gas, which had gathered around his body, suddenly burst out like a stream of smoke and directly enveloped Mu Chen.

Whoosh!

Mu Chen saw the "Sky Array Emperor" attacking. His eyebrows knitted in a frown, but he did not take any defensive posture. Shaking his back, a pair of huge purple and gold phoenix wings stretched out. The wings vibrated as he swiftly retreated.

With the aid of the phoenix wings transformed from the Symbol of the Real Phoenix, Mu Chen's speed had clearly reached an amazing level that was incomparable even to those who were at the peak of being a Fifth Grade Sovereign.

The wicked beacons of smoke, though fierce, could never catch up with Mu Chen. As it pursued him, the black gas gradually became thinner.

That's because the power contained in it was rapidly consumed.

Seeing this, Mu Chen's gaze flashed slightly. In this dark area, it seemed that the power of the "Sky Array Emperor" had been greatly suppressed,

and these kinds of attacks surging out from his body would continuously weaken, likely due to being enveloped in the battle array.

It seemed that it was not impossible for him to weaken some of the "Sky Array Emperor's" power if he resorted to using the suppression of the battle array.

"So, you're a little brat who can only run away like a mouse!"

The "Sky Array Emperor" was surprised to see that Mu Chen was so fast, but immediately he smiled, held out his dry and pale fingers, and suddenly pointed them in the air. "Since you like to run so much, then I'll let you run all you want!"

Boom!

As the fingers pointed, the thick black air around him rolled wildly and eventually turned into five enormous Black Demonic Serpents about 100 feet long. The serpents were covered with scales, ferocious and grotesque, smelling of rot all over their bodies. Even the space was corroded with traces of distortion.

Hiss!

The moment these five Black Demonic Serpents appeared with a hiss, they had pierced through the void and then surrounded it, charging directly towards Mu Chen.

Mu Chen's face changed at the sight of the five Black Demonic Serpents. Judging by the fatal and dangerous fluctuations he perceived from them, although the "Sky Array Emperor" had been suppressed by the battle array for thousands of years, and now he was not half as powerful as he had been in his prime, he was still a massive mountain that Mu Chen could not contend with. If it had not been for it using most of its strength to fight against the Stone Army, it would have been possible for it to destroy Mu Chen effortlessly.

Even so, it could still be fatal to Mu Chen when it began to unleash its real power.

Whoosh!

The pair of phoenix wings flapped violently behind Mu Chen's back and sped up to their extreme potential. His figure actually left afterimages in the air, and sharp sounds of something whistling through the air rang out piercingly.

He already knew that the power of the "Sky Array Emperor" would be constantly suppressed and depleted as long as it was within the battle array, so he would only have to keep circling. The violent offensive attacks would naturally be constantly weakened, and when they weakened to the point that Mu Chen could deal with them, he would be able to crush them.

Mu Chen's battle strategy was correct, but he somewhat underestimated the severity of the offensive attacks. The five Black Demonic Serpents were so unexpectedly swift that they seemed to be able to penetrate the void. They came from all directions in short bursts and tried to kill him.

Boom!

The space to the right of Mu Chen shattered first, and a Black Demonic Serpent shot out with a sharp Demonic Spear from its tail. The snake snapped out in front of Mu Chen and shot down towards his heart.

Mu Chen's silhouette rushed to a sudden standstill, and immediately his mind moved. Golden light burst out of his body, the Dragon-Phoenix Golden Armor emerged in a flash, and an indestructible wave spread out.

Mu Chen's arms folded in front of him, and golden light permeated like a golden shield, allowing the serpent's tail to shoot towards it fiercely.

Clang!

Both parties clashed harshly, and immediately sparks sputtered. The sound of gold and iron clashing violently reverberated, and the contact point in the space fluctuated with ripples visible even to the naked eye.

Whoosh!

Mu Chen's figure flew back hundreds of feet. At his arms, which were protected by the golden armor, there was a dent, and the tingling feeling of pain spread through his arms, which secretly alarmed him. This was the

power of only one Black Demonic Serpent's tail, and it was powerful to that extent.

However, with the help of the momentum from flying backwards, Mu Chen had also withdrawn from the attack span of the Black Demonic Serpent, but he did not even have time to heave a sigh of relief. He saw that the space behind him was fragmented, and that another Black Demonic Serpent was coming fiercely and aggressively.

This speed was so fast, that even if Mu Chen had the phoenix wings to maximize his speed, he still could not escape.

Almost there!

Mu Chen's eyes flashed rapidly, and he could feel that, after delaying, the power above the Black Demonic Serpent was no longer as terrible as it had been at first, but he did not have much time to escape now.

Boom!

At this point, Mu Chen did not hesitate. With a movement of the mind, the majestic spiritual energy erupted from his body like a storm. The light spread, and a huge silhouette emerged.

Behind the silhouette, a golden sun hung in the air, and the figure was like a Buddha. The wave of strong spiritual energy was pervasive.

It was the Great Solar Undying Body.

"Power of Three Suns!"

Mu Chen conjured seals with both hands, and within the Great Solar Undying Body, three golden suns rose slowly and finally burst open. Golden light like liquid gold flowed freely, causing the Great Solar Undying Body to shine brilliantly.

Rumble!

The Great Solar Undying Body dealt a blow with its huge palms, and the golden light condensed into golden crystals on its arms. The power of that blow was enough to shatter mountains.

Boom!

The huge palm, covered with a golden layer of crystal, ended up clashing violently with the Black Demonic Serpent. The impact of the crash caused a shock to the space, and the violent impact caused fluctuations to spread wildly.

The Great Solar Undying Body flew back harshly as the entire palm was blown to pieces and dissipated into light spots.

However, although the Great Solar Undying Body paid the price of one palm, that Black Demonic Serpent also shattered into black spots of light.

Within the Great Solar Undying Body, Mu Chen wiped away a trace of blood from the corners of his mouth, and his face became extremely grave. In the previous blow, he had triggered the Great Solar Undying Body's strongest force, but even so, the palm had been shattered and even his own body was affected. After paying such a price, he had only gotten rid of one Black Demonic Serpent.

Now, four other Black Demonic Serpents were coming into the space, encircling him and driving him to despair.

Once the "Sky Array Emperor" really started to get serious, and Mu Chen was forced into a corner, the disparity in ability between both parties could clearly be seen.

Rumble.

Mu Chen's expression turned solemn. The surrounding space had violent turbulence as the four Black Demonic Serpents slithered across. Their raging momentum was incredibly ferocious.

"The more you fight, the weaker you will be, and I do not believe that you will kill me here!"

Danger was approaching, but Mu Chen was not afraid. Instead, there was a ferocious glint in his eyes. The next moment, the Great Solar Undying Body clenched its other fist, and the Great Meru Demonic Pillar bearing an ominous demonic force spirit flashed out, and the three golden suns within the body shined increasingly brighter. Apparently, Mu Chen had triggered his strength to its maximum.

Boom!

The Great Solar Undying Body stepped out with its huge foot as the Great Meru Demonic Pillar rushed out, emanating a demonic force and directly enshrouding a Black Demonic Serpent.

A ruthless battle suddenly erupted within the arena.

Every time Mu Chen made contact with the Black Demonic Serpent, huge cracks appeared on the Great Solar Undying Body, and even Mu Chen's own body was impacted as more blood at the corners of his mouth gradually trickled down.

However, just as Mu Chen was in a terrible mess, the four Black Demonic Serpents also paid a heavy price. When the Great Meru Demonic Pillar smashed harshly, the thick black gas around them was constantly dispersed and dissipated.

Crash!

The last Black Demonic Serpent could no longer endure when the Great Meru Demonic Pillar roared down again with its mighty power. It broke apart in a hiss, but at the critical moment before it shattered completely, the snake's tail collided hard on the Great Solar Undying Body's chest.

Boom!

The Great Solar Undying Body, which was already full of cracks, was unable to withstand the attack and burst into pieces. With the explosion, Mu Chen's figure flew back violently.

Spurt.

A mouthful of blood spurted out from Mu Chen's mouth. His face was a little pale, and he was thrown back 1,000 feet before he forcibly stabilized himself.

Deeper in the darkness, when the five Black Demonic Serpents were shattered to pieces, the "Sky Array Emperor," who was battling with the battle symbol chains, was aware, and immediately the eerie eyes were once again looking at Mu Chen.

Originally, he thought the previous attack was enough to get rid of Mu Chen, but how could he have expected that this mere ant of a Fourth Grade Sovereign could have resisted his attack?

This attack was powerful enough to obliterate even Fifth Grade Sovereigns.

"You have piqued my interest!"

The "Sky Array Emperor" grinned maliciously at Mu Chen, and the ghost face rune on his withered face seemed to begin to squirm. Seeing his smile, Mu Chen's face suddenly changed, for he felt a terrible, dangerous wave.

Boom!

The ghost-face rune on the face of the "Sky Array Emperor" suddenly split and opened. Half of the rune directly transformed into a black beam of light, shooting out and surging towards Mu Chen.

Mu Chen saw this and without any hesitation, he sped up to his maximum limit and retreated swiftly. At the same time, his face was slightly steely. Why hasn't Zhantai Liuli dealt her blow yet?

Did she really want to kill him through the hands of another? If that was the case, then even if he had to pay a heavy price, he would have to kill her here!

However, just as Mu Chen was withdrawing hastily, outside the battle array, Zhantai Liuli's gaze flickered slightly. She hesitated for a moment and finally sighed softly, and immediately her expression became solemn.

She bit her finger, and a trace of red blood dripped down on the stone seal. Her hands conjured up seals with a lightning speed as she exclaimed, "Erupt!"

Boom!

With her exclamation, the ancient stone seal in her palm burst and exploded!

Credits

Translator: Thyaeria

Epub: Estevam / dotNOVEL